

MMORPG - Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(网游之战御天下)

Flying Alone
(孤单地飞)

Story Description:

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

Chapter 1: Together in Death

8th of March, year 2039. Night. In a luxury suite on the 19th floor of the Tian Lun Pavilion Grand Hotel.

Even though the desire had died down, but the ambiguous feeling of it still lingered around. Zhang Yang sat in his bed with his top half naked watching the bare and empty pillow on his bed, his heart filled with the inconceivable.

He came to participate... no... perhaps in other words, he came here as a final resort to stop his girlfriend's wedding. Based on only one sole reason... that is, because he was not the groom!

He and Lin Yu met each other through an online game called 'God's Miracle'. Though they first started off as enemies, they eventually got to know each other and ultimately developed feelings towards each other. However, Lin Yu's family's background was worlds apart from his. Her family had reached a point where their assets had surpassed a massive number which was in the billions. So naturally, they would not hand over their only daughter to some unheard-of man such as him!

Even then, Zhang Yang was not a poor and miserable nobody. He had a luxurious home, a few branded cars, and a few hundred thousand in his bank account. In the eyes of regular women, he was what they would deem as a bachelor with exceeding qualifications. Still, as compared to the Lin Family, there still existed a huge gap between them.

With his efforts in vain, the elders of the Lin Family treated him just as coldly. They almost chased him out of the house! The only thing that Lin Yu could do was to shed her tears for him. She could not ever agree to leave this planned marriage for his own. She only resorted to one desperate request and that was to never see her again.

Zhang Yang knew that Lin Yu was a girl who obediently respects her elders. Her mother threatened to take her own life to compel Lin Yu to go along with their wishes. That was enough reason for Lin Yu to accept the hand in marriage between the equally wealthy Liu Family's only son, Liu

Wei! In fact, the marriage should have been held 3 or 4 years back. It was only delayed because of Lin Yu's constant struggle. But right now, it was obvious that her struggle had come to an end.

Zhang Yang withdrew quietly from Lin Yu's wedding and went back to his hotel room. His heart fell into the depths of despair as he thought of his beloved who would become someone else's wife. He went to have a dull drink before retiring to his room completely drunk. In the midst of it, he received a call. He could not recall what he said but not long after that, a woman came into his room and laid on his bed.

Zhang Yang was so incredibly drunk that he instantly went into 'action' when the both of them embraced each other. As the situation developed, Zhang Yang sobered up and realized that he recognized the woman who he was entangled with. It was the person who taught him Chinese Studies back in university, Miss Yu Li!

Eventually, Yu Li too recognized Zhang Yang. They ended their 'session' as they were both unimaginably abashed. But as compared to him, Yu Li was more embarrassed than he was. She became a hostess but bumped into her old student. This made her feel ashamed, resulting in her bolting out of the room without even bothering to collect her payment.

With the mark left on his chest where Yu Li kissed him, Zhang Yang shook his head as he struggled to get the thoughts of this one night stand out of his mind.

But still, why would Yu Li give up her job as a teacher to sell herself to a hotel to become a hostess? There were many possibilities for her to do so. Perhaps a teacher's salary was insufficient, or perhaps she had bad luck in making acquaintances and was forced by her boyfriend or husband to do this. Or perhaps she needed the financial help to pay for her parent's illness...

Zhang Yang did not have much left in him to think about Yu Li because right now, while he was sober, he was being tortured by the pain in his heart. In his mind, there was only one person he could think of. Lin Yu.

'Bang!'

The sound of the door crashing was heard as two burly men wearing suits and dark sunglasses barged in. Their cold facial expressions and body builds carried a strong killing intent.

Trailing behind them, of average height and size, was a man who walked in wearing a white formal suit and a pair of gold-framed glasses. He had the handsome face of a young man, yet he wore a careless smile on his face like a true gentleman.

“Liu Wei!” Zhang Yang immediately recognized that young man as he gritted his teeth.

One of the burly men grabbed a chair and Liu Wei immediately sat on it. He crossed his legs and said, “You must be wondering why I left my newly wedded wife to come here in the middle of the night.”

“Hmph, cut the bullshit!” said Zhang Yang coldly as he stared at his ‘rival’. Both he and Lin Yu knew that Liu Wei was adamant in marrying Lin Yu. However, this was not because of his feelings towards her, it was due to the Lin Family’s fortune. Both the Lin and Liu Families were heads of the business world. If they were to unite through marriage, then they could rule over a larger market together.

Liu Wei laughed but his facial expression contained no intentions of humor. He said, “Any women that belongs to me should not have any other men in their minds. And even if they do, I’d allow only the memories of a dead man! Do you understand now, Zhang Yang?”

Zhang Yang was astounded. He knew that this man, the only son of the Liu Family, would do something outrageous. But this is a hotel, a public place. It was just beyond imagination!

“There’s no need to be surprised! This state of Ji is under my family’s influence. Even if I put a hole in the sky, there would be someone to patch it up for me in my stead.” Liu Wei continued to speak as he laughed coldly, “That bitch actually delayed the wedding for 4 years because of you! Hmph! After I’m done with you, I shall go back and take really good care of her.”

Zhang Yang went into rage, fiercely did a backflip from the bed and onto

his feet and shouted, “If you even dare to lay your hand on a strand of her hair, I’ll kill you!”

“Haha, not only will I be going to touch a strand of her hair, I will also be going to mess her up, mess her up really badly! That bitch actually slept with you for a number of times, did she not? That bitch actually made me out to be the bad person!” Liu Wei’s handsome countenance faded.

“Bastard!” Zhang Yang screamed and leaped towards Liu Wei.

Liu Wei scoffed and commanded the two burly men, “Throw him off the balcony!”

“Roger!” Answered the men instantly and simultaneously as they went into action.

Liu Wei had the highest of confidence in his experienced bodyguards and in a very relaxed manner he said, “A man broken by the loss of the love of his life, jumped off to end his life. How does that sound as the title of tomorrow’s newspaper headlines? I do wonder how that bitch would react to this. The face that she would make would certainly be very amusing!”

Even so, Zhang Yang did not show any signs of fear. He lost both his parents when he was very young and had been rebellious ever since. Since then, there was no one who bothered to care about his brawls, and he eventually became some sort of the local’s little tyrant. Eventually he toned down after he enrolled in a university. He stopped getting into fights and instead joined a martial art’s society and had proper skill showdowns.

He was born with a naturally strong and agile body build. After joining the society for merely two years, he was said to have beaten the 9th National Martial Arts Competition’s Champion’s instructor. Through the years, he had never stopped his training and this led to his unparalleled strength.

These two men must have had a certain degree of skill to become Liu Wei’s bodyguard. But still, in Zhang Yang’s eyes, they were still nobodies.

‘Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!’

Zhang Yang's fists were as fast as electric, flowing and dancing around. His feet moved like a snake and with a move called 'False Steps Chaos Punch', he beat them both until they had no chance of countering.

Liu Wei was both surprised and enraged. He never knew that Zhang Yang had such formidable skill. Without actually thinking things through, he pulled out a small firearm and fired at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was not curious about how a notorious family like the Lius could have gotten hold of a firearm. Instead he was surprised that Liu Wei would actually open fire at a public place! At the moment, his eyes were directed at the black hollow muzzle of Liu Wei's gun, he instinctively waved his arm and hit one of the bodyguards who staggered in front of him, blocking his front.

'Pa!'

As the deafening sound of gunshots faded into the distance, a mark of fresh red blood appeared on the vest of the bodyguard. The man fell onto the ground before he could even let out any cries of pain.

Liu Wei did not stop there, even though he was stunned for a moment, he held his gun back up and aimed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang, who was not afraid of getting a beating went to brawl with the other man. He then held the man as a meat shield and rushed towards Liu Wei.

The man saw that Liu Wei was aiming directly at him. Terrified, the man started to sweat as he screamed, "Please Master Liu, don't shoot! Don't shoo- "

'Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!'

Being selfish and reckless, it was impossible for Liu Wei to listen to the cries of his own underlings. He then pulled the trigger repeatedly, letting 6 shots off as he emptied his magazine.

Within the smoke, bullet wounds could be seen on the dead bodyguard's abdomen, chest and head. He had died before death could come to him. Zhang Yang pushed the body aside and rushed forward so quickly that he

hit Liu Wei as he reloaded his gun.

In a flash, Zhang Yang emerged from behind the dead man's body. He then powerfully lifted his hammer-like fists and punched Liu Wei's face firmly.

The punch was so powerful that it sent Liu Wei's gold-framed glasses flying off. A stream of blood came oozing out from a brand-new wound that he had just received.

Zhang Yang pulled Liu Wei out from under the man's body and immediately, another punch followed.

"Ah!"

He screamed continuously. Liu Wei was a man born with a silver spoon in his mouth, he had never and could never endure this level of pain. In the end, however, he was still a ruthless man. With eyes carrying ill intent, he glared at Zhang Yang and yelled, "You bastard. You dared to strike me! You're a dead man! Not only will I kill you, I'll mutilate your corpse and feed them to the dogs!"

No matter how well one could control his temper, under the circumstances of being shot for 7 rounds, one might still lose his nerves completely. Zhang Yang's rage was already well beyond comprehension. After listening to Liu Wei's endless taunting, his rage rose by yet another level as he delivered one more punch. With a 'Pa!' sound, Liu Wei's face was covered in his own blood and with 'Wa' sound, he spat out 7 to 8 pieces of his broken teeth.

'Master Liu! Master Liu!' several voices could be heard echoing through the hallway and more burly bodyguards came rushing into the room. Some of them had bulging waists, indicating that they were carrying weapons.

Liu Wei regained his composure and screamed shrilly, "Kill him! Kill him!"

'Qiang! Qiang! Qiang!'

The bodyguards who received the order rushed towards Zhang Yang. Some of them even pulled out their knives.

Zhang Yang's blood was dripping from his waist. Even though he had a meat shield to protect him, he still got shot in his abdomen. In just mere moments, he could feel the energy in him gradually seeping out. His vision blurred and he knew that he could faint at any time.

In a situation like this, staying conscious alone would be difficult, what more taking on those burly men.

Zhang Yang directed his gaze at Liu Wei and murmured, "Am I actually going to be doing the citizens a favor?"

With a burst of laughter, Zhang Yang grabbed onto Liu Wei and dashed towards the balcony. Gaining an unstoppable momentum, the two of them soared into the air before falling down from the 19th floor like two shooting stars.

Chapter 2: Rebirth

“Hu!” Zhang Yang woke up all of a sudden. His breath was rapid as he could only feel the cold sweat around his body. He opened his eyes and looked around, dropping his jaw when he saw the scene in front of him.

What played out in front of him was a classroom. A room that was capable of fitting hundreds of people. Yet only 30 people occupied this space sparingly. A few of them were reading, chatting, or making a ruckus about who-knows-what. Every one of them were faces that he could doubtlessly recognize. They were all his university classmates!

Is this... university?

“Why I am here? I should be dead.” Zhang Yang’s mind was filled with an endless stream of questions of the unknown.

“Zhang Yang, what’s going on? Are you not feeling well?” somebody asked.

Zhang Yang turned his head and looked. He saw a sentimental face with a sincere smile. It was a familiar yet strange feeling. He was Li Shang Yuan, his class representative while he was in university. But... he died 3 years ago in a plane accident!

Zhang Yang nodded his head unconsciously, as if he was sleep-talking. “I am fine!” He reached out and pinched himself only to feel the lingering sting of the pain. Zhang Yang bared his teeth and inhaled breath of cold air!

This is definitely not a dream!

That means I am not dead! And it seems that I have traveled a few years back in time! Zhang Yang took out his phone and saw that the date displayed on it was the year 2034, June 16th.

Five years!

God gave him a chance to alter his destiny!

In that moment, Zhang Yang felt anxious yet excited. He did not care

how he rewound time by 5 years, he only knew that this was an opportunity for him to stage a comeback! For a 'dead person', nothing could be more precious than this.

This was his final year in university and in just another 7 or 8 days, he would have graduated and obtained a job. If everything followed its proper course, he would work in a software company and live an easy life without any notable achievements to his name.

It was only until 2 years later that he started to play the online game 'God's Miracle' that was introduced by a company colleague. At that time, 'God's Miracle' had been operational for more than 2 years. Initially, there were 4 million players connected simultaneously but the number spiked to billions playing online at any time of the day, only ever increasing for every day that passed! As early as half a year after 'God's Miracle' went online, Dream Technology, the team who developed 'God's Miracle' set up an A-Class and S-Class Professional League, providing a stage for professional players to show off their skills.

Just like any e-Sports scene, the fame of the champions would bring about great advertising effect. Global corporations would then begin to invest in 'God's Miracle', going so far as to sponsor teams to use their name as mascots to their brands. Some might even establish their own teams to participate. The income of a professional player was increasing steadily, no lower than that of a traditional sports celebrity.

Certainly, in the later stages of the game's establishment, 'God's Miracle' itself became highly valued in the industrial line. The amount of virtual transactions could even make global corporations feel envious! With each of these corporations building up their own elite team, they had entered into a commercial war of the virtual world.

Zhang Yang had been athletic since birth. In such a realistic virtual reality game that utilizes brain waves to operate, he could fully unleash his potential which was on par with professional players. He set up his own team and in the second year, he joined a B-Class amateur team. Eventually, one year later, he would then enter an A-Class Professional League!

After entering the A-Class League, Zhang Yang immediately received a substantial sponsorship from a large corporation which also included a considerable monthly income. In the meantime, he befriended Lin Yu whose in-game-name (IGN)¹ was Clear Perfume. Through a minor conflict that got them acquainted, they began on bad terms as they occasionally fought each other but somehow ended up as good friends.

It was then that Lin Yu began to get involved with Liu Wei. In order to escape the fate of a pre-arranged marriage, she made a deal with her family. As long as she could build a successful career in 'God's Miracle' and share a portion of the glory and profits from the huge industrial chain, her family would no longer intervene in her marriage affairs. And thus, Zhang Yang and Lin Yu worked hard together to develop and strengthen the Clear Water guild in order to participate in the S-Class League.

Unfortunately, Clear Water was constantly pressured by Myth, a guild led by Liu Wei. Unable to surpass the expectations of their rank, Clear Water's position was indefinitely stuck as a second-rate guild. This inevitably led to stunted growth in terms of generating revenue for development.

Compared to other professional players, Zhang Yang joined the game a little too late as well, causing him to fall behind in terms of equipment and level. Even though he may have superior athletic skills, he was still unable to make up for such a huge gap! Furthermore, he had always been a loner and did not have reliable teammates which consequently led to his inability to break through the A-Class League.

During that time, Liu Wei implemented the Trojan Horse Strategy. He sent a mistress into Clear Water to court Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang and Lin Yu had yet to realize their feelings for each other. Thus, once the hot-blooded Zhang Yang got entangled with the woman, he fell into their trap and almost caused the disbandment of Clear Water.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang still had a conscience as he felt guilty and lost. During the time he felt depressed, Lin Yu fought back against public complaints and fully supported Zhang Yang. Offering him boundless trust

and support, they finally realized their feelings for each other and finally got together.

Unfortunately, Lin Yu's business in 'God's Miracle' completely fell through. The elders in the family arranged her marriage with Liu Wei despite her attempts to reject such a proposition. She fought valiantly against the political marriage, but there was nothing that could be done. The only result of her strenuous efforts was that it led to the postponement of her wedding. The events following that caused Zhang Yang to attend the wedding, eventually perishing together with Liu Wei.

'Hu!'

Zhang Yang forced out a breath. Now that he had one chance to do it all over again, he must not allow the same tragedy to repeat itself. If the sole reason the Lin Family would not accept Zhang Yang was because he was powerless, then all of his problems could be solved if he could just obtain status equivalent to the Lin Family. However, to obtain the same status as the Lin Family was not a walk in the park.

Although Zhang Yang had some fortune in his previous life, he was aware that he was not made for the business world. It was an impossible task for him to become a top entrepreneur nor a successful businessman even if he had the knowledge of future development and trends for the following 5 years. Perhaps, after some of the events were recalled in his mind, he might be able to earn hundreds of thousands of dollars. Nevertheless, it would still be incomparable to them.

The field in which he was most familiar and proficient in would be 'Gods Miracle'!

According to the official statistics of 'God's Miracle' in the '5-years game review', One Sword Stroke was the S-Class League player with the highest income of up to 420 million dollars annually!

In the review, it was also mentioned that the entire virtual item microtransactions that transacted through the game platform over the 5 years would total up to a whopping 7.9 trillion dollars!

In reality, Zhang Yang was no prophet but he understood the entire

game as a whole. The rise and fall of any materials' price, the strategy for any dungeon, the tactical strategy for the world boss, the pre-requisite conditions to trigger any hidden quest, all of these information was deeply imprinted inside Zhang Yang's brain.

His grand plan was to first set up his own guild to accumulate fame and reputation, preferably making it to the top of the China region, and eventually the top 8 globally. After that, through collecting and monopolizing materials, he could definitely earn a large sum of money. He knew very well that if he was alone, he would be powerless. However, as a guild, it was possible to earn billions of dollars in this godlike game.

Eventually, the Lin Family would start to seek out alternatives to turn over their aging businesses. When the time is ripe, Zhang Yang would not need to do much and they would personally hand over Lin Yu to him to gain a share of the virtual industry's fortune!

As for Zhang Yang, he could achieve his dream of entering the S-Class Professional League to fight for the championship title of the World Team League!

‘Ta ta ta’

The clicking sound of the approaching high heels was shrouded by the ringing of the school bell. A beautiful woman walked into the classroom. A formal suit adorned the tall and slender figure. Her complexion spoke volumes of her age, which would be of about 23 to 24 years. She had her long hair tied up into a bun which made her look more or less quite mature.

“Students, you will all begin to tread your first steps into society and a job in less than 10 days. As your teacher, I bid you the best of fortunes in acquiring a splendid job...”

Zhang Yang was immersed in his memories, recalling the sweet smile of Lin Yu when the emotions which he suppressed deep within him suddenly erupted like a volcano! Despite it being in the middle of the class, he stood up and rushed out of the classroom. The students stared at his back with stunned eyes. As for the beautiful teacher, she was trembling with rage.

However, Zhang Yang halted his steps abruptly after exiting the classroom. Presently, he and Lin Yu did not know each other. He could not possibly just rush up to her and announce to her, “Hey, I am your future lover who died and came back in time... come on, let’s fall in love again!”

I would definitely be treated as a psycho. Bear with it!

According to ‘history’, Lin Yu would only join one year after ‘God’s Miracle’ began operations. Right now, the only choice he had was to wait. Zhang Yang sighed. Just when he wanted to turn around to return into the classroom, he saw the pretty teacher wearing a scary face with her hands on her hips, blocking the classroom door with her fearsome look.

“Zhang Yang!” She gritted her teeth as she called Zhang Yang’s name. Her two fists relaxed and clenched alternately.

It was only then that Zhang Yang noticed her. This pretty teacher was Yu Li, the person who he would have a one night stand with. He was drunk at that time and did not have much of an impression of that night. But right now, he could clearly recall that her body was sexually voluptuous! Hidden underneath the suit were the enticing curves of her bodyline!

By looking at her jade-white neck, his eyes stared instinctively at those well-covered peaks. As a student, Zhang Yang found it difficult to look at his teacher in ‘that way’. A fiery sensation came to him, as if the ‘fierce battle’ between them happened just not too long ago. With that, even if he saw less at the moment, he seemed to be able to see even more clearly!

He smiled with his teeth wide open and said, “Teacher, I want to go to the restroom!”

Yu Li was about to go crazy!

This brat, not only had he rushed out the classroom during class hours without even asking for leave, he even dared to stare at her with those invasive eyes. It made her feel naked and defenseless, as if he could see through her formal attire.

Angry and abashed, Yu Li pointed towards the restroom and said, “Go!”

Zhang Yang nodded and dashed off like the wind. He returned to the classroom after loitering around for a while. He greeted Yu Li and sat in his seat. However, Zhang Yang gazed up only to notice that Yu Li was still angry. Although her expression was solemn, there was a hint of flirtatious flush on her jade-white skin.

Yu Li had always been an attractive woman. She had always been the target of obscenity among the boys. Currently, with such a vulnerable look, it only made all the boys slobber endlessly. Zhang Yang used to be one of those boys who secretly had a crush on Yu Li. But as time went by and more trouble arose, he began to leave behind his days of student romance.

He wondered. "Miss Yu is so beautiful, why would she work as a hostess? What a waste! If there is a chance, I would definitely help her!"

Yu Li announced the end of the class after the two-period class session concluded. Before she left the room, she threw a ferocious look at Zhang Yang.

The students began to make some noise the second the teacher left.

"Zhang Yang, what are you going to do after graduation?" Li Shang Yuan handed an address book to Zhang Yang. People usually jot down contact numbers when they approached graduation in order to keep in touch in the future.

Zhang Yang took the book and wrote his home phone number casually. He said, "Probably a professional gamer!"

"A professional gamer?" A fatty called Zhao Xiao Song squeezed over. His nickname was 'Chubby Pole'. He said, "Can you earn money by playing games?"

"I am not sure about other games, but if it's 'God's Miracle', it is most definitely possible to earn a lot!" A thin and tall person called Zhou Xiang joined the discussion and continued, "I have a relative working at Dream Technology. According to him, the gaming helmet for 'God's Miracle' had sold more than 500 million units!"

“What gaming helmet?” Some people came over and asked casually.

“Tch, don’t tell me you have not watched television or even surfed the web? Advertising for ‘God’s Miracle’ covers the entire globe. It’s the world’s first super virtual reality game in the history. Say goodbye to traditional games. Now you can access the game anywhere and anytime with just a helmet! It’s all thanks to Dream Technology that the game can finally operate this year after more than 10 years of beta testing!” One of the fans of the game spoke emotionally.

“If it’s really that fun, I will go buy one and try it out later.”

“Come, let’s do a head count, those who want to play ‘God’s Miracle’ please register. We’ll establish a guild and embark on ‘God’s Miracle’ together!”

Chapter 3: Soul Brothers

Seven to eight days later, Zhang Yang went back to his house after receiving his graduation certificate. On his way home, he dropped by and bought himself a gaming helmet. Now that everything has been prepared, all he needed to do left was to wait for 'God's Miracle' to start. According to the internet announcement, the game will start its servers globally on the 10th of this month.

'Dong dong dong!' Someone came knocking.

It was not that Zhang Yang did not have a doorbell, he did. It was just that the contraption had been decades old and as such, had broke down a few years back.

"Who is it?" Zhang Yang went to the door and peeked through the peephole. A sweating fatty was standing at his doorstep, repeatedly fanning himself with a paper fan. Zhang Yang got excited as he saw the familiar guy. He opened the door hastily and smiled as he said, "Long time no see Fatty Han!"

Han was shocked by Zhang Yang's overly-excited reaction. He screamed, "Why are you so excited? It's not like I owed you money. Hey, hey, hey! You're not into homosexual stuff right?!"

Han Guang had been his soul brother before they could even put on their pants. The two of them went to junior school all the way up to high school together. Throughout the years, their relationship developed through their participation in street brawls. Even though Zhang Yang eventually enrolled in university and Han Guang started work, their friendship had never been affected. Zhang Yang knew that in one year's time, Hang Guang would get involved in a street fight and suffer a grievous injury. He would die before he could be sent to the hospital.

At that time, the incident left a scar on Zhang Yang. He could not even smile for half a year.

This time, he would not let any accident befall his soul brother. Zhang Yang swore in his heart as he revealed a calm and cheerful expression. As

he calmed himself as if nothing had ever happened, he asked Fatty Han, "Today is not a holiday, what are you doing here?"

Subconsciously, Zhang Yang did not want anyone to know about his predicament. Even if he were to tell people about it, no one would believe him. Secondly, if his secret was exposed, he could be captured and subjected to experiments. In the end, he decided that he'd rather bring his secret to the grave.

Han Guang pursed his lips and said, "Holiday my ass, I quit my job! That bastard manager is a bloody animal. I always knew that he likes to harass the female employees. Yesterday, I caught him molesting a girl in the pantry. Because I couldn't endure it any longer, I ended up beating him. He was so enraged that he had the female employee and I fired!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "That employee, did she blame you for dragging her down with you?"

"Eh, how'd you guess it?" Han Guang exclaimed. "That b*tch must have gotten her brain bashed out. Here I am, being a Samaritan trying to save the day, but all I got in return was nothing but blame. If I had not acted, that sh*tty manager could have..."

Zhang Yang smiled inwardly, of course he could have guessed it. It was Han Guang himself who told him about this incident before. Zhang Yang patted his shoulder and said, "It's a sh*tty world we're living in!"

Han Guang let out a sigh and said, "You are absolutely right, this is a d*mn sh*tty world we're living in!"

After the two of them entered the house, Han Guang went to the fridge and helped himself to a bottle of beer. He then bit off the bottle cap with his teeth. In just two to three gulps, he finished the entire bottle of beer like a cow drinking water. After finishing a bottle, he wiped his mouth and yelled, "Awesome!"

Zhang Yang sat in front of him and asked, "What do you plan to do next? Find a new job?"

"That's why I'm here today!" Han Guang whispered secretly, "Have you

ever heard of ‘God’s Miracle’?”

“The one that is always advertised on the television?” said Zhang Yang snickering.

Han Guang got excited and said, “Yeah, that’s the one! I heard this from my cousin who sells the gaming helmets for the game. He said that there are many people who will be playing this game, and through it, you can earn a fortune!”

“Oh, how?” Zhang Yang vaguely recalled that Han Guang used this method to persuade him to join the game, yet he rejected his invitation. Now that he thought about it, if he had taken Han Guang’s advice and accepted his invitation to join the game on its release day, he might not have had that resulting wretched ending!

With a face as though he has had everything thought out, Han Guang said, “My cousin said that there is a way. Once you achieve level 20, you will unlock the ability to use the Real-Money Trade (RMT1) System. That service allows you to trade in-game currency for real-world currency. As long as we can farm enough gold, we could be rich.”

“Ok, I’m up for it. I had wanted to play the game anyway,” said Zhang Yang, happily nodding away. He had many methods and strategies to amass fortune at the tip of his fingers. Even if he taught the fatty a way or two, it would still not affect his ability to earn a lot. Naturally, for a friend, he would not be that stingy about it.

Han Guang was filled with happiness. “With us brothers working together against all obstacles, we would be able to defeat our enemies and become unstoppable! Right, Yang, what if we really did earn a fortune? How are we going to spend it? Are we going to fill a house with a bunch of bikini girls for me to ogle at all day?”

“Scram, you pervert!” Zhang Yang pretended to get incensed.

Han Guang grinned lecherously, revealing his bright white teeth. Ever since he was young, this fatty had always dreamed of establishing the world’s greatest harem. This was especially true after he had read the manhua², ‘The King of the Harem.

“Right, so...” Zhang Yang pretended to ask casually, “What race and class are you going to pick?”

“Elf Race, Thief!” Han Guang answered without hesitation. He must have had some level of understanding towards the game, otherwise he would not have uttered those words.

Zhang Yang could not recall what class Han Guang had picked in his previous life, but a Thief... Zhang Yang said, “I think you’d better pick another class. Hm... I think a Hunter should suit you well!”

“Why?” asked Han Guang.

“It is because of your big and bulky personality. It doesn’t even suit the requirements of a sneaky and agile Thief. In fact, it’s not just Thieves but every other type of melee attack classes would not suit you either! I think you’d better choose to be a Hunter... hm, a Beastmaster. With your pet engaging the enemy in front, you could stand your ground and attack. Isn’t this much safer?! For Beastmasters, they possess good dungeon raiding ability, decent damage output, and an overpowered skill called [fake death]’. It is an aggro3-clearing skill, a powerful utility skill indeed!” Zhang Yang exclaimed.

Han Guang nodded while deep in thought. He could not help but agree with Zhang Yang’s statement. “I would have never thought that you were so knowledgeable.”

Zhang Yang smiled as he tried to search for an excuse. “When I decided to play this game, I did my research on the forums.”

“Oh...” The innocent fatty immediately took his words as the truth. “In that case, I’ll try the Hunter for a change!”

“When you achieve level 5, buy a few bottles of [Porto Whiskey] and try to hand it over to an NPC called Ol’ Drunkard Si Wang.”

“Why?”

“I’ve read about it. That NPC will trigger a hidden class quest for the Hunter job!” Zhang Yang tried giving another excuse.

“Really?” said Han Guang suspiciously.

“Have I ever lied to you?” asked Zhang Yang.

“All the time.”

“F*ck, this time it is real. Believe me!” Zhang Yang scratched his head, resisting the urge to smack someone.

He recalled that there was a Hunter above level 100 who encountered a bug when he completed the quest. Besides the Hunter who completed the quest, one of his party members also received the reward. It was Phoenix, a legendary pet.

Not only did the Phoenix have a high damage output, it could also be used as a mount. Imagine riding on the Phoenix, with that trail of blazing fire. What sort of awe would it inspire?! If both of them summoned their Phoenixes in the middle of the main city, how many players would have their jaws drop in wonder?

Unfortunately, the hidden quest had only one drawback. That was, beside the first two players who have received the reward, no other player can ever get their hands on a Phoenix. Non-Hunter classes can only deploy their mounts in the open world. They cannot summon their rides in a dungeon or the battle arena. Because the bug’s effect on the game was not as damaging as the developers expected it to be, they decided to allow both the Hunter and his party member to retain their unique pets.

This time, it would be their turn to own this amazing pet! The Hunter and his party member who obtained them in Zhang Yang’s past were Korean. Zhang Yang never did like the Koreans, so even if he snatched the unique pets back he would believe in the adage, ‘Finders, Keepers’.

“Alright! I’ll stake my trust on you once again!” Han Guang finally agreed to his proposal. “Did you buy a gaming helmet?”

“I have already prepared long ago. I’m just waiting for the servers to start!”

“Hey, hey. let’s go to the restaurant across the road and have a few drinks! I tell you, there’s this new girl there. She looks just like a fairy. I

think she has some feelings for me. Whenever I was around, she would send me flirtatious glances!”

“Didn’t you say that the last time?”

“You little brat, you dare to question the charms of this daddy! Ah right, what class will you be playing as?”

”You’ll know what it is when the time comes!”

“Tch! Why are you putting on airs for? I hope you get strike by lighting!”

A few days passed and the last day of June arrived.

At 8.45am, ‘God’s Miracle’ would begin simultaneously around the world, allowing players to register their accounts and create their characters. At 9am, the server for the world’s 8 regions would come online, signifying the integration of this futuristic and titanic digital system with the public’s lives.

Zhang Yang put on the helmet and felt a strange and unexplainable electric current travel across the skin of his head. Zhang Yang waited for 3 to 4 minutes before a bright light emerged, ringing a familiar sound.

“Welcome to the world of ‘God’s Miracle’!”

“Generating game account... please wait a moment!”

“Synchronizing your brainwaves and biometrics to your account. Please note that there is no need to input your password the next time you log in. The system will scan your brainwaves and automatically match you to your game account!”

“Please note that only one character can be created per person! If you wish to create another character, you must delete your current character before you can create a new one! Once you have created a new character, you cannot create a new one within the next 15 days and a new character cannot be deleted within its first 3 days!”

“Account creation successful! Welcome to the continent of Norlanda! Warrior, the Union is in need of your assistance!” the soft voice of a girl echoed in his ears. A familiar scene played in front of him. Countless

demons and spectres rained down from the heavens and crawled up from the earth with every intention of attacking the solitary city of humanity mercilessly.

The setting of 'God's Miracle' was that the Humans had joined forces with the Elves, Beastmen, and Dwarves to fight off the invasion of the invading demons and spectres. Zhang Yang had seen this scene countless of times which led him to click on the 'Skip' button to jump to the character creation interface.

"Please pick your race!" said the soft, feminine voice of the system.

"Human!"

"Race selection, Human confirmed!" the soft voice continued. "Please select your class!"

"Warrior!"

"Class selection, Warrior confirmed! Please choose your specialization!"

For every class, there would be a choice of specialization. The specializations available to a Warrior was the Berserker and the Guardian.

"Guardian!" Zhang Yang let out a nostalgic smile.

In his previous life, he picked Guardian as his specialization. Zhang Yang picked the same class because of two reasons, the first being that he actually loved the class very much. The second reason was because he thoroughly understood the class. Every class possessed hidden quests that was related to it. These non-repeatable quests had luxurious rewards. Zhang Yang had finalized his decision because these quests were directly linked to the class and Zhang Yang fully understood the Warrior class.

"Specialization, Guardian confirmed!" the voice continued. "Please enter your character's name!"

"Zhan Yu4!"

"Character name, Zhan Yu confirmed!"

As the system sound paused, the scene changed and a figure that was a mirror image of him appeared. "This is the character created based on

your physical characteristics, you can modify and change the facial complexion by using the system's user interface!"

Even though adjustments could not be made for the body, since Zhang Yang had always focused on exercising, in addition to his height of 180cm⁵, he had no complaints about his character's physical appearance. He thought for a while and did some modifications to his facial features. For better or worse, he only wanted to make it difficult for him to be recognized by others.

After he was done modifying his character, he selected 'Confirm'.

"Character creation complete, please wait patiently for the connection to establish! While waiting, you may check your character's ability guide to ensure a more thorough understanding of your role for a better gaming experience! Good gaming!"

A character interface appeared in front of him. The character that he had just created was wearing a set of worn-out equipment and had a short sword strapped to his waist. As a Guardian, he did not even have a shield. He knew that only when his character has reached level 5 and only after completing the required class quest, would he receive a Steel-grade shield.

Currently, he only had 3 pieces of equipment.

[Worn-out Chest Plate] (White-Wood, Armor)

Defense: +1

Level Requirement: 0

[Worn-out Shin Guard] (White-Wood, Armor)

Defense : +1

Level Requirement: 0

[Beginner's Short Sword] (White-Wood, One-handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 1-3

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

Level Requirement: 0

Attack Interval determined the frequency or rate of attacks. After performing a normal attack, the period before another attack could be initiated would be the Attack Interval. Dagger weapons would have the shortest interval time, followed by one-handed weapons and ranged weapons. The longest attack interval would be the two-handed weapon type.

Wood-grade equipment were also known as White-tiered equipment. Only the defense attribute of a White-tiered equipment could be enhanced further. As for White-tiered weapons, they would possess extremely mediocre attack stats. The next step-up from White-Wood equipment would be Black-Steel, followed by Green-Copper, Gray-Silver⁶, Yellow-Gold, Violet-Platinum, Mythical, Ethereal, Holy, Ascended and finally, Celestial, the highest tiered and strongest equipment currently available in the game. Due to such distinction between equipment, the quality of the resultant stats provided by these equipment is also extremely wide. This forced players to continuously grind⁵ in order to placate their need for improvement.

Zhang Yang's character attributes are as followed,

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 0

HP: 50/50

Rage: 0/100

Defense: 2

Vitality: 0

Strength: 4

Dexterity: 1

Intelligence: 0

Spirit: 0

Luck: 0

Melee Damage: 5-8

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

Ranged Attack: NIL

Vitality, Strength, Dexterity, Intelligence and Spirit are the 5 basic player attributes.

Vitality: Increases a character's Max HP. 10 HP will be added for every point invested.

Strength: Increases a character's physical damage. A certain amount of damage will be added for every 2 points invested.

Dexterity: Increases a character's movement speed and its physical attack's critical rate. Additionally, for Thieves and Hunters, it will increase skill damage.

Intelligence: Increases a character's spell damage, Max MP and its spell's critical rate. 10MP and a certain amount of damage will be added for every point invested.

Spirit: Reduces a character's casting time and increases its MP regeneration speed.

Luck was a special attribute that cannot be increased through equipment bonuses. It could be obtained as a reward for completing certain main quests or high-difficulty hidden quests. This attribute had many uses, such as potentially allowing the player to deal a triple-damage strike, called [lucky strike].

Every new character would have a total of 5 points that had been automatically assigned to their basic attributes. Since Warriors do not require Intelligence or Spirit, these two attributes would begin with 0 points invested. Strength and Dexterity, on the other hand, would have more points allocated in them.

Rage was only possessed by Warrior classes. While out-of-combat, a Warrior's Rage would be reduced to 0. After entering combat, Rage would constantly accumulate by 1 point every second. Rage could also be

increased depending on the damage output of regular attacks and a character's level. Utilizing skills would generally consume Rage and were often called Rage Discharge.

*

Translator Notes

1 Real-Money Trade (RMT) refers to the practice of exchanging virtual currency, items, accounts or services for real-world cash. A good example of RMT would be the most expensive transaction for a virtual product which was Club Neverdie in Entropia Universe. According to online sources, Club Neverdie transacted for a total of \$635,000! Popular RMT services also include power-leveling a client's character to the level cap, or providing a client with a huge amount of in-game currency.

2 Manhua (漫画) actually directly translates to comics. However, due to the recent rise of different styles of comics which can normally be sub-categorized into products of different regions, readers have used manhua (Chinese), manga (Japanese) and manhwa (Korean) to identify them respectively. As such, this translation would be using manhua instead of comics to show that the characters are referring to a Chinese-style comic.

3 Aggro is an internet and gaming lingo frequently used among players who participate in group battles in an online game. Aggro is somewhat similar to the enmity of an NPC towards any specific player. By performing certain actions that may be deemed to be threatening towards NPCs, players would accumulate aggro which would then lead the NPC to focus their attacks on the player with the highest aggro. Tank classes would normally have aggro-building skills to keep an NPC's attacks focused on themselves, while certain classes may have aggro-clearing skills to prevent NPCs from targeting them.

4 Zhan Yu (战御) directly translates to Imperial War. However, as a character's name, Imperial War would be terrible especially since it is the protagonist's name which would appear very frequently. As such, I have decided to retain the Chinese pinyin of the name.

5 Grind or grinding in gaming lingo is the act of continuously and

repetitively killing monsters or completing repeatable quests in the hopes of achieving a specific goal such as leveling up or farming certain item drops from the game.

6 Gray-Silver (白银, baiyin) should actually be translated into White-Silver. However, since the author uses the color/material names interchangeably, White-Silver might be confused with White-Wood. One example would be when the author uses White-tiered equipment. Is the author referring to White-Wood rarity, or White-Silver rarity? As such, I have taken the liberty of translating 'White' in White-Silver to 'Gray'. The tiers would then be as follows: White, Black, Green, Gray, Yellow, Violet.

Chapter 4: The Launching of ‘God’s Miracle’

‘Ding!’

With a crisp ding, the notification signaled the official launch of the server. With a flash in his eyes, Zhang Yang had come to an ancient village square.

Within a short period of time, many new players spawned around him. As many more appeared rapidly, the square was filled instantly. Some of the players were forced to squeeze to the side as even more new players spawned.

As this was the first ever virtual reality online game in history, each and every player logged into the game were stunned motionless, appreciating the breathtaking yet vivid surroundings.

“I’m leaving now. This game is so realistic!”

“Damn, don’t block me, let me through!”

“What are you shoving around for? Are you rushing to be reincarnated?!”

“Bastard, where do you think you are placing your hands? Do I look like someone you can simply take advantage of?”

“Lady, with that look, even if you let me touch you, I would be too frightened to!”

“And why are your hands still on my breasts?”

“Hehe, it’s too crowded, there is no space for my hands!”

“Oh God, you lewd dog and lecherous vixen, I can’t stand it! I’d rather go back and jerk off!”

“ ... ”

After some time, the players finally regained their senses and their conversations gradually turned chaotic. Veteran gamers or those who had

read the introduction had all rushed off to receive quests from NPCs.

Many players began to swarm the outskirts of the village to hunt and kill various kinds of monsters. The horde of players made were like a swarm of locusts, devouring any monster almost as soon as it spawned through simultaneous attacks by 10 or more players from all sides. These sad monsters died miserably, turning into experience points for the players.

About 10 minutes after the initial launch of the servers, the new players' spawning rate finally began to slow down to a stable rate of 1 player per minute. Dream Corporation had predicted that there would be a large number of players logging into the server during launch based on the sales of the gaming helmet. In order to accommodate such a scale, they had created tons of dungeons close to the beginner villages in order to disperse the horde of players. This also served to help prevent a low monster-to-player ratio.

The first thing Zhang Yang did was to leave the spawning point. Because of the second opportunity given to him, he was definitely not going to progress through quests like most players would. He had already outlined his own level-up plans before logging in.

While heading to the village entrance, Zhang Yang opened his Skill List to check his current available skills.

A new Guardian was given two skills, [charge] and [force strike].

[Rush]: Charges toward a target, stunning the target for 2 seconds and gaining 10 Rage. Cooldown time: 30 seconds.

[Force Strike] (Level 1): Performs a powerful strike on the target immediately, dealing 100% of melee damage with a 5% chance to trigger an additional attack. Cost: 30 Rage. Cooldown time: 1 second.
Requirement: Melee Weapon.

Skills with levels could be upgraded through allocating Skill Points into it, to a maximum of Level 10. When skills such as [force strike] was maxed, the chances of triggering an additional attack would be increased to 50%! However, Skill Points would only be given every 10 levels. Even if one had reached the game's maximum level of 300, only 30 Skill Points

would be accumulated, marking Skill Points as precious and rare. Nevertheless, bonus Skill Points could also be obtained through the completion of some Main Quests and Hidden Quests. Wild Elite Bosses would also have a fixed rate of dropping Skill Points, but the difficulty would then be extremely high.

“Those damn wolves killed another 3 villagers today! Are there any warriors who would help us eliminate these cruel beasts?” asked the snow-bearded village elder while pacing back and forth anxiously. If it were not for the ‘Village Elder Hu An’ tag above his head and a yellow exclamation mark, no one would have noticed the difference between him and a real person!

A yellow exclamation mark represented an NPC who had a quest to give.

The extremely lifelike virtual reality system was one of the most attractive aspects of the game, yet it was also the most controversial. Due to its true-to-life representation, players had actually begun pornography businesses, which eventually led the game company to add an additional patch specifically for this matter. Which eventually led the game to create a patch specifically for this matter - players were forbidden to remove their undergarments!

The funny thing was, some countries had actually requested Dream Technology to exclude them from this settings. They believed that allowing pornographic exchange in virtual reality would alleviate the severity of this particular issue in real life.

After Dream Technology complied, the rate of prostitution activities and rape cases significantly lowered in those countries. Amazed with the phenomena, additional countries had also sent their requests to remove this patch.

As a result, players with too much free time had even selected the world’s ‘Top 10 Prostitutes’ in the eight servers. Quite obviously, some unfortunate and innocent female players were dragged into it. For example, Thousand Elegance, who ranked third in the China server was the only daughter of the chairman of Tian Nan Pharmaceutical in real life.

With such wealth, why would she ever get involved in the sexual business? It was plainly ill-intentioned people slandering her and ignorant masses spreading the news which ultimately ruined her innocence in the end.

Of course, these were out of the topic.

Zhang Yang moved forward and said, "Dear respected village elder, I am willing to serve!"

The village elder was overjoyed and said, "Courageous young lad, your kindness will definitely be thanked with God's blessing!"

'Ding! You have received a quest: Eliminate the Wolves!'

Opening the quest log, Zhang Yang checked its description.

[Eliminate the Wolves] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: You have accepted the request of the village elder. Go to the west of the village and kill 20 wolves to keep the village safe!

Progress: Wolves killed. (0/20)

There were 5 quest difficulty levels in 'God's Miracle', S, A, B, C, and D in descending order. The difficulty level was determined by 2 factors: first, the level difference between the player and the monster; second, the difficulty of the monster itself. As for Zhang Yang's quest, since the wolves he had to kill were only Level 1, thus the system had determined the difficulty level of the quest to be low and categorized it as Level D.

After receiving the quest, Zhang Yang then ran to the Blacksmith Shop on the outskirts of the village to learn [smithing] and [mining] from the blacksmith and the miner respectively. A pickaxe immediately appeared in his inventory.

Then, Zhang Yang went to the west of the village and arrived at the Western Wasteland where the wolves gathered.

Some thirty wolves were wandering around the wasteland, occasionally howling into the sky, their howls piercing and frightening.

Zhang Yang withdrew his Beginner Sword and charged towards a targeted wolf. Although his current damage was low, the wolf's HP was

also similarly low, allowing him to kill one wolf with 7 or 8 hits.

In just a matter of minutes, 20 wolves had been slain by him.

Zhang Yang's body flashed in a golden light, boosting him to Level 2. All his attributes had increased by 1 point and he obtained 5 additional Attribute Points (AP).

Zhang Yang had simply distributed the extra AP to 4 Strength and 1 Dexterity, and resumed killing wolves only to stop grinding when he had collected 10 pieces of wolf pelt. At the same time, the novice army had neared and proceeded to occupy the Western Wasteland.

Zhang Yang had no intention to remain here. The most undesirable thing during a war of leveling was to have many players but too little mobs. He then decided to leave immediately.

Before leaving, however, he wandered around and was lucky enough to find an Iron Vein. He then took out his pickaxe, and began mining right away.

Ding! You have used [mining] on an Iron Vein. You have picked up Iron Ore x3. You have gained 1 experience point in [mining]!

Zhang Yang kept the Iron Ore into his inventory, turned, and left the Western Wasteland. He then returned to village elder to complete the quest 'Eliminate the Wolves', obtaining a pair of White-tiered boots and 3000 experience points.

The village elder had still looked troubled, so Zhang Yang continued conversing with him and received a quest called 'Haunted Cemetery'.

[Haunted Cemetery] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Strange things have recently occurred in the cemetery located to the west of the village. Strange noises can be heard whenever night falls! Please find out what has happened!

Progress: Find the source of the haunting. (0/1)

Zhang Yang knew that the quest difficulty had increased because he was about to face a Level 4 monster. A monster relatively stronger compared

to his level, resulting in the system categorizing it as Level C.

With the Beginner Sword in his hands, he ran all the way to the West Cemetery.

The tombstones were arranged well but the place was empty, as there were no monsters around. That would mean that no other players were around either. The cold and silent atmosphere gave off an eerie feeling.

Zhang Yang found a tomb and went inside. Pressing on faintly glowing iron plate, a rumbling noise sounded and a tunnel that was only half a man's height appeared in front of him.

Bending his body, Zhang Yang proceeded into the tunnel towards an open space.

This was a huge underground catacomb, with a passage extending to places far away. Stone chambers lined both sides of the way and faint goosebumps-inducing growls could be heard.

Zhang Yang took a few steps forward and turned into the first stone chamber on the left. With the weak illumination from a torch fire, he was able to see 7 to 8 shabbily-clothed spectres wandering around inside. He took a slight step forward and had immediately entered the Trigger Range of the closest monster. The spectre let out a low cry and attacked Zhang Yang with his fangs and claws.

[Dead Villager] (Normal)

Level: 4

HP: 200

“-11!”

As Zhang Yang slashed with his sword, a white-colored text flickered above the monster's head. In 'God's Miracle', damage produced by normal attacks would be indicated with white text, while skill-inflicted damage was indicated with yellow text. Additionally, self-damage was indicated with red text, while healing with green text. Finally, critical hits or heals were displayed in magnified text.

A Level 4 mob had HP and Defense much higher than that of a Level 1 wolf. Even though a slash from Zhang Yang had caused 11 HP of damage, it was nothing in comparison to the monster's HP of 200!

Chapter 5: Rapid Leveling

Slash!

Zhang Yang bent down and evaded the monster's attack.

If other players witnessed this, they would have yelled, "Impossible!" or something in a similar manner. In traditional gaming, the Evasion Rate was determined by the system. Even if the player could not move an inch, the evasion could still occur when an attack landed on the player.

But in 'God's Miracle', there was no Evasion Rate system. But this did not mean that the player could not evade attacks from monsters or players. The system entrusted this capability to the player, allowing them to make their own decisions.

If the player's reaction was quick enough, the Evasion Rate would also rise proportionately. However, reaction alone did not determine the Evasion Rate of a player. The other factors that contributed to increasing the evasion rate would be Movement Speed, which was subsequently affected by the Dexterity of the player. The higher the Dexterity, the faster the Movement Speed. That was why Zhang Yang's investment in Dexterity had not solely increased his Movement Speed but also his Critical Rate!

Currently, many players were not used to this change while some were even oblivious to it. It was only a month later when a battle recording was uploaded to the forum that the thought of Manual Evasion was gradually made known to these players.

Zhang Yang let out a soft huff. The Beginner Sword in his hands swung every 2 seconds, until his Rage was raised to 30. This led to Zhang Yang activating his [force strike]. Half a minute later, the specter transformed into a pillar of light, signaling its defeat.

'Ding! You have killed undead villagers. 200 EXP gained'

'Ding! You have obtained 5 Copper pieces! You've obtained Linen x2!'

He did not obtain a quest item, but it did not matter as he still had to collect more Linen anyway. And up until now, there were no other players

that stole his kills! The worst kind of situation for those who aimed to boost their levels was a bad monster to player ratio. This place seemed a little too hellish but for Zhang Yang, it was a heavenly spot.

After he collected the loot, he continued luring monsters one-by-one to kill them. In a place where monsters were concentrated, Zhang Yang did not use the skill [charge] as it would easily engage more than two monsters. Based on his capabilities, Zhang Yang could easily evade the simultaneous attacks from seventeen monsters at once. But because he did not possess any Area of Effect (AoE) attacks, he did not want to waste his efforts to do it.

Even though grinding Level 4 monsters was slow, the experience points given was high. In 10 minutes or so, he hit Level 3. After he invested his AP in the same manner as before, allocating 4 to Strength and 1 to Dexterity, he pulled out his sword and continued on slashing.

'Ding! You have obtained Mysterious Black Box'

[Mysterious Black Box] (Quest Item)

Description: A complicated magic is engraved on this box. It carries an ancient and evil aura. Perhaps it is wise to bring it back to Village Elder Hu An to inspect!

Even with his quest completed, he did not want to leave the leveling ground. Now that other players have yet to discover this place, he quickened his pace and continued grinding.

There were a total of twelve chambers and each chamber had seven to eight monsters inside. He cleared each and every one of them. Alone, his killing speed could not keep up with the monster's spawn rate. Usually, after clearing the 3rd chamber, the 1st chamber would spawn new monsters. Zhang Yang trained and trained and only after he reached Level 4 did a second player finally arrive. Following closely, a third player arrived and no sooner, the fourth.

When he reached Level 5, the field had more than twenty players. The monster spawn rate could not keep up with this many players. Zhang Yang was satisfied. He looked around and noticed that the highest leveled

player among them was 3. He had gained an enormous leading advantage.

Zhang Yang consolidated the Linen his inventory as he headed back to the village. 20 pieces a stack and he had 19 stacks and a half which could easily be sold for 18 Silver Coins.

In 'God's Miracle' 1 Gold Coin was worth 100 Silver Coins and 1 Silver Coin was worth 100 Copper Coins, similar to other traditional games.

Zhang Yang gained 3000 EXP and a pair of White-tiered gloves after he had surrendered the Mysterious Black Box to Village Elder Hu An. Normally, the Beginner Village quests would not award any good items. Of course, there were exceptions!

Zhang Yang arrived at a Tailor Shop and found Apprentice Tailor Annie. She had an exclamation mark on her head, indicating an available quest.

"Young adventurer! I need a lot of Linen to help increase my [tailoring] skill. If it is not too much trouble, could you help me collect some Linen?" Annie looked shyly at Zhang Yang, as if she was embarrassed to ask him for his help. This super realistic feature made the Non-Player Characters (NPC) look as though they possessed a conscience. This was also one of the features that made 'God's Miracle' the greatest game in history.

'Ding! Annie has a quest for you: A Generous Gift. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang smiled weakly and selected 'Accept'. He then took out a stack of Linen and turned it over.

"Ah! Thank you so much! You're such a kind person! With these Linen, I will definitely improve my craft and become an official Master Tailor!" Annie replied excitedly.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Generous Gift. Gained 5000 EXP!'

"Young adventurer, to thank you for your generosity, I'm willing to sew you a cape! I am only able craft a Rough Wolf Pelt Cape, but it can boost your abilities!" Annie continued as an exclamation mark appeared on her head.

'Ding! Annie has a quest for you: Annie's Gratitude. Will you accept it?'

[Annie's Thanks] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Your kindness and generosity moved Annie. She has decided to use her ability to make you a Wolf Pelt Cape. But you must gather 10 Wolf Pelts and 40 Linen as material. You can't make porridge without rice, right?

Progress: Wolf Pelt 10/10 Linen 40/40

This was the reason why Zhang Yang first completed the quest 'Clear the Wolves', to hunt for the 10 Wolf Pelts! As for the catacombs, his aim was not only to gather Linen but also to grind levels.

Annie's quests required the player to be Level 5 before it was available. If it was not Zhang Yang but a regular player, they would have sold their Wolf Pelt to an NPC. Even if they kept them, they would not have accumulated that much!

When they had achieved Level 5 and was given this quest, they would have to return to the previous location to kill more wolves. Furthermore, based on the ridiculous number of new players, it would be an impossible task. This was in addition to the fact that Linen was only dropped by humanoid-type monsters, and the spectres were the only humanoid monsters around the village...

Zhang Yang had suffered before, previously he had wasted so much time running up and down to complete this quest. Luckily, that was when the servers had been running for 2 years. The entire Beginner Village was bare and no one was there to compete with him.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Annie's Thanks. Gained 5000 EXP!'

'Ding! You have obtained Wolf Pelt Cape!'

A flashing black, shiny cape appeared in his inventory as he completed the quest. This was the reward for completing a quest, and also the first Black-Steel equipment any player could get from a quest!

[Wolf Pelt Cape] (Black-Steel, Cape)

Vitality: +2

Strength: +1

Dexterity: + 1

Level Requirement: 5

Note: This cape was obviously made by an apprentice tailor. It is an uncommon, ragged and patchy cape! Is this cape even reliable at all?"

Usually, there was yellow text attached to an equipment which included lore for immersion. As for the lore on this cape, the developers must have been trolling to include such a funny description!

Zhang Yang looked at Annie again. This time, a blue-colored exclamation mark appeared on the shy girl's head! In the game, a blue exclamation mark indicated a repeatable quest.

'Young adventurer! I need a lot of Linen to help increase my [tailoring] skill. If it is not too much trouble, could you help me collect some Linen?'

Zhang Yang turned over stacks of Linen, one stack a time.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Generous Gift. (Repeatable)
Gained 5000 EXP!'

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Generous Gift. (Repeatable)
Gained 5000 EXP!'

'Ding! You have...'

With the system notifications appearing repeatedly, Zhang Yang achieved Level 6 when he turned over his twelfth stack of Linen. The exclamation mark on Annie's head finally disappeared.

This repeatable quest was only available for players at Level 5.

In less than half a minute, Zhang Yang leveled up. As of now, the other players should probably be struggling at Level 2 or 3. Even if luck was on their side, they could only be at Level 4. Well, since there were too many people, they were all competing with each other which led to everyone not

being able to obtain sufficient monster kills.

Without stopping, Zhang Yang left the Tailor Shop and headed to the village hall. There, he found Warrior Class Instructor Farion.

"Ahh, this is sad. As a Guardian, you don't even have a shield? You embarrass me!" The instructor who looked like he was in his 30s said in contempt, almost spitting on the ground to emphasize his statement.

Well, it could not be helped. No matter what class a player was at Level 5, they would face this kind of embarrassing moment. For example, if a Berserker came up to him, the man would have said something like, "Ahh, this is sad. As a Berserker, you are actually holding on to a tattered weapon like that. Do you want to be a woodcutter instead?"

And this was the time when the player will receive their first Class Quest and the reward would be a class-specific Black-Steel weapon!

"In the name of the God of War and beyond, you must be tested. Only then would I consider instructing you!" Instructor Farion's face showed disdain, as he passed Zhang Yang a piece of paper. "Greenhorn, you are not to return to me unless you have completed the task listed on the paper!"

'Ding! You have accepted the quest: A Warrior's Trial.'

[A Warrior's Trial] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Fulfill Farion's demands! Greenhorn, you must become a true warrior!

Progress: Iron Ore 3/200

What came next would highly depend on luck! Iron Ores could be mined or bought from other players and the difficulty of this quest was due to the time required to complete it.

This kind of setting would have definitely irked anyone. As beginners, they did not want to have to waste too much time just to complete this. In the near future, the game developers would adjust the completion condition to only 20 Iron Ores.

But Zhang Yang did not have much time to idle, waiting for the adjustments to be implemented. With that much time, he could have possibly leveled up to Level 10 or even 20.

Additionally, there was a chance to trigger the Warrior class' hidden quest.

Chapter 6: Black Panther King

While completing the quest of collecting 200 Iron Ores, the hidden quest could be triggered if there were more than 10 Refined Iron Ores in the inventory!

Refined Iron Ores were rarely found in Iron Veins, and the chances of harvesting it was very low. The probability was so low that when luck was bad, a single piece of Refined Iron Ore could not even be obtained after mining 1000 pieces of Iron Ores.

Naturally, that was not the case with Refined Iron Veins but they were rare and there would always be tough monsters protecting them.

With such low probability, this Warrior class' hidden quest was never triggered by any player until the third year since the game's launch. There was a mining fanatic who did nothing but mining whenever he logged on to the game. He had even stayed at the Beginner Village for half a year!

Coincidentally, this man had chosen Warrior as his class!

And so, this player who had 100 Refined Iron Ores in his inventory had successfully triggered the hidden quest. He then stumbled on his way, finally completing the quest to score an 'Average' and obtained 1 Skill Point as well as a [horizontal sweep] Skill Book.

Just the reward of a single Skill Point was enough to make people jealous, but when he had posted the skill description of [horizontal sweep] on the forum, all the Warrior players were close to tears.

[Horizontal Sweep]: Attacks all nearby enemies, 100% melee damage to every target. Cost: 20 Rage. Cooldown time: 10 seconds. Requirement: Melee Weapon.

Such a powerful skill with AoE damage had fallen into the hands of a player who only mined every day – what a tragedy it was!

Soon, however, players realized that even with an 'Average' score, one had been rewarded so handsomely. What if 'Excellent' or even 'Perfect' scores were achieved? How attractive would the reward be? Unfortunately,

hidden quests have one drawback, that there would never be a second quest of the same kind once it was completed.

There were 4 types of quest score – Bad, Average, Excellent and Perfect. Only quests with S-difficulty, however, had this quest scoring system.

Zhang Yang first went to the Alchemist Shop and sold all the junk items in his inventory. The amount of money he possessed consequently increased to 23 Silver Coins. Scrolling through the item tab of the Alchemist Shop, he found a Beginner Healing Potion commonly known as Red Pot and the Experimental Poison that was Beginner Village exclusive and could only be bought once per player.

[Beginner Healing Potion] (White, Consumable)

Use: Instantly restore 100 HP.

[Experimental Poison] (White, Consumable)

Use: Apply it on a weapon, lasts 60 minutes. Attacks have 30% chance to poison a target, causing 3 HP damage each second for 15 seconds. Can be stacked up to 5 times.

A Red Bottle cost 1 Silver Coin each while the Experimental Poison was more expensive, each costing 10 Silver Coins. Zhang Yang splurged and bought 10 Beginner Healing Potions and 1 Experimental Poison in one go. He then left the Beginner Village and moved towards the mountain region north of the village.

He remembered that there was a Refined Iron Vein spawn point somewhere in a corner of the mountains which refreshed every hour. Each harvesting could result up to 2 or 3 Refined Iron Ores. That was the only Refined Iron Vein spawn point in the entire Beginner Village and it so happened to also be the lair of the Black Panther King!

This was indeed the so called high risk high reward!

The journey was long. Zhang Yang spent more than half an hour to reach a valley surrounded by oddly-shaped rocks.

In the deepest pit of the valley, a mine vein glimmering with a bright

silver glow had grabbed Zhang Yang's attention. That was exactly the only Refined Iron Vein spawn point that would be refreshed in the entire Beginner Village. Lying next to it, though, was a 2-men-tall and 6-men-long giant black panther!

This was the strongest boss in the Beginner Village – the Black Panther King!

[Black Panther King] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 15

HP: 45000

That frightening HP!

Zhang Yang took out the Experimental Poison and smeared it on the Beginner Sword. The rusty iron immediately shone with an emerald glow.

Poisons were supposed to be a unique attribute only available to players with the Thief class but the game producers had wanted to let other players experience the charm of Poison and so had placed a limited amount of Experimental Poison in Beginner Village. As each player could only purchase one bottle, it would not affect the balance of the game.

This had become the key factor for Zhang Yang to slay the boss!

Zhang Yang adjusted himself before charging directly towards the Black Panther King.

Stunned (from [charge])!

Zhang Yang swung his sword and slashed the Black Panther King.

“-6!”

Due to the great level gap and extremely high defense of the boss-level monster, even when Zhang Yang had 36-38 points of basic damage, he had only inflicted a pathetic 6-point damage on the boss. Moreover, with the low damage output, only 3 Rage Points were obtained. Even with the addition of 10 Rage Points from the [charge] attack, he was still far from casting a [force strike]!

Besides, [force strike] could not inflict much damage. The only way to kill this high level and high defense boss was to rely on the power of Poison.

After 2 seconds, the Black Panther King recovered from the momentary stun and waved its claws towards Zhang Yang, enraged.

Zhang Yang calmly dodged and evaded the monster's attack. At the same time, he made another swing of his sword and landed it on the Black Panther King's body.

“-8!”

“Ding! Your attack has caused Black Panther King to be affected by Experimental Poison (1 stack), losing 3 HP every second!”

Poisons were categorized as magic damage and the damage could only be reduced by magic resistance!

Zhang Yang showed a hint of joy. Although the effect of the poison was not too strong, as long as he could inflict another stack within 15 seconds from the first stack, he could slowly accumulate a total of 5 stacks and gain the full effect of the Poison!

The Black Panther King got more furious as its strike missed while in turn, was damaged numerous times by its enemy. It clawed fiercely towards Zhang Yang again.

Dodge!

Zhang Yang performed like a professional player, evading attacks by constantly moving and changing his position. He did not waste any chances to attack, slashing continuously as more damage was inflicted on the boss.

“Ding! Your attack has caused Black Panther King to be affected by Experimental Poison (2 stack), losing 6 HP every second!”

“Ding! Your attack...”

In no time at all, the Experimental Poison's effect had stacked up to 5 times, causing the Black Panther King to lose 15 HP with each passing

second. Although this was ridiculously slow compared to its long HP bar, the boss would eventually die from the poison after 50 minutes if Zhang Yang maintained his game.

Zhang Yang dared not be careless! His feeble HP could not afford even a light hit from the boss. It would have been a confirmed kill if he got hit even once.

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes... 45 minutes!

The HP of the Black Panther King decreased to around 10% and suddenly the creature flashed a blood-red glow. Its originally huge size now grew even larger gaining faster Attack Speed and higher frequency of attacks!

This was what players commonly identified as Berserk – a state where only strong monsters would enter whenever they were near death.

Zhang Yang's nerves were high-strung, fully unleashing his athleticism to dodge the Black Panther King's attacks again and again. At this moment, a character's Movement Speed would obviously be unable to keep up with his reflexes. Only by distributing more Attributes Points on Dexterity would it be possible for him to utilize his advantage to his best ability.

From this point-of-view, Zhang Yang would be more suited to play as a Thief!

Of course, towards the latter part of the game, along with the improvement of equipment quality, the character attributes would become less important and could eventually be ignored. A good equipment would be the better way to properly enhance one's capability.

“-15!”

“-15!”

“-6!”

Dodge!

“-15!”

“-15!”

“-7!”

The damage numbers kept appearing above the Black Panther King's head, Zhang Yang finally managed to drained its HP. As the last “-15” damage from the Experimental Poison flashed, a moan was heard from the Black Panther King as it fell on the ground, died and turned into a white light.

Finally, it was over. Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief. He felt exhausted after nearly an hour of fighting in this intense battle.

“Ding! You have killed the Black Panther King. Gained 90,000 Experience Points (Double Reward for Exceed Level Kill)!”

“Ding! Congratulations! You are the first player to kill a Black-Steel boss. Your glorious achievement will be recorded in history! Do you wish to announce your name so that the world can praise your might?”

Zhang Yang was surprised. Due to the fact that he had joined the game later than anyone else previously, he had missed all the first kill chances thus never encountering an event like this.

His immediate reaction was naturally picking “Yes”. Spreading his name across the server and be admired by all, was this not the sole intention of every online gamer?

Moreover, it would ease his process in creating his guild, attracting more players to join him.

Then another thought came to his mind. He had nothing right now. Besides Fatty Han whom he was still not able to contact, he was completely alone! What if within this period a strong guild had their eyes on him? He was powerless to reject had they sent an invitation. Once he had refused their recruitment, endless harassment and ganking¹ would await him!

This needed no doubt! Zhang Yang remembered that there was a tanker called Endless Starlight previously, whose skills were fairly average. Although he was in a small guild, his dungeon achievements were qualified enough to challenge other large guilds! At first, some of those

guilds sent their invitations to Endless Starlight in requests of a guild transfer. Endless Starlight had liked his guild so much that he had rejected all the invitations.

As a result, 3 big guilds had joined in alliance to attack Endless Starlight and his guild. Within 10 days, his guild members could not continue any longer and had chosen to quit the guild, thus leading to the disbandment of the small guild. Endless Starlight was extremely depressed and had opted to delete his account and protested in the official forum.

The officials had replied that they do not encourage private fights in 'God's Miracle', thus setting level drops and red titles as penalties. Those with the desire to PK, please go to the arena; those who had the wish to kill their enemies, please go to the battlefield; these would definitely not result in the dropping of levels nor equipment. You would have to pay the price for the grudges you had created.

Regardless of reasons, the officials would not partake in the personal grudges amongst players.

Zhang Yang was not only 'playing' the game, he had wanted to use the game to make money, to accumulate enough fortune to fight the Liu Clan and compare to the Lin Clan. He knew the trend of the game, knew when and what material would be valuable, though this item manipulation would require him to be among the leading player's level.

For example, the hottest sale item among Level 20 players – the Beginner Anti-Dark Medicine. Its formula could only be obtained from a Gray-Silver rarity chest.

In order to get the formula, one must possess the capability of getting the Gray-Silver rarity chest! In addition, the formula must be obtained as early as possible. Otherwise, when the timing had passed and everyone had the formula to make the medicine, they would no longer be in demand.

For now, Zhang Yang needed an unhindered environment until he could set up a guild and possess the power to say "no".

Eventually, Zhang Yang chose "Reject"!

Immediately, red text that specifically belong to the server announcement began popping up in the world channel.

“Server Announcement: Player (Name Hidden) has successfully killed the Black Panther King, Level 15 Black-Steel Boss (China Server). This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Please celebrate and cheer for him!”

“Server Announcement: Player (Name Hidden) has successfully killed the Black Panther King, Level 15 Black-Steel Boss (China Server), obtaining 10 Gold Coins from the System Rewards!”

“Server Announcement: Player (Name Hidden) has successfully killed the Black Panther King, Level 15 Black-Steel Boss (China Server). 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded!”

A series of red messages filled the screen, the effect was absolutely amazing!

“Ding! You’ve received an extra reward: Luck +1!”

A Luck Attribute reward! Zhang Yang felt quite surprised. Luck was an attribute that could not be upgraded through any equipment, yet remained very important. This attribute could affect a monster’s drop rate as well as the success rate of upgrading equipment and rune weapons, and of course, the proc2 rate of Lucky Strike.

Looking at the 5 server announcements showing repetitively on the screen, even Zhang Yang had felt a little smug. He then averted his gaze from the announcement and looked towards the drops from the Black Panther King.

On the other side, the sudden server announcements had caused an uproar among players in the China region.

“What the f*ck? I’ve been killing monsters for so long only to reach Level 5 and someone had actually killed a Level 15 boss?”

“Is this for real, a solo fight?”

“F*cking server, I got distracted reading the server announcement and

got myself killed by a monster!”

“F*ck, it must be a hack. How could anyone perform a solo attack on a Black-Steel grade boss!”

“F*cking GM, come out and face God!”

“Give it up, there is no GM in “God’s Miracle”, the only thing monitoring the server is a super computer. Fair and justified!”

“Fair my ass!”

“Justified my ass!”

“No more asses, speed leveling is more important!”

“How do we level when there are more players than monsters. As a Spellcaster, I haven’t even casted any spells. I’ve been hitting them with my wand the whole time!”

“The one above, let’s shake hands. I’m a Cleric and I don’t even dare cast spells. With a two-second delay, there would be no chance to even kill a monster!”

Soon after, someone posted on the forum saying he had deliberately searched for the Black Panther King and discovered that its HP was a shocking 45000. Only one hit to this person who was a Level 5 player had already inflicted around 230 points of damage. How could anyone initiate a solo fight? He then directed his complaint to the game company questioning them of the existence of hacks or bugs.

Almost immediately, the company replied to the post, “No hack could be used in ‘God’s Miracle’, while the case of bugs could never be completely fixed. Based on the playback data of the game, however, the first player to have killed the Black Panther King did not take advantage of any bug.”

No sooner, the forum had livened up. People were wondering and discussing how the player had killed the Black Panther King!

Translator Notes

1 Ganking is a word commonly used in online games and was derived from the phrase ‘ganging up on’. It can be used as a verb or a noun

depending on context and sentence. E.g. Let's gank that idiot. (Verb) // That was a good gank. (Noun)

2 Proc is actually an acronym for a computer programming term, which had become popular through gaming culture. It stands for Programmed Random OCcurrence (the capitalized letters highlighting where proc came from) and is usually used as a replacement for 'activation'. E.g. "What is the proc rate (activation rate) for your Double Attack?" // "My Legendary Wand of the Almighty Garden has a whopping 99% proc rate to conjure garden shrubs around myself! How amazing is that?"

Chapter 7: Crimson Rage

With just one touch, the Black Panther King's loot entered Zhang Yang's inventory.

[Black Panther King's Shin Guard] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +7

Strength: +2

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

[Black Panther King's Chest Plate] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +6

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

[Black Panther King's Armguard] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +3

Dexterity: +2

Level Requirement: 10

Warrior and Knight classes wore heavy armor, Hunter and Thief classes wore leather armor while Spellcaster and Cleric classes wore cloth armor.

Of the 3 equipment Zhang Yang had looted, he could only use 2 of them. It was not too bad but he had to reach Level 10 before he was able to use them.

In 'God's Miracle', helmets, chest plates, and shin guards were the

equipment that would add the most Attribute Points. Gloves, boots, necklaces, capes, and rings added comparatively lower Attribute Points but necklaces and rings would usually have a special effect attribute.

A weapon would only increase physical or magical damage and would not possess any attributes, though some high-grade weapon would have special effects.

The next item loot was not an equipment but a bloody severed head of the panther.

[Bloody Skull] (Black-Steel, Special Item)

Description: This is the skull of the Black Panther King! Take it back and present it to Village Elder Hu An, he will definitely reward you for your contribution!

Bound.

A bound item would be an item that players cannot trade or give away, which meant that the rewards could only be claimed by Zhang Yang.

The corpse of the Black Panther King disappeared instantaneously as soon as Zhang Yang had finished collecting all his battle loots. He then proceeded to mine the Refined Iron Vein.

“Ding! You have used [mining] on the Refined Iron Vein. You have obtained Refined Iron Ore x2. Your [mining] skill has increased by 2 points!”

Zhang Yang grinned as he picked up the two shiny Refined Iron Ores. Due to the ore’s rarity, it had become a form of currency in the game. The ores were glowing with a silver gleam, the beautiful lustrous glow was a feast for the eyes!

He kept his pickaxe and left the valley, beginning to wander around in search of more Iron Ore to mine. The respawn rate of the Refined Iron Ore was 1 hour, so he recorded his time before he left. When the time arrived, he would return to mine again.

On the other hand, the respawn time of the Black Panther King was 24

hours. Zhang Yang would have had acquired enough Refined Iron Ores to even wait for the boss to respawn.

Zhang Yang would gladly be looking forward to battle more respawned bosses as he would not only acquire equipment but also EXP! One boss alone had given him enough EXP to fill up 80% of his experience bar. With just two kills, he could have leveled up. How easy!

Zhang Yang made a few rounds in the mountain for about 4 hours and had already mined the Refined Iron Vein for 5 times, obtaining 11 Refined Iron Ores. Without dilly-dallying, he was grinding and searching for ores. By then, he had reached Level 7 but only had 126 Iron Ores, still quite a distance from reaching 200.

Zhang Yang cursed the developers of the game as he resumed his search of Iron Veins. Checking his mini-map that showed a blinking point not too far from where he was, he rejuvenated and rushed over with the pickaxe in his hand – Upon the acquisition of the [mining] skill, spawning points of Iron Veins around would automatically be indicated on the mini-map.

“Tang! Tang! Tang!”

Zhang Yang swung his pickaxe and began mining the Iron Vein.

A piece of pale silver metal came into view as he lifted the pickaxe. “Eh, looks like my luck is finally here. I’ve finally gotten an Immature Refined Iron Ore!” Zhang Yang exclaimed with mixed feelings. After mining 126 Iron Ores, this was the first time he had actually encountered an Immature Refined Iron Ore, leading him to question his luck.

At this very moment though, he would rather trade his precious Refined Iron Ores for Iron Ore. With the fierce competition to get to the highest level, he could not afford to waste too much time in completing just one quest. Just 10 Refined Iron Ores were enough!

Putting away the ores and his pickaxe, he turned, wanting to leave the place before hearing a clear female voice.

“Hold up mate!”

Zhang Yang was astonished and turned around. Two exceptionally beautiful girls appeared from behind a large boulder.

Both of them did not look any older than 20. The girl on the left wore a dark red leather armor. Perhaps the developers of this game had a domination fetish for the leather armor which was extremely short and tight. The deep V-cut design was so low that almost more than half of both her round voluptuous mounds were exposed.

As she walked, the resulting bounce was definitely a scene that could cause massive nosebleed within seconds should the man not possess sufficient willpower. Her lower half was covered in a leather skirt, tightly wrapping her firm, shapely buttocks. Her legs were long and fair, hips swaying with each step she took.

The other girl wore a plain long dress in white. The dress was very loose and so it had completely hid her figure.

“Me?” Zhang Yang asked pointing at his nose.

The hot girl clad in leather armor asked with a pout, “Is there anyone else here besides you?” Her voice was coy and sweet as honey, sugary enough to disarm anyone.

Zhang Yang might have looked like he was in his 20s but he had gone through reincarnation, experiencing life and death, and thus had become calm and collected, unfazed by much. After he was done admiring the girl clad in leather armor, he averted his gaze to the girl dressed in white and asked, “What is it?”

Just like him, both of the girls had their character information hidden so Zhang Yang did not know how to address them.

“I’m White Orchid, a Cleric from the Crimson Rage Guild,” the girl introduced herself. “She is Thorny Rose, Crimson Rage’s Thief!”

Crimson Rage? Zhang Yang had some impression of this guild. That was because this was the only guild in ‘God’s Miracle’ to have an all-girls team! Their guild master, Thousand Seeker Snow, ranked 4th in the ‘Top 10 List of Godly Magicians’ in the China region. Crimson Team that was

under her lead was also an S -Class professional clan league team.

“Oh!” Zhang Yang casually acknowledged and said, “Well, nice to meet you. See you then!”

“Hey, hey, hey!” Thorny Rose was a little upset seeing that Zhang Yang wanted to leave. In her eyes, men were animals who think with the lower part of their body. She had never encountered a man who had not flocked to her like bees around a honey pot. Even if she chased them away with a broom, there would still be people who would not leave, what more a man who initiated his leave.

Zhang Yang would be the first time Thorny Rose had met a man who brushed her off.

She ran up and held on to Zhang Yang. “We have some business to do with you!”

“What of it?” Zhang Yang knew he did not have much to do with anyone from Crimson Rage.

“We want to buy the Refined Iron Ores that you have just mined!” Thorny Rose huffed.

These two sure had sharp eyes! Not only that, they, too, possessed a knack for business!

Even though ‘God’s Miracle’ had countless players, those who actually did material gathering were of a scarce number. Supplies for materials such as herbs and ores would never keep up with the players’ demands! Now that this profession had yet to become popular, prices of all these materials were extremely high. Especially the rare materials, the price would still remain stable even as the game made progress, never once decreasing!

So far, most of the players only cared about leveling up, not yet realizing the value of these precious materials. Later on, hell would break loose simply over the right to own a spawn point of rare metal veins or herbs.

Yet now, these female players from Crimson Rage had actually begun collecting rare materials. Zhang Yang was quite impressed with their

awareness ahead of time.

“Not selling!” Zhang Yang shook his head, denying their offer. The Refined Iron Ores would only cost a few Copper Coins if sold right now, not even close to 1% of its true value.

Thorny Rose could not help but be surprised that her offer was denied directly by Zhang Yang. She had thought that this man was playing hard to get in order to attract her attention but she was now completely certain that this man had no interest in her.

Since when did I lose my charm? Thorny Rose’s competitive desire to overturn this situation came ablaze. “We can offer you a high price. How about 10 Silver Coins?”

Just as Zhang Yang wanted to reject her offer, he suddenly thought of something and said, “I will not sell them. But if you can trade them with Iron Ores, I might consider!”

White Orchid then replied, “How many Iron Ores do you plan to trade for one Refined Iron Ore?”

Since Zhang Yang was still lacking 72 ores, he said, “Hm. Let’s make it 72 pieces!”

“72 pieces?” The girls looked at each other, pleasantly delighted. They knew the low rate of mining a Refined Iron Ore, mining over 200 to 300 Iron Ores only to come across one Refined Iron Ore. If luck was lacking, the rate could be even lower! It was an absolute worthy steal to trade 72 pieces of Iron Ores for one Refined Iron Ore.

“Is it not enough? How about an extra one?” Zhang Yang took out two Refined Iron Ores from his inventory and with a sincere smile on his face, “2 Refined Iron Ores for 72 pieces of Iron Ores, how about that?”

This man... was a complete idiot!

White Orchid and Thorny Rose shared a look. Without hesitation, they took out 72 pieces of Iron Ores and entered the trading interface to place them there. Once Zhang Yang had placed two of his Refined Iron Ores, White Orchid immediately pressed ‘Confirm’ to complete the transaction.

With a “Ding”, the system notified them that their transaction was completed. The three of them looked at each other, smiling thinking that they had caught a good deal and bade each other farewell.

“Hehehe. And here I thought that stinking man is somewhat different. He was just a little more guarded. For a moment there, I thought I’ve lost my appeal!” Thorny Rose exclaimed with relief patting her pendulous chest after they had walked some distance.

On the other hand, White Orchid replied thoughtfully, “I still think that the man was... how do I put it, he should have been a little more cunning!”

“Hmph, these two pieces of Refined Iron Ores are not fake anyway!” Thorny Rose was nonchalant. “The shield blueprint Ying Ying managed to get her hands on requires 5 of these Refined Iron Ores to be able to craft a Black-Steel grade shield. Our guild will definitely be the first to make it and gain a huge advantage in the first dungeon war.

White Orchid thought about it and had to agree. No matter how hard she could think, these two pieces of Refined Iron Ores were definitely worth more than those Iron Ores!

“Di! Di! Di!” the game messenger rang.

White Orchid quickly answered the call and heard the voice of a woman speaking, “Sister Orchid, Sister Rose, the Guild Master has just ordered everyone to bring all the Iron Ores to the Village Hall!”

Thorny Rose and White Orchid exchanged a look and felt ominous.

“Xiao Qing, what does the Guild Master want the Iron Ores for?” White Orchid asked.

The person on the other end of the line had answered immediately, “The Warrior class quest requires 200 pieces of Iron Ores. Mei Mei is waiting for you!”

“Oh – No!” Both White Orchid and Thorny Rose cried at the same time.

“Ah that evil man, he actually dared to scam me! Don’t ever let me see him again. See if I will entice him with all my might and then send him off

flying with a kick. If I didn't make him cry and broken-hearted for at least a few years, I shall not be named Jiang!" Thorny Rose spat spitefully, hating Zhang Yang with a burning passion. The thing was, she was actually more annoyed that her usually alluring charm did not work at all this time!

After a while of seething with anger, she began to feel thankful that she was not the only one deceived and said, "Sister Orchid, I'm all boobs and no brain. What's your excuse?"

"..."

Chapter 8: Gathering Materials

Zhang Yang jogged all the way back to Beginner Village and found Warrior Class Instructor Farion. Panting for breath, he could not help but miss the teleport reagent that could only be bought after Level 10 in the Capital.

“Greenhorn, I’ve got to admit that I’ve underestimated you!” Farion was still wearing a smug face as he received the Iron Ores delivered by Zhang Yang. “But you’re still just a greenhorn! Here! Take your shield and get out!”

Farion threw over a shield gleaming with black luster to Zhang Yang.

“Ding! You have completed the Class Quest: A Warrior’s Test. Gained 5,000 Experience Points!”

[Thick Iron Shield] (Black-Steel, Shield)

Defense: +10

Vitality: +5

Level Requirement: 5

“Wait!” Farion’s smug expression had suddenly changed into a surprised one. “You actually have Refined Iron Ores?”

“That’s right, honorable great master!” Zhang Yang took out 10 Refined Iron Ores from his inventory and handed them to Farion, knowing full well that he had successfully triggered the hidden quest.

“What beautiful luster, it reminds me of the diamonds in Dofus Mountain!” Farion reveled, his gaze towards the Refined Iron Ores in his hands as indulgent as a lover’s.

Only after a short moment did Farion say, “I was once a blacksmith before I became a great warrior! Greenhorn, these Refined Iron Ores made my hands tingle. If you agree, I would like to use them to make an indestructible blade!”

“As you wish, honorable great master!” Zhang Yang immediately nodded

and agreed.

“Very well!” Farion was delighted and said, “However, just these Refined Iron Ores are insufficient, you will also need to collect another 3 types of materials!”

“Ding! Farion has a quest for you: Materials to Craft a Blade (I). Will you accept it?”

“Accept!” Zhang Yang checked the quest log immediately after he had accepted the quest.

[Material to Craft a Blade (I)] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Farion needs the Incisors of the Ivory Fanged Boar as crafting material for the blade. It is said that these monsters appear in the Watermelon Farm south of the village.

Progress: Collect Incisors of Ivory Fanged Boar 0/10

Ivory Fanged Boar. That would be a Level 10 monster, would it not? Zhang Yang did not leave immediately. Instead, he talked to Farion again and learned Level 5 Warrior skills: [block] and [shield bash].

[Block] (Level 1): Raise your shield, blocking one frontal attack from the enemy for 1 second. After a successful block, it will cause 100% damage to the enemy, generating a huge amount of aggro. Builds some Rage. Cooldown time: 10 seconds. Requirement: Shield.

[Shield Bash]: Bash the target with your shield, dealing 200% damage and generating a huge amount of aggro. Can only be casted after a successful Block. Cost: 10 Rage Points. Requirement: Shield.

Block would definitely be a Guardian’s most divine skill! When the cooldown time reduces to 1 second after leveling it up to Level 10, be it the immunity to offense or the burst damage that would come right after with a [shield bash], its might would be utterly terrifying!

After equipping himself with the Thick Iron Shield, Zhang Yang went to Village Elder Hu An and handed him the Black Panther King’s skull.

“Ahh! Is this – is this the skull of the Black Panther King? This damned

beast which had killed so many of our villagers!” Elder Hu An was absolutely delighted, looking at Zhang Yang with elation, “Praise the Lord, you are indeed a brave and kind young man, all of the villagers will be so very grateful to you!”

“Ding! You have completed the quest: Removing the Villagers’ Threat. Gained 10,000 Experience Points!”

“Ding! Your Human Race Reputation has increased by 200 points!”

200 Reputation Points! Zhang Yang pursed his lips. Reputation had been a confounded system in the game. Each race had their corresponding reputation divided into 7 levels in ascending order – Hostile, Unfriendly, Neutral, Friendly, Respect, Admire, and Worship. If a player’s reputation level in a specific race is lower than Neutral, he would induce attacks from that specific race whenever he entered their territory; if the reputation level had reached Friendly or higher, the player would be able to purchase items corresponding to their reputation level. Basically, the higher the reputation of a person towards that specific faction, the better the quality of items one would be able to purchase!

Zhang Yang arrived at the south of the village. There were wild boars everywhere gnawing watermelons in the 3 existing watermelon farms. To the side was a farmhouse and a white bearded man pacing around anxiously.

“Elder one, is there anything I can do for you?” Zhang Yang ran forward to strike a conversation as soon as he saw the yellow exclamation mark above the NPC’s head.

“Look at those damn wild boars trashing my watermelon farms! Kill them all and I will reward you!” the old man bellowed.

[Kill the Boars] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Kill those damn Ivory Fanged Boars!

Progress: Kill Ivory Fanged Boar 0/10

[Ivory Fanged Boar] (Normal)

Level: 10

HP: 500

There were another 4 or 5 player parties in the watermelon farms. As the Ivory Fanged Boar's level was slightly higher, most of the Level 5 players could not go solo when fighting the monsters and thus formed parties. Even so, the huge level gap had still made killing a single boar difficult for a team of 5.

These people showed no intention of leaving even with their slow pace. To them, at least this place still had monsters and was far better than places where a freshly spawned monster would instantly be stabbed by more than 10 swords simultaneously.

A few of them had started laughing when they saw Zhang Yang coming alone.

"Fool, are you seriously grinding here alone? A donkey must have kicked your brains out!"

"Haha, I wonder how many donkey kicks does it take to make one so stupid."

"Let's just wait and see how he's gonna get his ass kicked by the wild boars!"

Of course, there were kind hearted players too.

"Buddy, the monsters around here are all Level 10. You can't do it."

"Our team's Spellcaster is about to leave. There is a slot in our party, how about joining us?"

Most of them seemed to have overlooked the shield on Zhang Yang's back. It would have been a reward received only after one had completed the Level 5's Class Quest! While there were an incredible number of players who had already reached Level 5 currently, the number of players who had cleared the Class Quest could only be counted with less than one hand!

Zhang Yang smiled and rejected their party invitations. He gripped his

Beginner Sword and moved towards the closest wild boar. He then activated the skill [charge] when he was in its effective range.

Stunned!

“-30!”

Streams of blood gushed out as Zhang Yang swung his weapon and slashed the boar.

“Hu! Hu! Hu!” the Ivory Fanged Boar recovered and roared angrily. It stabbed towards Zhang Yang with both its sharp fangs.

Zhang Yang activated the skill [block].

“-27!” Successful block and counterattack!

“-64!” [shield bash]!

“-31!” Another normal attack!

“-29!” Rage increased to 30 points, [force strike]!

Dodge!

[block] entered into cooldown. Zhang Yang easily evaded the attack of the wild boar with just a swift move – a Level 15 Black Panther King could not even come into contact with Zhang Yang, let alone a common Level 10 monster!

In just 4 to 5 seconds, Zhang Yang had delivered 181 damage points, decreasing one third of the boar’s HP. All of the players could only stare at him wide-eyed on the sideline as if they had seen a ghost. Those damage numbers were unbelievable! Was this dude really a Guardian?

Guardians actually had pretty good nuking¹ power. The keypoint was the skill [block]! The timing for using [block] would then be the key factor during the early stages to tell the difference between an outstanding Guardian and a regular Guardian!

Characters would gain an additional effect after activating [block], allowing the player to block another attack for the following 1 second! Since the follow-up effect only lasted for one second, if the skill was

activated too early and the attack had yet to come, the effect would have had disappeared by then! And if the activation was too late...

[block] would have been invalid, thus the devastating [shield bash] that followed could not have been activated.

Of course, when [block] had reached Level 10, these restrictions would have been nulled so one could easily keep spamming² the button.

Zhang Yang had been changing his position with ease until [block]'s cooldown time had been fulfilled. He then activated another chain-skill. The Ivory Fanged Boar wailed and died with a white flash, granting Zhang Yang 500 EXP. His hands reached out and with luck, he had gotten an Incisor!

“F*ck, this guy is mighty!”

“Yeah, he killed it so quickly and did not even suffer from a single drop of HP!”

“I just finally realized that you can evade a monster's attack by moving around!”

“Eh, I thought it's a given that a character depends on Evasion, Parry and Block to gain attack immunity?”

“Bro, this is a virtual reality game, not a traditional online game. Gotta learn more!”

“ ... ”

The surrounding players were having a heated conversation. Luckily, Zhang Yang had chosen to hide his name, otherwise he would have gotten famous here. Still, there were nosy players who had used the in-game recorder to record how Zhang Yang had fought the monster and posted it to the forum titling the post, ‘Unexpected Godly Player, Unscathed Killing’, raising a public commotion.

Everyone was but a beginner at this current stage of the game. How could they not be impressed when they saw Zhang Yang's advanced skills that was at least 5 years ahead of the current game's standard? Within a

short period, countless players had turned Zhang Yang into their idol worshipping him.

Zhang Yang killed the wild boars consecutively. Although his killing speed was considerably slow compared to a 5-men party, he was killing without suffering from damages, and thus, there was no need for him to rest, increasing his efficiency.

About 7 or 8 minutes later, he had already slain 10 wild boars but had only collected 7 Incisors, requiring him to continue grinding.

Another 5 minutes had passed before Zhang Yang finally succeeded in collecting 10 Incisors. He first submitted the quest 'Kill the Boars' and rushed back to meet Farion. Behind him, the players had long been dumbfounded, their own fights long forgotten as they only cared about observing Zhang Yang's fight.

"Well done. You can now start searching for the second material!" Farion granted Zhang Yang 5,000 EXP and continued instructing.

"Ding! Farion has a quest for you: Material to Craft a Blade (II). Will you accept it?"

A new entry was added to the quest log after Zhang Yang had accepted the quest.

[Material to Craft a Blade (II)] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: There is a pack of Fire Elementals wandering in the Scorched Valley. Upon death, the Fire Elementals condense into potent Refined Fire Essences! It was said that the Scorched Valley is at the end of the road towards the west of the village.

Progress: Collect Refined Fire Essence 0/3

Towards the opposite direction!

Zhang Yang sighed and followed the quest instructions, going west from Beginner Village. After about half an hour, he finally arrived at the valley, ground burnt and fuming soot. Flaming red elemental monsters wandering around his destination.

[Fire Elemental] (Normal)

Level: 10

HP: 500

This place was too far from Beginner Village and no quest would have led anyone here, so there were no one around besides Zhang Yang.

Let the killing begin!

*

Translator Notes

1 Nuke (Nuking) is a term used by gamers to describe a massive amount of damage. Nuking an enemy would generally mean killing it in one go, usually to prevent them from reacting, whether by healing, fleeing or retaliating. E.g. “I was nuked and died on the spot! I didn’t even know who did it!”

2 Spam (Spamming) is a term used by gamers to describe repeated casting of a spell or usage of an item. It is somewhat similar to, but is not an abuse of the system to perform a specific task. Players could be dealing good damage by spamming their highest damage dealing skill, or spamming potions to heal while tanking a high damage-dealing enemy. E.g. “Stop spamming potions and fight me like a real man!”

Chapter 9: A Handsome Reward

This second quest had only asked for 3 Refined Fire Essences but that did not mean that this quest was easy to complete.

In fact, Zhang Yang had only managed to farm his first Refined Fire Essence after 20 minutes!

Farming the second Refined Fire Essence was rather quick, as it only took the following 5 minutes. The third one though, took him a whole hour.

“What luck!” Zhang Yang examined his hands as he walked back to the village.

He checked his EXP gauge and realized it had already reached 73%, not far from advancing to the next level. After all, he had been going beyond his level and grinding on Level 10 monsters. The EXP obtained were noticeably much more.

Returning to Farion to submit the quest, the man had rewarded him a handsome amount of 5,000 EXP and said, “Young warrior, you’ve completed the task I entrusted you with, again and again, leaving me an impression that you do have slight talent! Alright, this is the last material needed – The Frost Giant’s Soul! Different Frost Giants would have different power in their souls and of course, different strength levels. You may select the difficulty to challenge according to your own capability and courage!”

“Ding! You may choose one of the following difficulty levels to complete for this quest. The higher the difficulty level, the better the reward! Please choose: Extremely Difficult, Hard, Average, Easy!”

“Extremely Difficult!” Zhang Yang decided without hesitation. Obviously, the chance of obtaining ‘Perfect’ score would only be available in this level of difficulty.

“Haha, a bold selection! I hope that you’re as what you’ve chosen to face, greenhorn!” Farion passed Zhang Yang a sparkling crystal-like rock. “Take

this Frost Stone and place it in the center of the magic circle in the basement. The circle will be activated automatically and it will summon the Frost Giant!”

“Ding! You have accepted the quest: Materials to Craft a Blade (III)!”

“Ding! You have obtained the item, Frost Stone!”

[Materials to Craft a Blade (III)] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: To obtain the last material, you must use the Frost Stone to summon the Frost Giant, defeat it, collect its soul and pass it to Farion. This quest must be completed alone. The quest will fail automatically once a second player gains aggro from the Frost Giant.

Progress: Collect Frost Giant’s Soul 0/1

S-Level quest, it looked like the time to obtain the ultimate reward had finally arrived!

The basement was situated underneath the Village Hall. Zhang Yang spent 5 to 6 minutes to reach the base walking through a winding path. He had wondered about the purpose of this basement previously when he first played the game. He had finally gotten his answer now.

The basement was lit with torches all around and was very spacious. Right in the center was an intricately drawn magic circle. Zhang Yang took out the Frost Stone from his inventory and mounted it to the empty hollow within the circle.

“Hong!”

Endless white light emanated from the ground, dazzling and captivating! A low voice then echoed in the basement.

“Who...Who summons Malatog! Malatog was slumbering. Whoever awakes Malatog must receive a frosty punishment!”

“Hong!”

A giant with a height of 6 to 7 men appeared in the middle of the magic circle. Its entire body was a sky-blue color and it exuded penetrating chilliness, dropping the basement’s temperature by several degrees within

seconds!

“You – a mere mortal, dares to disturb Malatog’s sweet dream! Malatog will crush you!” The blue giant immediately noticed Zhang Yang and threw its fist towards him.

[Malatog] (Elite)

Level: 10

HP: 5000

Zhang Yang stepped back and used [charge] on it. In an instant, a starry effect appeared above Malatog’s head indicating it had been stunned.

“-18!”

He swung his sword only to inflict a pitiful 18-point damage! Such strong defense!

It was a shame that the effects of the Experimental Poison had long since disappeared and as the poison could only be bought once per player, Zhang Yang would have to rely on himself to slowly defeat it.

“Despicable ant, you’ve angered Malatog!” Malatog lifted his fist and threw it at Zhang Yang again in rage.

“[block]!”

“-17!”

“Such a thick-skinned creature!” Zhang Yang murmured, raising his shield as he activated [shield bash].

“-54!”

Malatog let out a cry of pain and anger after receiving the blow. It then raised its big foot and took a step forward, wanting to stomp on Zhang Yang.

“-19!”

“-19!”

Although the resulting damage from one normal attack followed by a

[force strike] was not much at all, it had instead made Malatog even angrier.

Battling someone as agile as Zhang Yang, it would seem like Malatog was playing a game of Whack-a-Mole. Even though he had the advantage with his outstanding strength, he could hardly land a hit on Zhang Yang but instead kept receiving damage.

“90%! 80%! 70%! 60% 50%!”

“Puny mortal! Taste the Frost God’s rage!” Malatog suddenly crouched and slammed the ground with both his fists. Immediately, countless spear-like ice spikes pierced up through the ground.

Zhang Yang had never encountered such a monster, so naturally he would not have known what kind of attacks it would use. Even though he was already cautious the moment it spoke, because he would never have known what to expect, how was he supposed to figure out his strategy to counter?!

In an instance, Zhang Yang had maximized his athletic skill to the best he could, skillfully dodging each icicle with grace.

“Ding! You have been attacked by an icicle. You have lost 30 HP!”

“Ding! You have been attacked by an icicle. You have lost 30 HP!”

“Ding...”

The system notification had rang 5 times consecutively in his ears. Even though Zhang Yang had pushed his speed to the limit, he was still unable to be at his best due to the character’s own agility constraint. As a result of it, he had received damage from 5 icicles and had his HP reduced tremendously.

And this was Zhang Yang. If it had been someone else, they would have been completely annihilated by this monster’s special skill.

Zhang Yang only had a total HP of 190 and it had been instantly reduced to 40. He tapped a bottle of Beginner Healing Potion. A “+100” green text floated across his head and his HP bar instantly went up again.

The Red Pot had a 30-second cooldown time, so it was fortunate that the move by Malatog did not appear frequently, otherwise the cooldown period would have been too long.

“Malatog will smash your bones to smithereens!” the Frost Giant stood up again and everything returned to how it was.

“40%! 30%! 20%! 10%!”

Zhang Yang began to feel anxious. There would be a chance for a monster to turn ‘berserk’ when its HP had fallen to 10%. Once they had entered the state, their attack activation rate would drastically increase, and that would be the most dangerous part of a battle. Even if Zhang Yang was highly skilled, he would not have been able to withstand 3 to 4 continuous waves of a boss’ special attack.

Luckily, it did not turn red!

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief and thought to himself. This quest could only be completed by a single player. The monster’s skill was already capable of killing a player instantly, if it had entered Berserk state, how would it be possible to clear?

“3%! 2%! 1%!”

“Despicable mortal! Malatog will return! Malatog will...!” As the last drop of HP vanished, Malatog was finally defeated. Its gigantic body fell with a thundering thud.

“Hu!” Zhang Yang exhaled a puff of air. He finally completed it!

The magic circle reactivated and the Frost Giant’s corpse began to shrink until it finally became a small blue marble the size of a regular fist.

“So this is the Frost Giant’s Soul?” Zhang Yang picked up the marble as he scanned the entire room. “F*cking hell! How come there aren’t any drops when I’ve just killed a freaking boss!”

Zhang Yang returned from the basement annoyed and handed over the marble to Farion.

“Young man, you’ve proven your strength and ability. I have to admit,

you would be an amazing Warrior in the future!” Farion waved his hand invitingly and said, “Come with me. Now that all the materials have been gathered, I will craft you an indestructible blade!”

“Ding! You’ve completed the quest : Materials to Craft a Blade (III). Gained 10,000EXP!”

Still, he had yet to receive the ultimate reward. Zhang Yang patiently followed Farion to the village’s Blacksmith Shop.

Farion and the owner greeted each other and he took out all sorts of materials. “Dang! Dang! Dang!” Farion lifted the metal hammer and began to smith.

Fortunately since this was a game, everything progressed very quickly. Within half a minute, a shiny sharp sword had appeared in Farion’s hands.

“Take this, young warrior. Let it be your most loyal companion and drink up your enemies’ blood!” Farion tossed the sword to Zhang Yang and retrieved a red-colored book, “This is filled with skills I’ve learned in battles. Now, I shall give it to you!”

“Ding! You have obtained the item Refined Iron Sword!”

“Ding! You have obtained the skill book ‘Horizontal Sweep’!”

“Ding! You have completed the Hidden Class Quest: Farion’s Request. Quest Score: Perfect! Gained 20,000 EXP!”

“Ding! You have obtained the reward: 1 SP!”

“Ding! Congratulations on achieving Level 8. All attributes +1 and obtained 5 free AP!”

“Ding! Congratulations! You are the first player to complete a hidden quest and to obtain a ‘Perfect’ score. This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Do you wish to announce your name so that the world can praise your mightiness?”

Announcing it again? Zhang Yang gave it some thought but eventually still decided on “Reject”.

In an instant, the neglected quiet world channel was once again filled with the server announcement's red text!

“Server announcement: Player (Name Hidden) is the first to have successfully completed a hidden quest and obtained a ‘Perfect’ score (China Server). This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Please celebrate and cheer for him!”

“Server announcement: Player (Name Hidden) is the first to have successfully completed a hidden quest and obtained a ‘Perfect’ score (China Server), obtaining 10 Gold Coins from the System Rewards!”

“Server announcement: Player (Name Hidden) is the first to have successfully completed a hidden quest and obtained a ‘Perfect’ score (China Server). 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded!”

“Ding! You’ve received an extra reward: Luck +1!”

Within a day, the server had flashed red twice, causing commotion among the players in the entire China region once again.

“That is just crazy! He actually completed a hidden quest?”

“God! He even got a ‘Perfect’ score! I saw a statement on the official website saying the difficulty setting in achieving a ‘Perfect’ score could only be completed by one in a million!”

“I wonder what the rewards are.”

“Fucking shit server, why have I not encountered a hidden quest?”

“Face problem!”

“Character problem!”

“Wash your hands after taking a dump!”

“Eh, just throwing it out there. Which hand do you use to wipe your ass after taking a shit?”

“Left hand!”

“Right hand!”

“Right hand!”

“I use toilet paper! You guys have a weird fetish!”

Just like that, the conversation took a rather interesting yet different turn very quickly.

Zhang Yang opened his inventory to check the rewards from this quest.

[Refined Iron Sword] (Black-Steel, One-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 16 – 24

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

Level Requirement: 10

-- At present, most players were still grinding tirelessly to obtain rewarded weapons from completing the Level 5 Class Quest while Zhang Yang had already obtained a Level 10 Black –Steel rarity weapon! If word got out, those players who had been grinding relentlessly would definitely be devastated!

[Horizontal Sweep] (Skill Book)

Use: Grants the skill “Horizontal Sweep”

Bound.

Zhang Yang was a little furious. He had obviously gotten a ‘Perfect’ score yet his reward was similar to those of ‘Average’ score? This was ridiculous! Zhang Yang tapped the skill book against his body and a new skill appeared in his skill window after giving out a bright light.

[Horizontal Sweep]: Attacks all nearby enemies, dealing 200% melee damage to every target. Cost: 20 Rage. Cooldown time: 10 seconds.
Requirement: Melee Weapon.

200% melee damage?!

Zhang Yang’s eyes glinted. He clearly remembered the [horizontal sweep] which the mining fanatic had gotten could only deal 100% melee damage!

Oh perfect! Now this reward would have been the right match for

‘Perfect’ score!

Hooray!

Chapter 10: Rogue Clan

Zhang Yang had 2 upgradable skills now but the performance of a maximized [force strike] skill was low with only a 50% chance of triggering an additional attack. Without much hesitation, he added a valuable Skill Point on the divine [block] skill.

[Block] (Level 2): Raise your shield, blocking one frontal attack from the enemy for 1 second. After a successful block, it will cause 100% damage to the enemy, generating a huge amount of aggro. Builds some Rage. Cooldown time: 9 seconds. Requirement: Shield.

The reduction in cooldown time of the skill [block] had not only increased the attack immunity but more importantly, had also increased the usage frequency of [shield bash]. This was of utmost importance to Zhang Yang.

All the substantial quests in Beginner Village had already been completed. The next objective would be to level up to Level 10 and then proceed onwards to the Capital!

Zhang Yang had no other option now but to solely depend on grinding through monster killing. He had come to the Scorched Valley where there were the fewest players, intending to grind here until he reached Level 10. With [horizontal sweep], his current grinding ability had risen to a whole different level, making it harder for other players to catch up!

Before entering the valley, Zhang Yang was surprised to see that there were now more than 10 players at the mouth of the valley. All of them did not hide their names and shared the same name tags of 'So-and-So, Rogue Clan' above their heads, most of them appearing to be Level 5 – 6 players.

“Rogue Clan!” Zhang Yang could not help but grit his teeth.

Rogue Clan was a guild. There were Guild Master Rogue Bunny, Vice Guild Master Bunny Bro Two, and following their seniority ranks, it would be Bunny Bro Three and Bunny Bro Four... In short they were all bunny brothers! This guild was very popular in Zhang Yang's previous life but it was not because their guild was strong, it was because everyone in this

guild was a hooligan!

Guild Master Rogue Bunny was said to be a gangster too in real life. The people in his guild were originally his gang members and were regularly involved in organized crime such as cheating, abducting and bullying. This rogue guild had never changed its objective even upon entering the game. As long as it was beneficial to them, they were willing to do anything, making up whatever scoundrels tricks they could think of along the way!

When the guild Clear Water was going against Liu Wei's guild, Myth, Liu Wei had hired Rogue Clan to bash members of Clear Water. Those rogues had spammed deliberate messages of insults and slanders in the Capital every day, using words which were extremely derogatory and vile that would even disgust one to nausea!

Rogue Bunny had even personally led dozens of men and stationed themselves at the entrance of the Clear Water Guild. Whenever a female player came out, they would take off their pants, slap their asses and talk dirty, an absolute demonstration of the absence of their ethics!

The frustrating part was that the Clear Water Guild was not powerful enough, and thus could only set up their base in the Capital's zone instead of freely picking their own base outside. This was primarily because PK among players was restricted in the Capital.

Unable to do anything, Zhang Yang and the others could only watch these scoundrels behave the way they were! During that time, the situation had caused hundreds of female players to not go online for days, indirectly affecting the morale of male players.

Zhang Yang had hated these guys for a while now. Just as he wanted to draw his sword and PK, he aborted this idea reluctantly.

--Beginner Village was also protected by the system; players were unable to engage one another in a PK.

"Rogue Clan is camping this field. Other players leave the field immediately or we will kill you back to Level 0!" a player with the name Bunny Bro Nine spoke arrogantly when he saw Zhang Yang walking towards them.

Ah the arrogance! With just a few Level 5 or 6 players, they had wanted to take over the entire field!

“Boss, there is really a boss inside! I think it’s called Firebender Barr, a Black-Steel Boss! But there is a player fighting it now!” a Thief player appeared suddenly from [sneak] mode and said excitedly.

“Boss is indeed Boss, knowing there is a boss inside even before entering, awesome!” one of his subordinate pandered.

“Haha!” Rogue Bunny laughed, all conceited and superior, “Let us have this boss killed and have the system issue an announcement! By then, the Rogue Clan will be renowned across the world. We can then recruit thousands of brothers and become rich!”

“As expected of Boss, brilliant, valiant and prophetic! You made us all sell our things to buy these gaming helmets and play the game as a group. No one but Boss would have been so bold!” another man sang his praise.

“However, Boss, I’ve heard that the server only makes announcements for being the first to kill a Black-Steel Boss...” one of his men stated.

“Nonsense! You dare doubt Boss’ words, was your head kicked by a donkey?” Bunny Bro Eight lectured him immediately.

Rogue Bunny threw out a kick and sent that player who objected flying, “If you were so smart, you wouldn’t need me as your boss now, would you?”

“That’s right, Boss is brilliant!”

“Peerless, handsome Boss!”

“Almighty Boss!”

Rogue Bunny shifted his gaze and saw Zhang Yang watching their little show by the side. He then angrily said, “You there, fool, why are you still here? Do you want to be killed back to Level 0?”

These people did not seem to know that the Beginner Village had PK restrictions. An idea came to Zhang Yang’s mind and he grinned, “Kill me back to Level 0? Hehe, come and try, I am insusceptible to damage!”

“Haha, insusceptible to damage, in your dreams!” Bunny Bro Four raised his sword to slash towards Zhang Yang’s head.

Zhang Yang did not move nor evade but welcomed the sword with a smile!

“Sha!”

The Beginner Sword cut right through Zhang Yang’s head but it had seemed to be cutting through a shadow. Zhang Yang was completely unaffected.

-- With the protection of ‘System God’, every player was the same.

Bunny Bro Four was incredulous, he waved his sword a few more times but it was the same, the system had nullified the attack.

Rogue Bunny and his gang gasped in shock, their eyes staring wide as saucers.

“Boss! He really is insusceptible to damage!” Bunny Bro Five shouted.

Rogue Bunny immediately replaced his overbearing and arrogant expression with a smile and said, “Friend, I... I am Rogue Bunny, Guild Master of Rogue Clan. Brother, let’s be friends!”

“Get out of my way! I’m gonna go f*ck the boss!” Zhang Yang said with an intentional rough tone.

“Wait, brother, wait!” Rogue Bunny stopped Zhang Yang at once, his face wearing a smile of flattery, “Don’t be so spiteful!”

Zhang Yang sneered and said, “You want in on my indestructible body?”

“Brother, how did you get this indestructible body? Is there any secret?” Rogue Bunny asked in earnest.

Zhang Yang looked as though he was so very contented. He seemed like he wanted to share it with them, yet had to hold himself back, all while looking at Rogue Bunny and smiling.

Rogue Bunny was restless, “Brother, bro, our acquaintance is fate. Don’t be so selfish!”

Zhang Yang put up a mysterious front, carefully peeking around. Rogue Bunny and his followers came nearer and surrounded him, wearing the same expression.

“Actually this secret is very simple. All you need to do is to chant the spell!” Zhang Yang exposed his ‘secret’.

“What spell?” more than 10 people asked simultaneously.

“Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee!” Zhang Yang lowered his voice and said.

“Really?”

“If you don’t believe it, try it out!” Zhang Yang shrugged.

Rogue Bunny randomly pointed at one of his men and said, “Come, chop me!”

That man eagerly picked up his weapon and wanted to swing it—

“Wait!” Rogue Bunny quickly shouted, “I haven’t chanted the spell!”

He adjusted his expression and chanted loudly: “Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee!”

“Come on!”

“Here I come!”

That man, too, roared before he gave a chop with his sword.

Null!

Rogue Bunny was delighted, he immediately laughed out loud and said, “It really worked! Haha, indestructible body!”

“Boss, now that we have this secret, we can kill any boss we want and wipe out anyone we wish?”

Rogue Bunny waved his arm mightily and said, “Let’s go, follow me and let’s kill the boss!”

“Wait!” Zhang Yang quickly said, “The duration of the spell is very short, so you have to keep chanting. It may also not work if your voice is not loud enough!”

“OK, we got it! You can fuck off!” Rogue Bunny resumed his wretched

character, burning the bridge after he had crossed the river. He laughed maniacally and led his men towards the valley.

More than 10 players rampaged without a care and gained the aggro of 7 to 8 Fire Elementals shortly.

These people were fearless. Each of them loudly chanted “Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee” and started to fight the monsters.

Players of Level 5-6 versus Level 10 monsters. As a result...

Complete annihilation!

Some ten minutes later, these people resurrected and came back running.

“Boss, why is it not working?” Bunny Bro Eight complained.

Rogue Bunny thought about it and said, “Maybe we didn’t chant loud enough? Let’s try it again!”

“Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee!”

“Go!”

Again, all of them got completely wiped out.

Another 10 minutes later, the Rogue Clan members ran back after resurrecting.

“Boss, I think we have been fooled! Doesn’t the spell sound like ‘we are all stupid’?” a man voiced his suspicion.

“F*ck you! You are the stupid one!” Rogue Bunny was mad, “Chant it louder, go!”

“We are all stupid!”

They went on in batches.

Zhang Yang watched them for a while in a hidden spot at the mouth of the valley, laughing until his belly ached. He waved his Beginner Sword and began his grinding journey.

The first time he had come here to collect Refined Fire Essences, he was

alone. So before he could even enter one-tenth of the valley, monsters had already spawned behind him. Therefore he did not have to continue moving inwards.

Recalling that the members of Rogue Clan had said that there was a boss in the valley, Zhang Yang got excited and made his way in as he grinded.

As he reached the middle of the valley, Zhang Yang came across a sacrificial altar that took up a lot of space. Complicated magic circles were engraved in the middle of the altar, with white rays flowing out of it.

In the center of the sacrificial altar, a crimson-colored Fire Elemental was fighting an elf girl clad in a snow-white sorcerer's robe. The other Fire Elementals were far away from the altar.

The Fire Elemental currently engaged in the battle was significantly bigger than the other ordinary Fire Elementals. Its color was also much deeper. Each attack delivered by the Fire Elemental carried a dazzling fire glow. That elf girl was obviously in a disadvantageous position. She kept dodging but was still cornered and attacked. Her HP bar reaching an alarming level!

[Firebender Barr] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 10

HP: 2286/5000

[Calina] (Normal)

Level: 10

HP: 537/2000

Chapter 11: Main Story Quest

Rogue Clan, those bloody idiots!

Zhang Yang could not help but curse. This was not some PvE fight, it was obviously two NPCs fighting against each other.

“Young warrior, please help me!” The elf girl Calina cried for help when she had noticed Zhang Yang’s presence.

“Thou shan't believe this devil, mortal!” Firebender Barr commanded with a low voice. “Leave! I command thee!”

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Beginner Sword and used [charge] towards his target – Firebender Barr!

The reason was as plain as daylight: Calina’s name was green, belonging to the ‘Friendly’ category that could not be attacked. On the other hand, Firebender Barr had a red name, a confirmed monster! There were no choices in this matter!

Stunned!

After stunning Barr, Zhang Yang swung his sword and began a series of attack against it.

Firebender Barr recovered from the stun and furiously roared, “Foolish mortal! Thou shall pay for thy actions!” Barr made a fierce turn and gave up his attack on Calina, instead starting his attack on Zhang Yang.

He must have triggered a quest in the game’s storyline. Otherwise Barr would not have simply changed his course from Calina who had dealt more damage, to him who had only just begun attacking. This obviously did not match the aggro value!

Zhang Yang knew it was the system’s settings that had allowed only attacks towards Barr and so, there was no other way around!

While evading and counterattacking, he thought to himself, “Calina, this name seems very familiar. Where have I heard of it?”

This elf NPC must have a back story. It is impossible for an average

Level 10 NPC to possess 2,000 HP and manage to deal almost 3,000 damage against a boss while only losing less than 1,500 HP herself. Her attacks must have been stronger than the boss!

Even as Zhang Yang pondered, his actions showed no signs of slowing down as he continued to deal damage to Firebender Barr.

“Mortal! That’s enough! Stand down now and I shall forgive thy insolence!”

Combined attacks from Zhang Yang and Calina had managed to bring down Barr’s HP to a mere 10%.

“There is no other way, the plot requires your death and there’s nothing I can do about it!” Zhang Yang murmured as he continued dishing out attacks.

“Damn you, mortal! Curse you! You’ve released a demon. The blood of the innocent will be in your hands!” Barr cried as it turned into a lump of ash amidst the white light. Yet, its voice echoed in the air, “Calina, the God of the Fire shall incinerate your soul!”

“Hahaha!” Calina let out a pleased and relieved laughter, “It’s been 3,000 years! 3,000 years! I, Calina, am finally free from this damned seal!”

Clumps of black fog emerged from all corners as Calina absorbed them into her body. The once delicate face of a young girl morphed into a ferocious one filled with evil aura.

“Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!”

The sound of snapping chains rang around him, yet Zhang Yang did not see anything but the slowly widening grin on Calina’s face. Her eyes that had radiated with white rays gradually darkened and sank into an abyss.

“Hong!”

With a loud and devastating explosion, the entire sacrificial altar came crashing down. As the dust settled, Calina emerged completely different. A pair of black, bat-like wings stemmed from her back. Each wing had the length of 5 men, flapping to allow her to glide freely in the air!

“Si!”

The white sorcerer’s robe that she had been wearing began to tear itself apart, replacing itself with a half-cupped chest plate, exposing most of her breasts. Her lower half was an unbelievably short metallic skirt. Hanging on her back was a Dragon’s Bone Longbow taller than her!

The bright and lively elf girl had morphed into a devilish and sexy fallen angel in an instant!

These game designers... such fetish!

Witnessing Calina’s current appearance, Zhang Yang remembered a name. He then checked the name above her head and noticed that it had changed as well.

[Demon Lord, Calina the Fallen Wind Ranger] (God Class Boss)

Level:???

HP:???

A God Class Boss! The highest-ranked monster in the game!

It was her!

The background setting of ‘God’s Miracle’ was the invasion of demons and spectres with each race uniting to protect their homeland! The highest-ranked demons were the Demon Lords. There was a total of 9 generals and Calina was ranked 7th on the list!

According to the official introduction page, Calina was originally an elf hero, bearing the name ‘Wind Ranger’. In one of her battles, she was betrayed by an allied force and became filled with wrath, the Wind Ranger was lured into the dark force by the Demon King, thus falling from grace and turning into a Demon Lord.

After she had turned into a Demon Lord, she had went up against her previous brethren and war comrades, killing them mercilessly. She was eventually sealed away by the God of Fire.

Zhang Yang could only laugh. Amidst his bemusement, he had actually released a God Class Boss! This damned game company, they actually

placed such a powerful boss in the Beginner Village! Were they not scared that this would escalate into a bloody mess?

With the ability of a God Class Boss, if it had unleashed just one special skill, the entire Beginner Village could have been completely annihilated!

“Puny mortal, you’ve helped me escape. Should I just kill you to thank you?” Calina flapped her wings, gliding in the air as she looked at Zhang Yang like she was looking at an ant.

“Or perhaps I should just let you suffer in regret and misery your whole life, that may be a better reward! Farewell, mortal! Enjoy your last moments in life for I, Calina, shall completely destroy this world!” Calina seemed to be thinking about something as she flapped her wings promptly and flew high into the sky, disappearing in an instant.

Hu, for the sake of the storyline, he had actually spent half a day and ended up empty-handed. Zhang Yang let out a sigh of disappointment.

“Ah, you imbecile! What have you done?!” a small, red-bearded dwarf who had sprung up out of nowhere grabbed Zhang Yang by his collar and bellowed, spraying his spittle everywhere.

[Traveler Aran Pillar] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 100

Green name NPC, a Friendly!

Although Zhang Yang would very much like to have this NPC slashed, it could only remain as a passing thought. He pushed the dwarf aside and did not utter a single word. This was obviously part of the plot progression but he had no interest in arguing with a system-controlled NPC.

Aran furiously pushed Zhang Yang aside and said, “Human! Absolute imbecile of a human! Did you know that you have just released a demon? One that could have brought extermination to the whole world at that!”

“She was already sealed, how did she manage to escape?”

“Ignorant mortal! Calina, she was once an elf hero, a Wind Ranger! Her

bow and arrows could shoot down the stars in the night sky! An existence that rivaled God! Even the God of Fire could not kill her and could only seal her up! But her power proved to be stronger. Even with her physical body sealed, she had managed to manifest herself into an indestructible spiritual form to engage in a never-ending battle against the Fire Elementals who guarded the seal, attempting to destroy the seal to gain her freedom!" Aran sighed.

As expected from a God Class Boss, a mere thought would have already had such prowess!

"You, human! You have to fix this!" said the dwarf. "You must make haste to White Jade Castle and report this matter to Grand Magus Anthony Faylon to allow them to prepare for the impending disaster!"

"Ding! Aran Pillar has a quest for you: Disastrous News. Will you accept it? This is a Main Story Quest. Complete the quest to receive a handsome reward!"

Main Story Quest!

In comparison to a Hidden Quest, triggering a Main Story Quest was much easier. However, it was exactly because the trigger was easier that the completion difficulty was extremely high! Initially, you may be required to just run around a little and kill a few monsters but the last step or even last few steps would always require you to fight a super boss. It would be a near impossible task even with tens of thousands of players engaged!

Zhang Yang was psyched. Even though he had managed to accidentally trigger a few Hidden Quests in his previous life but because he had joined the game a little too late, he had naturally never encountered a single Main Story Quest! Yet this main quest right now, if he was eventually required to overthrow Calina, he would have to find tens of thousands players above Level 200 to join him, otherwise it would just be sending them straight to their deaths!

To achieve Level 200... it would take at least 5 years! Zhang Yang had only managed to get to Level 179 after grinding for 3 years in his previous

character!

“Accept!” Zhang Yang accepted the quest. Since he did not know how long he would take before arriving at the last plot step, he might as well take it easy.

After announcing the quest, Aran promptly left the place. Zhang Yang wondered how a Level 1 NPC could roam around the field filled with Level 10 monsters so freely. Zhang Yang continued on and grinded. After half an hour, he bathed in a golden light and reached Level 9. Checking the time, he noticed that it was already past 9 PM. Zhang Yang gave it some thought and decided to reach Level 10 before disconnecting to rest.

The altar did not respawn after it was destroyed. Instead, many Fire Elementals had appeared. Main Story Quests were exclusively singular, and so, the situation where he had helped Calina escape her seal would not reoccur to other players.

Zhang Yang spent another 4 hours grinding and had finally achieved Level 10. Then, he opened his inventory and changed into the 3 Black-Steel equipment that had long sat there unused. His HP and Weapon Attack increased by a certain degree.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 10

HP: 350

Defense: 16

Strength: 60

Melee Damage: 76 – 84

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

For a tank, this amount of HP was under expectations but his Weapon Attack was absolutely wonderful, capable of generating massive aggro!

He then invested his SP gained from achieving Level 10 into the skill [block] and the skill’s cooldown time had reduced to 8 seconds.

Zhang Yang went to the Beginner Village's teleportation portal and was beamed to White Jade Castle as a white light. He then disconnected.

Taking off the gaming helmet, Zhang Yang made himself some supper and took a bath after finishing his meal. He then went to bed and fell into a deep sleep.

The next morning, Zhang Yang woke up at around 6 AM and worked out for an hour. He took a shower and went outside to grab some youtiao from a local breakfast stall. He got back home and ate it with milk.

After his breakfast, Zhang Yang was preparing to enter the game when he heard his phone ring.

"Hello--"

"Little Yang! You're indeed amazing!" Zhang Yang could only get a hello out before his words were drowned by the caller. "I followed your instructions and picked the Hunter class! First, I killed the wolves, collected 10 pelts and later moved to the catacombs to kill some monsters. Once I reached Level 5, I handed over the coats. Haha. I burnt the midnight oil and got to Level 10!"

"Who are you?"

"Damn, you can't even recognize your fatty bro's voice?" Han Guang scolded jokingly. "I even took the Hunter's Hidden Job Quest but I can't even complete 'Extremely Difficult' and 'Hard', so I only took the 'Average' difficulty level and got an 'Average' score, obtaining a Skill Book called [precise shot]. Haha, this skill is totally off the charts! Still, some guy had actually gotten a 'Perfect' score! I felt so jealous after seeing the server announcement! I really don't know how he did it!"

Zhang Yang smiled a little as he listened to Han Guang's excited tone, "Alright, you should have reached the Capital by now right? Let us both go and raid a dungeon later!"

"Ugh. I've been playing the whole night. I can't take it anymore, I'm going to sleep for a few hours! Little Yang, I'll join you later in the afternoon. Wait for me! Ah right, my IGN is called 'Slim and Handsome',

don't forget to add me into your Friend List.”

Han Guang hung up before Zhang Yang could even reply.

“Slim and Handsome?” Zhang Yang recalled Han Guang's size that could compare to that of two average men standing side-by-side and felt a shiver run down his spine.

*

Translator Notes

1 youtiao is a traditional Chinese deep-fried breadstick that is made entirely of dough. This dough, which is usually in the shape of a pair of long sticks, is deep-fried. It is quite fun and also a norm to tear the pair of sticks apart before eating each of them individually or sharing the other half with the people eating together. Youtiao is also often eaten with congee, while some prefer dipping them in soymilk or black coffee. A Google-ed description of youtiao would be the Chinese cruller, Chinese oil stick or Chinese doughnut. Another popular name for youtiao would be the Cantonese version, yauzhaguai, which could also be directly translated into oil-fried-devil. Here is a reference link for those interested: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Youtiao>.

Chapter 12: Ranking

Before he had disconnected yesterday, Zhang Yang's rank among China region's players might not have been first but he had definitely been in the top 10! After one night though, mad level grinders had taken advantage of the fact that there were less players in the middle of the night and grinded up their levels.

Zhang Yang left the teleportation portal and reached the home of warriors. Along his way, he had spotted more than tens of Level 10 players.

Upon entering the Capital, a new feature was added to the game interface: Ranking.

There were a lot of rankings such as Player Level Ranking, Hall of Fame Ranking, First Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Ranking, Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Level Clearance Ranking and so on.

The rankings were based on regions.

'God's Miracle' had divided its global players into 8 regions: China, Japan & South Korea, India, Europe, Africa, South America, North America, and Australia region. The Australian server had included a few other Asian countries such as Indonesia, Singapore and so on.

Each region had one server and each server had only one ranking. The servers of these 8 regions shared data so cross-regional wars could be implemented, resulting in an integrated gaming environment.

Currently, most of the rankings were empty. The rankings that had grabbed more attention would be the Player Level Ranking and Hall of Fame Ranking.

[Hall of Fame Ranking] (China Region)

1. Player (Name Hidden) was the first to kill a Level 15 Black-Steel Boss, the Black Panther King, in the field (Continent Calendar 9287, August 23rd).

2. Player (Name Hidden) was the first to complete the Hidden Quest with a 'Perfect' score (Continent Calendar 9287, August 23rd).

Zhang Yang then swiped out the Player Level Ranking and checked the current levels of the expert grinders.

[Player Level Ranking] (China Region)

1. Powerful Priest, Troll, Cryomancer, Level 11
2. Humble Gentleman, Human, Cryomancer, Level 11
3. Hunt the World, Troll, Sniper, Level 11
4. Slender Waist, Elf, Pyromancer, Level 10
5. Overlord Orders Chicken, Orc, Berserker, Level 10
6. Floating Fireball, Human, Pyromancer, Level 10
7. Frost Night, Elf, Assassin, Level 10
8. Sky Shaman, Dwarf, Guardian, Level 10
9. Don't Hit My Face, Dwarf, Defender, Level 10
10. King of Assassin, Orc, Bandit, Level 10

As expected of Spellcasters, the master grinders in traditional games. There were already 4 of them among the top 10 Player Level Ranking! Of course, professions picked in the early stages of the game did not matter as much. The key to leveling fast was the duration spent online or having a strong support at your back. For example, a guild could have all its members deal damage to a monster until its last drop of HP then reserving the last hit for its designated player!

According to the settings of 'God's Miracle', player under non-party mode who made the last hit on the monster would gain 50% EXP. Therefore, if the guild had been willing to sacrifice the interest of a portion of its players, it could easily boost the level of one or more players. Rich players could also hire others to push their levels faster.

If a guild could cultivate a high-level player who could enter the rankings, it would be advantageous to the guild's image, achieving effective advertisement.

Zhang Yang sighed, his level was a little behind! However, it was not

compulsory for him to be the top 1 in Player Level Ranking, as long as he had remained in the list. What was more important to him was the progress of the Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Level Clearance Ranking!

To assess the strength of a guild in 'God's Miracle', the most important standard was the guild's speed in hardcore dungeon raids. After all, there were only a few bosses in the field, and their respawning period took several days up to a whole month! The competition was fierce since there were limited bosses but numerous players. The equipment loot would never have been sufficient to go around!

A dungeon would be different. As long as players were capable, they had equal chances to defeat bosses and acquire better equipment! The chances of obtaining stronger equipment would drastically increase if a player had joined a speedy dungeon raiding guild. To most players, their decision on which guild to join would have been obvious.

Zhang Yang's plans were: first, to use his familiarity of the game's future trend to hoard materials and sell them to earn a fortune! Second, to strive to be the first to clear most of the hardcore mode dungeon raids, boosting his reputation to form a super guild. Third, to look for outstanding teammates and establish his own team to dominate the S-Class League, achieving his previous life's goal!

Currently though, he did not possess much capital and thus was unable to hoard much materials to profiteer of market monopolization. That was why he had now set his eyes on dungeon clearing, the Hardcore Mode of Bangar Crypt.

Bangar Crypt was the game's first dungeon with a Level 10 – 15 range recommendation, allowing a maximum of 10 players. All dungeons in 'God's Miracle' had consisted of 3 modes: Normal, Difficult and Hardcore.

Normal Mode was fairly simple. A little grinding in the raid would have cleared the level. Obviously, the drops would be of average quality, a grade lower than those in Difficult Mode. However, it would allow common players to enjoy the excitement of fighting the boss, making it the main

choice of casual players.

Difficult Mode lived up to its name of being very difficult. Even for teams in which players were already familiar with one another and had great teamwork, they would still have a hard time grinding before they were able to clear the dungeon! Going into Difficult Mode with temporarily formed party could very well equate to seeking your own death.

Hardcore Mode was even more vicious, where a minor mistake could lead the whole team to an instant death. However, the rewards were equally great. Dropped equipment were of the highest grade, Hidden Bosses that could only be found in this mode, too, had chances of dropping various Profession Recipes.

These 3 modes were not connected, that would mean that there was no need to clear Normal Mode or Difficult Mode before accessing Hardcore Mode. As long as the pre-requisite quest for the dungeon raid was completed, players could freely choose between the dungeon's modes.

The first party to clear the Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid would enter the First Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Ranking and have the news announced to the world through the server. It would have been a glorious feat. Regardless of it being an individual player or an entire guild, this announcement would still be a great declaration of valor and fame.

Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Ranking would then be unlocked. Record breaking players would be listed in the ranking and the server would issue a global announcement as well. There was a rule in Speed Raiding Ranking though, that if the level of any particular player in the clearing team had exceeded the dungeon level's upper limit, the result would not be taken into account. Otherwise, it would have been meaningless to have several Level 100 players breaking the record of a Level 10 dungeon.

First Clear and Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid would have been the core competition for all guilds in the future, bearing utmost importance!

Zhang Yang had his eyes set on the Hidden Boss of the Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt – Momoermo. There was a chance for this boss to drop the Metal Caster's Shield Recipe. The shield would be of Green-Copper rarity, the best-one-to-date for both Guardians and Defenders before Level 20!

He wanted to earn his first pot of gold using this recipe to accumulate even more wealth. He could then snowball his wealth into greater proportions!

Zhang Yang found a female NPC with the name tag, 'Ani, Warrior Instructor' at the warrior settlement. Blonde hair, blue eyes, large breasts and voluptuous hips. She was wearing a sparkling gold armor designed so sexily that it had only barely covered her chest and buttocks, revealing her alluring snow white skin.

Although all of them knew well enough that this character was an NPC, many male players had still stared lustfully at her, drooling.

Zhang Yang, too, felt that it was much more pleasing to the eye looking at this pretty lady in front of him as compared to the sharp-tongued, middle-aged Farion. He started a conversation with the NPC and learned the Level 10 Guardian skills [shield oath] and [provoke].

[Shield Oath (Passive)]: Increases Defense by using a Shield, reducing all damage by 20%. 1 Rage increase each second while in combat. All aggro points generated by your attacks increase by 20%. Requirement: Shield.

[Provoke]: Provokes a target and forces it to attack you, lasts for 2 seconds. Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

Recalling the main quest in his quest log, Zhang Yang decided to first complete the quest and see what would follow. Zhang Yang asked an NPC guard about the whereabouts of Grand Magus Anthony Faylon and went to the Magician Tower in the center of the capital.

"Warrior, you do not belong here!" 2 NPCs with sorcerer's robes had blocked Zhang Yang's way.

Zhang Yang said, "I have an important message for Master Anthony Faylon!"

“Is that so?” the 2 NPCs hesitated before one of them said, “Alright, Master Faylon is at the top of the Magician Tower!”

He guessed that these 2 NPCs would not have let him pass if he did not have the main quest in his quest log. Zhang Yang thought about it while he entered the Magician Tower. He went along the staircase and soon reached the top of the tower – the ninth floor.

An old man with chest-length beard was deeply engrossed in looking at a crystal ball, his back hunched and faced Zhang Yang. Speaking before Zhang Yang could even open his mouth, “Young man, I have already known the purpose of your visit!”

[The Grand Magus Anthony Faylon] (God Class Boss)

Level:???

Hp:???

In ‘God’s Miracle’, every capital was safeguarded by a God Class Boss. This white bearded old man would be the strongest person in White Jade Castle. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had witnessed how the old man had unleashed a formidable skill during the Demon Siege War and wiped out millions of demons, a scene that was both terrifying and impressive!

Unfortunately, this powerful grand magus would be assassinated by a demon’s assassin as part of the storyline. As he was a God Class Boss, he would never respawn after his death.

“Master Faylon, what should we do now?” Zhang Yang simply replied to keep the plot going in order to unlock the follow-up quest.

“Aih—” Faylon sighed and turned around. His face filled with despair and sympathy. “Calina was once a great hero, but... she was betrayed by the people she had sworn to protect with her life. Her soul had been suffering from the torment of betrayal, I can feel it!”

He paused before saying, “Perhaps, there is still some hope to free her soul!”

Zhang Yang’s eyes lit up. As long as he was not required to kill the God

Class Boss Calina, the main quest should be much easier to complete!

“Young man, I need you to collect 3 items! After you’ve collected them, I shall be able to create a relic capable of purifying the dark force casted by the Demon King and revive Calina’s soul!” Faylon spoke in a deep voice, “This mission is very difficult. Are you willing to take on this responsibility?”

Did he even have an option? Zhang Yang nodded his head and replied immediately, “Yes master, I am willing!”

“Ding! You have accepted the quest: The Crafting Materials of a Relic! This is a Main Story Quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!”

[The Crafting Materials of a Relic] (Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: Faylon needs you to collect 3 materials to create a powerful relic in order to purify the dark force affecting Calina! These 3 materials are the Heart of the Black Dragon, the Horn of the Mythical Unicorn, and the Book of the Damned from the spectre race.

Progress: Collect the Heart of the Black Dragon 0/1, the Horn of the Mythical Unicorn 0/1, and the Book of the Damned 0/1.

Shit, I might as well fight Calina directly! Zhang Yang cursed when he saw the materials he was required to collect.

Chapter 13: Entering the Dungeon

The Black Dragon and the Mystical Unicorn were both Level 150 Field Bosses and also the strongest among monsters of their own level tier. While killing them would be hard, it would still be easier than actually trying to fight Calina.

What got Zhang Yang mad was the Book of the Damned!

Book of the Damned was the spectre race's totem, hidden well within the Evil Spirit Tower that resided in the sacred land of the spectres. Not only was it heavily guarded by a strong defense force, in the tower also sat the strongest among the 7 Witch Kings in the spectre realm 'Witch King of the Undead', a God Class Boss above Level 200, Madevitch. To acquire the Book of the Damned under his nose...

Still, he would consider all these to be fine. All he had to do was to acquire the Book of the Damned, and not defeat Madevitch, Witch King of the Undead.

Now though, as there was absolutely no way for him to proceed with this quest, he could only set it aside for now.

Zhang Yang first accepted the quest 'Traces of the Gnomes', the pre-requisite quest to enter the Bangar Crypt dungeon. The quest was simple, to eliminate 20 gnomes. After completing the mission, he met up with Sorr the Army Captain. This middle-aged man was shocked and could not believe that there had been gnomes around the White Jade Castle!

This NPC then gave out a subsequent quest, 'Find Their Lair'. Zhang Yang followed the quest instructions and arrived at the entrance of the Bangar Crypt dungeon. Upon completion and submission of the quest, he then received Sorr's final quest called 'The Raid' and obtained the permission to enter Bangar Crypt dungeon.

[The Raid] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: You have found the lair of the gnomes. Find their leader, Dadaerda. Initiate the raid and slay these horrid creatures!

Progress: Kill Dadaerda 0/1

This quest did not set any required specific difficulty level to kill Dadaerda, so even if the boss was killed in Hardcore Mode, the end reward of the quest would have been the same as those in Normal Mode.

Zhang Yang returned to the dungeon entrance once again and saw a 9-man party waiting outside the dungeon. As they saw Zhang Yang walk towards them with a shield on his back, one of the players had immediately private messaged him, “Bangar Crypt Normal Mode! We have a main tank! We’re in need of another off-tank, would you join us?”

Only Guardians and Defenders could wield a shield in the game, so the player could easily identify Zhang Yang’s class even with his profile hidden.

Difficult Mode and Hardcore Mode could only be attempted once a day but Normal Mode did not have any limit to its entry. Zhang Yang had to keep his dungeon entry until Fatty Han came online to go with him, so he could only do Normal Mode with this party now. He thought about it and replied, “Invite me!”

“Ding! Player Floral Shorts invites you to join his party. Will you accept his invitation?”

“Accept!” Zhang Yang tapped ‘Confirm’.

“Ding! You have joined the party. Party leader: Floral Shorts. Distribution mode: Roll the Dice.”

Distribution mode referred to the distribution method when items of white grade and above dropped. Roll the Dice mode was the most common party choice where the item would automatically go to the player who had rolled the highest number.

Besides Roll the Dice, there were also Leader’s Distribution (party leader would decide who would receive the loot) and Individual Loot (finders, keepers).

Zhang Yang noticed that of the 9 players, Floral Shorts and 3 others belonged to the guild Pride, while another 2 were in different guilds

themselves while the remaining three were guild-less like Zhang Yang.

“F*ck, this off-tank has only 350 HP. He is useless! Floral, kick him out!” A Spellcaster by the name of Prideful Precepts scorned when he saw Zhang Yang’s HP value.

“Ding! You have been expelled from the party!” Zhang Yang received a notification as soon as he was expelled.

Zhang Yang could not help but become surprised. Members of this Pride Guild were so domineering, expelling someone without a second thought! Rage simmered in him but he shook his head at once. Why be petty and degrade himself to the same level as those imbecile players?

Just as he was about to leave, Zhang Yang’s sight was glued to a player who had not hid his name, “Hundred Shots, Male Dwarf, Beast Hunter, Level 10”.

It was him!

Zhang Yang vividly remembered that this Beast Hunter had been an impressive character in his previous life, and was ranked first in the top 10 Beast Hunter list! Just by looking at his skills, he may not be the best. However, his luck was extremely good that he had managed to get a Baby Red Dragon as his pet!

Dragons, as one of the most powerful monsters in ‘God’s Miracle’, even if it was downgraded to a player’s pet and lost its devastating killing skill, was still remarkably strong! With the help of his pet dragon, Hundred Shots had managed to squeeze into the top ten ranking and eventually took the first spot. Players dubbed him as ‘The Dragon Hunter’, and even players who had gotten phoenixes as pets were considered inferior to him!

As for how Hundred Shots got his hands on the pet dragon, he had always been secretive about it and had never revealed anything. Thereafter, Beast Hunters had kept attempting to figure out the method to obtain such a pet but had never managed to even come up with a clue. The Dragon Hunter, it had always been just him!

Yet now, this future hotshot was still a long way from his fame. By his

side stood a pet pig that kept wiggling its butt. His current expression was without the confident flair after he had gotten famous, looking just like any other common player.

Never had Zhang Yang thought that he would meet this future hotshot on the second day of his game. He was stirred. If he could get Hundred Shots to join him, he would be taking a large step forward towards his dream of conquering the S-Class League.

Furthermore, Hundred Shots was still a common player now, this would be the best time to get close to him!

“Hey, we’re still lacking one member. Take it as a favor. We’ll bring you in as a good deed!” Floral Shorts suddenly sent him a private message. Along with it, an invitation to join his party.

Zhang Yang’s first reaction was to reject the invitation, but as he saw that Hundred Shots was also in the party, he changed his mind immediately and chose ‘Accept’.

Returning to the party, Zhang Yang took his time and looked through the party’s structure: A Defender (Main Tank), a Sacred Knight (Healer), 2 Hunters (DPS), 2 Thieves (DPS), 2 Mages (DPS), and 1 Priest (Healer).

The main tank Defender’s HP was very high, totaling a whopping 700 HP. However, with 3 gaming years’ worth of eyesight, Zhang Yang could easily tell with a glance that only the shield worn by this Pride guild player, Kindling Chest Hair, was of Black-Steel rarity. The rest of his equipment were only of White-Wood rarity!

Since White-Wood rarity equipment, other than its armor, would not add any Attribute bonus, this Defender’s HP would have had been completely increased by his given AP. This had also meant that the 50 AP gained on his way to Level 10 were all invested in Vitality. In addition to the Attribute increase when he leveled up plus the default 50 HP at Level 1, it would total up to 650 HP.

Lastly, with 5 points of Vitality bonus from the Black-Steel rarity shield, they would all add up to exactly 700 HP maxed.

This kind of Vitality investment was also known as the Bull's Blood investment. Since the beginner equipment was weak, the AP gained during leveling up would be the main support of increasing a tank's Attributes. However, starting from Green-Copper rarity and above, the bonus Attribute provided would be enough to match the AP; from Gray-Silver rarity and beyond, the bonus Attributes would exceed the character's own AP, thus equipment would become more crucial as the game progressed.

Nevertheless, as a tank, one had to be able to defend attacks in addition to withstanding a monster's aggro. Otherwise, the boss would have wiped out all the other players, so even with such high HP, how would one compare to the boss?

This tank's weapon was a White grade one-handed hammer bought at Level 10, possibly having 7 – 13 Weapon Attack Range, but since he had added all of his AP with the Bull's Blood method, his maximum would have only reached 15 Strength and melee damage of around 22 – 28 points.

A regular Level 10 monster would have 10 defense points, while an Elite would have 15, and a Boss would have 20. If he could only inflict 7 – 13 damage on an Elite, it would have meant that he could only ditch out 2 – 8 damage to a Boss. It would be close to impossible to pull any aggro at all!

In comparison, Zhang Yang's sword alone would have already dealt 16 – 24 damage. Adding 60 points on Strength attribute meant that his melee damage could reach a terrifying 76 – 84 points!

“Hey useless Guardian, just watch and learn later. We're doing you a favor here. Don't mess up and cause us all to die!” blabbered Proudful Precepts.

“Pay no heed to them. These guys have a stinky mouth. It's not worth to pick a fight with them!” Zhang Yang received a private message, looking at the sender: Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang smiled, he was just thinking of approaching him and quickly sent a reply, “Mm, I'm just going to treat it as them farting!”

“Haha, you're absolutely right! They're just a bunch of stinky kiddos!” Hundred Shots instantly replied.

“Alright, now that we’re all gathered, let’s go into the dungeon. Time waits for no man!” Floral Shorts announced in the party channel. “Speed! Haste!”

All 10 players entered the dungeon one by one. A sudden change flashed and they had arrived at a scarcely lit underground cave. Just some distance away stood 6 green and oddly-shaped gnomes. They had no eyes on their face but their ears were exceptionally large.

[Gnome Soldier] (Elite)

Level: 10

HP: 5000

“Hairy, go!” said Floral Shorts in the party channel. “Guardian, be prepared. If someone OTs, be sure to handle it! Priest! Sacred Knight! You two focus on healing the tank!”

OT1 referred to the moment when someone had caused an aggro value that exceeded the monster’s current target, typically the tank, causing the monster to switch its attacking target.

Even though both Guardians and Defenders were considered as tank, these two classes had totally different attacking styles.

Defenders would have more AoE attacking skills, making them suitable for fields where there were many smaller monsters. His spell-immunity skill was better too, giving him an advantage when faced with a magic-type boss. On the other hand, Guardians had a stronger single-target aggro pulling ability, suitable for dealing with single physical-type bosses.

Carrying a shield on his left hand and a war hammer on his right, Kindling Chest Hair walked a few steps forward and furiously threw his shield out.

That was not showing off at all but actually activating the Defender’s skill called [shield toss]. A skill that would attack 3 targets at once, causing 100% physical damage to each one.

Translator Notes

1 OT stands for off-tank or off-tanking. It is often used interchangeably as a noun or a verb. OT also has multiple meanings depending on the context of the sentence. For instance, as a noun: We need an OT to tank the boss. This sentence means that two tanks are needed, the first being the Main Tank (MT) and the second being the Off-tank or (OT). The other meaning for OT could be used when someone 'pulls' the aggro of a monster off the tank. In this case, you could say that the player has 'OT-ed' and it could also mean that the situation has turned dire, as DPSers and healers should usually not be receiving any attention from the boss at all in an optimized dungeon run.

Chapter 14: Who is the Noob?

“-1!”

“-1!”

“-1!”

3 pathetic damage figures floated across the 3 Gnome Soldiers' heads. 6 monsters roared at the same time and charged towards Kindling Chest Hair.

Kindling Chest Hair remained rooted and activated the skill [devotion]. A white light flashed beneath his feet while a magic circle with a radius of 2 meters appeared. The moment those Gnome Soldiers entered the circle, “-1” and “-2” damage texts flashed above their heads with each passing second.

[Devotion]: Deals 100% Holy damage to all targets within 10 seconds. Holy damage is categorized as magic damage and is unaffected by Defense.

[shield toss] and [devotion] were both very powerful skills. Unfortunately, they would require a significantly higher Strength value to properly deal decent damage. Since Kindling Chest Hair used a pure tank build, he had completely ruined these 2 skills.

“Alright, everyone start attacking! No one is allowed to slack! I will put out the damage statistics when we're done! No equipment for the lowest damage dealt!” said Flowery Pants in the party channel as he dashed forward wielding two swords – a Bandit.

Zhang Yang was an off tank, meaning he was to hold aggro onto monsters and avoid competing with the main tank's enmity. He had waited until Kindling Chest Hair took on all 6 Gnome Soldiers before rushing forward to take one on.

“-62!”

With just one normal attack from Zhang Yang, the monster had immediately turned its head and thrust the spear raised in its hand

towards Zhang Yang.

Yup, definitely OT! Luckily he was also a tank!

Kindling Chest Hair was furious and scolded, “Noob, don’t use [provoke] to pull monsters, do you even know how to play?” He was too self-confident, thinking he had already established a lot of aggro. He thought that the monster had turned around only because Zhang Yang had used [provoke].

“That’s right! If you use [provoke] too many times, the monster will become immune to it! You f*cking noob!” Prideful Precepts followed.

These two idiots were hopeless but there was no need to explain his actions as only the truth would prevail!

The damage dealing team had begun their attack, as fireballs and frost arrows filled the space. All Gnome Soldiers except the one Zhang Yang was luring had ignored Kindling Chest Hair and had made their way towards the attacking team.

Floral Shorts showed no responsibility as a party leader, abandoning everything after yelling attack, and had only swung both his swords, relishing in the joy of stabbing the monsters’ back. Everyone was attacking their own monster with no intention to draw their attacks together to kill one monster at a time; Kindling Chest Hair’s enmity grabbing skills was too low, causing 5 monsters to go after the OT at the same time!

“F*ck, the f*ck is our Defender doing? Pull them properly!” A mage who was in the middle of casting a fireball stopped his action and shouted in bewilderment.

Kindling Chest Hair was terrible at holding aggro though his skills in refuting was not bad at all, arguing back immediately, “F*ck! You OT the monster and dared to complain? Noob! Get the f*ck out!”

“You’re the noob! If I’m the only one who OT-ed the monster, then it would be fine! But now 5 monsters OT-ed simultaneously! Only you can achieve this sort of wonderful work!” the mage shot back.

Zhang Yang used [charge] and managed to keep up with the monsters

that had lost control. He swung his sword and activated [horizontal sweep], yellow damage text floated across the heads of those 5 monsters at once.

“-137!”

“-148!”

“-145!”

“-298!”

“-139!”

There was an unexpected Critical Strike!

One monster was stunned from [charge] while the remaining four monsters turned back and attacked Zhang Yang.

“Block!”

Zhang Yang raised his shield, successfully blocking 4 monsters' attacks at the same time!

According to [block]'s skill description, each use could only block one attack. However, Zhang Yang had wittingly adjusted his position, causing the setup of 4 simultaneous attacks from the monsters. Since the attack gap was too short, the system had considered them as one attack, allowing [block] to successfully ward off all incoming attacks!

It was unsure if this was considered a bug. The gaming company had long since realized about this but had not removed or patched it. They instead claimed that this particular moment was difficult to master, and so if someone could pull it off they should consider it as a bonus from the system!

“-45!”

“-45!”

“-45!”

“-45!”

[block] reflected the damage, as 4 yellow damage text flashed

accordingly.

Zhang Yang raised his shield, aimed towards the stunned monster and bashed it.

“-105!” [shield bash]!

At this point, the stunned monster had recovered and the monster Zhang Yang had been pulling initially had also charged forward. Remaining calm, Zhang Yang evaded all 6 monsters' attacks with a side step, while gathering all the monsters onto a mound through his strategic movement.

Dodged!

Dodged!

Dodged again!

Zhang Yang's HP remained untouched since the beginning, easing through the monsters' bombarding attacks.

“Expert!” The other five party members who were not from Pride cried in astonishment

.

“Oh my God, such high damage, is he really a tank?”

“No wonder his HP is low. All his AP were added to Strength!”

“He could only allocate AP in such a way because he was so skillful. Can't you see that he hasn't received any damage?”

Jealousy stemmed from the fear of comparison!

Kindling Chest Hair could not hold it in any longer. Holding his war hammer, he ran up to Zhang Yang and used [justice defense], pulling 3 monsters to himself.

[Justice Defense] was a Defender's provoking skill. Each activation could only provoke 3 monsters, forcing them to attack the caster for 2 seconds. This would be why a tanking Defender was much more suitable to pull monsters in a group.

Kindling Chest Hair unleashed all of his high enmity skills on those 3 monsters, earnestly hoping to pull aggro, but after 2 seconds, the monsters had returned to attack Zhang Yang immediately, completely ignoring Kindling Chest Hair!

Kindling Chest Hair was both embarrassed and angry. He casted [justice defense] once again, right after the 10 seconds cooldown time, only to receive the same result.

“Defender! Stop pulling! Each time the monster attacks you, your HP drops rapidly. You’re putting a load on the healers!”

Prideful Babysitter, a Priest from Pride, and the guildless Sacred Knight Ocean Despair were unhappy but it was the latter who complained. Prideful Babysitter had not voiced out due to being in the same guild as Kindling Chest Hair.

Kindling Chest Hair was infuriated, mentally blocking off the complaints. [justice defense] was activated once again after 10 seconds, annoying Ocean Despair to the point of being speechless.

Zhang Yang marked one of the Gnome Soldiers and said, “Focus and kill the marked monster!”

Everyone was cooperative, changing their target and switching to attack the one Zhang Yang had marked. Unfortunately, Floral Shorts and Prideful Precepts had ignored his words and continued to deal damage to their own targeted monster.

“Pa! Pa!”

Half a minute later, 2 Gnome Soldiers had fallen under the focus fire.

Kindling Chest Hair’s face turned sour. As he activated [justice defense] for the fourth time, none of the monsters were affected. – If [provoke] was used against a monster for too many times in a short period, the monsters would develop an immunity against it.

“Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!”

One by one, the monsters fell and soon after the last was killed, everyone

was withdrawn from Combat Mode.

Zhang Yang frowned as he checked the damage statistics.

[Damage Statistics]

1. Zhan Yu, 12354 damage, 41%
2. Hundred Shots, 4509 damage, 15%
3. Snowy Death, 3313 damage, 11%
4. Defiant Monk, 3051 damage, 10%
5. Flame Emperor, 2422 damage, 8%
6. Prideful Precepts, 2102 damage, 7%
7. Floral Shorts, 1893 damage, 6%
8. Kindling Chest Hair, 1287 damage, 4%

It was astonishing that Zhang Yang had ranked first in dealing damage. [horizontal sweep]’s AoE was devastating! The counter attack damage after [block] was also substantial – of course, only a professional player like him could have utilized this skill to also deal AoE damage.

“Very good. No one died. Hairy, you’ve done well!” Floral Shorts blatantly lied, singing praises of Kindling Chest Hair.

Flame Emperor chuckled unamused and posted the damage statistics in the party channel.

There was a moment of silence.

“F*ck! What is this shit! A Guardian is the top DPS? What a joke! There must be a problem with the system!” Prideful Precepts jumped to his feet and said. How embarrassing, those Pride members, other than the Priest, the other three were the lowest in the damage statistics!

“Go on! Go on!” Floral Shorts diverted the topic and urged everyone to move forward. Kindling Chest Hair had a grave look and periodically stared at Zhang Yang, his eyes filled with hostility.

The second wave had much fewer monsters. There were only 2, guarding

the corner of a passageway.

“Noob Warrior! Keep your eyes on me! I’ll teach you how to properly pull a monster!” Kindling Chest Hair had thought that while he might be unable to pull 6 monsters, but since there were only 2 now, it should not be a problem!

Prideful Precepts chimed in, “Noob, just stand there and don’t move!”

Zhang Yang lightly smiled and as they had wished, stood still and watched Kindling Chest Hair rush towards the 2 monsters while wielding his war hammer.

[Executioner Gnome] (Elite)

Level: 12

HP: 6000

In ‘God’s Miracle’, monsters which guarded entrances were known as ‘Gate Gods’, their most notable characteristic being their extraordinary attack power! Killing tanks within seconds was a common feat.

Prideful Precepts and his gang did not know about this but Zhang Yang understood this piece of information thoroughly. Since Kindling Chest Hair had wanted to send himself straight to death, why should he stop him?

“Such a pity though, that being killed by monsters would not reduce their levels but would only damage their equipment durability or inflict a very small chance of dropping their equipment. If only it could be the same as PK where death would cost a drop in player’s level!” Zhang Yang thought regrettably.

Kindling Chest Hair walked a few steps forward and casted [shield toss] on the Executioner Gnome.

After being attacked, both ‘Gate Gods’ furiously dashed towards Kindling Chest Hair. This time, everyone had learned from their experience and did not engage, as they had the knowledge that a certain someone’s aggro holding could not be trusted.

“-105!”

“-97!”

Both monsters stabbed Kindling Chest Hair with their spears, delivering a significantly high damage, removing a third of Kindling Chest Hair’s HP immediately.

Kindling Chest Hair was startled. Before he could even react, two more damage texts floated over his head.

“-99!”

“-102!”

“Ding! Executioner Gnome uses [immolation assault]!”

“Ding! Executioner Gnome uses [immolation assault]!”

“-200!”

“-200!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!”

Instant kill! F*ck yeah!

Chapter 15: The Black Claw

Kindling Chest Hair died a little too fast, and that was even before other players had even entered combat! After killing Kindling Chest Hair, the two monsters quickly headed back to their original positions, surprising Zhang Yang who was waiting to intercept the aggro.

“Shit! What’s going on with you healers? Why didn’t you guys heal me?” yelled Kindling Chest Hair angrily.

Ocean Despair did not want to debate with this idiot anymore, and so, his own guild mate Prideful Babysitter replied, “You died too fast, I couldn’t react in time!”

Truthfully, Kindling Chest Hair was not killed within seconds. There was still a short moment of time for them to heal. It was just that they had never met this kind of monster so no one had the awareness for danger. A slight distraction and they would not be in time anymore.

Kindling Chest Hair kept quiet for a moment then said, “Revive me!”

Prideful Babysitter said, “Can’t do it!”

“Sacred Knight?” Kindling Chest Hair asked as he turned to Ocean Despair.

“Nope!”

“Fuck! How can you be a babysitter when you don’t even have a reviving skill?!” Kindling Chest Hair scolded again. He released his corpse and returned from the spawning point to where he died.

Ocean Despair was being ridiculed again, his expression turning even more sour.

[Resurrection] could be used to revive a fallen player who died out of combat, saving him the time and effort to return from the starting or spawning point. It was a useful and practical skill that could be learned by both Priests and Defenders. However, this skill could not be obtained from a class instructor and could only be attained from skill books found in monster’s loot.

[resurrection]'s drop rate had always been low. Even 5 years after the game server had been launched, the [resurrection] skill book was still in high demand and could be sold at the exorbitant price of several thousand Gold Coins. As of now, the people who possessed this skill would most likely be the main healers of large guilds.

Before the game had launched, the officials had wanted to help the players understand each profession clearer and had released introductions of skills attainable by each profession in their website including the functions and effects of skills, as well as the method of attaining said skills. However, the officials had kept quiet regarding skills attainable through hidden quests, allowing the players to figure out a way themselves.

Floral Shorts thought for a little while and said, "When the Defender comes back, the two tanks will each pull one monster. Healers stay alert. These two monsters seem fierce!"

Zhang Yang's attention was not on this dungeon anymore. He had taken the chance to have a casual conversation in private messages with Hundred Shots. Even though Zhang Yang had already known about this guy's future accomplishments, he would not pick his teammate solely based on skills. A player's moral character would be of greater importance!

7 to 8 minutes later, Kindling Chest Hair had revived and stood once again amongst the party members.

"Hairy, recover your condition!" Floral Shorts said as he marked the two monsters with different symbols. "Defender, you're to handle the monster marked with a star. Guardian, yours is the one with a sun mark. Go!"

Kindling Chest Hair consumed a piece of cake and had his HP and MP fully recovered. He then took out his war hammer and shield, going straight for the monsters.

"[shield toss]!"

Zhang Yang, too, used [charge] and dashed towards the monster with a sun mark. With a swing of his sword, a damage text with the figure "-62"

emerged above the monster's head.

The 'sun monster' had recovered quickly and stabbed towards Zhang Yang with its spear.

"[block]!"

"-42!" [block] reflected damage.

"-102!" [shield bash]!

"-140!" [horizontal sweep]!

The aggro value was established in an instant.

The other teammates had unanimously picked Zhang Yang's target as their attack target. Swords slashed and spells flew all at once.

Kindling Chest Hair was furious because even his own guildmates, Floral Shorts and Prideful Precepts did not dare to attack the monster he had pulled. How embarrassing!

"Ding! Executioner Gnome uses [immolation assault]!"

Zhang Yang reacted swiftly and slid back, leaving the monster's melee attack range and caused [immolation assault] to hit nothing but air.

On the other side of the battle, Kindling Chest Hair was suffering major damage, causing Prideful Babysitter to spam cast his healing skills while reminding Kindling Chest Hair to use his own health recovery potion. Ocean Despair had long since given up on him.

After about 40 seconds, the 'sun monster' let out a wail, collapsing in its own pool of blood. The party turned and attacked the 'star monster' Kindling Chest Hair was pulling.

After 10 seconds or so, the monster let out an enraged cry and ignored Kindling Chest Hair, charging towards Hundred Shots!

"He's been pulling aggro for over a minute and still managed to get OT. It's really a wonder of wonders!" Flame Emperor was more than shocked.

[charge]!

Zhang Yang quickly chased after the 'star monster'. He was not

competing for aggro with Kindling Chest Hair, so he naturally had full Rage as he did not use any Rage consuming skills. Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep] followed by a normal attack and then continued with 3 [force strike], causing a large amount of damage and aggro.

Once the 'star monster' recovered, Zhang Yang used [provoke] and forced the monster to attack him for 2 seconds.

"[block]!"

"-42!"

"[shield bash]!"

"-102!"

Hundred Shots' performance was commendable. He had stopped attacking and had waited for Zhang Yang to hold the monster's aggro. After the 2 seconds ended, the 'star monster' was still attacking Zhang Yang, confirming its complete aggro lock on Zhang Yang.

Kindling Chest Hair kept his mouth shut. With this situation in hand, however shameless he was, remaining silent would be his best course of action. If he had quibbled, he would only be setting himself up as a joke – not like he was not one already.

In due course, the 'star monster' had died.

The party progressed and after clearing 5 waves of monsters, they had finally encountered the first boss. It was a black colossal hound the size of a public bus, its fur a shining black. The boss was currently sleeping on the floor, snoring thunderously loud and drooling all over.

[Black Claw, Guardian Beast of the Crypt Entrance] (Black-Metal Boss)

Level: 12

HP: 36000

There was only a lone boss in this overly large cave and no minions around.

"What's the plan?" Snowy Death asked in the party channel while

staring at the fearsome monstrous beast.

“Easy! Tanks pull, damage dealers attack and healers heal! It’s simple!” Prideful Precepts said with ease.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “This boss has two skills the first being [death stare]. It’s a skill that causes the player with the highest aggro to receive extra damage. The target will receive an extra 100% damage when attacked and this skill can be stacked indefinitely. In this case, theoretically, this boss requires 2 tanks. When one tank has accumulated high stacks of [death stare], the other tank takes over. When the debuff ends, the first tank will replace the second tank once again! Of course, if the DPSers are strong enough, we could still do this with only one tank, killing the boss in the shortest amount of time.”

The players looked at each other, neither of them trusting Kindling Chest Hair to hold aggro. To believe that he could do it would be would be more unlikely than to believe that all prostitutes are virgins! The only way to do it was to go all out on dealing damage and to kill it forcefully.

“The second skill is [venom spit]. It will target players at random and cause around 200 basic damage in Normal Mode. The cast rate is very high so there will be substantial healing pressure.” Zhang Yang continued.

Prideful Precepts gave a skeptic look and asked, “How did you know? You’re not making this up just for the sake of bragging, are you?”

Zhang Yang had cleared this dungeon numerous times in his previous life, how could he not know?! Zhang Yang smiled and said, “There are a lot of dungeon information on the official forum, I saw it in passing.”

Everyone believed him without a doubt.

“Hairy, which of you two would be the main tank?” Floral Shorts still had faith in Kindling Chest Hair.

“Of course it would be me! He won’t survive a hit from the boss with that petty HP!” Kindling Chest Hair had yet to realize the difference in ability between him and Zhang Yang. He had a big hat but no cattle.

Ocean Despair could not help but chuckle.

Kindling Chest Hair had been displeased with him for a while, and yelled, "What are you laughing for? Was I wrong?"

Ocean Despair remained silent but posted the 'Heal Received Statistics' in the channel.

[Heal Received Statistics]

1. Kindling Chest Hair, 57632, 92%

2. Snowy Death, 1579, 3%

3. Flowery Pants, 1553, 3%

4. Zhan Yu, 1422, 2 %

"Is this for real?" Everyone looked at the list and was beyond surprised. What did it mean?

Zhang Yang had not only locked a monster's aggro, his attack evasion was on another level!

He did have less HP compared to Kindling Chest Hair but based solely on his skills, monsters' attacks could barely graze him! If so, why does it matter whether he had high or low HP in the first place?

The pitiful Kindling Chest Hair was still unable to grasp the overall picture and had laughed egoistically after looking at the statistics, "Now you guys know my pain! I've pulled so many monsters, of course they would attack me!"

Ocean Despair smirked, "Pain your ass! Healing you is the real pain!"

Kindling Chest Hair was livid. Just as he had wanted to refute Ocean Despair's comment, he was flooded by blames from the rest of the party, criticizing his weak ability in locking aggro, as whoever was supposed to deal damage to his monster would definitely OT. Feeling overwhelmed, he wanted to find the other 3 Pride guildmates as support but saw them intentionally turn their heads away, pretending to miss the conversation.

"Alright, alright. The two of you go together. Whoever holds the aggro will tank it!" Floral Shorts finally decided, an attempt to help Kindling

Chest Hair but everybody had known that this was just for show. Let's not compare Kindling Chest Hair's aggro to Zhang Yang. Perhaps, even healers' could build higher aggro than him!

"Go!"

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Refined Iron Sword and dashed towards Black Claw. Not wanting to be outshone, Kindling Chest Hair also rushed towards the boss.

"[charge]!"

"[shield toss]!"

Zhang Yang dashed towards the boss like a train, arriving right in front of Black Claw almost immediately. He swung his sword and slashed the boss.

"-52!"

The damage was reduced by roughly 20 points due to the boss' high defense.

At this time, Kindling Chest Hair had also arrived and smashed his war hammer furiously.

"-1!"

Tragedy. He could not break its defense and had only caused 1 point of damage.

At the same time, Kindling Chest Hair activated [devotion]. A glowing golden light appeared beneath his feet and another "-1" damage text appeared above the boss's head.

2 seconds later, the boss had recovered from the stun and clawed at Zhang Yang.

"[block]!"

"-36!"

"[shield bash]!"

"-96!"

“[horizontal sweep]!”

“-136!”

“Start the attack!” Zhang Yang announced in the party channel.

Chapter 16: Barbarians and Their Barbaric Ways

“[justice defense]!”

Realizing that he could not beat Zhang Yang, Kindling Chest Hair had immediately provoked the boss to temporarily pull Black Claw's aggro over.

“Ding! You are affected by [death stare] (Stack 1). All damage received increased by 100%, lasts for 12 seconds!”

Kindling Chest Hair really had the worst luck. Just as he provoked the boss, Black Claw had activated [death stare]. His body flashed in a crimson glow and a debuff appeared above his avatar.

This skill could not be dodged or blocked.

The provoke effect had worn off after 2 seconds and Black Claw returned to attack Zhang Yang.

“Fire up the DPS!” Zhang Yang said in the party channel. He was not worried about being instantly killed under the stacking effect of [death stare] but more so that the longer they took to kill the boss, the more Black Claw would cast [venom spit], ultimately wrecking the party when the healers became overwhelmed.

Of course, in this Normal Mode he could easily solo kill the boss alone!

After a while, Black Claw turned around and took aim at Prideful Precepts, spitting black spittle on him.

“F*ck, is that how you pull the monster, noob warrior! How could you let the boss attack me?” Prideful Precepts rebuked and then hollered at the same time, “Heal me!” He had a total of 300HP but 200 was gone instantly.

“You're the f*cking noob! That's the boss' [venom spit]. Zhan Yu had explained it very clearly just now, it randomly targets a player! What are you barking at?” Defiant Monk could not hold his anger anymore and

finally exploded.

Grunting, Prideful Precepts remained displeased and begrudged but did not fight back.

10 seconds later, Kindling Chest Hair initiated another provoke and temporarily pulled Black Claw's aggro over again.

"Ding! You are affected by [death stare] (Stack 2). All damage received increased by 200%, lasts for 12 seconds!"

Poor thing, he had just drew the boss over and was immediately stacked with another [death stare].

Zhang Yang exclaimed internally, who said this guy was a noob, he's been provoking precisely when the boss casts [death stare]! Such a genius!

After beating up Kindling Chest Hair, Black Claw turned again and Zhang Yang took over the aggro.

After some time, Black Claw stopped his actions and aimed at Snowy Death, casting [venom spit] and dealing 200 HP of damage to him.

Kindling Chest Hair casted the third provoke on the boss after [justice defense]'s cooldown had completed.

"Ding! You are affected by [death stare] (Stack 3). All damage received increased b 300%, lasts for 12 seconds!"

Black Claw's [death stare] was casted every 10 seconds, coincidentally the same as the cooldown time of [justice defense]. This was the reason Kindling Chest Hair had been the receiver of [death stare] each time he had provoked the boss.

"-528!"

Black Claw's normal attack damage was already around 150 points usually and since Kindling Chest Hair had 3 stacks of [death stare] on him, his basic damage had reached an approximate 600 points! Deducting the Defender's passive 15% damage reduction and character defense, the damage had still amounted to 500 plus points!

Reduced to almost nothing from a total of 700 HP in an instant, Kindling

Chest Hair panicked and screamed, “Heal me!”

“+76!”

“+73!”

“+100!”

Three green numbers floated across Kindling Chest Hair’s head. They were the healing done by Prideful Babysitter, Ocean Despair, and his own ingested bottle of red pot respectively, raising his HP to 421 points. Although Ocean Despair had hated Kindling Chest Hair, he had still dutifully healed him at such a critical moment.

“-509!”

Black Claw made another blow in an instant and the hit landed on Kindling Chest Hair.

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!”

Black Claw turned and continued attacking Zhang Yang.

Unable to contain it anymore, Flame Emperor laughed and said in the party channel, “It seems that the Defender does have some contribution! He’d endured three times of [death stare] for Zhan Yu! Your death was not in vain!”

“Yeah, a hero!”

“You can rest in peace!”

Players that were not from Pride were talking merrily in the party channel, their words causing Kindling Chest Hair to fume with anger. His intention was not even to help Zhang Yang, he merely wanted to throw a tantrum. Who would have known that he would be triple stacked with [death stare] which allowed him to be instantly killed by the boss!

He had dug his own grave, provoking the boss continuously to have Black Claw become immune to the effects. Zhang Yang could not have saved him even if he wanted to! Of course, Zhang Yang had no interest in saving such a foolish and arrogant guy even without the provoke immunity. He was not that kind!

“Speed up the DPS!” Zhang Yang said in the party channel.

“OK!” the crowd replied. Zhang Yang won their respect with his capabilities.

Without Kindling Chest Hair ‘snagging’ [death stare], Zhang Yang had quickly gotten stacked with many levels of the [death stare] debuff. Death would be an absolute certainty had the boss even touched him lightly. However, Zhang Yang had maneuvered himself with such agility, moving and dodging, not giving Black Claw a single opening to land a strike!

While [venom spit] had caused a certain degree of burden to the healers, because they did not need to heal their tank, a lot of MP was conserved and they had more than enough to heal the other players. The party had not lost any more members.

“80%! 70%!”

Under the constant attacks the party, the boss’ HP had decreased steadily. Nearly 3 minutes later, Black Claw’s HP was left with a mere 10%.

“Ding! Party Leader Floral Shorts has changed Group Looting Parameters to Master Loot!” A system notification popped up suddenly to indicate the change of distribution method.

“Floral Shorts! What are you doing?” Defiant Monk quickly questioned.

“I’m afraid that people will mess up the loot, so I’ll split it myself!” Floral Shorts said in a self-righteous tone.

Everyone kept mum and continued attacking the boss.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Black Claw! Obtained 3,650 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

Black Claw fell to the ground and dropped 3 to 4 equipment and a heap of gold coins.

“Let’s see what the drops are!” Equipment was every player’s main motivation to enter dungeons. When the boss had died, everyone had automatically surrounded the loot. However, due to the Master Loot Mode, they could only look at the equipment dropped but were unable to pick

them up.

[Black Claw] (Black-Steel, Fist Gloves)

Weapon Attack: 7 – 13

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds

Level Requirement: 5

[Heavy Chest Plate] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +3

Strength: +1

Level Requirement: 5

[Black Leather Boots] (Black-Steel, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Vitality: +2

Intelligence: +1

Level Requirement: 5

According to the dungeon setting, equipment dropped from Hardcore Mode would be one grade higher than Difficult Mode; and equipment dropped from Difficult Mode would be another grade higher than Normal Mode. Since Bangar Crypt was the lowest level dungeon in the game, only Hardcore Mode would drop Green-Copper equipment. If it had been according to the setting, the equipment dropped in Normal mode should only be White-tiered!

However, the game company had taken into consideration that if the first dungeon had only dropped White-tiered equipment, it would have discouraged the players! Compromising, they decided that Normal Mode would also drop Black-Steel equipment but its level requirement was reduced to Level 5 while Difficult Mode and Hardcore Mode continued dropping Level 10 Black-Steel and Green-Copper equipment respectively.

“Ding! Player Floral Shorts has obtained Black Claw!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has obtained Heavy Chest Plate!”

“Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has obtained Black Leather Boots!”

“Ding! You have been distributed with 96 copper coins!”

A series of system notifications rang. Party leader Floral Shorts had distributed all the equipment in a flash while simultaneously obtaining the gold coins and distributing them to each party member through the system.

This had caused a wave of disapproval among the party members.

“What the f*ck? How can you distribute the equipment without asking!”

“F*ck, barbarians hijacking equipment!”

“What did you think we were? Your workers?”

Floral Shorts snorted and said, “I am the party leader, of course I have the priority for equipment! Hairy is the main tank, if it wasn’t for him tanking the boss’ [death stare], we wouldn’t have beaten the boss, and he died twice. Is it wrong to prioritize him in equipment distribution? As for Precepts... he dealt the highest DPS among those who wore robes!”

“F*ck you! You can’t even command as a leader and had zero contribution to the party! How dare you put yourself as priority?”

“The Defender is a complete joke! There’s no difference to our party with or without him around! Zhan Yu got stacked with 13 stacks of [death stare] and he was alright. What difference would 3 stacks make?”

“Look at the damage statistics yourself! If you’re not blind, Precepts was much worse than Flame Emperor!”

Prideful Magus replied immediately, “The damage statistics is not even accurate. How is it possible that our Guardian ranks first every single time? I’ve been attacking all the time, I might as well commit suicide if my attack is lower than a tank!”

The rest of the players got even more enraged listening to his self-

righteous argument.

“Let’s go on, let’s go on. It’s just a few equipment, everyone can get them after a few more rounds!” Prideful Babysitter pacified the party.

“Change the party leader or we’ll quit!” Hundred Shots said.

“Yeah, change the leader!” the others followed.

“Ding! Player Floral Shorts has made player Prideful Precepts the Party Leader!”

Is this showcasing the lowest level of one’s IQ?

“F*ck! You are all shameless!” Defiant Monk was rendered speechless by these Pride members’ scoundrel ways.

“Either change the leader to Zhan Yu or disband!” Hundred Shots said while the others agreed immediately.

The four Pride members were at a loss.

“Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has made player Zhan Yu the Party Leader!”

Zhang Yang had encountered plenty of barbarians in his previous life but those who could compete with the Pride members were indeed few! These men should have joined the Rogue Clan! He smiled lightly and changed the Group Looting Parameters to Roll-the-Dice Mode and said “Let’s continue!”

He did not care for the loot from Normal Mode, there would be more good stuff waiting in Difficult Mode and Hardcore Mode!

He had wanted to kick the four Prideful players out but had quickly changed his mind. Expelling them was not the best way to punish them. The best way to release his anger was letting them know that this party had the ability to clear Difficult and even Hardcore Mode so these selfish, greedy guys should have tried to snatch better equipment, then kick the others out at that time to drive them mad with jealousy and regret!

Translator Notes

1 DPS in this case refers to the original term of the term DPS which means damage per second. In most cases, DPS, like many other gaming terminology, can be used interchangeably. DPS could also mean a type of class or role that focuses on dealing as much damage as possible. E.g. “We need another 3 DPSers to fill our party! PM for invite plez”

Chapter 17: The Second Boss

The players continued along their way. After killing five waves of minions, they reached the second boss.

A 3-man tall, green-skinned gnome was sitting in front of a large metal door napping, a sharp spear in its arms. The atmosphere was completely silent, as no other minions were around.

[Babarerba the Sleepyhead] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 13

HP: 39,000

“How do we fight it?” the party’s sight had settled on Zhang Yang. Unknowingly, he had become the party’s core.

Zhang Yang recalled and said, “This boss has only 2 skills: first, [Curse of Water and Fire], it will cast a water curse on a random melee player who is not holding the most aggro and cast a fire curse on a random ranged player. These two cursed players will keep losing HP but once both of them are together, the curse will be removed.”

“In that case, we can all fight in melee range distance. This way, there is no need to move everywhere, no?” Hundred Shots had thought of an idea.

Zhang Yang laughed, “If everyone did melee attacks, the boss will only cast the water curse. Two players will then keep losing HP and there’ll be no way to dispel it!”

“Oh!” the crowd nodded uniformly.

Zhang Yang began distributing responsibilities, “Later when we start the fight, ranged players stand together, remember to stand at least 10 meters away from the boss, that’d be around this line. I will position the boss later, ranged attackers do not cross this line or else the boss will consider it as melee range distance. Melee players attack from the left side, whoever gets cursed should run to the center. Respond as quickly as possible, otherwise it’ll be a burden to the healers. After the curse is removed, return immediately to your original positions!”

“Understood!”

Zhang Yang continued, “The boss’ second skill is to summon a puppet to aid him in battle at every 25% HP loss. The puppet’s HP is low, and should be around 3,000 HP in Normal Mode but its damage is sky-high! That is why we must nuke it the moment the puppet is summoned! You guys don’t have to worry about aggro, I’ll be the first to pull it!”

Everyone instinctively looked at Kindling Chest Hair. Usually the main tank would pull the boss’ aggro while the off-tank would pull the minions’. Things would then work out flawlessly. Obviously, Kindling Chest Hair was completely undependable. If he were to pull minions, those minions could end up flying everywhere!

Kindling Chest Hair was annoyed to the point of rage by the team’s stare, “What are you looking at?!”

“Pay attention. Even when the puppet is summoned, the boss will still cast [Curse of Water and Fire], so always remember to run to the center to dispel the curse!” Zhang Yang reminded.

“Understood!” the crowd nodded again.

“Alright! Start the fight!” Zhang Yang waved his sword and did a [charge] towards the boss.

“-78!” Normal attack.

“-138!” [horizontal sweep].

Babarerba recovered quickly and with a deafening shriek, it had thrust towards Zhang Yang with its spear.

“[block]!”

“-34!” [block] reflected damage.

“-99!” [shield bash].

“-55!” Normal attack.

“Attack now!” Zhang Yang commanded in the party channel.

The crowd moved onwards, melee fighters stood together, ranged

fighters gathered on their end as well.

In just a matter of time, Babarerba had casted [Curse of Water and Fire].

“Ding! Player Snowy Death has been affected by [Curse of Water], losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player’s death!”

“Ding! Player Hundred Shots has been affected by [Curse of Fire], losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player’s death!”

Without waiting for Zhang Yang’s reminder, these two players had come out of their formation and headed towards each other. They got together quickly and split up instantly, returning to their positions and resumed their attack on the boss. The healers had also healed them, quickly restoring their HP.

“Well done! That’s it!” Zhang Yang complimented as encouragement.

About 15 seconds later, Babarerba casted yet another [Curse of Water and Fire], its targets this time were Floral Shorts and Ocean Despair.

Ocean Despair had quickly gone to the center but Floral Shorts remained attacking the boss.

“Floral Shorts, quickly head to the center!” Zhang Yang frowned as he yelled.

“Run faster noob Knight, I’m still attacking here!” said Floral Shorts without a care.

“Bloody idiot!” Ocean Despair ran towards Floral Shorts in an instant. The moment the two of them were near each other, the spell was removed. Since Floral Shorts did not cooperate fully, they had taken a bit more time, causing them to lose over 200 HP. That was two-thirds worth of their HP value!

Ocean Despair then ran back to his position and self-casted 3 times of [holy light]. Only then did he manage to recover his lost HP, his expression vicious.

Babarerba’s HP had been lowered to the 75% mark soon after.

“Damned intruders, all of you must die!” Babarerba raised its spear and

began to chant a spell, “Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss, bring evil with you into this realm!”

“Ding! Babarerba has summoned Demon Puppet Tasair!”

A hexagram magic circle appeared underneath Babarerba’s feet. As a dim light flickered, a red demon only half a man’s height had appeared by its side, the demon’s long tail extended from its hip. It had sharp teeth, and deep green-colored eyes.

[Tasair, Babarerba’s Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 3,000

This was a minor demon, also known as an ‘imp’, the lowest ranked among the demons.

“Tasair needs a sacrifice!” The demon shrieked and set its sight on Prideful Babysitter, leaping towards him.

“[charge]!”

Zhang Yang dashed towards Tasair and landed a slash on it with his sword.

“-62!” Normal attack.

“-142!” [horizontal sweep].

“Target the imp! Nuke it!”

Tasair recovered from the stun and leaped towards Zhang Yang to attack him.

“[block]!”

“-39!” [block] reflected damage.

“-98!” [shield bash].

Zhang Yang lured Tasair towards Babarerba and when both the monsters were together, he crouched, evading both their attacks, and returned to his original position.

Tasair's HP was very low and it was immediately killed under the crowd's combined attacks. After that, the party refocused their attacks on Babarerba.

It did not take long for Babarerba's HP to hit the 50% mark.

"Intruders! Your attacks have hurt Babarerba! Babarerba is angry now!" Babarerba raised its spear again and began his chant, "Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss, bring evil with you into this realm!"

A hexagram magic circle appeared once again underneath Babarerba's feet. This time, a blue fat demon appeared by his side. It had no legs, but there was a black malicious cloud floating under it. There were faces with only eyes on both the front and back of the demon.

[Gluttony, Babarerba's Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 3,000

This floating demon, due to its blue-colored body and fat shape, was also called "Blue Fatty" by the players. This demon was one rank higher than the previous one but both monsters' attacks and HP were similar here in the Normal Mode dungeon raid, only differing in their appearance.

"Anbaratumargutton!" Gluttony let out a weird low noise and floated towards Snowy Death.

"[provoke]!"

Zhang Yang immediately took over and did a blow, "-59" damage text floating from the top of Gluttony's head.

"[block]!"

"-39!" [block] reflected damage.

"-98!" [shield bash].

"Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has been affected by [Curse of Water], losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player's death!"

"Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has been affected by [Curse of Fire],

losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player's death!"

Babarerba had taken the chance to cast [Curse of Water and Fire] during the chaos.

"Move quickly!" Zhang Yang frowned as he reminded them.

Kindling Chest Hair went on clashing with the boss like he had not heard a thing...

Prideful Precepts remained unmoving, shooting Frost Arrows...

"F*ck me, you two better start moving now. Your fucking HP is dropping too fast, I can't keep up!" Ocean Despair shouted angrily.

"Bullshit, I'm attacking! Healing is supposed to be you healers' job! Why else do we need you to raid the dungeon with huh?!" Prideful Precepts answered arrogantly.

"Fine! Fine! Do it your way. I'm not going to heal anymore!" Ocean Despair stopped his actions.

Prideful Babysitter was desperately healing but even if he were to heal one-to-one, he would not be able to keep going. What else could he do when there were two? He then said, "Precepts, Hairy, you two better get going now, I really can't keep this up anymore!"

Only then did the two of them stop what they were doing unwillingly, looked around and then ran towards each other.

After a few steps, Prideful Precepts' HP had dropped to rock-bottom, Prideful Babysitter was nearly done casting his healing spell but Prideful Magus had then died from [Curse of Fire].

"Ding! Player Prideful Magus has died!"

"Sh*tty noob Knight! F*ck you!" Prideful Magus cursed, "How the f*ck are you a healer? What the f*ck were you doing not healing?"

"If I ever f*cking heal you dogs with even another single drop of HP, I really am a shitty noob Knight!" Ocean Despair scolded back.

Without [Curse of Fire], Kindling Chest Hair could not dispel the [Curse

of Water]. He was barely alive from his vast vitality, as he shouted, “Shut the f*ck up and start healing me!”

Ocean Despair did absolutely nothing, determined to turn against everyone in Pride.

Prideful Babysitter had been healing Kindling Chest Hair constantly but how could he heal in time, especially when he was alone? Kindling Chest Hair’s HP loss was much faster than his healing speed. Within seconds, Kindling Chest Hair died as well.

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!”

“You f*cking noob Knight! F*ck your entire family!” Kindling Chest Hair too cussed.

“Ding! Player Prideful Magus was expelled from the party!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair was expelled from the party!”

Zhang Yang smiled faintly as two notifications rang out, “Too noisy, it’s disturbing the fight!”

Floral Shorts had wanted to rebuke but he held back and said, “OK, just add them back when the battle is over.”

Gluttony was killed promptly, and the battle’s rhythm returned to its normal pace.

Countering [Curse of Water and Fire] was actually not difficult, they were in Normal Mode after all. With the absence of both of Pride’s barbarians, the party’s efficiency had significantly increased with each player running towards each other almost instantly once they were cursed. The pace lasted until well after Babarerba summoned its third demon, as they finished killing the boss rather quickly.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Babarerba! Obtained 4,924 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

Chapter 18: Nuked?

“Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has joined the party!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has joined the party!”

After the battle, Floral Shorts had been urging Zhang Yang to re-invite the other two players into the party or they would have lost the chance to bid for an equipment once somebody had touched the boss' corpse.

Zhang Yang gave a slight smile and sent the party invitation to the two of them. Before they could even start arguing, Zhang Yang preemptively said, “All of you Pride members, no one speak from now on! I will kick anyone who can't keep their mouth shut. If all four of you can't keep your mouth shut, I'll kick all four out! We don't even need that many players in Normal Mode!”

Stunned by Zhang Yang's authoritative assertion, even though the four Pride players held a grudging look, no one dared make a noise. If these words were to come from Zhang Yang had they first started the dungeon raid, they would have treated it as a passing joke. After experiencing 2 boss battles though, they knew that Zhang Yang was a pro player, someone much more skillful than them!

Other party members smiled, their anger subsiding. They began to think even more highly of Zhang Yang.

“Touch the corpse!” Zhang Yang said casually.

Although Floral Shorts had stayed silent, his reaction was incredibly fast, rushing to the boss' side and with a touch, 3 equipment and a Roll-the-Dice window had appeared in front of everyone.

In Roll-the-Dice Mode, for items higher than White tier dropped by the boss, each player in the party could roll should they desire it. The system would then randomly generate a number between 1 – 100; the player who had the highest roll would obtain the item they had rolled for. Of course, if there was no need for the item, one could pass.

[Bloodstained Hat] (Black-Steel, Cloth Armor)

Armor: +1

Vitality: +3

Intelligence: +1

Level Requirement: 5

Zhang Yang had chosen to pass and the others were quick in making a choice. A total of 5 players rolled for the equipment.

Prideful Precepts, 36 points.

Flame Emperor, 87 points.

Prideful Babysitter, 76 points.

Floral Shorts, 27 points.

Kindling Chest Hair, 92 points.

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has obtained Bloodstained Hat!”

The party boiled with anger again.

“Why the hell did you roll for a cloth armor when you’re not even cloth classed, motherf*cker! Where did this barbaric Pride Guild come from? All barbarians!”

Those from Pride kept mum, be it due to having qualms about Zhang Yang’s warning or their arrogance which was keeping them from arguing. What was clear though, was that they were determined to be barbarous to the end. It did not matter whether the other two equipment fit them, they had chosen to roll for them anyway.

Zhang Yang sent a private message to the other party members one by one saying, “Level 5 Black-Steel equipment are not much better than White-Wood rarity ones. Let them “Need”1 roll! Let us clear the Difficult and Hardcore Modes later and show them what real loot is. Make them jealous, that’s the best payback!”

The players were thrilled. This would mean that Zhang Yang had intended on leading them to raid both Difficult and Hardcore Modes! After battling two bosses with him, they already had no doubts regarding Zhang

Yang's capabilities. Perhaps Hardcore Mode could be a problem, Difficult Mode though, there would be a big chance that they could clear it!

Receiving such a promise, the party calmed down. To be honest, Level 5 Black-Steel equipment would have been insignificant to Level 10 players. It would have been discarded after a few levels of use. The players from Pride had humiliated themselves for temporary benefits and had also lost their chance to raid the Difficult and Hardcore Modes with Zhang Yang. It was obvious whether they had benefited or suffered a loss.

[Hard Leather Chest Plate] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Armor: +2

Vitality: +2

Dexterity: +2

Level Requirement: 5

The rest of the party had fought back mercilessly in dealing with the Pride players' shameless act. All the players besides Zhang Yang had joined the roll, Ocean Despair ended up obtaining the equipment. He then passed the equipment to the leather armor classed player, Defiant Monk, who had the second highest roll. Defiant Monk was utterly grateful.

[Hard Leather Gloves] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Armor: +2

Vitality: +1

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

This equipment, however, had fallen to one of the Pride members. The four of them had looked as contented as winning a 500 million dollar grand prize. The others had already adjusted their emotions and had treated them as a joke. Only scornful smiles appeared at the corners of their lips, none of them saying anything.

The Pride Quad thought they had put a halt to the other party members'

momentum, feeling all the more pleased with themselves.

“Let’s move forward!” Zhang Yang said calmly after the equipment distribution.

Bangar Crypt had a total of 3 bosses and another 7 waves of minions along their way to the last boss. The party had spent 20 minutes clearing the minions and had finally reached the ultimate boss after passing through a long tunnel.

[Gnome Leader Dadarerda] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 14

HP: 42,000

Dadarerda was a 5-meter tall giant gnome sitting on a plain throne. By his side, 2 guards in duty were guarding seriously.

[Royal Guard] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6,500

Zhang Yang set his mind straight and began to explain the strategy, “This boss’ battle is divided into 2 parts. First, eliminate the 2 guards. I will grab ahold of their aggro when we begin. Target the ‘star-marked’ one first and then the ‘sun-marked’ next. Then we follow-up with the boss.”

“The boss has two skills. He will randomly place fire pits on the ground for the first skill. I think it should be about 10 to 15 pits. You have to pay attention and avoid the pits, because each step will cost you 100 points of damage.”

“The boss will spin and spew a cone-shaped flame for his second skill, and 300 HP will be taken once you’re burned! However, there’s a 2 seconds casting delay that can’t be interrupted but can be used as an indication of attack. The boss does not spin very fast, so as long as you follow its rotation, you’d be able to avoid the flame. What you need to pay attention though is that you’ll have to also focus on the fire pits as you evade the spewed flame. Keep your eyes on both dangers!”

Zhang Yang paused and asked, "Is everyone clear? If you don't understand, ask me now. I can repeat the strategy again."

Everyone remained quiet.

"Very well, we shall start now!" Zhang Yang wielded his sword and ran forward. When he was within the casting range, Zhang Yang used [charge] and stunned Dadarerda, slashing it at the same time. "-52" damage text then floated across the boss' head.

When the battle began, the gate to the passageway would be closed automatically and would not open again unless the battle had ended.

Both the royal guards immediately shrieked in their strange voice and charged towards Zhang Yang.

"[block]!"

"-32!" [block] reflected damage.

"-92!" Zhang Yang used [shield bash] on the 'star-marked' monster.

"-136!"

"-142!"

"-129!"

Zhang Yang immediately chained [horizontal sweep] with his previous attack, causing yellow damage numbers to drift across all three monsters' heads.

Without further instruction from Zhang Yang, the party had initiated their attack on the 'star-marked' monster at once.

"Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 60 seconds!"

10 fire rings with 1 meter diameter each then appeared randomly on the battlefield. Some had appeared right beneath the players' feet while some had appeared randomly across the battlefield.

"Beware of your steps!" Zhang Yang reminded.

Evading 10 pits was fairly easy. Everyone resumed attacking the 'star-marked' monster, killing it in just a short amount of time.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed a Royal Guard! Obtained 700 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“Next target! Continue!” Zhang Yang commanded.

“Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 60 seconds!”

Another 10 fire pits appeared on the field and everyone started becoming busy evading the pits.

Suddenly, Dadarerda stopped attacking and raised its hands. A progress bar appeared on its head as it began chanting in a weird language.

“Get ready! The boss is going to spit fire! Be on your feet!” Zhang Yang turned and moved away from the boss’ front, pulling the ‘sun-marked’ monster with him.

“Ding! Dadarerda used [flamethrower!]”

Dadarerda opened his mouth and a flame more than 30 meters long was spat. He then slowly twirled and began his rotating attack.

“Take note of where you’re stepping!” Zhang Yang pulled the ‘sun-marked’ monster’s aggro while moving along with the boss, hiding by his side the whole time.

Even with Zhang Yang’s reminder, a few players had forgotten about the [lava pit] beneath their feet as they evaded [flamethrower], causing damage text to float from their heads one by one.

“Ding! Player Floral Shorts has died!”

“Ding! Player Prideful Magus has died!”

“Ding! Player Prideful Babysitter has died!”

“Ding! Player Flame Emperor has died!”

Good job, 4 members had died in an instant! On the other hand, if it were not for Kindling Chest Hair’s 700 HP accommodating his damage from [lava pit], he would have turned into a corpse already.

“Continue the attack!” Zhang Yang did not want to criticize anyone. After all, since this had been everyone’s virgin battle against this boss,

progressing in any way was inevitable. Furthermore, the boss would cast [lava pit] every 10 seconds. Since the fire pits would last for 60 seconds, it meant that there would have been a total of 60 fire pits on the field later on, making things even more chaotic.

And this was only in Normal Mode. The fire pits in Difficult Mode would have lasted for 90 seconds with an extra 30 pits while Hardcore Mode's would last for 120 seconds, covering almost the entire field with fire pits.

"Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 60 seconds!"

30 seconds later, there were 30 pits on the field. Fortunately, [flamethrower]'s activation rate was less frequent.

"Ding! The party you are in has killed Royal Guard! Obtained 700 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!"

'Sun monster' kept it up for a while but had eventually succumbed to the party's nuke.

"Hurry up and attack the boss!" Zhang Yang hollered softly.

"Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 60 seconds!"

Almost simultaneously, Dadarerda stopped his attack and a progress bar appeared on its head once again.

"Ding! Babarerba used [flamethrower]!"

With 40 fire pits on the ground, all hell broke loose.

"Ding! Player Snowy Death has died!"

"Ding! Player Defiant Monk has died!"

"Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!"

"Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!"

"Ding! Player Ocean Despair has died!"

Amidst the raging flame, Zhang Yang became the sole survivor in his party!

Translator Note

1 In Roll-the-Dice Mode, the options a player is given is normally either Need, Greed, or Pass. Players who rolled Need will be given the highest priority, and so if you rolled a '1' when you chose Need, it did not matter if someone rolled '100' as Greed. You would still be the final winner of the item. In most cases, the game's system would prevent a player from rolling Need if the item could not be used by the player's character. However, this does not seem to be the case for 'God's Miracle'.

Chapter 19: Solo Kill

“Zhan Yu, give it up!” Hundred Shots advised when he saw Dadarerda’s HP had only dropped by 9%. “Let’s do it one more time. We’ve all experienced it now, surely we’ll last longer!”

Zhang Yang gave a slight smile and said, “Let me try!”

“Try your ass! Do you think you’re God, that you can solo kill a boss?” Prideful Precepts scolded. “I’ll kowtow to you thrice and call you grandfather every single time I see you if you could solo kill it!”

“Hmph! I’m not that blessed to be your grandfather, I don’t want to die of being infuriated by you!” Zhang Yang avoided the boss’ attacks agilely while delivering substantial damage to it. Technically, his damaging power was the highest in the team anyway. If he were to do it alone, it would only prolong the battle duration by 2 to 3 times more.

“Noob tank! Don’t waste any more of our time okay?” Floral Shorts joined in. “Each minute you take to fight it while 9 of us lay here is equivalent to 9 minutes wasted. You can’t possibly compensate us for the time lost!”

“Hey! Don’t assume you represent all of us!” yelled Snowy Death. “I have full confidence in our Guardian. I don’t mind laying here for a while! If you’re afraid of wasting time, you can always resurrect yourself immediately!”

“I also have no problems laying here for a little while more!” Hundred Shots, too, had expressed his support for Zhang Yang.

“Bunch of motherf*ckers!” Kindling Chest Hair could only cuss lowly.

Even though the Pride Quad kept throwing insults, none of them had released their bodies! In ‘God’s Miracle’, if you had released your body before a dungeon raid ended, you would not be able to resurrect to rejoin the dungeon as well and you would also be forgoing your ability to participate in the roll for battle loot.

Whatever had been going on in their minds, even though the Pride Quad

had no faith in Zhang Yang's ability to solo kill the boss, none of them had released their bodies, fearing the possibility of an upset! That said, even if they had released their bodies, they could not reenter the dungeon, so they might as well lay back and watch!

"Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 60 seconds!"

....

"Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 60 seconds!"

Finally, the field had achieved the maximum number of fire pits. With 60 [lava pit] on the field, it was a sight to behold! The field was fully enveloped in bright, fiery light! The pits had covered almost half of the entire landscape in such a huge cave!

"Ding! Dadarerba used [flamethrower]!"

Dadarerda began to spit fire again.

After [lava pit] had reached its maximum number of uses in the field, [flamethrower] became the biggest threat, forcing the player to move around. The current field filled with lava pits would have been the worst scenario for the players!

Only one-third of Zhang Yang's athleticism was required to cope with the current situation. This was just a joke for him. If this situation had required his full capabilities, how could he aim to clear Difficult and Hardcore Mode later on?

Dadarerba's HP dropped consistently, decreasing from 91% to 66% after 3 minutes!

Zhang Yang's HP had remained a solid 100%, moving at a comfortable pace in his evasion of the boss' attacks. He then swung his sword, chopping away at the boss' HP.

"Pro! A real pro!" Everyone stared in disbelief.

Though they had already known of Zhang Yang's exceptional skills, nobody had any idea how high his standard was! With the scene in front of them then, they clearly understood a pro's realm!

Solo kill a boss!

This dude could totally solo kill a boss!

No! Not only this boss, he could completely raid this entire Normal Mode Bangar Crypt dungeon on his own! The only difference would be that a party would take approximately 1 hour while he would have taken 3 hours!

Was this dude even human?

Flame Emperor immediately searched for a name on his Friend List and sent a private message and said, "Guild Leader, I have something to tell you!"

A reply came back soon after, "Is it important? I'm in the middle of Difficult Mode Bangar Crypt party raid!"

Flame Emperor turned on the recorder and filmed Zhang Yang fighting the boss. He then sent the recording over and said, "Leader, this is of utmost importance! You must see the video I'd just sent you!"

"Haha, you little rascal. You wouldn't be sending me another porno right?" The other side replied instantly, either he had killed the boss or they were completely wiped out.

"Guild Leader..." Flame Emperor expressed his innocence.

"Eh?" The player on the other end turned on his voice chat, his surprised tone could clearly be heard, "Hey! Quiet for a second, I'm talking to Flame here!" He paused for a moment and asked, "Flame, what's the man's IGN?"

"Zhan Yu!" Flame Emperor turned off the party channel and began voice chatting with his leader.

"Extraordinary! He never got hit once. There are so many pits on the ground yet never once did he step on them! Pro, an absolute pro! Even if this was only Normal Mode, it's still very impressive! When we did it previously, we actually got wiped out twice by this third boss and had only managed to clear it on the third try!" The person on the other end of the

line kept quiet for a while and said, “This player, he’s not in a guild?”

“Yeah. Otherwise I wouldn’t have called you!” Flame Emperor replied.

“Try to approach him later, ask him if he’s interested to join our Lost Paradise, I’ll loosen the conditions a little! Hmm, give him an Officer position and a spot in our guild’s first explorers team!”

“Okay, I got it! Oh right! Leader, he told us that he’ll clear Difficult Mode with us later. Would you like to join us?” said Flame Emperor.

“Hmm... I’ve yet to clear the first boss here so I haven’t used any of my entrance counts. Basically, I could still join you guys! Right, isn’t your party full already?”

“There are 4 shitty Pride members here, we’ll kick them out after clearing Normal Mode!”

“That’s good, reserve 4 spots for us from Zhan Yu. I’ll bring Sky and the rest to join you guys! Hold up about recruiting him, let me talk to him personally when I’ve come over!”

“Sure!” Flame Emperor agreed simply.

On the other side, Dadarerda’s HP had dropped to 21% yet Zhang Yang still had his HP untouched! At this point, no one had any doubts, Zhang Yang could totally solo kill the boss!

“15%!”

“10%!”

“7%!”

“4%!”

“3%!”

“2%!”

“1%!”

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Dadarerda! Obtained 42,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

Zhang Yang had obtained all the EXP since dead characters could not be awarded with any EXP. This had exponentially increased his EXP bar so much that one could visually witness the surge.

“He did it! He really did it!” The other 9 players mumbled to themselves as if they were dreaming.

“Go resurrect yourselves! I’ll wait for you guys to loot the corpse!” Zhang Yang said grinning.

Prideful Precepts though, had interpreted Zhang Yang’s intention with a crooked point of view and said, “Loot now! We’ll resurrect after equipment distribution. We can just revive at the entrance, no need to run all the way here!”

If drops were looted amidst resurrection, players outside of the dungeon would not be able to roll for the loot.

Zhang Yang smiled and crouched to touch the corpse.

[Heavy Hammer] (Black-Steel, One-handed Hammer)

Magic Attack: 8 – 12

Level Requirement: 5

[Lord’s Hat] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 5

[Linen Pants] (Black-Steel, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Vitality: +2

Intelligence: +1

Spirit: +1

Level Requirement: 5

The party began rolling and Ocean Despair had managed to get the Heavy Hammer, while Snowy Death had obtained Lord's Hat, and finally Flame Emperor had gotten Linen Pants. None of the Pride Quad had obtained anything!

This obviously made everyone happy, smiles etched on their faces except the Pride members whose expressions were awful. They then released their bodies and resurrected themselves at the spawn point.

"Hm, we shall challenge Difficult Mode after reviving. If anyone has anything else to do, you can leave!" said Zhang Yang casually. He actually had not much care for Difficult Mode's equipment but this party's current equipment was too basic. It would be extremely tough for them in Hardcore Mode if they did not loot some proper equipment from Difficult Mode.

The Pride Quad's eyes lighted up thinking about Level 10 Black-Steel equipment dropped in Difficult Mode! In comparison, Normal Mode's drops had been complete trash!

The party was quiet, no one had any indication of leaving.

"Pride members, you guys can leave yourselves!" Zhang Yang said.

"Why do we have to leave?" Kindling Chest Hair immediately shouted. Zhang Yang was obviously a pro player. As long as they followed him around, they would definitely have access to good equipment!

"No reason, I just don't like your faces!" Zhang Yang kicked them all out without further ado.

"F*ck! Add us back now or else I'll kill you every time I see you! I'll make sure to kill you back to Level 0!" Prideful Precepts had sent Zhang Yang a private message instantly.

"Bro, we've done you a favor by taking you in back then. You can't just kick us out like that right?" Floral Shorts tried to guilt trip Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not waste any effort talking to them, immediately blacklisting the Pride Quad. From now on, he would not be receiving any more private messages from them.

He opened the Character Search Window and tried searching for “Slim and Handsome” to see if Fatty Han had connected. Coincidentally, the result had shown that his character was online. Zhang Yang hurriedly sent a private message saying, “Fatty Shit, I’m Zhang Yang!” Attached along with the message was a friend request.

Instantly, the request was approved and Fatty Han sent back a reply, “Oh, I’ve just slept for about 2 hours and you’ve already reached Level 10?”

Zhang Yang scoffed and said, “Enough chit chat, go complete the pre-requisite quest for Bangar Crypt dungeon quickly! Big brother here will bring you to raid Difficult Mode!”

“Little Yang, you’d better not forget that you were born 2 months later than your Fatty Big Bro!” Fatty Han refuted and said, “Alright! I’ll go do the quest now!”

“Pro, now that we’re short of 4 players, I have some guild members who would like to join, let me invite them over, is that alright?” Flame Emperor asked in a private message to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “I have a friend joining, he’s doing the pre-requisite quest now so you can only invite 3 players!”

“Sure!” Flame Emperor gladly replied.

Zhang Yang passed over the Party Leader position to Flame Emperor and without much delay, he had added 3 players into the party.

“Ding! Player Crimson Fire has joined the party!”

“Ding! Player Phantom Day has joined the party!”

“Ding! Player Silky Snow has joined the party!”

Chapter 20: Difficult Mode

Flame Emperor had returned the leader position to Zhang Yang right after he had finished adding members with his invitations.

“Hi everyone!” Crimson Fire greeted with a smile as soon as he had entered party.

Zhang Yang was still exiting the dungeon when he said, “Those releasing their bodies would resurrect themselves at the entrance. Right, Crimson Fire, where are you guys? How soon can you be here?”

“We’re in a dungeon raid now. After we leave the original party, we’ll be sent to the entrance automatically, much faster than all of you!” said Crimson Fire with a smile.

Zhang Yang nodded and sent a message to Fatty Han, “Hurry up or you’ll miss the first boss!”

“F*ck, your fatty bro is on his way, wait for me!” Fatty Han replied immediately.

Zhang Yang smiled, of course he would have waited for Fatty Han before starting the boss fight. He as a human being would always have a little selfishness.

Very soon, the dead characters had resurrected at the dungeon entrance while Zhang Yang had also exited the dungeon, and all 9 of them gathered.

“Wow, we even have a beautiful lady!” Among the 9 players, 8 were male and Silky Snow was the only female player. This was a norm in any game, where the male player population would always be much higher than that of the female player population. ‘God’s Miracle’ had only attracted a large number of female players after a few months due to its realistic game interface.

Silky Snow had selected elf as her race, wearing a milky white long dress and a golden floral headpiece. She had a slender body, waist slim and long legs with round perky breasts. Her almond-shaped face oozed a mature

seductive aura, and while it was not peerless, she was outstanding and would definitely make heads turn.

Silky Snow, Female Elf, Priest, Lost Paradise, Level 10.

Crimson Fire, Male Dwarf, Bandit, Lost Paradise, Level 10.

Phantom Day, Male Orc, Berserker, Lost Paradise, Level 10.

These 3 people had the 'Lost Paradise' guild tag above their heads just like Flame Emperor. Before this, it was the Pride Quad; and now, it was the Lost Paradise Quad. Once bitten, twice shy; the other 4 party members inspected the Lost Paradise members with a cautious gaze.

Zhang Yang set the dungeon difficulty to Difficult Mode and said, "Let's go!" His eyes scanned around and saw that the Pride Quad had revived, looking at him and the party with eyes filled with vengeance.

"Ding! You have entered Bangar Crypt (Difficult Mode)!"

"Why are we still short of one player?" Phantom Day asked frowning.

"He's still doing the pre-requisite quest. He will arrive soon though. It's fine, we can go ahead!" Zhang Yang replied. The number of monsters had remained the same in Difficult Mode but their HP and attack damage would have increased exponentially.

[Gnome Soldier] (Elite)

Level: 10

HP: 7,500

Their HP had increased by 50% compared to Normal Mode!

Zhang Yang marked one of the monsters and said, "Focus your attack on the marked monster later. We'll take them out one by one!"

Phantom Day had once again voiced his opinion, "Can you hold so many monsters just by yourself? Should we get a Defender first then swap your friend in after we've got to the first boss?"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "It's fine, I should be able to hold it!"

Phantom Day kept quiet after that. They had known before they came

that this trip was to observe Zhang Yang's capabilities and then decide what conditions to offer him in recruiting him to the guild's first explorers team. That way why even if Phantom Day had not believed that Zhang Yang could pull 6 monsters, he remained quiet.

Zhang Yang moved forward wielding his sword. Before he could start the fight, his body suddenly flashed with a white light and a translucent shield appeared!

"Ding! Player Silky Snow has casted [holy shield] on you! 80 damage points will be absorbed. Lasts for 30 seconds!"

[holy shield] was a skill exclusive to Priests. It was very practical but it could only be obtained from skill books looted from monsters' drops. Seeing that Silky Snow was able to attain this skill, it would seem that Lost Paradise should have some capable players in their guild!

Zhang Yang had thought about it as he picked a monster and did a [charge].

"-64!"

11 Rage was generated from the normal attack and 10 more Rage had come from [charge], raising Zhang Yang's Rage to 21 at once.

"-146!"

"-152!"

"-304!"

"-149!"

"-144!"

"-153!"

6 damage texts popped up at the same time from using [horizontal sweep], one of them had even been a critical strike, a pleasing sight to those watching.

"F*ck you, what devastating damage!" Phantom Day yelled. While he was slashing monsters, he asked, "Zhan Yu, what skill of yours is that? How

could it be so powerful?”

Zhang Yang continued pulling aggro while posting the skill [horizontal sweep].

“What the f*ck, how could such a godly skill exist?! 200% melee attack damage and it’s even an AOE! This is wicked! Big brother Zhan Yu, where did you get this skill book from?” Phantom Day had admired the power of [horizontal sweep] so much that he had even addressed him as big brother.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “I coincidentally completed a Hidden Quest. This was the reward!”

After hearing that, disappointment greeted Phantom Day.

If the skill book was dropped by a monster, there would be a chance to obtain it no matter how rare it was! A Hidden Quest’s rewards though, could only be unique! There could only be one in existence!

Zhang Yang used [block] and reflected a significant amount of damage to all monsters. 8 seconds later, [horizontal sweep]’s cooldown time had ended so he gave the monsters another blow, bringing about another 6 horrifying damage texts. He then said, “Berserkers can learn [tornado cleave] at Level 20, it’s also an AoE attack!”

[Tornado Cleave]: Waves the weapon in your hands like a tornado. Causes 80% melee damage to surrounding targets. Cost: 20 Rage. Cooldown time: 10 Seconds. Requirement: Melee Weapon.

It seemed like a power-shrunk version of [horizontal sweep] but a Berserker could wield two one-handed weapons or a two-handed weapon. Its 80% melee damage would not have been any worse than a Guardian’s [horizontal sweep], of course, provided that both of their equipment were on the same level.

Phantom Day sighed and said, “But I’ll have to wait till Level 20! And the damage is much lower than [horizontal sweep]!”

Before Level 20, no other class would have any AoE skills other than the Defender. Even Zhang Yang had only obtained one because of a Hidden

Quest!

While the two of them were talking, the Gnome Soldiers fell one by one. Although these monsters' HP and attack were a lot higher than those in Normal Mode, it was still useless if they could not even land a hit! A higher HP had only meant that they took a longer time to kill them!

Few minutes later and 6 monsters had fallen.

"Zhan Yu, would you like to join our Lost Paradise?" Crimson Fire sent an invitation to Zhan Yu and said, "Our guild is sponsored by 'Dragon Century Corporation'. Every core member will have a fixed salary! If you join us, I can offer you an officer position and a spot in our first explorers team. The monthly salary will not be any lower than 10 thousand!"

A typical white-collar would have a salary of around 10 thousand each month. What Crimson Fire had offered was indeed not bad!

If it had been in his previous life, Zhang Yang who had just entered the game would have succumbed to this temptation and agreed immediately. However, a mere 10 thousand could not strike his interest any longer! Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Currently, I do not have any intentions to join any guild!"

"What a pity!" Crimson Fire said regretfully. He then turned his head and gave a look to Silky Snow.

The vixen subtly nodded her head and began to chat with Zhang Yang.

The beauty trap?

Zhang Yang shook his head with indifference. In his previous life, he would probably have been blinded by beauty. He was currently living a second life though, and that made Zhang Yang much more resiliently firm and steady. He regarded Silky Snow's advances with impartiality while leading the party forward.

"Little Yang, add me into the party, I've completed the pre-requisite quest!" A message had finally come from Fatty Han after the party had cleared their second last wave of minions.

Zhang Yang immediately sent a party invitation and an elf hunter called 'Slim and Handsome' appeared in the party list.

"Hurry up and come over or I'll start the boss without you!" Zhang Yang said in the party channel.

"Don't! Wait for me!" Fatty Han cried.

Some 7 or 8 minutes later, a jumbo-sized elf came running from the back, by his side was a black wolf.

According to the official introduction, elves were all tall and slim but 'Slim and Handsome' had completely destroyed the image of the noble and elegant elves. His bucket-shaped waist was already frightening to look at.

"I'm not late right?" Fatty Han scanned the party and his eyes shone when he saw Silky Snow. He ran over to her in his glorious jiggling ass and said, "Hi beautiful! I'm Slim and Handsome, the greatest hunter in the future, the one and only!"

Zhang Yang took the King Panther's Armlet he had obtained from slaying the Black Panther King and handed it to Fatty Han. Fatty Han took it naturally without faking courtesy. Giving him a smile, he equipped himself with the armlet.

Zhang Yang said, "Alright, it's the boss battle soon. Quiet down, I'll explain the strategy!"

"The boss still only has 2 skills. [death stare]'s effect remains unchanged but [venom spit]'s damage has increased by 50%, and every hit could deal 300 damage. Those who have less than 300 HP would definitely be killed within seconds! Silky Snow, please make sure you cast [holy shield] on everyone who has less than 300 HP in order to prevent member reduction!"

In the party, a total of 4 people had less than 300 HP – Crimson Fire, Phantom Day, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots. It would seem like they have distributed their AP on damage instead of their HP.

Of course, Fatty Han's AP distribution was completely influenced by

Zhang Yang. It would be meaningless if he had high HP since he would have a pet in the frontlines after Level 5 anyway.

“Is one tank really enough?” Crimson Fire expressed his worry and said, “The party I’ve led before had been wiped out for 7 or 8 times by this boss. It was all because the tank had accumulated too many stacks of [death stare] and was then killed instantly by the boss!”

“There’s no need to worry, our pro brother here had accumulated over 10 stacks of [death stare] in Normal Mode but the boss couldn’t even touch him!” Snowy Death praised earnestly, he had long since become a fan of Zhang Yang.

Crimson Fire still had his doubts but said, “Let’s try it out then!” He had kept another sentence unsaid, “The boss’ attack speed in Difficult Mode is much faster than in Normal Mode! Even if Zhang Yang could evade its attack in Normal Mode, that did not mean that he could do the same in Difficult Mode!”

“Let’s start!” Zhang Yang took a deep breath and went to the boss wielding his sword.

“[charge]!”

“-57!”

“-141!”

Zhang Yang chained [horizontal sweep] after a normal attack, causing a huge amount of damage in a short time.

“Begin the attack!”

Chapter 21: A Piece of Cake

Once Zhang Yang gave his order to attack, everyone started to deal damage with all their might.

‘Ding! You are affected by [death stare] (Stack 1). All damage received increased by 100%, lasts for 12 seconds!’

Not long after their attacks begun, Zhang Yang had received a debuff effect enveloping his entire body with a dark gas. Zhang Yang did not mind it but Crimson Fire was panicking internally, thinking, “The boss already has a high attack. Adding this stack of debuff means Zhang Yang would be instantly killed in just one strike!”

However, it was proven that his worries were irrelevant! Zhang Yang was dodging and attacking repeatedly without any sign of panic as he moved around agilely under the boss’ brutal attacks. The scene would have led people to believe that he was just having a stroll in his garden!

Oh come on, this is a Hard Mode boss! Crimson Fire shouted in his heart. His own guild had formed a so-called elite dungeon explorers team¹ but they were wiped² several times facing this first boss. If it had not been to witness Zhang Yang’s capabilities and to recruit him, he would have remained at the first boss, repeating the round endlessly.

How could he just dodge the boss’ attacks that easily? Crimson Fire could not comprehend it, as he had observed that Zhang Yang had not spent much effort at all – a slide to the right, a dodge to the left, how relaxed! How was it that the two tanks from his guild became ruthlessly crushed by the boss even though they had given their all?

“As expected of brother expert!” said Snowy Death with a look of extreme pride on his face, as if he was the one fighting the boss now instead of Zhang Yang.

As Crimson Fire unrelentingly attacked the boss, his gaze towards Zhang Yang became filled with a burning passion and his desire to recruit Zhang Yang into his guild grew stronger!

The ease Zhang Yang had in dodging the boss' attacks was, in fact, built upon his 5 years of experience of metagaming! Based on his instincts, each time the monster had made slight jerk, Zhang Yang would have been noted of where the next attack would come from and could dodge correspondingly in advance. This was all experience and metagame knowledge!

Suddenly, Black Claw stopped its attacks and turned. With a 'ptui', a black spit shot towards Defiant Monk.

A red damage text with '-300' then floated across Defiant Monk's head immediately. Luckily his own HP was high enough to withstand the attack. After deducting the 300 points of damage, he was still left with a mere 40 HP. With several heals from both Ocean Despair and Silky Snow, the party returned to its original attacking momentum.

To be honest, this boss' key difficulty lay with the tank!

Due to [death stare], the party would usually have two tanks. These two tanks would need to coordinate the aggro to prevent the tank's death from over stacking [death stare] on one of them. Once one of the two tanks died, the other tank would surely end up with the same fate – unless the party was strong enough to have killed the boss before any tank had fallen.

However, Zhang Yang was an exception! Having 5 years of superior metagaming experience, dodging the boss' fierce attacks was a piece of cake – effortless! He had speculated that even if it were a boss from Hardcore Mode, he could also still perform a 90% and above dodge rate!

Now that he had solved the issue of the tank's death, this boss would definitely be a piece of cake!

90%, 80%, 70%,...10%!

Black Claw's HP ran low and hit rock-bottom in an instance. With one last [shield bash] from Zhang Yang, Black Claw let out a loud growl and fell, popping equipment and gold coins on the ground.

"It's over?" Crimson Fire thought he was dreaming. This boss that had

taken his guild several hours to defeat was so easily killed by a pub party in just one try?

How conflicted he was! On one hand, he had wanted Zhang Yang to kill the boss to prove his worth in being recruited; and on the other hand, he did not want the battle to end so soon, as it would only prove that his guild's elite dungeon explorers team was just a lousy piece of...

"How was it? I told you brother expert is the greatest!" Both being Bandits, Snowy Death had instinctively felt closer to Crimson Fire, patting his shoulder with a pride-filled face. Crimson Fire could not help but curse internally at him boasting about Zhang Yang's achievement like it was his.

"Litte Yang, I'm the 'Lucky Hand', let me touch the corpse!" said Fatty Han as he went over immediately to loot the corpse.

According to an official statement by 'God's Miracle', loots from monsters were determined by players who did the last strike. However, most of the players were still superstitious, choosing to believe that loots would depend on the luck of players who touched the corpse, thus the birth and existence of the terms Lucky Hand and Unlucky Hand.

Fatty Han touched the corpse and a Roll-the-Dice window for the 3 equipment immediately appeared in front of everyone.

[Black Claw Rage Fist] (Black-Steel, Fist Gloves)

Weapon Attack: 15 – 23

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds

Level Requirement: 10

Both were fist gloves but compared to the pair in Normal Mode, this pair's Weapon Attack was obviously higher!

Both Bandits had chosen to roll while the rest of the party passed. Even though both Zhang Yang and Phantom Day could also equip themselves with fist gloves, one had already owned a Level 10 Black-Steel weapon while the other preferred two-handed weapons, so none of them rolled along with the Bandits. In the end, Snowy Death had rolled 87 and won

over Crimson Fire's 82, obtaining the fist gloves.

Snowy Death happily changed into his newly obtained weapon while flaunting it to Crimson Fire. The players who were not from Lost Paradise had somewhat felt that they were much closer to Zhang Yang, subconsciously ostracizing those from said guild as they felt that Lost Paradise players seemed to have joined for convenience.

[Dog-faced Helm] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +6

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

Both Knight and Warrior classes could wear heavy armor but Ocean Despair was a healer and the helm had physical attack attributes so he voluntarily passed.

Zhang Yang, 47 points.

Phantom Day, 33 points.

"Ugh! Unlucky hands!" Phantom Day shook his head in disappointment.

Zhang Yang put on the helm and his entire face was promptly hidden behind a dog head. At a glance, he looked like an actual standing dog!

Everyone burst into laughter once they saw him.

"Little Yang! Wow! You're so handsome right now!" Fatty Han guffawed.

Fortunately the game had the option to hide the helm and Zhang Yang checked the option immediately. Only then did the dog face disappear but the party was still holding in their snickers, the corners of their mouths twitching whenever they looked at Zhang Yang's face.

[Shiny Heavy Boots] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +5

Intelligence: +4

Spirit: +1

Level Requirement: 10

This was obviously a Sacred Knight's equipment, so everyone passed to allow Ocean Despair to obtain it without any hesitation.

'Ding! You have received 1 silver coin and 30 copper coins in distribution!'

After distributing the equipment, the money was collected. This boss was a stingy one, only dropping 13 silver coins.

The currency control in 'God's Miracle' was fairly strict. Currency inflation was never a problem even in the later stages of the game.

"Let's take a look at the damage statistics!" said Phantom Day excitedly. For a lot of players, raiding dungeons provided them with two pleasures in life: first, getting equipment; second, comparing damage!

When everyone checked the statistics, they were dumbfounded.

[Damage Statistics]

1. Zhan Yu, Total Damage 11,345, 21%
2. Slim and Handsome, Total Damage 8,647, 16%
3. Phantom Day, Total Damage 7,566, 14%
4. Crimson Fire, Total Damage 7,027, 13%
5. Hundred Shots, Total Damage 5,401, 10%
6. Snowy Death, Total Damage 4,863, 9%
7. Defiant Monk, Total Damage 4,861, 9%
8. Flame Emperor, Total Damage 4,328, 8%

"Zhan Yu! Are you actually a Guardian or a Berserker?" Phantom Day exclaimed. He was so confident that he would place first in dealing damage but he had never guessed that not only could he not place first, he

was not even ranked second!

Fatty Han immediately agreed with him, “Yeah! That’s right! I should’ve been at the top of the list!”

This fat f*ck had completed a Hidden Class Quest and had obtained [precise shot]. Even though it was only an ‘Average’ score reward skill, he still possessed an additional skill and extra AP compared to his peers. With everyone’s mediocre equipment, the advantage of having a skill would have been magnified.

Crimson Fire’s eyes burned with passion, he was even more eager to recruit such a talent now! His glinting pair of eyes was as like that of a sex-deprived widower, scaring Snowy Death who had caught a glimpse and had immediately created some distance from him, thinking that the man might have a different orientation in some aspects!

“Let us continue then!” Zhang Yang swung his sword, leading the team forward.

He had established an absolute authority, no one had any objection. After around 10 minutes of killing minions with utmost ease, the party had reached the second boss.

Compared to Normal Mode, this boss had much higher HP and damage, [Curse of Water and Fire] dealt more damage and summoned demon puppets were also more powerful. However, Zhang Yang’s party had also swapped in 3 Lost Paradise elites, boosting their battle power significantly.

Therefore, Zhang Yang did not care to explain much since the boss’ skills were the same. They only had to follow the same strategy as the one in Normal Mode.

With an attack command, Zhang Yang led the party and bashed the boss. Within just 4 to 5 minutes, the second boss wailed upon its death and had equipment scattered all over the ground.

Upon looting the corpse, there were only 1 leather armor and 2 cloth armor with no heavy armor in sight, annoying Phantom Day to the extent of him calling Fatty Han ‘Unlucky Hands’ and declaring that he was not

allowed to loot the corpse the next time.

The party chatted merrily. After they had distributed the equipment, they moved on and had killed the last boss after clearing waves of minions.

Ever since defeating the first boss Black Claw, no one had any more doubts in clearing Hard Mode! Zhang Yang was ridiculously strong. Everyone had felt that he only had to bring along a healer... no, there was probably no need for a healer, just him alone could have cleared the entire Hard Mode!

Their challenge now laid within Hardcore Mode!

Translator Note

1 A team formed to explore an uncleared dungeon to discover and understand the mechanics of the run. This will aid the top team of a guild in clearing the dungeon with record time.

Chapter 22: Hardcore Mode

“Brother expert, are we still doing Hardcore Mode?” Snowy Death gazed hopefully at Zhang Yang, he was afraid that the latter might say no. It was not just him, the rest of the party was also staring at Zhang Yang with puppy eyes.

Zhang Yang had proven himself to be capable of challenging, perhaps even clearing Hardcore Mode! As for gamers like them, there was no better glory than having the server announcements spam their names.

Just imagining the rows of red text from the server announcement hovering was enough to fill one with mind-numbing excitement!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Of course!”

Hearing his promise, the rest of the party all had delighted smiles.

“But I need to say something first!” Zhang Yang claimed, “I will need a Smithing recipe that would only be dropped by Hardcore Mode’s hidden boss, Momorermo. If anyone has any objection, speak up now so it won’t be awkward later!”

“Brother expert, I’m fine with it even if you want to claim all the equipment that dropped, let alone a recipe!” Snowy Death said excitedly.

A red text server announcement! That would have been much more enticing than any equipment!

“No problem!” the crowd replied.

“Alright, let’s go to Hardcore Mode!” Zhang Yang adjusted the dungeon difficulty and said, “Let’s go!”

One by one, all ten of them stepped through the dungeon entrance of Bangar Crypt for the third time.

‘Ding! You have entered Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)!’

“Tsk tsk tsk, Hardcore Mode. Just the announcement alone fills one with gusto!” Defiant Monk laughed as he said, “Are we the first party to challenge Bangar Crypt in Hardcore Mode?”

“It must be so!” Ocean Despair, too, boasted uncharacteristically.

“Brother Zhan Yu, how confident are you in clearing Hardcore Mode?” Laced with Crimson Fire’s casual tone of asking was his immense anticipation. As a guildmaster, he was more desperate than anyone else to be announced as the first to clear Hardcore Mode. It would be of tremendous help in spreading the name of his guild!

At first, Crimson Fire had only wanted to observe Zhang Yang’s capabilities personally to decide what conditions to offer in recruiting him to his guild. However, Zhang Yang’s performance in Hard Mode had already amazed him. If he could also clear Hardcore Mode, this would be an unexpected surprise for Crimson Fire!

“Bangar Crypt is the game’s first dungeon, so even if it’s Hardcore Mode, it’s not impossibly difficult. As long as we play according to tactics, chances of clearing the dungeon is still very high!” Zhang Yang remained reserved in his speech.

Crimson Fire, though, was delightfully surprised, “Both Sky High and The Dominators are clearing Hardcore Mode’s first boss, I’ve heard that they have been wiped for over ten times. Can we really surpass them?”

Sky High and The Dominators were both long standing guilds in games in the China region. Their distinguished existence had been undeniable in past online games, boasting impressive dungeon records! Since ‘God’s Miracle’ was launched, the guilds had also sent their main members into the game. Although Lost Paradise was also a sponsored semi-professional guild, they would only be a lightweight contender in comparison to Sky High and The Dominators.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “We should be okay!”

“I believe in brother expert!” Snowy Death had immediately expressed his trust in Zhang Yang, his faith solid as a rock.

Zhang Yang straightened up his sword and said, “Well, get ready to fight! Fully utilize your potions if you can, the monsters in Hardcore Mode are very fierce and we’ll need to maximize our DPS!” He stepped forward and used [charge] towards the 6 monsters that were standing at the entrance.

‘-70’, a normal attack landed on one of the monsters.

His Rage rose to 21 points and Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep].

“-144!”

“-159!”

“-143!”

“-900!”

“-153!”

“-148!”

“D*mn!” Phantom Day could not help but cursed as he witnessed a huge “-900” damage text appeared above the monster’s head. It was not just him, the rest were as bewildered!

Zhang Yang was surprised too. The reason behind such devastating damage was a complete coincidental superimposition of a [critical strike] with a [lucky strike], resulting in a total increase of 600%!

[lucky strike] dealt 3 times more than a regular attack, its trigger rate determined by the Luck attribute.

Due to the monster’s high defense, classes like Thieves and Hunters who rely on the Dexterity attribute could only deal mediocre damage because a normal attack was a mere 10 or so damage. They could only deal greater damage by casting skills but even then, it would only be 30-50 points of damage at the most. Witnessing such a ridiculously high damage of 900, not a single soul was spared from being dumbfounded.

“Zhan Yu, now I’m actually glad that you’re not a Berserker! If you had used a two-handed weapon with [horizontal sweep] just now, that damage would have reached 1,500!” Phantom Day patted his chest in relief, he had long since given up the idea of comparing damage output with Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Amp up the DPS! The faster we clear this, the quicker we get to wrap things up!”

Zhang Yang had kept something unsaid, which would be the implementation of an 'Inheritance Patch' in the future. Once it was released, each class would have an opportunity to obtain an 'Inheritance'. For example, a Warrior would have the Spirit Swordsman, Barbarian, God of War and so on for Inheritance; a Spirit Swordsman would have a 30% damage increase when sword-typed weapons were used in attacks.

The most powerful of all was the God of War Inheritance, it would be a unique inheritance where only one person in the whole world could obtain! One of God of War Inheritance's effects was to grant a Guardian or a Berserker the ability to equip two-handed weapons, dual wield one-handed weapons, or a shield in off-hand slot!

This meant that as long as Zhang Yang obtained the God of War Inheritance, he could still use two-handed weapons or dual wield one-handed weapons simultaneously! However, the patch would only be launched when players have reached Level 100. That would be at least a year later!

Everyone was motivated when they had witnessed Zhang Yang's damage power. There was no one who did not deal their damage to the best of their ability. They knew that they could never be on the same level as this madman but they did not want to lose to everyone else at the very least!

With this setup, waves after waves of minions were wiped and very soon, the party had arrived at the first boss, Black Claw.

This was the third time seeing that familiar dog face!

[Black Claw, Guarding Beast of Crypt Entrance] (Green-Copper Boss)

Level: 12

HP: 72,000

Compared to Normal Mode, the HP was doubled while the rarity had risen from Black-Steel to Green-Copper!

"F*ck this, that's over 70,000 HP! It's crazy!" Fatty Han wiped his saliva and looked at his poor little white pig's pitiful 300 HP. He could not help but cry. "Little Yang, can I make this boss my pet?"

“What do you think?” Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at Fatty and said, “This boss still isn’t difficult, it just has higher attack, [venom spit] can now cause over 400 damage. Let’s just hope that it targets our healers less frequently!”

Zhang Yang’s HP had reached 410 points from obtaining the ‘dog head’. Other than him, only Flame Emperor and Snowy Death had above 400 HP. That would mean once the rest of the party members were in contact with [venom spit], they would be wiped.

Zhang Yang pondered and said, “Silky, by all means, make sure everyone with 320 HP and above has [holy shield]. Give up on those with lower HP!”

Since [holy shield] could absorb 80 points of damage, those with 320 HP and above could still barely survive after receiving [venom spit] with the shield. However, those with less than 320 HP would die from an attack even with [holy shield]. Using [holy shield] on them would only be a waste of MP.

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang walked a few steps forward and used [charge] towards Black Claw.

‘-57!’

A sword slashed and the white damage text floated above the boss’ head.

Black Claw had recovered quickly and let out a fierce growl, swinging its claws to attack Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang hurriedly evaded while swinging the sword in his hand, using another normal attack.

‘-60!’

As his Rage rose to 29, Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep].

‘-145!’

Zhang Yang held back from using [block] because the boss’ attack speed in Hardcore Mode was incredibly fast. Even Zhang Yang could not ensure a 100% evasion rate, so he would only activate [block] when he could not evade the attack in time to keep himself from harm’s way.

‘Ding! You are affected by [death stare] (Stack 1). All damage received increased by 100%. Lasts for 12 seconds!’

Very soon, Zhang Yang was stacked with a number of [death stare] s.

The others had already started their attacks on the boss as soon as Zhang Yang had pulled the boss.

“Ding! You are affected by [death stare] (Stack 2). All damage received increased by 200%. Lasts for 12 seconds!”

20 seconds later, Zhang Yang was targeted with the second stack of [death stare]! Black Claw’s melee attacks was around 200 in Hardcore Mode and so, along with the debuff, Zhang Yang would have suffered from a 600 points damage which would instantly kill him in just a single attack even with the 20% damage reduction passive skill.

“Easy?! How could this boss have such rapid attack speed!” Phantom Day exclaimed. In his opinion, he was amazing if he could have dodged just one out of a hundred of the boss’ attacks. But it seemed like the faster the boss attacked, the quicker Zhang Yang’s reflexes became, almost as if the limit for his upgrade in technique and skill was the sky!

Truthfully, Zhang Yang was far from unleashing his full potential but with the limitation of equipment and insufficient Dexterity, he could only perform to this level!

Excluding Zhang Yang, the rest of the party members were extremely anxious that he would be wiped out by the boss at any given moment. Their tension was similar to that of tightrope walking, where a slight carelessness would spell doom!

To err is to be human. Zhang Yang was not a robot, and he eventually made a small mistake. He was just half a step slower!

A fatal half step!

Watching the unavoidable massive claw heading inevitably towards Zhang Yang led the party to feel disappointed. However, they had actually let out a sigh of relief in their subconscious minds – To err is to be human, otherwise they would have been God!

‘Ding! You have blocked Black Claw’s attack!’

‘-39!’ [block] reflected damage.

‘-204!’ [shield bash] succeeded in dealing a [critical strike].

Under disbelieving gazes, Zhang Yang had displayed an absolute counter. The [block] that he had been saving all this time had ultimately become 1, resolutely unraveling the devastating strike!

“Is that even possible?” Crimson Fire was stunned! He was certain that the 2 tanks in his guild would not have enough time to activate [block] in the event that they failed to dodge an attack!

After a while of madly attacking Zhang Yang, Black Claw turned his head and spat black venom targeting Hundred Shots.

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

Hundred Shots was instantly killed with a devastating 400 damage.

“Carry on the attack! Or else we’ll all die!” Zhang Yang shouted. He brandished his sword and continued to attack the beast.

90%, 80%... Black Claw’s HP was slowly reducing.

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day has died!’

...

70%!

‘Ding! Player Ocean Despair has died!’

...

10%!

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire has died!’

When Black Claw’s HP was at its final 10%, Zhang Yang’s party was also at its final 3 players, him, Fatty Han and Silky Snow!

“Come on!” The 7 players who had fallen cheered.

8%, 7%, 6%, 5%!

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome has died!’

“Go all out, Silky, forget shielding and healing, let’s attack together!” Zhang Yang shouted. If he was the sole survivor, the boss’ [venom spit] would definitely target him too. He was sure he could dodge this in Normal or even Hard Mode but the boss’ skill activation speed was too fast in Hardcore Mode. Furthermore, the distance between the two of them was too short, and it would be impossible to dodge!

Silky Snow complied and immediately began casting [holy ray].

4%, 3%!

‘Ding! Player Silky Snow has died!’

“Come on!”

“Kill it!”

“Pro, you can do it!”

Fatty Han and the others got excited, shouting as loud as they could. None of them was willing to let all that they had done end in vain at 1%.

2%!

1%!

Suddenly, Black Claw’s attacks paused and the black venom was spat!

“F*ck!” Everyone cried in their hearts.

Zhang Yang remained calm and continued slashing with the sword in his hand, dealing another 2 attacks.

‘-62!’ Normal Attack.

‘-840!’ [horizontal sweep], [critical strike] on top of [lucky strike]!

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has died!’

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Black Claw!’

The two system notifications rang. Zhang Yang and Black Claw fell at the same time!

Chapter 23: Close Call

“Is it over?”

“It’s over!”

Everyone went from hesitance to surprise and then to cheering with glee. If it was not for their characters being dead, they would all be hugging each other in celebration.

Especially for Crimson Fire. maybe normal players like Snowy Death could not fully grasp the actual difficulty of Hardcore Mode but he had full comprehension! Even super guilds like Sky High and The Dominators had died repeatedly in their attempts at the first boss. Under Zhang Yang’s lead though, they had actually cleared the first boss with just one try. If it was said to be sheer luck, Crimson Fire would disagree!

This man, Zhan Yu, he was certainly impressive!

“Revive and run back! We will distribute the loot!” Zhang Yang was the first to release his body and return to the start of the dungeon in his soul form.

Ever since his rebirth, this would be his first time experiencing the soul form. Looking at the monochrome surrounding, Zhang Yang felt a surge of dizziness and ran to resurrect himself at the dungeon entrance disarrayed. Within a flash, the colors returned and only then did he regain his train of thoughts.

The rest of the party had revived one by one and all ten of them stood before Black Claw’s massive corpse soon after. The crowd was still excited as ever. They would have believed they were in a dream if not for the corpse that laid in front of them! Fatty Han had even tried to hug Silky Snow but she had pushed Phantom Day into his embrace instead.

“Pro bro, loot the corpse!” Everyone turned their gaze to Zhang Yang. Before this, they could never have seen themselves defeating a Hardcore Mode boss! They were all grateful to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang patted Fatty Han’s shoulder and said, “Fat f*ck, go loot the

corpse!”

Fatty Han let out a joyful laugh and touched the corpse with his plump hand.

[Fang] (Green-Copper, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 24 – 32

Attack Interval: 1.4 seconds

Level Requirement: 10

Green-Copper equipment! This was by far the highest grade of equipment!

Both Thief and Warrior classes could use daggers but only a Thief specialized in Assassination could bring out the full potential of a dagger! The party had two Thieves but both of them were Bandits, that had only meant that no one in the party was suitable for this weapon.

“Warriors, Thieves, just roll for it if you want!” Zhang Yang nodded his head.

Being courteous, after Zhang Yang had passed, Phantom Day followed suit. Only Crimson Fire and Snowy Death rolled for the weapon.

This time round, Crimson Fire had rolled a 98, winning over Snowy Death.

“Such a pity. If only it were a one-handed sword, axe, or even hammer, it would have been the best!” Crimson Fire sighed disappointedly as he equipped the dagger to his offhand slot.

“It’s still not bad! Even though offhand weapon does not affect skill damage, just looking at DPS, this dagger’s DPS has reached 20, much better than Black-Steel equipment!” said Snowy Death enviously. To every profession in the game, weapons played the major role in dealing the most damage!

“Fatty Bro! Continue looting!” said Defiant Monk. Fatty Han was a social butterfly, he could bullshit and banter, and had been the best of friends with the party members.

Fatty Han looted with his fat hand again and another equipment popped out.

[Shiny Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +10

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +7

Level Requirement: 10

“Great item!” Fatty Han was gleeful, “I do have ‘Red Hand’!”

The 3 Hunters and Snowy Death had rolled. Crimson Fire had consciously passed since he had already obtained a weapon. In the end, Hundred Shots had gotten the equipment with 85 points.

“Sigh, I do have ‘Red Hand’ but why is my roll so unlucky?” Fatty Han shook in head for show and looted the corpse again for the last equipment.

[Refined Metal Gauntlet] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +6

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

As all the players saw that the equipment was of use to Zhang Yang, they had passed without a sound from Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not feigned courtesy as well, with a “thanks” he equipped the gauntlet at once, increasing his HP to 470 and attack damage from 82 to 90!

“Ding! You have received 5 silver coins and 20 copper coins after distribution!”

After collecting all the loots, the corpse began to disappear. The system was obviously very stingy as it had only awarded 52 silver coins even after defeating a Hardcore Mode boss.

“Next target, the second boss!”

The party went on their way to the second boss Babarerba in high spirits.

This first dungeon was indeed easy!

Zhang Yang could not help but think after clearing the last wave of minions. Minions from the second dungeon Marzerway's Lair and onwards would have been much tougher to handle. They would either have tricky skills or they would know [sneak], lurking in the shadows until players were within their aggro affective range then jumping out to ambush!

Of course, the trickiest would still be the bosses. The bosses in Bangar Crypt were so much easier compared to the upcoming dungeons. This Hardcore Mode could only be considered as a trial version!

[Babarerba the Sleepyhead] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 13

HP: 78000

“Little Yang! Same old tactic?” asked Fatty Han quietly, fearing that he might wake the boss up.

“Same old!” Zhang Yang nodded. He then frowned and said, “But those cursed with [Curse of Water and Fire] will lose 140 damage per second. So not only do you need to react faster, move to position and take a red pot at once, healers must also be quick on healing!”

140 damage per second was enough to wipe out most of the party members under 3 to 4 seconds.

Zhang Yang took a second to think and said, “Let's change the strategy up a bit for this round. Don't bother to attack the summoned puppets, focus your attacks on the boss solely. I'll hold onto the puppets' aggro!”

The healers won't be able to handle this massive amount of healing so we can't afford to drag this on. Kill the boss quickly!"

"Understood!" the crowd nodded.

"Alright, once I start attacking the boss, all of you attack instantly, go all out!" Zhang Yang took a deep breath and walked towards Babarerba's aggro range.

Babarerba woke up at once. It took its spear and dashed towards Zhang Yang yelling, "Foul mortal, you've awoken Babarerba! Babaerba will kill you!"

Zhang Yang stunned Babarerba with a [charge].

"-60!" Normal attack.

"-152!" [horizontal sweep].

At the same time, the entire party launched their attacks.

Babarerba had recovered quickly and thrusted its spear towards Zhang Yang.

"[block]!"

"-40!" [block] reflected damage.

"-106!" [shield bash].

This time, Zhang Yang did not hold back on using [block]. Firstly, the boss did not have any debuffing skills, even if he had accidentally been attacked, he would not be instantly killed. Secondly, this boss' DPS was too strong, Zhang Yang had to maximize his own attack power!

Babarerba was enraged, its eyes grew crimson and casted its skill.

"Ding! Player Phantom Day has been affected by [Curse of Water], losing 140 HP per second. Effect will remain until player's death!"

"Ding! Player Defiant Monk has been affected by [Curse of Fire], losing 140 HP per second. Effect will remain until player's death!"

"Don't be adamant on attacking, run now!" Zhang Yang commanded lowly.

Phantom Day and Defiant Monk were team players, both of them ran towards each other promptly while the two healers did their work, doing everything they could to make sure the two cursed players survived.

Within 2 seconds, the curse was dispelled as the two of them quickly got together.

“Good job! Return to your position and attack!” Zhang Yang commanded while evading the boss’ attacks. “Healers drink your blue pots if you need to, don’t try to save on those!”

After 15 seconds, Babarerba had casted [Curse of Water and Fire] again. Thankfully the party had already formed a certain degree of tacit understanding after grinding together in Hard Mode. Adding Zhang Yang’s authoritative stance, once he had prompted, they ran to position without hesitating; plus the hard work from the healers, there was no sign of losing players.

Slowly and steadily, Babarerba’s HP had dropped to 75%!

“You despicable vermin! Babarerba is angry!” It then stabbed its spear into the ground and raised both its arms chanting a spell, “Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss, bring evil with you into this realm!”

A hexagram magic circle appeared beneath Babarerba’s feet and a red imp appeared by his side. This was the second time the party had met Tasair.

[Tasair, Babarerba’s Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6000

Without further delay, Zhang Yang used [provoke] before Tasair could do anything.

“!#\$\$% (demonic language)!” Tasair shrieked and waved its claw towards Zhang Yang.

“[block]!”

“-46!”

“-40!” Two [block] reflected damage text appeared together.

“-160!”

“-150!” [horizontal sweep].

Zhang Yang jerked his hand, his sturdy shield bashed Babarerba's face, “Ignore the imp! Focus on the boss!”

“-106!” [shield bash].

Pained by Zhang Yang's continuous attacks, Babarerba picked up the spear stabbed into the ground and thrust it towards Zhang Yang. At the same time, it casted [Curse of Water and Fire].

Both cursed ones moved instantly, dispelling the curse just as their HP bars were almost emptied.

“Zhan Yu, I only have half MP left!” said Silky Snow.

“I only have slightly more than half too!” Ocean Despair echoed.

“I got it!” Zhang Yang frowned. Hardcore Mode had required players to have decent equipment before raiding! According to the official guide: spend two days to raid Hard Mode then Hardcore Mode. A strong team may defeat the first boss then spend another two days raiding and collecting equipment before trying out the second boss. The final boss had always been the hardest. Without 4 to 5 days of dungeon exploring, it would be undefeatable!

If it had not been for Zhang Yang, this party would never have been able to clear Hard Mode, their basic equipment was pathetic as evident in raiding Hardcore Mode: insufficient DPS and healing ability!

Zhang Yang had left this issue in the hands of god now since he would not be able to do anything about it.

Since the party did not have to change their attack target, it was as if dealing damage on a wooden dummy, reducing the boss' HP to 50% quickly!

“Foolish mortals, I will crush your bones to make my goblet!” Babarerba had so many programmed lines. He threw his spear aside once again and

started to summon the second puppet.

A hexagram magic circle appeared and another imp joined the battle.

[Gluttony, Babarerba's Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6000

Zhang Yang was ready with his [horizontal sweep]. After casting [provoke], he had quickly chained [horizontal sweep].

The floating creature turned immediately and waved its plump limbs towards Zhang Yang.

“Hey Fatty! Looks like this guy is much fatter than you!” Zhang Yang joked, an attempt to humor the current stressful atmosphere.

“Oh f*ck off!”

Fatty Han puffed angrily and said, “I’m fatter than it!”

In his opinion, being fat was a sign of strength. He would never take second to anyone or anything!

Chapter 24: Jubilant March

The importance of a good leader to a team could be seen from Zhang Yang's pub1 party!

Under Zhang Yang's timely reminder, those afflicted with [Curse of Water and Fire] had instantly moved positions to dispel the curse. They had not lost anyone as of yet! If it had been another party, they would have been disoriented by the chaotic situation, and would have repeatedly wiped out for several times now!

"Despicable mortals! Babarerba has underestimated you, Babarerba will be serious now!" As its HP fell to 25%, Babarerba began its third summon, "Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss..."

The hexagram magic circle flashed again, and a sensual woman appeared beside Babarerba. It had two long horns on the top of its head and a long tail behind its back. Its hand was holding a whip, and its legs were a pair of hoofs!

Its outfit was exceptionally skimpy, its upper body was only covered by a small leopard-skinned bra, revealing most of its skin while its lower body was clad in a lace mini skirt. Truly a seductive feast for one's eyes.

[Alice, Babarerba's Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6,000

Succubus, a demon ranked higher than the imp and floating demon but considering the fact that it was brought in as a summoned puppet in this dungeon, it did not have any specific skill set.

"Slap!" Alice struck with its whip, its hips swaying as she posed lewdly, "Mm... My dear master, you've summoned Alice, do you wish to do something naughty?"

"F*ck me, is this for real?" Fatty Han wiped his saliva, "Little Yang, can I get her as a pet? Just seeing her beside me every day will definitely boost my mood a hundred fold!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Change your class to Priest or Spellcaster and you might have a chance to get the Summoner Inheritance when the Inheritance Patch is launched. You’d then be able to summon a variety of demons, including this succubus!”

Fatty Han looked longingly at Alice with heart-shaped eyes and finally said unwillingly, “Fine! I’ll remain a Hunter, a class with a confirmed future!”

“Zhan Yu, my blue pot is out!” said Silky Snow.

Ocean Despair followed, “I can probably heal another 2 more times!”

Truthfully, it had been lucky that the 2 of them had held up till now! In a dungeon raid, a tank would usually receive most of the healing. However, since Zhang Yang had an exceptionally high damage evasion capability, he basically had not drained any of the healers’ MP. That was why these two could manage to hold on till now! Otherwise, if they were to heal another tank with their current equipment configuration, they would have depleted their MP much earlier.

“Healers ran out of blue pots. Everyone get ready with your own red pots, don’t be stingy on those! Move even faster if you’re cursed with [Curse of Water and Fire], don’t wait for my reminder!” said Zhang Yang in the party channel.

“Roger!”

The players attacked with all their might since the healers had completely exhausted their blue pots. The boss would never stop casting [Curse of Water and Fire] just because they had no more blue pots. If the fight dragged on, they would all be annihilated!

22%, 19%, 16%!

‘Ding! Player Snowy Death has died!’

‘Ding! Player Defiant Monk has died!’

The boss had casted [Curse of Water and Fire] again. Since Snowy Death and Defiant Monk only had 200 HP left and their red pots were still on

cooldown, they died from the curse after taking just 2 steps despite reacting in time.

“Keep up with the attacks!” Zhang Yang’s sword slashed. He was evading 4 monsters’ attacks while dealing significant damage at the same time, “Silky, Ocean! Come to the melee range!”

Silky Snow and Ocean Despair were confused yet they did not hesitate and immediately ran to the boss’ side. They had nothing to do anyway, so they took out their weapons and began attacking the boss, dealing a stream of ‘-1’ attacks.

14%, 11%, 9%!

‘Ding! Player Silky Snow has died!’

‘Ding! Player Flame Emperor has died!’

“Phantom Day and Crimson Fire are the main DPS. And they’re the only two players at melee position. If no one came to fill the space up, they will definitely be nuked!” Zhang Yang casually explained.

“Damn, Little Yang, how could you be so sly! You sacrificed our lovely Silky just like that?” Fatty Han complained in Silky Snow’s stead while checking out her body lying on the floor, cussing in his heart that her skirt could have been lifted higher so he could peek more clearly.

“I’m happy that I could at least be of use till the end!” Silky Snow sent a smiley face in the party channel.

Fatty Han teased immediately, “Lovely Silky! I’ve been in love with you all along! You’ve better not have a change of heart and fall for Little Yang! Let Fatty Bro tell you, that guy could go 3 months without showering even once. You can smell his foul odor even from 3 kilometers away!”

Silky Snow smiled bashfully and ignored Fatty Han.

7%, 6%, 4%!

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire has died!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

“Come on, almost there!” the fallen players cried, thinking if it would be a close call just like the battle against Black Claw.

Zhang Yang thought and said, “Ocean, you move to the ranged position!” 3 of them were in melee position right now while Fatty Han was the only one in a ranged position. If there was no adjustment, Fatty Han would definitely die! Fatty Han was currently the second highest DPS output and Zhang Yang needed him to survive until the end. He could only depend on luck now to see who the boss would target!

3%! 2%!

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day has died!’

‘Ding! Player Ocean Despair has died!’

“Yeah!” Everyone cheered when the boss had targeted Ocean Despair instead of Fatty Han, making Ocean Despair feel miserable. “It’s not like I had offended any of you. Do you guys have to be so happy about this?”

1%!

0%!

With the last drop of HP drained, Babarerba fell with a shriek.

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Babarerba! Obtained 39,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

“We did it! We did it again!” the party applauded endlessly. Before this, who would have thought that a pub party like theirs could take out 2 bosses in a row as though it was a piece of cake!

“Wow, so much EXP!” Fatty Han exclaimed.

Zhang Yang brandished his sword to continue dealing damage to the 3 remaining demons and said indifferently, “If you had died, I would have gained more EXP!” He paused and said, “Everyone don’t release your bodies yet, there should be an achievement!”

Fatty Han ordered his pet to attack while drawing his bow and asked, “Little Yang, what achievement?”

“Some superficial shit, it’s just to show off what you have accomplished without actually rewarding anything!” Zhang Yang replied casually.

Even though all 3 demon puppets had 6,000 HP each, they still did not last long under the combined attacks of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han. Quickly, they died one by one.

‘Ding! You have obtained the achievement, I Can 1V4!’

“What is this stuff?” Fatty Han said.

Zhang Yang explained, “This Achievement System is usually available in Hardcore Mode dungeons and it’s usually used to encourage a more difficult killing method. For example, we’ve completely ignored the summoned puppets and only targeted the boss. The system has identified this as a harder method and rewarded us with this achievement title!”

Only then did everyone understand. However, what they knew better was the fact that they could not have gotten their hands on this achievement if it were not for Zhang Yang’s capabilities! Why couldn’t their equipment be better to allow them to kill the boss normally?

“Revive yourselves!”

8 of them released their bodies. While running back they asked, “Zhan Yu, are there any other achievements outside of the dungeons?”

“There are, and many more so. You probably couldn’t obtain all of them even after playing for 10 years!” Zhang Yang organized his thoughts and said, “For example, if you get killed by the same person for 100 times, you’ll get an achievement called ‘I Hate You’! If you get killed 1,000 times by the same person, you’ll get ‘I Hate You to the Core’!”

“ ... ”

When everyone had returned from resurrection, Zhang Yang told Fatty Han, “Go loot the corpse!”

Fatty Han had been waiting impatiently, this was the moment he had been waiting for after such a long battle with the boss!

“Behold! Fatty Bro’s big Lucky Hand!” Fatty Han extended his fat hand

towards the boss' corpse.

"Brother Han, wash that hand first!" Snowy Death shouted.

[Lightning Spear] (Green-Copper, Two-handed Spear)

Weapon Attack: 85 – 113

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 26

Level Requirement: 10

"G-good stuff!" Phantom Day began to drool, his eyes radiating desire.

Aside from him, the rest of the party had automatically passed. The equipment went straight into Phantom Day's inventory.

"Thank you everyone, thank you!" Phantom Day equipped the spear at once, bowing in appreciation to everyone, "Especially Big Bro Zhan Yu!"

Fatty Han got angry and said, "Phantom Day, I was the one who'd looted the corpse! Why didn't you thank me?"

"Thank you Fatty Bro!" Phantom Day was slaphappy with euphoria, quickly bowing to Fatty and causing everyone to laugh.

[Heavy Boots] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +5

Strength: +4

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

'Sha', the moment the Roll-the-Dice window appeared, 9 of them passed, giving Zhang Yang an unconditional win on the equipment dropped.

"Thank you everyone!" Zhang Yang courteously thanked the party and equipped the boots. His character's attributes increased immediately.

HP: 520, Strength: 70, Armor: 31, Attack Damage: 86 – 94.

[Babarerba's Secretly Stashed Succubus Mini Skirt] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Armor: +2

Vitality: +10

Intelligent: +7

Spirit: +3

Level Requirement: 10

Once this equipment came up, everyone was dumbfounded. All of them had clearly remembered it to be the same mini skirt the succubus had been wearing just now. If a female player were to wear it... that would definitely cause nosebleeds!

"Damn, that boss was too depraved! Despicable!" Fatty Han claimed, full of righteousness. Despite saying that, his eyes went back and forth between the skirt and Silky Snow, not bothering to hide his own lustful intentions!

"Together, we request this equipment to be given to Silky babe!" Snowy Death yelled.

Only 2 players were able to equip cloth armor – Silky Snow and Flame Emperor. As long as Flame Emperor passed, the equipment would belong to Silky Snow.

Flame Emperor laughed and unhesitatingly chose to pass. Since they were both from the same guild, it would belong to the same stash no matter who had it. Moreover, he was a male character. Wearing a skirt would be too much for the eyes to take in. He would have never dared to wear something like that, unless it were Celestial equipment.

Silky Snow's face flushed with embarrassment.

Translator Note

1 Pub party is a gaming community lingo for public party. These are parties formed by recruiting players in public, and their efficiency can be quite inconsistent, since more experienced players would normally choose

to venture into dungeons or quests with pre-made parties with their guild members or own social circles. For achievement-related objectives like First Clear and Speedruns, players would generally choose to avoid pub parties due to their unreliability.

Chapter 25: The Undefeatable Boss

“Lovely Silky, you must put on the skirt to increase the party’s morale!” said Fatty Han righteously even though he was drooling.

“Yeah! Yeah!” A bunch of wolves started to cheer.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Even if she does put it on, you guys won’t have a chance to see it. Can’t you guys see that she is wearing a dress?”

The animals were disappointed when they heard it.

Fatty Han straightened his collars and said, “Well then, Fatty Bro must continue to work harder, I’ll definitely loot a cloth armor top from the next boss!”

“Alright, settle down. Let’s move on to the last boss!” Zhang Yang swung his sword around.

“Zhan Yu! Now that I have a new weapon, my damage output will definitely not lose to you!” Phantom Day said confidently.

Weapons played a major role in increasing damage output. Phantom Day was using a Level 5 Black-Steel two-handed sword obtained from a Class Quest. Now that he had swapped it with a Level 10 Green-Copper two-handed spear, his attack power had increased significantly, as did his confidence!

Zhang Yang smiled a little and said, “Okay! Let’s fight for it!”

The party went forward and cleared the minions, finally arriving at the final boss after going through a small passageway.

Before engaging, Phantom Day checked the damage statistics and felt down once again. Even though his damage output had surpassed Fatty Han, he was still immensely behind Zhang Yang, their difference a total landslide.

If it compared damage done on single targets, Phantom Day would catch up and quite possibly even surpass Zhang Yang after equipping himself

with the new weapon. However, facing waves of minions which led to there being multiple targets, Phantom Day who was without any AoE1 skills would still lose to Zhang Yang because of his [horizontal sweep].

“I’ve never thought that we could actually come this far!” Crimson Fire exclaimed as they stood together facing the final boss. To think that 2 hours ago, he was still dying repeatedly at Hard Mode’s first boss yet now here he stood before the final boss of Hardcore Mode.

The passion to recruit Zhang Yang burned even stronger. Of course, he also wanted Fatty Han whose damage output was incredibly high. The best case scenario would be recruiting them both. Crimson Fire sent a private message to Silky Snow saying, “How are you doing? Do you think you could get a hold on Zhan Yu?”

“That guy seems like he won’t buy anything I try!” Silky Snow replied quickly.

Crimson Fire replied, “I believe in you! You’re our Lost Paradise’s ultimate babe! As long as you put in more effort, even the strongest of steel will melt into cotton fluff.”

“Sigh, I’ll need to be a honeypot again!”

“It’s not so bad. This is just a game anyway, you don’t even have to do the real deed! Give him a little bait to entice him, isn’t that the best trick up your sleeve?”

“Hmph, let me put out my disclaimer first. I’m all for baiting Zhan Yu, he’s hot anyway. But that fatty is an eyesore, don’t even try to ask me to do anything!” said Silky Snow.

“Sure. Do your best, you must bring Zhan Yu into our guild! You’ve also seen what he can do! If he joined us, our Lost Paradise will surely be among the strongest guilds in ‘God’s Miracle’! And when that happens, our sponsorship will increase by at least 10 folds!” Crimson Fire was worried that Silky Snow would not give her best so he had quickly explained the stakes involved.

“I got it! He’s sure to fall for me with just a flick of my fingers!” said Silky

Snow confidently.

...

“The final boss is a problematic one!” Zhang Yang stopped at the entrance of the boss’ field and hesitated. “This boss has two skills. There’s one that spews fire which causes around 500 damage. Most players would be killed with just one strike! The other skill with the fire pits has its duration increased to 120 seconds. After 2 minutes into the battle, there will literally be no spots to stand on. The damage by the pits are around 200 points, you’ll die quickly if you remain in there!”

Dadarerda in Hardcore Mode had been dubbed one of the most frustrating bosses ever by players in his previous life! Due to the many fire pits in addition to the boss’ flame spits, there would technically be nowhere to evade it. Death was certain, be it from [flamethrower] or [lava pit]!

The First Kill of this boss had only been achieved by a party which had depended on their level and equipment when its players had achieved an average of Level 30. That was how overwhelming the two skills were!

However, somebody had discovered later on that there was a terrain bug in Hardcore Mode boss’ field. The boss would not cast fire pits on that specific spot. With this, there was finally a possibility to defeat this boss provided one had reached a certain level of skill.

Once the bug tactic was leaked, the boss became much easier to kill. The developers did not issue any penalty nor attempt to fix the terrain bug. Instead, they had recognized this tactic as a battle strategy. With regards to this issue, the developers had explained: When the boss was designed, they had ‘slightly’ underestimated the effect of [lava pit], causing the boss to be overly strong. Since there were players who had discovered the bug tactic, even if it had violated the game’s original intention, they would have to let bygones be bygones.

Zhang Yang knew very well that without the bug, the party’s level and equipment would have never been enough to nuke the boss within 2 minutes! If they had not been able to do that, then they could only be

burnt to their deaths by the fire pits!

However, he could not think of an acceptable reason to reveal the method! “I read it on the internet!” seemed to be quite acceptable but how could it be possible to have found every single detail online!

He then decided to have the party to first try it out normally before revealing the bug tactic.

The party had killed two bosses in a row, thus all of them were bearing much confidence and were eager to take on this boss. They did not perceive the boss to be as difficult as they had thought of before.

Zhang Yang shook his head, thinking of how he would be nuked for once.

“Same old plan, kill the star-marked first followed by the sun-marked!” Said Zhang Yang as he tagged the two monsters with the marks and dashed over with his sword.

[charge]!

‘-71!’ Normal attack.

‘-167!’

‘146!’ [horizontal sweep].

Dadarerda and its two guards rushed towards Zhang Yang growling. Within a short while, the field was filled with sounds of sword clashing.

Everyone had nailed their teamwork, attacking the star-marked monster without waiting for Zhang Yang’s instructions.

‘Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

Dadarerda spread its arms. With a flash of red light, 10 blazing pits appeared and spread all over the field.

The party swiftly moved, avoiding the pits and continuing their attacks on the star-marked target.

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed a Royal Guard! Obtained 650 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

The star-marked monster was nuked by the party in an instant.

Dadarerda growled and a progress bar appeared on its head.

‘Ding! Dadarerda has used [flamethrower]!’

“Prepare to evade!” said Zhang Yang as he pulled the sun-marked monster around Dadarerda.

When the boss’ [flamethrower] had ended, the sun-marked monster only had less than 25% HP remaining – the team’s damage power had indeed increased after Phantom Day had equipped a new weapon.

‘Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed a Royal Guard! Obtained 650 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

The party then focused their attacks on the boss once both guards had been defeated. With the boss’ high HP of 84,000 though, their progress to bring it down was extremely slow.

‘Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

...

‘Ding! Dadarerda used [lava pit]. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

In just 1 minute, the entire field had a total of 60 [lava pit] s. When the boss had casted [flamethrower] again, the entire party was a mess but since they had experience from both Normal and Hard Mode, they had somewhat managed to endure the chaos.

By the time the number of [lava pit] s had reached 80, the number of surviving players started to drop and when the number of [lava pit] s reached 100, everyone had died except for Zhang Yang! Eventually, there were 120 [lava pit] s and the field was a sea of fire for as far as the eyes could see; nowhere was safe.

Everyone’s skyrocketed confidence had plummeted back to their original state. How would one evade a sea of fire?

If there were no boss, Zhang Yang might still be able to find his way out

of the [lava pit] s. However, he had to dodge the boss' attacks and evade the [lava pit] s beneath his steps simultaneously. Even Zhang Yang could not pull off such a feat!

Of course Zhang Yang had not intended to solo kill the Hardcore Mode boss, what he had wanted to do was to 'reasonably' stumble upon the terrain bug!

He led the boss to move around with him and withdrew to a crack that could fit exactly one person! He stood at the crack and continued attacking the boss.

Even though he was not damaged by [lava pit], he could not evade properly as he was stuck in the crack and he died after receiving numerous attacks from the boss.

The party, with their blind faith on Zhang Yang, had expected to witness another great counterattack of his solo fight with the boss. Seeing that he had actually failed and died, they were at a loss.

Zhang Yang released his body as he laughed, "Did you guys really think that I could defeat the boss alone?"

Everyone was embarrassed.

Reviving themselves, the party gathered again at the boss' field.

"Zhan Yu, how about we call it a day?" Even though Crimson Fire, too, had wanted to defeat the boss, as a guildmaster his judgement of a situation would certainly be better than everyone else! This boss was obviously still out of their league!

"I agree. Look at the sea of fire, there's literally no place for us to hide! The developers must not have wanted anyone to clear this boss!" said Phantom Day as he nodded in agreement.

The others still had their faith in Zhang Yang but after Phantom Day's analysis, they could not help but agree.

"Brother expert, it's already amazing that we could even set foot on this stage! Clearing one less boss only means fewer equipment. We'll defeat it

together after getting stronger!” said Snowy Death.

The few of them had only wanted to raid Normal Mode at the beginning. After tagging along with Zhang Yang, they had actually managed to conquer Hard Mode and even cleared 2 bosses in Hardcore Mode! What more was there for them to ask for!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “When I was pulling the boss around the place just now, I’ve found a place where there isn’t any fire pits. I think we can make our stand there and fight back!”

Chapter 26: Hardcore Mode, First Clear!

The crowd's eyes radiated simultaneously after having heard what Zhang Yang said!

Although they mentioned that they were willing to give up their intent of clearing the dungeon, but if there was a slight possibility of clearing it, each and every one of them would naturally tag along given the chance! As long as they could defeat this boss, they would obtain the 'First Clear' server announcement for Bangar Crypt. Having the entire server channel flooded with red messages about you, wouldn't that be the greatest glory any player could ever receive?

Zhang Yang said, "Look over there, can you see a crack in the wall? After I initiate the battle, I need all of you to continue with the original strategy and clear the 2 minions. All ranged characters including the healers will then hide inside the crack while I defend the frontlines! I tried it just now and found out that the position where the crack is would not have any [lava pit] s and the boss' [flamethrower] would only hit me alone. Healers, just focus your healing on me!"

"How about us?" Phantom Day, Crimson Fire and Snowy Death awkwardly said.

"As for you all... Every man for himself!" Zhang Yang said casually.

"Big brother, that's cold-blooded!" Snowy Death complained deliberately.

"Zhan Yu, you are despicable! You do realize my weapon attack is better, how could you just ditch me aside. Wuu wuu wuu, Silky Snow, please allow me to enter and be mine!" Phantom Day cried out.

Zhang Yang did some calculations. He found out that the base damage of [flamethrower] is 500 and with the Guardian passive skill deducting 20% receiving damage, he would only receive 400 damage from the skill. Currently his HP was 520 points, and as long as the healers did their job to ensure his HP was always in its best condition, this boss would be as good as being in the bag.

“Let’s give it a try!” Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and marked 2 Royal Guards with the star and sun icons.

“Here I go!” Zhang Yang stepped forward.

[charge!]

When [horizontal sweep] was activated and Zhang Yang managed to establish the aggro, he cried out, signaling the initiative to attack like a war horn.

After a brief moment, the two minions were defeated.

“Good job! Now, ranged attackers and healers! Quickly enter the hole!” Zhang Yang shouted.

“Hehe. Quickly enter the hole! I like that very much!” Fatty Han smiled depravedly while the other male players joined in to let out a perverted giggle.

The comment was treated as a mere passing joke and the team quickly headed into the crack one by one.

Zhang Yang relocated his character to the front of crack and shielded the players behind him. Fatty Han laughed and said, “To the 3 guys out there, may God bless you!”

“Healers! Keep your heals focused only on me. The people inside will take no damage and you can ignore the other 3 outside! My HP will be dropping very quickly because I can only use [block] to gain attack immunity. Healers, pay attention to the timing and drink blue pots. We will be wiped if your blue pots ran out before the boss dies!” Zhang Yang paused for a while and said, “Silky, do not cast [holy shield] and only use it when I tell you to!”

“Ok!” Silky Snow promised.

“Alright. Ranged attackers, deal as much damage as you can! As for the 3 players outside, try to contribute a little before you die by dishing out as much damage as you possibly can!” Zhang Yang twirled his sword and slashed the boss. Because Zhang Yang needed to remain in front of the

crack, he could not evade much due to the limited space, fully utilizing the only defensive skill he had, [block]. Even though he had 31 points of Defense, it was not enough to withstand the boss' 200 Attack, so he had to absorb them all, resulting in his health dropping like a waterfall.

It was fortunate that the healers listened to his instructions and did not heal the others, only focusing on restoring Zhang Yang's depleting HP. There was nothing to fear if the healers did not heal excessively.

'Ding! Dadarerda had used [lava pit], lasts for 120 seconds!'

Fortunately, there was only one pit on the boss' left side, while the rest spawned far from the melee attackers. As long as the melee attackers remained vigilant, they would not be damaged.

"Silky! Shield now!" Zhang Yang commanded instantly when he noticed the boss pause his attacks while a progress bar appeared over its head.

Immediately, Silky Snow waved her tiny hands and a semi-transparent barrier covered Zhang Yang. [holy shield] was an instantaneous spell and there was no delay in casting!

'Hong!' Dadarerda opened its mouth wide and spat out a trail of flame.

'-320!' A huge, red text floated over Zhang Yang's head indicating that he received damage. His initial HP of 389 immediately dropped to 69 HP. [flamethrower]'s base damage was 500 points. The damage reduced to 320 points. 20% was deducted by Zhang Yang's passive skill and 80 damage was absorbed by [holy shield].

With Zhang Yang acting as the barrier in the front, the rest of the party was safe and sound. However, things were completely different for the other 3 outside.

The boss was leaning against the wall and since the game did not have a function that allowed one to phase through the walls, the 3 of them were pushed against the wall. With nowhere else to run, they had to receive the brunt of the boss's attack head on.

'Ding! Player Snowy Death had died!'

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire had died!’

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day had died!’

“Wuu wuu wuu, how miserable!” Phantom Day cried in the party, “Silky Snow, please soothe me!”

Silky Snow merely replied with a smiling emoticon in the party channel.

Zhang Yang smiled wryly. This ‘flirtatious’ exchanges between Phantom Day and Silky Snow probably had a hidden motives. It was as though they were intentionally attempting to invoke Zhang Yang’s feelings of superiority so that he would try and wrestle for Silky Snow’s attention. Zhang Yang pondered about this while his hands showed no sign of slowing down. His sword waved relentlessly and the boss’ HP was plummeting!

Due to the terrain bug, the initially impossible boss fight had become extremely simple. Although the room was filled with [lava pit], no one got hurt in the crack. Fatty Han and the others only needed to mindlessly attack, attack and only attack!

80%, 70%... the boss HP fell swiftly.

Zhang Yang checked the MP of Ocean Despair and Silky Snow, and his heart calmed. It should be enough to hold on until the boss was defeated.

60%, 50%... 10%, there was hope!

“Brother Zhan Yu, let’s make a deal. After the boss is defeated, is it possible to use the name ‘Lost Paradise’ for the party name in the announcement? Of course, it wouldn’t be for naught. We will transfer 100 thousand to your account as payment, how about it?” Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

Using 100 thousand dollars to buy a server announcement sounded ridiculous. But if Zhang Yang agreed, Crimson Fire would be the one profiting.

At that time, ‘God’s Miracle’ had over 4 million online users, and out of that, 2 million users were solely based in China. That was no small

amount. A server announcement would be a great advertisement for Lost Paradise. Just think of how many members they would be able to recruit after such an advertisement?

Additionally, the guild was a sponsored one. There would definitely be a reward waiting for them if they could get themselves a server announcement, and the amount would definitely exceed 1 million!

Who else but Crimson Fire could have thought of such a profitable trade?

Zhang Yang thought and said, "I don't want money. I want ten thousand gold pieces!"

Currently, there was no exchange service between gold pieces and real life currency. However, there were private in-game currency traders! As the players' level were still relatively low and the in-game currency generation is even lower, one gold piece was valued at 10 to 13 dollars. Which means 10 thousand gold pieces would be worth about 100,000 dollars.

Crimson Fire did not hesitate and replied, "Deal! But currently the gold piece production is very low. I would need several days to collect 10 thousand gold pieces!"

"Okay, deal!" Zhang Yang accepted and assigned the party leader to Crimson Fire. The battle was near its climax and the crowd heard the system notifications but did not respond.

Even though Zhang Yang agreed to the deal, he did have a few considerations to think off before he could accept it. First, the dungeon's first completion was not all that fair. Second, he wanted to lay low and not attract too much attention. Third, he needed to collect a large amount of gold pieces to start stockpiling for his future plans!

Crimson Fire was surprised at Zhang Yang's instant reaction. He said, "You were quick at passing the leader to me. Aren't you afraid of me cheating you?"

"Keh keh, I can trust you!" Zhang Yang only said things that others

would like to hear. In fact, he believed that a smart person like Crimson Fire would not want to make an enemy out of him for just 10 thousand gold pieces.

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

Hundred Shots fired his last attack and Dadarerda let out its last loud growl before falling.

‘Ding! You and your party have killed Dadarerda! Obtained 12,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

‘Ding! Congratulations, you have obtained the First Clear of the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)!’

‘Ding! As a party leader, please name your party to be enlisted in the List of Hardcore Dungeon First Clear!’

An input box appeared in Crimson Fire’s interface. Naturally, he did not hesitate to key in ‘Lost Paradise’. Immediately, red notifications began to flood the server’s chat channel.

“Server Announcement: The party ‘Lost Paradise’ has successfully conquered the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode), obtaining the First Clear server announcement (China Server)! Their names will be eternally etched in the Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement Board!”

“Server Announcement: Player Crimson Fire (Party Leader) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races’ reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Member) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races’ reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server announcement...”

A huge uproar was triggered when the server’s chat channel was filled with the announcements.

“Seriously? I haven’t even passed Normal Mode and now someone even claimed the First Clear for Hardcore Mode?”

“I haven’t even left the beginner village!”

“Where did these strong players come from? This is only the second day and the First Clear of Hardcore Mode had already been taken!”

“Lost Paradise. Anyone heard of them before?”

“Haha, Lost Paradise is our guild! Our guild has experience in management and possesses proper reward and punishment regulation. All of you had just witnessed the strength of our guild, and right now we are still recruiting players! A Level 1 guild can only hold 10 thousand players. Slots were limited so it’s on a first-come-first-serve basis. Please do not miss this opportunity!”

“Request for babysitting!”

“Request for carrying!”

“Request for hugging!”

Under Crimson Fire’s management, his guild members traveled all over the place since the server announcement, taking advantage of this moment to scour everywhere in hopes of recruiting more skilled players.

Chapter 27: Analyze

‘Ding! You and your party have killed Black Claw. Obtained 24,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

“Wah, its finally over!” Screams of joy filled the air, Sky Shaman smiled proudly as he saw 9 of his party members celebrating after defeating the first boss. Sky Shaman then switched to the guild channel and announced, “Hardcore Mode. First boss, Black Claw. Defeated!”

“Oh yeah!” the guild channel was filled with cheering.

“As expected of the master! The official China’s number 1 tank! It hasn’t even been a day and you have already conquered the first boss of Hardcore Mode!”

“Haha. Our guild Sky High is really the strongest!”

“Those guys from The Dominators must be crying by now!”

“Guildmaster bro, bring me along when you enter Hard Mode please! I’m still wearing a lot of White-Wood equipment!”

“ ... ”

Everyone in the guild was discussing and chatting passionately, and Sky Shaman could not help but smile proudly. He asked casually, “How are The Dominators doing over that side?”

“Their elite team was wiped not longer than 5 minutes ago according to their members. They are still stuck at the first boss!” said a Hunter with a longbow hanging on his back. A tag on his head stating, ‘World Pursuer, Sky High’.

“Very well, we’re one step ahead of them!” Sky Shaman let out a smile. “However, we mustn’t let our guard down just yet! The Dominators has always been our archrival, which means they are strong! We must never stop improving ourselves! We must get the second and last boss to obtain the global announcement for our First Clear achievement and let everyone know that our guild, Sky High, is the strongest in every single game there is!”

“We will get the First Clear server announcement for the China server! But we will not stop there! We must also get the World’s Top 8 server announcement too!”

“We are the strongest!”

“Hurrah!”

4 of the team members were touched by Sky Shaman’s speech, their faces flushed with excitement!

“Server Announcement: The party ‘Lost Paradise’ has successfully conquered the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode), obtaining the First Clear server announcement (China Server)! Their names will be eternally etched in the Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement Board!”

“Server Announcement: Player Crimson Fire (Party Leader) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races’ reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Member) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races’ reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server announcement.....”

The server announcement channel began to flood with announcements.

“What!? Impossible!” Sky Shaman’s faced changed instantly. His legs went limp, almost to the point where he could fall down at any time.

In his face! Right in his red, shameful face!

At that moment, the entire guild channel turned dead silent.

Once the Achievement Board was open, Lost Paradise’s party name could be clearly seen.

[Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement] (China Server)

1. Bangar Crypt

First Clear Party: Lost Paradise.

Party Leader: Crimson Fire, Bandit, Lost Paradise.

Party Members: Zhan Yu, Guardian, No Affiliation.

Ocean Despair, Sacred Knight, No Affiliation.

Phantom Day, Berserker, Lost Paradise.

Defiant Monk, Sniper, Lone Desert Smoke

Hundred Shots, Beastmaster, No Affiliation.

Slim and Handsome, Beastmaster, No Affiliation.

Snowy Death, Bandit, No Affiliation.

Flame Emperor, Pyromancer, Lost Paradise.

Silky Snow, Priest, Lost Paradise.

“Guildmaster...” The 9 party member’s face turned bitter as they looked at Sky Shaman. The First Clear achievement for Hardcore Mode had been claimed and therefore all of them lost their will to continue.

As a guildmaster of a top-tier guild, Sky Shaman had a natural ability to judge and analyze a situation calmly. He began his analysis and said, “This party has 4 members from Lost Paradise. Even their party name is Lost Paradise. However, they have 5 non-affiliated members and a Hunter that belongs to another guild. If I guessed it right, this should be a pub party!”

“Pub party? Master, can pubs even raid Hardcore Mode?” asked the party members. If party that was comprised mostly of pubs could successfully conquer the Hardcore Mode, then what were the top-tier guilds’ elite teams doing?”

“Look at the composition of the party. There is only one tank!” Sky Shaman narrowed his sight, revealing a surprised and disbelieving expression.

“It’s real! There is only one Guardian. The other Warriors are of the Berserker and Sacred Knight specializations!”

Sky Shaman took a deep breath and exhaled. He was a Guardian himself.

He knew the boss' difficulty in the Hardcore Mode better than anyone else. Even the most recent Black Claw that they had just defeated could only be done because he and the other tank had been cooperating in other games, forming an unspoken bond between them. Only then were they able to solve the issue of the [death stare] stacking that would normally cause entire parties to fail.

But that party only had one Guardian. How did he endure the [death stare] throughout the battle and survived?

"If I'm not wrong, the secret to their success lies in that party's tank! Pursuer, try your best to obtain information on each member of this party, especially the Guardian, Zhan Yu!" Sky Shaman's expression cleared and said, "Disband the party. We have lost Bangar Crypt, but in the next dungeon, we will fight to regain our honor! In these coming days, I want all of you to keep to a strict training schedule! Even if you were able to, you are not to allow your names to be listed in the Level Ranking Board. I'm giving all of you 7 days. After 7 days, all of you must reach Level 20. We will be the first guild to claim Marzerway's Lair!"

Somewhere else - The Dominators' raiding team.

"Boss, our brother in Sky High said that their elite team has defeated the first boss!" said Circular Piglet hurriedly. It was not a strange thing, as both Sky High and The Dominators were rivals. They had always been at each other's throats in almost any other MMOs. They had always been fighting endlessly to be China's best guild. And now, their skirmishes had also brought them to 'God's Miracle'.

Humble Gentleman was calm. He said, "Don't be so agitated. Being one step ahead doesn't assure a guaranteed victory. It's still going to be a battle to determine who would have the last laugh!"

"Hey, hey!" Circular Piglet shyly scratched his head, "It is still not a good feeling to lose to them!"

"If you don't feel good losing to them, then get your sh*t together, you stupid swine! If it wasn't because of your careless mistake, we wouldn't have been completely wiped in the last fight now, would we?" lectured

Humbly Gentleman as he laughed.

“Aw, come on boss. Don’t remind me of my past mistakes. I’d already apologized for that a hundred times. I thought there was an earthquake, and that’s why I disconnected!” explained Circular Piglet.

“And? Was it really an earthquake?”

“No... it was my pet cat. It jumped on top of my head!”

“You stupid little pig. Remember! You’re our tank. You’re the wall that protects us! Before you are allowed to fall, you must always prevent the boss from attacking us at all costs! Understood?!”

“Understood!”

“Hm. If there really was an earthquake, you better stay strong. Do not worry about a tiny earthquake. If push comes to shove, I’ll personally dig you out from your house!”

Everyone was laughing at Humble Gentleman’s joke. The atmosphere lightened up and no one felt depressed for losing the fight.

“Server Announcement: The party ‘Lost Paradise’ has successfully conquered the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode), obtaining the First Clear server announcement (China Server)! Their names will be eternally etched in the Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement Board!”

“Server announcement...”

The atmosphere turned silent!

“F*ck, who are these people? They actually managed to conquer Hardcore Mode!?”

“Is it Sky High?”

“No. These people do not belong to Sky High’s elite team. Just look at the Achievement Board... Holy cow! Lost Paradise? From which hole did this low-tier guild dig out of?”

“Since when was a low-tier guild this strong?”

The Dominators guild channel was suddenly bursting with talks and

discussion.

“Boss...” Circular Piglet showed a bitter face. As if they had lost something that they did not even know, the members shared the same bitter expression. They were full of desire, trying to get their hands on the First Clear server announcement. But just when they were about to start their battle, the announcement was taken away from them. What else could they feel? To make matters worse, they lost to an unknown, low-tier guild!

Shame! Such a huge shame!

Humble Gentleman took a deep breath, laughing as he said, “Well, at least it wasn’t anyone from Sky High right? Think about it from their perspective. They thought they had the upper hand against us. Who knew they were only scooping water with a straw basket! They’re surely feeling much more despair!”

Circular Piglet and the rest of them laughed, some of them sounded forced but at least it was better than the worst case scenario.

“Do a little background check on those people. Especially that warrior called Zhan Yu. To be able to endure Hardcore Mode bosses is no easy feat. He must be a pro among pros! Heh. To think that a person like this remains unaffiliated with any guild! Zhang Lan, go and make contact with him! Get him into our guild! Oh yeah, try and get the rest of the unaffiliated players from that party to join us as well. If they could survive that mode, they would naturally prove to be quite extraordinary themselves.”

Similar reactions and conversations occurred simultaneously amongst the top-tier guilds throughout the entire China server.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party were indulging in their own version of excitement.

‘Ding! You have obtained the title, Crypt Slaughterer!’

The titles themselves were useless, as they do not possess any addition to the Attributes nor provide any special effects. However, to have a rare

title hanging over your head could attract quite some attention. The Crypt Slaughterer title could only be obtained by players who obtained the First Clear achievement. Naturally, it is extremely rare!

Zhang Yang turned off and disabled the friend request and stranger private messaging function to avoid being disturbed endlessly. After the excitement wore off, he would turn it back on again.

“We really did it!” If the ever-calm Crimson Fire was filled with excitement, the others were already bursting from it.

Zhang Yang ran over to the back of Dadarerda’s throne. He took out the pickaxe and started mining a glowing golden vein.

‘Ding! You have used [mining] on Plain Copper Vein. You have obtained Plain Copper Ore x3, Moonstone x2. Your Mining skill has increased by 2 points!’

This Plain Copper Vein will only spawn here in Hardcore Mode, after the death of Dadarerda!

Zhang Yang eyes glowed. Plain Copper Ore itself was already a rare vein and the Moonstone was part of the possible loot from mining the Plain Copper Vein. This is a rarity among rarities. Truly priceless!

“Wah Zhan Yu bro. You’re too mean. You could have at least left me one of those veins to mine! At least I could increase my [mining] skills!” said Phantom Days as he walked over, laughing as he spoke. Fortunately, he did not see the items Zhang Yang had excavated, otherwise there would be a hard time for Zhang Yang to talk his way out.

Zhang Yang laughed and shifted his attention to Fatty Han. “Fatty, time to loot the corpse and get our equipment!”

Chapter 28: Hidden Boss

The fickle-minded Fatty Han had only felt excited for a short moment when the server announcements flashed. He wiggled happily towards the corpse when Zhang Yang told him to loot it, ignoring the announcements, because his mind was already distracted by the thought of looting a cloth armor top just so he could witness the glorious sight of Silky Snow wearing the miniskirt!

[Heavy Crossbow] (Green-Copper, Ranged Weapon)

Weapon Attack: 42 – 54

Attack Interval: 2.4 seconds

DPS: 20

Level Requirement: 10

Ranged weapon. That would be a Hunter's weapon! Fatty Han's eyes shone, "I won't be giving in this time. I'll roll 100 points and grab this!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Alright, Hunters roll for the weapon!"

All 3 Hunters wanted the weapon seeing it would be the first Green-Copper ranged weapon in the server at this stage of the game. It was definitely going to be an attention grabber if they could get their hands on it and show it off in the city.

Hundred Shots, 98 points.

Defiant Monk, 99 points.

"F*ck you all!" Fatty Han prayed to all things divine at once before he pressed the roll button. "Abracadabra!"

Slim and Handsome, 100 points!

"Ah, haha!" Fatty Han was surprised at first before letting his laughter follow. The item had automatically entered his inventory.

"D*mn, Fatty, I'm going to report you for using hacks!" Defiant Monk cried.

“Haha, you should’ve known who I am!” Fatty Han flipped his hair in sass and continued to loot the corpse.

[Light Coat] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +8

Intelligent: +8

Spirit: +4

Level Requirement: 10

“It really came out!” Snowy Death was shocked.

“Flame-using magus, if you dare to roll, I’ll definitely wreck your ass!” Fatty Han said murderously to Flame Emperor.

As perverted as Fatty Han looked, he was like Zhang Yang. They grew up getting involved in fights and had a dangerous aura. Flame Emperor jumped and had actually selected to pass obediently. None would ever find out if it was because Flame Emperor was being pressured into it or because he had also wanted to see Silky Snow in the miniskirt.

Although Silky Snow had only rolled 15 points, the coat had naturally gone to her since there was no competition.

“Hurry up and change into it!” a group of lusty wolves cheered.

Silky Snow twisted and turned, reluctant to put on the coat.

Zhang Yang then added oil to the fire and said, “There’s still a Hidden Boss, so it’s best to power up however you can!”

Since Zhang Yang had already said so, Silky Snow could only change from the long dress she was wearing into the light coat. The sexy miniskirt was then unveiled to the crowd, showcasing her slender milky legs and just barely, her pink undergarments!

“Hallelujah!” Fatty Han wiped his saliva and looted the last piece of equipment distractedly.

[Lord’s Shin Guard] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +10

Strength: +7

Dexterity: +3

Level Requirement: 10

Phantom Day and Ocean Despair had both chosen to pass and the equipment went straight into Zhang Yang's inventory.

'Ding! You have received 9 silver coins after distribution!'

Dadarerda's corpse then disappeared and the coins on the ground were looted too.

"Brother expert, where is this Hidden Boss?" Snowy Death looked around.

Zhang Yang pointed to a corner of the room and said, "After Dadarerda has been defeated, an extra door will appear in the field and there will be a passageway that leads to the Hidden Boss!"

"Zhan Yu, how do you even know about this?" Crimson Fire asked suddenly, "Don't tell me that you've gotten it from the internet, I won't believe it!"

"Yeah, me too!" the others expressed their doubts as well.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Actually... I'm the Terminator and I've traveled 5 years back in time!"

"Boo!" the crowd jeered.

"Alright, alright. I've participated in the game's beta version!" Zhang Yang shrugged.

"Hmm!" The crowd bought it.

"Brother expert, what is the Hidden Boss' loot? Gray-Silver equipment?" Snowy Death asked.

"It's nothing that exaggerated. Gray-Silver equipment is only available in

Level 20 dungeons!” Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Have you guys realized? Have the bosses dropped any necklaces or rings before?”

“No!”

“Exactly, necklaces and rings are only available as loot from Hidden Boss in Hardcore Mode other than being rewards from certain quests!” Zhang Yang explained.

“Wow, in that case we must go for it!” Defiant Monk said excitedly.

Zhang Yang had given life to too many miracles. Their doubts on their abilities to defeat the boss had long since vanished!

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang waved his sword and walked to a corner of the room. Pressing on a protruding stone after feeling about, a stone door appeared and opened in front of them with a thud.

“Use the skill point awarded by the system just now as it’s better to strengthen yourselves even if it is just a little!” Zhang Yang then assigned the new skill point to [block], reducing its cooldown time to 7 seconds.

The others nodded and agreed.

Behind the stone door was a long passageway extending all the way down with both its sides lighted with torches.

Fortunately, there were no minions around. The passageway took them about a minute to traverse before they finally arrived at the entrance of a large stone chamber.

“Don’t go inside just yet!” Zhang Yang stopped at the entrance and said, “Let me explain the strategy!”

In the middle of the stone chamber laid a gigantic gnome. Different from other green-skinned gnomes, its whole body was in crimson red, leaking out a murderous aura. Its feet were shackled with a heavy chain with the other end locked into the walls.

[Demonized Momorermo] (Green-Copper Elite)

Level: 15

HP: 90000

“D*mn, its level is higher than the final boss!” Flame Emperor exclaimed in a hushed voice.

“Hidden Bosses have always been the hardest to defeat in dungeons!” Zhang Yang said. Of course, the badly designed Dadarerd was not included.

“This boss has 3 skills. The first is a DoT1 aura effect. As long as you’re within 30 meters of it, your HP will be drop continuously. It’s a magic effect! If I’m not mistaken, I think it is a Shadow element DoT which can reduce your HP by 30 for every 3 seconds! Priests, please remember to cast and maintain [regeneration] on everyone.”

“The second skill is demonization. The boss will randomly pick a player to demonize. The demonized player would then be controlled to attack everyone else. Regardless of whether you are melee or ranged now, you would automatically use melee attacks once demonized. A demonized character has 3,000 HP and each attack can deal 1,000 damage! The advantage is that a demonized character’s speed is extremely slow!”

“It’s very easy to dispel this effect. All you have to do is to deplete the demonized player’s HP and the control would return to the player, while restoring the player’s HP to its original state! However, demonization has one more negative effect – the player could still receive damage from party members for as long as 10 seconds after demonization vanishes. So once the effect is gone, you need to stop attacking immediately or else you might kill your own members! Dispelling demonization must be done quickly as once there are two or more demonized players, we’ll be as good as wiped.”

Zhang Yang paused to give them some time to digest the load of information and continued, “As for the third skill, every time the boss loses 25% HP, it will cast a special skill. I’ve forgotten the skill name but it’s an AoE skill and the range is 200 meters, it also does 1,000 attack damage!”

“1,000 damage AoE, shouldn’t we just give up then?” Crimson Fire

frowned and asked.

“Not really. During the battle, the Energy Crystal will randomly spawn around the field. A barrier will appear after shattering it, granting immunity to all attacks! The crystal has 1,000 HP and its barrier lasts for 10 seconds.” Zhang Yang had intended to explain further but after seeing everyone’s confused faces, he sighed and said, “Just do according to what I say. Attack what I tell you to, and move where I tell you to!”

“Roger!”

“Little Yang, you should’ve just said that earlier, it’s much simpler!” Fatty Han said mercilessly.

Zhang Yang thought for a moment and said, “Fatty, you’ll be responsible for breaking the Energy Crystal. It’s a crystal pillar half the height of a man. It’s very easy to spot but the location is not fixed so once it has spawned, you must remember its location. When I give you the signal to attack, ignore everything else and put in all your effort to break the crystal, got it?”

“You can count on me!” Fatty Han patted his chest in earnest.

“Alright, after we start, ranged classes including healers should stand 5 meters away from each other. If a ranged character is demonized then everyone should get away from him, while the other ranged characters should deplete his HP immediately! Melees just focus your attacks on the boss. If you get demonized, I’ll pull the boss away, while ranged characters concentrate on depleting the demonized melee character’s HP!”

Zhang Yang raised his sword and said, “Let’s give it a go!”

He moved a few steps forward and a red damage text “-24” immediately popped up above his head. At the same time, the system notification rang.

‘Ding! You are affected by [dark halo]. Lose 30 HP every 3 seconds (Shadow DoT) until you leave the aura’s area of effect!’

He had a passive skill with 20% damage reduction.

“Ogagaga! Here comes some little bugs to kill Momorermo’s boredom!”

Once Zhang Yang entered the boss' aggro range, Momorermo immediately jumped to its feet, grabbing the chain shackling itself and actually twisted the arm-thick chain off with sheer brute force!

"Momorermo is going to drink all your blood!" The ugly red-skinned gnome dashed forward and stretched its long arms, waving it towards Zhang Yang. Its hands were like the sharp claws of a beast, shining viciously.

Zhang Yang used [charge] and stunned the boss. He then raised his sword and slashed its head, spraying blood everywhere.

"Begin the attack!"

Upon Zhang Yang's signal began the final battle.

Translator Note:

1 DoT stands for Damage over Time which refers to an effect that causes smaller amounts of damage over a period of time. This damage is usually calculated per 'tick', which happens at regular intervals depending on the effect of the skill or item. The total damage dealt could be calculated as such, $[\text{Duration of Effect (s)} / \text{Interval for Each Tick (s)}] \times [\text{Damage Per Tick}]$.

Chapter 29: All Clear

“Ranged classes including healers, be aware of your surroundings! Make sure that there’s at least 5 meters of distance between each other!” Zhang Yang commanded as he pulled aggro, “The 3 melee attackers! Snowy Death, you stand on boss’ left and Phantom Day on its right. Crimson Fire, you’ll attack from behind it! F*ck, Snowy Death, can’t you differentiate left from right? Go to the other side!”

“Alright! All out, ramp up the DPS! The aura effect might seem to cause only a little DoT but every 3 seconds drains away 30 HP per character which would lead to 300 HP in total. Healers might not be able to handle that much healing once it’s dragged on!” said Zhang Yang.

The party nodded in agreement. Everyone performed at their best and attacked the boss with all their might.

All 6 bosses from Hard and Hardcore Mode had given Zhang Yang and the party a total of 18 equipment, which was about 2 equipment per player on average. Compared to when they had first started the dungeon raid, it was a huge improvement! Especially those who had obtained new weapons, their damage dealing capabilities had increased by leaps and bounds.

With both Phantom Day and Fatty Han already in possession of strong damaging power, their attack power had risen to a whole new level after swapping in new weapons, enough to allow them to be on par with Zhang Yang!

“Zhan Yu, check out the stats, I’ve already caught up to you!” said Phantom Day delightedly.

It was true. According to the damage statistics, Zhang Yang, Phantom Day and Fatty Han were in a rat race for the top 3 places in the list. With their miniscule difference in damage output, any first strike would have allowed that player to place first.

Zhang Yang laughed, “Aren’t you a little shameless to be competing damage output with a Guardian?”

“F*ck! Are you really a Guardian?” Phantom Day bemoaned.

‘Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Defiant Monk!’

During the intense fight, the boss had suddenly turned its head around as he directed a blood-red mist towards Defiant Monk! The mist flew at such an incredible speed that Defiant Monk was not able to react in time. His entire body suddenly shone with a crimson glow, expanding to at least double of his original size while his HP increased to 3,000 points!

“Ranged players including healers, quickly get away from Defiant Monk and nuke his HP!” commanded Zhang Yang.

Hundred Shots and the rest of the ranged players switched their targets immediately and fired towards Defiant Monk.

Being controlled by the boss, Defiant Monk had lost control over his own character and could only watch helplessly as his character proceeded slowly towards Silky Snow who was the closest to him.

‘-52!’

‘-47!’

A chain of damage figures landed on Defiant Monk and his HP was briskly reduced to 0. His body then returned to its normal size and his HP rewound to its original value.

“Stop! Resume attacking the boss!” Zhang Yang multitasked while maintaining his watch on the situation with Defiant Monk all along.

Still, Hundred Shots and the rest of the ranged attackers were a little slow in reacting, allowing their fireballs and arrows free rein and damaging half of Defiant Monk’s 300+ HP!

“You beasts! Couldn’t you guys be a little gentler?” Defiant Monk hurriedly consumed a red pot to reduce the healer’s load.

Another 10 seconds or so had passed.

‘Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Phantom Day!’

Zhang Yang swiftly took off and pulled the boss away. “Ranged, attack

Phantom Day. Melees, don't even try. You'd be wiped out instantly!"

"Shitty boss, why the hell would you pick me?! Did I ever offend you?" Phantom Day was pissed, as his damage output was a close tie against Zhang Yang's and Fatty Han's but now that he was demonized, he could only watch as his name plummeted down the damage statistics.

"My fellow comrades, fire upon me!" Phantom Day shouted, "Kill me! Hurry!"

With their initial experience, the ranged attackers became quicker in halting their attacks after depleting Phantom Day's HP. It was fortunate that they did it in time as he would have been killed by his own teammates with his measly HP that was less than 300.

"Fatty, have you seen the crystal yet?" Zhang Yang asked Fatty Han just as he saw the boss' HP drop to 80%.

"Mm, I saw it!" Fatty Han replied just as quickly.

"Okay, don't hit it yet! Wait for a little longer!" Zhang Yang said as his eye locked onto the boss' HP bar.

79%, 78%, 77%...

"Fatty! Unleash your attacks upon the crystal!"

"Alright!" Fatty Han changed his target immediately, firing his arrows toward the crystal that was half a person in height.

76%!

'Crack!'

The crystal broke and a blue, translucent, hemispheric light shield about 3 meters long in diameter appeared in its place.

75%!

"Momorermo is going to show you the real demon!" Momorermo had suddenly stopped attacking to chant something in an odd language, a progress bar appearing on its head.

"Everyone stop and follow me!" Zhang Yang turned and dashed towards

the light shield. “This boss’ skill has a 3-second cast time! Make haste, everyone!”

The party members had formed some sort of spontaneous reaction to Zhang Yang’s order and had ran with him into the light shield.

“Flame Emperor! Snowy Death! The both of you are too slow! Hurry up and run!” As he got into the shield, Zhang Yang turned and saw both Flame Emperor and Snowy Death being left behind. Even with Zhang Yang leading the party, each player’s response speed still varied.

‘Ding! Momorermo has casted [shadow blast]!’

A dark light with Momorermo as its core blasted out, its range reaching more than 200 meters!

‘Ding! Player Flame Emperor has died!’

‘Ding! Player Snowy Death has died!’

Two enormous ‘-1,000’ damage text appeared on their heads as both Flame Emperor and Snowy Death succumbed to the blast.

“Get out of this shield and go back to your original positions! Continue the attack!” Zhang Yang rushed out of the shield and used [charge] on the boss, stunning it.

The shield then faded after a few seconds.

Everyone spread back out to their positions and resumed the original attacking momentum but the loss of two members had greatly reduced their attacking power. Luckily the two who died were not the main damage outputs so the impact was not as disastrous. Since two of the players died, the healers also had a lighter load in healing the remaining team members.

“Hundred Shots, be my slave!” Demonized Momorermo let out a deafening growl and flung a blood-red mist towards Hundred Shots.

‘Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Hundred Shots!’

“Ranged attackers, fire towards Hundred Shots!” Zhang Yang instantly commanded.

Under Zhang Yang's instructions, the battle progressed smoothly.

'Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Slim and Handsome!'

Less than a minute later, the boss had turned and threw the mist towards Fatty Han.

"Melees stop what you're doing! Ranged, nuke Fatty Han back to our side!" Zhang Yang commanded swiftly. The boss had 53% HP currently. If they had dropped it to 50%, [shadow blast] would be triggered and with the demonized players still on the field, it would have been extremely chaotic, resulting in more deaths!

Once Fatty Han was released from demonization, Zhang Yang said quickly, "Fatty, quickly break the crystal!"

"Got it!" Fatty Han hurriedly fired at the crystal.

52%!

51%!

'Crack!' With the crystal broken, the blue, translucent shield reappeared.

50%!

"Haha, Momorermo will show you the real demon once more!" Momorermo stopped its attacks and began casting [shadow blast].

"Sprint your way to the shield! Don't insist on attacking! Only living players can deal damage!" said Zhang Yang as he sprinted towards the light shield.

'Ding! Momorermo has used [shadow blast]!'

A wave of dark light pulsed through the entire field.

"Carry on the attack!" Zhang Yang dashed towards the boss and brandished his sword, dealing significant damage.

"Silky! Ocean! How's your MP?" Zhang Yang's main concern was still the healers' healing endurance due to [dark halo]'s existence which would drop everyone's HP to their deaths once the healers ran out of MP.

“I still have 40% MP but my blue pot cooldown is almost done!” said Ocean Despair.

“I only have 30%. I just consumed one MP pot!” Silky Snow had also hurriedly replied.

Silky Snow had expended her MP much faster than Ocean Despair as she had to make sure everyone had [regeneration] on them.

[Regeneration]: Restores target's HP to the equivalent of 200% Magic Attack every 3 seconds over 15 seconds.

The boss still had 50% HP, this would be a little difficult!

“Keep up the effort! We can do this!” said Zhang Yang.

40%, 35%, 30%... the boss' HP continuously dropped.

“Stand strong! Just one more [shadow blast] and there'll be hope for us to clear this!” Zhang Yang encouraged the entire party. “Fatty! You can break the crystal now!”

“Roger that!” Fatty Han immediately drew his bow to shoot the crystal. After a chain of attacks, the crystal shattered and the blue, translucent light shield appeared once again.

‘Ding! Momorermo has used [shadow blast]!’

“Zhan Yu! My blue pots are out!” declared Silky Snow.

“I can do a few more!” Ocean Despair reported.

“Mm, got it!” Zhang Yang used [charge] on the boss and said, “Fatty! When the next crystal spawns, break it right away!”

“Okay!”

22%, 19%, 16%...

Without Silky Snow's [regeneration], the entire team's HP began to drop significantly, leading Ocean Despair to frantically spam [holy light]. His MP bar that did not have much to begin with flashed in alert.

“Little Yang! The crystal has spawned!” Fatty Han yelled and immediately fired.

Zhang Yang scanned the area and located the crystal's location, hastily making his way towards it while pulling the boss. "Everyone gather at the shield!"

"What about the boss' random demonization?"

"The shield makes us immune to it, no fear!"

'Crack!' Again, the crystal broke and the hemisphere appeared.

Zhang Yang withdrew himself to the very border of the shield and had the boss blocked outside of it. This way, he was immune to damage yet it allowed him to continue dealing damage to the boss.

"Ocean! Silky! How long till you can consume another blue pot?"

"24 seconds."

"14 seconds."

"Alright, after you consume the blue pots, focus your healings only on Fatty, Phantom Day and me. Ignore the rest of the team!" [Beginner Mana Potion] could only restore 100 MP, forcing Zhang Yang to make sacrifices.

15%, 14%, 13%, 12%. Just as quickly as it appeared, the shield vanished and everyone began to lose 30 HP every 3 seconds once again.

"Ocean Despair, become my slave!" With the boss' demonization, Ocean Despair's body expanded and he became the boss' underling.

"Don't mind him! Focus on the boss! Just half a minute more and we're through!"

Zhang Yang dragged Momorermo away from Ocean Despair.

"What a waste! If only he could consume one more blue pot to heal us for a little longer before being demonized!" Fatty Han murmured.

11%, 10%, 9%, 8%!

Silky Snow kept her eyes on the blue pot's cooldown time. Once the time was up, she quickly consumed one and her MP went up by 100 points.

Immediately, she casted [regeneration] on Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, and Phantom Day, expending her MP. A '-30' red damage text floated across

her head, depleting her last drop of HP and killing her.

‘Ding! Player Silky Snow has died!’

7%!

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire has died!’

6%!

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

‘Ding! Player Defiant Monk has died!’

5%!

4%!

3%!

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day has died!’

2%!

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome has died!’

Momorermo still had 1,747 HP left but Zhang Yang only had 124!

“You can do it!” everyone cheered.

Just in the nick of time, a crystal spawned!

Zhang Yang was thrilled, using [charge] towards it and slashed his sword repeatedly against it.

Even though the crystal pillar had 1,000 HP but since it had 0 defense value, its HP had dropped rapidly.

The boss came up to him!

“[block]!”

Zhang Yang swiftly activated [shield bash] on the pillar, depleting its remaining HP. He jumped right into the shield as soon as it had appeared, stopping his HP from dropping further at a worrying 4 points remaining. He then immediately turned and attacked the boss!

1%!

0%!

With a loud, enraged growl, the red-skinned monster had finally fallen.

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Demonized Momorermo. Obtained 45,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

“We did it!” everyone shouted in celebration.

Chapter 30: Jumbo Loot

Ocean Despair had immediately recovered after the boss had been defeated.

“Brother expert, you’re my idol from now on! You do not know how much I admire you!” Snowy Death shouted in the party channel.

Zhang Yang said, “Don’t release your bodies yet. I’ll be looting the corpse so that all of you can revive at the dungeon entrance after that to save time!”

“Okay!” the crowd agreed.

“Holy Spirits Abracadabra, please give me the shield recipe!” Zhang Yang rubbed his hands together and went towards the boss’ corpse.

[Resurrection] (Skill Book)

Use: You will learn [resurrection].

Class Requirement: Sacred Knight, Priest.

“Wow brother, you have the Lucky Hand!” Phantom Day yelled.

“Have a talk with the Sacred Knight, we must get our hands on this skill book!” Crimson Fire quickly sent a private message to Silky Snow. [resurrection] would be extremely useful in dungeon raids, greatly reducing the time consumed to revive oneself and therefore boosting the efficiency of dungeon raids!

“Okay!” Silky Snow replied and sent a private message to Ocean Despair, “Ocean, can you let me have this [resurrection] skill book first? I can pay you. How about 100 gold coins?”

After a while, Ocean Despair replied, “I want to learn this skill too, let’s roll together and see our luck!”

Silky Snow was in the middle of persuading Ocean Despair when Zhang Yang said, “Both healers roll for it!”

Silky Snow thought about it and decided to roll first. If her roll was higher then she could save herself the trouble of persuading a hard

headed person. Even if she had rolled a lower number, it was still not too late to strike a deal with Ocean Despair.

The rest of the party had passed, leaving both healers to roll.

Silky Snow, 86 points.

Ocean Despair, 91 points.

The skill book immediately went into Ocean Despair's inventory. Without hesitation, he immediately patted the skill book on his body and gained the [resurrection] skill. Silky Snow had still wanted to private message him, but who could have guessed that Ocean Despair had acted so quickly?

"Ocean, you can use your new skill to save them now. I'll continue to loot the corpse!" Zhang Yang laughed and said.

With a hum from Ocean Despair, he began chanting to resurrect the party members.

[Smithing Recipe: Earthen Round Shield] (Smithing Recipe)

Use: You will learn to smith Earthen Round Shield.

Requirement: Beginner Smithing Skill.

"That's it!" Zhang Yang's eyes radiated and said, "Everyone, I won't be courteous now!"

They had a deal previously, that if a smithing recipe dropped, it would be given to Zhang Yang. The entire party had passed on rolling and Zhang Yang patted the recipe on his body at once. A golden light flashed, adding Earthen Round Shield to the initially empty smithing list.

[Earthen Round Shield] (Green-Copper, Shield)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +20

Level Requirement: 10

Holy cow! The shield alone had provided 200 HP and 40 defense points. Even if the boss had high attack, it could reduce an ample amount of

physical damage, significantly boosting one's survivability! Furthermore, most players only had White-Wood equipment now and they were definitely going to be unable to break past this 40 points of defense!

"Big bro Zhan Yu, post the shield description, let us witness its power too!" Phantom Day could not help but ask when he saw Zhang Yang's foolish grin.

Zhang Yang smiled and posted the shield's description to the party channel.

"Wow, such high defense! I object! Objection! High dexterity and low strength classes like us Thieves would definitely be unable to break your defense with just normal attacks!" Snowy Death was shocked.

"Brother Zhan Yu, please smith a few more for us if you have enough materials. Our guild will buy them from you!" Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang. He could imagine that with tanks equipping this shield, their survivability would definitely be raised to another level!

"Okay!" His main purpose in obtaining this recipe was to sell the shields for money anyway, so Zhang Yang had agreed readily, "500 gold coins each!"

"Damn, you have no mercy!"

"Haha, your guild is so wealthy that a mere 500 gold coins is nothing for you!"

Crimson Fire hesitated a while before saying, "Okay, I'll book one for now. Mail it to me via cash on delivery when you're done!"

"Okay, pleased to be working with you, big boss!" Zhang Yang laughed. The primary materials to smith this shield were [Iron Bar] and [Rare Copper Bar]. [Iron Bar] could be made from [Iron Ore] which was worthless, while [Plain Copper Bar] came from [Plain Copper Ore] where a spawn point was available at the third boss. Each time Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt was cleared, he could collect 2 to 4 Plain Copper Ores. Basically, he was doing a zero capital business!

"Little Yang, hurry up and loot the corpse, I can't wait any longer!" Fatty

Han expressed his impatience.

Zhang Yang laughed and extended his arm to loot again.

[Shiny Silver Pendant] (Green-Copper, Necklace)

Physical: +3

Intelligent: +2

Equipped Effect: Target receives an additional buff of [magic shield] each time a healing spell is casted. Shield disappears after absorbing 20 points damage or after 30 seconds. Shield effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“Wow! Even though the attributes are nothing much, there’s a special effect!” Phantom Day exclaimed.

“All necklaces and rings have special effects. That’s why the drop rates are so low!” Zhang Yang nodded and said, “Healers, roll for it!”

Ocean Despair and Silky Snow helped themselves and rolled, Ocean Despair winning the roll at the end.

[Shadow Collar] (Green-Copper, Necklace)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +1

Dexterity: +1

Equipped Effect: Each attack on the target will inflict 1 stack of [shadow wrath]. When 3 stacks of [shadow wrath] are achieved, 20 points shadow damage will be inflicted onto the target.

Level Requirement: 10

“All physical attack classes can roll for it. Let’s roll together, no need to give it up to anyone. Let’s see our luck!” Zhang Yang said laughing as he rolled first.

Those who had initially wanted to give up their rolls changed their decisions and tried their luck after hearing what Zhang Yang had said.

Even if they could not get it, it was still for the fun of it.

As a result, Zhang Yang overshadowed everyone with a mere 76-point roll.

“Haha, what sh*tty luck you guys have!” Zhang Yang shook his head and equipped the necklace.

[Archer's Ring] (Green-Copper, Ring)

Vitality: +2

Dexterity: +3

Equipped Effect: Ranged attacks have a fixed rate of activating [wind's blessing] effect. Effect increases attack speed by 10% for 10 seconds. This effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“Hunters, roll for it!” Zhang Yang selected to pass.

“Oh yeah!” Defiant Monk was very lucky to have rolled 100 points, instantly winning Hundred Shots and Fatty Han.

[Amber Ring] (Green-Copper, Ring)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +1

Equipped Effect: Each successful dodge of attack have a fixed rate of increasing 20 points Strength for 10 seconds. This effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“D*mn, why is the trigger condition by dodging and not attacking?” Phantom Day was angry. This effect would be useful in PK or solo grinding but for dungeon raids, he would have no chances of evading attacks as a damage dealer!

“Fine if you don't want it!” Zhang Yang laughed as he said.

“Who says I don't want it! Come on, let's roll!” Phantom Day said quickly

and tapped the roll button.

Zhang Yang was aware that he had gotten more than enough and decided to pass. The result was Crimson Fire winning the roll.

“D*mn, guildmaster, you a thief class need dexterity, not strength! Don’t snatch it from me!” Phantom Day cried.

“F*ck, more nonsense and I’ll throw you out!” Crimson Fire laughed as he said. Phantom Day immediately went speechless.

Zhang Yang looted again but there were only gold coins left. However, they had hauled 4 equipment, a skill book, and a recipe, it could already be considered as a jumbo loot!

“Ding! You have received 10 silver coins after distribution!”

After every item was distributed, Momorermo’s corpse too had disappeared.

“Alright, all done. Everyone can now go back to the capital and complete the quest. There should still be a Black-Steel equipment reward!” Zhang Yang took a Teleportation Reagent from his inventory and asked Fatty Han, “Fatty, you have Teleportation Reagent?”

“Teleportation Reagent? What is that?” Fatty Han returned Zhang Yang a lost sheep expression.

Zhang Yang shook his head and traded a Teleportation Reagent over and said, “This will teleport you to the nearest friendly town, saves you the journey!”

“There’s such a thing?” Fatty Han quickly confirmed the trade, “Little Yang, don’t be so stingy, give me a few more!”

“F*ck, this thing costs 1 gold coin each! It’s expensive!” Despite his complaint, Zhang Yang had still traded a few more reagents with Fatty Han. He still had 20 plus gold coins anyway and Crimson Fire had still owed him 10 thousand more!

“Brother Zhan Yu, why not reserve your dungeon entry tomorrow for our guild? I’ll hire you, what do you think of 1000 gold coins per Hardcore

Mode raid? And if the equipment looted are of use to you, you'll have the highest priority!" Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang pondered, leading dungeon raids would undoubtedly be a good way to earn a fortune. Not only could he get equipment, he could also earn lots of gold coins! It would only be for now though. When he had finally established his own guild, he would not need to work for others anymore!

"Okay, tomorrow morning at 9 am. We'll gather at the dungeon entrance!" Zhang Yang quickly sent back a private message, "But I want to reserve an attacker spot for Fatty!"

"Deal! See you tomorrow!" Crimson Fire agreed readily.

"Big brother, please approve as friend!" said Snowy Death as he sent a friend request.

Snowy Death had acted as a prompt for the rest of the party and they too had sent friend requests to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled and approved each friend request. Ripping Teleportation Reagent, a magic circle glowing with a white light appeared under his feet. With that, he quit the party and said, "Goodbye everyone, see you!"

"Big brother, bye!"

"See you!"

Since Teleportation Reagent was overly expensive, the others were not willing to spend it. Other than Fatty Han who had also torn one of the reagents, the rest of the party members went by foot.

10 seconds later, the magic circle was formed completely and a white light enveloped Zhang Yang. With a flash, the white light dissipated and Zhang Yang had appeared in the portal of White Jade Castle.

Another white light flashed and Fatty Han too had appeared next to Zhang Yang.

"Little Yang, since when did you become so powerful?" Fatty Han had

been Zhang Yang's buddy but his outstanding performance made him felt like Zhang Yang was a complete stranger.

“Since when was I not outstanding?” Zhang Yang laughed.

“F*ck!” Fatty Han booed but did not ask further. Regardless of what had happened, Zhang Yang would always be his brother and that was enough for him!

Chapter 31: Pride Quad

“Let’s go, it’s time to complete the quest!” Zhang Yang dragged Fatty Han in search of Army Captain Soren and completed ‘The Raid’ quest, obtaining a Black-Steel ring.

[Soren’s Appreciation Ring] (Black-Steel, Ring)

Vitality: +2

Strength: +3

Equipped Effect: Each attack triggers a fixed rate in healing your HP. Recovery rate will be 1% of the damage.

Level Requirement: 10

This would be the first equipment in the game that possessed the [life steal] effect. It’s too bad that the recovery rate was too low, and so was the trigger rate! It could not be helped since this was a General Quest’s reward; a ring as a reward was considered satisfactory and it’s always better than receiving nothing at all!

Hong!

A flash of golden radiance illuminated the area and Zhang Yang had risen to Level 11 with the 10,000 EXP reward from his quest.

He had thought that he would enter the Player Level Ranking but after he checked the board, he found out that those who were still Level 10 that morning had all reached Level 11. He was not in the ranking but thankfully the player who had ranked first was still Level 11.

“Fatty, I’m going to make the shield. Go level up yourself!” said Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han yawned and said, “I’ve only slept for 3 to 4 hours. I’m feeling sleepy again so I guess I’m going to get some sleep first!”

Zhang Yang peeked at the system clock and said, “F*ck! It’s going to be 6 pm! What sleep? Go have your dinner and come back online to play for a while more. Rest well at night and don’t burn the midnight oil anymore!

You're playing for such a long time everyday anyway, why would you stay up late?"

"Hmm, makes sense. Well then, I shall go kill some mobs now that I've just gotten these new weapons! Eh? Hold up! Someone just private messaged me!" He paused for a brief second and his face had immediately morphed into a perverted one. "Little Yang, a pretty babe wants to chat with me, so I'm not gonna bullshit with you anymore!"

Zhang Yang smiled and left for the Auction House.

To make an [Earthen Round Shield], he would need 100 [Iron Bar]s and 1 [Plain Copper Bar]. Zhang Yang did not have any [Iron Bar] in his inventory so he had to buy them from the Auction House.

The Auction House was where players trade, buy or sell items in the game. Every city would have them but different cities would not share the goods. Simply said, items put on auction in White Jade Castle's Auction House could only be bought from the house itself, and players from other cities would have to travel all the way here if they wanted that particular item.

Once Zhang Yang entered Auction House, he loaded the search window and keyed in the keywords "Iron Ore, Iron Bar". Tapping the search button, a whole page of results appeared.

Since the game was still in its early stage, all sorts of prices were set. Zhang Yang did a simple price comparison and auctioned for 15 stacks of [Iron Bar]s that had costed 50 silver coins for each stack, buying a total of 300 bars.

He then went to the mailbox and collected the [Iron Bar]s that were sent by the Auction House. After that, he went to the Smithery and placed 100 [Iron Bar]s and 1 [Plain Copper Bar] onto the cast. He then opened the crafting window and selected the [Earthen Round Shield] and tapped 'Craft'. His character then moved on its own and picked up a hammer, a progress bar appearing below his avatar.

After 30 seconds.

‘Ding! You have crafted [Earthen Round Shield]. Your Crafting Skill has increased by 1 point!’

In ‘God’s Miracle’, crafting level could be categorized into Beginner, Amateur, Advanced, Professional, Specialist, Master and Grandmaster. Each level up required 1000 crafting points. NPCs would not teach players to craft any items and all of the items could only be learnt through recipes found by players.

The lower ranked recipes were easier to obtain but once a player had reached the Professional level and beyond, it would be extremely hard to obtain even one recipe that corresponded to the level. Furthermore, going from Professional to Specialist would require a player to craft items from Professional-ranked recipes. Nothing could be done if there was no recipe of that rank.

That was why even after 5 years in the game in his previous life, far too few players had managed to become a Grandmaster of Crafting.

Zhang Yang stroked the shield lovingly and swapped the old shield to equip it, raising his attributes by heaps.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 11

HP: 790

Defense: 64

Strength: 86

Dexterity: 32

Luck: 2

Melee Damage: 102 – 110

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

64 Defense! Zhang Yang laughed. With such a high Defense value, not many players would be able to penetrate his defense at the moment! His 790 HP could allow him to stand still and it would still take half a day for

someone to kill him!

He then proceeded to utilize all his materials and crafted two more shields. After that, he went to the mailbox and mailed one of the shields to Crimson Fire via cash-on-delivery. He then put the other shield up with a minimum bid of 400 gold coins and without a buyout price for a day on the Auction House anonymously.

It was about 6.30 pm when he had wanted to log off and have his dinner but he was interrupted by a private message notification sound.

“Buddy, I have a lot more [Iron Ore]s here. If you would like to buy more of them, you can contact me directly and I can give you a lower price!”

Zhang Yang checked and saw that the message was sent by someone named ‘Professional Miner’. He immediately recalled that it was the person whom he had bought the [Iron Plate]s from in the Auction House. Auction Houses would usually charge a 10% service fee, so most players would want to establish direct transactions with regular customers to cut their cost.

Realizing that he would need a large amount of [Iron Plate]s to craft shields, he would indeed need a stable supplier. Zhang Yang then replied the message saying, “Eh, I would require 10 to 20 stacks of [Iron Plate]s daily. Can you guarantee the constant supply?”

“Haha, My name is Professional Miner. 10 to 20? If you want several times more than that amount, I could also dig them up for you!” Professional Miner replied smugly.

“Very well. What’s the price?”

“It depends on how many you want.”

“Um, let’s make it 100 stacks for now!” Zhang Yang simply gave a number. That amount would allow him to produce only 20 shields anyway so it was not that much.

“Sheesh! What’s with that amount!” Professional Miner drew in a shaky breath.

“Haha, you said you could do it!” Zhang Yang laughed as he replied.

“Hehe, 100 stacks are too much. I only have 30 stacks for now!”

“Okay, 30 stacks it is! Name your price!”

“Um, how about 48 silver coins per stack?”

Professional Miner had auctioned a stack for 50 silver coins in the Auction House and the 10% service fee would have cost him 5 silver coins. Therefore, the price offered now was cheaper by 2 silver coins which Zhang Yang thought was acceptable.

Zhang Yang replied instantly, “Very well, mail them to me via COD. I’ll be logging off to have dinner now!”

“OK, let’s be friends. It’s easier to keep in touch!”

Zhang Yang easily accepted the friend request and logged off.

Taking off his gaming helmet, Zhang Yang let out a long breath. After laying down for such a long period of time, his body felt rather stiff. He stretched in his room for a bit before heading to the kitchen to prepare his dinner. He logged back in after having a simple meal.

The email notification indicated that he had new mails so Zhang Yang went to the mailbox and retrieved them. The first one was about the [Iron Ore]s from Professional Miner. 14 gold coins were deducted after Zhang Yang selected ‘Accept’ as the transaction was via COD. 30 stacks of [Iron Ore]s were then added into his inventory. The second mail contained 500 gold coins that the system had sent over after Crimson Fire retrieved the shield.

Zhang Yang sent a message to Fatty Han, asking him to complete a quest together but Fatty Han rejected him saying that he wanted to chat with the pretty girl and did not have time for him.

“Hoes before bros, what a douche!” Zhang Yang shook his head, he had wanted to bring Fatty Han along for a special quest but since that fatty could not be counted upon, Zhang Yang would just ignore him.

Going out of the city and heading eastward, he was blocked by 4 players

who prevented him from walking further.

Floral Shorts, Prideful Precepts, Prideful Babysitter and Kindling Chest Hair – the Pride Quad.

“F*ck you, noob Warrior! I’ve said it before. If you didn’t add us back into the party, I’ll kill you back to Level 0!” Prideful Precepts glared at Zhang Yang, gritting his teeth.

Oh, how infuriated they were after Zhang Yang had kicked them out of the party! They then discussed and decided that they would not let this matter rest and must make Zhang Yang pay for his arrogance! Therefore, they had waited at the dungeon entrance to gang up and beat Zhang Yang up once he came out.

However, what had greeted them after waiting for so long was the red-text laden server announcement!

They had felt angrier after seeing that! If Zhang Yang had not kicked them out from the party, they would have been part of the glorious feat! These 4 players had not even reflected on the reason of their expulsion but had piled all their fury and blamed it on Zhang Yang. This had further steeled their will to ‘punish’ Zhang Yang.

After Snowy Death and the rest of the party had exited the dungeon, they had waited for another period of time yet Zhang Yang was nowhere to be found. Prideful Precepts then realized that Zhang Yang must have used a Teleportation Reagent! They then rushed hurriedly back to the city and with such coincidence, stumbled upon Zhang Yang in their journey!

Zhang Yang smirked, “With just you bunch of useless douches?”

“Useless your ass! Why are we still talking shit with him?! Wreck the guy!” Kindling Chest Hair held his hammer tightly with his eyes locked on Zhang Yang.

“Yes, roll him over! If he’s not killed back to Level 0 today, I can’t stomach this insult!” Floral Shorts said as he used [stealth], disappearing from their sight.

Prideful Precepts had started to cast a [fireball] while Kindling Chest

Hair had wielded his hammer and rushed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang waited patiently with his arms crossed, sneering.

“Noob Warrior! Just die!” said Kindling Chest Hair as he dashed over, swinging his shield and tossing it towards Zhang Yang.

“[shield toss]!”

‘Pah!’ A damage text floated above Zhang Yang’s head, ‘-1!’.

‘Ding! You are under attack by Floral Shorts and his party. You have 10 minutes to counterattack!’

After the system notification rang in his ears, Zhang Yang’s gaze turned cold, revealing his lethal aura.

According to the game’s rules, whenever a fight occurred between players, the first to attack would be identified as the challenger by the system and marked with a red name tag. The other party would then be given 10 minutes to counterattack unrestrictedly. A red-tagged player would drop 2 levels if they were killed regardless of whether the deed was done by players, monsters, or even NPCs!

Zhang Yang had not initiated the attack solely because he had wanted the system to identify them as red-tagged challengers!

At the same time, Floral Shorts had emerged from his stealth mode and appeared behind Zhang Yang, slashing him with two swords.

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

Unable to penetrate Zhang Yang’s 64 points of Defense, Floral Shorts could only cause a pitiful 1 damage.

“Shit! How is this noob Warrior’s skin so thick!” Floral Shorts asked surprised.

‘Dang!’ Kindling Chest Hair’s hammer landed on Zhang Yang yet he too could only deal a pathetic ‘-1’ damage.

‘-36!’

Prideful Precepts' fireball had also landed on Zhang Yang and had finally dealt damage that was not too shabby.

Defense could only reduce physical damage, it would be ineffective against magical damage.

Zhang Yang scoffed and used [charge] towards Prideful Precepts, stunning and slashing him with his sword, causing a devastating '-103' damage that was one-fourth of his HP in an instance.

"F*ck me! How is his damage so high?!" screamed Prideful Precepts.
"Babysitter, heal me!"

At this time, both Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair had come back, raising their weapons to attack Zhang Yang.

"[block]!"

'-70!'

'-82!'

[block] reflected damage text floated across Kindling Chest Hair and Floral Shorts' heads simultaneously.

'-204!'

'-210!'

'-209!'

'-190!'

'-20!'

The [horizontal sweep] had caused high damage on the Pride Quad and triggered the necklace's [shadow rage], reflecting on Zhang Yang's current target, Prideful Precepts.

"What the hell, this guy isn't human at all!"

"Babysitter, heal me!"

"F*ck off, me first!"

'-166!'

Zhang Yang flicked his wrist and bashed his shield on Prideful Precepts. [shield bash] dealing incredible damage, sent Prideful Precepts whose HP was not even 100 points, straight to resurrection spawn point. He did not even give Prideful Babysitter any opportunity to heal him.

‘Ding! You have killed Prideful Precepts!’

‘-99!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword and slashed Prideful Babysitter, simultaneously activating [force strike] and dealing ‘-101’ damage.

‘Ding! You have killed Prideful Babysitter!’

In an instant, only Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair with their 146 HP and 428 HP were left!

Chapter 32: Spawn Camping

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair had used all their brute strength in attacking Zhang Yang but were unable to penetrate his defense, their faces paling in shock.

‘God’s Miracle’ was designed really well. Even a player’s inner feelings could be expressed so realistically! Zhang Yang applauded internally and then dealt a horizontal blow towards Kindling Chest Hair.

“-92!”

“Damn, this guy must be using hacks! How can a f*cking Guardian deal such high damage?!” cried Floral Shorts. He had thought that they could take Zhang Yang easily by outnumbering him 4 to 1 but unexpectedly the situation was reversed. How could they not feel embarrassed?

“Fucking GM1 and shitty game. Why didn’t they do anything about the hacks? What the f*ck, f*ck you and your ancestors!” Kindling Chest Hair cursed immediately.

Zhang Yang raised the shield immediately after [block]’s cooldown completed.

‘-70!’

‘-80!’

2 [block] reflected damage texts popped up while Zhang Yang conveniently activated [shield bash].

‘-156!’

Kindling Chest Hair huffed in pain and exclaimed, “Floral, let’s withdraw quickly!”

“Trying to run?” sneered Zhang Yang as he drew his sword again and

launched another [horizontal sweep].

‘-202!’

‘-20!’

‘-208!’

‘+2!’ [life steal] from the ring was triggered.

Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair did not even manage to turn around before they both fell and died. Kindling Chest Hair had actually dropped an equipment. It was the [Heavy Chest Plate] he had obtained from their Normal Mode Bangar Crypt run together.

‘Ding, you have killed Floral Shorts!’

‘Ding, you have killed Kindling Chest Hair!’

Zhang Yang picked up the equipment and stored it in his inventory without a second thought. Although he did not need it, it could be sold for a few gold coins if he auctioned it at the Auction House. He was in need of money so every penny counts!

Some 10 minutes later, Floral Shorts and his friends had revived themselves by returning their ‘spirits’ to their bodies.

‘Sha!’

Suddenly, a shadow sprang out from the bushes by the road and charged towards Prideful Precepts, causing rotating stars which symbolized the ‘Stun’ status effect to immediately appear on his head.

“Crap! That noob Guardian is spawn camping!” Floral Shorts yelled in surprise.

‘-106!’

Zhang Yang waved his sword and a huge damage text floated across Prideful Precepts’ head. How could Prideful Percepts who had just revived with only 20% HP withstand such a blow? Thus, a white light flashed and he was sent to sign his attendance at the graveyard once again!

When his Rage rose to 25 points, Zhang Yang wielded his sword and

used [horizontal sweep]!

‘-198!’

‘-205!’

‘-208!’

‘-20!’

Kindling Chest Hair and the 2 others who stood close to each other were then sent off to meet the Resurrection Goddess in a stream of white light.

“F*ck! F*ck!” cried Prideful Precepts in his spirit form as he appeared at the graveyard. Not long after, he received notice of Floral Shorts and the others’ deaths. All of them were dropped to Level 6 from dying twice under red-tagged names.

“That guy... could he still be camping our bodies?” said Prideful Babysitter with a tone of fear in his voice.

“Let’s run back to our bodies but not resurrect ourselves yet. We’ll wait!” said Floral Shorts.

The 4 of them returned to their bodies and waited patiently.

One hour later.

“He should be gone by now right?” said Floral Shorts with uncertainty in his voice.

“Yeah. It’s been so long now. He shouldn’t have such patience!” said Prideful Precepts, “I’ll count to 3 and let’s resurrect together!”

“1!”

“2!”

“3!”

A gust of wind blew by and all 4 souls were still there standing.

“F*ck, why didn’t you guys resurrect?” scolded Prideful Precepts.

“Damn, why didn’t you resurrect?” Floral Shorts argued back as well.

“Stop, stop, stop! Stop quarrelling, we’re all a family! Let’s do this again,

whoever doesn't resurrect this time is a noob bastard. His son will be born without an asshole and his daughter cursed to forever remain flat-chested!" said Prideful Babysitter.

"1!"

"2!"

"3!"

4 of them resurrected together.

'Sha!' A flash of sword went by and four bodies laid dead on the floor.

"I... Crap..." Prideful Precepts was filled with tears.

The other 3 looked at each other speechlessly. They had wanted to kill Zhang Yang back to Level 0 initially but looking at their own pathetic states now, they have already dropped to Level 4! If they were killed another two more times then all of them would really end up hitting Level 0!

"... Let's resurrect here!" Floral Shorts finally said after a long time.

Resurrecting directly at the graveyard would incur additional penalties: dropping 1 level and decreasing all attributes for 80% for an hour!

...

Zhang Yang leisurely laid by the bush and played with a stalk of grass, glancing at the 4 bodies by the road occasionally. Suddenly, all 4 bodies turned transparent and eventually disappeared.

"Hehe, they've resurrected directly at the graveyard huh?!" Zhang Yang patted his butt and stood up. The nearest graveyard was in the Capital and it was prohibited for players to fight there, so there was no chance for him to kill the Pride Quad back to Level 0!

Zhang Yang had been an absolute dictator since he was young! The title 'Li'l Overlord of Octagonal Alley' was not bullshit, it was in fact a title he had earned through sweat and blood! The despicable Pride Quad had dared ambush him and even threatened to kill him back to Level 0. Naturally, he had needed to remind them to engrave this lesson into their

hearts!

Checking the time, he realized he had actually wasted 2 hours on the Pride Quad! Zhang Yang thought about it and chose to log off immediately. The place he had intended to travel to was not nearby and he would have to go to bed by the time he arrived and killed only a few mobs. In addition, he had a dungeon raid at 9am tomorrow. Running back and forth would be such a pain!

Theoretically, a player could only get a mount at Level 40 and a flying mount at Level 100. How Zhang Yang missed the days in his previous life where he could roam the world on his Stormhawk!

Just as Zhang Yang had logged off, he recalled that he had forgotten to inform Fatty Han about the next morning's dungeon raid. Inevitably, he had to log back on to send the fatty a private message, telling him to wait at the dungeon entrance at 9 am the next morning.

Fatty Han seemed like he was still chatting with a certain pretty girl and had only acknowledged the message after some time before completely ignoring Zhang Yang once again.

Logging off and laying on his bed, Zhang Yang took out his diary and scribbled what he could remember from the game's trend in his previous life.

According to his memory, the final boss Marzerway in the Level 20 dungeon, Marzerway's Lair, was a magic-type monster. Its [shadow ball] had been extraordinary! Currently, nobody possessed much magic-resistant equipment and could only achieve high magic resistance with the aid of potions!

There was an [alchemy] recipe that could produce a potion called [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Upon consumption, it would increase a player's Shadow resistance by 100 for 1 minute. This would be an absolutely necessity to clear Marzerway's Lair!

Zhang Yang's next stage of his get-rich-quick scheme would be to sell this potion, it would definitely rake in massive profit!

After he receive Crimson Fire's gold coins tomorrow, Zhang Yang plans on hoarding [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower], the two main ingredients in crafting [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion].

Zhang Yang strategized for a while and went to bed.

The next day, Zhang Yang woke up at around 6 in the morning and spent an hour exercising. After having his breakfast as well as a short break, it was already around 8.30 am.

He put on his game helmet and logged on!

'Ding! Player Crimson Fire invites you to join his party. Will you accept his invitation?'

The moment Zhang Yang went online, he received a party invitation. He accepted it since they had made an agreement the previous day.

'Ding! You have joined a party! Party leader: Crimson Fire, Group Looting Parameters: Master Loot!'

He checked the party list and well, there were already 10 players. It was just lacking him.

He already knew half of the party members: Crimson Fire, Phantom Day, Silky Snow, and Fatty Han; the other 5 were unfamiliar faces but he guessed that they would probably be the elites of Lost Paradise!

Royal Pardon, Dwarf, Beastmaster, Level 10.

Love Lonely, Human, Pyromancer, Level 10.

Absolute Defense, Human, Defender, Level 11.

Favorite Orange, Elf, Cryomancer, Level 10.

Little Demon, Human, Sacred Knight, Level 10.

Immediately, Phantom Day and the others had greeted Zhang Yang enthusiastically.

"So early?" Zhang Yang asked in the party channel as he laughed.

"Yeah, you're the last one. Hurry over! We can begin once everyone's here!" replied Crimson Fire.

“OK, I’m coming!” Zhang Yang had logged off midway yesterday so it would only take him roughly 10 minutes to walk over to Bangar Crypt.

“Hmph, how stuck-up! 9 of us have waited for such a long time for you!” Absolute Defense suddenly said.

Zhang Yang was surprised and thought to himself, “It’s already said that the dungeon raid starts at 9 am. I looked at the time before coming and it wouldn’t have passed 9 am when I reach the dungeon anyway. What a temper this bro has!”

“F*ck, don’t play if you don’t want to wait! F*cker, who do you think you are!” Fatty Han had a far shorter temper than Zhang Yang, turning angry immediately when he heard people complaining about his brother.

Crimson Fire hurriedly pacified them and said, “Absolute, stop your nonsense!”

10 minutes later, Zhang Yang arrived at the dungeon entrance.

Differing from yesterday’s deserted state, the valley was filled with people as most players had reached Level 10 and wanted to try raiding the dungeon. Lone players were searching for pub parties while parties were finding players they lacked. All sorts of messages flooded the open channel as though it was a market.

Among the crowd, tanks and healers were undoubtedly scarce. Although Zhang Yang had hidden his profile information, people could still recognize him as a tank because of the shield he was carrying on his back. He had received no less than 30 private messages asking him to join their parties.

“Let’s enter the dungeon!” commanded Crimson Fire.

‘Ding! You have entered Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)!’

All 10 players appeared at the entrance one by one. Zhang Yang glanced at Fatty Han and was surprised. “Why are you in a guild?”

As coy as Fatty Han was, he would never hide his profile information. “Slim and Handsome, Crypt Slaughterer, Level 10.” “Blazing City” were the

two rows of text above his head.

“Hehe. Yesterday I met this pretty chick who really fancies Fatty! So I’ve decided to temporarily join her guild and give her an opportunity to further understand her idol!” Fatty Han said shamelessly. “Oh yeah, why don’t you join in as well? I’ll be bolder if you’re with me!”

Zhang Yang frowned and said, “We’ll talk about it later!”

Translator Note:

1 GM stands for gamemaster, game moderator or game manager. This is sort of the admin/go-to person hired by an MMO developer to cater to the masses of people playing an online game. GMs generally help ensure the stability of the server and usually have various kinds of jobs as long as they are related to the game server.

Chapter 33: A Small Obstacle

“Brother Zhan Yu, I’ve gathered all the elites in the guild here, do you think we have a shot at the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking?”
Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, “Aren’t you being a little greedy? Just 1 thousand gold coins and you want me to help you get on the ranking?”

Crimson Fire smiled awkwardly, “If we really did get on the ranking, I’ll add on another ten thousand gold coins!”

How could a mere ten thousand gold coins be compared to a server announcement spam?!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “You have no idea how it works to be on the speed ranking, right?”

“Eh? Isn’t it just breaking the previous record?” Crimson Fire replied earnestly.

“It’s divided into two conditions. First, like you’ve said, if the ranking already has records, you would only have to break the previous ones. Second, if the ranking is empty, like it currently is, then you would have to fulfill two conditions in order to be ranked.”

Zhang Yang continued, “The first condition is to beat the record time taken by the first clearance, and the second is to beat the system’s own allotted time!”

“What? There’s a system allotted time?” Crimson Fire really did not know.

“Of course! Otherwise you could spend the whole day for your first clearance then beat the record by improving just one minute each time, and that would have let you spam your name all over the ranking! You must know, each record breaker of Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking will be rewarded with items like Runes, Gems and so on. Do you think that the system would really be this easy and nice?”

“Oh!” Crimson Fire finally understood.

“That’s why the system has to set such a high bar. You need to fulfill these conditions before the system recognizes your result to qualify you for the ranking! As for Bangar Crypt, the speed limit set to be ranked is 30 minutes!”

“Sh*t! That fast?” Even if Crimson Fire bore the title of guildmaster, he still could not help but cursed.

Zhang Yang laughed, “That’s the case, so it’d be better to just raid for the equipment. When everyone has reached Level 15 and has mostly Green-Copper equipment on, you might be able to consider trying to do a speedrun!”

With Zhang Yang’s explanation, Crimson Fire abandoned his idea, giving up on his hope to rank on the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking anytime soon.

“Guildmaster, can we start now?” Absolute Defense said smugly, taking off the shield from his back and the hammer from his waist, his gaze on Zhang Yang filled with hostility.

Zhang Yang was puzzled. When did he ever offend this man?! However, he was not the kind of man to be afraid of rocking the boat. He did not have to endure this so he had immediately rolled his eyes back at Absolute Defense.

Absolute Defense felt so wronged!

He was Lost Paradise’s MT (main tank), there was not a single person in the guild who had not politely addressed him “Brother Absolute”! No one could match his monster pulling skills nor his reaction rate! He had received many poaching attempts with high salaries from large guilds when he was still in other games to sway him to switch guilds. If it had not been for him liking Silky Snow, he would have left this tiny Lost Paradise!

However, he felt that he had been humiliated yesterday!

Their guildmaster had actually abandoned him to join a pub party for a dungeon raid, saying things about discovering a powerful tank and

wanting to check him out!

What was that? Lost Paradise already had him, the universe's strongest tank, so why would they need another tank?

Furthermore, what happened in the end had angered him even more! Not only had the pub party cleared Hard Mode, they had also managed to take down Hardcore Mode!

Absolute Defense was furious! How could he not be involved in such a valiant event! He would never acknowledge that his standard was lower than that pub tank's. He felt that luck was merely on his side and that was all!

Last night, Crimson Fire gave him a shield and had insisted that he raided Hardcore Mode the next day together with the party.

Absolute Defense was completely dumbfounded once he had inspected the shield. It was a Green-Copper equipment! The best shield in the game so far! He did not have to put much thought into it to know that the shield must have been obtained from Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt!

Why did that pub party's Guardian, this Zhan Yu guy, not claim the shield? As a tank, shields would have been the most valuable defense equipment. He could not have let this go!

The only reason he could think of was that Zhan Yu must have been an additional supporting cast in the party and not worthy of the shield. That would explain why the guildmaster had held on to the shield and gave it to him!

The more Absolute Defense thought of it, the more sense it made for him. When Crimson Fire had said to raid Hardcore Mode together with Zhan Yu, he had personally decided to properly humiliate that lucky bastard! To think that the brat had managed to tag along with his guildmaster and obtain the first clearance of Hardcore Mode which even he did not get!

Absolute Defense equipped and unequipped his [Earthen Round Shield] repeatedly to try and provoke Zhang Yang as if he was saying, "Look here,

this shield belongs to me! Who do you think you are huh? Take a look, take a good look and be envious!”

Zhang Yang could not comprehend one bit. Why on earth was this guy showing off the shield he had crafted? What could it mean? Hmm, he definitely had a loose screw! Never mind, no use wasting time on a dimwit!

“I’m going now, keep those heals on me Silky!” Absolute Defense dashed towards the mobs with flair, not forgetting to give another despising look at Zhang Yang before he left.

“Your guild’s tank, this one. Is his brain still working properly?” Zhang Yang could not help but send a private message to Crimson Fire.

“ ... ”

Still, Absolute Defense must be of a certain level to be Lost Paradise’s MT. Defenders were a natural at pulling groups of mobs and those 6 monsters had completely locked onto Absolute Defense’s aggro with no signs of swaying to other targets. Even then, Absolute Defense was no Zhang Yang. He had fully depended on his defense and skills to absorb the damage. Hardcore Mode monsters were expected to be ferocious and Absolute Defense’s HP shot up and down like a rollercoaster ride, putting a load on the healers.

Zhang Yang stood by one side and watched. They were only minions. There was no need to put up such a big fight.

Elites were indeed elites, the monster killing rate was completely incomparable to the pub party yesterday. The minions were quickly killed without Zhang Yang moving an inch. However, the healers had completely drained their MP and had to rest and consume some food to recover their MP.

“Zhan Yu, can you complete a quest together with me later?” Silky Snow had quickly refilled her MP and skipped over to Zhang Yang to ask him sweetly.

“Silky, what quest is it? I can go with you!” Absolute Defense jumped to his feet immediately. His feelings for Silky Snow was not something

recent.

Zhang Yang shrugged, trying to indicate that since there was someone for you, we should not waste more time. Although there was such a saying “you are only young once”, Zhang Yang had experienced the uncertainties of life and was now fully determined to strengthen his own capabilities in order to be Lin Yu’s dependable rock. There was simply no time for flings!

Silky Snow felt agitated, turning to glare at Absolute Defense.

Absolute Defense had no idea of her hidden agenda and had gotten angrier instead, “Not only is that little rascal a bastard, he dares to flirt with my girl! Unforgivable!”

With totally no intention to, Zhang Yang had leapt from being a bastard to someone’s love rival.

“Moving on!” Crimson Fire led the party forward without realizing the conflict that had occurred between Zhang Yang and Absolute Defense.

The Gatekeeper.

“Zhan Yu, you and Absolute Defense take one each!” Even though Crimson Fire knew perfectly well that Zhang Yang alone could tank the entire Hardcore Mode but since he had already brought along his guild’s tank, it would be a humiliation to Lost Paradise if he had just sat aside.

“Hmph. Guildmaster, I can do this alone!” Absolute Defense was utterly confident ever since he had equipped the shield, and mere mortals would not be able to stop his panache.

Zhang Yang only gestured for Absolute Defense to welcome him to give the fight a try.

Absolute Defense scoffed again and went ahead with his hammer.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!” After a moment of chaos, Crimson Fire hurriedly asked for help, “Zhan Yu! Go quick! Absolute is gonna fall! Hurry, healers increase the healing speed!”

Fatty Han laughed watching the scene.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and used [charge], stunning one of

the monsters and began dealing damage. After the monster had recovered, Zhang Yang used [provoke] and had stabilized the aggro once the 2-second provoke effect wore off.

When Absolute Defense had noticed the same shield on Zhang Yang's left hand, he was befuddled. How could he have one too?

To save time, Zhang Yang refrained from quibbling with Absolute Defense and cleared all the minions along the way so they had arrived at the entrance of the first boss quickly. Having witnessed Zhang Yang's capabilities and his astounding ability to pull aggro, it had made Absolute Defense felt like a total extra.

When Black Claw had been defeated, he was even more surprised! Stacking over 10 stacks of [death stare], Zhang Yang was not hit even once by the boss. His manipulation of movement and timing had opened Absolute Defense's eyes, he had not known that a tank could actually reach this level! From then on, he was completely listless, attacking monsters without making a sound.

Since the party was stronger than yesterday's and Zhang Yang's equipment had a major upgrade, the party had not been wiped even after defeating the hidden boss, though some deaths were inevitable.

According to the deal made, Zhang Yang would be prioritized for any equipment that would be of use to him. Zhang Yang had then accepted 4 Green-Copper equipment without hesitation.

[Lord's Helm] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +12

Strength: +6

Dexterity: +2

Level Requirement: 10

[Bloodied Cape] (Green-Copper, Cape)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +2

Level Requirement: 10

[Warrior's Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +12

Strength: +8

Level Requirement: 10

[Amber Ring] (Green-Copper, Ring)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +2

Equipped Effect: Each successful evasion has a fixed rate of increasing 20 points Strength for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“47 minutes!” Crimson Fire had timed their progress. “Zhan Yu, do you think we could get the time down to within 30 minutes if we upgrade our equipment and master our battle strategy a little better?”

“Mm, there's hope for it.” said Zhang Yang as he equipped his new gears.

“Hehe. We'll continue to raid Hard Mode and not take any more of a professional's time!” said Crimson Fire. With equipment obtained from Hardcore Mode, it would be a humiliation to not pass Hard Mode.

“Okay. Bye bye then!” Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han quit the party.

Translator Notes:

1 Speedrun is a style/strategy for running a dungeon/instance/raid in games where the highest priority of every member should be the completion of the run in the shortest duration possible. This strategy generally forgoes item loots, experience, hidden bosses, etc and the party composition would generally try to include as many DPS-ers as possible.

Common tactics used in speedruns include a full DPS party, or kiting many monsters together for AoE classes to nuke at once.

Chapter 34: Physician's Friend

"Fatty, let's go, there's this special quest I want you to do with me!" said Zhang Yang to Fatty Han after leaving the dungeon.

"What's the reward?"

"Increase the effect of using Bandage by 100%!"

"Psh, pointless!" Fatty Han said impatiently, "Fatty here is a Hunter. My baby will block attacks for me, I need no bandages! Little Yang, the pretty babe came to chat with me again. You're on your own, I'm not following you!"

"D*mn!" Zhang Yang made a disdainful gesture.

Since Fatty Han had refused to join him, Zhang Yang could only go on his own. After Zhang Yang left the dungeon, he made his way out of the valley and proceeded eastward. He went through several forests and finally arrived at a small village.

He went ahead to meet the Village Elder and accepted the quest "Missing Livestock". Zhang Yang then left the village and arrived at a huge lake. The monsters here were all Level 15 and above while players were generally around Level 10 so they were either raiding Bangar Crypt or grinding on Level 11 or 12 Wild Boars at the Wild Boar Mountain. The site had remained empty with no players present aside from him.

Under the shade of an obscure big tree, Zhang Yang found an old man wearing a white medical coat, his eyebrows and beard were snow-white. He had "Deckard the Head Physician" in a tag above his head.

"Old man, why are you here?" Zhang Yang started a conversation with the NPC.

"Adventurer, I'm the physician of White Jade Castle! I'm currently developing an antidote and need a large amount of [Python Gall]. Can you collect some for me?" said Deckard.

"Ding! Deckard the Head Physician has a quest for you: Collect [Python Gall]. Will you accept it?"

Of course he would!

“Adventurer, those pythons are venomous. It is very dangerous, you must be cautious!” Deckard voiced his concern.

Zhang Yang remembered very clearly that this NPC would send a follow-up quest with an ultimate reward of the title “Physician’s Friend”. When [first aid] was used, the Bandage healing effect would increase by 100%!

[first aid] was categorized as a supportive skill that has no relation with class skills. Any player could learn it from the First Aid Trainer when they had achieved Level 20. [first aid] would allow a player to create a variety of bandages, different kinds healing different amounts of HP. This was an alternative recovery skill aside from potions for non-healer professions.

In order to trigger the follow-up quest, 2 conditions were to be fulfilled: first, the player must not have learnt [first aid] in the Capital. Second, the player must repeatedly complete the prerequisite quest “Collect Python Gall”. According to a player who had completed the quest in Zhang Yang’s previous life, he had to complete this repetitive prerequisite quest for 99 times!

After the follow-up quest had been completed, Deckard would return to the Capital one day later, which theoretically meant that there was a possibility that all players could obtain the reward.

Of course, Zhang Yang had not only come for the reward alone! A Gray-Silver chest would randomly spawn around this lake and there was a very small chance that the chest would contain the [Recipe: Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. This was his main purpose!

[Collect Python Gall] (Difficulty: C)

Quest Description: Deckard the Head Physician needs your help to collect 20 [Python Gall]s to develop an antidote. Those monsters should be in the Tranquil Lake.

Progress: Collect [Python Gall] 0/20

[Missing Livestock] (Difficulty: C)

Quest Description: Those pythons in Tranquil Lake were dreadful. They have eaten a lot of the livestock in the village. Go, kill them!

Progress: Kill Gold Venomous Python 0/40

These 2 quests could be done at the same time coincidentally!

“Take this. This should aid you in your quest!” Deckard handed over a bottle of potion to Zhang Yang.

“Ding! You have obtained item [Diving Potion]!”

[Diving Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Allows you to breathe underwater for 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 10

Zhang Yang consumed the potion and a buff icon appeared on his head, enabling him to breathe underwater.

“Toong!” He dived into the lake.

A dark golden flash sparked on Zhang Yang’s left and a “-14” damage text floated across his head at the same time.

Zhang Yang dived in the water, gaining an underwater vision of the lake.

A 2-meter long golden-lined snake as thick as an arm had stretched its mouth wide and glided towards Zhang Yang.

If it had been on land, Zhang Yang was sure he could dodge this attack. However, his movements were restricted while underwater, so how could he have kept up with the python’s agility?!

‘Ding! You are affected by [Gold Python Venom] (Stack 1). Reduces 10 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

Zhang Yang’s face turned dark as a debuff icon appeared on his avatar.

[Gold Venomous Python] (Normal)

Level: 15

HP: 750

Zhang Yang’s defense was high so the physical damage received was

very minimal. However, the python's venom was magic damage so it would be troublesome if he stacked too much of them!

Zhang Yang grabbed his sword and began attacking these monsters as fast as he could.

His damage output had already been high since the beginning and with the 4 new Green-Copper equipment that he had gotten today, his HP increased to 950 points while his attack damage had reached 115 – 123. Truly remarkable!

Only 3 – 4 strikes were enough to kill the python. Zhang Yang stretched his hand and easily looted the gall and with luck, 2 [Venomous Python Fangs]. They were White-tiered 'Etc'1 items that were to be sold for money.

The lake was full of Gold Venomous Pythons. Zhang Yang had no idea where the chest could have spawned so he could only make rounds to explore the whole lake.

An hour later, he had collected 23 [Python Gall]s while the quest "Missing Livestock" had long since been completed. He had already killed over 100 pythons!

Since the [Diving Potion]'s buff had worn off, Zhang Yang could only go back to Deckard to complete the quest.

"Brave adventurer, citizens of White Jade Castle will never forget your good deed!" Deckard praised Zhang Yang generously but did not reward him with any actual item. "Adventurer, are you willing to help me again?"

Could he not 'willingly' accept it? Zhang Yang sighed and accepted the same quest once again.

He went back to where he had come out from the lake and jumped in again, hunting for [Python Gall]s while searching for the chest.

Zhang Yang had already forgotten how many times he had completed the quest and how many times he had taken the [Diving Potion] for he had been killing pythons to the point of sickening monotony when his eyes suddenly gleamed as he spotted a silver chest on a rock at the bottom of the lake!

He had finally found it! This f*cking lake was ridiculously huge! He had swam for so long only to have searched two-thirds of the place.

However, there were 4 pythons guarding the chest but they were all normal mobs, not bosses or even elites.

Zhang Yang took aim at one of the pythons and launched [charge], dashing towards it.

“-105!”

The other 3 venomous pythons immediately swam over in attempt to attack Zhang Yang with their bloodied fangs.

“[block]!”

“-84!”

“-84!”

“-84!” [block] reflected damage.

“-183!” [shield bash]!

“-224!”

“-215!”

“-231!”

“-222!”

“-20!”

[horizontal sweep] had caused 4 damage texts and had simultaneously triggered the necklace's [shadow wrath].

2 seconds later, all 4 pythons charged towards Zhang Yang again.

‘Ding! You are affected by [Gold Python Venom] (Stack 1). Reduces 10 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You are affected by [Gold Python Venom] (Stack 2). Reduces 20 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You are affected by [Gold Python Venom] (Stack 3). Reduces 30 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You are affected by [Gold Python Venom] (Stack 4). Reduces 40 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

These pythons were truly cumbersome!

Zhang Yang focused his attacks on a python and killed one instantly, the second following.

Zhang Yang had already stacked 5 stacks of [Gold Python Venom] by the time he had cleared all 4 pythons. His HP had reduced to 358 points when the python’s venom effect had disappeared. That was more than half of his HP!

Monsters with DoT effects are not something you could just ignore! Zhang Yang sighed as he opened the chest.

DoT, Damage over Time, a continuous damage effect over a fixed duration such as the python’s venom as described above and [Curse of Water and Fire] by the second boss in Bangar Crypt.

10%, 20%, 30%, ... 100%!

‘Tsst’. The chest opened.

Zhang Yang looted and –

[Undine’s Lungs]: Special Item. Allows you to breathe underwater without equipment. A must-have for leisure travel and killing people!

Meh, even though it had taken a slot in the inventory, at least he would not have to find Deckard after every one hour.

[Treasure Map Piece (2)] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Put together all 3 pieces of the treasure map and obtain a [Complete Treasure Map].

A [Treasure Map Piece]!

Zhang Yang’s eyes glinted. There were numerous treasure spots in ‘God’s Miracle’ but it could only be dug when a [Complete Treasure Map] had been obtained. Naturally, different grades of treasure maps would lead to corresponding treasure spots!

What a pity, there was only one piece, another 2 more to go!

Again!

[Recipe: Silk Belt] (Leather Work Recipe)

Use: You learn how to craft [Silk Belt].

Requirement: Beginner Leather Work

“Ding! You have obtained 50 silver coins!”

The chest became transparent and eventually disappeared.

“No more?” Zhang Yang sighed, the obtained recipe was not the one he had wanted!

Continue grinding!

Zhang Yang began to grind non-stop. With [Undine’s Lungs], he did not need to leave the lake for air so he grinded until all 40 slots of his inventory were filled. He then got out from the water and completed the quest for [Python Gall]s.

At the end of the day, Zhang Yang logged out at 12 am. He had completed “Collect Python Gall” quest for a total of 14 times. It was still a long way to go compared to the 99 times the player had mentioned! However, Zhang Yang had gained a level but he was still not enlisted on the Player Level Ranking. He wondered if those ranked lunatics had ever logged off to actually sleep!

Fortunately, he was still motivated because the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] recipe had still not been found. Otherwise, he would definitely lose his patience grinding on those crappy snake again and again!

Gray-Silver Chests would only be spawned once every 3 days, and that meant that he could only spiritlessly grind mobs tomorrow.

Translator Notes:

1 Etc/Misc. – A category which stands of etcetera or miscellaneous loot. These are loot that have no other purpose in the game (not for crafting/quests/equipment) and can only be sold off to NPCs for a small

amount of money.

Chapter 35: Final Quest

A new day had arrived. Zhang Yang went online at 8.30 am and did a Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt run with Crimson Fire and his party as per yesterday's arrangement and went straight to Tranquil Lake after that to resume his endless farming of [Python Gall]s.

It was around 3 pm when Zhang Yang's body flashed a golden ray after he killed yet another Gold Venomous Python.

'Ding! Congratulations! You have achieved Level 13. All attributes +1. Obtained 5 SP!'

'Ding! Your level has fulfilled the conditions to enter the Player Level Ranking. Would you like to be enlisted in the ranking?'

Zhang Yang had not expected that there was an additional option other than the usual level up system notification.

"I can be enlisted?" Zhang Yang was stumped, he did not realize that he had been gaining experience so quickly as he had been focused on killing the pythons! Then again, it was expected. Zhang Yang's high attack power was undeniable and nothing else was on his mind as he had been grinding the whole day, thus his level had risen so quickly!

He checked the Player Level Ranking and saw that all top 9 places were Level 13 while the tenth spot was a Level 12. If he had selected to be enlisted, he would then replace Folk Stories, a Templar.

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had entered the game 2 years too late, consequently he had never gotten the chance to be enlisted on the Player Level Ranking. That was why he did not know he had a choice in being enlisted on the ranking.

He contemplated and eventually selected 'Reject'. Right now, it would be better for him to stay out of the limelight while he accumulated his wealth!

After Level 10, Zhang Yang had changed his way of assigning his AP, investing all of them into Vitality. Before this, he had been completely

equipped with White-Wood equipment which had then required him to assign his AP to increase his attack and maintain aggro. Now that he had Green-Copper gear, his damage output had significantly increased which subsequently required him to invest into his HP instead as monsters and bosses in Level 20 dungeons were all ferocious beasts. Furthermore, some of the bosses were magic-based and their skills would have been unavoidable with evasion or [block]! If he had not invested in his Vitality, he would be in a tight spot!

Since he had gained a level, his farming speed had also increased. Just in a single day, he had submitted [Python Gall]s for the Repeatable Quest 15 times.

On the third day, Zhang Yang made it to Level 14 and completed the [Python Gall] quest 14 times.

On the fourth day, just as he entered the dungeon, Zhang Yang had heard Crimson Fire say, “Zhan Yu, you’ve gotta slow down your leveling speed. We still want to break the dungeon speed record. If you zoom your way to Level 16 then our results won’t qualify!”

Zhang Yang took a glance, noticing that everyone in the party was either Level 12 or 13. In comparison, his leveling speed was indeed a little fast.

“Right now, leveling is the most important aspect of the game. Don’t put all your efforts into dungeon raids!” said Zhang Yang. He had suffered enough in his previous life for leveling slower than everyone else.

Moreover, the reward for obtaining the Hardcore Mode’s first clearance was SP while rewards for Hardcore Mode’s fastest clearance ranking were only runes and gems. The difference between these two rewards was too much!

However valuable runes and gems were, there were just as many ways to obtain them. Zhang Yang did not value them as much! If he had delayed his leveling for these gems and missed the following first dungeon clearance, that would be his biggest loss!

“Ahh! Please don’t!” Crimson Fire tried to persuade him. Although Absolute Defense’s equipment had been beefed up in the past two days

and had the capabilities to tank Hardcore Mode now, ultimately he was still thousands of miles away from Zhang Yang's survivability, offense, and aggro control! Plus, the key to speed clearing Hardcore Mode was time and a tank's capabilities would directly affect the efficiency in clearing the dungeon. It was only understandable that Crimson Fire did not want to let such a strong player like Zhang Yang off his grasp as he hurriedly turned to Silky Snow and signaled her to persuade him as well.

Silky Snow laughed depreciatingly. For the past few days, even though she had become closer to Zhang Yang, their relationship was not any different from the others, what difference could she make in persuading him?

Crimson Fire persuaded Zhang Yang once more but seeing that he had steeled his desire to maintain his current leveling speed, he could only give up. As a guildmaster, it was naturally his duty to prioritize the advertising effect of the red server announcement spam! As of now, Lost Paradise was the only guild that has cleared Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt. He had to maintain this status quo and take it a step further by ranking in the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking!

Now that Zhang Yang could not be depended upon anymore, Crimson Fire had to find another solution!

After clearing the current Hardcore Mode, Crimson Fire had stopped asking Zhang Yang to reserve his dungeon entrance count for the next day but had assigned Absolute Defense to be the main tank, training the teamwork of the new party.

Even though Zhang Yang felt that losing the 1,000 gold coins of income each day was a pity, he did however earn 4,000 gold coins in the past 4 days and with the 10,000 gold coins that Crimson Fire had owed him earlier, he almost had enough funds to initiate his plans!

Returning to Tranquil Lake, he resumed his endless farming of [Python Gall]s. Once again, he had managed to unlock another chest but he had only obtained another [Treasure Map Piece] with no [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] recipe in sight. He would have to wait for another three

days.

From the fifth day onwards, there were an increasing number of players present for the quest. While there were still not that many players around, Zhang Yang's crisis awareness had still rang. He was not afraid that they would take up all the monsters, but it was them stumbling upon the Gray-Silver Chest and looting it that he was afraid of!

Moreover, this chest would spawn at random places. The only thing quelling his worries was the fact that there would always be 4 Gold Venomous Pythons guarding the chest when it had spawned so random players could never take on the monsters alone!

It was lucky that the poison effect of these pythons was utterly annoying and underwater maneuverability was tough, so most players would just leave the place once they had completed the quest unlike Zhang Yang who had already made the lake his second home!

The fifth day had passed and Zhang Yang had reached Level 16. He had submitted [Python Gall]s for the 73rd time. Since Fatty Han's equipment had 'graduated' because of the Hardcore Mode runs, Zhang Yang did not raid dungeons anymore and had instead spent his entire day farming at Tranquil Lake.

On the sixth day, Zhang Yang reached Level 17 and submitted [Python Gall]s for the 88th time.

The seventh day. Around 2pm.

Zhang Yang brought the last 20 [Python Gall]s to Deckard and completed the 99th 'Collect [Python Gall]' quest. As of now, he had reached Level 18 and if he wanted to, he could have been in the top 3 of the Player Level Ranking! Of course, that was excluding the fact that there could be others like him who did not wish to be ranked.

"Young adventurer, your bravery impresses me, your persistence awes me!" Deckard was finally moved, looking at Zhang Yang with admiration, "Your kindness is akin to Buddha's! Oh, bless you young adventurer. you

must lend me your aid for one last time!”

Finally!

Zhang Yang cleared his throat and said, “I will do my best!”

‘Ding! You have accepted the quest: The Last Python Gall!’

[The Last Python Gall] (Quest Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: Deckard wants you to head over to the Python King’s Nest, west of Tranquil Lake. Slay the Golden Venomous Python King and obtain its python gall! Adventurer, please be cautious! Golden Venomous Python King is extremely strong, it would be better if you could bring your companions!

Progress: Obtained [Golden Venomous Python King’s Python Gall] 0/1

Quest Reward: [Specialist First Aid], Title “Physician’s Friend”

[Physician’s Friend]: Increases Bandage healing effect by 100%!

Awesome, the quest had directly rewarded [Specialist First Aid] skill! Zhang Yang was delighted. To increase [first aid]’s skill level, he must continuously make bandages, from [Beginner Linen Bandage] to [Coarse Cloth Bandage], [Cotton Bandage] and [Silk Bandage]... Each level would require at least 1000 of its respective bandages and above to level up!

This quest had rewarded Zhang Yang with [Specialist First Aid], saving him the trouble of going through Beginner, Amateur, Advanced and Professional – a total of 4 levels and time to make more than 4,000 bandages!

Since the reward had been revealed, the quest score would be irrelevant! Regardless of an ‘Average’ or ‘Perfect’ score, the final reward would remain the same.

Exactly what level would this Golden Venomous Python King be?!

Zhang Yang went to his Friend List and was about to invite Fatty Han to slay this boss together when to his surprise, found that the guy was not online!

“Oh well, let’s try it once. If I fail, then I’ll find someone for help!” Zhang Yang thought and headed west.

A few players were killing pythons by the bank. When Zhang Yang traveled passed them, they did not pay him any attention.

The west of Tranquil Lake was a thick bush. At first glance, it did not look anything like a King’s Nest.

Zhang Yang dived into the water to examine the bush closer. After 10 minutes or so, he finally found a hidden cave.

Was this the Python King’s Nest? It looked nothing like one!

Zhang Yang went into the cave and slowly swam inwards. The cave was very narrow and after several meters deep, it was completely dark. Even with his eyes wide open, he could not see anything and all he could do was follow his gut feeling and continued swimming forward.

After a while, Zhang Yang could obviously tell that the water level was decreasing from his head to his chest, then to his stomach and knees. Finally he had stepped on land. Since it was a game, once his character left the water, his clothes and equipment dried immediately.

Turning around the corner, a wide swathe of plains greeted his eyes. Zhang Yang found himself exiting a hollow trunk of a huge fallen old tree!

He checked the mini-map and found that he was still in Tranquil Lake but this place clearly did not resemble anything like the lake. How did the game developers design this place?

Not far away, a huge python was coiling its body. Its girth was thick as a bucket but its length could not be determined since it was coiled. A rough guess would estimate the length of the python to be at least 10 meters long! Resting peacefully beside the python was a Gray-Silver Chest.

“The chest!” Zhang Yang’s eyes glinted. No wonder he could not find the chest after a whole day today. It seems like it had spawned hidden in such a secluded place!

Highlighting the python, the huge beast’s information window hovered

in front of Zhang Yang.

[Golden Venomous Python King] (Green-Copper Boss)

Level: 20

HP: 60,000

Zhang Yang was filled with anticipation. He knew that he would get a handsome reward if he could beat this boss. However, high returns meant high risks! Even though this boss' HP was not as dreadful as a Hardcore Mode's boss, he did have a party of 10 players in Hardcore Mode!

"Let's just try it first!" Zhang Yang decided and unsheathed his sword, using [charge] on the boss.

"-110!"

Such strong defense! Zhang Yang was surprised. His current attack power could have dealt 143 – 151 damage but he had only managed to deal around 100 damage on the boss. It was evident that the boss had a strong defense – probably 40 points or so!

The higher a monster's level, the shorter it would take to recover from being stunned. The Python King had recovered in no more than 1 second and shot towards Zhang Yang with a hiss.

"[block]!"

'-58!' [block] reflect damage.

'-156!' [shield bash].

The Python King did not manage to land any of its attacks so it had quickly whipped its tail about in an attempt to coil Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang hurriedly withdrew, evading the attack while simultaneously brandishing his sword to counterattack.

'-103!'

Chapter 36: Golden Venomous Python King

A monster's most dangerous aspect was not knowing what skill it possessed! Not knowing its skills had naturally meant that there was no way of formulating a counter strategy. Only through constant deaths could a player reveal the monster's skills one by one!

This was why Zhang Yang who was familiar with almost all future dungeon bosses' skills and tactics had a significant competitive edge! Even if he was not skilled, just his thorough understanding of the bosses' skills would be enough to bring him fame in the server. All the guilds would have wanted to recruit him!

Right now though, Zhang Yang could only cautiously stare at the Python King, staying alert of any moves it might make. He had never faced this boss before, so he had to wait patiently for the boss' moves in order to counterattack.

This was the most passive strategy ever but he had no alternatives for now.

97%, 94%, 90%, Python King's HP went down slowly. This Green-Copper monster seemed to have no other special skills, as it kept attacking with its predictable fangs and tails.

'Ding! Gold Venomous Python King has used [strangle]!'

Just as he thought about how monotonous the fight was, the Python King glided towards Zhang Yang at lightning speed and coiled around him with its golden body.

Although Zhang Yang had been alert, the skill had no activation sign so he could not have prepared for it. He had been careless to have used [block] which was now in cooldown, so even though he had quickly withdrew, Zhang Yang had still lost to the boss' speed and was strangled by the huge snake.

'-184!'

Immediately, a red damage text appeared on his head.

Referring to the battle record: Golden Venomous Python King's [strangle] has dealt 184 points of physical damage. 116 HP was reduced.

Zhang Yang had 20% of damage reduction passive skill and up to 70 points of defense, thus the 300-point damage was reduced to 184 points! He quickly used a red pot and a '+100' floated across.

88%, 86%, 84%, the boss' HP continued to decline.

'Ding! Golden Venomous Python King has used [venom spit]!'

Subconsciously, Zhang Yang used [block] immediately and raised his shield.

'Ding! You are affected by [venom spit]. Reduces 50 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!'

He had used [block] for nothing! Only then had Zhang Yang realized that the boss' [venom spit] was of magical-property damage instead of a physical one. The debuff status icon appeared on his avatar at once.

Crap! DoT again! His high defense had been totally useless!

'Ding! Golden Venomous Python King has used [strangle]!'

"D*mn!" Zhang Yang cursed out loud. His [block] earlier had been wasted so the effect had disappeared right after 1 second. He had nothing else to block this skill with now!

'-184!'

Another red damage text glided across Zhang Yang's head while [venom spit]'s DoT recurred with '-40', reducing his HP to 712 points!

This was the disadvantage of knowing nothing regarding the boss' skills! Otherwise, Zhang Yang would at most have been damaged by [venom spit] and could have definitely used [block] against [strangle]! Indeed, ignorance is the ultimate enemy of mankind!

82%, 80%, 78%, Zhang Yang calmed down and continued to hack away intensely.

20 seconds later, the Python King stretched its mouth wide and spat a dark green venom towards Zhang Yang once again!

‘Ding! You are affected by [venom spit]. Reduces 50 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

Zhang Yang bemoaned inwardly, he could nullify [strangle] with [block] but he could do nothing against [venom spit], a magical attack. Although he had 20% damage reduction from his passive, it still dealt significant damage!

Sigh, if he had brought along a healer, obliterating this boss would have been a piece of cake!

He was left with 452 HP yet the boss still had 75% of its HP. It seemed impossible to clear.

He had wanted to give up quickly and get a rematch after finding a healer but Zhang Yang guessed that there might still be skills the boss had yet to cast, so he decided to continue the fight.

‘Ding! Golden Venomous Python King has used [strangle]!’

“[block]!”

‘-58!’ [block] reflected damage.

Red pot’s cooldown had completed and Zhang Yang used it at once, causing a ‘+100’ text to pop up.

71%, 67%, 56%...

The boss’ defense was high but Zhang Yang’s attack damage was equally substantial. He had brutally slashed the boss’ HP down to 40% but his own HP was also at a sad 92 points. He could only withstand 2 more DoT effect.

‘-40!’

Zhang Yang’s HP went down to 52 points.

3 seconds later, another ‘-40’ floated across his head and he was left with only 12 HP.

Another DoT was bound to appear when a white light had suddenly flashed by Zhang Yang. A green '+154' text that had never looked any cuter floated across his head at the same time.

Someone had healed him!

Zhang Yang turned and saw a lady dressed in white standing by the trunk's entrance. She was incredibly tall and slender, her especially thin waist highlighted her voluptuous hip with such allure and her pert breasts heavily blessed, being astoundingly ample!

Character's physique was not modifiable in the game, which meant that this woman would have the same well-proportioned body in real life!

Unfortunately, while the lady had a figure that at least 90% of the female population would be jealous of, her face was ordinary. She was not ugly but she had quite a distance to go to call her a beauty! However, her pair of eyes were very beautiful. They were magnetic and faintly enticing.

"Thank you!" said Zhang Yang quickly. He had a good impression of this lady with a fantastic body but a plain face – if it had been someone greedy, they could have opened the chest while he was battling the boss!

This lady did not hide her profile. 'Little Snow, Level 13', and 'Lone Desert Smoke' were the two rows that hovered above her head. Judging from her appearance, she would be around her twenties! The face could be modified though, so Zhang Yang could not be sure if what he had seen was her real face.

Little Snow smiled and casted another healing spell on Zhang Yang and said, "You're welcome. I was just passing by! Oh right, where is this? I'm completely lost. I got confused and walked for so long and then I arrived here!"

The game had a mini map that marked the player's location. It would be really hard to even 'get lost' even if you wanted to! Now that she had actually lost her way into this place, that sounded even more ludicrous! Zhang Yang remembered how the cave's entrance was properly concealed and had he not accepted the quest which sent him here in search of the Python King's Nest, he would have given up long ago!

Terrible sense of direction!

Zhang Yang concluded in his head as he sent a party invitation to her. In 'God's Miracle', as long as a player has dealt damage to the monster, they would be eligible to obtain its loot. For Sacred Knights and Priests though, they could not get any equipment nor experience just by healing, so they must be in a party with attackers!

Zhang Yang had intended to ask Ocean Despair for help but since Little Snow had helped him and left a good impression, he had decided to share the loot with her!

The equipment Little Snow was wearing were not bad. Everything was basically Level 10 Black-Steel equipment. Although Python King was a Level 20 boss, Zhang Yang's attack nullification ability was incredible. It would be more than enough as long as she healed the HP lost from [venom spit].

"Wow, you're already at Level 18!" Little Snow hesitated before accepting the party invitation. She was surprised when she noticed Zhang Yang's level, "Why isn't your name on the Player Level Ranking?"

"Enlistment is optional!" explained Zhang Yang.

"Oh!" Little Snow nodded and her eyes shone, "Ah, you are that Zhan Yu! Are you interested to join our guild? Defiant Monk kept praising you!"

"Defiant Monk?"

"Eh? You didn't know Defiant Monk was in our guild?"

Zhang Yang only knew that Defiant Monk joined a guild but he did not remember clearly which guild it was! He laughed and said, "I see, we're kinda fated then!"

Little Snow's eyes were beguiling, the corners of her mouth raised into a faint smile. She might have looked ordinary but her beautiful eyes made up for everything, outshining her flaws, "Brat, trying to flirt with me?"

"Brat?" Zhang Yang smiled depreciatingly. Although he was only 22 years old currently, adding the 5 years of his previous life, his mental age

was close to a 30-year-old uncle!

Elder sister who was terrible at directions!

Zhang Yang quietly amended his evaluation of Little Snow in his heart.

With the addition of Little Snow, Python King was no longer a threat to Zhang Yang. Even as it used both its skills interchangeably, its death was still imminent!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

As the last drop of the Python King's HP vanished, it too had fallen to its death.

'Ding! The party you are in has killed Golden Venomous Python King! Obtained 30,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!'

"Eh? This monster is a boss?" Little Snow was very surprised.

"If it's not, do we need such a long time to kill it?" Zhang Yang replied stoically. He had thought that killing this boss would induce a system reward, this could have been the first Green-Copper boss in the field! After waiting for some time though, Zhang Yang dropped his head in disappointment as there was no reaction from the system.

"Eh? It's not strange since a tank's attacking damage is low, isn't it?" Little Snow was indignant.

This girl, did she not see the boss' HP? Did she not see the damage he had dealt?

Zhang Yang sighed and asked, "Where have you been looking all this while?"

"The tank's HP bar of course!" Little Snow had a despising look, "If you die, how am I, a Priest, supposed to survive?"

Made sense.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "OK, let's loot and share the equipment!"

He looted and the first equipment came out.

[Python King's Hood] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +18

Intelligent: 9

Spirit: +3

Level Requirement: 20

“This one’s for you!” Zhang Yang passed easily.

Little Snow darted her eyes and said, “Hey, are you really trying to flirt with me?”

“Haha”, Zhang Yang laughed dryly, “Can you please not be so narcissistic. I already have someone I like!”

“Hm. I know that. That person you mentioned must be me!” Little Snow said with an “I know it all” expression.

Chapter 37: Great Lucky Hands

A narcissistic elder sister who was terrible at directions!

Zhang Yang ignored her as he proceeded to loot the corpse.

[Aphelia's Staff] (Green-Copper, Staff)

Magic Attack: 168 – 191

Level Requirement: 20

Note: “This staff still carries the stench of Python King's innards! Poor Aphelia! May your soul rest in peace among the gods!”

“Again! Yours!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily. It was not that he wanted the equipment but more so because he did not want Little Snow saying that he wanted to court her!

Nevertheless, Little Snow giggled happily, carrying an ‘I knew it’ expression.

Hmph, drama queen!

Another loot! Zhang Yang did not believe that it would only drop Priest's equipment!

[Boots of Agility] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +10

Intelligence: +6

Spirit: +4

Level Requirement: 20

F*ck my life! Zhang Yang felt speechless.

Again, again!

[Resurrection] (Skill Book)

Use: You will learn [resurrection].

Class: Priest, Knight.

Zhang Yang shed a manly tear. All 4 items were for Priests!

Little Snow's eyes had turned into crescents from smiling, mumbling, "Indeed, kindness is always rewarded!"

Zhang Yang looted the corpse again. He had finally gotten something that was not for Priests!

[Golden Venomous Python King's Gall]: Quest Item!

'Ding! You have obtained 15 silver coins!'

With the last item looted, the boss' corpse disappeared instantly.

"There's still the chest!" Zhang Yang rubbed his palms and rushed towards the Gray-Silver Chest.

"Wow! A treasure chest!" Little Snow's eyes radiated with interest. "Let me open it! Let me!"

Since they were in the same party, it did not matter who had opened the chest. Zhang Yang moved aside.

Little Snow threw herself on the chest and rested her cheek on the lid of the chest as her hands caressed the chest. Her indulgent expression scaring Zhang Yang.

A fortune-loving and narcissistic elder sister who was terrible at directions!

After some time, Little Snow had finally opened the chest with great reluctance under Zhang Yang's urge. The unwillingness written on her face was as if Zhang Yang had murdered her father.

10%, 20%... 100%! The chest opened and Little Snow stuffed her hand inside.

[Silver-Scaled Sword] (Gray-Silver, One-handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 197 – 219

Attack Interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 80

Equipped Effect: Increases [critical strike]'s rate by 1%.

Level Requirement: 20

Jackpot! This [Silver-Scaled Sword] would really put his current [Refined Iron Sword]'s 16 – 24 Weapon Attack to shame! Since Yellow-Gold equipment could only be obtained from Level 50 bosses, he could use this sword until he had reached that level!

Zhang Yang looked at Little Snow and thought to himself, “Is this yin and yang! – they’re complementing each other as he had looted her equipment while she looted his?”

“Wow! Such a pretty sword!” Little Snow picked up the [Silver-Scaled Sword]. Before rolling, anyone who was eligible to roll for the loot could pick up the equipment but was unable to equip it nor store it in their inventory.

It was obvious that men and women had completely different perspectives. What Zhang Yang had cared about was [Silver-Scaled Sword]'s supreme functionality while Little Snow had only cared about its appearance.

Zhang Yang rolled 42 points while Little Snow passed without hesitation. The strongest one-handed sword at the current stage of the game then went into Zhang Yang’s inventory.

It was a shame that he had 2 more levels to go before he could equip it.

[Recipe: Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] (Alchemy Recipe)

Use: You will learn to craft Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion.

Requirement: Beginner Alchemy Skill

Seriously... it came out! This thing's drop rate was not even one in ten thousand. In his previous life, even when the game had reached its mid-late stage, players who could craft this potion only numbered a handful!

[Silver-Scaled Sword], Alchemy Recipe... these were extremely rare drops yet she had looted them both in one instance, what great Lucky Hands!

Zhang Yang's own 2 points of Luck was crap in comparison to her.

"Little Snow, this is something that I need, can you give it to me?" This was a matter concerning his fortune, so Zhang Yang had to quickly speak up.

"I will consider it if you call me 'elder sister'!" Little Snow was more than delighted.

The lady did look like she was older but Zhang Yang's mental age was almost 30 years old, so it was extremely hard for him to utter the words 'elder sister'!

"Eh? You won't say it? Well then, I'm going to roll now!" teased Little Snow.

"Little Snow, you're more like Mischievous Snow!" Zhang Yang sighed.

"Hahaha! That's why it's fun! Hey, are you saying it or not?"

"Elder sis - ter" Zhang Yang said gritting his teeth. He added another word under his breath, "Witch!"

"Good boy! Come, let big sis here give you a candy!" Little Snow grinned, her eyes forming crescents.

After Zhang Yang kept the recipe, he thought to himself, "Wait till I make a huge fortune with this recipe and make you cry your heart out!"

Little Snow looted once more and the last item popped out.

[Treasure Map Piece (1)] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Put together all 3 [Treasure Map Piece]s and obtain a [Complete Treasure Map].

Zhang Yang checked his inventory. Right now, he had piece (1) and piece (3). This piece would be a recurring one so he unhesitatingly passed. He was extremely contented with the [Silver-Scaled Sword] and the recipe.

After Little Snow obtained the map piece, the chest dissipated slowly.

"Come, let's get out of here!" said Zhang Yang as he went into the empty tree trunk. Little Snow hurriedly followed behind.

As he moved forward, Zhang Yang had suddenly realized that the little blinking dot that had represented Little Snow on the mini-map had disappeared.

Zhang Yang quickly asked in the party channel, “Little Snow, where are you?”

“I... I don’t know!” Little Snow replied, “It’s dark everywhere!”

This woman could get lost even when she was following him. She was really something!

“Stay there, I’m coming!” Zhang Yang could only say feebly.

“OK. But hurry, it’s so dark here and the water is so cold. It doesn’t feel nice at all!” complained Little Snow.

“Alright! Alright! I’m coming now!”

The blinking dot had finally reappeared in his mini-map after some few hundred meters of swimming. Zhang Yang swam over to her and said, “Follow me closely!”

She replied, “I can’t even see you, how am I supposed to follow?”

“Can’t you read the map?” Zhang Yang might have thought too highly of her.

“Nope, I can’t understand it. Gives me a headache!” Little Snow replied.

This was how a directionally-challenged idiot came about.

Zhang Yang sighed and extended his hand, “Then grab on to my hand!”

“OK!”

Holding on to the idiot’s hand, Zhang Yang led Little Snow out of the water. After 20 minutes of swimming, they finally saw daylight, both of them emerging from the bushes.

“My hands are soft, aren’t they?” Little Snow asked out of the blue.

“Hm, they’re alright!” Zhang Yang casually replied.

“How long do you plan on holding them?” Little Snow’s tone was laced

with a feeling of the calm before a storm.

Zhang Yang looked. Oh, he had forgotten to let go after holding her hands for so long.

“Hehe, my bad! My bad!” Zhang Yang let her hands go and took a step back to express his innocence.

Little Snow looked at him haughtily and said, “Rascal, be careful next time! I’m not someone you can easily take advantage of!”

Speaking of arguing, Zhang Yang was not afraid of her. Before he had confirmed his relationship with Lin Yu, he still had his fair share of dating women. He just wanted to avoid causing trouble as he would rather not have any affairs with the opposite sex. With a light smile, Zhang Yang said, “I’ll be on my way to complete a quest. See you next time!”

Zhang Yang left the party and headed towards Deckard. He lifted and waved his left hand to bid farewell.

“Tch! Rascal!” Little Snow murmured and opened the voice messenger.

“Hello! Cousin, are you calling me to pick you up cause you’re lost again?” A crisp voice of a young girl came through, “How many times would this be? Come on cousin, stop making a fool out of yourself! You’re a Cambridge graduate, how can you have less sense of direction than me, a high schooler?”

“Hmph! I majored in Business Administration and not Tourism or Geology or even Archeology. Can’t I get lost?”

“Cous, you’ve gotten lost too many a time, don’t you think? Fine, fine, fine! I’m done arguing with you. Where are you? I’ll come and pick you up!” The girl on the other side of the line gave in.

“Who asked you to pick me up? I’m not lost!”

“Eh? Then why did you call me? I was in the middle of grinding!”

“I met that Zhan Yu just now! Hm, he’s strong indeed! Stronger than you!”

“Waaaa, I’m a Berserker. Why would you compare me to him!”

“Nothing. I’m just comparing!” Little Snow stretched lazily and said, “He’s indeed someone worth recruiting!”

“Well then, go pull him in! Hehe, you have big boobs. Didn’t they say that guys like big boobs? He’s sure to be enticed by you!” the girl on the other side of the line laughed.

“You little brat, your boobs are as flat as a sunny side up!”

“Han Ying Xue, I’m warning you! No comments about my breasts!”

“Tch! Sunny-side-up!”

“Hmph! Milk cow!”

...

Returning to Deckard, Zhang Yang passed the [Golden Venomous Python King’s Gall] over and the head physician’s eyes were wide open, “This is really the Python King’s Gall! I can feel it! This soft sac contains such poisonous venom! It’s shocking! Adventurer, I thank you from the bottom of my heart!”

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: The Last Python Gall. Obtained 10,000 EXP!’

‘Ding! You have learned the skill [first aid]!’

‘Ding! Your skill [first aid] has leveled up to Specialist!’

‘Ding! You have obtained the title: Physician’s Friend!’

A chain of notification rang at his ears, sounding absolutely melodious!

He opened the [first aid] window and saw that he had already learnt 5 types of bandages: [Linen Bandage], [Coarse Cloth Bandage], [Cotton Bandage], [Silk Bandage], and [Magic-Woven Bandage]. However, [Cotton Cloth] could only be found from looting humanoid monsters. As of now, he could only farm for [Coarse Cloth].

[Coarse Cloth Bandage]: Recovers 500 HP over 10 seconds, channeling needed. Any damage or movement will cancel channeling duration.

Cooldown: 1 minute.

With the title Physician's Friend, [first aid] effect would be doubled, healing 1,000 HP over 10 seconds. That would almost completely refill Zhang Yang's HP.

Zhang Yang took out a Teleportation Reagent and tore it. A magic circle formed under his feet and he arrived at White Jade Castle 10 seconds later.

Translator Notes:

1 yīnyáng – Chinese philosophical theory where two seemingly opposite forces may complement each other. Everything is interconnected and interdependent. Yin refers to dark while yang refers to bright. Women are generally filled with yin while men are filled with yang.

Chapter 38: Earthen Round Shield's Hot Sales

Ever since Zhang Yang started the 'Physician's Friend' quest, he had not returned to the city!

When he finally did, the first thing he did was to store all his junk items into his storage before checking his mailbox. A few days ago, the mail assistant informed him of new mails, but he could not retrieve any as he was away.

The mails came from the auction house, informing him of his sale of the [Earthen Round Shield] which had transacted for 870 gold pieces. He received his payment after having 87 gold pieces deducted as tax.

Zhang Yang had a look at his inventory and realized that he currently had 15,300 gold pieces. If this game had a Personal Wealth Ranking Board, he'd definitely be on the list!

With the intention to learn the [alchemy] skill, Zhang Yang decided to forget [mining] and proceeded to the Alchemy Shop. To gain a fortune from [mining] would mean to invest quite a lot of time that Zhang Yang did not have. The only reason for him to learn [mining] was for the class quest in Beginner Village.

Shortly after, he took out the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] recipe and patted it on his chest. A gold light shone and his [alchemy] list now had something added to it.

Zhang Yang went to the auction house, opened the shopping window and searched for the keywords [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower]. As soon as he confirmed his search, rows and rows of the items were listed out. Normally, a stack would usually cost 20 silver pieces. However, there were sellers that attempted to scam others by placing only one herb and selling it at the same price, deceiving careless players into buying them in a bid to earn more.

Zhang Yang selected all the available [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko

Flower] with a price of no higher than 30 silver pieces to purchase. What was once in abundance at the auction house was wiped clean and now, there remained only a few units of herbs being offered up for sale by other players.

While the others were still in the midst of purchasing the same ingredients, they did not realize that a huge supply of them had disappeared, leading some to turn furious.

“What?! Where are all the [Gingko Flower]? I just saw over 100 stacks a few moments ago, and now there are only 7 units left?! Motherf*cker! Which son of a b*tch is trying to sell 1 unit for 20 silver! I clicked it twice!”

“[Brassica Weed] is gone too. What the hell? How am I supposed to raise my [alchemy] level like this?!”

“Which bastard is so rich to buy all those herbs in an instant?!”

[Brassica Weed] was one of the materials used to create the [Beginner Healing Potion] while [Gingko Flower] was used to make the [Beginner Mana Potion]. The drop rate for these two recipes was rather high and players would usually rely on them to raise their [alchemy] level. It was expected that players would be distraught when Zhang Yang cleaned all the shelves.

He headed back to his mailbox right after that to retrieve all the purchased [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower]. However, having insufficient inventory space to collect them all at once, he had to place most of the herbs temporarily into the bank. When a character was created, they were given a free bank column from the system that had 100 slots. Players would then need to pay if they require more space. Additionally, the more slots you bought, the higher the price would be, increasing the price by 10 times for each subsequent purchase.

Zhang Yang had bought 3 bank columns which gave him more than enough space to store his purchases from the mailbox. He felt the pinch of spending 1,100 gold pieces for them though.

Once that was settled, he went back to the Alchemy Shop to buy a large amount of [Empty Bottle] to create the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]

with his newly learned [alchemy].

‘Ding! You have created [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] x1. Your [alchemy] Mastery has increased by 1 point.’

‘Ding! You have created [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] x1. Your [alchemy] Mastery has increased by 1 point.’

...

‘Ding! You have created [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] x2. Your [alchemy] Mastery has increased by 1 point.’

Wow. 2 bottles? Zhang Yang smiled and felt that this must be the advantage from his Luck attribute! The Luck attribute provided a certain chance to have 2 end products whenever a player crafted something. The higher the Luck attribute, the higher the chance! Despite that, the chances would still be very slim even if a player had 100 Luck.

After exhausting all of his materials in his inventory, Zhang Yang immediately ran to the bank to exchange his crafted potions for more materials and began crafting more. With the ridiculous settings in the system, it took 2 seconds to create a bottle of potion. Zhang Yang bought 370 stacks of materials which could be converted into 7,400 bottles of potions...

It took 4 hours of potion crafting to use up every material he had, but thanks to that, his [alchemy] skill had surpassed Amateur level and with that, the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] icon turned grey. This meant that he could no longer obtain any experience points from crafting it to further increase his [alchemy] mastery. As he looked at the neatly arranged potions in his bank, Zhang Yang felt a strong sense of accomplishment.

Currently, a bottle of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] costs only 5 silver pieces, but once players proceeded to the next dungeon, Marzerway’s Lair,, those potions would begin to fetch 1 gold piece for each bottle. That’s a guaranteed bestseller right there! Naturally, the prices for [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower] would be raised as well, reducing the profit margin.

Zhang Yang opened his Friend List and noticed that Fatty Han had just

logged in! He sent him a private message, “Hey Fatty, quickly stock up on any [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] you can find! Prices will be increasing over the next few days! If the price doesn’t exceed 2 gold pieces, buy them all!”

“Damn, Little Yang, for real?” Fatty replied hastily.

“Fatty, this is a golden opportunity right here in front of you! It’s up to you to grab that chance!”

“Little Yang, I only have 16 gold pieces, I can’t get much with what I have!”

“Alright, I’ll mail 1,000 gold pieces to you later! You owe me for this!”

“Haha! That’s good, brother!”

Fatty Han did not express much appreciation through words. Their friendship need not be that courteous, for what mattered more was the deed and the thought of it!

After Zhang Yang transferred 1,000 gold pieces to Fatty Han, he withdrew 6 units of [Plain Copper Plate] and 30 stacks of [Iron Plate] to craft 6 [Earthen Round Shield] at the blacksmith. He was surprised by the results of his first auction of the shields. There were rich people everywhere!

He placed 1 [Earthen Round Shield] for auction with a minimum bid of 400 gold pieces and a maximum buyout price of 1,000 gold pieces for 24 hours while omitting his name. This was the best way to get the best price out of a rare item; selling them one by one. The higher the supply, the lower the price, making it worthless if the stock increased.

After that, Zhang Yang went ahead to look for any strange and special crafting recipes up for auction. Within a few days, what was once a desolate place had now turned into a lively auction house and the number of items for sale had definitely multiplied! Over at the Crafting Recipes tab, there were hundreds of recipes on sale. Most of them being [Beginner Whetstone] recipes and a few other random equipment recipes.

Quoting the official ‘5-year game review’, after the launch of the server,

the number of players that joined shot up from 4 million to 10 million in merely 10 days. 3 months later, the developers announced a heaven-defying target game population of 1 billion and 'God's Miracle' continued to steadily grow over time. 2 years later, the game reached its unbelievable goal of 1 billion players. The more high-leveled players therewere, the better the auctioned merchandise that could be found.

[Beginner Whetstone] was the most economical product to use when raising [smithing] mastery. The only material needed to craft it was a piece of [Iron Plate]. [Beginner Whetstone] was considered as consumable goods and was generally used to polish weapons, increasing its attack damage by 10 for an hour.

Having his [smithing] skill at an Amateur level, Zhang Yang could not depend on the [Earthen Round Shield] to raise his mastery. He immediately purchased the [Beginner Whetstone] recipe from the auction house, withdrew it from his mailbox and opened his Friend list to send a message to the Mining Specialist.

"Hello there, old friend. How many units of the [Iron Plate] do you still have?"

After a while, he received a reply, "Yo! I haven't heard much from you these days, and here I thought you did not need these anymore! I've got plenty of [Iron Plate]. How many do you want?"

"Alright. Give me 100 stacks!"

Raising his [smithing] skill to Amateur level would require him to use about 50 stacks of [Iron Plate], but Zhang Yang only had 7 [Plain Copper Plate] that could be used with merely 35 [Iron Plate].

"Whoa!" the Mining Specialist replied in shock, "I'd say, 'Please don't scare the crap out of me every time!' 100 stacks is too many. I only have 50 stacks including the ones in my bank."

"50 stacks then. Deal. Send it to me whenever you're ready! Mail transaction as usual!"

"Sure thing, boss! Thank you for your patronage!"

Zhang Yang patted the recipe and learned how to craft [Beginner Whetstone]. The mail would require 30 minutes before arriving and it would be meaningless to just wait, but he had been grinding monsters like a mad man for these past few days and he could not muster any desire to kill monsters within this short period of time.

‘Ding!’

A notification came from the mail assistant. Zhang Yang received a new mail. He was surprised for a moment. He thought that the mail system had changed after he was ‘reborn’. The mail could arrive so soon?

He checked his mailbox and found that it was not from the Mining Specialist but a notice from the auction house. His [Earthen Round Shield] had been sold for the maximum buyout price by a player with a strange name, Windward Three Feet Pee.

I’m rich!

Without wasting anymore time, Zhang Yang ran to the bank, took out a second shield and auctioned it again in the same manner.

‘Ding!’

In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Yang was notified again. The shield was once again sold to Windward Three Feet Pee.

Zhang Yang placed yet another shield for auction and the same buyer bought it once again.

Listed. Sold! Listed. Sold!

After 10 minutes, 5 of Zhang Yang’s shields were sold out and Windward Three Feet Pee had been the one to grab them all. He thought of raising the price for the last few units, but 1,000 gold pieces was already rather plenty so he decided not to do it.

In the initial stages of the game, gold pieces devaluated very quickly. According to the current market ratio of 1:9, 1,000 gold pieces was worth nearly 10,000 bucks! Money really made a difference!

But it mattered not. At the current stage of the game, [Earthen Round

Shield] was the best shield available. Aside from Lost Paradise, no other guilds have defeated Dadarerda. [Plain Copper Ore] was also one of the deciding factors in setting the rareness of the shield!

Windward Three Feet Pee should be someone from a big guild, as it could explain how he was able to buy all 6 shields from Zhang Yang.

Gray-Silver grade shields only dropped in Level 20 Hardcore Mode dungeons. According to the game developers, each big guild would need at least 4 to 5 days to explore and complete Marzerway's Lair when players reached a suitable level.

Marzerway's Lair was much more difficult as compared to Bangar Crypt. During the exploring period in the beginning stages, players would be stuck for a day in Normal Mode due to a lack of understanding of the boss' skills. They are then stuck for another 2 to 3 days in Hard Mode and even longer in the Hardcore Mode. It would take up to 10 days just to obtain a Gray-Silver shield.

Furthermore, there would always be a few parties from the big guilds who were able to clear Hardcore Mode with their corresponding levels. Normal players would only return when they have reached higher levels! With that assumption in mind, the demand for [Earthen Round Shield] would last longer but the selling price would drop over time.

It seemed that the Hardcore Mode of Bangar Crypt was still worth raiding!

Chapter 39: Invitation

After half an hour, Zhang Yang received his [Iron Plate] stacks and stored it in his inventory after paying Mining Specialist. Just as he was about to craft a [Beginner Whetstone] at the Blacksmith...

‘Beep!’

He received a private message. “Brother Zhan Yu, we’re in the middle of a boss battle. Could you lend us a hand? It’s a Level 25 Gray-Silver boss and we can’t take him down no matter how many times we try!”

It was a message from Defiant Monk. Ever since their First Clear Hardcore Dungeon achievement, they have not traveled together. However, they have kept in touch with each other by sending greetings whenever someone logged in or off on a daily basis, thus maintaining a close relationship. Even though Zhang Yang wanted to recruit Hundred Shots as soon as he could, he feared that doing so would affect his future in becoming a Dragon Hunter. If he really did miss out on the Red Baby Dragon, it would be a total disaster!

Zhang Yang questioned back, “That Level 25 Gray-Silver boss... what’s his name?”

“Martyr Unduin!”

“Crap!” Zhang Yang blurted out. This boss is on a whole new level! Martyr Unduin is the World Boss at around Level 30, and if you wanted to try and fight him, you would better bring a whole lot of Level 20 players with you!

“How many players do you have there now?”

“We’ve got more than 30 players here!” Defiant Monk replied with pride.

Letting loose a sigh, Zhang Yang said, “Here’s my advice: Give it up and go home.”

But Defiant Monk was relentless, and continued trying to persuade Zhang Yang. “Zhan Yu! This is a Level 25 Gray-Silver boss! If we take him

down, we'll definitely have an achievement to it with a server announcement!"

It's an attractive reward, alright. But you would still need to have the capability to challenge him! As he was about to decline the offer, he remembered something from the past. In his previous life, there was a player that posted in a forum claiming to have defeated Martyr Unduin alone. As soon as he published it, other players just mocked him for it as he was only Level 28. They just kept mocking him until he posted a video of him single-handedly killing the boss and the forum could only accept and quieten down.

Martyr Unduin was a Spellcaster class monster, and his only skill was the [fireball]! As soon as the battle began, he would begin to cast it, and being a World Boss, his [fireball] was not only a single one but ten separate balls! Each ball dealt at least 1,000 damage and can be casted every 3 seconds. Truly, he was a monster capable of wiping out entire parties. However, he needed to channel [fireball] every time before using it, and the Hunter made good use of the topographic layout of the area to his advantage. As soon as Unduin began channelling, the Hunter hid behind a huge rock out of the boss' line of sight. In 'God's Miracle', if a target left the line of sight, any attack would have been rendered ineffective, causing the boss to cancel the spell channelling.

When that happened, the Hunter would reemerge and resume attacking. With him in sight, the boss would once again begin to channel his spell but before he could complete the three-second cast time, the Hunter would slide behind the rock once more. This strategy was truly straightforward and the execution was fairly simple; the only difficult part was that the boss' HP was ridiculously high. Since attacking continuously was impossible, the Hunter spent an entire day just to slay the boss!

Once his strategy got out to public, people started to realize that it was not so difficult to fight this boss. The developers reacted quickly to this by removing that huge rock. When Zhang Yang entered the game, that rock was already gone. He only stumbled on this tactic while leisurely browsing through the forums. If that rock was what he imagined, then even a melee

character could properly utilize the advantage!

After thoroughly thinking through, Zhang Yang replied to Defiant Monk, “Ok then, send me the location. I’m heading over now!”

“87145, 24103. We’ll be waiting for you! Someone else will add you into the party! Don’t reject it!” And as soon as he said that, a party invitation came through.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has sent you a party invitation. Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang selected ‘Accept’ and was added in.

‘Ding! You have joined the party. Party Leader: Drizzler. Item Distribution: Party Leader Distribution’

With him in the party, there were a total of 34 players. The game only allowed a maximum of 50 in one party. Zhang Yang scanned through the player names and recognized one player; Little Snow.

“Scrawny rascal!” Little Snow sent what looked like a tooth bearing and paws clawing emoticon, which was one of the available ones in-game. Zhang Yang merely ignored her and continued on. Defiant Monk began introducing Zhang Yang to the team with words of praise. “Guys, this is Zhan Yu; the Guardian that gave us that clear in the Hardcore Mode run. He’s super pro!” Zhang Yang initially planned on laying low but with an introduction like that, he could only respond, “Hi, everyone!”

“Nice to meet you, Zhan Yu!”

“Whoa, Level 18! That’s awesome!”

“Why isn’t his name in the Level Ranking Board?”

“Must be a bug in the system!”

Everyone began chatting, and the channel got rowdy.

Zhang Yang opened the map to track the location given by Defiant Monk and according to it, he would be heading into the deep parts of the Plains Cloud Mountain! If memory served him well, all the monsters in that area were above Level 20!

Puzzled, he asked Defiant Monk, “How did you even find this boss in such a desolated area?”

To which, he hastily replied, “We’ve an idiot here who has a terrible sense of direction. She got lost and wandered into the Plains Cloud Mountain and found him!” It had to be Little Snow! Zhang Yang clearly recalled that woman’s sense of direction almost immediately.

Drizzler, the party leader sent a message in the party channel, “Everyone, recover your HP, we’re fighting him once again!”

“That’s our guild master!” Defiant Monk introduced. Soon, the battle began once more, and Drizzler began giving orders.

“Big Lin, start the fight! Healers, watch yourselves! Attackers, move forward behind me!”

Zhang Yang didn’t have to think any further, as he already predicted the entire party would be wiped out. Half a minute later, all the names on the list aside from Zhang Yang had gone dark, which signified that they had died, and complaints began to fill the chat.

“Master, this monster is too strong! We’re not capable of fighting it!”

“Yeah! With all the [fireball] flying around, anywhere around us is a kill zone! Even the healers can’t heal us in time!”

“This Level 25 boss is completely out of our league!”

But Drizzler felt discontented, “And should we just give up?”

The others began to realize that they were underpowered. “We have no choice. We need to get above Level 20, find equipment from the next dungeon, and raise our HP to at least 1,500 to even have some hope!”

Defiant Monk had banked his confidence on someone else instead. “Hold on for a little longer! Zhan Yu hasn’t arrived yet, and with him here there should be a way!”

“Tch! The problem isn’t the tanker, it’s the boss’ multi-target skill! We don’t need a tanker against a skill like that!”

“Master, let’s wait for Zhan Yu and try again!”

Zhang Yang's performance in the Bangar Crypt really made an impression on Defiant Monk to the point where he blindly trusts Zhang Yang to handle any problem in front of him no matter the difficulty. As Drizzler had not decided on anything yet, she went along with Defiant Monk's suggestion, "Okay then, we'll wait for him to arrive and then we'll give it one more try!"

Suddenly, someone in the party exclaimed, "Aw, nuts! My wife is about to have a baby! I'd better send her to the hospital now. Sorry guys, I'll be leaving!"

And after that, more people voiced out as well.

"Whoops, it's almost time to go to work. I'd better prepare dinner for my wife first! Bye guys, I'm logging off too. Take it slow!"

"F*ck, my next door neighbours are barking at each other like dogs. I'd better go over there and give them a piece of my mind or they're not stopping at all!"

"Sorry, I'm going to be busy in a while. Got to give my boy some milk!"

"..."

In only a matter of seconds, more than 10 players gave ridiculous excuses to leave the party and logged off. Out of the 34 players before this, there were only 15 left.

"Well, that's it then. Dismissed!" Drizzler unwillingly announced to disband the party as many of them gave excuses just to leave. With that, the only ones left in the party were Drizzler, Little Snow and Zhang Yang. Even Defiant Monk left the party and he sent a message to Zhang Yang not long after saying, "Zhan Yu, sorry man! Your entire journey is wasted!"

"Not a problem!" Zhang Yang replied, as he continued on towards the Plains Cloud Mountain. Little Snow saw his name was still in the party list, and inquired, "Eh? Scrawny rascal! Why are you still in the party?"

"I want to give it a shot!"

"A shot at what? Trying to court me?"

“Han Yin Xue! Could you please stop toying with others?!” Drizzler couldn’t ignore any more of Little Snow’s behaviour and interjected with a sense of justice in her.

“Hehe... are you jealous, perhaps? Since you’re still underage, you can’t really be in a relationship.” Feeling enraged from that comment, Drizzler threatened her, “Han Yin Xue! I swear I will go up those stairs and punch you in your boobs! I’m going to bust those humungous bubbles!”

“Haha! Miss Sunny Side Up! You really are jealous of me!” Little Snow could not contain her laughter anymore.

Zhang Yang could only remain silent. These two women are wild!

During the battle of words between the two, Zhang Yang reached the Plains Cloud Mountain and ran straight towards the boss’ location. Being Level 18, he caused the monsters that were Level 20 and above to turn aggressive, so he had to slay his way through.

Drizzler kept on threatening Little Snow while she was still playing around.

“... Han Yin Xue! I’m cutting ties with you! If you ever get lost again, don’t even think about calling to me for help!”

“Let’s see... You’ve been cutting ties with me since you were younger. Hmm... this would be the 1,892nd time you did that. Or was it the 1,893rd?”

After passing through a bush, Zhang Yang reached the location, and he spotted two female characters at a distance. One was just casually looking at her fingernails with her arms stretched out, while the other had both arms on her hips looking quite fierce. That should be Little Snow and Drizzler. As soon as they saw him approaching, they stopped quarrelling and Little Snow asked him, “Are you really sure about trying this out?”

Drizzler was a female Human Warrior, Level 13. From the looks of it, she was about the age of either 17 or 18 years old. Her body was still underdeveloped; she was completely flat-chested and didn’t really have much of a behind as well. However, she did have beautiful complexion

and given time, her body would mature into someone truly seductive... if her face changed as well.

“Hmm... I’m sure about giving it a go!” Zhang Yang casually responded while closely observing the huge round object. It was about 5 meters in width and 3 meters in height, and it looked more like a chopped tree trunk.

There is a chance! Zhang Yang could not help but let out an excited smile.

Chapter 40: Attack on the Gray-Silver Boss

Looking at Zhang Yang, Little Snow felt a chill run down her spine. “Yo, look at the way you smile! You’re such a pervert! Drizzler, take a look at the ‘bad uncle’!” Just a second ago, they were in a heated argument, but now they were the best of friends.

Drizzler hurried to Little Snow and hid behind her, looking at Zhang Yang and said, “Cousin, here’s your glorious mission. Sacrifice your dignity and use your sex appeal to lure this uncle into our guild!”

Little Snow didn’t take that suggestion too kindly. “Stinking little brat! What do you take me for, someone you can just buy and sell?!”

“The two of you stay here. I’m going to try and take on this boss myself. Even if things get out of hand, don’t try to enter this fight!” Zhang Yang was not in the mood to pay attention to them. While applying a whetstone on his weapon, he fixated his eyes on the boss; a man dressed in white robe, kneeling in front of the altar and on his left side, there was a purple wand.

[Martyr Unduin] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 25

HP: 300,000

300,000 HP! That is insane!

“Hey, hey, hey, are you really going to take this boss on? Alone?” Little Snow cried out as she saw Zhang Yang wielding his sword and rushing towards the boss. She remembered the first time she met him, and he did the same thing in the past as well. It seemed that the word “death” is not in his vocabulary!

There was a level gap of 7 levels between Zhang Yang and the boss, but he still stepped forward into the aggro range. Immediately, Unduin stood up, picked up his wand and said, “Intruder! You have tarnished the sacred

altar. I must now use your blood to purify this boundless sin!”

In all honesty, the boss did have a handsome face on him. His untrimmed beard carried a sense of maturity in life that made a three-decade aged man look wiser than he should be. One could say he had the potential to seduce plenty of lonely housewives!

‘Ding! Martyr Unduin has begun casting [fireball]!’

[charge]!

As soon as his [charge] was in range, Zhang Yang dashed in to strike, but he soon discovered that the boss was immune to stun. Unfazed, the boss glaringly looked at him while continuously chanting the spell. But Zhang Yang only used [charge] to quickly reach the boss’ side, and without staggering, he ran towards the huge rock to his right.

‘60%! 70%! 80%! 90%!’

Just when Unduin’s chanting was almost complete, Zhang Yang managed to hide behind the rock, out of the boss’ vision. Unduin chided angrily and cancelled the magic symbol on his hand and moved to where Zhang Yang was. When he was within line of sight, the boss began chanting once more.

‘60%!’

Zhang Yang struck the boss, but his normal attacks could not even exceed 100 damage! His attack damage was supposed to be 153-161 points after applying the whetstone, but he suspected that the boss’ defense might be around 100 points! Having such low damage, the generated Rage will be equally low. After 10 points from [charge], he only had 16 Rage. After two seconds, Zhang Yang swung again to deal 53 damage and quickly moved back behind the rock and out of the boss’ vision with just two steps.

Unduin bellowed fiercely as his nearly completed [fireball] was interrupted once again. He moved a few steps again to regain sight on his target and began casting once more.

‘61%!’

Zhang Yang casted [horizontal sweep] and there was finally some significant damage.

‘-222!’

After another two seconds, Zhang Yang swung his sword again to deal 57 damage and while paying attention to the timing, withdrew behind the rock and out of the boss’ vision for the third time. Unduin kept roaring, but due to how he was designed, he did not execute any form of melee attack and could only chase Zhang Yang to chant the spell that could never be completed.

“What... Is this really happening?” Drizzler was left with her jaw dropped, feeling dumbfounded.

“Now that’s a real professional!” nodded Little Snow.

“Cousin, it all depends on you now! Come on, pull him into our guild!”

“Hey, hey! I’m your one and only beloved cousin! Are you really going to sell me out like that?”

“Aww, you are my dear cousin! Now, please help me! You have that charm in you! I believe with just a lift of your finger, you’d definitely charm that weird uncle!”

“Damn! Maybe he prefers flat chests more?”

“Han Yin Xue! I’m warning you! Don’t you ever mention about my chest!”

“Haha! Sunny side-up!”

“ ... ”

“You two! Come and join the fight!” Zhang Yang was not aware that they were bickering again as it was through private messaging. On his own, his attack speed was slow, but with the two of them, it would be an added advantage to have more damage dealt. The two girls stopped their squabble and ran to his aid. They emulated Zhang Yang’s hit and run tactics.

“Just attack! You don’t have to hide, I will take care of the aggro! Don’t

worry about the [fireball]. It will never be executed!” The two understood his orders and started attacking the boss from behind and began to do some damage.

Drizzler was a Berserker and carried a two-handed weapon. Her basic attack damage was relatively high at about 190 points, but the attack interval was at 3.8 seconds between each strike. It was clear that high basic damage dealers could overwhelm monsters with high defense. The Berserker’s passive skill increased 10% of all attack damage, which allowed her to damage the boss with 100 points per strike, and a single hit was more than what Zhang Yang could deal. As for Little Snow, she was much weaker due to the 10 levels of gap between the boss and her. Thus, along with the boss’ basic magic immunity, she was rendered completely useless.

Although the progress was slow, the boss’ health was constantly dropping. After half an hour, the boss’ HP was left with 130,000 points; 57% remaining.

Drizzler began to cry out in fatigue, “Oh my god, how much longer is this going to take? I’m exhausted!” After doing some calculation, Zhang Yang said, “With this speed, it would take another 40 minutes to kill this boss!” Drizzler pouted her lips, “Wow! If I had known earlier how draggy this would be, I wouldn’t have dismissed the party!”

Little Snow interjected, “Stupid girl, less people means bigger share!” As soon as she heard that, Drizzler’s eyes sparkled and even Zhang Yang could see her eyes were radiating with shiny gold pieces!

Most players would have preferred fewer party members to get more equipment drops, but these two wanted money more than anything else!

“A Gray-Silver grade boss... he should be dropping quite the amount of gold pieces, no?” As soon as Little Snow said that, Drizzler’s fighting spirit and desire exponentially rose.

“Cousin, let’s do this! F*ck this boss up!”

“Okay! Let’s go!”

Their desire and lust for gold drove their fighting spirits to greater heights!

Martyr Unduin was really strong. The [fireball] skill could release 10 projections upon casting, carrying the destructive power of 1,000 damage each. Players considered this to be an unbreakable monster, but the existence of that particular stone has become Unduin's Achilles Heel! Unduin has been absolutely oppressed!

Another half an hour later, Unduin has only 10% HP left.

9%, 8%, 7%...

Ten minutes later...

"Vile invaders, the gods will punish you!" And with his last words delivered, the World Boss finally cried out in humiliation and fell.

'Ding! You and your party members have killed Martyr Unduin! Obtained 100,500 EXP (50 points party bonus)!'

'Ding! Congratulations! You are the first party to kill a Gray-Silver boss. Your glorious achievement will be recorded in history! As the party leader, please name your party to be enlisted into history and the world can praise you for your might!'

Drizzler was surprised, and an input box appeared on her interface that came with the notification sound.

"Zhan Yu, we can enter the ranking board! But, what should we name our party as?"

Drizzler was being polite, knowing that Zhang Yang was the main reason they managed to defeat this boss. She and Little Snow contributed almost nothing to it!

Zhang Yang laughed, "Just key in your guild name!" After all, they discovered the boss and with Defiant Monk in the guild, it was also a sign of respect.

"Thank you very much!" Drizzler was grateful and immediately keyed in her guild name. This was the best opportunity to spread their name as the

server announcement has the best publicity effect.

‘Server Announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Please celebrate and cheer for them!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Drizzler (Party Leader) has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). Obtained 10 Gold Coins, Luck attribute +1, and 500 Reputation points across all races in the league are awarded!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Member) has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). Obtained 10 Gold Coins, Luck attribute +1, and 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Little Snow (Party Member) has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). Obtained 10 Gold Coins, Luck attribute +1, and 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded!’

The entire Chinese server began to get lively. At this point in time, most players were still happily raiding the Bangar Crypt in Easy Mode, and only 10% of the players could raid in Hard Mode, while the elites from the big guilds would take on the Hardcore Mode. Out of the blue, came a server announcement bearing news of the first kill on a Gray-Silver boss. How could anyone be calm? On top of that, the boss was killed by a party of three! What on earth was happening?! The server was filled with chatter, causing a large number of parties to be killed in the dungeon!

Now, the ones that regretted the most were probably the Lone Desert Smoke players that left the party earlier! Had they known that there was such a possibility, they would have certainly stayed on to obtain the server announcement as well! It would be exhilarating!

...

“It’s money! Money, money, money!”

Completely disregarding the equipment, Drizzler happily hugged the heap of money dropped by the boss. Zhang Yang could never comprehend their love for money! The other players would already be weeping as there were Gray-Silver equipment lying all over the ground... there was even a skill book!

Chapter 41: A Handsome Reward

‘Beep!’

One by one, messages flooded his Friend list.

Defiant Monk: “You’re a pro! You really did kill the boss! Haha! I knew you could do it!”

Snowy Death: “Pro, bro! Taking on the boss without inviting a bro? Come on, bro!”

Hundred Shot: “Congratulations!”

Fatty Han: “F*ck you, man. How could you have hoes before bros? There are two babes right there, and you can’t even let me have one?”

Crimson Fire and Silky Snow sent their regards too, he knew there was envy and jealousy hidden in their words.

...

Zhang Yang could not tolerate those two anymore, “Alright, alright! You’re all grown-ups now. Stop acting like children! I’m opening the corpse!” They were so intoxicated with money that their eyes glowed into a weird symbol of money.

‘Ding! You have obtained 40 silver pieces after distribution!’

Such a stingy Gray-Silver boss, only giving 1 gold and 20 silver.

Drizzler openly replied to him, “Zhan Yu, you should get all the equipment since technically, you killed the boss.”

Zhang Yang pondered and then said, “You do know that any one of these equipment can easily be sold for at least 1,000 gold. How can you let this chance slip by when the two of you are so intoxicated with such little amount of silver?”

“Hmph! I’m not a miser!” Drizzler then threw a look of disgust onto Zhang Yang. “You know, as the saying goes, ‘For what you earn, pray that it’s clean’! You can’t accept a fortune that is not by your effort!” Zhang Yang grinned, and replied, “I prefer the saying, ‘A horse without wild grass

would be thin; man without a fortune is poor.”

“Ugh! What a waste of time!” Then the girls stepped aside.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Since we fought the boss together, everybody should get a share. How about this? I will help myself with whatever I like, and the rest of the loot will be shared between both of you!”

“Sounds good!” The girls agreed, as it was still the battle loot from a Gray-Silver boss!

[Martyr Ring] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +10

Strength: +10

Equip effect: Increase Critical Strike chance by 1%

Level requirement: 20

The girls gave up their roll at the same time and the equipment went to Zhang Yang. At least he was lucky once. He continued to open the corpse.

[Spellcaster's Circlet] (Gray-Silver, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +48

Intelligence: +24

Spirit: +8

Note: This once belonged to the great Spellcaster Unduin, signifying intelligence and strength!

Zhang Yang was the first to reject the roll, leaving Little Snow happily smiling.

[Carved Boots] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +15

Strength: +5

Dexterity: +20

Level requirement: 20

Since all three of them could not equip this, they rolled together and was obtained by Drizzler with 78 points.

[Holy Prayers] (Skill book)

Use: You will learn [holy prayers].

Class requirement: Priest, Knight.

“Quickly, use it! What does it really do?” asked Drizzler curiously.

Little Snow obtained the skill book after Zhang Yang and Drizzler gave up their roll. She then patted the book on her chest and posted the skill description after learning it.

[Holy Prayers] (Level 1): Heals target's HP for 100% of the current magic attack. The nearest surrounding players will receive healing for 25% of the current magic attack. Up to 4 players maximum.

MP Cost: 50.

Cast time: 1.5 seconds.

Cooldown time: 10 seconds

It was not clear what would happen after levelling up the skill, whether it was increased healing capacity, shorter casting time, or even reduced cooldown time. It did not matter as this skill was meant for mass healing which greatly reduced the difficulty of raiding dungeon bosses that used multi-target skills.

Under the boss remained the last item, a skill book with a red cover.

[Eagle Eye] (Skill book)

Use: You will learn [eagle eye]

Class requirement: Warrior, Knight, Hunter, Thief.

Drizzler was once again curious. “Eh? This skill is so versatile; it can be

learned by so many different classes. What skill is this, exactly?” Zhang Yang, on the other hand, got excited and said, “Please, let me have this one!” Drizzler curled her lips to his response, “Tch! What are you getting so excited about? I’ve already said that all the loot belongs to you!” She then gave up her roll. Little Snow had the intention to tease Zhang Yang again but as she also agreed to let him have all the items, she gave up her roll as well.

Once Zhang Yang had gotten hold of the skill book, he quickly patted it against his chest and with a flash of light, a new skill appeared on his skill window.

Seeing Zhang Yang giggling like a madman, Drizzler could not resist and asked. “Post it out! I want to see it too!” Zhang Yang laughed too and posted the newly gained skill description to the party channel.

[Eagle Eye] (Passive) (Level 1): You now have the ability to thoroughly search the enemy’s weak points. All attacks will now ignore 50% enemy defense.

“Tch, and here I thought it was some godly skill. The warrior’s Level 20 [Cripple Defense] skill also has a 50% armor reduction!” and Drizzler curled her lips again.

“Uh huh. First. [Cripple Defense] can only cause 10% armor reduction upon each stack and you can only have 50% armor reduction after 5 stacks! By then, I would have attacked a number of times already! Plus, if you were to fight against a group of monsters then you’ll have to apply 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense] on each monster. How long would that take?” Zhang Yang giggled uncontrollably. “Second. [eagle eye] effect can be stacked with [Cripple Defense]!”

Both girls were surprised.

Zhang Yang loved this skill in his previous life. Sadly, [eagle eye]’s skill book drop rate is too low, and there were not more than 100 players who had this skill in the entire China server. Zhang Yang never managed to pick up this skill book before and he had never seen this skill book being sold in the auction house. The maximum level for this skill was 10, and the

ignore defense value would increase to 95%. This was especially efficient when it was used against high defense bosses or in PK against Knights or Guardians.

If Zhang Yang had possessed [eagle eye] during the boss fight just now, he would have immediately ignored 50% of the defense and his attack would increase by 50. That was almost double his attack power!

Later on, he opened another 7 to 8 other equipment but none of those suited him. He was lucky enough to roll these three equipment: two leather armor and one heavy armor for a support Knight. The leather armors were for Fatty Han and the heavy armor was for Ocean Despair. But Zhang Yang decided to sell it off in the auction house because he knew that Ocean Despair would reject his offer out of courtesy.

“Alright, everything has been distributed. Let’s return to the city!” Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it apart nonchalantly. Before the magic circle formed completely, Zhang Yang asked, “Oh, right. Have you guys tried Bangar Crypt in Hardore mode?”

While tearing their [Teleportation Scroll] as well, Drizzler replied, “The first boss is too tough. We had two tanks but they could not maintain the aggro. One fell after the other, and we could never conquer it!”

“Why’d you ask? Are you willing to take us there?” asked Little Snow. After a white pillar of light flashed, Zhang Yang emerged out of the teleportation waypoint in the White Jade Castle. Following closely were Drizzler and Little Snow in the same white light.

“I just want a mineral that appears at the third boss. You guys can have everything else. How about that?” said Zhang Yang, smiling. Right now, [Earthern Round Shield] is selling extremely well. If the Plain Copper Vein could produce two to four [Plain Copper Ore], he could earn up to two to four gold pieces!

Even though the two girls were a little crazy whenever it comes to money, but their way of conduct was truly to be respected; which was why Zhang Yang would only involve people he thought was worthwhile in a mutual beneficial act.

“Sure, sure, sure! I’ll form a party now!” Drizzler was happily cheering, but she stopped after a while, turned around and looked at Zhang Yang with suspicion in her eyes, “Hey... you’re not actually trying to get my cousin and me, right?” Little Snow nodded in agreement and said, “Drizzler, there’s always something hiding behind a good will.”

“No, I’m not!” Zhang Yang shook his head. “Very well then!” Drizzler bought into his words and went on jumping happily. “Innocent little idiot!” Little Snow withdrew with defeat.

After checking the system clock, Zhang Yang suggested to them, “It’s almost 7pm. How about we all take our dinner and meet back here in an hour?”

Drizzler then turned to Little Snow, “Hurm, now that you’ve mentioned it, I am kind of hungry! Cousin, where shall we eat later?”

“... How about at the Arc de Triomphe? That place has some good beef steaks!”

“Okay! Let’s go! Let’s go!”

And with that, the two girls logged off faster than Zhang Yang could, and their characters instantly disappeared right in front of him. He thought it was a little amusing, chuckled, and then logged off himself.

Zhang Yang suddenly thought, “These two girls must be from a rich family,” There was also a Western restaurant called Arc de Triomphe in the city where he was living in and it really was famous for its beef steak. In his previous life, he went there and ate several times while he was rich. It truly was delicious, and it could be a chance that they were all actually living in the same city!

After a brief thought, Zhang Yang ran downstairs and bought two packets of 5 dollar boxed rice. It had to be two as he always had a big appetite and would not be contented with just one. After dinner and some rest, Zhang Yang came back online. He first spent some time at the Smithing shop and raised his Smithing level. When it was almost an hour past, he already made more than 900 pieces of [Beginner Whetstone] and obtained Amateur Smithing level.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has invited you to join her party. Would you accept the invitation?’

8pm sharp. These two girls were really punctual. Zhang Yang accepted the invitation and with him, there were 10 other players, including Defiant Monk. After greeting each other in the party, they headed to the dungeon entrance and as soon as everyone gathered, the fight began.

What really surprised Zhang Yang were the girls; they both had strong gaming abilities! Drizzler was just a little girl wielding a two-handed sword, but she held it fiercely and with great strength. Her knowledge in using her skill rotations was quite formidable as with proper rotation, her total damage was high enough that she would come in second place in terms of damage output as compared to Zhang Yang.

Little Snow had good crowd control. Whoever had their HP dropped low, she would be there to instantly cast a [Regeneration] spell and would consider whether to continue casting a healing spell. Her MP management was incredible as she had never wasted a single drop of MP! Whenever a fight ended, she could control and manage her MP to be more or less half, while the other healer completely drained his MP to zero. Little Snow was leading in total healing by 62%!

If these two persons were willing to be trained and studied a little, they could be professional players in the future! Though it might not be possible to guarantee a victory in the S-class Professional League, they could still completely conquer the A-class with ease. It is weird. How have I not seen their names before?!

Lost Paradise was not really a big guild but at least they were a semi-professional one sponsored by a business company. That was why all the elites in the guild were fluent in the game basics. However, Lone Desert Smoke was way beneath them. Even though Drizzler chose the players with the best equipment to join the party, their attacking power was still far from that of Lost Paradise.

The good thing was that Zhang Yang was already level 18. All his equipment were almost Green-Copper, pressuring the boss’ own attack.

Along with Drizzler's capability and Little Snow's healing control, they managed to overcome obstacles and defeated the dungeon's third boss Dadarerda.

Chapter 42: The Brother Dragon of the Massage Parlor

A Plain Copper Mine spawned, but Zhang Yang could not harvest it as he had discarded that skill; someone else harvested and gave it to him. As promised earlier from both parties, Zhang Yang could have all three [Plain Copper Ore]. Lone Desert Smoke members had no objections regarding this as the only reason they were there was to look for better equipment.

While Zhang Yang led the party into the secret chamber of Momorermo, a private message appeared from Fatty Han. “Little Yang, lend me a hand in Hard Mode!” Surprised, Zhang Yang replied, “What the f*ck are you doing in Hard mode?! Hurry up and raise your level, and I’ll bring you in to get the “First Clear” achievement of the Level 20 dungeon!”

Fatty Han continued pleading, “Please? I’m carrying a lovely girl to farm for some equipment! These two noob tanks can’t even get past the first boss. We got wiped out three times! I’ve already made a promise to her, so please come and help me!”

“Damn, you sleazy pervert! Okay, but I’m still in the middle of a dungeon run and I’m fighting the last boss. Add me into the party after I’m done!”

“As expected, my brother. I will wait for you!”

Zhang Yang shook his head, and then began to explain the boss strategy to his party members. They started the fight and was wiped out twice, but they eventually cleared it. Zhang Yang was in a hurry, and as soon as the boss was defeated, he went straight out from the dungeon without checking the loot. He left Drizzler’s party when he reached the dungeon entrance and sent a private message to Fatty Han, “Ok, party me!” After a while, a party invitation was sent from a stranger.

‘Ding! Player Dragon Swordsman invited you to join his party. Will you accept his invitation?’

Zhang Yang accepted and joined the party of 10. He re-entered the dungeon and saw nine others waiting for him at the dungeon entrance.

“Wiped out again?” Zhang Yang asked. “Yeah, all noob sh*t!” scolded Fatty Han. Dragon Swordsman chipped in, “Haha... Now that the professional is here, we can surely clear this dungeon now. Let’s go!”

Zhang Yang scanned the team and saw two lovely ladies standing beside Fatty Han, and they seemed to be in their twenties. One was rather slim while the other was fairly plump, but she had an impressive bosom. Their tag read ‘Floating Flower’ and ‘Round Swallow’, and both were Level 12 from the same guild called ‘Blazing City’. Floating Flower was an Elf Priest and Round Swallow was a Human Sacred Knight. I guess these are the two being babysat. From the looks of it, the other party members were like a group of birds flocking together. Aside from Dragon Swordsman and another spellcaster called ‘Little Tyrant Zhou Tong’, the four other members were young girls. All of them had an acceptable level of beauty, and there were no “dinosaur” cases here; although none of them could compare to the all-female guild that is Crimson Rage. At the current stage of the game, the number of male players overpowered the number of female players, but the male and female ratio in this party was very strange.

“Fatty, which is your girl? The Priest or the Sacred Knight?” asked Zhang Yang. “Sacred Knight!” Fatty was shy and bashfully said, “and also the Priest!”

“F*ck. You sick pervert!” scolded Zhang Yang. “How does it feel to have two targets?”

“Aww, come on. I’m still pure! I won’t be doing those kind of disgusting acts!” Fatty Han’s face was filled with righteousness. “I’m just enjoying the buns and a little lip service on the side! Little Yang, this high quality virtual reality is truly impressive. The sensation of soft flesh is completely the same as reality!”

“In the end, you’re just a sick pervert!” Zhang Yang scorned. Chatting while walking, they soon reached Black Claw, the first boss. “Let’s go!” Zhang Yang bluntly said as he wielded his sword and rushed forward. With his current equipment and skills, he was almost able to go solo in Hard Mode. Brandishing his sword, he was able to beat the Black Claw to

a pulp and defeated the first boss.

In the team damage statistics, Zhang Yang dealt 48% in total, and with Fatty Han, they dealt 78% together. The two of them were enough to kill the boss! This party's damage output was terrible and the healing was all over the place. The two healers had the equipment but they did not have the power to use it.

Dragon Swordsman started a private chat with Zhang Yang shortly after, "Zhan Yu! It's an honor to finally meet you!"

"Haha... You are welcome!" replied Zhang Yang.

"Please, join our guild! Name your price!"

It seemed like Dragon Swordsman could be someone rich and powerful. Zhang Yang only smiled and said, "Thank you, but I currently have no plans to join any guilds." Dragon Swordsman suddenly changed the topic. "This Slim guy is your friend, I presume?" Zhang Yang was confused. After realizing that he meant Fatty Han, he said, "Yes!"

"Your friend is in our guild. There's no point in playing alone! Join us and play together! You know, the more the merrier! Our guild, Blazing City, has plenty of lovely ladies, and most of them would be happy to let off some steam. Uh huh, you know it!" Dragon Swordsman was trying to bait him in. Zhang Yang glanced back at the two girls that were slobbering all over Fatty Han, and finally understood what Dragon Swordsman really meant by "letting off some steam". What was the difference between them and common hostesses?

Zhang Yang was right! In reality, Dragon Swordsman was the owner of a massage parlor. He was commonly known there as 'Brother Dragon', and has been running that parlor for several years. He really made a living for himself! He was recently assigned to be Vice Deputy President of Public Security Bureau in Chang Cheng, resulting in a conflict of his business. With no one to run his parlor, how could he go on?

The Deputy Chief had some problems with his reputation which directly affected his business. He could not proceed with his business since and had to shut it down. However, Brother Dragon was a smart man! He

recalled that his nephew mentioned a newly released online game, and the biggest selling point was the high quality virtual reality! He researched 'God's Miracle' and bought two gaming helmets to try it out. After entering the game, he conducted many tests on the best girl in his parlor. He tried to knead, pinch, touch and nip her sensitive parts, and he also ordered her to strip down. Brother Dragon felt excitement that was beyond compare! He had the epiphany. Times have changed and technology has advanced. His future now lies in the internet!

Without hesitation, he spent a large sum of money and bought game helmets for every female employee working under his business. He brought the parlor's 'waitresses' and security boys together and entered 'God's Miracle'. Brother Dragon took the first step in this game of chess and wanted to establish a brand new massage parlor in the game itself!

Even in the midst of all the confusion, he could see a clear vision of his prosperous future. His first step was to raise his guild's reputation and recruit as many members as he could. Having high popularity meant being able to promote all the lovely girls under his business. The ladies that went through face adjustment features during character selection will look as bedazzling as if they undergone plastic surgery in Korea. He was certain they would be able to seduce those perverted men!

If the business grew bigger, he would be able to make a deal with others to expand the business. Brother Dragon had the utmost confidence that he could build the largest red light district in history! However, the first step was always the hardest; how could he raise his guild's popularity? Just as he was frowning to the point his brows were knitted closely, he saw the server announcement; the same announcement that belonged to Zhang Yang when he cleared Bangar Crypt! Brother Dragon had another inspiration!

He then sent his trump cards to lure in 10 party members. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was out of reach as he turned off his private messaging and friend request service. The four Lost Paradise members could not be tempted and as for the remaining 5 players, Fatty Han, having the weakest resolve was easily seduced.

Brother Dragon went through the dungeon several times before, and he knew the importance of a good tank in a party, and was desperate in trying to recruit Zhang Yang in. Even though contacting him had failed, he found out that Fatty Han was actually Zhang Yang's good friend in reality. That was why he always betted on Fatty Han and used him as bait to draw Zhang Yang to his side!

...

Unable to hold back his feelings, Zhang Yang sent Fatty Han a private message, "Fatty, don't tell me you're actually serious with these two girls?"

Fatty Han replied. "Tch! Look at them go at me! It's the same as the salon girls from 'Happy Street'. I just want to enjoy their service for a little while!"

Zhang Yang finally understood, that Fatty Han knew what he wanted.

"Fatty, I'm going to start our own guild very soon. Stop slacking and pay attention to those players that might have some skills or personality. We could recruit them next time!"

"Ok, I got it!" Fatty Han then paused and said, "Those two seductive ladies are flirting with me again, and they want me to pull you into the guild! How about this? Join this guild temporarily and give me some respect! Hehe... Little Yang, the members of this guild are all really pretty! Plus, they all like to have 'fun'!"

"You go ahead! Don't drag me into you own fantasy!" The party proceeded on. With Zhang Yang's passive [eagle eye], his attack power rose to another level. It did not take long for Zhang Yang to defeat the second and third boss; Hard Mode was fairly easy for him. Brother Dragon wanted to proceed with the Hardcore Mode, but Zhang Yang left the party, claiming that he only had limited dungeon entries. Brother Dragon wanted to insist more but even he knew when to stop persuading. It did not matter much since he had Fatty Han in his grasp, and one day he could use Fatty to bring Zhang Yang into his guild. There will always be a chance!

Zhang Yang returned to the capital and the first thing he did was to buy

all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] from the auction house and turned them all into Anti-Shadow Potion. It was about 11pm or so when he was done. He decided it was time to log out. Laying in his bed, Zhang Yang hopped onto his train of thoughts. Right now, he needed to set up his own dungeon party. He cannot depend on wild or random parties to raid a dungeon.

Marzerway's Lair was a Level 20 dungeon, split into three sections. The 'Front Wing' and 'Middle Wing' were 5-men dungeons. The equipment drop from the three difficulties were Level 10 Black-Steel grade, Level 20 Black-Steel grade and Level 20 Green-Copper grade respectively. The main section, 'Marzerway's Lair', was a 20-men dungeon with only one boss, Marzerway. The equipment drops from the three difficulties were Level 20 Black-Steel grade, Level 20 Green-Copper grade and Level 20 Gray-Silver grade respectively.

In other words, there were three Hardcore Mode "First Clear" achievements obtainable from this dungeon! That also meant three extra skill points to gain! Currently, he decided to keep Fatty Han and Hundred Shot in the party. For the 5-man dungeon, he needed a healer and an attacker. Zhang Yang only knew a few healers, namely Ocean Despair, Silky Snow, and Little Snow.

Although Ocean Despair was a big fan of Zhang Yang, his skills and spatial awareness were not up to his expectations and he could not leave Ocean Despair to handle healing alone! Silky Snow was good, but she was in Lost Paradise and would definitely not follow him! As for Little Snow, she might become a potential A-level Professional League player with some honing. It would definitely have been a great help if he could recruit her! Drizzler was also already good to go as she was... truly a wonderful piece of jade.

Was it possible to get them on his side? Zhang Yang started to ponder on this matter.

Chapter 43: Sacred Training Ground

After waking up from a good night's sleep, Zhang Yang logged into the game filled with energy and spirit. Opening his Friend List, he saw Fatty Han online and realized that he was only Level 15! So painfully low! Hundred Shots was online too, and he was only a level lower than Fatty Han!

Looking through the Level Ranking Board, Floating Fire Ball was at Level 19, while the other three were Level 18, except for Clear Color who was Level 17. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han's levels were just too low!

Zhang Yang suddenly had an idea; I know an excellent place for a quick level up! He sent the party invitations to them, and Fatty Han accepted it immediately.

Even Hundred Shots accepted it. He has been maintaining good ties with Zhang Yang by chatting him up for the past few days.

"Guys, I found an amazing place to grind!" exclaimed Zhang Yang through the party channel. "Go, go, go!" Fatty Han shouted excitedly.

"Hold up! I need to invite two more players!" and Zhang Yang sent a message to Little Snow, "I found a great place to train, want to join? All I need is a healer and an attacker." After some time, Little Snow finally replied, "Scrawny rascal, what are you planning to do with me?"

"Tch! Yes or no. I could always find someone else!" Even Zhang Yang knew how to act tough.

"Yes! Of course I want to! Hang on, I'll call Drizzler!" And she logged off immediately. Soon, she re-logged in and sent a private message, "Send a party invitation to Drizzler and me!" and they were added into the party too.

Fatty Han was thrilled to see them. "Whoa! Pretty ladies!" Hundred Shots could only chuckle at him. "You haven't even seen their faces, how could you call them pretty just because they are ladies?" Fatty Han decided to play the devil's advocate against Hundred Shots,

“Ladies, this guy dared to say you’re not pretty! Should I just punch him in the face?”

Drizzler giggled and said, “Punch him! I’m definitely a pretty lady, and soon to be a pretty queen, charming thousands around me!”

Little Snow couldn’t help but to rain on her parade, “Little brat. What’re you bragging about when you just woke up? You haven’t even brushed your teeth!”

“Han Yin Xue! How dare you say that out loud! I was sound asleep until you came in and made a mess! Hmph! Hmph!”

Fatty Han tried to keep the conversation going, but he was just spouting nonsense, “Eh? Pretty Snow is also a Han. What a coincidence, my surname is Han too! This is destiny, truly destiny!”

“Everyone, gather at the North of the city. We’ll follow my lead once everyone is here!” Zhang Yang could not resist adding another sentence, “Drizzler, please keep that directional idiot on the right track!”

“Who is the idiot?!” Little Snow retorted.

“Whomever that responded is the idiot!” Zhang Yang laughed as he replied. “Now, hurry up and stop wasting time! We have to get to Level 20 today!” Drizzler seemed doubtful about this and strongly protested against the idea.

“Level 20? Zhan Yu, have you lost your mind? At my current Level, I need at least 1,000,000 Experience Points and even if I spend my whole day grinding, I can only gain one level. My cousin and I are only at Level 13, and I don’t think you can even make it to Level 20 either!”

“Haha! That’s the reason why I called you here; to grind at the Holy Training Ground!”

“Oh? Is there really such a place?” Drizzler began doubting her own thoughts as Zhang Yang spoke with such confidence. To think this man actually defeated the once undefeatable boss Martyr Unduin... He definitely has some secret up his sleeve! “Let’s go for it!”

After finally meeting up, they embarked on their journey through the sky-blue lakes and peaceful plains, before finally entering the Spider's Forest. It was dark and dim, filled with all kinds of spiders roaming everywhere, leaving cob webs hung with animal carcasses as the forest's decoration. There were little globs that were white spiders' eggs rest beneath the tree, and they were absolutely disgusting.

"Eww..." Little Snow and Drizzler both frowned at the sight of it. Fatty Han stepped forward in front of them and said, "Don't worry ladies, for this Fatty will protect you!"

"Follow me!" Zhang Yang continued to lead the way, guiding the other four into the deeper parts of the forest. They slain a number of minions along the way and soon reached a cave entrance.

"Enter!"

Not being fond of darkness in the cave, Little Snow and Drizzler forced themselves to press on as they were already here and it would be a waste to turn back! The girls stuck closely behind Zhang Yang while Fatty Han and Hundred Shots guarded their rear. As they proceeded on route while killing more small spiders, they finally arrived at the deepest part of the cave. It had a massive space and two gigantic spiders as tall as two-storey buildings sat on their webs, taking up almost half of the area. All eight of their legs were thicker than an elephant's and the hair covering them looked more like daggers.

[Broodmother] (Green-Copper Boss)

Level: 20

HP: 60,000

Little Snow whispered, "Hey, do you actually think we could level up to 20 after killing these monsters?" Zhang Yang laughed loudly. "Of course not!"

In the game, speaking loudly would not provoke or attract a monster's attention, unless you were in the monster's aggro range.

"Little Yang, where is this so called training ground that you spoke of?"

Fatty Han looked somewhat confused despite having faith in Zhang Yang. “We’re here!” Zhang Yang spoke nonchalantly.

The other four players began expressing confusion. This is a Level 20 boss, and even though it is a Green-Copper boss, the divided experience points earned after killing it would be low! The only way to gain even one level from this was if the boss had unlimited respawn and we killed it 40 to 50 times!

The unpredictable Zhang Yang then pointed to the two rocks to their left and said, “I’ll give the signal to hide later. Fatty, Hundred, and Little Snow; you three must stand in the middle of the rocks while Drizzler and I defend the front.”

“Why?” Drizzler asked.

“You’ll know soon enough! Get ready, I’m starting the fight!” Zhang Yang then wielded his sword and used [charge].

‘-133!’ Normal attack.

Broodmother quickly recovered from the stun effect that lasted for a second and then moved one of its long legs to thrust it towards Zhang Yang.

‘[block]!’

‘-78!’ [block] reflected damage.

‘-178!’ [shield bash]!

Zhang Yang shouted “Start the attack!” after he made sure he kept the aggro on him. Little Snow and the others still had no clue to what Zhang Yang was thinking, but they played along and began to strike.

95%, 83%, 71% ... the boss’ HP kept dropping at a tremendous rate.

Within two minutes, Broodmother was left with only 15% HP. “Stop! It’s time to hide!” Zhang Yang ordered loudly. Having left a professional impression on the team, Little Snow and the others followed the plan even if they still had some doubts in him. They stood between the rocks once more, having to lean on the side as it was too small for three of them.

14%, 12%, 11%, 10%!

Broodmother gave a piercing shriek, ignoring Zhang Yang and climbed the web to its eggs. With a swing of its feet, 4 smaller spiders jumped out and tackled Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Broodmother hatched Baby Spiders!’

With the system notification sound, Zhang Yang withdrew to the rocks with Drizzler. With each taking one side, they stood their ground and defended Little Snow and their team. The Baby Spiders did not stop hatching from the eggs and swarmed at them.

[Hatched Baby Spider] (Normal)

Level: 15

HP: 300

“Kill the smaller ones!” Zhang Yang yelled as he swung his sword, using [horizontal sweep] that caused numerous damage texts to pop out, ranging from 286 to 302. Some of the Baby Spiders were killed, while the rest had only a sliver of health left. His [shadow rage] necklace was frantically activating, popping out “-20” constantly.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Hatched Baby Spider. Obtained 110 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Hatched Baby Spider. Obtained 110 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Hatched Baby Spider. Obtained 110 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding...’

Little Snow and the others were both surprised and happy. “Do you understand now?” Zhang Yang asked while he smiled at them. Fatty then asked, “These Baby Spiders... do they spawn unlimitedly?”

“Yeah, as long as you don’t kill the boss, they’ll keep on spawning!” and thus the secret was revealed. According to the boss mechanics, having lesser than 10% HP prompted it to continuously summon minions to fight.

The proper way to fight was to battle until it was dead, but a player's wisdom knew no limits. Someone immediately thought of a way to abuse this mechanic to level up fast! As long as there were two high defense class players blocking the rocks with healers to sustain them, they could grind indefinitely without a problem!

However, as soon as the method was revealed to the public, the game developers immediately modified the boss' mechanics to only summon ten Baby Spiders instead, demolishing the unlimited spawn method. Since Zhang Yang played the game a little later, he was not able to personally experience this method of levelling. He only heard it from others as they joked about 'God's Miracle'.

Aside from Little Snow, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party were attacking furiously. The two melee fighters were blocking any incoming attack while the range attackers fired from behind. Little Snow did her job to heal Zhang Yang and Drizzler. As they were blocking a stone each with half of their body, only 10 Baby Spiders could attack at once. Most of the aggro were held by Zhang Yang and having 70 points of defense, they only struck him with a measly 4 points of damage each. It was a breeze! Safe, fast, and with unlimited monster spawning, this was the smoothest way to level up!

Zhang Yang's devastating Attack Power truly allowed him to perform at his best here! As there is a high monster count, [block] reflect damage could be considered a multi-target damage skill. Each damage could bring three to four '120 and above' damage text. [horizontal sweep], on the other hand, was much more overwhelming. With high basic attack damage, it could accumulate up to 5,000 damage in a single use against 10 monsters!

Drizzler did not have any multi-target skills, so her total damage output was far from Zhang Yang's; from 30%, it jumped to 74%.

Fatty Han began to feel the excitement, "This is awesome! Look at my EXP bar go!" Even Hundred Shots expressed his gratefulness, "Zhan Yu, you're amazing! You could even discover such an amazing way to level up!"

Two of them gained a level first. Even though it was slow for Zhang Yang to level up, it only took him 20 minutes longer to reach level 19! After an hour, Little Snow and Drizzler levelled up to 14.

Chapter 44: Rapid Leveling

A traditional, boring, and never changing style of battle would definitely put someone to sleep. Therefore, having a rapid levelling style would incite an unbelievable fervor into someone even like Little Snow as if she could morph into a dragon and slay the monsters in one swift fire attack! After an hour or so, everyone but Zhang Yang gained a level.

It was almost lunch time, but no one in the team talked about logging out for a meal knowing that a loophole like this could be removed by the game developers at any time! With that thought in mind, they were on a frenzy not to waste this golden opportunity.

“Hey guys, how about we log off once everyone is at Level 20?” Zhang Yang asked. While furiously killing more spiders, Drizzler replied, “Well, I’ll take this as a chance for me to skip a meal. I’m not going to stop here just yet!” Little Snow tried to provoke her even more.

“Little brat! You’re already so paper-thin, your chest would just sink right to your back! If you lose any more weight, I’m afraid that you might never get past puberty!”

“Han Yin Xue, just you wait! While you’re asleep tonight, I’m going to put Little Daisy on your bed!”

Little Snow’s face turned slight pale out of fear. Feeling dazed, she said, “Then I’ll bring a cat home tomorrow!”

Zhang Yang was curious, “Um, is Little Daisy a mouse?”

“Guinea pig! Oh, Little Daisy is so cute and cuddly!” Drizzler began to describe her pet.

“Ew, disgusting!” Little Snow frowned upon her description.

Another hour passed again and everyone gained another level; even Zhang Yang reached Level 20 and gained a skill point. He immediately invested it in [block] to reduce the cooldown time to a mere 6 seconds! He also swapped his current sword and ring for the new [Silver-Scaled Sword] and [Martyr Ring] and raised his attacks to a whole new level!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 20

HP: 1,600

Defense: 70

Strength: 106

Dexterity: 39

Luck: 3

Melee damage: 345-367 (Damage formula: [Silver-Scaled Sword] highest and lowest damage + 148 (Strength value)/ 2 (Every 2 points of Strength will increase 1 point of DPS) x 2.6 (Weapon Attack Speed)

Attack interval: 2.6 seconds

Now he was strong enough to kill the spiders in one hit as compared to his previous damage output which took him 3 strikes. Using [horizontal sweep], he could now deal a whopping 700 damage! With Zhang Yang's increased damage power, Little Snow and the others gained experience a little faster than before but Zhang Yang's own gaining speed was slower than a snail!

Zhang Yang's current level surpassed the current Rank 1 in the Level Ranking Board, which was Floating Fire Ball. Fatty Han on the other hand replaced Abradon at Rank 10 with Level 17 at 76% Experience Points. Being the show-off that he was, he definitely was not planning to stay in the shadows. Another hour later and Hundred Shots got enlisted on the board at last place. Once Fatty Han reached Level 18 with 57% Experience Points, he immediately ranked up to the top 3, causing quite a scene for the other players!

It has always been a rat race when it came to the Level Ranking Board. It was not a strange sight to see someone ranked fourth drop to fifth or sixth all of a sudden. However, Slim and Handsome here was too much to handle, as he only took an hour to climb up from the lowest rank to the third! It was truly a shocking yet spectacular phenomenon!

And the ranking war kept on going!

After another hour, Little Snow and Drizzler were also enlisted in the board, ranking at ninth and tenth place!

“Aww yeah! That’s freaking awesome! This Fatty here is ranked second!” Fatty Han smiled from ear to ear, until his eyes became a slit. Floating Fire Ball had now been pushed down behind Fatty Han. Little Snow and Drizzler shared the same excitement as well, with their faces flushed red with the color of pride.

“Tonight, we dine like kings!” Drizzler cried out.

“Get yourself some more Papaya Milk drink!” Zhang Yang jokingly said.

“Huh? Why?” Drizzler’s eyes were wide open, as if she was completely oblivious about it.

“Um...” Zhang Yang was stunned. He did not want to taint the still innocent young girl.

“Don’t mind him. He’s a scrawny rascal! What good advice could he actually give?!” Little Snow stared furiously at Zhang Yang. Her eyes brows was raised and lower seductively, exquisitely, but it was a pity that she did it behind his back so he could not see anything.

“Oh!” Drizzle spoke as if she understood.

With the level ranking race still going on strong, everyone fought tirelessly. Rays of golden light flashed between them. The China server Level Ranking Board was ever-changing and never constant.

“Wow, take a look at those 4 new players ranked in the board! How did they do it?”

“That Slim and Handsome player was only Level 17 in the beginning but my god, is he ranked at first place already? Holy crap! That’s three levels in four hours! It’s beyond logical! It took me one whole day to gain a level!”

“Argh, they must be using some kind of hacking program!”

“Nonsense. You’ve been told many times now that ‘God’s Miracle’

doesn't have any hacking programs!"

"It that Little Snow and Drizzler? The same players that got the achievement board for killing the Grey-Silver boss yesterday?"

"You're right! And those guys, Slim and Handsome, and Hundred Shots were in the party that achieved the Bangar Crypt First Clear Hardcore Mode Achievement!"

"They're all monsters!"

"Hey, doesn't it feel like they're taking one step back and two steps forward?"

"Carry me!"

The server channel once again began to be filled with players chatting about.

...

When it was almost 5pm, a flash of golden light shone around Drizzler's body as she levelled up once more. With that, everyone in Zhang Yang's party had achieved Level 20!

In the current team, Zhang Yang was Level 22, Fatty Hand and Hundred Shots were Level 21, and Little Snow and Drizzler were Level 20! Since Zhang Yang decided to be out of the ranking board, Fatty Hand and the rest claimed the first, second, third and fourth rank in the Level Ranking Board. The original leveling king, Floating Fire Ball, has been pushed down to the fifth rank!

Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep] to kill his way out of the monster swarm and used [charge] to rush towards the Broodmother's front to swing his sword and deal a huge amount of damage on it. The boss was unable to move nor retaliate as it was busy spawning its minions. With Zhang Yang's impressive firepower, the boss' HP dropped from 10% to 3% before Little Snow and the others reached his side. The boss was then defeated with only a few hits.

'Ding! You and the party members around have killed Broodmother.

Obtaining 6,050 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!

“Come on, reward! Reward!” Drizzler cried as she went ahead to loot the money dropped from the boss.

‘Ding! You have obtained 5 silver after distribution!’

“Tch! Stingy ass!” Drizzler scorned as she counted her money.

[Spider’s Long Spear] (Green-Copper, Two-Handed Spear)

Weapon attack: 172 – 192

Attack interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 52

Level requirement: 20

“Little brat, this one belongs to you!” Zhang Yang giggled towards Drizzler. She curled her lips as she spotted the spear in the shape of the Broodmother’s leg. “Yuck! Gross!”

“Holy crap, it’s really ugly!” Little Snow nodded in agreement.

Most common male players would inspect the equipment specifications, but female players paid more attention to the appearance.

“Just take it!” Zhang Yang gave up his roll and opened the corpse for the second equipment.

[Broodmother’s Leather Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +23

Strength: +5

Dexterity: +12

Level requirement: 20

“Fatty, Hundred Shots, take the roll!” Zhang Yang spoke in the party channel as he gave up his roll for the equipment.

“Hundred Shots, you take it! My current equipment is much better than

yours!” Fatty Han was smart enough to let him claim the equipment as he knew that Zhang Yang wanted to get Hundred Shots to join his side.

“Haha! Don’t mind if I do!” Hundred Shots cleared Hardcore Mode only once, so his current equipment was all over the place, being much inferior to Fatty Han’s. He really needed a change of equipment to prevent himself from becoming the team’s weakest link.

The boss was quite the scrooge, dropping only two equipment and a few random Etc. items that could be sold.

“Guys, tonight, we’ll take down the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode and tomorrow we’ll raid the Marzerway’s Lair and claim two of the five-man dungeon first clear achievement. Is everyone okay with that?” Zhang Yang inquired the team, to which they responded, “Agreed!”

“Alright, let’s take a break!” and Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll].

“Ugh, I’m starving!”

Hundred Shots sent a private message to Zhang Yang to properly express his gratitude, “Thanks, Zhan Yu! Someday I’ll surely return the favor!” He was just a regular player that enjoyed a casual gameplay to release stress. He never thought that he could actually be enlisted in the Level Ranking Board. After all, it is a game, and you can never run far from competition, otherwise there would not have been so many different achievement boards! Who would not want to get first place? Imagine putting on a Celestial-tier equipment and claiming every single dungeon first clear achievement and be famous for it.

Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots were complete strangers, but after sharing a moment of friendship in the Bangar Crypt dungeon, the trip down to the Hardcore Mode, and now getting himself listed in the ranking board, there were no words to express his level of appreciation.

This player is now in my grasp! Zhang Yang laughed to himself. To think that someday you could be the Dragon Hunter; it would be the greatest help you could offer. Even if it was just a speculation, if you just believed in the team to fight in the professional league, you would not be

disappointed nor regret it!

Back in the city, Zhang Yang received mail that contained 50 stacks of [Iron Plate] from Mining Specialist. After paying the fees, Zhang Yang went to the bank to withdraw the remaining 10 piece of [Plain Copper Ore] and began smithing 10 shields at the Smithing Shop.

After putting up a shield for sale with the same setting and price, he began to hoard all the [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower] once again from the auction house. Because of the same actions performed yesterday, the price of the two ingredients raised from 20 silver a stack to 25. There were some that were placed at 40 silver a stack. Zhang Yang did not care much about it and bought all with a reasonable price.

For this round, he collected over 300 stacks of herbs and only paid 100 gold pieces for it! “Materials sure are cheap now. Until Marzerway’s Lair gets popular...” Zhang Yang shook his head. He then went to the Alchemist Shop and bought empty potion bottles and made some potions.

He managed to use all the material to craft the potions at 6:30pm. Zhang Yang then logged out in a hurry, bought his meal and scarfed it down like a glutton.

Chapter 45: Fatty's Death

Floating Fire Ball's real name was Lu Ming. He was someone you could say was born with a silver spoon in his mouth. But unlike other rich boys, he does not like cars, parties, or even girls. His attention was for online games! He would definitely play games that were popular then and did not hesitate to spend some money in-game. With his own decent gaming ability, he would unquestionably raise some kind of uproar in whatever game he played!

When 'God's Miracle' was launched, Lu Ming entered the game and established the guild called 'Pride'. Since Lu Ming was famous in the gaming world, he could naturally gather up a large group of underlings, but most of them were only in it for the money.

Lu Ming's greatest hobby was to show off his level! If he wanted to get an equipment, he could just throw some money into the game and buy them off the auction house! That was why in most games that he played, he chose the best character for leveling which was Spellcaster or the infamous high attack and low defense "Blaze Wizard"! Undeniably, he made the right choice as he entered the Level Ranking Board just on the second day of launching and made it to the top on the fourth day and managed to keep it that way.

When he was grinding in the Spectre Crypt before, he had Pride to clear the ground outside, making sure no one could enter to disturb his leveling progress!

"Pah! Pah! Pah!" Every time Lu Ming casted a [Fire Ball], a monster would fall and die! If it was not his attack power that was at a point of delivering a one-hit KO, his followers would have preemptively dealt some damage to allow him to take the killing blow. In a non-party situation, the player that dealt the last hit claimed 50% of the shared experience point. That was why Lu Ming was ultimately ranked first in the Level Ranking Board and planted firmly at the top.

Finally after an uncountable number of fallen monsters on the ground,

Lu Ming reached Level 20 with a flash of golden light around him! Awesome! Heh heh, truly awesome indeed! He already reached Level 20 when everyone else were still at Level 13 to 15. It was such a thrill to be leaving them behind! Lu Ming opened the ranking board to enjoy the feeling of having a huge gap between his place and the second.

Eh? Level 21? Is this a miracle, or a system error? After fighting so many monsters, he thought his eyes deceived him to not be able to differentiate 20 from 21. He rubbed his eyes and checked the list again.

[Level Ranking Board] (China Server)

Slim and Handsome, Elf, Beastmaster, Level 21

Lu Ming almost puked blood! He was no longer the first! Where did this Level 21 bastard come out from to kick me down to the second place?!

Hundred Shots, Elf, Beastmaster, Level 21

Miracle! Ridiculous! Absurd! How could another Level 21 Hunter get on the Ranking board? Could a hunter be that much more effective at leveling? Crap, I'm now at third place!

Little Snow, Human, Priest, Level 20

Lu Ming was bewildered.

Drizzler, Human, Berserker, Level 20

Floating Fire Ball, Human, Pyromancer, Level 20

What. What?! WHAT!? Did everybody take some power pills or Viagra? How could they push me down to the fifth position? His expression changed, turning sour and bitter. He went to the party channel and said, "Slim and Handsome, Hundred Shots, Little Snow, and Drizzler. Can anyone tell me about these guys?"

"Bro, you didn't know? Slim and Handsome and Hundred Shots were in the team that got the first clear achievement in the Bangar Crypt whereas Little Snow and Drizzler got the first kill for the Grey-Silver Boss yesterday and went up in the Board of Achievements! They're all strong players! We never knew they could be so good at leveling as well!"

Lu Ming's expression turned for the worst. After some time, he said, "Piggy Head, I need you to find out where these players are at. If they're based in White Jade City, bring some people along and kill them! Motherf*ckers don't know who they're messing with! They don't know what death is!"

Feeling prideful, Piggy Lover responded, "Yes, Fire bro!"

...

After a short break, Zhang Yang re-logged.

'Ding! You have reached Level 20. The currency exchange service is now available for you! Do you wish to bind your National Debit Service with your game account?'

"Yes!" Zhang Yang reacted quickly.

'Ding! Syncing your brainwave with the Banking details. Please hold!'

'Ding! Matching National Debit Service found. Account: 3205XXXXXXXXXXXX. Please check if all details are correct, then select 'Accept' to continue!'

"Continue!"

'Ding! Your account is now bound with the National Debit Service. You can now use this currency exchange service to trade in-game currency to real-life currency and vice versa! This service is available at Banks in any main cities. Please check with the Bank notice for the accurate exchange rate!'

Zhang Yang arrived at the Bank and checked, and so far the current exchange rate from in-game to real-life currency is 1:8. Obviously, the inflation rate of the in-game currency will rise. Without giving much thought, Zhang Yang kept 1,000 gold to buy herbs and exchanged the rest of his gold to dollars. Before this, he had more than 20,000 gold pieces, and now after exchanging it, he became 'poor' in the game, but in reality his bank deposit rose to 160,000 in just a few days!

Zhang Yang felt grateful. If he had not been reborn, he would not have

obtained the [Earthen Round Shield] recipe, but discarding old equipment was fast especially when the Marzerway's Lair started to gain more attention. After the Grey-Silver piece of shield spawned, the [Earthen Round Shield] would be extremely hard to sell even at 10 gold.

That is why knowledge is power! And his knowledge was about the future, which made it even more valuable! As long as he could just pile up more herbs and materials to craft the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], his chance to gain more fortune would come when the crowd started to reach Level 20 and began raiding Marzerway's Lair!

Zhang Yang thought about it as he arrived to the Warrior's Home and decided to learn new Level 20 skills from the instructor. After paying 20 gold pieces, his skill windows had two new skills.

[Cripple Defense]: Destroys target defense value by 10%. Cause 50% melee damage to the target. The maximum stacked effect is 5. Lasts for 30 seconds. This skill will generate a large amount of aggro.

Rage cost: 10

Cooldown time: 1 second

Requirement: Melee weapon.

[Thunder Strike]: Borrows the power of thunder to deliver a powerful strike onto the ground, dealing 100% physical damage to all surrounding enemies. Inflicted targets will have 50% speed reduction for 5 seconds. This skill will generate a large amount of aggro.

Rage cost: 20

Cooldown time: 8 seconds

[Cripple Defense] was a general skill that all warriors had, but [Thunder Strike] was a skill only Guardians could learn. The same went for the skill [Tornado Cleave], which was also an AoE skill that was only available for Berserker class.

After some time, Hundred Shots, Little Snow, and Drizzler logged in. Zhang Yang first let Drizzler invite Hundred Shots and then only the rest

of the Lone Desert Smoke members to raid the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode. Since Drizzler and Little Snow now have known that Hundred Shots will be one of the five-man party for the raid the next day, he had priority over the equipment distribution. The Lone Desert Smoke members did not say anything at all but their expressions could tell that they were not happy.

Players tend to be greedy from time to time. Yesterday after feeling contented in being able to break pass the Hardcore Mode, they thought the equipment in today's haul should have belonged to them. They would obviously not want to willingly surrender the equipment to any random person. Because of that, the atmosphere started to get colder and colder. Conversations became lesser and only got lively during equipment rolling.

Before Zhang Yang could begin the fight with the final boss, Fatty Han talked over the voice chat in an effort to contact Zhang Yang.

"Little Yang, I'm being ambushed! Come and fight with me!"

"What happened? Did you finally get stung by the bees when you've been messing with too many flowers?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"No! A bunch of nobody from 'Pride' attacked me out of nowhere for no reason! Crap, I'm about to die... F*ck! I really died!" Fatty Han growled angrily.

The guild 'Pride'? Those people again? Zhang Yang felt rage and said, "You wait there and don't revive just yet. I'm coming now!"

"Okay, but you better hurry! I will not rest until I get my revenge. I'll kill them all!" Fatty Han's killing intent was getting stronger.

Zhang Yang switched to his party channel to inform them, "I'm sorry. Urgent matter, I have to leave now! You guys could wait or you could swap a tank and continue the dungeon!" After sending the message, he immediately left the party, tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and sent a party invitation to Fatty Han.

"Zhan Yu, what happened?" Drizzler sent a private message to him.

"My friend, the fat one, got killed by someone. I'm going over to kill

them!”

Drizzler suddenly got excited and said “Wow! A fight! Count me in!”

Zhang Yang thought that if they were to be a team in the future, they would need to have each other’s back, so he sent a party invitation to Drizzler too.

“And my cousin sister!” Drizzler wanted to include Little Snow as well.

Hundred Shots sent a private message at the same time and after knowing what happened, he demanded to be invited into the party as well. And so the afternoon party was together once more!

“Fatty, where are you?”

“Eastern side, once you exit the city. Jade Dragon River, Position 12464, 39743.”

“How many of them are there?”

“About 10 and more. Shit, I dropped a level! These bastards!” Fatty Han gritted his teeth. He was now Level 20 with 0% Experience Points, instantly dropping him from first to the fifth rank on the board.

“Okay, wait by the body. We’ll be arriving soon enough!”

Zhang Yang hastened his pace. To be honest, he did not even consider the 10 players to be a threat to him. With his skills and the equipment he has obtained so far, he could be killing a hundred men with ease! Very soon, Zhang Yang arrived at the point. By the huge river side, there were more than 10 players surrounding a body, spitting and stepping on it. Some were murmuring something but he was too far away to hear it.

These people did not hide their personal profile information and had the ‘Pride’ guild tag on their heads, every one of them being at Level 13 to 15.

Zhang Yang scanned and recognized a few people! Floral Pants, Prideful Precepts and the rest of the four-man party. Kindling Chest Hair was not there because they were killed back to level 3, as they were only level 13 then.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Silver-Scaled Sword, with eyes that radiated

a powerful killing intent.

Chapter 46: Ridiculous Reasons

Fatty Han began cursing furiously in the party channel, “Little Yang! Those bastards dropped my level only because their boss didn’t like me to be higher than him! F*ck. They even sent me a private message, warning me to stay in the city and never leave, or else they will kill me every time I try to do so!”

Zhang Yang inquired more, “Who is their boss?”

“Some guy named Floating Fire Ball. The Guild Master of Pride. He was the guy at first place in the Level Ranking Board and they were mad with the fact that we snatched their position away! They’re also planning to kill the other four players that are above him!”

Drizzler responded with a chest full of justice, “How could he be so arrogant? Is the first rank only for him? Who died and made him king of the game?!”

Floating Fire Ball? Zhang Yang took some time to think. He could not bring himself to remember that name in his previous life. Even in all guilds, Pride was not famous at all! Perhaps when he entered the game previously, Pride had already collapsed and disbanded.

“These bunch of players... what nerve!” Hundred Shots had always been well-mannered, but even he was getting angry now. “Hmm, ‘nuff said. Let’s wreck these guys first!” Zhang Yang exclaimed as he stared coldly at the still parading Pride members. They had a total of 13 players, 4 of them were Silk Armored. They could be Spellcasters or even Priests, but that he would not know.

The most obvious strategy would be to start from the Silk Armored and progress from there. Being a high defense tank, he would not need to be afraid of physical attacks. Zhang Yang used [charge] and dashed into the fight, stunning a Silk Armored player called Death Law, and with a swing of his sword, he caused a “-402” damage text to float across his head, effectively reducing his HP down to only 228!

“Holy crap! Someone is attacking me!” cried Death Law as he hurriedly

used a red potion and immediately casted a [Frost Arrow].

“He must be one of the hunter’s comrade. Let’s kill them all!” The rest of the players saw Zhang Yang’s entry and raised their battle cry to charge towards him. They all thought the same thing that Zhang Yang’s brain might have been kicked out by a donkey to charge into a fight like this knowing that he was outnumbered!

Prideful Precepts, Prideful Babysitter, and Floral Pants faces turned pale as they saw Zhang Yang’s face. The recollection of the painful memory when they were killed down to Level 3 reemerged.

Being mentally traumatized by him, Floral Shots advised the rest in the channel, “Piggy bro, this warrior is crazy strong! I think he’s using some kind of hacking program! We have to withdraw for now!”

Prideful Piggy yelled back, “Hack my ass. You need to be a genius to be able to hack in this game! Now, get your sorry ass back out there and kill him! We’ll stand guard!”

“-1!”

“-5!”

“-9!”

“.....”

The others tried their best, but as hard as they could hit, they could never reach a double digit damage number!

“Shit!” The ‘monumental’ damage that was being dealt left everyone wide-eyed!

“Fatty! It’s your turn now! Use [barrage]!” Zhang Yang yelled in the party as he casted [horizontal sweep].

“-683!”

“-727!”

“-689!”

“-1452!”

“.....”

10 brutal damage texts appeared! Two critical strikes! With just a single stroke, there were only two players left standing with 50 HP remaining! These guys were just around Level 13 to 15 with Level 5 Black-Steel equipment obtained from Normal Mode in Bangar Crypt Dungeon. Even if they did use all their AP on Vitality, they could only cough up 1,000 HP. There was no way they could survive Zhang Yang's godly skill!

It all happened so suddenly that not only the members of Pride were surprised, but also Zhang Yang's party as well! They almost forgot to hold back their attack!

“Little Yang! Don't kill them off yet! Leave some for this Fatty to kill!” Fatty Han revived himself and in the next split second, he drew his bow and used [barrage], dealing enough damage to kill off the two remaining players. [barrage] was an AoE skill a hunter could learn at Level 20.

[Barrage]: Fires arrows randomly into a targeted area. Causes 200% ranged damage to all enemies in the area for 10 seconds. This skill requires channeling. This skill will be cancelled instantly if the player receives any movement-impairing damage.

Cost: 100 Focus

Within a few moments, the 13 Pride members were down to three ranged attackers.

“-175!”

Hundred Shots regained his senses and drew his bow to strike at the enemies while commanding his pet to attack at the same time. Drizzler was a good battle comrade, too. After the shocking scene, she excitedly used [charge] to attack them. Little Snow was quick to chant a healing spell on Fatty Han.

“+392!”

Her equipment were already up to standard and now her magic damage has increased to 300 points after she obtained the Level 20 Green-Copper magic staff. After the two-second healing chant delay, she had already

recovered more than half of Fatty Han's HP.

"Cutie Snow! Fatty loves you!" Fatty Han threw a flying kiss towards her and returned to attack the remaining 3 enemies.

Although the last three were above Level 20 with Green-Copper tier equipment, their strong attack power was still no match to Zhang Yang's; normal players would consider them as god killers, but facing the current overwhelming odds, they had been outmatched.

"Pui!" Fatty Han spat furiously. "These bastards surely got what they deserved! I slogged my way to reach Level 21 and yet here I am, brought back down by a bunch of nobodies!" Hundred Shots jokingly interjected him, "Hey Slim, the one who did all the work was Zhan Yu, though. You just closed your eyes and shot blindly the whole time, no?"

"Should we guard the bodies?" Little Snow asked. Although not as battle-crazed, she did express an edgy feeling.

"Of course!" Fatty Han firmly answered. "I want these bunch of dumb little bunnies to remember this lesson: Never anger this Fatty!"

At the revive point, Lone Wild Cat's face had dread written all over it. His eyes expressed so much fear that he was imagined getting killed off by Zhang Yang. "Piggy bro, should we call for backup?"

"Useless piece of shit!" Prideful Piggy Lover slapped him across his face, but being in the soul state, the slap only went through their hollow figures. "We were called to kill that whole bunch, but we got killed instead. How could you still consider asking for help! Go ahead if you're not ashamed to do so, because I am!"

"Piggy bro! That Zhan Yu guy is really strong! Back in the days, Hairy bro and the three of us were killed down to Level 3 from Level 10!" Prideful Precept was really scared of Zhang Yang. How could he ever try to raise his sword against him again?

"Curse you! You're useless! You motherf*cker! So what if you died a few times? Follow me! Everyone spread out and ignore the noob tank and strike the other four! We'll take him on last. His strong AoE attack is

nothing if we attack individually. What can he do then?!" After Prideful Piggy Lover's bashing, the group of souls came to their bodies. Everyone could see that Zhang Yang and the other four were happily chit-chatting to themselves, but they could not hear anything while being in the ghostly state and everything they saw was in monochrome.

"On the count of three, everyone revive themselves and hit them with everything you've got!"

"Understood!" Everyone nodded, but Floral Pants and his own gang glanced at each other.

"1!"

"2!"

"3!"

10 figures formed from where the bodies lay, except for Floral Pants, Prideful Precepts, and Prideful Babysitter.

"Kill 'em all!"

As they say, experience is the greatest teacher. Floral Pants and the other two made the right choice! In only two minutes, Prideful Piggy Lover and the rest were strewn across the floor again!

"Flowery! What the f*ck are you three doing! Why didn't you guys revive?!" Prideful Piggy Lover furiously yelled at them as he returned to the revive point.

"My hands were shaking. I couldn't press the revive button!"

"Me too!"

"Hm. Hm."

"Shake your own ass! That's what you've been doing! This game is controlled by brain waves, not by a mouse! You're all scaredy-cats! If you three joined us just now, we could have won!"

The three of them exchanged looks, thinking to themselves. If you guys are already beaten like street dogs, what's the use of three additional

players? It would've just meant three extra deaths. Though they knew these words would hurt someone, they decided to remain silent, not wanting to say more.

After venting out his frustration, Prideful Piggy Lover calmed down. He was not stupid. He knew that they could not stand a chance against Zhang Yang after having the team wiped out twice. He hurriedly opened voice messenger and contacted Floating Fire Ball.

"Fire bro! It's me! Piggy Head!"

"Hm. How's the job going?"

To earn back his rightful place, Lu Min gathered many high level members to help him with his leveling. Because he reached Level 20, he managed to learn the Spellcaster's AoE skill called [Rain of Fire] which increased his killing rate tremendously.

"That guy you asked us to kill, the rank one Hunter. We killed him, yeah... but he called for backup and those people were also in the Level Ranking Board! They killed us all! Fire bro, we all dropped 4 levels; we can't fight anymore!"

"How many players are there?"

"... 5 players!"

"You useless trash! You have more than 10 people there!"

"Fire bro, please send more people over, and I'll surely be able to kill them off by then!"

"Tch! The higher leveled players in the guild are helping me with my leveling. If I send more people over, would you reimburse me for the slower leveling rate? With so many people aiming for the top rank, how could I do anything that would slow my down?!" Lu Ming rejected helping him without hesitation. If he wanted to take the top position, he could not depend solely on killing those who were ahead of him, but at least compete to get ahead of them!

Even if all of the guild were to chip in, could they kill all those players

over and over again? That was why he needed to retain his current progress! That was the righteous way.

“What now, Fire bro?” Even though Prideful Piggy Lover spoke with modesty and respect, deep down there was cursing and yelling.

“Let’s see... Dominating Blades and his party joined ‘God’s Miracle’. I’ll have them take care of these people!”

“Fire bro, weren’t those professionals playing another game called ‘Dragon Age’?”

“Bullshit. Look at how the hype of ‘God’s Miracle’ got within the past few days! To think that these guys would ever let this chance slip away! This is good. These guys would do anything for a good pay. Alright then, it’s settled. You guys better get going and grind those levels up! We will claim the first clear achievement for the next dungeon!

Chapter 47: Sword and Fire Mercenary

Zhang Yang and the party guarded the bodies for a while but when they saw the bodies turned translucent and began disappearing, they knew that they chose to revive in the city. “Let’s go. Time to head back!” Zhang Yang sheathed his sword. Fatty Han nodded in agreement. Although still not satisfied, but killing them with the Red tagged penalty and dropping their level by 4 with an additional 1 after being revived in the city, he was contented.

Zhang Yang and the others aside from Fatty joined back the Lone Desert Smoke and continued the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode. Fatty Hand went to find girls from the Massage Parlor to discuss ‘life’.

30 minutes later, Zhang Yang finished the dungeon and came back to the city and retrieved his mail. His [Earthen Round Shield] was sold but not with 1,000 gold pieces, but 650 gold pieces instead. No one else bid for a higher price, the auction time was up, and the transaction was complete! Zhang Yang was surprised. He never would have thought that such a valuable shield could have a drop in price! He thought about it, and went to the auction house to search for [Earthen Round Shield], and the result showed someone else selling the same item but with an initial bidding of 500 but the wanted bid was 700 gold pieces. The seller did not even hide his name; Floating Up.

It was him!?

Bewildered, Zhang Yang immediately recalled everything he knew about this person. In his previous life, there was an extremely strong mercenary group called ‘Sword and Fire Mercenary’. The group had only 10 members in it, but their strength was undeniably strong. They alone claimed half of China server’s five-man and ten-man Hardcore Mode First Clear Dungeon achievement!

As long as you were willing to pay the price, their mercenaries would get the job done for you. It could be from getting a First Clear dungeon achievement for a client’s guild to even naming the party after the client’s

own name. They also accepted other jobs aside from dungeon related requests, like assassinating or providing bodyguards for a certain target. Now, with the strength of the mercenary's group, it was not known how many players had perished by their hands. Someone did ask them before about establishing a guild, but they responded that making a guild would require 30 members but they only had 10.

This "Trash" mercenary lasted for another half year until the starting of A-class and S-class Professional Leagues. The party began having internal conflicts about which sponsor title should they put. In the end, the group disbanded. Six of the greediest men took on the job of carrying the title of Japan's company "Team Toyota" and participated in the S-class Professional League. Although the remaining four men tried to recruit more, the players lacked quality and skill, causing them to be stuck in the A-class league.

This man, Floating Up, was one of the mercenary that was split and stuck in the A-class league. He was a Guardian and Zhang Yang has dealt with him before. Even he had to admit that the guy had skills that were on par with him!

However, to be able to craft and sell [Earthen Round Shield], they had to be able to clear the Hardcore More and defeat the hidden boss to get the recipe, but in his previous life, the first clear achievement was claimed only after a month... and Zhang Yang suddenly understood.

Before, most of the elite parties could not get past through the third boss due to the bug-like boss' skill! But this time, he "invented" a terrain bug method a little too early and since Lost Paradise and Lone Desert Smoke discovered it as well, there was a high possibility that the method was leaked out! Because of that, the once impossible and invincible boss was now just a piece of trash; anyone could defeat it!

The game progress changed now because of him and the butterfly effect just kept spiraling down! Zhang Yang sighed and took out another shield and made the starting and ending price 500 and 700 gold pieces respectively. "Come on, man. Work with me, not against me! There's fortune for everyone here. Don't do something that will only cause

problems for the both of us!” Zhang Yang said in his heart.

‘Server announcement: The party Fire and Sword Mercenary has set a new dungeon time record for the Bangar Crypt Dungeon Hardcore Mode. Their achievements will be recorded in the Hardcore Time Attack Achievement Board (China Server). Please celebrate for them!’

‘Server announcement: Player Dominating Blades (Party Leader) successfully broke the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode time record. Obtaining 10 gold pieces, 1x Level 1 Rune, and all race 250 Reputation Points from the system reward!’

‘Server announcement: Player 44 Bandits (Party Member) successfully...’

The server channel was filled with red texts in an instant.

“What the... Where did these people come from? They actually broke the record!”

“Fire and Sword Mercenary... I think they were in the game called ‘Dragon Age!’”

“That’s awesome!”

“...”

The local channel was abuzz.

Zhang Yang was a little surprised with this, but what came after was a rather humorous feeling. Crimson Fire always wanted to get that speed record, but his dream was now shattered into oblivion! Even though Lost Paradise core members could be considered as professional players, but comparing with “Trash Mercenary”, Lost Paradise was nothing.

Tch! The upcoming was to get the first clear achievement will be extremely brutal!

Zhang Yang opened Hardcore Mode Speed Record and checked their time record.

27 minutes and 30 seconds!

That was rather good! Zhang Yang vaguely remembered in his previous

life, that the record was replaced several times but finally came to a halt at 24 minutes and 17 seconds. There were no faster time record that replaced it. The record had always been hard to defeat as the dungeon level limit was 15, and with that kind of strength, it was hard to product any decent results!

Take Marzerway's Lair for example; the entry requirement was Level 20 and the level limit was Level 29. There was a 10 level gap to allow players to have sufficient time to try the trials and defeat the speed record. After Level 100, the leveling duration could be 10 days to half a month, and it provided enough time for players.

'Beep.' A private message arrived.

"Zhan Yu! Argh... I'm so screwed this time!" Crimson Fire cried with a tone of despair in his voice.

"Cheer up, man. There will be more chances in the future!" Zhang Yang consoled him. In all honesty, Zhang Yang was not really close with Crimson Fire, and he did not like to meddle with someone who was quite emotional. He preferred to mix with people like Phantom Days.

Crimson Fire smiled bitterly. Even with the numerous amount of dungeons in the game, he knew his own capabilities as well as Lost Paradise's. They were not consistent enough to claim the first clear achievement of Bangar Crypt alone; and that was with Zhang Yang aiding them!

"Zhan Yu! I want to make a deal with you!"

"Now we're talking. Is it the shield? 1,000 gold a piece! Thank you for your patronage!"

Crimson Fire hurriedly rectified, "No, no! That's not it! I want to reserve a dungeon run! I want the first clear achievement for Marzerway's Lair!"

Having thought about it, Zhang Yang said, "Sorry, but the five-man dungeon run has already been decided!"

Crimson Fire would not give up and tried negotiating, "Aw, come on, Zhan Yu. We've been doing this since back in the days! Give me a chance!

At least one slot for me! I'll pay you 10,000 gold for it, how about that?"

Zhang Yang's current goal was to create a concrete and stable team, not just to raid dungeons but to compete in future tournaments! He already had the right amount of gold and no longer needed to work for others now!

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "I can't do it! I've already made a deal! Plus, we're doing the nest tomorrow! Do you have anyone on your side that's Level 20 already?" Crimson Fire bit his tongue. To get the speed record, each of the guild's elite were not willing to get their level any higher than 15. They were all at the same level. How could he manage to get a Level 20 member in just one night?!

"Zhan Yu, don't go rushing into things! Look at the board, there aren't many Level 20 players now! For your dungeon run, let it slide for a few days. I'll even chip in another 10,000 gold! How's that?" Crimson Fire became agitated. But Zhang Yang was firm on his decision to decline.

"Sorry, Guild Master Crimson Fire. I've made my word."

Crimson Fire was silent for a moment. "Alright then. If that's the case, we'll double our efforts and level up. Perhaps we'll call you up for the Level 30 dungeons."

Zhang Yang laughed, "Haha, that's a deal in the future. Until then!"

After his conversation, Zhang Yang went to the auction house and swept up all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] again. Ever since Zhang Yang began clearing them, players increased the selling price for the two herbs, and thrown many Alchemy users into disarray. Not everyone could be as rich as Zhang Yang.

After using all the ingredients in hand to craft, Zhang Yang accumulated as many as 300 stacks of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], taking up about 60% of his bank storage. If he did this for another day or two, his storage would definitely be full. Once he was done, it was 11pm and Zhang Yang logged off and called it a day.

The next day, Zhang Yang woke up at 6 in the morning and conducted

his daily routine. He put on his jersey and went jogging after a round of boxing. He ran from his prefecture, all the way past the garden, across the market area, and arrived at an alley entrance. There, he stopped. He stopped not because he needed a breather, but what he saw at the entrance of the alley, was a 50-year old man, laid on the floor. His hands were on his head, covering it as if he was badly injured. There was a large crowd surrounding him but nobody took action.

Just as Zhang Yang wanted to walk up front, he was held back by another man, who was about 60-years old. “Hey kid, mind your own business! That man right there is a huge scammer. Anyone going to help him will only get themselves in trouble. Who knows how many hundreds or thousands of dollars he scammed away.”

It was no longer a mystery as to why youngsters these days were called cold-hearted, disrespectful and lacked morality! It was all over the internet; the news of people trying to earnestly help others but was only cruelly and cunningly scammed. Because of them, those who really needed help were casted aside and left to die on their own. Once the perpetrator successfully latched on, they would go in for the kill and scam their way for money. If they had failed in their attempt, they could easily get away with just a few words like “Sorry, wrong guy!” or “Sorry, I’ve recognized the wrong person.”

Zhang Yang merely shook his head and went ahead.

The old man grabbed Zhang Yang’s arm again, “Hey kid, Didn’t I tell you to mind your own business?”

“It’s not like I have a choice, old man. I have to take this road to go back home!” said Zhang Yang, with a smile on his face.

“If that’s the case, you’d better be careful there. That old swindler is rotten to his core!”

“I understand, Thank you very much, mister!”

However, something inevitable happened. Zhang Yang walked around the old man lying down there and before he could even get a step past, he felt like his calf was being grabbed on tightly. He turned around. Who else

could have held his legs, if not for the old scammer?

Chapter 48: The Old Scammer

‘He hit me! He hit me!’ the man screamed at the top of his lungs as soon as he got hold on to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could only sigh. This old scammer is really shameless. There was only a meter between Zhang Yang and the old man, and yet he could roll over that distance to grab Zhang Yang’s calf.

Zhang Yang did not hold back. “Old man, are you really going to go that far?” Someone as cunning and sly as this old man did not deserve to be treated with an elder’s respect. The old scammer kept repeating the same thing.

“He hit me! He hit me!”

The crowd reacted the same way as Zhang Yang; having no remorse and began scolding him.

“There are so many eye witnesses here. Do you really think that you could wrong someone like this?” Zhang Yang let out a little anger in him. How many innocent people has this man tricked?

The old scammer finally opened his mouth to reply. “Hm hm. So what?” His face was like a cunning snake; 2 shiny golden front tooth could be seen as soon as he opened his mouth. “I’ll surely get you! Who do you think the judge would listen to? The crowd, or the victim?”

This guy has the guts to actually do it!

Zhang Yang’s rage boiled immensely. He was famous because of his fighting skills from young, and he further refined it when he entered university. He would never have thought that this merciless brawl would be forgotten in a mere four years.

“Dad! What happened?”

“This son of a b*tch actually knocked me down!”

Two 30-year old skinny men came out from the crowd, knelt on each side of the old man, and put up a façade of a son respecting his father.

“You bastard! Was it you who knocked my father down?!” The two men then stood up quickly and stared at Zhang Yang with a sense of hostility. Zhang Yang did nothing but laughed coldly. “You guys sure have a keen eyesight. You quickly came to the conclusion that the man was knocked down when you saw him lying on the floor. Why didn’t you say that he was beaten down? Or perhaps he slipped and fell on his own?”

The two of them wavered a little until one of them shouted, “You little brat! You dare talk back when you were the one who knocked down my father! You’d better reimburse the medical fees or we will sue you for attempted murder! That will be at least 8 to 10 years in prison life for you!”

Among the bystanders, someone voiced out their unfairness, “You bunch of rotten family have been playing this game for god knows how long! Everyday you’d be conning someone off their hard work! You’d better prepare to face punishment in the afterlife!”

“Shut the f*ck up! Do you want to get stabbed?!” and then the scrawny man drew out a blade, gleaming with its sharpened edges. The crowd was frightened with its presence and took a step back in silence.

“Haha!” the man felt contented with the crowd’s fear. He then waved the blade playfully in front of Zhang Yang and said, “Kid, give me 100,000 and we’ll close an eye on you!”

“I’m about to go home and play some games. You... you’re in my way!” Zhang Yang’s expression turned solemn and mean.

“What? Games?” the man with the blade laughed. He patted on his partner’s shoulder and said, “Bro, this boy is frightened silly! He thinks we’re playing a game with him!” The other man laughed too.

The old man who was still on the floor cried out, “Hurry up and pay! I’d be lying all day here!”

“You heard the man! Pay up!”

“Hmph. Eat my fist!” Zhang Yang threw a straight punch, landing clean onto the man’s face. His strength had always been powerful. That punch has been honed to perfection for 4 years in university; it was definitely not

just for show! The man with the blade flew a good three meters away and landed on the floor with a loud thud, oozing fresh blood from his nose and mouth. He was knocked out for good.

The other man was left standing in rage and fear. There was a hint of fright in his voice as he tried to threaten Zhang Yang, “You... you date! My uncle is... is... a c-cop! He’ll c-catch you a-and put you in j-jail!”

Zhang Yang only laughed. With a chain of punches, he dominated the fight and knocked him out as well. He then looked down at the old man he had been dragging along for a few steps and smiled, “How long do you plan to hug my leg?”

The old man was shocked! Back then, he could just con anyone with his two sons stepping out to frighten the victim, yet today, he picked the short stick!

“Hmm, sorry. I’ve mistaken you for someone else?”

Zhang Yang laughed. “Mistaken?”

“Yes! I-I’ve mistaken!” said the old man as he withdrew backwards. Zhang Yang advanced forward to him, and grabbed the old man up. “Dear elderly man, just because you’re old, doesn’t mean you can throw your respect for others away. I want you to carve this lesson well in your memory. Don’t ever do this kind of scamming business anymore!” Rather than letting him go, Zhang Yang threw a punch at the old man.

“Buah!” he was thrown backwards, and blood spat out along with his two golden teeth.

“Ah! My golden teeth!” The old man hurriedly crawled over to pick it up.

And then, a round of applause roared from the crowd. Zhang Yang looked around and saw many bystanders were clapping away, while some were cheering “Good punch!” All the commotion caused the 3 conmen to sneak away like rats in an alley. Everyone cheered for him. Zhang Yang's actions and punches managed to capture the hearts of the crowd!

“What’s all this ruckus! What’s going on here?”

A clear and crisp voice could be heard. Among the crowd, a woman in police uniform walked out. She looked like in her early twenties and was very tall, maybe about 170cm. The uniform she wore brought out a strong sense of valiant; not to mention she was quite beautiful! She looked exactly like the ones you would see on screen, carrying a cold aura around her, signifying her nobility. Truly admirable!

Under her appearance lies the devilish body of a woman! With voluptuous curves at her front and back, along with those incomparable long legs, she brought out a beauty that people would think a waste if she was not a fashion model!

If Zhou Su city had a policewoman beauty pageant, this woman could be in the ranks! There was a chance that she could even top every other women in all of China!

Zhang Yang's eyes gazed at where her breasts were. He could not help it; who asked her to allocate all her excess fat there! With that perky shape and size, one could not resist looking at here!

"Ah! Police!" The old man cried out loudly as if he met his own father. "He beat me! He beat me!"

The policewoman listened and averted her gaze and looked at Zhang Yang coldly.

"Excuse me, miss, you can't blame this young man here. All of this is the father and sons' fault!" The crowd began to talk, explaining what sort of crime they had done. The policewoman became furious as she listened to the explanation. Her once beautiful eyebrows narrowed and frowned. She clenched both her fair fists.

"Police..." the old man continued his wails but before he could finish, the policewoman roundhouse kicked him off. The golden teeth that he picked up dropped again.

The crowd was surprised for a moment and applauded. At a day and time like this, having a policewoman who was on the right side of justice like her was very rare!

Zhang Yang felt it was funny and laughed it off, and he turned around to leave the scene.

“Halt!” the policewoman rushed towards and grabbed him. Her expression was cold.

“Eh?” Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow, not understanding her action.

The policewoman asserted her view on the matter with a sense of justice and fairness, “What they did was wrong, but what you did was wrong as well! Fighting in broad daylight!”

“Are you serious?!” Zhang Yang tried to refute. “That guy was holding a knife! He was about to stab me with it! What I did was self-defense, not fighting!”

“That’s true!” The crowd pleaded on Zhang Yang’s behalf as well. After all, bad guys did not deserve the public’s pity.

The cold policewoman took her time to think, and she said, “I’ll give you a chance. If you could defeat me, I’ll let you go! Otherwise, you’ll follow me back to the police station and confess your crime!”

“You’re not joking, are you?” Even if Zhang Yang was the king of street fights, he would never cross fists with the police, what more a policewoman.

“I never joke!” the policewoman replied coldly.

Zhang Yang replied in a serious manner, “Well then, I’m sorry if I hurt you!”

“Hmph! I will not hold back!” The policewoman went into her fighting stance. She kept her legs wide apart, firmly on the ground. Her hands moved around, gesturing a sort of movement that her left hand represents Ying and her right hand represents Yang, emitting a strong killing intent.

Zhang Yang could not help but be cautious; this policewoman cannot be underestimated! He too, got into his battle stance and said, “Come at me!”

A police and a civilian having a duel, and the police was a beauty at least. A scene like this was not something to be seen every day! The crowd

spread out across the scene, withdrawing and forming a large circle, giving fighting space to the two of them.

The young men had their eyes fixed onto the woman's chest. If they were to bounce about, they would be bleeding by the nose at any moment!

The cool policewoman ignored the crowd, focusing intensely on Zhang Yang. She suddenly struck forward but only grazed past Zhang Yang's left ear. "Such speed!" Zhang Yang thought. If he had not moved a little more, he would have taken a beating.

Before the strike, Zhang Yang was looking down at her. He would never have thought that this woman's ability was anything but weak! With that attack, Zhang Yang started to lose the upper hand in this fight!

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

Once the opponent had the upper hand, she wasted no time and unleashed a series of combo punches! As fast as lightning, Zhang Yang did not have any gap to counter the attacks!

Fast! Accurate! Powerful!

"Huargh!" The woman used her last attack, with both her hands enveloping Zhang Yang's waist. She wanted to do a suplex! If the fight continued on like this, Zhang Yang would definitely faint!

His heart tightened, he had to rush back home to bring Little Snow and the team to rain Marzerway's Lair later on! How could he kick the bucket here!

His arms reached out far, trying to grab hold onto anything he could get as long as he would not be thrown over! The policewoman intended to use her back power to flip Zhang Yang over but she never thought that he would reach out and grab her busty chest!

Tong!

A loud, crashing sound was heard, and the two of them fell down! Zhang Yang on top, while the woman was underneath him.

"Ehh..." The crowd wondered. The fight was on the policewoman's side,

and after a few trading of punches, the woman's legs went weak and was pinned down by Zhang Yang. The sensation that was in his hand was as soft as cotton; full of elasticity! A heavenly sensation in his hand! Zhang Yang squeezed with a little coincidence, and a low, soft lingering voice was instantly heard. One could not help but feel a little hard!

“Let go!” Her voice now filled with rage. She was gritting her teeth while speaking.

Zhang Yang was being held on by the policewoman. He looked up and could not look down at his body. Once he realized the situation he was in, he immediately knew... Both of his hands were holding on to those mountains!

Chapter 49: The Top 3 Guild

Her cold look could not hide her body's sensitive side, and Zhang Yang clearly felt it! Underneath her thin uniform, he could feel her two round buns clasped in his hands! It's no wonder people say that the colder a woman is, the more sensitive her body would be; and she is the perfect example! Zhang Yang loosen his grip on her, rolled over and stood up. As the policewoman did the same, her cheeks blushed like red roses quite visibly. She was beautiful and cute, yet glamorous at the same time!

The surrounding crowd gave out a sudden call, and Zhang Yang took this chance to flee from the scene with his tail between his legs. He knew he made a grave mistake and if he continued standing there, he would be branded a pervert and be arrested! Watching him run away, the policewomen stomped the ground with anger and dread, causing her bosoms to bounce with every step. She turned and returned to the police station with the 3 members of the scamming family.

Along the way, Zhang Yang grabbed a few snacks to eat before he got home. The time was slightly past 9:30am, and he quickly put on his gaming helmet and logged in.

"Little Yang, what took you so long to get up? Could it be... did you have some fun last night?! Listen to me, you can't go around and pick them up from the streets! They're some nasty stuff, bro! Give me a few days, and I'll come over and bring you to this awesome place called 'Girl's Town'! The girls over there are at the same level as superstars!" Zhang Yang was immediately greeted by Fatty Han's private message. As usual, he never bothered to change his lustful and perverted behavior. Ignoring his usual habit, Zhang Yang sent a party invitation along with his reply, "Uh huh, right... like I'll believe you!"

Little Snow, Drizzler, as well as Hundred Shots were recruited as well.

"Sorry I'm late, guys. Had a little hiccup just now. Let's gather at the North side of the city!"

Drizzler began to complain, "Stupid uncle! If I'd known you were going

to be late, I would've slept longer!" Zhang Yang felt a little ticked off. He only smiled bitterly and said, "Why 'uncle'? I'm not even that much older than you are." Albeit childish, Zhang Yang did not really fancy being called an old uncle nor a young brat.

"Aren't you over your 20's?" Drizzler asked.

"Huh... yeah. I'm 22 now!"

"Come on! I'm only 17. What else would I call someone who's five years older than I am?"

Fatty Han then interjected, "F*ck! If you called someone five years older than you 'an uncle', that means you'd be calling someone ten years older as 'gramps'!"

Drizzler's expression began to change into a 'murderous when provoked' look, "Hey Fatty, what're you trying to say? Do you think you could take advantage of me since I'm only 17?"

Fearful, Fatty Han immediately tried to change the subject, "Ahahha... nice weather we're having today!"

Time flew past as they all gathered. Zhang Yang brought them to complete the dungeon pre-requisite quest, which was fairly simple. All they needed to do was to kill a bunch of monsters, find the NPC near the dungeon entrance and gain access to the lair.

To save time, the party rented mounts from the Gryphon Keeper and flew to the White Shine Forest. This was one of the many transport services in the game that helped players who were mount-less to reach their destination in a much shorter time, instead of having to spend more time running over.

"Flying in the air is awesome!" Drizzler stretched out her arms to feel the air. "It feels like I'm a Sword Shaman! Whoosh! Thousand Mile Soaring Blade! Sigh... It would be nice if this game could change into the Xian Xia style, then we could all learn the Sword's way and fly on our own!"

Zhang Yang giggled. "This is an international gaming community! They won't change the game that way since it's a little too Eastern! It's not

suitable for the international market!”

“Tch, what a waste! They westernized the game just to earn profits! Cunning bastards!”

“Alright, alright. Let’s get going. Snow Spite City is just through the forest!”

Zhang Yang went ahead to clear a path for the party through the forest. Once they were out, they saw human-like structures in front of them. The city was only a short distance away. In there, they saw all kinds of elemental spirits wandering around the city. What was once a human city became a paradise for the Fire, Water, Wind, and Earth elementals.

Zhang Yang flipped through the quest description and notified the team, “Guys, we need to take out ten of each elemental spirits to complete the quest!”

“Go! Go! Go!”

Everyone in the party had overpowered equipment against the monsters. Killing them and completing the quest was a breeze. They soon arrived at the dungeon entrance.

Marzerway’s Lair was situated in this abandoned man-made palace in Snow Sprite City. There were three sub-dungeons namely Front Wing, Mid Wing and the Main Wing and the palace was the entrance to the dungeon. The Front and Mid Wing had two bosses each while the Main Wing held Marzerway, a 20 player party-fight boss.

“Eh?” Zhang Yang and his party were surprised to see that they were not alone there. In fact, there were 30 players; six parties with five players each. They were all from different guilds, namely The Dominators, Sky High, and Crimson Rage. Every one of them had reached Level 20! They were all technically qualified to enlist themselves in the Level Ranking Board, but none of them did it and Zhang Yang understood their decision. They were furiously competing with each other and neither one of them wanted to expose their true strength. Even though they gave up their pride, they never gave up their determination. In the end, they all fought hard and leveled up, arriving at this Level 20 dungeon entrance at the

same time as the others.

Noticing Zhang Yang's party walking towards them, they were taken aback. How could anyone else be able or even try to raid this dungeon?!

Humbly Gentleman of The Dominators scanned the party and saw that Zhang Yang's name was hidden. "You are Zhan Yu, I presume?" Such keen eyes, as expected of a guild master! Zhang Yang could only give a light smile.

"Are you all going to raid that dungeon?"

"IT'S YOU!" Zhang Yang heard a loud voice that sounded like someone screamed through their teeth. There came a beautiful woman with arms on her waist and bosoms big enough to attract any eyes. Right, she was the woman I exchanged my [Refined Iron Ore] with regular [Iron Ore]. Her name was Thorny Rose.

"Oh, hi!"

"You sneaky bastard! I was doomed because of you!" Thorny Rose's face was flushed with crimson rage. Fatty Han, noticing her anger, quickly interjected.

"Excuse me, young maiden. Has this little brat wronged you? Did he knock you up and refused to claim responsibility?! Damn you, Little Yang! How could you do this?! How could you just use this young girl and discard her like that?! Urgh, I'm so jealous!"

With just that, the atmosphere suddenly became a lot heavier. Everyone began to exchange looks towards Zhang Yang and Thorny Rose. They looked like they knew what was going on in their mind.

"You dirty uncle! I'm 100% certain now that you're a big horny pervert!" Drizzler exclaimed as she shared the same thoughts as others. Thorny Rose tried to explain otherwise.

"N-no! It's not that! This sly fox cheated me over 100 [Iron Ore]! He caused Mei Mei to be late for more than half a day to submit her quest!"

So that was the truth! With that revealed, the crowd began to lose their

interest. It seemed that the exciting lie was more entertaining than the boring truth.

“Rose! Stop fooling around!”

A woman walked over, carrying with her a sense of dignified nobility, calming the raging Thorny Rose. She then took her time to observe Zhang Yang. “I’ve heard of your name. I’d never thought that today would be the day I finally met the famous Zhan Yu, the legendary Guardian. It’s an honor!”

Crimson Rage’s guild master; Snow Seeker. In the future, she would be ranked fourth in China Server’s top ten Spellcasters. She would also be the player representative for the “Red” party, an S-class competition team. Zhang Yang would not dare to ignore someone like her.

“No, guild master Snow, the honor is mine! I, too, have heard of your noble name! Luck truly is on my side!”

“Enough of these fake words! We’ve all gathered here today to fight for that ‘First Clear’ achievement! Stop making those welcoming faces as if they were your own!”

Cold words, coming from the mouth of Sky Shaman, the guild master of Sky High. Snow Seeker averted her gaze and smiled warmly.

“We, the Crimson Rage are all just maidens. We do not have such wildly ambitions. In fact, we’re just here to try on the Hard Mode!” Nobody believed her. They knew her words were as fake as the nature in-game.

Humbly was in his own sea of thoughts when he suddenly voiced out, “How about we have a bet? To see who would be the first to claim two of the ‘First Clear’ achievement for Hardcore Mode?” Sky Shaman felt confident about winning the challenge.

“Haha! A challenge invites progress! Well said! How about it, guild master Snow, Zhan Yu? Let’s compete!”

Snow Seeker only lightly smiled as she replied, “We would always welcome a clean and fair fight. I only fear that someone might not obey the rules of the game and uses some underhanded tactic to win the bet!”

Hearing her words, Humbly Gentleman and Sky Shaman's smiles faded a little.

Zhang Yang could not help but wonder. What happened between those three guilds that left them having a grudge against each other? After thinking about it again, he left it alone as it was none of his business.

"If we participated, what would get out of it?" Zhang Yang inquired.

Sky Shaman, with words full of confidence, gave a hefty suggested reward. "Haha! Everyone will bet on 10,000 gold pieces! The loser will have to pay 10,000 gold pieces each to the winner! Two dungeons, two rounds. How about it?"

Snow Seeker expressed her objection to the idea, "I've said it before, Crimson Rage would only take on Hard Mode. Consider us forfeiting the bet! We will now take our leave and start on the dungeon. We'll be going now, then!"

Snow Seeker waved goodbye and led the party into the dungeon. No one outside the party would know the mode of the dungeon that they were raiding, but everyone knew this: the pre-requisite quest must be completed to gain access to the Front and Middle Wing. Parties must raid both to be able to enter the Main Wing, and the requirement did not specify what mode they would choose.

"Gentleman, Zhan Yu! How about it? Shall we place our bets?"

"Yes!"

Humbly Gentleman and Sky Shaman stared at each other, emitting a strong enmity between the two. This was how the two guilds treated each other; with a strong sense of hostility. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, laughed out loud. "Well, I'll just go on and follow Gentleman! It's a 'yes' from me as well!"

"Alright! Now that's what we're talking about!" Sky Shaman then clapped his hands to get his team's attention. "Are you listening, brothers? We're competing with Zhan Yu and The Dominators, to fight for the 'First Clear' achievement! What do you guys think? Could we lose to them?"

“Hell no!” The players from Sky High roared out in unison, and their morale was instantly boosted.

“So, let’s go!” Sky Shaman waved his arm, leading his army to disappear into the dungeon.

“Well then, I’d better be going now!” Humbly Gentleman winked at Zhang Yang. “Brother Zhan Yu, after today, let’s find some time together to chat! I’ll take my leave now then!” And with that, The Dominators disappeared into the dungeon too.

“Guys, we’d better quickly complete the quest now and enter the dungeon, or we’d have to put out 10,000 gold pieces!”

Drizzler shamelessly responded, “Hmph! That’s what you have decided, not us! If you lose, you’d better pay them from your own pocket. But if we win, we must share the booty!”

“You little brat! Is money the only thing on your mind?”

“Hehehe!”

Chapter 50: Strength of the Minion

The quest submission NPC was an Elf Thief, hidden in the shadows at the dungeon entrance. She's barely noticeable even if you stood beside her! One by one, the party members submitted their quests, and the NPC finally gave responses.

"Heroes of the Union! Behold the sight! Those devil-succumbed Spellcasters! Look at what they did to this place! Snow Sprite City was once a marvelous and beautiful city; but the wicked Dark Magicians left this place devastated! Now, he sits on the throne in the center of the Main Wing! You must save this city! You must destroy him!"

"But beware, adventurers. If you want to defeat Marzerway himself, you must first defeat four of his underlings and get past the Front Wing and Middle Wing! Heed my warning! These four underlings were created by Marzerway himself through the use of Dark Arts, made from the essences of the elementals! These elementals are not to be treated lightly!"

'Ding! You have received a quest from Ranger Xue Wei: Get Rid of the Claws. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang accepted the quest.

[Get Rid of the Claws] (Quest Difficulty: A)

Quest description: For the Union! Brave adventures, conquer the Front Wing and Middle Wing to make a path to the Main Wing! Kill Marzerway and save the Snow Sprite City!

Progress:

Water Spirit Wattland 0/1 Earth Spirit Oz 0/1 Fire Spirit Farr 0/1 Air Spirit Ains 0/1

Quest Reward: Access to the Main Wing, Marzerway's Lair entrance qualification.

Zhang Yang set the difficulty to Hardcore and commanded the party, "So let's go!"

Everyone followed and stood before the castle door. The courtyard was in ruins and everything else was either old or destroyed which caused the scenery to be extremely dull and gloomy. Not too far away, two water spirits were patrolling the area. Their transparent and liquefied figures flowed with a kind of liquid, wielding a shield on their left and a spear on the right.

“Little Yang, why didn’t we start from Normal Mode?”

“Fatty, Normal Mode would only drop Level 10 Black-Steel equipment while Hard Mode gives Level 20 Black-Steel equipment. That’s almost on the same level as Level 10 Green-Copper equipment, which is what most of us are wearing now. It’d be meaningless to even start with Hard Mode!”

“Alright then, let’s get things going!” Drizzler took out her spear and entered her battle stance.

“Hold up! Let me explain before you get us all wiped out!”

From the bottom of his heart, Zhang Yang was deeply worried that this dumb and childish brat would just charge straight on without thinking.

“Killing is pretty straightforward. The main problem is after the monster is dead, a debuff will be casted on every nearby player. If two players get the debuff near to each other, it will cause a 30-meter explosion that deals 2,500 damage to every player in the blast radius!” Zhang Yang then pointed at Drizzler.

“That is why when you see the monster’s HP almost gone, run as far away as possible! The two hunters must also stow away their pets!”

“Yeah, yeah. I get it. You’re not even that old and you’re already lecturing like an old gramp!” Drizzler looked like she had had enough.

“Fine, let’s get going then!” Ignoring her, Zhang Yang waved his hands, signaling the team to strike. He used [charge] on one of the elemental spirits and marked it with a star tag.

“Hit the tagged monster!”

[Demonized Water Spirit] (Elite)

Level: 20

HP: 10,000

The blood-boiling Drizzler let loose a battle cry and used [charge] to dash forward. With the spear in her hand, she caused a significant amount of damage. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han did not hold back either and drew their bows to attack.

90%, 80%...

The team's equipment was decent enough to contribute to the damage pool. The star-marked monster was quickly defeated.

"Little brat! Withdraw now!" Zhang Yang screamed at the top of his lungs as he saw the monster was about to drop. Drizzler on the other hand, did not notice his screams and continued slashing wildly.

'Ding! Demonized Water Spirit has casted [Mark of Doom] on death!'

'Ding! Player Zhan Yu has the effect of [Mark of Doom]!'

'Ding! Player Drizzler has the effect of [Mark of Doom]!'

Zhang Yang and Drizzler's bodies began to glow in a dark light and then...

'-2500!'

'-2500!'

'-2500!'

'-2500!'

'-2500!'

The entire team was killed.

"You little brat! What did I tell you in the beginning?!"

At the reviving point, a goddess was humming a song in an unknown language, giving a holy-like celestial kind of aura. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang gave out a deadly and furious aura, staring irritably at Drizzler.

"I didn't understand a thing you said that that time!" Drizzler tried to

explain her mistake while giving an innocent face.

“Huh?!” Zhang Yang narrowed his eyes, emitting more killing intent.

“Alright, alright! I got all worked up there. I forgot all about it then!” She shrugged it off as if nothing happened. Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

“Just... just pay attention next time, alright?” Not even he could continue to be mad a cute girl like her.

Shuh!

Five more souls appeared at the revive point and from their name tags, they were all from The Dominators. Humbly Gentleman was a little surprised when he noticed them as well.

The local area channel appeared, “Gah! You guys were wiped out too!”

In death, players were blocked from using “Talk”; no one could hear you speak. Players could only use text and words to chat in the party, guild, and local channel.

Before Zhang Yang could even reply, five more souls appeared. It was the other 5-man party from The Dominators. Not long after, two of the 5-man parties from Sky High arrived as well.

“Haha! Everyone was killed off at the first minion!” Fatty Han typed in the local channel.

Scanning the surrounding to see who was there, Sky Shaman came to the conclusion, “Not everyone.”

“Crimson Rage!”

“Did they really just fight in Hard Mode?” Humbly Gentleman thought to himself, eyebrows frowning with his thoughts. Minions in the Hard Mode were surely as fatal as the ones in Hardcore Mode that could kill you off with just a blast.

“Go on! Don’t stop now!” Zhang Yang cried out in the party channel and revived at his body.

As they entered the dungeon with health recovery snacks in their mouth,

they noticed that the number of patrolling Water Spirits did not reduce. Being able to defeat only one before they died, the other Water Spirit respawned when the surviving one left its battle state.

“Remember what I told you, little dipsh*t! If you cause us to die again, prepare for some spanking!” Zhang Yang said as he gritted his teeth.

“Hmph!” Drizzler turned her head away from Zhang Yang, pouting her lips.

“I’m going in!” Zhang Yang used [charge] to rush into the monster’s range and after a few attacks, the monsters were defeated. Even though little Drizzler was naughty and playful, she would never pull out at a fight.

“Next one!” The party moved on, clearing waves of minions until they arrived at a small shack with three water elementals inside.

“The f*ck are we going there for? The road is on the other way!” Drizzler pointed to the road on their left.

Zhang Yang giggled. “There’s a treasure chest in here, dummy!”

Drizzler and Little Snow’s eyes glinted simultaneously. “Treasure chest?!”

Zhang Yang first used [charge] towards one of the elementals, followed by a normal attack and a [horizontal sweep]. Now that he had a new skill [thunder strike], his ability to lock in the monster’s aggro was at a whole new level. Zhang Yang quickly activated all his skills and firmly kept the aggro on him.

Under the entire team’s firepower, the monsters were taken down flawlessly. Like a lightning bolt, Drizzler and Little Snow occupied each corner of the treasure chest, caressing it’s golden frames like a new born baby.

“Ah... this sensation! Truly exciting!”

“Hmm... this is marvelous indeed!”

The two ladies were already in their delusional world; misers at their best.

“Alright! Alright! Let go of the chest and open it! Don’t forget, we’re here to claim the ‘First Clear’ achievement!”

Zhang Yang could not hold in his anger anymore; he could no longer endure facing these money-crazed ladies along with those stupid faces they make every time a treasure chest appeared. After reminding them for god knows how long, they decided to play scissor-paper-stone to determine who opens the chest.

Being the winner, Little Snow reached out her hand to open it.

[Tight Leather Jacket] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +24

Strength: +4

Dexterity: +12

Level requirement: 20

“Give it to Hundred Shots. I have full Green-Copper equipment on me. Let him upgrade his own!” Fatty Han humbly rejected the roll and offered them to Hundred Shots. He had only been through two runs of Hardcore Mode of the Bangar Crypt; surely his equipment could not be on par yet with Fatty Han’s. Hundred Shots did not hold back, he knew that words were just mere words; actions spoke louder.

Little Snow touched the chest again and the second item popped out.

[Smithing Recipe: Level 2 Whetstone] (Smithing Recipe)

Use: Teach you to craft Level 2 Whetstone.

Requirement: Amateur Smithing.

“Good hands!” Zhang Yang smiled. This recipe was one of the methods to raise one’s Smithing level from Amateur to Advance. The recipe was not at all rare; they were in fact easy to farm for.

Zhang Yang rolled for 35 points.

Drizzler rolled for 87 points.

“Haha! It’s mine!” Drizzler smiled from ear to ear. She turned her gaze to Zhang Yang, “Sneaky uncle, if you promise not to treat me so bad, I’ll give you the recipe!”

“Tch! Who would want it!” Zhang Yang shook his head to reject her offer. He knew that the recipe’s drop rate was very high, and could be found in abundance in the auction house at an extremely low price in fact! Why would he need to answer her request?

“Hmph!” Drizzler held her chest up and patted the recipe to learn it.

“Continue on!”

Zhang Yang commanded and the team complied. As they moved further into the dungeon, they arrived at an entrance to a palace. Standing guard outside were two water elemental spirits, and they looked much bigger than the ones they fought before. These spirits had the same transparent body, but were holding thick and rough swords.

[Water Spirit Guardian] (Elite)

Level: 20

HP: 10,000

“These two monsters have very high attack power; not to mention they can clear their aggro timely. When that happens, they will use [charge] towards a ranged player and unleash a skill similar to [tornado cleave]. It’s a much stronger skill, and it could last longer than [tornado cleave]. Once the battle starts, please maintain a certain distance from one another. Don’t be too close to the next player or you’ll die when [tornado cleave] strikes.” Everyone listened closely; their eyes were set on Zhang Yang firmly.

“Here I go!”

Zhang Yang used [charge] to stun one of the elementals and initiated his attack on the other.

‘-352!’

With one of them stunned, the other began to hurl the sword in its hand

towards Zhang Yang.

‘[block]!’

‘-91!’ [block] reflected damage.

‘-197!’ [shield bash].

‘-675!’

‘-701!’ [horizontal sweep].

The stunned monster finally recovered and began attacking Zhang Yang as well.

‘-91!’

‘-91!’ [thunder strike].

‘Ding! Water Spirit Guardian has used [charge]!’

One of the monsters aimed the [charge] on Hundred Shots, stunning him. It then flipped over his sword and began to spin in circles.

‘Ding! Water Spirit Guardian has used [Dance of the Blade], causing 300 damage to all nearby targets. Lasts for 5 seconds!’

Zhang Yang quickly directed the team, “Everyone! Get away from that monster!” But what luck, the other monster used [charge] and targeted Hundred Shots as well.

‘Ding! Water Spirit Guardian has used [Dance of the Blade], causing 300 damage to all nearby targets. Lasts for 5 seconds!’

With two monsters using their strong AoE skills together, Hundred Shots took a lot of damage.

‘-285!’ and ‘-285!’ kept floating across his head. He was not in time to escape, and Little Snow could not heal his HP quick enough.

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

Zhang Yang would not dare to charge ahead. Once that skill has been activated, it will damage its surrounding area for five seconds. [block] could only nullify one instance of attack and all other remaining attacks

depend on his defense. Even if he did have 1,720 HP, he could not hold off the two monsters' furious attack together!

The skill's duration ended and the monster returned to their original position to resume their attack on Zhang Yang.

Chapter 51: Water Spirit Wattland

“Holy crap! That’s a sick skill! Why isn’t the Berserker’s [tornado cleave] that awesome?!” In her tone of voice, there was a hint of both pity and excitement.

“Alright! Alright! Save your breath for later. Press on the attack, or it will unleash another tornado and kill us all!”

Zhang Yang’s unreserved manner of speech ticked Drizzler off, and she returned his scorn with her own insult.

“Tch! Zhan Yu, if you’re going to continue being humorless, I’d pity whoever that’s going to be your girlfriend! She’d be bored as hell!”

During their quarrels, one of the guardians was defeated and turned into a pillar of light, disappearing into the air. The party changed their target to the remaining guardian and bombarded it with all their damaging skills.

After some time, the Water Spirit turned and used [charge] on Little Snow, immediately casting [Dance of the Blade]. She quickly healed herself with a bottle of red potion along with a healing spell. Fortunately, it was only one monster, as her healing could keep up with the damage loss to maintain her HP and surviving the attack. The party picked up the pace and attacked furiously. The last guardian fell soon after.

“Little Snow, revive Hundred Shots. I’ll take this time to explain the next battle strategy.”

Zhang Yang opened the palace door, and standing right at the center of the room was a gigantic Water Spirit. Having the height of almost half the room, the giant stood almost 10 meters tall.

[Water Spirit Wattland] (Green-Copper)

Level: 21

HP: 126K

“This boss is a Spellcaster class and its main attack is [water arrow]. It will only cast this skill on the player with the highest aggro value. There’s

a three-second unbreakable channel duration which will then strike an 800 damage value! The person that's going to take this skill head on is me. After my passive 20% damage reduction, I would take about 640 damage. It's still quite fatal so I need Little Snow to focus your healing solely on me!"

Little Snow nodded in all seriousness. She knew at this time, he was not in the mood for jokes and she had to take this fight seriously too.

"His second skill is [ice ring], and it's randomly casted on any player. Once activated, an icy ring will form around a player and within 3 seconds, it will form an orb around you, causing 1,000 frost damage. Anyone that starts to notice an ice ring forming around them, you must run out of the range or you'll receive a fatal attack."

Almost everyone in the party had a specific attribute allocation style; Fatty Han being one of the most extreme ones did not allocate a single AP on Vitality before Level 10. Only after that level did he allocate his AP as such: 2 on Vitality, 1 on Strength, and 1 on Dexterity. His HP was the lowest in the team, with only a little over 1,000 HP. Little Snow and Drizzler always had 2 AP allocated on Vitality at every level gained, so their HP were around 1,200. Hundred Shots had the highest among them, having 3 AP assigned to Vitality at each level, gaining a strong HP of 1,400.

Fatty Han jokingly gestured, "Little Yang, wht didn't you tell me to assign any AP on Vitality when I first joined in? Look at my HP now! It's so low that I feel I could get killed in a single hit!"

Zhang Yang replied, "Tch! Whoever gets hit by the [ice ring] is a dumb piggy! As for the third skill..."

Fatty Han interrupted, "What the f*ck! Just how many skills does this boss have?!"

Zhang Yang could only shake his head, disappointed at his wasted anger.

"Three skills, and you think that's many? Wait till you encounter Marzerway and that's when you know the true definition of 'many skills'. Imagine all the skills of his underlings, adding up with his own skills. I'm

pretty sure you'd be on cloud 9 then!"

Fatty Han was left stunned.

"AS FOR the third skill..." Zhang Yang repeated a little louder, "it's called [hail storm]. It has a three-second casting delay and once casted, it causes 200 damage to all targets for 10 seconds. The skill's interruptible so it can be stopped!" Zhang Yang turned to look at Hundred Shots and Fatty Han, "Fatty, Hundred Shots, you've learned [silencing shot], no?"

They exchange looks and nodded. "Yeah."

"The skills [hail storm] has about 20 seconds cooldown time while [silencing shot] has 30, which is why we need not just one but two Hunters to successfully cancel out the boss' skill. Remember guys, the first [hail storm] interruption must be done by Fatty Han, and the second by Hundred Shots. Just repeat the cycle, got it? The next time the boss uses [hail storm], one of you use [silencing shot]. Easy right?"

They looked at each other and then back to Zhang Yang again.

"You guys are the ones that determine whether or not we survive this round. If any of you missed the chance to [silence] the boss, all of us would die in just one [hail storm]." There was a threatening tone in Zhang Yang and Fatty Han clearly felt it.

"It seems easy when you explained it earlier but once you said our lives are depending on us, it's making me feel a little nervous." Fatty Han turned to face Zhang Yang, hoping to be consoled but what he saw was a middle finger pointed directly to his face.

"If there's anything else you guys want to ask, voice it out now!"

"Pretty sure it's easy."

"Let's try it once!"

"Okay! That's the spirit! The boss is easy indeed. As long as you can evade well and the two Hunters can [silence] just right, we'll be safe and sound."

"Easy for you to say." Fatty Han rolled his eyes.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword. “Here I go! Everyone get inside, because the moment I start the battle, the door is going to close. Anyone left outside can do nothing but wait!”

Everyone else in the party complied and followed him in.

“Ready? Here I go!”

[charge]!

‘-327!’ Normal Attack.

The stun effect was weak against Wattland. Being a Level 20 boss gave it a certain degree of resistance towards crowd control effects. In just one second, it recovered from the stun and started to make a weird noise.

“Haha! Here comes a bunch of beings to offer their lives! Wattland will freeze you all!”

The giant targeted Zhang Yang and began to cast [water arrow], and a progress bar appeared on its head.

‘-640!’

‘+392!’

In almost a split-second gap, a green healing text appeared right after the red damage text popped out. As expected of Little Snow, her healing ability was truly remarkable.

This b*tch actually has some decent healing capabilities. Just when she saw the boss’ attack progress bar reaching one-third of the way, she also started to chant her own healing spell. Two seconds later, Little Snow’s healing spell and the boss’ [water arrow] went off at the same time.

Little Snow immediately casted another [regeneration] on Zhang Yang. Even though the recovery rate was slower, the overall healing amount over 15 seconds was 200% of her magic attack, which was better than having no healing at all!

If it were to be another healer, their magic attack would be at most around 200 with all the Green-Copper Level 10 equipment, but Little Snow was different. With only a single Level 20 Green-Copper magic staff,

her magic attack was already at 180. Adding that to her other Level 20 Green-Copper equipment, her Magic attack totaled to 300. That was the major difference between other healers and her!

Even with such powerful attributes, Little Snow would still need to use all of her strength to keep up with Zhang Yang. That was the power difference of a Hardcore difficulty boss! If you wanted to take it easy, better to just raid the Normal Mode. With Black-Steel equipment and players not making silly mistakes, it was a sure fire win in the dungeon. Hardcore Mode is not some playtime thing where you could just try out for the fun of it; it was do or die! Fight your hardest to win!

‘Ding! Water Spirit Wattland used [ice ring]!’

Zhang Yang quickly turned around to warn the team, “Guys! Look down and check at your feet! Continue to attack if it’s safe and don’t get any unnecessary damage that burdens our healer!”

The boss chose to cast the skill on Hundred Shots. An icy ring formed around him, forming a thick layer of ice and it got thicker overtime. He quickly evaded the ring and got out flawlessly. He was and will be the man called the Dragon Hunter. Even though most of his glory would be because of the pet dragon that he would get in the future, Hundred Shots still had a trick or two up his sleeves. He used to follow Zhang Yang into Hardcore Mode and experienced Hardcore boss fights; a simple run and dodge was nothing to him.

The boss’ attacks were becoming quite a problem. Little Snow drastically used up her MP to make sure Zhang Yang survives. Thankfully, the boss stopped after a series of attacks to cast another skill.

‘Ding! Water Spirit Wattland used [hail storm]!’

“Fatty! [silencing shot]! Now!”

“On it!”

Fatty Han drew his bow and fired a dark-green arrow. As it landed on the boss, a ‘-224’ appeared, simultaneously cancelling the boss’ spell cast.

“That’s it, guys! Keep this up! Keep it going!” Zhang Yang tried to raise

the party's morale.

As the battle raged on with many of the boss' skills casted, none of the party members were once hit by [ice ring] as they managed to evade swiftly. Even the silencing cycle was performed errorless against [hail storm].

90%, 80%... all the way to 20%, the boss' HP drained off quickly.

'Ding! Water Spirit Wattland used [hail storm]!'

"Fatty!"

Zhang Yang and he had been battling for more than 10 years now, and their communication was and always has been excellent. With just a call, Fatty Han fired a [silencing arrow].

"Missed!"

"F*CK!" Zhang Yang suddenly cursed out; everyone's face changed instantly.

After three seconds, arrow-like icicles fell from the sky. There was no place for them to hide.

'-200!'

'-200!'

'-200!'

Even after Little Snow trying her best to heal everyone with all her might, she could not replace the HP loss everyone suffered in time.

'Ding! Player Slim and Handsome has died!'

'Ding! Player Little Snow has died!'

'Ding! Player Drizzler has died!'

'Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!'

'Ding! Player Zhan Yun has died!'

It was another party wipe out once more.

The five of them stood together at the revive point.

“!@# \$! What luck! I missed?! I actually missed!”

Any physical attacks had a 1% chance to miss the target. This value could not be modified or changed by any equipment or the player's level. How would you describe a skill like [silencing shot] that required 30 seconds to cooldown to miss a hit? The only answer would be just plain luck, which he did not have. Sometimes in life, all you needed was not the strength to carry on, but the luck that comes along the way.

“It's fine, guys! Now everyone knows how to fight ths boss! We can defeat it in the next round! Think of this as practice!” Zhang Yang tried to cheer up the team.

“Okay!”

‘Shuh!’

Another five souls appeared at the revive point; they were members from Sky high, and they were the elite members that were led personally by Sky Shaman.

“Haha, it's you again, Zhan Yu!”

“It's alright, guys! It's alright. Come, let us all revive again!”

Shy Shaman asked Zhang yang, “Hey, where did you guys die at?”

“At the two guardians! Holy crap, their attacks are too strong! They killed us all in one clean swipe!”

Sky Shaman relaxed a little. He felt tense before thinking that Zhang Yang could have overtaken them, but now he knew that Zhang Yang was on the same progress as they were.

“Hah, you guys are strong! We haven't even reached there yet!” Sky Shaman then quickly revived and continued his fight.

“This bastard!” Zhang Yang shook his head in anger. So you think you could trick us? Well, guess what, we've also tricked you!

“Zhan Yu! Hurry and revive now! I'm waiting to open the corpse!”

All little Drizzler was here for was to get the money. She only cared

about money, and that was the only thing she loved.

Chapter 52: Earth Spirit Oz

Zhang Yang's party revived one by one. Luck was not something you can control. There's really nothing you can do about if something went bad and luck did not favor you.

On their second run, Hundred Shots' first [silencing shot] was already a miss, leading the team to death once more.

"What the f*ck is going on!? I swear that this is just an easy boss, but how did we get ourselves in this freaking shitty situation!?"

"Fatty, I think it's your karma biting back at you. This is probably a payback for peeping at your neighbor's little sister." Zhang Yang joked.

"Go to hell little Yang! I'm a true gentleman! Why would I try to peek under a girl's skirt?" Fatty Han said a honest face.

"Big Bro! Zhan Yu didn't say anything about peeking under a skirt. Did you just dig your own grave?" Drizzler giggled away happily.

Zhang Yang frowned, suddenly feeling envious of Fatty Han. "Why did you address him as Big Bro and I'm the uncle?!"

"Little Yang, you're the type that gets old quickly. Don't be jealous of Fatty Han's eternal youth!" Fatty Han reached out his hand to pat Zhang Yang's shoulder but his hands just went through his shoulder like air; they are still in the soul state.

"Handsome, my ass!"

The five of them revived again and proceeded towards the Water Spirit Wattland. "I'm pretty sure that all of us are used to the strategy by now. Winning or losing depends on luck now!"

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and pointed it to the air. "Let's go!"

90%, the first [hail storm] was disrupted by Fatty Han.

80%, the second [hail storm] was disrupted by Hundred Shots.

70%....

60%...

50%...

There was no “Miss” this time while the boss’ HP dramatically dropped. In a while after, Wattland’s HP had almost reach its red zone.

7%!

“Don’t let your guard down! What needs to be disrupted must be disrupted. What needs to be evaded must be evaded! Don’t get us all killed at 1%!” Zhang Yang warned. He was not looking forward to repeating the process all over again.

“Almost there! Ahhh! I can see it. The glowing luster of gold pieces! Ahhh!! Almost there!” Drizzler’s strange feminine cries filled the atmosphere, and her attacks got faster and wilder in the heat of the moment.

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

And the boss finally fell.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Water Spirit Wattland. Obtaining 25,250 Experience points (50 points party bonus)!’

“Aww yes! We are the best! YEAH!” Drizzler was jumping about in joy, much like a little girl who had just won her first teddy bear in a circus; the rest of the party members just smiled happily.

Zhang Yang smiled with satisfaction. He was pleased to see the team working hard together, achieving victory hand in hand. His vision of seeing the team together became clearer.

Zhang Yang then clapped his hand to get their attention. “Alright, guys! It’s time to open the corpse!”

“Oh! I wanna touch it! I wanna touch it!”

“No! I want to do it! Let me do it!”

Fatty Han knees felt weak as he heard the cousins fighting over the right to open the corpse.

“A-Ah girls? Stop fighting. Come, touch me! I’m pretty nice to rub around. I assure you that you’ll be extremely satisfied after a session with me!”

“F*ck off!”

Same rule, same game, and Little Snow won another round of rock-paper-scissors. Drizzler looked sadly at her fist making the shape of a rock and sighed.

“How could I always lose at this game?”

“That’s because you’re a big idiot!” Zhang Yang sighed. He could not believe that she did not realize her own mistake.

Drizzler got up with her hands on her waist, angrily speaking with her cheek bursting with anger. “Where did I go wrong?!”

“This game only needs one of your hands to play. Your playing hand was behind you but their other hand was out in front. I don’t know why your other hand would have the same gesture. That’s why everyone could see through your act. Even a dummy could know what you’re playing next in scissors-paper-stone! And if they can’t see through you, they’re as dumb as you are!” Zhang Yang explained in his stoic face, holding back his urge to laugh out loud.

“Kyaaa!!!!” No wonder Drizzler could never win her elder cousin sister in this game! No, she never stood a chance because of this habit of hers!

“Han Yin Xue!! I’m cutting ties with you!” Drizzler screamed from the top of her lungs.

“Right, and this is the... hmm I can’t recall the times you’ve wanted to cut ties with me.” Little Snow replied her screams nonchalantly, ignoring her and reaching out for the corpse to open it. The others may not show it but they had been waiting for the equipment excitedly.

[Frost Crown] (Green-Copper, Metal Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +24

Strength: +12

Dexterity: +4

Level requirement: 20

“Hey, little brat. Let’s forget about the system roll and settle this with a game of rock-paper-scissors!”

“Sneaky little kid!” Drizzler rolled her eyes and quickly rolled for the equipment. Zhang Yang laughed and rolled for the item as well. He won with 84 points.

[Briskly Crown] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +20

Strength: +6

Dexterity: +14

Level requirement: 20

Fatty Han gave up the equipment humbly and offered them to Hundred Shots again.

‘Ding! You have distributed 10 silver pieces!’

As the body started to disappear, Fatty Han got upset, “That’s it? Two equipment only?”

“Uh, yeah. That’s about right. Getting two equipment in a 5-man dungeon is already considered quite good!” Zhang Yang nodded.

“And it’s all just hats! Tch! This boss sure has some weird hat collecting habits, huh.”

“This first boss would only drop helms and boots. We’re lucky enough to get all helms.” Zhang Yang explained. “Alright then. Let’s proceed to the

next boss and claim the “First Clear” achievement!”

“Let’s go!”

The team was filled with thirst for victory; everyone was eager to win the fight. Their morale could never have been higher.

After the first boss, the element changed from water to earth. The next enemy is a huge earth elemental with 7 to 8 smaller earth elementals around.

[Inflated Earth Elemental] (Elite)

Level: 21

HP: 50,000

[Deflated Earth Elemental] (Normal)

Level: 20

HP: 1,000

“Sigh. These smaller minions are quite troublesome!” Zhang Yang frowned as he rubbed his forehead. He missed the days where he could just kill off skill-less minions in Bangar Crypt.

“It’s pointless to kill the smaller ones. As long as the big one is still alive, it will quickly re-spawn the dead minions! Still, we can’t drag the battle too long or else the big one will command the small ones to self-destruct. Each of those pesky little minions could cause 200 damage per explosion. You’ll actually get blasted and literally be at cloud 9!”

“So...we are supposed to fully focus on the big one before it commands the small ones to explode at us?”

“Understood?”

“Yeah!”

“Let’s start!”

Shush! Zhang Yang rushed over with [charge] along with Drizzler doing the same.

With Zhang Yang there to pull in the minions, the others did not have to worry about aggro problems; they just focused their attack on the elite monster. With such strong focus fire, it was defeated fairly fast. The party then used all their AoE skills to clear of rest of the surviving minions.

Hunter's [barrage] and Berserker's [tornado cleave] were AoE skills, and they were much stronger than a Guardian's [thunder strike]! But neither one of those skills could be compared to Zhang Yang's 200% damage [horizontal sweep]! Stacked with the powerful Grey-Silver sword and the [eagle eye] skill, the final damage was truly remarkable!

"Zhan Yu, I want your [horizontal sweep]!" Drizzler was feeling envious.

"No way!"

Drizzler tried to tempt him with something else to make him yield, "But I can give you Little Snow's address!"

Fatty Han's ear's suddenly twitched. Little Snow may not have the best beauty complexion but that ridiculous body of a succubus was truly something worth. Furthermore, the in-game appearance and real-life appearance are not necessarily the same. There was still a chance that this lady might look like a goddess in reality!

"You little brat! You must be sick of living for so long now! Are you so eager to die?" Little Snow raised her fist.

"Don't worry, Drizzler! I'm here to protect you!" Fatty Han stood out with his chest up high. "Quickly! Reveal her address!"

"So what if she told you. China is such a big place! Can you really find it out?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Tch! Who knows? We might be in the same city!"

"We're living in Zhou Su City. How about you?" Drizzle asked.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han froze at the same time. "What a coincidence! We're also living in Zhou Su City!" Zhang Yang flinched. Zhang Yang did have some suspicion that they were living in the same city before.

"Ah! This is destiny! This is fate!" Fatty Han began to feel extremely

grateful.

Drizzle giggled happily. She blinked her big eyes and said, “Little Snow is living at No.105, Shi Zi Street! Got it?”

Fatty Han began to chant the address like a mantra, fearing of forgetting the address later on.

Zhang Yang shook his head. If memory served him right, No.105, Shi Zi Street was the police station! Thinking of it, he recalled the policewoman he met earlier that morning! The soft and supple sensation of those melons. They were surely ranked number one if he compared them with a previous encounter in his previous life!

Zhang Yang smiled evilly. The thought that he could Fatty Han’s face when he would discover the truth of that address made Zhang Yang refuse to let him know about the police station.

The party went onwards and after 20 minutes of fighting more small minions, they arrived at the entrance of the second boss.

[Earth Spirit Oz] (Green-Copper)

Level: 22

HP: 132k

There was a large brown-colored Earth Elemental; its size looked sturdy and enormous, being as high as 15 meters tall. Even without a visible weapon, the spirit’s own gigantic body gave off a certain kind of pressure.

“What’s the plan?” they all asked. They “knew” that Zhang Yang was a beta player!

Zhang Yang walked up confidently. Several days before this fight, he had been squeezing all of his brain juice to remember all of Marzerway’s skills and fight strategy, which was why he could casually explain everything as if he already knew it all.

“This boss is basically a physical attack type. His attacks are like a bulldozer; very strong and powerful, which means we’ll need to depend on Little Snow for this round as well!”

Little Snow turned to Zhang Yang and winked seductively. “In that case, I want some overtime pay!”

“Cousin! Would it kill you to just stop behaving like a slut?!”

“Heh heh heh. I’m used to it!” Little Snow then winked at Drizzler, sending a cold shudder all over her.

“This boss’ first skill is [open wound]. He will only cast this on the person with the highest aggro, which is me. If he casts this skill on anyone else, that would only mean that I died! This is a DoT attack, so I will lose 100 HP every second. The damage will not be affected by defense value. F*cking sh*t!”

As a Guardian, he absolutely hated skills that would ignore his defense attribute.

“The second skill is [smash]! This skill will also be cast on the person with the most aggro, which is again, me! [smash] itself does not do any damage but it stuns me for 2 seconds and casts a debuff, increasing his attack frequency by 100%! This skill cannot be blocked or evaded, which means I would have to take it head on! The most dangerous part is when I’m hit by it. I can’t voluntarily move to block any attack. The boss originally has a very fierce attack and I could get killed off any time!

Little Snow rolled her eyes glamorously and said, “Well then, I must ask for a raise!”

“Cousin, can you please be a little more lady-like?”

“And where am I not a lady?” Little Snow threw another wink. Her glamorous and show-off behavior made the other party members a little awkward to put up with.

Chapter 53: A Wasted Effort

“Sneaky b*itch.” Zhang Yang whispered to himself.

“The third boss’ skill is called [earth spear]. This skill will be casted on 3 random players. It will look like a muddy puddle that’s about 2 meters wide. In that puddle, you will have 50% movement speed reduction and also receive 150 damage per second. You must quickly move away from the puddle the moment it appears! The damage and slowing effect will not immediately take effect when it appears as there will be a 0.5 second delay before the effect kicks in! You must be quick and alert at all times!”

Zhang Yang took a breather, giving sometime for the party to absorb all the information.

“Lastly... and this one is the problematic one, is after every 15 seconds, the boss will gain 5% increased damage. This is a damage battle. The longer we drag this battle, the worse situation we will be in. Our healing powers will diminish over time and when the boss has grown to 150% or 200% increase in damage, it will be the end of us!”

“All in all, what you guys need to do is to avoid the [earth spear] and give it everything you got!”

“What a load of bull crap! You could have just said that last sentence to summarize everything!” Fatty Han scratched his head. “Man! All your talking makes my head hurt! What a waste of my brain cells trying to remember all of that junk!”

Zhang Yang laughed.

“If there isn’t any problem, we can just go ahead and start now! The “Firsts Clear” achievement is right in front of our eyes!”

“WOAH! Let’s go!”

The party marched into the boss’ chamber with big smiles on their faces. The fight started with Zhang Yang’s [charge].

To maximize damage output, Zhang Yang prioritized his attack using [Cripple Defense], adding 5 stacks to reduce 50% of the boss’ defense

value. Being a physical type, it naturally had a high defense value. Reducing 50% of his defense was equivalent to reducing 30 Defense attribute. 30 Defense value was not much but it was enough to help Hundred Shots and Fatty Han; classes that used Dexterity as their main attribute.

Zhang Yang had the passive [eagle eye] skill, along with 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense], ignoring a total of 100% defense. Zhang Yang's attack was directly attacking with 0 Defense damage reduction, it felt as if he was attacking a completely naked boss! This kind attack was significant.

The higher the player's level, there more skill that was available for them to use. The problem with having too many skill was the priority of it. To be able to use different kinds of skills in different kinds of situations was the key factor to differentiating a rare professional and a common casual. Both of those players could have the same equipment set and the same level, but they could not deal the same damage output. One would deal an extremely high damage while the other gives out a normal amount. This was the importance of prioritizing skills in situation.

Under Zhang Yang's guidance, Fatty Han formed his own attacking strategy and made obvious progress. Zhang Yang was not familiar with the Hunter class' skills and tactics even with his 5 years rebirth experience as he played the game as a Guardian previously. He could only teach Fatty Han the most common skill rotations to maximize his character potential.

Zhang Yang had his eyes on Drizzler, though. Drizzler was a battle-driven girl. She liked to fight and compared her damage with others. Because of that, she was willing to learn new tactics and skill rotations to further increase her damage output! The one that had made the most obvious improvement was Drizzler!

'Ding! Player Zhan Yu has the effect of [open wound]. Receiving 100 physical damage every second for 20 seconds!'

A debuff icon appeared on Zhang Yang's head. '-80!' red damage text popped repeatedly above him.

Before the skill was cast, Little Snow was having the time of her life,

healing slowly and leisurely. After the debuff appeared and Zhang Yang HP was slowly draining off, she began to frantically cast her [healing spell].

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu had received [smash]! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

Several stars could be seen above Zhang Yang’s head, and he could not control his body. He began to sway his body back and forward, head bobbing around like a drunkard.

‘-304!’

‘-312!’

‘-80!’

‘-309!’

‘-318!’

‘-80!’

Earth Spirit Oz was as in a frenzy. In just two seconds, Oz had attacked Zhang Yang with four consecutive strikes. With the damage [open wound] had caused, Zhang Yang HP was instantly robbed away by 1403 points! Luckily Zhang Yang swapped a new helm earlier, raising his already beefy HP to 18401 even then it was still not enough!

It was only after the attacks that Little Snow’s [higher healing] conjured, healing Zhang Yang with a ray of light.

‘+395’

Half a second later, [regeneration] also healed another ‘+120’, recovering almost half of Zhang Yang’s HP.

Having only half of his full HP, Zhang Yang had no time to catch his breath. The boss’ right fist was in front of him, flying right into his face! Zhang Yang dodged it but another left fist came flying just as quickly! His quick judgment concluded that he could evade that strike, so he quickly raised his shield and used [block]!”

Even though this boss had double physical attacks, it was still just as

agile as a thief. Each time Oz attacked with both fists, Zhang Yang could only physically dodge the right fist but used [block] against the other. He was not able to dodge both!

Little Snow was still not done with her healing. She quickly chanted a [higher healing] and after a '+387', Zhang Yang's HP was no longer in the danger zone!

"My god, this is tiring!"

The first few seconds after the battle started was already as exciting as it was. She felt like her heart and lungs were going to burst out of excitement!

"Xixi, who asked you to be a Priest!" Drizzler tried to provoke her cousin.

"Aiya. Only a Priest is suitable for a person like me." Little Snow purposely patted her overwhelming chest and winked at Drizzler. "F-L-A-T~"

Drizzler face was flushed with rage. "Han Yin Xue! Enough with my boobs!"

'Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gained [growth] effect (1 stack). All physical attacks are increased by 5%!

"Guys! There's always a time and place for everything, and we can't joke around right now. Don't be slacking on the attack and healing! Look, the boss had gained a buff! If I was in danger before, imagine how I would be when the boss stacks up his [growth]. I'd be ready to meet my maker soon!" Zhang Yang scolded.

'Ding! Earth Spirit Oz had used [earth spear]!

Zhang Yang quickly looked down to his feet to check, and a black gooish mud puddle appeared underneath. Zhang Yang hurriedly moved away from the circular area and shouted when he was safe from the skill.

"Everyone! Be careful! Check your ground!"

Shing! Shing! Shing!

The sound of clashing metal could be heard as 7 to 8 razor sharp stone

pillars pierced out from the muddy puddle. After a split second, the pillars retracted back into the puddle, and then re-appeared the next second.

Fatty Han tightened his butt, thinking something naughty is his mind.

“Hey, if I was actually pierced by these things in the ass, is it considered an*1 sex?”

“@#\$%! Go to hell!”

“Fatty Bro, you’re so perverted!”

“You seriously need some help.”

“Die, you sick son of a b*tch!”

When everyone was having fun laughing and scolding, the boss gained another buff, increasing its damage by 110%.

80%, 70%, 60%!

At the same time, the boss’ HP was dropping as well. After all, there were 3 strong attackers, with Zhang Yang having the stronger attacks!

40%!

‘Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gained [growth] effect (8 stack).). All physical attacks are increased by 40%!’

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu received [smash]! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

Again, Zhang Yang had stars circling around his head.

‘-423!’

‘-112!’

‘+120’

‘-432!’

‘-427!’

‘+398’”

‘-112!’

‘-431!’

Zhang Yang's heart jumped with the same feeling as riding a roller coaster. Luckily, Little Snow managed to slide in a [higher healing] and a [regeneration]. If it were not for those two skills, Zhang Yang would have already sent to the revive point.

"Phew!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief. He then dodged one of the boss's fist and used [block] on the other, giving enough time for Little Snow to chant another [higher healing].

"You know...You should get yourself a skill book called [holy shield]. That way, both you and I won't have to fear of getting a heart attack every time we fight a boss of this caliber!"

[Holy Shield]: Cast a magic shield that will absorb damage equal to the caster's 200% magic damage. Last for 30 seconds. Cooldown time: 15 seconds. Instant casting.

Instant casting. That was the most valuable point of Holy Shield. The absolute trump card to save a life.

"I'm but penniless. Would you like to buy it for me?" Little Snow winked around crazily.

"Cousin! Please stop doing that! I'm completely ashamed by you!"

"Would you guys stop doing that! Please focus on the boss! If it boss gets any stronger, I'll be dead by the next [smash]!" Zhang Yang scolded. He did not sound normal anymore.

30%... 20% ... 10%... 7%!

'Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gained [growth] effect (12 stack). All physical attacks are increased by 60%'

'Ding! Player Zhan Yu received [smash]! Stunned for 2 seconds!'

'-492!'

'+120!'

'-487!'

'-128!'

‘-489!’

‘-481!’

‘-128!’

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu had died!’

Little Snow failed to cast her [higher healing] in time which led to Zhang Yang’s defeat.

“Don’t give up! Continue attacking! There’s only 6% left! Fight for your life!”

5%!

Once Zhang Yang fell, Drizzler immediately became Oz’s punching bag. It turned around and started to attacking furiously!

‘Ding! Player Drizzler had died!’

4%!

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome had died!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had died!’

‘Ding! Player Little Snow had died!’

Complete annihilation.

“Sigh...”

The team appeared at the revive point and sighed together. Wiped out at 4%, what a waste!

“Little Snow, the next time I get [smash], don’t use [higher healing]. Instead, switch to [holy prayers]. Even though the recovery rate for [holy prayers] is slower but the incantation is much faster! [higher healing] requires two seconds to cast, but [holy prayers] only needs 1.5 seconds so it can be cast in between the two-second stun! If you used [higher healing], you might have been in time to save me!” Zhang Yang gave a long talk to Little Snow, trying to help her revise her healing tactics.

“Remember, once I’m out of the stun, I’ll use [block] immediately. You

will have enough time to cast [higher healing]!”

“Okay!” Little Snow nodded obediently. She looked like she was blaming herself for the team’s downfall. Even though it was not her fault to begin with, she did feel a little guilty for the waste of effort. It’s rare to see her obedient face, not winking around like a madwoman.

Shush!

Another five souls appeared at the revive point. They were the The Dominators. Humbly Gentleman was not among the party, which meant the party was the secondary raiding team.

“Hey! Where did you guys die at?” one of the party members from The Dominator screamed.

Zhang Yang looked at Fatty Han with a certain look in his eye. Fatty Han quickly caught his intention and replied, “The first boss!”

“F*cking hell! They’re actually the same as us!”

“Tch! So what if they’re at the same stage as us! The important thing is the boss, not the minions!”

The Dominators started to discuss among themselves.

“Hey, neighbor! We managed to damage it up to 60% HP left. What about you guys?”

Fatty Han looked at Zhang Yang, who was smiling silly.

“Better than you did! We were at 40%!”

The five of them exchanged a look and smiled sly-fully. They switched to party channel and said, “Hah! Only 40%! Boss was already beaten down till 20%. Just a few more and we’ll win this match for sure!”

Chapter 54: The Second First-Clear Achievement

“Hey! That’s mean!” Drizzler laughed underneath her covered mouth.

“Little brat! What do you know! This is called deception in war!” Fatty Han was trying mimic the looks of the great philosopher Zhu Ge Liang.

“Drizzler! That’s called ‘Learning from Experience’! Even in game he would use some kind of trickery to deceit others. Obviously, he would also be a swindler in reality! Drizzler, you must take this chance to learn. Next time, when you see someone like Fatty, you’d better get far, far away from him!”

Drizzler stood upright and saluted her like a soldier to a captain. “Sir! Yes Sir!”

Everyone laughed at the cousin’s skit.

Fatty Han quickly tried to rectify to situation. “Hey! I have the 4 virtues of a youngster! It’s just you guys who could not recognize it!”

“Which four?” said Hundred Shots. Being the silent type, he rarely participated in talks but since the mood got quite rowdy, he decided to join in.

“I’m a little greedy!”

“A little horny!”

“A little baddie!”

“A little fatty!”

“Oh my god...” All four of them pointed their middle fingers at Fatty Han.

Once that was over, the team revived themselves and ran over to the second boss. Everyone sat outside the boss’s chamber to consume some health recovery items.

“Alright, all set! Let’s go!”

[charge]! [charge]!

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzle activated [charge] at almost the same time. They dashed through the floor and arrived in front of the boss.

[provoke]!

Zhang Yang immediately locked on to the boss's aggro. He used [block] and a normal attack after, damaging the boss with his sword.

‘-335!’

He gained 34 Rage and immediately he used [Cripple Defense] and [horizontal sweep]. Zhang Yang managed to stack two layers of [Cripple Defense] as soon as the two seconds of [provoke] wore off.

Earth Spirit Oz grumbled and opened its mouth.

“Invaders. Oz will not allow you to destroy Lord Marzerway's plans to destroy all of humanity!” After the opening speech was over, Oz began to charge towards Zhang Yang.

“Huh... human annihilation. I guess that is the only dream all bad guys could ever have!” Drizzler scoffed.

“Actually, Marzerway is the victim here. Quite the pity as well.” Zhang Yang explained while he swung his sword.

“Huh?”

“Didn't you read the official introduction?” Zhang Yang sounded disappointed. “Sigh, every dungeon has their own lore!”

“Well, Fatty here doesn't care about that. All I want is the equipment!”

“I just care about the gold pieces!”

“...”

“Really?! Come on guys! The developers put their hearts and souls into making this game to be as detailed for the sake of the players! What you have done is spat on the efforts the developers! What a waste of a beautiful game!” Zhang Yang shook his head in disappointment.

“Tch! What an elderly act. You'll surely be elderly soon enough!” Drizzler

scorned.

“Alright... Let’s hear it out. What’s the story?” Little Snow resumed her pace, winking about again.

“In the lore, Marzerway was a famous Spellcaster who was part of a Spellcaster guild in the Empire’s Royal Family. A few years back, he joined the army to fight against the invading specters, leaving behind his loving wife in the hands of a noble. Little did he know that the noble tainted his wife, causing her to grieve, and she eventually killed herself. When Marzerway returned, and found out the truth of his wife’s death, he sought out to have his revenge. Sadly, he was deemed a traitor to the empire. Hated by all, he was imprisoned, waiting to be executed.” Zhang Yang looked around. Everyone was listening carefully.

“Anguish and despair beyond any human can endure, Marzerway surrendered his soul to the demon and exchanged it for unlimited power. He escaped the prison and desecrated the Snow Sprite City, killing everyone and everything in it! After that, Marzerway occupied the city and summoned countless of elemental monsters to defend the city against the Empire’s army.” Zhang Yang finished his story and look around again. He suddenly yelled.

“F*ck! Why are you guys just standing there! We’re still in the middle of a fight!”

The four of them were shaken, as if they were woken up from a dream. Drizzler bit her lips.

“Aw...Marzerway is quite pity!”

“Ah... this truly is sad. If only I can get married to someone as loyal as Marzerway... that would be nice!” Little Snow had a yearning kind of tone in her voice.

‘Cousin! What’s the use if he is just loyal? A true gentleman must be straight forward, brave, handsome and cool! If he is anything like Fatty Han, then you might as well give up.” Drizzler giggled and turned around to make sure he heard what she said.

Fatty Han shriveled up. He only joked around to cheer the party, and now he made himself public enemy number 1. How did it turn out this way?

“Foolish intruders! Taste my wrath!” A red glow covered entire Oz’s body, increasing his power by a level.

‘Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gain a [growth] effect (1 stack). All physical attack is increased by 5%!’

“Crap! No time to play around anymore guys! Strike him with all you’ve got!”

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu received [smash]! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

‘-305!’

‘-316!’

‘-84!’

‘+120!’

‘-312!’

‘+297!’

‘-301!’

‘-84!’

This round, Little Snow used [holy prayers] instead of [higher healing]. With only 1.5 second casting time, she could easily heal in between the boss’ furious attack. After enduring that barrage of attack, Zhang Yang’s HP remained at around 900. He then evade one attack, and used [block] on the other, giving Little Snow enough room to cast [higher healing]. After he was healed, his HP was back to 70%.

90%, 80%.... the boss’ HP dropped continuously and it was not slowing down. However, the boss was also growing in damage. 5%, 10%, 15%...

“Alright, this is going well. Guys! Maintain this pace and we can surely win this round!” Zhang Yang encouraged the party.

“Pathetic little intruders! I will crush all if you into smithereens!” Earth

Spirit Oz growled. The red glow engulfed his body over and over again and when Oz's HP reached 10%, he stacked over 12 layers of [growth]!

“Here comes the most dangerous time!”

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu received [smash]! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

‘-487!’

‘-128!’

‘+120!’

‘-482!’

‘-489!’

‘+302!’

‘-128!’

‘-491!’

After a serious beating, Zhang Yang's HP stopped at 57 points! The boss has yet to stop attacking!

‘Evade!’

‘[block]!’

Zhang Yang quickly consumed a bottle of red potion while waiting for Little Snow to heal him.

‘+399!’

The potion's healing only managed to put him out of the danger zone, but he was still not out of trouble!

9%, 8%, 7%... Death was inevitable!

4%!

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

“Oh... L-Lord Mar... Marzerway will resurrect me a-again! I-I will....c-crush...” With its last dying words, Oz came crashing onto the floor.

“WE DID IT!” Finally, they did it. All of them let out a sigh of relief and cheered.

‘Ding! You can the party member around had killed Earth Spirit Oz. Obtaining 26,450 Experience points (50 party bonus point)!’

‘Ding! Your party has successfully conquered Marzerway’s Lair: Front Wing (Hardcore Mode) and obtained the “First Clear” Achievement! This glorious accomplishment will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board. As the party leader, please name your party!’

Zhang Yang paused and thought for a while. He turned around and said, “Hey little brat, I’ll key in your guild’s name into this achievement for 1,000 gold pieces! How does that sound?”

“Wah! Come on, uncle. We’re so close to each other now! Would you still charge us for it?” Drizzler screamed and shouted. To take her money was on the same level as robbing a bank; there would be resistance.

“Haha! Friendship is one thing, business is another! Come on! Pay up!” Zhang Yang continued to play with her.

“Awww...” Drizzler then tried to follow Little Snow’s seductive behavior by trying to wink. After so much effort, all she could only manage to close one of her eye. It’s freaking tiresome! Drizzler gave up and stomped the ground. “Ah, well. How about I offer you Little Snow’s nudes! Yeah. You heard it right! Her nudes!”

Little Snow’s eyebrow twitched. “Ahem! You little witch, what are you blabbering about?” A seductive look naturally formed.

“Are you for real?!” Fatty Han got excited. Everyone could see a pinkish erotic aura emitting from him.

“Of course it’s real!” Drizzler patted her chest.

Little Snow did not really care at first but when she saw Drizzler smiling ear to ear, she began to feel that something was wrong.

“You couldn’t possibly be serious...”

“HEHE!”

“You brat, when did you...?”

“You always like to leave the door open whenever you take a bath. I was just passing by one time and when you didn’t notice my presence, I took a picture!”

“Oh no you little witch! YOU’RE SO DEAD WHEN I GET MY HANDS ON YOU!” Little Snow voice became louder.

Fatty Han took the opportunity to sneak in.

“Hey, hey Little Drizzler, since WE are also quite close... so...”

“Hey, hey! We’re not that close!” Drizzler played along.

Zhang Yang laughed.

“This time I’ll key in your guild name. The next dungeon, I’ll key in my own guild name!”

“Eh? When did you join a guild?” Little Snow asked.

“No. Not yet. After these two dungeons, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and I will establish a guild of our own. How about it? Feel like coming over to this side?” Zhang Yang gazed at the two girls. There were fine specimens after all!

“Why so troublesome?” Drizzler pouted her lips. “Why don’t you come to our guild? I’ll pass the guild master position to you!”

Zhang Yang was surprised. “Eh? You would do that?”

“It’s fine! My cousin and I established the guild just for the fun of it. Being a guild master is so troublesome after all. I had to do this and that, manage here and there... Argh! I’d wanted to quit for so long! To think that you could take over my position! I would be glad to pass it to you!” Drizzler sounded very decisive.

Zhang Yang could never have predicted this outcome.

“You’d better think this through and through. ‘God’s Miracle’ is not like

any other VRMMORPG. In the future, the game will have so many more players joining in! You could basically call this game the ‘second Earth’! If the guild is managed properly, you could earn a living from the income!”

“Yeah, yeah. How could you talk so much? It’s so annoying! Ain’t that right, cousin?”

“Em, that’s right. Besides, in less than a month, Drizzler will heading back to school. She won’t have much time to play this game anymore. It’s would be in the best of interest if you took over the guild!” Little Snow nodded.

Zhang Yang felt bad for those under these two lazy bums. He would not mind to take over the guild’s responsibility at the least. He thought for a while and considered it.

“Alright then, in that case, add all 3 of us into the guild! Fatty Han, quit your guild now!”

Fatty Han was a little unwilling, “Sigh... if someone as handsome and cool as me left that guild, I’m afraid those pretty chicks would go crazy without me!”

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has invited you to join her guild: Lone Desert Smoke. Will you accept her invitation?’

Zhang Yang entered the guild. After a short while, he saw the guild notification refreshed.

Player Slim and Handsome has joined the guild.

Player Hundred Shots has joined the guild.

Zhang Yang then keyed in the name Lone Desert Smoke as the party name and selected “Confirm”. The server channel then dyed in red again.

‘Server announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has obtained the First Clear Achievement: Marzerway’s Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode). This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board (China Server)!’

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Leader) has obtained the

First Clear Achievement: Marzerway's Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode).
Obtaining 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill point, and 500 increased all races
reputation from the system reward!

‘Server announcement: Player Drizzler...’

Chapter 55: Onward to the Middle Wing

After the server announcement flooded the entire server channel, all 20 men from The Dominators and Sky High were left stunned. Those that were not in the midst of battle were fine, but the other 15 people; 3 teams of 5 players were instantly distracted and got killed off and appeared at the revive point.

The results were far too much for them to take in! Who were they to even compete with Zhang Yang's team when they were still struggling at the first boss of the dungeon?

...

At Crimson Rage's side...

"Sister Snow! It happened, just like you said it will!" Thorny Rose cried out admirably as Fire Spirit Farr's body fell defeated. "How did you do it?! How did you know that Zhan Yu's team would be the first to win the Front Wing's dungeon? If we had followed along to take on the Front Wing, we'd be crying our eyes out by now!"

Thorny Rose and the rest of the Crimson Rage party were currently in the Middle Wing dungeon.

During the start of the fight, Crimson Rage's two 5-man party first entered the Front Wing dungeon. However, after two minutes in, they quickly switched and headed to the Middle Wing instead!

According to the official website, the Middle Wing's bosses were level 23 and level 24 while the Front Wing bosses were level 21 and level 22. Normally, players would choose to tackle on the easy ones first and left the harder selection for later on. However, Crimson Rage guild master had a different way of approaching this matter. She chose the other way around to conquer the dungeon!

Snow Seeker raised an eye brow and smiled lightly. "Even though I may have predicted that Zhan Yu's team would be the one who will claim the 'First Clear' achievement, but I could not have foreseen that they could

complete the dungeon in such a groundbreaking speed! Sure, we might have defeated the first boss, but Zhan Yu's team already cleared the Front Wing and may be proceeding to the Middle Wing, and if he does, not even I would know how that will turn out!"

"How could this be?" Thorny Rose expressed her disbelief. "We have gained the Boss' information beforehand and had several days ahead to devise a strategy! We even died several times to win this boss! Don't tell me that they also had a relative in the development team!?"

Snow Seeker thought it through and shook her head at the impossibility.

"According to my brother, during the boss skill design phase, everyone will be in charge of their own department. There was absolutely no interaction nor communication between departments! Furthermore, the initial designer and the editor were strangers who did not have any connections. There was no possible way that a person would have the knowledge of all the boss's skill! We only knew about the first boss' skills and gone through hell and back for the second boss' skills!"

Snow Seeker stopped her speech suddenly and realized something far more important.

"I for one, hope that Zhan Yu had gotten himself some information leak. Or else, how could you explain his incredible speed at clearing the Front Wing dungeon?" She shook her head to get rid of that frightening thought.

"Everyone! Get yourself together, even though we are one step ahead of them, we must not let down our guard! They are... strong!"

"HUURAH!"

...

For some members of Lone Desert Smoke, they were excited when Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Slim and Handsome joined the guild. That was, however, just the tip of the iceberg. When the server channel was flooded with the server announcement of their achievement, things got even wilder! For almost half day long, the guild channel was just as noisy as a subway station! Chattering and cheering were everywhere! Even

though they did not contribute into the party in taking the “First Clear” Achievement, they still praised and bragged around about their guild!

‘Player Drizzler has surrendered the Guild Master position to Player Zhan Yu. Player Zhan Yu is now the current Guild Master!’

Another important news!

Even so, members of Lone Desert Smoke did not express any objection to this matter! They were actually happy with the change! After all, they have all heard of the name “Zhan Yu”. The guild members were happy and contented to have a professional commander like Zhan Yu to lead the guild to glory!

“So guys... should we just rest a bit or do we go on to raid the Middle Wing?” Little Snow asked Zhan Yang.

“Strike the iron while it’s hot! Of course, we shall move on!” Zhang Yang laughed loudly. Pointing at the corpse, he continued, “However, let’s distribute the equipment first!”

“Oh! Oh! Me! Me! Let me open it!” Drizzler jumped like a rabbit and quickly touched the corpse.

[Heavy Stone Boots] (Green-Copper, Metal Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +12

Strength: +6

Dexterity: +2

Level requirement: 2

“Tch! Hey! Take this boot and raise your pathetic HP amount!” Drizzler rejected her roll for the equipment. “Don’t get yourself killed in just one strike!”

It was not just Drizzler who had the thought to prioritize the main tanker’s equipment; it was in everyone’s mind as well. They started to get a little cautious ever since they witnessed the sheer attack power of a

Hardcore-level boss. Zhang Yang laughed guiltily. He too knew that he needed to pump up his HP to face a Herculean-like boss in the Hardcore Dungeon. He put on the new equipment and also invested the SP he gained on [block], reducing its cooldown time to only 5 seconds.

“Friends of Lone Desert Smoke! Congratulations on obtaining the ‘First Clear’ Achievement! I represent The Dominators to congratulate you on this awesome achievement!” Humbly Gentleman posted in the local channel.

“Hmph! What you say doesn’t match your intention! Gentleman, my ass!” someone from Sky High began insulting to provoke.

“Huh? Where did this barking dog came from?!” Members from The Dominator started to retaliate.

Sky High did not want to admit defeat, and they started to return their insults. Eventually the entire local channel was flooded with words of scorn and abuses.

Zhang Yang’s team started to feel a little annoyed. With a flick of a button, they turned off the local server feed and the whole world went dead silent.

[Blinders Skirt] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +16

Intelligence: +16

Spirit: +6

Level requirement: 20

This equipment obviously belonged to Little Snow.

[Lined Cape] (Green-Copper, Cape)

Vitality: +6

Dexterity: +4

Equip effect: Increase 1% critical strike.

Level requirement: 20

Only Dexterity and no Strength, this equipment was obviously suitable for either a Thief or a Hunter.

Just when Fatty Han wanted Hundred Shots to have the item, Hundred Shots rejected his chance to roll.

“Fatty, it’s fine now. My equipment is quite strong. You don’t need to give it up anymore! From now on, let’s just roll for the next equipment fair and square!”

“Alright then!” Fatty Han nodded and accepted the cape.

The party then ran towards the dungeon entrance. Fatty Han suddenly turned around and asked Zhang Yang, “Hey Little Yang, are there any hidden bosses in this dungeon?”

Zhang Yang shook his head. “Not all dungeons have hidden bosses. As for Marzerway’s Lair, there are no hidden bosses in any of the three dungeons!”

After a while, the party got out from the Front Wing and entered the left entrance of the dungeon.

“Ding! You have entered Marzerway’s Lair: Middle Wing (Hardcore Mode)!”

The atmosphere and background of this new dungeon was exactly the same as the previous one. The only difference was the monster patrolling inside were now fire elementals.

[Demonized Fire Elemental] (Elite)

Level: 22

HP: 6,000

There were so many monsters here; too many in fact! With just a look, it felt like the room was cramped and tight.

“So-freaking many!” Fatty Han took in a deep breath.

“Yeah. The monsters here are far stronger than before. They’re all magic

attack types. They just love to spew fireball at you and those are painful as f*ck!” Zhang Yang explained. “However, the good thing is that their HP is very low. They are about half of those elite monsters. We can just use our AoE attacks and they can be killed off easily.”

Zhang Yang walked ahead and used [charge] to initiate the fight.

Zhang Yang cut down one of the monsters for 342 damage and gained 36 Rage. He immediately used [horizontal sweep].

‘-701!’

‘-745!’

‘-726!’

Many more damage texts overlapped each other in the tight crowded space.

A total of 8 fire elementals had their targets set to Zhang Yang and began conjuring fireballs.

The team followed up and started unleashing their AoE skills like [barrage] and [tornado cleave].

3 seconds later, the monsters finished casting their spells and threw 8 fireball towards Zhang Yang. A barrage of attacks landed on Zhang Yang, causing ‘-122’, ‘-119’, and ‘-125’ damage to him. Zhang Yang lost around 1000 HP in this wave.

Little Snow was prepared for it. The moment she saw damage texts popping out on Zhang Yang’s head, she waved her hand and used [higher healing] on him, restoring 400 HP. At the same time, [regeneration] healed him for 130 HP every 3 seconds. 2 seconds later, Little Snow conjured another [higher healing] and healed Zhang Yang almost to his full HP.

Boom!

Another 8 fireballs landed on Zhang Yang.

“Argh....I don’t want to do this anymore...This is so tiring!” But being the only healer in the party, Little Snow had to continue her healing alone or

else Zhang Yang would die and the whole team would be defeated.

30 seconds into the battle and all of the minions were killed off, granting the party immense experience points.

Little Snow jeered at the hallway and saw waves and waves of minions patrolling. She turned sour and said, “God, how long would this last!”

“Cousin, I’ll give you a back massage after all these minions. Is that good enough?”

Fatty Han suddenly gave a lusty expression. “Pressing and pushing is something only Fatty can do best! I’d tell you, no one else could do it better! Little Snow, take my number and call me whenever you’re in the mood for a back massage. I’ll be over in a jiffy!”

Drizzler walked over to Fatty Han and observed his fleshy hands.

“Huh. Now that I’ve seen your hand. I finally understand why the Mandarin language has the phrase ‘Salty Pig Hands’, you pervert!”

Everyone laughed for a bit and moved on forward.

The monsters were indeed strong and their attacks were stronger, but the only person working furiously was Little Snow, while the rest of the party were calm and relax all the way.

20 minutes later, they finally arrived at the first boss.

[Fire Spirit Anni] (Green-Copper)

Level: 23

HP: 138k

Standing at 10 meters tall, the gigantic elemental spirit was burning away like a huge bon fire pillar. In this enormous palace, there were no other minions around anymore.

“Alright, rape our ears, Little Yang!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed. He then began to explain the boss’ strategy and skills.

“As you could guess, the boss is a Spellcaster class. Its physical attacks

are not strong so it will cast [flame shot] at the person with the most aggro. The skill has a 3 second casting delay and deals 1,000 damage per shot! Little Snow, just give up! As the only healer in this Hardcore Mode dungeon, it is your fate to heal till you drop!”

Fatty Han laughed and said, “Little Snow, just give up and listen to Little Yang!”

“Pervert Fatty!”

“Pervy Brothers!”

The girls scolded together.

Zhang Yang expressed innocence. “Hey! Why am I in the same category as him?”

Little Snow replied, “Birds of the same feather...”

“...flock together!” Drizzler continued her cousin’s idiom. “The two of you looked like brothers in arms. That is why both of you must share the same bad habit!”

“What!? Argh! A gentleman must not be arguing with a lady!” Zhang Yang gave up and used an escape card to avoid the argument. He then continued his boss explanation. “The boss’ second skill is called [knockback]. This skill will cause every target in its effective range to be knocked back 3 meters behind, and will also receive 500 fire damage. At the same time, the target will be inflicted with a debuff called [combustible], causing all fire magic damage to be increased by 50%! The debuff is quite dangerous. If I’m hit with [flame shot] and [knockback] while gaining the [combustible] debuff, I will receive about 1,800 damage! I will be instantly killed if I were to receive that combo without a full HP status!”

Chapter 56: Fire Spirit Farr

“Its third skill is called [lava flow].” Zhang Yang continued to explain the boss’ skills. “Once it’s activated, eight rivers of lava will flow out in a specific pattern with the boss at its center. The lava will continue to flow for 30 seconds so remember to avoid it at all cost! Anyone standing in it will take 500 damage!”

“Hmm, sounds pretty simple. We should be fine as long as we can avoid the lava!”

“The fourth skill...”

“Holy crap, there’s a fourth skill?! Little Yang, please finish your sentence! Don’t leave us hanging here!”

Zhang Yang laughed at Fatty Han.

“The fourth skill is quite simple. For every party member’s death, the boss gains 50% damage increase; which is why you have to survive at all costs! In summary, stay alive and don’t die!”

“Let’s go!”

[charge]!

“Ho! Where did these pests come from? How dare you step into my domain! Hmph! Water Spirit and Earth Spirit are completely useless! How could they let these pests get past them?”

Being completely immune to [charge]’s stunning effect, Farr raised its fiery fists and hurled them at Zhang Yang. “Hahaha! I will burn your soul into the depths of the abyss! Enjoy wandering forever, never to return!”

“Little Yang, is it just me, or does this boss love to talk a lot?” Fatty Han asked while firing a shot.

“Yeah, I feel the same way too! Zhan Yu, this boss could actually be on the same level as you! Annoying as hell!”

Drizzler used [charge] to dash towards the boss and began hacking and slashing. Noticing high damage texts that were popped out rapidly, her

face flushed with excitement.

Hmph, if I were to keep my mouth shut, do you think we could reach to this stage?

Zhang Yang had a little monologue and smiled bitterly by himself.

“Some boss’ difficulty factor lies on their attack and skill. For others, like this one, have another way to annoy players, and that’s through trash-talking!”

Fatty Han laughed. “Huh? Trash-talking? Can they actually do that?”

“Yeah, just wait for it! This will be our first encounter of a trash-talking boss!”

While they were happily conversing, Zhang Yang had already stacked 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] and made the vulnerable boss even more vulnerable.

“You stinky piece of walking flesh! I’ll use my flame to burn all of you into roasted meat, and then I’ll eat you for dinner!”

Fire Spirit Farr began to chant [flame shot]. Three seconds later, a giant fireball flew rapidly towards Zhang Yang. He could not block nor escape from it and took a hit while simultaneously a huge ‘-800’ damage text flew across his head.

“Haha! Foolish mortals! How does it feel being burnt into a crisp?” Fire Spirit Farr then switched to its fiery first to strike. “Perhaps I shall keep your skeletons and fashion them into a table! That would be a perfect decoration for my palace!”

After a few fist attacks, Fire Spirit Farr started to chant a [flame shot]. Being a Spellcaster-class monster, it would naturally prioritize its magic attacks as it’s main.

Boom! A fireball flew off, hitting Zhang Yang again.

“Impossible! You, a mere mortal withstanding my almighty attack! No! Why are you still alive?! NO! You must die! You must die NOW!” Fire Spirit Farr growled loudly.

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr is enraged!’

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Far has unleashed [knockback]!’

A circular wall appeared with Farr at the center of it. The wall then blasted away in all directions and knocked back Zhang Yang and Drizzler, while leaving a debuff effect on them. “Foolish creatures! I will not hold back any longer!” The fire spirit then chanted another [flame shot], aiming at Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han could not hold it in any longer. “What the hell?! This boss can really talk... a lot!”

Zhang Yang snickered, “Haha, trash-talk! This is considered as a challenge. Once you encountered enough of these kind of bosses, you’ll get used to it soon enough. Still, you wouldn’t really get yourself mad from a computer, right?”

Little Snow was holding on for quite some time, but eventually she lost it too. “Would you guys just kill it already?! I’m suffering here!”

After casting [flame shot], Fire Spirit Farr scanned the party. “Hmph! You who would only sneak behind and attack, I will burn you all!”

Woosh! Eight rivers of lava flowed out from the boss’ body, across the battlefield. Fatty Han and the rest managed to evade it by a hair’s breadth, but the melee fighters did not have enough time to react at all. It was only luck that the boss’ [lava flow] did not target a specific player. When the lava started to spew from the boss’ body, it went past Zhang Yang and Drizzler, scaring the hell out of them!

90%, 80%, 70%... the boss quickly lost its HP at a fast pace. As it talked too much, the party began striking and shooting at their best and maybe even a little more as they were pretty much annoyed by the trash-talking.

“Despicable human! Curse you!” Fire Spirit Farr cried in pain after being attacked. “Let the flame cleanse you away!” Using [knockback] again, the boss blasted his firewall everywhere and almost killed Zhang Yang with only over 600 HP left.

“Thank god this boss didn’t curse my future baby child or something like

that, or I'd be really furious!" Fatty Han said as he happily drew his bow and shot at his own pace.

"Slim and Handsome, you've been shooting for almost half a day, and yet nothing came out! How could you call yourself a man?"

That was it. Fatty Han stopped his attack suddenly and furiously walked up to the boss! "Who said I can't shoot it out?! People call me the '7 shot man'! I can shoot it out in five minutes! Hmph! I can't shoot? I'll shoot in your f*cking face!"

"Hey, take a chill pill there, horny brother!"

"Disgusting prick!"

"Fatty, you just revealed your secret here!"

It was then Fatty Han realized that he had been played by a computer! How could he allow himself to be fooled by a computer to lose his temper?

"Haha! Fatty, I think you've completely tarnished your good name!" Zhang Yang laughed loudly.

"Oh, get out of there!" Fatty Han was angry right down to his bone. "This boss' perverseness is just as good as mine!"

"Bullsh*t! You're the only one here with that kind of mind! The boss is insulting your marksmanship, not your... you know! Hey, Fatty Han. Could it be that a certain part of your body isn't working properly? I know an old medical officer that lives just down the alley here..." Zhang Yang could not help himself to laugh even more.

"Mind your own business! My little brother is as fine as it is!" Fatty Han defended his own "ability."

Fire Spirit Farr began provoking Hundred Shots as well, "Hundred Shots, you've been shooting for almost half a day, and yet nothing came out! How could you call yourself a man?"

Being Hundred Shots, the man that never lost his "chill", he remained steady and undisturbed as he continued to fire his arrow unfazed.

"See that, Fatty Han? That's what I call style. Cool as a cucumber!"

“Tch! Hundred Shots, tell me the truth now, how old are you?” Fatty Han asked.

Hundred Shot sniggered before he answered, “30!”

“When you are 30, you’ll have that problem. When you are 40, you can’t do anything about it besides having those thoughts! This is not style, it’s a fact! I’ll never have the problem about shooting it out!”

With this topic now in the air, not a single man would leave themselves undefended. Hundred Shots curved his lips and said, “Well, according to my wife, I’ve no problem with my little brother. And if it’s a problem, it’s not a problem at all!”

“Bullshit philosopher!”

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were surprised at Hundred Shot’s comment and laughed out loud.

“Hey, are you guys fighting or not?!” Drizzler angrily cried out. She could not take it any longer; it was not about the dirty adult talks that revolved around their private matters, but the fact that she could not understand any bit of it! If she could not understand it, then it did not matter anymore!

“Drizzler! Are you giving me a massage? If that’s the case, it would be a waste! I could barely feel anything!” Fire Spirit Farr turned and pointed at Drizzler, starting to say something insulting again. “I will flatten you!”

“Huh? Flat? Flat chest? Did you just call me flat-chested!?” It’s hard not to admire how Drizzler interpreted that. From the word “flatten” to “flat chest”. Still, the angered little Drizzler was triggered to fight even wilder than ever!

Fatty Han laughed and said, “This boss sure is fun to play with!”

“Horny boss! Perverted Fatty!” Drizzler continued to land more hits on the monster.

“Hey, hey, hey! I’m a normal and serious man!” Fatty Han was quick to refute.

“Despicable mortal! Feel my wrath!”

Lava began to flow out again, causing the entire party to jump like cats and dogs. As the party regained their composure, the boss' HP was left with only 20%.

"This boss is quite easy to defeat! If it wasn't because of its crap, I could fight this kind of boss anytime!"

Zhang Yang shook his head. "We were only lucky. We didn't get hit by the [flame shot] and [knockback] combo! That one is a lethal skill!"

15%, 10%, 7%... The boss' HP continued to drastically drop.

5%, 3%...

Boom! A [flame shot] landed on Zhang Yang and reduced his HP down to 512 points. At that moment, the boss opened his mouth and said, "You've angered me, mortals!"

'Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has unleashed [knockback]!'

'-600'

Zhang Yang was instantly killed by the attack.

'Ding! Player Zhan Yu has died!'

"Don't stop! Kill it! Kill it!" Zhang Yang shouted.

'Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has gained a [sacrifice] effect. All attacks have been increased by 50%!

"Haha! Delicious soul! I can feel my powers grow stronger!"

Fire Spirit Farr's body grew larger. Now that Zhang Yang died, the boss changed its target to the second most aggro player; Drizzler. Luckily, this boss did not have the tendency to use [flame shot]. Even if Drizzler was hit by a [knockback], it would only cause 450 damage and then kill her off easily with a few normal attacks. It did not need to use the 3-second delay [flame shot]!

2%, 1%...

'-2250!'

Carrying the [combustible] debuff, Drizzler was vulnerable to attacks.

Even if Little Snow could heal her back to full HP, her pitiful 1200 HP could only withstand a single attack from the boss. Soon after, Drizzler also died.

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has gained a [sacrifice] effect. All attacks have been increased by 100%!’

“Such a wonderful feeling! My powers grow stronger again!” Fire Spirit Farr laughed evilly, and then turned to face Fatty Han and casted [flame shot].

‘1200.’

‘950.’

‘740.’

The boss had a little over 1,000 HP left!

‘400.’

‘143.’

‘-2000!’ [flame shot] was cast. Fatty Han was defeated.

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has gained a [sacrifice] effect. All attacks have been increased by 150%!’

This time around, the boss did not cast a [flame shot]. It rushed over to Hundred Shots and attacked him with physical strikes.

‘-176!’

‘-413!’

A simultaneous attack came from both Hundred Shots and Little Snow.

“No, no, no! This isn’t happening! I am the Immortal Fire God! No one could have killed me! No...!” With an unwilling expression, Fire Spirit Farr fell defeated.

‘Ding! You and your party members have killed Fire Spirit Farr. Obtaining 69,050 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

Chapter 57: Air Spirit Ains

Facing a Spellcaster-class monster would be quite troublesome if players did not possess any passive or automated damage reducing skills. Zhang Yang felt grateful that he could learn a particular skill when he reached Level 30. [shield wall] was an active skill that reduced 75% of all incoming attacks for 10 seconds. Before that, he could only fight hoping lady luck was on his side!

Zhang Yang stopped thinking and shouted, "Little Snow, revive me!"

Little Snow suddenly had an epiphany. "Wow, I never knew the experience points could be so much when there's so few people standing! Hehehe... Maybe next time when the boss is almost down, I'll let you guys just die off again!"

"Hey, hey, hey. Isn't that a little too extreme?!"

"What do you think?" Little Snow threw a playful wink at Zhang Yang as she chanted the reviving spell.

"The deadliest housewife ever!" Zhang Yang shook his head, disappointed.

"What did you say?" Drizzler retaliated just as she revived. Zhang Yang walked over to Drizzler and patted her timid little head. "This doesn't concern you, little brat. You're still very far away from being a housewife!"

Little Snow, on the other hand, smiled sexily. "Hey, hey! This elder cousin is not a housewife!"

Sigh, she's not even close to being a pretty lady but how could she have the nerve to behave like a supermodel?!

Zhang Yang did not want to waste more time and quickly commanded, "Open the corpse!"

"Ah hah! Mine!" Drizzler ran over and grabbed the chance to open the corpse.

Fatty Han sadly lost all his chances to open the corpse ever since

Drizzler and her cousin joined the party. This little brat collects all the gold coins first like she always do, and only then would she get the equipment.

[Fiery Long Bow] (Green-Copper, Ranged Weapon)

Weapon attack: 99-117

Attack interval: 2.7 seconds

DPS: 40

Equip effect: Forged from the finest of flames, every attack will have a 5% chance to inflict additional 50-70 fire damage.

Level requirement: 20

"Good hands, Drizzler! Very good indeed!" Zhang Yang laughed. "That's an excellent piece of bow!" Drizzler was still a young little girl; immature and playful. She got happy and excited after being praised.

Hundred Shots, 79 points.

Fatty Han, 77 points.

"Fatty, I ain't holding back now!" Hundred Shots swapped for the new equipment as soon as he obtained the weapon. Hundred Shots felt it was disgraceful to be lowest in damage output that tarnished his pride. He did not want people to think that he was dragging the team down!

Fatty Han smiled and waved his hand, "Don't sweat it! We're friends after all!"

Zhang Yang, being startled, forced himself to speak. "So far, our party composition doesn't make sense. If there's a Knight, Thief, or Spellcaster equipment, we'd have no choice but to auction it out! We'll have to quickly set up another team, prioritizing class to not waste anymore equipment! With his 10-man party as a base, we can take on the Professional League. We can even take on the 10-man dungeon, or perhaps even the 20-man!"

[Burning Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +22

Strength: +4

Dexterity: +14

Level requirement: 20

"A Hunter's equipment again!"

"Fatty, you'd better take this one. I've already taken the bow!" Hundred Shots smiled.

Fatty Han took the equipment happily. A character's damage depended highly on the weapon; Hundred Shots' damage power increased to a certain degree after he obtained the new weapon. Fatty Han on the other hand needed a new armor as his HP was the lowest in the party.

Drizzler just began to scold the boss' dead body, "Tch! Stingy boss. Talk so much but so little equipment. Ptui! I spit on your corpse!"

"Ha! Drizzler, the boss might remember this and get back at you the next time we fight it!" Zhang Yang tried to frighten her, and it worked. What if they were to fight this boss again tomorrow and the boss called her "flat" a second time? What would she do then?!

When everything has settled down, the door behind the dead boss' body opened automatically, revealing the pathway that led them to the last boss, Air Spirit Ains. Naturally, they cleared the minions along the way and reached the end.

[Enraged Air Elemental] (Elite)

Level: 23

HP: 50,000

Almost all elemental monsters had the same appearance, the only difference was their color. Water was blue, Earth was brown, Fire was red, and Air was white. The monsters on the pathway were little, having only three to four monsters. However, their numbers matched evenly with their

HP; one monster's HP was just as high as the boss'!

"Listen, this kind of monster is often called as Tank Slayer. They're very strong!" Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword. "Ok, here I go!"

Zhang Yang used [charge] and initiated the fight.

'Dodge!'

'Dodge!'

'[block]!'

'Dodge!'

Zhang Yang moved around like a fish in the water. He evaded all the monster's attacks with ease; not a single attack landed on him. Seeing Zhang Yang not taking any damage, she pouted her lips and complained, "Hey! Why did you say they were Tank Slayers? They look like nothing but easy kills!"

At that moment, Zhang Yang decided to prank Drizzler and smiled evilly, "Why don't you try and use [provoke]."

Drizzler wanted to prove him wrong so badly that she did not give a second thought. She used [provoke].

'-783!'

'-832!'

'Ding! Player Drizzler has died!'

"@#%! You sneaky little noob tank! I swear we will never get along ever!" Drizzler exploded in the party channel.

"Haha! I would say that you're an ant who thinks it can carry an elephant, but you'll only know it once you've tried it!" Zhang Yang justified his actions while at the same time slashing the monster.

"Bastard! You'll pay for this!" Drizzler was both puffing with anger and sniffing in tears.

"Cousin! When the monster is left with 5% HP, let the noob tank die!"

"Haha, okay!" Little Snow played along.

Very soon, the monster's HP dropped down to 5%, and Little Snow stopped her healing on Zhang Yang and hummed a random song. However, a Guardian would not have any trouble dodging and nullifying attacks when faced with a physical attack monster. Besides, the monster was just an Elite; its attack were not as fast nor as deadly as a boss, making it extremely easy for Zhang Yang to evade them. The monster fell before he could even lose all his HP.

"Pfft..." Zhang Yang held back his laughter. "R-Revive her!" he laughed.

Drizzler got back up to her feet. She was obviously angry; flares were coming out from her nostril and she stared at Zhang Yang with such wide eyes that you could tell the iris apart from the sclera.

As they continued to move on the pathway, they encountered more minions. They were strong, but Zhang Yang's party was not weak either. As troublesome as it may have seemed, the pathway had been cleared and they arrived at the boss' chamber 30 minutes later.

[Air Spirit Ains] (Green-Copper)

Level: 24

HP: 144K

The boss stood more than 20 meters tall. On its right hand, it was holding a heavy spear even taller than itself; it was weird it could still float so easily above ground. The battle would just be the same as the previous one; only the boss with no minions.

"Ahem!" Zhang Yang cleared his throat loudly, signaling that it was time for his speech.

"This boss is a physical attack type, and they are powerful! Its first skill is [sonic pierce]. This skill will be casted on the player with the highest aggro. One attack will deal about 1,500 damage, so Little Snow here will have to always make sure my HP has to exceed 1,200 HP. I will also try to reserve [block] for this as the skill would only trouble the tank and healer." Zhang Yang paused. "Everyone alright so far?"

"Yeah!"

"Remember this, the second and third skill is very important to everyone. As soon as the battle starts, the boss will cast out 10 gas bombs. These bombs are homing projectiles and explode upon contact, causing 1,200 magic damage to everyone. Now, the good thing is that these bombs are not so fast, so maneuvering away would be easy!"

"Its third skill is probably the most bothersome one ever, [summon clouds]. These summoned clouds will chase you at an incredible speed. Now, the clouds itself do not attack but once it's made contact with anyone, it will inflict a 10-second stun effect, proving enough time for the previous bombs to chase up to you!

These clouds can be destroyed! They're about 5,000 HP; easily removed. That's why once the boss releases the little clouds, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots will have to shoot them down. You guys have to make sure they don't touch anyone!"

"This battle is about speed and movement. You can't win this match solely by slouching and hitting the boss!"

"Hoho! This is interesting. Let's give it a go!" Drizzler was breathing heavily with excitement, eager to fight the boss.

"Alright, let's fight and get used to the tactics!" The five of them walked into the battlefield together.

"Here I go!" Zhang Yang initiated the battle with [charge].

"To see you standing here in this battle proves that all of you have the potential! But your fight ends here, for I will crush you personally!" Air Spirit Ains swung its spear and furiously thrust it at Zhang Yang.

'Dodged!'

Zhang Yang spread out. The boss' attack was fast, but as long as it was not a skill attack, he could still continue to evade the attacks.

After equipping the new bow, Hundred Shots attacking power reached to that of Drizzler, surpassing even Fatty Han's attack power! Aside from

Little Snow the Healer, everyone's attacking power was considered above average. In less than 10 minutes, the boss has lost 10% HP!

"Detestable pest! Die!" Air Spirit Ains let out a loud growl, releasing ten of 1 meter wide white-colored gas sphere from his body. It slowly floated across the battlefield and started chasing everyone.

'Ding! Air Spirit Ains has unleashed [air bomb]!'

"Here come the bombs, guys! Mind your steps!" Zhang Yang pulled the boss and started to shift his position away from the incoming [air bomb].

"Puny mortal! I will crush you!" A red light glimmered across the boss' body. It then raised its spear.

'Ding! Air Spirit Ains has used [sonic pierce]!'

Zhang Yang's athletic was immediately triggered, activating [block] in crucial moments.

'[block]!'

'-117!' [block] reflected damage.

'-234!' [shield bash].

"Nicely done!"

The boss' skill had a preemptive movement that indicated the attack. Even so, it only provided a tenth of a second's time for the player to activate [block] to nullify the attack. This ability to grasp the short time to react is not for everyone! The four of them cheered in admiration.

"Guys, be alert here! Don't just stand there and stare!" Zhang Yang hurriedly reminded the team when he saw them gazing at him.

"Stinking little pests! Let's have some fun!" Air Spirit Ains stuck up his butt and let out several fist-sized clouds. These clumps of fart gases floated slowly up into the air and suddenly flew to Drizzler at a shocking speed.

'Ding! Air Spirit Ains has used [summoned cloud]!'

"Eww..." Everyone but Zhang Yang frowned in disgust.

This boss was really just putrid.

Chapter 58: Wiped and Wiped Again

“Fatty! Hundred Shots! Quick, take down the clouds!”

In the light of a dangerous situation, Zhang Yang commanded the team properly while bearing the responsibility of a party leader. Drizzler was scared beyond words. If she would really take it in, even a tiny bit of that boss’ putrid fart would make her not eat anything for days!

With Zhang Yang’s clear words, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han turned around and changed their targets quickly and began attacking the cloud. However, the cloud’s movement speed was too fast for them to properly react. Even though they managed to take half of the cloud’s HP off, they were not quick enough to stop it from touching Drizzler. As soon as the cloud touched her, she cried out for help.

“NO! NO!”

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has received the [summoned clouds] effect: Rotten Stink, Stunned for 10 seconds!’

The stationary Drizzler wobbled back and forth while the [air bomb] slowly floated towards her.

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-960!’

Aside from Zhang Yang, the rest of the team’s HP were in the red zone. As she was still stunned, Drizzler had another bomb coming at her.

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-960!’

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has died!’

‘Ding! Player Little Snow has died!’

‘Ding! Player...’

Complete annihilation.

Five souls appeared at the revive points.

“Bleh! Bleh! Bleh! Stinky boss! Rotten boss! Shit! Shit! Shit!” Drizzler’s face had nothing but the expression of disgust. She stuck out her tongue and spat out everywhere.

“Calm down, Drizzler. This is all just a game! There’s nothing real about this!” Zhang Yang consoled.

“B-but, it’s just so real! It’s so smelly! I think I can still smell it on me!” Drizzler cried. Fatty Han smiled evilly. “Use XXX soap! Wash up for your health!”

“Scram!” Four middle fingers pointed at him.

Shush! Five new souls entered the revive point. At this period of the dungeon exploration stage, there would be many parties sent by many guilds, wiped out in different ways, crowding the revive points.

The newly arrived souls were Crimson Rage’s party!

Snow Seeker posted a question in the local channel, “Oh, it’s none other than Zhan Yu, the party leader! Where did you guys stop at? Have you guys defeated the first boss?”

With the appearance of a beautiful woman, Fatty Han started to behave “manly”. He then replied, “Actually, Miss beautiful Snow, I’m the real player behind the scene. I was the one who trained Little Yang!”

Ignoring his comments, Zhang Yang answered her question with another question. “Hehe, Snow guild master! What about you? Where did you guys stop at?”

Snow Seeker replied after a few moments later at the local channel, “We

started off with the Middle Wing. Right now, we'd defeated the first boss and are still fighting the second!"

They started the dungeon with the Middle Wing?

Zhang Yang thought for a while about it and finally pieced it together. What they did was to hide the truth within a lie! While everyone was fighting furiously for the Front Wing First Clear Achievement, these girls silently raided the Middle Wing. This way, they would have saved themselves a lot of time!

This method... no, this strategy was indeed ingenious! The only hiccup they could have ever faced was Zhang Yang's party!

"Wow, what a coincidence! We're also fighting the second boss!" Zhang Yang decided to tell her the truth since the other party was doing the same.

Shit! All five Crimson Rage party members grit their teeth.

How could they be so far?

"Sister Snow, could he be lying to us on purpose? I think he's trying to inflict us with mental stress!" Ever since her last encounter with Zhang Yang, Thorny Rose had nothing but a bad impression of him.

Snow Seeker thought for a while and shook her head, denying her suggestion. "I don't believe that's the case. We can clearly see how fast Zhan Yu's team proceeded to conquer the Front Wing. It would only be normal to think that they could progress this far!"

White Orchid became worried. "T-then...we s-should...."

"Let the horses loose; empty the stable! There is no other way but forward! We'll have to use all our efforts to win this round! We have to defeat this boss!" Snow Seeker turned her gaze at her teammates.

"Dancer, Perfume! I want the both of you to increase your attack speed on the [summoned clouds]! Rose, for god's sake, please pay attention to the [air bomb], don't just chase the boss!"

"B-but Sister Snow, I'm all boobs..."

White Orchid interjected Thorny Rose's word. "All boobs no brains! Yeah, I've heard that a thousand times now! Please stop using that as an excuse for your incompetence!"

"I'm warning you! If you make another mistake, I'll take a plane and fly over to Zhou Hang! I'll personally go to your house and burst those meaty sacks of fat!"

"Tch!" Thorny Rose lowered her head in submission and whisper, "My boobs are really that big..."

Perfumed Water suddenly voiced out, "You know...if you want to compare breast sizes, our Sister Snow here is the real deal! Hehe! She's 36F!"

"Is that for real?"

"Of course it's real! It's a pity that Sister Snow always wears loose clothing. What a humble woman she is! Hehe! I even felt her size myself!" Perfumed Water continued to brag.

"You little witch! How dare you defile Sister Snow! I-I haven't even touched hers before...."

"Sister Snow! Let me touch'em!"

The five women turned the quiet scene into the utmost chaotic room.

.....

Zhang Yang's party went into the dungeon and revived.

"Woah! That fight was really intense!"

The party members started to have small talk as they ran into the boss chamber.

"Little Yang! T-They're all freaking beautiful! How about this, we let them have this round! You know, to get them to owe us a favor! Who knows one day they may repay us! That's when we can hit on them back! I could have two! No, three! Argh! I'd have them all!" Fatty Han started to dwell in his own imagination.

“Hm... what? I didn’t hear you. I was thinking that I should find another Hunter to replace you when I take down the next dungeon!” Zhang Yang sighed loudly.

“Oh brilliant! I concur!”

“You have my vote as well!”

“Two thumbs up for me!”

3 voices spoke out.

“F*ck! Since when did I become public enemy number 1?” Fatty Han shook his head, disapproving their action.

When the party arrived at the entrance of the boss chamber, all five of them sat down and started to chew on recovery snacks before they moved into the chamber together.

“Fatty Han! Hundred Shots! I’d leave the [summoned clouds] to you guys!”

“We got it covered!”

“Here I go!”

Shush! Zhang Yang used [charge] to dash into the fight once more.

Remembering the fart from the boss, Drizzler guts were still filled with boiling rage. You did not need to tell her, she would go on and fight the boss herself. As she furiously fought the boss, swinging her weapon around wrathfully, she looked like someone who had completely lost her mind.

“Hahaha! More pesky bugs have come here to offer their lives!” Ains laughed manically and raised its spear to pierce Zhang Yang.

“I shall personally send you all to hell!”

The battle began!

After a minute into the fight...

“Fatty! Hundred! The clouds!”

“Crap! I’m stunned!”

“Shit, it’s about to explode!”

.....

The five of them were sent back to the revive point.

“Little Yang, I really think that the two of us are not enough! Let little Drizzler help us with the clouds!” Fatty Han voiced out his suggestion.

“Bleh! Bleh! Bleh! No way in hell am I going near those smelly clouds!” Drizzler shook her head left and right as fast as she could. Zhang Yang also shook his head, disagreeing.

“Melee attackers can’t attack the clouds. She would be stunned once she makes any contact with it! Okay, let’s try it this way. Once the cloud is out, Little Snow, I want you to stop healing and start attacking. I think I can handle myself when all 3 of you are busy with the clouds.”

“Hmm... Sounds good. Let’s go!”

They revived, entered the dungeon, recovered their health, and started the boss fight.

Two minutes later, they were wiped out again.

“Hmm... That was satisfactory... three of you with the clouds. Yes. That’s the way. Let’s stick to this!” Zhang Yang tried to console the team.

“Fatty! I think you should really consider dieting! If your head weren’t so big, the cloud would take 0.1 seconds more to reach you! We can still destroy that cloud instead of it smashing onto you directly!” Drizzler playfully ridiculed.

“Little Drizzler, This fat body of mine is as important as my own life!” Fatty Han chuckled. “There are three benefits when you have a meaty body!”

“Oh here he goes again! Fatty Bro, are you trying to fool around again?”

“Hell no! Listen! Being fat has 3 benefits! Number 1, fat has high buoyancy, I won’t drown that easily! Number 2, fat makes me heavy; heavy

makes good momentum, you'll be sure to be at advantage in a fight!
Number 3, fat is cool!"

"F*****CK!" 4 members booed Fatty Han.

The party restarted the fight and tried again.

Complete annihilation. Again.

All dead. Again and again.

.....

"Little Yang, this boss is very tough!" Fatty Han shook his head. "I-I can't continue on anymore. My equipment's durability is almost gone! I'd need to go back to the city to have it fixed."

"No need!" Zhang Yang hurriedly answered. "There is an NPC in the entrance of the dungeon there. He's a blacksmith! He can fix your equipment. Let's revive and get out of the dungeon first then!"

"How could we fail that many times?" Drizzler thought about it but she could not find a way to solve it. The battle strategy was clearly laid out, but every time the fight started, she always got messed up. Making mistakes where she should not have made mistakes. The only reason she could think of is the [summoned cloud] not being destroyed fast enough which led the [air bomb] to kill them all.

"We have been fighting for some time now. Everyone must be tired!" Zhang Yang thought of a solution and said, "Guys, after we repaired our equipment, let's all log off and rest for an hour! It's already after 3pm now and we haven't had our lunch yet. This is a bad condition for us to continue playing. Have a meal, have some rest and we'll meet back here at 5pm sharp! We'll defeat the boss in one go then!"

"Okay!" Everyone nodded their head in agreement. In the beginning, they were eager to fight, excited to defeat the boss and claim the "First Clear" Achievement. Of course, they would not feel hunger. However, once the fight dragged on longer and longer, and getting wiped over and over again, everyone lost their will and was unable to properly focus in battle. Unsurprisingly, mistakes will be made.

They revived and went out of the dungeon to get their equipment repaired to its full durability. One by one, the team logged out and rest.

‘Fuh!’

Zhang Yang took off the helmet and let out a deep sigh. He cannot help but reminisce the Gaming Capsule he used 5 years later. In about half a year later, ‘God’s Miracle’ would have released a series of revolution!

Number 1, a change in the gameplay style, allowing players to continue to play the game even in sleep!

This method allowed countless of working adults to fully enjoy the game! Furthermore, the in-game time and reality time was set to be 3:1. Three hours in game would be one hour in reality, allowing everyone take part in this wonderful world.

Number 2, introduction to the Gaming Capsule!

The utilization of both the gaming helmet and the Gaming Capsule would not cause any effect on the player character! The Gaming Capsule was developed by the aerospace technology and the stasis chamber. It had the function to provide nutrients and supplement the body needed in a fixed time interval. As long as the players were willing to do it, they could continue to play the game as long as 15 days in real life with no side-effect! When the Gaming Capsule was first released, it was obviously too expensive for normal citizens to purchase. It was a luxury only the rich could afford. One set of Gaming Capsule actually caused millions of dollars! Even a luxury car was inferior to the machine! It was only after two years later when the developers managed to solve a manufacturer problem that the Gaming Capsule became cheaper and many now could enjoy the product!

Number 3, the launch of the Professional League Championship!

Zhang Yang clenched his fist tightly. His heart was filled with immense excitement! He only had one year left to prepare himself. One year, that was when Yu Li entered the game! With her in his mind, Zhang Yang eyes turned soft and kind, his mind was calmed down instantly as if a heavenly tree grew in his heart.

Chapter 59: One More Time!

Zhang Yang reconnected to the game exactly on 5pm. He strolled for a little while and the rest of team appeared beside him almost simultaneously.

“Wow, I’ve got to tell you! After I had an awesome meal and had a warm bath, I feel so relaxed!” Drizzler sounded refreshed and energetic. “I feel like I could punch a tiger if one comes out now!”

“Haha! Very well, Tiger Slayer! I have high expectations of you!” Zhang Yang snickered. Drizzler snorted and proudly replied, “Hmph! Just watch me!”

The party team re-grouped together and enter the dungeon once again. They could not even remember how many times they had entered and re-entered. Now that the first boss was killed off before; the entire arena was empty. The only remaining monster in this dungeon was the boss; until the dungeon was refreshed and respawned all the missing monsters at midnight.

“Alright, I’m not going to waste my breath to explain again. I believe everyone knows what they should do by now. We can win this if each of you do your part! Remember! WE ARE THE BEST!”

“WE ARE THE BEST!”

“Let’s go!”

Shush!

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler used [charge] at the same time. Zhang Yang then activated [provoke], drawing the boss’ attention towards him.

“Puny mortals! Die in hell!” Almost every boss loved to use this kind of arrogant, powerful, and even provoking kind of speech to officially start the fight.

90%, 80%... The boss’ HP reduced smoothly without any complications.

‘Ding! Air Spirit Ains has used [summoned cloud]!’

“Careful! The farts are coming!” Zhang Yang screamed to alert the members. In an instant, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and Little Snow had their eyes locked onto the clouds and started their attacks.

‘-282!’

‘-381!’

‘-224!’

Having only 5,000 HP, the cloud was quickly destroyed under the concentrated chain attacks by 3 players.

“That’s right! That’s the way to do it! Look at how easy that was!”

Zhang Yang moved around, pulling the boss on the hand, and evading incoming [air bomb] on the other. In fact, all five of the party members were not stationary. Everyone was always constantly moving around. The bomb was not meant to be taken lightly; one touch and they would be completely wiped out again!

70%, 60%, 50%...

The battle went better than expected this time. Their reaction speed and attention were raised after having proper rest and a decent meal. While performing at their best, the cloud was killed off in no time. No one ignored the [air bomb], and each of them carried out their role properly.

This was the true way to raid a dungeon. Each player had to play their specific role properly. An attack must have had enough damage power. A tank had to be strong enough to withstand attacks and had good crowd control skill. A healer had to be a good support and healing power. The remaining extra players filled in with the others while not making mistakes. However easy the strategy may be, it always seemed harder to execute the plan in actual battle. It was hard to make sure that everyone could perform their part flawlessly!

With that theory in mind, a 5-man dungeon was easier than a 10-man dungeon which was easier than a 20-man dungeon, and a 20-man dungeon was far easier than a 50-man dungeon! It was much easier for a 5-man team to make no mistake, but to make sure a 50-man dungeon to

run smoothly was not impossible, but extremely hard!

40%, 30%, 20%, 10%!

“Guys, fight harder! Victory is just one step ahead! Don’t let your guard down! The fight is hardest at the eleventh hour! The last part is always the hardest! Do not fret!” Zhang Yang immediately tried to boost the team’s morale. They were excited and agitated.

8%!

5%!

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

Thud! The boss falls defeated!

‘Ding! You and the party members around you have killed Air Spirit Ains. Obtaining 28,850 Experience points. (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding! Your party has successfully conquered Marzerway’s Lair: Middle Wing (Hardcore mode) and obtained the “First Clear” Achievement! This glorious accomplishment will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board. As the party leader, please name your party!’

Without needing to ask anyone for it, Zhang Yang immediately keyed in “Lone Desert Smoke” into the confirmation box and the server channel was dyed in red color again.

‘Server announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has obtained the “First Clear” Achievement: Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode). This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board (China Server)!’

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Leader) has obtained the “First Clear” Achievement: Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode). Obtaining 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill point, and 500 increased all races

reputation from the system reward!’

‘Server announcement: Player...’

“WE DID IT!” Fatty Han’s thundering voice could be heard clearly among the cheering of the other party members. Being stuck for roughly 4 hours at this boss, they could finally let loose their built up stress.

The guild channel was also in complete chaos. Everyone was extremely happy, jumping around crazily. With their guild name out in the open, everyone was celebrating this joyful event! Imagine walking in public with the guild tag on your head, all swag and cool.

“Hey, hey! Look at this player here! Don’t you know? This is the guild that claimed two consecutive “First Clear” Achievements! Huh? You’ve never heard of it? Hah, you’re outdated now, bro!”

...

“Hahaha!” Fatty Han had been laughing uncontrollably for a while. “Little Yang! How about we take down the Main Wing as well tonight?!”

“Sigh! Ignorant people sure are dangerous!” Zhang Yang shook his head in disappointment.

“Huh? What’s wrong?” Fatty Han turned and looked at Hundred Shots, pleading for an explanation. Both of them were Hunters, and since they had several common features, they became best friends immediately.

“The Main Wing is a 20-man dungeon! We can’t do it alone!” His best friend explained.

“F*ck! Why did it suddenly turned into a 20-man dungeon!?” Fatty Han became angry.

“Hahaha!” Zhang Yang laughed. “That’s because the Main Wing will drop a set equipment!”

“Set equipment?”

“Set equipment will grant a secondary effect when worn together. Out of the 5 equipment, there is the Head, Chest, Hands, Sheen, and Legs. If you have 3 of out 5 equipment you will gain an effect. If you have all 5 of the

set, you will gain the second effect! A set equipment effect is very strong; just like putting on one more piece of equipment. Having two effects is like wearing two extra equipment! Very OP!

Zhang Yang patted Drizzler on her shoulder and when she turned to at him, he pointed his finger to the corpse, gesturing her to open the corpse.

“What about the set effect of a Hunter’s equipment?” Fatty Han added.

Zhang Yang could not recall anymore. A level 20 equipment was just a temporary equipment that would be quickly replaced. Plus, he was never a Hunter and level 20 was something he had forgotten years ago!

He shook his head and said, “Sorry! I’ve forgot! The only thing I could remember was the warrior set effect. 3 equipment set effect was that every time you take damage, you have a chance to generate a barrier that can absorb up to 500 damage. The 5 equipment set effect was 10% damage increase.” While Zhang Yang was explaining to Fatty Han, Drizzler opened an equipment.

[Air Spirit Sword] (Green-Copper, One handed sword)

Weapon attack: 88-104

Attack interval: 2.4 seconds

DPS: 40

Level requirement: 20

The only person who could use this sword was Zhang Yang. However, since he already had the Grey-Silver sword in his hands, he did not need a lower grade sword!

“Take it up to the auction house! We’ll share the profit!” said Zhang Yang. All the other party members nodded their head in unison and Little Snow took the item. Being gold misers, Little Snow and Drizzler were the only ones who would try to snatch it away. If other Bandits, Guardians, or Defenders found out what they were about to do with the sword, they would literally cry their eyes out! How could any situation lead to the equipment being unwanted!?

“Little Yang, when could we fight the Main Wing?” Fatty Han had the set equipment in his mind.

“Hm. Let’s try this. Tonight, we should all split up and try to form two teams to raid the Bangar Crypt Hardcore mode. We try our best to quickly pick out 20 players with strong, above-than-average equipment.” Zhang Yang started his train of thoughts. Once he became the guild master, he was fast enough to get into character. His responsibility had increased, and so did his expanded way of thinking.

Right now, Little Snow, Drizzler, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han were level 20. There was hope that they could dominate the Hardcore Mode with just their level and equipment.

[Engineering Recipe: Gas Bomb] (Engineering Recipe)

Use: Teaches you how to make a [Gas Bomb]

Requirement: Engineering.

This boss was quite stingy. Aside from the sword, it only gave a recipe and a skill book.

Among the team, Hundred Shots took the recipe because he was the only one that learned Engineering.

“That would take days! Little Yang, what if someone else claimed the Main Wing ‘First Clear’ Achievement first?” Fatty Han was already addicted to claiming the achievement. In his mind, the achievements was rightfully theirs!

Zhang Yang laughed. “If someone can and have taken it, well, it can’t be helped! However, you must know that a 20-man dungeon is extremely hard. It’s easy if it’s just Normal mode and it would just drop normal equipment. But the Hard mode and Hardcore mode is a whole other story!”

There was a fact that Zhang Yang chose to hide; if anyone had the intention to conquer Marzerway’s Lair before level 30, they had to depend on the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to do it! And with the rarity of the recipe, Zhang Yang wholeheartedly believed that only very few people in

China possessed this particular recipe!

As long as he did not release the potion out in the market, it was downright impossible to get past through the fifth stage of the lair!

[Skill book: Holy Shield]

Use: Teaches you the skill [holy shield].

Requirement: Priest.

“Hah! It actually dropped!” Zhang Yang suddenly let out a scream. Now Little Snow can support the team better!

The skill book [holy shield] was considered to be a global drop, which meant that almost every monster in the world could have the potential to drop this skill book and not just Air Spirit Ains alone.

Once all of the loot was distributed, the party left the dungeon and went to the elf NPC to complete the quest. The elf smiled with satisfaction and awarded them with huge amounts experience points and also granted them the qualifications to enter the last dungeon, Marzerway's Lair: Main Wing.

“Now that we have achieved what we planned, I thank you all for your efforts. Now let's split up and do what you need to do! Remember! Tonight, we must be online! Please do your best to form a 20-man party!” Zhang Yang smiled happily.

“Okay!” All of them nodded their heads. Even though they had some rest, there were still people who were quite worn out and chose to log out to rest more. Zhang Yang was one of them.

It was a sudden change of character for Zhang Yang. He now had many more aspects and matters to give his thoughts to.

He was, at the very least, the vice guild master for the guild Clear Water in his previous life. A person with a degree of leadership, which helped him when he became the guild master for Lone Desert Smoke now. There was nothing that he was not used to here.

The game itself encouraged players to join a guild. The system granted a

certain level of benefit to players with a guild, like extra experience points, a level 35 mount, and discount on equipment repair or shopping. Although these extra services did not help in increasing a player's combat ability, but it was still beneficial to a certain extend.

In 'God's Miracle', guilds were categorized into 10 ranks. To increase a guild's rank, the guild would need the corresponding [Guild Upgrade Order]. The higher the guild's rank, the better the benefits a member could receive. However, aside from the [Guild Upgrade Order], the guild would have to accumulate the required amount of guild experience points.

Zhang Yang remembered clearly, the first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] would be dropped at the level 30 dungeon, Shadowmoon Castle. However, his guild's current accumulated experience points was only 16%!

To obtain the guild's experience points, its member had to complete the guild quest! Zhang Yang then decided that the first thing he would do later was to get everyone to complete them!

Chapter 60: Guild Contribution

“World! Greeny! Fang! Foxey! Tonight, I want each of you to lead teams of your own. We will be carrying out a raid through the Front Wing and Middle Wing. I want all of your members to get qualified for entry to the Main Wing!”

Sky Shaman, the guild master of Sky High, was gathering elites in the guild to prepare for a large-scale campaign.

“Guild master, there are only 17 Level 20 players available at the moment! We can’t form 4 teams!” World Hunter was quick to address the guild master’s oversight.

“...H-How long? How long before we have 20 level 20 players?”

“About 5 hours, sir!”

“That’s too slow! I want you to arrange a team. I want all level 17 members to help those at Level 19 to level up! Within 2 hours, I want to see all of them at Level 20!”

“Sir, yes sir!”

Sky Shaman turned around and faced his members. His face, initially lined with worry and anxiety, abruptly broke into a broad, knowing smile.

“Brothers, Zhan Yu and his party may have left us behind for now. But, know this! They are in a bit of a pickle right now!”

Sky Shaman’s smiled with such confidence that if he did not know any better, victory was already well within his grasp.

“Guild master?” His guildmates spoke up uncertainly, not sharing his sense of conviction, as evidenced by their past repeated losses to Zhan Yu.

Sky Shaman’s smile only grew wider.

“They are currently lacking in party members! Take a look at their party formations. They have always been a wild bunch that charges into the fray like Leeroy Jenkins. They may have taken on both the Bangar Crypt and also part of the Marzerway’s Lair. Have any of you realized that to be the

most likely scenario? We, Sky High have dispatched two parties to take down the Marzerway's Lair. The same goes for The Dominators and Crimson Rage. Both guilds have dispatched 2 parties just like we did! However, it seems that the most Zhan Yu can cobble up together is one miserable party! This can only lead to one sad conclusion; they simply do not have sufficient Level 20 members!"

"The Main-Wing is a 20-man dungeon. No matter how strong Zhan Yu's party may be, they are but a small team! How could they possibly take down the Main Wing with just 5 people?"

World Hunter and his party members' eyes radiated with renewed hope at the prospect of victory, for once.

"Now listen up! This will be our secret strategy! Know that we must treasure every minute, every second of the day and fight! Fight for our guild's honor! We shall go straight ahead with the Main Wing and start with the Normal Mode. There, we will take our time to gather intelligence on the boss! Discover every possible skill, explore every possible outcome! The equipment dropped in the Normal Mode are all Level 20 Black-Steel equipment, which are almost on par with Level 10 Green-Copper equipment! If you raid the Normal Mode of the Main Wing, it will be no different from raiding the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode! Furthermore, this nest will drop set-based equipment! Be it Black-Steel, Green-Copper, or even Grey-Silver, they will all be set equipment with potential set effects!"

Sky Shaman eyes gleamed with infectious excitement. He went on.

"The Hard Mode of the nest will drop a level 20 Green-Copper equipment! Which are the same drops as the Hardcore Modes of the Front Wing and Middle Wing! Which is why I have deduced that we could not possibly fall behind in terms of equipment strength! In fact, we could be even stronger than them! If my calculation is correct, we will have 4 days before Zhan Yu can even muster up a 20-man party! What say you my brethren? With a 4 days head start, with all the tactical advantage from all the recon we could carry out, is losing to them even a possibility?!"

"Sir, no sir! We will win!"

“That’s the spirit! We will win! No, we must win! The “First Clear” Achievement of a 20-man Hardcore dungeon is much more valuable than a puny 5-man dungeon!”

“We, the Sky High guild...”

“ARE THE STRONGEST!”

Sky High’s burning passion to overtake Zhan Yu was truly admirable! However, if this so-called burning passion was to be witnessed by Zhang Yang, he would not be intimidated by one bit nor be in awe. He would, on the contrary, be laughing his head off sinisterly. A bunch of lowly players who think that they even matter in the big league! If they did not have Zhan Yu’s [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to begin with, they would never ever get pass the fifth phase of the Marzerway’s! Yeah sure, the Normal Mode was practically a free service for you all, but the Hardcore Mode? If not for anything else pray that you could even end up walking out of the dungeon in one piece!

.....

Sky Shaman was not the only one that had a plan to counter Zhan Yu. The Dominator and Crimson Rage also had their eyes on the apparent weakness of Zhan Yu and had devised a plan to overtake him. The war for the next dungeon “First Clear” Achievement was going to get wilder and fiercer!

Zhang Yang logged into the game after his dinner.

He opened the guild member window and checked the members’ statuses. There were a total of 316 members. Only 11 players were Level 15 and 99% of the guild member had exceeded Level 10. They were all still currently raiding the Bangar Crypt.

Zhang Yang quickly invited Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Drizzler, and Little Snow into the party and explained his strategy. Once he gained their approval, he turned to the guild channel and began his speech.

“Hi everyone, of the Lone Desert Smoke. I’m Zhan Yu, the new guild master!”

“Woah! Woah! It's big brother Zhan Yu! You've finally shown yourself!”

“Wow! My idol! Ahh! Please come closer!”

“Please power level me!”

“Praise the almighty boss Zhan Yu!”

“Ahem! Everyone please calm down for a moment and let me speak!”

Zhang Yang waited for a moment, until the members had calmed down. Only then he continued, “Some say when you receive a higher title, you would need to show your worth for it. Now that I have accepted the title of guild master, this is my way of showing my worth!”

“Hahahaha!” Everyone in the guild broke out in hearty laughter.

“In an hour's time, Little Snow, Drizzler, Hundred Shots, Slim and Handsome, and I will lead two parties into the Bangar Crypt, Hardcore Mode! There, we will start to pick and select the best of you!”

“Awesome! I want in!”

“Oh! Me too!”

“Hey! I want in as well!”

“Big Bro Zhan Yu! Please take care of me!”

Everyone started to get excited as they heard that Zhan Yu himself will be leading them to a dungeon. When there was a chance to get better equipment, who would want to miss out?

Zhang Yang waited again for the guild members to settle down and then he continued.

“I'm sure everyone is looking forward for this, but keep in mind that there are only two parties available. There are limited slots! Which is why Drizzler and I have made a decision to properly solve this problem. Whoever has contributed more to the guild will be prioritized!”

“Big boss Zhan Yu. What is this guild contribution and how do we get them?” Most of the members started to echo the question.

“Hehe, this is a new invention of mine!” Zhang Yang explained.

“In the future, whenever we want to raid a dungeon, the members with higher guild contributions will have higher priorities in joining the expedition! To earn contribution points, you must complete a guild quest. I have already designed a few guild quests. Furthermore, you can also earn contribution points by raiding the specifically assigned dungeon! There are other ways for you to earn contribution points such as, donating items into the guild’s bank, obtaining special system rewards and help in promoting the guild’s name! However, these points aren’t just for show. You can spend these points to exchange equipment from the guild! That is why, everyone has the chance to do it!”

The guild got rowdy and some had even scooted away to carry out the new guild quests.

Guild quests were almost similar to that of daily quests. You could only complete 5 quests a day. However, these quests were repeatable. This meant that the quests could be repeated day after day. The quests were simple and easy to complete. Some of the quest were as easy as killing a certain number of monster, or running from places to places. All it would take was just a few moments of your time.

Zhang Yang switched to the party channel and spoke to the team.

“Later, I will bring a team on my own. The 4 of you will bring another team! Both Fatty and Hundred Shots are Beastmaster classes. Their two pets are almost the same as two tanks. With their level, they can easily take down a Level 10 Hardcore dungeon!

“Little Yang, can you really do it alone?” Fatty Han tried to reason with Zhang Yang. He was afraid that he might get over his head and fail to leave a good impression to the guild members.

Zhang Yang snickered. “If that’s the case. How about we make a bet? Let’s compete in a race for the dungeon speed run!”

Drizzler quickly replied. “Pfft! Puny little tank boy. We have 4 Level 20 players here including me. Even if you could fight with all your might, you could only be matched with both pervy-Fatty and Uncle Hundred. Plus, I’m a super sailor soldier! Just I alone would be an even match for 6 or 7 of

your party members! Furthermore, we have my cousin here with her super-duper huge ‘support!’” Drizzler paused and grasped two invisible balls in her hands that seemed to be at chest-level. “Our team would only need one healer!”

“Ha! That’s right!” Little Snow wrapped her arms underneath her chest and slightly raised them up, causing them to jiggle.

“Haha! I take it that you have accepted the challenge?” Zhang Yang intentionally provoked them.

Drizzler walked up to Zhang Yang with an intimidating expression. She patted her flat chest and said out loud, “We accept! Just you wait! You’ll soon be kneeling on the floor admitting your defeat!”

“Little Yang. Even though I’ve always been supporting your back, but now, I just want to defeat you badly!” Fatty Han rebelled.

“Zhan Yu. This is a fight for honor and pride. I will not hold back!” Hundred Shots declared.

“Alright, alright. I still have to remind you that the skill of the first boss, Black Claw, will increase the damage you take. It is not a conventional attack buff, but rather a debuff on it’s target. Very deadly. Even if you’re Level 40, your pet will still die in a hit if you let the debuffs stack too high! The best strategy is this. Have two of your pets go up and fight together to accumulate aggro. Pull back any one of the two pets that is the first to stack 2 layers of [death stare]. Have the second pet take over the aggro and hold on. When the second pet is inflicted with 2 stacks of [death stare], pull it back and switch the other pet back in. This one of the many ways to ‘switch’ tanks.” Zhang Yang gave them the advice because he was afraid that they were not all free from chances of failure.

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han nodded together approvingly. They thought that Zhang Yang’s strategy made perfect sense.

One hour later.

The members’ contribution points started to have some visible changes. There were more than 10 members who had completed 5 guild quests and

obtained 5 points each. Some others had stopped at 4 and 3 points individually. The guild experience points managed to accumulate to a total of 1%!

“Little Snow! You guys get to pick your party member first!” Zhang Yang smiled sincerely as he let them have the first pick.

Now that they had the chance, they did not want to lose to Zhang Yang’s little challenge. They then chose accordingly to their class and guild contribution and picked out 6 members to form a 10-man party. After they had formed their party, Zhang Yang picked the next 9 members with the highest guild contribution points and also formed a complete party.

Those who had been selected were happy and satisfied. This was not to say those who were not selected lost all hope. They knew that if they were not picked today, there is always a chance that they could be selected tomorrow! All members were more than eager to complete their guild quests.

“Gather at the dungeon entrance later. We’ll start the timer and go in together!”

With the strong intention to win the dungeon, everyone braced themselves to fight the dungeon with a welcoming heart. Even if they could not get their hands on an equipment, they would still fight for victory.

After 10 minutes, 2 teams; 20 players were gathered at the dungeon entrance.

“Little Yang. Competition comes before our friendship now. We will not hold back this time!”

“Hehe! Likewise!”

“To the dungeon!”

Zhang Yang switched to the party channel.

“Fellow members! Are you ready to lose to them?”

“Hell no!”

“Do you want to win?”

“HELL YEAH!”

“Awesome! Later, I’ll go ahead and kite the monsters, do not attack until I say so! If you cannot follow this one thing, please leave the dungeon now!” Zhang Yang’s tone gradually became stern.

“Roger that!”

Zhang Yang drew his blade and used [charge] on one of the monsters. Following closely was a normal attack that dealt 364 damage and raised his Rage by 39 points. He immediately used [horizontal sweep] and dealt significant damage to the group of monsters.

He then shouted without looking back at his team mates. “Follow me!”

Zhang Yang moved further into the dungeon. The rest of the party were awestruck for a moment before quickly recovering and regaining their pace after his trail.

And just like that, Zhang Yang was at the forefront, closely followed by the monsters that he had not killed off, and the further behind were the party members.

In a short amount of time, Zhang Yang arrived to the second wave of monsters. Just as his [charge] cooldown refreshed, he immediately used [charge] and dashed towards them, leaving the monsters that were following behind further. He did a normal attack, following closely with a [horizontal sweep] and a [thunder strike]. The chain attack dealt a huge amount of damage and also caused a 5-second slowdown on the monsters following behind.

Zhang Yang moved on further into the dungeon and within 3 minutes, they had already arrived at the first boss’s entrance. Zhang Yang had kited not only the monsters but also the Bouncers that stood guard at the boss’s chamber. Zhang Yang had more than 10 monsters kited in a go!

T-This is, a straight flush!

Chapter 61: One Straight Flush

“Fight now!”

In the middle of the skirmish, evading ferocious attacks, dodging claws, casting skills, and even in the midst of battle, Zhang Yang’s ability to command the team was not compromised one bit!

Shush! Zhang Yang had totally did a number on the enemy that left all men spellbound!

No one besides Zhang Yang alone was above Level 20, thus they did not possess any AoE skills; they were only limited to damaging one monster at a time. According to the Damage Statistics, Zhang Yang completely dominated the entire party with a staggering 92% damage contribution! How many [horizontal sweep] or [thunder strike] could a Level 10 monster with 3,000 HP take?

After 40 seconds, monsters lay defeated and everyone gained a luxurious amount of experience points. Since Zhang Yang was already Level 22, the amount of experience points a Level 10 monster could provide for him was minuscule. For the most part however, he did help to contribute to the morale of the party.

“Woah! That’s a lot of experience points!”

“This is just too awesome. I got like 20k experience points in 5 minutes. I’m leveling up like there’s no tomorrow!”

“With this speed, we would have certainly left the other team in the dust!”

“It’s in the bag!”

“Woohoo! Praise our leader! Praise our guild master!”

Everyone’s faces were filled with excitement. Their admiration towards Zhang Yang could only grow ever more.

Zhang Yang flashed a small smile. “Shush! Don’t brag in the guild channel! Give them some hope!”

“Geh Geh!” The party snickered.

“Alright, it’s time to fight the boss! Everyone, focus on your attacks! Do what you’re supposed to do!” Zhang Yang then used [charge] and dashed ahead.

This was a completely one-sided battle. The boss was defeated in merely 3 minutes. It dropped 3 pieces of equipment.

“Now, for the equipment. Each equipment will cost you 20 guild contribution points. Those with higher points will have priority and those with the equal points shall roll dices for the equipment. Once you have obtained the equipment, your contribution points will be deducted! The deducted points will be distributed among all the party members equally.”

Zhang Yang had modified the distribution method to Party Leader Distribution before entering the dungeon. After the inevitable mess that came whenever anything was employed practically for the first time, the equipment was finally distributed. The boss was decimated in 3 minutes but distribution of the spoils took a whole 5 minutes.

Moving on!

Zhang Yang used the same method, with one straight flush to grab the aggro from all the monsters along the way up to the boss entrance and fought them there. Just as they had finished with the monster and were preparing to start with the second boss, Fatty Han posted in the guild channel, addressing Zhang Yang.

“Hehe, Little Yang, we have just defeated the first boss. Where are you now?” His voice sounded quite jubilant, as if he was sure that he had surpassed Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang turned around and winked, his eyes sparkling with mischief.

“We are just about to fight the boss!”

It was the truth, alright. It just happened to not be the entire truth!

Obviously, Fatty Han’s party did not anticipate Zhang Yang using such an abusive method like this one straight flushing to raid the dungeon.

Fatty Han replied with a smirk on his face. “Little Yang, don’t give up just yet. There are still 3 bosses. You may still have the chance to catch up to us! Haha! I’ll be going then!”

Zhang Yang’s ability was not a mystery for them, everyone knew how strong he was. To think that they could actually stand a chance to beat him head on, led Fatty Han and his party almost delirious with excitement!

Zhang Yang brandished his sword and said, “Alright guys, it’s time to kick some ass! Remember to fall back you get afflicted with the curse! Don’t falter and break our chain combo either, yeah!” The battle started quickly and ended in the same manner. Even with Zhang Yang’s reminder, there were still 4 careless players who stood still when they were cursed with the [Curse of Water and Fire]. Silently, Zhang Yang remembered each and everyone’s performance and had secretly appraised and graded them on play style and ability.

After they distributed the equipment, the party went forward and used the same method to kite the monsters all the way to the third boss’ entrance.

Fatty Han announced again when his team had just defeated the second boss. Fatty Han’s ineffective provocation only left Zhang Yang and his team laughing silently.

After a little effort, they successfully defeated the third boss and also the hidden boss, clearing the entire dungeon smoothly and swiftly.

“We’re done!” Zhang Yang announced in the guild channel.

“Impossible!” Fatty Han and his team cried.

After keeping their mouth shut for so long, they finally could take brag all day long about his godly method “one straight flush”

“You sneaky, noob tank!” Drizzler cried out in the guild channel.

“Hah! Sneaky? This is called a “Secret Strategy”! Would you reveal your trump card to the enemy?” Zhang Yang burst out, laughing.

“Hmph! I despise you!” said Drizzler angrily.

Once the equipment was distributed, the guild now had many players with negative contribution points. They would have to slowly complete guild quests and raid dungeons to raise their contribution points back up. While the rest of the party members that did not manage to obtain equipment have accumulated more points; Zhang Yang, Little Snow, and the rest have gained 26 points each.

After a short while, the party was disbanded under Zhang Yang's command. Each of them went on to their own errands. Zhang Yang, wanting to set an example for his fellow guild mates then decided to complete some of the guild quests himself. After accepting a kill quest, he took off and arrived at the assigned destination. His quest was very simple and basic, that was to kill and eliminate some Level 10 monsters. This quest was a breather in comparison to the hectic rush he experienced in the raids earlier on.

As he hacked his way through the targets, he felt alarms going off in his head. Instinctive impulses tugged at his heart. Just as when he stepped forward, the sensation grew stronger and he noticed a strange, tangible effect of light bending in the air close by.

It was a bandit! A bandit in stealth mode!

With over 3 years of combat experience below his belt, Zhang Yang had developed a sharp combative instinct. He immediately got out from the battle mode. As his Rage points slowly decreased from 47 points, he immediately used a [horizontal sweep]. The gleam of his sword spread across everywhere, illuminating the area!

‘-703!’

The damage text popped out, a human figure fizzled from the air into visibility, revealing that his HP had dropped from 1110 to 407!

‘Ding! You have initiated an attack on 44 Bandits. You are now penalized with the Red Tag! If you were killed in this condition, you will drop 2 levels and experience a 100% equipment break!’

“Haha! The infamous 44 Bandits!” Zhang Yang swung his sword and dealt a normal attack on him. 44 Bandits, the Bandit of the Sword and Fire

Mercenary group.

‘Dodge!’

The enemy was agile. He dodged Zhang Yang sword and thrust his daggers to counterattack.

Zhang Yang activated [block] and nullified the enemy’s attack.

‘-102!’

44 Bandit received the [block] reflect damage and Zhang Yang quickly activated the [shield bash], dealing another 219 damage to him.

All normal attacks would have a detectable sign before it is triggered. As long as a player’s own reaction rate was fast enough, one could easily dodge any normal attack with ease. However, there was almost no way to anticipate a skill. Even if you attempted to rely on instinct to predict a skill activation, the body simply could not keep up with the skill activation speed and make necessary evasive maneuvers. Even if you raised your Dexterity to the maximum, it wouldn’t help one bit! To counter a skill, you must use another skill!

“F*ck! How could you be dealing so much damage!?” The enemy finally voiced out in frustration.

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and use [thunder strike] to deal a final 102 damage, instantly killing 44 Bandits.

‘Ding! You have killed 44 Bandits!’

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword and sent a private message to the enemy.

“I don’t think that I have ever offended anyone from the Sword and Fire Mercenary group. Why is there an assassination mark on me?”

He would never believe him if he said that he was sneaking up on him just to say “Hello”.

After a noted pause, the enemy replied. “I was hired to kill you back down to Level 0!”

“Oh! I wonder who would want to do that.”

“I’m sorry. Business is private and confidential. We would never reveal our client’s private info!”

“Well then, do you still insist on killing me?”

“Business is business. I will do it.”

Zhang Yang smiled. To think some there is someone out there who wished to decrease his level, it had to be someone from Pride! He never thought that Pride had such wide connections and managed to hire someone from the “Trash” Mercenary!

...

44 Bandits ran back to his body in his phantom state. Before reviving, he looked around and went ahead with the deed once he was sure that Zhang Yang had left the place. He then wasted no time in turning invisible and walked towards the bush to eat recovery snacks.

Shush!

A figure dashed out and a star appeared on his head circling around. He was stunned and rendered immobile.

‘Ding! You have been stunned by Player Zhan Yu! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

‘-362!’

In the stunned condition, all 44 Bandits could do was to witness the sword flying towards him, draining off his residual HP down to 0.

‘Ding! You have died!’

“F*ck!” 44 Bandits cried out as he was sent back to the revive point. His level dropped from 17 to 15! After giving it some thought, he sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

“How could you still use [charge] on me when I am in stealth mode?”

Stealth was not 100% imperceptible. You could still be detected when you’re close enough to someone else! However, [charge] was a skill that

had a limited ranged activation condition. It could not be activated is the distant is too close. That was why 44 Bandits could not understand how Zhang Yang could still stun him with [charge] when he was not anywhere close to him!

Zhang Yang replied.

“If you were in my shoes, would you reveal the secret?”

“No!” 44 Bandits replied honestly.

“Well. That explains it!” Zhang yang laughed it off.

It was no big secret. One, Zhang Yang had 3 years of combat experience fighting with a Bandit, he had an instinctive method to detect a “hidden” Bandit. Two, the level gap between the two of them was far too great, weakening the effect of [stealth]!

44 Bandits returned again to his body, however, he lingered around instead of reviving himself. He was still afraid that Zhang Yang might still be guarding his body. After some time, he sent another private message.

“Zhan Yu. Would you dare to fight with me fair and square?”

“Sure!”

44 Bandits relaxed, thinking that this player was soft hearted!

Boom! @#\$%#@

Just after he revived and was eating on some recovery item, he was stunned and sent back to the revive point.

“F*cking hell! You’re an honorable man! Why would you break on your promise!” cried 44 Bandits furiously.

“You’d actually believe the words from the enemy. You’re really naïve!” Zhang Yang snickered.

In his previous life, 44 Bandits was famous because of his sexual offences. In stealth mode, he had always picked low level female players as his target. In ‘God’s Miracle’, you could only reveal yourself from stealth mode if you attack or received an attack. Doing naughty things to a

female player did not trigger the stealth dispel. Furthermore, low level players would have a hard time detecting a high level “hidden” Bandit.

It was because of his act of sexual offences, many female players lodged their complaint to the game developers, forcing them to modify the condition of [stealth].

This was why Zhang Yang was extremely hostile towards this man. He took this chance to properly teach him a lesson!

44 Bandits chose to remain quiet for a while and eventually chose to log off.

Zhang Yang on the other hand chose to remain on guard for a while and only continued his guild quest when he had accurately deduced that the enemy had logged out.

Chapter 62: Emmy's Test of Strength

With the current race to gather more guild contribution, every member had their priority set to complete daily guild quest, competing with each other to accumulate more points! Zhang Yang had decreed that the first who reached level 20 will be added into the Marzerway's Lair's raiding party. And because of that decree, the guild atmosphere was most intense, with everyone wanting to get their hands on the set equipment!

Who would not want to join Zhang Yang to be one of the first few to raid the Hardcore dungeon and get their names on the "First Clear" Achievement Board? It would be the highest honor and dignity to have their names appear on the server announcements. With that colored announcement texts appearing in the server channel, completely dyed in red, it would be so exciting! Even if it was a step behind; if they could not get the "First Clear" Achievement, they could still get their hands on powerful equipment! Is that not the game's own unspoken rule? To get powerful equipment to dominate the world?

Still, Level is not something anyone could just raise up anytime they want. To form a team of 20 players at Level 20 would take at least 3 to 4 days! All he could do is wait. Ever since 44 Bandits failed in his assassination attempt on Zhang Yang, he was never attacked by them anymore. However, Zhang Yang still advised his friends to stay close to each other and reduced any lone activities. He did not want to give even a small chance for them to get killed.

The second day, after Zhang Yang and his merry little team of 5-man party raided the Marzerway's Lair Front and Middle Wing dungeon, Zhang Yang brought them to a village called Antelope Village

"Noob tank! Why did you bring us here for?!" Drizzler finally cried out angrily.

Zhang Yang smiled provocatively. "Hah! And here I thought that you would actually keep quiet for a little while more!"

After yesterday's friendly bet, Drizzler had a little quarrel with Zhang

Yang and said that she would want to cut ties with him. This morning, when she logged in, the little kid remained silent and gave Zhang Yang the cold treatment. Even in the dungeon, she had not spoken a word to him. However, the little kid would always behave according to her age. She eventually forgot about her own oath.

Enraged, Drizzler shouted at Zhang Yang.

“You sly fox! I dare you to compete again today!”

“Sure! But I want to raise the stakes. The loser must pay 1,000 gold!”

Suddenly, her expression changed. She looked like she was in pain, as if there was a knife pierced into her belly. To her, receiving money was an absolute bliss; an orgasmic feeling. But if you asked her to give up her own money, she would resist until the end of time! She appeared to be reluctant and unwilling and finally, she bitterly said, “No money!”

“Didn’t you just get 8,000 gold this morning?” Zhang Yang quickly debunked her makeshift lie.

The 8,000 gold was obtained from the bet with The Dominators and Sky High. Since Zhang Yang and his team won the bet, they obtained 40,000 gold from both of the guild as their victory reward. They received their reward via the mail system and each one of them obtained 8,000 gold coins each.

“I-I’ve given them to cousin!” Drizzler quickly passed the baton to Little Snow, trying to avoid the situation and save herself.

“Ha! Haha!” Zhang Yang forced a laugh out. He too did not want to dwell to long in this topic.

“We are here to do a quest!”

“What quest?” said Fatty Han. He was actually in the middle of a “heated” conversation with the “service ladies” from Blaze City. Even though he left the guild not too long ago, he was unwilling to just forget about the girls there.

Zhang Yang purposely played with the party members and slowly,

dramatically revealed the answer.

“It’s the....”

“ ...”

“It’s the main quest!”

“The main quest?!” All of them shouted in unison. “What’s the reward?”

Everyone knew that the main quest would reward them luxuriously, but up to now, there was no player who had ever completed a main quest. No one knew the reward! Even the game developers were clandestine with the release of the quest. They had made the quest to be very mysterious and hard to detect!

“A bunch of stuff!”

His vague statement immediately angered the party. Zhang Yang quickly raised his hands to surrender. Truthfully, he was not sure about the rewards himself. All he knew was that this quest was the [Invade the Spectres] main story quest.

If he had still remained quiet, he would be sure to further anger the team! He quickly squeezed his brain to think of anything to say.

“It should be Skill Points or Yellow-Gold equipment. I think there is also a chance to get super awesome AoE ultimate skill book!”

“OHH!! Let’s go!”

Everyone got excited and walked into the village together.

“Where is everybody?”

The party entered the village and walked around inside for a while. Besides the wind and houses, there was no one around, leaving a kind of lonely and creepy feeling. Little Snow shivered and had goosebumps. Unable to calm herself, Little Snow moved closer to Drizzler.

“Hm. The quest is to find out the source of this phenomena!”

While the team was trying their best to search for clues. Zhang Yang was trying his best to recall the memories of this place. It was a long time

ago; he could not remember everything in detail. All he remembered was that the main story quest should have started in this village. He could not remember how to trigger it! After all, he would not have known that he needed to return to the past!

The entire party split up and searched high and low for clues. They searched every house, every well, and even in the underground basement and upstairs cellar. Yet they could not find anyone.

“Mr. Holmes! There isn’t anyone here, not a single shadow. Where and from whom do we receive the quest? Hmm?” Little Snow rolled her eyes. Even though her target was Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots were both collateral victims, mesmerized by her.

Zhang Yang appeared to not to hear. He was frowning and thinking. After sometime, he looked up and said, “Did you say something? Mind repeating that?”

“You want me to repeat what I said? Ok! You’re a pig head!” Little Snow snarled.

“That’s right!” Zhang Yang had figured it out.

“Take off your clothes!”

Little Snow was stunned.

“Hey hey! We are not that close enough to be doing those things! Then again, even if I did have a thing for you, there are still p-people a-around...”

“Han Yin Xue! Behave yourself!” said Drizzler angrily.

Zhang Yang burst laughing for a moment and calm down.

“I’m so sorry! Haha! Let me rephrase that. Take off your equipment. We’re about to kill ourselves. If we removed all our equipment, we would save the equipment durability and repair fees!”

“And why would we need to kill ourselves?!”

“Because, the NPC that will give us the quest, is a ghost!”

“Pu...” Drizzler laughed and quickly stopped when she saw Zhang Yang was not joking about it.

“R-really?” said Drizzler.

“Yeah!” Zhang Yang quickly unequipped his gears. The good thing about ‘God’s Miracle’ was that under a complete “naked” status, a character would still have indestructible clothing, for modesty purposes. Men would have a pair of shorts while women would have their lingerie on.

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han followed and quickly “stripped” down to their short pants.

When all 3 of them were “naked”, they turned their sight on the girls, visually assaulting them.

Drizzler felt their stares and quickly covered her chest. “W-what are you guys up to?”

“Little brat. Relax!” Zhang Yang gestured with his hands.

“With a body like that, no guys who be interested in you. Not even in 10 years!” Zhang Yang sighed.

“EXCUUSE ME!??” Drizzler burst with anger.

“What exactly did you mean when you said ‘With a body like that’ huh?! How could you look at this wonderful and slender body and say that no one in the entire world would be interested in this hot piece of ass?”

Little Snow quickly stepped in and pulled Drizzler close. “Hmph! You bet! We are not going to undress here! Hmph! Let’s get going then!”

“Er...fine? Let’s go to the forest there and let the monsters there kill us!”

Zhang Yang was the first one to get out of the village. The rest of the party followed closely behind.

Before Zhang Yang moved on, he turned and reminded Drizzler one last time.

“Little brat. If you get killed wearing all of your equipment, you’re going to be incurred the expensive repair fees!” said Zhang Yang provokingly.

As expected, both Drizzler and Little Snow cringed. However, they stood firm with their decision, for them, money comes after pride!

Outside the village, there were Level 20 monsters on the side of the pathway. All 5 of them rushed and triggered the monster's hostility, allowing the monsters to attack them without resisting. After a while, 5 souls appeared at the village's graveyard.

"Eh!? There is a girl up there!" In their phantom-like soul state, the 5 of them immediately spotted a ghostly little girl walking around the exit of the graveyard. On her head, there was a yellow colored exclamation mark.

[Emmy's Soul] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Zhang Yang quickly moved in and approached the girl.

"Little girl. Why are you alone here?"

"Big brother! I'm scared!" the girl replied quietly.

"Oh...little girl. Don't be scared. Tell me, where are your parents? Where are the rest of the villagers?" Zhang Yang continue the conversation, hoping to trigger the quest.

"They...they're all dead! Sob...sob..." Emmy started to cry but in the soul state, there were no tears.

Little Snow's motherly instinct kicked in. She quickly approached and hugged the girl. "There, there. Don't cry little girl!"

"Little girl, who killed your parents and the villagers!" Zhang Yang continued his attempt to trigger the quest.

Emmy sunk her head into Little Snow's chest and buried in deeper.

"Emmy cannot tell you that! It's too dangerous! You will die!"

"Don't worry. We are soldiers from the White Jade Castle!" Zhang Yang said loudly.

"Really?" Emmy eyes glittered.

“Really!”

Emmy raised her head and looked at Zhang Yang suspiciously.

“You have to prove your strength! I will not let you die for nothing!”

‘Ding! Emmy has a quest for you: A Test of Strength. Will you accept it?’

After all of them accepted the quest, the exclamation mark on her head turned into a white question mark. A white question mark indicated the quest was still incomplete. Once the quest was completed, the white question mark will turn yellow.

After accepting the quest, the 5 of them quickly revived. Zhang Yang checked the quest description.

[A Test of Strength (1)] (Difficulty level: C)

Quest description: To prove your true strength, Emmy has asked you to collect 10 pieces of [Finger Bone]! The item can be collected from the monster, Pale Skeleton. These monsters should be located around the flatlands north of the village.

Progress: Collected Finger Bone 0/10

“Let’s go! To the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands!” Zhang Yang and the guys quickly put on their equipment and ate recovery items before they started their journey.

After ten minutes of walking, the party approached their destination. As they continued further, the atmosphere gradually changed. The green grass turned a sickly greyish color. The air around them become heavier and darker. The environment turned dull and their visibility dropped. All of them felt like they had been trapped in a caged filled with thick fog.

Within the mist, they could see skeletal monsters walking about.

‘Ding! You have entered the field: Desolated Ghostly Flatland!’

“This place gives me the creeps!” said Drizzler. Her frown was clearly visible despite the thick fog.

“Let’s get this going!” Zhang Yang said.

“These are normal monsters. They are not that hard to kill! Let’s split up! It’s no use sticking together. We are hunting for our own quest item.”

[Pale Skeleton] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 1,250

Everyone followed Zhang Yang’s advice and went their separate ways. Even though the monsters’ level were ahead of them, their equipment was strong enough to make killing fairly easy. The problem was not about the killing but the item drop rate. On average, the drop rate was at 5 monsters per [Bone Finger].

The party took almost 20 minutes to gather enough items. They returned to the village to complete the quest. However, they needed to die again in order to talk to Emmy.

The party completed the quest one after another, but Emmy remained unconvinced with their strength. She then issued another quest. Zhang Yang and his party had already anticipated a follow-up quest since the quest name carried a number in its name. They accepted the quest without any hassle and proceed on with it.

[A Test of Strength (2)] (Difficulty level: C)

Quest description: Emmy wants you to further prove your strength. Start by killing Weak Zombies! You can find this monster in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands north of the village.

Progress: Killed Weak Zombies 0/20

“This is so troublesome! We have to die every time we submit the quest! Furthermore, the hunting field and the NPC is so far apart! Which dumb idiot designed this?!” Drizzler scolded on and on.

Zhang Yang snickered.

“If it wasn’t designed this way. Other players would have easily found this quest!”

Chapter 63: Crafting the Antidote

The second quest was also an easy feat. However, the problem in this case was the spawn rate. Weak Zombies were simply too scarce. They spent too much time hunting for them one at a time. It was lucky that the game had a shared party kill system. As long as the party members did not stray too far away from each other, any Weak Zombie that Zhang Yang killed will also be counted as a kill for the rest of the team. The same went for anyone else. Still, they had to spend an hour to be able to kill a total of 20 Weak Zombies.

“This pisses me off!” Drizzler was a temperamental girl. She could not endure any form of slow progress that required patience. “Argh! I don’t care how sad or pitiful the girl is. If she gives out another quest that requires me to run around again, I’d smack her upside down!”

10 minutes later.

“Waa...haa...” Drizzler broke down. “Argh...why couldn’t I steel my resolve...waa waa...I just can’t help it! Look at her! She is so sad! Now I am sad!” Drizzler failed at her attempt to be stern.

“Haha! It can’t be helped! Let’s continue on!”

[A Test of Strength (3)] (Difficulty level: C)

Quest description: Emmy requires you to further prove your strength! Kill 50 Obese Ghouls to prove it. You can find this monster in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands north of the village.

Progress: Killed Obese Ghoul 0/50

Luckily the third quest was also a kill quest. Even though the kill count increased, the time taken to complete this quest was much faster than the previous one! Unlike the low spawn rate of Weak Zombies or the low drop rate of the [Bone Finger], the Obese Ghouls’ spawn rate was so high that they managed to finish the quest in no time.

“I swear that this time! I will just dump this quest if Emmy issues another quest like this! Hmph! I will definitely walk the talk!” said Drizzler

on their way back to the NPC.

Zhang Yang snickered. “Drizzler, you’re a pot calling the kettle black!”

“Huh? Black? I’m not racist!”

“No Drizzler. It’s means that you’re the epitome of irony.”

“Noob tank! I curse you to love guys instead of girls!”

“Woah there! Little brat! You really hate me don’t you!”

“They see me rollin’ they hatin’...” Fatty Han started to sing the song that was viral on the internet.

When they arrived at the village, they killed themselves again to talk with Emmy.

“Big brothers, elder sisters. Emmy has faith in your strength! You indeed have the strength to help us!” said the girl with her reddish eyes. “About 7 days ago, a Necromancer visited our village. With just a wave of his hand, he casted a greenish cloud of poison and engulfed the entire village, killing every single one of us!”

“Big brothers, elder sisters, this Necromancer is evil! Not only has he taken our bodies, he even dragged our souls! Emmy’s parents, grandparents, and all of the villagers; he has taken the souls of everyone! Please, Emmy begs you! Please save them! Please save their souls!”

Her sob was the only sound in the silent village.

“W-Would you hick help Emmy?”

With her puppy eyes, she begged the party.

“Woo...” Drizzler cried like a baby. Her cries were at first soft and appropriate, even, but eventually turned downright outrageous. “Waaah... that’s so sad! She’s so sad! Waaaah!”

Zhang Yang sighed.

“Emmy has to warn you! The Necromancer is very strong! You will have to make necessary preparations. You will need to gather ingredients to make an antidote for the Necromancer’s poison! Without it, you won’t

stand a chance against him!”

‘Ding! Emmy has a quest for you: To Craft an Antidote. Will you accept it?’

[To Craft an Antidote] (Difficulty level: A)

Quest description: To resist the Necromancer’s poison, you would have to craft an antidote to dispel the poison mist he releases! Moon Orchids can be found in the Mossy Forest. Zombie Mushrooms can be found in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands. The Frog King can be found in the Misty Swamp.

Progress: Collected Moon Orchid 0/10 Zombie Mushroom 0/10 Frog King’s Blood 0/1

After putting in some thought, Zhang Yang decided to split the team to search for the ingredients.

“Little Snow and the brat, you guys go collect the Moon Orchid at the Mossy Forest. Fatty, Hundred Shot, and myself will go to the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands for the Zombie Mushrooms. Please rendezvous at this spot once everyone had gathered the ingredient. We will take on the Frog King together!”

“Okay!”

Everyone began heading out in their assigned direction but Fatty Han had some reservations. He insisted that he should be in the same party as Little Snow and Drizzler. After a little struggle, he was forcefully kicked back to Zhang Yang’s side by the girls. Reluctantly, Fatty Han rejoined and headed to the Desolated Ghostly Flatland.

The Desolated Ghostly Flatland was a training ground for players above Level 20. As many of the monsters here were higher than Level 25, their aggro range was much wider. Zhang Yang and the other 2 Hunters quickly found themselves caught up in huge mobs after just a few steps.

Zombie Mushrooms could be found growing in the earth, hidden and buried on the side of a copse. The mushrooms were dark in color and if you did not pay attention, you could easily walk pass them! The 3 of them

made very slow progress as they were preoccupied in battles most of the time. On the other side of the village, Drizzler had an equally hard time finding the Moon Orchid. She had been complaining continuously in the party channel.

After wasting a whole 2 hours of killing and plucking, they successfully gathered 50 of each ingredient. Once they completed their gathering, they met back at the village. After a quick stat rep, they headed to the Misty Swamp, to fight the highly anticipated Frog King!

The Misty Swamp was located at the other side of the Mossy Forest, which was considered to be a Level 20 to 30 training ground. Since most casual players were still at around Level 15, this training ground was completely empty. With the absence of any being, this place was made to be more cool and creepy. Bubbles formed constantly within the mud of the swamp, releasing an extremely foul smell when the black-gooey globes burst.

“Urgh...it smells...” Drizzler voice was muffled as both Little Snow and she covered their mouths and pinched their noses. Her cheeks were puffed up and she looked like she was going to be sick at any moment.

“Go to the main setting window and open the Realism tab. There, you can adjust the Smell Setting to your liking. You could even turn it off if you want to. That way, you can remove the stinking smell!” Zhang Yang turned around after giving the advice. He had bigger things to worry about. Right now, Zhang Yang was stressed out. The entire swamp is so big, where is the Frog King exactly? Even if he was a man from the future that came back with valuable information, he was still a human; and an imperfect one at that!

“Looks like I have no choice. I’ll sweep the area a la old fashion!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily and walked deeper into the swamp. Usually, the boss would spawn at an area’s highest peak, or the center of the area, or even at the deepest floor. The mini-map would have an indicator that represented the quest monster. However, it would only appear in the map when you’re at a close proximity.

There was a pathway in the swamp, but the pathway was small and narrow. You could slip and fall into the mud and receive a certain amount of damage. The monsters in this area were mostly hidden in the mud. It would only jump put and attack when a player entered its aggro range.

Some of the monsters available here were Steel-Skinned Frogs, Greyback Crocodile, and also the Dark Piranha. Every single monster here was in no shortage in terms of revolting, repulsive and disgusting appearances. Little Snow and Drizzler were constantly complaining about the designing ability of the developers.

As they fought their way further into the swamp, they arrived at a huge muddy plain. In the center of the thick fog, they could see a large object crouched over, it's back silhouetted like a tiny hill.

Everyone was alerted of its presence and they checked their mini map to make sure. They found it! A yellow blinking dot appeared!

“Found it!”

They slowly approached the object and as they were close enough, they could clearly identify it.

There, sitting in the center of the muddy plain, with its glowing pair of dark gleaming eyes, was a 10 meter tall blood red giant frog. Its presence gave off a mystical magical evil aura! The gigantic frog opened its mouth and croaked as loud as thunder!

[Venomous Frog King] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 150k

“Hah! It is a boss!” Fatty Han was delighted. “We can get equipment!”

Zhang Yang did not share the same excitement as Fatty Han. He was on full alert.

Even though this boss did not seem to be any harder than a dungeon boss, he did not possess enough information about this boss to safely fight it! A wild boss was not the same as a dungeon boss. If a dungeon boss was

raided as often as possible, players would have extensive information about its skill or ability and they would be able to form a perfect strategy to fight it. However, this was not the case for wild bosses. The rate of encountering a wild boss was so low that the information about it was extremely scarce!

Zhang Yang had never encountered this boss before in his previous life, which was why he did not know a single thing about this boss's skill.

"We'll have to go in blind for now. Let's give it a shot!"

Zhang Yang pulled out his sword.

"Let's go! Prepare for battle!"

With only two steps forward, Zhang Yang had entered the boss' aggro range, triggering the boss to croak loudly and turned its enormous body towards Zhang Yang. The boss jumped and tackled Zhang Yang, while at the same moment, Zhang Yang activated [charge]. Both of their attacks met in the air and both of them fell down. Completely unaffected by Zhang Yang's stun effect, it opened its wide mouth and attacked Zhang Yang.

'Dodge!'

Zhang Yang quickly turned to face the Frog King and landed an attack on it.

'-334!'

When the Frog King received Zhang Yang's attack, it croaked loudly and opened its mouth wide. A foul-smelled liquid came flying out and hit Zhang Yang.

'Ding! You have received the effect of Foul Poison (1 stack). Receiving 200 Nature Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!'

"Shit! It's strong!" Zhang Yang had never expected the poison to be so powerful. It inflicted a strong DoT damage with just one stack! Zhang Yang could not imagine what would have happened to him if he received more stacks of the effect!

The rest of the party quickly started their attack while Little Snow instantly casted a [regeneration] and chanted a healing spell.

Just within a few hits, the Frog King spat another wad of poison, stacking another layer of DoT on Zhang Yang. In just half a minute, Zhang Yang had 5 layers of DoT effect, taking away 800 damage in just one tick.

Luckily the DoT effect was capped at 5 stacks. If it was unlimited stack, Zhang Yang could literally die in just a few seconds.

“Hmph! Such an easy boss! Just a little while more before my finishing strike!” Fatty Han laughed menacingly.

‘Ding! Venomous Frog King has used [poison spray]!’

A dark reddish liquid spewed everywhere, hitting every one. Upon contact, their body glowed in a deep red color. Beneath their feet, there was a circle sized red mist measuring approximately 1 meter in diameter. A debuff icon appeared on everyone’s head.

[Contagious Poison]: You have been poisoned. Receiving 100 Nature Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds! This poison will spread and infect others. Damage is increased by 300% for every infection.

Zhang Yang understood the gravity of the situation and quickly called out. “Spread out! Don’t group together! Little brat! Go and fight behind the boss! Keep at least 2 meters away from me!”

His call was a little too late. Since Little Snow, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han are ranged characters, they were all standing close to each other. When the [poison spray] landed on them, their poison infected each other, totaling up to 3 times infection and 900% increased damage.

They had received 1000 damage every 3 seconds!

Zhang Yang and Drizzler had infected each other, receiving 2 times infections.

Little Snow then frantically casted [holy prayers], followed by [regeneration], [holy shield], and regular healing spell. However, as everyone was losing HP at a tremendous speed, she could not keep up with

the healing and died.

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome had died!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had died!’

‘Ding! Player Little Snow had died!’

Once the healer was down, Zhang Yang and Drizzler could not escape their imminent doom. They struggled to hang on for a few more seconds but eventually died after that.

With no players left to attack it, the Frog King resetted, hopping back to its original spot and croaked. Whether it was a victorious warcry or an automated NPC behavioral pattern, no one would ever know.

Chapter 64: A Boss that Didn't Drop Equipment

"I was...actually poisoned to death..." tears flowed down Fatty Han's cheek.

"I object this! This is absurd! How could there be a venomous frog!" Drizzler scolded.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Ah come on! Even something like milk, or...or... eggs has poison in them! What's so strange about a poison spitting frog?!"

Fatty Han continued to wail alone.

"Woo...I got sprayed in the face..."

"Ew..." The girls turned away from Fatty Han in disgust.

Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots burst into laughter after they understood what Fatty Han meant.

"I-It's fine Fatty. Haha...You're won't get inseminated by the Frog seme-I mean, poison!" Zhang Yang quickly ran off to his body.

"Noob tank! Since when did you learn all the indecent stuff from Fatty Han?!" Drizzler turned and gave a scornful look at Fatty Han.

"Hey! What did you mean by that? Zhang Yang was the bad influence! Not me! I was young and pure when this guy came along and dragged me down into the dark side! Ladies! You must set the facts straight!"

While they were having their conversation, everyone went back to their body and revived.

"Now that you have seen what the frog can do, you should now know what to do! But just to be sure, don't stand together! Don't let the poison infect another person. We cannot withstand that kind of damage!"

"Okay!"

Zhang Yang walked towards the boss and triggered its aggro. The fight started as the monster leapt towards him.

‘-359!’

‘-381!’

Wielding a one-handed weapon, Zhang Yang could still deal a much stronger damage than Drizzler with her two-handed weapon. Still, it was all because of the sword Zhang Yang wielded. The Level 20 Gray-Silver sword was still the strongest sword so far. Coupled with the passive skill [eagle eye] and 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense], Zhang Yang was practically fighting a boss with 0 defense! Any attack in that state would be extremely devastating! Fatty Han and the rest could only stare in jealousy.

‘Ding! Venomous Frog King has used [poison spray]!’

The dark-reddish liquid was sprayed all over the place, hitting everyone with the liquid. Upon contact, their body glowed in a deep red color. Beneath their feet, there was a circle shaped red mist, measuring approximated 1 meter in diameter. A debuff icon appeared on everyone’s head and they started to receive damage from the poison.

However, having died once under this skill, everyone proactively moved around and spread across the battlefield, preventing further infections. Little Snow quickly did her job without having Zhang Yang to remind her.

Her current magic attack exceeded 300 and her [regeneration] heals were over 120 HP per tick, overshadowing the boss’s DoT damage. Her [regeneration] completely nullified the boss’s poison effect! That is, if the team did not do something foolish like infecting each other with the poison.

80%, 70%...the boss HP started to drop at a steady rate.

“Haha! You smelly frog! Let’s see how long can you hold on!” Drizzler laughed out manically as she swung her weapon around like a true psychopath.

“Croak croak!” The frog “answered”.

60%, 50%, 40%!

The boss damage was undeniably strong, but Zhang Yang’s evasive

capability was stronger. Little Snow's healing strength was also on another level to begin with. With the both of them working together, even a tougher boss could not stand a chance against them.

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%, 0%!

A loud thud could be heard when the boss' huge body fell.

'Ding! You and the party members around have killed the Venomous Frog King. Obtaining 30,050 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!'

"Shitty boss! Rah! Take that!" Drizzler stomped the lifeless body.

"I wonder how many [Frog King's Blood] would this boss drop..." Zhang Yang reached out his hands and opened the corpse.

[Frog King's Blood]: Quest item

Thank god there were 5 of it.

"I think it depends on the number of people who accepted the quest!" said Hundred Shots.

"Who cares about that! As long as there's enough for everyone to complete the quest!" said Fatty Han as he took one of the [Frog King's Blood] and kept it inside his inventory.

"Has everyone collected one each already?"

"Okay, okay! Move aside! I want to get our prize now!" said Drizzler as she pushed Zhang Yang aside.

Zhang Yang laughed and talked to Little Snow.

"Didn't you guys use to compete for the right to open the corpse? What happened to your petty squabble? Are you guys at peace now?"

"What are you saying? To let the young ones have their way is what an elder sister is supposed to do!" Little Snow winked.

"Tch! What are you lying about this time! You cheated me of my limited-edition cologne! Both of them!" Drizzler quickly overruled Little Snow's sweet talk.

Little Snow rolled her eyes and said, "You're still too young to put on

cologne! And I didn't cheat. I was taking them away for your own good!"

"Hmph!" Drizzler scoffed, unconvinced.

[Poison Essence] (Green-Copper, Special Item)

Use: Causes all targets (Including the user) within 30 meter to be poisoned, receiving 150 Nature Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Charge left: 50/50

"Eh? What is this? I have never seen this kind of item before!" said Fatty Han.

"A Special Item class. It's some sort of a play toy like item. You can't really keep using them as they have limited usage. If it can be used unlimitedly, it would be the same as having another AoE attack skill!" Zhang Yang explained.

"Gimme! Gimme! I call dibs!" Drizzler's demanded. She wanted this extra little tool to increase her damage as she had always lost to Zhang Yang in damage power. Drizzler was quite overbearing whenever she voiced out her demands, so everyone gave it up for her.

[Frog King's Flap] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Use: Grant you the ability to jump higher, last for 10 seconds. Cool down time: 1 minute.

Level requirement: 20

"Fuh! Good item!" Zhang Yang eyes quickly glinted. "Mine!"

"Noob tank, this is a Cloth Armor! Death sentence to you who takes item without consideration!" Drizzler complained with her puffy cheeks.

"Are you really that dumb? This item is designed to be a Cloth Armor so that the 6 main classes could equip this!"

"What so special about it?" Fatty Han started to show some interest.

"With this item, you can reach places you normally could not reach!"

Zhang Yang had no intention to keep it a secret. In the game, there were places that could only be reached with equipment such as the [Frog King's Flap]. Those hidden places may contain treasure chest and also NPCs that could issue special quests!

Fatty Han faces morphed into a perverted look.

“Places that could not reach...like a girl's bathroom window...”

“Go to hell!”

Before this, Zhang Yang had rarely ever voiced his wants, so everyone willingly gave up their roll when he asked for the item.

[Unhatched Little Tadpole] (Green-Copper Pet Monster)

Use: Hatch a little Tadpole. Who knows, someday it could become a handsome prince!

“What is a Pet Monster?” Fatty Han turned and looked at Zhang Yang, waiting for an explanation. All of them knew that Zhang Yang was a “beta player”.

Zhang Yang walked and stood in front of them. He dusted off his clothes and adjust his cloth.

“Ahem!”

Everyone took a step closer, expecting the explanation to be epic.

“A Pet Monster is...a pet monster!”

“Whaa...”

“Ahaha, I'm just kidding. A Pet Monster is like a pet dog or cat. A companion that you could bring along anywhere you go. However, this pet monster and a Hunter's pet is not the same! This pet cannot attack nor has it any attacking ability!”

“Oh!”

“This is nonsense!” Fatty Han puffed an angry breath through his nose.

“This boss only dropped these 3 stupid toys and no equipment at all! This is preposterous!”

Zhang Yang shook his head. “Tch Tch Tch! These 3 “toys” are worth much more than some equipment! You must keep this in mind. With our leveling speed, how long do you think an equipment will last? A Level 20 equipment could only last until you reach Level 30! The turnover rate for equipment at our low-level period is very fast! However, non-combat items are different! They can be used for as long as you want! Especially Pet Monsters! Pet Monsters’ drop rates are extremely low! After half a year, you could probably sell this Pet Monster for at least 10,000 gold pieces in the auction house!”

Zhang Yang was not making thing up. In his previous life, pet monsters could be sold for a very high price, especially those are extremely rare. Those rare pets could be sold for at least a few hundred thousands! What he told them was an understatement.

“T-ten thousand!?” Both Drizzler and Little Snow eye’s glinted with the money symbol! Both of them rolled for the item in the same time.

Zhang Yang gave up the item because he was not all that fond of the money. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots also gave up the pet because they were not as interested.

Little Snow obtained the item with 76 points, while Drizzler only got 43 points.

“Alright, time to submit the item and complete the quest! Once we have completed the quest, we will get a reward. And that reward is the one that we should be excited about!” said Zhang Yang even though he never did complete a single main story quest in his previous life!

The party then headed back to the Antelope Village and killed themselves to talk to Emmy.

“Wonderful! You have gathered the ingredients to make the antidote!” Emmy smiled happily.

“Big brother! Elder sister! Please head to the evil Necromancer’s Lair and save all the villager’s soul!”

‘Ding! Emmy has a quest for you: Rescue the Villagers’ Souls. Will you

accept it? This is a main story quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!”

Here it comes!

The party quickly accepted the quest.

‘Ding! You have obtained the item [Properly-Made Antidote]!’

[Rescue the Villager’s Soul] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest description: Emmy pleads with you to save the souls of the residents of Antelope Village. You will have to defeat the evil Necromancer Zac in order to release the imprisoned souls! You can find the evil Necromancer Zac at the Cave of Bones, west of the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands.

Be wary! Zac is extremely strong and powerful. Make sure you have enough players to fight him together!

Progress: Released Villagers’ Soul 0/1

[Properly-Made Antidote] (Quest Item)

Use: Grants you the immunity to the deadly poison! Last for 10 minutes.

Charge left: 3/3

“We finally got the main story quest!” said Drizzler excitedly.

“Haha! Furthermore, Emmy is no longer the NPC that we will need to meet to complete the quest! In other words, we do not need to kill ourselves anymore!” said Zhang Yang with a smile on his face.

Everyone quickly turned their sights to the girl’s head and there is no white exclamation mark on her head! The NPC to complete the quest is someone else!

Hundred Shots suddenly said, “We did an A-level difficulty quest and fought a Green-Copper boss. Now, our quest is an S-level difficulty; which means the boss we will be fighting is a Gray-Silver boss?”

“Ah! Right!” Little Snow’s voice overwhelmed Hundred Shots.

“Remember the Gray-Silver boss Andoin or Andola... I can’t remember his

name. Has he spawned already?”

Zhang Yang scratched his head and thought for a while.

“Hm...That Gray-Silver boss will re-spawn after 3 days. Which means... it’s today!”

“Awesome! We must fight it later!” Little Snow licked her lips. “So much money...”

“Sure! However, we must first kill this current quest boss!” Zhang Yang waved his arms forward. “Let’s go heroes! We have ourselves a bad guy to kill!”

Chapter 65: Undefeatable?

The ever-desolated flatland was still covered in thick fog. The sky was dark and zombies were limping everywhere. The entire place was surrounded in an eerie atmosphere. Since Zhang Yang had visited this area a few times before, the map of the area only revealed a portion. There were still many area of the map that were still hidden in a black shadow.

In this game, a player would have to explore the unknown areas of an unknown region to have the system reveal the region's name. You could also reveal this information through buying [Map] from an NPC of that specific area.

"This place gives me the creeps!" said Little Snow. She had been cowering behind Drizzler this whole time while holding tightly to her sleeves.

"Um, cousin. You're already quite old now. Wouldn't you be ashamed for being this scared?" said Drizzler after walking for quite distance. She could not hold in anymore.

Little Snow nudged her cheek and said, "Tch. You cheeky little brave girl!"

"Teehee!" Drizzler was not angered by her comment but instead she smiled. "Hey! I have an idea. Shall we dress up as ghosts and scare the residents at our apartment?" The three guys frowned at her sudden idea. What on earth was this little rascal thinking?

As they travelled deeper into the flatlands, the monster's level gradually rose from Level 21 to 24. Luckily the team was filled with strong players as they killed their way further into the flatlands.

"You can find the evil Necromancer Zac in the Cave of Bones west of the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands' bullshit! This place is so freaking huge! Where on earth are we going locate this so-called Cave of Bones?" Fatty Han scolded. He had been walking for so long but only managed to reveal one quarter of the entire region.

“Hm... shall we split up?” Hundred Shot suggested.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and nodded. “That’s a good idea. Let’s split up!”

The five of them split into four. Little Snow insisted that she did not want to leave her cousin alone. All five of them then headed into four different directions. With the team divided, the killing speed drastically decreased, but going in all directions sped up to exploration and in only another ten minutes, Little Snow posted in the party channel, “Here it is! I’ve found it! Get over here!”

Since Zhang Yang was separated with the girls for a distance, they were gone from his mini-map. Zhang Yang quickly open the world map and headed towards their general direction. As he killed the monsters in his way towards Little Snow, he stumbled upon the bodies of the same monsters that he was fighting. Someone just fought this monster not too long ago. He quickly checked his mini-map and found Fatty Han.

After a while, Zhang Yang and the two other guys met with the girls. The place that they were currently at was on a small short hill. At the foot of the hill there was a cave entrance as high as three men. Nearby the entrance, there were at least 7 to 8 Skeleton monsters patrolling. Zhang Yang opened the world map and checked the area they were in. The area was no longer black; he could see texture of the hill along with the name “Cave of Bones” superimposed on it.

“Onward! To the cave!” Zhang Yang called out.

[Recently Assembled Skeleton]

Level: 25

HP: 2,500

Once Fatty Han read the name of the monster, he felt disgusted. “Who could have such a weird hobby to actually play with a human skeleton?!”

He turned his gaze to Drizzler and immediately had a playful thought. “Hey Drizzler, compared to these skeletons, you’re actually quite well-endowed.”

“F*ck off, fatty bum!” Fatty Han instantly enraged the party. The girls started to literally hit him. Still, no matter how hard he was beaten, there was still a smile of ecstasy on his face. Every time the girls struck him, he let out a weird “Ohh Ohh Ahh Ahh” kind of sound. The girls stopped immediately as they thought that it was both strange and scary.

The party then proceed on clearing all the minions outside and went into the cave. Luckily, the designer of this area did not want to trouble the players too much as there were many fire torch lit everywhere in this cave. Even though the light from the torches were not all that bright, Zhang Yang and the party did not have much trouble seeing further inside. Just like outside of the cave, there were many skeleton monsters roaming about. However, they were only just normal minions that posed no threat to the party.

The team rampaged on and killed their way forward. None of the monsters could even last longer than five seconds. Ever since Little Snow was technically freed from her duty as a healer, she could only follow behind the team, picking up all the loots that were dropped by the monsters.

After they fought for a while, Zhang Yang suddenly recalled a memory. “Ah! I remember now! This cave has five floors! The final boss is located the deepest level!”

It was not that he had entered this cave in his previous life, but he remembered because he had read an introduction article posted in the official forum. This cave had five floors and every floor had a mini-boss. Beside the expected Green-Copper equipment, the boss also dropped a few non-combative items that were extremely valuable! When the game reached near mid-maturity phase, every Cave of Bones of every city was occupied with big guilds. The caves were so occupied that normal players did not even know what the boss looked like as they could not walk into the cave in the first place!

“F*cking hell! Five floors!?” Fatty Han cursed as he could no longer hold in his frustration of walking and clearing the entire first floor! Zhang Yang laughed. “Yeah! This is troublesome! But remember this, there is a mini-

boss on every floor! Their rewards are also extremely valuable!"

Fatty Han regained his spirit and quickly replied, "Okay! Go, go, go! Let's kick the boss' ass and get some equipment!"

The monsters here were all killed off quickly under the fierce attack of the party. After 10 minutes, they finally hit the end of the dungeon. There was a 2-meter tall, gigantic Skeleton monster that was blocking the pathway onward.

[Skeleton Captain, Gawain] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250,000

"Holy crap! This one is much stronger than the others!" Fatty Han blinked his eyes.

Zhang Yang quickly explained. "You need to understand that a dungeon boss is limited to a few people. The one we just fought, Marzerway's Lair was only a 5-man dungeon. This is a field boss. There is no limit to how many people that is able to participate. It wouldn't be called a boss if it can be killed off easily, now would it?"

"Ahh...I wonder what skill does this one have. Let's just hope that it's not as strong as the Frog King!" Fatty Han did not dare to be too relaxed after he was "shot in the face".

"Let's not waste any more time. All three range players stand behind and spread out! Little brat, we're up!" Zhang Yang took out his sword and walked. He quickly activated [charge] once he was in the effective range.

'-334!'

Before the [charge], the giant growled and threw its skeletal arm at Zhang Yang when he entered its aggro range. The stun effect was only effective for half a second, but it was enough so that the boss's movement was interrupted halfway.

'[Cripple Defense]!'

'-160!'

To maximize the team firepower, Zhang Yang used [Cripple Defense] on the boss when he had enough aggro.

“Bold intruders! How dare you enter the domains of Lord Zac! I will eat your soul! I will make you all into my slaves!” said Gawain, the Skeleton Captain once it recovered from the stun, growling loudly at the party.

“Pffft! It’s probably time to brush your teeth! Smelly, stinky boss!” Drizzler swung her spear and pierced the monster, dealing significantly higher damage than she had before. After the morning dungeon trip, she swapped out a few of her old equipment for newer and stronger ones, increasing her damage by a noticeable amount.

“Puny human! I want your blood!” the monster cried out and immediately ignored Zhang Yang. It moved at lightning speed towards Drizzler and held her tightly with both of its boney, skeleton arms. It then opened its pale white jaws and bit into Drizzle’s fair neck.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has received the effect of [vampiric bite]. Losing 200 HP every second and heals the caster for 2000HP. Last for 10 seconds!’

“Aiyeeee! Bastard boss, let me go!” Drizzler frantically tried to escape its grasp but under the boss’ skill control, she could not retaliate. No matter how hard she tried she just could not get herself out of the situation. She felt pressed down like Sun Wu Kong trapped under the Five Element Mountain.

Zhang Yang started to laugh, “Haha! Little brat, I always thought that you were always born with a provoking face. Why else would the boss jump on you instead of the others?”

“Shut up and help me!” said Drizzler.

“He can’t. No one can! The skill is unbreakable!” Hundred Shots and Fatty Han fired a few [silencing shot] and failed to interrupt the boss. Luckily, Little Snow was fast enough to recover the HP loss. She was constantly healing Drizzler, making sure her HP is always out of the red danger zone.

After 10 seconds, the boss dropped Drizzler and began to attack Zhang Yang furiously. The party attack was strong, but the boss' vampiric recovery was stronger. The boss recovered almost 20,000 HP in just 10 seconds, almost to a full health!

97%, 94%, 90%!

"Useless Hunter! I will suck your blood dry!" This time, the boss picked Fatty Han as his meal.

'Ding! Player Fatty Han has received the effect of [vampiric bite]. Losing 200 HP every second and heals the caster for 2000HP. Last for 10 seconds!"

"Argh! No! Don't take my blood! My blood is bad! It tastes bad!" Fatty Han grit his teeth as he faced the monster at a close distance, completely filled with disgust.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

+2000, +2000, +2000...

Green texts appeared on the boss' head continuously and after 10 seconds, it was healed back to 95%! "Crap! We've been attacking him and it heals nonstop!" said Fatty Han as he was fazed by the boss's full health bar.

Zhang Yang started to frown. This was not going as planned. He deduced that his team's firepower was not strong enough. If they had 10 members attacking at the same time, then the boss would not be able to keep up its healing with the damage received!

"Noob tank! Do you have any other strategies hidden in your sleeves? If this goes on, my cousin will run out of MP really soon!"

"She's right. The boss only lost 5% HP and I have already used 15% of my MP. If we drag this on any longer, we will surely die before it!" Little Snow calmly exclaimed.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and yelled, "Everyone stop!" The party members looked at each other with uncertainty. However, they placed

their trust on Zhang Yang and stopped their attack.

“Hey, not you! Continue to heal!” Zhang Yang quickly shifted his position to evade the boss’ attack. Overtime, the boss started to grow stronger, its attacks got quicker, making it harder for Zhang Yang to evade. Eventually, Zhang Yang had to take damage.

Little Snow scoffed. “You asked all of us to stop! You said it yourself!” Even as she debated, she still casted the healing spell, recovering Zhang Yang.

94%...93%...92%...

When Zhang Yang was the only one attacking, the boss received less damage and lost its HP slower. It only reached 90% after so long.

“Damned Guardian! No matter how hard your skin maybe, my teeth can still pierce through it!” The boss attacked Zhang Yang and used [vampiric bite] on him.

“The boss’ Lifesteal skill is depends on the rate of its HP lost! If you attack it fast, its activation rate will also get frequent! If you attack it slower, it will be less frequent!” Zhang Yang roughly assumed the boss’ mechanics.

“F*ck! That means if the party DPS does not exceed 2000, we can never kill him!?”

Everyone was bewildered and baffled. Even though they were much stronger than other players on the same level, excluding Little Snow, their total DPS only totalled up 600 tops!

How could they continue on the fight?

Chapter 66: Reverse Lifesteal

“We should recruit more people! We aren’t getting anywhere with our current numbers!” said Fatty Han. Drizzler nodded. “I agree as well! We need more people!”

Suddenly, Zhang Yang had an idea. “Everyone! Resume your attack! I have a plan!”

“Speak your mind!”

Zhang Yang smiled. “Brat! Pay attention the boss’ HP. When it reaches 91%, I want you to use the [Poison Essence]!”

“What is that?” Drizzler asked honestly.

“Tch! The one you got from the Frog King! The Special Item that can poison everyone?”

“Oh. Why?” Drizzler asked again.

“Damn! Why would you keep asking questions?!”

“Of course I’ll ask. I don’t know what you are up to!” Drizzler pouted her lips, trying to act cute.

“Hah! Fine. I give in!” Zhang Yang sighed. “I think I remembered something about this boss skill. If the targeted player has the [poisoned] status, the [vampiric bite] will have no effect!”

There were not many bosses in game that possessed [lifesteal] ability, which was why Zhang Yang could not immediately come up with a counter measure for the boss’ skill. It would have solved the problem if he recruited more people to fight, but there was an easier way. If one could somehow inflict the poison status onto the targeted player, the boss’ life stealing skill would be nullified and in reverse, the boss would receive more damage!

“Okay.” said Drizzler even though she felt otherwise.

“I want to rearrange the battle position. Little brat, I want you to stand directly in front of the boss. Little Snow and the rest of the party will stand

behind Drizzler. When Drizzler lets out the poison, all of you must run into the poison ring and get the [poisoned] effect!" Zhang Yang explained.

The normal playstyle would have a Bandit in play. The Bandit would enable Friendly-Fire mode, and had his weapon coated in poison. When the boss used a Lifesteal skill, the Bandit would then attack the target player and inflict [poison] on him. This method could completely counter the boss' Lifesteal skill.

However, since Zhang Yang's party did not have a Bandit onboard, he would have to resort to the self-poisoning method. It was lucky that the party found the [Poison Essence] from the Frog King.

"Noob tank! Why'd you say I would 'let out poison'!? I'll smack you in the face!" Drizzler clenched her fist and pointed at Zhang Yang.

"Hey Little Yang, what happened between the two of you? You won't be able to get the both of them if this goes on!" Fatty Han sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

"Why are you always thinking of perverted stuff? Get both girls? I'll get both of my fist you're your face!" Zhang Yang replied angrily.

"Haha! Little Yang! Just look at them! They're both quite good! The elder one has the bobbylicious body even though her face is just 'meh'. As for the little one, her body still has more room to mature but her face is just- GRAHHH- I can't take it anymore! Remember, Little Yang! You must grab the opportunity while it's just lying there! Imagine, two girls, one man! GAH! Thinking about it alone boils my blood!"

"...Fatty Han. You're really a beast inside that meat suit aren't you..."

94%, 93%, 92%, 91%. Zhang Yang alone could not damage fast, but when everyone attacked together, the boss' HP dropped like a landslide.

"Little brat! Use it now!" Zhang Yang shouted.

Drizzler was someone Zhang Yang had his eyes on, as her ability was on the level of an A-tier Professional League player. Her reaction speed was nothing something made up. With that, she quickly smashed the [Poison Essence] and released a green mist from her body, instantly engulfing 30

meters around her. The party did not even need to get close to her to get the poison effect.

‘Ding! You have received the effect of [Poison Essence]. Receiving 150 Natural Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

The green mist appeared and disappeared in an instant. It only lasted for a second before the mist dispersed. Everyone, including Zhang Yang and the boss as well were inflicted by the poison effect. Their body were glowing in a greenish hue.

“Haha! Little Drizzler. Just now, what you did, it was as if you have just let out a massive fart!” Fatty Han laughed maniacally.

“Yuck!” Drizzler face was filled with disgust. “Wretched Fatty bum! I won’t forgive you!”

“Foolish Hunter! I’ll suck your blood dry!” The boss activated its skill just as its HP reached 90%. It sprinted across the field like a lightning bolt, and sank its fangs into Fatty’s Han’s neck.

‘-2000!’

‘-2000!’

‘-2000!’

‘...’

A chain of red damage texts attack appeared.

After 10 seconds, instead of healing, the boss’ HP had dropped to 76%!
“Haha! Have a taste of your own medicine!” Fatty Han shouted. He turned around and shook his butt provokingly.

“Oh come on! Do you actually be more wretched than this?” said Drizzler.

Fatty Han thought for a while and said, “If you don’t mind, I could even undo my pants and shake my bare-naked ass at the boss!”

They thought that he was only joking but when he was about undress, they yelled, “Stop! We mind! We mind!” Fatty Han was shocked at their

reaction and quickly stop his act. “Hey hey! I was just joking. I wasn’t serious about doing it. Do you really think I would actually fool around like an idiot?”

“I know that you’re absolutely not an idiot. But when you’re fooling around, you’re worse than an idiot!” Zhang Yang sighed loudly. Fatty Han laughed. “Haha! Precisely! That is why you’re my own brother from another mother!”

After Gawain took severe damage from its own skill, it did not activate the skill again immediately. Instead, it waited until its HP dropped till 50% to activate it again. However, under Zhang Yang’s guidance, Drizzler was able to maintain everyone’s [poison] status and made sure that they could always counter the boss’ [lifesteal]. However, the credit was not to Drizzler alone; Little Snow was able to heal everyone in time. Luckily, she was as good of a support as her own massive “supports” underneath her clothes.

After taking damage again instead of healing, the boss’ HP was reduced to only 36% when it had done “poisoning” itself.

36%. Just a little more...

“Haha! Take that, vampire wannabe! Let’s see how you die, being defeated by your own skill!” said Drizzler jubilantly.

“Since you mentioned about vampire, I remember a story. It was a...” Fatty Han let out a cynical smile.

“Will you just shut up?!” Two girls cried out while rolling their eyes. They did not have to listen, they knew that any story told by that Fatty bum would be something indecent. “Woo...why would you say that? I was just trying to lighten the atmosphere!” said Fatty Han.

30%, 25%, 20%, the boss’ HP was shaved off by the party without any noticeable problems. When it reached 10%, Gawain activated the skill for the last time. Its action only accelerated its impending death. The party killed off the boss before it could finish the skill.

“Hmph! Die like the dead man you already are!” Drizzler went up the body and stomped on it to release her frustration. “Little brat! You’re quite

the feisty one aren't you?!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Now that she's stomping on a skeleton, I have a story about Skeleton Stomping. Once upon a time..." Everyone yelled in unison, "Shut up!"

"Wuuuuu..." Fatty Han pretended to cry and secluded himself to a corner.

"Let's check out the goods!" Drizzler began opening the corpse.

[White Skull Hammer] (Green-Copper, One-handed Hammer)

Weapon attack: 95-113

Attack interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 40

Level requirement: 20

"Ah! What luck! Another item up for the auction house!" cried Fatty Han.

"Hey! This is still 300 gold here!" Little Snow was delighted instead. She quickly pushed the others to give it to her to put it up in the auction house. "Hah. Now that you mentioned it. How much was the sword you sold yesterday?" Zhang Yang asked casually.

"Ah! 300 gold coins!" Little Snow answered in the same manner.

"Ah I see... So, after distribution, all of us should get 60 gold coins each, right?"

"There is still the 10% service charge of the auction house!" Little Snow crossed her arms angrily.

"Ah. I understand. So after deducting the service charge, we should all have 54 gold coins each, correct?"

"Technically, yes..." Little Snow's voice was getting softer, as if she was guilty of something.

Zhang Yang raised his voice. "Then why am I getting only 54 silver coins?" Little Snow started to get scared. "Erhm... Maybe you're mistaken... Did you look properly?"

“What do you think?”

Little Snow lowered her head. “I think you’re mistaken!”

“Enough! Imburse my money! If not, pay with what you have!” Zhang Yang smiled menacingly. He had confirmed with both Hundred Shots and Fatty Han that both of them had obtained 54 gold coins from Little Snow. He was the only one that obtained 54 silver coins!

Little Snow rolled her eyes and said, “This lady here has nothing but her smile to offer!”

Fatty Han walked over. “Alright then, smile for me!”

“F*ck off!”

[White Bone Crown] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +20

Strength: +16

Dexterity: +4

Level requirement: 20

Zhang Yang’s current helm was already the same as this new equipment. He then rejected the roll and offered it to Drizzler.

‘Ding! You have obtained 11 silver pieces!’

“Eh? That’s it?” said Fatty Han as the body started to disappear. “Well I’ll be damned. This boss is really stingy!”

“Well, technically in the field, the last boss is one level higher than the mini-boss. So, we’re considered lucky enough to fight a Gray-Silver boss!”

Zhang Yang led the way forward and went through a tiny and narrow walkway.

Shush!

Just as Zhang Yang poked his head out, eight debuffs simultaneously appeared on his head. He scanned the area and saw 8 Skeleton

Spellcasters running towards him! He frantically shouted, “Get back!” and led the team back into the walkway.

The Skeleton Spellcasters chased after them until the walkway and stopped right there. They remained there for a while before turning back into the shadows. “Holy shit! There are so many of them!” Fatty Han swallowed his saliva. Everyone could hear the sound of it and realized how frightening it was.

Zhang Yang’s head popped out ‘-80’ damage texts and only stopped after 15 seconds. Little Snow got busy immediately.

[Shadow Decay]: Curse a target with the power of the shadow. Causes 500 shadow damage over 15 seconds to a target.

Hundred Shot shouted as well. “Damn, these monsters sure are strong!”

“Necromancers. They are also known as the Curse Magicians. Their DoT skills are very OP!” Zhang Yang sucked in a long breath. “This is quite a problem here. There are so many monsters inside. There’s already eight of them waiting for us at the entrance. Damn! It’s going to be a crowd inside there!”

Fatty Han tapped Zhang Yang’s shoulder and asked, “How do we fight?”

Zhang Yang thought for a while. “At this level, the Curse Magicians have not only [shadow decay] but also another skill called [shadow whip]! The cast range of [shadow decay] is 30 meters while the cast range of [shadow whip] is only 20 meters! Did you guys notice, those monsters cannot leave the second floor?”

Four of them remained stoic, their eyes glinted with a plan.

“Heh. I knew you guys were smart. Let’s drag them to the entrance and kill them with our AoE skill!”

Chapter 67: Another godlike boss?

“Hunters stand behind, as long as you can hit the monsters with your [barrage]!” Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Little Snow, I want you to stand further behind. As for you, little brat, don’t attack the monsters just yet. Go and stand together with Little Snow!” Drizzler had her jaw dropped in shock. As a battle maniac, she did not feel comfortable when being asked not to fight.

“Okay! I’ll lure the monsters over now! I want you guys to attack the monsters when they start to approach the entrance. Hold on to their aggro!” Zhang Yang added.

“Roger that!”

“Off I go! Little Snow, give me a [holy shield]!”

Hong! Little Snow waved her hand and a transparent shield appeared on his body.

“Hah! Little Yang! The ‘protection’ you’re wearing is quite powerful huh!” Fatty Han said.

Zhang Yang ran out of the entrance and instantly triggered the eight Skeleton Spellcasters. With just a wave of their staff, eight debuffs appeared on Zhang Yang’s head. Zhang Yang quickly withdrew, luring the eight monsters along with him to the dungeon entrance.

“Open fire!”

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han both activated [barrage] simultaneously and targeted the skill at the entrance.

All eight monsters changed their aggro to Hundred Shots and shifted their target to him.

Shush, Shush, Shush! Eight [shadow decay] appeared on his head and since he was 30 meters away from each other, the monsters were unable to cast [shadow whip] on him. They could only stare at him at the entrance with their gaping mouth.

Little Snow quickly cast a [regeneration] and a [holy shield] on Hundred Shots. She also casted a healing spell to recover the loss of HP due to the DoT skill. Even with all the damage taken, it was not even a problem for Little Snow.

After a volley of arrows landed on the monsters, taking away close to 1,000 HP each.

Zhang Yang said to Drizzler, "Let's go! Now that Hundred Shots holds the most aggro, the monster will not target us at all!"

"With pleasure!" Drizzler had been waiting for Zhang Yang's green signal for some time. She then rushed onward with a [charge]. Zhang Yang joined in as well. After a [charge], he landed a normal attack and gained 35 Rage. He then used [horizontal sweep] and dealt a devastating attack. There was even three accounts of critical strikes that dealt about 1,400 damage. With that, the monsters shifted their target to Zhang Yang. However, before they could start their attack on him, a volley of arrow came raining down from the sky, killing them off.

[Death Mage] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 2,500

All eight of the monsters were killed before the second volley of [barrage] could finish. Everyone gained luxurious amount of experience points.

"Little Yang this place seems pretty nice to grind our level!" Fatty Han missed the day where he was ranked first in the Level Ranking Board. For these two days, they had been raiding dungeons instead of grinding; they were then pushed down the ranking board by Floating Fire Ball. He was now ranked first with a level of 22.

"Okay then, let's clean up this place!" Zhang Yang walked up to the entrance and squinted his eyes. The second floor was extremely crowded with monsters; there were a bunch of Mages standing further inside the floor.

“Crap! There’s just too many monsters there! I fear if I’d go in, my HP would be shaved off to 0 when I come back! Fatty, this is your chance to shine. I need your pet to go in instead!”

“F*ck! You’re so cruel! Is this the same as throwing my pet into the fire pit!?” Fatty Han patted his little pet bear and said, “Little Fatty, go! If you die, I’ll burn a female bear and send her to the afterlife for you! You won’t be alone down there!”

“Enough talking horny bum! Make your move!”

Fatty Han then pointed at the nearest Mage. The bear then growled loudly and charged onward.

Shush, shush, shush! Just when the bear stepped out of the entrance, it was inflicted with more than 10 DoT skills. At the same time, the Mages waved their hands, casting a black colored ray and beamed it at the bear, causing it to slow down.

[Shadow Whip]: Use the power of shadow to whip the enemy. Causes 500 Shadow damage over 5 seconds of channel time. Requires channeling. Range: 20 meters.

The accumulation of firepower of the 10 monsters was extremely potent! Even though Fatty Han was a Beastmaster and had its HP improved to 1,500, it was still not enough to withstand all those Mages. After only a few steps, the little pet bear was sent to the afterlife!

All of the attacking Mages then turned towards Fatty Han and began to chase after him.

“Back to the entrance! Go, go, go!” Zhang Yang quickly shouted. Once they made it back to the safe haven, Fatty Han had already gained 10 icons of [shadow decay] on his head.

Both Hunters started their attack, unleashing two [barrage], raining down volleys of arrow from the sky onto the monsters. However, Hundred Shots was smart. He purposely delayed his [barrage] to a few seconds later to make sure the aggro was held onto Fatty Han longer. He wanted to avoid getting inflicted with the DoT effect to lighten Little Snow’s healing

burden.

Once the volley was done, they did the same maneuver as before. Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler went up and cast [horizontal sweep] and [tornado cleave] and killed all of the monsters.

“Alright this time, it’s Hundred Shots’ turn. Fatty Han quickly revive your pet!” said Zhang Yang.

“Woo...my cute little pet...” Fatty Han cried crocodile tears as he chanted the revival spell. His little theatrical act started to annoy the party.

The same procedure was carried out by Hundred Shots’ pet. It drew the attention of a bunch of Mage and lured them towards the entrance, having to unfortunately die in the process. They repeated this way as many times as possible and after 20 minutes, they manage to kill almost all of the monsters in the second floor. The remaining monsters were not worth to pull back all the way to the entrance, so the party rushed in and killed the leftovers head on.

As they revised their collected goods, they found out there was nothing that was of actual worth. It was all just “garbage” and random etc items. As the party arrived at the end of the second floor, they could not find any sign of the boss. What’s stranger was that there was no entrance or pathway that led them to the third floor!

“Eh? Where the heck is the boss?” Drizzler turned around like ballerina and found nothing but shadows. “Maybe the boss must be triggered!” said Zhang Yang. He recalled that there was a place like this but he had never fought in before. He had that thought at the same time everyone else did too.

“Everyone! Scatter around and search for clues! There must be some kind of hint to spawn the boss!”

Everyone including Zhang Yang himself spread out to search the surrounding.

“I found it! Come over to me!” Hundred Shots called out. The party then gathered to where he was and saw him standing near a small altar. The

altar was just the shape of a small dining table and on top of the table was a small bowl. There was a complicated magic circle underneath the bowl that was emitting some sort of eerie dark ray.

“Looks like we’ve found it!”

“But how do we summon the boss?” asked Little Snow.

“Fatty! Go and drop some of your blood into the bowl. This boss must be summoned with blood!” said Zhang Yang. “What?! Why me!” Fatty Han bellowed. “How come you didn’t choose Hundred Shots or Drizzler to do it!?” He protested.

Zhang Yang smiled playfully. “Okay then! Let’s put this to a vote. All those who agree that Fatty Han should be the one to do it, please raise your hands!”

Shush! Four arms were raised into the air.

Drizzler burst into laughter. “Hah! Serves you right, Pervy Fatty! Just give up and accept your fate!”

“Come on bro. It’s just a game. Go ahead and drop some of your blood!”

“F*ck! I hate you guys!” Fatty Han had no choice. He walked over to the altar and bit his thumb. He then reached out his thumb and dropped his flowing blood into the bowl.

“Tuk, tuk, tuk” drops of blood echoed through and the bowl suddenly vibrated. Fatty Han quickly withdrew a few steps back. The bowl then vibrated wildly and turned around on its own. It turned three times counter-clockwise and two times clockwise. The magic circle underneath then glowed brighter and let out a loud “hooooongg” sound. Wind started to blow in all direction; sand and pebble were shaken off the wall as the entire cave vibrated malevolently. It was as if something bad was about to happen.

“I have a bad feeling about this...I’m 100% sure that the next boss would be scary as hell!” Fatty Han turned his head left and right, trying his best to observe any changes around him.

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

The sound of broken chains echoed through the cave, followed by an eruption of black ray from the magic circle. The ray burst out like a column; huge and enormous. Suddenly, a massive figure emerged out of the light, wearing a majestic robe and a sorcerer's pointy hat. In his hands, he was wielding a staff that glowed with a black light.

Boom!

A strong shockwave blasted through the field and he vanished from the pillar and reappeared in front of the party. There he stood, a 10-meter tall, gigantic Necromancer. His entire body was only just a human skeleton, with no flesh to support, brittle and weak. But needless to say, his presence alone gave a strong sense of enmity to the party, especially those abyssal dark eye sockets that held a pair of emerald-green light orbs that looked like there were burning on the inside!

“Holy... What kind of monster is this?!” Fatty Han shrieked.

Zhang Yang and the party quickly checked on its system detail.

[Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich, Lord of Spectre] (Celestial)

Level:???

HP:???

“Jesus Christ! Why would a Celestial boss appear here!?” cried Hundred Shots. The ever silent and matured character was troubled. If all of the server players got together and joined forces to defeat this boss, they would ultimately fail and crash the server when they would be sent to the graveyard! They were facing a Celestial-tier boss for crying out loud!

“Hahaha! Mortal! I'd never thought that I would be freed by a bunch of lowly humans! Nevertheless, I am grateful for your deed! This king will now let you all continue to live and breathe as a reward!” Its eerie jaws moved and talked.

“Now, BEGONE!” It bellowed. Its voice was thundering till the high heavens.

The party was so scared that they took a few steps back. To think that they would take on a Celestial-tier boss... It would only mean certain death!

The party turned around and was ready to leave the field before anything could take place. Fatty Han stopped and he saw that Zhang Yang has not even budged from his place.

“Hey, let’s go! What’re you waiting for!?” Fatty Han cried out in the party channel.

Zhang Yang suddenly cracked a smile. He started to move forward, not towards the party, but towards the boss.

“Hey! What the hell are you doing?!” Fatty Han frantically shouted. Even though this was just a game, there was no reason to walk towards a certain doom!

“Feeble mortal! Are you trying to have a taste of the power of a god?!”

Zhang Yang has successfully provoked Mardevich. Its voice was so loud and it also sent the cave trembling, dropping sand and pebbles all over the place.

Shush!

Zhang Yang used [charge] and dash towards the boss!

“Oh my god! Did he not learn how to recognize the word “death” in school!?” Little Snow facepalmed herself. She remembered how Zhang Yang was like when he faced the Python King and Martyr Unduin. He did not just simply charge towards them like he did now!

Zhang Yang versus the Spectre boss!

Chapter 68: Guranda the Chameleon

Zhang Yang dashed towards the boss head on. When the two of them made contact, a star symbol appeared on the boss head, indicating a successful stun. Even though the stun lasted only a few milliseconds, it was still a successful stun!

“Haha!” Zhang Yang swung his sword and sliced the boss, taking away ‘-339’ damage.

“Argh...”

The boss cried in pain. Bright piercing light started to burst out from the boss’ body, blinding those who would look at it.

Fatty Han and the rest of the party quickly turned around. “What’s happening!?”

How could Zhang Yang still be alive? On the other hand, the boss seemed to be having a bad time! The four of them started to feel happy and surprised in the same time. Could they be a God Killer? A God Killer! According to the official website, to fight a boss of this scale, you would need to gather several hundred thousand to even millions of players! The war would also last for several days and nights! If they could defeat a Celestial boss with just the 5 of them, it would be the greatest achievement any human could ever receive!

The flash of light shone and went off quickly, and when Fatty Han could have a good look at Zhang Yang, he noticed something odd...

The boss was gone. In its place, there stood a tiny dwarf that did not even reach 1 meter of height. In its hand, it was still holding a magic staff that was so much taller than it was. Everyone quickly checked on its system information.

[Guranda the Chameleon] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250,000

Fatty Han wavered and he cried. “Little Yang! Where is the boss?”

“Can’t you see him standing right in front of me?” Zhang Yang lifted his sword and pointed the dwarf.

The little dwarf opened its tiny mouth and started to insult Zhang Yang.

“Damned Mortal! You’d dare to raise your sword at me! I will crush you! I will smash you!” It raised its staff high and directed it at Zhang Yang’s direction and casted something. A debuff icon appeared on his head.

‘Ding! You have received the effect of [shadow decay]. Receive 300 Shadow damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

“That’s weird. Wasn’t he a Celestial-tier?” said Fatty Han.

“It’s fake.” Zhang Yang answered him quickly. Zhang Yang quickly noticed something was odd the moment the boss appeared. Mardevich was the strongest of the 7 Spectre Magus Lords who resided in the Malevolent Tower located in the Spectre’s Sacred Land. How could it be sealed in a place like this!

Based on his reasoning, he immediately concluded that this boss was an imposter! With his attack, he had confirmed his suspicion and proved his hypothesis was true! A true Celestial-tier boss would be completely immune to the stun effect! Even the Gray-Silver boss Unduin had the immunity effect!

“F*ck! Cheeky little dwarf! You dare to cheat me! The old great Han! Is it death that you seek!?” Fatty Han drew his bow furiously and attacked. “Little Fat! F*ck him up good!”

“Roar!” Litte Fat the bear growled, dragging its little white butt and charged onward.

The rest of the team shared the same feelings as Fatty Han; they were furiously angered and attacked to punish the dwarf.

“Bunch of little rascals! I’ll kill you all!” Guranda raised its staff and pointed it at Zhang Yang again. This time, it started to cast a spell and a progress bar appeared on its head.

“Fatty! Try and interrupt the spell!” Zhang Yang did not know this boss’ abilities nor capabilities. It would be better if he could interrupt the spell and prevent the unknown attack.

Fatty Han quickly casted a [silencing shot].

‘Immune!’

“Shit! It’s useless!” Fatty Han cried out loud and continued his attacks.

‘Ding! Guranda the Chameleon has used [plague]!’

Five ray of lights appeared and beamed at everyone, casting a debuff on everyone.

[Plague]: You will receive the Plague and be infected with various diseases. All your attacks will be reduced by 5%. You will receive 150 Shadow damage every 3 seconds for 24 seconds. Effect is stackable, removable.

“Little Snow! Dispel all of the debuff!” Zhang Yang quickly ordered. One stack of [plague] was not much to be afraid of, but when the effect stacked up to 20 layers, you could basically just stop attacking since there would be 0 damage.

Little Snow nodded and quickly casted [dispel] to remove the debuff. In five seconds, everyone was cleansed.

[Dispel]: Remove a debuff on an ally or remove a buff on the enemy. Cooldown time: 1 second.

“Puny Mortal! You have angered me! Eat my wrath!” Guranda swung its massive staff towards Zhang Yang. Its physical attack was not as strong since it was a magic caster type. Zhang Yang felt annoyed at the fact that he would not gain any Rage for avoiding its attack. Zhang Yang would rather not waste time dealing with its physical attack.

“Raise from the ashes O’ heroes of the past! Serve me!” Guranda chanted a spell and waved its staff. The ground shook and 10 dark pits appeared on the field. White skeleton hands grabbed onto the ledge and crawled out of the pits. One by one, the Skeletons stood above the pits as it closed and

disappeared.

“Kill them all!” Guranda bellowed.

FOOM!

Dark flames emerged from the dark eye sockets of those Skeletons and emitted a strong killing intent. The monsters shook their arms and out came a bone-shape sword.

“I don’t like where this is going...” said Fatty Han.

“KIIKIKIIKIII” The Skeletons screeched loudly and charged towards the party.

[Skeleton Warrior] (Elite)

Level: 20

HP: 10,000

Zhang Yang quickly stomped the ground and used [thunder strike] to lure as much monsters as possible. Once he got a hold on the monsters that were charging on him and Drizzler, he quickly chained his attack with [charge] and attacked the Skeleton Warriors that were heading towards Little Snow.

“Ignore the minions! Don’t attack them, I haven’t gotten enough aggro yet! Focus on attacking the boss! Fatty, Hundred Shots! Come closer to my side!” Zhang Yang commanded.

Zhang Yang was unable to attack all the monsters at once since both the party and monsters were scattered everywhere. But with everyone gathered together, it made it easier for Zhang Yang to establish a proper crowd control.

‘-698!’

‘-742!’

‘-1480!’

‘.....’

Slash! Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep] and managed to strongly

generate aggro for the monsters.

“Use your AoE skills!” said Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han and the team had their skills ready and waiting. When Zhang Yang gave the green light, they unleashed hell from above. Hunters used [barrage] and Drizzler used [tornado cleave]. Instantly, the party’s attack power rose tremendously.

“This is awesome! HAHAAHAHA! Really awesome! I can’t get enough of this! Hmm... Oh... AH...” Drizzler was on cloud nine as she screamed weirdly among the group of monsters. Even so, her scream was overly erotic that it would immediately lead others to think something indecent. It was so weird, even Hundred Shots and Zhang Yang both smiled as they understood the situation. Fatty Han on the other hand was already smiling like a pervert.

“Enough! Drizzler! Stop making that noise!” Embarrassed, Little Snow quickly tried to stop her cousin. Drizzler’s face was flushed in red but she was not aware that her cries were creating an awkward situation. “B-But it’s really just so addictive AH...”

Eventually, no one cared about her anymore and continued to attack. The summoned minion were quickly killed off by the team’s AoE skills while the boss was reduced down to 67%.

“Impossible! A mere mortal! I was actually hurt by a mere mortal!” Guranda started to look serious. “Looks like I have to stop playing with my victims!”

The boss stopped its attacks and started to chant something in an unknown language. A black light engulfed the boss rendering all attacks from Zhang Yang’s party useless.

‘Immune!’

‘Immune!’

‘Immune!’

“Hold your fire! The boss is about to evolve to the second stage!”

After a few seconds, the light dispersed, revealing a humungous Bone Tiger with sharp spikey bones that protruded out like a spear.

“Holy crap! This boss has the Shape Shifting ability?” Fatty Han dropped his jaw in shock.

“Luckily he didn’t turn into a sexy Sailormoon or it would be hilarious!” Zhang Yang laughed as he continued to swing his sword to attack.

“Grrrr...” The Bone Tiger growled and jumped at Zhang Yang.

“F*ck me! The boss actually turned from magic to physical attack!” Zhang Yang let his guard down and let the boss attacked him with its huge fangs.

‘-405!’

‘-417!’

“Haha! Bite that fellow! Haha! Good tiger!” Drizzler cheered.

“Hey! Little brat, I have no quarrel with you! Why would you say something like that?!” Zhang Yang said while he laughed.

“Hmph! Fatty’s mouth is his negative points! As for you, your bad side is your intentions!” Drizzler complained.

“Oh my...” Fatty Han covered his mouth like a woman in shock. He then talked like an old lady. “Oh little Drizzler! Since when did you learn to talk like that?”

“Grr...” After turning into a beast, Guranda had completely lost his ability to speak.

Suddenly, a black light gleamed across the tiger’s body and all of the bone spikes protruded further, like it was ready to fire off.

Zhang Yang’s heart skipped a beat and quickly yelled. “Everyone get behind me!”

‘Ding! Guranda has used [Bone Arrow Assault] Lasts for 10 seconds!’

Shush! Shush! Shush!

Arrow-like spikes continuously flew out from the boss’ back and into the

sky. The arrows formed a huge circle, as it gathered more and more arrows to become bigger. Up to a moment, all the arrows were unleashed down to the ground, like a rain of arrows.

‘-191!’

‘-194!’

‘-189!’

‘...’

Everyone was unable to avoid the attack as it came down from the sky instead of the front as Zhang Yang hoped. Everyone suffered around 200 damage every second. Luckily, Little Snow was proficient enough to flash cast as many healing spells and other recovery skills as she could. She withheld the [holy shield] for the person with the lowest HP in case she could not heal in time.

After 10 seconds, everyone in the party lost close to 2,000 HP. If it was not because of Little Snow’s powerful healing power, everyone would have died. Instead, they were left alive with 300 or so remaining HP. Zhang Yang had strong defense, massive HP, and amazing dodging skills; his remaining HP was at least 1,500.

“Little Snow, I need you heal everyone to full health in case of another attack like that! Everyone else, attack faster please! We need to get him back to his original form to prevent more ultimate skills!” said Zhang Yang as he attacked faster and faster.

Everyone else joined his frenzy and attacked the boss as well. 60%, 55%, 50%... eventually the boss’ HP dropped down to 33%. It was then a similar black light engulfed the boss that rendered all attacks to be immune.

“I wonder what it would become this time?” said Fatty Han with his eyes wide open.

“Damn! DAMN YOU ALL TO HELL! I WILL KILL YOU! KILL YOU, I MUST!” An extremely thundering voice could be heard and the boss revealed its true form. A huge 7 meters long giant crimson scorpion.

Chapter 69: Shape Shifting Tool

Shing! Shing!

A metallic sound could be heard when the red giant scorpion Guranda snapped its claws.

Fuuh! It moved out of the sudden towards Zhang Yang.

Shush!

The sound of the air being ripped apart by the claw as it missed Zhang Yang's body.

Zhang Yang quickly took a few more steps back and got out of the claw's attack range. But just when he wanted to take a breather, he could feel a strong sense of killing intent from the boss. His was just about to activate [block] out of instinct.

Suddenly, he could see a shadow resembling a spear piercing through the air towards him. It was the dark red scorpion's tail and it was coming for him.

'[block]!'

'-117!' [block] reflect damage.

'-234!' [shield bash].

The way Zhang Yang used [block] and [shield bash] consecutively and with such fluidity impressed the party. It was not just those two skills that left their jaws hanging. Zhang Yang was able to do all those things alone and under pressure. Everyone else could only inhale in their breath in amazement. They thought if either one of them replaced that position, they would be completely f*cked beyond any recognition. Once they had that thought, and still see Zhang Yang alive and kicking, they had nothing but respect for that man.

After Guranda had changed its appearance into a huge scorpion, its attack turned stronger and fiercer, like a spider tank with claws made from steel. Even though Zhang Yang had been moving around at the

speed of light, he could not withstand all 3 consecutive attacks of the boss. 2 claws and 1 tail was just too much. With his [block] constantly on cooldown, he could only dodge two straight attacks and would have to take on the third attack head on.

“This boss is strong!” Fatty Han cried out.

“Please. All bosses are strong. And this one is a Field boss. It doesn’t have a participation limit. You could have unlimited amount of player trying to land a hit on this thing. Some bosses could be killed off with just a player, while others require up to 10, or 100, even 1000 players. Those bosses are just on a whole other level!” Zhang Yang replied even when he was in the midst of battle.

“If this was in a proper dungeon, how many party members would this roughly take?” Fatty Han asked curiously.

Zhang Yang blocked an attack and dodged the other before he could find some time to reply.

“Approximately 5 to 10, more or less!”

“Tch! Even I could have guessed that.” Drizzler muttered.

In the midst their conversation, an odd red light flashed through the boss’ body.

Before Zhang Yang could even say anything, his instincts kicked in and activated [block]. The boss suddenly spun its large body as swiftly as a top.

‘Ding! Guranda the Chameleon has used [blade dance], causing 500 physical damage every second to every target in the melee attack range. Last 4 seconds!’

‘-472!’

‘[block]!’

Pang! Pang! Pang!

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler suffered around 500 damage from the spinning monster. Luckily the damage type was physical, and could still be reduced by their armor value. Still, even after the reduced damage, it was

still too strong!

“Sister! Heal me! I’m dying here! Ah~~” Drizzler lost her control and started calling out to her cousin.

Little Snow did not immediately react on impulse. Instead, she made quick calculations and casted [holy shield] on Drizzler followed by [holy prayers], before finally chanting a healing spell. Zhang Yang received [regeneration] from her and she had been maintaining it ever since to make sure Zhang Yang never lost his focus.

4 seconds later, the boss’ skill stopped and only focused on trying to snap Zhang Yang into two.

Drizzler had received around 1,900 damage from the boss. However, thanks to Little Snow’s various support, such as the [holy shield] that absorbed 600 damage while [holy prayer] recovered over 400 health. Along with the constant tick from [regeneration], Little Snow has basically shielded Drizzler so extensively that she only took a total of 800 damage from the boss. After [regeneration] ticked a few times, Drizzler would have been fully healed.

Zhang Yang on the other hand was much stronger and less dependent on her. Zhang Yang already had a solid defense to begin with. He had a 20% damage reduction passive, coupled with his 70 points of Defense value, which meant that he only received 330 damage from the original damage of 500. He had successfully blocked the first attack and even he did not need to receive healing since he had only taken 3 direct hits which totaled up to 1,000 damage. In contrast to the barrage of blows he had defended himself from, this was akin to a graze. Out of his tanky 1,900 HP, it was pretty severe, but not to the point where he would need immediate healing.

If they had another healer instead of Little Snow, then he or she would panic and the first thing that came to mind would be to blindly heal the main tank instead of carrying out a longer termed, sustained prevention for the main tank which would subsequently have led to the entire party’s death. However, in this situation, if the healer had done otherwise and

only prioritized the main tank, it would inevitably have led Drizzler to certain death!

The boss's [blade dance] was quite frequent. It was activated once roughly every 20 seconds. Drizzler was smart enough to evade the attack once it was activated. Still, she would receive a hit or two, though it will not place her in a dangerous position. Little Snow would only need to cast one [regeneration] to settle the problem.

On the other hand, the Hunter's pets were completely killed off since they could not recall their pets in time.

25%, 20%, 15%...

The team's firepower was so overpowering that the boss' HP bar was dropping down like an avalanche.

"Hmph! Stupid boss! This little girl will smash you into tiny little pieces!" cried Drizzler. Her attacks were quite eye-catching. She jumped up and down, wielding the long spear in her hands, locked in an elaborate, elegant dance, dealing damage continuously.

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

"ARGH..." As the HP bar dropped down the last drop but not completely drained, Guranda's body flashed back into his original dwarf form. Before it ran away it screamed pathetically, "M-Mortal! I-I'll return s-someday!"

As the last syllable died out, it ran back into the magic circle and disappeared in a flash of black light. It dropped a Stone box at the spot of its disappearance.

"Crap! We didn't manage to kill it!" Fatty Han ran to the altar and observed the magic circle again.

"Can we summon him again and beat him to a pulp?" Fatty Han turned around and asked the party.

"Okay! Okay! Fine by me! We can get another treasure chest!" The mere thought of money in her mind was enough to give Drizzler the motivation to fight the boss again.

Fatty Han then proceeded to bite his fingers again and dripped the flowing blood into the bowl.

1...2...3 seconds ticked past.

Fatty Han waited for another 30 seconds but nothing happened. Not even a slight breeze.

“What the...” Fatty Han bewildered. He quickly turned around only to see Zhang Yang was holding his laughter. Fatty Han immediately knew that he was being fooled. He growl, “Little Yang!”

Zhang Yang’s laughter became more apparent. “The boss isn’t dead, but according to the story setting, it was successfully killed. Why else would it drop a treasure chest here!?” The chest here is equal to its dead body! If you still insist in summoning him back here to fight, according to the regular system refresh rate for a Green-Copper boss, you’d have to wait for two days!”

“F*CK!” Fatty Han was furious. “Then, why didn’t you stop me just now!?”

“It’s just for the fun of it. You’ll be fine with losing a couple drops of blood, right? Think of it as losing weight!”

“F*ck you!”

“Alright guys. Open the chest, we still have 3 more floors of bosses to fight!” Hundred Shots quickly tried to calm Fatty Han.

Little Snow and Drizzler were reluctant but were eventually persuaded to open the chest.

[Chameleon’s Headdress] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Use: Allows you to disguise yourself to be one of the following character. 1, Dwarf. 2, Bone Tiger. 3, Scorpion. Last for 5 minutes. Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

Level requirement: 20

“Ha! This is fun! This is fun! I want it! Gimme!” Drizzle quickly cried out like a little girl.

“F*ck! This is quite an interesting item! I want it as well!” Fatty Han too cried out.

“Pervy bro, you’re already such an old man, why would you take away a children’s toy? Don’t you know shame?” Drizzler scolded him.

Fatty Han on the other hand was so infuriated that his face was completely red.

“I AM ONLY 5 YEARS OLDER THAN YOU!”

“Hmph! Noob tank! What say you!? Who should keep this toy?” Drizzler looked at Zhang Yang with her teeth exposed in a snarl, ready to bite his face off.

Zhang Yang only laughed weakly and said, “You know, I was thinking that we should just sell this toy. I think this item could be sold with ease for a few ten thousand gold coins! Since there are rich players in this game, I think they would buy this to show off!”

According to his previous experience in the game, this little shape shifting tool was actually sold up to 500,000 gold pieces. This was one of the few valuable non-combat item in Cave of Bones. This was also the reason why huge guilds would occupy this place. A mountain of gold coins meant a stack of money!

Drizzler’s eye glinted with the yellow metallic color of gold when she heard its value.

“Y-YYeah! Let’s sell it!”

In the end, Little Snow got hold of the item to be sold off in the auction house. However, before that Little Snow wanted to have a little fun. She then put on the hat and activated its effect.

Poof!

Little Snow turned from a sexy woman to a huge Boney Tiger in a puff of smoke.

“Wuuu...” Drizzler watched in utmost jealousy. “Cousin... I don’t think we should sell this amazing toy!”

Eventually, Drizzler thought it out and the party decided to keep the item instead of selling it. Since the item is not a bound-type item, anyone could use it whenever they feel like it.

“Little Yang, I think next time when the boss respawns, we should come over and kill it! Each of us should have at least one hat to play with!” Fatty Han said with full of passion.

“Hah! Alright then!” Zhang Yang nodded. This kind of non-combat item was quite marketable in the future. Its value would always remain high since it can never be discarded for being over-leveled. Player could use this item regardless of their level since it was an item for fun. The boss would spawn once every 2 day which meant that it would be a few hundred thousand pieces of gold every 2 days. Even in the late stages of the game, it would mean a few hundred thousand gold coins worth of money.

[Skill book: Chain Slash] (Skill Book)

Use: Teaches you [chain slash].

Class requirement: Warrior, Knight, Bandit.

“Eh...noob tank! What’s with this skill? Is it good?” Drizzler asked Zhang Yang. He is a “beta-player”, he must know about this skill!

Zhang Yang laughed and casually passed the skill book to her. “You’ll know it once you’ve learn it!”

Drizzler stuck out her tongue and said, “Hmph! This skill must be pretty useless since you’re so generous with it!”

“Huh!?” Zhang Yang laughed. “Why would you say that?”

“Hm. Previously, when the skill book [eagle eye] dropped out, you were so desperate to have it!” Drizzler explained as she just accepted the skill book and learned it immediately.

[Chain Slash]: Deliver two straight attacks with 75% melee damage with each strike. This attack ignores 100% defense and cannot be blocked nor

evaded. Cost: 20 Rage, Requirement: Melee weapon. Cool down time: 10 seconds.

“Eh?! This skill is great!” Drizzler posted the skill description after learning it. This skill was perfect for her since her attack interval was very low yet very strong. Now that this skill increased the attack count by 1, it helped in significantly increasing the overall damage output, especially since the skill ignored 100% defense, and was unblockable and unavoidable. This skill would be extra useful when she would face a strong defense class like Guardians or Defenders.

Zhang Yang had no problem handing over the skill since he already had [eagle eye]. Even though it was advisable to have an extra skill, he would be gaining a number of extra skills when he reached a certain level in the future anyway. And once that was to happen, all that he would gain were headaches with that many skills to level up.

After picking up several silver coins, the chest disappeared. The party then walked again towards the end of the second floor and found themselves at an entrance to the next floor where a huge rock was supposed to be.

“Will the entrance close again after all of us go inside?” Fatty Han asked a peculiar question.

“No! Unless the second boss respawns, this entrance will always be here!” said Zhang Yang with utmost confidence.

“Oh!” Fatty Han finally relaxed.

Zhang Yang walked in slowly and carefully as he was almost killed the previous floor. He peeked in carefully from the third floor entrance and scanned the area before stepping through. The third floor was completely empty, there was nothing. Not a single monster was present.

Chapter 70: Freyna The Shadow Assassin

“Eh? That’s weird. How come there aren’t any monsters around?”
Curious and childlike, Drizzler squeezed out from behind Zhang Yang and stood in front of him.

Zhang Yang frowned. It is impossible to have no monsters on the field!
Either there were really no monsters around or perhaps they were...

Pong!

The sound of a hollow knock could be heard and stars appeared on Drizzler head, indicating a stun effect. Immediately her character began to sway back and forth.

Foosh!

A black clothed figure appeared out of thin air and stood behind Drizzler. It then raised a pair of shiny daggers and started to stab at Drizzler’s back.

“I’m being attack!” Drizzler cried out.

Zhang Yang immediately used [provoke] and hacked his sword into the monster.

‘-347!’

Being affected by Zhang Yang’s [provoke], the black clothed man turned around and began to attack Zhang Yang instead.

“Shit! It’s a stealth monster!” Fatty Han cried.

[Shadow Assassin] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 2,500

The monster was weak and was killed off effortlessly. However, the main problem in this third floor was the fact that they did not know where their targets were nor did they know the number of their enemy! If the number of monsters were the same as the second floor, with the same volume of

aggressiveness, they would most definitely be annoyed to hell!

“Let’s go!”

The party moved forward, not knowing when nor where the monsters would attack from. However, within just a few steps, they were attacked. The number of monsters varied from time to time. There were times where they were only attacked by 1 monster, while in the worst case scenario, they were attacked by a group of 7 assassins! These assassins had the Bandit’s active skills [ambush] and [kidney shot].

As the party proceed on, Little Snow and Drizzler reached Level 21 while the 3 guys were almost reaching the next level.

“I’ll be damned. If someone would have come here alone and accidentally ran into 4 to 5 monsters, they would surely have been dead!” said Fatty Han with traces of fear in his voice. At some point before, they were all attacked by a group of 7 assassins simultaneously. Fatty Han got the worst of it and he was left traumatized by them.

“There will be tougher monsters in larger groups in the future dungeons. These kind of monsters are extremely common. What’s more, almost all of the monsters are elite tier, players could be killed off if the party’s tank’s reaction rate is slow.” Zhang Yang walked to the front.

“That’s just wrong!” Fatty Han shook his head.

“If you want to fight a stealth monster properly, you’ll need to farm yourself a [Flashbang]” said Zhang Yang.

“That’s too tough. According to the official database, [Flashbang]’s drop rate is only at 1 over 10 thousand. That drop rate is just too much to handle!”

Lately, Fatty Han had picked up the habit of studying about the game in the official website. He had improved his understanding about his own class, better than when he was only a beginner.

“Of course the drop rate would be bad! Otherwise, all of the Bandit class members would cease to exist!”

Even though the monsters on this floor were quite tough and troublesome to deal with, the party managed to fight their way to the end of the floor.

“Stop! Don’t go in just yet!” Zhang Yang halted in his steps. “Walk around and make sure that the field is clear of all monsters. I’m pretty sure that this floor’s boss will be in stealth as well. We won’t know when we could trigger the fight. If we did trigger it and accidentally drag in more monsters into the boss’s fight, it would only cause us trouble!”

The party took extreme steps to make sure there were no monsters left out in their way to the end of the floor.

“Where is the boss?” asked Fatty Han quietly as they arrived at the end of the third floor.

“I bet that the boss is hidden in some corner. It will not appear until we stepped into its aggro range!” said Zhang Yang. “I think that we should just move on, the boss will surely appear later!”

Zhang Yang walked ahead of the team. The entire team walked carefully in a single file and into the fourth floor entrance. Out of the sudden, a black shadow flashed across and appeared beside Hundred Shots. A pair of blade could be seen reflecting some light and Hundred Shots was quickly sent into a stunned status. Damage text appeared rapidly on his head as his HP bar dropped like a landslide.

Zhang Yang was prepared, he quickly activated [charge] and [provoke] to grab the monster’s aggro away from Hundred Shots.

The shadow quickly turned around and changed its target to Zhang Yang. It’s dagger in its hands moved back and forth like a flash of lightning! Zhang Yang could not dodge every attack even though he had maximized his own body to evade. It could not be helped, the character’s own Dexterity attribute was not high enough to keep up with his own reaction speed.

Seeing the monster was no longer “raping” him, Hundred Shots left out a sigh of relief. Little Snow quickly healed Hundred Shots and also Zhang Yang at the same time. Hundred Shots was struck to the point of having

only 137 remaining HP. If Zhang Yang were to act only a millisecond slower, he would have been killed off!

When Zhang Yang had managed to fight with the monster at a standstill, the party could finally observe the true nature of the monster. The monster was a sexy and slender female NPC wearing an extremely tight unitard that was plastered against her skin, accenting her slender, voluptuous body line. Especially those pair of ripe watermelons!

Even though her body was ironically covered in the most vulgar way imaginable, her face was covered in a black cloth. Her appearance was hidden carefully.

“Woah! That boombalicious body!” Fatty Han drooled.

[Freyna the Shadow Assassin] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250k

“Jealous, Little brat?” said Zhang Yang as he noticed Drizzler was staring at her breasts.

Drizzler was caught off guard and stuttered as she replied.

“W-What..No I...I was just...I...No! I w-was not j-j-jealous! Having such a large b-b-breast is very troublesome! Not only it will cause you to slouch which is bad for your posture, but it would also very tiring, carrying t-t-that thing around! I do not want to have such l-l-large breasts!”

Little Snow laughed arrogantly and puffed out her own chest. The result movement of her voluptuous pair would leave anyone nose bleed in its wake.

“Little brat. Don’t deny your true heart! If what you say is true then try stop doing the “self-massaging exercise”!

“Han Yin Xue! Why must you reveal everything about me?!” Drizzler got angry.

“Little Yang. I think your [Cripple Defense] does live up to its name!” Fatty Han sighed disappointingly.

“Huh? What?”

“F*ck! You’ve hit her so many times with the [Cripple Defense] but I don’t see any of her armor getting torn apart! What kind of armor reduction is that!?” Fatty Han raged on.

“Dude!” Everyone but Fatty Han scolded.

Freyna whispered something unintelligible and vanished out of sight. Her entire body blended into the darkness.

“Eh? Did she just quit and run?” Fatty Han laughed.

“No! She just turned invisible! Watch your back, she might appear at any time!” Zhang Yang said.

Just after Zhang Yang finished his sentence, Freyna appeared behind Fatty Han and hammered on his head with the back of her dagger. As he staggered in the [stun] status, she quickly brandished her daggers and dealt a combo-infused flurry of swift cuts and shanks on Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang quickly casted [provoke] hoping to catch her attention.

‘Immune!’

Little Snow quickly acted in response. First, she casted [holy shield] and then [regeneration] followed with the longest casting time of [higher healing].

The attack on Fatty Han lasted until the [ambush] skill effect timed out. Only then did Freyna turned her sights on Zhang Yang and started her attack on him. Fatty Han had sustained heavy damage. To think that in that short moment, Fatty Han had received more than 2,300 damage. He would have been killed off if not for Little Snow’s quick reaction.

“Damn! This boss’ sudden burst damage is pretty nasty!” said Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang nodded in agreement.

“This is the power of a Bandit. It can cause a high sudden burst of damage the moment it comes out of stealth. The chain attack that follows could eliminate half of any class’s HP! However, keep in mind that after

the chain attack, the attack would be reduced! When the boss disappears, it will ignore all aggro and randomly pick one player and attack him for 5 seconds! That is why [ambush] is so frustrating!”

“Hm. Luckily it wasn’t Little Snow. If it did, she would die instantly if she couldn’t heal herself!” said Hundred Shots.

“Haha! Let’s just hope that a woman would not hurt another woman!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“Oh please, why would she hurt me? I’m still a pure young maiden!” Little Snow winked seductively at Zhang Yang.

“Han Yin Xue!” Drizzler got angry.

90%, 80%, 70%...

Upon being afflicted with 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] the boss’ defense was reduced; the party’s strong attack was only made stronger and her HP bar continued dropping at a faster rate than before. However, the most troublesome factor of her was the [ambush] skill. She could pick anyone out of random and inflict extremely high damage. If Little Snow wavered just a little, that person would definitely die!

50%, 40%, 30%...

Once again Freyna disappeared and enter stealth mode.

“Don’t pick the healer! Don’t pick the healer!” Fatty Han quickly chanted.

Foosh!

Freyna appeared behind Little Snow and knocked her out. She raised her dagger and started inflicting damage.

“F*CK! F*CK YOU FATTY HAN!” Zhang Yang cried out.

“Damn your bad mouth! Jinx!” Zhang Yang scolded. It was a pity that Zhang Yang could not use [sacrifice] to save her. All he could do now was just stare at her.

[sacrifice] was a Level 40 Guardian skill.

[Sacrifice]: Cover a teammate, sharing all inflicted damage for 5 seconds.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

Range: 30 meter.

The high burst damage of a Bandit is the natural enemy of all low defense Priests. Before the boss could even finish her combo attack, Little Snow's HP was reduced to none. With a nudge, her slender body fell on the ground.

'Ding! Player Little Snow had died!'

"What!? F*cking boss! How dare you kill my beautiful Little Snow! I will f*ck you up real good!" Fatty Han screamed as he drew his bow and attacked.

"Hey! Pervy Fatty. You can stop the act now. I'd never like a fat guy!" Little Snow posted in the party channel.

"Oh! Why would you say that! My heart and intentions are pure! Why would I think of having the two of you in my arms!"

"..."

After Little Snow's death, the boss turned and attack Zhang Yang. Without Little Snow's healing support, Zhang Yang could still dodge and evade most of the attack, but there were still some attacks that got past his defense and reduced his HP!"

"Don't waste any time! Attack!"

25%, 20%, 15%!

Freyna suddenly disappeared when Zhang Yang HP dropped down to 700 points. He quickly used the [Coarse Cloth Bandage].

'+100!'

'+100!'

'+100!'

'...'

Having the title [Physician's Friend], Zhang Yang's recovery rate was doubled when he used the [Coarse Cloth Bandage]. While others would only recover 500HP, Zhang Yang could recover up to 1,000HP! He recovered back to full health after only 7 seconds!

"Little Yang! Is that the effect from the reward you got from that bloody quest?" Fatty Han was jealous.

"Yup!"

"F*ck! I should have done that! Argh! Crap! What a waste!" Fatty Han screamed.

Foosh!

The boss appeared behind Hundred Shots. She raised her dagger, stunned him, and start to attack him with a chain of attack.

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler quickly used [charge] and dashed over. Fatty Han quickly drew his bow and attacked.

Not only have they lost their only healer, they would lose this fight if they do not kill her in time!

Chapter 71: Onward, to the Fourth Floor

Being attacked by the boss, it would take a miracle for Hundred Shots to escape unscathed, however, it did provide a valuable opening for the rest of the team to attack the boss.

14%, 13%, 12%!

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had died!’

Freyrna turned and attacked Zhang Yang.

“Huh! This boss is smart! She killed off the easy targets first! Hm! Her IQ must be over 200!” Fatty Han could still find the time to joke.

“Pervy Fatty! Your IQ on the other hand is just only one digit lesser than hers! Only 20!” said Drizzler mockingly.

Fatty Han appeared to be unfazed by her insult. He laughed instead. “Hoho~ I’ve actually graduated properly from high school! I have a certificate!”

“Hah! So what?!” Drizzler was not impressed.

“Well then, shall we try and test our knowledge. Where is your progress on your syllabus?”

Drizzler paused. Right then, she was still in high school and have yet to graduate. She was sure to lose to Fatty Han! Drizzler could only stare venomously at Fatty Han before going back to focus on fighting the boss.

11%, 10%, 9%...

Even though the team had lost 2 players, their total firepower was not greatly affected since one of their losses was a healer!

The boss’ HP was still dropping down at a reasonable speed. Zhang Yang had unleashed his full potential to fight the boss, dodging every possible attack. However, he was still receiving damage from the boss. He could not properly maintain his current HP from being completely drained!

Out of the sudden, the boss stopped again and vanished into thin air.

Since he had only used the [Course Rough Bandage] less than 30 seconds ago, he could not use it again since it was still in its cooldown phase. However, Zhang Yang had 1,100 HP remaining while the boss only had 6% left. The fight had become more and more intense. It was now a battle of speed and damage!

Foosh!

Freyrna popped out from behind Drizzler and knocked her out.

“Fatty! It’s up to you guys now!”

“Leave it to us!”

6%, 5%, 4%!

By the time Drizzler dropped dead, the boss had about 3% HP left.

“F*ck! We have to kill her!” said Fatty Han as he drew his bow as haphazardly as ever. “You dared to take away both of my Little Snow and Drizzler! I’d really f*ck you up good!”

Freyrna turned and faced Zhang Yang after killing Drizzler. The sound of her blade clashing with Zhang Yang’s shield could be heard over the entire field.

2%

1%

0%!

Bam! The boss dropped down, leaving Zhang Yang with only around 400 HP left standing. It was not as intense as it would have seemed.

“Well...damn! This boss isn’t that strong but how did we lose so many players?” Fatty Han said discontentedly.

On the other side, the 3 dead players had released their souls and had begun running to their corpse.

“Hm...This is how the future high level bosses should be like. Bosses that are Yellow-Gold tier and higher are completely immune to any Provoking effect, they are different from this boss who could only be immune to

[provoke] when she is attacking someone in [ambush]. Other higher level bosses also have this kind of high burst damage skill that could instantly kill a player! The developers are tired of seeing this kind of standard play style where the tanks would hold the aggro, attackers attack, and healers heal. They thought that this kind of play style was too rigid and concrete!"

Fatty Han walked around as he listened.

"However, sooner or later, there will be a time when players are strong enough to even go solo on a boss!" Zhang Yang said as he reminisced about his time in the game 5 years ago. That time, players who were lucky enough to obtain the only Inheritance could out-perform anyone in their party! They were also very strong in dungeon raiding that led to their success. They could activate a long cooldown skill and handle a boss alone!

Fatty Han nodded. He then walked to where the boss's body was and grinned.

"Hey Little Yang...Do you think I could remove the clothes?"

"What..."

The boss's dead body was certainly alluring. Her clothes were torn apart everywhere, revealing a metallic color of her inner undergarments. Within that sexy armor, it was holding up her "ripe watermelons", the skin fair and smooth.

"Pui! Bloody perverted fat f*ck!"

"Eww...pervy Fatty!"

The two ladies who were running to their corpse expressed their disgust.

Zhang Yang on his side frowned. "Come on bro...How many barrels of Viagra did you eat till you got so freaking horny?"

Fatty Han only laughed in response. "Oh! I'm just joking around! It's not like I'm gonna actually do it! Guys! Come on! I'm just trying to liven things up a little here!"

After a while, the party revived and Drizzler went up to open the corpse.

[Queen's Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +20

Intelligence: +16

Spirit: +4

Level requirement: 20

Seeing the equipment what Drizzler was holding had no difference compared to an actual woman's undergarment, the 3 males started to grin. Their eyes swiveled back and forth between the bra and Little Snow and imagined how she would look like wearing it. They started to drool. But then the thought of Drizzler putting it on rendered them emotionless.

To have perverted thoughts was only a male's privilege! This had nothing to do with love or loyalty here! They were just thoughts, nothing else!

"I don't need it!" Little Snow bellowed with a note of finality. If she had put on that piece of equipment, she should have just quit her job and become a belly dancer!

"Give it to me then!" said Fatty Han. "I just thought of giving it to someone else!" The girls from Blaze City came into his mind.

Little Snow did not have the face to sell this thing on the auction house. She had no other choice but to pass it to Fatty Han unwillingly.

[Winter's Dagger] (Green-Copper, Dagger)

Weapon attack: 44-60

Attack interval: 1.3 seconds

DPS: 40

Level requirement: 20

"Argh! Another equipment wasted!" Hundred Shots sighed loudly.

Zhang Yang thought a while and said, "Don't sell it yet. We should put

this into the guild's storage. We can let the guildmates exchange this with their contribution points. We need a party of well-equipped players to fight the Main Wing of Marzerway's Lair after all."

Since this mattered in a long run, even being greedy misers, Drizzler and Little Snow agreed to keep it in the guild storage.

"Little Yang, how about Gray-Silver equipment? Are we going to store them in the guild storage as well?" Fatty Han asked.

"We'll see to it then. If we get a Gray-Silver equipment, that is."

After distributing the items, the party went on and headed into the fourth floor.

As usual, Zhang Yang led the way and peeked into the entrance carefully. There, approximately 40 to 50 meters away from where he stood, was a humanoid monster that held a sword.

It was a large Skeleton monster that stood at most 4 meters tall. It was heavily equipped with armor, from a helmet on its head to the heavy chest plate on its body. The sword in its hand was long enough to take up two thirds of its own height. It would seem that the monster had been standing there for a while. The sword was completely covered in dust and cobweb that it was no different from the torches that lit the hallway.

Another 30 to 40 meters away from the Skeleton monster was another similar monster standing behind. Based on this, Zhang Yang calculated that there could only be about 10 or more monsters in this floor!

Zhang Yang quickly checked on the monster's system information.

[Skeleton Guard] (Elite)

Level: 25

HP: 20,000

The rest of the party followed Zhang Yang and came out of the entrance. They stared at the huge monster and could not help but be stunned by its size.

"Sigh...Why would all monsters be larger than players?" said Fatty Han

confused.

Drizzler giggled and said, “Well, that’s not entirely true you know. Fatty bro, if you were to gain some weight and put on some muscles, you could be the same as a boss!”

Fatty Han knew that Drizzler was making fun of his weight but instead of being angry or infuriated, Fatty Han was happy, as if he had won a jackpot! His completely unforeseen reaction left Drizzler speechless.

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang waved his sword and charged towards the monster fearlessly. He had seen many bosses now, why would he be afraid of some Elite-tier monster?

‘[charge]!’

Zhang Yang chain attacked the monster and dealt a substantial amount of damage.

The hollow eerie eye sockets suddenly lit up with a pair of emerald orbs. The monster let out a loud shriek. Its entire body shook and dust fell off its body. The way it moved slowly was as if the monster was asleep the entire time and had just been aroused from slumber by Zhang Yang’s attack. It turned around, lifted its gigantic sword and raised up sparks as it dragged it across the ground, and slashed Zhang Yang at the speed of light.

The power of the swing was displayed immediately when the sword passed through Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang moved away quickly and he could not anticipate the sword would carry some sort of lighting elemental attack that hit him.

Bzz!

Zhang Yang suddenly felt a little numb when suddenly he lost control of his body, he could not even activate block and could only see the huge sword slashing the air, rushing towards him.

‘-160!’

‘-330!’

Luckily the effect only last for a brief millisecond. Zhang Yang gained control of his body and immediately referred back to his battle log.

‘You have received the effect of [electric shock].’

‘You have received 160 Natural damage (40 points reduced damage effect) from [electric shock].’

‘You are attacked by the Skeleton Guard, receiving 330 physical damage (170 points reduced damage effect).’

“Electric...Shock?” Zhang Yang muttered. If every attack carried by the monster had the effect of [electric shock], the fight will be completely one sided! He could not even grab hold of the aggro properly!

While he was deep in his thoughts, Hundred Shots and the other had been attacking the monster. These people had such high attack power that they managed to kill the monster off fairly quickly. Zhang Yang then studied the log carefully and found that out of 15 sword swings, only 6 carried the [electric shock] effect.

However, the collected data was too isolated and vague, he could not determine whether the activation rate of the [electric shock] was truly at 40%.

“Eh?! The monster actually dropped an equipment!” Fatty Han reach out and touched the monster’s corpse. A boot appeared.

[White Skeleton Battle Boots] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +6

Strength: +4

Level requirement: 20

“How rare this is! Elite monsters are considered to be the stingiest monsters ever and yet here we have one that dropped an equipment!” Zhang Yang laughed. “Fatty Han, keep the equipment first! We will put this in the guild storage as well. Hm...Level 20 Black-Steel equipment would cost 20 guild contribution points! A Green-Copper equipment

would cost 40 points! When there are many people wanting to exchange it at once, prioritize the one with the most points!”

“Okay!” Fatty Han replied. Zhang Yang and him loved to fight, always allowing their childish minds to run wild. Sometimes Zhang Yang would be the one that commanded him; sometimes it would the other way around. Sometimes they would be lenient, sometimes they would be firm. This kind of camaraderie was not weird to them.

“Let’s go then!”

The party pushed forward. Even though the Skeleton Guards were strong they could not endure the party’s strong tank and healer. Their current speed was much faster compared to the second and third floor. In just a matter of time, the party managed to arrive at the deepest ground of the fourth floor. The Elite monsters were as stingy as Zhang Yang had said, while only the first Skeleton Guard dropped an equipment, the rest of the monsters on the floor did not drop anything at all.

Zhang Yang had calculated that the activation rate of [electric shock] was at around 30%.

On the exit of the fourth floor stood a large Skeleton Warrior similar in appearance. However, this one was different than the others; its body size was twice as large as the Skeleton Guard. Its presence alone was so strong that it gave out an ominous, pressuring aura.

Chapter 72: Lincar The Slaughterer

[Lica The Slaughterer] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250k

“Let’s hope that this boss has the same skill as the Skeleton Guard.” Said Zhang Yang. “The Elite Skeleton Guards attacks are strong but not particularly deadly. But when compared with the boss...that’s a whole different story...”

“Sigh...Looks like the load is on me!” Little Snow winked at Zhang Yang. “Later when we’re done, I expect you to treat me to relaxing spa session!”

Fatty Han eyes gleamed!

“Requesting to tag along!” He raised his flabby arm up high.

Drizzler snorted and said, “Fatty Bro, where you should go is not the spa but a gym!”

“Hmph! I exercise every day! Now that you mentioned it, I remember back then when I’m at the gym doing my workout, there will always be ladies staring at my sexy butt. Argh, I was so ashamed!”

“Yeah! Like that would happen! Only in your dreams!” Drizzler laughed and everyone else followed.

“Alright, let’s get started!” Zhang Yang unsheathe his sword.

Zhang Yang walked a few steps and entered the aggro range, triggering the boss. The giant Skeleton growled in a deep, thundering voice, and the entire cave resonated with its sheer power. The blackened eye sockets lit up in emerald fire.

Lincar the Slaughterer unsheathed its sword and behaved almost exactly like the Skeleton Guards, slicing the floor with its sword, producing a spark of lighting.

Zhang Yang quickly dodged and jumped to the other end. Fortunately, that attack did not activate the [electric shock] effect.

The battle started as the boss cracked open its jaw to speak.

“ALL. THAT. LIVES. MUST. FALL. TO. THE. ASHES!” roared Lincar as it swings its sword towards Zhang Yang.

“Tch! A boss that talks a lot bleeds a lot!” Fatty Han laughed.

“Hehe! Big ass boss! Give me all of your equipment!” Drizzler laughed as well.

“Muahah! That’s right! You’d better listen to what my little Drizzler says!”

Being a computer program, Lincar the Slaughterer did not talk or debate with a player, it only cared to do the one thing that it was programmed to do; eliminate the players with its best effort.

Lincar dragged its sword and raised it up high. Just when Zhang Yang was about to dodge the highly telegraphed attack, a flash of blue light struck him, sending a surge of electricity that rendered him completely immobile! Zhang Yang could not even move a finger!

‘-160!’

‘-748!’

Zhang Yang received two direct hits from the boss, the lower one from the [electric shock] and the higher damage from the normal attack.

Zhang Yang heart sank. He then realized that he received 700 over damage, even with his 20% damage reduction skill and 70 points Defense status. That would mean that the boss’s unsuppressed damage would reach up to 1,000 damage!

“Ha! HA! HAAA! PUNY. WEAK. MORTAL. BEING.” Lincar spoke in a weird manner, one word at a time, slow and heavily enunciated. Every syllable was heavily oppressive. Suddenly, its emerald eyes blazed fiercely and the sword in its hand ignited into similar emerald green fire.

‘Ding! Lincar the Slaughterer has used [soul strike]. All melee attacks will have an extra 30% Shadow attack. Lasts for 1 minute!’

“Shit! It’s strong!”

“DIE!” Lincar the Slaughterer bellowed as it swung its sword, cutting through air, leaving a trail of emerald light in its path.

Zhang Yang frantically moved around, dodging those that he can and used [block] against those that he could not. Even though the sword attacks could be easily blocked with [block], he could not prevent the damage completely since the [block] did not nullify the Shadow damage it carried. Every time the enemy sword swung, Zhang Yang would always receive around 250 Shadow damage.

“Pick up the pace!” Zhang Yang screamed.

Bzz!

A flash of blue light flashed as Zhang Yang was hit again by [electric shock]. Paralyzed and helpless, Zhang Yang was slashed 3 times by the boss.

‘-160!’

‘-250!’

‘-767!’

Little Snow hurriedly healed Zhang Yang with everything she had; she could not afford to let him die!

“HAHAHA! Weaklings! Scream and wail by my sword!” After a few speeches, the boss could finally deliver a proper sentence. It then raised its sword up to its forehead and a progress bar appeared above its head!

Without delay, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots quickly shot a [silencing shot] to it without Zhang Yang needing to remind.

‘Immune!’

“Oh crap! What is he up to?!” Fatty Han muttered.

The skill took 3 seconds to cast; it was not too long, neither too short, however what was even more surprising was the fact that a huge meteor appeared in the sky and smashed down on Zhang Yang and Drizzler.

BOOM!

‘-2,500!’

‘-2,000!’

‘Ding! Player Drizzler had died!’

‘Ding! Player Zhang Yang had died!’

“F*ck! What power!” Fatty Han gazed at the boss’s 73% remaining HP and immediately lost all hope, choosing to give up.

The entire team was killed in the blink of an eye.

“Noob tank! How did you and Drizzler die?” At the graveyard, Little Snow asked Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly refer to the battle log and checked.

‘You have received 2,000 Fire damage (500 point reduced damage) from [meteor strike].’

Drizzler followed suit and found out that she had also received 2,500 damage from the same skill.

“How do we fight this?” Fatty Han said. With only 1,900 HP, not even Zhang Yang could endure the skill.

“We can... Little Snow juts needs to heal us to full health at the moment of that [meteor strike] skill and also cast a [holy shield]!” Zhang Yang replied.

Little Snow’s magic attack had exceeded 300 and her [holy shield] could absorb up to 600 over damage. Its endurance could help increase the limits of one’s maximum HP!

After the team revived and recovered to full health, the boss returned to its previous posture, standing still like a statue, emotionless.

After a minute, everyone returned to their full health.

“Little brat, I want you to pay full attention. When the boss starts casting the skill, you need to withdraw as fast as possible!” said Zhang Yang.

“Okay!” Drizzler nodded.

Zhang Yang walked ahead and started the battle.

90%, 80%...So far so good...

Suddenly, the boss spoke a smooth taunt and started to chant a spell. Drizzler quickly ran away from her current position. The total spell incantation was 3 seconds, providing enough time for her to reach a same place if her reflexes were swift enough.

BOOM!

The boss completed the incantation and a huge rock fell down from the sky, hitting Zhang Yang on the head.

‘-3,386!’

Zhang Yang crumpled to the ground, completely burnt into a crisp.

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has died!’

“Weak little beings! All of you will die!” Lincar started its massacre and killed everyone before they could react.

“Argh...what a lost! We were killed twice now!” Little Snow sighed.

“Why has the damage increased?!” Fatty Han questioned.

Zhang Yang referred to the battle log again, he intended to find out the reason behind it.

‘You have received 3386 Fire damage (1,000 point reduced damage, 614 damage absorb by [holy shield]) from [meteor strike].’

Zhang Yang calculated and found it the truth behind its skill! The total damage will always be 5,000!

“Guys! I’ve found out! The boss’s skill has a fixed damage! It will always be 5,000 damage. If the skill hits anyone in the area, the damage will be distributed equally to everyone!”

The first time they were strike by the skill, both Zhang Yang and Drizzler received 2,500 damage each. The second time, since Zhang Yang was the only one who tanked the skill, he alone received all 5,000 damage! That was why he died!

Now that he understood the boss' mechanism, he could then device a plan to counter it.

"Guys! Change of plans! When the boss starts to chant the skill, I need everyone to gather to my position! If it's 5 of us, everyone should receive only 1,000 damage! If Little Snow could pre-cast us with [regeneration], we could all recover to full health in a blink!"

"Sounds good to me!"

"Okay!"

Everyone agreed and quickly revived and recuperated.

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang started the fight.

"Rape his ass!"

Everyone joined the fight once Zhang Yang activated his [charge].

The boss fight started for the third time and it progressed slowly, with the boss gradually losing HP.

90%, 80%, 70%!

Lincar raised its sword and chanted a spell.

"Everyone! Gather!" Zhang Yang quickly called out. He turned around and started running back while Little Snow and the range players ran towards him. With everyone gathered together, Little Snow quickly cast [regeneration] on everyone.

BOOM!

The huge meteor strike and everyone received damage.

'-1000!'

'-1000!'

'-1000!'

'-1000!'

'-800!'

After unleashing its skill Lincar growled and went back to attacking Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang used [charge] again and resumed on the offensive.

“Cousin, the guy named Lu called again, he said that he will come over in a few days!” said Drizzler as she swung at the boss.

“What?!” Little Snow raged. “How could he be so shameless?!”

“Hehe! It can’t be helped since you’re so beautiful. That guy will never give up since he is a fly!” Drizzler giggled.

Little Snow clenched her fist. “Hmph hmph...If that guy would even try to do anything at all, I’ll will smash his face in! What an arrogant man! He thinks that all the women would grovel at his feet since he has such a young and handsome face! Pui! It irritates me!”

Fatty Han quick interjected. “Little Snow! Tell me who the scoundrel is that dared to disturb you! I’ll personally beat the shit out of him!”

“Pervy Fatty! If you were to help out, does it count as a self-induced Trojan horse? To let the danger into your own house?” Drizzler giggled.

“Hmph! I am a man of honor and pride! People even call me the King Arthur of Honesty! Do you think I would do something as dishonorable as that?!”

“F*ck! Shut the hell up and move your fat ass!” Zhang yang screamed. The boss was about to unleash its skill again.

Everyone quickly stopped their conversation and sprinted towards Zhang Yang to share the burden of the [meteor strike] damage. With only 30% HP left, the boss’ doom seemed imminent.

“Seriously, if things get out of hand, you can rely on Fatty Han to help you!” said Zhang Yang. He had high hopes on these two girls in the Professional League, he did not want anything bad happening to them!

Zhang Yang could not remember seeing the name Little Snow nor Drizzler in his previous life. He thought that they might really have met with some malicious events in the past that had caused them to drown

among the nameless crowd. On the other hand, Fatty Han was quite dependable since he was famous in society around his area. Whenever he said something, people would listen, or perhaps in that annoying man's case, shiver.

Little Snow shook her head and still clenched her fist. "Tsk tsk tsk...This elder cousin here is a Black Belt Karate fighter. Do you think that a simple guy like him could do anything to me?"

While they were having their conversation, the boss unleashed [meteor] once, not long after having its HP dropping down to 5%.

When it died, the boss gave out quite a huge chunk of experience to the point where Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han levelled up.

Chapter 73: Magic Scroll

“I wonder what kind of crazy item this boss would drop...” Fatty Han was eager to open the corpse, anxiously anticipating the loot.

“Little brat! Open the corpse!” Zhang Yang moved aside and gestured her to proceed.

Drizzler helped herself to the body and claimed the prize.

[Beginner's God Oil: Light as a Feather] (Useable)

Use: Strengthen your boots. Permanently increasing your movement speed by 5%.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. “Hah! It actually would appear here!”

“Is this any good?” Drizzler asked. She did not think that 5% increase in movement speed is something amazing.

“In future battles...” Zhang Yang stopped after 3 words. Movement speed was a very important factor that could help in winning a fight. With a slightly faster movement speed, you could dodge an enemy attack or chase after an enemy to deliver the last fatal strike! However, the Professional League would only be available after 5 months or so. A beta player should not have any knowledge about the League!

“A warrior is famous for being slow. If one applies the 5% movement speed bonus, one could evade easier! It would be an advantage during PK!” Zhang Yang quickly rephrased his sentence.

“God oil huh...Why does the thought of Indian Assam came into my mind?” Fatty Han laughed. “I must say...the infamous Indian God Oil is not for speed, but endurance and strength! If you **** too quickly, aren't you being a fast gunner?”

“Just go to hell...”

Since everyone had no interest in this item, Zhang Yang automatically obtained it. He thought that his current Level 20 boots was not worth

using the oil on. He would rather wait until he obtained a Gray-Silver boots and then use it with the oil!

However, the oil was still a beginner's grade. There were higher and stronger grades. The highest grade could even increase up to 15% movement speed, and that would provide a noticeable speed increase.

[Mountain Cleaving Blade] (Green-Copper, Two-handed sword)

Weapon attack: 180-216

Attack interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 52

Level requirement: 20

“Wah! I want it! Gimme! Gimme!” Drizzler squealed.

“Eh? Why would you need it? Aren't you wielding a Level 20 Green-Copper weapon right now?” said Zhang Yang even though he knew the reason. He wanted to gauge Drizzler's understanding.

Drizzler rolled her eyes and said, “My current weapon has an attack interval of 3.5 seconds, that new weapon has 3.8 seconds! If a weapon attack interval is longer, the skill damage would be higher! As a Guardian, what would you know about a Berserker huh!?” Drizzler raised her nose high.

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed. He had never thought that he would receive a lecture about the game mechanics.

Drizzler did not behave as greedily as he thought she would. After equipping the new equipment, she expressed her desire to deposit the [Spider's Long Spear] into the guild storage.

[Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)] (Usable)

Use: Encourage your teammates, increasing all damage and healing rate by 5%, last for 5 minutes. Effects cannot be stacked.

Charge remaining: 3/3

Level requirement: 20

Note: This magic scroll was made personally by the great Necromancer Almark. You still smell the lingering scent of putrefaction in the air!

“This is a very useful item! Especially during a boss fight! This little item here could make a whole lot of difference!” said Zhang Yang happily. Never look down at the tiny 5% damage increase; if they were to use it in a 50-man dungeon, their attack could be increased by 5% fifty-fold. They could even turn the tide when fighting a difficult boss!

No wonder this place was always occupied by huge guilds! They were also hunting for this item as well! Those guilds have always been at each other’s necks for the right to farm at this place! This little piece of scroll was the reason behind their quarrel. Not to mention the shape shifting tool that played a role in their skirmish as well!

This little playground would belong to them!

Zhang Yang thought that he had to establish a certain power to occupy this field so ensure a successful capture! It was and always will be a treasure mine!

Since everyone belonged to the same team, they had no qualms about the distribution of loots. They also wanted to establish a certain amount respect for the party leader, thus they offered the scroll to Zhang Yang. He on the other hand suspected that their inventory was already full, that they only offered the item to him because they could not take in more items!

“A bunch of f*ckers!” Zhang Yang grit his teeth.

“Okay! Let’s go people! To the fifth floor now!”

The 4 of them giggled quietly and walked down the stone stairs the lead to the fifth floor. Vastly more experienced than before, the crowd walked carefully as ever when they approached the entrance. However, when they peeked into the door, they could only see a plain field. The field was not big; it was about the size of a football field. The visibility was not very reassuring even when there were plenty of lit torches hanging around the place. They could make out something in the middle of the field, in the midst of thick, green colored gas that spread across the entire field.

“No monster huh.” Fatty Han muttered and he pushed Zhang Yang towards the field.

“F*ck!” Zhang Yang was not ready for it. The moment his body entered the field and made contact with the green gas, a debuff appeared on his head.

[Deadly Poison]: Causes the target to receive 500 Natural damage every 3 seconds until the target leaves the effective area.

Zhang Yang frantically jumped back onto the stairs. The debuff disappeared immediately after but not before inflicting 400 damage on Zhang Yang.

“This entire area is poisoned! We need to consume the antidote that the NPC had given us!”

Drizzler quickly took the antidote out and wanted to immediately use it when Zhang Yang stopped her.

“Hold your horses there. We still do not know where the boss is! Since the antidote could only be used 3 times and is restricted to a time limit as well, we might have to return to make more from the NPC if we use them all.”

“Is that the boss? That shady figure in the center of the field?”

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Little Snow, put a [holy shield] and [regeneration] on me. I’m going in to check it out.”

Little Snow nodded and waved her hands, casting a shield and a recovery spell on him.

“Don’t die on me now, noob tank!”

“Don’t jinx it!” Zhang Yang grit his teeth. With a quick step, Zhang Yang ran into the center of the field.

Damage absorb!

3 seconds later, a damage text popped out on his head.

‘-187!’

Another 3 seconds passed and the shield was dispelled. Zhang Yang started to receive damage. On the other hand, [regeneration] started to tick and healed Zhang Yang.

‘-400!’

‘+129!’

Zhang Yang finally got closer and he got a clear view of the shady figure. It was indeed, the boss!

The shadowy figure was a rider on a skeletal horse. The skeleton stood rigid and had flaming green fire burning in its eye sockets. There were red flames spewing out from its nostrils. The developers really put their back in designing this monster!

The rider on the horse was completely covered in a crimson blood color armor. On the right side of the horse’s saddle was a long sword and on the left side was shield with a griffin symbol embroidered on it. The unblinking eyes sent a chill down Zhang Yang’s spine.

[Shurian, The Fallen Holy Knight] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 30

HP: 400k

Once Zhang Yang had read the boss’ information, he quickly turned and headed back as fast as he could. All the way through, he was taking a lot of damage.

“That’s weird. The boss was certainly a Gray-Silver tier but there was nothing in the quest description that talked about a knight. It did mention a Necromancer Zac...” Zhang Yang whispered.

Fatty Han on the other hand, was happy with the news. “Haha! Isn’t that great! We can defeat two Gray-Silver bosses!”

Zhang Yang shook his head silently. He still thought that was something was wrong but he could not put a finger on it.

“So...how do we fight it? What’s the plan?”

Everyone turned to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang twitched. Even though he had been reborn to repeat his life again, that did not mean that he would magically know everything about every boss! He stopped to think for a while.

“I have no idea what skills this boss has. We could only find out about it when we fight it! Alright, here is the plan. We’ll take the potion and quickly rush to fight the boss as fast as we can! There cannot be any time wasted! Until the antidote’s duration runs out, do not use another charge until I say so! There is a possibility that we can’t even kill it! And when that happens, we cannot afford to waste time!”

“Okay!” Everyone nodded.

“On the count of 3, we’ll take the antidote simultaneously and rush in!”

“1!”

“2!”

“3!”

Zhang Yang quickly used the [Properly-Made Antidote] and rushed into the fifth floor, charging towards the center and onto the boss. Fatty Han and the rest consumed the antidote and followed closely behind.

“Wow! Such a cool horse! I want it!” Drizzler screamed. “Noob tank! I want it! I want that horsie! I want! I want!”

Fatty Han laughed cynically. “Me too! Officer! Give me!”

“You f*cking fat f*ck!”

Zhang Yang originally did not have any thoughts on the skeleton horse but when Drizzler was screaming like a baby, he had to explained it to her. “Normally, a player can only buy a horse from an NPC after achieving Level 40. A player can also obtain it 5 levels lower, only when the guild has achieved Level 2 with full experience points! There is also another way actually, which is to farm a mount directly from boss! Still, a Level 30 boss does have the chance to drop a mount. However, even though the boss is riding a mount, it doesn’t necessarily mean that it will drop a mount!”

“Haha! All the more reason to kill it!” Fatty Han got excited. So far as to the progress of the game, players could only depend on their own two feet to move around. If they could get their hands on a horse... imagine how grand it would be, sitting on a horse... stationed in front of a bank or the most crowded auction house! If only he could get his hand on the exact one right in front of his eyes! How many players would rush to him? Just to get a closer look at the awesome ride!

Zhang Yang continued to charge towards the boss to start the battle.

“Even though there is a chance the boss could drop a mount, it would be too microscopic to even happen! Say if the chance for a Pet Monster to drop is 1 out of 10,000, then a mount’s drop rate would be 100 times rarer than that!”

A regular Gray-Silver boss has a large aggro trigger range to begin with, and with this boss’ level being much higher than Zhang Yang’s, it kicked in immediately as the party approached them. The horse neighed loudly at a high-pitched tone, rearing on its hind legs! Blazing, violent fire erupted from all 4 hooves of the horse. It then charged towards at an unbelievable speed!

Its neigh was as loud as the thundering night sky, echoing through the entire field like a violent storm, bringing destruction to the barren land!

The fight has begun!

Chapter 74: Shurian

Zhang Yang quickly used [charge]. He did not expect to land a successful stun on a Gray-Silver boss; he only wanted to generate enough aggro to draw its full attention. If it were to strike anyone aside from the tank, it would be safe to say that certain death would be imminent!

Just after [charge] made contact, Zhang Yang quickly landed a normal attack and activated [provoke].

‘-310!’

‘Immune!’

Argh, [provoke] is ineffective against this boss; and such a strong defense at that! By the looks of it, there could be over 100 points into it!

Zhang Yang then switched to [Cripple Defense] to quickly reduce 50% of its defense, allowing the rest of the party to deal more damage.

With the limited usage of the antidote and the overwhelming amount of HP, the party knew that they had to put all their effort in to kill the boss in time, or the antidote will wear off and they would die from the poison.

Shurian drew its giant sword and wielded its shield. With a light huff and puff, the rider pulled the horse up to its hind legs, raising it up high and growling furiously!

Shush! Kriin... The rider, dragging its long sword on the ground, charged towards Zhang Yang and swung it once it was close enough. The swing was so fast and wide that Zhang Yang knew he could not dodge it and quickly activated [block]

“[block!] ”

“-984!”

Weirdly enough, Zhang Yang blocked the attack but Drizzler, who was standing beside him, received heavy damage.

“Little brat, go stand behind the boss and fight him there! This boss’ attack has a [splash] effect, so anyone standing too close to its target

receives the same damage as well!”

Drizzler quickly obeyed and jumped back a few steps. “Tch! Noob tank! I was attacked because of you!”

“Hah!” Zhang Yang scoffed. He continued to stack 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] on the boss. Even when the boss had 100 Defense value or more, with the 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] and [eagle eye], Zhang Yang’s attacks increased dramatically as it completely ignored all defense.

“Futile resistance! Wail in pain at the depths of the abyss!” Shurian spoke softly as it swung its sword fatally at Zhang Yang.

His reaction rate was very fast; however, his in-game character could not match his actual speed. There was only a 50/50 chance that he could dodge the boss’ quick attacks. With his HP dropping like an open faucet, Little Snow was on high alert to ensure he did not die.

98%, 96%, 94%...

The boss had just too much HP. Even with the armor reduction, the party’s strong attack power could only bring down its health as fast as a snail!

“Foolish beings! You dare to challenge the mighty Shurian? Die by the hands of the Abyssal Shadow!” Shurian let out an automated speech as soon as his HP dropped down to 90%. He gained another skill!

Shush! A black skull burst out from the boss’ body and hit Zhang Yang.

“-400!”

Zhang Yang quickly checked the battle log.

-You have received the effect of [death shadow], receiving 500 Shadow damage (100 points reduced damage).

“Give me a break! I can’t keep up any longer!” Little Snow cried with her eyes full of tears. Her job was already tough enough, and it got tougher with the boss’ new skill. Luckily, the new skill’s activation rate was not too frequent, triggering only once every 10 seconds or so; but to accumulate that much of damage from the boss’ regular attacks and [death shadow],

Little Snow was indeed unable to keep up with the damage and left Zhang Yang in a very precarious situation.

89%, 87%, 85%!

“Come forth, my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!” Shurian raised its sword into the sky and two pillars of dark light blasted from both sides of the blade.

‘Ding! Shurian has summoned Death Servant!’

Two Skeleton monsters crawled out from the ground and rushed towards Shurian.

[Death Servant] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 3,000

“Hundred Shots, Fatty! Take down those minions!” Zhang Yang commanded.

He knew not what those minions could do, but he was not going to sit around to find out as they were summoned by the boss itself. He dared not send Drizzler to fight too since there was a chance that the minions would explode!

Both Hunters switched their targets, taking one minion each. Even so, with their divided firepower, it would take at least 20 seconds to kill of 3,000 HP. There was something odd about the minions though; even when they were attacked, they ignored the attacker and ran towards Shurian.

The boss laughed maniacally as it swung at one of the minion, turning the poor soul into a pillar of dark light.

Shoom!

‘+50,000’

The boss recovered its HP to 97%!

‘Ding! Shurian has used [absorb soul], recovering 50,000 HP!’

The boss swung again at the other minion and fully healed itself with another '+50,000'!

"Oh, f*ck!" the party cried.

"It's alright, guys! Just treat it as a restart!" Zhang Yang explained.

"The next time Shurian summons the minions again, Hundred Shots and Fatty will both hit on just the left minion! Little brat, I want you to [charge] to the right minion and control it for a while. Hundred! Fatty! Once you've killed your minion, help with Drizzler's immediately! I'll try my best to drag the boss away from the minion and give you more time and space to deal with them!"

Zhang Yang turned around to find Little Snow and screamed, "Little Snow! How's your mana?"

"I'm good! I still have around 85%. I can still fight on with a mana potion!"

When a Priest reached Level 20, they could learn the skill [meditate], allowing them to constantly recover Mana Points even during the battle; the recovery rate increased with their Spirit value. Little Snow had the second best equipment among the party, only to rival Zhang Yang as he held the best. That was why her mana recovery rate with high. Her current strength could now have easily be ranked as the best Priest in the White Jade Castle.

98%, 95%, 90%... slowly and steadily, the party attacked the boss and brought down its HP once more.

"Come forth, my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!" Shurian raised its sword once again, summoning two Skeleton minions to his aid.

'Ding! Shurian has summoned Death Servant!'

Two summoned minions appeared on the far right and left of the field and began rushing towards the center where Shurian was. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han quickly turned and attacked the minion on the left.

‘[concussion shot]!’

[Concussion Shot]: Deal 100% ranged damage to a target and reduce 50% movement speed for 4 seconds.

Cooldown time: 30 seconds

Range: 30 meters

The two Hunters fired as many arrows as they could. After 4 seconds, Fatty Han shot another [concussion shot] to further slow it down. After the second shot, the monster moved back at its original speed for only another 3 to 4 seconds before it was defeated.

Zhang Yang was at the other end of the field, luring the boss to the maximum distance he could get to separate the boss from its minions. The atmosphere was tense but was immediately lifted when Drizzler and the two Hunters killed the last minion standing.

“Aw, yiss!” Everyone cheered happily, as if they had already won the battle.

“F*cking good job, guys! Don’t stop! Keep it going!”

84%, 80%, 75%!

Shurian pulled up the horse and stood tall. It then pointed its sword at Hundred Shots and said, “Hundred Shots! Bow before your master!”

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots is affected with [shadow control]!’

A black shadowed skeleton floated behind Hundred Shots, forcing Hundred Shots to turn towards Fatty Han and attacked him.

“Holy shit! What on earth is that?!” Fatty Han was shot at like a beehive but he could not return fire; he could only attack the boss with all his might.

“I’m being controlled!” Hundred Shots posted in the party channel.

Zhang Yang quickly replied, “Take a look at the skill description! Is there a time limit? Could it be dispelled?”

The skill will expire and dispel automatically if there was a time limit,

otherwise, players would have to dispel it with a special method like killing the target or using a special tool.

“Zhan Yu! There’s a time limit, and it’s about 15 seconds! It can’t be dispelled!”

That’s good. 15 seconds is not as long as it seems.

Zhang Yang called out, “Little Snow, you need to put more effort in healing! We have a traitor now amongst us!”

Hundred Shots laughed, “Hey! It’s not me!”

With an extra enemy to handle, Little Snow’s burden doubled! Luckily, the controlled Hundred Shots did not have a fixed target; he merely turned to one target to attack once and then changed target after. Little Snow simply casted [regeneration] on everyone and that removed Hundred Shots as a threat to the team. It was good luck that he did not team up with the boss to attack Zhang Yang, or else he would have not survived the onslaught.

After the unfortunate spell, 15 seconds went past and Hundred Shots returned to normal, and the attacking rhythm went back to its original pace.

72%, 71%, 70%...

“Come forth my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!” Shurian raised its sword for a third time. Zhang Yang concluded that the boss only activated this skill at every 15% HP interval.

Sticking to the plan, Hundred Shots and Fatty took one minion while Drizzler handled the other, and the battle progressed smoothly.

“Haha! Smelly, rotting boss! You better give up that cool horse!” Drizzler’s eyes were fixated on the horse that she wanted to own so eagerly.

Two minutes had past and the boss’ HP was brought down to 55%. It summoned its minions once more but they were killed off in the same manner.

“Guys, don’t lower your guard!” Zhang Yang quickly poured cold water on their overly-excited heads. “When the boss’ HP is at 50%, I’m sure there’s going to be another controlling skill. I’m not sure if there isn’t any other ultimate skill! We have to be wary!”

54%, 53%, 52%, 51%, 50%!

“Drizzler, bow down to me!” Shurian pointed its sword to Drizzler to cast the skill. It then got down from its horse and bellowed, “Shadow Moon, fight with me!”

“Shi ling ling...” the skeleton horse let out a weird breath and raised its front hooves and charged towards Zhang Yang.

The tide of the battle has now been turned, from a 5-on-1, to a 4-on-3!

Chapter 75: Crisis in the Storm

[Shadow Moon, Shurian's Mount] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 25

HP: 300k

Two Gray-Silver bosses on his right and a controlled Drizzler on his left, Zhang Yang was cornered with danger on both sides!

Shush! The enemy attacked!

Pushing himself to the limits, Zhang Yang dodged every possible attack to reduce the maximum damage received!

Being the closest to Zhang Yang, Drizzler's melee attack reached first, and in a blink of an eye, Zhang Yang was cornered like a chicken in a cage. He did not even have enough space to properly move around!

He quickly stomped the ground and casted [thunder strike], effectively damaging all 3 targets. However, the slow effect only worked on Drizzler and the horse, as the main boss was completely immune to it. Zhang Yang could not have asked for more as he only needed to slow down two out of the three enemies. He quickly slid out of the danger zone and dragged all 3 of them towards the right side of the battlefield to ensure the boss' attacking range could only hit him alone.

4 seconds later, Drizzler and Shadow Moon regained their speed and charged towards Zhang Yang. He quickly activated [block] and dodged a series of attacks. When [thunder strike] was available again, he quickly used it and continued to kite the boss.

15 seconds after, Drizzler regained control of her own character and Zhang Yang had one less burden to worry about.

Zhang Yang activated [horizontal sweep] which he had been holding back since Drizzler was their enemy as he was actually afraid that he might kill her by accident. Now that she was back to their side, he could unleash hell on the enemy.

“Focus on the boss! Ignore the horse!” said Zhang Yang. If Shadow Moon had less than 100k HP, he might consider to kill the horse first; but that horse had an overwhelming 300k HP! Zhang Yang immediately skipped that thought.

“Yeah! Don’t even touch the horse! That’s mine to take!” Drizzler exclaimed.

Even though Shadow Moon was considered a summoned monster, it was still a Gray-Silver boss! Its damage was high enough that it can deal 1,000 damage in a kick! If Zhang Yang was careless and allowed himself to receive both Shadow Moon and Shurian’s attack, he will definitely be sent to the graveyard.

“Holy shit...this is intense!” Fatty Han took a deep breath. He was afraid that Zhang Yang might make a mistake that would kill the team.

This situation allowed Zhang Yang to display his unusual combat tactics. He used [thunder strike] not as a means of attack, but to slow down Shadow Moon’s attacks on him. He also strategically used [block] only to safeguard himself whenever he was sure he could not evade an attack. His ability to utilize his skills were beyond anyone’s capability. Still, his HP bar was riding a roller-coaster; going up and down at an incredible speed! Nonetheless, he was still standing strong! If another party had tried to take on this challenge, their tank could not possibly kite two bosses simultaneously while maintaining his own life!

“Little Yang, you have truly impressed me!” Fatty Han let out a sigh of relief.

“Impress, my ass! Attack the boss!” Zhang Yang did not hold back his words whenever he was talking to his “brother”.

48%, 46%, 44%... the boss’ HP continued to go down at a crawling speed.

“Come forth my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!” Shurian summoned the minions for the fifth time.

‘Ding! Shurian has summoned Death Servant!’

Everyone carried out their tasks; even Little Snow stopped her support to

cast a [divine punishment] on the monster. They managed to quickly kill off the two summons, not giving any chance for Shurian to heal himself.

“Pesky little beings! I had enough of your stench! Rot in hell!” Shurian roared. Dark clouds started to seep into the cave through the slid in the walls.

‘Ding! Shurian has used [demonic rain]!’

Zhang Yang looked up to the clouds while kiting the boss.

“Be careful of those clouds! I’m sure there’s something bad about them!”

Just as he finished his sentence, the clouds started to dripped black color rain drops, showering two third of the entire field.

‘-300!’

‘-300!’

Everyone was on their feet and started to running to safety. However, some of them did not make it in time and was damaged by the rain for 300 Shadow damage!

With the burden of healing skyrocketing, Little Snow’s Mana bar went down like a landslide.

“Move quicker guys! Avoid the rain, or else I’m going to run out of Mana real quick!” Little Snow cried.

“Hahaha! A bunch of weakly lowly beings! Cry for your life! Wail in pain!” Shurian brandish its sword and laughed like a mad king.

“Shit! When will this shitty rain stop?!” Fatty Han groaned.

Zhang Yang slowly started to kite the boss towards the entrance of the fifth floor.

“Check the entrance! Please see whether the door is close!” Zhang Yang was thinking that they could all repeat the previous floor tactics, to hide behind the entrance and attack the boss from a safe distance.

After withdrawing a few steps, Hundred Shots turned around and sighed.

“The door is closed!”

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of disappointment and turned to face the boss. He thought he could save the trouble but now he had to put more effort to dodge both Shurian and Shadow Moon's attack while looking out for the rain from the sky. What a pain!

Still, it was sensible that the developers discouraged players to make use of the terrain bug to make killing the boss any easier. It looks like the entrance could only be opened when either the boss or the entire party was killed.

Since the entire party had to look out for the rain, the party damage dropped tremendously. Previously, they were already at a turtle-crawling speed, now they could be even slower than that. The boss's HP dropped slowly... 1% at a time.

By the time the boss had 30% left, everyone's antidote effect had almost reached its time limit. Zhang Yang noticed it and quickly yelled. "Guys! Take another antidote!"

Zhang Yang felt a little regret for not taking a few more of those [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]! 100 Shadow resistance could reduce at least 100 Shadow damage! That would make a whole lot of difference!

27%, 26%, 25%!

"Come forth my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!" Shurian summoned the minion again, and simultaneously, pointed its sword at Fatty Han.

"Slim and Handsome! Bow down and serve your lord!"

'Ding! Player Slim and Handsome is now affected by [shadow control]!'

"Crap! The damage would not be enough!" Fatty Han complained as he could not control his character. He raised the bow in his hands and took aim at Little Snow.

Zhang Yang quickly held his steps and called out. "Hundred Shots! Little brat! Both of you take on the left minion! Brat, don't use your [charge]! Keep it for later!"

“Okay!”

Hundred Shots quickly shot a [concussion shot], slowing down the monster on the left. Drizzler arrived just in time when it was slowed to slice the monster.

Zhang Yang on the other hand was kiting the boss and Shadow Moon towards Drizzler. The minion on the right was heading towards him at an incredible speed! In just 4 seconds, it was almost 10 meters away from the boss!

[charge]!

Zhang Yang bashed the second minion and laid down a [thunder strike], quickly chaining his attack with another normal attack and a [horizontal sweep]. His combo dealt up to 1,300 HP. Since skill activation was an instant act, it did not clash with a normal attack. All of Zhang Yang's attacks were almost in an instant!

Zhang Yang turned around and continued to kite both the boss and Shadow Moon away from the pursuing minion. 2 seconds later, the minion recovered from the stun and started to head towards its master. However, its movement speed was slowed by [thunder strike]!

“Little Yang! That was a great move! As expected of this great Fatty Master who had taught you that!” Fatty Han snorted, taking all credit for Zhang Yang's incredible feat.

On the other side of the field, Hundred Shots and Drizzler were fighting with their lives on the line! The petty 3,000 HP felt like almost 300,000 in their eyes!

4 seconds later, the second minion regained its normal movement speed and started to get closer to the boss.

“Little brat! Use [charge] on the other minion now!” Zhang Yang kept calm even when danger was imminent. He continued to guide the party.

Drizzler gave up on the minion with 500 HP left to its death and headed towards the second minion! She quickly used [charge] when she got in range and stunned the minion to get into her stance and attack.

On the other side of the battle field, Little Snow found an opportunity to chant [divide punishment] and casted it on the first minion! Hundred Shots drew his bow and attacked the minion in the same time, sending the demonic creature back to whence it once came!

“That’s good! Keep it going! Kill the next one!” Zhang Yang was very pleased by their performance.

2 seconds later, the second minion recovered from the stun and started to dash toward the boss. Even though Zhang Yang had been kiting Shurian all the time, the second minion managed to catch up to him in just 3 seconds!

Hundred Shots quickly chased after the second minion to attack. This minion was brutally damaged by Zhang Yang, having only 1,500 HP left to its demise. Drizzler had damaged it as well, leaving only 700 HP left! However, the minion’s movement speed was too fast! Without any slow effect on it, Drizzler could not even catch up with it!

Which left Hundred Shots alone to able to strike it!

Shush!

An arrow flew across the air and landed on the minion.

‘-208!’

It looks like there was no stopping it from reaching its destination!

“Hahaha!” Shurian laughed madly. It raised it sword up high and was about to slice the incoming minion!

‘-710!’

‘-731!’

‘-728!’

“Fuuh! Looks like I’d made it in time!”

In a split second, Zhang Yang flew across the field and activated [horizontal sweep], simultaneously attacking all 3 foes with high damage!

The second minion fell defeated before it could serve its purpose.

The boss' sword swing only hit the air around it. It groaned in anger!

"F*cking beautiful!"

Everyone praised Zhang Yang for his last minute rescue.

"Haha! It's nothing! Don't stop now! Attack the boss! Victory is just ahead of us!" Zhang Yang laughed it off.

24%, 22%, 20%...

Everything was smooth...until when the boss' HP dropped to 10%!

"Shadow Moon! Come to me! Together we will trample these annoying bugs to hell!" Shurian somersaulted back and landed onto Shadow Moon's back. The pale white sword turned bloodied-red!

'Ding! Shurian has gone berserk! All attacks have been increased by 50%! Attack interval is reduced by 50%!'

"@#%! The boss berserk!?"

TL note:

1 Kite or Kiting is the act of luring and dragging an enemy towards the user's designated direction.

Chapter 76: Handsome reward

The battle with Shurian was already tough to begin with and it got much worse when it entered Berserk state. Every swing of its sword felt like a crashing airplane; even the space around the sword was being distorted!

“Little Snow! Focus your heal on me!” Zhang Yang cried.

The final moment of the fight was the most important but it was the most dangerous too. I all came down to this moment. One wrong move, one missed step, and it will be the end of the party!

Zhang Yang emptied his mind and focused on evading every single one of the boss' attack!

‘Dodge!’

‘Dodge!’

‘[block]!’

‘-1,184!’

It only took one successful hit for Zhang Yang to lose over 60% of his HP. Were he to absorb full damage including the 600 Shadow damage and the falling rain, he would have certainly died!

Little Snow went all out. She did not even care to calculate to save Mana points, or time. All she knew that she had to do all that it took to prevent Zhang Yang from dying!

9%, 8%, 7%!

The boss' HP dropped but Little Snow's MP dropped faster!

“Fight on guys! Only 20,000 HP left! It's almost dead!” Zhang Yang boosted their confidence to excite the party. Even though they were still standing strong and not on the verge of death, they could still feel a tremendous amount of stress, pressure, and fatigue in comparison to a thousand battles.

However, now that the battle has almost reached its end, the ranged attackers were extremely relaxed! The boss no longer casted [shadow

control] nor did it summon anymore minions. As long as they could keep watch for the rain, they would be essentially out of harm's way. On the other extreme end, if Zhang Yang ever missed a block or Little Snow was a millisecond slow in casting her heal, the entire team could be wiped out!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%!

The tension has never been that high! The party mustered any ounce of strength they had left to finish the fight! No one wanted to fail in this fight when there was only 2% HP left!

1% left!

3,000!

2,000!

1,000!

589!

210!

0!

'Ding! You and the party members around you have successfully killed Shurian. Obtained 80,050 Experience points (50 points party bonus)!'

As the system notification rang, the boss fell off its horse and slammed against the ground. The horse stomped the ground and groaned while a magic circle appeared underneath it and a pillar of dark light blasted towards the sky. The horse vanished without a trace.

Tired and breathless, Drizzler knelt down to rest, but as soon as she saw her horse being taken away, she quickly jumped to her feet and wailed.

"Argh... my horsie... gimme back my horsie!" She quickly dashed towards the magic circle but when she arrived, it disappeared as well.

"Wuu..." Drizzler actually cried. Tears was flowing down her cheek! "I want my horsie...Gimme hic back my hic horsie..."

With no enemy left to defeat, the green mist dispersed and eventually disappeared, leaving the air clean and free of any contaminant.

Fatty Han went over and soothe Drizzler. “Little Drizzler, don’t be sad anymore. Here, I’ll be your horsie.” He actually went on all fours.

Seeing Fatty Han actually going to that extent, Drizzler could not help but to laugh it off. She then tried her best to glare angrily at him. “Do you really think that I am still a 3-year old baby?”

...

With that level of crying and wailing, who wouldn’t think that way?

Everyone else was thinking the same thing but to save the trouble of debating with her afterwards, they kept it to themselves.

Foosh!

A wind blew by and a ghostly figure of an old man appeared from nowhere. It then floated towards the party and bowed with a sense of appreciation.

“I thank you all for defeating the demon!”

Everyone was confused at first, but they quickly looked up and read his title.

[Stark, Antelope Village Member] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

It was a ghost, but it was an unusual thing for them; but when the NPC finished its speech, a yellow question mark appeared on his head!

“The quest NPC!?” Everyone exchanged the same look and quickly opened the quest log, only to see that their quest [Rescue the Villager’s Soul] has been competed! Neither one of them understood what was going on. They were tasked to kill the Necromancer Zac and rescue the villagers’ souls, so how could the quest be completed when they now have killed a totally different boss?

Zhang Yang thought for a while and talked to the ghost.

“We were sent here by a young girl name called Emmy from the

Antelope Village!”

“What?! Emmy?! My dearest Emmy!” Stark looked both shocked and happy. “How was she? Is she alive?!”

Zhang Yang shook his head, “Sadly, no. She’s dead.”

Stark lowered his head. It was obvious that he was feeling down since his character started to fade in and out repeatedly. After a while, he raised his head and spoke.

“Heroes! What you did was brave and outstanding! I cannot ask anything more from you but please, I still have one more request for you! You need to rescue the villagers’ souls. There are still traps set by that evil Necromancer. He is... he is too dark... Everything about him reeks of evil! He will do something to those innocent villagers and condemn them to a fate worse than hell!”

‘Ding! You have completed a main story quest: Rescue the Villagers’ Souls. Obtained 50,000 Experience Points! You have obtained a reward : Luck +1.’

‘Ding! Stark has a quest for you: Pursue the Evil Necromancer Zac. Will you accept it? This is a main story quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!’

“Argh... It’s still ongoing! How long is this freaking main story quest?” Fatty Han complaint.

“Oh well. Let’s not quarrel over simple things. Just accept it first!” That being said, Zhang Yang was also not fond of the quest length.

Stark thanked the party and left the place; probably headed towards his daughter soul to rest in peace.

[Pursue the Evil Necromancer Zac] (Difficulty level: A)

Quest description: Once you have located the Evil Necromancer Zac, see to it that you could save the souls that he had imprisoned!

Progress: Locate the Evil Necromancer Zac 0/1

“This has no end! The game map is just too huge! How are we supposed

to find him without any leads?” said Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang replied him, “We’ll put this aside for now, there will be some sort of hint mentioned on other quests! Besides, the quest was only to locate not exterminate. Furthermore, the quest difficulty level is A, which means that the place that we’re supposed to look for should be higher level than our current level! And besides, we got a Luck attribute as a reward! We didn’t lose anything here!”

1 point of Luck attribute was actually nothing, but with enough accumulation, it will naturally display its effectiveness!

Fatty Han did not like the answer he got and muttered unwillingly on the side.

Zhang Yang laughed.

“Since we have defeated a Gray-Silver boss, let’s obtain our reward now, shall we?”

When Zhang Yang mentioned the word “reward”, Drizzler’s spirits were lifted a little and she proceeded to grab the chance to open the corpse.

“Mine! I’ll open it! Let me! Let me!”

[Athena, Bow of the White Bones] (Gray-Silver, Ranged weapon)

Weapon attack: 306-366

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 120

[Level 1 Socket]

[Level 1 Socket]

Equip effect: Increase 1% critical chance.

Level requirement: 30

“Holy f*ckin’ moly! This weapon is OP!” Fatty Han quickly forgot his frustration about the quest length and was excited to see the new bow that popped out.

“Zhan Yu. What is this socket thing for?” Hundred Shots questioned.

“Socket are for Gemstones upgrade. There are many types of Gemstones, such as Dexterity Gemstone, Intelligence Gemstone, and more. You can choose to have many different types of upgrade! If you slot in a +10 Intelligence Gemstone into an available slot, you will gain additional 10 Intelligence attribute. Gemstones have 8 tiers. A high-level Slot can fit in a low-level Gemstone, not the other way around.” Zhang Yang explained.

“Low level Gemstones can be bought from the Gem Shop in the city. High level Gemstones can be obtained from defeating bosses, completing main story quests, hidden quests, or even break a Hardcore Mode record!” Zhang Yang added.

“Hundred Shots bro! This time I’ll fight for this item. I’m not going to let this off! Let’s roll!”

“You’re on!” Hundred Shot replied

Hundred Shots, 78 points.

Fatty Han, 3 points.

“Hahahahahaha!” Drizzler laughed until she fell on the floor, rolling. “Pervy Fatty! Now you know how karma tastes like!”

Fatty Han laughed it off. He knew that there would be another chance for him to get the item when the boss respawned.

Hundred Shots kept the bow in his inventory as he could only equip it when we would be Level 30.

Drizzler snickered.

“Hehehe! My hands are full of luck aren’t they!”

“Hmph! In that case, if you ever open anything lower than a Gray-Silver, we will cut off that hand of yours!” Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow.

“Tch... You’re the lowest!” Drizzler pouted her lips like a sore loser. She reached out her hand again to open the corpse.

[White Bone Necklace] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +18

Intelligence: +9

Spirit: +3

[Level 1 Socket]

Equip effect: For each time you cast a spell, there will be a fixed chance to increase 100 magic attack. Last for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Level requirement: 30

“Sister! You’re so lucky to be the only magic user here. No one else here will fight with you for any magic type equipment!” said Drizzler. There was a hint of jealousy in her voice.

Little Snow was actually smiling sweetly but when Drizzler mentioned that, her smile turned even wider.

[Chaos Gem] (Usable)

Use: Permanently increase your inventory by 10 slots.

“Increase inventory size! This is very useful!”

“Yeah. Let’s us all roll for it!”

As they obtained more and more extravagant items, Zhang Yang’s understanding to why guilds would occupy this place increased even more. This treasure mine just kept getting better and better!

Everyone rolled but Little Snow obtained the item with a perfect 100 score.

[Skillbook: Vanguard’s Aggression] (Skillbook)

Use: Teaches you Vanguard’s Aggression

Requirement: Guardian, Defender.

“Huh? Tanks only?” Everyone quickly urged Zhang Yang to learn the skill and expose the skill ability.

Zhang Yang was surprised and happy. He had always wanted to have this skill in his previous life, and he would never have thought that it

would appear here!

Every time a field boss was killed the first time, the item quantity and drop rate would always be better. Once the boss was respawned and killed the second time, the drop rate would become normal again.

He picked up the book and learned the skill, and then posted the skill description in the party channel.

Vanguard's Aggression: Cast a 3 x 3-meter protection barrier. Every ally that is in the barrier will receive 90% reduced damage. However, the caster will receive 100% increased damage. Last for 10 seconds.

Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

Chapter 77: The Skeletal War Horse!

Vanguard's Aggression. The name itself suggested the skill's ability to risk the caster himself to protect the others!

"With this skill, the team's survival rate will increase tremendously!" Hundred Shots got excited. He was in fact, part of the team. If there was anything that could be done to improve the team's efficiency, he would definitely be happy for it!

"But, the noob tank is more likely to die!" Little Snow sighed, "Looks like there'll be more work for me again!"

"It is alright, [shield wall] can be learned when I reached Level 30. My HP will not be dropping too much when I activate these two skills together!" Zhang Yang said while smiling.

"Hmph! I just hope that's the case!"

Although they already picked up four items from the corpse, as this was Shurian's first death, there were still more items to obtain from him!

[Absolute Defense Ring] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +12

Strength: +8

Equipment: 20 points Defense attribute will be granted for every successful [block]. The maximum stacked effect is 5. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

"What in the world... How can the Gray-Silver equipment be so powerful?" Fatty Han stared at the ring with his eyes wide open. The Black-Steel and Green-Copper only had random bonus attributes, but Gray-Silver equipment's special effect was very strong!

"That's why equipment is the foundation to be a professional player!" The name of the ring itself was assigned for the tank. Zhang Yang took the ring since no one else in the team was suitable to wear it. "But, if I were to be fighting with you, I can take off all my equipment and fight you

with only a weapon in my hand!”

“Haha! Looking down at me huh!” Fatty Han said.

[Skeletal Cape] (Gray-Silver, Cape)

Vitality: +10

Strength: +10

Equip effect: Increase 2% critical rate.

Level Requirement: 30

Normally, a Hunter would not be suitable to use pure strength equipment. Zhang Yang gave up his roll and let Drizzler obtain that cape. Unfortunately, even after receiving their battle loot, they did not reach the level requirement to equip it all.

[Treasure Map Piece (II)] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Put together all 3 parts of the [Treasure Map Piece] and obtain a [Complete Treasure Map].

“Let me have it!” Zhang Yang said, “I have the [Treasure Map Piece] I and III with me, so I can make up a complete treasure map!”

Four of them gave up their rolls and Zhang Yang received the [Treasure Map Piece]. He immediately used the item and a progress bar appeared on the side. Two seconds later, three parts of the [Treasure Map Piece] disappeared and a complete treasure map was formed.

[Gray-Silver Treasure Map]: You have read and research on many maps and finally deciphered the secrets of the treasure map. The treasure is located in the Valley of Lost Souls.

After opening the treasure map, an old parchment appeared. There was an “X” marked on the top right of the map and certainly, it was where the treasure would be located at.

“I wonder what’s inside the treasure chest.” As always, Drizzler loved anything related to treasure chest.

Zhang Yang casually traded the treasure map to Drizzler and said, “If

you want to know, dig it out yourself!” Sometimes players could get good stuff from the treasure chest or sometimes get struck by a trap filled with monsters or status effects.

“Okay, okay!” Drizzler hurriedly took over the treasure map. She was so happy that she smiled from ear to ear.

“Little Yang, you are being biased! But, this is for the growth of Loli1, I like it!” Fatty Han accidentally had a slip of the tongue.

“Rot in hell Fatty!”

Fatty Han had to be beaten up so that he could finally be well disciplined.

“That’s all?” Zhang Yang asked when he saw Drizzler stopped opening the corpse.

“That’s all!” Drizzler shook her head.

“That’s not right. The corpse was supposed to disappear after everything have been looted. You must have missed something!” Zhang Yang crouched down and started to touch under the Boss’ body.

The expression on Zhang Yang’s face changed suddenly.

“What happened?” The party asked.

“I think... We hit the jackpot!” Zhang Yang could hardly contain his excitement and revealed what was on his hand. At the same time, a Roll-the-Dice window popped up on everyone’s interface.

[The Leash of Skeletal War Horse] (Mount)

Use: Teach you to summon the Skeletal War Horse.

Level Requirement: 30

Item bound after used.

It actually dropped a mount!

Five of them looked at each other. After some silence, they all cheered loudly.

That Boss' Mount was something extremely rare, and everyone would wish to have it! Everyone knew that the drop rate of the mount was less than 1 out of a million. Although they were cheering for the item to drop, none of them actually thought that the mount would appear!

"1 out of a million, and yet here it is! What unbelievable luck!" Zhang Yang murmured.

"What a fortune!" Fatty Han's eyes were already blinded.

They were silent all of a sudden. Because of the rarity of the mount, everyone wanted it so bad but no one dared to ask the others to give up the mount for themselves.

Zhang Yang gathered his thoughts and said, "The mount is rare and I understand that everyone wishes to have it. Thus, no one is allowed to pass their roll. Everyone roll the dice and the mount belongs to whoever rolls the highest number! We shall do this fair and square! We are a team! I know that the drop rate of this special mount is low, but as long as we are still a team, we can still take on other bosses! Who knows? By that time, we can even ride dragons, phoenixes or even tigers!"

"Yes! We are a team!"

Everyone came to a realization that so long the squad was strong enough, they would still have the chance to get the rare items!

Five of them rolled the dice respectively.

Little Snow, 97 Points.

Drizzler, 12 Points.

Hundred Shots, 58 Points.

Fatty Han, 44 Points.

Zhang Yang, 100 Points!

"Crap! Little Yang! You used up all your luck in this life for this roll!" Fatty Han drooled as he said.

Zhang Yang smiled. He did not care much about the mount since Level

100 players could get a Flying Mount. By then, who would still ride a regular mount then?

He did say that the mount belonged to whoever rolled the highest number and was not allowed to transfer the mount to anyone else. Therefore, he just accepted the mount as it was better not to break his own rules.

If the rest of the party knew what Zhang Yang was thinking then, they would perhaps just, in a simpler manner, f*ck him inside out.

Damn, you should have just given it up if you did not want it!

The Boss's corpse disappeared immediately and five of them completed the adventure with a happy ending.

"Little Yang, you must hurry up and get to Level 30 so that you can bring me around the Capital for at least ten rounds to show off!" said Fatty Han as he wiped off the tears and snorted.

Zhang Yang consoled him and said, "Perhaps the boss will drop the mount again next time!"

"In your dreams!" This time, four of them booed Zhang Yang together. Did he really think that it was so easy to drop an extraordinary mount?

Five of them tore the [Teleportation Scroll] simultaneously and returned to White Jade Castle. They then proceeded to the Plains Cloud Mountain to beat Martyr Unduin.

Zhang Yang and the girls had killed Martyr Unduin before using the terrain bug, but they kept it as secret from the others. Why would they share their method to the others when they could quietly kill him off and claim the goods for themselves?

The huge rock that was the Achilles Heel of Martyr Unduin was still there. No matter how powerful Unduin was, he could not escape his fate. The five of them worked together and killed Unduin under ten minutes.

However, since this was the second time Unduin was defeated, the drops were much lesser than before. The skill book [eagle eye] that Drizzler and

Fatty Han were so envious of did not appear. That skill book drop rate was slightly higher than [The Leash of Skeletal War Horse], but it still did not appear here!

Zhang Yang's luck was good and he obtained a Gray-Silver glove.

[Fist of Penitence] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +24

Strength: +12

Dexterity: +4

Level Requirement: 20

Zhang Yang equipped the glove and his basic attributes rose.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 23

HP: 2,140

Vitality: 127

Dexterity: 48

Defense: 76

Luck: 4

Melee Damage: 362—384

Critical Rate: 11%

Lucky Strike: 0.4%

By the time everyone was done, it was almost 7:00pm! Zhang Yang hurriedly disbanded the party and asked everyone to have their dinner and to rest. After a short discussion, Zhang Yang announced in the guild channel: There will be a Hardcore Mode of Bangar Crypt raid at 9:00 PM. As usual, whoever has the higher contribution points in the guild will have the priority to join in the raid.

After making the announcement, he decided to disconnect from the game.

During a boss fight, the most stressful player would have to be the tank as he was not allowed to be careless. In addition, Zhang Yang needed to command the team and it was even more tiring.

"I should find someone who can command and lead the team next time. Otherwise, I will be exhausted while doing both the tank and commanding roles." Zhang Yang finished his lunchbox and laid on the sofa. He put his feet on the coffee table and happily enjoyed his hot tea.

Zhang Yang disliked smoking but he really loved drinking tea. Because of this, Fatty Han said that Zhang Yang behaved like an old man.

In his previous life, famous commanders could be found in strong guilds. Presumably, they must be trained since the low levels and must be the key players of the guilds. Thus, it made it even harder to coax them over to join Zhang Yang's side.

It seemed that Zhang Yang needed to train a commander of his own.

Among the four teammates in the squad, Drizzler was not suitable to be a commander as she was not mindful and impatient. Zhang Yang ignored considering Little Snow as a commander because being a healer was much harder as a tank; it would be much of a burden for her to be a commander. As for Fatty Han, although he had a lot of improvement, he did not have the talent to lead a team. Perhaps he could lead the team for the siege wars, but in a dungeon raid, a commander must have a keen sense of observation, be able to calculate, motivate the teammates and be able to dispense the rewards and punishments fairly. Unfortunately, Fatty Han had none of that!

Hundred Shots? He was not passionate enough. If he were to lead the team, the team would be spiritless. Even if he led the team and successfully killed the bosses but the team would just fall apart after a few rounds.

It was not easy!

Zhang Yang rested for a while and he logged in at 9:00 PM. It was the same as yesterday; Zhang Yang led a team and Little Snow led another team. However, Little Snow and her teammates were unwilling to compete with Zhang Yang this round.

By combining their AoE skill damage, Drizzler, Fatty Han, and Hundred Shots were stronger than Zhang Yang! However, which tank could be as strong as Zhang Yang to perform the One Straight Flush method?

In this dungeon raid, Zhang Yang carefully observed his teammates' performances. He sent private messages with compliments to the few who performed well. They were excited after having a conversation with Zhang Yang.

Who was Zhang Yang? He was a powerful man who had the first clear for the Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raids three times continuously. Who would not be happy after being complimented by such a powerful person?

Zhang Yang noticed a phenomenon that happened in the guild. He realized that the levelling speed of the guild members were fine. Normally, a player between Level 11 to Level 20 would require about one to two days to gain a level, but a few people actually gained two levels since yesterday. They were obviously interested in Marzerway's Lair.

Besides, it was good since the guild's EXP has increased to 29%.

TL Note:

lLoli – Japanese origin noun to describe an underage and petite girl.

Chapter 78: Alliance Proposal

Early the next day, Zhang Yang practiced his usual boxing and long-distance running. All in all, it took slightly over an hour. He logged on to the game after eating breakfast.

First, Zhang Yang went through the Front and Main Wing Hardcore Mode dungeon raids with Drizzler and the others. After dismissing the team, Zhang Yang found a few news waiting for him when he returned to the Capital.

The Dominators, Sky High and Crimson Rage cleared the Marzerway's Lair Hard Mode this morning. The Main Wing Hardcore Mode is now defeated, keep the momentum going with the victories and attack the next wing!

Fatty Han was in a panic when he read the message and said, "Little Yang, we have to be quick. Otherwise, the First Clear Achievement of the dungeon raids will belong to others!"

"Don't be so anxious. Only the five of us are above Level 20. Look at the levels of those guys from The Dominators, Sky High and Crimson Rage. The top five players are only at most, Level 17!" Zhang Yang smiled and he was not anxious at all.

The Dominators, Sky High and Crimson Rage were really strong guilds, as evidenced by them clearing the Marzerway's Lair Hard Mode without using any [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Their capabilities were certainly impressive! However, they still needed the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to clear the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode!

In Zhang Yang's past life, it had been made certain as many teams had been wiped out, without the aid of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]!

According to the '5-years game review' article, all the strong guilds were unable to clear the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode despite their best efforts. There was no further development for 17 days before the recipe of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was found. [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] had then started a burst of activity in the market. After a day, a party who

called themselves “The Glory”, cleared the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode!

The Glory was in Violet Star City, one of the main cities of China server. Each main city contained their respective set of area maps exclusively for those below Level 50, players of different cities would not interact with each other until then. Thus, Zhang Yang was not afraid of inadvertently altering the timeline via another butterfly effect in the other seven main cities of China region.

White Jade Castle was the only thing he needed to worry about because the progress of the game might be further affected due to his presence. He was worried that the second recipe of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] would appear earlier in the White Jade Castle!

If this is really happening, then the future he knew and the future that awaited him would be different!

“Noob tanker, if there is nothing else, I’m going to shop with my cousin!” Drizzler spoke in the party channel.

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, “Be careful, do not leave behind the one who has no sense of direction.”

Little Snow, annoyed by Zhang Yang, grit her teeth and the both of them disconnected from the game together.

Hundred Shots mentioned that he had spent too much time on the game for the last two days, so he also quickly disconnected from the game to spend some time with his wife and son. However, Fatty Han remained connected. Rather, he simply fired a quib at Zhang Yang before heading to the Massage Parlor for chicks.

“Hoes before bros...” Zhang Yang groaned, shaking his head while heading to the Auction House by himself.

Zhang Yang’s storage space was already full of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Originally, he thought of ceasing on his stocking up and initiating sales of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] when more players had turned Level 20, and were headed for Marzerway’s Lair Dungeon like how it was

right now. He could have started saving up for his first set of equipment with a synergized cycle of buying ingredients, synthesizing, and then selling [Beginning Anti-Shadow Potion.]

Those plans did not account for him suddenly becoming Guild Master of the Lone Desert Smoke. Thus, he also gained the authority to manage the guild's storage!

In 'God's Miracle', the system would provide a collective inventory of 1000 slots when a guild was established. This was the guild's storage. To expand the guild's storage, a 1000 Gold coins was needed for second inventory, another ten times that amount for a third, yet another ten times of that for a forth, and so on. The cost would consecutively snowball into one million Gold coins for the final upgrade. However, each guild could only have ten storage inventories at most.

The Lone Desert Smoke's storage was in a mess and it was full of trash like health recovering snacks, fish, tiger tooth, ores and etc! Zhang Yang shook his head, bemusedly ordering the guild to remove the trash.

Ten minutes later, Zhang Yang had amended the guild's storage management authority, Members had the authority to "Check"; Officers had the authority to "Check" and "Store" while the Vice Guild Master had the full authority to "Check", "Store" and "Draw Out".

In the future, the storages were only allowed to store equipment, consumable, gemstones and other valuable items. Guild members were allowed to buy the items using the guild's contribution point. The level of wealth in a guild's storage correlated to the capability of a guild, as both cause, and effect. The former was due to guild members being motivated when they see a storage full of valuable items!

Zhang Yang spent another 1000 gold coins for the second storage inventory and set the authority in a way that no one but the Guild Master alone could even "Check" the storage.

With the extra 1000 slots in a storage, certainly, Zhang Yang could grab all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] he wanted! The prices of these two herbs were dropping on last two days, as Zhang Yang's

purchases halted when his storage reached its limit. The prices of these two herbs would undoubtedly increase again as he resumes his bulk purchasing.

The majority of the Alchemy profession players believed that it was a prospective profiteer's attempt to manipulate the market, so they decided not to buy any [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] even though the prices kept on increasing. Because of this, Zhang Yang easily stocked up on [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] without any competition. His materials secured, he went on to produce potions en masse, one after another.

After emptying the auction house of all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower], Zhang Yang opened up the "Search" interface in auction house to check on the Alchemy and Smithing recipes.

On the Alchemy side, no recipes other than beginner leveled ones were on sale. There were, however, a few [Level 2 Whetstone] recipes and the prices ranged from 100 – 300 gold coins.

This [Level 2 Whetstone] recipe drop rate was high. Even though the price of 100 gold coins was considered rather high, Zhang Yang had the cash to spare, so without wasting time, he went ahead and bought the cheapest [Level 2 Whetstone] recipe. It arrived in his mailbox and he quickly learned the recipe.

[Level 2 Whetstone] (Consumable)

Use: Sharpens a weapon and increases damage by 20 points.

Although the damage increase wasn't significant, it was still better than nothing. More importantly, this was the most cost-saving method of advancing the Smithing mastery from Amateur to Advanced.

Forming a [Level 2 Whetstone] required two [Green Copper Bars], so Zhang Yang looked at the price in the Auction House and he contacted Mining Specialist via private messaging, "Do you have time?"

After a while, Mining Specialist replied, "You! I haven't heard from you for a few days now! I had believed that I have lost you to the other sellers. I

would never have thought that you would be one of the celebrities in the First Clear Dungeon Raid Ranking!”

Zhang Yang said, “Nah, I’ve been busy with dungeon raids. I had no time to practice Smithing! I need a lot of [Green Copper Bar]s, do you have the stock?”

“Hmph, do not scorn a professional miner!” Professional Miner immediately replied and asked, “How many do you need?”

Two [Green Copper Bar]s were required to cast a whetstone and 1000 points of mastery required 2000 Green Copper Bars, so Zhang Yang wanted 100 stacks of Green Copper Bar. Zhang Yang replied, “Um, 100 stacks first!”

“Sheesh!” Professional Miner sent him a message with many ellipses and exclamation marks. After a while, Professional Miner said, “Hmph, you are always making things hard for me. 100 stacks of [Green Copper Bar]s... did you think they are as common as [Iron Bar]s? [Green Copper Bar] is a Level 2 Ore, besides, it does not have many spawn points and the southern area is full of monsters.”

“Okay, fine. Tell me directly, how many stacks you can give?”

“Hmph, it is a good thing that you came to me. If you went to someone else, it wouldn’t be half bad if they could provide you one to two stacks.”

“Stop the bullshit with the self-flattery. How many stacks do you actually have?”

“Seven stacks!”

It was not enough at all! Zhang Yang said anyway, “Okay, mail them to me! What is the cost per stack?”

“Ha ha, we have been trading for a while now and I’ll be upfront with you. How about 2 gold coins per stack?”

It was slightly cheaper than those selling in the auction house! Zhang Yang replied “Deal” and ended the conversation.

Although he needed to compete with Floating Up, the demand of

[Earthen Round Shield] was still high. But the price has not increased at all. Zhang Yang tried to place an entry of the [Earthen Round Shield] with an opening price of 1000 gold coins, but after bidding for a day, 600 gold coins was as high as it went, according to the other entries.

When Zhang Yang had led the team to Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode during the last two days, he had obtained five [Refine Copper Bars]. Some [Refined Copper Bar]s from Fatty Han's team were also passed to him, so he had eleven [Refined Copper Bar]s in total! Zhang Yang sold the [Refined Copper Bar]s in the auction house and he took 1000 gold coins to store in guild's storage as repair allowances for tanks and healers.

When Zhang Yang was about to go grind monsters for some experience points as a means to burn time before logging out for lunch, he received a friend request.

It was requested by The Dominators' guild master, Humbly Gentleman.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and selected "Accept".

"Ha ha, we intended to invite you to join my guild for about two days ago but we never thought that Lone Desert Smoke would have invited you first!" This time Humbly Gentleman did not send private message to Zhang Yang but spoke aloud via voice chat, "I am not trying to slander Lone Desert Smoke but they are just a second-rate guild. They will hold you back!"

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, "Which guilds did not start as second-rates?"

The same would have surely applied to The Dominators as well.

Humbly Gentleman laughed and said, "Originally, I had hoped to be able to convince you to give up on Lone Desert Smoke and join The Dominators, but it looks like there's no chance of that happening now! Luckily, this was not the main purpose of me contacting you today. Otherwise, I would be in quite an embarrassing situation now!"

"Oh. Guild master Humbly Gentlemen, making any wagers again then?" Zhang Yang asked excitedly.

Humbly Gentleman could not help it, a lump that had never really went away reformed in his throat when he recalled losing 20,000 gold coins to Zhang Yang from the bad bet. It had left him in a slump for days! Although every player who turned Level 20 could unlock the gold coins exchange service, as long as the players had the money, they would never be in fear of experiencing gold coin shortages. However, it was not easy for a normal player to waste about 160,000 dollars in exchange of 20,000 gold coins in-game currency!

Although The Dominators was a sponsored guild and it was impossible for them to invest something with no return. Thus, these 20,000 Gold coins was paid by Humbly Gentlemen on his own so it was really made him miserable!

“It’s not anything like that” Humble Gentlemen forced a little smile and said, “We had an idea after trying the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode!”

“Oh?”

“Guild master Zhan Yu, I roughly understand the situation in your guild. There are only five people at or above Level 20 in your guild and at least three days are needed to make up a team of 20 members, each of them being Level 20 at least! In addition of that, a lot of equipment are also needed for the members before they are qualified to explore the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode!”

“With that said, do you have any good proposal?”

“He he, I did think of one!” Humbly Gentleman paused for a brief second and said, “The capabilities of the five of you are immense and I can gather another 10 guild members, fully equipped, who will be able to provide similar ability to the five of u. Isn’t it better if we work together to clear the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode?”

Humbly Gentlemen was greatly unnerved as Sky High and Crimson Rage performed very well during the first clearance of Main Wing Hardcore Mode. Sky High and Crimson Rage were now in the fifth stage of Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode but The Dominators were still stuck in the third stage of Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode! If The Dominators

continued being the way they are without searching for other solutions then they will surely lose the First Clear Achievement of Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode!

Humbly Gentlemen had given it deep thought at length, and he firmly believed that only Zhang Yang and his team would be able to help The Dominators win the First Clear Achievement Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode! Besides, he also knew that Zhan Yu was shortanded for Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode, and Humbly Gentlemen really needed a top professional player. With this combination, all of them will definitely be in a win-win situation!

Chapter 79: A Guest from Far Away

Zhang Yang thought for a while and asked, “To address the elephant in the room, if we killed Marzerway together, which guild name would be used for first clearance announcement?”

“Of course it is us, The Dominators!” Humbly Gentlemen took it for granted and said dismissively, “But, surely, you will be rewarded handsomely, you have my word!”

How much could they possibly offer? Be it 10,000 or even 80,000 gold coins it won’t suffice! This is because a First Clear Achievement was particularly important to increase the reputation of a guild and any measly amount of gold would not be equal to it!

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, “I am sorry and we are very much interested in the First Clear Achievement as well!”

The reputation of the Lone Desert Smoke had shot up in the China server after they cleared the two Hardcore mode dungeon raids consecutively. Besides, the requests from others to join their guild had been pouring in these two days. If it were not for Zhang Yang; s insistence on building the guild with elites, the maximum number of the members permitted in a beginner-rate guild would have been fully occupied!

To create a strong guild, Zhang Yang would need to spread his name across the server so there was no way he would allow The Dominators to use their name instead of his Lone Desert Smoke name! On the other hand, Zhang Yang had at least a 90% guarantee of being the first to clear the Main Wing Hardcore Mode, so why should Zhang Yang work with The Dominators?

Humbly Gentlemen was shocked beyond measure, never even considering the fact that Zhang Yang would refuse his win-win situation proposal so blatantly, without hesitation!

Humbly Gentlemen, having been guild master of The Dominators for many years in past games, his members amounted to the tens of thousands! Humbly Gentlemen was very ambitious in ‘God’s Miracle’ and

he wanted to build a huge “The Dominators” alliance. He also wanted to seize the eight main cities of the China server and eventually dominate the whole of the China server and have everyone patronage The Dominators and The Dominators only!

From the ironically named Humbly Gentlemen’s point of view, he was used to giving orders very often and only the China server’s top guild masters like Sky High, Crimson Rage, The Glory and Blue Sea were qualified to stand on equal ground as him. Besides, it was Zhang Yang’s privilege for Humbly Gentlemen to take the initiative to contact him. Thus, Zhang Yang should have been in awe and ready to cooperate out of the honour of being addressed by one such as him.

Humbly Gentlemen could not stop the unhappiness from rising. However, he did his best and said as diplomatically as possible, “Guild master Zhan Yu, you should have a clear estimation of yourself. Otherwise, you will get yourself into trouble!”

Zhang Yang laughed and thought in his mind, that Humbly Gentlemen was the one who requested for an alliance and when he was refused, he dared impugn on others? Zhang Yang smiled and said, “People die, whether they are courageous or cowardly, and life is short, we should have dreams and goals!”

“Ha ha ha!” Humbly Gentlemen laughed hollowly, “Then, Guild master Zhan Yu, I hope all your wishes come true!”

After that, he turned off his voice chat and ended the conversation with Zhang Yang.

Since Zhang Yang refused Humbly Gentlemen proposal, perhaps Humbly Gentlemen would be plotting something on him in the future! In his previous life, Clear Water had struggled with second-rate and third-rate guilds and he had no opportunities of dealing with strong guild like The Dominators. Who would have thought that the guild master of the highly renowned guild, The Dominators had such a personality!

He was not afraid of anyone as he had always been a loner previously and now he had the Lone Desert Smoke as his backup. There were at least

five thousand members in his guild and they could definitely hold their own if The Dominators really challenged them! The core investors of The Dominators had not yet fully immersed themselves into this game, as long as Zhang Yang had enough time, he would not fear even the full power The Dominators that he had once witnessed in his previous life.

The best way to respond to the scorn from Humbly Gentlemen was to get the First Clear Achievement Main Wing Hardcore mode and prove him wrong to underestimate Lone Desert Smoke!

However, the Lone Desert Smoke was not a professional guild, other than the highly active grinders, the rest of the members' level were just normal. That was a problem, as there would be a 50-man dungeon raids in the future and to level these teammates appropriately would take at least a month, so they would actually miss the chances to get the First Clear Achievement!

Still, Zhang Yang believed that as long as he got the First Main Wing Hardcore Mode Clearance, it would increase the passion of the members in terms of training as well. Thus, he would not need to worry about getting enough high-level players on time!

...

Half an hour later, Mining Specialist sent the [Green Copper Bars] and Zhang Yang paid upon delivery. Zhang Yang proceeded to the Blacksmith Shop to smith [Level 2 Whetstone]. He could actually increase his Smithing mastery and the [Level 2 Whetstone] also had its own uses.

He sold all the [Level 1 Whetstones] from his inventory to the NPC at the cheapest price. He had no choice as that was the only cost-saving method to increase his Smithing mastery to Amateur level. Even if he sold to the others with the lowest price, not many players would be willing to buy as most of the Smithing players would produce and sell the [Level 1 Whetstones] on their own.

"Guild master, there is a player from Blood Moon City, he had camp in our city and announced that he would defeat all the professional players in our city. He is very arrogant!" Zhang Yang received a private message.

“Eh?” Zhang Yang could not help but have his curiosity piqued, wondering how any player could have been so free to come all the way from Blood Moon City to White Jade Castle.

The China region was like an octagonal map, the eight main cities were distributed on every edge of the map and every main city had its own individual area. Towards the center was the above Level 50 training area and at the very core of the China region, were the higher the leveled areas of the map.

Geographically, the main cities closest to the White Jade Castle were Tranquil Wind City and Blood Moon City, but things were never that simple! This was because if the players wanted to travel between main cities, they needed leave their own assigned city’s area then pass through the dangerous Level 50 training area to reach another main city!

Indeed, every main city had their own teleportation portals for players to teleport to other seven main cities but it could only be used by Level 50 players and above! Zhang Yang could not fathom the very existence of a Level 50 player at this stage of the game! As evidenced by his memory, this was only achieved almost half a year from now, which means that the player who came to set up the arena, had to have passed through the dangerous and high leveled training areas of the map in order to arrive at White Jade Castle!

Who in the world has time for that?

All that time could have been used for training and clearing dungeons!

“What is the player’s name?” Zhang Yang inquired.

“...Ghostly Leaf!”

Ghostly Leaf! Zhang Yang eyes widened, as Ghostly Leaf had been a famous player in his previous life. He was also called “The Ghost Killer”, his was a Phantom Assassin and it was rumoured that he had inherited “Ghost Blood” gave him an edge at assassination! He was ranked seventh in the Top 10 Ranking for Thieves’ in the China server. Besides, he was the top Thief in the guild Radiance, ‘Bai Wei’s Team’s main force and also a famous S-Class Professional League player!

Zhang Yang found that it was really interesting for this future famous player to come to White Jade Castle and start an uproar.

“Is he strong?” Zhang Yang asked again in the private message.

“En, he is very strong! He already won 17 times continuously in the battle arena. Besides, some of his opponents are key players from Sky High and The Dominators!”

Battling was not allowed in the main city but there was a battle arena to satisfy the players who loved to battle. The battle arena built in imitation of the ancient Roman Coliseum, and there were two battle modes, “Brawl” and “Death match”.

Brawl: The system will stop the battling when the results are shown and any negative effects sustained by the participants of the duel would be removed.

Death Match: The match ends with one of the players’ death. The dead player would still drop a level but the winner will not be afflicted with the red title penalty.

Besides the personal storage and auction house, the battle arena was one of the most popular areas in the main city. This was because battle arena could be used to battle and also created the platform for wagers that included gold coins, equipment, potions and etc. All of these were protected by the system, as long as everyone chipped in before the battle, the system would automatically lock the “Bets” and automatically distributed the rewards after the results were shown. Thus, no scams ever occurred!

Zhang Yang was in the A-Class Professional League in his previous life and certainly, he had no opportunities to battle with Ghostly Leaf. This was a golden opportunity! Without further ado, he rushed to the northeast direction to the battle arena. Since Ghostly Leaf came to his city, he should at least give Ghostly Leaf a good welcome and grab this learning opportunity!

When he reached the battle arena, he realized that it was already crowded with people. The air was thick with the murmur of various

discussions.

“Damn, which room is that guy in? I want to f*ck him back off Blood Moon City! He dares to scorn us!”

“That fellow is really strong! He already defeated Piggy Third Brother!”

“Piggy Third Brother is not a professional player. Our Brother Piglet, Brother Brute Bull and Brother Dragon from The Dominators are only professional players in name. That fellow just defeated a few low-leveled noob players, how can he be considered strong?”

“Damn you, who dared humiliate our Piggy Third Brother?”

“Stop arguing, whoever who has the guts, go ahead destroy Ghostly Leaf! Damn it, you guys just add more shame to White Jade Castle, letting a foreigner kill so many of our people!”

“What's the situation now? Who is battling?”

“9 Head Hydra from Sky High!”

“...”

Battle arena could hold any amount of players during the battle. Whenever a battle match was added, the system would provide a new competition space, called the anonymous' room. So, the players would not need to worry about queuing up for participation! Players could also choose to view the matches and it was easy as long as they knew the “Room” number they wanted to view, then they could view all aspects of the battle match as an omniscient spectator. It was provided in public rooms while password-locked rooms, naturally provided entry only if you knew the password.

Players who just wanted to view the battle matches did not even have to come physically to the arena. They could just open up the Control interface and select the “Battle Arena” option and key in or select the “Room” number to view the battle match via live feed. But Zhang Yang wanted to battle and learn what he can from the experience, so he had rushed over to battle arena.

Zhang Yang opened up the “Battle Arena” option, keyed in “Ghostly Leaf” in the search bar and the results were shown: Room number 238, Ghostly Leaf versus 9 Head Hydra (Brawl Mode). He quickly entered the room and sat on the virtual battle arena stage to view the battle match.

In the battle arena, there was an Elf male player constantly moving like a shadow, swarming and attacking a Dwarf male player who used a shield. The Elf player’s footwork and maneuvers were really fast like the wind itself. He attacked and stepped back in a flash. He wielded dual daggers, continuously performing hits and runs on the back of the Dwarf player as the latter whirled about desperately, causing new damage value numbers to appear even before the previous ones had vanished.

Zhang Yang did not need to see the remaining HP of these two players. He already knew that the Elf player was going to be victorious at the end of the battle! The Dwarf player was not making use of his shield one bit. Furthermore, with the constant backstabbing from the Elf, all the defense that came from the shield had been rendered completely useless!

Both of these players had their names publicly displayed: “Ghostly Leaf, Elf Thief, Level 21, [radiance], and “9 Head Hydra, Dwarf Knight, Level 20, [sky high]”.

Chapter 80: Queen of the Shadow Dance

Zhang Yang raised an eye brow, intrigued. An unmistakeable gleam radiated from the thief's equipment. He noticed that Ghostly Leaf was wearing a complete set of Green-Copper equipment, with at least 3 of them being Thief-class specialized set equipment! Zhang Yang concluded that Ghostly Leaf's guild, Radiance, was much stronger than Sky High or even The Dominators. He believed this due to the equipment that Ghostly Leaf was wearing. Typically, since the equipment could only be obtained from raiding the Hard mode of Marzerway's Lair, this could only mean that Ghostly Leaf had been part of a group that has already performed the raid several hours ahead or even 1 day before the other two guilds.

The Dominators themselves had only just successfully raided Hard mode today! Radiance must have already, by all means, raided the Lair yesterday! Another testimony to their power was this one member of theirs to run from Crimson Moon City over to White Jade Castle, on foot. It was a journey that would have taken at least an entire day and night, and that was a rather generous estimate! Till now, the actual duration of such a journey was still unclear; since no one had ever tested it out.

This was why it was so strange. Ghostly Leaf was only level 21. For him to travel over a level 30 hunting ground, definitely triggering monsters' aggro, let alone the level 50 grounds with even higher radius of triggering...how did he manage to travel all the way from city to city in such a short amount of time?

It was truly puzzling indeed...unless...

Destination Teleportation Scroll!

It was different compared to regular [Teleportation Scroll]s since a [Destination Teleportation Scroll] can teleport a player to a specific city instead of the nearest one! However, this little item is extremely rare! There was the Specialized Teleportation Port that allows only level 50 players or higher to travel across any major city, limited to only the specific server!

However, a [Destination Teleportation Scroll] allows a player to teleport to all 64 main cities of all 8 major servers!

F*ck! What a waste of precious treasure! This was once an important key in winning a World War. A bunch of Thief players would use this item to sneak themselves into the enemy main city and built a Teleportation Port for their own army in the cover of stealth! An invisible Trojan Horse!

Just when Zhang Yang sigh in disappointment, Ghostly Leaf had successfully killed 9 Head Hydra. Based on the common player's playstyle, a Thief, especially Phantom Assassins, had always been the number 1 bane of Guardian or Defender characters. Phantom Assassins had a dagger specialization skill; and out of 10, 9 Phantom Assassin would equip dual daggers since they had short attack intervals and a more consistent damage output within the damage range (Maximum and Minimum damage as seen in weapon attack stat). There was a chance that a bandit class attack could not penetrate the shield defense.

However Ghostly Leaf was very efficient in moving his position in battle. He managed stick to the back of the Knight throughout the battle and had unleashed his attacks there! He had ignored the shield defense effect and dealt high damage even with just his normal attacks; his skills were even more terrifying to look at!

The battle was over when Hydra surrendered willingly. Everyone, including the audience were moved out of the battle room and back to their places of origin.

"Hur hur! Looks like this is all White Jade Castle has to offer huh! Come on, entertain me now! I want professional players! Not some beginners! I want to fight Zhan Yu! I heard that guy is f*cking strong! He was able to take on 3 dungeon's First Clear Achievement in one shot! Where are you! Come and fight me!" Ghostly Leaf started to taunt provocatively in the local channel.

Everyone started to respond venomously to his provocation, throwing insults and curses back at him.

"Don't think that you're almighty now when you've only just beaten a

few of us! There are many more professional players here in White Jade Castle!”

“There’s no need for Zhan Yu to come out! I can defeat you with just one finger!”

“The big mouth guy is in room 213!”

“Which guild has lost their mad dog! Quickly make announcements to help them reclaim it back!”

“Stupid dog! Go back to your Crimson Moon City and bark there!”

“...”

The channel was continuously filled with more insults and curse words. The chat log was quickly being overwritten every split second!

Zhang Yang could no longer hold it in. He sent a battle request to Ghostly Leaf but instead of him responding, a system message appeared.

‘Request failed. The player that you have request has accepted another battle request from another player!’

Zhang Yang raised his head to read the huge announcement board on the battle arena. A quick message appeared reading: Room 89 Ghostly Leaf Versus Frost Night (Deathmatch). Battle starts after 5 minutes.

The 5 minutes’ preparation time was to allow other spectator to place their bets and wagers. Typical bets were only between players themselves. However, whenever a top-class players battles, the system itself will host and allow players to place their bets and wagers.

In the future when the Professional League starts, almost all battle bets were hosted by the system.

Huh. Frost...Night!?

Zhang Yang heart sunk! He never thought that he would witness another player who was bound to be famous in the future!

Popularity-wise, Frost Night was even more famous than Ghostly Leaf! She was the top in the China server top 10 Thieves! Players called her

“Queen of the Shadow Dance”, traceless, undetectable, and always in the shadows, lurking in the dark. You would never know when she appears! You would never know when she would strike! People who were killed by her did not even see her coming!

This Queen had always been a loner. She had never joined guilds nor participated in any League competition yet she would dominate the entirety of China and had consistently ranked at the top of the Thieves list.

This fight, Frost Night Versus Ghostly Leaf is an extraordinary event! The heat and passion of the audience could rival the even chaos of Mars colliding with Earth!

Zhang Yang raised his eyebrows at the turn of events, brushing his chin like an old bearded man, lost in thought. Since she never joined any guild, did he have a chance of recruiting her?

Since the appearance Ghostly Leaf’s latest challenger, everyone had started to question her origin, her strength. However, since she was a “member” of the White Jade Castle, the crowd naturally cheered for her.

As an audience, Zhang Yang could enter the arena before the fighters could. He quickly sat down and wait for the clash to begin.

5 minutes passed and the two players appeared at the battle field entrance.

Kang Kang Kang!

The chains of the door rang and the cage was closed behind them, sealing all possible means of escape!

This was a Deathmatch! The match could only be over when one player dies!

Frost Night, Female Elf, Level 21 Bandit.

Her face was covered in a thick black cloth. Zhang Yang could not see how she looked like but what he could see was her devilish body. That slim waist, thick butt, those long and beautiful legs, and those bombs on her

chest that only rivaled by Little Snow!

Both of the contenders were at the same level but Frost Night's equipment was inferior to that of Ghostly Leaf's. She was wearing a mixture of level 10 Green-Copper equipment and level 20 Black-Steel equipment. Stats-wise, she could not possibly equal to Ghostly Leaf and his complete level 20 Green-Copper equipment set!

How could the future Queen of Shadow Dance possibly win this match with that get-up?

Zhang Yang watched eagerly.

Battle starts in 19, 19, 17...

5,4,3,2,1,0!

Poof!

Both of them simultaneously entered stealth mode, vanishing from the field. The entire battle arena was empty and quiet like a graveyard. Nothing but the sound of sand being blown by the wind remained.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes...

As the clock ticked away, there were still no traces of either of them anywhere. If not for the Deathmatch rule hanging on the announcement board, they could have left the arena for a cup of tea and the players would not even notice! Some of the spectators had started to complain among each other. The good thing was that nobody can post or talk in the local public channel and disrupt the atmosphere.

While everyone else was busy complaining among each other, Zhang Yang had his eyes wide open. Even though he could not see anything in the field, he knew perfectly well that the fight was going on intensely. Everyone knew that whenever a Thief breaks out from his stealth mode, it will be his chance to deal a great burst damage. But when the match was between two Thieves, the tension was even greater than an airplane cable! Whoever gets the first chance to capitalize on the moment to forcefully

break the other person's stealth, they would have the leading advantage while the other would greatly suffer or perhaps even die instantly.

Poof!

Two figure suddenly appeared out of thin air. Ghostly Leaf was staggering about, he had stars circling around his head! He was stunned! Frost Night, lurking behind him, brandished her daggers, dealing a huge amount of damage!

As expected of the Queen, her abilities in stealth and stealth detection was beyond even Ghostly Leaf's.

Zhang Yang pointed a finger at Ghostly Leaf selecting the interaction menu to check on his status effects.

[Ambush]: Stuns the target for 4 seconds. Can only be activated during [stealth], increases combo count by two.

A series of combo attacks had left Ghostly Leaf with roughly two-thirds of his HP, after only 4 seconds of being stunned. He regained control quickly but as soon as he tried to do something, Frost Night quickly reversed the grip of her dagger and jabbed his waist with the other end of the dagger. He was stunned for another time before he could do anything.

[Kidney Shot]: Stuns the target. The stunned duration depends on the combo count. 1 combo count: 2 seconds' stun. 2 combo count: 3 seconds' stun. 3 combo count: 4 seconds' stun. 4 combo count: 5 seconds' stun. 5 combo count: 6 seconds' stun.

Frost Night had accumulated up to 5 combo count and Ghost Leaf had been consequently stunned for another 6 seconds! It was another 6 seconds of knifeplay!

However, her Stamina gauge was used up completely. It was slowly filling up again, at about 10 points a second. There was a 4 seconds 20% attack buff that was called the Berserk state, which occurs whenever a thief breaks out of Stealth mode using an attack, but that effect has since expired. Her attack had returned to normal but since she had a luxurious 6 seconds to do as she pleased, she had already taken away another third

of his HP.

Frost Night had full HP but her Stamina was drained; while Ghostly Leaf had only one third of his HP left but his Stamina was yet to be touched! However, taking the differences of their vastly different equipment into consideration, it was not accurate to determine their HP based on percentage.

Frost Night, HP: 1020/1020

Ghostly Leaf, HP: 680/2030

There was only a 400 HP difference between them.

Once he recovered from the stun, he quickly moved to a safe distance and consumed a healing potion.

“+100!”

At the same time, a smile was slowly forming on his lips as if the tide was already turning to his advantage.

“Haha! It’s my turn now bitch! You’re quite strong since you could damage me to this extent. BUT! VICTORY IS...”

Poof!

Frost Night flicked her right arm and she was suddenly covered in a smoke screen and disappeared from sight.

Bandit’s forceful stealth technique - [vanish].

Ghostly Leaf sudden stopped his speech!

He panicked and quick spun around, wildly swinging his dagger, trying to forcefully break her stealth. However, his effort was fruitless! Ghostly Leaf groaned angrily. How could she have learnt the skill [vanish] at level 21 when that skill could only be unlocked at level 30!? Was she cheating?!

After he went around trying to search for her in vain, he finally stopped moving to use his [Bandage] to heal. However, he still had the DoT poison effect on him. He could not heal because the healing process would be interrupted by the damage!

He waited for another 15 seconds until the DoT effect stopped and began healing himself. He bent down and carefully listened for any possible movement around him.

Poof! Frost Night suddenly appeared behind him just as stars appeared on his head again! The debuff [ambush] appeared on his head again!

Shush! Shush! Shush!

Frost Night mercilessly slashed him. Her stamina had already completely recovered and she repeated what she did for the first flurry of attacks she had thrown out in the beginning.

With only half his HP left, Ghostly Leaf could not survive after taking that much damage and crumpled to the ground, defeated without even throwing out a single attack.

With that, the battle between two superstars concluded with Frost Night claiming utter victory!

Chapter 81: Another fight

As the battle ended, everyone had teleported back to where they were before.

Without a doubt, Frost Night's victory had roused the crowd. Their passion could barely be contained by the very sky itself! Audiences started to fill the public channel with spams of insults and jeers.

"Hmph! Now you know how strong are the players in White Jade Castle! Go back to Crimson Moon City with the tail between your legs!"

"Haha! You couldn't even win a girl! What can you say now huh!"

"Beauty Frost Night! Be my girl!"

"Crawl back to whence you came sucker!"

"..."

Ghostly Leaf was lost in silence for a moment, thoughts running in his head that nobody could have guessed, but after a while, he cried out. "Did you all seriously just send a girl to defend your pride? How could you still call yourselves men!? To think that you would send a girl to defeat me, are you all still babies suckling on yo mama's tits?! ZHAN YU! WHERE THE F*CK ARE YOU! COME AND FIGHT ME, ZHAN YU! ZHAN YU!"

Seeing that Ghostly Leaf was still unrepentant, everyone doubled the intensity of their insults.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to send a private message to him, Ghostly Leaf had sent a battle request.

'Ding! Player Ghostly Leaf has sent you a battle request (Deathmatch). Do you accept?'

To send a battle request, both players must be in the battle arena. You could just insert the name of your opponent or the name of the party you are about to challenge to initiate a one to one fight or a party to party fight. This bloody bugger must have just written down his name without confirming his presence in the battle arena beforehand.

Since Zhang Yang now confirmed that Frost Night was in White Jade City, he could contact her any time after the match. He nonchalantly accepted the request.

‘Ding! You have accepted Player Ghostly Leaf’s battle request (Deathmatch). The match will start in 5 minutes. Please make your preparations!’

The battle arena’s announcement board appeared a message saying: Room 89, Zhan Yu VS Ghostly Leaf (Deathmatch). Starts in 5 minutes.

Some people quickly noticed this and made a ruckus about it. The local channel became messy again and soon, almost everyone in the city knew about the match. The current strongest player in White Jade Castle vs the hot-blooded punk from Crimson Moon City.

Unlike Frost Night who was still a stranger to all, Zhan Yu this name had been the center of conversation throughout the entire China server. Everyone wanted to know how could a Guardian obtain 3 consecutive First Clear Achievement. Now that there was a chance to see him personally in action, no one could miss this golden opportunity!

“Hahaha! You finally showed up, scaredy-cat! I will crush you like a bug!” Ghostly Leaf sent a private message.

Zhang Yang was stunned by this unprovoked hostility towards him. Neither of them knows each other to bear any vengeance or enmity... However he came across the answer to his own question. He was the famous tanker who had claimed the 3 First Clear Achievements consecutively and had gained the attention of every player in China server. He must have indirectly earned the ire from the other guilds that wanted to claim that achievement.

This player must be here to cause a commotion. He must have thought that if he could kill Zhang Yang off a few levels, he would be able to buy some time for him to raid the Marzerway’s Lair Main Wing!

Hah!

Zhang Yang smiled quietly. To think that Radiance would actually go to

the extent of sending their future, and possibly already rising superstar over here to commit their underhanded tactics! However, they must have had a certain level of confidence to not even consider the thought of him losing and getting himself down to level 20 or lower, to the point of being unable to participate in the raid for Marzerway's Lair.

Did they put too much trust on this punk?

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought and sent him a private message. "Wanna bet?"

"Hmph! You think you have what it takes?" Ghostly Leaf replied with another question. He must be in over his head, or perhaps the previous loss had not been fully processed yet.

A fight between 2 Bandits highly depended on luck. Whoever first disabled the opponent's stealth will be the winner. Furthermore, the opponent had the skill [vanish] at level 21. He lost but he was not content with the unfair circumstances!

Zhang Yang replied. "If you lose, I want the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] that you have!"

"Eh?! How did you know..." He was obviously shocked. He replied after a short delay. "I only have 2 left. I'll need one to go back home! I can only put 1 up for wager!"

"Hahahaha! So you know that you're gonna lose!" Zhang Yang laughed provokingly.

Ghostly Leaf wavered. He did not dare bet on all the scrolls at hand. He actually was scared of losing!

"Alright fine! 1 scroll will do just fine!" Zhang Yang did not want to push him into a corner. He might call off the bet.

Ghostly Leaf said, "If you lose, I want....I want your shield!"

Hmph! He knew it! He was here to delay Zhang Yang! However...to think that he wanted his shield...How naïve! Did he not know that Zhang Yang was the one who made 80% of all the shields in this city!

Both party then proceed to place their items on the system. Once they had confirmed their selection, the system locked in their items so that nothing could be done to it. The item that were locked cannot be “Used”, “Traded”, “Sold” or “Destroyed”.

...4 minutes till the battle starts. 3 minutes...2 minutes...1 minute!

...5,4,3,2,1,0!

Shush! Zhang Yang could only see a flash of light and he was teleported into a corner of the battle arena. Behind him was a hallway and leads to outside of the battle arena. Since the pathway was not sealed, he could leave the battle. However, he will be considered to be forfeited the fight and lost his bet. The good thing was that he would not die, and therefore retain his level.

In front of him, he could see Ghostly Leaf on the other side of the arena. They were blocked by an invisible wall. They could only look but not approach each other.

‘Ding! You have 20 seconds left to prepare!’

...

3!

2!

1!

‘Ding! Battle start!’

Kang Kang Kang! The iron bars descended behind them and the invisible wall was removed.

Poof!

Ghostly Leaf immediately disappeared.

Zhang Yang did not panic like the average player, he walked to the front with a smug on his face.

“You bastard! See how I’ll stab you endlessly!” Ghostly Leaf sneaked closer to Zhang Yang, but when he saw the smug look on his face, he felt

humiliated. He wanted to just stomp on that pretty boy's little face as hard as he can!

10 meters, 8 meters, 5 meters...

As he approached Zhang Yang closer and closer, his eyes became more aggressive and vicious. The only thing in his sight was Zhang Yang's bare back. He raised his dagger, ready to unleash hell onto him.

4 meters, 3 meters, 2 meters. He was almost approaching his attacking range!

But just as when Ghostly Leaf wanted to activate [ambush], he saw a bright light flashing in his eyes.

Eh? [ambush] could not be activated! He was out of the stealth mode!

"-394!"

Ghostly Leaf face turned pale as he saw his HP was hacked away by 20%.

He screamed frantically. "Holy @#!*@!! What are you!? You're not a Guardian!"

Even a Berserker with a two-handed weapon could not deal such insanely high damage! But more importantly, how did the opponent broke his invisibility? He was actually behind him all the time. That was a 0% chance of him even detecting his location!

Zhang Yang laughed maniacally. That single strike had generated 27 Rage, enough for him to cast another skill!

"-797!"

[horizontal sweep]!

"Mother****" Ghostly Leaf could not help but to cursed. He could understand if the previous strike a critical chance, but how could he explain the second strike?! That was definitely not a critical hit! He knew that a critical strike is calculated by doubling the damage count after the armor value was deducted from the initial amount! There is no way that a critical hit would be an odd number!

If he could cause close to 800 damage without a critical hit, how much would it be when it actually strikes a critical shot?

Ghostly Leaf withdrew quickly and took a health potion. He raised his daggers and asked immediately. "What kind of weapon are you using!? And also, what skill did you use to hit me the second time?" He was sure that the first attack was a normal attack since Warrior could not cast any skill without generating any Rage.

Zhang Yang activated [block] without answering him. He had no interest in talking with the punk.

[block]! +10 Rage

"-117!" [block] reflect damage!

"-244!" [shield bash].

Zhang Yang swung his sword and attacked Ghostly Leaf with a normal attack.

"-389!"

With a maximum HP of 2000, Ghostly Leaf was now left with only 200HP. If Zhang Yang just landed another attack, Ghostly Leaf will be sent to meet the Goddess...

"Send my regards to your guild master Sword Of Light!" said Zhang Yang as he brandish his sword and activated [force strike].

"-379!"

Ghostly Leaf was defeated mercilessly!

Ghostly Leaf was not alone, everyone else who witness the battle was left dumbfounded. How could a Guardian deal such high damage!? Is he still considered to be a Guardian? Hell no! It's time to train a new Guardian as well!

Shush! Zhang Yang was teleported out of the battle arena along with his new trophy, a [Destination Teleportation Scroll]!

"Zhan Yu! I'm not done yet! One more! One more battle!" Ghostly Leaf

sent a private message.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "You're now only level 20, will your current equipment even work?"

After he was killed by Frost Night and Zhang Yang, Ghostly Leaf had dropped from level 21 to level 19. His currently equipment level requirement was level 20. Even though he was wearing it, the equipment effect was locked out. Wearing it would be purely for aesthetics, attribute-wise he would be as good as being naked!

"Just you wait! I'll be back for you!" Ghostly Leaf teleported back to Crimson Moon City.

"Remember to bring more scrolls yeah!"

Zhang Yang's last words to him was drove the prick in his heart further in. After everything that happen, Ghostly Leaf felt like Zhang Yang was there only to squeeze out more money from him.

Back to White Jade Castle, the local channel was filled with chatters of Zhang Yang's legendary tale of "Defense of Zhan Yu".

Zhang Yang had defended the city from the enemy! He was naturally dubbed as the White Jade Castle's Hero! The man of the people! The pride of White Jade Castle! His name and reputation sky rocketed throughout the entire city!

The gods were being nice to him. All he ever wanted was to obtain the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] yet what he got was more than he bargained. He actually became the city's hero!

Zhang Yang shook his head and loosened his shoulders. He quickly sent a private message to Frost Night.

"Hello! Can I talk with you for a bit?"

After quite some time, she replied back. "Speak your mind!"

3 words, yet it was filled with the weight of the world. He could actually feel the coldness in her words. Hm...not bad. She chose her name right.

"Ahh...Ah! Right. I'd see that you have some skills. Coincidentally, my

party lacks with people of your talents! Would you like to join us in raiding Marzerway's Lair, Hardcore mode the day after tomorrow?"

Zhang Yang had secured his decision to pull in his future-to-be Queen of the Shadow Dance!

Chapter 82: Decide with a Battle!

“No!” Frost Night rejected Zhang Yang’s invitation outrightly.

“But. If you defeat me in a battle, I’ll participate in just one raid!” she added after a little while.

“Ok!” Zhang Yang nodded.

‘Ding! Player Frost Night has sent a battle request (Brawl). Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang accepted the request and the system announced their fight on the arena announcement board.

Room 179, Zhan Yu Versus Frost Night (Brawl). Battle starts in 5 minutes

The arena got rowdy again. The crowd from the battle before had not yet dispersed after the match and had remained around the arena. They quickly noticed the announcement and the atmosphere that never had the chance to settle down quickly burst into an uproar again. On one side was the fresh, still unknown merciless challenger while on the other was the all-time people’s champion. Both had killed Ghostly Leaf with an extraordinary feats in their own right. To think that these two fighters would actually fight each other. This fight would be the battle of the ages to come.

One by one, friends called on more friends, guild mates called on more guild mates to come over, and the events snowballed into chaos. In merely 3 minutes, room 179 was occupied with more than 10000 spectators! 5 minutes later, Frost Night and Zhang Yang was teleported in to the battle field.

Count down start!

5,4,3,2,1,0!

Poof!

Frost Night disappeared without a trace.

Zhang Yang did not dare to lower his guard, even though her equipment was weaker and Ghostly Leaf, her skills were on a completely different level! Especially when she had the skill [vanish] that could be consecutively used twice in a row.

Outside the field, every spectator's eyes were glued to field, paying close attention any sudden changes. Frost Night might appear anytime and kill Zhang Yang before he could even draw breath!

The tension got more and more intense with each passing moment.

Foosh!

A shadowy figure appeared behind Zhang Yang and struck the back of his head! Simultaneously, Zhang Yang sword was already flying through the air and just as the back of the dagger made contact with his head, Zhang Yang's sword struck Frost Night.

"-387!"

"[ambush]!"

Both of their attack seemed to have landed at the same time. Frost Night lost a huge portion of her HP while Zhang Yang was stunned for 4 seconds!

A loud unison gasp could be heard from the audience.

"These two players are hella strong!"

"Damn! Zhan Yu could even detect a hidden Thief! What kind of force user is he?!"

"Frost Night is considered as strong as he is, if she could even stun him!"

"That weapon that Zhan Yu is holding must be some sort of high tier weapon. What else could explain the ridiculous damage done to Frost Night?"

"I see your point there, fellow player. But Frost Night is now in a dangerous position. If she could not kill Zhan Yu in that 4 second opening, she would be in a huge disadvantage!"

“Your argument is invalid my young apprentice. You seemed to ignored the law...”

As the audience started to discuss among themselves, Frost Night kept calm and quickly consumed a health potion. She then raised her dagger and stabbed Zhang Yang’s back, the beginning a chain of damage. Each damage was not particularly high but her attacks were fast and continuous, the accumulated damage amounted to quite a bit!

After 4 seconds, the stun was lifted, but before Zhang Yang could turn, Frost Night had landed a [kidney shot], knocking him out and stunned for 6 seconds.

Zhang Yang is an armored class character. Furthermore, he had 20% damage reduction passive skill, his armor and defense was not something a Thief could compare to! Frost Night could deal more than 1300 damage to Ghostly Leaf, but when she faced Zhang Yang, she could only deal about 800 damage to him, that was only less than one third of Zhang Yang total HP!

Frost Night still remained calm. The moment the 6 seconds’ stun ended, she quickly flicked her right arm and activate [vanish].

Zhang Yang grinned. He slashed his sword horizontally and stomped the ground firmly at the place where Frost Night disappeared, casting [horizontal sweep] and [thunder strike]. Being damaged for 10 seconds without any opportunity to resist, Zhang Yang had generated more Rage than his gauge could hold in.

“-765!”

“-117!”

Frost Night was forcefully broken out of her invisibility, her HP was emptied instantly. She surrendered.

Shush! Two of them were teleported out of the field.

“One more!” Frost Night sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

“Oh. But if you lose, you owe me two raids now!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“.....Fine!”

After agreeing, the both of them entered the fight again and battled.

In the second round, Frost Night learnt from her mistake. This time when [kidney shot] 6 seconds' stun was at its last second, she stopped attacking and immediately used [vanish] to disappear.

When he recovered from the stun effect he quickly headed to where she disappeared and ran around there. He slashed out [horizontal sweep] and killed her again.

“How did you find me!?” Frost Night had to ask.

Zhang Yang had been fighting Bandits for at least 3 years, thus he had developed a kind of trick to locate a hidden Thief! The worse side effect of stealth was the movement speed reduction. Once you have turned invisible, your speed will be reduced by half. Once other had seen you disappear, they can easily locate your position quite fast.

“Private and Confidential!”

Frost Night grit her teeth furiously. “Tch! One day, I will defeat you!”

Such strong determination! Zhang Yang laughed. “You cannot beat me! Your equipment is still too weak! Otherwise, you could have defeated me the first time when you had stunlocked me! Follow me into dungeons for a few times and you'll get the equipment you need to defeat me!”

Frost Night was speechless for a few moments. “I've lost two rounds. That's two dungeons raid I owe you...Call me when you're going for the dungeon!”

She did not want to continue fighting Zhang Yang when she had roughly gauged the difference in equipment between the two of them.

Zhang Yang smiled and sent a friend request.

She did not reject nor accept it immediately, but instead replied with a question mark.

“?”

Zhang Yang explained. "Let's just add each other, it'll be easier for me to find you the next time!"

Frost Night walked away without saying anything.

Zhang Yang sighed. He thought that she would reject his request but eventually, he received a system notification.

'Ding! Player Frost Night has accepted your friendship request!'

Nice! This girl is now in his hands! Just like a mice that entered the trap, she will not be able to escape from him now!

Zhang Yang snickered like a fool who won a jackpot. After a while, he opened the guild window and wrote a new announcement: "There will raid for Marzerway's Lair, Main Wing 2 days from now. The raiding party will have the following fixed members: Zhan Yu, Drizzler, Little Snow, Slim and Handsome, Hundred Shots. The party requires the following character class: 1 Tanker, 3 Healer, 11 Attacker. Whoever who could reach level 20 by the day after tomorrow and wishes to participate in the exploration party could register their names as such. Tankers report to Zhan Yu, Healers report to Little Snow, Attackers report to Drizzler, Slim and Handsome, and Hundred Shots. Registered players will be narrowed down and only the best will be chosen to participate."

Excitement filled the guild once Zhang Yang posted the new announcement on the guild notice. Everyone wanted to joined the expedition, sure of themselves to conquer the dungeon once their submissions were accepted.

"Haha! Good luck, and train faster, guys!" Zhang Yang posted in the guild channel and went to the Desolated Ghostly Flatland to grind his level.

In his bag, there was the unusable Skeleton Warhorse. It could be used only when Zhang Yang reaches level 30. That was why he wanted to grind as fast as he can. Imagine what kind of reaction will he garner when he takes a stroll around White Jade City with that horse.

"What a pity...if only I could sell this off..." Zhang Yang mused.

If only he could take the horse up to the auction house and sell it off, he would be literally killed by the hands of Little Snow and Drizzler!

Zhang Yang spent the entire day just to grind, grind, and grind. Nothing else. To gain one level after level 20 is truly terrifying. If he were put everything he had just into grinding, he would need two days or so to gain one level! By the time, Zhang Yang logged off to have his dinner, he was only at level 23, with 42% Experience points in the progress bar.

After his dinner, Zhang Yang spent some time on the internet and hang out at the forums. He found out that the Ghostly Leaf case had been a heated topic in the forums since morning. Some said that he wanted to be a lone hero, to try to fight for glory of being able to kill every single player in the city alone! While some were explaining his behavior, others were busy throwing insults and flaming his actions. Why would he travel all the way to White Jade Castle to fight? Has he already fought all and won every one there in Crimson Moon City? If that was the case, him being defeated would mean there are no strong players in Crimson Moon City!

There were players who supported him, but the odds were overwhelming.

Zhang Yang had a good laughed and logged back into the game. Zhang Yang, Little Snow, Drizzler, Fatty Han, and Hundred Shots each led a team to raid Bangar Crypt. Once they were done with that, Zhang Yang summoned the 5 of them to the battle arena for PK training. There, he found out that besides Fatty Han, the rest of the party were quite skillful in fighting players. They could be even stronger with more training. Fatty Han however, was completely oblivious in PK style of fighting. He only knew how to attack without the sense of moving his position, like a human turret. Hunter is a ranged character, he would need to maintain a certain distance between the target to allow maximum attacking potential. This common knowledge was not in Fatty Han's mind when he attacked like a fixed machine gun. Even though he knew how to utilized [concussion shot] he did not fully utilize the skill's slowing effect to ran away from the target.

Once cornered, a Hunter would be completely useless.

Zhang Yang tirelessly advised Fatty Han to keep his distance, to be light on his feet, and to move dynamically. But what entered from the right ear will smoothly flows out from the left ears like a good beer bong. Fatty Han could not follow his orders properly nor remember the fighting tactic! Zhang Yang was at a loss. He did not know what else to do! It was him that suggested Fatty Han start off as a Hunter because he knew very well that Fatty Han would never excel in PK!

A diamond cannot shine without polishing. But no matter how much effort you put in polishing a brick, it would never shine bright like a diamond!

This fat f*ck could only raid dungeons and not participate in any battle arena fights. Zhang Yang could not involve him in any future Professional League competition!

Zhang Yang really wanted to drag this brother to join the competition but a Professional League needed a team, and the team need to cooperate perfectly to win any fights. Zhang Yang could not be selfish and include a liability like Fatty Han in the team, which would lead to the team's demise. Sigh!

After the day was over, Lone Desert Smoke's experience point had reached 42%, and at this rate, it would take just another 4 to 5 days' time to reach the maximum experience point.

For the next following 2 days, Zhang Yang was only busy collecting herbs, selling shields, buying stacks of minerals plates from Mining Specialist, and leveling up his Smithing mastery. Two nights later, 15th of July, 15 days after the launching of the game, Lone Desert Smoke had produced 24 Level 20 players! Zhang Yang himself had reached level 24 with 47% experience points!

Now that it's time to do the party member selections, Zhang Yang and the 4 of them chose the party members carefully. However, truthfully speaking, it was not a selection, but to find 5 members to remove from the team since they needed to leave one spot open for Frost Night. Once they were done with the team organization, Zhang Yang ordered everyone to

log out earlier today and have a good night rest. The upcoming battle would be most arduous.

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Frost Night before he logged out.

“Hey, we are going to raid Marzerway’s Lair Main Wing tomorrow morning 9am. Don’t forget to gather at Snow Sprite City dungeon entrance!”

“Noted. I’ll take a work leave tomorrow!”

Requesting a leave just for the sake of gaming, 1much determination, very gamer, so Frost Night.

TL note:

1Doge meme which is rather prevalent on the internet, involves a shiba inu’s adorable face along with captions in fragmented sentences such as “Much wow, so woof.” etc.

Chapter 83: Assault

The next day, Zhang Yang logged in and joined the other 18 members of the guild and headed into Snow Sprite City. Frost Snow did not join the rest of them but she waited instead at the dungeon entrance for the party to enter. From the initial point, the party have killed their way towards the inner part of the city to complete the pre-requisite quest of the dungeon. After only 7 to 8 minutes, the quest has been completed and they headed into the dungeon.

“Be careful, there are at least 7 other Bandits lurking around here!” Frost Night suddenly announced in the party channel.

Zhang Yang was shocked and quickly screamed, “Everyone! To me, NOW!”

Some of them heard his call and complied, while the others were oblivious and ignored his call.

Just then, 7 to 8 figures appeared behind 3 of the day dreamers.

Pak Pak Pak! The Bandits casted [ambush] and started to attack them.

‘Ding! The party Flamboyant Uncle has initiated an attack on your party. You have 10 minutes to counter attack!’

“F*cking hell!” Zhang Yang cursed. He quickly casted [vanguard's aggression] and covered the 3 party members and at the same time dashing towards the attacker and cried, “Attack! Kill them all!”

The party was in complete chaos for a brief moment, but when Zhang Yang laid down his command, everyone started to cast their AoE skill towards the attackers.

The opponents had a total of 8 Bandits. After all 3 of Zhang Yang’s party members were stunned by [ambush], the Bandits activated [blade dance] simultaneously.

[Blade Dance]: Attack all targets within the attacking range. Deal 100% melee damage (Deals the accumulated melee damage of both Main Weapon and Secondary Weapon. If only one weapon is equipped, deal the

same amount of damage as the melee damage.)

Requirement: Melee weapon.

Cost: 60 Stamina.

One Bandit's [blade dance] could deal about 200 damage, but when 8 Bandits casted [blade dance] together, the stacked damage could exceed 1,600! They could kill all 3 of the party members!

But Zhang Yang was too quick for them. The moment the enemy appeared, Zhang Yang had already casted [vanguard's aggression], covering the three members under a transparent light barrier, thus receiving only 10% of all damage dealt!

"F*ck. What skill is this?!" One of them spoke.

"Sneaky bastard!" Zhang Yang immediately used [charge] the moment he entered the effective distance. He swung his sword, generating enough Rage to cast [horizontal sweep].

All of them had their profile information hidden, obviously trying to hide their origin.

'-754!'

'-798!'

'-768!'

'-2391!'

'...'

8 damage texts appeared and one of them showed such high damage that it immediately killed one of the enemy! It was a lucky strike!

"Damn son. Little Yang, please do ask me to PK with you!" Fatty Han could not help but feel intimidated! That crazy killing power is so strong that Zhang Yang could just kill off anyone within his sight.

"Relax dude! It's not like a lucky strike comes around every day!" Before Zhang Yang could start his second attack, the remaining 7 enemy were all killed by everyone's AoE skills.

“Why would they sneak up on us?” Drizzler turned to look at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. “Someone’s being a sore loser. They tried to mess with us so that we would not be able to claim this dungeon’s First Clear Achievement!”

Frost Night was the first one to cry out in rage. “Despicable!”

Even though her face was completely covered, but they could feel the rage that was within her. She looked like she was one of those people who could not accept cheating; a woman of justice!

Drizzler’s reaction was somewhat slower than an average person. She gasped and clapped her hands. “So, you’re saying that there are guilds out there that wanted to stop us from getting the First Clear Achievement and sent these guys to mess with us? Hm... Hm... I understand that our guild’s one weakness is that we lack high level players, that only today we could gather enough players at Level 20. So, if anyone us was killed and lose even just a level, we could not enter the dungeon anymore!”

Zhang Yang sighed disappointingly. “I really pity the teachers that taught you life lessons. How could you not understand this simple matter? Argh... it’s so hard to be a teacher!”

Drizzler got angry and her face turned red. Still, she could not find the words to refute him. She only raised her head and said “Hmph!” loudly and walked away. Looks like Zhang Yang hit the jackpot.

“I wonder what guild are they from?” said Hundred Shots.

“Well, Crimson Rage are all females...”

“It must be either The Dominators or Sky High!”

“It could have been The Dominators!” said Zhang Yang. He thought it that way since the alliance between Humbly Gentleman was a failure and he did leave with an unsatisfied manner. This was probably his way of answering Zhang Yang’s rejection. If he was indeed the culprit behind this attack, he would be considered brilliant. As long as any Lone Desert Smoke members were killed off by a few, Zhang Yang could not have been

able to proceed with the dungeon raid!

The only thing they could not account for was Zhang Yang's new skill [vanguard's aggression] that foiled the attack! Hmm... hmm... The Dominators, you have strike us now but watch your back!

Zhang Yang cleared his throat and said, "Split up into four teams and fight the Front Wing and Middle Wing in Normal difficulty. You must do this to get the entrance qualification to the Main Wing. The other reason is to get used to all four of the bosses' skills. The Main Wing boss Marzerway will use all four of them. I want all of you to get used to it so that we could perform better in the Main Wing. Alright, the team distribution should be me, Ironhill, 2 Pigs with Hunters as tanks, and the healer should be..."

"Damn! Little Yang! Pigs with Hunters? What the f*ck!?" Fatty Han got angry.

"Oops. Sorry. Let me rephrase that. Hunters with 2 pigs..." Zhang Yang laughed. He assigned the team to have tanks and healers to make sure every party has its proper build.

"Why don't we just fight Hard or Hardcore Mode?" Someone questioned the thought since Normal mode was so easy that anyone else could have led the party instead of the legendary Zhan Yu.

"It's a waste of time. Our main goal is just to get the entrance qualifications! Furthermore, the Hunter's... pigs could only tank as much as Normal difficulty. Besides, Normal, Hard, or even Hardcore Mode bosses use the same skills, just having different damage output. So learn the skills properly; Normal Mode would be the best bet so that if anyone screws up their role or make a mistake, your party won't be killed off!" Zhang Yang explained.

"Ok! Let's raid!"

'Ding! You have entered Marzerway's Lair: Front Wing (Normal Mode)!'

Zhang Yang's own party consisted of Drizzler, Frost Night, Angel Descend, and Face Floored. He intentionally placed Drizzler and Frost

Night into his team, not because he was interested in them, but was because of their powerful attacking powers. He was afraid that other tanks could not hold on to the aggro.

In reality, Angel Descend and Face Floored were good friends, and they were Spellcaster and Priest respectively. Both of them are male and their names were quite funny when they were put together. Face floored (when) angel descended. Haha!

“Let’s start!” Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and used [charge] to start the fight. This round, even if it was a Normal Mode, he did not dare to kite the monsters all the way since they will self-destruct on death. Though the damage was significantly lesser in Normal Mode, even he could not handle all the explosions at the same time and be killed off.

“Frost Night, why did you choose that IGN2?” Drizzler asked curiously like a child. Being the only girls in the party, Drizzler felt comfortable to chat with her.

“Why are you so quiet?”

“Why did you cover your face with that cloth?”

“How did you know this noob tank? I tell you, this guy has a friend that is a horny pervert. You’d better watch your back!”

“How old are you? Are you working? Or still in school?”

“...”

Drizzler kept on bombarding her with questions that it became annoying. Luckily the only questions that she did not ask were ultra-private information like her 3 sizes or her virginity...

However, Frost Night was well behaved. Even after being bombarded with questions, she did not reply a single one. Instead, she continuously danced around with her daggers, fully focused on killing monsters.

“Little brat! If you continue on to be that noisy, your damage output is going to lose to everyone else!” Zhang Yang quickly interjected before she was about to open her mouth.

“W-what?! That’s impossible!” she cried and quickly opened the Damage Statistic.

[Damage Statistic]

Zhan Yu, 38%

Frost Night, 29%

Drizzler, 22%

Angel Descend, 11%

“Eh?” Drizzler blinked her eyes repeatedly. “Your equipment is much weaker than mine. But how could you deal so much damage?!”

Frost Night remained quiet as ever. Zhang Yang replied in her stead. “That’s because someone else was fully focus on attacking! Sigh...They say kids who can’t study well are very good in gaming. And then there’s you! The curious case of Drizzler who is both weak in studies and gaming. You’re like a piece of rock in the desert! Useless!”

Drizzler raged. “Who says I’m useless!? I’m just not fully focused, that’s it! One more thing. I’m not a kid!”

“Argh! Let’s fight again!” Drizzler looked at Frost Night confidently. She has completely fallen into Zhang Yang’s provocation.

Frost Night was still silent. However, Drizzler mistook her silence as consent and she finally kept her mouth shut. After closing the Damage Statistic, she cried out loudly and started to attack faster than before.

What followed proved that in the gaming world, the winner will always have the best equipment. Frost Night was and will be the Queen of Shadow Dance, but as of now, her equipment was much weaker than Drizzler’s. After killing the second boss, she lost by only 2% damage output! She was not a sore loser like Drizzler; even though her face was completely covered, her eyes radiated with a fiery battle spirit.

Drizzler was as happy as ever. Such a naïve little girl... When she wins, she’s happy. But when she loses, she’ll snort, sulk, and put on a sour face.

Zhang Yang felt sad for her. How could a girl like her, someone who was

so realistic and naïve, still exist in this kind of society!? If Drizzler were to join the society now, it would not take even a day for her to be eaten alive!

After they had finished with the Front Wing, the party moved on to the Middle Wing. As this team had 3 strong players in it, they were the fastest in terms of progress among the 4 parties that went in.

When they entered the dungeon, Drizzler and Frost Night went on to have their fight. Even though Frost Night looked very cold and unresponsive, silent without uttering a single word, her intent to win the match was burning strong. Even when her equipment was weak, she had never thought of any reason to lose the fight. This forced Drizzler to be at her best; she did not dare to even slack for a second, fearing that Frost Night might surpass her at any moment.

On the other hand, Angel Descend successfully became side character. He did not even care to join in the fight. He only did his part, casting some hail on the monsters.

In just 15 minutes, the party successfully conquered the Middle Wing. This feat was quite impressive that even Zhang Yang had to praise their effort.

1A proper built party must have at least 1 tanker and 1 healer while the rest of the member should be attackers.

2 IGN is a common term for In Game Name.

Chapter 84: Main Wing! Here we come!

After clearing both Front Wing and the Middle Wing dungeons, Zhang Yang and his party gathered in front of the last dungeon.

After 5 minutes or so, the second team led by Hundred Shots came out, followed by Fatty Han's team, and the last team was Ironhill's. In this small dungeon, the performance of the tank will determine the success of the team. That is why even though Ironhill's team had a strong supporter like Little Snow, it would be useless since their team's tank was not strong enough.

"I assume by now everyone fully understands the boss' mechanics." Zhang Yang asked. "If that's the case, go and complete the quest and let's go to the Main Wing!"

"Woohoo! Equipment!"

"First Clear!"

Everyone's morale was high as they marched into the Main Wing with high spirits.

The dungeon was set in a palace, and Zhang Yang with his party were standing in the center of a huge courtyard. Ahead of them was the palace's Main Wing and it was there Marzerway resided!

Zhang Yang cleared his throat, signaling the starting of his speech.

"Ahem I'll now explain the strategy to fight. This boss has a total of 5 stages. At the first stage, he will take the form of the Water Spirit and had all of the Water Spirit boss' skill. In this stage, it is important to interrupt its skill casting. Hundred Shots, Comet Tears and Big Ben, you guys are the first team to fire the first volley of [silencing shot], the second volley team will be Fatty Han, Iron Heart and Burnt Snow. One more thing, always be on alert to evade the [ice ring]!"

"The second stage..."

Zhang Yang paused immediately and smiled. "You know what? Let's just focus on practicing at the first stage!"

“Ok! Let’s go!”

The party went forward until they could finally see Marzerway’s own body.

From the looks of it, he seemed like a middle-aged man no older than thirty. A deep purplish red robe adorned his slim and tall body, having a sort of an appearance of a well-studied philosopher, and he held a long wooden staff on his left hand. With the way he portrayed himself, he did not give off the vibe of a mass-murderer.

[Marzerway the Fallen]

Level: 25

HP: 1,000,000

“Team 1 move to the North! Team 2 take the East! Team 3, South! Team 4, attack from the West! Once you have arrived at your position, we will begin the attack!” said Zhang Yang as he dashed toward the boss.

“Impudent fools, you dare to disturb my rest! Weaklings that seek death, I shall grant you your wish! Hmm... hmm...With the power of water alone, I shall cleanse you off this earth!” Marzerway started its attack.

Once Zhang Yang and Marzerway’s distance were close enough, Zhang Yang activated [charge], followed by a normal attack and [provoke].

‘-332!’

‘Immune!’

With that alone, Zhang Yang gained important information, learning that it had immunity against [provoke] along with having 100 Defense value.

Still, Marzerway’s aggro was on Zhang Yang, and he raised his staff to smack him.

As a magic-based boss, Marzerway’s attack speed was slow enough that Zhang Yang could evade it whenever he wanted to! But he did not, and instead took a full hit to understand how strong the boss’ physical attack was. As Sun Tzu explained in his Art of War, ‘know your enemy and

yourself and you'll win a hundred war'.

‘-448!’

Zhang Yang took damage without any resistance. He never had thought that a magic based boss would have such high physical attack. Marzerway was truly strong!

With that, Zhang Yang gained 30 Rage.

‘[Cripple Defense]!’

‘-141!’ [Cripple Defense] damage.

‘-714!’ [horizontal sweep].

To counter a high defense boss, Zhang Yang first prioritized stacking [Cripple Defense] to maximize the party's damage output.

Once the boss' defense was reduced by 50%, the party began to deal higher damage.

“Weak little humans, I will freeze you ‘til the depth of your soul!” Marzerway stopped his physical attacks and started to cast a spell.

Pew!

After 3 second casting, Marzerway fired an ice arrow and hit Zhang Yang.

‘-1200!’

“What the hell! Why would his attacks be much stronger than the 5-man dungeon boss Water Spirit?!” After fighting the element spirits for several days, Little Snow had a better understanding to all skill damages as a healer.

“Hmm. This is a 20-man dungeon, of course the attack will be higher!” said Zhang Yang.

Even though this boss was much stronger than the Hardcore bosses, Zhang Yang was able to fight with lesser stress as the team had 4 healers. The healing load was shared among them and it lessened the burden on Little Snow.

99%, 98%, 97%...

The boss' HP was just too much. Even with 20 players attacking constantly, the HP reduction rate was the slowest he had ever seen!

"Slumber in eternal winter!" Marzerway cried out as he spread out his arms, casting 8 visible rings of ice onto the battle field.

'Ding! Marzerway has used [ice ring]!'

"Pay attention to the floor! Move away if there's an ice ring!" Zhang Yang could only scream to remind the party, not having all day to supervise one by one.

3 seconds after the skill had been activated, 8 icy orbs formed.

'-2500!'

'-2500!'

'Ding! Player Four Hairs has died!'

'Ding! Player Golden Big Ben has died!'

Crap! Two down!

Holding in his anger, Zhang Yang asked. "How did you two die?! Didn't I tell you all to be careful of the rings?!"

"Sorry, boss. I was completely immersed in attacking!"

"Me too!"

Zhang Yang shook his head angrily. He wanted to unleash his rage but he suppressed the urge. It was not the time be playing the blame game; the teamwork might just be affected.

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, "Just be careful next time. One more careless mistake and you'll have your guild contributions deducted!"

"Understood!"

Both dead players accepted Zhang Yang's reproach but whether their apologies were sincere or if it was just for the sake of it, nobody knew but them.

Sigh... to think that Zhang Yang had assigned Big Ben to the “interruption” team.

“Defiant Monk, you’re now assigned to the “Interruption” team, go and get together with Hundred Shots!”

“Roger that!” Defiant Monk listened obediently to Zhang Yang since they got along some time ago.

So far, the only classes that had interruption skills were Spellcasters, Hunters, and Thieves. Hunters required Focus while Thieves required Stamina. Both classes cost system had a maximum of 100 points and they could recover 10 points every second. Casting the interruption skill [silencing shot] or the [low kick] both required 25 Focus for Hunters and 25 Stamina for Thieves. They would need to make sure they had sufficient Focus to make sure the cycle did not stop.

A Spellcaster’s interruption skill [counter magic] required Mana. As long there was sufficient Mana and the skill was not in cooldown, you could stop a channeling spell by casting it before the spell could be completed. By far, a Spellcaster was the most suitable to be the “interrupter”.

There were 4 Spellcasters in the party. Zhang Yang assigned 2 to Hundred Shots and the other 2 to Fatty Han. Now that they lost a member, Zhang Yang had to assign Defiant Monk as replacement.

But was it really necessary to have three players simultaneously casting three “interruption” spells?

One, to avoid a possible chance of missing; and two, the casting speed was much faster than the Water Spirit boss. One man alone could miss out the chance to stop the spell.

As the fight continued on, Marzerway has casted [ice ring] twice. Zhang Yang kept reminding the team so that no one else would get hit by any of the spell.

“Hmmp! A bunch of noisy little pests! I’ll drown you all in a hail storm!”

Marzerway raised its staff up high and started to chant a spell. Hundred

Shots quickly called out as he casted a [silencing shot].

“Interrupt together!”

However, the assigned players were Defiant Monk and Comet Tears, and only Defiant Monk activated his [silencing shot] ; the Spellcaster was still casting a [fireball]!

Luckily, [silencing shot] hit its target, stopping the [hail storm] from being casted.

“Comet Tears, why didn’t you cast [counter magic]!?”

The Spellcaster quietly muttered. “I wanted to finish my [fireball] before I cast an interruption spell. But since you guys had already casted your skill, I didn’t think mine was necessary.”

Hundred Shots stared at him angrily and scolded. “Do not make the same mistake ever again! Just because you wanted to attack, you could have caused the entire team to be killed! As a member of a party, you must bear the responsibility of a team member! You cannot just go around and act on your own accord!”

Comet Tears appeared to be in despair after that rebuke.

“Alright, what’s done is done. No use crying over a spilt milk. Cheer up. There’s more interruptions coming later!” Hundred Shots turned soft.

Zhang Yang was genuinely surprised to see that Hundred Shots could also be stern! If he were to give him some lessons, there was a chance that Hundred Shots could be a good leader!

After the small commotion, the interruption team became fairly serious and performed extraordinary. They never allowed Marzerway to successfully cast a single time!

90%...85%...80%!

Even with Zhang Yang’s repeated reminder, there were still careless players that died by the [ice ring]. A total of 3 players had died and one of them was a healer. They had now lost 5 members!

After a while, Marzerway roared. “I have underestimated you all! Heed

my call, O God of the Earthly Spirit! Become one with me and crush these proudly beings!”

The boss has entered the second stage!

Pak!

Marzerway turned into a physical attack monster. He swung his staff and Zhang Yang had star circling on top of his head! Zhang Yang was hit by [smash] and had been stunned! Marzerway’s physical attack suddenly increased, and he then focused only on Zhang Yang and dealt a series of heavy attacks.

‘-704!’

‘+402!’ Little Snow [higher healing].

‘+80!’ Face Floored [regeneration].

‘-735!’

‘-747!’

‘+240!’ Face Floored [higher healing].

‘+207!’ Vanilla Ice Cream [holy light].

‘-711!’

In just 2 seconds, Marzerway attacked 4 times, totaling up to 3,000 over damage! Luckily, his team had 3 other healers that instantly healed him over the attacks and saved him from death!

Zhang Yang quickly activated [block] the second he recovered from the stun effect, providing an opening for the healers to do their job.

“Attackers would only need to focus on evading the spikes on the floor! Little Snow, just like the last time, when the boss stuns me, use [holy prayers] on me!” Zhang Yang cried out.

“The second stage is very simple! The boss is just like a wooden pole!”

Chapter 85: Exploration

The second stage of the boss was fairly easy; from the attackers' perspective, that was. In the healers' eyes, they were having the time of their life healing like there was no tomorrow!

The boss was just too powerful! His staff looked like it was made from wood but it felt like it was really just the Monkey King Sun Wo Kong's golden staff. Zhang Yang's HP was being whacked down like how Sun Wo Kong whacked the high heavens upside down!

"Damn you, Zhan Yu! Why are you so squishy like a toful!?" Little Snow complained violently.

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. He thought to himself, "Hmph! Keep on complaining, b*tch! If I were to trade with another tank, you wouldn't even have time to open your mouth at all! You'd be too busy healing crazily. The moment you're distracted, you'd be sure to have the tank killed!"

Being attacked by Sun Wu... Marzerway, Zhang Yang did not have any spare time to do anything else. He was fully focused on doing one thing, evading every attack. He could not even spare some energy to open his mouth to remind the party members nor command them!

"Be pierced to death by my rocks!" Marzerway bellowed. He waved his staff around and 12 circular dark pits with a diameter of 3 meters wide appeared randomly on the battle field.

"MOVE, MOVE, MOVE!" Zhang Yang was so preoccupied that he could only scream as loud as he could.

'Ding! Marzerway has used [earth spear]!'

Almost everyone was able to dodge in time, but there was a small group of players that were slower and became inflicted with the slow effect, eventually being pierced by the spikes that jolted out from the pit. One by one they were attacked and the damage text appeared on their head.

'-400!'

'-400!'

This skill's attack rate was one strike per second, and since the slower players were inflicted by slow, they took 3 to 4 attacks before they could escape the pit's attack radius.

Luckily the healers were efficient enough to heal them in time or they would be killed too!

But this placed the healers in a worse position. They were already busy enough taking care of the main tank, but when they had to babysit the rest of the party, the entire healer's team was turned upside down.

Fatty Han sucked in a cold breath and said, "Damn, being poked so many times, I think my ass*le is bleeding now!"

"Hell no! It's the balls that's hurting!"

"Wrong! Even your balls are now in pieces!"

Zhang Yang was infuriated with the party's halfhearted behavior.

"SHUT THE HELL UP AND PAY ATTENTION!"

Everyone froze.

"Focus on the boss and predict what skills he will cast next! How many of you really memorized the skills from before?! How you could still miss it and get killed!? Didn't I asked you to get used to the boss' skills?! Why did I bring you to the Normal Mode for?! Fishing for girls?! The next person who gets hit by any skill is a pig head!"

After hearing Zhang Yang's rage-induced scolding, the party did not dare to joke around anymore. All of them started to pay attention and attacked the boss. Zhang Yang truthfully did not want to put a wet blanket on their fun, but before enjoying the moment, they needed to first ensure the dungeon's victory! Of course Zhang Yang would get angry! They were in the exploration team yet none of them seemed to understand the importance of it! Someone of them even behaved like the boss would automatically drop dead without them needing to lend a hand!

"Strength! I will show you my strength! Bear witness to the power of Marzerway!"

The boss smacked Zhang Yang strongly and his body shook a little from it! The boss expanded in size!

‘Ding! Marzerway has gained [growth] effect (1 stack). All physical attacks have been increased by 5%!’

“Pick up the pace! We must quickly end this stage within 2 minutes! Do not let him grow up to 10 stacks or else no one in this world could endure his attacks!”

Everyone started to give all that they had! Arrows flew, spells were shot, and blades were clashing!

76%, 74%, 72%...

“Be pierced to death by my rocks!”

“ ... ”

“Strength! I will show you my strength! Bear witness to the power of Marzerway!”

“ ... ”

64%, 63%, 62%!

Marzerway gained 10 levels of [growth], his attacks were increased by 50%, [earth spear]’s damage per second increased to 600! Those who were slower and did not manage to avoid the pits were killed off instantly. Many of the players here had recently just reached Level 20, so their weapons and armors were quite mediocre; their HP was only a little over 1,000.

60%...

The boss finally entered the third stage. But the initial number of players were reduced by a whole lot. Right now, the only players remaining accumulated to one third of the original number!

“Little Yang, should we just give up and try again?” Fatty Han asked.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “No. We continue. Treat this as practice!”

They already lost 7 members and the boss had only lost 40% HP. The following events to come would definitely be harder and uglier.

Luckily, when the boss entered the third stage, he did not carry over the 11 stacks of [growth]. Unless the team could end the stage quickly without any trouble or death, the [growth] bonus effect would definitely pose as a threat for Zhang Yang.

“O Spirt of Fire and Immolation! Be one with me!”

Marzerway raised his staff high and struck the ground with great strength. A wall of fire emerged from the ground and blasted everywhere, with him as the center of it.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

All melee range players including Zhang Yang were knocked back 3 meters away!

‘Ding! Marzerway has used [knockback]!’

‘Ding! You are now affected with [combustible]. All fire attacks received will be increased by 50%!’

Zhang Yang quickly dashed forward and used [charge] to attack when he was in the melee attack range.

Marzerway reverted back to a magic-based boss when he entered the third stage. After he struck Zhang Yang a few times, he quickly casted a [flame shot].

Boom!

Zhang Yang received a devastating 1,500 damage in just one attack.

One of the characteristics of a magic attack type was that it will use physical attacks once in a while. The damage was unlike the physical attack type, where it could feel as heavy as a bulldozer! But even so, physical attacks were no match for a magic attack type that could chain a combo!

For example, after the boss casted a [flame shot], he could cast another [knockback] which could kill a tank with a 90% success rate! A tank would need to depend heavily on his equipment to survive. If his HP was not high enough, he could not even fight the boss at all!

“Healers! Please listen carefully. I want you all to make sure my HP is full before the boss cast a [flame shot]! To everyone else, do not die! This is an order!” said Zhang Yang.

His current maximum HP was 2,200. If he were to be carrying [combustible], he would receive 1,500 damage from [flame shot] and 600 damage from [knockback]. He could be killed with just another light attack from the boss, and that was why Zhang Yang had to maintain full HP!

In the third stage, the boss would gain one [sacrifice] buff that increased 50% damage whenever someone dies. Unless they could quickly force the boss to enter the fourth stage, the team would be walking on fire whenever anyone dies!

“O Flames of truth! Cleanse the souls of these sinful beings!” Marzerway raised his staff. 16 rivers of molten lava burst out from his body and flowed onto the battle field, covering the ground with burning lava.

‘Ding! Marzerway has used [lava flow]!’

“Avoid it! Avoid it!”

Zhang Yang kited the boss to a safe location. This skill did not need the boss to continuously channel. As long as it was casted, it would continuously flow out from a fixed location until the end of the duration. The party was in total chaos; some managed to avoid the lava while others were in such a panic that they accidentally walked into the lava and died.

‘Ding! Player 4th Grandfather had died!’

“Hahaha! The power of the soul shall grant me more power!” Marzerway laughed cynically.

‘Ding! Marzerway has gained a [sacrifice] effect. All attacks have been increased by 50%!’

Boom! A [flame shot] was casted and it hit Zhang Yang.

‘-2,250!’ Zhang Yang was instantly killed!

Ironhill quickly took over his role but Drizzler, Frost Night, Fatty Han,

and Hundred Shots had more aggro than he did. Marzerway did not attack him, and instead casted a [flame shot] and killed Drizzler.

When the boss turned to face Frost Night, she quickly whipped her right hand and disappeared with [vanish].

Marzerway then quickly switched his attack target and shot two [flame shot] killing off both Fatty Han and Hundred Shots.

The situation was f*cked up beyond any recognition. Marzerway now had 5 stacks of [sacrifice] effect. He could just kill anyone in sight with just the [knockback] alone.

Complete annihilation!

In the graveyard, Zhang Yang could not bring himself to scold the party. He only laughed and said, "Oh well, I guess we did quite well for our virgin battle! Still, those who died before me, please pay attention. If you ever make any careless mistake like that ever again, the first offence will cost you 20 guild contribution points. The second offense will cost you 50 and that'll be the last straw. If you commit the third offence, consider yourself kicked out from this party! I'd rather wait a few more days than fighting a fruitless battle!"

The players that died in the early stages dropped their head low. They had to take some form of punishment for making fatal mistakes.

"Still, I had to admit that I made a mistake at the battle arrangement!" Zhang Yang self-critic.

"Later, all melee attackers shall stand behind the boss and attack. All range attackers must get together with Little Snow! I will tag her with the 'Ball' symbol. So, when you see the 'Ball' move, I don't care whether you are taking a shit, I want you to follow the 'Ball'! If you could not even follow this, I'd have no other way to lead you!"

"You idiot! Change the symbol!" Little Snow was not fond of the symbol and stared at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was confused. "Huh? What...?"

Fatty Han scratched his head for a while and finally understood why Little Snow was angry.

“Little Yang. Don’t use ‘Ball’ since...well...” He pointed at Little Snow. His fingers was a little lower, towards her chest.

“Ah... right. Okay.”

Zhang Yang understood what he meant and laughed bitterly. He then changed the “Ball” into a “Star” instead.

“Ok... Follow the star!”

“Follow the star! The Super Star!” Fatty Han started to act like a woman and cat-walked around while shaking his hips. Everyone laughed.

“Pervy Fatty! Just drop dead!”

Everyone revived and went back into the dungeon.

Zhang Yang drew out his sword and struck it into the ground.

“Cheer up guys! We can do this! Let’s go!”

The second battle started with Zhang Yang’s standard [charge].

The first stage went fairly well, and everyone did their job properly; the interruption team managed to prevent every spell from being casted. The melee attackers followed Zhang Yang’s instructions and attacked from behind the boss whilst following Zhang Yang as he kited Marzerway. With this strategy, they could evade every [ice ring] casted by the boss. Ranged attackers stuck to Little Snow like glue, following her everywhere she went. Listening to Zhang Yang this time ensured that no one got hurt at all!

Still, even though no one died, the team’s attacking power seemed to drop tremendously!

Zhang Yang opened the Damage statistic and found out that the problem was from the ranged attackers. They were probably thinking too much on avoiding the skills rather than focusing on attacks. However, Zhang Yang could not ask too much of them. It was good progress when no one died. He could not expect them to be as good as Hundred Shots or

Frost Night.

Zhang Yang was afraid that the low damage rate would allow the boss to gain [growth] in the second stage, but the problem could be solved even though they had lost several party members. The boss entered the third stage with 11 stacks of [growth] and 60% HP!

1 Gamer's term; squishy like a tofu meant the player had low defense that he or she would easily have their HP drop at a tremendous speed.

Chapter 86: The Rewards of the Failure

The reason team could do so well was all thanks to the powerful damage output from these five people including Zhang Yang, Drizzler, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Frost Night. Their total damage was much higher than the remaining ten damage dealers!

The capability of the team was still guaranteed as long as there was a powerful damage output from five of them as the team's foundation, even if the other party members were not as powerful.

Little Snow was like a flag, and everyone followed her wherever she went and it was like playing the "Eagle catches the chicks" game which everyone found hilarious.

The third stage of Marzerway was still as exhausting as [flame shot] and [knockback] could instantly kill 80% of the tank's HP! The four healers in the team were trying very hard to heal Zhang Yang's HP. Even though he was dealing with [flame shot], even if he was hit with the combo, he could have 100 HP remaining!

Because of this remaining 100 HP, they were able successfully proceed to the fourth stage of Marzerway!

"The great Air Spirit, unite with me and kill all these corrupted sinners!" Marzerway raised his wand and roared like a beast.

Zhang Yang frowned as the difficulty of the Marzerway was mainly concentrated in fourth and fifth stage! The fifth stage was slightly easy as Marzerway could be defeated by using [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Thus, the fourth stage would be the hardest for them!

Evading [air bomb] and destroying the [summoned cloud] were the tests for an individual's combat capabilities. However, these tests would most likely collapse the team!

"All melee attackers, go back to the ranged positions first!" Zhang Yang started to adjust strategy tactics.

The Thieves, Berserker and the tank Defender that was Ironhill went

back to the ranged position.

“The Spirit of the Air will purify all of your souls!” Marzerway shouted loudly. Ten white balloons gradually floated out from his body and split into different directions.

“Ding! Marzerway has casted [air bomb]!”

Zhang Yang immediately kited Marzerway away and said: “Okay, melee attackers, come over and continue with the damage output!”

Due to the high number of melee attackers, if they did not retreat to the ranged position first, they would easily be hit by the [air bomb] and it would not even need to chase after them.

“Ranged positions, split and do not stand together!” Zhang Yang shouted.

If they all crowded together, the [air bomb] would accumulate and crowd around them, forming into a giant net. The [air bomb] would gradually nibble away the players’ activity space and finally force the players into a dead corner!

The speed of the [air bomb] was fortunately not as quick, making it easy for the players to evade it, as long as they did not blindly attack Marzerway.

“Stupid fellow, I want to bombard your soul into pieces!” Marzerway roared loudly and a blast of white air wave suddenly struck directly on Zhang Yang.

‘-1,524’.

Zhang Yang’s mouth twitched a little as the [sonic pierce] from Marzerway was very powerful!

From the healers’ team, Little Snow immediately healed Zhang Yang’s HP back to full.

“Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Defiant Monk, are you guys clear about what I had explained previously?” Zhang Yang asked in the team.

“Yeah!” Three of them nodded their head at the same time.

“Okay, Marzerway is going to cast [summoned cloud]. We’ll have to depend on you guys to see whether the [summoned cloud] can be destroyed as soon as possible!”

After a while, Marzerway shouted again: “Let’s have some fun!”

Marzerway waved the wand, three [summoned cloud] immediately floated from its body and gradually floated on top of his head.

“Ding! Marzerway has casted [summoned cloud]!”

“All ranged positions, I’ve marked a cross symbol on the monsters!” Hundred Shots shouted and marked one of the [summoned cloud] with a cross symbol at the same time. “Fire!”

[Summoned Cloud] (Elite)

Level: 1

HP: 10,000

From a 5-man dungeon to a 20-man dungeon, the [summoned cloud] amount had increased a lot and the HP also increased several folds!

By listening Hundred Shots’ command, the ranged attacking team immediately switched their targets and bombarded the [summoned cloud] that was marked with the cross symbol. Those that had fought the Middle Wing Normal Mode knew the true strength of the [summoned cloud].

Pa! The first [summoned cloud] was destroyed.

Pa! Another [summoned cloud] was destroyed!

However, the ranged team’s damage output was still quite weak. The third [summoned cloud] still had at least 4000 HP while chasing after a player.

“Ding! Player Iron Hand Chicken Catcher hit by [summoned cloud] : Rotten stink, stunned for 10 seconds!”

Suddenly, every single [air bomb] changed targets and surged towards that player.

“Everybody, gather to my side!” Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

Except for the stunned player, the rest of the people quickly moved closer to Zhang Yang's position.

"Heal! Heal me at your full force!" Zhang Yang used [vanguard's aggression] and guarded all nineteen people within the protection barrier.

'-1,200!'

'-120!'

'-120!'

'...'

'-1,920!'

The first [air bomb] exploded and caused 1,200 damage to Iron Hand Chicken Catcher. The rest of the people were guarded within the protection barrier so the damage dealt was reduced to 10% and the HP deduction was extremely limited! However, Zhang Yang was suffering and his HP almost dropped to zero!

Zhang Yang immediately used [block] and waited for the healing spell's channel duration!

Another [air bomb] exploded on Iron Hand Chicken Catcher and the damage value filled up the screen again.

'-1,200!'

'-120!'

'...'

Zhang Yang had just healed up to about 1,500 HP when another 1,920 damage value from the [air bomb] hit him again, killing him in the process!

The team was wiped out!

It would be dangerous using [vanguard's aggression] without [shield wall]!

At the Graveyard, Little Snow thought for a while and said: "Can we kill the person directly bounded by the [summoned cloud]? That way, the [air

bomb] will not explode!”

Zhang Yang stunned and said: “I never thought about this before!”

In fact, Zhang Yang did not experience a lot of low-level Hardcore mode dungeons. When he joined the game in his previous life, ‘God’s Miracle’ was already operating in its third year. At that moment, he just went on for low-level Hard mode dungeons as long as his equipment could be used for training. He would not bother to go for low-level Hardcore mode dungeons unless there was someone to lead him. When his level was much higher, he began leading the “beginners” to the low-level dungeons where he did not need to consider strategy tactics or details at all!

Little Snow’s suggestion was excellent, but it would mean having lesser teammates, especially when it came to the ranged damage dealers. Ultimately, it would mean destroying the [summoned cloud] would be slower as well! Having lesser teammates to that extent would certainly collapse the party.

(Even though the player would be killed by another player in the dungeon, they would not drop a level!)

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said: “First of all, we still have to try our very best to destroy all of the [summoned cloud] first. If there really is no other choice and it chased after a player, only then would we attack the stunned player!”

“Let’s go people!”

They resurrected to re-enter the dungeon and ate some HP recovering snacks to gain back their health.

Zhang Yang took out the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] from his inventory and distributed two per person to the party and said: “Hold them tight, drink this medicine together when I tell you to drink and do not use this potion at any other time!”

Everyone was puzzled but they took the medicine and kept it well.

The last stage would be the fifth stage, and Marzerway would just cast Area of Effect (AoE) [shadow arrows] and with no other tactics. This

meant that the team would just need to keep on dealing damage and healing.

“Let’s start people!”

The third battle started again.

The first stage, passed smoothly.

The second stage, barely passed.

The third stage, breathtakingly passed.

The most dangerous that is the fourth stage started!

...

“Let’s have some fun!” The same speech prompted from Marzerway and he casted three [summoned cloud].

“All ranged players, focus on the marked cross symbol on the monsters!” Hundred Shots temporary held a command job and cooperated with Zhang Yang.

The first [summoned cloud] was destroyed... The second [summoned cloud] was destroyed as well... the third [summoned cloud] still had about 3,000 HP and chased after Ironhill with great speed and caused him to be stunned.

“Kill him!” Zhang Yang cried out, as he swung his sword and slashed the Defender.

Although the pitiful Ironhill was a tank with thick armor and shield, he was not able to defend the powerful damage output and died after two to three hits!

The surged [air bomb] then spread out as they lost their target. They slowly floated in the air and searched for a new one.

“Yes!” All of them were excited and exclaimed like they had just defeated Marzerway.

“Well, let’s once again begin to deal some damage on Marzerway! The [summoned cloud] is casted every half of a minute, so we have to be quick

and try our very best to get through the fifth stage. Otherwise, reducing party members will wipe us out as well!”

“Yes!”

38%, 36%, 34%... Marzerway casted [summoned cloud] for the second time.

Although the party had lost a teammate, the overall damage output was not severely affected as the second tank had basically nothing much to do!

The first [summoned cloud], destroyed!

The second [summoned cloud], destroyed!

The third [summoned cloud] had about 3,000 HP and surged towards Fatty Han!

“Kill!”

Fatty Han died.

32%, 30%, 29%... Marzerway threw another three [summoned cloud]!

The damage output had now been reduced after losing Fatty Han. After destroying the second [summoned cloud], the last [summoned cloud] chased after Angel Descend and caused her to be stunned. Before Angel Descend’s HP dropped to zero, Little Snow was also stunned!

The party hurriedly killed two of them and caused the strength of the team to dramatically be reduced, since now the main healer died too. The stress of healing was increased to such an extent that the healers could not cope with it anymore!

They barely reduced Marzerway by 4% HP and when Marzerway casted another [summoned cloud] for the fourth time, but now the team finally collapsed and was wiped out.

“Little Snow, practice like the 5-man dungeon. You help destroy [summoned cloud] as well when the [summoned cloud] is casted!” Zhang Yang started to fine tune the strategy at the Graveyard.

“Cheh, there’s no need to wait for your command, I started to destroy

them long before!" Little Snow showed an arrogant face to him.

That was a bad news then!

"Noob tank, use that scroll!" Drizzler suggested.

[Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)], increase 5% of team damage and lasts for 5 minutes!

Zhang Yang frowned. Aside from the purpose of practicing, he did not wish to use that scroll so fast. But he did consider about the rest of the party other than the original five. The rest of their equipment were not strong enough and they even needed to exploit the extra damage. The only way was to rely on the external force!

"Alright, I will use the scroll when we enter the fourth stage! The other three Hunters must be on alert. When entering the fourth stage, the Hunters just need to use the normal attack and keep the Focus Points and skill cooldowns for the [summoned cloud]! [summoned cloud] is casted every 30 seconds and every round after we destroy them, the Hunters can attack Marzerway for about 20 seconds. After that, the Hunters need to keep the Focus Points and skill cooldowns again and wait for the next [summoned cloud]!"

"Understood!"

"All right, let's continue people!"

They resurrected, entered the dungeon, and ate HP recovering snacks again. After a few times of being wiped out, most of the party members already decided not to just rely on the main force but started to put effort into this battle because they felt helpless, miserable and angry. Alongside with the team's desire to defeat Marzerway, their fighting spirit rose once again and the team's unity became stronger!

That was good news for Zhang Yang.

Chapter 87: The Final Beheading

The battle started again.

Everything went smoothly as all the teammates paid more attention to their movements and positioning. Even if Little Snow had not been around to act as a homing beacon, most of them hardly repeated their mistakes in dying pointlessly due to ice ring, lava and spikes.

The crucial fourth stage loomed before them in no time!

When Zhang Yang saw Marzerway starting his scripted dialogue, he immediately selected [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)]; and a golden light surged through all of the party members buffing everyone with an effect.

[Rising Morale]: Increases damage and healing effect by 5%, lasts for 5 minutes.

Marzerway cast three [summoned cloud] and the ranged attackers changed their target. The three Hunters followed exactly what Zhang Yang told them just now, which to keep the skills out of cooldown and to Focus point. Abruptly, they nuked a great deal of damage and quickly destroyed the first and second [summoned cloud]!

The most dangerous was the third [summoned cloud]. When it nearly hit one of the teammates with the distance of 1 meter away, "Pa!" the [summoned cloud] was successfully struck and broken.

"Hooray!"

"Ha ha!"

"Made it just in time!"

They cheered repeatedly as this was the first time they destroyed all three [summoned cloud] without any loss, and certainly it boosted their morale!

"Well done team, maintain the momentum! Come on melees, show us some strength now as the ranged positions already settled [summoned

cloud] for us. We depend on you guys now to defeat Marzerway!" Zhang Yang smiled and said.

38%, 36%, 34%, Marzerway cast the second wave of [summoned cloud] again. The three Hunters already prepared and kept the Focus point and skill cooldown for it. As long as the [summoned cloud] was cast, then they would destroy them directly!

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han's equipment was definitely considered as top level among the current players, thus, they had absolutely amazing nuking power. As long as both of them did no mistakes, it would be unlikely for unexpected incidents to occur when destroying [summoned cloud]!

Marzerway's HP kept dropping after it cast the fourth wave of [summoned cloud], all the way down to 22%!

But at that moment, the unexpected did happen. Both Fatty Han and Hundred Shots, actually missed with their skills at the same time. It delayed their [summoned cloud] extermination duties by a whole 3 seconds!

The third [summoned cloud] was not destroyed on time. With about 1000HP remaining, it went on and struck Angel Descend!

"Hurry, kill the Spellcaster!"

Spellcasters with low HP stood no chance against assaults from entire parties and it was no different for this one, who was brought to the ground, dead even before he fell.

"Let's keep the damage output up. When Marzerway's HP drops by another 2%, we'll enter the fifth stage!"

Finally.

"Filthy mortals, to actually force me to this point, now I will let you guys experience my real strength!" Marzerway raised its wand and a huge black hole appeared on its back!

Marzerway transformed into its fifth stage and all of [air bomb] s

suddenly disappeared!

Zhang Yang immediately shouted loudly: “Everyone, drink the medicine!”

[Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Adds 100 Dark Resistance points, lasts for 2 minutes. Cooldown time: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 10

A casting progress bar appeared on top of Marzerway head, 2 seconds later and it cast the skill. “Whoosh”, twenty-two [shadow arrows] shot out from the void of that black hole and hit every living player, including the three Hunter’s pets.

“-200!”

“-200!”

...

“-200” number appeared on all of the teammates head. Except for Zhang Yang and Ironhill, their damages were 160 and 170 respectively.

“Two Priests, please cast [regeneration] on everyone and heal the Warriors as well. Also, try your best to keep everyone’s remaining HP at similar levels! Little Snow, keep the [holy shield] for those who unable to recover on time! Everyone, gather near Marzerway and when everyone’s overall HP is getting too low, I will guard everyone using [vanguard's aggression]!” Zhang Yang’s tone was shrill with excitement, Marzerway’s defeat was getting close!

“Wow, Leader Zhan Yu, this medicine is very powerful, it directly reduces 100 Damage Point from that ridiculous attack!”

“Ha Ha, we can defeat Marzerway for sure!”

“First Clear Achievement, here we come!”

“Strike, strike with all your might!”

Zhang Yang was feeling a little relieved from his otherwise tensed up

nervousness, but this was not the time to celebrate yet. He quickly said: “Do not be conceited, we must defeat Marzerway within 150 seconds. Otherwise, the damage of those attacks will be doubled and it’ll be all over for us then!”

200 damage per hit sounded somewhat minuscule in the case of this Gray-Silver Boss but it became another matter entirely with the volume of [shadow arrows] this thing was releasing! Marzerway would produce [shadow arrows] to it’s capacity as long as it was not the only being in the area that drew breath, thus, the total damage far exceeded any healing efforts the team could pull off.

Hence, everyone’s collective HP was dropping, slowly, but very surely!

18%, 16%, 14% ...

When Marzerway HP dropped to 10%, everyone HP remained at around 300 except for Zhang Yang. He calmly used [vanguard's aggression] and contained everyone within its protective barrier.

Although his damage taken increased by a 100%, it was a measly addition of 320, going up from 160. A guardian like him could shrug those blows off like nothing!

Those who stood within the protection barrier, were taking as little as 20 points per [shadow arrow]! Little Snow and another three healers hurriedly recovered everyone’s HP. In the span of 10 seconds, they were able to get everyone’s HP above 50%!

[vanguard's aggression] skill was an unexpected, but pleasant surprise as Zhang Yang had previously planned a strategy that would result in most of the party save for a few key DPS members dead by the end of the fight. It was a necessary sacrifice, and it wouldn’t have been too difficult to take off the remaining 20000 HP within 150 seconds!

However due to the existence of [vanguard's aggression], all that planning and strategy was for naught (and a good thing too it was)! The final stage of Mazerway’s boss subjugation became a walk in the park!

10 seconds later, all of the teammates HP had recovered up to at least

700!

8%, 6%, 4%!

Victory was already in sight!

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

“No, No, I will not be defeated, I will not be defeated!” Marzerway roared angrily but it could only helplessly fall to the ground as its body gave way!

Bosses only existed in the game to be killed by the players no matter the grade, be it Celestial or Black-Steel, they were fated to be destroyed!

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Marzerway! Obtained 52682 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

‘Ding! The party you are in obtained the Marzerway’s Lair: First Clearance of Main Wing (Hardcore Mode)! This result will be recorded in the First Clearance Hardcore Mode Achievement Board! As the party leader, please key in your team name!’

Zhang Yang calmly key in the words “Lone Desert Smoke”, suddenly, the server rapidly made the announcements on the screen with red words!

‘Server Announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has successfully obtained First Clearance of Marzerway’s Lair Main Wing (Hardcore Mode)! This result will be recorded in the First Clearance Hardcore Mode Achievement Board (China Server)! Please express our respect to them!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Leader) has successfully obtained First Clearance of Marzerway’s Lair Main Wing (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained 10 Gold Coins, 1 Skill Point, 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league and “Hero of White Jade Castle” title!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Ironhill (Party Member) obtained ...’

Since after Zhang Yang and his people got the First Clear Achievement

of Front and Middle Wings Hardcore mode and the China server global channel was cheerless. But in this moment, the server kept on announced the First Clear Achievement of Main Wing (Hardcore Mode) and suddenly surprised all the players!

“It is the Lone Desert Smoke gang again!”

“So strong, that is a 20-man dungeon which is much tougher compared to the the previous dungeons!”

“Wow, brother Zhan Yu, be my lover!”

“Is Lone Desert Smoke still recruiting?”

“Damn it, these are the people from the guild in White Jade Castle. Why are you shouting in Tranquil Wind City, they can’t even hear you!”

“ ... ”

The chat channel of Lone Desert Smoke was full of cheers and laughter. The members were ecstatic with joy, as the already great reputation and track record of the guild, attained even greater heights.

Everyone in the dungeon was extremely happy, especially after so many failures in the mission, it only made the taste of victory all the more sweeter!

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Frost Night and said, “Babe, come to our guild!”

“...why should I?!”

“Uh, not many tanks can keep up with your aggro other than myself! It will be agonizing to hold back on your damage output when attacking monsters every single time!” Zhang Yang had to reel her in with another method as she was too rational to fall for the ‘hey we make a great team, we should keep working together’ trick.

“On the other hand, it is impossible for you to defeat me with your current equipment! Your equipment level will never get up to mine if you do not join a regular, strong team for dungeon runs!” Zhang Yang tried to trick her in terms numbers, of statistics based on equipment, “Do you still

want to defeat me?”

“Humph! Of course I will!” Frost Night coldly replied.

“Then what are you hesitating about?”

“Hmph, do not think I don’t see what you’re up to! I will join your guild but only until I finally defeat you!”

Zhang Yang was elated beyond words. Guardians naturally held an advantage over thieves - if you knew how to use them. When it comes to both equipment and capabilities we’re almost at the same level! It will be impossible for you to defeat me, you will obediently stay in the guild and join my crusade for Team League!

He sent a guild invitation to Frost Night. Without a blink, she “Accept”ed immediately.

“Welcome!”

“Welcome!”

“Hello, pretty Frost Night!”

Many people in the guild channel started to greet Frost Night.

“Noob tank, ask them to get out of the way, I want to touch the corpse for the loot!” A group of people had surrounded Marzerway’s corpse and Drizzler could hardly find her way to squeeze through.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “All right, everyone steps backwards first and let our “Great Lucky Hands” get our loot!”

Drizzler triumphantly accepted the “Great Lucky Hands” title, unabashed. She started to distribute loots after everyone had stepped backwards. Zhang Yang used Leader’s Distribution for this time so she had to send the equipment one by one to the team channel first. Thus, the equipment would not appear on the teammates’ Control interface and the Dice Roll window would not pop up either.

Unlike the other bosses out in the field, bosses in the dungeon do not drop a jumbo loot at first kills. That was why Marzerway only dropped seven equipment and six of them were Set-equipment, which were the

Warrior's boots, knight's helmet, Thief's breastplate and glove, Hunter's breastplate and Spellcaster's boots.

The other equipment was a shield.

Six equipment were distributed according to the guild's contribution points. Zhang Yang did not compete for the boots with Drizzler but he took the shield.

[Combined Elemental Shield] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +200

Vitality: +80

Equipment: [block] skill level +1.

Level Requirement: 20

Awesome!

Chapter 88: Mess with me? I'll mess with you!

The announcement of Lone Desert Smoke's achievement spread abruptly across the entire server. Those who were still in the middle of raiding the same dungeon were devastated!

The entire China server had at least 20 to 30 elite guilds and their own exploration teams had been stranded at the fifth stage of the dungeon. The fifth stage was the last round it was the only remaining obstacle that kept them from the highest glory! But, no matter what they did, they just could not pass that stage!

Most of them had the idea that they were failing their chances due to the lack of strong equipment which led to players being unable to perform at their best. This led them to rely on brute force. The stronger guilds could only fight until the boss was reduced to 10% HP made no progress beyond that.

Perhaps they had thought that was a matter of farming for some stronger equipment, or a matter of the party's class arrangement. But just as they were still cracking their heads for more brilliant ideas, Zhang Yang's guild had claimed the First Clear Achievement.

It could have been dismissed as beginner's luck the first or second time, but when Lone Desert Smoke took the First Clear Achievement for the third time in a row, no one could ever look at them the same way as before!

Lone Desert Smoke, all this while still being dismissed with skepticism, was now being flooded with guild applications! No one dared doubt the capability of this guild any longer! The name Zhan Yu had engraved deeply into everyone's hearts. Every guild master now acknowledged the rise of a new competitor, Zhan Yu's very own Lone Desert Smoke!

...

After equipping the new shield, Zhang Yang HP shot up to 2740 HP and

his defense rose similarly to 236! Now, he could leisurely take several hits from a Hardcore boss!

Once the loot was distributed, Zhang Yang brought the team to fight the Hard mode of the Main Wing and collected an additional 6 pieces of Green-Copper equipment for the team. Even though the equipment there were weaker than Gray-Silver, it was still on par as 5-man Hardcore dungeon equipment drops. Furthermore, they were set equipment! The best news was that different tiered equipment could still activate the set equipment effect! For example, if the player was wearing Gray-Silver boots, a Black-Steel helm, and a Green-Copper chest plate, the 3-set equipment effect would still trigger! The only condition was that the equipment had to be in the same set, if the player had collected 5 different tiers of the same equipment set, he could still trigger the set equipment effect!

Among the party members, the little brat was the luckiest. She had gotten a pair of boots from the Hardcore mode and another piece of the set from the Hard mode! She managed to activate the first set equipment effect! Once they had completed the Hard mode, Zhang Yang disbanded the party and allowed the member to go off on their own. However, he kept his 4 friends close at hand, with the addition of Frost Snow.

“We are going to fight the Skeleton Horse Knight at the Cave of Bones!”

“Aw Yiss! Horsie!” Drizzler leaped and jumped around with joy.

They had headed down to the Cave of Bones yesterday to fight, only to find that none of the bosses on the 5 floors had respawned. Everyone concluded that since the final boss was a Gray-Silver tier, it had effected all the other bosses upon death, and they would respawn at the same time as it does, which was 3 days.

The first time they had raided this cave, they had a tough time. But now, they fought and went down each floor with ease since thanks to their vastly improved equipment. Not to mention, they had a new strong attacker in their team!

However, luck was not on their side this time. After killing 4 bosses from

4 floors, there were no signs of any Shape-Shifting or Magic Scrolls, or even the Indian God Oil! The reason why they could get so many items the previous time was probably because that was the first time the boss died. Now that this was the second time they are fighting, the drop rate must have reduced!

When the party arrived at the fifth floor, Zhang Yang was worried that they might be unable to endure the poison effect of the mist since they did not have the antidote to counter its effects. But when the party entered the area, there was no such mist whatsoever. The air was clean and fresh. The effect must have been a quest triggered scenario, or else the party would have had to depend on level 50 equipment to fight this boss!

This round, Zhang Yang had brought along his [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], and so the party managed to kill Shurian with ease. This time, Shurian was as stingy as the upcoming floor boss. It only dropped 3 Gray-Silver equipment which were taken by Drizzler, Little Snow and Frost Night. The body disappeared after all equipment had been distributed.

It was already 2pm by the time they were finished with the Cave of Bones. Zhang Yang disbanded the party and everyone logged out to have their lunch. Zhang Yang logged back in after having a good meal and adequate rest.

As he was strolling in the city, Zhang Yang suddenly recalled the encounter with Humbly Gentleman and his trickery to sabotage his raid.

Hehehe...In that case, time to let him suffer for a bit. Humiliation and regret! Let him suffer in poverty!

Zhang Yang opened his friend list and found that Humbly Gentleman was online. He grinned sinisterly to himself and sent a private message.

“Guildmaster Humbly Gentleman! Are you busy right now?”

“My my, it’s the famous Zhan Yu!” He replied swiftly. “Haha! Oh my! I forgot to congratulate you for obtaining another First Clear achievement!”

“Ahahaha! It’s nothing really. It was pure luck, I must admit! Fortune happened to smile upon me!” Zhang Yang sent over the description of the

[Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to him and said, “I was really fortunate to have been able to farm this peculiar item! Without it, I’d have never have been able to get pass the fifth stage of Marzerway!”

Humbly Gentleman face was completely drained of color.

Just the day before yesterday, Humbly Gentleman’s guild The Dominator has tried to take on the Hardcore mode of Marzerway’s Lair. They were completely wiped off after 30 seconds into the fifth stage! They had tried many methods. They had tried increasing the healer count in the party but because of the high number of healers in the party, the attacking power was so low that they could not even get through the 4 stages before the final one! The next time, they tried a more conventional arrangement and focused on raw attacking power instead. Still even though they could keep the party alive till the last stage, they still could not kill the boss within 2 minutes. Once the boss cast a huge AOE skill, everyone was killed. The more survivors only meant more death!

No matter how many time they revised their battle plan, the god-like fifth stage was impenetrable!

Now that Humbly Gentleman had seen the potion’s properties, he was completely stunned! If only they had this item as well when they raided the dungeon, they would have already claimed the First Clear Achievement without cracking their brains for ideas!

WHY! WHY! God damn it! Why is that cheeky brat is so god damned lucky!

Inside, Humbly Gentleman was so angry that he would have punched Zhang Yang in the face if he was standing right in front of him! It took all his will to maintain his composure and say, “Zhan Yu! Let’s make a deal. Could you sell a bunch of these potions to our guild?”

Hmph! I was waiting for you to say that! Zhang Yang purposely delayed his reply. “Guildmaster Humbly Gentleman, I’d only have a few of these left for the next raid. The ingredients for the potion are extremely hard to come by.”

“Haha! The 20-man dungeon would only respawn after 3 days! You

would have that much time to farm for the ingredients no?” Humbly Gentleman tried to reason with Zhang Yang. Even though he could not get the First Clear Achievement, he could still be the second guild to clear the dungeon, he could surpass both Crimson Rage and Sky High!

Furthermore, there is always the speed record! If he could gather a bunch of Gray-Silver equipment to strengthen his team, he could easily beat the time record of the 5-man dungeon!

The third reason involved his longer termed planning-he could prepare his guild for the level 30 dungeon First Clear Achievement! Try raiding the dungeon with a Green-Copper equipment instead of the Gray-Silver equipment. The difference would be heaven and earth!

That was why, no matter how high a price Zhang Yang set, Humbly Gentleman would gladly accept it!

Zhang Yang acted coyly. “Well...since you insist, I could...sell you some! However...the price would be...erhm...”

Humbly Gentleman cursed aloud on his side where Zhang Yang could not hear. Damn! What’s with this dilly dallying?! All you wanted is money right!? Tch!

Even though he wanted to say that out loud, he would have never stoop as lowly as that. He calmed himself down and speak carefully.

“How many bottles do you have there?”

“100!”

Humbly Gentleman started to calculate. With the help of this potion, his guild’s team capability could easily raid the dungeon without much problem! So far, his team consisted of players at around level 22, and it would take about 15 days before he could bring the team’s player level to 30. If they would take 2 days to raise one level.

The dungeon would respawn every 3 days, this would mean at least 5 raids. 100 bottle would be just the right amount!

What a coincidence! Humbly Gentleman smiled with satisfaction and

replied Zhang Yang. “Ah. I see. In that case, I like to buy them all!”

Hehehe the number 100 was not just a random thought, Zhang Yang had already predicted Humbly Gentleman going through that exact calculation.

He quickly replied, “Oh no! I can’t just sell them all! The ingredient is just that hard to farm. If I were to sell them all to you, what’s going to happen on my end here?!”

“Hehehe. Your guild had already claimed the First Clear Achievement! You would not need to raid the dungeon anymore now do you?”

There was a short pause in the conversation. Zhang Yang was waiting for him to make the first move.

“I’ll pay 10000 gold for it! 10000 gold! How does that sound?”

“Erhm...10000 gold is just...I mean, money is not a problem...but the ingredients are just too hard to come by!”

“Erhm..2. No! 50000 gold!” Humbly Gentleman grit his teeth till the point that you can actually see some pieces of enamel chipping off.

“Hm...Very well then...” Zhang Yang pretended to accept the offer with a heavy heart. But on his side, Zhang Yang smiling from ear to ear.

So far, the exchange ratio for gold piece to real-life currency was 1:7, and 50000 gold pieces would cost approximately over 300 thousand dollars! Truthfully, Zhang Yang did not care about the money he was earning from this single trade. That’s because the money he is bound to earn would exceed that amount by the millions when more players begin farming the dungeon for the first set equipment in the game!

Zhang Yang only want to mess with him since he was being such a hypocrite. To think that he would dare name himself Humbly Gentleman when in reality, he was such a jerk.

“Well. I guess I should mail you the item with the fees as well.”

“Alright. Please hurry!”

Zhang Yang closed the deal with Humbly Gentleman and started to

search another name and sent a private message to Snow Seeker.

“Guildmaster Snow Seeker, may I interest you with this item?” He posted the item over to her.

After a while, she replied. “At first I was wondering about how you guys manage to survive past the fifth stage of Marzerway. Now that you have sent me this, my question were answered.”

“Haha! You guess right. I was just lucky! So how about it? Would you like to stock up a little?”

“Name your price!” Snow Seeker was alert and straight to the point. She did not try to go around the bush, trying to get to his better side.

“1 gold coin per bottle!”

1 gold coin per bottle was the same price in his previous life. Zhang Yang gave her this offer since he did not want to take advantage of her guild. Since he had already had his fun tormenting his real target, selling 1 bottle for 1 gold would rub additional salt on his wound.

“Alright. I’ll take that offer. How many bottle could you sell?” Snow Seeker was thinking much further than Humbly Gentleman was. Of course there was no doubt that the exploration team would require the potion to raid the dungeon. However, there were also normal players in their guild who could take the potion to raid the Hard or even Normal mode! A guild could have only a certain number of elites, not every player in an elite would be equally strong. The building blocks of a strong guild are the normal players. Without them, the few numbers of elite could not even make up a proper guild!

“1 thousand, 10 thousand, you name it! I have it!” Zhang Yang replied.

“Hahah! Looks like we’ve got ourselves a millionaire over here!” Snow Seeker had already forecasted the probability of his market value. Top guilds would only need this potion when they raid the Hardcore mode, but many regular players around could also buy this potion to raid Hard more or even Normal mode! It’s always better to use the potion since it could lower the difficulty of the dungeon and increase the success rate of

conquering the dungeon!

Furthermore, the item was not that expensive. It's only 1 gold! That would only cost 7 dollars in the real world! You could even have the chance to get yourself a set equipment!

Come on, bro! It's a set equipment! The game's first set equipment! You don't have it? Well, you're out then!

Besides, normal players made up most of the game's population! There are almost 40 million players in the entire game! The amount of the players have almost doubled since the server was initially launched! Just White Jade Castle alone had 500 thousand players occupying this city! If each player bought 1 bottle from him, he would have earned 500 thousand gold coins!

One successfully dungeon raid would drop only 6 pieces of set equipment! In a 20-man party, you would need to raid at least 15 to 16 times to have everyone equipped with a full set of the equipment! To have that many potions would cost them at least 80 million gold coins!

Holy smokes! If Snow Seeker did not calculate its probability, she would not have known its impending fortune! Even if the ratio dropped down to an exchange rate of 1:1, Zhang Yang would still earn at least 80 million dollar!

Still, it was just her estimation, there were still other factors that might come into play. For example, the time taken to make a potion. There was a limit to how many Zhang Yang could produce.

"Ahem So, I'll send you 1 thousand bottles of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], is that correct?"

"Yes! I'll pay by mail. Thank you for your hard work Guild master Zhan Yu!"

"Thanks!"

"Bye!"

Humbly Gentleman, you son of a bitch, I'll see to it that you'll cry a river

by the time you find out that you have been duped!

Zhang Yang searched for another name and sent another private message.

“Hello! Guildmaster Sky Shaman! Are you busy right now...?”

Chapter 89: Distributor

Zhang Yang first sent 1000 bottles to both Snow Seeker of the Crimson Rage and Sky Shaman of the Sky High. After approximately 10 minutes, only did he send 100 bottles to Humbly Gentleman. What that needed to be done has been done. There was nothing he could have done if Crimson Rage or Sky High still somehow manage to fall behind The Dominators.

Anything that could be done for level 20 had been done thoroughly enough. The only thing left was the Hardcore mode speed record! However, Zhang Yang was not keen to obtain that achievement, the reward was not luxurious enough for him!

On the other hand, there's the case where things might get a little dull! If only him alone was responsible for claiming the First Clear Achievement or even the Speed Achievement, there would be no chance for other guild to grab the spotlight. Even the audience would feel bored if Zhang Yang was the only one remaining in the limelight.

There was also another matter. If you don't provide some chances for others, others will not give the chance for you as well! Other guilds might form an alliance solely to take down his guild! Even with his overwhelming ability, he could not fight with everyone! That is why, Zhang Yang prioritized on only getting the First Clear Achievement. The Speed Achievement, was just there for fun, as an optional pursuit. There was no need to make it the top of his priorities!

He called all 4 of his friends to join him in grinding at the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands. He had already set his goals for the two level 30 dungeons in the Shadowmoon Castle. He already had 5 qualified party members for the 10-man dungeon. He only needed to find 4 more to form the team.

Frost Night rejected the grinding invitation, saying that she had to go back to work.

Zhang Yang could not help but question her ability. This woman worked full-time, how did she even manage to increase her level so rapidly?

Zhang Yang logged in after dinner and formed 3 parties to raid the Bangar Crypt. The other party was led by Ironhills as the main tanker, with Little Snow as the healer. Zhang Yang wanted improve the entire guild's fighting ability. He could not completely depend on his friends to dominate the limelight.

After the dungeon runs, Zhang Yang went back to grind. By 10pm, he had reached level 24 with 91% experience points, almost touching the tip of level 25. He then logged off and went to hang out in the web.

He went on to the official site and found an interesting news!

The American movie company Miramax Studios will collaborate with the game developers Dream Technology to produce an in-game shooting production called "A Knight's Soul"! The script, director, and actors were all already decided and the shooting will start soon!

This particular news had heated up fans of the game. Some comment, while others complaint. Some showed their interest while other expressed the impending failure of the production. There were so many opinions littering the forum!

Zhang Yang only sighed heavily. This event was exactly as it was in his "history".

"A Knight's Soul" was the first movie to be produced inside 'God's Miracle'. Borrowing the game's unrivaled realistic scenery and human characters, they had successfully produced a historical movie! The movie was deemed to be very successful because of their exceptional utilization of the elements in the game. The real world ticket profits had exceeded over 700 million USD while the in-game "movie tickets" had reached an astonishing number of 8.8 billion gold coins!

The event only happened 6 months after when the exchange rate dropped to a rate of 1:1. 8.6 billion gold coins could be exchanged for 1.5 billion dollars!

To think that the original production cost was only 2 million USD!

It's safe to say that "A Knight's Soul" was not only a successful business

expenditure, it was the stepping stone for the entire movie industry as well! After Miramax studios showed their successful profit, other movie producers started to follow their footsteps and begin to move their projects towards 'God's Miracle'!

There were countless benefit in producing a movie with 'God's Miracle' but the main advantages are as follows:

Low Production Cost

You could easily replicate the scenery of earthquakes, crumbling earth crust, explosion scenes, or even Armageddon itself! They could be easily reproduced in the game! On the other hand, actors could have their appearance easily modified to be as handsome or as beautiful as they wanted it to be! Dream Technology could work hand in hand with the producers to replicate any elements of the movies they wanted. They could even manipulate the building structure to be ancient-themed or create an entire post-apocalyptic dystopia, or a streamlined sci-fi skyline! They could also produce unlimited number of NPCs to act as extras! They could literally produce a second earth!

Realism

While producing a horror movie in real life, some additional expenditures have to be dedicated to the horrifyingly creative and ever-ingenuous death scenes. The acting and effects would have a limit to it. However, in 'God's Miracle', there are no limits! You can kill a person by any means possible! After all, the character would only need to revive after getting killed! After the success of "A Knight's Soul", many movie producers had shifted their projects involving collaborations with 'God's Miracle', putting a large effect onto the society. Jobs like make-up artists, stunt doubles, special effects team and so on lost their jobs! Soon, the democratic country, the people that were mainly effected had joined together to pass a bill to stop or limit any movie production that involved collaboration with 'God's Miracle'. However, their appeal was completely denied. All 14 members of the jury happened to be loyal players of 'God's Miracle'.

To watch a movie in 'God's Miracle' is absolutely stunning. The audience could see 360-degree scenery, which is more '3D' than an actual 3D movie!

It did not stop there! More and more industries had their eyes on this game and many had already transferred over! Some of them were publishers, advertisement companies, music record companies and many more! By then, 'God's Miracle' was no longer just a "game", it had morphed into a super enterprise, giving birth to a whole new world of culture!

That would all happen in just 6 months!

Zhang Yang took another deep breath. The premiere of "A Knight's Soul" will launch at the same time as the game's first update. This update would include the launching of the Professional League as well as the implementation of an improved battle system, and many more in one game-changing patch!

Zhang Yang opened his friend list and went to the tab in which he had categorized all his classmates and acquaintances from school. He found that practically all 37 students were online together. 10pm was still considerably early and was the most active time for all night owls.

"...Argh! I'm only level 19! Tomorrow I'm going to raid Marzerway's Lair!"

"Hey guys! Yesterday, I manage to farm a Green-Copper boots! I'm telling ya! Its damned OP!"

"..."

"Hey! Li Qi just got in! Perfect timing. Ask him to join the Brilliant Star guild, he won't need to worry about not having equipment anymore!"

"Hey hey. I'm only a member of the 3rd party! There are still 20 over elites on the other group!"

"Eh! Guys! Look! Zhang Yang finally logged in! You little bastard! Graduation day was 100 years ago dude! Why are you only online now!"

Li Shang Yuan was the first person who called out to him. Zhang Yang quickly greet him back.

After Zhang Yang replied, he added, “Yo! Ex-class monitor! Did you play ‘God’s Miracle’?”

“Yeah I did. Awesome game. I’m playing together with my work colleague! Hah! I’d just logged off the game not two minutes ago! You could have met me in the game earlier!”

Li Shang Yuan paused a while and recalled something. “That’s right, didn’t you once say that you wanted to be play the game for a living! So... how are you now?”

Zhang Yang snickered. “Well, I’m still alive. So, that a plus for me! Li Shang Yuan, what city are you in now?”

“Tranquil Wind City, you?”

“I’m in White Jade Castle!” Zhang Yang grinned as he answered, “I could use your help for a thing. Could you do me a favour?”

“Sure! Speak your request!” Li Shang Yuan had always been a straight forward man. He had always been the man to walk the talk. No hesitation!

Zhang Yang nodded his head in satisfaction. He had found the right guy for his to carry out his plans.

“I have here an item that is very popular now in the market. But I could not make much in my city alone. I’m asking you to help me to sell some off in your city as well, as well as gather some ingredients!”

“Hoho! Sure, I’ll help you! Just mail them over to me. Oh, what kind of item is that? How do plan to sell them?”

Zhang Yang replied. “The item is [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. It will increase 100 Shadow resistance. You can sell them off in the auction house for 1 gold each!”

“Zhang Yang! My dear lord! That is just too expensive! 1 gold each!? Bro, when I buy some level 20 skill I would only have about 7 to 8 gold left! I can’t even repair my equipment with this sorry amount that I have!” Li

Shang Yuan expressed his doubt.

Zhang Yang only laughed. "It's alright! Just try and sell the item with that price! It's fine if the item doesn't sell But if it does sell well, shall we split the profit 70/30?"

"Haha! This is but minor deal. I'll follow what you say!"

"Come on man! That amount is huge, not something as minor as you think it is!"

"Urgh...fine! In that case, lets not go with 70/30. You could just pay me with what you see fit!"

Right now, Li Shang Yuan could still not see the amount he was about to make.

"Alright then, I'll send it over tomorrow!"

Once Tranquil Wing City was dealt with, Zhang Yang proceeded to find more ex-classmates, at the very least, he needed to find those who were close to him or he could trust. One by one, he asked whether they were playing 'God's Miracle' and which city they are in. After 10 people or so, beside Emerald City, he managed to find "Distributors" for all 6 main cities!

He went around and asked more people but he could not find a single player who was in Emerald City. Zhang Yang scrolled down and check the rest of the student list. Neither of them was close enough for him to bother messaging them individually. He then switched to the public channel and posted. "To all friends that are playing 'God's Miracle', is there anyone who are in Emerald City?"

After a while, there were some replies.

"I'm in the Black Dragon City! Why'd you ask?"

"What's so special about Emerald City?"

"Zhang Yang! What is your current level!? We are now ranking the Leveling King! So far, Li Shang Yuan ranked first with level 21! Tell us yours!"

...

There were many who replied but none of them was about Emerald City! Zhang Yang could not help but feel disappointed. There were so many people in the beginner village, but why has none of them picked Emerald City!? What's wrong with it? Does everyone hate the color green now?

“Uhm...I'm in Emerald City!”

Among the chatter, Zhang Yang spotted a tiny little message. Zhang Yang selected the message and found of the person behind the screen was his university lecturer Yu Li! The same person he will have one night stand with 5 years later!

Yu Li had always been “hidden” but she had suddenly revealed herself!

“Woah woah woah! It's Miss Yu Li!”

“Hi Miss Yu Li!”

“Miss Yu Li! How I'd missed you!”

“Wow! I'd never had thought that even Miss Yu Li would play “God's Miracle’! What is your IGN?”

Only guys would show such excitement! These bunch of horny guys were the one with the hots for this sexy teacher! She could easily be the illegal “drug” for boys!

Chapter 90: Infuriated Humbly Gentleman

The public channel started to get rowdy when Miss Yu Li revealed her existence. Zhang Yang had to message her privately to avoid unnecessary chatter. “Miss Yu, I’d like your help in selling some stuff in Emerald City!”

“Ok. Sure.”

She only replied back after quite some time. She was probably busy replying those nosy bastards from earlier.

“Zhang Yang, have you found a job yet?” She asked.

Would this stint in “God’s Miracle” count as one? Zhang Yang replied. “I’m still getting myself hooked up with the game. I’m still trying to find some method to earn money here!”

“That won’t do! Little Zhang Yang! You’re wasting the 4 years of time in your university! Yet now you’re wasting your time in this game! Is this how you’re repaying your parents?” Once a teacher, always a teacher. Yu Li immediately started to lecture Zhang Yang about life lessons. Zhang Yang wanted to just press the log out button and be done with it, he was in no mood to put himself through this mental assault. However, for the sake of Emerald City, he had to endure this. It took a while, but Yu Li was finally willing to accept the job, but it was not that simple. She would help Zhang Yang to sell those potion under some ridiculous conditions. If the potion sales were bad, Zhang Yang would have to give up on his ridiculous dreams to be a professional gamer and start searching for a real job!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily but couldn’t help feeling thankful for her lecture. Zhang Yang had never been fond to listen to her life lessons but he knew that Yu Li was only being concerned. The future and well-being of her students was her priority. That is how Yu Li is, and Zhang Yang understood that clearly.

It was extremely beneficial for Yu Li to take this job as one of Zhang Yang’s distributor. It was predictable that within the next few days, this

potion will be a complete hit in the market around the globe and its profits would exceed the millions. Since Zhang Yang had agreed to share the profit 9:1 with them; with the prospects being that profitable, Yu Li could depend on this pot of gold to avoid becoming what she would be in the future!

However, things got out of hand when not only Yu Li insisted to reject her share of profit, she had also lectured him on his capitalistic ideals, going against her position as a teacher of the society! She also insisted that Zhang Yang stopped forcing her to accept her share or she would not help him sell the potions altogether!

Zhang Yang obediently accepted her conditions. He believed there could be a way for her to make a fortune, regardless.

...

Zhang Yang lingered for a little while more and went to bed after a good relaxing shower. The next morning, Zhang Yang went out his house to practice his jog-punching, the art of shadowboxing while jogging simultaneously. He logged in at 9am sharp after having his breakfast.

“You stinking piece of shit! You actually dared to cheat me!?”

Zhang Yang logged in and the first thing he saw was Humbly Gentleman’s message. “You f*cking low-life! Just because you achieved a few bloody Achievements, you think you can do whatever you want?! Who do you think you are! I can simply crush your low ranked guild with a flick of my fingers! Give me back the money you robbed me of, and add another 10000 to that for compensation! Or else, you won’t be able to handle what I’m about to bring down on your house!”

Last night, when Humbly Gentleman had received the 100 bottles of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] and paid the staggering 50000 gold coins to Zhang Yang, he quickly gathered a team and successfully raided the Hardcore mode Main Wing of Marzerway’s Nest!

Humbly Gentleman was delighted. He laughed at Zhang Yang’s short sightedness as he was about to send the recording of his successful raid to Sky High and Crimson Rage to humiliate them! But who knew, before he

could send the recording, he had received a news from his spies placed in both rival guilds. Both guilds had successfully raided the Hardcore mode of the dungeon 10 minutes earlier before he did!

Humbly Gentleman was infuriated! He could never believe that both guilds had gotten their hands on the potion recipe and managed to be one step ahead of him! This must be the act of Zhang Yang!

Greedy little fox! He did not mind the price he paid for the potions but Zhang Yang actually sold the potions to his rivals as well! Humbly Gentleman had offered such a high price in the first place to empty Zhang Yang's stock! This was to ensure that his guild be the first to complete their sets of Gray-Silver set equipment! He could have been ready for the level 30 dungeon raid!

But he was played out like a fool! All 3 guilds were raiding the dungeon in the same time! He had spent so much money for some pointless results! Of course he'd be infuriated at the very least! Furthermore, the money for the potion came from his own personal wallet! He could at least request for reimbursement for the potion if he had been the second guild to successfully raided the dungeon! Now that he was the fourth guild to perform the deed, how could he ask for any reimbursement!?

Zhang Yang merely laughed it off. This guy...could he be asking for a battle to set things straight?

"Guild master Humbly Gentleman! Surely 50000 gold coins is nothing but spare change to a rich gentleman like you!"

"You prick! Give me back my money!" He roared. "If you insist on playing this game, I'll get Sky High as well as Crimson Rage to expose your trickery! Do you think you will be able to endure attacks from us 3 big guilds?"

Humbly Gentleman was under the impression that Zhang Yang had simultaneously cheated all 3 guilds. That was why he wanted to get the two other guilds to be involved in this little skirmish. He wanted to inflict an overwhelming, crushing pressure on Zhang Yang! However, if he only knew that he was the only person Zhang Yang had cheated, the expression

on his face could have won “Face of the Year”!

Zhang Yang only shook his head. How could someone as grumpy and ill-tempered as Humbly Gentleman could be the guild master of a future super guild?

“Ehm... If I remembered correctly, I recall that I did not want to sell you the potions in the first place. It was because of your insistent begging that I finally parted with 100 bottles! How could you suddenly push the blame back to me?”

“You...” Humbly Gentleman could not come up with another word. The amount of rage in him was taking his breath away! “Zhan Yu! Are you going to pay me back!?”

“Sky High guild master, there are things that better remain in the dark. Don’t you agree? For example, the case of several hidden Bandits that had ambushed my guild yesterday! I don’t think the gentlemanly guild master of The Dominators would not have planned something like this now would he...”

Humbly Gentleman stunned. How could he have figured it out?

To remain anonymous, Humbly Gentleman had even expelled the Bandits from the guild for their “mission”. He would then recruit them back into the guild once the task was done. Tch! Which cowardly bastard spilled the beans!

“Tch!” His secret exposed, there was no reason for Humbly Gentleman to further involve himself with Zhang Yang anymore. He knew that Zhang Yang would certainly not return his money back. Obviously, it was Zhang Yang’s way of getting back at him! He disconnected his conversation with him abruptly and headed towards the other two guilds to pitch his proposal.

However, what happened next left him even more disappointed. Shy Shaman ended the conversation with his last words being, “F*cking hypocrite!”

Snow Seeker held the conversation as politely as she could but she did

not show any interest in Humbly Gentleman's idea. Humbly Gentleman could not have been in more despair. Lone Desert Smoke was already on the rise and yet The Dominator was still growing from its seedling. Many old members were still playing other games and had yet to join this one. If they were to initiate a guild war between each other with such a late start, there would be no winners in the end!

As a sponsored guild, they could not initiate a fight with other guilds. They could try and oppose them fair and square but not to the point where he would get hurt! If Humbly Gentleman would forcefully start the war with Zhang Yang's guild, he could be fired by the sponsors! Currently, there was nothing he can do but lick his own wounds.

Humbly Gentleman could do nothing but clench his fist. He could only wait until every single member of the original The Dominator gathers together to restore the true power of the guild and take down that Lone Desert Smoke!

...

Zhang Yang retrieve the mails he received yesterday and withdrew a total of 52000 gold coins from yesterday's trades. He then proceeded to withdraw stacks of potion from the storage and sent them to the distributors he assigned yesterday. He also put some up at the auction house and sold them for 1 gold each.

Just when the "gang" logged in, Zhang Yang added all of them into his party and raided the Front Wing and Middle Wing Hardcore mode of Marzerway's Lair.

In the middle of the dungeon run, Zhang Yang had received many friend requests from all his university friends. One by one Zhang Yang accepted the friend request and was bombarded with private messages.

"What the hell! You're that Zhan Yu! Seriously!? I see that you're doing quite well huh! 3 consecutive First Clear Achievements, and the first to kill a field boss! Hmph! I'm starting to think that the hidden named player could be you as well!"

"Zhang Yang! Brother Zhang! I'll join you in the near future! Please carry

me through dungeons for equipment!”

“Zhang Yang! I also want a First Clear Achievement!”

Zhang Yang ignored most of the messages and focused on the dungeon. After only a brief moment, Li Shang Yuan sent a message.

“Zhang Yang! The potion! They’re all sold out! I sold them for 1 gold each and they were all bought off almost instantly! My god! How could people spend so much money on this potion! What can this miracle potion do?!”

Zhang Yang laughed. The only people who could and would buy the potion were people from exploration parties of big guilds, scouting the Hardcore mode of Marzerway’s Lair. Middle-tiered guilds would buy them for the exploration party of Hard mode only. No matter how good the sales were today, it could not be compared when the game reached its maturity stage where the common players would be the prime consumer of this potion!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and replied, “Haha! That’s great news. Let’s try increasing the price to 2 gold coins per bottle. If the potions are sold off at the same speed, try increasing it even more! Let’s see how far can we raise the price to the market’s limit!”

He remembered that in the future, [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] would be sold at a flat rate of 1 gold per bottle. But that would be in the far future where the game had almost reached its full maturity! So far, with the game being recently launched, the set equipment was as important as gold itself! Besides, there were no high-level players to help raid the dungeon for the low-level players, so this potion could still have a high profit margin!

Li Shang Yuan snickered on his side. “Hehe. Bro, you sneaky bastard!”

“Hey! When the demand is high, the prices go up!”

Not long after, Zhao Xiao Song, Zhou Zhi Yuan, and more distributors came in with similar reports. Zhang Yang then repeated his suggestion to hike up the prices. When almost all of his distributors had reported to him, Yu Li had yet to report her situation. She also did not send him any friend requests. He did not know whether or not she was online. Zhang

Yang had sent a friend request over but she had not responded. He thought that she might still be in class and decided to send a mail to her later when he heads back to the city.

After he was done with the dungeon, he went back to the city and retrieve his mail. The potions that he had sold at the auction house were completely sold out. He had put up a total of 5 stacks of potion and had earned himself 100 gold coins.

Zhang Yang then called Fatty Han over and asked him to sell 100 bottle for him at a rate of 7:3 in terms of profit sharing. Zhang Yang wanted to give Fatty Han a 5:5 rate but he knew Fatty Han would never agree with it. He then settled with 7:3 sharing. However, Fatty Han would still not accept it. After he knew that Zhang Yang had 7 other distributors, he forced Zhang Yang to give him a 9:1 sharing and finally agreed to sell it for him.

He predicted that within 2 to 3 days, the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] sales would reach its peak, until more players reach level 30. With levels on their side, most players could survive Marzerway with ease, thus dropping the sales down a little.

Still, the number of players had yet to reach the game history's peak point. 3 years into the future, there would be around 1 billion players registered in the game. Even though the majority of the players would not waste several days of time and effort raiding their way for the first set equipment, a minority would still go for it! That would still grant him huge profits!

However, when the time comes, Zhang Yang would definitely lose his monopoly. His profits would definitely decline. But with such huge number of players, he would still have consistent sales.

Chapter 91: Hot Sales

“Zhang Yang! I’ve sold all the potions you gave me! Out of the 100 stacks you gave me, I tried selling them at different prices. 6 stacks were sold at 1 gold coins. 3 stacks were sold at 2 gold each, 4 stacks were sold at 3 gold coins each, and most of the potions were sold for 4 gold coins each! I manage to sell only a few bottles for 5 gold each but the number was negligible. Looks like the current market would only be willing to buy the potions for 4 gold coins each! Either way, the total profit was 6714 gold! Motherf*cker, the auction house 10% service charge is just shitty as hell! Anyway, I followed your instructions and used 100 gold coins to buy [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flowers]. I’ve taken my part of the profit and have already mailed the rest of the money and ingredients to you!”

“Haha! Zhang Yang! Guess how many potions I managed to sell today? All! All of them I’m telling you! God! I’d never thought that this potion can be so popular! I’d even received a guild invitation from Iron Blood guild officer! They said they would provide me a slot for their exploration party only if I could provide a steady supply of the potion!”

“F*ck! Zhang Yang, everything is on you the next time we meet! That potion is selling like hotcakes! There were so many guild masters messaging me privately, asking for potions in bulk!”

“Zhang Yang...”

Zhang Yang had received the money and ingredient from every distributor he had assigned. For that one night alone, the sales of the potion was as he predicted. Still, the main purchasing customers were all mainly from big and medium sized guilds. Majority of the players did not buy much since most of them were still oblivious about the nature dungeon they were bound to face!

After deducting 100 gold from each city distributor for ingredient’s purchasing, Zhang Yang had calculated that he would have amassed a total of 48000 gold coins. Add that number with the 50000 gold he had obtained that morning, he would have came close to 100000 gold coins!

The current exchange rate was 1 gold coins to 7 dollars, which means his current savings had reached almost 700000 dollars! Even though the 50000 gold coins he earn was an extra bonus, he could earn even more when the majority of the casual players begins raiding Marzerway's Lair.

The first step was a complete success!

However, it was far from his end-term goal of becoming a billionaire! Luckily, he still had a lot more time to work on it as the market was filled with more chances in the future! It all depended on him making the effort to grab the opportunity!

Zhang Yang had a total of 1400 stacks of potions and today, he had sold more than 800 bottles and sent 500 stacks to his distributors, leaving him with very little stock. He had to start making more!

It takes only 1 second to make one bottle of potion. He could make 60 bottles in 1 minute, which meant only 3600 bottles in an hour. That's only 180 stacks! When he levels up his crafting level from Beginner to Amateur, the time to make a potion would be reduced by half! Zhang Yang started making potions at 10pm and made 200 stacks of potions for the remaining distributors to sell. After making potions for another hour, Zhang Yang could no longer endure his fatigue any longer and decided to log out and get some sleep.

On his bed, Zhang Yang thought that if he does not sleep and continued to make more potions for the entire night, he could have crafted more than 4000 stacks of potion in a day. This would raise his profit to the roof! Even though 4000 stacks seems a lot, it was only a total of 80000 bottles of potion, this number would only satisfy White Jade City alone in a time of such a sales boom!

Besides, he could not possibly spend the entire day solely on making potion! He needed to make sure he still had time to grind his level as well!

There was a method to help him solve his problem, and that was to raise his Alchemy to Advanced. When a player's Alchemy skill reaches the Advanced level, he could synthesize higher-leveled items and also able to make two items simultaneously!

When the player's crafting skill reaches Professional tier, he could make 4 items at the same time. Specialists could make 6, a Master could make 8, and the Grandmasters could make 10 items in the same time!

So far, it was impossible to reach Professional-tier since there were no high-leveled item recipes in the market. However, there were Amateur-tiered recipes being sold in the auction house at the moment! Still, there was another problem. The ingredients required to craft any Amateur level recipe item are much more expensive and rare than a Beginner level recipe item. It's extremely arduous to raise 1000 mastery point in order to increase his skill level!

Tomorrow, he would buy himself an Amateur-tiered recipe and focus fully on raising his skill level to Advanced! The clock is ticking, and every single second meant money!

After sleeping through the night, Zhang Yang finally caved in and skipped his morning exercise to saving precious time. He wolfed down his breakfast and logged into the game. At his current level, every second was one bottle of potion and that was worth at least 4 dollars and 28 cents, he could not afford to let that fly!

The moment his character spawned in the city, he quickly ran to the auction house and bought 3 types of Amateur-tiered recipe, retrieved the items at the mailbox, and searched for their ingredients. The 3 recipes were as such - Level 2 Healing Potion, Level 2 Magic Potion, and Level 2 Strength Potion. The ingredients he required were Lily Grass, White Apricot, Vanilla Grass, Love Vine, and Rainbow Orchid.

Zhang Yang search for them one at a time and found out that they were being sold on the auction house but the amount was only a handful, and at a high price too. Zhang Yang wavered for an instance, before steeling himself and emptying the auction house. He went over to the Alchemy Shop and bought a bunch of empty bottles and started to make potions. At a bottle per second, he used up all of the ingredients to make about 200 bottles of potions! He was still lacking about 800 mastery points to reach Advance-tier!

Zhang Yang opened his friend list and only 3 out of 6 of his distributors were online. (Yu Li was not in the list)

He quickly sent each of them a private message asking them to buy the 5 ingredients that he needed and to mail them back to him as soon as possible.

While they were busy searching for ingredients, he did not waste any time and started to make [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. After 40 minutes, a mail notification rang and Zhang Yang quickly retrieved the mail, collecting all ingredients and making more potions to increase his mastery. Half an hour later, he had again used all the ingredient and made about 700 bottles of potion! He was only a few steps away from becoming an Advance-tier in Alchemy!

Another distributor logged in in the nick of time and Zhang Yang quickly repeated his request. After an hour so or, he managed to raise his mastery and became an Advanced-level Alchemist!

Soon after, Drizzler and the “gang” logged in. Zhang Yang immediately called out to them and asked them to raid dungeons with Ironhills as the tanker. He was too busy making potions to join them!

There was a problem. Everyone was quite used to having Zhang Yang as their main tank, and so, they encountered some problems with Ironhills tanking. He’d sometimes loses aggro and the worst case scenarios included total party wipeouts. Little Snow made the mistake assuming that Ironhills was as good as Zhang Yang, not healing Ironhills as often as needed. It appears that Ironhills wasn’t made of iron and crumbled to the ground repeatedly.

Everyone did not have the guts to criticize Ironhills, but vented their frustrations on Zhang Yang instead. After fighting as hard as they can, they had only managed to successfully raid two dungeons by 1pm. Everyone was already worn out from the strenuous overexertion.

After everyone took a breather and Fatty Han had his lunch, Zhang Yang quickly tugged the latter aside.. First, he gave him 100 stacks of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to sell them off. Next, he asked him to help him earn

combat experience. Zhang Yang would only need to be in the same field making potions, while Fatty Han would kill monsters, sharing the experience points with him.

Fatty Han did no mind to help him at all! It was not because he was earning money from Zhang Yang. Even if there was no benefit in helping Zhang Yang, Fatty Han would still help him out as a brother-in-arms!

As the day ended, Zhang Yang had reached level 25 with 22% experience point, approximately 30% less than he would normally gain by himself.

Although he was losing out in terms of leveling, the same could not be said fortune-wise. Despite his diminished speed of leveling, Zhang Yang managed to make 4500 stacks of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] when the time was already 11pm. He distributed them to his distributor evenly soon after.

Ever since the sales of yesterday's potion, the market demand had increased significantly. All 8 main cities had bought a total of 250 stacks today. Zhang Yang predicted that within the next 3 days, mainstream players would have surpassed the level 20 bracket and the demand for [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] would be bound to increase even moreso!

The Main Wing dungeon boss would respawn soon. However, on that particular day, Frost Night would be busy with her day job, as are most of the casual guild members. Zhang Yang would have to postpone the dungeon raid and have it later on that night.

When the "gang" finally knew that Zhang Yang had been busy making potions for the past few day, they voluntarily offered their help to raise his level while he made more potions. They first went to Cave of Bones and then massacred the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands. Zhang Yang would only need to help out when they were fighting the boss. At other times, he could fully concentrate on making potions while the party ran around killing monsters for him.

This time, they were lucky enough to obtain a Shape Shifting hat. The little brat claimed the item for herself as she insisted on playing with it. The moment she got hold of it, she changed into a tiger, and then a

scorpion, scurrying around happily.

At the end of the day, Zhang Yang's experience bar rose from 22% to 65%. It was still slower than his own speed, but adequate enough. When night time fell, Zhang Yang gathered 20 players and raided Marzerway's Lair in Hardcore Mode. After suffering defeat twice in a row, Zhang Yang finally used a magic scroll to boost the party's attack power! Only then, did the party successfully take down Marzerway! However, Zhang Yang strongly believed that after the third attempt at farming equipment, the ranged attackers would have an attack upgrade, rendering the scroll unnecessary!

This time, Marzerway was kind enough to warriors! He dropped two warrior equipment - boots and helmet. Since Drizzler had the boots, she only took the helmet. Only one more piece was needed to trigger the first set effect!

[Brave Boots] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +24

Strength: +12

Dexterity: +4

Level requirement: 20

Bravery effect (1/5):

3 set effect: Every time you received an attack, there will be a 50% chance to heal 100 HP.

5 set effect: All damage output increases by 10%

After Zhang Yang equipped the boots, he quickly used the "Indian God Oil" on the boots and increased its movement speed by 5%.

At the end of the day, most of the casual player had reached level 20 and were starting to make their way to the Front Wing and Middle Wing of Marzerway's Lair. The scramble for the first set equipment was just beginning! The demand for [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was rising up

like Jack's beanstalk, beyond the clouds, beyond Zhang Yang's own production capacity! Zhang Yang hated himself for not being able to learn the "Shadow Clone Ninjitsu". There was no way for him alone to create a supply for this overwhelming demand!

On the other hand, the ingredients for the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was revealed to the public, causing the respective ingredients to rise in value. Before the uprising, the price of each stack was only 20 silver. Now it had risen to 10 gold coins per stack! However, these two herbs were considered to be extremely common. There were too many of them all around the market. Zhang Yang could lower the price by lowering the demand. His manipulation eventually dropped the prices down to 3 gold coins a stack.

The players who earned their gold coins through herbs made quite a substantial amount of profit. But their earnings would not even come close to Zhang Yang's. If they were make comparisons, Zhang Yang earning would be like the economy of the entirety of China while those herb sellers would be akin to roadside peddlers.

The herbs Fatty Han had stockpiled long ago was finally making use of itself! He had spent a small fortune buying those herbs. However, with the movement of prices in consideration, it was well worth the investment.

Zhang Yang worked on overdrive and managed squeeze out 5000 stacks of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. With the rising cost of production, Zhang Yang was still capable of making around 300000 gold coins a day, which was equivalent of 2 million dollars!

This period of gold falling from the skies would probably last for another 20 days. 20 days would be enough for Zhang Yang to become a multibillionaire!

Chapter 92: Multimillionaire

They arrived at the Cave of Bones in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands three days later.

“Hey, Idiot Zhan Yu, share the profits with me!” Little Snow put both her hands on her waist, revealing more of her bosoms. Drizzler calmed her down immediately.

“Little Snow, please be a gentlewoman! Be a gentlewoman!”

While making the medicine, Zhang Yang looked up and had a glance of her “assets”. In his mind, he had a thought that time is like a woman’s cleavage; it will appear once squeezed! We against the time, so we have to hurry. We’re going to need to squeeze out more like Little Snow’s cleavage to have enough!

Little Snow caught Zhang Yang looking, and she chuckled while saying, “Is it that nice to look at?”

“Yeah... perfectly rounded, crystal clear and very attractive!” Zhang Yang replied with compliments.

“Pervert!” Drizzler despised Zhang Yang for saying such things, but she enviously gazed at Little Snow’s bosoms too.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “I was talking about her eyes!”

“Hey, idiot! Don’t try to change the topic! Hurry up and share the profits with me! I looted that Alchemy recipe; the ‘Great Lucky Hands’!”

Little Snow and Drizzler knew that the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was massively sold in the market these few days were the ones made by Zhang Yang. Being a money grubber and having recalled that she gave the recipe to him, Little Snow felt a deep sense of grief.

“Alright, here’s a reward from me, then!” Zhang Yang traded 54 silver coins to her.

“Damn you, Zhan Yu! Are you trying to challenge me?!” Little Snow hummed. She scammed him of 54 gold coins before; what a stingy guy!

“To be honest, Zhan Yu really picked up a goldmine this time!” Hundred Shots smiled broadly. From his expression, he showed how happy he was for Zhang Yang without any sense of jealousy in mind.

Drizzler could not help but to ask, “Noob tank, how much gold coins have you actually earned?”

Zhang Yang did not want to hide from them and gave his honest answer. “It wasn’t selling well for the past few days, but it started selling out two days ago and after deducting the profit sharing and commissions, I could earn 300,000 gold coins in a day!” With the majority of normal players rushing to Level 20, Zhang Yang’s asset greatly rose to 6 million in just these three days.

“According to my calculations, before most players could even achieve Level 30, this idiot here could earn nearly 40 million!” Little Snow was quite shocked as it was not a small amount for her; even more so having earned it within a month!

At this point, even Fatty Han could not help to speak out despite being quite the quiet one in front of a crowd, “Lovely Little Snow, why don’t you follow our Little Yang and be the wife of a multimillionaire?”

But Fatty Han earned some from it as well. With Zhang Yang having seven “distributor” friends and Fatty being his best friend, how could Zhang Yang not share the profit with him? Half of the overall amount of medicine were sold in White Jade Castle and the other half in the other seven main cities, and they shared 10 percent of the profit. Fatty earned the most as he had a net profit of nearly 50,000 gold coins within these three days, equaling to 300,000 to 400,000 dollars!

“Tch!” Drizzler immediately pursed her lips with utter disdain. “40 million is just a small amount. My cousin’s assets are-”

“Drizzler!” Little Snow chided loudly before Drilzler continued talking loudly.

Though they did not get to know how much her assets were worth, they could guess from Drizzler’s tone that it would definitely be more than 40 million; far more than 40 million!

Zhang Yang's curiosity increased and wondered, didn't I meet another person like Lin Yu with hundreds of millions worth of assets, being a daughter of a rich family as well?

"Idiot Zhan Yu, the profit sharing is not necessary now but you have to treat me a meal!" Little Snow was still unwilling to forgive him.

"Good! Treat us a meal!" Drizzler's eyes shone.

Zhang Yang was left helpless. These cousins could be filthy rich, but they're still trying to swindle money out of me? Aren't these money-grubbers being a little too stingy?

"Fine, where shall we eat?" Zhang Yang just simply promised them. Even though the money was important, he realized that adequate relaxation was necessary, not to overwork himself. There would definitely be more business opportunities in 'God's Miracle' in the future.

"Blue Sky Pub!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "Pub?"

"Why? What's the problem with that place?" Little Snow's beautiful eyes widened.

"Nothing. I just never thought you ladies would like going to pubs!"

"Hehe!" Drizzler smiled and interrupted. "Actually, I'm the one who wants to witness a pub! But we heard that a pub is not safe at times, so we want you, the strong young man, to bring us there!"

"Aren't you afraid that I could be a bad guy?"

"After a few days of observation, Little Snow and I decided that you're reliable, and not despicable and rotten to the core like some Fatty!" Drizzler blurted out, completely disregarding if Fatty was even there or not.

Fatty Han suddenly cried out, throwing himself to Zhang Yang's leg and said, "Little Yang, you're the one who led me astray! When we were four years old, you brought me into those female bathing rooms and my boner was as hard as a rock looking at those aunties! My God!"

Hundred Shots shot his arrow aside, laughed maniacally and said, “Fatty, I never thought that you’d have such a tragic life experience!”

“Fatty Shit, I warn you! You’re not allowed to talk dirty in front of Drizzler anymore!” Little Snow was very serious about this.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “Children nowadays have been corrupted by bad examples on the internet even before we do. What things are there that they do not understand?”

“Hmph, he’s still not allowed to talk dirty!” Little Snow said arrogantly.

Drizzler stood behind Little Snow and responded, “Yes, that’s right and you guys should not pollute a clean and pure soul!”

“Hey, I’ve been feeling that something’s not right here!” Zhang Yang suddenly said.

“Is there something not right?”

“How many of us are here actually?”

“Five!”

“Wrong, it’s six!”

Zhang Yang and the four of them looked at the sixth person simultaneously; Frost Night. This cool woman kept her mouth shut, being stern and not bothered about their talking or joking around. However, she was not distrusted by them and cruelly killed the monsters which then scattered to pieces.

“Noob tank. She’s really not an NPC?” Drizzler gazed in awe at Frost Night’s back, because she herself could die if she did not speak for a long time!

“No, she’s not, and she’s just a little cool, okay?”

“Tch, she still looks like an NPC, regardless. Other than that, she could be a robot! Beep boop. I am robot No. 6870. Requesting orders.” Drizzler imitated the tone of a robot and spoke word for word.

Zhang Yang laughed, turned around and said, “Robot No. 68\0, come

massage your master's back!"

"Go to hell!"

"By the way, what time are we going to the pub?"

"We'll go after killing Marzerway!"

"Too bad I can't join since I can't come over from Yanjing!" Hundred Shots regrettably said.

Fatty Han tapped on Hundred Shots' shoulder, "Haha! Hundred Shots, you already have a wife and son and you still want to court a lonely young woman in a pub? Harmony is important!"

In the midst of talking and laughing, they carried forward the fight. Zhang Yang continued to make the medicine while the rest were left to kill the monsters. He would only stop making medicine if he had to perform his role as a tank when facing a boss. They were fortunate enough after successfully after defeating all four stages of bosses to get a [Transform Hat] and a scroll!

[Magic Scroll: Weakness (Level 1)]

Use: Use [Weakness (Level 1)] on target, causing the target's damage and healing effects to be reduced by 10% and lasts for 60 seconds. This effect cannot be stacked together with any other similar type of effects. The bigger the gap between your level and target's level, the higher the failure rate of this magic effect.

Level Requirement: 20

This is a good item! Zhang Yang praised the item in his heart and kept it into his inventory.

After killing Shurian, the team looted a [Chaos Gem] and Zhang Yang successfully obtained it with 99 points from the dice roll. After using the gem, his inventory space was extended by 50 slots, slightly relieving his worry for inventory spaces.

'Server announcement: Sword and Fire Mercenary successfully broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway's Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode)

Clearance. This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking Board (China Server) and please congratulate them!’

‘Server announcement: Player Dominating Blade (Party Leader) broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway’s Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode) Clearance. Obtained 10 gold coins, 1 piece of [Level 2 Gemstone] and 250 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded from the system reward!’

‘Server announcement: Player 44 Bandit (Party Member) broke the new ranking...’

At that moment, the world channel was once again filled nonstop with the server announcement’s red texts!

Drizzler stuck her tongue out and said, “Sword and Fire Mercenary, they’re so powerful!”

Hundred Shots looked to Zhang Yang, “Their result was 17 minutes and 34 seconds! What do you think about their speed?”

Zhang Yang gently frowned. The duration set by the system for the Fastest Hardcore Mode Clearance was 220 minutes. Even if the “Trash” mercenaries shortened the duration record by 2 minutes, under the limited situations, it was still commendable if anyone could take it down even a second further!

They were indeed the famous team in the previous life! They almost took up all the 5-man and 10-man dungeons’ First Clear Achievement. If it were not for having insufficient manpower, they would have taken up the 20-man and 50-man dungeons’ First Clear Achievement as well! In this life, Zhang Yang foresaw this predicament and grabbed all the current First Clear Achievement for the dungeons, which led the elite team to begin raiding the dungeons for the Fastest Clear Achievement!

“It’s still okay!” Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “If we’ve prepared sufficiently and adjusted our class’ positions wisely, I bet we can make it under 15 minutes!”

‘Server announcement: Sword and Fire Mercenary successfully broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode) Clearance. This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking Board (China Server) and please congratulate them!’

‘Server announcement: Player Floating Up (Party Leader) broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode) Clearance. Obtained 10 Gold Coins, 1 piece of [Level 2 Gemstone] and 250 Reputation points across all races in the league are awarded from the system reward!’

‘...’

In another few minutes, the world channel began to fill up once again with the server announcement’s red texts!

“Now they’re the opponents!” Hundred Shots gasped in shock.

Zhang Yang frowned once more. Lone Desert Smoke was definitely stronger than Sword and Fire Mercenary in terms of capability for the 5-man team, but they had ten members who were able to fight, and Lone Desert Smoke could not be stronger than them in terms of teamwork strength! Aside from that, Zhang Yang only had six members including Frost Night and still lacked four more members that were able to fight!

Another two Level 30 dungeons were 10-man dungeons and the current situations was against their odds! Besides, the bosses in those dungeons were different from Marzerway, not being able to be killed by any particular items or medicines only and the players would need to kill the boss “fairly”!

The competitive pressure suddenly grew!

Chapter 93: The Pub

“Guild Master, the people of Sword and Fire Mercenary just filled a screen of red texts in the Capital. They wanted to challenge you to their Fastest Hardcore Clear Ranking and gloat at us!” Someone spoke out in the guild channel. With everyone talking at the same time, it was hard to get the content of the message. The person then sent a private message to Zhang Yang and repeated what they said.

Zhang Yang delivered the message to his party members and it sparked anger in all of them.

“What the hell! They think they’re so strong for breaking the new ranking? They’re just following our steps!” Fatty Han spoke angrily.

“Hey, noob tank! This is intolerable. We have to break the new ranking and show it to them!” Drizzler chipped in as well.

“Okay! After killing Marzerway and looting some equipment set, I’ll study the strategy tonight and we’ll break the new ranking tomorrow morning!”

The 20-man Main Wing dungeon raid started at 7:00pm sharp. With the party members’ equipment and their skillful fighting style, they successfully killed Marzerway without using their magic scrolls and looted two Warrior equipment set along with a two-handed weapon.

Both of the Warrior equipment set were chest plates that could only be used by Zhang Yang and Drizzler. Aside from that, Drizzler also owned a two-handed weapon and she could finally challenge up to Zhang Yang’s damage.

[Brave Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +48

Strength: +24

Dexterity: +8

Level Requirement: 20

Brave Set Equipment (2/5)

[Hammer of the Fallen Knight] (Gray-Silver, Two-handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 343-405

Attack Interval: 3.6 seconds

DPS: 104

Equipment: Each attack has a 5% chance to make the target dizzy for 1 second.

Level Requirement: 20

After clearing the Hardcore Mode, Zhang Yang did not continue with Marzerway but told Ironhill to train the guild members that can fight by leading them into a dungeon raid.

Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Drizzler and Little Snow then disconnected from the game and met up at Blue Sky Pub as promised.

Zhang Yang was waiting at the residential area's entrance for a while when he saw Fatty Han coming over. They tried to grab a taxi but most drivers dared not to stop their car after seeing Fatty Han's body size in fear of him damaging their cars.

Fatty Han got upset and yelled loudly, even showing his middle finger to those that drove away.

Finally, after ten taxis later, a kind taxi driver appeared and was willing to pick them up.

"Fatty, you should lose some weight!" Zhang Yang placed the back of his palm onto his forehead and sighed with relief.

Fatty Han refused without thinking twice. "How can I lose weight? This is my signature! Besides, after losing weight, how can you still address me as Fatty? It'll be so awkward!"

"Fine, but if you still continue to gain weight, which girl will dare to be your girlfriend?"

Fatty Han's face turned gloomy. It was actually alright to be a little fat, but it was really rare to see someone his size!

Suzhou city was not too big, and so long there was no traffic jams, they could arrive at any corner of the city in just 20 minutes. They soon reached Blue Sky Pub's entrance after.

They paid the taxi fare and then walked into the pub. Zhang Yang phoned up Drizzler and Little Snow using his cellphone. Drizzler gave him her number in case they could not recognize each other but warned him not to let Fatty Han have her number. How could he do that, when Fatty Han already grabbed his cellphone and recorded the number when they were already in the taxi?

The call got through but they informed that they would be coming out a while later as they were still picking clothes.

The guys went on to have a seat first and ordered beer.

After a while, a pretty girl with sexy long legs came over with the beers. "Hey, handsome guy. First time here? I don't think I've seen you before!" Dressed in a miniskirt, black silk stockings, high heels and a sleeveless garment, she revealed her plump bosom and her flattened, fat-free belly. Not perfect, but her beauty was pretty above average.

Fatty Han immediately went into his "wolf mode", drooling and staring at her legs.

"Hehe, it is our first time here!" Zhang Yang nodded his head and acted natural to avoid any awkwardness. It really was his first time here, but in his previous life, he often visited the pub before he settled down on his feelings. Besides, many lonely young women and urban white-collared ladies were swooning over him for his sturdy, muscular physique and handsome look. It was safe to say he had no stage fright at all at this point.

The gorgeous waitress served Zhang Yang with a sweet smile, then twisted her curves and plump booty and walked back to the bar.

"Little Yang, you have all the luck to be adored by a pretty girl! She's

definitely attracted to you! As long as you wanted to, you could definitely 'have fun' tonight!" Fatty Han was really envious.

Zhang Yang laughed. "No! Fatty, aren't you falling in love with Liu Jing?"

"Damn it, it was a long time ago! I've already broken up with that money-minded lady long time ago! Hehe, however, she was an expert at giving head and I've been yearning for it for quite some time!" Fatty Han spoke with a look of reminiscing the past.

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang could not help it and laughed even louder. "I sympathize her for searching for such a small bug under a pile of fats. Her vision was definitely 20-20!"

"F*ck off!"

After a breath of fragrance swung over, the long-legged waitress came over again and walked over to their table side. She quietly delivered him a small note and used her plump booty to gently rub Zhang Yang's arm and she twisted away once more.

"Wow, holy shit!" Fatty Han immediately grabbed the small note and read, "'I'm off work at 11:00pm, wait for me!' Damn, Little Yang, I curse you have a rapid cum and can't get it up after!"

Zhang Yang could only laugh again. "Fatty Shit, you're jealous of me!"

"Damn, it's the first time I realized you have the potential to be a gigolo! Fine, I'll be your manager and I'll get you some rich women as your customers!" Fatty Han is pretty evil!

They finished the beers between jokes but Drizzler and Little Snow still have not shown up yet. Zhang Yang rang them up again and they were finally heading over.

"Let me go!"

A light yell came from behind them, so Zhang Yang and Fatty Han turned around and saw the long-legged waitress' wrist being clutched by a frivolously behaved young man at the next table accompanied by three other young men with tattoos all over their body.

“B*tch, you think you could just walk away after splashing beer on our Brother Hair?” A young man sat cross-legged, smoking cigarette in his mouth and his eyes were staring at the waitress’ assets.

The young man that was clutching on her wrist suddenly reached out his other hand and slapped her behind which made a loud, crisp sound. He laughed evilly and said, “What are you pretending for? I’m touching your ass, what can you do about it? If you’re daring enough, splash beer on me again! You look like a b*tch, and you still want to pretend to be innocent? Believe it or not, I’ll rape you here and now!”

“Hahaha!” The four men laughed coldly and one of them said, “Brother Hair, how does it feel?”

“Tender and elastic. It feels awesome!” Brother Hair, still holding her wrist placed his hand that he used to slap at his nose to sniff said, “It’s still fragrant! Damn, it even has a lewd smell!”

“Hahaha!”

The waitress was anxious and splashed beer on him when he was harassing her. However, she knew she could not afford to offend them, so she had to endure the humiliation and humbly asked, “Brother Hair, you’re an open-minded person. Please forgive me!”

“Fine!” Brother Hair waved his hand and a young man immediately delivered a glass of liquor to him. He gave it to her and said, “Finish up this glass of liquor and I’ll forgive you!”

The waitress was powerless. She held up the liquor and slightly hesitated before drinking it. Facing upward, she drank the entire glass; liquor passing through her throat and causing her to choke and cough nonstop! She turned the cup upside down and said, “Brother Hair, satisfied now?”

“Haha!” Brother Hair pulled her closer forcefully, and not being able to stand straight anymore, she fell into his embrace. She wanted to struggle but her limbs had no more strength. She wanted to yell, but she could not make a single sound! She was entering a nightmare, having only to see and hear but she could not talk or move like a puppet.

There must be something wrong with that glass of liquor, she thought. Since she served the liquor to them, they must have spiked it with some drug before serving her glass!

As she thought about what the four young men were about to do to her, her heart felt hurt as she could not even more not speak. She could only feebly turn her eyes elsewhere.

“Now, now, sister, you should not drink so much liquor as you can’t hold your alcohol! Look at you, you’re so drunk now!” Brother Hair hugged her, pretending to be caring and loudly said, “Let’s go home!”

The four of them hugged and supported the waitress with their hands and walked out of the pub. They acted natural to avoid suspicion as it was normal for people to be drunk in a pub.

As soon as they got out, they held the long-legged waitress into a dark alley.

“Brother Hair, are we not going back?”

“Let’s have fun first. I can’t wait anymore, I want to blow my load first!”

“Brother Hair, this lady’s shape is fine. Long legs, plump bosom and a curvy ass. It’ll definitely feel good to have sex with her!”

“What are you worried about? After me, everyone gets a chance to try!”

The four of them went into the dark alley and put the waitress on a trash can and tore off her clothes.

“Oh, if everyone gets a chance, then both of us should have joined you guys!”

A mocking tone came from behind them and the four of them were shocked.

Brother Hair turned around immediately, and under the dim street light he saw a huge fat guy standing there with his hands crossed at his chest. He also vaguely saw a stout shadow standing behind the huge body.

Just the two of them? Brother Hair and his people were less worried having only saw the two of them. One of the young men walked towards

them and said, “You could live longer if you don’t butt your nose into other people’s business. You better get the hell out of here!”

The huge fat guy was Han Guang. He grinned and could roughly see the agitated eyes of the beautiful waitress through the group. “When I was still a gangster, you guys were still playing with the dirt in the playground! It’s been a long time since I’ve last done street fighting. How about this, I break a leg of each one of you and make it an exercise for my own bones!”

Chapter 94: Two Ladies' Arrival

“Shit, the fatty is insulting us!” A young man took out a long iron bar from his back and started to act like a hero, and he charged towards Fatty Han’s direction. “I’m going to kill you!”

Fatty Han lightly stepped aside and the iron bar struck his arm. He grinned as if the iron did not hit him at all! As Fatty Han mentioned before, due to the fats in his entire body, he could not feel any pain in fights!

The young man was left helpless and stunned. Fatty Han lifted his foot and stepped on the young man’s foot. “AH!” He suddenly uttered a painful cry, dropping the iron bar onto the floor. He began rolling around on the ground with both his hands hugging his foot. It could be broken as it was obviously bent!

The other three young men panicked and were frightened when they saw Fatty Han’s fierce and violent side. Brother Hair pretended to be courageous and said, “You... we’re the gang under Brother Ma. Do you dare offend Brother Ma?”

“Damn you, be it Brother Ma, or Brother Cow, I’ll beat anyone as soon as I see any of you!” Fatty Han charged at them like a huge bulldozer, rapidly rolling in and crushing three of them forcefully, easily breaking another three more feet!

All of a sudden, the four men in the alley were hugging their injured feet, wailing in sorrow with tears flowing from their eyes.

“Look at you guys, so useless!” Fatty Han’s face showed disappointment. “In my years, I broke two of my ribs and still continued fighting with the people. It’s only a small matter if your leg broke!”

Zhang Yang then spoke, Fatty, go get a taxi. Find a hotel room and settle this lady down first!”

Fatty Han nodded his head, carried the long-legged waitress and said, “Don’t worry, I’m a good guy! I’ll bring you to a hotel room and I’ll wait for

you to wake up from the drug effect first!”

“Haha! Usually it’s the girl that decides whether you’re good or not but you actually gave yourself the ‘good guy’ title. Yeah, that’s really unusual!” Zhang Yang smiled and said.

“Scram!”

Fatty Han did not delay any more time and took the taxi with the waitress and left the pub. Zhang Yang laughed and went back in.

He intentionally let him personally appear and settle the hooligans to let the lady have a sense of gratitude towards Fatty Han! He knew if Fatty Han liked her as well, they were best buddies and he was thinking for the sake of Fatty Han’s happiness.

If Fatty Han had any great ability, Zhang Yang thought that he could “roll” on the bed with her tonight! But having Zhang Yang imagining Fatty Han’s super plump body covering the whole bed, he could not help but to spit and say, “Oh my god, so bad luck!”

“Beep! Beep! Beep!”

His cell phone was ringing and he then picked it up. Drizzler and Little Snow finally arrived and were waiting for him at the entrance of the pub.

When Zhang Yang stepped out, he saw two pretty girls standing at the entrance! One of them was mature and curvaceous, and she looked to be about 23 or 24 years of age. Dressed in her black skirt that accentuated her slender legs, curved booty, and slim waist that matched her 36E bosom, she was even more soul-stirring!

Her perfect and refined facial features that had beautiful eyes and lips that were flame-red were very sexy!

The little pretty girl looked like she was 16 or 17 years old with her innocent face. Though she was pretty, her skinny body did not really make her special as compared with the matured one.

They held beautiful and luxury handbags; Gucci and Chanel respectively.

Zhang Yang walked near to them and heard the little one talking on the phone, “Noob tank, are you out yet? Are you out yet? Are you out yet?” She asked over and over again and laughed nonstop.

Zhang Yang to her back but kept his mouth shut and stood there with his hands crossed. The mature girl noticed and glanced at him but she never thought that he was the “noob tank” that they were searching for, so she just smiled and not nudge the little girl about it.

“Noob tank, noob tank, noob tank!” The girl started to sing while she was calling him.

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed. He placed his cellphone to her ear.

The little girl was stunned at first and pursed her lips when she realized that something was not right. 10 seconds later, she jumped, turned around and stared at Zhang Yang.

“Eh, you’re the noob tank?” She scanned Zhang Yang from top to bottom.

Zhang Yang sighed and said with a ridiculing tone, “You little brat, it’s not easy to raise you! You actually did not get abducted!”

“Idiot tank!” The pretty little girl got arrogant and said, “Let me re-introduce, my name is Wei Yan Er, and this me my cousin, Han Yin Xue!”

It was no longer a secret that her name was Han Yin Xue, because whenever the little bray was angry with Little Snow, she would grit her teeth and shout her actual name. Even though Zhang Yang had long ago guessed that Han Yin Xue might her appearance to appear somewhat ordinary, he never thought that she could be so gorgeous when meeting in person!

“My name is Zhang Yang, also called Zhan Yu, and noob tank!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“Let’s go! Let’s go in! I want to have a look at the pub!” Wei Yan Er was cheerful and full of energy. She pulled Han Yin Xue’s sleeve and walked in.

“You little brat, don’t pull me so hard! What if the sleeve tore off?” Han Yin Xue immediately exclaimed.

“Hehe!”

The three of them walked in, and the two girls, especially Han Yin Xue, attracted all the men’s attention regardless of whether they took a quick look or just ogled at her.

Han Yin Xue ordered a martini, Zhang Yang got a beer and Wei Yan Er was just drinking a Sprite with a straw. She wanted to actually try alcohol but Han Yin Xue stopped her so she got upset and ignored them both.

While Zhang Yang and Han Yin Xue chatted for a while, a man could not bear with her prettiness that he came over and tried to strike up a conversation with her. She generally refused him by saying Zhang Yang was her boyfriend. Another guy came over and tried to chat up Wei Yan Er this time, but she was cunning as well. She used Zhang Yang as her “boyfriend” to deter them. The rejected men glared at Zhang Yang with envious and jealous eyes. In their mind, they were probably thinking, brother, you’re too greedy. You already have such an enticing girl and you still want to have the little one? You’re so voracious to have two girls at the same time! I curse for you not to be able to get it up!

“You girls are so cruel! I bet if I walk out of the pub now, I’m going to be pounced on by the other men!” Zhang Yang laughed. “Did you two do it on purpose?”

Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er laughed like a blossomed flower.

After their conversation, Zhang Yang knew that Han Yin Xue was a top student that just came back from UK, studying Business Management and she was currently unemployed, resting at home. Wei Yan Er was just an ordinary high school girl on her summer holiday so she came over to stay at her cousin’s place.

As they talked, joked, and laughed, more single people visited the pub to spend their lonely night at about 10:00pm, and the atmosphere of became more uncertain. Han Yin Xue was worried that Wei Yan Er would follow the bad examples so she insisted on them heading home.

But Han Yin Xue could not hold her liquor at all, and her footsteps were not steady anymore. When Zhang Yang saw that she was almost drunk and her insisting on driving home, he stopped them in case they would get into an accident because of this!

It was no wonder Zhang Yang never heard of these two girls' name in his previous life. Perhaps this pitiful little brat died due to her cousin!

"Little brat, do you know how to drive?" Zhang Yang asked.

Wei Yan Er shook her head. "My dad didn't allow me to learn driving yet!"

Zhang Yang sighed, and said, "Hey, drunk girl, go and sit at the back. I'll send both of you home!"

Han Yin Xue's cheeks turned red, making her even more attractive than before. She squinted her lovely eyes, laughed foolishly and said, "Stupid guy, are you trying to get a chance to go to our house? Yan Er, get the pepper spray and use it on him!"

"Yes!" Wei Yan Er was always spirited when it came to monkey businesses like this. She immediately took out the pepper spray from Han Yin Xue's handbag and triumphantly waving it in front of Zhang Yang.

Looking at her, he said, "Little brat, think carefully. If she drives while being drunk, you girls might hit into an electric pole! It's okay if a girl dies on the spot, but what if she hit her face and became disfigured like this..." Zhang Yang pulled his cheek and made a contorted expression. Shocked, Wei Yan Er suddenly threw the pepper spray on the ground.

"Cousin, I command you to sit at the back immediately!"

"Hey, sunny side-up, you're brave now, huh? How can you talk to me like that?" Han Yin Xue was inebriated as she reached out to pinch Wei Yan Er's face.

"Han Yin Xue, go to hell! You're such a cow, how can you be so heavy?!" Wei Yan Er tried to move Han Yin Xue directly into the back seat but it was exhausting to do so.

Zhang Yang shook his head and opened the car's back door. "Let me move her to the back!" He directly pulled Han Yin Xue from the driver's seat to the back and closed the door.

He then drove the car skillfully and headed for their home.

In his previous life, he bought a luxury car that was the same brand as the one he was now driving and it was his precious. After so many days of not driving, made him miss his car even more.

Zhang Yang stopped under a residential building that was 30 stories high. Wei Yan Er helped Han Yin Xue out from the car and into the residential building.

"Yan Er, let's scare people with some ghost make up!" Han Yin Xue laughed foolishly.

Wei Yan Er's eyes radiated. "Let's go! Let's change our clothes first!"

Zhang Yang thought of leaving as soon as he sent them home, but hearing what they just said made him think that they would be coming out once again to be up to no good. Zhang Yang merely found a spot and stood there to see what they would do.

After a while, the two girls were dressed in white, head with disheveled hair and ghostly make-up on their face. Form the pretty face they once had, it was now pale white.

They laughed foolishly and guarded the entrance of the elevator.

"Ding!"

As the elevator door opened, a rich lady in her 30's walked out, holding her Chihuahua. The two fluttered to her side, slowly turning their head and looked at her with their eyeballs rolled upward, only showing the whites of their eyes!

"Oh my god!" The rich lady was terrified. Shocked, she threw her pet dog upwards and ran back into the elevator, frantically pressing the button. "Pa! Pa! Pa!"

The Chihuahua somersaulted a couple of times before landing and ran

back into the elevator as well, barking at the girls. “Bark! Bark! Bark!”

Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er were laughing uncontrollably.

But Zhang Yang was bored and started counting the number of people that were surprised by these two. Within half an hour, there were already eleven people frightened back into the elevator!

Chapter 95: Not Afraid of Ghosts

Zhang Yang had just about enough. Just when he finally decided to leave, the door of the elevator opened and the two troublemakers hopped out again.

A policewoman walked out of the door, glanced at them, and moved on as if nothing had happened.

The two girls did not like her reaction, and they tried to move in closer to her. Wei Yan Er was dressed as a zombie, and she reached both her hands out to grab the policewoman's shoulder.

Swoosh! Pak!

The policewoman swiftly turned around and caught her hand before Wei Yan Er could make any contact. She locked her shoulder and flipped her off her feet, causing her to fall onto the ground hard.

"Argh..." The little brat was tears. Her hand rubbed her painful butt. Her cute and happy little expression was now replaced with a painful one. Tears flowed down her cheek, removing a part of her thick make-up.

"Hmph! Dressing like a ghost in the middle of the night! You're disturbing the residents who live here!" The policewomen scoffed coldly and took out a pair of handcuffs. "I'll just bring you to the police station!"

"Hold up there!" Zhang Yang quickly stepped in. "Excuse me, officer! They're just playing around. They don't mean any harm to anyone! Try to reason with them! Maybe they just went slightly overboard!"

"Hmph! She was about to assault a poli-" She raised her head. Zhang Yang and her finally met face to face. She was completely stunned when they saw each other.

He was the man that had defeated me in the alley! Not to mention, he... he... grabbed...

She was the policewoman that Zhang Yang met when he encountered the scammers in the streets! The beautiful and sexy, but cold and arrogant policewoman!

“Hmm... Hmm! It’s you!” Her face tensed up as she looked at Zhang Yang with serious eyes.

Ka chack!

She cuffed Wei Yan Er and let her be; she won’t be leaving anytime now. The policewoman rolled up her sleeves and stared Zhang Yang with a strong killing intent.

Sigh...What a shitty coincidence! He would not have left the car if he knew this would have happened!

Zhang Yang heavily sighed.

The policewoman kept quiet. She kicked off the ground and dashed towards Zhang Yang like a leopard going for the kill. She swung her leg out flying, aiming for his shoulder!

Zhang Yang had his dose of fighting experience with this woman. He knew that he should not underestimate her, which meant no room for mistake. He tensed up, gathered his focus and quickly raised his hands to block the kick.

When the first attack missed, the woman flipped around and went for her next attack! Furious as ever!

Zhang Yang was not a just a random street fighter. He was a member of the Wushu Club that beat the National Wushu Tournament all time champion down to a pulp. His strength was not something you could find randomly at anywhere in the world! But when these two titans clashed, their fight could be described like a tiger going at a lion; extremely intense!

Han Yin Xue immediately sobered up from the surprise “attack”. She quickly ran up to Wei Yan Er to help her up.

“Sister...wuu... My butt felt like it was cracked in two!” cried Wei Yan Er.

“Stupid little girl! You have two butt cheeks there!”

Ah... it was over. The policewoman must have caused this little girl to be the complete idiot of the century!

Han Yin Xue raised both her legs, lifting her skirt and almost revealing

what lied beneath, and took off both of her high heels. She held them in her hands, preparing to hit the policewoman with it if she insisted on dragging her little Wei Yan Er to the police station.

After battling and trading blows for a while, Zhang Yang had finally gotten the upper hand! Zhang Yang had the body of a man that had always been stronger than a woman; even when his arts and skills were not as strong as a military man, he could still overpower with sheer strength.

Zhang Yang dodged and attacked, jumped and kick, and finally managed to pin the woman to a wall with a headbutt. He quickly reached out his hand and firmly grabbed her neck before she could turn around! She did not want to give in just yet, as she raised her leg backwards, trying to kick him at the very least. However, Zhang Yang was quick enough, and he was able to dodge the kick and quickly trap her leg between his thighs.

“Let go!” The policewomen cried out while panting tiredly.

“Sigh... If I let go, would you still fight?” Zhang Yang asked.

“Of course!”

Stupid! Why would you say it out loud?! At least try to keep it to yourself. How can I let you go now?

Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed. “Look, we have absolutely no reason to fight. Why would you come to me and start to fight like your life depended on it? Why don’t we put this all behind us and be friends? They say that we should solve a problem rather than letting it grow worse. If we continue this fight, an eye for an eye and soon the whole world will be blind.”

“Hmph! I don’t care! Try and hold me for the rest of your life, then!!” the woman scorned.

How stubborn could this woman be! Argh!

Zhang Yang got furious and yelled back at her. “Fine! I’ll hold you on for the rest of my life! Let’s see who will give up!”

Both of them were so busy at each other's neck that neither of them realized their current position and their conversation could have a double meaning. After a while, the policewoman's face flushed with embarrassment.

Holding on to her neck and legs, Zhang Yang could feel her tensed body suddenly relax and turned as soft as cotton.

Gah! That's just so sexy!

"Officer! My cousin and I were just playing around! Please don't take us to the station!" Both Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue walked over to her. The little girl raised her hands up, with her apologetic face full of honesty. Her makeup was completely removed, revealing a clean, natural beauty.

The policewoman turned and snorted. But she quickly turned back and stared at her intensely and said, "You're Drizzler?"

"Eh? How did you know my IGN?" Wei Yan Er startled. Just when she was about to raise her hand higher, she pulled the clutches between her hands as she was still in handcuffs, and nearly scratch herself.

"And you're Little Snow?" She turned her gaze towards Han Yin Xue, or rather her breasts, since those were the things that stood out most.

They were always her most prideful "weapons", but when they were stared at by a woman, it felt a little strange, as it was not the usual stare she would normally get. She took a step back and covered her chest with her hands and whispered to Wei Yan Er, "She's not into girls now, is she?"

Zhang Yang stuttered. "Y-You... Are you playing 'God's Miracle' as well?"

This kind of cold and arrogant woman, who had never seen smiling the entire time could actually be a gamer? Zhang Yang could not help but to think that he was actually dreaming right now!

"And you're Zhan Yu, I suppose." The woman turned back to him and stared menacingly. "I'll beat you one day!"

Zhang Yang jumped. He let her go and withdrew. He picked up his courage and cried. "You are Frost Night!"

“Eh?! You’re really Frost Night? Oh my! You’re so beautiful! And I’d always thought that underneath that piece of black cloth was someone ugly!” As expected of a little kid, she always said what immediately came to her mind. There was no secret that she would keep from the world.

The policewoman turned back and flexed her arms and feet. She pointed at Wei Yan Er and scolded. “Next time, don’t go around troubling the neighbors!”

“Yes...” Wei Yan Er dropped her head and accepted the scolding obediently. She then raised her hands and said, “Miss Officer, could you please let me go? My wrists are hurting!”

“Hey! Little brat! How could you suddenly say something like that!” Zhang Yang teased.

“Hmph!” Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes.

The policewoman took out her keys and opened the cuffs. She then turned around and asked Zhang Yang.

“Do you live here?”

“He doesn’t live here! We do!” Wei Yan Er quickly interjected. “Miss Officer, you just came out from the elevator just now, did you come over for a case or do you live here as well?”

“I live here.” She answered coldly.

Zhang Yang could not help to think that this place was not a random place that anyone could just live in. This place was considered to be the “uptown” of the entire Zhou Su City! Each house here could cost at least 10 million dollars! How could a police officer like her have the money to live here?

Could she be the lover of some billionaire or a greedy government officer? Tsk tsk tsk...Such a pity. Such a beautiful lady and yet she would waste her youth for this... Zhang Yang could not help but to look at her in a different perspective.

Zhang Yang’s sudden change in perception was just for a second. A

moment where no one could have even picked it up. Being as sharp as she was, she avidly managed to catch his thoughts and suddenly turned colder.

“You... you must be living a boring life that makes you want to die now, do you?”

What was that? Is she really an officer of the law or a street gangster?

However, Zhang Yang was not afraid. He only snickered evilly and said, “Hey, be nice. I’m still your guild master. If you’ve wronged me, I’ll make sure you’ll never get any equipment!”

“What kind of person are you? You sick bastard!” Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes at him and changed her look at the officer with great admiration.

“Miss Officer, you’re so cool! You even know how to fight like a pro, unlike my cousin here who can only boast about her black belt karate crap. She can’t even beat me!”

“You little brat! Do you really want me to mess up your life?!” Han Yin Xue finally voiced out after being quiet for the entire scene.

“Cousin, I really think that you should get a breast reduction surgery! Or else you’re gonna have saggy breast by the age of 30! By then, you can’t even fight, what more properly walk!” Wei Yan Er said with a serious tone.

“Pfft!” Zhang Yang could not hold it in and choked. He laughed loudly and said, “Kids these days are really just plain scary, aren’t they!”

“Stinking brat! If I don’t teach you a lesson today, you’ll never learn how to behave properly next time!” Han Yin Xue growled. With one hand on her waist, and the other pointing at her chest, she said, “Look at these! How could you say that they would sag huh?!”

These two sisters are just the best!

“Miss Officer, which floor did you live in? Can I go and visit sometime?” Wei Yan Er’s innocent smile was just too pure to ignore. This little brat really knew how to take advantage of her cuteness to get close to others.

“Please stop calling me Miss Officer. It’s annoying. My name is Sun Xin Yu!” To be able to make her be treated like an acquaintance instead of a

complete stranger was a feat that even Zhang Yang had to be impressed with.

This girl could someday win an Oscar Award!

“Haha! Looks like we have been fighting the wrong side after all. We are all a big family!” Living among each other, they should not start war when there was no reason to. Zhang Yang laughed and started to walk back.

“You ladies have a lovely night. I have go back now to make more potions! Remember to bring me grinding tomorrow yeah! See you then!”

“Since when were a family, noob tank?!” Wei Yan Er rushed to Zhang Yang and pulled a face.

“I have to go now! You guys head back! Remember, no more pranking!” Sun Xin Yu ordered coldly.

“Okay...” Wei Yan Er answered like a baby. Her thought was wandering elsewhere, namely, how to bring Sun Xin Yu to play along with her. With her subzero cold expression, she could easily be the best ghost there was!

Just when Zhang Yang exited the building, Sun Xin Yu managed to catch up to him and said, “No matter in the game or in real life, I will defeat you!”

This woman was just so prideful!

“In that case, you have to put some effort into it! See you tomorrow!” Zhang Yang did not even turn back to look at her. He only walked on and waved goodbye.

Chapter 96: Speed Achievement

Ever since the incident at the club, Fatty Han had been missing in action for the next two days, before finally popping online, during the afternoon of the third day.

“Fatty, are you all shriveled up now? Be careful not to break your hips!” Zhang Yang teased.

“Little Yang! Only today have I finally understood why men love hearing girls say “I want it”, but what that follows next, “I want more” is a nightmare! I’m telling you! For the past two days, I’ve had to listen to her saying “I want more” for 17 times! SE-VEN-TEEN TIMES! God! I’m all skinny right now!” Fatty Han “complained” about his proud achievement.

“Hah! Congratulations on popping your cheery!” Zhang Yang laughed.

Even though Fatty Han had always layered his speech with dirty talk, he never had been able to walk the talk. He has never carried out his spoken intentions. The closest friend he had was just someone called Jean, or was it Jenny...

Fatty Han snickered. “Little Yang! As a little brother, you must not talk like that to your elder! You’re still but a virgin! Alright, looks like this brother has to bring you to a hotel grand opening, it’s happening tonight! I heard that there will even be western chicks! Haha! Imagine having your cherry popped by a girl from overseas! Little Yang, you’ll make your country proud!”

“Get lost!”

“Hehe!” Fatty Han was happy. He had good news to share. “Just now when I checked my weight, I found out that I’ve lost 3 kilos! Girls are really like black holes, she has sucked all of my future generations if you know what I mean!”

“Fatty, I have always known you to be a pervert. But I would never have thought that your perversion could reach to this level! It’s my loss!”

“Hahaha! Oh right! Yun Yun has many friends around, I could hook you

up with them if you want.”

“Please don’t. Keep them to yourself. Who knows, perhaps you could go for a threesome or foursome, even, sometime in the future.”

As they joked around, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue logged in. Once they were partied up together, they bombarded Fatty Han.

“Pervy Fatty! It’s your fault! Why didn’t you log in yesterday! We could not break the dungeon speed record! Now, everyone is talking about how puny we are! They are also saying that we are even weaker than the mercenary group, which was why we never accepted the speed record challenge!” Drizzler complained.

Fatty Han was smiling widely from ear to ear since he had such a good time. He could not find the bearings to get angry at all.

“Chill. Fatty bro is here today! Let’s give them a show to remember forever! Oh right, wasn’t Frost Night with you guys all the time, why didn’t you just party up with her and take the speed record?”

“Sister Sun has been busy!” Wei Yun Er shook her head.

“Sister Sun? Who is that?” Fatty Han did not know that Frost Night was called Sun.

“Sun is Frost Night!” Zhang Yang answered him and turned to Drizzler. “Why is she so busy?”

“Something to do with gang fights. She’s had her hands full with that!” By the sound of it, it looked like Wei Yan Er had been hanging out closely with Sun Xin Yu.

“Oh right!” Han Yin Xue suddenly looked serious. “She wanted me to tell you not to mess around at any night clubs or anything like that. You might get caught!”

“Are you sure she said that? Or are you only speaking on her behalf?” The ice cold lady would never had said anything like that!

“Erhm...I erhm...I could tell from the look of her face!”

“Oh right! How was it that night? Did you guys actually meet up with

each other?” Fatty Han suddenly recalled.

“Nishishishi...Once the noob tank saw my cousin, he was so excited that he actually had a nose bleed! He lost so much blood that he is now an even noober tank!” Wei Yan Er teased Zhang Yang.

“Is that so...” Fatty Han observed Han Yin Xue intently, his face full of suspicion.

“I never would have thought that Little Yang had so little willpower...”

Han Yin Xue had a devilish body for sure, but her complexion was only normal at the very least. She had those alluring eyes, but that could not have caused him to have a nose bleed! Fatty Han could not imagine it since he had never actually saw Han Yin Xue in reality.

“Fatty, did that girl suck out your intelligence as well while doing it? Do you seriously believe what that little brat just said?” Zhang Yang shook his head disapprovingly.

“Woah! Pervy Fatty! Were you with your girlfriend for the past two days!?” Wei Yan Er tried to butt into his private life. “Where does she live? Is she fatter than you are?”

“Please...that girl has the body of a super model!” Fatty Han said proudly. “Her 3 sizes are 34C-23-33. How ‘bout that? Impressed?”

Wei Yan Er had always hated it when people started to compare body figures with her. She rolled up her sleeves and showed her fist to Fatty Han. “Pervy Fatty, do you want to know how hard I can punch?”

By the time they had their fun joking around, Hundred Shots logged in and the team started to head over to the hunting fields.

So far, Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots were at Level 28 while the rest were at Level 27. Even though Sun Xin Yu was rarely online, she managed to keep up with them at Level 27.

The guild’s experience points had reached the maximum points for the first level. Everyone in the guild had two benefits to enjoy. All experience points obtained from monsters or quests were increased by 10%. All

equipment repairing fees were reduced by 5%.

Additionally, the guild shop had started selling items to all members of the guild. The shop had special items, but they were low in stock. Most items will only be unlocked when the guild reaches Level 2. For example, the Windy Wolf Mount! However, to achieve a Level 2 guild, they would need to obtain the Level 2 [Guild Upgrade Order]. As far as Zhang Yang knew, this item could be found at the Hardcore Mode of the Shadowmoon Castle, in separate pieces, as loot from the last boss.

Because the Order could only be farmed in the Hardcore Mode, most guilds would have to raise their members' average level to the mid-fifties to farm the dungeon. They could also buy the Order as a last resort if their luck was terrible. However, at this stage, nobody had any idea how high the pieces of [Guild Upgrade Order] could be sold! There was no known price for the item in the market.

There were tens of thousands of big or small guilds in this game, but how many party could really be capable of raiding that dungeon? Furthermore, the item's drop rate was not fixed! There was a chance for the item not to drop at all!

Sun Xin Yu did not log in the entire day. Perhaps she was so preoccupied with work that she could not play the game. It was a good thing too. Zhang Yang did not have to crack his head too much in selecting from his current party when it came to the speed run.

If she had been online, Zhang Yang would had have to leave one member out. Even if they remained passive about it, nobody would be happy about being kicked selectively for a favoured player. Zhang Yang wanted to avoid that situation.

For the past few days, Zhang Yang had learned and made [Level 2 Dexterity Potion] and [Level 2 Intelligence Potion]. He kept some especially for the party members. They might not be necessary for normal monster fights, but when it came to attempting the dungeon speed record, every tiny upgrade was worth it. A [Level 2 Dexterity Potion] only provided a bonus of 10 Dexterity points. Even though it's a very small bonus, it still

counted!

The party started their attempt at 7pm sharp.

They raided the Hardcore Mode of Marzerway's Lair for 4 times already. As they were the main attacking force of the guild, they also accumulated a lot of guild contribution points! Not one party member had been left out from claiming the loot exclusive to the Hardcore Mode. Wei Yan Er was the luckiest of them all. She was only lacking one more Gray-Silver set equipment to complete her set while Zhang Yang was only lacking a helmet. The rest of the party all had at least 3 pieces of the set equipment. Their levels and attack power were strong enough to handle the entire dungeon with ease.

Zhang Yang started the timer and initiated the raid. By the time the party had killed their way till the second boss, Zhang Yang cried out. "Stop. Stop. Stop! Time out! 3 minutes break!"

"What?" Everyone was confused. They were here to break the speed record, but why were they stopping for a 3 minute break? What the hell?!

"We're too god damned fast!" Zhang Yang exclaimed.

Everyone was even confused. Isn't being fast a good thing?

Zhang Yang saw the confused faces around him and laughed. He quickly quoted, "Nothing lasts forever, everything falls from grace". Our target was only to break the Sword and Fire Mercenary's time record! We should not be too greedy. It's only enough that we defeat them, not more than that! Understand?"

Han Ying Xue was the first to respond, "Oh. We have already obtained 3 First Clears from the Level 20 dungeon. Now that we have done that, the other guilds can only claim one more thing. That would be the dungeon Speed Achievement! It's one thing for us to beat their record reasonably where others would still have a chance. But if we set the gap way too high, others will be floored by it, and in a bad way too. If they see no chance of breaking our record, they could only direct their ire elsewhere and name us public enemy number 1. Soon, they will gang up and try to wage war with us!"

“That is why, we must give them room to claim some glory for themselves. Otherwise, it could end up badly for us!” Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “This is like piracy on the internet. If the main publisher is too greedy, more consumers will turn to sites like Pirate Bay! The main victims would be themselves in the end. Since they aren’t earning anything from their customers, they would be digging their own graves! That is why, we cannot be too greedy with all the glory, we have to leave achievements behind for others!”

Wei Yan Er looked at Han Yin Xue with her eyes wide open, full of admiration. “Wow! Sister, I would have never known that you’re so smart!”

Han Yin Xue lifted her chest that caused her breasts to jiggle. “Of course I am!”

Neither of the guys could find the nerve to open their mouth once they saw the heavy bounce of her well-endowed bosoms.

“Ahem, it’s about time. Let’s go!” Zhang Yang unsheathed his blade and charged at the boss.

The last battle started.

After 1 minute into the fight...

“Please, show some restraint! Don’t be too aggressive! We only need to beat the record by 10 seconds!” Zhang Yang continuously reminded the party as their attacks rained down, sending the boss’ HP down like an avalanche.

With some careful micromanagement on Zhang Yang’s part, Wei Yan Er and the rest managed to hold back on their attacks. They finally managed to beat the boss 7 seconds earlier than the stipulated time! That meant that the party had defeated the speed record of Sword and Fire Mercenary by 17 seconds!

‘Ding! You and the party members around have broken the speed record of Marzerway’s Lair: Main Wing (Hardcore Mode)! This result will be recorded in the Hardcore Speed Achievement Board! As the party leader, please key in your team name!’

Zhang Yang keyed in “Lone Desert Smoke” and the server’s channel was filled with server-wide announcements!

However, the reward for breaking the speed record had been reduced. Everyone got 10 gold pieces, 250 Reputation points, and a [Level 2 Gemstone] by class category. Zhang Yang obtained a Vitality Gem which provided +20 Vitally effect. Wei Yan Er obtained a +10 Strength Gemstone, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han both obtained a +10 Dexterity Gemstone, and Han Ying Xue obtained a +10 Intelligence Gemstone.

“Sister! Look at these stones! Kyaa! They are so shiny and beautiful!” Wei Yan Er screamed like a little girl as she observed the Gemstones.

“Keep that thing! Shouldn’t you be ashamed of yourself?!” Zhang Yang sighed and shook his head. He said, “Level 4 Gemstones and anything lower can be bought at any Gemstone Shop! This one piece here costs 100 gold pieces at most! Oh right! You have those equipment that can equip Gemstones, have you put them to use?”

Hundred Shots shook his head. “Not yet. I haven’t reach the level yet! My socket is still empty!”

The rest of the party also shook their heads.

“Just go and insert. There is actually a success rate for slotting in a Gemstone. You’ll need money to buy Gemstone. You’ll also need money to insert a Gemstone, and it would not be 100%! Level 1 Gemstones have a 10% failure rate, Level 2 Gemstone have a 20% failure rate, that failure rate will go all the way up with the Level 8 Gemstones at the top having a failure rate of 90%! What a load of fortune wasted there!” Zhang Yang complained.

Chapter 97: Level 30 Job Quest

Lone Desert Smoke has successfully broken the speed record for Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode! Rumors of how Zhang Yang's feeble team, merely lucky in their triple chain of First Clear Achievements had dispersed. Their achievements invoked a burning fury in all the other guilds. One by one, they tried to break the record themselves.

Zhang Yang's speed record did not hold up for long. Only half a day later, their record was replaced by Breaking Dawn, who broke it by 9 seconds! Several hours later, Crimson Rage broke the record, clocking a time that would last longer. They had successfully raided the dungeon in only 17 minutes and 2 seconds! However, even this speed record was broken and the process repeated itself, each time with a difference of just a few seconds! Still the record was continually broken to a point where the strong and the weak began showing their differences.

Since Zhang Yang's team managed to break the record once, they had no intention of staying at that point. They had their levels to grind up! With the frenzied rate the Speed Record changing hands, no one would dare to claim that their speed record was unbreakable! However, a dungeon's First Clear Achievement was very much different from the Speed Achievement. Once taken away, it was the end for the others, no one else could ever claim it again.

For the past few days, Zhang Yang had been receiving a steady income of 300,000 gold coins into his savings. However, the gold to dollar exchange rate had decreased to 6:1. It had slightly affected his savings but the amount was still remotely large.

The second recipe for [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was found in Violet Star City. Even though Zhang Yang finally had a competitor, both of them still could not fulfill the demands for the potion, which did not affect Zhang Yang's own sales. Days like that would last for at least 10 days or so, whereby more players would have achieved the level of 30. By then, they would not need to depend of the potion to raid the Hard Mode Marzerway's Lair.

Deep down, Zhang Yang wanted the days of him making potions like crazy to end quicker. His fortune may have been piling up like mountains, but he had been so preoccupied with making potions to the point where the progress bar of the synthesis would remain as an afterimage beneath his closed eyelids whenever he tried to sleep.

On the last day of July, when most of the server was deep asleep, Zhang Yang had raided Marzerway's Lair one more time and gained a level, finally reaching Level 30!

His luck chose that special moment to also give him the last piece of his set equipment, fully triggering the set effect! For the past two raids, Marzerway had been exceedingly stingy to him, never dropping the required helmet equipment that Zhang Yang needed the most.

And so, his final stats¹ were as such:

HP: 4,350

Strength: 191

Dexterity: 74

Defense: 260

Melee damage: 445-467

Critical chance: 12%

Before this, Hundred Shots was the first to achieve Level 30 before Zhang Yang. Fatty Han and the rest were still at Level 29. At best, they would only reach Level 30 by tomorrow night. Zhang Yang had managed to pick out 4 other capable players who logged in consistently and had decent fighting skills, to temporarily fill in the blank spots in his team to raid the Shadowmoon Castle dungeon.

However so, despite the best efforts of this selected four, they were still under Level 27. They would need at least another four days to reach Level 30! From Zhang Yang's recollection of his alternate history, Crimson Rage's main force will reach Level 30 in two days. Once their team was properly assembled, they would move with 20 members in 2 separate 10-

man parties to raid the dungeon.

These two 10-man dungeons were different from Bangar Crypt or Marzerway in a way where there were no terrain bugs to exploit nor were there any special potions required to survive. These two dungeons could be easily conquered once players were fairly well equipped, and had sufficient knowledge on the boss' skills. This was the most classic and straightforward dungeon in the game so far.

No matter the case, Zhang Yang had no intention of surrendering the dungeon's First Clear to anyone else. He will raid the dungeon tomorrow, even if he only had 6 people!

When he arrived back at the city, the first thing Zhang Yang did was to ride on his Skeletal War Horse.

"Neigh...!" The horse snorted, standing behind Zhang Yang with its fiery flames emitting from all its hooves. The huge beast of bleach-white bones was a sight to behold. The emerald flames glowed wildly from those eye sockets! The moment it appeared, everyone started gathering to have a look at the magnificent mount. They were all shocked to suddenly see a monster appear in the middle of the town!

"Little Yang! God damn! I'm so jealous!" Fatty Han cried as he approached and rubbed his hands on the horse until he was satisfied.

"Oh well, since I can't ride this. I'll ride my own girl back at home!"

"Please Fatty. You're so pitiful that I'm dying here."

Zhang Yang got on the horse and carefully maneuvered it. The horse bellowed loudly, raised its flaming hooves, and started to gallop across the city.

"Wow! What NPC is that? I've never seen it around before!"

"Look at that ride! It's not the usual horse you see around! It's the Skeletal War Horse!"

"Oh man! I want it so bad now!"

"So cool! So awesome!"

Zhang Yang arrived at the auction house and stood in front of it. He then revealed his profile name.

Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of White Jade Castle, Level 30, [Lone Desert Smoke].

With the long chain of titles and his magnificent horse, he had successfully captured the attention of players who were on their way to the auction house.

"WTF! That's not an NPC!"

"Hey look, is the famous Zhan Yu! As expected of the guy who achieved so much, just look at those titles!"

"That skeleton horse looks so damn cool!"

"I thought you could only ride a mount at Level 40?"

"Dude! What are you talking about? That guy is Zhan Yu! Of course he could have a mount at Level 30!"

"Whoever gifts me this kind of mount, I'll sleep with him for 3 nights!"

"F*ck! With your looks, no one would be willing to do it with you for even 10 dollars! Keep living in your dreams, ugly bitch!"

...

Personally, Zhang Yang was against riding out in the open. He was forced to promote their guild by both Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er.

He was not willing to stand out in the crowd but he was less willing to withstand the bombardment from every single one of his "gang" members. Some of them basically told him to whore himself out for the greater good, to help the guild to promote their name. Zhang Yang had absolutely no say in the matter. He had to listen to their requests obediently and rode the horse out there like an exhibition's display. His situation was not unlike the gigantic robot model in Japan, completely surrounded by fans enjoying the view.

"Damn you, little brat!"

The spectators grew larger and larger. Even though Zhang Yang had disabled private messaging from strangers, he was still barraged with so many friend requests that his view was practically blocked by the pop ups! Zhang Yang could no longer endure this public embarrassment. He quickly hid his profile, got off the horse before unsummoning it, and ran off by himself.

Wei Yan Er was giggling like a mad girl. “Haha! You took my precious horsie! This is the price to pay!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “I have nothing to say to you! Guys, listen up. There is a job quest in Level 30. The quest is fairly easy and straight forward. All you have to do is defeat an NPC! However, the quest can only be done alone without any help! The quest has 4 difficulty levels. Different difficulties will reward you with different Skill strengths! S difficulty could only be accepted at Level 30. A difficulty can be delayed till you’re Level 35, B difficulty could be taken late at Level 40 while C difficulty could be taken anytime, even after Level 300!”

“S difficulty is truly difficult, but I strongly suggest that you take this option. The difference between the rewards is just too much to ignore. Do it for the sake of your own futures! Just endure it! There is another catch. For the entire duration of the quest, your character will be the same as not wearing any equipment at all! All equipment bonus attributes will be muted². This quest will fully test a player’s skill!”

“Interesting! Very interesting! I will go and try it out!” Wei Yan Er cheered. “Sister, let’s go and grind for a bit! The noob tank had been leeching³ our experience points for several days now! If he hadn’t, we would already be Level 30!”

Zhang Yang laughed. He summoned the Skeletal War Horse and rode all the way to Warrior’s Home, to meet the pretty class instructor.

Emmy was still wearing the same revealing armor and the ever-present crowd of horny guys surrounded her as usual. The only difference between those players and Zhang Yang was that from his own perspective, he could see a huge glowing yellow exclamation mark floating on her head.

Zhang Yang first learned the Level 30 warrior skill [shield wall] and continued the conversation after to start the quest.

“Zhan Yu! Your excellent growth in strength has been most impressive. The empire will always need warriors like you to protect the land from spectres, demons, and other threats to the empire’s interest! However, you will still need to undergo a test and based on your results, I will teach you a class skill!”

Emmy placed one hand on her waist and bent over. Zhang Yang could clearly see her cleavage, deep down into darkness.

“Are you ready for it?”

“Yes!” Zhang Yang instantly replied.

“There are four quests here for you to choose! Different quests will have different levels of difficulty. However, I’ll have to see your willpower, only then will I grant you a strong skill!”

“S level difficulty! Must be completed by Level 30!”

“A level difficulty! Must be completed by Level 40!”

“B level difficulty! Must be completed by Level 50!”

“C level difficulty! No level limit!”

Zhang Yang did not even need to stop and think, he immediately picked the S level difficulty.

“Wise decision, young warrior! You have an indomitable heart of a true warrior, but now, I want to see whether you have the capability to finish this quest! If you’re ready, you can talk to me anytime and I will open the training gates for you!” said Emmy.

‘Ding! You have accepted the quest: The path forward (S level)! This quest must be completed at Level 30, the quest will be automatically deleted when the character gains a level!’

The quest limited the character to only be able to complete the quest at their current level; they have blocked off players with higher levels from coming back to complete the quest with their level advantage.

Zhang Yang drew a long breath and said, “Respected instructor, I’m ready for my test!”

Emmy nodded and took out a huge, green crystal. She held the crystal with both her hands and started to chant a spell in an unknown language.

Is she a warrior? Or a magician? Or perhaps both? Zhang Yang thought absent-mindedly.

A progress bar appeared on her head. She carried out the chant slowly and only finished the spell 30 seconds later. A green orb of light appeared in front of Zhang Yang. The orb was so huge that it was enough to let 3 men walk across simultaneously.

Zhang Yang stretched his legs and stepped into the orb. After a flash of bright light that quickly faded away, Zhang Yang was now in the middle of a huge battle arena. It looked like the same battle arena that Ancient Rome used to have gladiators fight each other. The audience set was completely filled with races of all types. Aside from the 4 main races of the world, there were also Dragons, Elementals, Gnomes and many other extremely rare races.

“Welcome! To the Battle Arena! To all fighters out there! There are no other rules but to kill, or be killed! If you want to leave this place alive, you have to be the last man standing! May the God of War bless you!”

The sound of the announcer echoed across the arena. There was no telling where the voice came from!

Kang Kang Kang...!

The sound of a metal gate dropping down could be heard from a corner of the arena.

“GRROOOOAN!”

A thundering growl echoed through and a huge 3-meter-tall blue-skinned giant rushed out of the pathway furiously.

“HULL!” The giant had glowing bloodshot eyes. It raised its fist and smashed it down on the ground, sending shockwaves through the floor!

Above its head was written the name tagged “Blue Giant Hull”.

Is the developer trying a little too hard to copy Marvel’s Hulk?”

‘Ding! The Deathmatch will begin in 10...9...8...”

‘3...2...1!”

“GRAHHHHH!”

Boom!

It smashed the ground, propelling itself, and charged towards Zhang Yang.

From Zhang Yang’s perspective, he was staring at a huge mountain moving on its own, seeking to trample him.

Translator’s Notes

1 Stats – The short form of statistic, is the full attribute of the character information.

2 Muted – Mute or muted is the nullification effect of an equipment during a special event or scenario. If all equipment is muted, your character will still be wearing the equipment but the bonus attribute it carries will not be added into the character’s attribution.

Chapter 98: Blue Giant Hull

[Blue Giant Hull] (Elite)

Level: 30

HP: 30,000

Defense: 0

Melee damage: 500

Attack interval: 2 seconds

Immediately after entering the battle, Zhang Yang's equipment was all muted. Every skill level was reset down to Level 1! To ensure a fair battle among all players, every player that underwent this test would have the same stats. All players would have equal Attack power, HP, and MP.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 30

HP: 3,000

Defense: 0

Strength: 100

Melee damage: 100

Attack interval: 2 seconds

Critical chance: 0

Lucky strike chance: 0

The monster he was about to fight was much stronger than he was! If they were to compare with each other, numerically:

$30,000 \times 500 : 3,000 \times 10$

That's 50:1! The player would not have a chance based on statistics alone!

Furthermore, when Zhang Yang had entered this battle field, all buffs and boons were purged. All items in the inventory would be locked out

from use. The only good thing in this field was that the system did not lock the 3 optional skills he had! [vanguard's aggression] and [eagle eye] may not be useful against this monster, but [horizontal sweep] would serve him well enough!

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had been trying repeatedly to clear this quest in S level difficulty. But since his skill was not as polished as he was now, the best results he could manage was to bring the boss down to 37% of its HP. However, he was not patient enough to endure it and ended up completing the A level difficulty.

However, as he played on, he had regretted that decision thoroughly. He should have simply endured the hardship and completed the quest in S level difficulty! Even though the quest rewarded everyone with the same skill, the difficulty level determined the strength of the skill! If he had been patient enough, he could have cleared the quest. But since he was still new to the game and way behind the first generation of players, he thought that a single difficulty level would not do much harm. He lived to regret that decision!

The reward was a skill called [destructive smash]. Back then, what Zhang Yang had obtained was from the A level difficulty quest.

[Destructive Smash]: Immediately attacks a target with destructive strike, causing 150% melee damage and reduces all healing effects received by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Cost: 30 Rage

Requires: Melee weapon

Cooldown time: 8 seconds.

Less than 100 players around the world had cleared the S level difficulty, and out of that, only 10 players in entire China! These 10 players would be the S tier Professional League battle team's trump card!

Zhang Yang gathered his thoughts and focused on the battlefield. The opponent attacked with its fists. Zhang Yang activated [block], gaining 10 Rage and dealing 100 damage in reflect damage. He pivoted and swung his

sword in a backhand, dealing another 100 damage and gaining additional 25 Rage.

Boom!

Zhang Yang stomped on the ground and activated [thunder strike].

‘-100!’

‘-200!’ [shield bash].

The blue giant began moving in slow motion, debuffed with a status.

Zhang Yang quickly turned around and started to run away, increasing the gap between them.

He was completely outmatched in terms of attack power and HP. He could not just simply take the monster head on! He needed a plan of attack! This giant monster’s attack speed was another damned matter altogether. No human could evade its light-speed attacks. One could only survive this Deathmatch by properly utilizing the skills of a warrior!

5 seconds after, the slow effect wore off and the giant, in huge giant stomps, quickly caught up to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang kept calm and waited until the distance between the two of them was reduced to about 3 meters, before using [charge] to stun the giant. He then dealt a normal attack and gained 40 Rage, just enough for him to cast a [horizontal sweep].

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-200!’ [horizontal sweep].

Zhang Yang did not fret; he ran and kept his distance again from the monster.

Once Hull recovered from the stun, it moved its massive feet and gave chase.

In only 3 seconds, Zhang Yang was beneath Hull’s shadow, the blue giant growling loudly and raising both its fists, ready to flatten Zhang Yang.

[block]! +10 Rage.

‘-100!’ [block] reflect damage.

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-200!’ [shield bash].

Zhang Yang ran away again. One second passed and his [thunder strike] was ready to be used again. He stomped the ground and reapplied the slow effect on the monster, before running circles around the monster.

The monster suddenly growled deafeningly and his body started to give off a faint, blood-red glow.

‘Ding! Blue Giant Hull has gained [enraged]! All attacks increased by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds!’

Zhang Yang remained calm, unwavering, and focused. With the 5-seconds of slow effect on the monster, Zhang Yang could properly maintain a safe distance from death. The cooldown time for his [thunder strike] was 8 seconds, which meant that there was a 3-second gap where he would be within reach of the beast! Zhang Yang could use [block] to protect himself during that time in case the monster catches up. This was his plan, to kite the monster around.

However, to properly execute the kiting strategy required a good, calculative mind. He would need to properly calculate the time and match the rhythm of the fight to cast [thunder strike] accurately. Since this skill was an AoE attack and debuff, he needed to gauge his distance. Cast it too far away and it wouldn’t affect the monster. Too close and he would be struck even if [thunder strike] hit. This quest would not only test a player’s skill but also his patience. There was no other way but to slow the monster down and gradually attack the monster until all 30,000 HP is drained. If he slipped up even once, everything would be a waste and he would have to start the fight all over again.

Zhang Yang was only dealing bouts of 100 and 200 damages to Hull each time he attacked. Even though it may seem insignificant, but the overall damage accumulated was good enough to gradually cut its HP

down. Zhang Yang was doing a good job so far. After only 5 minutes, Hull's HP was reduced down to 11%.

Still, Zhang Yang did not dare to lower his guard. On the contrary, he gathered his mind and focused even harder.

10%!

'Ding! Blue Giant Hull has gain [uncontrollable rage]. Gained immunity to all debuff and +100% attack damage!'

The last 3,000 HP; the most dangerous part of the entire battle! Since Zhang Yang could no longer rely on any slow and stun effect, he had to fully endure the giant's monstrous speed and colossal attacks!

Zhang Yang first activated [block] to negate the first attack and took the chance to deal as much damage as he can.

'-100!' [block] reflect damage.

'-200!' [shield bash].

'-100!' Normal attack.

'-200!' [horizontal sweep].

'-100!' [thunder strike].

'-100!' [force strike].

Zhang Yang dealt a total of 900 damage just as he completely used up all his Rage.

Two seconds later, the blue giant growled and swung its fists to pulverize Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately activated [shield wall].

[Shield Wall] (Level 1): You are protected by a shield. All ill effects purged, and reducing all incoming attacks by 75%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Requires: Shield.

Cool down time: 10 minutes.

'-200!'

The damage Zhang Yang was receiving had already gone through significant reduction, thanks to [shield oath] and [shield wall]. He ended up receiving only 20% of the onslaught. (Shield Oath Level 1). He then begun his counter attack. The last ten seconds was where the curtain closes, it was now up to the amount of damage he could deal before the 10 seconds ends.

8 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,600, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,700!

6 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,400, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,600!

4 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,200, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,300!

2 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,000, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,200!

[shield wall] duration ends! Zhang Yang will now receive damage in almost all it's entirety!

[block]!

'-100!' [block] reflect damage.

'-200!' [shield bash]

'-100!' Normal attack.

The giant roared and smashed Zhang Yang with its fists.

'-800!' With no way of defending himself, Zhang Yang finally received a direct hit. His Rage was completely filled. Remaining calm, Zhang Yang returned fire!

'-100!' [force strike].

'-100!' Normal attack.

'-100!' [force strike].

Zhang Yang: 1,200 HP.

Blue Giant Hull: 500 HP.

'-800!'

This time, Zhang Yang let everything lose like a Berserker. Every time he received a hit from Hull, his Rage instantly filled up!

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-200!’ [horizontal sweep].

‘-100!’ [force strike].

‘-100!’ [force strike].

“GRAaaa...”

Thud!

The monster fell, defeated. The colossal body slammed against the ground and sent a slight tremor throughout the arena.

Zhang Yang drew a deep breath and let out a sigh of relief. His pulse shot up as he did a double take on his HP bar, with only 400 HP remaining.

“Cheers for the mighty warrior!” A round of a applause rang throughout the entire arena as the many races gave him a standing ovation!

“Zhan Yu!”

“Zhan Yu!”

“Zhan Yu!”

He knew that this was all scripted, nothing more than a programmed response to a player’s victory. Still, he reveled in the applause and bathed in its afterglow. He felt as if he had teleported back to ancient Rome and became one of the gladiator champions.

Foosh!

A sudden flash of light blinded him momentarily and Zhang Yang was teleported back to the city, standing in front of the sexy Warrior class Instructor, Emmy.

“Congratulations young warrior! You have passed the most difficult test! Praise the God of War, I believe that one day you could be a great hero of the land!” said Emmy with great excitement. Who said that NPCs couldn’t bootlick.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: The Path Forward (S level)!’

‘Ding! You have obtained a system reward: Luck +1!’

‘Ding! You have learnt a new skill: Destructive Smash!’

Zhang Yang quickly opened his Skill Window to check on his skill description. He had to see for himself, the power of a skill gained from an S class quest!

[Destructive Smash]: Performs a destructive strike at a target, dealing 200% melee damage and cause all healing received reduced by 75%. Last for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Cost: 30 Rage

Requires: Melee weapon.

Cool down time: 8 seconds

The high attack was nothing to be surprised about. The main factor that made this skill so strong was the reduced healing effect it inflicted on its targets! In dungeons, there were bosses that leeched HP from its enemies, while many others had healing skills! However, if he were to use this skill on such bosses, they could only heal by about 25% of their original power!

On the other hand, in the Professional League, this skill had always been considered to be an overpowered skill. In every 5v5 team battle, there would always be a warrior in the team, and it was all because of this skill’s power and potential. Some of teams did not even need you to be strong and powerful. All you had to do was to make sure that every opponent player was struck with the healing reduction effect!

Normally, the majority of players would only complete the B level difficulty quest and obtain the [destructive smash] which had only 25% healing reduction effect. Only a handful of people could complete the A level difficulty, with a rate as low as one out of a thousand!

According to Zhang Yang’s memories, there was only one person who completed the quest in S level difficulty and he was called One Sword Stroke the “Peerless Blockade”. This guild master of Imperial Sk, naturally became China’s number 1 tank! He was the team captain of “Sky and Ocean Electronic”, the strongest S-level Professional League battle team in

the China server.

According to rumors that spread across the internet, One Sword Stroke was Sky and Ocean Electronic's only successor, his real name was Cheng Ran. People called him 'Son of the Heaven'.

Zhang Yang looked at the time. It was almost for him to step out and show his achievement off to the world!

Translator Note:

1 Purged: Purged is the verb used to get rid of any beneficial effect on a player.

Chapter 99: Super Healer!

“Zhan Yu, this S level quest is really tough!” Still lost in his sea of thoughts, Zhang Yang received a private message from Hundred Shots.

He laughed a little. Was it called S level for nothing? There were only very few people in the entirety of China who could finish this quest! Well, if the quest was positioned somewhere further down the progress of the game, there could have been more people completing this quest as many would already have gotten used to the controls of the game, thereby having the skills, intuition, controls, and attack plan to make it possible! This early in the game, nobody would truly be skilled!

Hundred Shots was bound to be one of the famous players from China! He was the top among the Top 10 Hunters! However, his strength would lie on the little red pet dragon. When the dragon would have popped out, he would rule the world! Even if he was slightly lacking in individual skill, his dragon more than made up for it!

Zhang Yang mulled over it for a while and replied, “Just try your best and give it a few more rounds. The Level 30 skill is extremely important! Try your best to get the S level difficulty reward!”

“Okay!” Hundred Shots was a man who cared about his self-worth. He clearly understood that Zhang Yang was a man of talent and kill. He wanted to stay beside him through thick and thin. Even if he could never be as strong as Zhang Yang, the least he could do was to avoid being dead weight.

Zhang Yang had never played as a Hunter before, so there was no way he could provide any advice on the Hunter questline. Zhang Yang could only ask for him to have a deeper understanding of his class skills. The developers would not simply design the game to have players equipped with a particular set of skills at a particular moment of the game for nothing! The quests have been tailored specially to accommodate the use of everything they had been given. The raw materials were laid out on the workbench, one only had to use them wisely!

This class quest was to test each player's knowledge on their own class skills!

Fatty Han, Han Yin Xue, and Wei Yan Er were still busy grinding their level up to Level 30. Zhang Yang left them be, there was no benefit to gain from pestering them about the quest. He then went on to craft more potions, ready to be sent out to the 7 main cities, where more gold would end up in his hands still.

Beep!

The messenger rang and Zhang Yang quickly answered the call. There was no need to worry about the the person at the other end of the line, for only those who were added into his friend list could contact him.

“Yo! Zhan Yu!”

Zhang Yang was startled, he did not expect a phone call from this person out of his list of acquaintances. “Yo! Crimson Fire guild master!” The person over the phone was the guild master of Lost Paradise, someone he had partied with back at Bangar Crypt.

“Ahhh...Back then, I would have never thought that this person who ran dungeons with me would become the man who would defeat so many super guilds in this China Server! There are only a few people in this world that I admire. I must tell you that my bar was set at quite a high standard. You sir, surpassed that and beyond!” Crimson Fire's tone sounded a little too boastful.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Haha! You said it. I'm so happy that I could just float away now!”

“If only I'd known sooner, I would have rather given up my position as a guild master to have you in my guild!” His tone had changed, layered with regret.

When Crimson Fire first met Zhang Yang, he had already set his eyes on him. But he could have never expected Zhang Yang to be at this level! Initially, he wanted to pull him in and have him as part of his guild, however he believed that keeping the authority of guild master in his hand

was more important.

But now, regret was not even close enough to describe how he felt!

What was the purpose of a Professional Guild? Was not it for name, glory, and money!?

With all that said, he could have given up on his position as the guild master and hid behind the scene. Since the sponsors were in direct contact with him, he would still be the boss of the guild as long as the guild maintained its rank!

If the guild name were to spread out further, the sponsorship fees would also increase! If they could match the level of super guilds, being a millionaire was not just a dream anymore!

But now that he had missed that golden opportunity, how could he not regret?!

Ah...the original guild master of Lone Desert Smoke was far smarter than he was. She was willing to give up the position of the guild master to Zhang Yang and trade that position for a huge amount of money! Smart! No, genius!

However, what that Crimson Fire did not know was that Wei Yan Er had passed the guild master position to Zhang Yang on a whim. Yes! She felt it was troublesome! If Crimson Fire had known this, would he go bang his head on a wall?

“Erhm? Why would the guild master of Crimson Fire grace me with his presence? Is there anything I can do to help you?” Zhang Yang never liked to beat around the bush, he thought it was only troublesome to do so. He would rather have a conversation with someone as straightforward as Wei Yan Er.

Crimson Fire gathered his thoughts and said, “I represent Lost Paradise, seeking an alliance with Lone Desert Smoke! Perhaps we could help each other out in the future! This is the purpose of my call!”

Zhang Yang thought of it for a while and said, “This is a good thing. Okay! I agree! May we help each other out! We are now a family!”

After some light banter, Crimson Fire hung up, saying that he had to bring his team to raid a dungeon.

In the afternoon, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, and Han Yin Xue had reached Level 30. Zhang Yang instructed them to undergo the S level difficulty class quest. Hundred Shots had been trying his best since morning until the afternoon with no luck. He said that he had died a few hundred times!

After 3pm, Sun Xin Yu logged in and went to grind alone. She did not take long and managed to reach Level 30 as well!

Curious, Zhang Yang asked her. “Are you finally free now? How is it that you could log in at such an early hour?”

“Work shift!” Sun Xin Yu replied coldly.

Hmph! Ice Queen! I hope that you’ll have a chatterbox of a husband who annoys the hell out of you!

Zhang Yang acknowledged her reply with a simple exclamation, “Oh!”. But his curiosity was not yet satiated and he pressed on. “You haven’t been online for long, how could you level up so damn fast?”

Sun Xin Yu silently posted an item description on the chat window.

[Heaven’s Pearl] (Special Item)

Item description: Grants you an extra 50% experience point from monsters or quests.

Bound.

F*ck! How could such a godly item exist?! No wonder she had been leveling at such fast pace, spending so little time! However, it was no longer a mystery on how she could remain at the top of the Level Ranking Board, guildless as she was!

Guild members would have experience point bonuses as the guild levelled up. A Level 1 guild would have a 10% experience point bonus, Level 2 guilds double that amount at 20%, and it went on up to a 100% bonus points at Level 10! However, Guild Upgrade Orders from Level 5 onwards were freakishly tough to farm! In his previous life, the strongest

guild in the entire game was only at Level 7!

“Where did you get this?” Zhang Yang asked. Such a valuable item would ultimately have the lowest drop rate ever! She could be holding the only one in the entirety of China! With Sun Xin Yu’s solitary nature, she would not have shared the news with anyone else. No wonder Zhang Yang had never heard of this item before in his previous life!

“Reward from a hidden quest!”

“Ah!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Hidden quest. It was no wonder. She was holding the only one in the entire China! No one else would have had the chance to obtain it anymore!

“I’m going to do my class quest now. Do not bother me or... I’ll kill you!” snapped Sun Xin Yu coldly before she left the conversation without another word.

Zhang Yang was bored, since everyone was doing their respective class quests and should not be disturbed as well. Zhang Yang was always smart enough to not talk in the party channel. He continued to make potions.

“Wah! This is frustrating!” Fatty Han roared “WTF! I just equipped my hard-earned Gray-Silver equipment! And now the system won’t allow me to use them?! F*ck! One attack was only 100 damage! How long am I supposed to continue to fight? 1 year?!”

“You stupid fat pig! I failed my quest because of your sudden screaming!”

“Cousin...you startled me...I died as well!”

“You guys...”

Everyone failed their quest ever since the dummy Fatty Han started a ruckus in the party channel.

“Pervy Fatty! If you ever disturb us again, I’ll rip your balls off!” Wei Yan Er scolded.

Fatty Han suddenly tightened his legs closer and quietly obeyed. His happiness was only just blossoming. The erectile problem should not exist

now, it should only be a problem when he would be 50 years old!

After all that happened, everyone was smart enough to mute their chatting system to avoid being distracted.

Zhang Yang knew that Fatty Han's capabilities was no match with the S level difficulty. He sighed and sent a private message to him.

"Hey Fatty, try and change the difficulty."

"WTF? Are you looking down at me?"

"You're absolutely correct!"

"Haha! You sure know me well brother! Alright, I'll confess. I attempted the quest 16 times already and the best I could do was with 97% of the boss HP still remaining! Little Yang! What do you think? What difficulty level should I do?" One of Fatty Han's greatest attitude was that he had never been dishonest to himself nor anyone else. If he was bad, he would not try to hide it. He would not try to keep his shortcomings in the dark for the sake of his pride.

"Try C!"

"Is there a slightly simpler one?" Fatty Han asked.

"B is easier!"

"Ok!" Fatty Han took the bait and went on to met his respective class instructor.

After a while, he had managed to complete the quest. A level B difficulty was not easy, but since Fatty Han had been following Zhang Yang to many raids, he was skilled enough to handle a level B difficulty.

"Little Yang! I've gained a new skill!" Fatty Han posted the skill description to Zhang Yang, like it was a trophy of some kind.

[Beast Link]: Obtained the power of a wild beast! 25% of all received damage will be shared to your pet! Increases your ranged attack damage by 50%. Last for 10 seconds.

Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

As expected of a level B difficulty reward, it was pathetic! If he were to complete the S level difficulty, he would have the skill power raised to 75% shared damage and a 100% increase in attack power!

However, there were only a handful of players who could defeat a S level difficulty, Zhang Yang did not chastise him for it. On the other hand, he had high expectations from Sun Xin Yu. Someone like her could possibly beat the S difficulty quest! She was the future number 1 Thief after all. No one could beat her in the underlying knowledge of Thieves! If she could not clear the S level difficulty quest, no other thieves would.

To Zhang Yang surprise, the third person to complete the class quest was Han Xin Yue!

"I'm beat! I finally healed the freaking donkey!" She complained.

That was...quick?

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. "What difficulty did you picked?" he asked suspiciously.

"Didn't you ask me to pick the S level difficulty? Did I pick the wrong one?" She replied.

Zhang Yang was surprised. He immediately straightened up. "So, you're saying that you completed the S level difficulty quest?"

"Stupid Zhang Yang! What am I? A kid? Of course I did! Hmph!" Han Xin Yu snapped.

Zhang Yang laughed it off.

"Ahahaha. I was only asking. Oh right! What was your quest?"

"There were two NPCs fighting each other. My job was to make sure one of them does not die, and that he kills the other NPC, that's it!" Han Xin Yue said it so flippantly as if it was the most common thing in the world.

As expected of the team healer! No, Super Healer! No! Not even that! She was the Goddess of Healing herself! She should just hang her gigantic cups and let the world healers worship them! Those were the best in the world!

Zhang Yang sighed in awe. He had always known that Han Yin Xue was a strong healer in the team. But to think that she would even reach to this level on her own was beyond his imagination! Looks like he struck the jackpot!

“What skill did you get for your reward?” Zhang Yang asked.

Chapter 100: Shadowmoon Castle

[Divine Soul (Passive)]: Your heart and soul is filled with faith and devotion. All spells and skill costs are reduced by 75%.

Zhang Yang's mind went blank the moment he saw the skill description.

A 75% spell cost reduction! She could now deal 4 times the amount of healing! What an OP skill!

His voice shaking in uncontrollable excitement, Zhang Yang said, "Honestly, I had never held such high hopes for us to clear the Level 30 dungeon. But now that you have this passive skill, our chances to clear the dungeon has now increased 5-fold!"

The ideal 6-man party for this dungeon was supposed to be comprised of 2 tanks, 2 healers, and 6 attackers. In his case, Zhang Yang alone could take the place of both tanks. Now that Han Yin Xue gained the passive skill, she could also take the role of both healers as well! On the other hand, Zhang Yang himself was a unique tank with strong offensive powers! That would mean that their 6-man team could match the strength of a 10-man party!

Zhang Yang had a sudden change of mind. He had wanted to search for another 4 players to fill in the empty slot to make it a whole 10-man party anyway, but to have that many players in the party would increase the chances of them making mistakes as well! One must not fear the godly strength of the enemy more than the useless imbeciles and incompetent partners in battle! Since his team could now ignore the shortage of 4 other players, he would rather proceed with this group of trustworthy six than adding unnecessary risks into his party. Without any further ado, he initiated the raid of the Shadowmoon Castle.

The most crippling factor in a dungeon raid was not the mistake of a party as a whole; it was the mistake he as the vanguard would make alone that could start a domino effect, leading to the fall of the entire team!

Zhang Yang spent his time making more of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] while waiting for the rest of the remaining party member to

complete their class quests. If they could complete it before sunset, the success rate of clearing the dungeon would be even higher!

However, it was a pity that even after dinner time, the remaining 3 party members were still struggling to complete the quest. Zhang Yang could not help but admire Han Yin Xue. She was truly born to be a healer!

She had just only gotten her hands on the game and yet she could perform professionally. In contrast, Zhang Yang already had acquired, rather unfairly, 5 years worth of experience prior to his rebirth, and it was only by that advantage that enabled him to successfully clear the S-level difficulty!

Han Yin Xue and her wonderful healing! The one true goddess of healing!

After they had their dinner, Zhang Yang gathered everyone and started their journey to the castle.

According to the lore, long before anyone had known, there was a village that worshipped the Wolf God. Every year, they would hold a ceremony and offered many valuables to him. Because of that, they were all blessed by the Wolf God and were able to borrow his powers to obtain incredible strength. There was no battle that they could not win. However, intoxicated by countless victories, these people started to forget about their benefactor and lost faith in the Wolf God.

Enraged by their betrayal, the God cursed the entire village, turning its inhabitants into mindless werewolves. Unable to revert back to their human forms, the villagers secluded themselves from all civilization and hid themselves far in the wilds. They created their own sanctuary, a lair known as the Shadowmoon Castle.

This castle had two dungeons; the Garden, and the Castle, and both were built for 10-man parties and both had 5 bosses each. These dungeons contained by far the most bosses in a dungeon.

The entrance of the dungeon did not require any prerequisite quest. Any party could just enter the dungeon as they wished. However, only Level 30 players and above were eligible to raid the Garden, while the Castle

dungeon would require Level 40 players.

The party took the Gryphon service and flew across mountains before needing to take a hike on foot, to the top of the mountain, where the Castle was.

Just as the party got off the Gryphon, Zhang Yang saw there were other players around. It was a team of 10-men that belonged to the The Dominators!

There was a saying, the more you hate someone, the more you will meet him in the street!

Humbly Gentleman walked out among the crowd with a smile on his face. "Oh! Look here, it's the famous guild master Zhan Yu! Eh? What's wrong? Lone Desert Smoke could only dispatch this many members? Hahaha, with the 6 of you only, you guys might as well just farm at Marzerway's Lair!"

Humbly Gentleman would actually dare to act "Humbly" in front of so many people...

No wonder Sky Shaman would always call him a hypocrite.

Zhang Yang laughed back. "Hahaha. You jest! Humbly Gentleman guild master, would you like to buy more of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]?"

Humbly Gentleman's suddenly changed his expression. He was busy in his conceited world of self-entitlement back then, but was tricked by Zhang Yang instead. The scam humiliated him most shamefully! Now that Zhang Yang was rubbing salt on his still open wound, Humbly Gentleman got angry. His eyes were burning with the flames of rage and intense killing intent. He was actually close to attacking there and then, with Zhang Yang's party being outnumbered!

However, Humbly Gentleman was a calculative man. He did not just jump into action without having everything well thought out. 10 versus 6. Humbly Gentleman was clearly having the upper hand in numbers, but Zhang Yang's team was extremely strong. They would put up a good fight

which would be a huge disadvantage to The Dominators.

Humbly Gentleman's guild was not in a position where he could suffer any losses! Lose just one man and his entire party could not raid Shadowmoon Castle! Humbly Gentleman had placed high hopes to conquer this dungeon before anyone else could claim the First Clear Achievement.

If only Lone Desert Smoke and The Dominators were the only two guilds fighting for fame and glory, Humbly Gentleman would not mind having any random skirmish! But in White Jade Castle alone, he had to contend with Crimson Rage and Sky High as well! To have this fight with Zhang Yang would only bring nothing but disadvantage to him, and benefit the third parties. This was not a wise course of action! There were also other 8 major cities in the entire China server, with at least 20 other guilds that were at the same level as him! With the battle for the top being so intense, how could he do anything that would lead the guild to suffer?

Obviously, Humbly Gentleman decided to just let this off for now. Since he was not some hot-head brat, he deduced that he was in no position to make a move now!

He stared at Zhang Yang viciously and said, "I would really love to see how the 6 of you take on a 10-man party dungeon!"

With that, he waved his hands and led the party up the mountain towards the castle. Time waited for no man, every second counted. The fastest guild was Sky High that had already started the raid 30 minutes ago. Crimson Rage might catch up with them anytime soon!

"Let's go!" said Zhang Yang as he led his team up the mountain.

Soon, the party arrived at the top, there stood a large emerald stone castle. The castle door was opened wide and there were two teleportation doors on the left and right. One led to the Garden and other led to the Castle Interior.

"Zhan Yu, which one should we enter?" Han Yin Xue asked.

"We could choose either one. The left door would be the Garden and the

right one would be the Castle Inte...F*ck! You made me mess up! The Castle Interior dungeon is the Level 40 dungeon! We cannot enter that!" Zhang Yang cried.

"Stupid Zhang Yang! Who do you want to f*ck with!?" Han Yin Xue placed both her hands on her waist. She wanted to pose like she was mad but no matter how she adjusted, her facial features looked like they could never produce anything remotely angry. Rather, she looked like she was flirting instead of being angry. There were no traces of any anger within her, only seduction.

Wei Yan Er wanted to play along and somehow managed to have Sun Xin Yu to joined her. All 3 ladies of the party were staring madly at him. One carried a form of noble scorn, one was innocently mad, and the last one was ice cold. Each of them had their own trademark style. It was really sight to enjoy, rather.

"Alright! Alright! Let's not waste anymore time shall we? Let's raid!"

Battles for the best guild were always intense, older guilds (from other games) knew each other by name and performed with consistency. Newer guilds were also holding their ground! Just like Zhang Yang's previous life, One Sword Stroke of Imperial Sky, China's number 1 tank had led his guild to glory by taking many dungeon's First Clear Achievements. His strength was not something that anyone could rival. On the other hand, the Sword and Fire Mercenary was the strongest among all 5-man party and 10-man party, they were incredibly strong in their own right.

Still, Zhang Yang was confident of his own godly "Blocking" skill!

When he reached Level 30, the system awarded him with 3 skill points, plus the addition of 4 skill points he had obtained from 4 dungeons' First Clear Achievements, an additional skill point from the hidden quest reward, as well as the shield bonus attribute that raised the [block] level by 1. Altogether, Zhang Yang's [block] had reached Level 9. The skill's cool down was reduced to 2 seconds only!

Technically, Zhang Yang could depend on this skill alone to fight any physical attack type boss with brute force! No matter how OP that this

may have seemed, this jubilant period would not last forever. 5 months later, the release of the game's first patch, this skill was severely nerfed¹. The initial cool down of the skill was prolonged to 15 seconds, causing many Guardian players to be deprived of their endless [block] spamming². A 1 second [block] cooldown was considered to be over powered. It was so strong to the point where practically all physical attack type bosses were rendered useless in the face of this attack nullifying skill! During the revising of the game bosses and character classes, the game developers finally dropped the hammer of justice on the head of all Guardians!

Since the hammer has yet to fall onto his head, Zhang Yang's 2 second [block] cooldown was enough to render most of the physically attacking bosses useless!

'Ding! You have entered the Shadowmoon Castle: Garden (Hardcore Mode)!'

Zhang Yang and his team arrived at a huge garden. There was a huge courtyard and in the center of it, a water fountain. Beside the fountain, stood an old man dressed up rather lavishly like a butler from a noble family.

There were 5 pathways that were leading out of the Garden and Zhang Yang's party was standing on one of them. The pathway they were standing on led to the exit of the dungeon. They would automatically forfeit the dungeon raid once they withdraw.

Everyone could not help but look at the butler since he was standing out.

[Chief Butler Mack] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 34

HP: 3 million

"What an easy dungeon! There is already a boss waiting for us right where we go in! Erhm...don't you think that his HP is a little too much?" Wei Yan Er raised her hammer and walked towards it to try and fight.

"Hey! Stop! If we fight him now, it will be the death of all of us!" Zhang Yang screamed.

Wei Yan Er jumped to her feet and walked back obediently. “Why?” she asked immediately. This was one of Wei Yan Er’s good points, she would immediately try to clear her doubts rather than feign awareness.

“This dungeon has 5 bosses, and Chief Butler Mack is the last one!”

“If he is the last boss to fight, why would he appear at the beginning of the dungeon?” Wei Yan Er asked again.

“The system set is this way to trick players!” Zhang Yang shook his head. In his previous life, many parties were completely wiped out because of this setting. The first thing they saw was this butler, and they did not hesitate to kill it! In the end, they were all wiped out! Zhang Yang elaborated. “Inside the dungeon, every boss we kill will reduce this Chief Butler’s HP by 50% and attack power by 25%. If we were to fight him right now, we would most definitely be reduced to ashes. However if we do fight now and we manage to win, we can get an achievement called “I am the strongest!”

“So...should we go around?” Fatty Han asked.

“Yeah. This entire garden is a huge circle. We are standing right in the middle of it. All 4 other bosses are spread all over the edge of this circle. It does not matter which path we take or which boss we fight first!”

Zhang Yang led the team to the rightmost pathway.

“Please be careful. Walk at the far edge of the pathway. This old fart may be old but his eyesight is still strong as ever!”

The party walked in a straight file towards the far right of the courtyard. Everyone was walking very carefully, not wanting to trigger the boss and when they finally managed to get past him, everyone sighed heavily

“That was scary...” said Wei Yan Er.

Right then, there were 2 NPCs dressed up like maids, with each of them holding broomsticks, sweeping the floor.

[Diligent Maid] (Elite)

Level: 32

HP: 50,000

1Nerf – This is the verb to used when a skill or a character is weakened by the official developer. Sometimes when a character's skill is too strong and may cause imbalances within the game, the developers would make changes to anything in the game, Eg. reducing the attack power of Thief or increasing the Mana cost for healers since their skills were too potent in a way that it may cause other players to feel unfairly treated.

2Spamming-Spam or Spamming is the verb to describe an act of repeated action. For example, a player could spam the party channel with insults. Here, spamming would refer to the repeated posting. Spamming skills would means the act of casting a skill repeatedly without stopping.

Chapter 101: Sister's Revenge

“Here I go!”

Zhang Yang swung his sword and used [charge] to dash to the boss. After one normal attack, he gained enough Rage to immediately cast [horizontal sweep]. Both maids received nearly 1,000 damage each and had their aggro was fully fixed on Zhang Yang. He then quickly tagged a “Sun” symbol and cried out. “Kill the Sun-marked monster!”

Everyone started to attack and monster and completely drained her HP.

“What an Ill-behaved guest! You have dirtied Master Waller’s flower garden!”

When her HP dropped below 50%, the maid let out a loud scream. She held the broomstick with both her hands and horizontally cleaved everyone.

‘Ding! You have received the [Expulsion by the Maid] effect! Dazed for 3 second!’

[dazed] and [stun] were two different type of status effect. Under [dazed] the character could not perform any action, but once attacked, the character will regain its senses and will be able to continue to fight. [stun] was different, rendering a character completely immobile and there was no way to recover from the effect until the duration expired.

Once everyone was dazed, the two maids continued their attack on Zhang Yang since he was still holding onto the aggro. With one hit and Zhang Yang immediately recovered. He quickly activated [block] and easily endured the next 3 seconds alone, attacking both of them.

Everyone recovered after and continued their attack until the enemies were defeated.

Wei Yan Er opened the corpse and obtained a Black-Steel equipment.

[Stolen Boots] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +9

Dexterity: +6

Level requirement: 30

“F*ck, these maids are cheaters!”

“Don’t mind that first. Keep the boots in the guild storage!” Zhang Yang said. Even though neither of them wanted the equipment, one man’s trash was still another man’s treasure. Other normal players would want to have it.

The party then moved forward and deeper into the garden. Along the way, they met several more maids and they would only drop the same Black-Steel equipment and many [Cotton Cloth].

[Cotton Cloth] was important for raising a Tailoring mastery. It was also an important material to make [Cotton Bandage]. Only Level 30 humanoid monsters would drop this item. The party continued pushing and obtained a number of [Cotton Cloth].

Finally, the party had come to the end of the pathway. Further up was a curved road which led to the other parts of the garden. On the left side of the party, was a beautiful woman in a red maid outfit, sitting on a stone bench enjoying some desserts and afternoon tea. She seemed to be having the time of her life relaxing and enjoying the day.

[Winny the Maid, Master Waller’s Lover]

Level: 34

HP: 800k

“Holy f*cking moly! The master of this castle even has a lover!” said Fatty Han as he widened his eyes and stared at every inch of the boss’ body.

“Hmm...Target confirmed. Three size: 34C-23-34. WTF! Master Waller sure has good taste in women!”

“Calm your d*ck Fatty! Let the noob tank explain the strategy!” Han Yin Xue rolled her eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed at the new insult she used. “This boss would

require very good teamwork. Her attacks are not as strong but when we start the fight, she would gain a buff called “Master Waller’s Roar”. It will increase her attack by 500%! Whoever she attacks will be definitely be dead!”

“Crap! Then why are we still here?! Let’s bail!”

“Chill... there’s always a way to win!” Zhang Yang explained further. “The buff would only last for 10 seconds after activation. Which is why in 10 seconds we...”

“We must kill the boss in 10 seconds?!” cried Wei Yan Er.

“Kill your sister!”

“But I don’t have a sister!”

“Kill your cousin then!”

“Damn you Zhang Yang! You want a piece of me?” Han Yin Xue rolled up her sleeves.

“Okay! Alright! Okay! I give! I give!” Zhang Yang went back to the main topic. “In this 10 seconds, there will be another NPC appearing into the fight. She would be Master Waller’s real wife. Her...”

“WTF! What’s wrong with this Master Waller! First, a lover and now he has a wife too?! Argh! What a lucky man!” Fatty Han suddenly interject!

“Master Waller is the owner and master of the Shadowmoon Castle! He will be the Castle Interior dungeon’s last boss! F*ck you all really! Would you please let me explain everything in one go?!” Zhang Yang finally complained.

“Sorry. Please go on...”

“Go, your mama! Where was I?!”

“The wife part.”

Zhang Yang scratched his head in frustration and sighed. “When the wife comes into the fight, she will purge the boss’s buff! However, when the wife appears, she will fall under the boss’s trap. She will be encased

inside an ice block with 10,000 HP. We must break her free out of the ice and only then can she purge the buff off of the boss! After purging, the buff will reappear after 30 seconds. Again, she would be trapped in the ice and we would have to repeat the saving process over and over again.”

“Wow! Sounds like fun! Will the boss and the lover fight each other?”

“On the other hand...” Zhang Yang continued to speak. “The boss will randomly control any players aside from the player with the most aggro. The controlled player will automatically attack the wife and since her pitiful HP is only about 3 to 4 thousand or so, she will be killed off quickly and we will fail this dungeon! During the controlled period, I will be the first to pull away the controlled player. All you of just focus on the boss and ignore the player and me. The effect lasts for about 10 seconds, I think. After that, the player will regain back their control.”

“Now, even though the wife is fighting the boss, she’s not on our side, which is why we can’t heal the wife’s HP! So, when there’s nothing happening, please keep yourself away from the wife. It’s better since I can have more time to react when none of you are controlled!”

Zhang Yang paused a while. “Everyone keeping up?”

“The boss has two other skills. The first, she will randomly cast [Rain of Fire] on a random player that will cause a fixed total damage of 10,000. This damage can be shared among us, so when the skill pops, we should stand together to split the damage. The second skill is . It’s a simple bomb that will explode after 5 seconds and will cause only 1 damage to the targeted player but causes 5,000 damage to the surrounding players! So, we must be alert to run away from the targeted player and regroup only after the bomb has been triggered.”

“Everyone take a minute to digest the information I just gave. If there’s anything you want to ask, now is the time. Don’t f*ck up our plan!”

No one was showing signs of confusion; they looked confident. However, Zhang Yang immediately received a private message from Fatty Han.

“I’m already confused. Just remind me what to do, okay?”

“Damn you, really fat f*ck!”

After a while, Zhang Yang gave the signal to attack.

“Let’s go!”

Zhang Yang was the first to attack. He quickly noticed the moment he approached the boss.

Winny was startled and jumped off the stone bench and screamed from the top of her lungs.

“Master Waller! My beloved! Someone is here to kill me!”

Immediately a response was heard bellowing from the depths of the castle.

“Fear not my love! I will grant you powers to slay these killers!”

‘Ding! Winny has gained [Master Waller’s Roar]. Attack will be increased by 500%. Effect takes place after 10 seconds!’

Just in the nick of time, a green colored shadow suddenly jumped out of the bushes nearby and roared. “Waller you stupid dog! How dare you betray my love! Winny you sick woman! Why would you even want to take my husband away!?”

[Jenny, Master Waller’s Wife, Winny’s Elder Sister] (Normal)

Level: 44

HP: 4,000

However, just as she stepped into the battlefield, she stepped on a trap and was instantly encased in an ice block. She could not move, yet her face was expressing her anger.

Fatty Han was happy all of the sudden. “Oh ho... the lover is the wife’s little sister huh...! This is just so exciting. To think that he could actually pull it off! Mr. Waller is now my idol! You have my full respect! Such a pity that both of them couldn’t get along with the idea. What a shame indeed!”

“Fatty, work more on your arrows instead of your mouth! Save the NPC!” Zhang Yang used [charge] and slammed at the boss. Once he was at melee

attack range, he unleashed his skills and swung the sword around.

Jenny was saved fairly quickly when everyone other than Zhang Yang was attacking the ice.

Jenny took out a bow and fired an arrow to her sister. "Go to hell!"

'Ding! Winny's [Master Waller's Roar] was dispelled!'

Even though Winny's attack was at around 2,000, and Zhang Yang would only receive about 1,300 damage after his passive skills. Zhang Yang had been depending on [block] to block out 80% of all Winny's attacks! The amount of damage he received was so rare that Han Yin Xue had nothing to do! She only casted [regeneration] on him to completely heal him!

Without the help of the attack buff, this boss' attacks were nothing worth mentioning at all!

On the other hand, Jenny had been attacking repeatedly with her arrow. Although her attacks were full of wrath, her damage was so low that they could not even measure it. Still, she was useful enough to dispel the [Master Waller's Roar].

"Hundred Shots, Fatty, Little Snow! Come to my side and attack from behind me! Don't stray too far!" Zhang Yang made an arrangement to their position.

"Enough, Jenny! You're annoying!" The boss suddenly took out a bow and shot a love shaped arrow head to Sun Xin Yu.

Poof!

Sun Xin Yu's instantaneous reaction was astounding. She vanished instantly as soon as the arrow was about to hit her.

'Ding! Winny used [cupid's arrow] on Frost Night!'

'Ding! Frost Night used [vanish]!'

Two system notifications appeared almost instantly. Sun Xin Yu reappeared and started to attack the boss like nothing happened.

Zhang Yang saw everything, but no words could get out of his mouth. He could only stare at her in awe. Strong!

There was a moment, in only a split second... no, 1/10 of a second, when the character would enter stealth mode, and if there was no enemy around, the user would gain an “Invincible” effect, nullifying all damage and status effect!

However, the timing of activation had to be perfect! Too early, and you would have missed the I-frame, too late...than what was meaning to it? Only those with extraordinary reaction speed could fully utilize this skill to even evade a boss' skill!

This cold lady... no wonder she could be the strongest Thief in the game!

Winny continued her attack on Zhang Yang when she suddenly raised her hand up in the air and said, “Ah... the romance under the rain of fire! Burn to hell, O' invaders!”

Simultaneously, a cloud appeared on top of Wei Yan Er and rained droplets of fire.

‘-1666!’

‘-1666!’

‘-1667!’

Chains of damage text floated across the heads all of 6 members. Luckily, they were all wearing almost a full set of Level 20 Gray-Silver equipment and had more than 3,500 HP!

Chapter 102: Cheating Boss

Han Yin Xue quickly casted [holy prayer] to recover a portion of the HP and casted [regeneration] to slowly heal them. Her current magic attack had reached 600, which allowed [regeneration] to heal 240 HP per tick. Such an impressive healing power!

96%! 94%! 92%! The boss' HP started to drop.

Winny suddenly around and shot an arrow towards Hundred Shots, crying out, "Explosive Arrow!"

A ring of twirling fire appeared around Hundred Shots and a debuff icon appeared on his head.

[Explosive Arrow]: Explodes after 5 seconds. Dealing 1 Fire damage to the target. 5,000 Fire damage will be dealt to targets around 3x3 meters of the vicinity of the target.

Hundred Shots immediately ran away from the crowd. It was not hard to run 3 meters away in 5 seconds.

BOOM!

A loud blast was heard and Hundred Shots blasted off like a rocket, with flames at his butt! He rose up about 10 meters into the sky. Fire waves spread out everywhere but stopped when it reached the 3-meter border.

"AAAAaaaaaagh!"

Hundred Shots fell from the sky and slammed onto the floor. Even though he only received 1 damage from the arrow, but he also received 1,000 physical damage from falling down 10 meters from the sky!

After successfully surviving the blast, Hundred Shots immediately returned to his position and resumed his attacks.

90%.

"Master Waller! Help me!" Winny screeched.

An instant replied could be heard from the castle. Followed closely with a loud roar.

“My love! I’ll make sure you’ll be out of harm’s way!”

‘Ding! Winny has gained [Master Waller’s Roar]. Attack will be increased by 500%. Effect takes place after 10 seconds!’

After the boss gained the buff, Jenny the wife cried out angrily. “Waller! I’ll come home and strangle you myself!”

She walked a few steps and was trapped in ice again.

Without Zhang Yang needing to order, everyone turned their target and started to crush the ice.

With haste, Jenny was freed from the ice and shot an arrow to dispel the attack buff on Winny again.

“Damn you! DAMN YOU! I WILL KILL YOU! I WILL KILL YOU, BITCH!” Winny screamed from the top her lungs angrily. She quickly drew her bow and shot an arrow towards Wei Yan Er. The red heart-shaped arrowhead pierced into Wei Yan Er’s body.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler received the effect [mad love]!’

Unable to control her character, Wei Yan Er turned to Jenny and ran towards her.

[provoke]!

Zhang Yang casted [provoke] and [Cripple Defense] on her. He quickly turned his sword back toward the boss. He would only need to temporary pull Wei Yan Er’s aggro. Once the effect wore off, she would regain control.

[mad love] effect duration was 12 seconds. Every passing second would increase its aggro towards Jenny. To counter this skill, a tank was needed to control the character’s aggro. Zhang Yang purposely chose the low damage and high aggro skill to cast on Drizzler, to prevent killing her before she could regain her character’s control.

Still, Wei Yan Er could see that Zhang Yang was dealing damage to her and screamed. “Noob tank! A little lighter, would you?! I’m being killed here, you villainous bastard!” 12 seconds went past, and she recovered with

her HP reduced by only 1,000 points or so.

The boss then repeatedly used [Rain of Fire], [explosion arrow] and repeated the cycle over and over again.

80%, 70%, 60%!

The battle went on smoothly without any hiccup, and Zhang Yang deepened his understanding to the phrase “One must not fear the godly strength of the enemy, but the imbecile and incompetent partner in battle”. He would never invite any player that he doubted into his party! He could not sacrifice quality over quantity to fill in the slots!

40%, 30%, 20%...

With every 10% HP lost, Jenny the wife provoked the boss, creating a lover's conflict scene, like those typical soap operas!

14%, 13%, 12%, 11%, 10%!

‘Ding! Winny has gained [transformation] effect. Attack interval has been reduced by 20%. Attack have been increased by 20%!’

Winny suddenly roared to the sky. Her body started to grow larger, tearing apart the maid uniform, revealing the furry body of a huge werewolf. She stood slightly higher than of a regular man. Her fangs were sharp and pale, carrying a terrifying and intense killing intent.

“Haha! I wonder what would Master Waller think when he sees you in this ugly form!” said Jenny coldly.

Winny could not speak or say anything at all. After transforming into a werewolf, she lost control of her verbal ability, being able to only huff and puff.

“F*ck! What the hell! How could a pretty sexy woman like her turn into an ugly beast?! Ahh... this is bad! I think I’m going to have a nightmare tonight!” Initially, Fatty Han wanted to think about Winny’s voluptuous breasts when he wanted to whack the stick, but that idea was completely blown off when he saw her turning into a beast.

Even though the boss had turn to a frightening beast, it did not stop her

from her fate. After only a minute, she wailed and was defeated.

As soon as the boss fell, Winny returned to her human form. She was practically naked with her private parts hidden underneath thin broken pieces of cloth, though her snow white legs and the shape of her breasts could be clearly seen.

Jenny laughed coldly and turned towards the castle.

“What the f-f-f*ck!” Fatty Han could not help but cry out with saliva drooling down his lips when he saw her “naked” form. “I take back what I said about her. This boss died with a bang!”

“Hehehe! I don’t think we could bring the little brat into this dungeon anymore. This dungeon should be tagged 18-SX!” Zhang Yang laughed.

Wei Yan Er bit her lips and said, “Hey! Every day is an 18-SX moment when I wake my cousin up in the morning!”

In a split second, Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han all turned to look at Han Yin Xue, imagining her on her bed sleeping, with her blanket knocked off to the floor, wearing nothing but her panties...What a breath-taking scene indeed.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Han Yin Xue crack her fingers and screamed at the guys. “All three of you must really love for me to pluck your balls off, don’t you?”

“Hahahahahaha! Good one! Open the corpse!” Wei Yan Er seemed to be enjoying her time.

[Sword belonged to Winny’s Lover] (Gray-Silver, One handed sword)

Weapon attack: 310-362

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 120

[Level 1 Slot]

[Level 1 Slot]

Equipment Skill: Grants [lifesteal] effect on the next 3 attacks, restoring

the same amount of HP. Last for 10 seconds or 3 strikes.

Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

Level requirement: 30

Note: This sword was a gift by the Defense Army Captain Lothar! Dear, this sword represents our everlasting love!

“F*ck! What kind of mess is this? This is much worse than the 8:00pm TV drama show!” Fatty Han sighed.

“Not bad for a cheating boss!”

There was no other Defender, Guardian, nor Bandit in the party, so the item automatically went to Zhang Yang. In fact, he could get the item if he wanted to; he would just voice it out and no one will object him.

After equipping the new sword, Zhang Yang used a [Level 2 Whetstone] and increased its attack power, raising to (597 – 649) x 110%. The 110% extra damage due to the 5 set equipment he was wearing.

[Small Sack of Gold]

Use: Open to obtain Winny’s personal savings.

“Mine! Gimme!” Wei Yan Er cried.

A tiny fight broke out between the two cousins but was eventually won over by Han Yin Xue with 78 points while Wei Yan Er only got 44 points. Han Yin Xue smiled from ear to ear when she obtained the 17 gold coins. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was wielding her weapon and tip toed towards the boss, trying to imitate Jenny to do something to her sister.

“Was that all?”

They picked up another 88 silver coins and 4 pieces of [Cotton Cloth]. The corpse disappear after.

“Let’s move on!” Zhang Yang said. “With the current Level 20 set equipment, no one was willing to swap their equipment for any helmet, chestplate, boots, or anything else that this Level 30 dropped! Why? Because it will break the set equipment and its effect would not activate.

Still, the developer was smart enough to raise the equipment stats! If they want to have players raiding this dungeon, they would have to let the boss to drop some random equipment. The quantity is just few enough for the players to enjoy! However, this way was much better. Originally, rings and necklaces could only be farmed at hidden bosses or field bosses. However, these items can now be found in this dungeon as well! Think of it as a reimbursement!”

Rings and necklaces drop rates were extremely low. Majority of players would still wear the accessories obtained from the Level 10 dungeon. There were players who did not even wear them; leaving their accessories slot empty!

“What’s next, boss?” Han Yin Xue asked since she was born to be a directional idiot.

“It’s a circle! It does not matter if we go upwards or downwards. We could just circle around the garden and we will encounter the other 3 bosses.” Even though Zhang Yang may have said that, he still followed his habit of turning left, following counter clockwise.

There were many minions along the way. After clearing waves of them, the minions changed from a cute maids to large, well-built men. All of them looked like the gardeners of the dungeon, trimming trees and cutting grass before they jumped at Zhang Yang when the party approached them.

[Tough Gardener] (Elite)

Level: 32

HP: 50,000

Still, no matter how strong the minions were, they were unable to survive the attacks by the monster-like party! As Zhang Yang proceed further into the garden, they found the second boss right in front of them.

Standing right beside a huge Red Pine Tree, was a man in his 30’s, trimming the branches of the tree by a stool. The scenery was beautiful, as if it was taken directly out of a painting.

[Lexus the Gardener] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 34

HP: 800k

“Ahem!” Zhang Yang cleared his throat, signaling another long explanation.

“This boss doesn’t have a super strong skill that requires attention. He would randomly cast fire pits on the field during the battle, and you will receive DoT damage when you step on it! You would need to occasionally check the ground and avoid it. However, the boss does have a chaotic skill that would cause us to run around. At that moment, there would be a large chance for anyone us to run into the fire pit. This boss’ main challenge lies on the healer, but we won’t have to worry since we have Little Snow the Super Healer! With her, any boss would be as simple as tofu.

There was one point that Zhang Yang had skipped, which was the powerful physical attack. However, since he had the 2 second cool down [block] which he could activate any time he want, and if needed, he could activate [shield wall] any time as well. There was no reason to be afraid of his attacks anymore! The best bosses to fight with were the ones that had ultra-high attacks but super-slow attack intervals! He would only need to master the timing to activate [block] and he could basically be free from any damage throughout the entire battle!

That was why the nerfing of [block] was a huge deal. If it wasn’t, all dungeons would be as easy as pressing a button!

Since Zhang Yang had gained so many extra skill points to invest in the skill, he needed to take this chance before the patch to make use of this skill!

Chapter 103: Laxus the Gardener

“Little Snow, I’m counting on you!” Zhang Yang rushed towards the boss to start the battle.

“Argh! What a bunch of rude bastards! Look at what you’ve done to my garden! Oh... my Crescent Moon Flower...” He suddenly stopped talking. The face that the party saw was filled with malice and anger, they could feel the burning rage emanating from him. Laxus lowered the giant scissors in his hand and jumped off the stool. As he approached the party with the anger of a thousand angry men, his face, bulging with blood vessels that looked like they would burst at any time, looked frightening as hell.

“You will pay for your impudent behavior!”

Shush! The boss used [charge] to dash towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang used [charge] as well, taking him head on. He screamed, “Don’t start anything yet, I haven’t gotten a hold on his aggro!”

As the both of them slammed against each other, the boss remained unscathed while Zhang Yang was stunned for 2 seconds.

‘-2,137!’

Laxus struck Zhang Yang furiously, dealing extreme damage to him. As circumstances would have it, the boss did not circle around to hit him from behind, lest the attack would have not been absorbed by the shield, and he would have taken an additional 200 damage!

Once Zhang Yang recovered he had lost more than half of his HP. The Rage he gained filled up, enabling him to chain his skills.

“Attack now!”

[Cripple Defense]!

‘-278!’ [Cripple Defense].

‘-664!’ Normal attack.

‘-2,546!’ [horizontal sweep] critical strike.

‘-1,388!’ [destructive smash].

The skills casted was almost continuous without any pause in between them. If a warrior had enough Rage, the burst damage would not be any weaker than Thief; even more so if the warrior was a Berserker, since the weapons they wielded were two-handed weapons with slower attack intervals. Their attack power was devastating high and their skills damage were much higher than a dual-wield Thief. In any PK fight, if a Berserker was able to chain their skills, they could easily kill off any class!

“Damn boy! That damage is just too much!” Fatty Han cried.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “That was the reason I wanted you to complete the S-level difficulty class quest! This is WAI!”

“WAI you mother! Don’t go all western with me! I hate in-ge-ri-su!”

Wei Yan Er could only stare at Zhang Yang with envy. Her weapon was a two handed weapon, her normal attack alone was far stronger than Zhang Yang. If she could get her hands on a 200% melee damage skill, her total attack power would increase drastically!

However, the little kid was quickly discouraged. The S-level difficulty quest was just too difficult for her. She had been an impatient and drastic little kid, not having the persistence to slowly kill off the monster in her quest!

“Hey! Noob tank! Why don’t you help me complete my class quest?” Wei Yan Er nudged Zhang Yang.

“I can’t. The quest can only be done by the character alone. Even if you bring me in, the system will automatically deny you entry to the quest zone since this has to be done alone!” If this wasn’t the case, he would have naturally helped everyone in the party to complete their S-level difficulty quest for them to obtain the best possible outcome!

“You can use my account!” said Wei Yan Er with a smug look on her face, staring at him with a patronizing look.

“...Young lady, pray tell, how do I log into your account?”

“I’ll lend you my gaming helmet! You could use my helmet to log into my account!” Wei Yan Er frowned. “How could you be our team captain when you’re this dumb?!”

“BUAHAHAHAHA!”

Everyone laughed.

This little brat was oblivious to the existence of brain waves and the fact that developers had used this scientific phenomenon to bind each account to their respective owners. It did not help that she could blatantly criticize Zhang Yang with a smug on her face.

“Insolent pest! I will burn you alive!” The boss roared. Fiery pits started to roar to life on the ground. The skill was similar to that of Bangar Crypt’s third boss.

Everyone started moving around to evade the fire.

Han Yin Xue immediately casted [regeneration] on everyone. She kept [holy shield] for later use.

“Tremble in the presence of my powers!” Laxus the Gardener let of a thunderous roar that rivaled the sound of actual thunder! A skull appeared above everyone’s head.

‘Ding! Laxus the Gardener had used [mad fear]. Lasts for 6 seconds!’

Everyone started to run around randomly in all directions, unable to control their own character. Some were screaming, some were cowering while others ran into the fire in the midst of their haphazard running.

[On Fire]: Receive 800 Fire damage every 3 seconds, for 15 seconds.

‘-2,337!’

Laxus dealt another powerful attack, immediately forcing some to recover from the [mad fear]. This skill could be dispelled early before the stipulated duration if a player took damage. The higher the damage, the faster you could recover.

The boss pupils glowed red and the huge scissors in his hands skewered through the air towards Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Laxus the Gardener has used [piercing blade]!’

[block]!

Zhang Yang could not afford to receive any damage since the healer Han Yin Xue was still on the floor cowering.

With no healer, Zhang Yang had to resort to the skills he had at hand.

Zoom!

Zhang Yang activated the sword skill effect. The sword gave off a blood red glow and Zhang Yang quickly attacked the boss with all his highest attack skill.

‘-1428!’ [destructive smash].

‘+1429!’

‘-1399!’ [horizontal sweep].

‘+1399!’

‘-657!’ Normal attack.

‘+657!’

Zhang Yang activated [lifesteal] and completely recovered all his HP in an instance.

6 seconds passed and the effect of [mad fear] had worn off. Everyone returned to their positions and attacked. Little Snow began to heal the party.

As expected of Han Yin Xue the Super Healer. With only a few healing spells, she had healed everyone till full health.

“It’s time for an IQ test!” Fatty Han cried.

“Hahaha! With your level of intelligence! What kind of questions can you ask? For 3 year old? 5 year old?”

Everyone was calm. Even after the commotion, none of them had lost their composure.

Fatty Han scoffed. “Haha! It shall be for 7 years old and above!”

“Come! Give it to us!”

“Here’s the situation. There were two men and two women stranded on an inhabited island. They waited for a rescue but there were no boats passing by! Now, it was hopeless to just wait there so they wanted to do something to pass the time; to have an orgy in the middle of the night!”

“...Fatty, are you giving us an IQ question, or are you just trying to show off your perverted-ness?”

“Hey! At least listen to what I have to say!”

“Finish it then...”

“Hmm. Hmm. Here is the problem. But they cannot just do it since they might spread STD! So, everyone started to find some rubber! But here’s the real problem! Both of them wanted to have a two-way so, here’s the question for you guys! What could they do to make sure everyone stays safe?”

“Fatty Han!” Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er screamed at Fatty Han through their teeth. Sun Xin Yu on the other side was only focused on attacking the boss with no visible changes to her expression.

Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots on the other hand were not at all offended by such indecent topics. In fact, they were actually taking the problem seriously, racking their brains.

After some time, Zhang Yang laughed. He said, “I know the answer!”

“Hey idiot! If you ever think of saying anything to corrupt my Yan Er, I’ll personally smash your face in!” warned Han Yin Xue.

Zhang Yang laughed even louder. He then said, “Alright, how do I put this delicately...Ah hah! Gloves! Man A puts on glove number 1 and then puts number 2 gloves over glove number 1! He will then erhm...hold hands with Girl A. After that, he will take off glove number 1 and hold Girl B’s hands. Man B will then put on glove number 2 and hold Girl B’s hand. After putting on glove number 1 and holds Girl A’s hand.”

“Woah there stud! Looks like my Little Yang here has the potential to be

a cheating bastard!” Fatty Han laughed.

“Alright! Enough with gloves, focus on the boss!”

Lexus tried to hit Zhang Yang with his powerful attack but Zhang Yang utilized his [block] that only needed 2 seconds to cooldown to completely turn himself invulnerable to the boss. Even after changing into his wolf form, Lexus was unable to endure the party’s immense firepower and fell defeated after a short while.

“Phew...In my own humble opinion, I think that so far, of all the bosses we’ve encountered in Hardcore Mode, this was the easiest!” said Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang smiled without commenting. The only reason he could say that was because of Zhang Yang’s unparalleled skills as a tank and a Guardian. If anyone else could replace him, and have more a than 5 second cooldown time for his [block], Hundred Shots would quickly change his mind..

“Time for the spoils!” Wei Yan Er walked up and opened the corpse.

[Gardener’s Proposal Ring] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +15

Intelligence: +15

Use: Increase Magic critical by 2%

Level requirement: 30

Everyone exchanged looks.

“How much of a slut could this Winny be?!” Fatty Han sighed.

“She could have everyone in this garden falling for her!”

“I’m telling you. Not even the TV series in Taiwan about family drama could be as complicated as this! Winny could even be eligible for the mainland’s ahem romantic action movie!”

“Attention to all bosses in the Garden! Please put on safety GLOVES when SHAKING hands with Jenny.. and put a few more on over it just in

case! You don't want to contract any HANDS disease!"

The three guys joked around and laughed heartily. Even guys could gossip sometimes. However, their jokes were wasted on Han Yin Xue as she rolled her eyes, while Sun Xin Yu remained stoic and unfazed.

The ring automatically fell into Han Yin Xue's hands. She put it on and gained a slight increase in stats.

[Smithing Recipe: Garden Scissors]

Use: Teaches you how to make a [Garden Scissors]

Requirement: Amateur Smithing.

"Is this...bad? Or good?"

"Don't mind that first. Just roll the dice and use it!"

The only players in the party who had learned Smithing were Wei Yan Er and Zhang Yang. Both of them rolled and Wei Yan Er obtained the item. She quickly patted it lovingly.

[Garden Scissors] (Special Item)

Item description: Allows an extra 1% success rate to harvest an additional herb during harvesting.

Requirement: Herbalism.

"Hmm...this is good. Sort of. Additional herbs are like additional minerals, they are considered to be rare items. Farmers would love them. Little brat, you should start making a bunch of this item and sell it. You might not earn a fortune but at least you can raise your mastery level with this recipe. Talk about killing 2 birds with 1 stone!" said Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er did not look like she heard him. She did love the concept of getting rich, but she had no patience for it. She would have died of boredom if she was somehow forced to sit down, making items for days like Zhang Yang did.

"Let's get a move on!"

"Hehehe...I have another IQ test for you lots!"

“Shut up!”

1WAI-In the conversation, Zhang Yang used English language in his speech. WAI = Why.

Chapter 104: Defense Army Captain Lothar

The party continued circling the garden in counter-clockwise. As they moved on, the minions they encountered were slowly transitioning from simple gardeners to full-on werewolves.

[Werewolf Guard] (Elite)

Level: 34

HP: 50,000

These type of monsters were technically stronger, as they had healing abilities which could heal them by 20,000 HP in one spell. However, Zhang Yang countered their healing with his [destructive smash], reducing their healing amount down to 5,000 HP.

As they cleared all the monsters along the way, they obtained 4 Black-Steel equipment, and a bunch of [Cotton Cloth].

They arrived at the third boss after 10 minutes.

[Defense Army Captain Lothar]

Level: 34

HP: 800k

“Little Yang, are we doing this fast enough? Or are we falling behind?” Fatty Han was worried that they could not obtain the First Clear Achievement as they had been fighting for at least an hour.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Don’t worry about us. I’m sure by now the other parties are still getting themselves killed over and over again at the entrance where the butler is. They do not know that they are supposed to kill the other bosses first.

This was one of Zhang Yang’s best perks in being reborn. In his previous life, Mark the Butler had killed every single exploration team that had entered, continuously, for two days! So, in protest, those “victims”

complained on the official forums, claiming that the developers had placed an undefeatable boss to stop players from advancing! However, the officials only responded by saying that everything has gone as planned and asked them to carefully think outside the box. After that, players returned to the dungeon to fight and when they could not endure it anymore, they tried skipping the first boss to fight the other bosses first. In the end, they had found out that every boss taken out reduced the butler's HP and attack. They had unintentionally found the secret to defeating the boss, swiftly claiming the First Clear Achievement.

You could say that the hardest part of the dungeon was to find out which boss to fight first!

When everyone heard Zhang Yang's explanation, everyone grinned evilly. Even Sun Xin Yu the Ice Queen curled the edges of her lips. It was a pity that no one could see her completely covered face.

"Alright! Now, it is time for me to explain the attack plan!" Zhang Yang clapped his hands together for everyone's attention.

"This boss has a hidden ability, to transform into a 'Grandmother Wolf'!"

"Grandmother... wolf? As in, the story of the little red riding hood?"

"Exactly! During the period of that form, he will ignore whoever that's holding aggro, and start chasing after a random player! This goes on until the skill's effects end, or when the unfortunate player gets killed. The selected player will turn into 'little red riding hood'. You will not be able to use any skills at all! The only option is to run for your life!"

Han Yin Xue raised an eye brow and asked. "I'm guessing that the player's movement speed will be slower than the boss."

"Correct!" Zhang Yang nodded. "That is why everyone needs to attack the boss, and stand in his path at the same time. We must try our best to slow the boss down by blocking his way! In that form, the boss will have a fixed 3,000 attack damage which will not be effected by defense value. That attack comes once every 2 seconds. There's no chance for us to heal or to tank the damage head on. Not even two healers could heal that

amount in time!”

“Other than that ‘red riding hood’ transfiguration, the other skills in his arsenal are mostly meant for the tank. You guys need not worry when it comes to that!”

“Now that everyone knows how easy this is...” Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and prepared to charge, but before he could finish his hanging sentence, Wei Yan Er screamed “Haha! Go! Go! Let’s go!”

Zhang Yang sighed. He ignored Wei Yan Er and dashed forward.

“Guards! Guards! Intruder alert!” Lothar looked around. When he could not find any other backup coming to him, he got angry and shouted as he dashed to greet Zhang Yang. “A bunch of lazy bastards! I’ll come back later to flay your skin!”

The battle started.

Lothar was a dual wielding, physical attack monster. He wielded shiny white axes in each of his hands. His attack rate was rather fast, causing Zhang Yang’s [block] effectiveness to drop tremendously, as he could only block half of the attacks. However with that speed, the attack power was also lowered. His attacks could inflict about 1,000 damage to Zhang Yang, which was nothing more than 1 healing spell for Han Yin Xue.

97%, 96%, 95%...

“Frost Night! I’ll sink my teeth into your lovely neck!” Lothar roared to the sky and immediately turned into a gray colored werewolf.

Poof!

Sun Xin Yu turned into a little girl with a red cape, a red hood, and a little bamboo basket in her hands.

‘Ding! Defense Army Captain Lothar had used [Run! Little Red Riding Hood]!’

‘Ding! Player Frost Night had received [Little Red Riding Hood Transformation]. Last for 30 seconds!’

“Run! Run now!”

Sun Xin Yu turned around and ran away as fast as she could.

Lothar's werewolf transformation only took about 1 second. He jumped off his hind paws and started to chase after Sun Xin Yu. However, the moment the boss took his first step, Zhang Yang quickly shifted and blocked off his route. When the skill [Run! Little Red Riding Hood] was in effect, the boss would only be fixed on chasing after the targeted "Little Red Riding Hood". If anyone were to stand in front of him, blocking his path, the boss would have to move around the player to proceed, delaying his time in reaching the target.

"Could we just stand around the boss to block him completely?" Han Yin Xue thought that it would be a better idea.

"No, we can't do that. If the boss could not track any paths to move on, he will jump and close the distance to his target instantly!"

Zhang Yang tried his best to block the boss path while trying to maintain his DPS on the boss.

This round, it all depended on the capability of the targeted player. Fatty Han would most definitely fail this. He could not keep up with Sun Xin Yu's pattern of running. Her path was mostly based on the boss's own movement she managed to stay behind the boss, keeping him circling endlessly. Hundred Shots and Han Yin Xue performed quite well while Wei Yan Er was even better than the both of them. She was almost on the same level as Zhang Yang!

"Not bad little brat!" Zhang Yang complimented.

"Hehe! When I was a kid, I was always good at playing the game 'Eagle catching the chicken'!" said Wei Yan Er happily.

"When you were a kid? That must have only been a few days back!" Zhang Yang laughed wildly.

"Stupid! Idiot! GYAA!" Wei Yan Er cried out in anger. "Ask my cousin if you don't believe me!"

"Oh. That's right, she had not been playing this game for a while now!" Han Yin Xue suddenly giggled. "For at least 10 days I think!"

At first Wei Yan Er nodded her head in agreement with her cousin's statement before her could hear the other half of it. But when the other half followed, she cried out and scolded, "Han Yin Xue! What are you blabbering about! I'll poke your tits later!"

"..."

30 seconds later, Lothar regained his human form and resumed the initial state of aggro prior to his transformation, attacking Zhang Yang first.

After a short fight; the boss only lost 4% HP before he used [Run! Little Red Riding Hood] for another 30 seconds. This time, the selected player was Han Yin Xue. She froze, like a deer caught between headlights, before stiffly turning around to run, her quarrel with Wei Yan Er completely forgotten.

Wei Yan Er was ecstatic! She did not even bother to block the boss. She only ran after the boss excitedly, hacking at its rear end like a slavedriver. "Haha! HIAH! Go! Wolf! Faster! Bite her! Hahaha! Bite her head off!"

Han Yin Xue ran like a madwoman, shrilly screaming at Wei Yan Er. "Stupid little brat! The next time you get turned into the red riding hood, don't expect me to heal you!"

"BLEH~~" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out, pulling down one of her lower eye lids to Han Yin Xue.

The boss would use this skill every 30 seconds or so. This battle had turned from a trading of blows into a game of tag.

80%, 70%, 60%... the boss HP dropped gradually and when the skill was activated for the fifth time, the unlucky player was Fatty Han!

Transforming into a little girl, Fatty Han ran haphazardly like a wild chicken, without looking out for the boss. It wasn't long before his random running sent him smacking into the boss!

Bang! Bang! Boom!

Since Hunters did not have any attack reduction skill, and even if they

did, Fatty Han was locked out from activating it! Han Yin Xue could not heal him in time and Fatty Han was killed off instantly.

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome had died!’

“Stupid Fatty! It’s time for you to lose some weight!”

“Haha! It’s useless for him to lose weight! He actually bumped into the boss! GAHAHAHAHA! It’s so funny!”

Everyone laughed.

However, Zhang Yang was the only one who sighed quietly. Fatty Han’s skills and capabilities were not as good as the real professionals. As the difficulty of dungeons went higher, his performance would suffer even further. He had been performing well in the past dungeon since it was only a race of attacking. But now that dungeons involved moving strategically or other dungeon gimmicks, he would not be able to keep up with the difficulty!

Furthermore, his incompetence was becoming more prevalent. So far, the party consisted of people like Hundred Shots and Sun Xin Yu. These were future superstars. Han Yin Xue had already easily beaten the S-level difficulty quest while Wei Yan Er’s performance was not as consistent. However, she could easily be among the professionals with a little bit of training. While everyone else was improving, Fatty Han was the only one who was lagging behind. If this continued, Fatty Han alone could single-handedly drag the entire team down with him!

Zhang Yang recalled his earlier epiphany today: “One must not fear the godly strength of the enemy, but the useless imbeciles and incompetent partners in battle!” Even if everyone was happily laughing and playing along with each other now, the moment Fatty Han showed signs of being the weak link of the party, people would inevitably start to have negative thoughts of him! Once it would drag on longer, the team would literally be split apart! Since Fatty Han was a prideful man, he could make a mess out of it!

What can I do about it?

Zhang Yang cracked his head to think of a solution and had finally found one. He would find a perfect opportunity to have Fatty Han lead another team!

40%, 30%, 20%!

With Fatty Han dead, the boss HP reduced slower but it was still steady. Technically, there was no time limit to kill a boss. The party could merely consist of a tank and a healer to clear this boss.

After 3 minutes, the boss fell lifeless.

After being revived by Han Yin Xue, Fatty Han walked over to the boss and kicked it furiously.

The boss had been picking out players randomly but why he was the only person who died when he was picked!? This infuriated him so.

“Pervy Fatty! You are such a noob!” Wei Yan Er spoke out directly.

Zhang Yang noted her statement, and attempted to divert the topic, “Little brat, if you’re not opening the corpse, I’m moving on now!”

“Ah! Wait! I’ll open it now!” Distracted, Wei Yan Er ignored Fatty Han and quickly headed to the boss.

[Waverly Heart] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +15

Dexterity: +15

Equip effect: Increase [take aim] damage by 50%

Level requirement: 30

Note: “Lothar, my love to you is as deep as the ocean!” by Chief Butler Mark!

“WHAT THE F*CK! WHAT THE HELL DID I JUST READ?!” Fatty Han screamed at the top of his lungs.

Chapter 105: Young Master Wrath

“What on earth is happening?!”

“There’s even a Brokeback Mountain dude here too!”

"A cheating woman, and the star of Brokeback Mountain! This is even better than that TV drama at 8pm!"

With a serious look on his face, Zhang Yang said: “I’ll say. It’s harder to sort out their relationship than to actually fight them in battle!”

Judging from the attributes of the ring, Hunters and Thieves could both benefit from it. However, [take aim] was a Hunter’s Skill, so the special effect within would not be triggered if given to a Thief. Therefore, it would make perfect sense that the ring go to either Hundred Shots or Fatty Han.

[Recipe: Dwarf Potion]

Use: Teaches you to make the Dwarf Potion.

Requirement: Amateur Alchemist.

As Zhang Yang was the only Alchemist among the group of six, naturally, no one would want to have the item. Zhang Yang pocketed the item and posted the properties of the Dwarf potion for all to view.

[Dwarf Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Incredible! You have turned into a dwarf! Effect last for 3 minutes.

Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

Level requirement: 10.

“It does not seem to have great effects, but it’s definitely great for entertainment purposes!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“It seems fun! Noob tank, please make a few hundred for me!” said Wei Yan Er, greedily assuming that Zhang Yang would actually do that.

Zhang Yang laughed dramatically before replying, “I think that you need a Growth Potion instead of a Dwarf Potion!”

“What! Why would you say that! Gyaaaah! I’ll kill you myself!” snarled

Wei Yan Er furiously.

The party then continued forward unto their journey to locate the last boss.

Along the way, the number of minions increased. Zhang Yang found it annoying to kill them off one by one. Thus, he decided to just kite them all at once. Instantly, he dragged around 20 monsters and killed them. Under the attack of so many monsters, Zhang Yang's set equipment effect triggered so quickly that it rivaled even a healer!

Zhang Yang had been "One Straight Flushing" the monsters for 3 times and before they finally arrived at the fourth boss area.

This time, it was not just one boss in the arena, but five of them! One big boss, surrounded by 4 mini-bosses. Yes, this time, the Boss was a 20-year-old youth, surrounded by four beautiful, enchanting maidens. The lad appeared to be most contented.

[Young Master Wrath] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 34

HP: 400,000

The four maidens were Victoria, Emma, Merainy and Melanie, all Level 32, with 100, 000 HP respectively!

"The number of the enemies, seem a little bit more than we expected!" Han Yin Xue stared intently at Zhang Yang with narrowed eyes, "Can you handle them?"

"Little Yang, pretty Little Snow is suspecting your capabilities! Hahaha!" Fatty Han laughed.

Without any comeback for Fatty Han, Zhang Yang simply shook his head and said, "They may seem to have upper hand on numbers, however, we do not have to face them head on! The Boss does not have any skills of his own. Our main focus should be on the four maidens, each of them possess a unique skill. If any one of them dies first, the Boss will acquire the skill of the fallen maiden, healing 25% of his health points at the same

time! Furthermore, the Boss will have 200% of the skill effects he acquired! But, the Boss will only be able to acquire 3 skills. When the forth maiden dies, the Boss will abandon the first skill he acquired.”

“So... we should take care of the boss first?” Hundred Shots asked immediately.

“No!” Zhang Yang shot down the suggestion, and explained further. “The Boss would instantly gain invincibility when he has 1% HP left if we attack him without taking out the four maidens first. The Boss would be undefeatable! ”

“Then we can only take care of the little ones first?”

“Yes!” Zhang Yang nodded, “But, we have to bear in mind that the sequence of the skills the boss acquired will determine the difficulty of the Boss battle, because each of the maidens possess different type of skills. Victoria is a healer, giving the Boss a boost of 10,000 HP for every three seconds. Emma is a Spellcaster with the [chain lightning] Skill. She can cast her skill every two seconds, hitting up to four targets at a time. The first hit would do 500 damage, before jumping to the next target, which is reduced to 400 damage, and so on. Merainy deals physical attacks with [bleeding] effects that makes her target bleed, inflicting 1,000 damage every two seconds. Melanie also deals physical attacks, but with a different effect known to be the [traumatize]. This skill basically does not pose any threat to the enemy. Only one negative effect is forced onto the target. When the target has the [bleeding] effect, the target would receive 50% more damage!”

On second thought, Zhang Yang did not want his party members to be too dependable on him, so unlike his usual procedure of laying out a strategy after his briefings he remained silent this time. After all, Zhang Yang only got to Level 179 in his previous life, not to mention that there were more dungeons with higher difficulties to be challenged in the future. If the party members never start thinking up battle strategies, Zhang Yang was certain that it would be a disaster by then.

“So what do you guys think? Who do we start on first then?”

“We take down the healer first! Healing once gives it 10,000 HP, and it would become 20,000 HP when the Boss acquires it. So we should force the Boss to abandon this skill in the end by the time the maidens are dead!” Fatty Han seemed confident in his decision.

“Hmm.” Hundred Shots nodded to agree with Fatty Han.

Well, it is a common strategy to take out the healer first.

“Take out Merainy first, then Melanie!” Sun Xin Yu cut in. She fell silent soon after as they turned to her.

Wei Yan Er clasped her hands together in agreement, “True, either Merainy or Melanie should be taken out first, and leave one of them to be killed last. The [bleeding] effect increases 100% damage every time it is cast. If one skill is stacked one with another, it would be 4,000 HP lost in a single tick. Any more stacks than that would kill off our noob tank!”

Zhang Yang silently agreed. To take down this Boss, the most important thing was to prevent the Boss from having both [bleeding] and [traumatize] skills. Otherwise, any tank below Level 40 would never make it!

Han Yin Xue joined in and said, “Melainie’s [traumatize] alone could not do much damage to as compared to the [bleeding] effect that Merainy has. So letting the Boss acquire the skill for a bit longer will not become a problem for us!”

“Fatty and Hundred Shots, both of you are not seeing the big picture! Hahaha!” Zhang Yang laughed hard. “Indeed, we should kill both Merainy and Melanie, either first or last. Killing Merainy first would be a bit easier then killing Melanie first!”

Wei Yan Er was pleased with her idea being recognized by Zhang Yang. She made a funny looking face at Fatty Han and Hundred Shots, and she giggled.

“Take out Merainy first, and then we take out Emma, then the healer Victoria. We should leave Melanie as the last to kill!” Zhang Yang made a final statement before letting the party rush into battle.

“The healing spell can be interrupted, so, those who have their interruption skills ready to cast, just do it! Better than none!”

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword. “Little Snow, cast a shield on me. I’m going in!”

Han Yin Xue waved her hand, casting [holy shield] on Zhang Yang. A translucent magical shield appeared on his character.

Zhang Yang charged forward, in just an instant, he was already within the aggro range of those monsters!

”Assassins! Assassins are here! Protect the Young Master!” The four maidens cried out loud, charging towards Zhang Yang.

As the distance got closer, Zhang Yang activated [charge] and dashed toward Merainy. With a full swing of his sword, he dealt a damage of 578. As his Rage gauge increased to 41, he swept his [horizontal sweep] outwardly, inflicting a series damage that exceeded a thousand damage.

Even though they have seen it many times, everyone would still be lost in awe of his devastating melee combo.

“That skill is just too strong! 200% melee damage with area effect! That’s insane!”

“Wuwuwu. Noob tank, I want to use [horizontal sweep] too!” Wei Yen Er cried out.

Zhang Yang used [block], quickly following up with [thunder strike], locking on the aggro. After that, he turned his focus to Melanie. He stacked five layers of [Cripple Defense] and a series of [destructive strike] to reduce the healing rate.

Victoria had no physical attacks. When the battle commenced, she first healed Young Master Wrath and then she turned towards Merainy, healing her like no tomorrow.

Pow pow pow!

Every other monster landed their attacks on Zhang Yang. [chain lightning], [bleeding], with a number of additional melee attacks lit up the

battle. However, the damages from the minions were weaker, and since the Boss was known as a spoiled young master who did not possess any skills of his own, his attacks were as weak as the other monsters. There was nothing to worry about.

Everyone else locked their target at Merainy and attacked with everything they had!

Zhang Yang intentionally did not remind the party about interrupting the healer. The three party members with the skills to interrupt did not disappoint Zhang Yang, as they had already discussed on the chain of order on whose turn was it when it came to interrupting. The interruption started with Fatty Han as the first, secondly by Hundred Shots, followed by Sun Xin Yu.

All skills involved had the effect to interrupt, however, it was clear to see the difference of skill levels and the experience among the party members through the manner and the timing of their skills.

Fatty Han used his skills to interrupt the moment he saw the healer starting to cast the healing spell; on the other hand, Hundred Shots waited for the maiden's progress bar to be half-filled before he interrupted, while Sun Xin Yu would interrupt at the exact moment when Victoria finish reading the spell.

The three of them had different senses.

It did not matter if it was [silencing shot] or [low kick], the effects were similar. The targets would be interrupted from casting their spells, making them unable to cast their spells again for the next three seconds!

As it took 3 seconds for Victoria to chant the spell before casting it, Fatty Han only managed to delay the monster from healing for 3 seconds since he interrupted almost instantly. Hundred Shots would score at least 4 seconds as he waited for Victoria to read the spell for approximately 1 second. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu would not only manage to counter Victoria for 3 seconds, but also causing her to waste almost 3 seconds as she interrupted after the maiden almost finished reading the spell, delaying her for up to almost 6 seconds!

Zhang Yang could not be any prouder. As expected of the Queen of Shadow Dance!

With a 75% decrease in healing effect after receiving [destructive smash], Victoria could only heal her target by 2,500 HP. It was obvious that the healing effect was thoroughly surpassed by the damage done by Zhang Yang and his party members! With or without healing, Merainy's HP dropped as fast as an open hydrant!

After approximately 100 seconds, Merainy had finally been taken down to zero! She let out a scream, saying, "Young master, allow me to give you my last drop of blood to fulfill my loyalty to you!"

Boom!

She transformed into a pillar of light and merged into the forehead of the Young Master Wrath.

"Ding! Merainy has used [dying loyalty]!"

"Ding! The Young Master Wrath has acquired a new skill: [bleeding], and under his grief, the effect of [bleeding] has increased by 100%!"

With one maiden down, the party felt the sense of urgency! With the [bleeding] effect increasing by 100%, Zhang Yang would receive double the damage from [bleeding]! That was 1,600 damage every tick!

Everyone stuck to the plan. They immediately turned their assaults toward Emma.

In no time, Emma suffered the same fate as Merainy.

"Young Master, allow me to offer you my last drop of blood to prove my loyalty to you!"

"..."

The similar scenario as the previous maiden unfolded, continuing with Victoria, lastly followed by Melanie.

As mentioned earlier, when the four maidens are dead, the Boss would regain 25% of his full health. So it was expected that the Young Master Wrath would be at full health again when they went up against him after

all the maidens had fallen!

The Boss had 3 skills at the moment: [healing], [lightning chain], and [traumatize].

Proceeding into stage 2, let the battle begin!

Chapter 106: Irresistible

“Unforgivable Bandits! You killed all my beloved maidens! I shall rip you all into tiny pieces that even God cannot count!” Young Master Wrath let out a roar that would awaken the gods in the heavens, as his body began to increase in mass, “Plak Pak Plak”, the tearing of his clothes as his body bulged out revealed that there were dark long hairs covering his entire body. The handsome, pretty boy’s face instantly transformed into an enormous Werewolf!

“Ding! Engulfed by rage, Young Master Wrath transformed into his werewolf form, his attack interval decreased by 50%!”

“Rawgh -----!” The Young Master Werewolf mindlessly charged towards Zhang Yang with his deadly, powerful claws. Leaving Zhang Yang with no other options, Zhang Yang back-pedaled rapidly, evading the deadly attack by a paper-thin margin. At the same instant, he swung his sword in retaliation, managing to make a scratch on the Boss.

Fatty Han decided to step up on the assault! He started to unleash his heavy skills onto the Boss!

“Rawh! Rawh! Raaawwh!” The Young Master Werewolf kept on roaring in rage, as if he was speaking in the language of the werewolves. He ceased on his melee attacks and switched to the [chain lightning] skill.

2 breaths later, he shot out a bolt of white thunder from his hands. The blazing thunder struck Zhang Yang, inflicting a damage of 800. The thunder chained next onto Sun Xin Yu, inflicting a damage of 900. The bolt leaped at Wei Yan Er, with the damage decreasing to 800. Lastly, the attack landed on Han Yin Xue, the final strike diminished to only 700.

After the chain attack, Wei Yan Er hastily cast [holy prayer] on Zhang Yang, healing him by 600 HP. She quickly did the same to the other victims of the [chain lightning]. She tossed [regeneration] on the remaining players off-handedly, keeping their HP bars filled. Showing great foresight, she had reserved her [holy shield] as a last resort.

Although Young Master Wrath had indeed become mighty, spurred on

by the demise of his harem, his hit points were his Achilles Heel. 400,000 hit points was simply not enough to go against Zhang Yang and his party. Phase two had only begun for about 30 seconds, and the hit points of the Boss had already been reduced to 88%!

“Rawh! Rawh! Rawh! Raawwhh!” As the Boss let out another series of intimidating roars, a progress bar appeared right below his neck! He was trying to cast [healing]!

With immediate reaction, Fatty Han shot a [silencing shot] over to the Boss, interrupting the boss from chanting.

Young Master Wrath was even further enraged. He bounded towards Zhang Yang slashing wildly with his claws. He immediately switched back to chanting his [chain lightning].

So this were the disadvantages for having multiple skills! If the Boss focused only on chanting [healing], although he cannot avoid being pushed around, he could buy himself more time! However, due to having 3 different skills in the game, the game setting has set up the Boss to use all three skills circularly!

Even if the enemies in this game had been equipped with a sophisticated AI, and Bosses acting almost humanly, the sequence was set as so! So, if the Boss was interrupted while chanting [heal], he would switch to a few melee combo attacks, and then he would use [chain lightning], before enhancing his attacks with [traumatize]. The Boss would repeat the process all over, starting from [healing] again!

The whole process only takes 5 to 6 seconds long, of course.

The second cycle of [healing] by the Young Master Wrath was interrupted by Hundred Shots, and the third round of [healing] was interrupted by Sun Xin Yu. However, when it came to the forth cycle, Fatty Han was unable to follow up. His [silencing shot] was still under cooling down period of 9 seconds. That was it! The Boss finally got his opportunity! It was as if the Boss had been suffering from constipation for the last 6 months, and that moment of relief was torrential!

“+5,000!”

It was quite a high recovery amount for the Boss. Still, the special effect of [destructive strike] had removed 75% of the healing effect, therefore, what that would have granted the boss 20,000HP only gave him 5,000HP now.

However, the healing rate of 5,000HP was already enough to take away the breaths of all the Priests and the Sacred Knights! Still, considering the fact that the [healing] spell could only be triggered successfully every 30 seconds, the healing rate per second was barely over 200! The damage output from the party was over 400! His attempt to heal himself was just like pouring a cup of water into a burning cart of firewood!

The HP bar continued dropping! 70%, 60%, 50%!

“Kill! Kill! Kill! Don’t hold back now! Give it all you got!” Fatty Han spammed his [beast link] at a rate that it was perpetually kept on cooldown! Relying on his Level 30 class’ passive skill, the damage he gave was pretty high indeed!

“Hey Fatty, why are you so pumped up all of a sudden? Did the boss poke your ass?”

“F**k this pretty face! I only have one pretty lady on my side, and this pretty boy has, wait... had four! I won’t forgive him!”

Everyone could only roll their eyes, to think that Fatty Han would be jealous of such a matter!

“Wow, Fatty is doing great... He is now the third on the damage statistics board!” Zhang Yang was surprised.

Wei Yan Er hurriedly checked on the list upon hearing that. Her jaw dropped.

[Damage Statistics]

Zhan Yu, 25%

Frost Night, 19%

Slim and Handsome, 19%

Drizzler, 19%

Hundred Shots, 18%

It made sense for Zhang Yang to be in the first place of the list, for Zhang Yang cleared a large number of weaker monsters with [horizontal sweep] and [thunder strike] during the Stage 1 battle, picking up lots of extra high damage points.

What about Sun Xin Yu? She did not use [blade dance] even once, how could she be one rank ahead? Wei Yan Er could not comprehend how.

Furthermore, Wei Yan Er managed to use [tornado cleave] for a few times during the Stage 1 battle, similarly picking up some extra damage points. However, her ranking was beaten by Sun Xin Yu, one rank above her.

At that very moment, Wei Yan Er felt the heat of adrenaline and anger, swinging her heavy mace with more gusto than ever! Her fury could not be any clearer! “You stupid Boss! I am going to crush you into pieces! Then I’ll crush those pieces into pancake!”

Good camaraderie did not count anymore when it came to a competitive situation! Every party member was fighting for their pride, with no one willing to be one step back. Every point counted, as some tried to surpass the players above their ranking. Likewise, those who were ahead were equally unwilling in letting those behind them catch up!

The unfortunate werewolf boss was a collateral, caught in the midst of this internal conflict. He was beaten to the point where he could only scream miserably, hardly able to retaliate! Instead of unleashing his wrath, he became the very punching bag for everyone to unleash their ire onto.

The HP bar dropped, going down to 30%!

20%!

10%!

0%!

Finally, the last trace of HP vanished! Letting out a roar, loud and long, Young Master Wrath collapsed in an earth-shaking heap. He was finally

relieved of his misery!

Looking at Damage Ranking Report again, the results were to be expected. Zhang Yang is still in the first place of the list, but his percentage of damage dealt has dropped to 22%.

Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu was the close runner-up, with 21% of total damage dealt. Fatty Han was overtaken by Wei Yan Er, falling to rank number 4. He only managed to score 19% of the total damage dealt. Wei Yan Er managed to climb up to the third place, scoring 20% of the total damage dealt. As usual, Hundred Shots was last in the ranking report, scoring only 18% of the total damage dealt.

Everyone knew Sun Xin Yu had a well-earned reputation. The moment she changed into top-tier gears, she would become the ultimate Queen of Shadowdance that Zhang Yang vividly remembered from his past!

“Sister Sun, how could you always be so awesome?” Wei Yan Er had to ask.

Sun Xin Yu, surprisingly did not ignore her, and posted a skill description for the others to see. “When I was Level 5, I did a secret mission and I was rewarded with this skill!”

[rear attacks]: Instantly attack the target with two weapons on both hands, dealing 150% damage of both primary and secondary weapons in melee attacks. User must be behind the target. Gain two consecutive combo strikes. Requirement: Dagger. Cost: 20 Stamina. Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

With tears rolling in her eyes, Wei Yan Er complained “How come all of you guys have these skills from secret missions? Sister Sun has hers, noob tank has one, even this wretched fatty” - she pointed a shaking finger- “has one!”

“Little Yan Er, why did you have to put it that way? What do you mean that even I have one! I am almighty! Completing a few secret missions was a piece of cake!” Fatty Han boldly proclaimed.

“Hmph! I don’t give a sh*t!”

“Come on, little one. It’s time to look at our loot!” Zhang Yang waves his hands at Wei Yan Er.

Wei Yan Er pulled a funny face at Fatty Han, as she would always. Then, she trotted to the dead body of the Boss for the loot.

[Lovely Mantle] (Gray-Silver, Cape)

Vitality: +20

Strength: +10

Equip: Each normal attack has 10% chance to add 20 strength points for 5 seconds.

Level requirement: 30

Note: “Sewn by the four maidens thoroughly, full of their love!”

“I already have a [White Bone Cloak], you guys can go for it!” said Wei Yan Er while curling her lips.

An equipment that purely increased strength was not what a hunter or a thief would want. Therefore, Zhang Yang took the mantle without any hassle.

[The Maiden’s Long Dress] (White-Wood, Cloth Armor)

Equip: Makes you into a cute maiden.

Level requirement: 1

Requirement: Female

“Holy cow! The uniform of seduction!” Fatty Han’s eyes bulged at the sight of it!

Zhang Yang turned to the girls. “Would any one of you like to have it?”

Both Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er shook their heads instantly. So Zhang Yang turned to Sun Xin Yu. As expected, the woman stared at him with a cold glare, pulling her daggers halfway from their respective sheaths.

“Xing!”

“You guys have no appreciation for treasure! Abandoning such a great

piece of fabric!” Fatty Han shook his head dejectedly.

“Cheh! You fat shit! If you like it so much, why not wear it on your own!”

“You guys can forget it then. I can use as a gift for someone!” Since all three of the girls did not want it, Fatty Han benefited greatly from it. It was a wonder whom he would give it to. His new girlfriend, or the few so-called “Soul mates” back in the Feet Wash City? They could only wait and see.

“Finally, we have cleared the small minions, shall we move on to the final Boss then?”

“The Head Butlers of Brokeback Mountain!”

“Very witty...”

If the party went straight ahead, the distance to the final Boss would be shorter, but they would have to take on a few waves of smaller monsters. On the other hand, if they doubled back on the path they’ve already taken, they would need to walk further, but there won’t be any pesky monsters.

After having some thoughts about it, Zhang Yang has finally decided, “It is better to take the shorter route, kill everything in our path! We would gain experience points, additional items and equipment as well!”

“And also coins!” Wei Yan Er added on.

“Yes, coins!” Zhang Yang nodded his head to express his agreement with Yan Er.

The party continued to push forward. After seven or eight waves of monsters, they arrived at the center of the garden, a plaza!

The Head of Butlers Mark remained where he was, languishing on the edge of the fountain pool, with his face filled with tranquillity, like the old aristocrat he was.

[The Head of Butlers Mack] (Gray-Silver Rank Boss)

Level: 34

HP: 1,000,000

The boss's HP had decreased considerably, comparing to the first time when they freshly stepped in. It was just about as much as the HP of Marzerway in Hardcore Mode.

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief, "This Boss does massive damage at melee range, inflicting a debuff that decreases healing effects on tankers by 50%. So, I say we keep an eye on the level of healing while Little Snow reserves her shield! That shield absorbs damage, and has nothing to do with healing at all. It should not suffer as much as healing effects!"

"The boss also tends to knock back the player who holds the most aggro, dealing a certain amount of damage. More importantly, it also decreases the aggro held by his target by 50%!" Zhang Yang let out a deep breath before he continued, "Well, hunters have [fake death] and Thieves, their [vanish] to withdraw themselves from battle to clear their own aggro. So that leaves you, Drizzler, in a dangerous situation!"

"Hahaha! Well, if you fail to keep his aggro onto you, I am going to break your skull myself!" Wei Yan Er cracked her knuckles while saying it.

To be able to keep the Boss at bay, two tanks were required at the scene. But Zhang Yang just could not find any tank who could keep up with the aggro of Sun Xin Yu and the remaining party members. Adding one additional member without the capability to do that would be a completely moot!

"Dear Drizzler, if you do not wish to die, focus on the aggro bar. Do not let it exceed 50% of my aggro!"

Chapter 107: The Head of Butlers Mack

“Those who are in the same Dungeon as we are now, we are going to take on The Head of Butlers Mack!” It was a sudden announcement posted by Fatty Han in the region channel.

“F*ck off! What are you, a newscaster? Take out the Boss first, duh! ”

“To think that the amazing Lone Desert Smoke is also stuck at the First Boss like we are!”

“Kill! Carry on!”

“Well, shit. What is wrong with the game company? Are they out of their minds? A boss with this much HP, and sky-high damage! It’s impossible for anyone to take it!”

That one comment made by Fatty Han was akin to throwing a fat boulder into a calm lake, stirring up murky waves that broke the surface. The channel became lively all of a sudden! Other parties did not know that they had to go through four mini bosses to be able to stand up to this Boss. Everyone had already been wiped out by this particular Boss dozens of times over!

Repeatedly being defeated, making no progress whatsoever, would certainly infuriate anyone. A comment like that from Fatty Han would certainly provoke a large number of critics!

“You are so mean, wretched fatty!” Wei Yan Er smiled grimly.

Fatty Han had no intention to give in, “So what?”

“Now, everyone will know the methods and techniques to countering this Boss when we are done!” Zhang Yang said it all. If they were remotely intelligent, the other guilds would hopefully catch on Fatty’s comment, and possibly figure out that there were other ways around that butler boss. That meant they could challenge the other Bosses first without going through Head of Butlers Mack.

Wei Yan Er was upset, “You are one hell of a fool, you wretched fat f*ck!”

Fatty Han only remained dumbstruck, “...”

“It is not that a big deal as long as we are the first to clear it!” Zhang Yang pulled out his long sword, “To hell with this! Let’s begin!”

He charged straight into the final battle.

The range of the aggro vision of The Head of Butlers Mack seemed to be vast. From afar, he already detected Zhang Yang’s intrusion! He laughed, “Welcome to the Shadowmoon Castle! Or should I say, you are NOT welcome! How rude, intruding such a beautiful place like that! As a butler must fulfill his duty, I hereby will tear you all into pieces, and make use of the pieces into the main dishes for dinner!”

Zhang Yang bulldozed through with a [charge], smashing into the Boss, following up with a backhanded swing of his blade as he pirouetted on his heels, striking the Boss with ‘-558’ damage. He finished up with [Cripple Defense].

“What in the world man! This old man is disgusting! Eating human flesh? Eww!” Wei Yan Er followed closely behind Zhang Yang, burning with rage! Her red eyes devilishly narrow, she focused so hard on putting everything she had to the point that she had totally forgotten Zhang Yang’s advice! She did not even spare a glance on the Aggro Bar!

The assault was chaotic, lighting up the boss like a Christmas tree!

Before this battle, everyone had been reserving their energy. When this battle commenced, everyone let loose. They gave it their full power, increasing their damage in any way they could, not letting any opportunity go wasted. They were competing for the damage ranking boards!

Sun Xin Yu was performing on par with Zhang Yang, putting her new equipment to use. She had also acquired a secret mission’s skill that provided a high damage output! More importantly, Zhang Yang was a Guardian, a class built to hold shields as their secondary weapon. Unlike any thief build capable of dual wielding, or a Berserker class with two-handed weapons, Zhang Yang was meant for a very different role.

To have a powerful amount of resistance and defense, one must sacrifice

a certain amount of damage output. You would only be left with one hand to strike the enemy with. His skills and equipment used were to make up for his handicap in terms of offense. Now he was being surpassed!

Looking at the damage statistics, Sun Xin Yu had surpassed him by about 1%. Zhang Yang knew, deep down in his heart, that was natural for him to lose to her. When equally well-equipped, Guardians should end up with the lowest damage output among all classes. But still, he could feel it, the unwillingness to lose to others!

Level 100! Zhang Yang was looking forward to it so much! When the first players in their respective classes and jobs reached level 100, they would acquire an “Inheritance”. The inheritance exclusively only for Warrior classes was called the “God of War”. Benefiting exceptionally well from it, Guardians could now equip a two-handed melee weapon in one hand, while still equipping a shield as a secondary!

Having this inheritance would wipe away the intrinsic weakness of Guardian, they would be able to produce a damage output that will not lose to other classes!

In Zhang Yang’s previous game, the inheritance of “God of War” was acquired by God of Flame Roger from the North-America server. That had led him to secure his place as the world’s number 1 Warrior in the game! Even the skills and the will of One Sword Stroke had no place when placed in the front of the almighty inheritance, the “God of War”!

Several forms of Inheritance happened very often, however, each of the classes had only one true inheritance. In the vast servers of the game that hosted eight continents with billions of players, only 6 lucky players would acquire the one and only Unique inheritance. Other than the one and only Unique inheritance, there were others. Star-tiered inheritance and Moon-tiered inheritance were below the Unique inheritance, with Star being the higher tier. Still, whichever inheritance it was, they were all sacred and rare, not to mention extremely difficult to get. It was definitely as hard as completing a main quest!

In the previous game, Zhang Yang had managed to acquire a Moon-tier

inheritance, “King Kong”. In the last part of the mission, he had to summon 5,000 high-tiered members of the Clear Water Guild to slay the mission boss, “The King Kong”! The guild members had unleashed all of their might on the boss for one full day, taking many casualties before they finally put the mighty boss down. They were lucky that the game had a Gaming Capsule. In addition to that, the in-game time and the real time had a difference by the ratio of 3 to 1. If not for these factors, they would not have taken out the boss at all.

Pulling his focus back on what was right in front of him, Zhang Yang swung his blade purposefully, dealing blow after lethal blow.

“Curse you, intruders!” without any warning, the butler pointed his finger right at Zhang Yang, and a dark bolt shot out, striking him almost instantly.

‘Ding! You are affected by the [black curse]! Your healing rate has been decreased by 50%!’

Following the prompt voice by the system, the debuff symbol popped up, at the top of Zhang Yang’s head.

With a wave of her hands, Han Yin Xue put [holy shield] onto Zhang Yang, ready to cast [heal].

Zhang Yang did a quick survey of the battle and noticed something most unfavorable. “Little brat, stop using skills if you don’t want to die! Use normal attack!” Zhang Yang looked at the aggro bar, his aggro value may currently be twice as much as Sun Xin Yu’s, but it would be halved when the boss used [backward shock] on him. At this rate, the boss would only use [backward shock] on him for another two times at most. After that, the boss would most probably switch his target to the one person who could not clear her aggro bar, Wei Yan Er.

How would she notice when she was single-mindedly giving the boss her all? She did not earlier on, but her hands were saying otherwise, as she swung blow after blow relentlessly!

“I am going to smash you in little pieces that even your mom won’t be able to tell!” The butler yelled, exploding with a fist that flew at Zhang

Yang's face! Bam! It was a concussive blast that sent Zhang Yang 5 meters backward!

‘Ding! You are affected by the [backward shock] effect!’

Without loosening up, Zhang Yang immediately used [charge] to rush back to his former position. He took the opportunity to glance at the aggro bar. Currently, his aggro value exceeded the number 2 in rank, Sun Xin Yu by just a little!

“[backward shock] will happen once every 2 minutes. For the coming 110 seconds, Thieves can use [vanish] while hunters can use [fake death] to clear your aggro up.”

Wei Yan Er was never mentioned, so she spoke up, “How about me?”

“Wait for death to come!”

“Oh, so that's how it is now huh, you shitty noob tank! Picking on me for revenge now!” she continued to cry out loud.

“My little Drizzler, didn't I tell you to hold back a little? You did not listen!”

80%, 70%, 60%, the HP bar was dropping rapidly! Even though the boss had unusually thick skin, with everyone hitting so hard, the HP loss suffered by the boss was outrageous!

“Begone! You maggots!” Head of Butlers Mack used his [backward shock] once again!

At that instant, the aggro value on everyone has changed. Sun Xin Yu, Fatty Han, and Hundred Shots used their respective skills to clear their respective aggro, leaving them out of the boss' consideration. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was in a tight pinch! Her aggro was even higher than Zhang Yang's, making her the primary target of the boss!

‘-3129’

With one very heavy and powerful punch, the butler pummelled Wei Yan Er, dealing serious damage.

“Cousin, heal me!” Wei Yan Er maintained her composure, knowing that

whenever she received a large amount of damage, her rage gauge would fill up quickly, giving her the opportunity to spam her skills consecutively.

‘+812’

It was Han Yin Xue’s attempt of healing Wei Yan Er. However, it was no good. Her HP could not be restored! What she could do was to hold on for a few seconds before she went down to the ground.

“Argh... Noob tank! You suck big time! You couldn’t even hold the aggro for me! I hate you!” Wei Yan Er could only lie on the ground like a ragged doll, but it did not stop her from talking.

“Hey, girl! If I hear another f*cking word from your mouth, you don’t get to touch the corpse for loots!” Those words had a profound effect on her.

She instantly kept her mouth shut.

Now short of one powerful attacker, the damage done by the party decreased dramatically. They were fortunate though, as their healer was powerful enough to hold on.

Truth to be told, taking out the four mini bosses first did make it easier for them to fight the butler. Even though the decrease in healing rate and the aggro management was a little annoying deal with, it was nothing that a strong party like them, familiar to carefully planned tactics and strategies, couldn’t handle. This battle was actually easier than the battles they had previously fought with some bosses.

30%, 20%, 10%.....

The HP bar of the final boss continued plummeting! Just as the HP bar touched 10%, the boss transformed into a werewolf! It may have seemed terrifying, but it was more of a death threat. As he unleashed his final assault, Zhang Yang activated [shield wall] to avoid being crushed to death by him.

‘Ding! You and your party members have obtained the First Clear Achievement of Shadowmoon Castle: The Garden Area (Hardcore Mode). As the Captain, please provide the name of your party to be registered on to the Hardcore Mode First Clear list.’

Zhang Yang entered “Lone Desert Smoke”, and the screen was filled with red announcements.

Just as before, they all acquired another new skill point, 10 gold coins and 500 alliance reputation each as rewards.

The guild channel burst into life.

“That’s my beloved guild leader! Acquiring the title for first clear of the dungeon in such short notice!”

“Who was it talking about glory and dominance? Kiss my ass! Well, those guilds are nothing before us, the Lone Desert Smoke!”

“Zhan Yu, please accept me, please have me!”

Han Yin Xue tried hard to stop herself from smiling and glanced sideways at Zhang Yang, “Never expected you to be so favored by others.”

“Pretty Snow, you have no idea at all! Our Yang boy has no interest in girls who are in their 20s, rather, he is into well-developed ladies in shining armor! With all his heart!” Ogling at the hot body of Han Yin Xue without conservation, Fatty Han continued to speak, “He loves mature ladies with incredible hot bodies, just like you. It’s simply irresistible, it keeps him up all night!”

Zhang Yang knew Fatty Han better. That was Fatty Han’s attempt at creating a chance for Zhang Yang to hook up with Little Snow! ----- Well, a plain face like hers would not really matter. Once you’re in bed with the lights out, the shape of the body would be all that mattered!

“Fatty, you misused the pronoun!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily, thinking to himself. Come on, you fat f*ck, don’t try to be such a lousy matchmaker, I already have someone in my heart!

“Hmph hmph hmph, if you want to hit on my cousin, you will have to go through me!” Wei Yan Er quickly rescued her cousin, as she stepped in between them, with her nose wrinkled up and arms crossed.

Chapter 108: So I See

Lone Desert Smoke has done it again! They got the First Clear Achievement again!

The stream of announcements had sent many parties who were exploring new Dungeons into shock!

What in the world was happening?

During the series of challenges in the previous Hardcore Mode Dungeons, they could see a realistic gap between them and Lone Desert Smoke, even if they ultimately lost. They had managed to push forward until the boss transformed into the fifth stage. If it wasn't for the bloody [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], Lone Desert Smoke would never have stood a chance in finishing the battle. By doing so, the Lone Desert Smoke claimed the First Clear Achievement.

But this time around...there were no excuses! They had not even gone past the first boss yet! How could their party take out 5 bosses? Was there really such a big gap between their capabilities?

Furthermore, they only used 6 players to clear the whole dungeon! The elites from the larger guilds who took pride in their abilities begun to question themselves. Were they really elites in the end? Compared to those formidable members in the Lone Desert Smoke, they were not even half of what they were!

It was such a blow on their pride!

.....

Many of them were infuriated beyond words.

“How can this be? Is our strength so far behind Zhan Yu and his party members?” Perfumed Water was so surprised.

Thorny Rose murmured, “Is that cheap liar really that powerful?”

“No way -----” Snow Seeker's pretty eyes widened in realization. “Did any of you notice? It was about 10 minutes ago when that Fatty Hunter

made an announcement in the region. 10 minutes!”

“Oh, that wretched Fatty?” Thorny Rose could not help herself, shivering from head to toe, “That disgusting Fatty that does have a pair of disgusting eyes. I remember the last time he checked me out, from top to bottom, it gave me such a fright! So I blacklisted him ever since!”

In God’s Miracle, once a player blacklisted another player, that player would not be able to see any news or messages sent by the marked player.

“Me too!”

“So did I!”

A series of voices rose up, 7 out of 10 girls there had blacklisted Fatty Han! If he ever found out about this, would Fatty Han take pride in his great “influence”, or would he burst into tears knowing that he was quickly becoming a renowned pervert!

Snow Seeker smiled bitterly, “The Fatty did mention that they were just about to challenge that Head of Butlers Mack! It sounded like they just got into the dungeon, simply declaring that they were joining the race for the First Clear title! Now that I think of it, there’s more to it than that! This could only mean... what do you guys think about it?”

White Orchid reacted instantly, “Oh! I get it! If the Fatty did not lie, they must have already taken down the other 4 bosses before that!”

Thorny Rose was stumped. “If the boss is over that area, how did they get pass without luring the boss?”

“You will find out once you’ve tried!” Snow Seeker made a prompt decision to walk along the road located at their right hand side. Moments later, she made it into another small alley.

Not even a glance in her direction!

Thorny Rose and the others followed through. They realized that none of them had startled the boss!

“So, it is real! We can make it without a fight!”

And so, they pushed forward, clearing a path straight to the second boss

Venneya the Maid, the unfaithful girl.

“Winny the Maid, Master Waller's Lover, Level 34, 800,000 HP!”
Moonlight Dancer read out the attributes of the boss.

“So I see!” all of the girls exclaimed!

So this is how it really is! The first boss had 3,000,000 HP, but the second boss only has 800,000 HP, isn't this obvious?

“Sister Snow, you're really brilliant. It didn't take you long to see through their deceit!” Thorny Rose made no attempt at hiding her emotions, admiring and worshiping Snow Seeker. She continued, “Unlike me, having only big boobies without -----“

“Stop it right there! Stop! Thorny Rose, you have no brain, that part is true. But having big boobs? Oh please... do you want to talk about your D-cups in front of Sister Snow's F-cup? B*tch, please. It's totally obvious that yours are no match to hers!” Perfumed Water snapped.

Thorny Rose was furious, “You little c*nt, you better watch out, or I will put a stopper to that hole beneath your underwear with a gigantic cork and turn you into an old virgin for the rest of your life!”

Women seemed to turn into entirely different creatures when no men were around.

“ ... ”

“So I see!”

As for the Sky High guild, they have also discovered that there was a hidden path that led them straight for the Head of the Butlers Mack, defeating the other 4 bosses on their way.

“Guild master, from the looks of it, Zhan Yu and his gang are not that amazing after all. All they did was discovering the shortcut!” one of the guild members spoke out dejectedly.

Sky Shaman shook his head slowly, “If not for the fat Hunter saying it out loud in the channel, we would have never even found out about the shortcut. So, tell me. How long would we have been stuck with the first

boss before we even know that there's a shortcut?"

"Well..."

"We must not be envious of others out of nothing. We must first be clear of our strength when compared to theirs. Then, only can we improve ourselves and overcome our own weaknesses, to catch up or even surpass them! Arrogance that ignore the strength of our rivals would only make us weaker!" Sky Shaman spoke with great insight.

The words were spoken with absolute sincerity. Sky High guild has been known to be one of the top guilds in the world. As many in-game players had been role-playing as powerful leaders for a long run, they might have become a little arrogant in their subconscious.

And from the looks of it, these people needed a slap to wake up and thanks to the Lone Desert Smoke, it happened!

Deep in thought, Sky Shaman could not help himself and wondered, "But, how did Zhan Yu and his party discover the shortcut to go around the first boss? All the Official forum did was to state that there are 5 bosses in this dungeon, and no further explanation was given! 3,000,000 HP is definitely too much for any party to handle. Normally, players would explore for alternatives in taking down the boss, thinking that their reason of failing was because they have not discover the correct ways to defeat the boss! It is just common sense for any of us! But why... why can they think so dynamically, so soon?"

"Guild Master, could there be a Beta player among them?" one of the guild member took a wild guess.

"A Beta player?" Sky Shaman widened his eyes for an instant, remembering that he had heard about it before, from special channels. He knew that a small number of players took part in the beta test before! But, logically speaking, these beta players should not be even allowed to participate in the official release of the game. If they did, they would understand the game so much more due to their prior knowledge of the game. They could simply conquer all secret missions, main missions, becoming the kings and queens at the front line of the game! It would be

so unfair!

The balance of the game would be broken! The Dreamtech company was not so foolish as to ruin their epic game in such manner!

“So what is it then?”

A big question mark etched itself deep within Sky Shaman’s heart.

“ ... ”

“So...that’s how it is!”

The moment they saw the boss again after circling around the map and killing everything else, the members of The Dominator saw the simplicity of the dungeon!

“How could we not see it? We are such morons!” Humbly Gentleman spat on the ground, “He is damn lucky! I can’t believe he found the correct method for this so fast! F*ck! Why must it always him being the first at getting the good stuff! [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]... “

Thinking about the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] scam again, Humbly Gentleman was overwhelmed with feelings of hatred, rage, jealous and even envy of Zhang Yang!

It was a huge market! A truly huge one!

4 gold coins for a bottle, what a rip-off!

Humbly Gentleman had no idea how much Zhang Yang could earn exactly, but there was one thing to be sure of, Zhang Yang was going to make a fortune out of it!

Zhang Yang must not be left to feel full of himself!

Humbly Gentleman narrowed his eyes, before turning his head around, “Sky Key, after we clear the dungeon, I want you to contact with that ruthless bunch, Sword and Fire Mercenary. Put a bounty on Zhan Yu, the reward for every level taken off him will be a 10,000 gold!”

“But boss, isn’t that too much?”

“Too much? You cannot trap a wolf without sacrificing a few children!”

Humbly Gentleman put up a cold smile on his face, “It is best to sow discord between Sword and Fire Mercenary and Lone Desert Smoke! Never underestimate those “Scumbags”, they are all masters in what they do, even if they are small in numbers. Once provoked, they will make your life miserable, waiting to ambush you right outside the city wall for every single day. Even if you have 10 thousand members, there would always be a day where you will be alone. That will be when they strike!”

“ ... ”

After the Lone Desert Smoke acquired the first clear title for that dungeon, many parties had commented on the chat channels, “Oh I see! We simply had to circle around! This dungeon is not too difficult, you just had to find the correct sequence on which boss to take out first!”

“Little Drizzler, come and get the share of the loot!” as Zhang Yang shouted at her from afar, he had just finished adding the newly acquired skill point into his [block]. With the godly skill [block] at Level 10, he could use it every second! This was going to make things even more interesting!

But it was a pity that this excitement will only last for another 5 months.

Wei Yan Er hopped over, “Let’s see, what comes out of my draw now?”

“Draw a hot chick like Little Drizzler!” Fatty Han was slobbering already.

Listening to Fatty Han call her a hot chick, Wei Yan Er decided overlook his perversion. As she giggled to herself, she fired back, “It’s a pity though, a pretty maiden like myself is special, there’s no one like me, but me!”

Zhang Yang laughed, “Take away your godlike narcissism, and you’ll be a petite little girl instead!”

The glee Wei Yan Er had quickly dissipated, and she started kicking and punching at Zhang Yang, releasing her tantrum.

While they were at it, Sun Xin Yu had walked up to the boss and touched the corpse.

[Pillar of Courage] (Gray-silver Weapon, One-handed Hammer)

Attack: 149 – 211

Cooldown: 1.5 seconds

Damage per second: 120

< Level 1 Socket 1>

< Level 1 Socket 2>

Equip: For every hit on the target, there is a chance to trigger the effect of [Bleeding from Behind], 50 points bleeding per second.

Level required: 30

Note: Forged by Head Butlers Mack for the captain of the platoon.

“What!!” Hundred Shots could not stop himself from laughing.

Fatty Han was in hysterics, “If you poke anybody with this thing, they are in for a load of trouble! HAHAAHA!”

“An impressive weapon for Thief classes! It’s a pity though, having that name and that effect, along with that amazing description!” Zhang Yang shook his head around.

“So what is so wrong about it?” Wei Yan Er blinked her eyes a few times while asking, with her puzzled face.

“This...”

Everyone was united on one mission only, to protect the pure and untainted seedling. They instantly changed the topic to avoid that.

“Let’s just put this in the guild’s warehouse then. At least 200 guilds out there would aid in increasing the value of a Gray-Silver grade weapon if we put it up for auction!”

Zhang Yang nodded in unison with the others. It was Fatty Han’s suggestion. So, the weapon would be taken by Fatty Han to the guild to be auctioned. Fatty loved running errands such as this, because when the equipment would be put up on auction, people would call him “Fatty Brother” in a tone of somewhat reverence, and it pleased him greatly so.

“Little Yang, why not use cash for auction?” Fatty Han could not

understand it.

Zhang Yang shook his head, “Within the guild, we shouldn’t involve money, it ruins the mood! While handling a guild, we should make everyone feel totally at home! Just think about it. Do you pay your father for the rice you eat at home?”

Fatty Han fell silent. “...”

Chapter 109: The End of the Hot Sale

“Sister Sun! Sister Sun! Please, let me touch it!” Wei Yan Er skipped towards the corpse delightedly. Sun Xin Yu simply wanted to move things on, but it didn’t matter to her on whoever touched the corpse first. So she stepped aside.

Wei Yan Er grinned, before putting her hands upon the cadaver.

[Skill Book: Berserker's Heal]

Use: Teaches the skill [berserker's heal].

Required: Warrior.

“Eh, noob tank, what does the effect of this [berserker's heal] do?” Wei Yan Er looked up at Zhang Yang before throwing the question to him.

“This is actually a pretty practical skill, I must say. It depletes your rage to fully heal yourself!” Zhang Yang said. The skill was really extremely practical, but, the skill book had a decent drop rate as well. Almost every Warrior would have one in their hands as they progressed in the game, but to have it at Level 30 was pretty uncommon.

“Oh! Then I shall give it to you since you’re always dying!” Wei Yan Er did not hesitate at passing on the skill book. For a party, it was most vital for tanks to survive a battle. Although she could be a little mischievous sometimes, but she realized the importance of this.

Naturally, others also passed on the roll. Zhang Yang used it as soon as he obtained the book. Another new skill appeared in his skill set column.

[Berserker’s Heal]: Ignite the rage, immediately recovering 100% of health.

Consume: All rage point.

Cooldown: 2 minutes

After picking up another few rags and some coins, the dead body of the Head of Butlers Mack faded gradually.

“Alright, that’s it for today! You’re all free to your own devices!” Zhang

Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it up, activating it.

Back in the White Jade City, Hundred Shots, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er went on to continue attempting their class specific quests. Han Yin Xue logged out immediately as healers couldn't do much without other players to support them in combat.

Zhang Yang carried on crafting some [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] as it had reached its peak market value, every second now counted!

The day passed. Hundred Shots and the others who went on their own missions made no progress. They vowed to go again on the next day.

Sun Xin Yu managed to complete her mission on the third day by afternoon. By doing so, she has become the third party member who completed the mission in S-rank for her profession!

Zhang Yang was overwhelmed with joy ----- This was like a joke! In the China region, there were only a dozen players who managed to complete their S-rank missions of their own profession, and 3 such players were in his own party!

Five days later, Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er were still unable to overcome the difficulties in their S-rank mission of their own profession. Wei Yan Er had almost gone mad. The frustrating battles with the blue giant had taken such a toll on her that she was nauseous! She could not take it anymore, so she attempted the A-rank mission instead. Of course, she accomplished her mission smoothly after that.

Hundred Shots persisted for another two days before seeing the fact that he cannot complete his missions, no hope at all! So he too had no choice but to attempt the A-rank mission instead. He completed it without a hitch.

At this point, all 6 of the party members had completed their respective Level 30 missions.

When they were gathered, Zhang Yang made a proclamation, "From now on, we will train on our own, unless necessary. This would mean that unless we are raiding dungeons, unless we are taking any missions that

require more than a single participant, unless we are hunting field bosses, we shall be working on our own.”

Sun Xin Yu was especially pleased with this, being the eccentric, indifferent person that she was. She was most comfortable working as a lone wolf. Although others did not see the point of doing this, they did not object. It wasn't as if Zhang Yang was disbanding them permanently, they were just going to train separately. That would also give them the freedom to plan their own schedule individually, without the limitation of compromising with others.

Zhang Yang had given much thought over this before he made such an announcement, of course.

Firstly, it would be a waste if they go in a team of six when it came to field leveling! It would be riddled with redundant combatants, and they would only get in each other's paths.

Secondly, it concerned the potential futures of his prospective superstars!

He did not want to interfere in the development of Hundred Shots and Sun Xin Yu's future! One would acquire the Red Dragon pet, while the other would acquire the [shadow dance] inheritance. When both of them did so, their accomplishments in the future would be limitless! So, if he intervened too much with their in-game progression, he might even deny them the destinies he had witnessed first-hand.

Zhang Yang had firmly decided to give them more freedom and space! Even though he inevitably affected them both, it was nothing profound. It could still be fixed, everything should fall back into place as they were meant to be.

Zhang Yang only focused on crafting potions over the next few days. He did not lead Fatty Han or Wei Yan Er to training, but urged them to find something they could grind their level with. He had no intentions of letting their levels fall behind! He would not want to see the first clear title for the “Shadowmoon Castle: The Castle Region Hardcore Mode” being taken away by other guilds!

As for himself, he will soon be able to resume his training after the sales of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], currently at its peak, has dwindled down! Furthermore, he already has planned ahead on a few special places for him to grind. He is confident that he would definitely catch up with the others!

After entering Level 30, the amount of experience required to proceed to the next level takes a huge leap! Even if a player stays online everyday to grind, it would still take 3 full days to proceed by 1 level. Dungeons in the castle region were labeled as Level 40 dungeons. Larger guilds would only be able to gather enough members to take those dungeons on, by the beginning of September.

Furthermore, the bosses in the castle region.... Zhang Yang smiled again, knowing that the first 2 bosses were basically free kills, with the remaining 3 bosses being actual challenges. The forth boss would be so much harder to handle than the third with the fifth boss being an absolute nightmare! As Zhang Yang recalled in his previous life, the 3 bosses had held off every large guild for an entire month!

Knowing all this, he would be able to take his own sweet time.

On the 12th of August, the sales for the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] finally begun to die off. On the 9th, he had sold 5,000 sets, 3,500 on the 10th, 1,800 on the 11th, and finally only 700 sets on the 12th. The sales had finally ended! However, it did not mean that the sales for the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] is completely dead, they had merely stabilized as supply and demand found a singularity.

In the future, he would be able to sell even more than the 90,000 sets that he already did for now. At the moment, the player base from China had a population of 5,000,000, but the number might grow up to 9 billion! A full 9 billion! Even if only 1% of that amount bought the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] from him, that would be 9 million purchases! 450,000 sets!

Of course, it would take another 5 years before the population ever grew that much, a whole different level compared to the 90000sets of sales

that he has generated over the brief, brief period of the past 22 days!

Zhang Yang checked on the amount of savings he have at the moment --
----- 34,870,000!

Even if a similar outcome was to be expected, gazing upon that amount with his own eyes still shook him deeply!

In terms of numbers alone, in his previous life, he had only managed to deposit about 40,000,000 into his savings account. This was before taking into account the many hardships he experienced just to get there. But now, this was the result after freaking 22 days! 22 days!

Knowledge is wealth.

Zhang Yang had unconsciously allowed a smile to creep upon his face as he thought about it. It was broader than the sun now. It was also a relief, as he only needed to craft 500 - 600 sets of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to satisfy the market's current demand. It also meant that he only had to dedicate an hour a day, crafting potions to make that future happen. The final product would be divided among the 8 main cities to be sold, and the price will drop from 4 gold pieces for one bottle to 1 gold piece for each. However, the price for the herbs will also drop down to 20 silver pieces a set, consistent to the old price margin. He could still benefit from it.

In this period of time, Zhang Yang had naturally earned the most. Since he was a little biased to his own city, he had sold half of his stock in White Jade Castle. Fatty Han profited the most from it, earning 1,700,000. As for the sales in the other 7 main castles, other than Yu Li, each one of them earned about 300,000! They were all grateful to Zhang Yang as he had made them all wealthy folks, with grins glued to their faces throughout the days!

Always have faith in the veteran!

Relieved of the heavy demands, Zhang Yang could finally prepare himself for his insanely intense grinding plan. Firstly, he planned to mount the two sockets on his weapon with gemstones. Even if there was a rate of failure when mounting gemstones, the fail rate for Level 1

gemstones was negligible, at just 10%. When Zhang Yang's high luck value came into play, it would decrease the failing rate significantly, and the two [Vitality Gemstones] will most probably be successfully mounted in one single attempt!

Even so, purchasing the required gemstones required 20 gold. Hiring an NPC to mount them to the sockets required another 10 gold. That would mean 30 gold would be spent in an instant! The current gold and the cash had a ratio of 1:5. It would be like spending 150 dollars in real life! All in the blink of an eye! Zhang Yang was shaken in the face of that reality. The gaming company would always be the biggest winner, the 30,000,000 that he just earned, if compared with the earnings of the company, would be like an insignificant tiny little fish in the ocean! It's not even worth being mentioned!

Of course, he could choose to save the money and not mount those gemstones. But how many battles could he endure without them?

In 'God's Miracle', the vitality attribute was the most invaluable attribute among all others, having the priority ratio of 2:1 compared to other attributes. At the same level, vitality gemstones could give a +10, but the gemstones of the other 4 main attributes, the intelligence gemstone, spirit gemstones, strength gemstone, and agility gemstone only gave a +5 statistics.

Zhang Yang proceeded to craft some [Intelligent potion], [Agility potion], [Strength potion], [Healing potion], [Mana potion] and mailed them to his party members. Then he equipped himself with enough [Strength potion] and [Healing potion] before heading to his special training ground.

After grinding his weapon on the [Whetstone] and consuming some [Strength potion], Zhang Yang boosted his attributes temporarily:

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 30

HP: 4,750

Defense: 260

Strength: 226

Melee damage: (646-698) X 110%

Critical rate: 11%

Lucky one hit rate: 0.5%

Zhang Yang summoned his Skeletal War Horse and mounted the saddle. Under his command, the war horse galloped upon it's hooves of flame, picking up speed until they were but a blur to the players he passed. Indeed, as he went on, he attracted the attention of many players. There it went again, the screams to get his attention, the requests to get into a relationship with him, the offers to get in bed with him.

After interacting with the Griffin keeper, Zhang Yang sat down on the saddle behind the beast and took off to Tullon Town.

Even though flying was so much faster than riding on the ground, the map for 'God's Miracle' was just too vast. It still took Zhang Yang approximately 20 minutes to land in Tullon Town.

After getting off the Griffin, Zhang Yang summoned Skeletal War Horse once again to ride on towards the Misty Valley located at the outskirts of the town.

There were a number of players in the town. Looking at Zhang Yang on his war horse, male players would drool, female players would scream again and again, chasing after him until he left town. They were eventually left behind as he went on, leaving them to stare at his back longingly.

Even so, it was enough for them to exchange a few words with their idol.

The Misty Valley was labeled as a Level 30+ training area on the map. The monsters ranged from Level 30 to Level 39, with Spectres making up the majority of the monsters' population. Rumor had it that a fierce battle once occurred there, and the dead soldiers, discontented with the nature of their deaths, never moved on, staying long enough to turn into Spectres roaming around in the valley.

Knowing that these poor souls would never leave the valley, the Imperial had stopped sending armies to cleanse those Spectres. Even though cleansing them once and for all was the safest way to do it, clearing the Spectre Crypt would also cause a lot of casualties. With the presently tensed situation, any loss was a great blow to the strength of the Imperial!

Zhang Yang stopped at the entrance of the valley. He sent Skeletal War Horse back into his inventory, stepping forward to meet a NPC with a yellow question mark at the top of his head.

Chapter 110: Another Encounter with Rouge Clan

“Boss! Zhang Yang has finally left the city!”

44 Bandits spoke in the Sword and Fire Mercenary party channel.

“About damn time! That bastard sure took his sweet time hanging around there!” Dominating Blade spat on his blade. “And here I thought that this guy was gonna stay in there forever!”

“That’s right, we’ve received the contract on the first of the month and he’s been camping inside for several days now! How do we kill this guy?”

“I thought he might know that we’re waiting for him outside, that’s why he’s been hiding in there since forever!”

Dominating Blade crossed his arms, staring at 44 Bandits.

“Where did he go?”

“No idea, boss! He was taking the Gryphon service. Could be far!” 44 Bandit replied nonchalantly.

Dominating Blade acknowledged in a deep voice, “Hmm, I see. Let those guys in the guild find out his destination. I want to know where he is right now!”

“Roger that, boss!” 44 Bandits nodded.

Anyone in the guild could have access to other members’ basic information like character level, class, race, and also the region of their current location. However, the character’s region location would only provide a general information; for example, 44 Bandits and Dominating Blade were at the White Jade Castle region, and it would not reveal the exact coordinate.

For some time, Lone Desert Smoke had been trampling on the other guilds to reach to the top. Their extraordinary feat was not something the other guilds would let go easily without a proper fight. Guilds from other major cities were powerless in doing anything, but the guilds in White

Jade Castle managed to insert spies into Zhang Yang's guild. Since the Mercenary group were only a small party, they could not send anyone out to be a spy; but their benefactor, The Dominators had been helping them by pulling a few strings inside Lone Desert Smoke itself. Their spies would observe every single thing Zhang Yang did and report it all back.

As soon as Zhang Yang left the city, the undercover player immediately informed the mercenary group.

"44, I know you failed a contract one to kill Zhang Yang. How could you lose? Was he really that strong?"

44 Bandits sighed. "I guess... he was kinda strong. His controls were superb, and he could even detect me when I was in stealth! Ever since I was killed, my equipment has been kinda shitty! But I think I can kill him this time!"

"Stupid! Killing anyone should be an easy job! Guarding the body is the hard part! How about this? Go and kill Zhang Yang with Floating Up, Beauty Healer, Broken Uranus, and All Wounded. Make sure you kill him as many times as you can. Each kill is worth 10,000 gold coins!"

Dominating Blade patted 44 Bandit's back.

"Boss! I'm good with just Beauty Healer. I could definitely kill him as many times as I want to if I had a healer with me!" 44 Bandit was confident. He was still holding a grudge for being killed in the previous encounter.

Dominating Blade laughed. "Just do your job; guard the body and maybe grind some level for a bit. You can also kill some bosses and get some equipment to sell them for more money! Ah, money does make the world go round!"

"Alright, now that's settled, fan out and find that guy! Get more people! The more players you have, the faster we can chop off his head!"

...

The Misty Valley, where the mist had been lingering around for almost a year, showed no signs of dissipating. It gave off a creepy feeling, especially

with having poor visibility range once a player enters.

“Young man, stop!” The voice of an old man could be heard, and at the entrance of the valley stood an NPC; a soldier. The 40-year old had a muscular body frame and he carried a stoic facial expression. An old rusty sword was hung on the side of his waist and a normal iron shield was on his back. All that he had and wore were worn out, showing signs of previous wars and battles that he had been through.

[Veteran Soldier Baylor] (Normal)

Level: 30

HP: 3,000

Zhang Yang stopped when he was close enough to talk to the NPC. “Respected warrior, why would stop an adventurer?”

“Young man, it’s far too dangerous ahead. If you value your life, turn back and never return!” Though his was fierce, Zhang Yang could hear a tone of despair from his warning as well.

“Why should I? Is there anything up ahead?” Zhang Yang casually asked. The developers did a good job in making the characters as realistic as possible, but that meant that he could not accept the quest immediately and had to have a conversation with the NPC.

“Herein lies the souls of the restless spirits of a thousand heroes of the past. Even death could not quench their thirst for battle!” Baylor sighed sadly. “They’ve all turned into spectres! Young man, heed my warning. Do not disturb the dead!”

“O, respected warrior! You meant to allow anger and rage, letting them roam free in their corpses? Is that how you want them to properly rest in peace?!”

Baylor, wavering, said, “You... you meant to give them peace? You want them to have eternal rest?”

“Yes, I would do that, respected warrior!”

“In that case, I shall take your word for it. Here, take this bottle of [Holy

Water]. You will need to kill all the vengeance spirits that have taken over my departed comrades. Once you have defeated them, you'll need to sprinkle the [Holy Water] on their skeletal remains. Only then will they have peace!"

'Ding! You have accepted the quest: Peace!'

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Holy Water!'

[Peace] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest description: Kill the vengeful spirits that roam around the Misty Valley! Pour the [Holy Water] over their skeletal remains and allow them to rest in peace.

Progress: Calmed Vengeances 0/40

[A bottle of Holy Water] (Quest Item)

Use: Allow the dead to rest in peace! The blessing of the gods beseech protection on your soul.

Zhang Yang summoned the Skeletal War Horse and rode into the Misty Valley.

After riding for about 40 to 50 meters, he still did not find any monsters around. It was not normal. Zhang Yang frowned. Was there another player here?

Ding! Tang! Clang!

The sound of metal clashing against each other; the sound of battle. Zhang Yang went further in towards the source and found a party of players killing the monsters. However, the ratio was completely off, having 12 to 13 players killing just 4 monsters. They might as well have just gone off and fought alone without a party...

Zhang Yang could not care less about it and rode further into the valley. His riding speed was quite fast and since visibility was already poor, the party disappeared into the mist. He could not even make out anything that just went past him; everything either looked like they were submerged in milk or covered by cotton wool. He preferred to think of cotton wool

instead... the atmosphere was already creepy enough and Zhang Yang would not want to have any further negative thoughts.

As he continued forward, he triggered many monsters along the way, and they were all furiously chasing after him. The monsters' visions were not affected in the mist at all. As he rode on, Zhang Yang "fished" about 80 monsters in his path.

He quickly jumped down and recalled the horse. Finding an excellent position at the edge of the mountain with a wall of dirt behind him, Zhang Yang was prepared to slay any monster that tried to fight him!

[Restless Spirit] (Normal)

Level: 32

HP: 3,200

The monsters' movement speed was just too fast. In just a few seconds after they arrived, Zhang Yang drew out his sword.

"KIKIKIKIKIKIKI!"

"Come at me, freaks!"

The battle has begun!

The total of monsters that Zhang Yang lured had exceeded 10, and with the geographical shape of where he was, only 10 monsters could simultaneously attack him, while the rest had to take turns, circling around and waiting for the monsters in front to kill him or be killed.

[block!]

Zhang Yang's current [block] level was just too powerful. He did not even need to calculate the timing and could spam the skill like there was no tomorrow.

[block!] [block!] [block!] [block!] [block!] [block!]

'-224!' '-224!' '-224!' '-224!' '-224!' '-224!'

10 monsters were attacking together and at least 6 of the attacks were successfully blocked. The reflected damage was normal but when Zhang

Yang drew his sword to cast [horizontal sweep], every single monster there popped a '-1,400!' damage text on their heads.

At the same time, he stomped the ground hard and activated [thunder strike].

'-224!'

Even though the damage from [thunder strike] could not match with [horizontal sweep], it made up in terms of having higher number of attacked targets. [horizontal sweep] was an AoE attack skill but the damage range could not pierce through to the monsters behind. [thunder strike], however, was a skill that could damage anything in a 2x2 meters around the caster, regardless of the number of targets.

As the battle pressed on, Zhang Yang's [Absolute Defense Ring] activated, increasing his Defense value by 100 points, totaling up to 360 Defense!

'-1!'

'-1!'

'-1!'

'+100!'

The monster count was too much for Zhang Yang to block; he was continuously taking damage. However, having only about 300 attack damage, the monsters could not surpass Zhang Yang's defense value and could deal only 1 physical damage at a time.

Zhang Yang had the complete "Brave" equipment set, and the 3-equipped set effect allowed him to have 50% chance of recovering 100 HP after receiving an attack. To sum it, Zhang Yang would be able to heal 100 HP after losing only 50 HP! He was healing more than he was losing!

That was why most players would want to have the "Brave" set! A warrior could survive in a sea of monsters without the help of a healer! The grinding efficiency would be increased to a greater speed!

This is, of course, the advantage of only a few well-equipped Guardians.

Not many of them could have as much as 260 Defense value such as Zhang Yang! Most Defenders and Guardians would only use the shield that Zhang Yang made, giving only +80 Defense value! Zhang Yang's [Absolute Defense Ring] was a rare item that could only be found at the field bosses, and it was a greater task getting that than the shield!

In just 10 seconds, Zhang Yang cleared the first wave of monsters around him, and the second wave immediately rushed in for him. After 2 minutes or so, Zhang Yang completely eliminated every single one of them; his killing speed was off the chart!

If he were to face the monsters one by one, he could only kill 4 to 5 monsters in the same 2 minutes. His own method of killing them all at once was 10 times faster!

While others took 3 days to gain a level, Zhang Yang only needed 8 hours to do the same! The monster respawn rate could not cover up his killing speed!

"Boss, there's no monsters around anymore!"

"He's right. There was a bunch of monsters not two minutes ago, and there isn't a single one left!"

"Hey, hold up! I think there's a monster there!"

"You're right! Wait, that's not a monster! F*ck! Look at that shining armor! I think that's a high-levelled boss!"

...

Zhang Yang bent over and picked up the items that the monsters dropped. He had not been picking up items ever since he met with Wei Yan Er. At that time, a bunch of players suddenly emerged from the mist, all staring at him.

"Do they think I'm a boss or something?" Zhang Yang laughed in his heart. He had his profile hidden, and the players must have mistaken him for being a boss because of that. However, even a boss would reveal its name! The only two characters that could hide names were either a player or a special NPC.

“Kill the boss! Take his equipment!” No one knew who yelled but they did not care. They charged towards Zhang Yang with their weapons wielded, ready to strike.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to draw his breath to yell at them, he stopped. He saw their name and the guild they belonged to; Rogue Clan!

He squinted his eyes to see them clearer. Isn't their boss Rogue Bunny?

Still, it was a coincidence! He could not kill them the last time since PK was not allowed in the beginner's village, but they were all now in the field! Zhang Yang stood there motionless and allowed them to strike him from all directions.

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

A chain of weak attacks went through, and neither one of them had the attack power to break his defense. These players' attacks were even weaker than the players themselves! No wonder they had to fight in a large group!

‘Ding! You have been attacked by Rogue Bunny party! You now have 10 minutes to counter attack!’

Chapter 111: Land Lease

Zhang Yang waited for them to strike, to have them gain the Red Name Penalty[1] first. With just an effortless swing, Zhang Yang activated [horizontal sweep] and took out at least 1,400 HP of everyone around him!

Some of the players were still confused on what happened, but they jumped immediately when they saw the damage they just took.

“Holy crap! This boss is strong as f*ck! Look at me! Half of my HP is gone!”

“Damn! His defense is strong too! I could only deal 1 damage to him!”

“Haha! Noob! The stronger the boss, the better the drops!”

“He must be a Gray-Silver boss!”

“No! Stupid! He must be a Yellow-Gold boss!”

Rogue Bunny was fuming with rage. He screamed. “Stupid bunch of mindless, good for nothing idiots! Look at the system notification! Stupid f*cks, it’s not a boss you dimwit! It’s a player! Eh?! Isn’t that Zhan Yu, the guy with the First Clear Achievements?”

As usual, Rogue Bunny was so brute and rude, the words that came out his mouth were filled with so much vulgarity.

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and released [thunder strike]. What followed was a series of attacks of [charge], [destructive smash], a normal attack, and a [shield bash]. Instantly, he had sent one healer to the grave.

“Stop! Please! Stop! For God’s sake, please stop!” Rogue Bunny cried out.

But Zhang Yang did not. He raised his sword and proceeded to kill another healer with two strikes of [force strike] and one critical normal attack.

Bunny Bro 4 nudged and whispered to Rogue Bunny, “Psst... Boss. I remember this guy. He was the one that tricked us into dying in the valley last time!” He was sure it was the same guy that had tricked them to shout “Vee Arm Suu Pi”.

Rogue Bunny turned around and stared until he finally remembered the incident.

Yes! He was right! It was the same \$%^& bastard that made them scream “We are stupid” all over the place! It was a shameful event and had them thinking of revenge, even when they were dreaming! Zhang Yang had his profile hidden when they met him then. What were the odds of finding him again in this vast world?

As the saying went, “when enemies meet, the world could be burning”. Why would they care about it, since their hearts were already burning with raging flames? Rogue Bunny did not care about his achievements or whoever had his back, as long as Rogue Bunny could finally have his revenge. If he missed this chance, there would not be a second time.

The entire team of Rogue Clan comprised of 16 members deployed there, with 3 of them as healers. Zhang Yang had already taken 2 of them down. The last healer was so petrified that he ran away into the crowd. Zhang Yang did not care about the others, and he waited until [destructive smash] finally finished its cooldown and to begin his rampage again. He killed the last healer in the manner as the others.

“What the actual f*ck are you guys doing!? How could you let one guy take down our healers while you were all standing like strawmen?! There’s so many of you! Get off your ass and kill him now!” Rogue Bunny screamed in rage.

Zhang Yang was laughing. He does not even have the slightest fear in him while slaying them all.

Without a healer, the wounded players could only consume their own healing potions and use their own bandages to heal themselves. Zhang Yang could not stop them from taking the potions but he would not let the remaining players finish fully applying their [Bandage]. Zhang Yang stomped his feet and casted [thunder strike] just in time to interrupt[2] the [Bandage] effect.

They say you could not beat an army with just sticks and stone. But when Zhang Yang was facing the entire Rogue Clan, it was as if he was

holding a machine gun with infinite bullet battling a bunch of weak-ass zombies (left 4 dead reference sv_infinite_ammo). No matter how many tries to battle, Zhang Yang could just simply kill them all.

Zhang Yang raised his sword to land a normal attack. Those who had already taken [horizontal sweep] twice would be dead in just one more strike. One by one, the Rogue Clan members were sent to the graveyard.

Rogue Bunny made an effort to intimidate him with threats. “Zhan Yu! Don’t get over your head, you pipsqueak! I am the guild master of the Rogue Clan! If you were to kill me, I’ll dispatch every single one of my guild members to find you and kill you!”

Zhang Yang could not care less. After removing the healers from the equation, he moved on to kill the Spellcasters, and took care of the physical attackers last. He had a thick defense; strong against physical attacks but weak against magic. The only defense for magic attacks was the passive skill that gave him 20% damage reduction. That was why he had to kill in that order.

He had the overwhelming advantage against every single one of the Rogue Clan in terms of strength, level, and skills. As compared with Rogue Bunny that was at Level 28, which was the highest level in the guild, Zhang Yang’s [horizontal sweep], [eagle eye], and [destructive smash] left Rogue Bunny and his entire guild with no chance to stand against him.

With little effort, Zhang Yang killed everyone, leaving Rogue Bunny alone among the corpse of his guild members. He was left withdrawing endlessly like a little girl being cornered.

“Bastard, if you stop now, I-I-I would let you g-go! Or e-else, y-you’ll r-regret it!”

Zhang Yang lowered his sword and pressed his hands on his chin, posing as the Thinker. Just when Rogue Bunny was just about to escape from his grasp, he grinned evilly and said, “I’ve thought about it, and if I don’t kill you now, I’ll definitely regret it later!”

He raised his sword and struck the killing blow. There were corpses everywhere and equipment lying around. Even though Zhang Yang was

not interested in them, but since he could do more damage to the Rogue Clan, he would gladly do it. He picked up the equipment one by one and kept them in his inventory. He then summoned his horse and started to lure more monsters. As for the consequences of his action against the Rogue Clan, he was not at all afraid of them coming for him, if they dared to come anyway. Zhang Yang would gladly send them back to the graveyard.

After two hours of luring and killing, Zhang Yang actually managed to clear every monster around the valley, and then went back to the old soldier NPC to complete his quest. Just as he predicted, the monsters' spawn rate was not as fast as his killing speed. Aside from the mist, there were literally no monsters left for him to kill. There was still a few monsters left, but they were not worth being dragged to kill. As for the Rogue Clan, not one of them appeared around the area. They were probably scared shitless by now.

"You've done it now, lad! Great work!" Baylor praised Zhang Yang gratefully as he waved his hand.

As the system notification popped out, Zhang Yang had obtained 50,000 experience points with nothing else. Just when Zhang Yang was about to turn around and leave, he stopped when he saw an exclamation mark on top of the NPC's head. Zhang Yang then prompted him. "Why are you still here, soldier?"

Baylor sighed heavily and had a sad expression while looking up to the sky, as if he was reminiscing the past.

"20 years ago, I was part of the same battalion that perished here. I... no... We were soldiers of the Empire that were dispatched here to safeguard this area. And one faithful day, I was off-duty and went to the nearest town for a date with a young lady. I had fun, but when I got back to report in, everyone was already dead! No, worse! They had been cursed with Necro magic! Their skeletal remains were filled with malice and only killing would satisfy them!"

"By the time the rest of the army arrived to investigate, they reported

that it was the contaminated food supplies that caused this massive massacre! The Empire did not want to waste any more resource to clear this area. In the end, they were left here alone to wonder the valley for all eternity!”

“Lad, I do not want my friends to die in vain! Which is why I spent 20 years to personally investigate their death! And finally, I’ve found it! Deep in the valley lies the resident of the Evil Sorcerer! It was him! He killed all my comrade; my officers!”

Baylor’s expression gradually changed from sad to rage as he continued, “Brave young lad. Would you help me kill the Evil Sorcerer and bring justice to the fallen heroes?”

‘Ding! Baylor as a quest for you: Enact Justice! Would you accept it?’

Zhang Yang heart sank a little. Could it be the same Sorcerer that he was supposed to search for the main story quest? If it was, then Zhang Yang must call in the rest of his gang to finish the quest!

Accept!

“I thank you lad! May the god of war beseech you with the strength of a thousand men!” Baylor said as he saluted Zhang Yang.

[Enact Justice!] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest description: Kill the evil Necromancer Terpot Ryhar and assert justice to all fallen warriors! You can find the Sorcerer at the Underground Tower in the Misty Valley. Note: Terpot Ryhar is very strong. Please bring your friends to fight this evil Sorcerer.

Progress: Kill the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar 0/1

What a shame! The Evil Sorcerer was not the same one he needed to find!

Zhang Yang summoned his horse again and rode deeper into the valley. After some time of searching, he arrived at a graveyard. After searching for a little more, he found a glowing lever, pulled it and the ground trembled and a half-moon doorway rose from the ground. The doorway

had a 10-meter-tall, 6-meter-wide steel door that gave off a strong presence.

Zhang Yang pushed the steel door with great strength and it opened, revealing a dark pathway that led deeper inside.

Poof! Poof! Poof! One by one, the fire torches lit, illuminating the entire pathway.

‘Ding! You have opened a steel door and found a new area!’

‘Ding! You have discovered Underground Tower. Obtained 5,000 experience points!’

‘Server announcement: Underground Tower have been found by a player. The tower has 12 floors and each floor would have unlimited number of monsters for players to challenge! The first player to defeat the Underground Tower final boss, Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar will obtain the game’s first Land Lease and will be able to buy the specific land in this city! Before anyone claims this Land Lease, all non-boss monster spawn rate will be increased to 1000%. The location of the Land is : XXXXX, YYYYY.’

Holy f*cking Moly! Land! It’s Land!

In a flash, Zhang Yang’s eyes flashed with the symbol of money! If Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er were here with him, people might think that they all shared the same mental disorder.

What is the most valuable thing in the real world?

Land!

That’s right! Land!

It’s the same in the game!

If a player could get their hands on a land property, he could open his own shop! There would be no need to pay for any service charges like in the auction house! If business was good, it could be the same as opening a shop in the real world!

Previously, out of 100 players that made a fortune in ‘God’s Miracle’, 90

of them possessed property!

However, buying land property in the game was not just about money; you would also need a lease! You could only obtain a Land Lease by killing a boss and the drop rate was so low that you could even farm two or three more mounts before getting one! That was not the worst part. Every piece of Land Lease could only buy a fixed land! That meant that even when a player worked his ass off to farm a Lease, the area in which he was supposed to buy the land would be a dead town. So even if he could buy the land, it was not worth one bit!

Just like reality, the most valuable and expensive property would be those that were near the business center. However, the original land near those area were so scarce that once it was sold out, there could never be a second one.

That was how valuable land properties were! In his previous life when Zhang Yang had first entered the game, all of the lands near the main city were already grabbed away. He could only watch in tear as other players counted their money until their fingers bled!

He had never known that he could have found the game's first Land Lease!

Even though he was on cloud 9, he could not stop cursing the bloody system!

What the hell!? Why would it even announce it to the entire world?! Did the system gain self-awareness that it bore a grudge against Zhang Yang's luck?! Just like that, the system let the entire world know about how valuable the Lease could be!

Notes:

[1]:Red Name Penalty-When Player A strikes the first attack to Player B, Player A will gain the Red Name Penalty. This penalty will incur a two-level deduction and have a chance to have one of the currently equipped equipment to drop.

[2]:Interupption-Spell or item interruption. During a casting of a spell, a player can stop the spell for being cast by casting an interruption skill. This is also applicable stopping someone from using an item as well. In other case, when an enemy had successfully casted a spell, which require channeling*. A channeling spell is a spell that will continue in effect as long as the caster did not stop the spell. Like a flamethrower, the flame will continue to spit flames as long as you press the fuel. A channeling spell can be interrupt in the same manner. This is also applicable to items like [Bandage]. [Bandage] does not require channeling, but it can be dispel with an attack from someone else or by moving.

Chapter 112: Run for Your Life!

Somewhere around Tullon Town...

“Floating Up. What are we gonna do now? Should we change our course to grab that [Land Lease] or should we stay on course?” said 44 Bandits. Both of the Sword and Fire Mercenary leaders were tanks, and Dominating Blade was the captain of the team. He was a Guardian just like Zhang Yang. Floating Up, the second-in-command, was a Defender, and he led this small man-hunt party.

He answered with a deep and low tone. “I have no idea what this [Land Lease] is. But if the system would go all out to announce it, it must be of some value! We will temporary change our course. Let’s kill the ‘what’s-his-face’ evil sorcerer and get that [Land Lease]! Zhan Yu isn’t going to go anywhere anyway, might as well postpone his inevitable death!”

Following the coordinates provided by the system, the party arrived at the Misty Valley.

Broken Uranus suddenly called out. “Isn’t this place the Misty Valley? I heard that the Rogue Clan had met Zhan Yu here!”

All Wounded laughed menacingly. “He must have come here to get the lease as well!”

Floating Up grinned. “What a coincidence! He’d actually saved us the effort to locate him! Hah! What luck! We can kill Zhan Yu, and kill the boss for the [Land Lease]! Talk about killing two birds with one stone!”

After 10 minutes...

The party managed to found the entrance to the Underground Tower.

“There! I see the entrance!”

“Let’s go!”

...

As the system notification flashed through the chatting channel, everyone’s greed grew larger. Who cares if they did not have the capability

to get that item? They could at least have a try! For the least, there was always a possibility of a “What if?” moment! What if I got it? What if I got the [Land Lease]? What if I can really get that valuable item that the server juts announced?

Every big guild gathered their best players and headed straight to Tullon Town! In a split second, the entire sky was filled with flying Gryphons, covering the sun and making so many silhouettes that it changed the afternoon to evening!

All of the Level 50 maps and below were just mirror images; all of China’s 8 major cities had the same Underground Tower and were simultaneously released to the public. The only difference was the [Land Lease]. The dropped lease from any city Underground Tower was unique and there could never be a second one.

That meant that not only the players inside each city would have to compete with each other, they would also have to compete with the other cities as well! This was a test; a test of player cooperation and willingness to surpass the other cities! But if they had to cooperate properly to kill the final boss, they would lose the chance to get themselves a rare item!

Zhang Yang cursed everyone’s mother and grandmother as he ran further into the pathway. After roughly 30 to 40 meters in, the pathway widened into a huge flat ground!

This was nothing like a tower! This was just a huge-ass building!

In front of Zhang Yang was a short, 7 to 8 steps of stairs that led down towards a huge flat land. The area was basically endless as Zhang Yang could not even see the end of the field. What was worse was that skeletal monsters filled the area with rusting long swords in their boney hands.

Zhang Yang selected one of them and checked on their properties. He almost puked when he saw the information.

[Skeleton Tower Guard] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 50,000

Zhang Yang would not have had a large reaction if there were only 7 to 8 monsters. But as he looked up and gazed into the never-ending field, he could make out at least thousands of them patrolling around. The entire place was cramped! Even if Zhang Yang brought his entire guild to clear these monsters, he was not sure whether they could even manage it!

And then there was the narrow pathway. How many people could squeeze through this pathway at a time? They would have to slowly kill their way in to make more space for more guild members to enter! An extremely slow domino effect!

However, Zhang Yang did not have the luxury of time now. If he were to kill one at a time, it would take him long enough for the other guilds to arrive and take over the tower!

Zhang Yang scratched his head. "Looks like I have to give it a try!"

Zhang Yang started to calculate; if the tower has 13 floors, then according to the system norm, the entrance to the next floor would be located at the furthest part of the current floor! If Zhang Yang could do what he did with the Cave of Bones, having to lure all monsters while he ran towards the entrance of the next floor, he could use the monsters to block the other guilds from proceeding with the tower!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and walked quickly into the swarm of skeletons. Yes, he walked! Not run, but walk!

Even though there was limited space between the monsters, there was a gap in between their patrol. As long as he could grasp the timing and rhythm, he could avoid the monsters from being triggered.

1 meter, 2 meters... 10 meters... 20 meters!

Zhang Yang kept his mind calm and fully utilized all 3 years of his past gaming experience and walked through the swarm like snakes across a field. If anyone witnessed Zhang Yang's feat, it would be as if a ninja was sneaking into the enemy base undetected. Every step he took could spell disaster, and the tension was so high that other players would perhaps already cower in fear.

Tap... tap... tap...

Each step he took was as light as feather and his sweat was constantly dripping to the floor, like breadcrumbs when Hansel and Gretel were eating in the Candy House. Though this feat did not require him to swing a sword, it was still worse than actually killing something. Zhang Yang calculated every step so many times as he could not afford to make even a tiny mistake which could trigger any monster's aggro; and since this place was full of them, if one notices him, the others will just follow suit!

50 meters... 80 meters... 100 meters! He could barely notice it, but he finally saw a black object that looked like an exit!

His heart jumped with happiness for a second and then -

“Crack...”

He made a misstep.

“GROOAN!” One Skeleton Guard growled and started to swing its sword, chasing after Zhang Yang, while 10 other monsters followed behind it.

Holy f*ck! Here they come!

Zhang Yang had no choice but to fight. He quickly used [charge] and dashed towards the nearest monster to stun it. He then dealt one normal attack to raise a little Rage before he turned and ran towards the exit faster than Usain Bolt could!

The run started a chain reaction, like ripples from a stone thrown into a lake. Every single monster in the field had their eyes set on Zhang Yang and began running towards him. The area in front of him got larger and larger as the monster cleared.

Their movement speed was faster than Zhang Yang's, and just when they were about to touch him, Zhang Yang stomped the ground and casted [thunder strike], slowing 7 monsters around his skill area. In that instant, Zhang Yang distanced himself even more from them.

However, the monsters that were not affected quickly ran past the slowed ones and got closer to him, jumping into the sky. Zhang Yang

somersaulted to counter their attack by quickly activating [block].

Ding! Ding! Ding!

A chain of system notification rung as Zhang Yang had blocked the attacks! Zhang Yang landed and continued sprinting to the exit.

This was a type of kiting technique for the Hunter class. Even though he was not a Hunter, it was still extremely useful here.

The problem was that there were still too many monsters on his tail, and there were some attacks that he could not block.

‘-518!’

‘-529!’

‘-532!’

With just 3 attacks, he lost a third of his HP already!

Zhang Yang quickly consumed a [Level 2 Healing Potion] on the move.

[Level 2 Healing Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Immediately restores 1,000 HP.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

Using any grade of Healing Potion would cause all grades of Healing Potion to have the same cooldown.

Level Requirement: 30

As he kept on running, Zhang Yang jumped a full circle and activated [block] as he turned behind to keep his momentum going!

[thunder strike], [charge], [block]. Everything Zhang Yang could do had been done to stall the monsters behind him. He had to speed up more to maintain his HP! The monsters around him were just too many that he had already lost 90% of his HP by just moving 20 meters forward!

[berserker's heal]!

‘+4750!’

Zhang Yang fully healed himself and quickly moved further up. But with

only moving 30 meters forward, he was down to 1,000 HP again!

Zhang Yang quickly activated the [lifesteal] effect of the sword and casted [horizontal sweep] to deal a chain of devastating damage to the monsters behind him. Simultaneously, 3 green healing texts of '+1400' popped out and his HP was fully healed once more!

[shield wall]!

Zhang Yang used another skill with a long cooldown that instantly reduced all incoming damage by 75% for 10 seconds! But in this short amount of time, he could only depend on the set equipment effects to keep his health at the same amount!

Another 20 meters forward! There was only 30 meters more to reach the exit!

[shield wall] expired!

'-414!'

'-431!'

'-422!'

...

Zhang Yang began to take continuous damage again. Argh! Just a little more!

Zhang Yang gave it all he got and cried out as he leapt into the sky, dodged the monsters, and rolled into the exit!

"RAWRR..."

Countless monsters squeezed together at the exit. All of them were trying their best to move closer as they growled furiously, but neither of them could take one more step to reach Zhang Yang.

"Phew!" Zhang Yang let out a long breath of relief. He checked on his status and had goosebumps when he saw he had only 127 remaining HP left. If he had made a mistake any bit earlier, he would have probably died in the middle there!

Before the aggro effect disappeared, the monsters outside would not leave and Zhang Yang could not leave the battle mode to eat some health recovering snacks. He could only activate the bandage skill to recover his health.

[Cotton Bandage] (Consumable)

Use: Heal 1,000 HP over 10 seconds. The effect will be cancelled when you enter any action or receive any damage.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

Requirement: Advance First-Aid

As he had the “A Physician’s Friend” title, the bandage effect was doubled. He healed over 2,000 HP from just one cast itself. He turned to look outside and noticed that all the monsters gathered there had already long dispersed. There were only a few left still standing there staring at him.

What a pity! If only the monsters could just remain there forever! That would be a free blockade for him! Who would dare to get through the entrance when there were so many elite monsters standing together like that? Aside from Zhang Yang, no one else could proceed further into the tower!

With the last monster finally walking away, Zhang Yang got out of battle mode and sat down to eat some health recovering snacks.

“Hey! Noob tank! Did you see the system announcement? Shall we go and fight for the lease?” Wei Yan Er suddenly called Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled and replied. “If I were waiting for you to come over, my little potted plant would have grown into a sky-scraping bean stalk! I’m already in the tower!”

“What the hell, dude! Why didn’t you tell us?! I’m sure you’re planning to hog all the treasure in there for yourself! Hmph! Cousin! Cousin! Stop counting the money already! Let’s go!”

Beep.

The little brat hung up the communicator.

Zhang Yang smiled happily as he lifted his sword and walked towards the second floor with happy feet.

The monsters here at the first floor should hold the other players off for quite some time.

Chapter 113: The Second Floor

“What. The. F*ck. Look at those elite monsters!” 44 Bandits scratched his head in frustration. He could not hold in his surprised and cursed as he saw the ridiculous number of monsters cramped up together at the end of the stairs.

Floating Up frowned with frustration. If they were to enter a regular dungeon instead; even if there were a lot more elite monsters around, the party could take their own sweet time to kill them off since no one else would be competing. But things were not the same with a field boss. Every second counted. They had already gained a huge advantage when they were the first to arrive here, but if they were to start clearing all these monsters here and now, they would lose their advantageous stance.

“Where’s Zhan Yu?” Beauty Healer asked. “Based on the information we got, Zhan Yu should be ahead of us. But from the looks of it, I don’t think he could be in the tower.”

All Wounded replied, “The system explained that the monster spawn rate was increased by 1,000%. Could it be that the monsters he killed already respawned?”

“Impossible!” Floating Up shook his head and explained. “As the official data explained before, monsters outside of the beginner village would respawn every 3 hours. Elite monsters would take 5 hours. Even if the spawn rate had been increased to 1,000%, it would take at least half an hour to fully respawn them all! The system made the announcement only about 20 minutes ago, yet here we can see that none of the monsters were taken out!”

“Perhaps he was under stealth mode?” Broken Uranus joked.

44 Bandits shook his head. “That wouldn’t work. The monsters here have [true sight]. I saw the [true sight] icon on the monster’s head when I sneaked in earlier.

Monsters with [true sight] were naturally born to counter stealth users; Thieves in general. Phantom Assassins, especially, loathed these type of

monsters.

“Could it be...that he actually hasn’t arrived yet?” Floating Up muttered alone.

“Who cares about him? Let’s just go ahead and kill the monsters! If that guy hasn’t arrived, so be it! If he does, we’ll kill him. End of story!” said 44 Bandits with a strong killing intent. He was killed 3 times consecutively by Zhang Yang. Even though he did say it was all for business and nothing personal, he could not say it willingly as he was made a fool by everyone else in the Mercenary.

Floating Up kept quiet for a while before he spoke. “So be it. Let’s go. Follow the path on the side, we have to attract as few monsters as we can.”

...

The connecting path from the first floor to the second floor was a long and winding staircase. Zhang Yang walked around at least 7 to 8 circles before he was at the bottom.

Similarly, the second floor was another huge field filled with the same Skeletal Guards. However, the number of monsters drastically dropped. He estimated that there were only less than 10% of the monsters from the first floor!

Did it just get easier?

It didn’t make any sense! Instead of getting happy, Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. It was once said that peace was just the calm before a storm. The game developers could not have been that generous enough to lower the difficulty when they had just placed that many monsters in the first floor!

Zhang Yang observed carefully again before he proceed further, and he noticed something different. The tiling on the ground were made up of black and white stones; like a chess board to be precise, but there were slightly more black tiles than the white ones. The monsters were gathered around only on the black tiles.

Zhang Yang tried to walked towards the edge of the platform and

stepped on one of the black tile.

... Nothing happened.

He switched and moved on a little and stepped one foot on the white tile.

Fuushh!

‘-1,600!’

A pillar of fire burst out from the white tiles and damaged Zhang Yang.

Hmph! As expected! No wonder there were lesser monsters, there are traps everywhere here! One wrong step and I’ll be cooked for sure!

Zhang Yang continued to observe. Not far from where he stood, a new Skeleton Guard spawned out on top of a white tile. The trap was sprung and it dealt 2,000 damage to the monster. The monster then moved away from the tile and stood on a black tile instead.

Elite monster’s AI system was just simple programming. The monster must have been set to patrol around the area. That was why even though a trap was there, it would still walk over it without any consideration.

‘-2000!’

‘-2000!’

...

As it continuously walked over the white tiles, it took damage each time. 50,000 HP seemed plenty but no matter how strong it was, it would still die from constantly taking too much damage. After a minute or so, the monster was defeated. Zhang Yang turned around and saw many monsters spawning and dying in the same manner. It was no wonder that the number of monsters around here was that many. The traps laid around here was set to damage even their own soldiers. Talk about realistic friendly fire... The remaining monsters were only roaming around the large black tiled area.

Now that Zhang Yang understood the concept of this floor, he worked a plan and walked on bravely. He stepped on a black tile and followed the

path onwards without stepping on any traps. There were still times where he had to jump around as if he was in a gymnastics competition, unwillingly drawing the attention of the monsters around.

“Rawr!”

It did not take long for one of the Skeleton Guard to notice him and charged at him. Zhang Yang scanned the area quickly, forming a battle plan and withdrew 7 steps back.

The monster approached towards him with its sword swinging in the air.

[block]!

‘-224!’ [block] reflect damage.

‘-2000!’

The trap that the monster just triggered was part of Zhang Yang’s plan. He wanted the monster to step on it to take the trap’s damage. Two seconds later, the pillar of fire burst out again and dealt another 2,000 damage.

“Damn, I love this place!” Zhang Yang was overjoyed. He was happily activating [block] and since the skill only had a 1 second cooldown, he did not need to reserve it.

[block]!

[block]!

[block]!

The monster’s attack rate seemed to be one swing every 2 seconds, and it did not have any special skills that Zhang Yang had to pay special attention to as well. He could basically lose his weapon and solely use his shield to bash the hell out of them, not to mention making use of the traps all over the field to help him! With Zhang Yang strong attacks, the monster was defeated under 30 seconds and granted him a luxurious amount of experience points.

It was all because of the OP skill [block] that Zhang Yang could be so relaxed! 1 second cooldown? No problem man! With the monsters’ long

attack interval, they could not break his defense, let alone even trying to leave a scratch mark on him!

No wonder the skill [block] had to be nerfed! This skill is just too OP that every Guardian could be so relaxed even in an intense situation!

“Awesome!”

A single monster alone granted him 50,000 experience points, and he only took 30 seconds to defeat one. Talk about super grinding speed! Zhang Yang could not help but to scream out in ecstasy!

Zhang Yang looted the corpse and carried on. One by one he killed the monsters with much ease. As he had already gotten used to the mechanics of this field, he took the trap and used it to his advantage instead. It was like a walk in the park! He arrived at the next floor entrance in no time at all!

“Hmm... the first floor was all about the number of players. If there were not enough manpower, it was instant death! The second floor required the party to limit the number of players! If they were to bring in their entire fleet, this place would burn them all extra crispy style! What an interesting battle ground. I wonder how would it be for the third floor?” Zhang Yang talked to himself.

He has never encountered a place like this before in his previous life. The entire game map was just too large! Just Level 30 training grounds would have exceeded around 11 maps. Previously, when he just entered the game, most of the players already left the low-level maps. Almost all low-level training grounds were filled with a small number of players. Since there were more monsters than players around, just one map alone was sufficient to train from Level 30 to Level 40!

However, after reaching Level 50 and above, things got a little slower. Since the eight major cities in the China server did not have their own respective training grounds for players above Level 50, players beyond that would have to share the training ground, and things got a little rowdy after that; especially after Level 100. The entire world, all 8 servers including China, had 64 major cities' players come together to fight in

their respective level map, and the situation got worse. There were even fights and little skirmishes happening every day!

Zhang Yang walked down the stairs and arrived to the third floor.

There was another overly large field again, but this time the monsters were magic attack types. Instead of wielding swords, the same Skeletal monsters were wearing robes, and the number of monsters around had also dropped once more. There were at least 10 meters of distance between each monster.

[Tower Dark Sorcerer] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 30,000

They had the same level and elite tier, but these monsters were 20,000 HP lesser than the previous floor's monsters. Magic-based monsters were naturally built with low defense. However, Zhang Yang could not lower his guard against them since Guardians were only strong against physical attack types. [block] would not be as effective against them!

Oh well, since the bridge was there, he had to cross it. Time for another killing spree!

Zhang Yang raised the sword in his hand and charge forward. Without delay, one of the monsters quickly noticed him and raised its staff to cast a magic spell.

This is... [shadow arrow]!

Zhang Yang was happy for a moment. He then quickly took a [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] and ran into the effective range to cast [charge] and stunned the monster. The monster's spell was cancelled before it could finish.

'-742!' Normal attack.

'-3022!' Critical strike! [horizontal sweep].

The Sorcerer quickly recovered from the stun. Zhang Yang could not tell what expression it made since its face was completely made out of a

human skull. However, he knew that the monster began to chant another spell when the boney jaw started to clatter. The [shadow arrow] progress bar continued as it chanted.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds!

Pew!

A [shadow arrow] flew across the field and damaged Zhang Yang with 700 damage.

Zhang Yang's Rage rose to 62 points. He first started off with [Cripple Defense] to drop its Defense down to 0 with his passive skill, [eagle eye].

[destructive smash]! [force strike]! [horizontal sweep]!

Zhang Yang prioritized to cast [destructive smash] and [horizontal sweep] first before the Defense reduction effect wore off before casting [force strike] to deplete his Rage.

20 seconds into the battle, Zhang Yang had taken 6 of the [shadow arrow] and had his HP reduced down to 550 HP. He quickly consumed a healing potion and healed 1,000 HP. He took another 6 of the [shadow arrow] in just 6 seconds!

By then, Zhang Yang only had 150 HP remaining while the Sorcerer had more than 10,000 HP left.

"Damn, I have to rely on my other skills to fight!" Zhang Yang sighed and activated [berserker's heal] and fully recovered his HP.

Chapter 114: Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer

If monsters had conscious thought, they would be bawling in frustration and denial like sore losers by now!

What kind of cheating douche was this Guardian?! How does he heal himself back to full health like that?! The worst part of it was the fact that he could heal way faster than any Priest or Scared Knight at his level! What was the point of attacking him anyway... he would just heal himself and they would start from ground zero again... we might as well just give up and drink tea...

The Tower Skeleton Sorcerer however, was not sentient or self-aware in any way, and was chanting non-stop, his boney jaw chattering, to cast [shadow arrow] after [shadow arrow]. It would stop at nothing to kill Zhang Yang.

However, with one full health bar, Zhang Yang could bring down 2/3 of the monster's HP before he activated any of his HP regenerating skills, as if his healing was on steroids. The one having rough days would be the monsters facing Zhang Yang.

It took him roughly 10 seconds to kill the monster.

"Phew! Sorcerer-types are definitely troublesome!" Zhang Yang sighed as he slowed down to eat some health recovering snacks.

"Ooi! Noob tank! Where are you? Are you inside?" Wei Yan Er called out to Zhang Yang via the voice messenger.

"I'm in the third floor now! Are you guys here already?" Zhang Yang replied as he walked to the corpse, picking up some [Cotton Cloth] and coins. There was even a Level 30 Green-Copper equipment. It was not worth much, but it could at least be sold for 10 to 20 gold coins.

"Don't even dream of that happening. There are so many players outside here that the line stretches from Misty Valley all the way to Tullon Town! Some even started getting into brawls since they're out of options. Woah!

Speak of the devil. Woohoo!! Kick his ass! ahem As I was saying, there's no way for us. We'll definitely not be entering. What do we do now?"

"Might as well just do something else. You can either wait for the crowd to disperse and then sneak in, or just give it up. If you don't see any way in, then just go back!"

Against such numbers, they would never be able to fight their way into the tower. They had better odds finding a high-level boss to cast [silence] on every single player out there.

"Sigh! What a letdown!" Wei Yan Er abruptly hung up on the call.

"What a rude little brat!" Zhang Yang laughed as he continued further down the floors.

Upon encountering the second Sorcerer, he activated the sword's [lifesteal] to fight it. He made quick work of it, and sat down, waiting for the [berserker's heal] to finish its cooldown before proceeding.

One by one, he continued to repeat the same cycle of skills to cut his way through the floor. The progress was snail-paced, only reaching the end of the floor after half an hour. By then, the first Sorcerer that he killed had already respawned.

"Finally! The fourth floor! I'm pretty sure everyone else is still struggling on the First Floor!" Zhang Yang grinned evilly and proceed.

Eh!? What the hell? What a vast difference!

The fourth floor was not a huge field like all the others, it was a huge maze! From the top of the stairs, Zhang Yang could see the maze and all its complexities, but he could not see the end of it. He could not even make out the right path!

"How old-fashioned! This is just an old-school method used in the olden days of RPG to waste a player's time! Sigh!" Zhang Yang dragged his feet into the maze.

He came across a 3-way intersection after only walking 8 meters in.

"I'll only need to keep following the right wall, might as well just walk a

few more!” Zhang Yang muttered. This method was slow, but fool proof. If you were out of directions, you could just walk along the walls to your right or left to find your way out.

Shush!

There was a sudden disturbance in the air as Zhang Yang walked. He noticed it immediately and used [charge] towards the general direction of the disturbance.

‘-691!’

A damage text popped out and a shadowy figure appeared. It was holding a pair of short swords in its hands, as it dashed towards Zhang Yang to attack.

Zhang Yang activated [block] and [shield bash] to reveal its true form.

It was a Spectre Assassin. Its skeletal body was covered in a thick gray colored cloth, its face was also completely covered with the same material but its eye sockets were lit with dark flames.

[Tomb Assassin] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 50,000

Only one of the attacks was blocked! The other sword was cutting through the air as it swiftly approached Zhang Yang! A dual-wielding monster! Its attack interval was extremely short!

Zhang Yang quickly activated another [block] and tumbled over to evade another incoming attack that he could not block. This assassin struck hard and fast, and did so very frequently. Just when it could not get any worse, it revealed its skill! Zhang Yang saw a flash of black light appeared on his body and a DoT icon appeared on his head.

[Fatal Poison]: Receive 500 Natural damage over 15 seconds. Can be stacked 5 times.

Damn! Of all things, he got poisoned! Damn DoT!

Zhang Yang quickly attacked to finish the monster off as fast as he could. Zhang Yang could evade and block almost all physical attacks but he could not prevent himself from the DoT skill!

‘-1,516!’

‘-3,072!’

‘-711!’

Zhang Yang chained attack after attack on the monster, giving all he got and finally killed off the assassin about a minute later.

Zhang Yang sat down and restore his HP with health recovering snacks. Luckily the monster was not as strong as a player. Its DoT effect infliction success rate was low. Zhang Yang was only stacked with 2 layers of the poison before he killed the monster off. He only had 300 HP remaining but he had not activated any of his emergency skills with long cooldowns.

After restoring to full health, Zhang Yang got up and walked over to pick up the loot.

[First Aid: Level 1 Antidote Bandage] (Skill Book)

Use: Teaches you how to make a [Level 1 Antidote Bandage]

Require: Advance First Aid.

Zhang Yang eyes glinted with joy. It was just like a Fatty Han giving him a phone charger when his phone was running out of battery! It was just what he needed, and the game decided to help him with it! He quickly took the skill book and learned it.

[Level 1 Antidote Bandage]: Remove a Level 60 and below Poison effect.

Require: Advanced First Aid.

Cooldown time: 15 seconds.

The items required to make the bandage were only slightly more costly than the [Cotton Bandage]. It only needed an additional [Cotton Cloth], bringing the total to 2!

Zhang Yang snickered. He immediately crafted 10 stacks of [Level 1

Antidote Bandage] for later use. He was now a Specialist-tier First Aid; he could make 6 items at one time. It only took him 30 to 40 seconds to make that amount.

Along the way, Zhang Yang encountered many more Spectre Assassins. None of them could sneak up to Zhang Yang, not when he had so much experience in fighting actual assassin players. Without the fear of getting poisoned, Zhang Yang could easily counter the attacks of the thieves and kill them all without a scratch!

At times like these, a skill book, an item, or an equipment with special effect, any one of these could actually turn the tide of battle for some! Before Zhang Yang had the [Level 1 Antidote Bandage], he could only face one assassin at a time, but now, he could take several of them at a time!

This maze was so complicated that it turned from being tiring to being downright annoying. Coupled with the endless amount of assassins sneaking around, Zhang Yang only managed to escape the maze after 2 hours of wandering about inside!

“GAH! F*cking annoying!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He looked up and saw a tightly sealed door no further than 10 meters ahead that led down to the fifth floor. Just as he was about to move his right leg forward, he felt a sudden sensation. It was a killing intent.

Shush!

Zhang Yang slashed at the air to his left side, and a splash of blood appeared in the air!

‘-661!’

The slender body of a woman appeared out of thin air as Zhang Yang had forced the thing out of stealth. It was a super sexy Elf woman with pointy ears, sparkly eyes, and skin so fair that no one on Earth could compete with!

A Spectre! And a highly leveled one too at that!

Only a high leveled spectre could maintain the appearance of its previous life before it died. Based on its appearance alone, you could never

differentiate a high level spectre from a normal living being!

[Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 36

HP: 400,000

Note: She was the Wind Ranger of the Flame Wolves Army. She was converted into a Spectre by the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar

Damn! No wonder all the monsters here are Spectres. It looked like those high ranked ones were trapped down here! If the fourth floor has Clear Lotus as the boss, it could mean that up to 10 bosses stood between him and the last floor!

A field boss was quite rare, unlike the boss in the dungeon where a normal player could fight it alone! That was one of the reasons why most of the field bosses out there had better drops than dungeon bosses! Those valuable items like skill book, recipes, pets, and mounts were all drops from field bosses!

10 Gray-Silver field bosses for him alone to kill! Talk about digging up an oil rig!

Zhang Yang recalled back to the time when he killed the Cave of Bones's Shurian; how many awesome items did he have to give up to the team!

Right now, the question was whether or not he could go all the way to the last floor!

If his opponent was a physical attack-type monster, he would be able to force his way through fairly easily. But if he faced a magical attack-type, his [block] will be rendered useless! That still would not be too much trouble if that particular boss had 30,000 or 50,000 HP, but if the boss had more than 1 million HP, where would he even begin?

"This is a restricted area. All intruders must die!" Clear Lotus let out a crystal crisp voice. She gripped the daggers in her hands and slashed at Zhang Yang's throat!

[block]!

‘-199!’ [block] reflect damage.

‘-447!’ [shield bash].

An eye for an eye, after a normal attack, Zhang Yang cast [horizontal sweep] and inflicted a critical attack.

‘-2,472!’

The boss snarled in anger and swung the daggers in her hands even faster than better.

[block]!

[block]!

[block]!

‘+100!’

The set-equipment effect would still trigger with a successful [block].

No matter what kind of boss it was, it would be most definitely be frustrating when fighting someone who could activate [block] every freaking second!

In an instant, a black outline appeared around the boss’ daggers and Zhang Yang head was adorned with a DoT icon above it.

‘Ding! You have received Spectre’s Decay (1 stack). Received 800 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

‘Ding! You have received Spectre’s Decay (2 stack). Received 1600 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

As expected from a boss, she could inflict two layers of DoT skill at one go!

Zhang Yang quickly consumed a [Level 1 Antidote Bandage] to clear one Poison effect. The second Poison effect could only be cleared after 10 seconds.

‘-640!’

‘-640!’

‘-640!’

In just 10 seconds, Zhang Yang received a total of,1920 points of poison damage!

Chapter 115: A Change of Heart

Almost all of the boss' normal attacks were deflected by [block]. With that fast attack speed and frequency, Zhang Yang could not spare any single [block] to waste. At the same time, the [brave] set-equipment constantly restored his health. Slowly yet steadily, many green texts of '+100' popped over his head.

The DoT effect had inflicted 1,920 damage to Zhang Yang in 10 seconds, but at the same time, the [brave] set-equipment effect had healed Zhang Yang by over 500 HP. After removing the second DoT skill, he healed another 500 HP again.

'Ding! You have been afflicted with Spectre's Decay (1 stack). Receive 800 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

'Ding! You have been afflicted with Spectre's Decay (2 stack). Receive 1600 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

20 seconds later, the boss inflicted another DoT Poison.

Zhang Yang immediately removed the first layer, and the second layer after 10 seconds.

The boss was not like a player that could think and act unpredictably. Their attacks were all fixed with a rotational cycle. For example, some skills would be activated after a fixed duration, other skills would be activated after dropping to a certain level of health, others when losing a certain amount of health within a certain period of time, and many other fixed conditions.

After being inflicted with poison twice by the boss, Zhang Yang learned that the boss would cast the DoT skill once in roughly every 20 seconds! If Zhang Yang had not possessed any [Level 1 Poison Antidote], he would have accumulated over 5 layers of [Spectral Decay] in just 40 seconds! Even though he had the 20% damage reduction passive skill, he would still receive at least 3,200 damage every tick! [shield wall], [berserker's heal] and the [lifesteal] effect of the sword would have only prolonged his struggle for another 10 or 20 seconds!

What luck!

No... could it be that the developers purposely designed the monsters on the upper floor to have the bandage recipe? If they had not done so, even a tank with a healer would not be able to hold for long against this boss!

Zhang Yang was the only oddball in the game that had maximized his [block] skill level. The [Level 1 Antidote Bandage] required the player to have the First Aid skill mastery raised to Advance-tier to be able to use it. Majority of players around would be estimated to be only around Amateur-tier currently. There could also be players who were unwilling to invest in raising their mastery level, and could be at the lowest rank, Beginner First Aid. Even if they managed to get their hands on the recipe, they could do nothing but stare at it in agony.

With that in mind, Zhang Yang could be the only person in the game with the ability to fight the boss alone!

Zhang Yang started to calculate. If he could nullify every single physical attack from the boss and only receive the poison damage, he would lose, on average, 1,920 HP every 20 seconds. With the help of the set-equipment healing effect, he would heal at least 1,000 HP. This brought down the loss to 46 HP every second! He had [berserker's heal], [lifesteal] effect of the sword, and also the occasional healing potion consumption, he would last for a long, long time in battle!

There was hope!

Zhang Yang gathered his wits, before stacking 5 layers of [Cripple Defense], and began his onslaught.

With the cooldown of [block] reduced down to 1 second, the efficiency of [shield bash] grew more significant as it contributed to the total damage over time! Under 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense] and [eagle eye], the [block] damage reflect could exceed 250 damage and [shield bash] could deal at least 530 damage!

That meant that, by only activating [block] and [shield bash] alone, at least 800 damage was dealt per second!

This was definitely a major upgrade, since a 2-second [block] cooldown could only deal 400 damage, 3-second cooldown could deal 266 damage while a 4-second cooldown would only deal 200 damage!

Of course that could only be applied to bosses with fast attacking speed. If the boss attacked every 2 seconds or even once in every 3 seconds, the combined damage of both [block] and [shield bash] would be reduced tremendously.

Watching how he had managed to pull it off smoothly, Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little prideful of his feat. He sighed again to know that this godly [block] would be nerfed in the future! If it remains unchanged, Guardians would definitely obtain the highest in the damage statistics against all fast attacking bosses!

After a minute into the battle, Zhang Yang's HP had dropped down to 1,990 HP while the boss still had roughly around 320,000 HP! He immediately consumed a health potion and restored his health back up to 2,990 HP. Another minute went by and Zhang Yang was left only with 230 HP while the boss's HP had dropped down to 250,000 HP! That was 100,000 HP worth of damage in over 1 minute!

Just as the health potion cooldown was done, Zhang Yang quickly consumed a bottle and brought up his HP back to 1,230 HP. However, this little bit of HP recovery could only last him for about 20 seconds! His HP continued dropping like a roller coaster down the slope!

[berserker's heal]!

Foosh! His HP was restored back to full health!

40 seconds later, the health potion cooldown was done and Zhang Yang took another bottle and his HP was back up to 3,910 HP. The boss still had around 180,000 HP left!

GAH! What an awesome feeling! It's been ages since Zhang Yang had a solo boss fight!

[block] and the [brave] set-equipment effect was just too OP! He could literally just depend on [block] alone to kill the Gray-Silver boss!

After another minute, Zhang Yang consumed the fourth bottle of health potion and restored his health to 2,250 HP. The boss was only left 100,000 HP!

40 seconds later, Zhang Yang activated the sword's [lifesteal] effect. Slash! Slash! Slash! He sliced the boss 3 times and stole more than 3,000 HP from the boss! He had healed his HP back to the maximum amount!

20 seconds later, his health potion cooldown was done. At the same time, his [berserker's heal] was ready to be used. Zhang Yang remained front of the boss like an annoying cockroach, taking all the hits without even budging from his place!

With this, the defeat of the first boss would be imminent! It was not even a challenge at all!

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel a little sympathetic. A thought came into his mind. If some other party tried to fight this boss, the [spectral decay] effect would have easily stacked up to 5 layers which would ultimately reach a super high damage value and could easily kill 90% of any tank out there! In this case, it was not about the other tanks being weak, it was Zhang Yang's excellent exploitation of the game's bugs!

The boss wailed in despair as it turned into a pillar of light and fell defeated, dropping its battle loot all over the floor.

"Aww yiss!" Zhang Yang clapped his hands. He was extremely excited! To have the ability to solo a boss was every single player's ambition, including Zhang Yang's! But ever since he had defeated the Black Panther King at the beginner village, he had been so preoccupied with raiding dungeons, forming a party, managing a guild, and making potions like there was no tomorrow, that he had been completely drawn into the idea of making money!

Ever since he was reborn, he had always been carrying an emotional baggage. To prevent the misery from occurring again, he increased the load on his bag. The game was supposed to be a tool of entertainment, but Zhang Yang did not see it that way. To him, the game was a tool for him to

make a fortune!

At this moment however, Zhang Yang finally had a taste of the game's true purpose! He had experienced the fun from killing a boss! He finally felt the rush of battle! The feeling of victory! Money was important, but so was having fun in the game!

However, he could not ever forgive the man who had cause him despair in his past. Liu Wei and his guild Myth must pay the price! But a man must not live with only vengeance in his heart. If a heart remained wrecked with poison and twisted with nefarious intent, one cannot be his true self.

With a sudden epiphany, Zhang Yang had felt that the future was not as heavy a burden as he thought it would be. The weight on his shoulders was now lighter than before. He smiled. For the first time after a long while, he smiled, both physically and mentally.

"Time for the loots! Loots!" Zhang Yang laughed as he tried to imitate Wei Yan Er screaming every time they finished a boss fight.

[Blade of the Abyss] (Gray-Silver, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 125-187

Attack Interval: 1.3 seconds.

DPS: 120

[Level 1 Socket]

[Level 1 Socket]

Equip Effect: After a successful attack on a target, there will be a chance to inflict [darkness decay]. Target will have 5% increase in all Natural damage. Last for 10 seconds.

Level requirement: 30

Poison was a Natural damage. A dagger was meant for Thieves, especially the Phantom Assassin. This weapon was the best weapon by far in the game!

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Sun Xin Yu containing the description of the weapon. He then call her on the voice messenger.

“Do you need this?” He asked nonchalantly.

“Yes.” She replied coldly.

“Do you really need it!?” He said a little louder.

“Yes! I need it!” Her tone raised evenly.

“Are you sure...?” Zhang Yang played with her a little longer.

“YES! I NEED IT!” She finally screamed.

“...I don’t feel the spirit there. Let me start over again. Do you need this?”

“What the hell are you doing!?” Sun Xin Yu finally got angry. Is he playing with a dog?

“Haha! I was just playing with you! You need to speak up more! Don’t always wander off alone like that! Get along with us a little more!” Zhang Yang laughed. After he had managed to arrange his thoughts, he was now a little relaxed.

“There... There’s something different about you.” A woman was always sharp with these subtle changes, especially since it was The Ice Queen Sun Xin Yu.

“Is that a good thing? Or a bad thing?” Zhang Yang asked.

“Who cares about that? I’m going to grind my level now! Leave me alone!”

Beep.

Sun Xin Yu hung up.

Zhang Yang continued to laugh at Sun Xin Yu’s reaction and continued to delve deeper into the loots.

[Strength Necklace] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +15

Strength: +15

Equip Effect: All your attacks will have a 5% chance to trigger a buff that grants +50 strength. Effect cannot be stacked. Last for 10 seconds.

Level requirement: 30

Not bad. It was almost time for him to change the necklace he had since Bangar Crypt. After swapping the new necklace, Zhang Yang's HP rose a little higher, reaching 4,870 HP. It was almost breaking the 5,000 benchmark!

[Will of Defense] (Green-Copper, Shield)

Defense: +120

Vitality: +60

Level requirement: 30

Even though this shield was just a Green-Copper tier, it could still be sold off for a good price because shields in the market were scarce! The best shield so far was [United Elemental Shield], the shield Zhang Yang obtained from the Hardcore Mode of Marzerway's Lair.

There were not many teams around that could conquer Hardcore Marzerway's Lair. Furthermore, even if they did manage to kill Marzerway, there was still the drop rate to worry about. Furthermore, the 20-man dungeon would only be available 3 days after the first raid. So far, the number of players in White Jade Castle who would have this shield was no more than 10!

The shield that was one rank below the [United Elemental Shield] was the [Earthen Round Shield], and its recipe could only be found at the Hardcore Mode Hidden boss of the Bangar Crypt. So far, players around Level 30 had turned back to farm the Level 10 dungeon. Since they could easily defeat the dungeon with their level advantage, the recipe had been found by many players and the shield was now obsolete among the top players. Almost every regular Joe or Jane who called themselves tanks out there had the same [Earthen Round Shield] hanging on their backs.

This [Will of Defense] was not as strong as [United Elemental Shield] but it was far stronger than the [Earthen Round Shield]! Zhang Yang

continued laughing softly to himself as he kept the shield in his inventory. Zhang Yang reached out his hand to get more items.

There were no other Gray-Silver equipment but there were at least 4 more Green-Copper equipment for him. However, these were all helmets, gloves, boots, and armor type equipment. Since there was already a set-equipment around, these equipment could only be sold for a low price!

Was that all?

Zhang Yang reached out his hand again to make sure. This was the first death of the boss; the drop rate must be high! There had to be some more good stuff!

[Servant: Spectre Assassin] (Silver-tier)

Use: Summons a Spectre Assassin as your servant in battle. Last for 5 minutes. You can only summon one Servant at a time. Summoning any Servant will cause all Servants to be in cooldown.

Cooldown time: 30 minutes.

Level requirement: 30

Binds on obtain.

A Servant! Zhang Yang eyes glinted with joy!

So far, Hunters were the only class in the game that could summon beasts as minions in battle. In the future, during the Inheritance patch update, Spellcasters and Priests would be able to have the “Summoning” Inheritance. They could form a pact with a demon to obtain a demon pet. The only way for the other classes to have a summon would be Servants!

As far as Zhang Yang knew, there were 3 tiers of servants; Copper-tier, Silver-tier, and Gold-tier. Zhang Yang did not know whether or not if there were any other higher tiered summonable Servants available in the game, since the highest-level player in the game in his previous life was only Level 204. It was quite a stretch from reaching the maximum level of 300!

The biggest weakness of a Servant compared to a Hunter’s summoned pet was the duration. Unlike the Hunter’s pet, Servants could not last

forever in the field. Furthermore, a Hunter's pet would follow the owner's level and gain strength as the owner levelled up. A Servant however, remained the same forever. The drop rates of servants were so rare and limited that only field bosses had a chance of dropping it.

A Copper-tier Servant was the weakest among all. The damage was low and it did not possess any skill. They existed to allow players to have a thrill of becoming a master of a summoned Servant. The benefit of this Copper-tier Servant was that once a player had gotten sick of it, he or she could sell it off to other players. A Silver-tier Servant was much more valuable. It would only be dropped by high level bosses. This Servant's attack was much stronger and had a set of skills to use. The downside of a Silver-tier Servant was that it would be bound to the player once he or she obtained it. It was untradeable and unsellable.

The strongest among all Servants was the Gold-tier. They would only be dropped by super strong bosses! In his previous life, when he did the Inheritance quest mission to defeat the King-Kong, it was capable of dropping a Gold-tier Servant which was an extremely powerful miniaturized version of itself!

1Bug – Bug is an error in programming in the game which would cause the game to have some functions to go out of the norm. There are some cases where the bug could be taken advantage of, like the ones in the previous chapters. In this case, Zhang Yang was exploiting bugs that allowed him to be capable of performing extraordinary feats that no human could possibly perform.

Chapter 116: Powerful Servant

Logically, Silver-tiered Servants were not as rare as Gold-tier Servant, but it was still not supposed to be dropped by Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer, a small-fry of a gatekeeper boss! Rather, it should have been dropped by the final boss which was that Evil Sorcerer!

Probably this was due to the first kill of Clear Lotus – The Ice Whisperer, so it was a bonus loot!

Yes! Great fortune indeed!

Zhang Yang felt euphoric, and continued to the staircase, step by step to the entrance of fifth floor.

He followed the steps and walked down, turning 7 to 8 rounds before entering the tower's fifth floor.

This floor was different again. It was full of stelae which were at least as tall as seven or eight people and as wide as about three people. Untamed flora grew across the ground. Zhang Yang was felt like he had just stepped into ancient historical remains, fit to be an archaeological excavation!

Zhang Yang raised his head and gazed into the distance. It was dead silent, and the only thing that caught his eyes were some unknown grade of gemstones glimmering on the top of stelae.

“Stealth monsters again?” Zhang Yang grumbled in his heart.

He gingerly stepped forward, sword and shield drawn and raised.

Shwoop!

A number of projectiles suddenly shot rapidly toward Zhang Yang from all directions!

“I am not able to dodge them all!” Zhang Yang calmly said to himself. He still had [block]!

‘-562!’

‘-534!’

‘-571!’

‘-557!’

[block] was completely ineffective! Zhang Yang caught sight of four skeletal archers stepping out from the back of a stela in front of him. The skeletal archers were holding bows, each as long as half a person, gazing at him with strong killing intent.

[Underground Tower’s Archer] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 40,000

[block] was definitely an overpowered skill but it was invalid for ranged attacks!

Zhang calculated that the distance between the skeletal archers and himself was at least 20 meters. Their effective range was 2 to 10 meters so Zhang Yang had to take some shots from them if he tried to close the distance. The skeletal archers would always pull away to maintain the distance between themselves and their targets, while unleashing their attack continuously. However, they would only use melee attacks when they fail to shake their targets off. However, Zhang Yang did not have any AoE immobilizing skill so whenever the skeletal archers spread out, Zhang Yang could only chase after them one at a time and swing at it with all his might!

In a moment. Zhang Yang already thought up numerous strategies, and decided not to rush towards the skeletal archers but instead retreated to take cover behind a huge stela.

In ‘God’s Miracle’, be it by players or monsters, ranged attacks would never penetrate the obstacles unless they broke the obstacles themselves. The four skeletal archers clattered noisily, approaching the stela to attack Zhang Yang.

As the skeletal archers drew closer to the stela, Zhang Yang immediately used [horizontal sweep] and four ‘-1400’ damage texts appeared above their heads.

The four skeletal archers punched at Zhang Yang pathetically. Ranged attack monsters' had naturally low melee damage, and the most they could deal was just 100 points of base damage, which was completely nullified by Zhang Yang's defense. They each only inflicted 1 point of damage to him. Additionally, as if things weren't bad enough for them, their valid strikes had also activated Zhang Yang's set equipment's HP recovery effect, and three '+100' green text floated above his head.

Still, things won't be so simple. The four skeletal archers jumped backwards after that attack, and gained about 10 meters of distance!

[tumble], this was the unique skill for Hunters as an evasive maneuver whenever danger came too close!

Zhang Yang only curled his lips knowingly, before slipping back behind the huge stela.

If those skeletal archers coordinated like actual players, they could actually occupy each corner and surround the stela so that Zhang Yang would be within one of their line of fire no matter where he hid! Unfortunately, this was not the case; as soon they saw Zhang Yang hiding behind the stela, and as per scripted response, they roared, and approached Zhang Yang's position again.

Zhang Yang jumped out again when the skeletal archers approached the stela. Ten seconds of cooldown was up, and Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep] again, with four damage texts carrying high numbers appearing above their heads.

Once again, the skeletal archers tried to retreat from Zhang Yang!

This was the programmed combat tactic for a ranged attack monster. Although [tumble] was still in cooldown and unavailable, the four skeletal archers spread out, retreating after throwing punches in retaliation!

Luckily, Zhang Yang was well prepared, he used [thunder strike] and the speed of those skeletal archers were immediately reduced. In the meantime, Zhang Yang zoned in on one of them, forcing the skeletal archer to run towards the direction of another skeletal archer, bunching them up together.

With excellent situational and combat awareness, Zhang Yang herded them like sheep, able to force four skeletal archers to the same direction, with none of them being able to keep their distance away from Zhang Yang in order to perform ranged attacks.

30 seconds later after receiving a lot of harassment from Zhang Yang's sword, [tumble] was ready once again, and skeletal archers fled as one.

[charge]!

Zhang Yang dashed towards them, keeping close.

[tumble] and [charge] had the exact same 30 seconds of cooldown period, so the monsters would never be able to disengage from Zhang Yang!

Three minutes later, those four skeletal archers died miserably while Zhang Yang's HP had recovered, instead of dropping. He was just 2,000 HP short of his full HP! Those skeletal archers' melee attacks activated his set equipment's healing effect so frequently that it was laughable.

This combat seemed easy but it was actually very difficult to fully execute! To herd four monsters into the same direction, while keeping an attentive eye on the monsters' movement patterns, along with further judgment of when to intercept were required to work concurrently. A lesser fighter would have already been turned into a pin-cushion when the archers had spread out.

Zhang Yang managed the entire fight using his experience and excellent senses.

Zhang Yang looted from the monsters' corpses and continued to move forward.

Zhang Yang only moved another few steps forward when he immediately came under attack again. This time, six skeletal archers jumped out. If it had been more than six monsters, Zhang Yang would have really been in trouble!

Zhang Yang repeated his tactic, using the huge stela to take cover from their arrows, while luring them towards him! However, it was much harder

to keep six monsters in a group compared to four, so Zhang Yang simply summoned the servant, taking the opportunity to gauge the strength of this Silver-tier servant.

[Spectre Assassin Clear Lotus - The Ice Whisperer] (Silver-tier Servant)

Level: 36

HP: 3,600

Melee Damage: Main Attack: 256-316 (Attack Interval: 1.8 seconds),
Secondary Attack: 84-124 (Attack Interval: 1.3 seconds)

Skill: [steath], [shadow walk], [backstab] and [substitute].

[steath] : Blends into the shadow and reduces the chance of being detected but receives a penalty of 50% movement speed reduction.
Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

[shadow walk] : Walks in the dark, immediately flickers to the back of the target to deal an increased 20% skill damage. Range: 10 meters.
Cooldown time: 30 seconds.

[backstab] : Immediately attacks the target's back, dealing 150% damage as main servant. Can only be activated at the back of target. Cost: 50 Energy. Requirement: Dagger.

[substitute] : Transfer master's debuff to the servant and renders the master immune to all damage for the next 5 seconds. If the servant dies before that, the master's immune effect will be ended immediately.
Cooldown time: 5 minutes.

It was amazing! It was deserving to be called a Silver-tier Servant, its damage was comparable to a Level 36 player equipped with Level 30 Green-Copper equipment!

The most awesome thing was [substitute] as it could transfer all of the master's debuff! It was an excellent anti-control trick, even with 5 seconds of invincible status. It was absolutely the most divine skill up to current phase.

Besides that, this Spectre Assassin was a carbon copy of Clear Lotus -

The Ice Whisperer. The servant was a bombshell, her top tightly bound with leather and leopard-patterned strips which exposed her plump and firm bosom. Her bottom was wrapped in a leather miniskirt with similar leopard-themed patterning, accenting her curvy and firm booty. Her exposed legs were long and fair!

Such a glamorous appearance added a lot of marks to her! If Fatty Han saw her, he would definitely fall unconscious from a massive nosebleed!

How would it feel like if I touched her? Such an idea popped up in Zhang Yang's mind and he quickly shook it off. This was definitely due to Fatty Han's dirty-minded influence!

Unfortunately, she could only materialize for 5 minutes!

Zhang Yang sighed in dissatisfaction as he quickly dispatched the six monsters and proceeded on.

For the next 5 minutes, with the help of the servant, he wiped the floor with the monsters. As the servant's duration was up, it suddenly turned into a ray of white light and disappeared into thin air.

There were several more monsters along the way, and he had to deal with several more groups of these pesky ranged attackers. Half an hour later, and only with one-fifth of the entire passaged covered, the servant was once again ready.

He summoned it immediately, even if it was not due to the increase in the speed of his kills, Zhang Yang felt good only from looking at her! After all, killing monsters alone was pretty boring and at least having a pretty girl to accompany him was pleasing to the eyes.

Zhang Yang finally came to the end of this floor after three hours. In front of him was a hall, designed not unlike a Roman-architecture, supported by twelve huge pillars. The hall had undergone significant damage, with most of the rooftop being completely missing, and the rest of it in powdery decay.

There was a throne carved out from a large boulder at the bottom of the hall, it's back about three persons tall, towering in dominance despite its

neglected state! There was a closed door to the left side of the throne. Zhang Yang believed that it was the entrance to the sixth floor! That also meant...

There was also a stout, chunky figure atop the throne, dressed in thin armor which seemed to glow silver-white under the weak lighting. There was a huge bow, at least twice his height, resting against the left armrest of the throne!

He was a Dwarven hunter!

[Supreme Archer Barga - The Mead] (Gray-Silver Boss)

Level: 36

HP: 400,000

Note: Supreme Archer, chief of Flame Wolves Army's archery division. He was the pride of Dwarves but he became a spectre due to Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar.

Looks like the bosses on the earlier floors were the key people of Flame Wolves Army. Unfortunately, all of them had fallen victim to the Evil Sorcerer.

Drawing in a deep breath, Zhang Yang drew his sword and sprinted explosively towards the throne, taking note of the boss' ranged nature.

"Bold intruder, how dare you step into the domain of Lord Terpot Ryhar! Just die!" Barga immediately grabbed his long bow and unleashed a lethal arrow with deadly speed and precision!

Zhang Yang raised his shield and ducked. Although [block] was invalid, but as a tank, raising the shield whenever encountering an attack has become second nature to him.

'-1,324!'

A huge amount of damage text floated above Zhang Yang's head, at the same time, his speed was reduced as well.

'Ding! You are affected by [concussion shot]. Movement speed reduced by 50% and lasts for 4 seconds!'

The distance between him and Barga was 20 meters which was out of the range of [charge]. Even if he was within [charge] range, he did not intend to use it! The hall may be supported by twelve huge pillars, but the base of the hall was so destroyed it could only cover half a person's height, therefore taking cover was not an option either!

[shield wall]!

Zhang Yang decided to use this long cooldown duration skill and continued dashing towards the Barga.

‘-134!’

Barga unleashed another shot but the damage was greatly reduced.

4 Seconds later, the speed reduction effect ended and Zhang Yang closed the distance.

Chapter 117: Barga - The Mead

Barga - The Mead tried to regain its distance. As an archer, despite being a boss, it was not going to take any situation lightly and avoid any melee contact.

However, moving back while fighting, and fully rushing towards the enemy were completely different matters altogether. 4 seconds later, the speed reduction effect had ended and Zhang Yang rapidly rushed towards Barga.

14 meters, 12 meters, 10 meters... 5 meters, 3 meters, 2 meters!

Barga - The Mead used [tumble] and jumped backwards by another 10 meters!

[charge]!

Zhang Yang had been saving his [charge] earlier on for this very occasion!

‘-673!’

‘-1,520!’

‘-1,492!’

Zhang Yang immediately swung his sword, slashing vigorously. After the series of normal attacks, he used the [horizontal sweep] combo along with [destructive smash] instantly dealing a massive amount of damage.

“Wretch, you dare challenge my archery?!” Barga cried out according to the script, but due to the situation, ironically raised his two fists and punched Zhang Yang.

‘-525!’

Bosses were definitely on another level when compared to typical monsters. Although Barga was a ranged attack class boss, it could still deal about 1,000 base damage with its bare fists. However, whenever Barga punched Zhang Yang, the damage was assimilated by Zhang Yang’s 20% immunity to offense, combined with his 260 defense value. Thus, the

damage that actually got through was only half of its original value!

Barga - The Mead suddenly swept a stout leg beneath Zhang Yang, and the latter received another debuff.

'Ding! You are affected by [stumble]. Movement speed reduced by 50% for 5 seconds!'

Zhang Yang only smiled as he stomped the ground and activated [thunder strike], returning the favor, as Barga was afflicted with a movement reduction effect as well.

Barga - The Mead tried to turn around and regain distance but with its movement speed reduced by 50%, it was useless, and he could only continue engaging in melee combat with Zhang Yang.

[block]!

[block]!

[block]!

Zhang Yang continued recovering HP due to the set equipment, as Barga continued attacking him.

Zhang Yang laughed triumphantly as he summoned his servant, Clear Lotus and tag-teamed Barga.

Because Zhang Yang had accumulated so much aggro, Barga's back was completely at the disposal of Clear Lotus and damage texts floated across Barga's head as she struck at leisure.

Half a minute later, Barga - The Mead's [tumble] was ready again so it immediately jumped backwards.

Foosh! Zhang Yang chased after Barga with [charge]. At the same time, Clear Lotus servant used [shadow walk], flickering behind Barga and continued attacking rapidly like a furious cat.

Zhang Yang alone could cause up to at least 1,000 damage to Barga and Clear Lotus servant caused about 300 damages. In total, they caused up to at least 1,300 damage; they removed 40,000 HP from Barga within 30 seconds!

“Nasty Warrior, if you have any guts, feel the draw of my bow!” Barga loudly proclaimed, continuously using [stumble] to try shaking Zhang Yang off. Each attempt was reciprocated with [thunder strike] and nothing was gained from it as they plodded along together in reduced speed.

Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless so he had to time [thunder strike] precisely. If he used [thunder strike] too early, or too late, Barga could pull away from him successfully.

Pah!

Barga - The Mead drew his bow and released an arrow at Zhang Yang at point blank. Zhang Yang's character got [dazed] and kept on turning around in the same place.

‘Ding! You are affected by [breaking shot], Dazed for 4 seconds!’

Zhang Yang hurriedly selected Clear Lotus servant's [substitute], instantly removed [dazed] effect and Clear Lotus servant replaced Zhang Yang to keep on spinning around at the same spot.

Hoo! Finally Zhang Yang had forced Barga to use [breaking shot] but [substitute]'s cooldown duration was 5 minutes long, meaning it could only be used once per summoning of Clear Lotus. However, [breaking shot] only had a cooldown of 1 minute. Zhang Yang would have to find a way to deal with the following [breaking shot].

90%, 80%, 70%... Barga's HP dropped rapidly due to the bombardment by Zhang Yang and his Clear Lotus servant.

Pah!

One minute later, Barga - The Mead's [breaking shot] cooldown's time was up and unleashed an arrow towards Zhang Yang once again.

This time, Zhang Yang could not remove the debuff but commanded his servant step in between them both.

‘-1,335!’

Barga - The Mead successfully pulled away from Zhang Yang and unleashed an arrow towards Zhang Yang

‘-1,322!’

Barga consecutively unleashed a second arrow towards Zhang Yang and his HP dropped by more than 50%!

4 Seconds later, with the [dazed] effect ended, Zhang Yang used a health recovery potion and dashed towards Barga.

Barga being foolish, shot an arrow towards the sky and a volley of arrows fell from the sky like rain.

‘Ding! Barga – The Mead cast [barrage], duration lasts 10 seconds!’

‘-1338!’ A damage text floated above Zhang Yang’s head but he quickly rushed out from the range of [barrage]!

Silly boss!

[barrage] was used to attack a bunch of enemies but this idiot used [barrage] on a single target! Besides, once [barrage] had been activated, it would continuously rain down at a fixed area as Barga remained rooted to his spot. Thus, Barga had turned himself into a huge wooden pole, unable to react to any attacks!

Zhang Yang strode purposefully towards Barga and began a series of attack with his sword.

Perhaps it was too much to call Barga an idiot because it was part of his design. [barrage] always existed in its skill list to deal with a bunch of players! The bosses in the game were set up to deal with entire parties of players, even more so when the boss was an open world boss, where there was no limit to the number of players allowed to engage them. AoE skills would be a staple part of their combat mechanisms.

All skills that existed in Barga’s retinue would be used based on the situation, and thus, [barrage] was finally used! In fact, Barga’s [barrage] was truly destructive as it inflicted 2,000 points of damage for every volley of arrows. If [barrage] was cast to a group of players crowded together, three volley of arrows would absolutely wipe them out!

Barga had to rely on its comparably weaker melee attacks and every

punch he threw was being nullified by Zhang Yang's [block]. It only served in activating the set equipment's HP recovery effect, and a series of green '+100' appeared above Zhang Yang's head continuously, until he was fully healed!

[tumble], [charge], [stumble] and [thunder strike]. Zhang Yang corresponded to every skill Barga used and he stuck closely to Barga like a parasite throughout the fight.

Barga used [breaking shot] once every minute which posed a significant threat to Zhang Yang but Barga would often do so in poor timing. Whenever Barga happened to cast it at the right time, Zhang Yang used [berserker's heal] to remove the debuff!

Five minutes later, Barga – The Mead had lost 370,000 HP and Clear Lotus suddenly turned into a ray of white light and disappeared into thin air.

It was a fair bit of damage output lost, with the servant's departure, but Zhang Yang kept his cool and dealt with Barga patiently.

30,000, 20,000, 10,000...

Another ten seconds later, Barga – The Mead cried out in agony, falling to the ground and dying in miserable manner.

Finally, it was over!

Zhang Yang raised his fist, his posture clearly conveying his excitement.

Suddenly, Barga – The Mead's corpse turned into a ray of white light, swiftly reforming again! It was as if he just resurrected himself!

Zhang Yang reflexively swung his sword at Barga, before any thoughts could take form in his head.

His sword hit nothing but air, and Barga remained untouched.

"Warrior, stay your hand, don't be nervous! For I'm just a soul right now!" Barga – The Mead spoke gruffly.

Don't be nervous? You assh*le of a corpse, how could I not be nervous after what that just happened?!

Zhang Yang looked carefully and saw that Barga's corpse had remained on the ground. The Barga that stood beside the corpse, was actually different compared the translucent Barga that stood over it. It was definitely how "ghosts" in game looked like.

[Barga – The Mead's Soul] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief as on the head of Barga's soul showed a huge exclamation mark which marked the availability of a quest.

"Sigh, I had been turned into spectre, no thanks to that Evil Sorcerer. Because of the Dwarves' secret technique, a part of my soul had survived, unaffected by that Evil Sorcerer, but I have remained trapped in my own tainted body! My soul has finally been released upon my defeat!" Barga – The Mead bowed its head to Zhang Yang and said warmly, "I thank you from the bottom of my heart, Warrior!"

This was a rare scene of a boss thanking a player for killing it!

Zhang Yang smiled and said: "Dwarf, do you have any other wishes that I can help you fulfill?"

Dwarves were a race, bold and straightforward. It was easy to deal with them, unlike the 'hum and haw' pondering and musings that the noble elf race enjoyed so much, and also unlike hypocritical humans, often riddled with malicious motives. In a way, Dwarves were similar to Beastmen.

"Please, take my my bow, and hand it over to my son at the Hammer Heart Castle!" Barga's soul looked at Zhang Yang earnestly.

"Ding! Barga – The Mead's soul has a quest for you: Remnant. Will you accept it?"

"Okay, you have my word!" Zhang Yang nodded his head and accepted the quest.

"Thank you, I hope the God of Titans will always be with you!" Barga's soul bowed to Zhang Yang again, before dispersing in gentle light.

[Remnant] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Hand over Barga – The Mead's bow to his son, Sith – The Mead! Sith – The Mead lives in the Hammer Heart Castle.

Progress: Hand over [Bow of the Fallen Moon] to Sith – The Mead (0/1)

"Noob tank, have you killed the boss yet?" Wei Yan Er sent a message and asked.

She had already asked once when Zhang Yang was still fighting Barga, but quickly read the situation and left him alone.

"Yeap, he's dead!"

"Wow, did it drop another servant? You promised to give me a servant!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and smiled as he had never made such a promise, Wei Yan Er had put those words in his mouth. "Little brat, servants don't fall from the sky! Besides, the tradable servants are only Copper-tiered, they're nothing much!"

"Waa, you piss me off! I want to kill the boss, I want the servant!"

"Stop fooling around, how's the situation outside?"

"Hee, people are dying by the dozens, and most of them have given up! It's so much quieter here now! The Guild Masters of Crimson Rage and Sky High have been unable to contact you but they would like to work with Little Snow and me. They plan to set up a toll at the Underground Tower, keeping the monsters dead. The toll would only allow entry to members of the guilds involved. So what do you think, should we accept?" Wei Yan Er said.

Zhang Yang limited his private messaging function to only his friends, which was why he could not be contacted. He thought about it and said: "Accept their request!"

Although this was somewhat domineering to others, but, in order to become a strong guild, instilling a degree of fear and respect was necessary. Otherwise, people would think that they were pushovers!

Chapter 118: Sixth Floor

Zhang Yang reached out to loot Barga – The Mead's corpse.

[Bow of the Fallen Moon] (Quest Item)

Item Description: Remnant of Barga - The Mead, one of the seven sanctified equipment of the Dwarves.

Sanctified equipment! It was just a grade lower than Celestial-tier equipment. Unfortunately, this was merely a quest item. If Zhang Yang got an actual sanctified weapon now, nothing would stand in his way!

Zhang Yang shook his head while smiling. There were two types of sanctified equipment, Holy-tier and Ascended-tier. The Holy-tier equipment could only be looted from above Level 170 bosses while Ascended-tier equipment could only looted from above Level 200 bosses. Zhang Yang was able to obtain only 2 pieces of Holy-tier equipment in his past life!

Dream Technology would not be foolish enough to release such divine equipment and break the balance, with the game being this young.

[Recipe: Legendary Beast Mane]

Use: You will learn to make Legendary Beast Manes.

Requirement: Advance Smithing Skill.

Mining Specialist had always been sending Green-Copper Bars to Zhang Yang, and thus, Zhang Yang already increased his Smithing to Advanced level as he worked on the craft in his free time. All he had to do now was to tap the recipe against his body and learn to smith [Legendary Beast Mane].

[Legendary Beast Mane] (Consumable)

Use: Add [Legendary Beast Mane] to ranged weapon and increase 50 Dexterity points.

It was awesome!

An additional 50 points of Dexterity was absolutely beneficial to Hunter

job! The Hunter's Dexterity was the equivalent of the Warrior's Strength, and Zhang Yang had only about 170 points of Strength, even with his Gray-Silver equipment. A [Legendary Beast Mane] added so many points of Dexterity. As a result, this item was definitely divine at the current phase of the game!

But looking further at the ingredients for smithing [Legendary Beast Mane], Zhang Yang let out a sigh! It required 10 units of [Silver Bar] and 2 of the [Meteor Fragment]. [Silver Bar] could easily be obtained from the spawn points of Silver Veins but [Meteor Fragment] was a rare drop, and the chances of harvesting it was very low.

It meant that [Legendary Beast Mane] could not be sold in bulk like [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]!

Zhang Yang thought about it before contacting Mining Specialist, asking, "Master Miner, can you mine [Silver Ore] yet?"

"I have achieved its requirements but I'm only Level 25 and will be unable to reach the locations of Silver Veins!" Mining Specialist replied immediately.

The spawning points of Silver Veins started as high as maps for Level 30 players, it was really hard for a Level 25 player to go reach such places.

Zhang Yang said: "Dude, you should train faster, I'll be waiting to buy [Silver Bar] from you!"

"It's not like I'm against the idea of levelling! I wish that I was Level 100 now, mining away Gold and Violet-Platinum Veins!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said: "You should cut down on mining and train more! Those low-grade ores won't sell for long, higher grade ores are rare and valuable. Go ahead and train, claim your position in the ore market!"

"Alright, alright, I will train later! With more and more players picking up Mining nowadays, the spawning points of Iron Veins are getting scarce. Whatever that took me half a day previously to get takes a full 3 days now. If this goes on, I'm going to starve to death!" Mining Specialist

complained.

It would be strange if Mining Specialist really did starve to death! Zhang Yang had bought over 100 stacks of [Green-Copper Bar] from him for 5 gold per stack. The exchange rate was 1 to 5, so Mining Specialist had actually earned 2,500 dollars! Besides that, he must have sold the remaining stacks to other players. It wasn't much, but he could actually earn another 3,000 dollars.

Zhang Yang knew about it but he had nothing to gain from debunking Mining Specialist and said, "Fine, keep all [Silver Ore] for me when you get there, especially [Meteor Fragment]!"

"Okay, bye!"

Zhang Yang ended the conversation with Mining Specialist and continued looting from Barga's corpse.

[Skill Book: 10 Strikes]

Use: You will gain the skill: <10 Strikes>.

Class Requirement: Hunter.

Level Requirement: 30.

Unexpectedly, it was <10 Strikes>!

This skill was useless in the beginning as it required 100 Focus Points to be activated and the damage was pretty low which only 40% of ranged attack. But this skill could be leveled up. Whenever a Skill Point was added to it, an extra arrow would be added to the skill as well. When it reached Level 10, ten arrows would be shot at once!

This skill would only start to shine when upgraded to at least Level 5. However, Skill Points were highly limited for players. Zhang Yang and his team who continuously claimed multiple "First Clear" and the additional skill points that came along with them were a different case. Regular players who obtained Skill Books were usually at a high level, but even if they learned <10 Strikes>, they would not have enough Skill Point to increase the skill level.

The requirements of levelling increased as players levelled higher. It would take 3 days for a Level 31 player to gain a level up to Level 40, while at Levels 41 to 50, each level would take 5 days. Players would only be rewarded with a Skill Point after one to two months. How many players could stand to invest in a long term skill like <10 Strikes> instead of gaining immediate advantages from upgrading other skills?

Therefore in his past life, while many Hunter players did learn <10 Strikes>, you would rarely find anyone with Level 5 <10 Strikes> or more!

“None of my concern, really. I’ll just toss this skill book to Fatty Han and Hundred Shots and let the two of them figure it out!” Zhang Yang tossed the skill book into his inventory and continued looting from Barga’s corpse.

The remaining loots were a pile of Green-Copper equipment, a few pieces of [Cotton Cloth] and about 80 Silver Coin.

After looting, Barga’s corpse slowly disappeared.

The door beside the throne creaked opened upon Barga’s death, and Zhang Yang walked down the stairwell, turning 7 to 8 rounds before reaching the sixth floor.

It was a desolate land, and it smelled so rotten that even the Graveyard could not compare! The mud on the ground was masked by a black fog. Visibility was limited to about 10 meters. Zhang Yang couldn’t see anything beyond that.

“Stealth monsters again?” Zhang Yang thought in his mind. This place was wide and open, there were no stelae for him to hide this time, unlike the previous floor.

... This was too perfect for anything that lurked in the shadows!

Zhang Yang cautiously advanced.

One step, two steps... seven steps, eight steps!

The mud on the ground morphed suddenly. Close to his left foot, mud flew up and a figure jumped from the ground, charging towards Zhang

Yang!

[Sleeping Warrior] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 50,000

Zhang Yang laughed at the circumstances, activated [block], simultaneously cutting at the black shadow using his sword.

[block]!

‘-750!’

The monster which attacked him had its whole body covered in mud, even its face was completely covered. Zhang Yang could only see its eyes, glowing with dark flames.

Such eyes were the feature of a spectre. Dark flames were their inexhaustible power source! According to the official statement, it was alright for spectral monsters to lose their limbs as they were undead, they only needed to reassemble themselves!

The spectral monsters would be killed only if their flames were extinguished!

Higher leveled spectres usually had their dark flames hidden inside their body, undetectable at first glance.

“Spectres everywhere! This is seriously getting old!” Zhang Yang slashed mechanically at them.

Suddenly, that monster started to spin at high speed, dull light reflecting off its sword as mud flew off its body.

“Ding! Sleeping Warrior has cast [Tornado Cleave Dance]. Lasts for 3 seconds!”

[Tornado Cleave Dance] caused great damage every second but Zhang Yang’s [block] also came into effect every second. [block]! [block]! [block]! 3 Seconds later, the Sleeping Warrior stopped spinning and Zhang Yang remained unscathed!

Currently, Zhang Yang was like a God, fighting in single combat against physical-type monsters!

Slash! Slash! Slash! Zhang Yang continuously attacked, removing the monster of all 50,000 HP in slightly over a minute!

‘Ding! You have killed Sleeping Warrior. Obtained 50,000 EXP!’

Zhang Yang looked at his EXP bar, it was at 96% of Level 30. He was close to levelling up! But when he glanced at the Player Level Ranking, Fatty Han and the gang were no longer in the Top 10. Currently, a Level 36 player was in the first position, while the 10th position was held by a Level 34!

The leveling addict, Floating Fire Ball was nowhere to be seen in the Player Level Ranking. According to Fatty Han, someone had hired Sword and Fire Mercenary to kill Floating Fire Ball continuously, causing him to drop 10 levels! Zhang Yang also had thought of killing him previously. However, Floating Fire Ball had a paranoid fear of death, and he always brought along hundreds of members along with him whenever he went training. Those members would lure the monsters to him and he had more than ten healers to stay behind him. So, it was really hard for a Guardian like Zhang Yang to kill him alone unless he killed all of them one by one. Otherwise, it was almost impossible to even spot Floating Fire Ball.

However, Sword and Fire Mercenary had sent out two Thieves who waited for the chance to kill Floating Fire Ball. They found their chance seven days later, to assassinate Floating Fire Ball even amidst his huge crowd of followers, and they had killed him ten times instead of once! Zhang Yang had to acknowledge that “Trash” Mercenary had some capabilities indeed!

Besides the Player Level Ranking in China Server, the system had recently added another new ranking which was categorized by Capitals, where system listed the top 20 Player Level Ranking in each Capital. Currently, those who were in the top 20 of White Jade Castle were the people from Crimson Rage, The Dominators, Sky High and Sword and Fire

Mercenary.

Previously, these strong guilds kept their strength hidden. Nowadays, with the many spies pouring in from other guilds, there was no point in hiding any longer. So, the Guild Masters simply let it all out into the open. It was a good method of promoting their guilds as well!

Zhang Yang thought deep, and decided that it was time to show himself in the list again! He was already considered as “public figure”, anyways.

However, even the twentieth player in White Jade Castle’s Player Level Ranking was Level 33. Things were getting really competitive!

“I must get Fatty Han and the gang to train faster! They wasted too much time on the Level 30 class quest!” Zhang Yang sighed gently, “Anyway, those who just bother about getting their levels are going to regret taking the class quests lightly!”

Zhang Yang fought on for two hours before reaching the end of the sixth floor. It was strange that he was able to enter the seventh floor without having to fight a boss!

Zhang Yang walked in and out through the entrance of seventh floor, trying to trigger something, hoping that the boss may be stuck, or bugged, but nothing happened. Zhang Yang was disappointed!

Looking at the time, it was already later than 7 P.M.!

Zhang Yang immediately logged out from the game and went out to get food. He was so busy fighting through the Underground Tower that he had skipped his lunch! He was already feeling faint!

Chapter 119: Dual Boss

After finishing up his meal with his mind refreshed, Zhang Yang reconnected back online.

“Hey, warrior of stink-ass, where have you been?” the attractive voice of Han Ying Xue floated lightly by his ears.

“Entering the seventh floor! How’s the situation up there?” Zhang Yang asked casually.

“Stage clear! We’re currently clearing the monsters in the first floor, and we’re almost done with it. Give us another 10 minutes tops, and we’ll be able to enter the second floor!” Han Ying Xue spoke squeakily, as if she would not accept it if she failed to melt the others with her sweetness and charm.

“Oh, yea...” Han Ying Xue paused for a second, and said, “Sky Shaman and Snow Seeker had been asking about your whereabouts!”

The world system made the announcement, so everyone knew that the value of the land was definitely sky high. Sky Shaman and the others refused to believe that Zhang Yang would sit himself out of this golden opportunity, so it would be natural for them to suspect Zhang Yang planning some scheme in some dark corner of the game.

Zhang Yang asked, “Then what did you tell them?”

“I just told them you’re still crafting potions, you money-grubber!”

Zhang Yang burst into laughter. “You dare to accuse me of being a money-grubber? If I really am, you must be the female money-grubber! We’re meant for each other, then!”

Zhang Yang regretted immediately as soon as he said that. You could flirt with anyone else, just don’t flirt with this witch!

“Tsk tsk tsk, you don’t even have your pubic hair yet and you dare to make an attempt on me?” Han Ying Xue squeakily insulted him.

Zhang Yang thought about throwing back at her, “In fact, I actually have

all my pubic hair.”, but giving more thought about it, it would be unwise to do so with this witch, giving her the opportunity to fire him from all directions. So he distracted her by changing topics.

The seventh floor and the floor before it were similar in a way that both were uncultivated and had a gloomy environment. Not a single monster was in sight.

Pushing forward.

“Gong!” the swampy ground rifted open all of a sudden, and a Skeleton with a shield equipped on its left hand and an axe on its right jumped out of it. It lunged towards Zhang Yang without holding back.

[The Shield Holder of Undead] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 60,000

A shield-armor warrior type?

Zhang Yang charged straight up to the enemy without hesitation.

‘[blocked]!’

‘[blocked]!’

Both the monster and Zhang Yang had the word ‘[blocked]!’ appeared just above their heads.

Zhang Yang felt a pleasant rush, thinking to himself, how many times can this monster use [block]? Could the monster really compete with him?

The first normal attacks were blocked on both sides. Only a little rage point had been accumulated over the battle as each second passed. It was not even nearly enough rage points to launch any simple skill, so Zhang Yang could only wait for the next turn to attack.

‘-571!’

‘[blocked]!’

On their second clash, Zhang Yang launched another successful [block]

and avoided the damage while the monster took a solid hit from Zhang Yang's swing of his sword.

With the accumulated rage point from the hit, along with the rage point from embracing the damage received, he was ready to launch his respective skills.

‘-1,390!’ [horizontal sweep].

‘Dodge!’

A normal attack followed by a skill damage was not enough to cut it, even after using [block] once after every second. Zhang Yang made preparation for this early on, moving his body with his legs, as he dodged the heavy attacks.

The good thing was that the monster's skills usually had very long cooldown time, unlike the players, otherwise Zhang Yang would have had to crack his head to win the fight.

Being a shield-armor type, not only did it have a significantly high shield armor defense value, it also had a passive skill that granted 20% damage reduction. Even after slamming 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] onto the monster, coordinated with [eagle eye] in effort to bring the defense down to zero, Zhang Yang could only cause so much damage that was still lower than his basic attack damage!

But a low damage was damage nonetheless. It did not bother Zhang Yang to make more cuts. It was just a matter of time, and it did not take that long for the monster to let out a screeching mourn before shattering onto the ground, turning into a pillar of white light and giving a substantial amount of experience points to Zhang Yang.

He touched the dead body of the monster to find only 3 silver coins. “Poor bloody bastard!” Zhang Yang could not help himself but feel despise again and again.

He spent more than 2 hours clearing all the way down and tossing himself around the dungeon before finally reaching the end of the seventh floor.

Rawgh! Rawgh! RAWGH!

Two heavily armored NPCs were clashing on each other. One looked short and fat; without a doubt being a dwarf, with a shield on one hand and a mace on the other. The other one is a big orc with a tall and sturdy body, holding a long spear with both of his hands. Horizontal swipe, slice, chop, poke, every move he made with his spear forged ahead with the vigor and vitality of a tiger!

To have the ability to hold a shield, it must have been either a shield-armor type warrior or a guardian. For the other NPC, it could either be a berserker or a Templar to be able to wield a two-handed weapon. Since both monsters had a rage slot over each of their heads, Zhang Yang was certain that they must have been warrior-type monsters.

[Brandon - The Ale] (Grey-Silver Boss)

Level: 36

HP: 380,000 / 500,000

Note: The battalion commander of the first battalion of Flame Wolves Army. It is definitely authentic!

[Akashic - The Lionheart] (Grey-Silver Boss)

Level: 35

HP: 300,000 / 400,000

Note: The battalion commander of the first battalion of Flame Wolves Army. It is definitely authentic!

So this was why he could not see any bosses on the sixth floor, as they were all gathered here!

Seeing the bosses battling fiercely with each other from afar, Zhang Yang suddenly widened his eye a little, as he suddenly had an idea, “Why don’t I wait until their HP depletes until 100,000 or 200,000 first before I charge in to kill both of them instantly?” So he waited quietly in the corner.

“Akashic, you dumbass orc! Today will be the day I tell you, only shield-

armor type warriors are the true warriors of all, and I am the legitimate battalion commander!” Brandon was swinging around his attacks while screaming at his enemy!

Akashic rustled up with two stabs from his spear, “Nonsense! It will never be a coward shrinking in his own turtle shell! Only the fearless man is legitimate to claim the title of warrior! And to think, you becoming my battalion commander, I rather knock my own brain out to the ground!”

“You asshole! No one can criticize the great warrior of the dwarf, especially calling me a coward!”

“Hahaha! I shall pierce your weak turtle shell ass with my almighty spear!”

The two bosses were obsessed with slaughtering each other, leaving Zhang Yang to enjoy watching their drama, cheering quietly from the bottom of his heart! The more ruthless they fight among themselves, the easier it would get for him to clean up the mess afterwards!

The battle among NPC was on a totally different level compared to the battle among players. Just looking at the damage values that popped up on the screen was absolutely terrifying. Damages exploding at 100,000 and 20,000! Taking a moment to imagine, if this amount of damage was applied onto the players, there would be no way out of it at all! Death would be inevitable!

It did not take long for the bosses to bring down their HP to the stage, with one boss left with 30,000 HP while the other with only 10,000 HP.

Zhang Yang was uncertain of whether one of the bosses would actually die by the end of their battle, but he was sure of one thing, a boss being killed by another boss would never allow him to pick up its equipment!

Zhang Yang charged straight up to the bosses, ready to be the fisherman that collected the mussels before the crane, to take advantage of the situation. Bam!

‘-1374!’

‘-1492!’

With his [horizontal sweep] rising high, he dealt a substantial amount of damage in one shot on both bosses in an instant!

“Despicable c*nt! You dare to interrupt our sacred duel?” Brandon was furious in that instant, brushing up his battle mace towards Zhang Yang.

Akashic aimed the tip of his spear at Zhang Yang as well, yelling furiously, “Human filth! Only your filthy kind would know no shame! I will crush you, you shorty sh*t!”

“You dumb orc, do not mention the word shorty in front of me or I shall knock your brain out!” Brandon yelled at Akashic almost immediately.

“Kill!”

Both bosses turned their assault towards Zhang Yang.

‘[block]!’

Zhang Yang prioritized his assault onto Akashic as he has the least HP. Using [destructive smash] and summoning Clear Lotus at the same time, he commanded her to join their attacks on Akashic.

‘-1488!’

“Argh...!” Suddenly, both bosses let out a roar at the same time, and their bodies instantly glowed in red light.

“Ding! Brandon - The Ale used [berserker's heal]!”

“Ding! Akashic - The Lionheart used [berserker's heal]!”

“+500,000!”

“+100,000!”

Two large numerical green texts popped out right on top of Brandon and Akashic's heads!

“Oh, f*ck me!” Zhang Yang immediately cursed! Are you kidding me? Both bosses knew how to use [berserker's heal]? If their cooldown is as expected to be 2 minutes long, killing the bosses would not be possible forever unless my firepower is strong enough to blow the bosses' HP to zero in that time!

It was lucky that Zhang Yang used [destructive smash] on Akashic before that. Under the influence of decreasing 75% of the healing effect, the [berserker's heal] only healed 100,000 HP!

At that moment, Brandon was at full health, while Akashic only had 110,000 HP!

This meant that Zhang Yang dealt a full 290,000 damage on the boss with one swing of his sword! This was even bossier than the boss! To do a 300,000 damage in a single attack, players would require to equip themselves with a full set of legendary artifacts and use high-level skills with long cooldown time before making that happen!

So cool!

While dodging the attacks from both bosses, Zhang Yang focused all of his damage output on Akashic, swearing to take out one of the bosses first.

With 2 bosses around, it was impossible for Zhang Yang's [block] to achieve zero damage! Even with his godly pick-and-roll dodging skill, he would still be caught in some of the attacks. So Zhang Yang tried his best to reserve [block] for Akashic, because a Berserker warrior would have an insanely high damage output in a single blow which was way too much to be handled, as a Guardian warrior was well known for its low offense and high defense, which meant that Guardians could still hit back even after sustaining some damage!

‘-915!’

‘-724!’

Brandon's basic attack was around 1,500, so when it hit Zhang Yang, the damage output was about 900 damage, and with the addition of the [Absolute Defense Ring] effect being superimposed, the damage dropped further to 800. But Brandon knew [thunder strike] that had the tendency of dealing damage that ignored [block] and [dodge]. The target would suffer as soon as they fall within the attack range. The boss would use the skill approximately after every 10 seconds, causing a considerable damage to the defending Guardian.

At the same instant, Zhang Yang would also tried to unleash his damage on Akashic. With the bosses attacking from both at the front and rear, [block] was fully utilized to the point that the shield was hit hard, until it flew!

In just a minute, Zhang Yang was beaten to the bottom of his HP while Akashic only had 30,000 HP left! As for Clear Lotus, she took 4 direct hits of [thunder strike] and died, letting out a sad cry after.

[berserker's heal]!

‘+4,870!’

Zhang Yang instantly returned to full health and continued to unleash his attacks wildly on Akashic.

Suddenly, Akashic raised up his spear and started spinning in high speed!

“Ding! Akashic - The Lionheart used [Tornado Cleave Dance]! Speed increased by 100%, causes 3,000 physical damage to radius of 3X3 meters per second, last for 3 seconds!”

Zhang Yang would have used [block] to embrace the boss's skill if there was only Akashic on the battlefield, but the dwarf was just right beside him knocking him with that big-ass mace, pushing him to use [block] on Brandon instead!

‘[shield wall]!’

Without hesitation, Zhang Yang made a life-saving decision by using the right skill.

‘-240!’

‘-240!’

‘-240!’

10 seconds passed and the [shield wall] had faded, and Zhang Yang continued to unleash his assault. Fighting two bosses at the same time was really too stressful for him! But if he could somehow take out one of them, then he would be able to torture the other boss slowly to his death!

[horizontal sweep], [destructive smash], [force strike], [shield bash]!

Once again, Zhang Yang was beaten to the bottom of his HP bar again!

The vampiric effect of the [Lover's Sword] activated!

Kill! Kill! KILL!

Bastard boss, please die faster!

Chapter 120: Luck is also part of strength

300,000, 200,000, 100,000!

With Akashic's HP depleting wildly, it finally hit as low as 100,000!

Zhang Yang had only... 2,489 HP left to be exact!

‘-528!’

‘-528!’

‘-528!’

In that instant, [shield bash] burst out a strong lethality onto Akashic! The [shield bash] was supposed to have a lower basic damage value, dealing approximately 400 damage point to bosses that were wearing high-defense armor. But Zhang Yang could neutralize the boss' armor to zero with [Cripple Defense] and [eagle eye], completely unleashing the full damage of [shield bash]!

“Urgh!” Akashic was finally beaten to his last drop of HP, falling hard to the ground, while Zhang Yang only had 518 HP left!

‘Ding! You killed Akashic - The Lionheart, acquired 400,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! Congratulations! You have reached Level 31! All attributes +1, acquired 5 attribute points!’

A golden light flashed, with Zhang Yang progressing one level higher magnificently! And more crucially, leveled-up players would have their health reset to full!

Zhang Yang burst into laughter, as there was no more convenient time than this! He was mentally prepared to die once and to run all the way back to take out the second boss, but this sudden level-up occurrence was perfectly placed to solve his dangerous situation!

Now that he was battling a boss with low offense and high defense, Zhang Yang had no stress anymore. It was just a matter of time before he took it down.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang also believed that the boss would not continuously use [berserker's heal]. It was obvious that it would be a one-time occurrence, allowing the two bosses to square up with the players with full health regardless of the time they were battling each other. But it may also be a negligence in the design, seeing that there was a little delay before the skill triggered. If the bosses were programmed to use [berserker's heal] the moment they detected any players within their aggro sight range, it would become impossible for them to be affected by the reduction of healing rate in the first place, otherwise, facing Akashic with 400,000 HP would make it impossible for Zhang Yang to take out the boss without having his own HP being emptied out.

With more luck on his side, he actually leveled up the moment he took down the first boss!

Sure enough, luck was also part of strength!

Zhang Yang turned around to face Brandon!

The difficulty of this stage was facing two bosses at the same time, so taking out one of them instantly took away any further difficulty to face the other boss!

Every melee attack that Brandon threw at him was counteracted with [block]. Zhang Yang only sustained some damages from the area effect damage coming from [thunder strike]. Even though AoE damage was around 600 every time it struck, the damage only happened once in every 10 seconds. Depending on his armor set's healing effect, some [Healing potion], constant use of [berserker's heal], and the special effect of the [Lover's Sword] in play, Zhang Yang could totally hold on to it!

The only disadvantage at hand now was that the boss had a passive reduction of 20% damage in play, not to mention the boss having over 500,000 HP, making him slower and harder to kill compared to the previous bosses he encountered before.

The battle dragged for 12 minutes long before Brandon was finally beaten down to his last bit of his HP, forcing him to close his eyes.

Phew! Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief. It was really tiring, but

definitely satisfying! Beating two bosses at the same time all by himself, it felt awesome!

He could not help it but to giggle, “Hehehe...”, to the point that he could not hear Han Ying Xue calling out to him from afar. With her multiple shout-outs on his name, he finally came back to his senses.

“Hmm?”

“Are you deaf or retarded? I have been calling your name for so long and you couldn’t hear me at all?” Han Ying Xue was sullen.

“I was distracted, forgive me!”

“... Should I call you stupid Zhan or stupid Yu?” Han Ying Xue did not talk down to business, instead, she was mumbling to herself.

Zhang Yang let out a heavy sigh, “I’m guessing you are not here to ask me about this?”

“Oh, right!” Han Ying Xue quickly reacted, “So, we have passed through the first floor, but while doing the clear-out, the players in the whole city were provoked. So I did some discussion with Snow Seeker the others, and we came up with the conclusion to let the other players to come in as well. We’ve already entered the second floor, and the monsters on the first floor had already been cleared out!”

Zhang Yang nodded his head a few times, “It is best not to provoke any public anger, because when they are united, any guild will just be powerless!”

“So how’s your progression now?”

“Just cleared the boss on the seventh floor!”

“Yo, that was actually pretty fast! You can take down a boss all by yourself? That’s awesome!”

“Well about that...” Zhang Yang spoke out of his pride and smiled, “Alright, keep me posted on the progress up there!”

“Alright, roger!”

The most exciting moment after killing a boss was to open the dead body of the boss in front of him; the best moment to look forward to.

[Bloody Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver, leather armor)

Armor: +8

Vitality: +70

Strength: +8

Agility: +42

[Level 1 Socket]

[Level 1 Socket 2]

Required level: 30

Judging from only one attribute, [Bloody Chest Plate] had 50% more attribute value than the armor sets of the Thief and Hunter classes. But players would normally not give up on the set effects to wear the armor separately as the set effect only worked when all pieces of the armor were together.

Just like the current Zhang Yang, with the 5 pieces of armor as a set giving him a boost of 10% damage, it would take changing up at least 4 pieces of Level 30 Gray-Silver grade equipment to have the same effect again! The 3 pieces of armor that triggered the set bonus of healing attribute was one hell of the advantage for him, too. It was like having [heal] with him all the time! Definitely not going to replace it!

If they were to be compared to each another, Level 30 equipment had the advantage of increasing higher HP, which was great for supporting the maximum HP.

But we should keep that aside first, because he could not meet the requirement of the maximum HP to challenge the 4th boss in a Level 40 castle region dungeon with his current Level 20 armor set. So he took precaution and kept it to prepare himself for what's coming in the future!

[Rapid Traveling Boots] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Armor: +12

Vitality: +40

Strength: +16

Agility: +4

[Level 1 Socket]

Equip: Increase Movement Speed by 10%.

Level required: 30

Increasing movement speed by 10%... that's really awesome! But it's a shame that the [God Oil] has been used up already. At recent times, even though Lone Desert Smoke conquered the boss in the Cave of Bones, but the [God Oil] that increased movement speed never appeared again among any loots ever since.

[Akala's helmet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Armor: +12

Vitality: +80

Strength: +34

Agility: +6

[Level 1 Socket]

[Level 1 Socket 2]

Level required: 30

Not bad at all... two pieces of equipment with high vitality values out of these draws!

After collecting the 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, there were still 7 to 8 pieces of [Green-Copper Clothing]. Without any consideration, Zhang Yang put all of them into his inventory. If he could acquire the title deed for the land, in corresponding with a better property location, then maybe he could start a shop of his own. By then, these equipment may be used to make a merrier scenario.

There was also a skill book among the equipment.

[Skill book: Blood Rage]

Use: Teaches the skill [blood rage].

Required: Warrior.

Zhang Yang had his eyes widened a little at the moment. He instantly touched the skill book onto his body.

[blood rage] : Sacrifice a part of HP to generate 30 points of rage.

Consume: 1% HP.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

It was definitely useful for starting up battles on monsters. 30 rage points was actually enough to launch a skill!

Zhang Yang continued his journey forward, heading into the entrance of the 8th floor of the Tomb Tower.

Ting, ling, ling!

Just when he stepped out of the stairs on the right, he suddenly saw a flash of white light, followed by continuous thunder claps, issuing a deafening sound of thunder!

This was completely a world full of lightning, with flashes of white light constantly coming down from the top of the rock pits. They were just so dense and frightening!

At the ground, there were a few monsters scattered in the area. But they were constantly being struck by the lightning strikes. With just a few strikes, they died and were turned into white ashes. And then, new monsters began to spawn again in the area just to be struck down again by those frightful lightning strikes. The whole process was quick and short. Similar to the 2nd floor of the tower, this floor was more of the mechanism-style. Even the ground was covered with the same material of stone in the shape of square, just that this time they were not black and white but all white!

Zhang Yang did not have to personally test the damage these lightning could do, because all he had to do was to look at how fast the monsters were being struck to death, and he could already know the damage output of each lightning strike, which was about 4,000 points!

It's so disorganized!

That was the first impression Zhang Yang had when he first stepped in. There seemed to be no pattern for where the lightning would strike, with different strikes ending on different spots of the ground! He eventually began to grasp a pattern for it, with his eyes wide open with every passing second.

Left, left, right, right, right, and then left, right, right, left, left!

Zhang Yang repeated the sequence deep down his heart, took another look at the patterns again before he finally decided to act!

Go!

Left, left, right, right, right, he made it safely!

Left, right, right, left, left, it was a smooth breakthrough as well!

The lightning struck him once, but Zhang Yang insisted to push forward!

"Ow..."

One skeleton warrior spawned just beside Zhang Yang, holding a gigantic mace with both hands, instantly drawing Zhang Yang straight into battle. It slammed the mace heavily towards Zhang Yang.

He turned around and used [block], totally ignoring the monsters and kept on pushing forward!

Bang!

The lightning directly struck the monster, reducing 4,000 HP of the monster. It seemed like that was just 10% of the monster's health.

The enraged monster howled and smashed over and over again with his mace.

Zhang Yang turned around and used [block] on the attack before

pushing forward just like before, as he did not dare to stop even for a second.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The lightning strikes continued to drop, and the monster did not hold for long. Just in the matter of seconds, it turned into a white light, dropping a few loots. And among the loots, there was a piece of equipment that flashed a Green-Copper luster!

Zhang Yang could only take a peek without having any thoughts about stopping for it; he could only push forward. He knew that if he even gave in to his slightest greed, he would definitely end up being struck to death by those horrible lightning strikes!

At that exact same time, Zhang Yang suddenly had a weird thought: What if Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er were to be in the same situation? Would these two women rather be struck by lightning just to get to the loots?

Well with 80% probability, they would!

A gray shadow flashed by. It was another monster that spawned not far from Zhang Yang. This time, it was a spell-type monster. The moment it sighted Zhang Yang, it raised its staff and started to chant a spell.

Bang!

One lightning strike struck down, beating the monster's spell back by a length. With unyielding will, the monster continued to chant the spell again.

When players or normal monsters read spells, the incoming attacks would delay the time for them to finish chanting their spells.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

With the continuous strike of the lightning, the spell was interrupted continuously, with the initial 3 seconds to chant a spell delayed to 6 seconds! After that, a sound of "Shew" was heard, seeing a shot of shadow bomb being launched towards Zhang Yang.

‘-800!’

In return, the monster was brutally struck by the lightning, 300,000 HP was instantly being brought down to 6,000 HP!

Bang! Bang!

Another two lightning strikes. The monster was turned into ashes while trying to chant its second shadow bomb spell.

50 meters, 100 meters, 200 meters... Zhang Yang constantly pushed forward.

1 monster, 5 monsters, or even 7 monsters, countless monsters were spawned on the way, but none of them survived even more than 15 seconds. Every single one of them were heavily struck by the lightning!

Monsters that deal physical damage did not worry Zhang Yang because he could use [block] to neutralize the incoming damages. It was the monsters that dealt magic damage that worried him, as Zhang Yang would have no choice but to sustain one or two damages from their spells. However, one red potion, coordinated with [berserker's heal], would allow him to maintain his high HP.

It was more than 10 minutes later when Zhang Yang had finally made it through the lightning area!

Phew!

He let out a very long sigh. Even though it was just about 10 minutes, but maintaining high focus for that long was mostly tiring!

And there wasn't even a boss over there!

Zhang Yang looked at the widely opened entrance. Deep down in his heart, he understood the design in this area: If the door to the next floor was shut still, then there must be a boss nearby. But, if the door was opened widely, it would only mean that there was no boss!

After reaching the door, there was no boss, only a chest with a flash of silver white light luster that was lying quietly by the entrance side of the wall.

Chapter 121: Rescue Merlinda

Zhang Yang went up to open the silver chest.

10%... 40%... 70%...

Pow! The chest opened. Zhang Yang could see the loots in the chest with his own eyes. 3 pieces of Green-Copper equipment and a bottle of potion.

It was natural that Zhang Yang would not waste time on checking the Green-Copper equipment, as he readily loaded them straight into his backpack. He then took a closer look on the last bottle of the potion. All potions that would fall from bosses or treasure chests were impossible to be crafted or be learned to craft; they were normally very rare and valuable.

Just like these 3 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, they could also be considered to be a product of foundry, leather-made, tailored, but the pattern or design of the equipment was not something players could learn to craft.

[Beginner's Colorful Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increase all magic resistance by 1,000, last for 8 minutes.

Cooldown time: 2 minutes.

Level required: 30

As expected, the effect was astonishingly good!

There were 5 type of magic attributes in 'God's Miracle': Ice, Fire, Shadow, Nature, and Light. Alchemist players could learn to craft all 5 different types of magic resistance potion, but with only one effect in one potion, never more. It was just like Zhang Yang learning how to craft the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], only enhancing the shadow resistance of the player. Zhang Yang carefully put the potion into the backpack with a wavering heart.

At first, he was worried about how to take on the final boss, the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar. Seeing obviously from its name "the Evil Sorcerer",

that boss was definitely a magic-casting monster which would deal in spell and magic damages. Battling an elite spell-casting monster was already hell to him, he would definitely die horribly if he went up against this boss!

But now there was still hope to give it a try after acquiring the bottle of [Beginner's Colorful Potion].

Zhang Yang went into the tunnel and walked on the stepping stones, with twists and turns all around the places, as he finally found himself a way into the 9th floor of the tower.

“Argh...”

“Argh...”

“Please help me...”

The countless voices of crying and groaning were heard as soon as Zhang Yang set foot into the floor. He felt a chill straight up in his heart as he gazed around. He could only see the design of the floor and it looked like the wards in the hospitals, not being able to move his eyes away from the neatly placed experimental tables. In every table there was a soul tied up on it; human, elves, orcs, dwarfs, even gnomes!

Every one of their stomachs were ripped open and their limbs cut off. They look utterly in pain! With a few of them still barely alive, they moaned and cried miserably.

Countless Skeletal monsters were patrolling and shuffling back and forth, with all holding swords, maces, axes in their hands. Every step gave off the fractioning sound of the bone joints, combining with the moaning and groaning, making the atmosphere creepier than ever!

“There is no doubt he is one evil sorcerer, much eviller than Jack the Ripper or any BBK1 kind!” Zhang Yang instantly lifted his Lover's Sword and started charging forward. In an instant, he approached a Skeletal monster and he continued to charge forward explosively.

[Elite Guard] (Elite)

Level: 36

HP: 80,000

Even though the HP was slightly more, it did not change the fact that it was still a monster that only dealt physical damages. That meant that the monster would only be tortured to death slowly by Zhang Yang!

A minute passed, and the elite guard roared in anger before turning into white light and died, leaving some loots behind.

Zhang Yang picked everything up and continued to push forward.

It was a slaughter all the way down, killing countless monsters, leaving countless insignificant items and equipment to occupy Zhang Yang's backpack to the point that he had to cast away some invaluable stuff to clear out spaces for better things to come.

Bam!

With another monster beaten death to the ground, Zhang Yang went on to touch the dead body as he would.

[No.1 Laboratory Key] (Special item)

Use: Open the door to No.1 Laboratory.

Zhang Yang went blank for a moment. Even though there were hundreds or even thousands of experimental tables, none of it was categorized as "room/laboratory". He took a closer look at the monster again, noticing that the name was really different from the other monsters. This was labeled as "No.1 Laboratory Guard".

It didn't matter for now, just put it in the bag first and think about it later.

Zhang Yang kept the key and continued to move forward. Killing, slicing and chopping all around, it took him 3 hours to finally reach the end of the floor.

Look at the time, it's almost 1am in the morning! Wei Yan Er and the gang had definitely gone offline to sleep by now.

But remembering what they told him earlier, Crimson Rage, The Dominators, Sky High and the other guilds were progressing overnight with the resolution to acquire the server's No.1 [Land Lease] title!

Thus, Zhang Yang lost his courage to sleep or rest anymore!

With the bosses in every floor being taken out by him, there was no way the other players above would be delayed for too long by the monsters and the traps. He would wake up to find that he was surpassed by others, or might even lose his [Land Lease] to others!

So, he decided to go all out, then! It was just staying overnight for this one time!

The entrance of the 9th floor was similar with the 8th floor. With the door opened wide, it meant that there was no boss in this floor. Zhang Yang gazed further; if there was not any boss in the area, there should at least be a treasure chest lying around somewhere.

There was no treasure, but on the same spot where a treasure chest would be found, there was an intermediate small room made of stones with the door locked, and it would not budge.

Zhang Yang took out the key from his backpack, and with the slightest effort, "click!" he opened the lock on door and pushed the door wide open.

This was a standard laboratory with many reagent tubes braving a variety of color bubbles in the corners of the room. There was a large experimental bench in the middle of the room. On top of the desk lay an Elvish female, with her four limbs and her neck shackled in the form of strange halo. She could not even move an inch.

There was an infusion tube inserted into one of her arm, transmitting some kind of green chemical substance into her, only god knows what that could be!

The Elvish female overheard the sound of the door opening, forcing herself to look over. When she realized that it was an actual pure human walking through the door, her face instantly revealed her surprise and joy buried within her heart, "Brave warrior, please help me!"

[Captived Merlinda - Song of the Forest] (Elite)

Level: 45

HP: 38,123/45,000

Right above her head was a huge yellow exclamation mark!

“Friendly elf, can you tell me how could I help you out of this place?”
Zhang Yang did not believe that he could easily cut those strange looking halo shackles off her so easily.

“I have been held captive by the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar with his Shackles of Shadow, and only the Elemental Stone can free me from these shackles! The Elemental Stone is in the hand of Ron Weasley - The Death General. He is in the deepest place you can find just beneath next floor. Brave warrior, please help me, I can feel that my will has been forcefully shaken, the evil force of Terpot Ryhar is affecting my beliefs to the God of the Moon, and I will not be able to hold it for much longer!”

Merlinda uttered a painful groan.

‘Ding! Captived Merlinda - Song of the Forest has assigned you a quest: Rescue Merlinda - Song of the Forest, accept or decline?’

Accept!

[Rescue Merlinda - Song of the Forest] (Difficulty: S-rank)

Description: Slay Ron Weasley, take the Elemental Stone from him, and rescue Merlinda - Song of the Forest! You can locate Ron Weasley at the 10th floor of the Underground Tower.

Note: You must be fast. If Merlinda’s soul is being controlled by Terpot Ryhar before that, the quest will fail.

Progress: Rescue Merlinda -Song of the Forest 0/1

Zhang Yang noticed that the HP of the NPC dropped by 90 since she began talking. It was dropping about 3 HP every second! If the NPC supposedly hit the bottom of her HP bar, it would only mean that she would be controlled, just like the bosses in the previous floors, becoming an undead soul!

After a series of calculation, Zhang Yang realized that he only had 3 hours left! Although it seemed well, but in practicality, clearing the monsters and minions of the whole floor would take about 2 to 3 hours, in addition with the time to slay the boss, the time gap just got so much tighter!

Without wasting any precious time, Zhang Yang headed straight to the entrance of the 10th floor after accepting the quest. Even though he did not know what the use of rescuing the NPC was, but since the system has assigned an NPC here, she must have a special role in it!

‘Server Notice: Player Zhan Yu has become the first player to enter the 10th floor of the Underground Tower, getting closer to the [Land Lease]!’

Zhang Yang just set foot into the 10th floor when the system decided to give him a big surprise with an announcement!

With shock going through his spine, Zhang Yang almost cursed out of anger!

The plan to make a fortune silently had been interrupted by the server announcement that attracted the crowd. Fine, I can live with that. But announcing him setting his freaking foot onto the 10th floor? That was like informing every player on the top without getting anything in return; telling them that there was someone clearing the floor faster than them!

Originally, conflicts exist among guilds such as Crimson Rage, Sky High, and The Dominators. Even though they were temporary joining forces together to charge further down the tower, they would still try to slow each other down, hoping that they were leading at the front line. A little delay in time could do no harm anyway. It would be even better if they could get other guilds to get themselves killed in the process!

But in this sudden event, being made a fool by the system server, whether it was the guilds in the White Jade City, or the remaining guilds in the other seven main cities, everyone temporarily put down their grudges against each other and worked together to clear the floors all the way down the Underground Tower!

Fighting against each other again? Things were about to be taken away,

what kind of fart do they still think about fighting against each other for?!

The original plan was to enter the stage quietly, but now... This is just great, the whole world knows about this now!

“F**k me!” Zhang Yang was already rushing to complete his quest, and now he could afford to make any more mistakes.

The 10th floor of the Underground Tower had fewer monsters, but the monsters were mostly magic type. It was the most hated monster-type of all for Zhang Yang to face in battle!

[Hermione's Witch Apprentice] (Elite)

Level: 34

HP: 30,000

With a [charge], followed by summoning a puppet, he continued with some mad hack and slash attacks!

As Zhang Yang held all his anger and grudges within him for quite some time, he finally found a chance to vent it all out on these monsters. Charging his way through, he staggered his [berserker's heal] and the [lifesteal] effect of [Lover's Sword] together to put them into good use, and when both skills are on cooldown, he would use some bandages to make up for it.

The lucky thing was that there was not that much monsters on the way. Zhang Yang already reached the end of the stage in about 40 minutes or so.

The door to the 11th floor was tightly shut, with a gray shirt man standing in front of the door with his sword. The man had an extremely tall body and both eyes blinking with a ghostly green flame, indicating his identity as one that became an undead soul.

He held a large and long sword in his hand.

[Ron Weasley - The Death General] (Gray-Silver leader)

Level: 36

HP: 600,000

Note: Terpot Ryhar's best servant.

This should be a physical-type boss!

There was no need to fear! Not to mention it had just 600,000 HP. With even 1,000,000 HP, he could still take the boss out!

With a raise of his [Lover's Sword], Zhang Yang charged forward to the boss with quick steps.

With no time to lose, he had to act fast, whether it was to rescue Merlinda, or to stay in the lead to obtain the [Land Lease]!

1BBK – The author used this term to describe a sort of horror element. I have no idea what this BBK stands for.

Chapter 122: Ron Weasley

“Damn it, I was still wondering, after 5 floors of battle, there’s still no sign of any boss. So it was Zhan Yu, that little brat who is one step ahead of us!” Humbly Gentleman spoke out with anger, tightening his teeth. His hatred towards Zhang Yang had not been just for one or two days; and now he got fooled by Zhang Yang without knowing again. He was about to burst into flame, out of his own anger!

“No wonder the Lone Desert Smoke members went offline already. It seems like they have already sent a part of them ahead of us!” Humbly Gentleman tried to provoke the other two guilds to channel their hatred towards Zhang Yang, with the thoughts to crush Lone Desert Smoke to the ground by having the 3 guilds to work together.

But, Snow Seeker smiled gently and said, “Getting the field bosses has been a first-come-first-serve basis for all of us! It all depends on our own capabilities on whether we get to them first or not, so what’s with all the angry ranting, Humbly Gentleman?”

Sky Shaman laughed with contempt, “This hypocrite is just greedy and stingy, only having thoughts about having all the good things to himself. Pui! And he does not even reflect on his own bad virtue!”

With two of them criticizing him to the point that his face turned greenish, he spoke with his gloomy face, “So we just sit by and let the Lone Desert Smoke claim the [Land Lease], and then we congratulate them with smiles on our faces?”

Snow Seeker smiled again and said, “I already said it, field bosses are claimed by those who acted faster than the others. So we will never know the results until the very last moment of it. Things might still change! So now, we shouldn’t take arms against each other, because what we should be doing is to work together to speed up our progress down this tower without any restrain!”

“Haha, guild master Snow is really fast in basically everything!” Humbly Gentleman spoke and took a peek at Snow Seeker’s pretty face and her

mountain-shaped boobs, secretly drooling. Previously in other games, there were offline competitions held, and that was how he had the honor to see her true person, which was both beautiful and sexy. He already accumulated his bad intentions towards her for quite some time, but it was a pity. No matter how he tried to serve or impress her, she just did not react to him!

With wrinkled eye brows, Sky Shaman said, “We should be well aware of the situation when it involves the Lone Desert Smoke! Other than Zhan Yu, the capable ones are Little Snow and the gang; only 5 of them altogether! We know that all 5 of them are offline at this very moment, and the number of remaining scattered members of the Lone Desert Smoke does not exceed 300! But, we do know that these 300 members are held up in the 3rd and the 4th floor!”

With a slight idea on her mind, she asked, “Sky Shaman, are you saying that Zhan Yu is now alone?”

“If the Lone Desert Smoke did not keep any secret units from our knowledge, I am afraid so!” Sky Shaman nodded his head.

gasp!

The people who were listening to the 3 guild masters talking could not help themselves but to take in a breath of surprise! They have certainly experienced it, the might of the monsters in the Underground Tower, every one of them are strong as f**k that the players had difficulties in holding their souls together in one piece!

If Zhan Yu could clear through the path all by himself... Let alone clearing the regular monsters has already proven him to be unimaginably strong, what about the bosses?

Is the gap between the two sides in terms of their strength really that wide?

...

On the other side of the tower, the Sword and Fire Mercenary had fully dispatched their forces into their crusade in regards of the [Land Lease].

They assembled a party of 10 for their storm fortification strategies. Although they were small in numbers, but every single member was an ace of their own expertise. They were like a sharp spear; unstoppable, clearing all their way through to the 7th floor of the Underground Tower, being more efficient than the 3 main guilds combined.

The moment they knew about the announcement, Dominating Blade paused and said, "This Zhan Yu is far more powerful than we can imagine!"

"44 Bandit and I are the first group to reach, so we can guarantee that none of the monsters in the tower had been slain! That meant that Zhan Yu has forcefully charged through the herd by taking advantage of the special particularity of the entrance, without taking out any monsters. He turned the table around by using these monsters to block players who are coming in!" Floating Up analyzed seriously.

"But this also explains that -"

"He is definitely alone!"

Dominating Blade and Floating Up spoke in unison.

"44 Bandits, Not Telling My Name, you two get past through quietly and do a sneak up on Zhan Yu, take him out! The [Land Lease] can only be claimed by us, the Sword and Fire Mercenary!" Dominating Blade spoke with extreme domineering!

44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name were both Thief class players. With [stealth], they could easily get through the monsters without laying a finger on them. Monsters with "True Eyes" were only located in the 1st and 2nd floors!

"Yes!"

The two thieves then instantly immersed themselves into stealth mode at the same moment, and slowly fumbled forward.

...

"Ah, ha! Another living material to be used as a test subject! Master

Terpot Ryhar will definitely be pleased!” Weasley had a vast aggro radius. He instantly spotted Zhang Yang charging towards him from afar. Swoosh! He pulled his huge sword and started waving towards Zhang Yang with the attempt to hack Zhang Yang in half!

[block]!

‘-195!’ ‘The block has neutralized some of the damages.’

With the shield raised up high and coming in contact, clashing with the huge sword that the boss swung towards him, a burst of fiery stars flashed on sight.

“Oh sh*t, son of a boss, just give up on the futile struggle! Just lay out your neck and be ready to die!” Zhang Yang laughed happily. Instead of being bored by himself, why not tease the boss and have fun? With his brain waves surging, he even summoned out his servant Clear Lotus, launching his attacks towards Weasley.

Unlike players, a boss had a specific time of discharging skills, beginning with the simplest normal attacks.

97%, 94%, 91%, the HP bar of Weasley was decreasing slowly.

“Ouh...!” the boss suddenly let out a burst of roar. After a swing that missed his target, Weasley held his sword with his other hand and plunged it straight into the ground.

Boom!

A black light suddenly started to spread in all directions. At least a 3 meter radius of the area where the boss was standing was instantly turned into an atmosphere glowing with only darkness!

‘Ding! You have received the Plaque of the Undead effect, movement speed has been decreased by 50%, receive 500 damage from dark-shadow effect every 2 seconds, last until you leave the effective range of the Plaque of Undead!’

Zhang Yang already started to retract the moment he saw the boss acting weird, but the skill discharge was way faster than the player’s

movement speed. A new negative effect symbol instantly appeared on top of Zhang Yang's head, followed by an instant decrease in his movement speed.

He was lucky to have ran earlier. Even with his decreased movement speed, he could still manage to run out of the effective radius of the [Plaque of the Undead], with just a damage of '-400' popped out on top of his head. After leaving the effective radius, the negative effect on him was automatically lifted away.

After Weasley was done with that powerful skill, he immediately pulled his sword out from the ground and continued to pursue his attacks on Zhang Yang.

[block]!

[block]!

[block]!

It was too bad that the frequency of the boss' attack were not exactly high, with a swing of his sword only in every 2 to 3 seconds. But judging from every vigorous and heavy strike of the sword, Zhang Yang believed that the damage output for each of slashes would definitely be higher than 3,000!

Shoof! With a shadow-step, Clear Lotus managed to escape the radius of the Plaque of the Undead. She then continued to poke and stab the boss from the back, dealing a series of damage on the boss. But it was unavoidable that she had to sustain two attacks from the boss, decreasing a total of 1,000 HP!

Zhang Yang did not lose much of his HP after a few successful [block], and he could just rely on his armor set effects to heal his HP back to the max.

Another 10 seconds or so has passed, and Weasley plunged his sword into the ground once again, discharging another round of [Plaque of the Undead].

Zhang Yang was certain, the boss would use the skill once his HP

dropped every 10%.

78%, 77%, 76%, 75%!

Weasley's pupils instantly flashed. His ordinary eyes which did not differ much from an ordinary person's eyes ignited with greenish ghostly flames. With an explosive "Boom!", the large sword was surrounded by black aura, emitting a palpitating horrific atmosphere.

'Ding! Ron Weasley has used [Shadows of Death], all physical attacks have been increased with additional 100% dark-shadow damage, last for 5 seconds!'

[block]!

'-3200!'

Oh lord!

Zhang Yang immediately activated [substitute]!

'Immune' 'Immune'!

Within the 5 seconds, the boss did a series of 3 consecutive attacks with his sword. Other than the first attack, the damage from the remaining attacks were neutralized by the additional effects of [invincible] which came after [substitute]!

Even with the 20% damage avoidance passive, Zhang Yang still took some dark-shadow damage of 3,200, which meant that the boss dished out 4,000 damage in his regular attacks!

The boss triggered [Shadows of Death] when his HP hit 75%. That would mean that the skill would be triggered every time 25% of his HP was deducted! The servant could only sustain one attack from the [Shadows of Death], leaving Zhang Yang to forcefully take on the last two remaining attacks that was yet to come!

3 minutes later, the boss' HP was brought down to 60%. The 4th [Plaque of the Undead] was triggered, with two consecutive numerical value of '-500' popped out right on top of Clear Lotus, emptying out her HP. With a miserable scream, she turned into a white light and disappeared into

thin air.

“Hahaha, you weak soul, just accept your fate!” Weasley waved his sword to dance. Usually, when a boss kills a player or a player’s pet, he or she would speak a few dialogues.

“You’ve spoken too much nonsense!” Zhang Yang stared closely at the boss’ HP, because the moment it dropped below 50%, [Plaque of the Undead] and [Shadows of Death] would be discharged at the same instant, definitely making that instant the most dangerous moment in the whole battle!

Unfortunately, if he knew the skills of the boss a little earlier, he would have summoned his servant a little slower, reserving [substitute] until then!

59%, 55%, 50%!

“Go to hell, you insignificant soul!” Weasley plunged his sword heavily into the ground and triggered [Plaque of the Undead] once again.

Zhang Yang withdrew himself at the very first moment!

‘Ding! Ron Weasley has used [Shadows of Death], all physical attacks have been increased with additional 100% dark-shadow damage, last for 5 seconds!’

Followed closely with triggering [Shadows of Death], the boss quickly pursued Zhang Yang with his sword pulled out of the ground.

‘-400!’

[block]!

‘-3200!’

Zhang Yang could only use [berserker’s heal] in that instant.

Shoosh! Instantly healing his HP back to full health!

[block]!

‘+100!’

‘-3200!’

The second swing of the sword was negated with [block], but the dark-shadow damage was unaffected and banged up on Zhang Yang!

The [lifesteal] effect of the [Lover's Sword] activated!

‘-1573!’ [horizontal sweep].

‘+1573!’

‘-1499!’ [destructive smash].

‘+1499!’

‘-777!’ Regular attack.

‘+777!’

In just an instant, Zhang Yang's HP was restored back to full once more!

[block]!

‘-3200!’

The effect of the [Shadows of Death] ended with the 3rd strike of the boss!

“Hahaha, you should be the one that should accept your fate... to die!” Zhang Yang burst into laughter. With every slash he did onto the boss, relying on the armor set's recovery effect, along with the additional use of red potion, he could slowly replace back the HP that he lost.

40%! 30%!

Another 2 minutes has passed, the boss' HP was nearing 25% left, which meant that the 3rd [Shadows of Death] was about to begin.

Chapter 123: Double Assassination!

25%!

‘Ding! Ron Weasley has used [Shadow of Death], all physical attacks have been increased with additional 100% dark-shadow damage, last for 5 seconds!’

During the voice notification from the system, Weasley was swinging his huge sword, at that moment surrounded with dark-aura, charging towards Zhang Yang in huge steps, ready to cleave him in two!

[shield wall]!

[block]! [block]! [block]!

‘-800!’ ‘-800!’ ‘-800!’

With effects of [shield wall] and [shield oath] in play, the damage was reduced by 80% The 3 huge swings that could have dealt 4,000 point of damage ended up only doing 800!

With his final trump card, [Shadows of Death] having been used up, the boss was finally set on the one and only path remaining - the path to his demise!

Zhang Yang was in the zone, swinging the sword in his hand, slicing and dicing, ferociously depleting the HP of the boss.

24%, 23%, 22%...

The boss’ HP continued to drop, from 15% to 10%, and then down to 5%. Victory was already beckoning Zhang Yang!

4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

“Argh... Master Terpot Ryhar shall revive me! I will be back! I will definitely be back!” With that, “Clang!” Weasley dropped his huge sword and his tall body collapsed heavily onto the ground.

‘Ding! You have slain Weasley Ron, and acquired 600,000 Experience Points!’

Zhang Yang turned his head to glance around, and he could see that a new batch of monsters had begun respawning further away from him. The respawning boom would catch up to his position in no time! Time.... There was no time to waste! He hastily grabbed all the loot dropped from the dead body of Weasley Ron and jammed them into his backpack, before he turned around and jogged to the 9th floor.

As he rushed back, two thirds of the monsters had already respawned and were blocking his way, leaving him with no choice but to clear them out one by one.

Taking advantage of that moment of brief respite to eat snacks to restore his stamina and HP, Zhang Yang finally had the time to look over the loots he obtained from earlier on.

[Glory of the Undead Warrior] (Gray-Silver equipment, Ring)

Vitality: +20

Strength: +10

Equip: Recover 30 HP in melee combat when attacking. Maximum rate of activation: Every one second.

Level required: 30

A [lifesteal] ring!

Lifestealing equipment such as this one did not seem much by themselves, but if they were equipped as sets, a recovery amounting up to a few hundred points of HP would definitely be something!

Zhang Yang immediately replaced his initial ring with the new one, putting the Level 20 Gray-Silver ring into his backpack. Even though the ring was no longer useful to him, it was still an awesome piece in the eyes of 90% of the current players. It was still highly sellable.

[Proof of the Deceased] (Gray-Silver equipment, Holy book)

Intelligent: +54

Level required: 30

Profession: Sacred Knight.

Holy book was a special equipment exclusively meant for Sacred Knights and could be equipped in the secondary weapon slot. This was because Sacred Knights were unable to equip staves despite being a magic profession. They could only wield maces as their primary weapons and Holy Books as their secondary.

“It’s such a pity that we don’t have any Sacred Knights in the gang at the moment!”

Zhang Yang could only sigh. Although Priests and Sacred Knight belonged to the same healing role, both of them had different focus points. Priests were more focused on group healing while Sacred Knights were more focused on healing individual targets. But with Han Ying Xue who has such a large large capacity (mana), supporting two players at the same time should not be a problem at all!

Other than the two Gray-Silver grade equipment, there were also 7 or 8 Green-Copper equipment. However, Zhang Yang was keener on getting a skill book, but that did not happen. Of course, the quest item [Elemental Stone] was among the loots, lying quietly within his backpack inventory.

After equipping the ring with the [lifesteal] effect, Zhang Yang’s efficiency in clearing monsters had found itself on another level. A recovery of 30 HP in one second did not seem much, but over time, that would be a total of 1,800 HP recovered in 1 minute, almost equivalent to two Grade 2 healing potions!

Another half an hour passed, and Zhang Yang was finally back at the 9th floor.

The moment he walked out of the stairs, Zhang Yang could vaguely feel an unusual disturbance in the air. He instantly pulled his sword out and acted, and slash at the top left position in front of him.

“-741!”

Blood splashed, a shadow figure was abruptly hit by Zhang Yang and he came out from his stealth mode!

‘Ding! You have initiated an attack on 44 Bandits. You are now penalized with the Red Tag! If you are killed in this condition, you will drop by 2 levels and have a 100% equipment break off!’

It was this 44 Bandits again!

Zhang Yang lit up with a murderous glare, it did not matter if they tracked him on purpose or it was a meeting by chance, he would not hold anything back for the sake of his [Land Lease]!

“F*ck!” 44 Bandits let out a curse, “How the hell did you see me?!”

He also never expected to see Zhang Yang suddenly coming out from the stairs of the 9th floor. Even he was caught off guard, leaving him to wonder, how his opponent discovered him in stealth.

That could only be described as a sixth sense that Zhang Yang had developed over 3 years of experience in battling Thieves, nothing else!

Zhang Yang grinned, “Hey brother, there’s demand for my head again?”

“-1,523!”

Talking was one thing, but his hands kept moving. Those hands did not show a single bit of mercy, coming straight up with a [horizontal sweep], he took a big chunk of HP away from 44 Bandits!

44 Bandits only had a total of about 4,000 HP, give or take. Being sliced two times by Zhang Yang had taken half of his health already! Shocked, he groped for his HP potion while trying strike back, “That’s right, you better be frank and let me slay you a couple of times, who knows if I’m in a mood, I might just kill you a few times lesser!”

Zhang Yang was surprised at those words. He consulted his instincts. A Thief being forced out of his stealth mode, facing a same level Guardian with the same level of equipment and a full health bar, yet had that expression on his face. This was not bravado! There must be another agenda behind it!

That was the instance where Zhang Yang felt another faintly unusual disturbance behind him... there must be a second Thief!

With an instant change of mind as swift as lightning, Zhang Yang summoned his servant Clear Lotus.

< Ambush>!

Another vague shadow appeared from behind of Zhang Yang, striking straight on the back of Zhang Yang's head, knocking Zhang Yang into stunned state.

"Haha, you must have never thought that there were 2 of us. Let's see how you die with our dual attacks! I shall get my revenge for the - Huh?" 44 Bandits was still laughing proudly until he saw servant Clear Lotus's appearance, suddenly he uttered a sound of surprise!

"Who is this... No, a servant! What is this sorcery?"

[substitute] skill activated!

Servant Clear Lotus immediately replaced Zhang Yang to be stunned. Zhang Yang swung his sword and took another slash at 44 Bandits.

'-737!'

[immune]!

At the same instant, the two Thieves unleashed a flurry of attacks, but they could only helplessly watch their attacks invoke the word that crippled their psyche - [immune].

Zhang Yang burst out in laughter, activating his [destructive smash]!

"-3,100!"

A critical attack that directly sent 44 Bandits to his demise!

Zhang Yang turned around and faced the other thief directly, Not Telling My Name.

Hmm, another famous player to be in the future, it was unfortunate for him to face Zhang Yang this soon!

Not Telling My Name was the type who let his actions do the talking, calmly reentering his stealth mode. His opponent had just been hit with regular attacks, there was no way for the opponent to instantly activate

any skills at the moment with so little rage points. He will evade the enemy for now, before striking like a poisonous snake in the dark. When the opponent was at his most vulnerable state, he would jump out of his hiding to give the final blow to his opponent!

Zhang Yang closely followed after the thief, with his invincibility still in effect, the thief's [ambush] posing no threat whatsoever.

[blood rage] activated, increasing his rage value by 30 points!

[thunder strike]!

‘-234!’

Not Telling My Name was instantly forced out from the shadow, a damage value appearing on the top of his head. His face unable to hide his surprise, never expecting Zhang Yang to have this much Rage points.

The 5 seconds of the [substitute] effect was over, and Clear Lotus recovered from her stun. With a “poof!” she instantly appeared behind Not Telling My Name with [shadow walk] and began her assault!

Zhang Yang had also followed up in tandem, slashing wildly.

Toot!

The whole body of Not Telling My Name turned translucent.

Both Clear Lotus and Zhang Yang found themselves striking a ghost.

[missed]!

[missed]!

The word ‘missed’ appeared on top of Not Telling My Name’s head, with no changes to his HP bar. Some attacks from Clear Lotus managed to deal some damage occasionally, however.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes for a bit, and said, “So you have learned [blur]!”

[Blur] (Level 1): Draw from the power of shadows to shroud your attackers, causing them to miss 75% of their attacks. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown time: 10 minutes

Had it been mastered it to a full 10 levels, the cooldown time would be reduced significantly to 5 minutes. It was an emergency life-saving skill like the Guardian's [shield wall]! However, [blur] was not one of the skills taught by the Thief Class Instructor, it was a rare drop from a certain Field Boss!

Not Telling My Name did not say a word, swinging his 2 long sword he resumed his assault on Zhang Yang. Unlike 44 Bandits, he was a fighter-type thief, far more effective in direct combat, unlike the literal cloak and dagger play style of agility-type thieves.

But the moment he swung his blade, he lost sight of Zhang Yang, unable to even see a trace of his shadow. The two swords landed on nothing but air. He vaguely realized that Zhang Yang had moved behind him, so he quickly turned. As he turned and turned, he could only see Zhang Yang's shadow out of the corner of his eye as the Guardian fleetingly stayed in his blindspot!

Not Telling My Name was shocked and stunned, as he attempted to charge forward, backpedal, side-step rapidly in order to face Zhang Yang! But Zhang Yang was just like a chewing gum, staying on his *ss!

A master player! Definitely a master, second to none!

Not Telling Your Name had used the same tactic before to toy with some players before killing them. This required both operational skills and situational awareness that far surpassed the capabilities of the opponent. He once took pride in that, but now the role of the predator and the prey had been switched, leaving him with cold sweat and a bottomless pit in his stomach. He wanted to bang his head against the wall, having been played with like that!

10 seconds had passed in the blink of an eye, [blur] was over!

‘-715!’

‘-1489!’

‘-1502!’

...

With a series of cuts, Not Telling My Name was manipulated, tortured to death, and butchered alive, with no chance of facing Zhang Yang from the front at all!

Phew!

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword, looking at the two corpses on the floor, smiling broadly.

Those who might become master players in the future were still in the learning stages, like how toddlers learning to walk. With an additional five years of experience, on top of his vastly improved self in his new life, Zhang Yang would not let anyone surpass him!

So tremble on, rookies!

Chapter 124: Beyond Perfect Score

Zhang Yang returned to the Lab Room. He took out the Elemental Stone and showed it to Merlinda, who saw the rock and was happy beyond measure.

“You’ve done it, brave warrior!” said Merlinda gratefully.

[Elemental Stone] (Quest Item)

Item Description: Dispels the bind on Merlinda – Song of the Forest.

Zhang Yang walked closer and held out the stone in his hands. “How do I use this?”

“Place it on my chest!” said Merlinda. “I will absorb the power of the stone to break free of these shackles!”

Zhang Yang nodded and walked over to the NPC. He then placed the crystal-like rock on her chest. What a beautiful elven woman. Her body was so alluring that when Zhang Yang placed the Elemental Stone on her chest, it slipped down and rested in between her voluptuous breasts!

If only the thing between her boobies could be replaced with his...

What the hell am I thinking!?

Zhang Yang shook his head violently! Could this be?! It has been a while since he had felt the warmth of a woman since he was reborn. Was he really that “dry”? Still! No matter how depraved Zhang Yang became, she was still an NPC! A program!

Sigh... He blamed the developers and designers for doing their job so excellently. If she could lose those pointy ears, her pale eyes, and the emerald colored hair, how would anyone differentiate this NPC from a real woman!? It was no wonder that movie producers would collaborate with ‘God’s Miracle’ in the future to make their movies. The audiences could not even tell the difference between the actors and NPCs!

“Aun Vu Zin Du Ving Ga...” Merlinda started to chant a spell. As she chanted, white light started to radiate from the inside of the Elemental

Stone. As she chanted on, a total of 8 rays of light burst out from within the Stone and formed a magic circle in the air. The circle expanded slowly and wrapped itself around Merlinda.

Ping! Ping! Ping!

The light rings that bound Merlinda shattered into pieces. There was a sudden tremor when the NPC started to glow brighter. Her hair started to float supernaturally, without any moving air in the room.

FOOM!

The light glowed brighter to the point that Zhang Yang had to shield his eyes with his armored hand as even his eyelids couldn't block out the light.

When the light dispersed, Zhang Yang lowered his arms and opened his eyes. Merlinda was freed and now standing right in front of him! Zhang Yang could only assume that the energy the stone released had been a little too powerful, it was the only explanation he could come up with, seeing that the dress she wore was now in pieces. Even her undergarments were all torn apart! Her body was only covered with less than a few torn pieces of cloth still sticking to her fair skin, conveniently at the places that really mattered! As she moved, the perfectly full breasts jiggled so seductively that any weak-willed man would fall to his feet! A sudden surge rose from within Zhang Yang that he started to sweat like a horny pig. Damn! How could Zhang Yang drool over an NPC!? He was starting to behave like the notorious Fatty Han!

Fortunately for him, Merlinda quickly produced another dress from the ring she wore and changed into it. The pale, purple Amherst colored dress complimented her green Emerald colored hair. As she flung her hair to adjust the dress, her hair gracefully came to rest on her back. The dress was soft and tight enough that it plastered itself on her skin, showing her slender form to the world. Everything about her was unearthly.

Hold up. Did she just pull out a dress from a ring? What's this? A Fantasy Novel? Or was she the Flash?

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Merlinda – Song of the

Forest. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points!

Total Time Taken: 97 minutes, Score: Good.

Player Count: 1. Increased Score.

Average Players Level: 31. Increased Score.

Final Score: Beyond Perfect!

‘Ding! You have obtained the reward: Merlinda’s Appreciation Ring.’

Beyond Perfect? What was that score? He had never heard of it before!

Zhang Yang had never encountered a score that was beyond Perfect and no matter how hard he tried to recall; he could not remember anyone in his previous life scoring Beyond Perfect!

‘Total Time Taken: 97 minutes, Score: Good.

Player Count: 1. Increased Score.

Average Players Level: 31. Increased Score.

Final Score: Beyond Perfect!’

Zhang Yang recalled the system notification and thought to himself.

“Perhaps I got this score since I completed the quest alone? Did the system award me with a ‘Beyond Perfect’ score since no one else has ever done it alone? After Excellent, comes Perfect. Perfect was the highest level there is – or that’s what I thought previously. Could it be that there was actually a score higher than that?”

Zhang Yang grinned. “That has to be the case. I could be the only one player who maximized [block]. Since I was lucky enough to obtain the [Servant] Clear Lotus and also [berserker’s heal], it was possible for me to kill Ron Weasley with them both!

A “Perfect” score reward was already considered to be the ultimate prize. What would the system’s reward be when Zhang Yang scored a “Beyond Perfect”?

Zhang Yang took out the ring in his inventory.

[Merlinda's Appreciation Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +50

Strength: +50

Use: Summons Merlinda's Shadow to join the battle. Last for 10 seconds. During the summoned duration, she will act as your healer and has perfect Invincibility.

Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

Special: Item's level requirement has been dropped down to Level 30.
Limited only to Player: Zhan Yu.

Bound.

WHAT IN THE NAME OF NEPTUNE?!

Level 50 Yellow-Gold equipment! And he could equip it now!

Now the system was just being lazy. A "Perfect" score must have awarded a Gray-Silver tier equipment. By its logic, the reward for attaining "Beyond Perfect" would be a Yellow-Gold equipment. However, a Yellow-Gold equipment had a requirement of level 50. They probably felt that the player was bound to let it collect dust in the inventory. So, taking the circumstances into consideration, they lowered the level requirement. This could be the only such equipment in the entire game! If other player got hold of this news, they would just cry their eyes out in jealousy.

Zhang Yang had struck the jackpot!

Now, he had a problem. Which of the rings should he remove?

[Absolute Defense Ring] granted a bonus 100 Defense points, while [Dead Soldier's Pride] had the [lifesteal] effect. Argh! Which one of these had to go!? Damn it! If only the system had given Zhang Yang a necklace, then he would not have to crack his brain thinking about it.

In the end, Zhang Yang had decided to swap off [Absolute Defense Ring] and adapt based on the situation. If he were to grind his level, he would put on the [Absolute Defense Ring]. If he was fighting an elite, or a boss, he would swap back to the [Dead Soldier's Pride].

Zhang Yang swapped off the rings and his attribute was rose dramatically.

HP: 5,380.

Strength: 276

Melee damage: (716-768) x 110%

“Brave warrior! Let us make haste! We must now defeat the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar and rid this land of evil!” said Merlinda with vigor. An ancient magical staff appeared in her hands. She twirled it around as she walked, casting a healing spell to recover her own health.

[Higher Regeneration]: Restores 5% of the target's HP every second for 30 seconds.

“Alright, let's go kill him!” Zhang Yang was delighted since an NPC was willing to lend a hand.

“Please lead the way, I will stay behind and heal you!” Merlinda pushed Zhang Yang upfront.

Hah! What a smart NPC! She even knew how to cower behind a player!

There was no time to waste. There were players chasing after him from the upper floor! There was literally no time for him to waste! Zhang Yang quickly stepped onward and led his “party” down to the tenth floor.

By then, the monsters that were the closest to the entrance were still dead while the monsters further down the floor had already respawned. Zhang Yang had to kill them all again to make it to the next floor.

As annoying as it may seem, this time, there was an NPC healing him, and Zhang Yang was able to kill his way through at leisure, without depending on his long cooldown skills to survive.

Underground Tower 11th Floor!

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to set foot in the Underground Tower 11th Floor! Player Zhan Yu is now getting closer to the Land Lease!’

Just as he stepped in, the server acted up again.

Zhang Yang had already gotten used to it. It looks like the system would make an announcement every single time a player entered a new floor after the 10th floor of the Underground Tower.

The 11th floor was almost the same as the 10th floor. It was filled with the same magical attack-type monsters. His killing speed was tremendously slower since [block] could not be used against magic attacks, which directly affected the usage of [shield bash]!

Their slow attacking speed was to be expected.

After 40 minutes, Zhang Yang arrived at the end of the floor and entered a small library.

A petite human girl was sitting high up a ladder, searching around for books as she muttered by herself. The girl had a long, straight, and blonde hair, and her figure was well built like a true Western beauty.

[Hermione, The Witch] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 36

HP: 600,000

Note: She was Terpot Ryhar's assistant.

"Hermione! You must have thought that I could never escape, did you!"

Before Zhang Yang did anything at all, Merlinda started to taunt.

"You beast! How could you do this to me!? We were friends! How could you betray my trust!?"

Hermione closed the book she was reading gracefully and looked up.

"Well well well...Look what we have here. You actually escaped now did you? What was Ron doing? Sigh...What a useless imbecile." She raised her staff and muttered, "Shrink", and the stairs then moved down on its own and placed her gently on the ground.

Merlinda quickly turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Brave warrior! You must kill this witch! Without her, Terpot Ryhar would lose half of his

power!”

Merlinda quickly chanted a spell and cast a [Higher Regeneration] on Zhang Yang. Somehow, her expression looked like it was saying “Go ahead! I’ll cover you from behind”.

Sigh. Not like Zhang Yang had any say in the matter, did he?

Zhang Yang quickly dashed toward Hermione.

Hermione raised the staff in her hands and pointed it at Zhang Yang, beginning to chant a spell. “O Lord of Flames, beseech your almighty power and exterminate this heretic, cleanse his blasphemy!”

Shush!

Zhang Yang casted [charge].

‘-728!’

[Cripple Defense]!

[Cripple Defense]!

Just as Zhang Yang had managed to inflict two counts of [Cripple Defense], Hermione had finished her spell. A ball of fire blast out and hits Zhang Yang.

‘-1,612!’

‘+269!’

Zhang Yang received a huge damage and received the first heal from the [Higher Regeneration].

2 seconds later, another fire ball landed on Zhang Yang.

‘-1624!’

‘+269!’

‘+30!’

‘+269!’

‘+30!’

Zhang Yang received 2 ticks of healing while the ring [lifesteal] effect was triggered twice. Although Zhang Yang was recovering, but it was not enough to dampen the boss' damage.

After casting [Higher Regeneration], Merlinda did not bother Zhang Yang anymore. She turned her target to Hermione and cast a [Punishment Ray] on the boss, dealing around 500 damage a spell.

Merlinda's healing spell could not be depended upon; since both of them started traveling from the 10th floor all the way to the 11th floor, she had never cast anything else other [Higher Regeneration]! Based on this reason, Merlinda could have only [Higher Regeneration] and nothing else besides that.

While this was happening, Zhang Yang was faced with a dilemma. It was concerning the [Rainbow Potion]!

If he took it now, he could increase all elemental resistance and fight the boss evenly. However, if he did use the potion now, how would he face the final boss later on?

Gah!

Zhang Yang finally decided to take the potion. He had to do whatever he could to survive here! Otherwise, he would not even reach the last floor!

1Flash – The Flash from DC Comics stored his costume in a ring.

Chapter 125: Hermione the Witch

Gulp! Zhang Yang drank the [Rainbow Potion].

His entire body radiated in 5 different colors.

“That’s cool.”

The light was then absorbed back into this body and a buff icon appeared on his head. ‘All Elemental Resistance +1,000!’

Hermione pointed her staff at Zhang Yang and blasted him with a fire ball.

Boom!

‘-600!’

To think that the potion could reduce all incoming magic damage by 1,000! It was the right call to make!

Zhang Yang swung his sword and laid waste on Hermione after inflicting 5 layers of [Cripple Defense]! He then summoned his [Servant] after. To maximize time and attack power, Zhang Yang had strategically summoned the [Servant] only after stacking the [Cripple Defense]. Every second saved counted!

“God! I hate warriors!” Hermione cried as she raised her staff up high. 3 dim orbs of light beamed across the room and landed on Zhang Yang, his [Servant], and the NPC Merlinda.

‘Ding! You have received [weaken]. All damage and healing will be reduced by 50%. Cannot be dispelled. Last for 10 minutes!’

WTF?! How was he supposed to fight in that condition?!

Zhang Yang quickly activated [substitute] and transferred every negative debuff from him to the [Servant].

“Hmph! Petty little magic!” Merlinda scoffed. “Hermione! Do not forget this! I’m the loyal believer of the Moon God!”

She too raised her staff up high and similarly sent orbs of white light

everywhere. Instantly, the debuff on her and the [Servant] was removed.

Woah...She'd even had this sort of thing hiding up her sleeves.

Zhang Yang thought. If he had not undergone the quest in the 9th floor, he would not have encountered the quest and saved Merlinda. He would not have been able to even survive this boss without her help! It was all linked together! Facing this kind of boss that could 'weaken' a player, in order to counter this painful headache, one would have to depend on numbers to defeat her.

It was inevitable for Zhang Yang to misjudge a field boss in having multiple target type skills. Sometimes, the sheer numbers never guaranteed victory. You could defeat a boss with a party of 5 men; yet sometimes, you could lose a boss with a whole 500-man army!

Had he known sooner, he would not have wasted [substitute]! It was all because of Zhang Yang's superhuman reaction. It was a huge advantage to have, but at times it could lead to something like this.

'-845!'

'-5,070!'

'-1,575!'

Zhang Yang lost the edge granted by his OP skills of [block] and [shield bash] whenever he fought a magic attack type monster. Zhang Yang could only depend on [horizontal sweep] and [destructive smash] as his main damage dealers, along with [force strike] for some negligible bonuses. With Lady Luck smiling at him, he was able to hit a Lucky Strike with [horizontal sweep], dealing 3 times the damage!

If the damage had been directed towards a player, Zhang Yang could have instantly kill any class with just a single stroke of his sword! It was a shame that the Lucky Strike's proc rate was just too god damn low! It was not like he could control its rate; it would have been bloody fun having a never-ending kill streak in the PvP ground otherwise.

"Pesky little bugs! Let the shadow consume your souls!" Hermione pointed her staff directly at Zhang Yang and a debuff icon appeared on his

head.

[Shadow Starbreaker]: Explodes after 3 seconds, dealing 3,000 shadow damage to all targets within 10 x 10 meters around the inflicted target.

Zhang Yang read the skill description and quickly commanded the [Servant] to get away from him. Zhang Yang himself started to sprint away in the opposite direction to maximize their distance.

Boom!

‘-1400!’

[shadow starbreaker] exploded and only damaged Zhang Yang.

Clear Lotus returned to the scene and continued her attack.

After a while, the boss raised her staff again to cast [weaken] but was dispelled by Merlinda a few seconds later. Zhang Yang could not help but to praise himself for being able to discover the hidden quest. If he had wanted to save time and skip on saving the NPC, he would not have been able to “recruit” her and survive fighting this boss.

It was a miracle that he had saved her in time! He even got a Yellow-Gold tier ring out of it!

Hermione’s favorite skill was the fire ball which would set off every 2 seconds, dealing 600 damage a pop. Zhang Yang had [Higher Regeneration] which would heal him 269 HP every tick. Coupled with the [lifesteal] effect of the ring that he wore, healing him by 30 HP every second, Zhang Yang basically nullified the fireball damage.

The extra damage was from the [shadow starbreaker] that would activate once every 20 seconds that dealt a significantly high damage each time it exploded. Zhang Yang would have to activate [berserker’s heal] after 1 minute. In that short amount of time, Zhang Yang drained away at least 50,000 HP. With additional damage from Clear Lotus and Merlinda, the total HP that Hermione had lost since the start of the battle was about 80,000 HP!

2 minutes into the fight, Zhang Yang’s HP had dropped down to the

danger zone. He then activated the sword's [lifesteal] and recovered around 4,000HP. After a bottle of health potion, Zhang Yang recovered full health.

3 minutes in, Zhang Yang finally summoned Merlinda's Shadow to test out her ability.

The summoned shadow looked exactly like the current Merlinda. The only notable difference was that the shadow appeared translucent. Besides that, she had the same long pale dress, a magic staff in her hand, and those voluptuous breasts that would jiggle around lustfully.

'+1000!'

'+1000!'

'...'

Once the Merlinda's Shadow appeared, it started to cast healing spell on Zhang Yang. She would heal 1,000 HP every second! Foosh! Foosh! Foosh! After just 3 heals, and Zhang Yang was healed back to full health!

Awesome! No! F*CKING SPEACTACULAR!

As expected of a Level 50 Yellow-Gold equipment! Even Han Ying Xue, the finest healer in the entire server of China could only heal 1,100 HP every 2 seconds! This shadow could heal over 1,000 a second! How strong was that?!

In just 10 seconds, Merlinda's Shadow healed a total of 10,000 HP! The first few heals were effective as they were, but the rest were completely unnecessary! After 10 seconds, the duration of the skill expired and Merlinda's Shadow dispersed into thin air.

90%, 80%, 70%, 60%. The boss' HP was dropping quickly. Zhang Yang was progressing rather fast with the help of Merlinda (NPC) and Clear Lotus.

Zhang Yang realized that it was useless to have so many people just to fight this boss.

With more players around, the death rate would increase drastically

when [shadow starbreaker] exploded. The most effective number of players would be Zhang Yang's own personal team of misfits, including Sun Xin Yu a.k.a Frost Night. Fire and Sword Mercenary party would also do quite well here.

53%, 52%, 51%, 50%!

"I've had it with you worms! Let me crush your body and soul with the Ray of Obliteration!"

Hermione struck the ground with her staff heavily and chanted something, keeping her poker face upright. A long progress bar appeared on her head. The cast time was extremely slow. Everything around her started to tremble as if she was emitting unimaginable power. Her hair started to float around violently on its own.

1 second... 2 seconds... 5 seconds, 7 seconds... Damn! It was still casting. Zhang Yang started to have second thoughts about the skill she was about to cast. It could be something extremely powerful.

Argh! No time to think! Activate [shield wall]!

9 seconds... 10 seconds!

The spell was completed. She plucked her staff out from the ground. A ball of black light emerged from her chest and floated no further than half a meter away from her. The orb of light began as a small fist sized ball but suddenly expanded to a 3 meter wide orb, looking just like a black colored wrecking ball!

Shuuoomm! Boom!

The orb exploded, releasing a wave of black flames everywhere around her!

'Ding! Hermione has used [Ray of Obliteration] dealing 10,000 shadow damage to all targets 100 x 100 meters around her!'

'-10,000!'

'-10,000!'

'-1,000!'

Zhang Yang, Clear Lotus, and even the NPC Merlinda received the damage from Hermione's [Ray of Obliteration]. Only Zhang Yang and Merlinda remained standing. Clear Lotus cried in pain and fell defeated.

What a powerful ulti! 2 AoE multi target, 10,000 damage!

Zhang Yang could not help but wonder if there was any party around that could defeat her? It was not like everyone could use [shield wall]. In that case how does one survive that ulti-like skill?! If it really was a matter of numbers, then he would need to recruit at thousands of players just to fight her.

Merlinda's [Higher Regeneration] seemed to change according to the target. The effect on Merlinda herself was different from that of Zhang Yang. Merlinda had over 45,000 HP, every tick should have healed her by 2,250 HP. Somehow she only took 4 seconds to completely heal herself back to its full health.

Zhang Yang had a sudden epiphany. If he stopped fighting, Merlinda could kill off the boss, even if it would take an eternity for her to do so! Zhang Yang was not the main character here. Merlinda was! He was just taking a ride all along!

Now that he thought of her, Zhang Yang could not help but to stare at her body from behind her. Those long slender legs and seductive bodyline was truly a work of art! As expected of the genius minds in the development team! They had successfully brought out the most from the Elf race! Bravo!

"Impossible! How could you survive my spell? This is outrageous!" Hermione stared at Zhang Yang. He could see the fear in her eyes.

Impossible! Impossible!

Haha! I'm your greatest fear! I'm freaking Zhan Yu! The legendary Guardian!

Zhang Yang muttered to himself more self-praises as he slashed away her HP!

The boss was not programmed to respond to the player's taunts and

speech. She then returned to casting fire balls.

Pew! Pew! Boom!

No matter how many fire balls she casted, it would always be reduced by 1,000 damage. With the [Higher Regeneration] on Zhang Yang, the boss could do nothing to kill him off!

The attacking power dropped when Clear Lotus had left the battle. Still, Zhang Yang was making progress.

40%... 30%... 20%... 10%!

By the time Hermione's HP was about to reach 0, Zhang Yang realized a terrible situation. The [Rainbow Potion] effect was about to end!

Crap! He had to be fast!

45,613!

10,141!

35,314!

28,718!

By the time it reached 22,000 HP, the potion effect ended.

‘-1,600!’

A fireball landed and dealt its full damage!

Shit!

‘-1600!’

‘-1,600!’

After 3 shots, Zhang Yang quickly activated [berserker's heal] to restore full health!

Whenever Zhang Yang received huge damage, his Rage would pile up. This time, Zhang Yang could spam [force strike] and increase his attacking power.

‘-1,600!’

‘-2,400!’ [shadow starbreaker].

Merlinda’s Shadow!

‘+1,000!’

‘+1,000!’

‘...’

12,387!

8,134!

3,013!

1,343!

310!

O!

“Gyaa...” Hermione wailed pitifully as she crashed down to the floor, gracefully like how maidens died in classic Chinese martial art movies. Her eyes were still wide open as she died, unwilling to accept her fate.

Finally!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He had only 2,000 HP left. If Hermione had lasted a little longer, she could have killed Zhang Yang with two more shots of her fire ball.

“I pray that the Moon God blesses your soul. Rest in peace my friend...” Merlinda was kneeling down beside Hermione’s dead body as she wept for her. She wiped her tears away and waved her staff around the body.

A white light flashed and a translucent, monochromic ghost appeared beside the body.

“Good bye...” said Merlinda as she nodded to the ghost. The ghost nodded back and dispersed into the air.

1Proc rate – The trigger rate of any skill, item effect, or critical/lucky strike, or almost anything at all that are governed by the rules of probability.

2Ulti – Short for Ultimate. Ulti is the common term for powerful skills. They usually have long casting time and equally long cool down. However, Ultis also deal extremely high damage. Usually an ulti is used once in a battle to deal extreme damage or to cast a strong debuff on the enemy. Ultis are commonly used to deal damage. However, there are also defensive or support type ultis. In other games for instance, a Priest Ulti could resurrect several dead players within the vicinity or cast a strong protection buff to prolong a player's survivability in battle.

Chapter 126: Chimera

“Yo Boss. Not Telling My Name and I would take a while before we could rejoin you!”

44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name had just only revived themselves and had to start all over again from the first floor. It was just like any save point system of any regular dungeon. At the floor, both of them would have to fight the monsters with [true sight] head on, since [stealth] was no longer an option.

There were players around, joining them in their crusade down the tower. However, the other players were in similar circumstances as 44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name. They too, had died before and were separated with their main party. Alone, they could not perform any better and those who had just revived.

Dominating Blade was speechless. “How could you not beat Zhan Yu? There’re the two of you and only one of him!”

“That bastard was just too strong for me. It only took him 2 to 3 strikes to kill me off! I didn’t even have a single second to react!” 44 Bandits complained.

Dominating Blade ignored that ridiculous excuse, he continued on and asked the other guy.

“What about you Not Telling My Name? Didn’t you have the skill called [blur]? What’s your excuse? That you’ve been killed without having time to react?” Dominating Blade was confused. Not Telling My Name was one of his elite members. He was only able to defeat Not Telling My Name in a friendly match thanks to his [shield wall].

“I did use it!” said Not Telling My Name. “It’s still useless! That guy stuck to my back like a gnat! I couldn’t shake him off! [blur] ended by the time I managed to get back on track!”

Gasp

Everyone in Dominating Blade’s party sucked in a breath collectively.

They knew that their own ability was fairly strong. They thought they could just play with Zhang Yang, like a lion playing with its food. However, when someone as strong as Not Telling My Name was defeated by Zhang Yang in such a manner, they knew that he had overly underestimated Zhang Yang's prowess.

“What do we do now boss?”

“...pick up the pace. We have to kill him before he gets to the last boss!”

...

It was time for the prize!

Just by looking at it, Zhang Yang grew excited when he saw a silver glimmer.

[Hermione's Staff] (Gray-Silver, Staff)

Magic Attack: 522-558

[Level 1 Socket]

[Level 1 Socket]

Equip Effect: Increase critical chance by 1%.

Level Requirement: 30

“Was Han Ying Xue's staff a level 20 Gray-Silver?” Zhang Yang rubbed his chin as he tried to recall. “Oh well. I'll give this to her if she needs it. Or I could sell it if she doesn't.”

[Petrification Necklace] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +15

Dexterity: +15

Equip Effect: Creates a chance to the target on every attack received. [petrified] targets will be immobilized and cannot perform any action. Lasts for 2 seconds. This skill will only trigger once every 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

OP equipment. It was too bad that the attribute was Dexterity. This item

could be useful for Hunters and especially Thieves. Since Hunters were ranged attackers, and they had their pet to help them take damage, the effectiveness of the necklace would be at minimum. Thieves had to fight at an extremely close range. The necklace effect would be at best when Thief-class player trade blows rapidly with a monster or another player.

Hmm. Too bad Sun Xin Yu had logged out. Zhang Yang had wanted to have a little more fun with her.

The rest of the equipment here were only of Green-Copper tier. Zhang Yang did not even take a second look and scoop them all into his inventory.

“Warrior! We do not have much time left! I can feel the evil sorcerer’s magic grow stronger by the minute. We cannot drag this any longer!” said Merlinda.

Zhang Yang stood up and replied. “In that case, let us depart with haste!”

After the death of Hermione, a door at the corner of the library unlocked. The door opened and revealed a secret staircase that led down to the 12th floor.

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to set foot in the Underground Tower 12th Floor! Player Zhan Yu is now getting closer to the Land Lease!’

Keep calm... Keep calm...

Zhang Yang muttered to himself and observed the entire floor.

The area around this floor was somewhat smaller than the previous floor. He could clearly estimate that this entire circular field was only around 200 meters in size! There were lighted torches hanging on the wall. However, the light from it was so dim that they only illuminated 5 meters around each torch. The rest of the field, mainly the center, was completely covered in darkness. Metal chains dangled from all over the ceiling as if they were massive cobwebs. It felt like this was the lair of a beast that was currently hiding in the darkness, ready to jump out

anytime.

“All du lah fe li zi do ri ah som lu!” Merlinda chanted as she pointed her staff toward the darkest region of the area.

Orbs of light started to form at the tip of the staff and flew across the area, giving off a bright and warm sensation as the light touched Zhang Yang, and the entire field was illuminated like stars in the sky.

“ROOAHHH!” A thunder growl blasted through the air. The walls and everything on it started to shake. Torches rattled in their metal holders. Dust dropped from everywhere.

Boom. Boom. Boom.

Like the sound of a train crashing into one another, a huge beast appeared in the field. Its entire structure was the shape of a dog. It was almost 10 meters in size and 4 meters in height. It had 3 heads with boney wings attached to its back. The 3 heads were not that of dogs but of a wolf, a lion, and a tiger. Every head was panting, their jaws open and slack. Foul, viscous fluid was dripping from its lower jaws.

[Chimera, the Demon Hound] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 38

HP: 800,000

Note: Terpot Ryhar's experimental product.

“By the gods! That sorcerer! He has done it! H-he has done it!” Merlinda's face went pale. Her voice was shaken.

Zhang Yang asked calmly. “What is that?”

“He had always wanted to create the ultimate beast. He had been experimenting with animals. To combine them all into one, to make a Chimera so powerful that it has the power to crush an entire civilization! T-the world...We are doomed!” Merlinda dropped to her knees and cowered.

“H-he has done it! Our world...the Union...everything will be destroyed!”

“ROOOAHHHH!” All three heads growl together in unison and started to charge towards Zhang Yang.

[block]!

[block]!

[block]!

Zhang Yang quickly countered the attack. He gritted his teeth and said. “As long as we kill that sorcerer, as long as we kill the source of this madness, the world will be safe from this kind of threat!”

Merlinda raised her head. Her pointy ears flicked. “T-that’s right! The world will be safe without the Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar! In the name of the Moon God and everything he stands for, bless this humbler follower! Grant this servant of yours strength to vanquish this evil from this earth!”

She waved her hand out and casted a [Higher Regeneration] to Zhang Yang.

The Chimera would not stop attacking him. Each head had its individual rhythm of attack that it felt like there were 3 individual monsters attacking him at the same time. [block] could not properly negate every single attack from the beast.

[block]!

‘-1348!’

[block]!

Zhang Yang stacked 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] and summoned Clear Lotus immediately after. Because of its insanely quick attacking frequency, Zhang Yang had to maximize [block] to its full capability, simultaneously raising his overall damage since [shield bash] could be triggered every time [block] was used.

‘-304!’ [block] reflect damage.

‘-607!’ [shield bash].

Just these skills alone had 900 DPS!

Even when Hundred Shots, or Sun Xing Yu, or Wei Yan Er were hitting a stationary boss, their DPS was only around 700 – 900! So far, anyone who had DPS higher than 500 was considered to be insanely strong!

If he included his normal attack and the other skills such as [horizontal sweep], [destructive smash] and [force strike], his DPS would already sky rocket to 1,800! That was not normal! It was not even beyond insane! Zhang Yang had reached a level beyond any professional player!

Just like that, Zhang Yang's super powered attack had managed to reduce the monster's HP by 10% in just 40 seconds!

"HOOOAH" The Chimera howled and spread its wings out, covering nearly every inch of the stone chamber.

Suush!

The wings started to rotate like a high-powered screw driver. The sight of it truly struck fear into anyone who witnessed it.

'Ding! Chimera the Demon Hound has used [mad wings]. Every target in the effect range will receive 2,000 damage per second for 3 seconds!

'-1,340'

'-2,000!'

'-2,000!'

Everyone, including Merlinda and Clear Lotus took damage. Clear Lotus had only taken 2 damage ticks and fell defeated.

Zhang Yang had to quickly consume a healing potion to save himself. The Rage gauge was already filled instantly by that attack, allowing Zhang Yang to spend it all to attack with a chained skill. [Servant] was just too weak against strong AoE skills.

However, if she was replaced by any other player, they would have suffered the same fate as she did.

89%, 88%, 87%...

Even without the summoned [Servant], Zhang Yang could still deal as

much damage as before.

The boss unleashed [mad wing] again at 80% HP threshold. Zhang Yang activated [berserker's heal] and survived the onslaught.

75%. No other skills.

50%. No other skills as well.

Looks like this boss had only one skill. However, that skill alone was enough to kill 99% of other party!

Zhang Yang could not help but worry. What if, he had brought the others along with him, how would they have attacked?

...Supposedly, it should start with normal attacks. Before the [mad wing] could be unleashed, Zhang Yang would have the party withdraw all the way to the entrance of the floor. The party will come back and continue the attack only after the skill was cast. It looked like the skill range could not surpass the border to the previous floor. During that time, the tank would have to rely on his own potions and skills to endure the damage.

40%... 30%... 20%!

No matter how earnestly the boss unleashed the skill, Zhang Yang managed to survive each time by switching between [berserker's heal] and the [lifesteal] skill from the sword. It was just the same against any other physical attack type boss facing Zhang Yang. Their attempts to kill him would be the same as a dog trying to eat a porcupine.

10%!

“ROOAHHHH!”

Over and over, the boss could only roar as no matter what it did, it cannot stop Zhang Yang from tearing it apart.

7%! 4%! 0%!

BOOM!

The monster fell in an enormous heap! Like a crumbling mountain, it sent tremors all over the place. The stone floor even cracked at where it

fell.

‘Ding! You have successfully killed Chimera the Demon Hound!
Obtained 800,000 Experience Points!’

“You’ve made it! Oh! Brave warrior! The world will be indebted to you!”
Merlinda praised. “I have never seen a valor of warrior such as you!”

Alright... stop kissing my ass.

Zhang Yang swept every loot into this inventory without taking a look.
Except one.

[The Bones of the Chimera] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +300

Vitality: +120

Equip Effect: Every attack you received will have a 2% chance to miss.

Level Requirement: 30

It was a pity that the shield Zhang Yang was currently wearing had a +1
[block] effect. He could not use the new shield there and then.

Chapter 127: The 13th Floor

[Light in the Shadows] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +10

Intelligence: +20

Equip Effect: 1% increase in Magic Attack or Healing Power

Level Requirement: 30

This necklace was by far the best equipment for magic attack classes. It could be sold for at least 1,000 or 2,000 gold coins! If the lease he would get could be used for him to open a store, he could use this necklace as one of the main attractions!

Other than the 2 Gray-Silver equipment, there were also other 8 Green-Copper equipment. He also obtained one [Chaos Gem]. Zhang Yang was delighted! He helped himself to the gem and used it to expand his inventory for an additional 10 slots. His inventory now had a total of 60 slots. That was at least 50% more than any majority players around!

This was one of the benefits of going for solo raids. When good items appeared, he would not need to compete with anyone for it.

Sigh... If only this tower had 30 floors. Zhang Yang hopelessly prayed for it in his mind.

Merlinda cried out after she had been left standing there for some time. "Warrior! Let's make a move on! The time is nigh! Every second we waste here will only give more strength to Terpot Ryhar!"

Zhang Yang nodded and replied. "Alright! Let's go and kill the son of a b*tch!"

There was no door nor a visible entrance anywhere around, so Zhang Yang circled around the entire area before finally discovering a hidden lever. He pulled the ancient metal bar, and the floor at the center of the area split apart with loud cracks, revealing a spiral staircase leading down.

Moving down, Zhang Yang had to watch his step as the entire area was

completely dark. After 30 seconds or so, a bright light flashed when he reached the bottom. The last floor was a laboratory about the size of a basketball court. Racks of cabinets were attached to every single surface of the walls around this room. Test tubes were arranged nicely in racks here and there. At the center of the room were the carcasses of dead animals. Not far from the mess was a man in black cloak, walking about in circles.

The man was completely shrouded in a black color magician robe. Underneath it was a face that was so shrivelled up that it looked like a skeleton! His eyes were gaunt and hollow, sunken deep in his eye sockets! His hands were all wrinkled up as if he had been left in the desert to dry up for years!

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to set foot in the Underground Tower 13th Floor! Player Zhan Yu is now getting closer to the Land Lease!’

The system announced his arrival just as Zhang Yang placed his foot into the lab. Oh well, since he had arrive to his ultimate goal. Might as well just go along with it.

Zhang Yang walked closer and observed him and his description.

[Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 40

HP: 10,000,000

Bloody hell. How was he supposed to fight that? He just used the [Rainbow Potion]. Merlinda’s half-ass healing was just as useless. Unless [berserker’s heal] and the sword’s [lifesteal] had long cooldown, how was he supposed to fight this monster alone?!

“Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar! In the name of the Moon God, I’m here to exterminate you!”

While Zhang Yang was busy frowning, thinking of a possible battle plan, Merlinda had boldly went up and pointed her staff furiously at him.

“Kuh kuh kuh...You managed to escape.” Terpot Ryhar raised his head

and stared at Merlinda. He then turned over and gazed at Zhang Yang with those eerie eyes. “Did this little pest free you?”

Crap! I wasn’t doing anything!

The innocent Zhang Yang had triggered the boss as he automatically entered battle mode; his Rage gauge had started to generate 2 points a second.

Now that it had come to this, might as well just try and fight him. At least he could understand the boss’s skill.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and dashed towards the boss.

“Hnng! Take this! Evil Sorcerer!” Merlinda cried out as she started to chant a [Punishment Ray] and fired it at the boss.

‘-200,000!’

I’ll be damned!

Was that real? Did she just blast 20% of the boss HP away? Zhang Yang nearly slipped as he ran.

Could this boss have done something indecent to her in the past? Why else would she suddenly become so enraged and powerful?

Well? Go ahead! Shoot more of those super beams!

Just four more times and Zhang Yang could just walk over to pick up the loots!

Zhang Yang was enthusiastic. He then used [charge] and started to attack as soon as he was in melee range.

“Gargh! Damn you, woman! Stay still!” Ryhar muffled. He pointed his staff at Merlinda and waved.

Zoom! Zoom! Zoom!

6 orbs of grayish light appeared and flew across the field. It latched onto Merlina’s hands, feets, waist, and head.

“ARGH!” Merlinda cried as she was bind by the light orbs. The staff in her hand clattered onto the floor.

Huh? What was that? Not 10 seconds ago she was the best attacker Zhang Yang had ever witnessed, yet now she was completely useless!

After taking care of Merlinda, the boss turned to face Zhang Yang. He pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and began casting a spell.

3 seconds later, black flames started to form in the sky and fused into countless spears. They rained downwards, piercing all over the 13th floor!

‘Ding! Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar has used [Rain of Flaming Spears]. All targets within the effective range will receive 2,000 Chaos damage!’

‘-1,600!’

Chaos damage is a special magic attack element. It would not be effected by any kind of Elemental Magic Resistance. It was the same as an attack that ignored defenses.

3 seconds later, the boss used the same skill again. Following closely was the same skill.

‘-1,600!’

‘-1,600!’

Could this boss only cast nothing but AoE magic attacks, just like Unduin? But this boss’ attacks were from the sky! There were no rocks in the world to hide behind from that!

What now? What now!?

Zhang Yang quickly activated [berserker’s heal] to save himself and started to rack his brain for a solution!

“Could I kite the boss to the entrance? Perhaps I could use the dodge and attack strategy there. Damn! The entrance is 200 meters away! It would at least take me 20 seconds to reach there! The boss would had already cast more than 7 times then! I will die before I even reach there!”

Might as well die trying! He used his summoned [Servant] to lure the boss over to the entrance and fight the boss there!

“Rise! My slaves! Fight for your master!” Terpot Ryhar raised his staff

and unleashed a different spell.

‘Ding! Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar has used [summoned servant]!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

Several pairs of boney hands burst out from the ground underneath Zhang Yang. 20 skeletal monsters crawled out from the ground and lumbered towards Zhang Yang.

[Terpot Ryhar’s Servant] (Normal)

Level: 35

HP: 3,500

‘-65!’

‘-262!’

‘+100!’

‘-69!’

‘+100!’

...

A chain of damage and healing texts popped up simultaneously, cluttering up his display. Those that were under 100 damage were monsters that attacked him from the front, those that had exceeded 200 were attacks that struck his back. The healing he received was from the [brave] set-equipment effect.

Zhang Yang had wanted to give up. He had planned to just die and come back here as fast as he could. But when these skeletal monsters suddenly popped out, things have changed. He now had hope!

The monster’s attacks were around 400! Zhang Yang had an idea. He quickly swapped his shield with the [The Bones of the Chimera] to increase his Defense by up to 360 points. He then adjusted his position to only allow the monsters to attack him from the front.

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

After the monsters’ attacks have been reduced by 20%, the base attack of 400 was unable to break through Zhang Yang Defense. They could only inflict 1 damage to him, and because he was under attack by 20 monsters, the set-equipment effect was triggered continuously!

The boss continued casting [Rain of Flaming Spears], one after another, creating several more flaming spears in the ceilings.

‘-1,600!’

‘+100!’ ‘+100!’ ‘+100!’ ‘+100!’...

Zhang Yang HP dropped tremendously every time he received the attack, but at the same time, he was healing rapidly from the set-equipment. On average, Zhang Yang predicted that the monster’s attack interval was around 2 seconds. Since there were 20 monsters around, he would heal an estimated amount of 1,000 HP every 2 seconds. This was based on his set equipment’s 50% chance of healing. He would heal 3,000 HP at most over the course of 6 seconds! The boss would need 3 seconds to cast the [Rain of Flaming Spear] that would deal 1,600 damage. In 6 seconds he would lose 3,200 HP while he would still cover that amount concurrently. Ultimately, he would only lose 200 HP every 6 seconds, which would total up to 4,000 damage over 2 minutes. He could solve this healing problem with [berserker’s heal]!

Just when he thought that this boss could not be defeated alone, he was now able to do it because of the boss’s own attempts to quicken his death! Talk about eating his own medicine!

Zhang Yang kept circling around the boss endlessly while facing the monsters to ensure that they would only attack him from the front. All AoE skills that Zhang Yang had could not be used since it would only damage those skeletal monsters! Why would Zhang Yang kill off his ‘healers’?!

79%, 78%, 77%... Zhang Yang was making extremely slow progress but at

least he was shaving off the boss' HP.

Since he could not use most of his skills, the damage rate was slow. The skill's cooldown was longer than 10 seconds, and he could not use his major skills as they would hit multiple targets!

1 minute... 2 minutes... 3 minutes... 5 minutes...

75%... 70%... 65%... 55%...

Slowly and surely, Zhang Yang was definitely obtaining victory!

"Ayy boss, there's someone there fighting!"

"I bet it's Zhan Yu!"

"Haha! What perfect timing!"

"Kill that bastard! We can fight the boss after he is dead!"

The field suddenly turned rowdy as a group of players from the Sword and Fire Mercenary and entered the 13th floor. All of them had their eyes on Zhan Yu, preparing to unleash their fury upon him!

Let's see how you take on 8 of us together! We'll flatten you up nicely like a pancake!

Just then, the boss spell was completed. A ceiling full of flaming spear rained down on everyone.

'-2,000!' '-2,000!' '-2,000!' '-2,000!' '-1,600!' '-1,500'...

Among them all, Floating Up was the only player who had suffered the lowest damage! He was a Defender with a passive 15% physical damage reduction and another 10% magic attack reduction passive skill.

"Shit! What was that! We just walked in when the boss was using his ulti!"

"Healers! Do your job!"

Everyone remained calm and orderly even though they had just taken a massive group attack! Everyone was doing their role perfectly; the healers methodically healing everyone, while the rest of the party headed straight for Zhang Yang.

Boom! Shush! Shush! Shush!

3 seconds later, another wave of flaming spears rained down.

“WTF! Another ulti?!”

“How could the boss repeatedly use his ulti!?”

“We’re in deep trouble now guys! 7 Feet! Don’t just heal the tank alone! Save the rest of us as well!”

Eventually, they broke down in panic.

Shush! The third wave of flaming spear rained down while the mercenaries were just 60 to 70 meters away from Zhang Yang!

‘Ding! Player Bottoms Up had died!’

‘Ding! Player Broken Uranus had died!’

‘Ding! Player All Wounded had died!’

The healers could not keep up with all the damage that their party had just taken. They had lost 3 players in just a few seconds! While the rest... the rest were standing on a thin ice!

Sword and Fire Mercenary has failed!

Chapter 128: Lease Obtained!

“Rise! My slaves! Fight for your master!” Terpot Ryhar waved his staff towards the party, and many skeleton monsters began to crawl out from the ground beneath everyone.

Dominating Blade and Floating Up were quite responsive. They both unleashed [thunder strike] and [devotion] in the split second to keep every monster there. At the same time, they were side stepping towards the boss to prevent any monsters to attack them from behind!

However, unlike Zhang Yang, both of their Defense values were only below or around 260 points. Even if the monsters were attacking from the front, they could deal at least 60 to 70 damage. The [summoned servant] skill would create 20 monsters for every player on the field. Since the party, excluding Zhang Yang, had 5 surviving members, the summoned monsters totaled up to 100! The tanks would at least have to “eat” 3,000 damage alone! Though they might have the [brave] set-equipment, it would only help them recover 2,500 HP or so; it would not be enough to cover the HP they had lost!

3 seconds later, and another [Rain of Flaming Spear] dropped down.

‘Ding! Player Point And Kill has died!’

‘Ding! Player Beauty Healer has died!’

Boom! Just like that, they lost two more members, leaving only 3 men standing.

“Damn it!” Dominating Blade was so angry at himself. Initially, he thought that he could take advantage of the situation, to have Zhang Yang killed and claim the boss as his own. Who knew that the boss’ attack would be so strong that he could kill every one without even getting close to them! If Dominating Blade revived, he would have to start from the top of the dungeon all over again! By then, it would already be too late!

“Teeheehee...” Zhang Yang snickered.

“What an honor to meet the famous Mercenary! I had always wanted to

meet you guys! Who knew that we would actually see each other here! What a coincidence?”

Coincidence, my ass!

The surviving members cursed under their breath, but there was nothing that they could do to turn the tide. How could a single Sacred Knight heal everyone?

Boom! Another [Rain of Flaming Spear]!

‘Ding! Player Dominating Blade has died!’

‘Ding! Player Floating Up has died!’

‘Ding! Player 7 Feet Boobies has died!’

That attack had killed off every single player from the Mercenary group.

However, the problem was not solved just yet. The summoned 100 monsters still remain even after the Mercenaries were defeated. Soon, every single monster turned around and set Zhang Yang as their new target to be destroyed.

Damn it! What a drag!

20 to 30 monsters were not a problem for Zhang Yang to control. But when the numbers increased to 100 and more, Zhang Yang was drowning in monsters like a drop of sugar among ants. With the monster all over his back and front, his shield defense lost its meaning. Every attack was around 300 and more!

Sigh.

[charge]!

Zhang Yang started to attack the monsters. He cast [thunder strike], followed by a [horizontal sweep]. Countless of ‘-284’ and ‘-1,600’ damage texts popped out. Zhang Yang then used [block] to give himself a little room to breathe and the reflected damage text popped out endlessly. On one hand, the boss was not chasing after him. Without the need to go closer, the boss could still hurt him since [Rain of Flaming Spear] had a massive attack range.

The moment Zhang Yang had dealt with the surrounding monster, another batch came flocking in. Zhang Yang tried his best to move around, to try and make the monsters to flock together into a cone shape so that he could at least try to bottleneck the monsters. However, no matter what he did, there were just too many to lure! If he were to expose his back for even a second, he would not be able to heal back the lost HP! There were many ‘-1!’ damages but also a lot of damages that exceeded 200!

Luckily the monsters had only 3,500 HP maximum. Since Dominating Blade and his war buddies had damaged them a little, Zhang Yang could wipe them all quickly after recovering his HP with [berserker’s heal]. Zhang Yang stopped killing when he had made sure that the remaining monsters were around 20 or so. Zhang Yang changed his target and started to hack and slash at the boss.

The remaining 20 monsters followed Zhang Yang while still hitting on him endlessly. With many ‘-1!’ damages Zhang Yang received, he was healing 100 HP all the way happily.

Finally! Zhang Yang gleefully screamed in his heart. He was able to solve that problem.

50%, 40%, 30%, 20%!

From the looks of it, Terpot Ryhar only had two skills, [Rain of Flaming Spear] and the [summoned servant]! If he had only used the massive AoE attack over and over, he would be the undefeatable boss Zhang Yang had ever faced so far. Lucky for Zhang Yang and bad luck for Terpot Ryhar, the boss had also used the [summoned servant] to “help” Zhang Yang turn the tides of war!

15%, 10%, 5%!

“We’re finally here!”

Huh?

“The system had not announced anything yet! The lease is definitely still there!

“Look! There’s someone fighting there!”

“Go! Go! Go! Kill the boss and get that lease!”

Among the chattering, it looked like there were 60 to 70 players that just arrived to this floor. Following closely behind were many more players that were bottlenecked at the entrance!

“Take a look! The boss has only 4% left!”

“Haha! The timing was just right for us!” Humbly Gentleman laughed. “Brother! Get the boss! Get the lease! The Dominators are the strongest!”

“OOOOOOOOAHHHH!”

“Go.” Sky Shaman on the other hand commanded his team calmly.

Snow Seeker was smiling on one end thinking, “Zhan Yu... Indeed you have proven yourself as the best fighter there is. To think that if we had arrived just a few minutes later, you would have gotten your hands on the lease! What a shame!”

She immediately contacted Zhang Yang via the voice messenger.

At the same time, the boss unleashed a wave of raining spears!

‘-2,000!’

‘-2,000!’

‘-2,000!’

...

Everyone received a devastating damage.

Zhang Yang was not afraid of them coming in to KS1 the boss. He was more concerned about the [summoned servant]! Right now, there were so many players that just arrived. If the boss used [summoned servant] now, it would definitely spawn a large swarm of skeleton monsters. When the players would be killed off, who will the skeleton monster target next? Even if Zhang Yang did everything that he could, he would still be trampled alive by the sheer number of them!

Zhang Yang picked up the call. “What can I do for you, guild master

Snow?”

“I’ll be direct. We will help you to block the other players here to buy you some time. In return, I want my guild to have a part of the [Land Lease]!” Snow Seeker offered him a bargain with hopes that someone as smart as Zhang Yang could accept. Unless Zhang Yang was a GM2 of this game, he could not survive the attack from all 3 super guilds at the same time! Even so, there were no GM in this game in the first place!

Without showing any sign of slowing down, Zhang Yang laughed and replied. “Guild master Snow, I suggest you’d better withdraw from this floor! You could at least still save some repairing cost!”

“What are-“

Boom! Another wave of [Rain of Flaming Spear] came down and caused a chaotic scene among them.

“What the hell? Did the boss just use another ulti?”

“Damn it! Heal me now! I only have 346 HP left!”

“Go back! Go back to the entrance! Wait until the boss is finished with his ulti and then we’ll come back around!”

“Stop your bull crap! By the time we wait until the boss finishes his ulti, he will be dead! Just rush in and kill the boss! The skill will stop when he’s dead!”

Some people were just being a Captain Obvious. The skill will stop when the boss is killed. That seemed natural. But could they even come close? Even the Mercenaries could not get close enough and died midway, how could a mediocre “elite” team from 3 super guilds handle the pressure?

“Rise! My slaves! Fight for your master!” When it all came down, the boss used the one skill Zhang Yang feared the most.

The field was instantly flooded with countless of skeleton monster that started to swarm the guilds.

Boom! Another wave of flaming spears! Just in the nick of time!

‘Ding! Player MahGroin has died!’

‘Ding! Player Stormbringer has died!

‘Ding! Player Annie RU Okay has died!’

...

A series of system notification flooded the channel.

Zhang Yang did not pay any attention to them. He continued to concentrate on killing the boss

2%!

1%!

8,123!

By the time the boss hit 1% HP, everyone was either healing on one side or running around like a lunatic on the other. The situation was chaotic! The Skeleton monsters formed a brigade that looked like a swarm of hornet. Wherever it went, no one would survive! Just in a little time, all 3 super guilds were completely killed!

Thousands of skeleton monsters turned around and started to “buzz” towards Zhang Yang!

Crap!

5,612!

4,130!

With only a drop of blood left to kill of Terpot Ryhar, the swarm of monsters had arrived and flooded Zhang Yang.

[shield wall]!

[merlinda’s shadow]!

3,413!

2,348!

1,345!

713!

124!

O!

‘Ding! You have successfully killed Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar! Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points!’.

Thud! The boss dropped on the floor. Zhang Yang did not stop. Swiftly, he took all the loots and shoved them into his inventory without even glancing at any of them. He did not even notice a black glowing orb that was among the loots.

‘Server Announcement: Congratulation! Player Zhan Yu had obtained the first [Land Lease]! The battle of Underground Tower is now concluded! All monster respawn rates in the tower will return to its normal rate!’

Victory!

[shield wall] ended after 10 seconds and Zhang Yang started to receive damage faster than a minigun could fire! Zhang Yang become a hero just by enduring a few seconds in the last scene!

‘Ding! You have died!’

Zhang Yang let out a long sigh of relief. He then released his soul from the body and was sent to the nearest graveyard. He was not alone there. There were many players around who were still wondering how did they perished!

“Zhan Yu.....” Snow Seeker contacted Zhang Yang again. “I had never thought that you could still grab the lease when its completely chaotic down there!”

“Haha! Guild master Snow should not be that disappointed. This is not the only lease in the world you know! There will be a chance for you to have them as well!” Zhang Yang consoled her. Zhang Yang was not bluffing. In his previous life, Crimson Rage had obtained many land property in the past and one of them was on the hotspot, right in the center of Crimson Sky City where its true value would be shocking to know.

“Hehe! In that case, you would not mind that if you would hand over the lease to us! We will return you a lease the next time it’s available!” said Snow Seeker while wearing a playful smile on her face.

“Huh? Hello? This is odd. Why can’t I hear anything? Hello!! HELLLLLLOOO! Guild master Snow! Are you still there?”

“ ... ”

Zhang Yang ran to the entrance of the Underground Tower. Without any command prompt window, he felt a sudden jerk and was revived immediately on the spot.

“Luckily I had managed to prolonged my death for a little longer! Or else, I had to run all the way down again to collect my goods!” That thought alone sent shiver down his spine. To think that he had to go through the sea of monsters again, he could actually feel sick!

Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castle. It was already morning by the time Zhang Yang was done with the tower. Zhang Yang immediately logged off.

ARGH! HUNGRY! TIRED! SLEEPY!

1KS – Kill Steal. A term used by most MMORPG gamers whenever someone else come to deliver the last killing blow to the monster that he or she were killing first. In most games, the last hit was the determining strike that will have the player who strike the last blow to have the most benefits. Other player might be able to steal the other players’ monster’s loots by delivering the last hit.

2GM – Game Master. The administrative personal of the game itself. They have complete authority over the game and can basically do anything they want.

Chapter 129: Little Merchandize Shop

Zhang Yang slept throughout the entire day and had only woken up after 7pm. After having his dinner, Zhang Yang turned on his computer and visited the official site to find out the aftermath of his feat. However, before he could even click on the forum link, he saw an update notice on the official site home page.

What was happening?

The update patch was only supposed to be implemented on 13th of August! There was still 5 months' time!

Zhang Yang felt a sudden omen. He must have done something to this timeline. It was probably affected by yesterday's feat when he solo killed a boss and obtained the Beyond Perfect score.

According to the summarized notice, the first patch update did not have much changes. It had several changes to the warrior, especially Guardian skill update.

"1. [block] skill cool down has increased from 10 seconds to 15 seconds! Every successful [block] instant would grant 30 Rage points instead of 10 Rage points!"

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes in frustration. Just like that, the officials had nerfed his OP skill to become a trash! What a shame! If only this patch would only be implemented 5 months later, Zhang Yang would still have been able to perform better feats. It was probably due to his superior performance that forced the officials' hands to launch the patch.

The Rage generation was improved but even so, the number of [block] instances for Zhang Yang, or anyone else for that matter, had been reduced! So, what if the system increased the Rage points by 20? It was still useless!

"2. [force strike] cool down time increased from 1 second to 5 seconds!"

Again! Another major nerf!

Unlike Hunter or Thief, a Warrior's Rage gauge would depend on

attacking and receiving attack to refill. That was why in boss fights, whenever the boss struck the Warrior, the Rage will be filled up at a faster pace, allowing them to use [force strike] to properly spend off the remaining Rage after using other skills.

“3. [shield wall] cool down reduced from 10 minutes to 7 minutes!”

Ah! Finally, a buff! After maxing the skill level, the cool down should be reduced down to 2 minutes! This would help a tank’s survivability in battles! This buff was quite strong. Probably the system was trying to balance out the major nerf.

The other patch note was about combat behavior.

“1. Increased battle realism. A “Knockback” effect is added. The knockback effect and distance would be determined by strength of each side of the battle.”

This would mean the stronger player would be able to knockback a weaker player by a certain distance. Before this, battles would look like two stick man fighting each other stationary.

“2. Anti-Disturbance Protection. Physical contact between players could only be established between friends. Players who are not added into the friend list would be alerted with a system notification. The player being touched without consent will be allowed to lodge a complaint to the system. Depending on the level of the offense, the offender would be locked in the main city’s jail. The duration would range from 10 minutes to 3 days depending on the offence. Any Thief under [stealth] would be automatically revealed once they have made contact with another player.”

This update must be targeted to players like 44 Bandits. That sly bastard had dug his own grave. He had always been misusing [stealth] to sexually harass other female players around.

“3. Dungeon refresh rate adjustment.

5-man dungeon Normal Mode: Unlimited entry.

5-man dungeon Hard Mode: Once a day.

10-man dungeon all difficulty mode: Once every 2 days.

20-man dungeon all difficulty mode: Once every 3 days.

50-man dungeon all difficulty mode: Once every 7 days.”

“4. Auction House service charge has been increased from 10% to 20%!”

Bullshit! What is this? Daylight robbery?! Before Zhang Yang could continue to rage on, he remembered about the lease he obtained and breathed a sigh of relief. Luckily, I would not have to face this kind of problematic situation!

“5. All high-level equipment would only display the equipment effect and sockets available after successful item identification.”

Sigh! Another way for the company to make money!

For example, the [Combined Elemental Shield], if Zhang Yang had not identified it, it would look like this.

[Combined Elemental Shield] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +200

Vitality: +80

[unidentified]

Level requirement: 20

You can hire an Identifier to have the equipment identified and the sentence “Equip Effect: Increase [block] skill by one level” would only appear and be applied. If you did not identify the equipment, you could still equip it. However, the special effect would not be in effect.

Black-Steel, Green-Copper tier equipment do not have special effect. Special effect would be available from Gray-Silver tier and onwards. Even if there were no special effects on the equipment, there were still the sockets there. The company could earn a massive fortune just when the number of player would increase to millions.

“6. Status effect skills would now have no effect on the boss. However, status effect skills could possibly interrupt the boss’ casting.”

Oh! Another buff! A boss could not be stunned by [charge] but now, the boss could be interrupted when using a skill.

“7. Damage reduction recalculation. All damage received would first be reduced by the Defense or Magic Resistance, and further reduced by skills or passive skills.”

Crap! A nerf! If a monster had 2,000 damage, a player had 400 Defense, with a 20% damage reduction skill... The previous calculation was $(2,000 \times 0.8) - 400 = 1,200$ damage received. After the patch, the calculation would be $(2,000 - 400) \times 0.8 = 1,280$ damage received. The higher the Defense, the higher the effect.

“8. Inventory adjustment. To help save inventory space, every item group has been increased from 20 to 200 items count per stack. “

“9. Players killed in PK would not drop levels, they would only have all their collected experience point cleared. Red Name penalty would not have their levels dropped whenever they are killed, instead, the drop rate of the equipped equipment is increased to 100%.”

If a Level 29 player with 34% experience points was killed, the player would still be Level 29 but the experience point would be 0%. No matter how many times the player was killed, they would still be at Level 29. However, the Red Name penalty has been lightened. What a pity. If only this new update was implemented in his previous life, the player Endless Starlight would have raged, quit the game and deleted his account.

“10. Removal of Deathmatch in battle arena.”

Without the thrill of dropping a level, Deathmatch would be meaningless.

“11. [provoke] effect adjustment. The current effect was to force the monster to attack the caster for 2 seconds while copying the monster's previous attacking target's 99% aggro value. (If the aggro value was higher, the copy effect would not be implemented). Monsters that could not be affected by [provoke] would remain un-provoked.

This was a huge buff for a party with 2 tanks, or more. This was

especially useful for a boss attack.

With so many changes in a time, Zhang Yang had to spend some time to digest everything. After a while, he went to the forums and found a complete chaotic mess. Players were mainly focusing their complaints towards the increased service charge for the auction house. Everyone was insulting the company for being a gold-digger. Some players mentioned that without the players' massive support to the game, the game would not have its current popularity. They even mentioned that the company had been ungrateful, that they were also being overly greedy to even chop off the players' limbs for their own profits!

However, no matter much the players complained, the officials did not care. Zhang Yang understood it better. Sooner or later, the players' rage would die down. Just like the situation in his previous life, players could complain all they want but no matter how much they hated the implementation, they could not leave 'God's Miracle' for other game after being immersed for so long!

What a greedy company!

Zhang Yang cursed as he put on the gaming helmet and logged into the game.

Just when he logged in, he was bombarded by his gang.

"Ayy! Noob tank! How long did you plan to sleep!?"

"Dumb Yu! Sleepy hog!"

"Little Yang, did you have a threesome last night? No wonder you had just logged in now! It must have been a tiresome night I reckon!"

"Zhan Yu! You're awesome! You could even raid the entire Underground Tower alone!"

Zhang Yang laughed as he replied their private message one by one. No long after, he summoned his Skeleton War Horse and rode to the Property Manager NPC.

He took out the [Land Lease] and handed it over to the NPC.

“Hmm... This has been identified. It’s authentic!” said the NPC, Count Boggart as he flipped the lease back and forth.

“Right, the property would be yours for only 20,000 gold coins!”

“What? I would still need to pay?” Zhang Yang stared with his eyes wide open. Zhang Yang had not known about it since he had never owned a property before.

“Of course! Any transaction within the Empire has to be enumerated! What do you think this is? An under-table transaction with a private owner? Hehehe... that is an offense that could send you to jail. No, probably execution by beheading!” said Count Boggart while whickering his little mustache.

Oh well. It was just 20,000 gold coins. He could just earn that money back at any time he wanted to. However, he did wish that his money was for a hot spot instead of a rundown town!

Zhang Yang paid the sum, and the NPC snorted and stamped a seal on the [Land Lease].

‘Ding! Congratulations! You have obtained: Property!’

Zhang Yang frantically took the paper and read it. The initial paper that had only two words [Land Lease] written on it now had a complete paragraph of words. The lowest part of the entire paper had the property’s location.

White Jade Castle!

Zhang Yang was extremely delighted to see those three words! As long as he was getting a land in a main city and not somewhere far in the outskirts.

Zhang Yang exited the Property Manager building and rode to the location of the lease.

Almost there!

Zhang Yang rode for around 10 minutes and arrived at a 2 story elegant building that was as wide as 3 houses. Zhang Yang examined the paper

and the house's lot number and got happy again when it matched each other.

Ta Ta Ta. Not long after, a player, two players... more and more players walked passed by like a busy street. Zhang Yang turned around and saw that the building he was opposite to was the auction house!

JACKPOT!

Zhang Yang had always known that the first [Land Lease] was extremely valuable. But he had never known that the developers would be so kind enough to have his first property to be set directly opposite the popular auction house!

This was the best of the best of all locations ever!

Zhang Yang was so happy that he could just flip over. He got down from the mount and unsummoned it. He walked with heavy step into the very first building he now own.

'Ding! Player Zhan Yu had entered the property. Initializing Tutorial!'

'Ding! Player Zhan Yu, do you wish to set the building properties? You could have the building set to be: Shop, Repair Store, Hotel, Restaurant. Do you wish you set?'

"Yes!"

'Ding! Please determine the building properties!'

"Shop!"

'Ding! Please input your shop name!'

"...Little Merchandize Shop!"

'Ding! Little Merchandize Shop has been completed. Current level: 1. Sale item count: 1,000. Next level: Sale item count: 2,000. The first floor will be available. Upgrade cost: 100,000 gold coins!'

'Ding! You can now add items to the shop for sale. Please set the price for the item to be sold. The Shop inventory and the player personal storage can be identified.'

‘Ding! Advise to have valuable items to be displayed on the Display Desk and the other items to be in the item menu!’

‘Ding! Advise to hire a [Maid] to manage the shop! You can select the [Maid] from the Property Option, Shop Option window.’

‘Ding! This concludes the tutorial. You can open the Property Option, Help, for further information! Good luck!’

In regards to setting up shop, Zhang Yang was bewildered. He tried and opened the Shop Menu window and selected to add items for sale. He then threw every Green-Copper equipment in his inventory into the menu.

The item price could be set to a fixed value like a shop in reality. He could also set the item to have a bidding value. He must have a fixed selling price but he could choose to not set the maximum price.

The ground floor was already designed to be just like a super market. There were aisle and racks around to have items placed on them. The items placed here could be viewed instantly so Zhang Yang had reserved them for rare and valuable items, while the rest of the items were set to be viewed in a menu like the auction house. You could key in words to search and locate the item.

A shop is like the combined version of a store and an auction house.

1Buff – Here in this context, a buff is an action that depicted a skill being strengthen. This term is not to be confused with the buff in the game when a player would cast a skill to grant a beneficial effect.

Chapter 130: A Challenge of Sword and Fire

Needless to say, items that should be placed in the display board should be the Gray-Silver equipment!

Zhang Yang had turned into a man of fortune. He had obtained plenty of Gray-Silver equipment from the Underground Tower. Even if he had kept some away for his gang, there were still plenty more that he could place at the display board to attract attention.

Others would definitely see it, but they might not be able to buy it. However, they would be intrigued to know what else inside that they could buy!

At least, Zhang Yang no longer needs to set bottles after bottles in the auction to sell them off. Now, as long as he set a fixed price in the shop, players could buy the desired amount of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. The shop will automatically restock the item from his storage to be sold! This was much easier than buying and selling from the auction house!

Zhang Yang opened the Shop Assistant menu and viewed its selections of helpers. There were many characters available for him; from man and woman, to humans, elves, dwarf, and also beastman. Pity, there were not any Gnomes around. Those little devils were the best at making money!

So far, the current male players in the game far exceed the number of female players. Zhang Yang then picked the first option, to remove all male, beastman, dwarfs and plain looking females. The selection was reduced from over 100 to only 20 options left. Zhang Yang carefully selected one by one and finally decided on a maid. A cool, beautiful, and sexy looking human girl. Her chest was so pointy that they could just pierce through the outfit and reveal two small dots!

It's decided! Zhang Yang would pick this one!

[Natalia] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 50

3-size: 34D – 22 – 33

Personality: Cool.

Service fees: 1,000 gold coin / month

Zhang Yang confirmed his selections and 1,000 gold was taken away. A white light flashed and Natalia appeared in front of Zhang Yang. She bowed down and greet him, “Master.”

When she bowed, the ultra-low-cut of her maid uniform dropped and accidentally (or was its intentionally) revealed a large portion of her pale white breast. Zhang Yang could clearly see her two ginormous melons as if they were shoved right into his face. When she stood back up, her breast bounced and jiggled a little. Extreme virgin killer, to be honest.

Zhang Yang placed Natalia to stand at the front entrance of the shop. A cool, sexy girl in maid uniform. How often could you see that in the street?

He then announced his shop in the local channel. “Today is the launching day of Little Merchandize Shop! Come at once if it’s convenient! If it’s inconvenient, come all the same! The shop is located directly opposite of the auction house! There will be a beautiful girl to welcome you to the shop! Today is a special day! You’ll get a special 20% discount!”

When the announcement was released, it captured many players’ attention; especially those who were close to the auction house. They walked over since they were so close and had nothing else to do. It was not like they would be forced to buy anything at all, there was definitely no harm in going.

Truthfully, Zhang Yang did not need to make that announcement. Natalia alone was sufficient enough to attract many male players around. Humans were indeed a funny being. Once there was a person standing there staring at the sky, and more people joined him to stare into the sky without knowing what to look at. Yet this little shop had something to look for, and that was Natalia, the sexy maid.

There were players who just stared from outside. Some entered the

premise. Zhang Yang was not worried about his items not being able to attract the customers. As for security, it was impossible for any thievery to occur within the premise since there was the system protection. You would have to digitally buy the equipment to be able to have it.

Zhang Yang opened his inventory and found out there were still plenty of battle loots from the Underground Tower. He had forgotten to take out the rest of the item when he took out the [Land Lease]. As for the last boss, Terpot Ryhar dropped plenty of items. There were at least 14 pieces of Green-Copper equipment and 4 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. There was only 1 Gray-Silver equipment he could use. The remaining items were a skill book and a piece of Alchemy recipe.

[Heart of Fallen Warrior] (Gray-Silver, Accessory)

Use: Increase your Defense by 2,000 points. Last for 15 seconds.

Cool down time: 5 minutes.

Level Requirement: 40

Finally! A decent item!

In 'God's Miracle', a character may equip the following equipment: Helmet, Necklace, Cape, Body Armor, Gloves, Pants, Boots, 2 Rings, Weapon, and 2 Accessories.

Weapon and Accessories were special.

Weapons could be categorized to one-handed weapon, shield, two-handed weapon, staff, and ranged weapon. A character may equip two pieces of one-handed weapon at the same time, but only one piece of two-handed weapon, staff, and ranged weapon. A Thief for example, could equip a one-handed weapon as his primary weapon slot and a shield as his secondary weapon, just like a Guardian and Defender. Only 1 Two-handed weapon, staff, and ranged weapon could only be equipped at a time.

Accessories were special. Accessory does not provide any bonus attribution, such as Dexterity, Strength, Vitality, and so on, but it does contain a special effect. The one that Zhang Yang had just obtained, [Heart of Fallen Warrior] was commonly called an Active Accessory. The

player would have to manually activate the skills that the accessory provided. Merely putting it on or off would not have any effects on the character. On the other hand, there were also some Passive Accessory, such as the effect, “Equip-Effect: Increase all attack or Healing effect by 5%”.

Accessories were equipment that would only appear in the late-game period. They were extremely rare. Level 40 accessories should be the game’s lowest and easiest accessory. There were a majority of players would still be wearing a Level 40 accessories when they reached Level 200 because of the rarity. Accessories were only dropped by field raiding bosses such as the Underground Tower with 13th floors or the Cave of Bones.

[Skill Book: Apparate]

Use: Teach you [apparate].

Required Class: Spellcaster.

This is a must-learn skill for every PK Spellcaster. The character would be able to instantly move 10 meters into any direction and dispel any status effect such as stun, bind, slow, and other various debuff. This skill was a rare drop.

So far, there were no Spellcasters around that learned the skill yet. None of them truly understood the value of this skill. Zhang Yang then preemptively set the price to 10,000,000 gold coins to attract customers.

[Recipe: Beginner Iron Skin Potion]

Use: Teach you how to make [Beginner Iron Skin Potion]

Requirement: Advance Alchemy

Good item! Zhang Yang took the item for himself and learned it.

[Beginner Iron Skin Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increase 100 Defense points for 30 seconds.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

It was a good item, but the ingredient and material to make the item was just too much. It even required an extremely rare herb called [Iron Cane]. It was so rare that you could not even buy it with any money that you would have!

Just leave it aside for now.

Zhang Yang smiled satisfyingly and left the shop to meet up with Han Ying Xue. They party then went on and raided the Shadowmoon Castle's Garden dungeon. After that, the party proceeded on and gathered more guild members to raid Marzerway's Lair: Main Wing, and was able to procure a little more Gray-Silver equipment.

Everyone was going crazy when they saw Zhang Yang had the [Servant: Clear Lotus] and the Yellow-Gold equipment; especially Fatty Han. He was so impressed that he could make a river with his drooling.

The Level 20 Gray-Silver equipment from the Main Wing were sold out to the guild member via the guild contribution points. On the other hand, the Level 30 Gray-Silver equipment were prioritized to the gang. If there were equipment that were not suitable for any of them, Zhang Yang would sell the item at his shop and the profit will be shared among the 6 of them.

Not only was he able to fill up the empty spaces in the shop, the money that he obtained from the sales was not deducted by the system. It was a better advantage than Zhang Yang had expected.

"Dummy! I haven't seen you for a day and yet here you are a shop owner!" Han Ying Xue winked seductively at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed and replied, "Haha, what's wrong with that? You want to be my muse?"

"Kekeke! You've learn to flirt now! Looks like the little doggy has turned into a fine doggy!" Han Ying Xue winked again.

"Please stop! Please act your age, cousin. I'm so ashamed to even walk with you!" Wei Yan Er gritted her teeth.

After raiding two dungeons, Zhang Yang had but little time left. He then

put some effort to make more [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to sell them in the shop. So far, Zhang Yang was the only player who could supply the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] in White Jade Castle. Even though the sales had dropped, the market was still stable at around 30 stacks of potions sales a day. Zhang Yang predicted that it would not go any lower than that. 600 gold coins a day was not that bad. Since there was no more stock in the auction house, players would have to visit the Little Merchandize Shop to buy the potions. This was one way to bring in more customers to his shop.

Before he logged out, Zhang Yang calculated the total earnings for just one night. He sold 17 Green-Copper equipment, 3 Gray-Silver equipment, and 387 bottles of potion. His total earning was 2,700 gold coins. It was much lower than his previous earning during the peak sales period, but Zhang Yang was not frustrated since the sales was going to be never-ending. Plus, the popularity of his shop should be getting higher over time, and by then, he should have more customers. By that logic, his sales should also be better than ever.

The main benefits of selling in the shop was the absence of the 20% service charge. He could sell items cheaper than any item being sold in the auction house and still earn a profit. For example, if an item was sold for 100 gold coins in the auction house, Zhang Yang can sell the same item for 90 gold coins in his shop. The other seller would have 20 gold coins deducted by the service charge, and earn only 80 gold coins for selling at 100 gold coins.

If Zhang Yang encountered other 'Gnomes' business players, he could still buy an item for 81 gold coins that was worth for at least 100 gold. Since those 'Gnomes' could supply a large number of stocks in a go, although it was only 1% profit charge, 1% service charge was still a large number!

Just like when Zhang Yang was selling massive amount of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], the service charge has already taken over 40,000,000 dollars!

Zhang Yang arranged a few matters with Natalia and set the price for

the several items to buy from players themselves. She was then tasked to approach passerby to promote some items to be sold. Anyone would be thrilled to have a lovely little maid striking a conversation with them. Zhang Yang then deposited 10,000 gold coins for the shop's purchasing funds and logged out to have his rest.

After a good night of sleep, Zhang Yang was finally free from the discomfort of staying overnight. He felt refreshed and revitalized. He spent an hour or so to exercise, and then he then logged into the game after having his breakfast.

Zhang Yang need not worry about the shop. He only needed to occasionally check on the shop's funds to make sure it was enough to buy more items from players. Eventually, the shop would progress better and the funds would no longer decrease but only increase.

'Ding! Player Dominating Blade has sent you a friend request. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment. He then recalled that he had turned off private messaging from strangers. If anyone wanted to contact Zhang Yang, they would have to engage him face to face or become friends with each other.

'Accept!'

Beep! A voice call request from Dominating Blade arrived.

The setting for the voice messaging could be toggled as so: Those who were closer to him would be set to immediate contact without the need to wait for the other party to accept the request. He had set it that way for Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang. They could just yell at him anytime and anywhere without any permission. Anyone else, Zhang Yang had set that they would have to wait for him to accept their call, like a cell phone, to be able to have a conversation.

"Dominating Blade, is there anything I could do for you?" Zhang Yang accepted the call.

"Hehe! We met you yesterday but could not engage in a proper

introduction. You know, you are quite famous among our Fire and Sword group. Could I interest you in a match at the battle arena?” Filled with a dominating tone, he requested Zhang Yang through the call. After yesterday’s incident in the tower, neither one of them were satisfied with the result.

Zhang Yang delayed his respond and answered nonchalantly. “I accept! However, a fight alone is just boring. How about we bet something for it?”

“What do you like to bet on?”

“Just a small thing to heat things up a little. One round, 1,000 gold coins!”

“Done!”

“Alright! Let’s meet up at the arena in about 5 minutes!”

Zhang Yang ended the call and rode his horse to the area.

The battle area was the best place to release one’s frustration. It was also the place where famous players were born! The game would document every player’s battle record and display the player with the highest victory rate. Before the launching of the Professional League, this list represented the PK player’s strength.

However, to prevent players from abusing the system ranking, the system would not record any battle that was pre-arranged by the player. Only through registering their fights by the system, and the system would arrange a random player by their strength, would only be recorded into the system.

However, this could not 100% prevent players from finding a loophole. At least this way, they could prevent two Level 10 players to have 100 matches every day and be listed in the top ranking. However, there was no special reward from being in the top. Even if you could get yourself up to the number 1, no one would acknowledge your strength.

Zhang Yang immediately received Floating Up’s battle request once he arrived at the battle area.

“44 Bandits and Not Telling My Name has lost to you before! They’re out of the fight! Healers are not a combative character, so they are out as well. What’s left is the 6 of us. There’s something I have to request of you personally. As long as you can defeat all of us, we will admit your strength and our weakness. We will never again accept any business regarding your death!” Dominating Blade said with a strong voice.

“Alright. I accept your promise.”

Zhang Yang was always worried about the “Trash” Mercenary group. Right now, the difference in ability between him and them were miles apart. However, these group of people were extremely strong as they learned and progressed faster than anyone. If its lv1, he strongly believed he would never ever lose of any of them, but what if they would ambush in a party of 5? Or the entire group of 10?

To be always in the grudge of others was not a wise move! Since neither side had any grudge nor vengeance to resolve, there was no need to have them fight to the death! If he could solve this problem now, why should he not take the chance to do so?

Zhang Yang accepted the battle request.

‘Ding! You have accepted player Floating Up battle request. The battle will start after 5 minutes, please make your preparation!’

1Gnome: This part here is rather confusing. The author did not specify whether it was either a race of the player character or just a general term used to describe a player who is good at doing business.

Chapter 131: Two down

Both sides placed their bets of 1,000 gold coins and waited for the bells to ring.

With each team having famous players, spectators were already gathering in the arena. However, when they wanted to enter the arena to spectate, the room was locked with a password. They could only ask around, waiting for someone to reveal the password to enter the arena.

The password was placed by Floating Up, fearing that they may face public shaming if either one of them loses the fight, or so Zhang Yang thought.

5 minutes passed like the wind and both contenders entered the battle field. There was no one around the arena aside from the remaining 9 members of Sword and Fire Mercenary group.

‘Ding! The battle will start in 10 seconds!’

[Player: Floating Up]

Level: 34

HP: 4,560

9,8,7,6,5,4,3,2,1,0!

Clang, Clang, Clang...Boom! The steel cage dropped behind them.

Shiing!

Floating Up glowed with a yellow golden light and there was a shape of a battle axe icon on his head. It looked like he gained a buff.

[Commanding Seal]: Every melee attack will inflict additional 30% melee damage as Holy Elemental damage. Last for 30 seconds.

He then dashed towards Zhang Yang. When he was 15 meters away from him, Floating Up stomped the ground hard and tossed his shield towards Zhang Yang.

[shield toss]!

‘-1!’

A nullified attack damage popped over Zhang Yang’s head.

[Shield Toss]: Throws the shield in your hand to cause 100% physical damage to the target and 2 other nearby targets. Inflicts a 50% movement speed reduction. Last for 3 seconds.

Floating Up was wearing a complete Level 20 Gray-Silver equipment, so his Strength should be around 220. Even of the set-equipment effect would increase his attack by 10%, it would only be raised to 250! Zhang Yang equipped the [Bones of the Chimera], which made his Defense to be up to 360 points. Floating Up damage was unable to break his defense and could only inflict a nullified damage value. However, Zhang Yang was still inflicted with the slow effect.

Floating Up was not surprised of his nullified damage, since he had crossed blades with Dominating Blade once and had the same effect. However, Zhang Yang’s equipment was not weaker but only stronger!

Shush! Zhang Yang rushed in with [charge] and stunned his opponent.

He then ran behind him and attacked him normally, followed by a [horizontal sweep].

‘-644!’

‘-1,313!’

Defender had 15% damage reduction passive skill but would still be in effect even when an enemy attacked from behind.

[blood rage] +30 Rage!

‘-1,325!’ [destructive smash]!

2 seconds later, Floating Up recovered from the stun and consumed a bottle of healing potion. He then turned around to face Zhang Yang but only to find Zhang Yang following his back like a shadow. Zhang Yang swung the sword in his hands and dealt another attack on him.

‘-656!’

Floating Up now realized that the opponent's ability to reposition was much better than his. If this dragged on, he would be played around by Zhang Yang, only to be killed. Without hesitating further, Floating Up activated a skill. A flash of golden light beamed out and Zhang Yang was stunned.

[Sanction]: Punish the target, stunning the target immediately. Last for 5 seconds.

Skill range: 15 meters.

This skill's advantage was that the caster did not need to face the target directly to activate!

Similar to Zhang Yang's strategy, Floating Up went behind Zhang Yang and sliced Zhang Yang's back.

'-453!' Normal attack.

'-150!' [commanding seal].

'-501!' [strong hammer].

'-290!' [justice bash].

'-827!' [judgement].

Defenders and Guardians possess a different kind of system. A Defender did not need any Rage. They could cast the skill at any time they wanted as long as the skill was not on cool down. Additionally, majority of the Defender's attacking skill was Holy element, which could not be reduced by Defense value.

Floating Up stomped the ground and activated [devotion]. A golden light spread out and Zhang Yang started to receive 20 damage every second.

After a series of skill, Floating Up had to rely on normal attacks while waiting his skills to finish their cool down.

'-458!'

'-153!'

'-462!'

‘-149!’

5 seconds’ stun ended!

Zhang Yang had 3,000 HP shaved off by Floating Up. The moment he got control of his character, he quickly turned around and faced Floating Up directly. His skills was ready to be unleashed when his Rage gauge was already full.

‘-1,322!’ [destructive smash].

Floating Up wanted to learn from Zhang Yang, to follow someone’s behind like a shadow and to kill him that way. But that was just a beautiful wish that could never be granted. Before he was even able to react to Zhang Yang’s attack, Zhang Yang had already smashed him to have only 1,500 HP left. Zhang Yang attacked him another round and was left with only a drop of blood from death.

Floating Up quickly reacted and activated [divine protection] and [holy restoration].

[Divine Protection]: Dispel all negative status effect and grant immunity to all attacks. All damage output and healing will be reduced by 50%. Last for 5 seconds.

Cool down time: 7 minutes.

[Holy Restoration]: Fully restore all of the caster’s HP.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

Shiing! Floating Up had recovered all his HP in a second and also gained immunity to all attacks.

Zhang Yang only grined. After moving himself repeatedly, Zhang Yang was now behind him. This time, Floating Up could not cast [sanction] to counter him as the skill still had 45 seconds of cool down time!

Zhang Yang waited until the immunity expired and then attacked him slowly.

Floating Up tried his best to move around faster than before, but no matter how fast he moved, he was unable to shake off Zhang Yang. He

could only hope to deal damage to buy some time for [devotion].

‘-671!’

‘-1,341!’

‘-656!’

.....

One by one, Zhang Yang struck him as if there was nothing Floating Up could do to stop Zhang Yang. Eventually, he was killed.

“Damn!” Floating Up could not help but leave a curse at his death bed.

‘Ding! Player Floating Up was killed. You have obtained victory!’

A flash of light passed and Zhang Yang was sent out of the battle ground.

What a pity. Floating Up may have damaged Zhang Yang by 3,000 damage but he could not force Zhang Yang to use any of his skills: [berserker’s heal], [shield wall], [Servant], [lifesteal] skill from the sword, and [merlinda’s shadow].

There was no one from this current timeline had the capability to even be on par with Zhang Yang!

They would need at least train hard for at least until half a year later, to have their skill sharpened to its best.

Victorious, Zhang Yang had obtained the 1,000 gold coins from the bet and thought to himself. “If I could earn 1,000 gold coins for every battle I fight, I could earn quite some money there!”

‘Ding! Player Dominating Blade has sent you a battle request. Will you accept it?’

After Zhang Yang accepted the request, the battle was announced on the announcement board. However, the room was locked with a password. Players from outside were not able to enter the room to spectate the match. Many of them were already frustrated by it.

“Not bad.” Dominating Blade sent a private message. “Alright. Just this

match. The rest of them won't be fighting! They are all weaker than I am. Since both of us are Guardians, if I lose to you, the rest of them are not worth to be your opponent."

Zhang Yang smiled. "I listen and obey!"

5 minutes later, both of them were teleported into the corner of the battle ground.

10 seconds count down started and the battle began.

Both fighters dashed towards each other and once they were close enough, they activated [charge] at the same exact second, causing both Dominating Blade and Zhang Yang to be stunned.

2 seconds later. Both of them raised their sword and simultaneously struck each other! They were like a mirror image of each other!

[block]!

'-139!' Zhang Yang's [block] reflected damage.

[block]!

'-1!' Dominating Blade's [block] reflected damage.

How could both side's [block] reflected damage could have such high difference? On one end, Zhang Yang had a higher Strength and Defense value. The most important factor was Zhang Yang's [eagle eye] that could ignore 50% defense!

"Eh? Do you have a passive skill that could ignore defense?" Dominating Blade brandished his sword as he asked.

"Yeah." Zhang Yang nodded and swung his sword as well.

'-526!'

'-272!'

Dominating Blade was wielding the exact same sword as Zhang Yang but the damage done from both sides were so much different from each other!

When one was at the disadvantage of equipment and skill,

maneuverability and tactics were depended on to overcome his opponent! However, could Zhang Yang's capability lose to Dominating Blade?

Before this, Dominating Blade always relied on his equipment and skill level to win a fight against others. But now, his opponent was Zhang Yang, who had better Strength, higher Defense, stronger equipment, and crazy amount of skills! Dominating Blade could not help but feel a little bitter. He wanted to say his catch phrase to Zhang Yang, as he always said to others: "If you have the capability to wear the same equipment as I am, then you have my permission to fight me!"

But with the huge gap in power, Dominating Blade had already lost more than 3,000 HP when Zhang Yang had only lost 1,700 HP. Zhang Yang had not used his regular play style, to hide behind the opponent's back and attack him there. Without a skill like [sanction] Zhang Yang could torture him as much as he wanted to.

Dominating Blade started to flinch. He knew this battle was going south. He then quickly activated [shield wall] and fought Zhang Yang head on. Until [shield wall] expired, he activated the sword's [lifesteal].

Zhang Yang grinned. He used [block] to block off one attack and activated [shield wall] after.

[block]!

'-68!'

'-134!'

In 3 attack instances, one was blocked. The total damage Dominating Blade had dealt was only 200 damage. He had only healed 50 HP since he had the [destructive smash] effect on him!

Dominating Blade was so frustrated he was not sure whether to cry or just give up the match!

Zhang Yang unleashed a fury of attack and ended Dominating Blade's life before he could decide to do anything.

...

“Boss! You’re quite strong you know? You could last for 40 seconds! That’s much longer than what Floating Up could get!” All Wounded laughed.

Floating Up was enraged at his joke. “Hey! At least I managed to deal 3,000 damage! Dominating Pig here had only deal 2,000 over, you want to compare my ass then?”

Dominating Blade smiled bitterly. “He must have held his punches when he was fighting with you! Floating Up, he didn’t used [shield wall] when he was with you!”

After a temporary silence, 44 Bandits spoke.

“Are we going to reject every contract for him?” said 44 Bandits with a tone of disappointment. After all, Zhang Yang’s head was worth 10,000 gold coins a kill. It was so much more than any other contract that they had ever received. Now that the system had implemented the new system, that kills would not cause a level drop, clients wanted the snapshot of the scene where Zhang Yang was killed. They wanted to use it and post it in the forums to demolish his reputation.

Dominating Blade suddenly went pale. He turned to 44 Bandits and said, “We had accepted two contracts to kill Zhan Yu. But how did that turn out again? Right. You and Not Telling My Name dropped a level!”

Floating Up solemnly said, “Our group strength is strong, but Zhan Yu also had a team. He even had an entire guild backing him up! If we ever cross paths again, he might turn it around and kill us all. His capabilities are just...”

All 10 members of the Sword and Fire Mercenary group turned sour.

They had never been afraid of any super guilds. ‘God’s Miracle’ map was so god damn huge! How could anyone find them? They could just be hiding behind any tree or cave! As long as they were alive, they could just wait for the perfect moment and strike you down without you knowing it! Their controls were strong, equipment as well! The worst-case scenario, both of them would die!

But, Zhang Yang exceed them in every way they could think off. How could they even hope to attack him, much less kill him?

“There won’t be a next time for us. We will no longer bother him ever again!”

Chapter 132: Invitation from Snow Seeker

Ah! What a waste! Zhang Yang had only earned 2,000 gold coins!

Zhang Yang sighed a little. He thought that he could have at least earned a little more before they gave up. Oh well, since they did forfeit their challenge, there was nothing else he could do. Zhang Yang summoned the mount and rode to his Little Merchandize Shop. From afar, he could see that there were at least 20 players in the shop, checking out the goods.

“Not bad.” Zhang Yang nodded.

Outside the shop were a few nerds surrounding Natalia. They would not stop peppering Natalia with questions. Natalia answered each and every question coldly. Her cool, devil-may-care attitude was truly impressive. She could make that bunch of lonely nerds drool all over the street.

Sigh...what losers. They would even try to flirt with an NPC!

Beep!

The voice messenger rang. Zhang Yang glanced at the notification and saw that it was from Snow Seeker. He accepted the call without hesitation.

“Guild master Snow, is anything the matter?”

“Nothing...Why can’t I simply talk to you when you’re free?!” Snow Seeker voice was neither soft nor sugar coated. Her voice was something Zhang Yang could not properly determine. It was on a borderline of between direct and kind. It was somehow enticing, subconsciously convincing another to have a longer conversation with her.

“Of course you can!” Zhang Yang did not bother arguing. He knew that man will always lose to a woman in an argument.

Snow Seeker giggled playfully. “I merely jest. Indeed, I have some matters to tend with you. The reason I’m calling you was that I’d like you to help us, the Crimson Rage, to fight a boss!”

Zhang Yang was stunned by her sudden request. “Haven’t you guys

already beaten the Garden before? I remember that you even managed to break the speed record!”

“No. I mean...It’s not a dungeon boss! Y-You have your own team. How could I ask you to waste your entrance count on us!?” Snow Seeker wavered a little. “It’s a field boss. Yesterday, we spent a whole day just trying to take it down. We suffered several complete wipe outs for at least 30 times!”

“Oh ho...” Zhang Yang raised an eye brow. He was interested at where this conversation was going. A dungeon is always there, always available. The refreshment period of the dungeon was short and quick. Anyone could form a proper party to raid the dungeon whenever they wanted to. That was why, even though dungeon loots were strong, they were never as strong as the equipment found on a field boss! There could be only 1 or 2 of them in an entire region. If someone else kills it, there won’t be another one replacing it anytime soon. The items that could be found from this field boss were extremely rare. Zhang Yang’s mount, [Skeletal War Horse] was one of such.

“What’s the boss name?”

Snow Seeker smiled. “If I tell you that now, you might take advantage of us. Who knows? You might even wait until every one of us is dead and claim the boss loots for yourself?”

“Hey!” Zhang Yang cried out defensively. “Do I look like that kind of person?”

“You’re not. But as they say, you can’t judge a book by its cover. Humans are just wolves in a skin suit.” Zhang Yang could hear pain in her voice. She quickly laughed it off. “How about it? Will you lend us a hand? As a reward for your help, I will give you one item from the boss loots. I will even let you have the first pick!”

Zhang Yang started to think. He recalled the scene yesterday when every other guild were there to kill the boss for themselves. Snow Seeker on the other hand, had approached Zhang Yang to ask for cooperation instead. From a Guild master’s perspective, that was a rather bold move.

No matter. This is a kind gesture. A favor to be precise. That said, Crimson Rage is a strong guild now and will be even more so in the future. If he could get on their good side now, it would only benefit him and his guild, the Lone Desert Smoke!

Zhang Yang made his decision on the spot. He nodded. "Okay. I'll help. Recruit me!"

Snow Seeker immediately sent over a party invitation. Zhang Yang was added into the main party once he accepted the invitation.

In 'God's Miracle' the party member limit could reach up to one thousand. Within the huge party, 50 members would be compartmentalized as a subgroup. There would be a total of 20 subgroups. In the party list window, those subgroups looked like a series of chain webbing. You could click the name of each group to see a party of 50 players inside. Each subgroup would have their own communication channel. They could also be able to listen to the main party communication and see any announcement made there.

Crimson Rage's expedition party had 13 subgroups, with a total of 637 members. Zhang Yang entered the party and was immediately assigned to be in the first party with Snow Seeker.

Zhang Yang briefly scanned the area and found that all 49 members were female, by IGN at least. He was the only one that stood out among the crowd.

"Everyone, please welcome Guild master Zhan Yu!" Snow Seeker announced in the party channel.

Not long, a continuous chain of greetings in the form of chirps and shrill cheers broke through the air. They came in varying tones, cold, sweet, a little overtly excited, and a little monotonous. No matter the tone, all he could hear was the slightly higher pitched voices of females. Zhang Yang had thought that he had fallen into the Themyscira, the Amazonian island of Wonder Woman. He could not help but think that if other male players had joined Crimson Rage's party, they would either be high in ecstasy or be completely femininized by them on the other end of the same scale...

“Attention. From now on, only subgroup leaders are allowed to use the public channel, the rest of the member are only allowed to communicate within their own subgroups! Let’s proceed. Just like we did yesterday! Spread out, and rendezvous at the Bison’s Hill!” Snow Seeker laid out her instructions clearly and full of commanding aura.

Zhang Yang joined Snow Seeker and her team and gathered at the Gryphon Manager. Some of his team members were familiar faces. There was Thorny Rose, White Orchid, and Perfumed Water. All of them made up a party of 10.

When Zhang Yang joined the girls, he was greeted by the rest but was insulted by Thorny Rose.

“Hmph! Bloody Swindler!” It was hard for her to forgive him.

Zhang Yang curled his lips and defended himself. “Well. Technically, I didn’t rob of you of anything. In fact, you were very much on the winning side there. For your information, 2 pieces of [Refined Iron Ore] could be traded for more than 70 pieces of [Iron Ore]!”

“What has that got to do with you running off with our [Iron Ore]s!” Thorny Rose was frustrated. She jumped up angrily, causing her 34D huge boobs to bounce up and down vigorously.

Zhang Yang sighed. “Didn’t you say it yourself, that you will not resort to sexual appeal whenever you lose in an argument against me! I’ve got to warn you though. I don’t have much resistance against that!”

Thorny Rose was even further infuriated. With one hand on her waist, and the other pointing at Zhang Yang, Thorny Rose held her chest up high. She was fuming mad.

“That’s enough Rose. You’re being fooled here. You’ll fall into his trap if you’re angry!” Snow Seeker laughed lightly as she pats her shoulder.

“Sister Snow! I really hate that guy!” Thorny Rose rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

“Alright, alright. Let’s go!” Snow Seeker cried. “Fly to Goodlands Town!”

Everyone sat on the Gryphons and flew off. Along the way...

“...Fei Fei, the guy that you met yesterday. How did the date go?”

The party channel started to filled with the idle conversation.

“Sigh...the guy is another big pervert. He would even get busy with his hands while we were watching the movie!”

“So Fei Fei, did you give him a good slap in the face?”

“Coral. It’s not like you didn’t know. Our Fei Fei is also a big sl*t, born to ride that stallion. She could do it forever till kingdom comes!”

“Damn b*tch! How could you even come up with such a description of me like that!”

“You stupid swine! Don’t keep those obscene thoughts to yourself!”

“Honestly though Fei Fei, did you really go twenty toes with him?”

“Yeah yeah! Say! Say! What happened?”

“I mean. What can I do? He wanted it. He took the shot! I’m not the kind that would say no, so yeah. We did it!”

“Hehehehe. How was he? Was he good?”

“Ehhh...He looked good, but he wasn’t that good in bed! I must say, he was so horny in the car. It was like he was so dry. I was thinking that he probably haven’t been with a woman in his past 8 lives! That guy got on me and was done before I could even feel anything at all! I had to go back home and do it myself. Sigh...”

“That’s right! Hah! Might as well get a vibrator than a boyfriend. Am I right?!”

“Hahahaha!”

“AHEM!” Snow Seeker purposely coughed loudly as she could no longer hold in her shame. “Girls, I’d like to remind you that we have a guest here!”

Only then did the girls lower their voices. Eventually their whispers turned into full conversations again. Zhang Yang could make out words

like “length”, “size”, and “endurance”. Even Zhang Yang began to tremble at the power of a woman’s dirty talks. Once these women were brought together, they could just go on and on about any topics at all. It is no wonder that two women could just talk for an entire day!

The Gryphons’ speed were fast but even so, they took almost half an hour to reach their destination. Afterwards, they walked into the depths of the mountains. All subgroups of the party were beginning to converge there. The numbers started to grow as more and more groups arrived. The entire plain was filled with women’s chattering. There was a sense of power among the girls.

Even as a Guardian with super high defense, Zhang Yang knew that he could not withstand the number of lashes and heart piercing talks from the girls here. He lowered his head and followed Snow Seeker obediently like a dog and his owner.

As they proceeded further into the mountains, the region name changed from Goodlands Town to Bison’s Hill.

Bison’s Hill was pretty straightforward. There were Wild Bisons everywhere. However, no matter how ferocious they looked, they were just puny little calves from the girls’ perspective. There were even several girls there voicing out that they want to cut down the Bison’s horns, saying that they were better at performing compared to certain adult body parts. That topic alone induced a vigorous power among the girls.

The expedition took another 30 minutes to reach the peak of the mountain. The surface of the peak was extremely flat and wide. It felt like the peak was sliced away by someone else. The place was as huge as the football fields you see in the FIFA world cup! This field had a 10-meter tall and 1 meter wide stone pillar struck in the middle of it. On the top of the pillar was a gigantic humanoid monster sleeping on the flat surface of the pillar. It’s entire body was covered in pieces of grayish rocks. There was moss grown all over the rocks on his body. The giant rolled over and a gigantic arm dangled from the edge of the pillar. It was as long as 10 meters!

The monster was sleeping soundly. Its snores were so loud and powerful that the nearby sand and rocks were rolling back and forth with each breath.

Zhang Yang selected the monster and examines its properties.

[Chalvos, King of the Mountain Giant] (Silver-Gray, Elemental Being)

Level: 40

HP: 50,000,000

Note: He was a King. But he got exiled when he has lost the fight for the true King's position.

Zhang Yang had never fought this boss before in his past life. But he did once fight another King of the Mountain Giant! That was a level 120 Mythical tier boss! One strike could kill you several times over! Every attack he has was imbued with AoE damage and Knockdown effect! A true party killer!

Zhang Yang turned to Snow Seeker. He knew that they had died over 30 times and must have a clear understanding on every skill the boss had.

Snow Seeker smiled knowingly back and said, "This is Zhan Yu's first battle! I will now repeat the attack plan! This boss's attacks are simple. He would either strike the target or stomp the target. Either way, both of his attacks has the same effect. Direct attacks would deal around 4000 physical attack, which would create a shockwave, causing 3000 physical damage to targets within 35 meters. It would also cause a Knockdown effect which would cancel spells or skills casting."

Strong!

Spellcaster, Hunters, ranged attackers could only have a maximum 30 meters attack ranged. Healer also had a 30-meter healing range. If anyone wanted to heal or attack, they would have to enter the boss's blast wave range and take 3000 damage. On top of that, it was a AoE skill. This would inevitably end up with a huge mess. The boss also had the ability to interrupt skill casting. If the healers were interrupted, the tank could be killed instantly!

Chapter 133: King of the Mountain Giants

The special feature of a field boss was that they had at least one powerful AoE skill. Even if there was a sea of players coming to kill him, they would be killed off with a clean sweep! The key to victory was not about the number of players!

“Zhan Yu will position the boss dead center in the field. The rest of us will spread into a circle. The first 50 attacking will attack within the 30 meters’ range. The healers will form another circle 20 meters behind the first circle to escape the boss’s attacking range. The first group of attackers will surely die as the healer will be unable to heal in time. Once the first team is down, I want the second team to take over the line. Do not break the chain!” said Snow Seeker’s beautiful voice echoed clearly in the party channel.

“Fragrant! Petal! Both of you are in charge of healing Zhan Yu personally. Bitter Coffee, your team will stay behind and heal Fragrant and Petal. You must not let them die!”

“Yes Ma’am!” said the female army in unison.

Zhang Yang turned around and saw two human Sacred Knights standing behind him. Both of them were quite beautiful. Fragrant Baby was slightly taller than Little Petal. However, both of them were very well built. Their waists were slim and slender. Their butts matched the size of their breast, both pairs were full and well developed.

Zhang Yang checked their properties and was surprised to see them.

[Player: Fragrant Baby] (Sacred Knight)

Level: 32

HP: 4320

MP: 1520

[Player: Little Petal] (Sacred Knight)

Level: 31

HP: 4260

MP: 1510

Both of them had such high HP! They must have added all their AP (Attribute Point) to Vitality! There was no way they could have more than 4000 HP when their equipment was only level 20 Gray-Silver tier! Their MP was at 1520, that's just too little!

The most orthodox method to build a Magic class character was on a ratio of 3 AP on Vitality and 2 on Intelligence. The other common method was 2 AP on Vitality and 3 on Intelligence. If they had followed the orthodox way, they would have around 3600 HP maximum with their current equipment. Unless they had somehow managed to boost their HP, there was no way that their HP would exceed 4000!

Zhang Yang had to open his mouth. "As expected of the infamous Crimson Rage super guild. You have all sorts of dedicated builds here!"

Magic type classes all depended on Intelligence. Now that those two guys had sacrifice that and had invested all their AP in Vitality, they must have a tough time grinding their level. In order to level up properly, they would have to depend on others to, in a way, donate experience points. However, it looked like their levels were rather high. It must be the work and dedication of their guild!

Snow Seeker smiled gently. "We have many types of healers here with special builds. There are the full Vitality builds, but we also have full Intelligence builds and also full Spirit builds. All these are designed to handle different types of situations!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head, acknowledging her ideals. This was how a guild performs. How could you ask someone to give up on their plans and to invest in this sort of unorthodox, highly risky build? However, this was still the early stage of the game. When players start progressing further, the weapon levels will go higher, thus providing more bonus attribute. The bonus attribute could get so high that the attribute invested by the free AP would be negligible. You could even stock up all your AP without investing them and you'll get 1500 AP when you reach level 300. That amount was

nothing compared the attribute points gained from equipment!

Still, right now, those two had only over 1500 MP. How are they going to last?

Frowning over their stats, Zhang Yang stared back and forth between the girls and Snow Seeker.

Somehow, she knew what Zhang Yang was thinking about and answered him. "They have [grace]!"

[Grace] (Passive): Recover MP every time you receive healing. Convert 10% of the healing amount to MP.

[grace] is a skill that only Sacred Knights could learn. This skill was not obtainable from the class quest, but through skill books. According to the early designs of the game, this skill was made specially for Sacred Knight. Since Sacred Knight is a class that depended on both Vitality and Intelligence, their MP and HP could not be as high as the other class. Originally, their MP would not last after a series of skills. How else to replenish their MP, but need to acquire this skill and have others healing them.

What a heavy expense!

Zhang Yang sighed mentally. [grace] skill books were extremely rare, yet both of Crimson Rage's Sacred Knights were able to procure these skills. They must have a certain amount of strength to do so! The skill does not shine really well in normal fields. However, now that they could fight bosses like Chavos, this skill has become their ultimate weapon!

Argh! A guild's power sure are strong!

Zhang Yang had to praise her. "Guild master Snow, you sure have a full head of ideas huh!"

Perfumed Water smiled slyly and said, "Hehe! Our Sister Snow here indeed has her head full of ideas. But you know what else is full and huge? Her tits!"

"Perfumed!" Snow Seeker uttered a rather cute squeak. She was so

abashed that her cheeks turned pink. Normally they would have made similar jokes amongst themselves and Snow Seeker would not have anything against that. However, now that there was a male around, she was embarrassed beyond words.

Little Petal started to laugh. “Brother Zhan Yu! Our Sister Snow is still single, and ready to mingle. We could help you pull some strings and set you up on a date! Sister Snow is a lady among ladies! Not only that she is beautiful, she was also very smart and brave. She is the perfect wife any man could have!”

Once by one, soon the entire party started to talk up Snow Seeker to Zhang Yang. The scene was like several sales promoters in the supermarket, trying their best to get you to buy their product. In this case, the thing that they were selling was none other than their own guild master.

“Please...STOP...” Snow Seeker quickly stopped the scene before it could get any worse.

“Please get ready for the fight now! Take your potions!”

She turned over to Zhang Yang; he could still see some pinkish hue on her cheeks that had not faded away. “Zhan Yu, everything is in your hands now! Yesterday, we were wiped because Fragrant and Petal were interrupted during their healing. The tank was killed instantly which eventually leads to a team wipe!”

Zhang Yang nodded his head. “I understand. I will do my best!”

“Prepare yourselves! We are starting now! Healers! Team 1 attackers! In your positions now!” Snow Seeker then gave the signal to Zhang Yang and he nodded back.

“Here I go!”

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Lover’s Sword and dashed towards the boss.

1 meter, 2 meters, 3 meters,...10 meters...20 meters!

Still, the boss remained asleep! Even when Zhang Yang was already so

close to him, he was still snoring happily.

[charge]!

Zhang Yang slid across the ground and stunned him.

Unfortunate, the boss was not stunned. Instead, he merely stood up. His gigantic body was so tall that it looked like he was touching the sky!

Chalvos looked down at Zhang Yang and bellowed. "Who dares disturb Chalvos's slumber! Chalvos will destroy him!"

"-688!"

Zhang Yang swung his sword in answer and raised his Rage to 41 points. Both [Cripple Defense] and [horizontal sweep] were cast simultaneously. The boss's defense was so strong that Zhang Yang had to stack up 5 [Cripple Defense] to see how he could damage him.

Crimson Rage's first attack team got into their position. After an instant, fireball, frost arrows, arrow heads were raining down on the boss.

The boss growled loudly and stretch out his arms to grab the pillar.

Crack! Boom! Chalvos pulled the pillar out of the ground, sending tiny broken pieces of debris flying everywhere. Some of them hit Zhang Yang armor, bouncing off with metallic "Ding Ding Tang!" chinks.

The boss then swung the pillar around like Sun Wu Kong and his golden staff, smashing Zhang Yang with its edge.

"-2912!"

The pillar struck Zhang Yang hard, at the same time giving off a strong shockwave that emanated everywhere. The first attacking team was hit by the waves and received 3000 damage each.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

All players within 30 meters around the boss had fallen down, revealing their hidden regions out to the sky as skirts bunched up and legs spread eagled! The healers outside the main circle was healing as hard as they can.

“Hahahaha! Now I have something to play with!” Chalvos laughed menacingly.

Zhang Yang had received around 3000 damage in an instant, causing his Rage gauge to fill up instantly. With a swift stroke, Zhang Yang quickly converted all that built up Rage into damaging skills.

[Cripple Defense]!

“-314!” [Cripple Defense].

“-1610!” [horizontal sweep].

“-764!” [force strike].

“-224!” [thunder strike].

Since Rage was currently not a problem for him, he could just spam all his skills without worry.

“+1022!”

“+1034!”

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal’s heals had landed on Zhang Yang. As Sacred Knights, they had stronger healing in terms of single target. Even though they only had around 500 magic attack, they could heal over 1000 HP by casting [holy light] which took a mere 2 seconds each! That was even stronger than Han Ying Xue’s healing capabilities!

Chalvos’s attacking speed was not fast nor frequent. He only lifted the stone pillar after 3 seconds and struck Zhang Yang’s head with it.

[block]!

Zhang Yang immediately used [block]. Since he had equipped the [Combined Elemental Shield], [block] skill level had dropped down to level 9. The cool down was at 6 seconds!

Boom!

Even though Zhang Yang had blocked the attack, the attack could still generate the shockwave that exploded everywhere and caused everyone around to fall over.

Both Fragrant Baby and Little Petal fell, but they quickly got up and recast the healing spell to heal Zhang Yang.

Chalvos was laughing happily as he saw the players around falling over. Zhang Yang had deduced his laughter to be as innocent as a child playing with a dog. He then lifted the pillar and struck Zhang Yang like the game, whack-a-mole.

This time, Zhang Yang had no [block] to use. He quickly rolled over and evaded the attack!

“-2112!”

Thud!

Even though he was able to avoid the attack, the shockwave was generated and knocked him off his feet. Zhang Yang leaped to his feet as swiftly as he fell and quickly attacked the boss.

Zhang Yang had managed to stack 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] but the boss' defense was so strong to begin with, that it still had a Defense value measuring over a hundred. Hunters around the boss were having a headache but the Spellcasters were not affected.

Chalvos attack pattern was indeed quite simple and straight forward. He would use the pillar to smash and the shockwave would knock down players around. Zhang Yang could endure the attacks but the attacking team could not. Even though they had a team of healers supporting them, eventually, they would all still perish after 1 or 2 turns of smashing.

Zhang Yang continued to slashed the boss as he talked to Snow Seeker. “Why didn't you recruit just a few elite attackers instead of a whole team? They could last longer if all the healers here were only focusing on a few of them instead of 50?”

“It's too slow! The fight will be dragged on for too long. The tank might not be able to last the whole fight!” Snow Seeker replied quickly.

That explanation didn't seem to make sense to Zhang Yang. The boss' attacks occurred once every 3 seconds. His [block] cool down was 6 seconds, which would enable Zhang Yang to properly block off half of the

assault. The remaining attacks would not be a complete hit either! Zhang Yang would only receive damage from the shockwave instead. 2000 damage was not that much, and 6 seconds was a luxurious time for the healers to heal him back!

As if he wanted to further confuse Zhang Yang, Chalvos smashed Zhang Yang once with the pillar and suddenly lifted a humongous foot, and brought it down on his head. Almost like a mountain dropping on his head, Zhang Yang felt a huge pressure crushing his skull.

Chapter 134: Collapsed and Crushed

Zhang Yang had just used [block] three seconds ago, and there was no way he could evade that giant foot, so he simply had to take the full blow!

Time froze, as he did some quick calculations in his mind.

His Max HP was 5,780 and 2,112 HP had already been deducted as he received damage from [shockwave] earlier. He had 3,668 HP remaining. If Chalvos' attack did 4,000 base damage points, The damage Zhang Yang going to receive would be around 3,000, so he could withstand that foot just fine, even if it was cutting a little too close.

But to be on the safe side, Zhang Yang still drank a bottle of health recovering potion and instantly, his HP rose to 4,668.

‘-2912!’

Chalvos' giant foot landed on Zhang Yang, and a huge damage text floated above his head, along with a debuff icon!

[collapse] : You were stomped on by Chalvos! All your armor was completely destroyed. Increases all damage received by 100%. Last for 10 seconds

Crush!

Zhang Yang immediately said: “Guild master Snow, why did you not mention this debuff from Chalvos!” Zhang Yang had defeated the Mountain Giant in his previous life, but there was nothing like this debuff!

“Ah, I forgotten!” Snow Seeker apologetically covered her mouth with her tiny hands, her eyes full of genuine remorse.

Oh god, this woman will be the death of me!

This time, [shockwave] occurred yet again during the [stomp]. Those who had landed on their butts not a moment ago, were hit by [shockwave] again before they could get up! The interval between the two [shockwaves] was just around one second and the damage inflicted in total was about 6,000, instantly killing a lot of players!

Luckily, Fragrant Baby and Little Petal had ten healers continuously healing behind the two of them. With their abundant HP and equally abundant healers, they survived the ordeal! However, they missed out on so many healing opportunities! They got knocked down, and got back up, and got knocked down again! It was just like the song "Tubthumping" by Chumbawamba!

Boom!

Chalvos swung at Zhang Yang with a pillar once again.

‘[block]!’

This time [block] was used promptly without delay which gave Fragrant Baby and Little Petal enough time to cast healing spells.

‘+1020!’

‘+1031!’

Zhang Yang’s HP recovered up to 3,807.

“Little one, I’m going to crush your bones!” Chalvos laughed out loud, he raised the pillar and swung at Zhang Yang yet again.

Without a doubt, this time Chalvos would actually kill Zhang Yang! As Zhang Yang had a debuff, increasing all damage received by 100%, even a [shockwave], would cause at least 4,000 damage points to Zhang Yang. Once the tank dies, the whole team would be annihilated completely!

No wonder Crimson Rage was annihilated more than 30 times yesterday. When tanks encounter this situation, tanks would usually use lifesaving skills to buy some time. The problem was, how many times could the tank use such lifesaving skills?

Zhang Yang rolled aside once again to evade Chalvos’ attack, activating [shield wall] at the same time.

‘-1056!’

Terrifying! Even though Zhang Yang used [shield wall], he still received at least 1,000 damage from Chalvos’ attack!

‘+1021!’

‘+1029!’

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal healed Zhang Yang steadily.

Boom!

Three seconds later, Chalvos attacked once again with a pillar.

‘[block]!’

‘+1024!’

‘+1033!’

Hu! Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief, finally, the debuff on Zhang Yang’s body had expired.

However, Snow Seeker’s brow was furrowed! As far as she knew, there were only two lifesaving skills for Warrior which was [shield wall], used once every seven minutes, and [berserker's heal], used once every two minutes. In addition to that, the lifesteal effect of Lover’s Sword could be used once every three minutes.

After going through many times of annihilation yesterday, she knew very well that Chalvos’ [collapse] occurred as frequently as every minute! Under those circumstances, the most reasonable skill sequences used by tank should be:

- 1 [berserker's heal],
- 2 Lifesteal effect of Lover’s Sword,
- 3 [berserker's heal],
- 4 [shield wall]
- 5 [berserker's heal],
- 6 [lifesteal] effect of Lover’s Sword,
- 7 [berserker's heal],

If no mistakes were made in this sequence, they could actually survive for seven minutes!

Crimson Rage could roughly reduce Chalvos' HP by 14% every minute, which gave them a high chance to defeat Chalvos!

However, once [shield wall] is used first, they could only survive for four minutes! After four minutes, they would definitely be annihilated completely!

Certainly, this was only a theoretical scenario! In fact, if they made a slight mistake, it could cause the whole team to wipe out as well. They spent an entire day trying to defeat Chalvos, and the best record they manage was only five minutes as somewhere, somebody, or something would make a mistake, leading to the eventual collapse of the entire party!

This was why she invited Zhang Yang as their tank against Chalvos, and she was greatly impressed by Zhang Yang's tanking ability!

"Forget about it, I should be blamed as I had never mentioned the sequence, he'll figure it out himself the next time!" Snow Seeker said to himself.

99%, 98%, 97%... Although the party was huge, only about 50 players could deal damage at any given moment. Besides, they were constantly knocked down. This greatly reduced the total DPS, with most of the players only able to use four to five skills before being killed off!

10 groups of damage dealing teams lined up one after another, each team containing 50 members. It was like an assembly line of attackers, whenever the damage dealing team at front line is killed off, another damage dealing team would replace them. The dead members would resurrect at the graveyard, recuperating. The distance between this place and graveyard was quite far, so these 10 groups of member were functioning in an endless cycle, 9 groups of member either dealt damage or were in the midst of running back after resurrecting, with only 1 group of member remaining in the graveyard to recover.

However, in this game, the durability of equipment would decrease by 10% each time a player dies. So, when a player has died ten times, then the durability of equipment would almost be gone and they would need to search for a blacksmith to fix their equipment! When each team having

died more than 10 times, it would cause their damage dealing to be reduced even further, unless they have second equipment set!

A minute later, Chalvos' HP reduced by 14%.

‘[block]!’

Zhang Yang raised his shield to withstand the pillar hurled by Chalvos towards him. [shield bash] immediately activated at the moment of impact.

‘-607!’

After applying 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense] on Chalvos, Zhang Yang's damage dealing skills were maximized!

Chalvos roared loudly, suddenly lifting up his giant foot to stomp on Zhang Yang.

‘-2912!’

Zhang Yang instantly received huge damage, at the same time, once again receiving a debuff from [collapse]!

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal were interrupted when they cast healing spell half way, they both fell flat on their backs, their skirts slipping up to reveal their pink undergarment as well as their slim, fair legs.

“Hahaha, I had fun playing with you guys!” Chalvos laughed out loud, once again knocked over with pillar!

Even if Zhang Yang evades the direct blow and merely takes damage from [shockwave], with a debuff increasing all damage received by 100%, and with his current remaining HP of 2,868, he could have died even if he drank a bottle of +1000 HP recovering potion!

‘[berserker's heal]!’

‘+5780!’

Zhang Yang instantly recovered to full HP, at the same time rolling aside to evade Chalvos' attack.

‘-4224!’

A stupendous damage text carrying a ridiculous number floated above Zhang Yang's head!

'+1023!'

'+1031!'

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal had finally cast healing spells on Zhang Yang, relieving Zhang Yang's urgent need of HP recovery!

'[block]!'

'+1025!'

'+1037!'

Three seconds later, Zhang Yang's [block] cool down timed up, giving the Sacred Knights time to heal him.

'-4224!'

The debuff of [collapse] had finally worn off, and Zhang Yang immediately drank a bottle of health recovering potion, recovering his HP to 2,448.

They survived Chalvos' [collapse] once again!

They continued fighting and reduced his HP.

85%, 84%, 83%... Chalvos' HP reduced at snail's pace!

After [block]'s cool down time was amended, tanks were forced back to the ear when they needed to anticipate a boss' actions before deciding to use [block], otherwise, the one second duration of blocking frontal attacks from the enemy would be wasted! However, Zhang Yang started this game earlier in this life, except for him, no other Warriors ever enjoyed one-second duration of blocking frontal attack from the enemy, so it did not matter whether he used to it or not.

Still, how the [block] was used would actually reflect the differences between an excellent tank and an ordinary tank. Zhang Yang always used [block] just right in time without wasting a [block]. Therefore, he also saved a lot of room for the healers to cast healing spells and subsequently

reduced the possibility of the tank getting knocked down which could lead to the demise of his team!

72%! They had lasted 3 minutes!

Zhang Yang used [block] once again to dodge Chalvos' attack. But at this moment, Chalvos lifted up his giant foot again!

'-2112!'

'[collapse]!'

[shield wall], ready! [berserker's heal], ready!

Lifesteal effect of Lover's Sword activated!

Once again, they got through the third time of Chalvos' [collapse] thrillingly!

At the third minute, [berserker's heal] cooled down completely and they got through Chalvos' [collapse] once again.

At the fourth minute, Chalvos' HP remained at 44% and the fifth occurrence of Chalvos' [collapse] was coming!

Snow Seeker could not help but sigh. At this time, all of Zhang Yang's skills were not ready, how could he possibly survive this?

Despite her slight disappointment, she was still full of admiration towards Zhang Yang. From the beginning till now, except for Zhang Yang's skill sequence was incorrect, he performed perfectly in all aspects, he never wasted his [block] and every round he only absorbed the damage from [shockwave] which greatly eased the pressure for healers to perform healing!

In comparison, Crimson Rage's main tank, Little Apricot, was not that strong. First of all, her [block] cool down time was longer than Zhang Yang, besides, she could not successfully block frontal attacks from Chalvos every single time, nor could she reduce damage by taking the [shockwave] instead of the direct hit. Thus, contrary to the seven minute scenario Snow Seeker had calculated, Little Apricot usually dies within two to three minutes.

Hu! Chalvos raised his giant foot and stomped on Zhang Yang once again.

‘-2912!’

Boom, stone and mud flung to the air, Fragrant Baby and Little Petal’s healing spells were interrupted and both of them fell on their bottoms!

Chalvos waved the pillar in a wide, unstoppable arc towards Zhang Yang!

Health potion! [merlinda’s shadow] summoned!

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

Zhang Yang’s HP instantly increased to 4,868!

‘-4224!’

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

[merlinda’s shadow] was impervious to all forms of damage and debuffs. She casted three healing spells and recovered Zhang Yang’s HP bar to full.

‘[block]!’

[merlinda’s shadow] stayed on for 10 seconds, so they easily got through Chalvos’ [collapse]!

“Zhan Yu, what skill is this?” Snow Seeker gawked with her eyes wide open. She was not the only one. The rest of the members were shocked at both Merlinda’s great healing spells and her plump bosom!

“Hehe, secret! It is a secret!” It was better not to reveal his trump card. Zhang Yang immediately smiled and said.

“Stingy!” Thorny Rose said angrily.

“It doesn’t matter if I’m being stingy or generous, it’s as long as we can fight against Chalvos!” Zhang Yang replied Thorny Rose.

I don't owe you anything and you are always trying to get on my nerves, if I really got angry someday, I'm going to mark you with a circle and cross!

Thorny Rose could not help but stare down at her chest, the corner of her mouth twitched a little!

Chapter 135: Loot distribution

... The fifth minute, Zhang Yang activated [berserker's heal].

... The sixth minute, the Lover's Sword [lifesteal] was activated!

... The seventh minute, once again [berserker's heal] was activated!

3%!

Chalvos had 150,000 HP remaining! After getting through the latest Chalvos' [collapse], the whole team broke out in cheers, with victory in sight!

2%!

1%!

There was a sudden change! Chalvos' body released a red aura, his grayish white colour body turning into bloody red colour.

'Ding! Chalvos is enraged! All damage increases by 200%!

"F*ck!" Zhang Yang scolded, this Chalvos had such a violent death throe! He was planning to drag Zhang Yang along!

Fortunately... [shield wall] was ready once again!

[shield wall] activated!

'-1728!' A huge damage text floated above Zhang Yang's head.

All around, every member who stood within 30 meters away from Chalvos instantly died as '-9000' damage texts popped up on their heads.

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal responded quickly, activating [sacred protection] simultaneously like synchronized divers. Two semi-transparent, golden hued barriers surrounded them. They were now immune to all sorts of damage and debuffs but their healing effect was now reduced by 50%!

'+502!'

'+512!'

The next damage dealing team in line immediately moved up, replacing the dead team.

However, the range of Chalvos' [shockwave] was 35 meters. They needed to run 5 meters in to strike Chalvos. Hunters with high Dexterity attributes could make it less than a second but Spellcasters needed at least one to two seconds to make it. They also they required a casting time in order to deal any damage, and if they came in at the wrong time, they would be killed before dealing any damage!

After Chalvos performed another cycle of AoE attack, the second group of damage dealing team were all annihilated once again while the first group of damage dealing team had only just resurrected and were recuperating. The group prior to that had just reached the end of the damage dealing queue. Snow Seeker hurriedly commanded the freshly killed team to start heading to the fight immediately. There was no point in recuperating any longer. With Chalvos killing them all with a single hit, there would be no difference between 1 HP and full HP anymore!

During this time, Chalvos still retained 29,000 HP!

Three seconds later, the latest attackers had reduced Chalvos' HP to 20,000 but were also wiped out in the process!

Fragrant Baby and Little Petal died after their [sacred protection] effect ended.

The fight went on, and Chalvos was barely alive, at 9,000 HP

However, there were no attackers around! They had been killed faster than they could return to the fight, with the closest team 15 seconds away.

Snow Seeker anxiously yelled, "All healers come forward and use spells to attack!" Because it was pointless to keep the healers at this moment, it was better than nothing if they could cause even 100 points of damage!

The field instantly became a very gory scene, with Sacred Knights and Priests moving forward one after another. They could only use a [Punishment Ray] or a [sacred blast] before they died screaming.

Chalvos still had 3000HP remaining.

‘[shield wall] ended!’

[Servant: Clear Lotus] was summoned and Zhang Yang activated [substitute].

‘Immune!’

‘-9000!’

Although Zhang Yang had evaded the pillar itself, the [shockwave] still came for him and Clear Lotus was needed to take that damage. As soon as she died, the invincibility quickly ended.

But Zhang Yang had just bought himself another 3 seconds to strike the boss!

‘-1575! [horizontal sweep]’

‘-845! Normal Attack.’

‘-821! [force strike]!’

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Chalvos! Obtained 416,717 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

‘Bang!’

Chalvos the giant’s corpse crashed onto the ground and the battle had come to an end!

Hu! Zhang Yang’s heart nearly leaped out from his chest, that was way too close!

“We have killed Chalvos the giant!” Less than ten survivors cheered in excitement.

After a while, everyone had regrouped, the huge lady army fully assembled again.

The atmosphere was truly joyous, with all the girls were dancing and hugging each other, and Zhang Yang was dragged into the crowd, pelted with kisses and assaulted with hugs. His anti-harassment system alarm went off like sirens! At this point, ‘God’s Miracle’ had programmed it with equality in mind, so that both female and male players were protected by

the anti-harassment system!

This gang of perverted girls!

Zhang Yang could not help but cry. He has not kissed anyone since his rebirth, and here he was, having his first, second, third and hundredth kiss robbed from him!

However, this event was indeed a good cause for such excitement! It may have only taken seven or eight minutes, but every second was as tense as anything else could ever be. A single careless mistake could have killed off their entire team! The lady army of Crimson Rage really couldn't restrain themselves, having been stomped on by Chalvos the giant for an entire day previously!

Perfumed Water looked at Zhang Yang, smiled and said: "How is it, our sisters are really lively aren't they! Would you like to join us?"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and said: "Crimson Rage welcomes male players as well?"

"If it is someone else, of course not! But you Zhan Yu, I can make an exception for you and give you a title as the head of eunuchs!" After defeating Chalvos, even Snow Seeker visibly loosened up, joking with Zhang Yang casually.

Faced with these cruel and violent ladies, Zhang Yang hurriedly said, "Alright, alright, let's loot from the giant! I can hardly wait for my loot!"

"Tch!" Thorny Rose pursed her lips and said, "Look at those sneaky eyes of yours, we are women, we always keep our word unlike you guys who cheat on women and always hide your true intentions!"

This woman must have been dumped by men more than hundred times. It was the only way her resentment could be explained! Zhang Yang was slightly annoyed at how she ruined the mood. "Guild master Snow, I do not want anything else, I simply want this woman as my servant!"

Thorny Rose stood up proudly, proclaiming, "You damn liar, can you even afford me?"

Snow Seeker, however said with a deadpan expression, “Zhan Yu could indeed afford you! Did you think about how he sold plenty of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potions] on previous days? He could have at least earned 10,000,000 to 20,000,000!”

“Sister Snow, how can you help the outsider?!” Thorny Rose shrieked, hugging Snow Seeker, causing her bosom to squish against Snow Seeker’s own plump bosom. The scene would have given any other men a nosebleed!

Zhang Yang did not share Fatty Han’s dream to have many girlfriends and set up a huge harem. But this did not mean that he could not admire pretty girls throughout his life. Faced with this hot-blooded scene, he definitely could not act like a gentleman, who would politely look away, but instead crossed his hands and stared directly at them.

Thorny Rose had thought of making a fool out of Zhang Yang, but she never thought that Zhang Yang would look at them so blatantly, so she was greatly disappointed and released Snow Seeker, rolling her eyes.

“Sister Snow, loot Chalvos’ corpse. We worked so hard to defeat Chalvos, it just has to reward us fairly!” All the girls said together.

“Okay, okay, don’t yell at me. I’ll go deaf from all of you!”

“Sister Snow, the technology is developed nowadays, hymens could be replaced, your eardrums are no big deal!”

Zhang Yang felt cold sweat streaming down his head, these women were dangerous!

Finally, Snow Seeker looted Chalvos’ corpse. Because she used Leader’s Distribution Mode, she had to post each of the loots one by one.

[Salamander Battle Armor] (Green-Copper, Armor)

Defense: +10

Strength: +48

Vitality: +24

Dexterity: +8

Level Requirement: 40

“Ah, guild master Zhan Yu, why don’t you take this equipment? It’s for Level 40s and is definitely the first equipment of it’s type in this game!” Snow Seeker smiled and said.

“Pass! Pass!” Zhang Yang hurriedly said.

[Stone Skin Boots] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +6

Strength: +40

Vitality: +8

Dexterity: +32

Level Requirement: 40

“Guild master Zhan Yu, what do you think of equipment?”

[Chalvos Nose Ring] (Green-Copper, Necklace)

Strength: +10

Dexterity: +10

Level Requirement: 40

“Guild master Zhan Yu, what do you think of equipment?”

Snow Seeker incessantly posted seven to eight pieces of Green-Copper equipment together with their attributes continuously.

“Sister Snow, you are really bad!”

All of the girls were laughing hysterically.

Finally, Snow Seeker entered her businesswoman-like demeanor and posted a few pieces of decent equipment.

[Bloody Chestplate] (Gray-Silver, Armor)

Defense: +20

Strength: +96

Vitality: +48

Dexterity: +16

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

[Heavy Stone Shield] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +400

Strength: +160

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

Only these two pieces of equipment were applicable for Zhang Yang, but due to the new version's update, special effects and sockets would only be revealed after being identified by an Item Binder, so he could not know all the attributes of the equipment.

"That's all? Are you serious?! Equipment is not the most important loot from open world boss, but valuable skill books are!" Zhang Yang looked at Snow Seeker.

Snow Seeker could not help but shook her head and said, "Can't you just be dumb for once?!"

Zhang Yang laughed, "If I was dumb even for this instance, then I shall suffer a big loss!"

"There's always something to be won from losing, I'm sure some famous author actually said that before, right?" Snow Seeker smiled and said.

Nevertheless, she did as he said.

[Skill Book: Slice and Dice]

Use: You will grant [slice and dice].

Class Requirement: Thief

Level Requirement: 30

[Skill Book: Deep Wound]

Use: You will grant [deep wound]

Class Requirement: Warrior and Knight

Level Requirement: 30

[Servant: Mountain Giant] (Copper-Tier Servant)

Use: Summons a Mountain Giant to fight for you and lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon a servant at the same time. If you summon any other servants then all servants will undergo the same cool down timer. Cool down time: 60 minutes.

Level Requirement: 40

“That’s it?” Zhang Yang asked.

Snow Seeker smiled forcedly and said, “There’s really nothing else!”

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “Then I want the [Skill Book: Deep Wound]!”

“Zhan Yu, you have enough power already, give this [Skill Book: Deep Wound] to our Little Apricot!” Perfumed Water said and pushed Little Apricot to the front. Little Apricot was a pretty girl with sweet lips and slim long legs, “Ah, well. How about Little Apricot giving you a kiss for it!”

“Nope, nope! No kisses. I just want that skill book!” Zhang Yang said hurriedly.

Perfumed Water shook her head and said: “Sigh, you hurt our Little Apricot’s heart!”

Snow Seeker saw that Zhang Yang had already made up his mind, and so, she gave the [Skill Book: Deep Wound] to him and kept the rest of the loot into her inventory. How they distributed the loots among themselves was none of Zhang Yang’s business.

“Guild master Zhan Yu, happy working with you!” Snow Seeker reached out her tiny hands towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did a handshake with Snow Seeker, smiled and said: “If there are any good tasks like that in future, you are more than welcome to find me! I also hope that Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage could form an offensive and defensive alliance and together become famous in

‘God’s Miracle!’”

“He he, we also thought of forming an alliance with Lone Desert Smoke!”

“Then, I’ll take my leave first!”

“Bye bye!”

Zhang Yang left the team and tore off [Teleportation Scroll] before the eyes of violent and cruel lady army, he was promptly teleported back to White Jade Castle.

Chapter 136: Hammer Heart Castle

Zhang Yang returned to White Jade Castle, where he took out [Skill Book: Deep Wound] and laughed heartily. He patted the skill book against his body and gained [deep wound].

[deep wound] (Passive): After a successful critical attack, inflicts an additional 30% melee damage as bleeding damage. Lasts for 6 seconds.

This was a good passive skill, as long as any attack hits critically, [deep wound] would be activated automatically! Although 30% melee damage did not seem much, this was a free skill book and bleeding damage was unaffected by Defense.

Certainly, anything that ignored defense was kind of pointless for Zhang Yang who already had [eagle eye]. But in a battle arena, other than a tank versus tank scenario, otherwise, he would not have enough time to stack the effects of [Cripple Defense], so the effect of bleed would be very practical in this kind of situation.

Zhang Yang did not fight Chalvos for long, but wasted a lot of time on the journey to Bison's Hill itself, so he had actually been away for an hour. Zhang Yang thought about it for a while, and took out [Bow of the Fallen Moon] from his inventory and decided to complete the quest of "Remnant" by sending the Dwarves' celestial item back to Hammer Heart Castle.

Hammer Heart Castle was far away from White Jade Castle and Zhang Yang needed to get through two training map rated to be over level 30. Hammer Heart Castle was located on the Sivar Hills in the Land of the Red Cloud.

Zhang Yang could not take a Gryphon to reach Hammer Heart Castle directly. Instead, he needed to reach Gutan Town in the Land of the Red Cloud before walking to Sivar Hills and finally arriving at Hammer Heart Castle.

After making payment, Zhang Yang sat on Gryphon and he reached Gutan Town after an hour. This journey made him bored and sleepy as

besides chatting, players were not allowed to do anything, even if it was making potions, when they were taking the Gryphon.

Zhang Yang came down from Gryphon and summoned [Skeletal War Horse]. Once he mounted it, this impressive war horse immediately reared on its rear hooves and began to rush forward quickly.

Although the training map in the Land of the Red Cloud was kind of far away, Zhang Yang could still see a few players were training in this training map. Once they saw Zhang Yang's impressive mount, they could not help but stare at his war horse in envy.

The monsters in the Land of the Red Cloud ranged from Level 30 to Level 39, but Zhang Yang's level was just 31, so he attracted many Level 35 monsters' aggro and those monsters chased behind him. However, the [Skeletal War Horse] increased 300% player's movement speed, so those monsters were unable to catch up to Zhang Yang. After they chased Zhang Yang a distance, they went back to their spawning point when the aggro went out of range.

After another 40 minutes of galloping, Zhang Yang finally arrived at Hammer Heart Castle which was well-built, unsurprising for the Dwarves.

The castle was huge but it had only three levels, unlike human castles which were designed to be as high as at least ten levels. The castle was not high but covered a wide area which gave a stout, solid feeling. The shape of the castle was similar to a Dwarf's body shape, stocky and thick.

Dwarves' city defense was unlike human castle which was surrounded by moats and natural hazardous terrains, there was no moat or drawbridge surrounding the main entrance of Hammer Heart Castle but generously opened up their two huge iron gates with eight Dwarf Warriors patrolling forth and back. When Zhang Yang looked carefully, it was Level 60 Elites, who could probably kill the best players at the moment with a single blow.

However, this did not mean that defense of Hammer Heart Castle was lacking in any other manner, as they had placed cannons on their castle's wall! These cannons could cause a lot of damage with a single shot.

It was said that Dwarves loved to dig into the ground so they actually found a stone relic from many years ago which gave them many advanced technologies! In addition to that, Dwarves were the outstanding smiths, thus, they created cannons, and ballistae and several other siege engines.

“Stop there, this is the domain of Dwarves and you are not allowed to trespass on our domain!” Zhang Yang’s path was blocked by the eight Elite guards at the entrance of Hammer Heart Castle.

Zhang Yang had no intention of provoking the guards, even if they spat on him. No even Zhang Yang would be able to fight against eight Level 60 Elites!

He removed his [Skeletal War Horse] mount earnestly, before walking forward and saying: “I’m the Union’s adventurer, I was ordered by Barga – The Mead come to Hammer Heart Castle to send his remnant!”

“What? Lord Barga!”

“Didn’t he die in a war twenty years ago?!”

Eight Dwarf guards instantly whispered and discussed with each other.

After a while, one of the Dwarf guards said: “Warrior, Lord Barga already died twenty years ago and you look like you’re barely 20, how could Lord Barga entrust a baby to complete his testament?! Hahaha!”

The Dwarves laughed together.

Gaining entry wasn’t going to be easy.

Zhang Yang took out the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] from his inventory. He held it with one hand and said: “Barga definitely died long time ago, but his soul was not destroyed. So I met his soul, and he passed me the Dwarves’ celestial item and entrusted me to pass it to his son, Sith – The Mead!”

“This... this is ‘Bow of the Fallen Moon’?”

“One of the seven sanctified items, ‘Bow of the Fallen Moon’?”

“Oh god, I can feel the life force of the Great Sage Smith on this ‘Bow of the Fallen Moon’! That’s right, this sanctified equipment can only be

created by our Dwarves' Great Smith!"

The eight Dwarf guards bowed respectfully as one.

"Young warrior, please forgive our previous impudence! You have brought back our long lost treasure, you are as good as any honoured guest and friend! Please follow me, and I will lead you to meet Lord Markan!"

One of the Dwarf guards bowed to Zhang Yang and that sudden change in demeanour somehow pleased Zhang Yang. They were not all too different from humans after all.

That Dwarven guard led the way at front and brought Zhang Yang into their castle. After walking through a few corridors, he followed the staircases and moved towards third floor.

Along the way, Zhang Yang saw several Dwarven women and children. The Dwarves stared at this human, strange looks on their faces. If Zhang Yang had not been escorted by Dwarf guards, he guessed that these Dwarf NPCs would have attacked him already.

Although the four races formed the Union to fight against the invasion of demons and specters. However, this did not mean that the four races were close to each other like family! In fact, before demons and specters became a disaster, these four races fought against each other for dominance over the land. They had no choice but to form the Union as they were defeated miserably by demons and specters.

Zhang Yang came to third floor, and the Dwarf guard leading Zhang Yang stopped in front of a stone room. That Dwarf guard announced in a low voice in obvious reverence of the occupant, "Lord Markan, there is a human adventurer here. He has brought us the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and said it was Lord Barge – The Mead's testament!"

Clack!

The door of that stone room opened immediately. A male Dwarf with red hair and red beard walked from that stone room, his long beard, tied up in several braids, reaching his crotch.

[The Great Smith Markan, Leader of the Hammer Heart Castle] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP:???

The HP of a Yellow-Gold Chief NPC was not visible!

“Young warrior, welcome to Hammer Heart Castle. I thank you for your great effort! Please rest, we will hold a banquet for you later and will eagerly be awaiting your tale!” Markan spoke warmly.

Zhang Yang replied hurriedly: “Lord Markan, I was merely entrusted by Barga – The Mead, to send the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] to his son, Sith – The Mead. Please allow me to fulfill my promise towards the deceased!”

Markan revealed a trace of smile on his face and said: “Young warrior, you have a noble heart! Alright, Tumar, lead our noble guest to meet Sith!”

“Yes, Lord Markan!” That Dwarf guard bowed to Markan.

Markan went into the stone room once again. Zhang Yang followed that Dwarf guard and went all the way down to the basement.

Dwarves were inborn with a passion to dig, and dig, and dig, and thus, they constructed more buildings underground than they did above ground! From the outside, this Hammer Heart Castle was only three storeys tall. In fact, it had five levels of basements! They stopped at the forth level.

The three levels above the ground were the living quarters for Dwarves, while the five levels underground was the workplace for Dwarves and many Dwarf smiths were making items with their hammers underground.

That Dwarf guard led Zhang Yang to the front of a young male Dwarf and said: “Sith The Smith, there is a noble guest would like to meet you!”

That young male Dwarf was designing some sort of blueprint. He heard what that Dwarf guard said, he turned around and said: “Eh, who is that?”

[Sith The Smith - The Mead] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 40

HP: 4,000

Zhang Yang strode forward and said: “Mr Sith, my name is Zhan Yu, I’m an adventurer from White Jade Castle! I have explored Misty Valley and I accidentally found your father’s soul who entrusted me with his will to send [Bow of the Fallen Moon] which is the Dwarves’ holy equipment to you!”

“What? My father’s testament!” Sith showed a puzzled facial expression.

After a moment only he said: “Respectful warrior, please follow me, I would like to know everything in detail!”

F*ck, I’m still not allowed to complete the quest directly!

Zhang Yang had no choice but followed Sith and went back to castle’s third floor before entering a house. That Dwarf guard went back to his post at the castle’s entrance, having completing his task.

Sith poured a glass of wine for Zhang Yang and said: “Respectful warrior, please tell me, how did my father die?”

Dwarves loved wine, wine was their most common beverage, and serving it was the same as how humans served their guests with tea.

Zhang Yang took out [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and put on the table then said: “Your father was turned into a specter by Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar. But with the protection of ‘Bow of the Fallen Moon’, his soul was not completely controlled by Evil Sorcerer Terpot Ryhar. Thus, he able to pass me [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and entrusted me to send it to you!”

“Thank you...” Sith immediately stood up and bowed to Zhang Yang.

“Ding! You have completed the quest: Remnant. Gained 50,000 Experience points!”

F*ck, I travelled such a long way but gained only 50,000 Experience points? If he had known this earlier, he would not come for this trip! Zhang Yang could not help but regretted.

Sith picked up [Bow of the Fallen Moon] on the table, gently touched the bow with an loving expression, clearly cherishing his father’s memory,

“My father was a great archer among the Dwarves since he was young. Hence, the King bestowed him ‘Bow of the Fallen Moon’ and let him use this celestial equipment!”

Eh, there is a subsequent quest?

Zhang Yang was about to tear up a [Teleportation Scroll] but he when heard what Sith said, so he stopped and observed the situation.

“My father...” Just as Sith begun speaking, a single tendril of dark light burst out from the [Bow of the Fallen Moon] and skewered his body!

“Ah!”

Sith suddenly uttered a roar like an earthquake!

Chapter 137: One against Twenty Four

There has been a situation!

Sith opened up his arms, the skin exposed from the clothes were like waves of water, trembling up and down continuously! His face was full of agony and his pair of coffee-brown eyeballs were emitting an evil aura that provoked evil thoughts just by the sight of it.

“Sha Sha Sha... I, Terpot Ryhar will be back, for sure!”

Sith spoke out in a low and husky voice before... ‘thud’, collapsing onto the ground facing up at the sky.

Oh f*ck, an evil spiritual possession had just happened!

Gong...

The door was knocked open, with about 10 dwarf guards charging in. Every one of them were staring at Zhang Yang with their angry eyes, pointing their wielded weapons towards Zhang Yang.

“You sly human bastard, how dare you use trickery to enter our castle with the purpose to ruin our kind?!”

“Kill him!”

“Kill him!”

“Kill him!”

The rage was fiery among the crowd, with everyone gritting their teeth together, seemingly wanting to crush and burn Zhang Yang into ashes.

Zhang Yang quickly raised his both hands up and said, “This was not my doing!” It seemed like he had triggered a new quest.

“Halt!” an impressive and dignified voice came from afar, and every dwarf in the room obediently put away the weapons. They opened out a path in between them, paying their respects to a red hair dwarf with a red beard; The Great Smith Markan.

“A very strong evil force!” Markan stopped by Sith’s side, examined him

thoroughly and said, "Sith's soul is being engulfed by an evil force as we speak, his body is also turning into one of the undead in a slow manner!"

Hearing such words, the Dwarves were even more enraged, pulling their weapons out again.

"I believe, this young man has a pure and noble soul, he would never be capable of such things!" Markan tried to back Zhang Yang up.

"But Sir Markan, why did something happened to Sith the moment he came? Besides, only two of them were in the room!"

"That's right, it must be him setting Sith up with his poisonous hands!"

"You fiend, release Sith of your witchcraft at once!"

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "The evil sorcerer who corrupted Barga's soul has infused his evil force into the Bow of the Fallen Moon, I think. He was just simply waiting for me to pass the bow to Sith, letting the evil forces infest onto Sith's body, leading to this transformation!"

Markan picked the Bow of the Fallen Moon up from Sith's hand, looked at it for a good while and said, "That's right, for it is real, the relic still contains a sense of evil force in it!"

Zhang Yang spread out both of his hands and said. "Now, that proves me to be innocent, right?" As of just now, he tried to use a teleporting scroll, but the system hinted him that the item was temporary unavailable!

Markan pondered for a moment, then he said, "Even if this was not your intention in the first place, but it was definitely because of the thing you brought, Sith has to suffer this way! So, you must save him, get him back!"

The old fellow was such a sly. What was sent back was one of the relics of the Dwarves, but now he intend to cover it up rashly with the word 'the thing you brought' to omit the credits by bringing up the matter about wounding one of his! So, there would always be old sly people, even among simple Dwarves!

Zhang Yang said, "But I am not a Priest, nor a Sacred Knight, I have nothing to disperse evil spell!"

Markan pondered for a while again, and said, “Deep in the mountains of Sivar Hills, there is a Fountain of Soul. Drinking the water from the fountain can disperse any evil spells! Young warrior, acquire the water from the Fountain of Soul to me, I beg of you, to save Sith!”

‘Ding! You accepted a quest: Fountain of Soul! The quest cannot be deleted, before the quest is completed, you will be affected by the effect of the ‘Dwarf’s Warning’!’

[Dwarf’s Warning]: You are burdened with a dwarf’s life, go save him quickly! In this period of time, you are forbidden to use any teleportation equipment, entering any main cities will result in banishment!

This was just too ruthless!

Zhang Yang opened up his quest list to check on the description of the quest.

[Fountain of Soul] (Quest: S-rank)

Description: Acquire the Fountain of Soul, return back to save Sith The Smith - The Mead!

Completion: Acquired Fountain of Soul 0/1

“The Fountain of Soul is a relic of the Centaur Tribe, a fine rare one. It is not easy to acquire the Fountain of Soul from their hands! Centaurs are cruel and aggressive tribe, young warrior, you must be extra careful on this!” Markan continued to say.

Zhang Yang tried to ask, “Master Markan, to be able to treat and cure Sith as soon as possible, can you spare some men for me to the way to acquire the fountain?”

Marken shook his head, then he spoke, “The relationship between the Centaur and the Dwarves have been tense over the time, and if our men happen to enter their territory, that would only mean war, and things will eventually get of hand!”

Player, to be tossed around; it was fated so!

“Quickly go and return, I will have a priest to slow down the irruption of

the evil force into Sith with best effort, but time is of short!” Markan waved his hands, commanding the Dwarves to give way for Zhang Yang to take leave.

Zhang Yang left the Hammer Heart Castle. He summoned his Skeletal War Horse and advanced deep into the mountain forest.

Carrying the effect of the ‘Dwarf’s Warning’ on him while having the limitation to never return to any main cities, he could only choose to complete the mission at hand.

Riding on a horse alone in the mountain forest, with only knowledge on the quest saying that the sacred fountain was deep within the mountains, without any specific coordinates given, he could only explore the mountain forest aimlessly like a headless fly, turning around at every corner within his sight.

After for about an hour, no fountain was sighted; only a large number of monsters were attracted instead. Since he was unoccupied at the moment, Zhang Yang kept his battle horse aside by a mountain wall and cleared out all the monsters on his ass. By doing so, he acquired a large amount of experience points and two additional black-steel equipment pieces.

Looking at the time, it was already 1 in the afternoon. So, Zhang Yang hustled down from the server for lunch.

After a cup of hot tea and a moment of good rest, Zhang Yang reconnected onto the server and continued his search for the sacred fountain.

Another half an hour or more has passed, and Zhang Yang had finally passed through the forest, but what he saw in front of him was a scene of big battle.

Over 20 players or more were besieging a huge grizzly bear, about 7 melee combatants, 5 hunters, 8 mages, and 4 healers in additional. It was obvious that they were in the same guild, wearing the title ‘Pride’ above their heads.

Although the besieged grizzly bear was a boss, but its HP was almost

depleted out, with only 20% remaining at the looks of it.

[Frantic Bear King] (Green-Copper, Beast)

Level: 34

HP: 120,000

Among the people of 'Pride' guild, there was one player who did not engage in the battle. Instead, he had both of his hands behind his back, looking like a superior that gave commands to the crowd.

[Player: Floating Fire Ball] (Pyromancer)

Level: 30

HP: 3,600

Mana: 2,100

For a moment there, Zhang Yang could not help himself but to let a murderous sight escape through his eyes!

To secure his place in the first of the ranking list, this guy actually sent his underlings to murder those players before him! Fatty Han was pushed back a level because of him, furthermore, he also hired that trash 44 Bandits to assassinate Zhang Yang. But regretfully instead, 44 Bandits was brutally f*cked in the ass by Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had long wanted to give him the dose of his own medicine, but since Floating Fire Ball was extremely afraid of dying, he would bring a large number of players along with him every time he went out for training, and the locations he went would also stay confidential. Zhang Yang did put all his focus on the dungeons and making money in his first phase in the game, with no time at all to free up his hands for taking him on.

Now this coincidence was just convenient!

Riding strategically on his horse, Zhang Yang charged towards Floating Fire Ball under high speed.

Thud thud thud, the Skeletal War Horse had an unusual speed when it

came to running, so when Floating Fire Ball heard the sound and turned over to see, Zhang Yang was just less than 10 meters away from him!

Charge!

Zhang Yang instantly dispatched himself off the horse, rushed over like a lightning bolt.

Floating Fire Ball was struck into a state of unconsciousness.

With the summoning of his servant [Clear Lotus], Zhang Yang struck out his sword, slashing it at Floating Fire Ball, at the same instant, triggering his [blood rage], causing his rage point to rush up to 67 points in just an instant!

‘778!’ Regular attack.

‘1,680!’ [destructive smash].

‘812!’ [force strike].

At the same time, [Clear Lotus] also dealt a series of damages on Floating Fire Ball from behind with her continuous strike from her dagger.

‘-273!’, ‘-66!’, ‘-430!’

“Argh!” Those instant explosive high valued damages on Floating Fire Ball gave him no time to react at all, instantly got him killed in the state of his unconsciousness!

Crying out in misery, he dropped a piece of silver shiny equipment and turned into a soul ready to report himself to the graveyard.

Zhang Yang had quick eyes and agile hands, reaching out his hands for a scoop and obtained the equipment into his hand. But it was just a Level 20 Gray-Silver set’s Mage Chestplate!

At this moment, only the other members of the ‘Pride’ guild managed to react to the situation. Other than a tank keeping the boss occupied and another mage healing the tank, all other members were aiming their assaults toward Zhang Yang.

Floating Fire Ball was furiously barking in the team channel as well,

“F*ck this sh*t, kill him for me! Kill him! It wasn’t easy for me to reach Level 30 with 89% experience point, now I’m being pushed back by this f*cker all the way back to 0% experience points! He also wasted my equipment set clothes that I bought for 3,000 gold!”

With a cold grin on his face and a stomp onto the ground, he activated his skill [thunder strike], instantly slowing 6 of the charging melee combatants. With a wave in the [Lover’s Sword] in his hand, he performed a [horizontal sweep], instantly dealing 6 ‘1,500+’ high damages, hitting off at least half of the HP bar of six players respectively!

The servant [Clear Lotus], on the other hand, used [shadow walk] to appear at the back of the priest who was healing the tank from aside, and started her ferocious attack onto the healer.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

A ranged mage and a hunter attacked heavily over, inconsistent numerical symbols such as ‘-600’, ‘-200’ that instantly floated up on the body of Zhang Yang. The high damage value was coming from the attack of the mage, and because hunter’s attacks were physical, and they were reduced by the protective armor, therefore giving lesser damage values.

So, that concluded that mages were the worst enemies of the roughened skin and thickened flesh, the Guardians!

8 mages launched a volley assault together with another 5 Hunters that caused about 5,500 of damage, which nearly emptied out Zhang Yang’s HP bar within seconds!

[shield wall]! [merlinda’s shadow]!

Zhang Yang was so light on his feet, he had already rushed into the long-ranged camp of the ‘Pride’ guild, instantly beginning his epic slaughtering!

With the [shield wall] in effect, the amount of HP Zhang Yang was losing mattered so little that he ignored it, and under the healing of [Shadow of Merlinda], his health bar recovered back to full swiftly!

On the other hand, the servant [Clear Lotus] had already handled the

priest!

One should know, the servant [Clear Lotus] was Silver-grade, her attack was on par with a Level 36 player wearing Level 30 Green-Copper equipment set. Meanwhile, the priest was only Level 29 wearing a full Level 20 Green-Copper equipment set, with a HP bar that did not exceed 2,400. So, how could he take all the ravages from [Clear Lotus]? He could only hold up for 8 to 9 seconds, and it would be the end for him after.

Once the priest died, the tank could not hold up longer than a few more seconds! The boss instantly switched his aggro onto the mages of the 'Pride', with a loud roar of "Aow!"

Unexpectedly, the boss knew how to charge! With a strike on a mage, a wave of its paw, the boss swung and created a series of blur, and it was a range attributed attack! Immediately, the HP bars of the mage and a hunter around him were knocked off by approximately 1,500 points.

The members of the 'Pride' were miserably screaming, for they did not know for a moment whether to get rid of the boss with little HP left or to attack Zhang Yang who had just restored his HP bar back to full.

Chapter 138: Escort Mission

[destructive smash] cool down was complete. Zhang Yang immediately used [destructive smash], followed by a [force strike] on one of the mages, dealing two damages of '-1,680', '-821' respectively, sending the players to the afterlife in seconds!

[Clear Lotus] drifted back, under the command of Zhang Yang, and then she wildly unleashed her assaults onto the members of the 'Pride' inside out!

"Take out Zhan Yu first!"

The members of 'Pride' had finally come back to their senses and reacted. After all, the boss was just an NPC controlled by a computer (artificial intelligence), with limited IQ. As long as the tank returned, the problem could be solved easily! But it was different when it came to players, as players would exploit the softest spot before stabbing in!

Zhang Yang laughed loudly, and he said, "You guys are taking neither of us out!"

[thunder strike], slow down movement speed!

[horizontal sweep]!

'-1,578!'

'-1,627!'

'- 3,360!'

'-1,611!'

'...'

A dozen of horrifying damage values fluttered on each of the players, with two of them as critical hits! Even before the effect of [deep wound] could trigger, the two members were instantly smashed into waste products!

The melee combatants of the 'Pride' had Zhang Yang rounded up, while the remaining 18 players that were still alive unleashed their attacks at

him one after another. With their skills disorderly spammed, it would be unbelievable that so many players could not do the justice in killing one player!

[substitute] skill activated!

Zhang Yang immediately escaped the controlled situation, descending into the state of 5-second invincibility. The [Lover's Sword] emitted a cold flashing aura. It was like a grim reaper frantically harvesting the lives of the players!

While on the other side, the Berserk Bear King did not go soft on them at all, waving its wrathful claws, landing it onto 3 different targets at the same time, dealing a basic damage of 1,500, give or take. When it came to a non-tanking class without any skills that decreased or avoided damages while not being, all it took for the boss to kill off the players were 2 aggressive attacks!

The 5-second invincibility ended, but the number of the 'Pride' members had been drastically decreased to only 11 people, with their magic-type players all gone, leaving 7 melee combatants and 4 Hunters behind!

"Sun of the beach, this b*tch's damage output is terrifying!"

"Heal? Someone please support me with some HP recovery!"

"There's no way we could fight anymore, one Zhang Yu is already hard enough, and there is a boss creating disturbance at aside!"

The members of the 'Pride' were screaming their miserable lungs out.

'Pride' guild was not a large guild in the gaming world, and there was not much master-level players around, with Floating Fire Ball more concerned with training instead of clearing dungeons. Because for him, equipment could be bought with money, but him being rich did not mean that his underlings would be rich too. Most of the members only had Level-20 Green-Copper grade equipment, while only a small number of them had a few pieces of Level-30 Green-Copper equipment.

As for the Gray-Silver equipment pieces? Sorry, there was no way for an ordinary level guild to roll against Marzerway in Hardcore Mode!

According to the setting of 'God's Miracle', in Normal Mode, players around Level 10 could perform a raid, and those at least Level 20 were be eligible to challenge Hard Mode, and lastly, the Hardcore Mode required players to be Level 30 or higher!

Players around Level 30 wearing Level 20 Green-Copper equipment with about 2,500 HP without equipping a shield were totally incomparable to Zhang Yang or the boss, no matter what!

Just like a whirlwind sweeping away some scattered clouds, Zhang Yang and the boss joined together to dispose of the remaining 11 players of the 'Pride', like tearing away some withered stumps.

However, the moment all members of the 'Pride' were taken care of, the boss navigated its aggro onto Zhang Yang.

"Ouw!" Berserk Bear King let out a furious roar, waving its huge paw, slamming towards Zhang Yang.

[block]!

With a lift of his shield, Zhang Yang sheltered himself from the attack. But the impact was so strong that it pushed him 3 to 4 steps backward before he could regain his stance!

The presence of the knock back effect only meant that the strength that the Berserk Bear King had was so much stronger than Zhang Yang's!

'-274!' Deflected damage.

With a grin on his face, Zhang Yang said, "You stupid ungrateful piece of bear! I took care of those people for you, and you are trying to kill me instead of thanking me! Sigh, being a nice person is really a mistake, after all I have done, I only get a bite in return, no wonder there are lesser nice people around in this year!"

'-1,154!' [shield bash], critical!

Instantly, the body of the Berserk Bear King was added with a negative effect, [bleeding], causing a damage value of '-79' to pop out once in every 2 seconds.

The battle must be ended quickly as his powerful skills drained him of his stamina quite enough. If the members of the 'Pride' happened to revive themselves at the moment, even he could not bear it!

After all, their equipment pieces were only 1 level different from each another. If he has his skills at ready, Zhang Yang could roll with it again. But once [shield wall] and [substitute] were on cool down time, even Zhang Yang cannot underestimate a party with 20+ members in it!

Berserk Bear King has only 20,000 HP left in the bar. Under the joint attacks of Zhang Yang and [Clear Lotus], the boss could only last for 20 seconds more. With the [lifesteal] effect also in play with the Lover's Sword, Zhang Yang eventually took out the boss!

After picking up the loots from the boss and the equipment dropped from the members of the 'Pride' in a quick manner, Zhang Yang summoned his war horse and left the spot, leaving the 'Pride' people to their sulking.

About 7 or 8 minutes later, curses coming from the 'Pride' people started to appear in the regional channels. Zhang Yang smiled at it; only incompetent people would rely on cursing to make a scene for themselves.

Passing through the mountain forest, Zhang Yang continued for his search on the location of the sacred fountain. In fact, he was keener to locate a Centaur. According to Markan, the Fountain of the Souls are a sacred relic of the Centaur, so there should be Centaurian guards around the fountain guarding it.

'Pikplak!'

One of the bushes suddenly split in half, and from between the separated bushes came a weird looking creature rushing through... the lower body of a horse, and the upper body of a human! With 4 legs it could really run fast, just like a gust of wind blowing by, with a long bow in his hand.

A Centaur!

"Rawgh!" Right behind the Centaur was a sabretooth leaping out from

the same way. Its size was bigger than a huge bear, tall and sturdy, with long and sharp teeth, gleaming with cold white light!

Having Zhang Yang in sight, the Centaur instantly ran towards him, at the same time, he shouted, "Help! Help! Please help!"

[Bangar Kukulo] (Normal, humanoid creature)

Level: 35

HP: 1,235/3,500

Note: "Coward" Bangar Kukulo, Kukulo of the Centaur tribe.

Instantly, Zhang Yang made an immediate judgment, went straight at the sabretooth and landed a slash onto it.

2 seconds later, the sabretooth regained conscious, switching its target to Zhang Yang and threw over a bite.

At first, Zhang Yang wanted to cast a [provoke], but seeing that Bangar Kukulo did not cause any damage to the sabretooth, it became easier to pull agro in.

No wonder Bangar Kukulo had a nickname of 'The Coward', assuming that he would run the moment he saw the sabretooth, the long bow in his hand might only be a decoration!

Although the sabretooth was indeed tall and sturdy, but it was just a normal Level 33 monster. With just a few tricks in his sleeves, Zhang Yang took it down for good, leaving only a few strings of tiger hair behind.

"Hero! Hero! Gratitude for saving Bangar Kukulo!" The coward Centaur put away the long bow into the backpack on his horseback. He made a move swiping away his sweat and said, "Bangar Kukulo will repay you!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "In my travels I would draw out my sword whenever I would see any injustice being done!" As the words came out right from his mouth, he felt a shiver on his back for a moment.

"Hero, a person like you definitely would not want the dead body of this tiger! Then make it as a gift to Bangar Kukulo!" after talking to himself, Bangar Kukulo immediately pulled the dead sabretooth and hung it

around his horseback! It was unforeseen that even though his courage was so puny, but his strength was definitely strong as hell, not to mention his face was so thick to the point where no words could describe it!

Zhang Yang continued to ask, “So how did you ended up in such a tragic situation?”

“Sigh!” Bangar Kukulo said, “Today is my coming-of-age ceremony, only by hunting down a sabretooth all by myself would I become one of the real member of the Kukulo family! But this beastly sabretooth was too powerful that Bangar Kukulo could not defeat it!”

Could not defeat? Or perhaps it was him who was so terrified to the point that he just could not do anything, being chased over by the sabretooth a few blocks through maybe?

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Yes, this sabretooth is indeed very hard to hard to be dealt with!”

Bangar Kukulo was instantly very pleased in hearing that, seeing Zhang Yang as his friend, and he said, “Hero, Bangar Kukulo has another favor to ask of you! Please escort Bangar Kukulo back to sacred land! Bangar Kukulo will definitely pay you handsomely once we are at the destination!”

“Ding! Bangar Kukulo has a quest for you: Escort Bangar Kukulo. Will you accept it?”

Of course Zhang Yang naturally accepted it, having not to worry about finding the place where the Centaur lives anymore!

[Escort Bangar Kukulo] (Difficulty: C-rank)

Description: Escort Bangar Kukulo back to the Centaur camp. If Bangar Kukulo dies, the mission will fail.

Completion: [Escort in Progress]

“Thank you so much, hero!” Bangar Kukulo filled his face with a smile, immediately leading Zhang Yang by walking towards a direction.

On their way, it was unavoidable to be attacked by sabretooths, thunderstorm wolves, chimeras and other beast-type monsters. Anyhow,

Bangar Kukulo would escape as far as he could go whenever a battle began, and he would only return after Zhang Yang has taken care of the monsters. Then he would show that face of his that says “I was not refusing to aid you in battle, I was on the look-out for you.” Meanwhile, he would pick up the corpses and hung them on his horseback, until the point that he no longer could move his ass, and then dropping the monsters’ corpses with a bitter heart.

After heading straight for more than half an hour, they finally reached the Centaur camp. It was a very well hidden in a far-off valley. If it was not for Bangar Kukulo’s guide, Zhang Yang might not even find the place even after searching for 3 days.

The entrance of the valley was surrounded with high wooden fence, each of the top sharpened, to prevent anything from invading over the wall. In the middle of the fence was an open wooden door, a Centaur guard armed with bow and arrows was standing guard of it.

The sight of that Centaur was extremely great, he could see Zhang Yang and Bangar Kukulo from afar. Immediately raising their awareness with arrow loaded onto the bow, they made a defensive stance.

“Matta Kukulo, do not shoot, it’s me!” Bangar Kukulo was timid, worrying that the opposite side would shoot the arrow over to him, he shouted at once. It reminded Zhang Yang of the phrase, “Tai Jun, don’t shoot, it’s me”¹.

“Bangar Kukulo, why did you bring a human into our camp?” the guard did not lower his guard down at all.

“He is an important guest which Bangar Kukulo invited to join the coming-of-age ceremony!” Bangar Kukulo was smart, giving Zhang Yang a title of ‘guest’.

Zhang Yang could not help to have his mouth twitching about. Previously with the dwarves, he was also a guest, but in a blink of an eye he almost got turned into a prisoner! Hopefully this time around, the situation would not be the same!

The guard hesitated for a moment before putting away his bow and

arrow, so he asked, “When did you know such a human?”

Maybe Zhang Yang was there backing him up, so Bangar Kukulo became bold and strong, with a head full of pride, he said, “Do I need to tell you?”

Under the guide of Bangar Kukulo, Zhang Yang had finally entered the Centaur camp.

1A line from a Chinese movie.

Chapter 139: Polishing Reputation

The valley was large, with rows of houses made of wood planks neatly arranged. From time to time there would be two or three Centaurs passing by, and they would all have this strange expression in their eyes, as if they just saw some kind of a monster.

Perhaps, just like how humans feel strange looking at these four-legged strange creatures, they also felt that two-legged humans are some sort of a monster!

Following Bangar Kukulo back to his staying place, the mission was prompted as completed, and Zhang Yang was rewarded with 50,000 experience points.

‘Ding! You have activated the Reputation of the Centaur, current reputation: Unfriendly!’

Zhang Yang brought up the reputation list and took a look. Sure enough, he saw there was a new additional entry for the Centaur, currently labeled as Unfriendly 0/3,000. Continuing to walk outside, the initial names of the Centaurs shown in red have all turned into pale-red in color.

In ‘God’s Miracle’, monsters with their names shown in red meant that they were aggressive, as soon as you entered their aggro range, you will be attacked. So the reputation system was basically the correspondent to the aggro.

Monsters with their names shown in pale-red meant that their corresponding reputation would be at Unfriendly. These monsters would not initiate their attacks on the players. However, if the players were battling these monsters, it would attract any nearby monsters of the same type, if there was any, to gang up on the players. It was just like people having a street fight in the street, if a person saw a relative or friend in some sort of trouble, they would definitely put their fists out to help.

Monsters with their name shown in yellow meant that their corresponding reputation will be Neutral. Neutral monsters also would not initiate their attacks on players. In fact, if players attacked these type

of monsters, it would not attract aggro even though there were the same type of the monsters passing by around the place. It will be just like looking at one of their fellow villagers fighting, just enjoying the show from the side.

Monsters with their names shown in green meant that their corresponding reputation would be Friendly, Respect, Admire and Worship. Unless a player switched on the indifferent attack option, they would not be able to attack green-named monsters. However, green-named monsters were usually an NPC of a main city. Once players attack their kind, it was highly possible that the players would suffer the banishment from the main cities, which would only mean loss and detrimental to one self.

Not long after Bangar Kukulo returned to the camp, he vanished. As an NPC that guided players to activate the reputation of the Centaur, his mission was to continuously be pursued by monsters and turn to players for help, bringing players back to activate the Reputation of the Centaur.

Zhang Yang gave himself a thought that since there was a Reputation of Centaur, then there surely must be a reputation shop around selling some different levels of reputation-corresponding goods.

He took a look around the valley and found the reputation shop not long after.

[Tulong Kukulo, The Reputation Shopkeeper] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 120,000

“Hey, human, want to buy something nice? All we Centaurs have are only natural authentic goods, never a fake one around!” Tulong Kukulo was indeed a professional businessman career, and regardless of his cold corresponding reputation, he started selling immediately. As he was talking, he opened his sale catalog to Zhang Yang.

The first glance into the list was the Fountain of Soul! It was selling at the price of 1,000 gold per bottle!

So, the Fountain of Soul required in the quest can be bought from NPC! And, without any doubt, this is certainly the only way to get the Fountain of Soul!

The slight overprice of the item could be overlooked, but if this was a reputation shop, that meant the natural authentic goods that Tulong Kukulo sells had a reputation requirement to be fulfilled, And the reputation requirement for the Fountain of Soul was: Worship!

The Fountain of Soul would bind with the players that picked it up. Therefore, do not expect to let players that have fulfilled the reputation requirement to purchase the item on behalf of those who have not!

In fact, any items with reputation requirement would bind with the players.

However, the reputation requirement did not go without any benefits. Other than the Fountain of Soul, Tulong Kukulo had other nice goods including skill books, professional recipe blueprint, and small pets and so on!

There were a total of 6 skill books, corresponding to the six major occupations respectively, with the same reputation requirement of worship! The Warrior skill book was the [blast wave], a skill that Zhang Yang saw before in previous game. The effect was to send a shock wave to the front, causing damage to all enemies within the range, stunning all targets for 4 seconds.

The recipe and blueprint for the forgery and alchemy were the < Recipe: Centaur Battle Axe> and the [Recipe: Beginner Power Potion] respectively.

Zhang Yang had no idea on what attribute was the Centaur Battle Axe, but he was very clear on the effect of the Beginner Power Potion: Increases the damage output by 20% for 15 seconds.

This potion was not bad at all, giving miraculous effects for situations that required focus and swift attacks.

During PK, players might get to make a total comeback with just a bottle of power potion! The disadvantage was that all the potions shared the

same cool down, and consuming the power potion would prohibit players to consume other potions. So, whether it was life insurance or charging hard, it was necessary to consider for one over the two choices.

Zhang Yang had no love for small pets. Moreover, he could not sell it for money either because of the pick-up binding feature. So, he skipped straight through it.

Other than that, there was also a special whetstone ----- Powerful Whetstone. Once applied on the weapon, it will grant 1% critical rate bonus.

Among the rest, skill books required Worship reputation tier, crafting recipes required Admire reputation tier, Pets and whetstones required only Respect reputation tier.

Why was this quest S-rank then? In 'God's Miracle', if the level of the monster was higher than the player which led to the label of the difficulty of the quest to become higher, it will only change between the ranks of B, C, and D. Rank-A mission meant that there must be a boss to kill, but killing the boss will not be too challenging. However, if it was an S-rank mission, there definitely will be a main boss, such as Shurian of the Cave of Bones, and Terpot Ryhar of the Underground Tower!

S-rank missions signify burden, but also stand for a very handsome reward!

Needless to say, it would be necessary to battle some kind of a big boss is in the process of elevating reputation!

"What say you? Tempted or not?" Tulong Kukulo grinned with a sinister smile of a businessman. "Such a shame you are a stranger, as our clan have rules, never to sell our precious goods to strangers that is! But, you can run some errands for us, errands that are not convenient for our hands to handle. Then we shall trust you, and gradually treat you as our good amigo (friend)!"

After finished talking, a yellow exclamation mark suddenly appeared right above Tulong Kukulo's head.

Here came the quest!

Zhang Yang immediately said, “Alright, Tulong Kukulo, I am willing to serve the great clan of the Centaur!”

That flatter had landed so solidly onto the ass of Tulong Kukulo, making the prestigious businessman melt in smiles, so he said, “Alright! We shall look upon your sincerity then. Prove it if you can, then I shall consider offering you more quests! Winter is upon us, we need food reserved for the winter. Go hunt us something upon your return!”

“Ding! Tulong Kukulo has a quest for you: Food for the Winter. Will you accept it?”

Upon accepting the quest, the exclamation mark right above Tulong Kukulo has disappeared, meaning that there were no other quest announcements.

“Ding! You have acquired a [Butcher Knife]!”

Zhang Yang summoned his Skeletal War Horse and left the Centaur camp, at the same time, he was checking on the quest list.

[Food for the Winter] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: We want meat! Tulong Kukulo of the Centaur clan requests you to collect as many meat as possible to get them covered for the soon-to-be winter! You can hunt for monsters around Sivar Hills and carve their meat down with the [Butcher Knife].

Completion: Collected meats 0/100

Quest reward: 50,000 experience point, 250 Centaur reputation points.

[Butcher Knife] (Quest item)

Use: Cut the meat from the monsters/beasts.

Zhang Yang rode on his horse and pulled a few dozen of beast-type monsters such as sabretooths, drizzly bears, and violent wolves to him in one shot, then he got down and started his killing-spree. These normal rank monsters only have a basic damage of 600 more or so, hitting on Zhang Yang would only cause about 250 damage.

With just moving around and [block], triggering a [berserker's heal] or the special effect of [Lover's Sword] with no big deal, Zhang Yang slaughtered all the monsters with his slightest effort, and used the [Butcher Knife] to cut the meat down.

One beast gave about 2 to 4 pieces of meat, as for its specific numbers, it was totally random. For one turn of cutting the meat, Zhang Yang had an addition of 44 pieces of meat. With 2 more pulls and clearing monsters out, the number of the meat was summed up to 127 pieces.

But the set of meat could pile up to 200 pieces, and Zhang Yang was too lazy to discharge the excessive meat out, so he ran straight to Tulong Kukulo to deliver his quest.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Food for the winter, received 50000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!'

Looking at Tulong Kukulo again, another exclamation mark in blue appeared above his head... a repetitive quest.

It was still the same, killing wild beasts to cut some meat, collect 100 pieces of meat to deliver the quest. On the basic practice of the game, these repetitive missions would only be unavailable when it reached a 'qualitative change', for example, when a player has leveled up, or the reputation has elevated to another level.

It required 3,000 reputation points to elevate from cold to neutral. Each mission rewarded 250 points, meaning a total of 12 times completion, which also meant collecting 1,200 pieces of meat. Just a walk in the park! Let's depart now!

Zhang Yang summoned his [Skeletal War Horse] and began his hunting operation. This time, he intended to fully score 1,100 pieces of meat before delivering back to Tulong Kukulo for the quest rewards, elevating the reputation level to neutral in one shot.

With Zhang Yang's current equipment, skills and strength, he could only take on as much as 30 or 40 monsters of his similar level. However, the beasts in the area were too spread out, making it possible to pull only about 10 monsters at a time, as the previous monsters that were pulled

would leave their pursuit in combat due to target being too far away.

It required about 2 minutes for the whole process which included pulling monsters, gathering and killing the monsters in a spot, and cutting the meat. Most of the time would be wasted on searching for monsters, not to mention that cutting the meat was also a time-consuming process. However, killing the monsters consumed the least of time.

About an hour later, Zhang Yang had collected 1,100 pieces of meat and he headed back to Tulong Kukulo to deliver his quest.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Food for the winter, received 50,000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!’

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Food for the winter, received 50,000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!’

‘Ding! You have completed the...’

After delivering the quest for 11 times, Zhang Yang received a glow of green light across his body, which meant that his reputation had been elevated by a level.

“Human, I can feel your worship heart towards us Centaurs. As a token of encouragement, I shall grant you a new quest!” Tulong Kukulo smiled with much satisfaction and he said, “Our food for the Winter is very much enough now, but we could need a large amount of pelts to fight the cold! Human, hunt the White Spot Antelope, cut their skin down for me! The more, the better!”

“Ding! Tulong Kukulo has given you a quest: Clothes for the Winter. Will you accept it?”

Was it possible to decline?

[Clothes for the Winter] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: It’s cold as hell! Hurry up and bring some exquisite fine woolen blanket made of antelope skin! Tulong Kukulo requested you to collect the skin of White Spot Antelope. Help the Centaurs solve their Winter problem. The Sivar Hills are full of White Spot Antelopes.

Completion: Collect skin of the White Spot Antelope 0/20

Reward: 5,000 experience points, 250 reputation points.

This was also a repeatable quest, just like the previous one.

Chapter 140: Hunting Sheeps

The White Spot Antelope was a social kind of animal, finding one would mean that you will find the whole herd. However, the number in each herd was only roughly 10 ;shorter time required to kill them all, but what upset Zhang Yang was that the antelope skins did not drop every time!

With only 3 antelope skins harvested from 17 White Spot Antelopes, the drop rate was considerably very low!

No other way, just keep searching!

White Spot Antelopes were all over the various location of Shiva Hills. To kill one or two herds, it was still easy. But to collect enough to support the criteria of elevating from neutral to friendly required 240 antelope skins. It was insanely difficult! Fortunately, Zhang Yang had [Skeletal War Horse] that increased his movement speed to extremely fast, enabling him to run the hills and the forest.

Even so, he could only collect 53 antelope skins by 6.p.m. And it was time for him to leave the game for his dinner.

After dinner, Zhang Yang went online again, continuing his quest to bring trouble to the doorsteps of the antelopes! In a while, came Han Ying Xue's sweet-moving voice through the voice communication device.

"Silly Yu, it's time to go down to the dungeons!"

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to give a gentle tap on his forehead, for him trying so hard polishing his reputation to the point that he forgot about his business in the dungeons tonight!

"I am engaged in a quest right now, you guys go ahead and find any tank you like!"

Han Ying Xue would not give in, and she said, "This cousin does not want to give her healing to anyone else! I only want to give it to you!"

Zhang Yang was full of black lines after listening to it. Big cousin, the tease was just so lavish! He smiled and said, "Oh why, you could not resist to be my second wife?"

“What the...” Han Ying Xue instantly broke out, “Become your second? Your pubic hairs are not even fully grown! Hmph, if I could be the first wife, then I shall only consider about it!”

“Fine, next time, we shall find a time and get married! That time, you'll belong to the Zhang household! Or, you can come over to warm the bed for your husband tonight?” One must be bolder and more direct than Sister Yu who loved to tease in order to scare her off!

Han Ying Xue went silent for a while and she said, "Silly Yu, so you have earned much wisdom and you even dare to take liberties with me!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “By the way, I am polishing up my Centaur reputation. The reputation shop over here has some really good stuffs, you guys can come over and check it out. If you feel there is a need, come and polish yours with me!”

“Oh, let me ask Yan Er and the gang then! Silly Yu, let me tell you a secret of mine. When I sleep, I don't wear any clothes!”

Pak! Han Ying Xue disconnected the voice communication device.

You w... wit... witch!

Zhang Yang could not help himself into his own imagination, imagining Han Ying Xue lying on the bed with totally nothing on her, waking up in the early morning, with her upper body slightly lifted, the thin blanket sliding and getting stuck by her two prideful peaks, half-revealing pairs of plumpy boobs, some words were better left unsaid....

That was totally irresistible!

How could my will be so weak?

Zhang Yang ferociously slaughtered the herd of antelopes while sighing, admitting that the bewitched Han Ying Xue was indeed profound in her ways.

Hack and slash, slash and hack, all the way to 11.p.m. Where Zhang Yang went offline to sleep. He could only collect 97 pieces of the antelope skins, and it was still a long way before getting 240 pieces of the skins. However,

his experience bar on Level 31 had advanced straight up to 87%, leaving him so much closer to Level 32.

He could have leveled up if it weren't for the scattered spawning of the monsters, totally unlike the concentrated spawning of the monsters in the Misty Valley.

Next day in the morning, Zhang Yang finished up his training and had his breakfast before logging into the game.

It was still the endless slaughtering of the antelopes. Unlike the 1,200 pieces of meat that he easily collected, this collection of antelope skins was on a totally different level of difficulty. Looking at the bright side, the experience points were not that bad or slow either, he could treat it as a training.

In the end, he spent his whole day in the Sivar Hills before he went offline to sleep. All he ever did was to increase the collection of the skins up to the amount of 207. As for his level, he already reached Level 32 around 1.p.m. in the afternoon; he was about to catch up with Hundred Shots.

Earlier on, Zhang Yang spent a total of 12 days to craft potions. That was why he got stuck on Level 30, letting the rest of his 5 gang members surpass him.

Fatty Han was at Level 35, being at highest level among them because he spent the least amount of time in his profession quests. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could currently team up to kill monsters for leveling up purposes. Although their time spent in leveling up was not as much as Fatty Han did, they had also reached Level 34. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu did not fall behind even though she was not online much, because she had 50% additional experience points to boost her up. She was currently Level 34 as well.

On the contrary, Hundred Shots was currently only Level 33 because he had put too much time into his class quests.

It was 11.a.m into the third day, Zhang Yang had finally collected exactly 240 pieces of antelope skins, with a burst of grievance, he returned to

Tulong Kukulo to deliver the quest request.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Clothes for the winter, received 40,000 experience points, Centaur reputation +250!’

‘Ding! You have completed...’

After the 12th time of his delivery, Zhang Yang received a glow of green light flashing across his body, representing that his Centaur reputation had been elevated to ‘Friendly’.

However, to elevate from friendly to a higher level required a substantial amount of reputation points! From Friendly to Respect required 6,000 reputation points, from Respect to Admire required 12,000 reputation points, and lastly, from Admire to Worship required 21,000 reputation points!

Zhang Yang had faintly felt a pain in his eggs, no, felt his eggs being crushed!

Tulong Kukulo stared at Zhang Yang and smiled, “Human, you have done us a great deal of favors, even our chief has heard about your brilliant achievements! You see, she even commanded me to invite you to her tent! My admiration is all on you, human, master chief is the best beauty there is among the Centaurs, she is indeed a dreamy lover to all our Centaur men!”

Zhang Yang looked at Tulong Kukulo’s head and there were no sign of any exclamation mark other than his title.

Obviously, Tulong Kukulo would not publish any quest at the moment. To proceed with the elevation of reputation, one must meet with the chief of the Centaur.

Zhang Yang asked Tulong Kukulo for the location of the chief, and he went to the largest wooden house in the middle of the tribe.

“Halt, human!” two female Centaur guards were guarding the wooden door of the house. Armed with their long spears and their heads looking down to him, it was extremely intimidating.

So, Zhang Yang informed, “I am here under the invitation of the chief herself!”

Chiang!

The two Centaur guards pulled their spears aside and said, “Go in ahead, the chief has been expecting you!”

Zhang Yang took a big step into the wooden house, he could only see a female Centaur wandering around the house. Noticing his footsteps entering the house, she instantly turned herself over and looked at Zhang Yang.

What a huge Centaur! Centaurs such as the kind of Tulong Kukulo was considered as tall and big, but to compare this Centaur with the others, others would become inferior in an instant, just like comparing the size of a baby elephant with a mother elephant!

[Maya Kukulo, Kukulo Centaur Tribe Chief] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP:???

With a firm fist of his right hand placed on his chest, Zhang Yang greeted with a respectful gesture of an adventurer, and he said, “Master chief, thank you for your hospitality, it is my great pleasure!” While talking to her, Zhang Yang also felt a sour sting in his heart.

Maya Kukulo seem pleased with Zhang Yang’s performance, she nodded her head and said, “Human, you have made a series of contributions to our tribe in recent days, I have knowledge of it! Very well, you have proved your sincerity to, but, to be a friend to the Centaurs, sincerity is not enough. You must have enough strength in you! If you have thoughts to befriend us, go and have word with Andark Kukulo!”

Yet another ‘kick you out of the house’ scene has presented itself!

It was just like some office, A told you to find B, and then B told you to find C, and C would say it was none of his business and ask to look for D, and D would inform that you would need a stamp from A before you could

proceed.

Andark Kukulo was located just above a platform set up with woods, with a shiny yellow exclamation mark above his head.

This was just like a chain pulling another chain, if the reputation had not reached friendly, Tulong Kukulo would not have allowed players to meet with the chief, which the talk with the chief would not happen, and Andark Kukulo would not be here publishing new quest.

[Andark Kukulo, Duel Manager] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 120,000

“Human, we Centaurs will never be friends with useless people! Come, prove your strength and see if you are worthy of becoming our friend!”

While waiting for Zhang Yang to come over, Andark Kukulo spoke in a low and draggy voice.

‘Ding! Andark Kukulo has given you a quest: Ever the victorious! accept or decline?’

After clicking down the accept button, Zhang Yang immediately pulled out his quest list to check on it.

[Ever the victorious] (Difficulty: Optional)

Description: Challenge the Centaur opponents, prove your might and strength! You can only challenge once in every hour, you can choose your enemies among 4 difficulties, A, B, C, D. Defeating an opponent of different difficulty will reward you with different amount experience points and reputation points.

Rank-A difficulty: 100,000 experience points, 125 reputation points.

Rank-B difficulty: 50,000 experience points, 75 reputation points.

Rank-C difficulty: 30,000 experience points, 50 reputation points.

Rank-D difficulty: 10,000 experience points, 25 reputation points.

Progress: Centaur reputation reaches Respect. Current reputation:

Friendly

The game was fair, players with stronger strength acquired reputation points faster than average players!

Zhang Yang immediately said, “Andark Kukulo, I would like to make the challenge now!”

“Very good, I favor your courage, please pick an opponent for your challenge!” Andark Kukulo laughed hard.

In the game interface, a selection box came out suddenly, and Zhang Yang picked the Rank-A difficulty without any hesitation.

Shew!

With a blur in his eyes, Zhang Yang found himself teleported onto the platform on the side above him.

Gong gong gong!

A huge Centaur entered the platform from the other side, and the heavy weighted body pressed against the wooden floor making a series of creaking sound ‘creak creak creak’.

[Centaur Warrior] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 35

HP: 35,000

‘Ding! The challenge will commence in 10 seconds!’

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

“Rawgh!” The Centaur warrior let out a loud roar, opening up all four of his legs and started charging towards Zhang Yang with his long spear in his hands straight up. This attack would break a boulder or worse!

[charge]!

In a flash, Zhang Yang charged and rammed over. Very good, a stun effect, giving a gap of 2 seconds for him to make his next move.

Summoning his servant [Clear Lotus] would not cause any cool down problem because only one challenge can be made in an hour.

‘-738!’

‘-1,633!’

The Centaur warrior regained conscious very quickly, roaring in rage and striking his long spear towards Zhang Yang.

[block]! +30 rage points.

‘-254!’ Block damage deflected.

‘-557!’ [shield bash].

The HP of the Centaur warrior was going down fast like an avalanche.

Chapter 141: Aura Effect

The centaur warrior let out a series of roars in rage, once again flailing the long spear in his hands about, finally drawing first blood on Zhang Yang.

‘-1,312!’

The attack was really ferocious, it’s basic damage must have gone up to 2,000!

But Zhang Yang had help from [Servant: Clear Lotus], his damage per second has exceeded 1300. To strike down the mere 35,000 HP of the centaur warrior would only take about 30 seconds or so! With all sorts of survival skills activated, he could blast the centaur warrior to death without budging an inch.

“Ding! You have defeated the Centaur Warrior, received 100000 experience points, centaur reputation +125!”

After attempting to speak further to Andark Kukulo garnered no response, Zhang Yang stepped up to his face. The centaur finally said, “The warriors are resting now, you should come back another time!”

Since he had much time to spare, Zhang Yang went out to the outskirts of the valley to train and level-up. After an hour, he would go back for another challenge. Within a day, his experience bar had increased to 91% of level 32, but his centaur reputation had only increased by 1,500 points, it would take some time before it reaches 6,000 points.

On the other hand, without Zhang Yang as their main tank, Han Ying Xue and the gang did not adjust well, they could barely handle the dungeons, but they could at least still clear the Hardcore Mode of the Garden dungeon. Zhang Yang had initially intended to let Fatty Han lead other dungeon parties, he was happy to see them slowly adjusting without him being around.

Another two days had passed. Zhang Yang had his centaur reputation at ‘friendly’ level, with 5,250 points at hands, he was about to break through

into 'respectful'. Moreover, he had trained himself up to level 34, being the same level as Hundred Shots, leaving Han Ying Er and the gang speechless.

On the third day at 3.pm, Zhang Yang defeated the 48th centaur warrior, and a green light flashed through his body, indicating that his centaur reputation had finally reached another tier!

After delivering the quest to Andark Kukulo, the NPC said, "Human, you truly are a wonder that surprised me well! In just a few days, you have beaten many brave centaur warriors! Oh my, do you have the slightest idea on how much herbs are being wasted on us?"

Zhang Yang burst into laughter, and he said, "The centaur is a sturdily strong race, such scratches shouldn't hurt them at all!"

Andark Kukulo smiled wryly at the indirect gloat and said, "Alright, you have proven your strength, and now, you have earned the right to speak to our chief, she may have some quests awaiting you! However, human, I must warn you. Do not ever have any improper thoughts towards our chief, because the most beautiful female centaur can only be married to the greatest male centaur!"

Improper thoughts my arse! Even if I ingested all the aphrodisiac that the world can offer, there is no way that I will be turned on by a horse's ass!

After leaving Andark Kukulo, Zhang Yang was back to see Maya Kukulo.

"Very good, human, very good indeed! We now consider you a friend to the centaurs! However, to further win your favor over, you must put more effort in contributing!" Maya Kukulo looked at Zhang Yang and said, "Human, do you know why our camp have so few of us here that we even need outsiders to help us prepare food and clothes in anticipation of the winter upon us?"

"Why?" Zhang Yang asked back at her.

"About 2 months ago, there evil souls were constantly rising from the ground in the area of the second half of this valley, and they launched

their assaults on our camp! To protect our home, we centaurs were forced to send most of our bravest warriors to the front line to defend against the undead!" Maya Kukulo expression turned dark, and she said, "The prospects are not looking good for us, we need more warriors, so, human, are you willing to help us?"

"Ding! Maya Kukulo has given you a quest: The Crisis of the Centaur. Will you accept it?"

[The Crisis of the Centaur] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: The constantly rising of the undead is slowly invading the defense line of the centaur, they are desperately in need of your help! Slay all the evil undead, lay ease upon the stressful situation of the centaur!

Progress: Reputation Level for Centaur race at Respect / Admire

Upon accepting the quest, Maya Kukulo kicked Zhang Yang out of her tent. Fortunately, it wasn't literal.

Zhang Yang headed to Tulong Kukulo before anything else, having his reputation at 'respectful', he could finally buy something from the reputation shop.

[Roasted Meat] (Consumable)

Use: Recovers 8,000 HP and 4,000 Mana in 30 seconds. Can only be used under non-combat situation, any movement or entering combat would disrupt the consuming effect.

Required: Centaur reputation - Friendly.

Level required: 30

Bound on acquire.

The [Sweet Bread] in Zhang Yang's backpack heals 2,000 HP and 1,000 mana points, which is vastly inferior! Without having second thoughts, he immediately threw the [Sweet Bread] away and purchased two sets of [Roasted Meat].

One set of [Roasted Meat] contained 200 pieces, so 400 pieces should last him for a while. He was mainly limited by the space of the backpack,

he could not afford to have the snacks occupying all the space. The price for one set is 2 gold coins, which is already equal to 10 dollars.

[Powerful Whetstone] (Consumable)

Use: Use a weapon on it, increases critical strike rate by 1%.

Requirement: Respectful centaur reputation.

Required level: 30

Bound on acquire.

But, although the [Powerful Whetstone] looks promising, it's effect was still not as good as the [Level 2 Whetstone]. Because, even skills that had the highest damage output such as [horizontal sweep] and [destructive smash], would only range between 1,586 – 1,701. 1% of that was only equivalent to 15-17 points. On the other hand, the [Level 2 Whetstone] increases 20 damage points at most, so it was still more effective than the [Powerful Whetstone]

However, as Zhang Yang updates his equipment, the addition of a 1% critical strike rate that the [Powerful Whetstone] offers will surpass the effects of the [Level 2 Whetstone]. Any item that adds effect by percentage are categorized as progressive type items, where the higher the basic stats, the higher the value will become after the amplification based on the percentage presented.

Without hesitating, he bought the [Powerful Whetstone]. This place is far off, it isn't easy to travel here, so purchasing a set and depositing them into the bank for the moment until there is a need for them can save him the trouble of traveling back to this location.

After the necessary preparations, Zhang Yang summoned his [Skeletal War Horse] and traveled all the way down to the bottom of the valley.

The place was fortified with guards, not only with a dozens of sturdy and strong centaur guard, but also with rows of spiked wooden walls, it was truly amazing. A few days back, Zhang Yang came by and he was held back by the guards there. That made him believed that they were actually guarding the [Fountain of the Souls] all along!

“Human warrior, you are hereby declared qualify to enter the battleground!” While Zhang Yang was riding by, one of the centaur guard shouted at him, saying that, “Hey, human, you better not die in there! Rumors told me that you have bested many centaurs, but those aren’t elites! The greatest centaur warrior is standing right in front of you! When you come back alive, I shall teach you a thing or two about the true strength of the centaur!”

“Pui, the greatest centaur warrior is me, Bala Kukulo!”

“Bullsh*t it is, I dare to swear on the name of the prettiest Maya Kukulo, Kukulo, Chief of the Centaur Tribe, only I, Nianba Kukulo, am the greatest Warrior of all centaurs!”

The centaurs were in dispute of who is the greatest, shouting among each other.

Zhang Yang rode past the level and entered a brand new area.

This area is actually a part of the valley too! The centaur camp was located in the valley corner of a gourd. The area was divided into two parts, the front half and the back half of the valley, and the level is located just in between!

But, at the moment he entered the back half of the valley, Zhang Yang instantly felt a strong silent murderous intent! Not far from him, there were hundreds of centaur warriors formed in a straight line of defense, battling and fending off a variety of undead creatures. There were many kinds of undead creatures, a variety of beasts, and there was even undead centaur warriors among them!

It was obvious that the centaurs had the upper hand of the situation. With centaur warriors in the front line sweeping the undead army with their spears, the centaur archers can focus on releasing their arrows onto their enemies from afar. Moreover, the spawning undead creatures are just normal grade monsters, with not much HP on them. Before they could even touch the front line, they had already lost half of their HP, a few more stabs and slices from the spears, finished them off swiftly.

Suddenly, an undead creature with a very huge body slowly approached

from afar, it looked humanoid, albeit at least five meters tall, and being obese as f*ck. It's belly was hollowed out, and puddles of green slime constantly dripped out from the hole. Other than the two normal arms, there was a limb hanging right behind it's back. Upon a closer look, it was apparent that this monster's body was stitched together with the metal wires. On the way to the front line, it left behind puddles of green gas, which took a pretty long period of time to slowly disappear.

[Amalgamation of Hate] (Elite, undead)

Level: 35

HP: 1000000

The Amalgamation of Hate had a vast area of aggro. Unexpectedly, it had already entered into combat mode with the centaurs being 30 meters away, increasing it's movement speed, spilling the green slime on the ground all the way through.

The centaur warriors had also taken note Amalgamation of Hate, surrounding the monster up to initiate their attacks. However, the moment when centaur warriors got near the Amalgamation of Hate, they were receiving a damage of '-200' for every second they stood around that monster.

As Zhang Yang was gazing upon the scene, he discovered that the monster was constantly surrounded by an effect, it was called [decay aura].

[Decay Aura]: Causes 200 natural damage in every seconds to targets within a range of 2 meter diameter.

So it is an aura!

An aura is a kind of very special skill, and it was unobtainable from instructors, this kind of skill can only be acquired through skill books. Aura does not differentiate professions, in theory, any players with any professions or classes can learn any kind of aura skills. But the truth is, the aura skill books have minimum rate of falling, making the number of players with aura skills poorly low!

In conclusion, there are two types of aura: One affects oneself and the friendlies around, the other affects the enemies around.

For example, [vigor aura] increase 10% strength of the friendlies within the range of 30-meter radius, and for the other example, [weaken aura] lowers 5% damage dealt by enemies within the range of 30-meter radius.

If any wild dungeon party can get a player with aura skill, it would lower the difficulty of the dungeon by 10% at least! Therefore, players with aura skills were like big bosses, they were very popular no matter where they went, every single one of them will be have their *sses kissed up to the top of the world!

Aura skill books will only fell from bosses that were at least level 50 or above. Therefore, Zhang Yang knew that it was extremely rare to see a level 35 Amalgamation of Hate having aura effect around it!

Chapter 142: The Fall of the Evil Necromancer Zac

What's weird should remained weird.

Zhang Yang unsheathe his blade and dashed towards the monster, joining the centaur fight against the weird Amalgamation of Hate.

“-160!”

The moment Zhang Yang got close to the monster, Zhang Yang received a damage tick.

Amalgamation of Hate was an elite tiered monster, which was far stronger than a regular monster. However, no matter how strong it was, it could not last for long under the focus fire of so many NPC and Zhang Yang's powerful attacking power. It died swiftly.

‘Ding! You have killed Amalgamation of Hate. Reward based on damage contribution: Obtained 27491 Experience Points. Obtained 50 Centaur Reputation Points!’

It was a pity that the monster only dropped several [Cotton Cloth]s and 78 Copper coins, and it definitely did not drop the skill book that Zhang Yang was hoping for.

After killing Amalgamation of Hate, all the centaurs returned to their original posts and reformed the absolute defense line. There, they continued to hold back the endless incoming spectres. However, after the battle, the centaurs had sustained heavy damage and had only little HP left. They could not last long against a single wave of spectral assault. Casualties started to increase as more and more spectres engaged the centaurs.

Zhang Yang took the liberty to attack the spectres on his own. The incoming spectres were so weak that Zhang Yang had only need to slash 2 to 3 times to kill one. However, he only obtained experience points and no reputation points.

To obtain the required reputation level to “Worship” Zhang Yang would need to kill 240 Amalgamations of Hate to obtain the required reputation points. The worst part of this quest was that the spawn time for each Amalgamation of Hate was 15 minutes. In an hour he would only encounter 4 of them, which would only earn him 200 Reputation Points.

To properly sum this up, excluding the time he eats and sleep, he would need to fight for at least 15 hours a day to farm 3,000 Reputation Points, for at least 4 days continuously. To make matters worse, the monsters around here were all spread everywhere. Once they appear, the centaurs will immediately react to their aggro and fight. Zhang Yang wanted to draw them all together and kill them all in one go. However, since they were drawn in by the centaurs, he was unable to lure them all and had to fight them one by one. It took him really long to simply grind and thus reducing his grinding speed tremendously. What that would usually take him a day has now turned into 2 days to gain a single level.

What could have been done, had been done. There was nothing else that could make things quicker.

4 days passed by in a blink of an eye and Zhang Yang had managed to raise his Reputation to Admire and his level to 36 with 2% experience points.

After submitting his quest, the most beautiful centaur in the camp had been ignoring Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang tried to talk with every NPC with a name tag but none of them had any quests for Zhang Yang to complete. Zhang Yang then proceeded on to talk to Tulong Kukulo and bought the [Recipe: Beginner Power Potion] and learned it. Zhang Yang could not find any other quest around and had to rely on killing Amalgamations of Hate to further raise his reputation. Zhang Yang felt that killing monsters alone for 4 days straight was as dull as ever. However, he was able to procure the recipe out of the mess. It made him slightly satisfied.

[Beginner Power Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increases all attack by 20%. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

Note: The cooldown period is shared among all other types of potions when using a potion.

Level Requirement: 30

Zhang Yang was unable to return to the city, thus he entrusted Han Ying Xue and the rest of his friends to help him buy ingredients for the power potion and mailed them to him. Once “Dwarf's Warning” was gone, he could immediately start making the potion to sell them at his Little Merchandize Shop.

It had been several days since he had returned to White Jade Castle. He would not have known how the shop was doing. Was Natalie harassed by any nerds or bypassers? Luckily, Zhang Yang had premade an absurd amount of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to begin with. It should last for a few days since the demand was not that high. Since Natalia was instructed to buy all sorts of ingredient and sell them at the price similar to the ones in the auction house, the shop would not be empty for a while now.

After what seemed to be 7 days of hacking and slashing, Zhang Yang was already sick of the sight of spectres. By then, his centaur Reputation had reached Admire at 20999/21000 to Worship. No matter what he did, it just would go any higher! At first, he had not realized it. He was so rigid and robotic-like that he had spent 2 hours wasting his energy and time on killing more Amalgamations of Hate. By the time he realized, it was already too late.

How does he get the last point of Reputation?

Zhang Yang turned back around to Maya Kukulo. There, he found a yellow exclamation mark hovering on top of her head!

Finally! If he could complete that one quest, he could raise his reputation to Worship! And only then, he could buy that [Bottle of Holy Water] and completed the “Fountain of Soul” quest. He could then finally be rid of the annoying “Dwarf's Warning” and return to White Jade Castle!

With tears rolling down his cheek, he had been circling around for god knows how long! He can finally see a glimmer of hope of returning home!

“Human. Your timing is just right. I have an important task which only you could complete!” Maya Kukulo raised her head and spoke loudly when she saw Zhang Yang.

“O great chief! Please!”

“After sending off my precious warrior to search for clues, I have obtained information at the price of their precious life!”

Maya Kukulo faced darkened in rage as she continued her speech. “I have found out that these evil spectres were the creation of a certain Evil Necromancer! He is hiding deep in the valley! In the Castle Ruins!”

“Castle Ruins? Chief?” Zhang Yang tried to clarify.

“A few hundred years ago, we, the centaurs were a mighty race. We were split into 17 tribes but were united nevertheless, under one king! The brave Jean Lostark! However, like thunder, an earthquake struck the castle without any warning. The castle was destroyed and sunk into the earth!”

Maya Kukulo suddenly turned solemn. “The great king and all of his successors had perished! After the incident, all 17 tribe leaders started to fight for the king’s position. Eventually, the war and torn us apart! The kingdom was lost! Yet we, the Kukulo tribe remained here! To serve the king and protect the Castle Ruins!”

“That wretched Evil Necromancer! How dare he disturb the souls of the palace! He had turned them into restless spectres! I will never forgive his impudence!” Maya shook with fury. “That one named Zac, the Evil Necromancer must die!”

‘Ding! Maya Kukulo has a quest for you: To Protect the Holy Land. Will you accept it?’

‘Ding! Main Story Quest: Hunt down the Evil Necromancer Zac! Completed. The proceeding quest had been activated: The Last Strike!’

[The Last Strike] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Kill the Evil Necromancer Zac! The sinner of the world has to pay for his crime! Bring your friends! Zac is very strong!

Progress: Kill Evil Necromancer Zac 0/1

Zhang Yang was stunned. He would have never thought that he would stumble upon the main story quest here! After he recovered from the surprise of having unexpectedly progressed in the main story quest, he quickly accepted the quest offered by Maya Kukulo.

“Hey! Stupid Yu! I saw the main story quest suddenly changing!”

“Noob tank! What did you do? Why did the main story quest suddenly change?”

“Little Yang. Did you notice any changes with the main story quest?”

Everyone’s private messages came flooding in.

Zhang Yang instinctively added all of them into his party and told them the situation.

“I’ve just discovered a quest to kill Zac. That was why the search for Zac quest had completed. I found him! Now it has turned into a kill! Get over here! Let’s complete the main story quest!”

“Little Yang. Sky High and The Dominators have already started to explore the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior Hardcore Mode! If we get distracted with the main story quest, we might not be able to claim the First Clear Achievement!” said Fatty Han worriedly.

Zhang Yang smiled. “It’s not that big of a deal. Honestly, the Castle Interior is very strong. I think the guilds might need to take about 10? 20 days maybe, to even try defeating it. Let’s leave it there. For now, we’ll complete the main story quest and get awesome rewards! We might even get stronger to kill the dungeon boss easier!”

Even though Sun Xin Yu did not trigger the main story quest, Zhang Yang had still invited her to the party! Zhang Yang had let them complete the “Escort Bangar Kukulo” quest to gain a certain amount of reputation. Otherwise, they could not enter the Kukulo Centaur tribe area safely without having their Reputation status changed from Hostile to Unfriendly.

The escort quest could be done with many people simultaneously. The party, except Zhang Yang, had gathered at the Sivar Hills and waited at the path where they would stumble upon the wimpy Bangar Kukulo. When they had arrived at the tribe camp, they saw what the Reputation Shop items have and lit up in excitement. They even scolded Zhang Yang for not telling them earlier.

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes. He had actually invited them to come over to join him several days ago but neither of them had expressed their willingness to join. Yet now they are pushing the blame on him instead! Zhang Yang was completely dumfounded but he was too lazy to even argue with them.

Zhang Yang checked the quest and found that the rest of the party had been able to proceed on with the quest "To Protect the Holy Land". He could not help but felt a little cheated. He had spent so much time and energy just to farm the ridiculous amount of Reputation only to have the party leech off from him!

[To Protect the Holy Land] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Kill the Evil Necromancer Zac and protect the Holy Land of the Centaurs!

Progress: Kill the Evil Necromancer Zac 0/1

Both quests overlapped in mutual conclusions, both of them required the killing of Zac! Thankfully neither of the quests asked them to submit the beheaded head of Zac, or else they would not know which one to submit first!

The time was already 5pm. Zhang Yang prompted the party to log out of the game and to reconvene at 7pm after having their dinner!

Zhang Yang logged off as well. He took off the gaming helmet and stretched his neck to the left and right, rubbing his eyes. He was a little tired after all. He blinked his eyes and searched for his wallet. He picked up the flatten leather pouch and open it, only to find he had only 7 pieces of 10 dollar bills. Even though he had at least 8 digits in his savings account, he could not use his card to purchase box lunch for a street stall.

70 dollars was enough for him to last for at least 5 to 6 days. After that, he had to visit the bank to withdraw some hard-cold cash.

“It is time for me to change a place to live? Or perhaps I should get a car?”

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had entered the A-tier Professional League and became one of the few rich men in China, having a large summer house somewhere and a luxurious car. Truth be told, Zhang Yang had missed that life. More importantly, he missed the car. Which man in the world would not love cars?”

“Argh...perhaps some other time! There will be another chance for me to earn a fortune when the Level 50 dungeon Flame Poison Land is released! The more capital I have, the better money I could make!”

Level 50 Flame Poison Land party dungeon was the second dungeon that was used to farm the game’s second set-equipment. Outside the dungeon, there will be an NPC standing at the entrance. He will grant a buff that will grant immunity to Flame Poison at the cost of a [Solid Iron bar]

No matter how strong the party is, without the buff, setting foot inside the dungeon alone would kill you, let alone fighting the boss!”

Which is why [Solid Iron Bar] was a must-have item if you wanted to raid the dungeon!

Chapter 143: New Member

[Solid Iron Bar] is a composite item. The materials needed to craft a [Solid Iron Bar] are 100 [Iron Bar], and they had to go through a process known as Smelting, similar to its real-life counterpart.

As this goes, the original price of [Iron Bar] will increase. The highest price for 200 bars was 50 gold coins. The price will fluctuate and eventually stabilize at 10 gold coins for 200 bars later. This is part of the game's system to prevent gold coin inflation.

After an update patch in the future, [Iron Bar] sorted out to 200 bars a stack compared to the previous 20 bars a stack. So far in the game, a majority of the players had already reached level 30 on average. Their Profession must have reached to at least Amateur or higher. [Iron Bar] was a basic ingredient that would not have any demand as players' Profession level rose. As the demand drops, the price would drop as well. Since the item had been lacking in demand and interest, the prices that once begun 5 gold coins for 200 bars had dropped to 2 gold coins for 200 bar.

However, the moment players started to take part in the Flame Poison Land dungeon raid, the price for [Iron Bar] would be raised up to 10 gold coins for 200 bars! That's 5 times the original value!

If Zhang Yang invested 40,000,000 gold coins, the money will multiply itself to 200,000,000!

The only problem Zhang Yang faced now was the shortage in storage! The total storage unit that Zhang Yang had so far were his own personal bank storage at 400 slots, the guild's secondary storage at 1000 slots, and the Little Merchandize Shop storage at 1000 slots. All of them would total up to 2400 slots of storage space.

Zhang Yang had first planned to buy a few more storage slots for the guild storage. He also planned to level up the Little Merchandize Shop to increase its storage space. He was willing to spend all his money to upgrade it all! The more he spends, the more he stands to earn!

However, the guild storage expansion fees will be at 1,000,000 gold coins per page1. Even though the exchange rate of the game currency to real life currency has dropped to 1:4, it was at least 4,000,000 dollars! That's a crazy amount of money for expansion! Since the rate will continue to drop even further, Zhang Yang thought that he should wait for a while before he purchase any inventory expansion. Until the inventory space was completely used up, he should not make any hasty decision.

7pm, and the party of 6 logged in together at the same time. The team then proceeded to venture deeper into the valley. So far, the team status was: Zhang Yang at level 39, Fatty Han at level 40, Hundred Shots at level 38, Sun Xin Yu at level 40, Han Ying Xue at level 40, and Wei Yan Er at level 40.

After the team entered the entrance of the valley, they were greeted with a large cave entrance. The inside of the cave was so dark that they could not see how deep it went.

“WAAAA...”

“KYAAA...”

Just as when Zhang Yang was about to signal the party to go in, they heard a sudden wail, followed by two loud “Thud!”. Two mangled, bloody bodies of players dropped right in front of them.

The party instinctively looked up at the peak of the valley. The height of the little hill was at least 200 to 300 meters tall. Anyone would have their head rolling off their body if they had a fall from that height!

The two deceased had already released their souls to respawn. The bodies that remained there still had their name tag hovering over.

Endless Starlight, Dwarf Defender, Male, Level 38

Daffodil Daydream, Human Pyromancer, Female, Level 39

Neither of them were in a guild.

Zhang Yang was stunned! It's them!

Endless Starlight! The outstanding character that was sought out by

many super guild as the best tank there is! It turned out that Endless Starlight did not want to leave his own guild and it led to the alliance of 3 super guilds to sabotage his guild to the point where he had deleted his account.

Daffodil Daydream was ranked last in the Top 10 Spellcaster in the entire China server in Zhang Yang's previous life. She was one of the top players in China where everyone would know her name!

In this turn of events, Zhang Yang would have never thought that he would meet these two superstars here! What sort of twisted, weird, and crazy story would lead them to fall out of the sky?!

Zhang Yang quickly cried out to Han Ying Xue, "Revive them!"

Curious, Han Ying Xue was lost in her own thoughts, thinking as of how these two weirdos would fall down from the peak. She quickly cast [resurrection] and revived the two of them.

20 seconds later, the two of them were revived one after the other. However, once Daffodil opened her eyes and saw Endless Starlight standing in front of her, she immediately cast a [fire blast] and almost killed Endless Starlight who only had 20% of HP at upon revival.

"Stop! Stop! Stop!" Zhang Yang quick stepped in and stood in front of Endless Starlight to protect him. "I don't know what kind of fight you guys had before, but why do you have to kill?"

Daffodil had a beautiful appearance but what stood out the most was her long, slim legs that could intoxicate any one with that kind of fetish to dub her as the "Leg Goddess".

Angry and puffing steam out of her nostrils, Daffodil strafed left and right to get past Zhang Yang in order to get a clear shot. But when Zhang Yang proved that he was much better at covering the poor man, she gave up and finally spoke.

"I was fighting a boss at the peak when suddenly, this guy appeared out of nowhere and was under my feet! I was too surprised to even realize that I was running away in the wrong direction! That was how I fell down from

the top of that cliff!”

Zhang Yang turned around and his back facing Daffodil and asked Endless Starlight. “What’s your story?”

Endless Starlight was staring back and forth between Daffodil, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er before he realized that Zhang Yang talking to him.

“I was at the top of the hill taking a nice walk. You know...to explore the area. And then! Just like that! As if the goddess had descended upon me! There, standing right in front of my eyes were two perfect, beautiful, flawless legs, the best I have ever seen! I chased after the miracle that was bestowed to me and before I knew it, I was dead...”

The moment Endless Starlight had mentioned “goddess” Zhang Yang and the girls were already frowning.

Fatty Han was laughing loudly and patted Endless Starlight’s shoulder and said, “Brother! You’re one brave one! You have my respect!”

“Hahahahaha! It’s nothing really!” Endless Starlight replied with a pervert smile on his face. “To chase after the perfect beauty is every man’s dream!”

“Well said! Brother!”

“We’re the same!”

“HAHAHAHAHAHA” both of them laughed even louder.

This...this was the guy? The man who was fought over 3 super guilds? The one who had raged quit the game? The Endless Starlight?! Zhang Yang could not help but to have thousands of doubts in his mind. He turned around to face Daffodil Daydream. “Sigh...Just...Just forget about this stupid fool. It’s not worth your anger.”

Daffodil stomped the ground angrily and screamed. “Why shouldn’t I? That bastard had me waste a boss kill! I have to kill him! At least once!”

“Kill me! O goddess! I would die for you!” said Endless Starlight while kneeling down with a face of ecstasy.

Just as she was about to cast [fire blast], Daffodil shuddered and failed the cast, frightened by his perverted expression.

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, “Alright! Keep calm guys! Daffodil, it’s just a boss! How about this? We are actually on our way to kill a Gray-Silver boss for our quest. How about we team up for a bit?”

Everyone on Zhang Yang’s party was stunned. They turned to look at Zhang Yang, thinking that he might have an interest in Daffodil Daydream.

Indeed, Zhang Yang was interested in Daffodil, but not in that kind of way!

She was one of the Top 10 Spellcasters of all China! If Zhang Yang could recruit her to his side, his future would be brighter than ever! He could obtain all First Clear Achievements! He could win Professional Leagues! She was the big bag of gold found at the end of the rainbow!

“Gray-Silver boss?! Woah! I want! Invite me! Invite me!” Before Daffodil could react Endless Starlight had already crying out like Wei Yan Er would.

Zhang Yang noticed that Daffodil had showed a slight interest in his suggestion but did not manage to react in time. Zhang Yang smiled and sent them both a party invite.

‘Ding! Player Endless Starlight had joined the party!’

‘Ding! Player Daffodil Daydream had joined the party!’

Both of the accepted the invitation rather quickly.

“Hmm? Aren’t you guys the party that got those First Clear Achievement?” said Endless Starlight as he got excited. Other than Fatty Han, the rest of the party had picked up Zhang Yang’s habit and hid their personal profile information. Daffodil was more subtle than Endless Starlight but her eyes betrayed her awe.

Zhang Yang laughed it off. “Let’s go!”

He tried to share the quest [To Protect the Holy Land] to the two new members but neither of them could accept the quest. Looks like they must

complete the prerequisite escort quest and raise their Centaur's Reputation to be able to share the quest.

As the party moved into the dark pathway, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were position at the most front as both of them were tanks.

"Damn son! I'm so jealous of you! Look, you have the ice-cool lady, a boobalicious babe, and a little spicy loli! Holy cow! I'd wish I had the girls like you have! Imagine living the life, surrounded by girls! Aww Yiss! I would not want to be a king without his harem!" Endless whispered to Zhang Yang.

"..." Zhang Yang was completely speechless.

"I'll tell ya! My dream is to make my own harem guild! Every day, I would bring those girls along with me into the dungeon and fight those monsters! Dude! That's the dream!" said Endless Starlight with a strong sense of justice.

Zhang Yang was stunned. This guy...Did he delete his account because the guild was disbanded, and he could not have any girls by his side? Pfft... if that was the case then, it much have been a real shocker!

The moment Zhang Yang had laid eyes on these two new members of the party, he already had plans to recruit them into Lone Desert Smoke. Endless Starlight was a strong tank. He could lead a separate team as an exploration team! Daffodil Daydream on the other hand was to fill the empty slot of the main party, she could be one of the core member in the battle team for the Professional League!

As they walked for about 7 to 8 minutes into this dark pathway, the party had walked out of the darkness and into the bright day light. They were standing by a huge hillside. There, by the side of the hill, stood a majestic castle, albeit in ruins. The entrance door of the castle had the carvings of two huge Centaurs. One of them was wielding a spear and was in an attacking stance. The other was drawing a huge a long bow. Both of them looked like they were gods immortalized into art. Surrounding the entire hillside were burning torches stabbed into the ground to illuminate the surrounding.

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang unsheathe his sword and took the lead.

‘Ding! You have entered the Centaur Castle! The Castle has 5 floors. The Evil Necromancer Zac is located at the highest floor of the Castle! You have to survive each test at each floor to defeat the Evil Necromancer Zac!’

Everyone’s mini-map display had changed into the castle interior.

“This is the land of the dead slumbers...Anyone who dares to intrude shall die!” A husky voice echoed from afar. No one could tell whether the voice belonged to a female or male.

“Damn. This place is spooky. I’m getting the creeps here!” said Endless Starlight. He had successfully taken over Fatty Han’s role of being the party’s most annoying, talkative person.

Everyone proceeded further into the massive castle and was shocked to what they saw. There were so many monsters around they could not contain their tense intake of breath upon sighting them. The place was so huge that it could fit 10 thousand people and still have the space to play soccer! The worst part of this place was that it was completely filled with monsters, squeezed tightly like sardine in a can!

The monsters around here only comprised of one type. They were all centaurs, presumably the royal guard. They were all undead, walking skeleton, some of them still having rotting flesh dangling from their skeletons.

[Centaur Royal Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 40

HP: 80,000

The HP was not much but their numbers were.

“Nice! There’s so many monsters here! Grinding would be a piece of cake!” Fatty Han cried out excitingly. Even since they had reach level 30, Fatty Han had never got the chance to be enlisted into the Level Ranking Board. Since there were so many monsters around to kill, the amount of

experience point to be obtained here was luxurious!

Zhang Yang stopped and thought for a moment before saying, “Fatty, use [barrage] and get the monster’s aggro to start the fight. Run behind me after that!’

“Ok!” Fatty Han immediately cast [barrage] and attack the furthest region. A wave of arrows was shot into the sky and landed on the monster.

“-307!”

“-310!”

“-301!”

...

Various damage text floated over and over 10 monsters stomped their hooves and charged towards Fatty Han.

“Good lord! How did you pull so many monsters! I can’t handle that much!” Endless Starlight cried. He thought that Zhang Yang and the rest of the party knew he was a Defender, who excelled in mass crowd control, that was why the party had pulled that many monsters in one go!

Even though he was a future super star, but as of now, he was just a new player who had only joined the game for only 2 months. The moment he saw there were more than 10 monsters charging towards the party, his heart sank. However, he did not budge from his stance, as a tank, even if he had to die, he must die in the front line!

Zhang Yang saw how Endless Starlight was behaving and laughed. “Honey dear, give me a shield!”

Han Ying Xue gave Zhang Yang a stare, but nevertheless waved her hand, casting a [holy shield] on him.

Zhang Yang activate [blood rage] and gained 30 Rage points. He quickly used [charge] and dashed towards the incoming monsters.

[thunder strike]!

[horizontal sweep]!

With two AoE attack skill unleashed, all incoming monsters were inflicted with “-262!”, and “-1550!”. Every monster that had their aggro on Fatty Han instantly turned towards Zhang Yang.

“Start the attack!”

Zhang Yang commanded. The verbal command was for Endless and Daffodil. Everyone else had already got used to Zhang Yang’s attacking pattern. They would automatically attack without him needing to command.

Endless Starlight was attacking the monsters but when he noticed that neither of the monster had their aggro on him, he cried out. “Zhan Yu! You’re one strong dude! You could still handle all the aggro properly when there are so many monsters! Honestly, I’m so confused right now! Which class was the one supposed to be good at handling mass aggro control again?”

Daffodil Daydream was being cautious. She was so afraid that her attack would OT. However, after one [Rain of Fire], the monster had completely ignoring her! She was both surprised and happy at the same time. She was surprised that Zhang Yang could handle the aggro so well after a Pyromancer attacked. As a high DPS class player, she had never felt the joy of casting all her demolishing spells without the worry of OT!

Zhang Yang was not standing statically in the field, instead, he used [thunder smash] to slow the monsters around before rounding them up together to maximize the damage caused by the team’s AoE skill. While he was doing that, he used [block] to nullify the monster’s attack. Still, he was taking some light damage, but he was not worried for even a second as there was a super healer standing behind him!

If he had to, he could unleash all his skill and could still heal over what Han Ying Xue could!

Endless Starlight charged into the fight as well. As a professional tank, he never broke the rhythm. He activated [devotion], [justice bash], [strong hammer] and a series of AoE skills to attack the monsters.

1Page: Page here refers to the windows tab. Usually a tab would have a

fixed amount of storage slots. Zhang Yang had already expanded page which means one page will be 500 inventory slots.

Chapter 144: Another One!

Endless Starlight's first thought was, once all the skills were out, even if he could not capture all the monster's aggro, he could at least capture 3 monster's attention. However, he was surprised that not a single monster had turned to face him!

Pro!

As a tank, especially a Defender tank, Endless Starlight understood clearly the difficulty at maintaining a mass aggro! As a Defender that was said to excel in mass aggro control, whenever he faced a large group of monsters, there was bound to be one or two monster that would slip pass his fingers and cause trouble to the attacking players. It cannot be helped, even if a Defender is supposed to be strong at mass control, they had only [devotion] and [spike shield], the rest of a Defender's skills could only hit a maximum of 3 targets. That was why when a Defender and pulled a group of monsters, he must not focus on one but all monsters simultaneously. A Defender had to switch his target constantly to make sure that all monster had an equal amount of aggro.

Zhan Yu here on the other hand was an odd existence. Not only he had managed to prevent anyone from OT, he could even prevent a Defender from getting ahold of any monster's aggro! This guy is extremely strong, beyond epic proportions!

Even though the Centaur Royal Guards were elite monster, they did not last long when everyone was attacking together! Since players obtain their AoE skill at level 20, as long as the tank could hold on to the monster's aggro firmly, they could attack to their heart content, and increase their killing efficiency to its maximum! One minute later, monsters started to drop dead, after another 30 seconds, all 16 monsters had died and dropped the first battle loot.

'Ding! You have kill Centaur Royal Guard. Obtained 10,050 Experience Points (50 point party bonus!)'

'Ding! You have kill...'

Everyone heard the repetitive rings of the notification as their experience point rose up like the beanstalk. Everyone had obtained at least 160,000 experience points!

“Woah! My experience points rose up like a rocket!” Daffodil Daydream smiled from ear to ear. Her skills were good. She had been depending on the AoE skill [Rain of Fire] to kill monsters at a fast pace. However, she could only handle 7 to 8 normal tier monster at most! The experience point was not fast compared to this. No matter how fast she could skill, this method was much faster than her working alone! These were elite monsters! Their HP was at least 20 times the HP of a regular normal monsters. The experience points she had just obtained was at least 20 times more!

Fatty Han laughed. “Haha! When we had done with these monsters here! I can get myself into the Level Ranking Board again!”

So far, in White Jade Castle, the first place was held by Ashen Reborn at level 42, Puppy Soldier from at level 41 being the last. Do not underestimate them for the fact that they were only 2 levels ahead of Fatty Han. Once players had reached the level 40 threshold, gaining another level from there was even harder and ever. Under normal circumstances, player would have to at least spend 5 days to gain just one level!

The fastest way to gain levels was to fight and kill monsters in groups! If those monsters were elite tier, the leveling speed will be much faster. That was why Fatty Han was so confident.

Zhang Yang grinned and cried out. “Fatty, do your thing again!”

Since the first wave of monster was rather smooth, Fatty Han tried a little better and aim [barrage] at the center among the crowds of monsters. This would not only attract the monsters that are attacked, it would also trigger the nearby monsters. This time, he had pulled 21 monsters.

Zhang Yang turned to Endless Starlight and said, “Starlight, let’s compete. Let’s see who could pull more monsters this time?” Professionals are all a little egoistical. If you want to convince them, you’ll have to

display a better performance than they could.

Zhang Yang had a few seconds head start at the first waves of monsters, and inflicted a good amount of aggro. This time, Starlight was confident. He strafed along with Zhang Yang side by side. Even if he could not be as good as Zhang Yang, he could still hold on to several monster's aggro firmly.

He immediately replied, "Ok! But neither of us can use [provoke]!"

He then raised his shield in his hand and tossed the shield before he was anywhere near the monsters.

Zhang Yang nodded and activated [blood rage]. He gained 30 Rage and used [charge] after a few steps forward to get into range. The range of [charge] was shorter than [shield toss].

[horizontal sweep]!

With a single stroke, his damage output was instantly spiked! A Guardian's [shield oath] could provide additional 20% aggro value. Even if his attack were not aggro-inducing type, he had cause 1,000 over damage, his aggro value would be the same as other classes' 1,200 worth of damage aggro value!

Every monster around turned their heads to Zhang Yang instantly.

[thunder strike]! Slow!

Another chain of attacks was unleashed, all crowded and concentration like fireworks in the sky! Zhang Yang lead the monsters around circling.

Starlight was frustrated at his failure. No matter how many skills he threw out, not a single monster would even turn their head to look at him! As if he was reliving a psychological nightmare that he experienced in his past, Starlight turned solemn.

Zhang Yang smiled warmly and said, "Starlight, do you know why all the monsters attack me instead?"

"..."

"That's because a tank efficiency depends not only on skills and

technique. You'll also need strong equipment to back you up! Even two of your attacks couldn't compare to one of mine! How do you expect the monsters to be lured towards you?!" Zhang Yang laughed.

Wei Yan Er laughed as well. "Hehe! You must have that kind of perverted face as well! That's why the monster won't even want to look at you! Unless you have the looks of a beauty lady like me, my cousin sister, Sister Sun, and this beautiful Daffodil lady here!"

Zhang Yang turned around and raised an eye brow. "Little brat! The rest are fine, but you're way too far from being a lady!"

Wei Yan Er could not help but to lower her head and stare at her own flat chest. She then got angry and bared her teeth at Zhang Yang.

"Yan Er, don't mind him! He is just a little boy! Only a little boy would pick a fight with little girls!" Han Ying Xue consoled her.

Wei Yan Er nodded but twitched her eyes when she felt that something was wrong with her cousin sister's statement. "Hey! Why'd you call me a little girl!?"

Everyone laughed happily and the tension in the air was dispersed and replaced with warm comradeship. After a while, the second wave of monsters were killed. This time, they were lucky. There were many Level 40 Black-Steel equipment. Even though the equipment were weak but they were at level 40! They could fetch a few gold coins in the Little Merchandize Shop!

Endless Starlight was not a numbskull. He understood what was Zhang Yang trying to explain to him. Yet, he sighed heavily. "My equipment is bad and I can't find a way to upgrade them. Even time I joined a dungeon, I would find a random party. Let's not even mention a field boss!"

He would have been safe if he had not mention field boss. But when he did, Daffodil twitched and almost blasted him away with a [fire blast].

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Our guild, Lone Desert Smoke had recently decided to build a secondary dungeon raiding team. You could try and be the main tank for that team!"

The moment Zhang Yang had said that, the rest of his gang raised an eyebrow. Since when we were building a second team?

Zhang Yang noticed them but remained quiet.

I had that thought when I saw Endless Starlight!

Endless Starlight was stunned and expressed a face that was both happy and suspicious.

Lone Desert Smoke was now at big hit in the community. They had successfully obtained 4 First Clear Achievement. Even though their standard operating procedure was not as strong and efficient as a super guild, they could still outperform their own expectations and raise on to the top and beyond! There were sayings among the players around that anyone who could join Lone Desert Smoke would be leaping in a huge gap of performance. There were even players from other major cities had sent their request for an interview to join the guild. As long as the guild would accept them into the guild, anyone would be willing to run from anywhere around the globe just to be in White Jade Castle.

However, under Zhang Yang's strict "Only Elites" rule, Lone Desert Smoke showed a slower expansion rate. Because of that, many players were proud to be in the guild. To them, it was a display of both power and capability!

However, a true professional would not just walk up to your door step and volunteer themselves to the guild. A diamond would shine bright on its own, as long as them could perform better than the rest of the players around, other guild would naturally send their invitation instead! So far, Lone Desert Smoke had recruited close to 2,000 players of high-level players, but neither of them were players that was one of the professionals Zhang Yang could recognized in his previous life.

However, at that moment, Endless Starlight was touched! Zhang Yang had expressed his sincerity! Even though the secondary dungeon raid party is not the best team, he was still offered a position as the second team main tank in the guild! This was an achievement better than he could ever have!

“Join us! Join our guild!” Striking the metal while it’s hot, Zhang Yang sent a guild invitation over with a warm smile.

Endless Starlight was already wavering; and when Zhang Yang had offered him a place among his side, he accepted it grudgingly.

Just like that, Zhang Yang had effortlessly obtained a strong future tank.

Next...

Zhang Yang turned around and faced Daffodil Daydream and smiled kindly.

“Daffodil, since you do not have a guild, why don’t you join us as well? We are playing a game, might as well get along together!”

Wei Yan Er had goosebumps the moment she saw Zhang Yang’s weird smile. “Noob tank, that kind of face are you wearing...You look like those weird uncles who goes around in their vans to kidnap little girls.”

“Nah...I think that he looked more like one of those pimps who kidnap young girls for their own business!” said Han Ying Xue.

Daffodil scoffed. “I do not wish to be in the same guild as that freak!”

Zhang Yang laughed lightly and desisted. Since he had the time of his life, he could slowly lure her in later.

Fatty Han continued to fire [barrage] and the party slowly proceed in deeper. Sun Xin Yu had gone off alone in stealth to search for the second-floor entrance. She came back after quite some time and reveal the location at the end of this floor! There was even a level 40 boss guarding it!

Everyone got excited when they know that there was a boss waiting for them! Level 40 boss means level 40 equipment!

The team killed and killed their way in. Every one put their backs into proceeding further down the floor but the monsters here was just too many for them to handle. They had fought until 12 midnight and had only cleared one third of the entire monsters around.

Zhang Yang had been hearing some sneezes from behind and found out

that the girls, especially Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue, and Daffodil Daydream had been sneezing. He then sighed worriedly and announced. “Alright, let’s call it a day! Let’s find a safe spot and log off then. We’ll continue this tomorrow!”

“Ok!” Even the men were shaking their heads, trying their best to stay awake this whole time. They would have skipped their bed time if they knew that the Castle had only one floor. It’s better to rest properly if they wanted to clear the entire Castle properly since there were 5 floors to go! Normally, there would be a mini-boss on every floor, and the last one on the 5th floor would be the last boss! If the rest of the floors were as jam packed as the first floor, the party would need to spend at least 3 to 4 days if they were to clear the entire Castle!

Zhang Yang had decided that it would be better for the party to have their proper rest. Tomorrow, they shall fight with all their might!

Chapter 145: Continuous Grinding

The next morning, Zhang Yang did his daily training and had his breakfast soon after. He visited the official site to read updates and news and the forums.

In the dungeon fight topic discussion, many guilds had posted their own battle results there to promote themselves and attract the attention of players and possible future alliances. Popularity is the main factor that would directly impact the revenue of a sponsored guild!

So far, everyone had started raiding the level 40 dungeon, Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior. Most of the post here in this discussion forum were about the bosses in the Castle Interior. About 5 days back, there were guilds that had started to gather level 40 players to raid the Hard mode of the Castle Interior dungeon to gather information and experience to facilitate the Hardcore mode.

So far, majority of the guilds around had already defeated the first 2 bosses of the Hardcore mode, and in the progress of defeating the third boss. Furthermore, the guild that have the first kill of the two bosses of the dungeon was Crimson Rage.

It looked like after Crimson Rage had successfully defeated Chavlos the Mountain Giant, their ability and strength had rose to a higher level. It enabled them to forcefully stand on top of other guild in the entire China server.

There was another discussion in the forum that had reports on each super guild's progress in the game. The report was rather in-depth; there was news on which guild has the last boss's first kill, news about which guild had the potential to claim the dungeon First Clear! The post was rather long and detailed; it contained a long discussion and explanation and summarized a prediction.

A player named "Martian Homeland" had predicted that the guild that will obtain the Castle Interior dungeon First Clear Achievement was Radiance. His reasons explained that the guild master, Sword of Light was

the main tank of the guild, and had strong skills and capabilities. A strong tank is the main factor to win the 5-man dungeon.

The next in line was Crimson Rage. This all-female guild has performed extraordinary in the first two bosses of the dungeon. They had the leading advantage and could raid the dungeon successfully if they could maintain their performance.

Next in line was The Glory, Yellow Flame, Sky High and so on. Lone Desert Smoke had only appeared after the 10th position.

According to Martian Homeland, he had high hopes for Lone Desert Smoke and had them placed at the third place. However, he explained that the recent quiet behavior of Lone Desert Smoke depicts that they had no intention to fight for the latest dungeon's First Clear Achievement! That was the reason why he had place Lone Desert Smoke down the ranking list. It even went even lower when Lone Desert Smoke did not perform any other significant actions!

His discussion had led to many players to take part in his discussion. There were many players who agreed to his explanation, and some others who presented a counter argument. In the argument, those players brought up the Marzerway's Lair. Initially, many other guilds were leading in advance and even managed to fight all the way into the last boss. Lone Desert Smoke were a little slower than the rest of the guild. However, when they started the dungeon, they had successfully conquered the entire dungeon in a day!

The argument example that the opposition side had triggered another argument from the government side, saying that Marzerway's Lair was a special case. The 5th stage of the final boss could only be beaten with the help of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Without it, no one could survive the stage. Lone Desert Smoke party had defeated the boss with the help of the potion instead of their own strength!

Lone Desert Smoke supporters started to counter back with their arguments. To begin with, did the Hardcore mode require any special item to successfully raid it? It is would, almost every guild that had reported

their progress would have reported about it! There was no new battle information about the dungeon for a few days now!

Both sides continued with their heated arguments. Neither of them showed any signs of backing down from their stance. The post got larger and had already exceeded 4,000 comments and posts!

Zhang Yang smiled a little. He checked the time and logged into the game at 9am sharp. Once he was in the game, he saw Fatty Han and Endless Starlight was at a corner talking about something. A fat guy and a skinny dude was an odd combination but both of their faces showed the same pervert grin. Looks like both of them were getting along just fine. Zhang Yang thought that they might work together perfectly when they start leading the secondary party.

Zhang Yang walked close and could hear a glimpse of their conversation.

“...and that is why a rotten carrot and a pregnant woman is the same of a kind. Both of them were the result of delayed pull outs!”

That was what Zhang Yang had heard, coming out from Endless Starlight mouth.

Fatty Han was stunned was clearly impressed. “Deep! That’s deep bro!” He exclaimed, impressed.

“I know right!? Oh by the way, what were we talking about before we stray off topic?”

“...Good morning guys!”

“Erhm...Oh! Morning!” Both of them grinned sheepishly.

“...I’m not going to ask what you were talking about.”

After a while, Hundred Shots logged into the game. All four of the dudes gathered together at a corner of the field. After a night, all monsters that were killed yesterday had respawned, filling back the empty space around and causing the field to be as crowded as ever. If they were to walk a few steps forward, they would ultimately cause an uproar.

The girls were a little late. Zhang Yang had already asked them to gather here at 9am sharp. The earliest one to logged in was Daffodil Daydream at 9.09am. Sun Xin Yu was the second, at 9.11 am. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er logged in together at 9.15am.

Zhang Yang could not help but asked the ladies, “What happened? Didn’t I say 9am? What took you so long?”

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. “I need time for make-up. Duh!”

Zhang Yang was stunned, infuriated at her reply. “You are playing ‘God’s Miracle’. A VRMMOPRG! Why would you need to have make-up for?! What are you expecting? An audience watching you wearing the gaming helmet, lying on the bed doing nothing?!”

The moment he said that, all the girls were angered immediately. Zhang Yang instantly understood that everyone here was doing their make-up.

Sigh...Man and woman’s thinking were so different that they might start a war with each other like Alien Vs Predator!

“Argh...Forget about it, let’s go clear the monsters, shall we?”

If this place was not for a quest, it was still an excellent place to grind. The experience points here were really abundant! However, to properly utilize this field of experience points, one must have a strong team! You’ll need a strong tank to handle the monsters aggro and also a strong healer to support the tank!

After a series of attacks, monsters had dropped uncountable amounts of [Cotton Cloth], useless items, and coins. Naturally, tasked to pick items were Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue. Whoever dares to take the job away from them would be public enemy number 1! However, the number of monsters around were overwhelming both their inventories! Items besides equipment could be stacked up to 200 count a stack, however, equipment on one hand took up one slot each.

Unable to continue on, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had to let someone else to loot the items.

The collected goods were above average. There were many Black-Steel tier equipment but there were also a number of Level 40 Green-Copper! Both Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were players who have never seen such a luxurious loot were drooling endlessly. Zhang Yang had the equipment distributed to them but since neither of them had reached level 40, they had to keep their equipment in their inventory instead.

However, that was only a matter of time. Since the party had killed many monsters and gain a sum of experience points yesterday, even though it was not enough to level up, they were close to it. Daffodil would level up in just another hour while Endless Starlight would take a little longer. Once the party had cleared every monster in this floor, level 40 was just a few steps ahead.

After last night's experience, Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were able to match with the party of Zhang Yang and gang. Another hour passed, and Zhang Yang, Daffodil, Starlight, and Hundred Shots had leveled up.

Zhang Yang invested his SP on [block] and maximized the skill to level 10. Even though the skill had been nerfed exponentially, it was still a Guardian's bread and butter. It had to be the first skill to maxed before any other skill.

[Player: Zhan Yu] (Guardian)

Level: 40

HP: 6320

Defense: 360

Strength: 285

Melee damage: (729 – 781) x 110%

He had equipped the [Heart of Fallen Warrior]. Even though it did not have any bonus attributes, it possesses a skill that could temporary add 2000 Defense! Any boss below Gray-Silver tier would definitely deal nullified damage!

As the team fought with increasing synchronicity, Zhang Yang started to pulled more and more monsters. He started at 10 a time and rose to 20 and even 30 monsters in one breath!

However, once the monsters started to increase to 20 counts and more, Zhang Yang had to depend on a long cool down skill or an equipment skill to survive. Still, Zhang Yang had more skills hiding under his sleeves. If [shield wall] had been used, he could use [berserker's heal]. There were still other skills such as the Lover's Sword [lifesteal], [merlina's shadow], [Servant]'s [substitute], [heart of fallen warrior], and when everything had been used, [shield wall] would have already finished its cool down and its ready to use!

Be it his damage or his skills, Zhang Yang's outstanding performance left Endless Starlight breathless. He truly believed that Zhang Yang alone could have kill every monster here with all his skills. He had never known that a tank's potential could be raise to such a level! Zhang Yang's display of power had left him a burning passion! The little boy was too excited that, he imagine that he could be as strong, and as prominent as Zhang Yang, he could imagine his life being surrounded by beautiful girls slobbering all over him! Endless Starlight was not the only one, even those who were closer to Zhang Yang were left speechless.

"Noob tank! You're just unbelievable!" said Wei Yan Er with a straight face. "Ah! Don't misunderstand, I'm praising you!"

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and said, "In that case, let me return the favor. You are unbelievable! Your entire family is unbelievable!"

Han Ying Xue immediately interjected with both her hands on her waist. "Hey! Stupid Yu! Who's unbelievable now?"

Oh crap! He had forgot that this b*tch was in the same family as Wei Yan Er!

Zhang Yang quickly swung his sword around and cried, "L-Let's go! OOOOO!"

The team had started the floor at 9am and had only managed to clear half of the first floor at 12 noon. Zhang Yang called for the team to log out

and take 1 hour off to have their lunch and come back at 1pm sharp.

He quickly added a sentence before they disappeared. “Those of you that need to do your make-up thing. Please come 5 minutes earlier!”

Han Ying Xue snickered. “Dummy. One look and I know that you are completely oblivious to how a woman behave!”

Daffodil added. “Actually, I had started at 8.30am and I could not make it in time!”

Zhang Yang dripped cold sweat.

...

The team gathered back at 1pm sharp. Luckily the girls were punctual this time since neither of them needed to redo their make-up.

With the uncountable number of monsters killed and the luxurious amount of experience points to everyone, those who were already at level 40 had rose by a level while Endless Starlight and Hundred Shot who were the lowest levels among the party members had reached level 40.

The time was already 7pm and the team had only a certain distance to reach the end of the floor. They would probably need to clear a few more monsters to reach the first floor’s mini boss.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Everyone! Let’s have a break and eat dinner! Don’t come back with an empty stomach! The body is the most important asset! You’re not you when you’re hungry! Eat a snicker or something! I don’t want the team to make a mistake!”

After Zhang Yang had ordered the team to gathered back after one hour, everyone logged out and took a break.

Chapter 146: First Boss of the Castle

Right after dinner, the team gathered to clear the floors; all the way until they have met the first boss.

[Captain Guard Gail Baghdad, Legendary Centaur Hero] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 41

HP: 820,000

The male centaur was huge, with his white horse body, along with a muscular human half. With just one look, you would know that he was a formidable one, having emitting strong hostility and strength that even his attackers would doubt their capabilities. He wielded a long spear on his right hand, with a long bow hanging from his back.

His face stoic and rigid, with eyes glowing emerald flames burning evilly as the only noticeable movement around his complexion! Rather than feeling fear, Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were both excited as they had never encountered a Gray-Silver boss before.

Looking at the boss, Fatty Han asked, “Am I seeing things, or is that a spear AND a bow? I’m pretty sure players could only use only one type of weapon, no?”

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and replied, “That boss is a legendary hero. He could be the combination of both Warrior and Hunter classed!”

Fatty immediately became envious. “F*ck! How could that be? Damn! I wish players could have double classes as well!”

Zhang Yang laughed a little and said, “If players could have more and one class, then what’s the use of having class specializations in the first place?”

“How do we fight it?” Sun Xin Yu interjected abruptly. The Ice Queen did not like to waste time.

Only now, had Zhang Yang realized that the world of ‘God’s Miracle’

was just too large for him. Taking the Underground Tower as an example, Zhang Yang had never heard nor took part in the raid before in his previous life!

As to Sun Xin Yu's sudden interjection, Zhang Yang had to think for a moment before he could say anything. "As we can clearly see the boss possibly having weapons of two classes, I can only conclude that he should have both the Warrior and Hunter's skills!"

"There's no battle plan to formulate now. Let's give it a shot and have a better understanding after." Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and moved forward. The surrounding coast was clear; no more monsters around to interrupt the battle. As according to game mechanics, elite-tier monsters should have a 5-hour respawn time. They would not have to worry about monsters being around for the time being.

Gail Baghdad's effective aggro trigger range was rather large, and he smiled evilly at Zhang Yang even when they were 20 meters apart from each other. He stomped his hooves and thrust his spear at Zhang Yang.

"You dare to enter the domains of the Castle? Your living essence will pollute this land for the slumbering death! Begone!"

Zhang Yang used [charge].

[block]!

'-702!'

'-1,504!'

Gail Baghdad growled loudly as he effortlessly spun his spear in the air, as if it was weightless. With the speed of lightning, the spear burst forward. Zhang Yang could barely move away, but fortunately with his skills, he managed to dodge with his face only an inch away from the tip of the spear.

KIIIIInnnng!

The sound of sharp metal connecting to its target, accompanied with the sparks that were generated from his armor scraping.

‘-2,912!’

He was hit! Gail Baghdad’s physical attack was more than 4,000, and Zhang Yang still received approximately 3,000 damage even after accumulating the damage reductions.

Endless Starlight jumped in shock. “Damn! I always knew that a Gray-Silver boss was strong, but I never knew that it could be THIS strong! If I were to take that damage... I could die in just two seconds!”

Endless Starlight wore a full set of Level 30 Green-Copper equipment. Even with a shield, his HP was only at around 4,000.

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attacking team had begun their assault. Arrows, Fire Balls, all sorts of flashy skills were in the air, making what was once an empty sky into utter chaos in just a matter of seconds.

Wei Yan Er had a full Gray-Silver tier equipment on her, coupled with the ultra-slow two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds attack interval, which made her one time normal attack devastatingly powerful. With Zhang Yang’s [Cripple Defense] fully stacked on the boss, her damage could reach around 1,200! Excited with her all-time strength, she spammed her skills repeatedly while crying “OH YEA OH YEA” all the way.

Zhang Yang could not help but to be amused by her childish acts and said, “Little brat, it’s about time you’re returning to school now right? What a shame! Even though you still have holidays left, you’ll have return to school the day after tomorrow! You might not even make it to the last boss!”

“You villain!” cried the little girl as she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. She wielded her weapon tighter in her hand and used [tornado cleave], dealing 1,825 damage to the boss. In retrospect to a single attack damage count (skills or attack that attacks 1 instant of damage), her damage was much stronger than Zhang Yang’s [destructive smash] and [horizontal sweep] collectively. She had been following Zhang Yang all these time and obtained many “First Clear” Achievements that awarded her with plenty of skill points. She had invested them all to [tornado cleave].

[Tornado Cleave] (Level 9): Waves the weapon in your hands like a

tornado. Causes 160% melee damage to surrounding targets within 3 x 3 meters range.

Cost: 20 Rage.

Cooldown time: 6 Seconds.

Requirement: Melee Weapon.

When the skill is maxed out, the cooldown time will be reduced to 5.5 seconds and the damage will be increased to 170%. This was a Berserker's main attacking skill.

Daffodil was a Spellcaster; a Pyromancer to be precise. She always had the pride of having better attack damage as compared to others. They say that grass was always greener on the other side, but when she compared her own damage to Sun Xin Yu, she was considered as a puny little noob player! As a woman of pride, she could never express her dissatisfaction. She only focused harder and fought faster with an unrelenting heart.

99%, 97%, 95%... the boss HP dropped down faster than ever with everyone trying their best to have the highest damage.

"Bunch of pests! I'll show you my true power!" Gail lifted his spear and spun it around, creating a circular radiance.

'Ding! Gail Baghdad has used [tornado cleave]!'

'-3,712!'

'-4,123!'

'-4,940!'

'-4,963!'

Everyone around the boss' melee range received instant damage. Aside from Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Endless Starlight, and Wei Yan Er were killed instantly!

"What a strong [tornado cleave]!" Zhang Yang had already guessed that Gail would have several Warrior skills, but he could never have guessed that the boss' skill damage would be any higher than 5,000!

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were both having full set of Gray-Silver equipment, yet their maximum HP were only around 4,600 HP. Since neither of them had any damage reduction skills, they were killed in just one single stroke of the spear.

That skill did not have any progress bar; so the team thought that the boss was only taunting them instead of casting anything! Wei Yan Er's death was as expected, but Endless Starlight and Sun Xin Yu both had skills to protect them, they were just not able to anticipate the boss' skill.

Aside from the strong attacking power, the boss' skill also contained a knockback effect, pushing Zhang Yang back 3 to 4 feet away from him.

"Wuu... Cousin! I died!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"Sigh... I told you to be a Spellcaster instead of a Berserker! You're the one who insisted to be a Warrior!" Han Ying Xue sighed.

With the loss of two strong attackers, the party's attacking power dropped by a huge gap, slowing down the boss' HP loss.

Gail laughed happily and said, "Ahh! Souls! What wonderful souls! I can feel my strength growing!"

'Ding! Gail Baghdad has absorbed the power of the soul. All attacks increase by 50% for 10 seconds!'

'Ding! Gail Baghdad has absorbed the power of the soul. All attacks increase by 100% for 10 seconds!'

'Ding! Gail Baghdad has absorbed the power of the soul. All attacks increase by 150% for 10 seconds!'

Gail Baghdad's body glowed in a bloodied red color! Frightening and disgusting! Laughing maniacally, the boss' spear flew across the air and thrust towards Zhang Yang.

'[block]!'

Without hesitation, Zhang Yang activated [shield wall].

Another attack struck through, tearing the air around it.

‘-1,928!’

Even under the [shield wall], the boss could still inflict close to 2,000 damage to Zhang Yang. Obviously, after obtaining the buff, the boss’ attack was now close to 10,000 damage!

Han Ying Xue quickly cast a [holy shield] and healed his HP back.

10 seconds later, [shield wall] ended and the red hue on the boss’ body faded away, returning its attack back to normal.

“Crap! If there was any more melee fighters around, they will be killed off by that [tornado cleave]. I don’t even dare to think how strong the boss would be!” said Fatty Han.

“That is why I had once said, the number of party members doesn’t determine certain victory with a field boss!” said Zhang Yang.

If he had recruited several more people, and have them die off, the boss’ increased damage would surely break through the defenses, and none of them would even survive even if Zhang Yang used [shield wall]. If the tanks and melee attackers perish, the next one who would suffer the same fate would be the ranged attackers. With the boss devastating attacks, everyone will surely die as well. It would only end with a complete wipe.

After a while, Gail Baghdad used another [tornado cleave]. Zhang Yang calculated the time and figured that the boss will use the skill after every 20 seconds.

For then on, Zhang Yang did not dare to use [block]. If the boss made a combo with normal attack and the [tornado cleave], the instance itself would deal more than 6,600 damage which exceeded his current maximum HP! If he wanted to survive the boss fight, he had to keep the skill ready to use anytime he needed it.

90%, 80%, 70%...

Once Zhang Yang solved the [tornado cleave] conundrum, Gail was really not a tough enemy to defeat. After all, he was just a mini-boss, the weakest among the 5 bosses!

50%!

Gail Baghdad stopped attacking suddenly. He then switched his weapon to the bow that was behind his back. He holstered the spear horizontally on the side of his horse body.

“Weak little beings, I have underestimated you all! You have forced me, the great Gail Baghdad to this end!”

Pew!

The boss shot an arrow towards Zhang Yang at melee range and immediately [dazed] him! He then quickly galloped away from Zhang Yang and attacked from the maximum ranged distance.

‘-2,112!’

Another arrow landed, causing significant yet lowered damage.

So, he has finally switched from a Warrior to a Hunter.

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought and quickly kicked his feet to chase the boss.

‘-2,112!’

‘-2,112!’

Even though it was lowered, the attack interval was shortened! Before the change, the attack interval was 3 seconds once; now it was faster at 2 seconds an arrow! The accumulated damage would still be higher! To make things worse, ranged attack could not be negated with [block], ultimately putting a stress on Han Ying Xue’s healing load.

[merlinda’s shadow]

Zhang Yang had to cast the special ring skill to temporary ease the burden of Han Ying Xue.

Hunter-type monster’s weakness was that once any player got close to it, it could no longer attack!

However, Zhang Yang was worried that the boss might have the [tumble] skill. He did not dare to use [charge] to get closer to the monster,

instead, he had to only rely on his own regular movement speed. This 4-legged boss' speed proved to be something else. He could attack and run at the same time! As his speed was no slower than Zhang Yang himself, coupled with the vast area of the floor, Zhang Yang could be kited to death!

Zhang Yang could no longer let things run like this any longer. If he did not use [charge] now, he would not even need to wait for the boss to use [tumble] and just die before that!

Once Zhang Yang was close to him, the boss did not use any other Hunter skills on him, aside from [breaking shot] and a fist to his face.

‘[block]!’

Zhang Yang raised his shield to block the incoming fist.

“Split up! As long as you can attack and can be healed, spread out as far as you can!” said Zhang Yang in the party channel.

If the boss could use [tornado cleave] in his Warrior state, that meant that he could use [barrage] in his Hunter state to counter overwhelming odds.

His party obliged immediately and spread out into a half moon shape to surround the boss. Han Ying Xue was behind them to make sure none of her team mate lost too much HP! She made sure that she could heal anyone the moment they received damage!

“Feeble little beings! Let the rain of arrow crush your souls!” Gail Baghdad shot an arrow into the sky suddenly, a progress bar appeared on his head. Rain of arrows suddenly started to appear towards Hundred Shots.

‘Ding! Gail Baghdad is channeling [barrage]. Every target in 5 x 5-meter range will receive 3,000 natural every 2 seconds for 10 seconds!’

Hundred Shots' reaction was rather fast; once he saw an arrow head coming towards him, he ran to the side to evade. However still, he was still not as fast as the arrow that was raining down on him. He had only received 3,000 damage. Luckily, the second wave of arrow would only

attack after 2 seconds. Hundred Shots had already left the effective area.

Han Ying Xue cast [regeneration] on him instead of casting a long casting healing spell. Since the boss would rarely attack a non-tank player in the field, she estimated that she could save some time instead to allow the [regeneration] slowly heal Hundred Shots over time.

Zhang Yang summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] now since he had used [barrage]. While the boss was still in Warrior state, Zhang Yang did not want to waste Clear Lotus as she would die from [tornado cleave] too.

10 seconds later, [barrage] ended. Gail Baghdad immediately shot a [breaking shot] and caused Zhang Yang to enter [dazed] state once again.

Zhang Yang came up with a quick idea and commanded Clear Lotus to attack him.

‘-1!’

Clear Lotus attacked Zhang Yang from the front, causing a nullified damage value. Zhang Yang did not mind the damage. The importance of the attack was to quickly dispel [dazed]!

[charge]!

[thunder smash]!

Zhang Yang slid through the field and slowed the boss down.

Unable to get away from Zhang Yang even after running left and right, Gail could only fight him with his fist.

[block]!

Zhang Yang finally laughed. Comparing Gail when was in his Warrior state to now, it was easier to fight Gail in his pitiful Hunter state.

Everyone was gaping when they saw Zhang Yang’s series of impressive maneuver. Even Daffodil Daydream was impressed.

“As expected from a legend. Zhan Yu really lives up to his name!”

40%, 30%... Gail Baghdad’s HP was dropping even faster!

In that period, the boss had used several [barrage], but everyone was

quick enough to react, taking only 1 instance of the attack each! Excluding Fatty Han, the rest of the party were all future professional players. Their reaction speed and intuition were strong. Moving around while avoiding attacks was just a walk in the park!

Though, on one hand, Fatty Han had been with Zhang Yang and received indirect training, therefore his reaction speed was also commendable.

20%... 10%... Gail Baghdad HP was almost dropping to zero!

Finally!

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Gail Baghdad. Obtained 163,050 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

THUD!

Gail Baghdad’s humongous horse body fell, slamming heavily onto the ground.

Chapter 147: Harmonious and Loving Party

“We did it!”

The party channel was suddenly filled with cheers and laughter, but Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were even more excited than the others could be. After all, they had never seen a Gray-Silver boss, much more participate in a party to kill one! This first achievement meant more to them than to Zhang Yang’s gang.

Hmph. This future-to-be superstar is now considered to be in my hands! Zhang Yang took notice that Daffodil was always wearing a smile on her face, which made Wei Yan Er look a little more annoyed. It somehow reminded her about a cartoon she watched when she was a kid, about a weird older gentleman and a young girl.

“Little brat! Get our prize!” Zhang Yang quickly gave her something to do when he noticed that Wei Yan Er was itching around after the battle ended.

“Aye aye, captain!” Wei Yan Er jumped with joy and hopped to the boss.

[Lunar Sol Magic Staff] (Gray-Silver, Staff)

Magic Attack: 690 – 750

[unbound]

Level Requirement: 40

“Little Snow! Daffodil! Both of you roll for it!” said Zhang Yang grinning widely.

Daffodil’s expression changed instantly when Zhang Yang addressed her. She crossed her hands and said, “No, no, no, no! It’s okay! I’m already very happy with defeating a Gray-Silver boss! I even leveled up! I can’t ask for more!”

Han Ying Xue smiled warmly and replied her. “Girl, you’ve worked your way here! You deserve to get the equipment as well! Come, don’t be shy!”

Fatty Han and Wei Yan Er persuaded her as well. Daffodil only rolled for

the equipment while being so abashed that her face was turning into a round peach fruit, and felt like if she did not accept the role, she would betray the nation and everything she stood for. In the end, Han Ying Xue rolled 74 points while Daffodil had only rolled 16 points.

Now that she lost her chance, she breathed a sigh of relief and smiled sincerely.

Han Yin Xue crossed her arms trying to think of a better way. She equipped the [Lunar Sol Magic Staff] and gave her Level 30 Silver-Gray staff to Daffodil. Even though the new staff was still [unbound], the magic attack alone was 180 points higher than her previous staff. It was an obvious upgrade.

Daffodil wanted to reject the gift but in the end, she could not reject the sincerity of Han Ying Xue and accepted the second-hand equipment with red cheeks. Her original weapon was a Level 30 Green-Copper staff, when she switched to the new equipment, she gained 270 magic attack! That was an obvious upgrade!

It was a Gray-Silver tier Level 30 equipment after all! You could not buy it even if you had the money! Daffodil could not express her immense gratitude to Han Ying Xue, but only to hold on to her hands, shaking them endlessly. Han Ying Xue then moved closer and the two of them were whispering. Zhang Yang was wondering what they were talking about...

Han Ying Xue suddenly turned around and Zhang Yang saw a warm and charming eye. She then sent a private message to Zhang Yang saying, "Hmph! Dummy! You should think of a way to thank me!"

"Huh? What should I thank you for?"

"Haha! Dummy! I saw your wavering heart! The heart that reeks of romance! I've helped you to set things up now! Now, how do you plan to repay my generosity?"

Huh?! Romance? Me?!

Zhang Yang was bewildered. He then pieced the puzzle together and finally understood. Han Ying Xue misunderstood the entire situation! She

thought that Zhang Yang had a thing for Daffodil Daydream!

“You misleading sow! Don’t stir things up when everything was fine! Yes! I was interested in her! But not sexually! I had an eye for her skills and capabilities! That was why I wanted to recruit her into the guild! What the hell have you done now? Don’t point things out that are not even there! You might make things awkward for me!” Zhang Yang quickly warned her.

“Hehehe! She’s quite cute though.”

What are you still doing?! Sigh!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. “Please, you’re pretty cute yourself!”

Zhang Yang had to resort to attack instead of playing safe. Fight fire with fire!

“Haha! Dummy! You’re 1,000 years too early if you want to try your luck on me!”

Phew! Even though he was not sure of the result, at least the topic was no longer about Daffodil.

While they were talking privately, Wei Yan Er opened another loot.

[Devotion of the Soul] (Silver-Gray, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Intelligence: +16

[unbound]

Level Requirement: 40

Zhang Yang cried out, “Hah! Look at that! Starlight, you’re quite lucky to have a Knight class equipment!”

Even though it was a Heavy Armor, but the additional 16 Intelligence attribute automatically made it an armor that was suitable for Knights.

Knights were a special class. To make things clear, Guardians and Berserkers fell under the Warrior main class. Defenders, Sacred Knights, and Templars were under the Knight's main class. Even though both Defenders and Templars use melee weapons to attack, most of their attacks were Holy damage which was affected by the Intelligence attribute.

Endless Starlight was an outgoing man, with a slightly higher ego than the rest. Even though he only joined Lone Desert Smoke for just a day, he made it as his own home and helped himself to the armor, laughing all the way cheerfully!

[Skill Book: Breaking Shot]

Use: Teaches you [breaking shot].

Class Requirement: Hunter.

Level Requirement: 30

"Good stuff!" Praised Zhang Yang. Even though the skill did not provide much damage after leveling it up, it was extremely useful in PK. A Hunter has the pet tanking for them in the front line, and along with their own [fake death] aggro clearing skill, a Hunter would not need to worry about having a monster coming to close to him. But in PK, a player would not behave as stupid as a monster! A player would automatically ignore the pet and aim directly at the player himself. Once a monster got close to a Hunter, 90% of his skill and damage would be rendered useless. To forcefully create a gap between the Hunter and the target, he or she could use either [tumble] or use [breaking shot].

Fatty Han denied the item immediately. "This thing is useless for me! I don't even PK to begin with! Give this to Hundred Shots!"

Zhang Yang had a conversation with Fatty Han a few days back. Knowing that Zhang Yang wanted to build a PK party, Fatty Han would naturally support his brother without even knowing what it meant. To put it bluntly, Fatty Han could fight monsters all day long without flinching but PK was his kryptonite. He would be a sitting duck in the battle arena! Furthermore, Fatty Han's main purpose in playing this game was to earn a fortune. He achieved that goal with Zhang Yang's personal help now,

earning at least 2,000,000 dollars a month! What more could he ask for?

[breaking shot] was considered to be a PK type skill, and naturally Hundred Shots got the priority over it. Before he could negotiate with Fatty Han, Zhang Yang gestured him to just accept the book. Hundred Shots obeyed Zhang Yang and learned the skill when he got it.

After witnessing the event that happened in front of his eyes, Endless Starlight was truly moved. “Looks like I’ve made the right choice to join you guys! What harmonious and loving team mates I have! Honestly, I have never seen such a team in my entire gaming life! To express my feeling, I want to dedicate a song to all of you called ‘D*ck in a box’ by Lonely Island. Ready? ARGH!”

Before he could start singing, he was brutally smacked in the head with a shoe and behaved himself.

The boss had several more items but the rest were only Green-Copper tier. None of them were interested in the equipment. They kept it and decided to sell it off at Zhang Yang’s Little Merchandize Shop.

The team moved on to the next floor. After walking up a long flight of stairs, they encountered a mixture of monsters along the way. Aside from the Royal Guards, there was a new monster.

[Centaur Maid] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 42

HP: 60,000

MP: 40,000

When there was MP, there was bound to be a magic spell. If you only paid attention to the top half of these Centaur Maids, those that had not decayed were quite pleasing in the eye. Most of them were rather beautiful; having magnificent chests and all. Looking at the lower half, however, shaking their huge horse bodies as they walked around, you might just be turned off.

Fatty Han sighed and shook his head disappointingly. However, Endless

Starlight started to stroke his chin and observed the female Centaurs like a wise old philosopher. “Honestly, a horse ass is quite plump and well formed!” Fatty Han immediately bowed down in respect to him.

Killing Royal Guards was fine, but killing Centaur Maids were a little troublesome. Their main attack was [Frost Arrow] which could deal 2,400 damage an instant. If they gathered a bunch of it in a go, even Zhang Yang would be killed instantly.

As the team proceed further up, the magic type monsters began to dominate the numbers. When the party was in the second floor, the huge space was completely filled with Centaur Maids. Luckily, they were not all that crowded as the first floor. They could lure in a maximum of two to three monsters at a time.

Endless Starlight was finally given a chance to shine. After provoking the monster, Starlight would mainly hold on to one monster while Zhang Yang would take care of the other two. Since Centaur Maids were the magic attack type, they would not need to chase around to attack Zhang Yang. The problem was that when there was more than one monster, having them standing apart would be efficient since they would not need to move around to attack. Luckily, the team had many “Interrupters”. Once the Centaur Maid started to cast a spell, the player would interrupt the spell. The Centaur Maid would have no choice but to rely on its physical attack to damage Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang took the chance to move around and kite the monsters. That way, he could gather the monsters into one spot to utilize [thunder strike], [tornado cleave], [horizontal sweep] and other AoE skills to properly attack.

Sun Xin Yu entered [stealth] and began to search around the floor for the 3rd floor entrance. Once she was sure of the direction, the team moved on towards it. As they could not properly multi-kill the monsters around, the pushing speed was very much reduced down to a snail’s pace. They could only cover 10% of the entire place by midnight.

Zhang Yang then ordered the party to disband and have a good night rest before they continued the floor tomorrow morning at 9:00. Those who needed to make up were reminded to wake up half an hour earlier!

The extra reminder had Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil laughing their butts off.

The next day, every one gathered around 9:00 in the morning. The ladies were slightly earlier than yesterday but were still late by around five minutes or so. Daffodil Daydream was rather shy for her lateness and immediately apologized when she logged in. "I'm so sorry for my tardiness! I was so absorbed in doing my makeup and totally forgot about the time!"

Once everyone arrived, the party then moved forward.

Fatty Han suddenly got angry and cried out.

"Little Yang! There are so many guilds that have already taken down the first two bosses in the Castle Interior! I've picked up another disturbing news in the forums this morning! There were many players around that had been saying that we, the Lone Desert Smoke had been sucking on luck! Now that we have not made any progress, they said that they finally exposed our real trick! We were scared to fight the other guilds now! Damn! I'm so freaking pissed off!"

Seeing Fatty Han puffing with angry steam, Zhang Yang could only smile. "I think that those people who mocked us were all under super guilds. They are purposely trying to slander us! However, keep your cool, Fatty. Let's deal with this quest quickly and raid the Castle dungeon!"

"Ok. The early bird gets the worm. We will take the "First Clear" Achievement! That will teach them a lesson!"

Wei Yan Er giggled playfully and said, "Pervy Fatty! I'd never knew that you could use idiom!"

Fatty Han stared back at her wide-eye and said, "I've been reading so many philosopher books that I can even read it back to you! Erhm... for example, "Sun Tzu Art of War" or "100 ways to Improve Your Sex Life", or "What a Woman Wants"!"

"Fatty...you've revealed all your secrets again..."

Chapter 148: The Prince

Any magic type monster was weak and could be easily defeated as compared to a physical attack type monster, but when fighting with multitude of them, it did not matter how strong you were, the blast from the arcane magic was enough to send you to the grave!

The party did not dare to pull too many monsters in at one go and only took two or three at a time. Even though the killing speed was faster than killing one at a time, the efficiency was much lower than killing a large bunch like in the first floor. Thus, the progress was obviously slower, and the accumulation of experience points was slow as well. Still, this was just between the first and second floor, and the progress was better than grinding alone.

In just one day, the party had already made it through half of the floor. By then, almost everyone had their inventory packed with items. They had to discard some of the items to make room for more valuable ones. The two misers in the party, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were troubled and disturbed. If only they could just use the [Teleportation Scroll] and head back to town to sell them... But, if they did, they would have to start from the beginning, which was just a waste of time and effort!

Zhang Yang could not help but sighed heavily. "If only Hundred Shots could learn to make the [Portable Bank]..."

[Portable Bank]

Use: Summons a mobile bank, allowing players to deposit and withdraw items from their personal storage. The Portable Bank will disappear after 10 minutes.

Cooldown time: 1 hour.

Requirement: Master Engineering.

Zhang Yang then explained the description of the [Portable Bank]. Everyone was impressed by its use and one by one, they all encouraged Hundred Shots to quickly increase his Engineering mastery.

The difficulty of raising one's mastery to Master-tier was tough, but the recipe for the [Portable Bank] was so rare that no one had owned it by then! Everyone was excited but eventually accepted the harsh reality that it was still an impossible feat for them.

After clearing the floor for the entire day, the team finally managed to push a little towards the center. Zhang Yang called it a day and disbanded the party. Everyone logged off and had their rest for tomorrow.

At the brink of dawn, Zhang Yang started his training and went on to buy breakfast with the remaining 40 dollars in his wallet. Zhang Yang was so preoccupied with the Centaur Palace that he did not have time to visit the bank to withdraw cash! By the time he was done with the quest, the first thing he would do was to withdraw some cash. Any more delay and he would have literally no money left to buy food!

The team logged in and gathered together at 9:00 in the morning and proceeded as normal.

The team and cleared the pathway to the boss at 10:00 at night and arrived at the second floor's boss.

[Prince Chateau Turk] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 44

HP: 880,000

The Centaur prince was standing majestically at the entrance to the 3rd floor. He was wielding a long spear with his right arm. As Zhang Yang approached him, he noticed a certain glimmer on his body with the shape of a sharp sword. When the glimmer appeared, Chateau Turk's head had a buff icon.

[Reflect Sword]: Counter any attack inflicted at 300% damage.

The buff was rather complicated and frequent. It was estimated to appear once every 30 seconds and would last for at least 10 seconds.

"Remember to stop your attacks when the [Reflect Sword] appears!"

Zhang Yang took the lead.

“The boss seems to be a Warrior class. Melee attackers stay away for now! You might get killed by the [tornado cleave]! I don’t want to see any of you lying dead on the floor the whole time!”

Inching closer to the boss, Chateau Turk’s appearance changed from a handsome majestic complexion to a nasty, irritated, and angry appearance.

“Why have you entered this land of the dead? The sinner should remain buried with their sins! Why must you exhume their hatred?!”

He picked up his spear and kicked off his hooves, charging towards Zhang Yang.

[charge]!

Zhang Yang slid across the floor with his sword aiming directly at the prince.

‘-702!’

[Cripple Defense]!

‘-1,504!’ [destructive smash].

‘-1,618!’ [horizontal sweep].

[charge] gave him 10 Rage, followed by a normal attack with 37 Rage, and [block] that granted him 30 Rage. Zhang Yang spent it all on [Cripple Defense], [horizontal sweep], and [destructive smash], generating a bigger aggro.

Zhang Yang was the only one attacking the boss so far. The rest of the melee attackers were still waiting behind for the [tornado cleave] to proc, to guess and estimate the frequency of the skill.

Among them, Wei Yan Er, a fighter to be at least, was always the one who could not wait to attack. Gripping the weapon in her hand firmly, she could not help but mutter alone on the side.

“Damn! Damn you all! Why did you come here! Why! Why did you wake me?!” 15 seconds into the fight, Chateau Turk bellowed angrily. “Die! Just die!”

Shuush!

He took up the spear in the air and spun it around, creating a shadowy image of a spear in the air.

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has used [tornado cleave]. All targets within 5 x 5 range will receive 6,000 physical attack!’

‘-4,512!’

Wham! Zhang Yang took a hit.

[block]!

Zhang Yang frantically activated [block] to block off the next incoming damage and made room for Han Ying Xue to heal him.

“Hold on! Wait for the next [tornado cleave]! Make sure to know the skill interval duration before you can start fighting!” Zhang Yang warned Wei Yan Er when he noticed she was fidgeting to swing her weapon. Wei Yan Er heard his call and behaved. Before he looked away, Wei Yan Er quickly bared her teeth at Zhang Yang.

“Heh. Little brat.”

10 seconds later, the bright glow suddenly radiated on the boss and formed sword like objects.

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has gained [reflect sword]!’

Zhang Yang immediately pulled back. He then relied on [block] and physically moving around to evade attack. If he continued to attack, he would be damaged from the reflect skill. Zhang Yang would be facing the boss and 3 additional Zhang Yang fighting against himself. Unless Han Ying Xue could triple her healing speed, she could not save him in time.

10 seconds passed and the buff expired. The boss cast another [tornado cleave] after 3 seconds.

With that, the party had obtained their battle plan and understood the boss’ mechanics. Both [tornado cleave] and [reflect sword] would trigger every 30 seconds.

“Go! Melee attacker go! Remember to stop your attack in time!”

Wei Yan Er let out a loud battle cry and rushed into the fight with [charge].

10 seconds into the fight, Chateau Turk gained the reflect damage buff. Many of them were a little slow in stopping their attack and had to “eat” triple the amount of damage that they had inflicted on the boss. Han Ying Xue was suddenly pushed to her limit.

“Melee fighters back down now! When [reflect sword] ends, don’t rush in back! A [tornado cleave] will be activated shortly after! Whoever is still in its range will surely die!” Zhang Yang cried in the party channel.

All melee attackers obliged and withdrew from the front line. Ranged attackers had only needed to stop attacking and wait until [reflect sword] ended. Now that the attacking cycle had to pause now and then, it reduced their attacking period down to only 2/3, especially since the melee attackers needed to move away to avoid the [tornado cleave] and to wait for [reflect sword] to end, severely affecting their attacking speed. The boss’ HP dropping rate was even slower than Zhang Yang had ever experienced.

Chateau Turk’s attack were strong to begin with, and now that the entire party had to slow down and drag the fight longer than they had initially expected, Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang was pushed beyond their limit! It was lucky that Zhang Yang had many life preserving skills like [berserker’s heal], Lover’s Sword [lifesteal], [merlinda’s shadow], and the +2,000 Defense accessory skill! He was too far from death to claim him!

Once the battle had stablized, and everyone was doing what they could do without a problem, Zhang Yang summoned [Clear Lotus] and controlled her to fight along with the party.

90%, 80%, 70%...

It was tough and excruciatingly long, but the party managed to slowly drag down the boss’ HP.

“You pest! Wretched beings! Monsters! Die! Just die and rot in hell!” The

majestic Centaur cried out. His tone was so enraged that you could feel the tremor of destructive intent from his voice.

“The boss is being a little too dramatic, don’t you think?” said Endless Starlight.

Fatty Han pout his lips. “We must have come in the wrong time! Perhaps he was in the middle of having a good time with his maids! Blowing of his steam, leaving him hanging, of course he’d be crazy!”

“Direct hit Fatty bro! Genius!” said Endless Starlight with admiration.

“Starlight, direct is what I am good at! You know, there was a folktale describing the first night of the maid and the prince, they say...”

“SHUT THE F*CK UP! BOTH OF YOU!”

Everyone else cried out in unison.

Fatty Han and Starlight exchanged and look and was baffled at their scream.

“...I had become the laughing stock of the Centaurs, and you... the other races would even want to make fun of me?” Chateau Turk growled and thrust his spear to the ground and unleashed massive 2-meter-tall blast waves that discharged everywhere.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

4 melee attackers were knocked back and was stunned for as long as 10 seconds!

‘Ding! Chateau Turk has used [earth crash].’

The boss moved a step forward and attacked Zhang Yang with his spear.

Unable to activate [block] in stun status, Zhang Yang could only take everything the boss had to give. Han Ying Xue was unable to heal Zhang Yang in time! Furthermore, [tornado cleave] was about to activate soon, if he were to stand there motionless, the rest of the melee attackers would definitely be killed!

Zhang Yang immediately came to a decision and used [substitute].

At the same time, Endless Starlight activated [sacred protection] to remove all negative status ailments and cast [justice bash] and [provoke] he then immediately ran far away! He knew that the boss was about to cast [tornado cleave], which was why he has to keep his distance from the boss.

Impressive sense of judgement! Zhang Yang's eyes gleamed with hope and admiration. Only under the unexpected situation would a player's talent and capability be demonstrated.

Being provoked by Endless Starlight, Chateau Turk turned around and galloped toward him.

Zhang Yang quickly chased after him and said, "Starlight, continue running! Don't drag the boss! Let me! You can't tank the [tornado cleave]!"

"Ok!" Endless Starlight did not want to compete with Zhang Yang in the first place. He only wanted to help when Zhang Yang was rendered powerless under stun. He had to do something until Zhang Yang could return to normal!

Similarly, Zhang Yang used [provoke] and lure the boss to him.

'Ding! Chateau Turk has used [tornado cleave]. All targets within 5 x 5 range will receive 6,000 physical attack!'

[block]!

After [tornado cleave], Zhang Yang was prepared for the next incoming attack and deflected it with [block].

Shriiing! Han Ying Xue healed Zhang Yang back to full health and they managed to survive this sudden turn of event.

Chapter 149: Family Vengeance

“This guy must be suffering from a massive trauma! He’s been acting all crazy!” muttered Endless Starlight.

The boss had been constantly screaming “Bastard!”, “Pathetic!”, “Dreadful!”, “Wretched!” along with other kind of insults.

“Perhaps he was in love with a handsome young centaur like himself and the society stopped them from being together! However, in search for true love, the young prince went through hell and back to be together with his lover! Once the king knew about this, he had the prince’s lover killed to maintain his status! Thus, the angered prince cast a curse and sunk the entire castle down to ruins in order to be together with his lover forever!” said Daffodil Daydream with a yearning face.

Zhang Yang and everyone else exchanged a look and came to a conclusion. “Fujoshi!”

Fighting this boss would undoubtedly require a whole lot of patience and stamina, no matter what class you were! The attacking classes must always pay attention to the boss’ [reflect sword] status while Thieves and Berserkers would have to run away from the boss to evade the [tornado cleave]! The tank would have to always be ready to cast his life preserving skills to prevent them from wasting their hard work if he were to die! The healer was the worst; having to constantly maintain the tank’s HP! If the spell was slower, even by a micro second, the tank would die and would end up in a team wipe.

40%, 30%, 20%...

It was luck that the boss did not have any other skills aside from [reflect sword] and [tornado cleave], and the multi target blast wave he used when he was at 50% HP! However, just with two skills alone, Zhang Yang and the team had their hands full! Neither one of them dared to relax for even a second!

15%, 10%, 5%!

Finally, after what seemed to be a whole lifetime of attacking, the boss' HP was approaching to its end. The party got lively and cheered all the way.

“Don't let your guard down just yet! A dead boss is the safest boss!” said Zhang Yang.

3%, 2%, 1%, 0%!

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Chateau Turk. Obtained 110,050 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

Phew!

Everyone breathed a sigh of relief and plopped down on their butts! They were completely worn out!

Shush! A white light flashed by and a figure stood at the top of the boss' body. It was Chateau Turk!

Everyone was shock onto their feet!

“Z-z-z-z-z-zombie!” cried Wei Yan Er.

“Crap! A dead boss is still not safe, yo!”

“Calm down!” Zhang Yang cried out. “Look at him properly. Don't you see that he is now just a Level 1 ghost?”

Everyone selected on him and was relieved when they had checked on his properties.

[Soul of Chateau Turk] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Zhang Yang once faced a similar event in the Underground Tower, which was why he remained calm upon encountering Chateau Turk's soul.

There was a yellow exclamation mark on top of his head, indicating a quest ready to be received.

“...It seems that you have defeated me, foreigners!” This time, his tone was completely different than before. A majestic look and royalty aura emitted all over him even when he was just a ghostly figure.

Zhang Yang asked. “My lord prince, what had happened here? What caused this castle to fall?”

Chateau Turk’s ghost remained silent for a while before he began to move his lips. “I thought that I could have ended it all with the destruction of the castle. Never had I thought that I would be reincarnated by a Necromancer and had my soul trapped in a body full of anger, despair, and vengeance!”

He wavered a little before he spoke again. “I have a request for you! I want you to kill two people!”

Was it the two people that caused this prince to turn into a mindless and raging spectre?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, “My lord prince, who do you need us to kill?”

Chateau Turk went silent again for some time before talking again. “My father, Kinglose Turk and...the princess, Annie Balrum!”

WTF!? Internal affair?

The “fujoshi” inside Daffodil Daydream burned with a raging passion. She quickly asked, “My prince, they are both your close family! Why would you do so?”

Chateau Turk’s face turned sour, expressing anger and menace. He angrily waved his arms out and replied. “They are not worthy! That lowly b*itch! I treated her as my treasure! I provided her with anything that she could ask for! No matter what or how ridiculous her requests were, I tried my very best to satisfy her! But... but... she would dare to cheat on me! With my father!”

“The moment I had caught them in the act, my heart was broken into smithereens! How could it have happened?! How could she betray me? My father, of all people in the world! Why would he...! GRAHHH!!! Ha... Ha....

hahaha. In the end, I activated the Castle's restricted magic. This magic was to be used when all else have failed during an enemy invasion. To bring down the enemy along with the centaurs! The castle was then sunk deep into the earth, killing... everyone!"

"I will not become the laughing stock of the Centaur race! This shame! This humiliation shall be cleansed only through death!"

Everyone stared with a blank look in their eyes when they found out that it was just a family dispute! Daffodil was the most disappointed among all. She actually hoped for the forbidden love drama to appear here!

Chateau Turk looked to the crowd and said, "Now that both of them have been reincarnated by the Necromancer, they even have the shame to live together! Adventurer! I ask for your help! Kill them for me!"

'Ding! Chateau Turk has a quest for you: Kill Them Both! Will you accept it?'

Since they would need to kill them either way, might as well take a quest for it!

[Kill Them Both!] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Kill the King Kinglose Turk and the Princess Annie Balrum! These shameless creatures should not be alive! Send them down to hell!

Progress: Kill King Kinglose Turk 0/1 Princess Annie Balrum 0/1

"Take this spear with you! In it, remains a fragment of my soul. I want to see them die right in front of my very eyes!" said Chateau Turk menacingly.

'Ding! You have obtained the item "Chateau Turk's Spear"'

[Chateau Turk's Spear] (Quest Item)

Use: Summons Chateau Turk vengeance spirit to witness the death of The King Kinglose Turk and the Princess Annie Balrum! Who knows what would happen? He might lend a hand!

Cool down time: 30 minutes.

After accepting the quest and the item, Chateau Turk's ghostly figure disappeared.

"Little brat! Time for our loots!" said Zhang Yang as he gestured towards the boss.

Wei Yan Er quickly ran around and reached out her timid hands.

[Sharp Rotten Tooth] (Gray-Silver, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 274 – 334

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds.

DPS: 160

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

"Woah! 1.9 seconds attack interval! This is a good item! If you use this to attack from behind, I think you might deal more than 1,000 damage, no?" Zhang Yang praised.

There was only one Thief class player in the party, and that was Sun Xin Yu. The Ice Queen took the dagger and equipped it. She then applied poison on the blade and it gave off a greenish hue glimmer.

"I have some thought in my head for a while now that I could never understand." Fatty Han had been quiet for some time now. He opened his fat lips after he could no longer hold it in.

Everyone turned around to look at him, expecting some sort of rubbish topic.

"...The Centaur are all 4 legged, aren't they? So how could they...do it? No matter how hard I could think, it just doesn't make sense!"

"..."

[Genuine Love] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: -20

Intelligence: +60

[unidentified]

Note: Friend, you've been blinded by the power of love! It's time for you to replenish your intelligence for a change!

"How strange! It reduces your vitality and HP?" asked Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang scratched his chin a while and explained. "It actually a worth trade off. Rings usually have 2 attribute bonus. For example, Vitality +15 and Strength +15. A Level 40 Gray-Silver ring should have +20 both attribute. If you look closely at the attribute arrangement of the ring, it was an even trade! You must know that Vitality is the "cheapest" attribute among all. To trade off 40 Vitality for 40 Intelligence is worth double its value!"

Everyone understood the significance of the ring once Zhang Yang explained it. Still, if you could make sure you won't receive any damage, having 100 HP and 10,000, HP would make a difference! However, having extra 40 Intelligence points was worth 400 MP and 40 magic attack damage! This was definitely a strong damage and healing endurance upgrade!

This magic type ring was rolled by Han Ying Xue and Daffodil. This time, Daffodil had a change of luck and obtained the ring at 89 points while Han Ying Xue had only rolled 67 points.

[Skill Book: Crash Magic]

Use: Teaches you [crash magic].

Class Requirement: Guardian, Defender

Level Requirement: 30

Before Zhang Yang could say anything, Endless Starlight gave up his roll for the item, saying, "I would have rolled for the item if it was an equipment, since we're fighting a Level 40 boss that will drop a Gray-Silver Level 40 equipment. Based on the party strength, I'm sure it would be a walk in the park! But a skill book is a whole different matter, it would only appear once in a lifetime. There's even a chance that it will not appear again!"

What Endless Starlight said was the cold bitter truth. Equipment were easily discarded after obtaining a stronger one. But a skill could be used from Level 1 to Level 300! A skill may seem to be useless at first but in certain situations, it could be used to obtain certain victory!

Zhang Yang laughed. "Thank you, Starlight!" Zhang Yang rolled and obtained the skill book. Zhang Yang immediately learned the skill.

[Crash Magic]: Use your shield to strike the target. If the target was casting a spell, the spell will be interrupted and the target would not be able to cast any skill for the next 3 seconds!

Requirement: Shield

Cost: 10 Rage.

Cool down time: 10 seconds.

He had finally learned an interruption skill! Zhang Yang was happy. He would not have to fight as hard the next time he faced a magic type; especially elite magic type monsters!

The team kept 10 or more Green-Copper equipment and moved on.

After a long flight of stairs, the team fought many more Centaur Maids and arrived at the 3rd floor.

Compared to the 1st and 2nd floor, the 3rd floor had fewer monster count. Zhang Yang scanned the area and had only observed many Spectre Saber Tooth Tigers patrolling around. Some of them had their skins impaired, while some other had exposed rotten, dried innards and white bones. All of their eyes were the same; glowing in green emerald color flame!

[Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 43

HP: 86,000

Majority of wild beast had the skill called [mangle]. This skill was a form of DoT skill which would cause high damage per second if they were stacked. Zhang Yang did not know whether or not these zombie-like tigers

had that skill. So, instead of going commando and taking on a bunch of these monsters, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight went on and took one monster each to test it out.

‘Ding! You have received [mangle] (stack 1). Receiving 100 [bleeding] damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You have received [mangle] (stack 2). Receiving 200 [bleeding] damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You have received [mangle] (stack 3). Receiving 300 [bleeding] damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding...’

As expected, even after turning into a spectre, the tiger still retained the [mangle] skill. To make matters worse, the skill did not have a stack limit! The initial damage was small but once the skill stacked to about 10 layers or so, any player could definitely feel its pain.

If that was the case, the party could not lure a bunch of monsters to kill them all in one go! If they did, who was going to kill who?

The party targeted the monsters that Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had attack and killed it quickly, turning it into a pillar of light. The monster dropped a few pieces of [Tiger’s Fang] and [Tiger’s Bone].

“Hundred Shots, take this Tiger’s Bone and take it with whiskey! I hear that it can cure “flabbiness”!” said Fatty Han as he handed over a large bone to Hundred Shots.

Hundred Shot did not say anything but rolled his eyes at Fatty Han.

Endless Starlight quickly interjected. “Hundred Shots bro is probably already a “man”! If he took anymore supplements, who knows, he might really be a father tomorrow!”

“Alright, break it up guys! Or else, I’ll ask Hundred Shots to shoot your ass inward!” Zhang Yang gestured the team to move forward with him as the lead.

Even though they could not multi-kill the monsters on this floor, they

were making a rather quick progress since the number of monsters around here was just a few. By the time they had defeated the prince, it was already 10:00 at night. Now that they had progressed further into the floor, and covered approximately a quarter of the area, the time was already reaching past midnight.

Zhang Yang then quickly disbanded the party and ordered the team to continue tomorrow morning.

Zhang Yang recalled that it was almost time for students to return to school. And since, tomorrow was a Monday, Zhang Yang had to ask Wei Yan Er. "Little brat, looks like you really can't make it tomorrow huh?"

Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue and blew a raspberry. "Just wait and see!"

After the night, everyone logged in and gathered together at 9:00 in the morning. Surprisingly, Wei Yan Er was there.

Zhang Yang asked suspiciously. "Little brat! Did you skip school?!"

"Skip school?" Wei Yan Er patted her flat chest and said proudly: "I took leave like an honest person!"

Han Ying Xue quickly interjected her. "Yan Er, lighter! Not so hard! If you pat any harder it might concave in!"

"HAN YING XUE!" The little brat was triggered ever so easily. Like a cat's tail being stepped on suddenly.

"How did you even manage to apply a leave? Did you really say you wanted to play some games?" Zhang Yang asked while resisting his laughter.

Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with a hidden message "You're an idiot" and said, "My cousin called the school principle and said that I had a fever! That settled it!"

Zhang Yang turned over and stared at Han Ying Xue, who was still wearing a smug on her face. "What kind of cousin are you? Are you purposely trying to destroy the budding flower of the country? You'd know

that this little brat is already stupid! Why did you stop her from actually learning?”

“Hey! Noob tank! Who says I’m stupid!” Wei Yan Er stomped the ground, throwing a fit.

Han Ying Xue pout her lips and said, “Tch. What can you learn in school anyway? It’s not like you’re actually going to apply everything you’ve learnt in school! Tell me, when have you ever used the triangular formulae, or even the force or acceleration... that kinda thing... something about periodic graph or table... Widely taught but not of any importance! So tell me what’s the use of learning it in the first place? Yan Er will one day take over her father’s business! She only needs to learn what she needs to learn! To be frank, she went to school to learn about people and business relationship! That’s the important lesson that could only be learned on the job!”

Wei Yan Er was grinning all the way and scoffed Zhang Yang provocatively.

1Fujoshi is a self-mockingly pejorative Japanese term for female fans of novels that feature romantic relationships between men (Yaoi).

Chapter 150: 3rd Floor

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. “Only second generation youngsters from wealthy families could do such things at no consequence! You have your entire future laid out for you! All you have to do is to simply follow the yellow brick road, and your life will as comfortable as you can ever imagine!”

“Don’t be jealous dummy! You are also considered a millionaire right now! First generation millionaires like you have so much more impact than second generations!” Han Ying Xue shot back without pause.

As Endless Starlight listened to their conversation, a nagging instinct tugged at his heart. With a sudden jump, he was completely flat on the ground, hugging Zhang Yang’s feet. “Big bro Zhan Yu! Please take care of me!”

“Scram! If Little Yang ever wants to take care of anyone, they better be someone as pretty as Little Snow or the perfect sister Yu here! As for you? Just stay here with me and be my underling!” said Fatty Han as he reached out with his flabby arms and patted Endless Starlight’s shoulders.

Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were furious

“Dirty minded pig! Don’t expect me to heal you again!”

The other woman disappeared with a “poof!” and entered [stealth]. She reappeared a few seconds later behind Fatty Han, stunning him as stars circled around his head. The blade in her hands gleamed brightly as light reflected off the blade like a disco ball as she danced around. After [ambush] and [kidney shot] ended, Fatty Han was left with a tiny bit of HP. Sun Xin Yu’s gears were at their best yet. A single complete combo of [ambush] and [kidney shot] could instantly kill off any non-tank class player! There’s no need to start a new combo at all!

At the current stage of the player’s progress, cases of instant kills were very common. A Gray-Silver equipment could provide more damage than it could provide Vitality. That was why the overwhelming damage could easily kill anyone off.

Once players around had started to put on Yellow-Golden tier equipment, the situation will change. Since Yellow-Gold tier equipment could provide much more Vitality, similarly leveled players could fight and not have duels end in seconds. It was still not impossible to instantly kill someone, but it would be more dependent on luck. A Lucky Strike dealing 6 times the normal amount of damage was an example!

When Fatty Han had only around 100 HP left, Sun Xin Yu stopped her blade and slid it back into the sheathe at her waist. A pair of annoyed, furious eyes stared into him and she said, "If I ever hear you speak of such things again, I will make sure that you permanently remain at level 41!"

If they were to have a real fight, in the real world, with Fatty Han's body and fist, he could have been more than a match to Sun Xin Yu! But if they were to battle in the game, with the rules and mechanics of the game, Fatty Han could only bow down to her. Any pro player could easily toy with him till his death! Fatty Han knew this, and he treasured his current level the most as he still had the ambition to be in the Level Ranking board again, even if it was just to brag in front of the Message Parlor girls.

Like a cat getting his tongue, Fatty Han was rendered as silent as a mouse by Sun Xin Yu.

The party went forward with the force of a thousand-man army to the 4th floor.

As they made their way through about one third of the castle area, the monsters had gradually changed into multiple variations of wolves.

[Berserk Skeleton Wolf] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 44

HP: 88,000

MP: 44,000

"I guess Berserk Skeleton Wolves and Berserk Wolves have about the same skills!" Zhang Yang guessed.

Shuush!

He slid across the floor and stunned one of the wolf monsters with [charge]. He chained his attack with a normal attack.

“-921!”

“-1200!”

The wolf recovered from the stun and immediately counterattacked with a bite, causing visible physical damage to Zhang Yang. Following closely was a [Fire Ball] that came blasting out from its mouth, dealing magical damage.

Zhang Yang nodded and call out to Endless Starlight. “Starlight, take on one monster as well. I see that the damage is not that powerful. Continue to kite more of them to increase our speed.”

The two tanks began working together, resulting in a faster raiding pace. It helped that this floor had significantly lesser monsters than the two previous floors. They only took about 3 hours to slay every Berserk Skeleton Wolf in their path. After a while, they entered a new area with a new type of monster.

[Blazing Skeleton Bird] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 45

HP: 60,000

MP: 50,000

This is a huge bird-like creature. Everyone was staring in awe at the bird monster that somehow remained in the air by flapping its boney wings.

“Eh...How is that bird able to fly? I mean...look at it! Those wings are just bones! It doesn't make sense!” asked Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang frowned so hard that wrinkles started to appear on his forehead. “Little brat, it's just a game. I bet that even pigs could fly. What's so strange about that?”

“Boo...” Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and pouted her lips.

Zhang Yang went up to the monster to start the fight while the

remaining party members followed a moment after.

The monster responded with a loud shriek and spewed a very long beam of flame out from its mouth. It aimed at Zhang Yang first and quickly spun around by 360 degrees, hitting every melee attacker with strong damage. Everyone received at least 1000 damage.

“This attack is about the same as the 3rd boss in the Bangar Crypt. It’s called Dragon Breath or something like that...If only players could learn the same skill. That would be sick!” said Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang replied him after a moment of silent. “If I remember correctly, there’s a similar skill for Spellcasters. It could even stun a player for 3 seconds! However, the flame’s duration is rather short. You would need excellent control if you wanted to hit every target in the area!”

Daffodil Daydream got excited and cried. “Is it obtainable from the Class Instructor or from a skill book?”

“I think it comes from a skill book.” Zhang Yang was not as well-versed in other classes besides Guardians.

The party made quick progress. No matter how strong the Blazing Skeleton Bird was, it could not withstand the party’s overwhelming attack for long. The team went on hacking and slashing away and made it to the end of the 3rd floor and the entrance of the 4th floor.

In front of the entrance was a female centaur seated like horse; with her legs folded beneath her body. Surrounding her were 3 beasts, a Saber-tooth Skeleton Tiger, a Berserk Skeleton Wolf, and a Blazing Skeleton Bird. The fierce beasts that they encountered before this were wild and ferocious, but the beasts close to the Centaur were surprisingly tame. The Skeleton Tiger and Wolf were lying on their backs, submissively revealing their bellies to their owner. From the looks of it, appearances aside, they behaved exactly like domesticated cats and dogs.

[The Queen, Shimalue Gutan] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 46

HP: 920,000

MP: 500,000

The tiger, wolf, and bird were respectively called Tai Tai, Wu Wu, and Gu Gu, with 10,000 HP each.

“What’s the plan?”

Everyone turned their heads to face Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang stepped back, raising his hands. “What are you looking at me for? You guys think that I know everything?!”

Everyone exchanged a look and nodded their heads repeatedly.

“F*ck!” Zhang Yang was so annoyed by that fact, he nearly broke his teeth from gnashing them together. He sighed heavily and said, “The tiger has the stackable [mangle] skill, so he has to be the first to go! We cannot target the others yet since the skill could take out any tank if we let it stack too many times.”

He paused to think for a while and said, “Starlight, you’re to pull the bird out of the...”

“BLEH...”

Zhang Yang was suddenly interrupted by Fatty Han and Hundred Shots. Fatty Han was a little overdramatic. Grabbing his tummy and laughed, he said. “Starlight, pull your bird1 out!”

Endless Starlight immediately picked up his hammer and wanted to smash Fatty Han’s face when Zhang Yang quickly tugged Starlight back.

“Stop! Stop! Stop!”

“Sigh... can you guys at least let me finish my explanation? The Blazing Skeleton Bird is a magic type, therefore Starlight would be more suitable to handle it! You’ll need to get the monster alone to one side before we can attack it. Our targets will start with the tiger, the wolf and lastly, the bird. We will fight the boss only when all other 3 beasts are taken out!”

“Okay!” Everyone nodded their heads

“Starlight! I will start the fight, you’ll come in after a bit and use

[provoke] to pull the monster away!”

“Roger that!” said Endless Starlight.

“Let’s get started then!” said Zhang Yang as he ran towards the monsters with the sword gleaming in his hand,

“Foreigners!? How dare you invade this grand castle of the Centaurs!?” Shimalue Gutan stood up on her hooves immediately. “Guards! Kill the invaders!”

After a silent respond, Shimalue Gutan cried out in anger when there as no one appeared to her aid. “Tai Tai, Wu Wu, Gu Gu! The Queen orders you to kill these invaders!”

All 3 beasts roared and shrieked in their own manners, charging towards Zhang Yang.

[charge]!

Zhang Yang slammed into the Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger and quickly used [blood rage] to bring up his Rage and followed up with a [horizontal sweep].

“-702!”

“-759!”

“-738!”

Damage texts popped up from all 3 beasts. Endless Starlight quickly cast [taunting fist] on the bird monster and dragged the miniboss away.

[taunting fist] is a Defender’s skill unlocked at level 30. It is a provoking type of skill that forces the target to forcefully engage the caster for 2 seconds, and deals an additional 100% Holy damage based on Strength.

After Endless Starlight had successfully lured the bird away, Zhang Yang immediately cast [thunder strike], slowing two beasts down, and headed straight for the boss herself.

The boss was a magic attack type monster. While commanding the beasts to attack, the boss concurrently started a chant for a spell and cast

[Punishment Ray].

“-1613!”

Zhang Yang immediately received damage. The damage value was not low, but considering the fact that Shimalue Gutan was a boss, it was low by boss standards!

“+1984!”

Han Ying Xue used [brilliant light] to heal a huge amount of HP. This skill was found by Han Ying Xue herself during one of her window shopping sprees. After she had asked Zhang Yang about the skill's effect, she bought the skill book for 100,000 gold coins and learned the skill soon after.

In the end, after she bought the skill book, Han Ying Xue tried to beat around the bush to avoid returning Zhang Yang's 90,000 gold coins. Her reason being, “This girl here learned this skill for your sake! I was already nice enough to pay for a portion of it! Besides, that money was for my wedding dress!”

Sigh...All in all, the skill was a very powerful healing spell alright.

[Brilliant Light] (Level 1): Invokes the blessing of the light. Heals a target by 200% magic attack.

Cool down time: 15 seconds.

Casting Time: 2 seconds

Once the skill is maxed out, it would reduce the cool down time to only 6 seconds. Truly an OP skill.

“-744!”

Zhang Yang dashed towards the main boss and slashed his sword across her body, sending a stream of fresh blood gushing out.

“How dare you attack the Queen!? Only death could cleanse your sins!” bellowed Shimalue Gutan furiously.

Boom!

“-1603!”

Another [Punishment Ray] struck him.

Huh! This boss' attack sure was not as strong as he had thought.

No sooner after that thought, the tiger and the wolf came charging towards Zhang Yang and attacked him simultaneously.

[Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]!

Zhang Yang first targeted the Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger and stacked 5 layers of [Cripple Defense]. He then cast [thunder strike] to slow the monsters down and tried his best to reduce the total damage he would receive by kiting them around, so that only one of the monster would be able attack him at a time. As for the boss, slowed down or not, she would not need to move around to attack him, it would not make any difference.

1Bird – The Chinese tend to refer to the male reproductive organ as bird in their native language.

Chapter 151: The Queen of Centaurs

Fuush!

The Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger leaped up, vanishing into thin air, before reappearing behind Zhang Yang. With a massive slash of its sharp claws, the tiger dealt huge damage on Zhang Yang's back.

“-1552!”

‘Ding! You have received [mangle] (5 stacks). Receive 1500 HP damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

Zhang Yang could not help but flick his middle finger at lady luck. The current 4 stacks of [mangle] was just about to expire but he had received a fresh, new [mangle] that could refresh the skill's effect! He never had thought that the tiger would have a skill similar to a Thief's [shadow step] to immediately teleport behind someone's back. Not only had the [mangle] been refreshed to 15 seconds, he now had 5 stacks of [mangle]! He now had to take additional, unnecessary damage for the next 15 seconds!

Even though the Saber-Tooth Skeleton Tiger was strong, it was vastly outclassed by the party's DPS! So far, Fatty Han and the gang had each exceeded 1000 DPS. Daffodil Daydream was slightly behind at around 800 DPS. The overall DPS strength was enough to kill the tiger with 100,000 HP in just 20 seconds!

“Don't worry! Tai Tai! I will heal your wounds!” Shimalue Gutan cried out all of a sudden and chanted a healing spell and healed the tiger by 25,000 HP.

The spell casting duration was so fast that it only took half a second for her to finish the spell. Those that had interruption skills could not even react in time. Before they even realized it, the spell was already complete and they could only stare at the boss healing the monster that was already at the brink of death.

Fortunately, the tiger was inflicted with the [destructive smash] debuff

that would reduce healing effect by 75%. If that wasn't the case, the healing spell would have completely healed the tiger back to full health.

"Noob tank! You're too slow! Why didn't you stop her spell when you have an interruption skill! Hmph! You've lost my respect!" said Wei Yan Er. She always did try her best to poke fun at him.

Zhang Yang laughed and shot back, "I wasn't the only one here who was unable to interrupt her spell. Why aren't you scolding the others?"

"Because you're the only one that has a stupid face!" said Wei Yan Er with full honesty.

"Don't die! Tai Tai!" Even when the boss attempted to heal the tiger again, the team's combined attack simply overruled her efforts. It was like tossing the contents of a cup of water into a raging inferno. The tiger's HP was drained down in almost no time at all. Shimalue Gutan could only shriek at the top of her lungs.

"Somehow, I pity this queen. Her husband was cheating with her son's wife and she only has her pets to accompany her!" said Daffodil mournfully, her eyes already showing signs of tears.

Zhang Yang scoffed. "In that case, let's spare her."

"...No. We kill. Living is much more painful for her!" said Daffodil as she made up her mind. "We are giving her a mercy killing, not just for equipment and whimsical desires!"

Everyone laughed instantly.

"Tai Tai..." Shimalue Gutan cried and chanted another healing spell.

[crash magic]!

Zhang Yang was ready for it this time. He quickly bashed her with his shield.

The spell was instantly interrupted and she had received [silent] for 3 seconds. [silent] had rendered her unable to cast any spells for 3 seconds.

'Ding! You and the party members around have killed Tai Tai! Obtained 12,550 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!'

“NOOOO....!” cried Shimalue Gutan.

The boss suddenly glowed red. She had gone berserk.

“Damned intruders! I will crush your skull with my bare hands and throw your mangled corpses into the abyss! May you forever burn in the raging flames of hell! Wu Wu! Gu Gu! Kill them! Avenge Tai Tai!”

‘Ding! Shimalue Gutan has gained [enraged] (1 stack). All attacks and healing effects will be increase by 33%!’

‘Ding! Wu Wu has gained [enraged] (1 stack). All attacks and healing effects will be increase by 33%!’

‘Ding! Gu Gu has gained [enraged] (1 stack). All attacks and healing effects will be increase by 33%!’

An increment by 33% in damage had made the boss stronger by a noticeable amount. The [Punishment Ray] had its damage increased to 2600 or more, with Zhang Yang’s damage reduction lowering that amount down to 2000.

“Pick up the pace!” Zhang Yang screamed.

The boss was not the only one that had suddenly ingested an overdose of steroids and went all crazy! Han Ying Xue had to take care of two tanks, which made her roll her sleeves up, taking things seriously.

The party then shifted their targets to the bird monster Gu Gu and managed to bring it down to critical health in a short time.

“Gu Gu!” Shimalue Gutan cried in anguish as she started to chant a healing spell. However, Zhang Yang was quicker and bashed her with [crash magic], stopping her healing.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Gu Gu! Obtained 12,550 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

“ARGHH...!” The boss screeched in such a high pitch that everyone had to cover their ears. She stood with her hind hooves and screamed at no one in particular, dramatically rearing her head about like the tragic heroine of an opera.

“I WILL KILL YOU ALL! I WILL KILL! KILL!” Bellowed the boss.

‘Ding! Shimalue Gutan has gained [enraged] (2 stack). All attacks and healing will be increase by 67%!’

‘Ding! Wu Wu has gained [enraged] (2 stack). All attacks and healing will be increase by 67%!’

“-2672!”

“-2004!”

The boss fired a [Punishment Ray], while the wolf concurrently spat out a [Fire Ball]. Both attacks struck Zhang Yang at the same time, causing him to have only around 1000 HP left!

What power!

Zhang Yang frantically cried, “Starlight! Provoke Wu Wu and get him off me!”

“OK!”

Endless Starlight quickly complied and cast [taunting fist], dragging Wu Wu away from Zhang Yang.

Half a minute later, Wu Wu turned into a pillar of light and falls defeated.

“WU WU!!!” Shimalue Gutan was enraged beyond compare. Her dark, charcoal hair started to spread out and floated up mystically. Her eyes glowed with intense green, emerald flames.

‘Ding! Shimalue Gutan has gained [enraged] (3 stack). All attacks and healing will be increased by 100%!’

“Damn! We’re cruel!” Fatty Han cried crocodile tears. “When her husband had found a new toy to play with, she had managed to find herself a few loyal companions! Yet, we just killed them! Aiyaya...Looks like this poor woman had to depend on cucumbers to accompany her during the dark, lonesome nights!”

“Fatty...You know...If you don’t speak up, no one would think that you’re

a mute.”

“Ah...”

Fatty Han turned around and saw the 4 ladies staring at him with eyes that could swallow him whole. Fatty Han turned his gaze away sheepishly. “Eh...ladies, I know that you have the hots for the big Fatty. But please, control your passion! You have to know that you’re all Little Yang’s main dishes, and that there’s a saying: “a brother wife is off limit...”

The ladies were furious enough as it is, but when Fatty Han added fuel to the fire, it brought their fury round by a full circle, dissuading them as they felt that there was no point directing their wrath at Fatty Han.

“-3212!”

The boss cast [Punishment Ray] and blasted Zhang Yang with powerful, enhanced damage. Even though he could stop the boss from healing, but he still had to take the [Punishment Ray] head on!”

“+2015!”

“+402!”

Han Ying Xue’s [brilliant light] and [regeneration] ticked at the same time and healed almost half of his HP. However, it was still insufficient in coping with the loss of his HP!

Only half a minute passed, and Zhang Yang had to depend on [berserker’s heal] to recover from his dangerously low HP back to full health. The boss’ damage had exceeded the healing that Han Ying Xue could provide, therefore Zhang Yang had to depend on himself to deal with the excessive damage he received.

Health potion, [berserker’s heal], Lover’s Sword [lifesteal], [merlinda’s shadow], [shield wall], [substitute], he had to use everything he had to survive! Zhang Yang had planned the skill cycle out and prioritized the ones with the lowest cool down times to maximize the effect.

The good thing was that even if Shimalue Gutan’s attack was strong, her HP did not match up to the strength of her attacks. She did not have any

large AoE multi-target skill as well. After lasting for another 2 minutes or so, she shrieked and fell defeated.

Haaa! Phew...

Everyone drew in a deep breath and let out a long breath of relief. The fight with this boss did not take long, but the boss' attack was so strong that many of them had held their breaths, witnessing Zhang Yang being close to death for many times. They could only relax and let down their guard only when the boss was down.

"It's finally over. Man! I was freaking out there!" said Endless Starlight as he wiped his forehead; even when there was no sweat.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. The period of the Gray-Silver equipment was once known as the weak period. It was even applicable to the boss as well! Shimalue Gutan was one such example, her strong attack could easily kill a tank with one or two hits! However, she was a glass cannon who lacked durability! When players started to put on Yellow-Gold gears with damage reduction set skills, there would be lesser cases of instant kills.

Han Ying Xue was so completely worn out that she laid her head on Wei Yan Er lap. While stroking her cousin sister's silky hair, she stared angrily at Zhang Yang and cried. "Noob tank! Look at what you've done! You've completely drained my cousin sister out!"

"WOOOOAHHH!" Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and Endless Starlight broke out in surprised laughter.

"Little brat! Don't say something like that..." Even a person as flirtatious as Han Ying Xue would feel some shame when Wei Yan Er said something that could be interpreted very differently in such manner.

Turning around, Wei Yan Er was confused, but when no one cared to explain her fault she snapped, "You guys are bullies! Hmph! I'm not talking to you guys anymore!" She got up to her feet and went to the boss for the loots.

[Blaze War Hammer] (Gray-Silver, One handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 403 – 461

Attack Interval: 2.7 seconds.

DPS: 160

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

“Oh yeah! This is good sh*t!” Endless Starlight cried as he inspected the item. His current weapon was still a level 30 Green-Copper tier with only 60 DPS. He would definitely experience a huge difference if he were to equip this item!

Zhang Yang saw his reaction and smiled gently. “Take it!” Zhang Yang gave up his roll.

Endless Starlight wavered a little and said, “H-How could I...I mean...your weapon is just a level 30 Gray-Silver tier. The hammer is much better!”

Zhang Yang shook his head sadly. “When you reached level 40, you were still here. What you didn’t know was that you could get a level 40 skill from the Class Instructor. At level 40, a Defender could learn a skill called [hammer mastery]. It could increase all damage by 5% only when a hammer-type equipment is worn! That is why a Hammer is a specialized weapon for Defenders!”

Wei Yan Er nodded her head and said, “That right! I have already learned the skill [axe mastery]. All attacks are increased by 5% when I’m equipping an axe weapon! That is why, no one is to take away my axe! Any two-handed axes that ever appear in the boss loots are all mine!”

Endless Starlight smiled gratefully and accepted the hammer. With this, his attack and ability to pull aggro would be greatly increased. All of this was thanks to Zhang Yang! His respect for him has only grown stronger! He knew that the original party members did not need him to join. He knew that he would make little difference to them!

Chapter 152: An Incestophile and Cinderella

Zhang Yang noticed a look of gratitude flashed across Endless Starlight's face. Zhang Yang smiled secretly and thought in his heart, looks like this future icon of a tank has already started to feel indebted to Lone Desert Smoke. As long as they do more raids together, then Zhang Yang would not need to doubt Endless Starlight's loyalty to Lone Desert Smoke.

Wei Yan Er was preoccupied with digging about for further loots since the first item was already distributed. She kept an eye out for the valuable white gleam. Green-Copper items have longed been ignored by her.

[Feather Skirt] (Gray-Silver, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +96

Intelligence: +48

Spirit: +16

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

Han Ying Xue smiled and said, "Give this to Daffodil Daydream first, I'm wearing a full set of equipment and I do not want to ruin the set equipment effect just yet!"

She gave up her roll, so Daffodil Daydream embarrassingly received the skirt and equipped it.

Zhang Yang said: "In fact, Level 30 Gray-Silver equipment cannot replace set equipment, but 3 pieces of Level 40 Gray-Silver equipment can replace the 5-piece set equipment's 10% damage increment! Most importantly, Level 20 equipment simply gives too little HP, and to clear future Hardcore Mode Castle dungeons, your HP needs to be up to at least 5,000!"

“5,000...” Fatty Han rolled both of his eyes and said, “My HP is only 4,300!”

“Didn’t I tell you to keep one set of equipment from the Garden? Have you sold it already?” Zhang Yang glanced at him.

“No, it is still in the Bank!” Fatty Han laughed as he replied.

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief after hearing Fatty Han’s reply. After clearing here, they would need to explore the dungeon of the Castle. Everyone was strictly required at least 5,000 HP to fight the fourth boss. If any single person did not make it, the party would be annihilated!

[Skill Book: Beast Rage]

Use: Grants the skill [beast rage]

Class Requirement: Hunter

Level Requirement: 30

Zhang Yang could help but laugh in joy and said, “Fatty and Hundred Shots, this skill is really good! It can increase the damage dealt by your pet temporarily like Shimalue Gutan’s pets just now!”

Hundred Shots said: “Fatty, let’s roll the dice!”

Both of them rolled the dice and Fatty Han obtained the skill book.

[beast rage] : Increases the damage dealt by your pet by 50%. Last for 15 seconds. Cool time down: 2 minutes.

“This skill is really useful for Beastmaster!” Hundred Shots could not help but exclaim when he saw the skill description posted by Fatty Han.

Fatty Han said delightedly, “With this skill, my damage output going to increase once again! Who else in the world could defeat me?!”

‘Shing’, Sun Xing Yu pulled out both of her daggers, the sound crystal clear in the silent atmosphere, and she glanced at Fatty Han coldly.

Fatty Han could not help but feel intimidated, he trembled in fear of this lady.

The gang was not interested in the remaining eight Green-Copper items

so they just simply threw it into their inventories and continued moving forward.

They arrived at the fourth level after clearing a few skeletal tiger and skeletal wolf monsters at another long stone stairway.

It was empty within the resplendent palace, except for the huge pillars, which needed to be held up together by three men, set up a distance from each other.

“No monsters?” Daffodil Daydream could not help but feel delighted.

It was already 11 P.M. at night. The gang was thought of having a look at the fourth level before logging off and retiring for the night before continuing with the following two levels tomorrow. But if there were no monsters, they could fight the boss directly which would save up a lot of time!

“Wait!”

Zhang Yang and Sun Xing Yu yelled at the same time.

Han Ying Xue could not help but laughed and said: “Both of you really have an unspoken bond!”

“Like husband like wife!” Wei Yan Er also laughed.

“F*ck” Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at that two gloating ladies and said, “It might be stealth monster! Starlight, you’ll have to take one for the team, go in front!”

Endless Starlight looked as if he was about to cry, and plaintively said, “Why me?”

“Nonsense, you have a solid defense!”

“Then why don’t you go in front?”

“I need to pull the monsters!”

Poor Endless Starlight, who was sold to the monster by the gang, held on his shield and walked in front. After he walked for seven to eight steps, he stopped suddenly and rotating stars appeared above his head which

represented a [stun] status.

A person in black appeared from the back of Endless Starlight and he raised his two swords and stabbed Endless Starlight's back, each stab took about 1,000 of Endless Starlight HP.

[Shadow Assassin] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 46

HP: 92,000

Unexpectedly, it was not a centaur but an elf... a dead one.

Endless Starlight was about 8 meters away from the gang, which was also the range of [charge] so Zhang Yang immediately rushed towards him with [charge].

‘-752!’

‘-1554!’

After Shadow Assassin recovered from being stunned, Shadow Assassin immediately changed his target and attacked Zhang Yang with his two gleaming swords.

‘[block]!’

‘-212!’

‘-80!’

Due to the monster having double physical attacks, even if Zhang Yang used [block], he still received an attack. But this attack was caused by off-hand weapon which also inflicted 80 points of poison damage.

In ‘God’s Miracle’, off-hand attacks are reduced by 50% and its damage was much lesser compared to one handed attacks. In general, weapons with long attack intervals would be equipped in one hand slot to increase damage of single hit skills. While weapons with shorter attack intervals would be equipped in off-hand slots, in order to trigger some passive skills or poison effects.

“Why is there an elf in centaur’s palace? Could it be...” Daffodil

Daydream was psyched. Daffodil Daydream was a “Fujoshi”, and she started to fantasize about a boys’ love scenario.

“You’ll find all manner of evil sorcerers in this dungeon, it won’t be surprising to have a few elf thieves!” Zhang Yang laughed and said.

Daffodil Daydream was disappointed, she pursed her lip and stopped talking.

With the strong ability of team’s damage dealing, this Shadow Assassin could only live for 10 seconds and died, dropping a few pieces of clothes and a Black-Steel item.

Poor Endless Starlight continued walking in front of the gang, acting as bait to attract the attacks of stealth monsters and reveal themselves.

This level was full of thief type monsters with stealth abilities. Theses undead were members of several races such as humans, beasts, dwarves, elf and even goblins and trolls! The team moved on for a while before Zhang Yang announced that today’s activity would end here and that they would continue tomorrow.

Zhang Yang logged on the game the next morning, and Yan Wei Er showed up in the team as expected.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Little brat, were you planning to apply for leave continuously until we done with this main quest?”

“En!” Yan Wei Er nodded her head determinedly.

“Don’t the kids nowadays wish to go the school and play with their friends?” Zhang Yang thought that it was odd. When he was studying, he also wished for holidays but after a long holiday, he would also wish to go back to the school, as it was more lively and fun!

Yan Wei Er pursed her lip with a disdainful expression and said, “What is fun in playing with those childish little brats?”

Zhang Yang was suddenly taken aback and looked at Han Ying Xue, he determined that Yan Wei Er had to have been influenced by this devilish woman.

Han Ying Xue noticed Zhang Yang looking at her so she looked back Zhang Yang with her seductive eyes and said, “Silly Yu, please just say so that you like me, don’t steal glances at me like that, otherwise, you’re going to develop a cross-eye!”

Yan Wei Er asked, “Sis, what is a cross-eye?”

Han Ying Xue squinted, briefly crossing her eyes and made Yan Wei Er laugh out loudly.

All members of the gang soon showed up and the gang continued moving forward.

The higher the level, the lesser the monsters spawned. So the gang only used five hours to clear the fourth level. The first level took two days to clear, the second and third level which took more than a day each to clear. So, these five hours were considered a very short period!

Halfway through the passage, Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream gained a level once again and both of them were now Level 41. The rest of the members were not far from achieving Level 42 as well.

There were two bosses.

[King Kinglose Turk] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 48

HP: 960,000

[Princess Annie Balrum] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 47

HP: 940,000

MP: 470,000

This incestuous couple was snuggled together and passionately kissed like a loving husband and wife from time to time.

“F*ck, these incestuous b*stards!” Fatty Han scolded.

“It just so happens that we have two tanks, so each tank for each boss!” Zhang Yang thought of it and said, “Princess is a magic-type monster, so

Starlight, you tank the princess and I will tank the king!"

"We have only one healer. Will she be able to heal the two of you together?" Yan Wei Er said.

"Quest item!" Sun Xing Yu interrupted suddenly.

The gang recalled that they had received a quest spear from a quest of killing the king and princess which would be needed to use when fighting the king and princess.

Yan Wei Er impatiently took out the spear from her inventory immediately and chose to use the spear. Instantly, an illusory centaur figure appeared in front of everyone, it was the Prince Chateau Turk of centaur race!

[Shadow of Revenge] (Elite, Soul)

Level: 44

HP: 100,000

Once this Chateau Turk's [Shadow of Revenge] had appeared, he stared at that incestuous couple in anger and roared then stomped his hoofs and rushed towards them.

Zhang Yang selected the quest spear in his inventory but the system showed that one [Shadow of Revenge] already existed, invalid to use temporarily. He pulled out his sword and said, "Don't worry about the strategy, let's try them out first, at least we'll find out what the skills of these bosses are!"

"B*tch, I want to kill you!" [Shadow of Revenge] rushed towards Princess Annie Balrum angrily.

"Chateau, you dickless trash! Even in death you persist to bother us!" Annie Balrum said with contemptuous laughter. She waved her right hand and a wand appeared, which she directed towards the [Shadow of Revenge] and a flash of flaming fire burst from the wand.

"B*tch, if it was not for me marry you, you would still be a commoner, is this how you repay me?!" [Shadow of Revenge] roared again and started

fighting with Annie Balrum.

“So it is the Prince and Cinderella! Unfortunately, their marriage has changed!” Endless Starlight muttered.

Zhang Yang saw that they were fighting and said immediately, “Starlight, don’t pull the princess yet, let [Shadow of Revenge] pester her!”

Slash!

‘[charge]!’

Zhang Yang dashed towards Kinglose Turk and smashed on him immediately.

‘653!’

After a normal attack, a low-valued damage text appeared above Kinglose Turk’s head. Zhang Yang frowned as Kinglose Turk’s Defense value was about 300, which was very high! But he was not in fear as he had [eagle eye] and the rest of the members could rely on [Cripple Defense] which reduced 150 Defense value on Kinglose Turk, it would greatly aid the damage output.

Kinglose Turk yelled angrily, pulled out a spear and struck Zhang Yang: “Little human, how dare you provoke the great king of centaur, I’ll hack you into pieces!”

“Incestophile, go to hell!” Yan Wei Er yelled, dashed forward by using [charge] and whirled her weapon.

“Little brat, you learned a new word in no time, huh!” Zhang Yang laughed.

Yan Wei Er answered arrogantly, “I hate trash like this guy who uses people and throws them aside for anything new. I’ll kill this shameless fellow!”

At the other side, [Shadow of Revenge] fought with Annie Balrum.

[Shadow of Revenge] pierced Annie Balrum by using his spear but it did not cause any damage to Annie Balrum. Yet, [Shadow of Revenge] was still the first who held the aggro. So, even if Han Ying Xue healed continuously,

the HP recovery would not exceed [Shadow of Revenge]'s aggro.

Annie Balrum was a Spellcaster, she used a chain of DOT first, then damage reduction debuff, followed by [soul burst] and [shadow whip] which assaulted [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP. Luckily [Shadow of Revenge] had 100,000 HP, and with Annie Balrum's damage output, she would need to attack for quite some time before she could kill [Shadow of Revenge].

Back at Zhang Yang's side, Sun Xing Yu and the rest already started to deal damage in full force towards the incestuous king, causing the king's HP to drop dramatically.

"Guards! Guards! Kill all the intruders!" Kinglose Turk shouted loudly.

Fatty Han laughed loudly and said, "Keep shouting, nobody is going to help you even if you cough your throat out!"

"Ding! Kinglose Turk has released [Summoned Guard]!"

Eight strong centaurs appeared in formation at the back of Kinglose Turk.

"Pervert Fatty, you have such a bad mouth!" Yan Wei Er said angrily.

"Coincidence! This must be a coincidence!" Fatty Han quickly claimed that he was innocent.

[Summoned Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 45

HP: 90,000

"I will kite them all, you guys use AoE skills to kill them all quickly!" Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep] followed by [thunder strike] to reduce the monsters' movement speed, before leading them in circles.

However, Kinglose Turk movement speed was still faster than Zhang Yang, even if his movement speed was reduced by 50%, Zhang Yang unable to flee from him! Luckily, Zhang Yang's plan was to reduce the elite monsters movement speed only, thus, it did not matter if Kinglose Turk was unhindered.

They killed all the eight monsters within a minute and the field was back to normal after the chaos.

But Kinglose Turk' HP dropping became slower, Kinglose Turk' HP dropped only by about 100,000. The guards had reduced the party's damage output by 67%!

"Guards! Guards! Kill all the intruders!" Kinglose Turk deserved to be called a king indeed, as he continuously summoned guards and stabbed repeatedly with his spear.

Eight strong centaurs appeared at the back of Kinglose Turk once again.

Based on Zhang Yang's speculation, Kinglose Turk would summon the number of guards according to the number of people who held the aggro! Thus, this was actually beneficial to an elite team like them as if there was a 100-man team, Kinglose Turk would instantly summon 100 elite guards which will quickly wipe them out.

The gang continued using AoE skills and they killed the second round of summoned guards instantly. However, AoE skills drained a huge amount of MP from Spellcasters. After killing two rounds of summoned guards, Daffodil Daydream's MP had depleted. Bandits and Hunters would recover their energy and Focus point in a fixed time. Warriors had it even easier, they functioned on Rage, where it did not matter whether they were attacking or being attacked by others, they would regain their Rage.

After another round of guards, Daffodil Daydream's MP dried out once again, so she could only stand aside and spectate.

Chapter 153: Kill Them Both

The battle went back and forth with Kinglose Turk continuously summoning the guards and the gang repeatedly slaying them all. Because Kinglose Turk summoned the guards so frequently, the gang had no time to focus fire on Kinglose Turk alone.

The overall damage for AoE skill was high but still weaker than a single hit damage, thus, Kinglose Turk's HP dropped at a snail's pace. The gang had to drag the battle without realizing it!

Luckily, Han Ying Xue had a great talent for healing and she was already an expert in MP before she reached Level 30. After she had gained [divine soul], her healing power was further improved, which almost made her MP inexhaustible.

On the other side, [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP was high but Annie Balrum did decent damage, so [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP depleted rapidly. Han Ying Xue wanted to heal [Shadow of Revenge] but the system showed that it was invalid to cast spell towards the target, so she could only helplessly gaze at [Shadow of Revenge]'s HP dropping.

“Ha ha, Chateau, you useless crap, you were useless when you was living, you are also as useless in death!” Annie Balrum fired [soul burst] at [Shadow of Revenge] to destroy its last drop of HP and she wore a contemptuous expression.

After losing [Shadow of Revenge] who held the highest aggro, Annie immediately turned her target to Han Ying Xue because nobody had attacked her before and certainly Han Ying Xue, who performed mass healing would become her target as she held the highest aggro.

Zhang Yang had been keeping an eye on the other battle, so he hurriedly took out the quest spear from his inventory and selected it.

Suddenly, Chateau Turk's soul appeared once again with full HP. The centaur prince immediately dashed towards Annie Balrum, raised his spear and roared, “B*tch, I'll kill you!” It was the same action with the same dialogue as before.

Annie Balrum was stunned, and stopped attacking Han Ying Xue after she fired a single [soul burst] at Han Ying Xue. Annie Balrum turned around to deal [Shadow of Revenge], crying out, “Impossible! You are already dead! I just killed you, you are already dead!”

“B*tch, you betrayed me, you betrayed love and you even want to kill me now!” [Shadow of Revenge] roared with anger, “Go to hell!”

This pair of nominally couple started to fight once again.

90%, 80%, 70%... Kinglose Turk’s HP dropped slowly. He summoned the guards continuously and the gang cleared the summoned guards repeatedly in a cycle.

Poor Kinglose Turk had the esteemed title of being a boss, but was subjected to repeated AoE skills as if he was just another minion.

20%, 10%... 3%, 2%, 1%!

“No! No!” Kinglose Turk howled loudly in anguish and rage, clinging on to his life, “I’m the King of centaurs, I will dominate the world, the land is all mine! All the beauties are also mine! I’m immortal, I’m imm...”

Pa, the huge and tall body crashed down. This King had died hundreds of years ago but the evil sorcerer had used undead magic to resurrect him. Now, he faced death again.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Kinglose Turk. Obtained 120,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“It was really exhausting killing this old fellow, if not for him summoning so many minions, I suppose we would have killed him earlier!” Now only did Endless Starlight dare to discuss the strategy after killing Kinglose Turk.

“Kinglose...” Annie Balrum howled shrilly, countless black light surged from her body and eight dark stripes appeared on her beautiful face. It was another kind of sexy.

“Pa!” She threw another [soul burst] towards [Shadow of Revenge], instantly killing him, even when he still had about 40,000 HP!

“F*ck, after her father-in-law died, she releases her anger on her husband. This woman is really cruel!” Fatty Han shouted.

Another [Shadow of Revenge] was summoned again, shouting something among the lines of, “B*tch, I’ll kill you!” and dashed towards Annie Balrum. Before he could reach her, he was already slashed to pieces by Annie Balrum’s [shadow whip]!

“No need to summon anymore!” Zhang Yang rushed forward Annie Balrum, “Kinglose Turk has died and [Shadow of Revenge] is not useful anymore. The developer won’t let us defeat Annie Balrum so easily!”

If [Shadow of Revenge] could be used, then there would be no healing stress for the team because they could defeat Annie Balrum easily.

“What if we had hit Annie Balrum first?” Yan Wei Er blinked her eyes and asked.

“She may have been immune to damage probably had a full HP recovery ability before death, who knows?! Doesn’t matter anymore!” Zhang Yang continued rushing towards Annie Balrum and threw a chain of skills at her.

Han Ying Xue still held the highest aggro, so Annie Balrum totally ignored Zhang Yang. Annie Balrum cast [dark anguish], [touch of weakness] and [soul decay], three debuffs on Han Ying Xue, followed by [soul burst] and < Shadow Whip>. Many texts and debuffs floated above Han Ying Xue’s head.

‘-2,000!’

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

‘+1,802!’

‘-300!’

‘-1,000!’

‘+363!’

‘-500!’

Han Ying Xue had only about 4,300 HP so only had about 600 HP after being struck by Annie Balrum. She was petrified in fear and hurriedly cast [holy shield] while yelled at the same time, “Silly Yu, help me!”

Zhang Yang couldn’t help but laugh in his heart, looking at her somewhat comical predicament. He threw a [vanguard's aggression] at Han Ying Xue and her received damage was reduced by 90% immediately!

As a result, Annie Balrum’s attacks towards Han Ying Xue were not harmful anymore and Han Ying Xue immediately casted healing spells, recovering her own HP to full!

Zhang Yang dared not take any chances and hurriedly summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] to cause high damage output in order to hold the highest aggro! Otherwise, the effect of [vanguard's aggression] would end after 10 seconds, and without any immunity and lifesaving skill, Han Ying Xue would not survive much longer.

8, 7, 6... 2, 1!

Ten seconds of [vanguard's aggression] effect ended and the barrier shielded around Han Ying Xue disappeared immediately!

Han Ying Xue still held the highest aggro. Annie Balrum threw another [soul burst] towards Han Ying Xue and took out half of Han Ying Xue’s HP.

‘-2,000!’

“Ah! Silly Yu, faster get your aggro, I’m going to die!” Han Ying Xue screamed.

Yan Wei Er rarely ever saw Han Ying Xue with such an embarrassing expression, she could not help but laughed along with Zhang Yang.

‘-3,440!’

‘[destructive smash] Critical Strike!’

After a high damage output, Annie Balrum had finally turned around and stared at Zhang Yang with her eyes full of grudge and anger:

“Foreigners, you killed my beloved man, I want all of you buried together with my beloved man!”

“Damn, this shameless woman still dares to talk like that! How did the previous Prince and Queen deal with such a character?!” Endless Starlight muttered.

“Ding! You have received the effect of [dark anguish]. Receiving 500 Shadow Damage every 3 seconds for 18 seconds!”

“Ding! You have received the effect of [touch of weakness]. All your attacks and healing effect will be reduced by 5% for 1 minute!”

“Ding! You have received the effect of [soul decay]. Receiving 300 Shadow Damage every 2 seconds for 24 seconds!”

A chain of system alerts flooded his log, and a row of debuffs appeared above Zhang Yang’s head. His body was surrounded by black colour air which was the same as Han Ying Xue.

Luckily Zhang Yang had regained the aggro in time!

“Ding! Annie Balrum has released [soul burst]!”

‘-1,600!’

Another damage text floated across Zhang Yang’s head once again. Annie Balrum’s [soul burst] was instantaneous and had high damage value. Luckily it needed 6 seconds of cool down time. Otherwise, Zhang Yang would not withstand a [soul burst] coming at him every second!

“Ding! Annie Balrum is channeling [shadow whip]. Dealing 1,000 Shadow Damage every second for 3 seconds!”

Annie Balrum wielded her wand, a ray of black light instantly twined around Zhang Yang’s body and ‘-640’ damage text floated across his head every second.

‘[crash magic]!’

Immune!

Zhang Yang was unable to interrupt Annie Balrum’s casting and took its

damage!

“Sis, let me avenge you!” Yan Wei Er shouted and whirled her weapon, stabbing the back of Annie Balrum which caused a chain of attacks, thus, many damage texts appeared across Annie Balrum’s head.

“Little brat, weren’t you laughing happily just now?” Han Ying Xue said angrily.

Yan Wei Er smiled and said, “No, that must have been your imagination!”

The gang started to deal damage forcefully and hacked away at Annie Balrum.

Although Annie Balrum had cast many skills, the damage value was not horrible. Her DPS was just about 1,200, but it was still higher than Han Ying Xue’s healing value. However, Zhang Yang could use lifesaving skills! These were the differences between a tank and a healer!

If they dragged the battling time any longer then Zhang Yang’s skills’ cool down time would not be enough. Annie Balrum’s HP was only about 900,000, with the team’s DPS at above 5,000 and Annie Balrum could not last for more than 3 minutes! Zhang Yang started a chain of attack with [berserker's heal] followed by the Lover's Sword life steal effect, [Shadow of Merlinda], and [shield wall] which outlasted Annie Balrum.

“No... No!” Annie Balrum yelled madly before dying, “I cannot die! I’m the prettiest centaur, the Queen of centaurs, I cannot die...”

0%!

Annie Balrum crashed down.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Annie Balrum. Obtained 117,550 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“Ding! You have completed the quest: Kill Them Both. Gained 100,000 EXP!”

“Yes, we did it!” Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream got excited and jumped up.

Hang Ying Xue and the usual party members showed dull expression as they already killed a lot of Gray-Silver bosses so they were not excited at all.

“Sigh, they are all Gray-Silvers, why don’t they release a few Yellow-Gold bosses for us to kill?!” Fatty Han sighed.

“Yes, yes, yes, I want Yellow-Gold items!” Yan Wei Er eyes shone.

Thanks to the Yellow-Gold ring that Zhang Yang had obtained, the gang was drooling and looked forward to Yellow-Gold items!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said: “Yellow-Gold bosses will appear when we are above Level 50. Based on the assumption that higher leveled Castle dungeons equals higher leveled bosses, the final level’s boss is probably a Yellow-Gold boss as Kinglose Turk is already Level 48!”

Chapter 154: Centaur Guard

“Yellow-Gold boss?”

The gang spluttered out in unison, hardly able to mask their excited expressions.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “Kinglose Turk is already Level 48, so the final boss could be above Level 50! In general, the final boss is stronger so it is likely to be a Yellow-Gold boss!”

Han Ying Xue thought about it and said, “Like Cave of Bones, wasn’t there a few bosses at the front of the dungeon that were Green-Copper followed by the Gray-Silver boss appearing at the end?”

“Yes, it is!”

Yan Wei Er excitedly said, “Then will that boss drop a skeletal war horse?”

When players reach Level 40, they could buy mounts from the Mount Shop at the Capital. The mounts were just the normal generic mount where they could choose between white, brown or black colour horses. They could buy the mount at 10 gold coins only, so it was common that every player had a normal horse as a mount!

Besides, the horses sold in Mount Shop only increased movement speeds by 200%, unlike [Skeletal War Horse]’s 300% riding speed!

Although they had been killing Shurian many times, it still never dropped any [The Leash of Skeletal War Horse]. So, Yan Wei Er had been in great anticipation of the [Skeletal War Horse] since long ago!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “I don’t know about that but if the final boss is Yellow-Gold boss, then it will be the first Yellow-Gold boss in China server, even for the global eight servers. So, it definitely will drop best items!”

“Let’s go, let’s kill ourselves a Yellow-Gold boss!” Yan Wei Er shouted with excitement.

Zhang Yang saw Yan Wei Er started stepping forward, he shook his head and sighed, “Evil Snow, is this little brat really suitable for trading in businesses? Aren’t you afraid that she will give the whole company to others on a whim?”

Han Ying Xue didn’t take offense at the nickname “Evil Snow”. On the contrary, she quite liked it. When she saw Yan Wei Er putting out such behaviour, she also sighed and said, “Yan Er, don’t you want to loot boss’ corpses?”

“Ah!” Yan Wei Er only recalled she had not yet looted the two boss’ corpses, she hurriedly turned back and ran towards the boss’ corpses and said, “Don’t fight! Don’t fight! The boss’ corpses are mine!”

Daffodil Daydream laughed and said, “Yan Er is really funny!”

Yan Wei Er ignored the comment but looted Annie Balrum’s corpse first.

[Circlet of Sacrificial Abyss] (Gray-Silver, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +96

Intelligence: +48

Spirit: +16

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

“Amazing, so many Vitality points from this equipment!” Daffodil Daydream muttered. [Circlet of Sacrificial Abyss] was terrifying compared to her Level 30 Green-Copper helmet which added only 36 Vitality points!

Two people with Spellcaster classes demanded the loot together, this time it was Han Ying Xue’s turn to be luckier, and she won the roll.

[Ring of Honesty] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +20

Intelligence: +20

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

Note: Treasure of centaur race, gifted by Chateau Turk.

“Poor Chateau, you must find a good lover in your next lifetime!” Fatty Han pretended to be emphatic, when he read the note showed on the post of [Ring of Honesty]’s description.

“He had bad luck in finding women!” Endless Starlight started to response.

Daffodil Daydream immediately refuted, “As a woman, of course, we have the power to pursuit happiness!”

“Damn, Annie Balrum had an affair and she is still in the right?” Endless Starlight said immediately.

Daffodil Daydream stated drearily with a far-away look in her face, “Perhaps the evil Prince liked Annie due to her beauty and forced her to marry him!”

“Then what about her getting entwined with the King?” Hundred Shots also joined the discussion.

“Why should women have to submit to humiliation, do they deserve to be held down under your body?” Daffodil Daydream spoke loudly, “If any guy dares to force me and I could not fight against him, maybe I would also seduce another guy and make him a cuckold!”

Daffodil Daydream deserved to be called as “Fujoshi” as she dared to speak anything.

Instantly, the discussion reached a heated peak.

Yan Wei Er didn’t pay much attention to it and continued to loot Annie Balrum’s corpse.

[Recipe: Limitless Cape]

Use: You learn how to craft [Limitless Cape].

Requirement: Advance Tailoring

Again it's Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream. Both of them had Advanced Tailoring. Finally, Daffodil Daydream won the roll this time. After she had learnt the recipe, she posted [Limitless Cape]'s attributes.

[Limitless Cape] (Gray-Silver, Cape)

Vitality: +30

Strength: +20

Equipment: Absorbs 50 Damage value for every attack dealt.

Level Requirement: 50

True Justice set equipment for tanks had made an appearance!

Endless Starlight's eyes shone immediately and said, "Sister Daffodil, you must craft one for me!"

Daffodil Daydream pursed her lip and said, "I will craft for anyone but not you!"

Zhang Yang also said, "If you could craft this cape, it could be sold at a good price at Auction House!"

"Really?" Daffodil Daydream asked dubiously, as absorbing 50 Damage value for every attack dealt did not seem much to her.

Zhang Yang laughed, "It is pretty mediocre for just one piece of equipment, but what if you gather into set equipment?"

Set equipment? Then it could actually absorb... 500 to 1000 Damage value already!

Hundred Shots said, "That's mean, there will be a huge damage reduction set equipment in the future?"

"Yes!" Zhang Yang nodded and said, "After Level 50, True Justice set equipment for tanks will appear with additional high damage absorption attribute. Berserkers and Templars finally do not need to compete for the equipment against Guardians and Defenders anymore!"

"Hais, finally I can relax a little bit!" Han Ying Xue said with a feeling of relief.

Zhang Yang smiled secretly and said in his mind, if the tank equipped more damage reduction equipment, the stress from healer to heal tank would be lesser. But the bosses in the future would mostly use AoE skills, so healers would still have to work harder for the party!

He left the evil Snow to her happiness for a while and kept that information to himself.

They already picked up the good loots from Annie Balrum's corpse and now Yan Wei Er went to loot Kinglose Turk's corpse.

[Seal of the Empire] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +400

Vitality: +160

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

"Wow, they actually used the seal to make as shield, it is so creative!" Fatty Han said happily.

Zhang Yang glanced at Endless Starlight who was looking at [Seal of the Empire] with a most hungry expression, smiled and said, "Starlight, take the shield!"

Endless Starlight immediately showed a grateful but in fearful expression and said: "How can that be the case, you are still using a Level 30 shield! Why don't you take this [Seal of the Empire] and give the [Bones of the Chimera] to me!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Your current equipment is too rudimentary and shield is the best to increase defense and HP! With the hammer you looted earlier and this shield, you can stand alone in the future! I would not have to worry and I will be confidently able to leave the second team to you!"

Having said that, Zhang Yang gave up his roll.

Endless Starlight was touched and almost cried in tears, he sniffled and accepted the request. Endless Starlight equipped the shield solemnly and

swore secretly that he would lead his own “second team” with distinction, in order to repay Zhang Yang’s trust!

“Silly Yu, not bad huh, wheedling people in that way to be loyal to you!” Han Ying Xue sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

This evil Snow had really seen through Zhang Yang’s mind and knew that he was trying to capture people loyalty! Zhang Yang replied her private message, “When did I wheedle you and make you loyal to me? According to my conscience, there is nothing between you and me!”

“Bastard!” Now only Han Ying Xue realized the sentence she used just now could have left much to the imagination. It could have been referring to others or even herself so Zhang Yang won this war of words.

After Endless Starlight equipped [Seal of the Empire], his Defense value increased to 430 which exceeded Zhang Yang’s Defense value! Besides, his HP also spiked up to more than 5,800, but it was still slightly lesser than Zhang Yang’s HP a little bit! His aggro ability had substantially gone up as well, as he had a Level 40 Gray-Silver weapon!

It was easy to beef up a tank before Level 50 as long as the tank had a good weapon and a good shield like now, he was just a step towards being a beefed up tank! After Level 50, tanks needed to search around for damage reduction equipment which would be a tiring process.

Zhang Yang nodded his head in satisfaction. The next time when they explore 5-man and 10-man dungeons, they could call out two teams at the same time! They could also go for 20-man, and even 50-man dungeon raids by combining two teams into one! However, to become a strong guild, two fast progressing teams were still not enough, they needed at least three to four fast progress teams before they could surpass the same level of hardcode mode dungeon teams.

We should develop slowly and surely, it is impossible that we would achieve that in the blink of an eye!

“Wa, I loot a good item!” Yan Wei Er yelled excitedly.

[Servant: Centaur Guard] (Copper-Tier Servant)

Use: Summons a Centaur Guard to fight for you and lasts for 5 minutes. Cool down time: 1 hour. You can only summon a servant at the same time. If you summon any servant then other servants will share the same cool down time.

Level Requirement: 40

“Little brat, it’s just a Copper-Tier Servant and you’re celebrating like that?” Zhang Yang laughed and said

“Tch, you won’t understand us because you already have a Silver-Tier Servant!” Yan Wei Er rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang, before she politely bowed to the gang and said, “Brothers, sisters, uncles and aunts, please give me this servant, thank you!”

Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were the new members of the gang and they also obtained many good items from them, and were greatly satisfied, so they would not fight with Yan Wei Er for that servant. Yan Wei Er had always been highly favoured by the gang, so Sun Xing Yu, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots also gave up on their rolls.

Zhang Yang already had Silver-Tier Servant, so he would not fight for a Copper-Tier Servant as well. He gave up his roll as well.

But Han Ying Xue put up one of her fingers, showing it to Yan Wei Er and said, “One week worth of housework!”

Yan Wei Er immediately jumped up and said, “Han Ying Xue, you are fishing in dangerous waters, I’ll cut off ties with you!”

“Two weeks of housework!” Han Ying Xue put up two of her fingers.

“... One week!” Yan Wei Er gritted her teeth in silent fury.

“Deal!” Han Ying Xue gave up her roll.

This Copper-Tier Servant finally belonged to Yan Wei Er.

Chapter 155: Gigantic Skeleton

Although she betrayed herself of her one week effort, but the joy of acquiring a servant put a great smile on Wei Yan Er's face, and with a swoop, she summoned her servant out.

[Centaur Guard Antola] (Copper grade servant)

Level: 48

HP: 3,100

Under comparison, this servant was so much taller than Clear Lotus, with a long spear in his right arm, constantly having his upper body turning around, looking at the surroundings, appearing desperate for a fight.

"Little girl, what's the damage output for this servant? What particular skill sets does he have?" Zhang Yang asked. The details of the servant's attributes were only shown to their masters.

Wei Yan Er paused for a moment and said, "Melee damage range is in between 524-584. Attack interval is 3.6 seconds, damage per second is 154, and only one skill called [force strike], effects similar to the Warrior's!"

Zhang Yang nodded. The average attack of this servant was the same as a Level 48 player wearing a Level 40 Black-Steel tier equipment, it was still not as good as his Level 36 silver grade servant. Besides, it was much more inferior when in comparison to their skills, especially the [substitute] skill; that was among the best!

As Wei Yan Er was busy with her new servant, Han Ying Xue took her place in touching the remaining loots from the boss.

[Sol Brave Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver armor)

Armor: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Agility: +16

[unidentified]

Required level: 40

This piece of equipment should be given to Wei Yan Er, to increase her maximum HP, stepping up every member of the main party to exceed the maximum HP of 5,000.

After salvaging the remaining seven to eight pieces of Green-Copper equipment, the party went through the long stone steps to the fifth floor, which was the final palace floor as well. Thinking that the final boss might be a Yellow-Gold boss, everyone was a little thrilled.

“If we can take out a Yellow-Gold rank boss, will it be announced in the system announcement?” Fatty Han spoke with his face showing that he had been longing for it. Ever since the “First Clear” in the Garden interior, it had been so long since his name was published on the system announcement. No wonder this swagger could not endure that loneliness inside him.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “It should be, after all, no team has defeated any Yellow-Gold rank boss before, ever!”

Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream instantly had a shine in their eyes. For the two of them, at where they were right now, having their names well-known on the server was like a far-fetched dream to be fulfilled. But it seemed that in this one moment, that dream could be fulfilled, which led their hearts to jump very violently.

There were no monsters along the way, and the gang had arrived at the fifth floor of the palace in no time.

Compared to the fourth floor, the last floor looked more like an attic that was a 50 meters long square structure. In the middle of the attic, there was a gigantic skeleton structure, with a huge scythe in its right hand. In front of it was a very short person in a black robe, waving a wand, channeling some sort of pitch-black light into the body of that giant skeleton.

The person in the black robe was no taller than a meter, with the magic

staff in his hand being way taller than he was, making it very uncomfortable to look at.

[Evil Necromacer Zac] (Yellow-Gold, undead)

Level: 50

HP: 2,000,000

Mana: 1,000,000

“It... It’s real.... A Yellow-Gold-tier boss!” the gang spoke in unity.

Endless Starlight was filled with tears all over his face, and said, “Not only have I defeated a Gray-Silver boss, but to also see a Yellow-Gold boss with my own eyes... No regrets! No regrets even to death!”

“Look at your unworthy face!” Fatty Han spoke with his scorned face, “Do not forget, how many beauties and pretty faces in the world are waiting for us to comfort them!”

“Hey, so what is the deal with that skeleton structure?” Wei Yan Er asked while pointing her fingers at the gigantic skeleton structure.

[Gigantic Experimental Skeleton] (Elite, undead)

Level: 50

HP: 0/1,000,000

“The game company will never place something useless like that in the game!” Zhang Yang frowned and said, “Something’s fishy about this! The skeleton might get up during battle!”

“How do we fight, then?”

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, “Starlight and I will draw the boss together, if the skeleton ever gets up, I will block that skeleton monster. Whichever monster has a higher attack, we kill it first! Starlight currently has the aggro ability and has his HP up high, dealing with a boss won’t be any issue for him!”

Endless Starlight instantly blushed, with endless excitement. Before meeting them, he had never seen a Gray-Silver boss before, what more a

Yellow-Gold boss! Now that he actually had a chance to tank against a Yellow-Gold boss, it was naturally hard for him conceal his excitement.

“Little Snow, give Starlight a shield and let’s get a move on!” Zhang Yang said.

Han Ying Xue lifted her arm to instantly cast [holy shield] on Starlight.

Endless Starlight drew out his mace and shield, kept his emotion in check and said, “Let’s begin!” After saying it, he ran straight to the boss.

“Eh? The breath of a lively soul!” Zac had a vast aggro range, as he already noticed Starlight approaching from afar. He suddenly turned around, revealing a face full of wrinkles and pimples. Although the face looked dry and deflated, but it was still distinguishable that he was a human rather than a dwarf when he was still alive.

Chiang chiang chiang! The sound of the clashing metals rung, and an iron fence descended on the entrance, blocking the way out. It was pretty obvious that no player could leave the fifth floor now before the battle ended.

“Die you piece of dwarf!” Getting the rare chance to be the protagonist, Endless Starlight was caught in his moment of excitement, and with a wave, he threw his shield straight out.

‘-1!’

What a high defense, [shield toss] could not do the trick in breaking the defenses!

Although Endless Starlight had an increasingly large amount of melee damage with a Level 40 weapon, the strength value only provided a fixed damage, which required accumulation of equipment pieces to enhance the damage output. Having approximately 190 strength, he could only stare and do nothing when encountering a boss with super high armor.

“Zhan Yu, what a high armor this boss has!” Endless Starlight exclaimed in shock.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, “200 at the least!”

“Oh, oh, oh, just so it happens, I still need some souls to complete my darling!” Zac pointed his staff towards the ground, as he instantly floated into the air and landed onto the shoulder side of that skeleton structure. “My darling, open your eyes, it is time for a massacre!”

Boom!

A kindle of greenish flame appeared within the gloomy eye sockets of the gigantic skeleton almost immediately. Klak klak klak, every bone of the structure was making the sound of bursting cracks! “+100,000” “+100,000”, with the continuous appearance of green healing numerical value appearing above its head, the HP bar of the monster was recovering very swiftly!

The whole process did not even take a second, just half a second! Just in a blink of an eye, the gigantic skeleton was already in the state of full health. Even if Zhang Yang wanted to charge forward to use [destructive smash], it was already too late!

“Owh...” the gigantic skeleton suddenly probed its skull forward and let out a burst of deafening roar.

‘Oh oh oh, come and get a taste of my darling’s power!’ Zac smiled viciously on the shoulder side of the skeleton and continued to say, “Darling, kill them! Kill all of the lively souls!”

Searching out with its arm, the gigantic skeleton picked up the scythe by the ground, with the front edge of the blade charging up with a bright red glow, emitting a horrifying breath of blood! It abruptly waved its scythe and gave a heavy slash at Endless Starlight who was charging at the front.

[divine shield]!

Endless Starlight immediately activated his skill. This was a similar skill as the Warrior’s [block], with the effect of increasing 50% rate to absorb one hit and deflect a holy damage equal to the strength value. Although it was not a 100% rate, it could be effective against all assault types. This was also why Defenders were more familiar in drawing magic type monsters.

‘-192!’

Endless Starlight was lucky, that attack was successfully absorbed and caused a deflective damage of 192 to the gigantic skeleton.

However, the momentum of the attack from the gigantic skeleton was immense. Although it was successfully absorbed by Endless Starlight, but the remaining shock waves drove all melee combatants such as Zhang Yang and Sun Xiang Yu upside down.

[strong hammer]! [justice bash]! [judgment]!

Endless Starlight entered the attack range, instantly unleashing a series of attacks onto the monster.

This was the advantage of Knights being a tank; the skills were fueled by the mana points rather than rage points, so as long as the skills were not on a cool down period, the player could create a huge aggro value in just an instant.

The gigantic skeleton stormed the stage with its incredible roar again, waving its scythe at Endless Starlight and sliced him.

‘-3,026!’

A huge damage text appeared on Endless Starlight.

You would never know if you have never experienced it yourself. Without being a tank yourself, you would never know how strong the monster is! Endless Starlight was instantly shocked, and he said, “What a ferocious monster, the basic attack should be above 4,000 already!”

Zhang Yang regained his stance right after he fell, and he charged into the front line and clashed into the monster. Although the gigantic skeleton was just an elite, but it was equipped with immunity to control skills, therefore it was not affected by the stun effect of [charge].

‘-653!’

With a swing of his sword, Zhang Yang estimated silently in his heart that the armor of the monster was about 300 or so, so he instantly prioritized to throw 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense] onto the monster. To avoid dispersing Endless Starlight’s aggro value, Zhang Yang had to keep

his shield into his backpack. In this way, the passive skill [shield oath] immediately lost its role, so that his attack no longer gave him and additional 20% extra hatred.

“Head to the rear of the monster and unleash your damage, monster’s attacks have split and knock down effect!”

“Oh oh oh, puny souls, die!” Zac was shouting from above, from time to time, he would throw a [shadow arrow] down towards the gang, without any specific target, it was totally random. Every arrow brought about 1,000 damage, though the rate of the attack was not that high.

The gigantic skeleton suddenly issued a roar full of rage, storming its right foot onto the ground, and a radius of about five meters of black circle appeared beneath its leg, with countless skulls vaguely seen constantly emerging from the beneath ground.

‘Ding! You have received [decaying abyss], deals 1,000 shadow damage every 3 seconds, the effect will last until you leave the effective area of the Decaying Abyss!’

Endless Starlight was smart. He had already drew the gigantic skeleton towards the side even before Zhang Yang had to speak, so he left the effective area of the [decaying abyss] in time. But inevitably, all melee combatants that were still in the effective area had to suffer one time of 1,000 damage after 3 seconds had passed.

Han Ying Xue immediately cast [healing] to every member, and she quickly threw any healing skills available at the moment onto Endless Starlight.

In just a few seconds, the gigantic skeleton stormed its foot onto the ground, once again unleashing [decaying abyss], forcing Endless Starlight to corner of the sides.

The skill was activated on an extremely frequent rate, with the interval of not more than 10 seconds, which basically only gave the gang just a few short seconds to unleash their damage onto the monster in peace before they were forced to shift around.

Without much effort, the small area was almost occupied by circles of [decaying abyss].

Zhang Yang became cautious, and said, “Starlight, don’t stray too far while dodging the [decaying abyss], because they won’t disappear and if the battle is prolonged, there will not be a spot to dodge anymore!”

Endless Starlight immediately read the situation and said, “Understood!”

Pang, pang, pang! The gigantic skeleton gave the ground a consecutive storm, leaving one circle of abyss after another, in just a short moment, one third of the fifth floor area was occupied with circles of [decaying abyss]!

“The key to victory in this battle will be based on the damage output of each sides, we must take out the monster before it covers the whole area with [decaying abyss], or it would be us who will suffer the horror of the abyss and die a horrible death!” Zhang Yang shouted, while summoning [Servant Clear Lotus] to increase their damage output. His initial intention was to reserve her until the boss battle, but her [substitute] was just so convenient for him!

Wei Yan Er can only stare blankly as her servant had already exceed its time and vanished. To summon it again, player was required to wait for another 50 minutes!

Every single one of them had unleashed their skills with long cooldowns, trying their very best to take out the gigantic skeleton as swiftly as possible after hearing Zhang Yang. “Oh oh oh, Puny souls, I sense your fear! Wonderful, it is just wonderful, I just love preys with desperate helpless eyes, that’s the sensation that is limited only to killing!” Zac laughed continuously in a weird manner, without forgetting his role to throw a [shadow arrow] at the players in every few seconds.

90%, 80%, 70%!

The damaging output of the gang was not disappointing at all, but the skeleton monster had a very thick armor, even with five stacks of [Cripple Defense] that lowered 50% of its armor, there was still 150 points of armor left. It would largely affect the damage output of a dual-wielding

profession class, especially [Servant Clear Lotus] who only caused 1 physical damage with her secondary weapon. She could only cause some descent damaging output with her primary weapon attack and her skills.

60%, 50%!

The breathing space of the fifth floor was getting smaller by the second, and the [decaying abyss] had shrouded more than half of the area, with the first abyss that was placed on the ground showing no sign of disappearing!

40%, 30%!

The breathing space for the gang continued to be reduced into the size of one to six of the original size of the fifth floor.

“Speed! Speed! Hit harder!” Zhang Yang cried out intensely.

20%!

10%!

The gang had to retreat for two or three more round!

7%! The gigantic skeleton had only 72,841 HP left.

There was no way to pull back anymore! Every one of them had been circled up around the foot of the monster as that was the only area that was not shrouded by the Decaying Abyss.

“Come together! I am activating [vanguard's aggression]! Within this 10-second gap, it's either him or us!” Zhang Yang shouted.

Pang! With another storm from the foot of the gigantic skeleton, another decaying abyss appeared!

Zhang Yang reequipped his shield, activated [vanguard's aggression] covering the whole gang. At the same instant, he activated [substitute].

‘-100!’

‘-100!’

‘-100!’

‘...’

Although he used [vanguard's aggression] which left him to receive double damage, his [substitute] gave him a 5-second invincibility, making Zhang Yang able to hold up strong. The moment his invincibility faded, he was damaged with ‘-1,600’, ‘-1,600’ overtime. With a few skills in play, Han Ying Xue brought his HP back up.

60,000! 50,000! 40,000! 30,000!

The effect of [vanguard's aggression] faded, leaving the team vulnerable to begin losing 1,000 HP as every second passed. However, the HP of the gigantic skeleton was emptied out, leaving it to shriek and turn into a bunch of bones, crumbling down to the ground!

At the same instant, all of the [decaying abyss] vanished without leaving a sign on their own!

Chapter 156: Engaging Zac

“Oh oh oh, what a bunch of puny souls! To be able to take out my darling, it seems that I have underestimated you!” Zac descended straight from the air, with only a wave of his staff, he landed softly on the ground.

He grinned and revealed two rows of yellowish teeth and said: "Since you murdered my darling, then I shall pull out all your bones and make a new darling!"

While he was all having the conversation, Han Ying Xue has seized the opportunity to heal everyone with recovery skills, activating [holy prayers] and [healing bond], trying her best to fill up every single one of their HP bars.

Zhang Yang did not charge forward immediately, because that was most probably the introductory remark made by the boss, which provided the gang some precious gap of time to recover their stance for the coming battle. Charging blindly into hitting the boss would only result in provoking the boss to instantly initiate his attacks!

However, this introductory remark was just too short for them, after a few arrogant words coming from Zac, he aimed his staff right at Endless Starlight. In his aggro list, although everyone was having the same value that was zero, but because they were affected by the gigantic skeleton monster, his primary target that he locked on at the moment was Endless Starlight.

Shoof! Zhang Yang used [charge] to tackle himself into the boss.

‘-553!’

Slashing through with his sword, Zhang Yang was left breathless wondering how thick of a skin does the boss have!

‘-1,356!’

‘-1,421!’

Clashing with a [destructive smash] followed with a [horizontal sweep], he swiftly completed accumulating his first round of the aggro value.

Zac suddenly went raging, switching his target onto Zhang Yang and started chanting his spell.

Naturally, Sun Xin Yu and the others rounded up on the boss and unleashed their attacks as their first move.

‘-89!’

‘-1!’

Although Sun Xin Yu scratched deep with her dual daggers, but the two hits could only do insignificant damage value! Bear in mind that Sun Xin Yu was equipped with a Level 40 dagger, and her main weapon could deal an average damage of 600, give or take. But she could only deal an insignificant damage of 89, and her secondary weapon attack could even barely scratch the surface of the armor!

So how thick of a skin does the boss actually have?

Although the skills of most of the thieves had the attribute to ignore defenses, and the attack value was also much higher than ordinary attacks leaving the effect of the armor to minimal, the mana value was still limited! The ratio of normal attack indicated in white texts occupied a very large portion of the damage output of thieves!

Sun Xin Yu immediately made a demand on Zhang Yang, “Quickly, use [Cripple Defense]!”

Zhang Yang could not help himself but chuckle, to think that the cold icy queen would even beg him for a moment! Although Sun Xin Yu's tone voice had a huge difference from what he had in mind, but Zhang Yang still treated it as her begging him, having his vanity greatly satisfied.

[Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]!

Truth to be told, even if Sun Xin Yu did not request for it, Zhang Yang would have still smashed 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense] onto the boss with the goal to boost the damage output of the whole gang!

‘337!’

‘-1!’

With 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense] in play, the damage output of the main weapon of Sun Xin Yu had soared so much higher than before, but the damage output of her secondary weapon was still not ideal. For an agile thief, the damage output of secondary weapons is not important, its main purpose was to be used for poisoning!

But it was still not enough for Sun Xin Yu, who was constantly craving to be the best! The secondary had also contributed a damage of 135 for every second that passed; a portion of damage that should not be taken lightly as well!

[eagle eye]! Sun Xin Yu silently thought about it, thinking that she must acquire that skill!

The higher the armor a monster had, the more it affected a weapon that attacks swiftly, especially to those agile Thieves. Equipped with two of the swiftest daggers in the whole of ‘God’s Miracles’, the damage per second was not low at all, but the single attack was down to the definition of very low. Therefore, this profession class really needed a skill that could decrease the monster’s armor!

“Puny souls, give up on avoiding the inevitable, return yourself to womb of death! Only death is eternity, then there is immortality!” With a touch of his staff, he completed his [shadow arrow] spell and threw it straight onto Zhang Yang.

‘-3,212!’

The attack damage of Zac was totally different from phase 1, with the damage output increasing by threefold!

“Oh oh oh, puny souls, can you feel death?” Zac could be categorized as a garbage-talk kind of a boss, going on with such nonsense!

“Argh!” Wei Yan Er wildly swung her weapon around and said, “I cannot take it anymore, let’s just slay this stupid boss and be done with this, or else we are going to be dead by his annoying words!”

“Oh oh oh, slay me you say? You puny bunch of people, trying to slay

Zac the great? Dream on with your pathetic daydream! Let me, Zac the great tell you about greatness!” the boss waved his staff around and, bam, bam, bam, shooting one [shadow arrow] after another.

Zhang Yang could not help but smile, then he said, “This is indeed a Yellow-Gold boss, its AI is somewhat sketchy, and it reacts to players’ emotion accordingly!”

A regular NPC would only react according to the script when it was triggered by events. If a player did not speak the keywords that triggered them, the NPC would just repeat, saying irrelevant words. Only NPCs with higher AI would react accordingly to any words from the players.

Fatty Han was pumped at the moment, so he said, “Hey shorty, ugly ass, come and get me!”

“An elf as fat as a pig? Oh oh oh, how could there be such a vulgar creature from the aristocratic tribe of the elves!” Zac rolled both of his eyes around, revealing a contempt look on his face, “Is it a boar pig that raped a female elf and gave birth to a half-bred bastard? Or some male elf forced himself down with a few hundred pounds of aphrodisiac to rape a female boar?”

This... is just outrageous!

The gang could not help themselves but to give a moment of silence for Fatty Han.

Fatty Han was surprised for a moment, with his face flushed into red soon, he shouted with rage, “You retarded f*ck face! You’re the bastard, you and all our family members are!”

Even a wretched person like Fatty Han himself suffered losses from the mouth of the boss, so the gang kept silent to avoid being cursed by this garbage-talk kind of boss. Channeling their rage into strength, they made haste on bringing down the HP bar of the boss.

98%, 96%, 94%... Due to the high armor of the boss, the total damage output of the gang which mostly consisted of physical damage was being brought down by a level of effectiveness!

Coupled with the boss's bloody high HP, the percentage of the HP was decreased in a very slow manner.

“Puny souls, the time for games is over!” Zac pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and instantly shot a dark light that later shrouded him whole.

‘Ding! You have received [darkness amplifying] effect, increase all damage by 100%, increase damage received by 50%, last for 10 seconds!’

‘-1,533!’

‘-3,281!’

‘-9,506!’

Satisfying! Normal attacks exceeded a thousand, with [horizontal sweep] reaching about 3,000+ damage, and [destructive smash] was a lucky strike, dealing a critical damage that went beyond 9,000!

Staring at the damage he did, the gang was left without words.

Wei Yan Er quickly shouted, “Hey dwarf boss, hurry up and give me a [darkness amplifying] as well!”

‘-4,813!’ A swift land of a [shadow arrow] inflicted a very high damage value on Zhang Yang.

While having his damage multiplied many times over, the damaged received was also multiplied over many times. Although it could not take out Zhang Yang in one hit, but it was enough to make him suffer a lot!

But Han Ying Xue suffered a fate far worse, seizing the time of three seconds where the boss was chanting to cast shields and heal, maintaining Zhang Yang’s HP up above the safety line of 5,000.

‘+2,039!’

‘+402!’

Bam! The boss threw another [shadow arrow] at him.

‘-2,801!’

The [holy shield] took precedence to absorb a damage of 20,00, but the attack still took Zhang Yang’s HP right off to less than 2,000.

The boss used a [shadow arrow] once in every 3 seconds, so only 3 shots could be released within the 10 seconds duration of the [darkness amplifying] effect! Zhang Yang made a decisive decision, activating his [berserker's heal].

‘+6,380!’

A large green numerical value appeared right above his head, instantly gaining back his full health!

“Noob tank, you know you can consider to change your role to healer!” Wei Yan Er giggled.

‘-4,891!’

During the duration of the [darkness amplifying] effect, the last [shadow arrow] hit right onto Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue healed in time, shoof shoof shoof, raising Zhang Yang's HP and they finally made their way through a tough time.

“That almost had my heart out!” Han Ying Xue patted her plumping chest, sending her dual peaks constantly changing shapes and then restoring back to their initial shape, showing a surprising flexibility.

The waves of shaking boobs instantly sent the four men in the gang into a shock for a moment there.

Wei Yan Er looked at Han Ying Xue's marvelous boobs with admiration, she did a duck face and said, “Be careful not to spoil them with your patting, sis!”

“Yan Er, are you trying to repeat your mistakes again? Please watch out as there might not be any dinner for you!”

Wei Yan Er showed no fear, so she said, “If you dare to starve me, I will call that Mr. Luo, I am sure he is very eager to treat us with dinner!”

Han Ying Xue lost her breath for a second, revealing her disgusted face, and she said, “Do not ever bring up that disgusting name of his in front of me!”

Zhang Yang recalled that he had heard the name before from the 2

ladies, so he asked, “Little sister, so what’s the deal with this Mr. Luo?”

“Cousin’s admirer! He started going after my cousin since high school, and then until the university time, my cousin has grown scared of him and hid in UK to study!” Wei Yan Er did not even blink or look at Han Ying Xue, and without the slightest hesitation, she betrayed her cousin’s secret to the public, “That Mr. Luo Yang Ming intended to pursue her to Cambridge, but luckily enough, the university refused to accept him because of his results. So he tried to solve his problem with money like he always does. So he ended up being expelled from the university, being blacklisted by Cambridge University! So he finally sneaked back to the country. That really had me laughing!”

“You b*tch, you’re so dead!” Han Ying Xue could not shut Wei Yan Er’s mouth, all she could do was threaten her with some nasty words from aside.

Wei Yan Er giggled, and she said, “Sister Sun, it seems like I will need to beg for dinner at your place tonight!”

“No problem!” Sun Xin Yu was always this straightforward.

As they were talking, the HP of the boss was decreasing. Zac had been using only [shadow arrow] and [darkness amplifying] all the time. The threat was great, but the pressure was only felt by the tanker and the healer, while the damage output gang was totally like chopping piles of woods, having no pressure on them!

90%, 80%, 70%... 40%, 30%, 20%!

“You damn souls, how can you all be still alive?! I am mad, I am really mad!” Zac spoke fiercely, revealing his impatient look on his face, “Then it is time for me to do this the serious way!”

Chapter 157: Killing a Yellow-Gold boss

Zac raised his long staff up above his head, and a magic array immediately emerged from just beneath his head.

[crash magic]!

‘Immune’!

Zhang Yang shook his head a couple times as the chanting could not be interrupted. What kind of devilish [crash magic] is this?!

The chanting time for that skill was really short, as it only took 2 seconds before a dark light instantly burst out from the staff, radiating towards all directions.

‘-2,000!’

For the first time in the attack, a numerical value appeared right on top of Zhang Yang’s head.

‘-2,500!’

‘-2,500!’

‘-2,500!’

As the dark light emitted through, the other gang members also received a damage of up to 2,500 points! Only Endless Starlight, a Knight tank, received the least damage, taking only 1,875 points.

‘Ding! Zac has unleashed [shadow burst]!’

Zac had already begun his chanting for [shadow burst] while the voice announcement was made in the system.

“Stupid boss, this is god damn tiring!” Han Ying Xue was provoked to the point that she was shouting; it was totally causing her lots of trouble! [holy prayers] could only heal Zhang Yang for 2,000 HP, while healing others for 500 HP. It was so insignificant to even look at!

‘-2,000!’ ‘-2,500!’ ‘-2,500!’

Zac used another [shadow burst] to cause a massive area of splash

attack, and then... another [shadow burst]. It seemed that the boss would not stop until everyone is dead!

Wei Yan Er started to cry very loudly, “This stupid boss is shamelessly strong, how are we going to fight this?”

Actually, a boss with this amount of HP such as Zac that only triggered their AOE (Area Of Effect) skills indefinitely was considered easy already! The upcoming bosses in the field would be equipped with aura skills. Once the players were within the effective radius of the skills, they will lose their HP like wild geese! It will also mean that they will lose a lot of firepower! It will become a battle that required thousands of players, having one wave after another of the players to sacrifice themselves in exchange for a few thousands of damage dealt on the boss, using the advantage of numbers and time to wear the bosses down to their demise!

It was just like in his previous life when Zhang Yang was battling a big boss to compete an Inheritance quest. It came with a [flame aura], scorching all players who were within 30 meter radius of the area with 5,000 damage per second! Normal players would just die burning within 10 seconds within the effective area, and the boss did not have to activate any other skills!

What should I do? Zhang Yang quietly asked himself.

“Snow, give up on the others and use your [healing bond] on me!” Zhang Yang had finally made a decisive call.

[Healing Bond]: Heal both the caster and the target at the same time. Recover 100% HP based on magic attack. Cast time: 1 second, Cool down time: 1 second.

Priests were known to be good in group healing. With the appearance of healing skills such as [healing shower] and [fountain of light] in the near future, the healing capability of a Priest could reach their healing up to 10 or 20 players at a time, but a Level 40 priest only had [healing bond] to stick with.

Han Ying Xue's magic output was around 1,000, with a continuous spam of [healing bond] onto Zhang Yang and some healing skill, while casting a

[holy shield] on herself, she should never die. And Zhang Yang had a passive skill of 20% of damage reduction, so they might just hold on long enough till the end as long as [healing bond] and some [heal] were in play!

The only disadvantage was the incredible consumption of Mana Points of [healing bond], can they really last until finishing the boss?

This was the spirit of the Warriors breaking their wrist! It was not that they did not care for their own hands, but they cherished their own lives even more! To keep everyone alive would only end up dying together, but maintaining Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue alive in the battle still provided them a glimpse of hope in defeating the boss!

It was really easy for Han Ying Xue to understand with her level of intelligence, so she immediately gave up healing the others and focused only on healing Zhang Yang and herself, then she would cast the [healing bond] afterwards.

“Hey sis! Give me a [heal] please!” Wei Yan Er was already at the bottom of her HP bar. With both of her teary eyes, she tried for Han Ying Xue’s sympathy, “Sis, you are flesh and bones to me, you can’t leave me to die!”

“It’s cousin!” Han Ying Xue quickly corrected.

“Wow, Han Ying Xue, you dates-before-sisterhood b*tch! I want to unfriend you!” Wei Yan Er went raging about.

Others had also understood that the armor of the boss was just too high. Under the impression of damage output, it should be Zhang Yang who had [Cripple Defense] and [eagle eye] at the same time that was without a doubt, the strongest attacker among them! Furthermore, he also possessed many live-saving skills that made him the strongest survivor among the others!

Everyone was trying their best to deal as much damage as possible before they met their demise, with only one goal, to ease the stress for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue!

‘Ding! Player Daffodil Daydream has deceased!’

It did not take long for Daffodil Daydream to pass out, followed by Wei

Yan Er, Hundered Shots, and Fatty Han, all to fall short of the battle. Sun Xin Yu managed to perform a well-timed [vanish], buying her an extra 3-second to deal a little more damage before she fell. The last one to fall was Endless Starlight, after using up his [sacred protection] and [sacred heal], he fell down to the ground, lying dead.

“Little Yang, pretty Snow, we are counting on you guys!”

“Do your best!”

“The first clear of Yellow-Gold boss is within our grasp!”

The gang were pumped to encourage Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

“Hmph! You treacherous pair of paramours!” Wei Yan Er pursed her lips in displeasure.

The boss was left with 400,000 HP, and Zhang Yang could deal about 1,000 damage in every second. If nothing would go wrong, they only needed to maintain the same pace for another 400 seconds to secure their final victory! But the problem was, could Han Ying Xue’s mana hold on for that long?

With Han Ying Xue having [heart of light], the mana consumption for all healing skills were reduced by 75%, but casting group magic consumed quite a large amount of mana. There might not be a problem for her to hold for 4 to 5 minutes, but 400 seconds was about nearly seven minutes!

"Reserve the shield for your own use, and heal yourself later, I will activate every single one of my life-saving skills once, that way I can strive to activate them later for more than a few times!" Zhang Yang said to Han Ying Xue. The more frequent he could activate his skills, the more Han Ying Xue could save up on her Mana Points for later use.

[berserker’s heal], shoof, recovering to full health, bought a six-second gap. Activating the special effect of the [Lover’s Sword] recovered another 4,000 HP, prolonging another 4 seconds. Activating [Shadow of Merlinda] gave another 10 seconds! Activating [shield wall], another buff of 10 seconds!

And there was also red potions and the ring’s [lifesteal] effect, adding up

to a sum of 5,600 HP recovery within 2 minutes, which was not much lesser than what [berserker's heal] could offer!

18%, 15%, 11%... The boss' HP bar was depleting, and the Han Ying Xue's mana was too!

The outcome of this battle will be based on whether Zhang Yang could kill the boss first, or Han Ying Xue finishes her last drop of mana, leaving both of them vulnerable die by the boss!

8%, 6%, 3%!

Han Ying Xue had used up all her mana about 2 seconds ago, but luckily the cooldown for blue potion had been refreshed! She consumed a grade 1 Mana Potion, swezz, gaining 1,000 mana points as a bonus!

It was the key to ensure their victory!

'+1,012!'

'+1,012!'

With a [healing bond] in play again, both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue received an abundance of green healing values over their heads.

2%!

"You're almost there!"

"Noob tank, why haven't you killed the boss yet? I despise you!"

"Zhan Yu, just a little more!"

"Little Snow, hold on!"

Victory was upon them, everyone could not resist their urge to scream and shout.

1%!

"Slash! With your full might! Forget about me, just get rid of him!"

"We're about to win!"

"The first clear of Yellow-Gold boss, here we come!"

"Hahaha, we are the best!"

41,734!

25,923!

9,134!

4,121!

812!

O!

“We did it!”

‘Ding! You and your party have slain the Evil Necromancer Zac, acquired 1,000,050 Experience Points (50 reward points for team effort)’

‘Ding! You and your party have completed the “First Clear” of the Yellow-Gold boss, this result will be recorded in the Glorious Achievement List! As the party leader, please key in your team name, for the world to praise!’

‘Ding, you have completed the main quest: Final Blow! Automatically redirect to new quest: Report back to Grand Magus Anthony Faylon. Hustle back to White Jade City to claim your reward!’

Pak! The midget body of Zac made a turn around and fell onto the icy-cold ground facing up to the sky. The fiery red staff on his hands fell off afar.

Phew! Zhang Yang took breath of relief, they managed to pull this off because of his high damage output and Han Ying Xue’s large healing capability. If it was up to others, they would not have held on for such a long period of time! Even if they could have held on for so long, they would not have enough fire power (damage output) to put down the boss for good!

Zhang Yang conveniently entered the name ‘Lone Desert Smoke’ into the entry box and selected the confirm button, allowing the server to begin making the announcement.

‘Server Announcement: The Lonely Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring “First Clear” for killing Yellow-Gold boss Zac. This great deed

will be registered onto the Glorious-deed list (China Region).'

'Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Leader) has succeeded in acquiring "First Clear" for killing Yellow-Gold boss Zac, acquired server reward 10 gold coins, luck attribute +1, All alliance reputation increased by 500 points!'

'Server Announcement: Player Endless Starlight (member) has succeeded.....'

Every corner of the global channel was full of server announcements in red, and once again that shook every single player in the China region!

"So what's the situation now? A Yellow-Gold boss?"

"You must be joking!"

"No wonder the Lone Desert Smoke had not been exploiting the Death Mode of the dungeons lately, so this is what they have been up to, killing a Yellow-Gold boss!"

"That's right! The castle interior is full of only Gray-Silver bosses, if it's up to me, I would have went straight for the Yellow-Gold boss as well!"

"I'm so envious now! I wonder what kind of equipment will a Yellow-Gold boss drop out?"

"Brother Zhan Yu, I am currently 28, as beautiful as the flowers, with an exotic body, pure as a virgin, please take me!"

"Pure as a virgin? That means no more a virgin then?"

"Didn't you hear I am currently 28? It is really super hard to find a virgin nowadays, you can find one in the nursery school!"

"F*ck, this is totally out of topic!"

"..."

Han Ying Xue started to revive the gang one after another. The gang were so agitated after their revival!

This was the first clear for killing a Yellow-Gold boss!

Noticing Sun Xin Yu staring at him by a quick glance, Zhang Yang

smiled, “If you are very excited to the point that you are thinking of giving me a hug, just come at me!”

The moment he finished his words, a shadow instantly flew into his arms, clinging to him very tightly.

Zhang Yang quickly said, “I was not talking to you! Argh!”

It was Endless Starlight, with tears streaming down his face, crying, “Zhan Yu, I’m so excited right now!”

“... I can see that!”

“Am I becoming famous now?”

“... Most probably!”

“Then my dream of creating a harem environment is finally becoming possible now!” Endless Starlight was sobbing too much to speak.

“... F*ck off!”

“The loot, the loot!” Wei Yan Er did not care so much whether she would become famous or not, but what she loved the most was the looting.

Chapter 158: Quest Complete

As a Yellow-Gold boss, the equipment drop would not be any lesser. Moreover, it was the first clear for killing the boss, which in fact, was genuinely a big bang (news) for everyone!

There were already four pieces of Gold grade equipment, seven pieces of Silver grade equipment, seventeen pieces of Bronze grade equipment, and several Red and Green-ish skill books. Everyone was drooling just by looking at them!

“Golden fortune! Although the midget has grown out to be crooked, but the loots he left behind match the status of the Yellow-Golden boss!” Fatty Han was beamed with delight.

As the natural habit of Wei Yan Er, she always picked up the coins carefully from the floor first, before checking out the equipment drop.

Although Zac was a Yellow-Golden boss, there was no sign of any golden coins, only 92 pieces of silver coins, which after were equally dividing, gives each player only 11 pieces of silver coins, or maybe a little more for some of them.

[Harbinger Staff] (Yellow-Gold, Staff)

Magic damage: 1,340-1,540

[unidentified]

Level required: 50

Looking at the terrifying magic damage value, everyone lost their cool, having smiles on their faces and took a breath in. This Level 50 equipment was worthy of the title of Yellow-Gold grade!

Han Ying Xue smiled and said, “Daffodil Daydream, you should keep the staff!”

Daffodil Daydream quickly shook her hands and said, “Honestly, I am eager to have the staff, but to challenge a Yellow-Gold boss side by side with you, that was way more than I can ask for! Besides, I have already

taken a few pieces of fine equipment, I would feel sorry if I had it! Sister Snow, please have it!”

Han Ying Xue smiled again and said, “The staff requires Level 50 players to be eligible to equip it, according to a normal level up speed, it will take about 40 days to reach that level! In these days, it will be enough time to farm on this midget boss for a few rounds already!”

Daffodil Daydream insisted and shook her head, then she said, “The equipment might not drop every time as this was also a first clear reward; there might not even be a staff among the next time around!”

Zhang Yang interrupted and said, “How about this, the staff will belong to Little Snow for now! After the boss has respawned, we shall be back to repeat this, then the second staff will belong to Daffodil Daydream!”

Daffodil Daydream immediately nodded.

Zhang Yang was grinning deep down his heart, as long as this chick stayed with the gang, there would be no doubt about her becoming a member of his gang!

[Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] (Yellow-Gold, one-handed axe)

Attack: 796-996

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS (Damage per second): 320

[unidentified]

Level required: 50

In comparison, the 310-362 damage output of the [Lover’s Sword] was overwhelmingly out of the picture!

“Axe! Axe!” Wei Yan Er shouted in her own excitement.

“Little sis, what are you so excited about? This is a one-handed weapon!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“Ah.....” Wei Yen Er instantly dulled down.

Both Defenders and Guardians could use an axe, but Warriors had the

[axe mastery] while Knights had the [mace mastery]. So long as the difference was not that bad, a player would generally choose their weapon of mastery.

There was no doubt that the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] would belong to Zhang Yang. But it was such a shame, he would need to get 9 more levels before he could equip it.

[Magician's Brooch] (Yellow-Gold, accessory)

Use: Increase 700 magic damage, last for 10 seconds. Cool down: 3 minutes

Level required: 50

“Accessory!” The gang widened their eyes for a bit there.

The accessory with +2,000 armor that Zhang Yang had right now was categorized as a defensive type of equipment, and this [Magician's Brooch] was an offensive type!

Daffodil Daydream insisted not to make any demand, and Han Ying Xue could only smile.

[Helm of Eternal Darkness] (Yellow-Golden, leather armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +240

Strength: +96

Agility: +96

[unidentified]

Level required: 50

“Holy molly! It actually increases 240 points of vitality! With just one equipment, it could give 2,400 HP points! The defense value is also higher than the armor value!” Endless Starlight grew a pair of green eyes. As a tank, seeing a high vitality and high defense equipment triggered him to extend his arm towards the equipment!

“Starlight, do not taint Fatty Han's helmet! Take your hands back to

where they belong!” Fatty Han laughed.

Leather armors were naturally highly demanded among thieves and hunters. But in the end, with her 97 point strength, Sun Xin Yu pressed the two man down without saying a word and succeeded in securing the first Yellow-Gold leather armor in the China region server.

“A dog that bites does not bark!” Zhang Yang said it in a very low voice.

‘Chiang!’ with an incredible sense of hearing, Sun Xin Yu pulled half of her dagger out, coldly glanced at Zhang Yang, giving him a full warning through her eyes.

After seeing a bunch of Yellow-Gold equipment, the gang could not bring their spirit up anymore while looking at the Gray-Silver equipment, even when they were all top-tier equipment in the game at the moment!

“If we could have known earlier, we should have started with the Gray-Silver equipment!” Wei Yan Er spoke with a bitterly face.

Among the 7 Gray-Silver equipment, Zhang Yang took a piece of [Snake King's Chest Plate], a heavy armor piece. As he could only equip it at Level 50, he simply threw the armor piece into his backpack, identifying it only after he returned.

There were 3 skill books, one being a [poison blade] for Thief profession, another one was a [flame chaser] for Spellcaster profession, and last but not least, was a [mending prayers] for Priest profession. After Han Ying Xue and the gang had divided the loots, they immediately tapped themselves to learn their respective skills.

Of course, Zhang Yang valued the skill [mending prayers] the most.

[Mending Prayers]: Cast a onto the target, when the target is being attacked, the target will instantly restore HP value equivalent to 200% of the magic damage of the caster. While the [mending prayers] is in effect, it will automatically switch its effect to the nearest teammate around the target. [mending prayers] can switch for 5 times, last for 30 seconds for every switch. Cooldown: 15 seconds.

This was a very powerful group spell, the instantaneous and fast cooling

time made it a very commendatory skill!

Killing the boss would mean that they had completed the quest. After several consecutive days of high intensive grinding, the gang was both physically and mentally tired. Before that, there were still bosses and equipment around as their incentives, but now, they became too lazy, with the mentality of not wanting to clear monsters. So they just tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and headed back to White Jade Castle. First they had to turn over to the main quest for the reward, and then went back to the centaur camp for another quest reward. In that way, they could polish their centaur reputation and make some fine purchases from the Reputation Shopkeeper.

Although Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight did not have any quest on them at the moment, they planned to return to the city to repair their equipment and tidy up their backpacks before they tagged along with Han Ying Xue and the gang to get their reputation up as well.

Watching his gang leave one after another, Zhang Yang could not help but to curse them in silence for their lack of generosity. He was still carrying the 'Dwarf's warning' on him, which forbade him in using teleportation scrolls!

Helplessly, he could only charge into the monster crowd to kill himself, to be revived straight back at the cemetery.

'Ding! You are affected with the weak resurrection effect, all equipment durability received 50% additional damage, all attributes decreased by 90%, last for 10 minutes!'

Zhang Yang did not care much about it, there would not be any battle along the journey back to the centaur camp to purchase the [Fountain of the Souls] and rescue the dwarf back in Hammer Heart Castle. Summoning his [Skeletal War Horse], Zhang Yang saddled up and the high profile horse went out with a boom, heading straight to the centaur camp.

"Haha, noob tank, guess what I got for the reward?" Wei Yan Er suddenly screamed in excitement.

“...You turned over the main quest for its reward?”

“Yea, so quickly, take a guess!”

Zhang Yang had never completed the main quest, how would he know? So he spoke out of randomness, “A Yellow-Gold equipment?”

“Cheh, what a crappy equipment, with just a simple use and it will be gone, how is that worthy to be a reward for a main quest?” Wei Yan Er snorted a few times and said, “You’re such an idiot, noob tank, what kind of a beta testing player are you -”

“Say it now, and don’t have a long winded-tongue like Snow Witch!”

“Silly Yu, what did you just say!?” Han Ying Xue was enraged. Because Wei Yan Er and Zhang Yang were using the party channel, of course Han Ying Xue would overhear the conversation between two of them.

Wei Yan Er smiled for a while, and then she said, “Alright, I will tell you then. The quest reward is 100 gold coins, 1 skill point, and a skill book [strength aura]! This is so annoying! When have I ever become barbarous?!”

“Aura?” Zhang Yang repeated and said, “You learned an aura skill?”

“Yea! Activating it will increase 2% strength of the target teammates that are within a radius of 30 meters area! But it feels weird, the aura skill level is just Level 1, but I cannot increase it with my skill point!”

Holy cow, the reward for the main quest is actually awesome, they actually gave a skill book that teaches aura skills! Zhang Yang smiled with joy, “The level of Aura skill cannot be increased with skill points, but with [Aura Stone]! And please don’t ask me where can you buy it from, an [Aura Stone] can only be dropped from a boss, so take it slow!”

Wei Yan Er shorted again, and then she kept silent after that. Then, Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had also turned over for their quest reward, and they received an aura skill book as reward as well!

However, this reward was obviously correlated with professions of the players, as both Hundred Shots and Fatty Han received [companion aura]

while Han Ying Xue received [life aura].

[Companion Aura]: Affects the teammates within the aura's effective range to increase their pet's attack by 3%. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster. The effect lasts until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes. You can only activate one aura at a time.

[Life Aura]: Affects the teammates within the aura effective range to increase recovery of HP by 3% when they heal. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster. The effect lasts until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes. You can only activate one aura at a time.

According to these occurrence, will he also get [strength aura]? But, the difference in the professions might affect him in getting a different Aura skill as the reward.

While Zhang Yang was deep in his thoughts, he hustled his horse to go faster as he wanted to conclude his quest as soon as possible so that he could return back to the main city to turn in for the main quest. He was very eager to see what kind of Aura skill he would get as the reward.

Dashing wildly on his horse, Zhang Yang reached the settlement of the centaur. He rushed straight into the wooden house of Maya Kukulo.

"Human, you are too brave, too powerful! You have kept your promise to slay the Evil Sorcerer Zac! Hahaha, we will never have to be concerned with the invasion by the undead! Human, the centaur tribe of the Kukulo will forever be your friend!" Maya Kukulo thanked him with excitement.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Protect the Sacred Ground, acquired 100,000 experience points, centaur reputation +1,000!'

'Ding! Congratulation, you have reached Worship in centaur reputation!'

'Ding! You have acquired an achievement: Warrior of the Centaur! You have acquired the title: Warrior of the Centaur!'

No reward?

It was probably because the quest is linked with the 'Rescue the Dwarf'

quest, so the reward should come from the dwarves!

Zhang Yang visited the reputation shop and purchased a [Blast Wave] skill book and a bottle of the sacred water.

[Blast Wave]: Unleash a shock wave out front in a conical area, all targets within range will receive a damage equivalent to 100% of the strength value, and stun all the targets for 4 seconds! Required: Melee weapon. Consume: 20 rage points. Cooldown: 20 seconds.

Although the damage based on strength value was a little lower, but this skill was very effective in crowd control! Stun the crowd for 4 seconds was actually very terrifying!

After sorting out every items he wanted to purchase, there was nothing left for him to stay here. So Zhang Yang summoned his [Skeletal War Horse] and rode out for Hammer Heart Castle.

Another 20 minutes had passed, and Zhang Yang arrived at the Hammer Heart Castle.

“Human, you have finally returned!” Markan looked at Zhang Yang, and straight into business, he asked, “Have you obtained the sacred water from the [Fountain of the Souls]?”

“Yes, I did!” Zhang Yang took out the bottle of sacred water and passed it to Markan.

“Good, very good indeed! I can sense the pure energy hidden within the sacred water!” Markan drew out a breath of relief, “Human, if you return just a little later, Sith would not have made it! Thank the God of Titans!”

F*ck, even if it was 10 days later, the outcome would still be the same. The quest did not specify a fixed duration of time, a delay of one full year would not be a problem either! It was just that in S-rank quests, there would be a quest score. A delay of 1 year would definitely leave a ‘very bad’ comment; the lowest of the lowest score of all!

Zhang Yang followed Markan to the 3rd floor and entered Sith’s room. A priest of the dwarves was standing right beside the bed, continuously channeling exorcism spells into Sith’s body to resist the erosion of the

spirit of Terpot Ryhar.

“Sir Markan!” The priest stopped his chanting and gave Markan a sign of respect.

Markan slightly nodded and said, “Palatine, you have had a long day!” He then took out the bottle of the sacred water and poured it into Sith’s mouth.

“Argh!” a scream full of misery and suffering suddenly came right out from Sith’s body, followed by a dark skeleton floating out of the dwarf’s body, it turned out to be a reflection of Terpot Ryhar, “No! No! This is impossible! Argh!”

A stream of green lively light gushed out from Sith’s body, instantly erasing the dark skeleton out of its existence, clean and clear.

“Phew!” Sith sat up suddenly, and he looked around, left and right, having a confused expression on his face, “Sir Markan, Palatine, why are you here?”

“Sith, you are well again?”

“I... I remember now! When I took up the sacred relic [Bow of the Fallen Moon], I felt an evil force entering itself into my body! Now... I am fully well!” Sith got off the bed.

“Sith, you should thank him, our respectful human friend! He did not just bring back our sacred relic, but he also saved your live!” Markan pointed at Zhang Yang while he was speaking.

Sith immediately bowed down to Zhang Yang and said, “Thank you, my friend!”

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Fountain of the Souls, acquired 10,0000 experience points! Duration of the quest: 21 days. Quest Score: Perfect!’

‘Ding! You have acquired the reward [shadow of the void]!’

‘Ding! ‘Dwarf’s Warning’ has been lifted from you!’

At last! Zhang Yang drew a long breath, it was this piece of junk that

caused him to not be able to return to the main cities for 21 days!

Ignoring what [shadow of the void] was and casting it aside into the backpack, Zhang Yang immediately tore a [Teleportation Scroll]; never again would he want to strike any deal with this bunch of dwarves, ever again!

10 seconds later, with a blur in front of his eyes, he found himself appearing at the teleportation site of White Jade City.

Back! Back at last!

Zhang Yang summoned his [Skeletal War Horse] and hastily rushed all the way to the middle of the city searching for Grand Magus Anthony Faylon to turn over to his main quest for his long awaited reward.

Chapter 159: Every cook praises his own broth

“Undead! Undead!” The White Jade City's most powerful mage, who also happened to be the only god-class leader, Grand Magus Anthony Faylon had constantly been pacing back and forth ever since he received the report from Zhang Yang. With his two white eyebrows furrowed, he paced to and fro, for quite a while before he spoke again, "Warrior, thank you for bringing the news back to us! The alliance is now aware ahead of time that the undead have been planning something in the dark. Now, the alliance will not be caught by surprise! "

‘Ding! You have completed the main quest: Report to Grand Magus Anthony Faylon!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a system reward of 100 gold coins!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a skill point!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a reward, [vitality aura]!’

[vitality aura]! Not bad, it is different from Wei Yan Er's [strength aura]. Because Aura skills cannot be stacked together, a higher level Aura will override a lower level Aura. If they are of the same level, only one aura will be effective!

“Warrior, I will see the Emperor immediately and expose the undead's treacherous scheme to invade to the Empire! You ... must carry on your effort, I'm counting on you, young warrior!” Anthony Faylon praised Zhang Yang with nothing fancy but words, and departed from the Tower of the Mage.

Zhang Yang used his new skill point on his [shield wall], decreasing the cool down of the skill from 7 minutes to 6.5 minutes. Then he took out the red-jacketed skill book for [vitality aura] from his backpack, pressed it against his body and learned the skill.

[Vitality Aura] (Level 1): Increases the vitality of team mates within the effective range by 4%. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster.

The effect last until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes. You can only activate one aura at a time.

Zhang Yang immediately activated his aura skill, and it spread out in golden light, forming a radius of about 30 meters circle. As the effect was gradually disappearing, he could see that above his head, there was a new sign of [vitality aura] beneficial effect, and the value of his HP was instantly increased from from 6380 to 6630.

This is awesome! With a full level 10 aura skill, the vitality enhancement will surely be multiplied several times over!

While Zhang Yang was leaving the Tower of the Mage, he took out the [shadow of the void] from his backpack. Since he had been rushing back from the dwarf's castle, he did not care to look at the specification of the skill book, until now.

[Skill Book: Shadow of the Void]

Use: Teaches you the [shadow of the void].

Required profession: Warrior, Knight, Thief, Hunter, Spellcaster, Priest

Required Level: 30

Locked.

All 6 professions can learn the skill, so what use is putting this 'Profession Required' list in the description then? Zhang Yang was laughing to himself while starting at the 'locked' word with both of his sparkling eyes, knowing that only a very precious skill book would be locked or bound to the owner upon contact!

Zhang Yang immediately tap the skill book of [shadow of the void] onto his body and had the skill learned.

[Shadow of the Void]: You have disengaged from battle mode and entered a different realm! Since you're in a different realm, you cannot see any living being; others cannot see or attack you! Your movement speed is increased by 100%! The performing of any actions or casting of any skills while under this effect will dispell this effect immediately. Last for 20

seconds. Cool down time: 10 minutes.

Another version of [vanish] perhaps? Instantly, Zhang Yang had his mind picturing the use of the skill in multiple situations, such as: Dodging powerful skills of the boss, silently passing through a crowd of monsters without anyone's notice, cutting off the head of an army's leader in a chaotic situation, and also when participating an alliance battle, getting close to far away healers with minimal effort!

His face streamed with tears. Going through a difficult time of 21 days, he finally got a generous reward in exchange for his hardship!

Zhang Yang went to visit his warrior profession mentor, and from his exotic and charming instructor, he picked up 2 skills that were only eligible to a level 40 warrior: [axe mastery] and [sacrifice].

[Axe Mastery] (Passive): All attack is increased by 5% when an Axe-type weapon is equipped. Increases critical strike by 5%.

[Sacrifice]: Protects an ally, taking all damage done to the ally instead. Cool down time: 1 minute. Distance: 30 meters.

Riding his horse on these familiar roads, Zhang Yang had located the whereabouts of the identifier. Ever since the update of the latest version, the identifying shop has become one of the most gold consuming places in the game.

'Pak', the identifier placed the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] and the magnifying glass onto the table and said, "100 pieces of gold coins!"

"Sun of the beach, why don't you just go rob someone!" Zhang Yang spoke very softly, but he still obediently handed out his 100 pieces of gold coins over to the identifier.

Rony revealed a sinister smile on his face, touching the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] here and there somewhat perversely. Suddenly, a dazzling stream of golden light flashed by, and the smooth intrinsic [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] burst into a blinding light as if it belonged to an ancient god warrior, it was exceptionally divine!

There were also several players doing some identifying on their own

equipment in the shop as well. They also tend to loiter around the area without bothering anyone ----- players do not have to worry about having their equipment being taken by others as the the system has been programmed to protect all items within the shop.

“Wow, was that a Yellow-Gold equipment?”

“You idiot or what, the only gang that actually defeated a Yellow-Gold boss and possesses Yellow-Gold equipment is the bunch of crazy-strong people from the Lone Desert Smoke! Does he look like a Zhan Yu to you? Or Hundred Shots, Slim and Handsome, or Endless Starlight?”

“F*ck me, how would I know when he does not have his name shown to the public!”

Zhang Yang could only smile gently, and took his [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] back to check its attribute.

[Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] (Yellow-Golden, one handed axe)

Attack: 796-996

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 320

Level 2 Socket 1

Level 2 Socket 2

Equip: Increases your melee damage by 100 points.

Level required: 50

It was indeed a Yellow-Golden equipment, the additional special effect is very incredible!

Seeing Zhang Yang place the Dragon Tooth Battle Axe into his backpack, the players around were quite disappointed, everyone was trying to ask, “Brother, please publish the attributes of the weapon to the public!”

Zhang Yang took out a [Snake King's Chest Plate] and handed it over to the NPC to identify, and he smiled, “That was nothing special, the color was just a little brighter than the others!”

“50 pieces of gold coins!” once again the identifier voiced out the cost.

This time around, the players around had heard it very clearly. Although they were different from Zhang Yang who has lived 2 lives, with the game being updated so many times, they had already caught on the the fact that the higher the grade of the item, the higher the cost will be to identify the item!

“Holy cow, that requires 50 pieces of gold coins! To identify a level 20 gray-silver equipment already cost me 20 pieces of gold! Could this be.... A level 50 gray-silver equipment?”

“Brother, could you be the boss of Lone Desert Smoke, Zhan Yu himself?”

“You look similar to him, a shield-bearing warrior!”

Zhang Yang paid the 50 pieces of gold coins made the deal to identify his [Snake King’s Chest Plate], then he smiled and said, “It was just my lucky day, I bought it from the Little Merchandize Shop!”

Speaking of which, he published the attributes of the [Snake King’s Chest Plate] to everyone around him.

[Snake King’s Chest Plate] (Gray-silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +120

Strength: +60

Agility: +60

Level 2 Socket 1

Level 2 Socket 2

Equip: Absorbs 200 damage in every hit received.

Required level: 50

“This is just too awesome!” The players around were shouting in excitement.

“The Little Merchandize Shop is sells such equipment?” one of the players asked.

Zhang Yang nodded, and he said, “I heard that the Little Merchandize Shop is being operated by Lone Desert Smoke?”

“Then it’s right!” another player clapped his hands once and said, “Not long ago the land lease was dominated by Zhan Yu, wasn’t it? This Little Merchandize Shop must be a shop that he bought with the land lease!”

“Let’s go, I’m definitely going to check it out, let’s see if I am lucky enough to grab some gray-silver equipment to show off in the guild!”

“I’m going too!”

So, the players around quickly kept their identified equipment and all of them hastily headed to the Little Merchandize Shop.

Zhang Yang grinned widely, it was a small act on his part, he was merely obeying the saying that every cook praises his own broth!

Only Gray-Silver equipment or higher will require to be identified, furthermore, only a handful of guilds can forge a Gray-Silver equipment at the moment! Therefore, those players who possess a Gray-Silver equipment are either elites in bigger guilds or they are just filthy rich!

The few players he met just now were obviously not from any bigger guilds around, because the guild names that were displayed above their head were in total mess. But these players are rich, they didn’t seem to have any shortage of money! Zhang Yang’s Little Merchandize Shop not only required a stream of small sales, but also required the support of rich players who were willing to spend extravagantly in his shop!

These rich players usually had friends around, so they would definitely share the news among each other. There was a saying that birds of a feather flock together, so basically a friend of a rich person would also be rich, and virtually, they would be doing free advertising for the Little Merchandize Shop!

Zhang Yang walked out of the identifying shop and summoned his [Skeleton War Horse]. Then he headed towards the Little Merchandize

Shop. It had been days since he was last there, so he wondered what would have happened to his little shop!

His horse travels very fast, and in no time at all, he had reached the entrance of his little shop. Putting his horse back into his backpack, Zhang Yang walked up to the entrance of his shop. Natalia went up to him and bowed, greeting him, "Master, welcome back!"

With her upper body bent over, a great deal of her fair, soft breasts were revealed to the point where there was no way her garments would be permitted to drop a centimeter lower, instantly sending a few otakus around into nosebleed. The very edges of circles, slightly darker than the skin of her chest, were just beginning to show.

Zhang Yang walked into his shop to look at the accounts and the remaining stocks of his shop.

Initially he had deposited 100,000 gold coins for Natalia to perform some acquisition activities. It turned out that the start-up capital had not fallen or even remained where it was, but had increased by up to a total of 2,410,000 gold coins! It could be said that the average daily profit of the shop was about 110,000! The situation amazed Zhang Yang beyond words!

The items that he sold were merely player-forged items that were usually auctioned. The idea was to take advantage of the people who were unwilling to commit too much to the game system, in order to earn about 5%-20% the value of the items in their hands when they sell it to the shop! But the inventory of the shop is limited, there is no way that this little shop could compete with the auction community. In comparison to the auction community, the earning of the Little Merchandize is just like a scrap to them!

But this scrap is about 110,000 pieces of gold coins and the daily profit, this... This game company is really earning like a bull on adrenaline!

Zhang Yang was somewhat puzzled as he looked through the inventory of his warehouse in the shop.

By the looks of it, he finally understood where this Little Merchandize

Shop had been earning those gold coins from! Just when he was looking through the records, there were a dozen sets of herbs and ores sold, and then came a dozen sets of similar materials to replace the emptied slots.

But the sales for the first 10 days were obviously much higher than the sales for the last 10 days. The reason was simple: In the beginning, the shop had a few pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and a lot of bronze equipment to support the scene, and with these good things bought off, the number of customers visiting the shop had naturally declined. Players bought ores and herbs if they happened to pass by, because the price in the auction house and the price elsewhere would all be the same, so it didn't matter where they bought it from.

Now that the good pieces of equipment had been sold out, the players who sought for equipment would naturally decline in numbers, and the side sales of herbs and ores would also decline.

It was a lucky thing that Zhang Yang had just returned with his backpack full of level 40 green-copper equipment!

Chapter 160: Robbery

Zhang Yang quickly took every piece of Green-Copper equipment in his inventory and shoved them all into the shop's storage. He also made a few more stacks of [Beginner's Anti-Shadow Potion] and place them in the shop's storage as well. Do not underestimate the low sale quantity of the potion, even though he was only selling a few stacks a day, the business is consistent. Eventually, it will pile up to a large fortune. However, with potions or not, the main reason he keeps the low valued sales up was to draw in more customers.

Zhang Yang opened the "Upgrade Shop" menu and deposited 100,000 gold coins before selecting "proceed".

'Ding! You are about to upgrade "Little Merchandize Shop" to level 2. This upgrade will cost you 100,000 gold coins.'

"Yes!"

'Ding! "Little Merchandize Shop" has been upgraded to level 2 Shop. Shop inventory has been increased to 2000! One additional floor has been added! The next upgrade would increase Shop Inventory to 3000 and an additional floor. The next upgrade would cost 500,000 gold coins!'

Again!

Ding! "Little Merchandize Shop" has been upgraded to level 3 Shop. Shop inventory has been increased to 3000! One additional floor has been added! The next upgrade would increase Shop Inventory to 4000 and an additional floor. The next upgrade would cost 1,000,000 gold coins!'

Again! Nah...just kidding. This would suffice for now. He only needed the space for [Solid Iron Bar]s. Zhang Yang will try his best to spend all his gold coins before he reaches level 50!

Before Zhang Yang left, he adjusted Natalia the shop keeper's settings to only buy [Solid Iron Bar]s instead of [Iron Bar]s or [Iron Ore]s and increased the buying price from 0.85 gold coins each to 0.9 gold coins each. The small difference of 5 silver coins was enough to let many

Mining profession players turn their ores to bars and sell them all to this little shop

[Solid Iron Bar]s were not for sale just yet. The demand in the market for [Iron Bar] itself was low. Most of the player would sell them in the auction house for only 2 gold coins per stack. Even so, these entries would go unsold and be promptly returned to their owners. The supplies for [Iron Bar] had far exceeded the market demands!

Along the rise of the average player's level, ingredients and materials for [Beginner Iron Skin Potion] and [Beginner Power Potion] were beginning to surface. However, their quantity was only a handful. Still, it was enough for Zhang Yang to make 2 stacks each, totaling up to 800 bottles. Half of them were placed in the shop for sales, while the rest were stored in his inventory for the exploration of the Castle Interior Hardcore mode dungeon.

"Little Yang! Big new! BIG NEWS!" Fatty Han suddenly yelled through the private messaging service.

"What's up? Did you get dumped again?"

"F*ck you! I saw the news this morning! The guild called Imperial Sky were the first to kill the 3rd boss in the castle interior Hardcore mode!"

"Oh." said Zhang Yang. His eye brows twitched a little.

Imperial Sky...One Sword Stroke! The number one tank in the entirety of the China server in his past life!

He has finally showed up!

"Damn! Little Yang! Why are you so calm about this? We have yet to even set foot in the dungeon, and someone else is already on the brink of getting the First Clear!" Fatty Han screamed.

Zhang Yang had only known One Sword Stroke when he was around level 50. Only then did One Sword Stroke had built up his fame from a small province to the entire China! His skill as a tank was on a professional level! His PK skills were as formidable! He had brought a battle team call "Sky Ocean Electronics" to the S-level Professional League

and became the best S-level battle team in the entire China!

“It’s good to have some sort of a competition now and then. It’s not wise to have all the spotlights on us the whole time!” Zhang Yang laughed it off.

Fatty Han grumbled before he spoke coherently again. “So, when are we going to raid the Castle Interior?”

“These past few days have been really tiresome. Rest earlier tonight, we’ll raid the dungeon tomorrow night!”

“...Fine!”

Zhang Yang glanced at the system clock and saw that it was close to 6pm. Zhang Yang then logged out and went out to buy his dinner. Zhang Yang grabbed his wallet and found a single, lonely piece of 5-dollar bill inside. Other than the dust falling out, there was nothing else. Zhang Yang could not help but shake his head. “How ironic for a millionaire to only have a piece of 5 in his wallet!”

After Zhang Yang bought himself a packet rice, he was completely broke! He did not even have money for tomorrow’s breakfast!

“Looks like...I might have to wake up a little later than usual. Take it as marathon training! I shall run to the bank and withdraw money!” Zhang Yang thought of his solution while eating his dinner. After dinner, Zhang Yang logged into the game and met with everyone. They all did a run at the Garden area Hardcore mode dungeon and obtained a few Gray-Silver tier equipment, submitting them all at the Little Merchandize Shop. He even called up Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight to polish up their teamwork.

Zhang Yang offered invitations to the party to the both of them in raiding the Castle Interior Hardcore mode. Daffodil was a little hesitant, however, she accepted it eventually.

These days had put a toll on Zhang Yang, and since he had to wake up at 9am the next day, Zhang Yang retired earlier and went to bed.

Zhang Yang woke up the next day, turning around on his bed before he

got up at around 7am.

He trained in his room for a little while and went out at 8am, heading for the bank. The little area where he lived did not have any banks or an A.T.M.s. To reach the nearest bank would take at least an hour of walking. Instead, Zhang Yang jogged a little and arrived at the bank in only 20 minutes. The bank only opens at 8.30am, and Zhang Yang had not realized that. When he entered the bank, he was surprised to see a whole crowd queuing up. The majority of them were there to pay their water bills, electric fees, gas, and etc. The whole lot was lined up like a long river.

Sigh...it couldn't be helped. He had to line up as well.

Stomach grumbling

He had not eaten anything in the morning. With the extra mile of running and exercising, his stomach was beginning to growl in hunger.

Tick tock the time went, before he finally managed to get his turn at the operator window aisle.

"Withdrawal? Or Deposit?" asked the female operator. The girl looked like she was only in her twenties. She was wearing a white formal top that was so tight, her purplish bra that held her breasts up was completely plastered to the fabric. Her short mini-skirt was coffee brown in color and revealed her long, exquisite legs, wrapped in half-transparent leggings, ending with high heels that covered her delicate feet. No matter how you looked at it, she was the most popular of all the office ladies there. It was a very seductive uniform.

"Withdrawal!"

The beautiful girl raised her chin up and studied Zhang Yang's face. After noticing his extreme common appearance, he lost her interest and asked nonchalantly. "How much?"

"I'll take 10,000 dollars please." Zhang Yang did not want to take much out, but 10,000 dollars could last him for a very long time.

The girl then took out a piece of equipment and handed it over to Zhang Yang. "Please key in your PIN."

Zhang Yang pulled the machine a little closer and keyed in his PIN. After the confirmation, Zhang Yang pushed the machine back and the girl took it. After a few seconds of processing, a screen flashed on her computer, revealing his details. The girl's eyes bulged out like ping pong balls! She was surprised to see the numbers displayed on the screen!

350,000? 3,530,000!? What the hell!? She must be seeing things! The figure before her eyes was 35,300,000!

Impossible! No matter how she looked back at Zhang Yang, he only had the face of a commoner! How could he even have such a massive fortune!? No wonder they always said that it was silly to judge a book by its cover! Even some one as rich as Mark Zuckerberg only dressed plainly in public! The richer one became, the humbler he'll be!

"Sir, please mind your cash, please check your change!" the girl immediately changed her tone from a nonchalant, devil-may-care attitude, and into a kind, caring, descended angel kind of tone. She then pushed a receipt and the cash out through the glass opening.

Zhang Yang picked the stack up and flipped it over to count. He then found a piece of small paper behind the receipt that wrote "137-123456-78, Yan Fei Fei"

This was obviously her name and phone number. Zhang Yang was stunned and he gazed up and looked at the operator. He thought that perhaps his face had turned a lot more appealing ever since he was reborn again, was that why he could pick up any random chicks with just his looks?

Yan Fei Fei met his gaze and smiled softly, revealing only a hint of her pearl white teeth in between her soft supple lips. Even though her smile could not be compared to Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu's charm, Yan Fei Fei's charm was enough to send any unguarded man head over heels.

Zhang Yang had no intention to "start a bush fire in the amazon". He only returned her smile and left the counter with the money in his pocket. He had wanted to throw away the note immediately, but that would crush her heart into billions of pieces. Instead, to avoid devastating a maiden's

heart, he kept the note only to throw it away later. He was not interested in further developing a random encounter.

BAM!

The piercing sound of a gunshot could be heard. Zhang Yang ears were ringing with the sudden loud blast. He lifted his head, only to see 3 huge men wearing black ski-masks that covered their entire faces, with only their eyes and mouth exposed. All three of them were armed; two of them were holding revolvers and one of them was wielding a double barreled shotgun!

Zhang Yang wheeled around to the exit and was shocked to see the security guard leaning against the door, with a pool of blood on the floor where he stood, and a huge gunshot wound in his chest. Blood was still oozing out from the wound but the man had already bite the dust with his eyes all rolled up.

“KYAAAAA” After a frozen moment of shocked silence, the people inside the bank had finally realized the horror that they were involved in and screamed from the top of their lungs.

BAM!

Another shot was fired and everyone fell silent.

One of them robber went to the entrance and pulled down the shutters. Another one was holding his gun and aimed at the crowd. The last one screamed, “Silent! BE QUIET! We are here for money! Not your lives! If you’re not in our way, we’ll let you go off without a scratch! We are taking the bank’s money! The government’s money! So listen closely to what I’m saying now. Do not try to be a hero! Guns don’t kill people, this man will!” said the robber while pointing his thumb at his chest. “Don’t try to do anything funny or I will break my promise, eh!”

“Everyone! Hands over your heads! Sit at the benches there! Hah! See how nice I am? I know that you’re tired! Go on! Get a move on!”

The same guy shouted, “Heart Q! Take the manager to the bank’s vault!”

“Roger that!” replied one of the robbers. He then took out a few match

box sized cubes and paste them against the door.

BOOM!

A loud bang was heard and iron plated shield door that was there to prevent robbers was blasted open, leaving a huge hole!

Behind the door was another layer of security, though it was only a wall of glass between the operator and the other side.

“Diamond J! Break that glass!”

“Yes boss!” said the robber that was called Diamond J with the shotgun in his hands.

“Stupid! I told you to use codenames!”

“Ahh right. Sorry! Spade K boss!”

The robber called Spade K must be the leader of these 3 robbers. He then shook his head and said, “Hurry up! We don’t have much time!”

“Understood! Spade K boss!” Diamond J then took out a clay-like lump of material, about the size of a match box and pasted them on the glass windows. Everyone behind the glass was screaming over as if they understood what was soon to follow. They scrambled further behind to escape.

BOOM! Ding...ding...

The bullet proof glass was then blasted into tiny fragments. Diamond J then took out a leather duffle bag and threw it inside the counter, pointing his gun at the staff. “Fill the bag with money!”

With their lives at point black range, the operators behind the counter did not dare to disobey the robbers. They frantically pulled out the drawers and threw the cash into the bag.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. To think that he would be involved in a robbery...what luck. The rate of him getting into a robbery was at least much much lower than him actually winning a million dollar lottery! Even though he was good at martial arts, however, he could not do anything! The opponents...had guns!

“Ehhh! This girl is super cute!” Diamond J cried out as he grab onto her hair and yanked it up. Yan Fei Fei immediately stood up in pain. The shotgun muzzle was pointed directly at her throat.

“Young lady...If you don’t want two brand new holes in your face, you better stop resisting!”

Chapter 161: Double homicide

The robber called Spade K was furious. “Diamond J! What the hell are you doing?! Can you stop thinking about woman for minutes?! How can you even think of having s*x right in the middle of an operation? If we can get away with this, I’ll let you f*ck 10 girls a day!”

“Boss! You know me! Once I get into the mood, I won’t be able to control myself anymore! How else would I be in jail the first place?”

“What the actual f*ck!” Spade K cried. He flipped up his left wrist and check his watch. “Quick! The cops will arrive after 11 minutes!”

“Enough! I can f*ck real fast! 5 minutes is all I need!” The robber called Diamond J was delighted that his leader had given him the green light. He then lounged forward and carried Yan Fei Fei up.

“NOOO!! HELP!!! NOOOOOO!” Struggling as much as she could, she cried for help.

“Hahahaha” the robber laughed. He then placed Yan Fei Fei on top of the bank counter, facing her inward. He then pushed Fei Fei firmly against the counter, face down with one hand and tore off her skirt with his other hand. His strength was so immense that he ripped the skirt off in one pull.

SKIRRT!

The sound of the skirt ripping off could be heard among the anguished tone of Yan Fei Fei’s helpless cries. She continued to struggle, wiggling her legs as hard as she could. There were only a few pieces of fabric covering her lower part.

The masked robber laughed maniacally. “You b*tch*s love to wear these kinds of short skirts! I almost thought that you weren’t wearing anything underneath! Haha! I would have snapped my d*ck if I were to just poke it in!”

Yan Fei Fei continued to struggle and scream, her efforts to free herself were not only in vain, but had also angered him so.

“Argh! Stop struggling!”

BAM!

He slammed her head on to the counter and the struggling stopped. Yan Fei Fei was still conscious. Tears were rolling down her cheeks, smudging all over her makeup. Her sobs echoed through the deafening silence of the crowd who could not do anything to stop her violation.

Diamond J reached for what remained of her skirt and yanked something out so quickly that Yan Fei Fei was screaming in pain. In his hands was a snapped purple colored T-back undergarment. He then pushed the panties against his own face and took a deep breath.

“GRAHHA AH AH AH! THE SMELL OF A B*ITCH ALRIGHT!”

With one hand still on her back, pressing her against the counter, he reached out with his other hand to undress his pants.

Yan Fei Fei gazed down and saw what he was doing and finally realized that she was about to lose her chastity. Her eyes widened and her mouth gaped open in horror. She cried out as loud as she could. “NO! NO!!!! HELP!!! PLEASE STOP!!!!” More tears rolled down. The counter was almost filled with her tears and blood, mixed into a recipe of absolute horror for a common, ordinary little office lady. It was just too much for her to take in.

As her cries grew louder and louder, the rest of the victims went even quieter. There was nothing but the raging heart beats and terrified breaths. No one else dared to stand up and fight back under the threat of the guns facing them.

Zhang Yang could not help himself. His knuckles were clenched so tightly that he could have sworn that his nails have already pierced his palms. He was angry. Angry at his own disability to do anything at all. In a money or life situation, he would gladly choose his life over millions of dollars. However, there was an innocent girl, about to be raped right in front of his eyes! How could he just ignore that! But! The opponent had guns! He could not just dash out and unleash his martial arts without a plan. He might get shot before he could even save the girl!

Zhang Yang scanned the entire room for anything that he could use. He spotted an ashtray on a table in in front of him. He then kept close watch

at the closest gunman, Spade K! He would have to wait for the perfect moment to strike!

“Aww come on baby! Let me f*ck you good!” Diamond J snickered evilly. He already had his pants down. He then turned her over and ripped off her shirt. Before he could do it...

“ARGH!” He screamed in pain and quickly withdrew his hands. They were bleeding from a deep bite wound.

“You b*tch! You dare bite me!” Diamond J yanked her hair, raising her head up. He then slammed her head directly at the counter top. With a loud thud, Yan Fei Fei went completely silent. Blood started to ooze out of her head. She was completely out of it, her eyes unfocused.

Dazed and immobile, the girl was barely conscious. “Hmph! I’ll f*ck you till you come begging for more!” Diamond J then smacked her bare, exposed butt and lifted one of her legs, trying to find a perfect position to slide it in.

Just then, Zhang Yang had leaped to his feet. He quickly grabbed the ashtray on the table and flung it across the room. He set his eyes fixed on his target’s head, Spade K!

WHACK!

The strike was so strong that the robber Spade K was completely spun around and fell onto the ground!

In a flash, Zhang Yang quickly leaped forward and threw a strong punch, knocking him out cold instantly. Zhang Yang twisted Spade K’s hands and locked them at his side. He had even managed to wrestle the revolver in his hands.

Quick as lightning, Diamond J dove for the short gun on the counter next to him as Zhang Yang grabbed the revolver at the same time.

The masked robber Diamond J quickly pulled Yan Fei Fei up and hid behind her, using her as a human shield. He screamed for his accomplices. “Spade K! Spade K! Where are you!? Hey! Boss! Boss!”

Zhang Yang aimed the gun at Diamond J and used his other free hand to grab hold on the other robber. “Your boss is tired. He’s taking a nap!”

“Nap my ass!” Diamond J pointed the shotgun at Zhang Yang’s direction and screamed. “Let my boss go!”

“Let her go first!” said Zhang Yang bravely without any trace of fear in his voice.

“F*ck you! Let him go! I’ll shoot her brains out!” said Diamond J. His eyes radiated with killing intent.

Zhang Yang remained calm and cool. He said, “Go ahead then. Try and shoot! By the time she’s dead, you’re dead too!”

“Sh*t! Sh*t!!!” Diamond J cursed and cursed. He was not a brilliant man to think of a way out. He could only stand right there and battle with his wits.

They were in a standoff. The atmosphere got even more intense.

Tick...tick...The sound of the wall clock echoed through the room. The masked robber Diamond J was sweating intensely. His mask turned a little dark as the cotton absorb his perspiration.

Tch! The longer it dragged on, the worse the situation would get! They had calculated precisely that the entire process would take roughly 13 minutes for the bank to send a silent alarm to the police station, and for the police to arrive! In that 13 minutes, they would need to escape! If the police arrives they could do nothing but surrender without condition. They would then be sent off to jail for at least 20 to 30 years! If he refused to cooperate, he would be shot on the spot!

No matter which path he took, neither of it was what he wanted!

The killing intent in his eyes grew stronger and stronger. Right now, the only thing he could consider was his own life! He wants to kill Zhang Yang, and if he does that he could also kill off his boss! That was fine, fewer portions to share later!

“Yo! Spade K! I have already...” Heart Q had just only came out of the

vault, carrying a huge bag that was obviously filled with bundles of cash! He quickly noticed that something was wrong and raised his gun up.

BAM!

Zhang Yang reacted first. A shot was fired before the robber could shoot.

The masked robber Heart Q staggered a little before falling down on his back! There was a deep gunshot wound on his forehead.

Zhang Yang quickly turned the gun and aimed at Diamond J!

His marksmanship was not weak! When he entered the university's military training, his skills with the gun was the institute's number 1! His performance had even shocked one of the military captains! The captain had even encouraged Zhang Yang to join the military school! His marksmanship could be nurtured and could be the best sharpshooter in the military!

The masked robber Diamond J had never thought that Zhang Yang would resort to killing just like that. He even killed the other robber without any hesitation! Diamond J had just wasted his one in a lifetime chance of attacking!

The two of them were back to a Mexican standoff!

1 minute...2 minutes!...3 minutes!

"Wee...woo...wee...woo" In the midst of complete silence, the echoed sound of the police sirens could be heard approaching!

Panic started to tear at Cubick K's thoughts. He began to frantically looked left and right for a way out! If he does not act now, death would be the only way out!

ARGH!

He raised his gun and pulled the trigger!

BAM!

BAM!

Two gun shots was heard in the same time! Thud! Thud! Both Zhang

Yang and Diamond J had fall back, taking along the hostages they had been clinging to!

Did they kill each other?!

Amidst the eerie silence, no one in the bank dared to stand up, fearing that either one of the robber might get up and shot them!

“Fu...” the sound came from the body of Spade K! Everyone jumped in surprised and shrunk backwards.

Thud. “Spade K” stirred and rolled away. Zhang Yang pushed the corpse off him and got up as quickly as he could. He then dashed quickly toward the counter and looked through the window.

Behind the counter, laid the remains of the masked robber Diamond J. There was a small 9mm hole right at the left side of the skull. White fluid that seemed to be brain matter had oozed out from the hole, mixed together with the fresh blood. He was dead before he could even hit the floor. Yan Fei Fei was right on top of the body. Half of her top was already torn off with only a few buttons holding the clothes intact, revealing her purple undergarment. Her lower half was practically naked, completely revealing her entire bushy forest!

Her eyes were dilated, her body was trembling. She was suffering from shock. It was a traumatic aftereffect from experiencing such an ordeal. She had still not recovered from it.

In the gunfire, Zhang Yang had moved Spade K into the path of the bullet and used him to block the shotgun’s shot. The unfortunate robber was killed by Diamond J. Since the gunfire was from a shotgun, the impact had knocked him back, sending him and Spade K flying backward.

Zhang Yang breathed a sigh of relief. He threw the revolver in his hand aside and took off his top. He squatted down closely to the still catatonic Yan Fei Fei and covered her lower half with his shirt. He whispered gently, “It’s alright. The bad guys are all dead. Everything is going to be just fine. I promise.”

Yan Fei Fei was still in a daze. For a long moment, she shed tears and

cried out loud like a baby. She quickly realized that Zhang Yang was right beside her and hugged him tightly.

“Waa...Waa...” her cries filled the entire room.

Blood that had drained away from her face had not yet returned. Her cheeks were so pale that she looked like she was completely petrified. After such horrific experience, she felt that the only safe place she could be was in Zhang Yang's embrace.

Everyone on the bank stood up only after they were certain that the danger was over.

Chattering of police officers could be heard from outside of the bank and another loud muffled voice that was amplified with a loudspeaker could be heard. “You're surrounded! Give up! There is no way you could leave here safely now!”

One by one the victims inside the bank started to scream back. “Don't shoot! The robbers are dead! They are all dead!” They then left the premise.

No sooner, a team of 20 fully armed special forces rushed into the bank only to be shocked when they witness 3 dead bodies lying on the ground. A simple bank robbery had turned into a multiple homicide case. Every single victim that was involved in the case had been sent to the police station for debriefing. Yan Fei Fei had only released Zhang Yang embrace and looked into his eyes with her own teary gaze. She cried out with gratitude, “Thank you! Thank you so much!” Without Zhang Yang bravery assault, she would definitely have been raped on the spot! Who knew what kind of person this man would be? He was a prison inmate, he would be carrying all sort of S.T.D (Sexual Transmitted Diseases) and would have ruined her life!

WeeWooWeeWoo...

The sound of the police siren echoed throughout the entire block. Many cars took off at once, carrying victims of the bank robbery to the Public Security Bureau of the Ping Jiang District.

The debriefing of the robbery was done rather smoothly. Since the robbers did not destroy any security cameras in the bank, the officer only needed to extract related information from the recordings and the testimonies from all the victims in the bank robbery case. Once they had collected all information, the officers had confirmed that Zhang Yang's act of "bravery" and saved the hostages.

After a while, Zhang Yang was sent to a questioning room used by the police to interview suspects.

"Mr. Zhang Yang, am I correct?" A policeman with stripes and stars attached to his sleeve sat opposite Zhang Yang. He was rather calm and had impartial look on his face. He smiled and said, "What a coincidence! I am also a Zhang. Zhang He Yuan. Captain of a small task force, I might say."

Zhang Yang smiled back and greet him. "Nice to meet you, Captain Zhang."

Zhang Yang himself was barely focusing. He had just ended two human lives. When things had just settled down, it was safe to say that he wasn't emotional about it since he had no time to think about it. Yet, now here, sitting calmly and having the time to think about the matter seriously, Zhang Yang was not at all disturbed by the fact that he just killed two humans! It must have been the effect of dying once before. He must have understood the meaning of life. Afterall, the two robbers were evil and deserved what that was coming to them. Zhang Yang had neither the stress not the guilt to bear in his heart.

"I've seen the recordings Mr. Zhang and I have to say that I'm deeply impressed by your bravery! Your strength and will are both quite impressive!" laughed Zhang He Yuan.

Zhang Yang knew something was off when he had dragged him into this room alone. Hmph! There's no need to put on airs or spout bullsh*t.

Zhang Yang replied. "Every citizen has the responsibility to stand against crime! It was only a coincidence that I was there!"

"Yes...yes...However..." Zhang He Yuan frowned and put on a worrisome

expression. “Mr. Zhang. 2 out of the 3 robbers died due to your actions! They were killed by you. Even if you stated that it was only in self-defense, technically, it’s more on the lines of murder!”

Murder your ass! If he had not acted then and there, Zhang Yang would be the one dead and the criminals would have gotten away with it! In fact, during that standoff, Zhang Yang was nearly killed himself! The only way left for Zhang Yang was to shoot that bastard to hell!

However, the person sitting opposite him was saying things to frighten him. His motives were still unclear to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could only wait for him to reveal his intentions, but until then, he could only put on a plastic smile and remain silent.

Zhang He Yuan was at the impression that he had successfully frightened Zhang Yang. “As a Public Security Officer, we have the obligation to take care of the citizen’s safety! What you have done was truly an admirable act of bravery that deserves to be praised. That is why, I have an idea to get you off the hook. You could change your testimony, that the police were the ones who killed the robbers instead! Policemen, opening fire to kill the criminals and protect the citizens! Isn’t that the righteous thing to do?!”

Zhang Yang finally understood what he wanted when he had blabbered everything out. He wanted to get all the reputation!

Zhang Yang had guessed correctly. Once the case had been handed over to the Public Security Bureau, this big shot here had come to a conclusion! With the rising crime rate and its effect on the society, he must take this chance to grab the opportunity to increase the reputation of the police force and gain the respect of the public!

Zhang He Yuan immediately understood. According to the truth, this robbery case and the act of saving the hostages all fell on Zhang Yang’s shoulders. From the police’s perspective, the case was already settled when they had just arrived. Even though the police forces had arrived directly on schedule without a single second to waste, they could not just brush it off without doing anything at all!

The chief wanted the credit to fall onto the police department, since the beloved son of the chief was in the Bureau, to get a quick promotion, to get credits. As such, this was the best contribution he could stand to receive!

Of course, this share of the cake would not be eaten alone by the Head of the Bureau. He would have shared this benefit with other high ranking officers in the bureau as well. Everyone would tell tales of how they had contributed in the act of completing the case and sharing together, the act of “foiling the robbery and saving the hostage”.

Zhang Yang was not an Enforcer nor a member of the Public Security Bureau. If he received full credit for this case, he would only obtain some sort of reward like the “Excellent Citizen Award” and a few hundred thousand dollars as an additional reward. Zhang Yang had neither the need of money nor public fame. If this gentleman had started their conversation with full honesty, he would have handed over this matter for them to handle without a second thought. However, he could not stand by and watch this corrupted officer claiming credit for something that he had not done!

F*ck this sh*t! You want me to hand over my effort for naught? And you want me to thank you for things that I had done?! You should be ashamed of yourself!

If he was someone else with a weaker wit, he or she might have been truly frightened!

Zhang Yang purposely acted guilty and said, “Captain Zhang. I was raised with an honest upbringing. I’m afraid I cannot lie!”

Zhang He Yuan was afraid that Zhang Yang was a person who craved for fame and glory, and that he would instantly reject his offer. That was why Zhang He Yuan had frightened him in the first place! He would then strike a deal with him after. Zhang He Yuan smiled gently and replied him, “Mr. Zhang, we are not asking you to commit a crime by lying! This is to protect yourself!”

Zhang Yang thought a while and shook his head, “No! No! I cannot ask

you to take the blame! I have committed a crime! Therefore, I must accept the punishment!”

Chapter 162: The Violent Sun Xin Yu

How persistent could this bastard be?! Zhang He Yuan started to get a little agitated. An armed robbery is a huge case! They were right in the middle of the Bureau for god sake! Sooner or later, there would be more nosy officers sent here to interrogate the victims. By then, it would be too late to change the subject! And he would be caught red handed!

“Mr. Zhang! Please leave this to our hands! Officers of the Public Security Bureau could fire shots in public without a problem! We won’t face any trouble for doing so! But you’re a civilian!” Zhang He Yuan continued to persuade Zhang Yang.

“No! No! I cannot, in good conscience, bring trouble to you! You’re purposely trying to console me! I know that all policemen are good guys! I would never let this sin be laid upon to you all! How could I treat you in such manner, people who sacrifice their lives to protect the good and peaceful community!” No matter how Zhang He Yuan tried to convince him, Zhang Yang would only shake his head left and right.

Zhang He Yuan had completely wasted his breath talking to Zhang Yang. No matter how hard he tried to persuade him, Zhang Yang would only accept “the consequences of his sins”. He even reached out with both of his hands for him to cuff! Aiyoyo! Zhang He Yuan did not know whether to laugh or cry. If he had known that this young man had such a down-to-earth character, he would not have lied to him in the first place! Now that the situation had developed so far, how does he dragged this stubborn donkey back to reality?

He should had figured it out way earlier! Anyone who was so good at martial arts, and would put his life on the line to fight bad guys, and would definitely be a man of virtue! To trick a man of virtue is to bring calamity to oneself!

Zhang He Yuan felt regret pouring into him like it was judgment day itself! Time waits for no man, if he had explained everything clearly without the lies, he would have solved this matter in a jiffy. If any other

officer would have taken over this case, everything would be lost! It could be worse than this. He could be marked as the person whom frightened the hero of the community! This was not a light matter that could be brushed off easily! Who knows, he might have to turn in his badge!

What do I do?

Kachak!

The door knob turned and opened. A female police officer in uniform entered the room. She was rather tall and extravagant in that somewhat tight uniform that had every fiber on the uniform stretched over her skin. Her chest was so large that it was impressive on how strong the buttons on her shirt were, to be able to even hold them in. She was not alone, behind her was a middle-aged man with bruises on his face. When she noticed that there were people in the interrogation room, she scoffed coldly and said, "How come Liu Ren Liang did not notify that the room was being used..."

When the bruised-face man noticed Zhang He Yuan, he quickly screamed out. "Help me! I want to make a police report! This crazy b*tch is insane! Look! Look! She did this!" said the man as he pointed his fingers to his face.

Zhang He Yuan could not voice out his true intention since everything inside the room was not on the record. He had to privately settle this case with Zhang Yang.

"Erhm. Perhaps Little Liu had forgot I was here." Said Zhang He Yuan, ignoring the bruised-face man behind her.

The female officer turned around and did karate chop on the back of the poor fellow's neck, knocking him out cold. The man's eyes rolled upwards and fell onto the floor. The woman turned around and scoffed at Zhang Yang. "Why are you here?"

Zhang Yang smiled, revealing his shiny teeth and said, "Oh wow! What a coincidence, to be seeing you again!"

This female police officer was Sun Xin Yu. Everyone who knew her

would have already recognize her with that violent chop. It was as expected of her extreme violent behavior, like a tigress!

Her face remained as cold as ice. “Stop smiling! Hmph! What happened? What did you do...”

Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulder nonchalantly and said, “Well, I killed someone!”

Sun Xin Yu widen her eyes suddenly. “Are you out of your mind?! Don’t think that just because you’re invincible in the game, you could also ignore the rules of society!”

Zhang He Yuan immediately coughed and said, “Little Sun, I’m sure you have other matters to tend to. I’ll take it from here.”

Ignoring him, Sun Xin Yu walked over to Zhang He Yuan side and sat beside him and opposite Zhang Yang. “Explain yourself!”

Zhang He Yuan was already tormented by Zhang Yang’s persistent behavior. He was already barely restraining himself. But when Sun Xin Yu had just walked into his interrogation room and sat down, he had it! Sun Xin Yu had only entered the Bureau 2 months back! How dare she ignore the Captain! He would not let this pass!

BAM!

Zhang He Yuan slammed the desk and cried. “Sun Xin Yu, I’m ordering you to leave this room!”

Sun Xin Yu only stared coldly at him, with a suspicious look. She then ignored him and turned back to Zhang Yang. “Why did you kill?”

“Sun Xin Yu...” Zhang He Yuan was greatly angered. In his thoughts, “You think that you’re so beautiful eh? I know that you’re indeed a pretty one, I might even take you in bed happily! But that doesn’t mean that you could just do what you want with those looks! You would even go as far as ignoring me, as the captain!”

Zhang Yang smiled again and said, “There were a few robbers in the bank. I was agitated. I could not control myself and ended up killing them

all!”

“Is that true?” She turned to Zhang He Yuan and asked for the truth.

What?!

Zhang He Yuan was already maddened with rage. She would even dare to turn to him and ask for a confirmation?! His face was as red as a fuji apple. He calmed himself down and said, “Sun Xin Yu, your actions have already broken the police code! Now, get out of here, I will have a little chat with you later!”

Kachak!

The door opened again!

This time, it was a young man who looked like he was in his twenties. He was in a police uniform and was rather handsome looking, though he was a little short in height. He turned around and saw Sun Xin Yu and smiled sweetly. “So there you are, Little Sun.”

When Zhan He Yuan saw the young man, he too smiled as well. “Ah! It’s Ma Hang! Everything here has been settled, I assume?”

This young man was the beloved son of the Chief of the Bureau. That was why even a senior officer like Zhang He Yuan would not dare do anything to this “prince”.

Since the old man was an important person in the department, Ma Hang did not even consider Zhang He Yuan to be anything of importance. He only smiled back and place his attention on Sun Xin Yu. “Little Sun, I have booked a seat for us at La Venus. Shall we have lunch together later?”

“No.” Sun Xin Yu rejected coldly and turned to Zhang Yang. “What happened exactly?”

Zhang Yang explained everything from top and bottom about the case without any additional information.

Sun Xin Yu leaned back to her chair and sigh. “Is that so.”

Ma Hang expression had turned sour. 1 month back when he had spotted this beautiful jewel, his heart had been captured by hear cool and

cold complexion. But when he dug a little deeper, he found out that Sun Xin Yu had been introduced to the Bureau by the Executive Deputy Chief officer Gu Jun!

Even though Ma Hang's father is the real Chief who had a certain level of authority, he alone still could not rule over everything. 3 Executive Deputies had the same authority level as the Chief himself! If Sun Xin Yu was under Gu Jun, then Ma Hang could not act all high and mighty! He did not have the authority for it!

That was why Ma Hang had always been in the shadows, observing her every move. But for the next week or two, he had not found any connections between Sun Xin Yu and Gu Jun! Ma Hang then concluded that Sun Xin Yu must be a close relative and the daughter or an old friend of Gu Jun. That was how she could be in the force! With that, Ma Hang had decided. Since she had Gu Jun as her back up, he could not depend on any dirty tactics, such as promotions, salary increments, or even the threat of losing one's job as a method to get her. He had to rely on the old fashion way, to come up front and "tackle" her!

However, being the Sun Xin Yu that they all know, she had only treated him as coldly as the others, completing ignoring his efforts! Ma Hang had always held it in because of Gu Jun's existence, he could only silently swear to get the b*tch on his bed, and have his way with her!

To endure is like holding a double edge sword; Ma Hang was a man already intoxicated with the misuse of power! He was the only son of the Chief Ma Wu Shi! Sun Xin Yu was nothing compared to him! Even if she was a relative of Gu Jun, it did not matter if she was his cousin or his daughter, how could she compare her position with his own?

Having been rejected numerous time by Sun Xin Yu, Ma Hang could not take it anymore. As his own principles, to chase after a woman, the one and only way is to use his power of "authority" to win her over!

After listening to Zhang Yang's explanation, Ma Han interject. "Oh! So you're the guy that shot the robbers! Hmph. You do know that it's a crime to fire a weapon if you're not an officer of the law?"

He was already informed of the situation by his father. He had pulled a few strings with the robbery victims and had gotten them to agree to confess that he was the police officer, the hero who saved them all; the person who shot the villain and save the day!

After he had known that Sun Xin Yu had returned to the office, he had then came back hurriedly. Right now, he knew that Zhang Yang was the target to take over the role of hero, and he had to do the same thing Zhang He Yuan had done, to frighten him a little.

Before Zhang Yang could open his mouth, Sun Xin Yu had already exploded. "What did he do wrong?! If he had not acted then, an innocent lady would have been raped! Without him, we might be in a shootout with those robbers! How many innocent lives would have been lost then?!"

When Ma Hang saw that Sun Xin Yu was on Zhang Yang's side, he could not help but feel jealous, and showed an even more bitter face. "What he did was more than self-defense!"

"Oh. So you're asking me to defeat the armed robbers with my bare hands? Is that your definition of true self-defense?" Zhang Yang looked at him in ire, he did not like the man one bit. His tone was rather provoking.

Ma Hang scoffed. "Anyone deserved the right to surrender! Did you ask them to give up? Did you ask them to surrender? Did you tell them the severe punishment of abiding a robbery? You didn't did you? You just went ahead and shot all 3 of them!"

"Technically, I only shot 2 of them!" said Zhang Yang as he lifted two of his fingers. Zhang Yang obviously annoyed by this ridiculous man. Zhang Yang instinctively treated Ma Hang as a fool in the crowd.

Ma Hang got angry. "What kind of attitude is that?!"

"Huh?! What did you say? What kind of attitude do you want me to show you? Who you think I am? Your wife? Punk ass Btch!" Zhang Yang replied rudely.

"What the f*ck did you say?" The more arrogant you are, the faster it will explode in your face; Ma Hang unlocked the hatch and pulled out the

sidearm and points it directing at Zhang Yang, trying to intimidate him.

The safety lock on the gun was still on, however, being the other side of the gun was a that feeling no one would like! Zhang Yang expression changed.

Sun Xin Yu was even colder. “Ma Hang, put the gun away!”

“Haha! Relax! I’m not going to pull the trigger!” said Ma Hang with a proud face. In the entire department, his father was the top of them all. The next successor would be him. Even if he pulled out a gun and aiming it at a civilian against protocol, who would dare to oppose him?

Sun Xin Yu stood up and stared angrily at Ma Hang. Her voice was filled with such intense anger that anyone could feel her rage. “PUT. THE. GUN. AWAY.”

“What’s with you? Is he your man? What got you so worked up for?” said Ma Hang.

BAM! PAK! GRAH!

Sun Xin Yu threw a direct punch and landed it firmly on Ma Hang’s face, knocking Ma hang back a few steps against the wall behind him. Blood started to ooze out from his nose. The pain was so intense that Ma Hang gurgled in agony. The punch was a punch thrown by none other than Sun Xin Yu. Even if Ma Hang was prepared to receive the punch, with his level of martial arts, the end result would still be the same!

Zhang He Yuan was staring at his end with his jaw hanging.

This woman...must be crazy! To compared what she did to Zhang He Yuan, a mere insubordination towards a senior officer, it was nothing compared to punching the son of the Chief!

Zhang Yang too, was surprised at her sudden action. Even though he hated Ma Hang’s guts...but beating a police officer inside a police station was way out of this world! Sun Xin Yu...she was truly the woman of the year!

“What the hell are you doing Sun Xin Yu!?” With his eyes wide open as

his jaw, Zhang He Yuan screamed at Sun Xin Yu. Being in the same room when the punch was thrown, Zhang He Yuan had done nothing to stop her! That was enough to leave a bad impression on the chief, if he did not do something soon, he might not be able to withstand the fiery rage of Ma Wu Shi!

Sun Xin Yu only stared coldly at Zhang He Yuan without saying a word. To be precise, he was not worth her time!

Ma Hang wiped the blood away and when he saw the blood in his hands, he got infuriated. He pointed at Sun Xin Yu with his trembling hands and scolded. “Y-You f*cking b*tch! You dared to hit me! No one has ever dared to hit me ever since I was born! Don’t think you can get away with Gu Jun behind your back! Damn you! My father is the Chief! F*ck you! Today I will f*ck your brains out! Even if you sue me after, everyone would automatically say that you’re the slut and stand at my side?!”

Sun Xin Yu revealed an even enraged look. Her killing intent was leaking out like a faucet!

“Ma Hang...” Zhang He Yuan was stunned when he heard the name Gu Jun. No wonder Sun Xin Yu could be that bold! She had someone as prominent behind her back this whole time! He jumped up immediately and tried to soothe Ma Hang. After all, there were now two executive deputy chiefs that he could not afford to anger.

Ma Hang was already maddened with anger. He screamed at Zhang He Yuan, “You! Take these two out of this room! I will personally f*ck this b*tch up right now!” He pointed at Zhang Yang and the bruised-face man that Sun Xin Yu had brought in and knocked out.

Zhang He Yuan knew that he could not calm Ma Hang down when he was angered at that level. He quickly took out his mobile phone and called the Chief! When both Ma Hang and Sun Xin Yu had big shots taking care of them, he could not allow anything worse happening to either of them!

“F*cking b*tch!” Ma Hang’s anger grew by the second. He was the one and only Ma Hang, son of the Chief Public Security Bureau! If anyone had gotten hold of the news, that he was punched in the face by a woman,

would that not make him the laughing stock of his lifetime?! With pure rage boiling inside him, he clenched his fists tightly and threw them towards Sun Xin Yu! He wanted to knock her out cold and drag her some place where no one could see him f*ck her brains out! This was the simplest plan brewing in his thoughts. As far as using his gun, Ma Hang was still sane enough to not use the gun inside a police office!

As a righteous man, Zhang Yang could not let himself sit by and allow Sun Xin Yu to take a beating, not when Sun Xin Yu had stuck out her neck for him. He jumped to his feet and acted quickly. But, even though his reaction was fast, Sun Xin Yu reaction was not sloppy either. She had already prepared to counter Ma Hang's attack.

WHAM! BAM! BANG!

With Sun Xin Yu being able to fight on par with Zhang Yang, she could out maneuver this useless Ma Hang by a huge gap! This weak pawn could only block off a few hits before eventually falling down to her strikes. He was beaten down to his knees. If this was in the game, circling star would have already appeared on his head numerous times now. He was completely overpowered by Sun Xin Yu and was treated as a punching bag!

Good fight! Zhang Yang silently praised Sun Xin Yu. But when he had realize that the "punching bag" was the son of the Chief of the Public Security Bureau, he could not help but to think of the consequences. He could only silently hope that Sun Xin Yu could have a way out for them!

"Stop! Stop!" cried Zhang He Yuan. This woman is crazy! Out of her bloody mind!

Sun Xin Yu scoffed and pulled back. It's not that she was obeying Zhang He Yuan, in fact, she had enough of punching the man out of Ma Hang

"Ma Hang..." a voice was heard at the door entrance. A fat man was standing there. He was about 50 years old. When he saw Ma Hang was already on the floor, with his head lying on the ground, bruises here and there, blood spilling from his face, and completely out cold, he could not help but feel both hurt and furious. He bellowed angrily, "ZHANG HE

YUAN! WHAT HAPPENED HERE?!"

Chapter 163: Strong Support

Zhang He Yuan wished he could just faint right there and then. That way he would not have to face Ma Wu Shi's scary eyes that were about to fire lasers! Zhang He Yuan was an old veteran officer, his body and health have always been at tip-top condition; it was difficult for him to even get dizzy!

He put on a thick-face and first explained the matters with Sun Xin Yu and Ma Hang. He was smart enough to omit words that Ma Hang had used such as "b*tch" and "f*ck her brains out". He then told everything out about how Ma Hang wanted to make a move towards Sun Xin Yu but was in the end, rejected by her and led to the injury on his head.

Among the chattering, another high-ranking officer came by. It was Gu Jun. When Zhang He Yuan had contacted the Chief, he had also contacted Gu Jun to come over. Ma Wu Shi, the Chief of the Public Security Bureau of the Ping Jiang District, was not afraid of Gu Jun, but this little Captain could not handle the wrath of an executive deputy chief.

Gu Jun is a gentle, salt to the earth kind of middle aged man. At the age of 37, the man was already a deputy chief! His had a bright future ahead of him, with many more stairs to climb!

After both of them listened to Zhang He Yuan's explanation about the little incident, both of them remained as stoic as statues.

They had to have powerful mastery over their own emotions before being able to stand at their current rank. If someone was hot tempered and emotionally unstable, he would have been discarded from the force as soon as he showed his bad side. Ma Wu Shi was the real Chief in charge of the entire Bureau, he would know everything that happens inside the department. Even if he had forgot about something, he had his secretary to help him handle minor things. That was why Ma Wu Shi was very clear about one fact, Sun Xin Yu was one of Gu Jun's!

If the situation was different, he would have gladly let things slide off. In a way, he would get Gu Jun to owe him a favor or to gain his trust. That

way, he could also suppress the other two nosy executive deputies. However, today was different, the one who got hit was his son! His only son! If he had let this off, he could not have lived with the decision! He would also let the entire bureau start having assumptions that Ma Wu Shi was lower than Gu Jun! His authority would be compromised!

Ma Wu Shi immediately turn to Gu Jun and give him a death stare. What he meant was, “Don’t you dare to interfere! Or else I will have your neck for this!”

Gu Jun sighed heavily.

Truthfully, Gu Jun was not at all familiar with Sun Xin Yu. He had only recommended Sun Xin Yu to enter the force as favor for an old friend. That old friend was also similarly rank as he was, an executive deputy in the Trade and Commerce Department. Since he shared a relationship with him, he had no qualms making an arrangement for her. Normally, Gu Jun and Sun Xin Yu would not have made any contact, he had never even seen her face before! The last thing he was expecting was to receive a call from Zhang He Yuan, telling him that Sun Xin Yu had beat up Chief Ma’s son! That gave him an unpleasant surprise.

Gu Jun understood Ma Wu Shi. He was ill-tempered and easily harbored grudges. For someone to strike his son, things would never end well! He did not want to offend Ma Wu Shi, but who asked Gu Jun to have a relationship with Sun Xin Yu?! In the end, he had to make an appearance at the scene to help settle things down. When he was at the receiving end of Ma Wu Shi’s death stare, Gu Jun had come to an understanding. Unless he had to fight head to head with Ma Wu Shi, he could not protect Sun Xin Yu! Is it worthwhile for him to commit an offense just because of a distant relationship?

The answer was obviously no!

Eventually, Gu Jun had to nod his head bitterly. What he meant was, “Do what you want. I won’t interfere!”

Once Ma Shi Wu had Gu Jun stand down, the next one was Sun Xin Yu herself. He reached his hand to his back and stood tall, posture like an

outstanding leader and said. “Sun Xin Yu. As an officer of the law, your duty is to protect the public security! Not trampling around like a rampaging beast! Look at yourself! What have you become! You would even raise your fist against your fellow officer! With this kind of behavior, how could a leader let you go on protecting the citizen? People like you are the ones who would cause the bureau to lose it’s purpose! We would be looked down upon!”

As his speech went on, his hands went from his back and made frantic gestures at Sun Xin Yu, pointing at her agitatedly.

A few more people around had heard the commotion, but since the deputy chief and the chief himself was there, neither of them dared to move closer. They could only stand at a distance to listen and peek at the scene. Most of them did not know what was going on, but when they heard Chief Ma scolding Sun Xin Yu, one by one, they stared with pity and empathy.

Stomach grumbles

Zhang Yang’s poor tummy had been grumbling all morning! He had not eaten anything since last night!

With a sudden turn of event, Zhang Yang had miraculously turn from a main character to only a side character. By the looks of it he was about to get his 3 strike out! Zhang Yang then quietly jerk Sun Xin Yu’s sleeves and whispered. “I say, can you really survive this?” As cold as the polar ice caps, this woman was not stupid, she would not have struck the son of the Chief without some kind of trump card hiding somewhere.

Sun Xin Yu only looked at Zhang Yang coldly for a second before turning back to the Chief. The edge of her lips twitched a little. Zhang Yang knew by then, that she was not even taking this seriously.

As expected of the Chief of the Public Security Bureau. This man had used the law and the code of conduct to pressure Sun Xin Yu. But the way he spoke, so angrily and antagonizing that if he had not drag Sun Xin Yu out to the street and have her shot dead, he would not have pacified the rage of the public.

“...Such a liability to the force, how could we still protect the public with her in the bureau! I strongly suggest that we remove her Sun Xin Yu from her duties! Remove this poison from the force! Mr. Gu, what say you?!” Ma Wu Shi turned to Gu Jun.

Gu Jun silently cursed. He had already expressed his intention to stay out of this mess, why would that dumb Chief Ma drag him back into the mess? Did he not know that Sun Xin Yu was his recommendation to the force? If Gu Jun had agreed to fire Sun Xin Yu, that it would be slapping himself in the face, admitting that he had failed to judge a person's potential!

Gu Jun was not someone as soft as a peach; easily manipulate. But for this matter, Sun Xin Yu was indeed at the wrong side of the law. She was the one who had struck first. Gu Jun had nothing to say in this matter. He sighed and turned around.

Ma Wu Shi smiled sinisterly and turned his gaze onto Sun Xin Yu. “I hereby announce that Sun Xin Yu is to be relieved from all her duties and is to be stripped of her position as an officer of the Public Security Bureau!”

“Father...” After catching his breath for some time, Ma Hang jumped into the scene and said, “Don't fire her just yet! Let her work under me! I will personally make her suffer!”

Ma Wu Shi was so angry that he nearly face palmed there and there! How could he have such a dumb son! You could not say something like that in the open! Did he think that the Public Security Bureau was his to play with? What a dumb block! He could just wait until he fired Sun Xin Yu, and then have her arrested for assault! By then you can have your own way with her.

“Keep quiet!” Ma Wu Shi stared at his son with a warning.

Ma Han quietly sat down and remain silent.

On one side, Gu Jun was snickering silently.

A silent jeer echoed louder than words.

Sun Xin Yu stared at Ma Wu Shi coldly and said, “Are you sure you want to fire me?”

Ma Wu Shi laughed. “You think that I can’t fire you now?”

“Are you certain that you want to fire me?” she asked again.

Ma Wu Shi was completely infuriated. He cried out, “Zhang He Yuan! Cuff her up! Hmph! I will charge you for intentional assault on a police officer! That’s a heavy crime!”

Sun Xin Yu laughed coldly. “You don’t have the authority to fire me!”

What is she saying?! Had she lost her mind?! Ma Wu Shi was already angered beyond words. Gu Jun was shaking his head on the other side of the room. He knew about Sun Xin Yu’s trump card. But when someone was as prominent as Ma Wu Shi, he would not even have to worry about a Trade and Commerce deputy chief!

Sun Xin Yu took out her mobile phone and quickly search for a number, calling it.

Ma Wu Shi stared at Zhang He Yuan angrily and bellowed. “Why are you still standing there for?! Are you expecting me to personally arrest her?”

When titans clash, the mortals could only cower in fear. Zhang He Yuan turned around and turned his eyes onto Gu Jun. He could not disobey Ma Wu Shi’s order but he did not want to offend Gu Jun as well. Being the middle man is not an easy task!

“Uncle Kuan! It’s me! How are you?” While everyone eyeballs were directed towards her, Sun Xin Yu was on the phone, talking to a family member.

When Zhang He Yuan had finally notice Gu Jun would not look directly at him, he finally understood that Gu Jun had not want any of this to do with him! Zhang He Yuan gathered his courage and walked to Sun Xin Yu. “Little Sun. Please cooperate with me here. Hang up the phone and put your hands behind your back!”

Instead of complying, Sun Xin Yu took a few steps forward and handed

over the phone in her hand to Ma Wu Shi. She quietly stared at him, indicating that there was someone on the other side of the phone wanting to speak with him.

Ma Wu Shi had never seen anyone as crazy and bold as Sun Xin Yu. He laughed a bit and said, "Who do you think I am? I am the Chief of the Public Security Bureau. Someone of a high rank. Not anyone can just simply talk to me!"

"MA WU SHI. PICK UP THE GOD DAMNED PHONE. YOU SON OF A B*TCH!" Even though it was only from the phone speaker, it was rather clear but not loud. Before Ma Wu Shi could continue bragging, he completely froze in place when he heard the voice.

That voice...he knows that voice! That was the Kuan Peng Fei! The Zhou Shu City Municipal Secretary! Other times, he would have smiled like a child obtaining a candy when he had pick a call from this man! But now! This is the Municipal Secretary, a man of an even higher-ranking position, who has been driven to the point to curse over the phone. It was then made clear to him, this woman, Sun Xin Yu was a woman of a certain caliber!

Ma Wu Shi strongly believed that even if the situation had changed from Sun Xin Yu to Kuan Peng Fei's own son, Kuan Peng Fei would not get so agitated! At most, he would only silently apologize to the respective department.

But now, even the dignified Kuan Peng Fei had lost his composure! That could only mean that Sun Xin Yu was someone of even higher importance! Just how far did this woman's influence go? It must be as high as state level authority!

In an instant, Ma Wu Shi was completely stunned. His hands trembled as he reached for the phone in Sun Xin Yu's hands. He almost dropped the phone when he tried to place it at his left ear.

"H-Hello? This is Secretary Kuan? Ah ha ha...Yes. This is Ma Wu Shi... What!? No. No. No! I never meant it that way! Yes...yes...yes...We at the Ping Jiang District Bureau will cooperate with the Secretary..."

Anyone with an average level on intelligence could understand that the person on the other side of the phone was someone of a higher rank than Ma Wu Shi. It must be a leader of a city level rank! Secretary Kuan? There are only very few leaders by the name of Kuan in Su Tong City. However, there would only one person in the city level rank, that is Kuan Peng Fei Municipal Secretary.

Holy crap! Anyone who understood the situation sucked in a sharp breath. To think that she could just simply pick up the phone and call the Municipal Secretary to aid her...just how powerful is this woman was? Everyone changed the way they looked at Sun Xin Yu. Before, it was in a rather patronizing and pitiful manner, but now...they were completely awed by her.

Gu Jun was rather devastated with regret! If only he had stood up and defended Sun Xin Yu, he would have gotten on the good side of the Municipal Secretary! Oh lord! He was just a small seated little officer...if only he could just latch onto the Municipal Secretary and get along with him...

Deputy Chief Gu was so jealous that word could not describe how he had felt! He turned his sight over at Sun Xin Yu and observed her. This ever-cold woman was still calm and cool. Even after such a commotion with the chief, she had not lost her composure and remained completely stoic and emotionless. It was as if she had just deflected bullets off her massive chest like the dust on her shirt.

Based on more than 10 years of his experience in the force, Gu Jun had concluded that this woman...was not to be trifled with. But when he swept around and spotted Zhang Yang, he smiled. This young lad looked like he was rather close to Sun Xin Yu. Perhaps he could make use of the young man!

Chapter 164: Girl Friend

Ma Wu Shi carefully and respectfully handed over the phone back to Su Xin Yu, with the kind of gesture that you would see from a cashier at the supermarket while giving the customer's change. But it was more than that; it was as if the person in front of Ma Wu Shi was not his subordinate, but his mother. That kind of nervousness and respect would totally add up!

Sun Xin Yu took the phone and slid it into her pocket and nonchalantly said, "So, am I still fired?"

URGH! That speech was like a direct slap to the face! A salt to the wound!

Ma Wu Shi took her sharp words like a knife to the chest, but still smiled bitterly back at her. "What are you saying!? Little Sun is an officer of the law, the officer of the people! Everyone had always looked up to you! Remember your merits!"

On the other side of the room, Ma Hang was already devastated by greed and anger; his face was twisted ugly. He thought that he could get his hands on that b*tch! Lock her up for a few days and play with her with how he saw fit. Never would he have thought that he would be cut short! His father was literally got c*ck blocked so bad he might be able to make it stand anymore!

Even though he full of himself, he was not a fool. He knew when to back down when even someone as his father had his head bowed down to Sun Xin Yu! How could Ma Hang expect to even stand up to her now?!

Sun Xin Yu had enough with the father and son drama, and she went towards Zhang Yang and gestured her fingers. "Follow me!"

Zhang Yang had been watching the "movie" that was laid in front of him for a whole day. If he was not famished, he would not have let it end that quick! He stood up and went towards Sun Xin Yu, with a little unsatisfied kind of feeling.

Everyone was at the other end of the story was staring at Zhang Yang enviously! This woman was the “goddess” of the law! The powerful being that had the support of the Municipal Secretary! Anyone that could have any kind of relationship with her would be the luckiest bastard around!

Don’t tell me that you would not want to have her as a friend?

Sun Xin Yu walked for a distance before turning quickly to face Ma Hang. Ma Hang raised his face menacingly.

WHAM!

Sun Xin Yu threw another punch in his sorry face!

“ARGH...” Ma Hang wailed. The bleeding that had stopped from the earlier punch was leaking once more!

She just punched the man’s son right in his face! However, Ma Wu Shi had no choice; it was blatantly obvious. His face was all smile with no sign of pain nor anger, as if Ma Hang was no longer his son and Sun Xin Yu was his own daughter!

Following closely behind Sun Xin Yu, Zhang Yang’s heart and mind were surging! He truly believed that when he had a mass fortune of 20,000,000,000 or even 200,000,000,000, Ma Wu Shi would still not surrender to him. He would not even stand still when Zhang Yang would beat son like how Sun Xin Yu punch Ma Hang right in front of Ma Wu Shi!

That was the true power of authority!

Truthfully, it was Sun Xin Yu who threw the first punch! If Ma Wu Shi steeled his decision to charge her, no one could have stopped him! But, subsequently, he would have to face the wrath of the municipal secretary, a man of a higher ranking that could easily “take care” of him, a mere section officer.

Could Ma Wu Shi make it all discreet? Could he really silence everyone who was involved? Once an investigation was issued, any hidden matter would be unfold! And once Ma Wu Shi was down, it was time for Sun Xin Yu to take his place! By then, Ma Wu Shi could not only exact his revenge, he would have lost his career and position! He could even be thrown into

prison for god knows what kind of misused law!

It has been said that once a man had the taste of power, he could not live a day without it. Having tasted the power of his authority, would you expect the man to drop everything, and start over? If that day really came, the gods must have tried to take his life as a game!

That was why Ma Wu Shi chose to endure it, even if he could not stomach it all!

Zhang Yang only always had a rough idea of the power of authority. But today was the day that he truly understood what it meant to be a man with authority!

It did not matter if Liu Wei would want to choose Zhang Yang as his foe in this current life; Zhang Yang would be the first to pick up the hammer of justice and smite down upon the man who ruined his previous life! To do that, it would have to have a proper, thorough preparation. A man such as Liu Wei was not just any man from a random rich household. He was the kingpin, the crime lord, the real master with a multibillionaire fortune! If Zhang Yang would want to wage a war with him, money alone was not effective; others would have done the same thing. Nothing in this world was fair! History was written with the blood of the loser! Only the strong will survive!

To have someone as a connection to the office by his side, he could be at an advantage when Liu Wei decides to use some dirty tricks to sabotage Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang's thoughts were rather calm but when he turned his head to look at the beautiful Sun Xin Yu, he could not help but smiled.

Sun Xin Yu noticed his sweet, warm smile and reacted rather coldly. "Stop smiling like a pervert! Come with me! To the practice hall, we'll fight one more time! I won't lose to you this time!"

Zhang Yang immediately held his steps and gestured her to stop. "Hold up! A kingdom cannot fight with a hungry soldier! At least let me eat something!"

Sun Xin Yu turned around and saw the clock showing 11am. She then sighed and exclaimed. “Ok, let’s have lunch together! Don’t even think about running away!”

The two of them exited the station and dined at a nearby restaurant. Being a heavy eater, and even missing a meal, Zhang Yang ordered five plates of rice scarfed it down like a hungry lion! The other customers in the restaurant were in shock with his appetite!

What the... Just right beside this glutton is a beautiful girl with style and manners. How could she just sit right beside him without even trying to stop him? Is she trying to be funny? What’s she trying to do?!

Zhang Yang noticed the nosy glances of other customers but chose to ignore them. All he cared about was to fill his empty stomach to the point of satisfaction.

“You’re done? Then let’s go!” Sun Xin Yu was rather clod and let Zhang Yang pay for the meal. Both of them returned to the station and headed straight to the gym.

They changed into their training outfit, the kind that was almost similar to that of a taekwondo or karate, which made it easy to grab because it was loose. They were to not wear any shoes in the gym and sparring. You must know that during a kick, having a shoe would make a huge difference! However, they were just sparing, and not fighting till the death.

WHAM! WHAM! PAK! PAK!

Their fight began with strong ferociousness.

During the spar, most of the officers in the station went off to have their lunch. The only people in the gym room was just Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. Aside the thundering sound of kicks and punch, the rest of the station was completely silent, further amplifying the noise from the blows.

Sun Xin Yu’s level of skill was rather high, but Zhang Yang’s daily training had proven to make him even stronger. They both were almost at each other’s necks during the start of the spar. But as the spar dragged on longer, a man’s natural built and strength started to show greater

advantage. Sun Xin Yu's breathing was getting louder as her punches were beginning to lose their destructive power. Even her speed was getting slower!

WHAM!

Zhang Yang leaped at her like a tiger's pounce, throwing her down to the ground! Sun Xin Yu was getting tired. She lost most of her strength! She wanted to dodge the pounce but her body would not listen. She was forcefully pushed down to the ground!

Zhang Yang was rather close to her at this point. Both of them were only inches apart from each other, and then he laughed. "Ice Queen! Admit your defeat! Be it real life or in the game, you would never ever be able to defeat me!"

Her cheeks were flushed in red with anger. Her eyes narrowed with the glint of a killing intent!

Zhang Yang was rather shocked. Perhaps he said too much... But then he realized, both of his hands were grabbing her voluptuous breast!

Woah!

This body of this queen is really the real deal. Zhang Yang knew that his hand was wide enough to hold up a basketball, but he could not even properly hold on to those super XL sized watermelons! That unrivalled softness and perkiness was truly extravagant! The feeling was truly blissful!

Zhang Yang's body went hot and had triggered a certain "flag". Ever since he was reborn, he had never done it before; not even by himself! The amount of excitement caused Zhang Yang to react in the manliest way possible!

He quickly took his hands off and smiled innocently. "I'm so sorry! It was a mistake! I did not do it on purpose!"

Sun Xin Yu turned away from him, got up to her feet and dashed to the changing room.

Pak Pak Pak! The sound of her heavy footsteps could be heard as her two slender and fair feet were running through the room.

Zhang Yang turned back and looked at his palms. He recalled the times whenever he traded blows with Sun Xin Yu, and having inevitably “taking advantage” of her...

About 30 seconds later, Sun Xin Yu walked out of the room and approached Zhang Yang with a gun in her hand! He could feel the strong killing intent emitting from all around her!

The gun was still in its holster, locked. But the woman was trying her best to unlock the hatch to pull out the gun. You could see that the woman was not thinking straight. Her breath was rather ragged and unstable. Her pupils were contracting and expanding uncontrollably. Sweat dripping down her silky skin. Her hands and feet were trembling furiously! She had only managed to unlock the hatch of the holster after numerous attempts, and she pulled out the revolver and cocked it!

Kachack! The safety was off!

Seeing the muzzle pointing towards him, Zhang Yang could not help but to think that she might actually pull the trigger! This woman was brave enough to punch a man's son right in his face, she would not think twice to shoot the man who had molested her! At her breast! TWICE!

ARGH! What luck! This was the 3rd time he was at the other end of the gun!

Zhang Yang did not care about Sun Xin Yu being arrested for murder. He had to think for himself this time! If he died, everything that he prepared to do would be for naught!

A million solutions were running through his mind! Should he beg for mercy? From the looks of it, this cold woman would not care about his pleas. In fact, she might be even more aggressive and shoot him nonetheless! She might even shoot him one shot at a time and slowly kill him while he had to suffer the slow and agonizing pain before dying!

Should he snatch the gun away? But that was Sun Xin Yu there! The

woman could fight at the same speed as him! By the time Zhang Yang could even get close, he would have gained new holes in his chest or even in between his eyes!

HMMM?!

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought! He remembered watching a very old movie before, and he remembered a scene that he could re-enact to save him!

Zhang Yang put down his hands, stared intensely at Sun Xin Yu, and then screamed from the top of his lungs.

“I LOVE YOU!”

Sun Xin Yu was stunned. The first time in his life, Zhang Yang witnessed the ever so cold Sun Xin Yu expressing an emotion! Her fingers were nowhere close to the trigger!

Alright! This might work!

Zhang Yang forced himself to calm down and treat Sun Xin Yu as a boss in the game to defeat.

First! To lower her defense! 5 stacks of [Cripple Defense]!

“I can no longer lie to myself anymore! Ever since I laid eyes on you, I’ve fallen deeply in love with you!” Zhang Yang said it slowly. He tried his best to construct the sentences properly. He was not good at coaxing a woman to begin with!

Sun Xin Yu remained motionless. But she was still listening.

That’s good! She intends to listen!

If he had heard the sound of a gunshot, even in his ghost form, he would have nowhere to hide!

Alright! Her defense was lowered. Now to implement super skills! Here comes [horizontal sweep] and [destructive smash]!

“Shoot me, if that is what you want! I will not hold a grudge against you! To die in your hands, would be my greatest honor!” Zhang Yang continued

to distract her.

Sun Xin Yu remained silent and ever so stoic. She was only staring at Zhang Yang with her beautiful eyes.

1 minute...2 minutes...8 minutes...9 minutes!?

Zhang Yang was still standing there staring at her motionless. Inside his heart however, he was literally screaming. “Oh my god! Could you please hurry up and make your decision?! Do you want me to die?! Just say the word! God! I’m right here waiting for you making a decision for like forever!”

Finally! Sun Xin Yu lowered the gun and slid the weapon of destruction back into her holster.

She turned and looked back up at Zhang Yang and said, “Alright. From now on, you’re my boyfriend!”

Zhang Yang stunned.

What? Was that all? He still had a few more tricks up his sleeves! Could it be that he has become a novel’s main character? To become the center of a mass harem with a thousand woman groveling beneath his feet wearing a full western suit, after just showing off some awesome move or something?

Sun Xin Yu was still as cool and emotionless even after declaring Zhang Yang as her boyfriend. She said, “There are only very few men that could defeat me! After all, I would need to get married someday! If you think you could stand a chance to prove your worth, I don’t mind giving you a chance!”

Oh, please! You don’t mind? I would mind! Zhang Yang sighed heavily in his heart. “Ahhh! Please forgive me Lin Yu! If I had not lied against her, I would not have the chance to meet you in the future!”

Hmmm...Should he be the first to ask for a “break up”? That would be impossible! Knowing her, Sun Xin Yu would go berserk! It would not be a surprise if she picked up the gun and really shot him this time!

Looked like he would have to wait for Sun Xin Yu to be the one to ask for the break up then! He needed to show that he was no husband material; only a good friend! That way, he could save his own butt and maintain this friendly, super-beneficial relationship with her.

“I’m going to clock out now! Head home by yourself!” Sun Xin Yu said as she turned and headed to the changing room.

Zhang Yang breathed a sigh of relief and went to his own changing room. Only then had he found out that he was completely drenched in sweat, with his uniform plastered to his back! He thought back to how Sun Xin Yu looked like when she was all Wonder Woman style, ready to kill him anytime. A cold shiver ran down his spine! Damn! That Ice Queen is just too crazy!

After changing back into his own clothes, Zhang Yang walked home. Along the way, he was lost in his thoughts. No matter how long he thought about it, he could not think straight. He just did not know what to do next!

“Argh. F*ck it. I’ll cross that bridge when I come to it. That ice head couldn’t come over to my house and point a gun at my head to force me have sex with her!” Zhang Yang then lied down on his sofa and put on the gaming helmet, logging into the game.

“Little Yang! What took you so long?” Fatty Han immediately sent a private message. “Did you have a “fun” night? Hehehehe...”

“Fun, my ass!” Zhang Yang replied.

“Oh right! I have bad news!” Fatty Han cried. “Imperial Sky has already defeated the 4th boss in the Castle Interior dungeon!”

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyebrows. “That quick?!”

“Yeah!” said Fatty Han worriedly. “I’m afraid that they might conquer the entire dungeon before we could even start! They might get their hands on the ‘First Clear’ Achievement!”

Zhang Yang laughed it off. “Keep calm! It’s alright! It’s alright!”

Even though he said that, after dinner, Zhang Yang logged on to the official forum to speculate other players' responds.

This time, player "Martian Homeland" praised the guys from Imperial Sky. He had even said that the player, One Sword Stroke, might be by far, the only player that could rival the current highest popularity player, Zhan Yu! One Sword Stroke could even have the potential to exceed Zhan Yu!

So far, the other super guilds were still struggling at the 3rd boss, yet Imperial Sky had already defeated the 4th boss with One Sword Stroke's leadership. Their guild firmly grasped the advantage in obtaining the "First Clear" Achievement!

The forum discussion gained the support and agreement from many players! The rest that were fans of Lone Desert Smoke did not join the discussion since Zhang Yang and his team had long since took part of the dungeon raiding. They only left a comment, saying things like, "Just wait and see."

7:30pm, Zhang Yang logged into the game and gathered Han Ying Xue and the gang, and started to raid the Castle Interior.

Sun Xin Yu was still cold as ever. She did not even express any sign of being friendlier to Zhang Yang after the "declaration". Sometimes, when Zhang Yang was not thinking straight, he thought about the events that transpired earlier this morning as if it was just a bad dream.

'Ding! You have entered Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Hardcore)!'

The party entered the dungeon through the main gate and entered the castle of the werewolf.

As they went through the gates, they were greeted with a large hall. The setting was nightfall; hundreds of men and women were dressed extravagantly, happily dancing around to the romantic music that filled the air. There was a group of 10 in the room too, and standing at the corner of the stairs at the second floor was a slim, slender, and beautiful noble female. She had one slender fair hand grasping the railing of the stairs and one other holding a wine glass.

This noble was the same person that Zhang Yang fought in the Garden area of the dungeon. She was Jenny, Master Waller's wife! This time, she was not some random monster, but Gray-Silver tier boss!

[Jenny, Master Waller's Wife] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid Monster)

Level: 44

HP: 1,200,000

The party could not start the boss without clearing the minions first beforehand.

[Crazed Guests] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 41

HP: 82,000

"Those who have their aura skill, please activate them now! Every time you log in or log off, the system automatically switches it off. Make it a habit to always turn on your aura skill every time you log into the game!" said Zhang Yang.

"Oh crap! I really forgot to switch on my aura!" Wei Yan Er cried, turning her [strength aura] on only after Zhang Yang notified.

The party had a total of 5 different aura carriers. Since Hundred Shots and Fatty Han's [companion aura] was the same, the effects would not stack up and would only be treated as one active aura effect.

[strength aura], [vitality aura], [companion aura], and [life aura]. Everyone received 4 beneficial aura effects each.

"Starlight! Start the fight!" Zhang Yang called out.

Chapter 165: The First Boss, Jenny

Endless Starlight immediately casted [shield toss] and lured 3 elite monsters in a go. With a sudden roar, the bunch of 11 monsters all came running towards him while screaming things like, “Unwelcome guest! Begone!”

[divide shield]!

[devotion]!

[strong hammer]!

He immediately pulled their aggro.

The rest of the team waited for a little while before they joined the fight as well, casting their AoE skills.

Zhang Yang did not join the fight. He went on forward and walked to the second group of monsters. They growled immediately when triggered and rushed towards him.

[blood rage]! +30 Rage!

Just as Zhang Yang was going to start fight, he withdrew immediately, but after managing to only take 4 paces back, the monsters already appeared right in front of him.

Swoosh!

[horizontal sweep]!

In an instant, most of the monsters received a huge damage of more than 1,500! The utilization of the AoE skill was maximized during this kind of situations!

Wham!

[thunder strike]!

Multiple damage texts popped out again! This time, Zhang Yang only inflicted around 200+ to each of them but more importantly, they were all inflicted with slow. Zhang Yang kited the monsters and fell back to join

Endless Starlight. He kited the monsters to group them together with Endless Starlight's. With that many monsters around, everyone's AoE skill could damage the monsters as well, maximizing both the time and skill used.

By the system's logic, if there were many monsters in a dungeon, each monster's attack power must be weakened down. If it was not, no tank could take the amount of damage received after kiting them all together. These monsters here must only have around 800 attack power. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had only received less than 300 damage so far; easy enough for Han Ying Xue to heal them back to full health in a short amount of time.

Right then, Zhang Yang had already possessed the skill called [blast wave], he could stun every monster in his vicinity for 4 seconds after every 20 seconds! OP as f*ck!

The party's attack power was already strong to begin with, and after adding the few more aura effects, the killing speed was raised to a whole new level. In just a minute, the first group of monsters was already taken down, and the second group of monsters had only one third of their original HP remaining!

"Starlight! Get the next group of monsters!" Zhang Yang ordered. As the second group of monsters locked their vision on Zhang Yang alone, Endless Starlight could easily end the fight without pulling any monster towards him.

When Endless Starlight brought in the third group of monsters, the second group had already fallen. Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attackers did not even have time to rest. The next wave of monsters arrived and they continued slashing and blasting.

Zhang Yang only smiled lightly, feeling satisfied at the team's attacking progress. He then proceeded on to pull the fourth group of monsters.

"WOOHOO! This is awesome!" Wei Yan Er happily squealed as she blasted away the monsters with her [tornado cleave]. She could deal at least 1,900 damage to every monster around on each cast, with only 5.5

seconds of cooldown. Her attack had already long surpassed Zhang Yang's and was so strong, that Endless Starlight had difficulties properly holding on the aggro of every single monster. Some monsters were even OT and nearly got close to Wei Yan Er to attack her.

Luckily, Zhang Yang was fast enough to pull the monster back to his attention. After a few hits of [horizontal sweep] and [thunder strike], almost every single monster turned their attention to him.

"What are you doing!? Are you trying to tire me to death?!" Han Ying Xue cried.

An attacker could stop to have a rest for a while to catch their breath, but a healer does not even have time to wipe the sweat from their brow. If the healer lags even by just a bit, the tanks could die! Both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had been taking turns in pulling more and more monsters that Han Ying Xue had no time to catch her breath; it felt that she could throw a fit at any time out of frustration!

Zhang Yang saw how frustrated she was and only laughed. "It's not like your MP's dropping. Why would you need to rest? It's only a waste of time!"

"GRAAAH! Damn you!" It was not like she could just ignore her team mate and just rest on one side. She had to just suck it up and continue to heal!

Group by group, the monsters were being kited to the party by both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. The party was progressing so fast that neither of them had the time to even pick up the spoils of war.

Daffodil Daydream did not receive the "75% mana reduction" passive skill, but instead obtaining a "15% increase in all flame attacks" passive skill from the Level 30 class quest reward after she cleared the A-level difficulty quest. If she had completed the S-level difficulty instead, she could have obtained 20% bonus passive.

It was all fun when a Pyromancer blasts away the monsters, waves after waves, until their mana runs out, that is. She could at most, last for 2 waves before running out from the battle and eating mana regenerating

snacks to recover her MP!

The team was strong and fast, having taken only 10 minutes or so to clear hundreds of monsters in this majestic hall. The entire floor was filled with coins, random ETC1 items, and equipment. It took another 3 whole minutes just to sift through everything!

“How do we fight this boss?” asked Wei Yan Er. After looting all the items, the bodies of the monster disappeared from the hall, leaving it clear and barren.

“The boss has 3 skills!” Zhang Yang had already taken step to recall the battle strategy. He wrote them down in a little notebook. “Number 1, she would choose a random player and put them in some sort of a prison for around 5, or 6 seconds, I guess. In this period, the imprisoned would lose HP. That person can’t cast any skills or take any potions. Only a healer could heal the HP lost. That is why this dungeon is supposed to have 2 healers. If one is imprisoned, the one healer would help the tank while the other would heal the person being imprisoned!”

Han Ying Xue cried out. “Hey... dummy... please add one more healer to the party! I can’t endure this much healing alone! I’m so freaking tired!”

“Fine. As long as I can find one suitable for our party, I will add a healer in!” Zhang Yang replied, as if he did not mean it.

Wei Yan Er then pointed out a flaw of having just one healer in the party. “What if she was sent to prison? She can’t heal herself!”

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, “I have [vanguard's aggression] and [sacrifice] to cover her. But if that sorry b*tch had to just be picked twice, then, I have nothing to say. We might just have plain bad luck!”

“Hmph! What else?” asked Wei Yan Er.

“The second skill is like the boss’s sister; to randomly pick and control a player. I think the skill can’t be purged. It would only expire after a fixed duration.”

“The third?”

“The third skill is berserk! Well, technically is a kind of passive berserk. It will add 10% attack damage per second. It will stack endlessly and can only be dispelled by dragging the boss to an ice spot that will spawn when the battle starts!”

Zhang Yang concluded his explanation. “Well, all in all, it’s pretty easy to fight!”

“Shall we start?” Zhang Yang signaled Hundred Shots. “Hundred Shots, attack the boss for a second. Drag her down here. The ice platform will not spawn up there!”

“Alright!” Hundred Shots aimed his arrow at the boss and let it fly towards her.

Pew!

“Huh! What sort of wild, uncivilized bastard dares to infiltrate my banquet!?” Jenny was furious and stomped down the stairs. She had Hundred Shots in her sight and took out a long black whip from god-knows-where and whipped him.

[blood rage]! [charge]!

Zhang Yang raised his sword and slashed the boss.

‘-613!’

‘-1,540!’

‘-1,429!’

Zhang Yang quickly built up the aggro and inflicted [Cripple Defense] on the boss to reduce her defense by 50%.

Jenny then turned her sight at Zhang Yang and attacked him with her whip. “I’ve spent so much time and effort to decorate this hall for the banquet, and you just barged in here and killed all my guests? You ruined my banquet! I will kill you all! I will kill all you savages!”

[block]! +30 Rage.

‘-321!’ [block] Reflect damage.

‘-642!’ [shield bash].

In just 2 seconds, the boss attacked Zhang Yang again. This time, he had no [block] to use and had to receive the attack head on.

‘-2,112!’

“Hm. Not that bad. The boss only has around 3,000 attack damage!” Zhang Yang attacked the boss while talking to Han Ying Xue. “Hey! When the boss picks someone, I want you to only heal the person. I think I can hold on for at least 5 seconds!”

“Daffodil Daydream! Accept the lightning punishment!” The boss cried out and light slid through the floor. Daffodil was then immediately teleported to the entrance and was encased in a large light barrier. Inside the barrier, lightning struck her endlessly.

‘Ding! Jenny has casted [lightning prison]. Receive 2,000 Natural damage every 2 seconds for 6 seconds!’

‘-2,000!’

Zap!

With her naturally low HP of only 3,840, she would die by just under two strikes!

Han Ying Xue quickly casted [holy shield] first and then [brilliant light], lastly following up with [healing bond]. After healing over 4,000 HP, she quickly cast [regeneration] and left her there.

[holy shield] alone was enough to absorb at least 2,000 damage. Zhang Yang used [block] once and within 6 seconds, he had only lost 2,000 damage. To him, that was a mere pinch when he had over 7,000 maximum HP.

90%!

“You defiled me! A noble! A true noble! For that, you will have to pay the price for your sins!”

Jenny growled loudly and her entire body started to expand, instantly turning from a beautiful noble woman into a beastly silver brown

werewolf!

‘Ding! Jenny has cast [werewolf awake]. Increases 10% attack every second!’

Zhang Yang quickly scanned the hall room and found the ice platform. He then kited the big bad wolf towards it.

10%... 20%... 30%... as each second past, the boss gained increased attack. If Zhang Yang had not used [block] against the attack, he would have received increased damage from 2,000, 3,000... to even 4,000!

Luckily, the ice platform was not far from he was. When the boss gained over 8 stacks of the buff, Zhang Yang managed to drag her hairy butt to the icy platform.

‘Ding! [werewolf awake] had ended and will disappear!’

The boss lost her werewolf form and slowly returned to her human form. Although she may have restored her human self, her clothes did not. Pieces of torn clothing were just dangling on her body, with only a tiny bit of cloth coincidentally covering the private parts of her body, exposing a large amount of skin to the public.

“WOOHOO!! SO BIG!”

“SO FAIR!”

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight eyes glinted with a perverted shine, drooling as they speak.

“This is the true [cripple defense!] ”

“Fatty bro! That must at least be a 34D no?!”

“You bet it is!”

“ARGHHH. I wanna touch them so bad!”

“ ... ”

“Both of you...can just die off!” Han Ying Xue scoffed.

“Endless Starlight! You shall be my slave! Serve me as your one true master!” Jenny pulled out a long bow, again from god-knows-where, and

shot an arrow towards Endless Starlight.

‘Ding! Player Endless Starlight had received the effect [soul temptation]!’

“For my master!” Starlight cried and dashed towards Fatty Han. He raised his hammer and slammed Fatty Han.

“F*ck you! Why would you choose me! There’s so many others for you to choose from! Bastard!” cried Fatty Han.

“HAHHAAHAHHAHA” Wei Yan Er had to rubbed her belly as she laughed uncontrollably.

“That’s what you get for being a perverted dog!”

Chapter 166: Frivolous Maid

[breaking shot]!

Hunter Shots aimed his bow and shot an arrow towards Endless Starlight, sending him into a [dazed] state. Endless Starlight was sent spinning, turning his head around like he was completely drunk.

Fatty Han immediately created a distance between Endless Starlight and himself. When Endless Starlight recovered from the daze, Fatty Han fired a [concussion shot] and slowed him down for 4 seconds. Hundred Shots also fired a [concussion shot] after the slow duration ended. After 3 status impairing skills were fired, the “slave” effect on Endless Starlight expired and he regained control of his own character.

The party then refocused their efforts on taking down the boss.

As the first boss in the Castle Interior, Jenny was not hard to defeat. As long as that party could dispel the [werewolf awake] on her and properly tend to the player who got sent into the lightning prison, the team would do just fine! However, that was if everything panned out well. This is because Zhang Yang’s current team had one flaw; and that was the fact that they had only one healer!

The boss had finally caught Han Ying Xue when she cast the [lightning prison] for the fourth time.

Zhang Yang reacted promptly and cast [sacrifice] to protect her. He also activated the [Servant] skill [substitute]. When the lightning struck Han Ying Xue, both Zhang Yang and her had system notifications popping up all over their heads.

Averted! Averted! Averted!

Immune! Immune! Immune!

6 seconds passed by and Han Ying Xue returned to the party. They had literally averted a disaster.

80%, 70%, 60%...

Under the massive firepower of the party, the boss's HP was akin to tofu; brittle and fragile, easily crushable. The team defeated her in under 4 minutes.

"This seems easy!" Daffodil cried out as she stretched her hand upwards and relaxed. However, even though she said that, she understood that the team's victory lay in the core structure of the party, the members of the party! If they had a slightly weaker tank in place of Zhang Yang, who possibly could not kite the boss to the ice platform to dispel the [werewolf awake], they would have been completely devoured by the boss!

That was why a strong tank represents the soul, the brains, and the power of the party! Zhang Yang's role as a core member of it signified a strong pillar that held the entire party together!

"Woohoo! Time for the loots!" Wei Yan Er bent over and picked up the boss drops. Everyone was rather unexcited about the loot since they had just defeated a Yellow-Gold tier boss not too long ago. This was merely a Gray-Silver tier one, and they now consider its drops to be trash.

[Blood-soaked Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +96

Strength: +16

Dexterity: +48

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

Three people rolled for the leather armor but Hundred Shots beat his other two competitors to it.

Wei Yan Er picked two more items up but discovered that they were only of Green-Copper tier. She could not help but stuck her tongue out and blow raspberries at the boss' dead corpse. "Bleh! Stingy prick!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Hey, you can't just accuse the boss of being stingy! I've told you before. All future dungeons would never contain

anything valuable!”

“Huh? Why not?”

“Are you dumb?” Zhang Yang face-palmed, causing Wei Yan Er to be rather unhappy with his reaction. She pushed her fist up into the air and gestured it at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang laughed it off and decided to explain to the little dumb brat. “Try and think about it for a second. If dungeons were always around for players to farm for strong equipment whenever they have reached the required levels and are ready to defeat the bosses in there, who would defeat a field boss then?”

“B-But! A Hardcore Mode dungeon is tough dude!” said Wei Yan Er as she tried to justify her words.

“According to the developers of the game, a Normal Mode dungeon will be easy enough to allow any random party to clear it. As for Hard Mode, only 10% of players around would be able to defeat it. Now, that was just a rough idea on the massive scale. For Hardcore Mode, only 1% of players in the game could try and attempt to defeat the dungeon!”

“With that in mind, stay with me for a while here. How many players do you think are playing this game? There are at least 50,000,000 players in the game right now! What is 1% of 50,000,000 players? 500,000 I reckon!”

“Now, put that in scale and think of what would happen if the Hardcore Mode was cleared by those players 500,000 times! Now, think of how many field bosses there are in the entire game? 50? 100?”

“Even if you flip the entire world over and searched the high heavens or the scorching hells, you could probably find no more than 200! A field boss’ drops are much more precious and valuable than the measly Hardcore dungeon bosses’ drops! Naturally, they would not be easy to defeat. Why do you think the developers would even bother creating those bosses out there for? Decoration?”

Wei Yan Er scratched her head and widened her eyes as she stared at Zhang Yang as if she was still confused about what Zhang Yang had just said. “So... erm... do we skip dungeons now?”

Zhang Yang cringed so hard until he was about to burst a vein in his forehead. He sighed heavily and cried out, "Which house is missing a stupid kid? Please take her home!"

Wei Yan Er was angered and drew her weapon. "Noob tank! Keep calling me stupid and I'll really slam your face in!"

"Little brat! It was you who started complaining about how stingy the boss was didn't you?!" Zhang Yang started to laughed instead. "A dungeon boss would only get stingier and stingier. Furthermore, the equipment grade would always be one level lower than those you could farm from a field boss! That is the importance of a field boss! In the far future when we would need to fight a world boss, it would take an entire guild of thousands of players to fight for god-knows seven days and seven nights to defeat it. Do you think that a regular Hardcore boss could be that tough?"

"Nyeh!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue.

"You..." Zhang Yang face-palmed again.

"You still don't understand, do you?"

"Nyehehehehe!" Wei Yan Er nodded her head honestly.

"Zhan Yu, now that you have explained it as such, then what meaning is there in us clearing the dungeon then?" Hundred Shots was not stupid but since Zhang Yang had explained something simple with such complexity, he too, began to feel confused.

"Hm... to fill in the blanks for the field boss." Zhang Yang explained. "I had explained that earlier. A field boss of the same level would be extremely scarce. So scarce that if we were to share the boss to everyone in the game, it would be less than one boss for every 1,000,000 players! It's even likely that I have made a rather relaxed estimation! According to that logic, players would not have bosses to kill and thus, would not have good equipment, would they? That is what the dungeons are for! With three different types of difficulties, there would eventually be one that is suitable for you to raid!"

“That would only mean that the field bosses’ equipment is the best!” asked Daffodil Daydream.

“Oh my God! My sweet Lord! Baby Jesus! You must have hung out with the little dumb brat for far too long! Now you have contracted her dumb disease as well? I had literally explained twice! God! My saliva is about to dry out!” Zhang Yang was seriously vexed that he could burst his bulging nerve on his forehead!

“Noob tank!” Wei Yan Er jumped to her feet and stomped towards Zhang Yang. Being shorter than he was, she could only point her tiny finger to his chin. “You are not allowed to call me stupid! Hmph! I’m breaking up with you!”

“Breaking up? Who said we were friends to begin with!?”

“What!?”

“Hahaha!” Zhang Yang laughed. He had fun toying with the little girl and felt really comfortable with her.

“Let’s go! Move on! Move on!” Zhang Yang led them further in.

As the party marched towards the second floor, they reached a junction that split into two paths. These paths had monsters with a rather lustful and seductive posture. There were at least a pair of these monsters at every ten meters or so. They were wearing colorful costumes and low cut tops which revealed luxuriously ample amounts of those mouthwatering watermelons! And those cleavages were so deep that they caused all women to feel envy.

Gulp Endless Starlight swallowed his saliva heartily. “Damn. I could not bear to swing my hammer at those babies!”

“Where to?”

“It’s the same. Both ways would lead straight to the opposite end of the castle where the second boss would be, standing guard to the entrance of the third floor!” Zhang Yang thought a little and commanded Endless Starlight to attack, “Starlight! Go and start the fight!”

Endless Starlight hummed and rushed towards the monster, wielding the hammer in his hand. From a distance, he threw his shield and struck only two monsters, since the third one was too far away for the shield to bounce to.

[Frivolous Maid] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 43

HP: 86,000

MP: 43,000

“Aiya! There’s a guest here!” Both of the maids smiled lustfully and locked onto Endless Starlight to cast [Fire Ball].

“Ahh~ Respectful guest! You don’t have to reserve yourself. Please be rough on me! Ah~ Please use me to your liking!”

“F*ck!” Endless Starlight was so shocked at her opening speech that he nearly slipped and fell over.

“-1128!”

“-1243!”

Two [Fire Ball] s flew over and blasted Endless Starlight.

“Aiya~ The time for fun was just too short!” said one of the maid.

“Hmm~ After sleeping with my man last night, I had to slip out of bed to find 3 more guards to entertain me! Only then was I satisfied enough that I could finally sleep!”

“Holy sh*t! This is just too provoking!” Fatty Han was stunned as well.

“Shameless creatures!” Wei Yan Er mumbled.

“Ah~ What’s the hurry! Sigh... People come and go in a flash! How do I fill this empty hole!”

“Hmm~ Beloved guest! Why won’t you stop to have some fun with us!”

Both maids were repeatedly trying to ‘flirt’ with Endless Starlight.

When he could no longer hold it in, Endless Starlight finally burst. “F*ck!

Don't toy with me! My will is as strong as steel! There is no such thing as riding the tricycle! It's fake, it not real, it can never happen!" said Endless Starlight as he wiped away his stream of drool.

This Frivolous Maid had the skill, [mesmerize], that could cause players to be [dazed]. Once the player was rendered immobile, the monster would cast powerful [Fire Ball] s that could deal immense damage of around 3,000. If two of the monsters attacked simultaneously, they could instantly take out any non-tank class player.

The party then quickly killed one of the monsters first before taking on the other one with relative ease.

While attacking magic-type monsters without strong damage reduction armor, to kill a large group of them simultaneously would be impractical. The party could only proceed on by killing two at a time. After 20 minutes into the floor, the party arrived at the second boss. Endless Starlight was pretty much flushed with embarrassment after being the target of 'flirting' by the monsters. After being interrogated by Fatty Han, he discovered that this ultimate pervert was still a cheery boy!

By the looks of his appearance, the second boss, Lanier was a middle-aged man with a graceful yet stoic appearance. He was rather handsome as he possessed a kind of mysterious attraction that was compelling like Korean pop stars. However, both of his legs were chained with heavy steel, limiting his position to center around the staircase.

[Lanier] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 45

HP: 1,300,000

Note: He belongs to the Vampire race. He was defeated by Master Waller and kept as a slave to serve him as a guard for the castle. Being enslaved caused him to burn with a raging hatred and desire to shred any intruder at will!

"Ooooh! Vampires are so handsome!" Daffodil Daydream had been enticed by his handsome complexion.

“Hm. Indeed!” Han Ying Xue took part as well. “Especially the nose! It makes him look quite handsome!”

“Hey! Are you here to fight the boss or to participate in [China's Next Top Male Model]?”

“Hey! At least let us savor the looks of a handsome man!”

Fatty Han scoffed, unsatisfied. “You have 4 handsome men here in the party! Why would you grasp for more lemons when you can’t hold any more?”

“Damn you, Fatty!”

Poor Fatty Han was bombarded with insults and scorn from the ladies.

Ahem Zhang Yang coughed loudly to get the party’s attention and begun to explain the battle plan.

“Listen up! This boss is practically a free service as well. The main skills are, number one, [infection]. It will cause a player to temporary turn into a vampire that he could control. The way to counter this is extremely easy. Priests and Knights could use [dispel] to remove the debuff!”

“The second skill! About every half a minute, the boss would use a kind of lifesteal skill to suck the blood of a random player. Before he activates the skill, he would place a mark on the target and will only activate the skill after five seconds! This skill would drain the player’s HP by 10% every second and recover the same amount of HP on the boss! It lasts for 5 seconds!”

“Next, it becomes a little complicated, so please bear with me for a while. If a player has around 40% HP left, the boss would only take away 4% of your HP and heal the same amount each instance. The second instance would only take away 3.6% HP. So, the lesser your HP, the lesser he heals!”

“So, to counter this skill, we must take away as much HP as we can before the boss can siphon from us!”

Chapter 167: Lanier the Vampire

“Here we go!”

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and raised his sword to charge towards Lanier

“Huh?! Intruder! Hahaha! What a coincidence! With you guys around, I can kill some time!” cried Lanier. He stood up and dashed towards Zhang Yang.

[charge]!

“-613!”

Zhang Yang slashed the boss and quickly activated [block] to negate the incoming attack.

[crippled defense]! [crippled defense]! [crippled defense]!

Facing boss fights, Zhang Yang would always prioritize inflicting [Cripple Defense] for 5 layers before other skills.

Sun Xin Yu moved in the shadows and appeared behind the boss, slicing and dicing his back, inflicting incredible amount of damage.

Just then, Zhang Yang had recalled that he had no engaged in any conversation with his “girlfriend” from when he had logged in. He thought about what to say to her for a while and sent a private message. “Hey...”

“Pull the monster properly!” Sun Xin Yu replied him instantly.

Without a gun pointing at him, Zhang Yang felt more relaxed talking to her. “Sigh...having a relationship an iceberg is quite stressful for me!”

“You don’t have to sugar coat everything you say, nor talking in metaphorical! I hate that kind of man! You don’t have to spend your time trying to make me fall in love with you! If I love you, I would love you! If I hate you! I would ignore you even if you would give me the moon!”

Bold!

Zhang Yang laughed, “In that case, should we just remain the same as

ever?”

“What more do you want then?”

It’s not what I want, it’s what you would want!

Zhang Yang said to himself quietly. If she had heard him saying this to her, she might really go berserk again and might even break into his house and kill him!

“Daffodil Daydream! I present you the gift of my blood! Joined me as the majestic vampire!” Lanier pointed at Daffodil Daydream and her body gives off a bloody-red glow that dimmed back into her body.

Daffodil was frozen at her place and when she stood back upright, her eyes opened, revealing bloodshot eyes. A pair of sharp fangs appeared baring from her mouth. All ten of her fingers started to grow long and razor sharp nails. Her fair skin had turned into a pale-white color, morphing her into a beautiful monster.

‘Ding! Player Daffodil Daydream had received the effect [blood transformation]!’

“Wooow! How cool!” Wei Yan Er cried with admiration. “Sister Daffodil, you looked so much better like that!”

However, being controlled by the boss, Daffodil Daydream could not respond to Wei Yan Er. After a loud and long howl to the sky, she jumped towards Endless Starlight with such speed that he could not even react in time.

Fatty Han laughed. “Hah! What a small world, Daffodil Daydream targeted Starlight first when she turned into a monster. Here, I wonder if she was intentionally trying to attack him!”

Endless Starlight quickly cast a purging skill and restore Daffodil back to normal.

88%!

Lanier turned around and pointed his fingers at Wei Yan Er. “Weakling Humans! Surrender and be my nourishment!”

A glowing, circular red orb floated on top of Wei Yan Er.

‘Ding! Lanier has used [preparation]!’

“Melee fighters! Hit the little brat! Stop when you’re about to reach 10%! Do not kill her off!” Zhang Yang screamed.

Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight immediately shifted their head and ran towards Wei Yan Er to attack.

“Hey! Lighter! A little lighter!” screamed Wei Yan Er as she could not do anything to stop them.

Sun Xin Yu did not reserved any Stamina and most of her skills were in cool down. In 5 seconds, she had only manage to deal around 2500 damage on Wei Yan Er. Endless Starlight on the other had could only deal over 1000 damage. Wei Yan Er had only 900 HP left which was 20% of her total HP.

Zhang Yang saw what had happened and immediately cast [force strike].

“-1566!”

Crap. What luck, it was a critical strike that had completely killed the poor little girl.

“ARGGGGH!!” Wei Yan Er was infuriated. “Noob tank! Why would you do that for!?”

Zhang Yang grinned and said, “Sorry! Sorry! It’s not my fault you know! I can’t control a critical strike!”

“I don’t care! Hmph! Tonight, I’m going to write your name into the paper!” babbled the little girl angrily.

“Ow please. You’re still as young as a green horn. Romance is still something when only you’re mature enough!”

“Bleh!” Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out.

“You think that I’m writing a love letter? Hell no! I’m writing your name on the paper and hang it on the origami paperman and curse you every day!”

Zhang Yang hold in his laughter and turned over to Han Ying Xue. “Did she pick something up from the television drama or something?”

“Yeah, she did. It was called “A date with a Magik”!”

“PFFTTT BUAHAHAHA” Zhang Yang laughed louder.

Killing Wei Yan Er was an accident, but Zhang Yang was able to stop the boss skill from activating in the end. It was considered to be an accidental skill stopping method!

Now that the team had lose a high attacking member, the team overall DPS was still strong as ever and quickly took away 11% of the boss HP.

“Endless Starlight! You shall be my nourishment!” Lanier pointed at Endless Starlight.

“Everyone hit Starlight! Stop when his HP is at 30%! Let Frost Night to deal the rest!” Zhang Yang changed his strategy.

Bam! Bam! Boom! Boom!

Even though Endless Starlight had a thick skin, he could not counter any of his team mates attack and had his HP dropped down quickly. His HP was dropped down to only 24% and everyone else stopped besides Sun Xin Yu continued to attack.

Since her class was using dagger, her attack specialty was fast attacking interval with low damage. She would not kill Endless Night in a blast even if one of her attack was a critical hit

8%, Endless Starlight had only 472 HP left when Sun Xin Yu had stopped attacking.

“Hahaha! Weak beings! Just you wait, when I had my nourishment and healed my vitality! I shall kill you all with my strength!” Lanier pounce towards Endless Starlight and sank his fangs into his neck.

‘Ding! Lanier has used [feeding]!’

“Eww! That’s just too erotically violent!” Fatty Han mumbled.

“+2600!”

The boss had gained a recovery effect. Even though it seems rather much, but the boss had only recovered 0.2%! Since the boss had only drained 0.8% of Endless Starlight HP, along with Zhang Yang [destructive smash] effect, the boss healing was reduced by 75%!

“+2340!”

Another healing text ticked at the boss.

“+2106!”

“+1895!”

“+1705!”

Along the Endless Starlight HP reduction, the boss recovery rate was also reduced. The total HP that the boss had recovered was only more than 10,000! It was not even worth activating the skill!

After [feeding] had ended, Lanier returned to Zhang Yang and attacked him. The battle rhythm was restored back to normal.

Controlled? Purge.

Blood sucking? Hit the team mate.

When the boss's HP was down to less than 50%, Lanier had not remained as stoic and dignified as how he would describe a vampire would be. Instead, the boss was starting to shriek aloud. His damage was gained a buff.

‘Ding! Lanier had gained [vampirism rage]. All Attack is increased by 20%!’

“Eh? Dummy! Why didn't you say anything about this skill?!” said Han Ying Xue.

Damn you girl! It had been a few years since I last battle this boss! It's already a miracle that I could recall 2 skills! If my memory was that good, I would not have just enrolled in Zhou Su University!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “I'd totally forgotten about that!”

Even though the boss had gained a buff in attack, it was only just a slight

bump of 20%. That amount of damage increase was not even considered a threat to the team since Han Ying Xue's super support was by far the "biggest" in the entire of China! That little "bump" is nothing under Han Ying Xue huge bulking "support".

40%, 30%, 20%, 10%...

Lanier could only hit here and there before being defeated by the party.

Han Ying Xue revived her little cousin sister and the little girl pout her little pink lips and get the loots.

[Arcane Battle Axe] (Gray-Silver, Two handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 699 – 799

Attack Interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 208

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

"WOW! Mine! Mine!" Wei Yan Er was rather pissed off but her anger was quickly dissipated when she saw the shiny axe. She picked the axe up and rubbed the flat shiny surface on her puckish face.

"What a shame though. The attack interval was at 3.5! It's slightly faster!" said Zhang Yang.

"Why don't they standardize a fix attack interval" Wei Yan Er asked Zhang Yang as she had already forgot about being angry at him.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and answered. "I think...this kind attack interval weapon would be dropped by non-important bosses...I think that the strongest boss would drop the strongest weapon! You know? To make a difference! On the other hand, faster attack interval would only increase the trigger rate of the weapon effect! It's one way to reimbursed the lower attack damage of the weapon!"

Just like the first boss Jenny, Lanier had only dropped one piece of Gray-Silver tier equipment and 3 more Green-Copper tier equipment. The party

did not even peek at the weapon properties and toss them all to Zhang Yang to sell it at his Little Merchandize Shop.

“Little Yang, the two boss that we had just defeated was very easy! Why would other guild would need to take 3 days to defeat them?” Fatty Han asked.

To be able to defeat the boss at such speed was not all because of Zhang Yang previous experience in his past life, it was also because of the proper battle tactics! With overwhelming team mates like Zhang Yang tank ability and Han Ying Xue supporting power, the battle was only then rendered to be easy!

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed. “Well. We have out super damager little brat in our party!”

Wei Yan Er immediately praised Zhang Yang while patting her chest proudly. “Hah! Noob tank! I always knew that you’re a bastard. But you’re a bastard with an exceptional eye to see my strength!”

Everyone laughed together.

Following the staircase upward, the party arrived to the 3rd floor. Based on the structure of the castle, every floor was about just the same, hallow in the middle with two pathways splitting the castle into two wings. Both wings were identical with rooms and sliding doors. The only different on every floor was the monster that occupied it.

This floor, there monsters were male human guard dressed in an elegant ceremonial costume. Their age differ from one another. Just like the second floor, there were group in pairs and they were standing in front of the room doors.

[Castle Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 44

HP: 88,000

Shush!

Zhang Yang slide across the floor with [charge] and used [horizontal

sweep] and deal more and 1500 damage to both of the guards.

“Disturbing guests!” Both of the guards cried out and thrust their fist at Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! You have been effected by [uppercut]. Stunned for 5 seconds!’

When the guards had stunned Zhang Yang, they ignored him on one end and aimed at the other party member and attack.

Luckily, Endless Starlight had the skill [justice defense] and temporary take over the tank role for Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er laughed at Zhang Yang, “Tch. Tch. Tch. Noob tank, you’re so incompetent! You can’t even pull monster properly. Aiyoyo~~”

That little brat had just ridiculed Zhang Yang!

Not only the [uppercut] had stunned Zhang Yang, it had also temporary cleared all aggro value on the target! It made group killing to be impossible for them. The party then proceed on forward step by step, one pair of monsters at a time. Luckily, there were two tanks in the party. When one was stunned and “ignored”, the other tank would take over. If Zhang Yang was alone, the rest of the party member would have to rely on status effect skills to survive until Zhang Yang could recover from the stun.

Very soon, the party made their way to the third boss. The boss was a rather well-built and sturdy man. He was the looks of a 30 years old man. A fine, formal, and rather exquisite clothing was worn, sitting on a magnificent chair, the man was drinking from a wine glass.

[Count Demison, Master Walter’s Brother] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 46

HP: 1,400,000

“This boss will be slightly harder!” said Zhang Yang as he cleared his throat.

Hundred Shots scratched his head and said, “I hear that many guilds were stuck here!”

“Little Yang, don’t beat around the bush! Just tell us straight!” said Fatty Han hurriedly. He was trying to push everyone to defeat the Castle Interior dungeon to prove that their guild was the strongest!

“The boss strategy is rather easy. He had two skills. One would be used on the tank, and the other will be a random pick! The one that will be used on the tank is straight forward. It’s just a rather strong damage skill that I will take care of it. As for the other skill, the boss will target two random players and cast some sort of explosive parasite. If the parasite is not killed off in time, then the player would...BOOM! Die. Explode. The damage is 100% percentage of HP so, even if you’re a level 300 player with Celestial tier equipment, you would still die by this skill!”

“Oh! Then it’s simple. When the bug comes out, we should just target the bugs!” said Daffodil confused.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “The bugs would be invisible to others. Only the players that are inflicted with the bugs would be able to see and attack the bugs for 20 seconds! Furthermore, because the bugs are implanted inside the body, the person cannot target and attack the bugs in their own body. Only the other party could attack the bugs on the other player. The explosive bug would incubate for 20 seconds, but HP is 10,000. If the targeted players are attacker class, it would pose much problem. But if the targeted players were healer or tank, then it would be a little troublesome.”

Endless Starlight blinked his eyes rapidly and said, “You consider yourself a low attacking class?”

“Hm! Hm!” the rest of them nodded their head.

Zhang Yang shrugged. He had a few tricks up his sleeves like the [eagle eye] and the [Cripple Defense] that could ignore 50% defense value after 5 stacks. His damage was not at all low!

“Oh! Hold on to the [Beginner Power Potion]. Only use the potion to fight the bug! Remember! When the boss activates the parasite skill, be sure to find your partner and kill the bug on the other person’s body!” said Zhang Yang. “The only obstacle for this boss is the parasite. If we can

overcome this problem, the boss would only be a piece of cake! If any of the bugs exploded, we would not be surviving this round then!”

“Shit! Hey! Kick Starlight out of the party! This guy is the weakest in DPS! Anyone who would be partnering with him would surely die! This guy is the enemy under our nose!” Fatty Han started to make fun of Endless Starlight.

Endless Starlight started to sobbed with tears flowing down his cheek. “Woo...Please Fatty bro! I don’t mean to be that weak!”

“Hey, don’t bully Starlight! He is an honest boy!” said Hundred Shots.

“If he is an honest boy, I am Brad Pit and Zhang Yang is Chuck Norris’s apprentice!”

“Alright! Calm your tits Fatty. I’m starting the fight now! Remember to kill the bugs!” Zhang Yang took out the sword and reminded the party again.

“Yeah! Grandma!” everyone said in unison.

Chapter 168: The Third Boss, Demison

“Look what the cat dragged in! Who are these worms that would intrude my brother’s castle!” said Demison loudly as he stood up. He glanced the party and threw the glass on the floor furiously. “Too bad you’re all just too weak! I would have sent you all to kill my brother! Then I could rule this castle! Oh my! I have slipped it out my little secret! Ho ho ho! Looks like I’ll have to silence you my own way!”

While the boss was giving his opening speech, everyone was stuck in place, unable to do anything until Demison’s speech had ended.

“DIE!” cried Demison as he charged towards the party.

When Zhang Yang regained control of his character, he immediately used [charge] and met Demison’s attack head on.

“-613!” Normal attack.

[Cripple Defense]

“-161!” [Cripple Defense] damage.

Even though the damage Zhang Yang had just caused wasn’t much, it still angered Demison. As a noble race, how could he let anything land an attack on him! The higher a boss level, the better the A.I system control it would be. Demison growled and threw a punch to retaliate.

“-2135!”

Zhang Yang had [block], but he did not use it to negate the boss’ attack! He took the attack head on. This was because he knew that the boss would use a skill that was similar to his own [destructive smash]. Not only would the attack be stronger, it also carried a 50% healing reduction with it. The cool down of the boss’ skill is 8 seconds! He must reserve [block] just for that skill alone! If he mistakenly uses [block] for other attacks instead, he would eventually be inflicted with the healing reduction debuff and Han Ying Xue would not be able to heal him in time!

“Weaklings! Give up already! Surrender to my ultimate power!”

Demison’s right hand glowed bloody-red and he tackled Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Demison used [destructive claw]!’

[block]!

Within a span of a millisecond, Zhang Yang had spontaneously activated [block] and negated the skill. Still, Zhang Yang possessed many other life preserving skills, so in the case where he really took a direct hit or two from the [destructive claw] he would have survived. However, prevention is always better than cure.

Once Zhang Yang had attacked the monster, the party began to lay down hell from above. None of them were worried about getting OT! As long as Zhang Yang was the main tank, all would be well.

Before Demison unleashes the explosive bugs, he was but a sitting rock. Besides hurling “stones” at the tank, the rest of the party members was not majorly affected by the boss. Even Han Ying Xue had a relatively leisure role to play. She only needed to make sure that [regeneration] was always ticking on and throw in the occasional [brilliant light], [higher healing], and other healing spells. She did not even need to use [holy shield] once!

95%, 93%, 90%...

Demison suddenly stopped attacking and raised his left and right hands to point at Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er. “Ah! My children! Explosive Bugs! Time for your meal!”

Shush! Shush!

Two bloody-red hues beamed towards them and entered their bodies.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler had received the effect [explosive bug]!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had received the effect [explosive bug]!’

To the other players, Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er had not experienced any changes. But in their own eyes, they could see a red bug growing from their body! The bug had a tag reading [incubating] and a 20 second countdown timer.

[Explosive Bug] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 46

HP: 10,000

Hundred Shots immediately switched his aim to the bug on Wei Yan Er. He took a [Beginner Power Potion] and activated [beast link], gaining a massive surge of damage power for just a short duration. He shot an arrow and commanded his pet, Storm Wolf to attack together with him. Both the Hunter and his pet shared the same field of vision.

Hundred Shots had completed the level 30 class quest at A level difficulty. The rewards for the class quest was the skill [beast link], which added 75% ranged damage. [Beginner Fire Potion] had provide an extra 20% damage. Both of the bonus damage buffs had turned Hundred Shots into a God Killer for the moment. In just a mere 4 seconds while Wei Yan Er had ran towards him, Hundred Shots had taken away close to 6400 HP of the bug! However, when Wei Yan Er entered beyond his minimum range, he was unable to attack anymore and switched his target back to the boss instead. He let the pet finish the job for him.

These were the perks of a Hunter, or rather, a Beastmaster class! Compared to the other sub class, the Sniper, a Beastmaster had the advantage of having a pet that added DPS. Its attacks were at least 40% of the original attack power of its master! With 16 seconds more for the bug to hatch and explode, Hundred Shots pet had around 400 DPS which was more than enough time to destroy the bug!

Wei Yan Er wielded her axe and continuously slashed at Hundred Shots' chest, dealing a continuous chain of attacks at 1,300+ each. She managed to kill the bug in just 11 seconds! Within that time, Hundred Shots pet had also managed to kill off the bug on Wei Yan Er.

First round's bug removal success.

Half a minute later, Demison HP had dropped by another 10% and triggered the second round of the explosive bugs.

'Ding! Player Endless Starlight had received the effect [explosive bug]!'

'Ding! Player Little Snow had received the effect [explosive bug]!'

This was just the worst of luck; the boss would actually pick the lowest

DPS among the entire party!

Han Ying Xue quickly consumed a bottle of [Beginner Power Potion].

[Punishment Ray]: Deals 150% Holy damage to a target.

Casting time: 2 seconds.

“-1815!”

Han Ying Xue originally had over then 1000 damage, but with a 20% damage boost from the potion, and the high attack damage from [Punishment Ray], she could easily destroy the bug under 20 seconds.

After just two shots of [Punishment Ray], Endless Starlight had reached Han Ying Xue. He knew that he had low damaging power, which was why he had reserved his long cooldown skills for situations like these, since his attacks would not cause any considerate damage to the boss.

“-223!” [shield toss]

“-721!” [strong hammer].

“-216!” [commanding seal].

“-725!” Normal attack.

“-216!” [commanding seal].

“-446!” [justice bash].

“-1081!” [judgement].

The defender's strongest advantage over the guardian was that all skills depended on MP; meaning that a Defender would be able to unleash all his skills as long as he had enough MP! However, once he has used up all his skills, there is the matter of the skill's cooldown! Just like any main character in any anime out there, once all skills have been thrown out, he would be in a weakened state soon after. A Defender would have to wait for his skill to finish its cool down!

Luckily, the Explosive Bug had 0 Defense and Magic Defense, which was why any job could deal damage at their maximum potential!

The most awkward situation for a Defender was MP problem. A

Defender's equipment was mostly just had a little Intelligence bonus, causing their MP to be only just a little. Once all their skills were used, only just one round, all their MP would be drained completely!

This class could recover MP by depending on their skill [divine shield]. [divine shield] works by absorbing damage and recovers 10% MP. Defender had another skill called [grace] to recover MP based on HP healed. This allows Defenders to continue their fight in a battle.

However, since Explosive Bugs are just a sitting duck, it would only take attack without returning any damage! When facing an enemy that would not return attack Defender would not be able to recover their MP! Since the monster would not attack him, [divine shield] would not be in effect. And since he had not lost any HP, [grace] would not be in effect since he would not be receiving any heals!

Once Endless Starlight had used all his skills, he was then faced with a huge problem. He had only left 1/3 of his MP left!

Luckily, he wielded a Level 40 Gray-Silver weapon, dishing out rather high normal attacks. Every time he attacked, he would inflict an additional 30% Holy damage! His DPS was at least around 340. However, to be able to kill of 10,000 HP in 16 seconds was another question!

In just 12 seconds, Han Ying Xue was able destroy the Explosive bug on Endless Starlight! However, the Explosive Bug on her own body was still alive! It had 3,500 HP left!

"Starlight! What are you doing! Kill it already!" Han Ying Xue cried out in concern.

"What's the situation?! Have you managed to kill the bugs?" asked Zhang Yang. While Han Ying Xue was preoccupied with killing the bugs, Zhang Yang had summoned [merlinda's shadow] to heal him instead.

"The bug on Endless Starlight has been destroyed! But the one on me is still here!" Han Ying Xue knew that it would not help if she got all worked up about it. In the meantime, she turned around and healed Zhang Yang, if Endless Starlight failed to destroy the bug on her, she could still contribute a little more to the party before she dies.

Endless Starlight was even more nervous than she was! The effect of the [Beginner Power Potion] was ending soon, by then, his attacks would be reduced drastically, which would make things even harder to kill!

Zhang Yang immediately noticed Endless Starlight's MP status and barked out orders. "Hundred Shots, hit Starlight! Bitchy Snow, heal him as he goes!"

Hundred Shots had no idea what Zhang Yang was planning, but his faith towards him was enough to make him obey the order without hesitation. He immediately enabled "friendly fire" and attacked Endless Starlight.

Shiiing!

Han Ying Xue healed Endless Starlight back to full health after he was damaged by Hundred Shots. With [grace] finally in effect, Endless Starlight had recovered more than 80 MP!

Just like a famished man who was given a warm meal, Endless Starlight smiled widely and cried, "Thanks guys! I really needed the help!"

Wham!

He cast more skills on the bug. Hundred Shots continued to attack Endless Starlight while Han Ying Xue continued to heal him, giving him the opportunity to recover as much MP as he needed.

Wham! Bam!

Endless Starlight spent all his freshly regained MP into attacking the Explosive Bug!

16 seconds, 17 seconds, 18 seconds, 19 seconds!

3000! 2000! 1000! 0!

Endless Starlight managed to kill the bug in the nick of time!

"Oh yeah! Oh yeah! I did it! Did you see that! I did it!" Jumping with immense excitement, Endless Starlight was screaming in celebration as he had "survived" the mental ordeal. The excitement was perhaps even more than actually defeating a boss!

“Haha! Good job!” Zhang Yang laughed. “Since the two lowest damage-dealers in our party could defeat the bugs, I would safely say that this boss is going to be a piece of cake!”

Chapter 169: Rather Spirited Momentum

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has received the effect [explosive bug]!’

‘Ding! Player Frost Night has received the effect [explosive bug]!’

The 3rd wave of the Explosive Bugs landed on the two strongest DPS in the party!

Sun Xin Yu turned around immediately and brandishing her blades around, dealing explosive damage to the bug on Zhang Yang. However, her strongest damaging skill was [rear attack]. As the name of the skill implied, the skill would only activate when the user was attacking the target’s back! Since these Explosive Bugs did not have a “rear” to begin with, Sun Xin Yu was left with no choice but to rely on [malign attack].

[malign attack] is a skill that would only cause instantaneous damage based on the primary weapon, with 100% melee attack. Its damage could not be compared to that of [rear attack]. What more, a single attack from a dagger weapon is severely low! Even if Sun Xin Yu’s current primary weapon is a level 40 Gray-Silver tier, her damage was a little over 600!

Luckily the Explosive Bug did not have any Defense value, which allowed even her secondary weapon to inflict substantial damage and to cover the loss of her original destructive power. Because of those reasons however, Sun Xin Yu’s damage power had lost to Zhang Yang. When she finally destroyed the bug, Zhang Yang had already been attacking the boss for at least 4 seconds!

The prideful Sun Xin Yu could not help but feel helpless. Zhang Yang turned around and made a provoking face that read “I win! You lose!” which only angered her further. She continued her attack on the boss’ back and attacked him, unleashing the rage that had been bottled up inside her.

Demison would cast [explosive bug] at every 10% HP bracket. This was truthfully, the toughest part of the boss fight. Fortunately, the team’s weakest pair of DPS could destroy the bugs within the duration span. This would mean that the boss was a piece of cake for the entire party!

70%...40%...10%...

It was just a matter of time now!

“No! I cannot die just yet! I have not yet become the master of the Shadowmoon Castle. I cannot die! I c-can-not d-die...”

The boss fell defeated only after 6 minutes into the battle with the party.

Phew!

Everyone sighed a breath of relief. This was by far the boss that had gave the party a sense of challenge, a fight full of excitement!

Zhang Yang sighed loudly and called out to Wei Yan Er. “Little brat! Go and loot the droppings! I’m logging off to fix my biological problem!”

“Big boss Zhan Yu...you have a biological problem?” asked Endless Starlight quietly.

“HAHAHAHA!” Fatty Han laughed abruptly whist patting Endless Starlight shoulder furiously with his flabby hands. “That’s right! Litte Yang has a severe case of biological problem! What a tragedy! How sad!”

In a non-city non-safe zone area, an additional 20 seconds was required before anyone could log off. Zhang Yang could still hear what those two were talking about and replied furiously. “Hey! I had no problem with that part of my body! F*ck you Fatty! You’d better not say anything---”

Before he could finish his sentence, the 20 second time had completed and Zhang Yang was logged out of the game. He quickly went to the toilet and hastily made his way back into the game. When he entered the game, his character reappeared close to the boss’ dead body.

By then, everyone else was looking at him as if they were looking at a strange experimental product, with a hint of amusement in their face.

“Damn you Fatty! What did you say while I was gone!?” Zhang Yang screamed at Fatty Han.

Fatty Han shrugged his shoulder off like nothing had happened and said, “Nothing much, if you had nothing to hide, what were you afraid of?”

Motherf*cker. When you say something like that, even the sun would rise from the sea and set in the sky!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “F*ck it. I’m too lazy to deal with you. Little brat? Time for the loots!”

Wei Yan Er walked over to the body while shaking in fear. She turned her head towards Zhang Yang slowly and said, “H-hey...Noob t-tank. Y-you wouldn’t be a-asking me to...to follow you in your v-van for c-candies right?”

WTF!? What did that f*cked up fatty pig say to this girl?!

Zhang Yang stared angrily at Fatty Han and turned away. “Relax little girl. This handsome man does not have love for flat-chested-petite-lolis!”

“Damn! You actually called yourself handsome! Need I remind you that you have only a slightly above average look!” Wei Yan Er talked back while rolling her eyes at him. “I’m telling you. You better go Korea and have your face fixed a little! If not, you might randomly scare other flora and fauna alike!”

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Since when could this little girl talk like that?”

Wei Yan Er snickered. “My cousin sister taught me that!”

Han Ying Xue expressed a rather contented expression while crossing her arms below her magnificent breasts, causing them to slightly bounce about.

Wei Yan Er continued joking and went over to the loots.

[Hellheim Boots] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +48

Strength: +8

Agility: +24

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

Everyone rolled for it and Sun Xin Yu won the item.

The next few items were all just Green-Copper grade equipment. The party chose to let Zhang Yang keep them all.

“Damn! We’re strong! We could just defeat the boss in one try! Haha!” said Fatty Han with a rather jubilant expression, self-praising shamelessly. “I really want to just log onto the forum and post our achievement! Let the world know that we, the Lone Desert Smoke could achieve anything, even the First Clear Achievement if we wanted to! Hmph! Let them come, be it One Sword Stroke, they are nothing to our Zhang Yang here!”

Zhang Yang quickly cut in, “That player, One Sword Stroke is really strong though!”

If Zhang Yang had not been reborn anew into this world, One Sword Stroke would undoubtedly be the best tank in the entire of China! His strength and that of his team had earned him the greatest honor and pride in china. Soon, all that stood against him would fall defeated under his achievement!

“I was slow last time...I didn’t had a chance to compete with you back then...but now...heh” Zhang Yang smiled and muttered by himself. “I will be at the peak of it all and wait for you to come challenge me this time!”

The party went up to the fourth floor and last floor of the castle. The structure of the castle remained the same as ever, the only different was the monsters. This time, the monsters were soldiers, carrying long swords and shield.

[Wolfman Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 45

HP: 90,000

“A Warrior type monster would basically have [tornado cleave] and [dividing slash]. Try not to stand in front of the monster and fight, if you have low HP, please move to their backs or sides!”

Zhang Yang took out his sword and used [charge] and stunned one of the monsters ahead.

The monsters on this floor were also in pairs. When one of them was stunned, the other growled furiously and slashed Zhang Yang.

“-492!”

Zhang Yang slashed the monster but only dealt small, petty damage on it. “Damn. This monster is just the same as I am! A Guardian! His defense is so strong! Perhaps even stronger than mine! It must be more than 400 points. With that passive 20% damage reduction and 90,000 HP, it would be a good bait if I could control this monster to tank a boss!”

When [charge] stun effect wore off, Zhang Yang cast [blast wave] and stunned both the monsters with only “-97!” damage.

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the party tried their best, using status ailment skills to stun the monster and prevent them from casting [tornado cleave]. As such, the party was stuck there for half an hour, advancing slowly. Only then did the party make their way to a large hall. At the far end of the hall, there was a man, fully clad in armor that covered his entire body. Even his face was completely covered in the silver-metal helmet, masking his appearance from the world. Wielding a large two-handed axe in his hands, the man was guarding a large entrance behind him. The only thing that revealed were his blood shot eyes. The red glint that expressed fierce killing intent was cold and frightening.

[Blood Guardian Angelo] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 47

HP: 1,500,000

Note: Master Waller’s loyal follower.

“What pride is there for a Boss to guard an entrance!” Wei Yan Er was frowning.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Once we kill him, the last boss beyond that door would be Master Waller!”

“How do we fight?” Everyone stared at Zhang Yang.

Every time they party would relied on him for the battle plan, Zhang Yang would always pretend to be humble. He faked a cough to get everyone’s attention and began to explain.

“This boss...is easy but not easy. It’s hard, but it’s not hard!”

“What the hell?” Almost everyone rolled their eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “It’s true! I’m not lying! Remember the time I told you to collect some equipment with Vitality bonus? Now it’s the time to use them! The boss has one ulti,..well, technically it’s several skills put together..,”

“First, the boss will randomly pick a player and cast a skill called “Something something Demon”. I can’t remember the skill’s name but the effect of the skill is to create a mirror image of the selected player. The generated mirror image of the player will have around the same attack as the player himself! However, it’s HP was just 10,000 HP. Just like the Explosive Bug from earlier, only the selected player could see and attack the mirror image.”

“If you do not kill the summoned image, it will remain forever there. If the player was picked again the second time, it will generate another image and so on, so forth.”

“The image, or shadow must be killed off as soon as possible since it will disrupt the party attack. The defeated shadow will drop something like a blood fragment that would be used in the finale.”

“After the boss uses the shadow summon skill, it will cast a shield on himself, causing him to be immune to all attacks. He will also recover 3% HP every second for 33 seconds! That means that, unless we break the shield, the boss would recover full HP and we would have to start all over again!”

“The only way to defeat the boss is to kill the summoned image, get the fragment and break the shield on the boss!”

“However! We should not simply use the fragment as soon as we obtain

any of them! Once the shield on the boss is broken, it will unleash a skill that would damage everyone in the room by 5000 Fire damage! That was why I had asked you to collect high Vitality equipment!”

Zhang Yang continued, “Now that you’ve listen to what I’ve said, I’ll summarize it all. Kill the shadow, heal everyone to full health, and finally break the shield!”

“Aiyaya...If Endless Starlight was picked, I’m afraid that we would only manage to break the boss’ shield when he has healed by more than 200%!” Fatty Han teased Endless Starlight.

Endless Starlight was rather down during the Explosive Bug fight. But now that was over and all, Endless Starlight was confident that he could surpass this level as well. “Haha! Just you wait and see!”

“Woah! We got a badass cherry boy over here!” cried Fatty Han.

Everyone changed into their own high Vitality equipment and beefed up themselves. When everyone else was doing just fine, Daffodil Daydream was falling behind the “absolute safe line” Since she had joined the party rather late, the equipment that she had was rather inferior to the rest of the party member. Unlike Endless Starlight that could immediately gained extra 1600 HP just by equipping a new shield, Daffodil Daydream as nowhere near to the safe HP limit. She was so anxious about it that she could start crying.

Han Ying Xue laughed at her reaction and consoled her. “Relax Daffy! When we will break the boss’ shield, I will put a [holy shield] on you. The shield could absorb at least 2000 damage! It’s the same as having an extra 2000 HP in hand!”

After listening to Han Ying Xue’s explanation, Daffodil Daydream finally relaxed and wiped her tears away.

“Alright, alright. Prepare to fight! Once we defeat this boss, we would finally face Master Waller!” Zhang Yang unsheathe his sword and cried. “Same old style. Only use the power potion when you need it!”

Chapter 170: Blood Guardian Angelo

Angelo seemed to be a true warrior with a rather dignified look; when Zhang Yang entered his aggro zone, Angelo did not open his mouth to say anything unnecessary and only swung his huge axe at Zhang Yang. The silver, pale metal axe was coated in dried blood on the blade; one could only imagine exactly how many people he has killed, or perhaps drained their blood dry!

‘[block]!’

Other than the protection of the shield, he had nothing special to offer. His attack power was nothing much, yet it was the only thing that he depended on whenever his shield breaks. He would try to keep his attackers at bay with sheer attacks, capable of pushing healers to heal until they were out of MP! The boss would only use normal attacks on Zhang Yang. There was no need for Zhang Yang to rely on [block] to survive as he usually did, unless he was up against an ulti.

‘-2123!’

After the second attack only did he manage to damage Zhang Yang. However, the boss had already received 3 stacks of [Cripple Defense] and had his own defense value dropped significantly.

‘[Cripple Defense]!’

‘[Cripple Defense]!’

Completing the maximum 5 layers of [Cripple Defense], Zhang Yang had rendered the boss to be completely “naked” as he fought him. Every attack was completely disregarding his defense!

Sun Xin Yu and everyone else had surrounded the boss and pushed themselves to attack as fast as they can. Since the boss had other self-defensive measures hidden up his sleeves, they could not afford to drag the battle for long!

99% 97%, 95%... Bit by bit the boss’ HP dropped down like an old man walking down the stairs.

“Demon from the abyss! Heed my call and engulf Drizzler’s soul!” 10 seconds into the battle, Angelo raised both his hands in the air and activated a skill.

‘Ding! Angelo has used [demon’s call]!’

Right in front of her, a mirror image character of Drizzler appeared. With a dark hue and a translucent body, the summoned shadow character was a splitting image of her!

[Demonic Shadow] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 41

HP: 10,000

Once the shadow appeared, the aggro was automatically fixed to Wei Yan Er. However, as the timing would have it, Han Ying Xue had cast a healing spell on Zhang Yang, drawing the aggro away from Wei Yan Er to herself.

Wei Yan Er shouted angrily: “Bastard, don’t run away! Don’t you dare look down on me! I will chop you up into ground meat!” She quickly broke formation from her spot beside the boss and chased after the Demonic Shadow.

In the eyes of everyone, she was inexplicably talking to the air, murderously raising her axe and dashing towards Han Ying Xue.

‘Slash!’

She slashed in Han Ying Xue’s general direction with her axe.

‘-1,328!’

In the meantime, Han Ying Xue screamed and a damage text appeared above her head. She then stared at Wei Yan Er and said, “You little brat! You should hit the shadow, why are you hitting me?”

“No, it was the shadow that slashed you and I’m avenging you! You are my cousin, how could I possibly slash you?!” Wei Yan Er quickly answered, feeling that she was wrongly blamed!

In the eyes of Wei Yan Er, Demonic Shadow turned around to face her instead of attacking Han Ying Xue. Similarly, Demonic Shadow also slashed towards Wei Yan Er with axe.

‘-1,334!’

2,296!’

One normal strike and one [tornado cleave] totaled up to a massive amount, taking off Wei Yan Er’s HP by 3,600!

“Sister, quickly help me!” Wei Yan Er was well aware of her own skills, and [destructive smash], has not been used by Demonic Shadow yet! After she passed the quest at A difficulty, she had a 50% healing reduction effect along with the 150% melee damage of the skill, which was very powerful!

Han Ying Xue had cast [regeneration] on Wei Yan Er, at the same time, she also cast [healing bond] so both of them healed about 1,000 HP, and finally she cast a [holy shield] on Wei Yan Er.

‘Damage absorb!’

Demonic Shadow slashed Wei Yan Er again but this time the damage was fully absorbed by [holy shield]. However, the 50% healing reduction effect from the attack, [destructive smash], still appeared across Wei Yan Er’s head!

Wei Yan Er already summoned her [Servant: Centuar Guard] and attacked Demonic Shadow together. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han’s [companion aura] was effective on the servant as well. Although it was only increased 3% damage, it was still worthwhile!

Even though the Demonic Shadow’s HP was higher than Wei Yan Er’s HP, a peerless healer was standing behind her, so how ever much damage she took from Demonic Shadow would be covered by healing. Ten seconds later, Demonic Shadow turned into a ray of white light and crashed down on the ground. Wei Yan Er quickly picked up a blood-red shiny thorn from Demonic Shadow’s corpse.

[Evil Blood Thorn] (Consumable)

Use: Dispel Angelo's [devil shield].

"Little brat, do not immediately use [Evil Blood Thorn] when Angelo is casting [devil shield], wait for demonic Snow to cast a [holy shield] on Daffodil Daydream first!" Zhang Yang promptly reminded Wei Yan Er.

"You are such a nag, am I that stupid?" Wei Yan Er pursed her lips.

Another ten seconds later, right after another attack from Angelo, he shouted, "Demon from the abyss, heal me!"

'Immune!'

A black colored light shield immediately encircled Angelo, and the debuffs from [destructive smash] and deadly poison effects appeared across his head were all dispelled. He even gained immunity to all the attacks from Zhang Yang and the gang. Still, Angelo never stopped attacking Zhang Yang and continued hacking away with his axe.

"Ding! Angelo has obtained [devil shield]'s effect. Recover 3% HP every second and immune to all damage. Lasts for 33 seconds!"

Han Ying Xue immediately cast a [holy shield] on Daffodil Daydream and yelled, "Yan Er, break the shield!"

Wei Yan Er had already taken out the [Evil Blood Thorn] from her inventory and was at the ready. Once after she heard Han Ying Xue giving the order, she promptly targeted Angelo and selected [Evil Blood Thorn].

"Ding! Angelo's [devil shield]'s effect has dispelled!"

'-4,000!'

'-5,000!'

'-5,000!'

...

Angelo's shield was broken and scattered into pieces of black colour flames which shot towards Zhang Yang and the gang and huge damage texts floated over all of their heads. Han Ying Xue quickly cast [holy prayer] and [regeneration] on everyone. Fortunately Angelo's melee

attacks were not any powerful. While healing the tank, Han Ying Xue also had enough time to recover everyone's HP to full.

Nevertheless, Angelo's HP recovered from 88% to 94% which wasted half their efforts.

Ten seconds later, Angelo used another [demon's call] and a mirror image character of Hundred Shots appeared.

Conversely, [demon's call] would only clone the shadow of player and not pets, therefore, the attack power from Hunter's shadow would definitely be much lower! Hundred Shots was a Beastmaster and almost half of his attacks came from his pet. So how could the Demonic Shadow defeat Hundred Shots if [demon's call] didn't clone Hundred Shots' pet?

Besides, Demonic Shadow's aggro was drawn by Hundred Shots' pet. So, Demonic Shadow was foolishly fighting against Hundred Shots' pet! On the other hand, how could a cornered melee Hunter produce high damage? Thus, Han Ying Xue did not need to be distracted and Hundred Shots defeated the Demonic Shadow easily.

A Beastmaster's pet could share its master's attributes, thus, the stronger its master, the stronger the pet it is! Currently, Hundred Shots had 5,240 HP while his pet, Wind Wolf, had 5,920 HP which was much higher HP than its master!

Han Ying Xue had the previous experience of Angelo's [devil shield]'s effect, she casted a [holy shield] on Daffodil Daydream five seconds in advance. So, when Angelo used his [devil shield], Han Ying Xue immediately shouted, "Hundred Shots, break the shield!"

'Shoot!'

Angelo only got to recover his HP once before his shield was dispelled again. The shield which broke into pieces caused massive damage to the gang once again!

85%!

It was really hard to fight against Angelo as the gang had clearly reduced 22% of Angelo's HP but Angelo in turn, had abruptly recovered 9% of his

HP!

Ten seconds later, right after [devil shield] was dispelled, the third [demon's call] was used by Angelo once again. This time, a mirror image character of Endless Starlight appeared.

Endless Starlight fought against Demonic Shadow confidently this time as Demonic Shadow would fight back and he did not need to worry about running out of MP anymore! Luckily, this Demonic Shadow was a clone of Endless Starlight but obviously it did not know how to heal using [sacred protection] or [sacred heal]. Otherwise, the gang would need to surrender if any Defender, Guardian or healing classes were selected by [demon's call]!

In spite of Demonic Shadow's high defense value and most of Endless Starlight's damage being Holy Damage, the damage wasn't affected by defense value! Even so, when Endless Starlight was fighting against Demonic Shadow, Angelo had already used [devil shield] for three seconds!

"Starlight, hurry up and throw the thorn!" Han Ying Xue already cast a [holy shield] on Daffodil Daydream.

Endless Starlight hurriedly picked up [Evil Blood Thorn] and quickly threw it towards Angelo without aiming carefully.

'Shoot!'

Angelo's [devil shield] broken into pieces once again and causing huge damage to everyone. His HP recovered from 74% to 86% which was 1% higher than the second time the shield was broken!

Endless Starlight felt so sorry and guilty. He said, "I'm sorry!"

"If apologizing is so useful then it is pointless to have the police!" Wei Yan Er gave a short laugh.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "It's alright, we just need to fight a little bit longer!"

Everyone was clear about usual pattern of Angelo using his skills. Ten

seconds after breaking [devil shield], Angelo would use [demon's call] and twenty seconds later, Angelo would use [devil shield] once again. Thus, players had only twenty seconds to kill Demonic Shadow and pick up the [Evil Blood Thorn]!

The fourth time of [demon's call], a mirror image character of Han Ying Yue appeared.

Zhang Yang immediately yelled, "Demon Snow focus and kill the Demonic Shadow, do not bother about me!"

"En!" Han Ying Xue answered Zhang Yang but she still cast [regeneration] on Zhang Yang before casting a [holy shield] on herself. After that, she started to cast [Punishment Ray] on Demonic Shadow.

Demonic Shadow would not know how to use healing skills, so its only attack skill was [Punishment Ray]. Demonic Shadow immediately fought back against Han Ying Xue.

'-1,812! -1,831! -1,819! -1,823!'

'Damage absorb!'

'-542! -1,523! -1,511!'

Although it was the same [Punishment Ray] attack, Han Ying Xue drank a [Beginner Power Potion] just now, so, her attack power had instantly increased by 20%!

However, the disadvantage of being healer class was shown, by the fourth time both of them had cast [Punishment Ray] on each other, Demonic Shadow had about 2,800 remaining HP while Han Ying Xue had only 1,700 HP. If both of them continued casting on each other like that, they would die at the same time!

Luckily, this was Han Ying Xue! She still had an instantaneous healing skill, which was [mending prayers]! Even if she never learned [mending prayers], Zhang YanG still had two skills to aid teammates, which were [sacrifice] and < Vanguard's Aggression >. So, it was unnecessary for Han Ying Xue to worry about being killed!

Han Ying Xue used only twelve seconds to defeat the Demonic Shadow. She immediately picked up [Evil Blood Thorn] and waited for Angelo to use [devil shield].

“Demon from the abyss, heal me!” Angelo shouted loudly and activated [devil shield]!

Han Ying Xue cast a [holy shield] on Daffodil Daydream and threw the [Evil Blood Thorn] towards Angelo.

‘Shoot! [demon shield] had broken!’

Angelo recovered his HP once and back to 78% HP!

“It is really tiring killing this boss!” Fatty Han complained. Even though they successfully break the shield right after Angelo recovered his HP once, the HP recovery was 3% which was also equaled to 45,000 HP!

“Cut the bull sh*t and just fight the boss!” Sun Xin Yu coldly said.

Fatty Han suddenly had a cold sweat and dared not to voice out anymore. But he personally sent a private message to Zhang Yang, “Little Yang, I never thought that you would favor girls with strong personality. You dared keep such a tough girl! This is the first time I’m not envious of you having the luck to be adored by a pretty girl!”

Zhang Yang got speechless and replied, “Cut your bull crap and continue attacking the boss!”

“F*ck, you are really acting like her husband already! Sigh, somebody had hoes before bros, I despise you!”

Because Angelo had HP recovery skills, if the gang could break the shield once Angelo casted [devil shield], then they could reduce about 15% of Angelo’s HP every minute. But if they were unsuccessful in breaking the [devil shield] in the beginning, sometimes Angelo’s HP reduction could be much lesser than his HP recovery!

They worked so hard and successfully reduced Angelo’s HP to 6% in nine minutes!

They had used such a long time to fight Angelo, that even though Han

Ying Xue had her skill costs reduced by 75%, she was at her limit! If it was not due to the fact that she was an expert in MP management, her MP would be totally running out! Still, she had only 7% of her MP remaining.

What was most unfortunate was that [demon's call] selected Han Ying Xue this time. After killing Demonic Shadow, her MP was almost depleted and she did not even have enough MP to heal her HP to full!

“Ranged positions stand behind melee and I will use [vanguard's aggression]!” Zhang Yang immediately made a decision without hesitation.

Five seconds later, Angelo used [devil shield].

Zhang Yang hurriedly caged everyone into his [vanguard's aggression]'s protection barrier, at the same time, he also used [shield wall].

Both Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang had an unspoken bond, and then she immediately threw the [Evil Blood Thorn].

Shoot!

Angelo's shield broken into pieces again, with the effect of [vanguard's aggression], it almost nullified the damage on everyone!

“Demon Snow, don't need to heal anyone and use this few seconds to recover your MP!” Zhang Yang said. He also used the necklace [Heart of Fallen Warrior] and Angelo's damage was instantly reduced to about 500.

In ‘God's Miracle’, Spellcasters would recover their MP by relying on Spirit attribute during combat. But this had to follow the so-called “5 seconds principle” where the Spellcaster needs to stop casting any spells or skills for 5 seconds before the MP recovery that relied on the Spirit attribute would kick in!

Ten seconds later, Han Ying Xue's MP recovered to 7% while Angelo remained at 5% HP. Angelo used another [demon's call] and Endless Starlight was selected this time!

“Don't bother about Demonic Shadow, everyone focus and fight against Angelo. If we don't kill him this round, we are going to be annihilated!

Drink your Power Potion if it is not in cool down and release all the damage you could to Angelo!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

Chapter 171: Fight against Master Waller

Except for Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, the rest of the party used their [Beginner Power Potion]s and frantically fought against Angelo!

4%!

3%!

They still left 12 seconds to go before Angelo uses his [devil shield]!

2%!

9 seconds!

1%!

6 seconds!

0%!

“Ah!” Angelo roared with anger, his helmet shattered into pieces, revealing a frighteningly ugly face as he crashed down.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Blood Guardian Angelo. Obtained 187,550 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“Yes! We defeated Angelo!” The gang cheered and the atmosphere became lively. They were greatly relieved to escape from death.

“It was really thrilling but it was so exciting as well. Dungeons like these are really interesting!” Zhang Yang laughed and said.

Everyone agreed with what he said, when defeating new bosses of unknown difficulties and circumstances, wasn't that is the joy of playing the game? But only Fatty Han was uninspired and said, “I'd rather that Angelo be easy to defeat. Sigh, Angelo got me so incredibly nervous!”

Wei Yan Er walked over and looted Angelo's corpse. When she saw Angelo's ugly face, she could not help but said, “No wonder this sh*tty boss covered up his face, he's so, so ugly! Noob tank, Angelo knew that he was ugly so he covered up his face, why don't you find a cloth and cover up yours?”

Zhang Yang immediately glared at her and said, “Do I look so ugly to you?”

“Exactly! By looking at your face, I don’t need to watch a horror film anytime soon!” Wei Yan Er laughed nonstop.

Zhang Yang felt helpless and sighed, “Little brat, go ahead and loot the corpse!”

Wei Yan Er skipped to the corpse proudly, as if she just won a war.

[Steel Helmet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Dexterity: +16

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 40

Endless Starlight immediately said, “Heavy armor without Intelligence, I’m not getting involved!”

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Little brat, let’s roll the dice!”

“I don’t want to roll the dice, you take it. You are still wearing Level 20 set equipment, it looks so lame! You would lose our guild’s face with such set equipment!” Wei Yan Er shook her head and said.

This little brat! Before they were fighting the fourth boss, Angelo, none of them were willing to move on from their Level 20 Gray-Silver set equipment and now she even dares to sneer at Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang selected request and received the helmet. Since it was difficult to obtain the 5 set equipment effect, he immediately equipped the Level 30 equipment he received previously.

Zhang Yang kept his Level 20 [Brave Glove] and changed all the other pieces of armor and boots to Level 30 Gray-Silver equipment. His HP rocketed up to 7,760! His melee attack was now ranged from 816 – 868

which was slightly higher than previous melee attack which ranged from 813 – 870.

This showed that the 10% damage increase from 5 set equipment effect was actually powerful!

Everyone did not show any interest in the remaining four Green-Copper items, so they directly passed the items to Zhang Yang, knowing that they would share the money equally if the items were sold out! The others would not have minded much even if that wasn't the case. But Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were two money-grubbers, they would not stop bothering Zhang Yang if he didn't share the money.

“Little Yang, after killing the final boss, I'm going to post this on the forum immediately and show it to those who looked down on us!” Fatty Han said it in anger.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Your dream may not come true today!”

“Is it that hard to defeat old Waller? Aren't you going to tell me that he is the Yellow-Gold boss?” Fatty Han started to be agitated.

When the rest of the people heard the word “Yellow-Gold boss”, all of their eyes shone and looked at Zhang Yang. The previous four bosses were indeed slowly increasing in level. Angelo's level was 47, so the level of the final boss, Master Waller, could be 50! Level 50 boss may be a Yellow-Gold boss!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, shook his head and said, “Unfortunately, Master Waller is a Gray-Silver boss! But, don't feel disappointed yet, for Master Waller's value is still very high! This is because among all the bosses in ‘God's Miracle’, only Master Waller would drop the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order]!”

“Guild Upgrade Order?”

“What is that?”

“Our Lone Desert Smoke is now a Level 1 guild, and if we wanted to expand our guild scale and obtain more functions and features, only by

using the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] could we upgrade to Level 2 guild! There will be many advantages such as our current 10% extra EXP obtained will increase to 20%! We could also buy the special mount, Storm and Gale Direwolf, from guild shop. The Member slots of the guild could also hold up to 20,000 players!”

Zhang Yang thought in deep and continued saying, “If we get the first kill of Master Waller, then the chances of dropping the guild upgrade order would be even higher! We will use the first guild upgrade order. If we get additional guild upgrade orders from this boss, we could sell it to other guilds. It will be totally no problem if we sell it at around 300,000 to 400,000 gold coins in the beginning!”

300,000 to 400,000 gold coins! According to the current exchange rate, it would be about 1,000,000 dollars! Even if they divided it by eight, each of them would still obtain about 100,000 dollars!

Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were not born with a silver spoon or a powerful background, so 100,000 dollars was not a small amount for them and their faces said it all. Although Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan er were rich, both of them were the standard money-grubbers, so both of their eyes shone even brighter. It was only Sun Xin Yu who was uninterested in the money and was indifferent as usual.

“Hurry up! Let’s go!” Wei Yan Er could not wait for it anymore and tugged at Zhang Yang’s arm.

Zhang Yang had wanted to tell them that it was not easy to defeat Master Waller, but now he that saw everyone being so enthusiastic, so he decided not to ruin the high morale.

The gang opened up the door that Angelo watched over and entered the final boss, Master Waller’s room.

This is a spherical building, approximately 50 meters in diameter. However, the structure was empty, except for a humongous werewolf dead center. From the look on it, they could see that it had its eye shut tight! Beneath him was a huge hexagonal magic seal, with beams of light blasting out from six edges of the hexagon into his body. Occasionally, the

beam of light would change mysteriously!

[Master Waller, The Master of Shadowmoon Castle] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 48

HP: 2,000,000

Master Waller was a yellow named monster! This meant that Master Waller would only attack a player when it gets attacked!

“... What is the strategy?” Everyone gazed at Zhang Yang once again.

Zhang Yang coughed a while and said: “Do you guys still remember the [awaken wolf] from the first boss, Jenny?”

“Yes, increase 10% damage every second which was very terrifying!” All of them agreed.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Master Waller was a husband of Jenny, he is much stronger than Jenny! According to the official statement, werewolves were a race that disrespected the Wolf God and were abandoned by Wolf God! But this Master Waller is a genius among the werewolves, he could re-connect to Wolf God using magic circles and obtain similarly incredible strength like his ancestors obtained years ago!”

“F*ck, little Yang, this is not a story telling session now! Just tell us what the strategy to defeat the boss is!” Fatty Han could not wait anymore and kept worrying that the server would announce that Imperial Sky has obtained the first clear.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “The backstory and Master Waller’s skills are related, that’s why I need to explain this in detail! In short, Master Waller is blessed by Wolf God, so Master Waller is extremely powerful. Any players below Level 100 would be killed instantly if Master Waller struck anyone under normal conditions! Although Master Waller has obtained Wolf God’s recognition once again, Master Waller has not yet completely become the Wolf God’s representative, he is still in the progress of absorbing Wolf God’s strength! Those are the ray of lights going towards Master Waller!”

“Oh, I get it! We’ll have to interrupt Master Waller from absorbing Wolf God’s strength. We need to weaken him first and then only wipe him out!” Wei Yan Er had finally become smart this time.

Zhang Yang showed an exaggeratedly surprised expression and said, “Ah, little brat you finally figured out the trick? Is that really you?”

“Noob tank!” Wei Yan Er put her arm on her hips and shouted loudly.

Zhang Yang laughed happily and continued elaborating, “The hexagram magic circle appearing on the ground is the source of power for Master Waller. We need to send six persons to block each ray of lights, so that Master Waller’s damage will be reduced to 10%! Those who are blocking the lights, you do not need to stand on the pole where the light is emitted from, you guys just need to block the lights from him.”

“It sounds easy!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “The lights will be disconnected once every 20 seconds. 2 seconds later, the lights will re-connect, but the colour of the lights will be changed randomly. The yellow lights emitted previously may be changed into green lights; the green lights emitted previously may even change into red lights! Besides, when each person starts to block the lights, they will have a 30 minutes debuff, for those who block the yellow light at first, ‘yellow source’ debuff will appear across their head; while those who block the green light at first, ‘green source’ debuff will appear across their head and so on! Thus, when you guys going to block the light once again, those who have ‘yellow source’ debuff must block the yellow light and those who have ‘green source’ debuff must block the green light. If any lights are wrongly paired, then the Wolf God will appear and all of us will be annihilated instantly!”

All of them frowned after listening to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang continued, “So, the six guys in charge of blocking the lights, when you realize that the lights behind you are not being emitted anymore, you must stay away from the path, where the lights emit, at the first instance. Otherwise, if we are unable to pair up with the correct colours of light with the debuff then we will be annihilated immediately. 2

Seconds later after the lights re-connect, we must pair the correct colours of light with the right debuff status and block the light as soon as you can! Master Waller's strength will recover back to normal when any rays of the light irradiate him for 2 seconds, that would be our end!"

"So, with the six guys successfully blocking the lights by matching the correct colours of lights with debuffs, we would win! We could still fail if any rays of light irradiate the boss!"

"On the other hand, those who are blocking the lights will be dying immediately if they are not irradiating by the light for 5 seconds! Even if we make extra two persons to match the correct colours of light, it will be still pointless to help those who are blocking the lights!"

"Besides that, Master Waller will be in a fixed position, not moving around as he will need to absorb Wolf God's strength! But guys, do not think that it will be easy to fight against him! If there is nobody within his melee range, he will then cast AoE spells, so the ending is still the same, complete annihilation!"

Translator Notes

1 Yellow name monster will not attack a player. The monster will only attack when it received an attack.

Chapter 172: Practice and Collaborate

“Master Waller has only one skill which is [shadow slash]. He will use it once every 30 seconds towards the player who holds the highest aggro and the target next to that player. It can cause 12,000 of physical damage in total. It cannot be dodged or evaded, so Endless Starlight and I must stand next to Master Waller to deal the damage! It means that six of you will need to complete the task of blocking the lights. Then Endless Starlight and I will be responsible for dealing the damage from Master Waller!”

“Before starting this, six of you choose your positions and stand behind it. When the battle starts, you guys move forward and block the lights. Ranged attackers can attack the boss from their positions but for melee attackers like Frost Night and little brat; you guys need to move along the pathway where the lights are being emitted towards the boss! You guys must also keep your distance from me, if any of you stands any nearer to me compared to Endless Starlight, you guys will probably need to take the damage of [shadow slash] that was meant for Endless Starlight! 6,000 of physical damage would absolutely kill you guys.”

Zhang Yang had to explain everything in detail as a lot of teams were actually forced to surrender to this boss in his previous life as they failed to pull off such a perfectly coordinated strategy!

“It might just be a ray of light, but you guys must not crouch beneath those rays of light as that also can be considered as blocking the lights! So, when the lights stop emitting, those who are blocking the lights, must step backwards immediately and move around the outer circle to the new position!”

Zhang Yang spoke until his mouth was feeling dry and he asked, “Do you guys understand now?”

“It’s easy enough right, do not pass through the light and move around the outer layer to look for new positions!” Wei Yan Er clapped her hands and said.

“That’s right, this is what I meant just now!” Zhang Yang nodded and

continued, “But, this has to be done by six persons not one person. After the lights re-connect, you guys have only 2 seconds to look for the new position and reach it!”

“There’s no point in explaining any further, it is better that we try to fight him once. Let’s start the battle first!” Zhang Yang pulled out his Lover's Sword, “Everyone, get into position! Choose a pole and step backwards. Master Waller is a yellow named monster and he will not attack us automatically! Starlight, we will approach Master Waller together. Remember, do not stand on any pathway of the light emissions. We must always remain in the same position from the beginning of the battle!”

“Roger that!” Endless Starlight exaggeratedly made a military salute.

Eight of them went into the positions respectively. Han Ying Xue and the rest chose each corner of hexagram magic circle, while Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight stood next to Master Waller. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight also paid attention to avoid the direction where the lights were emitted from.

“Ready, we are going to start!” Zhang Yang said, “I will count to three, and those who are blocking the light will need to step forward together! Pay attention, Master Waller will start attacking if any of the are lights being blocked! So, you guys must step forward consistently and in tandem!”

“One!”

“Two!”

“Three!”

Han Ying Xue and the five of them stepped forward at the same time and each of them blocked a ray of light respectively.

“Hummm, who is blocking me from absorbing the strength?” Master Waller abruptly opened his eyes and a pair of yellow-green eyes glowing supernaturally were exposed, “Wretches, I will kill all of you who are disrupting the sacred ceremony!”

He raised his huge and rough wolf paws and struck Zhang Yang's chest.

'[block]!'

Zhang Yang raised his shield and successfully blocked Master Waller's attack.

'-1,680!'

Master Waller continue attacked Zhang Yang with his other wolf paw.

Master Waller was similar to Thief monsters using two one-handed weapons. He attacked with both of his hands, thus, the frequency or rate of attack was extremely high. However, a single attack was not particularly damaging and basically, it was just about 2,500 points of basic damage. Master Waller swung his wolf paws once every 2.5 seconds, leading to 8 attacks within 10 seconds; and two of the attacks could be blocked. The remaining DPS would be 1,000 and because of this, Han Ying Xue could heal them easily.

"I will kill all of you, you despicable vermin!" Master Waller suddenly lifted up both of his wolf paws, a dazzling light surged out!

"Ding! Master Waller has used [shadow slash]!"

'-4,480!'

'-4,760!'

Damage texts appeared across both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight's head.

Luckily, Zhang Yang had 7,760 HP currently, excluding the 1,682 points of HP that he lost from Master Waller's previous attacks, after receiving damage from [shadow slash], he retained about 1,500 HP. After [regeneration] was initiated once, Zhang Yang still could take another direct hit from Master Waller!

Han Ying Xue hurriedly cast a [holy shield] on Zhang Yang and then used [regeneration] on Endless Starlight to let him heal slowly because Master Waller would use [shadow slash] again after 30 seconds, so two ticks of [regeneration] could actually recover Endless Starlight's HP to full.

Thus, Han Ying Xue put in all her effort to heal Zhang Yang as much as possible.

The combat had already carried on 20 seconds and the lights emitted from hexagram magic circle were disconnected!

Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Daffodil Daydream simply stepped a step backwards and continue attacking and healing. Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er needed to run backwards a few steps before they could reach the outer circle of hexagram magic circle.

2 Seconds later, the six rays of different colours of light emitted at the same time but the positions were totally different with previous emission. So, the six of them immediately started running for their new positions!

“Ah, Fatty, out of my way!”

“Cousin, you’re running to the wrong direction!”

“Daffodil Daydream, let me go first!”

“...”

A moment of noise and the scene was total chaos.

Two seconds passed.

Six rays of light emitted to Master Waller!

“Ding! Master Waller has restored his strength!”

‘-19,682!’

‘-20,914!’

Master Waller only used his paws and sent Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight directly back to the graveyard! Then, he started to cast a spell which only took 2 seconds to complete.

‘-50,000!’

‘-50,000!’

‘-50,000!’

...

Humongous damage texts appeared across everyone's heads, as Han Ying Xue and the rest were also sent to graveyard after Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight.

Complete annihilation!

"Cousin, you are so stupid! Pervert fatty, you are also dumb! Hundred Shots is even dumber! Sister Daffodil, sigh!" Wei Yan Er was in a foul mood, she shrugged and said, "Except for sister Sun and I, the rest of the four people were so stupid!"

"Little brat!" Han Ying Xue glared at Wei Yan Er, her temper at boiling point!

"It's the truth, you guys are really stupid!" Wei Yan Er continued despising them.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "No hurries, an initial period of running in is required for a perfect collaboration, it will slowly establish our unspoken form of teamwork!"

All of them ran back, entered dungeon, resurrected, recovered their conditions and entered Master Waller's room once again.

10-man dungeons renewed once every two days, so the monsters and the other four bosses in the dungeon would re-spawn tomorrow night at 12.00 AM.

Eight of them returned to their positions and initiated the battle.

20 Seconds later, Master Waller showed his divine strength once again and the team annihilated instantly.

They ran back, resurrected and started the battle again.

20 seconds later, they were annihilated the third time.

After the team had been annihilated three times continuously, the team morale reduced dramatically.

After another resurrection, Zhang Yang smiled and said, "What's wrong, you guys giving up so easily after three defeats?"

All of them remained silent.

“Okay, don’t initiate the battle first and just train on our position switching at the outer circle! The colours of the lights will still change every 20 seconds, the six of you, get into position first and remember the colours of the lights you guys block at the first round. You guys will need to look for the new position when the colours of the light change after 20 seconds, and when we manage this 20 times consecutively, then only will we initiate the battle! Otherwise, we simply don’t want to give away repair fees!”

In fact, Zhang Yang was already prepared for this, but everyone was so enthusiastic at the beginning, so he dared not ruin the team’s morale. But now with everyone mellowed down, all of them understood why he made them practice.

Zhang Yang thought carefully, if they could learn well the position switching within three days, it would be considered pretty fast! As other team did not know Master Waller’s skills, they might need about two to three days to discover a strategy to fight against Master Waller. Additionally, they needed to train for position switching. Therefore, they actually needed at least ten days or up to half a month to defeat the final boss!

They had killing the previous four bosses smoothly and they had also killed the Yellow-Gold boss in Centaur Palace, and thus, their confidence levels were way up high, and they thought they could defeat Master Waller without a hitch as well. But now, as they face a setback, they would be sober enough to obediently train in their position switching.

One hour, two hours and three hours!

Han Ying Xue and the rest slowly familiarized themselves with position switching, they were able to successfully switch the positions continuously for seven to eight times without mistakes. But this was still not enough to defeat the boss. According to team’s dealing damage capability and position switching every 20 seconds, they needed at least 400 seconds to defeat Master Waller. This meant that they must successfully do position

switching for 20 times continuously without mistakes!

It reached 12.00 AM midnight, and Zhang Yang stopped them from training and said, “Alright, everyone has put in a lot of effort, but there’s no point cramming for it! We’ll stop here for today, everyone should log out from the game and go to rest. We shall continue tomorrow night!”

“But, I’m so excited. I don’t wanna sleep yet!” Wei Yan Er still very energetic.

Zhang Yang smiled and said: “Little brat, you still want to play truant? If you can’t wake up tomorrow morning, are you going to apply for leave again? Besides, Hundred Shots and Starlight have work tomorrow, right?”

“Yes!” The two of them nodded their heads.

“Ah! So frustrating!” Wei Yan Er yawned, “Cousin, let’s go to bed! Wrinkles appear easily if we sleep late, that’ll be horrible!”

All of them tore [Teleportation Scroll]. Suddenly, they were surrounded by white lights and returned to White Jade Castle.

Fatty Han anxiously said, “Little Yang, I’m going to log out as well! I have to hurry up and post the screenshots of all the bosses that we defeated on the forum to show them our capabilities and see what they’ll have to say this time!”

Zhang Yang first went to the Little Merchandize Shop and stored all the equipment in his inventory to warehouse. Then, he made a few stacks of [Beginner Power Potion] and stored them all in warehouse as well. He finally summoned his war horse and rode it, heading towards the Item Identifier to identify the [Steel Helmet] he was wearing.

After paying 40 gold coins, a ray of silver light flashed and [Steel Helmet] revealed its real attributes.

[Steel Helmet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Dexterity: +16

[Level 1 Socket]

[Level 1 Socket]

Level Requirement: 40

Damn it, 40 gold coins for two Sockets! Besides, adding Gemstones also needed more money, this developer was really good at ripping players off!

Zhang Yang went to Gem Shop once again and bought two [Level 1 Vitality Gemstones] to insert them in his helmet. Under the boost of his Vitality Aura, Zhang Yang's HP reached 7,960.

Chapter 173: Forum war of words

The night passed uneventfully. Zhang Yang completed his training exercises early the next morning, before buying his take-away breakfast and logging on to the official forum. He was curious and had decided to observe the the war happening over the forum while eating his food.

Fatty Han had gone ahead and posted under the battle report category under his in-game nickname 'Slim and Handsome', boasting about how they conquered the first 4 bosses at the castle interior along with some screenshots. He then directed his sharpened tongue towards the 5th boss, Master Waller, bragging that Lone Desert Smoke would only require 2 days tops, to acquire the final dungeon's first clear title!

The rather bold declaration had provoked a number of players into accusing them of arrogance! However, it also roused up the cries of many other players who were in support of Lone Desert Smoke, and one after another, they posted their praises and encouragement on the comment section below. Many fans of Lone Desert Smoke were declaring war to the players who once belittled Lone Desert Smoke before, "Do you see it now? This is the Lone Desert Smoke that we supported, without the slightest effort, they had taken down 4 bosses in the castle interior, in just one night!

The current outcome was a big fat slap on the faces of those who underestimated the Lone Desert Smoke. Even the King of Prediction, Martian Homeland edited his post on the battle report category immediately, praising Zhang Yang and his gang as if he was trying to lift them above the moon, saying that they are the real deal, despite having started late, they were progressing like a hot knife cutting through butter, demonstrating their pure, terrifying strength!

By comparison, even though the Imperial Sky guild which One Sword Stroke belonged to was also at the progress of 4/5, but they had spent around 5 days exploring the dungeon! At that instance, both parties were standing right before the final boss. According to the regular pattern of the dungeons, the final boss would certainly be the most difficult

challenge there ever was. Although the stronger Lone Desert Smoke started out one day after Imperial Sky, their chances of winning instead were so much higher!

Because a simple boss required about 2 days to pass, Imperial Sky would be one day ahead, and they probably could instantly secure the first clear for Master Waller! But with the boss being so much more difficult to handle, it would require about 4 to 5 days, or maybe even 7 or 8 days to unlock new areas, therefore the advantage of being ahead no longer mattered!

After praising Lone Desert Smoke enthusiastically, Martian Homeland exclaimed for that the competition for the First Clear of the dungeons would become more unpredictable compared to the previous times. Where uncertainties lie, the competition is bound to be fierce! It would definitely far be more glorious as the small party of the Lone Desert Smoke who appeared out of nowhere had crushed all doubts about them!

He also tried to butter up One Sword Stroke and Imperial Sky, encouraging them to keep up with their good efforts, even if they lose to the Lone Desert Smoke in this attempt of acquiring the first clear title, they would still have revealed to all players in the whole of China that there were strong parties on equal standing as Lone Desert Smoke!

With this post out in the public, Martian Homeland had stirred up a fierce argument among the players, with part of them supporting Imperial Sky, while others supported Lone Desert Smoke, splitting them into half and starting a war of words on the forum!

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, this was probably because people would say, 'love well, whip well'! No matter the winner at the end of it, even if it did not concern the players at all, everyone had a team as their favourite, just like the Olympic games, who would not wish to see their own country winning over a few more gold medals than the others?

After bagging up his emotions, Zhang Yang went online again. However, it was just Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue and him logged in today. Wei Yan Er had to go to school while the rest of the four members had to go to work.

'Beep' the voice communication device suddenly beeped, but it was a call coming from Perfumed Water. She was a fair Priest from Crimson Rage, also happening to be one of the core players in the guild. Ever since Zhang Yang had assisted them in slaying Chavos the King of the Mountain Giant, this damned sister had passionately pushed Zhang Yang into adding her as his favourite friend.

"Hey handsome Zhan Yu, do you have any idea about how long I waited for you? You must take responsibility!" As soon as the communication channel was connected, the soft and sweet voice of Perfumed Water came right out from the device.

Zhang Yang felt a chill, as he replied, "Come on Sis Water, don't talk like there's something going on between us, alright? You and I are not an item! Spit it out, why were you looking for me?"

"Hmph, so cold, rejecting the old and craving for the new!"

Zhang Yang burst into laughter for a bit, and then he said "Silly girl, when did you ever become my girl before?"

"Alright, jokes aside!" Perfumed Water changed her tone and said, "By the order of milady Snow Seeker, I am hereby consulting you concerning strategies for clearing the bosses in area number 3 and area number 4!"

Are you kidding me? Zhang Yang wondered and asked, "Why didn't she ask me that herself?" Although it was possible to predict the skills of the bosses in normal mode and hard mode, the damage output of the bosses differed in different modes, so sometimes it would be futile to use the same tactics on them. There was no doubt that seeking advice on the strategies for clearing dungeons from players who had completed the death mode was the simplest solution.

Perfumed Water giggled, and she said, "Milady Snow Seeker is a shy person, she cannot stand begging others. Come on, don't be stingy. You guys have already cleared the boss stage, giving us a small piece of advice will not rob you of your first clear achievement!"

Zhang Yang gave it a thought, and said, "Fine, I can give you the strategy, 100,000 gold for a boss, cheap and fair!"

“Wuwuwu, Zhan Yu, how can you be so mean to talk about money? 100,000 gold.... That’s a solid 800,000 dollars for only 2 bosses! Fine! I am selling myself to you then!”

“I’m not taking you, money only!”

“Come on, don’t reject me just yet! I can cook and clean the house during the day, and warm your bed during the night for you! A gentle and caring girl like me is impossible to find out there!” Perfumed Water used her best effort to sell herself high.

As expected, this woman is dirty and bold, a little teasing from her will drag you down straight to hell when confronting her verbally!

So, Zhang Yang smiled and said, “If I am to take you in, my wife would force me to kneel on the washing board everyday!”

“What are you so afraid of then? I can be your mistress! You men are professionals in keeping ‘the red flag’ (wife) standing in the house, with ‘colorful flags’ (mistress(s)) fluttering outside!”

“..... Are you here to get some strategies or to sell yourself high?”

“Huh? The blame is on you! You made me forgot my main purpose!” without any pause, Perfumed Water remorselessly put the blame on Zhang Yang. “Come on, aren’t we all allies? Alliances are supposed to help each other out right? No money should be involved, money corrosive to relationships! It’s also no big deal for me to sell out some private information about Milady Snow Seeker to you!”

“No thanks, I am totally out of the league to get your ‘Milady Snow Seeker’, just get your notepad ready, I am going to brief you on the strategies in taking down the 2 bosses.”

“OH YEAH!” the cheering of Perfumed Water instantly came from the other side of the communication device. “Since you kept your word and all, I should be returning you the favor. Our Snow Seeker is currently divorced, left without child, and is definitely very lonely and empty at the moment. Now is the best time to thrust yourself into her life!”

“Oh yea, please don’t tell her that I told you this! That’s all, bye!”

Perfumed Water ended the communication straight.

Zhang Yang was not bothered about giving the strategies to Crimson Rage, and what Perfumed Water mentioned earlier was true, the Crimson Rage did not pose any threat to them for them in acquiring the first clear title for the dungeon. Furthermore, since both of them were alliances, they did have the obligation to help out each other, so they had decided to start with the Lone Desert Smoke.

However, the idea of selling these strategies out for some money had put Zhang Yang down a rather skewed mindset.

Being free all along the way, Zhang Yang regrouped with Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han, and together they departed for the 1st floor of the Centaur Palace to grind for a bit.

Although 3 of them were grinding a little bit slower than they would as a full party, fewer players also meant more experience points for each of them! Other players usually took about 5 days to level up once, but Zhang Yang and the gang only took one day to receive the flash of golden light across their body, a level up!

Zhang Yang was currently at level 42 while Fatty Han and Han Ying Xue were both at level 43!

For the current top 20 level in the White Jade City, the highest level achieved is level 44, and the lowest level achieved is level 42. As Zhang Yang had only stepped into level 42, he was not on the list yet, but Fatty Han and Han Ying Xue had fulfilled the requirement to be on the list, securing the 8th and the 10th place respectively.

Fatty Han was joyful at that instant, preparing himself to work harder to climb up to the 1st spot on the list. Just as he was preparing to challenge the list of the China Region, he was pulled back to the main city by Zhang Yang ----- it was almost 6:30pm, they should be prepared to explore the Waller Dungeon after dinner.

Just before logging into the game, Zhang Yang went to the official forum again and found a surprising notice, a challenge issued by Imperial Sky!

This notice was published by one of the higher rank officer of the Imperial Sky, with the identity and ranking officially verified, under the in-game 'authentic name', Mountain Cleaver. He issued a challenge towards the Lone Desert Smoke on behalf of the Imperial Sky to see which guild would take down Waller and acquire the first clear of the castle interior dungeon before the other does!

Mountain Cleaver were full of confidence, he also placed a voting option for players to pick their side.

The debate on who was the stronger between the Lone Desert Smoke and the Imperial Sky on the forum had been incredibly intense, and now, with this challenge invitation sent by the Mountain Cleaver, the players are hyped to the limit! Countless players had replied and voted for the guilds that they supported.

Currently, Lone Desert Smoke held the lead, reaching a rate of 57%.

However, Zhang Yang responded with a sneer, knowing that no matter the outcome of the challenge, Imperial Sky would be earning enough popularity by stepping over the Lone Desert Smoke if they won! If they lose, there will be nothing to lose. They basically belong to the stronger category, plus, the first few titles of first clear had been taken by the Lone Desert Smoke, so it would not be unexpected for them to lose.

How about victory? It would be even better for them to be victorious, stepping over the dead body of Lone Desert Smoke to secure the throne of the strongest dungeon team in the whole China Region!

But the unstoppable train had already started, no matter what Zhang Yang does, the Imperial Sky had successfully shaped their own image as one being equivalent to Lone Desert Smoke, they had called dips on that claim!

If that's the case! Zhang Yang logged in the forum with his in-game name and sent a post with only one word on it, 'Accepted!'

Luckily the official forum did not have rules that required 15 words to issue a notice. This simple yet powerful post was instantly moved to the top and being highlighted by the forum administrator. Within just a few

minutes, the post attracted tens of thousands of clicks and thousands of replies!

The fans of 'Zhan Yu' were hyped up, they all cheered for Zhang Yang on the post, it was like a complete detonation of words all over the forum.

It was 7:30pm, all gang members had arrived, so once again, the gang stepped into the Shadowmoon Castle : Castle Interior.

On their way straight to the boss stage, Zhang Yang informed the gang about the challenge notice from Imperial Sky. Han Ying Xue and the gang were all pumped with the will to fight, fiercely practicing their formation and moves, while Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were casually talking to each other.

But, a guy with a head full of women was obviously not on the same page as Zhang Yang, as he was bombarded with female bust, hip theory to the point that he rolled his eyes backwards entirely. He could not stand it anymore, so he rubbed the bandages at his side.

Another 2 hours had passed, Han Ying Er and the gang were almost done with the training at last. Zhang Yang had decided to challenge the dungeon once, because he knew, it will be futile with a lot of practices alone, actual combat was the best way to find out the results of their training.

"Huh? Who dares to interfere me while I am absorbing energy?"

Following by the boss's introductory saying, the battle had finally begun.

20 seconds later, the critical moment, of the boss using the [Shift of Light Rotation] formation has begun.

Han Ying Xue and the gang swiftly retreated back by the edge of the hexagram and when the lights were resurfacing, they instantly ran to their own positions.

1 second, 2 seconds!

All lights were blocked by them, and no one had made any mistakes!

The battle continued, after 40 seconds, the second [Shift of Light

Rotation] had began. It was alright, none of them made any mistake as well!

“Alright, everyone maintain your pace, the first clear title is about to be ours!” Zhang Yang encouraged the gang.

“Noob tank, that’s easy for you to say, why don’t you switch with me and have a taste of this!” Wei Yan Er grumbled.

Actually, the most relaxed players among them at the moment were Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. Zhang Yang only needed to maintain the aggro values, and Endless Starlight was even more relaxed because all he had to do was to share the damages received from the boss!

“Hahaha!” Zhang Yang burst into laughter for a bit and said, “It was I who always had to keep the boss at bay, it’s always been tiring! Now every one of you will have a taste of what I had to go through those days back!”

“Piss off!” Wei Yan Er cried loudly.

60 seconds..... 120 seconds..... 180 seconds.....

The longer they were held in the battle, the more stressful they tend to get, and it would be more likely that they would make a mistake!

During the 13th [Shift of Light Rotation], finally, there was an error in the collaboration among Han Ying Xue and the gang. Fatty Han ran into a red light carrying a negative effect called [blue source]!

Instantly, a gigantic wolf head appeared out of the void right from the above of the boss stage, with indescribable dread, it swiped the stage with only it’s eyes and boom! A damage output of ‘-1000000’ appeared on everyone. The whole team was instantly wiped out!

“Ashes to ashes, dust to dust!” The wolf head then vanished into the void again immediately, disappearing and never to be seen again after that.

But the gang managed to put a lock it before it vanished, they wanted to see what exactly is this wolf god thing.

[God of Wolf] (Celestial, Beast)

Level:???

HP:???

Everyone felt that they had died for nothing, one by one they released their souls and returned to the cementery to report in.

“Brother Yang, hunters can tame beasts, so can they tame this God of Wolf?” both eyes of Fatty Han were shining brightly, having thoughts of capturing the Celestial boss as a pet, any bosses they encounter in the future, close to the gate of their territories, he can just release his.... wolf to settle everything!

“Wretched fatty, in your dreams, if you can get a Celestial boss as your pet, what about the other players? Do they still have anything left to play for?” Wei Yan Er shot a straight and sharp arrow at Fatty Han from her tongue.

Zhang Yang gave it a thought and asked, “Theoretically, a hunter can have the monster as a pet as long as the monster is under the beast category. But Fatty Han, what are the criteria for taming a pet?”

“One must be acquire the first aggro of the taming target, and guide the taming spell for 30 seconds. Any attack during this period of time will immediately interrupt the taming spell and put it to a stop. The higher the level of taming target, the lower the success rate of taming the target.” Fatty Han immediately dug out the description of the skill and read it out loud.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “So do you have any idea on how to be the first aggro of a Celestial boss and survive for 30 seconds long?”

“It seems impossible!”

“Furthermore, even if you succeeded in keeping a Celestial boss as your pet, the standard will decrease a lot when it reaches the hands of the players! Just like taming an elite beast as a pet, will the HP and attack of the pet be the same as it was before it was being tamed?”

“No it will not!” Fatty Han mellowed down a little bit.

Chapter 174: Take down

“Haiya -----” Fatty Han sighed dejectedly and said, “Excited over nothing!”

“Alright, let’s pick up our corpses and go!” Zhang Yang smiled and said, “I have issued a very clear notice with only one word - ‘Accepted’, so you guys won’t leave me alone to be embarrassed, right?”

“Serves you right!” Wei Yan Er turned towards Zhang Yang and stuck out her tongue at him.

The gang went back into the dungeon and revived. After replenishing their statuses, they activated their aura skills immediately. If this act did not become a habit for them, they will easily forget to activate their aura skills every time they are in combat. Although a boost of 2%, 4% of did not seem like much, when the players’ basic properties are higher, the boost will still be very significant.

In Zhang Yang’s case, without activating his [vitality aura], he only has 7720HP, but after activating it, he will have 8030HP. That is a total boost of 310 HP to the players!

After everyone got in their assigned position, under the instruction of Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the gang, all 6 of them, moved one step forward and triggered the boss battle.

“Huh? Who dares to interfere me while I am absorbing energy?” Master Waller spoke a line that now sounded familiar. With both eyes opened and a roar full of rage, he instantly swung his big bad claw and slashed at Zhang Yang.

[block!]

Zhang Yang immediately fought back, stacking 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] and unleashed a flurry of attacks, doing what he does best. The faster they struck, the lesser times they were required to move, undoubtedly decreasing the difficulty of the battle!

20 seconds had passed, the first [Shift of Light Rotation].

40 seconds had passed, the second [Shift of Light Rotation].

60 seconds had passed.....

95%, 90%, 85%..... the HP amount of Master Waller was depleting at a slow rate! Firstly, it must be due to his overly high HP amount. Secondly, the gang had to move multiple times after awhile, having no opportunity to comfortably unleash their damage output.

After countless hours practicing, Han Ying Xue and the others had mastered the movement quite well, and their cooperation was so much better. Hitting into each other, blocking each others' ways, those are phenomenon that will not happen again, ever!

60%, the entire team got wiped out.

Next attempt!

53%, the entire team got wiped out again.

Another attempt!

45%, the entire team got wiped out..... 34%, the entire team got wiped out..... 22%, the entire team.....

The gang had lost count of how many times, 6 or 7 times, have they been wiped out. But no one was frustrated by that, instead, they were burning with the will to fight! Because every time they were wiped out, bit by bit they progressed, and they were getting closer and closer to empty down the HP of the boss!

8%, the entire team got wiped out! 5%, the entire team got wiped out! 3%, the entire team got wiped out! 4%, the entire team got wiped out!

Having pushing themselves to deplete the HP of the boss down to only within 10%, the gang were starting to become impulsively greedy. After a few attempts of being wiped out when the HP of the boss were very low, they were getting frustrated!

So Zhang Yang immediately shouted to get their attention, "Let's go back to the city to repair our equipment, and then we shall be back, and we shall prevail!"

Having been wiped out for almost a dozen times, their equipment were all in red letters, wearing those equipment on their body was basically useless as the equipment had no effect at all before repair.

So the gang quickly tore their own teleportation scrolls and headed back straight to the city, where they found themselves the blacksmith to repair their equipment. Afterwards, they headed straight back to to dungeon.

This trip took them about half an hour, Zhang Yang could not help himself but sympathized, them, saying, "It's such a pity that Hundred Shots haven't be able to learn [repairment robot], if he did, we could have place a Repairment Robot in the dungeon and save us the trip of getting back and forth for our equipment repair."

"Zhan Yu, where can I learn this [repairment robot]?" Hundred Shots asked.

"Level 50 Dungeon, the Poison Fireland. There is a possibility that the blueprint of the [repairment robot] will be dropped by slaying the final boss! But it requires a professional level of an engineer, can you learn it?"

"Not now, but I am still about half a month away from reaching level 50, and my current proficiency is at advanced level with 328 points. I will definitely reach full points before I reach level 50!"

Talking all the way through their journey, Zhang Yang and the gang had reentered the dungeon and stood in front of Master Waller.

Looking at the time, Zhang Yang told the gang, "This will be our final chance today! It's about to be 12 am, the dungeon will be refreshed, by then, we will have to repeat the whole dungeon, battling the four bosses and clearing those annoying creeps and monsters! So, this time we -----"

"We must prevail!" The gang cried together, their morale soaring in desperation!

"Very well, in position!"

The gang went straight to their own positions and stood readily, as this would be their last attempt of the day, and if they failed, they will have to repeat everything on the next day! No one can accept that kind of

outcome!

“Huh? Who dares to interfere me while I am absorbing energy?” the loathed dialogue spoken by Master Waller sparked the battle.

90%..... 60%..... 30%.....

With their proficient cooperation, movement between positions, and the consecutively successful blocks, Waller's HP was decreasing gradually.

10%!

Again, it was the moment of life and death! Zhang Yang and the gang had failed at the very last moment multiple times!

“Keep it up, steady, steady!” Zhang Yang was not pressured at all, because he knew, all he had to do was to focus on slashing the boss with all his might, slashing away Waller's large amount of HP with his sword, one swing after another!

8%..... 4%..... 2%!

The light around suddenly dimmed.

“Don't rush yourselves, a 4-second of time is not enough to take down a 390000 HP. Fall back and keep your distance. We just need to do this one more round!” Zhang Yang quickly shouted, as he was worried that someone would really went over their head and go all out, leaving their own post.

Han Ying Xue and the others retreated backwards, everyone was nervous from head to toe, because this was their one attempt that was nearest to winning the battle!

2 seconds later, the 6 points of the lights on the hexagram started to flash up.

Moving position! Block!

Sun Xing Yu, in position! Wei Yan Er, in position! Hundred Shots, in position! Daffodil Daydream, in position! Han Ying Xue, in position! Fatty Han..... sun of the beach, he went to the wrong direction!

Zhang Yang immediately moved his body and blocked the last orange beam of light that shot out!

Made it!

1%!

0%!

“I am the son of the god of the wolf, the leader of the wolves, I should be the one who conquer the world! No! No! NO -----” Master Waller gave out a thunderous roar, raising his claws towards the sky and howled, then he unwillingly turned into a stream of white light. A stream of gold coins poured out like pillars of gold onto the ground, piling up into a mountain of gold!

“Ding! You and your team have slayed Master Waller, you have acquired 250050 experience points (50 points for team effort)!”

“Ding! You and your team has acquired the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Death Mode) First Clear Title, as the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your name will be published on the list of the First Clear title, allowing the world to praise you!”

“We made it!”

Everyone was cheering very hard. Even though Waller was not the highest level among the bosses they have slayed before, but it was undoubtedly the most difficult boss they had encounter in their whole gaming experience! Before this, none of them had ever put in so much time and effort in training!

Their emotions that were contained within them for the past 2 days had finally met their way out at that instant, the unspeakable joy! The men were hugging into each other, while Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were hugging each other as well! Only Sun Xing Yu seemed calm, but a even then, faint smile flickered across her lips.

Zhang Yang entered their name ‘Lone Desert Smoke’, and the server immediately congratulated them on the big screens with a lot of announcements!

“Server Announcement: Lone Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Death Mode)First Clear Title, their great deeds will be published on the list of the Death Mode First Clear title (China Region). Please cheer for them!”

“Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Leader) has acquired the Shadowmoon Castle: Castle Interior (Death Mode)First Clear Title, acquired server reward 10 gold pieces, skill point 1, all reputation points of the alliance 500 points!”

“Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Leader) has acquired.....”

In just an instant, the players in the China Region were bombarded once again by the latest news!

On the forum, they were still going all out in the war of words, debating on which guild would win over the First Clear title of the dungeon, it was intense! It was believed that if the two sides were to meet in real life, they would have clashed and started a real-life PK! Just as their debate was on it's peak, the sudden victory of the Lone Desert Smoke in acquiring the First Clear title had finally put an end to the contest between the two guilds!

The battle for the first clear of dungeon had concluded, however, the players on the forum had started a new trend of upsurging topic, making a lot of noise on the region channel.

“Brother Yang, I think I have dragged you guys down a little back there, again, I'm going to become a laughing stock, looked down by people.” Fatty Han secretly told Zhang Yang.

“..... don't worry about it, no one ever had a high opinion of you!”

“Sun of the beach!” Fatty Han immediately spat the words out from his mouth, then he said, “Haiyah, I'm not that kind of caliber, being so careless in many ways. You want me to fight, no problem! But playing games that requires considerations in so many aspects, that is definitely out of my habit!”

“Indeed!”

“Pui! And you claim to be my best buddy! Shouldn’t you be comforting me a bit?”

“Haha, you are normally shameless, ain’t I right?” Zhang Yang said.

“From now onward, I better not join you guys in exploring new dungeons! But, brother Yang, we are brothers, right? After clearing the new dungeons, remember to bring me some equipment or gears!”

“Fatty, are you seriously thinking about this? Actually, if you really want to stay in the party, I believe no one will have a opinion on this!”

“They aren’t saying anything, but I still need my face intact! It’s fine, brother Yang, let’s do it this way!”

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts, and then he did not try to convince Fatty Han anymore, since he had already planned to put Fatty Han and Endless Starlight to the second party in the lead. As they have experience in succeeding, he believes that the second party will do well. Endless Starlight has so much potential in him, even though he has not achieved any high standards yet, but it is obvious that he is improving.

“Loot time! Loot time!” Wei Yan Er cheered with joy.

Knowing from the look of their faces, they were obviously looking forward to the loot. Checking up on the loots after defeating a high difficulty boss was definitely a very joyful thing to do.

Master Waller was a Gray-Silver boss, so naturally there would not be any Yellow-Gold equipment among the loot. However, as the boss for the final defense of the dungeon, he was generous enough to drop 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, with an addition of a glittering green plate.

Wei Yan Er has a pair of sharp eyes, immediately she picked that piece of plate up. Because everyone was very much looking forward to the boss dropping a [Guild Upgrade Order], and among all the items and equipment, that was the only item that looked similar to the [Guild Upgrade Order]!

Immediately, she selected the ‘show info’ box and the information

popped up on the user interface of the gang.

[Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] (Gray-Silver, Consumable)

Use: Upgrades a level 1 guild into a level 2 guild.

Required: Guild master.

“It really came out!” the whole gang could not help themselves but muttered among each other.

With a smile revealing his satisfaction, Zhang Yang said, “This is the first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] in the whole game, if we were to auction it out, it’s price might increase to the millions!”

Wei Yan Er immediate had her eyes filled with golds, and she said, “Then let’s auction it out first!”

“Silly girl, a [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] gives a 20% additional experience points of the experience points that the player earns, and it will also allow players to buy a battle wolf for mounting purposes. Do you not want those?” Zhang Yang smiled while saying it.

“Owh..... “with money on the left hand, level and mount on the right, Wei Yan Er was conflicted by the choices at hand. She was flustered to the point that she was red in the face!

Chapter 175: The second piece of [Guild Upgrade Order]

“Silly Yu, don’t always pick on my little Yan Er!” Han Ying Xue stood up for the unfair treatment.

Zhang Yang laughed, and then he said, “The first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] will be used by ourselves, there’s no doubt about it. The 2nd, 3rd pieces and more to come shall be auctioned out for funds! The dungeon is about to be refreshed, let’s come again tomorrow to bust our luck again, there might be another drop of this!”

“Really?” Wei Yan Er had returned to her joyful state.

Zhang Yang nodded, and then he said, “I have some points of the luck attribute, which may slightly increase the rate of dropping additional items!”

“What do you mean?” everyone was confused.

“For example, this Master Waller will constantly drop 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment. So, depending on which equipment pieces would he dropped out of the 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and the 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, that all depends on luck! But, this piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] is an additional drop as reward. Whether it drops or not, it will not affect the number of the other loots dropped! The drop rate for this additional reward will be affected by the player who has the highest luck attribute points among the party that slayed the boss!”

“Oh!” Everyone understood.

Following the event where everyone in the gang agreed upon it, the first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] is now officially belonged to Zhang Yang, going straight into his backpack.

Zhang Yang immediately used his position as the Guildmaster to bring up the configuration of the guild, and he selected the ‘upgrade’ button in the menu of the upgrade option.

“Ding! Lone Desert Smoke is eligible for level 2 upgrade, proceed in upgrading Lone Desert Smoke to level 2 guild, this will consume the [Level 2 Guild Order Upgrade], continue?”

Continue of course!

“Upgrading.....”

A progress bar appeared on the configuration interface almost immediately, progressing in quite a slow manner, it required about 30 seconds to complete.

10%..... 30%..... 70%..... 100%!

“Ding! Congratulations, Lone Desert Smoke is now a Level 2 Guild!”

Instantly, all members of the Lone Desert Smoke heard the system voice notification over their ears.

“Server announcement: Congratulations to Lone Desert Smoke for being the first Level 2 Guild in the China region! All members of Lone Desert Smoke will receive additional 100% experience points as a bonus for the next 3 days, the cost for repairing equipment, inserting socket gemstones, identifying equipment will be reduced by 50% as reward!”

Boom! The members of the Lone Desert Smoke had not yet calmed themselves for their own guild achievement in acquiring the First Clear title, and immediately, they were boiled in excitement once again!

Pride! Glory!

Those were the emotions of the members of Lone Desert Smoke at the moment, especially those who were walking down the city paths, showing off their character information. Seeing other players passing by, they would purposely stopped, worried that others would not see the guild title above their heads!

What is honor? This is honor!

Zhang Yang sent a secret message to Han Ying Er, saying, “Witchy Snow, send a guild invitation to Daffodil Daydream.”

----- as his settings only allowed officers and above to invite people to

their guild, only Han Ying Er, Wei Yan Er, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Sun Xing Yu and himself had the authority to do so.

“Why? Trying to win her heart over using your current victor’s mood?” Han Ying Er instantly replied.

“If that was what I really have in mind, I would have won your heart over first!”

“As expected, my looks are the prettiest of all and all men shall bow before me!”

“Cut the crap and start working!”

Within a short amount of time, the system sent him a notification, ‘Daffodil Daydream has joined the guild!’

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, and he said, “Can’t see that you have the potential to be a madame! Such great skills in tricking others to sell themselves over!” the successful recruit of a future superstar magic-caster had made his day.

Han Ying Xue, “.....”

Wei Yan Er picked up the 3 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, one after another.

[The Black Wolf's Armor] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +96

Strength: +48

Agility: +16

[unidentified]

Required Level: 40

As Wei Yan Er had already possessed a similar level 40 [Sol Brave Chest Plate], and Endless Starlight had also possessed a [Sincere Soul's Chest Plate], so this piece of armor naturally went to Zhang Yang. The remaining 2 pieces of the Gray-Silver equipment were leather armor and cloth armor,

which were divided among Han Ying Xue and the others. As for the 7 pieces of Green-Copper equipment, all that went straight into Zhang Yang's backpack.

"Alright, the dungeon has been completed, everyone can have a good night sleep tonight!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"That's right!" Wei Yan Er nodded continuously, and then she said, "I had a dream yesterday night, it was about me taking down the boss all by myself! And this morning, when I was thinking how to block the light in class, I was called up by my teacher to answer some questions. My first reply was, I will block the yellow light, don't bother about me! That made everyone else in the class laughed!"

"Hahaha!" the whole gang was laughing out loud.

Wei Yan Er was annoyed, and she said, "Hmph! Even you guys are laughing, you guys are so bad!"

Later, everyone tore off their teleportation scroll and shoof! Everyone was back in White Jade City. It was about to be 12am, so everyone said their goodbyes and went offline for a good night's sleep.

One night passed, and when Zhang Yang went back on to check the official forum, what he found was that Lone Desert Smoke had conquered the whole forum by borrowing their leading party's winning momentum, the forum pages were crawling with posts about how their leading party secured the First Clear title of the dungeon. Meanwhile, the Imperial Sky had crashed down into the ground, with nothing to defend themselves. The forceful Mountain Cleaver who came with confidence earlier on could not even make a fart's worth of noise.

Zhang Yang received countless friend requests in his information station, luckily, he did not have to reply one by one, he could just switch off the whole thing and be done with it.

After logging into the game, he went straight to the Identifying Shop and the Jewelry shop to be slaughtered with the high prices. Firstly, he passed the [Black Wolf's Amour] over to the Identifier for identification. And truth to be told, this piece of item did not even have any special effects,

with only two extra empty sockets. This was a total bad luck!

But looking at the bright side, for the coming 3 days, all the cost for identification will be decreased by 50%, at least the system did not fully suck him dry.

The first clear of the castle interior had been taken down, plus there were no special quests or target to be achieved at the moment, so Zhang Yang started focusing on buying [Solid Iron Bar]s. He currently has 4400 available empty slots, but so far only 1100 slots were occupied!

But this kind of thing did not require him to do it himself, because the price that he offered is 0.9 gold for each iron bar. Although the price is a little lower than what the auction house had to offer, considering the 20% commission which will be taken away, it will be more profitable for players to sell them to the Little Merchandize which is owned by Zhang Yang!

So what Zhang Yang could do now was to build up his advertisement on this as much as possible so that more Miners would know his Little Merchandize shop was currently purchasing [Solid Iron Bar]. However, he could not make the deal too obvious, because he was considered to be one of the famous stars in the game, having no idea of how many people watched him closely at his every move. If people were to discover this, they would also start purchasing the iron bars, and that would undoubtedly seize most of the market stocks! And when the number of goods are greater than the market demand, the price for the [Solid Iron Bar] will decline, and the profits will naturally be lower!

So Zhang Yang gave his thoughts about it for half a day, at last, he still decided to put the [Solid Iron Bar] onto the racks, selling them at the price of 1 gold for each, with the effort of trying to hide his true agenda. Anyway, no one knew exactly how many [Solid Iron Bar] has he received, because all sellers will deal with Natalia, the NPC with a pair of big boobs who was responsible for purchasing the iron bars from the sellers.

For these 3 days, there would also be an addition of 100% experience points added onto the experience points earned by the players. So it was

the best time to grind up their levels. So, Zhang Yang picked up the pace and gathered Han Ying Xue and the others. Then they headed to the Centaur Palace's 1st floor to level up! Because of the rich amount of experience points to be offered through grinding during this period of time, Wei Yan Er skipped her classes, while Hundred Shots and the other skipped their work just to be there, every single one of them were present at the gathering!

The gang shot their levels up by a lot after a day of grinding, each of them rising by 2 levels at the least! Unfortunately, the effects of different additional experience points could not be stacked after one another. It only picked the greatest effect among them, limiting everyone to only have an increase of 100% additional experience points based on the experience points they earned, including Sun Xing Yu who possesses the [Heaven's Pearl].

Among the 8 of them, 6 of them had made it to the top level list of the White Jade City! Currently, Han Ying Xue was listed as number 1 with level 45, Fatty Han was listed at number 2 with also level 45, Zhang Yang, Sun Xing Yu, and Wei Yan Er were listed at number 7, 8, and 9 respectively, with all 3 of them at level 44. Daffodil Daydream was at level 43, where she was listed at number 14. Hundred Shots and Endless Starlight were at level 42, it was just a little more before they can make it up on the list. However, if they continued to grind on the next day, they would definitely make it up onto the list!

Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han had made it up to the leveling list of the whole China region, being the 7th and the 9th respectively!

During the night, because the castle interior had been refreshed, Zhang Yang regrouped his gang and went straight into the area to grind.

With the confidence of clearing the dungeon once before, the gang went to the dungeon with a different attitude. Without the pressure of dying for a righteous cause if they failed, they repeated the dungeon easily and slayed Master Waller on their first attempt this time around!

God seemed to be taking care of them, and when Wei Yan Er was looting

from the boss's dead body, another piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] was among the drop!

Everyone cheered instantly.

Back in the main city, Zhang Yang published an information under the name of his Little Merchandize Shop, saying that, 'Extra! Extra! Tomorrow at 7pm, The Little Merchandize Shop will be auctioning a [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order], interested parties, please come with your money!'

The information was published just briefly, and Zhang Yang had already received numerous secret messages from Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman and the others, all trying to bargain with him, hopefully that he could sell it to them because of their previous engagements! Humbly Gentleman was also present in the lively situation, aggressively commanding Zhang Yang to sell the [Guild Upgrade Order] to him straight away with the price of 10,000 gold pieces!

Zhang Yang had already published the information, because he did not intend to go back on his own words, he had to decline the offers from Snow Seeker and the others, and of course, he replied Humbly Gentleman with only one word, idiot!

However, the number of people sending Zhang Yang secret messages had began to increase, all of them being Guildmasters! Some of the guilds might not be large, and their progress in exploring the dungeons were slow, but most of them are rich, and money was never a problem to them! Slamming an in-game item [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] on the table should be considered as a large-scale advertisement effect! It would be even better if the system could make a server announcement!

Therefore, every single one of them were polishing their fists and fangs, ready to put up a good bargain for the night by tomorrow! To progress by clearing dungeons, their were way out of their leagues, but to progress using cash money, every single one of them are professionals!

Therefore, Zhang Yang could not oversee that fact and sell the piece directly to Snow Seeker and the others!

Zhang Yang took a piece of glove that he acquired from the dungeon

previously to be identified, before he replaced the last piece of level 20 equipment on him with this piece of equipment.

[Pale Gauntlet] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +48

Strength: +24

Agility: +8

[Level 1 Socket]

Level Required: 40

By inserting a [vitality gemstone] on the equipment, and by activating his [vitality aura], Zhang Yang could reach a total HP of 8960, a strength of 347, and an attack between 816-868!

Although the guild had already been upgraded to level 2, getting all sorts of benefits of the level 2 guild required elevating the experience points of the guild to 100%! Fortunately, there were guild points as incentives, and members of the guild were very enthusiastic. Moreover, every member would be entitled to enjoy the welfare of the guild, there no reason for anyone to get lazy!

However, to fill up the guild experience points up to 100% required about 10 days more or so, they could only take it easy at the time being.

Chapter 176: Humbly Gentleman The Buffoon

The next morning, logging in to the game, Han Ying Xue and the rest were all present, waiting for him to regroup with them to depart for the Centaur Palace 1st floor, to grind their levels of course.

Needless to say, they were current having an extra 100% additional experience points, but even if they did not have such beneficial effect, the dense number of the melee monsters were also suitable for group sweeping, it was a sacred paradise for leveling up! Because the entrance of the valley was also very well hidden, unless you receive a quest navigation that is related to the place, normal players would not be able to locate the place.

Of course, if players fell down the cliff like how Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight did, then it would be a whole different story!

After a full day of grinding, everyone got a flash of golden light through their body, twice to be precise, they had progressed up by 2 levels, consecutively! And now, every single one of them are on the White Jade City's top level list! Among them, Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han had conquered the first and the second places respectively on the top level list of the whole China region, with both of them at level 47!

With such incredible speed in leveling up, it was natural for the players in China region to feel extremely surprised. But very soon, everyone understood, they had an additional of 100% additional experience points upon the experience points they earned!

But for those clever ones, they would know something was not right, even with the addition of 100% additional experience, a player would still require one day to level up by 1 level. On the other hand, grinding through slaying monsters like there is no tomorrow, they themselves would still require 5 days just to level up!

It was certain, that the strong players on the list must have found some

sacred paradise for them to grind!

All Guildmasters from all the guilds were not idiots themselves, and of course, instantly, they related Zhang Yang to the previous achievement of acquiring the First Clear title for the first Yellow-Gold Boss. So immediately, they planted spies into the Lone Desert Smoke with the goals to locate Zhang Yang and the others' whereabouts!

However, even though they could see clearly that Zhang Yang and his gang were located within the Land of the Red Cloud, their specific coordinates were yet to be known, they had to go and find out by themselves!

The map of the Land of the Red Cloud was incredibly vast, and the valley where the centaurs were located is extremely far-off. If they were to find them by then, Zhang Yang and the others would have reached level 50 or above, ready to remove themselves from that part of the map!

After dinner, Zhang Yang logged into the game around 6:30pm, saddled up and headed towards his Little Merchandize Shop to get ready for the auction.

The moment when he was arriving from afar to his shop, he saw a bunch of people gathering around his shop, wandering around the entrance trying to stick their necks in to peek around. Their movements and expressions revealed their anxiousness. Zhang Yang kept his battle horse and walked towards the door to take a look. Holy moly! His shop was also occupied from the inside, crowded with people!

The merrier the better! That would only mean the competition would become even more intense, and the auction price of the item would become even higher! It was supposed to be good news, but when Zhang Yang saw that most of the people in the shop were actually members of The Dominators, the guild symbols above their heads showed it all! Rage filled his heart, it was outrageous!

At least 90% of the people within the shop are the members of The Dominators!

To purchase a [Guild Upgrade Order], it was sufficient for each guild to

send only one member over to make the transaction. Sending tons of men over, they were obviously here not for the [Guild Upgrade Order], but they were actually here to stir things up!

As the game's setting prohibited players from walking through solid objects, as long as The Dominators fully occupied the space of the shop with their bodies, no other players can enter the shop! Furthermore, main cities prohibited PK battle, everyone was invincible in their own existence, it would be impossible to kill other players and step over their dead bodies to get by!

With a face full of rage, Zhang Yang forcefully calmed himself down. Then he walked up to the people at the roadside and asked, "Brother, are you here for the auction of the [Guild Upgrade Order]?"

"Yea!" the person who replied was a human magic caster named Falling Maple, "But there is no way we are able to go in, how to participate in the auction! F*ck this sh*t! The Dominators are really domineering in their way! If I am the one who gets the upgrade order, I will level up my guild, summon 20,000 players and kill them everyday over and over again!"

There were more people at the side revealing their dissatisfaction, it seemed that the selfish act of The Dominators had gone so far that it triggered the rage of righteous of the public!

Zhang Yang grinned deep down his heart, thinking over about how despicable this Humbly Gentleman could be, to use this kind of lowly means to get to him? So he spoke with clear voice, "Everyone, everyone! I assure you, today, everyone gets to go in to the shop! As long as you provide the correct amount of money, you will have a chance to bid for the purchase of the guild upgrade order!"

The few dozens of people standing by the turned their attentions towards Zhang Yang, with their face full of questions.

Zhang Yang laughed and brought up his personal character information with a swipe of hand.

'Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of White Jade Castle, Warrior of the Centaur, Level 46, Human, Male, Guardian Warrior,

[Lone Desert Smoke].’

It’s such a long title! It’s awesome!

“Zhan Yu, it is really Zhan Yu!”

“That’s incredible! I’m shaking just reading that!”

“Anyone interested to join my guild? I shall grant you a the position of vice president, 100,000 cash as monthly reward!”

The people outdoor were agitated with excitement.

“Hahaha,” Humbly Gentleman put up a good man face and walked towards the crowd, and then he said, “So here comes the crowd, the auction for the [Guild Upgrade Order] shall be concluded with a high price, aiya, Guildmaster Zhan Yu is going to make big money this time! Congratulations!”

Falling Maple and the others saw him and revealed their anger on their faces, and shouted, “Humbly Gentleman, what is the meaning of this, bringing all your men to clog up the shop! How are we going to enter the shop to participate in the auction?”

Humbly Gentleman smiled pridefully, saying, "Guys, you are blaming the wrong person! A shop is meant for selling things, and there are no rules about who can enter or who cannot enter the shop. And the saying goes, the shop welcomes the world! Are you saying that everyone needs your approval to enter the shop? I said, one cannot be too arrogant!”

Sun of the beach! Everyone who was present could only think of one sentence to express their feeling. This son of a b*tch was not only capable of blatant self-flattery, but went on to accuse others of being stepping over unseen boundaries! At such a level of hypocrisy, it was more apt to call him a b*tch, rather than the son of one!

Zhang Yang smiled, and he said, “Some people just like to be smarty-pants, but in truth, these people are just boneheads!”

Even though Zhang Yang did not point out the name of the person he was talking about, but Humbly Gentleman had already condemned

himself to the topic, so he grinned and said, “Zhan Yu, let me put this straight to your ears today! That piece of [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] of yours can only be sold to me, and also, hmph hmph! If you refuse my toast, then you shall be forced to drink a forfeit!”

He put up his left hand and opened up to show his five fingers, and then he said, “500 pieces of gold! If you dare to give a price higher than this, from now onwards, hmph hmph, the customers that are in the shop right now shall come again everyday, and your business shall be zero!”

Falling Maple and the others were furious beyond words even before Zhang Yang could speak. They stepped forward to curse Humbly Gentleman for being a shameless Guildmaster, such a waste!

The more they cursed him, the happier he became. He is born a masochistic b*tch, feeling an itch when nobody cursed him.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, “Gentleman, there is no need to bother yourself arguing with the likes of him, putting yourself to the same level as him!”

“Zhan Yu, let see how long more can you keep that smile of yours on your face! It’s about 7pm now, you better hurry up and get ready for the auction! You are not going back on your words and give up on the auction for today, are you? Tsk tsk tsk, then we shall have this as the front page news for tomorrow!” Humbly Gentleman laughed as he felt prouder and prouder as the moment passed.

Previously, he was tricked of tens thousands of gold pieces by Zhang Yang, and it had bothered him since then, making his life miserable until now. If he could return the ‘favor’ as ruthlessly as possible, how could he rest peacefully in his sleeps for the rest of his days?

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Hypocrite, what a shame, how much can a frog know while staying in the bottom of the well all the time? One cannot talk to summer insects about the ice!”

Humbly Gentleman was provoked, so he spoke, “Bastard! What’s with all the freaking idioms!” As he was low in his cultural level, he hated people who loved to use idioms and poems the most.

Zhang Yang gave another smile and said, “When you have your own land properties in the future, you shall understand how idiotic you were today! Just like a buffoon putting up a great and entertaining performance for me to enjoy!”

“Hmph hmph, then laugh all you want now while you still can! Because later, you can only cry as much as you want!” Humbly Gentleman spoke out of his rage.

Zhang Yang shook his head, immediately he pulled up his land property setting and went into the configuration screen of his Little Merchandize shop. He can operate his shop at any point as long as he wanted to, only accessing the storage, checking the store’s warehouse and monitoring the shop’s marketing situation required him to be in the shop himself!

Entering the Little Merchandize’s blacklist setting, Zhang Yang selected to blacklist a guild. After he entered the name ‘The Dominators’ into the entry box, he smiled and spoke to Humbly Gentleman, “Witness the great magic that I am about to show you!”

“What -----” Humbly Gentleman had just begun to speak, but in a sudden, he realized that the men he arranged to stand guard within the shop had been respawned to a location 10 meters away from the entrance of the shop!

The members of The Dominators were at loss from the looks of their faces, having no idea on how did they miraculously been teleported out from the shop! Some of them attempted to rush back into the shop, but the moment they put their first steps into the shop, they were instantly repulsed, as if there was an invisible wall in front of them.

“Boss -----” The members of The Dominators immediately sent Humbly Gentleman secret messages, saying that “I cannot get into the shop anymore! The system said that I am being refused to be accepted as the guest of the Little Merchandize shop!”

“Boss!”

“Boss -----”

“Boss.....”

Similar secret messages were received and shown in front of Humbly Gentleman.

In just an instant, Humbly Gentleman's face turned ghastly pale, it was not a wonder that Zhang Yang was fearless towards all his actions and words. So, the owner of the land property had the power to expel the guests! Humbly Gentleman had not possessed any land properties before, and he thought that what he was doing can become a major hindrance to Zhang Yang. But now, his actions were completely wasted and he became a buffoon that had put up a great and entertaining performance! He had lost his face all the way down to the ground!

Zhang Yang did a gesture of welcome at Falling Maple and the others, “Gentlemen, the space is vast, welcome in!”

Falling Maple and the others were laughing out loud, one by one they passed by Humbly Gentleman before entering the Little Merchandize shop. They did not forget to show him their contented faces, provoking Humbly Gentleman to the point that he was having metal meltdown, it was marvelous!

“Zhan Yu, you -----” Humbly Gentleman had finally exploded with anger.

But Zhang Yang replied with a “Aiya” and said, “It is almost showtime, I have to get ready for the auction, sorry that I cannot accompany you, Mr.Hypocrite!”

“Stay there!” Humbly Gentleman went into rage, and just when he was trying to move his legs to pursue Zhang Yang, he crashed into an invisible wall and instantly, he was bounced back!

‘Ding! You have been listed as the rejected customer of the Little Merchandize shop, you cannot enter!’

The system announcement gently informed Humbly Gentleman by his ear, making him even more angry to the point that he almost puked blood!

After the humiliation he had sentenced upon Humbly Gentleman,

Zhang Yang's mood had improved a lot, so he whistled along while waiting for the clock to strike 7. Awhile later, other than Sun Xing Yu, Han Ying Xue and the gang had arrived at the scene to witness the fiery scene of the auction that yet to happen.

The number of people were increasing, although the Little Merchandize shop currently was a 4-story shop, but the crowds were very tight, making the situation so much merrier.

Zhang Yang immediately issued a notice under the name of Little Merchandize, saying, "Ladies and gentlemen, as it is too crowded at the moment, so we shall only entertain the customers who are here for the auction for the Guild Upgrade Order from 7 pm to 7:30 only! So, for those who does not wish to participate in the auction activity, please leave the premises for the time being, we appreciate your understanding. In addition, each guild just needs to send a representative on the line. If more than 2 members from a guild is present, I will have to use my right as the owner of the shop to kick players out! Your understanding will be greatly appreciated!"

After 3 consecutive times of publishing the notice, the crowd finally dispersed, the people left the shop premises one after another. But there were still some players without guild names wandering around in the shop.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, secretly he told himself, so that Mr.Hypocrite has not given up on him yet? Making his members to quit the guild and come forth to stir things up again?

Once again, he pulled up his blacklist option in his land property setting, and by the name of the owner of the shop, he specifically put certain players' names into the blacklist list. He did not even have to identify the message of the players, as long as he confirmed, the system will record automatically.

Shoof shoof shoof, a lot more players had been kicked out of the shop.

Finally, it was 7pm, Zhang Yang officially began the auction for the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order].

“This is the moment that we have been waiting for, now, let’s begin the auction for the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order]! You can bring up the item search page and enter ‘Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order’ or ‘Guild Upgrade Order’ or ‘Upgrade’ as the keywords to search and locate the item. Then you can view the current price of that item through the refresh button!”

“The base price for the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] is 50000 pieces of gold, each increment of the price must not be less than 1000 pieces of gold, and you can increase it as much as you want, to infinity! Everyone can freely increase the price, and when the price does not increase for 20 seconds, I will announce the price of the item and count 3 times. If no one is there to increase the price after the count of 3, the item will be sold!”

Zhang Yang smiled for a bit and said, “Then, let’s begin!”

50000!

100000!

150000!

In front of Zhang Yang, there was a display, the above shows the changing price of the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] at all times, at the side of the price is the bidder’s ID. The price will not be scrambled, because once a player has placed a bid, the player’s money will immediately be deducted by the system, when the amount of his or her bid is overtaken by other’s bid, the deducted money will be returned back to them to prevent anyone from bidding with malicious intent.

Han Ying Xue and the others surrounded around Zhang Yang, they were all pleased to see the drastic rise of the price. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were not short in money, so they just loved to enjoy the process of making money, but it was different for Fatty Han and the others. For them, tens of thousands of dollars is considered as an incredibly huge income!

“It’s still rising, it’s still rising!” Daffodil Daydream was screaming with excitement.

200000! 400000! 500000!

The price had increased to where the public can manage within such a

short time frame. The second piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] is not as precious as the first piece, but still was one of a kind by it's own. It did not matter it is a large guild or a small guild, everyone has the urge to own it, and take the opportunity to strongly promote their own guild!

Therefore, the price has not reached the bottom line of acceptance of these particular players. The price was still increasing, just not as swiftly as before.

600000! 700000!

The price seemed to have frozen at 700000, and it stayed the same for quite awhile. Zhang Yang waited for a full 20 seconds before he started to speak, "The current price is at 700000 pieces of gold! 700000 going once..... 700000 going twice..... 70 going thrice...."

1000000!

The price on the display screen suddenly changed, increasing by almost 50% margin!

Zhang Yang was stunned, not because of the unexpected change in price, but because of the person's ID who placed the bid ----- Snow Seeker!

What a rich woman!

Chapter 177: High Price

In his previous life, the rumor that went around was that the Guild master of the Crimson Rage was a very rich person possessing a high profit earning cosmetic company. The company happened to have the name 'Crimson', founded by Snow Seeker herself.

In his previous life, Snow Seeker might not have made it into the list of top 10 players in the China region, but she was definitely one of the top 10 when it comes to fame! On the official website of the game company, there were always special interviews with One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker, and other superstar players that were widely-known in the China region!

The current in-game gold piece had dropped to the ratio of 1:3, but 1,000,000 pieces of gold was also the equivalent to 3,000,000 dollars. Snow Seeker must have been a big-budget player, that was a total gamble at a very high stake!

The biggest difference between Crimson Rage and the other guilds such as The Dominators and the Imperial Sky was that their guild master is the direct sponsor of their guild's capital. With Snow Seeker taking the lead and directing the guild, the whole guild will obey unanimously! Moreover, a guild purely consisted of only female players had a specialized recruitment drive, once a lady player joins Crimson Rage, she will never jump to another guild ever again.

That was also the main reason the Crimson Rage will dominate the other guilds like Imperial Sky, The Dominators, in becoming the Number 1 guild in the White Jade City!

Seeing her risk a million gold for a bet just like that, could Sky Shaman and Humbly Gentleman possibly follow? Investment that involves millions would require them to consult their sponsors, the decision must not lie on them alone!

Zhang Yang brought up the voice communication device with Snow Seeker, before saying with a smile, "Guild master snow is really something, to show such a big hand, gambling at such high stakes without even a

slightest flinch!”

Snow Seeker gave a light smile and said, “You have not seen me yet, how would you know that I did not flinch at all when I did it? I’m putting everything I have on the line, including my pension and funeral funds, and you believe that I didn’t lose a drop of sweat doing it?”

If he did not know about the background of Snow Seeker from his past life, Zhang Yang would have difficulty imagining a beauty who soaks herself in the game everyday would possess assets that’s worth billions! 300 million dollars may be an amount that is impossible to earn for a person’s whole life, but for a rich player like Snow Seeker, it was like a hair pulled off a bull's back to her! The question lay on whether they were willing to pay so much for a virtual guild upgrade order!”

Other rich players like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er simply play to enjoy the fun of playing the game, even casually relinquishing their positions as guild masters. To let them pay a large sum of money for a piece of guild upgrade order... absolutely impossible!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Alright, if guild master Snow says so, I shall finalize the deal, and when I make the announcement, I will definitely speed it up a little by half a second!”

1,100,000!

15 seconds later, a new price immediately popped up on the the display screen, and the player who placed the bid was from the Falling Maple who were standing at the front of the entrance of the shop not long ago!

So many rich players! Zhang Yang could not help himself but to sigh for Snow Seeker, and he said, “Guild master Snow, it’s not that I don’t want to help you, it’s just that there are too many rich people!”

Snow Seeker smiled lightly and said, “It’s alright then, I guess I shall wait for the 3rd or the 4th piece of guild upgrade order then!”

Even though she was rich, she was not an idiot. If this is the 1st piece of the guild upgrade order, there would still be higher bids to come, but the 2nd piece... It’s how it went for winners, every players will remember the

party that took down the First Clear Title of the dungeon, but no one will even bother about the party who gets the 2nd clear, or the 3rd clear of the dungeon!

20 seconds later, the price of 1,100,000 pieces of gold remained. So Zhang Yang said, "The current bid is fixed at 1,100,000 pieces of gold, no one is willing to bid higher? 1,100,000 going once... 1,100,000 going twice... 1,100,000 going thrice! Sold!"

Pak! He pressed on the button to confirm the transaction, instantly concluding the deal.

"Wow, 1,100,000! That is actually 3,300,000 dollars, and 8 persons... each person can get 300,000!" Endless Starlight got too excited that he counted it wrongly!

Wei Yan Er giggled and said, "Silly Star-Star is stupid! 3,300,000 divided by 8, that should be 500,000!"

Oh my god... another mathematics idiot had self-destructed!

Zhang Yang burst into laughter, and he said, "Actually little silly is the brightest of all! Even thought she also counted it wrongly, she was overselling it, not only she did not suffer any loss, she had something to gain!"

The words were out and the gang were all laughing.

The auction of the [Guild Upgrade Order] had been a success, so the auction activity this time around had came to an end. But since they were already there, they casually continued looking at the other goods in the shop. Many did not rush to leave the shop with the intention to check for any good stuff left in the shop.

That was the effect Zhang Yang was hoping for. Even if a piece of guild upgrade order can be auctioned out for a price of 1,100,000 gold, but it will only be tens of thousands after dividing among themselves, and that amount is only enough to be equivalent to the Little Merchandize shop's one day profit. Therefore, he did not value it much. However, the popularity of the Little Merchandize shop had been increased thanks to

the auction this time around. Although the profit of the shop still could not be compared to the system's auction house, the daily profit is definitely going to hit a new high!

The gold coins had reached the accounts, that was a solid 1,100,000 pieces of gold, without any deduction from the system! Zhang Yang immediately divided the gold coins and sent each share to the accounts of Han Ying Xue and the others, each of them received 137500 pieces of gold. He mailed over Sun Xing Yu's share.

"Everyone, hurry and trade the gold coins for cash, because the gold coins are depreciating as we speak, the longer we wait, the more we lose!" Zhang Yang told the gang.

Fatty Han and the others immediately ran out from the Little Merchandize shop as the bank is located not far away from the auction site, they could reach it by taking just a few steps out. On contrary, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were lazily hanging around with no intention to move their asses, that had provoked the curiosity of Zhang Yang on whether the both of them were really that obsessed with money, or if they were just in for the thrill of making money?

For the next 2 days, the gang continued to rely on the great opportunity offered by the addition of 100% additional experience points to grind and level up. However, the creeps and monsters in the 1st floor of the Centaur Palace are all level 40. When players reach level 48, they will no longer acquire experience points from these monsters.

Even so, within those 2 days, all of them had reached level 48, claiming the number 1 to number 8 places of the top level list of the White Jade City and the China region! It was a most dramatic, hostile takeover, because most of the players were level 42 at most. With the advantage of leading ahead by 6 or 7 levels, Zhang Yang and the gang were a full month ahead in the game!

Now they just have to wait until they reach level 50 and open up the quest door, where they will clear the Poison Fireland and head for a new region to uncover an even more intense contest ahead!

Without the addition of 100% additional experience points, and also not able to grind by killing elite monsters, Zhang Yang and the gang had found themselves instantly slowed down. So they switched their focus to the level 40 monsters in the Canyon of Scattered Feathers, with each of them leveling up by themselves.

They continued leveling up day by day by clearing the dungeons in the castle interior once every 2 days. The Yellow-Gold boss Zac and all of the bosses in the centaur palace have been aligned to respawn once in every 7 days! The boss would not be respawning until the 11th of September already.

Even with higher levels and vastly improved equipment, Zhang Yang and the gang still spent 2 days to clear the whole Centaur Palace! Looking at the bright side, the rewards were Quite abundant, and putting them in Zhang Yang's shop could earn them quite a handsome amount of income!

Zhang Yang had also harvested two [Chaos Gem]s and upgraded his backpack to increase his space by 80 slots!

This time around, Zac had dropped a whole bunch of items and equipment that were not as good as the first time around, but the loots still included 2 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and 4 pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, all of which were the highest quality level 50 equipment! Zhang Yang received a pair of boots, and he spent 100 gold coins to identify it. The attribute of the items had made him drooled for a bit.

[Lion's Blood Battle Boots] (Yellow-Gold, heavy armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +120

Strength: +48

Agility: +48

[Level 2 socket]

Equip: Absorb 200 damage every you are attacked.

Level required: 50

Daffodil Daydream had also successfully crafted the [Limitless Cape], and Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight both received a free one respectively. She crafted 8 pieces of the capes, with the remaining 6 being placed in the Little Merchandize shop for sale. They turned out to be hot sales, priced at 1000 gold for each cape. The capes were sold out within half a day, leaving Daffodil Daydream staring speechless as she viewed the results on her screen.

However, [Limitless Cape] was actually a level 50 Gray-Silver equipment, and also the first batch of the game's exclusive defense equipment! What is the most important thing for a party? Tank, obviously! No matter how poor a player is, the equipment of the tank must be complete, and this is the basic knowledge for all!

That was why Zhang Yang felt that Daffodil Daydream had priced the item too lowly! Daffodil Daydream simply did not have the business acuity. She felt that she only spent 500 gold as the cost to craft it, so selling it at 1000 gold was just enough, for a man cannot be too greedy!

What that was even more pitiful was that one of the materials for crafting the [Limitless Cape] was extremely rare, that was why Daffodil Daydream had enough to craft only 8 sets of the cape, with no possibility to mass produce.

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were placed into the second party by Zhang Yang, having both of them fully responsible for the selection of party members. Members who registered for the selection were extremely enthusiastic, and in a short period of time, both of them had picked out 8 good players. There, the new party began their challenge of the death mode of the castle interior to reclaim the land, as a training ground for the new party members.

Zhang Yang was very impatient with the on the trivia matters on the management, so he usually handed over those trivial matters over to Fatty Han and the others to manage, to ease any conflict among the members, to regularly organize activities, and to also invigorate the atmosphere of

the guild.

Over time, Zhang Yang found out that Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream were both very suitable to be in the management level!

Let's talk about Hundred Shots. He was loyal to the guild, and was viewed rather highly by all people. Every member would kindly call him uncle, even though he was actually only 30 years old! Everyone had great confidence in him.

On the other hand, Daffodil Daydream is a careful and detailed representative. The guild's only funding for guild activities is to be taken care by her, to manage equipment of tanks, oversee the treatment of the occasional equipment repair, and to buy red and blue potions. Every time she carried out a task, she would make a detailed account that which can be viewed clearly at just a glance!

Therefore, Zhang Yang had made a decision, to turn these two into professional players, so that they would have more time and energy to spend on the guild management.

He is the type of person who gets right on the job, the moment he thinks of something, he will immediately implement it!

"Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream, come over here and have a seat!" Zhang Yang had not opened up the 4th floor of the Little Merchandize shop, which was kept as a private spot for meeting purposes or other personal matters. Although players can communicate with each other through the voice communication device, it was best to meet face-to-face as it's more formal that way.

Zhang Yang smiled softly, then he said, "I hope both of you can help me by becoming Appointed Managers for the Lone Desert Smoke!"

Chapter 178: An Interesting Scene

“Appointed Managers?” Both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream gaped with their eyes wide open.

Zhang Yang smiled and explained to them. “That’s right, as appointed managers, you will receive proper salary from the guild. You will have to put all your focus into managing the guild. Take it as a real job!”

Both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream exchanged a confused and ‘hard-to-believe this was real’ kind of look. Both of them had jobs in their real life. It would be unwise for them to give up on their current job to be a virtual game manager. After all, how long could a game last for? 5 years? 10 years? It will eventually die down!

Zhang Yang laughed. “Hold on to your thoughts and listen to my explanation before you reject my proposal. So far, I will pay you 10,000 dollars as the fixed basic salary! In the future development of the guild, you’ll get appropriate bonuses!”

Both of them expressed dubious expressions. Zhang Yang continued to explain. “You see, ‘God’s Miracle’ started with around 5,000,000 players. Now, the number has risen to a staggering 170,000,000 players! This took only 2 months! This clearly demonstrates the pulling power of the game! I can be certain that the number of players would even exceed 1 billion! 2 billion, even! What does this mean then? This game is an endless, unlimited market and well of opportunities! If a guild is raised into a proper one, it could become a money-making machine!”

Hundred Shots scratched his chin and said, “Zhan Yu. It’s not that I don’t believe you! But this is just a too big decision for me to make now! I have to think of the risks and opportunities!”

Daffodil nodded.

Zhang Yang explained further, “As a guild, the perks and advantages would only come after level 50! Look at the current situation of the training grounds. The one closest to the main city is a level 10 training ground. Another area further out is the level 20 training ground, beyond

that is the level 30 area and so on! By now, I'm sure that you have experienced it first hand on how troublesome it is just to get to the training grounds. Just taking the "plane" to the training ground would take around 1 to 2 hours!"

Zhang Yang paused a while and continued to speak. "Players would need to restock and resupply, they would need to fix their equipment, and they would need to visit the auction house, banks and more. All these would require them coming back to the main city. Think of how much time is being wasted just walking back and forth!? Right now, the furthest training area would take at least 1 to 2 hours, and when the game matures enough, level 50 fields and up will appear. To save players' time, there will be a territory in the map and has a teleportation circle, linked to the city's teleportation circle! [Teleportation Scroll] can also be used to bind to the map's territory and be used to teleport there as well!"

Zhang Yang leaned his chin on a hand. "Territory could be claimed! Anyone could fight for the authority of the Territory and claim the rights to obtain the fees for the Teleportation Circle! Think of it. If we set the fees to only 1 gold per use, how much gold would we receive when 20,000,000 players use it to travel daily?"

Of course, 20,000,000 might be a little too much to expect. But since a Territory could appear elsewhere, sharing it with at least 1,000,000 players is an easy feat! Right now there are already 170,000,000 players around, and the number will rise to 1 billion or even 2 billion!

Both Daffodil Daydream and Hundred Shot was shocked beyond words!

"To claim a Territory, I would need the strength of the entire guild! I can't do this alone or with just a few players! The guild would need to be a super guild to achieve such feat! I need more than just numbers. I need the players to be strong in fights and easy to work with!"

Hundred Shot thought for a while. "Zhan Yu, aren't you the soul of the guild? So far, everyone in the guild has viewed you as their idol! Everyone would be willing to do your bidding if you said so!"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly. "I'm just but a rather skilled fighter. I can

bring a team into dungeons and claim the First Clear Achievement. That, I am good at. But to manage a guild, I don't have the patience and time for these troublesome matters. I need help. I need someone to help me settle the problems in the guild in my stead. I need someone to handle the guild's account! That is why I hope you guys to accept my proposal. Right now, the guild has nothing to offer to you. I can only issue 10,000 dollars as salary to the both of you for now. But, I do hope that after 2 months, our guild would be in shape to claim the game's first Territory! By then, your salary would be at least 100,000 dollars!"

Daffodil sighed and said, "This decision is still too large for me to decide now. I would need some time to think it through!"

Hundred Shots said, "I need to discuss this matter with my wife!"

Even if the popularity of the game was at its peak, but if all future updates of the game is squashed into this small period, anyone would feel rather anxious. No one could really predict how would 'God's Miracle' be like in the next few years! The current situation might just be a pre-festival!

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "You guys take your time to think about this. This decision might be the one that will affect your entire life!"

In all honesty, there were things that Zhang Yang could not reveal too much about! In his previous life, there were a number of player who had depended on the game to become millionaire, and even billionaires! A super VRMMORPG that had over 2 billion players worldwide, greatly exceeded the expectations of the game! Like football and basketball, soon, this game would be a culture among everyone. It would eventually be another large money making industry!

After 3 to 4 days of thinking, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream did not let Zhang Yang down; both of them agreed to Zhang Yang proposal, having believed in him! Following Zhang Yang for the past few days, they had been selling equipment and had collected more than 100,000 gold coins! With the additional bonus of 400,000 gold coins that Zhang Yang had sold the [Guild Upgrade Order], both of them had earned at least

600,000 dollars in a short period of time!

If they had not quit their job, they might have to work for at least 8 to 10 years to accumulate that amount!

That was why, even if they did not have much hope for the “Territory”, they could still follow Zhang Yang into fights and earn enough money to cover the loss of their job! They could even earn a large fortune just by playing the game! Even if ‘God’s Miracle’ only operated for a year, they could earn say...around 1,000,000 dollars! By then, it would never be too late for them to find a new job!

Furthermore, when Zhang Yang had explained the interesting future ahead of them, how could they just let it pass by without grabbing it! Just thinking about it could give them many sleepless nights to come!

The two of them eventually quit their jobs and focused fully on the game. Zhang Yang had immediately issued their first month salaries as means to encourage their decision.

Under Zhang Yang’s arrangement, Daffodil Daydream was to be the financial manager. She had immediately established the campaign to recycle old equipment for guild contribution points. The campaign was to encourage players to contribute their discarded equipment into the guild storage for points instead of selling them in the auction house. That way, high-level players could accumulate wanted equipment and low-level players would not have to grind the same dungeon over and over again! They would only need to complete a few guild quests to get the equipment they want!

Hundred Shots was tasked as the guild human resource manager. He would be in charge of recruitment and expulsion of the members of the guild. Lone Desert Smoke would only recruit players with suitable characteristics. Those who are egoistical, selfish, rude, or fraudulent in manners such as cheating in a dungeon for equipment, cheating players for gold, would not be recruited into the guild. Since the guild had many join requests every single day, Hundred Shots could not risk adding a rotten apple into the guild in order to prevent the guild from collapsing

from the inside.

Under the supervision of those two; Lone Desert smoke had become lively and happy. Everyone was rather cooperative and had formed strong bonds between players. Slowly, the guild had managed to morph into a strong guild. It was not all because of Zhang Yang and his merry little band contributing to the guild's fame alone now. Eventually, they had their own way to shine.

...

On September 14th, 3pm, Han Ying Xue managed to reach level 50!

'Ding! Congratulation to Player Little Snow for being the first player to achieve Level 50! Obtained Luck +1!'

'Server Announcement: A Level 50 player has emerged in the game! The patch [expedition] has official started! Players can find any guard in main city for further explanation of the patch! Further description of the patch can also be found in the official website!'

'Server Announcement: New Profession available! Rune Crafting has been added into the game! Please talk to the main cities' Rune Crafter for further explanation about Rune Craft!'

After a chain of announcement, players around the globe got excited and headed to the nearest guard to asked about the [expedition] patch! Some of them even logged off the game to read the detail explanation in the official website. Other players found their way to the Rune Crafter in the city to ask about the profession.

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were a little lazy. They know that Zhang Yang was a "Beta player" and quickly private messaged him for information.

To save time and trouble, Zhang Yang partied up with everyone and explained in the party channel.

"I'll talk about Rune Craft first." Zhang Yang coughed. The patch [expedition] has been brought forward by as much as half a month earlier due to Zhang Yang presence in the game.

“Rune Craft consists of two parts. The first part, Break Down. The second, Rune Crafting. A Rune Crafter can disassemble equipment in the game and obtain Rune Essence! The better the grade, higher the level, the obtained Essence would be better! The equipment grade would change at every 30 levels. Let’s say that I disassemble any level 10, 20, or 30 Black-Steel tier equipment, I would obtain a [Level 1 Black-Steel Essence]. If I disassemble a level 40, 50, or 60 Black-Steel equipment, I would obtain a [Level 2 Black-Steel Essence].”

“Rune Essences would be used to craft [Rune Stone]s. These [Rune Stone]s could be used to upgrade existing bonus attributes in the weapon! For example, Enhanced Strength +2 effect is obtained when an equipment is upgraded twice using [Rune Stone]s, increasing the Strength by 20 points. Enhanced Vitality +3 effect is obtained when the equipment is upgraded 3 times using the [Rune Stone], increasing HP by 160 points. The maximum upgrade count is 10!”

“High level [Rune Stone] can be used to upgrade low level enhancement. For example, a [Level 5 Rune Stone] could be used to get Enhance +4. It cannot go the other way around. To get a +5 enhancement, you must use a [Level 5 Rune Stone] or higher. When the equipment reaches Enhancement level +10, there will be an extra effect to it. For example, with Enhanced Vitality +10, every attack would have a [lifesteal] effect! Now enhancing with [Rune Stone] has success rates. Once an enhancement fails, not only would the material would be burned, the original Enhance would also drop a level.”

Zhang Yang laughed a little. “Why is the profession only being introduced now? If the profession was introduced into the game since the very beginning, no one would want to disassemble their equipment! Now, with majority of players reaching level 40 and more, the equipment that were discarded in to the auction house is just too much, to the point where new players would not need to grind low level dungeons to get their equipment! New players could just buy the items that they need from the auction house! This was not what the developers intended. Now that Rune Crafting is introduced into the game, many low-level equipment would be

disassembled! This is one of the methods for them to earn a stable income as well.”

“Huh...” said Wei Yan Er with her mouth wide opened. “In that case, what is this [expedition] thing?”

Chapter 179: Level 50!

“I assume that everyone knows now that there are 8 major cities in just China alone. In each city, the same level 10 to level 50 training grounds are there. However, once you’re over level 50, players must leave the city ground and enter the training grounds beyond level 50. One more thing, you can’t just simple walk or fly to there. There will be an extremely long quest to unlock the area!”

Zhang Yang sighed heavily in his heart. To think that Dream Technology was that good in doing business. They are obviously conducting daylight robbery; taking away player’s money and gold, and yet they could present it nicely like a booby trap in a present box.

“What quest are you talking about?” asked Wei Yan Er.

“This patch is called Expedition. Which is kind of self-explanatory. We are to fight a large group of enemies in a large party! As the idiom goes, before you sortie, be sure to bring enough supplies. Without proper preparation of war, how could you even expect the soldiers to perform? That is why, as of now, players could head to the main city’s Expedition manager to submit all kinds of materials. This is considered to be a repeatable quest. The items that they would take would be like, 20 pieces of [Cotton Bandage], or 10 bottles of any healing potions, and other random items as well! The NPC will take it all. Every time the NPC collects a material, the storage bulk will be filled up a little. There’s a progress bar! Once the bar reaches 100%, the army will then set out to attack the enemy waves and unlock the level 50 training ground!”

“Damn...the system sure is sneaky!” said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang nodded, agreeing with her. “However, even if the players do not submit anything to the NPC, the progress bar would still go on by itself, only much more slowly! Once a player has submitted a certain amount of material, the system would award a chest which will has a 99% chance of dropping [Reputation Medal] and a 1% chance to drop other items such as equipment, recipes, [Gem Stone]! The grade of the item

could range from Black-Steel to Yellow-Gold!”

“Y-Yellow?! Yellow-Gold?!” Endless Starlight choked.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Don’t get your hopes up that high! I must warn you that the drop rate is only 1%. If you want to have Yellow-Gold tier drops, it might even be at rate of 1 in a million chance!”

“A chance is still a chance, I’d still go for it!” said Endless Starlight. “We have only managed to get 2 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment in 7 days from the Evil Necromancer Zac! How is that enough for us all?!”

Everyone else nodded. Who would not want to get their hands on the best equipment in the game? But the drop rate and the boss’ respawn time simply made it impossible! Still, if it was set to be on an even scale, the equipment would be immensely downgraded like a street goods.

Zhang Yang further explained. “There are 64 major cities in the world, each of them will have their own respective progress bars for the expedition quest. Whichever city is the first to have their progress bar filled, will be able to send out their Expedition Army! Mind you that this fight will be like a huge, climatic war. When the war starts, there will be waves of monsters appearing from the base. I think it would be at least 10 waves! All waves will spawn an unlimited number of enemies and will be accompanied with a boss. All players must work together and only then we could defeat the monster attack. The NPC army will be joining the battle as well. However, the number of NPC will be negligible. The main attack would still depend on the players!”

Zhang Yang continued to explain. “After all 10 waves are over, the battle will only be over once the enemy general is defeated. Otherwise, the expedition army will sortie again after another 2 days. The first city to successfully defeat the enemy waves and the final general would be awarded with a buff. Everyone in the city will receive a 100% experience boost! Besides that, the top ten players who contributed the most in the war will receive extra reward. It could be Grey-Silver, Yellow-Gold equipments, there could even be a skill book or a skill point!”

“The enemy general will drop a [City Order] at death. The person who

obtains the [City Order] could be the Territory owner and also a “Hero of bla bla bla city” title. All repair fees, gem socketing, teleportation will be reduced by 50%! With 64 major cities in the world, the taking of one of them would end the war, and the remaining 63 cities’ Territory would automatically be taken. All monster waves will end, and there will not be any luxurious rewards for the other city’s players.

“After conquering the fortress, the teleportation point of all major cities will be open to everyone. Player can use these teleportation points to go to any city they want. Banks and auction houses of all eight major cities will share the same information, thus players are not required to go back to their own city to conduct transactions!”

“Following after the battle, the level 50 dungeon, Poison Fireland will be opened. This is a 20-man limit dungeon. Every player will have to raid this dungeon once to complete the level 50 class quest!”

Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders to relieved himself. “Argh...anyhow, that’s the summary of the [expedition] patch content!”

“So you’re saying that, we are competing with the other cities in the china server, as well as the global 56 cities as well?!”

“You’re god damn right!”

“After level 50, all players in the china server would share a single map?”

“That’s absolutely correct! Not just one though, many!”

“Well? What are we still standing here for?! Let’s farm some items and be the first city to start the war!”

Zhang Yang nodded. “The item submission quest is not a quest for just one man! Everyone must contribute as well! Hundred Shots! Daffodil Daydream! I need you to announce in the guild and convey the importance of the Territory battle!”

“Roger!”

“Okay!”

Both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream nodded. Every else dispersed after Zhang Yang had ended his explanation.

This submission quest was indeed a long and dragging quest! There was no way you can complete it in half a month!

Zhang Yang rode to the Griffin manager and rented a Griffin before flying to Canyon of Scattered Feathers to grind his level to 50.

After 2 days of heavy grinding, Zhang Yang achieved level 50 and equipped the Dragon Tooth Dragon Axe, Lion's Blood Battle Boots, Limitless Cape, and more level 50 equipment. His attributes had gained another huge upgrade.

HP: 11230

Weapon Attack: (1528-1728) x 105%

Strength: 437

Dexterity: 169

Defense: 420

Damage Absorption: 450!

Zhang Yang had invested all the skill points he had gained at level 50 and the Castle Interior's First Clear Achievement into [shield wall]. By then, this skill's cool down was reduced down to only 5.5 minutes!

Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castle and met up with the class instructor for a new skill.

"Young warrior! Your growth sure was fast! However, the path to strength is a far and harsh journey! Like the flow of the river, if you do not fight the current, you'll only be washed away with it's power. To grow stronger, you have to beat yourself! Now, are you ready to move on?!" Emmy looked rather excited.

Zhang Yang replied. "I'll accept every challenge!"

"That's the spirit! At least you have proven yourself to be fearless!" said Emmy while nodding her head.

‘Ding! You have accepted the quest: Level 50 Class Quest!’

[Level 50 Class Quest] (Difficulty Level: Selectable)

Quest Description: Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer, and prove yourself to be a brave warrior! Roshan – Copper Hammer is now hiding in the Poison Fireland. That place is a dangerous area, so please bring along enough comrades with you in your journey! This quest has 3 Difficulty Level:

Level A, Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer in Hardcore mode.

Level B, Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer in Hard mode.

Level C, Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer in Normal mode.

Progress: Kill Roshan – Copper Hammer 0/1

The hardest level being A and not S? Zhang Yang snickered. By far, only Zhang Yang would know about it. This quest has a hidden option. After killing Roshan, and the hidden boss in the Poison Fireland dungeon, Silica, the Queen of Medusa, the quest would be upgraded to an S level difficulty and so would the reward.

However, the hidden boss was rather hard to defeat. It would take at least 4 to 5 days, or even 10 days’ time to properly explore the boss’ skill. No party would be willing to spend the time there! Once they have defeated Roshan, they would just submit the quest and head straight to the maps beyond level 50! No one would be willing to linger in the quest.

Because of that reason, this hidden option remained undiscovered for a long time! Until one day, a high-level player had returned to the area and babysit his recently joined friend and help him defeat Roshan and the hidden boss. Only then, was the hidden option was reveal to the public.

Emmy had only the quest for Zhang Yang and did not grant him any skills. From level 50 onwards, skills that are obtainable from the class instructors will be lesser. Those powerful skills could only be, and exclusively, obtained from skill books.

To complete the Level 50 class quest, he had to wait until the submission quest was completed and take the Territory down, only then

the Poison Fireland would be unlocked for him. Zhang Yang encouraged the guild to complete the submission quests while at the same time, pick out the strong players among the weeds in his guild. He tried his best to upgrade the equipment they have.

‘Server Announcement: Player 7 Prosperity Calf had obtained a shiny silver equipment from the Army Chest! He looked at the equipment and it was [Soaring Dragon Sheen Guard]!’

A server announcement was released out of the sudden. The equipment obtained from the player seems to have its properties attached in the text as well.

[Soaring Dragon Sheen Guard] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +120

Strength: +60

Dexterity: +60

[Level 2 socket 1]

[Level 2 socket]

Equip Effect: Increases Attack Power by 60.

Level Requirement: 50

Players around were rather agitated and excited by the equipment properties! Should they know, only Hardcore mode dungeon would drop Gray-Silver equipment! Most of the Gray-Silver tiered field boss had already been occupied by guilds. Small guilds and random guild-less players could not even lay their hands on the boss! Since the difficulty of the Hardcore mode was too much, the majority of players around could only return after over exceeding the dungeon by at least 20 to 30 levels.

Who would not want to have good equipment!? Those who did not have a strong party could only stare in envy as they see the shiny equipment on the bodies of other players. Right now, they would not have to raid dungeons or fight a bosses they knew that they could not defeat to obtain

the equipment! Just because of that, players around were burning with passion to complete the submission quest as many rounds as they can to obtain equipment! The ridiculously low chances did not hinder them!

The system was rather fair to the players around. As long as a player obtained a Gray-Silver equipment from the chest, the system would announce in the channel to the world! Still, even then the proc rate was extremely low, there were at least 2 billion players around the globe! How low could it be to suppress the sheer number of players opening the chest and proc'ing an equipment? In an instance, the world channel was like a Chinese rolling scroll, scrolling down endlessly as many more players had obtained their own respective Gray-Silver equipment!

The power of a "role model" is truly impressive. This was especially effective when a lucky player proc'ed a Yellow-Gold equipment from the chest! Everyone was even more excited than before when they knew that there was a chance to obtain luxurious items! Even the high ranking officers from super guilds were agitated; they did not have any Yellow-Gold equipment!

Just like that, the entire world was send to a burning fervor!

Dream Technology was not only good at developing the game, but they were also rather smart at marketing! As such many items were recycle back into the system. Undoubtedly, as the economy of the game flourishes, the game company will earn a massive fortune!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and contacted Han Ying Xue through the voice messenger. "You evil b*tchy snow woman, did you sell yourself to anyone in the Dream Tech? How could you explain the Yellow-Gold equipment from the chest?! The drop rate is insanely low!"

That's right. The lucky player in the game that had proc'ed a Yellow-Gold equipment was none other than Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue snickered and replied. "Haha! That's right! I had to sleep with 2 men in one night! Aiyo! They were so rude and rough with me. My breasts are sore from them rubbing it so hard and roughly!"

Zhang Yang could not help but imagine her perky, voluptuous breasts...

how would it feel like, having those soft bouncy balls rubbing his d --- Zhang Yang immediately felt hot and steamy. He changed his thoughts. That evil woman really knew what she is doing!

Zhang Yang changed the subject. "What is your Rune Crafting mastery?"

"Aiya! I had completely forgotten about it! Now that you have mention it, I need more level 40+ Black-Steel and Green-Copper equipments! I'm almost reaching Advanced tier now! Help me a little!"

Zhang Yang dripped cold sweat. "Sister, how many Black-Steel and Green-Copper equipment have you already taken from me now?! It's been two days now! How can I continue my business while you take all my stocks?!"

Han Ying Xue was the only one in his gang to convert her profession into Rune Craft. Since this particular profession required endless disassembling of equipment to increase their mastery level, the profession required heavy investment! A normal player would not be able to train that high. The profession was mostly brought up by a strong guild!

Han Ying Xue, being who she was with Zhang Yang, did not reserve herself while dealing with Zhang Yang. For the past two days, she had taken many equipment from the shop to disassemble them! Just two days, Han Ying Xue had burned away close to 50,000 gold coins worth of equipment. Ever since the introduction of the profession, the useless equipment had be of some use! Since the disassembled product would be the same, the price for each equipment had risen; indirectly raising the buying and selling price of the Little Merchandize Shop! Furthermore, as many players had taken the Rune Craft profession. Old equipment have become a scarcity in the market. There was high demand with low supply.

Han Ying Xue giggle a little and said, "Dummy! Are you trying to seduce me? Oh you bad boy!"

The way she said that was truly slutty yet alluring. Her words sent Zhang Yang's blood into a boiling rage, softening every part of his body except for one part!

What a b*tch! What a b*tch! Zhang Yang shook his head hard. “Fine! Fine! Fine! Just take the equipment!”

“Heh. You should have said that earlier. I wouldn’t have to waste my sex appeal to attack you!”

Beep!

Han Ying Xue hung up.

It was an unspoken law that every guild had to raise a Rune Crafter. Since the risks and expenses to raise a Rune Crafter was extremely high, each super guild out there had carefully handpicked their members to prevent the cultivated Rune Crafter from jumping!

Han Ying Xue was rather reliable, as it was her and her cousin sister was the one that had built the guild originally. It’s rather impossible for her to suddenly quit the guild to join someone else’s. Beside, the b*tch was from a wealthy, billionaire family! She merely played the game for the fun of it! To think that other would buy her in using money was rather improbable.

Zhang Yang took out a few [Bandages] and herbs and submitted them to the Expedition Army’s manager and obtained 12 [Army Chest]s. He only obtained 12 [Reputation Medals] from all the chest. It was rather expected and normal for him to obtain only the medals. In fact, it would be considered to be extremely lucky for him to obtain any equipment at all!

Chapter 180: Expedition, Start!

Time flows like the river; in a flash, it was already the end of September and also the completion of the item submission quest!

‘Ding! Players of White Jade Castle! The item submission quest has ended! By the order of the King of the Empire, the Army Expedition will officially start tomorrow at 10am! Please make your preparations for war!’

Everyone in the city received the system notification when the expedition item submission quest was completed.

“Please rest early tonight! Tomorrow is the day we fight in the war! The battle will be extremely draggy! My advice, do not stay up tonight! Rest well and be ready to fight a lengthy war!” Zhang Yang posted in the guild notice.

After the efforts of both Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, Lone Desert Smoke had begun to display a professional guild’s behavior. At least, for now, Zhang Yang could still control the members’ actions to a certain level.

With the call from Sky High guild master, Sky Shaman, he called for a meeting for all big and small guilds to gather and discuss about the incoming war. All 63 guild masters sat together and had come to an agreement. Clearly, everyone treated this Expedition quest as their first priority. After all, it’s for the glory of White Jade Castle, their own city!

Now that the official statement had been released in the official website, almost everyone had understood the details of the incoming war. In summary, survive and defeat all 10 waves of monsters and dominate the enemy base Territory! The battle will be hard, but the rewards will be worthwhile. According to the explanation, each minion will have a 10% chance to drop a Black-Steel equipment. Elite monsters will have a 5% chance to drop a Green-Copper equipment. And after each wave, there will be a boss that will drop a Gray-Silver equipment! There will be a chance for a Yellow-Gold boss to appear in the field as well!

However, each wave of minion will only have one boss, after all and all,

there will be only 10 bosses in total. With such a low supply for so many players, the meeting between the guild masters went on and one as everyone discussed on how to properly distribute the chances to fight the boss. Without a proper arrangement, everyone will race with each other to kill the boss; a first come first served tactic leading to the demise of all!

After a thorough discussion, for the benefit of all, everyone had finally came to a decision that each guild will arrange their own positions in the battle ground and protect their own. When the boss appears in the field, whichever side that the boss appears to will automatically claim the right.

Without the guild's consent of invitation, other guilds shall not interfere with the boss fight! If any guilds broke the rule, they will make themselves public enemy number one!

Zhang Yang contacted Snow Seeker and Crimson Fire. Since they were his allies to begin with, they should watch each other's backs in the war! In the war, unless there is a player with a Celestial-tier equipment in the battle, everyone's strength in the war would amount to nothing without team work.

The 3 guild masters discuss and agree that in tomorrow's war, that all 3 guilds would form a single defensive formation and protect each other!

The next day was October the 1st, which was also 3 month after the launching of the game. Today is the day the Expedition Army sortie out!

'Ding! Players of White Jade Castle! The Expedition Army will sortie in one hour! Please pick up your swords and shields, the time to fight for the Alliance has come!'

Zhang Yang combined all 9000 and more players in the guild and formed 9 massive parties. Each thousand-man party will have one leader and 20 sub leaders. Each sub party will answer to the main leader and those main leaders will answer to Zhang Yang, forming an organized chain of command.

By then, players would not have to deal with the measly trouble of boarding a Griffin to travel all the way to the battle ground. One hour later, when the Expedition Army sorties, the Teleportation Circle will

appear. An extra-large Teleportation Portal will immediately send the players to the battle ground.

One hour later...

‘Ding! Players of White Jade Castle, please head to the Teleportation Circle to join the front lines! This historical battle awaits your arrival!’

Zhang Yang commanded his “troops” to stand by and let the crazy, bloodthirsty fanatics go through the portal first. Until 10 minutes later, when the number of players has substantially decreased, Zhang Yang pulled out his battle axe and cried out loud. “For victory!”

“FOR VICTORY, HURRAH!”

Now that Lone Desert Smoke had reached level 2, as long as players in the guild were at level 35 or more, they could go to the guild shop and buy themselves a [Storm and Gale Direwolf]! The majority of Lone Desert Smoke member were already riding on the back of their own magnificent and grand Direwolf, threading lightly through the portal and into a strange new land.

They appeared at the slope of a small hillside. Not far ahead was the army, with the flag flapping against the squall. The army was huddled together in a long stretching defense line and measured almost 10km far. Further ahead, about 500 meters north of where they were, stood a massive fortress that was built along the hills. The fortress was the only thing between White Jade Castle and the outside world!

The fortress of the enemy was affixed with many magic canons! Those contraptions were so strong that it could easily flatten, obliterate, smash, crush everyone at their current level!

Zhang Yang swiftly contacted Snow Seeker and Crimson Fire. The three massive guilds quickly group together and form a massive, 30,000 player alliance.

‘Ding! The war will start in 30 minutes! Once the battle starts, the Teleportation Portal will close! Players who falls defeat can only revived in White Jade Castle and would no longer be able to participate in the war!’

Players must assist the Expedition Army to defend against 10 waves of enemy attacks. The Expedition will fail once all players are killed. After enduring all 10 waves of monsters, the Empire's Dragon Riders will sortie and join the war to destroy the enemy magic cannons. Defeating the enemy fortress' Demon General Nexxar will result in victory!

'Ding! The system will record every single player's contribution in the war and will select top 10 players with the highest contribution and award them with luxurious rewards! Rewards will only be distributed if players wins the war!'

'Ding! Nexxar will drop [City Order] on death. Players who obtained the [City Order] will become the fortress owner and gained the rights to it. The player will also gain the title 'Hero of White Jade Castle!'

'Ding! The Expedition will start over again in two days if players lose the war!'

Some of the player were getting impatient as they read through the system notification. One by one they shouted and screamed.

"Kill dem son of b*itches now! What are we waiting for? If we take down the fortress now! We will win the war! Why do we have to wait for waves of monster?!"

Small party of players rushed towards the fortress.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

The cannon blasted from the fortress and killed all players that had stepped too far away from the defense line.

Being killed by monsters would not have any experience point deduction penalty. However, it will cost you're your equipment endurance! The repair fees were expensive!

Seeing is believing; and when other players and seen what if to become of them if they rushed into the warzone, so each of them quietly waited for the waves of monster.

Zhang Yang switched to the party channel and said, "Note that when

you die in the war, that will be the end of it. You cannot get anything anymore, not experience, not loots, nothing. That is why you must fight to stay alive! The amount of equipment dropped from monsters is not as important as the experience they could give out! This is a good chance to raise your level quickly! Furthermore, there is a Yellow-Gold boss! I don't care about a Gray-Silver boss! But we must grab that Yellow-Gold boss!"

'Ding! The war will start in 20 minutes! Once the battle starts...'

The system notification pops out again to remind the players the time they had left to prepare.

'Ding! Server Announcement: Longainer City army had started the war!'

The world channel announced a message.

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party was rather baffled by the announcement and asked. "Zhan Yu, where is this Longainer city? How could they have started the war that quick?"

Zhang Yang thought about it a while and explained. "I think its somewhere in the European country. Ah. Players from Longiner City are mostly from North Europe!"

"Ahh. North European...I see. That place is doing quite well. Most players are otakus anyway! That is why even with lesser players, they could still proceed with the quest rather quickly."

North Europe's society welfare was rather well during then. Many of those unemployed citizens could easily live comfortably as those who were employed, by using their government welfare funds. That was why the number of NEETs¹ were rather high.

With someone already on their tails, players from White Jade Castle were rather agitated. Afterall, this was would determine the standing of each city! Anyone would want to fight for their own city's honor and glory!

'Ding! The war will start in 10 minutes...'

'Ding! The war will start in 5 minutes...'

Zhang Yang walked to the front of "his army" and cried out. "The first

few waves of monsters are rather easy to fight! We should stand in the front line and fight. We have many healers here so it should be fine! NPCs cannot receive any heals from players! So, we should let them handle the later waves! All Guardians, Defenders follow me! We shall stand in the front line!”

With both Snow Seeker’s and Crimson Fire’s agreements, Zhang Yang had been selected to lead all 3 guilds.

Thousands of players followed Zhang Yang to the front and went even further ahead of the NPC army. The front most position was filled with Guardians and Defenders forming a solid defense line. Behind them were the attacking classes and behind them were the healers and supporters. Zhang Yang had even commanded all melee attackers to stay behind the defense line to protect all ranged attackers and healers. They were tasked to kill off any monster and had made it through the defense line.

When other guilds saw how Zhang Yang had form his defense line, they began to mimic his strategy. While some of them had followed Zhang Yang’s arrangement, other cowered behind the NPC, some even went as far as the slope’s peak! Obviously, they wanted to take advantage of the NPC to take on all monster’s firepower and play it safe.

This method, was clearly represented by The Dominators! Not only had they hidden behind the NPC army, they too had gone back to the slope’s peak! It’s not that they wanted to remain at the slope. They could not withdraw any further since there was an invisible wall that prevented them to do so.

Standing at the top of the slope, Humbly Gentleman looked down onto Zhang Yang and grinned. “Hmph. Dumb prick. Do you really want to play hero that badly? Heh! I shall see who squirms in pain when he dies!”

A player standing next to him spoke out. “Boss. Isn’t is better for them to burn into dust? Who else can compete for the contribution rank with us? Hmph, I say, all bosses will belong to us, The Dominators!”

Humbly Gentleman laughed. “You’re god damn right! This is what I would call, making a wedding dress² for someone else!”

“As expected of our brilliant boss! Besides, I’ve even seen people wearing wedding dresses but not for their wedding! They say we learn as we live and we can use that knowledge as we grow! Truly magnificent!” That underlings knew that Humbly Gentleman was just saying things that he did not know, or rather, Humbly Gentleman was a man with little knowledge of the world, yet his underlings would still kiss his ass for it.

Humbly Gentleman looked at his underling with much appreciation and satisfaction.

‘Ding! The war will start in 1 minute!’

‘Ding! The war will start in 30 seconds!’

10, 9, 8...

3!

2!

1!

A war horn was heard.

‘Ding! Battle start!’

‘Ding! The first wave of monster has started to come out from Tukulo Fortress!’

With system notification, the door to the fortress opened and countless of blue apparitions rushed out of it like water from a dam! Most of the monsters were at least 2 meters in size yet a few of them were as tall as 10 meters tall, fairly visible among the crowd of monsters. The smaller ones were normal monsters while the big ones were obviously elites.

[Apparition Guard] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 51

HP: 5,100

Defense: 50

[Apparition Killer] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 51

HP: 100,00

Defense: 300

After the implementation of the patch [expedition], players can now check the monsters Defense value.

Zhang Yang raised his shield and sword and cried out. “Protect the front line! Stand your ground!”

“PROTECT THE FRONT LINE!”

“HURRAH!”

“Kill!”

As thousands of voices screaming out their battle cry, a strong aura was permeating from everyone, influencing the nearby player to be as passionate and eventually, the entire field was radiating with strong zeal!

“GO GO GO!”

“KILL!”

Zhang Yang cried. “Let’s kick some ass!”

“WOOOOAHHHH!”

Thousands replied his cry.

THUD! THUD! THUD!

Marching sound was heard as the monster was approaching the players.

BOOM!

The first strike was unleashed, marking the first attack of the war!

1NEET – Not under Employment, Education, nor Training. Refers to young people who were jobless and were not looking for a job.

2Wedding Dress – This phrase is a common idiom in china. It describes someone else putting in effort for someone else’s sake. Here, Humbly Gentleman used the phrase to describe Zhang Yang doing all the work whilst Humbly Gentleman stands there waiting for the opportunity to

grab all the glory.

Chapter 181: First Wave

The tanks in the front line has formed a rigid, impregnable defense line, while the ranged attackers standing behind them had started to cast their AoE skills at the monsters that were grouped tightly together!

Zhang Yang cast [horizontal sweep] and dealt more than '3200+' damage to all monster in the semi-circular area in front of him. He then stomped the ground and cast [thunder strike] dealing another '444' damage! Wham! [blast wave] was cast and a similar '444' damage was dealt.

In this chaotic situation, all skills and attack could only be cast upon instinct, not anticipation of the enemy's actions. As a tank, he must stand his ground firmly without moving around. He needed to make sure that no monsters could get pass him or else they would threaten the attackers standing behind. The number of monsters were pouring in like tsunami in the ocean. No one knew exactly how many monsters are there behind the front line! How much could a single tank handle? Only a full battalion of tank could do so much.

While the monsters around Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage were blocked off, not all player were able to perform just as strong as them. Other side of the warzone, monsters had already penetrated the player defense line and had clashed with the NPC army.

The sound of war echoed throughout the field, clashing and banging of metal against metal. This is the true opening of the full-scale warfare in 'God's Miracle'!

With the level 50 Yellow-Gold Dragon Tooth Battle Axe in his hand, a full Gray-Silver tier equipment clad his body, coupled with the 50% defense negation passive, even as a tank, Zhang Yang's damage output was overwhelmingly devastating! Especially when he had use [horizontal sweep], he could easily deal 3200 or more damage and 6400+ if it was a critical strike! If he got a Lucky strike, his damage will burst out with a 9600+ damage. It was enough to trigger a heart attack to anyone who

witness his power!

Is...is this motherf*cker really a Guardian?!

Tanks regardless of class had one unique AoE skill for themselves. A Guardian had [thunder strike] while a Defender had [devotion]. Defenders also had [spike shield] which only trigger when one was attacked. Zhang Yang was an odd ball among all tanks, as other than [thunder strike] he also had [horizontal sweep] and [blast wave]!

In a fight like this, with tanks standing in the front line with that many attacks, their Rage would be built up without limit and they could just simple cast all their skills once the cool down finishes. With [horizontal sweep] alone, Zhang Yang had already on par with Spellcasters and Hunters in terms of damage. Adding on [thunder strike] and [blast wave] to the equation Zhang Yang had long exceeded the rest of the attack and became the strongest attacker in the field. He was obviously ranked first in the contribution list and left the second ranked player far behind.

Contribution points were measured in attacks dealt and also healing amount. To balance the contribution measurement, tanks would have a bonus counting system that would multiple the damage deal by a certain amount to balance the low damage tanks.

However, Zhang Yang had nothing to do with the regular low damaging tanks! This guy's damaging power was like an apache attack helicopter. Bom Bom Bang Bang! This guy would drop hell from above when you least expect it! How would his contribution point be low?!

The two other tanks who were standing next to Zhang Yang was rather bored since all the monster that approached them only targeted Zhang Yang instead. Their own roles were lessened by a notch and had only to make sure the line remained impregnable to monsters. They would only need to make sure Zhang Yang was not surrounded and to kill off any other enemy that risked breaking past the line, putting the healers and attackers in danger.

Apparition Guards had a basic attack of around 1000, and when they attacked Zhang Yang, he would only receive 20+ damage after deducting

his Defense value, 20% damage reduction, and the equipment own 450 damage absorption effect! Only around 10 monsters could attack Zhang Yang in one instant; and all those attacks were only just petty tickle to Zhang Yang!

When the Apparition Killer appeared, Zhang Yang gathered his concentration and fought seriously. Even though the number of these elites were just a few, when one struck hit Zhang Yang, he was received more than 800 damage in one strike. Han Ying Xue quickly cast a [regeneration] and went on her way.

Others where not as strong as Zhang Yang with Han Ying Xue the super healer supporting his all the way, when the battle had only started not too long ago, many front-line tanks had fallen and allowed many monsters to spill into the crowd of players. Now it was the chance to let other attacks such as the Berserkers, Bandits, Templars and other melee attacking class to shine. All of them rushed to meet the monsters and killed them all. Even without a tank to hold the monster's aggro, a beautiful woman would automatically attract man; and good monsters would attract players to attack! Elite or not, this Apparition Killer had 100,000 HP, but it was still killed off by 10 over players in only 10 seconds or so. The monsters could not even kill a single player!

The NPC army were not just sitting ducks there doing nothing while Zhang Yang and the rest of the tanks were fighting with their might. The monsters that were attacking from the front could not trigger the NPC army behind the defense line, but once the monster had broken through the tanks and headed for the ranged attackers, the NPC army would initiate their attacks on them monster and help the players.

The monster kept on pouring in endlessly; and when one bunch was killed, another would take its place! The cycle would only repeat endlessly! Luckily, the sheer amount of experience points provided by the monster were so much that many golden lights kept on flashing on and on; players were gaining levels here and there. The level 20 to 30 players that had joined this battle were definitely in for a treat!

While the monsters around gave out precious experience points, they

would also drop equipment. Even though the drop rate of 10% was rather low, but the sheer number of monsters made up for it, the floor was filled with many Black-Steel equipment and a few Green-Copper equipment as well! Since the battle ground was still filled with monsters, no one actually dared to step forward to pick up the loots. Only the equipment that were lying around between the players crowd could be picked up; they were dropped by monsters that had broken through the defense line.

50 minutes later...

‘Ding! The first wave boss Bangla has appeared!’

Along with the system notification, a large, 50-meter-tall giant flying Apparition appeared in the field. The minions stopped spawning.

[Bangla] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 51

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 600

“F*ck! 10,000,000 HP?! It’s just a Gray-Silver boss! Look at that Defense! 600?! How do you expect us to kill it?! I have only a level 40 Gray-Silver equipment and only 1200-1400 damage! I would only hit with less than 50% of my original power!” Fatty Han cried out as he check the boss’ properties.

Zhang Yang laughed. “This is rather normal! Look at how many players we have right now! If the boss did not have that much HP, wouldn’t he die after 2 to 3 seconds?”

Fatty Han nodded. The number of player participating in this war could easily exceed 2,000,000 players! However, not everyone could damage the boss at where they stood. At most, only 100 to 200 players could attack the boss in the same time, it could be a rather fast kill too!

“Noob tank! Let’s get that boss!” Wei Yan Er squealed.

“There are still many monsters around here! We can’t just rush out even if we want to! Keep an eye at where will the boss go!” Zhang Yang

smashed a [destructive smash] and instantly killed many monsters around him with a critical strike!

The boss' movement speed was not all that fast; it took him forever just to move 500 meters. By the time the boss had arrived, players had already killed most of the Apparition Guards around. By then, battle cries from players could be heard filling the air.

“Kill the boss!”

“WOOAHHH”

When Zhang Yang had noticed many players rushing over to the boss, he had immediately called out to his guild mates via the guild channel. “Don't rush to the boss just yet. Any boss that appears in full scale war like this would definitely be strong as f*ck. Don't throw away your life! Take this chance and get all the equipment that belong to us!”

In that instant, as if those players were trying to prove Zhang Yang was right, most of the player that had rushed over to the boss had gained its aggro. The boss waved its right arm and a huge black hole appeared among the rowdiest players.

‘-4000!’ ‘-4000!’ ‘-4000!’

Players that were standing on the hole received continuous damage every 2 seconds, instantly killing most of the players there! Those that were still rushing into the fight and suddenly pulled the handbrakes and turned around, running away like they saw their ex-wives chasing them with a knife.

The slow and sluggish boss had suddenly moved around with such agility, as if the steroids that he had taken earlier had finally kicked in. One by one, the boss chased after the players and killed them by summoning more black holes. Eventually, without much effort, the boss had killed off most of the players that had rushed over earlier.

Those players that arrived slightly later had gratefully thanked their own tardiness. If they had rushed in along with the earlier players, they would have joined them in their death. Everyone took the chance and rushed to

the other way and picked up the loots and equipment on the floor. If the items were left on the floor un-looted, they will disappear along with the monster's corpse after a fixed duration.

In an instant, players around would not step forward anymore. In fact, no guild would dare to make the first move to attack! When a boss appeared, it was just too strong for any random guild to take on! Secondly, every guild master had already come to an agreement about the boss. It was the boss to decide whom shall claim his loots! With much haste, the boss had entered Sky High's defense line.

Sky High guild master, and also the main tank of the guild, Sky Shaman, a Dwarf Guardian, had quickly gathered 20 other well-equipped tanks to join him to tank Bangla. Behind them were ten and more healers supporting the tanks. Within seconds, Sky Shaman had successfully hold onto the boss aggro and the ranged attackers from Sky High had started their assault. Their melee attackers had all stood back, preparing themselves from getting hit by the boss devastating AoE attack.

The boss had the extremely thick 600 Defense value, not only that, it also had a similarly strong Magical Defense as well. Even with 5 layers of [Cripple Defense] on it, most players' attacks were already reduced by 40% since their equipment were at level 40 Green-Copper and their character level was only at level 45; their damage was only around 500 over.

Those player that with that standard of level and equipment were the majority of all the players in this war. After all, not many could get their hands on the level 30 or level 40 Gray-Silver equipment!

90%, 80%...

Bangla's HP was just too much for them to handle. Even though they had several hundred players surrounding the boss attacking, the HP bar was dropping at an extremely slow pace! Sky Shaman was clearly holding onto the boss aggro firmly but yet it could still toss a black hole among the crowd from time to time. As long as players were gathered closely together, they would be killed without being able to dodge the skill in time.

When Bangla's HP had been reduced down to 30%, Sky High had already lost more than a few hundred players. However, if there were no other unexpected incidents occurring, the boss should eventually fall to Sky High.

Chapter 182: Shameless Pricks

Just as everything was going smoothly, The Dominators started to rush towards the boss!

The moment The Dominators initiated a move, countless of guild-less players, as well as guilds that were too small to even participate in the guild master's meeting yesterday, all poured in after them.

Due to the status of Sky High as a Chinese Super Guild, many did not want to get on to their bad side, and had respectfully kept their distance, leaving the boss to them. But as they saw the similarly ranked Dominators charging in, nefarious thoughts, rising up from human nature, took over their minds.

If they were to join the fight, it would be like vultures picking clean the bones of carcasses left as remnant's of a lion's meal....

Facing the swarm of players, Sky High, acted in manner fit for a professional guild. Some of the players broke off from the boss fight, quickly forming a circular defense line. Thousands remained with the boss, hacking for all they were worth. These vultures would have to go through the defense line, if they wanted the boss!

The atmosphere turned dreadfully hostile in an instant.

Sky Shaman cried out. "Hypocrite! You f*cking bastard, do you want to KS the boss??"

Humbly Gentleman smiled gently and laughed. "Sky Shaman. Which pair of eyes told you that we've even touched the boss?! Can't we just come closer and witness your strength from the front rows?"

Sky Shaman silently muttered to himself.

Watching the boss' HP starting to drop, the smaller guilds started to feel the anxiety. Slowly, one by one, they started launching attacks. It was not like they were attacking Sky High players, they simply wanted to land a strike on the boss!

In 'God's Miracle', the system will register a player as part of the

attacking force. Being registered as an attacker would grant anyone a chance to obtain the battle loots! When the boss falls, anyone could run to the area and take the loots if they were registered as such!

With the smaller guilds starting to attack, the random players around joined in and started to attack the players from Sky High.

Sky High is strong. Their average player level was rather high! With proper equipment and skill, they could be described as a strong lion! Those smaller guilds would never be on par with Sky High. Despite their best efforts, they were like hunting hounds at most!

A single hound may be useless while facing a lion, but if say...5 or 6, or perhaps 10 to 20 hounds attacked a lion? The outcome would be different!

Just like that, the defense line formed by members of Sky High was broken. A large number of players started to break through their defense and landed hits on the boss! As long as they could land a hit, they would be able to pick up the drops! That was, if they were still standing when the boss is killed!

“Noob tank! Should we KS the boss as well?” Wei Yan Er nudged Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled. “Let it be! That’s just a level 50 Gray-Silver boss. The drops will be nothing compared to anything that is Yellow-Gold tiered! We already shook on a deal with Sky High. There will be no KSing of each other’s bosses. Why would I jeopardize our good relationship for a mere Gray-Silver boss?!”

“Oh!”

Zhang Yang and his little merry band of friends had already defeated a level 40 Gray-Silver boss and a level 50 Yellow-Gold boss! None of them had any desire to fight Bangla ever since they tasted the blood of far greater foes.

That being said, if The Dominators up and KSed the boss, Zhang Yang would surely bring a few men into the fray! If you ever attempt to communicate diplomatically with Humbly Gentleman, you may as well be

playing catch with a wall!

Pouncing on the opportunity, The Dominators made their move. Through the gaps that other players have made, they made their way through to the boss.

“Brother Sky Shaman, I have brought along my brothers from The Dominators! Do not fret! With two guilds working together, I’m sure we can punish these unlawful players!” cried Humbly Gentleman as he commanded his underlings to attack the boss.

Sky Shaman was so infuriated that he could feel the rage in him rising up like hot bile! Could anyone go lower than this scum!? It was this bugger himself who brought his men here! Others had taken advantage of the situation and made it worse! Those smaller guilds and random players could not have known what the bigger guilds had already carried out a meeting prior to this! Of course they would be driven to this point when Humbly Gentleman made a decisive move!

In the end, Humbly Gentleman is just here to KS the boss, on the premise of ‘helping’ them fight off the other players! This f*cking hypocrite had gone even lower than what Sky Shaman could ever imagine!

Sky Shaman bellowed angrily. “You shameless prick! F*ck all 18 generations of your ancestors!”

Humbly Gentleman laughed it off. “All 18 generations have already turned to dust in the earth! Feel free to f*ck them if you want. I’m afraid that you might not find any holes for your little d*ck.”

Sky Shaman was rendered wordless. How could he face someone as shameless as him? To argue with this humongous ass*le would only cause him to vomit blood! Sky Shaman could only command the guild members to kill anyone close to the boss, preventing other players from grabbing the loot.

There were many players around, but Sky High had no problem dealing with the boss. On the contrary, the boss was killing players off at even faster pace! The boss swung a gigantic arm and cast many black holes everywhere. The entire area was almost engulfed in black dye, instantly

killing countless players around!

Wei Yan Er pouted her lips and said, “Look at those petty players. It’s like they have never seen a boss in their life before! It’s just a level 51 Gray-Silver boss! It will only drop level 50 Gray-Silver weapons at most. It’s not like it’s going to drop any Yellow-Gold stuff!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed at her. “Little brat! We just only fought Zac a few days ago and got some Level 50 Yellow-Gold and Gray-Silver equipment for ourselves! To them, a level 50 Gray-Silver equipment is by far, the best equipment they have ever seen!”

Han Ying Xue sighed and said, “Curiosity killed the cat; greed killed humans!”

Fatty Han opened his mouth to say something. But before he could speak, he turned around to glance at Sun Xin Yu and turned back again quietly and silently. His face looked like he was holding in a massive turd; twisted up to look extremely uncomfortable and full of pain.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and said, “Fatty, if you have something to say, just say it. It’s not like it’s our first time listening to your crap!”

“Men would die for his d*ck, Woman would die for ...”

BAM!

Before he could finish his sentence, everyone close enough had already smacked his head.

“The boss is about to die!”

Amidst the chaos, someone had screamed out loud. Non-tank players who had fallen back after throwing in a hit or two were already charging back in, getting ready to fight for the boss’ drops.

“MA LA BA SHI DA!” Bangla cried out and his huge body blew up, dealing massive damage to every player within a 20 meters radius. It then turned into a paper-talisman which dropped onto the floor. Similarly around the area, many equipment were dropped.

When the boss was killed, the explosion had killed off all non-tank

players. Only a few higher HP tanks remained around the corpse. Sky Shaman reacted quickly and picked the loots as fast as he could.

When the rest of the players around tried to pick the items, they quickly noticed that the items were not entering their inventories. “Guild leader! Switch to free-pick mode! Don’t use Leader Distribution mode!”

Whenever a super guild like Sky High attempts to kill a boss, most parties would choose to use Leader Distribution mode to pick the items. This was to prevent spies in their own guilds from running off with the items! Sky Shaman was the guild master of Sky High, and naturally, the party leader of the entire network of parties. However, the tanks from other guilds would not necessarily be party leaders. Even though members of the party had the right to pick up items, only the party leader would have the authority to distribute the items. When that happens, they could only wait for the leader to make the decision!

By the time the other parties had switched the distribution mode to free-pick, Sky High had already looted most of the equipment around, leaving only a handful of Green-Copper equipment around for the others.

What a bloody waste! They had lost so many players and because of one small detail, they had wasted their efforts for only 1 or 2 Green-Copper equipment! What a huge let down.

Zhang Yang had been laughing hard on the other side of the warzone.

Once the boss was defeated, other guilds started to disperse. With 9 more waves of monsters coming up, it was not a good time to start a civil war. To put matters into perspective, while KSing the boss, close to 3000 players had died.

Even though Sky Shaman had managed to loot most of the drops, he remained in a foul mood. He turned to The Dominators and screamed, “Hypocrites! When this is over, I will personally bring my own army to destroy you!”

Even though Sky High was a strong guild, The Dominators were not weak. Humbly Gentleman replied immediately. “Sky High! What are you getting all work up for?! I brought my troops to help you! How could you

not recognize the deed that I had done!?”

“Bullshit!” Sky Shaman cried. “If you had not brought your f*cking men down here, none of the random players would have attack! F*ck you! I had clearly saw what you had did! I’m KSing the next boss you fight, and if I don’t, I’m f*cking deleting my account!”

Humbly Gentleman scolded back. “Shy Shaman! You’re such a petty little man! I helped you out, with good intentions! But you would bite me back after what all that, like a rabid dog! What on earth has happened to you!”

“Holy...” Fatty Han nearly slipped and fell. “Isn’t...isn’t that just too shameful for him to be saying it out loud?”

Zhang Yang shook his head sadly. He did not know Humbly Gentleman well enough, and never would have imagined the level of indecency that man was capable of!

Sky Shaman was filled with pure rage. If he had not been a guild master of a super guild, having to maintain his status and protect his guild’s interest, he would have already thrown down the order to kill everyone from The Dominators!

‘Ding! The second wave of monsters have started to come out of Tukulo Fortress!’

Just 30 minutes after Bangla’s defeat, the system beeped again and countless red colored monsters started to emerge out of the fortress. The march of the little red devils could easily be seen with the naked eye as the monsters were easily distinguishable via the dangerous, red color that one would associate with disaster. The monsters that emerged out were mostly red devils, approximately 1 meter in height. While the lesser few were at least 3 meters tall, darker in color. They were obviously the elite.

[Little Devil] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 52

HP: 5,200

Defense: 50

[Malevolent Little Devil] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 52

HP: 100,000

MP: 40,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang immediately shouted out his orders. “Regroup! Now! Prepare for the next wave!”

Scattered members from Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, and Lost Paradise converged quickly and reformed the defense line. Tanks and ranged attackers got to their positions while healers prepared themselves for support.

As the sea of red monsters approached closer with every passing second, the tense atmosphere in the air grew heavier. Anxiety, worry, and dread grew to a fever pitch.

Zhang Yang activated [blood rage] and gained 30 Rage. With that, he activated [horizontal sweep] and swung his sword with brute strength, dealing more than 3000+ damage to all monsters nearby.

Several “-3000!” damage texts popped out, displaying such devastating power to those around him, rousing their morale.

While Zhang Yang was ditching out bombastic damage, he was only receiving menial, petty damage from the monsters.

“-29!”

“-32!”

“-24!”

While Zhang Yang was dealing super-crazy-high damage to countless monsters around, he had only received cat scratches from them. It was estimated from all the collective damage, that by average, he was receiving about 30 damage per monster.

“-1552!”

In an instant, a huge [Fire Ball] came flying through the air and blasted Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang turned around swiftly and retraced the direction of the projectile, finding that the attack came from a Malevolent Little Devil. Unlike those little devils, the elite monsters were magical attack types! To make things worse, the monster's attack range was really far; to be able to strike Zhang Yang from 20 meters away! In between the elite monster and Zhang Yang was a crowd full of monsters cramped up together, forming their own version of defensive line, allowing the monster behind to cast its spells away without any worry.

Zhang Yang cried out to Hundred Shots. “Hundred Shots! Get over here!”

Hundred Shots listened and complied. He made his way from all the way back to where Zhang Yang was.

“What's up?”

“See that tall one there? I need you to attack that Elite monster and kite him towards me!”

“Roger that!”

Hundred Shots immediately went ahead and shot the monster. Once Hundred Shots had managed to draw the attention of the elite monster, it turned towards him and fired a [Fire Ball].

“-2500!”

Hundred Shots spontaneously turned and ran back, kiting the monster closer to where Zhang Yang could start his assault. Being out of the firing range, the monster's spell was interrupted and it was forced to move closer.

Zhang Yang immediately cast [provoke] and forced the Malevolent Little Devil to change its target to Zhang Yang. The monster stopped mid-stride and immediately started chanting a spell.

[crash magic]!

Zhang Yang successfully stopped the spell from casting and also inflicted a [silence] effect for 3 seconds; preventing the monster from casting any other skills within the debuff duration. Unable to use its regular magical attack, the monster resort to using its claw to attack.

O!

As a magic type monster, the Malevolent Little Devil had only around 500 physical attack damage. After going through his defense and passive skills, Zhang Yang literally felt nothing!

With the massive party's attack, the monster's 100,000 HP was nothing to be concerned about. Within seconds, the party took down the monster effortlessly.

Once the second wave of monsters attacked, the classes which did the most damage were Spellcasters. They were the naturally AoE killers; with [Rain of Fire] or [hail storm] being able to inflict more damage than a Hunter's [barrage]! However, the one major disadvantage was that all Spellcasters would require MP to cast any skills! Naturally, AoE spells were the ones that consumed the most MP! At most, a Spellcaster could only cast around 10 AoE spells before needing to withdraw from the front line to restore their MP. However, in battle mode, players could not just sit down to nibble on recovery snacks. To recover HP or MP, they could only depend on Spirit and MP potions, which were rather inefficient.

This time, it was the Hunters who could display their strength since they depended on Focus points to cast skills. Focus recovered at a constant rate of 10 points per second; Hunters would be able to fight as long as they needed to, as long as they had sufficient arrows in their inventory.

A Spellcaster's damage skills could easily exceed a Hunter's in a short period of time, however, once the fight drags on for longer, Hunters would easily catch up with overall damage output. If a Spellcaster wore equipment with high Spirit attribute, they could match evenly with a Hunter in terms of total damage output.

As the war continued on for 40 minutes, the monster that were coming out from the Fortress started to decline. However, the number of elites in

the warzone were starting to increase in frequency, from 100 normal monsters per 1 elite, to 10 normal monsters per 1 elite.

The pressure of the war has increased dramatically as more and more players were starting to die off. If 7 or 8 Malevolent Little Devils were to attack simultaneously, even Zhang Yang would be roasted to a crisp.

Zhang Yang cried out. "BACK! BACK! WITHDRAW! LET THE NPC'S TAKE THE FRONTLINE!"

Chapter 183: Nazghoul

Those who had low HP could easily retreat and heal back up, but those who were dead could only watch the event from White Jade Castle! It's time to let the NPCs to take one for the team!

All 3 guilds fell back and made way for the rushing NPC army to take the lead in the war.

A knight in shining armor, riding a white horse rushed to the head of the army and cried, "Soldiers of White Jade Castle! Fight for the Empire! Fight for your nation!"

"HURRAH!!"

With a sudden strong war cry, the NPC army rushed forward and charge into the monster army.

Zhang Yang bellowed. "Kill the demons!"

"Woohoo!"

Zhang Yang's approach to using the NPC army at his disposal was rather different compared to the others. In contrast, at the other side of the battlefield, many other players had been cowering behind the army's back, letting the NPCs take the brunt of the damage. By then, after two waves of monsters, their NPC army had been reduced by half, with the surviving ones left with very little HP.

With the NPC army at the front line, Zhang Yang's side had it easy now. Working together with the NPCs, the players on this side of the battlefield were having a much easier time at killing the incoming threats. The pressure was significantly lessened.

50 minutes into the war.

'Ding! The second wave boss Nazghoul has appear!'

The system notification rang and a huge, 20-meter-tall demon spawned. It was extremely distinguishable as its entire body was red in color. The demon strode towards the players, creating strong tremors as each step hit

the earth!

The smaller demons had stopped spawning.

[Nazghoul] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 52

HP: 12,000,000

Defense: 500

“WTF?! What a big ass monster. Is that still considered a demon? I thought demons were mostly human sized.” said Endless Starlight as he saw the monster approaching. “If that’s the case, then we are the ones who are mini-sized!”

Be it by luck, or chance, whatever you call it, Naghoul was heading straight for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang turned around and cried out to his charges. “Prepare to fight the boss! Remember the strategy! Move and spread out!”

All players from the 3 guilds started to move around to form a huge net like formation to surround the boss. The net consisted of 2 circular formations with the inner circle prepared to fight the boss and the outer circle ready to fight off other players that intended to KS the boss! With all 3 guilds working together, excluding Lost Paradise, Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage were recognized super guilds, no players would dare to even try KSing the boss, unless The Dominators and Sky High actually formed an alliance to defeat them.

After all, everybody belonged to White Jade Castle. If you did not bump into them at one particular street, you would eventually bump into to them on another. If they wanted to try fighting for the boss, they would have to measure their own capability first!

[charge]!

Zhang Yang set off like a gust wind and collided with the boss. Zhang Yang used [blood rage] and gained 30 Rage. He then immediately cast [destructive smash] and [Cripple Defense].

Spouting some random gibberish, Nazghoul cried and begun to move both its claws around like a tai-chi master. Apparently it was trying to cast a [Fire Ball].

“-3552!”

BOOM!

The [Fire Ball] blasted Zhang Yang directly, causing rather significant damage. That was not all, the [Fire Ball] seemed to have an AoE effect that caused a fan of fire to spread 3 meters around Zhang Yang. A few other tanks who were close to Zhang Yang had received around 4000 damage.

Nazghoul's [Fire Ball] attack power was at around 5000. With the AoE effect of the attack, other tanks had taken 450 more damage than Zhang Yang since they did not possess any equipment that had damage absorption ability.

Zhang Yang took note of that and quickly made a decision. “All melee attackers move to the boss's back! Make sure everyone stays at least 3 meters away from me!”

Bang Bang Boom Boom!

All elite players from 3 guilds started their attacks ferociously.

After 5 layers of [Cripple Defense], the boss still had 300 Defense, but Zhang Yang had [eagle eye]. To him, any monster or boss that faced him would have zero defense after Zhang Yang had stacked sufficient [Cripple Defense]. For Zhang Yang alone, all attacks would technically be at their maximum strength without any restriction! An unrestricted attack by Zhang Yang was so strong that it could really send anyone's jaw dropping.

Without talking about about Crimson Rage or Lost Paradise, even the players from Lone Desert Smoke who have never joined Zhang Yang in his elite raiding party, were all gasping as they saw how devastating their own guild master was.

“Eh, Panda, you said that Zhan Yu was a Guardian, right?”

“No...No...I er...It must be fake!”

“I mean look at that damage!”

Listening to other guild member chattering about the prowess of their own guild master, the members of Lone Desert Smoke were rather honored and proud! Even when they were not the ones tanking the boss, they could feel the glory and pride of having Zhang Yang as their own guild master.

90%, 80%...

Although Nazghoul's HP was at least 2,000,000 more than the previous boss, Bangla, Zhang Yang's side consisted of 3 guild's elite forces. Their firepower was stronger than Sky High alone. So, even with more HP than Bangla, the boss was dying at a faster rate!

At the other side of the battlefield, The Dominators were standing idly.

“Boss, aren't we taking that boss as well?”

Humbly Gentleman immediately replied without thinking. “Of course we are taking that boss! I don't care if we miss the other boss, we must take the one from Zhan Yu! It's him that I want to KS the most!”

“But boss...Zhan Yu's own Lone Desert Smoke had two other guild backing his back. That's Crimson Rage and Lost Paradise! I also think that when we were KSing the boss from Sky High, they probably saw us! We might eventually have to face hostility from 4 g...”

That player did not dare to finish his sentence. The message was clearly understood.

Humbly Gentleman pondered slightly. “As long as we make the first move, the smaller guilds would not just stand idly by. It will be the same as before! Hmph! How could I ever let them take the boss so easily! Get ready! We will make our move at 20% HP!”

Although Zhang Yang had full control of the boss' aggro, it would still occasionally cast [Fire Ball] at a random direction! Every time the boss cast the skill, it always dealt 5000 damage to other players! The damage was strong! This, was the specialty of a field boss! It would almost always possess strong AoE damage!

Although the healers were doing their very best, they could not completely prevent events of instant deaths! Casualties will always occur in every battle. After around 400 deaths, the players had managed to reduce the boss' HP down to 20%!

Humbly Gentleman cried out. "Brothers! We are taking the boss!"

"OOOOOOHHH!"

An army of players were charging towards the boss.

Zhang Yang immediately had an idea and commanded his troops. "Open up, let them pass through!"

Everyone was baffled but obeyed his words nevertheless. The players around made an opening and gave way to the players from The Dominators.

Zhang Yang quickly turned around and kited the boss towards The Dominators. With a quick [charge], Zhang Yang was right in the middle of the crowd.

BOOM!

The boss cast a [Fire Ball] and hit Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang took the damage, also causing nearby players to take the damage as well!

Those players who only had a full set of Green-Copper equipment would only have 4500 HP at most! The attack from the boss was enough to instantly kill those players! Wherever Zhang Yang ran to, the players from The Dominators were mowed down like weeds.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

Constant "-5000!" damage texts kept on floating up by as many more players were massacred! By borrowing the strength of the boss, Zhang Yang rushed into the crowd of players from The Dominators and killed more than 1000 players from their main attacking force!

Humbly Gentleman quickly turned pale as he saw what was happening. "K-Kill! KILL ZHAN YU!"

Zhang Yang laughed at his feeble words and led the boss to the death of

more players. With quick reactions, Zhang Yang survived the onslaught with [shield wall], [substitute] and other skills.

The strength of The Dominators was not as strong as the combine forces of 3 guilds, but they had still dared to move against them. In turn, they wanted to incur the greed of other smaller guilds around. As those players charged in with no one in particular to be blamed for trying to KS from a super guild, the Dominators could then follow through for the steal! However, Zhang Yang had borrowed the strength of the boss and instantly killed thousands of The Dominators. The greedy players who were meant to be collaterals in the frivolous scheme were left shivering in fear, if The Dominators had failed to raid the boss, how could they possibly do so?

The Dominators initially had more than 10,000 men. They had lost around 700 when they pulled off that stunt on Sky High's boss. Additionally, they had also lost around 300 men while facing the monster waves, even after having the NPC army fighting at the front lines. Finally, the Zhang Yang-boss union had killed over 2000 of their players. Their remaining players had been drastically reduced to around 7000! What else were they left with to fight the alliance of 3 guilds?

On the other side of the field, Sky High had come into the fray; to join the fight against The Dominators!

Dropping everything in hand, The Dominators retreated back to the top of the slope, leaving behind another 1000 more dead players. It was just like losing their wallets and returning home to find their house burned down; truly a series of unfortunate events!

Humbly Gentleman was stamping on the ground angrily. He could never have predicted that Zhang Yang would actually lead the boss to them and use its strength to butcher his own men! Like a butterfly effect, one action will lead to another. The Dominators had successfully incited the greed of others. This fault, Humbly Gentleman could only swallow by himself.

5%, 3%, 1%, 0%!

Nazghoul let out an ear-piercing shriek and fell over, equipment and items bursting out of it as it did.

Zhang Yang reacted hastily and quickly picked up all the shiny equipment and a few skill books.

Snow Seeker and Crimson Fire came by with a flash and picked up the items as fast as they could. But they were not as quick as Zhang Yang; the only loots that they could pick up were a few Green-Copper equipment. The good stuff was all in Zhang Yang inventory! Even though they were in an alliance, they were not in the same party! That was why, even with party leader distribution mode, others would still have the authority to loot items.

“Zhan Yu guild master...” Snow Seeker was rather straightforward. Without saying anything else, she thrust her hand out, gesturing expectantly.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Relax, I was worried that the good stuff might get taken by someone else!”

“You have sharp eyes, man! There isn’t a single piece of Gray-Silver equipment left!” said Crimson Fire as he snickered.

Zhang Yang gave both Crimson Fire and Snow Seeker 3 Gray-Silver equipment each. “There are 8 of them in total. I’ll take one for the team and keep two for myself! Erhm...let me have some Green-Copper equipment for a change!”

Crimson Fire was rather delighted and gladly gave Zhang yang 4 Green-Copper equipment as a trade for the 3 Gray-Silver equipment. For Lost Paradise, it was an extremely rare case for them to obtain any level 50 Gray-Silver equipment. Even with back-breaking effort and a die-hard attitude, the guild had only been able to obtain the Gray-Silver equipment after raiding two bosses from the Castle Interior dungeon. To them, it was the best achievement they could ever obtain. Everyone smiled from ear to ear as Lost Paradise returned to their own position.

Chapter 184: The Third Wave

Snow Seeker was not as easily satisfied as Crimson Fire. After receiving 3 Gray-Silver equipment from Zhang Yang, her palm remained open to Zhang Yang. “What about the skill books?”

For someone of her caliber, of course she would know that skill books were much more valuable than equipment!

Zhang Yang played dumb, trying his best as possible to look oblivious. “What skill book? I didn’t see any!”

Snow Seeker had an expression that could be called a smile, yet she could also not be smiling. “I see...I should let you hang out with Perfume Water more often, then!”

Zhang Yang immediately raised his hands in surrender.

What a b*tch!

He took one book out and gave it to her. Without saying another word, Zhang Yang turned around and ran back to his position. He had taken 3 skill books in total. He was very much afraid that this woman could be greedier than he is.

Back at his position, Zhang Yang took out a skill book and a Gray-Silver robe, giving it to Han Ying Xue.

“Snowy Devil! Give me 100 thousand gold pieces as tribute!”

Han Ying Xue shamelessly took the equipment and skill book. She quickly changed into the equipment and learned the skill.

She turned to Zhang Yang and winked seductively. “Money? I don’t have any but I could let you use my body in turn!”

Before he had the chance to retort, he felt a sudden chill running down his spine. He turned around frantically and saw Sun Xin Yu staring at him with a pair of eyes that spoke of death. All his muscle tensed up as he had completely forgot about her bring his girlfriend!

The two of them had barely talked after they had left the police station.

Dating aside, they had not even met once after that!

It was also the same in the virtual world, nothing has changed, which had lead Zhang Yang to almost forgot about being tied down with Sun Xin Yu!

He would have never known that even a woman with a heart as cold as ice would get jealous! Even if Sun Xin Yu was not in love with Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue's words had raised her insecurities! Like a child watching another child take hold a toy that she had put aside, she had watched closely. Even if she was not particularly fond of that toy, she would be angry since that toy belonged to her! How could she just let anyone else take it away from her!?

Zhang Yang took out another Gray-Silver equipment and gave it to Sun Xin Yu. "Ice cube. I have one for you as well!"

Hmph! At least he could calm things down a little.

Zhang Yang pondered a little. These two beauties were at about the same level as Lin Yu. In fact, they could at least be three times prettier than her. However, they say that the grass is always greener on the other side, but one will always believe that the homeland was always the best. It was the same in his case, no matter how beautiful the two girls were, he would always have Lin Yu in his heart.

At least for now, he had one more good item in his hands. Zhang Yang took out a skill book and learn it.

[Rearm]: Immediately ends all skill with cool down by 30 minutes.

Cool down: 30 minutes.

This skill can be learn by all classes.

If one had no strong skills to dispense, [rearm] would be completely pointless to learn. On the other hand, if one possessed several strong skills, [rearm] would serve as a godly skill!

Zhang Yang was so happy that his grin stretched all the way to his ears.

"Noob tank! What skill did you just learn?" Wei Yan Er noticed his

suspicious action and asked.

Zhang Yang laughed and posted [rearm] skill description for her to see.

“Do...Does this mean that you can use [shield wall] twice in a row?” said Wei Yan Er surprised.

Zhang Yang’s own little band of players were left speechless as well.

“Ayy sis! What skill did you learn?” asked Wei Yan Er.

Han Ying Xue posted her skill as well.

[Healing Rain]: Heals a maximum of 10 players within 10 meters. Every healing target will receive be healed by 200% of the caster’s magic power.

Casting time: 1.5 seconds.

Cool down time: 30 seconds.

“Strong!” cried Daffodil Daydream.

‘Ding! The third wave of monsters have begun to come out of Tukulo Fortress!’

As they talked, the fortress opened its door for the third time and countless of monster started to rush out!

This time, the monster were riders on horses with burning hooves. They were wearing full black armor with long, two handed spears. The monsters were in an organized formation. The riders rode as one, in an orderly manner. Stomping could be heard as loud as thunder, blasting through the battle field like thousands of drums striking simultaneously.

Similarly to the two previous waves, the riders were separated into two categories; normal and elite. The only difference between the two was that the elites were larger in size - both horse and rider. Anyone could easily tell the difference just by looking at the field.

[Metal-Armor Riders] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 53

HP: 5,300

Defense: 50

[Metal-Armor Rider Captain] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 53

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Thud! Thud! Thud! Like a sea of black ants, the darkness spread across the green field like plague.

BAM! BAM! BAM!

Each rider possessed a such strength that when they swing their spears, almost all tanks that were position on the front of the defense line were pushed back! The defense line was broken instantly! This knockback effect is directly affected by the player's own Strength value. Players like Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight who were equipped well possessed high Strength, and so the knockback distance was negligible, while the other tanks were immediately sent flying to the sky.

The defense line was broken instantly, sending panic to everyone around the fractured formation.

Zhang Yang roared. "All tanks, regroup and reform the defense line! Other classes, retreat! I'll say it again! Other classes, retreat!"

When humans are in a disarray, he or she would unconsciously look for something as a guide, and when straightforward instructions such as these were given out, they would comply before they even process the meaning of those words! Amidst the rumbling chaos, Zhang Yang had roared like a beacon of light. Most of the players who heard his call quickly calmed down and formed a secondary defense line behind what remained of the first!

This time, the NPC army had been triggered by the close proximity of the monsters and had started their own skirmish with the incoming riders.

Zhang Yang tried his best to catch the attention of as many monsters as he could to reduce the burden on the other tanks.

BAM! SWOOSH!

Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep] and [thunder strike], with another [blast wave] after that. His rampage was akin to a heavy-duty machine knocking down small trees in a forest. Due to that, his contribution points shot up like a rocket, peaking at the top with points that doubled the second rank holder, Han Ying Xue!

Han Ying Xue was ranked at second place in the contribution list because of her super-healing capabilities. With a 75% MP cost reduction, the amount of healing she could dispense in the war was at least 50% to 100% of other healers in the troops since she could last much longer! A Priest is specialized in mass healing! With skills like [healing bond], [mending prayers], [healing rain], and many other multi-target healing skill, a Priest is truly a class that could easily prevent death from claiming his victims.

“-1632!”

Zhang Yang suddenly received a significantly higher amount of damage. He looked down at his chest and found the shaft of long spear that had impaled him, along with two other players behind him! They had been skewered together like a human kebab!

“-2931!”

“-2948!”

The two other received damage as well.

CLANG!

A loud metallic sound was heard as the rider pulled the spear back out. The Metal-Armor Rider Captain was completely covered in the metal armor, only a slit exposing nothing but darkness within. Zhang Yang could not even make out the eyes! It was nothing but empty void!

Damn! It even had a strong piercing skill!

In ‘God’s Miracle’, a majority of skill and attack would not pass through objects! Just like the flame thrower skill of the third boss in Bangar Crypt,

as long as someone was in its way, the person behind will not take any damage! This was why Zhang yang could use the bugged system to kill the boss in the first place!

However, there were a few skills that could penetrate object or players. Take this Rider Captain for example, his spear attack would easily penetrate many more players if they were all lined up nicely for him!

“QING DUO LA ER LO!” the elite monster shriek random gibberish and thrust its spear again.

[block]!

Zhang Yang met the incoming spear with his shield.

Violent sparks of light flew about Zhang Yang as he was sent back a step. The elite Rider Captain was knocked on his back on his horse, almost falling off the saddle. In terms of Strength, Zhang Yang was equal to the monster. It had only managed to push Zhang Yang back one step after gaining sizable momentum from the horse's charge!

The area around Lone Desert Smoke had quickly settled down. After fending the sudden Rider Captain's attack, the chaotic period was over quickly and the players around quickly retaliated swiftly.

On the other side of the battle field, things were not going as smoothly as Zhang Yang. Lacking strong players, the other player's defense line was quickly destroyed, sending players there in complete chaos. When the formation was broken, it became harder for them to reform and regroup. They had to retreat back and depend on the NPC army to push back the invading force. However, since the NPC army could not heal themselves, most of the NPC did not last long and perished.

Only super guilds like Sky High could withstand the immense pressure and reform the defense line after much struggle.

The cries of war filled the air. Heads flew, swords clashed, the entire battle field was completely dyed in blood red. The game had utilized its hyper realistic physics engine to depict this historical and climatic war! Everything about this war was too real to be passed off, even though they

knew that this was just a virtual reality game, players still felt the terror and fear from it!

Like it was in ancient wars, the brave would endure and gain more fervor as the weak could only cower behind dead bodies, trembling in fear. This was the main selling point of 'God's Miracle', its hyper realism! Only the truly brave would stand out as the weak and fearful show their true colors.

The third wave of terror had lasted for another 50 minutes.

'Ding! The third wave boss Narxus has appear!'

"NEIGH!" a monstrous sound that could only come from an equally monstrous horse could be heard as a huge rider rode into the field.

With flaming hooves, the beast stood as tall as 10 meters, and was approximately 13 to 14 meters long. As the horse took each step, the ground burst up in blackened ashes, with flames crackling at where the horse had laid its hooves. The rider on the horse back was as large as Zhang Yang had ever seen. The rider was completely covered in the similar, black metal armor while wielding a matching spear that measured at least 10 meters long.

[Demon Knight, Narxus] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 53

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 500

Unlike the two other boss that Zhang Yang had fought, this boss rode like the wind towards the players, leaving behind a trail of burnt ground in its wake.

"WOAH! LOOK! It's the Hell's Stead! Damn! It's so cool!" cried Wei Yan Er when she saw the beast. "AIYA! Don't turn! Don't turn! Come here! Let me kill your ass!"

But Narxus turned away and headed towards the other player defense line. It's positioned at least 4 to 5 km away from Zhang Yang!

"Ack...my horsie! My horsie!" Wei Yan Er sadly and looked at Zhang

Yang with puppy eyes begging, “Noob tank...Let’s go over there and kill that boss!”

Zhang Yang shook his head. “We had already discussed about this yesterday! Whichever guild that the boss heads to, gets to have all rights to it! Unless they personally invite us to join the fight, we won’t raise a hand! With limited forces left, we cannot spare any men to start a civil war! Do you want to be just like that hypocrite of a loser!? If we lose this war, we will have to start over again 2 days later! By then, other city would have already won the war!”

“Tch...stingy noob!” said Wei Yan Er unwillingly. She was rather interested in that horse. In fact, she had always been envious of Zhang Yang’s Skeletal War Horse for quite some time now. When she saw the glorious steed carrying the boss on its back, how could she not want to own it as well? Wei Yan Er pouted her lips angrily like a 3 year old child being denied candy.

Chapter 185: Leash of the Stead from Hell

For this wave, the guild that got the boss was a guild called Place of Glory, a medium-sized guild that had the maximum member capacity of a level 1 guild, with all 10,000 members present on the battlefield. However, even with that many members, none of them were of decent caliber. The average player's level was only around level 25. The best equipped player only had a full set of level 30 Gray-Silver equipment. It simply wasn't enough for to take on the boss!

Narxus had the same penetrating skill as the smaller monsters. The long spear thrust out and skewered through the players like a series of caramel apple on one long stick. The longitudinal skill damaged the unfortunate players with 5000+ damage, enough to kill of at least 7 to 8 players.

Although that skill was quite formidable, the boss had another skill that was even stronger -- a "sweeping" ulti. One clean sweep with the spear would cause 5000 damage to every player within 10 meters around him. Death would be certain to anyone who was unable to escape that radius.

Within a minute, Palace of Glory had only managed to reduce 12% of the boss' HP, while having their own main attacking force completely wiped out. The remaining lower leveled players had a hard time attacking the high leveled boss. Most of their attacks were nullified since their attacks were unable to exceed the boss' defense. If the battle continued on, the guild would be completely routed before the boss is defeated.

The guild master of Palace of Glory was in hysterics. When the guild first saw the boss was heading towards them, they were ecstatic. But as soon as the boss laid down the first strike and followed up with a "sweeping" skill, all that euphoria was completely replaced with complete despair. The drops from a Gray-Silver boss was great and all, but the at least one must have the capability to defeat it first!

"Palace of Glory has given up on the boss! The boss is now free for all!" The guild master cried out as he led the remaining survivors to retreat to safety.

Zhang Yang slammed the axe into the ground and call out to Hundred Shots. “Snowy b*tch! Follow me! Hundred Shots! Bring a team of ranged attackers and follow me!”

The monsters around Zhang Yang’s area had already been defeated. Most of the players here were already resting -- sitting on the ground munching on recovery snacks. Hundred Shots went around the crowd and recruited a few strong Hunters and Spellcasters. One by one, the recruited players summoned their mounts and followed Zhang Yang to the boss.

“Hey! Noob tank! Remember to bring back the horsie for me!” Wei Yan Er yelled.

To defeat the boss was not just the intention of Lone Desert Smoke alone. Crimson Rage, The Dominators, and Sky High had already dispatched their own elite group of attackers. Others who had the capability to kill the boss, like the big four, lesser known ones like Lost Paradise and Miracle Garden, had also joined in the fray.

In a short time, close to 10 groups of players had rushed towards the boss. All of the incoming party were consisted of 2 tanks and a bunch of ranged attackers, followed by a few healers! They had already learned their lesson when the first and third boss were wiping out their melee classes like they were snapping a twig.

Zhang Yang stopped his horse 50 meters before the boss and shouted, “Everyone! The enemy is at hand, I suggest that we do not fight amongst ourselves but instead join hands to defeat this tough boss! Let go for the first come first serve basis! Whoever gets their hands on any of the equipment shall have full claim to it without contest!”

If everyone wanted to have their city to be the best in the world, everyone have to be united! They would have to suppress their greed for loots and instead quench the thirst for honor instead! Everyone had same thoughts as Zhang Yang and were in line with his thoughts! After all, those who were sent to defeat this boss were elite members of their respective guilds. As of now, no one could bear to suffer any losses!

Zhang Yang saw that everyone had someone come to terms with his

suggestion and was pleased. Zhang Yang rushed to the boss and started to fight. In his mind, he was rather happy, not because of the unity, but because he knew that he was going to be the one getting all the good stuff! His athletic speed and reaction is not something he had just obtained. No one could be as fast as he! Still, it's bad taste to haul everything in sight. Instead, he could at least grab all the really good ones first!

Narxus was still chasing after members of Palace of Glory, and in the ongoing pursuit, they lost another 1,000 players. The situation was already bad for them, yet the boss had to rub additional salt on their wounds. They were no longer just running back to the hill like children crying for their mothers! They had already dropped their swords and were fleeing with their tails between their legs!

While Zhang Yang was already within the boss' aggro zone, the boss had ignored the threat as the boss was still locked onto Palace of Glory members. Zhang Yang immediately unsummoned his mount and slid across the battlefield with [charge]!

[provoke!]

Immune!

[blood rage]

Rage +30!

[horizontal sweep]!

Normal attack!

"-1,423!"

"-2,983!"

The [Cripple Defense] effect on the boss had long since expired. Only Zhang Yang was able to strike 3000+ damage while the boss still had 600 Defense. Only Zhang Yang, the player with a Yellow-Gold weapon and a 50% ignore defense passive [eagle eye] could do that! Once other players witnessed the prowess of Zhang Yang, every one of them instinctively jumped at the sight of the ridiculously high damage.

After two instances of attacks, Narxus finally turned his attention to Zhang Yang. The boss raised its spear high in the air, ready to strike Zhang Yang. It cannot be helped; the main attacking force of Palace of Glory had been killed off earlier. The remaining players around could only deal nullified damage as their own attack power was unable to surpass the boss' defense. The aggro that any of them generate was so low that 1 minutes' worth of attack was easily overtaken by Zhang Yang's two instances of attacks.

[block]!

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the attack. Once the attack was stopped, the piercing effect was not implemented and the protected players behind Zhang Yang continued to lay down their attack.

"Attention! Do not stand in line with me! Please attack from 30 meters away! That's the furthest distance possible! Dear friends from other guild, please do not forget to set your attacking mode to "City Raid" mode."

In 'God's Miracle', there were many types of attacking mode to match different situation. For example, in the Eight server-wide world war, if you switched to "Server Raid" mode, your AoE attack will only cause damage to players from other servers instead! Another example is the current war that involves the players from an entire city. "City Raid" mode would cause their attack to hit only the enemy instead of each another. This was to prevent any unwanted conflict.

There are also other attacking modes such as "Guild Raid", "Party Attack", and "Attack All"¹.

Just as Zhang Yang had finished his words, he glanced towards Humbly Gentleman.

Humbly Gentleman changed his expression suddenly and cried. "What are you looking at me for, Zhan Yu? Do I look like man who casts aside the greater good?"

Sky Shaman huffed lightly and made eye contact with Zhang Yang. Both of them exchanged a look and nodded together, instantly agreeing to do one thing: Form an alliance after the war and kill The Dominators!

More than 10 guilds had started to send out their tanks to attack the boss. It was not because they feared Zhang Yang might not be able to handle the boss alone and would die after. On the contrary, it was because their range attackers and other non-tank classed players were just too weak to endure any of the boss' attack. If they did not send anyone up to the boss, how could any of them loot any equipment when the boss dies?

Initially, none of the guilds knew about Zhang Yang's potential or capabilities; no one dared to let their guard down! But when they took a quick look at the damage list, their eyes went wide open, unsure if they were reading it wrong, or if they had suddenly seen a naked woman dancing across the street. Is this Guardian on turbo, nitro or whatever else that made a car super-fast?! What the heck! His damage was so high that he was ranked at the top! He had even left a massive gap between him and the second rank!

[eagle eye] effect grows stronger as the Defense of the boss was higher. Furthermore, the weapon in his hand was a Yellow-Gold tier!

Even though it looked like Zhang Yang was focusing on the boss, he was actually paying attention to his surroundings. He wanted to prevent anyone from attacking his back, especially The Dominators. To let them guard your rear was like depending on a monkey to guard your bananas!

For Zhang Yang to bravely fight in the front lines; he obviously had a trump card against those cheating bastards, the [shadow of the void]! After activating the skill, his character will immediately leave the battle and enter another dimension where no one can attack him and vice-versa. However, it was his trump card, and if possible, he did not want to expose his skill!

With Han Ying Xue's massive support power and Zhang Yang's high defense, attack immunity skills, as long as they had enough time, both of them were enough to slowly kill the boss! However, the surrounding players were rather greedy and fierce! Everyone was attacking with their might, causing the boss HP drop like a boy going down a water slide.

70%...50%...30%...the boss' HP was about to be emptied out!

Many attacking players and smaller guilds were standing at the outer circle and all they could only look on in envy. However, there were many strong guilds attacking the boss together! No one else dared to attack since they risked offending several guilds at the same time!

10%, 5%, 0%!

The boss fell off its horse and slammed against the ground hard, sending a minor tremor in every direction. In that instance, close to 20 items popped out and drops onto the ground!

LOOOTS!

The tanks that were closer to the loots had bent over and picked up any items they could get their hands on. This time, everyone was smarter. They had switched their looting mode to All-Pick

Zhang Yang eyes were faster, and with one quick sweep, he picked up 3 items!

All 20 items that were on the ground didn't last for more than a second, quickly finding themselves in player inventories instead! The atmosphere of the field was rather mixed, those who got their hands on Gray-Silver items were elated while the ones who got Green-Copper were filled with disappointment. However, they were others that were even devastated as they had not been able to pick up anything at all. If they were guild master themselves, it would be alright, but if they were regular guild members, they would surely be scolded by their guild masters when they return empty handed.

Zhang Yang summoned the [Skeletal War Horse] and hopped onto it's back. "Everyone! Return to your original positions immediately! The fourth wave of monsters will spawn in just 2 more minutes!"

After the third wave of monsters, everyone had gotten an idea of how the war system worked. Monster wave will spawn continuously for 50 minutes and will stop after that. There will be a 10 minute window for the players to kill the boss! After one hour, the next wave will spawn.

Snow Seeker came to Zhang Yang and asked. "Zhan Yu Guild master, did

you get anything good?”

Zhang Yang laughed. “How about you?”

Both of them exchanged looks and kept their lips sealed. Even when both guilds were allies, they were not in the same guild, it would only cause each other grievance if they shared their results.

Back to where his guild waited, Wei Yan Er cried out when she saw Zhang Yang returning. “So? Where is my horsie! Horsie! HORSIE WHERE ART THOU!”

“Keep quiet, you annoying little brat!” said Han Ying Xue.

Just when Wei Yan Er was about to throw a tantrum, Zhang Yang laughed. “I was rather lucky! Look! I got a [Leash of the Hell’s Stead]!”

“Really?!” said Wei Yan Er with her eyes wide open.

Zhang Yang posted the item’s description and shared it with everyone.

A small party had a maximum of 10 players, and every 5 small parties will form a group, every 20 groups will form an expedition! Those who were in the same small party as Zhang Yang were those that were really close to him, with two more extra players, Defiant Monk and Ironhills. The rest of the party was just there to filled in the gap.

[Leash of the Hell’s Stead] (Ground Mount)

Use: Summon or unsummon a Hell’s Stead for a player to ride.

Summon Time: 2 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

Bound upon first-time usage.

“MINE! GIMME! MINE! MY PRECIOUS!” Wei Yan Er cried.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “This item will be placed in the guild auction. Buy it with your contribution points!”

Wei Yan Er snorted as she approached Zhang Yang looked at him with a rather cute and pitiful puppy face.

“Pretty please...”

Zhang Yang laughed. “Don’t look at me like that! This item has to be bought with guild contribution points. What if there are others with higher guild contribution points? If I just gave this horse to you, I would be treating the rest of the guild rather unfairly!”

“But! My points is higher than yours! I’m higher than my cousin and sister Sun!”

Zhang Yang shooked his head. “I have the [Skeletal War Horse], so I’m not going to compete with you! All that’s left is your cousin and that ice cube! Hurry up and persuade them! I’m going to sell the item already!”

Wei Yan Er quickly ran to Sun Xin Yu and Hang Ying Xue to persuaded them with all she had. By the looks of Han Ying Xue’s twitching lips, it would seem that she had made a different sort of deal.

Zhang Yang then posted the [Leash of the Hell’s Stead] in the guild channel and said, “Attention members of Lone Desert Smoke! This item was only looted in the boss fight less than 5 minutes ago! Now, based on the rules, everyone can participate and bid. You may use your accumulated guild contribution points to buy this item! Please, remember! Only guild contribution points are acceptable! I do not want to hear gold coins or cash! This is a guild, not a free-market to flaunt your wealth! The guild will only acknowledge your contribution points! Nothing more! Nothing less!”

“Right! Everyone can now start bidding for the item! If the same amount of bids are issued, the faster one will be selected! One more thing, besides bidding, no one is allowed to use the guild channel! 200 guild contribution points will be deducted for that offense.”

Everyone in Lone Desert Smoke was startled. Based on the regular standard operating procedure, super rare items would automatically be shared among the guild officers and not the regular member.

Suffice to say, the Black-Steel equipment and Green-Copper equipment, along with a luxurious amount of experience points, all dropped by the monsters were already enough to satisfy everyone in the guild. Now, they

had the qualifications granted to them to participate in the rare item auction! Zhang Yang had clearly won over the hearts of the member just by sharing the loot.

Guild contribution points...crap!

Everyone started to wail and cry. If they had known earlier that the points could be used for events like this, they would have already done it as a daily routine!

100! 200! 300! 500!

Everyone cried out the contribution points to bid for the horse.

“1,200!” Wei Yan Er cried out the number that anyone else could hope to have.

Zhang Yang went with the flow. “1,200! Any higher? 1,200 going once! Going twice! 1,200! Anyone?”

The guild channel remain silent.

“Sold! Congratulation to Player Drizzler for obtaining the mount! Hundred Shots, deduct 1,200 contribution points from Drizzler’s character.”

Even though they could not get their hands on the mount, they were still filled with spirit and excitement! None of them were displeased about the result! They knew that someday, they too, could get their hands on rare item! All that they needed were guild contribution points!

By using this method of distribution, all were equal. No guild officer could have special treatment! They would have to depend on guild quests and dungeon raids to collect their points. All in all, it was rather fair to everyone.

Zhang Yang took two more Gray-Silver equipment dropped by Narxus and auctioned them in the guild channel. Before he began, Zhang Yang advised Han Ying Xue and the rest of his own party to not participate in the auction. This way of sharing their wealth, was a good way to bring everyone closer!

1Attack All mode – In previous chapters, I used the term “Friendly Fire” instead of “Attack All”.

Chapter 186: Hijack!

‘Ding! The fourth wave of monsters have started to come out of Tukula Fortress!’

A huge, 10 meter tall treant started to walk out slowly from the fortress! Its movement speed seemed rather sloppy and sluggish. The monster moved one limb after the other, at a speed slightly above that of a real life sloth. However, each stride it took was vast -- as long as 6 to 7 meters. In actuality, it was moving rather swiftly towards them!

Like the previous waves of monsters, treants were also divided into normal and elites. The elite monster was twice the height. Like a sky-scraping tree in the amazon jungle, this monster had similarly proportional long legs! In fact, it was so huge that every step caused a massive tremor!

[Thick Bark Treant] (Normal, Elemental)

Level: 54

HP: 5,400

Defense: 100

[Iron Bark Treant] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 54

HP: 100,000

Defense: 600

Such a strong defense value; almost double that of other monsters! As expected of the names they were given.

Zhang Yang frowned. In just three waves of monster, the army of players had already lost more than 30% of their total members! Only half of the NPC army remained! This is just the fourth wave! Each wave will definitely be stronger and tougher than the previous waves! If the battle continued on like this, they might not be able to handle all 10 waves!

The thumping of the treants could be heard louder and louder as they

approach nearer.

Wham!

As soon as they were in melee range, the treants lifted up their massive feet and stomped on the tanks! Its massive size was so large that it was enough to stomp on 3 to 4 players at a time.

Players around started to initiate their counter attack. The Thick Bark Treants were easier to deal with since they only had 100 Defense. The Iron Bark Treant were significantly harder! Physical attack-type players had a really tough time trying to return damage blow for blow.

Still, one class stood out better than the rest. With strong Defense, the treants had one weakness, fire! Pyromancers in the vicinity were casting waves of [Rain of Fire], dealing more than twice the normal damage!

In an instant, Pyromancers had their contribution points shoot up like rockets. Daffodil Daydream was one in particular. She had been following Zhang Yang for the past month and had obtained many equipment for herself. She wore a complete set of Gray-Silver equipment. Her damage soared to the sky, laying waste to everything she set her sight on!

Phew Boom! Boom! Her rank rose from 13th to 9th, overtaking Fatty Han at 10th place.

Looking at his rank, Fatty Han could not help but cry in envy.

The vigorous battle raged on, leaving countless monsters dead, equipment that couldn't be perceived with numbers left among their corpses! Subsequently, many players were killed off as well, leaving the battle field emptier as time went on.

"Zhan Yu, how many men do you have left?" ask Snow Seeker, nervously.

"I've lost more than 2000 men. But my main attack force is still intact!" Zhang Yang answered. During the recruitment drive, Lone Desert Smoke had a rather strict policy. The guild would only recruit high leveled and strong players. So, out of a maximum capacity of 20,000 players, the guild only had a total of 9,000 players at the moment.

Moreover, the average level of the members of Lone Desert Smoke was quite high, being at Level 42! Most players that were killed off were basically at around level 30 or so, they had participated in the war only for experience points and equipment. So, while the casualties may seem high in number, it was negligible in terms of strength. Moreover, the healers were now able to focus their healing on the important members only. The combat efficiency of the guild had only risen!

“Our guild has over 7,000 players left! We’ve even lost some elites! If this goes on, we might be in danger! I think we can only last until the 7th or 8th wave before we bite the dust!” said Snow Seeker worriedly.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Let’s just give it all we got!”

In his previous life, he had never participated in such an event. He was not clear of the difficulty of this war! But there was one thing that he knew clearly, even though Violet Star City’s item collection quest was not completed rather quickly, the other cities repeatedly failed their expedition war, and so, victory was claimed by Violet Star City, led by the infamous One Sword Stroke!

Since then, his name soared to the high heavens and became the number 1 tank in the China server!

“I...I’ll never allow myself to lose to anyone!” Zhang Yang muttered silently. He had always believed that he had the talent in online gaming. Now that he started along with everyone, if he lost to One Sword Stroke while having such an abundance of experience, he would rather just find a rotten piece of tofu and knock himself to death with it!

50 minutes into the wave...

‘Ding! The fourth wave boss, Lodac has appeared!’

A super-sized, 100 meter tall giant treant appeared in the battle field. In just one step, it manage to traverse by several hundred meters!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

In just 4 steps, the monstrous treant had arrived to the doorsteps of The Dominators.

Wham! It stomped the ground and struck at least 30 players in one shot, causing many “-5,000!” damage text to pop up like flies.

[Demonized Treant Lodac] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 54

HP: 14,000,000

Defense: 1,200

“Hold on! Hold on! Get the aggro locked in!” cried out Humbly Gentleman. He wanted to pull the aggro himself but he was a Spellcaster!

Traveling Piglet ran up to the front and after a number of aggro-gaining skills, he managed to hold onto the boss’ aggro. Instantly, the main attacking force of The Dominators started their attack. However, even after inflicting 5 [Cripple Defense], the boss’s 600 Defense proved too strong for anyone from the physical attacking class. Exasperated, they were crying out in agony.

Ladac had two attack patterns. The first attack was the stomping attack that caused an area attack of 5,000 damage to every single player in a specific area. The second attack was fist slam, capable of causing 5,000 damage to every player in a long straight line!

Since the boss was extremely large in size, all melee players did not have to go near it to attack; thus, they will not take much damage. Melee class such as Berserker, Thief, Templar were able to approach the boss to attack, their lives out of danger as long they keep a distance from Traveling Piglet.

There were many melee attackers participating in the war, so even though the boss had such strong Defense, and the glaring weakness of treants towards fire, they were doing good damage, more so than the previous boss fights!

Humbly Gentleman begun to smile happily, looking like a cheater grinning evilly after a successful scam. His face was truly asking to be pummeled on.

“Hey noob tank, That Humbly what’s-his-face is really annoying and irritating! Let’s go and KS his boss!” said Wei Yan Er after staring irritably for a while. She had been pacing up and down on her Hell’s Stead.

Zhang Yang thought for a moment and said, “No. The amount of fighting force we have left is very little! If we had another internal conflict, I fear that the chance of us finishing this Expedition would be slim!”

Wei Yan Er pout her lips disgruntledly. “Are you going to just let them be?!”

Zhang Yang smirked. “Calm your flat pan cakes! Just you wait! I’ll take all their loots!”

Everyone turned their heads and rolled their eyes.

Do you really think that you are a god of war now? How do you plan on getting past the 3 circles of attackers and 3 other circles of defenders and get to the boss?

Zhang Yang laughed at their incredulous stares. “Just you wait and see!”

Even though Sky Shaman hated Humbly Gentleman down to his bones, he could jeopardize the entire expedition for the sake of revenge! The main objective right now was to survive all 10 waves of monsters! Grudges can be settled after the war!

As the battle raged on, Lodac’s HP was left with only 20%!

Zhang Yang summoned his mount and rode towards The Dominators.

“Little brat! Keep me updated on the boss’ HP!”

He rode on, leaving his guild members behind.

Everyone was rather confused as they listened to Wei Yan Er yelling the HP percentage repeatedly.

“19%, 18%, 17%, 16%...”

Zhang Yang pulled up near the outermost defense circle and waited there patiently.

Humbly Gentleman always liked to take advantage of others, and fearful

of the same being done to him, he was a paranoid one! Now that he saw Zhang Yang coming along with his horse, alarms were blazing in his head and he stared at him suspiciously.

This guy must be up to no good. Could he be trying to lure him out?

Thus, he did not dare lay down the attack order, or else he would have to break his own perfect defense circle, put there in the first place to prevent the nearby Thieves who could be hiding in the shadows, coming out when the boss dies to pick up the loots.

“Zhan Yu! What are you up to?!” Since it was better than to just stand idly by, Humbly Gentleman tried to pry.

Zhang Yang shrugged nonchalantly. “Oh, nothing at all. I like the scenery here!”

Scenery my arse!

Humbly Gentleman nearly opened his mouth to curse. However, he held it in and smile. It did no matter how many hidden thieves he had in place, stealth only made them harder to detect. They could not pass through objects anyway! As long as the defense line is properly formed, no one would get pass this line easily!

Humbly Gentleman quickly reverted to his gentlemanly persona and smiled gently. “I see. If you’re keen to watch the scene, please enjoy it to your liking!”

10%, 8%, 6%, 4%!

Zhang Yang dashed forward and breached the defense line!

Without waiting for the attack command, the players in the defense line started to attack with hundreds of arrows, fire balls, frost arrows, aiming directly at Zhang Yang! Even if he was a super tank, these attacks were enough to kill him off in one wave!

BOOM! PAK! WHAM! PEW!

As the attack ended, every attack seemed to only hit air and kicked up dust on the ground, with Zhang Yang nowhere in sight!

Humbly Gentleman was so baffled that his eyeballs nearby popped out of their sockets.

What the hell just happened?! That was [stealth]! How could a Guardian learn [stealth]!? WTF!? I must be confused!

“Use all AoE skills! Don’t leave any corner untouched!” Humbly Gentleman spun around and ordered his equally bewildered members.

At the same time, the outermost circle Hunters and Spellcasters had attacked continuously with their AoE skills at the area where Zhang Yang was last seen. Any hidden Thief would be forced out of hiding after receiving an attack, if they were to remain in the same spot!

Invalid! Invalid! Invalid!

Humbly Gentleman began to have second thoughts. “Did the first wave of attack killed him already?”

“3%, 2%, 1%!” the chirpy voice of Wei Yan Er rang continuously in Zhang Yang’s ears!

He was already in the realm provided by the skill, [shadow of the void]! He was still in the same battlefield but in this realm, all life forms had disappeared from his vision, Zhang Yang felt like he had entered a barren earth with him as the sole survivor.

Easily and effortlessly, Zhang Yang had breached through the defense line of The Dominators and arrived at the point where he estimated the boss’ stood.

When Wei Yan Er announced that the boss’ HP was at 1%, he quickly activated [blood rage] and gained 30 Rage point, whilst surfacing out of the [shadow of the void]. Immediately, as he resurfaced in the real world, he was greeted by the sight of thousands of players along with the gigantic boss.

[destructive smash]!

‘-3,324!’

With that one attack, Zhang Yang had dealt the last attack to kill off the

boss.

‘Ding! You have killed Lodac! You have struck the last blow! You have been granted 50% of all experience points! Obtained 7,000,000 Experience Points!’

Chapter 187: The Fifth Wave

Zhang Yang hands were in a blur, like the hands of Flash! Swish! Swoosh! He grabbed all the loots and placed them into his inventory! From Gray-Silver equipment to skill books, leaving the Green-Copper as the last...he swiped them off the ground!

He had hide his player's profile and turned on the helmet effect that hide his face and appearance. He had even unequipped his shield to be safe! When the players around him saw him picking up the loots, they were not suspicious of him since they knew that the item distribution mode was set to leader distribution. If you wanted the honors of picking them up, by all means, that's probably the closest you can get to owning it!

However, in a flash, they realized that something was going wrong. The items on the floor were disappearing extremely quickly!

"Spy! There's a spy!" one of the player shouted which had instantly triggered the nearby players to react and attack Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang summoned [Clear Lotus] and activated [substitute] to gain immunity.

Zhang Yang took this chance to quickly pick more items as he could!

At this point of the game, no many players could get their hands on a [Servant]. Those who knew about the [substitute] ability were only those within Zhang Yang's party. There was no way that players from The Dominators would know that they would need to kill the servant before they could dispel the immunity effect, thus everyone was vigorously attacking Zhang Yang with everything they had.

5 seconds was very short, in that time, Zhang Yang had missed 3 Green-Copper equipment on the ground. He then ignored the items and used [charge], targeting the closest Spellcaster. In an instant, he activated [rearm] and refreshed every skill's cool down!

[shadow of the void]!

Swoosh!

In Zhang Yang's world, every living being was removed from his vision. He quickly dashed back to his guild position. In the effect of [shadow of the void], his movement speed was increased by 100%. With a 20 second active duration, it was enough for him to run 300 to 400 meters away!

By the time the skill had ended, Zhang Yang had reappeared far away within the NPC army. He then summoned his mount and rode by safely to his guild position. Zhang Yang checked his loots and found that he had looted 9 Gray-Silver equipment, 19 Green-Copper equipment and two skill books, [grace] and [healing rain].

Haha! Humbly Gentleman would have cried his eyes out if he had knew I took these awesome skill books!

That being said, Humbly Gentleman was still preoccupied with Zhang Yang's disappearing act. Was he still alive? Humbly Gentleman was still at the outermost circle of defense, commanding the troops to attack at random. In that instant, he had so distracted that he did not bother about the boss loots. In his opinion, as long as the defense line was intact, no one else could pick up the boss' loots, so it does not matter!

However, when his underling had reported about the loots had been looted by an unknown player, Humbly Gentleman had frantically shoved his way to the boss' copse and found only three miserable Green-Copper equipment lying there!

Having worked tirelessly for so long to earn only 3 pieces of Green-Copper equipment?! Humbly Gentleman felt his final fuse burning out. He asked around, but his underlings could only report that the thief had hidden his profile information and had a helmet covering his head, hiding his face from everyone. With that little information, Humbly Gentleman had the highest confirmation that the thief was Zhang Yang!

Play with fire and you will be get burned one day!

Humbly Gentleman quickly sent a private message to Zhang Yang. "I knew you were behind this! Give me back all the items that you stole!"

Zhang Yang immediately replied. "I have no idea what you are talking about!"

“Don’t act coy with me! I knew that you were the one who stole all our boss loots!”

“No! I did not!” Zhang Yang replied in his heart. “I did not steal. I clearly robbed you!”

“You...” Humbly Gentleman finally had a taste of his own medicine! To be unable to come up with a reply! Furthermore, he had no proof that it was really Zhang Yang who had stolen all his boss loots.

Zhang Yang laughed and continued. “Hey! Hypocrite! The monsters are about to spawn again! Who knows, the next boss might land in your hands again!” If that was really the case, Zhang Yang could easily hijack the boss again since one hour was a luxurious duration for all his skills to refresh!

When Humbly Gentleman saw his reply, he was so enraged that he could feel the anger gushing out of every pore of his body. He felt nauseous. What kind of attitude was that?! At least, he now understood how Sky Shaman felt back then.

On one side, Wei Yan Er was overjoyed. “Hey! Noob tank! Did you really hijack their boss?! I could see their tantrum all the way from here! Ge Ge Ge Ge! It’s looks like fun!”

Zhang Yang only nodded his head and did not say anything else. He then posted each of Gray-Silver equipment he looted in the guild channel and auctioned them off like the rest. One of the equipment was called [Lodac’s Arm Brace], a heavy armor type. Zhang Yang equipped the armlet first, with the intention of getting it identified back at the city, after the war. He will give it to Wei Yan Er if the identified properties were of the offensive type, and keep it for himself if it was a defensive type.

As for the skill books, since Endless Starlight and Han Ying Xue had the skills in hand, Zhang Yang decided that he will put them up for sale in his shop.

‘Ding! The fifth wave of monsters have started to come out of Tukula Fortress!’

In an instant, a massive horde centaurs stampeded out of the fortress.

However, unlike the Kukulo's tribe, these centaurs were completely red, from head to hoof. They looked much fiercer, having eyes that emitted a dark reddish flame. These were clearly indicators of a demonic nature!

Similar to all the previous monster waves, there were normal and elite types, both wielded a long bow and a quiver on their backs.

[Demonized Centaur Archer] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 55

HP: 5,500

Defense: 50

[Demonized Centaur Archer Lord] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 55

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang cried out. "Everyone! Get back! Let the NPC army take the first wave of attack!" Zhang Yang lead his own troops back and let the NPC army take over the frontline.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The stomping of hooves got louder as the centaurs approached the players like lightning speed. As the enemy entered their attacking range, they began drawing their bows and shot endless waves of arrows to attack.

A few of those monsters were capable of dishing out damage on par with a large group of players. Unless the players were all wearing the same tiered equipment as Zhang Yang, they would easily be killed. Besides those who were standing at the front line, other players had made their way behind the NPC army to prevent themselves from getting instantly killed by the NPC!

Zhang Yang waited until the NPC had started to return fire and then commanded his own troops. "Time to lay waste to these bastards!"

"HUURAHH!"

Once the players entered melee range, the Hunter class monster lost their offensive edge. Due to the outrageous number of monsters, with many layers stacked together, the ones standing behind were unable to attack, blocked by the ones in front! However, these monsters had [barrage], and with a number of attacks, the monster had inflicted massive casualties to the NPC army in the front row!

As the killing went on, the number of drops multiplied, as player deaths shot up relatively. The number of players was initially at around 2,000,000, but right now, there were less than 1,000,000 left! The NPC army had lost an even greater number! With lesser players to pick the loots, the ground was littered with them!

Once the NPC army had suffered significant losses, the attacking force was unable to match evenly with the incoming enemies. They actually had enough man power to create a literal defensive line to fight the monster, but currently with their low numbers, the monsters had begun to engulf the army like an island in sea! With this kind of situation at hand, the death rate was increasing drastically!

Monster will spawn again after dying and the numbers will keep on getting higher and higher. Inversely, once an NPC dies in battle, they will not respawn again! A loss will remain lost!

The players did the best they could and managed to somewhat keep the monsters of the fifth wave at bay. However, the performance of the super guilds were much better, they could at least preserve their NPC army while the rest of the players had already completely sacrifice the NPC army on their end! Among the guilds that could preserve their NPC army was the alliance between Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, and Lost Paradise. The number of NPC army on their side of the battle field remained at 70%!

‘Ding! The fifth wave boss, Marcus the Wind Ranger has appeared!’

Along with that system notification, the hill-sized male centaur Wind Ranger had entered the battle field. His massive body had actually managed to block the sun and cast a huge shadow onto a large portion of

the battlefield! With half of its body naked, his tight and ripped muscles were filled with explosive power, coupled with his full red body, he was packed with power, easily spotted from afar!

[Marcus the Wind Ranger] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 55

HP: 15,000,000

Defense: 600

“GROANN!” The centaur growl loudly and stomped his way towards the players. The thundering sound of its hooves was as loud of the drums of war, a truly ferocious and terrifying prospect!

This time, the boss was headed towards the guild called “Floating Clouds”

The closer it came, the stronger the clapping of its hooves. The boss, Marcus drew its bow at a far distance and began to fire arrows, burning in emerald colored flame. When the arrows struck the Floating Clouds players, they exploded and formed 2 meter tall flaming walls that spread out everywhere.

’ -5.000!’ -5.000!’ -5.000!’

Just as the flame touched with the players, the damage number popped out from the head and was mostly killed off instantly. A single attack alone had killed off close to 50 players of the guild!

“Spread out! Spread out immediately!” cried Nightless Moon, the guild master of Floating Clouds.

However, even when the tanks of Floating Clouds had gotten hold onto the boss’ aggro, Marcus remained completely unfazed and still fired arrows towards the attacking tanks!

Wei Yan Er saw the scenario and asked Zhang Yang. “Hey...noob tank. A Hunter is not supposed to attack when a player gets close to him, right?”

A Hunter cannot attack targets that were too close to him. The effective range was between 3 meters to 30 meters. Within 3 meters, the Hunter

would be unable to fight. It was also called the “Blind Spot”.

“...Did you see how tall is the monster is? From his feet to his head, he could at least be a few meters tall! How can there be any blind spots?” Zhang Yang laughed as he explained.

Everyone was baffled by his explanation. How could that be valid?!

It's the truth and nothing but the truth. They had to accept that fact since the boss kept on shooting arrow and arrow at the tanks beneath him! Every time an arrow was fired, it would deal an AoE fire attack to all targets in 10 meters of the first target.

Skill-wise, this boss had simple mechanisms. He had only been using one form of attack. Every time he attacked, the aggro value was reset! It's a bloody massacre by his hand! By the time Floating Clouds had understood the mechanics, they would stop their attack in time when the boss cleared its aggro and allow the tank to regain his aggro hold, but, by then, Floating Clouds had already lost more than 2,000 men!

In the end, the boss was slain by the guild, but at great cost. It could be predicted that by the time the next wave onslaught arrives, the guild would be completely routed and removed from the city war!

Having witnessed such events, the other guilds had started to be wary of the bosses. Without proper strength and power, they would be in trouble trouble of they did not have enough power to take the boss head on!

Chapter 188: In Jeopardy

‘Ding! The sixth wave of monsters surging forward from Tukula Fortress!’

The system was not kind enough to provide sufficient time for the players to prepare for next wave of monsters. The interval between waves was fixed. If the players could not kill all the monsters from the previous wave in time, they would be further assaulted by the next wave of monsters!

This time the monsters were Demon Manticores, the size of the normal variation was similar to normal lions except for their powerful, long scorpion tails. The monster’s body was maroon in color, as if it had been drenched in fresh blood. The elite variation were similar to the normal Demon Manticores other than having heads that swelled up to seven or eight times larger than normal.

[Bloodthirsty Demon Manticore] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 56

HP: 5,600

Defense: 50

[Bloodthirsty Demon Manticore King] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 56

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

These Demon Manticores rushed out from the fortress like a wave red sea towards the player, threatening to wash them away!

Except for a few strong guilds that still kept their NPC army, the rest of the defense lines’ were no longer accompanied by their NPCs, thus, those guilds had started to move closer to each other. In this way, they could enhance their strength as well as use each other as meat-shields.

The Dominators, led by Humbly Gentleman, positioned themselves at

the back of Zhang Yang's defense line, hiding behind the NPC army.

Hundred Shots shouted angrily, "Humbly Gentleman, haven't all the guild masters agreed that all guilds stick to your own defense lines? What are you doing here?!"

Humbly Gentleman put on his royal princeling face, waving a hand lackadaisically. One of his followers immediately replied, "F*cking shit, this battlefield is not owned by your guild, who are you to tell us where to stand? We are kind enough to assist you in fighting against the monsters, but you even dare blame us?!"

The follower spoke like a true Dominator. The whole lot of them were self-entitled pricks, acting as if they were a blessing to the world! They knew that Zhang Yang's defense line still had an ample amount of NPCs to fight against the enemy and they wanted to reap the rewards without sowing, as they could rely on the enemy to reduce the strength of Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage. The Dominators would be able to earn the title of the master of the city in the coming contest!

Zhang Yang pondered upon it for a moment, before switching to the open channel and announcing, "Everybody, our NPC armies are almost depleted, and our numbers aren't looking too good either, if we insist on fighting alone, we will not survive the tenth wave! Those who are willing, please come to my side immediately. I have Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Lost Paradise and The Dominators here! Brothers and sisters, unity is strength, let's fight together so that we can claim victory together!"

Those lost and weak players were wandering at their spots uneasily. Zhang Yang's announcement calmed their mind and emotions, and they immediately came to Zhang Yang's side. Everyone knew that Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage and The Dominators were the strong guilds in White Jade Castle. Lost Paradise was another guild that was quite capable. With all of these guilds allied, they could be depended upon. The lost and weak players could rest safe, knowing that they were in good hands!

The rest of the weak guilds hesitated for a while before coming to Zhang Yang's side one after another. Instantly, Zhang Yang's defense line

increased from 20,000 players to more than 700,000 players. In fact, it was almost two-thirds of the surviving players!

Humbly Gentleman never thought that Zhang Yang would use them as an excuse to recruit more players to join his defense line. Besides, this also made Zhang Yang more heroic and messianic, even! A savior that appeared in desperate times to liberate the weakened minds! Humbly Gentleman suddenly became furious, but who told him to do what he did in the first place?

Zhang Yang commanded the crowd to move backwards and use the remaining NPC army as defense.

The Demon Manticores already rushed towards them and fought with the NPC army. These monsters had many kinds of attacks, from their claws that clubbed and slashed, to their fangs that bit and crunched, and their tails that lashed about and stung. Their attacks were overwhelming, tearing up an opening among the NPC army. The Demon Manticores fought straight ahead toward players' defense line.

The melee attackers fought against these monsters, and another bloody war broke out.

"Move back, back!" Zhang Yang shouted repeatedly and led the players until the rear forces had their backs against the invisible wall at top of the hillside while fighting against the monsters. By moving backwards to the air wall, the monsters would be unable to flank them and they would only need to fight against the monsters from the front!

Facing the endless attacks from the monsters, the remaining NPC army was now all defeated. However, their sacrifices were not wasted as they withstood a full 20 minutes of insane onslaught from the monsters, greatly reducing the pressure on the players.

With NPC army was all dead, their last buffer was gone, and the players were forced to fight against the monsters themselves. The boss appeared when they had fought for 50 minutes. The number of players remaining was 750,000!

'Ding! The boss of the sixth wave monsters, Demonic Manticore King,

Hooke has joined the battle!’

Suddenly, a giant Demonic Manticore, about 60 to 70 meters tall, more than a hundred meters in length, swathed in black flames, appeared on the battlefield.

[Demonic Manticore King, Hooke] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 56

HP: 16,000,000

Defense: 600

All of the players focused on Hooke and were surprised to find out that Hooke had an Aura Effect!

[Aura Effect]: Causes 1,000 fire damage every second to targets within range. Aura range: 30 meters radius around the caster.

Zhang Yang immediately spoke in the open channel, “Hooke has an Aura Effect, melee attackers do not approach Hooke, otherwise, you will be dead! All ranged attackers who have more than 800 basic damage points, come forward and attack Hooke while standing 30 meters away from him, if your HP is not enough, move back and make sure you get it full! Players who do not have good equipment, stay at the back, otherwise, you will waste the healers’ MP and take up important spots! For the pride of all the players in White Jade Castle, everyone, please cooperate!”

Zhang Yang spoke again in his party channel, “Demon Snow, follow me when I dash! Hundred Shots, look for 100 ranged attackers with good equipment and fight with us! Daffodil Daydream, look for 200 healers with good equipment, pair up two healers to focus on one attacker each and do not let anyone die!”

“Yes!” Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream accepted to the command and complied.

Zhang Yang summoned his war horse and dashed towards Hooke. Hooke had an Aura Effect so Zhang Yang must not allow it to go near to the crowd, thus, Zhang Yang had to pull Hooke further away from the

crowd!

On the other side, Crimson Rage, The Dominators and Sky High also sent their attackers to join the battle, while those small and medium guilds simply stood aside, observing the battle as they could not afford to fight anymore.

Zhang Yang dashed towards Hooke, immediately using [charge]. Because of Hooke's gigantic body size, Zhang Yang was like an ant bouncing off a building!

'-1,253!'

'-3,012!'

Although this ant was small, its damage was high, thus, Hooke screamed with pain and lifted his gigantic paw, attacking Zhang Yang.

'[block]!'

'-350!'

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked against Hooke's paw attack. However, Hooke's Aura Effect could not be evaded, so '-350' damage text appeared above Zhang Yang's head every second!

Luckily it was Zhang Yang, if it had been someone else without the equipment which absorbing a total of 450 damage, it would have been 800 damage points every second! Defenders had high magic resistance but even they would still receive 750 damage points!

Han Ying Xue immediately casted [regeneration] on Zhang Yang, followed by [mending prayers]. She kept [holy shield] in reserve, it was to be used in emergency situations!

Tanks from the rest of the guilds rushed toward Hooke, but they did not come over to help Zhang Yang take damage from Hooke, simply waiting for the loots from Hooke!

After Zhang Yang applied the five stacks of [Cripple Defense] on Hooke, and the damage from the Hunters instantly increased! This round, the Pyromancers' were unable to contribute much. Although Hooke was not

fully immune to fire damage, but being a firey beast itself, it had extremely high flame resistance. 1,000 Points of [fireball] were turned into a measly 100 points when it came to Hooke!

Zhang Yang's strategy was a two plus one tactic, with ranged attackers taking 1,000 fire damage every second and two healers to keep them alive. The rest of the guilds followed this tactic and some even used a three plus one variation that actually wasted MP.

'Ding! Demonic Manticore King, Hooke used [charge]!'

Hooke suddenly dashed towards the surrounding crowd, the gigantic body steamrolling over them like a giant meteorite. Targets who were hit were sent flying, with '-5,000' damage texts appearing on their heads. Hooke instantly killed a large number of players!

Shush!

Hooke dashed in another direction, repeating the action seven times, instantly killing at least 200 to 300 players. After that, Hooke dashed towards Zhang Yang as the aggro value had already been established!

Whenever Zhang Yang pulled a monster, nobody could possibly OT. However the [charge] skill was used at random, this outcome was inevitable!

Open world bosses usually took several lives as they go down!

At the cost of 3,000 players' lives, the Demonic Manticore King, Hooke was finally killed. The gigantic corpse crashed onto the ground, dropping a lot of loot. The tanks who surrounded Hooke's corpse quickly reached out and looted the equipment as much as could possibly take.

Although Zhang Yang had fast hands, there were too many people around, so he could only loot a Gray-Silver cloth armor and a skill book. The equipment was immediately put up for auction in guild's warehouse. A Spellcaster named 'Midsummer Fruit' won it, she was the main Spellcaster in the second team. Overjoyed, she had thanked him repeatedly for it in the guild chat.

The skill book was [crusader strike] which could only be learned by

Templars. Zhang Yang also put it up for auction in guild's warehouse.

"Silly Yu, the NPCs are all dead now, and we are left with only 748,923 players, it's going to be difficult for us to survive until the tenth wave!" Han Ying Xue said, her brow furrowed. There were statistics displaying the number of surviving players in the upper right corner of the character interface menu.

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "Let's just do our best!"

"Do not give up, do not falter!" Fatty Han boldly proclaimed.

"How irresponsible!" Endless Starlight added on for Fatty Han.

Everyone suddenly laughed, their doubts slightly alleviated.

'Ding! The seventh wave of monsters is surging out of Tukula Fortress!'

Another wave of monsters had appeared, they were packs of Cerberuses, much larger in size than the Manticores! Their entire bodies were jet black, as they snarled, white gleaming teeth coated in dribbling saliva snapping shut with deadly intent. Just staring at them alone sent chills down the spines of the players. Elite monsters were even bigger in size than the normal monsters, and they had two heads!

[Cerberus] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 57

HP: 5,700

Defense: 50

[Two-Headed Cerberus] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 57

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Without NPCs as their protection, the players would have to face the monsters head-on. The normal attacks from these Cerberuses were not particularly high but they could cast [mana burning] skills. [mana burning] had no effect on players who did not have MP bars, but players

who had MP bars were in grave danger, suffering 1,000 damage points and losing 2,000 MP!

A lot of healers' MP were depleted due to this skill, they could only watch on helplessly as players left and right went down!

Kill! Kill! Kill! KILL!

Upper right corner of the screen showed the number of surviving players reducing drastically!

700,000!

600,000!

500,000!

The players lost 250,000 people to the seventh wave. After the ordeal, those who were left standing were basically elite players. Those who were low leveled or inadequately equipped had gone as far as they could possibly go.

'Ding! The boss of the seventh wave monsters, Three-Headed Cerberus, Ankeda has joined the battle!'

They eliminated all the minions and those healers who had depleted MP immediately sat down and ate cakes to recover their condition. But now, a gigantic Three-Headed Cerberus was coming towards them from the direction from the fortress. The Three-Headed Cerberus was about a hundred meters tall, it was even larger than the Manticore Boss, Hooke!

[Three-Headed Cerberus, Ankeda] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 57

HP: 17,000,000

Defense: 600

"Damn, with each level, they gain another 1,000,000 HP!" Endless Starlight muttered.

"We fight as usual!" Zhang Yang summoned his mount and asked Han Ying Xue, "Demon Snow, are you ready?"

“Wait a minute!”

Zhang Yang reined in his war horse and waited for Han Ying Xue. Speaking to Hundred Shots, he gave further instructions. “Reorganize the people that we have left, currently we have less than 6,000 people, team arrangements have to be redone again for balanced job roles! Make sure every party has a healer!”

Zhang Yang had built Lone Desert Smoke with elites, thus, they had only lost less than 40% of their full roster! Strong guilds like Crimson Rage, The Dominators and Sky High had already lost 50% of their guild members. The rest of the guilds were in even worse states. The remaining guilds who had anything above 30% were considered pretty good, as most of the other guilds had been completely wiped out!

“Done!” Han Ying Xue immediately stood up and summoned her [Storm and Gale Direwolf] and said, “Let’s go!”

Zhang Yang nodded, whipped his war horse and dashed towards Ankeda.

The rest of the guilds had already sent attackers to fight against Ankeda, Ankeda’s damage dealing style was revealed; each head of Ankeda had their individual attack intervals, similar to dual-wielding Thieves. It would also cast a much larger variation of the AoE skill, [mana burning] every 20 seconds, causing 5,000 damage and burning off 10,000 MP!

Other than players who had Level 40 Gray-Silver equipment, none of the healers’ HP were more 5,000, thus, they were all killed in the first round. Those who survived were left with empty tanks and became sitting ducks.

Ankeda was the bane for Spellcasters, healers were either killed instantly or their MP was quickly depleted. The tanks at the defense line died one after another, further increasing player losses.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Demon Snow, stay back, this boss is the exterminator of Spellcasters!”

“What about you?”

“The damage from this boss to physical attackers is not really high. I will

defeat it with sheer number of players!” Zhang Yang spoke in open channel, “Ankeda will not cast AoE damage to players who do not have MP bar but causes high damage to healers! We cannot use regular tactics to fight this boss. All the attackers who do not have MP bars, come forward and fight together, we will defeat this boss with our numbers. If the healers are all killed, it’ll be the end for all of us!”

Chapter 189: The Eighth and Ninth Wave

As per Zhang Yang's orders, Lone Desert Smoke sent a large amount of tanks and attackers without MP bars towards Ankeda. All the healers remained behind, the precious keys to victory, tucked safely away.

Ankeda's physical damage was devastating. Each bite from each head of the Ankeda caused 2,000 damage points which could kill a player within two to three seconds. Despite not casting AoE skill, its mere attacks brought enough trouble, how many players would die fighting this boss?

One after another, more players died, as Ankeda's HP was continuously reduced.

Most of the guilds did not send their elite members to fight against Ankeda as 80% of the players would die! The most suitable attackers to fight against Ankeda were the Hunters. When their aggro values were high, they immediately used [fake death] to clear the aggro. Thus, even if their damage was high to Ankeda, their lives were not in danger. Hunters were the MVPs of this boss!

Ankeda had killed more than 300 players within five minutes, but his ample HP was also exhausted. Ankeda's three heads reared up, facing the sky as it roared in denial before crashing down, dropping a lot of loot.

Different tactics were used to fight against different bosses. If they used the traditional tactic of sending tanks and healers to fight against this MP-depleting boss, healers would be wiped out, along with the tanks.

Zhang Yang did not tank the boss; otherwise, he would have held the highest aggro! Even though he was powerful, he would not be able to tank the boss for five minutes without a healer. Thus, this was the first time he stood aside and watched the battle as an audience.

Zhang Yang switched the item distribution mode in the party to All-Pick, allowing every member of their own respective guild to fight for the boss loots. He did not mind them getting a few items for themselves.

'Ding! The eighth wave of monsters is surging out of Tukula Fortress!'

The system did not allow the players to rest for long, and the eighth wave of monsters were already dashing towards the players from fortress.

This time, it was not a running monster but a flying Quad-Winged Demon Bat! A dense, dark mass could be seen from afar, it was like the night itself was being brought to them via sorcery!

The size of a normal Demon bat was similar to a little calf, while the elite Demon bat was much larger in size. Fully outstretched, they would easily have a wingspan of 10 meters. The edges of those wings were lined with gold, which marked the difference between them and the black wings of the normal Demon bats!

[Quad-Winged Demon Bat] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 58

HP: 5,800

Defense: 50

[Golden Quad-Winged Demon Bat] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 58

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

Countless Demon bats blotted out what little sun they had. Zhang Yang knew that the monsters had ranged attack abilities so he immediately said, “Everybody spread out! If anyone of you is attacked by monsters and you are unable to fight back, you have to run forward, the monsters will chase after you until you have gained enough distance!”

Faced with aerial monsters, defense formations did not matter anymore. Due to the nature of the monsters, attacks would come in three—dimensions, melee attackers would be unable to fight back if they were bunched up together!

Demon bats flew pretty swiftly, able to cover 500 meters in 10 seconds. The Demon bats spat acid on the players from their positions up in the sky. Normal monsters caused 900 points of neutral damage while elite

monsters caused 2,000 damage.

Ranged attackers started to retaliate immediately, while the melee attackers ran continuously. Whenever the melee attackers were out of Demon bats' attack range, Demon bats would fly obliquely and land on the ground, where the melee attackers were given the opportunity to run back and hack at them.

450,000!

400,000!

Monsters were raining down from the skies as they were killed, but the number of players also reduced continuously!

350,000!

300,000!

250,000!

The boss spawned at the 50th minute while only 200,000 players remained!

'Ding! The boss of the eighth wave monsters, Quad-Winged Demon Bat King, Cinchorida has joined the battle!'

A giant Quad-winged demon bat immediately appeared on the battlefield. It had about a hundred meter-long wingspan. Once it flapped its wings, a whirlwind was formed and the battlefield was clouded up with dust, demonstrating its power!

[Quad-Winged Demon Bat King, Cinchorida] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 58

HP: 18,000,000

Defense: 600

This Demon bat king flapped its wings and about ten swirls of dust appeared immediately and formed into a few mini tornadoes. These mini tornadoes moved about ten meters before gradually disappearing!

"Ranged attackers, kite the boss like how you fought the minions!"

Zhang Yang immediately spoke in open channel, “Spread out, spread out as far as possible!”

Cinchorida came over the top of the players and spat green acidic saliva on a player, ‘-5,000’ damage text appeared above that player’s head, instantly leading to the player’s demise. At the same time, about ten ranged attackers also attacked Cinchorida. It came swooping down at them in retaliation, but they scattered, running off in different directions. It was a rather comical, yet terrifying spectacle.

Although the boss spat another acidic glob of sputum and killed a player, an attack interval had been established and thus, based on its rhythm, the rest of the players were able constantly stay out of its attack range. Cinchorida was helpless and it flew obliquely after one of the players who currently held the highest aggro value.

Zhang Yang already summoned his war horse and waited for the chance to tag Cinchorida as it flew low. When the opportunity came, he chased after the boss, yelling, “Demon Snow, follow me!”

Cinchorida successfully chased after a player, killing the player with another spit of acid. At the same time, Zhang Yang already approached Cinchorida and entered the range of [charge]. Zhang Yang immediately disabled his war horse summon, used [charge] and dashed towards Cinchorida.

‘-1,305!’

‘-2,932!’

After two attacks, Zhang Yang had locked onto Cinchorida’s aggro. It growled and spat green acidic saliva on Zhang Yang.

‘-3,500!’

Damage text appeared across Zhang Yang’s head. Because this acidic saliva caused magic damage, Zhang Yang’s defense value did little to reduce the damage.

‘[regeneration]!’

‘[mending prayers]!’

‘[higher healing]!’

Han Ying Xue stood 30 meters behind Zhang Yang and threw healing spell after healing spell on Zhang Yang.

The rest of the players surrounded Cinchorida and started to attack.

Hu!

Cinchorida flapped its four wings, ten mini tornadoes immediately released around its side, sweeping off in all directions. Those players who touched by the tornadoes, were tossed up to the sky, taking 1,000 damage every second.

“Evade the tornado! Evade the tornado!” Zhang Yang looked around and hurriedly yelled, “Those tornadoes aren’t really fast, if you guys don’t bump into each other, evading won’t be much trouble!”

Tornadoes did not last long, spiraling for about ten seconds. However, these ten seconds were enough to cause more than 10,000 damage to the players who were flung to the sky. If it was not for the efforts of the healers, they would have been dead before the tornadoes even weaken!

This particular round of tornadoes took at least 200 lives, showing that tornadoes could be lethal as well!

Besides, Cinchorida activated tornado attacks rather frequently. It activated another round of tornado attack after about ten seconds, scattering those players who were trying to surround it!

In fact, Cinchorida’s single attack was weak. Han Ying Xue alone was enough to heal Zhang Yang’s HP easily. If Zhang Yang had sufficient time and lesser players surrounding Cinchorida then Zhang Yang could even kill Cinchorida easily as Zhang Yang would have ample space to evade Cinchorida’s attacks. However, Zhang Yang knew that the ninth wave of monsters would be unleashed anytime soon, so he had to wrap things up as soon as possible!

Bosses with powerful AoE skills had been specially designed for this

battlefield for a simple but effective purpose--to reduce the number of players and increase the difficulty of seizing the fortress. However, the game had anticipated the average player's strength at this point in time, so the bosses weren't impossible to beat.

This time, all the elite forces had gathered up, and they hacked away, quickly depleting Cinchorida's HP. After three minutes, it succumbed to their deadly blows, dropping loot befitting of a boss. Another scramble among the players occurred again as they raced for the loots.

"Ke, ke, ke, noob tank, I got a Gray-Silver equipment!" Wei Yan Er laughed with proud.

Sun Xin Yu showed her loots, immediately silencing the little brat, as she had scooped up two pieces of Gray-Silver equipment!

"Put them all up for auction!" Zhang Yang simply said, himself only being able to loot a Hunter's skill book.

If the main forces in the guild wanted the equipment so badly, nobody could compete with them as their guild's contribution points left everyone else in the dust. Besides, Zhang Yang used such a method of distributing loots to earn trust and respect from the members. He wanted to give them all a sense of belonging.

"Guys, don't join the auction this time round, Yellow-Gold bosses will appear later, keep your guild's distribution points for that!" Before Zhang Yang started the guild's auction, he told the gang in party channel.

'Ding! The ninth wave of monsters is surging forth from Tukula Fortress!'

Hisssss...

With a series of snake hisses, a group of snake monsters came out from the fortress. They had both humanoid and snake-like features. They had four arms protruding out from their female bodies. Their upper body was covered in golden strips that could hardly be considered armor, merely covering the tips of their breasts. Their fair bellies were fully exposed. Each one of them was rather coquettish and beautiful. The green silky hair

had a rather mysterious aura, adding on to the sex appeal.

There were no normal monsters for this wave. All of them were the elite monsters, wielding swords in all four of their arms, gazing upon the players with beautiful deadliness.

[Lamia] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 59

HP: 100,000

Defense: 300

“So sexy!” Fatty Han’s eye immediately shone and locked his sights on the Lamias’ tits.

“It’s such a shame, if only they had two legs, they would be perfect!” Endless Starlight spoke, using a somewhat professional tone.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “It would be perfect when they’ve killed the two of you!”

“It would be our honour to be killed by such great beauties!” Both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight replied together.

Hisssss...

The lamiae swayed their hips seductively as they slithered to the players’ direction, their swords poised to strike!

“Stick to your defense line!” Zhang Yang raised his shield and lifted up his axe then shouted, “Two waves to go, we must survive this! For victory!”

“To victory!” All players shouted together.

“Kill!”

“Kill...”

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

The lamiae collided with the players’ defense line, whirling their swords with deadly finesse, starting another bloody clash!

Chapter 190: Demon Snake Queen

Each sword attack from the Lamia was around 1,000 damage points. With four arms and four swords, a Lamia's flurry of slashes would amount up to 4,000 damage points if she was attacking a non-tank player! But if she slashed a tank, the damage would be dispersed and the damage from each sword attack would be reduced by the tanks' defense value. Zhang Yang had his 450 damage absorption attribute, so he received only two digits worth of damage from Lamia's attack!

Every tank was drooling when they saw Zhang Yang taking so little damage. If everyone had the same equipment as he did, these monsters would be a piece of cake for them!

Besides Zhang Yang, everyone else was fighting at their best efforts as all of these were the elite monsters! These elite monsters had high HP, high defense and high attack, so it was not easy for the players to kill them. Rays of light appeared one after another on the battlefield as more players were sent back to White Jade Castle!

180,000, 140,000, 100,000, 80,000... The number of players drastically reduced!

The surviving players were the skillful players with good equipment. As a whole, the players were like a sharp sword covered in dust, and having the 'dust' removed, their attack capability immediately shot up! Although the number of players was dropping, it seemed to have hit a hard bracket that separated the truly elite from the average. The rate of deaths was slowing down.

60,000, 40,000, 20,000, 10,000!

Out of 2,000,000 players, they were left with only 5,000 players. The ninth wave monsters had finally been eliminated completely! These 5,000 players were the players with top equipment in White Jade Castle. Naturally, this meant that they were also minority that stood at the top of the pyramid hierarchy!

Not only have they survived this much, they have also accumulated vast

amounts of experience points and gained several levels! They usually required about seven days to gain a level after Level 50, but now those surviving players had gained at least one level. This battle had rewarded them handsomely with experience points, if nothing else!

Zhang Yang's level increased had to 52 and it was now only 28% away from Level 53!

'Ding! The boss of the ninth wave monsters, Demon Snake Queen, Mimina has joined the battle!'

The ninth boss had appeared and she was different from the previous eight bosses which were with gigantic body size. This Demon snake queen as large as the regular Lamiae, but she had a thicker and longer snake-like body. Every time she moved her body a little, her 40 meters long and huge body would be revealed!

She had six arms and held a sword in each hand, she was a Yellow-Gold boss!

[Demon Snake Queen, Mimina] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 59

HP: 20,000,000

Defense: 1,000

"A Yellow-Gold boss really did appear!"

Everyone gazed at Mimina hungrily, they truly wanted the drops!

Except for Zhang Yang and the gang, this was the first time the players actually encountered Yellow-Gold boss. Once they thought of the quality of Yellow-Gold equipment that was much more powerful than Gray-Silver, all somehow found new strength coursing in their veins!

"Kill!" Somebody shouted first, triggering the 5,000 survivors to rush at Mimina, their depressed mood greatly uplifted!

"Noob tank, let's go hurry up!" Wei Yan Er had already summoned her Hell's stead and was shifting impatiently. Despite Zhang Yang and his gang's past experience with Yellow-Gold bosses, they were still greatly

enticed.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "There's no need to rush, they'll take a while to kill Mimina! Daffodil Daydream, sum up how much people, tanks and healers we left!"

After a while, Daffodil Daydream answered, "We have a total of 827 people, and we have 89 tanks, 118 healers and 620 attackers!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "Hundred Shots, put everybody into a team!"

30 Seconds later, Lone Desert Smoke's remaining players were all formed into a huge team, the elites of the elite, the wheat separated from the chaff!

"Zhan Yu, hurry up, kite the boss!" Suddenly Snow Seeker sent a message in open channel.

Sky Shaman quickly followed up, "Damn it, Mimina's defense is so high, even after applying five stacks of [Cripple Defense], she still has 500 defense. Besides, her level is too high, I can only cause about 200 damage points to her with physical attacks while [shield bash] causes only 100 damage points, I cannot grab hold of the aggro!"

"What are you talking about? You're barely even trying, you were waiting for Mimina to kill the people who were OT! She's attacking you now because there's nothing else for her to hit!" Crimson Fire complained.

Mimina's defense was high, but she was relatively weaker to magic attacks. Spellcasters did not cause much damage to Mimina due to their differences in levels, but they still fared considerably better compared to the melee attackers. Spellcasters were in danger of going OT as they were gaining more aggro than the available tanks.

Besides, Spellcasters did not have [fake death], unlike Hunters and Thieves. The moment Mimina targets them, they would be killed instantly as her six swords make quick work of them!

Mimina had already killed several attackers, with 300 spellcasters making up most of the deaths!

Zhang Yang laughed and replied on the open channel, "I'm coming!" He switched to party chat, "Team one, follow me!"

Zhang Yang led 50 people towards Mimina.

All of the players who surrounded Mimina stood aside and opened up a way for Zhang Yang when they saw him coming. Why were they so polite? Obviously it was because they could not establish the aggro. With all the Spellcasters dead, healers would hold the highest aggro. If all the healers died, they would fail the expedition!

'[charge]!'

'[blood rage]!'

Zhang Yang dashed towards Mimina and immediately hacked at her with his axe.

'-1,801!'

Because they had applied five stacks of [Cripple Defense] on Mimina and Zhang Yang had [eagle eye], his attacks toward Mimina would not be reduced by her defense value! Besides, Zhang Yang was only seven levels behind Mimina. As long as the level difference did not exceed ten levels, Zhang Yang's attacks would not be penalized.

"F*ck, he is so powerful!" Sky Shaman could not help but swear. He could never accept the fact that a tank could deal so much damage, compared to his '200' worth of damage points!

'-3,571!'

When Zhang Yang used [horizontal sweep], Sky Shaman almost cried out in front of everyone, complaining that Zhang Yang must be using cheats!

"Everyone, stop attacking, let me get a solid hold of the aggro!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

At this moment, nobody wanted to be killed by Mimina, all of them stopped attacking and patiently waited for Zhang Yang to establish aggro. Only Hunters could continue attacking as they had [fake death]. The

skill's cool down duration was short, unlike the variations that Thieves had -- requiring five whole minutes!

On the other hand, Zhang Yang and his people continued attacking and healing as they started attacking alongside their leader. If anyone of them got to OT Mimina, Zhang Yang would have failed as a tank!

Mimina was immune to [provoke], but Zhang Yang used only 15 seconds to establish Mimina's aggro! Mimina turned away from Sky Shaman and started Zhang Yang wildly.

Sky Shaman's face was full of tears, he was afterall, one of the top tanks in White Jade Castle. It filled him with shame that Zhang Yang had acquired sufficient aggro in merely 15 seconds, while it had taken him a whole minute to do the same.

Mimina did the Yellow-Gold boss title justice, each attack of her swords caused about 2,000 damage points and she always attacked with her six arms which would absolutely destroy any non-tank attackers at current the current phase of the game. Mimina had dealt more than 7,000 damage points to Sky Shaman but when she attacked Zhang Yang, the damage was reduced to 5,000!

If Mimina's damage output was calculated as a single hit, then a single attack would cause up to 12,000 points of damage. By then, Zhang Yang's 450 damage absorption would have been pointless. But since he faced multiple, lower single attacks from the opponent, the damage absorption effect truly shone!

"You guys can start!" Zhang Yang sent a message in the open channel.

Suddenly, those players who stopped attack just now, they started to attack zealously, causing plenty of damage to Mimina! This was the first time they met Yellow-Gold boss! Their excitement was just as it was for Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots and the gang when they first met Evil Necromancer Zac!

However, open world bosses would ranged skills and would be much harder to bring down!

‘Ding! Mimina used [tail strike]!’

Mimina moved her body and used her long tail like a whip, lashing out at the enemies at her rear. Instantly, a bunch of ‘6,000’ damage texts appeared on players’ head and killed at least 100 players. Suddenly, there was a conical void at her back, where players had been snuffed out. It was 40 meters in radius, cleanly marking the spots where she had massacred the players. It was currently occupied by not more than seven players. These included five tanks, Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu.

Although Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu were not tanks, they were equipped with Level 40 Gray-Silver equipment, a few Level 50 Gray-Silver and Yellow-Gold equipment. Along with Zhang Yang’s [vitality aura], their HPs already exceeded 7,000, which enabled them to survive the [tail strike]!

Suddenly everyone was shocked, the space behind Mimina was quickly vacated, everyone keeping close watch of her long tail. They quickly moved to the front, having no desire of taking another [tail strike] again!

Unfortunately, [tail strike] was not only used at the rear of Mimina. She was actually capable of flicking her long tail all around her. After a while, Mimina used [tail strike] once again, striking the area in front of her and killing another 100 players! Their maneuvering had brought no change!

Everybody was stunned at this point as they did not know if anywhere around her was safe! But the guild masters insisted that they kept up their attacks, so they had no choice but to funnel themselves into the empty spots, filled with dread as players who once stood there had been instantly killed!

60%, 40%, 20%. Because of Mimina’s high defense value, long HP and high level, most of the attackers had been wiped out. Ten minutes later, Mimina was doggedly hanging on with 10% HP!

‘Ding! The tenth wave of monsters fall from the sky, the battle is nearing its end!’

At this moment, the system notification rang and the tenth wave of attacks was coming soon!

“Quickly, kill Mimina!” Everyone yelled.

If Mimina was reinforced with the tenth wave of monsters, the players would stand no chance whatsoever!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

One after another, burning meteorites fell from the sky, crashing onto every single spot of the battlefield, leaving deep, vast craters. Out of those craters, gigantic rock monsters, with bodies covered in green flames climbed out, roaring with their arms spread open like Alpha Silverback Gorillas!

Chapter 191: The 10th Wave

[Hellfire Demon] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 60

HP: 150,000

Defense: 1000

These foul demonic creatures that were basically rocks and boulders clumped together to form crude humanoid figures had greenish flames dotted all over their bodies. They had varying heights, but all of them stood over 10 meters. The moment they spawned from the pit, they would immediately charge towards the players with deafening roars. Even before they got within melee range, the players would already suffer from a DoT effect of '-500' per tick!

These Hellfire Demons were equipped with a lesser version of the Demonic Fire Lion King's [burning aura]. After all, the Demonic Fire Lion King was a boss!

"Blitz the boss down, quickly!"

Everyone was shouting their lungs out. The members that were being sent over to encircle and suppress the boss by their respective guilds are all elites among the elites! Without these excellently equipped players attending to the garrison, their own line of defense would have been easily crippled by the monsters!

"Put your backs into the game, just a little more!"

"Kill the boss first, then we shall go around to obliterating the monsters! There is still hope in completing the siege!"

"Never surrender!"

"Keep it up!"

At that single moment, everyone fought side by side, rivalries, grudges and enmities forgotten, with the greater good in mind. The morale was at its peak, as everyone desperately fought, none willing to fail at the 10th

wave, with victory this close!

9%, 8%, 7%...

Mimina's HP continued to drop, but the Hellfire Demons were inflicting heavy player casualties. Without the command of the guildmaster and the support of the stronger players to hold down the fort, the overall combat capability of the players dropped drastically, leading to heavy losses!

Zhang Yang immediately said, "Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, take the other parties back and help main battalion out! Witchy Snow, her silly little cousin, ice queen and Daffodil can stay! We'll handle the boss!" Without any support, the entire team would definitely be crippled!

Hundred Shots obeyed immediately and nodded, leading his parties back with one command.

Fatty Han, however smiled perversely and said, "Brother Yang's appetite is only is getting bigger and bigger, initially he only had one in mind, then it became two, and now he's doing it with three and four! Tsk tsk tsk, 5P, brother Yang, I will definitely send you some tiger whip to replenish your body!"

"Replenish your ass, get lost!" Zhang Yang barely prevented himself from kicking this wretched *ss into the distant sky, that man was playing with a live bomb. Sun Xin Yu was an explosive fireball. If you really lit her up, this violent woman would not hesitate to blow your head off with her guns!

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight left with obscene smiles on both of their faces.

Several other guild masters saw the situation and followed suit. It would be fine to leave the boss as long as their melee combatants stayed back to grab the equipment in the first place!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Meteorites came raining down, one after another, like a series of carpet bombs. If any of them were to land on the players, they would instantly deal a damage of 3000 points to the players along with a 2 second stun!

Therefore, players did not dare to bunch up together in one spot. If they were to take a few consecutive blows of the meteorites while also receiving some burn DoT from the [burning aura], there would definitely be a massive amount of deaths on the field!

But once they split up, they would have face the onslaught of the monsters, every single one being an elite, and having defense points that went up to 1000! Without inflicting a full 5 stacks of the warrior's [Cripple Defense], professions that dealt physical damage would not even be able to pluck out a single hair! Also, Hellfire Demons were fire attribute monsters, with exceedingly high fire resistance, rendering every Pyromancer on the field useless.

Sending elite players to assist the main battalion was like an act of sending firewood in a snowstorm, resolving their urgent needs! The battalion rallied to the reinstated chain of command from the return of high ranking guild officers and elite players, turning the tide of the battle!

Boom!

A meteorite struck Han Ying Xue on the back, a shockwave emanating from the impact, instantly dealing '-3000' damage on her, additionally stunning her for 2 seconds! A gigantic Hellfire Demon crawled out from the crater where the meteor landed, its greenish flames dealing '-500' damage on Han Ying Xue with every passing second!

Zhang Yang immediately backed up and sprung forward with a [charge], ramming straight into the Hellfire Demon. He shouted, "Finish the boss off, I will keep the other monsters(Creeps) occupied!"

He summoned [Shadow of Merlinda] to recover his health.

5%, 4%, 3%!

Mimina had a HP value that reached 20,000,000, so 1% of that would already be 200,000 worth of damage points. With only 60 to 70 people surrounding the boss, they were simply understaffed, taking about 15 seconds to forcefully bring down 1% of the boss' health!

2%!

1%!

0%!

“Argh ---” Mimina screamed in misery, with her long snake body twitching and flailing about chaotically, finally crashing down to the ground, dropping loots all over.

Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu immediately ran forward, arms extended, using their very best efforts to pick up the items that gleamed gold! Members from other guilds were at a disadvantage as they had never killed a Yellow-Gold boss before, and had no idea on how Yellow-Gold items looked like. Instead, they were bedazzled by the shiny Gray-Silver items that nearly covered the entire ground, habitually grabbing at the more familiar sight.

It took about 2 or 3 seconds before they were finally aware of the prospect, but there were only 4 or 5 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, which were already swiped clean up by the 3 fast-handed players! Unfortunately, only 2 skill books dropped, one that Zhang Yang managed to grab, with the other one being taken by Crimson Rage. After all, skill books were too eye-catching!

Having no time at all to check on the loots he gathered, Zhang Yang immediately said, “Quickly! Head back to the main battalion!”

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Even if they wanted to leave, they would have to cope with the meteorites that were pouring down from the sky at a rate that only increased with each passing moment, like a snow hail smashing down, punching hundreds of thousands of craters in the ground, along hundreds of thousands of Hellfire Demons emerging from the pits, surrounding them from all directions!

It was definitely not possible to advance forward in the thick mass of demons. Although the effects of [aura] skills would not stack, being flanked from the rear was no doubt the greater danger!

“Retreat! Fall back!” Zhang Yang quickly gave the 5-member party an

instruction to retreat uphill, as it led to the edge of the map. The invisible wall supplied by the system would help block the monsters from one direction, reducing their pressure significantly! One less direction to look out for!

‘3549!’ ‘3201!’ ‘2843’...

The remaining number of survivors was dropping drastically, but the Hellfire Demons continued descending from the skies, endlessly reinforcing their numbers.

‘2602!’ ‘2312!’ ‘2103!’

“Sun of the beach! Brother Yang, I died!” the raging scream of Fatty Han came from the small party.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but wonder, so he asked, “Aren’t you a Hunter? You can just lay down and play dead!”

“I had to hold my pee-pee for half a day, and that was what I did exactly, I was lying on the ground like a dead man! As a result, when I returned, I found myself burnt to death by their [burning aura]!” Fatty Han wailed.

“For god’s sake, why didn’t you go to the washroom after every wave?”

“Well, I was nervous since the beginning, holding it in without noticing, but I could not hold it any longer, so...”

“Aiyer, wretched fatty is just disgusting!”

The four pretty ladies in the party spoke in unison.

‘1938!’ ‘1743!’ ‘1329!’

“Boss, I died too!” Endless Starlight also spoke up in the party chat, “What bad luck! I was attracting the attentions of the monsters smoothly, but suddenly, a few monsters came from the back and killed Sweetheart within seconds! So I died without any healing!”

The one who he called ‘Sweetheart’ was the priest in the second leading party of Lone Desert Smoke, Fantasy Sweetheart. She had a good sense of combat awareness, however, the main reason she was able to join the second party was because she had a sweet appearance along with a proud

pair of boobs that Endless Starlight and Fatty Han coined as the 'giant boobed loli face' while adding her to the formation of the second party.

'892!' '532!' '321!'

"Zhan Yu! I am dead as well!" it wasn't long before the dispirited voice of Hundred Shots came by their ears.

40 minutes passed before the raining of meteorites from the sky started to slow down, however, the appearance of the boss was just 10 minutes away!

'Server announcement: The Longard Ciy expedition has failed!'

Suddenly, the system announcement in unique red words appeared on the global channel.

"That bunch of otakus and fujoshis have failed?" Fatty Han was sitting by the side of the bank, colluding with Endless Starlight in enjoying the view of the pretty girl players passing by.

"They began 40 minutes after us, they probably lasted until the appearance of monsters of the 10th wave before they were wiped out!" Zhang Yang gave some thoughts on it before saying it.

Daffodil Daydream was full of worry, saying, "I wonder if we can make it till the end!"

"Yes, we definitely can!" Zhang Yang said with certainty that was no bluff. The difficult part of the siege came when facing the monsters of the 10th wave. As long as they held their ground till the end, the NPCs will send forth an army of reinforcements to join the siege. By the time the NPCs take on the boss, the players will only have to ensure their own survival to complete the final task of the siege!

284!

183!

127!

The number of players was still dropping drastically, but the monsters was getting sparse in the number as well. There couldn't be more than two

to three hundred of them in the field!

‘Ding! The boss of the 10th wave, Hellfire Demon King Bariyada has joined the battle!’

Boom!

A gigantic meteor rock descended from the sky, smashing violently onto the surface of the ground, shaking the earth with a boom that resonated across the land, forming a giant pit with a diameter of more than a kilometer on the site of the crash. The edges of the crater were still crumbling, collapsing. The shock waves lifted the surface of the ground like a carpet being lifted off the ground, emitting a 3 meter high shockwave that spread outwardly!

Pak! Pak!

Two huge hands reached out from the pit, followed closely by the rise of a colossal demon of rock and magma, crawling out from the pit. With a height of up to a hundred meters, it pierced through the clouds and the sky beyond. The greenish flames peppered across its whole body distorted the air with intense heat!

[Hellfire Demon King Bariyada] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 60

HP: 30,000,000

Defense: 1500

“A HP of 30,000,000 points! And a defense of 1500 points!”

“Gulp-----” The remaining of the approximately 100 survivors found it very hard to swallow at the exact same moment.

Zhang Yang immediately gave instructions, “Witchy Snow, follow me as I kite the monsters. Little sister, icy and Daffodil, go help the others in clearing the remaining monsters!” Then he posted his comment in the region channel, “Everyone, I will handle the boss for the moment while you guys clear out the remaining monsters, then we shall face the boss together!”

That would be the only way to solve it. If anyone still wanted to compete for the boss, they would have been slaughtered clean by the remaining monsters before they could even get a tenth of the boss' HP down! Every members of their respective guilds made no delay in taking out all the remaining monsters, each of them knowing that with the excessive health points of the boss, they would not have to worry about Zhang Yang taking up the time and opportunity to slaughter the boss!

Gong! Gong! Gong!

Bariyada advanced towards the players at big strides, every step he took shook the ground with claps of thunder!

Zhang Yang went straight up in a swift manner while Han Ying Xue followed behind him closely.

Looking down above from the sky, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were like two small insignificant cockroaches, recklessly trying to block the giant juggernaut that was approaching, Bariyada!

100 meters, 50 meters, 30 meters!

The moment they entered the distance of 30 meters away from the boss, Zhang Yang felt a surge of blazing-hot air that threatened to vaporize the average human, and the damage values of '-350' constantly deducted from their HP points ----- of course the boss had to possess [burning aura] as well, dealing 1000 fire damage to all targets within the radius of 30 meters!

Phew!

Bariyada suddenly dropped a punch onto Zhang Yang. 'Koom'! Although the assault was blocked with a raise of his shield, the enormous impact still hit Zhang Yang hard, burrowing both of his legs in the ground.

"Anpalaseekdoka!" the boss roared in its demonic tongue, expressing it's dissatisfaction at being defied. Raising its left fist, it threw another violent punch.

'-4015!'

Zhang Yang did not block this time round, instantly, a damage value appeared on the top of his head.

The melee attack of the boss ranged at around 6000, give or take, and it attacked once every two seconds, the power was astonishing! However, the damage per second did not exceed a damage of 2000 when striking Zhang Yang, with a further reduction of [block] every 5 seconds, the damage per second would be less than 1,400!

As long as Zhang Yang does not mess up with any single one of his [block] s, Han Ying Xue would definitely be able to keep up with her healing abilities!

On the other side of the battlefield, the number of the monsters was decreasing rapidly, dropping from the hundreds to two digits, then again, dropping from two digits to one digit, and finally, they were completely exterminated! The number of remaining survivors were only 53!

Among the numbers, 11 players were members of Lone Desert Smoke, 8 members were from Crimson Rage, 8 members from Imperial Sky, 5 from The Dominators and another 5 from Lost Paradise. The other 14 were from lesser-known guilds!

With each of their faces filled with joy and excitement, they knew, even with the boss still at 97% HP, everyone could see the light of hope for victory, and one after another they went up to attack to the boss.

‘-1000!’

‘-1000!’

‘-1000!’

The damage values appeared right above the players who charged straight up to the boss. The boss was equipped with the [burning aura]!

Zhang Yang frowned and made a suggestion, "All of you, join my party!"

The players could not help themselves but stare at him, dumbfounded, unwilling to compromise to a suggestion like that! For all they knew, once they joined Zhang Yang’s party, all Zhang Yang had to do was to set the

distribution mode to 'Leader Distribution Mode', and lay waste to everything they had done all along?

Zhang Yang was infuriated beyond words. He could only shake his head continuously without any pause. They had already set their thoughts on the equipment distribution even before they could kill the boss! So he had to say it, "What is there to worry about? All you guys have to do is quit my party when the boss is at 1% or 2 % health left, you would still be able to pick up the equipment! I'm inviting you guys into my party is because of our [aura] effects!"

So he posted the explanation link of the [vitality aura] onto the region channel, before asking Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to post the explanation link of their [life aura] and [strength aura] respectively, as well.

Han Ying Xue was truly contemptuous of such people with vile intentions. She unwillingly posted the explanation link of the [life aura] out on the channel. Wei Yan Er had been very aloof towards them, she did not make any faces like her cousin did.

The players only understood after they read the descriptions, Zhang Yang and his gang possessed Aura skills!

My goodness, these are really good stuff!

Chapter 192: Hellfire Demon King

Bariyada

It was no longer a mystery on why he wanted everyone to join his party, it was all because Aura skills can only benefit the members of their own party!

The increment of 2%, or 4% may seem very little, but when the number of the party members increases, the power will be immense!

While Zhang Yang kited the boss around, he took out two pieces of scroll --- [Magic Scroll: Increase Morale (Level 1)] and [Magic Scroll: Debilitation1 (Level 1)]. Lone Desert Smoke had been reserving the Cave of Bones to themselves for the past few days, so there were at least 10 pieces of these scrolls deposited in the warehouse of the guild. Zhang Yang had brought them along this time round.

Pak, he tore a piece of the Magic Scroll: Increase Morale, adding the effect onto his own side of the party. Every single members instantly acquired an increase of 5% in both damage effect and healing effect. Zhang Yang threw the other scroll, the Magic Scroll: Debilitation at the boss.

Failed!

As the level gap of the two sides was 7 levels apart, the first scroll was instantly wasted.

Zhang Yang quickly passed another Debilitation scroll to Han Ying Xue.

“You throw it!”

Han Ying Xue was currently at level 53, which was one level higher than Zhang Yang. Although the level difference between the two of them was only one level, the Magic Scroll was just too expensive to be wasted, saving up even one scroll was well worth it!

Pak, Han Ying Xue threw the scroll with a swing of her arm, slapping the [Magic Scroll] onto Bariyada.

‘Ding! Bariyada has been affected by Debilitation (Level1) effect’, decreasing all damage and healing effect by 10%. Last for 60 seconds!’

Han Ying Xue giggled as she teased sultrily, “Look, even the boss can be affected by the seduction of a woman!”

The party had the [strength aura] that gave them an addition of 2% strength, also with [increasing morale] that gave them an addition of 5% damage. The damage output of the whole gang had gone up by one level! Engaging a boss with high defense, the 5% increase of their attack was not merely increasing their damage output by 5%!

For example, a player who dishes out 120 base damage would only cause 20 damage to a boss that had 100 points of defense. When there is a 5% increase in the attack, the basic damage will reach a value of 126, which actually can do 26 damage to the boss, which meant that the damage has actually been increased by 30%!

Although the increase of 2% strength could not increase 2% of the players’ attack, but the direct increase of 1.5% would still be of use!

Taking the advantage of the time where the magic scroll was still in effect, everyone immediately went out with their full power, unleashing every major skill in their arsenal on the boss.

“Rawh ---” Bariyada suddenly let out a loud cry, smashing both of it’s fists against the ground with a rumbling power. Immediately, pow, pow, pow, the cracking ground was abruptly raised up, one piece after another, it looked just like a cloudy shockwave expanding outwards.

As the wave of dirt passed through them, the players fell to the ground one after another, having a damage value of 6000 points appeared right above their heads!

‘Ding! Bariyada released [Grounding Hammer Strike]!’

Fortunately, with the [vitality aura] in play, the players that survived up to this point were wearing basic armors of level 40 gray-silver equipment, boosting their health points up to 7000, give or take. Most of the players survived the attack, but there were also a small number of players with HP

lower than 7000 points. Taking one [Grounding Hammer Strike] and along with the damage from [burning aura], they were instantly robbed of their lives!

Han Ying Xue swiftly used her [healing shower], casting her [regeneration] and prioritized her healing on the health points of the Lone Desert Smoke members. Other healers were also healing their respective guild members.

With only one wave of this attack, another 7 players were instantly killed, leaving only 45 surviving members in the field!

92%, 84%, 72%... The sheer defense of the boss was ridiculously high! Even with five stacks of [Cripple Defense], the boss would still have 500 points of defense. Furthermore, the level of the boss was high, being at level 60, while the average level of the remaining surviving players ranged between level 47 to level 49. A large part of their DPS was taken away by the penalty incurred due to the difference in levels, it was obvious that their attack power was seriously inadequate.

The only player who did not have his attack reduced was Zhang Yang! With his [eagle eye], he could ignore all the defense, and the level difference between him and the boss was only eight levels, so his damage was not penalized. The weapon in his grasp was also a level 50 Yellow-Gold, and while sustaining the attacks raining upon him, his rage points was constantly being charged. His damage per second had reached up to 2000, putting him in the first place for causing the most damage in his party.

The following was Wei Yan Er, with a two-handed weapon that had a high range of attack value, barely affected by the defense value. The only unfortunate thing for her was that her weapon was still a level 40 Gray-Silver Axe, if only she had her hands on a Yellow-Gold weapon, her damage output would definitely exceed Zhang Yang's.

The third in place was Sun Xin Yu. The 500 points of defense of the boss had greatly affected her regular attacks, reducing them to almost nothing. She was saved by her skills, which were not as severely affected!

It was even worse for Daffodil Daydream. She was a pyromancer, with the boss being fire attributed, she could not even make it in the top 10!

Merely 30 seconds had passed, the boss went for another [Grounding Hammer Strike], and through the rolling dirt wave, another five players were taken away from the field!

66%, 53%, 46%!

The health point of the boss was depleted down by half, but the number of the surviving players had decreased down to only 34!

[Grounding Hammer Strike]!

[Grounding Hammer Strike]!

[Grounding Hammer Strike]!

31 players left... 27 players left... 22 players left...

Another 20 minutes passed, the boss was left with 28% of health points, but only 19 players were left alive! What was even worse was that the mana bar of the healers were at the brink of being emptied! Even the great healer Han Ying Xue had only 20% of her mana left, the main reason being that there were too many surviving members from Lone Desert Smoke! Subsequently, she was under the most pressure among all the healers!

“Kill it fast! Kill it fast!”

The gang were having the same thoughts in their mind.

26%... 22%... 18%...

They struggled to drain the health points of the boss. If this went on, they would certainly be unable to hold on any longer!

Zhang Yang made a critical decision, speaking up. “Players with DPS lower than 300, remove yourself from the effective range of the aura effect of the boss immediately! You don’t have to waste the efforts of the healers! All healers split up into two groups, one group in-charge in healing, while the other group, recover your mana points!”

Engaging the boss until this very moment, it had already been 10 hours, everyone was hungry, starving and tired! Their judgment and reactions were declining down in a straight line. Having been reminded by Zhang Yang, everyone only realized it just then --- Argh! They could have done this themselves sooner!

There were still 6 healers in the party. Immediately, they divided themselves into two groups with 3 players in each group. The two groups took turns, with one group healing while the other group stayed out of the effective range of the aura effect, using the advantage of 5 seconds to recover their mana points. The two groups would switch their roles once every 30 seconds. Even though their mana points were still insufficient, that had already bought them some extra time!

14%, 11%, 7%!

“Hang in there! Almost there!” Every players on the field could not help themselves but to shout out loud.

‘Ding! Player Another Joy has died!’

‘Ding! Player Dragon’s World End has died!’

‘Ding! Player Sacred Wings of Night has died!’

The boss was still vigorously violent, every strike of the [Grounding Hammer Strike] would harvest a few lives from the field, it was inevitable, because the mana points for healing could only replenish the amount of health point reduced by the aura effect. Confronting the ultimate skill of the boss, only the [healing shower] of Han Ying Xue could heal up the health points of the players!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%!

The remaining 15 players were irritably excited, however, the healers had almost used up all of their mana points!

Bariyada raised up both of it’s fists, immediate smashing them into the ground, it was another [Grounding Hammer Strike]!

“Come over everyone!” Zhang Yang shouted in a loud voice, triggering

[vanguard's aggression] and [shield wall] simultaneously, casting a vague blue protective barrier over each of the players.

‘-600!’

‘-600!’

‘-600!’

Under the protection of his [vanguard's aggression], everyone would only sustain 10% of the damage they receive, while with the [shield wall] triggered by Zhang Yang, they would only suffer 40% of the damage received!

“Witchy Snow, carry on with your mana recovery, I’m triggering [Shadow of Merlinda]!” Zhang Yang shouted and selected the [Merlinda's Ring of Grateful].

‘+1000!’

‘+1000!’

In the interval of every passing seconds, a healing number appeared right above Zhang yang’s head, in just a short moment, his health points had been replenished back to full.

Sky Shaman witnessed the scene with envious eyes, wondering, “Wow, Zhan Yu, whatkind of skill is that!”

Zhang Yang laughed and then he spoke, “Let’s hustle and f*ck the boss up!”

‘260,000!’

‘210,000!’

‘190,000!’

The remaining health points of the boss was only at 1%!

10 seconds after, the barrier of [vanguard's aggression] had worn off, the effect of the [burning aura] persisted again, deducting 1000 points of health points from the players!

Han Ying Xue quickly threw out her [healing shower], while using up the

last of her mana points to cast [regeneration] and [holy shield] on Zhang Yang, and there she was, completely spent!

She was well aware that it would be useless to stay on the same spot, she would only end up being burned by the [burning aura], so she immediately ran out of the area.

170,000! 140,000! 110,000!

‘Ding! Player Slight Breeze has died!’

‘Ding! Player Yue Wanxin has died!’

70,000! 40,000!

Zhang Yang activated his [substitute], acquiring a 5-second invincibility.

20,000! 10,000!

“Rawh---” Bariyada gave out a raging roar that trembled the sky, and boom, it’s huge body was broken down into pieces of gigantic rocks falling down, scattering all over the ground.

‘Ding! You and all parties have slayed Hellfire Demon King Bariyada, acquired 230,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! The defense of the Tukula Fortress has been greatly weakened, the Empire Dragonic Cavalry are on their way to the battlefield, please wait patiently, and join the Imperial Expeditionary Army in the siege of the fortress!’

On the display of the players, a 30-minute countdown clock appeared.

“We made it!”

The people could not help themselves but to cheer in joy, lost in excitement. Zhang Yang was forcefully hugged by the female rogue Perfumed Water, receiving tons of her fragrant kisses on his face.

Stop it! My equipment! Zhang Yang cried in tears, just in the manner of seconds, Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu had already stabbed him in the back, grabbing all the Yellow-Gold equipment on the ground while everyone else was basking in their current victory!

“Quickly! Grab the equipment!” A few seconds later, someone finally noticed, and they quickly bent down to grab the loots dropped by the boss.

In the midst of the chaos with everyone was grabbing what they can reach their hands on, the 30 pieces of equipment dropped by Bariyada were cleaned up from the ground, distributed among them. 13 players looked at each other, with no knowledge of what the others had managed to grab from the ground.

Zhang Yang kicked all the non-Lone Desert Smoke members out of the party, before he started asking, “So what did you guys get from the loots?”

The remaining members of the Lone Desert Smoke were only the five of them, including himself, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream.

Although they didn't amount to much, they still occupied 40% of the total players who survived till the end. Evidently, they were absolutely the strongest among the remaining players who survived based on overall strength!

TL Note:

1Debilitation - the item name was changed from Weakness to Debilitation.

Chapter 193: The Reinforcements Have Arrived

Until the moment they were kicked out of the party, everyone only realized that they had not quit the party right before the boss died, they had been too nervous and excited! It was fortunate for them that Zhang Yang did not set the distribution mode to ‘Leader Distribution Mode’. Otherwise, it would have been too late for them!

It was still half an hour away before the Empire could send the second wave of their army over to the site, so everyone took the time to rest, to have some food and water as well.

The four ladies logged out to replenish their food. The last battle that was about to begin, and the general of the fortress is a Yellow-Gold rank boss, the drops would be most rewarding, there was no reason for them to miss it at all!

Having bought two boxes of rices in a haste and devouring them all, Zhang Yang quickly logged back on.

A while later, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the remaining ladies appeared at his sides, one after another.

“Noob tank, this one’s for you!” Wei Yan Er traded a piece of equipment glittering in gold over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang selected the accept button, jumping in shock!

[Furious Metallic Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Armor boots)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +288

Strength: +115

Agility: +115

[unidentified]

Profession required: Guardian

Level required: 60

Furious set (1/5)

3-piece set: Decrease [shield wall] cool down by 1 minute.

5-piece set: Whenever there is an attack that will kill you, the attack will not damage you, and also recover 40% of your HP value. The effect can only be triggered once every 5 minutes.

This is a warrior's second set of armor set, it is also the exclusive armor set for Guardian!

Every second set of armor set for all professions can be acquired from the level 50 dungeon, the Poison Fireland. But players can only acquire Black-Steel grade armor set from Normal Mode, Green-Copper grade armor set from Hard Mode, and Gray-Silver grade armor set from Death Mode. Zhang Yang had always thought that there would be no such thing as Yellow-Gold grade armor set all along. Now he realized that it's not that they did not exist at all, it was just that these Yellow-Gold grade set armor will only drop from the Open World boss!

However, how many level 50 to level 60 Yellow-Gold boss would be out there in the open world? The difficulty of collecting a complete set of the armor was imaginable, so it was perfectly normal that Zhang Yang had never seen a Yellow-Gold grade Furious set in his previous life.

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had grabbed a total of 5 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, other than one accessory, the other three pieces were exclusive armor set pieces for Cryomancers, Berserkers, and Snipers respectively. Players will never be able to wear the equipment if their professions are not correspondent to the equipment, so Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er handed over [Spiritual Boots] and a [Dragon Hunter's Boots] to Zhang Yang. They had left it to him to decide on whether to auction them in their guild or put them on the sales rack of his Little Merchandize Shop and split the money earned among themselves.

The accessory belonged to the physical damage type. Because Wei Yan Er already got a [Furious Boots] (Berserker), she let Sun Xin Yu have the accessory piece.

[Fury of Hell] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Increases your physical attack by 900 points, lasting for 10 seconds.
Cool down: 3 minutes.

Level required: 60

Open world bosses could really drop seriously good stuffs! An accessory such as this might not be acquired by regular players even if they reached level 100. However, the level 50 Zac, the level 60 Bariyada had already dropped such fine pieces of accessories!

“No skill books this time around, huh?” Zhang Yang expressed his dissatisfaction towards his own greed.

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er shook their heads. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were ranged professions, they did not even stand a chance in grabbing the loots dropped from the boss.

“It’s alright since that’s enough, the boss only dropped seven or eight pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, and we grabbed 5 pieces out of that. If we forget our own boundaries, god is going to smite you down with his thunder!” Han Ying Xue smiled while teasing him.

“Oh yea! There are also the loots acquired from Demon Snake Queen, Mimina!” Zhang Yang gave his head a slap as he remembered. Previously, after killing Mimina, he had hustled to skill the Hellfire Demons without even looking into what he had grabbed before that!”

Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er posted the loots that they grabbed earlier on:

[Ring of the Queen], [Sword of the Demon Snake], [Necklace of the Thick Soil Defense], and [Swiftfoot Boots].

According to the attributes of the equipment, [Ring of the Queen] went to Han Ying Xue (Actually it was also useful to Daffodil Daydream, but Han Ying Xue expressed that the ring accords with her identity), the necklace went to Zhang Yang, while the boots went to Sun Xin Yu. As for Endless Starlight, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han, they were gracefully ignored by the ladies.

[Sword of the Demon Snake] was a level 50 one-handed sword. Unfortunately, there were no Bandits in their small party, so the sword would only go straight into Zhang Yang's backpack.

[Strong Earth Defense Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +100

Strength: +25

[unidentified]

Required level: 50

Zhang Yang immediately switched the old necklace with the new one. Even though he had not identified the necklace yet, but it was definitely much stronger than the previous [Necklace of Anxious Attack]!

Very soon, Snow Seeker and the others were logging into the game.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, please take good care of us!" Snow Seeker smiled softly at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang shrugged and teased, "You guys are not bad yourselves, it goes both ways!"

At the current moment, there were only five members of Lone Desert Smoke left, being the most powerful force among them all. The next was Crimson Rage, with three people surviving, they were Snow Seeker, Flirtatious Lady, and Perfumed Water. The following was Imperial Sky, with Sky Shaman and The Great Compassion Mantra as the two remaining survivors. The Dominators also remained with two survivors, Humbly Gentleman and Traveling Piglet. With no healers left in their party, they would definitely be taken out if and when they engage in battle. The thirteenth survivor was Crimson Fire, thanks to the blessing of Han Ying Xue, this fellow had been healed at the very last moment, every single time he was close to death, on several occasions!

Currently, the top-10 contribution list on the battlefield were as below:

1. Zhan Yu: 542, 343, 412.

2. Little Snow: 278, 961, 987.

3. Snow Seeker: 138, 797, 892.
4. Drizzler: 123, 488, 720.
5. Frost Night: 119, 873, 693.
6. Daffodil Daydream: 91, 343, 493.
7. Sky Shaman: 87, 391, 349.
8. Humbly Gentleman: 74, 134, 987.
9. Perfumed Water: 66, 738, 868.
10. Crimson Fire: 64, 134, 098.

Zhang Yang's ranking as the first was absolutely uncontested. Even if he withdrew himself from the battlefield, his contribution points would still be in the first place! Han Ying Xue's ranking was also very firm, but from the third position onward, all the other positions were easily subject to change. The only way to know the final results would be to complete the siege on the fortress.

'Ding! The Dragon Knights of the White Jade City have joined the battle, prepare to launch the attack on the Magic Cannons of Tukula Fortress!'

A dozen gigantic dragons flew in from afar, their unfolded wings were impressively wide, spanning to about two to three hundred meters! Just a dozen dragons spreading their wings were already intimidating enough to overwhelm the sky! Each of these dragons differed in their own colors, there were red dragons, bronze dragons, green dragons, blue dragons. Each dragon had a knight riding on it's back, directing the dragon to launch the attack on the Magic Cannons located on the fortress.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

All of the dragons opened up their huge wide mouths, jetting out streams of dragon breaths, packed with destructive power. The Magic Cannons were immediately destroyed by the dragon breaths right after they fired their first shot, blowing up after taking direct hits. The monsters that were commandeering the cannons and those around it were blasted away in bloody pieces.

After clearing out the Magic Cannons, these gigantic dragons flew away one after another, disappearing into the sky as swiftly as they had arrived. Evening had already arrived, the unparalleled beauty of the sunset, paired with the scenario of a dozen of dragons flying together as a group, gave people a sense of infinite fascination.

“I really, really wanna have a dragon to ride on!” Wei Yan Er immediately imagined herself in the scene she just witnessed, provoking the hell horse that she currently sat atop to roar, stomping its horseshoes loudly on the ground as they moved.

The one and only person who would be able to ride a dragon in the whole of《God's Miracle》is Hundred Shots! He would tame a red dragon to be his pet, aiding him in battling enemies and also as a mount for him to ride on. It would be really useful in getting people's attention, without even mentioning the unlimited coolness factor!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh, he had to admit that he would never be able to ride a dragon, however, he still had hope to ride a phoenix! So all he could do was to wait for Fatty Han to reach Level 100, and then have Fatty Han bring him to complete the hidden quest for his profession!

It can be easily imagined, when Wei Yan Er sees Zhang Yang and Fatty Han riding on a Phoenix, she will definitely be flooding the surroundings with her tears!

‘Ding! The Magic Cannons have been destroyed, the Imperial Army is entering to the battlefield!’

In conjunction with the system's verbal announcement, a huge portal was opened, and parties of NPC squads were walking neatly out from the portal, amounting up to at least 300,000 men! A knight with a grand visage was riding an equally tall and handsome white horse into the battlefield, carrying a huge war hammer behind his back, right above his head was his title ‘The Expedition First General, Frodoc’.

[The Expedition First General, Frodoc] (Yellow-Gold Leader, Humanoid creature)

Level: 65

Hp: 30,000,000

Mp: 1,500,000

Defense: 1200

“Victory for the expedition is just within our sights! Soldiers, warriors of the White Jade City, charge!” Frodoc took up his war hammer and pointed it straight at the fortress, shouting out those words and roared.

“Charge ---”

The soldiers responded in unison, every single one of them marching neatly in formation towards the direction of the fortress. Hundreds of thousands of footsteps boomed in rhythm, echoing throughout the open field!

Croom! Croom! Croom!

Moving forward through the enemy like splitting bamboos, the army smashed the city gate down and marched mightily into the fortress!

The players followed meekly behind the NPCs, with only 13 of them left, they would instantly fail the expedition if they were to die in the process!

“Stick with Sir Frodoc!” Zhang Yang rode on his [Skeletal War Horse] while talking on the party channel.

Han Ying Xue and the others had no objection to his suggestion of course, Snow Seeker and the other two ladies pondered on it for a bit, before they too decided to follow Zhang Yang and his gang. Needless to say, Crimson Fire quickly followed. If a lone pyromancer like himself is left behind on his own, he would definitely be as good as dead if he ever met an elite monster!

With 9 out of 13 players standing together as a team, Sky Shaman and Humbly Gentleman did not want to be left out, and so they grudgingly followed Zhang Yang from behind just like the others.

Frodoc charged all the way through on his horse, riding straight for dozens of minutes to stop in front of a large mansion, pak, he dismounted with the grace of a general. Grabbing his war hammer in his right hand,

he did an about face, turning to his men. “Guards! Follow me into the mansion and slay all the evil demonic generals!”

“Yes, sir!” hundreds of elite NPC guards raised their swords up high and roared in unity.

“We shall follow them behind and take whatever advantage we can get from them!” Zhang Yang smiled with content.

At this time, instead of battling, it was more like following the NPCs to watch a movie. Players simply had to ensure their own survival, the NPCs would handle the final battle! Of course, for players who wished to acquire the City Order, they must join the battle, because monsters that are completely killed by NPCs will not drop a single victory loot!

Chapter 194: The End of the Expedition!

Bang!

With a swing of his war hammer, Frodoc blew open the huge iron door of the mansion. He walked in, followed closely by hundreds of elite guards, with Zhang Yang and the others in the midst of them.

Along the way, regular elite monsters were spawning, but they were instantly blown away by the powerful war hammer of Frodoc. His hammer smashing an enemy apart at a time, he held nothing back, the monsters dying in a single hit!

“This NPC is so ferocious!” Crimson Fire was left breathless.

Zhang Yang laughed, “This is the story mode, he must be ferocious to be a general! NPCs will not be too powerful when they engage with players. If that;s not the case, you can try to engage with the boss!”

Crimson Fire quickly shook his head frantically, it was just a joke! If he died in the hands of an NPC when victory was almost at hand, that would make him look very stupid, truly!

Han Ying Xue then said, “If there was such an NPC helping us with the 10th wave monsters, it would have been great!”

Zhang Yang instantly rolled his eyes back, thinking to himself that, if that would be the case, what was the point or even having 10th wave in the first place? However, Witchy Snow’s moral attainments had reached another height. Once provoked, she would use her seduction tactics to tease him all day long... That was least of his worries, he more afraid of Sun Xin Yu losing control and gunning the two of them down!

Under Frodoc’s lead, the players were proceeding like they were having a stroll in a bamboo forest, monsters to the left and right were instantly being killed. In just a short period of time, they had reached the front of a huge chamber.

The chamber was rectangular in shape, with a length of about 100 meters, width of 80 meters, and 30 meters high. The whole chamber was

supported by twelve large pillars, the atmosphere was ominous yet grand.

At the bottom of the chamber, there was a huge throne. Lounging upon it was a winged, red devil with and two horns on its head. The devil was more than ten meters tall!

[Demon General Shanks] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 65

Hp: 40,000,000

Defense: 1200

“Filthy demon, the world does not belong to you!” Frodoc raised up the hammer in his hand and walked into the chamber with confident, big steps.

“Hahaha, a bunch of fools here to die!” Shanks stood up boldly, unfurling his wings with a shake of his back, instantly stirring up a howling gale. As he stretched out his right hand, ‘bam!’, the black flame rose from his palm. “The world, is our hunting ground! In the near future, our family of nine lords will all be revived, be it human beings, elves, orcs, dwarves, dragons, or elemental bodies, all shall be completely erased from this world by our own hands!”

“Arrogant demon! Allow me, Frodoc, to bury your head into mud!” Frodoc bellowed sonorously. Dom dom dom, his heavy footsteps boomed through the chamber and he charged towards the boss.

“Guards, kill all these intruders.” Shanks drawled nonchalantly.

Jik Jik Jik!

Suddenly, a dozen demonic monsters, wielding battle axes, leaped from behind the pillars, all of them being Level 60 elites with health points up to 300,000!

“You useless maggots!” Frodoc swung up his war hammer once again, gong gong gong, with just one hit from his hammer, he took out all of the monsters in an instant! The pace of his charge did not slow down at all, he was like a gale rushing towards Shanks.

“Finally, a worthy warrior among the insignificant humans!” Shanks murmured, with a sudden move of his right hand, a shiny, giant axe flew over to him from the weapon rack at the side of the room, falling firmly into his palm. Shanks belted out a war cry, with his hands holding the axe in a firm grip, he gave an overhanded, downward swing. That was the start of the battle.

Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!

The two Yellow-Gold bosses were engaged in battle, every clash of the hammer and the axe discharging showers of sparks all over the place. The rate of health points lost on both sides amounted up to ten thousands at a time!

“Little sis, the boss is about to die, who knows, there might be a two-handed axe among the loots!” Zhang Yang turn to Wei Yan Er and made a guess.

Wei Yan Er immediately widened her eyes, dashing forward, she took her axe from her back and grabbed it firmly, snapping urgently, “Then what are we waiting for? Let’s role, take out the boss!”

Zhang Yang laughed, “Forward!”

Shoof! shoof!

Both of them used [charge] and smashed right onto the boss, and unleashed their attacks onto Shanks.

Sky Shaman and the others were not willing to be left behind, so naturally, they went forward as well.

At this point, the game company clearly no longer had any intentions of making things difficult for the players, Shanks’s aggro was firmly held by Frodoc, no one else would need to tank. Furthermore, the only all-out attack this boss had was [dividing slash], causing the same amount of damage on the players nearest to the target. So, as long as players stood behind the boss while unleashing their attacks, they would not be damaged by the skill.

However, the level of the boss and his defense were really high, the

damage output of everyone was largely diminished, even Zhang Yang could only unleash 30% of his full attack!

It was all they can do for now, the vast difference in levels cannot be covered up with powerful equipment and weapons.

In just 2 minutes, Shanks had been rid of 12,000,000 health points. But correspondingly, the damage output of the boss was even more ferocious, Frodoc had taken up to 20,000,000 damage!

“Silly Yu, the NPC won’t last for long!” Han Ying Xue was worried. The attacks of the boss was just too overwhelming, with a damage output up to 170,000 in each attack, if any of it were to land on the players, it would be like smashing the golden cudgel used by the monkey king on the players. The moment the attack reaches the players, they are all as good as dead!

Zhang Yang gave it thought, before saying, "There’s nothing to worry about, even if the NPC dies, the boss will not deal such high damage on players, we only see such outrageous values in Story Mode!”

While Frodoc took away another amount of 5,000,000 HP of the boss, he was left with only 1,000,000 HP. Just as he was about to be killed by the boss ---

‘+30,000,000!’

A horrifying amount of healing value appeared right on top of Frodoc’s head, instantly healing the NPC back to it’s original full state!

[sacred heal]!

Holy cow! Everyone could not help themselves but mutter, this NPC was too shameless!

Healing so much HP in a single time, giving no alternatives to the boss to survive!

But Zhang Yang felt uneasy, would the boss in turn, use a [berserker’s heal] to heal himself while engaging in this battle? It was very obvious that the boss is a Berserker warrior, it wouldn’t be unusual for the boss to be able to use [berserker’s heal]! With such thoughts held in his mind,

Zhang Yang did not dare to disrupt his chain of [destructive smash], the moment the cool down time was over, he would quickly use it again on the boss.

40%, 30%, 20%, 10% ...

The health points of the boss was dropping like an avalanche, he was not far from his own demise!

6%, 3%, 1%!

“NO ---” Shanks uttered a roar full of rage, “My master will return! When that happens, the whole world will be engulfed by fire, I shall be revived from the darkest flames of all! Humans, enjoy your last days while you are still able!”

Boom!

The huge body of the boss let out a stream of gold piling up on the ground, before he crashed down onto the ground, rattling the whole chamber with a large tremble!

‘Ding! The Demon General Shanks has been killed!’

‘Ding! The army of the White Jade City has completely conquered Tukula Fortress! Victory over the expedition!’

‘Server Announcement: The players of the White Jade City has completed the siege on the fortress, acquiring the first victory in the expedition! To honor these heroes, all players of the White Jade City will acquire an additional effect of 100% experience point as their additional reward for the next 3 days, and acquire the ‘Hero’ Effect!’

‘Server Announcement: The first phase of the expedition has been completed, all teleportation sites in the main cities are now opened, players are free to travel to all main cities via teleportation!’

‘Server Announcement: The 20-limit cap for the dungeon Poison Fireland has been officially opened!’

‘Server Announcement: Battle Mounting System has been officially opened!’

The system messages came up one after another, while Zhang Yang and the others had begun their own chaotic battle, grabbing the loots that were dropped from the boss. They had used every single possible way, the Knights used [sanction], the Spellcasters used [frozen ring], the Priests used [fear of mind and soul]. In short, everyone wanted to drive others away and gain control of the situation, so that they could pick the most precious item, the [City Order]!

Summoning servant Clear Lotus, activating the [substitute] skill! 5-second invincibility, immune to all control and damage!

[blast wave]!

Zhang Yang aimed from the perfect angle and emitted out a conical shock wave, instantly stunning the 8 remaining players who were not members of the Lone Desert Smoke!

Wei Yan Er could not stop giggling, while her arms worked quickly along with Han Ying Xue and the rest in grabbing the equipment that radiated gold light, stuffing them into their own backpacks. 4 seconds was enough for them to grab all 7 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment clean up from the ground!

When the others had regained their statuses from the stun, there were no more Yellow-Gold equipment left on the ground. Even the Gray-Silver equipment had not gone untouched, 6 of them remained --- there were originally a dozen of them on the ground before that.

“Zhan Yu, f*ck your mother!” Humbly Gentleman was in absolute rage. It was not easy having to hold on for so long, but having all the best rewards taken away from him, someone greedy and selfish like him would definitely snap and go crazy!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Hypocrite, how can I just stand there and do nothing when you initiated your attack? Fine, I guess it’s better that I send you back to the graveyard!”

Shoof, shoof, shoof. Zhang Yang wielded his battle axe, launching his attack on Humbly Gentleman.

With Zhang Yang in action, Wei Yan Er and the gang naturally followed their leader. Everyone was in a frenzy, and without much effort, they had sent Humbly Gentleman and Traveling Piglet back to White Jade City. With the little time left, Snow Seeker and the rest quickly relieved the ground of the remaining equipment and divided the loot among themselves.

Of course, those equipment had been left on purpose for them by Zhang Yang. Although it is said that the number of loots you can grab depended on your capabilities, leaving nothing for others would only provoke their rage! Now that Crimson Rage, Sky Shaman and the others had acquired a few Gray-Silver equipment, they would hopefully, not react as poorly as Humbly Gentleman did.

“Guildmaster Zhan Yu, you guys have earned a fortune this time!” Snow Seeker smiled gently while talking to him, as the saying goes, if it’s laid, it’s played. In the previous attempts in grabbing equipment, she had also used up all her juice, it was unfortunate that she could not compete with Zhang Yang. A [blast wave] took care of everyone else. If she goes around with a sad face, scolding and cursing, that would only make her look like Humbly Gentleman, who frankly did not deserve to play!

Zhang Yang smiled meekly, “Nothing special, just so-so.”

“Noob tank, this is for you!” Wei yan Er suddenly handed him a golden plate the size of a palm.

[City Order: Tukula Fortress] (Consumable)

Use: You have acquired the recognition of Your-Highness, to become the owner of the Tukula Fortress!

Level required: 50

Zhang Yang received the order over, but he did not use it immediately, he asked among the party members first, “None of you guys want this?”

“Cheh, don’t be so hypocritical! You are the guildmaster, the symbol of our guild, if this is not given to you, who else should we give it to?” Han Ying Xue scoffed with her nose up.

Daffodil Daydream nodded earnestly, expressing her agreement, "It should be given to Zhan Yu! It should be!"

Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu was sharpening her daggers, with a face that didn't seem to care for anything at all.

So, Zhang Yang accepted it bluntly, and used the city order on himself. A sudden burst of blinding gold light instantly covered him whole, and a large seal of the Royal of White Jade Kingdom appeared right above his head, gleaming as it floated in the air, displaying the title with cheerful, colorful ribbons.

Snow Seeker and the others saw the royal seals, and immediately they understood --- Zhang Yang had used the [City Order]! Unfortunately there was only one [City Order], so they could only be envious of him, staring from aside.

This moment of glamour lasted for half a minute, before the royal seal floating in the air finally dimmed down. The symbol then began to shrink and went hidden into the position of Zhang Yang's chest, engraving itself onto his armor.

'Ding! You have become the master of the Tukula Fortress!'

'Ding! You have acquired the privilege of the city order:

1, You can manage all players who enter the Tukula Fortress.'

You can use teleportation to the main hall of the city in any places."

'Ding! You have acquired the title: Hero of White Jade City, permanently gets a 50% discount in equipment repair, socket equipment and other costs!'

'Server Announcement: White Jade City has completed the siege on the fortress, the reward will be distributed according to the contribution of players on the battlefield!'

"Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu ranked first in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Furious Chest Plate], 1 skill point, lucky attribute +3!"

"Server Announcement: Player Little Snow ranked second in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Excellent Robe], 1 skill point, lucky attribute +2!"

"Server Announcement: Player Snow Seeker ranked third in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Spiritual Robe], 1 skill point, lucky attribute +1!"

"Server Announcement: Player Drizzler ranked fourth in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Furious Chest Plate], lucky attribute +1!"

"Server Announcement: Player Frost Night ranked fifth in the contribution list, acquired Yellow-Gold [Bloody Teeth Chest Plate]!"

"Server Announcement: Player Daffodil Daydream ranked sixth in the contribution list, acquired Gray-Silver [Spiritual Robe]!"

.....

The rewards for the top five achievers were all the second pieces of Yellow-Gold armor sets, respective to their professions! As for the remaining 5 top achievers on the contribution list, they were rewarded with a second piece of the Gray-Silver armor sets. There was a vast difference between the value between these two grades of the rewards, as Gray-Silver equipment can be acquired through the Death Mode of the Poison Fireland Dungeon, but Yellow-Gold equipment...can only be acquired by slaying Yellow-Gold Open World bosses.

The problem is that the difficulty is too hard, unlike a dungeon, it was open for everyone!

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased, other than getting a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment, he actually got another skill point and 3 luck attribute points! Currently, his lucky attribute had already reached 9 points, while rate of his lucky strikes had almost reached 1%. It might not seem to affect much when engaging a boss as it only increased the his output damage by a little, but it can instant-kill a player in PK, if the effect is suddenly triggered out of the blue!

Although Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er both acquired a [Furious Chest

Plate], one aimed to increase defense while the other aimed to increase damage output., the system had already considered this on behalf of the players. However, the second piece of Yellow-Gold equipment required players to be level 60 to wear it, and players can wear equipment that are Gray-Silver or lower grade when they reach level 50. Currently, Zhang Yang could only wait for a little longer, staring at the Yellow-Gold equipment after acquiring a few pieces of them.

Afterwards, they divided the Yellow-Gold equipment that they acquired from the boss, Shanks. Zhang Yang was extremely lucky, he actually got another piece of his armor set --- [Furious Helmet]. So now, he just needed to level up to level 60, and then he will be able to equip all 3 pieces of the armor set he now possessed, acquiring the first effect of the armor set!

Shanks had dropped 7 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment in total, and among the 7, 4 of them were armor set pieces, all being helmets for priest, assassin thieves, guardians and pyromancers. However, there was no helmet for Wei Yan Er, she was so upset with the fact and blamed the boss for being biased.

It was fortunate that the axe weapon that always made her drool had finally appeared, although it required her to be level 60 to equip it, the little girl was already filling her face with only joy, her joy was beyond any description possible.

Chapter 195: Notice of the Gathering of Classmates

After splitting up the loots, there was nothing left there for them.

The existence of the Tukula Fortress was to allow players to go to Level 50+ leveling areas. Currently, this place can be described as a transfer hub. For the players to go to the level 50+ leveling area, one must first travel from the main city to this fortress, and then go on out to the designated areas through here.

However, there were a number of 'Territories' on the map of level 50+ areas with teleportation points of their own. As long as these 'Territories' are refreshed and conquered by players, the players would be able travel directly from the main cities to the 'Territory' points, saving a lot of time.

Therefore, the Tukula fortress would only be enticing for now, after all, there is a Level 50 dungeon that would drop the second piece of the armor set. When 'Territory' points start appearing, the number of players coming to this fortress will greatly diminish. Only the novice players will occasionally come through to farm for armor pieces, or simply level up a little before buying some better equipment from the auction house. Tearing of their teleportation scrolls, everyone left the place in a swoop. They were all back in the long-left White Jade City. After experiencing a dozen hours of crazy slaughtering and killing, everyone was tired, both physically and mentally. So they went offline to get a good rest, one after another.

Removing the gaming helmet from his head, Zhang Yang breathed out a long breath of relief, it was extremely tiring.

He had logged in at nine, and began the expedition at ten, it was a full 11 hours, and it was already 12a.m! He took a bath and immediately lay on his bed like a dead piglet, it had been extremely tiring.

The next day in the morning, Zhang Yang had his physical training, he was at ease as he brought back some breakfast back to his house. While

he was half way finishing his breakfast, Fatty Han called him.

“Brother Yang, were you outside just now?”

“Yea, I went to buy myself some breakfast.”

“Oh, no wonder Zhou Kang Ming had me pass you a message! Well, next week, our high school class will be having a classmate gathering, the location will be at the Sheraton Hotel, on 9th of October, 7 at night!”

Zhang Yang was moved by the news, the ‘past’ that was asleep immediately fluttered through his heart.

In his previous life, it was at this time when he received an invitation to the classmate gathering. He was working in his office when he received the news, so he had taken the call by himself. At first, Zhang Yang was quite excited to see all his old classmates and old friends that he had not met for 4 long years.

Unfortunately, there were too many fair-weathered people! Fatty Han had already stepped into the society right after he graduated from high school, and he became a logistic driver, naturally not having suitable living conditions. Zhang Yang had just graduated from a university, without his parents’ aid, as both of them belonged to the bottom category in society.

On the day of their classmate gathering, Fatty Han had fetched Zhang yang with his logistic lorry to the hotel... But in the end, the hotel did not allow a huge lorry to be parked in the parking lot, so they had to park the lorry by the roadside, a few hundred meters away from the hotel.

This event had become the laughing stock for everyone that night. Everyone was looking at Zhang Yang and Fatty Han with contempt and disdain. So, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were holding their anger throughout the night!

On that day, Zhang Yang had a thought, if he was able to turn his luck around and become successful, he intended to slap those snobbish faces as hard as possible, every single one of them! However, going through the passage of time, he now had nearly 50 million properties, he could definitely look down on these old snobbish classmates. But he had

switched his target to people like the heir to the billionaire family, such as Liu Wei, raising up his status by numerous levels. It would be not interesting at all, not even a bit for Zhang Yang to be angry at those kind of people!

To oppress others with that little bit of wealth, only small time crooks would do such a thing, like they were afraid of people not knowing their wealth.

The real rich people, are those who got their fortune through inheritance, they did not have to raise a finger, they would embarrass others just standing at the side!

Zhang Yang replied with a light smile, "Not interested, I don't feel like going!"

"Brother Yang, don't forget that your first love will be there as well! Zhou Kang Ming mentioned that Zhao Hui Shan will be there as well! Don't you want to see how your old lover has turned into now? There are also Yang Zhi Xian and Li Ru, they were all school idols, I wonder how have they turned out to be now!"

Zhao Hui Shan... That was a memory from a very long time ago!

Zhang Yang was a king of fighter since he his childhood, having no interest at all in studying. Although he was already attending high school, he was still not willing to settle down, and he would still fight with some bad students from other schools. His name was very well-known in school, and even teachers were afraid of him to the point that they weren't dare to file any complaints about him!

Teenaged boys and girl are full of hope for love, and that was also their passionately rebellious period of time. Zhao Hui Shan was attracted to the rebellious attitude of Zhang Yang very much, and that was why she began a relationship with him. At that time, Zhao Hui Shan, Yang Zhi Xian and Li Ru were the three most beautiful girls in the class, they were also the school's top ten school babe. More importantly, Zhang Yang was positively interested in sex and filled with curiosity about it, so the two two were naturally became a thing, immediately starting their relationship

together.

However, Zhao Huishan was still a good girl, although Zhang Yang had been a responsible, affectionate partner, the two did not take the final step. In the end, the romantic relationship between the two were found out by Zhao Hui Shan's parents, and that was when the relationship was ended naturally.

Zhang Yang had also tried hard in his studies because of that, and ultimately he was admitted into a university, which was a total shock to both his classmates and his teachers. Everyone had thought that getting a high school certificate would be extremely difficult for Zhang Yang!

Entering the university life, Zhang Yang had secretly fell in love with his own lecturer named Yu Li. That was when he realized that the puppy love he had during his high school time was just like a game, it had not matured at all! Zhao Hui Shan was naive and knew nothing, that was why she fell in love with his violent attitude, but the moment when she open her eyes and think through maturely, she certainly would not want to stay together with him for the rest of her life.

As for him, it was like he never actually fell in love with Zhao Hui Shan. Just like a gangster trying to impress, it would be a shame for him to be without a woman by his side while standing in front of his so called 'brothers'!

In his previous life when he attended the gathering, he had found out that Zhao Hui Shan had became Zhou Kang Ming's girlfriend! The funny part was that the main reason Zhao Hui Shan wanted to see Zhang Yang was because she wanted to prove to Zhang Yang that she had made the right decision, saying that Zhang Yang was just a hooligan, there was no way he could better than Zhou Kang Ming, who had already become the vice general manager of a photo frame company at such a young age!

At the gathering, Zhou Kang Ming and Zhao Hui Shan had been throwing all sorts of ridicule at Zhang Yang, and they ended up provoking him to the point where he beat the crap out of the two of them! In the end, he was thrown into the lockup of the local police station for 7 days!

There was a saying, a girl changes fast in physical appearance from childhood to adulthood, but the changes in this girl was not just the appearance, but also her heart! The initial sweet and pure looking Zhao Hui Shan, with a look of a fine lady, had now turned into such a materialistic and ugly person, by heart!

Zhang Yang could not help himself but shook his head over and over again, then he replied, "Fatty, this classmate gathering has no meaning at all, it will all be about showing off the fortunes earned at hand, looking for opportunity to get into beds with their previous lovers. I would rather spend the time on killing more monsters and level up a little!"

"For f*ck's sake, brother Yang, when did you become an otaku! No, I Fatty Han must drag you out for a spin!"

"... Fatty Han, you're so persistent because you heard me talking about the 'getting into bed' part, didn't you?"

"Haha! You are worthy of being the brother Yang that knows me well! I was very interested in Yang Zhi Xian, Li Ru and Zhao Hui Shan, but don't you worry brother Yang, the wife of my brother, quietly... Eherm, I shall not mount her not be mounted by her! I will definitely keep my hands off Zhao Hui Shan, haha! Having the chance to 'fly' with both Li Ru and Yang Zhi Xian would very satisfying for me! Yo, speaking of Li Ru, I would very much want to see to what extent have the boobs from those days developed into!"

"Then you should go by your own, I have no objections as well if you are flying on 4P!"

"Brother Yang, we are said to be the pairing of a dragon and a tiger, never to leave each other, how could you abandon me alone? Furthermore, those high school people look down on me, so this time around, I am going to teach them a lesson they will never forget!"

"You are referring to all your saving money that you have spent, plus the 600,000 that I lent to you just to buy a Maserati sports car?"

Having the thought of this had already sent Zhang Yang bursting with sweat. Fatty Han had proven himself to be so much more free spirited

than he is. With only a few million on hand, he had spent all the money on his ride!

“Haha! Brother Yang, my sports car is very stunning isn’t it?”

“It’s OK, I guess.”

Zhang Yang commented without any particular thought, a sport car that’s worth 300 million was naturally not a low-grade property, although there is still a very big difference between Fatty Han’s car and the really famous sports cars, but this would be more than enough to astonish ordinary people.

“What did you mean it’s OK, this is the actual Maserati GT2034!” Fatty Han was jumping in rage over the phone after hearing what Zhang Yang had to say.

Zhang Yang laughed and replied, “Alright, alright, a lovely ride, absolutely stunning!”

“Therefore, I must bring you along to the gathering to show off for a bit!”

Zhang Yang shook his head again to reject Fatty Han’s offer, “Fatty, you can use famous cars to fish for women... But, aren’t you worried if others find out that you have no savings at all, plus a ton of debt nailed onto your ass?”

“Debts are nothing to worry about! Furthermore, if I don’t say, who would know about my history? Brother Yang, please accompany me to the gathering!”

“Brother Yang ---”

“Brother Yang...”

“Brother, Yang!”

Fatty Han was using all sorts of intonations and volumes in persuading Zhang Yang to go.

Zhang Yang was annoyed to the point where he finally gave in to Fatty Han, “Fine, fine, fine! I will go along with you! Happy now?”

Fatty Han was finally contented, and he praised, "That's my good brother!"

After ending the conversation with Fatty Han, Zhang Yang put on his gaming helmet and logged onto the game.

As he still had a few equipment yet to be identified, Zhang Yang went over to the Identify Shop and spent a total of 196 gold to identify 4 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and one piece of Gray-Silver equipment.

[Lodac's Arm Brace] (Gray-Silver, armor)

Defense: +20

Vitality: +60

Strength: +30

Agility: +30

[Level 2 socket]

Equip: Absorbs 60 damage points when hit.

Required Level: 50

[Strong Earth Defense Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, necklace)

Vitality: +100

Strength: +25

Equip: Absorbs 50 damage points when hit.

Required Level: 50

[Furious Helmet] (Yellow-Gold, armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +288

Strength: +115

Agility: +115

[Level 2 socket 1]

[Level 2 socket]

Equip: Absorbs 100 damage points when hit.

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 60

The attribute for [Furious Metallic Boots] was almost similar to the attributes for [Furious Chest Plate] and [Furious Helmet], the only difference lay on the slight difference in the numerical values on each of the equipment's attributes.

“Noob tank!” The moment Zhang Yang put a foot out of his shop, Wei Yan Er rode up to him on her [Hell's Stead], blocking his path, “Don't go just yet! Please help me identify these equipment!”

Zhang Yang's brows were furrowed. He possessed the title of 'Hero of White Jade City', so all fees within the White Jade City are halved. This little girl actually pulled him aside to identify equipment on her behalf, she was indeed a business-minded girl!

Chapter 196: King of the Frost Chimera

Wei Yan Er passed 3 Yellow-Gold equipment to Zhang Yang, with 2 of them being Furious set equipment and the other being Shanks' two handed axe.

[Histola the Malicious Axe] (Yellow-Gold, Two Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 1697 – 2097

Attack Interval: 308 Seconds.

DPS: 499

[Level 2 socket 1]

[Level 2 socket]

Equip Effect: Creates a chance for you to use the power of evil when you're under attack. Deals 1,000 Shadow damage to the attacking target.

Level Requirement: 60

“What a crazy amount of damage!” cried Zhang Yang after identifying the 3 equipment and returning them to Wei Yan Er.

Delighted at having received praise, Wei Yan Er had a wide grin as she snorted proudly. “As they should be!”

Just as he was done with it and was about to leave, Wei Yan Er stopped him and said, “Wait up! My cousin sister is on her way, you have to help her too!”

Those words reminded Zhang Yang that this little brat had not yet paid him the identification fees. He reached out his left hand and gestured. “That's 180 gold coins for the identification. Pay up!”

“Oh wow! Will you look at that! What beautiful flowers over there!” said Wei Yan Er as quickly as she could. She walked away from Zhang Yang and headed towards the potted plants outside the shop, pretending to enjoy the flowers.

Not long after, Han Ying Xue came as well and threw a heap of

equipment for Zhang Yang to identify. Of course, she did not have to bear any costs herself. The moment the female gang logged in, the ever-enthusiastic Wei Yan Er called out to Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream to make use of Zhang Yang's discounted rate. That too, was free-of-charge.

Muttering to himself, Zhang Yang went into a tirade of complaints. "Damn...I would have to pay to watch a girl strip down naked! Here, you guys wring me dry, and make me pay for everything?! What is the meaning in this?! Sigh..."

"Hey! Big Dummy! What are you rambling about?" said Han Ying Xue as she could see his lips moving.

Zhang Yang immediately replied. "Nothing much. That sh*tty Fatty just logged in and told me about joining a student gathering or something."

"Ehh...boring!" said Wei Yan Er as she stuck out her tongue. She then changed the topic. "Hey! When are we going to raid Poison Fireland! I hear that the second set of equipment is there! I still have the class quest to do!"

"The dungeon would only drop 3 tiers of equipment, Black-Steel, Green-Copper, and Gray-Silver. Yellow-Gold tier gears are only available from a Yellow-Gold tier field boss. You are wearing some Yellow-Gold tier stuff now, aren't you? Why would you still want to farm for Gray-Silver equipment?"

Zhang Yang continued, "Besides, that dungeon is a 20-man dungeon. Only level 50 players and above can raid the dungeon. We have only 8 of us at that level. How are we going to raid the boss?"

Starting from level 50 onwards, all drops from field bosses would almost always be higher tiered than the loots from a dungeon. That is, of course, corresponding to the boss' own difficulty as well. You cannot expect a low level, easy boss to drop something worthwhile, just because of its field boss prestige. If it was not for the free skill point rewards from First Clear Achievements, Zhang Yang saw no other reason to clear dungeons.

Besides that, after the level 50 mark, even when it was said that the

entire world would share the same training maps, additional maps would be made to cater for the astounding number of players! There would be enough field bosses to satisfy the entire world! More bosses meant more rewards! Farming field bosses would be the best source of income and power!

“If we can’t raid the Hardcore Mode for now, we can always try the Hard Mode instead!” said Wei Yan Er. She had always been this way. After raiding the same old boss for a number of times, she would grow sick of it look to the other bosses for fresh challenges.

“We might as well train for the time being! Let’s just train to the point where we can finally wear the equipment still sitting in our inventories! That’s the path of lords and ladies! Let’s focus on field bosses! Leave the dungeon raids to Endless Starlight and his merry little friends!” said Zhang Yang as he patted the little brats head.

“Let’s find ourselves some Yellow-Gold field boss! We can always come back to raid the Poison Fireland in Hardcore Mode, obtain the First Clear Achievement, complete the quest in the highest difficulty, all in one shot!

Thinking about the axe that lay in her bag, waiting to hack through the air and spill the blood of her enemies, Wei Yan Er could not help but smile innocently like a little girl. She summoned her own mount and cried to her cousin sister. “Let’s go! What are we waiting for?! To the grinding fields!”

Burning with enthusiasm, the little girl and her elder cousin ran off to who knows where, leaving Daffodil Daydream behind with Zhang Yang.

Watching them galloping away with such enthusiasm, Zhang Yang smiled and was about to leave when Daffodil Daydream quickly grabbed him by the sleeve. Her face was flushed red in embarrassment, and she asked for the identifying fees. “I..erhm...Zhan Yu...I...I want...I want to pay! It’s not that I did not intend to earlier. It’s just that...little Yan Er didn’t allow me to! P-Please accept my thanks!” said the girl as she bowed down politely.

Oh well, since he had already been ripped off on a rather epic scale, a little more or less wouldn’t make any difference. Zhang Yang smiled at her

earnestness and smiled. "There's no need for such humility! Just take it as one of the perks of having me as your guild master!"

Zhang Yang summoned his own mount and rode to his Little Merchandize Shop. He had a mountain of Green-Copper and Gray-Silver equipment for sale!

Ever since he had auctioned the [Guild Upgrade Order], the shop was gained a burst of popularity in White Jade Castle! His total profits had doubled since then! The total revenue had increased from 100,000 to 200,000! All these were just profits he gained from 20% of the auction house's service fees! The other sales from the equipment had not yet been included! Mostly because the equipment was farm with the cooperation of the party, the sales profit gained had to be shared among the 8 party members.

Zhang Yang put up the Green-Copper and Gray-Silver equipment up for sale. As for the Gold-Yellow equipment, he had planned to auction them! This time, he intent to advertise his sales to all 8 major cities! To spread out the name of his little shop as vastly as he could!

As for [Solid Iron Bar]s, Zhang Yang had already purchased 17,000 stacks of the item, totaling up to an expenditure of 3,100,000 gold coins. However, he had also spent an additional 13,000,000 gold coins to buy the storage expansion to store the items! According to the current exchange rate, 1:3, he had spent close to 50,000,000 dollars!

That being said, the shop storage's capacity had been upgraded to level 10 as a result, so the 6 tabs in the guild warehouse had become a little excessive. When the exchange rate drops down to 1:1, he would have wasted 26,000,000 dollars!

With a surplus of 13,000 empty slots, it was enough to store 13,000 stacks of [Solid Iron Bar]. One stack contained 200 units. These units could be sold for 5 gold each in the near future, totaling up to 13,000,000 gold coins, which was equivalent to 39,000,000 dollars, just enough to reimburse the investment.

However, this was a good investment as it's a one-ff thing. The following

investments that require him to store massive amounts of ingredient would not require further spending on storage upgrades!

However, it was a shame. Since the storage space was still insufficient, Zhang Yang could not make a huge amount of profit from this current sale. At most, the return profit would only be equivalent to a free 17,000 storage slots and, earning a little more than 13,000,000, which was far from his initial estimation of 100,000,000 to 200,000,000 profit! However, following the size of the storage capacity of the shop itself, the quantity of the item turnover could be raised as well. Since the profit had been growing exponentially for the past few days, earning 300,000 gold coins a day would not just be a dream!

After becoming a city lord, Zhang Yang had gained a new skill: City Teleport. This skill wasn't really all that different from the regular [Teleportation Scroll]. One is used to teleport to the fortress while the other was used to teleport back to White Jade Castle.

Zhang Yang activated [city teleport] and a white glow formed underneath his feet. A circular magic circle sharpened out from the light and after 10 seconds, a white pillar of light engulfed his character. He appeared immediately at the headquarters of Tukulo Fortress.

"All hail the Lord of the city!" As he appeared, he was greeted by the surrounding maids and guards.

No wonder everyone wanted to be an official; anyone could easily be intoxicated by the sensation of being respected! Even when he was in the game, he could feel the reverence from the realistic human characters kneeling down to him. Somehow, he felt as light as a feather.

Zhang Yang exited the headquarters and rode out of the fortress, and came into the Frozen Sky Wasteland.

There will be a level 50+ map after exiting each fortress from all 8 main cities. As the level 50 and 60 maps grew tighter and closer in the center of the global map, there will naturally be fewer and fewer of them as you head deeper in. However, even if the number of maps decreased, each map itself only grew larger!

The name of the map really speaks for itself; everything in this map was either frozen solid or encased in thick ice. The ground was covered in thick snow and walking by yourself was rather troublesome. A gentle breeze persisted in the background, bring the frosty north wind along with it. The sky, the field, and even the forest was completely engulfed in snow, making the map seem to appear completely monochrome. With only the sound of the cold wind and the crushing snow beneath his feet with each step, the atmosphere here was nothing but cold and barren.

In 'God' Miracle', a field boss had its own "domain"; it will only roam around in a very small area within a map, which players could easily find and defeat. However, there were a small number of bosses that could roam a large area with no fixed area. They could easily roam across several maps!

The boss that Zhang Yang wanted to look for was called "King of the Frost Chimera", a Green-Copper tier and it was rather weak. However, this boss was the only boss that would drop the [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] recipe! This was one of those bosses that did not have a fixed spawning location. The boss would roam around this frozen wasteland without any fixed pattern. Since it will fly around randomly, player had a hard time tracking it down! Players could simply bump into out of nowhere, or spend half a year simply trying to pick up a trail!

Further, King of the Frost Chimera was rather rare despite being Green-Copper. Once defeated, it would take another 7 days to respawn again!

Maps above level 50 only had one similar map in each server. This meant that the entire china server only had one King of the Frost Chimera! Once killed, every player in the china server would have to wait for an entire week!

Since the boss was only a Green-Copper tier, a small team of rag-tag players could easily defeat it! With many players after this boss, nobody will even know if the boss was alive, or if it was playing hide-and-seek as usual. Other than the first-kill, there was no way of knowing if anyone else has killed the boss for the last seven days! Right now, the time was ripe, Zhang Yang had to find the boss now and farm that recipe before other

players start exploring this map!

Zhang Yang rode his horse tirelessly, from the top of trees to the bottom of valleys, he searched every nook and cranny of the map for the boss. But, Frozen Sky Wasteland was just too enormous for him to search! He had already spent an entire morning, and had covered at least one third of the entire map and had no clue where the boss was. It could have easily entered the spots he already checked!

After lunch, Zhang Yang logged back in and continued his quest to search for the boss. Incidentally, he had triggered a few monsters in his wake and killed them in stride, albeit unwillingly.

Two days passed in an instant, and Zhang Yang was still roaming in the frozen land with no trails or clues on the whereabouts of the boss. In that time, Zhang Yang had already attained level 53.

So far, beside the 8 players from Lone Desert Smoke including Zhang Yang, the highest level in the guild was only level 48. They might have to train for another 7 to 8 days to reach level 50 in order to raid the Poison Fireland. Besides spending his time searching for the boss, Zhang Yang had brought his party to farm Master Waller for the [Guild Upgrade Order]. The rest of his time was fully spent on searching for the boss.

October the 7th was the fifth day Zhang Yang had spent searching for the King of the Frost Chimera in the Frozen Sky Wasteland.

“Heyyy dummy. The monster that you’re searching for...is it called King of the Frost Chimera, Basilisk?” Han Ying Xue’s sultry voice was heard in the voice messenger.

Zhang Yang was stupefied for a moment. “You saw it?” he finally asked.

“Yeah! I logged out in an open field yesterday. When I relogged in, I decided to walk around, and then I saw a huge chimera monster flying in the sky! When I targeted it, the name was pretty similar to what you have been mumbling on about these few days!”

Zhang Yang almost felt like crying there and then. He had spent 5 whole days searching for the monster and there it was, chanced upon by an idiot

who has a tendency of getting lost all the time!

“Follow the boss! Do not engage, do no engage! I’ll be right there!” said Zhang Yang as he quickly sent a party invitation to Han Ying Xue. That way, he could easily locate her position in the map UI.

Han Ying Xue accepted the invitation and Zhang Yang quickly opened his world map. When he had pinpoint her location, he frowned again. “I’d say. You’re really a good runner! How could you run off to the edge of the map! You’re almost running into the Necrotic Wastelands!”

“Is that so?”

“Is that so? That’s all you’re gonna say about that?”

“Tsk! Hey! I did you a favor here! I found the boss for you! Aren’t you supposed to show some gratitude at least? What are the chances of me walking away from here and having you spend a third of a month wandering around the land like a homeless beggar again?!”

1Officials – The author used the word to refer to the ancient china palace ranking system. Officials were ranking officers that had 9 level of rankings. Normal citizens can become officials by taking a written examination.

Chapter 197: Fire Resistance Potion Recipe

Zhang Yang set off like a rocket towards Han Ying Xue.

Since Han Ying Xue was just following the boss and had nothing else to do, she was rather bored and was chirping in Zhang Yang's ear during the whole time. While he was making his way towards her, Han Ying Xue had been asking him all sorts of personal question such as his first love ... the popping of his cherry ...

Frozen Sky Wasteland was truly large indeed. The boss was located away by almost as far as half of the map's size itself. He had to spend at least half an hour riding on his mount just to arrive to the point where he could finally see the blinking dot of Han Ying Xue in his mini-map. The blinking dot of an ally meant that the distance between them was within 100 meters.

FUU RA RA...

The Skeletal War Horse roared as it kicked off a heap of snow into the air when Zhang Yang pulled the reins. Zhang Yang pulled over when he reached by Han Ying Xue's side. The woman was sneezing uncontrollably when he had arrived.

"Hey dummy...I have been waiting for you all day!" Han Ying Xue complained.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and answered. "That's a big no for taking any more Gray-Silver equipment from my shop!"

Knowing her for 3 months, he had already seen past all her little tricks.

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes and said, "Hey! I learnt Rune Craft was for you guys!"

"Oh please...You have to know that equipment higher than level 40 Gray-Silver tier are extremely valuable! Not many others would be willing to sell them off! The ones in my shop was farmed with everyone's effort! How could I just simply take them out for you!" Zhang Yang rolled his eyes as well.

You think you're the only who can roll their eyes? Please, I can use the same trick as well!

Han Ying Xue realized that rolling her eyes was not effective enough. She then resorted to raising her eye brows suggestively, "But, +2 Rune Stones require Level 2 Gray-Silver Essences! Don't you want to upgrade your weapon?"

"What the f*ck woman! I haven't even received a +1 Rune Stone from you! What +2 Rune Stone are you talking about!?"

Zhang Yang turned around and spotted the flying boss in the air. That flying beast was a large chimera, hovering at least 20 to 30 meters above the ground, soaring passively and slowly.

[King of the Frost Chimera, Basilisk] (Green-Copper, Beast)

Level: 55

HP: 55,000

Defense: 300

That was it! That was the one!

Zhang Yang sent away his horse and ran towards to the boss. He bent over and collect a bunch of snow and formed a snow ball in his hand. He aimed and tossed the snow ball at the boss.

Pak!

The throw did no damage but it was enough to trigger the boss' aggro and to engage in a battle.

The beast growled and flapped its gigantic wings, gliding down from the high heavens and down towards Zhang Yang, firing out a cold stream of air from its mouth.

'Ding! Basilisk has used [ice breath]!'

'-1,023!'

Zhang Yang took the damage and gained 42 Rage points.

'-1,482!' Normal attack.

[Cripple Defense]!

‘-692!’ [Cripple Defense].

‘-3,389!’ [horizontal sweep].

‘-3,512!’ [destructive smash].

Zhang Yang had instantly expended all his Rage and had dealt close to 9,000 damage to the boss. In terms of percentage, Zhang Yang had knocked off 20% of the boss’ HP! Incredibly scary!

Basilisk’s cried out as it swings its claw to attack Zhang Yang.

[block]! +30 Rage

‘-359!’ [block] reflect damage.

[blood rage]! +30 Rage/

[Cripple Defense]!

‘-752!’ [Cripple Defense] /

‘-868!’ [shield bash].

‘-1,648!’ [force strike].

Zhang Yang stacked another 3 layers of [Cripple Defense], making it to 5 stacks in total. The boss was now completely naked to Zhang Yang attacks.

“Woah, looks like soloing a boss is no problem for you now, huh...” said Han Ying Xue admirably. Zhang Yang’s current attack had far exceeded that of the boss. His HP was now at 12,000. He did not even need to use [berserker’s heal] to kill the boss!

“I’m wearing Yellow-Gold and Gray-Silver equipment, woman. How can I not solo kill a Green-Copper tier boss? If I can’t even do that, how do I show my face in public?” said Zhang Yang as he smirked.

“What a thick face!”

Zhang Yang laughed. He raised his axe up high and continued to attack the boss with a DPS of nearly 2000! To kill a boss with 55,000 HP would

only take around half a minute! By the time he had killed off the boss, he did not even break a sweat and had only lost 5,000 HP.

“Dummy, what exactly is up with this boss to make you go so far out of your way?” Women were as curious as cats. As more so for Han Ying Xue, as she posed the question while raising her eye brows seductively.

Zhang Yang bent down and poked around the boss' drops and smiled contentedly when he picked up a sheet of recipe. He then quickly patted it on his chest and learned the crafting recipe.

Han Ying Xue cried out immediately when she saw him doing that. “What the...You sly meanie, you actually used All-Pick distribution mode!” She actually wanted to pick up the item and teased Zhang Yang for a bit before letting him taking the item. She had never thought that Zhang Yang was one step ahead of her and had set the distribution mode beforehand.

Zhang Yang laughed manically. “Hmph! Without proper skills, how can I fight off demons and monsters like you!”

“BLEH!” Han Ying Xue blew raspberries at him. She was now even more curious about the item that Zhang Yang had picked up. “Dummy, at least let me see the item description!”

Zhang Yang laughed under his breath and posted the description of a type of potion.

[Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Adds 600 fire resistant. Last for 2 minutes.

Cool down time: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 50

“Is this the junk that you spent 5 days searching for?” snorted Han Ying Xue.

“This junk could only reduces 600 fire damage. I can easily heal that amount with one tick of [regeneration].”

“Your hair must be too long now, it's dulling your senses!” said Zhang Yang while giving a crooked smile.

“What did you say? Care to repeat that again?!” said Han Ying Xue with the temper of a lioness behind her voice.

“Ah...ah...” Zhang Yang quickly twist his brain, trying to think of a way to switch the topic. “There are many bosses that have damaging aura effects. Just like the one that gave us a lot of trouble in the Expedition war, the [burning aura]? If we had used the potion to nullify the aura effect, we won’t not have to worry about it anymore!”

Han Ying Xue only nodded and hummed “Okay” under her breath. For now, she bought what Zhang Yang said.

The last boss in the Poison Fireland, Roshan – Copper Hammer was the kill requirement for the level 50 class quest. The boss had a strong AoE, [burning aura] - like ability. It was not like the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] that was needed to resist the Marzerway’s shadow attack, where it was completely impossible to complete the raid without it. This level 50 boss could still be killed without the potion, but having it would make things much easier! The item was bound to be extremely popular in the future! However, Zhang Yang remained quiet about this fact. If he had said it, Han Ying Xue would definitely be asking for a share of the profit! It’s best to remain quiet for now.

As for the other drops of Basilisk, Zhang Yang did not even care to have a glimpse at them. He just looted them all and tossed them into the corner of his inventory (if the inventory had a corner to begin with). It was all just random Green-Copper and Black-Steel tier equipment. Nothing important enough for him to pay attention to.

Now that he had what he wanted, Zhang Yang mission was completed. He tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castle. To craft the [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion], he would require [White-Spotted Flower]s and [Fire Crystal Shard]s. [White-Spotted Flower]s are harvest ingredients obtainable by Herbalism profession. They can be harvested in level 40+ hunting grounds and are extreme abundant in nature. The price in the auction house was quite low as well. [Fire Crystal Shard]s were the miscellaneous -- items that would be in the ‘ETC’ tab of inventories -- dropped by any Fire Elemental monsters, levels 20 and higher. They

usually ended up being sold to NPC directly.

Miscellaneous items, in 'God' Miracle' usually seemed worthless, but when a recipe pops up and requires them as ingredients, the item would undergo a sudden change, gaining popularity and having its prices hike up by over hundred-fold within a day!

Since the recipe of [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] was extremely rare to begin with, Zhang Yang had never go to figure out the ingredients needed to craft the item! Only after he had obtained the recipe did he gain the knowledge of the items.

Back in his shop, he had adjusted Natalia's setting to begin purchasing these said ingredients.

[White-Spotted Flower]s were sold in the auction house at 10 gold coins a stack. [Fire Crystal Shard]s, they were being sold directly to the NPCs. No one would want to waste their money by selling it at the auction house due to the service fees incurred, that would deduct 20% of the price they put up. Selling the [Fire Crystal Shard] to the NPC would earn them 2 gold coins a stack, without any extra charges. Zhang Yang set the buying price for the [White-Spotted Flower] at 8.5 gold coins a stack and [Fire Crystal Shard] at 2.5 gold coins a stack.

This time, all 8 major cities had their teleportation circles opened for all. Any player could freely travel to all cities for their liking. With that, Zhang Yang did not have to search for "distributors" to help him sell his "junks" anymore. As long as he could spread his Little Merchandize Shop name to all cities, customer will flock to his shop with no time at all!

By the afternoon, Natalia had bought a number of ingredients. Seeing that, Zhang Yang could not help but sigh heavily. All his available storage was used to store the [Solid Iron Bar], he had no more space to make way for the potion!

With no more space left in his own inventory, Zhang Yang had to use Fatty Han's personal inventory as storage for his potions. Zhang Yang was now a Professional-tier Alchemist, he could make 4 bottles of potion in one instance. In just half an hour, he had used up all the ingredient

Natalia had stockpiled to craft the [Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion]. There were a total of 34 stacks, all of them which he mailed to Fatty Han.

In two days, Zhang Yang had not only filled up Fatty Han's own personal storage, he had also filled up Wei Yan Er's, Endless Starlight's and other friends' as well. He had even persuaded them to open up a few more storage space in their personal warehouses, all to help Zhang Yang to store the potion. Since both Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue was misers to begin with, to ask them to spend their own "hard earned" gold to open up a few more slots of storage crossed a line. Left with no choice, Zhang Yang had to pay them money to do his favor. Luckily, the expansion cost of 4 of their personal storage tabs were not expensive at all. At most, it costed him 1,000 gold coins.

October the 9th, 6pm in the evening.

"BANG BANG BANG!" It was like someone was trying to break down the door.

"Who is it?!" cried Zhang Yang as he peeked through the peephole in the door. He saw Fatty Han standing outside his door while stroking his big tummy. He quickly unlocked the door and greeted his friend. "Damn! I just had my dinner! I have nothing left for you to leech!"

After the Fatso had bought himself a sport car, he had been rather busy for the past few days. He had been coming over to Zhang Yang's to leech drinks and food off him every night.

"Little Yang! You must have forgotten!" Today, Fatty Han was dressed up all fancily. He was wearing a Burberry top and the same brand of long pants. It was a shame though; he was ALMOST a sharp dressed man -- if not for the sight of his bouncing belly which ruined the whole image. Fatty Han shook his head and went up to Zhang Yang ears, shouting, "It's the student's gathering today, yo!"

"ARGH! Crap!" Zhang Yang had completely forgotten about the matter. He had screamed in response to Fatty Han's abrupt reminder.

"Don't "argh" me! You promised to joined me! Let's go! Let's go! We have one hour! Damn! If we get stuck in traffic now, who knows when we

might get there! We might not even be there by the Year of the Monkey!1” Fatty Han’s standard operating procedures: if he obtained wealth this year; complete with a car and some money in his bank, he wanted to gloat in the face of those people who had looked down upon him.

If Zhang Yang had not died, he would have the same thoughts. However, now that he had experience death and rebirth, this kind of childish act was completely out of his thoughts.

Being dragged and yelled at by Fatty Han, Zhang Yang quickly changed into a new shirt. That outfit was for his job interview. Back then, it had cost him 700 dollars!

“Little Yang! You’re a millionaire now! Why would you still wear something that cheap!” said Fatty Han when he saw Zhang Yang’s outfit. “Oh...I understand what you trying to do Little Yang! You’re trying to be a wolf under a sheep skin! Though I must say that it is a little lame for you to do so!”

Zhang Yang frowned heavily. Wrinkles as long as the highway formed on his forehead!

Am I not the one being dragged along by you! Why would I follow your style?

Fatty Han’s sport car was indeed cool and extravagant. When he parked his car in front of the apartment, many youngsters were ogling and pointing at the car, all with the admiration and impressed look on their faces.

Fatty Han was rather happy about being admired at. As he walked to his car, he winked at some female on the side seductively. First, he lead Zhang Yang to the car and forced him in. He then moved to the driver’s seat and got in. Since he was rather large, he did not exactly take his seat immediately. In fact, he had to squeeze inside, finally managing to get into the driver’s seat with much effort.

THUMP!

With a loud thump, his butt landed on the seat, shaking the entire car

and stressing the suspension to its maximum potential. It was no wonder how Fatty Han could be as heavy as a tonne.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. “Hey fatty, did you buy a car insurance for your baby?”

“Of course I did!”

“Thank god! If you crushed this car, which I think is completely possible. At least you won’t be losing everything if you loss the car!”

“F*ck you. I’ve been “crushing” Yun Yun every night and she’s hasn’t broken anything! This car is made of metal², goddamit! If I could crush this car, I would go back to the bastard’s shop and send a wrecking ball through it for selling me cheap goods!”

“Oh right! Why didn’t you bring Yun Yun along?”

“Little Yang, are you being serious right now? If I brought Yun Yun along with me, how am I going to pick up other girls!” sulked Fatty Han as he started the car and drove out of the area.

Zhang Yang raised his eyebrow and asked. “So, you’re not planning to settle down with her?”

Fatty Han scratched his head. “Little Yang, what kind of era do you think you’re living in? I’m out for chicks, it’s not like I’m breakin’ up with Yun Yun! Besides, I’m still single and ready to mingle!”

Zhang Yang broke a cold sweat.

Damn son! You have a girlfriend and you’re out there playing with other women! Am I the one who’s outdated? Or are you the one with issues?!

Zhang Yang could not help but shake his head in denial. “Oh well. Anyhow, it’s your personal life. I’m not going to butt in this. Do what you like!”

As they drove all the way to Sheraton Hotel, they were, as Fatty Han has predicted earlier, got stuck in traffic.

The traffic jam was rather bad. By the time they had arrived to the door steps, the time was already 7:11pm.

Just as the two friends got down the car, they saw a young man crying out from two parking spots away from them.

“Zhang Yang! Han Guang!” the man had just gotten down his normal, everyday car.

Zhang Yang stared at the man for a good second and was surprised when he recognized the man. “Liu Qi Ming!”

“Haha! That’s right! That’s me!”

Thomp!

The man closes the door of his car and walked jubilantly towards them. Laughing, he said, “I never thought that you would be doing so well! Look at you! Driving a Maserati! How much does this one cost? I assume it cost at least 1,000,000 dollars!”

Zhang Yang smiled as he shook his head. “Oh no! The car is Fatty’s. I was just hitching a ride!”

Liu Qi Ming nodded his head. The wonder in his face faded quickly but rekindle when he saw Fatty Han.

“Han Guang! I see that you’ve struck gold now, huh!”

Fatty Han and Zhang Yang were soul brothers. To look down on Zhang Yang was to look down to him! Seeing that Liu Qi Ming had expressed a cold shoulder to Zhang Yang; Fatty Han reciprocate the same expression and only exchange a few word with Liu Qi Ming and called out to Zhang Yang, “Let’s go, Little Yang!”

Even though Liu Qi Ming had received the cold shoulder from Fatty Han, the slight anger was immediately gone when he saw the luxury car that Fatty Han owned.

Author’s Note: this story arc is about Zhang Yang interaction in reality, his thoughts and relationship. That is why it’s long...

1Lunar Calendar-Year of the Monkey is one of the years in the Lunar Calendar. It was not specified on what year they were in at that time.

2Editor’s note - Fatty Han had used a word that literally meant ‘iron’.

This word is used to refer to ‘metals’ in general. Also, since this is Fatty Han we’re talking about, I seriously doubt that he knows what Maseratis are made of. Let’s hope that he doesn’t think it’s really iron.

Chapter 198: Zhou Kang Ming

The three of them walked out of the parking lot and walked into the hotel lobby. There stood 4 beautiful doorwomen wearing tight traditional Chinese Qi Baos, greeting the guests of the hotel. When the three guys walked closer, the girls bowed down in respect and greeted them as well.

“Welcome!”

Fatty Han did a quick up-down on one of the girls and could not help but leak out a perverted smirk. He reached out with his flabby hands and grabbed Zhang Yang by the shoulder, whispering into his ear. “Dude! Check the babe second to the right! Damn, that is one fine piece of arse! I swear to god, I’ll grab those buns!”

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. “Dude. Undo the calamity that is your mammaries¹. Did you accidentally swallow an entire bottle of Viagra before you got here?”

Fatty Han burst out in a loud thunderous laugh and it took sometime before he could catch his breath. “Hah, I could have died laughing! Say, Little Yang. I’ve noticed this for some time now, but...you’ve changed! Like, you’ve turned into someone else! Didn’t you use to love hanging out with me, checking out chicks on the streets? What’s with the pseudo-gentleman get-up?”

Zhang Yang could not help but agree with Fatty Han. During his high school life, he was as Fatty Han described. Hanging out with Fatty Han at the streets, enjoying the view of girls walking by. Staring, judging, picking the girls with bigger boobs, or booties that rivaled Nicki Minaj! They would sometimes even throw out a catcall or two! They had been doing it so often that people in the street called them the little wolves!

However, times has changed. He has changed. His mentality was no longer the young, rebellious brat that had just graduated from university! He had experienced the working adult life, the 5 years of working in the society like every adult did. He had, in fact, died! If he had not changed mentally, that would be weird!

When Liu Qi Ming saw how nonchalant Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were, envy boiled up in him.

In high school, everyone was so busy trying their best to cope with studies. With the spirit of youth in them, none of them would slack for a taste of temporary enjoyment! It was a pity though; during university times, they eyes and ears were opened wide; with sweet luxury cars taking beautiful girls out, a scene that was rather common in that period, changing a young teenager into a man of money. You can't put food on the table with bravery and guts. That's the harsh reality of the world. Money makes the world go round. Without money, you can achieve nothing. No girls...no success...nothing. Don't expect beautiful girls to even look at you, if you don't have the bulge of a thick wallet on the back of your pants.

Liu Qi Ming was the same as Zhang Yang was, a university graduate. He had found a job in a small business and had to depend on his parents to buy him a generic car. Working a dull 9 to 5 job had killed off his joy! When he saw the car that Fatty Han rolled in with, he immediately knew that Fatty Han must be a business owner to be that rich!

Back when he was still in high school, Liu Qi Ming was not a man who would neglect his studies to mingle around with Fatty Han, a fat boy who would only spend his entire day brawling about in the streets. However, desperate times, desperate measures. Liu Qi Ming had thought of a way to help himself. Even if had to defy his own conscience to do so, he thought that he could at least try to pull some strings with Fatty Han. He would try to play the "old-school friends" card.

He thought that Zhang Yang was just the same as him, he thought that he could see through Zhang Yang acts; that he was trying to get to Fatty Han's good side. But obviously, he was no further from the cold truth. Both of them were chatting along, getting into each other's nerves like they were already in good terms. Liu Qi Ming felt a strong disdain, and silently cursed "ass-kisser, boot-licker".

"Say...Han Guang, what have you been doing after high school? How did you get your hands on a Maserati?" said Liu Qi Ming as he tried to slide in

a word with Fatty Han. He could not let Zhang Yang hog all the quality time talking to Fatty Han.

Fatty Han had no intention of bothering the arrogant bastard, but when the snobby prick mentioned his car, he got a little excited. “Oh nothing really. I was just around, you know. Helping other buying and selling some stuff. Casual business. Commission based. What the heck though. That Maserati GT2034 had cost me 3,870,000 dollars! F*cking greedy Americans!”

Zhang Yang had specifically told him not reveal his trades to anyone. That was why Fatty Han had given a vague description like that. Even though he had a body full of fat, he was not pigheaded. He was, not really stupid, he was just really bad with books and all. He immediately sensed Liu Qi Ming trying to get to his good side. Fatty Han laughed mentally at him.

The real god of fortune is standing right next to me! I don't see you bending over, head over heels to him! I'm the fake one! Hah! I'll see how you suffer later!

Zhang Yang laughed at Fatty Han's comment about his car. “Dude. Maserati is from Italy you dumb-f*ck! What's it got to do with Americans?”

“OH!” Fatty Han opened his eyes wide as he jaw was left gaping.

“What the hell! That bloody sly manager! I told him to give me the best sport car! And that sneaky old fox dared to sell me a toy car from Italy!? Oh heeellll no! I ain't gonna stand by this! I'm going back and drive this sh*t crap car into his broken *ass!”

This oblivious Fatty Han was not familiar with any famous brands. He thought that he had cheated by the manager of the auto shop. His heart ached when he realized that he had spent all his savings into buying a cheap car!

On the other side of the coin, when Liu Qi Ming heard what Fatty Hansaid, he could not help but realize just how rich this guy was to throw his money away without a care! What kind of person could just ignore the

brand of the car they are buying and make the purchase without thinking twice? What sort of human would do that!

Zhang Yang laughed. “Damn you, American fan-boy! Do you really think all good things come from America?”

“Is it not then?” said Fatty Han with genuine curiosity.

Zhang Yang smacked Fatty Han’s head. “Of course not! You dumb wit! That shirt you’re wearing! Burberry. That brand is from England! What does it have anything to do with America!?” Zhang Yang sighed. No wonder people say it would take at least 3 generations to culture a noble family. If they were to be like Fatty Han, 10 billion dollars would be wasted in a day!

Fatty Han shamelessly nodded and laughed it off. “Ah well. I don’t care if it was made in America, England, or Zimbabwe! I’m rich! I can buy anything I want!”

Liu Qi Ming knew that Maserati is an Italian car, but he did not dare to be the Nazi. However, he had never thought that Zhang Yang would blatantly point out his mistake and ridicule Fatty Han for it. Instead of being angry or offended, Fatty Han was rather jubilant about it! Filled with regret, he should have just corrected Fatty Han when he had the chance.

“Zhang Yang! Liu Qi Ming! Han Guang!” A loud voice could be heard from the front of them. Not far from where they were standing was a young man that just hit his twenties. Dressed to impress, with glimmering hair line that shone under the light. However, his overall appearance was rather dull and common. Nothing really stuck out in particular. He did not have a handsome, nor unsightly face. It was, at best, the most generic face and body that anyone could see and have.

With a glance, Zhang Yang could easily recognize the owner of the voice. It was Zhou Kang Ming. He was also a student of the same high school as Zhang Yang. Zhou Kang Ming came from a rather mediocre family. A few years back, the government wanted to create road ways that would cut right through their family home. To reimburse them, the government had paid them a generous amount of 10,000,000 dollars as compensation. With that money, his father built a factory that made

picture frames. The business was shockingly high; with annual profit of 2 to 3 million dollars!

This information came from his own mouth when Zhang Yang had attended the student gathering in his previous life. When he had announced his wealth, he was rather proud of it, and had looked at his fellow friends with a rather condescending look when he said that his annual income was close to 2 million dollars.

“Zhou Kang Ming!” Zhang Yang greeted him coldly and let it be that way. He came to the gathering today as a favor of the bastard Fatty. He would not go out of his way, pleasing everyone else.

Zhou Kang Ming smiled with a grandiose posture and said, “It’s just the three of you, Yang Zhi Xuan, and Li Ru. Ok, let’s go, I’ll let Shan Shan give a call to the girls, and let them get a room for themselves when their arrive!”

Just as the name Shan Shan was mentioned, Zhou Kang Ming had eyed Zhang Yang.

This exact scene, was just like Zhang Yang’s previous life.

Zhou Kang Ming had been seeing Zhao Hui Shan, the same girl that Zhang Yang was with in high school. The two of them would have been about to get married in a few months’ time! In high school, Zhao Kang Ming was rather mediocre in every aspect, he was not wealthy nor poor, he had a personality that was rather down-to-earth, following rules obediently to the letter.

He was not a handsome man that could easily pick up girls at will. He was, as previously described, the most generic kind of person you could ever met. The kind of person that would not naturally attract the attention of the opposite gender.

But what kind of guy would not want to get involved with girls? Zhou Kang Ming had feelings for Yang Zhi Xian, Zhao Hui Shan, and Li Ru when they were still in high school. But then, who would have noticed him? Only after his family struck gold, and having coincidentally entered the same university as Zhao Hui Shan, after a few small gifts, he had

successfully captured the heart of the young maiden called Zhao Hui Shan.

Having a beautiful woman by his side now was definitely a joyful event, however, there was still a heavy emotional baggage that Zhou Kang Ming could not let go, like a sharp prick in back of the brain. That was the fact that Zhao Hui Shan have once dated Zhang Yang for a year! He would not have that! What's so good about Zhang Yang back then? Both of his parents were dead, leaving him nothing but dust. He was bad with his studies and was always getting himself into fights! What did Zhao Hui Shan see in this person!?

That was the reason why Zhou Kang Ming retained a certain level of resentment towards Zhang Yang. In his previous life, Zhang Yang was provoked endlessly by Zhao Kang Ming in the same student gathering. In the end, his provocation had gotten to Zhang Yang, which led him to sending a good strong punch directing to his mouth. That one punch had bruised his mouth and sent 3 teeth flying off!

Reminiscing the past, Zhang Yang started to laugh when he saw his mouth.

Want to have another go at it?

This time, Zhang Yang was thinking of breaking all of his teeth!

The four of them came into the elevator and arrived at the fourth floor of the hotel. They entered another large hall. The hall was filled with 8 large tables which was already filled with over 60 people at the age of 20 and so. Some of them were exchanging words, smiling at each other courteously, nodding politely while talking about the past. Some of the people around were alone, while the rest brought along their partners.

As the 4 late comers arrive into the hall, everyone stood up clapping their hands, welcoming them to the occasion.

“Alright guys! It's just Yang Zhi Xian and Li Ru left! Let's eat!” Zhou Kang Ming waved and gestured something with his hands to the service crew, signaling for the crew to start serving the dishes.

“Here! Zhang Yang, please sit here!” Zhou Kang Ming pointed at the center table.

Fatty Han smiled delightfully and said, “Zhang Yang and I must sit together! We’re like salt and pepper!”

Everyone sat down and after a while, a few service crew start coming out from a corner, pushing a cart full of dishes to each table.

“Zhang Yang~~” Just when Zhang Yang sat down, an incredibly beautiful woman smiled proudly, with a hint of patronizing behavior.

“Zhao Hui Shan!” cried Fatty Han and laughed as he replied her. “How many years have passed, I see that you’re only getting prettier by the day! I see that your parents will no longer need to bug you for a relationship huh! Ah! Just right, my brother, Little Yang is still single! You guys talk!”

Zhao Hui Shan changed her expression in a flash. “Han Guang! Please don’t remind me of the past! I was stupid and juvenile at the time! I wouldn’t have known if I was being cheated!”

Fatty Han frowned. “What are you talking about? Back then, I remember that you were the one that followed Zhang Yang like a loyal puppy! What cheat are you talking about?”

Zhao Hui Shan was wavering. Back then, she admired men with strength! During his high school days, Zhang Yang was famous for being the king of fighters. Whenever Zhang Yang was in the middle of a fight, she had always been secretly peeking at the brawl, thus falling for Zhang Yang. However, everything changed when she entered university. Everything was either money or cash. When she saw her classmates taking out their cold hard cash every time they shop, slowly and eventually, her mentality had changed. Seeing other rich people having the ability to buy anything they desire, that behaviors had changed her into becoming a gold-digger!

When Zhou Kang Ming brought his fortune into her life, she felt that he was her fair prince on a white horse. Eventually, she gave into her desires and became his girlfriend. Today, they had fixed the marriage date, a few months from now!

Now that she had recalled back the day she had wasted with Zhang Yang, Zhao Hui Shan cursed at herself in her heart. How was she that blind to actually fall for a poor and useless man! Like striking the lottery, she felt that she had made the right choice. If she had not taken her parent's advice and lived on together with Zhang Yang, she could been one of those poor housewives, strolling along the farmer's market trying her best to think of the cheapest vegetable to buy!

That is why, the worse shape Zhang Yang's life currently was, the happier she would be. At least, she could get proper closure on the matter. Still, it was an incredibly stupid theory.

1 ...Not a translation error.

Chapter 199: A Boring Attack

“Eat up! Eat up!” Zhou Kang Ming tried to raise the atmosphere.

To shame Zhang Yang was an obligatory act, how it must be done moderately. If it were to be too much...

The two of them, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were the two fighting addicts that the even the teacher would not dare to meddle with! Right now Zhou Kang Ming felt that his well-being was much more valuable. It's not worth taking a punch for it!

In the midst of it, the atmosphere of the table had turned cold and awkward. Besides the chomping of food and the clacking sound of chopsticks, no one would bother to speak up at all.

“I say, the most successful ones in our class would be Zhao Kang Ming and Han Guang, is it not?” said Liu Qi Ming out of the blue. Sitting together, Liu Qi Ming decided to start a conversation topic when he sees everyone was only pushing food down their food pipe.

Zhou Kang Ming was successful, everyone knew that. That big mouth had mentioned that his family had started a picture frame factory, and he was the vice-CEO or something, earning at least 1,000,000 a year. He was so proud about it that he had been repeating that for several times.

This meal, this student gathering, was all funded by Zhao Kang Ming. That was why he was treating this place as if it was his own house.

To think that the dumb fatty who barely graduated was this successful, it was an insult to the 3 to 4 years of studying in a university!

Everyone started at Liu Qi Ming with much curiosity.

Liu Qi Ming smirked. “Try guessing what kind of car did Han Guang drive today?” He presumed that Fatty Han would love to take a compliment. That was why he had decided to go all out with it.

“What car?”

“What kind of car?”

“Brand?”

Everyone was startled by Liu Qi Ming’s question and started to follow up with more questions.

“It was a Maserati GT2034!” said Liu Qi Ming word by word to build up a suspense.

“Get out of here! That car costs more than 3,000,000!”

“Fatty! Wow! Good for you! You must be rich!”

“Han Guang! Your father must be some company’s president!”

Everyone started to get all chirpy about Fatty Han. Some were guessing his source of income, while the others were guessing about Fatty Han’s family business.

Being at the center of attention, Fatty Han was happy. He gestured his hands by waving them in the air. “Ah...please guys. It’s just nothing. I’m even planning to purchase another villa in the next few days. It shouldn’t be that expensive. Around 10 million should do!”

This pig sure knew how to brag!

Zhang Yang held in his laughter and gulped some beer to hide the expression on his face. He was interested to see what followed next, he did no intend to ruin Fatty Han’s “performance”.

But what he did not know was that the car alone, worth more than 3 million already blew everyone’s mind. There were many students here with a rather luxurious families backing them, that they could easily buy a house or a car after they graduated. But to buy a 3-million-dollar sport car and a 10-million-dollar villa was completely out of this world!

Zhou Kang Ming heard what Fatty Han said, even him, an man of his statue, got agitated when he heard Fatty Han blab. His own family’s fortune was not as vast as Fatty Han, with an annual income of one million, and a 10,000 dollar monthly “pocket money” from his father. If he wanted to buy the same car, he would need to wait until his old man died and passed all the family inheritance to him.

Zhou Kang Ming felt bitter. How could he spend a large amount of money to organize a grand gathering in a luxurious hotel, just to let someone else take the spotlight!

Just then, a service crew walked in and served a plate of European lobster. He quickly cried, "Alright! Alright! Settle down guys! Here! Please taste this dish! It's lobster! Sheraton's most famous lobster dish! The lobster they used was from Europe! It's authentic and awesome! Though it's only around one pound and a half portion...Please taste the tenders meat!"

Zhao Hui Shan echoed, "Yeah! I heard it's really good! Please, help yourself!"

The dish was so rare that not anyone could eat this kind of cuisine in their lifetimes. Everyone grabbed their chopsticks and helped themselves to the lobster.

When Zhou Kang Ming saw everyone attacking the lobster with relish, silently, he felt that he was patronizing these "caveman".

"Is it really that good? I mean...*munch munch* It's tender, just like Kentucky!" It had to be from the mouth of an inelegant man. Fatty Han had spent more than 3 million on a car that he had no idea in what country it was made! How could you argue with a man like that, about the difference between a lobster and a chicken drumstick?

Everyone choked. Some had even coughed out the food in their mouth. Others were glad that they had already swallowed, or else they might actually choke on the food! Zhou Kang Ming was just a little more from spitting blood all over the table. This was the highest grade of lobster! From Europe too! One lobster of this grade would easily cost more than 700 dollars! How could this pig compare it to a regular fast-food joint!

Liu Qi Ming steeled his heart to continued gain Fatty Han's good side. He quickly said, "Ahh! Hahaha, you must have eaten a whole lot of luxurious food now have you! This lobster must be one of those dishes you have every day! Fatty bro here must be having more than this, perhaps abalone or even bird nest! It's the same as we us eating fast food daily!"

Everyone quickly understood what he said and nodded. Owning a 3 million dollar car was enough to gain the respect from all. So no matter what Fatty Han blabbered, the audience would gladly listen. Everyone thought that Fatty Han was just putting up an act. It was worth putting up an act for him too.

That thoughtless utterance had completely been misinterpreted by everyone. Now that it had come to this, everyone was left with a stronger impression that Fatty Han was really a rich man!

Zhou Kang Ming was even madder. This meal had cost him tens of thousands, but for what?! It was for him to gloat in front of all his ex-classmates. But now that he had bought them the meal, the real spotlight befell on Fatty Han! This event had left Zhou Kang Ming confused and angry.

“Oh right! Zhang Yang! So, what did you do after you graduated?” Zhou Kang Ming had decided to divert the attention. He must change the target. He shall divert the conversation towards Zhang Yang and follow his plan to humiliate this ex-lover of his girlfriend.

Zhang Yang was munching on the lobster and looked up when Zhou Kang Ming had mention his name. He quickly swallow the food in his mouth and smiled lightly. “I’m a professional gamer.”

“Professional gamer?” One by one, the people around the table asked the same question. “Is that some sort of a career where you sell some in-game currency for the online game?”

That was called a gold-farmer. They made money via endurance, not skills. To earn a living as a gold-farmer was easy as they took up several days and nights, killing monsters endlessly and collecting the gold coins! A true professional gamer required genuine skills. Just like the Korean Starcraft league from a few years back. This career required actual skills to survive!

However, Zhang Yang did not bother correcting him. He simply nodded and replied, “Close enough!”

“Ahhh. My colleague’s younger brother was a professional gamer as

well!” Someone started to talk. “I heard that he could earn around 1 to 2 thousand dollars by selling the gold he collected for the month!”

“1 to 2 thousand? That’s rather good, I must say. When I first entered the company, I only had 2,000 as my basic salary! Now, I’m entering the third month now, with 3,000 salary!”

Everyone started to discuss about the topic, however, it was implicit in their conversation, it felt as if they were demeaning Zhang Yang. What could he do? Professional gamer? These two words sounds like an unauthentic career.

Fatty Han was mentally laughing.

Look at you guys go! Did you know that Little Yang’s in-game shop is earning more than 200,000 to 300,000 dollars daily? He earns more than what you could earn in a year! Looking down at him? Please, you guys are just frogs in the well.

Zhao Hui Shan was rather jubilant about this. She was truly glad that she had made the right choice. She smirked and said, “What a drag! Working like a cow for a whole month just for 1 to 2 thousand dollars! Kang Ming dear, we have already spent close to one thousand dollar for our little Bei Bei!”

The moment she had said that name, everyone was baffled. One of the shouted, “Zhao Kang Ming! When did you marry the class queen! You even have a baby now?!”

Zhou Kang Ming laughed awkwardly and said, “Bei Bei is the pet dog I have back at home. It’s a pure bred German Shepard! I bought it two years ago. It costed around 700,000 dollars² with actual pedigree!”

With that, everyone now knew that Zhao Hui Shan was intentionally trying to belittle Zhang Yang! It was rather common knowledge that both Zhang Yang and Zhao Hui Shan were seeing each other back then, but they could never expect that she would lose her sense and turn around 180 degrees, treating Zhang Yang like a piece of garbage!

“By the way you speak with each other...I assume you’re going to marry

soon?”

Zhou Kang Ming laughed and purposely glance and Zhang Yang. “Yeah. We had just fixed the marriage date at 1st of May! Please! Come and join us!”

Swoosh!

The speed at which the people around the table turn their neck to look at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was drinking a pint of beer and put the glass down. “Well then, I believe congratulation is in order!”

At his current state of “height”, looking down at the ugly performance of Zhao Kang Ming, he could not bring himself to be angry! He could not help it! Have you seen an ant trying to dance around to impress an elephant? And would the elephant be impressed by it? NO! Because either side was on a whole other level!

However, Zhang Yang action had led everyone to believe that he was drinking to release his frustration. How could they not!? When a first love was being married to someone else, and the groom was not you! How much pain could the heart contain before it implodes!

Those with a heart of sympathy was rather a plenty around the table, many of which had raised their glass for Zhang Yang.

Zhou Kang Ming saw the “drunk” look on Zhang Yang face and was rather satisfied with his accomplishment. Yet, he still wanted to throw more wood into a burning forest, trying to incite the anger in Zhang Yang. “Hey, Zhang Yang! It seems that you came here alone today. I assume that you did not have any person you’re seeing! How about this? I’ll asked Shan Shan here to introduce a few girls for you! Well, I can’t guarantee that the girls would be as pretty as Shan Shan herself! Hahaha...ha...ha...”

He thought that he had said something funny and started to laugh on his own. But when his laughter was not accompanied with anyone else, he stopped and went silent.

Tok Tok Tok!

A soft knock echoed through the hall that came from the main door. A service crew quickly headed over and opened the door. A mature, beautiful young lady walked in. Her long hair brushed against the wind as she walked through the door. A piece of short dress was plastered tightly against her pale marble-like skin. The chest was designed in a deep V cutting that completely exposed one third of her voluptuous breasts. By the looks of it, the dress was not meant to be worn over a bra. Paired with her slender waist, her soft and well-filled butt cheeks were clearly held back by the dress. Each step crossed over the other leg; as she catwalked down the hall, sending waves and waves of pure hot passion!

The skirt was so short that it barely touched her knees. Whatever that was lower down was covered in two long black colored leggings that was so thin, you could mistakenly assume she was not wearing any! Her legs were obnoxiously long and slender, and the short skirt and the high heels only added to their radiance!

A pair of sunglasses adorned her nose. With a small handbag hanging on her left arm, she looked like a super model from the western fashion company!

The moment she walked into the hall, every young man had their carnal instinct triggered to its maximum! Everyone was questioning themselves the identity of the woman!

The woman smirked and curled her lips in. She pulled down her sunglasses a little and said, "You guys sure are full of yourselves huh! How could you start without me!"

"L-L-Li Ru!?" Those who recognize this sexy woman immediately screamed in shock.

Li Run turned in a circle on her spot and giggled playfully. "What's wrong guys? You can't recognize me?"

Fatty Han screamed out. "I said before that women are genius shape-shifters, and I'll say it again! Especially pretty chicks! Every time they change into a new look, they would only be sexier and sexier!"

Every other guy nodded their head like a student listening to a professor

in a classroom. Li Ru was the same as everyone else. She was at the same age and studied together in the same class as the rest. Li Ru had been the class queen, and the school idol! But, back then, her figure was still maturing, she was not as alluring, nor as bewitching as she was now! Those perky breasts, that jiggle in her booty, those assets reminded how those boys were still boys. She was the kind of perfect dish that people would crave in an instant!

Every other lady was sulking bitterly. How could they not?

A beautiful peacock has just entered the hall! That entrance alone was enough to send all them doubting their own complexion. How could they be happy about it!? Especially when their own partners were drooling over her face, chest, and ass!

1Bird Nest – To be more accurate, swallow's nest. The Chinese believe that ingesting swallow's nest gave strong health benefits. It's usually costly.

2700,000 dollars – I have no clue what kind of German Shepard that would cost 700,000 dollars. However, do note that the currency they are using is assumed to be China's RMB. After conversion to USD, it would be around 100,000. USD 100,000 for pure-bred German Shepards that came with their own certificates of authenticity.

Chapter 200: Class Idol

Of all the ladies present, Zhao Hui Shan was most bitter!

Before Li Ru had made her appearance, Zhao Hui Shan was the most beautiful lady around! Every gesture, every move she made would attract the silent stares of men. But, the moment Li Ru stepped in, every single eyeball in the room had swiveled around to lock onto her body! That alone infuriated the narcissistic beauty, Zhao Hui Shan. How could she allow this to continue any longer!?

Li Ru smirked again. She slid her sunglasses off and nipped the edge of it with her lips, ever so sexily. She slowly turned around, giving the men several more angles to gaze upon her beauty as she scanned the room, her long eyes lashes fluttering. As soon as she spotted Zhang Yang, her eyes widened. She kicked off the floor with her high heels and headed towards him.

“Hey. Wang Hai, let me have this seat,” said Li Ru to the person sitting next to Zhang Yang. As if she was wearing a concoction of Aphrodite herself, the man, coerced by the sweet scent emitting from behind him lost all sense of mind and complied obediently. Driven by instincts alone he stood up and stepped aside, his eyes wandering. As she pulled the chair back and sat on it, as his body moved by itself, the man called Wang Hai realized just then that he had given up his seat. Shaking off his stupor, he walked around the large dining table to find himself another empty seat.

Li Ru got comfortable in her seat and waved at the service crew at the corner of the hall. She ordered them to bring her a new set of utensil and cutlery.

She smiled at everyone. “Ah, it’s been such a long time guys! I missed you guys so much!”

Fatty Han laughed, “Li Ru! Why the hell are you sitting next to my man Little Yang!”

Li Ru was twirling her silky long hair over her fair, jade-like skin. “Since when, was Zhang Yang your man?! I’d known that both of you were rather

close, but I don't think that you guys were into each other like that!"

What was that!? Fatty Han may be known, for better or for worse, for his knack of blabbing out other-worldly nonsense. Even so, this woman was completely out of his league! Fatty Han was dumbstruck for a moment. Being the Fatty Han that Zhang Yang knew, he would always get back up, more determined than ever, and this was no exception. Fatty Han finally said, after a noticeable pause, "Yo! Little Yang, mah bro here is my brother from another mother! Listen, woman, we're so close that we're practically wearing the same pants! As long as you're not getting close to the point of going twenty toes with him, he is still my man!"

Even though his words were specifically directed to Li Ru, everyone else had been listening as well. Li Ru was the only one laughing uncontrollably. She was practically shaking all over. Her tightly packed goods were trembling vigorously, like a water balloons in an earthquake. Everyone was fixated on her assets, worried that they would sudden pop out of that deep V dress! Well, it wasn't like the men would have anything to complain about if that actually happened.

That slow-motion waves of tremors...was enough to send 9 out of 10 men down to the abyss, pitching their tents!

After laughing for a good minute, Li Ru calmed down and curled her lips. "Did you really think that you could wear Zhang Yang's pants with that body of yours? You could, if you go commando all the way!"

Everyone laughed at her joke. Such an enticing creature, a marvelous being, unfazed by indecent jokes, how could men resist such temptation. Naturally they would respond to please, their minds running wild with images of fantasy!

At that moment, all of the men in Zhang Yang's table had been completely charmed by Li Ru. In fact, men from the other table were already coming over to his side. Most of them were just trying to get close to her, bumping their glasses with her's to cheers.

Zhao Hui Shan was still sulking over the matter. The crown that was supposed to be hers had been instantly snatched away by Li Ru! That

beautiful lady was being ogled at like a super star! Men fell for her, women envied her.

To put it on the score board, Zhao Hui Shan was at the same level in terms of looks. However, she was somehow lacking in attractive force. Furthermore, she was inferior to her when it came to everything below the neck. It was only natural that Zhao Hui Shan would lose to Li Ru! It was no news that Li Ru had been the famous girl with big boobs in high school. That devilish, vulgar body of hers was so attractive that she even managed to capture the hearts of male teachers! They had to use their briefcases to cover their groins!

Thinking about the past, Zhao Hui Shan got even angrier. However, the final straw was that her own partner, her boyfriend, Zhou Kang Ming would not stop peeking at Li Ru's peaks! What else could she feel then? The regret of not drinking papaya milk and massaging her breasts since she was younger?

"Li Ru, how have you been these few years?" asked Zhao Hui Shan. She decided to have a showdown with Li Ru after being knocked off the stage.

Li Ru suddenly expressed a distant look; grief and sadness filled her eyes for only an instant, it faded off swiftly, but some of it remained on her face. "I did fine! My husband died and left me with a large fortune! Well, at least I don't need to worry about money for the rest of my life!"

Everyone was curious. One of the men asked. "You were married? When did that happen?"

"In university, I was a fashion model. There was this one time when we were filming for a TV program when a rich, old horny man caught sight of me. He said that he liked me and wanted to marry me. He even offered me luxury gifts like a car and a villa!"

Li Ru was playing with the teaspoon in her hand, twisting and flipping it on the table.

"I am a woman who enjoys the glamorous life of the rich. So, I took him in. I dropped out and married the man!" said Li Ru. She smiled and rested her chin on her palm. "He was just aiming for my body. I was aiming for

his pot of gold. There was no real chemistry there. Just mutual interest. After we got married for a while, he had a heart attack and died off, leaving my family a huge, profitable company. I think it was worth at least 10 million or so. At least, I have it in for me! My life is secure till I die!"

The other ladies in the room who were listening to her story gasped in horror. Disgust filled their faces. Some were throwing inaudible insults like gold-digger, b*tch, sly fox, sly snake, and whatever else they could connect to the word 'sly'.

In the current era, people would look down on the poor but would never look down on those with beauty, what she had right now was wealth along with a beautiful face and a sexy body! She had it all in one nice package! What man would not want to have her! Obtaining her hand in marriage would be the same as obtaining the world!

Every man in the room was burning with desire to have her for their own.

"Zhang Yang! A toast for you!" Li Ru picked up her glass out of the blue, turning to Zhang Yang.

He was stunned.

Li Ru had not been present in his previous life. His only had fuzzy memories of her name being mentioned during his high school days. If she had not appeared here, he would have completely forgotten about her!

He had no idea on how things had turned out this way. However, now that it has come to this, no matter how they diverge from the timeline that he knew, he will just play along and go with the flow.

Zhang Yang went along with the flow and raised his own glass to clink into hers. When the cold transparent glasses made contact, he could feel Li Ru fingers caressing his. At first, he thought that it was merely accidental. However, he saw the seductive curve of her lips, along with a playful lick of her tongue. He immediately got an idea of her thoughts.

Witnessing how Li Ru was trying to seduce Zhang Yang, other men gulped. They did not understand what and how this was happening.

Zhang Yang was just a regular guy, with a regular face. In fact, he was bad at his studies, often getting involved in street fights. Right now, in his youth and in good health, he had not found himself a proper job. Well, a professional gamer was not considered to be a legit job. For god sake, which online game could last for more than 3 to 5 years? How could he rely on the game to survive? It would never be able to put food on the table and a roof on his head.

While everything was thinking about the same thing, Zhou Kang Ming was growing redder in color. Tonight, he wanted to strike down his enemy, to publicly shame Zhang Yang! He would never have anticipated that he would end up drooling himself! How could a jewel like Li Ru be interested in a monkey like Zhang Yang!? Now, who was the one rubbing salt on whose wounds!?

He quickly tried to divert the attention. "Li Ru, did you know, Zhang Yang is now a professional gamer!"

"Oh!" Li Ru eyes widened with curiosity. "Please tell me! Zhang Yang, what game are you playing now?"

"Oh...'God's Miracle'" replied Zhang Yang casually.

"Ah! I'm playing that too!" said Li Ru as she dragged her chair closer. That sudden jerk sent another vulgar tremble across her peaks, sending them jiggling about in the confined space of her dress. "What is your IGN? Please send me a friend request!"

"Li Ru! I'm playing 'God's Miracle' as well! I'm based in Violet Star City! I'm in the famous Imperial Sky! We were the second guild in the world to clear the Castle Interior Hardcore Mode!" One for man came by suddenly and interrupted. He was another ex-classmate, Feng Guang Bao. Zhang Yang remained silent and pretended to be distract by Feng Guang Bao. He wanted to play dumb to hide his true identity.

Li Ru scoffed. "Imperial Sky? Please...that useless guild could not even get their hands on any First Clear Achievements! Can they compete with Lone Desert Smoke? Besides...the name Imperial Sky sounds weird. It's so...western!"

Everyone laughed. One of them cried out, “Not bad. There are many of us here playing ‘God’s Miracle!’. I’m in Emerald City! Level 43, anyone else?”

Feng Guang Bao was clearly bothered by Li Ru’s comment. “I know what we cannot be compare with Lone Desert Smoke, but at least Imperial Sky is still the world number 2!”

Fatty Han had a bad impression on Imperial Sky. He opened his mouth to comment. “You claim to be the second in a single dungeon. With that in hand, you claim that you’re the world’s second best guild? Are you flattering yourself?”

“Han Guang! Which guild are you in then?!” Feng Guang Bao snorted.

“Oh it’s quite widely known, everyone knows the name. Just like you said, the best guild in the world, Lone Desert Smoke.” Fatty Han held his nose up high, posing a proud look.

“Is that true?!” said Li Ru as she widened her pearly eyes and edged forward. “I’ve always wanted to join Lone Desert Smoke, but their entry requirements are just too strict! Hey! Fatty! Do you know anyone else inside the guild? Take me! Take me!”

Take her? Many of the men listening to their conversation had taken those words in an entirely different context. Fatty Han threw a quick glance at Zhang Yang and said slowly. “Erhm...this...is rather...I mean. There are rules...and regulation...”

“Fatty~~~~” Li Ru squealed suddenly. Fatty Han was rather shocked by it to the point that he forgotten what he was about to say.

“Actually, if you want to join the guild, you’d best talk to Zhang Yang. He was the one who introduced me into the guild! No biggie. He is one of the higher ranked guild officers!” said Fatty Han. He was obviously out of tricks to fend of this b*tch and had passed the baton to Zhang Yang.

Li Ru quickly turned her head to face Zhang Yang. Her hair flew out glamorously and brushed over her cheek. She smiled sweetly and said, “Come on, old friend. You would help me out, right?”

Furious with Fatty Han for talking too much, he pointedly turned away and explained to Li Ru. "He was right. There are rules and regulations to follow..."

"I'm going to stop you right there!" said Li Ru as he held her hand out. "Please don't bring that attitude to me."

"What attitude...?"

Li Ru made an impression of a sales girl.

"Oh. I'm sorry sir. We cannot allow you to smoke in here."

"Huh!?"

"You know. Uptight, rigid, black and white, stick-up-your-ass kind of behavior. That's you! Don't do that."

"Oh."

Zhang Yang returned to his beer. He did not want to carry the conversation any further.

Li Ru jerked her chair yet again and got even closer to Zhang Yang, whispering into his ear. "If it's come to that, I'll let you bend the rules a little!"

From Zhang Yang's point of view, he could clearly see the deep, forbidden regions of a woman's cleavage. That deep, dark canyon between her two humongous melons. When she leaned in, the scent of her perfume was so strong and sweet that it filled him with a strong carnal desire to grab hold and claim the woman. However, Zhang Yang was not someone with a weak will. He nodded and looked up to meet her eyes instead.

"I cannot allow you to bend the rules. Just give me your IGN and I'll have the other officers process your application to the guild. Whether they accept or reject you, would be out of my hands. My authority is limited."

Fatty Han bit his lips. He thought that this man was good in putting up an act; he was determined to aspire for that kind of behavior.

Li Ru giggled and remained close to Zhang Yang's ear. "Zhang Yang, you

must know that I was in love with you ever since high school! Everyone in class were as soft as teddy bears, but you...you were like a lion. A man above all men! I'll let you in on a little secret. Whenever that old, wrinkled husband of mine was in bed with me, I had always imagined that it was you, inserting your huge and thick p*n*s inside me! Only then, I would not feel disgusted about that dead man!"

The smell of her perfume lingered around him. Zhang Yang had a sudden thought, and it was a rather sympathetic one. "For money, you married a man that you didn't love. Was it all worth it?"

Li Ru laughed this time, yet her laughter was fake and hollow. "How many women truly marry the men they love? Didn't you notice? There are many women out there who would rather be mistresses to married men? At least I had it better. I was married officially to him. Compared to the other mistress or secret lovers, I had it better!"

Zhang Yang was rendered speechless. Reality was like a butcher's knife, hacking away at people's dreams and visions. Society was like a huge pot of water; ever so polluted with what was once pure romance and love. Everyone had the power to choose. Whether it was right or wrong, good or evil, all depended on the person's own situation.

"Here, to our wonderful futures! Cheers!" said Zhou Kang Ming as he lifted his glass high. Zhou Kang Ming had seen how close Li Ru was to Zhang Yang. He was burning in a rage, fueled by a source he could not determine himself. Even though it was none of his business, really, his heart was a torrent of unstable emotions. He immediately took action to stop them from getting along further, trying to reclaim the spotlight.

Everyone knew that Zhou Kang Ming was the person who organized this gathering, and also the person who would be paying the bills in the end. So, in obligatory respect, everyone stood up and lifted their glass. "For a wonderful future!"

"Cheers!"

"Cheers!"

When everyone had a little more alcohol in them, the atmosphere got a

little livelier. Many of the men in the hall know clearly, that they had no chances of tackling someone out of their leagues like Li Ru. They resorted to try their luck on the person they had a liking to back when they still in high school. Perhaps luck might give them a chance. They might be able to take off to the hotel and rent a room to snuggle around later!

After the rather exaggerated show of an applause, Zhang Yang sat down. Just then, he felt a light rubbing sensation on his shin. He began looking around and quickly realized that he did no need to do so. Only Li Ru who could do something like that. He turned to face her, only to see the charming little minx biting her lower lip, completely dyed in a deep, rose red color that expressed a burning passion. Her seductive eyes looked as if they were craving for lust.

Zhang Yang remained stoic and silent. He pulled back his legs and tucked them beneath his seat. However, just when he was about to get comfortable, he felt another light touch. Not much sooner after that, he definitely felt something on his thighs now, dangerously close to...danger.

Zhang Yang turned to Li Ru again. This time, her eyes were lowered, but her intentions were clear nevertheless. They were burning with desire. Her cheeks were flushed in a pinkish hue that could instantly double the rate of any man's heart beat. Everything she did, and gazed at, made her look even more seductive.

What the hell is going on?!

Zhang Yang came here was only because he had been forcibly dragged along by Fatty Han. Yet, here he is, being seduced? If he was placed in the same situation in his previous life, he would surely fail to resist this exquisite creature! However, after all that he had been through, it was as if Zhang Yang had activated an unlimited amount of [shield wall].

You can try all you want...but you'll never be able to seduce me in this massive crowd!

Tok. Tok. Tok.

The door of the hall was knocked on again. The service crew hurried up to the door and opened it.

Foosh!

A gorgeous lady with her eyes covered by a pair sunglasses walked in. Her long silky hair flowed back and forth as she walked into the hall.

A light-yellow dress adorned her slender body. The dress was rather well-made, with excellent workmanship and high-quality fabric. Anyone with a keen eye could easily recognize the dress was Chanel's most popular dress this summer. The little hand bag that was slung over her forearm was also a Chanel. The perfume that she wore on her today was also Chanel's. The bracelet was yet another Chanel...this lady must be a crazy fan of Chanel. That, or Chanel had a crazy sale and she was just there coincidentally.

Unlike Li Ru's mature style, this young woman had a distinctively different style. Her curves were rather substantial; however, she could not be described as having a devilish body. However, she had her own special features. Her legs. Her long, pearl-like legs were so slender. If she had stood in a corner, she would look like a mannequin in a fashion shop.

Complexion-wise, she possessed a certain degree of beauty that rivaled Li Ru and Zhao Hui Shan! Her cold, frost-like composure gave her a sense of nobility; that people could only look up to.

Another unexpected person appeared!

Yang Zhi Xian. She was the most beautiful girl in the first class, which made her the most beautiful girl in the entire school. She was beautiful indeed; no one doubted that. That and, she was rather exceptional in her studies. A full package, people said. Zhang Yang vaguely remembered her but, one thing was for certain; neither of them were supposed to be in the student gathering.

Among the things that had happened, it was as if there was a huge hand in the cosmos, silent and undetected, changing the world as it is.

"Yang Zhi Xian?!" Li Ru was the first to greet her. "Here! Here! Here! Sit with me!" she shrieked.

Chanel girl Yang Zhi Xian saw Li Ru calling out to her and smiled

proudly. She lowered her sunglasses a little and walked gracefully towards Zhang Yang's table. With extreme elegance and grace, she sat in the last available seat at Zhang Yang's table.

She carefully took out a napkin and ran it over the chopsticks and spoon. Only after the deed was done did she sit properly and get comfortable. The graceful, lady-like manner had left everyone slightly uncomfortable.

Fatty Han loved beautiful women, but he could not get used to her level of mannerism. He laughed awkwardly and said, "I'd say, miss Yang, if you took off your pants and fart, wouldn't it be too redundant? I think you're sugarcoating your actions a little too much. This hotel is 5-star, 3-star by your standards at least, they would never serve unwashed cutlery for a customer to use, no?"

Yang Zhi Xian lifted her head and stared at Fatty Han. Her eye brow twitched a little, as if she was clearly offended by his crude language.

Li Ru interjected, "Fatty, would could you say something like that in front of a fair lady?!"

"Sorry, lady. I mean, Lady Yang..." Fatty Han laughed awkwardly again. Who knew that kind of context he really meant when he used the term "lady".

Chapter 201: Yang Zhi Xian

Yang Zhi Xian only deepened her frown and expressed her disgust. However, she remained quiet. Her silence towards Fatty Han sent the message that she would never lower herself to talk to a person of his stature.

Li Ru giggled. “Yang Zhi Xian. I’ve not seen you in 4 years. Your temper seems to be much better now!”

“Please.” Yang Zhi Xuan only replied with a single word.

What an arrogant and prideful lady!

Looking at the lady, fully clad in branded clothing, she looked like she came from a wealthy background. No one dared to put up a face publicly and kept their judgment by themselves. They went back to the dishes and let things run its course. The world won’t stop turning just for one person. It’s best not to think too egoistically!

Zhang Yang only smiled knowingly. Even though Yang Zhi Xian tried her best to play the role as the cool and noble beauty, he saw right through her immediately. This was not her true nature, but a persona, carefully crafted to express her apparent status.

To put it bluntly, it’s an expression derived from psychological motivations. When one encounters a true lady, the person would consciously try to imitate the behavior as she would deem it superior and exemplary. Yet, if she could not behave like the original, she’ll end up... weird and strange. Something would be off. She would fail to portray the true noble-like behavior, turning out egotistical, rude, and stand-offish.

A good example would be Sun Xin Yu. That was what a real, cool, ice queen should look and behave like. She does what she thinks, and whenever she encounters anything that does not sit right with her, she would immediately take action. She would do it without fail as it’s her true nature!

People true to themselves would not need to put up any pretenses. It

would naturally be expressed out.

After a short period of silence, the noise returned and the atmosphere in the hall returned to its liveliness.

At the table, Yang Zhi Xian was always clicking her tongue with a cold, patronizing grimace. As she turned to the left, a “tsk” could be heard. As she turned to her right, another “tsk” came again. She was disgruntled, dissatisfied with something, apparently, and she made a huge show out of it.

At one point, Fatty Han could take it no more. Just when he was eating happily, he would raise his head to see a blackened, disgusted face! How could he even eat in peace! He laughed awkwardly again and said, “Yang Zhi Xian. So, where are you working?”

If it was Sun Xin Yu, she would not even be bothered to look at you, much less answer your question! You could reel in the moon and blacken the sun, but she would still ignore your entire existence. On the other hand, this lady, who loved to put up airs, pretended to stall a little but eventually replied to Fatty Han in a rather happy tone. “It’s nothing. I’m working as a deputy chief in the Industry and Commerce Bureau in Chang Lang province.”

“Is that real!?” Wang Hai was the first to be startled. His face was filled with excitement and shock. “You just graduated recently and was able to work in the government as a chief!? Oh my lord, that’s Industry and Commerce Bureau we’re talking about. The most lucrative department!”

Zhao Hui Shan looked like she was forming an alliance with Fatty Han. Among the 3 Queens, despite Li Ru being the wealthy widow due to her million-dollar inheritance, Yang Zhi Xian seemed to be in an even better position!

No matter how much money Li Ru had, everyone knew that she had obtained that money by selling her own body for it. With the tag “lonely widow” on her head, everyone else would want to have her as their own. She was no threat to Zhao Hui Shan!

But Yang Zhi Xian was different. Back in high school, she was called the

genius girl and the beauty queen! And, right now, she bore the aura of nobility with a rather good position in society. In an instant, she had managed to place a huge gap between them. Others could only gaze up to her as if she was higher than anyone of them.

The meal, the gathering they were having right then was all because of her and Zhou Kang Ming! But when people like Fatty Han, Li Ru, Yang Zhi Xian had appeared and grabbed the spotlight, Zhao Hui Shan had been left wordless.

She laughed lightly and said, "I heard that to climb ladders in the department is easy as unbuckling one's pants. The leader would surely obliged!"

What a poisonous utterance!

Zhang Yang truly believed that if Sun Xin Yu was here and heard what Zhao Hui Shan had just said, the latter's face would have a reddish hand print on her cheek. However, after listening, Yang Zhi Xian only smiled and replied evenly. "My father is the Head of Magistrate of the Cang Lang province."

Head of Magistrate! That is a Provincial officer leader! It's the same as local governor.

No wonder! Hah! No wonder! Everyone exchanged a look in understanding. They turned back to Yang Zhi Xian, and looked at her with a sense of respect. A citizen cannot compete with an Official, that was the beliefs of the people of China since the ancient times!

Zhang Yang returned to gaze at her seemingly nonchalant, casual expression. He could easily observe and detect, she was actually expressing a hint of pleasure. From the slow beginning, to when she revealed the information about her father, Yang Zhi Xian wanted to experience the shock of the crowd!

And she had pulled it off successfully!

Back to when he was in high school, Yang Zhi Xian was the one who Zhang Yang admired the most. He really loved her conduct and elegance.

However, as how things were now, he would not even think of marrying this woman. Even if he wanted to get back to her, he would completely start over again, he would only do it for the fun of it. Once a relationship with her carries on for a longer period of time, no one could possibly endure her snobbish attitude.

To qualify as a true beauty, a beautiful face alone is not enough to pass the bar. Without a sense of independence, a beauty would be no different from a pretty picture. Back in ancient china, a so-called classic beauty would need to be good with the ancient Chinese music instrument, Gu Qin, Chinese Chess, books, drawing, calligraphy and more!

Zhao Hui Shan was bitter. But just as she was about to sulk even more, she had a sudden realization. Among the three-beauty queens, she was the least successful one. One had a million-dollar inheritance. The other was the daughter of a Head of Magistrate! As for her, her family background was rather normal. Even though she managed to get herself a rich husband, how could she compare herself with the other two?

Because of that, Zhao Hui Shan had failed in her intention to further shame Zhang Yang. She lowered her head in silence and ate the meal in front of her, licking her own wounds quietly.

The entire hall was still rather lively. Many of them were still drinking and chatting happily. Slowly, they spent close to two hours in the dining hall before one by one, they started to leave.

Zhou Kang Ming eyes was filled with lust and depravity, glancing with every chance, at Li Ru's magnificent chest and called out. "Guys! Everyone! Since it's such a rare occasion for all of us to gather together, shall we continue the party? How about a trip to the KTV Karaoke center?!"

"Oh! Sounds good!"

"Nah, we can't make it. We left our baby back at home and got to go back soon!"

"I'll go! I'll go!"

"GRAH! What a shame! I've work tomorrow!"

A part of the crowd could join, while the others had to leave the party. After a headcount, there were about 40 people that had to go back to take care of their children, others had to work tomorrow and rest early. In the end, only 12 remained.

Zhang Yang wanted to leave but he was dragged along again, by Fatty Han. Fatty Han had successfully hooked up with a former member of the Disciplinary Committee. Because of that, he wanted Zhang Yang to tag along and have a good time at the karaoke center.

When they leave the building, Zhang Yang whispered to Fatty Han. "You fat f*ck! Didn't you once hate Wu Hai Li?"

Wu Hai Li was the Disciplinary Committee of the class they were in back then. Whenever Zhang Yang and Fatty Han got into trouble, Wu Hai Li was almost always responsible because of her whistle-blowing tendencies. That got them to write dozen of books worth of punishment writing. Back then, wherever Fatty Han heard the name Wu Hai Li, he would grit his teeth so hard and he could grind them into bits.

Fatty Han laughed. "That's because we deserved it back then. Right now, I'm going to drill her, like really drill her, as payback for what she did to us!"

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes. Fatty Han was truly beyond saving.

Back at the parking lot, Fatty Han gallantly dragged Wu Hai Li by the hand to ride along in his car. He turned around and told Zhang Yang, "Bro, this car has no more space for you now! How about you join that Li Ru chick?"

He flabby hands pointed at the smiling Li Ru.

"Zhang Yang! Join me! Let's ride!" Li Ru waved at Zhang Yang.

Now that it has come to this, Zhang Yang had no choice but to sit in Li Ru's Ferrari.

Right then, everyone could easily distinguish those who had a fortune and those who did not. Fatty Han has his Maserati, Li Ru had her Ferrari, both of their cars are world famous sport cars. Some had cars that at most

cost around 200,000 to 300,000, while the majority of them had cars that only cost around 100,000 dollars.

Watching the Maserati and Ferrari driving off, leaving only a trail of dust behind them, the crowd was filled with both admiration and envy. Zhao Hui Shan was even madder. Blood had already drained off her face. Clenching her fist with pure rage, she turned to see Zhou Kang Ming's own 600,000 dollar Toyota. She got into the co-driver's seat and slammed the door with great force. Her face turned bitter.

Zhou Kang Ming had no reaction to what that had just transpired. Which could only mean that his attention was no longer on Zhao Hui Shan. Compared to Zhao Hui Shan's natural beauty, Li Ru's mature style had awoken a new kind of itch in him. When he was still in high school, he had always known that Li Ru was a sl*t. Now that she had lost a husband, he would not believe that the woman could endure being alone for long! If he could just put some effort, he believed he could reel in the widow, and then he would kill two birds with one stone, claiming both her fortune and her body.

But, it would be even better if he could get his hands-on Yang Zhi Xian as well. If he did, he could be living together with all 3 beauty queens! That would really be realizing his lifelong dream!

With a lewd smirk, Zhou Kang Ming started his car and drove out of the parking lot.

...

The sound of the Ferrari engine roared through the narrow roads of Zhou Su City.

"Hey Hey Hey! You're not really trying to cause an accident, do you?!" cried Zhang Yang as he tried to stabilize himself in the car. Watching cars being overtaken by this red sport car at an incredible speed, Zhang Yang could not help but to feel and make a show of his horror. Even though he had died once, it had not turned him into a daredevil! On the contrary, it would be the lamest thing for him to die in a car accident!

Li Ru laughed loudly, shaking wildly as she laughs, causing her massive

jugs to jiggle about vigorously! “What’s wrong, Zhang Yang? Back then, you’re the one people called the daredevil of the school! Was it all a facade of Zhang Yang the scaredy-cat?”

Zhang Yang forced himself to laugh. “I’m not afraid of fighting! But I do not wish to die in vain in a car accident!”

SKREEEE!

Li Ru hit the brakes suddenly. The tremendous inertia and pushed Zhang Yang forwards and slammed him face first onto the dash board. He would have broken his nose if he had not shielded himself with his arms.

He was not wearing his seatbelt.

“WHAT THE F—” Zhang Yang turned around to faced her. But just as he was about to give her his piece of mind, Li Ru had already caught hold of him and laid him on her lap. She pulled his chin up and planted a deep, passionate kiss onto his lips.

“Ooh~ You naughty boy!” After a while, Li Ru withdrew from the kiss. She looked down to him, with sparkling eyes of lust as she spoke to him playfully.

Zhang Yang didn’t know what to think, or feel. Instinctively, he tried to push her away but found his hands sinking deep into her voluptuous breasts! A wonderful, blissful, feeling that you would usually find in heaven -- rushed across his palms. That sudden jolt of sensation left his hands resting there for a little too long. From the looks of it, it looked like he intentionally did it.

“I can explain!” cried Zhang Yang. Colors had vanished from his face. His senses were just beginning to return!

“Trying to give an excuse would only mean you’re guilty!” said Li Ru. She raised her hands and ran them down her own red-color lips, tasting her own fingers. She then put her index finger into her mouth and licked it ever so sexily. She moaned and touched herself as if tasting the remaining saliva on her lips had given her the ultimate pleasure.

“I have been wanting to kiss you since five years ago! Now, my wish has

come true! Ah! That felt really good!”

Chapter 202: A Meeting of Chance at the Karaoke

There is a song out there with lyrics that goes like this: “A woman’s heart is like a puzzle~”

Zhang Yang did not understand what was happening to him. Could it be? That he was reborn with the hidden attribute of a bastard?! Sun Xin Yu wanted him to be her boyfriend (well, technically, he did ask for it), Li Ru has this “I’ve been m*st*rb*t*ng to you for several years” kind of look on her! If he had not died and had his rebirth, he would have quickly hopped onto this train of pleasure and went off to sexville. However, this time, in his better sense of mind, he could not possibly accept things lying down like this -- literally!

The gods must be crazy! How could they just toy with his life! Zhang Yang had never wished to be the center of a huge harem! Why would the gods keep sending these minxes to compel him into committing such sins!

But what Zhang Yang did not know, was that a woman’s heart was much simpler than he could imagine. Women view romance in a simpler way than men believe it to be. For starters, the men that they would like should have these three attributes: Handsome. Smart. Famous. Zhang Yang did not have superstar handsome looks, but he was tall and buffed. Moreover, he was, in fact, one of the famous boys in high school! That time, Li Ru falling in love with Zhang Yang was no accident. Following the years after, she had dropped out of university to be married to an old and ugly gold mine. Every time she slept, she would have dreams of her first love, and that was Zhang Yang.

That being said, back then, Li Ru was not truly aware of her own crush on Zhang Yang. But after her marriage, she was constantly comparing her husband and Zhang Yang, creating her own fantastical image of Zhang Yang, intensifying her love towards Zhang Yang. Perhaps, the one she had really fallen in love is not the current Zhang Yang, but the high school delinquent. These pure and innocent emotions, sculpted the perfect Zhang

Yang in her own mind.

Li Ru started her car again and drove off. This time, she drove normally, without speeding off like a F1 driver. She rolled down the driver's window and let the wind blow her hair off randomly. She had a smile on her face. Her smile was rather genuine and happy, as if she had never experienced true happiness for a long time. "I love this feeling. The sensation when you let the wind to blow you away. That feeling of freedom and I can just forget about anything I want! That is why I love to drive!"

By the looks of it, Zhang Yang could clearly see that even though she had inherited a large fortune, she had also been burdened by something unseen.

"My husband had no legitimate kids. However, he had many nephews and nieces. Those little buggers have been harassing me for a while. Pestering me to give up my dead husband's inheritance. They have been throwing all sort of insults at me. They called me a sly fox. They called me a witch. They said that I did not deserve to inherit anything! But, all I see and hear are the same thing! They just want the money!"

Zhang Yang listened to her complains and turned to his window. As lights and shadows came through the car, illuminating the interior momentarily, he replied. "It's their right to speak, and your right to ignore. Don't mind about the others."

Li Ru was surprised at his words and smiled happily. "Well...what they say was true anyway. I did cause my husband's death." Her face turned solemn. "That old man had a weak heart. One fateful night, when he was on the bed with me. I wanted to give him a rather nice son! But, little did I know, sex is rather cruel. To have the ultimate pleasure in bed is truly a dream. But he was old, his body didn't work the way it used to be. He had to rely on drugs and supplements if he wanted to have me in bed. Eventually, one thing led to the other. He died in my arms."

She scoffed. "Still. I had it better when he's gone. I do have to see his ugly face anymore. You have to know that when my parents saw their son-in-law, they thought he was my husband's grandfather! Grandfather! Do

you understand how serious is this matter was? After I cleared things up with my parents, they scolded me that night and even refused to attend the reception! I had shamed my family!”

Zhang Yang remained quiet the whole time. Even though they were old friends, neither of them were really close enough to reveal deep secrets to each other like in such manner.

Realizing his silence, Li Ru finally stopped talking and drove on through the night. Neither of them looked at each other after that. After approximately 10 minutes, Li Ru drove into a parking lot. The two of them remained silent as they got down the car and walked away. A short distance away, Zhou Kang Ming and the rest of the merry little band were already waiting.

“What took you so long?” said Zhou Kang Ming as his eyes flitted repeatedly between Zhang Yang and Li Ru suspiciously. His voice had a trace of jealousy as he spoke.

On the other side, Fatty Han’s right arm was around the slim waist of Wu Hai Li. He had completely seduced and “claimed” her. “Zhao Kang Ming. What does his tardiness have to do with you?”

Li Ru smiled playfully, “I was shagging Zhang Yang on my way here! That’s why I was late!”

After she said that, everyone was completely dumbfounded. To count the time they had taken from the hotel to here, they were only late by a few minutes. No matter how quickly some people did it, they couldn’t have actually done the deed as she claimed. But, that was beside point. To think that she would dare use that term to joke around, it was only further testament to her boldness. Furthermore, she had only allowed Zhang Yang in her car and no one else. Who else is there to say otherwise?

Zhou Kang Ming got even more jealous. Truthfully, Zhao Hui Shan was not as pretty and alluring as Li Ru, but they say that a wild flower would bloom better than a potted flower! What you cannot own makes it even more valuable to you. Since Zhao Kang Ming was aiming to “own” Li Ru and everything that she had, it was just a natural reflex to direct jealousy

and hatred towards Zhang Yang.

“Let’s go! Let’s blow our vocal cords out!”

Everyone walked away from the parking lot and headed into a karaoke center called “Dream City”. This time, it was Zhao Kang Ming who paid the fees and got them a private room to sing in. After the transaction was made, a beautiful usherette led the little party into a large room.

Everyone got themselves a large case of beer and started to sing with the lights dimmed down. As the lights dimmed, everyone grabbed the microphones and sat with the beer in their hands.

Yang Zhi Xian did not know what to think then. Although she was constantly putting on airs, like she was looking down on everyone, but eventually, she did come along. However, she was hiding silently in one corner, occasionally glancing over at Li Ru and Zhao Hui Shan.

Perhaps she was silently judging the two ladies who were respectively once the class queen and as well as the school queen with her keen eyes.

Zhang Yang did not sing along. He opened a bottle of beer, blew the cap off the mouth, and gulped the beer down. He turned around the room and found Fatty Han and Wu Hai Li snooping around in one corner. Even though the lights were dimmed down, he would make out their silhouette. Both of them were practically stuck to each other like sandwiches. Now, even though he could not make out what they were actually doing, even an idiot could easily guess it right. Still, the man was unmarried, and the same goes to the woman, no matter what they did was none of Zhang Yang’s business.

Zhou Kang Ming was the mic hogger. Even when his singing was always out of tune, he would still hold onto the mic without giving a chance to others. He had even winked at Li Ru seductively, earning the rage of Zhao Hui Shan. Even though it was rather dark, her glowing red cheeks could practically set the room on fire.

“Li Ru! Let’s sing this together!” Zhou Kang Ming had purposely picked a duet and boldly asked Li Ru to be his partner.

Glancing back at Zhao Hui Shan with a pitiful eye, she understood how she felt and shook her head. "Sorry. I don't know this song."

"That cannot be! We all know that you were practically a superstar back in high school! In fact, we still know that you can be a superstar someday! How could you not sing this song?!" Zhou Kang Ming was borrowing the power of the alcohol in him to speak so boldly.

Zhao Hui Shan had finally snapped. She got up. "Kang Ming! I'm heading out to buy a few things. Come with me!" She pulled him, or rather, dragged him out of the room to, obviously, give him a piece of her mind.

By the time the angry couple came back, Zhang Yang and Li Ru were singing the very song that Zhou Kang Ming had picked earlier!

It was like a tight slap to the face!

Zhou

Kang Ming sulked. If his self-consciousness was any good, he would have already picked up the telltale sign that Li Ru had no interest in him! He managed to "own" Zhao Hui Shan by baiting her with his money! However, Li Ru was a rich widow! What would money do to her? She could have several more digits behind her fortune, what reason was there for her to look up to Zhou Kang Ming?

Why! Why!?

Zhao Kang Ming could not understand it! He wanted to humiliate Zhang Yang, but nothing ever went past the planning stage. Before he could throw the first strike, he had already been slapped in the face multiple times! How did that happen?

Zhang Yang sang the song together with Li Ru because he was forced to do so. After that one song, Zhang Yang quickly went back to his seat and glued himself to it. No matter how Li Ru tried to push, dragged, and persuade, Zhang Yang was determined to remain stationary.

The singing continued on for another hour. By then, Zhang Yang had already drunk 4 to 5 bottles of beer. A sudden discomfort struck Zhang

Yang. It was like his arse was about to explode. He quickly got out of the room to find a toilet, only to realize that the establishment did not have one. He had to leave the center entirely. Toilets were only available at the end of buildings around here.

After taking his time to answer nature's call, Zhang Yang exited the toilet and returned to the karaoke room. Just when he was about pull the door, he heard a loud 'thud' coming from the room opposite. He saw a shadowy figure bumping against the wall.

"Haha! Miss Yu! Don't be shy! Come back! Let's sing a little more!" Immediately, a rather large middle-aged man, with a huge beer belly came out. He reeked of alcohol. The first person who came out of the room was a young lady, around the age of her early twenties. She had the most alluring body; with full frontal peaks and a curvaceous butt. Her face was flushed red. It was not the kind of red you see on a shy person, but rather, the red cheeks, of a person who has clearly drank too much. Her eyes were out of focus. In her dazed, disoriented struggle, she cried out, "No! I-I-I can't drink anymore! I'm going back!"

The man smirked slyly and grabbed the woman. "Going home? Sure! I'll send you home!" said the man as he grabbed the woman and pulled her forcefully back into the room.

Zhang Yang hand was already holding on the door knob, but when he saw the face of the woman, Zhang Yang instinctively walked up to her and grab the woman's other free hand.

The man felt a sudden jerk. He pulled the woman again only to find that she would not budge. He turned around to see a huge man holding on to her hand. Annoyed, he scolded. "What are you doing! Let her go!"

Zhang Yang calmly replied the middle-aged man with a low voice whilst staring straight into him. "Didn't you hear what Teacher Yu said? She wants to go home, yet you're dragging her back into the room. What are you planning?"

"Teacher...Yu?" the man was stunned and quickly expressed an understanding emotion. "I see that you're Miss Yu's student! Don't worry!"

There's nothing to fuss about. We're singing and drinking together with a couple more colleagues from work!"

"Zhang...Zhang Yang?" the woman tried her best to lift her head. Her hands reached out and grabbed to Zhang Yang sleeves tightly, her expression terrified. "S-Save me!" she pleaded.

This woman was clearly one of the lecturers that had taught Zhang Yang in university.

Zhang Yang nodded confidently and said, "Teacher Yu! Worry not. I shall send you back home!"

"Don't you dare walk away!" the middle-aged man was obviously infuriated. His hand was still holding onto Yu Li's feeble wrist. "Mind your own business, boy! Leave!"

As he spoke, another man came out from the room. "Chief Qian, is there something wrong?"

He revealed his face and Zhang Yang could easily recognize the man. He was the Dean F.I.C.T (Faculty of Information, Computing, and Technology). His name was Hou Bi Hua. Since he was not really good person in the campus, students had given him a nick name, Monkey Butt.

When Monkey Butt saw Zhang Yang, he was stunned. Zhang Yang recognized him but the same was not the case for the other party. After all, there were so many students in the entire campus, he could not possibly remember all of their faces! He was annoyed. "Who are you!? Trying to act like a thug?"

Zhang Yang laughed boldly. "I'm not trying to, I'm the real thing! At least, I'm not some pretentious bastard that look all righteous while planning to harass a girl. You're the ones acting!"

"Bullsh*t! Let her go now! Or I'll call security!" Monkey Butt started to threaten Zhang Yang.

"Hmph!" Zhang Yang scoffed and with lightning speed, he threw a punch at the shoulder of the person called "Chief Qian". The pain was unbearable that the man let her go in reflex. Zhang Yang quickly walked

up, covering Yu Li behind him and readied his fist. “Monkey Butt. You can try, if you dare!”

When he heard Zhang Yang called him Monkey Butt, he knew instantly that Zhang Yang was a student from his university. His heart sank.

This outing was all for the university president’s nephew, the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen. He had an eye for Yu Li and had requested Monkey Butt to pull a few strings to get them together. However, Monkey Butt knew that Yu Li was not the kind of woman who would spread her legs for money. If that had been the case, he would have gotten onto her earlier! So, make it less sketchy, he invited a few more lecturers from his own faculty and made the encounter with Qian Hong Wen, purely coincidental.

Everyone had started a drinking session and at Monkey Butt’s direction, the other lecturers had pushed Li Ru to drink. With no effort at all, they had successfully made her drunk. The rest of the lecturers were proactive and quickly left with many random excuses. The remaining people in the room were Monkey Butt, Qian Hong Wen, and the heavily intoxicated Yu Li.

Tipsy and dizzy, Yu Li sense their ill intentions and had quickly decided to leave the room. However, she was so dizzy that she needed the wall to support herself. If she had not drawn Zhang Yang’s attention, she would have been dragged into the room and the following events that could have unfolded would have been most undesirable.

This could have been the start of her downfall from his past life!

If Zhang Yang was indeed a student from his university, he could use his authority to pressurize him. If he wasn’t, what that is about to follow would be a little rough. Monkey Butt looked at Zhang Yang with a deathly stare and asked. “What year did you graduate?”

TL note:

1Monkey Butt – The author used a word play that sounded the same but writes differently. The Chinese word used was 候, which sounds Hou, the same as 猴. 猴 means monkey. 毕, sounds Bi while 屁 sounds Pi, but meant

butt. Thus, the word play 候毕, 猴屁, Hou Bi (Pi), monkey's butt.

Chapter 203: Rage for the Damsel

Zhang Yang ignored him completely and turned to Yu Li. “Teacher Yu! Let’s go!”

Qian Hong Wen was immensely angered. He threw his arms across, grabbed Zhang Yang’s shoulders, and turned him around forcefully. “What do you think you’re doing?! Leave the woman behind!”

A few days back, Qian Hong Wen was in the campus to meet up with his uncle. Coincidentally, he saw Yu Li when she was bending over to pick up the books that she had accidentally dropped. That moment, he saw her plump little butt plastered against the fabric of her skirt. The perfect peach-like contour was so vividly pressed out, that he could see a hint of butt-cleavage between the two bumps. A boiling wave of lust surged out and he hated the fact that he could not just rush in to grab those perfect melons! All he wanted to do was to thrust himself between that perfectly formed gap! When Yu Li straightened up, he saw her face, which was as beautiful as a super star’s! The lust in him rose up like bile and he could not just let her go!

Qian Hong Wen knew that Hou Bi Hua (Monkey Butt) was working hard for a promotion! So, Qian Hong Wen used that to bait the man, hinting that all he wanted was to get her into his lap. If he could do it, promotion would be in hand. Without any further thought, Monkey Butt accepted the offer!

The plan was laid out smoothly. The little sheep was about to land into the mouth of the wolf, when someone unexpectedly appeared to interrupt. Like having cold water poured over his head, how could Qian Hong Wen remain calm! As a Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief, he was still a Deputy Chief of a governmental institution! If he wanted to get down with a woman, why would he need to behave! If he wanted his bed warm, hundreds of women would be jumping onto his bed for him!

Zhang Yang frowned furiously. “Let go!”

Yu Li was the woman he had secretly been in love with ever since he had entered university. Even though time had been cruel to him and made him forget about his youthful love, he could never allow a woman he knew to be harassed right in front of his face! Rage, anger, righteousness, you name it, he had them all!

As a man of rank, it had become a habit for a person such as Qian Hong Wen to look down on a nobody like Zhang Yang. He proudly bellowed. "Boy! Do you know who I am?"

That cliché...it was like almost every single villain only spoke that same utterance every time they were challenged.

Zhang Yang scoffed. "What do I care? If you don't let go, you'll be sorry about what happens next!"

All the commotion had brought the attention of Fatty Han and the rest of his ex-classmates. Everyone came out of the room, peeking at the situation only to see Zhang Yang and the obese middle-aged man having a war with words.

Zhang Yang is such a stud! He could even seduce a woman while on a toilet break! But...is he starting a fight?

With a strong brotherly love, Fatty Han immediately let Wu Hai Li go. How could he allow this fight to go on without him! He walked up with large steps and bellowed. "What's up! You wanna fight?"

His nostril was practically flaring with potent rage. Even though he was no high-ranking officer in this province, the current province leader Yang Bao Kun was an old friend back in university. He relied on this special relation to do whatever he wanted, as he saw fit. This fat f*ck definitely looked like a street thug in a glance. Was he seeking trouble; a common street thug, picking a fight with a government officer out of all things!

"Bastard! I am Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! Try and touch me if you dare!" Qian Hong Wen decided to puff his chest to let those two oblivious brats to understand who they are dealing with!

Like an astrophysicist trying to explain the theory of space time to a 5 year old, Fatty Han was rather confused about that long title. Fatty Han's mind was only filled with girls, women, ladies, and fights. In his perspective, government officers were either governors, mayors, city leaders, or district leaders. As for chief of departments...the only department chief he knew was the Safety Department Chief at a Transport company that he used to work at. With that in mind, Fatty Han thought that his middle-aged man must be out of his mind. Deputy Chief?! Huh!

Fatty Han crossed his hands.

So what if you have a few underlings? You think I'm afraid? Call them if you want. I'll fight all day!

Zhang Yang grew impatient. He glanced down to where Qian Hong Wen was grabbing his hands and said with a serious tone. "3 seconds. If you don't let go, you'll regret it dearly."

"What are you pulling at?" Annoyed, Qian Hong Wen raised his hand to slap Zhang Yang.

WHAM!

Zhang Yang lifted his leg and delivered a strong kick. Qian Hong Wen cried out suddenly with colors drained from his face. He trembled a little as he staggered a few steps back. His throat quivered a little before a loud "ARGH" was released from his wide, open mouth.

"Eww..." The hallway was suddenly filled with the smell of alcohol. Everyone instinctively pinched their noses.

"Y-You! What have you done! You actually hit an officer in the open! Revolt! Rebel!" Monkey Butt quickly took out his phone and dialed 110. He had not dared call the cops for fearing that it might tarnish Qian Hong Wen's reputation! He was a government officer, and being seen in an entertainment center, a Karaoke establishment would be rather embarrassing for him. But, now that an officer had been struck down, he had to do something, or earn Qian Hong Wen's fury.

Monkey Butt was categorized under the education department, and since

his university was under the private sector, not even a City level officer could touch him, much less a Provincial officer. Technically, he should not be afraid of Qian Hong Wen. Still, he is the nephew of the university president, he could easily ask his sister to say a word or two when her husband is sleeping next to her. If things get any worse, he might not be able to work in any department at all!

That was from the perspective of the “bad guys”. Everyone else had their own thoughts about Zhang Yang striking the self-proclaimed government officer.

Wang Hai and Liu Qi Ming were just regular, everyday chaps. They were stunned and immediately begun trembling in fear. Zhang Yang might have gotten them involved in trouble, dragging them down the sea along with him. Zhao Kang Ming was beyond glee. He knew that once Zhang Yang had offended a Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief, he would not be able to walk free after this event!

Zhao Hui Shan was also happy that she had made the right decision to dump him back then. If she had followed him closely, a man who knows no danger, who acts all high and mighty and gets into a huge messes like the one that had just happened in front of them, she would have had to watch over her shoulder fearfully, till the end of her life! Li Ru on the other hand, was brimming with joy! She was able to see the wild, fierce Zhang Yang in action again. Her desire for him had doubled! She had decided to invest a little more money to keep him for her own!

Yan Zhi Ru was rather shocked at his action. Once again, she clicked her tongue out of habit. She thought that since she had publicly announced of her father’s position, he intended to borrow her strength and influential power to act how he want. Still, he was still an acquaintance. As such, she would be willing to help out a hand. Still, she wanted to make sure that she could properly control Zhang Yang. If he had tasted the power, he might abuse it!

The truth? Zhang Yang dared to kicked down Qian Hong Wen because he was borrowing someone else’s strength and influential power. The target was not Yang Zhi Xian, but his own “girlfriend”, Sun Xin Yu! She

was the real god here. Since he had that power right in his pocket, why not use them? Zhang Yang was not that kind of man who would rely on his own strength to enact justice. Why do something when you can let someone else do it for you?

Qian Hong Wen was drunk and wanted to rape a helpless woman, this kind information would definitely be fuel to the icy flame of Sun Xin Yu! Her kicks would definitely be stronger and harder than his!

“Teacher Yu! Please get up! I’ll send you home!” Zhang Yang supported Yu Li on his shoulder and begun to leave.

“Don’t you move!” Monkey Butt had just ended the call. He did not dare to stand right in front of Zhang Yang, fearing that he would end up the same way as Qian Hong Wen. However, the Karaoke center security guards was alert. One by one, they rushed over.

Monkey Butt started to shoat while pointing his fingers at Zhang Yang. “Don’t let them go! That man beat Chief Qian up!”

The guards had no idea who Chief Qian was, but they did know that “Chief”, meant something. They quickly blocked Zhang Yang front moving further. Be it a minor brawl or random fights, it was their duty to detain the people involved and let the police take care of the rest.

Qian Hong Wen coughed heavily for a while and got up after a huge struggle. He pointed his trembling fingers at Zhang Yang, his voice shaking. “You f*cking bastard! I’ll mess you up real good!”

Zhang Yang turned around and smiled. “You must have many colleagues in work. Be wary that you might be called in for an afternoon tea by the Disciplinary Committee!”

All government officer would be scared of the Disciplinary Committee!

Annoyed, Qian Hong Wen screamed. “Who you think you are? You think you can call up to a Disciplinary Committee to check on me? Is your father a City Chief? A Province Chief? Hmph! I’ll let you sit and rot in jail for the next 10 days! Or even a month! I’ll arrange a very nice spot you! People would be able to f*ck your bare naked *ss all day!”

Yang Zhi Xian heard what he said and frowned angrily. She was familiar with such people. One of them was her father's old classmate back when her father was in university. Back when he came to her house as a guest, he treated her father with respect, to the point where she thought that he was very kind and friendly without any trace of anger nor savagery! But lo and behold, once the tables are turned, she could not believe that he could be so rude and violent!

Even though she was a girl, having experience of dealing with politics since she was young, she gained a strong understanding on the political world. She knew that this kind of people would only be up to no good. Whenever a big case came up, her father would definitely be involved. A leader would lose his credibility because of a single misjudge!

No, she can not allow this man to continue his act of horror!

Fatty Han rolled up his sleeves and asked Zhang Yang. "Little Yang. This man mouth is spouting something smelly. I can't bear to smell it anymore. Should I help you close his mouth up?"

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and said, "There's no need to soil your hands on a rabid dog."

A Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief was insulted as a rabid dog? If Zhao Kang Ming and the rest of his friend were shocked beyond belief, what would Qian Hong Wen himself feel? Zhang Yang must be mad beyond reason! He is crazy beyond anyone's comprehension! He must be crazy!

How could you fight with a Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief? That man could easily blow you off with a simple fart! You think you're all strong and invincible just because you can fight? What's the use of the police force then?!

"Fatty! Let's go!" said Zhang Yang. He needed Fatty Han to drive Yu Li back home.

"Don't you dare move!" said the Karaoke guards. If this case escalated to a serious level, the guards might be in serious trouble if they let Zhang Yang leave the scene.

Qian Hong Wen had steam coming out from his ears and nose. He was the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief! How could he take a beating in a public just like that! If the word got out, he would be shamed! When he saw many guards surrounding Zhang Yang, he gathered the courage and walked up front boldly. He gripped his fist tightly and thrust a haymaker to the back of Zhang Yang's head.

Now, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were excellent fighting partners. Even though Zhang Yang was facing the guards, Fatty Han was covering his back out of habit. This fighting stance was formed after years of fighting together in the streets! Now that he saw the sneaky Qian Hong Wen about to land a hit to Zhang Yang, Fatty Han immediately threw a punch to meet with his fist.

“ARGH...” Qian Hong Wen backed away in a flash. His hand was flung backwards. Blood started to ooze out from his hands; and his face was cringing in pain.

Blood! There's blood!

Once the guard saw that happening, how could they let them go! Zhang Yang and the fat guy had completely ignored the guards and assaulted the government officer! In an instant, the group of guards rushed towards Zhang Yang, raising their batons to hit Zhang Yang, to try and stop the two “suspects”, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han.

Seeing that he was about to be attacked, he could not just let them do so, and in a quick flash and a blur, Zhang Yang beat them all into a pulp.

During the commotion, Zhou Kang Ming and the rest of his friend were dragged into the mess. The guards had mistakenly assumed that they were with Zhang Yang and beat them up with their batons, leaving them wailing in pain. Since Fatty Han was a little annoyed at Zhou Kang Ming earlier, he had even “accidentally” threw a few punches to leave a mark on his face. Zhang Yang himself had purposely led the guards, one by one towards Zhou Kang Ming, letting the bastard have a taste of the fight. However, that bastard had even shoved Zhao Hui Shan in front of himself

and cowered behind her.

Know that hammer of justice does not discriminate genders! In the midst of the huge commotion, who would have the time to pull their punches if a beautiful girl got involved in the fight? Furthermore, since the guards were “bullied” by Fatty Hand and Zhang Yang so badly, they took their chance to have their “revenge” at the poor, wailing little Zhou Kang Ming. Target the weak ones first, in a fight. This was the perfect example. However, the true victim here was Zhao Hui Shan, her hair tugged at so roughly that her scream was so loud that people might have thought that she was actually giving birth. Her chest and *ss had marks; perhaps a few of those guards might had taken the opportunity to molest her.

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were unmatched in fist fights. They could face more than 10 guards and still remained unfazed. The alcohol in them made their punches a little more sluggish than usual. But, after trading a few blows, they grew stronger, faster! In turn, they had managed to beat them all with only a little effort. Qian Hong Wen and the Monkey Butt were not out of the fight, their faces and noses clearly bruised badly for taking innumerable hits in the commotion.

Wee Woo Wee Woo!

The siren of the police was heard outside of the establishment just when the fight was about to reach its conclusion. After a few more punches were thrown, a squad of policemen came up the building and surrounded everyone. “Face the wall! Face and wall and kneel down!”

Being used to these kind of situation, both Fatty Han and Zhang Yang quickly headed to a corner and complied. After all, those policemen were holding electric batons! If they were to get stung by those contraptions, it would be stinging for a few days!

Qian Hong Wen, however, refused to comply! He was the officer in this province! A leader, technically! These police officers are all under his rank! They were practically his subordinates! If he listened to them and kneel down, how could he still face the public after being humiliated so extensively! Furthermore, he was the victim here! Fatty Han’s punch had

knocked out two of his front teeth! If he did not at least beat them with a punch or two, he would not be able to sleep comfortably tonight!

The policemen walked closer and when they saw this one man still rearing for a fight, they zapped him with the electric baton and sent the man down to his knees.

“GRAaa.Aaah..argh...ah..” The poor man was zapped badly before he could no longer remain standing, where he laid on the ground twitching with the remaining electric current in his system.

“Wait! He’s the.. GRAHHahhh...ah....” The poor Monkey Butt was already kneeling down when he quickly jumped to his feet to reveal Qian Hong Wei’s identity. But the policemen did not know that and thought that he was somewhat resisting arrest. They zapped him as well and left him shaking in pain.

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han saw what had happened and giggled quietly.

“Take them all back to the station!” cried one of the policemen. The number of participants in this fight was quite large. It could even consider to be a mass brawl. The leading policeman raised his hand and gave the command. The other policemen nodded their head and took them all into the police car.

One by one, they were led into the back seat of the police car, with men and women in separated vehicle. Zhou Kang Ming stared begrudgingly at Zhang Yang with a right eye. His left eye was completely swollen shut. He screamed at Zhang Yang angrily. “Look what you have done to us all!”

Liu Qi Ming was also one of the unlucky one, He had only wanted to get into a good relation with Fatty Han, he had never though that he might got involve in a fight, much less being dragged to the police station! If he was charged in participating in a street fight...he did not dare think any further. His face went pale and he started to sob uncontrollably.

Fatty Han heard the sob and scolded the poor little boy. “What are you crying for?! Have you never been to the police station?”

“Keep your mouth shut!” screamed the driver through the barbed net between the passenger and the driver. “Shut the f*ck up!”

Zhou Kang Ming froze in his seat and did not even dare make squeak of a mouse. Still, his rage had not been extinguished. He stared angrily at Zhang Yang and silently swore that he will accuse him as much as he could when the police question them.

Wee woo wee woo. The siren of the police car echoed as they reached the police station. Since the number of suspects was just too great, the car was driven into the station, stopping right in front of the building.

“Get out! Get your lazy bums out of the car now!” said the policeman as he dragged them all out like ducks out of their cages.

As they walked into the building, a man dressed in a casual clothing, looking to be around the age of 30, ran up to them and greeted the front most policeman.

“Are these the people that had cause the commotion at Dream City?”

“Yes, Secretary Lee!” said the policeman. The person that addressed him was the Secretary of the Chief of the Public Security Bureau. He could not afford to make a mistake.

Secretary Lee quickly search through the crowd, screaming, “Chief Qian! Chief Qian!”

“I’m here! I’m here!” cried Qian Hong Wei with his trembling lips. The poor man had zapped with the electric baton, and he could still feel the numbing sensation all over his body. The man could not even speak properly.

Secretary Lee quickly headed toward Qian Hong Wei and said sternly. “Officer Bai, this man is the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! Look at him! Look at how much he was mistreated! These psychotic mad men had betrayed the country and dared to even strike a member of the government! We have to punish these rogues severely with extreme prejudice!”

The policeman called Bai was stunned. He had never known that he had

arrested the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! Oh god! He did see one of his subordinate using the electric baton to attack the man! If the department finds out what had happened, he would be partially responsible for it!

Zhou Kang Ming was completely dumbfounded. His heart racing madly. Psychotic? Betray the country? Rogues?! If he was really charged with those accusation, he would not even die in peace! He quickly jumped in horror and screamed at the top of his lungs. "I'M INNOCENT! INNOCENT, I TELL YOU! IT WAS ALL ZHANG YANG AND HAN GUANG! IT WAS THE TWO OF THEM THAT STARTED THE FIGHT! I'M INNOCENT! INNOCENT!"

Chapter 204: Gu Jun stance

Being told that they were culprits, betrayers of the nation, and even tagged as a psychotic madmen. They had been seriously being dragged into the fire pit. But they had done nothing! Literally nothing! If this turns out any worse than they can imagine, what would happen to them? With that negative thoughts circling in their heads, Liu Qi Ming and the rest of the “victims” screamed for justice.

On the other hands, Secretary Lee was annoyed at their cries. “The police will not simply wrong an innocent man! On the other hands, we will not let a criminal run free! So, what are you screaming for? We will get down to the bottom of this! Don’t think that you can just get away by simple screaming like a little wimp!”

Zhou Kang Ming faced turned as bitter as a bitter gourd. With nothing else that they could do, they resort to only curse the man at their side. It was all Zhang Yang’s fault to begin with! It was all because of his inconsiderate actions that had led them down to this path!

Even Zhao Hui Shan, who was envious of Li Ru’s inherited wealth and Yang Zhi Xian’s family background, knew that she had to do something about this matter by seeking help from one of them. This concerned his boyfriend’s and her own future as well! She could not just allow this to go on without any intervention. It might jeopardize the one-sided relationship between her and Zhou Kang Ming! She turned to Yang Zhi Xian and asked, “Zhi Xian, say something! I know you can do something about this!”

Only when she mentioned Yang Zhi Xian’s name, the rest only recalled that she was the beloved daughter of the Province Leader of Cang Lang! What could Qian Hong Wei do as a mere Deputy Chief of a Department? The other person was of much higher rank! The pathetic guys quickly surrounded Yang Zhi Xian and begged her!

Because Yang Zhi Xian had been hiding behind the crowd, Qian Hong Wei had never managed to catch a glimpse of her, until Zhao Kang Ming

and the rest were screaming out her name and graveling at her feet. Qian Hong Wei heart sank. This time, it might be more troublesome than it could really be. Why was this young lady among the crowd? Why was she involved? If she did give in to their pleas and helped the youngsters, it might really be the end of Qian Hong Wei!

When a person with only one rank higher could easily step on his subordinates, how much would he be trampled on when he was 3 times lower than this girl's father?! Now, a large majority of any Department Deputy Chiefs would never ever reach the height of being the Head of a Department in their life time! A Provincial officer, much less so! In the governmental ranking world, a Provincial ranking officer was far, far stronger than a mere Department Chief! The difference in authority would be heaven and earth!

Even though Qian Hong Wen was Yang Zhi Xian's senior in both age and position, Yang Zhi Xian's father was at an even higher position. At least he still had some manners in him! He proactively greeted the girl with a rather pitiful smile that beckoned a punch, "Ah! It's Zhi Xian!"

Yang Zhi Xian smiled, but it was so rigid and robotic and anyone knows it was just an obligatory respond. "Uncle Qian."

As a secretary, he was a rather sensitive to his surroundings and was very competent in his work. He quickly rushed to Qian Hong Wen and whispered into this ears, "Chief Qian, who is this woman?"

"Her father is the Cang Lang Province Leader!"

Secretary Lee sucked in a deep breath. He knew that this was completely out of his league. Even his own Ma Wu Shi Bureau Chief was just a Department Chief. He quickly switched his voice tone and spoke stoically. "I'm afraid that his matter is much complicated than it has to be. The police would require much more information from all sides to solve this case!"

Yang Zhi Xian peeked at Zhang Yang and was offended at his aloofness. He did not even open his mouth to ask for her help!

I'm helping you as a ex-classmate! You could at least show some

appreciation to me! What am I? Your nanny? Such insolence!

Still, her face remained completely unfazed, revealing no emotions!

“I can testify. The one that took part in the fight was only him and him. The rest of the people here were completely innocent!” said Yang Zhi Xian and she pointed at Zhang Yang and Fatty Han, indicating the true culprit.

Qian Hong Wen was both surprised and happy. He had initially thought that the girl was with Zhang Yang and Fatty Han. He had originally let go of the intention to get back at Zhang Yang since his reputation and fame was far more important than a little fight. However, that all changed when he heard what Yang Zhi Xian had just said. It was obvious that she had never had the intention to protect Zhang Yang and Fatty Han.

If that was the case, Qian Hong Wei might still have a chance to have his revenge against Zhang Yang!

Secretary Lee was a smart lad; he could easily understand what Yang Zhi Xian meant when she said that. He gestured a wave with his hands and called the police officer. “Officer Bai, take these two to the interrogation room and INTERROGATE them nicely!” Secretary Lee purposely emphasize the word.

Fatty Han was getting worried. Even though he had no clue about who being the higher rank, he could see that this Secretary Lee and the Deputy Chief Qian were both afraid of Yang Zhi Xian.

Damn girl! We were classmates! Why did you ignore us!

Yang Zhi Xian purposely stared at Zhang Yang, to give him a last minute window to beg for her help!

Zhang Yang was thinking of completely another thing. He was snickering. If they were caught and placed in another police station, he might have been a little worried. But here, this place...This was where Sun Xin Yu goes to work! What there is to be afraid off? He could easily call on his “girlfriend” and ask for her help!

Officer Bai pulled Fatty Han and Zhang Yang into the station. Along the way, a middle-aged man appeared to be in the way. Both of his hands were

behind him; his completely stoic stance and a stern face was familiar.

When the officers around saw him, they stood still and raised their hand to salute. "Chief Gu"

That man was the Bureau's Deputy Chief, Gu Jun.

Even since the incident involving Zhang Yang and the robbery case, Gu Jun had been rather outstanding. His reputation had been severely affected by the public "humiliation" from Sun Xin Yu. He took the chance to compete with the other two Deputy Chief and had managed to obtain credit for a number of contributions. It was not to the point where he could rival the actual Chief of the Bureau, but he did act more often and was not passive as he was last time.

The man nodded. A man of his rank could not simply react casually to others, lest it might tamper with his reputation and respect as a leader. He walked further with his hands behind his arm crossed behind him.

Officer Bai relaxed and pushed Zhang Yang. "Move!"

Zhao Kang Ming was completely delighted. Now that he was off the hook, he began to have his own thoughts in his head.

I might have taken a few punches but now that things had gone this way, you f*ckers will have it worse! When a police resorts to violence, they can be worse than an actual street thug!

Back in the car, Li Ru had already glued her phone to her ear, calling here and there, trying to find a connection that might save Zhang Yang. If Zhang Yang was dragged in the interrogation room, every minute that pass in the room would mean a minute of torture! Li Ru could not help but feel distressed about it, stomping the ground in frustration.

"Wait!" cried Gu Jun when he had only walked a few steps forward. He turned around and observe Zhang Yang closely and was shocked, and a little happy to recognized him. "Y-You! You're Zhang Yang!"

Zhang Yang smiled casually. "Good day to you Chief Gu!"

Gu Jun had been grieving in regret when he had missed the chance to

get closer to Sun Xin Yu. She was practically a god in the Bureau! But he had let her roam about right under his nose! He regretted that he did not care about the girl before the incident! If he had just had a normal conversation with Sun Xin Yu every now and then, who knew where he would be this day!

The worst thing was that when Sun Xin Yu was in trouble, he remained at the sidelines, doing nothing. He could have taken the chance to get close to the woman and get into her good side. But, all he did was literally nothing. Fearing that the woman might hold a grudge against the man, he did not partake any action to subdue the woman. He was scared that he might make things worse.

That all changed when Zhang Yang appeared like a life line in a pinch! However, he was still a government servant! What shame does he have to incur to himself to ask an officer of the law to kiss a civilian's butt!

But, now that an opportunity had revealed himself, he could use his power to get him out of this little boy's trouble. Who knew, Zhang Yang might feel a little gratitude to him and might allow him to take the chance to ask him for a favor from Sun Xin Yu!

As the train of thought railing in his head, Gu Jun had steeled his decision to help and asked. "What offense did he commit?"

"Violence against an officer!" Secretary Lee quickly answered before any other officer could. By the looks of it, he knew that Gu Jun was doing something to help Zhang Yang. Fearing the latter, he quickly revealed the highest offense. "Chief Gu, this man is the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! He was assaulted, by THIS guy!"

Gu Jun sucked in a long breath. Damn! Birds of the same feather, flock together, but not the other way round. Back then Sun Xin Yu punched the son in front of the chief; and here Zhang Yang is, punching the Deputy Chief! Technically, Qian Hong Wen and Gu Jun were just about the same level in rank!

Zhang Yang finally opened his mouth to defend himself. He pointed at

Yu Li who was sitting in the bench and said, "That lady there is my university lecturer! I spotted her being chased by a pervert in the Karaoke center. As a lawful citizen, I had to prevent a crime from happening and ask the man to stop his indecent acts. But, instead, the man cried out, saying that he was a government officer and wanted me to leave him alone! Back then, I was thinking, a government officer should be the one serving its citizens! How could this perverted, rampaging thug be a government servant! I was angry and kicked him! I was enacting justice!"

When Qian Hong Wen was insulted with pervert and thug, he face turned pale and all he could say in return was only, "Y-You! Y-You!"

Gu Jun was laughing inside. He thought that Zhang Yang might not be as reckless as he thought he would be. As long as he relied on the "lawful citizen, protecting the law" card, he might be at the right side of the law even if things got a little messy! Of course, without anyone supporting his back, he would never gain the higher ground, no matter how reasonable his excuse was. But, this man had someone behind him!

When the image of Sun Xin Yu was pictured in his mind, Gu Jun felt a sudden chill flowing down his spine. Fear gripped his mind! This young lady was the gods among gods, why would she land a job in this poor, mortal realm! Ever since the incident, the entire station had been rendered cold and filled with fear whenever Sun Xin Yu appeared. Everyone was so afraid that their actions might offend the godly Sun Xin Yu!

Gu Jun coughed lightly and turned to Qian Hong Wen. "Chief Qian. I'd say, it would be rather embarrassing to you if this matter got out to the public. How about we come to a truce? As the saying goes, treat a big problem as a small one; a small problem as none!"

Qian Hong Wen got angry. No matter how he listened to his word, he could not miss the tone in his voice and the word that he used to call him! Embarrassing!? What is he trying to do? Was he trying to provoke Qian Hong Wen? So what if he had been with women? Who would not be at his own age?!

Being a high-ranking government servant for many years, who had

indulged in all the luxuries and pleasure that it could offer! By the looks of it, Qian Hong Wen understood that Gu Jun had decided to side with Zhang Yang. Qian Hong Wen was cursing Gu Jun in his heart, he had the rage, but no way of venting it! Gu Jun was at about the same rank as him, but he was from another province! He could not exert his authority here!

On the other side, Yang Zhi Xian nodded her head. She finally understood what had happened. No wonder Zhang Yang had never made a move to ask for her help! He had a trump card since the beginning! He was relying on the Public Security Bureau Deputy Chief! There is a saying, that hatred was born from love. Yang Zhi Xian was never in love with Zhang Yang to begin with, but since she had a strong egoistic behavior, she was offended by Zhang Yang's act of not replying on her!

Right there and then, she walked up, feeling unsatisfied with the outcome and said, "Deputy Chief Gu! The person had committed a crime against a government officer! How could you say something like that!"

Gu Jun glance swiftly at Yang Zhi Xian and felt a little uncomfortable.

Little brat, who do think you are?

Secretary Lee quickly explained. "Chief Gu, this person is the daughter of the Cang Lang Province Leader!"

Gu Jun was shocked beyond words. No wonder she dared to walked into the conversation like that. She was the child of another powerful leader! However, Gu Jun smiled. Normally, a province leader would easily shock the life out of him, but Sun Xin Yu had powers beyond measure.

She could easily pick up the phone and call up the City Secretary! So what, if your father is the Cang Lang Province leader, if any leader of any province walked into the station right now, Gu Jun dared to have a quarrel with him!

All in all, the more hits he took on, the better favor he could get from Zhang Yang!

To climb the ladder of promotion, you must stand with the person at the highest ladder!

Chapter 205: Till He Suffers

Gu Jun steeled his will, putting up a stoic stature and stated clearly. “Public Security Bureau is a place where justice is enacted! We will only accept facts and evidence and not favors!”

After Gu Jun’s short speech, everyone felt conflicted!

Gu Jan intended to protect Zhang Yang. That had been clearly established. But why?

Who is Zhang Yang and what was driving Gu Jun to offend a Province Leader’s daughter to take over the case boldly!? He should have known that her father was the provincial leader, a position much higher and more powerful than Gu Jun by several levels!

Yang Zhi Xian was shocked at his “answer”. She had never thought that Gu Ju would still be headstrong and resist to stop helping Zhang Yang. What’s done is done. Even though she was rather arrogant and headstrong herself, her sense towards political behavior was strong. She knew something was wrong but could not put a finger on it. Could it be, that Zhang Yang had a hidden background that no one else but Gu Jun knew about? Was that the reason why Gu Jun would not even fear a provincial leader?

She waved her hands and gestured to Secretary Lee to come to her.

Secretary Lee saw her call and ran over rather lavishly. “Miss Yang? What’s wrong?”

Yang Zhi Xian pointed at Zhang Yang and whispered. “What relationship does that man have with your deputy chief?”

Secretary Lee scratched his chin and shook his head, “I’m not sure about that miss. But wait, let me go ask around!”

He left the group and went into the station and started to gather information about Zhang Yang. She was but the daughter of the province leader, one of the people that everyone would want to have a good relationship with.

No sooner, Secretary Lee came back with a rather shocked expression and sneaked towards Yang Zhi Xian and whispered back. "I'm afraid this is rather complicated Miss Yang. That man is not just any simple man. Not long ago, do you remember about an armed robbery case that happened around this area?"

He then explicitly explained the event that had transpired to Yang Zhi Xian, down to the detail where Ma Wu Shi was belittled by Sun Xin Yu in front of everyone.

Before Yang Zhi Xian could finish listening, she covered her mouth. No wonder this man dared to be such a ruffian! He had such a strong back supporting him! His relations were so strong and vast that he could reach the City Secretary himself! That's just the tip of the iceberg!

She was selfish and egoistic, that she realized herself. But she wanted to climb the ladder of ranks as well! In an instant, she knew what she had to do. She realized the immense value that Zhang Yang had with him. No wonder even the deputy chief Gu Ju would want to join hands with Zhang Yang!

Yang Zhi Xian changed her attitude a 180 degrees. "Gu Jun, my father once said to me, as a government servant, he or she must serve the people as their highest priority! As for the black sheep in the office, I'll say, wouldn't it be for the best if we get rid of the root?"

His head completely drained of blood, Qian Hong Wen went so pale that people might mistaken his face for a piece of poorly drawn sketch on a piece of paper.

What the hell is this blood b*tch was thinking!? Is she trying to make him suffer till the end?! Black sheep? Root of the mess? If he was really going to wear that insult, securing his current position would be a problem, much less hoping for any promotions in the future!

Gu Jun scoffed and nodded his head. He now understands that the girl must have known something about Zhang Yang. He had only wanted to protect Zhang Yang, but now he had gained support from the daughter of the province leader! With lesser obstacles in his path, he could now give a

better impression to Zhang Yang and gain his favor!

He raised his hand and waved. "The office will now take over and handle the case. We will now interrogate everyone and reveal the truth!"

Raging with anger, Qian Hong Wen bellowed. "Y-You! Y-You can't interrogate me! I'm a government official!"

Gu Jun swiftly glanced at him and replied while looking in to the distance. "This is but a normal case of street fights and attempted rape. You're here as a criminal suspect. We're not going to charge you with any political offense! That would require further investigation by the Bureau!"

Qian Hong Wen wanted to open his mouth to scream, but he was quickly dragged into the station by a larger police officer.

Zhou Kang Ming and the rest of them dropped their jaws. What the hell happened? How could the bold, arrogant Chief Qian be dragged away in an instant! And then there's Zhang Yang. What is he? Who is he? What made him so special that even the Deputy Chief of the Public Security Bureau would risk protecting him?

Circling about the same questions over and over again, the rest of them felt like they had not known Zhang Yang at all! He was shrouded in mystery! After the whole ordeal was almost over, they had finally realized that the real man, the real boss was Zhang Yang! Being quiet and all after being detained, he was the wolf hiding in a sheep's skin! Everyone had been blinded by their greed! How could they not know sooner?! Now, they are doomed for sure! They had been vigorously trying their best to draw a clear line between them and Zhang Yang, to make sure the police do not group them up with him. But lo and behold, Zhang Yang had emerged triumphant! Now that it has come to this, how could they beg him for help! He would not even glance at them! But, worse, if he wanted revenge... Zhou Kang Ming and the rest could not bear to think of the consequences of their actions...everyone was a pale as ghost.

On one note, Zhao Hui Shan felt devastated. She did not know what to think now! Did she, perhaps, make the wrong choice after all? That question was now planted in her brain, echoing endlessly as she could not

stop thinking about it!

Secretary Lee was smarter. For a while now, he knew that things had gotten out of hands. He retreated secretly and called Ma Wu Shi, telling him everything and had just happened in the station without leaving a single detail untold. Ma Wu Shi had clocked out long ago, but when he heard his secretary report, he had only given him one order. "Let the office handle it!"

The office...handle...it...

...

Zhang Yang was the first one to have his testimony recorded. He then explained everything that had happened in the scene down to each detail. Yu Li had drank a cup of hot tea earlier and regained a some of her senses. She was the first person that was directly related to the incident. Monkey Butt was rather weak-willed. After being threatened by the police, he gave in and exposed his plans about how he and Qian Hong Wei wanted to do Yu Li in the Karaoke center. Moreover, he even exposed his past crimes of luring female students in for sex!

This time, it was most certain that Monkey Butt would not escape his fate being jailed. However, Qian Hong Wen was rather hard to deal with. The police alone could not interrogate a Deputy Chief. They would need the appropriate authoritative figure to do so!

Yang Zhi Xian made a quick phone call and after a very short period of time, Leader Yang, the provincial leader of the Cang Lang province had personally called Gu Jun to make a statement. "This nation will not allow a rotten criminal to sit among the government position!"

That statement was a hint for Gu Jun to collect enough evidence. The Cang Lang Provincial office would always conduct their own investigation and find all the criminal acts that Qian Hong Wei had committed in the past!

Suffice to say, Qian Hong Wei is doomed!

Qian Hong Wei could have never foreseen this event. There was a

saying, if you do not secure your footing, you'll fall into the frozen lake! Yang Zhi Xian was the one that had caused the domino effect that led all the way to how Qian Hong Wei fell. At first, she had stated her intention to help Zhang Yang, which led to Gu Jun arresting him. Yang Zhi Xian had also advised her father, Yang Bao Kun to discard the rotten apples in the basket. Since this man would only develop more problem for Yang Bao Kun, he had to be removed; if he could not be a useful ally, he is a useless trash!

Now that Gu Jun had things cleared out with Qian Hong Wei, he could still leave a good impression on Zhang Yang. That's two birds with one stone! How could he not be happy?

After the messy ordeal, everyone, be it Yang Zhi Xian or his ex-classmates, had a different opinion on Zhang Yang. Right now, Zhang Yang was the best among them and they should have treated him better. Zhou Kang Ming was practically slapping himself in the face, crying as he said a dozen 'sorries' for looking down on Zhang Yang. He pleaded to have a little mercy and forget about him. All that, while wiping away his snort and tears. The last thing he could do was to kneel down and kiss his boots. Fatty Han was so delighted at the sight of Zhao Kang Ming that he was laughing all the way out of the station.

Zhao Hui Shan saw how his boyfriend was behaving and felt utterly disgusted. Then, she remembered back at the fight in the Karaoke center, where he had pushed her in front of himself to be his shield. She felt an even greater disgust at his cowardice.

Being a policeman for several years, Gu Jun had good insight with people, and he noticed how Zhang Yang and Zhou Kang Ming were not seeing eye to eye, quietly noting a reminder for himself. He should find leverage on Zhou Kang Ming, and take 'good care' of him, and kept this matter secret from Zhang Yang. He would leave a subtle hint to Zhou Kang Ming, never to mess with Zhang Yang or he will pay it dearly. That way, he could still do something for Zhang Yang and remain unaffected.

After the recording of their testimony, Gu Jun pulled Zhang Yang alone to have a friendly chat. He expressed his utmost sincere intention to

deepen their relationship and to be friends. He then let them all go home and even gave them advice to rest early.

On his way out of the Bureau, he noticed Yu Li wobbling unsteadily and said to Fatty Han. "Fatty! You go on. I'll send Teacher Yu back home."

Fatty Han cracked a perverted smirk and walked away from Zhang Yang. "Sure!" he gave a thumbs up gesture and leaved them alone. At least, Fatty Han could have some alone time with Wu Hai Li.

"Teacher Yu, I'm here to send you back!" said Zhang Yang. He then proceeded to support her out of the station. On the road side, Zhang Yang hailed a cab and the two of them disappeared into the night.

"I have never though that Zhang Yang could have such deep connections!" said Liu Qi Ming in awe. Since the group of ex-classmates were sent here with the police car, they had to take a cab to get back to the Karaoke center and drive their own cars back home.

Liu Qi Ming thought of Fatty Han and viewed him with respect. He came to a conclusion by himself that Fatty Han must have had help from Zhang Yang by pulling some strings here and there. It was the only explanation on how a guy with poor education, who only knew how to fight for living, could earn such a massive fortune in such a short time!

In truth, he was right, though it all happened in the game.

"Fatty, what sort of person Zhang Yang is?" said Wu Hai Li curiously while she was in Fatty Han's embrace.

"What do you mean by that?" replied Fatty Han.

"You know what I mean!"

Fatty Han knew what she meant. But, to describe Zhang Yang properly would be a challenge. Was he normal? He was normal. He was as normal as the random person you see in the streets. But he was not dumb. He will not reveal how a brother helped him to earn that surreal amount of gold. He purposely scoffed and said, "My boy Yang is rather strong! He has more than 10,000 underlings!" He then proceeded to use in-game context to tell her about Zhang Yang.

But, if you do not explain properly, how would the girl know about Zhang Yang playing a game! When other heard about having 10,000 underlings, they would certainly give you the same shocked looks on their faces. How could a person manage 10,000 subordinates? If it was a company, how large would the company be then? If he was a government official, which department could fit in 10,000 officers? Could it be special forces?

There could be a possibility, since the man could fight like a MMA fighter! He must have been scouted by a leader and was chosen to join! Damn! If he had more than 10,000 subordinates under his command, what rank would he be then? Instructor? If he was an instructor, then he would be at the rank of a City Leader!

As confusing as it may, the guesses they made only grew wilder. Everyone thought that they had Zhang Yang figured out and were shocked at their own conclusions. How could Zhang Yang be a government official at such young age?

...

After drinking some hot tea back at the station, she did sober up a little. However, the alcohol was still affecting her. Bobbing her head left and right in the car, she could not endure it any longer and rested her head on Zhang Yang arm.

Zhang Yang had a strong muscle and thick skin, he did not mind about it one bit. On the contrary, he was afraid that his roughness might hurt her delicate skin. He opened his arm and let the woman rest on his chest.

“What a lovely couple!” said the 40-year-old cab driver as he peeked through the rear mirror.

Zhang Yang only smiled at the driver without saying a word. Since both Yu Li and Zhang Yang did not meet that very often, let misunderstandings be misunderstandings.

The cab driver was rather chirpy; he had been having idle conversation with Zhang Yang every once in a while. Yu Li, disturbed by their talks, woke up groggily and finally managed to state her home address. After 20

minutes, the cab arrived at an old housing area and stopped in front of an old apartment which looked like it was around 20 to 30 years old.

Zhang Yang paid the driver and helped Yu Li out of the car. He lifted his head up to see the apartment had 5 floors.

“Teacher Yu, which floor are you living in?”

Being out in the night, the cold wind blew her face, bringing her back to her senses. “Four...no...three...wait..fourth floor!”

Zhang Yang frowned. He pushed himself and supported Yu Li to climb up all the way to the fourth floor. Luckily, after struggling to find her keys, she managed to unlock the right door after all. He was afraid that they might have been trying to open the wrong house door. She opened the old wooden door and brought Zhang Yang into an old 60 to 70 meter square apartment.

“S-Sit...” said Yu Li bashfully. Whether it was the alcohol in her, or the fact that she was seen by one of her ex-student being in such a mess, who knew? She brewed some tea and served it to Zhang Yang, while she went back to the kitchen to drink some vinegar, fully sobering herself up.

Zhang Yang looked left and right, observing her living area and asked. “Teacher Yu, didn’t you once say that you’re living with your mother?”

The little small apartment had only one room, one living room, and a toilet. The bedroom door was wide open. The bed looked rather neat and tidy, as if no one had been sleeping on it for a while.

Yu Li came out of the kitchen. Solemn and dread filled her face as she said, “My mother is in the hospital!”

Chapter 206: Please Take Me In!

Zhang Yang quickly apologized and said, "I'm sorry, Miss Yu! Is she okay? It's not serious, right?"

Yu Li sat opposite Zhang Yang and her facial expression turned even gloomier as she said, "It's uremia, she needs kidney transplant!"

Zhang Yang was shocked as kidney transplants were costly, major surgeries. Besides, it was not easy to look for matching kidneys so he asked her that.

Yu Li shook her head anxiously and replied, "They found nothing yet!"

Zhang Yang let out a sigh as he could not do anything about it. After drinking tea, he stood up and said, "Miss Yu, it's getting late, I've got to go and you should also get some rest!"

Zhang Yang went to the door. His fingers were about to touch the door handle when Yu Li suddenly uttered, "Zhang Yang, please take me in!"

Zhang Yang staggered and nearly did a somersault! What exactly is going on today? All sorts of strange things were happening to him! He turned over and he saw Yu Li's face flushed with heat but unusually staunch. However, the dithering in her eyes revealed her wild feelings at that moment.

"Miss Yu, what difficulties did you encounter? Please tell me, if I can help, I will help you!"

"Wuu wuu wuu" Yu Li started to cry suddenly. She cried in misery, unable to produce any further words.

It was not good for Zhang Yang to go, so he decided to return to his seat and asked, "Miss Yu, do you have enough funds for the surgery?" he guessed as he thought of Yu Li's situation in his previous life.

"My dad... is a compulsive gambler!" Yu Li cried for a while before she started opening up, "He owed -- still owes a pile of debt and he has fled with all sorts of people on his tail! My mum pays for my school fees and my dad's debts, she has been working hard her entire life, too hard! Yet,

she found out that she has uremia a few days ago! I just started to work for less than two years, furthermore, we used up all the home savings to pay off debts, even selling the house that we used to live in but we still do not have enough money! Zhang Yang, do you know how miserable I feel! Sometimes I really want to end my life there and then, and I would be free of all these worries!"

The story was very old-fashioned but it was still a tragedy no matter what!

Anyhow, Zhang Yang would never turn away without helping Yu Li so he said, "Miss Yu, do not worry! If it's money, I can pay for your mother's treatment first!"

Yu Li continued on with her rambling, her eyes unfocused, "A bestie, from my former university, told me that it is easy for a woman to earn money, especially if they had good looks. All they have to do is to spread their legs open! She even introduced me to one of the hotels in Lin Hai City. You can earn a few thousand dollars a night there!"

Her face was usually flushed due to the alcohol.

Lin Hai City? That's right. Zhang Yang had one-night stand with Yu Li in Tian Lun Pavilion Grand Hotel at Lin Hai City during that time, in his previous life. He let out a sigh, "Miss Yu, you are drunk!"

"Ke ke ke!" Yu Li laughed madly and said, "I'm not drunk, I'm wide awake! You think I wasn't aware? Every time I went to class, you boys were always staring at my chest and looking at my buttocks. I clearly knew what was in your minds!"

She staggered to her feet, walked unsteadily and said, "Do you dare say that you won't want to sleep on me?"

Men had a tendency to act crazily when drunk but women doing the same were on an entirely different level!

Zhang Yang felt a twinge of guilt when he met her eyes. Because in his "memory", he really did sleep with her! The memories of her luscious and charming body were as vivid as day, down to her irresistible moans! Zhang

Yang gulped.

“Miss Yu, I have to go!”

“Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang!” Yu Li grabbed one of Zhang Yang’s wrists, “I really have no choice! More than 2,000,000 dollars is needed for a kidney and surgical fees, there’s no way I can afford that! Besides selling my body, I really don’t know what else there is to do! But if possible, I’d rather have you than be ruined by hundreds of strangers! I know you are rich, you can pay for 2,000,000 dollars easily. I know, because I helped you sell those potions two months ago! I have nothing but this body, please, take me in!”

Zhang Yang frantically said, “Miss Yu, I can lend you the money, just stop mentioning your bod -- selling your body anymore, please!”

“But, the follow-up treatment costs that would be a bottomless pit! Zhang Yang, I’m just a normal teacher, how could I possibly pay you back?” Yu Li shook her head, “Selling my body is still easier, I just have to open my legs and get pinned down by others for a while. It won’t kill me, right?”

She had lost her balance, as she fell sideways onto the couch, her eyes in hazy drunkenness.

These words would only show themselves in her intoxicated state. This strong, stubborn woman would never mention something like selling her body to anyone but secretly wipe off her tears and face her problems alone.

If it was not Zhang Yang accidentally getting involved tonight, it was probably difficult for Yu Li to escape her dark fate. After going through the ordeal in the hands of that corrupt official, in addition to the urgent need for money, Yu Li was probably pushed over the brink, having lost her chastity, and had decided to venture into the red light district.

Both of Yu Li’s hands held onto the sofa and she crawled to Zhang Yang’s side. She gazed at Zhang Yang with her seductive eyes, laughing incorrigibly and teased, “Little pervert, I know you liked me! Every time you attended my classes, you were trying to strip me with your eyes! Come on, I’m yours now, do whatever you wanted to me!”

Zhang Yang admitted that he definitely had to crush on Yu Li when he was studying at university. As a developed youth with a normal man's mind and the exuberant energy of youth, every time Yu Li taught in the class, inevitably, Zhang Yang would end up fantasizing about her! However, this matter was "five years ago" to him, and he had almost forgotten about it!

He stepped back a little as he said, "Miss Yu, it's true, I used to like you! But now I have someone else who I really like!"

"Oh!" Yu Li nodded her head with uninterested facial expression and said, "It is okay, I'm not going to marry you anyway! I just want to be your lover... five years, let me be your lover for five years, as long as you can help me pay the medical fees for my mum, I will not ask for anything else!"

Zhang Yang reached out to stroke her silky hair and said, "Miss Yu, if you do it like this, you are betraying your love! Have you thought about your boyfriend?" all the boys in their class knew that Yu Li had been in a relationship with her boyfriend for two to three years, which in an extent that they were going to marry. The news had hurt so many boys, making them insomniac and listless for the next few days!

"Him?" Yu Li started laughing hollowly once again while her facial expression was a mix between crying and laughing, "Once I found out my mum's disease, I quickly looked for him to solve the problem together! Guess what he did? Not only did he not offer to help in any way, he wanted to break up with me! He even wanted me to sleep with him to compensate for his years of disbursement!"

F*ck, such a jerk!

"But you still have to marry, sooner or later. Do you want to keep the memory of someone's mistress for a lifetime?"

"My mum worked so hard to raise me up. I'm willing to die for her!"

Bang!

These words were just like a boom exploding next to Zhang Yang's ears.

This is because the night on the night Lin Yu rejected the elopement with Zhang Yang, she had said the same thing!

Zhang Yang's heart was greatly disturbed as he could not help it but recall the fateful night after after hearing what Yu Li said.

Yu Li is selling her body because of her mother! In his previous life, she had sold her body to many guys, but in this life, she seemed to have another choice, to just sell her body to Zhang Yang alone! Still, no matter what, the fate of Yu Li selling her body seems unchanged!

But what's different here?

Lin Yu rejected Zhang Yang because of her mother's wishes and had chosen to marry Liu Wei, a man she who she did not love at all! Wasn't that is the same as selling her body? The only difference was that she used the marriage as the best packaging to whitewash her betrayal of love!

From Lin Yu and Yu Li's point of views, they were right to save their mothers' life out of filial piety! But from Zhang Yang's point of view, Lin Yu undoubtedly betrayed love and betrayed Zhang Yang!

In this life, Zhang Yang had the advantage of being reborn and it shouldn't be difficult for him to earn hundred of millions of dollars in assets and surpass Liu Wei! But if there was another guy with an equal amount of fortune, Lin Yu's mother would still force her to marry the other guy instead of Zhang Yang. Wouldn't Zhang Yang have to die and be reborn once again?

What if another guy with trillions of dollars in assets showed up?

There was no end in sight!

In his previous life, Lin Yu had abandoned him!

Zhang Yang unconsciously leaned against the couch, he was struck by a massive headache, like a few hundred pounds of weight had been placed on his head.

After the rebirth, he had been busy using the '5-years review' of the game to earn money. As long as he had spare time every day, he would

continuously recall the contents of the game and dungeon strategies, leaving him no time to think about anything else!

Now, Zhang Yang had finally come to realize the truth and faced a problem that he had refused to face in his previous life, did Lin Yu really loved him?

He had put in so much effort, was it all for naught?

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and thought in his mind, "Lin Yu should have loved me, but it was far from my imagination! In her world, love was not all. She is the child of a rich and big family, she was brought up with the idea that benefiting her family came above all other ideas. So, when there is conflict between love and family, she chooses... family!"

But if it was Sun Xin Yu, according to her temper, if the family forced her to marry a man she did not like, she would either shoot the hapless man dead, or take her own life. She would never compromise! This woman would be so committed to her ideals that, no amount of difficulty or danger would stop her!

Zhang Yang did not know why Sun Xin Yu popped up in his mind, suddenly, but he realized that it was a rather fond thought at that too. He suddenly found himself thinking of Han Ying Xue. Han Ying Xue...she may be such a tricky person, but Zhang Yang believed that she would definitely fight for her love to the bitter end as well!

Lin Yu was a dutiful daughter. But in love, she was a loser!

Suddenly, his enthusiasm to meet Lin Yu once again died off. On the contrary, he even felt a trace of fear, always recalling Lin Yu's cruel rejection on that night. Would it all be fine? Would it be the same with him and Lin Yu again?

Absolutely not!

The moment Lin Yu decided to marry Liu Wei, his impression on her had already dropped, whether he liked it or not, and it would only continue to crack further!

Zhang Yang felt extremely resentful and said, "Miss Yu, is there any

liquor?”

Yu Li thought for a while, shook her head and said, “No... but wait!” She walked unsteadily to a side of a cabinet, took out a bottle of soaked red bayberry and said, “Soaked red bayberry wine, do you consider that liquor?”

Zhou Su natives used white wine, soaked in red bayberry to cure diarrhea and abdominal pains. It is really effective and potent for that purpose.

“Yes, it is!” Zhang Yang just wanted to drink at this time, not caring about the quality of wine anymore!

Zhang Yang finished off the tea in his glass with a single gulp. He poured all the tea leaves in his glass into the ashtray and then filled up his glass with wine and started drinking the wine silently.

Yu Li watched him for a while, before also taking a glass and pouring herself some of the wine.

Drinking solves all worries!

In Zhang Yang’s memory, Lin Yu’s smile started to fade, slowly being replaced by a sense of betrayal and sorrow.

Zhang Yang knew that he had no right to blame Lin Yu, but he was also being hurt, his heart was covered in wounds. The degree of being hurt was much stronger than the the pain he felt on the day Lin Yu rejected eloping with him!

In his life, he had only been hurt to such an extent for three times.

The first time was when he was seven years old, and received news that his parents had died in a plane crash. He had cried alone all day long in his parent’s room.

The second time was when Liu Wei had sent a girl to become Zhang Yang’s lover. She soon stole all the stuff in Clear Water’s warehouse and left him a video to tell him the truth. Zhang Yang had put in a lot of effort in that relationship, and it had left him depressed for months.

Now, he was experiencing such pain for the third time!

Even though he had crippling wounds inflicted on him when in a fight, he could just grit his teeth and endure the pain! But the wounds in his heart were not as easily healed. Sometimes when he thought of that fraud who was the cause of all his pain, Luo Xin Yan, his heart would still ache.

Liu Wei!

Zhang Yang was at a loss as he did not know what to do, his eyes were wet with tears. Hatred had the same intensity as love. People would feel hurt by it and it gave a pain that was hard to forget! Even it was not for Lin Yu, but for revenge on Liu Wei who wanted to kill Zhang Yang in his previous life, Zhang Yang would definitely hunt Liu Wei down!

Having found a solution to his anger, he started drinking without holding anything back! Life could not move on without a direction, so his new resolution would be to surpass Liu Wei!

Zhang Yang unconsciously drank more and more, starting to get intoxicated. He even laughed along with Yu Li for no reason, clinking with her glass, exchanging slurred words that both of them could not hear, yet it somehow made them laugh even more. Eventually, they finished up the whole bottle of red bayberry wine!

Both of them finished up at least a gallon of wine, and very soon, both of them were punch-drunk. Zhang Yang was so disoriented that he went into the bedroom, took off his clothes and went to bed naked -- a habit he practiced at home!

He woke up once in the middle of the night, feeling thirsty. He tried to get up from bed to get himself a drink. But the moment he lifted his upper body off the bed, he would get overwhelmed by dizziness, and could only fall back to the bed. In his half-awake stupor, he felt somebody lying next to him.

“Fatty sh*t, go back to your dog house, I’m not gay!” Zhang Yang pulled the bed sheets to himself and kicked the person next to him off the bed. He occupied the whole bed and slept like a pig.

Chapter 207: Sleeping on the Wrong Bed

Headaches are never pleasant!

Zhang Yang finally woke up, but his whole body was stiff like a plank of wood. It was as if he had fought hundreds of people and took such a beating that he could not even feel his body. His head felt like it had been split open from the inside, like firecrackers continuously exploding in his head. He opened his eyes a little but quickly snapped them shut due to the dazzling sunlight.

Damn, how much did I drunk?

Zhang Yang could only lie there unmovingly, at the whims of his catatonic body.

Damn it, how did I end up drinking so much, yesterday? This is self-torture, I have to stop doing this!

By the way... How did I get home yesterday? Zhang Yang's mind suddenly popped up a question and the memory flashed back immediately. Last night, he was attending a classmate reunion, and then they went to karaoke. After that, he met Yu Li who was nearly violated by others, he had a fight with them and then he beat down a group of karaoke's guards then all of them went to the public security. Next, Zhang Yang sent Yu Li home...

How come there was no memory after sending Yu Li home?

He actually did not have any idea what happened after that, so how did he actually get home?

Pa!

Just as Zhang Yang was wondering, a hand was suddenly placed on his chest. His eyes burst wide open. The dazzling sunlight struck him in its full force, but he was too bewildered to care about it, as he squinted, his eyes finally focused on a person sleeping next to him. It wasn't Fatty Han. It was quite the opposite -- a sexy woman with long hair, a voluptuous body shape, clad only in a cotton t-shirt and T-back undergarment, she

was Yu Li!

He himself was buck naked, and his left hand was beneath Yu Li's neck where it had reached her front, grabbing hold of her ample, firm bosom.

No way!

Could it be the same as it was in his previous life, did they have drunken sex?

Zhang Yang gazed at his manhood that would stand at attention every morning, trying to see any indicator if it got some action last night. But he had drank too much last night, his whole body was numb including that member!

Did they do anything last night?

What shocked Zhang Yang was that he did not feel any guilt whatsoever! Lin Yu... Zhang Yang was speechless as he did not know if he still loved her, as his new perspective on her betrayal had hurt Zhang Yang's soul badly. Zhang Yang did not really know how he felt towards her right now.

"Em, my head hurts!" Yu Li groaned, her long eyelashes fluttered a little and she slowly opened up her eyes but the dazzling sunlight immediately forced her eyes shut. She twisted her snake-like body and nuzzled up even closer to Zhang Yang's body, mumbling sleepily, "Fei Fei, when did you come back?"

Zhang Yang was frozen in fear, his mind racing for a way out!

Yu Li slapped Zhang Yang's erect manhood, which twanged like a radio antenna. She even reached out and touched it, murmuring, "Fei Fei, what did you bring to bed? So hard and long, ke ke, just like a real man's! Little brat, don't tell me....you went ahead and bought that thing?"

She reluctantly raised her body off the bed, turning to look at Zhang Yang through her messy bangs.

Eh, since when did Fei Fei go for plastic surgery?

Wait, no! That face was so familiar. It was her ex-student, Zhang Yang!

Yu Li was so shocked that her fingers that were wrapped around the

meat pole squeezed, hard!

"Ah!"

Both of their voices were raised at the same time, one in shock, the other in pain!

"You... you..." Yu Li was scared, her face turned pale, "Hooligan, beast, jerk!" she started tearing up.

Zhang Yang tried to ignore the pain in his lower region and rushed at Yu Li. Throwing himself onto Yu Li, he reached out to cover her mouth because she looked like she was about to run away and call for help! Zhang Yang put on his most urgent expression and asked, "Miss Yu, please try to recall!"

Yesterday... a series of scenes flashed back in Yu Li's mind. First, she was invited to karaoke, where she was forced to drink a lot of alcohol. In her drunken state, she somehow noticed Hou Bi Hua and that fatty Qian's pervert gazes, so she struggled to escape from the room. After that, she met her ex-student, Zhang Yang. Afterwards...

All the memories flashed back in Yu Li's mind, included her shamelessly asking Zhang Yang to take her in. She remembered the both of them getting wasted, but she had no idea how she ended up in the bed with him.

When Zhang Yang saw Yu Li slowly calming down, he let out a sigh and said, "I'm going to let go now, you won't scream, right?"

Yu Li blinked her eyes repeatedly in pointed fashion, Zhang Yan removed his hand, and the both of them stared at each other in awkward silence.

"Zhang Yang..." a few seconds later, Yu Li said, "I'm serious about what I mentioned last night! If I had not been drunk, I would not have dared mention it all. I know that it is shameless but I do not care about my self-esteem any longer! I'll be your lover if you support me financially!"

"Miss Yu, don't be like this. I will give you money to cure your mother's disease, no returns, for real!" Zhang Yang said sincerely.

Yu Li smiled a little, getting more comfortable with the topic, "I'm not somebody important in your life, how could I just take your money without any return? This is a debt that I can never pay off in my lifetime. I don't know anything else, I'm going crazy here! Take my body, this the only thing that I can offer!"

It had always been the bad guy forcing the beauty to sleep with him, why was the situation now reversed? A devil spoke within Zhang Yang's mind, "Stupid fellow, what are you waiting for, accept the deal! Didn't you want her so badly when you were studying in university? The opportunity is in front of you right now, you can do whatever you want to her!"

However, because Zhang Yang liked Yu Li. He genuinely did. There's no way he'll toy with her in such manner!

Besides, his soul had been continuously hurt by Luo Xin Yan¹ and Lin Yu. At least for now, he definitely did want to be in a relationship with any woman.

He shook his head and said, "Could not it be considered as me being concerned?"

"If you did not use that thing beneath your body to touch me, perhaps I would still believe you!" Yu Li said coolly.

Zhang Yang's face went deep crimson, to his own surprise. His meat pole that had been gripped hard by Yu Li was starting to rise to the occasion again. Before this, in his attempt to stop her from screaming, he had pinned her plump and fascinating body with his little accomplice standing upright against Yu Li's smooth belly.

This time Zhang Yang had nowhere to run! His own body had betrayed him!

"This is accidental!" Zhang Yang explained, never actually expecting Yu Li to trust him.

"Then everything here is accidental?" Yu Li, revealing her mature side, openly said, "To successfully sleep with your ex-teacher, don't boys dream of that all the time? Otherwise, why are there so many scandals involving

teachers and students all the time?"

Zhang Yang was stunned and speechless, he was deep in thought and asked, "Did we do anything last night?" This is very important as it would break him to know that something happened between them under drunken conditions. Yu Li was someone he liked, and he did not want to put her through this.

"What do you mean?" Yu Li asked him back.

"It is like... you know right?"

"I don't know!"

"..."

"Yes, we did something last night!" Yu Li suddenly answered.

Out of the blue, Zhang Yang was astonished as he actually did it with Yu Li under the influence of alcohol! He glanced at the messy bed sheet and said, "We did not do anything last night! There are no bloodstains on the bed!"

Yu Li was astounded and asked, "You think I'm a virgin?"

"You said yesterday, your boyfriend wanted to do it with you, as compensation for his loss! It's like a god damned geisha offering! This showed that the two of you have not done it before!"

"He was not my first boyfriend!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and an idea came up to his mind, "Since she would only accept my help on condition that I take her in as a lover, I'll just go ahead and let her do it! If it is Sun Xin Yu, I would have been afraid of her taking the gun and forcing me to bed, but Yu Li has no gun, what's there to fear! What the heck, I wanted to do good, how could it end up like this? Besides, what am I actually so afraid of, it's not like I have never slept with any woman before in previous life!"

"All right, we did not do anything last night, I'm still a virgin. So you should be satisfied with it now, right? Don't men feel proud when they pop a girl's cherry??" Yu Li was staring at the ceiling, speaking in a

monotone of a person who has given up hope, "Five years, I will give you five years of youth and beauty. That should be able to pay off my debt to you!"

"Miss Yu..."

"That's not enough? Let me count it out for you, my bestie said, according to my beauty, I could sell at least 2,000 dollars a night. To cure my mum's disease completely, I'd need about 3,000,000 dollars. So, you have to sleep with me 1,500 times for a fair trade, I wouldn't lose much!"

"Yu Li!" Zhang Yang couldn't bear it any longer and raise his voice in anger, "You freaking stop insulting yourself! I don't want to talk to you about selling your body or pure soul or any of that bullsh*t! If you feel miserable then you should cry it out, but stop saying such things!"

Yu Li astounded and looked at Zhang Yang, her tears filled up her eyes and she yelled, "What woman wants to be a b*tch? I can't think of anything else other than selling my body! I'm just a normal woman, I am not a strong woman, other than teaching, I don't know how to earn more money! Of course! Of course I want my self-esteem, but if I have to do it this way, there's no point caring about my dignity! Even if I insist on having a clear conscience, I'm still a b*tch who's selling her body!"

Both of them suddenly became silent.

"Ka!"

The sound of unlocking came from the outside, and a woman walked in. She closed the door shut, leaving her shoes at door. She called out, "Yu Li, you're such a lazy bum, you're going to be late! Look at the time!"

She was taking off her clothes as she walked towards the bedroom saying, "Night shifts are the worst! Sigh, why am I still not married to a good husband yet? I'll happily be a housewife!"

She pushed the unlatched bedroom's door, having most of her clothes stripped off. All she had left on was a red T-bag undergarment. She had taken off her bra and was holding it in her hands. When she headed up, she was shocked as she saw Yu Li and a naked man on the bed!

"Ah!" the girl screamed immediately and quickly grabbed the bed sheet close by to cover up her body.

"Ei, it's you!" In her shock, she somehow recognized Zhang Yang and cried out.

Zhang Yang had a new headache to deal with now! She was the person he saved during the bank robbery, Yan Fei Fei!

Translator Note:

1Luo Xin Yan: She will be appearing in the far future.

Chapter 208: Lovelorn?

Relatively speaking, Zhang Yang was even more ashamed of his nakedness. Now TWO ladies have seen all of him. He grabbed a pillow and covered his lower body and saying with forced casualness, "Oh, you and Miss Yu staying together!"

"Miss Yu?" Yan Fei Fei was greatly surprised. She pointed at Yu Li and Zhang Yang and said, "You guys are teacher-student lovers!" Her finger went lower and, she immediately screamed, "That's my pillow. Damn it, that's my favourite pillow!"

"Fei Fei, get out!" Yu Li said.

Yan Fei Fei quickly nodded her head and hurriedly escaped from bedroom where she locked herself in bathroom.

"Put on your clothes!" Yu Li picked up the clothes from each corner that scattered over the floor. She even generously helped Zhang Yang into his clothes.

A surge of warmth emerged across Zhang Yang's mind. He had never felt at "home" like this before. Since his parents had died, he never had such an experience before.

"You know Fei Fei?" Yu Li simply asked while she was helping Zhang Yang button up his shirt.

"I think I do!"

Zhang Yang had just started to tell the story concerning the bank robbery incident, when Yu Li suddenly interrupted, "Oh! You are that great life saver and millionaire dude that she talks about all the time!"

"What?"

"Fei Fei is my high school classmate and she is from an ordinary family. She has a brother, but she was urged out of the house once her brother got married. Coincidentally, I sold my house, so both of us rented a house and are staying together. She has always had a dream to get married to a millionaire husband. Ever since she saw your bank savings, she had been

obsessed about you! Let's not mention that you even saved her in more ways than one!"

Yu Li patted Zhang Yang's chest as she smiled and said, "Okay, done!"

Zhang Yang could not help but frown as the current problem had not yet been resolved and yet another one was coming! He quickly said, "Miss Yu, I'll head back first! When I log on to the game, I will transfer the money to your account! By the way, my money is invested in something now and my current cash flow isn't quite there yet, so I need about three to four days to raise 2,000,000 dollars!"

"I got it!"

"... I'm leaving!"

"Wait a minute. I will try my best to be your lover!" Yu Li suddenly grabbed Zhang Yang, she stood on her toes and kissed his lips with her cheeks blushed, "Do not be so good to me, otherwise, I won't be satisfied as a lover alone!"

...

It was really inexplicable. Zhang Yang grabbed a cab and went back to his house. The headache from his hangover was still there, so he simply went back to sleep until 2.00 PM in the afternoon. After waking up, he ate his lunch then he logged on to the game.

"Ha ha ha, Little Yang, your physical fitness is so poor! Last night I 'did' it five times continuously and one night's rest was enough! Little brat, you should train your endurance up!" Fatty Han immediately turned on voice messenger, "By the way, who was that pretty woman last night? How come I've never seen her before? Oh, is she your university schoolmate?"

This fatty sh*t did not hear Zhang Yang calling her Miss Yu last night? Whatever, it was better if he knew nothing. Otherwise, Fatty Han would tease him endlessly! Zhang Yang said, "If you say so.."

"Hey, Little Yang, we are brothers, you can't be hiding anything from me!"

"You better figure out a solution for Wu Hai Li and Yun Yun, it's never easy handling two relationships at once!" Zhang Yang immediately changed the topic.

"Nah, that's easy, Wu Hai Li just loves money. I will fight for more equipment and sell them all and she'll be mine!" Fatty Han laughed with glee, pretending to know more than he was letting on and said, "Little Yang, Wu Hai Li wasn't that upright disciplinary committee member with justice written all over her face we thought we knew. When she's in bed, you have no idea how much of a freak she is, she nearly drained all my energy last night!"

"... Fatty sh*t, if you continue this, you're going to die on the bed one day!"

"Bullsh*t, at least 90% of deaths occur on the bed anyway! By the way, I forgot to mention, someone will come to you later!"

"Who?"

"Li Ru, that buxom ooh lala beauty!"

"Damn it, did you tell her my ID?"

"I'm so sorry, Little Yang. You know I'm weak against women, that evil woman squeezed her chest in front of me, even calling me 'brother fatty' with her sweet voice, then I revealed your ID! I wanted to reveal more info but that evil woman already ran off, she really made me mad!"

"F*ck you, fatty sh*t!"

"Little Yang, she's a really beautiful girl. I really don't understand why you keep on rejecting her! We are wolves, why are you still pretending to be a sheep?! She passed my Q.C. you can go ahead and f*ck her!"

"F*ck her my *ss!"

"Bullsh*t. If I had a sister, I would have already married her to you and gotten myself a nephew by now!"

Zhang Yang could only frown at the increasingly ridiculous statements.

"Ah, that evil woman just logged on the game. I'll leave you two alone!"

Fatty Han immediately ended the voice chat.

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again while he was rushing to Auction House. It had become part of his routine by now. This was because every there and now, good stuff would pop up in the Auction House, be it items sold by those players who did not understand the equipment or items' value, or players who were feeling generous for some reason. So whoever gets lucky would get such prices from Auction House!

'Ding! Player Button-Free Lass sent you a friend request. Will you accept it?'

That's correct, she was Li Ru! This is because she told Zhang Yang her IGN yesterday.

Since his identity had already been revealed by Fatty Han, it was hard for him to refuse Li Ru's request! So Zhang Yang selected "Accept". After a while, the voice messenger request rang.

"Sh*tty Zhang Yang. You are Lone Desert Smoke's guild master and you told me that you didn't have the authority to invite players!" once the voice messenger turned on, Li Ru started scolding Zhang Yang.

"Wey wey wey, how come I cannot hear the sound? Wey wey, are you still there?"

"Ha Ha!" Li Ru smiled slyly and said, "Alright, alright, stop pretending, I'll stop blaming you, okay? Guild master, please invite me to your guild. At most, tell me about the unspoken rules!"

"I'll have to warn you, you can't simply flirt around in our guild or cause any other disturbances!"

"Cheh, you think I'm that much of a skank? Don't worry, I only have eyes for you!" Li Ru laughed proudly, "Currently, I only have two targets. The first is to join Lone Desert Smoke. En, I'm almost there! The second is to seduce a guy named Zhang Yang and f*ck him. Both targets would be achieved with a nod from your head!"

Was this woman suitable to join Lone Desert Smoke? Zhang Yang felt that she would be a better fit in Crimson Rage as that bunch of crazy

women spoke the same language as Li Ru!

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he sent a guild invitation to Li Ru. Instantly, an announcement popped up in guild channel notifying that a new member has joined the guild. As Hundred Shots prohibited the members from chatting in the guild channel, the announcement of Li Ru joining the guild was very eye-catching.

"Hello everyone, I'm Button-free Lass, this is my first time joining such a big family, please take of me in the future!" Li Ru spoke in guild channel.

"Chatting is prohibited in guild channel. Because you just joined the guild and do not know about our guild rules, I will not deduct your guild's contribution points this time. Please take note!" Hundred Shots immediately responded to Li Ru's message in guild channel. Currently, besides eating and sleeping, Hundred Shots was using all his energy in managing the guild, and he worked so conscientiously that his fame in guild was just slightly lower than Zhang Yang.

Li Ru was shocked and quickly sent a message to Zhang Yang, "Why is this person so fierce? It's forbidden to even send messages in guild?!"

Zhang Yang laughed and explained, "There are a lot of members in the guild, if everyone sends messages, the guild channel will be a total mess. Just in case there is any emergency situation, everyone would not notice it the first time! Thus, that is why we have such a rule!"

"Oh!" Li Ru had finally understood and said, "That's good, it feels like a big corporate! Guilds that are messy and noisy all day long would not be effective in combat!"

Both of them chatted for a little while more before Li Ru decided to go for training as she was just Level 37. In order to match the level of the members in guild, Li Ru needed to train day and night for a long time!

Zhang Yang searched around in the Auction house and did not find any good stuff. He decided to leave the Auction House and head for his guild shop.

Zhang Yang had been busy fighting for [Fire Resistance Potion] recipe

on previous days and he was not free to auction those Yellow-Gold equipment he looted from seizing fortress. Since he was free now, he decided to auction all of them.

Zhang Yang used the name of Little Merchandize Shop to make an announcement, "Dear friends, the merchandize shop has three pieces of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment, and all of them will be auctioned tomorrow at 7.00 PM! The equipment includes one weapon and two armors. Take note that they are not just any ordinary Yellow-Gold equipment but parts of the second set equipment! They can be mixed with Gray-Silver, Green-Copper and Black-Steel for set equipment effects! These two armors for set equipment are Cryomancer and Sniper's boots while the weapon is a one-handed sword. For interested parties, please do not forget the time, the auction will be started tomorrow at 7.00PM!"

Once the announcement was made, all the players in White Jade Castle were excited, even the players from Violet Star City, Emerald City and the rest of seven main cities got wind of the announcement. Cryomancers and Snipers all over were even more excited to join the auction! The highest grade of set equipment from dungeons was only Gray-Silver, so anyone equipped with Yellow-Gold set equipment would be one cut above all others! The Level 60 Yellow-Gold one-handed sword also brought the attention of Bandits, Guardians and Defenders!

After this auction, the reputation of Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop was surely going to increase even further and bring in more cash!

Zhang Yang checked the current level of guild members. Except for the eight people in his gang, the current highest level was 49 which was only one step away from Level 50! At least two or three days would be needed to gather a 20-man exploration team.

In the evening, Zhang Yang led the team to fight against the Castle.

All the while, Lin Yu was on his mind -- and not in the good way. Along the journey of fighting the Castle, he was silent and did not talk much but released his anger on the monsters.

"Pervert fatty, what's wrong with noob tank?" Little brat asked with

curiosity.

Fatty Han thought in deep and very hard then he answered, "I don't know!"

"He was still fine yesterday. It must be due to the classmate reunion that you attended!" Han Ying Xue interrupted.

"Ah! I figured it out!" Fatty Han patted his thigh, "Little Yang must be lovelorn!"

Qiang!

Sun Xin Yu glared at Fatty Han as she tightened her grip on her daggers, prepared to interrogate Fatty Han for more information if necessary.

Chapter 209: Poisonous Fireland

Fortunately for Fatty Han, he continued to explain, unaware of the danger he was in moments ago, "The girl brother Yang fell in love with in high school is about to marry to someone else in this coming May! Would anyone feel good about this?"

Sun Xin Yu relaxed and sheathed her daggers.

Wei Yan Er was curiously agitated, so she tried to pry for more, "Fatty, please be more specific about it!"

Daffodil Daydream had also become mightily curious, and she begged for more information, "Say it! Say it!"

"Fatty, stop saying sh*t!" Zhang Yang hacked a monster to death and turned to Fatty Han to issue a warning.

Fatty Han threw both of his hands up, pretending to be helpless and said, "Little Yang, you know that my will is weak, especially against these sex bombs right here!"

"F*ck!" but after giving it some thought, Zhang Yang realized that Fatty Han did not know anything that he should not know, so he just left him be.

Fatty Han smiled broadly and told the gang about what that had transpired during the night of the gathering. Coming out from his mouth, it was natural that he turned Zhou Kang Ming even more insidious in his story, using money to lure Zhao Hui Shan step after step closer into his arms, implicitly trying to humiliate Zhang Yang by the table, completely shaping the two into the image of a pair of adulterers, describing the guy as the Xi Men Qing¹ and the girl as Pan Jin Lian².

Zhang Yang felt more uneasy as he listened further, if he's describing them as Xi Men Qing and Pan Jin Lian, wouldn't he be the Wu Da Lang in the story?

"Wah! That's just so disgusting!" Wei Yan Er immediately soared with a sense of justice, "If I'd known about this earlier, I would have gone there

and given that shameless pair of adults some serious slapping!"

"Zhan Yu, how pitiful!" passionate Daffodil Daydream was already wiping her tears, her eyes red and puffy.

"Wu Da --- erm, brother Zhan Yu, the world is full of colorful flowers, there's no need to shower your love on one flower only! Look at our small party, full of ladies as pretty as flowers and jades, why would you reject what is near at hand and seek so far away instead!" Endless Starlight spoke his voice out without fearing death.

This bunch of people! Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh, "I'm not broken-hearted, alright! My relationship with her was like hundreds of years ago, please stop making assumptions about my past!"

"No can do!" Wei Yan Er pulled up her sleeves relentlessly and said, "There is only one person in the world can bully noob tank, only me! Hmph! Xi Men Qing and Pan Jin Lian, just wait till I turn up to them and tear down their house!"

As it seemed, the little girl was really into her character!

Han Ying Xue laughed and made a proposal, "Silly Yu, if there is another classmate gathering around, I shall go and make a good impression of you! Just give me a hundred and eighty pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and I shall allow you to pretend to be my boyfriend for the night!"

"That is not the righteous path, my sister!" Wei Yan Er gave a few taps on Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "We are out here to mix into society, and the number one rule we always put in our heart is to have loyalty. Noob tank, I will help you!"

Zhang Yang stared at Han Ying Xue incredulously and asked, "'Young and Dangerous'?"

"Sigh, I have absolutely no idea on where she downloaded it from!" Han Ying Xue sighed in surrender.

After clearing up the dungeon, the party was for everyone to have their own free time.

Zhang Yang went back to the Little Merchandize Shop. Excited by his previous announcement on the Yellow-Gold auction, the shop was crowded with people, making the whole atmosphere very lively! He pulled up the sales record to see, and he was instantly stunned by what he saw, his profit margin had actually reached up to 400,000 gold coins!

He could not believe his own eyes at first, but as he thought about it, he realized: Currently, the eight main cities in China region have all been connected, players can travel to any one of the main cities by the Teleportation Points, and the cost for traveling between these cities was free! Therefore, when players knew that the Little Merchandize Shop was in possession of level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment pieces, players from other main cities will deliberately crowd up the little shop. Once it's crowded, there will always be people making purchases, one purchase after another, raising the number of sales in the shop.

It was the only private property in the entirety of China, if not globally. To add on to the history of The Little Merchandize Shop also auctioning out a guild upgrade order, the level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment pieces only made it even more popular. With such success in raising the shop's popularity, it would not be that surprising if the business of the shop wasn't good!

Exchanging the 270,000 gold pieces earned from yesterday and 400,000 gold pieces earned from today into cash, with the addition of Zhang Yang's savings of 700,000 in his account, there should be around 3,000,000 in total. With this amount of money transferred to Yu Li's account, it should already be enough for her to treat her mother.

In just awhile, Yu Li messaged back with four words, saying that, "Money has been received!"

She did not express any gratitude, it was most probably because she felt like she was trading her own body for the money. It was a business transaction, nothing else. She would not owe Zhang Yang anything else.

The night of the following day, the Little Merchandize Shop begun its second, highly popular auction, pushing 3 pieces of Yellow-Gold

equipment onto the table. It was already very rare to see players with a full set of level 40 Gray-Silver equipment. With players knowing that there would be a sale on level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment, and armor set pieces to add on to that, the shop was instantly clogged up to capacity!

Zhang Yang had no choice but to implement a measure, 500,000 gold pieces had to be handed over as deposit upon entering the shop, eliminating a large number of players who went there as bystanders. Players would be able to reclaim their deposits when they leave, or they can also place bids by using the deposits as part of the payment.

After half an hour of auctioning, all three pieces of Yellow-Gold pieces had been purchased. Among the pieces, the [Spiritual Boots] was auctioned out at the high price of 760,000 gold pieces, while the [Hunt of the Sniping Giant] was auctioned at a more inferior price of 480,000 gold pieces! The weapon, being the most valuable of all pieces as always, was auctioned out at the extreme price of 970,000 gold pieces!

"It seems that Spellcasters tend to be richer!" Zhang Yang sighed.

The profit of 2,000,000 gold pieces was equally divided among the eight party members, with each person getting their cut of 250,000 gold pieces. The profit was so handsome that Fatty Han and the others were smiling to the point that their eyes were narrowed into a straight line! The remaining 210,000 gold pieces were kept in the guild's account to carry out some regular expenses.

Another two days had passed, the Lone Desert Smoke had finally obtained a total of 20 level 50 players. Zhang Yang put Endless Starlight and Hundred Shots in charge of the parties, first off to clear the normal mode and the hard mode of the Poison Fireland. The first reason was to accumulate equipment, and the second reason was to familiarize themselves with the patterns and skills of the boss, building a firm ground for them in exploring the Death Mode of the dungeon.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream departed for the Centaur's Palace. It was still alright to forego the other bosses, but Zac is a level 50 Yellow-Gold boss,

they wouldn't miss it at any chance they got whenever it respawned! Following the advancement of their levels and equipment, they were strong enough to completely crush the monsters and the bosses of the Centaur's Palace. Previously, it took them about five to 6 days to complete the dungeon, but now, one night was all it took for them to handle everything.

Lone Desert Smoke spent only half a day to reclaim the dungeon in Normal Mode, while Hard Mode took two days. Even then, they had to rely on Zhang Yang to provide [Fire resistance Potions] before they managed to slaughter the final boss Roshan - Copper Hammer.

Within these two days, as the large guilds sent their main forces to the Poison Fireland, the cost for [Iron Ores], [Iron Bars] and [Solid Iron Bars] were rising quietly without alerting anyone. The [Iron bar]s, initially sold for the price of 2 gold pieces per set was not questioned by anyone, so they slowly increased the price to 6 gold pieces per set. Even so, the iron bars were in such short supply that even the auction house ran out of [Iron Bar]s!

Every crooked profiteer had already gotten the news that players had to pay a [Solid Iron Bar] to the NPC stationed by the entrance of the dungeon in exchange for an immunity against the erosion effect of the poison fire! Ever since then, they had been mining competitively for [Iron Ore], [Iron Bars] and [Solid Iron Bars], waiting for more people to reach level 50, where they planned to further increase the price of iron bars.

Although the iron ores were the most common mineral raw materials, but they simply could not accommodate the sheer numbers of miners. Furthermore, only regions of level 30 or below will produce an infinite supply of the ore. A sophisticated miner can mine up to 80-100 pieces of iron ores in an hour, but if the same region is full of miners competing for ores, their yield would be greatly diminished.

Although the number of miners knew about the appreciating price of the iron bars, ores could only refresh by so much in a day, so they quickly reached maximum output, which wasn't enough!

The demand was lower than the supply!

Therefore, although the mainstream players were still around level 45 or so, the crazy season of [Solid Iron Bar] sales had already begun! After all, they would be needing 100 [Iron Bar]s to craft one [Solid Iron Bar]!

It was definitely exceeded Zhang Yang's expectation, as he believed that one Solid iron bar could only be sold at 5 gold pieces each. But, judging from the currently increasing price of the item, many Solid iron bars were quickly sold at 20 gold each, which got him sighing with mixed feelings.

It was also true, the price of 5 gold pieces for each, that was the price quotation in his previous life, and it was about two and a half years after the open server!

Zhang Yang no longer hesitated, immediately commanding Natalia to begin selling solid iron bars. He didn't want to be too greedy, and decided to follow mainstream price of 12 gold coins. That would suffice.

In just two days, the Little Merchandize Shop had sold a total of 130,000 solid iron bars. The number of sales for the first day was 50,000, while the number had increased up to 80,000 on the second day. The total profit was 1,300,000 gold pieces for the Little Merchandize Shop --- excluding the auctioning of the Guild Upgrade Order and some Yellow-Gold equipment which were special occasions, this profit of 1,300,000 gold pieces were totally belonged to Zhang Yang alone!

Instantly exchanging the gold pieces to some cash, the numerical value in Zhang Yang's saving account was increased from a pitiful 7,000 dollars to 3,000,000, and then to a total of 6,900,000 -- it was just like riding a roller coaster!

Following the uninterrupted sales of the [Solid Iron Bar], the space of the warehouse was slowly cleared out, allowing Zhang Yang to store more of the [Fire Resistance Potion].

On the night of 15th October, Zhang Yang selected 20 players according to the suitability of their professions, before leading the party over to the Poison Fireland dungeon.

‘Ding! You have entered Poison Fireland (Hardcore Mode)!’

Stepping over the entrance of the dungeon, a land of red flames appeared right in front of everyone. Every then and now, larva would spring up from the ground, spitting terrifying beams of light into the sky. The whole space was enshrouded in red mist, giving them poor visibility.

At the entrance, stood a stout, 1 meter tall Dwarf whose beard flowed freely to his chest, with braided long hair. The name: ‘Dwarven Prophet Ankla - The Ale’ hovered right above his head.

[Ankla - The Ale] (Normal, Humanoid creature)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 10

A yellow named NPC, a non-aggressive type.

"Hey there, travelers, what are you guys up to? Passing this area full of fire and poison? Oh god, how can there be such stupid people in the world, to actually traverse this land, do you want to return to the embrace of the great god Titan in such a hurry? "Ankla immediately starting whining strangely after seeing everyone in sight.

"How many times have these brains of yours been stomped on by donkeys, in order to attain this level of stupidity? Even the most stupid Tupala Beast is so much brighter than you are!" Ankla was spraying his saliva like twinkling stars at everyone, with both of his hands on his hips, in a ‘know-it-all’ posture.

Endless Starlight and the others had completed the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode, so they were expecting some rather mean words from this NPC, and took it in stride. But Wei Yan Er is like a firecracker, once lit, guaranteed to explode! Instantly, she was provoked, and she took out her axe and snarled at that NPC, "Stinky shorty, I shall smash you flat with my axe if you insist on speaking like that!"

Ankla instantly exploded in anger, pointing his finger at Wei Yan Er’s

nose, shouting, "Little b*tch! How dare you show such disrespect towards the great Ankla?"

Seeing how furious the little girl was as she shouted back at him, Zhang Yang smiled lightly and informed her, "Little girl, if I were you, I wouldn't touch this NPC!"

Wei Yan Er curled up her lips in a battle-like snarl before saying, "What is there to be afraid of? It's just a level 1 shorty!" Although she spoke in that manner, she slung her axe over her back anyway.

On such a rare occasion was she willing enough to calm down at Zhang Yang's advice, but Ankla was not willing to let it go just like that, and with a loud 'Pui!', he spat on the little girl's shoe.

"Argh --- you short piece of shit! I'm mad now!" How could Wei Yan Er endure such a humiliation? So she pulled out her axe from her back and cleaved the NPC into two.

'Pak!'

The level 1 NPC only had 50 health points, with just a gentle touch, he fell straight down to the ground. Wei Yan Er was full of herself as she said, "Noob tank, this stinky NPC was nothing after all, slaughtered like a ---"

Boom!

A huge claw suddenly descended from the sky, flattening the little girl's body with a damage value of '-100,000', and she was reduced to a flattened corpse, half sunken in the ground.

The body of Ankla had disappeared completely, replaced by a gigantic dragon. Its whole body was covered in deep blue scales, looking just like a gigantic lizard with a pair of wings. The gang that stood in front of the dragon were completely dwarfed by its size.

[Deez Twork the Blue Dragon] (Ethereal boss, Dragon type)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

"So, your brain was really damaged by the kicks of donkeys, to actually dare to attack the great blue dragon!" The blue dragon shook its head, with an expression saying 'This person is stupid beyond cure'.

Shoof, a blue light flashed, this gigantic dragon had returned back into a dwarf.

Han Ying Xue quickly rescued Wei Yan Er. She got up, with tears in her eyes, "Stinky noob tank, why didn't you warn me about his ability to transform!"

"I did not even have to chance to say it before you already started swinging your weapon at him!" Zhang Yang was trying to resist himself from laughing.

Wei Yan Er stood at one side, pouting as she stared relentlessly at Ankla, but her face suddenly lit up and she made a suggestion, "If we kill him, then there will be drops of Ethereal equipment?!"

Zhang Yang burst into laughter and replied, "Didn't you see the attack that got you with '100,000' damage? Do you really think we can kill them?"

Wei Yan Er sighed in despair, went to one side and started drawing circles in the ground while cursing the gigantic dragon that disguised itself as a dwarf.

Actually, even if players managed to take down an NPC, there would be no spoils, whatsoever. In his previous life, some Level 150+ players had traveled all the way back to take down this blue dragon, but they did not even get a single fart! Still, it wasn't like he could tell her that.

Zhang Yang went up to Ankla and asked, "O great Blue Dragon, may I consult your great wisdom for ways to aid us across this vast land of poison fire?"

Ankla raised his frowned face and spoke in pride, "It is indeed your luck to come across me! It's such a coincidence that I have some of these potions, they can aid on protecting you from the corrosion of the poison fire damage!"

"However, you'll need to hand over some [Solid Iron Bar] for them!" the gigantic dragon, disguised as a dwarf expressed a face of greed as he spoke.

Zhang Yang turned around and smiled, then he said, "The dragon race is definitely very fond of glittering shiny things. They're stingy, the attitude in which there is only taking and no giving is quite similar to two certain members of our party, stingy and petty!"

Wei Yan Er was instantly provoked, putting herself in the shoe that fit, snapping at Zhang Yang with rage, "Noob tank, who are you talking about!"

Everyone traded a solid iron bar to Ankla respectively while the dwarf buffed them in turn, having collected the solid iron bar from each of them.

[Ankla's Blessing]: Allows you to resist against the corrosion of poison fire, the effect will remain even after death, last for 5 hours.

Translator Notes:

1. Xi Men Qing - describing a man in 'The Reincarnation of Golden Lotus' who is lustful and rich, used money to sleep with another man's wife (Pan Jin Lian).

2. Pan Jin Lian - describing a woman in 'The Reincarnation of Golden Lotus' who is full of lust and unfaithful. Wife of Wu Da Lang.

3. Wu Da Lang - describing a man in 'The Reincarnation of Golden Lotus' who is betrayed by his wife (Pan Jin Lian) while he was working hard to earn money out there.

4. Young and Dangerous - A 1996, notoriously popular, crime-action-thriller film in Hong Kong.

Chapter 210: Connecting the Six Cities

"Forward!" Zhang Yang gave the command to push forward after every single one of the party members had been buffed.

Pong! Pong! Pong!

Approximately 10 meters away from where they stood, the thick mist dispersed and there came a humanoid stone giant, as tall as 10-meter tall, maybe taller, deep crimson in color. Every step it took rocked the ground with tremors.

[Poison Fire Giant] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 54

Hp: 1,000,000

Defense: 600

"Charge!" Zhang Yang shouted with a loud voice, pulling out his axe and used [charge] to shoulder-check the monster.

"Ao---" the Poison Fire Giant roared in rage, swinging it's giant fists at Zhang Yang.

‘-2,267!’

With one slap across him, it only took away 1/6 of Zhang Yang's health points, it was not even worth mentioning! One must know that Zhang Yang's current Defense value had reached 420, with a damage absorption of 600 points! This was why the basic damage of the monster had been brought down from approximately 4,000 damage to 2,000 damage!

The party members ganged up on the monster, and standing in a circle, one after another they unleashed their attacks on the Poison Fire Giant.

The Poison Fire Giant had only one skill with group knockdown effect, followed closely by a burning shock wave which dealt 4000 damage points to all targets within a 20 meter radius. However, with Zhang Yang's [vitality aura] in effect, even the player with lowest HP exceeded 4,000 HP, and it was absolutely unnecessary to worry about anyone dying.

The total damage per second of the whole party reached a total of 200,000 damage, it took less than a minute to destroy the Poison Fire Giant with 1,000,000 health points. Swiftly chiseled away, the monster exploded and dropped a few pieces of rock fragments and a piece of crimson red crystal.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes, instantly picking up that piece of crimson red crystal from the ground.

[Fire Crystal Substance] (Special Item)

Use: Divides 1 piece of Fire Crystal Substance into 10 pieces of Fire Crystal Shards.

Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue stared to each other and exchanging sinister smiles.

As the party proceeded forward, they slaughtered another four Poison Fire Giants. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were actually beginning to compete with Zhang Yang for the Fire Crystal Substance. These Fire Crystal Substance did not fall every time, but the drop rate was quite high nevertheless, and out of five monsters, 4 pieces of Fire Crystal Substance will drop. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had managed to snatch one for themselves each.

These two girls immediately smiled proudly. They had no idea what these Fire Crystal Substances were for, but bring out such a face from Zhang Yang, these crystal substances must be very valuable!

The geometry of the Poison Fireland was like the long twisting body of a snake, which shaped into a spiral, with seven bosses on a total of three layers. The first layer had four bosses, while the second layer only had two bosses, leaving the third and final layer with the final boss, Roshan - Copper Hammer. The backstory of the dungeon was that a small number of the dwarves, defectors from their own race after snatching up the sacred relics of their kind, ended up offering themselves to the demonic side, becoming their fangs and claws.

It didn't take long for Zhang Yang and the gang to reach the entrance to the spiral structure. It was just like a snake's mouth, with two Poison Fire

Giants guarding the entrance, while the two sides of the road were lined with boiling of lava, the heat causing flames to lick the edges. If players fall into that area, they will suffer a fire damage of 5000 in every second! Furthermore, the two end points of the snake's body was very far apart, it was at least hundreds of meters apart. To swim across the lava and skip the dungeons straight up to the boss seemed to be impossible at that stage.

The party unleashed their power and slaughtered the two monsters in no time. In just half an hour, they had already sighted the first boss in front of them, with dozens of [Fire Crystal Substances] in their backpacks at that point.

As Zhang Yang and the other main members of his party had equipped themselves with few pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. Despite this being Death Mode, their equipment was turning it into a cake walk.

Other players had been carefully picked from the core level of the guild's combat power, with good combat awareness, and most importantly, cooperation and ability to react to orders. Furthermore, these players had went through the Normal Mode and Hard Mode of this dungeon, having a certain level of understanding towards the bosses, their skills and their habits. The whole journey was like crushing dried branches and sticks all along, in just a short period of time, they had already slaughtered the first to the sixth boss, pummeling them down to the ground!

The first and the second bosses dropped only profession-specific weapons, and starting from the third boss, armor-set equipment pieces were among the loots. Zhang Yang had already lost his interest on the Gray-Silver equipment, however, he was the only Guardian in the whole party, and it was contrary to what that was expected, the third, fifth, and sixth boss only dropped the Guardian's Furious Set equipment pieces, therefore, he could only take that which was given freely!

After they were done with the sixth boss, Zhang Yang and the gang were annihilated three times in total, which was remarkable, considering the Death Mode difficulty. But the monsters were too many in their numbers, most of their time was spent on clearing out the monsters in the area.

Sensing morning approaching, Zhang Yang announced that the activity for today had come to an end, and they would continue by 7pm on the next day.

Back to the main city, Zhang Yang went offline immediately and slept through the night.

The next morning, Zhang Yang went to the Identifier and identified the three pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, [Furious Helmet], [Furious Metallic Gloves], and [Furious Metallic Boots], and had all of them all of them socketed with [Level 2 Vitality Gemstone]s. His health points had reached the amount of 13,510 (with Vitality Aura)!

The players in the China region were doing pretty well. Their progress on the Death Mode of the Poison Fireland was at 5/7, while Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage, Radiance and the other guilds with top strength had reached the progression of 6/7, competing hand in hand with the Lone Desert Smoke. All of them carried the possibility of leaping through the dragon's gate, becoming the first guild in the China region to complete 7/7, securing the First Clear of the dungeon!

Throughout the entire day, Fatty Han had been very anxious over it, apprehensive about the sudden moment when someone else triggers the First Clear announcement.

Seeing Zhang Yang was crafting potions leisurely, Fatty Han could not hold it in anymore, so he asked, "Brother Yang, how could you not feel anxious at all? This will be the First Clear of the dungeon, and everyone is just one boss away from it, that title must not be snatched by others!"

Zhang Yang without even look up, said, "Does being anxious make a difference?"

Fatty Han immediately rolled both of his eyes, and then he said, "So after half of the day, it's just like the ancient proverb, the emperor is not worried, but the eunuchs are worried to death!"

"Haha, those were all your own words!"

"F*ck off, I wake up everyday with a boner pointing up to the stars!"

Eunuch your ass!"

Fortunately for him, after the whole day, there was no sign of any server announcement on the world channel, and Fatty Han finally loosened up with a sigh of relief, and he began to push Zhang Yang to assemble the party members since it was 7.pm.

But Zhang Yang was pulled by Wei Yan Er over to identify her equipment, you keep what you sow, that is the basic principle of Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, and to be able to spend others' money without spending a dime of their own would be even better! Of course, these two ladies were standard swindlers of friends and associates, they would not give a damn to regular people.

In Wei Yan Er's words, "Noob tank, I come to you because I have a good opinion of you!"

Fine, after spending money, he still needed to thank people with screenshots!

Later at 7.pm, with Fatty Han gazing looking out for new players so intently that his eyes were bloodshot, the land-reclaim party had been assembled, and was speeding to the Tukula Fortress by 'plane'.

Zhang Yang has privilege of the City Order to teleport to the city, so naturally he did not have to walk all the way together with the gang, and he used that little time to craft a few sets of [Fire Resistance Potion]. After Han Ying Xue and the others arrived at the Tukula Fortress, only did he teleport himself to the chamber of the fortress' owner, entering the dungeon with everyone.

20-player dungeons initially required 3 days to refresh, therefore, the gang only needed to look for Ankla to trade for one of his buffs before they could travel across the boundless plain land directly to where the sixth boss was located, and clear the remaining last group of monsters before they could face the final boss, Roshan - Copper Hammer.

"Little sis, have you forgotten to activate your [strength aura] again!" Zhang Yang reminded her.

"Oh!" Wei Yan Er quickly waved both of her hands, and a stream of golden light channeled down through her body, stretching out by a radius of 30-meters, and as the light faded slowly, everyone was instantly boosted with a 2% increase in strength value.

"Noob tank, when can we acquire gemstones for upgrading aura skills?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought before answering, "Open world bosses with the grade of Gray-Silver or above have the tendency to drop [Aura Stone]s, when Poison Fireland is cleared, we shall begin our sweep on the open world bosses!"

"That's great!" Wei Yan Er nodded her head like there was no tomorrow.

"Oh yea, silly Yu, so what's the deal with the battle mounting system?" Han Ying Xue asked the question out of the sudden.

"Yea, after the battle to secure the fortress, I was too tired and directly logged out, I wanted to ask that too!" Endless Starlight asked as well.

Zhang Yang frowned and asked them back, "You guys did not check on the official website by yourselves?"

The gang were shaking their heads left and right in silence, until Hundred Shots smiled and said, "It's still the best to hear if from you, it save us the trouble of looking for it!"

"What the f*ck, you lazy bunch of lazy people!" Zhang Yang shook his head non-stop, then he said, "The battle mount system is good stuff! Our personal mounts that were purchased from the NPC, are called regular mounts, or non-combat mounts. While on our mounts, we cannot execute any attacks or perform any movement that causes damage. In order to engage in battle, we must put aside our mount first!"

Han Ying Xue immediately understood, and she said, "Then, Battle Mount allows players to sit on their mounts during battle?"

"That's the gist of it, but those mounts will be much stronger!" Zhang Yang reorganized the images in his head and said, "Players get to sit on their mounts with Battle Mount System, where not only they can attack with them, they would also share health points with their mounts! Those

mounts will also have their own attack values, just like the pets of the Hunter!"

"Wow, noob tank, why didn't you say it out earlier? If every one of us are here with our mounts, we can sweep and conquer this dungeon already!" Wei Yan Er excitedly grumbled.

Zhang Yang shook his head again, and said, "Firstly, Battle Mount are not Hunter's pets, they are not allowed to be summoned in certain areas, making them utterly useless. For example, dungeons, arenas, indoors. Secondly, Battle Mount are not tigers or lions that can be tamed to become your mount so easily. Only beasts that are labeled as 'Rare' can be captured with [Sealing Reins] that will be purchasable from shops! Once the sealing is successful, then only will the beasts become your Battle Mounts!"

He paused, suddenly thinking about that red dragon pet that Hundred Shots was bound to acquire in the future -- could it be a very uncommon 'Rare' dragon race? Right after Hundred Shots got that dragon mount, countless other Hunter class players tried their best to subdue a dragon as their pets. But, none ever succeeded! Even if the success rate was as low as it gets, there should have been a chance when there were so many Hunters trying their luck. Unless, it was something that can never be subdued with the Hunter's [beast taming]!

If that is the real case, then everyone would have a chance to get a dragon pet! However, non-Hunter profession players can only use them as their Battle Mount!

"When players are in the condition of riding a mount, the health points of the player and the mount will stack together. Furthermore, the mount will have its very own skills. The type of skills would, of course, depend on the monster it was tamed from! Let's take Thunderous Light Leopard as an example, it can spew out a ranged attack taking the form of a laser-like beam of plasma from afar. It should retain that skill after becoming a mount!"

Chapter 211: Roshan - Copper Hammer

"That means, that everyone can have a little pets just like the Hunters?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and explained further, "Mounts have many limitations, they can only bring out their functions when players are riding on them, once dismounted, the mount will disappear immediately, unlike the precious pets of the Hunters which can continue attacking separately together with their owner! Only Hunters can treat their mounts as their pets and use them!"

"Wah, that is also good enough, noob tank, let's go catch some Battle Mounts tomorrow!" Wei Yan Er was happy for a moment, because she is a mount-freak, even if the mount did not have any special abilities, she would still do everything possible to collect them. Let's not forget that the Battle Mount can actually increase maximum health points, consequently increasing the battle power of the player!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Little girl, do you really think that capturing a Battle Mount is a fun thing to do? First off, the word 'Rare' is already a big headache for you! Who wouldn't want a Battle Mount, when you encounter one, surely the first thing to do is to immediately take out the [Sealing Lease] to capture it, everything else is based on luck!"

"Hehe, my luck has always been great!" Wei Yan Er revealed her teeth with a smile, "Just wait and see, noob tank, I shall come back here and capture that bad-*ss dragon by the entrance of this dungeon, then I shall come back and send you to your demise with one stomp!"

"Silly little girl, all Battle Mounts that can be captured start at level 0, you can save your breath!" Zhang Yang immediately shattered the beautiful dream of Wei Yan Er.

Hundred Shots quickly asked Zhang Yang, "Then, can we level up a Battle Mount?"

"Yes!" Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "Just like the pets of the Hunter class, they can be leveled up as long as they are gaining experience points. Furthermore, the amount of experience points required for the

mount to level up is much lesser compared to the amount of experience points required for players to level up. However, the level of the mount cannot exceed the level of the player, just like a Hunter's pet."

The gang did not have much knowledge about the Battle Mount since the beginning, so they were easily moved by what he heard, and one of the healer knights named Nine Days of Thunder asked, "Guildmaster, would the capturing of a mount end in failure?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "It would, and the number of failure in capturing the mount is limited! Any mount that is available for capturing are green-named monsters, but, after 10 times of failures in capturing it, the monster will become a red-named monster, and by then, it will become impossible to seal the monster, ever again!"

"Uh, hello, ladies and gentleman, are we here to slaughter the boss or to capture mounts? Hustle up! Don't the others snatch the First Clear of the dungeon!" the only thing that Fatty Han was obsessed at the moment was the First Clear of the dungeon.

"Oh yea ---" Hundred Shots tapped his forehead and said, "Zhan Yu, there was a representative from an advertisement firm named 'Far Ocean Electronics' who contacted me, expressing their interest to sponsor our guild. All we need to do is when we acquire the First Clear for a dungeon, we register our party name after 'Far Ocean Electronics - Lone Desert Smoke' on the First Clear List. There will be a reward of 300,000 cash for every First Clear title we acquire, and a reward of 100,000 cash for every time we get ourselves onto the Time Attack List!"

"Holy molly, have you agreed on it already? That's is a sky-high kind of a great news indeed!" Fatty Han was moved instantly, shaking Hundred Shots's by the shoulders.

Hundred Shots shook his head and said, "This kind of decision should be made by Zhan Yu of course!"

Zhang Yang had passed over the responsibility on the administrative matters to him, that was a kind of trust, allowing him to make his own decisions. Facing such big deal of a decision making, of course would be

natural to let the Guildmaster decide.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "They are really stingy on it, planning to handle us with 300,000?"

Fatty Han immediately slapped his head, that was true to the core, each of them were already earning 1,000,000 or even more just by dividing the earnings from their equipment sales! Acquiring a First Clear title for a reward of 300,000 cash might sound appealing, but even with only 10 players in one party, each of them would only receive 30,000 cash! Furthermore, according to the conventional design of the game, there's a 10 level-limit compatibility for each dungeon, and it requires 7 days to level up once after achieving level 50 -- it would probably require approximately 2 months to acquire one First Clear Title of a dungeon. Therefore, players could only rely on the Time Attack Dungeons to earn cash on regular basis.

But the Time Attack of the dungeons were also limited in terms of the shortest time made possible with the shortest route taken, the fastest kills, the right party arrangement, and with so many guilds competing, each guild would only have their chances to go for it by three or four times at most. So, players should be thankful if they could even earn an amount of 10,000 or 20,000 a month.

For regular players, earning 10,000 or 20,000 was considered pretty good. But Fatty Han and the gang had been so well fed that their appetite would not be so easily satiated. Such a small amount of money would no longer matter in their eyes!

Han Ying Xue widened her eyes a little and said, "Rich water should not be let out of one's own fields¹, please allow us to be the sponsor for the guild then!"

"You girls?" Hundred Shots stared at Han Ying Xue, having some confusion over what she just said.

Han Ying Xue smiled lightly and said, "Yan Er's dad has a company of their own, I own some of the stocks, and this game, 'God's Miracle' is famously blooming nowadays, it'll be great advertising for the company!"

"Cousin, you don't have to be modest, you already own 55% of the company shares, that's actually more than my dad's!" Wei Yan Er immediately said, "Noob tank, aren't you heartbroken now? Aiyo, I will give my cousin sister to you, you won't have to ask for any sponsorship money!"

"Hahaha!" the gang laughed, as Sun Xin Yu flashed her stare of death across the room.

"You little brat, in order to save a little bit of money, you dare to sell me out?" Han Ying Xue gave a glance at Wei Yan Er, but Wei Yan Er did not give a damn and responded with a funny face. "Work is work, private matters are private matters, not gonna get these two mixed up! So this is how it is going to be, I will arrange for a representative of my company's advertisement department to contact you!"

"Alright! Just look for Hundred Shots, after you are done with the negotiations, just inform me!"

"Hey guys, are we going to beat the boss or not?" Fatty Han had tears streaming down his face now.

As the party members chatted while pushing forwards deeper into the dungeon, another half an hour passed, all spent on clearing out the monsters in the area. Finally, they stood in front of the last boss. The boss stage was vast, like a shopping plaza, and the boss was standing right in the middle of it all, with no monsters in the surroundings, at all.

[Roshan - Copper Hammer, King of the Flaming Dwarf] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 58

Hp: 5,000,000

Defense: 600

The boss was wearing extremely thick armor, with a large axe held in his right hand, his skin the colour of crimson red. Standing in the boiling mist, he looked like a burning flame.

"Just like the other two modes, the boss has no other differences other than the damage increased!" Zhang Yang had also revised on the battle tactics with the gang first hand, as Han Ying Xue and some members had not cleared this dungeon before, "Among the skills of this boss, the most lethal one is his forced-teleportation! It will randomly teleport four players 100 meters away from the boss, afflicting each of the players with a negative effect 'Chain of Burning Flame'!"

"Players who carry the 'Chain of Burning Flame' will inflict a DPS of 2,000 fire damage to each other if they are within 30 meters from each other. So, the trick is this, the 4 players that are effect by the 'Chain of Burning Flame' must head out in different directions until they are at safe distance before they are burned to crisps!"

Zhang Yang looked at the gang and said, "This is the time to test our mutual understanding and our teamwork, if two or three people run towards the same direction, who should be the one to concede? One must react and decide in an instant to run elsewhere! Take note that this is Hardcore Mode, if you have 5 seconds to react in Hard Mode, you only have 3 seconds to react here!"

"Oh, silly Yu, no wonder you wanted the recipe for Fire Resistance Potion, now I see what it could be used for!" Han Ying Xue suddenly understood, instantly rolled her eyes back at Zhang Yang, "You stingy little piece, now you are going to earn another big roll of cash!"

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, then he said, "Once we are opened up to the boss, just drink the Fire Resistance Potion to prevent any complication later! Fire Resistance Potions can decrease the damage received by 600 points of damage, it can greatly increase the margin of error!"

To beat this boss, Fire Resistance Potions were not a compulsory to have, but with no doubt, having Fire Resistance Potions will obviously decrease the difficulty in engaging the boss.

"Other than the 'Chain of Burning Flame', the other difficult situation the boss will create for us starts when the boss uses [destructive smash] on the tanks, decreasing 50% of the healing effect on them. Of course, I

will do my best to block, and the priest has to reserve their [holy shield]. Wait for the moment where I receive [destructive smash] from the boss before casting the shield on me, because the shield absorbs damage instead of heals, so there shouldn't be any influence on this!"

Zhang Yang clapped his hands a few times and said, "Alright, there's no point repeating my instructions a thousand times or ten thousand times, it will be clearer once we try this out in practice, drink the potions up and let's charge forward!"

He took out a bottle of the Fire Resistance Potion, with a gulp, he emptied the whole bottle before pulling out his axe, charging swiftly towards the boss with huge steps.

"Who are you people, how dare you to trespass my land of the flaming dwarfs? It doesn't matter, all I have to do is to annihilate all of you!" Roshan swung an axe that was three times his height, coming forward to meet the charging players, "I am Roshan, the King of the Flaming Dwarves, remember my name, for this name belongs to the one who will send all of you to see the Lord of Hades!"

"You're full of hot air!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue at him.

Zhang Yang used [charge], and with a whoosh, he crashed into the boss, waving his battle axe and ferociously hacking away at anywhere and anything.

Wei Yan Er was not willing to be left behind, following with an immediate [charge], swinging her giant axe, slicing and dicing as well.

‘-5,480!’

With a swing of the axe from the boss, Zhang Yang received a huge amount of damage, only a boss dealing 8,000 or more damage could have done that much! Fortunately, Roshan is categorized as a Berserker type, his attack rate was not that frequent, and it takes about three seconds for him to deliver one attack. With four healers in the party, they can leisurely heal Zhang Yang's health bar back to full in no time.

"Burning Flame, aid me in burning these nincompoops into crusty

crisps!" the battle had just begun for awhile, when Roshan let out a roar, raising the axe in his hand up high. Four chains formed from the burning flame of his axe, where they split and hit Endless Starlight, Defiant Monk, Sky Burial and Lady Baidu. In a flash, the four players immediately disappeared from where they stood, reappearing 100 meters away from the boss, seven o'clock from his direction.

Bam!

Four streams of lights explosively rose upward, flashing right above the four players respectively, dealing a series of damages ranging from '-1,400' to '-1,050'. Because Endless Starlight is a Defender, naturally possessing a passive 75% spell damage reduction, he sustained the least damage among the four.

"Run! Quickly!"

The four players quickly began their running, but only Sky Burial ran towards the west, the other three were all running towards the same direction.

"What the f---! Defiant Monk, Lady Baidu, stop sticking my ass! Change your course of direction now, I don't want to die because of you two!" Endless Starlight was shouting in a loud voice while gulping down a bottle of red potion, "Sun of a---, Lady Baidu, do you like my ass that much? Turn around! Turn around!"

'-1,400!'

'-1,400!'

'-1,050!'

The damage value consecutively appearing right above the heads of the three players as they tried to pull themselves apart. However, Lady Baidu had the lowest gear in terms of grades having just a little over 5,000 health points. Although she did drink a bottle of red potion, she could only hold on for another tick of explosive damage. Five seconds later, her health points were all burned off, and she skidded face first across the floor, having died mid-stride.

As Lady Baidu died, Endless Starlight was no longer in danger, he crowed in joy and said, "I have tons of health points, if you follow me again the next time around, I'm not going anywhere, others will only be burned to death if they don't get away from me!"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Rich water should not be let out of one's own fields - Benefits should always be kept for one's own people.

Chapter 212: Silky Soft Bra

"For f*ck's sake man, you are one shameless brat, isn't that an act of pushing people forward to be the victim instead?" Fatty Han was conflicted with mixed feelings, laughing and berating him at the same time.

Within such a short period of time, one player had been lost, with the remaining three players waiting out for the duration of 'Chain of Burning Flame' to expire, before they headed back to the party and did what they were supposed to do.

Zhang Yang then informed, "Fatty, Hunters have it easiest when it comes to escaping the effect of 'Chain of Burning Flame', one "Tumble" would do the trick. You'll end up 10 meters away from the others!"

"Oh yea, I actually forgot to use "Tumble"!" Defiant Monk gave himself a strong slap to his forehead, with a face that looked like he just woke up from a dream.

It was just a mere 30 seconds before Roshan activated the second 'Chain of Burning Flame', randomly picking four targets and teleporting them to a spot 100 meters away. This time, they appeared at the 12 o'clock direction.

The healers had it tough. It was like playing a game of tag, having no clue which of the four burning members should they heal first. As the teleportation location was completely random, it was not possible for them to make any arrangements in advance to where the four targeted players would be teleported to in order to heal their health points back. The best they could do was to heal whoever they could.

Compared to the first teleportation, this time, it was handled much better --- or should we say that they were much luckier, the four players had already picked four different directions in the beginning, although they were not running outwards at in an even petal of four, with the support of the Fire Resistance Potion and the usage of red potions, everyone managed to hold on until they were out of the 30-meters

distance from each other, none of them was killed.

Although the boss has a "Destructive Smash" that decreases healing effect, it did nothing against Zhang Yang and Han Ying Er, both already possessing a few pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, basically toying with the boss. Without posing too much of a threat, the only difficult thing was to handle the roll-calls by the boss!

On the third roll-call, another player was killed.

On the fourth roll-call, most unfortunately, the four hapless players started running in the same direction, and realizing their mistake, turned around at the same time, turning again.... This went on for a while with everyone constantly running alongside each other. In the end, all of them died except for one. That player survived because of their long health bar, if not for anything else.

On the fifth roll-call, none of them died.

On the sixth...

After experiencing 11 roll-calls, a total of nine members of the party had been killed, while the boss still remained with 38% of health points. It didn't affect their performance all too much as the deceased members of the party were not the main force of Zhang Yang's eight core members of the party, there was still hope to turn the table around!

"How was it? I was right, am I? One shall not die with a long health bar!" Endless Starlight was considered to be the lucky doll among the unlucky ones, a total of 11 roll-calls were made by the boss, and Endless Starlight was selected for six of them. With his longer health bar, the other three players were all blown to death, and he managed survive in a most disapproving manner!

"Get lost, what use is there for you to survive without even contributing a tiny bit of damage!" Hundred Shots, clearly disgusted, had a guttural quality to his voice.

"Burning flame, incinerate them all!" Roshan raised his axe again, activating his 12th roll-call with his skill; targeting Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan

Er, Fantasy Sweetheart and Defiant Monk!

Initially, the party had 4 healers. One had been killed in a previous roll-call. With the current roll-call, two strong priests, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had been picked. In an instant, the party was left with only one Holy Knight -- Half Gram Not Two Yuan -- to heal Zhang Yang. Of all times, Zhang Yang had to be carrying the negative effect of "Destructive Smash" at that moment!

This was probably the gravest situation they've been in since the beginning of the battle.

Zhang Yang quickly summoned his servant Clear Lotus and activated the "Substitute" skill, instantly acquiring a 5-second invincibility, nullifying all the negative effects he had on him. By doing so, he allowed the Holy Knight Half Gram Not Two Yuan to heal him without interruption while waiting for Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to return.

Furthermore, once the selected players were teleported, they started running around like headless flies.

Han Ying Xue never had any sense of direction to begin with. She activated shield around herself, healed herself, then she literally shut her eyes and ran forward without looking to see if there was anyone in front of her. As a result, Defiant Monk was forced into a rather tragic situation -- he had already used "Tumble" to create distance from the others the moment he was teleported. Wei Yan Er and Fantasy Sweetheart were already running in different directions, but Han Ying Xue quickly caught up to Defiant Monk with her powerful legs.

Defiant Monk suddenly panicked, as he quickly yelled with his top voice, "Vice Guildmaster, you are running at the wrong direction! Turn around! Turn!"

Han Ying Xue heeded his screams and did turn around, except that it was a 360 degree turn, resulting in her continued rampage towards Defiant Monk!

Although the Fire Resistance Potion reduces a lot of damages, it only managed to increase the running time from 3 seconds to 5 seconds.

Although Defiant Monk had already gulped down a red potion, with an additional "Healing" from Han Ying Xue, he wasn't able to keep Han Ying Xue from burning his ass, so he ended up being blasted to death!

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er laughed with her hands pressed against her stomach, and she said, "Cousin sis, you are really mean, it was already bad enough to blow others up, and you even healed him, prolonging his suffering! I can't stop laughing! You'll be the death of me! You're a secret operative mole embedded within my army! I shall destroy you on behalf of the moon!"

Zhang Yang could only bitterly smile at her understandably bad sense of direction. He said, "Witchy Snow, the next time you get selected again, just stand there and don't run, heal yourself from where you are standing!"

Han Ying Xue smiled with guilt and said, "I am so sorry, Defiant Monk!"

"It's... It's alright!" Defiant Monk resignedly accepted his unfortunate fate.

"If I were to die beneath a peony flower, I would still be charming as a ghost². Queen Snow, you can blow me, blow me to death, I don't mind!" Endless Starlight was shouting like an anthomaniac.

"Tsk tsk tsk, Starlight, pretty Snow is brother Yang's type, you should just go to the shade!"

If they had come without any Fire Resistance Potions, the whole party might have been totally annihilated by now. Never underestimate a potion that only increase the survival time of the players by a mere two seconds, because players in 'God's Miracle' can reach up to the speed of 10 meters per second with their full power while running. The game had turned everyone into an Olympic sprinter. Two seconds would allow players to run another 20 meters, and if four players can run in the direction of four axis, they can definitely escape the burn in no time!

It could still be done without the Fire Resistance potion, but it will require absolute understanding among each other and perfect teamwork! With the [Fire Resistance Potion], there is no doubt that it will greatly decrease the difficulty, allowing a much wider margin of error, making the

boss much easier to take on!

30%, 20%, 10%!

Two more members were killed afterwards, and the party had successfully pushed the health bar of the boss down below 10%.

"You despicable insects, to be able push me this far! Curse you, I shall teach you all, the terror of provoking a Dwarf King!" Roshan gave out a roar that shook the heavens, raising up both of his hands and lifting the axe up high, his entire body was instantly pulsating beneath a bloody red halo.

‘Ding! Roshan has awoken the ancient power of the kings, damage dealt increase by 50%!’

"Son of a sniper! The boss is entering berserk mode!" Fatty Han was shouting frantically.

"That's strange, in Normal Mode and Hard Mode, the boss did no such thing!" Hundred Shots scratched his head, having trouble understanding the situation, as the parties that cleared the Normal Mode and Hard Mode of this dungeon were led by himself and Endless Starlight.

"That is why this is called Hardcore Mode!" Zhang Yang replied him.

‘-8,534!’

After entering berserk mode, Roshan's attack was increased significantly, his basic attack was elevated to a total attack of 12,000, and only the guild's top tanker could hold on! That tanker was Zhang Yang!

"Speed-kill!"

After the boss entered berserk mode, there was no way to kite and tank the boss, with a single attack surpassing 8,000, and the inconsistent use of "Destructive Smash" that reduced healing effects, Zhang Yang could still buy time using his emergency skills, but even he wouldn't last indefinitely. The only way left was to speed-kill the boss!

"Burning flame, incinerate these pests!" once again, Roshan did a roll-call and did his teleportation hocus pocus.

Immediately, Sun Xin Yu, Half Gram Not Two Yuan, Hundred Shots and Fantasy Sweetheart were teleported 100 meters away from the boss at a 3 o'clock direction.

Pak!

As the sparks of fire flared out, all four of them began to receive damages of '-2400'. With the boss in berserk mode, the damage inflicted by the 'Chain of Burning Flame' effect had also been increased by 50%!

With a swift activation of his "Tumble", Hundred Shots quickly blasted 10 meters away, where he continued running, turning around to take a peek to find that no one else was following him. Half Gram Not Two Yuan was all alone in one direction, but Sun Xin Yu and Fantasy Sweetheart were heading towards the same direction.

"Stay where you are, heal yourself!" Sun Xin Yu commanded Fantasy Sweetheart in her cold and icy voice.

The ice queen had a very oppressing aura, therefore, the busty Fantasy Sweetheart who had large, watery eyes immediately stopped and nodded. The abrupt halt jolted her pair of excellent boobies up and down, and they jiggled without any signs of pausing at all. She quickly activated a shield around herself, casting a strong healing skill.

Sun Xin Yu had a total of 7,300 health points, so by theory, she could withstand 3 hits of the 'Chain of Burning Flame'. However, she had ran towards the same direction as Fantasy Sweetheart and wasted a bit of time, so she had already being burned three times, leaving her with only 100 points health points remaining!

Even if she drank a [level 2 Healing Potion], it would only heal her by 1,000 health points, which was not enough to counter the damage of one explosive attack!

Pak!

Just as the forth explosion happened, Sun Xin Yu waved her right hand and suddenly, her entire body vanished into thin air, before she reappeared again in an instant. She continued to run like hell, rushing to

gain 30 meters of distance away from Fantasy Sweetheart!

"Beautiful!" Zhang Yang was watching all events that unfolded, and when he saw that last particular scene, he could not help himself but to applaud her! Just now, Sun Xin Yu had used her skill -- "Vanish", to gain a single frame³ of invincibility. It had such a narrow window of opportunity that it was just enough to avoid the blast damage. It was definitely a performance only masters of masters could pull off!

To use the split-second short of invincibility when activating "Vanish" in order to avoid damage required precise control -- down to the last milisecond at the moment when the explosion happens! Even if it was Zhang Yang, he could not have done it so perfectly!

She would indeed be the number one of the top 10 thieves in the China region. There was no doubt about it now. Just witnessing what she just did, was eyes-dropping!

Other than Zhang Yang, the others also started applauding her, that evasion was just too incredible!

5%, 4%, 3%!

Roshan was once again ready to do another roll-call, but his health bar was already coming to an end. Even with four players dead, it would not change the fate of Roshan was at death's door!

2%, 1%!

"No--- No! I cannot die, I am the King of the Flaming Dwarfs, I shall snatch all the sacred relics back and conquer the entire Dwarf race, I am... Un..defea..table...!" Pam, Roshan did an odd pirouette as he spun around, the axe falling heavily onto the ground. His fat, short body soon followed, causing a tremor as it hit the ground.

As the blood flowed across the ground, the blood eerily formed a magic circle, emitting some dark lights.

"Haha! We did it!"

Zhang Yang had not expected this to go so smoothly, even with the Fire

Resistance Potion, he had never expected them so succeed at their single attempt.

‘Ding! You and your party have acquired the First Clear title for The Poison Fireland Dungeon (Death Mode), as the leader, please insert your party’s name to be published on the list of the Death Mode’s First Clear title, for the world to behold and sing praises!’

Zhang Yang suddenly thought of it, so he asked Han Ying Xue, "So how about it, do we put your company’s name this time? The next time we acquire another First Clear title will be one or two months later!"

Han Ying Xue pondered briefly upon it and said, "Alright, you can use ‘Silky Soft Bra, giving you the most personal care! Lone Desert Smoke’ as the party’s name!"

Zhang Yang blinked dumbly for a second before saying weakly, "Hello, you did not mention that your company sells bras!"

Han Ying Xue gave him a backward eye-roll and said, "You did not ask, I did not tell!"

"Can’t we just put ‘Silky Soft Company’ or ‘Silky Soft Holdings’?"

"There won’t be any point, then!" Han Ying Xue was speaking in a serious manner, "Silly Yu, you are too chauvinistic, what is wrong with the name Silky Soft Bra, it’s not like they are naughty or perverted words! Are you filling it in or not, I am about to get mad!"

Fatty Han was excited, written all over his face, and he said, "Pretty Snow, your company produces bra, there should be a large number underwear models, right?"

"Of course, every single product of our company is worn by models, to be made into albums and the brochures for the products!"

Fatty Han rubbed both of his hands together and said, "So when are you bringing me for a tour over the changing room... erm, to your company to have a look!"

"Sign me up, sign me up too!" Endless Starlight quickly saw the

opportunity and reacted.

Daffodil Daydream spoke out and said, "Sister Snow, the Silky Soft Bra Holdings is one of the top three bra distributor in the whole China, my thesis actually used your company's sales data. That is one big company with billions in annual revenue! I happen to be wearing a Silky Soft bra myself!"

Zhang Yang could not help but laughed, "Silly girl, you told me that you possess 55% of the company shares, that means you earn at least 500 million per year, right?"

Everyone was staggered, as they tried to comprehend Han Ying Xue's wealth. Endless Starlight tried to squeeze his pitiful face and said, "Queen Snow, please take me in!"

"Hello, Silly Yu, are you going to fill it in for real or not!" Han Ying Xue put her hands on her waist and started to raise her tone.

"Yes... This would suffice right!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh, if he had known about it a little earlier, he would not have asked. It would be awesome, when the server announcements begin to pop up in red.

After keying 'Silky Soft Bra, giving you the best personal care! Lone Desert Smoke' in the column, Zhang Yang gave a sigh, and confirmed the party name entry with the server. The server announcement began to make the announcement in red on the big screen.

'Server Announcement: Silky Soft Bra, giving you the best personal care! Lone Desert Smoke has successfully acquired the First Clear title for the Poison Fireland (Death Mode), their great deeds will be published on the list of the Death Mode First Clear title (China Region). Please cheer for them!'

Zhang Yang did not even wait to read the following announcements. God damn it, this time, Lone Desert Smoke was about to make every single male player in the guild blush; they might even be called the Bra guild for the rest of their days!

Translator's Thoughts

1. I shall destroy you on behalf of the moon - A reference from Sailormoon, original dialog is 'I shall punish you on behalf of the moon'.
2. If I should die beneath a peony flower, I will still be charming as a ghost - it means the person is willing to die for beautiful women.
3. Frame - In video games, a frame is a term used to address a moment so brief, that it can only be measured roughly in terms of Frames-per-second - the rate at which a screen refreshes.

Chapter 213: Queen of Medusa

Soon after the public announcement of the Server Announcement, Zhang Yang received the congratulatory messages from Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman, Crimson Fire and the others. Of course, fun being poked at that advertisement was inevitable. He almost logged out of the game to escape the ridicule.

As most bosses only dropped Gray-Silver equipment, Wei Yan Er had lost her interest in the victory loots, irresponsibly pushing the job of picking everything up to Zhang Yang.

Roshan had dropped a total of five pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. Among the five, four were all armor-set equipment, being the chest plates that belonged to Berserkers, Bandits, Pyromancers and Beastmasters. So, Zhang Yang decided to auction them out one, using the guild's points as currency.

The last piece of the Gray-Silver equipment was a spellcaster's cape.

[Fire Cape] (Gray-Silver, Cape)

Vitality: +17

Intelligence: +17

Equip: Increases 10 points of spell damage.

[unidentified]

Level required: 50

As the majority of players protested on the unidentified property of the equipment, the allocation of equipment became chaotic as they became ridiculously high in demand. As Dream Technology was under a lot of pressure, they had made some subtle changes to the [unidentified] trait a few days back.

Without a proper identification of the equipment, players could still see it's special effects, but all attributes will be reduced by 30%, and these reduced attributes would be restored only after identification is done.

After a long auction that had the same few names increasing the bid, the equipment was finally claimed by Daffodil Daydream who instantly swapped it with her current equipped one.

"Noob tank, we are done with the dungeon, let's go capture ourselves some Battle Mounts!" Wei Yan Er, being the standard hot-head, immediately made to run to the dungeon's entrance.

"Silly little girl, don't run off just yet!" Zhang Yang quickly pulled her back, and said, "There's a hidden boss that has yet to be taken down!"

"A hidden boss?" everyone was curious. Ever since the first dungeon, they had never come across any other dungeons with hidden bosses. They had almost forgotten about the existence of such things!

"Where? Where is it?" Wei Yan Er quickly regained her interest. Accessories like Rings and Necklace are harder to find, and the accessories she had on her were all level 30, better replacements were long overdue.

Zhang Yang pointed at the magic circle that had been formed in the blood of the fallen boss, "Step on it!"

Everyone followed his words and stepped onto the magic circle. Immediately, a stream of dark light shot upwards, the players that stepped onto the magic circle vanished one after another.

Zhang Yang was the last to step onto the magic circle. As the dark light engulfed over him, he instantly appeared in an unfamiliar place, beside Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang.

The place was dark and gloomy, with way to tell whether it's day or night, with the only source of dark light illuminating on one of the corners of the area. About 50 meters away in front of them, there was a beautiful face paired with a sexy bust, but it's lower body was made up by a tail of a snake. It held a longbow in its hands, constantly screaming in a high pitch.

Her upper body was extremely erotic, it was tremendously curvy, and at times she arched her back, or gyrated her body in a very seductive manner. However, her hair was made out of hissing gray little snakes, each having a pair of cold eyes that gleamed in the dark. By gazing at them, one would

feel goosebumps running up their spine. The snake body itself was extremely long, if it was measured from one end to the other, it would have been at least 10 meters long!

She had been tied down by three burning red chains of light. Two of them had been crisscrossed over her voluptuous chest, squeezing out the two large mounds, making them stand out vulgarly!

At the other end of the three burning light chains, three dwarfs -- their red skins indicating their Flame Dwarf heritage -- were keeping the snake-lady restrained. The strange thing was that, all three of them had green names, meaning that players cannot attack them.

"This is the most authentic BDSM I've ever seen..."

"Man, that's heavy stuff. Good taste!"

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were murmuring to each other, their eyes transfixed on the boobs that jerked about violently.

The gang selected the tied up beauty and read her information.

[Aigawa, The sealed Queen of Medusa] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 59

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 600

The three dwarfs were named Margeryashe, Lingamant and Bassan. All of them were level 55 elites, with 180,000 HP and 300 defense points.

"Who are you people, how did you find this place?" The three dwarfs spotted the intrusion of Zhang Yang and the gang into the area. The one in the middle of them, Lingamant spoke in a strong, demanding voice.

Zhang Yang showed a adventurer's salute to the dwarves and said, "My respected fellow dwarves, we are adventurer from White Jade Castle, here to slay these foul demons!"

"Pui! Just you?" the dwarf standing on the left, Margeryashe spoke in contempt.

The dwarf standing on the right, Bassan, however, said, "They managed to enter this area, it only means that they had defeated Roshan. Only his blood can activate the seal and open the magic portal!"

"You people defeated Roshan?" Margeryashe revealed a shocked expression, "I guess I must have underestimated you all!"

It was quite obvious that Margeryashe had the most authority in the area. After a light wave of one of his hands, the other two dwarfs immediately went silent, and he spoke unhindered, "To pursue absolute power, we surrendered ourselves to the demons. In the beginning, our strengths did indeed increase, but our souls were beginning to warp into something else. Our beliefs in the great Gods of Titan were quickly shaken! Us three chiefs discovered the conspiracy of the demons. It turns out that they wanted to imprison our souls and make us their slaves in absolution!"

"However... We discovered their plans a little too late, too many of our kind had already been driven to madness because of the twisted power! Three of us tried everything we could and everything we knew just to seal this demoness that lured us into our downfall! But, she is simply too powerful, we have been forced to remain here with her, tying her down with our own lifeforce!"

Margeryashe sighed again and said, "Perhaps, your arrival is in the arrangement of the Gods of Titan himself. We have held her as long as we have been able to. Our lifeforce is at its end, and when that happens, this demon shall be free to enslave our kind completely!"

"Travelers, if you are ready, please inform us! We will let loose the seal and try to oppress some of her power, perhaps it would be enough to you in destroying this demon!"

Having said that, the three dwarfs now gazed at Zhang Yang with their starry eyes, waiting for Zhang Yang and the gang to sound the charge to begin the attack.

"How do we fight this?" Han Ying Xue and the gang turned their sights towards Zhang Yang.

"This battle will stay in the vicinity of the three dwarfs. They will suppress the boss' true power. As long as they do not die, the damage of the boss will not be anything too outrageous! However, once all three NPCs are dead, the attacks of the boss will have an aftereffect, AND an AoE, inflicting an additional 6,000 shadow damage to any and all targets within a 50 meters radius from the boss! If that happens, unless the boss is close to death, it'll be the end for us all!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and added, "This boss will only target the NPCs. I know what you are thinking, but we cannot heal them. If the battle is prolonged excessively, the NPCs will definitely die one after another! This battle only focuses on our damage output. Either we kill the boss, or the boss kills all the NPCs and annihilates all of us in a single second!"

"No tactics involved, just pure damage output, if the party damage output reaches the requirement, then we will succeed, if not, we shall be stuck here!"

Zhang Yang smile and said, "There is a higher difficulty available in this boss fight. We can choose not seek help from the NPCs, and if the boss is taken down without their aid, we will get an extra achievement.

Fatty Han quickly said, "Well, honestly, we should just get rid of the boss, that will be enough!"

"After engaging for five seconds, everyone must drink a [Power Potion], and unleash all your strongest skills, all out!" Zhang Yang pulled out his battle axe and said, "I shall signal NPCs to lift the seal, so everyone, get ready to fight!"

He made another salute at the three dwarfs and said, "Respected dwarven chiefs, please lift the seal, let us join forces to eliminate this demon once and for all!"

"Adventurers of the White Jade Castle, we acknowledge, and return your respect in equal share! Prepare yourselves, we are about to lift the seal. The demon will be awakened... this is your only chance, we no longer have the power to seal her again!" Lingamant spoke gravely.

"Let's begin!" The three dwarfs raised their hands into the sky at the same exact moment, chanting a dwarven spell. Magic lines appeared on the heads of the three dwarfs at the same time, the duration of the chanting was 30 seconds in total.

"Argh---" the boss Aigawa was screaming loudly, and hissed, "The trinity of fools, you are never going to imprison me! I am the great general of the Demon Lord Rogueler, he is second to none, I shall tear your bodies into pieces, one piece after another!"

Zhang Yang swiftly went up to the side of the boss. The seal was not yet lifted, so both parties could not start attacking yet.

"Everyone! In position!"

Melee professions immediately circled around the boss, waiting for the seal to be broken.

25, 20, 15...

"The power of the seal is weakening!" all of the snakes on Aigawa's head were twitching in excitement, as monstrous aura accumulated around her, "I can feel it, the powers that keep me here are growing weak! At last, freedom! Hahaha, I am going to kill you all!"

4, 3, 2, 1!

[blood rage]! +30 Rage.

Gong! Gong! Gong!

The three chains of light began to shatter. The cracks started from the dwarves' end, and ring by ring, they shattered one by one in the direction of the boss. As the last chain ring shattered, Aigawa raised her snake body up, raising herself to a height of 3 meters!

‘-3,037!’ [horizontal sweep].

Aigawa had already raised herself upon her tail up to 7 or 8 meters high, and as the attack landed, she let out a roar of rage, letting loose an arrow at Zhang Yang. "Humans, elves, dwarves, beasts, all here, just in time for me to kill you all. You shall all be blood sacrifice for my freedom!"

[Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]! [Cripple Defense]!

"Attack, full power!" Zhang Yang shouted at the top of his lungs, with Weu Yan Er aiding him with mutual understanding, helped him place another two layers of [Cripple Defense], completing the stack.

Everyone knew that time was of the essence, not a millisecond could be wasted. They gulped down their Power Potions and began their attacks with heavy skills that required long cooldowns, and began their onslaught.

30 seconds later, Aigawa suddenly turned away from Zhang Yang, aiming her bow Lingamant and firing at him instead.

Foof! Foof!

The basic attack of the boss had reached a high value of 9,000 points, and Lingamant only had 300 points of defense. Every arrow that Aigawa released at the dwarven chief would deal a damage of 8,000+. In just 20 seconds, she had already taken down approximately 90,000 of Lingamant's health points. Only then did she regain her aggro system and got back to attacking Zhang Yang.

"Witchy Snow, Fantasy, you two can stop healing, just focus on attacking the boss! Two Holy Knights healing me is more than enough, a little more damage from you guys would also help!" Zhang Yang roared.

Holy Knights are good at healing single targets. Even though the equipment of the two Holy Knights were far inferior than Han Ying Xue's equipment, having two of them heal Zhang Yang was sufficient, as long as Han Ying Xue paid enough attention to cast the occasional [regeneration] and on him.

Chapter 214: Destructive Power

Who among the party had the best equipment? No, not Zhang Yang! It's Han Ying Xue!

Her staff, accessory, boots, rings and armlet were all Yellow-Gold tiered! That's five of them! Their attributes stacking up, her magic attack exceeded 1,800. It was a pity that her offensive skill, [Punishment Ray] was not a very high-damaging skill. However, she could still deal around 2,700 damage over two seconds. Her DPS was around 1,300 which could be compared to Sun Xin Yu or other offensive class characters. All things considered, her attack was rather impressive.

That wasn't all, after activating the skill of [magician's brooch], she would gain an additional 700 magic attack. If she takes another bottle of [Power Potion], she could raise her damage to an extreme level for a brief period!

The boss attacking pattern was quite predictable. After attacking Zhang Yang for 30 seconds, she would clear her aggro and randomly attack an NPC for 20 seconds for around 90,000 HP worth of damage. She would easily kill off an NPC in two turns. Theoretically, after the sixth turn, the boss will kill all the NPCs and become much stronger than before!

This meant that the party would have to remove all 8,000,000 HP of the boss in just 300 seconds! The required party total DPS had to be at least 26,667 to achieve that!

That was an impossible task! The team had defeated 7 bosses yesterday and hauled a bunch of Gray-Silver equipment, increasing their attack power by a level after Level 50. However, that only increased their overall damage from 20,000 to 27,000! Equipment upgrades alone proved to be insufficient!

A better way to increase the overall damaging power is to rely on the fighting capability of the players themselves! For example, to maximize his damage power, Zhang Yang has loosely arranged a sequence of which skill to use after the other, and to repeat the cycle depending on the cool

down. The skill cycle would depend on the usage of Rage, Stamina, Focus, or MP of the player class needs.

The battle progressed on without much difficulties. As per usual, Zhang Yang tanked the boss, while the rest of the squad executed their roles from the rear. The boss would occasionally clear her aggro and pick an NPC to attack. That in turn, saved some MP for the healers!

After 100 seconds, Lingamant was the first NPC to die, while the boss had lost only 30% HP.

200 seconds later, Margeryashe died and the boss had lost 60% HP.

After fighting for a while, Han Ying felt something was off and called Zhang Yang. "Dummy. If this continues on like this, I'm afraid that we won't be able to kill the boss!" She was not wrong. Each time one NPC fell, the team should have reduced at least 33% of the boss HP.

"Just give it all you got! This first attempt is a good opportunity to gauge the party's total DPS!" Zhang Yang smiled without any trace of worry.

300 seconds later, the last NPC, Bassan fell defeated after being pierced with an arrow through his chest.

"Hahaha! I can feel it! The last chain has been unshackled! There's nothing to hold me back now! I...I...I AM THE QUEEN OF MEDUSA! THE STRONGEST FIGHTER OF LORD ROUGELIER!" A sudden dark light erupted from Aigawa. The ray spread across the field like dark clouds before an imminent storm!

The boss still had over 10% HP left, which was more than a value of 800,000!

Now that her attacks have gained a 6,000 splash effect, Aigawa could easily kill the entire party in two randomly placed arrows!

[vanguard aggression]! [shield wall]!

Zhang Yang quickly activated two skills and protected the entire party with a light barrier. This boss fight does not even require strategic movements in the battle. As long as the fighters positioned themselves

conventionally; with ranged attackers attacking from the rear of the tank, and melee attackers attacking the back of the boss, no one would need to move around when the battle starts! Since everyone was already in place, Zhang Yang's [vanguard aggression] could easily protect everyone.

‘-2,832!’

‘-1,800!’

With [vanguard aggression] and [shield wall] both activated at the same time, Zhang Yang's damage reduction rate was at 60%. Even though the boss arrow attacks had a 6,000 damage splash effect, it would only cause over 1,800 shadow damage to Zhang Yang, while the rest of the party only received 600 damage.

After 10 seconds, [vanguard aggression] ended and the boss still had 7% HP.

[rearm]!

[vanguard aggression] and [shield wall] were activated again, buying them another 10 seconds!

6%, 5%, 4%!

10 seconds ended!

Aigawa let out a deafening shriek and shot an arrow towards Zhang Yang. The attack landed on him and a darkened shockwave was emitted from him, striking everyone else. The damage text, ‘-6,000!’ popped up all over the place. Those who had less than 6,000 HP were instantly killed.

In the just two seconds, Aigawa shot another arrow which caused another blast of waves, causing another 6,000 damage to everyone. The sudden drop of HP was too much for any healer, including Han Ying Xue to keep up with. In the blink of an eye, everyone else besides Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight was removed from the battle.

If only the boss had been left with 24,000 HP instead of 240,000 HP, Zhang Yang would have considered staying on to finish the fight, but now that it had come to this, he knew that it was impossible. Activating

[shadow of the void], Zhang Yang withdrew from the battle.

"Hey! F*ck! Boss! Did you just give up and run away!?" Endless Starlight screamed as he activated [sacred protection], gaining a five second window of invincibility. He continued to swing at the boss, one hammer blow at a time since he had no way of leaving battle mode.

Pak!

After 5 seconds of wailing pathetically, he fell defeated -- with honor -- in his own words.

As the battle ended, the three dwarves respawned and the boss went back to being restrained by the magical chains, with full HP.

"Noob tank! What sort of act was that! Pui! You've lost my respect! How could you not have the spirit of unity?!" cried Wei Yan Er.

If he had not left the battle forcefully, instead continuing to fight on, that would not have been unity, it would have been stupidity at its best! Zhang Yang laughed at her comment and replied, "Little brat. You're not mad because I quit fighting in the middle of the battle. You're mad because I did not die! Most of all, you're mad because I was able to save some gold coins from repairs! Isn't that right!"

"Nyeheheh.." Wei Yan Wei laughed sheepishly.

"Zhan Yu, we're severely lacking in firepower!" said Hundred Shots worriedly.

Fantasy Sweetheart solemnly mumbled. "It's my fault. If only I could be as strong as Sister Snow, I wouldn't have dragged the team down! Please! Replace me with someone else!"

According to the damage statistic, Han Ying Xue was ranked seventh while Fantasy Sweetheart was ranked at the lowest 18th place.

Fatty Han walked towards her and patted her shoulder consolingly. "Take it easy, Sweetheart. You're a healer! Why are you comparing your attack power with someone else? Even if we brought another player in, I'd rather swap out Endless Starlight! He's a useless tank! Look at him, he

didn't get a chance to tank the boss! He's a huge *ss leecher!"

Endless Starlight was clearly embarrassed. He fired back, "Fatty bro... How about I let you do something about it? Don't be aiming at my one weakness!"

"BLEH..." Everyone stuck out their tongues and expressed their disgust.

"Haha...still, Dummy, we're severely lacking in attack power. What do we do now?" asked Han Ying Xue as she frowned over the matter.

Zhang Yang smiled. "That was just our first try. I needed to gauge how strong was our team's DPS! That is why I did not use my trump card!" he took out the [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)] and posted it on the party channel.

Even though Lone Desert Smoke had dominated the Cave of Bones map boss, the respawn and drop rate was rather low. Zhang Yang was running low on scrolls. Since he had also used some scrolls in the Expedition war, he only had 7 pieces remaining.

The scroll could increase their offensive power by 5%. It wasn't much, and if the party's firepower was beyond helping, there would be no point wasting the scroll. But, the party firepower was much better than Zhang Yang had expected. They could at least last until the boss had over 4% HP left. If everyone gained a 5% increase bonus, victory would be quite definite!

"Oh! Right! Haha! I've completely forgotten about that thing!" Hundred Shots laughed and face-palmed himself.

With renewed hope, the party quickly respawned and rushed back to the fight. They were already thinking of the rewards.

After 10 minutes, everyone revived and regrouped with Zhang Yang.

"Heal yourselves up. I want everyone to perform just like we did in the previous round. Put everything you have into attacking! Maximize your damage! Remember, the scroll effect will only last for one minute. Fighting the boss could take up to six minutes! We have only one shot at this! Now, if you think that the scroll is going to guarantee a win, then you're dead

wrong!" said Zhang Yang sternly. "Your attacks have to be fast and strong. Only then, will the scroll's potential be brought up!"

"Noob tank! We're ready! Let's fight!" said Wei Yan Er hurriedly.

Zhang Yang looked at the little girl with widened eyes.

He coughed and cried, "Those who wants to fight immediately, please rise your hands!"

Suush! Suush! Other then Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Daffodil Daydream, everyone else in the party raised their hands up.

Zhang Yang sighed and shook his head with disappointment. "Looks like we only have 4 smart players in this party."

Everyone turned and exchange a look with each other. They did not understand what was happening.

"Daffodil Daydream, please enlighten our friends here!" said Zhang Yang as he gestured to her.

Daffodil Daydream smiled and said, "Zhan Yu's [rearm] has a 30 minutes cool down duration. If we start the fight now, he could only use [vanguard aggression] and [shield wall] once! We will be losing that extra 10 seconds of window for attacking!"

"F*ck! How could I miss that!" said Fatty Han as he face-palmed himself hard in the forehead.

"It's fine. It's great news for us all that you're now aware of your own stupidity!" said Han Ying Xue. "Look! Our little Drizzler is still in shock! Her eyes are still wide open!"

"AH. ARGH! AHHHH! Han Ying Xue! You're calling me stupid again, aren't you! That's it! I'm cutting all ties with you!" cried Wei Yan Er angrily.

The tension dispersed in the air as everyone started to laugh.

After 10 minutes, there was only around 5 minutes left on his [rearm] cool down timer. He would activate it at the exact moment when the last NPC falls. Zhang Yang signaled everyone to get into their positions before

starting fight by talking to the three NPCs. The 30 second countdown timer started.

3...2...1...Start!

Both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er worked together to inflict 5 layers of [Cripple Defense]. Swiftly, Zhang Yang slung the shield over his back and took out the [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)]. A golden light enveloped his body and spread to everyone.

‘Ding! You have gained the effect [rising morale] (Level 1). All attacks and healing effects have been increased by 5%! Last for 60 seconds!’

Rampage: Start!

100 seconds into the fight, the first NPC, Margeryashe fell. The boss had lost 31% HP.

200 seconds into the fight, the second NPC, Bassan fell. The boss had lost 63% HP.

300 seconds into the fight, the last NPC, Lingamant fell. The boss had only 5.5% HP left!

[vanguard aggression] ! [shield wall]!

10 seconds passed; Aigawa had only 2.4% HP left!

[rearm]! [vanguard aggression]! [shield wall]!

2%...1%...0%!

"ARGHH!" Aigawa released a deafening scream and twitched violently in her death throes. Her lower half snake body convulsed as her snake hair flailed about like a headbanger. After a few seconds of struggling and the obligatory boss' ending line, she falls down dead.

Chapter 215: Solid Blockade

"Haha! We did it! We did it!"

Everyone cheered. It was not the toughest boss they've ever encountered. However, it was definitely the most epic fight they have ever been in. Attack! Attack! And more attack! Everyone had pushed themselves past their limits to achieve the highest damage output they had ever achieved.

This battle had helped the party understand their own classes better, gaining innate knowledge about cycling their skills. They had also gained further understanding on the concept of cost, be it Rage, Mana, Focus, or Stamina. In a way, this had been a very different form of training to help them strengthen their characters' class basics.

"WOOOOOAH! Let me pick the loots! Let me! ME!ME!ME!ME!" screamed the little girl as she skipped her way to the boss' corpse. Those who were already familiar with the little girl's behavior made way for her, while the rest who were joining Wei Yan Er for the first time were taken aback and mesmerized by her cuteness.

"Eh? This one is interesting!" the little girl posted an item description in the party channel.

[Eye of Medusa] (Consumable)

Use: Unleashed the ominous stare of Medusa. Cause a target to be petrified. Removes all buffs and debuffs on the target. Prevents the target from moving or performing any actions for five seconds. The target will not receive any damage for the entire effect's duration. Players and monsters above Level 60 will have a resistance against the skill and have a lowered success rate. Cool down time: 2 minutes

Remaining uses: 3/3

Level Requirement: 50

"What is this thing?" asked Endless Starlight. "In PK or monster grinding, freezing a target is nice and all since we can smack it senseless. But since the target is petrified and will not take any damage to begin with, what

sort of usage can this item do? Wouldn't it be rather contradicting?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "This is indeed a good item. If it wasn't limited by levels, it would have been better!"

"Why is that?"

Other than Sun Xin Yu alone, the rest of the party expressed their curiosity. Everyone was looking at him with questioning eyes.

"In a solo fight, it doesn't do much. However, during a group fight, you can use this item on an enemy healer and focus on the other target! They would not receive healing for five seconds! How cool is that?! I'll give you another example. If your own ally is about to be killed by a boss, or a monster or another player for that matter, you can use the item on the dying ally and grant him a five second invincibility window!"

"OOooh!"

Everyone nodded, satisfied with his explanation.

Zhang Yang boldly took the item for himself and left the other items out for grabs.

The boss had dropped a total of 4 Gray-Silver equipment. Among the loots, two of them were rings, the other two being necklaces.

One of the necklaces had defensive-oriented attributes. However, as Zhang Yang was already wearing a Level 50 Yellow-Gold necklace, he dismissively passed it over to Endless Starlight. The boy took the item, despite having the lowest guild contribution points, smiling so earnestly that his eyes were completely shut. He thanked Zhang Yang repeatedly.

After all the loots had been distributed, everyone tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castle to complete their Level 50 class quests. Zhang Yang went to his Little Merchandize Shop. Now that he had obtained the First Clear Achievement, there was no reason to withhold the sales of the Fire Resisting Potion! After carrying out the two highly-regarded auctions, the Little Merchandize Shop had greatly risen in popularity. He placed the potions at the most visible spot in the shop instead of the storage; where people would have to go through the hassle

of tying in the keywords into the search box to search for the item. He believed that the potion would quickly be a hit.

However, there were only a handful of Level 50 players at the moment. The sales of the Fire Resisting Potions should be limited for now. It should see improvements as soon as more players reach Level 50 and begin their own raids on the Poison Fireland. Even though it was not really required to defeat the boss, it was still a means in making battles slightly easier. How could that not be a hit among players? Even if the potion costs a small sum of gold coins, it was better to defeat the boss altogether, instead of dying and retrying several times over, which will, assuming the players die in the process, incurring higher costs in repair fees? It would also be an absolute waste of time! If you put those two options on the scale, people would definitely pick the easier path.

The [Solid Iron Plate] was a really good investment. They were like real-life gold bars! Even the players who have not reached Level 50 were already stocking up on them now to save them the trouble of competitively purchasing them in the future. Because of that, the price of each [Solid Iron Plate] remained steadily at 12 gold coins each. It still had the potential to reach a higher price!

Because of the sales from the [Solid Iron Plate], the profits gained today had surpassed 1,500,000 gold coins! That staggering number truly shocked Zhang Yang!

Nodding approvingly to himself, Zhang Yang then summoned his [Skeletal War horse] and rode to the Warrior's Home, in search of Ani, the Warrior Class Instructor. As expected, Ani was still as sexy as ever, and as always, surrounded by a number of losers who wouldn't take their eyes off her huge rack and slender waist. It couldn't be helped. Her outfit was rather revealing, after all. Zhang Yang dismounted and sent his horse back into his inventory. Ani broke into a proud, approving grin, nodding repeatedly when she saw Zhang Yang approaching her. "You, you, specimen of a warrior! Well done! I heard about what you had did! It's truly a miracle I must say. You truly have my respect now! Not only did you vanquish Roshan – Copper Hammer, the leader of the rebellion

against the Union, you also defeated the evil demon Aigawa! Good job!"

Zhang Yang smiled earnestly. "It's all because of your teaching and guidance, that I am here today."

Ani puffed up with pride when Zhang Yang said that and flung her golden hair back joyfully. "Zhan Yu, you are now qualified to be a true warrior! For now, I want you to follow my lead. I will bestow upon you the title of the true warrior!"

She reached both of hands out, and placed her palms on Zhang Yang chest. "O Lord, Brave and Mighty God of War. I pray to thee, today, a warrior has been born to serve thy...Zhan Yu! Don't just stand there, do what I'm doing!"

Zhang Yang frowned, slightly annoyed. Who the hell designed this script! He had to touch an NPC's honkers! What a pervert! Horny *sshole!

No matter how much Zhang Yang tried to refuse, Ani continued to insist. It seems that the system would not proceed if Zhang Yang does not to follow the NPC's instructions. Reluctantly, Zhang Yang reached out with his hands and placed them over the twin domes.

Boing

As expected from a western female model, huge and bouncy!
HUMOUNGOUS! FIRM! AND BOUNCY!

This game is just too realistic! It wasn't just from the aesthetics, but the feeling, the sensation itself was almost the same as a real woman's...

"F*ck me!" The usual campers who spent all day ogling at Ani were shocked. Their eyes almost popped as they saw Zhang Yang laying his palms over her huge assets! It's just sooooooooo out of this world!

After a long speech about justice, power, and some warrior related stuff, Ani retracted her hands and said, "Congratulation Zhan Yu, you're now officially a loyal believer in the god or war! And...please remove your hands from my chest."

"Urgh!" Zhang Yang immediately shrunk his hands back.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Level 50 Class Quest. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points! Quest Difficulty: A. Completion of Hidden Difficulty. Final Score: Perfect!’

‘Ding! You have learned a new skill: Warrior’s Will!’

‘Ding! You have gained an item: Solid Blockade!’

[Warrior’s Will] (Level 1): Removes all debuffs on one's self and causes the next use of {Destructive Smash} to land as a critical strike. The effect will last for the next 8 seconds or until {Destructive Smash} is used.

Cool down time: 10 minutes.

At Level 50, all class will receive an anti-status affecting skill. However, Zhang Yang was a little disappointed. the skill reward was the same as it was in his previous life, when he had only obtained an "Average" score.

Looks like the reward was based on the item instead.

[Solid Blockade] (Yellow-Gold, Shield)

Defense: +800

Vitality: +400

{Level 2 Socket}

Equip Effect: Absorbs 300 damage every time you receive an attack.

Equip Effect: Restores 100 HP after every successful {Block}.

Level Requirement: 50

OP!

Zhang Yang was delighted. In his previous life, he had only completed the Level 50 class quest by defeating Roshan in Hard Mode. After completing the quest, the reward was the same skill and a Green-Copper tier shield. This time, the rewards were clearly different compared to before! It’s a Yellow-Gold tier got crying out loud!

He quickly headed over to the Gem Shop to look for a suitable Gem Stone.

Right after he left Ani alone to do his thing, the horny players around Ani were magnetized to her, their arms reaching out. Approaching closer and closer, drips of saliva could be seen dripping on the floor beneath them.

"I've always wanted to touch them!"

"Back then, if you even lay a finger on her, she will kill you and send you to prison! It seems like there's a bug in the system! Aww yiss! Time to touch until I die!"

"Oh man...those honkers! Those humongo-bongo! Here I come!"

WHAM! BAM! SLAM!

Ani spun around on the spot and killed everyone with a {Tornado Sweep}. What's worse, after the player revive, they were automatically sent to prison. When a player is harassed, they would need to submit a complaint to the relevant figures to bring in the convict. But an NPC is part of the system itself. Without any word or warning, the NPC will first hack and slash, after that it's catch and stash!

In the prison, those perverted players exchanged baffled looks...How did he do it?

Zhang Yang socketed a [Level 2 Vitality Gem Stone] into his shield. He then swapped it out with the new one, boosting his maximum HP to a whopping 17,040 HP! (Vitality Aura applied) (Author's Note: Unless specified, all HP mentioned from hereon will include the Vitality Aura bonus)

Where would the limits of his tanking be?

Other Level 50 tanks would have, at most, a complete set of Level 40 Gray-Silver equipment. Perhaps their equipment would all be socketed with [Level 1 Vitality Gem Stone]s. If they had invested all five SP gained during their leveling up, they would have, at most, 10,000 HP!

Needless to say, such is the difference between Gray-Silver and Yellow-Gold equipment. Besides, only Level 50 equipment and higher will have Level 2 Sockets. With his current equipment, he can easily raid Poison

Fireland without breaking a sweat.

Zhang Yang had an extra SP to spend, which he had received as a reward from the First Clear Achievement of the Poison Fireland. Currently, he had maximized {Block} at Level 10. {Shield Wall} was at Level 6. Now that he had gained a new skill - {Warrior's Will}, Zhang Yang was torn between them. Should he try to maximize {Shield Wall} level first or acquire {Warrior's Will}?

{Warrior's Will} can remove all debuffs and create a sure-hit critical strike for {Destructive Smash}! It was both a strong attack and defensive skill! If he raised it to Level 10, the skill cool down time will be reduced to only one minute! It would be OP beyond OP, especially in PK battles! This skill is just too important to ignore!

"Argh. What the heck. I'll invest in {Warrior's Will} first, since the professional league is going to start soon. A anti-status affect skill, and a really hard hit is most important! If I had invested in {Shield Wall} first, even at Level 10, the cool down time is only at two minutes and 30 seconds! {Warrior's Will} would be far more useful!"

Now then he had steeled his decision, Zhang Yang went ahead and invested the one SP he had on {Warrior's Will}.

Zhang Yang checked the time. It was close to 10pm. By the looks of it, he would not even be able to grind his level properly. Zhang Yang decided instead to craft a few more [Fire Resisting Potion]s and place them all into the warehouse. Even though the current demand for [Fire Resisting Potion] was not high, the sales will definitely increase soon after! In about a week's time, a majority of the players will reach Level 50. By then, they would need to defeat Roshan, be it for farming set equipment or to complete their class quest!

Zhang Yang continued to craft more potions and logged out at around 11pm.

After the night had passed, Zhang Yang went out and did his routine training. Just as he came back home, Zhang Yang received a call. It was Zhao Hui Shan.

"Z-Zhang Yang sob sob" Zhang Yang could hear crying from the other side of the line. "We're sorry. We're stupid. We're blind! We should not have tried to belittle you! Please! Please forgive us and stop torturing us!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. What the hell did I do? Annoyed, Zhang Yang frowned and said, "What are you talking about?"

"sob sob, Kang Ming's father's factory...the..the d-distributors have all stopped buying their product! And...and Kang Ming was caught by the police! They are charging him for drug possession and distribution! Zhang Yang! I know that we're at fault! But please! Plse! For my sake! Think of me when we were dating back then! Please stop torturing us!"

Zhao Hui Shan was worried. For the past three days, Zhou Kang Ming had been "invited" to the police station for questioning. On the other side of things, her boyfriend's family business wasn't looking too good. The products that they had produced were piling up into a mountain! IF they could not even sell a single one of them...her mother-in-law will treat her like a black sheep, only good at drawing bad luck for her husband. The eye rolls would never stop whenever the mother-in-law met her. Her mother-in-law will soon try to have her leave Zhou Kang Ming, in order to end the misfortune that she's bringing.

Zhao Hui Shan had thought about it and eventually, she realized that these series of unfortunate events occurred after the night they met Zhang Yang and discovered that he harbored a lot of power in secret. She came to a conclusion that it was all Zhang Yang's doing. She had been reluctant about it but after some time, she dug out the told student journal and searched for Zhang Yang's house telephone number to call him.

However, Zhang Yang himself had nothing to do with the events that occurred to Zhao Hui Shan, Zhao Kang Ming and his father. "Zhao Hui Shan, I'm not that narrow-minded and I don't any grudges against you. The truth is, I did nothing. You're barking up the wrong tree. Good day to you."

Ka chack!

Zhang Yang hung up and logged back into the game. Zhang Yang

opened the Friend List and found only Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue online. A sudden thought came into his mind and he added them both into his party.

"Little girl, did you do something to the guys who had been troubling me?"

"Ah! Busted!" said Wei Yan Er without denying it. In fact, she was happy to admit that it was her doing. "How about it? I'm rather strong you know! Now, do you see this lady in a new light?"

Comparing Silky Soft Holdings with Zhao Kang Ming's business was like trying to compare a little ant to an army of giants! Zhao Kang Ming could not even try to put up any level of resistance.

Zhang Yang shook his head. He had never even thought of Zhou Kang Ming or Zhao Hui Shan as an enemy. They were not even worth his thoughts! However, Fatty Han must have been overly dramatic about his situation to Wei Yan Er and angered her so. He only laughed and said, "Yea. You're full of righteousness!" Seeing how Zhao Kang Ming had become, Zhang Yang was not even bothered to advise Wei Yan Er to stop her doing.

"Ehehehe! That, I am!" Wei Yan Er nodded happily. "Noob tank! When are we going to hunt for Battle Mounts?"

"Things can be given, yet not to be sought. Fortune it be if attained. Destiny it be if not!" Zhang Yang shook his head explaining.

"Hey! Speak plainly!"

"You stupid little girl! Why don't you let him do the catching for you! You can save some money on the [Sealing Rein]s" said Han Ying Xue quietly.

[Sealing Rein]s were expensive. They cost 100 gold coins apiece! Wei Yan Er's eyes glinted a little and said, "Ahhh! Now then, Noob tank! Go and catch me one!"

"Snowy B*tch! What are you trying to do huh!? Besides, I can't help you catch one. Anything I successfully seal would be bound to me!" Zhang

Yang explained roughly. "Little brat. Did you skip school again?"

"My cousin sister...she. Erhm...Her period arrived on time. She's feeling a little feverish. So, I had to take a holiday and take care of her! Ai ya...It can't be helped. I mean, I really wanted to go to school today..." said the little girl proudly, as she put on a melodramatic show.

"YOU DAMN BRAT! How could you say something like that in the open!" Han Ying Xue screamed. She was red in the face, a mixture of rage and embarrassment. In a flash, her character vanished and Wei Yan Er's character soon followed, even as she blinked in surprise at the spot where Han Ying Xue was standing at moments ago. She was probably getting a scolding, or perhaps even a beating from Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at their comical acts. He then used the city Teleportation Circle and went to Tukula Fortress. After going up his [Skeletal War Horse], Zhang Yang rode off with a kick.

Chapter 216: A Call from the Princess

Zhang Yang rode through the Frozen Sky Wasteland, the Necrotic Wastelands, and finally reached the eerie Flatlands of the Passings. Here, all year long, in fact, for as long as it had existed, thick mist covered the entire field. It was like a layer of dense clouds had descended from the high heavens and blanketed the entire flatlands. The problem was that sunlight was extremely scarce. Dark and gloomy, the entire area was littered with the deceased of many races.

There were corpses of Human, Elf, Dwarf, Beastman, and even monsters of various sizes. Apparently, many years back, a war between the Union and the Demons had taken place on this very field. The remains of those who fell in battle were buried deep underground. With the cumulative anger and vengeance left around, the place was corrupted, spawning endless number of spectres to forever roam in this wasteland.

Zhang Yang was here to complete a hidden quest. In his previous life, one of his old friends had spoke to him about the quest briefly. Zhang Yang only knew that the quest can only be triggered somewhere in the Twilight Hills. But he was still clueless about how and where exactly in the map can he trigger it.

The Level 50+ maps are not within the city's jurisdiction, and thus, they do not have a specific Teleportation Point that players can use to travel around. As such, players would have to depend on their mounts to travel from map to map. Zhang Yang had traveled from Frozen Sky Wasteland all the way to the Necrotic Wastelands. His trip had taken a total of three hours!

For that reason, once a new Territory spawns, and Teleportation Points become accessible to the players, the owner of the Territory can set a toll fee and gain a massive fortune from this little business!

...

Zhang Yang spent another 30 minutes and found Twilight Hills. This little hill was only a few hundred meters tall. However, the long stretch of

the mountains went on for quite a distance. On top of the hill were tombstones that were covered in snow. Most of the tombstones were eroded, Zhang Yang could not make out the engravings on their surfaces. As he continued looking, he noticed that most of the tombstones were not in their respective places. Some of them were lopsided, while others had completely fallen down. There were holes everywhere, clearly indicating that many graves were no longer occupied. In fact, the area was densely populated with spectres, making "oooo, arghhh, and urghhh" moans as they wandered aimlessly.

Spectres can be categorized into two tiers. The lower tiers are the weaker ones and had been revived by the vengeful sentiments of their past life. The only reason as to why they have been revived is to kill. A good example of lesser spectres are Skeletal Soldier and Zombies. High Levelled spectres had a distinctive feature that separated them from the others. They had the same level of intelligence as they had before they died. Some even retained their original memories!

All of the spectres in Twilight Hills are all lower leveled spectres, Skeletal Soldiers. However, even though they are considered as lesser spectres, it does not mean that they are low in level!

[Twilight Skeletal Warrior] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 54

HP: 5.400

Defense: 50

Can these sluggish monsters possibly deal any damage to me?

Zhang Yang thought to himself and smirked.

"Ride like the wind, Boney M!" Zhang Yang pulled the reins and the skeletal horse neighed as loudly as a passing train. Both of them charged into the group of monsters.

"Groowl!" The Skeletal Warriors responded as they saw Zhang Yang approaching them at high speed. They opened their jaws in a voiceless warcry and swung their swords at Zhang Yang. Riding the horse, Zhang

Yang dodged the attacks easily and the monster started to chase after him.

He began to attract the attention of more and more monsters, only stopping to turn around when he estimated that he had kited at least 30 monsters. Zhang Yang unsummoned his mount and got ready.

{Blood Rage}! +30 Rage

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang slid across the field and charged into one of the incoming monsters.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Zhang Yang's attack struck them all at once, dealing an average amount of 3,300 damage to the horde of monsters around him. There were even some hits that registered as Critical Strikes killing some monsters instantly.

The monsters retaliated. However...

'-O!' '-O!' '-O!' '-O!' '-O!' '-O!'

None of the attacks could deal any damage to Zhang Yang. The Level 54 Normal monster had little more than 1,000 physical attack, which meant that, even if their attack could break through his defense without being nullified, the value that did get through was so low that it would be completely absorbed by the equipment's damage absorption passive skill!

They are...too weak!

{Thunder Strike}!

Wham!

A chain of '-480!' damage texts flew across everywhere. As the monsters staggered from the blow, Zhang Yang quickly turned around and continued running around, forming a long line of monsters that followed him doggedly. Zhang Yang kited as many monster as he could and used {Horizontal Sweep} every 10 seconds and {Thunder Strike} every eight seconds. {Blast Wave} was used every 30 seconds to wipe the monsters out whenever their numbers grew sufficient.

‘Ding! You have killed Twilight Skeletal Warrior. Obtained 5,400 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have killed Twilight Skeletal Warrior. Obtained 5,400 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have killed Twilight Skeletal Warrior. Obtained 5,400 Experience Points!’

...

The system notification rang in his ears continuously as he killed the monsters. The amount of experience points he gained was rather abundant and he smiled in satisfaction. If he could train like this alone for a few days, his level would quickly exceed even Han Ying Xue’s and he would be the highest leveled player in the China server!

In one clean sweep, Zhang Yang had cleared all the monsters within a few hundred meters around him. Zhang Yang went around and slowly picked up the loots on the ground. In ‘God’s Miracle’, the gold coin drops that was produced in the game was very limited, and when they did, the amount would be negligible. Even when a monster is at Level 54, it would drop only 50 copper coins. If he had to pick them up one at a time, he had to spend an eternity, only earning some pocket money. Zhang Yang was doing this only because he suspected that the hidden quest might have something to do with the monsters’ drops. It was a tedious waste of time!

Going through a few hundred monster corpses for their loots would take a lot of time as well! Zhang Yang had spent close to 10 minutes inspecting the corpses for loots. Other than [Cloths], there were other ETC items such as [Weathered Thick Bone] and [Broken Helmet]; none of them worth anything!

Zhang Yang rode on his horse again and begun to kite the monsters all over again. The second wave of monsters yielded loots that were just as poor. By the third wave however, a beautiful stone that shone gold, similar to Yellow-Gold equipment, was on the ground.

[Weird Stone] (Special)

Description: You can feel a faint magical power from within this weird stone. It's extremely weak! Perhaps you can feel a stronger power if you gather more of these stones!

Use: Combines 12 [Weird Stone] into one [Magical Communication Stone].

"Hmm. Is this what I'm looking for?" Zhang Yang murmured. He kept the glowing stone in his inventory and continue farming.

After killing waves and waves of monsters, Zhang Yang slowly accumulated the [Weird Stone]s. From just one, to three pieces, eventually he gathered 11 pieces in total.

'Ding! You have obtained [Weird Stone]!'

Zhang Yang had long since lost count on how many waves he had to go through before the 12th stone finally appeared.

He took the stones out and placed them together.

FUUSH!

Together, the 12 stones began to glow intensely; Zhang Yang had to look away for a second. The stones fumble around for a little wild, slowly piecing themselves together to form a larger...stone.

"What was I thinking? What else could have happened? A king kong appearing from within the stone?"

Zhang Yang picked up the stone and checked its properties.

[Magical Communication Stone] (Quest Item)

Use: Use the stone to reveal a hidden message! Hurry! Someone might need your help!

Zhang Yang placed his palm onto the stone and a gold light beam out from it. Close to where Zhang Yang standing, the beam of light projected a life-sized image of a beautiful girl. She had a blond hair and ruby-red eyes. She was dressed in a flamboyant royal gown which stood out in the desolate background. Somehow, the dress looked like it was perfect for her instead of the other way around.

[Projection of Princess Serena] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Defense: 0

"Princess Serena?" Zhang Yang took a step back in shock. Isn't she the only remaining legitimate heiress of White Jade's royal family? The future queen of White Jade?

"Warrior! I need your help! The King of White Jade needs your help!" said Serena. Her voice shook as she pleaded desperately, her face lined with worry.

Zhang Yang saluted and said, "Princess, I'm yours to command!"

"Warrior, I'm trapped in the deepest part of the Tomb of the Gray Shadow. Please! Make your way there! Be careful, there is an incredibly powerful Necromancer guarding the place! You must make preparations for this raid!" said Serena. The edges of the projection started to crack. The cracks grew and spread quickly. It looked like the projection would shatter into pieces anytime soon.

"Princess!"

"Argh! I-I can't maintain this form any longer! The power of the soul is getting weaker by the minute! Warrior! Please help me! I...I-I ...h-hold...m-muc...lon...ger." Her cracking voice dimmed and the projection blew up, pieces of it flying everywhere, like an explosive mirror.

'Ding! You have accepted the quest: A Call from the Princess!'

[A Call from the Princess] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Warrior! Head to the Tomb of the Gray Shadow to search for Princess Serena! She needs your help!

Progress: Find Princess Serena 0/1

"Isn't the princess living in White Jade Castle? How did she end up all the way there? For worse, she's now trapped there! How could White Jade

Castle remain quiet about this? They should have dispatched the entire army to search for her! She is the only heiress to the throne!" Zhang Yang cursed. But now that he had accepted the quest, might as well get on with it.

He circled the area for a while and found an entrance to a cave. After clearing a few waves of monsters outside the cave, he entered it alone.

‘Ding! You have entered the Tomb of the Gray Shadow!’

Zhang Yang opened the world map and examined the map he was in. The entire structure of the tomb was like a spider’s web. There were many tunnels that broke off into other tunnels! This cave was simply too complicated!

"Die!" a voice was heard and Zhang Yang saw a glint of an axe approaching. Zhang Yang dodged it. The attacker was a skeleton with a few broken pieces of metal armor hanging onto its body. Emerald flame burned within its eye sockets.

[Tomb Guardian] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 55

HP: 55,000

Defense: 300

‘-763!’

Another attack came and Zhang Yang deliberately let it land. He wanted to assess this monster’s strength. The result was rather pleasing! The Tomb Guardian did around 3,000 of basic attacking damage. Zhang Yang had 920 Defense, 900 passive damage absorption, and a 20% passive damage reduction, which reduced the attack down to less than 800 damage.

‘-1,643!’

Now that Zhang Yang had a good gauge of its strength, he began striking back.

{Block}! +30 Rage

‘-355!’ {Block} reflect damage.

Zhang Yang used {Warrior’s Will}! The next {Destructive Smash} will be a critical hit!

‘-7,012!’

The hard blow immediately removed 13% of the monster’s HP!

This is truly OP! A controlled critical strike such as this, dealing 7,000 damage, would easily kill 90% of the current players!

Even though the Tomb Guardian was a Level 55, Elite tier monster, his 55,000 HP was no challenge to Zhang Yang. In just half a minute, Zhang Yang had turned the monster into a pile of brittle bones, losing only around 6,000 HP in the process.

Among the loots, there was a Green-Copper tier Shield. Zhang Yang quickly picked the item up and examined it.

[Malevolent Shield] (Green-Copper, Shield)

Defense: +250

Vitality: +150

Level Requirement: 50

Malevolent Set (1/4):

{Malevolent Necklace}

{Malevolent Cape}

{ Malevolent Sword}

Malevolent Shield

Two Equipped: Have a 50% chance to {Curse} the target every time you receive an attack. Reduces 1% of target’s attacking power. Maximum 5 stacks can be applied.

Four Equipped: 50% chance to reduce the target’s Defense on every successful hit. Target takes 1% more damage from everything. Maximum 5 stacks can be applied.

Chapter 217: Grinding

The set equipment was very good! But...it's a shame that its tier was unexpectedly low. Zhang Yang could not give up his Yellow-Gold equipment for a Green-Copper set. It was also a shame that the second equipment-effect was strong, but only if the condition to activate it was swapped with the first equipment-effect. He could just equip the necklace and cape and be able to stack the increase damage/reduce armor effect! It would be almost similar to the [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale] (Level 1)!

What a shame...argh! What a shame! Only Guardians and Defenders could use Shields!

Zhang Yang had no interest in Green-Coppers, but the majority of the players would be fighting for it. In fact, Green-Copper is the most common equipment tier that everyone is wearing. He and his bunch of "elite" friends are a totally different story. If he could farm all four pieces of the set, he can definitely sell them in a bundle at an incredible price! Four separate set-equipment parts, or one complete set as a whole! The difference was obvious!

A sign from the gods of prosperity has appeared!

Zhang Yang spirit lifted and marched onwards.

The monsters inside the tomb were numerous. Every few ten meters, he would encounter one monster. On average, Zhang Yang would deplete his HP after fighting three monsters. He had to frequently stop and heal himself with health recovering snacks or use {Berserker's Heal}

Other teams might need to raid the tomb with a three-man party. One tank, one healer, and one attacker. However, since Zhang Yang's damage reduction skills were just too strong, paired up with his overwhelming attacking capabilities, he could easily hack his way in without the need for a healer. But, if he did have a healer with him, he would not have needed to sit down and heal, greatly increasing his efficiency.

The tunnels in the tomb were poorly lit by torches that hung from the wall every 10 meters. The light was so dim that it barely illuminated the

passageway. At least, he wouldn't be bumping into walls.

Since the first elite monster had already dropped a Malevolent set equipment, it was no indicator of the drop rate being any good. In fact, Zhang Yang had killed more than a hundred monsters before managing to find the second equipment of the Malevolent set. Malevolent Necklace.

"Fortune does come and go easily huh..." Zhang Yang sighed and kept the necklace in his inventory.

30 minutes...one hour...two hours...

After the third hour, Zhang Yang had collected a total of two complete Malevolent sets. There was still a surplus of two extra necklace and one extra Malevolent Sword. By then, Zhang Yang had reached Level 55 and had made it close to the center of the entire tomb.

The area here was a normal sized tomb hall, around the size of 50 square meters. There were two floors, with entrances to the lower floor at both sides of the dark hall. The upper floor was smaller in size. It was about a quarter the size of the lower floor. In the center of the lower floor was a stone table. A woman lay on it there. That woman was the same woman as the one Zhang Yang had seen in the projection, she was Serena!

Zhang Yang cautiously observed from afar and found that she just lay there, motionless. Her eyes were shut tight. Her chest...was not moving! She's not breathing! Is she dead?

Standing close to the stone table was a figure in black hood. The person was completely covered from the head to toe, its identity impossible to surmise. Since the figure was facing Serena, Zhang Yang could not see anything, he could not even figure out its gender, much less its race. Zhang Yang could only see that the figure was rather thin and small. In its right hand, it held a magic staff that was much taller than it was. On the top of the staff was a fist sized skull, with glowing emerald fires burning in its eye sockets.

[Necromancer Sigma] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 58

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 600

"Only 2,000,000?" Zhang Yang mused. "This place is small and cramped. It could only accommodate a small number of players. Could it be a specialized five-man party raid? Maybe I can beat the boss by myself?"

Hesitating a little, Zhang Yang finally decided. "Might as well give it a shot. If I die, I'd only have to pay for repairs! If I can't defeat it, I'll just call the Snow B*tch to join me! I hope I can defeat it alone. Calling her to join me would take another three to four hours...the monsters outside would have respawned and I'll have to kill them all over again...how troublesome."

He drew his battle axe and readied his shield. He walked into the lower floor and rushed towards the stone table.

Sigma spun around to the sound of his footsteps. When it faced Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang could then see its true form. It was a skeletal magician - a lich, staring at him through eye sockets filled with bright emerald flames!

"The Living?! How could you enter this place!" Sigma pointed its staff towards Zhang Yang and start chanting a spell. A progress bar appeared on its head. After three seconds, a black light beamed out from its skeletal staff and shot towards Zhang Yang.

'Ding! Sigma has used {Shadow Arrow}!'

'-3,900'

Damn!

Zhang Yang was shocked. How would he fight the boss alone this way! Still, now that it has come to this, it's best to carry on. At least he'll get a good grasp on the boss' mechanics. When he returns with Han Ying Xue, they would be better prepared.

{Cripple Defense}, {Destructive Smash}, {Horizontal Sweep}...Zhang

Yang unleashed everything he got. The stronger his attacks, the longer he could last in the fight. That way, he could at least try to decrease the boss' HP as much as possible and understand the boss better.

Sigma continued using {Shadow Arrow}. At one point, when the boss' chanting was about to finish, Zhang Yang struck the boss with a {Crash Magic}.

'Ding! Sigma's {Shadow Arrow} has been interrupted!'

It worked! The boss' casting was interrupted!

Moreover, the boss was {Silent} for three seconds! During that time, the boss had to resort to physical attack! It raised its fists and legs to attack Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

With the shield skill in effect, Zhang Yang recovered 100 HP.

'O!'

Sigma landed another fist on Zhang Yang, but, as a Spellcaster type monster, its attacks cannot penetrate Zhang Yang defenses with its attacks, even as a boss!

After the short three second {Silence} ended, the boss start to use {Shadow Arrow} again.

{Blast Wave}!

A blast of compressed air hammered through Sigma. The attack failed to stun Sigma but the spell was successfully interrupted again!

Zhang Yang then recalled the first patch of the game. Status affect skills would not be effective on boss type monsters, but they had a chance to interrupt spellcasting progress bars!

{Blast Wave}'s stunning effect was useless against the boss, but it did stop the boss from finishing its spell. The boss quickly started over again and cast {Shadow Arrow}. Zhang Yang regret his actions. He should have known better. He should have waited for the boss to almost complete the spell before using {Blast Wave}!

‘-3,909!’

‘3,882!’

When the boss’ third {Shadow Arrow} was being chanted, Zhang Yang’s {Crash Magic} skill had just finished its cool down and was ready to be used. However, he waited. Just as the boss was about to finish its spell casting, Zhang Yang bashed the monster with his shield.

‘Ding! Sigma’s {Shadow Arrow} was interrupted!’

Restart the cycle!

Zhang Yang calculated. On average, he will receive the boss’ attack twice every 12 seconds. {Blast Wave} could only provide him three seconds of peace every 20 seconds!

Zhang Yang summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] and activated {Merlinda’s Shadow}, and started to attack like a madman.

Sadly, the [Servant: Clear Lotus] could not level up. It had remained at level 36. Since the level gap was too large, her attacks were like a cat trying to attack an elephant! It was too low to even be considered to be an attack at all! However, as small as it could be, even water could erode a mountain over time! Moreover, she had her {Substitute} ability!

SLASH ON!

When {Merlinda’s Shadow} had ended, Zhang Yang activated one skill at a time, starting with {Substitute}, {Shield Wall}, {Berserker’s heal}. He lasted until the boss had a little more than 130,000 HP left. By then, his HP was almost depleted. He quickly used {Shadow of the Void} and fled the battle. He quickly ran over to the upper level and healed himself with a few consumables.

Without the main target, the boss had turned to Clear Lotus and had killed her off easily with two to three attacks. The poor [Servant] turned into a puff of smoke at death, leaving literally nothing at her demise.

"This boss is lame! {Shadow Arrow} and nothing else! Doesn’t he have anything else to use besides that?"

"Sigh...what a waste. If I called that b*tching woman, we might need only 15 minutes to settle this boss. Hmmm?"

Zhang Yang noticed something was odd. To his shock, he noticed that the boss was not recovered its HP even after Zhang Yang had left the battle.

In 'God' Miracle', once bosses withdrew from the battle, they will instantly recover their full HP. It wasn't that bad for open world bosses. On average, an open-world boss will recover 1% of its HP every second. At most, it will take 100 seconds to fully recover its HP.

The strange thing was that, Sigma was not even recovering HP like how an open world boss does. Its HP bar was not even moving an inch!

Spectre!

Zhang Yang eyes glinted. Spectre are not living beings. That was why these monsters did not have any innate regenerative abilities. They had to rely on consuming the dead corpses of other being to recover. Normally, the battle will end with the player killing the boss, or the boss killing the players. Situations that involved players fleeing with their lives were rare!

Normally, when the players or Hunters with pets get killed, spectres will use the {Consume Coprse} skill to recover the HP in non-combat mode, healing them by 10% HP every two seconds. They could fully recover their HP in just 20 seconds!

However, Zhang Yang was alone, and he used {Shadow of the Void} to left the battle. Sigma could not find any dead bodies to feed on. That was why its HP remained frozen in place!

On the other hand, Zhang Yang can easily heal his HP with [Bandage] and health recovering snacks. Zhang Yang smiled to himself, as long as he can rely on {Shadow of the Void} every time he needed healing, he can slowly chip off the boss' long HP at leisure.

When he had fully recovered, Zhang Yang rushed into the fight again and did further damage. When the time came, he used {Rearm}, which in turn allowed {Shadow of the Void} to aid his escape again!

10 minutes later, {Shadow of the Void} was ready to use, Zhang Yang entered the fight again!

20 minutes...

30 minutes...

After the battle dragged on for 2 hours, Zhang Yang managed to successfully kill the boss by using {Shadow of the Void} for a total of 16 times! {Rearm} definitely played a role as well, saving more time.

‘Dnig! You have killed Necromancer Sigma, Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!’

Thud!

The boss falls defeated, breaking into pieces of broken bones, dropping seven to eights battle loots.

"Holy f*cking moly! Finally ended!" Zhang Yang screamed out in relief. In truth, the actual battle time had only taken 17 to 18 minutes, the rest of the time was wasted in waiting for his {Shadow of the Void} to finish its cool down!

Chapter 218: A Change in the Royal Lineage

"Noob tank! My cousin sister and I found ourselves a Gray-Silver boss! Both of us alone killed it! Nyeheheheh! Do you know what that means? We don't need you no more! NYAHHAHAHA!" Wei Yan Er cute laughed blasted through the voice messenger.

Ever since the appearance of the Yellow-Gold bosses, almost all Gray-Silver bosses had become weak in comparison. Actually, it was more like them retaining the same level of difficulty, only that the players have grown much stronger! The two ladies finally knew how it felt like to stand out in the crowd. As Zhang Yang was taking his time with Sigma; Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had somehow discovered that they could defeat a Gray-Silver boss without the need of a tank!

They would never had stood a chance if they had tried this when they were Level 30.

Even so, for Wei Yan Er, a Berserker to able to "tank" a Gray-Silver boss and survive the battle, it was most likely due of Han Ying Xue's incredible, massive support!

Zhang Yang smirked. "Haha! What a shame! I just defeated a Gray-Silver boss! ALL.BY.MY.SELF!"

"Nyeeh~ Liar, liar, pants on fire~" Wei Yan Er jeered rhythmically.

"When I said I defeated a Gray-Silver boss, you just copied me and said the same thing! When I said we killed the boss with two players, you said you defeat it alone! Hmph! You have no shame! Noob tank! What a thick-skin bas-HEY! HAN YING XUE! HOW DARE YOU! You actually left the party and picked up all the money! I'M BREAKING UP WITH YOU! NYAAAA!"

Beep

The call ended abruptly. Perhaps Wei Yan Er was going to quarrel with her cousin sister. Again.

Zhang Yang laughed at their expense.

After having laughed enough, Zhang Yang walked over to the boss' corpse to claim his prize. Among the loots, three were Gray-Silver tier, four were Green-Copper tier, and only one of them was worth using.

[Roar of the Dead] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +17

Strength: +17

Equip Effect: Absorbs 21 damage on every attack received.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 50

Since the revision of the Unidentified attribute, Unidentified equipment will have their properties reduced by 20 levels. His current ring, [Honor of the Fallen Warrior], adds only 20 Vitality and 15 Strength, it's no weaker than the [Roar of the Dead].

However, the latter was still a defensive equipment. Zhang Yang decided to opt for [Roar of the Dead] and equipped it.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Call from the Princess! Obtained 200,000 Experience Points!'

The moment Zhang Yang approached the stone table, the system notification popped up and rang in his ears.

"Was that it?" Zhang Yang waited for a follow-up quest to appear but after waiting for a while, nothing happened. Before this, when Zhang Yang was talking to Princess Serena's projection, she had been rather frantic. It is impossible for the questline to be completed just like that! The only way left for Zhang Yang to trigger the next quest was to find a way to wake Serene up from her slumber.

"Wakey Wakey!"

...

"Rise and shine sleepy head!"

...

"OMG! A SUPER HANDSOME PRINCE JUST WALKED PASS BY!"

...

Nothing. Not even a jerk. Perhaps Zhang Yang had to resort to a more physical approach.

Zhang Yang grabbed her by the shoulders and shook her entire body violently.

No response. He was getting frustrated.

SLAP! BREAST GRAB! BUTT SLAP! ARMPIT SMOTHER!

Nothing. Zhang Yang had grown tired. He sat down by the stone table and begun to ponder. "I've tried everything possible method! Could it be... mouth to mouth resuscitation? Nah...that couldn't be..."

However, this was a fantasy world, a world filed with magic and dragons soaring in the skies! It had possibly drawn some inspiration from fairy tales. There were dragons, witches, and ...perhaps sleeping beauties? Zhang Yang could not wrap his head around that idea. No matter how degenerative the developers might be, they would not possibly get a player to kiss a dead person!

To kiss a dead person...as if she was alive...that was just...

Zhang Yang hesitated for another minute before he finally caved in. He walked up to her and bent down, closing the distance between his face and hers.

Finally...*kiss*

Zhang Yang planted his thick, rough lips onto her soft, supple red lips.

SHRIIING!

Rainbow-colored lights radiated from her body. They swirled in a vortex above her, coming together to, coming together to form a giant crown of gold. The crown then grew smaller and smaller until it became just the right size, coming to rest on the princess' head.

The light faded and a translucent figure emerged out from the princess' body. The figure got up and stood directly in front of Zhang Yang, glowing as she stood, she shared the exact appearance of the currently sleeping Princess Serena. It was another projection of Princess Serena.

Damn, my kiss actually worked! Am I a prince now?!

That being said, what if Serena was not a princess, but instead, a prince? Would the system have wanted Zhang Yang to kiss...relief suddenly replaced his feelings of repulsion at what he just had to do.

The projection hovered a little and when she opened her eyes. When she saw Zhang Yang, she smiled. "Warrior! You came!"

However, that jubilant expression was quickly replaced with a worried look, as if she was carried the weight of the world.

"Princess! What happened to you? Weren't you in God's City!?" Zhang Yang asked.

God's City is the name of White Jade Castle that every citizen knew it by. In the game, every major city was the Capital of their respective Kingdom.

Serena frowned worriedly. Her elegant features faded away, replaced by intense lines of stress and worry. "Three years ago, I was leading the Expedition Army to attack the Tukula Fortress. Just as the attack was about to start, I received a message from one of my soldiers, saying that the Madala Centaurs were willing to form an alliance with the White Jade Castle. With two forces as strong as such, we could perhaps stand a chance at defeating Tukula Fortress! After much consideration, I had accepted their offer and had ordered one of my dragon riders to send me over the Fortress to met up with the Centaurs!"

Her calmness was quickly replaced with an intense anger. Even when she was in her projection form, the anger was so intense that she emitted a strong aura, Zhang Yang could felt it in his bones. No wonder there was a saying, that a King's Wrath will cloud the sky and rivers will flow with blood!

"I never had thought that it was all a trap set by the Spectres! When I arrived at negotiation location, the spectres had set up an ambush there and we fought hard and long. However, I was eventually caught. They did not kill me but held me here as a prisoner. They had locked me down and stole half of my soul. To my horror, they had used my soul to make a high-ranking spectre that looks exactly like me! The imposter has already infiltrated the Kingdom of White Jade! That spectre will probably want to take the throne and dominate the humans in my place!"

She calmed her rage and looked at Zhang Yang stoically. "Warrior, could you help me escape this place to save the kingdom and kill the enemy?"

"My Princess, I am at your disposal! Command me!" Zhang Yang gave an adventurer's salute.

"You have my greatest appreciation, adventurer!" Serena was satisfied. "Now that I have lost half of my soul, I can only communicate via projections. The [Communication Stone] that you picked up was made by me. I had used a portion of my remaining magic to cast a spell on the monsters that roam this place! Sadly, the magic will not last for long as no container can truly hold magic. I have waited for three years for you!"

"You have to find my other half of the soul in order to save me! However, since I am trapped in this place, you will need to create a soul container to bring back my other half!"

Serena continued. "To create this container, you will need three rare materials. You will have to kill three extremely strong beings in order to obtain those materials! Warrior, do you have what it takes to get them?"

"Princess, trust this one, for he is strong!" said Zhang Yang with a smile.

Serena nodded and said, "I trust you, warrior! In that case, bring me a piece of [Molten Core of the Flame King], a piece of [Root of the Demonic Treant King] and the [Heart of the Winter Bear King]. I will use my remaining magic to turn them into a soul container!"

'Ding! Serena has a quest for you: A Soul Container. Will you accept it? This quest is linked to the main story quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!'

Damn! Which dumb f*ck took the quest, saying that it was a hidden quest!

Hidden quests and main story quests were completely different! Main story quests are easy to trigger, but they are really difficult! However, the rewards given are extremely luxurious! Mainly, the main story quest will be the main trigger that will push the game content forward! For example, patches in the future will depend on the progression of the main story quest, "Invasion of the Spectre patch", "Demon Descend patch", and "Deep Sea Invasion patch" all relied on the progress of the main story quest!

Zhang Yang swiftly accepted the quest and said, "Princess! I will return victorious!"

"So be it! But you must hurry! My power is constantly being weakened by the seal! I cannot remain awake for too long! I will be dragged back into my sleep!" Just when she had finished her speech, her projection started to flicker rapidly. After a few seconds, her projection started to form cracks and shattered into tiny magical particles.

Zhang Yang opened the quest log and examined the three quest items needed.

[A Soul Container] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: The Kingdom of White Jade is in peril! You must make haste and collect all three rare materials in order for Princess Serena to create the soul container and be released from her restraints! You can find the Flame King in the Fiery Sacrificial Altar in the Burning Flatlands. The Demonic Treant King can be found in the Swamp of the Ancient Moss in the Valley of High Tree. The Winter Bear King can be found in the deepest part of the Cave of Winter's Wind, beneath Snowy Peak Hills in the Frozen Sky Wasteland. Note, these monsters are extremely strong and powerful! Please recruit more friends together to fight!

Quest Duration: 7 days

Quest Recipient Limit: 1 player

Player Gender: Male

Progress: Molten Core of the Flame King 0/1 Root of the Demonic Treant King 0/1 Heart of the Winter Bear King 0/1

Quest difficulty level was S ranked. Which meant that he would need to kill a super strong boss! After Level 50, only the Yellow-Gold Tiered bosses would prove to be a real challenge for top players like him!

That's three Yellow-Gold tier bosses!

To at on to that, the quest had a time limit! Zhang Yang cursed. A Yellow-Gold bosses would have a seven day respawn period, which meant that if the players failed to kill the boss and died fighting any of the three bosses, the quest will automatically fail!

What sort of set up was that! It literally gives no chances to players at all!

Zhang Yang frantically opened his friend list and recruited Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots, and Daffodil Daydream. Sun Xin Yu, Fatty Han, and Endless Starlight were not logged in, he was short in manpower that he needed urgently. He quickly contacted Snow Seeker and asked for a favor.

"Guild master Zhan Yu! How nice of you to call me!" Snow Seeker accepted the call and talked to Zhang Yang with a normal and casual tone, unlike her usual stern and stoic volume.

Zhang Yang laughed a little and answered. "The last time, you had requested my help to kill the Mountain Giant, now, I'd like to ask the same of you. I need your help to kill several bosses!"

"Are they Gray-Silver?"

"Yellow-Gold!"

"Alright! Alright! How many my members you need? 1,000? 2,000?" Snow Seeker voice trembled with excitement.

Zhang Yang frowned. What sort of guild required that many players to sortie against a boss? If he had that many players from Crimson Rage taking off with him, members from his own guild would be "informed"!

Open-world boss' strongest and deadliest feature was their strong AoE attack skill. That was why, there were many bosses out there that did not need many players participating. In fact, numbers would be useless if the bosses could easily kill everyone in a snap of their eyes. Counter-intuitively, the success of the boss fight would be higher only when a small group of elite players fight it.

There are some bosses that draw strength from the numbers sent against it. The more you have, the stronger I become! For example, the Demon Boss Kazak. Every player in its aggro target will cause him to gain a 10% attack bonus. If several thousand players joined hands to fight the boss, the boss will gain such ridiculous amount of power and kill everyone like weeds in the garden. The boss can cast one {Shadow Arrow} for every single player in his range and exterminate everyone in his sight.

"I don't need that many! Just two! I need a healer and an attacker!" The only people whose strength Zhang Yang did acknowledge were Snow Seeker and Perfumed Water.

Snow Seeker would become one of the Top 10 Spellcasters in China! Her ability was unrivaled.

Perfumed Water was quite the ruffian, but her healing ability was commendable. Her equipment, control, understanding, and situational awareness was good, even if she was far behind Han Ying Xue. However, she was still one of the best healers that Zhang Yang had ever encountered.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, do you, perhaps, have an eye for our fair little Perfumed Water? Do you want me to set something up?" Said Snow Seeker playfully.

"Guild master Snow Seeker, you are too curious for your own good!"

Zhang Yang invited Perfumed Water and Snow Seeker into his party and announced, "Please gather at the Tukula Fortress!"

Currently, Winter Bear King was the closest to him.

"Noob tank! What are we going? What are we doing? Why must we go?"

being the impatient little girl, Wei Yan Er bombarded questions in the party channel.

"Can you just be quiet for like...10 seconds? Sigh...We are going to kill a boss. A Yellow-Gold boss!"

"WOAH!" Everyone gasped in surprise. Everyone got excited, especially those who already had Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment in their inventory. To complete their sets, they would need to fight Level 60+ Yellow-Gold boss! At least, they could collect a complete set of Level 60 set equipment before they reach the required level itself.

Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and flew back to White Jade City. He cleared his inventory and placed the two completed set-equipment into the Little Merchandize Shop, selling them as single packages at the price of 100,000 gold coins each! He then had the [Roar of the Dead] identified and equipped it. Upon identification, the properties of the ring had increased to 25 Vitality and 25 Strength. The damage absorption rate was increased to 30 damage.

After "cleaning" up his inventory, Zhang Yang then used the teleportation point in the main city and travelled to the Tukula Fortress. While waiting for Zhang Yang to arrive, the party had spent their time grinding in the nearby Frozen Sky Wasteland. Everyone took less than 10 minutes or so to gathered together.

"Stupid Yu, where is the boss?"

Everyone knew the value of an open-world boss since they were so sparse in both numbers and encounters! The map of the game was just too large for them! But once a boss is located, it would be dominated by strong guilds. Because of that, many guilds will butt heads due to the contest for claim over the boss as "property". They would be willing to wage wars with each other, lasting until new patches are released, or until the late-stages of the game, all because of a single boss.

Zhang Yang pointed West and said, "Snowy Peak!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes instantly. "Sigh...Do you even know how big is Snowy Peak!?"

Zhang Yang laughed at her reaction. In agitation, Han Ying Xue was stomping her feet, sending waves of tremors across her breasts, sending them jiggling about like a pudding being served. Zhang Yang could not help but stare at them and said absent-mindedly, "Yeah...they are big..."

"PERVERT!" All the female players in the party cried out loud together.

"Let's go then! I just received a quest to kill three bosses. The description was really vague. They only mentioned the general locations instead of the specific points!" said Zhang Yang, not intending to hide anything from them.

Snow Seeker twitched, her eyes glinted when she heard Zhang Yang mentioning the word "quest".

"The quest needed you to kill three Yellow-Gold boss? It must be a really rewarding quest! Guild master Zhan Yu, do you mind sharing the quest?"

Zhang Yang shook his head. "It can't be shared."

The quest only limited player participation number to one. That is why he could not share the quest with anyone else. Now that he thought about it., Serena could only be awakened by a kiss in the lips. If a bunch of rotten, perverted players took part in the quest, how would a princess like her maintain her honor! Who know what kind of dirty, indecent stuff would they do to her? That was, if the player accepting the quest was male. What if the player had been female? Would the princess be...

Perhaps, that would not be the case at all. The developers would not be that sexist. The quest could have been turned into a prince in other major cities needing a kiss from a female player instead! In that case, female players would have their chance to give their first kisses to a handsome young prince!

Chapter 219: The Gold-Eared Bear King's Little Cub

"Find the cave!" cried Zhang Yang when the party arrived at Snowy Peak. "The boss is inside a cave called the Cave of the Winter's Wind!"

The group split up and searched for the cave. Everyone agreed to regroup when any one of them finds it.

There was this particularly stupid idiot who had no sense of direction, yet had some ironic luck. She managed to be the first one who stumbled across the cave.

"I found it!" Han Ying Xue had managed to find the cave after 20 minutes, and happily announced her discovery in the party channel.

Everyone hurriedly converged to where Han Ying Xue was and saw a deep, large cave entrance. As the party was about to enter the cave, a sudden breeze blew by, carrying an intense, rotten smell, causing extreme disgust to those who caught whiff of it.

"BLEH! What is that smell! It smells like rotten eggs wrapped in stinky old stockings!" Wei Yan Er cried out as she squeezed her nose shut.

Zhang Yang laughed at her and said, "Why didn't you take your Smell Setting down a notch?"

"Eh? You can do that?" said Wei Yan Er, surprised. She quickly asked for details, and after a series of messy, unnecessary rants, she closed the window and was delighted. However, her cute, contented little smile quickly disappeared. "Yeah! I'm d—BLEH! What the hell! Why did it turn worse?!"

"You dumb little girl! The system's default setting was at 50%, You didn't turn it up all the way to 100% did you?" Zhang Yang did a facepalm.

Wei Yan Er replied with a quick "Oh!" and adjusted the setting again. This time, she laughed and said, "Oh wow! I can't smell anything now! Hehehe!"

In truth, she was not the only one who was not aware of the Smell Settings. Everyone started to search through their setting windows and adjusted the setting to prevent the extreme odor from being too disruptive.

Zhang Yang explained. "There are other settings besides smell. You can also adjust Touch, Taste, and Sound! Touch sensitivity is disabled by default so that you would not feel any pain when you receive an attack. However, to be a professional, it's best to increase the Touch sensitivity by just a little to increase your response rate! Too high however, and it will be too much to handle, affecting your overall performance! As for Taste, it's best to leave it disabled. Drinking potions will not trigger your taste buds at all, or else, you will taste the utter bitterness of it. But, for instance, if you want to prevent yourself from drinking too many potions, you can adjust it to your own preference!"

These settings were rather plain and dull. Players who were the types to research prod around every aspect of a game would meddle with such settings. A majority of the players would not even take note of such settings.

After everyone had adjusted their own settings, Zhang Yang nodded approvingly and said, "Let's go!"

Zhang Yang led the way, entering the cave first.

The cave was rather large. At a fixed interval, they would encounter a glowing stone stuck on the ceiling of the cave, illuminating the pathway. However, the light was dim, unable to fully illuminate the entire pathway. Like a poor streetlight in a dark alley, those little glowing stones were the only sources of light in the entire cave. However, as it was, even on the darkest of nights, the stars will shine upon earth. The light from the glowing stones was enough to allow the players to see where they were going.

"GROWLLL!" A deep, loud growl of a beast could be heard. Suddenly, a large White Bear jumped out from the darkness and attacked the foremost player, who happened to be Zhang Yang. The bear used {Charge} and stunned Zhang Yang. As he swayed helplessly on his spot, the monster

swung a massive paw and attacked.

[Winter's White Bear] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 58

HP: 58,000

Defense: 300

Hundred Shots and Zhang Yang original gang were very proactive. Even when Zhang Yang was stunned, they did not wait for him and immediately started their attack.

The bear growl and shifted its aggro to Wei Yan Er. Now that the bear had just attacked, it had to wait for another two seconds before it could attack again.

The stun effect lasted for one a second. Zhang Yang immediately cast {Provoke} when he recovered. He activated {Blood Rage} at the same time and slashed the boss. He immediatley followed up with {Destructive Smash}.

'-1,634!'

'3.573!'

As the aggro on Zhang Yang stabilized, everyone flawlessly synced with his rhythm and killed the monster without breaking a sweat. The team's firepower was so strong that it would not have made a difference if no one was tanking, the monster would not have survived for more than 10 seconds. How could it kill anyone in that short amount of time?

Snow Seeker was rather impressed and said, "Guild master Zhan Yu, I'm really impressed with your teamwork. No wonder you guys could easily take down dungeon after dungeon, claiming First Clear Achievements!"

Wei Yan Er snickered and said, "Sister Seeker! Actually, it's all because of me! I'm the strongest attacker in this team!"

"Little girl, do you not know shame or humility?!"

"Hmph!" Wei Yan Er shrugged. "Humility is nothing but a lack of self-

esteem. There is no reason for me to be humble in the first place! I'm merely stating the truth!"

Everyone laughed and the girls giggled. The little girl was always the clown of the party, bringing laughter and joy to them.

One of the ETC drops of the Winter's White Bear was a piece of [Bear's Tail], which could be sold for at least 10 silver coins. However little it was, Han Ying Xue still insisted on keeping the item since they could be stacked up to 200 pieces!

The team proceeded on forward, killing more bears as they proceed. When the 14th monster was killed, it finally dropped something useful.

[Frost Bear Coat] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +60

Equip Effect: Increases 100 Frost Resistance.

Level Requirement: 50

Bear Coat Set (1/5):

{Bear Helm}

{Bear Coat}

{Bear Glove}

{Bear Leg Guard}

{Bear Boots}

Three Equip Effect: Increases all attack by 5%.

Five Equip Effect: Increases Frost Resistance by 300.

"Are resistance based equipment for Thieves and Hunters?" Everyone was curious. "Field monsters drop set equipment as well?"

Zhang Yang answered. "In the future, there will be all kinds of set equipment with all sort of effects! This one here specializes in elemental resistance. If you were to wear this and fight a Cryomancer, that player

would be annoyed to the high heavens!"

After asking around for a brief period, Zhang Yang called out, "If no one wants it, I'm going to keep it!" Zhang Yang took the item and kept it. However insignificant it seemed, it was still a set equipment! There are crazy collectors around who would pay a nice sum of coins just for novelty!

"Hey! I haven't said anything yet! I want it! I want it!" Perfumed Water cried out suddenly. Snow Seeker was rather shy and had remained silent since she was rather well-mannered.

"Moving on!" said Zhang Yang, ignoring Perfumed Water.

"GRAHH! I'm pissed! Just you wait, Zhan Yu! I'll show you how frightening I can be later!" cried Perfumed Water.

The party moved on and killed more and more bears. There were more bears in the cave! Perfumed Water was a Priest class, but she had chosen Leather Work as her profession. Whenever a monster was dead, Perfumed Water would pester Zhang Yang to quickly loot all the items and let her use them for her Leather Work.

That had led the miserly sisters to admire her work. Pieces of Bear Skins were rather valuable!

Even though the team's firepower was so strong that they could kill a bear in no time, they had spent more than two hours roaming around the cave, because of its sheer size! There seemed to be no end to it!

FUSH!

Out of the sudden, a ball of white fur appeared out of a corner. The team was ready to attack but stopped when they saw that it was only a mini size white cub. It was only the size of a small puppy. White fur covered its entire body. It had a golden sparkle on each of its ear and eyes that were big and round. When the bear saw Zhang Yang and his "monstrous" friends, it was so shocked that it lost balance, sitting on its bottom with its eyes growing even bigger in surprise. It was so cute to look at!

"WAA! It's so adorable!" cried the girls in his team. Everyone was caught

up by its natural cuteness.

"Bear bear is so cute! KYAH! It's so fluffy! It's so fluffy I'm gonna die!" cried Wei Yan Er as she cuddled the little critter.

"That's...that's a rare monster!" Zhang Yang eyes glinted and he pulled the little bear away from Wei Yan Er.

Everyone's face sharpened into seriousness as they quickly looked up the little bear's properties.

[Golden-Eared Bear King's Cub] (Rare Yellow-Golden Battle Mount, Beast)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Note: Can be sealed.

"Battle mount!" Everyone was both surprised and happy simultaneously. Everyone quickly took out their [Sealing Leash].

"Wait!!!!!" Zhang Yang screamed.

"We have only 10 tries to seal the beast! Let's talk about this first!"

With only one cub and many players around, the important way to solve it is to find a neutral stance! Everyone wants the battle mount! But only one of them could own it. So, how do they "divide" it?

"One by one! We'll take turns!" said Zhang Yang.

"In that case, who shall be the first?" asked Snow Seeker. Sealing can only be done, one player at a time. Only when the said player had failed, others can target the beast for sealing. Now that they had a total of seven players, if they all failed the first round, who would be the next three after that? In that case, how do they properly sort this out?

Zhang Yang stopped to think for a while.

"Let's roll for the turn. Whoever rolls the largest number shall be the first to seal. From there, we will follow the rolls and go by descending order. If all of us fail, then we shall roll again, and only the three largest

rolls shall be able to take the last three chances!"

Everyone nodded in agreement and felt like it was the best method. Since it was fully based on luck, no feelings will be hurt.

"In that case, shall we roll? One roll each! If anyone rolls again, the smallest number shall be used!" said Zhang Yang. Roll-the-dice system was a special command that was always available in the game. It's not solely used to roll for equipment or items. Player often use the rolling system to place bets.

Everyone rolled and the best of them was Han Ying Xue, the manifestation of lady luck herself. She had rolled a hundred points and was automatically the first in place to attempt sealing. In second place, Snow Seeker rolled 92 points, followed by Hundred Shots at 88 points. The fourth place was Daffodil Daydream at 79 points, Wei Yan Er was the fifth at 77 points, Zhang Yang, sixth place at 55 points and Perfumed Water was the last at 42 points.

"Come here little one! Obey me and I will treat you better than my little cousin sister! I'll raise you well and treat you amazing snacks! I'll even help you find the most beautiful female bear!" said Han Ying Xue as she petted the little white fur ball. Han Ying Xue took the chance to throw the [Sealing Leash] towards the little bear. The [Leash] had an auto-targeting system. It landed on the little white bear's head with extreme accuracy. A golden light formed, connecting both Han Ying Xue and the little bear. A long progress bar appeared on Han Ying Xue's head and fill up extremely slowly.

3%,9%, 17%...

Wei Yan Er was squatting by the side, drawing a circle on the ground while cursing endlessly. "Fail! You shall fail! Fail! FAIL!"

Pak!

When the progress bar reached 43%, the Leash on the little bear's head broke and a system notification popped up, indicating that she had failed. The little bear looked up at Han Ying Xue and lifted one of its hind paw to scratch its face. It continued to display its natural cuteness.

"HAHAHAHAHA!" Wei Yan Er jumped in joy while clapping her hands happily.

Following next was Snow Seeker.

"Fail! Don't hate me, sister, but I hope you fail! PLeash fail!" Wei Yan Er continued to curse.

Pak! Snow Seeker's attempt was worse. She failed at 31%.

Hundred Shots tried to seal. He failed at 22%.

"NYAHAHAH! I'm invincible now! No one can stop me! Suck it!" cried Wei Yan Er as she laughed proudly.

Daffodil Daydream went on and started her attempt. Sadly, she failed at 3%. Wei Yan Er did not even manage to start cursing. This little brat was like a cursed charm, bringing on misfortune! She thought to herself, perhaps her curses were so strong that she did not even need to act!

"Finally! It's this lady's turn now!" said Wei Yan Er as she took out her [Sealing Leash] and used it on the little bear.

1%, 2%, 3%...95%, 96%, 97%!

Seeing her own progress bar about to complete, her smile grew larger and larger, in accordance to the progress bar itself. When the progress bar had reached 99%, the smile on her face was so large that it could have reached her ears!

Pak! Failed at 99%!

Chapter 220: Winter's Wind Bear King

What a tragedy! It was supposed to be a celebration!

The overly large smile on her face was quickly replaced with a depressing pout. She widened her eyes, and puff her cheeks, looking at Zhang Yang with her best imitation of a puppy's eyes.

"Don't. Just don't. You know I'm not going to give it to you." Zhang Yang instantly rejected her before she could speak. He knew that this little girl wanted him to give up his turn for her.

"UWAAA..." Wei Yan Er ran away to a corner and sobbed. Perhaps she had really learned her lesson. Perhaps her curse was so powerful that it rebounded back on her?

Zhang Yang walked up to the little bear and threw his leash towards it.

"Yee..." the little bear squeaked, sticking out its pink little tongue. Its cute little round eyes were hypnotizing! Now that's what actual puppy eyes look like!

1%..3%...5%...

"Fail! I curse you to fail! Wee wang wang wee wang wang! Fail!" It seems that the little girl had not truly learned her lesson. With everything she got, she concentrated hard and drew some shapes in the air, probably meant to curse him.

60%...70%...80%!

Wei Yan Er grew scared and quickly jumped to her cousin sister. "Sis! Quickly, work together with me! Join forces with me to cast the Ultimate Destruction Godly Curse of the Nine Suns and Moons!"

Zhang Yang twitched his eye brows and frowned. "What sort of movie is she watching now?"

During a Sealing process, a character is not allowed to perform any action. Chatting is allowed though.

Han Ying Xue crossed her arms and looked away. "Curse of the White

Pearl!"

90%, 95%, 99%!

"Fail! ABCDE, Failure shall befall upon thee! Come on! Fail already!" screamed the little girl as the progress bar was close to completion.

100%!

‘Ding! You have successfully sealed the Bear King’s Cub, turning it into your Battle Mount!’

‘Ding! This is your first time obtaining a Battle mount. The tutorial will now commence. The Battle Mount cannot be mounted before reaching Level 30. You can only summon the Battle Mount as a pet. It will follow the master in battle and gain Experience Points to level up! When the Battle Mount reaches Level 30, it can no longer be used as a pet, but as a mount! The mount can be used in battle and gain more Experience Points through a shared system! You can revisit this tutorial through the Control Menu at anytime.’

‘Ding! You have obtained an achievement: Battle Companion!’

A new leash appeared in Zhang Yang inventory. It shared an almost similar look as the [Leash of the Skeletal War Horse].

[Leash of the Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unleashes a mountable and battle-ready Gold-Eared Bear King. If your mount falls in battle, it can only be re-summoned after 10 minutes. You can only summon one Battle Mount at a time.

Casting Duration: Two seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

Bounded.

Zhang Yang immediately summoned the little critter and two seconds later, the mini-sized white bear appeared beside Zhang Yang. It brushed its body against Zhang Yang feet and when Zhang Yang ignored it, the little bear stood up on its rear legs to bite Zhang Yang’s pants with its undeveloped teeth. It was just drop-dead cute.

"Aww...So cute!" Pretty much all the female players in the team were crowded around the little white bear, petting its head.

The Level 0 bear rolled over, exposing its bare belly, allowing the girls to rub its belly to their content. It waved its paws, as if it was inviting the girls to rub it.

Wei Yan Er shed crocodile tears. "Wuuu...Noob tank! You better reimburse me with one bear as well! Wuuu, bear bear! Wuuu!"

"Fine...fine...just keep quiet. I'll find another bear whenever I'm free!"

The party went on forward, killing so many elite monsters that they had lost count of them. The party spent another 30 minutes and had finally arrived at the deepest part of the cave! The little bear had absorbed half of Zhang Yang Experience Points, which was directly deducted from Zhang Yang's own intake of experience points. However, because of that, the little bear had been able to level up at a fast pace. By then, the little bear had reached Level 27 and had grown so large that it was already the size of a young calf. Both of its HP and attack power had increased exponentially. However, it still had no skills of its own to use. It was a little disappointing due to the Yellow-Gold title that it had. Perhaps it will gain a skill or two when it reaches higher levels.

[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: 27

HP: 5,880

Attack Power: 808 – 1,008 (Attack Interval: Three Seconds, DPS: 303)

OP!

As expected from a Yellow-Gold pet mount. It had almost 6,000 HP at only Level 27! It was a pity that the little bear could not be summoned as a pet after Level 30; It would not be able to contribute to the party's DPS after that.

'Little Whitey! I'm sorry, you're no longer cute when you're that big! I'm not going to pet you anymore!' Wei Yan Er was saying such things to

make herself feel better, however, she was not being truthful at all. In fact, she was still a little jealous of Zhang Yang.

Everyone laughed.

The deepest part of the cave was a large cavern. The ceiling of the cavern was at least a hundred meters high, perhaps even higher! There were many ice spikes of many shapes and sizes forming on top of the ceiling. Some were long and thin, while others were sharp and rather thick!

Beautiful, yet extremely dangerous at the same time! Nature was truly the best architect there is! In the deepest part of the cavern was a sleeping giant white-fur bear. It was probably several meters long. If the bear stood up on its rear legs, it would definitely be as tall as a house!

Snore Snore*

The bear was obviously sleeping soundly, snoring so loud that it echoed through the hollow cave like thunder!

[Winter's Wind Bear King] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

"I have completely no idea what skills this boss has. Anyhow, let's just give it a shot!" said Zhang Yang. He unsummoned the little bear since the Battle Mount would not be able to provide any DPS in this battle. In fact, it would only be a hindrance, requiring Han Ying Xue to heal it.

As for the experience gained later from killing the boss, Zhang Yang could easily grind some monsters later on.

"Fight!" Zhang Yang took out his axe and rushed towards the snoring Bear King.

The boss was still snoring soundly when Zhang Yang was already close to it.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang rushed in and landed a good hit on the boss.

Awoken from its sleep, the Bear King growl thunderously. It lifted its massive claw to slash Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang quickly stacked as much {Cripple Defense} as fast as he could. The boss' 1,200 Defense value was just too ridiculous for the others to handle. That skill was a top priority to be used for the other attacking team mates to attack to their fullest.

The Bear King stomped the ground hard and released a grayish-silver ray of light from its feet. The light spread out in all directions, as widely as 50 meters!

'Ding! You have gained the {Frost Bite} Aura. Receiving 200 Frost damage every second!'

"Heh. The boss damaging aura effect is quite weak!" Everyone agreed.

In truth, the aura effect was weak. Compared to a healer, healing 200 HP is nothing.

Zhang Yang frowned. He did not believe that a Yellow-Gold boss would be that weak. There had to be more to this; it was not just a random monster that was just created to die!

After a short period of time into the battle, the Bear King flung itself onto Zhang Yang and bit him. Since {Block} was still on cool down, Zhang Yang could not dodge the attack no matter how athletic he was. The skill seemed to be unavoidable, unlike the normal claw attack which could be easily dodged by moving his body. Unable to dodge the attack, Zhang Yang's blood splattered on the ice.

'Ding! You have received the effect {Bleeding}. Receiving 3,000 {Bleeding} damage every three seconds!'

Luckily, even though {Bleeding} damage ignores defense, Zhang Yang had a passive 930 damage absorption skill. After applying the 20%

damage reduction passive, and another 930 damage absorption passive, the remaining damage Zhang Yang would sustain was 1,470! That had only added 490 DPS from the boss, which was not that big of a deal.

‘-5,543!’

Still, the boss’ physical attack was strong! With a swing of its gigantic claw, it could easily remove one quarter of Zhang Yang maximum HP! Now that Zhang Yang had Perfume Water in his party, paired with Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang had two super-supporters healing him together, eliminating the would-be threat. While doing so, the healers would only need to maintain the {Regeneration} effect on the rest of the party members to completely safeguard them from the {Frost Bite} aura. If the battle continued on as such a pace, only time alone would keep the Bear King from falling.

However, when the Bear King was at 90% HP...

"GROWL!" The Winter’s Wind Bear King bellowed a thunderous roar! The roar was so loud that parts of the cavern were crumbling from the sheer power of the sound wave. The others could not help but to cover their ears as the volume was too much for them to handle.

‘Ding! You have received the effect {Deafening Roar} (Stack 1). All attacks received will increase by 1%. All attack and healing will be reduced by 1%. Last for 30 seconds!’

Just after three seconds!

‘Ding! You have received the effect {Deafening Roar} (Stack 2). All attacks received will increase by 2%. All attack and healing will be reduced by 2%. Last for 30 seconds!’

If the boss continued to fight like this, repeating the same skill every three seconds, in just 30 seconds, the boss would easily apply 10 stacks of {Deafening Roar}! The stress level of the healers would be increased! Not only would the party’s DPS decrease and receive even more damage from the boss, the healer’s healing power would also drop by 10%!

Zhang Yang called out. "Perfumed! I need to you slowly back away!"

Report to me when the skill {Deafening Roar} is out of bounds!"

This time, Perfumed Water knew better than to argue with Zhang Yang. She slowly walked backwards, stopping every three seconds. She continued on until she was around 50 meters away from the boss. She shouted, "Zhan Yu! Here!"

Zhang Yang nodded in acknowledgment. "Stand there, and don't move! All ranged units, move 30 meters away to your maximum effective range and attack from there! Perfumed Water, you're to heal all ranged team members! Snow b*tch! Just focus on healing me and the little brat!"

Everyone nodded and followed Zhang Yang's commands without any objection.

Perfumed Water had taken up to 15 stacks of {Deafening Roar} and had her healing power diminished significantly. She needed to heal five members. Under the effects of the Deafening roar, her healing was not holding up as well as she thought it would be! On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had already been inflicted with 30 stacks of {Deafening Roar}, but was still in control of her actions and rhythm!

90 seconds later, the debuffs on Perfumed Water had expired while the others had already taken up to 30 stacks of the debuff each, having their attack drastically lowered, while receiving an incredible amount of damage.

"Snow b*tch! Switch with Perfumed Water! The rest of you, if you have any debuff clearing skills, use them immediately! If you don't have any, withdraw by 50 meters! Come back and fight after 30 seconds when the debuffs are cleared out!" cried Zhang Yang in a commanding tone.

Wei Yan Er used {Warrior's Will} and removed the {Deafening Roar} on her, restoring her to original power!

The other two Spellcasters used {Ice Barrier} on themselves, encasing their characters in a large block of ice to remove their debuffs. On the other hand, Priest and Hunter had learned their anti status affecting skills, however, their own skills were not strong enough to remove the debuff. Hunter Shots could only use {Tumble} to leave the battle and hasten his

withdraw. Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water quickly switched places. The one closer to the boss was tasked to take care of Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er while the one who outside of the boss' effective range was set to heal the rest of the ranged characters.

Chapter 221: Super-Powered Pet Mount

Zhang Yang kept his {Warrior's Will} in reserve, instead of using it immediately. While the others could easily run out of the effective range, Zhang Yang had to remain tanking the boss! It was his job to begin with! Thus, by logic, the longer he delayed his {Warrior's Will}, the longer he will survive in battle!

Two minutes in!

Zhang Yang now had 40 stacks of {Deafening Roar}! His attack power was decreased by 40%. The damage he was taking had also increased by the same amount! Each time the boss smacked his *ss, Zhang Yang would take more than 8,000 damage!

"Zhan Yu! I can't heal you fast enough! You have too many debuffs on you! Do something about it!" 30 seconds ago, Perfumed Water and Han Ying Xue had swapped places. In that short amount of time, Zhang Yang had already gained 10 more stacks of the unfavorable effect, causing Perfumed Water to receive the baton from Han Ying Xue for an uphill battle.

Zhang Yang nodded, acknowledging her complaint. It's about time to do something.

{Warrior's Will}!

Woosh! Like pressing select all + delete, all 40 stacks of {Deafening Roar} on Zhang Yang's character was removed!

Han Ying Xue was taking a break about 50 meters away from the boss. She did some mental calculations and frowned. "Hey! Dummy Yu! I don't think you have enough time to kill the boss! Even if you used {Rearm} and {Warrior's Will} again, it will only give you another four minutes!"

The party's total DPS was at around 10,000. However, with {Deafening Roar}'s effect of reducing their attack power, and the 30 seconds time that they need to "rest" on the sidelines would mean that their DPS rate had plummeted to 6,500. They would need at least 12 minutes to kill the boss

with his 5,000,000 HP!

Zhang Yang had {Rearm} ready and waiting. It could provide them an additional four minutes. But, what about the remaining eight minutes?

Zhang Yang smirked. "Relax, I have a secret plan!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes.

Four minutes up!

{Deafening Roar} had reached 40 stacks again!

"Hey! Do something, Stupid Yu! Don't blame me if you're dead!"
screamed Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang holstered his battle axe on his waist and took out the [Eye of Medusa] from his inventory in a flash. He tossed the item to Wei Yan Er who had just come back from her "rest".

"Use it on me!"

Wei Yan Er was glued on her feet like a statue, stunned. "Huh? Why?"

Han Ying Xue gasped and cried. "Genius!"

"Tch! Stupid little girl! Just do as I say and use the bloody thing on me!"

"Hmph! You don't have to yell at me!" Wei Yan Er pointed the object at Zhang Yang and pushed the button to activate its effect.

Pew!

A dark light shot out of the [Eye of Medusa] and shone on Zhang Yang. Cracks could be heard as Zhang Yang was gradually turned into stone! Before the transformation was completed, Zhang Yang took the opportunity to raise his battle axe dramatically in a heroic stance, much like Freddie Mercury did.

'Ding! You have received the effect {Stone Petrification}. Lasts for 5 seconds!'

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

For those five seconds, be it from the boss' claws, bites, aura effect, Zhang Yang was left completely unscathed. In fact, {Deafening Roar} and the aura effect on Zhang Yang were removed as well.

Han Ying Xue laughed cheerfully and said, "The [Eye of Medusa] can be used three times. If you used {Substitute}, {Warrior's Will} and {Rearm} all again, you can drag the time to 14 minutes!"

"You're not as dumb as you look huh!" Zhang Yang complimented her and added one more sentence. "Too bad, you're only as smart as Captain Obvious!"

"Hey! What are you saying?! Aren't you being a little arrogant?! Hmph! Shameless prick!" Perfumed Water threw a little insult.

Zhang Yang smirked. "What? You don't like it? Suck it up!"

"What!? You think I wouldn't dare to suck!?" Perfumed Water refused to back down in a fight.

Zhang Yang smirked changed into an uncontrollable laugh. He stopped trying to come up with any witty come back. If Fatty Han had been present at the scene, he would said something that would leave them no turning back. Being the person who understood Zhang Yang the most, he would have already guessed why Zhang Yang was laughing at the word "suck"!

Perfumed Water was a bold girl. She had been hanging out with her own woman's gang, how could she not being influence by them! Very much well aware of the context of what she had said, she quickly piped down and calmed herself before teasing Zhang Yang. "I'll have you know that I been sucking on dozens of sausages and wieners every day or two. I couldn't help when I accidentally "bite" them down. Could it be that it will hurt when I do so...?"

Heh.

That joke was a little too cold for Zhang Yang; it sent a zap of chill down his spine, all the way down to his knees.

Oblivious and innocent as a child, the little girl thought that she had found Zhang Yang's one weakness and laughed hysterically. "Noob tank! Haha! I see that you're afraid of getting bitten! Hehehehe! NYAHAHAHAHA! If you dare to bully me again! I'll bite you too!"

"Yan Er! Stop!" Han Ying Xue stopped her younger cousin from embarrassing the both of them any further. It's fine if she did not get its meaning, having heard it only once. But when Perfume Water had been saying it in such a suggestive way, for so many times, there was no way that a girl at her age would not understand the underlying meaning!

...

Six minutes in, [Eye of Medusa] was used twice.

Eight minutes in, [Eye of Medusa] was used for the third time. At the last charge, the little gem-like, round, crystal eye ball-looking thing shattered into very fine dust, and dispersed into the air.

"Sigh...what a shame there's only one of that toy." said Zhang Yang with a heavy heart.

"It's just some random, fairy-dust trinket. We can always find more of those!" said Wei Yan Er flippantly.

Zhang Yang frowned and stared at her as if she had said something rather offensive. In truth, Zhang Yang was not offended, but he was rather disgruntled at her comment. She does not know that true value of the [Eye of Medusa]. Before Level 60, [Eye of Medusa] was truly as useful as a time machine. Thus, the drop was rate was so pathetic that you would better of trying your luck at winning the lottery. The only reason Zhang Yang could get his hands on the item was because Zhang Yang had 9 Luck points and it was also the boss's first kill.

Wei Yan Er saw how Zhang Yang was staring at her and self-consciously looked away. "Stupid! Idiot! Dummy! Noob tank! If you want to insult me! Just say the word! Don't stare me with those pitiful eyes! I'll bite your little head off! I'll bite it! I swear I'd do it! BITE BITE BITE YOUR LITTLE HEAD OFF!"

Zhang Yang twitched, his previous expression completely vanishing. Wei Yan Er's cousin sister was red in embarrassment.

10 minutes in, Zhang Yang summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] and used {Substitute} and shifted all 40 stacks of {Deafening Roar} to the servant.

12 minutes in, {Warrior's Will} cool down complete!

14 minutes in, {Rearm} was used, and {Warrior's Will} was immediately activated.

The boss had a little over 5% HP left. With victory in close sight, everyone cheered.

"Almost there!"

3%, 2%, 1%!

"Ouuu..." The Bear King wailed and dropped dead. Its massive body was clearly heavy, its fall sending tremors all over the cavern and even managing to send a few stalactites dropping down from the ceiling.

"YAASHH! Equipment! Equipment!" cried Perfumed Water as she rushed forward to grab the loots. However, when she tried to pick them up, none of the items were going into her inventory. She turned around with tears in her eyes. "Wuuu...Leader Distribution mode huh..."

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Water lady, move! This super star will do the picking!"

Angry and abashed, Perfumed Water grit her teeth at Zhang Yang cried, "You stinky little scoundrel! Piss me off and I'll sneak into your house and bite your tiny little s*ht off!"

"Right...right. Move, shoo shoo!" Zhang Yang nodded his head and gestured her to move aside like a dog. He then picked up the [Heart of the Winter Bear King] and proceeded with the rest of the loots.

There were a total of six Yellow-Gold equipment, with four of them being Level 60 set-equipment. The four set items were the Berserker's specialized Helmet, Pyromancer's specialized Armlet, Beastmaster's specialized Boots, and the Cryomancer's specialized Leg Guard. The items

were all distributed based on their classes, Wei Yan Er got hers, as did Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, and Snow Seeker.

Snow Seeker had only one Level 60 Yellow-Gold to wear and now that she had gained the Leg Guards, she was very pleased. Her radiant, cheerful smile was so refreshing. She was clearly happy to have accepted Zhang Yang's invitation.

The remaining two were random Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipments. A cape and an accessory.

[Bear Skin Cape] (Yellow-Gold, Cape)

Vitality: +42

Intelligence: +42

Equip Effect: Increase 41 Magic Attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

Before identifying an item, the item properties will only have 70% of its original properties in effect. Only after paying a sum of coins, would the properties of the item gain an additional 40% boost!

Every magic user in the party was so riled up by the cape that they pushed Zhang Yang to quickly decide on who gets the cape.

Zhang Yang scratched his head, thinking of a way. "Let's go with this. Each magic type, Spellcaster and Priest alike will roll a number. Who had the biggest roll will receive the item. However, the winner will pay 3,000 gold coins to all the losers as consolation prize!"

"Ok!"

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the girls rolled. As lucky as she has always been, Han Ying Xue scored 97 points, winning the roll! She snickered happily as she took the cape and placed in her inventory. She looked at Zhang Yang and winked at him seductively. "Honey dear, care to pay my debts to the other ladies?"

F*ck! That's 3,000 gold coins!

Zhang Yang sighed regrettably. If he had known Han Ying Xue would be the winner, he would not have suggested the gold coin consolation prize in the beginning. Knowing the miserly sisters, they would curse him daily if he had forced them to pay the consolation prize money!

"You're a real devil -- no, THE devil, aren't you!" Zhang Yang stared angrily at Han Ying Xue. However, there was nothing that he could do. He took out 3,000 gold coins and divided it for the other three girls.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er giggled happily.

[Arcane Deflector] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Equip Effect: Creates a 3% chance to deflect and cause any magic spell to {Miss}.

Level Requirement: 60

Percentage based damage nullification equipment were extremely rare. This was to prevent low-level equipment from being so strong that high-leveled armors would become unnecessary. If they had been even slightly more common, a tank could wear a set of 50% damage nullification equipment, lasting him for the next 30 to 40 levels!

This piece of accessory would still remain relevant up to Level 100 or even Level 200, as the percentage rate will always remain the same!

"Haha! A tank class item! I'll take it then!" said Zhang Yang as he took the item without anyone objecting.

The other seven to eight equipment were Level 60, Gray-Silver tiered. Even though they were not as strong and powerful as Yellow-Golds, they were still rather strong for their level. Each of them was distributed following their class requirement. There was only one leftover helmet that was designated for the Sacred Knight class. Since no one wanted the item, Zhang Yang took the item, planning to sell it in the Little Merchandize Shop.

The time was already past 9pm. With two more bosses to go, the nearest

boss was the Magic Treant King, located at the Swamp of the Ancient Moss. It was at least a two hour journey from where they were. Add in the fact that they would encounter several monsters and spend even more time searching for the boss, they could end up fighting past midnight if they were to start now!

Zhang Yang then decided. "Ok, let's call it a day for now. Tomorrow, we shall find and kill the second boss at 9am! Is there anyone who cannot make it?"

No one answered.

Zhang Yang turned to Wei Yan Er and frowned. "Are you planning to skip class again?"

Wei Yan Er scoffed and placed both of her tiny little hands on her waist. "Who said I was planning to skip class?! It's not like I wanted to. I have to take care of the sick sister! Sigh! Which bloody idiot allowed that dummy to eat all that ice cream yesterday!"

"Yan Er. I see that you need some knocks on your head to behave properly huh!" Han Ying Xue came towards Wei Yan Er, cracking her knuckles angrily, looking rather intimidating. For a moment there, Zhang Yang could have sworn that he felt a sudden killing intent radiating from Han Ying Xue.

"Erhm..I erhm...I-I can e-explain! Wait! HELP! NOOB TANK! HELP ME!" Wei Yan Er wailed for a moment before her character disappeared from the game. After a brief second, Han Ying Xue's character disappeared as well. It seemed like both of them had logged off to settle their little game of chase.

"Guild master Zhan Yu. Farewell, I'll see you tomorrow at 9pm." Snow Seeker tore her [Teleportation Scroll] and waved goodbye to Zhang Yang.

Without saying a word, Perfumed Water stared at Zhang Yang and then slowly shifted her sight lower to his groin before tearing a [Teleportation Scroll]] and vanished.

Zhang Yang teleported to the Tukula Fortress with the main city's

Teleportation Point and came to the Wasteland. There, he summoned the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and started to raise his pet mount's level.

Since the pet mount is at low level, the experience points that it could leech from the monsters around was relatively high! Still, its level will always be lower than the players it belonged to. After 20 minutes of grinding, it reached level 30 with a flash of golden light. Immediately, it disappeared from Zhang Yang's side.

'Ding! Your Battle Mount [Gold Eared Bear King] has reached Level 30. It cannot be summoned as a pet. Please summon the Battle Mount again!'

Zhang Yang took out the leash and summoned the bear again. The progress bar appeared briefly and disappeared after a short two second casting time.

"GROWL!" The bear appeared majestically with a loud growl. A huge, white furred bear with golden tipped ears stood next to Zhang Yang. Its massive size was approximately three-meter-long with four strong and tough limbs! Its body was completely covered in a thick, white fur with a pair of golden tipped ears. From the side, it looked very fierce and majestic.

[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: 30

HP: 8,400

Focus: 100/100

Weapon Attack: 1,116 – 1,516 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 439)

Skill 1: [Shared Life] (Passive): Combines both the owner and the pet's HP as one.

Skill 2: [Wild Charge]: Rushes towards an enemy with great speed. Stuns the target for 1 second. Cool down time: 30 seconds. Effective Distance: 2 – 10 meters. Cost: 20 Focus.

After Level 30, this white bear had gained two additional skills. The {Shared Life} could only be applied when Zhang Yang mount the beast.

The {Wild Charge} was a good replacement for his own {Charge} since he cannot use the skill while riding a mount. The Bear King might be just Level 30, but as a Yellow-Gold Battle Mount, it already had vast HP and attack, and it's only natural for it to grow far stronger in the future. It was probably as strong as an equivalently leveled Yellow-Gold equipped player!

After summoning, Zhang Yang quickly hopped on the beast. When a Battle Mount is summoned, it will disappear quickly after two seconds if nobody mounts it. Immediately after Zhang Yang got on the bear, the {Shared Life} skill was applied and he gained a huge boost in his HP, raising to a whopping 25,560 HP!

"This is awesome!" Zhang Yang exclaimed, feeling the controls extending to the bear itself. He felt like the bear was an extension of his body, finding that he could easily control its every move.

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had a pet mount which was a Violet-Platinum Thunder Hawk. It was a Flying Battle Mount too, at that! Based on the tier, Violet-Platinum was one tier higher than Yellow-Gold. However, when he was riding the Thunder Hawk, other pro players were riding Mythical tiered pet mounts! Some were even riding Ethereal tiered pet mounts! It could not be helped, Zhang Yang was a little too late in joining the game and had not been able to get his hands on rare items.

Still, his current Gold Eared Bear King Battle Mount, despite being only a Yellow-Gold tier, was, by far, the strongest Battle Mount that any player would have, at this stage of the game!

"Let's go, Whitey!" Zhang Yang named the mount and with a command in his mind, the Bear King growl and galloped towards a Snow Wolf.

Shosh!

{Wild Charge}!

The Snow Wolf was immediately stunned. Zhang Yang kept his hands to himself and allowed Whitey to attack on its own.

‘-803!’

‘-789!’

‘-898!’

Even though the white bear’s basic weapon attack was strong, the level gap between Whitey and the Snow Wolf was too far apart, and the damage had suffered a penalty. Luckily, the pet mount and the owner shared the same life bar, defense value, damage nullification skill and other passives. To attack the pet mount was like attacking the player itself. All attacks that the bear received was completed zero-ed! It could basically slowly kill the Level 55 Snow Wolf without Zhang Yang needing to do anything at all!

Chapter 222: Valley of High Tree

After another two hours of mindless grinding, Zhang Yang's Pet Mount, Whitey had amassed a large amount of experience points and was already Level 40. It had gained much more HP, Weapon Attack, and Defense, along with another skill!

[Claw Attack]: Attacks the target with a beastly claw. Deals 100% melee damage.

Cool down time: One second.

Cost: 50 Focus.

After the Level 40 hard bracket, every level gained will be exponentially harder and tougher than before. Even if they were to fight any monsters beyond Level 50, they would take two to three days, killing monsters one at a time instead of nuking them with large scaled AoEs. Zhang Yang involuntary yawned and realized that it was already past 11pm. Stretching his arms, he then decided to return to White Jade Castle. Before calling it a day, he mounted Whitey and made his way to the Little Merchandize Shop. Along the way, many players were mesmerized by the majestic mount. One by one, they asked as Zhang Yang rode by.

"Brother! Where did you did you buy the mount?"

"Big Bro! Which shop did you buy the mount from?"

Arriving at the shop, Zhang Yang did a quick check on the shop accounting and made a few [Fire Resistance Potion] to be placed in the shop's storage before logging off to have his rest.

The next day, Zhang Yang logged in at 9am, after his routine breakfast and exercise.

This time, Fatty Han was present along with the crew members from yesterday. However, Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight were absent since the both of them needed to work during the day. Unfortunately, they would have to miss out on the second boss as they could only log in during the night. Everyone gathered together in the Tukula Fortress before taking

off.

Before everyone else arrive, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were already in the Fortress waiting. Yesterday, both of the sisters logged off in the Bear King's Cave. To save time and money, they had unequipped all their equipment and waltzed towards some monsters, allowing themselves to be killed. They had revived and made their way towards the fortress after that. Little Wei Yan Er had been waiting for a while and got slightly agitated when Zhang Yang was late.

"Noob tank! Hurry up and get your *ss over! I wanna see little white white!"

Zhang Yang choked, laughing as he said, "Little white white is now Big Whitey!"

He then teleported to Tukula Fortress and summoned [Gold-Eared Bear King], riding it towards Wei Yan Er.

Observing the bear with great admiration, and a little jealousy, Wei Yan Er ruffled her tiny hands all over the massive bear's white fur. After she had her fun, she turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Hey, noob tank, when will another little whitey will spawn?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and shrugged. "I have no idea! Rare pet mounts and bosses are not the same. There're no fixed spawn times. However, one thing is for sure. The rarer it gets, the long it will take to respawn! Bear King is the Frozen Sky Wasteland's rarest monster. I predict that it might take one or two months to spawn a second one!"

Wei Yan Er puckered her lips and move her jaw side to side, displaying her discontentment. Suddenly, she bumped her fist against her palm and said, "Are there other Yellow-Gold pet mounts in other maps?"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Yes, there are. However, you must know. The higher the rarity, the harder it would be to seal it. If you want to have a higher success rate, you'll have to start pumping your Luck attribute!"

"Oh!" said Han Ying Xue. "No wonder you could seal the bear in one try! Now I understand that Luck could affect the success rate in sealing a pet

mount!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Having 9 luck points is really something!"

"Noob tank! What are the current stats of Big Whitey?" Wei Yan Er asked Zhang Yang. While others could easily check on the beast's HP and Level, only the owner could access the Attack and skills. Zhang Yang posted the properties of the Bear King in the party channel.

[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: 40

HP: 11,200

Weapon Attack: 1,554, - 1,954 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds. DPS: 585)

Skill 1: {Shared Life}

Skill 2: {Wild Charge}

Skill 3: {Claw Attack}

Everyone was stunned. They had long known that a Yellow-Gold Pet Mount is strong, but those numbers far exceed their own expectations!

"F*ck! Even the attack is much stronger than mine!" cried Fatty Han. "D*mn bro! How could you be that selfish! Why didn't you tell me that you were hunting for a pet mount!?"

"Hey hey! If you want to have a battle mount? Get in line! We're all waiting for our chance for it! In this case, you're the last in line! Hah!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Hah! It's the Final Countdown! Tu tu tu do!" Fatty Han joked.

Wei Yan Er raised an eye brow. "What was that?"

"Oh come on! Count down? How do you count downwards?"

"3?2?1?"

"Exactly! So which number did you said first?"

"The last one?"

"Exactly~" Fatty Han post a victory sign.

"Lame!" Everyone responded.

The team chit chatted for a little while, while waiting for everyone to gather.

"Onward! To the Swamp of the Ancient Moss!"

It took the entire team approximately two hours to reach the Swamp. They had to make their way through the Frozen Sky Wasteland and the Tirgua Mountains. Even though all of them knew that the Demonic Treant King was located in the Valley of High Tree, the mini-map around them was still covered in shadows. The system will not blatantly reveal the location of the boss to them. To locate it, they would have to search for it themselves. The team split up into several groups, repeating the same procedure as they did the previous day. Anyone who locates the boss will have to notify the entire party.

Lo and behold, history repeated itself as Han Ying Xue, the goddess of luck found the boss after not more than 10 minutes. She giggled as she announced, "It's here! I found it!"

Zhang Yang opened the world map and examines Han Ying Xue's location. He frowned. "I'd say, you were assigned to search the location in the direction of three o'clock. Do you realize where you are now? That's seven o'clock! Where are you trying to go? Timbuktu?"

Han Ying Xue scoffed. "I was the first one to find the boss, not to mention, saving everyone's precious time and effort! Now look at you, calling me stupid and calling me a directional idiot! Well, look at me, the world's dumbest girl with no sense of direction! Oh wait, I was the one who found the boss! The first one! You're calling me idiot!? Looks who the idiot now!"

After being yelled at, Zhang Yang felt a little guilty and remained quiet. The rest of the party felt the same way, having been called a directional idiot by an actual directional idiot! Everyone started to change their courses and headed towards Han Ying Xue.

The Swamp of the Ancient Moss truly lived up to its name. Every corner, every inch, every part of the swamp was covered in greens. Not the light green of plants you'd see in a rain forest. This green, would be the deep, dark green of mosses that you would normally find in a drain or an abandoned toilet wall. There were algae growing where there was water. The monsters in this map would also be found in real life swamps. There were crocodiles, frogs, giant crabs and other swamp dwellers. The Valley of High Tree, on the other hand, was jam-packed with trees that went up to several meters tall! They would easily dwarf any real buildings in the real world! In the center of the Valley was a huge clear lake, while the rest of the map was just normal terrain.

Controlled by Zhang Yang, the bear walked up with its gigantic, heavy foot steps forward, sinking its feet into the ground as it moved forward.

Suush!

A shadowy figure rushed towards Zhang Yang with a flash when he had set his foot into the Valley. With a quick command in his mind, the white bear dashed three to four meters towards the front.

Wham!

With a loud crash, the huge shadow stopped in its tracks. It turned out to be a huge rock, about the size of a sedan car. The rock was smashed into many tiny particles, scattering all over the place. 20 meters away from them, a treant was making its way towards them, lifting another huge rock. The treant was at least 10 meters tall. When the treat stood upright to face them, its massive size was large enough to block off the sunlight, casting a huge, long shadow over them.

[Demonic Treant] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 58

HP: 58,000

Defense: 600

With another thought. Zhang Yang sent a command mentally and the bear growls as it rushed towards the treant.

{Wild Charge}!

The bear stomped the ground with great force and blasted itself towards the treant, raising its claws as it flew through the air.

‘-876!’ Normal Attack.

‘-989!’ {Claw Attack}.

Zhang Yang activated {Blood Rage} and started his attack.

‘-1,482!’ Normal Attack

‘-3,356!’ {Horizontal Sweep}.

A pet and its master, fighting alongside each other, dealt an instant 6,700+ damage to the monster in no time! Everyone could not help but gape at the sight of it! Everyone could only fantasize about having one at that point.

‘-1,534!’

After receiving the attack, the treant monster returned fire, swinging a massive tree-arm and smashing Zhang Yang with it. Zhang Yang took damage, but having "morphed" together with his mount into one single unit, Zhang Yang had gained a huge HP boost, reaching 28,360 maximum HP! That puny, little hit was nothing but a tiny scratch on Zhang Yang.

"D*mn son! With that HP, you're just like a boss now!" screamed Fatty Han.

"Haha! That's right! We might even get some Yellow-Gold equipment if we kill Zhan Yu!" said Perfumed Water rather passionately. "Hey Fatty bum! If you kill Zhan Yu and get me three to four Yellow-Gold equips, I'll give you a kiss myself, saving you the trouble of sending me those perverted messages!"

"Pui Do I look like someone who would go hoes before bros!?" Fatty Han crossed his arms confidently. However, it did not take him long before he was intrigued by her suggestion. "Make it at least three kisses and I'll consider it!"

Everyone was amused, laughing at their conversation. Even though the

damned Fatty Han talks before thinking, he was an interesting fellow to be with. With him around, the atmosphere would never be dull.

As always, with the team attacking together ferociously, the treant did not last for long and was turned into a rotten old tree trunk.

Wei Yan Er went on ahead and picked up the loots. She was expecting some sort of equipment but only obtained three counts of [Thick Branch]. Annoyed at her loots, she pouted.

Fatty Han saw what she had obtained and made his usual joke. "Hehe. Thick eh...Hehehe...Thiccc...hehehe!"

Zhang Yang could see where his conversation was about to go and quickly interjected before Fatty Han could say anything else. "Fatty...can you just shut your mouth for three minutes? Three, god-d*mn-minutes!"

Fatty Han crossed his arms unwillingly and kept quiet. However, how could someone as perverted as him could let a chance like that slip by! In just four seconds, he opened his mouth and begun to start a conversation. "Yesterday, when I was out shopping with Yun Yun, we stopped at a grocery store. Yun Yun wanted to buy some cucumbers for the night and picked two rather large and rough cucumbers! I wonder what would she used them for..."

Han Ying Xue and the girls of the party started blushing. In unison, they screamed at Fatty Han, "Fatty Pig!" Only Wei Yan Er started at Fatty Han in confusion and said, "The rough ones aren't tasty you know! The rough ones are bitter!"

Fatty Han laughed extremely loudly, swiping a glance towards the ladies of the party. "Yun Yun bought those cucumbers are her beauty treatments! Hahahahaha! What are you girls blushing for, huh! Hehehehe, I must have struck the jackpot! Look what I found? Four perverted vixens! Now, who's the real pervert here huh!"

The four girls were rendered speechless. How could they not think of something indecent when he had to say it that way? Large and rough?! Any mature lady would quickly come to 'that' conclusion! If she was to use it for her face, why did he had to say it that way?

"Pervert! Fox! Pig! Bastard!" The ladies lashed out their insults and rolled their eyes.

The team proceeded on and not long after, another treant was found. It pulled itself out from the ground it was in and swung its arms around to attack the party. The team killed the treant and went on. As they chopped their way deeper into the Valley, they picked up a few Green-Copper tier equipment. Since they were not set-equipment like the ones found in the Winter's Wind Bear Cave, they were barely as valuable as set-equipment, and were given to Han Ying Xue to disassemble for profession experience.

"Noob tank, why are there no pet mounts here?" Wei Yan Er wouldn't stop pestering Zhang Yang, repeating the question again and again.

"Sigh...if pet mounts are so common and easy to find, they wouldn't be called rare pet mounts now, would they?" Zhang Yang would repeatedly answer her question with different variations of phrasing. Still, no matter how hard Zhang Yang tried to twist his words, the message would simply not get through to her.

The Valley was extremely large and wide. It was so wide that the party had to spend at least two hours to kill every elite treant monster in the Valley, before managing to get into the deepest part. However, their efforts remained unrewarded; where they stood in the deepest part of the Valley, with no boss-like monsters to be seen.

The good news was that after such a long and draggy spree of kills, Whitey had gained three levels.

"Hey, Dummy. Where is the boss?"

Everyone had scanned the entire area but could not find anything resembling a monster.

Annoyed and frustrated, Zhang Yang scratched his head. "The quest said it would be here!"

"Could it be killed already?" asked Hundred Shots, hoping he was wrong.

"YAWWZAH!" Fatty Han screamed to the high heavens. "Something just poked my *sshole!"

Other than Zhang Yang, the rest of the party members had been on foot the whole time. Fatty Han had grown tired, and had sat down on a large popping root nearby. He had let out a sudden scream as his face twitched in a strange manner.

Chapter 223: Demonic Treant King

Everyone frowned with varying degrees, some twitching their eye brows, some baring their teeth in disgust, but one thing was for certain, they were all disgusted by Fatty Han.

"What's with that? I'm serious!" said Fatty Han like a wrongly accused housewife. He did make a rather pitiful expression before he got angry. "If you don't believe me, have a seat and try it!"

A sudden thought struck Zhang Yang. He looked at the tree that had "poked" Fatty Han's butt. He tilted his head upwards to look at the tree and manage to catch a glimpse of its peak. For a moment, he thought he had been mistaken but after a closer glimpse, he was sure that the silhouette carried a name tag! And the name tag said: Demonic Treant King!

The monster's name tag was in yellow, which means it is a neutral monster that will not attack unless provoked. This was why the group did not notice the monster since it had remained motionless, just like a real tree even when the group was standing right next to it.

[Demonic Treant King] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,500

What thick defense! Even after a 50% armor reduction, it would still have 750 Defense value; enough to nullify 90% of the majority of players around!

Zhang Yang went back to the group and pointed at the boss saying, "This...is the boss I supposed."

"What?" Everyone was startled. Everyone went up closer to the "tree" and observed carefully before they accepted the impact of that revelation. While the others were nodding their heads, Fatty Han was sulking on one side, clenching his teeth angrily.

"What a perverted tree! It actually poked my butt hole! What a shameless bastard! Don't stop me! I'm going to have this tree have a taste of its own medicine!"

The rest of the team could not help drip cold sweat.

Riding the mount, Zhang Yang's HP had gained a massive boost. With a stronger commanding presence than ever, he commanded. "Get ready! We are going to start the boss fight soon!"

Without much delay, Zhang Yang took out his battle axe and laid the first strike on the boss, following closely with a {Blood Rage} and {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-986!’

‘-2,898!’

Facing a boss with 1,500 Defense, Zhang Yang's attack was greatly diminished even with his {Eagle Eye}. As for Whitey, its attack was only around 700, so low that it was completely negligible!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The ground quaked violently as the boss begun to stir. The tremors were so strong that it was like an earthquake occurring. Cracks begun to form all around them as the boss "wiggled" itself out of the ground. Two long and extremely large tree trunks came out of the ground. To their horrors, those were its legs! Each of the legs were so large that each of them could be wider than a basketball court! But, if those were only the legs, how about its entire body? Standing at the bottom of it, Zhang Yang and his party were like ants in the face of a gigantic elephant!

Wham!

The Demonic Treant King stomped the ground, covering an area so wide that no one was able to dodge! In an instant, everyone received 9,000 damage. Even Wei Yan Er, who was positioned behind the boss took at least 6,000 damage. The attack did not kill Wei Yan Er, but, the rest of the party was killed instantly.

Zhang Yang had only received 5,534 damage, a small wound considering that he had close to 30,000 HP!

"D*mn! How are we supposed to fight this thing?"

Fatty Han and the rest had released their souls and had started to run back to their bodies, complaining as they did.

Zhang Yang had an idea and commanded Whitey to run back towards the lake in the center of the Valley. Even though the bear's movement speed was faster than average, it could not outrun the boss! With one stride of its long legs, it easily stomped the ground, the shockwave still reaching Zhang Yang.

‘-5762!’

Luckily, Zhang Yang had already moved 60 to 70 meters away from its previous location. That attack did produce a shock wave but it was far enough to miss Wei Yan Er. She had been so apprehensive of the attack that she patted her own flat chest, sighing in relieve.

Wham! Slam!

The Treant King chased after Zhang Yang, managing to get a few hits in at the same time. When Zhang Yang' HP had reached below 10,000, he quickly activated {Berserker's Heal} and continued his way. Eventually, the boss' attack could not reach him since he was riding the mount! The chase continued and the boss remained on Zhang Yang's trail, unable to attack.

Several moments later, Zhang Yang arrived at the giant lake. Riding the bear, Zhang Yang commanded Whitey to leap forward and into the lake. After a huge splash, the bear floated on the water surface, paddling constantly like a dog.

The Demonic Treant King had managed to caught up to Zhang Yang. He sighed a breath of relief. He feared that he might have lost the boss' aggro, his arduous journey to the lake for nothing. Within range, the boss lifted its leg and sent it towards Zhang Yang.

Woosh!

The massive stomp caused a gigantic wave that was at least 10 meters tall. Both Zhang Yang and Whitey was sent deep into the lake and after a while, they floated back up to the surface, taking only 734 damage.

Its massive attack was greatly reduced!

Just as planned!

Zhang Yang smirked. Bosses that relied on stomping attack will have its attack power reduced when dragged into water. In 'God's Miracle' there were many examples of using the surroundings to nerf the boss' attack. In his previous life, there was a guild that had killed the undefeated Frost King Poseleus by kiting the boss towards the peak of the Angula Volcano. Using the hot environment to diminish the boss' Frost damage, the team had successfully killed Poseleus, and the news soon spread like wildfire!

This game was designed with realism in mind! Use your imagination to create endless possibilities!

{Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}!{Cripple Defense}!

Zhang Yang reduced the boss defense and called out to his team. "Once everyone is revived, get over to the lake! We'll kill the boss here!"

Wei Yan Er healed herself with [Bandage] and quickly head over to the lake.

"Little brat! Stay away from the boss! Wait for the rest of the team!" Before she could jump into the lake, Zhang Yang quickly stopped her. Even though the boss' attack had been reduced, it was still strong enough to kill a Berserker without the backing of a healer!

Soosh!

Another stomp landed and the lake had formed several more waves that rose up higher than any waves in the beach! Since the boss was just too ridiculously huge, it could easily stand on land and still managed to be in range to attack Zhang Yang. One strike at a time, Zhang Yang could only hack at its root-like feet. Whitey was also attacking with its might.

Even in water, Zhang Yang was still taking around 700 damage. He was

losing HP a lot more slower than before, but with no one around to heal him, he could not endure for long. Fearing that, he quickly cried out. "Hey! B*tchy Snow! Where are you guys?!"

"What's the hurry?! We have just been revived, let us eat up! Sure! I can come right now if you want me to! With zero MP, what you want me to heal you with!?" Han Ying Xue scoffed arrogantly.

Fatty Han giggled. "With your love!"

"F*ck! Don't waste time! Please hurry up! I'm dying here!" said Zhang Yang. Seeing that his HP was about to be depleted, Zhang Yang quickly activated {Shield Wall} and summoned {Merlinda's Shadow}.

Before he leveled up, he was much weaker. Back then, {Merlinda's Shadow} was so strong that it could over-heal Zhang Yang! Yet, right now, with that massive HP, {Merlinda's Shadow} could only heal roughly one third of Zhang Yang maximum HP! Sadly, things could not remain permanently strong! What was strong then would be weak now!

"Please hold on, Zhan Yu! We are coming now! Hold on!" At least Snow Seeker was courteous enough to say the words that Zhan Yang wanted to hear the most

.

As the {Shield Wall}'s duration ended, the 10,000 HP that he had regained was quickly being hacked away. Zhang Yang quickly used {Rearm}, using {Berserker's Heal} again!

Finally, just as he had reached his limit, the team arrived out of the forest, riding their own mounts!

Splash! Splash! Splash! Splash!

Everyone jumped into the lake and Wei Yan Er swam towards the boss' back. Others swam behind Zhang Yang, engaging their own roles; healers prepared to heal and attackers ready to attack.

In the water, the boss' stomping attack power had been reduced by roughly a third. The resulting damage was around 3,000. Even though the

number might seem powerful and devastating, a tank could take the damage head on without flinching. As long as Han Ying Xue or Perfumed Water could maintain {Regeneration} on Zhang Yang, they could leave him be and focus on healing the rest of the team! Priests are natural group or mass healers. Perfumed Water was the main healer in Crimson Rage. Not only were her equipment top-notch, her skills were no less impressive! She even had {Healing Rain} and {Mending Prayers}; two powerful mass healing skills!

With two of them, Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water working hand in hand, they easily managed the other seven players in the party, excluding Zhang yang. The battle was now shifting towards Zhang Yang's side!

Wham!

The Demonic Treant King suddenly swung an arm made out of long tendrils, and whipped Zhang Yang, dealing more than 5,000 damage. The attack had also sent Zhang Yang and his bear flying out of the water, towards the other end of the lake, where they would land on hard ground!

'Ding! Demonic Treant King has used {Whip Attack}!'

Before Zhang Yang and Whitey was sent out of the water, Zhang Yang quickly grabbed on Whitey's neck tightly and quickly activated {Wild Charge} the moment their character leaves the water surface. In a flash, Whitey dashed forward, dragging Zhang Yang along on its back, before it slammed forcefully against the boss! Zhang Yang had jumped into the water right before the moment of impact.

The boss' {Whip Attack} was really fast and strong! However, the one at the receiving end of the attack had reacted even faster!

"Nice one!"

Everyone cheered. If Zhang Yang was really sent flying, he would received additional {Falling} damage if he collided with the ground. What's more, he would have been so forcefully displaced that the healers would be out of range. He would have been killed with just two to three hits if the boss decided to turn around and stomp on his pathetic, little character.

Now that the dangerous moment had been dealt with, the team focused on attacking the boss. After all, solving sudden problems were no better than actually killing the boss.

After five stacks of {Cripple Defense}, Whitey's damage had increased by a level. Its average damage rose from 250 to 1000! That was almost four times stronger! Although other physical attack classes had increased attacks after the boss' defense was reduced, they attacks were still extremely weak due to the ridiculously high base defense of the boss! The only player in the party that truly received the full benefit of {Cripple Defense} was Daffodil Daydream. Being a Pyromancer, her fire elemental spells were extremely effective against woodland creatures like treant monsters! Having {Eagle Eye}, Zhang Yang would consistently maintain his average damage power. Snow Seeker was a Cryomancer, her ice-based damage was not effected; they were neither diminished nor boosted.

However, Daffodil Daydream's strong fire attacks were not enough to cover up for Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han's weakened attacks. All three of them had their attack reduced by 35% on average, causing the entire team's DPS to be lowered by a significant amount.

*

Translator's Thoughts

(Author's Note): Horizontal Sweep and Destructive Smash were not all OP as you guys thought. Eagle Eye was culprit. It's the most broken skill ever!

Chapter 224: Aura Stone

Demonic the Treant King used the {Swing} attack every 45 seconds, while {Wild Charge} only had a cool down time of 30 seconds which could totally negate the knockback effect of Demonic the Treant King's swing attack!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Demonic the Treant King trampled on the lake, causing miniature tsunamis, and a lot of chaos as fishes and prawns were washed out, hitting the land around it.

90%, 80%, 70%... Everybody slowly reduced Demonic the Treant King's long HP.

Snow Seeker acclaimed, "Guild master Zhan Yu is so smart. If we did not use the lake's environment to weaken the Treant King's damage, we would not even stand a chance! the Treant King's damage is much higher than Mountain Giant, even if we had more people, this boss would just kill all of us instantly! If real world elements were not even considered, we would have to gather thousands of players above Level 50, or wait until we are at Level 70 with better equipment!"

Fatty Han immediately seized the credit and responded, "Guild master Snow Seeker, I am the one who brought little Yang into this game! All the tactics and skills you witness have been taught by yours truly!"

"... Fatty, you can exaggerate it even more?"

Fatty Han shamelessly said, "Guild master Snow Seeker, does Crimson Rage not invite male players?"

Perfumed Water could not hold back on retorting, "You must master the 'Sunflower Manual', and then undergo plastic surgery. Perhaps then, you can be invited into our guild!"

Fatty Han suddenly felt a chill creeping down his crotch. He bent his head down, looked and touched his crotch contentedly.

"Oy!" the girls protested when they saw Fatty Han doing so.

Fatty Han laughed out loud with pride, and sent a private message to Zhang Yang, "Little Yang, I just love teasing these little pretties! Unfortunately, all these girls are yours, I'd feel embarrassed to hit on them! By the way, let's go for a drink tonight!"

Zhang Yang felt cold sweat dripping down his head and replied, "If you want to take advantage of them, then just say it, don't come up with excuses!"

In this battle, the most taxed were the two healers as they need to constantly heal everyone HP. If they were a second too slow, someone could have been trampled to death by the Treant King. The rest of the people were quite relaxed, even drinking some lake water as they were graciously trampled till they hit the bottom of the lake.

At one point, Fatty Han mentioned that something leaked out of him. Although he never specified on the details, everyone had a good guess and a few girls almost desperately ran to the lakeshore.

40%, 30%, 20%, 10%!

"Kong! Kong!" the Treant King roared madly, a blood-red halo flashing over its mottled bark. The huge the Treant King instantly turned into a crimson color!

'Ding! the Treant King has initiated {Sucker Punch}. All attack increased by 50%!

"the Treant King's getting violent. Go ahead and use your long cooldown skills, we're going to need every bit of juice!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

Zhang Yang had kept his guard up, in case this open world boss went berserk, a typical trait of its kind. Prior to the battle, he had already told the gang to keep their long cooldown duration skills in reserve, only unleashing these skills when the boss became violent! Thus, everyone activated their respective skills and drank Power Potions, before starting to attack the Treant King with equal fervor.

The hardest hitter was Wei Yan Er, as her Level 50 class quest's reward was a Yellow-Gold two-handed axe. Her melee attack had already reached

2,800, and after activating {Indiscriminate} and ingesting a Power Potion, her attacks went way overboard, even surpassing Zhang Yang's attacks!

{Indiscriminate}: All attacks have 90% chance to cause critical strike within 10 seconds. Can only affect targets with HP less than 20%. Cool down time: 10 minutes.

‘-6,012! Normal attack. Critical strike.’

‘-10,002! { Tornado Cleave}. Critical strike.’

Her critical strike exceeded ten thousand damage!

The little brat was giddy with excitement every time she slashed the Treant King. For this 10 minutes she was like a heavenly God as her critical strikes caused double damage. the Treant King's 750 Defense Value barely suppressed her base attacks, only allowing her critical attacks to be -- critically effective!

She left everyone speechless with her terrifying damage!

the Treant King's attack increasing by 50% nearly overwhelmed the healing rate of the two healers. Thus, Zhang Yang quickly used the {Vanguard's Aggression} protective barrier and {Shield Wall} at the same time.

Because everyone was using their long cooldown duration skills, they successfully reduced the Treant King's HP by 200,000 points within 10 seconds, leaving the Treant King with 300,000 HP! But the duration for their long cooldown duration skills was finished, so the team's attacks reverted back to how they were before.

The moment {Vanguard's Aggression} expired, everyone's HP bars went up and down like a roller coaster. The healers were playing a game of pong with the boss, and the balls were the HP bars of the team!

Zhang Yang made up his mind and decided, "Evil Snow, Perfumed Water, ignore Hundred Shots and Fatty, let them die! Focus your healing on the rest of the team, especially Daffodil Daydream, her flame element is key to the battle! Keep her alive at all costs!"

It was impossible to keep everyone alive, so it was best that they ensure the safety of the hardest hitters!

The moment Fatty Han heard Zhang Yang's command, he used {Fake Death} and lay down beneath the surface of the water!

Bang!

the Treant King stomped on the lake once again, and with a big splash, a '-4,434' damage text appeared above Fatty Han's head. The pitiful Fatty Han had been left with only one-third of his HP before activating {Fake Death}. There was no hope for survival. Instantly, Fatty Han's {Fake Death} became the real death!

"Damn, I already used {Fake Death}, the boss still trampled on me!" Fatty Han scolded angrily.

"Fatty sh*t, the Treant King has ranged attacks, it is useless to {Fake Death} within the Treant King's range attack!" Zhang Yang could not help but laughed.

On the other hand, Hundred Shots had tried to swim away from the Treant King's range attack but the speed of the player in the water was only 10 m/s. Hundred Shots was only able to swim about seven to eight meters away from the Treant King before he joined the perverted Fatty in death!

With the departure of the two hunters, Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water instantly had lightened loads, albeit it was still very stressful for them!

Zhang Yang threw {Sacrifice} on Daffodil Daydream without hesitation. At the same time, he also summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] and activated {Substitute} to relieve the pressure.

250,000! 200,000! 150,000! 100,000!

the Treant King retained last traces of his HP. However, everyone's HP bars in the team were not faring any better. the Treant King gave the lake a huge stomp again, striking those close by, with Zhang Yang the only one left standing!

80,000! 60,000! 40,000!

‘Ding! Player Snow Seeker has died!’

30,000! 20,000!

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has died!’

"Wu wu, cousin, why didn't you heal me?!"

10,000! 5,000! 1,000!

"Kong!" the Treant King suddenly flared-up with an earth-shattering scream and its huge body crashed down, flattening countless of trees across the land -- the Treant King's body was at least a few hundred meters long!

"Hu!" the survivors let out a sigh of relief as they had been getting increasingly concerned. If the Treant King had an extra 300,000 to 500,000 HP, Zhang Yang and the gang would be the ones defeated!

"Save them first!" Zhang Yang told the two healers.

Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water immediately started to reviving the fallen. One minute later, all of them were sitting by the lakeside, eating health recovery food to recover their conditions.

Zhang Yang cancelled his mount summon, and ran to the side of the Treant King's corpse to pick up the loot. Luckily, the loot dropped from the Treant King were clustered together in one corner. Imagine having to run a few hundred meters just to pick up the loot alongside that massive body.

The first item Zhang Yang picked up was the quest item, [Root of the Demonic the Treant King]. Zhang Yang placed it next to the [Heart of the Winter Bear King] in his inventory and looked for other items.

[Furious Metallic Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +101

Strength: +40

Dexterity: +40

Equipment: Absorbs 70 damage points each time you receive an attack.

{Unidentified}

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 60

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "Very good, the first equipment is mine, I'm such a 'Lucky Hand'!" he immediately threw the gloves into his inventory.

"F*ck, Little Yang, find me a few Hunter's set equipment with that 'Lucky Hand'!" Fatty Han said immediately.

"Ya, my gloves and boots as well!" Wei Yan Er also joined the conversation.

Zhang Yang coughed and said, "Write down your wishes on a paper and put it under your pillow on the 24th of December, I will be the Santa Claus who fulfills your wishes!"

Suddenly, everyone went silent but Fatty Han laughed mockingly and said, "Little Yang, if you are representing Santa Claus, does that leave you with nothing but 'balls'?"

"Get lost!" Zhang Yang shooed him away while the girls blushed, rolling their eyes pointedly at Fatty Han.

"Sigh, my only wish from Santa Claus is to have two girls at once when 'having some action'!" Fatty Han said it, surprisingly solemn. They had never seen the cheerful Fatty Han wearing such a sincere facial expression. It could only mean that this wish truly came from the depths of his heart, a wish that he would fight for, as his lifetime goal!

Everyone started perspiring like waterfalls. They all had seen their fair share of perverts, but have never seen a pervert setting something so perverted as his goal in life!

Zhang Yang immediately continued picking up the loot, except his gloves which was the set equipment part, Treat King dropped another

three Yellow-Gold equipment, none of them belonging to any set, which were the Priest's helmet, Priest's boots and Beastmaster's chestplate.

Because Han Ying Xue already had a Yellow-Gold helmet so this helmet went to Perfumed Water by default, while the boots went to Han Ying Xue. Everyone was happy with the distribution. Hundred Shots had taken a pair of boots yesterday, so the chestplate went to Fatty Han. It kept the entire party happy.

Zhang Yang touched the Treant King's corpse once again, his eyes suddenly shone, as he took out two stones, proclaiming, "Aura stones!"

Both of these stones were crystal clear and shone like two sapphires. They were magnificent.

None of the girls would turn away from shiny gemstones. Han Ying Xue and the rest of the girls surrounded the aura stone. Even the cool Snow Seeker was not an exception, and they started their girl chatter.

The girls were overcome with excitement, chattering and laughing. Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he said, "Come on girls, these are not gemstones, don't get so excited!"

[Beginner Aura Stone] (Consumable)

Use: Increases a level of aura skill that is less than Level 3.

Requirement: Possess an aura skill.

Everyone reached out for the stones, including those who did not possess any aura to speak of.

Zhang Yang was frowning and as he looked at Snow Seeker and Perfumed Water, before saying, "Both of you don't have auras, what are you going to do with this?"

Fatty Han immediately sided with Zhang Yang and added on, "That's right, these stones are not 'thick and long', and they are useless for the both of you!"

Bang bang! Pa pa! The girls got fed up, and they caught hold of Fatty Han, giving him some punches and kicks.

"Those who have aura skills, please roll the dice! Whoever gets the highest and second highest points, gets one stone each!" Zhang Yang made the decision as the party leader.

Those people who had aura skill started to roll the dice immediately. As a result, Han Ying Xue, who was publicly known for having an affair with the system, rolled the highest point at 96 points while Zhang Yang rolled the second point at 92 points, so both of them got a stone each.

"What a lewd dog and lecherous vixen!" Fatty Han who was beaten, crossed both his hands behind his back and sighed like a noble person.

Zhang Yang opened his skill list and a few rows of skill immediately appeared as three-dimensional projections in front of him. Each skill description was engraved on a metal flatbed, and his fingers toggled and selected his {Vitality Aura} before using the [Aura Stone].

[Aura Stone] broke into small particles of light, as his {Vitality Aura}'s flatbed glowed blue.

[Vitality Aura] (Level 2): Increases the vitality of team mates within the effective range by 8%. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster. The effect lasts until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes.

Han Ying Xue did not use [Aura Stone] immediately, but admired hers lovingly. She even teased Wei Yan Er about it, riling up the little brat.

After looting the two aura stones, the Treant King had no more Yellow-Golds to offer, but seven pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. Zhang Yang handed two pieces over to Snow Seeker as reward for her help in defeating the Treant King.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, are we going to fight the third boss?" Snow Seeker was extremely satisfied as she and Perfumed Water had collected one piece of Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment over the past two days. They were really pleased.

Zhang Yang looked at the time and replied, "It is going to be 5.00 PM. Everybody should logout from the game take a break! Let's gather at 7.00

PM at Tukula Fortress, the last boss somewhere in that direction!"

All of them nodded their heads and tore their [Teleportation Scroll]s, returning to White Jade Castle. They also identified the equipment, and restocked their health replenishing supplies.

Zhang Yang also went to Item Identifier to identify his [Furious Metallic Gloves]!

[Furious Metallic Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +144

Strength: +58

Dexterity: +58

{Level 2 Socket}

Equipment: Absorbs 100 damage points each time you deal an attack.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 60

Currently, Zhang Yang had four pieces of the Level 60 Yellow-Gold set. If he could get the last piece of set equipment, the boots, from Lord of Flames, and then he would have successfully gathered a full set! Being the top Yellow-Gold set of equipment at Level 60, he would have gain the power to conquer the upcoming dungeon, "Thunderbolt Prison"!

Chapter 225: Imperial Sky

Everyone started to log in, one after another. At 7.00 PM, Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight finally joined the team. The ten of them immediately made their way to Tukula Fortress.

They travelled through Phil Forest and Xylor Wasteland, finally entering the Burning Flatlands after two hours.

Burning Flatlands. The name itself spoke volumes about the environment it carried, the ground was lined with cracks of hot lava, threatening to scorch the feet of those who stepped on its surface! It was a horrible environment, the few flora that did grow were those that had adapted to such conditions, such as [Flame Flower] and [Burning Grass], precious medicinal herbs.

Most of the monsters here were members of the fire and rock elements. There were Burning Imps and Red Fire Lizards dwelling beneath the magma, and they were above Level 50.

Because they had never explored the map before, everyone could only follow the old-fashioned method by splitting up and searching in groups.

Zhang Yang looked at Han Ying Xue and said, "If you are the first one who discover the Fiery Sacrificial Altar again, then I'll admit that you have a Godly sense of direction!"

The rest of the people nodded their heads continuously. As Han Ying Xue simply walked without any direction in mind but could somehow discover the right places, it had to be due to some divine intervention.

Zhang Yang opened the map, looking for the Fiery Sacrificial Altar at his own assigned area and paid attention to Han Ying Xue's location. Unsurprisingly, that fellow who had terrible sense of direction started to walk away from her assigned area, simply walking haphazardly, like a blind fly.

10 Minutes later, the little blinking dot on the map that represented Han Ying Xue stopped, and she said, "Ha ha ha, I'm the first to find it again!"

Drops of sweat formed on everyone else's heads.

Zhang Yang suddenly got an epiphany and said, "Negatives make a positive, perhaps she has just the right amount of negatives to end up as an exceptional positive!"

Fatty Han muttered, "The fellow who has such a terrible sense of direction actually entered an unexplored map and was able to find the right spot, is really impressive!" There was silence as nobody in the party understood what he meant.

All of them quickly converged towards Han Ying Xue's location.

This was a huge altar. It was like a really tall stack made up by building blocks, divided into upper, middle and lower layers, totaling up to several hundred meters! The altar was like a cone that had been cut into six pieces, with a piece removed from every alternate layer, having the remaining three pieces on top of each other. The top of the first layer's area was as big as the size of eight football fields; the top of the second layer's area was similar to the size of five football fields, and the top of the last layer's area was about the size of a single football field.

All around the altar and on the even surface of each layer, many people dressed in black priest robes paraded forth and back. There were men and women, carrying staffs. Obviously, they were magic-type monsters.

[Fanatic Flame Acolyte] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 58

HP: 58,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang leaned forward, patting Whitey on the head and said, "Go!"

Whitey advanced, using {Wild Charge} and dashed towards one of the nearest monsters. Zhang Yang used the momentum to swing his axe.

"Heresy!" the Fanatic Flame Acolyte immediately shouted loudly and pointed at Zhang Yang with his staff, starting to cast {Fireball}.

{Crash Magic}!

The Fanatic Flame Acolyte's casting bar was immediately interrupted. He swung his staff, knocking Zhang Yang off his mount and shouted, "Heathen, your fresh blood shall be used wash away the desecrated souls!"

Everyone swarmed the monster and continuously interrupted his casting bar. The pitiful Fanatic Flame Acolyte could not even cast a {Fireball} before being hacked to death!

"Bah, that guy was all but talk!" Fatty Han raised his fist, "If it wants to act like a boss boss, it's not supposed to pay lip service but to speak through its actions!"

"Well said, Fatty Bro!" the other member of perverted duo, Endless Starlight, immediately looked at Fatty Han admiringly.

These clowns!

The team continued moving on, killing all the way. Two hours later, they had almost reached the third level of the altar. The experience points for elite monsters were abundant as Whitey had also gained three levels, reaching Level 46. Every 10 levels the pet mount gained would only enhance its attribution once. Therefore, there was no difference from when Whitey was Level 40. However, Whitey no longer suffered from the damage penalty that arose from level differences.

At this time, a bunch of people had walked through the entrance of altar. "Imperial Sky" was the title that hovered over the heads of these people.

These late birds saw that there were no monsters along the route to the altar. However, from far away, they saw monsters on both sides. One Sword Stroke squinted his eyes, raised his head and looked up at the huge and tall altar.

"Boss, are there anyone faster than us?" Mountain Cleaver looked at One Sword Stroke.

"How can it be? Boss had just accepted the quest to kill three bosses, could anyone really be faster than us?" Soul Striker exclaimed, looking incredulous.

One Sword Stroke stared at the altar and said, "If I'm not mistaken, Lone Desert Smoke has a party up there!"

Heartless Striker immediately slapped his thigh and said, "That's right, only they could compete with us, Imperial Sky! Boss, what should we do now?"

"We're going after them, of course!" One Sword Stroke said, with a determined look on his face, "I have long wanted to battle that Zhan Yu and see who the top tank in China server is!"

"Ha ha, that'll be our boss!" Mountain Cleaver laughed out loud and said, "Boss has a Level 50 Yellow-Gold weapon, a full set of Level 50 Gray-Silver equipment and a Level 50 Gray-Silver shield, these equipment are definitely the best!"

"Exactly, Zhan Yu and his gang cleared Poison Fireland Hardcore mode a day before we did! But, Yellow-Gold equipment do not drop in dungeons!"

"Besides that, our boss also got a Gray-Silver pet mount yesterday, together they have 19,000 HP, and monstrous DPS. That Zhan Yu will not know what hit him!"

"Ha ha, we'll record a video of Zhan Yu getting beaten flat by our boss and put it on the official forum. That'll shut down the debate for good!"

One Sword Stroke was not prideful like his followers, even as he got his boots licked by them. However, a trace of pride could be seen from his eyes. Most of the time however, he was known for being calm and despising sycophants. He nodded slowly and said, "Let's go!"

There were only 11 players in One Sword Stroke's team. It seems that One Sword Stroke was similar to Zhang Yang in the way that both of them preferred to bring a concentrated party of elite players only. All of them quickly followed the route that Zhang Yang had already cleared.

After another 10 minutes, Zhang Yang and his gang reached the third layer of the altar. In the middle of the altar, there was a huge creature of flames, it held a war hammer in its right hand, standing upright in an arrogant poise. The heat distorted the air around it!

This flame creature was surrounded in circular formation of 10 Flame Acolytes in half-kneeling positions. All of them were clearly worshipping the being.

[Lord of Flames Arcel] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

There were so many Flame Acolytes between the gang and the Lord of Flames Arcel, that clearing the Acolytes was the first priority!

Just as Zhang Yang was about to command the gang to clear all the Flame Acolytes, he caught sight of 11 uninvited guests who were riding their mounts towards the top! Imperial Sky? Zhang Yang focused on those words, quickly scanning for the leading figure. As expected, he spotted One Sword Stroke.

This was the top tank of China server in his previous life, always going around with a full set of equipment that practically blinded the eyes of those who beheld him. He was currently carrying a triangular shield on his back. The familiar shape of an axe hung around his waist, Zhang Yang recognized it at first glance, it was the same axe as his [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe]!

From what Zhang Yang surmised, it could only mean that One Sword Stroke must have cleared the Centaur's Castle as well and had a 99% chance of having {Blast Wave}!

Beneath One Sword Stroke was a blood-red dire wolf, as large as lion, and looking absolutely feral. It even howled at the sky from time to time, the fur on its back bristling as it did so. Compared to his rather docile-looking Whitey, that dire wolf definitely looked far more intimidating!

Zhang Yang tried to focus on the dire wolf. Because One Sword Stroke had his profile hidden, his pet mount could not be observed as well.

"Zhan Yu?" One Sword Stroke also quickly focused his sight on Zhang

Yang. In Zhang Yang's team, two people carried shields but one had a MP bar while the other had a Rage bar, it was easy to tell them apart!

Zhang Yang who was riding Whitey, took a few steps forward and said, "One Sword Stroke?"

Both of them hid their profiles, but by instinct alone, both of them could pick out the other team's leader!

"Ha ha!" One Sword Stroke laughed happily and said, "How about we fight a battle?"

Zhang Yang also laughed and said, "The losing side, tear [Teleportation Scroll]s on the spot and leave right after resurrecting!"

One Sword Stroke answered without hesitation, "Deal!"

Nobody would just back down from a boss fight when faced with another party who had similar goals in mind. If the other team happened to kill the opposing team's tanks, that team would be crippled beyond recovery! Being of similar mindset, they both would adopt the same tactics if it came to a head-on battle.

"Singles or gang fights?" Zhang Yang simply asked.

"Let's make it simple and direct, single combat! The winner and loser would be clear!" One Sword Stroke was confident that he was going to win the battle -- it was the right mindset for a professional player to have. If the player lacked confidence in himself, he did not deserve to be called a professional player.

"Okay!"

Just as Zhang Yang was about to charge forward with Whitey, the cool Sun Xin Yu held him back and said, "Let me do this!" Her competitive spirit could be seen through her eyes, this lady simply will not deny herself and opportunity to pit her strength against professional players!

In his previous life, although Sun Xin Yu never joined any Professional League, she had assassinated numerous professional players in the China server! The Queen of the Shadow Dance title was obtained after she

gained a notorious reputation as a slayer of Professional players!

In his previous life, Sun Xin Yu and One Sword Stroke had battled three times in total, Sun Xin Yu successfully killed One Sword Stroke twice without any hitch, having slight trouble the third time but emerging victorious, nevertheless! However, assassinations and duels were different. Assassination often begin with the victim being caught off-guard and being killed off before they could recover! But duels were completely different. Both parties would be prepared and fully buffed in a head-on battle!

Moreover, when a dual-wielding Thief meets a high defense and damage absorbing Guardian, the Thief would already be in an unfavorable situation! Besides, Zhang Yang suspected One Sword Stroke's mount was a battle mount, just like his!

Although Zhang Yang could not determine the grade of that battle mount, it would stack up the odds against Sun Xin Yu. She had less than a 1% chance of winning!

Chapter 226: Utterly Flattened

Usually, the losing side would simply have the experience bar of their current level emptied out. Experience points could be regained by killing more monsters! But since this challenge carried the cost of losing a Yellow-Gold boss AND a main quest, Zhang Yang could not afford to let Sun Xin Yu go wild.

Knowing her, if Zhang Yang directly told Sun Xin Yu something like, "You are not his opponent, off you go.", this block of ice that took human form would definitely lose her temper!

Zhang Yang got around it by saying, "How about we decide the winner by the best of three between three representatives from each side?"

One Sword Stroke thought for a while and replied, "Okay! As long as I get to fight you, Zhan Yu, regardless of the other two battles!"

"Alright!"

On another side, Mountain Cleaver immediately said, "Boss, Zhan Yu doesn't seem so sure of you. He is probably using the other two battles as a safety net!"

"He he!"

Imperial Sky's people laughed mockingly. Besides their professional bootlicking skills, they made a point to show that One Sword Stroke constantly had their support! He was their pride and joy!

"Brother Zhan Yu, in order to ensure the fairness and to avoid the situation of sending ill-matching classes against each other, how about we send our fighters on the spot?" One Sword Stroke asked smiling slightly.

Zhang Yang nodded in agreement and then spoke in the party channel, "Ice cube, go for the first battle!"

Sun Xin Yu was slightly disgruntled as she actually wanted to fight One Sword Stroke. Zhang Yang wanted to prevent exactly that from happening! But she already said, "Let me do this". She was not the type to fall back from her words, according to her personality. However, she still glared at

Zhang Yang angrily.

"Brother Zhan Yu, let's start this!"

Both parties sent a player out.

Eventually Lone Desert Smoke sent out Sun Xin Yu, while Imperial Sky sent out a Thief named Blooming Ichor.

Zhang Yang thought for a while, trying to recall Blooming Ichor's identity. In his previous life, he was the main Thief in "Sky and Ocean Electronics" a Professional League battle team that was led by One Sword Stroke. Although he was never mentioned in the list of the strongest Thieves in China server, he was still the main Thief in "Sky and Ocean Electronics", the strongest battle team in the S-Class Professional League. He must not be underestimated!

Without wasting much time, both Thieves immediately used {Stealth}. The battlefield became deathly silent, the suspense almost suffocating! Battles between two Thieves usually played out in the form of a deadly hide-and-seek that could go on for half an hour, yet ending quickly within 10 seconds of action!

One minute, two minutes, five minutes, ten minutes, both of these Thieves had yet to show themselves yet, knowing the first one to slip up would mean instant death!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Brother One Sword Stroke, let's get started with the second battle! I hope we learn much from each other!"

"Okay!"

"Noob tank, let me do this! Let me do this!"

"Little Yang, let me shoot them to death!"

"Guild master, let me do this!"

"Guild master Zhan Yu, let me do this!"

All of them wanted to join the battle!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Evil Snow, you fight the

second battle!"

Han Ying Xue was caught by surprise as she was definitely a lazy person. She had slowly edged away from the crowd, planning to spectate silently. The last thing she expected was Zhang Yang asking her to fight a battle! She quickly shook her head and said, "I'm just a healer, getting into a duel is none of my business!"

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "It's ok, didn't you buy a {Putrefying Poison} skill book last few days ago? Just keep that DoT on your opponent, and keep refreshing it. All you have to do is to heal yourself in the meantime!"

It was really difficult to defeat Han Ying Xue with her current equipment unless the opponent struck really, really hard. Otherwise, with her immense healing capabilities, she would easily undo any damage she sustains! Of course, if she encountered {Destructive Smash}, she would be helpless! Obviously, the only Warrior in Imperial Sky's team -- One Sword Stroke could possibly possess such a skill. However, he would be fighting with Zhang Yang in the third battle so there was no way One Sword Stroke would be Han Ying Xue's opponent!

She may be a healer, but she was a super healer, and a super healer with super equipment would bulldoze over anyone else!

After discussing among themselves, both parties sent out a player from each party for the second battle.

Han Ying Xue versus Fire Fountain!

Fire Fountain was a Pyromancer. His equipment gleamed. Although he did not have a full set of set equipment, he had a Level 50 Gray-Silver staff on his hand. His magic attack had surpassed 1,300. He definitely had the best equipment there was!

However, they had not taken Han Ying Xue's equipment into consideration. It racked up her magic attack to 1,800, probably being the highest magic attack among all Spellcasters, globally!

The moment their fight commenced, Fire Fountain immediately

activated {Heart of Flame} and rapidly started casting {Explosive Flame}!

{Heart of Flame}: Increases Fire spells' damage by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool down time: 3 minutes.

{Explosive Flame}: Throws a huge fireball towards target and causes Fire damage equivalent to 300% of magic damage. Cast time: 2 seconds. Cool down time: 10 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

While Han Ying Xue immediately activated her accessory, [Magician's Brooch] to boost her magic attack to 2,500 and casted {Putrefying Poison} on Fire Fountain.

{Putrefying Poison}: Putrefies enemy with the power of darkness and causes Dark Abyss damage equivalent to 200% of magic damage within 15 seconds. This skill's effect cannot be stacked. Cool down time: 1 second. Distance: 30 meters.

After that, Han Ying Xue cast many healing skills on herself such as {Regeneration}, {Mending Prayers}, {Holy Shield} and {Brilliant Light}, where she completely ignored the existence of Fire Fountain. She did not even bother looking up at the fireballs that came flying at her face, she just kept on healing herself.

Fire Fountain nearly vomited blood to death as he watched Han Ying Xue! Fire Fountain was a professional player, Han Ying Xue should at least be fighting him with more finesse, such as constant movement, tactical distancing or interruption of his casting bar! She should at least use {Punishment Ray} on Fire Fountain! Yet, here she was casting healing spells on herself and buffing herself up before even paying attention to Fire Fountain, "fighting" as she would be a monster!

That's right, Han Ying Xue did not have any clue on PKing, but her healing was very potent. She did not have to do much except to heal herself as her opponent slowly nibbled away at her HP!

Two seconds later, a huge fireball flew from the tip of Fire Fountain's staff and struck Han Ying Xue!

'Damage absorb!'

That's right, {Holy Shield} simmered around Han Ying Xue. When she applied {Holy Shield} on herself, her 2,500 magic attack meant that she could absorb up to 5,000 damage points.

Thus, Fire Fountain needed another {Explosive Flame} to break through Han Ying Xue's {Holy Shield}!

Only now did Han Ying Xue realize that she could absorb damage with {Holy Shield}! She quickly changed her mind mid-heal and fired {Punishment Ray} at Fire Fountain.

Fire Fountain was even madder and thought to himself, "They sent such an idiot to fight me, are they looking down on me!?" He was embarrassed and furious.

‘-1,005!’

‘-3,723!’

The Han Ying Xue cast {Punishment Ray} on Fire Fountain, the first tick of {Putrefying Poison} occurred at the same time, taking at least 4,700 HP in total. He almost jumped out of his skin just then! His total HP was about 8,000. More than half of his HP had suddenly been hacked off, how could anyone remain composed after that?!

Oh my god, how much magic attack does this woman have, she's powerful!

‘-2,012!’

At the same time, his {Fireball} struck Han Ying Xue and finally broke her {Holy Shield}, causing damage.

{Fireball}: Casts a fireball and causes Fire damage equivalent to 200% of magic damage to target. Cast time: 2 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

‘+5,034!’

{Mending Prayers} immediately activated and fully recovered Han Ying Xue's HP.

Damn!

The top Priest in Imperial Sky was also capable of casting {Mending Prayers}. Based on that, Fire Fountain knew that it healed by an equivalent of 200% of the caster's magic damage. This only meant that his opponent's magic attack was over 2,500, it was almost double his!

Fire Fountain immediately used {Ice Barrier} to dispel {Putrefying Poison}'s effect and tried to create distance between himself and the crazy healer. He teleported in a blink of eye and reappeared 100 meters further. He hastily tried applying {Bandage} on himself.

When Han Ying Xue saw Fire Fountain running away, she chased after him, in a rare show of effort. You would have a higher chance of being hit by a meteorite than witness her go crazy like that.

However, by the time she got within range, Fire Fountain was already almost done using his Bandage. On top of that, he had the time to slug down one health recovery potion and regenerate an additional 3,000 HP.

Han Ying Xue did not realize that Fire Fountain had already dispelled her {Putrefying Poison}. So, she stood at one spot and started casting {Punishment Ray} like a stationary turret.

Fire Fountain was much more experienced in player versus player combat than Han Ying Xue was, with a wave of his hand, a blast of fire instantly struck Han Ying Xue, causing 1,450 damage to her. After that, he immediately stepped backwards and tried to keep his distance from Han Ying Xue.

{Fire Blast}: Uses fire to launch a blast to the target and causes Fire damage equivalent to 100% of magic damage. Cast time: Instant. Cool down time: 8 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

Han Ying Xue's casting bar for {Punishment Ray} was interrupted as he stepped out of her range

Han Ying Xue did not bother chasing after him and immediately starting casting healing spells to heal her own HP.

Fire Fountain quickly ran into the 30 meter attack range and started casting {Explosive Flame}!

If Han Ying Xue was more aware of the mechanics of the game, she would just need to take a step backwards to interrupt his casting, as they were both exactly 30 meters apart! Instead, she went on healing herself. When she saw Fire Fountain entering her {Punishment Ray}'s attack range, she started casting just that.

Fire Fountain was already done casting {Explosive Flame} and fired a huge fireball. He immediately stepped backwards after that.

‘-3,963!’

A huge bubble of damage text popped up over Han Ying Xue's head while her {Punishment Ray} casting bar was interrupted again. She quickly started casting her healing spells, {Mending Prayers}, {Holy Shield} and {Brilliant Light}.

Fire Fountain took a step forwards, used {Counter Magic} followed by {Fireball}!

{Counter Magic}: Immediately interrupts target's casting bar and renders target unable to cast related skills for the next 3 seconds. Cast time: Instant. Cool down time: 30 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

Han Ying Xue's casting bar for {Brilliant Light} was interrupted. At the same time, all her spells in the Holy tree started cooling down for 3 seconds. Thus, the only spell she had left was {Putrefying Poison} as it was under Dark Abyss tree.

Now only did Han Ying Xue realize that Fire Fountain had already dispelled her {Putrefying Poison} long ago. Since she could not cast any other spells other than {Putrefying Poison}, she went ahead and used it, out of a lack of choices rather than a calculated maneuver.

Two seconds later, Fire Fountain cast {Fireball} and hit Han Ying Xue.

‘Damage absorb!’

‘+3,602!’

{Holy Shield} absorbed {Fireball}'s damage while {Mending Prayers} regenerated Han Ying Xue's HP to full!

Fire Fountain was astounded, his powerful and long cool down skill {Heart of Flame} was used, {Counter Magic} and {Ice Barrier} which were vital skills have also been used were currently cooling down, yet Han Ying Xue's HP was full! On his end, he had 7,000HP left, and the DoT was already taking effect!

A dignified professional player was actually being forced against the ropes by a healer who had no clue about player combat!

Chapter 227: One Sword Stroke

Wei Yan Er was rolling on the floor, laughing. She was completely out of breath, and she leaned against Sun Xin Yu1, clutching her stomach as she continued laughing silently, her mouth twitching wordlessly.

On the contrary, the people of Imperial Sky had turned as white as snow. Some of them looked as though they were about to get sick!

Fire Fountain was regarded as being second only to One Sword Stroke, a masterful player whose looks could be compared to the pretty boy, Blooming Ichor! Having brought in by One Sword Stroke to become an irreplaceable asset of the party, not only was he superb in managing his damage output, he shone best in PK battles!

But for such a superb player to die by the hands of of an idiotic healer who does nothing but heal herself while leaving all the work to {Putrefying Poison}? Anyone's pride would be ripped to shreds!

Fire Fountain was still struggling to stay alive, constantly moving around the area while manipulating the 30 meter range rule, but Han Ying Xue had already suffered once and had learned from it. Currently all she did was to refresh the {Putrefying Poison} DoT on her opponent while keeping her HP constantly refilled!

‘-721!’

As the effect of the [Magician's Brooch] had already faded, Han Ying Xue reverted to her regular magic damage. The damage of {Putrefying Poison} which kicked in every three seconds had been reduced to 700 points, but 15 seconds was enough to inflict an approximate damage of 3600 on Fire Fountain.

{Putrefying Poison} kicked in once again. It didn't require any targeting at all on the part of the caster. Even if Fire Fountain ducked and roll, activated a 30 meter, or a 31 meter long ranged spell, nothing prevented the Poison from kicking in.

30 seconds later, the {Putrefying Poison} was triggered for one last time,

causing a damage of '-752!', Fire Fountain's final humiliating struggle to keep his last drop health points came to an end, and he crumpled, dead on the ground. A pair of Gray-Silver gloves fell to the ground which was instantly picked up by a member of the Imperial Sky. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue activated a {Brilliant Light}, her health back at its full state!

"Wow, cousin sister is mighty!" Wei Yan Er was still guffawing like a drunken old man.

Fatty Han and the rest were also showering her with endless praise. A healer killing anyone in battle was unheard of, and with full HP too, to add on to that.

Soul Striker of the Imperial Sky quickly revived Fire Fountain. Their party members were looking sickly, avoiding eye contact. Fire Fountain looked like one of the spectre-type monsters. He was dying for another round with Han Ying Xue. It had really been too embarrassing and depressing for him to lose like that!

Fire Fountain is a person who can accept failures, but to lose to Han Ying Xue in such manner, he wanted to bang his head against the wall just thinking of it!

But he also knew that even if he was given another chance, he would still be poisoned to death, it was inevitable as the difference in magic damage between the two of them was just too much. Furthermore, the opponent was a terrific healer, with loads of HP restoring skills! He could not help himself but to suspect, that even if both of them had the same magic damage output, would he stand a chance after all?

The second round had ended, but the two players from the first round were still playing hide and seek with each other!

One Sword Stroke stepped forward atop his Battle Wolf, and he said, "Brother Zhan Yu, let's get started!"

Zhang Yang laughed evenly, riding on his Whitey and said, "Bring it on, let us have a good fight!"

The fellow members of the Imperial Sky had their uttermost faith in One

Sword Stroke at securing his win of this battle at the beginning, but after seeing Zhang Yang producing a mount of his own, they figured that the opposition also possessed a Battle Mount. It diminished their hopes, but One Sword Stroke was still their leader!

"It isn't capturing a Gray-Silver battle mount, Zhan Yu's Battle Mount must be a Green-Copper grade, or even a Black-Steel! Can't you see how lethargic that white bear is? It's such a lazy animal!" the gang tried to comfort themselves, coming up with whatever reason they could come up with.

The two opponents locked eyes, sizing each other up. Nobody moved.

In a short period of 3 seconds, Zhang Yang initiated the first attack of the battle. Whitey let loose a loud roar, charging straight towards One Sword Stroke.

20 meters, 15 meters, 10 meters!

{Wild Charge}!

Whitey was charging like a stream of meteorite, rushing at the Battle Wolf at blinding speed!

In an instant, the body of the Battle Wolf suddenly flew into action. A miniature sonic boom formed as exploded off the ground at high speed, moving 3 meters to the side, evading the charge attack of Whitey!

"Impressive!" Zhang Yang was praising his opponent from the bottom of his heart. Although both of them did not have any knowledge on the attributes of their opposition's Battle Mounts, they were able to obtain certain extent of understanding by comparing the Battle Mounts to the monsters they were apparently derived from. Therefore, One Sword Stroke had deduced that Whitey possessed some sort of {Charge} skill, and had used 'Agility of the Wild' to counter it.

[Agility of the Wild]: Increases movement speed by 50%, last for 5 seconds. Cool down time: 30 seconds. Consume: 20 focus points.

This was a universal skill, possessed by any wolf type, leopard type, tiger type and lion type monsters!

Both of them wielded their battle axes and charged forward!

Missed!

Missed!

Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke were both currently mounted, so they avoided each other's attack at a greatly increased speed! Normal attacks were easily telegraphed and anticipated. Zhang Yang for instance must pull his axe back before he can swing it out in an attack!

Weapons with a longer time interval of attacking will be far slower and cumbersome, as their wielders needed to gain inertia by swinging such weapons back before they could be swung towards the enemy! On the contrary, lighter and shorter weapons such as daggers can stab a person in the blink of an eye, without any warning signs!

An attack from a heavy weapon was easy to read, with the movements basically being exaggerated! For Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke, dodging enemy players' normal attacks were just a walk in the park!

Everything came down to their respective in-game skills now!

Skills had no signs that gave them away prior to activation, as long as all the criteria to activate a skill were ready, players could just activate them and use their skills. Speed, that was one of the many advantages of using a skill! Some Skills even have an auto targeting system, making it impossible for players to dodge even if they intended to!

{Blood Rage}!

Instantly boosted with 30 rage points, Zhang Yang now 36 rage points in total.

One Sword Stroke had realized that Zhang Yang was definitely a master level player, as evidenced by how he evaded his normal attack, so he too immediately activated his {Blood Rage}.

The two guild leaders were on a collision course once again.

{Block}! +30 Rage points.

{Block}! +30 Rage points.

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

With both of them activating {Block} at the same instant, they successfully defended themselves. The reflective damage from {Block} on the other hand, was like a gnat trying to penetrate their defenses! Both players made the decision not to activate {Shield Bash} as the damage would be negated nevertheless!

The sheer speed of their mounts had sent them on an impasse, and they broke off, heading in opposite directions!

What an opponent!

With both parties know that the other had {Block}, they used {Cripple Defense} which not only consumed a negligible amount of rage points and only had one second of cool down to trick their opponent into using {Block}.

Shoof, both of them circled around to face each other again, and similar to jousting knights, they charged at each other again.

{Blast Wave}!

{Blast Wave}!

The similarity of their tactics was eerie. Both of them had been sent into stunned states. As the moment passed however, Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke both used {Warrior's Will} to recover, and they once again charged towards each other.

‘-4600!’ Zhang Yang ‘s {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

‘-2040!’ Zhang Yang’s {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-3508!’ One Sword Stroke’s {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

‘-0!’ One Sword Stroke’s {Force Strike}!

The differences between skills and equipment of the two had been revealed immediately!

Zhang Yang had a defense of 920 and a damage absorption attribute of

930, while One Sword Stroke only had a Gray-Silver shield, a defense of 600 and a damage absorption attribute of 600! Furthermore, Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} to ignore another 300 defense!

One Sword Stroke was shocked! The superiority of his opponent's equipment had exceeded his expectations!

Turning their respective mounts around once again, they charged!

The bear and the wolf passed by each other, but there was something different happening this time round! Zhang Yang suddenly made a sharp U-turn, demonstrating masterful control of the bear, following the tail of One Sword Stroke!

How, how did he do that?

Spectators from both sides were all stunned speechless! Just like real life, when a large object carrying a lot of momentum is stopped abruptly, it must then pause to regain its balance before heading in another direction. However, Zhang Yang had immediately turned a complete 180 degrees, as smoothly as a water stream, it was almost magical to look at!

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely, that was a specially designed skill -- {Backspin Step} -- just for Battle Mounts. Simply put, it does magical things to his inertia! This is a skill that all ground-based Battle Mounts must learn. However, in his past life, players would only discover skill half a year from now on, eventually becoming a staple part of Battle Mounted combat!

Tailing the ass of One Sword Stroke, Zhang Yang immediately pulled out his axe and started swinging, while Whitey could only use one of its thick and sturdy paws to slash at the rear of the Battle Wolf's leg.

One Sword Stroke was racked between shock and intrigue at that moment, as he could not comprehend how Zhang Yang had managed to stick to his ass in such a manner! Still, there was a time and place for everything. All he could do was to focus on shaking Zhang Yang off his ass! But no matter where he turned, where he feinted, he still could not get rid of Zhang Yang! During the entire time, his graciously offered back was being hacked at!

After being sliced and diced by Zhang Yang for over 20 seconds, the health points of One Sword Stroke had sharply decreased from 19,000 points to only 5000 points. Finally, his pet mount's {Agility of the Wild} had cooled down. He quickly activated it, and with a shoof, he finally managed to leap forward a great distance, getting away from Zhang Yang's tailgating!

{Wild Charge}!

10 meters away from One Sword Stroke, Whitey instantly caught up. Checkmate!

One Sword Stroke did not have eyes on the back of his head. Under normal circumstances, he could have evaded the charge. A sudden slam from a certain white bear stunned him for a full second.

{Shield Wall}!

{Berserker's Heal}!

'+4992!'

One Sword Stroke was finally forced to activate his life-saving skills, but the negative effect of the {Destructive Smash} had reduced his healing effect by 75%!

The members of Imperial Sky still harbored hope that their great leader would still best his counterpart. But as the battle progressed, their faces were ashen white. It wasn't a duel. It was a predator toying with its prey. Their glorious leader, One Sword Stroke was being toyed around like a cat playing around with a half-dead rat!

... this Zhan Yu, was the real deal! Their guildmaster, who could easily out maneuver them to their deaths without taking a single hit was actually tasting his own medicine now? This was really astonishing!

Slice and dice!

Zhang Yang did not hold back at all. He finished off his prey in no time at all.

The Battle Wolf wailed for a final moment, before instantly turning into

a stream of blood-colored light which streamed into One Sword Stroke's backpack. One Sword Stroke himself crumpled to the ground with an audible 'Pak', and he stayed dead on the ground. A pair of silver boots popped out of his corpse, quietly lying right beside its dead owner.

Well, it cannot be helped. Zhang Yang possessed the experience in terms of controls, tactics and awareness that exceeded even the existence of the game. He had several years of headstart. Furthermore, his equipment and skills also outclassed his opponent's! If he did not manage to take out his opponent cleanly and easily, he should be embarrassed of himself!

It was another loss!

The members of Imperial Sky were crestfallen. Now, they only could ask for Blooming Ichor to try bringing credit to them by scoring a point, in order to avoid scoring a 'duck egg' (zero) against three, losing in a manner they will not be able to accept!

However, even that was too much to ask for!

Suddenly!

The shadow of Blooming Ichor was suddenly revealed from his stealth state, but there was a bunch of stars spinning around above his head, it was a stun state after having been {Ambush}!

Sun Xin Yu had also revealed herself right after that, consecutively wielding her two daggers with murderous intent. She carved out petals of blood from Blooming Ichor's back. Right after {Ambush} ended, she activated {Kidney Shot} and continued to slice and dice without any signs of stopping!

The health bar plummeted straight down, and in just 10 seconds, Blooming Ichor lay dead!

At the same moment, Soul Striker had just resurrected One Sword Stroke! {Resurrection} had a 5 minute cool down, but they could only rely on other players with {Redemption} to rescue the others.

Three battles, three loses!

The members of the Imperial Sky were putting up their dull face, as they did not foresee the outcome, not at all! To lose in such a bad manner!

One Sword Stroke indeed possessed the characteristic of a leader of one of the strongest parties in China Region, as they would have been in another future! He smiled brightly and said, "Brother Zhan Yu certainly lives up to his reputation! I have learned much, I hope to learn more in the future! Let's move!"

He tore a teleportation scroll up in that instant, without any signs of sloppiness. He indeed possessed the aura of an Ace!

As the remaining members of the Imperial Sky tore up their teleportation scrolls one after another, they gazed determinedly upon Lone Desert Smoke. They will have their rematch soon!

Shoof shoof shoof, as streams of white light passed through, members of the Imperial Sky were all teleported away from the scene.

"Cheh! So that's all they were capable of, daring to claim being the second strongest guild in China Region!" Fatty Han spoke in contempt.

"That's right! Absolutely right!" Wei Yan Er nodded to express her agreement, "Noob tank is really a bad boy, not letting me join a fight when there is one!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Fine, fine, you will be the first to go up front when there is a fight in the future!" Wei Yan Er was instantly appeased.

Looking at the spot where One Sword Stroke disappeared, Zhang Yang could not help but admire the man, as he thought to himself, One Sword Stroke had remained composed throughout the entire course of events, never revealing his thoughts or intentions. Although he had suffered a disastrous loss, but he had not been shaken by it, he was indeed a strong opponent!

What advantage Zhang Yang had over other players were his additional five years of experience and understanding towards the game. But with time set in motion, that difference will only grow shorter and shorter!

Other players will quickly improve with time, while he was highly limited in his room for learning!

Sun Xin Yu walked back up to him, giving Zhang Yang a scornful stare.

Zhang Yang smiled a little and said, "No one is bothering us now, let's clean out the remaining monsters and get ready to battle the boss!"

The gang was divided into two teams. With Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight leading each of the teams respectively, they quickly rounded up the monsters from both sides, clearing out every single monster on the third floor of the altar. It was fortunate that the size of the altar was just like the size of a football². In just half an hour, the two teams had already met up with each other halfway through their routes. All that remained were the boss and 10 elite grade worshippers around it!

"Starlight, you shall be in charge of kiting those 10 elite monsters, will that be a problem for you?" Zhang Yang asked Endless Starlight.

"No problemo!" Endless Starlight answered, pounding his chest.

"Alright, when the battle begins, I will kite the boss, Starlight will lead the monsters away. After you guys take them out, come help me! Show him your worst!"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. We are aware that Sun Xin Yu was supposed to be engaged in her own battle against Blooming Ichor at that point, but it is what it says. We simply translated it.

2. Size of a football: Author is trying to emphasize the size is very small, in a hyperbolic way.

Chapter 228: Lord of Flames Arcel

"Charge!"

Zhang Yang let Endless Starlight go ahead, allowing him to acquire the initial aggro of all monsters, giving him the opportunity to kite the elites away.

"Blasphemer, die!" The 10 Flame Acolytes stood up one after another, pointing their magic staff straight at Endless Starlight and began the chanting of their Fire Ball spells. Meanwhile, the boss swung his gigantic hammer at Endless Starlight.

{Sacred Protection}!

Endless Starlight quickly activated his 'Invincible' skill and rushed straight at the monsters, activating his {Devotion}. He began swinging his Battle Hammer around to begin kiting the monsters.

Zhang Yang went straight up with a {Wild Charge} to engage with the boss. By activating his {Blood Rage}, he instantly gained 30 points of rage points. With one normal slash, followed by a {Cripple Defense} and a {Horizontal Sweep}, he swiftly built up the aggro value.

Boom!

A stream of fire wave spewed out from the body of the Lord of Flames Arcel. It spread outwards in all directions, and everyone was hit with a damage of '-1000', the radius of the effective range was at least 40 meters!

'Ding! Lord of Flames Arcel has unleashed {Flame Gush}!'

Zhang Yang quickly reacted and kited the boss to one side of the area, distancing themselves away from the gang.

Boom!

Another stream of fire wave gushed out from the body of the Lord of Flames Arcel. Because Zhang Yang had already moved a certain distance away from the gang, this time around, only Fatty Han, Daffodil Daydream and Perfumed Water were inflicted by the damage effect.

"Perfumed Water, come heal me, Witchy Snow, go heal Starlight!" Zhang Yang commanded. The focus fire of Fire Balls from 10 elite Flame Acolytes was really terrifying. Only a super healer like Han Ying Xue would be able to prevent the tank from turning into a crisp!

Sun Xin Yu and the others immediately activated their AOE attacks, trying their best to clear out all the Acolytes in the shortest possible period of time, with the intention to let Han Ying Xue get back to Zhang Yang as soon as possible.

Other than Snow Seeker and Perfumed Water, others had already completed their respective level 50 profession quests with perfect scores, they were all equipped with Yellow-Gold weapons, while the tanks had been rewarded with Yellow-Gold shields. Therefore, the whole party dealt a ridiculous amount of damage, and within a minute, they had managed to take out all 10 elite Acolytes without a hitch!

The boss was slowly met with an increasing number of attackers as the party switched their sights on him.

"Damnit, the fire resistance of this boss is really high!" Daffodil Daydream attacked with {Explosive Flame}, a powerful attack that should be dealing 6000 damage, but on this target, that value had been halved, almost making her weep.

"You've had your fun with that gigantic tree in the afternoon, be thankful that you're not strengthening this firey creature, feeding it with more fire!"

However, in place of Daffodil Daydream's penalized attacks, Snow Seeker was dealing double her usual damage! Being an ice type caster, she was a hazard to beings of fire. Her damage already overtook Zhang Yang's damage, even while being supplemented by his Battle Mount!

"### ¥ —*!" as the Lord of Flames Arcel spoke in a language that the human tongue could never replicate. Time and again, his gigantic hammer slammed down on Zhang Yang. The melee damage of the boss was not particularly high, only in the 7000 range. However, his attacks were accompanied by licks of flames, every attack taking away a total of 8000+

from Zhang Yang's health points.

{Flame Gush} was being unleashed every single second, burning everyone up considerably. Other than Zhang Yang, every other player was constantly being struck with 1000 damage every second. Even though Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water were super healers, they had their limits.

"Starlight, Daffodil! Remove yourselves from the AoE area of the boss, let's make it easier for our healers!" Zhang Yang improvised.

Although Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were not willing to do so, they understood their shortcomings. A tank would be unable to dish out much damage anyway, while a Pyromancer wasn't much use against a Fire element boss.

With two players leaving the battle, the situation was momentarily stabilized as the healing efforts of the two ladies evened out with the damage.

After Zhang Yang had 'combined' with his mount, his health bar had gone straight up to 30,000. As a result, every attack of the boss only would slice away a quarter of his total health points! The more hitpoints a tank possessed, the larger the margin for error was for the healers!

Compared to the Demonic Treant King, the Lord of Flames Arcel was obviously much more easier to handle. All that they needed was a tank who can perpetually survive his onslaught, with enough healing.

80%, 60%, 40%... The health points of the boss slowly went down.

Fatty Han was so thankful for the simplicity of the battle, so he spoke up, "Finally, a boss that's not batshit insane!" He could still remember clearly how the Demonic Treant King had flattened his prostate figure back then in the lake!

"Yeah!" Likewise, as they were reminded about the Treant boss, everyone nodded to express their agreement.

Actually this boss was a pushover only due to the fact that these players had top-of-the-range equipment! If the tank was to wear slightly inferior equipment, the boss could have inflicted over 14,000 damage a hit, killing

a player instantly!

30%, 20%, 10%!

It purely depended on the equipment when engaging this a boss that relied on sheer damage values such as Lord of Flames Arcel. As long as the equipment reaches the standard requirement, it would be easy battling this boss. On the contrary, the party will be annihilated repetitively if their equipment did not meet the standard requirement. There were no additional tactics required for this battle.

In less than 6 minutes, the large body mass of the boss crumbled to the ground, its flames extinguished. All that remained of it was a single, crimson sphere the size of a human head, which continued to burn weakly.

Zhang Yang swiftly jumped down from his mount to pick up that object. The moment he touched it, he was inflicted with 1000 damage consecutively.

[Molten Core of the Flame King] (Quest item)

Item description: Hot! Hot! Hot!

He quickly shoved the object into his backpack, and with this, the three main quest items were now gathered!

"Noob tank, hurry up, where are my boots!" Wei Yan Er ran up to, egging Zhang Yang to look at the loots.

As Zhang Yang looked through and picked up the loots, picking the Yellow-Gold equipment pieces first, before distributing them out to the others according to their professions.

Unfortunately, the last piece of his set -- [Furious Boots] -- did not appear.

Other than the four equipment set pieces, there were two more non set equipment pieces, a melee-damage output necklace and a tanker's ring.

Zhang Yang took the [Ring of Raging Blaze]. Unfortunately, he must wait until he was level 60 before he can equip it.

After distributing all items, everyone transported themselves back to White Jade City. As it was already 12 a.m, they should have been sleeping by now!

They did not communicate throughout the night, and the next day in the morning after his training, Zhang Yang logged onto the game, bringing along the [Ring of Raging Blaze] to identify it.

[Ring of Raging Blaze]

Vitality: +50

Strength: +50

Equip: Absorbs 58 damage points when attacked.

Level required: 60

Before even he attempted to leave the shop, Wei Yan Er and Han YingXue had logged into the game as well, holding him down to ask him for another favor in identifying the equipment.

Furthermore, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream had also settled the sponsorship deal with Silky Soft Holdings: Every month, Silky Soft Holdings would provide Lone Desert Smoke with an amount of 1,000,000. Taking down a First Clear title for dungeons would reward each of the party member 100,000 dollars, clearing a Speed Challenge once earns every member of the party 10,000 dollars respectively.

Up to this point, Lone Desert Smoke had began transitioning into a semi-profession guild. Zhang Yang had reorganized the setting of the guild's membership levels, there are now three main levels in total.

The first level, comprised of the Guildmaster, the vice guildmaster and a few game-masters, they would all be paid with fixed salaries of 20,000.

The second level was made up of the core players of the guild, which were further divided into another five levels of classification, with their respective monthly salary ranging from 1000-10000 according to their level of classification. In addition, for players who had full-time jobs could still earn commissions ranging from 1000-3000 as long as they can

complete a number of collection quests every month. The more you work for the guild, the more you earn from it.

The third level was made up of regular members of the guild. The players in this level of classification will not receive any salary or payment.

But as what Zhang Yang mentioned earlier on, as long as any guild members contribute or perform outstandingly in dungeons, they would all have the opportunity to be promoted as one of the core players of the guild! Also, the core players cannot be slacking off. They could be demoted if their performance is ever lacking!

With solid cash rewards to instigate them, the members of the guild will surely be motivated to do their parts for the guild! In other semi-profession guilds, the sponsorship money would be divided among the game-masters, with only a small amount of money left for the lower ranked players. On the other hand, the benefits Zhang Yang provided to the game-masters weren't that high, most of the sponsorship money was being spent on the core players of the guild.

Such an unconventional system gained the favor of his core members, as they did not feel like they were being used as tools by the game-masters of the guild!

Over the time, the reputation of the Lone Desert Smoke had shot up by a lot. With such generous treatment given to their guild members, it drew quite a number of professional players to ally themselves into the guild! It was just a game anyway, if joining Lone Desert Smoke could earn them a stable salary, why not do it for fun then?

Zhang Yang had his merchandize shop to support him, by dividing the profit earned from selling equipment among party members, each of them earned tens of thousands of dollars on monthly basis. They barely needed to use the sponsorship money for themselves. Furthermore, after securing new territories in future, the teleportation gates under their control would grant them fortune beyond any comprehension!

Having an additional five years of experience into the game, Zhang Yang had a vast headstart ahead of everyone else! By just investing a small part

of his fortune, he had the loyalty of the entire guild secured! After capturing a territory, it was imperative for a guild to be of one heart, fueled by its members, united in a common goal. Such unity would lead a guild to greatness!

As the number of level 50 players were getting more and more day by day, the sales for the [Solid Iron Bar] had reached another level. The same could be said for the sales of his [Fire Resistance Potion]s. The revenue of the Little Merchandize Shop had reached a total of 1,700,000 gold pieces by yesterday!

Zhang Yang smiled contentedly as he used the [City Order] to teleport to Tukulo Fortress. He summoned Whitey and headed straight for the Flatlands of the Passing to complete Princess Serena's quest.

It was really inconvenient, not having a mount that could fly! He had to circle around mountains and hills, look for different routes to cross rivers.... More than two hours later, Zhang Yang had finally arrived at the Twilight Hills.

Two days had passed, all the monsters that were spread out everywhere over the hills and dales had all respawned. As Zhang Yang was in a hurry to turn in the quest, he simply rode through them all without stopping. Whenever the number of the monsters became too much for him to handle, he would activate his {Shadow of the Void} to escape battles.

After sitting down and having some snacks to replenish his health back to full state, Zhang Yang continued to charge forward like an unstoppable train. After waiting for his {Shadow of the Void} to cool down, he charged through and used it again whenever he deemed fit.

Having used up all his evasive skills, and being surrounded by monsters, he could only obediently kill the monsters before him to open up a path forward.

Still, the {Shadow of the Void} had helped Zhang Yang save about an hour and a half. Half an hour later, Zhang Yang arrived at the deepest coffin chamber of the tomb cave.

The miserable necromancer had not respawned yet, and the beautiful

sleeping princess was still lying quietly on the platform made of stone, waiting for the Dragon Slayer to come to the rescue.

Chapter 229: Reclaiming the throne!

After giving the princess a few gentle slaps, there was no response. No longer surprised, Zhang Yang let out a sigh, it looked like he had to deliver a 'True Love's Kiss' once again.

"Uh --- "

Serena uttered a low moan, as the mirage of hers once again projected out in the air, standing right before Zhang Yang. She looked at Zhang Yang and asked, "Warrior, why haven't you departed yet?"

Woman, you underestimated me far too much!

Zhang Yang took out the [Molten Core of the Flame King] and the other two quest items, placing them on the floor one after another and said, "My princess, I have already collected everything as you requested!"

Serena looked at all three of the quest items. Her face broke into a surprised smile. "Warrior, your bravery and your strength far exceeded my expectations! Thank you. With these ingredients, I can finally create a Soul Vessel!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Soul Vessel, acquired 200,000 experience points! Time to completion: 2 days, quest evaluation: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have acquired the reward: Furious Boots!'

Zhang Yang immediately looked into his backpack, all he could see was a pair of boots that shone gold, lying there quietly in one corner of his backpack!

[Furious Boots] (Yellow-Gold, armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +144

Strength: +58

Equip: Absorbs 116 damage when attacked.

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 60

The set is complete! Zhang Yang was greatly pleased.

"Warrior, I shall be casting a spell to create the vessel, please protect me from every form of interruption!" Serena spoke rather sternly.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "My princess, you have nothing to worry about!"

The mirage of Serena opened up both of her hands and began chanting an agonizingly convoluted incantation. Shoof shoof shoof, streams of colorful lights were emitted from both of her hands. All three quest items began floating up one by one, circling around the mirage of Serena. They begin picking up speed, and soon they were a blur around her.

A very long magic progress bar appeared right on top of Serena's head. Zhang Yang estimated that it would probably take about 2 minutes for her to finish her incantation.

Although Serena had mentioned the possibility of being interrupted, the surroundings remained quiet and peaceful. There was not even a sign of any monsters spawning. Zhang Yang stood idly, as he got bored watching Serena trying to complete her spell.

Shoof! A bright flash of light beamed out, and gradually dimmed down. Serena had finally completed her creation. A small box the size of a palm appeared on the ground. The box was crimson in colour, composed of a material unlike any other. The surface of the box was lined with countless runes.

The mirage of Serena revealed her exhaustion, as she asked weakly, "Warrior, the vessel for the souls has been completed! The time is now, please bring it into the palace and slay the undead impostor, and activate the Soul Vessel to acquire the other half of my soul! Then, you must bring the Soul Vessel back to me immediately. With a completed soul, I will have enough power to remove myself from the seal!"

‘Ding! Princess Serena has given you a new quest: Retrieve the soul, do you accept? This quest will be linked to the main story's quest. Complete

the main story quest to obtain a luxurious reward!'

Accept!

Still, running into the palace to kill the princess?

Zhang Yang could not help but feel a chill down his spine, knowing that the palace was filled with guards and magic casters crawling all over the place, all level 80 and above! For a little warrior like him who had yet to even achieve level 60, it would be like sending a goat into the lion's den! Let's not talk about assassinating the princess first, getting through the first door of the palace was already a huge problem!

"My princess, the palace is strictly guarded, I am afraid that I cannot even get close to that imposter!" Zhang Yang believed that the game developers would not create an unbeatable quest, so he decided to pry.

Serena nodded her head and said, "Very good, you did not just recklessly charge into the palace without a plan! Bring this jade pendant along with you, it is a token of my authority, you should be able to enter the palace without facing any obstacles!" She pointed at a jade pendant that was very exquisitely crafted located around her waist, and said, "Also, remember this incantation. Use it to awaken the other half of my soul and aid you in slaying the undead!"

"An Tu Lama Ke Ni Da..." Serena began to read aloud an incantation that involved a lot of tongue twisters.

Zhang Yang repeatedly practiced the incantation aloud many times. It took a while before he got it memorized.

"Brave warrior, please act swiftly, the further we delay, the more damage that undead being would cause to the kingdom!" Right after Serena finished her sentence, her mirage flickered before shattering.

Zhang Yang took the jade pendant from the waist of Serena before tearing a teleportation scroll up.

He now had the symbol of her authority, he had an incantation up his sleeve, but who the heck would know how strong the imposter was! If she stalled him long enough, the guards would definitely come to tear him up

into shreds!

He decided to gather more men, ready to charge in with a force of a thunderbolt to blow the imposter into pieces, before using the City Order of the Tukulo Fortress to shake off his pursuers and leisurely head straight for the Flatlands of the Passing to turn in the quest!

After setting his mind onto it, Zhang Yang immediately contacted all players with the best equipment in the entire guild, commanding them to travel back to the city using teleportation scrolls and gather at the entrance of the palace.

"Noob tank, are we going to revolt with sticks in arms and slay the fatuous and self-indulgent ruler and then flee to Liangshan County?" Wei Yan Er was shouting in excitement.

"... Little girl, you are changing your tastes again, watching {{Water Margin}} now I see!"

"I've long heard about the infamous Zhang Yu, spoken widely in hotels. But I see now that the person does not match the rumour, what a shame!" Wei Yan Er giggled, but she suddenly changed her gaze upon Zhang Yang and said, "Noob tank, you still haven't told us yet, are we going to slay the Emperor himself?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Not the Emperor himself, but the princess herself!"

"Oh dear me, you really don't have a soft spot for fair ladies!" Han Ying Xue gave a straight sigh.

"That's right, instead of killing the princess, why not nab her and make her your mistress of the fortress!"

Daffodil Daydream was much more serious and got down to business -- "Zhan Yu, the guards in the palace are all level 80 elites, they are so much more powerful than Yellow-Gold bosses that we faced recently. It will already be extremely difficult for us to break into the palace, let alone assassinate the princess!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Yes, under normal circumstances, it is

impossible to break into the palace! Still, these are rather abnormal circumstances! This is actually a main quest that I received, we have a special item that would allow us to enter the palace and go straight for the princess!"

Just a while later, everyone in the party had finally gathered at the entrance of the palace.

"Let's go!" with Zhang Yang leading them on the front, the party moved forward.

"Hold it right there! This is a restricted area in the palace, civilians are forbidden from entering, remove yourselves at once!" The eight guards by the entrance of the palace instantly drew their blades, blazing with murderous aura. These guards were all level 80 elite grade units. Any one of them would wipe the floor with the entire party.

Zhang Yang took out the jade pendant that he had acquired from Serena and flashed it before him, speaking in an arrogant manner, "I am the leader of Princess Serena's spy squad, instructed by the princess herself to have an audience with her. You dare to deny me entry? Have you gotten tired of carrying your heads upon your shoulders?"

The face expressions of all eight guards suddenly changed, and they hastily stuttered, "Sir, please forgive us, we did not know of your identity, we apologize for any offense made! However, we have responsibilities as well, we must inspect the authenticity of the jade pendant!"

Zhang Yang handed the jade pendant over to the guards. After the eight guards had inspected it thoroughly, they respectfully returned it back to Zhang Yang and said, "Sir, we meant no offense!"

Wei Yan Er laughed out loud and said, "Noob tank, you really are good at acting!"

Zhang Yang waved his hand and said, "Move out!"

"Sir ---" suddenly, one of the guards stood up front and stopped them, and said, "I am afraid that entering the palace with this many people is not appropriate!"

"Hmph! This is the direct order of the princess, you dare to defy the authority of the princess herself?" Zhang Yang tried his best at earning an Oscar.

"We dare not! We dare not!" the eight guards bent over while shaking their heads.

Zhang Yang then simply said, "One of you come forth, quickly bring us to the princess, now!"

"Yes sir! Yes!" the eight guards stared at each other, before one of them stepped out and led the gang forward.

"We actually managed to get everyone in?" Fatty Han whispered joyfully.

The gang followed the NPC moving forward, and as they were moving forward, they encountered many layers of security, but as long as Zhang Yang shoved Serena's jade pendant in their faces, they proceeded without any obstacle. After just a short while, the party had arrived at the deepest spot of the palace, at the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna.

This was the bedroom of Princess Serena, named after her nickname -- 'The Star and Lunar Princess'!

"You can return to your post now!" Zhang Yang waved his hand at the guard that led them here.

"Yes, sir!" that NPC immediately turned around and left.

The Royal Chamber of Star and Luna was styled in European inspired architecture, with 24 huge pillars supporting the whole large palace. Looking from afar, they could see a lady in a fancy palace dress, sitting on a throne. The chamber was empty, with only a dozen guards guarding the entrance of the chamber.

"Who's there, who dares trespass the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna to disturb the princess, kneel on all fours now!" A general wearing a golden armor pulled out his sword and stopped Zhang Yang and the others by their way forward, standing in an imposing, powerful stance.

[Captain of the Guards, Rhodus Ryan] (Yellow-Gold leader, Humanoid

Creature)

Level: 80

HP:???

Defense:???

Zhang Yang slammed the jade pendant which was given by Serena right onto the face of the captain and snarled angrily, "I am the princess's secret guard, who are you to be threatening me?"

The poor NPC was immediately shaken from head to toe. After measuring the pendant with his own eyes intently, he quickly returned the jade pendant back to Zhang Yang. He had his head bowed down, with both of his hands holding the pendant up to Zhang Yang, saying, "I was not aware of your identity, please forgive me!"

"You and your men can remove yourselves away from here now, what I have to say are only for her ears!" Zhang Yang continued his ploy.

"Sir, I am afraid that does not go...according to procedures?" Rhodus Ryan had doubt on his face.

Zhang Yang immediately raged on and said, "You dare to defy the order of the princess?"

Rhodus Ryan turn his head towards Princess Serena who was sitting quietly in the sacred chamber, he revealed a fearful expression on his face. Ever since the princess had come back from her expedition three years ago, she had become a totally different person, known for striking her guards dead on a whim!

He instantly bent over and said, "As you wish, Sir!"

With a wave of his hand, Rhodus Ryan and his subordinates immediately retreated

And now, the only thing left was the final blow!

*

Translator's Thoughts

TL Notes:

1. Liangshan County (Chinese: 梁山县; pinyin: Liángshān Xiàn) is a county in Shandong province, China, where many individuals who revolted against their rulers and stayed hidden there for their own safety. The area is the setting for the classic novel the {{Water Margin}}.

Chapter 230: The Princess and the Impostor

"Little Yang, you really know how to act it out!" Fatty Han laughed out loudly.

Zhang Yang was beside himself in nervous excitement, smiling himself silly. With a wave of his hand, he led the gang into the sacred chamber, facing the undead imposter of Princess Serena.

[Serena, Princess of the White Jade Kingdom] (Holy, Humanoid creature)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Phew! The gang took a deep breath in, a Holy grade boss, what is this madness? The highest grade of bosses in {{God's Miracle}} is the Celestial grade, the grade right below the Celestial grade is the Ascended grade, and the grade right below the Ascended grade is the Holy grade!

Following the Holy Grade in descending order were the Ethereal grade, Mythical grade, and Violet-Platinum grade before reaching the Yellow-Gold grade! This was not just a difference of one or two levels, it was actually a tens-of-thousands-kilometers-long kind of difference!

The boss could probably wipe out their entire party without lifting a finger!

So how do they kill it?

"Who goes there? Who dares to trespass into my sacred chamber?" Serena was sitting high on her throne, one hand holding on her sweet cheek, staring at them scornfully with her Phoenix eyes, "Guards! Guards - --"

Zhang Yang stepped out, laughing boldly, as his gang lined up behind him. He said, "Undead scum, your play is over! Just show yourself already!"

With a slight change in her facial expression, Serena stood up abruptly from her throne, emitting such an oppressive aura that the gang had to take a few steps back. This was a special attribute; a 'pressurizing oppression' that only high graded bosses would possess.

"Puny creatures, you can actually see my true form?"

"An Tu Lama Ke Ni Da..." Zhang Yang began chanting the incantation that had been taught to him by Serena.

Boom!

An invisible shock wave gushed emanated from "Serena's" chest. Gong gong gong! Like pieces of tiles on that were giving way as they tried to contain an explosion from within, several pieces of....stuff, shot out of her body, clouding the air with dust!

"What, no --- what is this!" Serena's composure had broken for once, "I already sealed you, how can you be awake! No, go back in! Go back!"

The gang stared, bedazzled, as seven colors of lights protruded out of her body, forming a shape of a human, which slowly detached itself from the main body. A head, a neck, two hands, a waist, two legs! Instantly, a shadowy figure that looked exactly like Serena floated between Serena and party in mid-air.

At that moment, the name that had labeled Princess Serena's head begun to change.

[Witch Spectre Angelina] (Yellow-Gold leader, Undead)

Level: 68

HP: 20,000,000

Defense: 1200

The shadow figure that looked exactly the same as Serena had a name right above her head, 'Shadow of Serena's Soul'. She pointed at Angelina furiously, and spoke with royal authority, "How dare you, to actually imprison my soul! The prestige of royalty will not be desecrated by you!"

[Shadow of Serena's Soul] (Holy leader, Summon)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Obviously, the impostor had been classified as Holy, because she had Serena's Soul in her. The moment the soul was separated from her, Witch Spectre Angelina had been forced back into her original form!

"Hmph!" Witch Spectre Angelina remained confident. A greenish flame began to flash within both of her eyes, as she softly spoke, "My dear princess, please do not forget that your body is still sealed, even if you managed to resist my control at the moment, how long can you last? One minute...? 10 minutes?!"

"Long enough to slay you!" Shadow of Serena's Soul turned to Zhang Yang and said, "My brave warriors, aid me in slaying this evil undead!"

Zhang Yang immediately wielded his Dragon Tooth Battle Axe and raised it up, bellowing, "Comrades, let's go!"

As Shadow of Serena's Soul lifted her right hand up, a huge long sword made of light congealed out of the void. She held the handle of the sword and swung towards the Witch Spectre Angelina. The sword of light tore through the air, making a series of sonic booms.

‘-200,000!’

The attack of the Shadow of Serena's Soul was brutal as f*ck! One hit had already reached a damage of 200,000, it was simply horrifying!

The Witch Spectre Angelina roared with rage and said, "B*tch, I may not be able to kill you because I need your soul, but when I imprison you all over again, I shall torment your soul beyond your wildest imaginations!"

Shoof!

Zhang Yang had already {Charged} into the battle and had begun hacking at Witch Spectre Angelina.

The boss had been set not to kill the Shadow of Serena's Soul, therefore, her aggro meter did take Shadow of Serena's Soul into account. With a

single chop from his axe, her aggro had already switched to Zhang Yang. Producing a magical staff out of nowhere, the boss pointed the blackened end point of the staff at Zhang Yang. The skull that was on top of the staff was flashed a ghostly green, and an arrow of dark light shot out at him!

‘-7021!’

Zhang Yang was immediately struck with a large amount of damage which appeared on top of his head!

It was fortunate for him that there were many healers on the party, one by one they started using all sorts of healing skills on Zhang Yang, swiftly healing him back to his full health. The offensive players took action, swarming the boss wildly.

For a level 68 Yellow-Gold boss, without talking about the boss’s already insanely high defense and magic resistance, her level that was at least 10 levels higher than everyone around there had already penalized their damage. Initially they could have delivered an approximate damage of 6000, but now, it would be extremely good if they could achieve 2000!

It was fortunate that they had a super power damager. Without much effort, Serena’s soul had already sliced off a sum of approximately 5,000,000 health points!

"Serena, you useless b*tch, I will definitely torment your soul until you no longer wish to exist!"

Witch Spectre Angelina could only receive the massive damage, unable to retaliate. She frequently screamed for the guards right outside the chamber so that they would come in to protect her and remove these so called ‘traitors’!

"Speed kill! If the guards return, we are doomed!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly. Although they all knew the Witch Spectre Angelina was an imposter, the guards had no clue about that.

They would only see their princess being assaulted, and would chop her assailants to pieces before any words could be exchanged!

"{Holy Light}, {Cross Soul Slash}!" Shadow of Serena’s Soul suddenly let

out a noble cry. Using the light sword on her hands, she drew a cross-shaped light wave and sent it towards Angelina to slice her up.

‘-2,050,000!’

‘-1,890,000!’

"Son of the --! This damage value, it's just so freaking awesome!" Fatty Han clenched his butt cheeks.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Only NPC in battles can inflict such ridiculously high damage. Rest assured, players will never have to face such bosses!"

Even though the Cross Soul Slash had heavily damaged the boss, the burden had proven too much for Serena's Soul. Her shadowy form was flickering continuously, it looked like she would shatter into pieces any time soon.

"{Shroud of the Undead}!" Angelina's health points had almost dropped lower than 50%. She opened her mouth wider than a human's biology would permit, and spat out a thick black mist towards her front, covering a conical area in front of her. As the black mist spread through the place, everyone was inflicted with varying amounts of damage. It did not make sense at first, but by observing the health points of the players, it was possible to know that the black mist caused all players to lose 1% of their respective health points.

At the same time, the health of the boss was also increasing gradually, 1% at a time!

10 seconds later, the black mist had finally vanished, and the health of the Witch Spectre Angelina had recovered from 51% back to 61%! Fortunately, the boss was still affected {Destructive Smash}. If it wasn't for that, she would have almost recovered her health back to full!

"{Holy Light}, {Cross Soul Slash}!" Shadow of Serena's Soul was attacking zealously, repeatedly using her powerful skills!

‘-2,040,000!’

‘-2,160,000!’

With every activation of the Cross Soul Slash, the Shadow of Serena’s Soul would grow more faded -- it was unclear exactly how long more she could hold on!

"Speed kill! Speed kill!" Zhang Yang had kept an eye on the situation beyond the wall of the chamber all along, realizing that there was already a large number of guards hurrying over. They were responding to the blasted Spectre’s distress calls!

"Muahaha!", the Witch Spectre Angelina gave out a bone-chilling laughter, "Such poor souls, I am an undead, protected by the army of the kingdom, while you --- you valiant fools will be executed one by one for trying to save your kingdom! Oh, the irony! No worries, after all of you are dead, I shall resurrect all of your corpses and make you all my most loyal subordinates, to serve the great Undead God!"

"Undead, if going all out would take off 20 years of my lifespan, I will still do it to eliminate you!" Shadow of Serena’s Soul spoke in her noble, ethereal voice. With both hands, she raised her sword up above her head.

"This is..." Angelina revealed an expression full of fear, as she spoke in disbelief, "Sword of Life and Death! Impossible! Only the Ascended grade could wield such powerful techniques! You actually --- No! No!"

As she cringed back in fear, Shadow of Serena’s Soul directed her sword at the spectre, creating at least thousands of her sword’s shadows!

‘-500,000!’

‘-470,000!’

‘-520,000!’

Each shadow of the sword would take away approximately 500,000 of Angelina’s health points, leaving the boss’s health point value to decrease steeply!

"Shroud of the Undead!" Witch Spectre Angelina shrieked frantically, spewing out another black mist. However, a mere recovery of 1% health

points every second could not make up with the damages inflicted by the divine [Sword of Life and Death]!

30%, 20%, 10%, 0%!

It looked as if the Witch Spectre Angelina was almost instantly slayed by the Shadow of Serena's Soul. Even before {Shroud of the Undead} could fully take effect, she had already let out a cry and collapsed, lying in her own pool of blood.

"Little Yang, I felt that we were like side characters, they didn't even need us afterall!" Fatty Han shrugged.

"Who said that? At least we get some awesome equipment!" Zhang Yang smiled and pointed at the loots dropped by the boss.

Boom!

The Shadow of Serena's Soul suddenly shattered into pieces and gushed into the corpse of the Witch Spectre Angelina.

Zhang Yang quickly took out the Soul Vessel and followed the instructions that were taught by Serena, he began the incantation while facing towards the dead body of Angelina. A stream of seven-colour light went straight into the Soul Vessel!

'Ding! You have successfully retrieved Princess Serena's other half of her soul, the mission will commence into the next process!'

'Ding! As the king and the soldiers have not known about the impostor, you are now a traitor of White Jade Kingdom!'

'Ding! Your position as the owner of Tukulo Fortress has been forfeited by the king himself, all related rights and skills are revoked!'

'Ding! Your reputation in the White Jade Kingdom has descended to 'Hatred', all NPCs will see you as an enemy! You will not be able to buy any merchandize, repair any equipment, rent any flying Griffins from any NPC!'

'Ding! Your land property in the White Jade City has been temporary confiscated!'

‘Ding! You cannot log off the game before your quest is completed, or else the quest will be judged as an automatic failure!’

‘Ding! You must return with the Soul Vessel to Princess Serena in the Tomb of the Shadow Ash, or else, the quest will fail! If you are killed by a player, the Soul Vessel will be dropped, any players who acquire the Soul Vessel can take it to rescue Princess Serena and win a large number of rewards! Once the other player has completed the quest, you shall be labeled as a castaway and remain banished permanently from White Jade Kingdom!’

The continuous system alerts were presented in the form of text and voice. Zhang Yang blinked in a daze, his face slowly turning white!

Sun of the beach! The penalty for failing the quest can be so serious? This was indeed a god damned main quest, providing a large number of rewards, but the penalty could practically frighten players to death! Losing his City Order was fine, it’s just a minor inconvenience concerning the City Teleportation system. But Little Merchandize Shop was the root of his income!

"You treacherous thief! Prepare to die!" The army of NPCs flocked into the chamber like a hive of bees, and the first person in front of them was the Captain of the Guards, Rhodus Ryan of the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna.

The NPCs had referred to him in the singular term. As he was the one who triggered the quest, they ignored his party members. After all, this was not reality, or else every single one of the involved players will be seen together as accomplices in a plot!

Being relieved of his title as the owner of the Tukulo Fortress, Zhang Yang had also lost the ability to teleport. His whole plan had been ruined! It was fortunate that he had already predicted those NPCs arriving, Zhang Yang had already passed the title of leader to Han Ying Xue, allowing her to distribute the loots.

"Witchy Snow, divide the loots as quickly as possible, and ignore the NPCs, they only want me! Time for me to go!" Zhang Yang literally spat

his words at the party and began to make his exit.

"You traitor! I'll kill you!" Rhodus Ryan shouted with a loud voice, waving the blade in his hands at Zhang Yang.

Even if Zhang Yang was the best-equipped tank in the entire game at the moment, he wouldn't stand a chance against a level 80 Yellow-Gold boss. Using {Charge} to create distance from the boss, he immediately activated {Shadow of the Void} and began running like crazy.

His movement speed increased by 100%. 20 seconds was enough for Zhang Yang to remove himself from the sacred chamber, finding a safe corner to rest. He quickly took out the [Lease of the Gold-Eared Bear King] and summoned Whitey.

Two seconds after, Whitey materialized. Zhang Yang quickly mounted it, shouting out a command, "Whitey, let's cross five passes, slay six generals, and ride alone for thousands of miles!

He rode on Whitey heading towards the exterior of the palace.

At that instant, word of the princess' assassination had to reached those NPCs, even though he saw their names in red. After they heard the shouting of the other guards pursuing from behind, only did they start giving chase.

Of course, the game had scripted the events in such manner. If that wasn't the case, if the main gate of the palace shuts, he will make himself an easy target. This mission would become impossible to be completed!

Running about wildly all along the way, Zhang Yang did not even dare look back, he went straight out of White Jade City.

For him to turn over the quest, Zhang Yang had to go through a number of maps, before he could leave Tukula Fortress and enter the Frozen Sky wasteland, then passing through the Necrotic Wastelands, and finally into the Flatlands of the Passing, find Princess Serena, turn in the quest and prove his innocence!

'Server Announcement: The princess of White Jade Caste was assassinated! The perpetrator is Player Zhan Yu! Under the command of

the King, the player that kills Zhan Yu must present the killer's head to obtain these rewards: 3 Level ups, one Yellow-Gold Weapon, and the position of the Great General of the National Army! Position: XXXXXX, YYYYYY. An announcement will be made every 10 minutes!

Pak!

A piece of wanted poster appeared in the backpack of every player, with a picture of Zhang Yang's face on it!

*

Translator's Thoughts

TL Notes:

1. Cross five passes slaying six generals, riding alone for thousands of miles : To overcome all sorts of difficulties along the way, referenced from the novel {{Romance of Three Kingdoms}}, the story of Guan Yu.

Chapter 231: The Traitor of the Kingdom

Zhang Yang was on the verge of spewing out a series of vulgarities!

Does this game want him to die that badly? It was enough, having to deal with every NPC that once considered him a friend, but now, actual, human players had been sent after him?

Level +3, a Yellow-Gold weapon, and the title of 'The Grant General-Protector of the Kingdom'! With such rewards, even Zhang Yang thought about killing himself and turning his own head over for the reward!

All players of the game would want to have higher levels, better equipment than everyone else. That was a given. However, the title was priceless! Levels and equipment can still be achieved by other means, but the title of 'The Grant General - Protector of the Kingdom' was one of a kind!

The Protector of the Kingdom, Grant General, it was truly impressive!

All the players in White Jade City had been riled up into a riot, as large guilds began formulating plans. The players in other seven main cities had also teleported over one after another, shouting slogans like 'Kill Zhan Yu, become Grant General'. In no time at all, entire armies had been formed in White Jade City.

"Hahaha." Wei Yan Er laughed gleefully at his expense. "Noob tank, you have become a boss now, giving players who slay you experience points, loots and also a title! Why don't you let me chop off your dog head then? Better not to let one's own fertile water flow into the fields of others!"

"F*ck off, little girl, where's your loyalty?" Zhang Yang was speeding away on his bear as he cursed under his breath repeatedly.

"I would rather betray everyone, rather than have me betrayed by everyone else" Wei Yan Er spoke in the tone of an ancient conspirator.

"You've been watching {{Romance of the Three Kingdom}} these days?"

"How's your mother? How's your whole family?" Fatty Han immediately recalled a few lines, laughing at himself, before everyone else quickly

shushed him up.

"Guildmaster, do you need us guild members to escort you?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "No need for that! It can be assumed that 80% of the players in China region are trying to pursue me. Even if the whole guild gets involved, there's no way we can stand up to them with numbers! Furthermore, we'll only end up as a bigger target, I'll use speed to handle this!"

"But the system will announce your coordinate once in every 10 minutes!"

"Not a problem, 10 minutes is a lifetime. They won't get a clear fix on my location!"

Zhang Yang continued riding Whitey into the forest. His high level reduced the chances of monsters being attracted to him.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, your quest definitely shook the heavens and the earth. China is all riled up thanks to you now! There's even a thread opened solely about your situation on the official forum website. They are guessing whether you can evade all the NPCs and players and succeed at the end of the day!"

Snow Seeker connected her voice communication device with Zhang Yang, a smile on her face.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "My luck has been always good!"

"Yeap, you definitely need that now!" Snow Seeker expressed her agreement. Needless to say, even the alliance of Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Red and Lost Paradise had no chance of holding the entire region back. It would be just like a mantis trying to stop a chariot!

After thinking about it for a while, she asked, "So you cannot stay offline to go into hiding?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "The quest will fail the moment I log off!"

Snow Seeker gave a gentle smile and said, "My members will not lay a

head on you. However, if you ever feel that failure becomes likely, don't let the others earn the spoils, just prepare your neck for me when it comes to that!"

Not long after, Crimson Fire had also messaged Zhang Yang, almost echoing Snow Seeker's words.

What the f*ck, everyone was treating Zhang Yang as the meat of the Tang Seng2!

10 minutes after, the system had updated his coordinates.

"Hey Zhang Yang, you are really good at getting yourself deep into trouble, I think you really woke the whole of China up!" Li Rujiao could not stop laughing, "Bad boys are always more attractive, I really feel like giving you one bite! Hmm, it's getting so wet, I better change my panties!"

F*ck! Femme Fatale!

Most perturbed, he quickly cut off the communication with Li Rujiao.

An hour after, Zhang Yang had arrived at the map of the level 30+ Wild Boar Ridge. Because he constantly changed direction every time his coordinates were announced by the system, nobody had found him yet!

However, it was clear to the more experienced players that he intended to leave the fortress!

The moment he step his foot out from the embouchure of the Wild Boar Ridge, Zhang Yang had finally met with his first ambush!

The Dominators!

By the embouchure, about 30 players were in a formation that faced the passageway. Humbly Gentleman himself stood right in front of them all. When he was Zhang Yang riding out atop his bear mount, he could not help himself but laughed loudly. "Zhan Yu, no matter how clever you are, you shall never escape the grip of my five fingers! There are only three ways to get out from the Wild Boar Ridge, and I have arranged people to set up ambushes on every route! But, I never expected my luck to be so good, for you to run into MY group!"

Most players would be chasing after him based on the announcements of his coordinates. However, more ingenious players would be able to intercept his routes, setting up ambushes in advance! Currently, the way to his front was blocked, and the back... Zhang Yang dreaded even thinking about it, there would be tens of thousands, or even millions coming after him!

No time to waste! Must open up a bloody path to escape!

Zhang Yang scanned the members of the Dominators. He could not help but smile gently. Gulping down a [Fire Resistance Potion], he rode out towards his enemy on his mount and laughed, "Hypocrite, do you know what is a 'Pi Fu Han Da Shu (a tiny insect, trying to shake a mighty tree3)'?"

"Pi Fu Han Da Shu (Sweaty Skinned Uncle)?" Humbly Gentleman had limited vocabulary, instantly interpreting the wrong idea. Blood rushed up his face, and he raged, "What's wrong with me having sweaty skin, it's not like it's some chronic disease!"

"I'm just saying, don't be so overconfident of yourself!" Zhang Yang had already began his assault on The Dominators that were surrounding him. They struck back.

‘-2,270!’

‘-2,750!’

‘-147!’

The attacks of the range professions reached Zhang Yang first. A string of damage values popped up above his head. He currently had a defense of 920 points, 930 points of damage absorption. Melee professions who were equipped with Gray-Silver equipment could only inflict 150 points of damage at most. If the weapon in hand had a high attack speed, it might even end up doing no damage whatsoever!

Only the casters could hit him significantly harder. However, as he had drank a bottle of Fire Resistance Potion, the Pyromancers were also unable to land solid blows!

Such was the balance of the game!

Tank professions subdue Melee professions, Melee professions subdue the Spellcaster professions, while the Spellcaster professions subdue the Tank professions. Of course, that was the case between similarly equipped players of similar skills. For the current Zhang Yang, not only did he have vastly superior equipment, along with a powerful battle mount that granted him a vast amount of hit points. He was basically a boss monster compared to the 30 players.

The damagers of The Dominators were a total of 5 Cryomancers, 7 Pyromancers, 6 hunters, 9 thieves and 4 berserkers. The remaining 6 were healers. Without a tank --- during a PK, no player would be stupid enough to go up against a tank and accomplish nothing.

In a hurry to gather manpower, Humbly Gentleman was only able to scoop up about a hundred of his best players, but as they were required to block three different routes, each route was blocked with about 30+ players.

Zhang Yang had already summoned his Servant: Clear Lotus and Shadow of Merlinda as he charged forward. As he sustained {Concussion Shot} from the hunters which reduced in his movement speed, he immediately activated {Substitute}. Whitey regained speed once again, finally colliding into the crowd of players.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Numbers up to 3,300 appeared on top of the attacked players at the same time, some of them struck with the horrifying critical damage of 6,700+! But, as these members were elites of The Dominators, they were decently equipped. Their health points surpassed 7,000, with some of the better ones having 8,000 health points. Zhang Yang could not instant-kill anyone, not even with his powerful critical strikes of {Horizontal Sweep}.

{Blast Wave}!

Another field of numbers -- 490+ -- appeared on top of the players in range!

"What the hell! How did he manage to attack on his mount?"

"No, something's not right! He can't have more than 20,000 HP! Our attacks had already inflicted more than 10,000 damage points, but still has more than half of his HP!"

"Sun of the beach, he must be hacking!"

Seeing Zhang Yang atop of Whitey, killing players in all four directions, the group of 30 were in disarray. Zhang Yang had hidden his personal character information from public. Although others could not see the specific amount of his health points, they could still predict an approximate value of his health points by looking at the fractional variations in his health bar, between the health lost and the health remaining!

The healers of The Dominators began to heal their comrades up, but Zhang Yang threw another {Horizontal Sweep} and a {Blast Wave} at the players around him. The healers were panicking, as they had no idea on which players to heal first, they could only focus their healing on the players with the least health points for a start!

Other than {Holy Shield}, {Regeneration}, and {Mending Prayers} which instantly activated, other healing spells required a short cast time!

Gold-Eared Bear King was currently at level 46. Surrounded by players who were around level 50 without much difference between their levels, his Yellow-Gold pet mount struck with deadly force, his damage fully unleashed. Under the control of Zhang Yang, a regular attack was thrown at a spellcaster who only had 800+ health points left. The poor spellcaster went straight down onto the ground, lying quietly.

Whitey had once again targeted another halfOdead thief who was left with only 900+ health points. With a wave of its paw, a damage of '-1824' was inflicted upon the thief, leaving the player flat on the ground as well!

The duration of invincibility triggered from {Substitute} had passed. Zhang Yang began to see his health points dropping gradually. Well, at least there won't be a shortage of his rage points. His battle axe rose and fell again and again. {Destructive Smash}, {Force Strike}, and even

{Cripple Defense} were all flung out like confetti, as he channeled all his attacks at the players who were left with the least health points, managing to kill off several players!

{Kidney Shot}, {Frost Ring}, all sorts of skills, one after another, hammered on him in return.

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall}. With his vastly increased defense, high damage immunity, high health points, and high damage, he charged straight into the formation of The Dominators, hacking away along with Whitey!

Zhang Yang had managed to instantly-kill several spellcasters at the beginning, but these elites were not idiots. They scattered across the place, giving no opportunity for Zhang Yang to take them out in bunches. Thoom thoom thoom! In less than 10 seconds, the health points of Zhang Yang that started off close 30,000 had been reduced to the very bottom.

{Berserker's Heal}!

‘+14300!’

As he had been hit with {Destructive Smash}, Zhang Yang had only managed to recover half of his health, but it was already enough for him to kill another one or two players!

Humbly Gentleman was enraged to the point of no return, he could not even imagine that the 30+ elite players he had gathered would be bested by Zhang Yang so easily! It was simply too humiliating! As his {Fire Ball} formed within his palms, he snarled, "Zhan Yu, I do not know whether you have accepted a quest or not, and if you did I will definitely not allow you to complete it! On the contrary, I will be using your head to acquire a title that would shake the world!"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly, charging towards Humbly Gentleman atop his mount, shouting, "Then I shall slay you first, hypocrite!"

Translator's Thoughts

1. A mantis trying to stop a chariot: an ambitious attempt without a sense of one's pitiable limitations.
2. Tang Seng: a central character in the novel Journey to the West by Wu Cheng'en. The character is based on the historical Buddhist monk Xuanzang.
3. A tiny insect, trying to shake a mighty tree: Ridiculously overrating one's own strength.

Chapter 232: The Chase

{Rearm}!

{Warrior's Will}!

{Berserker's Heal}!

Zhang Yang removed all the debuffs that he had been bombarded with and recovered his full health.

With unrelenting force and will, Zhang Yang shoved his way towards Humbly Gentleman and slashed at him with extreme prejudice!

'Absorb!'

'-6,320!' {Destructive Smash}, Critical.

Humbly Gentleman had a maximum HP of 8,200. The first strike had been completely absorbed by a {Holy Shield} and was torn through like hot butter after deducting a mere 1,300 damage from {Destructive Smash}.

Not so invincible now huh?

'-1,623!'

'-1,892!'

Zhang Yang's axe and Whitey's claw struck him from both sides. Humbly Gentleman dropped dead. To add further insult, Whitey walked over Humbly Gentleman dead body. Talk about wild tea-bagging! He bent over and reached out his hand to pick up magic staff that was on the ground. He laughed triumphantly and kept it in his inventory.

Just as he was about to relax, he was hammered with attacks from all sides.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Many status effect skills blasted from all direction. Zhang Yang's HP was really dropping now!

Swiftly, Zhang Yang got off his mount and entered {Shadow of the Void}, disappearing from sight and fleeing as fast as he could. He found a huge

boulder and hid himself behind it. After healing himself with a [Bandage], he summoned Whitey and furthered his distance from the danger zone.

His disappearance had left members of The Dominators truly flummoxed.

"Where did he go?"

"How could he disappear!? Bloody hell, he ain't no Thief. Was that a bloody Stealth technique?"

"What the father-f*cking-f*ck! This was exactly the same thing that happened during the Expedition war! Someone came and stole all of our loots, vanishing just like a thief!"

"Now that you mentioned it, yeah! D*amn!"

"Report his *ss! He must be using some kind of hacking software!"

"Shut up!" said Humbly Gentleman, his voice dripping with acid. He sounded like he was speaking in some foreign language, his voice thick with fury. "Get you lazy bums moving and revive me now! How can the whole lot of you let a single man escape, and still have the face to talk c*ck!"

He was clearly angry. How could he not be? With more than 30 members surrounding one man, not only did Zhang Yang manage to escape, he had even killed eight of them! If word got out, the guild will face massive humiliation!

"No one is allowed to speak of this! Or else, I'll kick you out of the guild!" Humbly Gentleman threatened the guild.

Everyone present nodded their head obediently. Their own reputations were at stake as well.

"Hey hypocrite, I took the liberty to record the fight just now. When this is over, I'll post the recording on the forum and watch the fireworks! You're done for! Hahahaha!" Zhang Yang posted on the local channel.

Knowing that, Humbly Gentleman could do nothing.

Even after teasing the hypocrite, Zhang Yang was still as tense as ever.

The tension he felt lingered on like an itch he could not reach. After all, there were many more smart players in the game. Even Humbly Gentleman, who he did not consider particularly intelligent, had managed to slow Zhang Yang, even if it ended as a critical failure. If that's the case, perhaps there could be more people will be blocking his path ahead! He had to make preparations if he wanted to get to his destination.

Humbly Gentleman failure was linked directly to a single flaw, he had underestimated Zhang Yang capabilities. He believed that he could kill Zhang Yang with only 30 players, but instead, he was killed instead. So far, Zhang Yang had only faced one guild. It was very likely that other guilds lay in wait ahead.

30 members would very likely be enough to kill Zhang Yang. Because The Dominators had been lacking in Spellcasters, and if they weren't, Zhang Yang would have been forced to use {Shadow of the Void} immediately!

He would not be so lucky the next time!

Zhang Yang did not dared to use the trails along the mountain since they were widely known and highly limited. He decided to make his way through the forest where others would need to bring a whole army to secure the parameter. Even that might not be enough to cover all the exits.

After settling on a plan, Zhang Yang stuck to his route and was met with a few obstacles. Along the way, he encountered a few small groups. In small numbers, Zhang Yang could easily hack his way through without much problem. He had to take detours and alternate routes when he saw larger groups ahead. It took him five hours to reach Tukula Fortress!

To enter any map beyond Level 50, all must past through the fortress. It is the only way!

However, Zhang Yang did not blatantly walk to the fortress. Instead, he hid in the nearby forest and slowly considered all possibilities. If he was the pursuer instead of the pursuant, he would intercept his quarry's path! In this case, the best waiting spot would be Tukula Fortress! Since there was only one way in and out, it was only inevitable that both parties would

meet!

Now, the real question is, how does he infiltrate the place?

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. He had to make his decision in the next three minutes because the system will be announcing his position! According to his informant, there were already hundreds of thousands of hunting parties on his tail!

"Hey dummy, you must be at a loss now that you can't think of a way to get through the fortress now!" Han Ying Xue's voice suddenly rang in the party channel. Along the way, Zhang Yang had explained his situation to everyone that he could not teleport directly to the fortress nor take the "plane".

Zhang Yang scoffed. "What's your genius plan then, B*tchy Snow?"

"Hmph! To cause mass confusion!" Han Ying Xue smirked. "I've already informed everyone in the guild to head over to the fortress! I'll get everyone to rush into the fortress! You will take advantage of the situation and join the fray! With ten thousand players rushing into the tiny gate, I don't believe any pair of eyes could zero in on you out of the crowd!"

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and nodded. "Ok! In three minutes, I want you to gather anyone at the entrance of the fortress! Order everyone to ride on their [Storm and Gale Direwolves]!"

"Understood!"

Zhang Yang unsummoned the Gold-Eared Bear King and summoned the [Storm and Gale Direwolf]! It was a highly common mount that anyone in a level Two guild would be able to access. It would serve a good decoy. After two minutes, Zhang Yang rushed out of the forest to join the raging crowd. In just one minute, Zhang Yang had arrived at the entrance.

UAAAAAAAAHHH!

A sea of players quickly swarmed up to surround him. Carrying the tag, "Lone Desert Smoke" above their heads, the players rode on their Direwolves to join Zhang Yang!

'Server Announcement: The princess of White Jade Caste was assassinated! The perpetrator is Player Zhan Yu! Under the command of the King, the player that kill Zhan Yu must present the killer's head to obtained the reward: Gained 3 Level, one Yellow-Gold Weapon, and the position of the Great General of the National Army! Position: XXXXXX, YYYYYY. An announcement will be made every 10 minutes!'

"Zhan Yu has arrived!"

"We're right at the coordinates!"

"F*ck! There're so many players down there! Which one is Zhan Yu!?"

"Sh*t! Hey! Spread out, stupid!"

Countless players had already gathered up at the fortress, but when the entire sea of Lone Desert Smoke members came swarming in, everyone was thrown into confusion.

Zhang Yang switched to the guild channel and announced, "Fellow members! Let's roll! We are heading outside the fortress!"

More than 13,000 players simultaneously changed their direction and headed towards the outskirts of the fortress.

"Kill them all! Kill them all!"

Other players roared and started launching their attacks from above. Since they could not determine which one was Zhan Yu, they started peppering the mass of players with various AoE skills! Tukula Fortress was not a main city; therefore, PK was perfectly legal!

"Do no return fire! Maintain the formation and charge forward! Those who participate today will be awarded with 50 guild contribution points and 50 gold coins as compensation!" said Zhang Yang in the guild channel.

"Protect the guild master!"

"Move your *ss! Protect the guild master! Cover him! Keep him in the middle!"

"F*ck this sh*t! Even if I die 100 times, I'll make sure I deliver the guild

master to the fortress!"

"What a bunch of f*ckers!"

All sort of spells covered the sky, from red fire balls to blue frost arrows, to actual physical arrows were raining down from above! Many players from Lone Desert Smoke had already been defeated. In fact, many of them had dropped their own equipment! However, the attacks did not dampen their fighting spirit! None of them stopped nor withdrew! The entire army had a single goal in mind -- to get their guild master into the fortress at all costs!

"Block their path!" screamed the attackers from inside the fortress. Some of them even summon their mounts to Lone Desert Smoke from entering the fortress!

Wham! Bam! Clang! Bang!

Mounts collided with mounts and players were being dismounted to the left and right! In 'God' Miracle' if a collision occurred while mounted, the system will realistically throw a player off their mount if they were not properly holding on to it, canceling the mount.

Even though there were around 13,000 players from Lone Desert Smoke, the number of players in the fortress had exceeded a staggering number of 3,000,000! With that ridiculous number forming an impregnable defensive line, their formation was so long that it stretched out from the inside of the fortress to the outside of it! Together, they were an invincible force!

"Kill them all! Zhan Yu must be hiding in the center of the crowd!"

10,000! 7,000!, 3,000!

The number of surviving players were dropping like flies! Equipment dropped everywhere like the littering left after a marathon! But, no one was willing to surrender! None of them! Not even a single member backed down from the rampage! Everyone only tightened up even more to protect their guild master as they rushed towards the fortress together! It was like an epic game of tower defense, with them being the monsters!

Someone even spiritedly said, "Everyday, the guild master was the one holding up his shield to protect us. At least, right now, we can do something in return and protect you instead!"

"For Lone Desert Smoke!"

"For the glory of the guild!"

"We are the best!"

2,000!

1,000!

800!

With only around 300 players left, the party had managed to rush through the exit of the fortress!

"Guild master! Please get going! We will remain here to protect you!"

"Guild master! Go now! We will be your shields!"

One by one, members of the guild screamed as they stopped following Zhan Yu and turned around to face the incoming players.

Zhang Yang nodded solemnly. He kicked his spurs and dashed forwards like a gush of wind.

From a far distance, Zhang Yang glanced back to see the remaining 300 players forming a neat formation, like a human blockade, blocking the players that were coming out of the fortress!

The army collided with the blockade. Clashes of sword and blasts of arcane magic could be heard. Members of Lone Desert Smoke were dropping like domino pieces, defiant till the end! Everyone had steeled their will and blades, determined to protect the formation!

Sun Xin Yu has fallen...Han Ying Xue has fallen...Hundred Shots has fallen...Endless Starlight has fallen...Daffodil Daydream has fallen...even Fatty Han has fallen...

"Uwa...Noob tank! I really want to cry!" said Wei Yan Er. In the beginning of the clash, she had swung her battle axe, ravaging through the mass and

killing three players. However, she was quickly killed and even dropped a Gray-Silver Boots!

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath and gripped the leash tightly. "We will have our revenge."

With the countless number of pursuing players, no matter how strong Lone Desert Smoke was, numbers simply overwhelmed them! The ones who took the most advantage of the situation were the guilds that opposed Lone Desert Smoke the most, that is, The Dominators, Pride and Axe Gang.

If he himself had fallen by himself, so be it. But now all his other members had been involved, suffering losses as a result of protecting him! The other players had already crossed the line when they had publicly announced that they would kill all players from Lone Desert Smoke and take their dropped equipment! They had publicly marked everyone from Lone Desert Smoke! How could Zhang Yang still remain calm!

F*ck this sh*t! Just wait! When I get back, I'll kill all of you bastards and chase you out of White Jade Castle! I swear this, on my entire gaming career!

Seething with anger, Zhang Yang could only move forward, towards the Flatlands of the Passing.

He could now walk this path thanks to the sacrifice of his members! This toll was paid with the lives of all 13,242 members of Lone Desert Smoke! He had to complete the quest! He had to finish what he started! He had to, or else, the members would have died in vain!

Chapter 233: Mission Accomplished!

Thanks to the system announcing Zhang Yang position every 10 minutes, Zhang Yang had no chance of covering his trail! His pursuers followed him all the way through the Frozen Sky Wasteland, over the Land of Deteriorating Bones, and into the Flatlands of the Passing. After dying repeatedly for two to three times, they were unable to revive any further and hovered in their soul states nearby their bodies until it was safe to revive again.

Are they still behind me? Oh shit. They're still coming! Bloody persistent bastards!

Zhang Yang arrived at the Twilight Hills and turned around to observe his situation. All he saw was a swarm of players charging through the flatlands like a massive stampede!

"Hmph! I'll let the monsters here give you a sweet kiss!" Zhang Yang swapped his mount back to the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and quietly wait for the players to approach. Until the nearest players had entered the 100 meter range, Zhang Yang ran into the Tomb of the Shadow Ash.

CRAKAKALAKALAKALA!

A large group of Skeletal Warriors chased after Zhang Yang as they rushed past them, sending chills of fear down spines! Some players managed to break through.

Since the tomb was considered to be an indoor instance, Zhang Yang's mount was canceled the moment he stepped into the tomb. Once he got on his feet, Zhang Yang activated {Charge} and clashed to the closest monster. Without turning around, he quickly rushed deeper into the tomb.

The entrance of the tomb was not that big. It was big for one person, at most allowing four to five players to enter at one time. However, when a large number of monsters were clustered at the entrance, the pursuing players had no choice but to kill the monsters in order to get inside. Luckily, the monster were only normal tiered, not a huge problem for most players. It did not take long for the players to kill all the monsters outside

the entrance.

However, now that they had solved the monster problem, the next annoying obstacle was the size of the entrance. It was a bottle-neck, they entered the tomb slowly like tiny drainage hole in a huge bath tub! How long would it take for all of the water to be drained?

Zhang Yang did not waste his time, as he ran into the tomb like the wind, activating all his skill to survive. {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Merlinda's Shadow}, {Substitute}, and several other skills were used to make sure that the monsters do not kill him. Just as his HP was about to reach the bottom, he activated {Shadow of the Void} and ran in the alternate dimension, giving him a luxurious 20 seconds to move ahead unobstructed. When {Shadow of the Void} expired, Zhang Yang hides himself in a corner and ate recovery snacks. The chasing monsters that Zhang Yang had attracted had ran back to their original positions, like rumbling tides of waves!

His pursuers were not as lucky. The monsters were slaughtering them, leaving piles of dead players in their wake. The monsters inside the tomb were all elites, with attack power that were similar to players wearing a full set of Gray-Silver equipment. The sheer amount of monsters quickly picked off stragglers who strayed too far from formation.

Eventually, both sides had clogged up, fighting in the narrow pathway. Only five from each side could fight at a time, while the others waited behind, waving their weapons in anger. It was extremely slow progress.

Zhang Yang used {Rearm} and resetted all the skills' cool down. He then proceeded to run deeper into the tomb, using {Shadow of the Void} again to find a safe space to recover when he was close to death. Thanks to the geographical landscape of the tomb, the players behind were stuck for a good duration! Zhang Yang rested for only a brief second and drew in a deep, long breath. He got up, steeled himself, and began to run again.

Sadly, he was just one man. No matter how strong he was as an individual player, he could not outpace a group of players who were working together. When the players had cleared all the monsters that

were blocking their path, they quickly caught up. More and more players entered the tomb, all searching every nick and corner of the tomb for Zhang Yang.

Even when Zhang Yang had been using the {Shadow of the Void} every 10 minutes, the distance between him and the chasing players behind was dwindling! In less than 30 minutes, Zhang Yang could already hear the sound of rumbling footsteps behind him!

"Keep going! Just a little bit more!" One of the players cried. Even though Zhang Yang had hidden his profile, they could easily recognize Zhang Yang since they were given the Wanted Notice that had a screen shot of his face on it! Furthermore, it did not matter if he hid his face, the chasing players would not stop at killing a thousand innocent players in order to get to him. They had even killed every player with hidden profiles just for good measure!

"Zhan Yu! Your life ends here! Let's see how long you can keep running!" seethed Floating Fire Ball through his teeth. Ever since his level had overtaken by Fatty Han and the gang, Floating Fire Ball had a deep hatred for everyone from Lone Desert Smoke. Not long after, Zhang Yang had even KSeD a boss and even killed him! He had to spend another large sum of gold coins to buy the equipment that had been dropped at his death! It's safe to say that his hatred was so deep it was down to his bones! Now that the opportunity had arisen, he had ordered the entire guild of Pride to guard the dead bodies of Lone Desert Smoke members, and take every equipment that the fallen members of Lone Desert Smoke. At the same time, he had dispatched a large group to chase after Zhang Yang, led by a team himself.

The rewards for killing Zhang Yang was three level ups!

To gain one level after Level 50 is as hard as it would take at least seven days! If he could kill Zhang Yang, he could save at least 21 days of time grinding! To him, a player who valued level values above all else, Floating Fire Ball was completely keen on beheading Zhang Yang to obtain the reward!

As he ran, Zhang Yang turned his head around and spat, "Come and get me!"

He picked up his pace and ran deeper down the tomb. His fearless provocation was due to the fact that {Rearm} was almost ready to be used again!

Naturally, Floating Fire Ball went after him without second thought. Following closely behind him were many other members from Pride. Zhang Yang had a long trail of monsters that followed him closely. More than one of them were within striking range, slashing at his exposed back. The more monsters he kited, the lesser HP he would have left. Luckily, the monsters chasing after Zhang Yang effectively blocked Pride's line of sight, preventing Zhang Yang from receiving any status effect skills from Floating Fire Ball and his merry gang.

3...2...1...Ready!

{Rearm}!

{Shadow of the Void}!

Zhang Yang entered the alternate dimension, disappearing from the physical realm and shaking off the aggro from all the chasing monsters. Losing their targets, at least 40 monsters turned around and started attacking the players from Pride!

"What the actual f*ck!?" Floating Fire Ball screamed. Just as victory was within grasp, Zhang Yang had slipped between his fingers!

Zhang Yang laughed as he ran away and entered the chamber of Princess Serene!

He quickly took out the Soul Container, placed it on Serena's chest, took a step back, and waited for the original princess to rise.

A brilliant rainbow light blasted out of the container and illuminated the entire room. A shadowy image of Princess Serena emerged out of the box and merged together with the physical body of Princess Serena.

SHOOOM!

Another bright light blasted out, as blinding as the sun itself, forced Zhang Yang to shield his eyes. The shadow and the body began to merge as the soul seeped into the body.

"I am the rightful princess of White Jade Castle! I am Serene-Andelor-Martain-Holy-Sanchest!" Serene opened her eyes and started hovering above stone table. Radiant light of heroic royalty pulsated around her out as she levitated across the table. She thrust out her right arm and a large sword materialized in her palm. Divine incarnate itself, the embodiment of power and grandeur stood before him.

[Serena, Princess of the White Jade Castle] (Holy, Humanoid)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

The title on her head disappeared just as fast as it appeared. After that, the light faded, and Serena was just the same as Zhang Yang, with no name tag on their heads. He could not even select her to observe her properties. Zhang Yang thought to himself, perhaps she have not regained her own name. Everyone in the kingdom believed that the princess had already been killed by Zhang Yang! Perhaps, the only way for her to get her name back was to return to White Jade Castle and prove that she was the one and only princess!

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Return the Soul. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

Was that it?

It be nice if the system would grant him a little more reward than just experience points, especially his shop!

"Warrior! You saved my life!" said Serena as she bowed a little. At least there was a gesture of appreciation. She was, at the very least, still a princess. "Now, follow me back to White Jade Castle! I will reward you properly for your efforts!"

'Ding! Serene has a quest for you: Return to White Jade Castle. Do you accept? This quest is linked to the main story quest. Complete the main story quest to obtain a luxurious reward!'

Now that the princess has shown her true self, it was time for Zhang Yang to clear his name! Zhang Yang accepted the quest hurriedly.

"Haha! Zhan Yu! It's dead end for you! I'd like to see how you escape this time!" Floating Fire Ball had managed to break through all odds and had arrived. His members had barricaded the doors to prevent Zhang Yang from escaping. Now that he had Zhang Yang caught like a fish out of water, he cracked a smile and laughed manically.

Level +3! Yellow-Gold equipment! Army General! Mine! All mine! Hahahaha!

He was so certain that victory was now in his hands!

Serena turned around to face Zhang Yang and frowned. "Who are these people?" quipped Serena as she pointed at Floating Fire Ball with her finger nonchalantly.

"A bunch of low-lives. They have been trying to kill me and nearly prevented me from delivering the soul container!" said Zhang Yang as he quickly framed all of Pride members. Even though Serena had her name completely hidden, but she was a Holy tiered boss. If any Pride member attacked her...

Serena was infuriated. If her soul container had not made it here, she would have still have been imprisoned, possibly locked away for good. This was downright betrayal!

"Kill them both!" cried Floating Fire Ball. He did not think that Serena was an NPC since she couldn't be identified. He had thought that she was just a player who had hidden her profile information. Without hesitation, he started attacking.

Pew pew! Boom boom! Shush shush!

In an instant, the light was blotted out by arrows, {Fireballs}, and {Frost Arrows}. They rained towards the Princess and Zhang Yang

"Such impudence!" Serena bellowed. She reached out her left arm and created a huge shield, protecting both Zhang Yang and her.

Pew pew pew!

All attacks landed on the shield, but they were completely absorbed without any trace.

"WTF? What is that skill!?"

"I remembered that a Priest's shield skill can only protect one person!"

"Even if that was a Priest skill, there's no way it could absorb that much damage!"

"Crap! Who the hell is this woman! She's even stronger than Zhan Yu!"

Voices started to be raised across the room.

"Those who raise their sword against the crown shall face death!" Serena was downright furious and swung the sword in her right hand. "Holy Light, Cross Soul Slash!"

Suush! Suush!

Two beams of light formed out of the sword, forming a cross that blasted through the players! The light sliced through them like lasers, splitting their bodies into pieces!

Instant kill!

Mass instant kill!

'Ding! You have committed a crime by attacking Princess Serena! You will be automatically teleported to the White Jade City Jail. You will be jailed for one day. After the prison sentence, you will be unable to perform any transaction with all NPCs in White Jade Castle for three days! All repairs, item purchase transaction fee will be increased by 200% for 10 days!'

Not only were they completely massacred by the Princess herself, they were not criminals. When the players that were killed by Princess Serena received the system notification, they flabbergasted, their jaws flapping

wide open.

What on earth is happening? Didn't Zhang Yang kill Princess Serena? Wasn't that why they were tasked to kill Zhang Yang in the first place? Why did the system indicate that they had attacked Princess Serena? If that woman was the Princess Serena, then who was the "Princess" who was supposedly killed?

Confused, frustrated, the players who were teleported to the jail could not spread the news about "not touching the woman beside Zhan Yu!".

According to the game system, players inside the jail would not have access to any kind of communication channel. They could not even send private messages! Being jailed in this game was just like being jailed in real life! If a player logged out during a prison sentence, the duration of the sentencing will pause, only resuming when the said player relogs. Players could not just leave their character "resting" for a whole night to pass the time.

"Let's go!" said Princess Serena boldly. She took the lead without waiting for Zhang Yang to respond. This was how a brave and heroic princess should behave, just like Princess Leia! She would not let her subordinates open the path for her. She would do it herself!

"It's him! Zhan Yu!"

"Kill him!"

Just as Zhang Yang and the princess left the room, more players attacked them.

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!" Serena chanted two phrases, shooting two bright lights out, silencing the entire world!

The two of them proceeded on.

"There he is! Kill him!"

"Kill the f*cker!"

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!"

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!"

"Holy light..."

Walking casually behind Princess Serena, Zhang Yang could only hear nothing but her chanting and the screaming from the players. Anyone who dared to strike them was blasted to hell! Smiling contentedly, Zhang Yang was greatly pleased.

Hah! You guys were having fun trying to kill me huh! Have a taste of your own medicine!

Any players killed by Princess Serena would be automatically sent to the jail. As such, it had created where more and more clueless players charging ahead with equally clueless players following closely behind! All of them would eventually fall victim to Serena's blade.

Serena progressed through the tomb rather fast. Even though there were many players and monsters alike, she cleared them all in just a flash of lights. They were practically moving, completely unhindered! By the time they had made it out of the tomb, they had only spent half an hour!

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!"

The blast of light slashed more players in half. After such a long time, the number of player who had managed to squeeze into the tomb were only slightly more than 10,000. There were even more players gathered outside of the tomb since they were shoving each other, trying to get in. With a swing of her sword, she forcefully blasted open a large pathway for them to proceed.

The players behind saw what happened and were stunned. Now that there was a chance for them to rush into the tomb, none of them dared to move a single step forward.

Zhang Yang and Serena finally walked out of the tomb.

"Zhan Yu! It's him!"

"D*mn! How did he come out? What happened to the thousands of players who got inearlier? Did he kill them all?"

"Who is that woman there?"

"Don't matter! Just kill the target and take his head for the reward!"

More than 100,000 players started to scream and yell, charging bravely towards Zhang Yang.

"You would seek to slay the hero of the crown?! Such insolence shall not be tolerated!" Serena raised her beautiful eye brows and her sword materialized in her hands.

"Hahaha! Who is this woman. Look at her, putting up a brave act and all. How will the two of them take on 100,000 of us?"

"What a looker! Check out her tits yo! Aw yeah! And that ss! Hmm! Sht be perky as f*ck! That b*tch must be a sl*t! I'd tap that!"

"Eh? She looks western. Perhaps she's a transfer student studying in china!"

"Who cares! Just kill the two of them!"

In an instant, the sky was covered with projectiles consisting of {Frost Arrow}, {Fire Ball}, and other flying objects! The melee class players were all charging towards Zhang Yang, all yelling their battle cry as loudly as they could! Zhang Yang only had one head to offer! They would have to fight against each other if they wanted to claim the reward!

Zhang Yang stood calmly, facing the oncoming projectiles. He was completely at ease since Serena had her left hand up, casting a protective barrier to shield them. Her sword in her right arm had began to move!

"Kill them all! Sword of Life and Death!"

Suush! Suush! Millions of streams of light were sent out flying in all directions!

Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill!

Anywhere the light ray traveled, dead players lay on the ground!

Chapter 234: Counter Attack!

Where the Sword of Life and Death was swung, million would be deprived of their lives instantly!

The massive surge of players storming up the Twilight Hill were instantly wiped out, nothing but a fading trace of golden light remaining at where they stood. Bodies were piling up, streams of blood flowed down, dyeing the hill red!

What a deadly princess! Such strength! Such power!

No wonder they say that one does not anger royalty! Zhang Yang was witnessing raging fury incarnate! Like a storm, simply going on its way, leaving destruction in its wake!

Inspired by the scene before his eyes, Zhang Yang called out to Hundred Shots in the guild channel. "Hundred Shots! Are those bastards from Pride and The Dominators still standing guard over the bodies of our guild mates?"

"Yes!" said Hundred Shots, a man who rarely let his anger show, but nothing could be hidden from his tone at this moment. "They said that if they are unable to kill us to Level O, they will remain here and kill us until we drop all our equipment!"

Zhang Yang smirked. "Keep your heads down, don't revive just yet! Wait for my arrival! I have just finished my quest and had procured some sort of killing machine as a result! When I reach you guys, we will strike back and get their equipment as revenge!"

"Awesome!"

"Guild master completed his quest!"

"Haha! Yeah! It's time to give those bastards a taste of their own medicine!"

"Let them bark all they want! We'll have our revenge soon enough!"

The entire guild cheered. Right then, Hundred Shots was kind enough to

not pour cold water on their heads. For once, he allowed them to chit and chat in the guild channel.

"Warrior! Can you summon a beast mount?" asked Serena.

"Yes! I am!" Zhang Yang quickly summoned Whitey and got on its back. Serena got up as well and sat with both her legs on one side of the bear. One of her hands was upraised, ready to attack, the other holding onto Zhang Yang's shoulder.

"Run, run like the wind..." Just as Zhang Yang started to move the bear, Serena murmured some words out. Spheres of wind gathered at all four feet of the bear and the speed of the bear was greatly increased. The beast ran forward, having gained three times its original speed.

This is good sh*t! If any players ever got their hands on this skill, they would have hit the jackpot!

One death every10 steps, over a trail that could not be traced! The legendary Chinese war general, Guan Yu was known for his killing spree of Yan Liang, Wen Chou, and Old Lou. Those who heard his tale could say one thing, "Guan Yu! Such speed!" 1

He had taken more than two hours to get to the tomb, but he had only spent less than 20 minutes to travel all the way from the tomb to the fortress. With haste, Zhang Yang rode the bear to the front of the fortress.

Since Serena had not regained her official title, and Zhang Yang still had the "wanted" status on him. The system would still announce his position every 10 minutes.

A majority of the players around who had not joined the chase earlier knew that there were at least millions of others going after Zhang Yang. Thus, realizing that it would only be a waste of time, they had packed up and left the fortress. So far, the only players remaining in the fortress were players from Pride, The Dominators, and the Axe Gang, guarding the dead bodies of players from Lone Desert Smoke.

The grudges that Pride and The Dominators had against Lone Desert Smoke were well founded, however, Axe Gang was a simply doing it out of

their presumptions. The guild had only been recently created. They wanted to use the fame of killing Lone Desert Smoke to boost themselves, reaching the peak of stardom in an instance!

Shocked, the players from those forementioned guilds realized that Zhang Yang was making his way all the way through the Flatlands of the Passing, Land of Deteriorating Bones, and Frozen Sky Wasteland. The most shocking part was the fact that the most recent announcement had revealed Zhang Yang's current position -- in front of the fortress!

What's going on?! Has he come to kill himself?

Humbly Gentleman was too demented to think twice about it. He was already pissed since he had taken such a long time to arrive to the fortress. By the time he had arrived, Zhang Yang had already broken through the fortress. He had missed the most climatic event! Frustrated, he had directed his frustration to the members of Lone Desert Smoke. He had brought along over 10,000 players to guard the bodies.

But all of that did not matter any longer! Zhang Yang had returned! Humbly Gentleman was pleased. Now that a second chance had presented itself, he would be more careful this time. He commanded a large number of members to ready their guard. At a single command, hundreds of Spellcasters rushed towards Zhang Yang. No matter how strong he was, he could never survive hundreds of attacks from Spellcasters. Even if he had an unlimited duration of {Shield Wall}, the sheer cumulative attacks from that many Spellcasters will kill him eventually!

Now that the guild master of Pride, Floating Fire Ball had been sent to the jail, the rest of the Spellcasters from Pride had formed a small party to rush out of the fortress to join their counterparts from the Dominators in killing Zhang Yang. Riding the tide of battle, the Axe Gang, not wanting to miss their chance for stardom, joined in! Right now, Zhang Yang had the glory of being China's number one tank! Stepping over his dead body would be the best way to gain great glory and fame!

Knowing that Zhang Yang's was strong against physical attacks, the two guilds had gathered up their spellcasters, sending them all in one shot! All

three guild's attacking parties came out of the fortress practically at the same time. All three leaders exchange a look, but neither of them looked like they were willing to cooperate with each other. After all, Zhang Yang had only one head. In the end, only one person would be holding up his severed head! Only one of them could claim the prize!

"Let's just kill him first, and talk about it later! We take some time off to discuss about whoever gets the final prize!" Humbly Gentleman cried.

The other two guilds exchanged a look and nodded at the same time, agreeing to Humbly Gentleman's terms.

Humbly Gentleman smirked. In his heart, he was gazing at those guilds in contempt, for being ignorant of his power! Only those who were worthy may challenge The Dominators! The Dominators was one of the four super guilds in White Jade Castle! Even if Pride and the Axe Gang were to combine their forces, or even double their strength, they would still be weaker than The Dominators!

They focused on the scene of the approaching Zhang Yang.

"My princess..." Zhang Yang raised his fingers and pointed at the dead bodies, piled outside the fortress's entrance and said, "Those people had given up their lives to protect me! They had sacrificed their own well-being to ensure that the soul container could reach you! Those people, gathered outside the fortress were the ones who had sullied their hands with the blood of those that stood up against injustice!"

Serena remained as stoic as ever. This kingdom's princess must be from a generation of iron-bloods! She made her decision quickly and leaped off the bear, landing on the ground. She flung out her right arm, and the gigantic sword materialized in her slim hand.

"Hahaha! Zhan Yu...Zhan Yu...No matter how much you try to run around, you will fall by my hands!" Humbly Gentleman gloated. He somehow knew that Zhang Yang had to run back into the fortress to complete his quest! His prediction was right on the mark, but he had not predicted the appearance of Serena the killing machine.

The guild master of the Axe Gang spoke up. "Zhan Yu! Do you know

who I am?"

Zhang Yang snickered. "Some random guy who came out of nowhere. I don't need to know your name!"

He frowned and patted his chest proudly. "Bastard! Don't act all high and mighty just after gaining a little bit of fame! I want you to remember me! Because today is the day that I, Moon—"

"Stop yapping and start killing!" Humbly Gentleman bellowed. Hundreds of Spellcasters led by him started to march forward. All started to cast their spells as soon as they entered the effective casting range.

"Tch!" the guild master of Axe Gang clicked his tongue. "Zhan Yu! Etch my name in the back of your brain! Because the person that will be killing you is Moon—"

"Die! Zhan Yu!" Kindling Chest Hair screamed from the top of his lungs. Almost everyone from Pride let out their hatred, making sure that Zhang Yang would receive their sentiments.

The guild master of Axe Gang dropped to his knees and sobbed. How hard was it to just announce his name?

Shush! Shush! Shush!

Thousands of Spellcasters got together and covered the sky with {Fire Ball} and {Frost Arrow}. Now that it has come to this, even if Zhang Yang used {Shield Wall}, he had no chance of surviving such an onslaught!

"Those who worship chaos and evil shall face the wrath of my sword!" Serena held out her left arm and created a large barrier. Her right arm, holding the gigantic long sword was raised up high. A glowing aura of great destruction could be felt emanating from it!

Absorbed! Absorbed!

All attacks that had made contact with the barrier simply vanished from existence, as if they had passed through a wormhole! There was not even a single ripple on the shield!

"How could this be!?"

Humbly Gentleman could not understand what had just occurred right in his eyes! Everyone was stunned.

Because Serena did not have any name tag, and players had come to believe that she was just another player who had hidden away her profile information. She had just raised an arm and was neutralized all the attacks from nearly a thousand Spellcasters! This...this...

It's just bullsh*t!

"F*ck! Hack! She must be using some kind of hack!"

"Sh*tty developers! What bullsh*t were they saying about no hacks being used in this game! F*ck them! Suck my d*ck!"

"Get your lazy asses out here now, GMs! I want to report a fcker here for using hacks!"

Serena scanned the area and locked onto her targets. With gleaming eyes that radiated death itself, she swung her sword and created two pillars of light that came out blasting towards Humbly Gentleman and the players around him.

"Holy Light, Cross Soul Slash!"

Shush! Boom!

The blast flew straight into the herd of players and sent bodies parts flying into the air. Nearly thousands of players were killed, leaving only 30 to 40 survivors, only because they were standing at the edge of the party, missing death by an inch!

After dying, the guild master of the Axe Gang was hugging the iron bars of the jail with tears flowing nonstop! What a pitiful scene...even in death, he had yet to find the opportunity to announce his name!

Zhang Yang laughed happily. He then switched to the guild channel and announced, "Those who are still waiting outside of the fortress may revive now! Get up! Let's fight back! It's our turn to kick some *ss!"

Over 300 players outside the fortress heard Zhang Yang's call and quickly revived themselves. They got up and starting killing off the players

who had survived Serena's mega blast.

Even though the recently revived members had only 20% HP, these 300 members from Lone Desert Smoke were the elites among the elites. Without breaking a sweat, they easily wiped out the enemy.

"What a relieve!"

"F*ck yeah! Kill these sons of b*tches!"

After waiting for more than three hours, the itch in their heart was finally solved.

"Hey noob tank. How did you suddenly become so strong?" Wei Yan Er ran over to Zhang Yang after she revived. She cocked her head to one side while asking him.

In the soul state, a character's range of vision was limited. Just like {Shadow of the Void}, the character could not see other monsters or characters unless they traveled to where their dead bodies were. This system was implemented to prevent spying during a major war. A player could purposely die and spy on the enemy's army while in their soul state, undetected.

That was why Wei Yan Er had no idea what exactly happened. In her vision, as were the vision of the others who had died, they could only witness Humbly Gentleman and his men being slaughtered. But they had no idea what killed them!

Zhang Yang pointed at Serena and said, "Recognize her?"

"Hm. She's very pretty! D*mn, noob tank! What are you showing her off for! You already have my cousin sister! Why would you still be finding other girls to play with!? Hmph! You have lost my respect!" Wei Yan Er scoffed and cross her arms angrily.

Zhang Yang was rendered speechless. Sigh...the elder one is a broken compass and the younger one is a complete idiot!

"She is Princess Serena! The one we killed before was the spectral impersonator! This one is the real deal!"

"Oh!" said Wei Yan Er as her eyes widened. She observed the princess carefully from top to bottom and finally scoffed after a while. "Hmm. She does look a little similar."

Just in the nick of time, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the gang arrived. Fatty Han was wheezing in anger as he bellowed angrily, "Little Yang! I reckon we can fight back now, right?!"

Zhang Yang nodded. "I don't care whether its Pride, The Dominators or even players from the Axe Gang! I want you to kill whoever you see! If it's a fight they want, it's a fight they'll get! They better be prepared to lose when they're the ones who declared war! F*ck! If they won't leave White Jade Castle after this, we'll kill them until they do so!"

"Hell yeah!"

"GROWL!"

Members from Lone Desert Smoke had been piling up their anger after being guarded for hours after death! After such a speech from their Guild master, their blood boiled, spewing out their battle cries!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. This was one of the event in China history, describing how fast Guan Yu the war general rode his horse.

Chapter 235: Super-Ultra-OP Reward!

Walking together, Zhang Yang and Serena proceeded slowly into Tukula Fortress.

The horns of war have been sounded!

Kill all those who stood guard over the bodies!

Kill all those who took advantage of the war!

Kill all enemies!

Bodies of Lone Desert Smoke continuously revived as the duo passed through them. All of them joined the "revolutionary" army and their numbers soared!

500! 900! 1,700!

Pride, annihilated!

The Dominators, wiped out!

Axe Gang, vanquished!

As the army exited the fortress, all three enemy guilds were completely destroyed! Half of them were sent to jail by Serena, the other half killed by Lone Desert Smoke! As such, the fallen players revived and joined the army. Their numbers surpassed 10,000!

Watching his enemies in pieces, Zhang Yang summoned [Gold-Eared Bear King], mounted it and shouted at the top of his lungs. "I'm back, b*tches!"

Everyone laughed at his actions.

With the system repeatedly announcing Zhang Yang position, Zhang Yang proceeded towards the city. Word finally got out about Zhang Yang having a mysterious woman beside him, massacring everyone he met. At first, players did not believe such an overpowered character could exist. But when a recording of the scene where Serena had struck down thousands of players got out into the internet, the news started to spread like wildfire.

Such devastating power!

Those who still had the intention to behead Zhang Yang, finally had second thoughts. They would have to see if they could fight on toe to toe with that mysterious woman!

There were other players who did not trust anything except their own eyes, and had meekly tagged along the large army of Lone Desert Smoke from behind. They would only believe it if they could see it with their own eyes. They were in luck. Oblivious and ambitious players had come, attempting to kill Zhang Yang. Some guilds like Counts of the Rose and Dragon Rampages were small guilds that wanted instant fame, and had come up to fight Zhang Yang. Of course, naturally, they were wiped clean when Serena furiously lifted the Sword of Life and Death, sending them all to dust.

The players who were tagging along got to watch the "movie", and were left awestruck.

However, if they even had a little bit of IQ in their brains, players would easily guess that Serena was not a player!

Think of it, Zhang Yang was accused of killing the princess and had a kill order on his head. Yet after a miraculous effort, he managed to turn the tables around with just one woman. How cool was that!?

For 30 years the river has flowed to the west, the water would return to the east 30 years later.

After having been persecuted so heavily, the tables have turned for Zhang Yang and now he had the grandest of luck.

"D*mn. I wish I could become the king's son in law! Think of it guys! If I could bring my wife with us into dungeons, or wars, we would be invincible!" said Fatty Han rather earnestly.

"Fatty bro, with that kind of body, how could you even become the princess's husband? Where would White Jade Castle hide its face? If one wants to become the husband of a princess, one must at least have a handsome face such as I!" said Endless Starlight as he tried to snatch

the spotlight.

They had managed to bring Serene back to the city after a total of three hours! By then, the number of players following behind Zhang Yang was exceeded beyond 8,000,000! It's either that or 10,000,000! If there was a Guinness World Record for a number of spectators in a game, they would have successfully been drafted!

As they entered through the castle entrance, the 12 elite soldiers standing guard there saw Zhang Yang and immediately unsheathed their swords. They surround Zhang Yang and one of them shouted. "You murderer! Surrender now!"

"Impudent!" cried Serene as she got down from the bear. "Stand down, right now!" she bellowed.

"Y-You are..." When the soldiers saw Serena, they were bewildered and did not know what to do next.

"In the presence of the crown, why do you not kneel!" Serena was no longer as furious as she was before, rather, she was only treating her own soldiers as a superior would. Either way, she had managed to strike fear and doubt into the hearts of the soldiers.

"M-My princess! We heard that you were k-ki—" One of the soldier spoke, his voice trembling.

"Hmph. That's not of your concern! Stand down! All of you!" said Princess Serena as she thrust her fair hands out, gesturing them to withdraw from their attacking stance, like a true noble.

"Yes! Princess!" All the soldiers withdrew and allowed the party to proceed.

With Serena leading the way ahead, the path was cleared until they reached the King's Chamber in White Jade Castle. This time, only Serena herself and Zhang Yang were allowed to enter the chamber.

Foom! The doors opened at her call and the two of them walked in extravagantly. Maids and soldiers along the way were kneeling down and hailing their princess.

Royal Chamber of the Dawning Light!

This hall was the king's own forbidden chamber. Even though it had almost the same structure of the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna, this hall was much larger and luxurious! The towering pillars of the hall were so large that it was estimated to be at least a few hundred meters tall! The pillars only could express pride, honor, dominating power of the citizens!

"Father!" The moment Serene entered the hall, stepping forward and bowing down to an elderly King who was seated upon the throne.

[Derick, King of the White Jade Kingdom] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

King Derick was clearly shocked, a look of child-like wonder dawning upon his wizened face. He quickly raised to his feet and said faintly.

"Serena...Y-You---"

"Father! I'm not dead! I'm alive!" said Serena with a smile on her face. "Three years ago, I was ambushed and imprisoned by the spectres! This hero saved me! The princess before me, was an impersonator who had used half of my soul to impersonate me!"

"Is...Is that true!?" said Derick. His voice tremble with doubt. He thought for a while and said, "Follow me to your chamber! I want to see the true form of the accursed spectre with my own eyes!"

The King and the Princess strode to the chamber with guards and maids following closely behind. The crowd arrived at the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna. At the center of the hall, a huge jade coffin lay there. On top of the coffin were fresh flowers that were maintained by several maids who quickly got to their knees. There were a total of 12 maids dressed in white, beautiful maid uniforms.

"My King! P-P-P-P-Princess!?" The maids got up to their feet and bowed respectfully to their king. But when their eyes saw Princess Serena

standing next to the king, they trembled. Confusion, bewilderment, shock filled their faces.

Derick thrust his hands out and gestured. "Open the coffin!"

Four guards walked quickly to the coffin and each of them took a corner. With a simultaneous heave, they pushed the lid open.

A dried, wrinkled skeleton was revealed to everyone. The face was distorted so badly and the corpse and the real Princess Serena shared no common features!

"Without my soul, this wretched spectre could no longer maintain the illusion!" said Serena.

"Oh! My child! My precious child! I'm so happy that you're safe!" The king hugged Princess Serene as tightly as he could, with tears flowing down his old, tired eyes.

Standing at one side, Zhang Yang was tapping his boots repeatedly, thinking, "Old fart, it's time for my reward! At least rescind the kill order and give me back my shop!"

Luckily, it was only a matter of minutes before the King Derick turned to Zhang Yang and praised him. "Young warrior! You have saved my only daughter! You have also foiled a major conspiracy and saved the entire kingdom! You are now a hero! I must reward you handsomely!"

About d*mn time old fart!

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Return to White Jade Castle. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! Main Story Quest Link: The Spectre's Scheme. Complete. Evaluating...'

'Ding! Your quest score: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: Level +5, Skill Point: +1!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: Indistinct Skill Book {Beast Taming}!'

‘Ding! The King has removed all charges pressed against you. You have regained all the authority you have in White Jade Castle! Your Reputation Point in White Jade Kingdom has been raised to Revered!’

‘Server Announcement: White Jade Kingdom has canceled the kill order on player Zhan Yu!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has completed the Main Story Quest Link: The Spectre’s Scheme. His achievement will be recorded in the Achievement Board!’

‘Server Announcement: War of the Spectres will be launching next month! For more information, please visit the official website!’

Zhang Yang’s notification channel was constantly flashing with new notifications until finally it stopped. When he read everything, he was stunned.

Indistinct Skill Book!?

Zhang Yang’s knees went weak from the sudden news! He felt like he had been given a huge pie! A hot, delicious, luxurious strawberry rhubarb! The kind that you’ll never get sick of eating!

In ‘God’ Miracle’, skill books were categorized into two types. Normal skill books and Indistinct skill books.

Needless to say, Indistinct skill books will grant an awesome, mega, OP skill! Yet, at the same skill, they will grant a normal, extremely common skill such as {Regeneration} or {Force Strike}. These types of skills were the most basic of their respective classes. Basically, skill books will grant a skill, requiring a specific class requirement. An Indistinct skill book however, would completely ignore such requirements! Any class could learn from them! Because of them, there will be rare cases of Warriors casting magic spells, Spellcasters using {Stealth}!

However, an Indistinct skill book was, at most, extremely, awfully hard to farm! In fact, in his previous life, after ‘God’s Miracle’ had been operating for five years, according to the data statistic from the ‘5 Years Game Review’, the entire world had only manage to produce 127 counts of

Indistinct skill books!

The rarity of the skill book was beyond any measure!

As such, since Indistinct skill books could only grant basic class skills, it had its advantage and short comings. For example, if a Warrior had learnt the Thief's skill {Shadow Assault}, it would only grant the Warrior an additional attacking skill. However, what if the Warrior manages to learn the skill {Stealth}? That would be a whole different story!

{Beast Taming} was a Hunter's basic skill. With this skill, a Hunter can capture a Wild Beast and tame it to be his pet. They could also use the skill to use their pet mount as their pet! Now that Zhang Yang had learnt the skill, his pet mount could remain in the field as a pet instead of a Battle Mount or a Mount! In fact, his pet would exactly be like a Hunter's pet, fighting alongside Zhang Yang in dungeon, Battle Arena, and even indoor instances!

It would turn him into part-Hunter!

He quickly took out the skill book and observed the item that he had never even got a whiff of in his past life!

[Beast Taming] (Indistinct Skill Book)

Use: Teaches you {Beast Taming}.

Level Requirement: 10

Bound.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang pat the book on his chest and learn the skill.

[Beast Taming]: Captures a wild beast to be your pet. Allows Battle Mounts to be summoned as pets. During a beast's capture, you have to be the target's main aggro or the capture will fail. You cannot capture any beast that is higher than your current level. You can only summon one pet at a time.

Casting time: 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang took out the [Lease of the Gold-Eared Bear King] and

summoned it. After two seconds, the fat, white bear appeared beside Zhang Yang and lay down on the floor lazily. It scratched its chin with its claws and even yawned.

Once a mount was not ridden within 2 seconds, it would instantly disappear. Now that he gained the skill, the mount would not disappear.

Zhang Yang cracked a wide smile! Even though the main story quest had caused him so much trouble, the rewards were definitely worth it!

"Hey noob tank! What's your reward!" The impatient little Wei Yan Er had seen all the server announcements and had quickly rushed to Zhang Yang to ask.

"Hehe! Increase five Levels. One skill point. And an Indistinct skill book!"

Chapter 236: Service Hiring

"Five Level bonus?!"

"Woah! Dumb Yu! That means you must be Level 60 then!"

"What's an Indistinct skill book?"

Zhang Yang had made the announcement in the party channel, which was why the rest of the gang had rushed over to check things out. He explained the characteristics of his newly obtained skill and the team was floored. For a non-hunter class character to be able to use {Beast Taming}, it made Zhang Yang into half a hunter, and a full tank!

"Warrior, please head back for now! I'll personally reward you in the future!" said Serena with a radiant smile. Her mannerisms and speech towards Zhang Yang seemed a little more than friendly.

'Ding! Your relationship with Princess Serena is now: Good!'

Zhang Yang almost staggered in surprise. Relationship and Reputation are two different systems. Only an NPC with strong AI programming such as Serena could establish a Relationship system. However, the true function of the system is unknown. Still, it can't possibly be a bad thing, having a good relationship with Princess Serena!

Now that his quest has been completed, and the rewards collected, there was no more reason for Zhang Yang to stay there any longer. Zhang Yang did an adventurer's salute and said, "My King, my Princess, Zhan Yu will now take his leave!"

As he stepped out of the palace, he saw members of Lone Desert Smoke occupying the entire courtyard! Faced with 10,000 members who were all cramping together like sardines, Zhang Yang could not help but feel honored. All of the players raised up their weapons and cheered! They had fought as a guild, facing all players from China as the enemy and had successfully helped Zhang Yang achieve his goal in completing his quest! This achievement was truly worth celebrating!

Zhang Yang took out his own axe and raised it up into the sky and cried,

"From today on! We, Lone Desert Smoke, will declare war against The Dominators, Pride, and the Axe Gang! Until they leave this city, we shall not rest! For honor!"

"FOR HONOR!"

Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight and the rest of the gang led teams of their own to start the assault. Each of them formed attack teams consisting of at least a hundred members, leading them out of the city and beginning their hunt for the forementioned guilds. While all of that was happening, Humbly Gentleman was still locked up in jail. He had logged out to have his dinner, when he learned of the news through a frantic phone call. Due to the fact that most members from The Dominators were in jail, with the remaining players scattered and divided without a leader, they could not endure the attacks from the very furious Lone Desert Smoke members. Most of them were killed so many times that they were afraid of reviving themselves and eventually logged off the game.

With the rising pressure and stress of being the hunting target, most of the players chose to leave the guild. With such events happening, Humbly Gentleman grew anxious. To speed things up, he spent the entire day and night to let the duration of his punishment run its course. He did not even spare any time to sleep! However, even after his efforts, by the time he was released from the prison, The Dominators had already lost at least 10% of its members.

Unrelentingly, Lone Desert Smoke showed no mercy and no signs of slowing down. Crimson Rage and Sky High joined the fray and participated in the assault on The Dominators.

In just five short days, The Dominators, Axe Gang, and Pride suffered heavy losses. All of them were cowering behind the city walls, refusing to leave the place to go grinding. As a result, many members of the guilds had chosen to abandon their guilds as a result of being unable to handle the massive stress. Now that the situation had escalated to such a level, Humbly Gentleman gave up resisting and was forced to do the right thing. He discarded his ego and faced Zhang Yang to beg his forgiveness.

Zhang Yang agreed to forgive the man, under one condition. Humbly Gentleman would have to kneel down in front of Little Merchandize Shop for 24 hours.

Zhang Yang merely offered the condition as a prank, he knew that a person such as Humbly Gentleman would never accept that level of embarrassment. However, against all odds, Humbly Gentleman did the impossible; He went to the shop, dropped planted his face on the ground and knelt for an entire day!

Unlike him, Zhang Yang was a man of his word. Now that Humbly Gentleman had crossed the bridge, Zhang Yang complied to his wishes and pulled his troops back, issuing a temporary ceasefire on The Dominators. However, things took a different path. Now that Humbly Gentleman's act was witnessed by the entire world, the guild had lost its credibility. Many more players in the guild quit since they believed that the guild will have no future under the so-called leadership of such a spineless bastard! A small internal conflict occurred and the guild lost a handful of elite players.

As such, The Dominators lost a great deal of strength and was removed from the rankings of strong guilds in White Jade Castle. Even though they still had their standards, they had lost respect. Morale was poor.

As for Pride and the Axe gang, they hung on using their own methods. Even if they could not put up a fight, they could still hide! The two guilds had "migrated" to Wild Willow City and Crimson Sky City, to reduce their pressure from Lone Desert Smoke.

At the same time, things got a little rowdy in the real world! There were online arguments coming up in the forums.

Some said the guilds deserved such treatment. You reap what you sow. Why in the first place, did those guilds guard the dead bodies of players from Lone Desert Smoke? Back then, why did not they feel remorse as they hacked at prey that they greatly outnumbered? They should have known what they were getting themselves into when they decided to go to war against Lone Desert Smoke. They should have known what could

happen to them if they lost.

On the other end of things, other players mentioned that the actions of Lone Desert Smoke were a little over the top. Conflicts between guilds are a common thing. A minor skirmish between one another is too common to even pay attention to. However, Lone Desert Smoke had driven two guilds out of the city! It was overly excessive no matter how you looked at things!

All in all, the commentators in the forum did agree on one thing. A consensus was established on the authenticity of Lone Desert Smoke's power, and its implications. They have proven themselves by almost causing the disbandment of a powerful, established influential guild that had left its mark over many games in the past! Because of this feat, they had gained themselves a top-of-the-food-chain status!

Such dominating power!

As the person in charge of liaising with outsourcing parties, Hundred Shots had been receiving many requests and news about company sponsorships. Because of that, Han Ying Xue was rather pleased as she was "the one" who first "found" the guild.

Now that Zhang Yang had gained an extra five Levels, he had overtaken Han Ying Xue and became China's highest Leveled player! After removing and putting on all his Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment such as the Ring of Raging Blaze and Arcane Resistor, he gained a major boost in his overall statistics.

HP: 24,090

Strength: 730

Defense: 1,000

Damage Absorption: 988

Weapon Attack: (1,929 – 2,138) x 1.05%

He learned a new skill at Level 60, {Killing Cleave}.

[Killing Cleave]: Attempts to kill the target. Skill can only be used on

targets with less than 20% of its maximum HP. Requires 20 Rage points to cast. Causes 100% physical melee damage to the target. Every additional Rage point will be converted to 3% extra damage per point. This skill will ignore all Defense, is Unavoidable and Unblockable.

Requires: Melee Weapon

Cost: Consumes all Rage.

Cool Down Time: 15 seconds.

If the skill was activated at 100 Rage (max), it could deal a total of 340% melee damage. That amount of damage is truly devastating! However, it wouldn't be very practical against a boss. The reason was a such, 20 Rage a hit could be the same as {Force Strike}. If all rage is consumed, each extra Rage point will only be an additional 3.4% melee damage. It's much weaker than the 10% Rage {Horizontal Sweep} or the Level 10 {Tornado Cleave} which only costs 8% Rage!

However, if the target was a player, it would be a different scenario, since the skill can only be used when a target's HP was lower than 20%, which couldn't amount to more than 1,600 HP, since the majority of non-tank players only had 8,000 HP at most! Any other skill can be used to kill that player! This skill will only reach its maximum potential when the game matures a little more. By then, average players would be at a higher level and have higher HPs. By then, the skill could be used to guarantee certain kills!

When all other skill have been used and are in cool down, this skill would serve greatly as a bonus attack. Unavoidable, unblockable, ignores all defense?! However, Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye}, it would be like adding salt to the sea!

A skill like this was currently wasted on Zhang Yang. On an inferior player however....a tank would need to constantly kite the boss. Taking damage constantly will basically provide an endless supply of Rage points. Since the skill could ignore all defense, weaker players with lower tiered equipment could use the skill to deal extra damage to kite the boss properly.

...

After a few days of grinding, Zhang Yang had his Bear King by his side whenever he was in combat. Since pets would require lower experience points to level up compared to a player, Whitey had been gaining levels faster than before. Thanks to Zhang Yang dragging monsters all around the field to kill them as entire herds instead of facing them one by one, Whitey had finally reached the same level as Zhang Yang, Level 60.

By then, Whitey had not procured any new skill. Zhang Yang had to visit the auction house to purchase two pet skill books. As the name states, the skill book was only eligible for pets. By right, Whitey was a mount, not a pet, and therefore unable to learn skills from such a method, but when Zhang Yang learned {Beast Taming}, Whitey had gained the status of both pet mount and normal pet!

[Icy Build] (Passive): Whenever you are attacked by a Frost attack, reduces damage by 90%.

[Wild Recovery]: Coverts 10 Focus points into 5% HP recovery every second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool Down Time: 2 minutes.

{Wild Recovery} is extremely common, which only cost Zhang Yang 20 gold coins. On the other hand, {Icy Build} was as expensive as f*ck! It cost Zhang Yang 20,000 gold coins to buy that bloody book! However, after reading the skill description, Zhang Yang felt that the skill was worth its cost.

At Level 60, [Gold-Eared Bear King] was truly mighty! The difference between a pet and a player is that a pet would not require any equipment to gain stats! Levels would be relative to their power! As their levels go up, so do their stats! The stat growth they gain would depend on their rarity.

[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: 60

HP: 16,800

Defense: 1,200

Weapon Attack: 3,692 – 3,892 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 1,264)

After Zhang Yang had acquired the skill {Beast Taming}, the bear had gained a Defense attribute. However, the Defense attribute would only be active when it is summoned as a pet, instead of a mount. The ridiculous bear had actually surpassed its own master in terms of both offense and defensive values.

Right now, the bear had two modes. One, the mount mode. In this mode, {Shared Life}, {Wild Charge}, and {Claw Attack} are the only skills available. As a pet however, it was able to use {Wild Charge}, {Claw Attack}, {Wild Recovery} and {Icy Build}!

The current date was October the 24th. The majority of players around had already passed the Level 50 threshold. Zhang Yang's stockpiled [Solid Iron Plates] had been sold out clean. On average, each [Solid Iron Plate] was sold at around 13 gold coins each. All 17,000 stacks of [Solid Iron Plate] had been sold for a total of 44,200,000 gold coins! The current currency exchange rate was at 1:3 which convert that sum to 130,000,000 dollars! That number had exceeded Zhang Yang's prediction by 50,000,000 dollars!

[Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] were not as common however. This situation had left Zhang Yang in a huge dilemma. If he placed his efforts in making potions, his current lead in levels would slowly drop. On the other hand, if he ignored the market demand and paid attention to grinding, he would be missing the chance to make more money!

The best way to solve this problem would be to hire a player for their services, the kind that specializes in crafting potions! But...could he find someone he could trust? It's hard to put his trust on anyone, because every recipe that Zhang Yang finds and procures is worth a lot of gold coins! Facing the prospect of such profit, greed would easily change a man's perception.

Fatty Han was his number one choice, but making potion will be a test of patience...someone like Fatty Han will definitely flip the table!

He thought...and thought...and after giving some time, he had an idea.

He logged out of the game and picked up the phone.

"Hello..." Yu Li voice was heard over the phone. She sounded a little tired.

"It's me. Zhang Yang. How is your mother?"

"Yes. She's been relocated to the best ward now. A kidney donor is already on the way and the doctor said that she can have her surgery within a week!" said Yu Li excitedly. She giggled a little and said, "So, I don't think you're calling me just to ask about my mother. Have you finally decided to accept my invitation to bed?"

A drop of cold sweat went down his forehead.

What a woman!

"Actually, I have an idea that would help you return the money you borrowed from me!"

"Hm?"

"I want to hire you as my personal potion crafter. In the game, I will have you craft me some potions! I will pay you...60,000 dollars as monthly salary! You will be able clear all your debt to me in just five years, with some personal savings to boot!"

"Zhang Yang...I said that I don't want to owe you anything anymore---"

"Listen to me, woman! Geez! Have you forgotten that I have been selling potions for a while back then? In the near future, there will be many more types of potions for sale! I don't have that much free time, sitting around all day on my ass, crafting bloody potions! That is why I'm hiring you to do some virtual hard labor! Do you understand the situation here, woman? I could earn millions or even billion while all you get is a fixed salary. I'm practically robbing you!"

"...I understand. Thank you so much, Zhang Yang." Yu Li was silent for a while before she finally replied. She understood Zhang Yang's intention. He could have easily looked for other people to do his work but instead, he asked her. She knew that Zhang Yang was just finding a reason to help

her.

"Until your mother fully recovers, you best stay with her. You can get back into the game when she's all good. I'll help you increase your Alchemy mastery. Oh! Could you please come over to White Jade Castle? It'll save me a lot of time when delivering the materials!"

"Ok!"

Zhang Yang hung up, a great weight taken off his shoulders. At least that's one problem solved.

Zhang Yang daily routine comprised of making potions and grinding his level. The daily dungeon runs of Poison Fireland and the Palace of Centaur were left to Endless Starlight. That young man had the potential to grow even stronger. After a few days of raiding and training, he was showing the promising skills and capabilities of a great tank!

After Level 60, gaining one level would take eight days at minimum. Since Zhang Yang had to allocate some time to craft some potions, he had only managed to gain one level by the first of November. Currently, the Level Ranking Board's Top 10 players were as such:

Zhan Yu, Guardian, Level 61

Little Snow, Priest, Level 57

Frost Night, Assassin, Level 57

Slim and Handsome, Beastmaster, Level 57

Drizzler, Berserker, Level 56

Daffodil Daydream, Pyromancer, Level 56

Hundred Shots, Beastmaster, Level 56

One Sword Stroke, Guardian, Level 55

Endless Starlight, Defender, Level 55

Drifting Scent, Bandit, Level 54.

There were three tanks and one healer in the Level Ranking Board Top Ten list?! A normal player would definitely be stunned in disbelief.

Everyone would expect a Spellcaster to be the leveling king! Since when was a tank better at grinding than a Spellcaster?

...

9 am: Zhang Yang logged into the game on time and heard a clear voice of a woman ringing in his ears, "Spectre War Zone has been launched, you may now proceed to enter through Teleportation Points in major cities!"

Spectre War Zone. The name was self-explanatory, it was a war zone filled with spectres. This new map was like a dungeon instance. Even though the map was filled with elite tiered monsters, the monsters inside the war zone were much easier to defeat than a regular common map elite monster. The experience points granted were lesser than the regular elite, they were still substantially higher than the experience points from normal monsters!

These monsters in the war zone do not drop regular drops like coins, materials, etc items, or equipment. Instead, at a fixed drop rate, these monsters will drop Rune Crafting essences and Rune Craft recipes! The war zone will be divided into different level maps to suit the varying levels of players. The lowest tier started at Level 10, and the levels went up by 10 per ascending tier.

Level 10, Level 20, and Level 30 Spectre War Zone's elite monster had a 1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Black-Steel Essence], 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Green-Copper Essence]. The bosses here will have a 1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Green-Copper Essence] and a 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Gray-Silver Essence].

Level 40, Level 50, and Level 60 Spectre War Zone's elite monster will have 1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Green Copper Essence] and 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence]. The bosses here will have 1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence] and a 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Yellow-Gold Essence].

At the current stage of the game, there were plenty of Green-Copper tiered weapons lying around, however, Level 40 Gray-Silver tier equipment were so rare that no one would willingly disassemble them to extract their

essence. So, naturally, without materials, there would not be any Rune Stones, which made the new profession rather meaningless.

To counter this problem that was quickly becoming prevalent, the developers had created the Spectre War Zone. The first three days of each month, players would have one chance of entering the war zone at a cost of 30 gold coins per entry for three hours. The entry count would not be carried over to the next month, only resetting when the time came. As such, Rune Crafting players would not have to worry about a shortage of essences. Even though the existence of the war zone would not satisfy the current market demand, it was a solution to lessen the burden of those players that learned Rune Craft. At least, the profession had some meaning now!

Chapter 237: Spectre War Zone

Since the entry period was only for as long as the first three days of every month, players who had read the introduction of the war zone have been waiting patiently for the opening of the war zone. Even though the area was large and divided into different levels of areas, it was still a situation where 10 men would need to share a toilet! There are more than 50,000,000 players alone in China! To make matters worse, the introduction had clearly stated that the Spectre War Zone's monster would only respawn once a month, meaning that latecomers would be left with an empty plain of dust and grass!

That was the reason why dozens of players stayed up waiting for the clock to strike midnight! The early bird gets the worms!

By the time Zhang Yang logged into the game, Han Ying Xue and the other had already entered the war zone. When Wei Yan Er noticed, she quickly contacted him and yelled, "Hey sleepy head! Lazy bum! Why did you wake up so late, noob tank!"

F*ck! This lazy-*ss is the one who's always late! D*mn! She was up a little early just to catch the opening time of the Spectre War Zone! Zhang Yang laughed sarcastically and replied her. "So, what did you guys get?"

"My god! There are so many people here!" Wei Yan Er sighed. "I thought I knew the meaning of a crowd when I visited a mall during the Black Friday sales. But d*amn! There are so many people here KSing mosnters here, there, and everywhere! Now I know what it really means when people say that there's no room for even an apple to fall!"

"Woah! We got ourselves a smart *ss!" Zhang Yang immediately replied.

"Stupid! Dummy! Noob tank! Call me stupid, one more time, and I'll take my cousin sister away from you!"

"Sure! It doesn't matter since our little Yan Er is a rare flower! A genius philosopher! A rare gem! The flower among flowers!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er rubbed her nose. "Since when did I become yours?"

Please...However, I'll overlook that statement since you have pretty good eyes, being able to notice all my points! HEY! Han Ying Xue! Why are you always sneaking around when I'm not paying attention!"

Beep

The little brat let out a scream that was quickly cut short as she hung up the voice messenger.

Zhang Yang laughed at the amazing little girl. She would never get boring. Zhang Yang rode Whitey all the way to the Teleportation point and paid the 30 gold coins entry fee, and entered the Spectre War Zone.

Of all the players in all eight servers, China included, Zhang Yang was the only person in the entire map of Level 60. When he entered the map, all he saw was a gray sky filled with dark clouds. The sun was fully blotted out behind the grayish dark puffs of clouds. Ahead of him, there were massive flatlands, filled with spectral monsters lurking around aimlessly. Each of them were separated by at least 30 meters apart.

[Fallen Warrior] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 62

HP: 20,000

Defense: 60

The background story of this Spectre War Zone was that the Union had recognized the Spectres as an alarming threat. Thus, they had dispatched adventurers and assigned them to their designated war zones to eliminate the vengeful spirits that had turned into spectres.

Even though the monsters here had the elite title upon their heads, their HP was only a little bit higher than usual normal tiered monsters. They were not hard to defeat; even a normal player (players with weaker equipment than Zhang Yang) could slay a monster by themselves with ease. The only difference between them and Zhang Yang was that Zhang Yang could go on and on while the normal players would might have to sit down to recover their HP after killing only one elite monster.

Zhang Yang summoned [Gold-Eared Bear King] and sat on it. He bent down a little and pats the side of its head. "Buddy, it's us against time itself here. Let's see how much we can haul in three hours!"

"Growl!"

Zhang Yang commanded the bear and both of them rushed down the flatlands, and into the roaming monsters. Since the monster here were rather scattered, Zhang Yang could not rely on his kiting technique. Instead, he had to resort to killing them one at a time. However, with his current damage, coupled with the damage from his pet mount, they could easily kill the 20,000 HP monster in just seven to eight seconds, while only losing a fraction of their own HP.

As Zhang Yang killed his way deeper into the war zone, he came up to a small hill side and saw a fully-clad armored warrior riding a skeletal horse down the other side of the hill. Behind the horseman were a few skeleton soldiers in groups of 10 and more. They were kneeling on one leg with flags stabbed into the ground by their sides. Although the flags seem ragged and old, these few spectres were looking up at the flag with great respect. They were completely still, as if they were statues made from cement!

Even after turning into spectres, these soldiers could perhaps retain a sense of pride and duty from their days of living...

[Resurrected Knight] (Boss, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 300,000

Defense: 350

The bosses in the Spectre War Zone did not have any tiers. They would only drop the respective level of essence based on their own levels. Zhang Yang sighed. He had been feeling down since he didn't stand to gain much, only materials for that Snow Bitch's runecrafting. He gently patted the white bear and commanded it to charge into the monsters.

"Aack ack....." The spectres noticed Zhang Yang arrival and got up to

their feet. With the flag pole behind them, the soldiers grabbed the hilts of their swords with their skeletal hands and tugged out the rusted swords that were once shiny.

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

The attacks were so weak that all of them could not even penetrate Zhang Yang’s defense. Ignoring them, Zhang Yang went straight to the boss.

‘-612!’

The boss pulled out a long spear and thrust it towards Zhang Yang. The damage done to Zhang Yang was only below 1,000, which means its basic attacking power was at around 3,000! It was set that way to favor the majority of normal players. The boss had been set in such a way that even a small group of Green-Copper equipment base player could defeat it.

After all, the purpose of the Spectre War Zone was to grant a lucrative way for essences to enter the market, not to test player’s equipment.

No one can stop him now!

In this zone, Zhang Yang was more of a boss than a player. After sharing his HP with the pet mount via [shared life], their combined HP had reached 41,000! Their attacking power had reached 4000+ DPS! With their current strength, they defeated the boss in only 70 seconds! That, by everyone else’s standards, was insanely powerful!

After three hours in the zone, Zhang Yang exited the instance with a broad smile on his face.

"Noob tank! Cousin sister said this and I quote, pass all the loots to her obediently or she will get over there to search your body thoroughly."

Just as Zhang Yang left the zone, Wei Yan Er merry voice rang.

D*mn! I have yet to even touch these stuffs myself and here they are, about to be snatched away...

"Noob tank! Don't feel bad about yourself. Pervy Fatty, Starlight brat, and uncle Hundred Shots have already been robbed cleaned by my cousin sister!" said Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang facepalmed. "Where is that woman?"

"At the Rune Crafting instructor!"

Without wasting anymore time, Zhang Yang rode the bear towards the Rune Craft Shop, only to see Han Ying Xue crafting Rune Stones endlessly. Naturally, everyone had gathered up a large haul. Because of that, Han Ying Xue was able to take everyone's loot from the Spectre War Zone to craft Rune Stones.

"Ahah! Great timing dummy! All the materials were just about to finish!" said Han Ying Xue as she looked up at Zhang Yang.

"I'd say, have you made any progress with Rune Crafting at all?"

"Before, I had only made +1 Rune Stones. With all these materials now, I can make +2 Rune Stones! Come on hurry up! Give me all the loots that you have gathered! I'm almost reaching Level 3!" said Han Ying Xue as she gestured with her hand impatiently.

Before the introduction to Spectre War Zone, Han Ying Xue had only the support from Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. Technically, Han Ying Xue was the first player in China to push her mastery level to Level 2! But, to achieve Level 3 mastery, one would require many [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence]. No matter how grandiose Zhang Yang was, he could not provide that much equipment for her to disassemble. After all, the most popular equipment in demand was the Gray-Silver tier. Who would want to sell those equipment for disassembling?

However, the tables has turned. With the Spectre War Zone, and the collaboration of an entire guild, Han Ying Xue had somehow managed to push herself to reach Level 3 in Rune Crafting! That was why normal players could never be proper Rune Crafters, it would drive them bankrupt before anything else!

Without giving a second thought, Zhang Yang transferred all his essence

to Han Ying Xue.

"Dummy...did you rob a hundred people to get these? How did you get so much?!" cried Han Ying Xue in shock and surprise. Like her, Wei Yan Er, Fatty Han, and the rest of the group had only managed to farm on average, 10 [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence], and one [Level 2 Yellow-Gold Essence].

Zhang Yang had just transferred a total of 92 [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence], and 43 [Level 2 Yellow-Gold Essence]! Having that many [Gray-Silver Essence] was still conceivable, but the amount of [Yellow-Gold Essence] he carried was just unbelievable! It was an impossible feat!

Zhang Yang scoffed. "Answer me, woman! Where are the Rune Stones that you promised? How much longer are you going to delay!?"

Perhaps others did not fully understand, but Zhang Yang knew that every 10 points of Luck would increase his chances in several aspects of the game by 1%! Since he had 9 Luck points, he had, technically, increased the drop rate of [Gray-Silver Essence] to 2% and [Yellow-Gold Essence] to 1%!

0.1% to 1% was an increment of a multiple of ten! Plus, Zhang Yang was completely alone in the Level 60 Spectre War Zone. Since he had only focused on killing bosses, how could he not gather that many [Yellow-Gold Essence]?

Han Ying Xue smiled happily, her grin spread from ear to ear. She nonchalantly transferred a few Rune Stones to Zhang Yang and said, "With this, I will easily become a Level 3 Rune Crafter! It's a shame though. Rune Craft recipes above Level 3 are not sold by the instructors! Looks like I will have to farm them myself!"

Zhang Yang took out the Rune Stones that Han Ying Xue had just handed over and observed their properties. There were only two Rune Stone, one was for a weapon, and the other was for a shield.

[Rune Stone: Vampiric] (Useable, Tier 2)

Use: Inscribes a rune on a weapon. Grants the weapon a +2 Vampiric effect. Grants a chance to restore 100 HP on every successful attack. Effect

will only proc once every 10 seconds. Inscribing a rune has a 50% success rate. Failure will result in a drop on the effect Tier by 1 level.

[Rune Stone: Shield Spike] (Useable, Tier 2)

Use: Inscribes a rune on a shield. Grants the shield with a +2 Shield Spike effect. Grants the ability to inflict 100 Shadow damage on a target after receiving an attack from the same target. Inscribing a rune has a 50% success rate. Failure will result in a drop on the effect Tier by 1 level.

The inscription a Rune starts from +1 to +2 and so on. However, since high Tier Rune Stone could replace the usage of lower Tier Rune Stones, super rich players could buy +10 Rune Stone to jump all the way from +1 to +10. Normal players would start inscribing from Tier 1 Rune Stone +1, to Tier 2 Rune Stone +2. This was the best and most economical way. However, Han Ying Xue's Rune Stones were all in Tier 2! It completely went against her miserly nature!

"Do I look like a miser?" said Han Ying Xue as she winked at Zhang Yang. "Using higher tier Rune Stone could easily increase the success rates!"

Wei Yan Er walked behind Zhang Yang and whispered. "Actually, she had already thrown away many Tier 1 Rune Stones because they had taken up too much space in her inventory.

"You little minx!" bellowed Han Ying Xue angrily.

Chapter 238: The Infiltration

Level 1 Rune Stone's were weak and the materials needed for crafting were just too cheap. Almost any Rune Crafter could craft this level of Rune Stone and it only served to raise their mastery level. Just like a [Level 1 Whetstone], it had come to a point where it's something that can be given away. Even the recipient might not appreciate this much! That was the reason why Han Ying Xue had gotten rid of all the Level 1 Rune Stones from her inventory and storage.

Zhang Yang stared at Han Ying Xue, and laughed under his breath.

"What are you looking at? I'll pluck your little balls off and shove them down your throat!" Han Ying Xue scolded viciously.

Zhang Yang laughed more, ignoring her. He took out his Dragon Tooth Battle Axe and inscribed the enhanced Vampire Rune Stone on it.

'Ding! Dragon Tooth Battle Axe has gained the effect of {Vampiric +1}. Level 2 Whetstone effect has been replaced!'

It's a shame that both the whetstone and the Rune Stone could not stack.

Zhang Yang took out another enhanced Vampire Rune Stone and applied on the weapon. However, after two seconds, a "crack" was heard and there was a long and unsightly crack on the weapon's edge.

'Ding! Enchantment failed. The {Vampiric +1} effect on the Dragon Tooth Battle Axe has disappeared. 10% of the weapon Durability has been lost!'

"WTF! You sly minx! What kind of Rune Stone did you gave me! I'd failed at +2!"

Han Ying Xue shrugged and scoffed. "That's your problem! Not me. I only used two Rune Stones and achieve {Mana Drain +2}!"

"What about the little girl?" Zhang Yang laughed as he turned to face Wei Yan Er.

Wei Yan Er shrunk and bashfully whispered. "16 pieces..."

"BAH!" Zhang Yang exploded in laughter. "Looks like there's no such thing as being 'worst'! It can only get much 'worse'!"

"Hey! This young lady here is beautiful and charming! Why would you say I'm worse?!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes. "Hurry up and keep on inscribing more Runes! Don't beat around the bush! I have a bet with cousin-sister right here on whose luck would be the worst!"

Luckily, Zhang Yang only used two pieces of enhanced Vampire Rune Stone and managed to upgrade his weapon to {Vampiric +2}. He did not even fail a single time when he came to his shield. He had only used a total of 6 pieces of Rune Stones.

After he was done inscribing Runes, he bid everyone farewell and used the city's Teleportation point to fly over to Tukula Fortress. There, he summoned the white bear and rode on into the wild.

So far, Zhang Yang was the only person who had reached Level 60. The new dungeon "Thunderbolt Prison" require a number of players that his guild could not provide. The only choice left was for him to get everyone to train their levels together. Furthermore, the new dungeon had a rather complicated system. The dungeon required four parties to start the raid. There were not enough members in Lone Desert Smoke to even dispatch 4 parties of 5 men!

Zhang Yang rode through the Frozen Sky Wastelands and entered the Forest of Tanila.

Forest of Tanila is a Level 60+ training ground, and it also carried the possibility of being claimed as a Territory! Zhang Yang's current objective was to search for new Territories.

Theoretically, as long as players achieved Level 60, new Territories would spawn in Level 60+ maps.

Forest of Tanila was a place with extremely large and ancient trees. The ground was rather open as the tree were widely spreaded from each other. That being said, the branches grew excessively, and the leaves from all the

trees around had covered the entire sky. Light from the sun could only seep through the gaps among the leaves to reach the floor. The forest was extremely cooling, but well-lit. Zhang Yang walked slowly across the forest, pacing slowly without any intention to rush. As he strode on, rays of light beamed on his armor, reflecting the sunlight out across the forest. Zhang Yang lingered in the forest for a total of three days.

On the fourth day, as he was roaming around the forest, he stumbled upon an open area with a camp in the middle of it.

"Hold your steps!" Two Elven warrior rushed over. Both of them wielded long swords. Though they looked extremely graceful, there were markings and tribal paint all over their foreheads, making them look rather savage, their eyes gleaming with killing intent.

[Silver Wings Camp Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Zhang Yang unsummoned his mount and did an adventurer's salute. "Fellow Elven warriors, I am an adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

The two female warriors exchange a quick look with each other and one of them asked. "We have sent out countless requests for aid! And yet White Jade Castle sends us a single man?!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "Sometime, a man can do things an army could not!"

"Hmph."

The two female warriors sheathed their swords across their backs as they scoffed.

"Brag all you want. We shall see your strength. Enter the camp and speak to our leader!"

The warriors let down their guards and allowed Zhang Yang to proceed further in.

The camp area was as large as a football field with a defensive parameter made out of wood, to block off wild animals. There were at least thousands of tents in the camp, with the largest tent being right in the center. On its sides, were flag poles stuck into the ground, bearing the sigil of the elven race.

Zhang Yang's priority was to search for a Territory. However, he had now been led on a little detour as this place seemed to have a quest for him. He might as well complete the quest. Who knows? The quest might reward him with something valuable!

Zhang Yang walked around and got into the largest tent. Inside, he saw a female Elf wearing completely white ceremonial clothing. Her chest was leaning on the surface of a table. In one hand, she held a light-silver colored magic staff. With her other hand, she was pointing and picking out random spots on what seemed to be a map. There was a worrying frown on her face.

[Priestess Kalor – Song of the Forest] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 68

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 700

The moment Zhang Yang stepped into the tent, Kalor noticed him and lifted her head up to glance at him. After having a look at Zhang Yang, she went back to the map. "So, you're the reinforcement sent by the Union?"

"I guess so." Said Zhang Yang. "Priestess Kalor, what sort of trouble are you in?"

Kalor lean back on her chair and sighed lightly. "A bunch of bandits have set up a stronghold in the Thunderstorm Castle, somewhere north of the forest. Their activities are threatening our very lives. Even though we have set up a front line here, the bandits would still sneak around here, often attacking our base. They would rob our supplies and kidnap our people to sell them as slaves!"

Zhang Yang cocked his head. "Why don't you guys destroy their

stronghold?" he asked.

"Thunderstorm Castle has a perfect, impregnable defense. Their stronghold has the geographical advantage! With mountains surrounding their base, the only entrance in is limited to one! Furthermore, they have set up three magical cannons at the entrance of the stronghold. With our current force, we will be annihilated if we were to start an attack!" said Kalor disgruntledly.

Kalor sighed. Out of the sudden silence, she stood with a sudden glint in her eyes. She looked at Zhang Yang and smirked. "Perhaps our approach to the attack was wrong. Perhaps...if we were to sneak into the stronghold and find out where they store the energy source and ammunition of the magical cannons and destroy that! Once the cannons are down, we could take the opportunity to strike and destroy the stronghold! Human! Do you accept this impossible mission?"

'Ding! Priestess Kalor has a quest for you: Destroy the Defense of Thunderstorm Castle. Will you accept it?'

Alright, now that he had a quest, he has something to do! Zhang Yang nodded. "Priestess, I will do my best to assist our allied Elven brethren!"

'Ding! You have obtained [A Bag of Explosives]!'

[A Bag of Explosives] (Quest Item)

Use: Tick! Tick! Run! It'll blow after 10 seconds!

"Wonderful! I have here a magic cape that will temporary change your appearance into a female elf! There will be bandits roaming around in the forest! When that happens, I want you to let them kidnap you and allow them to take you into their stronghold! When night comes, you can remove your disguise and find the energy source to destroy it!"

Kalor took out a black cape and handed it over to Zhang Yang.

D*mn! What a bold strategy!

Zhang Yang accepted the cape and scolded the developers for thinking of such a psychotic plan!

[Cape of Disguise] (Quest Item)

Use: Turns you into a beautiful Elven female! Removing the disguise will also purge all immobile status! Note: the magic power of the cape is limited to only one hour.

Charges left: 1/1

Zhang Yang took all the items, placed them in his inventory, and left the place. Based on the location Kalor had explained, the place that he should be heading for was somewhere to the north of the forest. Zhang Yang rode his way north, and after 20 minutes, he arrived at his destination. Zhang Yang observed the stronghold from afar and understood now why the stronghold was said to be impregnable. The castle was built within a valley of mountains. Although the size of the stronghold was large, it was completely shielded by mountains all around it. There was only one entrance and even that was protected with a river surrounding the castle. To enter the stronghold, one must cross a drawbridge from within the castle itself. Furthermore, the three magical cannons hanging outside the entrance of the castle walls were not mere ornaments. Those contraptions are not some toys; they could easily fire at long range, laying waste to anything they struck.

At first, Zhang Yang thought of using {Shadow of the Void} to sneak into the castle. However, he had second thoughts when he saw the large door being tightly shut. The whole time he lay there in wait, the draw bridge was never lowered, even after he had spent some time waiting for something to happen.

The only option left was to get kidnapped by the bandits as a female elf!

It can't be helped. Zhang Yang sighed and summoned the bear. He rode the bear and started searching the forest for the bandits. After only five to six minutes, he found a group of bandits, sitting around a campfire roasting what seemed to be their food. Zhang Yang started to move. He got off the bear, took out the cape, and after a bright glow, Zhang Yang turned from a rugged, tough, manly adventurer into a slim, curvy, and sexy elven female. Zhang Yang was now wearing only a rough linen skirt on

him. The rest of his original equipment, his shield, his axe, his armor were all hidden beneath the disguise.

He lowered his head and walked slowly towards the group of bandits, entering their aggro range. He then pretended to act frantic and quickly ran away.

"Hey! There's a girl! Chase after her!" The bandits screamed and started to chase after Zhang Yang. The kidnappers were very happy that their "victim" was such an easy catch, practically walking into their hands. After that, they brought Zhang Yang into the stronghold.

When they approached the river, one of the bandits shouted out to the occupants of the castle, and the door to the castle was opened. The draw bridge was lowered and the bandits entered the castle. After pushing Zhang Yang into a small shack, the bandits locked the doors and left him there.

"Huh?"

The disguise effect of the cape could not be dispelled manually! Much worse, when in disguise, Zhang Yang could not even use his weapon. All he could do right now was to wait until the effect wears off by itself. It did not take long for the magical spell to disperse, returning Zhang Yang to his original appearance. He took out his battle axe and start hacking at the door in front of him.

[Strong Wooden Door] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 100,000

Defense: 1,000

After a series of banging and cracking, the door turned into a pile of splintered wood.

Zhang Yang then exited the shack and started his search one house at a time.

Monsters have a certain level of A.I programming. Since this was just a

game, the system would only trigger when a player is within the distance of the monster's aggro, regardless of how visible your actual hiding spot was. As long as you're away from the aggro triggering distance, you can stand, breakdance, or take a dump without being attacked.

[Thunderstorm Castle Bandit] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

Zhang Yang summoned the bear and started his killing spree while searching for the cannon's energy source.

Still, the area of the castle was so large that Zhang Yang had been killing for more than three hours, only managing to cover a quarter of the entire place. By then, it was already 6pm. Zhang Yang logged off and had his dinner before coming back to continue his search. After two hours, he arrived at a rather large building. Four guards were standing outside. They were all elite tier!

[Captain of the Red Shirt] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Just four? Gimme a break...

Zhang Yang pulled on the reins of his bear, and started charging fiercely towards the guards.

Chapter 239: Invincible King Arthur

‘-1,012!’

‘-1,045!’

‘-1,009!’

‘-1,011!’

Four attacks landed simultaneously on Zhang Yang, taking away only 10% of his entire HP! The basic attack values of the bandit captains should only be around 3,500. Their attacks were nothing but a scratch! Furthermore, Zhang Yang’s current armor was already leagues ahead of the number two tank in China! With a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment and the pet mount {Shared Life} ability, these four elite monsters were nothing but ants waiting to be squashed!

Zhang Yang smirked and slashed the monsters with {Horizontal Sweep}, dealing more than 3,800 damage of the monsters. There was still, one drawback while fighting with the OP pet mount. Despite the massive boost to the rider’s HP, moving around while mounted was a little too meticulous, it lacked the fine control of an individual person’s movement. It would be fine if they were fighting a boss, since it’s impossible to dodge the lighting speed attacks. However, fighting normal monster would require agile maneuvers and footwork! Furthermore, some skills were inaccessible while mounted.

Zhang Yang got off his mount and stomped the ground hard with {Thunder Strike}, slowing down all four of monsters. Zhang Yang thought of a plan and laughed. In such a small area, Zhang Yang started to kite the monsters around. He finally made it so that the bandits blocked off each other, only being able to attack him one at a time!

With {Block} and other status effect skills, Zhang Yang and the bear killed off the four elite monsters with relative ease.

Among the loots, there was a key.

[Large Gray-Silver Treasure Chest Key] (Useable)

Use: Opens a locked Large Gray-Silver Treasure Chest.

After taking care of the guards, Zhang Yang went up to the large building and slammed the edge of his axe onto the door.

The door was also a destructible target with 500,000 HP and 1,500 Defense. It took Zhang Yang quite some time and a whole lot of banging and hacking before he got the door open.

Bang!

After the wooden door fell apart into many broken planks of wood, Zhang Yang entered the building and saw that it was a huge storage room, filled with thousands of solid chunks of blue colored crystals. Zhang Yang referred back to the quest helper and saw that he was standing right at where he was supposed to set the explosives. Zhang Yang got on the bear and took out the [Bag of Explosives]. He steeled himself before he lit the fuse, and tossed the explosives into the warehouse before rushing away from the scene like a race horse and its jockey.

10...9...8...7....3,2,1!

BOOM!

A deafening explosion was heard from behind, sending pieces of the building flying in all directions. A large mushroom cloud soared up into the night sky, further darkening the already blackened night sky.

Even though Zhang Yang had left the place before the explosive even began ticking, the shockwave from the explosion had knocked Zhang Yang off his feet, sending him and the bear flying into a stone wall.

Wham!

The collision was so strong that it had taken off as much as a third of his HP!

After the ringing in Zhang Yang eardrums ceased, voices and screams from the bandits started to replace the ringing. Chaos filled the air and many of the bandits started to run around in massive confusion.

"Kill!"

In the same time, the drums of war could be heard from a distance. Zhang Yang got up and headed to a clear spot where he saw groups of Elven soldiers on leopards appearing outside the Castle! Riding with the speed of the wind, the warriors were charging in fearlessly with the weapons in their hands, ready to strike down anyone in their path!

Wham! Bam! Boom!

The battle started with the padding sound of the running leopards, as they sprinted with their might, carrying their Elven masters into the castle. The cannons on the castle wall had started firing, managing to kill hundreds of Elven warriors. However, since Zhang Yang had already destroyed their ammunition depot, the cannons stopped firing after one volley.

Zhang Yang took this chance to rush over to the castle entrance. He killed the bandits guarding the entrance and took control over the drawbridge. He flipped the switch and lowered the draw bridge to allow the charging groups of Elven warrior to enter the castle.

Kalor was also present in the fight. She was riding a black Night Panther. She approached Zhang Yang. He saw her legs seeping out of her ceremonial outfit, revealing her sexy jade white thighs!

"You did it, warrior!" said Kalor happily.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Destroy the Defense of Thunderstorm Castle. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

Zhang Yang smiled weakly and said, "Thanks to the Gods of war, I'm barely alive at the moment!"

Kalor smiled back and turned to gaze up towards the peak of the castle. "Warrior! We're not done yet. Even though the defenses have been taken out, there is still much to do before victory can be claimed. The leader of these bandits is an extremely powerful beastman! I have heard that his sword strikes are so strong that they could break apart even the strongest shields ever! He is said to have torn wild beasts apart with his bare hands! We...our people call him...Arthur the Butcher!"

Zhang Yang stared back at her, unfazed. "In the face of justice, let those who worship evil's might! Beware my power, justice shall fight!" Zhang Yang tried to say something cool but he butchered the line on the way.

Still, Kalor was impressed by his speech and expressed her admiration. "Well said, let's go now, Warrior! Together we shall end this monster's life!"

'Ding! Priestess Kalor has a quest for you: Kill King Arthur. Will you accept it?'

Duh...Accept.

"Warriors of the night, to me!" 12 female Elven warriors, all of them atop Night Panthers gathered close to Kalor as she raised her magic staff up high.

"It's time! For revenge!"

"FOR REVENGE!"

13 Night Panthers and their riders dashed towards the peak of the castle. Zhang Yang followed closely behind on his white bear.

Along the way, they had to jump across dead corpses of both bandits and the Elven warriors. War is always cruel. War does not spare the innocent. War knows no peace. War will always bring death.

"Foolish Elves! How dare you sneak into my territory! I shall mince your flesh!" A thunderous roar blasted through the entire stronghold. The roar was so loud that all of the riders, including Zhang Yang had to let go of the reins to cover their aching eardrums!

Kalor face turned green. "It's...It's the demon! It's Arthur!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Sounds of crashing rubble was heard in the distance, along with the sound of a woman wailing in pain. In a flash, a three meter tall, green-skin man appeared right in front of everyone. In his right hand was a massive sword, dripping in fresh blood. In his other hand was an Elven warrior's neck. She was choked so hard that she could not even scream. All she

could do was struggle in vain.

When the green monster saw Zhang Yang and Kalor, he cracked a malicious grin and tightened the grip in his left hand with a force so strong that the sound of cracking bones could be heard. The struggling Elven warrior suddenly collapsed as her life was taken in an instant.

[Leader of the Bandits, King Arthur] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 68

HP: 4,000,000

Defense: 700

"Kill the demon!" Kalor roared. She jumped down from her Night Panther and sprinted forward. Once in range, she pointed her staff at King Arthur and started chanting a spell.

All the 12 Elven Warrior followed behind and charged towards King Arthur after getting off their mounts.

"Bah! Imbecile little weaklings! This King could kill you all with one finger!" King Arthur laughed manically. He lifted a massive leg and swept across the field knocking, into one of the female Elven warriors.

Wham!

The boss force was so overwhelmingly strong that, when the female warrior was hit, all she could do was cry "Argh" and slide across the floor, silent. The body was so disfigured that the chest had caved in, as if all the bones had shattered from within. Blood oozed out from her mouth, nose, eyes and ears.

King Arthur brandished his sword and let out a glowing ray of light. At the speed of lightning, the sword slashed through four Elven warriors so swiftly that Zhang Yang could not even make out what he was doing!

Shiiing! Shiiing! Shiiing! Shiiing!

After what seemed to be a million strikes, blood spilled everywhere like broken fountains. All four targeted female warriors were literally turned into fine mince meat. Pieces of them fell to the ground like a large pork

loin going through a meat grinder. The result was so disturbing that Zhang Yang could not bear to look.

The battle was completely one sided. Five warriors were taken down, no, mercilessly destroyed in an instant!

D*mn! Those warriors were elite tier! They had at least 130,000 HP each! Yet, even they had not lasted for more than a second against the boss! This was a battle that he cannot turn from! Zhang Yang jumped down from his mount and rushed towards King Arthur.

{Wild Charge}!

Zhang Yang commanded the bear to charge up to the boss as he slashed with his axe.

Immune!

Boom!

All attacks, including the blast of {Punishment Ray} from Kalor were useless against King Arthur! All their attacks were only responded with the word "Immune".

D*mn! All attacks are immune? How are we supposed to fight!?

Kalor face turned white as a paper. The staff in her hands trembles from her fear. "Y-You! You demon! You have the Sword in the Stone!" Kalor cried as she saw the huge bloodied sword in King Arthur's hand. Despair filled her soul.

"Hahaha! I am the King's Candidate! A man who will become

king! All those who oppose me shall die!" King Arthur lifted with his sword. Zhang Yang noticed that he was about to do the same series of quick slashes that he performed earlier, and prepared for the attack.

The sword glowed again and this time, this time, King Arthur swung the sword again, instantly killing every single target in his sight. In just a few seconds, all 12 of the Elven warriors were in pieces. The last target was Zhang Yang. He could not see where King Arthur was, but only caught a gleam of the sword. A strike was coming!

{Shadow of the Void}!

Zoom!

Zhang Yang entered an alternate dimension and avoided the boss ultimate killing strike!

Since the boss was invincible, it had to be a mechanism set by the quest. In order to kill King Arthur, he had to find a way to dispel the invincibility on him! Since it was part of the story line, King Arthur's ability to kill everyone with a single strike seemed reasonable.

Zhang Yang withdrew all the way back into the corner of a random shack. After the 20 second effect expired, Zhang Yang reappeared back to the "real" world and walked out of the shack. King Arthur was long gone by now. However, Zhang Yang still kept his guard up. He walked carefully towards the spot he was standing and found Kalor's mount lying dead on its side. He walked a little further to find Kalor's body split in two. She was dead before her body could even fall to the ground.

D*mn!

When Zhang Yang approached the body, a bright, white light flashed. Countless of white particles emerged from Kalor's corpse and gathered together to form a humanoid figure.

[Kalor's Soul] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Defense: 0

Zhang Yang approached the soul and spoke to her.

"Warrior! You're all right! Thank the gods!" said Kalor's hallowed soul as she expressed her happiness and surprise.

If it was another player doing the quest, they would surely have been killed. If Zhang Yang had died, he would have had to return back here to revive himself. The story would continue on anyway.

Zhang Yang kept quiet. Not knowing what to reply, he nodded.

"Warrior! My soul will not last any longer." Said Kalor.

"That demon had obtained the legendary artifact! The Sword in the Stone! He now has an immortal body! No one...no one could kill him now! I need you to find an Elf called Merlinda! Currently, she resides in the Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal! You can find her there! Only she has a way to defeat the demon! Please make haste, warrior! You must kill him before he kills all my brethren!"

Arghh---

Kalor's soul trembled broke off into countless of light particle. The particles faded away eventually.

'Ding! Quest Change: Kill King Arthur. Please proceed to Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal and search for Merlinda!'

Merlina...what a familiar name. Wasn't she the same NPC that was held captive in the Underground Tower back then? Zhang Yang tried to recall. He summoned the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and rode out of the stronghold. Luckily, there were no surviving bandits as they had all been killed by the attacking Elven warrior army back then. The place was completely deserted and Zhang Yang rode swiftly, leaving Thunderstorm Castle behind.

Now, the million-dollar question. Where was this Palace of Frozen Fractal?

Right now, the only thing that came into his mind was Han Ying Xue, the directional idiot, the broken compass! That lady had absolutely no sense of direction, but had a knack of finding the right places at the right times! Zhang Yang could only feel disgruntled about it.

Hold up. Zhang Yang remembered something. He tried to recall the memories back from his past experience. Back then, he remembered grinding before in the same map, and went the Palace of Frozen Fractal. There was a boss called the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, which was a Yellow-Gold tier. However, back then, the boss was already engaging a

guild. He had only managed to catch a glimpse of it. It was supposed to be...the West side!

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and headed towards the West of the map.

Zhang Yang rode fast and passed through a thick forest. After a while, the forest cleared up and reveal a large flatland. In the distance ahead, Zhang Yang could now see the silhouette of a palace, and as he got closer and closer, the image of the palace got clearer. Zhang Yang stood from a distance, surveying the entire palace. It was as large as a football stadium! It was probably the same size as the sphinx in Egypt!

The entrance to the palace had two skeletal soldiers guarding it. Their deep, dark eyes was lit up with the familiar green-emerald colored flames.

[Frozen Fractal Skeletal Warrior] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

From the looks of it, and the names of the skeletal warriors, this must be the place!

Zhang Yang felt a little drowsy and found out it was already 12 midnight. He quickly checked around his location and logged out, calling it a day.

The next day, after his daily routine, he logged back in and reappeared at the same place. He summoned the white bear and rode towards the palace. When Zhang Yang was within range, he charged into them and start his assault. The aggro range of the skeletal warrior was extremely large. Before Zhang Yang could enter their melee range, they had already pulled out their spears, let out their roar, and charged towards Zhang Yang.

As soon as Zhang Yang got within 10 meters from the skeletal warriors, Zhang Yang jumped down from the bear and used {Charge}, colliding into one of the skeletal warriors. At the same time, Zhang Yang commanded

the bear to used {Wild Charge} and engage another skeletal warrior.

{Blood Rage}! {Horizontal Sweep}!

Wham! Four counts of extremely high damage was inflicted!

Two of the monsters were stunned and the remaining two struck Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Thud! Zhang Yang stomped the ground, activating {Thunder Strike}, slowing down the four monsters as they moved slower towards him.

{Blast Wave}!

Four "-593!" popped out and all of the monsters was stunned again.

The white bear could only focus on one monster at a time, chomping on them. This Yellow-Gold pet's regular attack was high, but sadly, its skills were lackluster, dealing only 1,900 DPS. Still, it was a value that could be evenly matched with a fully Gray-Silver geared Level 50 player!

Luckily this was not a boss! The monster's attack speed was fast, but not fast enough to be unavoidable. Without breaking a sweat, Zhang Yang danced around with the monsters and played them like they were just nothing but dance partners. He quickly killed them all while only losing as much as 5,000 HP! He did not even need to sit down to eat any recovery snacks!

Zhang Yang proceeded to enter the palace. After passing through the gates, Zhang Yang entered a flower garden with thousands of withered flowers. There were pathways to the left and right that branched out from the main path. The palace was so old, who knows how many years it had once stood in glory before turning into ruins. With cracked walls and broken pillars lying everywhere; the once beautiful marbled floor was now just pieces of broken tiles. Only two to three pieces of marble tiles were still intact to tell hints of their tale.

Zhang Yang followed his usual behavior and took the pathway to the left.

Crack!

In just a few steps in, the ground beneath Zhang Yang cracked open. A pair of skeletal hands came out from the soil and grabbed Zhang Yang's legs. No wonder the pathway was so empty! All the monsters were hiding beneath the ground!

At a simple mental command, the bear growled fiercely and began swinging its massive claws.

Chapter 240: Frozen Ice Weeding

This monster that had a fetish for human feet was also a Frozen Fractal Skeletal Warrior. After sneaking up on Zhang Yang, the monster got out of the ground, covered in dirt and sand. The eyes were just the same as the previous skeletal warrior, malice-filled green-emerald flames and sought nothing but destruction. However, no matter how malicious it was, any non-boss monster was nothing but a scarecrow waiting for Zhang Yang to mow down.

The pair of Zhang Yang and the [Gold-Eared Bear King] turned this monster into a pile of brittle bones within half a minute. The monster dropped a few [Cotton Cloths] and 60 copper coins. What a stingy monster!

Zhang Yang continued down the pathway and confronted many more hidden skeletal warriors. However, no matter how many of them came up from the ground, it was their suicide wish. Without breaking a sweat, Zhang Yang sent them back to whence they came; into the ground.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to turn a corner, he caught a glimpse of a shiny object.

"Hm?"

He walked a few steps backwards and examined the object closely. The shiny object was a crystallized leaf growing from a plant. The branch had three leaves growing from it and was hidden behind a large rock in the corner. If hadn't been paying attention, he would have surely miss it completely.

This...this is a Frozen Ice Weeding!

Even though Zhang Yang had never practiced "Herb Picking", and was unable to detect herbs and their positions in the mini-map, he knew the importance and value of this super famous herb!

[Frozen Ice Weeding] is a main ingredient when it comes to crafting [Beginner Mobility Potion]!

What is the most important thing when it comes to PvP? It would be the ability to counter status effect skills! If a player was inflicted with a status effect, it would bring an end to the fight no matter how strong one's attack was!

[Mobility Potion] is a potion that grant immunity to immobile, slow, and stun effects! This is extremely important to Hunters, Thief, and a few melee class characters! For example, the longest status effect came from the Ice branch of Spells. When a player reaches Level 60, Cryomancers could learn the skill -- {Heart of Ice}. This skill would grant an additional slowing effect to {Frost Arrow}! By then, they could easily play catch and chase with other melee attacking players until the latter died!

Take Hunters for example, because of their minimum range, once an enemy got within their range, they would be sitting ducks if they could not regain distance!

[Mobility Potion] was so valuable because of the fact that status control skills existed in the first place!

Even though [Beginner Mobility Potion] would only last for three seconds, it was ample time in PvP. 3 seconds could either save you or completely ensure victory! This potion is a must-have in any Professional League tier fights!

However, the most troubling problem with [Beginner Mobility Potion] was the scarcity [Frozen Ice Weeding]! Besides guilds that had the item and sold them out, no one else knew where to harvest the herb!

Now, Zhang Yang has discovered that secret. It had been here all along! This place, the Sacred Palace of the Frozen Fractal was where this herb came from!

It was no wonder why so many guilds in his previous life had waged wars against each other to occupy this place! Not only did it host the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, it was also the place that spawns [Frozen Ice Weeding]!

Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre was a Yellow-Gold Level 60+ boss, and once players exceeded Level 100, no one would even want to farm for

Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment! However, that was not the main point! The most valuable loot to be obtained from this place was the [Frozen Ice Weeding]! Potions and Herbs will always remain relevant at any level!

There were other tiers of potions besides Beginner, such as Normal and Advanced, with Normal having a five second effect and Advanced having a 10 second status immunity duration. The other two tiers of potions were as hard to produce as the Beginner tier. The main ingredient to craft the potion was even harder and rarer than [Frozen Ice Weeding]! That was why, these three tiers of Mobility Potion were highly demanded in the potion market! They were one of the most sought after ever, in the market.

Zhang Yang cracked a smile. This place is a gold mine! He will make sure that Lone Desert Smoke occupies this holy ground!

However, it was a pity that he did not learn "Herb Picking". If he attempted to dig out the herb, it would only destroy the herb. He needed a player with the harvesting skill to come and dig it out. Ever since Zhang Yang had announced that he will support artisan-type players, many players in Lone Desert Smoke started to "spawn" gathering-type players. They would not spend much time leveling, investing all their time in gathering herbs, mining minerals, cutting leathers, and other materials! As long as they could complete a certain quest, they would be paid and rewarded!

...

The Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal had three sections, the Front Wing, Middle Wing, and the Rear Wing. Between each hall was a huge flower garden in the middle of the palace. Zhang Yang proceeded on killing several more skeletal warrior for at least another hour and managed to clear the Front Wing. He walked through the withered garden and moved on to the Middle Wing.

Along the way, Zhang Yang took notice of the herbs. [Frozen Ice Weeding] only grew in the flower garden and along the pathway. There was not a single herb in the main wing. The herb was most prevalent in the gardens! After a rough estimation, Zhang Yang counted at least 100

pieces of [Frozen Ice Weeding] just in the Front Wing and Middle Wing! If the spawn rate in the Middle and the Rear Wing were similar enough, he could harvest at least 150 pieces of [Frozen Ice Weeding] in one sweep. Since herbs respawned in between the time of 30 minutes and 2 hours, he could harvest around 1,800 pieces in one day, if he were to calculate the respawn rate at its longest possibility -- 2 hours!

Since the three tiers of Mobility Potions could be sold for 100, 200, and 400 gold coins each, 1,800 pieces of [Frozen Ice Weeding] would produce at least 1,800 [Beginner Mobility Potion]! That meant that he could earn 180,000 gold coins in one day!

Hehehe, no wonder those guilds in my previous life were fighting for their lives to get this place! I smell gold here! A huge pile of gold!

Zhang Yang nodded his head in appreciation and continued on his way.

As the name Frozen Fractal suggested, this place was filled with shiver-inducing chilly air. Even though the surrounding environment was like summer, the place was basically a freezer! Luckily, players could easily adjust the sensitivity of their five senses, or else, they would be sneezing from the cold!

The Middle Wing was slightly larger than the Front Wing. The moment Zhang Yang walked into the Middle Wing, an ice arrow came out of nowhere, flying across the room and stabbing Zhang Yang.

‘-1,812!’

Zhang Yang received a sudden damage. A skeletal spellcaster reveal itself in front of Zhang Yang. Its appearance was roughly the same as the skeletal warrior, only that it wielded a staff instead of a sword.

[Frozen Fractal Skeletal Spellcaster] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

MP: 60,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought. He recalled that the bear had the skill {Icy Build}. He should test the skill and figure out its potential!

With a mental command, the bear growl and headed straight for the skeletal spellcaster. The skeletal spellcaster had been in the middle of casting another {Frost Arrow}. Before it could finish it, the white bear had charged in with {Wild Charge}, stunning the monster, interrupting the spell at the same time. The bear started swinging its massive claws and attacked the monster. After one second, the monster recovered and faced the bear, starting to chant a spell to attack the bear.

‘-351!’

The {Frost Arrow} flew across and dealt severely weakened damage to the bear! Rather strong!

Zhang Yang laughed and praised the effectiveness of the pet skill! It had been worth every coin! He used {Charge} and rushed towards the monster. He stacked {Cripple Defense} and increased the overall damage dealt by him and the bear. To defeat a high HP, high Defense monster, {Cripple Defense} should be prioritized first!

Zhang Yang and the bear continued to attack the monster until its HP dropped below 20%. Zhang Yang accumulated his Rage and used {Killing Cleave}!

‘-7,565!’

D*mn, it was not a critical hit.

{Blood Rage}! {Warrior’s Will}!

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-8,900!’ Critical hit.

20% of the skeletal spellcaster’s HP was 26,000. After that combo, it was left with only 9% HP!

Without much effort, the skeletal spellcaster was turned into a pile to bones and scattered into the wind.

Zhang Yang continued killing for yet another hour, before arriving at the

lowest part of the Middle Wing. There, he saw four skeletal spellcasters guarding something that looked like a cage. Inside the cage was a female Elven priestess who wore a white ceremonial outfit. Both her hands and legs were shackled with iron chains.

When Zhang Yang observed the female priestess' name tag, he smirked. It was Merlinda – Song of the Forest. She was the same NPC that Zhang Yang had saved from the Underground Tower! Right now, he was still wearing the same ring that he had obtained from the "Beyond Perfect" quest!

This woman, how did she get caught again! She must be sharing the same fate as a certain plumber's princess.

Zhang Yang shook his head and patted the bear. With a mental command, the bear king growled and charged towards the skeletal spellcasters.

This time, it was best to let the pet to take the lead. The four skeletal spellcaster started their powerful spells, but since the white bear had a 90% Frost damage resistance, it was the best meat shield against Ice Spells!

‘-349!’

‘-373!’

‘-330!’

‘-364!’

Four weakened damage texts popped out above the white bear!

The bear growled and charged towards one of the skeletal guards. It lifted its massive claw and started attacking.

Zhang Yang followed his bear closely behind and used {Charge} on another monster.

{Blood Rage}! {Horizontal Sweep}!

In an instant, all monsters switched targets and started to cast {Frost Arrow}, directed at Zhang Yang.

{Blast Wave}!

A blast waves burst out and stunned all four monsters at the same time.

"Warrior!? Is that you?" Merlinda was both surprised and happy when she noticed Zhang Yang. As a strong A.I NPC, it was not surprising for her to have a good "memory".

Zhang Yang grunted a reply and continued to kill the monsters. He thought to himself, "Back when I fought Terpot Ryhar, this NPC was shackled and lying on the ground. Even after the battle was over, she was still lying down there! I was busy looting the equipment and the [Land Lease] and died no sooner. I wonder, how did this woman escape from that place?"

The four elite skeletal spellcasters were rather strong. Zhang Yang had to use {Shield Wall} and activate {Merlinda's Shadow}, {Berserker's Heal}, even using {Shadow of the Void} to escape the battle. He let the bear tank the monsters as he ate some recovery snacks before rejoining the battle with full health. Only then, did he manage to kill all the monsters successfully.

"Priestess, how did you end up here?" Zhang Yang tried to open the cage but the system rejected it, notifying Zhang Yang that the cage could not be opened via attacks. It could only be opened with a key.

"I was here to search for my race's Fallen Celestial Artifact!" said Merlinda earnestly. "This place was once a sacred palace of the moon god ritual! However, as you can see, this place has succumbed to the flow of history -- time itself. After thorough research, I have found out that the Elven Celestial Artifact, the Staff of Prophecy was here! However, when I arrived here to search for the artifact, I found out that sacred palace of the past had already been taken over by an evil and powerful spectral spellcaster! Even though I tried my best to confront the monster, I was unable to fight him. He locked me up and forced me to start the Ritual of the Moon God, to give him the power of the Moon God!"

Chapter 241: Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre

"Priestess! I bring grave news!" Zhang Yang retold the events that had happened where Kalor had led an attack to assault the Thunderstorm Castle which failed miserably when King Arthur slaughtered them all.

Merlinda listened and could only express her sadness and rage. After a while, she finally opened her mouth to speak. "The Sword in the Stone is a godly relic with unlimited power. Legend has it that only the bravest of warriors could lift the sword out of the stone. Warrior, I would need your help! As I am now imprisoned, I would need you to find the Frozen Key that is on the person of the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre! You'll need to get the key and the Staff of Prophecy! Only then, will I be able to confront King Arthur with his Sword in the Stone!"

'Ding! Quest Change: Kill King Arthur. The quest requires you to kill the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre and get the Frozen Key and the Staff of Prophecy for Merlinda!'

"O' brave warrior! Please take extreme caution! Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre has powerful Ice magic! She cannot be defeated easily!" Merlinda warned Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang nodded. "Priestess, rest assured. I shall return with the key and the staff!"

After getting out of the Middle Wing, Zhang Yang had to pass through the flower garden. Along the way, he spotted many more [Frozen Ice Weeding] and was extremely agitated. Soon later, a man who sat atop a bear entered the Back Wing, having killed more than 10 monsters along the way.

The largest area in palace was the Middle Wing, and the smallest was the Back Wing. As expected, 'smaller' was just a relative term. It was still huge. The area was supported by 12 humongous pillars. Each pillar was at least 60 to 70 meters tall. Close to the ceiling were carvings that looked like the Moon God. Along the pillars were 12 Spectre Warriors sitting atop Skeletal War Horses, standing guard beside their respective pillars. Each of

the warrior was fully clad in thick metal armor, with only the green-emerald flaming eyes visible through the gaps of the helmet visors.

[Frozen Fractal Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 300,000

Defense: 1,000

Note: Beware the Harbinger of Doom! Beware their swords.

In the deepest part of the palace, there was a huge majestic throne. Sitting on the throne was a huge being with the name tag "Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick". Even though it was a spectre, it did not possess any skeletal body like the normal spectre monster. This one looked like a mighty monarch, a dominating and powerful aura being emitted from its throne.

[Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 68

HP: 10,000,000

MP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

Zhang Yang smirked. He might have trouble against any other boss with such stats. But this particular one was clearly ice-based! It would be nothing but an easy target for his bear!

Now, before worrying about the boss, its best to take care of the 12 death knights!

Zhang Yang picked up a small rock about the size of his palm and tossed it at one of the death knight.

Pak!

It hit. The rock toss was nothing but a provocation. It did not inflict any sort of damage to it. The death knight that was hit by the rock turned around and bellowed. It pulled the reins of its skeletal horse and charged

towards Zhang Yang.

What a cheater! How could it use a mount inside an indoor environment!

Zhang Yang sighed and took several steps back, waiting for the right timing as the monster entered his own effective range.

Shuush!

Zhang Yang glided across the floor with {Charge} and quickly inflicted several layers of {Cripple Defense}. He quickly chained a normal attack after and dealt 1,726 damage.

The Death Knight recovered quickly after Zhang Yang's {Charge}, this time, before it could even lift its sword, Zhang Yang commanded the white bear to use {Wild Charge} and stunned the monster again. After one second, the monster recovered again and finally able to attack. It lifted its huge sword and swung it towards Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Having completed the five layers of {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang's attack was raised to a higher level. Slowly, each strike of his axe increased in damage over time.

Suddenly, the emerald flames in its eyes glowed with a sudden burst of flame, and the sword in its hands burst out in dark green flames!

'Ding! Frozen Fractal Death Knight has used {Death Strike}. All damage increased by 100%!

'-6,212!'

The {Death Strike} was similar to a Critical strike, it did double damage. Its basic attacking power had reached 10,000! Only a tank could survive after taking the hit! If other classes were to replace him, he or she would surely die!

Zhang Yang jumped in surprise. He quickly hopped atop the bear's saddle. {Shared Life} was automatically applied, boosting up his HP to 41,920.

Technically, Zhang Yang's and Gold-Eared Bear King's combined attacks were superior to that of the Death Knights. However, they would be unable to hold for too long as the monster had 300,000 HP. Zhang Yang was forced to use {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and even {Merlinda's Shadow} to kill the monster.

At his current level, Zhang Yang had already upgraded {Shield Wall} to Level six. Coupled with the set-equipment's set-effect that reduced {Shield Wall}'s cool down by one minute, {Shield Wall}'s current cool down was only at three minutes and 30 seconds! This was only 30 seconds more than {Berserker's Heal}'s cool down.

After eating some recovery snacks, Zhang Yang waited for two minutes before attacking the second Death Knight. Since each Death Knight would take up some time, and Zhang Yang would need to wait for his skill to finish their cool down, he would spend more than 50 minutes to kill all 12 Death Knights. All that was left now was only the boss itself! But before he started the fight, Zhang Yang decided to wait until all his skills were ready to be used.

Zhang Yang paced slowly to the bear and gently patted the white's fluffy head. "It's time, Whitey. Bite that sucker!"

Whitey growled and kicked off his velvety paws, rushing towards the boss. Since mounts were generally faster than a character's movement speed, the white bear reached the boss's aggro range fairly quickly.

Luke Vick stood up in surprise and bellowed angrily. "The living? How could the living be in my palace! Die!"

It raised its staff in its right hand and started casting a {Frost Arrow}. With a quick mental command, Zhang Yang made the bear U-turn sharply. Before the boss could finish casting the spell, the bear had already ran out of the effective range, wagging its stumpy, fluffy white tail at the boss to stare.

Enraged, Luke Vick started coming after the bear. When the boss walked out of the throne room, Zhang Yang quickly greeted it with a {Charge}.

{Cripple Defense}!

‘-288!’ {Crippled Defense}.

‘-1,629!’ Normal attack.

The aggro on the bear was quickly replaced by Zhang Yang. The boss started targeting Zhang Yang, casting {Frost Arrow}.

{Wild Charge}!

The bear rocketed towards the boss and clawed at the boss ferociously. However, it seemed that the skill was unable to interrupt the boss’ skill casting.

In that case!

{Crash Magic}!

Immune!

D*mn! It did not work. It was not as weak as the one in the Tomb of the Shadow Ash!

‘-6,212!’

The boss’ damage was strong as well! With one strike, the boss was able to take away a quarter of Zhang Yang’s HP!

Zhang Yang inflicted five layers of {Cripple Defense} and started his full-scale assault. He consumed a bottle of [Beginner Power Potion], used {Warrior’s Will}, hacking away with {Destructive Smash}!

WHAM!

‘-10,596!’

Such power! Even Zhang Yang himself was shocked at his own damage. At the current stage, which non-tank character would survive this hit?! What if, in the future, Zhang Yang could get his hands on the "God of War" inheritance and gain the ability to wield a two-handed weapon, using its long 3.8 seconds attack interval weapon to strike an enemy. What sort of damage would he deal in that case?

It was a pleasant surprise but he currently had an immediate threat to deal with. The boss was strong to begin with. {Frost Arrow} was fired every

three seconds. With 10,000 basic attack, Zhang Yang would be receiving a constant 2,000 DPS! How long would he last against a boss that had such an abundance of HP?

After 25 seconds, Zhang Yang HP was reduced down to a dangerous number of 237 HP. However, he did not activate {Berserker's Heal} and fought the boss, regardless of his HP.

‘+10,032!’

A {Frost Arrow} hits Zhang Yang on the chest, however, instead of killing him, Zhang Yang recovered his health!

This is the 5 set-equipment set-effect of his Furious set!

"When you received a fatal attack, the attack will not kill you, and will cause you to recover 40% of your maximum HP. Effect will only proc once every FIVE minutes."

After three seconds, a second {Frost Arrow} was fired, and Zhang Yang took the attack was left with only 4,031 HP

The boss had started its next attack.

{Frost Arrow} 1 seconds...2 seconds...2.9 seconds...

Pew!

{Shadow of the Void}!

Zhang Yang tucked his tail and ran away from the boss. He reappeared far from the boss' effective attack range and ate recovery snacks to heal his HP. Back at the battle, the boss had switched his target to the bear after losing sight of Zhang Yang.

‘-1,023!’

Pew!

A {Frost Arrow} was fired and the bear barely felt it!

Hm. {Icy Build}, nice job!

With haste, Zhang Yang quickly recovered himself back to full health and used {Charge}. This time, to prevent him from gaining too much

aggro value, Zhang Yang had unequipped his shield to disable his passive skill {Shield Oath}.

The bear was now the main tank and Zhang Yang acted as the main attacker! This was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang did not want to "combine" with the bear. It was to allow the bear to gain enough aggro to pull the boss! In the "combined" status, attacks of a mount would be registered as the attacks of its master!

After eight attacks from the boss, Zhang Yang mentally command the bear to use {Wild Recovery} which healed the bear 50% HP over a period 10 seconds.

After another 20 seconds, Zhang Yang aggro value had exceeded the bear's, he immediately reduced his skill usage to allow the bear to regain the boss' aggro.

After two minutes into the fight, the bear was finally dying after being shot countless times. Zhang Yang quickly equipped his shield and hopped onto the bear, raising the "combined" HP to 21,420 / 41,920.

Even though Zhang Yang possessed strong damage reduction skills, his damage reduction was inferior when compared to the white bear's {Icy Build}. Just 30 seconds into the battle, Zhang Yang was already being beaten to a pulp!

{Berserker's Heal}!

'+41,920'

Once Zhang Yang triggered the skill and healed both himself and the bear, he hopped down and started to fight, one man and one bear!

However, back when Zhang Yang and the bear were linked together, Zhang Yang had gathered a huge amount of aggro from the boss. When Zhang Yang separated from the bear, the boss switched to Zhang Yang instead of the bear. As the battle progressed dangerously and he was close to death once again, he used {Rearm} and activated {Shadow of the Void} to run away, again!

Chapter 242: The Sudden Appearance of a Territory

Zhang Yang managed to lose his aggro once again, forcing Luke Vick to cast {Frost Arrow} spell at Whitey instead. Zhang Yang recuperated briefly, hefted his battle axe without its usual partner, the shield, and dashed towards Luke Vick.

After two minutes, Whitey { Wild Recovery}'s cooldown was completed, and perfect cycle was bound to fall into place!

Zhang Yang had cleared his aggro twice. Whitey's DPS was at least 1,600, and Zhang Yang was intentionally controlling his firepower throughout the battle. Thus, Luke Vick's aggro was securely locked on Gold-Eared Bear King!

'{Wild Recovery}, unite, {Berserker's Heal}, split...'

Luke Vick's HP continuously reduced as they repeated the perfect cycle over and over again!

Ten minutes later, Zhang Yang's {Shadow of the Void} was ready again. He used {Shadow of the Void} again after madly slashing at Luke Vick to fully capitalize on the opportunity, stealing the aggro from Whitey for a few short moments!

40 Minutes later, Luke Vick's HP bar was at its end, the boss suddenly roared loudly, an expression of disbelief on its face, and fell defeated!

'Ding! You have slain Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick, you have acquired 10,000,000 Experience points!'

Hu!

Zhang Yang let out of a long breath. One of the reasons why he could defeat Luke Vick alone was because he had combined the abilities of his pet mount and his own skills such as {Beast Taming}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Wild Recovery}, and {Shadow of the Void}. Each one of them was indispensable coming together to form a miraculous culmination!

Luke Vick's loot was generous; there was seven pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and a lot of Gray-Silver equipment, it was truly awesome!

At Zhang Yang's current level, he did not bother giving any of the Gray-Silver equipment a second look but directly threw them all into his backpack. However, the Yellow-Gold equipment did catch hold of his attention, and he studied them with the seriousness of a curator!

Among the seven pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, two of them were leather armor, one of them a cloth armor and the other a heavy armor chestpiece, all of them being set equipment! The other two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment were a cape and a pair of accessories.

[Flawless Defense Cape] (Yellow-Gold, Cape)

HP: +84

Vitality: +21

Equipment: Absorbs 40 damage points each time you take damage.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

[Lover's Charm: Yang] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Immediately teleports you to the target's surrounding. The target is the wearer of [Lover's Charm: Yin]. Cool down time: 3 hours.

Gender Restriction: Male

Level Requirement: 60

[Lover's Charm: Yin] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Immediately teleports you to the target's surrounding. The target is the wearer of [Lover's Charm: Yang]. Cool down time: 3 hours.

Gender Restriction: Female

Level Requirement: 60

This would come in handy! After killing a boss or player, one could use this charm to escape, on the condition that the person who wore this

Lover's Charm must already be in a safe place!

But, who should I give this Lover's Charm to?

The most ideal person was Han Ying Xue, because in the future if Zhang Yang ever encountered a powerful boss in the open field, Han Ying Xue could simply use [Lover's Charm: Yin] to teleport to Zhang Yang's location! But if Sun Xin Yu saw the questionable name of the equipment, wouldn't she butcher the two of them?

On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was a cheeky brat, and if Zhang Yang did not hand this novelty item over to her, there would be no end to her whining!

Well, just forget about it, I will decide on this in the future!

Zhang Yang picked up a key that was made entirely out of clear ice and a silvery white magic staff, and placed them all in his backpack. These were the quest items, [Frozen Key] and [Staff of Prophecy]. Unfortunately, despite being a Celestial grade weapon, the [Staff of Prophecy] could not be used as a weapon!

Time to submit the item and complete the quest!

Zhang Yang ran back to the Middle Hall. Merlinda caught sight of him and immediately asked, "Warrior, have you succeeded?"

Zhang Yang took out the [Frozen Key] and opened the gate of the prison. At the same time, the chains on Merlinda were also unfastened. Zhang Yang then answered, "Fortunately, I did not let you down, and completed the task you assigned me!"

"What of the Staff of Prophecy?" Merlinda looked at Zhang Yang nervously.

Zhang Yang took the magic staff out from his backpack and handed it over to Merlinda and said, "The item shall returned to the owner!" He snickered to himself. If it was not a quest item but the real weapon itself, Zhang Yang would just run off with it!

Merlinda suddenly showed a relief expression, took magic staff with

both of her hands and gazed at it in excitement!

"Seven thousand years! Seven thousand years! The Staff of Prophecy has finally returned to the Elves!"

‘Ding! Merlinda has received Elf’s Celestial weapon, upgrades received!’

A golden light appeared around Merlinda, and the Level 45 Elite NPC immediately leveled up at a rapid pace!

[Merlinda - Song of the Forest] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 15,000,000

MP: 10,000,000

Defense: 1,200

Her excitement was gradually replaced with a solemn expression, and she said, "Warrior, the Elf tribe in Forest of Tanila has suffered great losses to King Arthur, we must destroy the demon as soon as possible! In such a state of emergency, we cannot afford to waste a minute!"

‘Ding! Your quest: Kill King Arthur completion requirement changed. Please assist Merlinda in destroying King Arthur together!’

After doing so many tasks, Zhang Yang was back at the starting point!

Zhang Yang nodded and agreed, "We shall set off immediately!"

Both of them ran out of the Front Hall and started summoning their mounts.

"Ao!" Merlinda’s mount was a white tiger, it was magnificent and mighty, and just as large as Whitey!

"Let’s go!"

The tiger and bear started moving their limbs, and exploded into a sprint through the forest, towards Thunderous Storm Castle.

After half an hour of rushing, both mounts stopped in front of Thunderous Storm Castle. The castle, which had been host to a massacre

not long ago, still reeked of bloodshed and anguished deaths. The castle looked like a horror movie from afar, smoking and riddled with holes!

Supposedly, monsters should have spawned around the area but currently in its story mode quest, it was completely deserted.

Merlinda and Zhang Yang reined in their mounts and slowly entered the castle. Along the way, the bodies of Elves and thieves were scattered throughout the pathway. Merlinda's face was a mix of sorrow and rage!

Both of their mounts increased their speed and reached the front of a cathedral at the top of castle. There was a huge training ground at the entrance, filled with rows of wooden targets.

King Arthur was standing in the middle of the training ground with his sword raised up like a cup of wine. He was huge! Eight elite Thieves were surrounding him and cutting the woody target with weapons for training.

"Demon, your death is coming!" Merlinda shouted zealously and dashed towards King Arthur with her white tiger.

King Arthur cracked a smile and said, "You little'uns, kill this woman!"

The eight Thieves immediately stopped their training and dashed toward Merlinda.

"Warrior, please intercept them, that demon is mine!" Merlinda turned around and loudly shouted to Zhang Yang.

Damn, every time this NPC gets so fired up and always rushes ahead, and I always end up covering her *ss! Zhang Yang grumbled to himself as he dashed forward with his Whitey. Once he entered {Charge}'s attack range, Zhang Yang immediately jumped down from his mount and dashed towards the frontmost Thief monster, activated {Blood Rage} and used {Horizontal Sweep}!

A bunch of '-3,800' damage texts popped up. Zhang Yang then followed up by using {Block}, increasing his rage points by up to 30 points, and used {Blast Wave}!

The eight Thief monsters were instantly stunned, and Merlinda quickly

broke off them and directly dashed towards King Arthur.

Zhang Yang skillfully moved around and kited the eight monsters away. He also did not forget to pay attention to the battle between Merlinda and King Arthur.

"Fool, the battlefield belongs to men and only men. Women only need to stay in bed and nurture the seeds of men into strong descendants!!" King Arthur scoffed at Merlinda, "Pathetic Elves, to actually be led by women, what a weak race!"

"Demon, then witness this weak woman sending you to hell!" Merlinda stopped 30 meters away from King Arthur. She raised her right hand and threw a {Holy Punishment} on King Arthur.

'Immune!'

King Arthur raised up the huge sword on his hand, made a loud laughter and said, "Stupid woman, this is the [Sword in the Stone] given by God, and whoever who wields this will have invincible power! Go to hell!" King Arthur bent his knees slightly, lowering himself into a horse stance, and launched himself forward, creating a shockwave and breaking the objects beneath his feet and in his surroundings!

"The Magic of Prophecy: Blast Topple!" Merlinda raised up [Staff of Prophecy].

Bang!

This sent the oncoming King Arthur flying back. He rolled on the surface ground like a rock skipping across the surface of water, smashing through ten woody targets and laying sprawled on the ground.

Wow, so this is the power of a Celestial weapon?

Zhang Yang exclaimed to himself while he was pulling the monsters.

"Ha ha ha" King Arthur immediately got up, "You may knock me over, but without causing actual harm, how far can that take you? I have [Sword in the Stone] and I will never be defeated!"

"Then you shall no longer have the [Sword in the Stone]!" Merlinda

raised her [Staff of Prophecy] once again and proclaimed in her regal voice, "The Magic of Prophecy: Deprivation!"

Shush, [Sword in the Stone] on King Arthur's hand instantly turned into a ray of silver light that shot directly into the sky and disappeared.

"Impossible!" King Arthur roared loudly, "B*tch, return me my [Sword in the Stone]!"

King Arthur roared angrily, his skin that was originally green in color flashed red and he dashed towards Merlinda.

'Ding! King Arthur has become enraged after losing [Sword in the Stone]. He will now deal and also receive double damage!'

"The Magic of Prophecy: Blast Topple!" Merlinda simply raised her staff and King Arthur was toppled over immediately. At the same time, Merlinda also cast {Punishment Ray} and a '-4,000' damage text popped up above King Arthur's head. Her attacks were still as weak as ever!

King Arthur started advancing but was toppled over again, before being stung by {Punishment Ray}. The two NPCs were repeating their actions over and over again.

Three minutes later, Zhang Yang threw a chain of life-saving skills and finally killed all eight Thief monsters. Then, he mounted his Whitey and dashed towards King Arthur.

Although Merlinda was a Yellow-Gold boss, her attacks were very weak. Zhang Yang rapidly built aggro and got the undivided attention of King Arthur.

As predicted, Merlinda was a healer through and through, she immediately cast a {Higher Regeneration} on Zhang Yang.

It still restored 5% HP every second, despite her upgraded state. After casting her {Higher Regeneration}, she repeated her actions in Underground Tower, casting {Punishment Ray} after ray at her target.

The difference now was that Zhang Yang had vastly lesser HP back then, so the 5% HP recovery did not help him much. With his massive HP now,

the 5% HP recovery was ridiculous!

Restoring him by at least 2,000 HP every second, almost every healer class player would be put to shame.

One of King Arthur's barehanded punches dealt about 6,000 damage on Zhang Yang. But the King attacked rather sporadically, once every two seconds, so if Zhang Yang used {Block} every six seconds, he would reduce the bulk of the DPS to around 2,000 which could be covered by {Higher Regeneration} easily!

On the other hand, King Arthur received double the usual damage which increased Zhang Yang's DPS to around 5,000. With such DPS, the King had his back against the ropes!

With the help of Merlinda's {Higher Regeneration}, Zhang Yang was unbeatable. It was just a matter of time when it comes to slaying King Arthur!

80%, 60%, 40%... King Arthur had 4,000,000 HP, but with the effect of receiving 100% additional damage, his HP dropped dramatically, and his HP bar became empty within six minutes.

Finally, Merlinda blasted her final {Punishment Ray}, and King Arthur cried out, crashing down onto the ground while loots continuously popped out of his body.

Although they won the battle, Merlinda remained stoic. After a moment of silence, she finally spoke up, "Warrior, thank you for your help! I have to go back to my tribe now to see my people whether they are safe, "xin lu si er ke"!"

In the Elven tongue, "xin lu si er ke" held a meaning that could be translated as "farewell".

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Kill King Arthur. Gained 1,000,000 Experience points!'

Merlinda gently patted her white tiger and white tiger took her away rapidly.

That's it?

After going through the trouble of killing a Gray-Silver boss, a Yellow-Gold boss and running all the way forth and back, the reward was 1,000,000 experience points? It was a total waste of time!

Zhang Yang let out of a sigh and picked up the loot. Although all of them were Gray-Silver equipment, he could always sell them for money. Money always brought some happiness at the very least!

[Pseudo Sword in the Stone] (Gray-Silver, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 320 - 520

Attack Interval: 2.5 seconds

DPS: 168

Use: Dispels all debuffs and causes you to be immune to all damage and effects. Lasts for 2 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

This weapon came with an invincibility effect! This was definitely a PVP weapon. Besides, if it had a 2 second invincibility effect prior to being identified; that effect would probably be extended to 3 seconds after the identification process!

This weapon looked familiar to Zhang Yang. Still, even if the invincible effect was incredible, the weapon's tier was too low. After identification, the weapon's DPS would still be very low. It was not worth giving up the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] for the [Sword in the Stone]!

This weapon could only be sold!

However, with this invincible effect, it could definitely fetch a high price!

Finally Zhang Yang's mood lightened up, and he kept the rest of Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment. Then, he suddenly caught sight of a piece of light green command order.

The moment his fingers made contact with it, the red color wordings

that was unique for system appeared in world channel.

‘Server Announcement: The first Territory Command Order has appeared, battle for territory will be held tomorrow at 7.00 pm, all players please make your preparations! Territory’s position will be at Forest of Tanila, the exact location will be announced when battle for territory starts! The battle for the territory will last for three hours, when the battle ends, the final player who holds Territory Command Order will become the lord of the territory!’

Chapter 243: Battle for Terra Nulius

F*ck, another forced trade, it activated upon touch!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, he had experienced a Territory Subjugation battle, but never a Battle for Terra Nulius¹, so his knowledge on the latter was second-hand, obtained from numerous guides and forums online. Territory Subjugation Battle and Battle for Terra Nulius look similar but they were actually different in meaning and difficulties!

The [Territory Command Order] Zhang Yang triggered was a Battle for Terra Nulius for Thunderous Storm Castle. For tomorrow's battle, Thunderous Storm Castle would become a completely neutral ground, and all the players in the China server would be allowed to participate in this battle. However, the players from the other seven major cities could only participate if they used [Destination Teleportation Scroll]s to teleport across cities, and these scrolls were extremely difficult to come across.

In the Battle for Terra Nulius, the territory itself would be neutral, and there will not be any defensive facilities, so players would be fighting each other uninterrupted. Finally, the one who held [Territory Command Order] at the end of the time limit, would become the owner of territory!

Territory Subjugation Battle were different! It would be the attempt to conquer a territory that has already been claimed by someone else!

To activate Territory Subjugation Battle, a [Territory Subjugation Order] must first be found before it could be used by a guild. After the usage has been registered, both sides had 12 hours for preparation, before battling it out for 3 hours.

If the attacking guild successfully seized the defending guild's territory hall within the time limit, they would then be the new owners of the territory.

In Territory Subjugation Battle, a defending guild could use defensive facilities which would give them a massive edge! After all, in order to seize the territory of another guild, proper price should be paid, shouldn't it?

Zhang Yang tore off [Teleportation Scroll] and thought in his mind, "If I solely rely on our own guild, it'll be too difficult for us to hold on for 3 hours. I'll have to seek for reinforcements!"

Zhang Yang gathered the gang and said, "I got the [Territory Command Order]!"

Zhang Yang thought there would be cheers among them, but he was only greeted with silence. Then Wei Yan Er said, "Ha ha, we knew it was you for sure. When the server announcement popped up, everyone started looking for you!"

Zhang Yang stared back at them awkwardly, these people had too much faith in him!

Zhang Yang asked, "Does anyone know the rules of Battle for Terra Nulius?"

"En!" Daffodil Daydream nodded and answered, "The side who owns [Territory Command Order] has an advantage since they can set up defensive positions before the battle. However, any players who die, regardless of their side, will be directly sent back to main city the main city, and they will be unable to participate any further!"

"Forget about the whole of China, White Jade Castle alone already has 6,000,000 players. Each of us will end up fighting three or four hundred people at once!" Hundred Shots interrupted.

"Not that many!" Han Ying Xue shook her head and said, "The Forest of Tanila is Level 60 map, even if Level 50 players come to this map, they will be hunted down by the monsters. Level 40 players will struggle to pass through the Frozen Sky Wasteland before even reaching Forest of Tanila! So tomorrow, we will be fighting against most Level 50 players, a small amount of Level 40 players, and if we estimate it, a total of 5,000,000 players in the whole of China fit that criteria!"

"That's still an astonishing amount!" Endless Starlight lamented.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Currently, none of them knows that I have the [Territory Command Order] and they do not know the exact

location of the new territory, so that's our headstart! Tomorrow, we will gather all Level 50 and above guild members in the Forest of Tanila first. Then everyone will enter the exact location of the new territory half an hour before the battle starts. Since no one else knows the exact location of the new territory, we are safe, even if there are spies in our guild!"

Zhang Yang paused for a while and continued, "I will contact Crimson Rage, Sky High and Lost Paradise to help us, and since there will be more territories in the future, we can provide aid in return!"

After the discussion, Zhang Yang contacted Snow Seeker via voice chat.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, are you here to invite Crimson Rage to help you defend and protect your new territory?" Snow Seeker actually stunned Zhang Yang with her words.

Zhang Yang shook his head and asked, "The system did not mention the owner of the [Territory Command Order], why do you all assume that it is me?"

"He he", Snow Seeker gently smiled and said, "When the server announced that the new territory is in the Forest of Tanila, I checked the map and realized that it is a Level 60 map. Besides you, who else is Level 60?"

Zhang Yang was about to mention that level 50 players could very well travel in that map, but most of the Level 50 and above players would not do that!

"Alright, since you guessed it correctly, if I continue lying, it would be insulting your IQ!" Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That's right, I am really going to invite Crimson Rage help us work together and protect against the enemy!"

"We are allied, I will definitely help you! But..." Snow Seeker's demure tone changed and she smiled gently.

"Alright, what do you want?"

"Guild master Zhan Yu, don't talk to me like I'm an opportunist!"

"Well, so Crimson Rage would actually help us without asking for anything in return. How generous, thank you very much!"

"Hey hey hey, you're really bold! Alright, I'll be straightforward with you. How about this. After winning the new territory, we, Crimson Rage will get 20% of your profits!" Snow Seeker proclaimed!

Damn, such a big appetite!

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head and said, "I can't do that, I still need to invite Sky High and Lost Paradise, if they ask for the same thing, then I will be left with nothing! I should just tear the [Territory Command Order] up if it turns out like that!"

"Then, guild master Zhan Yu, what's your offer?"

"If we win, guild members of Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke can use teleportation portals within the new territory without any charges!"

"Guild master Zhan Yu, you are so stingy!"

"Guild master Snow Seeker, do the counting. Five gold coins are required each time when using the teleportation portal, and you have 20,000 guild members. Every day your guild members would use it at least once. I'm waiving the teleportation fees for your entire guild. After a month, damn, you would save up millions! Besides, wherever the portal takes you would be bound to earn you even more gold!"

"Why don't you just open up a business? You have the potential!"

"Hah, so guild master Snow Seeker agrees with me, right?"

"We are allies, right?" Snow Seeker intentionally let out of a sigh, Zhang Yang was just too tricky for her.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Okay, 5.00 pm, tomorrow, please bring your people to the Forest of Tanila. Half an hour before the battle starts, I will tell you the exact location!"

"... You are really being cautious!"

"Ha ha, one can never be too cautious!"

Afterwards, Zhang Yang also contacted Sky Shaman and Crimson Fire. Both of them also supported Zhang Yang and his strength instantly skyrocketed!

Other than Lost Paradise, Sky High, Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke were all currently top guilds in White Jade Castle. The Dominators had taken a great hit, so they had be ousted from the list, barely able to still be regarded as a strong guild.

Zhang Yang spent 100 gold coins to identify his [Flawless Defense Cape] and its attributes were enhanced.

[Flawless Defense Cape] (Yellow-Gold, Cape)

HP: +120

Vitality: +30

Equipment: Absorbs 58 damage points each time you receive attacks.

Level Requirement: 60

After making some potions, Zhang Yang checked his Little Merchandize Shop's account, and was satisfied. Although [Solid Iron Bar]s were sold out, Resistance Potion was the hot-selling item now. It was only garnering him a daily profit of 300,000 gold coins, but it was a fresh item that would be bound to gain more regulars in Little Merchandize Shop, so the daily profit could rise up to 800,000 coins. Although this could not be compared with the previous [Solid Iron Bar] sales, Zhang Yang realized that profits of Little Merchandize Shop had still increased a little!

Long lasting, stable income was the long-term solution!

Since the server had announced the discovery of a new territory, a large amount of players have started searching around in Forest of Tanila, hoping that they could find the exact location in advance and gain the advantages over everyone else! However, those players who did the searching were depending on a very combustible factor -- luck. Most of the strong guilds instead focused on preparing themselves sufficiently -- a more stable determinant -- before heading for Forest of Tanila.

It was the first territory, a lot of people hoped to win it for themselves, for glory of being the first, if not for the profits that it implicated!

The next afternoon, all the guilds in the eight main cities of China server were moving in large forces and gathered in the Forest of Tanila. Although Forest of Tanila was a Level 60 map, the monsters in that map could not fight so many players. Hundreds of Level 50 and above players wildly slashed at the monsters, wiping the monsters out via sheer numbers!

Half an hour before the battle started, Zhang Yang posted the coordinates of Thunderous Storm Castle in guild channel and then informed his allies, and immediately gathered all guild members of the four guilds.

Because the system did not announce the exact coordinates of the territory or the current holder of the [Territory Command Order], several of them hung back, waiting for the final announcement. However, if Snow Seeker and some others could guess that Zhang Yang was holding [Territory Command Order] there were others who certainly had the same thoughts. Many guilds tagged along the Lone Desert Smoke envoy as they headed to the castle.

20 Minutes left before the battle started.

Zhang Yang started to set up his defenders. Thunderous Storm Castle's defensive facilities could not be used but Zhang Yang could still make use of the terrain, the moat in front of castle gate, "narrow" doors, and streets.

It would be impossible for 60,000 players to defend against 6,000,000 players in a wide and spacious zone! But, fighting in a castle with such complex architecture, a miracle was possible!

Finally, the bell rang, it was 7.00 pm!

'Server Announcement: The first new territory's coordinate is XXXXX,YYYYY, the name of the territory is Thunderous Storm Castle! Battle for Terra Nulius will last for 3 hours, the final player who holds [Territory Command Order] will become the owner of Thunderous Storm Castle! Starting from now on, Forest of Tanila will be set as special battlefield, all players will unable to access it! The players who die, will be

sent back to White Jade Castle!’

‘Server Announcement: The current player who holds [Territory Command Order] is Zhan Yu! The player who holds [Territory Command Order] will be marked on the map and will be unable to leave the area of territory!’

‘Server Announcement: Battle for Terra Nulius starts now, counting down!’

Each player in the Forest of Tanila could see the text of a timer -- "2: 59: 59" counting down at the upper left corner of their HUD!

ED Note:

1. Terra Nulius - Probably best if the term is Googled for more details. Basically means unclaimed land, or land where prior owner has relinquished claim. The literal translations of Territory Subjugation Battle and Battle for Terra Nulius were Battle for Territory Snatching and Battle for Territory. It would have been rather half-*ssed if a game coined the latter term as Battle for Unclaimed Land, or Battle for Nobody’s Land, and as much as I dislike the use of terms/words/jargons that cause hiccoughs in the flow of a reader, I decided to settle on "Terra Nulius". Anyone with World History/World War knowledge here? There may or may not have been a simpler, more accurate term. Thoughts welcome in the comments section.

Chapter 244: Battle Commences!

‘Ding! You will be marked with a special symbol because you hold a [Territory Command Order]!’

‘Ding! You cannot leave Thunderstorm Castle, otherwise the [Territory Command Order] will automatically drop!’

‘Ding! If you are killed, [Territory Command Order] will have a 100% chance of dropping!’

Suddenly, a huge green command order light appeared on the top of Zhang Yang’s head, the light beamed straight into the clouds, even ignoring buildings and obstacles. Players far away from Zhang Yang would definitely see the beacon. He was so exposed that he was practically naked!

"Ha ha ha!" Wei Yan Er could not help but laughed nonstop, out of breath and said, "Noob tank, you look like one of those death row inmates from the past, with a sign on your head and round your neck!"

Han Ying Xue and rest burst out in laughter once they heard Wei Yan Er.

"This is more like a price tag for Zhang Yang to sell his body! Hey ladies, are you all interested to bid for Little Yang? The minimum price is one gold coin!" Fatty Han patted Zhang Yang’s shoulder and said.

"Too expensive! That’s too expensive!" Wei Yan Er shook her head continuously and said, "If the price is one copper coin, I’ll pay on behalf of my cousin!"

"Damn it, cut the bullsh*t, back to your positions!" Zhang Yang shouted, forcing a straight-face, as he tried to reassert his dominance as guild leader!

The Battle for Terra Nulius has started!

Even though many guilds were still rushing over to Thunderstorm Castle from their respective locations, those guilds who already guessed Zhang Yang as the person who held [Territory Command Order] were already formed up outside Thunderstorm Castle. They would have rushed into the

castle before everything else, but were repelled! This was because there was an invisible barrier outside the gate of Thunderstorm Castle.

Now, who is going to step up to make the first move?

The name of Lone Desert Smoke had spread all over the world as Zhang Yang and his guild, Lone Desert Smoke, had recently broke through all the players in the China server. Even the players in the other seven regions also knew this legendary guild which also tore through new dungeons, with a fierce PvP reputation to boot!

Nobody was willing to step up!

Tick tock, tick tock, the time slowly passed by!

"Kill!" finally there was a guild who could not help but initiate the first attack!

Instantly, like setting off a warehouse of dynamite, more than 10 guilds worked together and started attacking Thunderstorm Castle.

"Boss, why don't we attack?" Traveling Piglet looked at Humbly Gentleman and asked. He probably hated Lone Desert Smoke as much as his leader. Their guild was almost disbanded by Lone Desert Smoke, it made the people of The Dominators extremely furious.

Humbly Gentleman looked at the huge command order light floated on top of Thunderstorm Castle, and although he could not see Zhang Yang, he could clearly see Zhang Yang's location. He sneered and replied, "What's the point of going now? Battle for Terra Nulius lasts for three hours, let the others wear themselves out first! This is not a competition of 'whosoever holds the [Territory Command Order] for the longest time wins'. There is a saying, that coming in time is better than coming early!"

"Then, when should we attack?"

"Hmph, let most of the defenders die off before we take advantage of them!"

Humbly Gentleman's idea sounded good, but he was underestimating the integrity of the defense! The entrance of Thunderstorm Castle was

narrow, it was easily defensible, and difficult to fight in, besides, the ranged attackers of four guilds were positioned at the top of castle, while melee attackers were positioned at the entrance. Moreover, many AoE skills were being used at the entrance, killing off the players who had generously bunched themselves up!

The defending side could also use the castle walls as firing cover, simply crouching down when under fire and allowing the healers behind them to recover their HP. The only way of attack the defending side was to have several ranged attackers focus fire on one target at a time, hoping to kill the target off before they could dodge or recover!

Hundreds and thousands of players passed the drawbridge. Even with millions on their side, their numbers would dwindle down to match the number of the defenders. This was not a battle that would be won solely with numbers.

The attacking side had limited options. The more they dallied or tried to form up outside the castle walls, the more fire they took from the defenders. They could only rush forward! As time slowly passed by, more and more guilds gathered and worked together. In such a large scale battle, the power of an individual player was extremely negligible, even the strongest would fall in no time. Every second, deaths occurred, signified by the flashing white lights as players were sent back to their main cities to be resurrected.

Zhang Yang traded, passing the [Territory Command Order] to Fatty Han and said, "Hold on to this, I'm going to do some killing!"

"Damn, I also want to kill people!" Fatty Han groaned.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and went away with his Whitey.

'Server Announcement: Player Slim and Handsome has obtained [Territory Command Order]!'

"F*ck, I don't want this gigolo's price tag!" Fatty Han looked at the green command order light floating over his head in dismay.

Zhang Yang came to the entrance of castle and quickly whirled his axe.

The defenders in front of him slowly died off, and finally Zhang Yang was at the fore. He swung his axe and used {Horizontal Sweep}, and instantly, a bunch of high damage text floated above the players' heads. Some critical strikes instantly brought death to some of them.

{Blast Wave}!

A conical shock wave blasted out and his targets were stunned. Zhang Yang and his people took the chance to finish them off, pushing the defense line forwards by four meters!

"That's Lone Desert Smoke's guild master, quickly kill him!"

"The one who is riding a bear is Zhan Yu!"

"F*ck, he's powerful! Focus your fire on him!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as Spellcasters were ill-suited for fast paced assaults as Spellcasters needed to be stationary in order to cast their spells. The players behind them would constantly push them forwards interrupting their casting progress. Thus, they could only use instant casting spells, making them rather useless.

Therefore, those who were at the forefront were Warriors, Knights and Thieves, melee attackers! Faced with physical damage attackers, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear. With his high defense, anyone managing to inflict more than 1,000 damage on him in a single hit would already be a powerful foe!

However, Zhang Yang had 40,000 HP. He could hack and slash at leisure. He also had the backing of four healers, including Han Ying Xue!

Like an ultimate God of war, Zhang Yang stood at the entrance of the castle, completely halting the progress of the attackers! Zhang Yang was just like the Zhang Fei of the past, single-handedly blocking an entire passageway!

"Hurry up, Spellcasters come forward. Kill that Zhan Yu!"

Various guild masters ushered their spellcasters forward. When facing a tank with such high defense, it was pointless to send melee attackers to

attack Zhang Yang!

The front line of attacking side was changed to Spellcasters instead of melee attackers. However, Zhang Yang was not stupid, he simply fell back when he saw them approaching. The ranged attackers above his castle ramparts took the opportunity to cast AoE skills, wiping out the Spellcasters!

Defenders had the advantage of engaging with melee attacks on ground level, while assaulting the enemy with ranged attackers on a higher level. It resulted in a multi-layered attack that was devastating to the attackers. Such firepower was almost double or triple that of the attackers!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel relieved that this was not a Level 100 Battle for Terra Nulius! Level 100 players could use flying mounts, totally bypassing any obstacle at ground level!

The entrance of Thunderstorm Castle was like a meat grinder that claimed the lives of several players within the first hour! However, the number of attackers still greatly outnumbered the defenders. The attacking side took out a defender for every 10 to 40 casualty, relentless assaulting the defenders. They finally broke through the entrance of Thunderstorm Castle!

"Retreat!" Zhang Yang raised his axe, and they fell back to the courtyard, taking advantage of the narrow drawbridge that could be used as a bottleneck against the attackers! However, without the high ground for the defenders to launch attacks from above, they had lost considerable firepower!

Luckily, the purpose of defending side was not to kill all enemies but to hold on for three hours!

Looking at the army that was pouring in like ants, Zhang Yang thought of Princess Serena. If only he could invite Princess Serena and use {Sword of Life and Death}, they would be eliminated!

"Retreat and fighting in groups, try to use the castle's terrain!" Zhang Yang was standing at the back. There were seven routes that could lead to the top of castle, where Fatty Han was. Fatty Han was holding [Territory

Command Order] and the green command order light served as a lighthouse for the attackers!

It was an all-out brawl on the streets now!

Fortified with the HP of his mount, he went wild. {Shared Life} increased his HP up to more than 40,000, he had strong damage resistance and four to five healers constantly followed him around, he was a force to be reckoned with!

However, with his power alone, he could not block all enemies as seven routes led to Fatty Han's location and one of the routes' defense lines had already collapsed. Fatty Han was now at risk, and the tide of battle could be changed in an instant!

Hundred Shots in the thick of it all, managing the defense of several routes. He would constantly divide the manpower between them all, reinforcing those that needed help, taking away those who had nothing to do.

Here's to victory!

Lone Desert Smoke and the rest of the guilds had been set on lasting for 3 hours, rather than killing off all their attackers. That goal was simply too unrealistic! Currently, they only needed to hold on for another 1 hour 52 minutes 37 seconds!

"Zhan Yu, I never thought that we'd meet again so soon!" One Sword Stroke tore through a mass of defenders, atop his blood-red dire wolf, his eyes focused on Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Cut the bullsh*t, aren't you here to grab [Territory Command Order]? Don't pretend to be so noble, let's fight and I will defeat you once again!"

Wei Yan Er clapped her hands, laughed and yelled, "Noob tank, straightforward huh!"

"Hmph!" One Sword Stroke snorted angrily, patted his mount and dashed towards Zhang Yang.

"Looks like you can't wait to die!" Zhang Yang coldly said, swung his battle axe and dashed towards One Sword Stroke as well.

{Destructive Smash}!

In this chaotic battle, maneuverability became irrelevant, they could only rely on firepower and healing effects, therefore, Zhang Yang had to take the full force of One Sword Stroke's {Destructive Smash}, incurring a debuff that reduced healing effects on him by 75%!

Let's not forget that before Zhang Yang's rebirth, One Sword Stroke was the only Warrior in China server, who completed the Level 30 class quest in S difficulty!

"Focus fire on Zhan Yu, his healing effects have been debuffed by three quarters, he'll have a hard time recovering!" One Sword Stroke yelled loudly.

ED Note:

1. Romance of the Three Kingdoms - In the battle of Chang Ban, Zhang Fei, one of Liu Bei's generals held back the entire army of Cao Cao back momentarily, buying time for his charge to escape. He held a river and broke bridges down; looking fiercely and shaking his spear, shouting, "I am Zhang Fei. Come and battle me to the death!" None of Cao Cao's men dared to go near him.

Chapter 245: Seizing the Territory

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Well done, One Sword Stroke, but don't forget that you are also carrying the same negative effect as well! Focus your firepower on One Sword Stroke and take him out!"

Both of their {Destructive Smash} had the same effect, the threat was just too deadly!

Instantly, both sides focused fire on Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke, healers from both sides beginning a race of their own as they expended their mana in healing their leading tanks!

Face to face, axe against axe, shield against shield, titan against titan!

Arrows flew across the sky, spells tore through the air, the scene was marvelous!

Although both Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke were super tanks, further embolstered by Battle Mounts to boost their maximum health points, they were losing health quickly! {Destructive Smash} simply removed the potency of the healers, making it extremely difficult to retain their HP. But in terms of equipment, Zhang Yang had a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment. His shield was slightly out of place, being a level 50 equipment, but it was also another Yellow-Gold equipment! His mount was also a Yellow-Gold! What does One Sword Stroke have to answer to that?!

When Zhang Yang's health bar was down to 47%, while One Sword Stroke's health bar had already gone down to 20%!

The consecutive lose of health points would only mean both guardians would have infinite rage points at their disposal! The moment the health bar of One Sword Stroke fell below 20%, Zhang Yang's icon of {Killing Cleave} lit up!

Full rage, {Killing Cleave}!

‘-34,600!’

A horrifying numerical value appeared right on top of One Sword

Stroke's head, instantly taking all his remaining health points away from him!

One Sword Stroke instantly turned into a stream of white light, the shock and disbelief clear in his eyes, as he was directly sent back to his main city!

Everyone was shocked!

30,000+ in one hit, was he still a freaking human?

Zhang Yang could not believe it himself as well, so he quickly stole a glance at the battle record: 'Your {Killing Cleave} is a critical hit, overlaid with {One Lucky Hit} onto One Sword Stroke, a damage of 34600 points (Reduction of 8800 points, absorption of 600 points)!'

So it was the combined effect of {Killing Cleave} and {One Lucky Hit}, creating a damage that was six times higher than the initial value!

Such a unlucky person, Zhang Yang sighed quietly for One Sword Stroke. He was recording the whole battle. If that clip of his recording ever made it on the official website, surely there would be an uproar among the players!

"Noob tank, what the heck did you just do?!"

"Critical attack of {Killing Cleave} and {One Lucky Hit}!" Zhang Yang posted the description of the skill {Killing Cleave} on the party channel.

Wei Yan Er immediately widened her eyes and said, "If a two-handed weapon did that under the same circumstances, with a critical {One Lucky Hit}, my damage would exceed 50,000, or even 60,000!"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and said, "For a character like yourself, who can't even get a critical attack after a millennium, what are the odds of {One Lucky Hit} and critical attack happening at the same time for you?"

"Wa! Noob tank, you are so mean! You too, cousin sister, you are just so mean!"

Retreat! Retreat! Retreat!

Although that 30,000+ damage hit from his battle axe had bolstered the

morale of his guild, but still, one guild was not enough to hold against the assaults of millions of players. He could only order his forces to continue retreating to the peak of the castle!

The numbers on his side were rapidly dropping!

It was still 1 hour 22 minutes 12 seconds away till the end of the great battle!

Under the amazing coordination of Hundred Shots, defenders from all seven routes were able to fall back unhindered, all of them halfway through the distance. However, out of the 63,000 defenders, they were left with 25,000, and this number was still dropping as rapidly as water from a ruptured vessel!

Outside the fortress walls, Humbly Gentleman grinned sinisterly and said, "Brothers in arms, previously we were oppressed by Lone Desert Smoke until we could not even lift up our heads! We were once kings and queens among the guilds in countless online games, and no one was above us, all worshiped us, so what say you, do you accept such humiliation?"

"No!" thousands of the members of The Dominators were roaring!

"Do we silently accept humiliations and insults, and allow others to thread on us?"

"No!"

"Now, this is our best chance to get our vengeance! Kill, kill all of those b*tches in Lone Desert Smoke, and reclaim the glory that was once ours!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

"Kill all the members of Lone Desert Smoke, and claim the [Territory Command Order]! Reclaim our Dominator's Honor!"

"Rawgh!"

Thousands of people were roaring in chorus, stomping their feet against the ground as they charged forwards to the Thunderstorm Castle. Despite being such a hypocrite, Humbly Gentleman knew his way around the hearts of others, being a veteran guild master with several years of

experience beneath his belt!

There were many other guilds with similar plans as The Dominators, and they had carried out their late assaults at different times! The Dominators knew it was time to move. If they were any later, there wouldn't be anything left for them!

One big wave after another, Lone Desert Smoke had lost many of their players! The enemy still outnumbered them greatly, a large crowd still waiting outside the castle walls

Retreat! Retreat again!

40 minutes remained, and the defenders had fallen back so far along the seven routes that one fifth of them were already in the hall where Fatty Han was located!

"Zhan Yu, we're totally out of reserve players!" Hundred Shots frantically cried out.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "All defenders, fall back to the hall! We'll use the doorway as our last bottleneck!"

"Alright!"

Hundred Shots began to coordinate the troops, and the defenders totally turned around and marched to the hall. All this while they had been engaged in combat as they slowly backpedaled at the same time, intending to reserve their strength as much as possible!

The Dominators had waited for some time after the latecomers had made their way in. But they were surprised to find that the castle was still full of people, each street were crowded with players squeezing against each other. It had become a fool's dream to rush in unhindered, and claim the territory as their own! Unless of course, if they were willing to put aside everything and start killing all the players who were in their way!

But if they really did that, they would be provoking millions of players, signing their death warrants!

The initially determined face of Humbly Gentleman instantly fell! What

is this madness! How could there be so many people here? How are they going to snatch the Territory Command Order now? There was only 30 minutes left until the battle ends, and even if they were all given three hours more, they might not even get a bloody path in front of them to even reach the location of the Territory Command Order, let alone fight for it!

Technically, those who had charged ahead first at least had a higher chance of obtaining the Territory Command Order than these cunning ones who have grossly underestimated the scale of the crowd. What did people like Humbly Gentleman stand to gain in the end? They were not getting any free meals any time soon!

"Boss, now... What should we do?" the members of The Dominators slowly turned to their leader.

"What else is there to do? Let's charge forward with our might!" Humbly Gentleman was slouching in disappointment!

If they had actually met their enemies in combat, losing would not be very demoralizing, knowing that they tried their best! But now, to lose before the battle had even begun for them, nobody would be pleased about it. They stared at Humbly Gentleman, unable to hide their discontent!

At this point, his members were beginning to question his leadership!

Retreat! Retreat! Retreat!

When Zhang Yang and the others had retreated up to the highest location of the castle, the cathedral, only 1,634 members remained!

"Into the church! Everyone, into the church!" Zhang Yang commanded in a loud voice.

Fortunately the church was pretty large, capable of taking in more than 2,000 people!

"Kill!" the players from all other guilds were surrounding the church while shouting in loud voices.

Zhang Yang laughed loudly, as he and Endless Starlight blocked the

narrow doorway, forming an extremely sturdy meatshield!

The entrance of the church was a doorway that led to a hallway of the same size that was about 15 meters long, with a width of not more than 4 meters. In the middle of the path, there is a horizontal wall. That part of the path was slightly more spacious than the other parts, and players were required to go around from both sides, like air going around a moving windscreen. Beyond that would be the vast openness of the church. Zhang Yang and the other tanks held their ground at the end of the entrance, leaving only the narrow path for the enemies, forming a perfect defensive formation. Anyone who rushes over will have to withstand the attack from the spellcasters and the strafing shots of the hunters behind the tanks, leading to even more casualties!

Because it was an indoor environment, Zhang Yang was unable to ride on his mount, his maximum health points had been steeply reduced to only 26060. However, the limited space also hindered the enemy, and they were only able to come in small numbers at a time!

Relying on the special terrain of the path, although the numbers of players on the side of the Lone Desert Smoke were outnumbered beyond a thousand to one, they were able to hold their ground. With hundreds of them using spell attacks with splash effects, it was a total death sentence for those who charged in, and there was no room at all to bargain with the results!

"Stop! Stop! Stop!" many leaders of their own guilds immediately tried to prevent further casualties, as charging in blindly would only mean using their numbers to fill up a bottomless pit. Even if they continued charging in for the next 3 hours, they would never make further progress!

A change of tactics was required!

"All thieves sneak in, use your {Stealth}!"

But... Zhang Yang had already predicted that it would come to this, so as instructed, the Hunters kept bombarding the entrance with {Barrage}! It consumed a fair bit of arrows, but they had already been promised a fine sum of allowance at the end of the battle.

The {Stealth} of the thieves were completely wasted as they were immediately exposed and killed in turn!

"All knights, charge in and use your {Sacred Protection}, we must open up a path!"

The opposition immediately switched to a new tactic.

It was only 21 minutes left until the battle ends!

After some redeployment, hundreds of knights walked right out of the crowd, Guardians, Templar and Sacred Knight, all sorts of classes were present.

"Charge!"

The knights went around the 'wind shield' and immediately, they activated their {Sacred Protection}, charging right into the human shield that was formed by ZHang Yang and his gang.

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

Carrying {Sacred Protection} on them, the knights were glittering in gold complexion, like the statues of immortal gods, ignoring all damage, all negative effects, directly colliding with the human shield created by Zhang Yang and the others!

It was a huge impact, an unstoppable force meeting an immovable object!

When players clashed into each other, the tendency of being knocked back would be determined by the strength attributes of both sides.

Gong! Gong! Gong!

That moment both sides collided into each other, men and horses were immediately thrown off their feet, the perfect defense circle was suddenly left with a few gaps!

The players of the opposition were like ants that tasted blood, and they

poured through the gaps! The defensive formation was slowly torn apart!

It was only 14 minutes until the battle ended!

"Kill that fat f*ck! He's got the Command order!" the players were shouting endlessly.

The remaining time was running out, and everyone turned their sights onto Fatty Han.

"Tighten up the defense, block the entrance, don't let anyone else enter!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly, "Fatty, pass me the Territory Command Order!"

Fatty Han uttered a reply, as he squeezed his way over to Zhang Yang, passing the order.

'Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has acquired the Territory Command Order!'

"Kill Zhan Yu!"

The players were like a hive of bees, switching their targets to Zhang Yang.

The chaotic battle had begun!

The players who managed to squeeze in were from a variety of guilds from the eight main cities, some of them possibly allies, but most of the players were definitely fighting for themselves. The Lone Desert Smoke elites kept their calm, casting AoE skills at calculated areas. In return, those players furiously fired back with their own AoEs, inflicting most Lone Desert Smoke casualties, but inadvertently hitting even more of their own!

"Sun of the beach! Why did you hit me?"

"For f*ck's sake, you were hitting me as well, weren't you?"

In the massive field of AoE bombardments, the attackers were suffering greater losses than the defenders!

But there was a large number of players on the outside that would

constantly replenish the attackers within the hall. On the other hand the numbers on Zhang Yang's side were slowly but surely dwindling down!

Seven minutes!

Following the reduction in the numbers of the players in the church, Zhang Yang found himself quickly surrounded by the enemy. He was still afflicted with {Destruction Smash}, making it difficult for him to recover! His health bar was beginning to flash red at the danger line!

{Blessing Protection}!

Endless Starlight waved his hand, throwing a spell onto Zhang Yang, instantly slowing the process down. But now Endless Starlight was taking heavy damage!

This was the Defender's version of 'Sacrifice', it was not a 100% damage transference, only taking on 50% of their target's inflicted damage, but it had a longer duration of 10 seconds!

The other guardians and defenders were inspired by his action, taking their own respective turns to activate their {Sacrifice} and {Blessing Protection} on Zhang Yang, It gave Zhang Yang the strength to stand firm, towering like a mountain peak!

However, their sacrifice was paid heavily for, as more and more tanks on Zhang Yang's side fell!

Three minutes to go, Lone Desert Smoke was left with only 329 members!

Two minutes left!

The Lone Desert Smoke was left with only 29 members remaining!

"Haha, the time is just right. The territory is mine now!"

"You should just f*ck off for f*ck's sake!"

"You should be the one f*cking off!"

One minute left!

{Shadow of the Void} activated!

With a shoof, Zhang Yang ran right out of the big church, using his 20 seconds of boosted movement speed to get away from his attackers!

40 seconds left!

{Rearm}, {Shadow of the Void} activated again!

Another 20 seconds passed, Zhang Yang had managed to find himself a quiet and peaceful corner, and he began to summon his [Gold-Eared Bear King]!

"There! Over there!" the moment Zhang Yang revealed himself, that large green pendant immediately hovered over his head!

Leaping atop his mount, Zhang Yang's health bar was instantly boosted up to 40,000 points!

All players were gushing towards him like a fierce tidal wave of tsunami!

{Shield Wall}!

{Shadow of Merlinda}!

{Block}!

{Berserker's Heal}!

Zhang Yang practically threw every emergency skill he had at disposal!

18, 17, 16... 10!

The health bar of Zhang Yang was nearly depleted!

Shoof! Just as he was about to drop dead, he miraculously disappeared once again!

The players frantically looked about, and saw the green pendent beaming into the sky far in the distance, pointing out the new location of Zhang Yang!

That was --- the teleportation of the [Lover's Charm: Yang]!

Zhang Yang had given the [Lover's Charm: Ying] to Sun Xin Yu earlier on, asking her to enter stealth mode and hide somewhere safe, only activating it at the last moment!

"Quickly! That side!"

The tidal wave changed directions and headed for the new location of Zhang Yang!

9, 8, 7... 3, 2, 1!

It was too late!

‘Server Announcement: The Battle for the Territory Command Order has ended, the final possessor of the Territory Command Order is --- Player Zhan Yu! The Thunderstorm Castle now classifies as the territory of this player, everyone will be sent back to your own main cities!’

"No---"

All the players were voicing out in protest, but as the white lights flashed, everyone was forcefully sent back to their respective main cities by the system.

Looking at his residual health points of 48 points only, Zhang Yang let out a long breath, laying down on the furry body of Whitey.

Chapter 246: Territory Construction

‘Ding! Congratulations on becoming the territory owner of Thunderstorm Castle, you can now select to rename the territory, proceed?’

No wonder he was unfamiliar with the name ‘Thunderstorm Castle’, having never encountered it in his previous life, it turns out that the name of territories could be changed!

Zhang Yang was lazy, so he said, "No change necessary!"

Unexpectedly, the system did not continue on with a tutorial on managing the territory, but instead, took him directly to the management interface.

In his previous life, as he had not managed to conquer a territory before, therefore, he was currently on uncharted waters, he would need to slowly feel his way around and learn more about it the old-fashioned way.

Of course, anyone would know at a glance that the first thing to do was to set up the teleportation circle, it was one of the main appeals of owning a territory. It would provide convenience to the members of his own guild while acquiring a large income at the same time!

‘Ding! You have chosen to build a Teleportation Circle, each Teleportation Circle requires a sum of 1,000,000 gold pieces to build, and each Teleportation Circle can only be directed to one of the eight main cities in China region! After building the Teleportation Circle, you can set up the fare for using the Teleportation Circle!’

Zhang Yang immediately took out 1,000,000 gold pieces, passed it over to the system, and built a Teleportation Circle that channeled straight to the White Jade City.

He would hold off on building Teleportation Circles for the other main cities, as the benefits simply outweighed the costs! As the bank and auction houses of the cities had become interconnected, as were the system-run Teleportation Circles in the cities themselves which were free-

of-charge. Getting to any one main city was as good as getting to any other main city!

Besides, Zhang Yang also had personal reasons for his own Teleportation Circle! By opening a Teleportation Circle that took players to White Jade City, players would emerge in the city at a location that was just opposite his Little Merchandize Shop. Even if 1% of the non-White Jade City players who went through the portal visited his shop out of convenience...

Hehe! Zhang Yang could not hold it anymore and started laughing, his glee unfiltered as he spoke on the guild channel, "Members who have achieved level 50 and above, come over to the Thunderstorm Castle and set your teleportation scrolls to the Teleportation Circle. You will not have to run back and forth anymore, reaching Thunderstorm Castle would be as good as reaching White Jade City!"

"Yeah! Hail to the guildmaster!"

"Guildmaster, I love you so much!"

"Let's go, go, go! Quickly, onto the plane!"

The next instant, players above level 50 were rushing to the teleportation spot.

Zhang Yang also contacted Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman and Crimson Fire, informing them on the completion on the construction of the Teleportation Circle, inviting them to use it to their hearts' content!

He had set the teleportation fare for the members of these four guilds to zero, while the fare for others was set at 1 gold piece. However when it came to the Dominators, Pride and Axe Gang, the fare was hiked up to 10 gold pieces! It would make no difference to Zhang Yang if they were to use it or not!

The Teleportation Circle was not an inexhaustible source of income, it required a large amount of magic crystals to be powered up on a daily basis, which meant that the owner was required to buy 'energy' from the system. Basically, the owner himself was being taxed by the system itself!

The magic crystal is extremely expensive, costing 10,000,000 gold pieces each, but fortunately, it could last for 10 days, still roping a surplus! Currently, there are more than 60,000,000 players in the China region, and approximately 5,000,000 to 6,000,000 players who were above level 50. Each of the players would just need to use the teleportation once per day, which would cover the expenses within two day or so!

As more players achieve level 50, his Teleportation portal would be accessed far more frequently! Of course, more territories will also appear in the game, he would not hold this monopoly for long!

After setting up the Teleportation Circle, Zhang Yang turned his attention towards the defense line of the territory!

The subjugation of a territory did not solve all problems however! As long as any guilds comes in possession of a [Territory Subjugation Order], they could easily trigger a Territory Subjugation Battle. Although Lone Desert Smoke is a powerful force, attackers could gain access to siege engines and lay waste to players!

Therefore, it was necessary to set up defensive weapons of their own!

Firstly, the iconic Magic Cannons that had been previewed during the quest back then! That toy was a bundle of pure awesomeness, boasting a ranged attack that reached hundreds of meters, having its explosive attacks covering areas as wide as several tens of square meters. Capable of instantly killing players, it was a must-have!

Of course, such power would be met with an equivalent cost! Each Magic Cannon required 5,000,000 gold pieces, along with the [Power Source Crystals] needed to power it up for 1,000,000 gold pieces each. Each Crystal would provide enough power for the cannons to fire up to ten times.

This meant that one round would cost 100,000 gold pieces, not exactly something that anyone could afford!

For the greater good however, it was a necessary investment!

Zhang Yang purchased two Magic Cannons and two [Power Source

Crystals], watching his money gush out. He could not help himself but thought that if it were up to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, they would be in a stressful dilemma as they tried to weigh the cost and benefits of the cannons!

Now that the main firepower had been set up, he had other defense to attend to. The game was simply merciless when it came to the retention of wealth! From time to time, monsters will be spawned to harass the otherwise peaceful castle. Their purpose was to serve as fodder for the insanely expensive cannons to waste their rounds on! To prevent that however...

Zhang Yang hired an army of NPCs --- 100 elite-grade knights, each of them requiring a monthly salary of 10,000 gold pieces. Of course, it wasn't like they needed the money -- it was for the system once again.

These NPC were all level 65, but were upgradeable at additional cost. Their levels were limited by the level of the owner of the castle. For instance, the castle owner had to at least be level 70, in order to level these NPC up to level 75. Similarly, players had to attain level 80 before these NPC be leveled-up to level 85.

These NPC would be able to ward off monsters and maintain order and security within the territory. They were basically similar to the guards of the main cities, only being slightly inferior!

Thirdly, the city defenses itself!

The ramparts of the castle like the walls and main gate were actually be targetable and vulnerable to attacks. At level 1, the city gate would only have 1,000,000 health points, 1000 defense points, 1000 magic defense points, but when upgraded to level 2, it would have 10,000,000 health points, 2500 defense points and 2500 magic defense points!

The tougher the city defense got, even if under fire from some devastating siege engine, it would buy additional time for the defenders!

As Subjugation battles were limited by time, the defenders would only have to hold their ground rather than wipe out the attackers!

Unfortunately, upgrading the city defense would require all sorts of mineral ores, and the higher the level, the higher the quality and quantity of such required ores. They were far away from being able to upgrade their city defenses to level 2 at the moment!

NPCs such as the equipment repairing blacksmith, item sellers, were not immediately available, nor could they be simply bought -- players would be required to complete a series of specific quests to acquire these NPCs. Zhang Yang gave it some thought, realizing that they would only be detrimental to the profiteering of the Telephone Circle, as the NPCs would only remove the need to teleport back to the main cities for such services!

With everything almost settled, Zhang Yang linked his teleportation scroll to the Teleportation Circle of Thunderstorm Castle before heading back to the White Jade City through the Teleportation Circle and began shouting across the regional channels, "Fellow players, the Thunderstorm Castle within the Forest of Tanila is currently facilitated with a Teleportation Circle, as long as you link your teleportation scroll settings to the circle, you will suffer the long hard journeys no more! The teleportation fee is super cheap, only requiring one gold piece!"

After shouting at White Jade City, he then teleported to the other seven main cities to continue his promotion.

Only the foolish or the prideful would forego such a convenient means of transportation! Zhang Yang would not have to go out of his way promoting this service of his, he would only have to make it known once.

In terms of location, Thunderstorm Castle was based in the level 60 ranges of maps, located in between the level 50 and level 70 maps, while also having similar level 60 maps on both its left and right sides. Being in the middle of the maps that varied by 30 levels would keep most players within the region for 4 to 5 months!

How lucrative!

Before the second territory appears, this Teleportation service would stand to earn Zhang Yang lots of profits! Even with a second territory around, or even the third territory appearing, it would not deteriorate

much!

Zhang Yang then rewarded his guild members for their efforts and contributions, spending a great deal of money. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue gazed at him with glittering eyes as they watched him.

Such generosity only bolstered the morale and ensured the loyalty of his members! Zhang Yang's reputation as a leader grew far and wide. Furthermore, by also being the long-standing number one guild when it came to the progress of dungeoneering, the members carried the name of the guild with pride and honor that went beyond the fair and warm treatment of the guild.

The moment he returned from his tour around the eight main cities, he saw many players rushing over to Thunderstorm Castle, linking their teleportation scrolls there as per recommended.

Beep beep beep, the voice communication device suddenly alerted him to a call from Humbly Gentleman.

"Zhan Yu, you god damn fascist!" Humbly Gentleman roared.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "How am I a fascist now?"

"Others are paying 1 gold piece for your teleportation circle, why are we paying it tenfold?" Humbly Gentleman demanded.

10 gold pieces was only 9 gold pieces more than 1, but it devastated the psyche of The Dominators, driving a massive wedge between the two parties!

Zhang Yang grinned silently in his heart, this hypocrite really does not know any shame! He did not expect him to perform such a humiliating act before this, but the two sides were far from burying the hatchet. Having died once, Zhang Yang would never spare a single tiger cub or puppy and risk regretting it afterwards, he would be determined to see his opponents to their end!

He softly replied, "I see. So you have a voice louder than everyone else, and a fortune greater than everyone else. 10 gold pieces too little for you? How about 100 gold pieces then?"

"You---" Humbly Gentleman was speechless!

When there are competing companies, the consumers held the power of the Gods! However, when there's monopoly in play, the consumers would be mere offerings!

Humbly Gentleman felt like slapping the man in the face. But the Teleportation circle would save them from a 3-hour journey, he could not afford to provoke Zhang Yang any further!

He had to endure it!

"Well done, you!" Humbly Gentleman viciously cut off the voice communication with Zhang Yang.

Either way, he could not allow his members to bear the burden of paying 9 extra gold pieces. Mutiny would be imminent if he kept this up! Arrogant and conceited as he was, he was still a guild leader with a functioning brain!

He would have to dig money from his own pocket to subsidize the additional payload!

Humbly Gentleman made up his mind determinedly, but when the number of 10,000+ members came across his mind, he quickly shivered! It would be impossible for him to pay for them all on a daily basis, so he could only lay out instructions to his members to limit their usage of the circle, while also offering a subsidy once every 10 days!

Even so, he would still have to pay about 300,000 gold pieces. Humbly Gentleman felt an excruciating pain in his heart, his face turning pale green!

Why would this Humbly Gentleman always offer himself as tribute for Zhang Yang to step on? Zhang Yang shook his head, tore a teleportation scroll and went back to the Thunderstorm Castle, deciding to get on with his grinding.

With the possession of this major-profit-earning territory, the profits from crafting potions and other items had become insignificant. Zhang Yang now had to maintain his lead in levels, for if and when a territory of

a level 80 map appears, he would be the first to claim it!

Chapter 247: Fire Chocobos

Territories, indeed, gave much convenience to the players, especially their proprietors.

If they had to travel by foot and rented flying Gryphons, the journey would take 3 hours! During that 3 hours of riding the Gryphon, players wouldn't be able to perform any actions, other than to chat with each other. If players below level 60 intended to set off to their appropriately leveled maps from Thunderstorm Castle, they could easily force their way through the slightly over-leveled monsters if they worked in parties. It would only take them about 40 minutes to reach their own maps, saving a lot of time!

Therefore, a large number of players had linked their teleportation scroll to Thunderstorm Castle, and the fare of one gold piece could easily be earned back within an hour. It was both money and time-saving!

Three days had passed, Zhang Yang took a good look at the financial income of the territory. He could not help himself but to rub his eyes in amazement!

10,680,000 gold pieces!

Although he had anticipated some ridiculous amount, this far exceeded his expectations! Netting an average of 3,000,000 gold pieces on a daily basis, it quickly covered the cost of the [Power Source Crystal] in 3 days, with the remaining 4 days being nothing else but profit!

Furthermore, only 5,000,000 to 6,000,000 players were in the leveling bracket of 50 and up. What would happen when that number increases by tenfold?

However, since the first territory has appeared, more territories would be bound to follow in the near future! Whatever Zhang Yang planned to do, was to master the basics of setting a perfect territory, and perhaps add in the equipment repairing blacksmith to add to the appeal of his castle. Mechandize selling NPCs were not as heavily prioritized. Surely some players would have come up with the idea of selling such supplies in the

Territory themselves.

The benefits were humongous, but Zhang Yang could not possibly keep it all to himself. He immediately gave an enormous raise to the salaries of the members in the management level of the guild, and every core player, so much so that even their very gait as they walked about had a noticeable spring to it! The career of a professional player was much scorned by the other members of society, and they would often live by a "don't ask, don't tell" basis, however, the players of the Lone Desert Smoke can now righteously proclaim that, "I am a professional player!"

Core players were earning up to 50,000 a month, on par with the income of executive white collars, so these players could carry themselves with the same amount of dignity, right?

At his command, Hundred Shots had led some members of the guild over to claim the Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal as their own. There, he allowed players who possessed the Herb Picking profession to pick up some [Frozen Ice Weeding] once every two hours. However, there was no sign of the recipe for [Beginner Mobility Potion] dropping, so the [Frozen Ice Weeding] were stored in the warehouse at the moment, eating up its storage space!

As the territory now had an owner, NPCs who provided territory quests started appearing. However, the territory quests required players to be above level 60. Currently, only Zhang Yang alone qualified for the quests.

The forth day after owning the territory, Zhang Yang accepted a few territory quests, summoned his Whitey and sped away.

The territory quests were simple, it just involved killing a few bears, slaying a few wolves, clearing out some undeads, all to provide safety for the territory. The three quests that Zhang Yang took required the killing of 100 Red Flaming Tigers, 100 Bloody Scarlet Wolves, and 100 Flatland Chocobos.

He quickly completed the quests to kill the tigers and to kill the wolves. At the moment, he was on his way to the Northwest part of the forest in search of the Flatland Chocobos.

"Gu---gu---gu---!" a strange, birdlike sound was uttered, and a bird that dwarfed even the ostrich appeared right in front of Zhang Yang. Its whole body was covered with colourful feathers, beneath it was a pair of thick legs that each ended in three razor-sharp claws. It had a wings, but appeared to be incapable of flight, along with two strangely large eyes that occupied two thirds of the surface area of its entire head.

[Forest of Tanila, Chocobo] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 63

HP: 6,300

Defense: 60

Zhang Yang rode up to it on his Whitey, and effortless dispatched the Chocobo. It dropped some feathers that were worth a few pieces of copper coins which he completely ignored.

Slaying them was no problem, but these birds were rather hard to come across, and Zhang Yang took more than one hour just to come across one of them. After slaying 90 of them, they appeared to have vanished altogether. No matter how hard he tried to find the remaining Chocobos, the numbers just could not be scraped to completion. He decided to venture on into the deeper part of the forest.

93... 96... 98, 99, only one left!

Hoof!

A shadow blurred with the myriad of five colors suddenly entered the edge of his vision, and Zhang Yang reacted almost instantly, instinctively activating {Block} and placing his shield before him.

{Block}!

A particularly large Chocobo collided right into Zhang Yang, the feathers of which had an iridescent quality, magnificently sparkling in the light! It was gorgeous!

[King of Fire Chocobo] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 700

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, and with a tap on Whitey, he answered with a charge of his own.

With his current equipment, even a Gray-Silver boss that relied on physical attacks such as this was a pushover for him! And if it is a boss that had magical attacks, he would simply swap places with his mount, juggling the aggro between them, while using {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from battle while his mount occupied the enemy. He would still be able to single-handedly take such a boss down, only having to put in a little more effort!

Bosses that relied on physical attacks would be a total piece of cake!

In less than 6 to 7 minutes, this Gray-Silver boss crumpled to the ground in a beautiful heap, dropping a few pieces of Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment.

Zhang Yang leisurely grabbed the loots and placed them in his backpack. That boss was a good omen, as his counter now read that he has killed 100 Chocobo in total! He can finally head back! Just as he was taking out a teleportation scroll, Zhang Yang caught sight of something that laid at the trunk of a large tree. He uttered an 'eh' in surprise, quickly stepping out of the small circle that was beginning to form under his feet.

Just beneath the big tree facing him was a huge bird nest. The miniature head of a Chocobo had stuck it's head out to look around, its little wings flapping, as it weakly cried out, 'Gu--- gu--- gu---'. The whole body of the Chocobo was covered in fluffy, short feathers which were milky yellow in colour, a far cry from its adult brethren who were dazzlingly beautiful!

[Fire Chocobo Chick] (Rare Gray-Silver Battle Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

A [Battle Mount]! And it was a Gray-Silver grade!

It was no wonder why the King of Fire Chocobo initiated an attack on him, he was trespassing upon its nest!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his voice communication device and said, "Little girl, quickly! Call me brother!"

"Stupid noob tank, are you trying to take advantage of me, you are still 1,000 years too far from that!" Wei Yan Er snapped back.

Zhang Yang chuckled and replied, "I just came across a [Battle Mount]! Oh, did I forget to mention that it's Gray-Silver?"

"Wow, where? Where is it?" her tone quickly changed, and she anxiously pressed him for answers.

"Call me brother!"

"Heck, I'll call you brother-in-law!" Wei Yan Er was talking sweetly.

Han Ying Xue was definitely charming, but it was the type of deadly charm that only a siren would produce. A shiver ran down his spine and he quickly said, "No thank you, I cannot afford to have her, you can save that name for someone else! I'll activate the [Lover's Charm: Yang], use the [Lover's Charm: Yin] to get over here now!"

"Aww, sister Sun snatched it back from me! She's so stingy, she's not letting up at all!" Wei Yan Er pouted.

"Fine, fine, stop grumbling already. Drop whatever you're doing, I'm adding you to party. Better hurry, or I'll catch it myself!"

"Don't! Stupid noob tank! Wait for me! If you ever dare catch my baby, I'll bite you to death!" Wei Yan Er was yelling at the top of her lungs while summoning her mount, swiftly traveling to his location.

Currently, Zhang Yang was the only player in the party who possessed a [Battle Mount], while Han Ying Xue and the others were still waiting bitterly for their turns, but if he was to offer anyone else a pet mount... she would probably burn holes through him with her eyes until he turned into ash!

Every single member of the party would definitely concede to the wiles

of that brat. After all, this little girl knew her way around the minds of her elders, enjoying the attention and pampering that they showered upon her.

As he was bored, Zhang Yang sat his ass on the ground and turned Whitey into his backrest while waiting for the arrival of Wei Yan Er. At the same time, he kept an eye on the little Chocobo just in case it slipped away. After all, this is a game, who knew if the little bird would wander off on its own, having lost its parent.

"Boss, there really is a [Mount] here, but there's a bloody Gray-Silver boss guarding it. Ah Xi and myself were killed the moment it spotted us!"

"Oh I see it now, there really is a [mount] right there, a Gray-Silver one!"

"Boss, if you can subdue a Gray-Silver [Mount], surely your strength will increase by a notch. When that happens, whoever it is, Zhan Yu, One Sword Stroke, or Frost Night, they all will be beneath the dust before you, boss!"

"That's right, the official site did mention it, the attack power of a Gray-Silver [Mount] is equivalent to the attack of a player equipped with a full set of Gray-Silver equipment! When a player is combined with his mount, he'll gain huge boosts to his attack and HP!"

Five players stumbled out of a thick shrub together, one of them being Floating Fire Ball himself, who had been slaughtered several times by Zhang Yang in previous engagements!

When the five players saw Zhang Yang, they were shocked, for they never would thought that they would actually see someone in such a place! The weirdest part of it was that, this player was not even attempting to subdue the Battle mount!

"Hey kid! Get lost, this location is now booked by us, Pride!" one of the players with the name 'Prideful Siye' above his head took a step forward and began raising his fist while speaking to Zhang Yang.

Few had actually met Zhang Yang in person, and Prideful Siye was trying to butter up the ass of Floating Fire Ball, which was why he was making a

show in front of his leader, raising his voice with his chest puffed out.

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, returning his gestures with a dismissive wave of his own, "I found this little fella first, you guys can go on ahead!"

"Hey kid, you dare to speak in such a tone? Who do you think you are? One Sword Stroke, or Frost Night, Drizzler or Zhan Yu?" Prideful Siye was unaware of his boss' rapidly changing expression, as he continued clamoring arrogantly in front of Zhang Yang.

"Get lost already or I'll just cut you down here and now!" Zhang Yang was beginning to lose his patience, that arrogant face was just asking for it.

As Prideful Siye was going to shout back at Zhang Yang, he was forcefully pulled back by his arm by Kindling Chest Hair. He could not comprehend the situation, but when he heard what Floating Fire Ball had to say, "Zhan Yu, today we will give the respect where it's due, let's leave!"

Zhan Yu? This kid is Zhan Yu?

Prideful Siye was shocked, almost gagging on the intended insults that he hastily forced back down his throat! Previously, the Lone Desert Smoke had made their name as a PvE Dungeon Clearing guild, but after the two major incidents, the Princess Serena quest and the Battle for Terra Nulius, every other guild had been left speechless by their combat strength and unity!

To insult Zhan Yu would be to insult Lone Desert Smoke itself, and nobody else seemed to be able to stand up to them at this point!

Kindling Chest Hair begrudgingly followed Floating Fire Ball back to where they came from, and finally blurted out, "Boss, are we really going to give up on this [Pet Mount]?"

It was a strong [Pet Mount] capable of greatly boosting the combat ability of a player!

Floating Fire Ball cracked an insidious grin, "Give up? Like hell! We've got over 20 members close by the area leveling up, let's wait till everyone is gathered here...we'll let him have a taste of our strength, Pride!"

Chapter 248: Utter Slaughter

"Little brat, how much longer are you gonna take??"

"I'm not a gazelle, you buffoon, take it easy, jeez!"

"Well, hurry up, Pride members are lurking about, they had their eyes on the [Pet Mount]! They're probably gathering their men up as we speak! I'm not risking my neck for you, if there's too many of them, I'm outta there!"

"Please, no! You are the ferocious and mighty noob tank, surely you can take on a hundred of them, I'll even send you my cousin's nudes," Wei Yan Er was genuinely frantic, even bringing up an ultimate 'weapon'!

Zhang Yang chuckled, saying, "Faster!"

He had the {Shadow of the Void} on hand, which was why he was totally unafraid of being rounded up or ambushed! In a worst case scenario, he can still activate the [Lover's Charm] to be spirited away to Sun Xin Yu's location. He already had many options planned.

As expected, Floating Fire Ball soon returned with an additional 20+ players behind him, making up a party of 25 players! Zhang Yang fanned his vision across them and saw that there were only five spellcasters. He smiled to himself confidently. Maybe running was no longer needed...!

"Zhan Yu, on second thought, perhaps you should bow to me this time!" Floating Fire Ball was brimming with confidence, as he folded his arms and flashed a cocky grin.

Zhang Yang made an exaggerated show of climbing up his [Mount], and with a shake of his [Battle Axe], he said, "Well, we could have done this the easy way, but if you insist on being difficult....the hard way it is!"

"...K-Kill!"

All 25 members of the Pride roared in unity, as their long-ranged players started unleashing volley after volley. Zhang Yang calmly gazed up at the oncoming projectiles, and looked back down to see the melee players getting into formation. They started cutting off his routes of escape, and started their advancement.

Zhang Yang rode out on his bear like a Mack truck that bodily met the melee players, sending them flying. Pride was extremely far behind when it came to dungeon progression. Besides Floating Fire Ball who had a full set of Gray-Silver equipment, most of the players were barely past level 50, and had Green-Copper equipment at most. The melee-profession players could not even get past Zhang Yang's defense value, causing absolutely no damage, and the only threat he faced was from the small bunch of Spellcasters at the back of the party!

Unfortunately, there were so few of them that they hardly made any difference!

Gong! Gong! Gong!

Zhang Yang smacked into a Thief, sending the player flying into a tree. At this point, his [Mount] had considerably slowed down, allowing the other players to round up on him.

{Blood Rage}, {Horizontal Sweep}!

A series of magnificent damage values appeared across the battlefield. The main purpose of this assault was not to hurt his enemies, but to reveal the Thieves who happened to be in {stealth}. To expose them would be to deny them the opportunity of using their {Ambush} skills! Even if they couldn't hurt him, they would still afflict some annoying status effects!

{Sanction}!

Kindling Chest Hair threw his hammer at Zhang Yang, instantly stunning Zhang Yang for 5 seconds as golden stars glimmered around his head!

Without hesitation, Zhang Yang activated {Warrior's Will}, and jumped right off Whitey. Floating Fire Ball had taken out his [Sealing Leash], ready to subdue the Fire Chocobo Chick!

He was definitely looking down on Zhang Yang if he believed that a single stun would buy him enough time!

Shoof! {Wild Charge}! At Zhang Yang's mental command, Whitey had charged at Floating Fire Ball, as Zhang Yang forced his way through to the

battle line of the ranged attackers.

‘-696!’

‘-742!’

‘-645!’

‘-821!’

The {Fireballs} and the {Frost Arrow} coming from the four spellcasters pounded into Zhang Yang, barely tickling him. With the level 50 Copper-Green equipment on them, their spell damages could not even exceed 700 points.. Even using their most powerful skills such as {Explosive Flame}, and {Frost Dragon Slayer}, which multiplied their base magic attacks by threefold, they simply could not hurt Zhang Yang!

Meanwhile, the Hunter-profession players might as well have been sprinkling Zhang Yang with soy-sauce, as their arrows bounced off uselessly, causing no more than zero damage!

What was the main purpose of playing online games? It was all about the equipment, wasn't it? The differences between Copper-Green and Yellow-Gold were miles apart!

Shoof! Zhang Yang dashed forward towards a caster with {Charge}.

It had taken him less than eight seconds to reach the back row, and the critical attack of {Destructive Smash} which was boosted by the effect of {Warrior's Will} was still in effect!

‘-8,848!’ {Destructive Smash}, critical hit!

"Argh!" that caster only had a total of 5120 health points, there was no way he could have warded off the blow! He instantly turned into a flash of white light and crumpled to the ground!

‘-136!’

‘-158!’

‘-182!’

Both {Explosive Flame} and {Frost Dragon Slayer} had 10-second cool

down periods. As a result, the Spellcasters had could only attack using their inferior {Fireballs} and {Frost Arrows} which only multiplied their magical attacks by two! If the previous volley had been pathetic, this one was even worse!

However, these ranged players had been stationed far away from each other under the rational directing of Floating Fire Ball, to prevent Zhang Yang from having the chance to catch them all in one draft.

The melee attackers of Pride had caught up, and surrounded him once again!

Although these players could not inflict much damage, their status effect skills, be it speed reduction, bind, or stun, were infuriatingly bothersome! Zhang Yang immediately summoned his [Servant - Clear Lotus], and commanded her enter {Stealth} while he charged at Kindling Chest Hair and the others.

{Concussion Shot}, {Speed Reduction Venom}, a bunch of status effect skills were thrown right onto Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang plowed through it all, ignoring their effects. He would only have to ward off {Stun} statuses! It was not worth using up his skills on these status effects that only slowed him down, not stopping him completely in his tracks. The remaining three spellcasters could still fire their {Explosive Flame} and {Frost Dragon Slayer} without any cool down restrictions, and could possibly remove his HP in 20 seconds or so. In the meantime, he would have to kill the players around him!

He still had his {Berserker's Heal} to be used when the time comes to return to full power in no time!

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang took two steps back, angling himself before sending out the shockwave, stunning all the melee attackers of the Pride for 4 seconds!

{Thunder Strike}!

After two AoE attacks, the his targets were almost close to death. If not for the healers practically breaking their backs in healing their team

mates, they would have already been wiped out!

"Sun of the beach, someone get this bear off me!" Floating Fire Ball was screaming at the top of his lungs.

The [Gold-Eared Bear King] is a Yellow-Gold [Pet Mount], capable of dishing out over 1,900 damage per second, while Floating Fire Ball was only dressed in thin cloth armor that hardly provided much defense. As Whitey basically smacked him around with its huge paws, the leader of Pride was dying on his feet already!

Floating Fire Ball quickly activated an {Ice Barrier}, entering an immobile, invincible state. He continued screaming for help.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I'm truly sorry, they're too busy saving their own asses!"

Although there were four healers of Pride backing them up, Zhang Yang's repeated AoE attacks had left up to 13 melee attackers stumbling about. The healers could not possibly keep all of them alive at the same time, as Zhang Yang began targeting those who were closest to death!

{Force Strike}!

{Shield Bash}!

With each hit killing one player at a time, even the accompanying damage that came with {Cripple Defense} had reached up to 1000+! Zhang Yang gave a few quick slashes here and there for good measure.

Zhang Yang was 4 seconds away from being cleared of all the status effects, while Pride was left with only nine melee attackers!

{Kidney Shot}!

The Thieves could not afford to wait for the 5-star {Kidney Shot}, the first thief only managing to save up 2-stars before he used it anyway, forcing Zhang Yang into a 3-second stun status.

{Substitute} skill activated!

Zhang Yang went straight into a 5-second period invincibility, and as [Servant - Clear Lotus] was already in {Stealth} as per commanded earlier

on, the other opponents could not even hit her as they could not even see her - if they even knew that she existed in the first place!

Slice, dice! Slash, hack!

By the time he was no longer invincible, another three players had fallen!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

{Thunder Strike}!

In the chaotic mess of horrified screams, more bodies fell! Zhang Yang swung his [Battle Axe] up and down, activating another {Destructive Smash} that swept across the battle field, and the last melee attacker crumpled to the ground!

"Mother of god, he's wiped out our front line!"

"My god, he still has three quarters of his HP! How do we even fight him?!"

The gang of the Pride couldn't help screaming out loud, faced with a monster of a player! What else could they do?

The difference between equipment grades have been made apparent here!

If Daffodil Daydream was the one who engaging him, she actually stood a chance of killing him in less than 20 seconds! Furthermore, Daffodil Daydream was only equipped with Level 50 equipment. If she got to level 60 while being fully decked out in Yellow-Gold, she would have forced Zhang Yang against the ropes, bringing out all his emergency skills!

Previously, Zhang Yang had slaughtered up to 30 players of Pride while equipped with an incomplete set of Gray-Silver grade equipment. Now that he surpassed his opponents by two grades of higher leveled equipment, it was a total bloodfest!

"F*cking hell! F*ck f*ck f*ck!" the {Ice Barrier} would only last for 10 seconds, and Floating Fire Ball would still find himself smacked around like a rag doll when Whitey resumed its attacks. Thanks to a knight healer

busting his ass to heal Floating Fire Ball, he was not yet dead. However, could a Copper-Green grade healer possibly heal more than the damage values inflicted by a Yellow-Gold [Pet Mount]?

That would be a big no!

Zhang Yang was already rushing towards the ranged attackers who cowered in response.

"Boss, we are totally no match to him, we should retreat!" someone cried out. While the spellcasters were able to do some damage, the Hunters had totally given up, seeing how their own attacks inflicted zero damage on their opponent! Some of them even dropped their bows and fell to their knees in despair. The healers glumly stood at their positions as they mechanically healed their team mates. Everyone was shell shocked. Against the god-slayer Zhang Yang, their healing effects were just like fireworks being set off in the midst of actual explosions!

"Retreat! Retreat!" Floating Fire Ball shouted in embarrassment. Dying may not deduct their levels, but their experience points would still be removed. It requires approximately seven days to level up once at their levels, and that amount of time is no joke!

However, can he really get away?

What would be the first thing that comes to mind when you hear about [Pet Mount]s? Speed? To try outrunning a [Pet Mount] would be complete idiocy!

Floating Fire Ball only managed a few steps before he was flattened by Whitey's paws!

Pak!

A glittering silver hat dropped right on the ground beside the dead body of Floating Fire Ball. Zhang Yang immediately ran over to pick it up. Such equipment was already beneath him, but if he could do it to spite Floating Fire Ball, why not?

The others scattered. Zhang Yang quickly mounted Whitey and gave chase.

Another three of them were brutally killed, before the others managed to tear their teleportation scrolls up, vanishing into thin air.

In his previous life, some high level players would occasionally block the main entrance of low leveled territories and initiate battles of one versus many. Zhang Yang had never understood the purpose of doing so. There was no fun in it at all.

In reality, even a highly trained operative of any renowned special forces would be unable to stand up to a hundred civilians in direct combat. But in a game, with good enough equipment and sufficient levels, such a fantasy could be realized! No wonder the Americans loved producing action heroes, it just felt great to watch a single person take out an army!

Firstly, it was torture for the newbies. It was just unfair and callous. If they had been similarly leveled and equipped, it would have been a different story!

Of course, Zhang Yang would never deliberately go around killing low level players just for the sake of fun and adrenaline, however, he was basically acting in self-defense here! It would be injustice to the entire set of equipment on his body if he did not exercise a display of his power over their bratty sentiments!

Almost twenty minutes later, Wei Yan Er finally arrived, looking more frantic than he had ever seen her, even during large scale battles.

Seeing Zhang Yang from afar, she screamed in her high pitched voice at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, is my baby still there?"

Zhang Yang frowned a little and spoke softly the party channel, "Little girl, don't you know there is something called the party channel?"

"I love to shout, why can't I?" Wei Yan Er ran over to Zhang Yang, scanning his surroundings, and immediately spotted the nestling. Her face cracked into a joyful grin and she ran over to it, "Hey birdie, you're going to be mine soon, wahahaha!"

"... You did not just watch some other series like 'A Bride for a Ride', did you?"

"Hmph, I don't have time for you now, leave me be!" Wei Yan Er took out her [Sealing Leash] from her backpack, but she held on to it, clasping it between her palms as she prayed, "To all the gods up there in the sky, please give me your blessings, let me get it in one attempt!"

She chanted those lines a few more times like some weird mantra before throwing out her [Sealing Leash] in excitement.

10%, 20%, 30%... Pak, failed!

"Sigh, this brat is such a pain to deal with, even those gods weren't bothered about you!" Zhang Yang could not help himself but ridicule her.

"Hmph! They're just lazy, I don't believe in gods anyway!" Wei Yan Er took a 180 degree turn from her apparent polytheism, and she threw another [Sealing Leash], uttering a completely different line, "I believe in Chun Ge2, that there is a bird!"

Zhang Yang almost fell off his mount, choking on his own breath as he howled in laughter.

Pak, failed!

Wei Yan Er roared furiously, "Chun Ge is also unreliable!"

Zhang Yang collapsed in laughter and said, "Little girl, two [Sealing Leash]es are worth 200 gold pieces!"

Wei Yan Er bitterly glared at him, "Noob tank, you must compensate me!"

"Why?"

"You called me over for this! If you hadn't called me over, how would I end up wasting two [Sealing Leash]? This is causality! Cause and effect, understand?"

Zhang Yang felt the familiar drip of cold sweat running down his head. This pair of sisters had a level of stinginess that could be categorized as a unique form of art by itself!

"Little girl, why do you two...save up so much?" Zhang Yang could not hold his urge to ask her anymore.

"If I don't save up, not even 50,000 dollars will be enough for me!" Wei Yan Er told him poignantly.

Zhang Yang blinked stupidly for a moment, then he asked, "You spend over 50,000 dollars in a month?" From his point of view, these two could have stingily abstained from spending even a fraction of that in a month, it was very much like them!

"Sigh, perfumes, handbags, the money will be gone after a few simple purchases, and I have to ask anything more from cousin sister! Cousin sister used to only have 50,000 dollars as her pocket money, so she would scrape anything more than that from me, she caused me so much pain that I eventually I learned how to save up money myself!" Wei Yan Er pouted her mouth discontentedly, and continued, "Now that cousin sister has become rich, she's become a total miser! Sigh... To eat a meal in her house, I would be required to do house chores! She used to have a maid in her house, but ever since I started going over for meals, the maid was discharged, my life is now bitter!"

... so much self-contradiction in such a twisted history!

"Yea! I got it! I got it!" Wei Yan Er jumped up in joy, as the fifth attempt was successful!

[Fire Chocobo] (Gray-Silver Battle Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Little girl immediately summoned the nestling out, and due to the 'Summoning Bond', the nestling naturally behaved in a way that made her look like the surrogate parent. It continually nuzzled its little head against the ankle of Wei Yan Er, looking extremely cute while doing so!

"Noob tank, I've got a birdie now!"

TL Notes:

1. A Bride for a Ride: A comedy that revolves around Foolhardy Tiger Wong who is annoyed with his mother's constant nagging for him to get

married. He therefore snatches Chow Man-bun, a pretty man disguised as a girl, who later met his sister and turned into a bizarre triangle.

2. Chun Ge: The stage name of a female singer in China (Chris Lee) who dresses up androgynously, then the term was altered over the time and became a cultural spoof.

Chapter 249: Rival in Love

The next day, Zhang Yang woke up early in the morning and directly logged in to the game, he was being summoned urgently by Wei Yan Er. So, he quickly used a [Teleportation scroll] to teleport to Thunderstorm Castle and arrived at the entrance of the castle as instructed by her.

The little girl was on top of an extremely colorful Chocobo, joy all over her face, giddy with joy.

Zhang Yang had something that was a mix between a glare and a smile, and he asked, "Little girl, did you rush me here just to see 'Birdie'?"

"Of course not!" Wei Yan Er quickly shook her head, but her smile only grew wider, and she eagerly asked, "What say you? Isn't my Little Flower very pretty?"

Giving names such as Little White and Little Flower, this little girl could only seem to throw out one-dimensional names! It wasn't as if Zhang Yang had exceptional naming sense himself, looking at Whitey...

"Hm, it's definitely prettier compared to you!" Zhang Yang replied with a deadpan expression.

"I'm not talking to you anymore!" Wei Yan Er lifted her chin up with rage.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, and he said, "Alright then, I'll take my leave!"

"No! Stop! Cousin sister is still waiting for you to save her!" Wei Yan Er quickly caught up to Zhang Yang on her Chocobo and said, "I'm giving you a chance to save a damsel in distress! Cousin sister will definitely be grateful, you can have her body all to yourself!"

"Ha!" Zhang Yang guffawed, and he said, "That's no damsel, that's a bloody siren! Like, those ladies who drown you with voices! Why would I save a siren, that's asking for death, one must be alert before doing so! Look at Xu Xian¹ who saved the White Snake², look at how miserable they turned out to be!"

"Pui! You must be a man with a sad love life!" Wei Yan Er sniffed.

"Yeah, yeah, what's this all about then?" Zhang Yang did not see any signs of Han Ying Xue, the siren would usually be inseparable from this brat.

Do you still remember that guy we used to mention, Luo Yang Ming?"

"Yeah, the guy who stalked witchy Snow all the way to England, but got kicked out later on, what about him?"

"Yes! Yes! Yes!" Wei Yan Er nodded continuously, "That guy has a face thicker than the ancient civilization! Even when cousin sister has totally turned her back on him, he's still sticking onto her like a piece of dog sh*t, he's really starting to piss her off! Everyday, he would call and mutter some disgusting mushy words, she's already smashed three of her phones to pieces! Hehe, that one did break her heart!"

While he was imagining Han Ying Xue smashing the phones with a look of instant regret, Zhang Yang could not help himself but laughed out loud.

"You really don't have a conscience, do you!" Wei Yan Er quickly criticized him, but she had also started giggling.

"I thought your ass was on fire, from the way you called me over, but this is it?" Zhang Yang frowned disapprovingly at her, her mind seemed to work in a completely different manner from the average human!

"You're the one who ran here like your ass was on fire!" Wei Yan Er was never one to back down from petty war of words, and she continued, "Of course not, do I look like I'm that boring? We don't know how that Luo Ming Yang found out that cousin is playing {{God's Miracle}}, or how he even found her game ID out. This morning, he came looking for her, and has been stuck on her since then! I will always boldly do what is right, so I purposely summoned you, the Panda Prince to save the princess!"

"What the hell, why don't you just kill him off, what trouble would that be?!" Zhang Yang shook his head continuously.

"You are really stupid! The Luo has a face thicker than the walls of the city! Killing him won't work at all, he'll come back like an immortal

nightmare! I have a great idea, why don't you act as her boy friend to get rid of that Luo guy!"

Zhang Yang rolled both of his eyes backward and said, "Little girl, are you trying to save witchy Snow, or are you trying to push me over into the burning furnace? Even if I just have to play act, I can still feel a chill running down my bones!"

"Hehehe, cousin has the same genetic inheritance like me, you should feel blessed to have her as your fake girlfriend!" Wei Yan Er pulled Zhang Yang by his arm and said, "Faster, faster! Cousin's gonna blow anytime soon! I couldn't care less if I wasn't in the same house as her, but if this is going to affect my lunch hour, my life would be miserable!"

"Holy god, and here I was thinking that you were just looking out for her!"

"Hehe!"

They walked through the alleyways. They saw Han Ying Xue in a corner, with a male warrior kneeling by her side, both his hands holding up a bunch of black roses, offering it up to her!

Holy sh*t, those flowers required real money!

In 'God's Miracle', there are numerous shops that sell items that are purely cosmetic. A variety of rings, necklaces, accessories, were purchasable. They added no attributes to players, but they were all finely crafted and appealing to look at. Of course, that would make them extremely expensive.

For example, a platinum ring with the flavor text -- 'Love her, then buy it for her!', would cost 99999 gold pieces!

These were so called Luxurious Items, and flowers also fell under this category.

That bundle of flowers that the male player was holding up was the most expensive variant in the florist shop, costing 9999 gold pieces each. Furthermore, one day later, the flowers will automatically wither and fall, it was the most money-burning item ever!

Although a platinum ring is more expensive, it would not deteriorate or disappear!

That player did not hide his personal information, the name 'iLuvHanYingXue, level 10, male human, Berserker Warrior' was floating right above his head. There was no doubt that this man is Luo Yang Ming.

"... little Snow, I truly love you, please just accept my tidal wave of love for you!" as they walked closer, they could hear the mush Luo Yang Ming was making.

Han Ying Xue was almost blue in the face, she was probably too annoyed to even say no.

"Luo Yang Ming, you really are thick faced! Cousin already told you to roll home a hundred times, why can't you see that!" Wei Yan Er could not bear it anymore as she snarled at him.

"Cousin Yan Er, how could you speak like that to your cousin brother!" Luo Yang Ming straightened up upon seeing Wei Yan Er. He turned around and replied her in the strict tone of an elder.

"How can he be your cousin brother, if he and witchy Snow --- " Zhang Yang could not help but began to wonder.

"He is the son to the cousin sister of my father, and cousin sister is the daughter to the sister of my mother. So, the two of them are totally unrelated by blood!" Wei Yan Er waved her hand around.

Luo Yang Ming, however, stared at Zhang Yang warily, and said, "Cousin Yan Er, who is this man? Don't forget our standing! Please do not mix with these mongrels!"

What the hell, that sentence would score him ten out of ten points in provoking people into beating him up!

Wei Yan Er snorted and said, "You who bear the surname Luo! What are you overweening for? If my father did not sponsor you, that factory of yours would not even be open! Cutting corners in production, taking advantage of your own people, your actions almost destroyed my mother and her sister's blood and sweat!"

The face of Luo Yang Ming immediately turned pale, and he said, "Cousin Yan Er, don't throw false accusations at innocent people!"

"Witchy Snow, let's go, didn't we agree earlier to go leveling up together?" Zhang Yang waved at Han Ying Xue.

Luo Yang Ming's gaze on Zhang Yang instantly turned from wariness to outright scorn, so he turned around to Han Ying Xue and asked, "Little Snow, who is this?"

"Hey, I'll only say it once!" Zhang Yang rode on his Whitey and shoved himself in between Luo Yang Ming and Han Ying Xue, looking down from his elevated position. As he reached his right hand out and lifted up his index finger, he said, "Witchy Snow is my woman, you better god damn stop harassing her!"

"Haha! Where did you wretched being come from, what right do you have to pursue my little Snow?" Luo Yang Ming shot back.

"You idiotic moron, she's been my woman since forever! What rights are you talking about, are you really that f*cking idiotic?" Zhang Yang purposely cursed continuously, using his very best to land some solid hits into the heart of Luo Yang Ming.

Luo Yang Ming grew even paler, and his whole body trembled, but after a while, he suddenly smiled and said, "Little Snow, this is an actor you hired, right? You have never had a boyfriend till now even, your heart is filled with me!"

"God, Mr Luo, can you possibly get any more disgusting!" Wei Yan Er made a show of puking.

"My dear hubby, let's go!" Han Ying Xue summoned her [Storm and Gale Direwolf], gazing at Zhang Yang seductively while speaking sweetly, and Zhang Yang felt a shiver down his spine. His heart was knocked off rhythm for a second, and in a bad way!

The three [Mounts] began to pick up speed, leaving Luo Yang Ming behind in one of the alleyways.

"You bastards, whether you are acting or not, Han Ying Xue is mine!"

Only mine!" Luo Yang Ming barked at the backs of the three figures that were rapidly disappearing. His face was almost goblin-like as he cried, "You f*cking b*tch, you humiliated me for so many years, just wait till I get my hands on 'Silky Soft Holdings' and make it mine, I will turn you into my toy till you die!"

...

"I realize that your relationships are a little messy!" After riding out for a distance, Zhang Yang began to talk.

"I guess it's okay to tell you everything now!" Wei Yan Er looked at Han Ying Xue, and seeing no objection, she continued, "More than 20 years ago, when my mother and my aunt were still pursuing their studies in university, they took a loan and founded 'Silky Soft Holdings'. The two of them were the best designers in the world! In just a short time, they already made 'Silky Soft Holdings' a major company!"

Zhang Yang was shocked for a moment, never once fathoming that 'Silky Soft Holdings' was founded by their mothers together.

"Then, about 17 years ago, my mother and my aunt went to Europe to take part in a Fashion Design Exhibition. Who would have guessed, on their way there, their plane crashed! My mother and aunt..." Wei Yan Er was solemn for once, her eyes genuinely beginning to tear.

Zhang Yang stared in shock and asked, "Southern Airlines, CA1077?"

"Huh? How did you know!" Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue whipped around to look at him, their eyes wide in shock.

Zhang Yang sighed painfully and said, "Both my parents were on that plane too!"

The three of them remained silent for a moment.

"Noob tank, to think we actually share the same fate!" Wei Yan Er patted Zhang Yang on his shoulder like an old friend. Perhaps in a way, their souls had that sort of bond.

Unpleasant memories quickly came flooding back, and he quickly said,

"Please, carry on!"

"Yes!" Wei Yan Er nodded and said, "So my mother and my aunt left their shares of the company to me and my cousin here. However, before we hit the age of our adulthood, the company will be under the care of by my father and my uncle! A few years back, my uncle had cancer and passed away. For my sake, my cousin let my father look after the holdings on behalf of her. But, he's not really doing it any good, he's using our shares to sponsor dirtbags like Luo, helping them start up their own companies!"

She shrugged and said, "I'm fine with that, but they're ruining our reputation! As they are considered subsidiary companies of Silky Soft Holdings, their actions reflect on us! They often use substandard goods to throw the market off, resulting in lots of rejected stocks, the company that my mom and aunt had put all their hearts and passion into is really shaky at the moment!"

"My father will always stand by his side of the family! Hmph! When I am 18 years old, it will be the time to place justice above filial piety! I'm not going to let the efforts of my mother and my aunt go to waste!"

TL Notes:

1. Xu Xian: Male character in 'Legend of the White Snake' novel, who fell in love with White Snake (disguised herself into a woman named Bai Suzhen)

2. White Snake: Female character in 'Legend of the White Snake' novel, who fell in love with Xu Xian.

Chapter 250: 10,000 Phantoms

"Based on what you had just said you to me, this guy called Luo who claims to be head over heels over the bitchy Snow is in truth only trying to get hold of her share of the company?"

"That's why I said it's disgusting! The lowest! Scum!" Wei Yan Er cringed as she described Luo Yang Ming. "He would hump my cousin-sister's leg just to get some money from the company's trash can! I mean, look at the guy! Pretending to be a successful man, putting up airs as if he was Bill Gates or the other apple guy! Disgusting prick!"

"Alright, alright, I'm going to stop you there now. Show's over, I'll get going now!" said Zhang Yang as he stopped the bear.

"Ah! Wait up! We just accepted a quest yesterday! We need to go to some ghostly place to kill a boss! I need you to come with us!" screamed the little girl.

"What ghostly place?"

"10,000 Phantoms! How bout it? Scary, isn't it?" said Wei Yan Er as she tried to mimic a ghost with her face.

Zhang Yang smiled with delight. "So, you guys know where these 10,000 Phantoms are?"

"Dummy! You're really as dumb as you look! If we had known where it was, we would be clearing the quest by now!" said Han Ying Xue, pretending to have remained unaffected by the recollection of her sad story.

Zhang Yang knew something that Han Ying Xue did not. 10,000 Phantoms was a good place indeed! That rather scary name aside, the place hosted a boss that drops priceless items called [Fate Crystals]!

[Fate Crystals], or Attribute Crystal as players commonly called them, will permanently increase a player's certain attribute! [Fate Crystals] came in three tiers, Gold, Silver, and Copper. [Gold Fate Crystals] will increase a certain attribute by 10 points, Silver by 7 points, and Copper, at the very

least, 5 points.

The spawning point of 10,000 Phantoms was not fixed. It was something like a mobile dungeon that will only spawns in maps above Level 50. Once all the bosses inside are killed, 10,000 Phantoms will disappear and will respawn again after 10 days.

Since [Fate Crystals] were such special items, high leveled players will flock to the 10,00 Phantoms once it spawns. There was no limit to how many times you may clear the dungeon, or how many crystals you were allowed to use on your character!

Back then, in his previous life, Zhang Yang had only been in the map once! All he managed was to spectate a horde of powerful players clearing all 7 floors in no time! He got nothing from it!

"Okay! Let's go, let's go!" Zhang Yang was excited.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er exchanged a look and asked, "So, what treasure will appear in 10,000 Phantoms?"

"Why'd you ask?"

"Tch!" Han Ying Xue clicked her tongue. "Take a good look in the mirror, you sly monkey! You have excitement written all over your face!"

Zhang Yang laughed as he answered them. "Alright, the bosses of 10,000 Phantoms will have a chance of dropping [Fate Crystals], you can use those crystals to increase a certain attribute, permanently!"

"WoWoWoWoWo~! I want that! In that case, I'll take Strength and Dexterity, cousin sister will take the Intelligence and Spirit, all the Vitality will go to the noob tank!" Wei Yan Er bounced on her feet and shrugged as she expressed a "be grateful you begger" kind of smug look.

"Listen here, you little girl. I'll need Strength crystals as well, you hear?"

"Nope! No deal!" Wei Yan Er shook her head so hard that you could practically play drums with it, if you attached two drum sticks to her forehead.

"Oh well...in that case, let's hope that all the [Fate Crystals] drops are all

Vitality types, yeah?"

All three of them rode on their mounts and got out of Forest of Tanilla, passing through the Frozen Sky Wastelands and into the Necrotic Wastelands. After a small walking distance, they arrived at a small valley of mountains. From afar, they could already see how creepy the place was. Dark, damp air surrounded the valley and occasionally, the sound of crows could be heard as their wings fluttered by rapidly.

"Hmm...According to the quest description, it should be around this valley!" said Han Ying Xue as she sat on her Direwolf, circling around aimlessly.

Zhang Yang observed the area and spotted something that looked like an cave entrance to a tomb. "There!"

Even though he had only managed to enter 10,000 Phantoms once, the image of the creepy and eerie entrance was clearly etched into his brain. All three of them kept their mounts and headed into the entrance.

Do not be fooled by this narrow entry, the inside was like heaven and earth! The place was in the belly of the mountain, as wide as a football field, perhaps even wider! Along the insides of the mountain wall was a tunnel as wide as 20 meters. The tunnels formed a long spiral-like route, going down and deeper into the earth. Fire torches hung on the side of the tunnel wall, illuminating the otherwise dark, hollow pathway. From where they stood, they peeked down the center of the mountain. It looked like a giant monster with its maw wide open!

The spiral pathway had at least seven spins, with each complete circle being as long as 5,000 meters. The slope of the pathway was rather steep, like the mountain side itself. Judging by the looks alone, it would seem that it went down as deep as several hundred meters.

"Noob tank! I want a {Beast Taming} Indistinct skill book as well!" Wei Yan Er puffed her cheeks and asked Zhang Yang. She was amazed at how Zhang Yang's [Gold-Eared Bear King] was able to walk beside him, while her own mount was confined within her inventory since she could not summon it inside an indoor environment.

Zhang Yang snickered. "Trust me. You're better off starting as a new Hunter than hunt for the skill book."

"Argh...if I had known earlier, I would have just cut off your head myself and claim the price, at least I'd have something to go for me!" Wei Yan Er vented her frustration.

"Eh? Why aren't there any monsters around?" said Han Ying Xue warily. The path ahead of them was completely shrouded in darkness, devoid of movement and sound. Visibility was decent, they could see a few hundred meters ahead of them. The only problem was, there was not even a single monster around!

Zhang Yang twitched an eye brow and frowned worriedly. "I think someone else might be here!"

"Let's hurry then!" Wei Yan Er kicked off and dashed forward without waiting for the rest. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue nodded and started to sprint as quickly as they could.

Luckily, just 200 meters ahead, they already spotted a group of 20+ players fighting a bunch of monsters. The group of players consisted of five different guild, all forming 5-men parties.

Though they were separated by several meters front and back, the gap was not that obvious.

"So, players first? Or monsters?" Wei Yan Er switched to the party channel and asked.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and replied. "We'll leave them be. If they were to try anything funny, we'll let them see how funny they look when we kick their asses!"

As the saying goes, an eye for an eye. Zhang Yang hated being bullied. That was why he understood how it felt like and would not attack unprovoked.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er nodded and followed Zhang Yang.

The monsters around here were all elite tiers. For a normal player, these

monsters would be as tough as mini-bosses. That was why, even though those other players had a tank and a healer in their parties that appeared to have swapped parties between guilds. No party consisted of 5 players from the same guild. It was minimum requirement, a perfect dungeon raiding party group would require one tank, one healer, and three attackers.

However, all five parties members equipment were not on par, most of them were wearing armor that gave out a green colored hue, while only a few of them had a silverish hue on them. By the looks of it, their progress was slow since they would need around 40 seconds to kill one monster.

[Rotten Skelatal Walker] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 54

HP: 108,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang took out his golden battle axe and smirked. "Let's kill them all, AoE style!"

"Ok!" Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er nodded. With their powerful equipment, they could easily kite monsters that were non-spellcaster type, even if they were elite tier. They might only struggle against open world type elites, but even that wouldn't be much trouble if they worked together.

"Stay close!" Zhang Yang rushed to the front and got ahead of all the five parties. He charged ahead into a bunch of monsters. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er followed closely behind him, along with the bear. Since the bear did not attack, all aggro was on Zhang Yang alone.

With a single charge, Zhang Yang had kited seven to eight monsters with him.

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and slowed all the monsters without looking back. He continued on further.

"Growl!" The monsters got closer and almost at the range to attack.

{Block}!

A flash of damage text from the {Block} reflected damage popped out. Zhang Yang chained his move with {Horizontal Sweep} to create generate aggro on him.

"Holy crap! Are those three crazy?" Players from behind Zhang Yang's party saw how he was executing the "suicidal" rush and stared in awe and disbelief. Even if they want to die, they shouldn't do it like that!

"Weird...Did you notice any Hunters in their party? If I'm not mistaken, that's a huge bear following them, right?"

"Yeah. The one with the shield must be a Guardian. He has a Rage meter gauge. Same goes the lady with the huge battle axe, she's a Berserker! The one wearing cloth armor and with a MP gauge must be a priest! I'm certain that there's aren't any Hunters in their party! How could a pet exist then?"

Zhang Yang went on charging into monsters for at least 50 to 60 meters ahead. The monsters following behind him already amounted to more than 40. He stopped at a wall of the tunnel and cried, "Little brat! You're up!"

‘-201!’

‘-223!’

‘-208!’

The monster had caught up to Zhang Yang and thrust their hands out to attack Zhang Yang. None of the damage values went above 200+! It could not be helped, since their basic attack were only around 2,500. They already did the Elite title justice by managing to slightly penetrate Zhang Yang's super high Defense.

{Horizontal Sweep}, {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}!

{Tornado Cleave}!

Both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er started unleashed all their AoE skills

and dealt devastating damage to all the monsters around!

They had killed all the surrounding monster in only four to five minutes! Defeated, the monsters dropped all sort of cloth etc items and a few coins on the floor. Smiling and snickering, the two girls started to pick up all the battle loots. They had purposely asked Zhang Yang to set the loot distribution to free-for-all before they had entered the place. First come, first serve basis!

Seeing how Zhang Yang party had mowed down all the elite monsters like dried twigs, the players behind were staring with huge disbelief!

They themselves could only take on one monster with five men! They even had to carefully draw out one monster from the herd, one at a time! If they accidentally pulled two, it would be chaotic! If they accidentally pulled three, it would be a one-way ticket to the graveyard for them.

The problem was that Zhang Yang's party had only three players! How could they even stand toe to toe with 40 monsters all at once!? Are they even humans to begin with?

"We can't just let them take the lead! There must be a boss up ahead!" Initially, the players behind wanted to take the chance and run ahead, following the path that Zhang Yang had just cleared. However, Zhang Yang had not kited all the monsters in his way, he had merely ran through, attracting the attention of whatever he could. The monsters further to the side of the tunnel had spread themselves out to fill the gaps. Even though the gap between the monsters were wider now, players would still have to kill them if they want to proceed.

All the players exchange a look and agreed that an "alliance" is the only way to get pass!

After the two girls were done looting all the drops, Zhang Yang started to rush again. In just half an hour, the party had proceeded so far ahead that the five temporarily allied parties were completely shrouded in darkness!

Since the bear did not have any AoE skills, it was rather redundant in this field. Though its DPS was as high as 1,800, it was nothing compared

to Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er's total damage!

Even with the cumulative pushing power, the area of this mountain belly was just too large. They had only traveled as far as 2,000 meters in three hours! They probably had to double that distance to complete one circle!

"I'm beat! That's it! I'm done!" said Wei Yan Er as she patted her tummy. "I'm so hungry! I'll go stupidly crazy if I don't put some food in my belly!"

"As if you could get any smarter after you eat..." Zhang Yang whispered.

The time was already 12 noon. All three of them agreed to have a quick break and relogged after their lunch.

Chapter 251: Lost Dream

After having their lunch, everyone logged in after 30 minutes and got together.

Before they logged off, Zhang Yang had killed all the monster around the area. Since elite tier monsters required five hours to respawn, the place was empty and bare when Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er came back. All of them continued their journey and reached the end of the first part after three hours.

Technically, the entire tunnel simply followed the shape of the mountain from the inside. The spiral pathway led downwards to the lowest and deepest part of the mountain. Technically, Zhang Yang's current position was a complete cycle from where they entered. If they could drill upwards, the entrance to the mountain would just be 50 meters up!

Now that he had arrived to what seems to be a gigantic rock blocking the pathway forward. Standing in front of the rock was a huge, mega-sized version of the Hatred Amalgamated. Its innards were spilling out of its rotten body. It had a pair of hands, and an extra hand stitched to its back. Each hand carried a gigantic cleaver. There seems to be green liquid leaking out from all parts of its body. The liquid dripped down, corroding the ground, releasing a visible cloud of gas around it.

[Despaired Hatred Amalgamated] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 56

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 600

"Gimme Strength Crystal! Gimme Strength Crystal! Come! Come! Hoy!" Wei Yan Er clapped her palms together and mumbled something inaudible.

"Ay! Dummy! What are you standing there for? Get going quickly! It's just a Gray-Silver boss!" Han Ying Xue urged hurriedly.

"Hehehe. Relax b*tch. Keep pushing and you'll get nothing! I'll cursed

your future husband to be a minute-man!" Zhang Yang laughed and rushed away before giving any chance for Han Ying Xue to respond to his sarcastic insult.

"!@\$%\$%\$!@%^!@\$@##@" Hatred Amalgamated rumbled incomprehensibly. It stomped forwards with large paces towards Zhang Yang.

‘-2,206!’

The boss landed a strike on Zhang Yang. He purposely allowed the monster to hit him instead of activating {Block}. He wanted to gauge the monster’s attack. He was rather satisfied with the result. If he went all out with the boss, there was hope to defeat him in a solo fight! However, since it’s an indoor environment, he would have to rely on the "combined mode" with the bear to defeat it!

Han Ying Xue swiftly cast a {Regeneration} on Zhang Yang.

‘-0!’

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

After two seconds, a green, viscous liquid spewed out from the boss and landed on all three of them, dealing different amounts of damage.

"Bleh! Disgusting!" cried Wei Yan Er. This attack was the boss’ {Rot Aura} which will deal 1,000 Natural damage to all targets within a 30 meter radius.

Despaired Hatred Amalgamated was just a one of the guardian bosses of 10,000 Phantoms. It wasn’t particularly difficult. Since the party strength was overwhelming, thanks to their high-tiered equipment, the boss was defeated in just six to seven minutes. The fat-*ss boss wailed and dropped to the floor, oozing out more green liquid after being defeated.

Hideous as it was, the boss was still rather generous! It dropped two Level 50 Gray-Silver equipment and a total of six [Fate Crystals]! One Vitality, two Strength, one Dexterity, one Intelligence, and one Spirit

Crystal! All of them were Copper tier and could only add five points each.

After distributing the crystals, Zhang Yang took one Vitality and one Strength crystal while Wei Yan Er took one Strength and one Dexterity, leaving Han Ying Xue with the remainder.

[Fate Crystals: Vitality] (Copper, Usable)

Use: Permanently adds five points to Vitality.

All three of them smiled satisfyingly and used the crystal promptly.

‘Ding! You have gain 5 points of Vitality!’

‘Ding! You have gain 5 points of Strength!’

Along with the crisp clear sound of the notification, Zhang Yang attribute gained a tiny boost. Though the boost was significantly small, it would provide an obvious increase in power after accumulating more [Fate Crystals]!

"There's this huge rock blocking the road! How are we going to get pass it?" Wei Yan Er strafed to the left and tried to find a possible route through the gaps. She pointed towards a slightly larger gap and screamed to Zhang Yang. "Hey! Noob tank! Use the shrinking potion! We could pass through here!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Little brat! I think if you force yourself through that, you'll really flatten your chest!"

"D*mn you! So, how are we going to get past this?"

"Easy as pie. Do you not see the properties of the rocks? We can attack it!" said Zhang Yang as he took out his battle axe and began bunting the rocks.

[Solid Boulders] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 1,000

Clang! Clang! Bang! Bang!

The two of the melee attackers started to swing their weapons around and eventually smashed the rocks into tiny pebbles. Once the rocks came crumbling down, four arrows flew through the air and struck Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er.

Out of a sudden, four Skeletal Archers appeared in front of Zhang Yang's party. Each of the archers had a bow fashioned out of skeletal remains. Their eyes was glowing with green-emerald fiery flames.

[Rotting Skeletal Archer] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 56

HP: 112,000

Defense: 300

'-203!' '-217!'

'-2,321!' '-2,367!'

The archer continued their attacks and dealt very different damage to Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er.

"Growl!" the bear roared and rushed towards one of the archers. Likewise, Zhang Yang rushed forwards with {Charge} and attacked the other archer.

All Hunter class monsters will automatically try to gain distance whenever someone closes in! With a calculated maneuver, Zhang Yang forced the monster to jump away, towards the second archer which was 10 meters away.

Under Zhang Yang's manual control, the bear had also forced the third archer to jump towards the fourth archer.

With the one man and one bear tactic, both {Charge} and {Wild Charge} were used intelligently to round up all the archers together. They would usually need to chase the monsters around, but instead, they had managed to herd the monsters like sheep!

Zhang Yang used {Horizontal Sweep}, {Thunder Strike}, and {Blast Wave} to generate a large amount of aggro on all of the archers around.

Only then, did he start to unleash hell. Not much later, all four archer monsters were easily defeated by Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang stuck his axe in the floor and gazed further into the tunnel ahead. Zhang Yang sighed, even though the monsters ahead were crowded. "D*mn. It's all but Hunter-type monsters. I won't be able to kite them all! We have no choice but to kill them one by one!" Previously, Zhang Yang was able to control and kill the monsters before because he was mentally multitasking. It may look easy to execute but it took up a lot of mental stress! If he were to continually use his multitasking ability, it wouldn't take long before he himself would be lying on the ground!

Losing the ability to multikill, the team's pushing power dropped by a significant level. After sometime, it was already getting late. The party then disbanded and went on their own ways for dinner. Until 7.30pm, they came back together and continued on.

Zhang Yang noticed Sun Xin Yu was online and abruptly sent an invitation to her. "Let's go together?"

Cold as ever, Sun Xin Yu remained quiet as a graveyard and accepted the invitation.

Not much sooner, she cried out. "Put on the accessory!"

Zhang Yang smirked and put on the Lover's Charm: Yang. He did so intentionally, just to force Sun Xin Yu to open her tightly sealed mouth.

Shush!

A bright light flashed, and Sun Xin Yu materialized beside Zhang Yang.

"Sister Sun! Can I have the accessory? Let me play with it for a few days!"
Wei Yam Er complaint to Sun Xin Yu.

Without replying her, Sun Xin Yu remained stoic as ever and did not even move a muscle until Zhang Yang begun to push forward.

With Sun Xin Yu in the party, the party's offensive power had shot up. The party made it to the second boss before 12 midnight!

[Spectre Hunter, Sven] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 57

HP: 2,500,000

Defense: 600

The strongest skill of this boss was {10 Strikes}. Each of its arrows was able to deal 2,000 damage! However, its so-called strongest attack was rendered to be a complete joke when the boss targeted Zhang Yang. Fully clad in Yellow-Gold equipment, Zhang Yang was a super tank with super defense! The boss was barely able to penetrate his defense!

Overwhelmed! Overwhelmingly overwhelmed!

The party of four had only used five minutes to defeat the boss and hauled 10 pieces of [Fate Crystals]

After defeating the boss, a similar wall of rocks was stacked up behind. Zhang Yang party chose not to destroy the wall of rocks and instead, decided to hit the hay stack. Since the boss would only respawn after several days, the party will not be surrounded by monsters when they log into the game the next morning.

Due to Sun Xin Yu's day job, she had used [Teleportation Scroll], going back to Thunderstorm Castle. The Lover's Charm, would quickly reunite the party whenever she needed it. Before going off, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had given all their random items for Sun Xin Yu to sell off! Being true misers at heart, the two sisters had wanted to utilize their inventories to their maximum potentials, for monetary purposes.

The party took four days to reach six floor of the 10,000 Phantoms. All of them obtained [Fate Crystals], none above Copper tier. Zhang Yang had obtained eight pieces of Vitality and six pieces of Strength. The boost it provided was not much, but the altogether they were equal to 14 Levels of AP gain. It's really a great haul when everything was taken in perspective.

Compared to Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the rest had gained a Level and a little extra experience points. Since Zhang Yang's Level was way higher than the monsters he killed, the experience points he gained was lowered, however, he was still able to reached Level 62.

On the fifth day, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er broke down the last wall of rocks and arrived at the lowest part of the 10,000 Phantoms.

Since the entire map had a spiral geometry, the top six floors were like the audience seats of a football field. The seventh floor was rather short and small compared to the previous six floors. After walking a mere 200 meters, they had arrived at the pathway that connected them to the lowest part of the map, just like entering the football field.

The huge "football field" did not share the well-groomed attributes of an actual football field! The surface of the ground was extremely uneven, with potholes here and there! There were even storm drains at a few random spots that emitted an extremely unpleasant odor! As they walked, they could only hear the wet squishy sounds of their footsteps. There were no monsters around! The place was so devoid of sound that they could practically hear the sound of a needle drop! Everyone instinctively had their guards up, preparing to react to any movement.

Just then...

Shush! Sun Xin Yu warped next to Zhang Yang with the Lover's Charm. Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er jumped and reacted violently to Sun Xin Yu's sudden appearance.

"S-S-S-S-Sister Sun! Oh god! Don't just jump out of nowhere! That scared the daylights out of me!" cried Wei Yan Er as she patted her chest.

Zhang Yang suddenly remembered an ancient funny joke. "Hey, listen. There was this guy,. He was auditioning to be an actor. So, the instructor let him warm up a little. He was supposed to say "A cold eerie wind blew, and I was so scared, that I dropped a brick!". That man was so nervous that he said "A cold eerie wind blew, and I was so scared, that I dropped a d*ck!""

"...Bleh!" All three females expressed their disgust. Han Ying Xue crossed her arm and shook her head. "Dummy...How and why did you learn all the bad habits from that pervert Fatty!"

Zhang Yang laughed mentally. If Fatty Han was here to hear that

accusation, he would surely get offended at the slanderous claim! Ever since he was a kid, Zhang Yang had always been very naughty. Even though he was younger than Fatty Han by two months, it was Zhang Yang that led Fatty Han down the "dark side". It was best not to reveal the culprit who started it all!

"Sister Sun, don't you have work today?" Wei Yan Er asked Sun Xin Yu.

"It's my off-day!" Sun Xin Yu was ever so direct and simple.

"Oh!"

All four of them proceeded forwards. From afar it would seem as if their heights were fluctuating, one head bobbing over the others at times. The route was extremely uneven.

"This path is so tough to walk on! Hmph! Just like those evil businessmen building random freeways! I can even stomp a hole with my foot!" Wei Yan Er voiced her complaints after walking a few steps.

Ignoring the fact that each circle around the tunnel was 5,000 meters long, the radius of the circles would only be 800 meters. It was a shame there were no shorter routes. After walking down an empty walkway with no monsters to fight, the party had only spent 10 minutes or so to reach the centermost point of the 10,000 Phantoms.

As the party approached the place, which was a few hundred square meters, countless florescence light orbs glowed ferociously, illuminating the entire circular platform.

A spectral monster was seen riding on a skeletal war horse, right in the center of the platform. A huge battle hammer was seen resting on his right shoulder. Fully clad in blood-red metal armor, only two round glowing, green-emerald flames could be seen through the gap in the eye holes.

[Spectre General, Bullon] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 700

"Why isn't it a Yellow-Gold tier?" said Wei Yan Er as she pouted her lips disgruntledly.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Little girl, do you really think that Yellow-Gold bosses would be available everywhere like McDonalds?"

Wei Yan Er nodded her head innocently.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and shook his head. Even though they had defeated a number of Yellow-Gold bosses a few days back, it did not mean that Yellow-Gold bosses would be spawning around like mushrooms after the rain! Zhang Yang had been lucky enough to accept a main story quest in the first place! That was why he could encounter so many Yellow-Gold bosses in the first place! As far as the game progressed, Yellow-Gold bosses were still a rare sight!

"Hurry up and get killing! We have been roaming around this ghostly place for more than four days! Look at my poor Little Petal! Its only at Level 32! We didn't even have the chance to properly grind!"

"Wait!" Sun Xin Yu suddenly let out a scream. She then vanished with a sudden "poof" and disappeared into the air.

"What's wrong?" the party asked.

Sun Xin Yu remained quiet. After a few seconds later, two shadowy figures were forcefully revealed. Both of them had star circling on their heads; they were stunned!

"Thieves!" the party gasped.

Zhang Yang mentally praised Sun Xin Yu incredible awareness. As expected from China's number one Thief. When Zhang Yang was unable to detect any strange activities around him, Sun Xin Yu could, ever so vigilantly! Naturally since Sun Xin Yu was a Thief class herself, she had a far better understanding as to how a Thief worked and how they could strike from within the shadows.

However, Sun Xin Yu's opponent was also proved to be a worthy fighter!

Even though he or she had been caught by Sun Xin Yu, she was also stunned in the process! Not anyone could simply execute such actions!

Zhang Yang shifted his gaze up to the target's name tag. Luckily, he or she did not hide the profile information.

Lost Dream, Level 54, Human Male, Bandit, {Sheng Dynasty}!

Of all people, it's him! The guy with the big mouth²!

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue.

Lost Dream was a rather famous player in Zhang Yang's previous life. He was ranked fifth in the China's Thief ranking. Many players had shared the same opinion that Lost Dream's capabilities were at least on par with Sun Xin Yu. However, he had a rather "big mouth" and because of his behavior, he lost some popularity and lost some positions in the ranking list!

TL Note:

¹Minute-man: Man who just cums way to fast.

²Big mouth: In China, there is another way to describe a person who can't keep a secret. It could also be used to describe people that loves to gossip around or talk loud. In this case, Lost Dream belonged to the kind that could not keep a secret and loves to gossip.

Chapter 252: The Gamble

According to rumors, Lost Dream was the son of an official. In real life, his father was a high-level ranking official at the Provincial level!

That man had two special quirks. The first was that he could never keep his mouth shut. The second, he was a gambling addict. Not the kind in the casino, but one to never back down from small wagers and dares. According to rumors, he once took a dare from his "friends" to go into a gay bar and get some "dudes". In the end, the man did not back down from his bet and "changed" into a raging homosexual man going right into the city's biggest gay bar!

However, where he least expected it, he saw the son of another Provincial level officer's son! In the very same bar! Knowing that Lost Dream was a big mouth, he quickly approached the man and had begged him to keep it a secret from anyone. If he did that, he would advise his own father to help Lost Dream's father get the Provincial Leader position! However, eventually, Lost Dream went back and wreaked havoc with his new-found news. What followed next was a budding grudge between the two otherwise neutral officers! Lost Dream had foiled his own father's dreams for his "uprising"!

That was how stupidly loose-lipped Lost Dream was.

However, no one could deny that Lost Dream had a certain depth of understanding when it comes to playing as a Thief. How else could he be listed in the top 10 Thief Lord's list? Being able to stun Sun Xin Yu at the same time as she did, preventing the opponent from getting the upper hand in battle, proved his ability!

{Ambush} four second stun ended the same time for Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream, both of them flicked their left arms and disappeared with a "poof", entering {Stealth}.

However, just as the both of them entered {Stealth}, both of them were revealed again in the same time! This time, Sun Xin Yu had the upper hand. Her {Ambush} on Lost Dream was successful and she did not

receive any status effect skill!

Zhang Yang mentally praised her again. Earlier, when the two of them used {Ambush} at the same time, the system was confused, even though Sun Xin Yu had activated her skill faster by a millisecond. Since the difference in effect frames was 0.01 second, the system could not determine which side had activated {Ambush} first and had caused both opponents to be stunned simultaneously. However, after the first {Ambush} had ended, Sun Xin Yu was one frame faster than Lost Dream in activating {Vanish} and {Ambush} for the second time, so her attack landed successfully on Lost Dream and stunned him.

Though the fraction of a second was nothing but a tiny blip in time, they mattered most in such crucial situations! In this case, Sun Xin Yu stood triumphant!

When two Thief class players clashed, whoever performs the first {Ambush} and {Kidney Shot} combo will surely be the first to kill the opponent. Taking into account that the difference in equipment tier gap was not that large, Sun Xin Yu's equipment could only be better than Lost Dream and never be weaker. That was why death was a certainty when Lost Dream was stunned by Sun Xin Yu.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

The daggers in Sun Xin Yu's hands glimmered with light reflecting off it as the blades flew around at an incredible speed. Each strike was so strong and fast that it chipped away a large chunk of Lost Dream's HP! Since a Dagger's attack speed was incredibly fast, its single attack was not really high. A Thief will be at a major disadvantage whenever he or she faces a high Defense boss or tank-class players! One can never fully unleash the full potential of a Dual-Wielding weapon! However, when a Thief faces a non-tank class player in PvP, the greatest threat would be the Assassin class!

This class is a specialized PvP character class!

"Ice Cube! Don't kill him!" Zhang Yang yelled just in time to stop Sun Xin Yu's final blow from killing Lost Dream.

Sun Xin Yu turned around to glance Zhang Yang. She then slid across the floor and went back to where the party was, and returned her daggers to their sheaths around her waist.

"Phew! This one says, lady, you're super strong! This young master has never encountered anyone who could overpower him!" Lost Dream regained his mobility after recovering from {Kidney Shot}. He turned around and shot Sun Xin Yu a thumbs up. "However, this young master is not satisfied with one fight! Come! Shall we fight once more?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "In that case, shall we place a bet? You can't win any one out of the four of us!"

Lost Dream got annoyed. "Excuse this young master. This one had been underestimating the enemy a while back. But now that this young master is prepared, and this one will not lose another fight!"

Zhang yang pretended to put on airs. "Oh well, if you're not ballsy enough to bet on it..."

"Excuses me?" Lost Dream jumped to his feet. He was clearly infuriated. "Alright! Let's bet on it then! Speak your desire!"

Like a fish in the net, Zhang Yang had trapped this stupid arrogant son of a b*tch. He smirked. "You can choose any one out of the four of us! If you lose, you'll have to join me!"

"Haha! If this one wins...Let's see...this young master doesn't like being followed by men. However, this one does not mind being called Young Master Lost Dream!" said Lost Dream with his nose up high.

Zhang Yang twitched and raised an eye brow. With a smile on his face, Zhang Yang said, "I accept that wager! Please, choose your opponent!"

Lost Dream paced back and forth while observing all four of them. "This one had just fought this pretty face, so this young master will not bother her for a while. And you're a Guardian! This young master has no fear fighting you, however, this one does not wish to fight an empty turtle shell! This young master does not like to take advantage of poor ladies, and will not fight the Priest! That leaves the Berserker!"

This bastard was not an idiot after all! Even though he admitted that he lost to Sun Xin Yu on the premise of being overconfident, he was actually afraid of her, which was why he was not keen on a direct rematch! However, he did not choose Han Ying Xue. That move proved that Lost Dream had some pride in him since Thief were exceptionally strong against Cloth Armor classes.

"Kick his *ss little brat!" said Zhang Yang.

"You betcha!" Wei Yan Er snickered as she walked up front.

Having been left close to death thanks to Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream sat down and recovered himself with some recovery snacks. After a few seconds, he stood up and dusted off his pants. "Young girl, this young master will not pull his punches. Don't be crying when you lose!"

"Tch! You think you can defeat this young lady? Dream on!" Wei Yan Er lifted her head up high. She was already referring to herself in third-person, clearly influenced by Lost Dream's odd manner of speech.

"Haha!" Lost Dream laughed and entered {Stealth} promptly.

The little brat was a battle addict. Whenever she had the chance, she would drag Sun Xin Yu or Zhang Yang over to have a friendly PvP match in the city's Battle Arena. Having been {Ambushed} by Sun Xin Yu numerous times, Wei Yan Er knew better than to try looking for a thief who was in stealth. You want to fight? Come at me! At least, she could gain some Rage points!

Pow!

Lost Dream appeared from beyond the shadow, appearing behind Wei Yan Er. He slammed the back of Wei Yan Er's head with the hilt of his sword and stunned her.

{Ambush}! Four seconds stun!

"Dummy Yu! Can Yan Er win?" said Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Ask the Ice Cube. Ask her the odds of the fight between her and the little brat!"

Han Ying Xue turned her gaze to Sun Xin Yu.

"Four to six!" Sun Xin Yu paused for a moment to think.

"I won six times, while she won four!"

Zhang Yang laughed mentally. He knew that this lady was never willing to admit her losses and wanted to prove her strength by adding a few details to clarify her statement.

Back at the fight, Lost Dream was slashing his swords at Wei Yan Er's back furiously.

10, 20, 30...Along with the slashes, Wei Yan Er's Rage points rocketed up as her HP dropped.

{Ambush} ended.

{4 Combo Kidney Shot}!

Wei Yan Er had lost so much HP that she was only left with 5,400 HP out of 11,000 HP! It didn't look too good for her. Until...

{Warrior's Will}!

Wei Yan Er was waiting precisely for this moment! Having used her opponent as a rage point provider, she had allowed him to strike her until she had sufficient rage points to do what she needed to do. She turned around as fast as she could and swung her glimmering battle axe at Lost Dream.

Wham!

'-8,912!' {Destructive Smash}, Critical Hit!

Even though Wei Yan Er's {Destructive Smash} could only deal 150% melee damage, her two-handed Yellow-Gold weapon had a long 3.5 second attack interval, and the total damage had reached exceeded 3,000! Without being a critical strike, {Destructive Smash} would deal at least 4,500 damage! Since {Warrior's Will} was used, {Destructive Smash} would land as a Critical hit, causing massive destruction indeed!

Lost Dream was instantly killed!

"Aiya! You're all mush now! Why didn't you used {Blur}?" Wei Yan Er shrugged and expressed a "Dummy!" kind of look on her face. When Wei Yan Er fought Sun Xin Yu, Sun Xin Yu would always be prepared to use {Blur}. Right after Wei Yan Er uses {Warrior's Will} to break out of the stun, Sun Xin Yu will respond with {Blur} or the Invincible frame1 {Vanish} to avoid the attack!

[Blur] (Level 1) : Harnesses the power of shadows. Causes all physical attack to have 75% of missing.

Last for 10 seconds.

Cool down time: 10 minutes

Lost Dream had never thought that Wei Yan Er was so strong, since only less than 100 players owned a Level 50 Yellow-Gold weapon! Even though he was strong, but he had never had a fight with a player as well equipped as Wei Yan Er! That was why he lost! He lacked experience and was in over his head!

Han Ying Xue was unable to revive Lost Dream with her skill since Lost Dream was still registered as an "Enemy". The status would only wear off after 10 minutes. Without waiting, the guy released his soul and ran to his corpse.

"Should we fight the boss first? That guy would probably take some time!" said Zhang Yang as he turned around and started attacking.

Zhang Yang and his party had lost any interest in Gray-Silver bosses. It did not take much effort to kill this boss. Even with 5,000,000 HP, it only lasted as long as 10 minutes against Zhang Yang's party.

After defeating the boss, Lost Dream had just only returned his soul to his dead corpse, reviving just in time to see the boss fall. He sat down and recovered himself to full health.

Zhang Yang distributed all the [Fate Crystals] and smiled as he talked to Lost Dream.

"How about that. Hehe. You dared to bet, you better walk the talk. I'll be seeing you more often now!"

Lost Dream's face twitched. He felt that he had been played directly into Zhang Yang's hands. He knew that he did not lose in term of control and skills. He had lost in terms of equipment! It was an instant kill! How careless could he be!

"Once more!" Lost Dream cried disgruntledly.

Wei Yan Er responded in the same manner. "Bring it! This young lady will wreck you upside down!"

The two of them entered the battle again!

{Ambush}, {Kidney Shot}, {Warrior's Will}, up till this point, the battle was just as like the previous one.

{Blur}!

Lost Dream's entire character began to lose focus. Wei Yan Er's {Destructive Smash} went through him and missed.

{Blast Wave}!

Wei Yan Er quickly cast {Blast Wave} instead, and stunned Lost Dream! The little girl started to laugh manically. It all fully depended on pure luck for a Berserker whenever a Thief uses {Blur}. The odds of {Blast Wave} getting through the 25% hit chance would determine the final victory.

That was why Sun Xin Yu had stated the odds of 4 to 6!

Wei Yan Er quickly turned around and ran away from Lost Dream as far as she could. After four seconds, Lost Dream recovered and started chasing after the little brat.

Five seconds...Six seconds...10 seconds!

Even though Thieves were naturally high in Dexterity, specialized builds that capitalized on that affinity would be really fast at moving! However, the little brat had a four second head start!

Translator Note:

Invincible frame: Also known as IFrames are basically a period of time in which the subject is invincible. They will not take damage nor not

suffer debuffs. They can't be interacted by opponents for the duration of their iframe.

It's a name that's mostly widespread in fighting games, where certain attacks and animations would provide invincibility for a certain number of frames, lasting only a fraction of a second after the activation of a skill.

Chapter 253: Another War General! Get!

Lost Dream's {Blur} ended.

Wei Yan Er cracked an evil smile. She stopped running away and turned around to greet the oncoming Lost Dream. Lost Dream's face turned white when he saw the malicious grin, but he was too slow to react.

{Tornado Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}!

'-4,812!'

'-4,521!'

Wei Yan Er had successfully defeated Lost Dream in two slashes.

"Hell yea!"

"Wait!" 10 minutes later, Lost Dream came back again after reviving. He did not take his defeat wholeheartedly since he still had one more trick up his sleeve. He had not activated {Vanish} earlier. If he had used {Vanish} right after {Blur} had ended, he would have been able to stun Wei Yan Er again and surely win the battle!

The party was already walking away when Lost Dream cried out. Wei Yan Er had her axe resting on her shoulder when she turned around. Zhang Yang frowned and clicked his tongue intentionally. "Lost Dream. Come on bro. You're such a sore loser! Accept your defeat and get a move on! What a loser, if you know you'll lose, don't bet on it!"

"What did you say to me?" Lost Dream flipped. He cringed so hard that his left eye brow was twitching rapidly like an old telegram machine. His speech reverted back to a natural person's. "I lose? Me? Hmph! In that case, come on and fight me! You and me! Mano e mano!"

If he could, Zhang Yang would be shaking his head disappointingly. Besides the rumor describing Lost Dream as a gambler and blabbermouth, but he had never imagined Lost Dream as one who was full of excuses! He laughed and said, "Argh...Every time you'd lose, I'll be hearing only excuses. I bet that you'll give more excuses when you lose this around!"

"Oh please, this young master does not behave that way! A good man shan't fight with a lady! I only let her win!" Lost Dream rolled his eyes. "Fight me! If you win, I shall join you then! Or else, you shall address me as the young master!"

Zhang Yang paces towards the white bear and pats the bear's fully head. "If you can defeat my pet, victory is yours!"

"Excuse me?" Lost Dream cocked his head. "You're a Guardian correct? How do you have a pet?"

Zhang Yang threw up a hand, flashing the victory fingers with his index and middle finger. "If you want to know, you'll have to worship me!"

"Hmph. I accept that challenge. If I win, you'll teach me how to catch a pet!" Lost Dream turned his gaze to the white bear and imagined himself killing players with a pet of his own! He drooled at the thought of how cool he would be!

"Start!"

Poof

Lost Dream disappeared into the shadows.

"Growl!" The Gold-Eared Bear King roared and walked a few steps forward. With Zhang Yang controlling the bear mentally, the bear sat down on its bum and started scratching its head with its rear claw, a lazy and nonchalant posture.

Shush!

Lost Dream appeared behind the white bear and used {Ambush}, stunning the bear as he appeared, and started attacking.

‘-488!’

‘-1’

‘-1,308!’

The bear had 1,200 Defense while Lost Dream was only wearing a full set of Gray-Silver equipment on him. With 1,700 weapon attack in his

main hand, he was able to deal a certain amount of damage to the bear. However, his secondary hand's weapon was so weak and it could only deal '-1', heavily penalized damage!

At least, the skill {Malign Attack} was strong. Taking up 40 Stamina points, the skill can deal 150% of the main hand weapon's damage to a target.

However, Stamina points were limited! Also, hard hitting skills often had longer cool down! After the four seconds stun effect of {Ambush} ended, Lost Dream had only dealt a little more than 3,500 damage. It was a puny scratch compared to the bear's 17,720 maximum HP!

"Crap! What bear is this? Such thick skin!" Lost Dream got frustrated.

Zhang Yang and the rest of his party laughed.

After {Ambush}, Lost Dream chained the attack with a {Kidney Shot}. Since Bandits could not raise their combo count as swiftly as an Assassin, the strike Lost Dream had just used was only a four-combo count {Kidney Shot}, stunning the bear for only five seconds!

After the five seconds stun, Lost Dream had only damaged the bear for slightly over 4,000 damage. Swiftly, Lost Dream used {Vanish} and entered {Stealth}.

{Wild Recovery}!

A green light engulfed the white bear and its HP slowly regained, 5% at every second.

"F*ck me!" As Lost Dream was waiting for his Stamina to recover, he could only stare at the bear as it healed itself back to full health!

After 10 seconds, Lost Dream started all over again with {Ambush}. After {Ambush}'s four seconds stun and {Kidney Shot}'s five second stun, Gold-Eared Bear King' HP had dropped down to 9,000 before it could regain control of its movement.

Counterattack start!

'-3,792!'

‘-3,612!’

The bear dealt more than 7,000 damage with one normal attack and one {Claw Attack}. The attack was so strong that Lost Dream activated {Blur} promptly. He exclaimed, "Ooi! What sort of pet is this? What the heck have you been feeding it?!"

{Blur} was a powerful life-saving skill. However, the evasion rate was only 75%. It did not provide perfect invincibility. If one had extremely bad luck, one might even receive more than one attack! Lost Dream did not exactly draw the short end of that stick, as he evaded the first attack from Gold-Eared Bear King. The second attack however, did land. The claw smacked Lost Dream so solidly that he was instantly killed.

After running back and reviving at the same spot, Lost Dream sulked and recuperated with recovery snacks.

If Zhang Yang was a Hunter instead of a Guardian, Lost Dream could choose to kill the Hunter, knowing that the pet would fall no sooner! Even though Lost Dream did not clash with Zhang Yang, he knew that a Guardian would be even tougher than the bear! "Killing the head of the snake" would never work in this situation!

"The reason why I have a pet is because of an Indistinct skill book called {Beast Taming}. I originally had a battle mount to begin with. This skill allows me to use the pet mount as a Hunter's pet!" Zhang Yang proactively explained the secrets of his Gold-Eared Bear King. He thought explaining it would not make any difference to him.

Lost Dream was delighted. It wasn't because he had learned the secrets of the bear, but he felt that Zhang Yang was a promising character. He stood up and casually patted his shoulder. "Brother! This young master shall grant the privilege of having you as a friend! Ah right! This one doesn't even know who you are!"

Zhang Yang smiled and reveal his profile information.

Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of Snow Sprite City, Centaur's Brave Warrior, Hero of White Jade City, Level 62, Human Male, Guardian, {Lone Desert Smoke}.

Typically, a player's name tag would be easy to read in one second, but Zhang Yang's name tag was so long that Lost Dream quickly gave up halfway through!

He laughed. "Haha! So, you're the infamous Zhan Yu! This one assumes that all of you here are from Lone Desert Smoke as well! Hahaha! No wonder! No wonder this one lost so pathetically!" The man's characteristic was rather well-mannered. He was no longer sulking, looking rather jubilant instead.

"Join us!" Zhang Yang sent an invitation to Lost Dream. This guy may be a little weaker than Sun Xin Yu, but his skills as a future top 10 thief was apparent! He would definitely be one of the important assets in the future Professional League!

"Huhu! This one sees that you've humbly asked for this young master's presence. In that case, this young master shall be courteous for a change! But be warned! This young master is ridiculously good looking! There's isn't anyone else like this one! Please do not fall in love with this one! This young master is only but a passing legend!" said Lost Dream while running his fingers down his hair in a way that was so cringey, that the girls were rolling their eyes!

Lost Dream then proceeded to withdraw from his own guild and accepted the invitation from Zhang Yang. The battle team for the future Professional League got even stronger!

The party then distributed the boss loots and went back to the Thunderstorm Castle via [Teleportation Scrolls].

Just as they returned to the castle, they heard a loud explosion roaring in the night sky. The night sky was then illuminated by many colorful lights of fireworks. The flowery design of the firework was indeed dazzling and beautiful. The last explosion burst out so brightly that it was clearly visible five to six kilometers away!

"D*mn! Who would burn their money for that!" Zhang Yang scoffed.

Fireworks were priced at different prices in the game. Small ones would cost one to two gold coins, while larger ones would even cost thousands!

The one that they had just witness probably cost more than 5,000 gold coins! What a waste of hard-earned money!

After some time, another wave of fireworks burst out in the sky, and the last one formed the words saying, "Little Snow! I love you!"

Five words formed out of the sparkles of the fireworks. Each word was so big; as large as Thunderstorm Castle itself! A final blast was fired, forming a beautiful heart-shaped frame around the sentence.

"Bleh...it must be the work of that bastard, Luo Yang Ming!" said Wei Yan Er as she frowned.

"What a disgusting prick!" Han Ying Xue pout her cheeks.

The words lingered around for five minutes before dissipating into the night sky. Many players started chattering, wanting to know who was willing to spend such a huge amount of money for that extravagant fireworks display. Just so you know, the kind of fireworks display that would form words required special reservations! From how large the word should be, to how long it should be display in the sky, all that would take up an extremely large sum of gold coin!

On the other end, female players were extremely jealous of the said, "Little Xue". Thanks of Lou Yang Ming, the female players now expected their own partners to do the same for them!

As the fireworks display ended, Luo Yang Ming popped up at their location. With a passionate expression, he stared at Han Ying Xue. "Little Xue, please accept my love!"

"You stinking, rotting, piece of useless meat! How persistent can you be! You're f*cking annoying you know that?! I asked you to stay away from her a long time ago! Why would you crawl back here!?" Zhang Yang walked up and stand between Han Ying Xue and Luo Yang Ming.

"Little prick! Move!" Luo Yang Ming has had it. He no longer wore the proud aristocratic posture and began insulting Zhang Yang.

"You move!" Zhang Yang roared. He lifted his axe and cleaved Luo Ming Yang into two. Luo Ming Yang was only Level 20. That blow was enough

to send him off to the graveyard.

"F*ck you! You dare to snatch my woman!? Just because you have a guild with ten thousand players, you're acting all high and mighty? Hmph! Arrogant little bastard! I see what you truly are! Bastard could even be a road sweeper or worse than that! So what if you're the guild leader of Lone Desert Smoke! I'll form a guild of my own and use my money to buy all the members from your guild! I'll see what you do next!" said Luo Yang Ming to Zhang Yang through a private message.

Zhang Yang did not reply but laughed at his futile threats. This man did have a small fortune, but he thinks that the world revolved around him. Zhang Yang himself has the Thunderstorm Castle and the Little Merchandize shop! Both could generate him approximately 75,000,000 gold coins a month! Even if the exchange rate drops to 1:2.5, you would still earn 180,000,000 dollars a month! Although his total revenue could not be compared to the earnings of Silky Soft Holdings, Zhang Yang's profits alone were enough to exceed even Silky Soft Holdings!

It's safe to say that with the Territory and the Little Merchandize Shop, Zhang Yang was already earning more than Silky Soft Holdings! He believed that when investors learn about the nature of the Territory and Little Merchandize Shop, they would be willing to emptied their wallets just to have share or even buy the place down!

Luo Yang Ming was just a frog in a well! How could he know such things? He was from a prim and proper family, it was only natural that he will not touch online games! He was completely clueless about the impact 'God's Miracle' would have in real life! Coincidentally, it had created a brand new market in the world economy!

Sigh...he was just like a dog barking up the wrong tree -- or in this case, a tree that carried a squirrel that was larger than him!

Zhang Yang laid down a new command to the troops in the Territory, to kill a player called "iLuvHanYingXue" on sight!

Chapter 254: First Shot

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were progressing really quickly. So far, they had already reached Level 59, and were on the brink of reaching Level 60!

The second and third [Land Leases] were released and taken respectively by the guilds Radiance and Crimson Rage. However, these two guilds had two very different levels of luck. Radiance was lucky enough to produce their land in Blue Ocean City. Although the positioning of the land did not allow it to be as lucrative as Little Merchandize Shop, it was still inside a major city! Crimson Rage had an unfortunate draw. The land that their [Land Lease] produced was some random small town outside the Emerald City. It was rather bad. Since it was not worth anything at all, at most, Crimson Rage could only use it as an extra warehouse storage unit! Snow Seeker was so angry and frustrated that she even went to Zhang Yang to complain about it!

However, as Zhang Yang would have guessed, this sly fox of a woman had only done so to gain some sympathy points from him. She would then ask to have a portion of the profits gained from Thunderstorm Castle.

...

It was November the 17th. A day that Zhang Yang would never forget.

6pm. In the evening.

Tu Tu Tu

The phone rang just as Zhang Yang logged out of the game. He rushed to the table and hurriedly picked it up.

"Hello!"

"Zhang Yang~~" A soft, sultry voice of a female was heard.

"Oh! It's Teacher Yu! Right! How was auntie's surgery?" Zhang Yang scratched his head from the itch he had after having laid down for a long time. He recalled the kidney surgery her mother had undergone a fortnight before.

"It was all good! The doctor had not found any signs of rejection! The doctors said that she could be discharged the day after tomorrow!" Yu Li squeal with joy. She was practically chirping with happiness. "I have something to discuss with you. Could you swing by?"

Zhang Yang sniffed his armpit before answering. "Yeah! Sure...I'll drop by later. I'll need to go get dinner first!"

"I've made dinner at home! Just come over and eat with me!"

"Sounds good!"

"Can't wait!"

Zhang Yang felt something off, as Yu Li was rather cheerful considering how recent the "tragic" incident back then was. He took a bath, got out of his apartment, and hailed a cab to get to Yu Li's place. It was no surprise that Zhang Yang could still remember her address. He was not drunk back then.

The cab took only 20 minutes or so to reach the doorstep of her home. He ran upstairs and knocked on her door. He quickly sniffed at his armpits and nodded satisfyingly. Although he did not smell good, at least he did not smell!

"Come in!" said Yu Li as she opened the door, leaving the front door open for Zhang Yang to walk in. Yu Li was wearing a long black dress. The fabric was smooth and silky, tightly plastered to every inch of her bodyline. Zhang Yang could see the perfect curvature of her entire body, from the round peaks of her chest, down to the impossibly slender waist, and finally, the her round, perky butt that simply wanted to burst through the fabric. Every inch of her body screamed for a man's touch.

Yu Li bent down, causing further creases in the already tight fabric, to lay down a pair of slippers for Zhang Yang to step into. After that, she quickly turned around and headed to the kitchen. As she walked, her perky butt jiggled in tandem ever so seductively as Zhang Yang stared after it, having bent down to change into the slippers. His crotch tingled with a burning sensation and it took all of his willpower to repress the urge as his member threatened to tear through his trousers.

What's wrong with me?

With the dedication that would have graduated him from a monk's temple, Zhang Yang forced his mind to work over matter, removing himself from the gutter. He sucked in a deep breath and let it out slowly. After he was 100% sure that his pants were loose once again, he went to the sofa and sat down comfortably.

"Teacher Yu! Is dinner ready? I'm starving here!"

"Almost ready! Sit tight!"

It did not take long before Yu Li walked out of the kitchen with dishes in her hand. One by one, she placed the dishes onto the dining table gracefully and took out a bottle of red wine.

"Have a seat!"

The dining table in the dining area was not wide enough for two people to have their dinner. Instead, Yu Li had placed all the dishes on a makeshift table in the living room. Zhang Yang got up from the sofa, pulled out the chair and sat down. Steaming hot, fresh from the kitchen, one could instantly see that the food was way more than the serving for just two people! Zhang Yang took a whiff and said, "Wow! They smell great! But...I don't think the two of us can finish it!"

Yu Li uncorked the wine and poured two glasses of wine for each of them. "I wouldn't be here if it weren't for you. So, here's to you!" Yu Li raised her glass up high.

"Hehe! Don't mention it!" Zhang Yang had never been a good Samaritan to begin with. If it had been someone else, he would not have lifted a finger to help. Zhang Yang raised his glass and clinked it with hers.

"For health!"

"For health."

Without saying anything more, Zhang Yang and Yu Li began to dine. He picked up the cutlery on the table and started to scoop fill his plate. He was famished. Zhang Yang was a big eater to begin with, and since he also

disliked seeing wastage, he walloped the entire table of food clean.

After half an hour, Zhang Yang had successfully "raided" all the food. He patted his bloated tummy and belched. "Fuu! That was awesome! I'm completely stuffed! I could probably go on for a week without food now! Teacher Yu! Your dishes were excellent! You can really cook!"

Yu Li smiled and took a sip of the wine. "Thanks! If you like them, feel free to come over anytime!"

Fidgeting around with his own half-emptied wineglass, Zhang Yang finally stopped and said, "Alright. Now that dinner is done, I better head back!"

"Wait!" Yu Li cried. She puts down the wineglass and strode over slowly. Her movements were deliberately slow and seductive as she placed her chin right next to Zhang Yang's shoulder. She gazed into his eyes and whispered, "You've had your dinner, but you haven't had me yet now, have you?"

Her lustful voice sent waves of raging hormones coursing through Zhang Yang's body. His mind went completely blank for a good second as the burning lust in him almost overwhelmed everything else. Frantically, Zhang Yang tried his best to summon the image of Brother Chun and Sister Fung¹, the two god-tier bosses to calm himself down. He shook his head like a mad dog, jumping to his feet.

"Stop teasing me Teacher Yu!"

"Why? Am I not pretty enough for you? Am I not woman enough for you? I can't move your heart one bit? Or is it that your little wee wee doesn't even work?" said Yu Li with a playful wink.

"Not functioning---" Zhang Yang scoffed. "Teacher Yu, why are you trying so hard to mess with me?!"

"You know what? Fine. If you want to leave, go ahead! However, just so you know. Once you leave, I'll just change into my sleeping gown, the sexiest I can find and go knocking from door to door starting from the sixth floor! I'm sure at least one man would be willing to sleep with me!"

"You wouldn't dare---"

"Yes! I will!"

Yu Li was serious. She was staring into Zhang Yang with the same look in her eyes that she had when she was serious about failing one of her students back then. Somehow, he really took her words for it and believed that this woman would actually get out there and start knocking on random doors, just to get back at him! If he had not experienced his emotional crisis back then, he would never ever do anything to betray Lin Yu! However, as of right now, barely any of the love that he had for Lin Yu remained in his heart, buried, not deep within his heart, but more like in a graveyard somewhere in a dead corner, to the point where he was not even bothered to try and exhume it back up!

Dammit! Might as well treat it as an exercise after a meal!

Zhang Yang was as normal as a man could be. Since he possessed the memories back from before he was reincarnated, the memories of a man and a woman in bed together, with their limbs entwined and their bodies conjoined, was deeply etched in his mind. Ever since he restarted his life, he had been enduring for more than five months! During the entire time, he had not even had the opportunity to beat his stick, sexual deprivation had caged up a wild beast in his pants!

His could feel the rhythm of his breath changing. He was almost sure that the vapors of his breath had turned into steam. His vision blurred, as his eyes went unfocused with lust and desire. The male instinct took over as his gaze slid down to enjoy every inch of the woman's curves.

Yu Li had started to feel the same way as he did. She felt his gaze like a magical, invisible hand that ran all over her body. Wherever his eyes laid, turned hot and frisky, craving for the man to touch them, to rub them, till her voice broke through the silence of the night! Her cheeks were filled with red-hot desire as they blushed pink. In fact, every part of her exposed skin, her breast, her cleavage, her thighs practically glowed with the vermillion color of lust!

"Take me!" She whispered into his ears silkily, as Yu Li embraced Zhang

Yang in her arms, pressing her body against him. Zhang Yang felt something soft and amazing, and her scent filled his senses, as his rough hands explored her bare back. She was like a cotton filled viper, soft and lovely but at the same time possessing a deadly hidden strength as she curled her body around Zhang Yang with other-worldly flexibility, squeezing herself against Zhang Yang's chest as her own hands slid down between Zhang Yang's thighs.

The fire in him burst into a an inferno. His hands went faster, running themselves up and down Yu Li's back, feeling her hot, smooth skin. They ventured down south, to find a pair of soft, supple mounds that conveniently fit in his palms. It was like they were the perfect size for his preference as were his hands...he grabbed onto them tightly without a care--his nails happened to be clipped.

Zhang Yang's desire threatened to tear through his body and soul. He scooped her off her feet and carried her -- princess-style towards her bed.

As he carried Yu Li in his arms, their eyes silently met. Her eyes reciprocated his gaze with their own silent screams of desire. Take me, they said. Just take all of me, they said. Slowly, she welcomed him and slithered her arms behind Zhang Yang's neck, gently purring like a cat.

Boom!

Zhang Yang kicked the door open with a foot. His body was burning on overdrive, fueled beyond its capacity. Unable to control his own strength, he nearly gave the door a new hole as it swung open. He summoned his strength and tossed Yu Li onto her bed, as he turned and locked the door behind him.

"Ahhh~!" Yu Li yelped in surprise she fell onto the bed, her chest bouncing along with the mattress.

Zhang Yang attacked her before she could even react, piling his body on top of hers, grabbing hold of her outstretched wrists. Yu Li has never done this before, but was well aware of the steel pole that protruded against her lower abs. She knew what Zhang Yang wanted and she would give him just that.

"Yu Li..." Zhang Yang's ragged breath tickled her ear. His face was flushed red, as he gazed at her with clouded eyes, a depraved being possessed by a mix of alcohol and lust. Swiftly, he buried his face into her breasts, going wild with the soft flesh that parted, submissively giving way to him. Even with a layer of fabric still shielding them, it did not take long for Zhang Yang to feel the hard bumps against his cheek. Instinctively following them with his mouth like a predator picking up on the scent of its prey, he took them in his lips, teasing around with his tongue.

"Uhh...Ahh..." Yu Li's voice leaked out, the tell-tale crescendo accenting the end of her expression as she arched her head back, as her erect protrusions were sucked on, flicked about in Zhang Yang's mouth. Her hands ravaged Zhang Yang's back, her fingers digging deep.

Like an animal, Zhang Yang ripped off her dress. The zipper was on her lower back, and he felt that it was rather troublesome and that it would kill the mood. Instead, he used his brute strength to rip the dress apart, tossing the pieces aside as it slid down the bed, and onto the floor with a light clink.

With the dress gone, all that was left now was her fair, snow-like skin and her black undergarments that clutched her chest together in an explosive pack.

"Beautiful..." he said. He buried his face deep into the cleavage of her chest. He licked the center, reaching out for the deepest part of her cleavage. It sent a violent wave through her entire body. He bit the lower part of the cups and tugged them down to reveal her pink, cute bumps that stood out beside the black material.

Yu Li's breath was ragged, matching Zhang Yang's. She was in her own world, lost just like Zhang Yang was. She moved her hands to his face, feeling the contour of his face like a passionate potter, slowly sliding them down his neck. She arched her back, drawing his attention to the pronounced curvature of her chest.

Zhang Yang traced his fingers up her back, until he found the one thing that he wanted to remove. He unhooked the latch and tossed laced cups as

far away as he could. Having lost all restraint, her breasts jiggled out of control. As she laid back down on the bed, a tiny quake jiggled over her breast ever so violently and Zhang Yang was almost hypnotized by the sight.

He lowered his head and attacked one of her nipples, while he kept his hands busy on the other. He squeezed the tiny protrusion between his fingers, gently stimulating the stiffening tip.

Unable to contain the rampaging impulses, she twitched and lurched in her throes of pleasure. Her sweet cries rose in intensity as she moaned and moaned endlessly as Zhang Yang tortured her breasts. Her firm breasts were perky and smooth, yet so soft that they jiggled back to shape whenever he released them, as he kneaded them with vigor.

"Zha...Zhang Yang...Oh...Zhang. Yang!" Her cries filled the room as she gripped the back of his head, pulling at his hair. He looked up at her and their mutual desire was made apparent as their eyes met.

Zhang Yang pressed his lips against hers and delivered a passionate burning kiss that left her craving for more. He left her gaping, panting lips as he moved down her neck, down her breasts, following the smooth curvature of her abs and found himself a little obstacle. Just a little lower, would be Yu Li's last line of defense, before being fully exposed to him. He raised his head, parting his lips from her belly. Yu Li looked at him passionately, as if she had just given away that which was most precious to her. That alone had made Zhang Yang to bury himself deep inside her more. Sliding one hand beneath the material, he grabbed, and pulled it all the way down her fair legs, tossing them aside once they were free.

Yu Li felt a cold breeze down there. Amid her confusion and her ecstasy, she had finally realized that her final line of defense had been torn through. She opened her half-closed eyes, only to find Zhang Yang nuzzling between her legs. A sudden wave of embarrassment surged up, her cheeks were dyed in pink now. Squeezing her legs shut, she bolted upright and pulled Zhang Yang back to her level. "Stop staring...I know you want me..."

If Zhang Yang was in a game now with a meter to gauge his level of desire, he would have broken the game already! He pressed himself against Yu Li, their foreheads pressed against each other, and Zhang Yang finally said the one thing he had been thinking all night long, the one thing all men would want, "I'm going to make love you...I'm going to f*ck you now."

"Take me! Make me your woman and show me you're a man...f*ck me Zhang Yang." It was particularly embarrassing for her to finally use the f-word for its most literal meaning.

Even though Zhang Yang was still a cherry boy in this life, he had already been to twenty-toes with the same woman in his past life. In essence, he had a body of a virgin, but a mind that carried the experience of a past life. His manly part twitched and jerked as Yu Li's ragged breath brushed past his ears. It was as if this was all she wished for entire life. Granting that wish, Zhang Yang would. With a swift stroke, Zhang Yang plunged into her warm, forbidden crevice.

The silence of the room was finally filled with the scream of Yu Li's first being torn away. Tears filled her eyes but she quickly wiped them away. After letting her catch her breath for a second Zhang Yang began moving, slowly at first, but like a locomotor warming up, he picked up the pace, until finally, he was pistoning like a bull going all out on her. The room was once again filled with noise, with Yu Li's cries of pain and ecstasy, Zhang Yang's own ragged breath, and the fleshy, wet sound of impact as their bodies collided again and again.

30 minutes later, silence finally fell. Light fell upon the naked bodies of a couple clinging to each other, as if they were madly in love.

Zhang Yang got up and looked into her tired eyes. Though they were fully exposed to each other, there was nothing to be ashamed of anymore.

"Does it hurt?" Zhang Yang asked a relatively stupid question.

"How would you feel if I used my finger to dig your nose till it bleeds?"

"Why didn't you say anything?"

"Do you really think a little bit of pain would stop me?"

"Well, at least I could do it, a little more gently?"

"Sigh...this pain would only be felt by a woman once in her lifetime. I wanted to savor every bit of it." said Yu Li as she caressed Zhang Yang face.

She suddenly giggled weakly. "I would have never thought that my first time would be taken away by my very own student! If word got out, others would definitely be call me names like slut, harlot, minx!"

"Teacher..."

Zhang Yang understood how she felt. He wanted to embrace her once more but she placed her hands on his tight, muscular chest.

"There's no need to console me. I've already give this much thought." Yu Li bunched up and got on top of Zhang Yang. "Now, let me get on top!"

Zhang Yang reached out to wrap his hands around her slender waist. "Why...why did you do it?"

"Honest to god? I was feeling a little one sided. I was dissatisfied. Back then, when you said you wanted to hire me, it wasn't just for your good, wasn't it. You really wanted to help me."

Yu Li looked up to the ceiling and stared at the empty surface. "When I was dating—for four years, I thought I had found it. My one true love. But eventually, finding right partner, the right man turned out to be extremely tough. Perhaps, in one far corner of the world, there will be a right man for me. Who truly loves me for who I am! But, until I find him, I'll probably be a 40 or 50 year old hag!"

She looked back down at him and ran her hands playfully over his abs. "The day you find your woman. I will quietly leave you in peace. I will never bother you anymore." Yu Li smile. This time, her smile was different. It was not forced nor pretentious. It was her genuine smile.

"Now, I'm a free woman. I can do whatever I want to do! And now, I want to have you inside me! I want you to f*ck me everyday!"

Those words brought a sudden life back in him. The flames that had just died down came up scorching, sending the blood pumping into his meat pole as it reared up, ready to go for a second round.

"Hey!" Yu Li jumped when she felt Zhang Yang pressing against her behind. "What's wrong---No! No more! It did hurt for me, remember?"

Like a needle in his brain, her words struck him deeply. After a woman's first time, the pain will linger on for what seems to be forever. It wouldn't subside until two to three days later. In worse case scenarios, the pain would remain for a week, even! It could leave a trauma that went past biology and emotions that would scar them for life, making them averse to men and love.

"Don't make that expression. Let me tell you a little secret. At first, it hurt like hell. But after that, I felt pleasure like never before." Yu Li whispered into his ears, biting on them playfully.

Another question rose inside him. Dreadfully, he needed to know. It would say a lot about his performance. It would determine on a man's confidence in himself. "Did...did you cum?"

"No!"

"No! You lying minx!"

"No! I'm serious!"

"..."

Zhang Yang crossed his arms. Puffing with confidence, he grabbed her hands and pulled her back down to the bed. "In that case, I'll give you one right now!"

"Please no!"

Yu Li was shocked. Her precious part had just been torn open, she knew that she would not endure a second session. She frantically pleaded.

"Alright! Alright! I did! I did!"

"Did what?" Zhang Yang playfully questioned her.

Yu Li winked at him. "Sigh...do all men love teasing like that?"

Zhang Yang laughed. Sometimes, men can be rather generous and humble. But, sometimes, there were things that they cannot let pass. In this case, it did wonders for a man's pride!

The two of them cuddled around for a little while when Zhang Yang finally left the bed. "I have to go now."

"There's no need to rush things. I told Fei Fei about this. She will only be back tomorrow morning, she will be staying at a hotel for the night. You can go to sleep with no worries!"

In all honesty, Zhang Yang did not want to leave Yu Li's warmth embrace. Who wouldn't? He nodded obediently and went back to bed.

Yu Li raised one of her eye brows and said sarcastically, "How about this. I'll call her to come back now, and you can take her in as well! She's been finding a man of fortune to be a lover! You can have your threesome here!"

Zhang Yang felt a jump in his heart. His raging cock down there responded the same way as well.

Yu Li saw it and scoffed. "I see that all men sure are greedy. You already have a fish in your tank, and you're still searching for other fish in the sea!"

Zhang Yang did not mind tasting other women in his life, of course he thought of doing the hanky-panky all the time! To have his body respond to her sly, alluring suggestion would only be natural. He cast it aside with his mind and asked her. "So, your mother will be discharged the day after tomorrow?"

"Yes. That's why I ask you to come over tonight! Or else, you might never have the chance to do it anymore!"

Zhang Yang patted her head and slowly caressed her fair face. "Buy a new house! Do you really wish to cramp in three persons in this god-forsaken building?"

"Sure. You're my exulted master. Your wish is my command!" Yu Li agreed. She did not want to have her mother staying in this small space.

"After I go back, I'll send you another 1,000,000 dollars."

"Is that your way of paying me back after shredding me apart?"

"You can say that. Since you're my woman, I can at least treat you a little better, now can I?"

TL note:

1. Brother Chun and Sister Fung: Brother Chun was the nickname of Li Yu Chun who gained fame in China as an ambassador of gender-neutrality. She was always seen in sharp suits. Sister Fung was the nickname of Luo Yu Feng, gaining fame by criticizing others on the internet. Self-proclaimed to have known Chinese drawing, Chinese instrumental, and Chinese poem since childhood. In year 2010, she went to America, vowing never to return to China. However, in year 2011, she was deported by the Americans, under the premise that her messages were causing too much harm in society.

Chapter 255: Soaring Swords Professional League

Zhang Yang shook his head, smiling weakly as he asked, "Lend me your gaming helmet. I'd like to log in for a while."

Yu Li got up from her bed and immediately cringed in pain with a loud "ouchiee" as she limped towards her closet. Digging among the neatly arranged clothing, she bent down, causing her firm breasts to sway about as they dangled down. She straightened up with a gaming helmet. After handing the helmet to Zhang Yang, she returned to bed rather disgruntledly.

"D*mn, it really hurts..."

Zhang Yang snickered and put on the helmet to log into the game.

"Noob tank! Have you seen the system's announcement? The preliminary rounds of 'Soaring Swords' starts next month!"

"Little Yang, registration for 'Soaring Swords' opens tomorrow."

"O Guild master! Please babysit me!"

Just as Zhang Yang logged into the game, he was instantly bombarded with private messages from Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, and a few other members of his guild. He was stunned. 'Soaring Swords' was already starting? But then again, it was about time too! He was the one who was out of place.

Soaring Swords, was Dream Tech's first world class, international level, PvP competition. Each region would host their own tournament. This was the starting point, or rather the filtration point for the future Professional League. Unlike the future Professional League, Soaring Swords would only allow team fights. Only players in a party formation could register, up to a limit of five members.

After a series of preliminary battles, each major city will only produce 4 parties each. All 32 parties in entire China will have the final decisive

match in the city of Shanghai. Other than the luxurious grand prize, all 32 parties that had been carefully selected from the preliminary round will be seeded in the S-Class Professional League held next year!

Keep in mind that the League had a 10 player limit in their battle team. The League will also have 1v1 competitions. Thus, not only did they have to possess good teamwork, but each member of the party must be able to hold their ground in a solo fight!

Zhang Yang proceed to create a party and invited those that he discerned to have a certain level of potential. He then switched to the party channel and announced, "I'm sure everyone has heard of and wants to join the Soaring Swords!"

"You betcha! Noob tank! The champions will have the best rewards! Each member will gain three levels, one skill point, and a chance to participate in the lucky draw! According to the official statement, there's even a 1% chance to draw a Violet-Platinum tier equipment! You hear that? Violet-Platinum!" Wei Yan Er was wild with excitement. She was already picturing herself standing on the champion's podium.

"Those parties who make it to the finals will earn 20,000 dollars a person as a reward! Final 16, will have 40,000 per person. Final 8 will have 80,000 dollars per person, and Final 4 will have 160,000 per person! As for the top three teams, the 3rd place will have 200,000 dollars per person, 2nd place will have 500,000 dollars a person. And the final champion's team will have 1,000,000 dollars per person! Dream Tech sure is going all out for this competition!" Hundred Shot's own salary was already raised to 100,000 dollars a month. Still, he was shocked when a million dollar prize was presented as a prize.

Zhang Yang laughed. "In that case, we must think of a way to get ourselves all top 3 places!"

"Noob tank! This time, you must be on my team! This young lady will allow you to fight. I will not be dragging the team down this time!" Wei Yan Er snickered evilly.

"Puh! Little Yang will surely be with this Fatty bro!" roared Fatty Han as

he jumped out of the crowd.

"Bullsh*t! The guild master will surely be in my team!"

Everyone already knew about Zhang Yang strength. Just with his {Destructive Smash} that reduced healing effects by 75%, there was nobody who wouldn't be willing to be a vegan monk for him.

Finally, the excitement died down, and everyone turned their expectant gazes to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang put up a serious face and said, "As of right now, our guild is the strongest guild in all of China. I can't say for sure, but I'm sure that many guilds have set their eyes upon defeating us. They will try to take our places and kick us down the rankings. So I say this, we must take this chance to rise up among others, to fight for the glory of the guild, to earn our place, not just in the hearts of all players, but for the world to witness! Let them see, Lone Desert Smoke, the champions of China!"

Everyone nodded. A man's wants far outweighed the benefits of the guild. As long as the guild's position remained unfazed, unshaken, everyone in the guild would have bright futures!

Zhang Yang swept across the crowd to quickly observe every one of them. "I plan to create two permanent battle teams. The target of these teams is to be among the four teams who will represent China. The first team will have, me, that little brat, that b*tchy snow, Ice Cube, and Daffodil Daydream. The second team, Hundred Shots, that fat guy there, Lost Dream, Fantasy Sweetheart, and Galileo."

Galileo was a Berserker who had recently joined Lone Desert Smoke. His controls and intuition were impressive. He had performed extremely well in the secondary raid party, drawing Zhang Yang's attention.

In the first battle team, Han Ying Xue would be the healer of the team. Without her "ginormous" support, the team will not be able to perform well. Sun Xin Yu, a.k.a Ice Cube, will be China's Thief Lord in the future, the best of the best, so naturally, she was in his team. As for the little brat, if he had not proactively recruited her, she might grovel at his feet, sobbing until he looked like the villain instead. That being said, her skills

and equipment were above the average member around. She had some potential, to be able to win four out of 10 matches against Sun Xin Yu.

Daffodil Daydream was in his team since there were already three melee fighters around. Her nuking style, her burst damage was a necessity in the team. Besides, she was the only ranged attack! Compared to the second battle team, Daffodil Daydream's capabilities exceeded even Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han. Fatty Han was a PvP dumb*ss, through and through. He could be in the team solely because of his equipment. Hundred Shots had yet to obtain the mini-Red Dragon as his pet, and was nowhere at the strength Zhang Yang knew him by. Without it, he would never be a super strong tier player like Zhang Yang!

"Little Yang, bro, come on. Why are you being so greedy! Four ladies all to yourself? Dude!" Fatty Han stared in envy.

Zhang Yang shrugged. "Team 1 and Team 2 have been decided. Anyone else who wants to participate in the competition may form their own team! The guild will not interfere!"

After a quick grinding session, Zhang Yang logged out of the game and used Yu Li's computer in the room to access the official site, looking up for further information on the Soaring Swords. After all, his memory of Soaring Sword Competition was all but covered in memory dust, he could not possibly remember all the tiny details.

According to the announcement in the official site, any player above Level 50 can participate in the event. The number of participants in the battle team is limited to not more than five members. Player can still participate in the event with a team less than five members. There was nothing that said a single player was not eligible. If one thinks that one is strong enough to take on five players, one may do so proudly and even win the grand prize!

The registration would start at 00:00 the next day, ending on the 30th of November. However, players would need to purchase a Party Registration Log for 10 gold coins if they wished to participate. The registration would be completed after all team mates had placed their forms and signature

into the book, which would be submitted to the system.

A player is and limited to only one battle team. After the submission, no one is allowed to switch sides or join another team.

The preliminary rounds would start on the first day of December and end on the 10th. Only 32 battle teams will be selected from the preliminary rounds to join the semi-finals. On the 20th of December, all 32 teams will have to proceed to Grand Skyline Hotel in Shanghai, fully sponsored by Dream Tech. Further information would be added upon further notice.

Zhang Yang read the entire announcement carefully before turning off the computer and going back to bed.

Yu Li was already sound asleep, all curled up like kitten. Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He knew a little thing or two about body language. When a person sleeps in such a position, curled up into a ball, it showed signs of insecurity and depression.

Zhang Yang felt sad for her. He reached out his hands and pulled her gently into his embrace, falling asleep with her in his arms.

The night passed by silently.

The next day, Zhang Yang opened his eyes. He was extremely surprised when the first scene he saw was a completely alien surrounding. It took a while before he remembered that he was in Yu Li's bedroom and that he had spent the night at her house. He turned his head to the other side only to find an empty bed. He sucked in a deep breath, taking in the fragrance of a woman from the pillow beside him.

Fuu!

Zhang Yang let out a long breath and got up with a flip. He got his cloths on properly and opened the door. Just then, the smell of fried eggs came rushing into his nostrils. He walked to the kitchen and found her there cooking breakfast.

Zhang Yang leaned on the corner of the wall and observed the woman. After transitioning from a young maiden to a full fledged woman, she was

wearing tight jeans that had did nothing to hide the shape of her curvy long legs. Her ass was held firmly by the fabric of the jeans, creating a perfect peach like curvature that sent Zhang Yang's blood boiling with desire again.

He sneaked up behind her and embraced her.

"Ah!" Yu Li was startled. She turned to him and plucked his nose lightly.

"Don't play now. If the eggs get burned, there's no breakfast for you, young man!"

"Doesn't matter. I'll just have you for breakfast!"

Now filled with desire, Zhang Yang's hands slithered up from Yu Li lower waist, slipping beneath her shirt. His hands made their way slowly up to her warm, perky breasts. Gradually and sexually, Zhang Yang pressed his lips on her snow-white neck and nibbled them a little.

"Let go you, little minx! I'm serious! Ah! My eggs! It's going to burn!"

Now that he was already heated up and ready to go. Zhang Yang shut the stove off before scooping her off her feet and carried her into the bedroom. laughing manically as he did.

"Hehe! Little minx? Did you just call your man little minx? That would not do, missus! I must teach you a lesson!"

After a long and draggy plead, Yu Li begged Zhang Yang to let her off the hook this time. She was still fresh from the session that tore her apart, the stinging pain still deep within her forbidden area. In the end, Zhang Yang caved in and had Yu Li suck him off instead.

After having breakfast and "dessert", Zhang Yang left the building and took a cab home. Along the way, Yu Li's bashful expression from yesterday flitted through his mind. He clenched his fist, knowing that from today onwards, he would soon often find himself late for work, due to a certain activity in the morning.

Back at his home, he regained his composure and logged into the game.

The first thing he did was to buy himself a Party Registration Log Book.

After having all the girls sign, Zhang Yang went to the Registration NPC in White Jade Castle to submit their application.

‘Ding! You have submitted the name list of your battle team for Soaring Swords event. Party Name: Lone Desert Smoke Team 1. Team Member: Zhan Yu, Frost Night, Drizzler, Little Snow, Daffodil Daydream. Please confirm the details before proceeding!’

"Proceed!"

‘Ding! You have successfully registered your battle team: Lone Desert Smoke Team 1. Please wait patiently for the event to start! Please remain connected during the event period. Penalty will be incurred for not fulfilling the requirement!’

What a fraud! One team’s Registration "fee" was at 10 gold coins each! With China’s 6,000,000 players, which added up to 1,200,000 battle teams, that would be 12,000,000 gold coins! F*ck! With that amount of gold coins, it was no wonder that they could provide such a grand rewards, and complete with traveling and accommodation fees for the hotel! It’s like a government building a tower from the blood, sweat, and tears of its citizen’s tax, and then further expanding influence of ‘God’s Miracle’ upon all that! That’s killing two birds with one stone!

Still, even if he knew about the future development of the game, the one earning the most profits would still be the gaming company themselves! This was the true difference between a gambler and a casino!

Zhang Yang put those thoughts behind him and summoned the bear, riding all the way to Crimson Blood Mountains of the Didier Flatlands.

In the game, humans did not only have 64 major cities in eight regions of the world. In high level maps, there were many other kingdoms and other small forces that existed as their own sovereigns. These kingdoms and forces did not ally themselves in the Union. Some of them had even struck a deal or agreements with the Spectres.

Didier Flatlands was ruled by Count Didier. A long time ago, this land had once been a part of the human empire. However, after the invasion of demons and spectres, Count Didier took the chance and leave the human

empire and started a small reign in this very land. Even though his reign was not an official kingdom, he had the authority of one. Since then, seven generations since had passed since the creation of this place.

Three years ago, according to the lore, all seven generations of Didier decedents had led an army to fight a bloody war with the spectres, managing to stop the invasion.

However, the warriors who had sacrificed their lives for the safety of the people had been reanimated as walking zombies. They had become the very thing that they had sought to kill. Losing their memories, emotions, and consciousness, they were doomed to roam forever in this Crimson Blood Mountains.

Translator Note:

Please take note that we have made some changes to the term PK. In the untranslated texts, the author used the word PK as in player killing. We have changed that term to PvP (Player versus Player) to suit the author's true intention.

Chapter 256: The Weird Spectre

Zhang Yang arrived at the Crimson Blood Mountains where the place was filled with monsters. They were all melee-attackers which made it really easy to kill them in large groups.

Zhang Yang patted the bear's head and started to rush into the enemy. One by one he kited them until they accumulated in numbers, and kill them in one go. The obtained experience was extreme satisfying.

Zhang Yang continued grinding for three days straight and killed his way up to the peak. When he arrived, he felt weird. The place was empty. There were so many monsters down the hill yet at this hundred-meter square area was only occupied by one monster. The monster was just kneeling down, gazing into the distance. Its rotting eye sockets where glowing with the typical green-emerald flames of a spectre.

Is that a boss?

Zhang Yang eyes glinted. He hurried over to it and observed its properties.

[Smaug] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

As expected! It's a green, friendly monster! The name however, was extremely familiar!

But...could a spectre be a green-name monster? Zhang Yang was flustered. He kept the axe and his shield and went up to Smaug.

When Zhang Yang footsteps grew louder, Smaug got up to his feet immediately. The flames in his eyes flickers violently as the lower jaw crackled to speak in a deep, husky voice of a man. "Adventurer, are you here to end my life?"

A talking spectre!? That had to be at least a Witch Spectre level! How

could a rotting, brittle-looking, meatless, skeletal monster be able to have the ability of speech?! He was supposed to be just the same as those mindless zombies!

Something was not right!

Zhang Yang shook his head to deny Smaug's statement. "To arise as a spectre after a man's death, could only mean an unfulfilled wish. Only a desire, a wish so strong, could force a man to rise from his grave! Tell me, spectre, what is it that you wish to achieve, and I will help you fulfill your wish!"

Naturally, Zhang Yang knew that Smaug had a quest for him. Otherwise, he would not even have the guts to blurt out such a corny line.

Smaug turned his empty sockets to Zhang Yang and said, "Three years ago, I was in the expedition army. I died on this very battlefield. Back then, I had a wife. A beautiful, loving wife who I will never forget. She was carrying my child in her womb! I can't just leave now, I have to meet her! I want to meet my child! Only then, can I leave this earth with a contented heart."

A husband, a loving father, and the unrelenting desire to care for his family had made this man to rise up from the dead. Unlike the other spectres that had remained on this earth due to vengeance and hatred, this man, no this spectre, was here because of his unconditional love.

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Respected warrior, how may I help?"

Smaug turned his head towards the far south and said, "Could you see to them? My wife and child. Please see it whether they are living a good life. Come back here and tell me all about them!"

'Ding! Smaug has a quest for you: Last Wish. Will you accept it?'

"Accept!"

"They should be living in the north, in a town call Balin. My wife's name is Liya. Liya – Tuskar!" Smaug turned back to face Zhang Yang. "I must thank you, adventurer. You have a noble heart. A true heart of a warrior!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "I will be back with haste!"

Zhang Yang summoned his bear and rode down towards the south.

[Last Wish] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Head towards the town of Balin and search for Liya – Tuskar and her child. Let them know about Smaug’s affection for them and obtain a reply from Liya for Smaug.

Progress: Obtained Liya – Tuskar’s reply letter 0/1

It was just Level D quest, yet it required Zhang Yang to run over the entire mountain. Zhang Yang sighed. Judging from the quest description, Zhang Yang guessed that it would not be of any worth to complete the quest. However, even though Smaug was just a program, a fictional character, the story he told and his devotion to his family had moved Zhang Yang. He decided to run around a bit to finish the quest.

Even though Crimson Blood Mountain and the town of Balin belonged in the region of Didier Flatlands, it took Zhang Yang one whole hour just to arrive at an old, dead town.

"Hold!"

Surrounding the town were protective wooden parameters with four guards standing at the entrance. Wielding long spears, they entered aggressive stances and bellowed ferociously at Zhang Yang.

[Balin Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

These NPC that were threatening Zhang Yang had yellow name tags. If Zhang Yang wanted to, he could just ride in without the need of stopping. However, it was not necessary.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and stopped right beside the guards. "I’m just a regular adventurer trying to find a place to stay for the

night and resupply. I mean no harm!"

One of the guards walked up closer and carefully shift his head up and down, studying him closely. He turned back after a while and screamed. "It's human!"

Zhang Yang murmured. "So, can I go in now?"

"Wait!" The same guard stopped Zhang Yang by blocking his path. "By orders from Lord Aiden, all visitors must pay 10 gold coins as an entrance fee!"

What a rip-off!

Zhang Yang grunted and took out 10 gold coins to pay the guard since he just wanted to finish the quest as swiftly as he could. After dropping the gold coins on the guard's palm, he proceeded into the town.

As he rode on the bear through the stone pavements of the small town, Zhang Yang could not help but notice the old buildings on either side of the road. There were not many people on the streets as well. The entire town seemed rather glum. Zhang Yang gently stopped an older woman and asked, "Excuse me dear madam, do you know where is Liya – Tuskar's house?"

The NPC woman was a rather plump, middle aged lady. She lifted her fat, chinless face up and looked at Zhang Yang and spoke in a rather agitated tone. "That shameless whore? How do you know that name? Wait...you don't look like you're from around here! Oh! The heavens have mercy on us all! Even a foreigner would know about that whore! What a disgrace she has been to the town of Balin!"

Did she say whore?

Zhan Yang was stunned. "I'm sorry madam. I'm her husband's friend in the army. I came here just to deliver a message."

"Smaug's friend?" The fat lady stared at Zhang Yang with disbelief and replied. "Young man, you're too late. Liya the whore had already died two years ago!"

"What?!" Zhang Yang frowned immediately. A simple, delivery quest had just taken a turn for the worse! It had just gotten more complicated! Zhang Yang asked again, "I recall that she had a child."

"So it seems. I heard when the b*tch was buried, she was still carrying a child in her womb! Pui! What a shameless whore! That lowlife could not even live a day without having a man in her bed!" That fat lady NPC face was twisted with disgust as she spat onto the gravel pavement.

Just as she was about to leave, Zhang Yang quickly asked one last question. "Where was she buried?"

"In the cemetery, far west of the city. I don't know the exact location. Find her yourself!" said the fat lady. But just as she walked away, Zhang Yang could hear her murmur. "That shameless whore should not even be buried in the cemetery. She should just fed to the wolves."

Liya's...a whore?

The question lingered in his mind until he rode the bear towards the cemetery of Balin. The cemetery was a large garden-like field. If tombstones were planted neatly in rows with a garden around it, this place would make a beautiful one indeed.

Zhang Yang got down and started reading each of the tombstone for Liya's name. When he reached a corner of the north most area, he found Liya – Tuskar's tombstone.

'Ding! Quest: Last Wish has been updated. Please investigate the death of Liya – Tuskar!'

The system notification rang in his ears just as Zhang Yang touched the tombstone.

Looks like this was not just a simple delivery quest after all!

Zhang Yang rode out and back into the town. After asking around, he finally found the location of Liya's old house. The small house was extremely old, and was close to falling apart. The door was barely working with half of what seemed to be a makeshift door. From the outside, Zhang Yang could clearly see many holes in the ceiling of the house. Right now,

sun rays broke into the dark, solemn house, its interior barely illuminated only with pillars of light from the sun. It would never shelter any occupant from the rain.

Is this Smaug and Liya's house?

"Young warrior! Have you purged the entire world of demons and spectres or do you have that much time in your hands to come here?" A hunchbacked older gentleman walked out of a neighboring house. With a walking stick in his wrinkled hand, he raised it to point at Zhang Yang provokingly.

Zhang Yang remained stoic. "Respected elder. I am a friend of Smaug in the army. Three years ago, as he lay dying, he told me about his wife and child. He told me to ensure that they lived in comfort. I should have come earlier, but I took an arrow to the knee."

The old man slowly lowered his walking stick and paced slowly towards Liya's grave. He let out a long sigh. "Smaug was a brave man. When he was 11 years old, he could tear a tiger apart with his bare hands. When he was 18 years old, the idiot went on and charged into a dragon's nest. He single handedly defeated a dragon! Since then, there were rumors going on about Smaug. They said that the Gods smiled upon him, that he was blessed with powers that rivaled the God of War himself! However, rumors were rumors. The young lad had so much potential. Yet he fell at such a young age..."

So, Smaug was a famous character. That was why he could still retain his memories even as a low-ranking specter soldier. He could even speak!

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Smaug was indeed a respectable warrior! He was brave and valiant. Respected elder, could you tell me about his wife? How did Liya die?"

"Sigh...Smaug was such a reputable hero. But he betrothed a whore! Liya was once the most beautiful woman in this town. Before she was married to Smaug, many men had been courting her all day with songs and poems! However, when Smaug left us, she could not endure the lonesome nights. In the end, she had lured all the men in the town! That whore could have

shared a bed with every man in this town! Eventually...after peppered with insults from the townspeople, she could not take it anymore and ended her own life!"

The old man lowered his head in silence.

Smaug was a man who loved his wife so. And the wife was a woman who clearly loved him so much that he could still retain his soul as a spectre. How could this woman be a whore?

Zhang Yang got down from his mount and unsummoned the bear. He summoned his courage and pushed the rotten door aside to enter the house. The first place he entered was the living room of the house. With one quick glance, he could tell that everything; the furniture, the table, the small rack on the side, was all on the verge of collapsing. Zhang Yang looked around for a little while and headed towards the bedroom. Inside the dark, damp room was a large bed that took two third of the entire bedroom. On the left was as wooden closet and on the right was a small nightstand. The bed was a mess, covered in nothing but dust.

Zhang Yang went towards the nightstand and pulled out a drawer. There, he saw a black, leather-bound diary. Looks like the truth could be written in this evidence.

Chapter 257: The Diary

Zhang Yang unhooked the leather bound diary and opened it.

"Smaug, my one true love. When I heard about your passing, I was left alone, heartbroken. I wanted to end my life. I want to be with you! Please forgive me, my love! I'm still carrying your child. Until he grows up to be a fine man like you, I shall take my leave and meet you!"

On the very first page of the diary, Zhang Yang could already feel the unrequited love between a wife and her husband. How could a woman like her be a shameless whore?!

Zhang Yang flipped over and read more. The next six pages were of Liya lamenting of a husband who she clearly loved. But at the seventh page, the contents had changed.

"Smaug! Please forgive me! I've been tainted! I've been soiled! I have no right to be your love! The town chief, Aiden has violated me! My love! I want to die right now! But...I cannot take my life just yet. The child inside me is still growing...I cannot allow myself to die! I will endure this hardship! I will give birth to your child!"

Zhang Yang could feel the pain and despair through the writing. The words were written rather heavily. The quill had almost torn through the paper. Zhang Yang traced his fingers across the pages and could feel the agonizing pain of living, and the despair in her bravery to fight off death.

"The people...everyone stares at me with such judgment, such hatred! It's too late, but now I know that they were insulting me for seducing Aiden, that monster! They are calling me a shameless whore! Smaug, my love. I... I...I can't endure this any longer!"

"Kingsley...Owen...Kerry...they came barging in. They raped me. One by one, I was violated! When tears flow down my cheeks, they were only laughing! Smaug, I am destined for hell! But, before I knock on the gates of hell, I shall give birth to our child!"

"...Lady Velma from the bakery has dismissed me from work. No one in

town is willing to hire me anymore! Oh...Smaug. How I wish to hear your sweet voice once more! Please...I will endure this...I will survive until our child comes to this world!

‘...Smaug, I don’t deserve your love any more. To survive, I have sold my soul and body! Oh! Smaug, please forgive me! I may have given my body to someone else, but my heart will always be yours forever...’

The diary ended here.

‘Ding! You have found a suspicious circumstance of Liya’s death. Please head to the town’s bar for inquiry. Hint: Drunkards will sometimes reveal the important clues!’

Rage. Zhang Yang mind was suddenly filled with only one emotion. A man left the town and place his life in the front line to protect those who repaid him by blatantly raping, assaulting, insulting, and forcing a widow to the point of prostitution? Not even in death, the couple could rest in peace without being insulted!

Zhang Yang put away the diary and walked out of the house with grim eyes.

Liya had steel her heart with iron-clad fortitude to give birth to their child, how could such a woman would end her own life? She had already lost everything she had, that was why, there was no reason for her to end her own life!

If that was the case, who was the one who killed her?

The ultimate question played repeatedly in his mind, until he arrived at a small bar. Compared to the street, this place was much more rowdier and crowded. There were over 10 men occupying the bar stand, drinking and laughing with joy. Zhang Yang casually sat down and ordered a beer. Without much effort, he struck a conversation with one of the middle-aged drunkards, named Bass.

"I heard this town had an absolute beauty. What’s her name again? Li... Li...Li something!" said Zhang Yang, pretended to be oblivious.

"Liya – Tuskar?" said Bass. "Indeed she was a beauty to behold. It’s a

shame that she died a couple years back."

"How did she die?"

The Drunkard Bass was startled. His face twitched a little as he continued gulping down his beer. "We don't talk about this. There could be a price on your head if you get too nosy."

Zhang Yang laughed. "Alright, alright! You must be saying that to scare me off. I'm pretty sure that you don't know anything, do you!?"

"Who says I don't know anything!" Bass was infuriated. He calmed down and turned left and right before lowering his head, whispering to Zhang Yang. "On that very day, I saw with my own eyes, the town chief's men brought Liya to his house with a horse carriage. However, when she got back home, she was already a living corpse!"

"Town Chief? You mean Aiden?"

"That's right. That's why I said it would be dangerous! My friend, you best keep your head down and keep this between us. Lord Aiden is the Count's nephew! He is what you would call a man with power! If this gets out, both of our heads will hang!" said Bass with a terrified face.

"Huh...I do wonder, why did Aiden want to kill Liya?" said Zhang Yang. He was genuinely confused.

"That, my friend, is a question I cannot answer." Said Bass as he shook his head. "However, I did hear rumors that Lord Aiden kept a journal of sorts! Perhaps he could have written it down!"

'Ding! Your quest: Last Wish has been updated. Please find Aiden's Diary and give it to Smaug along with Liya's Diary!'

[Last Wish] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Find Aiden's Diary and investigate the true culprit behind Liya's death. Submit both Aiden's and Liya's Diary to Smaug.

Progress: Liya's Diary 1/1 Aiden's Diary 0/1

The quest difficulty level had just been raised!

Zhang Yang quickly left the bar after cutting the conversation short, and he arrived at Aiden's house doorstep.

Aiden's house, or rather mansion was the largest building in Balin. The area and land was so large, though it could not be compared to the palace back in White Jade Castle, it was still several times larger than a regular town's man. There were eight soldiers fanned out in a straight line with long spears in their hands, with stern faces that would not hesitate at killing whenever necessary.

[Aiden's Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 350

All of them were red-named! That meant that the guards would attack anyone within their aggro range!

If it was only one or two, Zhang Yang could at least survive the fight with a little HP left. But eight, 1,000,000 HP elite tier monsters were too much, even for the mighty Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue, annoyed. He summoned his bear and rode into the mansion boldly.

"Insolent fool! How dare you intrude Lord Aiden's property! Kill him!" All eight elite guards surrounded Zhang Yang.

{Blood Rage}! {Blast Wave}!

A conical shaped, compressed air blasted out, stunning all eight of them. Zhang Yang took this chance and rode past the defense blockade, rushing inside the compound. Once inside, Zhang Yang was in a large flower garden. There were many guards inside that were widely spread out. The white bear ran past like the wind and rushed through the garden and towards the main building.

"Intruder! Intruder!" As the stunned guards recovered, they began to shout as they gave chase.

With the incredible speed of the mount, Zhang Yang had arrived to the doorstep of the main building in just a few seconds. There were another eight elite guards right at the doorsteps. All of them swung their spears at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang got down from his mount with a quick somersault. In an instant, Zhang Yang unsummoned his bear and activated {Shadow of the Void}.

poof

With a 200% bonus movement speed increase, Zhang Yang practically flew through the guards and entered the main building, like an actual thief.

Losing the aggro, the guards rushed back to their original position and resumed their guarding as if nothing had ever happened.

20 seconds later, {Shadow of the Void} ended and Zhang Yang materialized back in to the "real world".

"Die, intruder!" along with a scream, a shadow eclipsed over his from behind.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield almost instantly and blocked what a seemed to be just be a broom wielded by a female maid.

[Aggressive Maid] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Luckily, she had only 130,000 HP, despite being elite. She was far easier to deal with compared to the 1,000,000 HP guards outside.

Zhang Yang started his counterattack. Zhang Yang was unable to summon the bear as it required a two second casting time. During the casting animation, the summon process would be interrupted when the

summoner receives an attack. Zhang Yang had to fight this maid all by himself.

Even though he was alone, it took only one minute for Zhang Yang to terminate the maid. After making there were no other monsters around him, Zhang Yang quickly summoned the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and begun searching one room at a time.

The building was extremely large and was filled with many monsters. Luckily, they were all widely spread out. From the ground floor to the first floor, to the third, and the fourth, Zhang Yang had already killed more than a hundred elite monsters. After one hour, he had finally entered a room filled with nothing but books!

The room was as large as a hall, with 10 or more book shelves lining up to the end of the room. At the far end of the room was a desk. A silver-lined elderly man was wiping the desk. He was dressed in a butler uniform.

[Sebas the Butler] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 68

HP: 680,000

Defense: 700

This place must be Aiden's personal reading room! Zhang Yang took out his battle axe and charged at Sebas.

"Hmm? Which cave did you crawl out from!? How dare you intrude Lord Aiden's mansion!?" The old butler bellowed angrily and threw a punch at Zhang Yang.

'-2,206!'

Zhang Yang took the damage head on. The boss basic attack damage was roughly around 5,000. But Zhang Yang did not know how fast was his attack or what skills he had! Zhang Yang thought of it while frantically counterattacking Sebas. In any worse case scenario, it's still best to have {Cripple Defense} stacked up first and see how the battle turns out.

Two seconds later, another punch came flying.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield. He started calculate the boss attacking properties. So far, his single attacks were at 2,200 damage, with a two second attack interval. With {Block} every six seconds, the boss normal attack DPS will be roughly be around 700. After five stacks of {Cripple Defense}, the boss will still have 350 Defense. Combining the [Gold-Eared Bear King]'s basic attack DPS of around 1,850, and Zhang Yang's DPS of around 2,600, it would take roughly 150 seconds to kill the boss. That being said, he would have to remain alive for the entire ordeal!

After taking another attack, Zhang Yang took out a bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion] and gulped down the bottle clean.

[Level 3 Healing Potion] (Useable)

Use: Restores 4,000 HP immediately. Use of any Healing Potion regardless of level will cause all potions to enter the same cool down time.

Cool Down Time: 1 minute.

Level Requirement: 60

Since he had not found himself a recipe to craft the [Level 3 Healing Potion], Zhang Yang had bought the potion from the NPC for 50 gold coins a bottle! It's extremely expensive!

After treating Zhang Yang like a punching bag, Sebas threw a lightning speed punch and stunned Zhang Yang.

'Ding! Sebas has used {Uppercut}!'

After the successful stun, Sebas turned around and starting punching the white bear.

'-3,812!'

'-3,739!'

Even though the bear had stronger Defense than Zhang Yang, it did not have any damage reduction passive skills, causing it to take a ferocious

beating. Luckily, the {Uppercut} only stunned Zhang Yang for three seconds. After the boss threw out two punches, he turned around and started flinging his fists at Zhang Yang's body.

Zhang Yang had to resort to {Merlinda's Shadow}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall}, [Heart of Fallen Warrior], and another bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion]. Zhang Yang had manage to last for 95 seconds but his HP had been drained down below 2,000 HP!

Wham!

The boss threw another punch.

'+10,620!'

Furious set equipment set effect activated!

However, that had only bought Zhang Yang another 15 seconds, before he was once again in the danger zone. He quickly activated {Shadow of the Void} and ran away from the battle while frantically chowing down several recovery snacks.

Once the boss lost sight on Zhang Yang, it began to kick the white bear's furry *ss.

{Wild Recovery}!

A green-hue light radiated from the bear and it began to regenerate at the rate of 5% HP per seconds.

Once Zhang Yang was fully recovered, he straight up used {Charge} and bashed the boss.

{Provoke}!

Immune!

It did not work on him! However, the boss turned over to Zhang Yang and attack him.

The poor white bear had only slightly over 300 HP left. If Zhang Yang was just a second later, it would have surely perished. Now that Zhang Yang was barely out of danger, he had turned the tables around. This time,

it was the boss' turn to be in jeopardy. After merely 40 seconds, the elderly butler wailed in pain and fell down defeated.

The old butler had slightly below average HP, therefore, sadly, its drops were just as little. Other than a few silver coins, it only dropped one item.

[Butler's Bell] (Gray-Silver, Accessory)

Use: Summons 3 slaves to help you do your daily task. They could help you out against the enemy as well. Lasts for 60 seconds. Be warned, you might need to think twice before relying on their battle prowess.

Zhang Yang had seen this plaything in his previous life. The summoned slaves were three Dwarven Fat Moms. They had a fixed attack power, and were only able to fight on par with a Level 30 players. It was actually not too bad for a toy.

Zhang Yang kept the bell in his inventory and sat on top of the desk, rummaging about for Aiden's Diary.

The desk was extremely clean, without even a speck of dust on top. Zhang Yang pulled out the first drawer and saw a red, leather bound, slightly thick book. When he picked the book up, the system notification rang in his ear, indicating that he had obtained Aiden's Diary.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to open the book to read, a sudden loud commotion could be heard from outside. Zhang Yang hopped down from the desk and peek out of the window. There, he saw an extremely fat man was walking through the flower garden towards the building, with 12 guards surrounding him.

[Town Chief, Aiden] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 70

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 1,400

As for the guards around him were elite tier monster with 1,000,000 HP each! Each of them was like a mini-boss!

Zhang Yang knows it was impossible for him to leave via the same route

he entered. He quickly took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it.

After 10 seconds, a magic teleportation magic circle formed beneath his feet. With a gust of bright light, Zhang Yang teleported to Thunderstorm Castle. He summoned his bear and rode his back to Didier Flatlands. Along the way, he took out the Diary and read it. Although the book was designed to be thick, Zhang Yang could only open the book like two planks of rigid wood conjoined in the middle. The rest of the pages could be flipped open. They were glued together firmly. To think that the developers of the game would be too lazy to have a little more in-depth details. They were probably thinking that as long as the book could convey the quest's story, the rest would not matter.

Chapter 258: Smaug's Revenge

"Yes! I've finally got her in my hands! I finally have her now! I was afraid to even approach her when Smaug was still alive! But now...He is dead! Muahahaha! What a good death! Such a good death! My wish shall be completed! That b*tch wanted to commit suicide, but she went mental when I tried to threaten that little parasite in her belly!"

"..."

"Ahh...that b*tch is such a precious little jewel. Especially when her belly has grown bigger and bigger! What a wonderful sensation to **** that b*tch!"

"..."

"D*mn it all! How did that frog-faced lady know about me and the little b*tch! It must be the work of Martha!"

"..."

"Such a waste! The little b*tch was beaten to death by the frog-faced lady! What a shame, she was a beauty to behold..."

Zhang Yang closed the book. A hurtful sorrow lingered in his heart. Even though it was purely fictional, could real humans already commit such crime? After all, humans have been around for a long time. Who knew the atrocities of the past!

Zhang Yang rode the bear as fast as he could, passing through the Tanilla Forest and entered Didier Flatlands, reaching towards the Crimson Blood Mountains. Zhang Yang did not waste any more time and skipped past all the monsters around. He rode up the mountain, unsummoned the bear, and used {Shadow of the Void} to remove all aggro on him. Once Zhang Yang reached to where Smaug was, he stopped from afar. He could see Smaug still gazing towards Balin. Even with the eerie human skull, Zhang Yang could feel the love, compassion, and longing from his face.

Zhang Yang was stunned. He did not know what to do next. Should he continue the quest? At least, right now, Smaug still had the untainted

memories of Liya and their child was safe from the attacks of the spectre, living peacefully in the small town of Balin.

People say that man is at the top of the food chain, for not even a ferocious bear or fearsome tiger could defeat a human's intellect. In the future, the largest threat to humanity, the most devastating force, will always be human themselves, not any other races or species!

"Adventurer! You bring news of my wife and child?" Smaug noticed that Zhang Yang had arrived and quickly got up to his feet. Zhang Yang could tell, even with that eyeball-less skull, Smaug was extremely eager to hear about his wife and child.

What a cruel world! However, everyone would have to face their greatest obstacle in order to move on. Zhang Yang pondered for a while, hesitating before he took out two diaries and gave it to Smaug. He then quickly withdrew to leave the spectre to his sorrow.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Last Wish. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

"ARGHHHHH!!" A loud roar was heard, ever so thunderously, bearing pain and anger in its tone. The sky and earth trembled. Clouds started to flocked and clumped together as a heavy killing intent was generated. It was so strong that it was almost suffocating. The miasma-like pressure was too intense. Over the entire mountain, vengeance that was left behind from countless warriors and spectres alike pooled up, formed a dark colored ball of gas that in turn formed into a long black snake. The vengeful miasma started to gather up above Smaug.

Zhang Yang stopped running away and turned around quickly to witness the event. Smaug had his skeletal arms wide open as he cried with anger and sorrow into the air. The half-liquid, half-gas-like miasma was being sucked into his body in a vortex that seemed to enter a bottomless pit, an abyssal black hole!

A dark, almost black crown was forming on the top of Smaug's head. As Smaug absorbed more miasma, the crown became more solid. The entire process took as long as 10 minutes. After that, almost all of the vengeance

miasma on the field had been completely absorbed by Smaug.

Thud! Thud! Thud! Thud!

Losing their life-force, all the spectres lost their "life", and one by one, all the skeletal soldiers turned into powerless, regular skeletons, falling into pieces without any force to move them. Each of them returned to the ground from whence they came, resting forever in the depths of the earth.

Smaug clapped his hands together with such force that he could feel a sudden burst of wave. The flame in his eyes burst into a more violent, vibrant flame. The dark clouds in the sky started to clump even closely together and started to generate thunder and lightning.

Zhang Yang could feel the rage in boiling inside him. This rage had made him absorb all the vengeance from all the spectres in the field and morph himself into Ashura the avatar of vengeance, capable of delivering a sea of blood from the high heavens to the depths of hell! No more was the spectre who let the days pass in peace, who was ready to meet his death, knowing that his wife and child were safe and happy!

Thump! Thump!

Smaug walked towards Zhang Yang with heavy steps that shook the ground. "Adventurer! I will require your assistance!"

"As you wish!"

"I need you to take me into Balin. I require you to search for the Blood Shadow Blade which was sent back after my death in the war!"

‘Ding! Smaug has a quest for you: Revenge. Will you accept it?’

Accept!

[Revenge] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Smaug requires you to search for his Blood Shadow Blade and bring it to him! Hint: Blood Shadow Blade was Smaug's beloved sword, Liya must have taken good care of it when she was alive!

Progress: Blood Shadow Blade 0/1

Zhang Yang summoned his bear. Both of them rode the bear towards Balin. After one hour, they stopped one kilometer away from the entrance of Balin. Zhang Yang took out a black cloak and gave it to Smaug. "Please put this on or else, we might not be able to enter the town!"

The cloak was a Green-Copper tier equipment that was found by Zhang Yang. He was unsure if an NPC could really put them on.

Smaug took the cloak and covered his entire body, hiding the heinous skeletal body under the thick fabric.

It worked!

Zhang Yang patted the bear's forehead and both of them rode slowly towards the entrance.

"Hold!"

The same guards stopped Zhang Yang and one of them demanded. "As per order from Lord Aiden, all visitor must pay one gold coin per pax!"

Zhang Yang threw two gold coins towards the guard and walked pass them towards the town.

"Wait!" One of the guard stopped them. This time, he pointed at Smaug and said, "What are you hiding so desperately? Are you a magnificent beauty or a demonic being that cannot make contact with the sun! Take off the cloak and show me your face! We will conduct a full body inspection!"

"Argh!" Smaug growl angrily as he reached out with his skeletal hands to grab the guard's arm.

"S-Spectre! It's a spectre!" Smaug had accidentally reveal himself as he grabbed the guard. Simultaneously, all four guards begun to attack him.

All of these guards were elite tier, with basic attacks at 4,000 damage. Smaug was just a normal tiered, Level 65 monster with 6,500 HP. How could he take on all those attack? Instantly, Smaug was left with just 1 HP and fell to the floor. Kneeling down and struggling fruitlessly, Smaug's ragged breath was all that indicated that he was at his limit, unable to get

up!

Zhang Yang had wanted to sneak into the town, but when Smaug had exposed himself, Zhang Yang would have to deal with this by force. He immediately used {Charge} to rush towards the guards. {Blood Rage} was used, {Horizontal Sweep} was activated, Zhang Yang could not stop at attacking the guards and quickly tried to end the fight as soon as he could.

"Which spectre dares to infiltrate my town! Kill the monster!" Just when Zhang Yang had just started the battle, the plump Aiden walked out of the town, along with 12 ferocious and tough looking personal guards! Aiden thrust his flabby arms out and commanded them to kill Zhang Yang.

F*ck! 16 elites, one Yellow-Gold boss! How to fight?

Zhang Yang ended up using {Shadow of the Void} and sneaked into the town, leaving Smaug behind. After reappearing at the far end, he saw Smaug had already been detained by the guards! Growling in defeat, Smaug could only stare angrily with all his hatred at Aiden.

"Make a fire pit in the center of the town's plaza! I want this spectre to be sentenced to death by fire!"

With Aiden's command, the guard took Smaug away.

'Ding! You quest: Vengeance has been updated. You have one hour to search for Blood Shadow Blade and deliver it to Smaug or the quest will be deemed as a failure!'

The system notification rang in Zhang Yang ears just as Smaug was taken away. There was no time to lose!

Zhang Yang rushed towards Liya's house and practically ransacked the entire house to search for the sword. After a long search, there was no trace of the sword in the house. Frustrated, Zhang Yang left the door steps and saw the same old man who had scolded him before, standing outside his house. Zhang Yang went over and asked. "Excuse me sir, do you know about the sword that was delivered back here after Smaug's death?"

The old man scratched his head and said, "You mean the sword with a blood red blade? I think I had saw a young brat name Larry waving it

around while showing off. It has to be that sword!"

Sighing heavily, Zhang Yang rode his bear to search for Larry. He found him inside a rundown house. "Three-Finger" Larry was found hiding inside, he was extremely skinny but upon further inspection, he was younger than he looked.

Zhang Yang approached the man and grab him by the collar, roraing in his face. "Larry! I know you have the sword that you stole from Liya's house! Give it to me!"

Larry pushed Zhang Yang away and said provocatively. "If you want it... you'll have to beat me!"

In an instant, Larry's yellow name tag turned to red!

["Three Finger" Larry] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 300,000

Defense: 350

The NPC jumped at ZhangYang and began to attack him.

However, even with that surprise attack, Zhang Yang beat Larry to a pulp without breaking a sweat. Currently, with Zhang Yang equipment, only a boss could take him on, elite monsters were nothing but soft tofu! Left with just 1 HP, probably because the lore requires it to be, Larry was sent down cowering. Basically, since the system had set it that way, Zhang Yang had only thrown a single strike, which had dealt 10,000,000 damage and left the NPC with only 1 HP left.

"I'm sorry! Please don't hit me! I'll tell you where it is!" said Larry as he covered his head. "That broken sword was already sold to the blacksmith Jim!"

Zhang Yang then proceed as fast as he could towards the blacksmith and quickly glanced through the weapon display cupboard. Without delay, Zhang Yang had spotted the sword among the other. The entire sword was literally blood-red in color! It was as red as fresh blood! He quickly talked

to the blacksmith NPC Jim, Blacksmith Shop Owner and said, "Excuse me, How much is this?"

"Oooo! You have some good eyes there adventurer! That sword is an excellent piece of work, I'll tell ya!" Jim responded immediately. After gritting his teeth and procrastinate a little, Jim looked at Zhang Yang with an unwilling face and said, "Well...since you want it, I could sell it to you at a cheap price of only 10,000 gold coins!"

Cheap my *ss!

Zhang Yang wanted to just snatch the sword and run away, however, as he tried to lift the sword up, he could not do so, no matter how hard he tried. D*mn system would just want to rob players of their hard earned gold coins!

Zhang Yang paid the man 10,000 gold coins and went on his way. However, before he left the place, Zhang Yang had held back his feelings to punch the man in his face. He left the shop and quickly made his way to the town's plaza.

Luckily, the time remaining was at 18 minutes and 36 seconds.

Zhang Yang reached to the plaza and had already found a large platform with many wooden planks beneath it. Smaug was tied to a large iron pole, propped right in the middle of the wooden stage. There were many more wooden poles, as tall as he was, placed beside him. Not far from the stage, 10 guards surrounded the area while the fat Aiden sat slightly further away. Even further away from the stage was a large number of spectators filling up the entire plaza.

Zhang Yang activated {Shadow of the Void} and phased through the crowd, heading towards the center of the plaza.

Since he could not see any being in the realm of {Shadow of the Void}, the only guidance he had was the iron pole right at the center of the stage. Just as he reached, the skill had ended, and he appeared right in front of Smaug.

"Your sword is right here!"

Chapter 259: The Forgotten King

"Intruder! Intruder!" The guards around cried out!

Smaug summoned his strength and managed to free his right hand. He quickly grabbed the sword from Zhang Yang. Having given the sword away, Zhang Yang quickly turned around and pulled his axe out to prepare for combat.

"Burn that spectre now!" Aiden's voice could be heard from afar.

Pak Pak Pak!

Three flaming torches ere thrown out of nowhere onto the pile of wooden plank. The fire spread out at an amazing speed and before he knew it, the entire stage was burning.

Zhang Yang was currently busy fighting all the guards. Even though he was probably the strongest player in China, he was completely overwhelmed by the number of elite monsters around that seemed to be spawning endlessly!

BOOM!

A large blast wave came by, knocking everyone back a few feet, while sending those closer to it flying.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The wooden planks on the stage were blasted away. Ignited with flames, the flaming pieces of wood flew across the plaza, hitting some of the spectators, making a complete chaos. Some people started screaming in terror while others were crying in fear.

Shiing!

A shadow, more crimson than black flashed, Smaug had freed himself from the ropes and stood in the center of the flaming stage. He took a stance that was so sure of itself that it was as if he was making a stand against the entire world, and stared into the plaza with his violent, flaming eyes.

Foom!

Smaug swung the sword in his hands outwardly and instantly caused all the guards around to turn into minced meat.

"From now, I shall erase Balin from the surface of this world!" Smaug bellowed loudly with intense killing intent and raised the Blood Shadow Blade up high in the air.

"HMM!?" Aiden was shocked. Blood was completely drained off his face. "Blood Shadow Blade?! Smaug's Blood Shadow Blade?!" Aiden pointed his fat fingers to Smaug and screamed. "How could a spectre like you use the sword of Smaug! The godly sword of Blood Shadow Blade!"

"Because I.AM.SMAUG!" Smaug bellowed as loudly as he could. "I shed my blood for you! I gave my life to your cause! Yet...you forced my wife to be a whore! You killed her! I...I...I will have you all pay for your sins with your lives!"

Shing! Shing! Shing!

The blade in Smaug's hand slashed continually as blood kept spilling all over the plaza. None were able to survive the sword, and the air was wet and red with blood.

Panic filled the air as citizens of Balin started to run amok.

Yet, Aiden laughed. "Smaug...When you were alive, you were worshipped as a God of War! But now you're dead! Even as a spectre, how could you really draw out the true power of the Blood Shadow Blade?"

"It doesn't matter! As long I can kill you! The world will be right again!" Smaug roared. Although there were no muscles attached to his legs, Smaug gathered his strength and dashed towards Aiden.

"You're but a lowly skeletal solder! You're not worthy of being my opponent!" Aiden stepped forwards and took out a huge battle hammer from nowhere. He gripped the handle of the hammer with his flabby hands and swung it ferociously towards Smaug. "I will smash those brittle bones into powder! Haha! Just so you know, I really do miss your wife's perfect *ss!"

"You bastard!" Smaug raged. He raised the sword in his hand and clashed with Aiden's hammer.

Tiiing!

As the sword and the hammer clashed, countless sparks were sent flying everywhere. Aiden was a Level 65 Yellow-Gold boss, one who was far stronger than Smaug. The massive force of the hammer had sent Smaug flying off. He literally spun in the air for 10 or more revolutions before slamming hard against the floor.

"Smaug! You're not the young, invincible man that you once were! You're nothing but a rotting, brittle pile of bones! You're so weak! I'll help you smash whatever hope and will that you have left!"

Aiden took the chance, and flew across the field with the hammer upraised in his hands, ready to smash Smaug.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang glided across the floor and knocked onto Aiden with everything he had. However, since a Yellow-Gold boss was immune to the {Charge} stunning effect, and had extremely high strength attributes. Zhang Yang felt like he was riding a small scooter that had met the path of a raging Mack truck! He was instantly knocked back!

Saaaahhh!

Zhang Yang stopped himself from being pushed back and immediately rushed back towards Aiden.

By then, Aiden was already right in front of Smaug. His hammer was already traveling downwards, coming at Smaug's skull.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang rode the white bear and got between Aiden and Smaug. He raised his shield up high and managed to block the hit.

Bang!

Even though Zhang Yang had stopped the attack from hitting Smaug, the overwhelming strength of the boss had sent both Zhang Yang and the

bear four to five meters back. The bear's claws drew deep lines in the stone pavement to stopped itself from being pushed further.

Smaug took this chance and jumped forward.

Shing!

The blade was swung in a wide arc and along came a river of blood, spilling out of Aiden.

‘-207,842!’

The battle between the two NPCs was completely unlike what players would usually experience. Even though Smaug was just a normal tier monster, his attacks were so strong that he could be the same as a super-powerful boss!

To his surprise, Zhang Yang found after he had dealt over 200,000 damage to the boss, Smaug had gained levels! He was now Level 66!

Smaug has gained power! His single attack was raised to 200,000 to 300,000. Eventually, it had surpassed 400,000! As Smaug kept on slashing the boss, he kept on growing stronger and stronger and gained higher attack values! WTF!? His leveling speed is just off the charts!

Level 67! Level 68! Level 69! Level 70!?

In the end, Smaug level had even surpassed Zhang Yang to a limit where it did not display a numerical number! Instead, his level was only represented with three question marks!

It was not just his level, his tier was also being raised!

Black-Steel! Green-Copper! Gray-Silver!

Smaug's tier rank was increasing rapidly, eventually stopping at Holy! The same tier was Princess Serena!

"Crack!"

The hammer in Aiden's hands was blown to bits. Aiden frantically shrunk away as he staggered back. Panic and fear filled his eyes as he could only stare at the blood-soaked Smaug with his jaw wide open. "What

power!? Such power! Not even Count Didier could have such strength! How is that possible?! How could it be possible!"

Smaug came up closer to Aiden and looked down at him with his fleshless skull. Smaug then lifted his sword, ready to cleave Aiden in half.

"NO! NO! You cannot kill me! I am Count Didier's nephew! If you kill me, the count will put a price on your head!" Aiden was screaming his lungs out.

"Kill you? No. Not just you. Today, everyone in this town must die!" Smaug murmured and swung the blade down as hard as he could. Even though Aiden was a Yellow-Gold boss, he was still just a large slab of meat in the face of the sword. A large head was sent flying across the plaza, spilling blood as it flew. The head rolled for a while and stopped, revealing Aiden's last moments in his petrified face.

The worst part of it all was that, Aiden did not drop any loot at all!

Smaug shuffled slowly towards the center of the plaza and scream in agony. He then looked up into the sky and raised his sword up high. A destructive power grew and gathered around the sword's tip. As it grew larger, a black ball of light appeared and expanded exponentially, growing from the size of a small egg to as large as a hot air balloon!

"This good for nothing, filthy town...I WILL DESTROY IT!" Smaug cried and swung the sword downwards. The black ball of light blasted off like a tactical nuke, obliterating the entire city with such force that everything in the town was torn apart!

Surface over surface of the ground was being peeled off, the inner layers peeling off even before the outer layers had left the surface. Even houses were smashed into smithereens like sandcastles being trampled by little kids. In this kind of apocalyptic destruction, no one could run. No one could hide. Everything and everyone was turned into dust.

This attack, was no weaker than Princess Serena's Sword of Life and Death!

All shall perish under the stroke of the Shadow Blood Blade!

All that was left standing was Smaug himself, with Zhang Yang by his side. Smaug turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Liya...where...Where is her grave?"

"It's in the town's cemetery." Zhang Yang replied solemnly.

Smaug nodded silently and walked towards the cemetery. Zhang Yang pondered for a while before he followed Smaug. Even though the quest had ended, he wanted to see it to its end.

The two of them arrived at Liya's tombstone.

The two of them stood there while Smaug looked down at the engraved name that says: "Liya – Tuskar". Smaug bend down and reached out his skeletal finger to caress the tombstone. As his fingers sunk into the engravement, Smaug whispered. "Liya, my love. My angel. I have come for you. My love for you shall never wither, not even after death and infernal existence have claimed me. My love for you will never deter even if I rot eternally as a spectre!"

Kuang!

Smaug took his blade and sliced the tomb in half. He reached his hands into the grave and pulled out a huge wooden casket from the earth. He then pried the casket open and threw the lid away. Inside, the rotten, disgusting remains of a woman lay.

Even so, Smaug was not fazed. He reached out and caressed the woman's face gently. A green wave of energy seeped out of his hand and into Liya's dead body. "Please...wake up for me...LIYA!"

SUUSH!

A bright green, emerald light coursed through the corpse and Liya opened her eyes.

"Urgh...Smaug...my love...Is that you?" Liya got up, albeit shakily.

Smaug held her face and his hands and said, "Liya, it is I, Smaug! Your one true love! Liya! I will never ever leave you again!"

The two of them rose out together in a warm, loving embrace.

What touching scene. A tragic love story. A couple who could only be together forever as spectres, united in a love that would never deter even after the sea dries up, even after the sky goes dark.

After a long hug, Smaug let Liya go and turned towards Zhang Yang. "Adventurer. You have my gratitude! I, Smaug, shall forever be your friend!"

'Ding! You have two options to select: Option 1, reject Smaug's friendship and report all that had happened today to Count Didier. Option 1 will reward you with Level +2, and a Yellow-Gold tier equipment! Option 2, accept Smaug's friendship. All NPCs under Count Didier's sovereign will deem you as a Spectre Sympathizer!'

A sudden ring echoed in Zhang Yang ears.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Smaug, you're a respectable man, or rather, a respectable spectre. I will gladly be your friend!"

'Ding! You have accepted Smaug's friendship!'

'Ding! You are now an attack target to all neutral NPCs in Didier Flatlands!'

Smaug laughed loudly. "You, my friend, are an interesting fellow!"

'Ding! You have gained a good relationship with Smaug!'

Again! A Relationship?! Why couldn't he give something more materialistic!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and turned to Liya. "So...what happens now? What do you plan to do?"

Smaug held her hands and stared into the distance. "We will go to a faraway land where no one could reach us! I am not on the side of humans, nor am I on the side of spectres! From now on, I am me. I will be the one and only, forgotten one!"

Crack!

A bolt of lightning shot out from the sky. Smaug raised his sword to accept the lightning. The half-materialized crown turned fully solid. It

settled on Smaug's head, giving him a royal, dignified aura!

[Smaug, The King of the Forgotten Ones] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

F*cking hell! It's him!

Zhang Yang finally recalled his name. He had been having a sense of familiarity ever since he first met Smaug! So he was the King of the Forgotten Ones!

Chapter 260: Thunderbolt Prison

'The Forgotten Ones' was one of spectre race's divisions and their leader was The King of the Forgotten One, the Celestial boss, which was independent of the seven Spectre Witch King!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, most of the players' level had just reached Level 200 and they did not get to defeat Celestial bosses yet! That was why Zhang Yang found Smaug's name familiar but could not recall any further information about him.

No wonder Smaug had earned a reputation as the closest man to the god of war during his lifetime. Even though he had turned into spectre after death, he could still become a Celestial boss. This was so awesome!

To gain a good relationship with a Celestial boss!

Relationships were something intangible but undoubtedly practical, perhaps someday it would play a huge role! It was definitely much more valuable than a Yellow-Gold item that would be rolled out over time!

Smaug reached out with his right hand, and countless rays of aqua green light gathered in his hand which shaped into a piece of crystal clear jade. Smaug handed the jade to Zhang Yang and said, "My friend, this is my gift to you! My aura is in this jade, as long as you wear this, no spectres will attack you!"

Zhang Yang was full of joy, quickly taking the jade and replied, "Thank you!"

[Friendship Jade] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Equipment: Disguises you as spectre, which is enough to fool the majority of spectres. However, as long as you are wearing [Friendship Jade], you will also become the enemy of all living beings!

Use: Summon Smaug's phantom to fight for you. Lasts for 20 minutes. Cool down time: 24 hours.

Charge remaining: 3/3

Level requirement: 60

Bound.

Yes! Definitely a great fortune indeed!

Smaug was a Celestial boss, even though his phantom would be significantly weaker than himself, it would at least be of Ascended or Holy grade! Unfortunately, it had only three times charges. Otherwise, it would have been super awesome!

Besides, [Friendship Jade]'s equipment attribute was not bad after all as it could help Zhang Yang disguised as spectre and entered Malevolent Tower to steal the [Book of the Damned]. Zhang Yang would then have high chances of re-activating the Main Story Quest, which involved The Crafting Materials of a Relic!

Zhang Yang had accepted this quest when he was Level 10 and this quest had been left in his Quest Board for almost half a year!

"Zhan Yu, take care of yourself!" Smaug hugged Liya's waist, and suddenly, a pair of skeletal wings opened up from Smaug's back, which he spread and soared into the sky like an ascending meteor which quickly disappeared in the sky.

Would this be considered as a reunion of a wedlock couple?

Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll], and a ray of light flashed 10 seconds later, returning him to Thunderstorm Castle.

As time went by, there were more and more Level 50 players, Thunderstorm Castle was now bustling with life and many players started to set up shops, selling potions, health recovery cakes and ETC outside the castle, which helped players save up time and money traveling back to main city. Of course, their charges were not extremely high as the one-way teleportation fee was only one gold coin.

As more players achieved Level 50, Zhang Yang earnings from the teleportation portal increased. The number of players utilizing this teleportation portal in recent days had reached up to 7,000,000, equivalent to a daily net income of 6,000,000 gold coins, a huge and

terrifying number!

Two days later, the gang had achieved Level 60 and they urged Zhang Yang to go for new dungeon, Thunderbolt Prison.

"We cannot go for it now!" Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders while he spread both of his hands in resignation.

"Why?" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes. She had just equipped her Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon and was dying to go on a raid!

Zhang Yang explained, "Thunderbolt Prison is a special 10-man dungeon, Dream Technology uses a dungeon's design concept known as 'Competition' mechanism! The Thunderbolt Prison will only be activated if four teams are gathered. These four teams are then required to enter Thunderbolt Prison together compete with each other!"

"And how do we do that?"

Zhang Yang replied, "The topography of Thunderbolt Prison is similar to a cross street, four teams will enter from one end respectively, and rush towards the center! There will be a lot of minions along the way including three mini-bosses while the final boss is in the center. However, there is only one final boss so whichever team gets there first, gets dibs on the boss!"

"What if other teams attack suddenly when that particular team is fighting the final boss?"

"That won't happen. Because when that particular team fighting the final boss, a barrier will be set up around them, the players from the outside cannot enter and the players from the inside cannot get out. The barrier will be disappear only when the final boss is defeated or the team is wipe-out. On the other hand, we have only one chance to try to defeat the final boss, so if the team who gets there first happens to fail, the final boss will disappear and we all will have to wait for two days in accordance to the dungeon's reset!"

"Whoever thought up of all this is a sadist!"

"Well to make things worse, Thunderbolt Prison is located in

Thunderbolt Mountains and it takes a few hours to get there from Thunderstorm Castle. Besides, we need another three teams to activate the dungeon! Just in case we get there without the forth team, wouldn't it be a whole waste of time?"

Zhang Yang smiled a little and said, "I think it won't be too difficult getting other teams! Thunderbolt Prison is a special dungeon and physically traveling there and all is ridiculous, so there is an NPC in the main city responsible for accepting 'Reservations' for dungeons like Thunderbolt Prison. As long as the team leaders send a Thunderbolt Prison entrance request to the NPC, they will be queued in the list corresponding to difficulty. Once four teams are gathered, the system will send messages to every team member. Five minutes later, NPC will activate a teleportation door which leads to Thunderbolt Prison directly!"

"Oh, that's not too bad then!"

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "I will register the party at the NPC first. The moment we get four teams, we will depart immediately!"

"En!"

Zhang Yang grouped up 10 players then registered at the NPC. However, they still did not receive any messages from the system throughout the entire day. Zhang Yang also understood that while his guild could easily provide 10 Level 60 players, other guilds might not match that capability!

On the second day, Zhang Yang grouped up 10 players again and booked a spot in the list, but still no results.

It was still the same on the third day.

But on the fourth day, eight o'clock sharp, finally there was a change in such situation!

'Ding! The warriors who are heading to Thunderbolt Prison have been gathered, please immediately return to your main cities, in five minutes time, Krampus will activate a teleportation door that directly teleports you to Thunderbolt Prison. Please make the best use of your time!'

After receiving this message, Zhang Yang and the rest of the nine

players in the team immediately used [Teleportation Scrolls]. Krampus was located just next to White Jade Castle's teleportation portal which was quite convenient for them.

Those who showed up was Snow Seeker and her female army, ten beautiful, enchanting ladies like a group of beautiful birds flocking together.

Zhang Yang smiled at Snow Seeker and said, "Looks like we are going to be competitors!"

The roguish Perfumed Water immediately said, "Zhan Yu, Lone Desert Smoke has already won a lot of dungeon First Clears, let us have this one!"

Fatty Han immediately raised his hand and said, "I'm willing to switch sides, to flee from darkness, into light and join Crimson Rage!"

Snow Seeker smiled elegantly and said, "It seems like we are accompanying Prince Reading himself!"

"Ha ha, guild master Snow Seeker, you are too mean. Obviously, your more than ready, you're just trying to throw us off!" Zhang Yang scanned through Snow Seeker's team, smiled and said, "It seems like you have some new blood, and I see a few new faces!"

Zhang Yang actually "recognized" the two new members in Snow Seeker's team. Strictly speaking, he in fact recalled their names.

Mellow Venom, Guardian. In Zhang Yang's previous life, she was ranked fourth in China's Top 10 Tanks and the pride of all female tanks! Her capabilities were absolutely undeniable, being able to stand toe-to-toe in a male-dominant field!

Violet Moonknight, in Zhang Yang's previous life, was a remarkable healer, a Sacred Knight. Unfortunately, healers did not have their own Top 10 ranking list, thus, Violet Moonknight was not as famous as Mellow Venom or Snow Seeker but she was skilled enough for Zhang Yang to remember her name.

With the Professional League Championship closing in, the superstars from Zhang Yang's previous life were appearing, one after another! It

seems like his presence has not affected Crimson Rage's upcoming lineup.

Snow Seeker remained unfazed but gently smiled and replied, "Where there is competition, there is progress!"

"Who are the other two teams?" Zhang Yang was curious, for there was no sign of the other teams, meaning that they would only meet up when the dungeon commences.

Five minutes later, Krampus silently raised a magic staff to cast a magic spell.

10 seconds later, a teleportation door similar to a dungeon entrance appeared in front of everyone.

"Let's go in!"

Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker spoke together and both teams filed into the entrance.

'Ding! You have entered Thunderbolt Prison (Hardcore Mode)!'

After entering the dungeon, Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker's 10-man teams were immediately separated. On the top left corner of the players' Control interface, red, yellow, blue and green team names popped up. From the Control interface, each team could be expanded to view team's current location and team members' names.

Zhang Yang and his team was marked as the blue team while their current location was in the West side, first prison.

Snow Seeker and her team was marked as the red team while their current location was in the East side, first prison.

The other two teams were from Radiance and Imperial Sky respectively! Among them, Radiance's team was marked as yellow team, located in the South side, first prison, while Imperial Sky's team was marked as the green team and located in the North side, first prison. From the Control interface, it could be seen that the team leaders for both two teams were Sword of Light and One Sword Stroke respectively. Obviously they had dispatched the elites in their guilds!

Radiance was the top guild in Black Dragon City while Imperial Sky was the strongest guild in Violet Star City. These four competitive teams could be said to be the China's strongest dungeon teams!

At Zhang Yang's current location, there was a long corridor inside the prison and there were unlocked, empty prison cells on both sides of the corridor.

Thunderbolt Prison was located in the Thunderbolt Mountains, and according to legend, Thunderbolt Prison was built before the fall of the Human Empire. It imprisoned the most heinous criminals of the empire. Because of an earthquake, Thunderbolt Prison had sunk into the ground, taking along its prisoners and guards!

But today, another earthquake had brought the prison back up the surface! However, all its former occupants had also returned as spectres!

This was the backstory of dungeon, while the players' mission was to destroy all these vicious spectres before they escape Thunderbolt Prison!

Zhang Yang said, "Those who have auras, please, do not forget to activate them. Endless Starlight, guard the left. I'll guard the right, let's make the best use of our time to kill all the monsters! Do not forget, only the first team to reach gets the chance to fight the last boss, we are not here to work with the other teams!"

Endless Starlight came forward, and the two of them led the team along the corridor.

Zhang Yang's strategic arrangement of team members for this dungeon were: Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, Lost Dream and Fantasy Sweetheart. Two tanks, two healers and six attackers which was according to the standard configuration for 10-man team. However, with Zhang Yang's current capability, he could actually perform the tanking role for both tanks in this dungeon raid.

"GROOAN!"

10 steps in, and three monsters in prison overalls suddenly rushed out of

the shadows, raising their skeletal fists to attack Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight who were walking at the forefront.

[Prisoner of Thunderbolt Prison] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 500,000

Defense: 350

Endless Starlight immediately used [justice bash] to pull one of them aside while Zhang Yang took on the other two. Everyone quickly attacked the two monsters that Zhang Yang pulled without hesitation. Endless Starlight stared at them mournfully and said, "Brothers and sisters, why didn't you guys take on mine?"

"Stupid Starlight, are you able to maintain aggro once I mess with them?" Wei Yan Er raised her Yellow-Gold axe.

Endless Starlight nodded earnestly and replied, "Give me a chance, sister!"

The HP of the elite monsters in Thunderbolt Prison was indeed high, but elite or not, the monsters could not withstand the strength of these players. Zhang Yang and the gang quickly disassembled the skeletons, leaving pieces of them on the ground.

The main force of Lone Desert Smoke had at least three full sets of Yellow-Gold equipment along with Yellow-Gold weapons. Wei Yan Er also had a Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon which was strong enough to swath through the entire dungeon with ease. So, these so-called elite monsters posed to challenge to them.

But Zhang Yang said, "My fellow comrades, we must keep our speed up! The female army of Crimson Rage is really well-equipped as well. They can handle the dungeon with ease, they can't be far behind us!"

This was because Crimson Rage also knew the spawn points of a few Yellow-Gold open world bosses, thus, both Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage had an agreement: Demonic Treant King belonged to Lone

Desert Smoke, Lord of Flames Arcel belonged to Crimson Rage while Winter's Wind Bear King was on a first come first serve basis!

This month alone, both guilds had defeated the three open world bosses a total of six times. Thus, both guilds should definitely have a wealth of Yellow-Gold set equipment! Therefore, Zhang Yang did not dare assume that they had more Yellow-Gold set equipment than Crimson Rage.

Hence, Zhang Yang and the gang must remain earthbound and not underestimate the enemy!

As they continued to move down the corridor, they cleared the monsters on the current floor before they followed the stairs down to the second floor and the first floor.

The prison cells of the ground floor had been completely destroyed, and in the center position, a huge spectre stood there. The left half of the body had almost rotten away completely and exposed its bones, while the right half of the body remained intact which made it seem lopsided and odd to look at.

["Left-handed" Phil] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 66

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Boss of the prisoners in the first prison.

TL Note

1. Prince Reading - term for wasted potential, or someone who has hidden talent that remains mostly unused. Fatty Han had uncharacteristically come up with a line there and then that was most ingenuous, formed by a play of words that rhymed rather well together.

Chapter 261: The Competition between Strong Guilds

"Let's talk about tactics while fighting, here we go!" Zhang Yang had already taken out his axe and shield and rushed towards "Left-handed" Phil.

The battle was initiated.

A black aura immediately appeared beneath "Left-handed" Phil's feet. It reached out with its right hand which was completely skeletal and tried to grab Zhang Yang's face.

'Ding! "Left-handed" Phil initiated [frost aura]. Causes 1,000 Frost damage to all targets within a 30-meter radius range every 2 seconds!'

'-3,982!'

'Ding! You are affected by Fire Receptive Effect, when you are receive Fire attack, damage increased by 200%, lasts for 1 minute!'

"Left-handed" Phil slapped Zhang Yang across his face, and a damage text immediately floated above his head, while a debuff icon popped up in his HUD.

'-1,000!'

Two seconds later, except for Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, the rest of the people received the first tick of damage from [frost aura].

"Endless Starlight, this boss constantly switches between two states, as of now, it is in its frost state. It may seem to be regular physical attacks, but it also causes Frost damage to the target and the Fire Receptive Effect! After a period of time, this boss will switch to its fire state where its physical attack will cause Fire damage and the Frost Receptive Effect! So, two tanks are required for this boss, one will need to tank the frost state and the other one will need to tank the fire state!

Zhang Yang shrugged off another blow from the boss and resumed his explanation, "This boss can be provoked! When you see the aura beneath

his feet turn from black to white, use [provoke] to take over!"

"Roger!" Endless Starlight nodded in understanding.

As a mini-boss, the tricky part of "Left-handed" Phil was its two states. As long as the players work against that aspect of it, the boss was more or less a pushover for the averagely equipped player.

Everyone performed ferocious slashes, and five minutes later, "Left-handed" Phil cried in pain and fell defeated, popping its battle loots all over the floor.

They quickly distributed the battle loot, ran through a dark passage and entered another prison building.

‘Ding! Blue team has entered the West side second prison!’

Just as they just stepped in, system notification immediately rang in everyone ears.

The other three teams were startled.

They were not exactly close to Zhang Yang’s team in terms of progress. Up to the first mini-boss, "Left-handed" Phil, they had kept up with their pace. However, because of the tactical issue and lack of knowledge on the boss, they would be wiped out once before they figure out out to defeat the boss.

"Lone Desert Smoke is strong as expected!" Mellow Venom gently whispered.

"Sisters, please fight harder, we are not here accompany Prince Reading! Lone Desert Smoke has already claimed a lot of First Clears, we must steal one from them!" Snow Seeker tried to raise the party’s morale with her clear and harmonious voice.

"Okay, for the sake of sister Snow, I’m going to fight really hard!" Perfumed Water screamed.

"Screw you, sister Snow is mine!"

The bunch of crazy women started to go berserk.

Zhang Yang's team continued moving forward, where they defeated the minions easily along the way. About six minutes later, system notification rang as Imperial Sky had entered the North side's second prison. Less than 30 seconds later, the system notification rang twice as Crimson Rage and Radiance cleared their obstacles.

Zhang Yang smiled to himself as he had overestimated the difficulty of the first mini-boss, "Left-handed" Phil. With the capability of Crimson Rage and the other strong guilds, this mini-boss had not caused much trouble for them! When Zhang Yang thought about it, it was absolutely logic, although "Left-handed" Phil's damage increases by 200% due to his debuffs, it was not too difficult for the current top tanks to acquire over 15,000 HP, thus, they could use [shield wall] and withstand the boss with sheer force!

As long as they were not stupid, they would have surely used their off-tank to [provoke] the "Left-handed" Phil. If that was the case, they would definitely have found the tactics to defeat "Left-handed" Phil with ease!

Because of the competition mechanism, even the leading team dared not relax or let their guard down, because the slightest misstep would cost them their lead! Therefore, Wei Yan Er and the rest silently hacked and sliced their enemies with extreme prejudice as they kept on urging Zhang Yang to speed up.

In a short time, Zhang Yang's team found themselves standing in front of the second mini-boss.

["Three-Legged" Witt] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 67

HP: 6,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Leader of the prisoners in second prison.

"Three legged?" Fatty Han exclaimed incredulously. "Even I won't dare claim that I'm three legged even if my third leg is 22 centimeters!"

"Fatty bro, I'm pretty sure you'll only be 22 centimeters when we square it!?" Endless Starlight who had grown pretty close to Fatty Han, immediately fired at him.

"Buzz off, little brat, you only have a matchstick to speak of. Even you cube your 'Matchstick' it'll never match up to my square-rooted leg!"

Lost Dream was an outgoing man, even though he was relatively new in the guild, he was already able to mix around with Fatty Han and the rest. He laughed and said, "It can't be helped! My 'stuff' is extraordinary talent. Every time I go to the washroom, it leaves a trail on the ground, people would think someone just mopped the floor!"

"You three bastards, if you guys dare to discuss about such topics in front of Yan Er again, I will snip all of it off!" Han Ying Xue showed her queen's power, one of her hands was placed on her waist while the other was pointing menacingly at their crotches in turn.

The three guys quickly clamped their legs together.

"Beware, this boss will swing its third leg about occasionally and cause an AoE damage, so those who get smacked must immediately withdraw or you'll receive the subsequent damage!" Zhang Yang tried to keep everything short and simple. He yelled, "Let's fight!"

Battle was initiated.

Zhang Yang's team members were not your run-of-the-mill elite players. They would commit the simplest of instructions to memory and carry out their battle with great efficiency. Six minutes later, the boss fell to the ground, lifeless.

'Ding! Blue team has entered the West side third prison!'

System notification rang once again in everyone's ears.

"Damn, that bunch is really quick!"

One Sword Stroke had a frown on his face. He said, "Everyone, drink the potions, do not be afraid to splurge, all expenses will be reimbursed by Imperial Sky! As long as we win the First Clear, everyone will be rewarded

with 500,000 in cash!"

At the mention of money, their morale shot up, and Imperial Sky pushed themselves to the limit. In only four minutes, they also entered the third prison.

Crimson Rage and Radiance also worked hard, with a small gap of 30 seconds, both teams also entered the third prison!

Now, it was the time to see which team would defeat the third mini-boss first! This was crucial, as only one team would get to fight the final boss. There were no runner-ups, only losers!

The minions were annoying. They hid in the shadows, snuck around like thieves, and had AoE normal attacks. However, they were merely created by the Atلمان2. Indeed, the minions were cleverly designed to be troublesome, to ensure that time was wasted on them more than anything else, but the first "customers" they picked up were the four strongest dungeon teams of China. The minions fell flat on their faces before they could even hinder their quarry.

20 minutes later, Zhang Yang's team was the first to reach in front the third boss.

["Musician" Beeshoven1] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 68

HP: 7,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Leader of prisoners in third prison.

Beeshoven with a name that was not unlike a certain musician was simply charming to look at in a Tim Burton way. It's movements were otherworldly and graceful, its fingers light and deft, and it was dressed in dark tuxedo. It held a violin in its left hand and it was drew a bow along the violin's strings with its right hand which produced beautiful music. If it was not for the fact that Beeshoven himself was a skeleton, it would definitely have the style of an artist.

A circle 20 meters away from Beeshoven, there were seven colorful small circles, some were colored in red and some were colored in green.

However, there was a milky-colored opaque barrier a hundred meters behind Beeshoven. They could not see past it, but they believed that this barrier would automatically break once Beeshoven is killed, and that the final boss awaited behind this barrier!

"After defeating this boss, then we can fight the final boss, right?" everyone was a little excited although fighting the final boss did not mean they would get the First Clear. Because of the special system of this dungeon, it also meant that the other three teams would not have the chance to challenge the final boss.

Zhang Yang nodded and replied, "That's right! However, on the condition that we are the first one to defeat this boss!"

Zhang Yang looked at everyone and continued, "Because of this dungeon's pain-in-the-ass system, the third mini-boss only slightly easier than the final boss, which means that those if we can defeat the third mini-boss, we can easily defeat the final boss as well!"

"Little Yang, don't scare me on purpose!" Fatty Han patted his chest and pretended to faint.

"And...exactly how difficult is this boss?" everyone gazed at Zhang Yang, the "beta version" player.

"It won't kill us as long as we work as a team!" Zhang Yang let out of a sigh in his heart, some of dungeons only required powerful teammates, while some dungeons required good cooperation. Undoubtedly, this dungeon which required both, was really annoying!

"There are seven circles on the floor; they represent the seven vocal notes in sheet music. The red color is Do, yellow is Re, blue is Mi, green is Fa, purple is So, orange is La and white is Ti. When the battle is initiated, Beeshoven will 'play a song'. Yeap, play a song. That's its ultimate skill. When playing the song, the colored circles on the floor will flash in line with the song. When the song is finished, we must strictly follow the order and step into the circles in the right order and 'replay' the song!"

Zhang Yang looked at everyone and said, "If we 'play' the song correctly, then the battle continues, otherwise, Beeshoven will turn into his rage mode. At that time brothers and sisters, all of us will rest in peace!"

"Isn't this like the dancing machine you see in arcades? I'm a professional at those!" Han Ying Xue was fired up.

"Me too!" Wei Yan Er immediately popped up and spoke.

Daffodil Daydream also raised her hand and said, "I'm also good at playing this!"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "That's good. But this 'dancing machine' is a bit too big. Each time after a vocal note is played; we must repeat the note within 1 second. Otherwise, it will be considered as fail. Thus, each person would be responsible for a vocal note scale. After a person has played the vocal note scale, he or she must leave the circle immediately to allow the corresponding second person to quickly fill in their own circle!"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Beeshoven directly translates from 贝少芬, which is different from Beethoven (贝多芬).

2. Altman directly translates from 奥特曼. In German, Altman is a Jewish surname and the meaning of the name Altman is: Wise man.

Chapter 262: Dancing Machine

"This is fun!" Wei Yan Er clapped her hands and said, "I'm responsible for Do!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "It actually tests the players' memory! It will also turn into Rage mode if we don't defeat it within 8 minutes!"

"We need to memorize the order of stepping into the circle we are responsible for, at the same time, we need to attack the boss at our best effort! It's going to get quite messy!"

Zhang Yang assigned the gang, "Currently, little brat and ice cube are the strongest attackers, so both of them will attack throughout the entire battle and will not participate in 'playing the song'. I will tank Beeshoven and the remaining seven will be responsible for a vocal note scale each person!"

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Also do not expect to pass this at once! We have to start with 'playing the song' until we are able to cooperate without any mistakes before we can really unleash our DPS! Don't bother drinking potions, we're going to test it out first!"

Zhang Yang took out his axe, raised his shield and ran towards Beeshoven.

"Vulgar hillbilly, you actually dare to disturb an artist in the midst of composing a masterpiece, such insolence must be punished!" "Musician" Beeshoven snarled angrily, as it grabbed hold of the violin's strings in its hand and lashed them out at Zhang Yang like a whip.

Battle was initiated. Except for Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er who were slashing furiously at Beeshoven, the rest of the party had stepped behind the vocal note scale circles. They paid no attention to Beeshoven, only keeping their ears open and their eyes on the circles, learning how to 'play the song' smoothly without any mistakes.

30 seconds later.

"You are boors, tremble before my "Stringer Requiem"!" Beeshoven growled loudly, ignoring Zhang Yang and started playing its violin.

The seven vocal note scales on the floor immediately flashed according to the melody of the music. The colorful lights blinked repeated like a nightclub.

Beeshoven 'played the song' for 15 seconds in total, and once again it wielded its violin's strings and attacked Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue and the rest immediately followed the order of the notes, hopping in and out of their circles. Those players who had some understanding of music certainly had the advantage, but the others had their own methods of playing along. At worst, they just numbered the circles from one to seven and repeated the sequence by numbers, such as "371625263" for instance.

15 seconds later, the teammates successfully 'played the song'. The battle resumed without the boss raging.

Another 15 seconds later, Beeshoven stopped attacking once again and played the second "Stringer Requiem", but this time, it was "Part II" which was a completely different melody!

This was purely a memory test and it was not too difficult for the team members. All of them successfully 'played the song' once again and resolved Beeshoven's ulti.

They repeated this back and forth, and eight minutes rapidly passed.

"I've had enough all of you idiots, go to hell!" Beeshoven roared ferociously. Its body instantly became bigger as it flashed red.

'Ding! "Musician" Beeshoven has entered rage mode!'

Bang!

A beam of black light radiated from underneath of Beeshoven's feet, '-10,000' damage texts appeared on top of everyone heads, right after a second later, another round of '-10,000' damage texts pooped up once again. Other than the two tanks, the others were killed instantly!

Zhang Yang quickly used {Shadow of the Void}.

"Boss, not this again! You should be following us, in sickness and in health!" Endless Starlight rasped, as he took a few more hits and was sent tumbling to the ground, his heavy armor clanging.

The battle ended, and "Musician" Beeshoven went back to its original position, elegantly played its violin.

"33%!" Zhang Yang spoke in the party channel, "Beeshoven was still left 33% HP, we were still far away from killing it!"

However, it was not a big deal. The first round was to let the team members practice with their 'song playing'. The ones who were preoccupied with the circles could actually join in on the attack, as long as they ran back to the circles on time.

Everyone started to run back after resurrecting.

A benefit of this dungeon was that once they released their corpses, they would automatically be resurrected at the entrance of dungeon. They only had to run from there instead of having to retrieve their corpses. When everyone had restored their conditions, the battle started once again.

Eight minutes later, Zhang Yang's team was annihilated by Beeshoven once again. But this time, Beeshoven's HP was reduced to 21% which was an improvement.

All of them ran back after resurrecting. Similarly, they were annihilated again after eight minutes while Beeshoven's HP was reduced to 12%!

...

"Boss, it seems like Lone Desert Smoke also trapped at this stage!" Ghostly Leaf said to Sword of Light.

Sword of Light, Radiance's guild master, male Dwarf, Guardian, Level 60. In Zhang Yang's previous life, Sword of Light was also one of the China's Top 10 Tanks, ranked third! There was no argument that both Guardians and Defenders were tanks, but eventually those who made it in the top 10 tank list were the Guardians, except for Hundred Foot Icicle who was

ranked ninth as a Defender!

Sword of Light nodded and said, "That's right. They had a five to six minute lead earlier on, and we've already been wiped out by the third mini-boss, they've yet to get past it either! The other two teams should be in the same situation. It seems like the real competition actually started here?!"

"We must surpass them!"

Radiance's 10-man team yelled loudly!

...

"Annihilated again... 34%!" One Sword Stroke frowned, "This boss is kind of special, eight minutes is not enough to defeat this boss. We are distracted by memorizing the 'sheet music', all this running back and forth is really throwing us off our game!"

"Guild master, I'm sure the other teams have the same problem?" Fire Fountain smiled.

"That's right. There's no point rushing earlier on. This boss would actually determine it all!" Blooming Ichor nodded in acknowledgment.

One Sword Stroke expressed renewed hope, "Let's us prove to Lone Desert Smoke that they are not the strongest guild in China server! The strongest title belongs to us, Imperial Sky!"

"ROOOAR!"

...

"Sister Snow, this dancing machine boss is most advantageous to us ladies. We already managed to reduce Beethoven's HP to 20%, we'll get familiar to it soon!" Flirtatious Lady clenched her fist, nodding vigorously.

"That's right, that's right. Zhan Yu has already taken away so many First Clears, this time should be our turn!"

"Sisters, if we are the first to defeat the bosses, I will treat everyone to a seven-day trip to Thailand!"

"Little Pearl, are you kidding?"

"My words are more genuine than any pearl you can find in the ocean!"

"Wow, sisters, all of you heard that right? In the name of vacations, let's fight!"

"Let's fight!"

...

Lone Desert Smoke's team had already managed to reduce Beeshoven's HP to 7% on the forth attempt!

All of them sat on the floor and ate health recovery cakes to restore their conditions. Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Everyone is doing well! This time, we must defeat this boss! Guys, drink all the potions and activate all the long cool down skills!"

Everything was ready, all sorts of aura were activated, Zhang Yang swung his axe and said, "Let's start!"

Another round of the battle was initiated.

Seven minutes later, Beeshoven left only 19% HP. The attackers had some sort of skill like {Killing Cleave}; all of them had activated this kind of skill.

Although {Killing Cleave} did not utilize much Rage, it caused a shortage of rage which prevented use of other skills that had already cooled down completely. As long as {Blood Rage} cools down however, {Killing Cleave} could always be activated.

For Guardians, as they often receive the brunt of the attacks, such as this battle with Beeshoven, they would not experience such a thing as insufficient Rage!

‘-36,948!’

After Wei Yan Er activated {Indiscriminate}, she drank a bottle of Power Potion, and with her full bar or Rage, her {Killing Cleave} caused terrifying damage!

"Ha ha ha, noob tank, did you see that? My {Killing Cleave} caused almost 40,000 damage at once, I'll kill you easily! Sigh, you are really noob, you can't even withstand an attack from me!" little brat laughed smugly.

18%, 17%, 16%... Beeshoven's HP dropped continuously!

Eight minutes later, Beeshoven's HP remained only 4%!

"Alright guys, get over here, leave those circles. I will use {Vanguard's Aggression}!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly, throwing the {Vanguard's Aggression} protective barrier on top of everyone heads, while at the same time, also activating {Shield Wall}!

‘-1,000!’

‘-3,006!’

‘-1,000’ damage texts floated above everyone heads while Zhang Yang's HP kept on reducing by 3,000!

Beeshoven's rage mode was really powerful, although everyone had 90% immunity, they still received 1,000 Darkness damage every second which was really terrifying!

"Snow b*tch, Fantasy Sweetheart, heal the rest of the people, leave me be!" Zhang Yang said loudly, "Attack Beeshoven with your full force!"

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart cast {Healing Shower}, {Mending Prayers} and the other AoE healing magic to maintain everyone's HP!

10 seconds later, {Vanguard's Aggression}'s protection barrier ended and Beeshoven's HP remained at 1.5%!

{Berserker's Heal} instantly recovered the HP to full!

‘{Rearm}!’

{Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier and {Shield Wall} activated once again!

70,000! 40,000! 10,000! 5,000!

"No, no! I will be the greatest musician in history, my name has not yet

been known across the continent yet. I cannot die yet!" Beeshoven growled angrily, fell defeated and dropped its battle loot all over the floor.

"Hu! Finally we defeat Beeshoven!"

Everyone sat down, exhausted.

Zhang Yang thought in his heart, if not for this dungeon's competitive nature, they could have taken their time, practicing like how they did with Master Waller in Shadowmoon Castle, doing it over and over again for several days before they defeated the boss.

However, under the right circumstances, true human potential can be unleashed. Out of fear of being overtaken by the other teams, his members had actually unleashed 200% or even 300% of their capabilities and they had defeated Beeshoven after only five tries!

Seems like I'll have to keep the pressure up!

Zhang Yang smiled evilly, sending a shiver down their spines.

Chapter 263: Childhood Idols

Right after 'Musician' Beethoven was slaughtered, the white, opaque barrier right behind him also collapsed, and a vast square was presented right before their eyes.

There was a total of four entrances, but the other three entrances were still blocked by barriers. So, Zhang Yang and the gang could not enter the territories of the other parties to snatch-kill their bosses.

Right in the middle of the square stood a beautiful woman with an extremely graceful, slim body, a waist that begged for men to grab hold of, and a shapely butt, with a pair of breasts that had extremely pronounced tips, with a full head of blonde hair that came together with sex appeal that gushed out all around her. She was literally a standard 'femme fatale', judging from her weapons. She held a saw in her right hand, and her left arm stopped resembling human altogether at the wrist, instead ending in a long, spiraling tentacle that dangled straight down to her heel!

[Warden Mariya] (Gray-Silver Leader, Undead)

Level: 69

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 700

Cautious: Mariya was the most brutal warden in the history of Thunderbolt Prison, known for hacking the inmates into pieces with her saw, as she bathed in their blood, enjoying the pleasure of their screams.

"What the f*ck, female sadist!" Even a prurience person like Fatty Han would only dare to show his admiration towards her from a far distance, fearing that saw that dangled dangerously from her hand, knowing that she would very well hack him to pieces with it, especially the organs that mattered the most!

"Haha, Fatty Han, I can't believe you would turn away from such a lady!" Zhang Yang could not hold himself from laughing.

"Hey hey, it's true I'll never turn anything down, hot or cold, but this, this

is obviously an outer space organism!" Fatty Han shook his head continuously.

"So how do we fight this battle?"

"It's going to be easier than boss number three!" Zhang Yang nodded and said, "The boss will summon a jailer out every once in a while. So Endless Starlight will kite the jailers who pop out, and everyone should just swarm up and kill it. As long as not more than two jailers appear at the same time, there shouldn't be any problem!"

"Alright! Let's go in together, when the battle begins, the barrier behind us will reactivate, locking out anyone who's outside till the battle is over!"

The gang walked straight in to the interior square, with Zhang Yang leading the gang, charging swiftly towards the boss.

"Ara, ara, another batch of new toys!" Warden Meriya moaned out loud with excitement, waving the saw in her right hand while lashing out with her long tentacle, her attention on Zhang Yang.

'Ding! The Blue Team has entered the Central Square!'

The moment they triggered the boss, the voice message alert tone rang in the ears of all 40 players in the four parties.

The other three parties all lost focus at the same instance. Those who were still playing on the 'Dancing Machine' messed up their rhythms, immediately triggering the explosion of the boss which wiped out the entire party!

"They've beaten us to it again!"

"Sigh, the First Clear of the dungeon is going away again!"

Everyone was groaning and sighing.

The guildmasters of the other three guilds all said, "Boss number three is already so difficult to kill, the final boss must be even harder! Even Lone Desert Smoke had been annihilated a couple of times at the third boss, so there is no way they can clear the last boss in just one attempt! Also, there is only one attempt for the final boss, once the party fails to kill the boss,

the boss will disappear! So, even if we cannot see the final boss, Zhan Yu and his gang may not be able to get the First Clear title as well!"

"Do it nice and easy now, let's familiarize ourselves with boss number three. When the dungeon is refreshed, we'll be the first to reach the final boss!"

...

Zhang Yang had a solid grip of the boss' aggro, while the gang unleashed their full power, swiftly reducing the health points of the boss with their assault.

30 seconds later.

"Guards! Guards! Quickly, help me destroy these disobedient toys!"
Warden Meriya started shouting for help!

'Ding! Warden Meriya has summoned Jailer!'

Pak! Pak!

Two large skeletal hands broke out from the ground, followed by a large Skeleton soldier breaking out from the ground, holding a large mace in its hands.

[Jailer of Thunderbolt Prison] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 65

HP: 500,000

Defense: 350

The moment this Skeleton Solider appeared, a stream of dark light radiated from beneath its legs, and the gang was instantly inflicted with the damage of '-1,000', the numerical values flashing right above their heads.

'Ding! You have been affected by the effect of the {Death Corruption Aura}', experiencing 1000 dark shadow damage once every 2 seconds!'

Endless Starlight immediately stepped forward and engaged, activating {Provoke} to grab the monster's attention, swiftly kiting the monster away.

The gang ran after him and swarmed around the Jailer, dealing a massive, humiliating beatdown.

"Guys, why do you think that the weapon of the Jailer is a mace?" Fatty Han suddenly smiled with his wretched face.

Endless Starlight was indeed his best buddy, instantly his face turned pale and answered, "Is it because 'the petals of the chrysanthemum tore through everything as he tugged it out2'?"

"What the f*ck, you two wretched beings, stop talking about ass*les and enemas and whatever random sh*t whenever you open your mouths, in front of so many pretty ladies! You guys are just too much!" Lost Dream spoke up furiously.

"It's not just two, it's three wretched men!" other than Sun Xin Yu, the ladies were denouncing the men in unison!

"Oh yea, sister, what 'chrysanthemum' are they talking about, to have petals that can tear through stuff?" Wei Yan Er turned her head around, with her face filled with the desire to seek for knowledge.

Under the extreme fire power from the gang, the Jailer was left in a heap of useless bones after merely 30 seconds, returning back to the ground where it came from.

Every minute, the boss would summon a Jailer once. If the combined fire power of the party is not powerful enough, the players would definitely be spending most of their time dealing with those Jailers, draining their energy and potions, eventually wearing themselves out! That was the intended design of the boss, and it would have definitely been a lot of trouble for the regular player! However, with the equipment of this party, all the players had to do were to attack the boss, then the monster, and then the boss again, and then the monster again. It was a matter of time before the boss fell.

About ten minutes later, Warden Mariya agonizingly screamed and collapsed onto the ground, dropping a large pile of loot!

The gang was at ease. None of them were out of breath. This boss was

much easier than the previous one. Since victory was already a certainty, there was nothing to be excited about.

"Witchy Snow, are you sure you don't want to consider changing the advertising phrase of your company?" As he was staring at the key-in window after the First Clear achievement, the face of Zhang Yang began to twitch again.

"No!" Han Ying Xue shook her head with determination.

"Little girl?" Zhang Yang turned his sight toward Wei Yan Er.

"No! Not one bit!" Wei Yan Er was also shaking her head without any pause.

Zhang Yang sighed with resignation, who told him to sign a contract with Silky Soft Holdings in the first place?!

'Server Announcement: Silky Soft Bra, giving you the most personal care! Lone Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring the Thunderbolt Prison (Hardcore Mode)First Clear Title, their great deeds will be published on the list of the Hardcore Mode First Clear title (China Region). Please cheer for them!'

"Hahaha!" the heartless laddies were beginning to laugh out loudly.

After the distribution of the equipment, they tore off their respective teleportation scrolls and returned to Thunderstorm Castle, and then went through the portal to White Jade Castle. It might have cost them a bit of gold, but... time is gold!

After securing the First Clear title of the dungeon on hand, Zhang Yang had lost his interest in the Thunderbolt Prison. After the dungeon got refreshed, he would only let Endless Starlight lead the party, giving the opportunity for his fellow members of the guild to upgrade their equipment and prepare themselves Soaring Swords.

Time truly flew, and it was already the first day of December, the Soaring Swords competition! The atmosphere was thick in excitement, with the players rearing for action!

Since 12 o'clock last night, the convention had stopped accepting applicants, and after a night of statistical analysis, each party was given a number of their own. White Jade Castle had a total of more than 240,000 parties enrolled in the competition. Each party needed to beat 16 other parties consecutively in order to secure themselves one of the four qualifying places in the event.

For convenience sake, the competition was held during night time. In the first round, some lucky parties proceeded straight into the next round without any engagement as their opponents did not show up. The first six rounds will be adopting the single knockout system that base on single outcome, while the seventh round would adopt the 'Two out of three wins Elimination system'.

Everyone was leveling up on their own in the day, and when the clock struck seven at night, everyone hurried back to the main city, waiting for the competition to begin!

As the competition had rules, only players who were in the main city could teleport straight to the Simulated Arena to take part in the competition.

Players get to enter any simulated arena to spectate the competition. However, there were way too many matches in the first round, it would be impossible to follow all of them!

Zhang Yang's small party of five men had waited until seven forty before they could hear the system notification that came to them, 'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party, your match will begin in 5 minutes time, now you and your party members shall be teleported into the arena!'

Shoof! A blur passed over their visions for a moment, in the next second, they already found themselves in the vast arena where the competition was held. However, there was an invisible air wall right in front of them, and they could only see that, about a hundred meters from the opposite side from them, their opposing party of five members had spawned at that spot at the same time. There was a blue flag that stood out of the back of every single member in Zhang Yang's party, while the members of the

opposition party were equipped with red flags. As these flags were actually just projections of light, they would not affect the movement of the players, nor would they block attacks.

‘Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS Childhood Idols party is about to begin in 5 minutes, please make ready!’

Although they could not go through the invisible air wall, that did not interrupt them from observing their opponents. It would be useless even if players try to hide their personal information, as the basic information of each member of the party of five were visible in the opponent’s information page.

Madoka Ozawa, Male Beastman, Berserker, Level 52, HP 5,220.

Rei Saijo, Male Elf, Sniper, Level 54, HP 5,310.

Anri Okita, Male Elf, Bandit, Level 53, HP 5,610.

Sora Aoi, Male Dwarf, Holy Knight, Level 52, HP 5,280.

Kaede Matsushima, Male Human, Cryomancer, Level 53, HP 5,150.

"Why do they name themselves after names of women when they are all in fact males? And those Japanese names too?" Wei Yan Er blinked her large eyes, turned to Zhang Yang with a confused look.

Zhang Yang replied in a hush, "Take a good look at those names...and the name of their party? Childhood Idols, it’s obvious that these names represent the women that enriched their lives with meaning!"

"Oh!" Wei Yan Er had caught only a hazy, misguided notion.

"These players are only equipped with Copper-Green equipment. Little girl, you go on ahead alone and handle them!" Zhang Yang told Wei Yan Er.

"Yes! Yes!" the little girl immediately felt excited, pulling out her axe with a murderous glint in her eyes. "Unfortunately, this location does not allow us to summon or use [Pet Mounts], otherwise, if me and my Little Petal worked as one, we can kill them all within 10 seconds!" she twitched her mouth.

4 minutes... 2 minutes... 50 seconds...

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

‘Ding! Let the match begin!’

Wei Yan Er let out a shrill warcry, and she charged out into the arena carrying her axe without hesitation, like a little dangerous fuzzball of a Berserker.

When the opposition saw that the party of Zhang Yang had only sent out one player to engage in battle, they were furious!

"Sh*t! To look down on people to this point, this is just too much!"

"So Lone Desert Smoke acts so arrogantly?"

"Haha! Arrogance is good, we can take the opportunity to take them down one by one! Brothers, we can become famous after one match by taking down the core party of the Lone Desert Smoke!"

"That's right, kill them and show no mercy!"

Wei Yan Er snorted and said, "Cut the crap, just come at me already!"

{Concussion Shot}!

Rei Saijo immediately shot a Status Effect Skill, reducing the movement speed of Wei Yan Er. Afterwards, he began his assault together with Kaede Matsushima, while Madoka Ozawa and Anri Okita charged in.

{Charge}!

{Charge}!

Both Madoka Ozawa and Wei Yan Er used {Charge}, clashing into each other.

‘-803!’

‘-1,402!’

‘-2,103!’

Rei Saijo and Kaede Matsushima had collided into her! The attack of the hunter was still manageable as the 200 defense of Wei Yan Er was not

there for nothing. However, she had no way to protect herself from the assault of the Cryomancer, therefore, she could only forcefully take in all the inflicted damage!

But there is still a silver lining over the cloud when a warrior class character like Drizzler takes damage. The rage gauge of Wei Yan Er had been filled up to 100 points in just an instant!

In one second, Wei Yan Er and Madoka Ozawa recovered from their stuns and turned around at the same time, while Anri Okita had weaved through, ready to stab her in the back!

{Tornado Cleave}!

‘-7,684!’

‘-7,329!’

Wei Yan Er swung her axe like swinging a board, Madoka Ozawa was instantly killed, while Anri Okita was smacked out of his stealth state before he could even do anything!

"Holy... what is this damage, this can't be real!"

"Quickly, scatter, this little girl hits like a piledriver!"

Wei Yan Er pursued Kaede Matsushima. As spellcasters basically had to act as stationary turrets to cast their spells, all she had to do was to force her opponent to flee while swinging her axe away. Kaede Matsushima only offered his back to her freely!

If they were more competent players, all Kaede Matsushima had to do was to kite Wei Yan Er that little girl around while Rei Saijo could in turn, attack Wei Yan Er's back to his heart's content. Unfortunately, they were all but competent. They were just a bunch of casual players who probably drew inspiration from their childhood idols every single day. These 'Childhood Idols' were obviously casual players!

Kaede Matsushima suddenly stood still and began to cast his spells while facing Wei Yan Er. He had decided to go out with a bang, dealing as much damage as he can on Wei Yan Er!

‘-812!’

‘-1397!’

‘-1402!’

Wei Yan Er took another volley of spells, but unfortunately, this little girl was currently equipped with a full set of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment. Her current health points had reached 16,800, and she had not yet even lost half of her hitpoints!

{Ice Ring}!

Kaede Matsushima was not an idiot either, immediately he froze Wei yan Er to the ground, and started to gain further distance.

[Ice Ring]: Freeze all targets within the radius of 10 meters from the caster, targets in frozen state cannot move, the effect lasts for 8 seconds. However, the durability of the frost will be reduced if the target is attacked, shortening the duration of the Freeze. Cool down: 30 seconds.

{Warrior's Will}!

With her front leg frozen, she kicked at it with her other leg instinctively, breaking the ice. This ingrained reaction was probably developed after multiple engagements against Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream!

‘-14,400!’ {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

Kaede Matsushima was also instantly killed!

Rei Saijo and Sora Aoi were both left with their mouths opened wide, that was just too much to bear! 14,000+ damage was an overkill of an overkill!

Wei Yan Er turned around and continued to pursue Rei Sajio.

Rei Sajio was so terrified that he turned around and started to run!

Although the attacks of Hunter did not require any casting progress, the player was required to stand still like a turret, similar to spellcasters. After attacking, they would be locked briefly in an animation before they could run again, thus, he would only be able to attack two or three times before

Wei Yan Er catches up to him! Therefore, he did not even dare to attack before his speed-reduction skill was cooled down!

Under the current circumstances, they had given up defeating Zhang Yang's party, their current goal was to at least take out Wei Yan Er and make things look slightly better for themselves.

However, even though the arena is vast, it did not mean that there was no end to it. After running for awhile, Rei Saijo turned in front to realize that he was running into a wall!

He quickly turned around, but the pursuant could easily intercept his new path. The little girl was gaining ground every passing moment!

And finally, his {Concussion Shot} had finally cooled down completely! Immediately, he stopped and turned around, giving Wei Yan Er a {Concussion Shot}!

4 seconds of movement reduction.

Rei Saijo backpedaled while shooting at Wei Yan Er, and the health point of this little girl began drop from 11,000 to 7,000 over time!

{Charge}!

The cool down for Wei Yan Er's {Charge} was also completed. Instantly, she clashed head on onto her opponent, and with a swing of her axe, she activated {Tornado Cleave} and inflicted a damage of '-7646' on her opponent, another instant-kill!

Sora Aoi saw that the little girl grinning sadistically with her axe in her hands as she came for him. He quickly raised up both of his hands and said, "I, I quit! I admit defeat!"

With a flash of his shadow, he was teleported out of the arena.

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Femme fatale: a seductive woman who lures men into dangerous or compromising situations

2. Chrysanthemum remnant, injuries everywhere: A lyrics in Jay Chow song 'Ju Hua Tai'. Author implied chrysanthemum as the anus, so it literally meant the scattered petals of an anus after being brutally injured by a chrysanthemum.

Chapter 264: Unobstructed Flow

'Ding! Your party has defeated 'Childhood Idols', the Lone Desert Smoke First Party has proceeded to the next round! Please remain in the main city, the next match is beginning in 40 minutes!'

Following the sound of the system notification, Zhang Yang and the gang were teleported out of the arena.

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and said, "The little girl spent a total of 47 seconds to secure the victory of our first round, let us compete to see who can take down the opposition party in the shortest time, shall we?"

"Hmph!" Wei Yan Er put her hands on her hip joints and said, "You are so wicked, if I had known we were racing, I could have did it faster! 30 seconds, no, 20 seconds would have been enough to take them all out!"

Han Ying Xue pinched the little girl's face and said, "Keep puffing hot air, little prick!"

Wei Yan Er flung her head in a huff and said, "Cousin sister, even you're being mean! I am finally seeing through your entire being, your heart, spleen, lungs and kidneys!"

"But we must not be too negligent, it is possible that we might encounter a strong party in the future!" Daffodil Daydream reminded all of them.

"Yes!"

The other four of them, including Zhang Yang nodded to express their agreement. As the saying went, an army puffed up with pride is bound to lose, but with enough confidence in themselves, they may conquer the world!

"Little Yang, we are in for the next round!" In just a short period of time, Fatty Han shouted into the guild channel.

"Guildmaster, we have also proceeded into the next round!"

"Boss! Boss! We're in the next round!"

The guild channel was constantly filled with the triumphantly news of

many parties in the guild. Of course, some people were happy, and naturally some people were crying as there were also many parties brutally, or forcefully eliminated from the competition in the first round. However, many of them were reporting victories. At the end of the first round at 8.p.m, out of a total of 2,176 parties from the Lone Desert Smoke that participated in the competition, 1,847 parties had managed to secure their spots into the next round, leaving the elimination rate down to only 15%. With such great results, it reflected the elite superiority of the guild, thanks to Zhang Yang's strict selection of members.

At 8.p.m, the second round of the Soaring Swords competition closely followed right after the first round, there was a total of 131,072 parties, and the competition was divided into three different sessions.

This time round, Zhang Yang and the others had to wait a little longer, only being teleported at 8:40.p.m.

Their opponents seemed to be pushovers again, with an average level of 53. It seemed that they had engaged with a similarly weak party in the first round, in order to proceed to this round smoothly. There was one Berserker, two Beastmasters, one Pyromancer and one Priest.

So, Sun Xin Yu pulled out her daggers and jabbed a thumb in her bountiful chest, claiming this round as hers and hers alone.

The five-minute preparation time passed very quickly, and Sun Xin Yu dashed forwards, disappearing into thin air as she went straight into her stealth mode.

"Wait, wait!" The five members of the opposition party had charged forward a few steps forward as the Berserker who seemed to be their party leader immediately raised up his hand and said, "They must have some trick up their sleeves! None of them are moving!"

"That's right, they are the core party of the Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Such rotten luck, to meet these lunatics in the second round!"

"Boss, you said they might have something up their sleeves, right?"

"I don't know, but the battle has already begun, and their assassin is in

{Stealth} while the remaining four members are just standing there. They must be conspiring something!"

"We must not act lightly. Let's stay in position, spread out a little, and flank them. Whoever charges over first, we'll just instant-kill that player!"

"Right! Let them have a taste of our strength, the Five Immortals of the Peach Valley!"

"It's a long shot, but we might even slaughter them and get our asses elevated!"

"Hahaha!"

The five of them started to laugh as their heads were filled with fantasies.

Pak!

The Pyromancer who stood at the rear of the party suddenly swayed on the spot, a circle of flying stars that indicated a stun effect appeared right on his head, followed by the shadow of Sun Xin Yu slowly revealing herself out of thin air, getting to work with her two daggers that glittered like frost and snow right behind him without a pause.

‘-2,040!’

‘-710!’

‘-4020!’

The regular attacks of the main weapon and the secondary weapon, with the addition of consecutive chain of a back attack, along with an additional 10% damage while appearing out from stealth mode -- instantly, she inflicted a total damage of up to 7,000! The Pyromancer did not stand a chance, it was a total insta-kill, with no chance of activating any emergency life-saving skills!

A true assassination, to suddenly emerge out of the shadow and instantly hammer out a series of terrifying attacks!

Sun Xin Yu immediately turned her focus towards the Priest and started running at him.

"What the hell! That was deadly shit!"

"Focus fire on her, take her out!"

The two hunters had sent their pets to attack Sun Xin Yu while shooting out their {Concussion Shots} to reduce her movement speed. Clearly, they lacked tacit understanding among each other, they were casting redundant skills at the same time!

Her body trembled, and Sun Xin Yu became translucent --- {Blur}!

Missed!

Missed!

The two {Concussion Shots} missed at the same time. As an assassin, Sun Xin Yu moved far faster than a priest. The movement speed boost could go up to 20% at most, and it was considerably fast! In a flash, she had reached her opponent who was 10 meters away!

{Shadow Step}!

"Old Ox, look out! She is right behind you!"

"Quickly! Use {Petrifying Shriek}!"

"Turn around, don't give her the chance to stab you in the back!"

The other three players were busy spouting various advice! However, it was already too late!

‘-1,832!’

‘-692!’

‘-3632!’

Although there was no additional 10% damage, Sun Xin Yu was the ice queen. Her opponent only had a full body of Green-Copper equipment, with 5,000+ health points, how was it possible for that fellow to survive so many violent attacks of hers! He died instantly!

{Holy Shield}? Sorry, that rare skill book was not available to any hillbilly!

"F*ck! They did not play any tricks on us, they really thought one assassin was enough to take us all out!"

"This level of looking down on people is too much!"

"... It seems like we are no match to them though!"

After Sun Xin Yu had torn up the priest's *ss into ribbons, she immediately waved her hand -- {Vanish}.

The battle had just commenced for 16 seconds!

17 seconds, 19 seconds, 21 seconds!

Shoof! The shadow of Sun Xin Yu reappeared once again, and a hunter dropped dead!

"Sun of the beach! Kill one of them at least!"

"At least take some of her HP out!"

The two remaining players of the opposition party lamented.

Everytime Sun Xin Yu activated {Blur}, she was so lucky that every single attack 'Missed'! After killing three players consecutively, she was actually still at full health, it simply made her opponents feel horrible!

Shoof! Small cyclones formed beneath her feet, and her movement speed was instantly boosted like crazy!

{Sprint}!

Sun Xin Yu flew at the other hunter at twice her usual speed!

'-982!'

'-1632!'

The two damages were inflicted on Sun Xin Yu at the same time, a combination of a regular shot and {Take Aim}!

Finally... a Reduction of health points!

The hunter revealed a triumphant smile on his face! He managed to draw some Lone Desert Smoke blood!

26 seconds!

Sun Xin Yu continued to charge forwards, and with amazing footwork, she positioned herself behind the hunter. Immediately after that she charged at the Berserker.

The hunter, dead but yet to even fall, had already been abandoned by its killer!

"Argh!" the Berserker charged straight at Sun Xin Yu, swinging his axe wildly but unfortunately, it only struck air. Witnessing his party members getting slaughtered one after another, it had left him infuriated! The outcome of the match did not matter anymore, he only wanted to strike Sun Xin Yu in order to at least regain some dignity!

Sun Xin Yu lifted a leg up casually, and the axe swung harmlessly beneath her!

Normal attacks were easily telegraphed, therefore, any skilled player could easily anticipate and evade attacks as they would in real life.

Sliding between the legs of her opponent, Sun Xin Yu flitted to the back of her opponent with amazing flexibility, and finished him off!

32 seconds!

The battle has ended!

Shoof, Zhang Yang and the party were teleported out of the arena at the same time.

"Little girl, you lost your position so easily!" Zhang Yang ridiculed her.

Wei Yan Er was instantly provoked, gnashing her teeth at Zhang Yang with an audible snap.

"Born in the year of dog?"

"No! Tiger! Rawgh!"

After the second round of the competition ended, 1,293 parties of the Lone Desert Smoke remained in the running. The chat was once again filled with a mixture of joy and sadness.

9 pm, and the third round began.

This time around, Zhang Yang and his party members were one of the first to be teleported into the arena. At the opposite side, the party was still vastly inferior, but their average Level had reached up to Level 54, and they glittered with a few gray-silver equipment!

"This time, let Daffodil handle this, don't get killed!" Zhang Yang smiled while teasing.

If players are killed in the arena, they will not lose any experience points or equipment, but their equipment durability will still be reduced.

At first, Wei Yan Er wanted to give it another try in order to get herself back to number one in place, but when she saw the excitement on the face of Daffodil Daydream, she felt that it was not good to steal her spotlight, so she could only give up bitterly.

Five minutes later, the battle began!

The moment when Daffodil Daydream activated her {Heart of Flame}, pak pak pak, she had already instantly-killed one of her opponents the moment she laid her eyes on them. After a series of weaving and rolling, she killed the final opponent at the expense of having 872 health points remaining. It was understandable as she was a Spellcaster with lower defense and HP. The whole battle took one minute and 12 seconds!

She had no other way, as she could only cast {Fire Blast} again and again, other spells would have required an interruptible casting time. To fight against five opponents by herself was not easy, let alone winning the match!

A pyromancer truly shone in team battles, where behind their allies, they will be able to cast their hard-hitting skills at leisure and inflict series of extremely terrifying damage!

In the third round of the competition, there was no doubt that the second party of the Lone Desert Smoke with Fatty Han and the others in it would proceed to the forth round.

Meanwhile, a total of 902 parties from Lone Desert Smoke still made it into the next round. Compared to the 487 parties of the Crimson Rage and

the 309 parties of the Imperial Sky, it was three times more than them in number! As everyone could see, Lone Desert Smoke was truly elite!

Only three rounds of the competition were held today, with another three rounds the next day, and then another three rounds on the following day, with only two rounds on the forth day, while the remaining six days will only hold one round each.

Although there were many inferior parties eliminated thorough the first three rounds, but 16,384 parties still remained in the competition, and the quality of the parties still varied greatly. On the second day of the competition, Zhang Yang and the gang were still able to send one representative to claim victory for them. Progress was smooth.

When it was Zhang Yang's turn to step up, he had his pet join the battle to aid him, engaging in a fortunate match-up against a kitchen-knife-kind of party that consisted of two berserkers, two thieves and one sacred knight. In the end, he had purposely allowed the thief to activate {Ambush} successfully, while waiting for the four damage channel players to round up on him. When the time was right, he activated his {Warrior's Will} to get rid of the {Kidney Shot}, and did a perfect instant-kill on all four opponents with a combo of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike}!

He then activated a {Charge} at the last sacred knight left on the arena and killed him with a series of explosive blows. The whole battle only took 19 seconds!

Chapter 265: 'Fire Phoenix' Party

There was no chance of breaking Zhang Yang's record, not anymore!

Wei Yan Er glared at him dejectedly, and she said, "Noob tank, you got real lucky, engaging four melee profession players at a time, if only I --- Hmph!"

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "It could not be helped, luck is also a part of strength!"

"How ostentatious!" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes at him. Sun Xin Yu was on fire, constantly rubbing her daggers against each other everytime they stepped into battle. However, after the sixth round, only 4,096 parties managed to proceed to the seventh round of the competition.

Maybe they could still managed to send one player each for the coming rounds, but naturally, these parties were the cream of the crop, possessing greater strength than their previous encounters!

As a safety precaution, Zhang Yang would have his party charge out as one starting from the next day. They cannot risk any 1 VS 5 battles anymore!

Lone Desert Smoke had a total of 227 parties who entered the next round, taking up a total of 5% of the remaining parties of White Jade Castle in the competition, it was definitely astonishing! It was far better compared to the Crimson Rage who had only 132 parties remaining and the Imperial Sky who had only 96 parties remaining in the competition!

"Let's go, we shall level up to achieve Level 70 at a faster speed!" Zhang Yang was already currently Level 64, but to race against other players and also spend time on the competition was an uphill battle. However, Zhang Yang naturally had the uttermost confidence to secure the championship of this competition!

Let's set aside other circumstances, by just booking the dungeon where the Demonic Treant King is, Zhang Yang and the gang had already acquired a total of 12 pieces of [Aura Stones]. The Aura skills of Zhang

Yang and Han Ying Xue had already reached Level 4 while the Aura skills Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had also reached Level 3. The whole gang had grown far stronger than before!

As five of them were about to tear their own [teleportation scroll] to return back to Thunderstorm Castle, when they saw Humbly Gentleman and his big gang walking by with thier annoying swagger. The hypocrite glanced at Zhang Yang, and he said, "Zhan Yu, I heard that you guys managed to make it into round 7! Hehe, you guys better burn more incense and pray that you never engage with us tomorrow, or else, that would be the end of your streak!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hypocrite, have you taken the wrong medicine today as well?"

Humbly Gentleman snorted and put his hand over one of his men's shoulder. "Zhan Yu, allow me to introduce you to a person! Millenial Wanderer, profession, Cryomancer, and he is a new recruit of The Dominators and also our Ace!"

The Millenial Wanderer was a male elf spellcaster, who did not hide his personal information. He was Level 58, health points 8,320, mana points 4,120. With his hands folded across his chest, he gazed and them lazily and said, "I heard that you guys are strong? Unfortunately, that was before you guys met me!"

Han Ying Xue and the ladies exchanged a look, trying to hold back their laughter. Wei Yan Er rubbed her forefinger against her cheek and said, "Goodness, the mental hospital is so irresponsible this year round, how could they let a patient run wild without giving him proper medication!"

Zhang Yang smiled nonchalantly, but his heart skipped a beat. Millenial Wanderer -- he was bad news. His past life told him of that!

--- Millenial Wanderer, he was indeed the core player and ace of The Dominators in the S Rank Competition! Being the seventh in the top 10 best spellcaster list, his strength must not be underestimated!

In this life, Millenial Wanderer had also sided himself over to The Dominators, despite their downfall.

"You b*tch, just wait until you meet me in the arena, I shall show you just how much of a toad under the well you are!" Millenial Wanderer slammed his fists together, a most belligerent look on his face.

Wei Yan Er burst out, "He's driving me mad! I really wish that our first opponents will be them, I am going to cut his head off and kick it like a football!"

"Yan Er, how can you be so violent? But, I do support you this time round!" Han Ying Xue pinched the cheek of Wei Yan Er again.

"Humph, while you're still at it, be pleased and enjoy the moment!" After Humbly Gentlemant finished with his demonstration of power, he waved his hand and led his men away from the scene.

"That was a really annoying person!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue, "Noob tank, raise their teleportation fare up 10 times more!"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and said, "Alright!"

One day had passed, the Soaring Swords competition had entered its third day.

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS 'Fire Phoenix' party is about to begin in 5 minutes, please make ready!'

It was already 7 pm, Zhang Yang and his party members were teleported to the arena at the same instance again, and there marked the beginning of their round 7 battle!

Fire Phoenix was an unconventional party formed out of five female Pyromancers! The average level of the five was Level 56, which was considerably quite high. Plus, they were pretty well-equipped, most of them glittering in gray-silver light. All of their health points were over 7,000!

A vicious party of glass-cannons! Focus fire, instant-kill, simple, violent, effective!

"How do we do this?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"We split them up into individual battles. Each of us take one. Their

health points are not that much, if we can get near them, we can kill them! We must really close the gap before they start bombarding us! Five 'Fire Balls' flying at us all at once is no joke!" Zhang Yang said.

"Then I shall take on Phoenix Subzero!" Wei Yan Er said.

"I'll take on Phoenix Foam!" Daffodil Daydream said.

"Iced Tea!" Sun Xin Yu was brief and straight to the point as usual.

"Then I shall take Phoenix Jasmine, while Whitey shall take Phoenix Babe!" Zhang Yang shall cover the remaining two opponents.

On the other side of the arena, the Fire Phoenix were also having a discussion.

"They will definitely start with Zhan Yu in front! You have all seen it, that lunatic has like 28,000 HP, and our first volley could theoretically do 30,000. But he'll definitely have some passive damage-reduction skills, he won't go down from that! Furthermore, once they close in, their melee attackers will deal serious damage!" Phoenix Foam said.

"The damage of a tanker is limited, he won't be a priority! The thief will definitely go into stealth mode immediately. So, we should really focus fire on Drizzler or Daffodil Daydream!"

"Subzero, Iced Tea, Jasmine, you three focus fire on taking out the Drizzler, while Babe and I shall take on Daffodil Daydream! Try to kill them off in a one volley, and then if the thief is still in stealth mode, we shall hit the priest first. If the thief reveals herself, we shall take out the thief first! The Guardian shall be our the last target!" Phoenix Foam assigned their objectives.

"Alright!"

Five minutes passed in the blink of an eye!

The battle had begun!

All five members of Zhang Yang's party charged at the same time. As Zhang Yang was the tanker, naturally, he was at the forefront, while Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream followed closely behind him. Sun Xin Yu

had long vanished out of sight.

The three members of the Fire Phoenix party took aim at Wei Yan Er, while two of them aimed at Daffodil Daydream. At the same instant, they activated the skill that temporarily increased their damage, the {Heart of Flame}, and they began to cast their {Explosive Flame} that had the highest damage output among all their skills!

{Counter Magic}!

Daffodil Daydream put up her hand and waved, immediately sealing up the {Explosive Flame} that was about to be activated by Phoenix Foam. At the same instant, she activated her own {Heart of Flame}. Afterwards, she gulped down a bottle of [Beginner Power Potion] and activated her accessory, the Magician's Brooch, and began casting her own {Explosive Flame}!

Just two seconds later ---

‘-2,926!’

‘-1,646!’

‘-2911!’

‘-1534!’

‘-3012!’

‘-1621!’

Six damage values appeared right on top of Zhang Yang as the attacks struck him, taking away approximately 14,000 of his health points!

The Fire Phoenix party reeled in shock! As these attacks were supposedly thrown at Wei Yan Er, how did Zhang Yang become the one who sustained all the damage?

[Sacrifice]: Protects an ally, taking all damage done to the ally instead.
Cool down time: 1 minute. Distance: 30 meters

‘-4,592!’

‘-1,541!’

Phoenix Babe managed to inflict some damages on Daffodil Daydream, taking away 6,000+ of her health points. However, Daffodil Daydream bombarded Phoenix Foam with only one {Explosive Flame} that inflicted a damage value of '-9360!', instantly killing her opponent on spot!

'-3120!'

Daffodil Daydream answered with a {Fire Blast}, taking away a third of her other opponent's health points!

Zhang Yang was grinning as he entered the range of {Charge}. Immediately, he charged head on at Phoenix Jasmine. At the same time, Whitey activated {Wild Charge} and clashed onto Phoenix Babe! Shoof! Sun Xin Yu used her {Shadow Step} to draw herself to the back of Phoenix Iced Tea -- {Ambush} activated! Wei Yan Er had also used {Charge} to clash into Phoenix Subzero!

{Flash Out}!

The four remaining members of the Fire Phoenix party activated their {Flash Out} at the same instant: Instantly move 10 meters forward, cancels all movement restriction skills!

Zhang Yang, and the other two party members immediately pursued their opponents, while Han Ying Xue was frantically healing Zhang Yang.

Their distance gone, and positioning greatly disrupted the weaknesses of the spellcaster profession were revealed thoroughly. The remaining four members of the Fire Phoenix party were instantly nailed by Zhang Yang who smacked their asses with his huge axe. After just a few attempts, they were forced into despair. After lashing out for awhile, they were sent to their demises one after another.

Round one, Lone Desert Smoke First Party acquired victory!

The second level started immediately right after, it was the same 5-minute preparation time. Fire Phoenix party made the best use of the time to revise their tactics.

"Their guardian has {Sacrifice}, it totally messes up our plan!" Phoenix Babe frowned.

"This time, we shall focus our assault on Drizzler, let Zhan Yu use his {Sacrifice} on Drizzler first. Then we shall immediately use our second volley on Daffodil Daydream, it should immediately kill her!"

"But once we let them get near us, their damage outputs are just as terrifying!"

"That's right, they are all individual freaks of their own! The parties that we encountered in the first few rounds could only focus fire on one of us at a time. We only needed to activate a {Ice Frame} to protect ourselves, while the other four of us will just wipe them out! However, they're spreading out to deal with us all at once!"

"Argh, why did it have to be Zhan Yu! It could have been any other!"

"Hehe, or Iced Tea, you go on ahead and seduce Zhan Yu, let him turn his coat around and betray his party!"

"You b*tch, you are the one who should go and seduce him! With your two papaya sized titties, men are bound to drool!"

"Stop messing around, think of something now!"

"... Nothing on mind now!"

"...Let's just do it then!"

The match began with the end of their unproductive discussion!

The five cyromancers did as they had roughly improvised, focusing fire on Wei Yan Er, trying to trick Zhang Yang into activating his {Sacrifice}, and then they turning to Daffodil Daydream immediately. Daffodil Daydream immediately went down!

However, Phoenix Foam was also killed by the {Explosive Flame} coming from Daffodil Daydream, turning the battle into 4 VS 4!

The prime advantage of a 5-spellcaster party was that all five of them could focus fire and take out their opponents, one at a time! As their numbers dwindled, their firepower would drastically drop, and the moment they fail to kill any of their opponents in a single hit, the healer's role which was meant for long-term combat would start to shine!

Fire Phoenix lost to Lone Desert Smoke First Party with the result of 0:2 by the end of the match.

Chapter 266: The Strongest 4 of White Jade Castle

Right after the end of round seven, only 2,049 parties remained. 106 parties of Lone Desert Smoke managed to proceed to the upcoming round, still taking the lead in White Jade Castle.

At 8 pm, the eighth round of the Soaring Swords competition followed closely after the previous session, and the opposition standing before Zhang Yang's party was the second party of The Dominators!

When the enemies come face to face, heads will fly! Zhang Yang and his party ruthlessly hacked away, proceeding to the next round with ease.

There were only two rounds of matches on the third day. Only 1024 parties of White Jade Castle were able to stay in the competition so far, with 61 parties of Lone Desert Smoke remaining, far exceeding the 33 parties of Crimson Rage and the 24 parties of Imperial Sky.

As for The Dominators who fell under the category of larger guilds, only 12 parties remained in the competition thanks to the recent event of members withdrawing from their guild. Their results just barely did them justice as a major guild.

After the forth day of the competition, the 1,024 parties were reduced to only 256 parties, where the chaff had been separated from the wheat, with more parties being similar in strength as well.

As the fifth day of the competition marked it's beginning, the number of matches that a party needed to take part in had been reduced down to one match only, they only needed to secure one victory to make it to the next round.

128 parties, 64 parties, 32 parties...

The remaining number of the parties were getting smaller and smaller every time, and by the end of the ninth day of the competition, White Jade Castle only had 8 parties remaining in the list of the competition. To make sure that the competition was fair to all, all parties were called upon

to draw straws in order to determine their turns for the competition tomorrow night.

The names and who they are going up against among the eight parties were as follow ---

Lone Desert Smoke Second Party VS Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party.

Crimson Rage First Party VS Lost Paradise First Party

Imperial Sky First Party VS Bloodbath Alliance First Party.

Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS The Dominators First Party

"Haha, you are just so unlucky, you're actually matched up against us!" Humbly Gentleman stepped up to Zhang Yang with an arrogant look that looked like he claimed the sky above him, "What an unfortunate turn of events, if you could just push into another round... Tsk tsk tsk!"

"You ugly piece of octo-pussy! You're the ones going down!" Wei Yan Er jumped into the scene and waved her small fists furiously, "Tomorrow shall be the day you meet your demise! Sun of the beach, tremble now, noobcakes!"

Zhang Yang couldn't hold it anymore and he started laughing out loud, then he said, "Little girl, where did you learn this from?"

Wei Yan Er raised her head with a smug smile on her face and said, "Was I not cool just now?"

"Cool enough!"

"Humph!" Humbly Gentleman pretended to be the mature one there and lowered his face, covering it with a palm.

Millenial Wanderer, however, smiled and said, "Guildmaster, someone will learn to be a little more obedient after tomorrow's match!"

"Nicely said!" Humbly Gentleman began to smile.

Both sides were already deep-seated enemies against each other, so there was no need to hide their hatred towards each other. The tension was

rising, who knew if they actually started brawling right now!

"Just wait until then!"

After throwing those words out, both sides went away under unhappy circumstances.

On the 10th of December, the final round for the main draw match of the Soaring Swords competition had officially began!

Up to this point, the parties that were able to remain in the competition didn't just get there by dumb luck, therefore, many players had come to spectate the matches! The official management team had arranged it in such a way that, the four matches shall be held separately so that players will be able to catch all four of them!

It was 7 pm, the first match shall be against the 'Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party'.

Lone Desert Smoke Second Party members are: Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Galileo, Fantasy Sweetheart, Lost Dream.

Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party members are: Dominating Blade (Guardian, Level 61), 44 Bandit (Assassin, Level 61), Broken Uranus (Pyromancer, Level 61), Point and Kill (Sniper, Level 61), 7 Feet Boobies (Holy Knight, Level 61).

Five minutes before the match begin, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang entered the audience stands, eager to witness the beginning of that match. Dream Technology had many ways to earn a fortune, they actually set a fare for this final day! To enter, one must hand over 10 gold pieces! Everyone could see the number of audiences in the audience on their window interface. When Zhang Yang and the gang entered, the number shown on the screen was still 5,118, but in just less than one minute, the number had shot up to 10,000, and continued increasing rapidly!

Millions of audience would mean ten times that number of gold pieces earned, it was daylight robbery by the masses!

Zhang Yang felt totally used. The players who were putting up a good

show did not even get a dime, and all the benefits were seized by the game company alone!

"Silly Yu, can Sweetheart and the others win this round?" Han Ying Xue asked.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I have no idea, when we talk about skills in PK, I am afraid that the Sword and Fire Mercenary is slightly better! They take pride as Mercenaries after all, taking on bounties and so on! However, Fatty Han and the party have the advantage in terms of equipment, so it is still very difficult to see the outcome now!"

"I'd say Fatty Han and the gang will definitely win!" Wei Yan Er nodded strongly.

"Watch the match!"

Five minutes had passed, the number of the audiences had reached up to 208,000, and the match had finally began!

The members from both sides were instantly teleported into the arena. The moment the invisible air wall faded, the two parties immediately charged towards each other in different formations.

Both sides were showing off every skill they had, with magic spells soaring over in both directions, and arrows flying. It was just like what Zhang Yang said earlier, the Sword and Fire Mercenary had the advantage in term of skills over the match, but Fatty Han and the party had the advantage in terms of their equipment, the outcome of the match remained unclear for the moment!

Because of this, the match became far more exciting to watch compared to those one-sided matches! They did not just compete in terms their skill and equipment, but also their will!

Two minutes had passed, Fatty Han was the first to die, but 44 Bandit of the Sword and Fire Mercenary was similarly being scratched to death!

Three minutes later, Galileo was surrounded and killed after falling into a trap set up by the opposition, but at the same time, Dominating Blade was slaughtered as well.

3 VS 3, the fire power from both sides had been sharply reduced, the healing effects from both sides undoubtedly became obvious than ever. The two opposition parties went into a stalemate, the circumstances became 'I can't kill you, you can't kill me either'. After shooting at each other fruitlessly for a while, both sides understood that the key to obtaining victory was to kill the opposition's healer! Whoever kills their opponent's healer first, would secure the victory of this match!

Lost Dream was indeed the future king of thieves. With a wave of his hand, he vanished into thin air, entering stealth mode by activating {Vanish}. He crept up to the Holy Knight that was hiding behind his team mates and activated {Blur }. Taking the advantage of the time while the skill of 7 Feet Boobies was cooling down, he held on against all the assaults from Broken Uranus and Point and Kill with his {Blur}, and killed their healer with sheer brawn!

Right before 7 Feet Boobies died, an attempt to kill Fantasy Sweetheart was made as a final struggle, however, the attempt was made futile when Fantasy Dream activated {Blind} to hold the spellcaster for a full eight seconds. Lone Desert Smoke managed to shakily claim victory this time!

First round, Lone Desert Smoke Second Party won by a narrow margin!

Five minutes later, the second round of the match had begun!

At the beginning of the match, Fantasy Sweetheart made a fatal mistake, activating {Holy Shield} a little too late, giving their opponents the opportunity to kill Lost Dream! After losing their super thief, it was a landslide loss.

Another five minutes had passed, and the final round of the match has begun!

Both sides were back into the pace of the first round, and finally, they depended on the outstanding performance of Lost Dream, narrowly achieving the victory in the last round!

Lone Desert Smoke Second Party defeated the Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party with the score of 2:1, being the first to secure one out of the four tickets of White Jade Castle to get into the semifinals of the competition!

The next match was closely followed after the first match, 'Crimson Rage First Party VS Lost Paradise First Party'. Crimson Fire and his party were able to remain in the top eight, partly because they had been rather lucky, for up until this point, they had not engaged with any parties that had been too much for them to handle. However, now that they were up against Crimson Rage, their strength was tested and broken, and they were soundly defeated, losing twice in a row.

In the following match, Imperial Sky also obtained a clean win against the Bloodbath Alliance, acquiring the third ticket to proceed into the Shang Hai Finals.

Lastly, it was the most anticipated match between Lone Desert Smoke First Party and The Dominators First Party!

Both parties were teleported into the arena, separated by the invisible air walls, observing their own opponents and their formations.

The Five members of The Dominators: Humbly Gentleman (Cryomancer, Level 60), Millenial Wanderer (Cryomancer, Level 60), Traveling Piglet (Guardian, Level 60), Top Class Bad Guy (Assassin, Level 60), I'm No Healer (Holy Knight, Level 60).

The Five members of Lone Desert Wolf: Zhang Yang (Level 65), Sun Xin Yu (Level 63), Han Ying Xue (Level 62), Wei Yan Er (Level 62), Daffodil Daydream (Level 62). As Sun Xin Yu had the [Heaven's Pearl], providing a huge 50% experience point boost, she was slightly ahead of the others.

Zhang Yang and his party had the superior equipment and levels. However, The Dominators were pumped with endless confidence over the recruitment of Millenial Wanderer, as they deeply believed that they could rely on Millenial Wanderer to secure their victory over Zhang Yang and his party.

"How do we do this?" although Wei Yan Er looked down on her opponents, but she acknowledged the fact that they were still a major guild, never foolish enough to underestimate their abilities.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "Icy will go get their thief, if he doesn't reveal himself, that's fine, if he ever reveals himself, wipe his

face on the dirt! We shall aim for their spellcasters. Whoever charges forward, we shall focus our assault on him and quickly force them to use their {Ice Frame}. They're as good as dead after that!"

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS The Dominators First Party, the match will begin in 10 seconds!'

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

The air wall had faded!

As the tip of an arrow, Zhang Yang led the party and charged forward, while the opposition did the same, with Traveling Piglet leading the front to absorb any damage going their way. Others were following about seven or eight meters behind him.

30 meters, 20 meters, the distance between the two parties was getting shorter by the moment, 11 meters left!

Zhang Yang stopped abruptly, allowing Whitey to pass him and take the front!

10 meters, the maximum range of {Charge}!

Traveling Piglet hesitated for a moment, should he use his {Charge} on that big white bear? {Charge}, could stun an opponent for a moment, it was extremely handy, and to waste it on a [Pet]...

Just as he was hesitating, Whitey had already charged over with a {Wild Charge}, sending Traveling Piglet into one second of stun. Zhang Yang did not use {Charge} on him but instead, dashed over towards Millennial Wanderer. Whitey turned from Traveling Piglet and instead charged at Humbly Gentleman.

Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream ran past the swaying Traveling Piglet and started assaulting Millennial Wanderer!

Guardians had high damage immunity and high health point value. If the party focused fire on him, he could have easily make it through by just activating a {Shield Wall}! Also, they were not as dangerous offensively, so trying to kill them first was folly!

However, one must not leave a guardian unattended, because this profession was not only hard to kill, but also had party-saving skills such as {Sacrifice} and {Vanguard's Aggression}. The area attack skills such as {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike} also had crowd control effects, along with {Destructive Smash} which nullified healing! Therefore, guardians played a major role in party battles, especially in the League Championship that was to come in the future!

The opposition ignored Zhang Yang as well, as Millenial Wanderer locked his target on Wei Yan Er and began to cast his {Frost Dragon}!

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang charged at Millenial Wanderer, while activating his {Blood Rage}. However, before Zhang Yang even reached Millenial Wanderer, he had already activated his {Flash Out}, moving 10 meters forward, and resumed casting his {Frost Dragon}!

Millenial Wanderer was indeed outstanding. This {Flash Out} of his had landed him exactly 30 meters from Wei Yan Er, the maximum range of {Frost Dragon}. The {Frost Dragon} would definitely hit Wei Yan Er before she could activate her {Charge}!

{Counter Magic}!

Daffodil Daydream waved her hand and once again interrupted Millenial Wanderer. At the same time, she activated her {Heart of Flame}, emitting out a charge of flame on Millenial Wanderer, inflicting him with a damage value of '-2,612' which appeared right on top of his head! She proceeded to cast a {Explosive Flame}.

Millenial Wanderer had also used the same skill -- {Counter Magic}, interrupting the casting of Daffodil Daydream. After being countered, all his spells related to frost and ice would be forced into a cool down of 3 seconds, so he could only dodge and roll to avoid Zhang Yang.

Traveling Piglet had recovered from stun at that time, and came at Wei Yan Er with a {Charge}, knocking the little girl into stunned state. He followed up with a stomp on the ground -- {Thunder Strike}, further hindering the little girl with a speed reduction effect.

Three seconds later, Millenial Wanderer's ice spells were available again, so with an instant {Ice Ring}, he froze Zhang Yang who tried to pursue him. Then, he went back to casting his {Frost Dragon} at Wei Yan Er!

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang shook the frozen state off himself and continued pursuing Millenial Wanderer.

Switch!

'-5,820!' {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

'-180!' Regular attack.

The two attacks that Zhang Yang had dealt landed on Traveling Piglet instead! This was because Traveling Piglet had used {Sacrifice} at the right moment on Millenial Wanderer, taking all damage on his behalf instead!

"Focus fire on the hypocrite!" Zhang Yang immediately said.

'-5,412!'

Humbly Gentleman had been preoccupied with Whitey, he could have finish casting the {Frost Dragon} in 2 seconds, but instead, he took 3 seconds to do it, and finally, he managed to land a heavy attack on Wei Yan Er.

Millenial Wanderer was also trying to recast his {Frost Dragon} on Wei Yan Er, while Traveling Piglet stood in her face, continuously hacking away!

Zhang Yang activated the same skill {Sacrifice} on Wei Yan Er and began to charge towards Humbly Gentleman.

The Dominators instantly switched their fire power towards Daffodil Daydream, setting her as their primary target.

'-1,832!'

Zhang Yang swung his axe at Humbly Gentleman, hurting him!

Shoof, Wei Yan Er had finally managed to use {Charge}, waving her big-ass axe at Humbly Gentleman.

{Flash Out}!

Humbly Gentleman instantly reacted, befitting of a professional player, and the axe hit nothing but air!

Zhang Yang kept the pressure on, chasing after Humbly Gentleman, activating his {Blast Wave} when within range, causing '-830' damage while at the same time, stunning him for 4 seconds!

At the same moment, Traveling Piglet waved his hand and instantly activated {Vanguard's Aggression} onto Humbly Gentleman, covering him up with it!

This party of The Dominators was obviously well-trained with their cooperation tactics. With the {Vanguard's Aggression} thrown out, other members of the opposition party ran into the area of the Vanguard, and they began to throw their attacks onto Daffodil Daydream

Sun Xin Yu and Top Class Bad Guy were still sneaking around, playing hide and seek!

"Switch fire on to Traveling Piglet!" Zhang Yang told the party while he activated his very own {Vanguard's Aggression}. The two parties were in such close proximity now that the two {Vanguard's Aggression} were more or less stacked on top of each other.

Both parties were forced to focus fire on the Guardians now instead.

Chapter 267: Progressing into Shanghai

Upon activating {Vanguard's Aggression}, the tankers started to receive double damage. Thus, under the concentrated fire of the enemy, both Zhang Yang and Traveling Piglet activated their own {Shield Walls} concurrently, and they began slashing at each other like crazy.

At this moment, the difference between the strength of the tankers were their equipment. Even the with their {Shield Walls} activated, the health points of Traveling Piglet were falling much quicker than Zhang Yang's.

Afterall, Lone Desert Smoke had the upper hand in both defense and offense. Even the [Gold-Eared Bear King] alone could have made things difficult for The Dominators!

After 3 seconds, Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} had finally cooled down. Immediately, he threw another {Destructive Smash} onto Traveling Piglet, reducing 75% of the healing effects on him. He had basically taken the healer out of the battle!

Traveling Piglet was only equipped with Gray-Sliver equipment, and had total health points of not more than 14,000. How would he be able to sustain the powerful damage output of the trio, Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream? He had held his own well enough before {Destructive Smash} took away his healing support. Before the duration of his {Shield Wall} even ended, he was already dead!

{Vanguard's Aggression} vanished along with his death.

Not giving any chance to those opponents within the barrier to respond, Zhang Yang unleashed his {Blast Wave}, knocking the three opponents closest to him into stunned states.

Focus fire on Millenial Wanderer!

Pak!

Millenial Wanderer was fast, immediately he had created an {Ice Barrier} and entered an invincible state, stationary state.

Switching fire power onto Humbly Gentleman!

Pak!

Humbly Gentleman panicked and immediately entered his {Ice Barrier}.

Switching fire towards I'm Not Healer!

I Am No Healer quickly activated his {Sacred Protection}, entering an invincible state of 5 seconds. At the same time, he was healing up the health points of all three members of his own party, including his own.

Within just a few seconds, the three members of The Dominators were forced into activating their life-saving skills.

It was only a stop-gap measure, things were not looking good for them, Millenial Wanderer quickly snapped into the party chat. "Bad Guy, stop playing hide and seek with that thief and start attacking Daffodil Daydream. We will remove our Ice Frame immediately. My {Ice Ring} is still under cool down, so the Guildmaster will freeze them first, then we can finish her off. When their spellcaster dies, the remaining battles will all be melee, we can slowly kite them until they die!"

"F*ck you, *sshole! Call me 'Top Class', not 'Bad Guy'!" Top Class Bad Guy retorted.

"Okay, okay, okay! 'Top Class', go ahead and use your {Ambush} on Daffodil Daydream, now!" Millenial Wanderer was getting impatient.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

Pak!

Top Class Bad Guy burst into the visible spectrum, but it was not because he was about to use {Ambush} on Daffodil Daydream, but it was because he had been busted out by Sun Xin Yu! His body swayed with stars over his head, and the ice queen got to work with her daggers!

However, I Am No Healer only cared for himself and took no action, as his {Sacred Protection} could only last for 5 seconds. The moment it passed however, he was once again attacked by Zhan Yang and the party. He started healing himself, but was quickly interrupted as Zhang Yang used {Crash Magic} on him! He could not use his skills for another three

seconds!

"Let's go!", Millenial Wandered grit his teeth, they would not stand a chance against them in a drawn-out battle of attrition!

Millenial Wanderer and Humbly Gentleman removed their {Ice Barriers} at the same time. Humbly Gentleman immediately used his {Ice Ring} to freeze Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Whitey so that I'm Not Healer would have an opportunity to escape for the moment!

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang stomped on the ground once, immediately reducing the movement speed of I am No Healer for 5 seconds, slowing down the slinky shadow who was trying to escape. It delayed him for an extra second, which was enough.

‘-2,102!’

Zhang Yang stuck his back, bringing his hitpoints below 20%. Wei Yan Er whistled and unleashed her assault. Although she had only accumulated 32 points of rage, it was enough to do it!

‘-5280!’

I Am No Healer immediately collapsed!

{Dispel}!

Han Ying Xue freed Wei Yan Er from the {Ice Ring} first. A second after, the skill had cooled down, so she freed Zhang Yang from the {Ice Ring} as well.

"Argh!" Top Class Bad Guy let out a miserable cry as he fell to the knifework of Sun Xin Yu!

Three out of five of the Dominators had been eliminated, leaving only two of them behind, struggling for their lives.

Zhang Yang pursued Humbly Gentleman. As the hypocrite knew that he could not beat Zhang Yang, he snarled and began to cast his spell in anger, hoping to cause some damage before he went down. Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he hacked away. Humbly Gentleman went down like a

rotten tree under the repeated hews of a woodcutter's axe!

Zhang Yang placed a foot on Humbly Gentleman's chest and grinned.
"Hypocrites, you shouldn't have provoked me!"

Humbly Gentleman was filled with hatred. Such humiliation! Although he was thick-faced and all that, but this, this was just too much to bear, for anyone! Who knew how many spectators were watching this match? A prideful man like him getting humiliated in such manner was just too much! This would mentally scar him for life!

It was so frustrating! They had overlooked Lone Desert Smoke's potential when they were much smaller! Now, the roles had been completely switched, Lone Desert Smoke is indisputably the strongest guild in the whole of China while The Dominators have fallen far below grace!

"Humph! You have only won one match, do not think that..."

Shoof, before Humbly Gentleman could even finish his last word, he was axed by Zhang Yang right in the face, forcibly sent out of the arena.

On the other side, despite Millenial Wanderer's skills, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream made quick work of him! Bear in mind that Sun Xin Yu is the future number one thief queen while Daffodil Daydream will be the top 10 spellcaster, ranks that were equal to his! Even though Wei Yan Er did not attain any fame in Zhang Yang's previous life, she was obviously on equal caliber, with her reflexes and abilities!

First round, Lone Desert Smoke First Party obtained victory!

Second round competition would start immediately after 5 minutes.

"Ice queen, forget about the thief. Other than wasting your time, he's basically useless!" Zhang Yang decided to change the tactics for the second round, so he said, "We shall steamroll them this time round!"

"Good, good, good! I like it!" Wei Yan Er raised her hands up with joy..

'Ding!', Lone Desert Smoke Vs The Dominators, the second round of the match will start in 10 seconds!"

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

The invisible air walls faded. Zhang Yang and his other four party members immediately charged towards their opponents.

Coincidentally, their opponents were using the same tactic as well. Top Class Bad Guy remained visible, charging alongside his partymates. Only when he was 30 meters away from Daffodil, did he enter stealth. Zhang Yang instructed Whitey to engage Traveling Piglet while he ran at Millennial Wanderer himself.

Pak!

Zhang Yang was ambushed by their thief, and a circle of spinning stars appeared on his head.

The Best Bad Guy appeared behind Zhang Yang and started working with his blades, but even without the defense value of his shield, the damage was absolutely pathetic!

Has he lost his mind? Because assassins use the fastest weapons, daggers, their low damage was the least effective thing against tanks. 90% of his efforts would be wasted on Zhang Yang's clothing!

After 1 second, Traveling Piglet recovered from his stun. He immediately activated {Vanguard's Aggression} on his own party members..

--- Every time upon entering the arena, all skills will be cooled down. The same goes to the skills when players leave the arena.

The Dominators instantly focused their fire power on Wei Yan Er who responded with {Charge}.

Zhang Yang suddenly understood the tactic that The Dominators were using: The main focus was to control Zhang Yang and stop him from activating his {Vanguard's Aggression}. After that, using the 10 seconds of their own {Vanguard's Aggression}, The Dominators will try to take out one or two of the hardest hitting Lone Desert Smokes!

It was a good idea, if Zhang Yang uses {Warrior's Will} to remove the stun inflicted by {Ambush}, then Top Class Bad Guy shall continue to stun

him with {Kidney Shot}. It would keep him stunned for another 3 to 4 seconds.

That time was enough to kill Wei Yan Er already!

Zhang Yang smiled in his heart. These idiots had paid too much attention to him!

Pak!

Sun Xin Yu had slunk over and activated her {Ambush}, immediate stunning Millenial Wanderer. At the same time, her left hand flicked out, throwing a small cloud of dust that sent Humbly Gentleman into 8 seconds of confusion --- {Blind}.

{Vanguard's Aggression} only reduces 90% of the damages received, it did not grant full immunity. Status Effect Skills would still take full effect. The strategy of the opponent was instantly being pushed off the cliff by Sun Xin Yu with ease.

"Sun of the beach!"

Both Humbly Gentleman and Millenial Wanderer contorted in anger. God damn it, do they waste their {Ice Barriers} to rid off the control skill or not? They would lose the best opportunity to unleash their focus fire onto their target. But if they did... Sh*t, it would be a joke to activate their life-saving skills even under the the protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}!

Dilemma!

Extreme dilemma!

Where did this assassin come from? Such great combat instinct, striking where it hurt the most, it totally disrupted their plan! Sh*t! to think that such a skillful thief existed. Comparatively, Top Class Bad Guy was totally trash!

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds, 4 seconds!

The duration of stun effect caused by {Ambush} had finally passed, there was no other alternative for Top Class Bad Guy, but to continue on with his plan of activating {Kidney Shot}, suppressing Zhang Yang for just a

little longer!

Zhang Yang had not used his {Warrior's Will} yet, as out of three attackers in the opposition, two were manipulated by Sun Xin Yu while the remaining one was giving Zhang Yang a gentle back scratch. Furthermore, they were all under the protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}, there was no rush!

Humbly Gentleman could have used {Flash Out} to remove himself of the stun state, but he will be moved out from the protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}, and he would be killed almost immediately. Millenial Wanderer was still in the confused state. If he forced his way out now and helped Top Class Bad Guy, they would still be outnumbered, three-to-two against the attackers of Lone Desert Smoke!

Like her counterpart, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Ambush}, followed by a {Kidney Shot}, the classic suppressive combo employed by all thieves. She intended to burn away the remaining time of the opposition's {Vanguard's Aggression}.

5 seconds, 6 seconds,... 10 seconds!

The {Vanguard's Aggression} finally vanished. Every player stunned and confused, recovered, just in time to face the music.

{Blast Wave}!

That instant when the {Vanguard's Aggression} vanished, Zhang Yang unleashed an attack to his front, stunning all his opponents except for Top Class Bad Guy!

As the {Vanguard's Aggression} was vanishing, the four members of The Dominators had already started spreading out, but Zhang Yang had cut them off!

In that instant, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er began to unleash hell!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

{Tornado Cleave}!

All four of them were inflicted with two damage values of '-4200' and

‘-6400’ each!

Humbly Gentleman was instant-killed! Millennial Wanderer was instant-killed! Top Class Bad Guy was instant-killed! I’m Not Healer was instant-killed!

The only survivor in the arena was Traveling Piglet. The joint attack by Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er was so sudden that the opponents were unable to activate any life-saving skills to defend themselves!

Traveling Piglet let his arms fall to his sides, accepting his fate. He too, fell soon after.

Lone Desert Smoke First Party had defeated The Dominators with the score of 2:0, progressing into Shang Hai’s top 32 Finals, with their heads raised high!

Chapter 268: Rescue Our Men!

After the 10 preliminary rounds, the name list of four battle teams was displayed in White Jade Castle. Lone Desert Smoke took up two slots out of the four finalists. Their excellent performance had caused a heated discussion in the forums. The superguilds in the other cities also performed as expected. The result was pretty predictable. Big names appeared up there, as expected. None of them emulated Lone Desert Smoke's achievement, however, to take up two slots like that.

The atmosphere in Lone Desert Smoke was jubilant! Even though only 10 of them made it, the glory and pride was still shared among all the members in the guild! Two days after the local competition ended, Zhang Yang had received a call from the Soaring Swords program committee. He was told to be at the Empark Grand Hotel in Shanghai by 20th and register there. All transportation and accommodation fees will be covered by the program committee. If the selected participant is willing, they could even choose to head over there right now. The program committee was rather generous at this. They did not mind you freeloading there, as long as the participant was present on the date of the launch.

It was all due on the 20th of December, where the committee will start the launching ceremony in Empark Grand Hotel. All 32-party leaders would have to be present on the launch date to draw for their matches.

Just as Zhang Yang logged into the game, the little brat's voice came bombarding his ears. "Hey hey hey hey hey hey! Noob tank! Q-Q-Q-Quickly pack up your stuff! We're heading down to Shanghai this evening!"

"...Is it because it's all paid for?"

"Exactly!"

Zhang Yang sighed. However, as long as he had the gaming helmet with him, he could play anytime, anywhere. It made no difference to him if he did it in his room, or in the hotel. "Ok. Go inform Daffodil, Hundred Shots and the others! We'll gather there!"

The little brat hung up without another word. After informing everyone, they all agreed to stay in Shanghai for a few days.

However, since some of them were staying much further away, they had to book flight tickets to get to Shanghai! For Zhang Yang and his merry friends, the distance between Zhou Su City and Shanghai was only 80 kilometers apart! They would only need half an hour to reach there via the freeway.

Out of the 10 people, Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Wei Yang Er, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu lived in Zhou Su City. Besides Sun Xin Yu, who had to work and could only take a leave on the 20th, the rest of them gathered at the freeway toll gate. Fatty Han drove Zhang Yang while Han Ying Xue drove Wei Yan Er, and the four people in two sports cars sped off to Shanghai.

"Dude, I really think that you should get a car already!" said Fatty Han out of the blue.

Zhang Yang chuckled. "If I owned a car, you can drive mine and yours separately and show off. Isn't that right?"

"Hah! You know me best, Little Yang!" Fatty Han laughed heavily.

Luckily, Fatty Han drove ahead, guiding Han Ying Xue who was basically a broken compass. After half an hour, both of them entered Shanghai and with the G.P.S guidance, they had safely arrived at the Empark Grand Hotel. After parking their car in, Zhang Yang made a call. A committee member came out of the hotel and helped them to register. The four of them got into two separate rooms. They didn't exactly get first class suites, but at 888 a night, it was rather luxurious.

After settling in for a while, Wei Yan Er came knocking on the guys' room. Zhang Yang got up and let her in. However, the young, petite little girl stood at the door entrance, stroking her flat tummy, she said, "Noob tank! Pervy bro, let's go eat!"

Zhang Yang frowned immediately. "I don't supposed you guys were starving yourself just to have a fancy meal here?"

"Nyehehehe!" The girl snickered happily. "Not to the point of starving. We did have a little snack!"

"Hoho! Oh my little Yan Er, you look lavishing! Astounding!" Fatty Han grinned and stared at the little flowery and cheerful girl.

"Hey! Pervy bro! Keep your eyes off Wei Er, you pervert!" Han Ying Xue appeared right beside her and scolded Fatty Han.

Fatty Han froze when he saw Han Ying Xue for the first time. Like being kicked in the buttock by a horse, Fatty Han rose to his feet and pointed his trembling fingers at Han Ying Xue in disbelief. "Y-Y-You are Little Snow!?"

Zhang Yang could not help but laughed at his over-exaggerated reaction. This devilish Snow had purposely tweaked her settings to look as plain as possible in the game. No one could possibly compare her real look and in-game look! Since Han Ying Xue was wearing sunglasses and wrapped in a scarf ever since they got out of the car, Fatty Han had now only just witnessed her true appearance.

Fatty Han turned over to Zhang Yang, almost in tears. "Little Yang...Is she really Little Snow? The Little Snow in our guild?"

Zhang Yang nodded happily and said, "The one and only."

"Sii!" Fatty Han sucked a long breath through his teeth. He cried pitifully, "Argh! I'm so freaking jealous! Little Yang! D*mn son! How could I, a modal citizen, a handsome man, a man of talent never ever have encountered someone as beautiful as her!"

"Enough, enough! Let's go eat!"

Knowing that they wouldn't have to pay anything, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were rather barbaric. You can just ignore the fact they are both women, they had monstrous appetites! Zhang Yang felt truly suspicious. Did these sisters starve themselves since yesterday when they knew that they were about to get free food, and let themselves go all out today?

The hotel system used a tab system. The bill would be accumulated until the customer checks out. Of course, they need not worry since the person who will pay for their meal would be the committee of the program.

Having stuffed themselves with luxurious food, the four of them went back to their rooms and logged into the game.

Zhang Yang departed from Thunderstorm Castle after stocking up on necessary supplies, and headed to Kalojar Highlands. He had been chasing after all quests in the maps around the area, and had been searching for more quests in further places.

The experience points gained by questing was almost as good as grinding itself. After all, most of the time questing was spent in traveling here and there. Since killing monsters all day was rather dull and boring, it was better to do some quest since, sometimes, they will get good rewards! Especially if the quest was a hidden quest that triggered the main story quest! The rewards of those quests were several times more lucrative than fighting monsters all day long!

Zhang Yang was just a normal human being, ignoring the fact that he was reincarnated, he had a regular human's memory. He could not remember all the hidden quests and main story quests. Sometimes, those memories were all jumbled up that he would only recall them once he actually encounters a certain place or NPC.

After spending some time climbing mountains and crossing rivers, Zhang Yang arrived at a small village. Where there is a village, there must be villagers! When there were villagers, there could be quests!

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and moved inside. There were just a few houses in this village. A few lonely women were seen bustling in and out of the house while children were playing merrily in the streets. As Zhang Yang approached closer, the children started to surround him and looked at the bear with admiration and curiosity.

This time, the women noticed Zhang Yang presence and screamed loudly at the children to get away from Zhang Yang. One by one, the women wielded broomsticks and approached Zhang Yang as if he was an enemy.

[Villager of White Lambs Village] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Judge not by the weapons that these women wielded, they were all elite tier! If Zhang Yang were to face one or two villagers, he would not mind forcing his way in. However, when there were more than 10 of them grouped together, it would be like poking your hands into a swarm of wasps!

Hurriedly, Zhang Yang spoke. "I am an adventurer from White Jade Castle! I am just passing through! I mean you no harm!"

Zhang Yang pointed at his badge in his chest. After Level 10, players could select which city to be based in. The badge would then indicate their city.

"Y-You...you're not a bandit?" One of the elder woman cried.

"No!" Zhang Yang shook his head. "Where are all the men in the village? Why are there only women around here?"

"Thank the gods!" All the NPCs sighed a breath of relief. After they lowered their guard down, the same elderly woman spoke. "Two months ago, our men started to go missing! Three days ago, the last man in the village had went out hunting and never came back! Adventurer! I'm telling you! It must be the work of those bloody mountain bandits! Please help us! Vanquish those evil bandits and rescue our men!"

'Ding! Villagers of White Lamb Village have a quest for you: Rescue Our Men! Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Rest assure, I will try my very best!"

"Adventurer! Please exercise caution! Oh right! We have right here, homemade Hawthorn Biscuits! Please take them and help yourselves whenever you're hungry!" said the older woman as she hand over a bag.

[Hawthorn Biscuits] (Useable)

Use: Restores 10% HP and MP every second, for 10 seconds. Can only be used in non-combat status. Unable to execute any other actions during

consumption, or the recovery process will be interrupted.

Duration: 36 hours.

Level Requirement: 60

The bag was filled with three stacks, or 600 counts of Hawthorn Biscuits. Enough for Zhang Yang to last for a very very long time!

This recovery snack which healed based on percentages were extremely efficient for players with high HP and MP! It was a pity that the snack would expire in 36 hours, or else he could use this all the way to level 300, where its effects would only be more potent!

Zhang Yang left the village and headed to the west.

[Rescue Our Men] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Our men have been kidnapped by bandits! Please rescue them! According to the villagers of White Lamb Village, the men were taken away by the bandits from Evil Wolves Fortress! The fortress should be located at the west, in the Mountains of Evil Wolves! Warrior! You must make haste! You not only rescuing the men of White Lamb Village, you're also rescuing countless roosters!

Progress: Find the clue about the missing men from the village 0/1

Luckily, the little brat was not following him. Zhang Yang laughed a little. This little brat would have relentlessly asked him about what rescuing men had got to do with roosters!

The Evil Wolves Mountains was not far away from White Lamb Village. Zhang Yang only took about 20 minutes before reaching his destination with the bear. Even though the name of the place bore the word: mountain, in actuality, the place was just a slightly steep hill. From afar, Zhang Yang could easily spot a fortress built on the side of the hill. The surrounding was protected by some large, round pillars of wood, forming a barrier around the fortress. The entrance was two large wooden doors.

Without delaying any further, Zhang Yang took out his axe and shield and prepared for a huge battle. When he rode close to the fortress, he

found the doors wide open with no one around it. He went inside to search, expecting an ambush, but no one was present. The entire fortress was as silent as a graveyard.

He rode around the entire fortress and could not find any living being! There was only one thing present, an ominous aura. A cold wind blew by and sent shivers up Zhang Yang's spine.

Chapter 269: Eliminate the Spider Queen

'Ding! You have search the Evil Wolves Fortress and found no traces of men from White Lamb Village. Perhaps you should return to the village and inform the villagers. Perhaps they have some insight on the manner.'

After the system notification rung in his ears, Zhang Yang turned back and hurried his way back to the village. The place was hauntingly eerie; Just by standing in there could give anyone nightmares!

After another 20 minutes, Zhang Yang returned back to White Lamb Village. The rest of the villagers had already dispersed and went back to do whatever they were doing. The only NPC left standing at the entrance was the same old woman.

"Adventurer? Why did you come back?" said the woman looking unhappy. She had a face that practically said, "You've eaten and taken everything, yet you have nothing to show for it!".

Zhang Yang explained, "I have searched the Evil Wolves Fortress and have not found anyone from the village! Moreover, the entire fortress was completely empty! Not even a single bandit was found!"

"What?!" The old woman was in shock. After a few moments of silence, she said, "I think you should head over to the White Fox Mountains and search there! Alaska, the man who went missing three days ago, went there to hunt and did not come back. I think you can find something there! Ah! White Fox Mountains is located in the south. Alaska had always hunted for food in the forest, north of the mountain."

Zhang Yang nodded and rode towards the south and arrived in no time. White Fox Mountain was so much larger than Evil Wolves Mountain. The silhouette of the mountain looked like a fox lying down on its belly. Since the entire mountain was literally covered in white Camellia flowers, the entire mountain looked like white fox from afar. That was probably why the mountain was named that way.

Zhang Yang made his way towards the north of the White Fox Mountain and went through the forest. There, he found trails of a man's steps which

was probably belonged to Alaska. After venturing through the thick forest, he found himself arriving at an large open area within the forest. There was a huge clear lake and in the middle of the lake was a small island measuring around 60 to 70 square feet. There were only small plants growing on the small island, and in the center, sat a young man who looked like he was in his twenties, with a petrified face.

Zhang Yang looked around and found the reason why the man was so afraid. Surrounding the entire lake, were red and black striped spiders as large as cows; enough to scare a weak-minded man!

In reality, spiders can float on water. But since this was a game, and the spiders were so large in size, that they probably couldn't walk across water!

Zhang Yang observed the man's name tag and found the missing target, Alaska.

[Alaska] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 321 / 6,500

Defense: 60

Zhang Yang patted the bear, and it growled fiercely in respond. Both of them charged bravely into the crowd of monsters.

The spiders were just normal tier monsters. Zhang Yang was not afraid even if though he was greatly outnumbered.

[Flowery Striped Spider] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

The white bear quickly made its way into the aggro range of the spiders. Almost instantly, three spider had quickly caught on. Zhang Yang did not immediately start fighting, instead, he began to run around and manage to

kited around 30 spiders. He continued on and only got down from the bear and started attacking after luring the monsters away so far from their spots that he risked them resetting.

[charge]!

[horizontal sweep]!

[thunder strike]!

[blast wave]!

After four chained skills were unleashed, the spiders at the frontmost had only 1,000 HP left. Zhang Yang rode back up the bear and kited more monsters around the lake. After he had collected a trail of more than 30 monsters again, he used [horizontal sweep] to bring more than 4,000 damage to all the spiders around. The first few spiders immediately flipped over and perish, while the second wave of spiders from behind caught up to the front and received heavy damage.

Zhang Yang continued around like this for quite a while and had cleared up all the remaining spiders. It was a pity that the AoE of [horizontal sweep] was only two meters around him. He could only damage around 10 monsters at a time, unlike Spellcaster or Hunter class skills that could easily cover a super-large area! That being said, Zhang Yang only took over two minutes to kill more than a hundred spiders, cleaning the place up.

"You're so strong! Hero!" Alaska swam from the island towards the mainland gave a thumbs up at Zhang Yang, with a face of admiration. "I don't think even the mightiest warrior in our village, Bagon would be a match to you! You know, I was once an adventurer like you, until I took an arrow to the knee!"

Zhang Yang smiled weakly and said, "Are you from White Lamb Village?"

"That's right! I'm Alaska! Thanks to those d*mned spiders, I was stuck there for 3 days and 3 nights! I would be dead if there was no water around! Hero! Do you have anything to eat? Could you spare me a some? I

will never forget your deed!’

The face Alaska was wearing now, the expression that expressed immense gratitude, was exactly like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er’s faces when looking at the free meal menu!

Zhang Yang took the [Hawthorn Biscuits] from his inventory and gave them to him. "My name is Zhan Yu. I am an adventurer from White Jade Castle! Not long ago, I had passed through your village and had heard from the villagers there that all the men had gone missing mysteriously!"

"Oh! Thank the gods! These are my favorite Hawthorn Biscuits!" Alaska gobbled the food in front him. After healing himself back to full health, he patted his tummy and said, "My guess? All the men from the village have been eaten by the spiders! Hero! You don’t know it, but back then, the spiders were just one finger length away from my butt! I was almost eaten myself! By the gods! I was so frightened! If those nasty spiders had taken a bite off my butt, I would be d*mned! I’m sure that Marianne would not want me anymore..."

This NPC was a talkative person. Like a thousand ducks quaking away noisily beside him, truly a source of headache.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Our Men! Obtained 2,000,000 Experience Points!’

The quest ended just like that?

"Hero! Could you escort me back to the village? I’m worried that the spiders might chase after us and eat me! I will pay you luxuriously! I can’t die now! I’m marrying Marianne next month! She is carrying my child in her womb! You must help me!" Luckily, Alaska started to talk again.

‘Ding! Alaska has a quest for you: Escort Me Back to White Lamb Village! Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Fine! I’ll take you back home! But! You must keep your mouth shut! Or else, you won’t have to worry about the spiders, I’ll hack you to death myself!"

Alaska nodded obediently and added one extra line, "but what if I am

attacked by a monster? What should I do then?"

"..."

[Escort Me Back To White Lamb Village] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: You're hired to escort Alaska back to White Lamb Village! Note: You have an agreement with Alaska. In case where Alaska is hurt in the journey, you will not receive a single copper coin and will have to compensate Alaska by on the damage he received. Please refer to [Alaska Contract Agreement].

Progress: Arrived to White Lamb Village with Alaska 0/1

Zhang Yang open his inventory window and saw a book in it. He took it out and read the contract. In the book, it was stated explicitly how much gold coins Zhang Yang should pay depending on the type and amount of damage Alaska received. For example, a broken finger would require 20,000 gold coins for compensation.

This had to be a prank!

Zhang Yang rode the bear and yelled crossly. "Let's go!"

As they made their way back to White Lamb Village, Alaska's silence was only momentary, in just a few steps, he had started to "quack" endlessly. He had started to tell stories of him wetting his bed since he was three, to the point of the kind of nightmares he had! Zhang Yang was so annoyed that he almost lifted his axe to hack the man's mouth off!

Luckily, there were very few monsters on the way. The only annoying part of the journey was the distance, and the fact that Alaska was always asking for a rest after a few moments. They had spent more than one hour just to return to the village.

"Oh! Marianne! That's my Marianne right there!" As they entered the village, Alaska cried out and pointed to a young woman. He then jumped to his feet and ran over to her.

"Alaska! My husband!" The NPC woman rushed to Alaska and embrace together as both of them cried tears of relief.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Escort Me Back to White Lamb Village! Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!’

"Adventurer! You have rescued Alaska!" The previous NPC that had issued the quest for Zhang yang had appeared out of nowhere. "According to the boastful, good-for-nothing Alaska, he was almost eaten by spiders! Is that true?"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Yes. When I found him, he was trapped in an island surrounded by a large group of spiders!"

"Looks like my previous assumption was right! It wasn't the bandits who kidnapped our men, it was the bloody spiders that had eaten them!" The older woman NPC bellowed furiously. "Adventurer! You need to help us exterminate the spiders! You must not allow them to hurt others!"

‘Ding! Villager of White Lamb Village has a quest for you: Exterminate the Spider Queen. Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and the old woman said, "I remember something. To the south, there is the Spider's Valley. I heard that there was an extremely strong spider monster. Rumor has it that it was the God of Spider's daughter! Due to her violent outbreaks, she was banished by the God of Spider out of the Kingdom of Spiders. Eventually, a powerful magician had sealed this monster away. Perhaps, the seal was broken and the monster now runs free, wrecking havoc to all living beings! Adventurer! You must go there and see!"

[Exterminate the Spider Queen] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Kill Catalina, the spider leader in the Valley of Spiders and earn justice for all! Valley of Spider is located to the south of White Lamb Village.

Progress: Kill Catalina: 0/1

Zhang Yang left the village and rode the bear down towards the south. He had spent more than one hour to search for the Valley of Spiders. Similar to White Fox Mountain, this clump of hills brought out the shape of a spider through the deep parts of the valley and the blackened sky

around it, making it look as if a large spider was crawling out of the mountain.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear hard and charged into the valley. Along the way, he kited many spider monsters that chased after them with their eight freaky legs.

The valley was large beyond explanation. It was so large that it could even fit a huge palace somewhere in the valley! The construction of the palace was very odd. It did not resemble the architecture of any man or elf, dwarf, or beastman; the palace was literally filled with many statues of spiders. The palace only had one floor, but the floor was so huge that it stood as tall as a hundred meters and more, displaying power and dignity!

Just as Zhang Yang was surveying the palace, the spiders that were chasing after Zhang Yang had caught up. Zhang Yang hurriedly turned around and jumped down from the bear to begin his massacre. [thunder strike] cannot be used while the user is on a mount. The skill was different from normal single attack skills, since it was an AoE type that can only be cast by blasting waves of lightning on the ground.

Once Zhang Yang had cleared all the spiders around him, he went up to the palace entrance.

Four elite tiered spiders were guarding the entrance with heads as big as vans! Their bright, threatening red and black stripe made them look extremely dangerous, implying some deadly venom at play.

[Flower Striped Venomous Spider] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 67

HP: 134,000

Defense: 700

Zhang Yang controlled the bear and charged into them. The spiders noticed Zhang Yang approaching and quickly surrounded him to attack.

Ding! Ding! Tang!

The spear-like legs of the spiders struck Zhang Yang's metal armor.

‘Ding! You have received the effect [spider’s venom] (1 Stack). Received 500 natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

‘Ding! You have received the effect [spider’s venom] (2 Stack). Received 1,000 natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

The monster’s normal attack were rather average, around 3,000 damage or so. Their attacks were reduce greatly and only damaged Zhang Yang at 1,400 after being deducted. However, their normal attacks had a chance of inflicting the poison DoT effect on him. If the stacks were low, it would not matter for Zhang Yang. But, the poison could be stacked on endlessly; and when the stack count reaches above 10, Zhang Yang would never endure it even with [shared life] was active!

The only way to survive this was by speed-killing!

It was fortunate that these spiders had only 130,000HP, Zhang Yang only needed 30 seconds or so to kill them. After he had taken care of two spiders, Zhang Yang had already racked up 16 layers of [spider’s venom] , taking 5,406 HP every three seconds. Unable to take it anymore, Zhang Yang quickly activate [warrior’s wil] and remove all the negative debuffs on him. He quickly ended the battle soon after.

Instead of the regular snacks, Zhang Yang sat down and ate the [Hawthorn Biscuit] and waited until the DoT effects on him wore off before moving on.

The monsters in the palace was spread all over the grounds. Sometimes, he had to deal with two more, some time he could deal with one less, either way, Zhang Yang had only stacked up seven [spider’s venom] before killing the group of spiders without activating [warrior’s wil] .

The palace had five stages, and after three hours, he came to the end of the first stage. He was shocked to find this Spider Palace was just the same as a regular dungeon, with mini bosses and all!

After proceeding through two floors of the palace, he encountered some huge-*ss spiders! Those eight legs were at least 10 meters in length and were as long and sharp as spears. On the legs of the spiders were hairy thorns that gleamed with a dark blue light, and looked as sharp as

daggers!

That being said, the weirdest, out-of-this-world, WTF fact was that the spider had a face, of a human male!

[Marzarrock] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 67

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Catalina fourth child. Naturally violent. Favors fresh blood!

Chapter 270: Liu Wei

Zhang Yang gave the boss a single attempt. Since he could not ride the battle mount in an indoor environment, the maximum healing amount of [berserker's heal] was only at 30,000 HP at most. Moreover, Marzarrock's [spider's venom] was too strong for Zhang Yang, or practically anyone else! One stack could deal close to 2,000 damage every 3 seconds, no one, not even Zhang Yang could handle it when the stack count got higher than three or four!

The boss's physical attacks were nothing to be afraid of, however, Zhang Yang had no way of continuing the fight without a Priest or a Sacred Knight supporting him with [dispel].

Just as he was about to contact Han Ying Xue to join his party, he felt a sudden nudge on his physical body's shoulder and Fatty Han's voice muffled in his ear. "Ooi! Hello! Time for dinner yo!"

Zhang Yang found himself a safe spot and logged out. He tossed the gaming helmet aside and got ready for dinner. Just as he was combing his hair, he realized something and asked Fatty Han. "Why didn't you bring Yun Yun along with you?"

"Sigh!" Fatty Han sighed heavily. "We broke up!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. "When did that happen?"

"Just a few days ago!"

"Did she found out about your other girlfriend?"

"No!" Fatty Han raised an eye brow. "In order to have a threesome with Hai Li, I have been trying to "educate" her to have an open mind about it, to look at the world in a new perspective! In fact, just a few days back, she agreed to try to ride the tricycle! She had even insisted on calling someone on her own."

"Isn't that what you always wanted? So, how did you guys break up?"

"Know this, I had never mentioned to Yun Yun anything about Hai Li!" Fatty Han frowned again. "At first, I didn't give a damn who the third

person would be, I've never experienced riding the tricycle with a stranger anyway! In the end, as I was already puffing with steam, I arrived home with Yun Yun, ready to go. She had even mention the surprise guest was already waiting in bed. I was raging hard, rearing to go! I carried Yun Yun into the room and saw the most disgusting thing I had ever seen in my life. A fully naked man in my bed!"

Zhang Yang stopped styling his hair and burst into laughter. He laughed for a good long time, wincing in pain as he grabbed his sides. "Fatty, you dug your own grave this time! Threesome? No one had ever set the rules that it had to be one man and two women!"

"F*ck you! Why are you still laughing! F*ck you man!" Fatty Han grimaced. "D*mn! My *ss almost got stabbed! Now that I think about it, I almost fell ill the next day! Sigh...why did I have to face such a tragic event!"

"Relax bro...you'll heal in no time! Plus, your face is as thick as a city wall! You'll be back on your feet in no time!" said Zhang Yang as he patted Fatty Han's shoulder.

Just as Zhang Yang pulled the door open, Wei Yan Er was standing there with her fist raised, ready to knock on the door. The little girl jumped in delight. "Just in time! This lady was about to pester you two lazy bums!" she said, pointing to her cousin who stood behind her.

Zhang Yang said nothing and rubbed the little girl's head furiously.

The four of them came into the restaurant. As expected of Han Ying Xue the beauty queen, her sensual eyes were capable of sending any men to their feet with just a simple wink. Almost everyone in the hall had their eyes locked on her as she came to her seat. Luckily, the woman was naturally a weak against cold. Even though the hotel was slightly warm, she had covered her voluptuous, bombastic body of a devil with thick clothing. If she had not done so, the entire restaurant would probably be flooded with saliva!

Since they knew that their meals will be paid by the event committee, they had purposely picked and ordered the expensive dishes. If the

committee had not limited the food expense to 2,000 dollars a meal, and participant would have to pay for any excess, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er would have already ordered more than that.

Zhang Yang laughed at their extreme comical behavior and said, "You know what they say, you are what you eat. I don't want you two to end up as sows!"

"Hehe! This girl was born skinny as a stick! I won't get fat no matter how much I eat! How's that? Jealous?" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang.

Tak Tak Tak!

A crisp sound of high heel struck the hard marble floor echoed throughout the room. Those legs that wore the high heels were long and sexy, easily being mistaken for a mannequin's. Higher above those slender legs was a body that could incur sins from a thousand men! As she walked through the restaurant, the slight bumps with each step sent her tiny buttocks shaking from the left to right at a steady rhythm. A tight one-piece dress, colored violet and red adorned her stimulating body. As the dress beneath her waist was rather short, each step she took will reveal a large portion of her fair thighs, almost to the point where her undergarments could be seen! That area where it was almost exposed, just barely, was more than enough to have men locking their focus on that forbidden region.

As for her assets, they were only partially protected by the deep V-cut dress. Almost one third of her massive honkas were exposed. If she would just jump a little more, the peaks of her tatas would definitely pop out! Let's not mention the deep dark abyssal cleavage that could immediately enslave any men to her bidding!

She was wearing a set of modern sunglasses, no one could accurately guess who she was. Though her sharp chin, and jade white complexion would suggest that she belonged to the upper-class of society.

This sinful of a lady had become the center of attention the moment she had set foot into the restaurant. Countless pairs of eyes were focusing like

a DSLR Camera with supreme auto-tracking technology. Their heads turned to follow the woman's movement, all the way till she sat down in front of a table. She then sat in such a sultry manner that when her dress was lifted up, whether it was intentionally or not, she revealed a large portion of her fair *ss. Those guys that had their sight locked on to her lost their minds to the point of one of them actually falling off his chair.

Unlike the other men, Fatty Han was looking, or rather observing the woman with a different type of lens, in a different spectrum and said, "Little Yang, dare to have a bet with me? I'm betting that woman is a total slut!"

"Not interested."

Sitting right opposite of Zhang Yang was another woman with a sinful body that could sent men killing each other just to have a handshake with her. Thus, he had only glanced at the previous woman for a second, before focusing on the dishes laying right in front of him. In fact, he was rather excited snatching food with Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er.

"Ack. Hey! That's mine! So sneaky noob tank! How dare you snatch away my shrimp!" Wei Yan Er was about to pick out a large shrimp when Zhang Yang swiftly snatched it with his chopsticks.

"First come, first serve! The early bird gets the worm! The dinner table is a battle zone where everyone sitting here is the enemy. Do you understand? Or do you want me to demonstrate it again?" Zhang Yang grinned evilly.

"Dude! Little Yang! I'm talking to you! Pay attention!" Fatty Han smack Zhang Yang at his shoulder. "No matter how many times I look at her, she just looks familiar! I can't remember who she is!"

Zhang Yang had food in his mouth and spoke carefully with his mouth full. "Which lady in this world isn't familiar to you?"

"F*ck!"

Coincidentally, the exposed-tits lady removed her glasses, Wei Yan Er finally glanced at her and said "Oh".

"That's just Liu Shi Shi!"

"Oh yeah! You're right! She's Liu Shi Shi!" Fatty Han smack his thigh forcefully. "She's the upcoming new star! She relied on her sexy appearance to be popular! I remember once that I saw her in a TV show, she was just practically swinging them boobs all over! Every time I see her in that TV show, I could not help but to bite on something to resist the lust!"

"Huh. Not bad little brat. I'd never known that you would keep up with famous celebrities!" said Zhang Yang. He turned his head over and had a good look at the woman. Indeed she was beautiful, but not to the point where men will kill each other for one night with her. Still, she was above average. She was just extremely sexy because of the way she dressed and how she dared to expose her tits out in public.

Wei Yan Er pouted and said, "No I don't! Liu Shi Shi had shot for an advertisement with Silky Soft Holdings before. That's why I recognized her. But, she's no good person! When she met my father, those eyes of hers would literally glint with greed! And there's my own good-for-nothing father! He would actually fall for that witch's trap! I was so pissed off back then!"

Han Ying Xue frowned and gently nudge her cousin sister in her cheeks. "Don't be bad mouthing your own parents!"

"Oh." Wei Yan Er calmed down and nodded. From Wei Yan Er's perspective, she treated Han Ying Xue with far more respect than her own father.

"Oh right! How and why did is the little brat staying over at your place?" Zhang Yang asked Han Ying Xue.

"Obviously! It's all my father's fault!" Wei Yan Er interjected. "That pig is always bringing random girls over and let them stay overnight! I could not stand it any longer and ran away to stay with sister!"

Fatty Han reacted weirdly. Instead of anything else, he displayed an admiration expression and whispered to Zhang Yang. "No wonder they say an official would have to sacrifice a wife's happiness in order to gain

ranks. If only I was a billionaire, I would have thousands of girls coming home with me every single day! That's what I would call, living the life!"

"Ack!" Zhang Yang continued to play snatch-the-food with Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er.

"Hey look! There's a guy sitting next to Liu Shi Shi! D*mn! They're kissing! Deep! French! Tongue! Tongue! Out in the open! Isn't that chick a superstar? Wouldn't she be bothered by the paparazzi?" Fatty Han could not find the mood to have his meal, all his attention was placed on the woman and reporting every single movement.

Zhang Yang continued "hunting" for food and did not even lift his head up. "Celebrities are different from each other. Only those really popular ones would be afraid of letting the media know of their private life. Those half-boiled celebrities would, on the other hand, expect some rumors flying around. That way, they could get their names out in the open! In the entertainment industry, without getting their name out in the open, whether on television or any form of media, would slowly drown themselves and will be, simply put, unpopular.

"D*mn that not good piece of shameless bastard!"

Wei Yan Er picked up a piece of char siew and stuff them into her tiny mouth. She frowned while chewing. "I can't let this pass. I would have the company call her up! If she wants to have rumors about her flying around, it's her deal. But she's current the ambassador for our company! If would be a problem if our product goes down with her!"

Han Ying Xue nodded in satisfaction. "My Yan Er is getting more and more mature nowadays!"

In the end, Zhang Yang had had enough of the commotion and turned around to look at the busty chick. At her side was a young man with a rather handsome look on his face. An extreme well-fitted western suit adorned his well-built body. He was wearing a pair gold-frame glasses that brought out his elegance and class. He was nothing like what Fatty Han had just described him to be.

However, the moment Zhang Yang sight was fixed at the man, he froze.

The chopsticks in his hand fell off. A sudden involuntary shiver went through his body, and he clenched his fist.

That man, was none other than his all-time arch nemesis. Liu Wei!

"Hey dummy! What's wrong with you?" said Han Ying Xue when she noticed Zhang Yang acting abnormally.

Zhang Yang immediately took in a deep breath and turned over to face her. "It's nothing!"

"It must be something! I can smell it from a mile away!" It was never easy to trick Han Ying Xue the sly b*tch. Her busy-body face turned to him and said, "Do you actually know that bastard? Ah! Perhaps, you guys had an argument before!"

"Argument or not, it's none of your business!" Zhang Yang bellowed angrily.

"Hey! What's wrong with you, noob tank! When did my cousin sister ever wrong you! Why are you yelling like that?"

"Hey hey hey hey, that bastard has just got up! And he's coming this way!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. According for his past life, Zhang Yang would only encounter Lin Yu one year later, and only because of her, Zhang Yang would encounter Liu Wei! However, as the event was transpiring right now, fate has taken a different path! Perhaps...the only person being reincarnated...was not Zhang Yang alone?

Just as thousands of thoughts was rambling in his brain, Liu Wei had reached their table. He gestured with absolute mannerism and said, "Are you perhaps, Lone Desert Smoke members? Zhan Yu, Slim and Handsome, Little Snow and Drizzler? My name is Liu Wei. I, too am a player of 'God' Miracle'. Pleased to meet your acquaintance. It's an honor to meet the four legends!"

If Zhang Yang had not known about this man's true nature behind that façade, he would have already been tricked by his warm welcome.

In his mind, Zhang Yang thought, "If he had been reincarnated again, I wouldn't be sitting here alive! Ah...I see. The Liu family must have tried to take this chance, to take advantage of the Soaring Swords competition to set his base in 'God' Miracle' and build their own industry within the game! They are the first mega company and pioneers in their field, that's how they were able to gain such lucrative business! Liu Wei must be searching for the first guild to set his foot in the game. Hmph. Now that Lone Desert Smoke has become China's number one guild, he must be thinking of getting his f*cking hands on me!"

Liu Wei came up to Zhang Yang with all his well-trained mannerisms but he was fated to be disappointed. How on earth would Zhang Yang be willing to cooperate with him?

Chapter 271: Hit a Corner

Liu Wei was smiling with such radiance that he was literally glowing with the main character's aura of a movie's super handsome man! Standing not far behind him, Zhang Yang noticed immediately that there two extremely well-built middle-aged man were staring at all of them with extreme prejudice. Their silent stoic stance was practically bursting with the strength of tigers. They were Liu Wei's bodyguards. If any of them made any sudden movements, these two punks would definitely drop them by the second!

Zhang Yang smiled slightly. Fatty Han, who had known Zhang Yang his whole life picked up Zhang Yang's sudden glint in his eyes. Zhang Yang pointed at the chair and said, "Please sit!"

Liu Wei bowed a little and sat down elegantly. However, with a loud "thud" he fell onto the floor hard, with his legs practically pointed up to the sky! The gentlemanly, classy, masculine image that was created was completely destroyed!

"Hahaha!" Fatty Han and Wei Yan Er burst in laughter.

"Master Liu!" the two bodyguards came dashing to his rescue. One of them lifted him up to his feet, while the other stared at Zhang Yang with rage in his eyes. Both of them saw Zhang Yang legs moving the moment when Liu Wei was about to sit. Zhang Yang had deliberately nudged the chair by half an inch to purposely make Liu Wei fall down.

"I'm okay! I'm okay! I'd just slipped! That's all!" In his eyes, there was a split-second of rage. However, his face maintained a kind and forgiving appearance, enough to fool anyone who was not observant enough. He sat back on to the chair properly this time, with less grace.

Before withdrawing, the guards threw an intense glare at Zhang Yang and stood behind Liu Wei. The two guards' mountain-like posture was truly not something you'd want to provoke.

"So, you're Zhan Yu!" said Liu Wei as he fixed his sight on Zhang Yang. "The guild master of Lone Desert Smoke! China's number one tank! The

man behind the feat of leading Lone Desert Smoke to claim all of the First Clear Achievements of all Hardcore Mode dungeons! The champion who had claimed the first Territory in the game! The hottest and most popular players in Soaring Swords competition!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "You flatter me too much. I didn't even know that I'm that popular!"

"Master Liu!" The busty chick from before, Liu Shi Shi came by and looked at Liu Wei with a concerned face. "Are you alright?"

The nudge from Zhang Yang earlier was so subtle that only those with sharp eyes would know that it was his doing. Oblivious to that, Liu Shi Shi had sincerely thought that Liu Wei had slipped and fell all by himself.

"I'm fine. Thanks!" Liu Wei smiled gently and pulled out another chair beside him. "Please have a seat."

He then turned back to Zhang Yang and asked, "Could you tell me your true name?"

Liu Wei must have some connections to the hotel staff or the Soaring Sword Committee to be able to recognize that the four of them were from Lone Desert Smoke. Even if Zhang Yang would not reveal his name, Liu Wei could easily pull a few strings to get his personal details.

Zhang Yang smiled courteously. "My name is Zhang. Zhang Yang."

"Mr. Zhang!" said Liu Wei with a tone suggesting that he was addressing an old friend. "Would I interest you a business plan with me?"

"Hmm?"

"Ah! How silly of me. I had forgot to introduce my background! I am the vice-president of Ming Sheng Technology! We want to purchase and acquire a famous guild in the game 'God's Miracle'! You should know, currently there are more than 200,000,000 players in the game! This game is a large and extremely lucrative industry! The company wishes to infiltrate the market in 'God's Miracle', and what better way than having a mutual cooperation with Lone Desert Smoke!" said Liu Wei as he revealed his plan.

Zhang Yang laughed lightly. "So, you're saying that Ming Sheng Tech would like to purchase us? The entire guild of Lone Desert Smoke?"

"That's correct!" Liu Wei nodded. "We currently have two options. One, the company will completely own the guild. Two, we could buy the guild as shares. However, the company must own 51% of the shares."

"Sorry. Not interested!" Zhang Yang downright rejected his proposal without a second thought.

"Mr. Zhang, would you please listen to my explanation before you made any rash decision?" Liu Wei kept his composure and only smiled.

On the other hand, Liu Shi Shi was frowning and angry. "Master Liu was approaching you with his grace and sincerity! How could you not behave in the same manner? Do you even know what kind of company is Ming Sheng Technology? Street thug." The last insult was said so softly that only the people around her side of the table could hear it. If they were paying any attention to her.

Fatty Han was definitely paying attention. Even though he was as huge, raging pervert, he was still a man who valued a brother and willing to take a bullet for Zhang Yang. He scoffed coldly. "Street thug? Please...what are you? Street car? Street bus? Name your price! How much does it cost me for a night with you? I've never been in bed with a celebrity."

"Y-You!" Like a cat that had just gotten its tail stepped on, Liu Shi Shi jumped to her feet and pointed her tiny finger at Fatty Han.

"Shi Shi calm down! Can't you see that he was making a bad joke? How could you not have a sense of humor?" said Liu Wei calmly. However, when Liu Wei glared at Liu Shi Shi, she froze on the spot. Immediately, Liu Wei smiled and turned over to Zhang Yang. "I understand that your current Territory is a gold mine, however, did it ever occur to you that it would only last as long as the majority of players are at Level 60. Once players start to reach Level 70, or even Level 80, the overall profit from that particular Territory will drop!"

To talk about the game development and future market, there was no one else but Zhang Yang, the man who reincarnated and possessed an

inhuman level of knowledge of the game. Not even a professional gaming economist could accurately predict the outcome of the game. After a patch, they could only rely on prediction and nothing else.

Zhang Yang remained stoic, unexpressive yet he was laughing mentally. "In that case, Mr Liu, please teach me!"

Han Ying Xue chuckled when she heard Zhang Yang tried to act all humbly. She quickly rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. That thousand-expression b*tch with a superior level seduction had even manage to one-up Liu Shi Shi, leaving her pale and frozen.

During this time, Wei Yan Er took the chance to scoop up the last piece of lobster and smiled happily as if she had hit the jackpot.

Liu Wei had been paying full attention to Zhang Yang and had not noticed the other two fair princesses. Once he turned his gaze to them, he felt a sudden cold shiver that flowed down his spine. Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were world class women; the kind that was not just beautiful but had special features that made them stand out among the rest of the world class beauties.

Han Ying Xue was like the Queen of Charm herself; her erotic eyes were her special feature that could easily stray a loyal man from his wife. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er had a petite little body that gave of an innocent look and could also easily charm an innocent man! Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, a mature and and blossoming top-class rarity!

It took him while before Liu Wei realized that he was staring at them. He quickly recollected his composure and reverted back to his "Humbly Gentleman" like stature. However, deep down, his lust and greed were burning violently, he knew that he must use all his methods to get his hands on Lone Desert Smoke and these two women!

He cleared his throat and said, "So, currently, you own one piece of land. That gives you a huge advantage in the game's economy. However, when the second, third or subsequent lands appear, your profits will drop exponentially. So you can earn say, 100,000,000 or 200,000,000 a month, that's great, but after two months' time, I'd say your profit will

drop to almost 10,000,000. By the time players have reached Level 100 and had moved on to the new Chaos Realm, you won't be able to earn a single cent!

Hundred million!? Liu Shi Shi had began to breath vigorously. Her rising and falling humongous chest trembled in excitement. To think that a man could easily have a hundred million dollars worth of fortune; he could easily be a piece of cow dung, but many flowery girls would be fighting for a place in that piece of excrement. Now that she knows what Zhang Yang was capable of, her view had now changed.

The latter patch of 'God's Miracle' had yet to be announced. However, there are official introduction in the main official site. When players have reach Level 100, they can enter the new area called the Chaos Realm where players from all 8 servers will join together to form a real world war.

Liu Wei spoke with much confidence and influence. "Mr Zhang, you have to place your sight further into the future! Don't let minor profits blind your eyes from the future! Right now, we can offer 1,000,000,000 dollars to purchase Lone Desert Smoke, or invest 300,000,000 dollars as investment. Of course, we will be taking the Thunderstorm Castle and the land in White Jade Castle. However, I suggest Mr Zhang Yang to take the latter offer. Lone Desert Smoke has such a fantastic and bright future ahead! Under the leadership of the Ming Sheng Group, we can definitely raise the guild to produce 3,000,000,000 or 5,000,000,000, perhaps even 10,000,000,000!"

Liu Wei looked at Zhang Yang with eyes full of anticipation, however, deep down, he was laughing maniacally. If Zhang Yang had selected the first option, Liu Wei would have to fork out 1,000,000,000. However, if Zhang Yang had chosen to go for the second option, Liu Wei would only need to pay up 300,000,000 and could eventually own Zhang Yang through the dilution of his shares! Eventually, Liu Wei could even make Zhang Yang work for him!

While they were having that conversation, Liu Shi Shi has already lost it when she heard the number 300,000,000 and 1,000,000,000. Her hands

and legs were trembling violently. She could have sworn that the region between her thighs was getting slightly damp.

On the other hand, Fatty Han was furious at Liu Wei's ridiculous offer. He knew that Little Yang's Little Merchandize Shop could easily earn 500,000 gold coins a day, which was equivalent to RMB12,000,000, and in a year, Zhang Yang could easily earn 140,000,000! Just that small land alone could be worth more than 1,000,000,000! This little bugger was being too shameless!

Zhang Yang maintained his stoic look. "I may be the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke. However, I cannot make that decision alone! Furthermore, our guild is currently in contract with Silky Soft Holdings. If we do wish to cooperate with you, wouldn't that be violating the terms of the contract?"

"That's just a small problem. There's nothing that says money can't solve a little contract penalty." Said Liu Wei as he gestured with his hand nonchalantly. "I'll personally help you take over the responsibility!"

While Liu Wei was not looking, Zhang Yang hurriedly look towards Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er and raised his eye brows, indicating that the man was trying to coax Zhang Yang away right under their nose!

Han Ying Xue responded immediately. "Mr Liu, don't you think trust is the most important thing in business?"

"Wrong! The market is like a battle field. You have to use any method you can to obtain the best results!" said Liu Wei while raising a finger and wagging it.

"That's great! The lawyers in my company could really use this." Said Han Ying Xue as she raised her phone up and showed a running recorder to Liu Wei.

Liu Wei staggered. "W-What lawyers?"

"Oh! My apologies. I've forgot to introduce them to Mr Liu." Zhang Yang pretended to be surprised and facepalmed himself. "This person's IGN is Little Snow, who so happens to be Miss Han, the largest shareholder of

Silky Soft Holdings!"

"Me too! Me too!" said the little Wei Yan Er as she struggled to stand up on her toes.

"Hm. That little girl, Drizzler, is Miss Wei, the only daughter of the current president of Silky Soft Holdings!"

Liu Wei's face turned into the color of the sea. His expression was like he had actually tasted a spoonful of houseflies.

To think that he had attempted to coax someone out of their company contract right in front of their face!

To think that these two females were hiding their true selves in such manner! Liu Wei had to change his strategy. Now that he had insulted Silky Soft Holdings, he would need to get his hands on Silky Soft Holdings as well! That way Lone Desert Smoke could be in his hands!

Furthermore, Silky Soft Holdings was worth around 10 billion dollars. If they could get their hand on that company, Ming Sheng Technology would expand as a multi-platform company, becoming closer to being a multinational super company!

Besides, those two girls were extremely alluring!

Liu Wei thoughts quickly shifted and he turned his attention to the girls. How to get them hook up to Liu Wei...

Liu Wei had much confidence in his handsome face and those excellent humbly gentleman-like manners!

Chapter 272: The Assembled Weapon

"Master Liu~~" Liu Shi Shi moaned silkily. As a woman, she had a heightened sense when it comes to a male's attention. She realized that Liu Wei's attention was now directly onto someone else but not her. She tried her best to draw back Liu Wei's attention.

Compared to the manufactured charms of Liu Shi Shi, Han Ying Xue was a natural. Just her glinting pair of eyes could set a man burning with the raging fire of lust. Those two women could not be compared as they were both on a different scale! Liu Wei immediately responded to her pathetic attempt.

"Miss Liu must be tired after having to work for the entire day! Please head back for some rest!"

A direct slap to the face! A hidden command to "get lost!" so that he could court with the ladies in peace!

Working in the entertainment industry, Liu Shi Shi could easily understand how a man thought, and got the message clear and simple! With that bold statement to her face, she turned emotionless and stood up. "They say, that once you obtain a new toy, you'll forget about your past passion! Prince Liu surpasses even that statement. The first night with his wife would probably bore him already! Cough"

She turned away and placed her slim hands on her slender waist, shaking it while walking out of the restaurant.

Liu Wei turned around to glance at her. A sudden, unsatisfied emotion boiled up in him. He had not had his fun with her yet...Right now, it was not the good time to call her back. Perhaps he shall give her a call later. Something as simple as donating some money to invest in her upcoming film should suffice, that amount of money would not even faze him one bit!

Zhang Yang noticed what was going on and quickly took out a silver bank card, tossing it through the air towards Fatty Han. Fatty Han caught it midair with a questioning look. Zhang Yang whispered something in to

his ears. With a straight face, Fatty Han nodded, slipped the card into his front pocket and walked away quickly.

Liu Wei did not know what were they planning, and he couldn't care less about it. Right now, the main agenda was Han Yang Xue.

"Miss Han, I'm very interested in the current development of Silky Soft Holdings. Perhaps if we could find a time to discuss this matter?"

Han Ying Xue had no spare energy to deal with him. She was busy battling Wei Yan Er over a piece of white truffle cake on the table. The only response Liu Wei got was the noisy clicking of her chopsticks.

Liu Wei frowned at her reaction. These two sisters had to be the type of generation who inherited their family's wealth, raised in an environment of surplus. Yet, they were behaving as if they had never seen anything like a cake in their life! They were actually fighting over a piece of cake! He was already tempted to just say something like, "Please stop fighting. I'll buy you all the cakes you want as long as you be my woman!"

However, little did Liu Wei know, it was not really about the cake, but the bond Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had as sisters.

Liu Wei was always confident of his diplomatic sway, and his charm. However, this was the first time that he had encountered such a woman like Han Ying Xue. It was the first time Liu Wei would actually doubt his own ability. That, or this woman actually swings the other way.

Wei Yan Er completely lost to Han Ying Xue who was more experienced with her chopsticks. She pouted her lips and puffed her cheeks as she could only stared at Han Ying Xue slowly chewing on the last piece of cake that they had been fighting over for at least three minutes. Boiling with anger, she slammed the table with her petite little pair of hands and snapped.

"What is a stupid faced person like you still doing here?!"

Stupid face? Liu Wei's cheek twitched, Zhang Yang could have sworn he saw a vein pop on Liu Wei's forehead. Liu Wei was the vice-president of Ming Sheng Technology, the man who was bound to inherit all the fortune

from his family, the man with a natural born elegance and looks that could easily attract any single woman with a wave of his hands, the man who was dubbed as "China's most eligible bachelor"!

With such grace, mannerism, and wealth, he was the perfect woman's perfect prince charming! How could a man such as him, take an insult like "stupid face"!

Tak Tak Tak!

The sound of those familiar high heels, striking the floor, echoed through the restaurant. Liu Wei turned around to glance and was so shocked that he almost fell to the floor again.

It was Liu Shi Shi, the same woman who had flung herself to Liu Wei. The same woman that was now clinging to the fat guy like glue! The two of them were giggling and chuckling away as if they were madly in love! Anyone who was oblivious of the situation could easily mistake them for a couple that had been together for a few years!

What just happened? Not only had he yet to obtain the two fishes in front of him, but he had already lost one good fish to some fat f*ck!

Now Liu Wei had finally understood why Zhang Yang had thrown his card to that fat guy! Liu Wei's gaze turned cold and distant.

The first strike, Zhang Yang had purposely kicked his chair and embarrass him in public by having him plant his ass on the ground.

The second strike, deliberately withholding the identity of the two important ladies and spilling his rotten self to them.

The third strike, knowing clearly that Liu Shi Shi was his woman, Zhang Yang had made the fat guy court her openly and deliberately.

As Sun Tzu said, the first and second mistake could be of natural causes, but the last strike was deliberate and intentional!

What did he ever do to offend Zhang Yang? Why must he be so blatantly against him!? Liu Wei was racking his mind, finding for a reason, but the more the thought about it, the more confused he became! He was sure

that the two of them had never even met before this! He was from Zhou Su and Liu Wei was from Lin Hai, the two cities were completely far apart and passing by each other on the street was completely impossible!

"What's up bro!" Fatty Han sat down with a wide grin on his flabby face. Liu Shi Shi, she was leaning softly and gently against that fat guy's overly large shoulder, completely ignoring Liu Wei!

It was as if Zhang Yang was wielding a massive Celestial hammer and using it to pummel his emotions. The slam was so strong to his face that Liu Wei could not take it anymore.

Looking at Fatty Han's ridiculous folds of fat, Liu Wei had completely lost the intention to f*ck Liu Shi Shi anymore. He had no desire of putting on the same old broken slippers worn by that fat f*ck. Twitching uncontrollably, Liu Wei finally gave up. He knew that if he overstayed his welcome, he would only face more embarrassing moments. He stood up abruptly, dropped a "see you later" and moved away like a centipede that had lost all its legs save for two.

"Hey! Noob tank, did you have beef with that guy? Did he offend you in the past?" said Wei Yan Er with her eyes opened wide.

Zhang Yang shrugged nonchalantly. "Oh, nothing of that. His face just pissed my off. Oh right, b*tchy snow, I want to fight a couple of bosses later, I might need you to help me. Get the Lover's Charm from Ice Cube and teleport over to me."

"I wanna come too!" cried the little girl.

Zhang Yang sighed.

"How about this? If Ice Cube isn't online, both of you girls come over. But if Ice Cube happens to be online, don't waste time and let Han Ying Xue come over alone." Zhang Yang laid down an ultimatum.

All of them finished what was left on the table and quickly went back to their room.

"Little Yang, I swear to god, whoever says that Liu Shi Shi can't act, I will personally shove his head up my *ss!" said Fatty Han as he waved goodbye

to the departing Liu Shi Shi. The card that Zhang Yang had just given over to Fatty Han had over 100,000 dollars in credit, and was only used to hire Liu Shi Shi to put up a show and act in front of Liu Wei.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh.

Liu Wei would never be dissuaded from ruling over 'God' Miracle' in spite of failing to own Lone Desert Smoke. There were still plenty of other guilds for him to choose from. However, Zhang Yang will never allow that him to succeed. No matter which guild Liu Wei tries to buy, he will go all out and declare that guild as public enemy number one. He will never allow Liu Wei to set his foot safely in the game!

According to his memories, Liu Wei will first invest a large sum of money in a particular guild. Slowly and eventually, he will use money to buy over the high-ranking officers in the guild and execute a hostile takeover, a coup from within. He will then proceed to create a new guild called "The Myth"!

In this life, he will never allow "The Myth" to even come into fruition!

Zhang Yang arrived at his room and quickly logged into the game. Sun Xin Yu was offline, so he had to wait for Han Ying Xue and her little cousin sister to slowly take their time to reach his position.

If Zhang Yang used the [Friendship Jade] and summoned Smaug's shadow, he believed that he could easily take down the boss. However, this treasure was just too valuable to be used on this Gray-Silver boss. With its limited use, he would at least keep it for a Violet-Platinum boss's first kill!

It took them two whole hours to reach to where Zhang Yang was. When Wei Yan Er saw the boss difficulty, she pouted. "Oh come on! It's just a Gray-Silver boss! What a complete let down, noob tank!"

"I had never thought that you had such high expectations of me!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Well? Go on then, kick the boss's butt!"

Zhang Yang nodded and went up charging at the boss.

"I smell the scent of a man!" Marzarrock cried out excitedly as it shifted on its massive legs and turned towards Zhang Yang.

The battle started promptly. Now that Han Ying Xue was present with her {Dispel}, the boss was turned from a formidable foe to a street thug. As long as Zhang Yang had a {Regeneration} on him, there was nothing left for Han Ying Xue to do other than {Punishment Ray} at the gaps between her {Dispel}s.

Within five minutes, Marzarrock wailed and fell defeated, dropping many loots.

"Hmm? Hey! Noob tank! What is this thingamajig?" asked Wei Yan Er as she poked out a piece of Gray-Silver object among the loots.

[Sword Piece of Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Gray-Silver, Weapon Shard)

Use: Assemble all seven Sword Pieces and one Sword Hilt. Able to forge a Dark Enigmatic Sword through Smithing.

Level: 60

"Assembled Weapon!" Zhang Yang was surprised. "Just as the item describes. Once you gather all seven sword pieces and one sword hilt, you can forge a weapon through the main city's Smithing Shop. This is not limited to only swords or weapons. You can also find shards of armor, rings, and also necklaces! Based on the rarity of this weapon shard, the completed [Dark Enigmatic Sword] will have the same power of a Yellow-Gold tier weapon!"

"Huh? Why didn't it just drop a Yellow-Gold tier weapon then? It's so complicated and waste of time!"

Zhang Yang laughed. He was always amazed at how oblivious the little girl was.

"Alright. Listen up. Firstly, the Assembled Weapon system was created to balance out the extreme scarcity of high-leveled bosses. However, since the Assembled Weapons require many weapon shards, it will balance out the number of weapon availability. That way, the prestige of higher leveled weapons will not be effected. Second, its just another way for the gaming

company to earn some profit. The Assembled Weapon is required to be forged through a Smithing Shop, which naturally, requires a large sum of gold coins. After that, you will need to visit the Identifier to reveal the item's hidden specs! That's gold vacuum!"

"Hmph! I already have a Level 60 Yellow-Gold axe!" she growled, waving it up high. "It's not that rare then, is it?"

Zhang Yang facepalmed in disappointment. "You...sigh...Listen closely. There are two types of Assembled Weapons. Take this sword for example. The sword pieces will most definitely be all Gray-Silver, and if the sword hilt is also a Gray-Silver tier, the final product will be the same as a Yellow-Gold tier. But what if the sword hilt was a Yellow-Gold? The final result will be stronger than an average Yellow-Gold tier!"

The topic piqued Han Ying Xue interest and she raised one of her seductive eye brows. "How so?"

"For example, if the same Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon had 3.1 seconds attack interval, and the other had a 3.8 seconds attack interval. Which one would you choose?"

Wei Yan Er squealed. "The one with the 3.8 seconds! Not only it will be less effected by the weapon defense, skill damage will be increased as well!"

"Exactly!" Zhang Yang nodded. "Now, if this [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was forged, and if the sword hilt used was a Gray-Silver tier, the final product would not be as good. A One handed sword would have 2.3 or 2.5 seconds attack interval, while two handed swords will have 3.3 or 3.6 seconds attack interval. It would definitely not have the slowest possible attack interval of its class! However, if the forged sword used a Yellow-Gold tier sword hilt, the final product will definitely have the slowest attack interval! Not just that, it will also have a special effect, such as {Lifesteal} effect or a special cooldown reduction effect!"

"That's very good!" Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and nodded, pretending to be a scholar agreeing to a statement.

The only loot that was worth looking at was the weapon shard, the rest

of the items dropped by the boss were three counts of Gray-Silver weapon and eight more Green-Copper equipment. Zhang Yang did not even bother inspecting them and just hauled them all into his inventory.

"Those Gray-Silver equipment might not be useless to us anymore, but at least they could be worth a few gold pieces in the market."

"Hehehe!" both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er grinned as their eyes flashed with the dollar sign.

"Let's push on!"

Being it a dungeon or an open field, the minions or none-boss monsters will still be plenty. Zhang Yang and the two others had spent more than two hours to reached the second boss. However, like taking a candy from a baby, the party killed the boss without breaking a sweat and found themselves another sword piece weapon shard.

"What a shame it didn't drop any sword hilts." Wei Yan Er sighed. The weapon shards did not come in any specific order and can be obtained by killing the same boss again and again. The weapon shard for the sword hilt was special. Unless dropped, you can never forge a complete sword even with 100 pieces of weapon shards.

Zhang Yang smiled. "It's good that the sword hilt did not show up here! Just so you know, if it did, the sword hilt will be a Gray-Silver tier! Since the last boss will be a Yellow-Gold tier, the sword hilt dropped there should be a Yellow-Gold tier! And that is what we should look forward to!"

The three entered the third floor and cleared the monsters there. However, before they could fight the boss, both sisters said that they wanted to call it a night as burning the midnight oil will affect their skin.

Without them, Zhang Yang had no means of continuing the raid. He could not possibly kill the boss alone. Since the elite monster around will respawn after five hours, he would have to expect being surrounded by them when he logs in first thing in the morning. Zhang Yang sighed and logged out as well.

The next day, at the break of daylight, Zhang Yang dragged Fatty Han to

the hotel's gym for a nice one-hour workout. After having breakfast, Zhang Yang spotted Liu Wei ogling over the two sisters. When the two girls saw Zhang Yang walking over, Han Ying Xue jumped to Zhang Yang as if he was the hero and she was the damsel in distress, wailing dotingly as she went. "Hubby~~"

She dragged Zhang Yang into the guys' room and left Liu Wei standing alone outside.

"What luck! Just when I managed to get away from Luo Yang Ming, I thought I could have a few days without having any guy chasing after me, and here comes this jack*ss who thinks that all the girls in the world are obligated to grovel at his feet. D*mn! I'm f*cking pissed!" Han Ying Xue walked over to Zhang Yang's bed and fell flat on her back without any elegance of a woman, not caring for the parts of her body that would jiggle when faced with impact!

Zhang Yang turned away and said, "Perhaps the one who carries the surname Luo is already here. And if he knew which room you were in, he would sleep at the doorstep!"

"Like I care." Said Han Ying Xue as she bolted upright. She slammed the soft mattress with her hands and stood up. "That Liu-what-his-name must have left by now, I'll head back to my room and play my game!" She dragged Wei Yan Er and scampered back to their room.

Zhang Yang shook his head and flattened the bed before logging into the game. Together, they cleared the monsters and continued raiding the Spider Palace. In his Friend List, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream's icons were blackened. It looks like they were currently in-flight towards Shanghai.

Lost Dream and the rest were supposed to arrive over the next two days. By 15th, everyone should be gathered together.

Zhang Yang and the two sisters took a whole day just to clear the rest of the palace but had yet to kill the boss. Together with the weapon shards from the two previous bosses, they had accumulated a total of five sword pieces. All that was left was just the boss.

When night fell, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream arrived at the hotel and checked in.

Chapter 273: Catarina the Queen of Spider

Hundred Shots looked like a middle-aged man despite being only 30 years old or so. He was well-built, not like the refined build of a bodybuilder, but a build that had to come from genuine, tough labor, and a full-faced beard and moustache. When he spoke, they knew he most definitely originated from somewhere far north of china. As for Daffodil Daydream, she was a cheerful woman who appeared to be in her mid-twenties. She looked like the kind of woman you would meet randomly on the street. Still there is a high chance than men, and women (if they swung that way) would turn around just to have another glance at her.

When everyone gathered and met with each other, they were extremely delighted. Fatty Han even took the chance to jump at Daffodil Daydream and give her a huge bear-like hug. Daffodil Daydream reacted unexpectedly. She allowed him to hug her and even pecked him on the cheek with a kiss. This, on the other hand, had embarrassed Fatty Han as it was never the reaction that he would get from a woman. The group had a little chat and went to their respective rooms after a while.

Sun Xin Yu had yet to log in. Apparently, she said that she would have to work for a few more days. After that, she would take a leave for a total of 10 days. Truthfully, she could just bypass all that procedure and protocol and not turn up at work as much as she wanted, and no one would dare to object, due to her stature. Still, the woman took pride in her job, and rarely ever called for favors unless the other party broke protocol first.

After a while, Zhang Yang and the two girls cleared more monsters off, finally arriving at the final boss. Compared to the final boss, the previous bosses had human faces on the full bodies of spiders. Catarina the final boss was very different. Instead of just a face, she had the upper body of a booblicious woman. It was a pity that her magnificent curves were not accompanied by a fitting human's lower-half. Below her curvy waist was the body of a huge spider with eight long sharp legs of a spider.

Right at where she was standing, there were many human remains, many of them were just bones, but some of them were fresh, with blood

still oozing out of their spilled inner organs. The sight alone was very appalling, let alone the smell. The gruesome scene was enough to send brave men shivering with fear.

[Catarina the Queen of Spiders] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 68

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

Note: The youngest daughter of the God of Spiders. Due to her insatiable hungry for flesh, she was excommunicated from the kingdom of spiders.

"Hey, silly Yu, are you sure the three of us can do this?" asked Han Ying Xue worriedly. A Yellow-Gold boss was far superior to mere Gray-Silver bosses. It was by far, the strongest tiered boss they had ever encountered.

"If she doesn't have a berserker mode, we could try and kill her off slowly." Said Zhang Yang. "Let's just give it a shot. I will call for more if we fail."

"If we do fail, you will have to compensate us with the repairing fee!" said Wei Yan Er just when Zhang Yang took a step closer to the boss.

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes and continued towards the boss. "One of these days, I swear that I will get back at you."

"Tee hee~" both the girls giggled at his joke.

"Human!? A male human!?" Catarina turned around and faced Zhang Yang. She raised her nose and took a sniff. "Ah ha!" she squeaked in excitement and grinned evilly. "What a tough man! I see that you have a strong body too! You will prove worthy enough to mate!"

After her opening speech, the boss thrust one of her long legs out at Zhang Yang's face. He thought he heard it wrong but after thinking it through, it was a female spider's habit to consume her partner after a successful mating. That was why, so many men from the village had gone missing! That was why there were so many human skeletons lying around! He finally understood why this boss was exiled from the Kingdom of

Spiders by the God of Spiders. If she went on like this, the entire kingdom would run out of male warriors!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield to block the kick. He retaliated by swinging his axe from the right side and gave her a good blow. While Zhang Yang was fighting the boss head on, Wei Yan Er was attacking furiously from behind. While attacking, Wei Yan Er noticed Catarina's back carapace and laughed. "Hehe, the boss' buggy butt is almost the same as Liu Shi Shi butt! Both of them are round and big, not to mention they jiggle like soft pudding every time I hit it!"

What the actual f*ck! What is inside her brain? How could she think of something like that in this kind of situation!

"PSSS!"

Just as the little girl opened her mouth to further comment on the jiggling butt, the butt quivered. Catarina spun around swiftly and spewed out spider webs at Zhang Yang, the two sisters, and even the [Gold-Eared Bear King].

'Ding! You have been {Web Bound}! You cannot execute any action for 5 seconds!'

It seemed that the boss' control skill would indiscriminately target every single player around, including the pet, regardless of the party size!

'-5,406!'

'-5,591!'

'Ding! You have received the effect {Spider's Venom} (1 stack). Receive 5,000 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

In the time Zhang Yang was immobile, Catarina had attacked twice and managed to spit a green, vicious liquid out of her mouth, onto everyone, including the bear and inflict them with a DoT effect.

If another tank with slightly weaker equipment had been in the fight, they would sure be dead by now, since {Block} could not be used in the five

second "stun". The biggest difference between a dungeon boss and an open-world boss was the design of their skills. Dungeon bosses ranged from extremely easy, to ridiculously difficult. Since the player count did not matter in the beginning, you can try taking on open world bosses with five players. If five players were not enough, you can even bring your entire village of 10,000 players to kill the boss with numbers. A dungeon boss was designed to fight a fixed number of players. If a dungeon required 10 players, the dungeon has to be raided with a party of 10. Since the attack power, skill, and other factor were calculated precisely, there would not be a scenario where a dungeon boss is undefeatable.

Five seconds passed and everyone was free to move again.

"Dispel the DoT on the little brat and yourself first! The bear and myself take second priority!" Zhang Yang cried. He had a 20% damage reduction passive skill and 994 damage absorption, making him slightly more resistant to the DoT effect.

"Ok." Han Ying Xue acknowledged, doing as he told. Luckily, the DoT effect skill was not as frequent, or else the boss would have been slightly annoying to deal with.

The {Web Bound} skill was used roughly every 30 seconds or so, which was enough to grate on his nerves. If a tank's HP was any lower than 11,000, it would definitely be an auto-death. The {Spider Venom} was rather frequent, being cast at roughly every 15 seconds. Even though this skill could be easily dispelled by Han Ying Xue, it proved to be tremendously MP costly.

Zhang Yang and the bear attacked as swiftly as they could. Repeatedly using [Power Potion], making sure the effect remains active, Zhang Yang had to finish the boss off as soon as possible. If the battle is dragged on for too long, Han Ying Xue would not last. It would all be over once she runs out of MP.

90%, 80%, 70%...

The boss HP dropped down rather rapidly. Even though her Defense value was high, she was practically naked when Zhang Yang hit her. With

{Cripple Defense} Wei Yan Er was able to deal extreme damage with her slow attack interval Yellow-Gold weapon. Luckily, Han Ying Xue had {Divine Soul} with a 75% mana reduction for healing spells. Though the passive skill did not apply to {Dispel}, it was enough to help out with her healing. To make it better, the equipment she had was by far, the best in all of China!

"Obey me! Or face death!" Catarina shrieked. Four blood-red webs flew across the field and latched onto everyone including the bear.

‘-20,111!’

‘-11,080!’

‘-12,110!’

Four strong damage values was inflicted on everyone.

‘Ding! You have received the skill {Blood-Web Poison}. Losing 70% of your maximum health. Damage rating is fixed and cannot be modified with any damage reduction skill!’

Zhang Yang originally had a maximum HP of 24,890, and after losing 70% of it, he was only left with 4,447 HP!

Shush!

The boss did not give room for any respite and immediately came for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately activate {Berserker’s Heal} and restored all his health. The boss’ overwhelming skill was percentage-based, regardless of defense and passive skills.

Swiftly, Han Ying Xue responded by using {Healing Bond} to heal Wei Yan Er and herself at the same time. If the boss used the same skill again, it would surely bring the battle to a close.

Luckily, the skill was only used once every time her HP dropped by 30%. This time, it showed the huge benefit of having a small party. If the party was huge, the time to dispel all of the {Spider’s Venom} would surely be insufficient. With just one {Blood-Web Poison}, 80% or even 90% of

players in a large group would surely perish.

Who knows, the boss might have some flesh-eating health recovery skill. If she did have it, she would be impossible to kill!

60%, 50%, 40%...Eventually, the boss used {Blood-Web Poison} again. This time, Zhang Yang managed to counter it with {Berserker's Heal}. Since the team attacking speed was not too fast, two minutes had passed and Zhang Yang's {Berserker's Heal} had finished its cooldown, ready to be used again.

Once the boss' HP dropped below 20%, Wei Yan Er activated {Indiscriminate} and hacked the boss for close to 60,000 damage in one devastating cleave.

When the boss' HP reached 10%, she used {Blood-Web Poison} again. Still, she failed to kill anyone and keeled over, dead.

Shoom!

A dark light beamed out of her corpse and reveal a twin-horned, devil like figure with bat-like wings protruding out from its back. The shadowy figure screeched, "Curse you humans! You have ruined my plans! I will return! I will be back!"

The black light then dispersed into nothingness. Following closely after, a translucent image of Catarina stood up. She looked just the same as she did in live. However, this time, she was slightly different. The greatest and most obvious difference was that, her body was completely human. Unlike the, bloodthirsty, battle-crazed version of her, her ghost form was kind and demure. There was a calm and serene atmosphere around her now.

[Catarina's Soul] (Normal, Summoned)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

"Humans. Please do not be afraid. I am the real Catarina. The one that had just fought you was possessed by a demon." Catarina waved her hands, trying to assuage their fears. "Many years back, I ventured out of

the Kingdom of Spiders and was unfortunately taken over by a demon. It controlled me and invoked some sort of demonic frenzy, turning me into a blood thirsty beast. Because of my sudden change of behavior, father had thrown me out of the kingdom. Eventually, a human sage who came to seal me away. However, the seal was broken recently and the demon in me was revived and wreaked havoc upon this land."

"Woohoo...poor soul!" Wei Yan Er started to tear up.

"That demon had planned to use me to build an army of spiders to serve the demons! However, thanks to your bravery, you have stopped their plans. Nevertheless, he will be back again! Human, listen my plead. Head over to the Kingdom of Spiders and inform my father, the god of spiders, about everything that had happened to me. You must tell him to stop the invasion of the demons!"

'Ding! Catarina's Soul has a quest for you: An Urgent News. Do you accept it?'

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er exchanged a look and accepted the quest without a second thought.

"You have my greatest appreciation adventurers!" Catarina voice was filled with gratitude. Her sincerity was reflected on her warm smile. After nodding in acknowledgment, her projection faded away and eventually became one with the wind.

Chapter 274: Dark Enigmatic Sword

"Woohoo..." the little girl cried her eyes out. "Why didn't you spare her? It's so pitiful!"

"Okay. My bad, in that case, I'll take full responsibility. I guess I should be the one taking all the loot then..." Zhang Yang whistled as he pretended to pace towards the battle drops.

"Ayyy! That won't do." Wei Yan Er jumped to her feet and headed straight for the drops.

"Aw yea! There's three Yellow-Gold items here!" said Wei Yan Er as she pulled a piece of accessory out. "This one's mine! You're not allowed to take it!"

[A Spider's Kiss] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Equip-Effect: Grants your weapon a poison coat. Grants a certain chance to an attack to inflict the target with 1,000 Natural damage. The success rate is increased if the attack interval of the weapon is longer.

Level Requirement: 60

Zhang Yang nodded. "No problem. That's just a trinket with some minor bonuses."

Wei Yan Er grinned. She immediately put it on. Female accessories are mostly worn on the ear like an earring. The [A Spider's Kiss] hung at the lowermost part of the ear lobe. It looked like a green, tiny little spider dangling down. It was too tiny to be repulsive, rather it had a cute, delicate quality.

[Blade of Spider's Fang] [Yellow-Gold, Dagger]

Weapon Attack: 411 – 611

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds

DPS: 269

Equip Effect: 20% chance to inflict {Poison} to a target on attack. Causes the target to receive 70 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds.

Maximum 5 stacks.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

"And this is for Sister Sun! Right now, she only has a Level 50 Yellow-Gold secondary weapon! If she equipped this as her main weapon, her DPS would soar beyond the clouds!"

"No arguments there. What's the last Yellow-Gold item?" Zhang Yang asked.

"Hehe! You're in luck! Speak of the devil, it's really a Yellow-Gold sword hilt!" Wei Yan Er pulled out a shiny golden sword hilt and passed it to Zhang Yang.

[Sword Hilt of the Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Yellow-Gold, Weapon Shard)

Use: Assembles all seven Sword Pieces and one Sword Hilt. Able to smith a Dark Enigmatic Sword through Smithing.

Level: 60

"I wonder how strong will the sword be..." said Han Ying Xue curiously.

"Little brat! Look again, I'm still lacking two more sword pieces!"

"Ok." Wei Yan Er pulled more drops out one by one and smiled happily. "Haha! I found one! Noob tank! You're really lucky today! The boss actually dropped two pieces of sword pieces."

At last, Zhang Yang gathered the sword pieces from Wei Yan Er and kept them all nicely in his inventory. Staring in satisfaction, he knew that this time, he was able to gather all seven pieces of sword pieces and one sword hilt because of it being the boss' first kill, and Zhang Yang's 9 points of Luck. All these factors had worked together to give him everything he needed in a single run.

"Noob tank, are we going to finish up the questline?"

Zhang Yang shook his head slightly. "No, I have to return to the village to submit my current quest. Could you guys help find out where the

Kingdom of Spiders is?"

"Ok!"

The two sisters tore their [Teleportation Scrolls] and went back to Thunderstorm Castle. Zhang Yang unequipped all his gears and ran to the fourth floor of the Spider Palace and killed himself by jumping into the herd of monster. He then revived himself at the graveyard and went to the Village of White Lambs.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Eliminate the Spider Queen. Obtained 2,000,000 Experience points!'

'Ding! You have obtained: Chaos Gem x2!'

Zhang Yang went to the elderly woman NPC who had given him the quest and completed the quest there. Other than the mountainload of experience points, he also obtained two [Chaos Gems] which were used to increase his inventory slot from 80 to 100!

By the time he was just done with business, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er chirped on the party channel, pestering Zhang Yang to return to city to forge the sword. Zhang Yang laughed and used his [Teleportation Scroll] to return to Thunderstorm Castle, and traveled to White Jade Castle from there via the Teleportation Point.

"Come on! Quickly! We are waiting for you at the Smithing Shop!"

Zhang Yang summoned his bear and rode like the wind towards the Smithing Shop. Itching with curiosity all the way, he went up the Smithing NPC, Smithing Master Dwarf Banderash. He too wanted to know the power of the first Assembled Weapon in the game.

"This is..." Banderash examined the sword pieces one by one with an intriguing eye. "I can feel it...The ancient power that radiates from these weapon shards! This weapon had seen battle in one piece during the ancient times, in the hands of figures who walked among legends, if not legends themselves!"

Zhang Yang asked, "Great master, could you fix it?"

"It's not that I can't...But, the ancient art has been long forgotten. Even if pieced it back together, it will never be as powerful as it once was!" said Bandarash as he caressed the weapon shards as if it was his own daughter.

"In that case, I have the highest of faith in you, Grand master!"

"10,000 gold coins!" said Banderash as he lifted his head up. The grand master of smithing was now gone, what that stood in front of Zhang Yang was a typical, greedy, old Dwarf. The legends were so true about Dwarves and Dragons being equal in greed!

Still...f*cking hell! 10,000 gold coins! Expensive as f*ck!

The developers had already implemented the Identifying system that would cost a few hundred gold coins, yet now they introduce another method to rob players of their hard-earned cash! 10,00 gold coins!? More like day-light robbery! Might as well point a gun to my f*cking face and I'll sh*t out 100,000 worth of gold coins for you!

Zhang Yang turned back and said flatly to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. "If both of you were to become the presidents of Dream Tech, I'm sure you'll be in cloud nine!"

"Hmph!"

"Bleh!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue.

Kaching

After a successful transaction, Banderash started hammering. After 10 minutes or so, a bright golden light ray beamed, and the completed form of the sword formed in Banderash's hands.

'System Announcement: The first Assembled Weapon has been found in White Jade Castle! Behold of golden luster of the sword! Beware of the ancient power! Please refer to the official site for more information on Assembled Weapons and how to acquire them.'

"Take it young man! Treat the sword with care, and it shall do the same for you! The ancient power that once dwelled in it may be a shadow of its former self, but the blade itself still has tremendous attacking capability."

said Banderash as he carefully handed over the sword to Zhang Yang.

He quickly examined the sword's properties.

[Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Yellow-Gold, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 652 – 852

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 269

Equip Effect: Grants a 1% chance to attack one more time after an attack. The mirrored attack will be the same as the previous attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

OP! Super OP!

Do not look down on 1% chance, after being Identified, the rate will most likely be 2%! Still, that was not even the main point, the reason behind this item being so OP was the fact that it would generate another same attack! Fighting just one monster wouldn't change much, however, what if the targets were a huge bunch of monsters?

One {Horizontal Sweep} could hit at least 10 monsters! As long as one of the strikes procced the sword's effect, it will generate another wave of {Horizontal Sweep}! Instantly! If your luck is superbly good, the sword could be procced again repeatedly! A killing machine! An OP, killing, godly sword!

Since the sword was a Level 60 Yellow-Gold tier, Dark Enigmatic Sword's DPS was about the same as all other Yellow-Gold tier swords. The one thing that split the gap a million kilometers wide was the effect it carried!

"Hey! Stop drooling over it! Let us see it as well!" Wei Yan Er smacked Zhang Yang's back.

Zhang Yang smiled from ear to ear and posted the Dark Enigmatic Sword's properties on the party channel.

"Hmm? Just one extra attack? What's so good about it? It's only 1% chance. Why would you smile like you just popped your cheery." said Han Ying Xue while pouting her lips.

Zhang Yang did not bother explaining. He went to the Socketing Shop and told her, "Give me a few Vampiric Rune Stones."

After paying 120 gold coins, the final stat of Dark Enigmatic Sword was revealed.

[Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Yellow-Gold, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 975 – 1175

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 384

{Level 2 Socket 1}

{Level 2 Socket 2}

Equip Effect: Grant a 2% chance to attack one more time after an attack. The mirrored attack will be the same as the previous attack.

Zhang Yang hurriedly put on the Dark Enigmatic Sword. Even though he would lose his 5% damage increase, and 5% Critical rate from the passive skill, {Axe Mastery}, the Level 60 sword was enough to compensate for his old Level 50 axe. Especially since that the Dark Enigmatic Sword had the super OP multi-kill effect!

He then inserted the runes into the sword, giving an additional effect of {Vampiric +2}. Even though the {Lifesteal} effect was weak, it was still better off than not having any extra effect!

"Noobie tank! I had just gone through the official site. The Kingdom of Spider is located in the Chaos Realm!" said Wei Yan Er. She had logged out of the game for a brief moment before reappearing again.

"That's too bad. We cannot continue the quest until we get to Level 100 then," said Zhang Yang.

The Chaos Realm could only be accessed by players over Level 100. So,

as of now, there was nothing much that Zhang Yang could do. However, having the new sword in his hand, Zhang Yang had a sudden desire to test the weapon out. He traveled to the Thunderstorm Castle and rode the white bear and search for monster to kill. Around the area, there were many Level 60 players around. Tanilla Forest had become a popular spot for grinding now. For Zhang Yang to find a quiet place for him to test his new sword had become a sudden chore.

Left with no choice, Zhang Yang had to move on. He came into the Didier Flatlands and found himself a large valley with a huge number of Elemental monsters. He circle around the valley and started "collecting" as many monster as he could. After being tailed by a hoard of monsters, Zhang Yang jumped down from the bear. He activated {Blood Rage} and activated {Horizontal Sweep}.

WHAM!

More than 10 damage texts, all with 4,000+ damage popped out. Following closely was a glow of golden light, and another blast of 4,000+ damage. But, it did not stop there, after the first proc, the sword effect proc again and caused another blast of 4,000+ damage to the monsters! To Zhang Yang's surprise, the sword's effect was triggered four times in a row. He had dealt more than 200,000 damage in just a span of a few seconds! His DPS could easily exceed more than 50,000!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

One by one, all the Elementals dropped dead and turned into a pile of dead bodies.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang tested it out again. This time, he used {Blast Wave} and stunned more than 20 monsters around him while dealing only around 700+ damage to them. The chain started again; another blast boomed out and procced for a total of five times. The effect would only be triggered by melee skills. It was all good, but the copied attack would only mirror the damage and not the skill effect. For example, {Blast Wave} was copied 5 times, but the monsters were only stunned for the first time. It was a pity

but, how could he ask for more? Those repeating attacks were far too good to be true!

Chapter 275: Divide and Conquer

As the 20th slowly approached, many more players had started to flock the hotel. On the 14th, Lost Dream, Galileo, Fantasy Sweetheart had arrived and exchanged greetings with Zhang Yang and the rest. Naturally, everyone was excited. Lost Dream was an ordinary looking youth of average build. Not too shabby, nor too bulky. Galileo was just a high school student. Zhang Yang wondered about how he managed to get his parents approval to come all the way to Shanghai all by himself.

The best way to describe Fantasy Sweetheart was: big-boobed baby face. She was 20 years old, however, her cute appearance totally went against her age that everyone had to agree that she was just too "kawaii". Her big juggling breasts were firm and large, on par to Han Ying Xue's perfect genes! Lost Dream and Fatty Han were openly drooling at her. Galileo was the only innocent young boy, he had to hide somewhere else to hide his blushing red face.

The rest of the team members had also arrived, however, due to the fact that they had altered their appearance in the game, some of them had a hard time recognizing the real person based on their characters, while other were simply beyond recognition altogether.

Zhang Yang had received a private message in the game from Snow Seeker, saying that she had arrived along with the other team members of Crimson Rage. Both side had set an appointment and agreed to have dinner together later at night. Around 6.30pm, nine members from Lone Desert Smoke and five members from Crimson Rage had gathered at the hotel's restaurant and sat down together in a large dining table.

The players from Crimson Rage were as such: Snow Seeker, Perfumed Water, Thorny Rose, Mellow Venom, and Prima Ballerina. All of them were absolutely stunning. The one that stood out the most was Snow Seeker and Prima Ballerina. One was the epitome of gentleness and elegance, while the other was a stunning beauty with glasses that brought the ultimate lust in men. With both of them joining forces, many men around were stopped in their tracks at such beauty.

There was a total of 14 of them, and nine of them were female. Each of them had their own charm and specialty, but their variations were so contrast that it was like an art gallery! Both Fatty Han and Lost Dream were restless the entire time. Neither of them could stop making indecent jokes that indirectly made the atmosphere a little livelier.

Poor innocent little Galileo was the center of attention among all the girls. Some of them even asked questions like whether or not he had a girlfriend, whether he had his first kiss, first love, first this and that. Poor little Galileo could not answer the older sisters those embarrassing question and cowered quietly in one corner, with his face all flushed in red. On the other hand, Fatty Han and Lost Dream were itching to have such treatment as well. They were dying to swap places with Galileo to help him take over the role.

On the 19th of December, all 32 teams of 160 players had arrived. Sun Xin Yu was the last one to join the fray. Fatty Han and a few others were dying to see how does the person behind the mask would look like. Their wish was granted when Sun Xin Yu arrived. Everyone was left flabbergasted when they could finally see the absolute beauty behind the mask of that stone-cold Assassin.

On the night of the 20th, the organizers had sent all the players to the hall of the hotel that could easily fit in more than 10,000 people and started the launching ceremony live while also streaming the event into the game at the same time. The ceremony was so huge and grand that the organizer had also invited a few popular celebrities to host the event. The emcee of the event was none other than the famous, super sexy, local super star Liu Wan Fei. Her 36D sized bust was tightly held in her black low cut dress that only covered two thirds of her almost bursting meat sacks. That being said, this rare specimen of a female loved to jump around ever so energetically. Her dress was already too low to begin with; perhaps she had the utmost confidence that her assets would never "jump" out of her dress. Still, each time she jumped, her bouncing front was so alluring that 99.99% of all the men around could not stop their auto-focus feature from activating.

"Nice right?" said Han Ying Xue as she followed Zhang Yang's gaze.

"Yeah. It's good." said Zhang Yang unconsciously.

"Pervert!" Several girls that sat at the table cried out playfully.

Zhang Yang reacted quickly to save his own skin. He laughed. "Don't get me wrong. The entire performance was great. The choreography, the lighting, the music."

"You can make up all sorts of excuses, but we all know where you were staring at..." Han Ying Xue grinned evilly. Zhang Yang turned around and saw Fatty Han and Lost Dream, lost in their own world. Zhang Yang pointed at them and said, "Why don't you ask them?"

"Them? I don't know those guys?"

After jumping around and pitching tents in 99.99% of all the men, Liu Wan Fei moved on to the next agenda of the event, that is, the selection of all 32 battle teams. All 32 teams will go through eight elimination rounds to determine the 16 teams that will proceed to the next round. The battle system will be the same as before. The teams will have to win two out of three matches. To prevent any method of cheating, all four teams who were from the same city would not be facing each other, in the event of match fixing.

At the center of the stage, there were four draw boxes with four holes, allowing four team representatives to draw their lots at the same time. Each team's captain will be sent out as the representative and will draw the lots in a linear order. The representative will then have to pick out the lotto number. The first box had team A and B numbers, the second box have the C and D team numbers, the third box have the E and F and the last box will have the G and H team numbers.

The elimination rounds ground rules were as follows: A1 will fight A2, A3 will fight A4. The victorious team will join the victory side while the losing team will join the losing side.

The victorious team will have another match and the losing team of the victory side will fight with the winning team from the losing side's own

match. The winning team from the first match will automatically be the first while the winning team from the second match will be the second.

Since the battle will be decided with a two out of three match, the battle style was called the "Double Lost Elimination". Compared to the regular fight and win style, this method was fair and will not have any scenarios of two teams ending up in a draw. The disadvantage of this method was the fact that one team would be given ample time to counter another team's class composition. There will be cases where a team might face consecutive losses and will be eliminated from the battle.

The battles between Team A,B,C, and D will be conducted in the first half of the event and team E,F,G and H will be conducted in the second half of the event. Any team that wishes to fight till the end will have to survive the elimination rounds until the final battle.

The top 16 teams that survive the elimination rounds will be rewarded with a single level up.

The top eight teams that survive the subsequent battles will be rewarded as follows: Level +1, one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Green-Copper tier equipment, and a 10% chance of drawing a Gray-Silver equipment.

The top four teams will be rewarded as follows: Level +2 and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward possible will be a Gray-Silver tier equipment along with a 10% chance to draw a Yellow-Gold equipment.

All members from the third-place team will be rewarded with: Level +2 and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Green-Copper tier equipment, and a 10% chance to draw a Gray-Silver equipment.

All members from the second-place team will be rewarded with: Level +3 and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Yellow-Gold tier equipment, and a 10% chance to draw a Platinum-Gold equipment.

All members from the champion team will be rewarded with: Level +3, Skill Point +1, and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Yellow-Gold tier equipment, and a 30% chance to draw a Platinum-Gold

equipment.

On the side note, there will be a selected MVP of the day chosen from one of the member of the winning teams. The MVP will be rewarded with Level +1, a second Lucky draw chance with Yellow-Gold equipment as the lowest tier and a 50% chance to draw a Platinum-Gold equipment!

That aside, all participants here today will be receiving a cash reward ranging from 20,000 dollars to 1,000,000 dollars. Even though the reward was already stated in the official site, everyone's desire was peaked when Liu Wan Fei was the one announcing it.

After giving an opening speech of encouragement and fervor, Liu Wan Fei started to cried out in enthusiasm. "Ladies and gentleman! We have now arrived to the main event of the day! At the center of the stage, lies a box that will determine the outline of the 32 teams! May the odds ever be in your favor! Now, put your hands together for the Team Captain of Radiance, from Black Dragon City! A round of applause for Sword of Light!"

claps

Other than the 32 teams of 160 chosen players, the organizers had also invited a few lucky players to spectate the event. Many more players that had voluntarily come to Shanghai on their own accord, at their own expenses. The large hall was completely filled, with many spectators standing behind the seats, carrying flags of the team that they were cheering for. The atmosphere was very hyped up and feverish.

Just as Sword of Light moved up the stage, thunderous applause filled the hall. The guild Radiance was the nation's old dog in the gaming community with an extremely large group of supporters and fans. Sword of Light was a young man, slightly older than Zhang Yang. As he walked to the center of the stage, he carried himself with nobility and elegance, and many women in the hall could not help but scream in excitement.

Sword of Light came up to the box labeled "1" and drew out a red cue ball, with B2 written on it. He then raised it high up and displayed it to everyone before passing the ball to one of the stage helpers.

On the far side of the hall was a huge LED signboard. On the B2 slot of the now still empty battle outline, the stage helper then moved behind somewhere and keyed in Radiance.

Sword of Light descended down the stage and Greensleeves Prince, the captain of Sunset Amber guild, walked up to the stage and drew C4 from the box labeled "2". This continued on for a while. Hundred Shots was the captain of Lone Desert Smoke team 2. He was the sixth person who went up the stage and drew a D2.

There were plenty of female players among the team, however, Snow Seeker was the only female captain. When she ascended the stage, claps roared and cheers filled the hall. With two absolute beauties on the stage, many men felt extremely blessed, ready to drop dead right there and then. Some even jizzed in their pants.

"Alright now! Let's welcome the captain of Lone Desert Smoke's other team, Zhan Yu! Lone Desert Smoke was the only guild among all 32 selected participants to send in two teams! Their achievement is second to none! Please give him a round of applause!" Liu Wan Fei announced as she clapped her hands as well.

Lone Desert Smoke was by far, China's unofficial number one guild. Zhang Yang himself was currently sitting on the throne that stood up above all else. His presence on the stage caused a huge uproar. The moment his right foot stepped on the stage, the crowd roared and cheer louder and ever before. Flowers, handkerchief, and even scarves were thrown on to the stage! The most bizarre item among the tributes laid on the stage was a black-laced bra...and it was still warm!

Zhang Yang remained stoic and walked towards the box and drew a ball reading F2. Zhang Yang passed the ball to one of the stage helpers and returned to his seat swiftly. The name Lone Desert Smoke appeared on the board, in the F2 slot.

The drawing event lasted for only half an hour until all 32 teams were properly placed. There was nothing to really be excited about, as the real battle would be starting tomorrow, and will continue to do so every day. If

all battles continued on as planned, 25th and 26th of December will be the two days that will have the top eight battles. The top four battles will be held on 27, and 28th will host the semifinals. The final round will be held on the 29th, as well as the closing ceremony and the Lucky draw session.

The four teams from White Jade Castle were arranged in such a way: Crimson Rage will be in A, Sky High will be in H, the second Lone Desert Smoke team, led by Hundred Shots will be in D. Zhang Yang and his own team will be in F. Technically, if Hundred Shots remained undefeated, both Lone Desert Smoke team will have a final showdown.

However, Zhang Yang highly doubted that will happen. The first-half of the competition had several "in-the-future" strong S-class Professional League battle teams, such as Crimson Rage, Radiance, Imperial Sky, and Blue Sea. These guilds are all super strong, even as of now! It would be extremely difficult for Hundred Shots to remain in the competition.

That being said, the second-half of the competition had a few worthy opponents as well. Guilds like Brilliant Star and Breaking Dawn were as strong as Crimson Rage as well. It will take some effort for Zhang Yang to win the battle.

After the opening ceremony ended, the hall was cleared and everyone went back to their own room. Zhang yang could not find anything else to do, so he chose to log into the game. When he connected, he saw the in-game notice board was streaming the Soaring Swords competition live, with more than 50,000,000 viewers watching. The system announcement was constantly flashing red colored text messages in the comm channel.

24 hours was rather short when it comes to waiting. The competition started at 7pm, the 21th of December. Group A battle started and ended within expectations. After five intense matches, Crimson Rage emerged victorious at the first place, with Rolling Rocks at the second place. Group B battle started at 8.30pm, and Radiance won the first place, followed by Storm Riders. The battle competition continued on 22th December, 7pm, the night after. Group C's battle was won by Imperial Sky and Sunset Amber. Group D's battle started at 8.30pm with Lone Desert Smoke fighting against Ocean's Moon.

"Hey dummy, can they win?" Han Ying Xue gently nudged Zhang Yang. They were standing among the other spectators. The screening of the game was broadcast live on the big notice board. There were even commentators explaining the situation going on both sides. There were talks about the team's strongest players, the possible strategies that they could use, the formation of their battle plan, and even who was likely to be killed first. The battle teams were ready, assembled on the two far ends of the battle arena.

Zhang Yang could not immediately answer Han Ying Xue's question. He pondered for a bit and finally opened his mouth. "It's...hard. I can't say really. Only Lost Dream is considered to be a pro in the team. Galileo and Hundred Shots could still make some effort, and Fatty Han's DPS is still only above average. Fatty Han...if anyone gangs up on him, he will panic and forget to activate any escaping skills. Which makes him a sitting fat duck! I don't know much about the other team so, I can't predict anything for now. We can only rely on luck this time."

The battle started and unfortunately, Fatty Han's dumbstruck face made him the first target to be focused fire upon. Even though Lost Dream had managed to activate {Ambush} at the last minute and controlled two of the opposing attackers, he could only hold them back for a brief period before a volley of attacks ended Fatty Han life. The opponent won the match with two surviving members.

Team 2 of Lone Desert Smoke had fallen into the losing division.

In the other match of the same group, Blue Sea had easily defeated Rebirth Flames and also defeated Ocean's Moon in the victory division. Blue Sea was Group A's champion.

In the losing division match, Lost Dream went all out and managed to summon all his skills to display a wild performance like no one had ever seen before, bring a ray of hope to the team.

The final battle was Lone Desert Smoke's Team 2 vs Ocean's Moon.

After tasting the sweet taste of victory, Ocean's Moon repeated their previous strategy again. They laid down the pressure on Fatty Han.

Knowing that they had lost the same way before, Hundred Shorts had revised their battle plan. Fool me once, shame on me. They had used Fatty Han as a bait to tear apart Ocean's Moon's battle formation. In the midst of the chaos, Fatty Han had even managed to kill one of them as he went down.

After another rough tussle, both sides lost another member. At such a critical stage, only the strong would stand out. Lost Dream performed as how Zhang Yang had expected him to. He moved around, fast and agile, coupled with Lost Dream's trash talk, forcing the opponent to make a mistake, costing them their healer.

With no healer and only two members left to face three of them, Lone Desert Smoke emerged victorious. Team 2 of Lone Desert Smoke had managed to survive the match and earn their revenge on Ocean's Moon and entered the Top 16 teams.

On the third night, group E's battle started. Genesis and The Glory emerged victorious.

8.30pm, group F battle started. Lone Desert Smoke main team vs Youthful Era.

The opponent's team lineup were as followed:

Divinity's Son, Level 62, Male Dwarf, Sacred Knight, 15,230 HP

Cloud Dancer, Level 61, Female Human, Berserker, 13,980 HP

Frozen Starburst, Level 62, Male Beastman, Berserker, 14,260 HP

Prosperity Puppet, Level 62, Male Elf, Beastmaster, 13,650 HP

Gentle Flare, Level 61, Male Human, Assassin, 14,520 HP.

Chapter 276: Group Battle

5 minutes before the battle started, both teams had entered the mock arena. Lone Desert Smoke was represented by the color red and Youthful Era was represented by the color blue.

"Our opponents are mostly physical attackers," said Zhang Yang as he observed the opponent's team line up and class composition. "Do not underestimate the enemy. To stand here, facing us, they have no doubt earned the spot. We cannot afford to be careless."

"Alright then, what's the battle plan?"

"Focus fire on one guy at a time."

...

"You call that a battle plan?!"

Everyone else other than Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu rolled their eyes.

"There was never a battle plan to begin with. It all depends on how the enemy reacts and we will react accordingly. I'm just reminding you to be careful. Never let your guard down!"

"You don't say..."

"They have two Berserkers in their party. My guess is they intend to spam {Blast Wave}. They will prolly split up and fan out. Be careful not to stand in between those two Berserkers, or you will be stunned till kingdom come."

{Blast Wave} was a rare skill when players were still in the Level 40 stage. But three months after that, many players had known about the skill book from Kukulo Centaur tribe reputation shop. The higher the level, the easier it was to farm Reputation Points. Basically, almost all Level 60 players around had already possessed the skill.

"Hey noob tank, you go on and on like an old grandma," said Wei Yan Er.

"This grandma is gonna slap your naughty butt!" said Zhang Yang, pretending to be angry.

"Ayy! You stinky pervert!" cried Wei Yan Er while blushing like a ripe peach.

"Pervert!" Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and even the ever silent Sun Xin Yu scolded him in unison.

Zhang Yang cried a river. The way he treated Wei Yan Er was like a big brother teaching his young sister. It was just a sibling-like relation! Nothing more! Even if he wanted to get himself some loli, he would be picking someone else with a curved front! Not this little flat ironing board!

‘Ding! The battle of Team 1 Lone Desert Smoke vs Youthful Era will begin in 10 seconds!’

10, 9, 8, 7, 6...3,2,1!

The green lights was lit and the invisible wall of air was removed. Both sides started to rush towards each other with the intention to kill.

Zhang Yang and his bear stucked together like bread and butter and rushed, at the foremost of his party like a knife straight through the enemy’s heart.

{Wild Charge}! {Charge}! {Charge}! {Charge}! {Charge}!

Wei Yan Er, Cloud Dancer, Frozen Starburst, and Zhang Yang’s [Gold-Eared Bear King] all activated their {Charge}. Stuns appeared on both sides. Zhang Yang had been taking cover behind the bear and had remained unscathed. He swung the Dark Enigmatic Sword in his hand and struck Cloud Dancer.

‘-2,281!’

His gained some Rage points, enough to cast a {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-4,452!’

‘-4,890!’

Divinity’s Son was startled. He had never seen anyone with such destructive power before. Zhang Yang, as a Guardian could actually damage Cloud Dancer for more than 6,000 HP! He quickly chanted a healing spell to save her.

In the nick of time, Daffodil Daydream {Apparated} right into range and cast {Counter Magic} to immediately interrupt Divinity's Son casting of {Divine Ray}, also forcing all of his Holy attribute skills to enter a cool down period.

"I've been silenced! Guys, hurry up and target their team's Spellcaster!" cried Divinity's Son to his team.

Divinity's Son was positioned in the rear. He had never anticipated that Daffodil Daydream would actually {Apparate} right in midst of the team just to cast {Counter Magic}! A Spellcaster was naturally weak in Defense, and with Cloth armor, they were extremely weak to physical attacks. That was why they would normally hide behind the team and attack. Her sudden unforeseen action had confounded Divinity's Son! However, now that Daffodil Daydream had appeared in the mouth of the tiger, she had become the clear target for attacking!

Poof

Gentle Flare, the enemy's Assassin had appeared and stunned Daffodil Daydream with {Ambush}. However, before he could even move the dagger in his hands, Sun Xin Yu appeared behind with a poof as well. Similarly, she cast {Ambush} on him and started to bleed him out. What better way to describe this, than out of the frying and into the fire.

Wei Yan Er, Cloud Dancer, Frozen Starburst, and Zhang Yang's [Gold-Eared Bear King] all recovered at almost the same second. The two enemy warriors swiftly turn around and headed towards the still swaying Daffodil Daydream. Prosperity Puppet was drawing her bow on the other end, ready to release a volley of arrows towards Daffodil Daydream.

"Kill Cloud Dancer first!" Zhang Yang cried. Right before an enemy's attack was about to land on Daffodil Daydream, he quickly cast {Sacrifice} and protected her.

Transferred!

Transferred!

Transferred!

Cloud Dancer and Frozen Starburst and struck Daffodil Daydream with {Destructive Smash} and a normal attack. Prosperity Puppet had attacked with a normal shot and a {Take Aim}. Though she might seem to be taking the hits, the damage was all transferred to Zhang Yang.

"What a turn of events! Player Zhan Yu was able to protect player Daffodil Daydream with {Sacrifice} in just the nick of time! Look at that! It was in fact a 0.01 second before the attack had landed! The blue team attackers could not cancel their attacks in time and had just wasted a volley of skills!"

"Change target! Attack Drizzler!" Cloud Dancer and Frozen Starburst communicated in the party channel and they all wheeled around to Wei Yan Er at the same time.

Even though their first attack had failed, it had managed to force Zhang Yang to cast {Sacrifice}. They deemed it a fair trade.

It was hard not to notice two men running to you; Wei Yan Er saw them coming to attack her and grinned knowingly. She activated {Blood Rage} and swung the huge battle axe.

‘-8,016!’

‘-8,212!’

{Tornado Cleave}.

Unlike the other two guys that were about to attack her, Wei Yan Er had a level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon, and also plenty of skill points to spare. She had used those extra skill points and raised {Tornado Cleave} to Level 10, pushing the skill’s attack power to 170% melee damage. It may seem little but the final output was far stronger than their 150% melee damage - {Destructive Smash}.

Zhang Yang charged towards Cloud Dancer and used {Destructive Smash}, dealing a satisfying number of 4,444 damage. Even though Cloud Dancer had consumed a bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion], he was unable to escape death.

Right then, the {Counter Magic} on Divinity’s Son had just ended. He

was halfway through casting a healing spell when the target had dropped dead, automatically cancelling the spell.

He then quickly changed his target to Gentle Flare. Being attacked by Sun Xin Yu continuously, his HP was already dropping down like fully open faucet. She had equipped the new [Blade of Spider's Fang], which gave her a huge boost in attack power, and the blade had a powerful DoT effect.

However, just when he started chanting a spell, the white bear pounced on Divinity's Son. With a swift blow from the bear's claw, his spell casting was instantly dragged longer.

In the game, whenever a player receives an attack while casting a spell, there's a 70% chance that the casting duration would be extended. The limit was that it could not be extended to twice the original duration. Which meant that, a 2 second casting skill could be extended to at most only 4 seconds.

Divinity's Son was left flummoxed. He could grant himself the opportunity to finish his cast with a {Holy Shield}. But, it was just an attack from a pet! To use an important surviving skill just to cast a healing spell would be a complete waste! But, if he did not use {Holy Shield} he would not be able to save Gentle Flare.

The tide of war has turned, and the atmosphere was filled with confusion. With the healer left there standing unable to do anything at all, Sun Xin Yu's dagger slashed on swiftly and relentlessly, without giving any chance to Gentle Flare to retaliate. She only stopped attacking when Gentle Flare dropped dead.

5v3!

Youthful Era quickly admitted defeat to prevent themselves from being put through more shame. That being said, losing a match would not mean that they will lose the next match!

With that, the match was concluded with Lone Desert Smoke moving on to the victory team.

"Sigh...What a let down!' said Wei Yan Er as she removed her gaming helmet while blowing raspberries towards Zhang Yang.

In truth, Zhang Yang felt the same way. Even though everyone had experience with PvP, he had not expected to find such sore losers in such a professional match.

Even though there were preliminary rounds in the city, there were only 16 matches in this event. Back then, random parties were matched with random parties, and players could not come up with solid strategies in time, nor proper team lineups to counter the other parties.

After all, the professional league will only be held after this Soaring Swords competition. That was why the average capability of the players was still low. Unlike Zhang Yang, who had already been fighting in the professional league for at least two years! Recalling back the days when he was actually fighting professional players, it made him feel slightly melancholic.

The second battle started just after 10 minutes, featuring the fight between Angel Wings and Emperor's Return. The two battle teams were strong, but the that team emerged victorious was Angel Wings. Emperor's Return was sent off to the losing division, to go through further battles. Lone Desert Smoke will be facing Angel Wings in just the next 10 minutes.

Zhang Yang had spent his time carefully observing each of the team's equipment and status. "I think they might be using all Vitality type gemstones." Zhang Yang scratched his chin. "That has to be the explanation. How else could they all have more than 15,000 HP?"

"Hey hey! Noob tank! Look! Their Guardian seems very strong!" said Wei Yan Er as her eyes glinted with interest.

In the previous battle between Angel Wings and Emperor's Return, the Guardian from Angle Wings, Mei Chao Fung performed rather well. With skills executed at precise timing and accuracy, he managed to use {Thunder Strike} to slow, {Blast Wave} to stun, {Sacrifice} to cover a teammate, and other heroic acts that had made him stood out like sore thumb...or a hero to aspire for, depending on whose side you were on. It

was safe to say that without Mei Chao Fung, Angel Wings would definitely be far inferior to Emperor's Return.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and agreed with Wei Yan Er. Zhang Yang could see his past self in Mei Chao Fung. Back then, in his previous life, he was person who led the team. Lacking strong team mates and a good leader, Zhang Yang had to take the mantle and had dragged the team to survive in the Class A Professional League.

He laughed. "Leave this man to me. I'll personally handle him myself. I'll leave the rest of his team to you guys, yeah?"

"Hehehe! You betcha! I've got no interest in hacking away at an empty turtle shell anyway! I'll take care of the rest! Leave it to this young lady!" said Wei Yan Er confidently as she patted her flat chest.

"Hey! Stop hitting that spot! You're gonna iron yourself flat-ter! At this rate, you'll end up inverted!"

"What!?"

'Ding! The battle of Lone Desert Smoke Team 1 vs Angel Wings will start in 10 seconds!'

After the 10 seconds countdown ended, Zhang Yang sent the white bear to target the opponent's healer while he targeted Mei Chao Fung.

{Charge}! {Charge}!

Two Guardians slid through the floor, dragging their swords and clashing into each other, sending both of them into a state of stun. In just 1 second, both of them recovered. Mei Chao Fung felt that it would be rather meaningless, fighting against a hard tank. He might have a strong defense, but his attack was weak. Facing another opponent with a strong defense and attack, it would be a questionable act if he could even damage Zhang Yang.

A Guardian's main role in a PvP match was rather fixed.

1. To provide {Sacrifice} and {Vanguard Aggression} to help with the survivability of the entire team.

2. To use all crowd control skills to help maintain the tide of war.

3. To disrupt healing efficiency with {Destructive Strike}.

In the end, Mei Chao Fung turned back around and targeted Wei Yan Er instead of Zhang Yang.

Chapter 277: Just as Easy

Just when Mei Chao Fung thought that he had shaken off Zhang Yang and moved to Wei Yan Er, a sudden figure appeared in front of him, blocking out his unfocused vision. It was Zhang Yang himself. He too had moved and blocked Mei Chao Fung from trying to change his target. If he still persisted on moving forward, he will clash into Zhang Yang.

Mei Chao Fung clearly understood the difference in power between him and Zhang Yang. One simple glance at Zhang Yang's HP would tell all about the immense gap between the two of them. He had only around 18,000 HP while Zhang Yang had over 29,000 HP! The gap was ridiculous! If the two of them did crash into each other, the person who would be knocked back would be Mei Chao Fung!

He did not want to fight him, it would be a stupid decision. He sidestepped swiftly and tried to maneuver around Zhang Yang. But every single time he tried to move, Zhang Yang would be there to block his path. A step to the right, Zhang Yang was there. A step to the left, there he was again! Zhang Yang was behaving just like an annoying mirror!

A pro!

If Mei Chao Fung solely relied on his skills, he would not be able to out-manuever Zhang Yang. He had to use his active skills!

"Tch!" Mei Chao Fung clicked his tongue. He lifted his battle axe and swung it hard at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang strafed aside swiftly and avoided the attack. At the same time, he swung his axe up. Mei Chao Fung's movement were as agile as Zhang Yang. He traced Zhang Yang's movement and swiftly took a step back--the sword sliced the air in front of him.

From the perspective from professional players, avoiding a normal attack would be as easy as stepping away from a speeding bicycle rider, since normal attacks were easily telegraphed. When two professional tanks fought each other, both of them would left in an extremely awkward situation. Normal attacks would simply miss again and again. Both of

their Rage gauges were slowly dropping down at 2 points a second. How long would it take for them to finally realize that their action were like watering the sand in the Saharan Desert?

This was why tank class players would not simply rush into a fight. Just when it took an eternity to attack the enemy, the warrior class player could easily be healed back to full health with a simple click of {Berserker's Heal}. The cycle would then start over and loop endlessly.

F*ck it!

{Blood Rage}!

Mei Chao Fung decided to go all out. At that moment, he had completely forgotten about the competition. He only wanted to go all out with this Zhan Yu!

{Thunder Strike}!

‘-O!’

He stomped the floor and slowed Zhang Yang down. Even though he may not receive any damage at all, he was slowed. That was the main point of the skill in PvP! Those with higher movement speeds would definitely have the higher ground in battle!

With a quick slip and slide, Mei Chao Fung made his way to Zhang Yang's back. He lifted his axe to slash Zhang Yang's back! If an attack landed on a tank character's back, the effect of the shield will be muted.

However, just as he thought he could land a perfect slash, Zhang Yang had already spun around, with a big grin on his face!

{Block}!

+30 Rage!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-2,402!’

Mei Chao Fung was stunned. As if he had just witnessed a miracle, both of his eyes almost popped out of their sockets! Once a player was hit with

a slow effect, the turning speed was also reduced. To keep up with his speed, Zhang Yang must have predicted his movement and destination before moving around! This level of observation and decision making would require a monstrous level of athletic skill and insight to pull off! No amount of equipment or skill would be able to help you with that! It was all in the blood of the player!

"Hehe. Ha ha! HAHAAHAHA! Good one! As expected from China's number 1 tank! You have not let me down! Alright! Come on! Come at me, bro!" roared Mei Chao Fung.

Zhang Yang's grin morphed into a satisfied smile. Mei Chao Fung had acknowledged his strength and to respect that, Zhang Yang decided to show him his all-out skill!

{Thunder Strike}!

It was Zhang Yang turn to slow down Mei Chao Fung. Once his movement speed was reduced by 50%, he then proceeded to display a performance, cultivated from all five years of his gaming experience! His movement and attack were so quick and elaborate that Mei Chao Fung could not even catch his after image! In the front? In the back? The only place Zhang Yang could not be at was below him! The rest of the time, he was everywhere!

"Am I seeing things? I haven't even started drinking. So what am I looking at?! Player Zhan Yu is displaying some insane footwork while attacking Player Mei Chao Fung! Oh my lord! I have never seen anything like it! I would never even dream of such a thing being possible if I'm not witnessing it myself! This is something no one could even imagine! My word...I believe that this is an art! A dance! What a spectacular view. I truly believe that PvP will never be the same again! Take a look at that movement! I mean, no one could have known that PvP could involve something like that!"

The commentators were busy commenting as if they were two ESPN newscasters, busy praising a football star's goal kick.

Yet, it was not weird that the commentators were shocked. Their mouths

and voices were working. Unlike the audience who were watching the match. Almost all of them had their jaws touching the floor!

Back in the stage, Mei Chao Fung wanted to find a chance to stun Zhang Yang with {Blast Wave} to regain the upper hand, however, just as he wanted to activate the skill, Zhang Yang was all around him. {Blast Wave} effective area of attack was only a small conical shape area in front of the caster. How could he land a clean hit when Mei Chao Fung could not even catch his freaking shadow!

Relying on {Destructive Smash} and {Horizontal Sweep's} destructive damage, Mei Chao Fung was reduced down to only 20% HP after 20 seconds! Mei Chao Fung swiftly activated {Berserker's Heal} to prevent Zhang Yang from using {Killing Cleave}. However, carrying the debuff of {Destructive Smash}, {Berserker's Heal} had only healed him by 4,640 HP. Mei Chao Fung immediately took action and activated {Shield Wall}, struggling to survive. That being said, the skill had only provided him with a 10 second window.

Full Rage {Killing Cleave}!

‘-5,240!’

crack

Mei Chao Fung fell down to the ground and heard the system notification ringing in his ears.

‘Congratulations to Lone Desert Smoke Team 1 for obtaining two consecutive victory! You are now the champion of Group F!’

Just then, he realized that he was the last surviving member of his own battle team. With a calm heart, he accepted his fate. However, when he turned his head to survey the battleground, he heart sank when he noticed that Zhang Yang's entire team was still standing. All four female players were still standing and chilling as if the battle was nothing to be worried about.

Even though the power gap between Zhang Yang and him was large, but it could not have been at the point where his own team could not even kill

a person from Zhang Yang's team! It was impossible! That left him with only one explanation, Zhang Yang had been protecting his team mate with {Shield Wall}, {Sacrifice}, and other protecting skill, while fighting Mei Chao Fung at the same time! Just how strong was this man is?! While spinning around Mei Chao Fung like a hurricane, Zhang Yang could still find the time to protect his team mate on the other side of the battle field!? Was the gap between Zhang Yang and him, that huge?

Negative thoughts started to flood his mind as his self-esteem started to plummet.

"Don't feel bad, crazy f*ck. Our opponent was Lone Desert Smoke's main attacking team! There is nothing to be ashamed in losing to them! Besides, we can still fight as long as we win in the losing division! It's not the end of the world!" The guild master of Angel Wings, Angels Are Demons consoled him.

Without much rest time, the losing team battles started off. After the battle with Lone Desert Smoke, Angel Wings next opponent was Emperor's Return. Sadly, unlike Lone Desert Smoke Team 2, Emperor's Return lost and was eliminated from the competition.

24th of December, the last two groups had went up the stage to fight for the Top 16th position. In the end, Group G was led by Mugen and Breaking Dawn, and group H was led by Brilliant Star and Sky High.

The Top 16 battle outline were as follows:

First half:

Crimson Rage vs Storm Riders

Radiance vs Rolling Rocks

Imperial Sky vs Lone Desert Smoke Team 2

Blue Sea vs Sunset Amber.

Second half:

Genesis vs Angel Wings.

Lone Desert Smoke Team 1 vs The Glory.

Breaking Down vs Sky High.

Brilliant Star vs Mugen.

On the 25th of December, the first half of the battle took place at 7.30pm. Crimson Rage performed exemplary feats against Storm Riders and won the battle with a straight 2:0 victory.

8pm, the match between Radiance and Rolling Rock was held. The guild Radiance was able to perform on an entirely different level and overwhelmed their opponents with the score 2:0, eliminating them from the competition and being the second group to enter the top 8.

8.30pm, Zhang Yang and his team 2 members came to watch the match between Lone Desert Smoke Team 2 and Imperial Sky. The main problem they were facing in the match was the fact that Imperial Sky had already understood that Lost Dream was the main driving force of Team 2. One Sword Stroke was smart. He had cornered Lost Dream and kept him occupied. His team then killed the other members with relative ease.

2:0!

Lone Desert Smoke Team 2 faced an indiscriminate loss!

9pm, Blue Sea vs Sunset Amber! This battle was the first time a losing team had managed to stand out and won the battle. After three excruciating fights, Sunset Amber won the battle with a 2:1 score. So far, both teams in D group had been eliminated from the competition.

As the last battle of the night ended, everyone returned to their rooms to rest. Back at his own room, Zhang Yang saw Fatty Han sulking. He could not ignore the fat f*ck and patted his shoulder. "Chill Fat*ss. Hey! At least you get to be in the top 16! There's still the 40,000 dollars reward!"

Fatty Han turned to Zhang Yang and back to the floor. He sighed loudly. "At first, I could not accept defeat. My DPS was high...How could I lose?! However, after these few days, I realized something. Especially after losing to Imperial Sky, I realized that PvP is not just about having the higher damage. PvP requires a strong sense of control, skill, insight and maneuverability! And I have none of those! I better go back to the

secondary raiding party and be a pro there instead! I don't want to have my self-esteem go any lower!"

Zhang Yang gasped sarcastically. "Dayum bro! You finally admitted that you're just a sucky noob! How rare it is for you to admit that!"

"F*ck! Come on bro! I'm already heartbroken here! How can you call yourself my bro if you keep on attacking me like that!"

"Hahaha! Alright, how about this? I'll leave this room to you alone. I think this hotel would have those kind of service that could satisfy that one particular desire of yours?" Zhang Yang winked.

Fatty Han turned his head over to Zhang Yang. "Tsk. Tsk. Tsk...I don't ask for much. Just have Liu Shi Shi to come here and I'll handle the rest!"

"..."

Dream Technology was rather generous, even after losing, the organizers did not force the losing teams out of the hotel. They had allowed them to stay until the end of the entire competition, complete with the expenses.

On the side note, Zhang Yang's mystical footwork had cause a major stir up in the social media and the gaming world. Players had started to conduct their research, tracing Zhang Yang steps through the recorded video and trying to imitate him! Players had dubbed Zhang Yang footwork as the Butterfly Steps, because of Zhang Yang's wide area of movement which resembled the wings of a butterfly. Without a doubt, the Butterfly Step had proved to be too advanced for the current stage of the game. Not only were the general players tirelessly trying to learn the steps, even the professional players in the current competition could not stop thinking about it. However, since time was not as luxurious for them, they could not have learnt about it.

The night of 26th of December, the second half of the battle had eight teams being reminded to fight for their chance to be in the last remaining four teams to move on to the next stage of the competition.

7.30pm, the first battle between Genesis vs Angel Wings started.

A landslide victory was expected, based on forecasts and analysis.

Genesis was a popular team and was one of the team that had high odds of entering the finals. Their prowess was well proven. However, things had taken a different turn. Even though Angel Wings had only managed to enter the top 16 battle team, their capability was nothing to be taken note off. However, they had still managed to perform beyond expectations and managed to win the match with a 2:1 score, successfully eliminating Genesis from the competition!

Chapter 278: Quarterfinals

Eight o'clock sharp, the second contest started, Lone Desert Smoke versus The Glory.

Lone Desert Smoke's team won the loudest cheers. The official battle bets offered odds of 1.05 to 4.7 for Lone Desert Smoke to The Glory, respectively! However, many more fans placed bets for Lone Desert Smoke.

Easy as a pie!

Zhang Yang's team did not give The Glory any chances of winning. Regardless of levels, equipment, controls and teamwork, Zhang Yang's team reigned superior in all. Zhang Yang's team won an overwhelming victory in two matches and successfully broke into quarterfinals, showing their well-earned, prevailing dominance!

All eight qualifying teams were announced after 9.30 pm.

The first few matches were: Crimson Rage versus Sunset Amber; and Radiance versus Imperial Sky.

The second batch of matches were: Angel Wings versus Breaking Dawn; and Lone Desert Smoke versus Brilliant Star.

On 27th December, at 7.30 pm, Crimson Rage started the event, raging against Sunset Amber. The ability and strength of both teams were almost similar. Currently, both teams had won one round each at 1-1, and were now putting extra effort in the third and most crucial match.

The final round ended with both teams only left with an attacker and a healer each, an excruciatingly long, final phase of the match. The final phase lasted for more than seven minutes. Crimson Rage's healer, Perfumed Water was a Priest who was not as efficient in single-target healing as her counterpart, Sunset Amber's Sacred Knight. Perfumed Water ran out of MP first, and sadly, that was the end of Crimson Rage's stint!

It was a regrettable 1-2 loss.

The elimination of this beautiful all-girl team had left a lot of male players heartbroken and furious at Sunset Amber!

Due to the lengthy match, the following match between Radiance and Imperial Sky was affected, starting late at 8.20 pm.

That match too, was a close battle, with the third match beginning at a score of 1-1. However, Radiance made unexpected mistakes, and their Spellcaster was immediately killed under the combined attacks of the enemy. The Spellcaster had mistimed his {Ice Barrier} and left himself open to the enemy!

The balance broken, Imperial Sky's team members grabbed the chance and in one stroke, defeated their opponents soundly and proceeded to the semifinals!

Due to the long battles of the first two matches, the match between Angel Wings and Breaking Dawn did not happen until 9.00 pm.

"Noob tank, the Spellcaster threw the match!" Wei Yan Er looked at the Radiance members who had walked off-stage, bickering among each other, most of them clearly berating the Spellcaster.

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Maybe it was just a one sided contest!"

Such careless mistakes were not supposed to happen in any team who had made it to the quarterfinals, thus, the circumstances definitely looked dubious.

"Guild master Zhan Yu!" Snow Seeker led her four team members elegantly towards them, "It's almost your turn! You guys are the only team left from our White Jade Castle, be sure to fight hard!"

"Sister Snow Seeker, please do not worry. I will lead the team and our team will surely steamroll over all obstacles, we are brave and skillful in battle, we shall conquer everything... we are undefeatable like The Legend of the Swordsman!" Wei Yan Er initiated some sort of poorly worded, ancient oath from the battles of the olden days.

"Little brat, drop those drama series and start reading some books!" Zhang Yang reached out and waved a hand in front of Wei Yan Er's face

like he was shooing off an annoying fly. Zhang Yang replied, "Guild master Snow Seeker, if your healer was a Sacred Knight, the outcome would have been really different!"

"Oh, I'm sooo sorry for being a Priest!" Perfumed Water growled, rolling her eyes.

Snow Seeker smiled graciously and said, "Being able to enter the top eight ranking is more than enough for us! We'll leave the rest to you guys! Guild master Zhan Yu, although you guys have the most support out of all the fans, please does not underestimate Sunset Amber! They are definitely not weak. I even believe that they were holding back against us, trying to mislead the other teams!"

"Oh?" Zhang Yang muttered, genuinely surprised. If it was like what Snow Seeker said, then Sunset Amber's leader definitely took a great risk, but with convincing results! All these were semifinal teams, if Zhang Yang got careless, he might even get his team eliminated!

"Hmph, it doesn't matter, we'll just defeat them all!" Wei Yan Er clenched her fist as she said.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, that's a bold statement, I like it!"

"Silly Yu, I'm warning you, don't you dare have any thoughts towards Yan Er!" Han Ying Xue moved in between the two of them.

Zhang Yang let out of a sigh, simply waved his hand and said, "Take it easy, I have no interests in flat-chested lolis!"

Han Ying Xue immediately turned flirtatious and said, "Oh! So you do have the hots for me! Sigh, it's not like I chose to be born gorgeous!"

"Earth to Han Ying Xue!" Wei Yan Er furiously shook her out of her reverie.

As they spoke, the first match between Angel Wings and Breaking Dawn had started and Breaking Dawn's team completely mopped the floor with their opponents. The next match was no different. So much for Angel Wings writing a story for underdogs.

It was getting late, so the matches between Lone Desert Smoke and Brilliant Star started right away.

Both teams went up to the stage one after another and entered the battle arena. As the team leader, Zhang Yang went to the middle of the stage to shake hands with Brilliant Star's leader, Hawk Striker.

"Zhan Yu, from today onwards, we Brilliant Star will replace Lone Desert Smoke as China's Top Guild!" Hawk Striker hissed through his smiling teeth. Other than those words, onlookers would only see two men shaking hands in mutual respect, with no tension between the two.

Zhang Yang returned the smile evenly, knowing that it was to be expected. Currently, Lone Desert Smoke was indisputably the strongest guild in China. Naturally, they would be targeted by everyone. If Zhang Yang really took every jab like this to heart, he would wear himself out in no time!

"Then you guys should try harder than this!" Having said that, Zhang Yang headed back to his team without sparing a second glance.

"Noob tank, what did you say to him? That guy looks mad!!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang put the gaming helmet on, shrugged his shoulders and said, "Who knows?!"

The Five of them logged in the game one by one, and after a while, all of them teleported to the virtual arena and entered the final stages of preparation.

Brilliant Star's 5-man team members included:

Hawk Striker, Level 62, Male Orc, Bandit, 15,780 HP.

Slip and Fall, Level 61, Male Dwarf, Guardian, 19,260 HP.

Chaos Thought, Level 62, Male Dwarf, Sacred Knight, 14,820 HP.

Purple Carrot, Level 62, Female Elf, Phantom Assassin, 14,970 HP.

The Second Red Lotus, Level 61, Male Human, Cryomancer. 14,550 HP.

"We are going to have to blitz this! Focus fire on the Guardian first, force their Thieves to emerge from stealth. Then, I will use {Vanguard's Aggression} on all of us. I'll keep them busy with {Thunder Strike} and {Blast Wave} and use {Rearm} to start off the cycle again! We'll defeat them within 20 seconds, okay?" Zhang Yang looked at the four girls.

"Yeah! Violent and brutal, just the way I like it!"

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke versus Brilliant Star will officially begin after 10 seconds!'

Bang!

When the invisible wall disappeared, Zhang Yang and his team rushed towards their opponent.

Both teams' melee attackers came into contact.

Zhang Yang and his four teammates, along with Whitey, started hammering the enemy Guardian down!

Are they mad? Focusing their fire on a Guardian, of all things, right off the bat?!

Nobody in the entire hall could figure out what Lone Desert Smoke was up to!

While there was no denying the durability and toughness of Guardians, even they could not withstand an all-out onslaught from six enemies like this! Within three seconds, the Guardian's HP was at a critical state.

Even though Chaos Thought healed Slip and Fall with his greatest effort, Slip and Fall was already under a debuff that reduced 75% of his healing effect! Slip and Fall had no choice but to use {Warrior's Will} to cancel Sun Xin Yu's {Kidney Shot} while activating {Shield Wall} and {Blast Wave} at the same time.

As Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were standing at both sides of Slip and Fall while Zhang Yang was directly in front of him, his {Blast Wave} could only strike a person! Out of the three, Slip and Fall decided to target Zhang Yang!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot both emerged from stealth mode, one of them stunning Wei Yan Er with {Ambush} while the other used {Blind} on Daffodil Daydream, incapacitating her momentarily. They then focused fire on Wei Yan Er!

"Hah! Bout time you guys showed up!" Zhang Yang laughed loudly, activating {Warrior's Will} and casting {Sacrifice} on Wei Yan Er. Almost immediately after, he took a few steps back and unleashed {Blast Wave}, stunning all three of them.

Wei Yan Er also quickly shook the stun off herself using {Warrior's Will} and the team started raining blows on Hawk Striker!

"Slip and Fall, quickly activate {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier!" Chaos Thought hurriedly shouted, knowing that Hawk Striker would fall in no time!

"I can't, my {Warrior's Will}'s cool down is not completed yet, and I'm still stunned for another 3 seconds!" Slip and Fall shouted loudly in the team.

"Let me use {Blur}!" Hawk Striker was the leader of Brilliant Star's team. Befitting of the role, he was calm and analytic. His shadow blurred as he entered {Blur}'s state, where Zhang Yang's team had only a 25% chance of hitting him with physical attacks!

This was a survival skill for Thieves. They could activate it while stunned, similar to the Warriors' {Shield Wall}.

Only Daffodil Daydream's Magic attacks continued landing on him with continued damage.

"Change target to Purple Carrot!"

Purple Carrot also activated {Blur}.

"Keep attacking her!"

Currently, Slip and Fall had {Shield Wall} activated, while the other two Thieves were in {Blur} states. Their Knight and Hunter were standing too far away to assist. A 75% evasion rate would not grant them full

invincibility. As long as they reduced Purple Carrot's HP to 20% she would be as good as dead, as {Killing Cleave} was unblockable, and had a guaranteed chance of hitting!

Four seconds later, {Blast Wave}'s stun effect ended, but Purple Carrot still had 10,000 hitpoints. This was thanks to the effects of {Blur} and Chaos Thought's continuous healing.

Brilliant Star quickly launched a counterattack against Zhang Yang's team!

Zhang Yang activated {Vanguard's Aggression}, protecting his entire party.

The battle had seemed to be at an impasse!

However, Slip and Fall's {Shield Wall} duration ended. Zhang Yang and the gang quickly switched their target to Slip and Fall once again!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot used {Vanish} without hesitation, and then used {Ambush} to stun some of Zhang Yang's team, so that they could buy him some time, and immediately started lashing out like the sneaky thieves they were!

"Fall back!"

Both opposing Thieves were still under {Blur}'s state and his {Thunder Strike} would not necessarily land, forcing them out of stealth! However, the disadvantage of {Stealth} was a reduced movement speed, and as long as Zhang Yang delayed them for a few more seconds, {Blur}'s effect will be gone, and then it would time for them to attack!

Back off, back off, back off!

Zhang Yang mentally counted down the seconds. Suddenly, he advanced, stamping on the ground and launching a {Thunder Strike}!

Pa! Pa!

Two shadows were instantly struck out of the thin air--Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot!

"How..?" Hawk Striker was shocked. Zhang Yang had accurately

predicted the locations of both thieves, forcing them out of stealth with a single move!

Zhang Yang flashed his teeth. He was already competent at "catching" Thieves in his past life, all of them professional players with four to five years of experience, these substantially less experienced thieves were child's play to him! Besides, even after taking all of that into consideration, Sun Xin Yu was still, definitely more skilled at "catching" thieves than he was!

Wei Yan Er stepped in, unleashing {Blast Wave} stunning the two thieves!

Slip and Fall hurriedly used {Vanguard's Aggression}. As both Thieves were stunned, unable to move nor dodge blows, all their survival skills spent, they were in deep trouble!

"Attack their Guardian!" Zhang Yang issued a new command.

All of them dashed towards Slip and Fall.

The {Vanguard's Aggression} barrier could not be moved after activation! Thus, Slip and Fall did not back off but dashed towards Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot. He needed to run into the protection barrier and wait for Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot's stunning effects to end before he could launch attacks!

‘{Thunder Strike}!’

Zhang Yang stomped the ground, and Slip and Fall's speed was slowed down immediately!

Lone Desert Smoke proceeded to unleash all of its firepower on Slip and Fall!

Slip and Fall was a tank. But tank or not, when faced with the Yellow-Gold attacks of an entire team, there was no point deluding yourself! Slip and Fall had already used his {Shield Wall} and he was also under the effects of {Destructive Smash}, so he was all on his own now.

Within six to seven seconds, Slip and Fall became the first player to be

eliminated!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot quickly dashed towards Zhang Yang! As Zhang Yang also already used {Vanguard's Aggression}, they still had a chance to win!

Zhang Yang only laughed and resetted all skills' cool down by using {Rearm}, and then he launched another {Blast Wave} to stun the oncoming Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot could just cry there and then. They had been stunned three times within 30 seconds! It was oppressive! They were the dancers in the shadows, flitting through the dark, striking when least expected. But now, they had been turned into clumsy ducklings out of water, constantly being stunned again and again!

Such a tragedy!

With no more survival skills, and no protection, it was all over for them!

1-0, Lone Desert Smoke won the first match!

Chapter 279: Rigged?

The second match started five minutes later!

Brilliant Star's team was still discouraged from last game's loss. After some half-hearted, disorganized swings, they were quickly defeated.

2-0, Lone Desert Smoke wins!

"Noob tank, you are Level 67 and I'm Level 64! When we get the championship, I'll gain three levels, along with the MVP award which grants me another level, so I'll be level 68, one level above you!!" Wei Yan Er grinned. She loved stepping on Zhang Yang's head.

"Silly girl, if your elementary school's math teacher heard that, he would run headfirst into a wall!" Zhang Yang sighed.

The others at the dining table only smiled gently.

Wei Yan Er bit her fingers for a while and said, "Humph, can't people act cute for a little?"

"Eh, you see..." Fatty Han pointed at a corner of restaurant, Liu Wei was sitting closely with a tall, young man, their faces so close to each other that it was inevitable for Fatty Han to suspect that they were lovers.

That tall and young man was not just anyone else, but the Top tank from Zhang Yang's previous life, One Sword Stroke!

What in the world were these two guys doing together? In Zhang Yang's previous life, they were never even mentioned in the same breath!

"What's wrong, Brother Fatty? Something interesting about those two?" being the blabbermouth that he was, Lost Dream immediately perked up and asked.

Fatty Han was a pretty good bullshitter himself. He immediately made up a romantic man's love story that broke secular prejudice between Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke, which caused Lost Dream's eyebrows to wiggle like earthworms. The others started commenting about the eyebrows instead of Fatty Han's story.

Could it be that since Liu Wei failed to bribe Lone Desert Smoke, he decided switched his target to Imperial Sky?

Zhang Yang was deep in thought. But, the guild Liu Wei bribed was Blue Sea. Could the timeline be altered at this point once again? But, why would One Sword Stroke even consider Liu Wei's deal?

As One Sword Stroke would be the China's S-Class League iconic character in the future, along with all sorts of endorsements in advertisements, his annual income would exceed more than 400,000,000 dollars! Besides, he was the successor of Sky and Ocean Electronics, why would he collaborate with Liu Wei?

Zhang Yang suddenly had an epiphany, and whipped out his phone to surf the net, looking up Sky and Ocean Electronics' information. He nodded in understanding.

Five years from now! Currently, Sky and Ocean Electronics was still a small medium sized company, worth less than 50,000,000 dollars. Also, because of Zhang Yang's intervention in this life, him winning all the First Clears had really sent the other teams down a notch!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, First Clear competitions were much intense, and Imperial Sky had rose dominant out of them all! Furthermore, Imperial Sky also successfully obtained the first territory in China under One Sword Stroke's leadership!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, One Sword Stroke was much more of a legend than he was now! Just like Zhang Yang now had, he had his equivalent of Thunderstorm Castle and Little Merchandize Shop! Even now, would he have collaborated with Liu Wei?

Obviously, the answer would be no!

If Zhang Yang did not exist in this timeline, Liu Wei's first target would definitely have been Imperial Sky. However, in his previous life, One Sword Stroke had obviously said "no" to Liu Wei, but this time...

Zhang Yang realized just then, he was the matchmaker of these two men!

Liu Wei was wealthy and One Sword Stroke was strong in leadership, Zhang Yang could not imagine what kind of power these two men would produce together!

Zhang Yang clenched his fist forcefully, a friend of Liu Wei's was an enemy of his! The friend of my enemy is my enemy! He would have to make moves against Imperial Sky should they threaten his position.

Liu Wei met Zhang Yang's gaze and the handsome, charming man lifted a hand up, firing an imaginary pistol at him. Poof his mouth went, a sinister gleam in his eyes, like a serpent which could swallow a person in a single mouth! Zhang Yang felt a chill rising up his spine.

This was the Liu Wei in Zhang Yang's impression, the arrogant and evil person that he knew!

"F*ck, that pretty boy is so arrogant!" Fatty Han roared, having seen the gesture as well. He had unbuttoned his top collar, ready to punch Liu Wei.

"Fatty, sit down!" Zhang Yang said calmly, keeping his eyes locked on Liu Wei, Zhang Yang slowly raised his right hand, and then kept his another four fingers and only his middle finger remained upright!

"He he!" it looked fun for Wei Yan Er, so she also followed Zhang Yang, and vulgarly showed her middle finger as well.

"Ha ha ha!" the rest of the gang also followed Zhang Yang, and showed their middle fingers at Liu Wei one after another, even Sun Xin Yu.

With their dining table being so full of pretty girls, several guests were actually sneaking occasional glances at Han Ying Xue and other pretty girls. The guests were stunned when they saw the pretty girls pulling off such indecent gestures! However, a few people also found it interesting, and like obedient sheep, they started throwing middle fingers in the same direction as the girls.

Humans tend to have herd mentality, and more fingers raised up, as it seemed to be the cool thing to do at that moment.

All of a sudden, hundreds of people in the restaurant stopped eating and drinking to show their middle fingers at Liu Wei.

Liu Wei felt his gut sinking into nothingness! His handsome facial expression turned red and pale, he was so embarrassed that he wished there was a hole in the ground for him to bury himself in!

Zhang Yang did not think that his random gesture would cause such an effect with the help of those pretty girls. Zhang Yang was astonished, and could not help but laugh.

"Ha ha ha" Han Ying Xue and the rest broke out in laughter, not expecting that effect themselves.

The laughter influenced the crowd and the restaurant was suddenly filled with clueless. pure laughter.

Liu Wei's face turned extremely red, and he snorted in disgust, glaring at Zhang Yang one last time before walking out from the restaurant like a wounded animal making its escape. It only fueled the crowd's laughter even more.

On the evening of the 28th of December, the first semifinal match started with Sunset Amber versus Imperial Sky!

Both of these teams were definitely close in power. Sometimes, one of the team members would do a minor mistake and get caught by the opponent, and this situation was juggled between the two sides until the match ended!

1-1, both teams had drawn in two matches and started the crucial third match!

It was supposed to be a wonderful match, but one of Sunset Amber's Thieves made a fatal mistake! He was supposed to use {Blind} to daze the opponent's healer and defeat the opponent, but his {Blind} inexplicably missed the target!

Everyone knew that when {Blind} was being activated, all a player had to do was to keep their eyes on their target, and it would never miss!

The audiences dropped in dead silence, as voices started to boo. Accusations of match fixing flew through the air. Regardless of it being a deliberate move or a mistake, Sunset Amber regrettably lost to Imperial

Sky with the score of 1-2!

At 9.00 pm, another semifinal started, Lone Desert Smoke versus Breaking Dawn.

Breaking Dawn was the only team who had two healers when they broke into final top 16 positions. Their healers had strong healing endurance and healing capability! Because they had two healers who could provide healings to all the team members, thus, even focus fire on a single member would prove difficult!

As long as they dragged on the duration of match, their long-term heals would shine and wear the opponent down!

However, nobody blitzed better than Zhang Yang and his team. Breaking Dawn had no options of defending themselves against the overwhelming offense!

Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} removed 75% of healing effects, turning both of them into half a healer! Even without that, the combined attacks of Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, and Whitey would already overwhelm the healing rate of even 2 healers. Breaking Dawn simply stood no chance.

2-0!

Zhang Yang's team defeated Breaking Dawn effortlessly. A lot of teams were actually frustrated with Breaking Dawn's dual healer strategy, but Zhang Yang's team had steamrolled over them with sheer brute force!

Absolute dominance!

Lone Desert Smoke's team proudly broke into the finals. They would compete with One Sword Stroke for the finals tomorrow night.

...

"Ding Ding!"

The doorbell rang. Zhang Yang walked to open the door, and saw Radiance's guild master, Sword of Light together with Sunset Amber's guild master, Greensleeves Prince standing at the corridor. Zhang Yang

was a little surprised and greeted them, "Oh, guild master Sword of Light and guild master Greensleeves Prince, please, please come in!"

Zhang Yang stepped aside graciously.

Currently, left Zhang Yang was alone in the guest room as Fatty Han had picked up a sexy girl on the way back, and had gone on a date.

"I never would have thought that two of you were close!" Zhang Yang made two cups of coffee for both of them and being surprised. They were from different cities, different servers after all.

Sword of Light shook his head and said, "Although I knew of Greensleeves Prince long ago, I have never met him before, not till today!"

Greensleeves Prince nodded silently in affirmation.

Zhang Yang was puzzled and asked, "So...what's this visit about then?"

For a brief moment, Sword of Light's face flashed with fury, and he said, "Guild master Zhan Yu, you may call me a sore loser for this, but our loss to Imperial Sky raised up too many questions! The circumstances of it were simply too suspicious! Venshi simply cannot explain how he made such mistake!"

Venshi was the Spellcaster who made a careless mistake when they were battling with Imperial Sky's team for the third match yesterday. Because of his careless mistake, the hope of Radiance breaking into the semifinals was ruined.

Greensleeves Prince also said, "Lonely Tree's mistake was also inexplicable! When I saw Radiance's match, I could not help but think, why do such newbish, amateur mistakes only occur when Imperial Sky is involved?"

Sword of Light continued, "I did some asking around on my team, and they said that Venshi had been sneaking around a few days ago, constantly whispering into his phone. They had thought that it was a family member, or his lover, but nobody asked!"

"Lonely Tree also met a stranger for two hours this morning, and I too

have no idea on what they are talking about. However, I have good reason to believe that both Venshi and Lonely Tree have been paid off to throw the matches!"

"I agree!" Sword of Light nodded in acknowledgement, "But it's too late for that now. We have lost our battles, people would only think of us as sore losers if we voiced this out! However, we cannot let such underhanded tactics pass! Guild master Zhan Yu, Lone Desert Smoke is definitely stronger than Imperial Sky, anyone could see that. You must be careful, there's all the more reason for them to resort to dirty tricks!"

Chapter 280: Tricks

After Sword of Light and Greensleeves Prince left, Zhang Yang went deep in thought.

Although he had not known One Sword Stroke well in his past life, he would never expect such a distinguished figure to use such contemptible ways!

Liu Wei!

That's right! Zhang Yang's eyes shone, only Liu Wei would slink around and manipulate people in such manner! Only with his wealth could offer such important key persons in Radiance and Sunset Amber to turn their coats!

Everything about it spoke of Liu Wei. In Zhang Yang's previous life, Liu Wei had headhunted all the talented members in Blue Sea and had left with only an empty shell. Finally, he built The Myth and replaced Blue Sea!

What if Liu Wei bribes Zhang Yang's 5-man team?

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were money-grubbers, however, they were in it for the fun of earning, not the money itself. They had more than enough wealth to go around for themselves. In fact, if Liu Wei really wanted to bribe these two money-grubbers, Liu Wei would definitely lose his money and go bankrupt! These two ladies were billionaires, it was an absolutely ludicrous idea!

Sun Xin Yu? You won't be bribing her, you're just paying for your own execution fees!

Daffodil Daydream? That girl may not have been born with a silver spoon in her mouth, but she has been with Zhang Yang for a while, and in addition to the fixed 100,000 dollars monthly salary, she still had additional earnings from the sales of her dungeon runs, as a result, she would already be earning millions! As long as she did not have a screw lose somewhere, she definitely would not consider such short term benefits! Besides, she had proven her loyalty time and again, directly

managing the guild's wealth and storehouse!

Well, that leaves only Zhang Yang himself! Oh, Liu Wei did already approach him, but only got humiliated in return!

His team was basically impregnable!

"Ding Dong!"

The doorbell rang once again.

Sword of Light and Greensleeves Prince again? Zhang Yang walked to open the door and saw a waitress who came with a dining trolley. He frowned and said, "Wrong room, I didn't order anything!"

The waitress looked at a paper, revealed a smile and apologized, "I'm sorry to bother you!"

"It is okay!" Zhang Yang took a step backwards, but when he wanted to close the door, he saw the waitress holding a spray bottle and an odd smell rushed into his nasal cavity, "You..." Zhang Yang could only speak a word, before dizziness overcame him and he lost his balance. He leaned against the door and sank to the ground. His world became dark.

Bang!

Zhang Yang stirred. As his vision recovered, he found himself lying on the bed in the room with about seven to eight cops with uniform surrounding him!

What was happening here?!

"You are under arrest for prostitution!" a cop with a strong Shanghai's accent said.

Two cops immediately came over and cuffed him!

Prostitution??

Zhang Yang scanned the surroundings, and realized that a woman lay at his left side, blankets wrapped around her naked body. Her long hair covered her face, hiding her identity! Liu Wei....only he could come up with such a scenario!

However, prostitution was not a serious crime. Zhang Yang would only be slapped with a fine and spend a few nights in lockup!

But he had much bigger things to worry about now!

Tomorrow would be the finals of the Soaring Swords competition, and as long as Zhang Yang remained in the lockup, Lone Desert Smoke would be severely handicapped. In a four versus five matchup against Imperial Sky, they stood no chance!

Zhang Yang did not have time to bother about being wrongly arrested or falsely charged. Zhang Yang would only bother about it after the Soaring Swords competition!

The Liu family's home base was in Lin Hai City, and Liu Wei could easily pull the wool over everyone's eyes in Lin Hai City! In Shanghai City, Liu Wei had so much sway that this was child's play for him!

Zhang Yang forced his body to move, but he heard one of the cops mutter, "Resisting arrest?" The next moment, he felt the sting and shock of an electric baton, and fell back helplessly. Still weak from the drug, he was basically rendered comatose.

A few cops bodily manhandled Zhang Yang out of the hotel and drove off.

After they reached the police station, the cops simply flung him into a cell without any due process, and went on their own business.

What should I do?

Zhang Yang was deep in worry! Claim his innocence? Obviously, the cops were acting under Liu Wei's orders, they would not listen to him!

He had no chance of making a phone call, for he was basically naked when they discovered him, all he had was a blanket to cover himself!

Damn it! Damn it!

Liu Wei must have sent that sexy girl to get Fatty Han away and leave Zhang Yang alone in the room! It was pointless no matter how cautious Zhang Yang was, as Liu Wei would have thought up of a plan anyway!

There was no other way of undermining Lone Desert Smoke, so Liu Wei had to come up with a different kind of trap! Liu Wei's motive was to keep Zhang Yang in the lockup for at least one day!

Zhang Yang racked his brains to find a solution, but could not think of anything else until next day, at 5.00 pm, a cop came patrolling, and Zhang Yang's eyes shone suddenly.

...

In front of the Soaring Swords competition showcase stage.

"Eh, where is that silly Yu? Where in the world is he?!" Han Ying Xue tapped the ground with a foot impatiently as their match was only half an hour away!

"Little Yang is not back yet?" Fatty Han panted, running over.

"Fatty pervert, aren't you staying in the same room with silly Yu? How could you do not know where he is?" Han Ying Xue questioned Fatty Han.

Fatty's face turned red and answered, "I'm sorry that I'm so charming. I was approached by a sexy girl last night, and as a result, I was 'busy' the entire night! I did not see little Yang when I went back to the hotel room this morning. Maybe he got jealous of me getting all the action and decided to go hunting himself? Heheh, he's really 'busy' huh, doing it for almost a whole day!"

"Fatty, can't you ever say anything good? Guild master is not a person like that!" Daffodil Daydream immediately spoke up.

"Ha ha, pretty sis Daffodil Daydream, don't you fancy little Yang?! Do you want me to be your matchmaker?" Fatty Han started to ramble on.

"Something's not right! No matter how dumb silly Yu is, he will not go missing at such a critical moment. What should we do? The match is going to start!" Han Ying Xue was anxious.

Sun Xin Yu was leaning against the wall at a corner, her face deep in thought.

"What happened in the hotel?" Lost Dream scratched his head.

"Little Yang left his mobile phone behind. I glanced through the room just now and his clothes are still in the room. It's weird, as if someone took him in his sleep or something!" Fatty Han started to worry, but thought about Zhang Yang's skills and shrugged the thought off.

"Lone Desert Smoke, the final will begin in 20 minutes, please hurry up and prepare!" a staff member walked towards them.

"Alright!" Han Ying Xue answered and turned back to the group, worry lining her face.

"Forget about it, since noob tank is not here, it's up to us four ladies. Let them taste the capability of our female army!"

"Eh, aren't you are Miss Han and Miss Wei?" Liu Wei suddenly came to them, smiling sinisterly, "I do not seem so see your guild master here? Sigh, oh dear, what an irresponsible person? How could he go missing at such a moment?"

"Pretty boy, what are you talking about?!" Fatty Han rounded up on him.

"It is nothing, I just wanted to remind you guys. Ah, the final will be started in 19 minutes and 12 seconds! Ha ha, I should not disturb you guys, I shall look for a seat to watch the contest. See ya!" Liu Wei laughed out loud and went into the hall.

"What an annoying fellow!" Wei Yan Er spat on the ground.

"Let's go in!"

"Excuse me, may I know who is police officer Sun Xin Yu?" when all of them wanted to go in showcase stage, a policeman in uniform ran towards them, his brow shiny with sweat.

Sun Xin Yu took a step forwards and replied, "It is me!"

That policeman was astounded by Sun Xin Yu's beauty, and he quickly blinked, he whipping out a mobile phone while saying, "I'm Zhang Yang's university friend, oh, right, you guys know him as Zhan Yu. He is in our lockup now, and he got a recording for you guys. He thought of calling you guys, but he cannot remember any of your phone numbers and he also

thought of calling the hotel, but you guys were nowhere near your rooms!"

"Your police station?"

"Why is little Yang captured?"

"What happened to silly Yu?"

"How could the boss be in the police station?"

All of them peppered him with questions.

Sun Xin Yu played the recording in mobile phone, and Zhang Yang's frantic voice rang out, "Ice cube, quickly make a call and get me out of here! That bastard Liu Wei set me up, he drugged me last night, and got me arrested! Some prostitution thingy, I don't know the details! I will tell you everything else when I get out of here, the owner of this phone is an old friend from my university, his name is Zhao Xiao Song! He will cooperate!"

"F*ck, it's that pretty boy!"

"No wonder he came over just now, it was his doing!"

"Such a shameless person!"

"So despicable!"

"Sister Sun, do you have any connection in Shanghai? Otherwise, we'll get Lost Dream to help us. Isn't he always saying that his dad is so capable?" Fantasy Sweetheart said.

"Damn, my dad is really very capable!" Lost Dream retorted as his father was a Deputy provincial level's military office! However, he did not bother to elaborate further and quickly asked Zhao Xiao Song, "Which area is your police station?"

Sun Xin Yu had already taken out her phone and was dialing furiously.

"Dong Ming Street Police Station!" Zhao Xiao Song quickly answered.

Sun Xin Yu walked to a side and started talking. Then she walked back to the crowd within 30 seconds, her facial expression remained unchanged like nothing had happened. Lost Dream was also on the phone, chatting

like a machinegun.

"How long does it take to travel from Dong Ming Street?" everyone looked at Zhao Xiao Song.

"If there is no traffic jam, at least 20 minutes!" Zhao Xiao Song answered immediately.

"Even if that silly Yu is released now, he won't make it for the first match!" Han Ying Xue thought for a while and said, "Let's just buy him time in the first round, and hope he makes it to the next round!"

"En!"

Chapter 281: Here I Come!

It was 7:30 pm, the first match of the Soaring Swords Competition Finale had begun!

The audience immediately noticed the situation and started chattering among themselves! Would a guild master and party leader simply not show up at such an important event? Did he get cold feet? Was he lost in some paradise of his own?

The rules of the competition, only the five players who registered for the competition can enter the competition. If anything led to the shortage of one person or so, they would have to make do!

There came a wave of 'Boo' from the audience!

Since the beginning of the quarterfinals, those parties who went up against Imperial Sky all seemed to suffer some misfortune! During the quarterfinal match, the spellcaster from the Radiance was acting silly; during the semifinals, the thief from the Yellow Flame was floating about like an idiot; and now, someone was completely missing!

Everyone could connect the dots at this rate!

Even if Han Ying Xue and the others unleashed 120% of their real strength, they were outnumbered and mismatched from the start. Furthermore, One Sword Stroke was the number one tanker in Zhang Yang's previous life, and was a powerful player in his own right! With his coordinated control between his {Sacrifice}, {Vanguard's Aggression}, {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike}, and some additional outstanding tactical commands, the 'girl-team' had to swallow down the first trace of defeat ever since they debuted!

"I'm so mad now!" Han Ying Xue crossed her arms with a violent, sudden jerk, causing her massive, outstanding pair of jugs to jiggle in shock as they were momentarily crushed, before spilling over her arms, as she surveyed the area with her bewitching eyes.

"Why isn't the noob tank here yet?!" Wei Yan Er was positively wailing

now, her tough facade completely shattered! They now saw clearly, the importance of a Guardian. Although Guardians definitely lacked offensive power, they were an irreplaceable class in the arena. They provided massive support to their allies, while controlling the movements of the enemy!

"This is bad, the second round of the match will begin in 10 minutes time..." Daffodil Daydream almost looked nauseous.

It was not that they were sore losers, but to be defeated under circumstances was laughable!

Without a word, Sun Xin Yu took out her cellphone. The girls could only hear something about "cutting the power" and "I shall take full responsibility". They could not help but to look at each other in the face. What sort of woman possessed such power?

This is Shang Hai City! In an internationally recognized financial metropolis, how much influence would it take to cut the power supply of a large hotel?

Liu Wei laid back against his seat, smirking contentedly.

The rich would always control the world! He would only need to sit back while setting his grunts to work! What good would the skills and combat prowess of Zhang Yang be when he could just make him disappear like that! This was just the beginning, since Zhang Yang had insulted him time and again, he intended to slowly 'take care' of him! First, he would buy over the core members of Lone Desert Smoke, and after hollowing out their 'backbone', he would leave Zhang Yang as a general without an army!

In an online game, what can one person do? Give a player a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment, and have the player triumph over tens of thousands of players?

After securing the championship of the Soaring Swords competition, Imperial Sky would rise to fame, while under the lead of One Sword Stroke and his leadership, Imperial Sky shall become the strongest guild in the whole of China! When that time comes, their 'backbone' too, shall be

hollowed out. After ousting One Sword Stroke from the guild, he could finally write his own myth of 'Liu Wei'!

That's right, myth! And after that, his guild shall be named after as 'The Myth'!

"All contestants please log in, the second round of the match is beginning shortly!" the voice of the hostess, Liu Wan Fei began to echo.

Victory was almost at hand! The smile on Liu Wei's face only grew wider with each passing moment!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The lights of the showcase hall went out of a sudden, and the crowd rose in uproar and shrill screams. Soon after, people started turning on their cellphone flashlights. They started muttering unhappily.

"What's with this power failure!"

"A big hotel like this having power outage? Where's the backup generator?"

"Time for some touchy touchy in the dark!"

"Argh! Pervert!"

"Someone touched my butt!"

"Beat him!"

A brawl instantly broke out!

"Everyone, remain calm, the hotel management is doing all that they can, the power will be restored shortly!" the hotel staff shouted over the din.

Liu Wei was stumped, he had not considered power outage, out of all things! But... power failure was just a power failure, Zhang Yang was still sitting in the jail, this would only be a short delay to his great uprising!

"Sister Sun, you are really something, you know that, did you really do this?" Wei Yan Er looked at Sun Xin Yu in admiration.

Sun Xin Yi only smiled knowingly for an instant.

Even after 10 minutes, there was no sign of power being restored, and the crowd was getting hot and furious, trapped in warm, stale air, and darkness.

Sun Xin Yu's phone rang and after listening to the other end, she simply said, "Let's give them back power!"

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The hall was instantly lit up again.

Liu Wan Fei was shaking her round butt to left and right as she catwalked up to the center stage. Those with sharp eyes immediately spotted a trickle of white, milky liquid at the edge of her lips. There was only red wine on her table, there was no milk on it!

At that instant, countless pairs of murderous eyes swiveled around to burn holes in the straight faces of the two officials sitting close to the back of the stage.

"Alright, the power has been restored back to normal, let us now move back on to the match between Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS Imperial Sky, the second round of the match shall carry on immediate---"

"Wait!" the voice of Zhang Yang suddenly echoed through, as he bounded towards the stage, "Hahaha, can you believe it I actually overslept! My bad, my bad!"

Wow!

The audience lost their minds. The very air shook with their cheers and screams, as if the messiah himself has arrived!

"Hehe, guildmaster Zhan Yu's timing couldn't have been any better! Your party has already lost one round, things were really looking back for them!" Liu Wan Fei pointed her finger towards the location of Han Ying Xue and the party, and then her tone got more serious, "Guildmaster Zhan Yu, please make ready, the competition is about to start!"

Liu Wei's eyes almost popped out of his sockets then!

What was going on? Didn't he already 'notify' them to keep Zhang Yang

in a 24-hour custody? They couldn't even handle such an easy task?

"Are you Liu Wei?"

Just as Liu Wei was scratching his head, wondering about the incomprehensive situation, two policemen in uniforms went up to his side, flashing their badges. The two bodyguards of Liu Wei immediately stood up, with the 'I dare you to make a move' expression on their faces.

Liu Wei quickly reached his hands out, hinting the two bodyguard not to act rashly! This is Shang Hai, not Ling Hai, and he could not flaunt his prowess without knowing what is in these waters! He spoke calmly, "I am Liu Wei, so what brings you two officers here?"

"We suspect that you are connected to a murder case, please come with us!" One of the policemen took out a pair of handcuffs and dangled it in front of Liu Wei, "Please cooperate!"

The blackout was unfortunate, and the sudden appearance of Zhang Yang was unprecedented. They could have been dismissed as unfortunate coincidences, ridiculous as they seemed. But now, something was really wrong here! He could not help but go numb with shock!

Anyone with a fair bit of connection could easily arrange for Zhang Yang's release. But to cut the power supply of the entire hotel, and for as long as ten minutes, required serious power! What sort of influence did this guy possess, or rather, who was it who had this man's back?

People do not fight against the government, which included their government servants, and furthermore, a powerful dragon cannot crush a snake in its old haunts! Liu Wei searched his thoughts hopelessly before looking up to where Zhang Yang was. With the face of a defeated man, he slowly raised his hands up in surrender.

...

"Noob tank, you are finally back!" Wei Yan Er patted her flat chest, "You made us miss you so much!"

"Oh? To think that the little girl actually has a crush on me!" Zhang Yang chuckled while putting on the helmet.

"Humph! How rude! I only meant well! If that's how you're going to respond, I'll throw you back in the cell!"

The five of them went online one after another, and immediately, they were teleported into the virtual arena once again.

"This time, we are going to handle them with 'care'!" Wei Yan Er was cracking her knuckles with ferocious intent.

"Yes!" Daffodil Daydream nodded earnestly.

Zhang Yang glanced at the formation of the opposition party, and he said, "I will take care of One Sword Stroke, I shall leave the rest to you guys!"

"Fine!"

The formation of five members of the Imperial Sky are ---

One Sword Stroke, Level 63, male human, Guardian, health points 19,120.

Blooming Ichor, Level 63, male elf, Assassin, health points 15,780.

Fire Fountain, Level 62, male human, Pyromancer, health points 15,420.

Soul Striker, Level 62, male human, Priest, health points 16,390.

Lord Wicked Virulence, Level 62, male dwarf, Sniper, health points 16,740.

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS Imperial Sky will begin in 10 seconds!'

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

As the invisible air walls vanished, all party members from both sides immediately charged out. Zhang Yang followed closely behind Whitey, and when they were 10 meters away from One Sword Stroke, Whitey instantly used {Wild Charge} and knocked One Sword Stroke into a stunned state.

Zhang Yang did not activate his {Charge}, but said, "Everyone try to stay 10 meters away from One Sword Stroke, don't give him get the chance to

use his {Charge} on you!"

Under Zhang Yang's control, Whitey turned and began to charge towards the opposition's healer, Soul Striker.

One second later, Zhang Yang activated his {Charge}, stunning One Sword Stroke again!

He then weaved to the back of One Sword Stroke and began to work with his weapon.

‘-897!’

One Sword Stroke took damage, while the rage gauge of Zhang Yang increased from 12 points to 30 points.

Another second passed, and One Sword Stroke recovered from the stun effect. Knowing that Guardians worked best with their team mates, he decisively ignored Zhang Yang and ran straight towards Wei Yan Er.

{Thunder Strike}!

One Sword Stroke was inflicted with a damage value of ‘-0’, but his movements were visibly slowed!

After struggling to move forward, he had to abandon the stupid intention of his, and swiftly, he turned around, ready to engage with Zhang Yang for one big battle! But, there was no sign of Zhang Yang! His blood boiled in frustration.

Zhang Yang had already left him behind, and was attacking Lord Wicked Virulence. With a {Blast Wave}, the sniper had been stunned!

Zhang Yang glided through the battlefield, more like an assassin than a guardian, as he followed up with {Horizontal Sweep}, inflicting a damage of ‘-2183’ on Lord Wicked Virulence, while immediately turning towards Blooming Ichor who had, in that moment, been forced out of stealth by Sun Xin Yu! He was constantly moving across the battlefield, giving this guy a slash, that guy another blow, sealing up their movements!

One Sword Stroke was dragging his two feet that had been loaded with lead, crawling like a snail. Gritting his teeth, he threw his {Vanguard's

Aggression} out onto Blooming Ichor!

Because the disadvantage of {Vanguard's Aggression} was that it could not be moved once cast, it was best used on an existing area where another buff is active! If used like how One Sword Stroke just did, it would only bring out it's life-saving effect! An ideal situation for the usage of {Vanguard's Aggression} was for a thief to keep someone locked up in the bubble with him, while the party finished off that unlucky bastard, all the while taking only 10% of the damage from the enemy who would try to save their team mate!

"Focus fire on One Sword Stroke!" Zhang Yang calmly voiced out. The other four members of the Imperial Sky had already entered the effective area of the {Vanguard's Aggression}, having no intention of attacking at all!

One Sword Stroke had finally obtained the chance to use {Charge}! He knocked Wei Yan Er who was running in front of him into stunned state, while at the same time activating his {Shield Wall}!

Fire Fountain and Lord Wicked Virulence are both ranged profession players, so they could still launch their assaults from within the effective area of the {Vanguard's Aggression}.

Instantly, they targeted Wei Yan Er.

"Retreat!"

The entire party fell back, drawing a distance of more than 30 meters between themselves and the party of Imperial Sky who had refused to leave the effective area of the {Vanguard's Aggression}. That distance had exceeded the maximum range of any Imperial Sky party member.

After the first clash, One Sword Stroke had been forced to use his ultimate skills like {Shield Wall} and {Vanguard's Aggression}. The same could not be said of Zhang Yang's team!

10 seconds had passed, and both {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Shield Wall} expired uneventfully!

"Stay put for now, let my {Charge} and {Blast Wave} cool down first!"

Zhang Yang smiled slyly.

"Noob tank, you are really mean!"

The five members of the Imperial Sky had been forced onto the defensive, and had no intentions of chasing after their opponents. With a wave of his hand, Blooming Ichor disappeared into thin air, entering stealth mode with {Vanish}.

With a 'humph', Sun Xin Yu mirrored her counterpart's move. After approximately 10 seconds, Zhang Yang's {Charge} had been completely cooled down, and with {Blast Wave} almost ready, he said, "Go!"

The second clash was underway!

Poor One Sword Stroke was once again stunned by Whitey and Zhang Yang. After recovering from his extended stun, {Blast Wave} was waiting for him, and he was forcefully pinned to the ground for another 4 seconds! He instantly removed the stun effect of {Blast Wave} by activating his {Warrior's Will}, and quickly activated {Sacrifice} on Fire Fountain who had become the focal point of their attack!

Zhang Yang activated his {Thunder Strike} and left One Sword Stroke unattended! As his ultimate skills had been forced out into the field already, as long as they stay away from the range of his {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike}, he had been rendered totally useless!

Lone Desert Smoke began to focus their assaults on Lord Wicked Virulence. Zhang Yang activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} while Sun Xin Yu used her Status Effect skills to pin the sniper who fell shortly after! They turned around and began to focus their assaults on Fire Fountain, forcing him to use his {Ice Frame}. During that moment, Blooming Ichor used {Ambush} on Sun Xin Yu, but Sun Xin Yu quickly shook it off with {Blind}.

It was now five members of Lone Desert Smoke vs four members of Imperial Sky!

Blooming Ichor was killed!

Fire Fountain was killed!

Soul Striker was killed!

One Sword Stroke sighed dejectedly, and automatically, he admitted defeat and left the arena.

The score was 1:1, the final clash was coming up next!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. A powerful dragon cannot crush a snake in its old haunts: Even a person with great power cannot defeat a local villain in his/her own territory.

Chapter 282: We are the Champions!

After a short break, the climatic battle was beginning to unfold!

"Just charge forward! Use any violent means necessary and crush them!" Zhang Yang raised up his battle sword and let out a war cry!

The two sides drew closer, the battle had begun!

Both sides had {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Shield Wall}. After using {Rearm}, Zhang Yang had activated {Vanguard's Aggression} once again, forcing Imperial Sky's thieves and spellcasters to activate their {Blur} and {Ice Barrier}!

The fire power of Lone Desert Smoke was already ridiculous to begin with, and after waiting out for their opponents to exhaust their life-saving skills, they simply took out the enemy one after another, under concentrated fire!

It was like breaking the dead branches off a tree, they were simply unstoppable!

In term of attack power, Lone Desert Smoke had the advantage. In term of defense, Zhang Yang had {Rearm}, giving him the ability to use {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Sacrifice} two times in a roll! In terms of individual strength, Sun Xin Yu was the future monarch of thieves, while Daffodil Daydream will be one of the Top 10 Spellcasters, and Zhang Yang had an additional five years worth of experience in the game and knowledge of several intangible factors of the game!

After merely holding on for a minute, the final member of the Imperial Sky had finally been hewed right down to the ground courtesy of Wei Yan Er's large axe! Violent, just as Zhang Yang said!

2-1!

Victory has been claimed by Lone Desert Smoke!

"Congratulations to Lone Desert smoke for managing to obtain a victory after such an unfavorable start! I present to you, the Champions of this year's Soaring Swords tournament!" Liu Wan Fei began to clap

enthusiastically.

The audience quickly followed after her applause. Lone Desert Smoke had always been more popular than Imperial Sky. Also, due to the suspicious circumstances of Imperial Sky's advancement through the tournament, many of their feats had been thrown into doubt.

Zhang Yang and his party members took off their game helmets, opening their eyes to the deafening cheers of the real world! Fatty Han and the others stormed to the stage, grabbing them in hugs. Of course, boys were only hugging boys while girls were only hugging girls.

After giving her obligatory, insincere congratulatory speech, Liu Wan Fei said, "Now, let's begin with the award distribution! Firstly, this moment belongs to the four parties who made it to the quarterfinals! So let's give our applause to the five members of the Radiance! Please step up to the stage to claim your rewards!"

The five of Radiance walked up the stage to claim their rewards, one after another.

A lucky-draw counter lay in the middle of the stage. All they had to do was to press the button, and the wheel on the screen behind the stage will begin to spin. After 10 seconds of spinning, it would stop, showing the name of the player and attributes of the equipment drawn.

The Radiance members were a bit out of luck, as none of them were able to hit the 10% rate for the special prizes! All they got were some Green-Copper equipment. However, strong guilds like Radiance would not even be interested in Gray-Silver equipment, so the entire event did not really interest them in the first place.

Afterwards, Crimson Rage, Angel Wings and Brilliant Star took their turns. The pretty ladies of Crimson Rage fared slightly better, with three of them drawing Gray-Silver equipment, and the left the stage cheerfully!

Next it was the turn of Sunset Amber and Breaking Dawn, the semifinalists.

Among the draws, Greensleeves Prince of Sunset Amber and Sardine of

Breaking Dawn got lucky and managed to draw Yellow-Gold equipment for themselves, top of their range at that, too! The two of them were visibly ecstatic!

After that, it was the Imperial Sky's turn, the first runner-up, to earn their draws.

"May the gods on the ground, and the gods in the sky, under the command of the father of gods, bless these scums with Black-Steel equipment!" Wei Yan Er began to draw circles in the air.

"Little girl, the first runner-up will get Yellow-Gold equipment at the very least!" Zhang Yang informed her.

"I know! That's why I'm trying to curse them!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes backward towards Zhang Yang.

The first four members of the Imperial Sky obtained Yellow-Gold equipment, however, when it was One Sword Stroke's turn to draw, he actually drew out a piece of Violet-Platinum equipment! Immediately, the attribute of that equipment was shown on the big screen!

[Ring of Endless Desire] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +202

Strength: +58

Upon equip: when attacked, 116 damage absorbed.

Use: All damage received will be turned into health points, lasts for 2 seconds. Cool down: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

That was just wicked sick!

Seeing the attribute of the equipment on the big screen, all of the audience members 'oooh'ed! Well, calm down, this is a Violet-Platinum equipment after all, it was to be expected!

One Sword Stroke had not anticipated that he would actually draw a Violet-Platinum equipment, so he burst out in triumphant laughter. While

he was at it, he shot a victor's pose at Zhang Yang.

"Wah argh! This is driving me mad!" Wei Yan Er immediately rolled up her sleeves.

"Little girl, did you actually bless them with a Violet-Platinum equipment instead? You got your chant all wrong!" Zhang Yang could not help himself but laughed.

"And finally, the long await turn for the Champion! Let us welcome Lone Desert Smoke up to the stage with a warm applause!" Liu Wan Fei was bouncing her badonkers up and down while walking to Zhang Yang and the party, and then she gave everyone a warm hug.

"The bounce is strong in this one, eh?" Han Ying Xue couldn't help but teased Zhang Yang who had an uncomfortable look on his face.

She was absolutely worthy of the name 'Sexy Goddess'. That pair of round, huge mountain tops, were probably more famous than their owner, dragging her to worldwide acclaim. Words simply could not describe the level of her sexiness! Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said in a soft voice, "Don't be jealous, I believe that yours are bouncier!"

Han Ying Xue blushed and turned beet red, for once rendered completely speechless.

The lucky draw had finally begun, Wei Yan Er was impatient, so she leaped on front of the line.

The big wheel turned for awhile, and finally, the prize was revealed!

[Silver Wolf Mask] (Violet-Platinum, Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +806

Strength: +540

Agility: +240

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Level Requirement: 80

The Champion party had a 30% of drawing Violet-Platinum equipment, this little girl was pretty lucky!

Following the first draw, Daffodil Daydream was the second person to walk up for the lucky draw. After a thrilling spin pf the big wheel, her prize was also shown on the big screen.

[Moonstream Gown] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +288

Intelligence: +270

Vigor: +115

{Level 2 Socket 1}

{Level 2 Socket 2}

Level Requirement: 60

Unfortunately, her luck was out of it on that day, she could only claim a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment. Although Yellow-Gold equipment were a luxury that commoners could only dream of, compared to the other potential draws, this was a letdown! She couldn't help but walk away rather sadly.

However, Daffodil Daydream was already equipped with a full set of Yellow-Gold armor set, so this piece of Yellow-Gold equipment was basically useless to her. She could still earn a huge fortune by selling it, at least!

Han Ying Xue became the third person to step forward. This woman always had a ridiculous amount of luck, when it came to finding things, and earning equipment. She could have even bedded the system itself for all you knew, and the outcome of her draw was no big surprise!

[Gown of Devotion] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +806

Intelligence: +540

Vigor: +230

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Required Profession: Priest

Level Requirement: 80

Heart of Devotion armor set (1/8):

3 pieces: increase your maximum mana points by 5000 points.

5 pieces: when player uses a healing skill, increase 10% casting speed, last for 10 seconds, can stack up to 3 layers at maximum.

8 pieces: Any of your healing skill has a 5% rate of summoning a mirror of yourself, aiding you in healing!

This woman really had a level of luck that challenged the gods in the heavens! Not only did she draw out a Violet-Platinum, that equipment was also an armor set piece!

The usually stone-faced Sun Xin Yu had an uncharacteristic gleam in her face, unable to hide her excitement. She walked to the stage with a rather lively gait that wouldn't be usually associated with her.

The big wheel once again spun, and stopped!

[Titan Greaves] (Violet-Platinum, Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +806

Strength: +230

Agility: +115

Equip: absorb 232 damage when attacked.

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Required Profession: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

Titan Armor Set (1/8):

{Titan Helmet}, {Titan Necklace}, {Titan Chest Plate}, {Titan Cape},
{Titan Gaunlets}, {Titan Greaves}, {Titan Boots}, {Titan Wall}

3 pieces: increase your maximum health points by 10,000 points.

5 pieces: With every effective {Block}, your {Shield Bash} will not consume any rage points, and you gain 100% damage! Last for 3 seconds.

8 pieces: Every time when you are attacked, there is 1% chance to acquire 'Blessing of Titan', stun enemy for 10 seconds. This effect is effective against all boss monsters below the grade of Violet-Platinum.

A Guardian's Armor Set!

Zhang Yang could not stop himself from rubbing his hands against each other, and he basically drooled at Sun Xin Yu as she was on her way back, and he said, "Ice queen, you really are gorgeous today, I love you so, so much!"

Even the icy cold personality of Sun Xin Yu gave way, and she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang, saying, "Did I ever mention anything about giving it to you?"

"Hehe!" This woman was a volatile flame. A little teasing would work on her, but any further, she would only be angered! Zhang Yang smiled wisely and walked towards the lucky draw counter to claim his prize.

Spin, and spin, and spin!

Zhang Yang reached out his hand and pressed the button, immediately turning around to look at the big screen on his back.

The wheel stopped!

The prize was ---

[Love's Thorn] (Violet-Platinum, Dagger)

Attack: 1259-1659

Base Attack Time: 1.9 seconds

DPS: 768

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Upon equip: Successful attacks on the target have the possibility to inflict 'Love's Thorn', decreases 20% of the target's attack, lasts for 5 seconds.

Level Requirement: 80

What a terrifying DPS! That is actually double the damage value compared to Zhang Yang's [Dark Enigmatic Sword]! With the Base Attack Time of 1.9 seconds, it was definitely unmatched among the equipment of thieves. Being stabbed by this would not be fun!

Zhang Yang walked back towards his party and smiled, "Icy, it seems you stand to gain a lot more!" Thieves depended on their offensive power far more than anything else. This would turn her into a legend among thieves!

Sun Xin Yu smiled vaguely without saying a word, expressing naked, unrestrained joy on her face. It was a very fresh outlook of her.

"And now, we shall hand out the Most-Valuable-Player award! Let us move forward to the final lucky draw! And this final candidate is ---" Liu Wan Fei drew out a piece of paper from the envelop on her hands, paused for a moment and said, "Mr. Zhan Yu!"

The crowd instantly cheered for him.

Wei Yan Er pouted unhappily, "Hmph! Such bad taste! I performed so much better than that noob tank!"

Liu Wan Fei pulled Zhang Yang close and hugged him tightly, once again. This time, she made a point of bumping her massive badonkers against Zhang Yang's chest a few times, before saying, "Mr Zhan Yu, you are the guildmaster of Lone Desert Smoke, and also the MVP of the Soaring Swords competition. Do you have any words to share with the

players around the world?"

Zhang Yang gave it a thought before saying, "{{God's Miracle}}" is not just an outstanding platform of the gaming world, it is also a society within a virtual reality, one in which anyone can find joy and discover new worlds! I hope that more players will join {{God's Miracle}}. Let us conquer the world together and claim our future!"

The hall erupted in cheers and applause.

"Hehe, well said, Mr. Zhan Yu! Then, let us proceed to the drawing of the grand prize for the MVP of the competition!"

Zhang Yang took a deep breath before pressing the button once again!

Spin! And spin! And spin!

And the wheel stopped!

One fine thick shield immediately appeared on the big screen behind Zhang Yang, and the incredibly strong attributes left everyone speechless!

[Titan Wall] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +1920

Vitality: +1344

Upon equip: absorbs 696 damage when attacked.

Upon equip: Increases the duration of {Shield Wall} for 5 seconds.

Required Profession: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

Chapter 283: Second Adjustment of Class Mechanics

One Sword Stroke was sure that he had popped a vein somewhere in his temple. But he did not care!

This was just too convenient! Lone Desert Smoke has been well-known to be highly efficient in dungeon progression. To witness Zhang Yang being conveniently provided with two pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, it was stupidly ridiculous! By the time Zhang Yang achieves Level 80 who in the world would stand a chance against them?

He may have obtained one piece of Violet-Platinum equipment, an accessory at that too! Normally, accessories such as rings and necklaces are extremely difficult to find, they were a gem among all other equipment, but the odds of drawing two set equipment would put that accessory to shame!

Zhang Yang had obtained two pieces of the [Titan Armor Set], if he could only get one more piece of the set, then he would have fulfilled the conditions for first set effect! He will instantly gain an additional 10,000 health points! This would only mean that his error margin for dungeons would be widened--it wasn't like his skills needed further cushioning--and he would also last much longer against open world bosses!

Holy sh*t, this is bad, this is really bad! How did he draw so many good items!

One Sword Stroke was already sinking into despair, his face darkening with each passing moment!

In contrast, Zhang Yang was experiencing utmost joy, because for Guardians, their shields defined their entire being! Getting a good shield was so much more important compared to anything else!

After the lucky draw session, a few officers of the Organizing Committee took turns giving their utterly useless speeches, and finally, the Soaring Swords competition came to closure.

The servers of {{God's Miracle}} would be shut down for 6 hours starting from 2 a.m, for a server maintenance, and new patches and updates would be implemented.

Other than that, the large-scale epic movie -- {{Heart of the Knight}} which was filmed entirely in the {{God's Miracle}} by the 'Counting-Gold-Stones Film company' in association with 'Dream Technology', had already been wrapped up, and ready for release. The movie would be aired in cinemas and in the game on the 1st of January, so audiences can choose to watch it in the cinema or to experience a spectator's view of the epicly marvelous and magnificent war movie!

The Organizing Committee had already aided the contestants in purchasing their tickets back to their respective homes, but they did not provide anything for players such as Zhang yang and Han Ying Xue who lived closer to Shang Hai. As the 10 members of the Lone Desert Smoke left the hotel, they arrived at the beach located 10 miles away from the metropolis. Although the cold wind was strong, but it did not cool down their warm hearts, as they had supper, and fulfilling conversations. They only went back to the hotel to rest at almost 3 am in the morning.

As the Organizing Committee only took responsibility for the staying cost until 12 pm the next day, if any players wished to stay, they would have to dig out their own pocket money to cover the expenses.

On the next day at about 9 am, everyone only began to wake up one after another. After a heavy-hearted goodbye, Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er finally began their journey back to Zhou Su city.

Sun Xin Yu reported straight back at the police station after her leave of absence, while Fatty Han drove Zhang Yang back to the narrow road of his housing area.

"Little Yang, just who is that lady cop?" Fatty Han finally asked, out of curiosity. Releasing Zhang Yang out of the prison cell with one call, and cutting the power supply of a high-class famous hotel in Shang Hai for more than 10 minutes just by saying 'I will take full responsibility'. It was

mind-blowing!

Contacting the local police station demanding for the release of a person charged in 'dealing with prostitutes' wasn't that difficult, even an influential person like Lost Dream could have done it. But to cut the power supply of a large hotel for more than 10 minutes, even the grandfather of Lost Dream might not have the power to do so!

It was not that his grandfather could not do it, but if the matter was found out by the government and used it as a 'weapon' against his family, there would be no way out for them!

However, even the next day after, the incident of the 'Jin Yuan' hotel blackout had not been published or even mentioned in any of the news channels, and not even a crumb had shown up on the internet! Just how terrifying is her influence and strength then?

Although Lost Dream had a big mouth, he was no idiot. He had stated that unless his grandfather became the governor himself or was the governor's aide, only then could he pull off this sort of thing in his own turf!

So who is Sun Xin Yu? Zhang Yang had never asked her before, leaving him to question himself: He was really a failure of a boyfriend!

After sending Zhang Yang back home, Fatty Han continued to coast around the area slowly. Zhang Yang could see the wretched fatty stopping his car to pick up a woman after driving a few hundred meters away from his drop off!

That pervert!

He could only shake his head, as he went up the stairs, opening his door, embracing his home. He squeezed himself back into his comfortable lair that he had left unattended for days.

He went straight online to check the official website of the game to see if there was any new information about the upcoming updates.

The first information was about the adjustment of the profession skills, and the information related to warrior classes were ---

‘1. All instant spells, skills will have a 1 second common cool down period after activation.’

Not just warriors, but this one statement would weaken every single class in the game!

For example, when a berserker is being {ambushed} by a thief, losing health points in the stunned state, would still boost their rage points up to 100 points. As long as there is 1 health point left, the berserker would have one chance of retaliating, and regular attack + {Tornado Cleave} + {Destructive Smash} + {Force Strike} could all be activated in the same instance. Due to the extreme power of a two-handed weapon, it might even instantly kill an opponent!

However with this new implementation, after doing a regular attack + {Tornado Cleave}, berserker players would have to wait for 1 second before they can activate their {Destructive Smash}, then wait for another 1 second before being able to activate {Force Strike}.

It did nerf every class, but it would affect warriors the most!

‘2. The skill {Vanguard’s Aggression} has been revised. It is now similar to an {Aura} effect, the shield can be moved around with the activator as the center point, it would still be 3 meters wide in diameter, and still last for 10 seconds.’

This can be considered to be a powerful upgrade, as it increases the flexibility and possibilities in both party PK and dungeon battles.

‘3. The rage point consumption of some warrior’s skills are adjusted! The rage point consumption for {Force Strike} has been increased from 30 rage points to 40 rage points. The rage point consumption for {Tornado Cleave} has been increased from 20 rage points to 45 rage points. The rage point consumption of {Destructive Smash} has been increased from 30 rage points to 45 rage points. The rage point consumption of {Horizontal Sweep} has been increased from 20 rage points to 45 rage points.’

That was simply ruthless, seriously impeding the explosive force of the warrior class!

After that, the Professional League Championship which Zhang Yang had long waited for finally surfaced on the news feed!

Just like it was in his previous life, the Professional League Championship will be divided into two levels, the S rank and the A rank, and the championship will be held in the form of regional matches.

There would be a total of 16 parties in the S rank level while there would be 32 parties in the A rank level championship. All of them will be ranked based on their accumulated Championship Points.

Each party can have 10 party members, and the competition will implement seven 1 VS 1 battles and one 5 VS 5 party battle as the layout. 1 match point is awarded to the winning side in the 1 VS 1 match, while 2 match points will be awarded to the winning side in 5 VS 5 match!

When one party has acquired 5 match points, they will be awarded 1 accumulated Championship Point.

Each player can only enter 1 VS 1 match once, but the 5 VS 5 party match would not take note on whether the player has taken part in any previous matches or not.

The championship is scheduled to begin by the beginning of February, spanning until the end of December. After that, the top two winners on the ranking list in every region of the S rank championship will be appointed to join the World Elite League Championship for the finals which will be held in January, entering into contest for the title of the worlds best achiever's champion!

Other than that, the last four parties on the ranking list from the S rank championship will compete with the best four parties from the A rank championship, and their opponents will be decided through the drawing of lots. The winning party will either proceed further into the competition or continue to stay in the S rank championship for next year, while the losing party will be pushed down to the A rank championship.

The contestants of the S rank and the A rank championships will be paid annually by Dream Technology, but only the contestants with an active rate higher than 30% will be paid. Because of having only seven 1 VS 1

matches, and the same contestant being able to repeatedly enter for the 5 VS 5 party battles, Dream Technology was worried that some parties may deliberately hide two or three inactive names to rob them of some cash!

Other than the S rank and A rank championship, there are also the other B, C, D rank championship which implemented the 'ladder climbing' method of accumulating points. As long as the contestants are capable, they can swiftly leap from the D rank championship straight into the B rank championship.

Similarly, when S rank and A rank championships are on break, the eight parties of the bottom eight of the A rank championship shall compete with the eight parties of the top eight of the B rank championship in the elimination matches.

Those who win will be able to proceed into the A rank championship while those who lose will have to fight in the B rank championship!

The parties that managed to enter the top 16 in the previous Soaring Swords competition in Shang Hai will be selected as the seeded parties in the S rank category championship. As for the A rank category, 32 parties will be competing against each another. 16 parties out of the 32 will be selected as the seeded parties in the A rank category championship. As for the remaining available 16 slots in A rank championship, players who decide to take part will have to compete among each other in a regional competition among main cities, and the top 32 entries of this regional competition will go through an elimination competition to secure their slots into the remaining 16 slots in the A rank category competition.

Parties that have been selected as the seeded parties had a choice of dropping out, but they must report to the system by the 10th of January, next year so that the organizer will have an easier time finding replacements.

Other than that, the comparative ratio between the game time and the reality time will become 3:1 starting from 1st of January, and players can also adjust themselves into sleep mode while playing the game. In other words, three days in the game would be equal to one day in the reality, and

players can play while they slept, this function has given the white collar workers a great blessing!

At the same time, otakus would be able to play for half a month without having to worry about food and sleep!

Zhang Yang took up his game helmet and logged into the game, and instantly, a series of system voice notification exploded in his ears.

‘Ding! Congratulation on acquiring the ‘Champion’ title of the Soaring Sword competition (China)!’

‘Ding! You have leveled up by 3 level!’

‘Ding! You have obtained 1 skill point!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Love’s Thorn]!’

‘Ding! Your cash prize has been deposited into your locked on bank account, please check the amount!’

‘Ding Congratulation on acquiring the ‘MVP’ title of the Soaring Sword competition (China)!’

‘Ding! You have leveled up by 1 level!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Titan Wall]!’

The body of Zhang Yang streamed in continuous beams of gold light, and his level was elevated from Level 67 to Level 71 in just a brief moment, becoming the highest leveled player in the whole of China!

He added the skill point that he acquired from reaching Level 70 and the award he received from being the champion onto his {Warrior’s Will}, with the addition of the skill point he earned from the First Clear of the Thunderbolt Prison, his {Warrior’s Will} had been upgraded up to Level 7, and the cool down time had been shortened to only 4 minutes!

At his logging in, his members flooded their leader with congratulatory messages, one after another. Hundred Shots was still on the plane, so everyone was taking that opportunity to butter up Zhang Yang through the guild channel. If they missed this opportunity now, when the ‘tiger’ is back in the lair, these kittens will never get another chance to fool around!

As Zhang Yang did not have the momentum to level up at that moment, he decided to go for some bidding in the Auction House. As he looked around, he unintentionally found the recipe for the [Beginner Mobility Potion]! The person who was auctioning this piece of recipe was obviously not aware of the value of this piece of alchemy recipe, and only wanted 500 gold pieces for it!

Zhang Yang immediately locked in on the auction and bought the recipe. Yu Li happened to be online, so he contacted her, handing over the recipe for her to master! Then, he took out the [Frozen Ice Weedings] that was stored in the warehouse long ago and passed it to Yu Li to craft the potions!

Yu Li had returned to {{God's Miracle}} ever since her mother had been discharged from the hospital, and she had dedicated her time in the game to her alchemy profession. Under the strong support of Zhang Yang, she had managed to upgrade her alchemist skill to the professional level in just a short amount of time. However, the recipes of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] and [Level 3 Fire resistance Potion] were not easy to come by, so she did not get the chance to master them.

It was fortunate that the demand for these two type of potions had passed their peak seasons, so she had not lost out significantly.

Ever since the night when he popped her cherry... the two of them had repeated their nightly activities several more times after! Ever since that night, Yu Li had been sexually awoken, and her appetite had only grown, as did her finesse and skills in that field, giving Zhang Yang a really 'hard' time!

Chapter 284: Snow White

Another day passed, and the players who participated in the memorable Soaring Sword competition had arrived at the doorsteps of their cozy home, and the profile icons that had been left dimmed for a day in the friend list started lighting up one after another, as players got back to their daily lives.

Zhang Yang logged into the game early in the morning, and the first thing he saw was the portrait icon of Wei Yan Er glowing brightly in his friend list! Shocked, he sent her a private message asking, "Little girl, did you just skip your classes again?"

"Who said that I am? It's New Years Eve for Christ's sake! We have three days off!"

"Even so, don't you have anything else to do? Are you planning to get a degree in {{God's Miracle}} or something?"

"Stupid stupid stupid! I specialize in art, I am going to be a great designer! What's the use of sh*t like maths and science? The company will be managed by professional managers, all I'll have to do is to capture the fashion sense according to time and make the best designs ever!"

"... You sure come up with wonderful excuses for your slackiness, you know that?"

"Hmph! Bully! Just leave me be! Pui!"

After partying up with Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream, Zhang Yang led the party towards the Level 70 dungeon, the Kingdom of Oz.

Because Fatty Han and Hundred Shots were only in their mid sixty levels at the moment, therefore, only the members who joined the Soaring Sword competition together with Zhang Yang met the requirements to enter a Level 70 dungeon. Each of them had been elevated by 3 levels as one of their rewards. Other than Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu was currently at Level 68, while Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were

currently at Level 67, and they could merely sweep the monsters in a Level 70 dungeon for now.

One large region may have up to six Level 70 maps, or three Level 80 maps, or only one Level 90 map! However, the map sizes would grow proportionally larger as they grew lesser! The area of the Kingdom of Oz was basically six times larger than the total mass area of the Forest of Tanila!

The Kingdom of Oz was built by men, but these men were unaffiliated to any of the other human kingdoms. It is a neutral kingdom, having great relationships with the centaur, the dryad, the half-elf and many other races, together, resisting the corruption of the undead and demons across their land!

As the four of them traveled across the rainforest, they finally arrived at a small ancient town. Close to the entrance of the town there were a few pieces of wanted posters pasted on the notice board, and surprisingly, one of the wanted posters was blinking with a yellow exclamation mark. It was a player quest.

[Wanted: Snow White] (Quest Difficulty: B rank)

Quest description: Snow White is the princess to the Kingdom of Oz, but because she murdered her own father, the great Ontario The Third, she is now being wanted for treason and murder by the queen herself! Take note, Snow White is an extremely dangerous individual and is good in manipulating people! Therefore, one must be extremely cautious of her words, and once her whereabouts are discovered, please inform the authorities of the kingdom immediately, or kill her on sight! The queen will provide handsome rewards! Latest news: It was rumored that a person that looks like Snow White was last spotted in the Butterfly Valley!

The four of them exchanged looks, and Han Ying Xue began to speak, "Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs?"

"Dream Technology and move rip-offs!" Zhang Yang nodded.

"Are we accepting this?"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Of course we are accepting it! Didn't you see 'handsome rewards'?"

"Oh, noob tank, you really are heartless, Snow White is already so pitiful, framed by her stepmother for murdering her own beloved father, on top of persecution from her stepmother, and now you are accepting this quest to kill her! I was wrong about you! Boo!" Wei Yan Er was drawing a clear demarcation between whom to hate and whom to love, stating that she was furious with Zhang Yang's decision.

"Silly little girl, if we don't look for Snow White, who would help her fight against her evil witch stepmother?"

"Oh! We shall depart for Butterfly Valley then?"

"Of course!"

The location of the Butterfly Valley was not indicated on the wanted notice, and the new map was still covered in the fog of war, showing only the areas that were explored before. But, right beneath the nose of a person were a pair of lips, so all they needed to do was flap them and ask!

Although the NPCs of the town never spoke in detail, they did point them to the direction they needed to head for!

After leaving town, the four of them headed east. After an approximate time of 20 minutes, they arrived at a small valley where flowers bloom in every corner of the place, and grass grew green all over the ground. There was a deer chewing on some grass, and countless colourful butterflies danced in the air around them, and they seemed to form a letter 'S' which later turned into a 'B'.

"What a great place, so this is the place where the seven dwarfs and Snow White live?" The three ladies were filled with joy and they were couldn't wait to venture further, for it was every girl's dream to meet their prince charming.

Fortunately, Fatty Han wasn't there, or he would have said something crazy like having an orgy of eight to immediately destroy the fantasies of the three ladies!

Walking all the way into the deep valley side, the place grew smaller and tighter, just like a 'V' shape. When they arrived at the bottom of the valley, the distance between the two walls beside them were merely 20 meters apart from each other. Located at the deepest part of the valley, there was a row of very low houses. One, two, three, four, five, six, seven, a total of seven low houses!

There was a vast garden in front of the houses, surrounded by a fence made of bamboo. In the middle of the garden stood a beautiful woman who looked like she was in her mid-twenties, sitting quietly on a deck chair made of wood, basking in the sun light. She was wearing a dress made of silk, and had long hair that went straight down to her waist. Her skin is as fair as the colour of milk, smooth and white!

[Snow White] (Elite, Humanoid creature)

Level: 76

HP: 152,000

Defense: 400

Note: "Evil" princess, by the queen's decree, to kill on sight!

As Zhang Yang and the gang walked straight into the range of Snow White's aggro, she was immediately shocked, and then she shouted, "Have you been sent here by that wicked witch to rid the world of me as well? I will not let her do as she pleases!"

Shoof! Snow White instantly charged forward and initiated her attack on Zhang Yang and the gang.

Zhang Yang immediately reacted and activated his {Charge} to meet her charge, knocking Snow White into a state of stun. He begun kiting the hostile enemy.

Even if she slightly outleveled them, she was just an elite NPC, and under the strong fire power of the small party, Snow White was taken down to the ground in no time, leaving her with only a small amount of health points left. However, she became invincible almost immediately after, which could only mean that they had triggered a script.

"Please don't kill me! Please! I beg of you!" Snow White begged pitifully, her eyes welling up with tears. "I did not murder my own beloved king. He was my father, it was the deed of that wicked witch! She framed me, and attempted to shut my mouth once and for all! She plans to turn every single one of the citizens of the Kingdom of Oz into her slaves!"

‘Ding! You have two options:

1. Kill Snow White, present her heart to the Queen of Oz and claim your rewards!

2. Spare Snow White, and maybe she will ask for your aid in doing something!’

Zhang Yang and the gang received a system indication at the same instance.

"Of course we are picking option number two! How can we help the wicked and kill the innocent!" Wei Yan Er spoke another corny line that she had picked up from the garbage she was watching these days.

"... Silly Yu, if we kill the queen, do you think we'll get her magic mirror? Once I look into the mirror, it shall say, 'Han Ying Xue, Han Ying Xue, you are the fairest among them all!'"

Zhang Yang frowned a little and said, "Let me teach you something easier, all you have to do is to record this phrase and play it to yourself everyday! Isn't that nice?"

"You really aren't romantic at all! Hmph!"

"So, all in favor of option one then?"

"Yes!"

Zhang Yang nodded and took a step back, then he began speaking to Snow White, "Princess Snow White, we believe you!"

‘Ding! You have made the decision for your party, the quest: ‘Wanted: Snow White’ has been automatically dropped from your quest list!’

Snow White was clearly relieved and grateful, and she tearfully told her story, "My father was a great king, but three years ago after my mother

died, my father married this wicked witch! She did not only murder my father, the King, and take over his throne, but also tried to get rid of me, his legitimate flesh and blood. She will not rest till then!"

"Travelers, are you willing to aid me in getting rid of this wicked witch, and return the glorious days of old back to the Kingdom of Oz?"

Wei Yan Er quickly took the initiative to speak to Snow White, and she said, "Princess, we will definitely help you! Rest assured, we are going back the way we came from and rid the world of this wicked witch, once and for all!"

"No! It is not possible! That wicked witch has a mirror with unlimited immense power, which can kill anyone with ease! Even the great gods tremble in fear before the power of that mirror!" Snow White quickly shook her head, "To be able to handle that wicked witch, one must destroy that of mirror first!"

"Alright! Let us move on to destroying the mirror!" Wei Yan Er thumped her chest and immediately turned to leave!

Snow White immediately stopped her from doing so, she said, "Brave and just warrior, you must not be hasty about this, that mirror is incredibly strong, normal weapons are definitely not going to damage it!"

"So what do we do?"

"You have to defeat the Stone Giant Herlow and get his heart. It is made out of the strongest stone in existence, even the thunder strikes from the Gods cannot destroy it! Use the heart of Herlow to shatter that mirror, and then you will be able to destroy the mirror once and for all!"

'Ding! Snow White has provided you a quest: The World's Strongest Stone, accept or decline?'

The four immediately accepted the quest.

[The World's Strongest Stone] (Quest difficulty: A Rank)

Quest description: Slay the Stone Giant Herlow, get his heart to destroy the wicked queen's mirror! Take note, the Stone Giant Herlow is extremely

powerful, it is recommended that you invite more friends to aid you in this quest! You may find Stone Giant Herlow at the south side of the Mount Heaven's Fall.

Limit of players for the quest: 5 players (can be shared)

Completion: Obtain the heart of the Stone Giant Herlow 0/1

"The quest can be done with five players? Then let's go find the boss first, when icy comes online, let her use the [Lover's Charm], and then we shall complete the quest together!" Zhang Yang looked at the quest description while saying it.

Han Ying Xue humphed lightly and said, "Silly Yu, you really care for her don't you, always remembering to count her in, every single time!"

"If you are talking about that now, don't I treat you even better? When have I ever not called you along for any boss fights?" Zhang Yang fought back against her claim.

"It's obvious that you are using me like a mule! Bringing me along just to be your walking potion!"

While joking around with smiles and laughter, the four of them headed towards the exit of the valley.

Suddenly, Wei Yan Er was reminded of something, "Argh! We actually forgot to drop by the houses and take a look at the dwarfs!"

Daffodil Daydream smiled and said, "Yan Er, the seven dwarfs must be the dwarfs that we all know of, so there shouldn't be anything special to look at!"

"Oh --- "

Arriving back at the small town, Zhang Yang tried to pry for information about the location of the Mount Heaven's Fall from the NPCs. Only after asking seven or eight NPCs, they finally knew that the general direction to Mount Heaven's Fall was to the west. They were unable to get any other details!

The party of four rode out towards the west, and after one and a half

hour, they finally arrived at the next small town. Once again, they asked the NPCs around and continued heading towards Mount Heaven's Fall.

"Noob tank, why is it taking so long just to find a monster?" Wei Yan Er began to feel impatient. They had been running around all day long, and she was getting frustrated.

"Calm your badonkers, starting from tomorrow, the time in the game and the time in our reality shall be adjusted to the ratio of 3:1!"

"Wouldn't everyone be moving in fast forwarded pace then?"

Zhang Yang laughed out a while and said, "Our human thinking ability is measured in light speed, even with the adjustment of 3:1 ratio, you will not feel any difference!"

"... Does that mean that traveling on a journey to some place else will still consume a large amount of time?"

"Indeed, from your perspective, everything will still remain the same!" Zhang Yang nodded.

After another hour of traveling, finally, they arrived at the Mount Heaven's Fall. This was a tall mountain that pierced through the layer of clouds, but the tip of it was remarkably flat, as if it had been sliced off by a sharp sword, leaving the whole mountain with an entirely flat head! Legend had it that this Mount Heaven's Fall was connected straight up to the palace of the Gods. However, as the gods grew tired of being disturbed by mortals, they cast their power to cut Mount Heaven's Fall into half, which led to the appearance it had now.

Zhang Yang and his party arrived at the south of the foothills of Mount Heaven's Fall. They found a way into the stone valley and entered this deep and quiet valley.

"Humans! Please leave, now! This is the abode of the great Herlow, no trespassers shall interrupt him!" a humanoid shape, its body being made entirely out of blackened mud suddenly crawled out from a pile of mud not far from them, speaking to the four of them in a deep voice.

[Stone Valley Mud Man] (Elite, Elemental Creature)

Level: 72

HP: 144,000

Defense: 800

The monster's name was yellow in color, meaning that the monster was currently non-hostile. However, if Zhang Yang and the party ventured any further, it would probably turn red and attack them.

Wei Yan Er took out her big axe and shouted, "Hey mud monster, let's see how I turn you into mud pile of sh*t!"

She charged forward with a shoof, starting the fight.

Zhang Yang chuckled a little and took over in kiting the monster. With his current defense, one heal from Han Ying Xue will would completely counteract any damage the mud man could deal, allowing him to unleash his damage with joy.

In less than 10 seconds, the Mud Man was really beaten into a pile of mud sh*t.

The gang continued to push forward, and more Mud Men crawled out of the mud piles by the side of the corridor they were passing through. As they had already entered the territory of the monsters, the Mud Men were immediately hostile and attacked them relentlessly.

Killing these Mud Men was nothing more than genocide, for they did not even drop any loot! That drove Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er so mad to the point, that they were releasing their anger by shouting out to the heavens, complaining about how stingy the system was!

After killing about 20 or more of these mud monsters, finally, one equipment was dropped!

[Stone Helmet] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +10

Vitality: +84

Strength: +42

Agility: +21

Level requirement: 70

Stone Armor Set (1/5)"

Stone Helmet, {Stone Chest Plate}, {Stone Gaunlets}, {Stone Greaves}, {Stone Boots}.

3 pieces: Increase defense by 200 points.

5 pieces: Increase HP by 2000 points.

"An [Armor Set], not bad at all!" Zhang Yang nodded continuously.

Daffodil Daydream was confused, so she asked, "Green-Copper [Armor Set], isn't the quality a little too low?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "After the appearance of the second set of armor, there will be no more [Armor Set] pieces appearing again, and only open world bosses might drop this kind of armor pieces! Therefore, don't overlook its Green-Copper tier, it is one of the mainstream equipment in the eyes of most players. Well, at least it will remain this way until players reach Level 80!"

Daffodil Daydream understood and said, "So after level 80, when a Violet-Platinum boss appear, they will be the new Gold-Yellow! And the Gray-Silver bosses in the future shall be the same as Green-Coppers to us. So, the Gray-Silver grade equipment shall become worthless goods that would be easily found by the roadside at leisure!"

Chapter 285: Stone Giant Herlow

After running forwards for some distance, the rate of Mud Men appearing from the sides began to decrease, and eventually, they disappeared. After going through a narrow and small exit, the gang instantly saw a stinging light in front of them, and a huge temple appeared right in front of their eyes!

This temple was in the shape of a pyramid. From the looks of it, there was no telling of how many floors the building had. Every single surface of the building was smooth and shiny, and the height of the building was approximately hundreds of meters. The base of the building alone was already 30 to 40 meters tall, it was a magnificent sight to behold!

Within the peripheral view of the temple, there was a large number of rock monsters patrolling back and forth, their heavy footsteps issuing out continuous rumbles, like the sound of thunder along with the tremors of earthquake!

[Stone Man of Mount Heaven's Fall] (Elite, Elemental Creature)

Level: 73

HP: 146,000

Defense: 1000

"The game company is really mean, how am I going to play when each move consumes so much rage points?" Wei Yan Er began to complain about the new adjustments made by the company. Because after yesterday's adjustment on several game mechanics, her damage output had been significantly reduced! She was really unhappy about it!

"Previously, the damage output of the warrior was indeed a little too high. For hunter and thief class, their focus points and mana points recover consistently, so their damage will more or less be constant, but warriors gain power the longer a battle drags on, meaning that the longer they engage in battle, the more powerful they become. Therefore, it's only appropriate that they get nerfed to balance things out!" Zhang Yang spoke

out pertinently, hitting right in the point!

He was a tanker, so the increase in the consumption of rage points did not hit him as much as imagined. Because as long as he is hit, he will be able to accumulate rage points.

"Oh yea, are we required to take part in the Professional League Championship?" Han Ying Xue asked in a sudden.

"Of course we are!" Zhang Yang nodded, "Why? Is your 'Silky Soft Bra' planning to crown it's name upon our party again? Please no, I really am afraid of you people. Won't we lose all our face and dignity if we are to be called the 'Silky Soft Bra' party every time we go on stage!?"

"I can't believe you're so childish! What's wrong with the name 'Silky Soft Bra', are you saying that you don't wear your underwear?"

"The main thing is neither the bra nor Silky Soft, it is because when these two name are combined together, it's such a blatant statement! Would you run on the streets on the streets, shouting bra, bra, try out this bra?" Zhang Yang shook his head in shame.

"Pui! Of course anyone would treat you as an idiot if you shout and run like a madman on the streets, it wouldn't matter what you're shouting about!"

"Back to the topic, guildmaster, a party of 10 members is one of the absolute requirements for joining the Professional League Championship, and now that we are short of members, how do we solve this?" Daffodil Daydream voiced out to Zhang Yang about the issue.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "We are definitely pulling Hundred Shots and Lost Dream over to our party! As for the remaining three members, I have not thought about it yet. We really need to let some core players stay back at our second party to prevent them from becoming a laughing stock in the S rank category championship!"

Han Ying Xue said, "If we cannot find any good party members, I'd rather we withdraw our second party from the competition!"

"We shall see about that, we might be able to buy some skillful players

over to our side!"

"Goodness, noob tank, I can't believe you would do such an act, stealing players from other guilds! I'm wrong about you! Pui!"

The four of them pushed forward up the stairs. Although the stone monsters had very high defense, but Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} and Wei Yan Er had a two-handed weapon of a Yellow-Gold grade! So the monsters' high defense did not affect either of them much.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The stone monsters were smashed into pieces of small stones onto the ground one after another, it was like watching a fireworks extravaganza! But unfortunately, there no valuable loots dropped from the monsters they defeated. What stingy developers!

The number of monsters inside were definitely much more numerous than the mud monsters out there. Zhang Yang and the gang had been clearing the monsters from the afternoon until the evening, yet they still could not clear all of them! After having their dinner and logging back into the game, they found Sun Xin Yu online.

Zhang Yang added Sun Xin Yu into the party, and used the [Lover's Charm] to teleport her over to their location. It was extremely convenient!

"Hey noob tank, why is there only one pair of this [Lover's Charm], and none other have ever appeared since then?" Wei Yan Er was feeling depressed, because they had already slain the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick several more times, and there was still no sign of any [Lover's Charms]. Sun Xin Yu had been generous enough to let her use it once, but she simply refused to part with it now!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "It's possible that this accessory was just a one-time drop, you better give up on it already! Oh yea, Icy, here's your [Love's Thorn]!"

He traded over the top-class weapon, [Love's Thorn] over to Sun Xin Yu while she handed over the [Titan Wall] over to him.

Zhang Yang could not hold his smile and he sent her a private message

and said, "So does this count as us having traded our tokens of love with each other?"

"... " Sun Xin Yu could only roll her eyes at Zhang Yang.

With Sun Xin Yu joining their party, they started killing monsters in droves. In just an hour, they had managed to clear everything and enter the magnificent temple.

This gigantic temple was designed to only take up one floor, and on top side of the temple, there were countless stones, made of uncertain materials which glowed gently, lighting up the entire temple! They could even see the sand and dust on the floor! The floor of the temple is paved up with strong bricks, and each of those bricks were as large as approximately 10 square meters!

The temple had no pillars supporting it at all, the pyramid-shaped walls held itself up under constant tension, making it possible for such magnificent building to exist!

Anyone who stood in the middle of the temple will feel how tiny oneself's existence is!

It surprised all five of them at the same time. As they thought that such large temple would be filled with monsters, they had not expected the interior of the temple to be so empty and quiet to the point that it was scary. It was like the noises on the outside had been totally blocked out of the temple's interior area!

At the center of the temple, there was a large stone man sitting cross-legged. Zhang Yang and the party were like the size of an ant to the stone man, they seemed so insignificant before him!

[Stone Giant Herlow] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Creature)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500,000

Defense: 2000

"I can sense your aura!" The seemingly asleep stone man suddenly

opened it's mouth to speak. His voice was thunderous, and the air began to surge as if a storm was just pouring over them, causing them to stagger back from the impact!

Zhang Yang took out his sword and walked forward, then he said, "I'm really sorry, we need to borrow your heart for something!"

"Let me guess, you are going to use my heart to destroy the 'Mirror of Truth'?" suddenly, there was a strong fluctuation on the voice of Herlow, "So, you are the underlings of that wicked Snow White, you shall die!"

Herlow stood up and swung his fist towards Zhang Yang and his party!

The body mass of the boss was just too large, that right fist was already larger than a truck! Zhang Yang quickly shouted, "Dodge! Just dodge!"

He raised his shield up high and activated {Block}.

Boom!

The large fist of Herlow was forcefully blocked back, but that was because Zhang Yang had activated his skill {Block}. If it wasn't for his skill, all five of them would definitely taste the impact of the fist and become pancakes themselves!

Immediately, Zhang Yang raised up his sword and swung it, igniting a spark on the fist of the boss, inflicting a damage of '-1140'. After that, he swiftly charged towards the boss.

"Snow White is just pitiful! First she was framed as the murderer of the king, and then she has to bear with all these false accusations! You stinky rock monster, I will smash you to bits!" Wei Yan Er let out her high-pitched war cry. She dashed to the back of the boss and began to hit as hard as she could.

Another punch of Herlow was thrown into Zhang Yang.

'-6206!'

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a significant damage value, but his rage gauge had been boosted up to 50 points already!

{Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}! {Cripple

Defense)! {Cripple Defense}!

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er coordinated with each other, making the activation of {Cripple Defense} upon the boss as their priority. They stacked five layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss and weakened the defense of the boss down to 1000 defense points. That had significantly increased the total damage output of Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Whitey!

Bosses that are Level 60 and above, nine out of ten, would be equipped with {Aura} skill. Of course, Herlow was one of them! His aura skill is {Rock Fall Aura}.

[Rock Fall Aura]: To attack with rock fall, the targets within the effective range area is inflicted with 1500 physical damage in every 2 seconds. Range of the aura: With the user as the center point, a radius of 60 meters in diameter.

Zhang Yang could ignore the damage, but for the rest of his party members, it was a headache that cannot be taken lightly! It was fortunate that Han Ying Xue is a priest, able to provide group healing. Furthermore, with her powerful equipment, she could still manage healing everyone up.

But having to heal Zhang Yang as well while making sure everyone's health bars were at a safe state, Han Ying Xue was so busy to the point that she almost cried!

99%, 98%... The health bar of Herlow had finally began to reduce slowly.

Charge! Charge! Charge!

The battle had just began for awhile, suddenly, countless stone thorns drilled their way out from the surface of the body of Herlow, making the smooth body of Herlow to become spiky in an instant! Zhang Yang realized it and halted his assault right before his attack landed on Herlow, then he took a few steps back. Immediately he shouted out into the party channel and said, "Stop your attacks! Stop!"

But it was already too late!

He could control Whitey at his will, but Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu

could not halt their attacks in time, so their weapons had already been smashed against the ankle of the boss.

‘-9800!’

‘-9880!’

Two high damage values appeared right above the heads of Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu respectively! Another additional wave of damage from the {Rock Fall Aura} would very likely finish them off! Fortunately, Daffodil Daydream had instantly canceled her own casting the moment she heard Zhang Yang’s words.

‘Ding! You are inflicted with 9800 physical damage from the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} of Herlow (200 damage reduction)!’

‘Ding! You are inflicted with 9880 physical damage from the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} of Herlow (120 damage reduction)!’

The two ladies received the notifications from the system respectively.

"The boss has a reflective damage effect!" Wei Yan Er quickly shouted out loud to remind everyone!

"... Your reaction... is indeed fast enough..."

It was fortunate enough that the reflective damage effect of the boss only lasted for 10 seconds. The intimidating stone spikes all over his body swiftly retracted into his body soon after, giving the party the opportunity to continue unleashing their assaults upon the boss.

"We must keep an eye out for those spikes! None of your health points are above 20,000, two reflects would be enough to kill you!" Zhang Yang explained.

After engaging them a little while longer, Herlow once again activated his {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage}. Upon closer observation, they realized that the boss would activate his {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} once every 30 seconds.

After a few {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage}, everyone was very familiar with the skill of the boss. They could even pull back their attacks one

second right before the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} was activated. That had largely decreased the pressure of Han Ying Xue in healing them all.

Although Herlow was a Yellow-Gold boss, but he was not too difficult to handle. Other than the annoying damages inflicted by the effects of the {Rock Fall Aura} and the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage}, his other strong points were his physical damages. But to engage with an outstanding tanker like Zhang Yang himself, those physical attacks were basically useless. The health points of the boss was decreasing down slowly but steadily!

10 minutes later, the boss had finally crumbled down to the ground and dropped many loots, including a piece of shiny stone that glittered silver, about the size of a fist.

Chapter 286: Destroy the Magic Mirror

[Heart of the Stone Giant Herlow] (Quest Item)

Item Description: The entire essence of the stone giant concentrated into a rock. This is the world's strongest rock that can break anything!

"We got it!" Zhang Yang picked the stone giant's heart and kept it in the inventory before looking at other items.

"Oh man...Why didn't this boss drop any weapon shards?" said Wei Yan Er. She had yet to get over Zhang Yang's Dark Enigmatic Sword. Even though there were three Yellow-Gold items and a bunch of Gray-Silver items around, there was not a single piece of weapon or armor shard.

Zhang Yang snickered at her and said, "This boss is as easy as a pie. Moreover, it's a quest based boss. It was kind enough to drop some Yellow-Gold items for you! What more can you ask for?"

"Stop talking and start picking! And don't forget to post the item descriptions if there are any good equipment!" said Han Ying Xue disgruntledly.

Who best to tame the raging Han Ying Xue besides little Wei Yan Er? Instantly, she had picked up the three Yellow-Gold equipment and posted it on the party channel.

[Obsidian Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +50

Strength: +47

{Unidentified}

Use: You have received the blessing of the Obsidian stone. Increases 700 Strength for 5 seconds.

Cool Down Time: 30 seconds

Level Requirement: 70

"Not bad. This item can grant a sudden burst damage. The cool down is

a little too long though," said Zhang Yang.

"Rings have bonus attributes while Accessories doesn't, that should explain the length of the cooldown. Correct? After Identifying the item, the bonus Strength should be around 1000, right?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"Hm. That's right." Said Zhang Yang. He scratched his chin and added, "Little brat, I think I want this ring. High Vitality, good strength, yea...I like this. Besides, I only have two Level 50 rings!"

Wei Yan Er then quickly clutched the little metal ring in her hands and shook her head left and right vigorously. "Hell no! No way! Mine! Mine!"

Everyone could not help but laugh at her comical act.

[Emerald Crown] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +202

Intelligence: +189

Spirit: +100

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 70

Zhang Yang voiced out promptly. "Snow b*tch and Daffodil have Yellow-Gold equipment. I say we leave this one out for Fantasy Sweetheart."

Han Ying Xue immediately pouted. "Cough Somebody sure have a greedy heart. Just when you can't get enough from your own bowl, you've started to scoop from the pot!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "What are you saying?"

"I'm saying, you already someone for you! Why are you still trying to pick up someone else?"

"Huh? Since when have you been in my bowl?"

"Oh please...I'm not talking about me, I'm talking about Daffodil! That girl is full on lady wood for you. Just look at the poor girl, she's been your

guild secretary and personal assistant!" Han Ying Xue pulled Daffodil by the sleeve and pushed her forward, turning her cheeks crimson vermillion.

"Sigh...calling you a b*tch would be an insult to all b*tches out there. Please calm your titties! Why would you even try to tease her?"

[Defender's Gauntlet] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +101

Strength: +40

Intelligence: +20

{Unidentified}

Equip Effect: Absorb 81 damage on attack.

Level Requirement: 70

"Damn! That Endless Starlight is freaking lucky!"

Disgruntled, Zhang Yang kept the equipment that was meant for Defenders into his inventory. They may have looted plenty of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment from this boss, but since there were so many mouth to feed, there was a situation that even the main tank of the secondary raid team, Endless Starlight had not yet have a complete set of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment.

"Hmph! We can't just give it to him for free! We should charge him for it!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Yeah. I agree. At least 5,000 gold coins!" said Han Ying Xue.

Endless Starlight had always been hanging out with Fatty Han, a lot. Both of them had been casually spouting nonsense annoying the females.

Zhang Yang sighed at the pathetic Endless Starlight and said, "Cut him some slack, girls! Do you really think that charging 5,000 gold coins would be too much for that kid? I say, we charge him 50,000!"

"...what the hell...I had never knew that noob tank would be that sly! Nyehehehe!" said Wei Yan Er.

After collecting all the battle loots on the ground, the team went out of the temple and headed back to the valley to finish up the quest.

Along the way, the entire team was silent and quiet. There was not a single conversation going on. Eventually, the party, mostly just Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, had to create some kind of joke just to tease the little girl, which had annoyed the ever so hyperactive Wei Yan Er. After "cutting ties" with Han Ying Xue for god-knows-how-many times, the team had arrived at the Butterfly Valley and spoke to Princess Snow White.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Strongest Stone in the Universe. Obtained 4,000,000 Experience Points!’

Snow White held the stone and pressed it against her chest and expressed her appreciation. "Adventurers! You have done it! You have brought the stone back!"

"It was nothing but a small task, my princess!" said Zhang Yang as he saluted the princess.

"I do not wish to pour cold water over this celebration, but the toughest part would be what comes next!" said Snow White as she gazed into the distance. "You will have to take this stone and infiltrate the Royal Castle. There, you will need to search for the magic mirror and destroy it with this stone! Only then, would the magical power of the evil witch be weakened! Dear adventurer! I plead of you, would you extend your help to save this Kingdom of Oz?"

‘Ding! Princess Snow White has a quest for you: Destroy the Magic Mirror! Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang stretched a little, doing a little warm-up before saying, "My princess, your wish is our command!"

"That's wonderful to hear! Here, I have something for you." Snow White took out a large cloak and gave it to Zhang Yang. "This magic cloak helped me escape the Royal Castle. Imbued in this cloak is the magic from my godmother which can be used to hide your body! Without it, I would have...*sigh*. Now, I give this to you. You can use this cloak to sneak through the Royal Castle outposts with ease. The magic mirror should be

hidden in the deepest part of the Astrology Tower."

[Snow White's Magical Cloak] (Quest Item)

Item Description: Holy smokes! This cloak is truly fantastic! It could actually increase in size!

"Please make haste! That evil magic mirror is omniscient! If the evil witch had asked the right question, your lives might be in danger! Please hurry! Godspeed!" said Snow White nervously.

Zhang Yang received the cloak and turned to the princess. "My princess, rest assured, we will bring good news upon our return."

The five of them left the valley and not long after, Wei Yan Er slammed the back of her chocobo hard and it jumped in surprised. "Oh crap! I forgot to enter the house to check out the seven dwarfs!"

Other were also shock and thought that it was something more vital...

Along the way, Zhang Yang and the team rode rather quickly. He looked at the time and spoke. "After tonight, the time in the game will be altered. The time in the game will be three time slower than reality. A 3:1 ratio. Additionally, you can also play the game in sleep! It's 11.38pm. Let's logged off first and wait until midnight. Let's play together in our sleep then!"

"...Please! Who would want to sleep with you!"

Everyone agreed and logged out of the game to have their late-night supper, rest, and carry out other temporary recreational activities to pass the time. After 12 midnight, they logged back into the game and noticed the system announcement, saying the time in game and reality had been set from 1:1 to 3:1.

"I'd say, if the game time ratio was set to infinity, would that mean that we could live forever in the game?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"I think that would be an endless dream!"

"Somehow, that's a little scary."

"Pssh. Let's just focus on doing our quest. Let's not dwell too much on this."

After the game time was set, the players could feel no difference. Zhang Yang and his merry friends did not behave nor responded differently. The five of them rode down to a small town to inquire the location of the Royal Palace.

As the party venture on, they had spent more than five hours, and finally arrived to an ancient castle with high walls and barricade. Standing at the bottom of the mighty construction, they felt like they were literally ants in a gigantic mega structure. (Author's Note: Whenever time was mention in the game, unless specified, will be game time, not reality.)

Riding around the castle wall, they found a huge door and immediately entered the castle.

'Ding! You have entered Hera's Castle!'

You can observe the entire detail of Hera's Castle simple by opening the world map and focused on the castle. The Royal Palace was located at the center most point! Thus, the party rode forwards from the wall, towards the center.

Outside the Royal Palace, stood 16 well-armed, heavily-armored soldiers guarding the entrance to the palace. The ones to the right were armed with swords, and the remaining were armed with long spears. Each of them were extremely well-built, irradiating with enough malice to send any weak-spirited soldiers back home and cry for their mama.

[Royal Guard of Oz] (Elite. Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 400

Note: Oz's most powerful soldiers. Each of them have been through thousands of battles and have been honed to perfection.

"16!? 1,000,000 HP elite monsters!?" Zhang Yang felt like his balls had just shrunk a little. "This is just the front gate! God knows what we will expect inside!"

"Quick! Take out the magic cloak!"

"Calm down, Harry Potter. Don't need to be that feisty!" Zhang Yang laughed at the little girl and took out the magic cloak. "Come to me. Try to squeeze in a little bit more. I think this cloak could fit us all!"

Even though the decryption had mention about its flexible size, there was still a limit to how large it could expand. The party literally had to squeeze together like sardine in a can to have the cloak effect.

"Gah! I---I have trouble breathing!"

"Can we even move properly like this?"

"Damn! Please woman! Have the courtesy to start dieting! You're so fat that you're taking up more space than I am!"

"Please, boy! Are you calling me fat? Just so you know, I'm well-figured!"

"Riiiiight..."

It was rather hard for the five of them moving together. They hobbled together at snail's pace. Like five drunkards wobbling about, the five of them bumped into each other repeatedly while they made their way into the palace.

thud

They had even accidentally bumped into once of the guards. Fortunately, no matter how realistic the graphics of the game may be, the system of the game still relied on the visible spectrum in the sight of monsters to trigger their aggro. Since aggro was decided on sight and proximity, the party had not triggered any aggro and the guards remained silent and stoic.

"Nyehehehe. This is fun!" said Wei Yan Er. The little girl had taken the liberty to have fun while being squished like human sandwich; playing around and pushing the persons in front, while using her butt to bunt the person behind her.

"Damn! Stop playing, stupid! That dummy is touching me all over now!" Han Ying Xue squeaked. She was positioned directly behind Zhang Yang. Since Wei Yan Er had been playing around, she had caused Han Ying Xue

to pressed her ample breasts against Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately took offense and snarled. "Come on! This is just a game! Even if I were to unleash my beastly desires on you, you won't be affected one bit! That precious hymen of yours will still be there! Geez!"

"D-D-Dummy..." Han Ying Xue whispered quietly as blood rushed to her cheeks.

Obviously, rape or any sexual intercourse would not occur in the game. Still, everything we feel, see, hear, smell, and touch are all decided by electrical impulses in the brain. Even though in reality, Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang had not made any physical contact, the game would generate a similarly tactile sensation that could not be distinguished from real life!

Secretly, Han Ying Xue was greatly aroused by the constant rubbing and pressure. Her breath was getting ragged and the most embarrassing part was, she could feel the tips of her globes stiffening up.

Chapter 287: Shaenita

After a short series of curving route and corners, the party had finally arrived at the deepest parts of the palace. There, a hundred-meter-tall tower stood there, covered in a completely silver outline which practically glowed brighter than the moon itself!

"Hm...silver...not appealing enough. It would be better if it was made of gold. It will look rather bold that way, no? You know, it looks like Sun Wu Kong's Ru Yi Jing Gu Bang!"

The place where they were right now should be the Astrology Tower. Unlike other places that were fully guarded, this towering structure had only four guards securing the entrances and no one else inside. There was practically nothing inside but a long spirally stone stairway, twisting up all the way to the peak of the tower.

Zhang Yang removed the cloak and everyone finally sighed a breath of relief and moved away from their own personal space. Other than Wei Yan Er, who expressed her dissatisfaction of not having enough fun, the rest of the girls were flushed pink like a glowing peach. They could not be helped but to glance at Zhang Yang once in a while, while cowering away with a mild sense of embarrassment. The five of them were practically on skin to skin contact during the sneaking part, which meant only one thing. Almost all the forbidden places had been "fondled" away. That explained the peachy-ness.

"Well...Time to climb the tower now," said Zhang Yang, oblivious to their predicaments, as he scratched his forehead after seeing how tall the tower was.

"This is going to be a pain in the arse."

The five of them protested a little but have no choice but to walk up the long flight of stairs.

"What a drag! huff huff Why couldn't they install a freaking elevator!?" Wei Yan Er complaint as she was huffing and puffing along the way.

In the game, a character could get tired after a certain period of action. The fatigue could be alleviated after a simple rest. If the character were to chew on bread or snacks, the recovery rate would be faster. There were other factors that would contribute to stamina as well, such as a player's Strength value. The higher the Strength, the longer one could endure without being tired. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were already panting like mad dogs, were drenched in sweat.

Zhang Yang saw how exhausted those two unathletic ladies were and had to stop.

"Let's take a break." He said.

Even though one could travel a thousand miles on a mount, players would have to rely on their own two feet to climb a tower. After a short rest, the team continued on for another 20 minutes and arrived at the top of the tower.

The area on top of the tower was surprisingly huge. At the center of the of the circular space was a gigantic telescope that looked like it was a hyper-mega-particle-beam cannon from one of those spaceships in sci-fi movies, giving the tower a true sense of an authentic astrological study. The only remaining missing piece was an old man with a walking stick gazing into the heavens via the telescope. Hanging on the left side on the wall of the dome shape observatory, was the door-sized mirror that glowed with a golden luster. The surface was the mirror was smooth like ice, yet the reflection of it was slightly darkened as if it had a protective barrier in it.

[Mirror of Truth] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 1,000,000

Magic Defense: 1,000,000

"Is this the so called magic mirror?" asked Han Ying Xue. Like a fish attracted to a bait, the girls started to flock over the mirror and stared into

it to observe their own reflections.

The sheer HP and Defense value of the mirror was so bewildering that the mere thought of shattering the mirror via brute force was abandoned immediately.

Without delay, Zhang Yang took out the [Heart of Herlow] and wanted smash the mirror with it. He was immediately stopped by Han Ying Xue just when he was about to thrust the stone-like object.

"Wait!" said all the girls.

Zhang Yang was stunned. "What's wrong? Don't you want to finish the quest?"

"Of course, we do! Just wait for a minute..."

Han Ying Xue was the first one to spoke to the mirror. "Mirror, mirror, on the wall, who is the fairest of them all?"

If you could actually see Zhang Yang's face right now, it would look like the emoticon that look like this --|||.

"My lovely lady. Princess Snow White is the fairest lady of them all!" A face materialize in the mirror and spoke in a voice that was hard to distinguished between a man and a woman.

"Oho...I see..." Han Ying Xue waltzed over to Zhang Yang and took the [Heart of Herlow] from him.

"Mirror, mirror, on the wall, do you know what am I holding in my hand?" she asked.

"My lovely lady. That is the Heart of Herlow."

"Now tell me mirror, what will happened to you, if I took this piece of rock and smashed you with it?"

"My lovely l-l-lady...I-I-I would shatter into a thousand pieces and perish!"

Han Ying Xue grinned. "I see that you understand the situation. Now tell me once more, O mirror, mirror, on the wall, who is the fairest of them

all?"

"My lovely lady. You are the fairest of them all!" The mirror lied immediately.

Zhang Yang quietly praised the programmer of the game for even making an object like that possess such a level of AI.

Satisfied with the answer she had obtained, Han Ying Xue passed the rock to Daffodil Daydream and went to rest at one side. Under the threat of the [Heart of Herlow], the mirror could not help but to lie his reflective *ss off to satisfy all the girls around. Wei Yan Er was the last one to receive the baton and she asked. "Magic mirror! Magic mirror! What is my name?!"

"My lovely child, your name is Drizzler!"

"Haha! This is fun! It actually knows my name!" Wei Yan Er squealed in delight. She then walked closer to the mirror and was only 2 inches away from it.

She asked again. "Magic mirror. Do you think that my chest will grow any bigger?"

Zhang Yang frowned and facepalmed himself so hard that it actually left a mark on his forehead. This little girl had the impression of the mirror really knows it all! But lo and behold, the mirror really did answer her question!

"My lovely child. Everything you wish for shall come true!"

Wei Yan Er squealed again in delight. She turned over to Zhang Yang swiftly and said, "hey noob tank! I like this mirror! Let's take it back!"

"Are you playing?!" said Zhang Yang angrily as he snatched the [Heart of Herlow] from Wei Yan Er. Without waiting for any answer or response from the girls, Zhang Yang quickly threw the rock towards the mirror and broke it.

Piang!

The 100 million HP mirror immediately shattered into uncountable

pieces.

"Sigh...what a shame." Said Daffodil Daydream. The rest of the girls seems disappointed as well.

As they completed their mission, instead of walking down the tower, the party tore their [Teleportation Scroll] and went to Thunderstorm Castle instead. There, it was nearer and faster to reach to Oz instead of walking back from the Astronomy Tower.

Three hours of riding later, the party arrived to Butterfly Valley for the third time.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Destroy the Magic Mirror! Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!'

"O brave adventurers! You have done it again!" Snow White cheered happily. "Now, it's time to eliminate the evil witch! Once I have regained my rightful place in the throne, I shall reward all of you handsomely!"

"My princess, let us go together and vanquish this evil witch!" Wei Yan Er cheered.

"Adventurer! Would you assist me in eliminating the evil witch?" Snow White asked the party anticipatingly.

'Ding! Snow White has a quest for you: Take Back the Throne! Will you accept it?'

"Yes! Yes!" Wei Yan Er frantically nodded his head.

[Take Back the Throne] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Kill the evil Queen Shaenita and rescue the Kingdom of Oz! Heroes! Hopes lies just over the horizon!

Quest Participant Limit: 5

Progress: Kill Shaenita 0/1

"Let's ride then! Onward!" Snow White waved her hands and summoned a blood red Direwolf and rode it bravely.

"How cool!" said Wei Yan Er. Her voice was a mixture of both jealousy

and adminration.

As the party rode out of the valley, the princess waved her hands again. She cast a skill {Haste} on everyone which increased the movement speed by a fewfolds. Like a rampaging squall, the six of them rode at a breakneck speed towards the kingdom.

In less than one hour, the party had arrived at Hera's Castle. There, Snow White took out a magic cape and put it on herself. "I will follow your lead to the Royal Castle!" she cried.

As she put on the cloak on herself, the magic seeped in and rendered her completely invisible.

Zhang Yang led the party to proceed on toward the palace entrance. There, the muffled voice of Snow White broke through the air and said, "I will protect you with my magic cloak! Go on!"

A sudden darkness blanketed their vision and after a quick second, their vision returned. They just realized that Snow White had just covered all of them with the magic cloak.

"At this time of the day, the witch should be having tea by the flower garden!" said the princess. She then led the party forwards and moved around the palace with great precision as if she was extremely familiar with the route around the palace. In no time at all, the party arrived at the garden.

There were a total of 11 guards patrolling the entrance. All of them were Level 77, elite tier with 150,000 HP! One of them guards was even a Yellow-Gold tiered boss!

[Guard Captain, Angelo] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Note: Angelo was once a Hunter.

"Someone's there!" Angelo sniffed something in the air and yelled from

the top of his lungs. He pulled out a long sword from his back and pointed at the direction where Zhang Yang was hidden.

As expected of a Hunter, with instincts and senses like a dog!

The other guards were confused at Angelo's sudden outburst and went on surround the area where Zhang Yang and his party were, even though, from the guard's perspective, they were just surrounding nothing but air.

"Reveal yourself! My sense of smell will never be wrong!" Angelo bellowed.

Without any means of warning, Snow White yanked off the cloak on her and revealed herself to Angelo. "Angelo! I need your help! Oz needs your help!"

"Princess!?" Everyone, including Angelo and the rest of the guards around were stunned.

"No, princess! You have lied to me! I may have spared your life the last time! But my will and loyalty is still to the Kingdom of Oz! You have plotted against your own father, the great and benevolent Andalu the Third. This sin of blood must be repaid in blood! You will die!" Angelo bellowed and swung his sword towards Snow White.

Before the sword landed, Zhang Yang, who had already anticipated, pulled on the reins of his bear and intercept the sword strike with his shield held up high.

{Block}!

Pang!

The sword clashed heavily against the shield and sent thousands of sparks flying off into the air. Zhang Yang had successfully blocked the boss' attack.

"Brothers! Kill the traitors!" Angelo stabbed the sword into the ground and commanded his troops to attack.

Well, d*mn!

Zhang Yang swiftly activated {Blood Rage} and increased his Rage to

over 60. He waited a quick moment for the guards to approach nearer and activated {Horizontal Sweep}. Numerous waves of attack blasted off as the Dark Enigmatic Sword effects were triggered repeatedly, causing 4,000+ damage over and over again. Zhang Yang was rather lucky this time as the sword had triggered a total of six counts and had dealt more than a total of 300,000 damage to all.

"That's ridiculous!" Han Ying Xue cried in surprise.

"Indeed, it was!" said the ever-silent Sun Xin Yu which had added on to their surprise.

"Hehe! What are you waiting for?! Stop staring and start killing!" Zhang Yang yelled.

While facing a large group of monsters, the capabilities of the Dark Enigmatic Sword would increase tremendously! The more enemies there were, the better it would be! Zhang Yang activated {Blast Wave} to attack and this time, the skill was triggered three more times and caused a relatively high damage!

"Kill the minions with your AoE skills first! We'll target the boss last!" Zhang Yang screamed.

‘-6,206!’

Angelo attacked Zhang Yang, and this time, his {Block} was on cool down and had to take the hit head on.

Zhang Yang's bear was already at Level 71, with a HP of 19,640! After combining with Zhang Yang, their shared life would boost Zhang Yang HP to a whopping 48,780 HP. The boss slashed at Zhang Yang and had only chipped away one eighth of his total HP.

"Brothers! Kill them! Kill them all!" cried Angelo. With a sudden burst of red hue, the guards gained a buff.

‘Ding! Angelo has used {Raging Command}!’

[Raging Command: Increased 20% Melee Damage. Last for 2 minutes.

"Nice! That skill is awesome! I want one!" cried Wei Yan Er as she

yanked Zhang Yang sleeves.

Even though all the monsters aggro was on Zhang Yang, the number of monsters that could only attack him was three at a time. Zhang Yang had relied on his positioning and constant maneuvering around the boss to block the monsters around which had limited the number of monsters engaging him. Coupled with his strong defense armor, Zhang Yang was only taking close to 5,000 damage per second.

While Zhang Yang was taking all the damage, the rest of the girls had start releasing all their AoE skills, leaving Han Ying Xue to throw healing spells on Zhang Yang. With her healing rate close to 3,000 HP per second, Zhang Yang could only last for approximately 24 seconds before he would be in danger. If he relied on {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and {Rearm}, he would at least last for another minute or so.

If he was to win this battle, he would need to hurry up with clearing all the guards before he starts taking on the boss.

Princess Snow White was a Berserker class NPC. With a long sword in her fragile-looking hands, she danced around like a butterfly and attacked the guards around swiftly. She did not have any AoE skills, her damage was not as strong, hence, she was not just an ornament in the battlefield!

Still, Zhang Yang had quickly used up {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and {Rearm} to repeat his cycle of skills again. Luckily, with the effect of the Dark Enigmatic Sword and the girls with strong equipment, everyone had managed to kill all the monsters right before Zhang Yang started to get worried about his HP.

One thing led to the other; and once the monsters around were gone, the boss was nothing but a simple target to kill. Even though Angelo was a Yellow-Gold boss, it was just gatekeeper boss that was meant to guard doors, nothing spectacularly powerful. It true that the skill {Raging Command} was powerful, but only when the surrounding allies were many. Once the monsters around had been weeded out, its skill would not be of much help alone. The long 7,800,000 HP was nothing but a delay of the inevitable. In just ten minutes or so, Angelo grunted loudly before

falling, defeated.

"Adventurers! We have now passed the final obstacle. The evil witch is just inside there! The last fight is there!" said Snow White, before rushing into the garden on her own.

Before moving to the garden, Zhang Yang instructed, "Take the loots first! We'll distribute them after the battle with the witch!"

As expected of royalty, even the garden of the palace was as huge as a football field. The party followed closely after Snow White and after sprinting for a few hundred meters, they had arrived at where the last boss was at!

Not far from the garden was a grand swing with a huge wooden seat in the middle. Sitting quietly on the swing was a beautiful lady dressed in a black. She was reading a book, occasionally flipping the pages along with her right hand. Beside the swing were four maids standing quietly, awaiting orders from their master. They were all elite tier.

[Queen Shaenita] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

MP: 4,000,000

Defense: 1,400

Note: The stepmother of Snow White, a witch with unlimited magic power.

[Loyal Maid] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 400

"Shaenita! I've returned!" cried Snow White boldly with rage.

Surprised, the lady stood up frantically from the swing. Her tall slender body was filled with the elegance of a true born royalty aura. She lifted her

fair, pale finger and pointed them furiously at Snow White. "You...You dare to show yourself here!"

"Shaenita! Today will be the day you die!"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Ru Yi Jing Gu Bang – The golden magical staff that Sun Wu Kong wields which is capable of adjust its size according to the wielders' will.

Chapter 288: The Truth about the Dark and the Light

"Snow White! You evil being! I will never allow Oz to fall into your hands! Your evil ways will cause Oz to fall into the depth of the abyss!" Shaenita held up a dark magic staff and stepped forwards boldly.

She raised her staff up high and chanted something rather mysterious. However, after a quick rumble, she stopped halfway. Her confident expression went pale immediately. She looked up to Snow White, with horror written all over her face.

"You...You've destroyed the Mirror of Truth!?"

Shaenita looked in despair at Zhang Yang and the party. Her voice trembled as she spoke. "The Mirror of Truth is the one and only thing that could repel Snow White! She could have never destroyed it herself! It was you! All of you! How could all of you be so dumb and stupid to help her!? Imbeciles! You have assisted evil itself! What have you done?!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. It was a huge, sudden change of events.

"Did we just help the villain?"

"I think the evil witch is the good guy here, and Snow White is the evil one!"

"Damn! We have been duped into thinking that the plot will follow the actual fairy tale! This is 'God's Miracle'! Not the world of Grimm's fairy tales! Snow White isn't the real damsel in distress! And the stepmother isn't the real villain here!"

"Sneaky developers!"

"I think it's on us. Remember when we met Snow White for the first time, the system had given two choices. To kill her or to spare her. We were the ones who chose to help Snow White with her evil plot!"

"Oh I see! No wonder why we haven't seen the seven dwarfs! She must have killed them all!"

Snow White laughed. It was not the same kind of laugh of a woman. It was the exact same cliché laugh of a villain. The deep, long, maniacal, and draggy laughter. "You're absolutely right! These gullible adventurers had helped me! The only thing I had to do was to tell them a pathetic story and they had bowed down obediently to me! With a simple request, they had agreed to help me to kill Herlow and get his heart for me, sneak into the palace for me, and destroy the Mirror of Truth for me! Hahaha! Shaenita! Without the mirror, you're not worthy of being my opponent. Today, I will let it rain blood all over the Kingdom of Oz! I will summon the darkness to envelop Oz for as long as I breathe! I will instill fear into every one here! They will fear me! They will worship me! For I, am, Snow White!"

Shrom!

Black rays started to leak out of Snow White and blasted off everywhere like a massive explosion. More and more rays blasted out of her in the form of sharp swords. As the rays dimmed a little, Snow White's black hair floated around wildly. Her eyes glowed brightly. Another sudden flash of light blasted off her and she gained a three tier jump.

[Snow White] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 2,400

"Violet! Platinum!" Everyone gasped in horror.

"Adventurer! Your acts have led to this result! Because of your foolishness, you Snow White now roams free! Now, you have to do what is right! Kill her now! Do not let her win! Or Oz will forever be plunged into darkness!" Shaenita pleaded the party.

'Ding! Your quest: Take Back the Throne has been forfeited.'

'Ding! Shaenita has a quest for you: Atonement! Will you accept it?'

Accept!

[Atonement] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Due to your inconsiderate acts, Oz is now facing the greatest threat against humankind. Without the Mirror of Truth, the evil Snow White is now undefeatable! You will have to atone for your mistake and kill the princess to save Oz from certain doom!

Quest Participant Limit: 5

Progress: Kill Princess Snow White 0/1

The quest had just completed a huge loop, from killing Snow White back and back again. The only difference back then, was Snow White was just an elite tier monster, but now, she had turned into a formidable Violet-Platinum boss. Which was, by far, the strongest boss in the game!

With that quest level of difficulty, it surely had to come with a certain level of reward!

If the party had killed off Snow White when she was only an elite tier monster, the rewards obtained from the quest would be relative to that level. However, after the sudden change of events that had led to Snow White gaining a huge upgrade, the quest had also been upgraded to an S Level difficulty! Not that an S level quest was that scarce throughout the game, but once a quest was set to an S level difficulty, the rewards would most definitely be luxurious!

Zhang Yang was the first one to intercept Snow White's attack. With a quick flash, Zhang Yang swung his sword and hacked at Snow White.

‘-1,005!’

With a 2,400 Defense value, Zhang Yang unbelievable attack was diminished to only 1,000, even though he had {Eagle Eye}.

Snow White retaliated with a raging roar and countered Zhang Yang attack with her own long sword.

{Block}!

Wham!

As her huge long sword clashed onto Zhang Yang's shield, the huge difference in strength and power had pushed Zhang Yang a few steps

back! This proved the formidable power of a Violet-Platinum boss!

The worst was not over just yet. In just two seconds, Snow White rushed to Zhang Yang and attacked again. This time, Zhang Yang was forced to take the attack head on!

‘-12,606!’

Even though he may be a Guardian with huge physical attack defense, and also, by far, had the strongest equipment in game, Zhang Yang still took an insane level of damage from the boss.

"GRAHHHH! How dare you deceive this young lady's good heart! I will smash you good!" cried Wei Yan Er as she started attacking Snow White furiously. Without much delay, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attackers followed Wei Yan Er and started to attack as well.

Still, no matter how spirited they were, everyone besides Zhang Yang could not deal much damage. Since Snow White was a Level 80 Violet-Platinum boss with ultra-thick defense, coupled with the huge level gap between the party and the boss, all their attacks were greatly reduced.

Wei Yan Er was still able to dish out visible damage values since she was wielding a two-handed weapon to begin with. However, attackers like Sun Xin Yu could all scratch the boss with her tiny daggers and deal only three digits damage numbers to the boss! Daffodil Daydream's attacks would not be affected by the boss defense, however, since the level gap was too huge between them, and they were penalized for a different reason.

The only person who could deal a visible amount of damage was Zhang Yang alone. He was, by far, the highest-level player in the game at Level 71. He had a nine Level gap, the damage reduction was not too severe. Besides, he was always able to hit the boss, ignoring all Defense with {Eagle Eye} and {Cripple Defense}.

However strong Zhang Yang was, Snow White was several times stronger than he could ever be! Even though she could not instantly kill Zhang Yang, her strength was so strong that the super-healer Han Ying Xue could not keep with the HP loss! She had been putting all she has on Zhang Yang and still could not keep him out of danger!

On the other hand, what made things worse was that Zhang Yang had already used all his strong skills during the fight with Angelo! {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal} and even {Rearm} was on cold down!

"Foolish peasant! You dare to attack me!? Die!" Snow White bellowed thunderously and spun around with her long sword far out.

‘-27,080!’

‘-27,000!’

‘-27,160!’

‘-27,160’

‘-19,966!’

‘Ding! You have received 27,080 damage from Snow White {Tornado Cleave} (120 damage reduced)!’

...

‘Ding! You have received 19,966 damage from Snow White {Tornado Cleave} (6,240 damage reduced)!’

The AoE of the skill was so huge that even Han Ying Xue, who was standing far behind, received the attack! The damage was so great that everyone besides Zhang Yang was instantly killed! None of them even had the split-second window to use their skills such as {Ice Frame} or {Vanish}.

Though Zhang Yang still had over 10,000 HP in his HP gauge, he quickly jumped down and escape more attacks with {Shadow of the Void}.

‘-16,600!’

When Zhang Yang had vanished and cleared his aggro, the only one target left in the battle field was the white bear. A single strike from Snow White was enough to kill the bear, allowing Zhang Yang to safely escape.

Zhang Yang was pissed. He was so ticked off that he resorted to using his trump card. Swiftly, he took out the [Friendship Jade], equipped it, and canceled {Shadow of the Void}.

When his character reappeared, his appearance had undergone a major change. From the rotting flesh, to dangling ribs, his entire appearance was changed into a spectre!

After successfully killing off the players around, Snow White shifted her target to Shaenita. The fight between two NPC boss was on another level. Still, Shaenita was just a Yellow-Gold tier boss. Though she may had the help from her four elite tier maids, Snow White had killed them all by spamming {Tornado Cleave} on and on until Shaenita herself was at the brink of death. Snow White herself had only lost 10% of her HP after the ordeal.

Zhang Yang walked closer to the bosses and lightly pressed the jade in his palm. At the top of his rotten lungs, he cried. "Come to me! Shadow of Smaug!"

Voom!

With a strong blast wave of an unknown force, a shadow emerged out of the [Friendship Jade] and materialized in midair, taking the form of Smaug, The King of the Forgotten One. Though he had a single skeletal wing protruding out from his back, and a fully skeletal body, Smaug was not lacking in his threat value!

[Shadow of Smaug] (Holy, Summon)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Note: This is but the shadow of Smaug, yet it still possesses tremendous power!

The moment Smaug appeared in the battle field, his dominating presence had even cause Snow White and Shaenita to stop their skirmish for a good second! They lowered their weapons and stared at Smaug, terrified!

Zhang Yang pointed his boney finger to Snow White and commanded.

"Kill her!"

"Growl!" Incapable of any form of speech, Smaug growled and brandished its copy of the Blood Shadow Blade and rushed towards his target.

DIING!

Fearing for her life, Snow White frantically lifted her sword up to parry Smaug's attack. The strike was so strong that a single metal clashing sound was as loud as a gunshot fired right beside your ears. The strike was not just for show. It had managed to send Snow White flying back a good 10 meters and more, leaving a deep mark on the floor where Snow White had dug her feet in.

‘-200,000!’

It was not a glitch, nor was it a system error. Smaug had indeed dealt 200,000 damage on Snow White with just one parried strike.

"Noob tank! What's happening?" Just when Han Ying Xue and the girls were running back to the fight as fast as they could, Wei Yan Er sent a message via the party channel.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Just hurry up! You're missing a good show!"

The shadow of Smaug was relentless. One strike after the other, the shadow did not stop to rest for even a second as he struck at the enemy with all his malice.

Before the appearance of Smaug in the battle field, Snow White had seemed unstoppable. However, right after Smaug was summoned, she was immediately turn from a formidable enemy to a mere punching bag as she continually had her HP chiseled away like nothing. Just so you know, after Violet-Platinum, there would still be the Mythical and Ethereal rank before coming to Holy tier! With a three tier gap between the two of them, it was obvious who was going to perish!

The gang quickly made their way back to Zhang Yang and was instantly shocked at at his appearance. While talking, the girls quickly munch on recovery snacks.

"Woah. Dummy Yu, what had happened to you?"

Zhang Yang scoffed. "If I hadn't become like this, how do I summon that awesome ultimate weapon!?" Zhang Yang replied Han Ying Xue and also posted the properties of [Friendship Jade] on the party channel.

"Holy-macaroni! That is awesome! Why didn't you tell me about this awesome thing!" Wei Yan Er puffed angrily. "Hey! There's only two uses left! Give it to me! I wanna play!"

"Dumb girl. Don't you see it's bound to me?"

Wei Yan Er squinted and stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang. "Noob tank! Call me dumb one more time, and I will cut ties with you!"

Chapter 289: The Second Territory

Command Order

The shadow of Smaug continued slashing away like a butcher, hacking away Snow White's HP down from 8,000,000 as if it was just a piece of butter. How could a mere Violet-Platinum boss last for long, under the attack from a Holy tier summon?! One hack and 200,000 HP was gone!

That being said, no matter how strong Smaug was, being their ally and all, Han Ying Xue and the rest of them had just jumped out of the pan, and surely enough, they know where the fire was. As far as they could go, there's they will be. Smaug was hacking Snow White like madman slapping his child. However, Snow White was still a fearsome boss with attacks strong enough to whack everyone dead with a slap to the face. If they were to get a little hot headed, it would be like ants trying to walk between the battle of two huge tornadoes. Since a pet mount can only be summoned 10 minutes after being killed, Zhang Yang's own 30,000 HP would not be enough to guarantee him a safe sideline show. Not that he could even deal much damage to begin with anyway.

In the end, Snow White slain by Smaug's shadow in just less than two minutes. After the usual wailing and cries of utter defeat, Snow White fell defeated and dropped a heap of battle loots. There were even a few metallic purple glows among the loots!

'Ding! Congratulation on being the first party to defeat an Open-World Violet-Platinum boss! Your glories achievement will be recorded in history! As the party leader, please name your party to be registered in the records!'

A system notification, followed by an input box appeared right the moment when Snow White was defeated.

Zhang Yang shrugged and keyed in the advertisement-like comment. Just one second after he hit the enter button, the server was flooded with the system announcement, followed by roaring responses from players from China. There were discussions, arguments, minor discourses, but

overall, players were impressed with the ability of Lone Desert Smoke managing to pull off this feat. The guild was even rowdier than ever with players cheering and applauding Zhang Yang, on and on. How could they not? When the guild's fame increases, they could wear their guild tag over their heads proudly.

Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman, Sword of Light, and Greensleeves Prince all sent their private messages to congratulate Zhang Yang. At one point, he was so busy replying them, that Han Ying Xue had to walk over to him and give him a nudge.

The reward for having the First-Kill of an open-world boss was a Luck attribute. After killing Snow White, Zhang Yang's Luck was raised to 10.

"S-S-Spectre!" Shaenita cried and glared at Zhang Yang with hatred in her eyes. She quickly reverted to a defensive stance.

Zhang Yang swiftly unequipped the [Friendship Jade] and reverted back to his original human form. As the item was removed, Smaug's shadow followed and disappeared into thin air. It was quite a huge waste there since Smaug's shadow would have remained for another 10 minutes. If only he could actually kill Shaenita. Since she was a Yellow-Gold boss...her loots would be...

NPCs would always behave like NPCs, clueless as ever. Once Zhang Yang returned to his human form, Shaenita relaxed and lowered her guard, talking to Zhang Yang as if nothing odd had happened a few seconds ago.

"You have atoned for your mistakes! You have my thanks! However, you must know that you had destroyed the Mirror of Truth. Still, you also helped in eliminating the evil Snow White from Oz, for good! With that, I thank you again!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Atonement. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience points!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: Obtained 5,000,000 Experience points!'

‘Ding! You have obtained the reward: {Unyielding Rage}!’

With his eyes wide open, Zhang Yang quickly open his inventory and took out a deep purple skill book.

[Skill Book: Unyielding Rage]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Unyielding Rage}!

Class Requirement: Warrior

Level Requirement: 10

Bound.

Without further delay, Zhang Yang pats the book on him to learn the skill.

[Unyielding Rage (Passive)]: Increases your maximum Rage point to 120.

Good stuff. Be it only 20 extra Rage point, this upper limit not only will allow the user to use more skills, but will also increase the maximum destructive power f the skill {Killing Cleave}.

"Did you obtain a skill book?" Zhang Yang asked the team.

"Yeah! I got {Unyielding Rage}!" Wei Yan Er answered swiftly.

"Mine was {Inferno}! Daffodil Daydream spoke up.

"Haha! What a loot! We were quite lucky!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"And then there’s still the Violet-Platinum equipment!" cried Wei Yan Er happily as she collected all the gold coins and equipment on the floor.

Snow White was the first Violet-Platinum boss that was killed in the game, thus, the battle loots were so rewarding that just equipment-wise, there were three pieces of Violet-Platinum and seven Yellow-Gold, enough to fill a player’s equipment tab!

[Ancient Killer Long Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Dexterity: +378

{Unidentified}

Class Requirement: Thief

Level Requirement: 80

Ancient Killer set (1/8):

Ancient Killer Face Mask, Ancient Killer Necklace, Ancient Killer Cape, Ancient Killer Chest Plate, Ancient Killer Gloves, Ancient Killer Leggings, Ancient Killer Long Boots, Ancient Killer Ring.

3 Set Equip Effect: Increase 500 Dexterity.

5 Set Equip Effect: Reduce {Vanish} cool down time by 1 minute.

8 Set Equip Effect: Grant a 1% chance to cast a shockwave attack on every attack. 5000 physical damage will be deal to all target in a small conical shape area in front of the caster.

Finally, a Thief set equipment!

Without a doubt, this piece of equipment went to Sun Xin Yu.

[Titan Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +141

Strength: +40

{Unidentified}

Equip Effect: Absorb 81 damage.

Equip Effect: Grant a 5% chance after a successful {Block} to cause 2000 physical damage to the attacker.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80.

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased. "Very nice! The third piece of the Titan set equipment! I could finally bring out the first set equipment effect!"

It was a pity that the third Violet-Platinum equipment was not a set equipment.

[Heaven's Hunting Bow] (Violet-Platinum, Ranged Weapon)

Weapon Attack: 1,843 – 2,243

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 538

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 80

"Haha! It's either Hundred Shots or Fatty Han who's gonna get lucky!" exclaimed Zhang Yang as he kept the bow.

The remaining seven Yellow-Gold equipment were rather good, however, most of them were equipping Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment, and were unwilling to break up their set effects. To make things simpler, they were aiming directly for Level 80 set equipment. Thus, all the Yellow-Gold equipment loots were headed straight to the shop for sale. It would be worth a whole lot since Yellow-Gold equipment was the gold standard for other players, and even major guild masters out there had not yet even managed to get their hands on a complete Yellow-Gold set!

This time, they had just realized that they have not yet gone through with the battle loots from Angelo! However, though Angelo's fight seemed easy, the battle drops were appropriately level to its difficulty, that is, two Yellow-Gold equipment and five Gray-Silver equipment, which were all going to the shop to be sold as well!

As they finished their quest, the five of them went back to Thunderstorm Castle and teleported back to White Jade Castle via the Teleportation Point. One by one, they Identified their new equipment and burned a hole in their pockets just to socket a Level 3 Gemstone.

Each Level 3 Gemstone costs at least 500 gold coins each, and had a 30% socket failure rate! At their current stage, the exchange rate between in-game currency and real-world currency had leveled out with each other;

1:1. 500 gold coins was now worth 500 dollars!

After the money-wrecking ordeal, Zhang Yang stored the three Titan set equipment in his storage warehouse. He could not help but sigh at the sight of the purple metallic luster of the equipment, counting down the days as he got closer to equipping them. With that, his motivation to reach Level 80 was as high as ever.

‘System Announcement: The second Territory Order has been found. The battle for the Territory will commence tomorrow night at 7pm (real-world time). Please make your preparations! The location of the Territory is Meadow Flatlands. The coordinates for the battle will be announced at the start of the battle! The battle for the Territory will last for three hours! After the battle is over, the last person who still holds the Territory Command Order will become the Territory owner!’

A system announcement flared up, causing a ripple of chaos throughout the entire server. Discussion, argument started again, some were debating which guild will the second Territory belong to. The other professional players were worried about the battle tomorrow, whether it will become a bloody ordeal or a complete chaos.

It did not take long before the news spread, claiming the guild that found the second Territory order was none other than Imperial Sky, and the person who found it was One Sword Stroke!

As expected of the rival guild of Lone Desert Smoke, the runner up of the Soaring Swords competition. Looks like they might have some luck on them after all!

The new about Imperial Sky obtaining the Territory Order was revealed by One Sword Stroke himself. He had broadcasted it proudly at his own Violet Star City and have blatantly requested that all players from that city assist his guild to secure the Territory. As a reward, all teleportation fees will be waived once he secures the second Territory Order!

Never underestimate the value of just one gold coin. It would still be a mountain of gold coins once accumulated. On average, a player would have spent at least 10 to 20 gold coin on travelling alone! With the huge

incentive offered by One Sword Stroke, players all over Violet Star city had given their support and had expressed their willingness to help Imperial Sky fight in the war!

"D*mn bro, that One Sword Stroke guy is quite impressive!" Lost Dream sighed. Zhang Yang had gone up and recruited all of the main attacking force.

A city would approximately have at least 6,000,000 players! Mind you that the number would only grow larger and larger! To waive one whole city's teleportation fees would be losing out on approximately 1,000,000 players! (Since they were still a majority of players that were still below Level 50). That being said, the profits lost there would be close to 20,000,000 gold coins a month!

Zhang Yang grinned. "He's smart. When we took down Thunderstorm Castle back then, we had help from Crimson Rage, Lost Paradise, and also Sky High. He may have sacrificed the earnings of an entire city, but he has been compensated for it by having a large army to defend his position."

"Hey hey! Are we going to make some trouble for them tomorrow?" Ever since the PvP competition in Shanghai, Wei Yan Er had been treating Imperial Sky with hostility since their dirty methods had been made known.

"Of course we would. How could we let them sit comfortably and get that Order? I'd say, let's bring them hell!"

"Hell yeah! Even if we don't get that second Territory, we should not let it fall into the hands of Imperial Sky!"

"That bunch of wenches! Let's f*ck them up!"

Just two days after the Soaring Sword competition had ended, Venshi from Radiance and Lonely Tree from Sunset Amber had left their own guild and joined Imperial Sky. By doing so, everything was made clear!

Not only were Radiance and Sunset Amber had been raging on about this matter, their anger was shared among other players as well. One by

one, they had filed their complaints to the organizers to rescind the runner up title from Imperial Sky, for cheating.

‘Ding! Player One Sword Stroke has used Monster Attack City Order on Thunderstorm Castle! 7pm tomorrow (real-world time), there will be hordes of monster attacking Thunderstorm Castle. The defensive battle will last for 3 hours! During the war, the teleportation point in Thunderstorm Castle will be deactivated. This Territory will only allow access to Lone Desert Smoke players at this time! If monsters have destroyed the main hall of the Thunderstorm Castle, the entire Territory will be erased permanently.’

Chapter 290: Monster Raid

"F*ck! D*mn, that One Inch 'Sword'! How dare he pull off such a move! We won't be able to leave Thunderstorm Castle unoccupied now!"

"Hmph! Obviously, he's afraid of us!"

"You got that right! That little boy doesn't dare take us head-on! That's why he's playing tricks like a schoolgirl! What a p*ssy!"

In an instant, members from Lone Desert Smoke had started to flood the guild channel with a massive number of angry complaint despite the warnings from Hundred Shots. It was clear that the system announcement was not narrowcasted to Zhang Yang alone, but to all members of Lone Desert Smoke.

Zhang Yang shook his head. There was more to this. He spoke in the party channel, "Lone Desert Smoke is big, but our presence does not necessitate the usage of such a rare item. We are strong. We are large, having 20,000 members. But all that is nothing against the might of an entire city! Our strength is not even up to scale!"

"What do you mean?"

"I'm saying that One Sword Stroke is a man with big ambitions. Not only does he intend to have the Territory for himself, at the same time, he wants to crush the Territory that belongs to us! That way, he would be the only person to own the one and only Territory in China! It is a good strategy. Why have competitors at all if you can crush them directly and leave everything to yourself?"

Everyone looked at Zhang Yang, their eyes wide open in realization. One Sword Stroke was indeed a greedy man!

"Noobie tank! How did that spineless worm get himself a Monster Attack Order? If Imperial Sky really do get their hands on the second Territory Order, we should get ourselves a Monster Attacking Order and raise them hell on Earth!" cried Wei Yan Er, puffing with angry steam.

Han Ying Xue interjected just when Zhang Yang was about to open his

mouth. "These monsters, are they hard to subdue?"

Zhang Yang replied with a sulk on his face. "That is a good question. For that, which I do not have any answer to."

During a Monster Attack event, only the guild members of the Territory could participate in the war. Once the battle starts, non-affiliated players will be automatically kicked out of the warzone. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had only managed to catch a few glimpse of how a monster attacking event took place. Some guilds were able to overcome the madness, while the unfortunate ones will be washed away by the waves of monsters.

Everyone knew that Zhang Yang was the person to go to, the person who knew it all, the beta tester; where no matter what sort of trouble they got themselves into, as long as Zhang Yang shone a light over their shadow, they would always get it right. But now, with even Zhang Yang left clueless, everyone knew that something was not right. Perhaps, this time, they were really in trouble.

Like the angel of death itself had just passed through the scene, the atmosphere was deathly silent and tense. The party went quiet. Everyone was fidgeting in their own way, wracked with worry. The atmosphere felt so tense that a single drop of needle could probably blow up the place.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Relax, guys. The game developers would not create something impossible. I'm sure there will be a way for us to prevail. As long as we work together, we will surely prevail."

"Okay!" Everyone replied in unison.

Since the in-game time and real world time had been set to 3:1, everyone took the opportunity to train heavily. Perhaps, before the decisive battle starts, they could just gain a little more strength. This was particularly true for those who had a nine in their levels. With just one more level to go, they could at least make some vital changes if they could, such as changing into new equipment, or obtaining new skills. That being said, Zhang Yang had just taken notice that he had not yet obtained his Level 70 class skill even though he was already at Level 71. Her then rode on his

white bear and rushed over to Ani, the Warrior class instructor.

As always, Ani's sexy body and alluring posture had drawn in a few perverted male swines, ogling at her from the side. Judging by the level of these useless scum, they had been squandering here for a long time. Their levels were only around Level 20 to 30. Without wasting any more time, Zhang Yang proceeded on and claimed his skill.

The Level 70 Warrior class skill was {Spear of Obliteration}.

[Spear of Obliteration]: Trust your weapon forward and deal 100% melee physical damage to a target. Attack ignores all Defense value. While Shield is equipped, this skill will generate a huge amount of aggro on the target.

Requirement: Melee Weapon

Range Distance: 3 – 30 meters.

Cool Down Time: 10 seconds.

This skill is the only ranged skill that a Warrior could have. The skill does not consume any Rage. The animation of the skill itself was rather flashy. However, since the skill was a ranged attack and had a 3 meter "blind spot", a Warrior would have to move away in order to use this skill, since all Warrior are melee attackers. That, or the skill could be used to start a fight. Besides that, this skill could be used in turn with {Thunder Strike} during PvP fights to kite an opponent to death.

With great power, comes great responsibility. This skill was strong, and it cost Zhang Yang 700 gold coins to learn. It could not be avoided. The developers had set it that way. There is no way of escaping the expenditure of this pot of gold.

After getting himself a new skill, Zhang Yang went to the auction house to do a little shopping. Lately, players have been getting smarter and better at doing business. Items such as recipe and skill book that would only reveal their use upon learning, were not auctioned before their functions had been determined beforehand! The players will do their research through forums or the item database, and set the price of the item only

after they had determined the items' capabilities.

Take the [Beginner Mobility Potion] that Zhang Yang obtained yesterday. That bargain was truly a purchase of once in a blue moon. The kind that you could only encounter but not seek. Still, after searching for a bit, Zhang Yang managed to find himself another good bargain. It was a [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll]!

This scroll functioned as a means to Engrave a pet skill and allow another pet to learn the fore mention skill. However, the skill that is Engraved will be lost from the host. It was just like the "cut-and-paste" function in a computer, the original skill will be moved, instead of being copied.

Though the [Gold-Eared Bear King] was currently the strongest pet in the game, it was only temporary. After Level 80, there will be Violet-Platinum tiers, Level 110 will have Mythical tiers, Level 140 will have Ethereal tiers and so on so forth. At most, this white bear could only follow Zhang Yang until he reached Level 110, after that, the bear will have reached its limit and could no longer aid Zhang Yang any further.

It was a shame that the bear had learned a decent skill, that is the {Icy Build}. The skill was extremely strong against Ice based attacks! It would be extremely wasteful to let the skill be discarded along with the bear. Now, with the help from the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll], it would solve the problem! Zhang Yang could easily pick out the skill that he deemed worthy and use it on the next pet he gets!

It was another shame that this absolute item had only two stocks in the auction house. Both of them were sold at 5,000 apiece. Without hesitation, Zhang Yang took out his wallet and purchased both items, keeping them in his own personal storage until later use.

With the upcoming war drawing closer and closer every second, Hundred Shots was constantly rounding up members in the guild channel. The emergency announcement requested that all higher-level players to gather tomorrow night at 7pm (real-world time) to participate in the Territorial Defense. With that, many players were getting their hopes up

by training vigorously and making preparations for tomorrow.

Seeing his own guild members working round the clock for the war tomorrow, Zhang Yang could not allow himself to slack off, since he was the guild master after all. Just as he was his the way to the grinding field, he received a voice call from Snow Seeker.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, Imperial Sky has found the second Territory Order. The war will start tomorrow. We, Crimson Rage would like to form an alliance with Lone Desert Smoke and fight for the Order. That being said, since you guys already have Thunderstorm Castle in your grasp, I'm sure that you would let us have it this time around. Right?" Her voice was extremely pleasant to hear. However, Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"I'm so sorry, guild master Snow. Even if I would love to help you guys out. I'm afraid that we are occupied during the war tomorrow."

"What's going on?" she asked, concerned.

"I have no idea where did One Sword Stroke get his hands on a Monster Attack Order, but he had it and had used it on the Thunderstorm Castle. He had purposely set the Monster Attack event to happen tomorrow, during the Territory Order war! I have to get all members of Lone Desert Smoke to prepare for the Defensive war tomorrow. If we lose, Thunderstorm Castle will be erased from the map."

Snow Seeker sucked in a sharp breath. "What a greedy person! If I'm correct, he wants to be the only player in China to own a Territory and monopolize the market!"

As expected from Snow Seeker, not only was she thinking from the game's perspective, she had a business-oriented mind as well!

"I'm sorry I cannot help you out this time!"

"It's completely fine!" Snow Seeker laughed it off. "How about Crimson Rage sending over a few of our elite players over to help you out?"

This woman was indeed a true ally, as gracious and generous as she was!

"It's fine. There's no need to do that! This Monster Attacking event can

only be participated by players of Lone Desert Smoke. Other non-affiliated players would not be able stay within the battle field. Guild master Snow, I think you're better off making some trouble for Imperial Sky. However, I really do appreciate the thought! Thanks!"

"Don't mention it. I hope the both of us will have favorable outcomes tomorrow!"

After the conversation with Snow Seeker, Sky High and Crimson Fire had also contacted Zhang Yang. Both of them were also seeking help from him to fight during the war. However, unlike Snow Seeker, after knowing the situation that Zhang Yang had gotten himself into, they did not offer any help.

That being said, Zhang Yang understood their position and what they did was reasonable. However, Zhang Yang could now differentiate their standings. Crimson Rage was a guild, willing to fight together as close friends. On the other hand, Lost Paradise and Sky High were simply allies in war.

They say, an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. Zhang Yang was no saint. But at least he knew when to reciprocate a good will, and when to have revenge when it comes to it.

...

At Zhang Yang's current level, grinding at a Level 60+ map would not do him any good. The monsters there were too low leveled for him. He then decided to give up on this place and proceed to Oz, hoping to grind there.

With his strong equipment and many AoE skills in hand, along with the Dark Enigmatic Sword in his hands that could replicate {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave}, his killing speed was several times faster than any other players around! Coupled with his ridiculous damage, he managed to raise his experience bar from 7% to 17% in just one night!

Starting from Level 70, gaining another level would take approximately 30 days of in-game time. Based on Zhang Yang's current grinding speed, it would take him half of the estimated time, which was only 15 days!

...

On the second night 6.30pm, a large number of Lone Desert Smoke members had gathered together and were ready to intercept the monsters.

While Zhang Yang was overseeing the operation, he received a voice call from Liu Wei himself.

His in-game-name was Heaven's Pride. Ostentatious and arrogant, as always. It takes a ridiculous amount of hot air and pride to call yourself Heaven's Pride.

"Well...well...Mr. Zhang Yang. Do you feel the regret dragging your guts down into the depths? Those who defy me will only face failure in his life! Now, I shall take away your Thunderstorm Castle. Who knows, perhaps tomorrow, it could be your Little Merchandize Shop! I will make sure that you will own nothing! You may rise from the dirt again, but I will simply force you back down again!"

Zhang Yang responded with a light smile. "Master Liu must have been treated well in prison for the past two days! That's why you're surprisingly chirpy today!"

"You---" His face went blue.

Liu Wei was the only son of the Liu family. He had been treated like prince ever since he was born. Being born with a silver spoon in his mouth, that man could never endure the hardship in prison for even a minute! However, there was nothing he could do in Shanghai! The only thing he could do was to suppress the news of him being arrested in Shanghai to prevent him from becoming a laughing stock. That being said, Liu Wei wanted to have his revenge. However, Shanghai nor Zhao Su City was in the Liu family's territory! He could not figure out what kind of background did Zhang Yang have, backing him! Without being able to address that uncertainty, Liu Wei was careful not to make things a little too complicated.

Liu Wei tried to control his breath before speaking, "You best look after your own skin now! I would really love to see the sight of Thunderstorm Castle being torn down! That would be a spectacular scene to witness!"

"Haha! I'm sorry to disappoint you, but that would never happen! Perhaps, you should keep an eye on One Sword Stroke. There is no guarantee that Imperial Sky would take the second Territory Order!"

The conversation between the two opposing players was dropped without any proper farewell.

While Zhang Yang was busy getting under Liu Wei's skin, Hundred Shots had taken the helm and had arranged everyone's positions. He had positioned ranged attackers to occupy the castle walls and melee attackers were positioned at the castle gates. Once the gates were breached, all melee attackers there will form a line to hold off monsters from proceeding further into the castle.

Right then, the castle gates were only at level one, with a HP value of 1,000,000, Defense and Magic Defense at 1,000. It was a shame that it could not be healed or else, Hundred Shots would have simply positioned all the healers at the gates. There was a total of three magical cannons on the castle wall, which was the maximum limit a Territory could own. All three cannons were commandeered by three cannoneers with two Power Source Crystals in each of the players' inventory. One Power Source Crystal could be used to fire 10 shots. Six Power Source Crystals had costed Zhang Yang a whopping 6,000,000 gold coins!

As painful as it sounds, it was an expense that could not be avoided. If he had tried to save up some gold coins, he might be dooming the castle instead. That would be a regret that would drive him mad for an eternity. Still, Zhang Yang had the intention to purchase a few more Power Source Crystal but the system had limited the number of shots to only 20 shots per cannon! It would be a complete waste if Zhang Yang had purchased more.

Having spent so much time and money just to defend against a deliberate attack from Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke, Zhang Yang gritted his teeth so hard with intense fury that he was sure to break them off if it was in real life. He swore to himself that this is a revenge that he will return tenfold!

Lo and behold, the clock struck 7pm. The long-awaited war had arrived.

‘System Announcement: The second Territory will spawn at coordinates XXXXXX, YYYYYY. Territory name: Margulos Town! The War for the Territory will last for 3 hours! The player who holds the Order shall become the owner of Margulos Town! From now on, Meadow Flatlands has been set to a special battle field. All players cannot go in or out of this battle field. Upon death, players will be teleported to their own major cities to be revived.’

‘System Announcement: Current player that holds the Territory Order: One Sword Stroke! Players that hold the Territory Order will be marked and cannot leave the battle field!’

‘System Announcement: War of the Territory Order starts! Count down commence!’

At the same time, all players from Lone Desert Smoke heard a different announcement.

‘Ding! Monster Attack Order has commenced! There will be a total of 6 waves! Each wave of monster will have one boss. Each wave will last for 30 minutes. Monsters will constantly spawn, while the boss will spawn after 20 minutes. Once the boss of each wave appears, the monster will stop spawning. After 30 minutes of each wave ends, monsters shall start spawning again whether or not the previous boss monster is defeated!’

‘Ding! Be advise, a debuff {Fallen} will be inflicted on players who die. The debuff will stacked up to three times, and will reduce all attributes by 10% on each stack. Upon the third stack, the fourth death will cause the player to be sent back to the city to be revived.’

‘Ding! Within 3 hours, if monsters successfully infiltrated the Territory Main Hall, the war will be over and Thunderstorm Castle will be erased from the map.’

Standing in the main hall of the castle, Zhang Yang stretched his shoulders, before drawing his sword. A flag with the emblem of Lone Desert Smoke appeared in the hall with a long HP gauge of 1,000,000 appearing on top of the flag. This flag represented the state of the entire

war. If the flag survives the entire ordeal, it would be Lone Desert Smoke's victory. If not...

Zhang Yang summoned his white bear and walked out of the hall with a commanding aura flowing out of him. He raised his sword up high and shouted at the top of his lungs. "Brothers and sisters of Lone Desert Smoke! Let's give 'em hell!"

"OOOOOHH!!!"

Chapter 291: Defend the Territory (1)

‘Ding! The first wave of monsters have started the attack!’

Zhang Yang rode on the back of the white bear towards the castle wall. From the high altitude, Zhang Yang observed the far horizon and saw a cloud of dark dust rushing towards their direction. The earth trembled from the sheer number of monsters charging their way to destroy the castle. After just a few moments, the cloud of dust had dispersed, leaving a massive horde of monsters closing in. At that distance, Zhang Yang could finally identify the types of monsters.

It was a large number of Twin-Head Demonic Wolves, covered in pitch black fur. Panting frantically, their eyes were unfocused, with fresh blood dripping from the edge of their sharp fangs.

[Twin-Head Demonic Wolf] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 64

HP: 6,400

Defense: 60

"These normal monsters are easy to deal with. Do not fire the cannon on them. Save the ammo for later." Zhang Yang commanded all three of the cannons. Under his personal command, there were at least close to 1,000 players following him. All of them were the strongest, well-equipped, and best players in the guild. The cannons were also in his small party of 50 men to allow better communication between them.

After a few short moments, Zhang Yang finally decided to act. He came down to the castle gates and commanded. "Open the gates, I'll take the front line!"

Zhang Yang knew that all the monsters around were unable to deal any damage to him. Knowing that, he stood at the forefront to better protect the castle gates. As long as the gates were unharmed for as long as possible, the chances of them winning the Monster Attack event would be higher.

"Dummy, do you need me?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"No need. Save your MP. These monsters would not be able to put a single scratch on me."

Klang! Klang! Klang! Boom!

The gates were lowered and Zhang Yang was the only player emerging out of the castle. He stood bravely at the front lines, facing approximately close to 1 million monsters all by himself. Because of such an epic scene, many female players were already on the verge of climaxing, thinking in their mind that Zhang Yang was the bravest and coolest guy that could ever be encountered.

"I'll be d*mned! I should have picked a Guardian or a Defender! If I could only be standing next to Zhang Yang, I'm sure the girls will be wetting their pants for me as well! Argh! I'm proud of you Little Yang! You're living the dream! Every men's dream!" Fatty Han cried.

As the horizon was finally covered with a sea of black wolves, Zhang Yang got himself ready. He unsheathed his sword and stabbed it in the ground. With a calm heart, Zhang Yang closed his eyes and waited.

The noise got louder. The tremors felt stronger. An uncountable number of wolves could be heard, their roar and pants nothing compared to the nervous heartbeats of the players inside the castle.

500 meters...400...300...

The tiny pebbles underneath Zhang Yang's feet started to dance around violently.

200...100...

The sound of water splashes could be heard. The wolves had gone through the river around the castle and were approaching the gates, to where Zhang Yang stood guard.

10...5... 3 meters!

Shriing! At lightning speed, Zhang Yang pulled out the sword and imitated the quick sword drawing technique of the samurai and slashed

one of the millions of wolves that had engulfed him completely.

‘-2,226!’

His Rage point rose to 42 points. Zhang Yang used {Blood Rage} and activated {Horizontal Sweep}.

Wham! Wham! Wham! Wham!

In an instant, waves of monsters were damaged with more than 4,000+ damage. Two of which had died with a critical strike. It did not end there, the sword effect was triggered and {Horizontal Sweep} was proceed for a total of four counts! In that split second of chained attacks, the monsters around Zhang Yang dropped to the floor dead, filling the ground with corpses!

Since dead bodies in the game were non-corporeal, and anything else could phase through a dead body, other monster from behind had started to flock forwards to fill in the empty space in front of Zhang Yang to surround him. Know that the all Level 60 normal tier monster have less than 1,500 attacking power. Their attacks were strong, but Zhang Yang’s defense was impeccable. Their attacking power could never penetrate Zhang Yang thick defense, and they could only deal 0 damage to him!

Zhang Yang waited until the space in front of him was filled with monsters before he activated {Blast Wave}.

Unlike {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}’s damage was far from strong, however, the skill was a true AoE attack type, which meant that, all monster within the effective AoE will receive damage! Within less than a fraction of a second, close to 20 monsters in front of Zhang Yang had received more than 700 damage! The more targets the skill struck, the higher the rate of which the Dark Enigmatic Sword could proc! Before the damage texts could float away, another wave of damage texts proc again! Be it DPS or total damage output, Zhang Yang would always do something that no one else could comprehend!

Witnessing the prowess of their guild master in action, the players who were positioned up in the castle walls were all stunned and had forgot to start attacking!

"Holy lord baby jesus! Guild master! You're just too awesome!"

"Hmph! As expected of our guild master! His damage is much higher than a boss!"

"Hm~ Guild master Zhan Yu! Please take me in! Please be my boyfriend! Marry me!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Haha! Guys! Enough with the jokes! Please, start attacking!"

"Sir! Yes, sir!"

Spells and arrow filled the sky as players from the top of the castle wall flung their attacks out, killing waves of monsters that were further behind!

‘-623!’

‘-556!’

‘-680!’

Out of the blue, more than 10 {Fireballs} were blasted out of the mouths of the Demonic Wolves. They peppered Zhang yang with minor damage. Though the damage was insignificant, in large numbers, it might prove to be a little more dangerous for him. A few more monsters could deal more than 10,000 damage would only make the defense of the gate harder than expected. Zhang Yang had to resolve this matter quickly before the situation takes a turn for the worse.

"Press the attack!" Zhang Yang roared.

The first wave of monsters were not strong to begin with, with the low HP, players positioned at the top of the castle could easily defeat a large number of the monsters with a few AoE skills. Within 5 to 6 seconds, most of the threats were removed. The atmosphere became casual as players could chat and attack nonchalantly. The melee attackers were bored to death. Those behind the castle gates could only gaze up at the ranged attackers who could at least throw a few skills out now and then.

20 minutes passed, the monsters outside the gates started to thin out. As the sounds from them grew softer, a sudden loud roar could be heard from

afar.

‘Ding! Twin-Head Wolf King, Karmos has joined the battle!’

A twin headed wolf, with size larger than a full-grown elephant appeared from the horizon. With the speed of the wind, the beast sprint towards the castle.

Zhang Yang prepared himself and took every chance he could to examine the properties of the incoming boss.

[Twin-Head Wolf King, Karmos] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 700

"The boss is here! Team 1, get out of the castle and attack the boss! We must take this boss down as soon as possible! Do not let the second wave of monster to spawn before the boss is down!" Zhang Yang commanded.

The gates was lowered and a group of 1,000 players flooded through the gates and came rushing out to form a proper formation around the castle gates. These 1,000 players were the strongest players of Lone Desert Smoke, with incredible power and strength. With haste, the party wiped the area clean of monsters before the boss could arrive.

Zhang Yang leapt onto his white bear and rode towards the incoming boss without delay. His current level was so much higher than the boss! This time, instead of being overpowered by it, with a complete Yellow-Gold equipment on him, and the OP Dark Enigmatic Sword in his hands, Zhang Yang practically butchered the wolf with no mercy! The party joined the fray and managed to kill the boss within 3 to 4 minutes!

The boss dropped a total of seven Gray-Silver equipment. Zhang Yang looted all of them and auctioned them all to the guild members.

The first wave of monsters was dealt with smoothly without any hiccoughs. After a blood bath, not a single player was down. The only prick in his beautiful strategy was that the castle gate had sustained more

than 50% damage to it, leaving only 520,000 HP left.

30 minutes passed, and the system started the second monster wave.

‘Ding! The second wave of monsters had started the attack!’

Again, from the horizon, monsters started flooding in. This time, instead of a cloud of dust, bright little orbs of light was observed from as far as 500 meters away from the castle wall. As they approached, players could easily identify their enemies as burning little red imps that were only half a meter tall!

[Burning Imp] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 67

HP: 6,700

MP: 3,500

Defense: 60

D*mn! Magic type!

Zhang Yang cried out loud, "Everyone! Into the castle! It's a magic type!"

"Ah! So even you would withdraw from battle, guild master!"

"F*ck! This is not the time to put up an act! You could really get your *sses burst into a nice crisp!"

Everyone laughed. Unlike Hundred Shots, who was managing the guild's public relations and human resource, Zhang Yang was slightly fun to be with. Everyone could have a good time chatting or joking with him. But if Hundred Shots was there, none of them would dare to make a noise. The only sound that could be heard, would be the sounds of crickets!

In no time at all, the burning imps had flocked and flooded the grounds near the castle gates. From the top of the castle wall, you could just see a sea of flame instead of monsters. The flames on the imps were so hot that you could see and feel the heat wave gushing up to the sky!

"Kill them all!"

Once the monsters had entered the ranged distance, the attackers on top

of the castle walls started their assault. With nothing better to do, Zhang Yang stood from afar and only used {Spear of Obliteration} to attack one Burning Imp one at a time. Since it did not need any Rage to begin with, it was a good way deal some damage!

The monster started to retaliate!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The monsters below the castle wall started to show their strength in numbers. With the unorganized attack pattern, the aggro was in complete chaos. Some players were only being target by one monster, while the unfortunate ones were target by seven to eight monsters simultaneously! One monster could deal around 1,600 damage with one blast, seven to eight of those blasts could easily insta-kill a poorly-equipped player!

"Argh!"

"Urgh!"

Lone Desert Smoke started lose men! One by one, players that were killed had started to fall down from the top of the castle wall! Even though the players killed could easily run back and revive from the nearby graveyard, they will be inflicted with a debuff that will reduce all attributes by 10%! The worst part was that, if those player were not careful enough and got three stacks of the debuff, they will be sent back to White Jade Castle and could no longer participate in the defensive battle!

Sensing that the players would need some help, Zhang Yang commanded. "Attention! Please withdraw after casting your AoE skills! Balance out the aggro value! Don't think you could just stand at the front at keep on attacking!"

"Aye sir!"

The players started to form their own organization. All ranged attackers formed three lines volleys. After the first line of attacker had casted their skill, they withdrew to the back and allowed the second line of attack to attack. That way, with the aggro still on the first wave of attackers, the monster could not attack them since the first line of attacker had

withdrawn back! The death rate of the player was greatly reduced!

However, this tactic was a double-edge sword! To attack the players who still had the aggro of the monsters, the monsters moved further up the river and attack the castle gates in order to get closer to the fore mentioned players. Seeing how things had turned, Zhang Yang cried out and signaled the party. "Team 1 tanks! Follow me! We will go out of the gate once it's breached! We will stand ground there and make sure no monsters enter the castle!"

"Hurah!" everyone acknowledged!

This party of tanks were the best tanks in Lone Desert Smoke. In term of skills and equipment, they were the best. However, even though they were the best, they were only equipped with a full Gray-Silver Level 50 equipment. Their maximum HP was only close to 9,000! But with their damage reduction skill and damage absorption equipment effect, in a large group, they could form a nigh-impregnable wall of blockade!

Without lady luck on their side, the castle gate was breached in just seven to eight minutes. The flock of burning imps rushed into the castle, signaling the next stage of the war!

Gates were meant to be broken in the first place. Zhang Yang was expecting to have the gates to down in the first wave itself! It was out of his expectation that even the second wave of monsters would take quite some time to breach the gates!

"Have at them!" Zhang Yang roared.

The tanks picked up their swords, axes, and shields and started to attack. They kept on pushing the monster further and further away from the entrance and utilized the narrow walkway to bottleneck the monsters, allowing a better killing rate!

The fighting had entered close quarters!

Zhang Yang took the liberty to stand in the front to intercept a great deal of attacks! With strong damage reduction and absorption passive, coupled with his boss-like HP, his tanking ability shone in the face of

these weak monsters. Their weak attacks, around 1,600, were reduced down to only around 300! After combining his HP with the bear, his long 50,000 HP allowed Zhang Yang to stand a little further up. He would be safe, as long as he does not allow himself to get overwhelmed! Without delay, Zhang Yang readied his plans and attack pattern in his head and rushed into the flock of monster, killing his way further like a giant dragon weeding down weaklings!

Chapter 292: Defend the Territory (2)

Zhang Yang went deeper into the swarm of monsters. Nervous and worried sick for him, Han Ying Xue leaped to her feet and followed Zhang Yang from a safe distance. There, she kept on casting healing spells, {Regeneration} to keep him alive and kicking!

It was now, where the difference in individual strengths would be made apparent. Like the character, Zhao Zi Long, from the Romance of the Three Kingdoms, Zhang Yang was weaving about in the battle field, with his sword held out, he twisted and turned, turning living monsters into dead corpses without much effort and strength. From afar, you can really see that Zhang Yang was more like a dancer instead of a fighter. If those judges were present in the field, sitting behind a desk, they would surely be holding up scoreboards of 10! Full marks!

Making use of what little firepower they had at the moment, Zhang Yang had arranged a small group of players from the top of the castle wall to be positioned behind the castle gates. There, their attack would be more or less be effective enough to lay waste! Even though the first two wave of monsters were nothing but appetizers, a few Lone Desert Smoke players had already succumbed to death. Still, they quickly made their way back to the battle field, albeit with penalized attributes. It did not feel long, but 50 mins were up and the second wave boss soon made its appearance.

‘Ding! Demon Servant, Morlock has joined the battle!’

500 meters away from the castle, a humanoid beast appeared! Measuring 10 meters tall, this humanoid monster looked like a spawn from hell itself. Its color scheme was mostly just brown and green. It had two horns on its head and a cow’s tail at its rear and cow hooves for its feet. The only thing that resembled a human’s was the human face that it bore. That was about it. A lot of care had been taken into designing its appearance. With each large step it took, flames burst out from the bottom of its feet and spread out as far as 60 meters away before dying down. Theatrical!

[Demon Servant, Moloch] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 68

HP: 12,000,000

MP: 6,000,000

Defense: 700

Zhang Yang stared at it and urgently shouted. "Team 1, follow me!"

The players in team 1 were those who had already been following him since the beginning, that is Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue, the little brat, Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and others who were considered to be the top 10 strongest players in the guild.

The boss carried a DoT burning aura that would cause 1000 Fire damage every 2 seconds. The AoE would be as far as the fire reached out, which was 60 meters. Whether it be ranged attackers or healers, anyone who would want to attack the boss would have to take the boss' aura damage. A normal healer would not survive long enough to heal others! That being said, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were well-equipped. Aslo, Priests were better at mass-healing. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could support a maximum number of 10 players at a time, as exhausting as it may be.

The 10-man party rushed toward the boss with Zhang Yang in the lead. 30 meters away, Zhang Yang used {Spear of Obliteration} on the boss.

‘-1,790!’

Moloch roared immediately and retaliated by reaching out with its right arm and forming a ball of flame in its palm. The ball blasted out, growing in size with each passing moment. At that moment, the boss' aura effect kicked in and almost all non-tank players around received a good -1,000 damage. The two healers quickly dismounted from their Direwolves and started getting to work.

Zhang Yang ran close to the boss and activated {Blood Rage} and {Crash Magic}!

Immune!

As the game progressed on, boss monsters that were capable of raiding cities, like the one Zhang Yang was fighting, would be much stronger and the usual boss. Judging from the HP of the boss alone, it sufficed to say that it was much stronger than the usual Yellow-Gold or Violet-Platinum boss! This boss had so much more HP! It was made purposely that way to balance out the system. With lower HP, players could easily swarm around and overwhelm it via sheer numbers! That was why, these bosses were all immune to interruption skill or status affect skills! Otherwise, they would be easily exploited, such as having a bunch of Thieves simply spamming {Ambush} and stunning the boss from the moment it appears, all the way till it fell!

Just then, the ball of fire on the palm of Moloch's palm was completed. The spell was completed and it was instantly flung at Zhang Yang.

'Ding! You have received 3,806 damage from Moloch's {Fireball} (1,200 damage reduced, 994 damage absorbed)!'

Such pitiful damage. It's not even worth being worried about!

Zhang Yang cooperated with Wei Yan Er, one hitting from rear, the other attacking head-on. Before any other skill, {Cripple Defense} would always be the first skill to be stacked on the boss!

With loud bangs and booms, the party rounded up around the boss and started their butchering. With their top-tier equipment, and their high levels that no one else could compete with, no other team such as them could yet be assembled in entire server! Compared to the boss, this party were like hungry wolves, preying on the poor like cow! Moloch was slain within 8 minutes!

"Hehe! What a noob!" said Wei Yan Er happily.

"I wonder how is Imperial Sky doing now?"

"Hmph! I hope they lose the Territory Order." Han Ying Xue snorted.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "If that was the case, the system would have announced it! And based on One Sword Stroke's personality, that guy

would not be handing over the order to someone else for safeguarding before the battle ends."

Just then, Fatty Han clapped his hands. "Dammit! I should have taken the Territory Order for myself! Why did I give it to Little Yang then!?"

"Nyehehe! You dumb Fatso!" Wei Yan Er teased Fatty Han, laughing gleefully.

After the boss was killed, everyone looted the battle drops and quickly made their way back into the castle. The next wave of monsters would only be coming in the next minute or two.

60th minute.

'Ding! The third wave of monsters have started the attack!'

Expecting to see something appearing from the horizontal, players had gathered close to the edge of the castle walls, only to see an empty field.

"Hmmm....I don't see anything..."

"What's this? Server lag? System bug?"

"Well, if it's a bug, don't mind us! We'll be able to take a break"

"Are you stupid!? Just look at your EXP gauge! We gained so much experience points just after two waves of monsters!"

"Woah! You're right! Holy smokes! I've gained 17%!"

Even after the system had made the announcement for the third wave of monster, nobody could catch sight of anything. However, the atmosphere was still gloomy. The ground was bare, yet it was covered in floating dust that had yet to settle down, as if, an invisible army was marching towards them!

After listening to the debates of the players around, Lost Dream could not help laugh. "Perhaps, Imperial Sky just did us a huge favor! I mean, just look at the experience points!"

Everyone laughed at the irony.

Zhang Yang gazed at the dusty battle field and frowned worriedly. In an

instance, his eyes widened, as if he had seen through the deceit of the enemy. He pulled out his sword and got into his battle stance. "Get ready! The enemies right beneath us!"

"What!? Underneath? What kind of monsters are they? Spectre?"

"No! Worms!" Zhang Yang roared.

Boom!

Just as Zhang Yang had announced the d*mning word, a large hole broke out at the bottom of the castle wall. In an instant, a large, centipede-like monster burst out of the ground and rose into the sky. The worms were very large, at seven to eight meters long, and as thick as the huge stone pillars of the roman colosseum. Like an earthworm, its body was ribbed and pink, with dark, slimy dirt sticking to its body!

Once the monsters had burst into the battle field, be it the rear or the head of it, the monsters had spewed out a green, viscous liquid at all the players on the top of the castle wall.

‘-1,623!’

‘-1,530!’

‘-1,723!’

Just as the green liquid made contact with the players, damage was inflicted and even the castle wall had received a {Corroding} status!

[Burrowing Earthworm] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 70

HP: 7,000

Defense: 70

"Oh bloody hell! It's bloody disgusting!" female players started to react in disgust, causing them to stop attacking to find a place to cower behind, dropping the damage output down to 90%!

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

One by one, many more worm monsters started to surface and attack the

castle wall with their repulsive green liquid. These monsters' attacks were annoying. Not only they were AoE type, they also did not require any cast time! The only good thing about them was the long two minutes cool down time!

This time, the players could no longer depend of the castle wall to defend themselves from the monsters' attacks. The casualty rate had increased dramatically.

Taking the helm, yet again, Zhang Yang commanded. "All melee fighters! Get out of the castle and kill all the monsters! These monsters can burrow underground! The castle walls would not do us any good! Attacking from inside will only disrupt us! Out! Everyone out!"

Having waited idly for two waves, the melee attackers were extremely delighted to receive that command. They cheered in excitement and followed Zhang Yang out of the castle gates.

Not only were the worm monsters highly annoying to deal with, they were also extremely sly and cunning! The monsters would stay hidden for the most part, pop out, attack once, and then burrow down into the ground again when their attacks were in cool down, leaving the spellcasters who needed some time to cast their spells especially frustrated!

This time, the physical attack classes were much more effective. Classes like Thieves and Hunters that have a fixed Focus and Stamina recovery duration, would merely have to wait and charge their "MP" up, before the monsters resurface. When the monsters revealed themselves, the Thieves and Hunters will unleash all their skills at once, dealing goog damage. It still consumed time, but at least they could do some damage!

It was like war in real life. The monsters were dying off like flies, but the guild was also suffering heavy losses! Many had already come back twice after reviving themselves, losing a great deal of attribute points! A majority of players that had died twice were all too careful with their attack and stance. Dying just one more time will send them back to White Jade Castle for the rest of the duration of the war!

"Dummy dear, is it time to use the cannons?"

Zhang Yang waved his hands off furiously. "Not yet. It's just the third wave! Besides, the monsters are capable of hiding underground! It's hard get a clear shot at them!"

As the violent battle between the attacking monsters and the players of the guild continued on, the number of players were gradually dropping as well. The problem with this fight was the fact that the monsters did not have a fixed aggro target. Once they burrowed down the earth, their aggro values would be resetted when they resurfaced, they will randomly pick a target and attack. Tanks were unable carry out their roles, taking the brunt of the punishment on behalf of the others! These bastards were capable of sneaking through the tanks in the front line and head straight towards the attackers in the rear! Even if the tanks wanted to die honorably, there was nothing that they could do to stop the monsters from burrowing!

After barely surviving the 80th minute, the worm monsters had finally stopped spawning, and the boss finally decided to show up.

'Ding! Earth King Burrowing Worm, Tumorase has joined the battle!'

Thum! Thum! Thum!

From a distance, the earth rumbled heavily and formed huge waves in the ground, as if the monster was actually speeding through the earth at a great speed! Currently, the boss was still underneath the ground, rendering its properties and level hidden away.

Zhang Yang was the first person to charge towards the boss and commanded his troops to fall back. "Move away! Do not stand in the monster's pathway if you don't want to get killed instantly!"

Just then the earth rumble even violently as it approached Zhang Yang, the ground in front of him burst open, as if someone had set off an explosion underneath it. As the dirt and dust cleared a little, the silhouette of the monster was reveal. It was three times larger than the previous monsters, 30 meters in height and a 5 meters thick, the monster was extremely huge! At least,, it was easier to determine which was the head and which was the tail. A pair of round, coal-black eyes were seen at the

top and a large opening, covered in fangs, was probably the mouth!

[Earth King Burrowing Worm, Tumorase] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 71

HP: 14,000,000

Defense: 800

When Tumorase appeared, it immediately spewed out a large amount of green, sticky liquid at Zhang Yang. However, unlike the other worm monster that would immediately burrow down into the earth after the attack, Tumorase remained on the surface and thrust its long, ribbed body towards Zhang Yang.

Chapter 293: Defend the Territory (3)

The boss's attack was considered to be a ranged attack, which could not be blocked. Since the attack was an instant-cast, Zhang Yang could not even react in time before a quick, loud "Pak", caused him to be covered in a splat of green, sticky goo. Right then, he looked like as if someone had just dumped a large bucket of green, gooey slime on him.

As a guild master, many members had greatly admired him. Though he may not be as stern as Hundred Shots, his position as the guild master had made others think that Zhang Yang was a little harder to approach. That impression was made even stronger when Zhang Yang was the person who had led the guild to take all the First Clear Achievement so far! He had even led Team 1 of Lone Desert Smoke to win the championship title of the Soaring Sword Competition in Shanghai! The image around him was more god than man!

However, that being said, he was just human. Despite all his unparalleled achievements when it came to killing and getting achievements and so on and so forth, everyone laughed their butts off when they saw how ridiculous Zhang Yang looked then! They saw how approachable he truly was! Zhang Yang was just a normal human after all!

'Ding! You have received 4,634 Natural damage from Tumorse Acid Attack. (1,404 damage reduced, 994 damage absorb!)

Just as the system notification rang in his ears, Zhang Yang quickly responded by raising his shield up high to intercept an incoming attack!

THUM!

The strong, massive attack was so forceful that it created a thunderous boom, sending both Zhang Yang and the bear a few meters back!

"Growl!" The bear growled ferociously as it regained its footing and began leading Zhang Yang to counter attack.

Following standard procedure, Zhang Yang stacked up {Cripple Defense} and laid down the attack order. The others started to surround

the boss and attacked from various positions. No matter how large or ferocious the boss may be, it was just a Gray-Silver tier. With limited damage output, the boss was completely overwhelmed by the swarm of players attacking it, like a bunch of ants nibbling on small pieces of bread crumbs on the floor.

Just after 30 seconds into the battle, the boss twitched violently and burrowed down into the earth.

"I need you guys to move away when the boss resurfaced! Don't attack! The small ones will attack randomly when they reappear! I think the boss will do the same!" Zhang Yang advised. Everyone around nodded their heads, his logic undeniable.

As the dust cleared a little, there was silence in the battle field. Aside from the ragged panting of players around, nothing else could be seen moving or making any noise. 10 seconds later, the boss burst out of the earth, somewhere far from Zhang Yang. As expected, the boss had cleared its aggro value and targeted a nearby Spellcaster, spitting the green liquid on him.

‘-7,000!’

Luckily, the players who Zhang Yang had selected to attack the boss with him were all top-tiered players in the guild. The Spellcaster had decent equipment that granted him a maximum HP of over 9,000. Although the attack did not kill him in one shot, it was enough to force him to cast {Ice Barrier} to save himself.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-2,236!’

With one attack, Zhang Yang had managed to draw the boss attention, sending it into a violent rage, and it charged towards Zhang Yang like a huge truck. Zhang Yang intercepted the attack and the entire process repeated itself again. The boss would burrow into the earth after a while, where everyone would stop attacking, before the boss reappeared, and everyone continued to attack again. It was rather easy defeating the boss. After approximately 10 minutes or so, the boss was defeated and dropped

a large number of loots for the guild.

Zhang Yang looted all the drops swiftly and cried out, "Get into the castle now! The next wave will appear any second!"

‘Ding! The fourth wave of monsters have started advancing!’

Just as he finished his sentence, the announcement rang in their ears. 500 meters away from the castle, a large number Abominable Snowmen spawned. With spears in their hand, they roared, almost simultaneously, sending a strong shock wave that resounded against the castle walls.

[Abominable Snowman] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 73

HP: 7,300

Defense: 70

"Tank Team 1, follow me and form an absolute defense line! We have to make sure that all the others get into the castle!" Zhang Yang cried.

The tanks quickly lined up and prepared to meet the enemy's charge. Just then, the Snowmen had arrived and started their attacks.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

The snowmen were all Hunter class monsters. From afar, they could hurl their spears at the players on the castle wall. Since the monsters were all Level 73, the players that were 10 levels and lower would receive a much higher amount of Unrepressed Damage due to the enormous level gap!

Unrepressed Damage was caused by huge level gap between two combatants. Unrepressed Damage could go from a 50% penalty, to a 100% damage bonus. This was the reason why players would not grind at higher level maps. Firstly, their own damage will be reduced to a certain level, and secondly, the monster's attack will be stronger! Even though the system would award additional experience points for killing a monster that exceeded the level gap, it was too much work.

"Hey noobie tank! How are those monsters throwing spears again and again?! I mean, where do they get their spears from?" Wei Yan Er asked an

unfathomable question.

Zhang Yang thought hard and finally replied with a cold sweat. "I think, they're just like us, characters in a game, to be precise. Having an inventory that could fit many items?"

"Oh! That means, their inventory must be humongous! Look at them! They have been throwing for quite some time now and there's no sign of shortages!"

Talking to this little brat would be the same as talking to a cow about playing the piano whilst thinking of string theory. Just by answering her question, one could be spending all their energy just thinking up a suitable answer for her absolutely ridiculous questions! Zhang Yang ignored Wei Yan Er's bombardment of question and cried out to Endless Starlight. "Starlight! Let's go! It's the two of us!"

Among all the tanks around, only Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were well-equipped enough to stand among the monsters and not take a beating from the Level 70 monster army. Even so, they had the sense not to charge into the thick! The Defense value provided by the Shield will only be in effect when attacks are taken from the front! Once a player is surrounded, the attacks from behind the character will not take the shield defense value into consideration and inflict greater damage. The number of snowmen out there was overwhelmingly large! So large, that even if each of them only dealt 100 damage with a single range attack, they could easily stack up to 100,000 when their sheer numbers added up!

Both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight took the helm and guarded the front line like the jackal-headed Egyptian statues! Endless Starlight was not good in offense, so he merely held his shield up, while Zhang Yang took the liberty to take on the assault role and blasted all the Level 70 monsters to hell with various AoE skills like {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, and the proccing ability of the Dark Enigmatic Sword. He was acting as a true sword and shield.

With envy swirling in his eyes, Endless Starlight asked, "Boss, when you grow out of that Dark Enigmatic Sword, could you give it to me instead?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Sure. I can give it to you. But let me ask you this, what AoE skills do you have that would proc the sword's effect?"

Endless Starlight was baffled.

One of the multi-target, AoE type skills that a Defender had would be {Devotion}. However, the skill does not require any melee weapon to trigger, which meant that, it would not trigger the sword's effect. The next skill would be {Hammer Drop} which would only strike a maximum of three targets! It would be difficult, triggering the 2% proccing rate of the sword.

"D*mn! Dream Tech is so biased! Do they have a grudge against Defenders!?" Endless Starlight complained.

Zhang Yang could not be help but silently agree. To put both classes in comparison, a Warrior-class tank was more versatile in attacking and crowd-control. However, there were specific roles being assigned to their classes. As such, Warriors were known to be excellent in controlling just a single target, whereas a Knight excelled in mass control. That being said, bosses rarely spawn in groups, so a majority of players would use the Warrior-class tank to face the boss, and Knights would be left with the duty of kiting monsters.

Without the fighting spirit to face a boss, a tank would never reach the height of his potential!

As the two of them were having their discussion, attacks from players who were station at the top of the castle wall were raining down on the snowmen. As their name suggested, these snowmen were highly resistant against ice attacks. Cryomancers were having a tough time dealing damage to them since most of their attack had been reduced by half, and sometimes they would fail to even deal any damage at all.

While the ice elemental attackers were having a tough time, the fire elemental attackers were doing extremely well. The only problem was that the number of Cryomancer in the guild far exceeded the number of Pyromancers! So, even though the Pyromancers were dishing out solid damage on the snowmen, the number of Cryomancer and Pyromancer did

not balance each other out, and as a whole, the guild was not doing very well against the enemy.

Time waits for no man, and the 100th minute checkpoint has arrived.

‘-1,406!’

A sudden damage text of 1,000 popped up on Zhang Yang head. Zhang Yang frantically looked around for the source of it. That really came out from nowhere! Based on his current level and defense value, even if a monster attacked him from behind, they would only deal as much as 400 damage! So, what and who had attacked Zhang Yang?! The attack had actually come flying from the front!

Did a boss spawn without him noticing? Was he too busy to hear the announcement?

No, if a boss did spawn, the damage would not just be 1,000! Alarmed, Zhang Yang searched around for the source of the attack. About 20 meters north, he found a slightly larger snowman with silver streak of fur on his snow-white coat. Other than that, it looked exactly like the others!

[Silvervine Abominable Snowman] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 73

HP: 146,000

Defense: 400

Crap, the elites have spawned!

Zhang Yang searched around, and was horrified to see many more Silvervine Snowman spawning behind it! It was obvious that the normal snowmen had stopped spawning and were being replaced with the elite-tier snowmen!

"Be careful! The monsters have been upgraded! There are elite monsters coming! Watch out!" Zhang Yang issued a warning.

As the sound of the trampling elite snowmen got louder and louder, the earth rumbled and the dust started to fill the air.

One within attack range, the snowmen started their attacks, tossing their sharp spears at incredible speeds towards the players.

"Get back! Get back now! Find cover in the castle walls!" Zhang Yang cried. Even he did not dare stand in the front lines any longer. He had to drag a slightly reluctant Endless Starlight all the way back to the castle gates. There, he commanded the troops to prepare themselves to strike when the monsters begin filing through the bottleneck.

GROWL!

Like water, the monsters rushed into the castle gates, 10 monsters at a time. Here, Zhang Yang and the other tank-class players clashed with the monsters while the ranged attackers rained down assaults from the rear. Even though the monsters were elite, they were quickly overwhelmed.

However, increased HP was not the only buff that the elite monsters had, their attacks were also rather strong. After a short while, player casualties started to skyrocket. Lone Desert Smoke was growing significantly weaker as time passed.

"Dummy! Isn't it time use the cannons!?" Anxious, Han Ying Xue felt that they should start using their trump card.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "Just hold it for a little while longer! This is only the fourth wave! The monsters will only get stronger after each wave. The fifth wave monsters should be Level 76. The sixth wave should be Level 79! When that comes, everyone else besides me will have their attacks reduced! When that happens, we can use the cannons to substitute the damage loss! The damage from the cannons are fixed and will not be affected by the level gap. That is why, until that comes, we must hold on! If we cannot hold this wave, how could we hold on for the next two?!"

"You don't have to yell at me like that. Hmph!"

Thank god the elite monsters spawned 10 minutes after the normal snowmen. At most, the elite monster will continue spawning for another 10 minutes and stop when it's time for the boss to show up.

It felt like an eternity before the system finally announced the arrival of

the boss.

‘Ding! King of Snowmen, Akemoshi has joined the battle!’

Without any difficulty, a hundred-meter-tall snowman could be easily spotted appearing from 500 meters away. Its massive body was covered in the usual white coat of fur. Behind it, a long stretch of gold fur stretched from the top of its neck all the way towards its pelvic region. The monstrous snowman was huge, and it seemed to be as ancient as the world itself. Each step it took was strong and heavy. The earth shook, as if it could not bear the weight of the beast! This was, without a doubt, one of those moments where you could hear the gulping of saliva from everyone.

[King of Snowmen, Akemoshi] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 74

HP: 16,000,000

Defense: 1,400

"Y-Y-Yellow-Gold!?" When the players checked the boss' properties, a majority of them gasped in horror and surprised. Yellow-Gold bosses were still a rare sight for everyone. Some of them had not even encountered, let alone fought one! Yet, right there and then, they finally had the chance to bear witness to the prowess of a Yellow-Gold boss! How could they not be surprised?

Now that almost all of Lone Desert Smoke knew how strong their guild master was, everyone was filled with tremendous hope and confidence, that Zhan Yang would lead them in slaying this monstrous beast! That being said, it was a major benefit to all guild members since an open-world boss would be dropping a large number of equipment! Anyone could get their hands on strong equipment as long as they had a sufficient amount of guild contribution points! It's Yellow-Gold! Yellow-Gold equipment!

Even at this point, where players such as Zhang Yang or One Sword Stroke have already obtained Violet-Platinum equipment, Yellow-Gold equipment were still a rare encounter! By simply taking any one of them

and selling it, you could easily fetch a good price of 100,000 gold coins! If you were lucky enough, you could sell a Yellow-Gold tier weapon for close to 1,000,000!

Seeing the smiles on their faces, Zhang Yang smiled as well. "Alright guys, take care of the smaller monsters before we go kick some boss' arse!"

"AWW YEAA!" Everyone cheered.

From the looks of it, even after Zhang Yang had spent a lifetime worth of gold coins for the cannon's Power Source Crystals, he would be reaping more profit than loss just by collecting the battle loots from the boss! Still, the Power Source Crystal was Zhang Yang's personal expenditure, whereas the battle loots were all shared equally among all players of the guild.

Still, it was not all bad for him. As long as the Territory remained intact, it was a golden goose, laying golden eggs for him, every day! So what, if he had spent more than a million gold coins? The future profits would always be lucrative!

That being said, it would all be for naught if Lone Desert Smoke does not survive this entire ordeal! After all, the monster will only get stronger after each wave! There was a possibility that the next wave of monster would all be elites! If they lose this defensive war, taking down a Yellow-Gold boss would be like saving a nickel from a collapsing bank!

Chapter 294: Defend the Territory (4)

With the presence of a Yellow-Gold boss in the field, everyone was pumped up. The incensed players started wiping the monsters at a faster rate, taking bigger risks, bigger swings.

Akemoshi's strides were so massive with it took less than 10 steps to reach the castle gates, walking over all the other monsters, and jumping into the castle area!

The last thing that they wanted was to have any monsters getting into the castle gates. Zhang Yang hurriedly activated his {Spear of Obliteration} and rode on his white bear towards the boss.

‘-2,346!’

Akemoshi growled. Provoked, and agitated, the boss hurled its massive fist at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang blocked the attack, however, he was knocked back several meters, along with the white bear. The other players around had waited for Zhang Yang to build up the aggro. Even though they had no clue on what kind of skill does the boss had, all melee fighters had already surrounded the boss, ready to attack with all their might. With severe time constrains, none of them could afford to slack off. Who knew how long, it would take for them to kill this boss? By then, the fifth wave of monsters would have already spawn! If the boss was not killed by then, the situation will start to fall like dominos as more and more monsters flock into the castle grounds!

"AURGH!"

Akemoshi roared, and it looked like its muscles were actually expanding. Zhang Yang had a bad feeling something that bad was going to happened. But before he could warn anyone, Akemoshi slammed the ground with all its might, sending a shockwave across the ground, as if it was its personal mattress. The ground literally folded in and out as players started to

wobble around as if they had just drank 10 shots of Flaming Lamborghini.

The attacks went on repeatedly. Each time Akemoshi struck the ground, he caused close to 2,000 damage to every player within 40 meters around him. The AoE were strong and quick. Some players had managed to run out of the AoE circle before they were killed. However, no matter how swiftly they ran, the slams came every second for the next 5 to 6 seconds. Many players were already dead by then. The attacks lasted for 10 seconds.

Akemoshi looked around him and started to pound his chest like King Kong in the movies. The attack was called {Quake Slam} which dealt 2,000 physical attack every second to every target within 40 meters, for 10 seconds!

Zhang Yang began to shout orders around. "Those with lower HP please give up on this boss and get away! Ranged attackers, get yourself out of that range! Healers, please stand further back! Melee attackers, move to the outside of the castle gates and attack the elite monsters instead! You are not allowed to attack the boss! Healers won't have time to heal you!"

Everyone else nodded and made their way outside the castle walls to attack the snowmen. Wei Yan Er was the only one who stayed with Zhang Yang, as she had a battle mount. Together, they had up to 30,000 HP. Wei Yan Er could easily withdraw to get herself healed! Such were the benefits of having a battle mount!

Seeing how Wei Yan Er was performing extremely well in the battlefield, Han Ying Xue could not help but feel a little envious of her little cousin sister. "Dummy! Give the elder sister a battle mount as well!"

As the situation was controlled and the number of dying players were reduced tremendously, Zhang Yang could actually reply Han Ying Xue. "Not anytime soon. However, there will be plenty of chances for you to catch a battle mount in the Chaos Realm! That being said, the rare ones are really difficult to find!"

Akemoshi's {Quake Slam} was strong; strong enough to completely overwhelm 90% of all the tanks in the world. However, while the other players yelled in alarm as they ran out of danger, it was nothing Zhang

Yang couldn't handle with a little bit of healing.

The attack was activated once every 30 seconds. Once everyone got the gist of it, they could properly move to safety before the skill was activated and move back after the 10 second duration ended. However, Akemoshi had another skill which was activated at every 10% HP bracket. The skill was similar to that of a Warrior's {Blast Wave}, which blasted a conical shaped shockwave, stunning anyone within the AoE for 10 seconds!

If both {Quake Slam} and the {Blast Wave} were used together, it would be a lethal combo! If Zhang Yang had the luxury of time, he could properly control the skill activation so that both skill would never be used together! However, with the next wave spawning in around 7 to 8 minutes, he would have to simply attack the boss without giving much thought! That, or many players will start to lose their spirits, and the guild would lose many more players to the boss!

The good news was that, Healers were not receiving any damage from the {Quake Slam}, and the ranged players were kept alive by the healers. However, players were all human, afterall. Someone was bound to make a mistake or two. The casualties could not be completely halted.

After the fourth wave of monsters, a majority of the players around had sustained the debuff - {Fallen} on them and had their attributes reduced by 10%. After having two stacks of {Fallen}, not only would the attacks will be reduced tremendously, the survivability of the player will also drop.

'Ding! The fifth wave of monster had started the attack!'

Just when Akemoshi still have 30% HP left, the fifth wave of monster had spawned. Luckily, all of the snowmen had already been eliminated beforehand. Zhang Yang had his hands full with the current boss. He quickly contacted Endless Starlight. "Starlight, what do those fifth wave monster look like?"

"They are all elite-tiers! Something call Wind Surfers. I think they are all melee type!" he replied instantly.

"Alright, lead a squad down there and hold the gates!" Zhang Yang commanded.

The battle with Akemoshi lasted for two more minutes before it fell under the focus fire of the ranged attackers. Zhang Yang first looted all the equipment and drops from the boss and kept it in his inventory. The equipment were all Level 70, which still exceeded the current average level of the players in the guild. Auctioning would have to wait! He could not afford to distract them! Even if the auctions only took a few seconds, the entire process will greatly affect the damage output! He could not afford to spare a single moment.

After having things cleared the castle grounds, Zhang Yang rode out of the castle gates and found Endless Starlight and a few others having a tough time, dealing with the new monsters. These Wind Surfers were surrounded with visible vortexes of wind. Their upper bodies were human-like, yet they did not seem to possess any lower halves. Instead, that area was just a focused sphere of condensed wind...that kept them floating up to 20 to 30 centimeters above the ground. They were definitely elemental beings, with a few modifications. Unlike the usual elemental being, these monsters carried swords in their right hands, and shields in their left. They seemed to be the tank equivalent of monsters.

[Wind Surfer] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 76

HP: 152,000

Defense: 400

The monsters were highly leveled. And since they were elite tier, they were too strong for almost 90% of all players of Lone Desert Smoke. Their attack could deal at least 6000 to 8000 to anyone beside Zhang Yang! Luckily, Endless Starlight and the other tanks were holding their ground. A few of the monsters had managed to pass through the defense line and were causing chaos in the castle grounds. The situation could only get worse as more of them slip in.

"Cannoneers! Aim the cannons at the most concentrated areas and fire! On my mark! Cannon number 1! Respond!" Zhang Yang commanded.

"Aye sir!" The player in charge of cannon number 1 replied, and took

aim. He then loaded the Power Source Crystals and wait for Zhang Yang's green signal.

"3,2,1 FIRE!"

"FIRE!"

BOOM!

The cannon burst out a bright ray of light and struck the area beneath the castle wall at a particularly thick clump of monsters. Not a trace was left behind.

With that strike, close to 1000 and more Wind Surfers were annihilated, leaving a void in the middle of the sea of monsters! The drawback was that they did not award any experience points or loots. Still, it was a rather spectacular sight, like seeing something out from a movie.

"Awesome! Good shot!" Everyone cheered in awe.

Being monsters, or rather simple programming, these monsters knew no fear. After witnessing their own comrades being blasted away into smithereens, they hurriedly filled in the gap and cramp together once again.

"Cannon number 2! Fire on my command!" Zhang Yang waited until the time was right and commanded cannon number 2 to aim at the same spot.

"FIRE!"

"FIRE!"

Boom!

Another shot was fired. Another void was created. The cycle continued on with cannon number 3. This time, the cannon was aimed at some place where the monster had already breeched the defense line.

The best usage of the cannon was to wait for monsters to clump up together and fire at them. Since the cannon's damage and the size of the AoE was fixed, a good strategy was to lure all the monster together instead of waiting for them to miraculously lump together. As long as the castle gates stood, players could be situated there, where they would herd the

monsters through the bottleneck. This time, it was the cannon's turn to wipe the monsters out.

Boom! Bang! Bam!

Fearing the sixth wave of monsters, Zhang Yang had only used half of their resources for the cannons. Yet, they had only managed to kill half of the incoming monsters. How hard it was, at least it had reduced the massive burden of the tanks in the defense line at the front of the castle gates.

As the battle prolonged, there were many more player that had been sent back to White Jade Castle after accumulated three stacks of the debuff {Fallen}. With that, the defensive power of Lone Desert Smoke had hit a snag. From 19,724 players, the remaining survivor were reduced down to only 7,234 just after 20minutes into the fifth wave.

'Ding! Wind Surfer Moriarty has entered the battle!'

Similar to the previous bosses, a huge air elemental spawned about 500 meters away from the castle wall. A hundred meter high, the boss shared the same appearance with the elite Wind Surfers. The only difference was the weapon and the shield that it was using. Instead of a sword, the boss was using a Yellow-Gold battle hammer, while carrying a torn off castle rampart as a shield. It moved at an incredible speed towards Thunderstorm Castle.

[Wind Surfer Moriarty] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 77

HP: 18,000,000

Defense: 1,400

Moriarty floated towards the side of the castle, and began pulverizing the walls with its hammer. A loud crashing sound was heard, and a large cloud of dust was formed. As the dust settled, a large, gaping hole in the wall was made.

Zhang Yang had no intentions of using the cannons to fight the boss!

The magic powered cannons were strong, but they would only deal around 200,000 damage a shot. Zhang Yang would need to burn through a large sum of gold coins just to fire a few shots! Left with no other choice in hand, Zhang Yang rode on his white bear and charged towards Moriarty.

"Sha...Sha..." Speaking in an inaudible noise, Moriarty shook his "butt" and emitted a clump of white gas that spread across 40 meters out from him.

"YUCK!" As expected from well-behaved ladies of the guild, everyone pinched their nose even though there were no smell in the air. Still, it had appeared, that the giant boss had just farted at them!

Fatty Han eye's glinted with a mischievous intent. He quickly cried out, "Do not fear! Brother Han is here! Come to me, my darlings! I will protect you!"

Sometimes, when things get out of hand, with mass panic, things might just work out the way you want them to. This time, a few girls had actually listened to Fatty Han and had ran towards his embrace.

They say that, there's always a catch, when things seemed to work out just the way you want them to. When Fatty Han saw the faces of the girls who had come to him, he jumped and cringed, as most of them were extremely unpleasant to the eyes. He then sent a private message to Zhang Yang saying, "Boy! Next time, please set a certain level of requirement during recruitment! Don't be inviting those ugly b*tches man! I almost crapped my pants just now!"

Zhang Yang turned around to glare at Fatty Han who was far behind the defense line and rolled his eyes. "In that case, you'll be the first person I'll kick out of the guild!"

"Hey! What's that's supposed to mean? I'm just fat! There's nothing else wrong with me!"

Ignoring Fatty Han's jokes and comments, Zhang Yang continued to fight the boss. When he walked into the area where the white gas had spread, Zhang Yang and white bear started to float upwards!

Chapter 295: Defend the Territory (5)

‘Ding! You have received the effect {Weightless}! You have gained the ability to Float. Movement speed reduced by 70%!’

Like the air elementals, Zhang Yang had floated several centimeters above the ground. The white bear beneath him was wiggling its feet frantically like a dog in the water. They may have been slowed down, but the good part was the fact that he could fly!

"Eh!? Little Yang! What are you doing? Are you finally going to the heavens?"

"Haha! Even Aladdin needs a magic carpet to fly. Our boss only needs a giant polar bear to fly!"

"Eh!? Hell nah! Everyone can fly. It's easy as getting stoned!"

"What...?"

"What?"

Everyone started to laughed at Fatty Han and Endless Starlight jokes and forgot to fight.

"Hey! Wankers! Don't just yap around, start attacking the boss!" Zhang Yang sternly scolded.

Without any further delay, Wei Yan Er and the rest of the party hurried to the white gaseous area and followed Zhang Yang, floating upwards like a bunch of oversized party balloons.

"What does this {Weightless} do?" Players started to throw the same question at Zhang Yang. It did not seem to aid the boss or undermine the players in any particular manner.

Zhang Yang shrugged without answering. ‘God’ Miracle’ was just too vast, and to explore every single thing was too much of a hassle.

As if they were underwater, players were able to "swim" upward and "dive" downward, and while it may seem fun to move around in the air, the speed of it was extremely slow. Some players had trouble controlling

themselves and were floating haphazardly. Many of them had never experienced underwater combat like Zhang Yang did when he was hunting for the Python skins. Curious, those player experimented with it while attacking the boss at the same time.

Shush!

The boss struck Zhang Yang with its hammer. Though Zhang Yang managed to activate {Block} in time and nullify the attack, Zhang Yang's character was launched at an extreme speed, as if he was plummeting like a cannon ball. At incredible speed, Zhang Yang was sent out of the white gaseous zone and slammed into the ground, hard.

WHAM!

‘-3,000!’

Zhang Yang had just received damage from falling. Unlike the other types of damage, such damage would never be reduced or absorbed by any kind of skill. A character will always receive a fixed amount of damage as long as the character had fallen down from a high altitude, unless the character possessed an Invulnerability status.

After striking Zhang Yang, the boss remained in its place without moving. Instead, it turned to the players that were floating around him and swung at them. With a nice curved swing, anyone in the hammer's pathway was struck out of the gas zone. As a Level 77 Yellow-Gold boss with basic attack of 11,000, coupled with the falling damage, the accumulated damage of 15,000 was enough to kill any fully geared Gray-Silver player! Unless they fitted all their sockets with Vitality type gemstones, the attack would only result in death!

The boss's behavior was extreme odd. Whenever a player exited the gas zone, the boss will completely ignore them and turn to other players within the gas zone. By the time Zhang Yang had gotten back to the boss, it had already killed more than 10 players! Only those who were part of the main attack party, such as Wei Yan Er, survived the attack as their equipment were "tanky" enough.

"What a sh*tty boss! You'll be flung out of the fight with just a single

strike! This is just plain annoying!" Endless Starlight complained. After Zhang Yang was sent out of the gas zone with a home run, Endless Starlight was next in line to be flung out.

"Healers! Stay out of the boss' attack range! Attackers! Watch your HP! Those who can withstand one strike may remain attacking! Those who cannot, leave the area!" Zhang Yang cried out after thinking up of something.

Nodding their heads, the players obeyed. What that was supposed to be a serious fight, turned out to be quite fun. Players who were floating and fighting the boss were flung out like one of those amusement park rides. Every one or two seconds, 10 or more players will be flung out of the gas zone.

However, Moriarty was still the boss monster for the fifth wave, it will bound to have other skills beside this play thing. Just as everyone was having the time of their life, the hammer in the boss' hand glowed brightly. In an instant, the boss started spinning like a motor. Without any warning, everyone inside the gas zone was flung out! Everyone received more than 15,000 damage in just one attack! Coupled with the 2,000 to 5,000 additional damage from falling, many who had underestimated the boss' attack were killed instantly as they splattered onto the ground.

"What!? {Tornado Cleave}!?" Gasps of horror filled the air as players started to frown. The battle had just gotten much harder. With the recent deaths, there was an obvious decrease in the number of players, as a whole lot of them were already stacked with three {Fallen} debuff and could no longer return to battle.

One problem came after the other, Zhang Yang felt a sudden headache like never before. Open-world bosses were just like that! Since the number of participant in an open-world boss was unlimited, a boss could be as strong as they want to be! Do not hope that the game developers would just present you with a straightforward battle! Most of the open-world boss often required heavy sacrifices to win the battle!

If the situation was different, Lone Desert Smoke would have been

willing to send out as many sacrifices as much as they can without giving in to any worries. However, this battle was very much different! Once a player dies three times, they will not be able to come back! There were still many more monsters to clear after this! If more players are sacrificed, how would the guild face the next wave of monsters!?

There was only one thought running inside Zhang Yang's mind. Should he use the [Friendship Jade], and summon Smaug's shadow to fight this boss? Judging from the current situation, to use the two remaining uses of [Friendship Jade] on a Yellow-Gold boss would not be worth it! However, the situation was dire! The Territory was at stake! On the other hand, he also had to worry about the next boss!

Zhang Yang finally came to a final conclusion after serious consideration. If the next boss was even stronger than the current boss, he will drag the boss battle on for longer than 10 minutes after his appearance! Even if Lone Desert Smoke could not defeat the next boss, the Territory should be fine as long as the main Territory hall is left intact! However, if he does not kill Moriarty right now, it will kill more players! Any more losses, and they may be overrun by the next wave!

Without further due, Zhang Yang put on the [Friendship Jade], turned himself into a skeletal soldier, and summoned Smaug.

"Woah! Boss! That's awesome!"

"Long live Zhan Yu guild master! Even as a skeleton, he sure makes a handsome one!"

"KYAAAA! Zhan Yu! I love you!"

There were a few female player with an odd sense of romance cried out for Zhang Yang's attention, which he completely ignored.

Swiftly, Zhang Yang commanded Smaug's shadow to attack Moriarty. "Everyone! Back away now! Let the professional handle this!"

With the speed of the wind, Smaug's shadow hastily jumped into the gas zone! Miraculously, he did not receive any {Weightless} effect and was able to maintain his feet on the ground. He then swung the Shadow Blood

Blade and cleaved Moriarty with over 200,000 damage in a single blow.

Besides Han Ying Xue and his own original crew members, the rest of the guild members were oblivious to Zhang Yang's secret weapon. They had always known that their guild master was strong, not I-can-command-holy-tiered-bosses-to-do-my-bidding kind of strong! Would that not mean that Zhang Yang was undefeatable? Unrivaled?! If there was a word to describe the feeling beyond admiration, beyond worship, that would be the word to describe the feeling of how the members of Lone Desert Smoke felt about their guild master.

With Smaug's strength, he only took less than 3 minutes to kill off Moriarty! With no other targets in sight, Smaug returned to guard Zhang Yang. After the entire ordeal, Smaug had only lost less than 10% of his HP! Strong would be an understatement that would not do him justice!

Still, Zhang Yang felt far from joy. He was mourning the second last use of the friendship gem.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. After a while, he laughed. Even though the [Friendship Jade] was just a Yellow-Gold tier, it was still able to summon a Holy-tier boss to come to his aid. If it was able to summon Smaug for an unlimited time, that would be too ridiculous! If that was the case, changing the item rarity to Ascended would have made sense instead!

With the early death of the boss, they had won themselves four minutes of rest before the next wave spawned. Everyone took their sweet time to heal themselves with recovery snacks. During that time, Zhang Yang took all the items from the previous bosses and auctioned them out to the members. The session went by quickly without a hitch. Those that had won the bid were happy and those that did not, were not all too disheartened. They knew that the time would come again, in the future!

'Ding! The sixth wave of monsters have started the attack!'

The 150th minute threshold of the battle had started, with the last wave of monsters spawning, 500 meters away from Thunderstorm Castle.

When Zhang Yang the final wave of monster approaching the castle, he

froze. Not in his wildest expectations was he prepared for an entire wave of spectres! Every single one of the monsters out there rode atop a skeletal war horse! These Death Knights were all wearing pitch black armor and long broad swords hung on their backs. From afar, you could feel the chill of death coming towards you! Other than their blackened armor, the only part of them that you could see clearly were the glowing green flames in their eye sockets that reeked of doom!

[Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 79

HP: 158,000

Defense: 400

In perfect formation, they started galloping forth, even the sound of the hooves in tandem.

With such a display, fear surged across the players, tremendously lowering their morale.

Without wasting precious time, Zhang Yang commanded Smaug's shadow to guard the castle gates. With only 11 minutes left on the timer, this Holy tier boss should be able to last for that period of time. Riding the mount, the Death Knights were able to reach the gates fairly quickly, where Smaug growled, drawing them to him. With a roar, the Death Knights began to surround Smaug, only to be hacked by him. Without a proper AoE skill, Smaug could only kill the Death Knights one at a time! With millions out there in the battle field, Smaug killing speed was extremely limited!

As expected from a Holy tier boss, Smaug possessed ultra strong defense that all the Death Knights were unable to deal more than 1 damage to Smaug, despite having more than 5,000 basic attack damage. Joining the fray, players from the top of the castle wall laid down their attacks. The cannoneers were also attacking from behind the wall. With each strike killing thousands of monsters in a single blast, the cannoneers spared no expense and fired all 30 shots with haste.

Soon, the 11 minutes counter has finished and Smaug's shadow disappeared into the air. Without the ultimate tank, a large number of Death Knights had rushed into the castle gates and had started engaging with the players.

With no choice left, players could only resort to using themselves as human shields to hold off the Death Knights from proceeding further into the castle. The Death Knights were all Level 79 elite tiers! Other than Zhang Yang alone, everyone else would be affected by the huge level gap! They would deal out penalized damage, while taking even more damage from the monsters! Both attackers, and tankers were having an extremely tough time dealing with the swarm of monsters!

With players all dropping like flies, more and more Death Knights were able to make their way further into the castle. Finally, the inevitable had occurred. The Death Knights were able to punch a huge hole in the last "absolute defense line" and had turned the battle into a one-sided massacre.

Chapter 296: Defend the Territory (6)

A lot of Death Knights charged into the castle, some of them clashing with players. However, most of the Death Knights which had not been attacked by the players were riding their Spectre Skeletal Horses directly towards the territorial hall!

After all, the ultimate goal was not to annihilate each other! One side had to destroy the guild flag in territorial hall, while another side had to defend and protect the flag from being destroyed by monsters within the time limit. Therefore, Zhang Yang's ultimate goal did not necessarily involve the annihilation of the enemy!

As a result, a lot of Death Knights directly rushed into territorial hall once they entered the castle! The guild flag always was the target of attack within Death Knights' aggro list, and unless Death Knights were attacked by players, they would ignore everything else and head directly towards the hall!

"Pull back!" Zhang Yang frowned as he shouted.

The purpose of castle gate was to block the enemy from coming into the castle, but, once the castle gate was broken by the enemy then castle gate would lose its purpose! Besides, this was the last wave of monsters attacks, they merely had to survive for another 20 minutes, not wipe out all their attackers!

Lone Desert Smoke's remaining players retreated inwards one after another, and Zhang Yang stayed back to slow the advance of the Death Knights wave after the tank defense lines were destroyed.

However, not all tanks were like Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. Lone Desert Smoke's members were being overwhelmed by the attacks of the Level 79 elite monsters, and a lot of players were either killed or wounded heavily! These Death Knights would also launch {Death Strike} and cause double attacks. Due to the differences in levels, the Death Knights' attacks were magnified by at least three to four times. As a consequence, one {Death Strike} could actually kill a tank with Level 60 Gray-Silver

equipment instantly, which was terrifying!

The number of surviving players kept reducing. Halfway through the retreat, the number of surviving players had been reduced to 2,000 players!

"Get into the territorial hall. We'll make our stand there!" Zhang Yang roared.

The attacks were violent and ferocious, if it Zhang Yang had not used his [Friendship Jade] to summon Smaug's phantom, all of them would already have been annihilated by the fifth wave's boss, Moriarty. They wouldn't even be around to continue resisting at this point.

Damn it, One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei! Zhang Yang had made up his mind. He too, must get the [Monster Attack Order] and let Imperial Sky taste their own medicine!

Zhang Yang did not believe that One Sword Stroke also had something like the [Friendship Jade]!

'Ding! Hoarfrost Death Knight Alps has joined the battle!'

It was the 170th minute and the last boss also made his grand entrance at the battlefield!

Zhang Yang and the rest stayed inside the castle. They could not even see what Alps looked like! They were flooded by thousands of Death Knights who struggled to rush into the territorial hall that was located at the highest point of the castle.

Ouch! Ow! Ah!

Along the way, players were constantly whittled into pieces by Death Knights' rapiers. A lot of players had already died three times, so they had been directly teleported back to White Jade Castle! They could only cheer for the surviving players in guild channel. At this moment, Hundred Shots was too busy to bother about the non-chatting rule.

Pulled back! Pulled back again! We just need to hold up for another 10 minutes!

With the efforts of Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight holding the defense line, nearly a thousand of players eventually made it into the territorial hall. Now, they could only concentrate their fire power on the final bottleneck at the entrance!

The Death Knights kept coming! Luckily, the entrance of territorial hall was narrow, which was easier to defend, compared to castle gate. Zhang Yang and the rest of the players formed a defense line to hold up for a short time!

Due to the huge level restraint, except for Zhang Yang, the rest of the players' attacks were extremely low, which barely slowed the monsters down! Only Zhang Yang's occasional usage of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} could cause huge damage to an area of monsters.

Except for Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, the rest of tanks hardly survived more than a few seconds under Death Knights' attacks. Players' screams were uttered from time to time and fall defeated. Some players could still be resurrected, and had come back running, continuing their resistance, while, some players experienced their third deaths and had to return to White Jade Castle!

The tanks at the back rapidly filled in the defense line. They used their own bodies to prevent the monsters from crossing!

Two minutes later, the Death Knights' finally started to thin out!

"Have we killed them all?"

"We won?"

Sha! Sha! Sha!

Some strange whispers hissed through the air, carrying ancient voices, they could not even understand what they said.

Clop! Clop! Clop!

At this moment, a skeletal war horse with burning flames on its whole body went into the passage of territorial hall. It seemed far heavier than its skeletal frame suggested. Emerald flames burned within its eye sockets,

it puffed out fire from time to time.

A Death Knight in full armor sat atop this spectre war horse, its eyes were burning with white gas which turned into frost and fell on the ground around it!

[Hoarfrost Death Knight Alps] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 80

HP: 20,000,000

Defense: 2,400

This was the second Violet-Platinum boss to appear in the game!

"Violet-Platinum boss, we are going to make a big fortune this time!" Fatty Han was drooling as he said.

"Brother Fatty, you must act like a professional, stop drooling!" Endless Starlight said.

"Damn, take a good look at yourself in the mirror first, you aren't any better!"

Alps did not wait for the players to prepare themselves. His head turned to the guild flag in the territorial hall. "Qiang!" Alps took out his war blade, the war horse under him raised its hooves and dashed towards the guild flag.

Zhang Yang quickly used {Charge} to intercept it and wielded his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] to slash Alps!

Alps uttered a low roar, he flung his war blade and slashed at Zhang Yang's head.

‘-12,606!’

A huge damage text floated across Zhang Yang head immediately. This damage had almost reduced 40% of Zhang Yang HP!

Zhang Yang wanted to use {Block} but he was more worried about Alps' {Death Strike}. {Death Strike} was an ulti that could cause double damage! Zhang Yang could not use his battle mount in the territorial hall, and as a

result, his masimum HP was only about 29,000. If Zhang Yang received damage from {Death Strike} without a full HP bar, he would definitely be killed instantly!

Alps' single attack was powerful. However, Alps did not have much AoE skills other than {Dividing Slash}, and as long as Zhang Yang did not stand in front of Alps, he would not receive any damage!

There were a lot of surviving healers in territorial hall, Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and a healing Knight started healing Zhang Yang's HP. They managed to keep up with the boss.

"Leave the boss be, and go hold up the monsters ahead! We just need to hold up for another six minutes!" Zhang Yang yelled loudly.

Without a doubt, Violet-Platinum bosses were precious. No matter how precious the Violet-Platinum boss was, it still had far less value than a territory!

Everyone circled around the fight, running to form defensive lines.

Four minutes, three minutes, two minutes, one minute!

1,500 players, 1,000 players, 500 players, 100 players!

As the time went by, the number of players kept reducing!

"Everybody, let's work harder! Just a little bit more! Victory is in front of us!" Daffodil Daydream cheered everyone up.

50 seconds!

30 seconds!

10 seconds!

"We are almost there! We are almost there!" everybody started counting down, "9, 8, 7..."

3, 2, 1!

"Server Announcement: Claim for Terra Nullius has ended, the final holder of [Territory Command Order] is player One Sword Stroke! Margulos town is now a private territory, everyone will be sent back to the

main city!"

‘Ding! You and your companions have held fast, you have successfully beaten back the monsters and obtained victory!’

Two system messages rang in Lone Desert Smoke’s members ears at the same time. The players in White Jade Castle began cheering!

When the time limit of three hours monster attack had ended, all the elite Death Knights disappeared out of thin air like they had never existed before! However, Alps was still in the territorial hall and continued to slash at Zhang Yang violently!

Zhang Yang cried jubilantly, "Well, well, they left us a grand prize! The boss is still here! Everyone, hurry back here and fight the boss!"

At Zhang Yang’s command, all of his members started rushing back to Thunderstorm Castle. After that, they summoned their mounts and rushed towards territorial hall!

1,000 players, 3,000 players, 7,000 players!

The numbers kept increasing!

Although most of the players had no way of breaking through Alps’ defense, only causing 1 point of damage, their numbers were slowly whittling down his HP! This was because Alps did not have any strong AoE skills.

10 minutes, 20 minutes, 50 minutes!

They used about an hour to defeat Alps by slowly emptying out his HP bar. Alps uttered a cry, and crumpled into a pile of bones along with his horse.

Zhang Yang looted the drops as swiftly as he could, shoving them into his inventory! The monster attack had ended and non-Lone Desert Smoke players could also enter Thunderstorm Castle. It would be most wasteful any of these Violet-Platinum and Yellow-Gold equipment were looted by anyone else!

Only when the last Yellow-Gold equipment was placed into Zhang

Yang's inventory did he let out a sigh of relief and said, "Ladies and gentlemen, with everyone working together, we have successfully defended the territory! This victory belongs to everyone! This honor also belongs to everyone!"

"Roar!" everyone in the guild roared loudly.

Zhang Yang laughed loudly as he said, "Alright, let's distribute the equipment! Alps dropped four pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment and nine pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. All of these will be auctioned using the guild's contribution points. Since everyone is already familiar with the rules, let's get right on it!"

[Death Blade] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 2,246 – 2,646

Attack Interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 699

[unidentified]

Equipment: Each time the target is struck, there is a 3% chance of causing {Death Strike} to the target, causing double attack.

Level Requirement: 80

"The average weapon attack is at least 2,400 before identifying. After identifying, it will exceed 3,400?"

"En, DPS will be increased by about 1,000 after identification!"

"That's amazing! Look at the special effects, after identifying, there is at least a 5% chance of activating special effects!"

"The basic weapon attack is so strong, if the special effects and critical attacks were triggered side by side, oh my god, there will be at least be 20,000 points of damage from an attack!"

Everyone was acclaimed and astonished by this [Death Blade]

"Auction starts for 500 guild's contribution points, with a minimum increment of 20 contribution points for each bid. All Berserkers and

Templars also can join the bid, be quick!" Zhang Yang said.

Those members who had enough guild's contribution points quickly placed their bids, whereas those members who did not have enough guild's contribution points could only drool at one side! This was a Violet-Platinum equipment! These days, having a full set of Gray-Silver equipment was enough to attract looks of envy. What if a player had a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment? Most players would worship them.

If I could get this Violet-Platinum equipment... A lot of players kept drooling, lost in fantasy.

Zhang Yang saw Wei Yan Er standing aside, watching the auction. He asked, "What happened? Little brat, you don't like it?"

"The attack interval is fast, and it's no axe. I won't get any bonuses!" Wei Yan Er pursed her lips as she replied.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Although the attack interval is 3.5 seconds, it's a Violet-Platinum weapon. Even without the axe specialization, it is still far stronger than your broken axe!"

"Hmph!" Wei Yan Er clenched her little fist and said, "So you have to find me a high-quality Violet-Platinum axe with an attack interval of 3.8 seconds before I reach Level 80! That will be my 18th birthday present!"

"Eh, are you really near 18? I just don't see it!" Zhang Yang sympathetically gazed at Wei Yan Er's flat-chest.

Daffodil Daydream asked, "Yan Er, when is your birthday?"

"About half a month more!" Wei Yan Er fiercely stared at Zhang Yang, before she turned around to Daffodil Daydream and answered, "23rd January, easy to remember, right?!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, when you celebrate your birthday, will you be asking your guests to bring lunchboxes with their own money?"

"You idiot, am I that stingy?" Wei Yan Er snorted angrily, she tilted her head to one side as she said, "Noob tank, sister Sun and you must come! By

the way, please do not forget to bring along my presents, it doesn't have to be expensive, at least ten thousand dollars will do!"

Fatty Han looked at Wei Yan Er with his disgusting puppy eyes and said, "Little brat, why didn't you invite me?!"

"I'm going to invite the girls in my class, you pervert fatty. You'll scare them off!" Wei Yan Er replied flatly, with a straight face.

Fatty Han was instantly filled with tears and ran to one side to mope. I've been behaving well these few days!

"By the way, sister Daffodil and the others from out of town don't have to come. We've just eaten at the hotel anyway. I'll be able to save some money with fewer guests!" Wei Yan Er's next sentence immediately exposed her intrinsic nature, "However, you guys still can send me presents! Although I will be embarrassed, but if you insisted, I will not refuse your kindness!"

Everybody broke into laughter.

Chapter 297: A Handsome Reward

Wei Yan Er not joining the auction of [Death Blade] was good news for the other Lone Desert Smoke's members. As part of Zhang Yang's team, naturally, should she choose to bid, nobody would be able to outbid her!

Even if she did, they wouldn't be complaining! No one could deny their contributions that brought such fame to Lone Desert Smoke in the first place!

Finally, the auction ended, and the [Death Blade] was finally obtained by the Berserker in the secondary team, Galileo. The young cute little boy was so overjoyed, that he feverishly bowed to everyone, greeting them by big brother, big sister. Everyone laughed at his antics.

[The Heart of the Abyss] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +141

Intelligence: +94

[unidentified]

Equipment: When your spells cause any damage or healings, you have a 1% chance of increasing your spell's damage by 200 points. Lasts for 5 seconds.

Level Requirement: 80

Han Ying Xue fought for the bidding without hesitation, instantly obtaining [The Heart of the Abyss].

[Agulos's Hat] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Dexterity: +378

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

This was a high-quality hat for Thieves and Hunters, but neither did Sun Xin Yu, or Lost Dream, or Fatty Han or Hundred Shots placed any bids which made Zhang Yang greatly puzzled. After asking them, only did he find out that these four persons planned to directly acquire their Level 80 Violet-Platinum set equipment!

Zhang Yang started to sweat, Do they think that set equipment would come raining from the sky? The second set equipment could be found in dungeons, so the chances of open world bosses dropping Yellow-Gold set equipment parts were high. But starting from the third set equipment, set equipment would not be found in dungeons, and even the open world bosses would rarely drop set equipment!

Instead, minions held the chances of dropping their variations of set equipment! But the grade of set equipment dropping from minions would be very low and the set equipment effects were ordinary, nothing like the set equipment dropped by bosses!

After the auction of the hat, next up was a pair Defender's boots and this boots was successfully bid by Endless Starlight! This person was easily satisfied and his greatest wish was to lead a bunch of pretty girls to fight dungeons every day, a dream that was already more or less achieved!

Alps' last Violet-Platinum equipment came up, and finally, it was something that Zhang Yang could use!

[Ring of Imprisonment] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +141

Strength: +40

[unidentified]

Equipment: Absorbs 81 damage points when you receive attacks.

Use: Imprisons the target, stunning it. Lasts for 2 seconds. Cool down time: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

Endless Starlight was already greatly pleased after earning a piece of

Violet-Platinum equipment, so he did not compete with Zhang Yang for the ring. Besides, Endless Starlight would not possibly have matched up to him in terms of contribution points. The ring fell into Zhang Yang's hands without incident. Before Zhang Yang reached Level 80, he had already collected four pieces of very powerful Level 80 top grade equipment!

11 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment were also distributed and those who got the equipment were extremely happy.

Lastly, there were two skill books that Zhang Yang did not put on the guild's auction. These skill books were different, as equipment would be phased out over time but skill books would grow over time. Skills would remain relevant for a long time!

So Zhang Yang intended to keep the skill books, giving it only to the suitable players to learn!

The first skill book was {Death Strike}!

[Skill Book: Death Strike]

Use: Grants the skill {Death Strike}.

Class Requirement: Berserker, Templar, Death Knight

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang posted the description link in the party channel. Han Ying Xue and the rest were astonished.

"Silly Yu, what's this Death Knight class? Obviously, this class option is not available during character creation!" Han Ying Xue opened her pretty eyes widely as she said.

"Is that a hidden class?" Lost Dream asked excitedly.

'God's Miracle' was a virtual reality game, but its realism features was off the charts! However, with only six classes, branching out into a total of thirteen specialties, the options of creating your perfect character was somehow limited. Compared to the various mechanics in 'God's Miracle', they just didn't add up!

Zhang Yang thought quietly of a way to enlighten them as "beta player"

instead of someone who travelled from the future, and then he said, "I have never hear of hidden classes in 'God's Miracle'. But after players achieve Level 100, they will obtain some special class' inheritances by collecting a series of items, and completing a series of quests! I believe that's the equivalent of earning hidden classes, because not only to you get to retain your original class, and you will learn a few new class' skills as well!

"Oh!" their eyes lit up and even Sun Xin Yu also asked, "For example?"

"For example..." Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Let's talk about the vampiric inheritance. There are seven [Inheritance Fragments], each respectively representing the head, neck, torso, left hand, right hand, left foot and right foot. You are required to collect all these seven [Inheritance Fragments] in order to activate the inheritance quest! The inheritance quest is cumbersome and very lengthy. But when you have completed this quest, you will be entitled to the vampiric inheritance! One of the skills in vampire inheritance is that the player's body can be turned into thousands of bats for a short period of time, the player can fly physically and also rush to their enemies suck their blood and recover own HP bar!"

Fatty Han suddenly gave out a perverted smile, who knows what thoughts ran through his mind at that moment.

"So, there's a Death Knight's inheritance?"

"I guess so!" Zhang Yang nodded and continued, "It is also very troublesome to obtain inheritance. In the case of the vampiric inheritance, you must collect the seven [Inheritance Fragments] in order, not missing a single one of them, and it is impossible to retry or restart the quest! Some of the inheritances can be obtained repeatedly but some inheritances are unique! If two players held pieces of the same set of inheritance, they would be lighted up in each others maps. They would then have to fight for it!"

"Seems to be fun, I'm looking forward to it!" Wei Yan Er chirped happily.

"Alright, alright. Quick, little brat, do you want this [Skill Book: Death

Strike]? Otherwise, I will give it to Galileo!"

Wei Yan Er quickly nodded her head repeatedly and replied, "Yes! Of course I want it!"

After little brat received the [Skill Book: Death Strike], she patted it against her body and learned the skill. She also posted the description of {Death Strike}.

{Death Strike} (Level 1): Immediately launches an attack on target, causing 100% melee attack of Shadow damage and recovering 10% HP. Requirement: Two-handed melee weapon. Cost: 50 Rage points. Cool down time: 30 seconds.

"Not bad!" Wei Yan Er smiled with satisfaction.

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he said, "That's really too much, this skill does not only cause Shadow damage which ignores defense values, but it also recovers your HP turning it into both an offensive and a defensive skill. And all you have to say about that is 'not bad'. What more do you want?!"

The other skill book was not for the players to learn, but was a pet's skill book {Iron Build}!

Zhang Yang privately kept this skill book to himself, and he immediately handed it over to his Gold-Eared Bear King.

{Iron Build (Passive)}: Increases the pet's HP by 30%.

Currently, Gold-Eared Bear King's HP had exceeded 20,000 points, while its 30% HP was equivalent to 6,000 HP. After "combining" with Zhang Yang, this skill also increased Zhang Yang's HP by 6,000!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Hundred Shots, get some people to find out, where did Imperial Sky get that [Monster Attack Order]!"

If it was not Zhang Yang's [Friendship Jade], 90% of them would be annihilated! Although [Friendship Jade] had one use remaining, Zhang Yang couldn't get this off his mind. Zhang Yang wanted to turn the tables

on Imperial Sky and Liu Wei. It's best he let them taste their own medicine.

Hundred Shots immediately nodded in acknowledgement.

He did not care about the means that Hundred Shot would use to obtain this information. Be it by bribery, or favors, it did not matter. He was willing to stoop to the same level of these villains in order to get back at them!

Zhang Yang disbanded the team. Some of the members logged out from the game to rest and relax. Others continued training.

After a while, one of Zhang Yang's guild members sent a message to Zhang Yang and said, "Guild master, Imperial Sky's territory has changed its name to Imperial Sky Castle and their territory's teleportation fee is only 90 silver coins. They are now advertising in all main cities!"

Zhang Yang could not help get riled up again, as the most annoying thing about doing business was this kind of price war that purposely attempted to ruin the market's value. In the end, nobody was bound to win in this!

When Zhang Yang reached in White Jade Castle, Imperial Sky's members had flooded the area channel by asking people to boycott Thunderstorm Castle, and instead go to their Imperial Sky Castle! They even wantonly slandered Lone Desert Smoke, saying that teleportation fee of one gold coin simply exploited the players!

Zhang Yang felt disgusted. Was Imperial Sky not doing the same? Would a 10% discount make all the difference?

For the majority of the players, it did not matter which territory to go to and as long as the teleportation fee was cheap then they would choose the territory! Therefore, a lot of players immediately changed their mind and bound their [Teleportation Scrolls] to Imperial Sky Castle. However, some of the players did not really bother to switch places as they had already adapted to Thunderstorm Castle's environment. Besides, it was just difference of 10 silver coins, it was not really a big deal for them!

After a day, Zhang Yang's usual 7,000,000 gold coin profit of teleportation fees was instantly reduced to 3,280,000, with at least half of going to Imperial Sky Castle!

Fatty Han acted like a gangster and said, "Little Yang, let's lead a team block the way to Imperial Sky Castle's gate, and rob them, scare them into coming back to us?"

Zhang Yang started to boil up in anger instantly, but quickly burst in laughter upon realizing what Fatty Han said. He choked, "Do you have any idea of stopping 3,000,000 players? You can defeat one or two players but if you provoke everyone's anger, at least a few hundred thousand players will come for your head. Tell me, how many soldiers should I dispatch to rescue you?"

Zhang Yang gazed into the distance and continued, "Currently, we only have to find out how Imperial Sky found the [Monster Attack Order]. As long as we also find this [Monster Attack Order] and use it on them, Imperial Sky Castle will be flattened to the ground. It will take care of all these problems at once!"

Chapter 298: Heading to the Japan-Korea Region

Hundred Shots did not disappoint Zhang Yang, as it only took two days to come back with useful information!

Imperial Sky had defeated a Yellow-Gold boss, the Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses Morchason, and this boss actually dropped [Monster Attack Order]!

Hundred Shots had purposely searched the information about Morchason at the official website: Level 70 Yellow-Gold boss, Beast, 7,000,000 HP, Melee Attack, Body height of 56 meters, Basic Attack of 11,000, Attack Interval of 2 seconds, Spawns in Northern part of Mountains of Miduo at Meadow Flatlands, Re-spawn time is 1 month (Real time)!

Zhang Yang grew frustrated, realizing that they needed to wait for a month for the re-spawning of Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses. Even if they defeated this boss, it would not necessary drop a [Monster Attack Order]! According to the information from the official website, there was 20% chance of dropping [Monster Attack Order] for First Kill but the subsequent kills would have only 1% chance of dropping [Monster Attack Orders]!

In 'God's Miracle', as long as the players knew the name of the monster, they could get the specific information of the monster, such as monster's HP amount, basic attack amount, type of attack and even its special drop. But if the players searched for the information of items in the official website, such as [Monster Attack Order], the official website would only show the attributes of [Monster Attack Order], without telling the players where to get this item!

Wait a minute!

Zhang Yang's eyes suddenly shone, he immediately logged out from the game and switched on his computer, checking on the official website. He

searched for Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses Morchason in official database and rows of information about Morchason were all listed out.

Zhang Yang scrolled the web page as he browsed the database and he stopped at the number of killings!

Currently, Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses Morchason had been killed seven times in the eight servers around the world but the Morchason in Japan-Korea server had not been killed yet!

Zhang Yang revealed a happy smile on his face and logged onto the game once again. He checked his friend list but Sun Xin Yu was offline.

Zhang Yang loitered around when he finally saw Sun Xin Yu logging onto the game in the evening. Then, he quickly sent a party request to Sun Xin Yu.

"?"

"Do me a favor!" Zhang Yang replied, "I need you..."

"... Pervert!" Sun Xin Yu immediately shot him down.

Zhang Yang was stunned, realizing Sun Xin Yu had already jumped to conclusions and he immediately explained, "Don't get me wrong, only you can do this, and I really need you..."

"Do you want to die?" Sun Xin Yu started to grit her teeth.

"Damn it, will you please let me finish?!" Zhang Yang shouted.

Strangely, Sun Xin Yu remained silent after Zhang Yang shouted.

"I need you to go to Mystical Turtle City and head to the Meadow Flatlands, and then find a place known as Mountains of Miduo. After that, I will use the Lover's Charm to teleport to your location, as I want to kill a boss!" Zhang Yang explained.

Sun Xin Yu pondered for a while and asked, "How do I go to Mystical Turtle City?"

The teleportation portal between main cities could only function within the region, and if they wanted to travel across the region, they must first

enter Chaos Realm and then go through the realm gate and enter another region! However, players must reach Level 100 in order to enter the Chaos Realm!

Zhang Yang smiled as he answered, "A hermit must have her own ideas!"

"Flattering lips!" Sun Xin Yu complained.

Even an icy woman like her would bother lecturing people? Zhang Yang felt his heart flutter. It was not that he liked to be scolded, but it was rare to see so much emotion from Sun Xin Yu! Zhang Yang ran towards Sun Xin Yu atop his Whitey.

After running for a while, he saw Sun Xin Yu standing elegantly in one corner. Although her face was still covered with a black cloth, her exquisite leather armor outlined her voluptuous body shape, like a beautiful piece of art!

Zhang Yang dismounted from his Whitey and took out his precious [Destination Teleportation Scroll] that had already been stored a long time ago in his inventory. He had won this [Destination Teleportation Scroll] from Ghostly Leaf after making a bet with him. Zhang Yang handed over the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] to Sun Xin Yu and said, "This is a [Destination Teleportation Scroll], you can use this to teleport to any main city in all eight regions of the world!"

A trace of curiosity appeared across Sun Xin Yu's eyes and she immediately made to tear off the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] after taking it from Zhang Yang.

"Wait a minute!" Zhang Yang suddenly said.

Sun Xin Yu stopped tearing off the scroll, looking at Zhang Yang with her puzzled expression and large, elegant eyes.

"Please be careful!" Zhang Yang said with serious expression.

Sun Xin Yu's fair cheeks immediately blushed, even through the black cloth that covered her face. Her delicate body shivered slightly, unable to hide her emotions. Staring at staring Zhang Yang with anger and embarrassment through those big eyes, she continued tearing the

[Destination Teleportation Scroll].

A mini teleportation circle rapidly appeared beneath her feet, a white light flashed and encircled her body which was already in stealth mode. Then she was gone.

Stealth mode!

This was the reason why Zhang Yang had asked Sun Xin Yu to travel on his behalf!

Across the world's eight regions, each of the regions were hostile to each other. If Zhang Yang was teleported to Mystical Turtle City, he would be beaten to a pulp by the players and NPCs in Japan-Korea server! No matter how strong Zhang Yang was, what chance would he have against all the players in a region?

In contrast, a thief could enter stealth mode and stalk about! Sun Xin Yu was a peerless Thief Lord and her skills were unmatched. After Zhang Yang had considered so many other factors, he could not find any other candidate than her!

Lost Dream? That was right, he is a strong Thief but the main issue was that, Lost Dream was a male and Zhang Yang would be unable to use Lover's Charm to teleport to Lost Dream.

Sun Xin Yu was sneaking into the enemy's region alone so she would need to be extra careful. Zhang Yang shrugged, settling down at a place and started training, by killing monsters.

Because of the in-game time and real time adjustment, the players now would gain levels faster! Before Zhang Yang had reached Level 72, Han Ying Xue and the rest were already catching up. Currently, most of them were at about Level 69.

However, once they reach Level 70, that speed would drop!

After Zhang Yang pulled and cleared two rounds of monsters, he received a voice call from Hundred Shots, "Zhan Yu, our people discovered a mining cave!"

Zhang Yang blinked in surprise and asked, "What sort of materials?"

"Mithril, and small amount of brass!"

"That's great!" Zhang Yang clenched his fist triumphantly, as mithril was a third grade mineral and it only spawned in Level 60 and above area maps, and was difficult to get into mass production! The mining cave made it so that players would not need to run around the area maps to obtain the ore. Having enough miners in the mining cave would do!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, each time a new mining cave was discovered, guilds would fight for it! In the later stages of the game, a standard of measuring the strength of a guild was determined by whether the guild owned a territory or mining cave. If the guild did not have any of these two, then the guild would not be considered strong!

This should be the first mining cave in the China server. Other guilds would even be aware of the existence of mining caves yet! Zhang Yang commanded, "Send our miner type players, and station them in that mining cave. Then, arrange the appropriately leveled members to train in that vicinity and protect the mining cave!"

"Roger that!"

Hundred Shots was a very compliant right-hand man, Zhang Yang had complete faith in him. So, Zhang Yang did not ask about anything else, other than the exact location of the mining cave, which Coral Jade Mining Cave, in the west of Forest of Tanila.

Zhang Yang continued pulling and clearing monsters to gain experience. After at least seven to eight hours, he received a private message from Sun Xin Yu: "Come over!" Zhang Yang immediately equipped the [Lover's Charm: Yang] and then he was teleported to Sun Xin Yu's location.

'Ding! You have entered Meadow Flatlands (Japan-Korea Server). This is a hostile region, any players can initiate the attack on you and they will not be penalized with the Red Tag! You will be automatically have a red-tag on your name, and if you are killed, the chance of dropping your equipment has been increased by 100%!'

The system notification immediately rang around Zhang Yang's ears.

Sun Xin Yu stood there, silent and still, like a snow lotus on the iceberg, as pure as settled snow.

Zhang Yang suddenly had an urge of pulling her down to the secular world from high above the clouds, to see what this lukewarm woman would actually look like if she started laughing out loudly! Zhang Yang could not help but asked, "Will you laugh?"

Sun Xin Yu looked at suspiciously and answered, "What nonsense!"

"Then, show me how you laugh!"

"..." Sun Xin Yu's pretty eyebrows were furrowed. This was definitely a sign of her getting angry soon.

Zhang Yang laughed as he asked, "Do you still remember when you last had a laugh?"

Sun Xin Yu's eyes widened in recognition, as if she did remember, but she did not reply Zhang Yang.

"Look at you, you don't even remember when was the last time you laughed out loud happily!" Zhang Yang shook his head and asked again, "Are you happy with your life, at where you stand?"

"None of your business!" Sun Xin Yu answered coldly.

"On what days are you off work?"

"Why?"

"I want to take you out and have some fun!"

"I don't want to go!"

"Then I'll look for you at police station!"

"I just said that I don't want to go!"

Zhang Yang stared at Sun Xin Yu, who maintained her gaze evenly. The main characteristic about this woman was that she was unwilling to lose.

Unyielding?

Zhang Yang walked up to Sun Xin Yu and she backed off uncertainly, but she saw the intensity in Zhang Yang's gaze. When Zhang Yang came even closer, Sun Xin Yu finally took another step backwards, keeping a distance of about one meter from Zhang Yang.

"Tomorrow, 8.00 pm, I will take you out for dinner. I won't take no for an answer!" Zhang Yang said.

"..."

It was tiring, talking to this woman!

Zhang Yang relaxed his tensed up body and summoned Whitey, saying, "Let's go for a boss!"

Both of them summoned mounts and started to gallop within the Kalojar Highlands of the Japan-Korea server. Luckily, this area was not a popular place for training, so they only met a few players who they tried to avoid.

Although both of them had hidden their character information, this server would forcibly display all their information. Both of their names were shown, along with the "China Server" tag. Being red-tagged also attracted a few hostile players.

However, this was Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. They wouldn't be beaten by any random party!

After killing off the annoying players, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu made their way into Mountains of Miduo. Although the official database showed the Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses – Morchason's approximate location, it did not show the specific coordinates, so players would have to search for the specific coordinates themselves.

After an hour, both of them reached a canyon. Zhang Yang felt that they had come to the correct place, as the monsters in this valley were all Mythical Tyrannosauruses!

Chapter 299: Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses - Morchason

[Scavenging Mythical Tyrannosaurus] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

These mythical tyrannosauruses looked basically just like the dinosaur itself. Every single one of them was about 10 meters tall, with lower bodies that looked incredibly strong and powerful while having a pair of short tiny hands with claws. They looked just like the feet of chickens popping out of their chests! Each of them had long and thick tails that looked like steel whips. Their entire bodies were dark-gray in colour, and they had gnashing big maws full of blade-like teeth!

However, Zhang Yang would not waste his time looking at regular monsters! He patted Whitey's head gently and said, "We shall charge forward and just ignore everything else along our way. If anything follows, we'll just wipe them out!"

After finishing his words, he rode on Whitey and began to charge into the valley, and naturally, Sun Xin Yu followed behind closely.

As they passed through, a large number of mythical tyrannosauruses detected their presence, and power coursed through their muscular legs as they began to give chase!

Zhang Yang did not give a damn about these regular monsters as he was riding on Whitey. Whenever the monsters got close enough to snap at Sun Xin Yu, he would activate his {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave}, or just jump down from his bear to activate {Charge} and {Thunder Strike} to take out the 'trash'. After that, he would jump onto the back of Whitey with a flip and continue his journey.

Since they were here to hunt for a boss, nothing else mattered!

After a seven to eight minutes of charging forward, the two of them were already closing in on the bottom of the valley. As they turned around, they saw hundreds of monsters charging towards them in a furious stampede! If not for the aggro system where monsters would stop their pursuit after a certain distance, that 'army' of monsters that followed them over would have been two times more!

Zhang Yang turned around, and as his rage gauge was full, he activated his {Horizontal Sweep}!

Instantly, the monsters were inflicted with damages of 4000+, which repeated itself over and over again! One second later, the common cool down had ended, Zhang Yang activated another {Blast Wave}, blasting the and dazzling the monsters around!

Sun Xin Yu wouldn't leave all the action to him. She peppered the monsters with {Fan of Daggers} from one side, throwing out her knives that spread out in eight directions, inflicting a series of outstanding damage! However, she lacked the special effect on her weapon, so they never came close to Zhang Yang's output!

If other players had been surrounded by so many monsters, the players would have been quickly overwhelmed even with hundreds of healers supporting them! But Zhang Yang's equipment were simply out of this world, leaving no chance for the monsters!

After some time, all of the Scavenging Mythical Tyrannosaurus had been slain, leaving the ground with glittering loots. Zhang Yang glanced through all the loots and picked up a few pieces of equipment. The other items did not even have good selling values, so there was no point picking them up.

Zhang Yang took a look at Sun Xin Yu and began to smile, "Now, you should just look at me in admiration. That should stroke my ego!"

"... boring!"

She began to summon her [mount] while trying to ignore him.

"Wait just a second!" Zhang Yang suddenly pointed towards a direction,

"There is a Mythical Tyrannosaurus over there, the size of it looks odd, could it be ---" He had already began rushing over there.

Sun Xin Yu followed closely from behind on her mount, and as they were approaching it, they saw a mini-sized little Mythical Tyrannosaurus. It's whole body was crimson red, it was definitely different from the others in the wild! That was not the main point, the main point was that this little Mythical Tyrannosaurus was labeled as Level O!

[Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: O

HP: 50

Caution: Can be captured.

A Yellow-Gold [Battle Mount]! It was a jackpot out of the blue! They actually encountered another such mount!

Zhang Yang smiled at Sun Xin Yu and asked, "Did you bring your [Sealing Leash]?"

"Of course!" Sun Xin Yu nodded and pulled out a [Sealing Leash] from her backpack. Without waiting for Zhang Yang, she instantly threw her [Sealing Leash] straight at the little Mythical Tyrannosaurus.

As she began to cast the spell to activate the [Sealing Leash], 1%, 13%, 45%... Pak, failed!

The first [Sealing Leash] had been broken into two, however, Sun Xin Yu was not rattled or anything. She took out another [Sealing Leash] from her backpack and threw it at the little Mythical Tyrannosaurus once again.

Activating the [Sealing Leash]... Failed!

For the third attempt! Forth attempt... the eighth attempt!

'Ding! You have successfully sealed the Battle Mount - Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus!'

At last, Sun Xin Yu received the sweet and satisfying voice of the system notification in her ears.

"You are now a mother with a child!" Zhang Yang told her solemnly with a straight face. She rolled her eyes at him.

The two continued to push on forward, and they slayed another wave of monsters. Eventually, they arrived at the deepest bottom of the valley.

A gigantic Mythical Tyrannosaurus with the height of up to 30 meters was lay in a deep slumber by it's nest, it's nostrils ejecting jets of hot air, threatening to blow off the leaves on the nearby trees.

[Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses - Morchason] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 70

HP: 7,000,000

Defense: 1,400

Sun Xin Yu turned to Zhang Yang with a questioning stare, then she asked, "So much health points, how are the two of us going to pull this off?"

According to the official database, the basic attack of Morchason is approximately 10,000, therefore, Zhang Yang would probably take 6,200 damage per hit. The boss would attack every 2 seconds, and considering the fact that Zhang Yang could use {Block} once in every 6 seconds, the damage sustained should be around 2,000 --- all these calculations had not yet taken the boss' other skills into account yet!

Zhang Yang would have a total amount of 60,000 health points when mounted on Whitey, and with him able to activate two {Berserker's Heals}, two {Shield Walls}, he would probably last for 2 minutes! However, to deplete the 7,000,000 health points of the boss within that two minutes, the DPS of Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang must reach up to 50,000! Well, that was out of the question!

One option was to have Sun Xin Yu use the [teleportation scroll] to travel back, and then pass her [Lover's Charm: Yin] over to Han Ying Xue, allowing their 'Super Healer' to teleport over to him! Possibly being the most well-equipped player in China, she will be able to leisurely give Zhang Yang all the time in the world to chew the boss off, bit by bit. It

would definitely be a piece of cake!

However, when Zhang Yang pulled up his friend list, he saw that the avatar portrait of Han Ying Xue was dimmed, and the same went for Wei Yan Er.

Han Ying Xue was a priest, leveling up all on her own would be extremely difficult and inefficient. She would always be paired with Yan Er. Miraculously, Wei Yan Er did actually attend her classes today, giving Han Ying Xue reason to be offline as well, as she was probably out shopping at that very moment!

At this time, he could not depend on Han Ying Xue! Furthermore, if he really did shoo Sun Xin Yu back to Thunderstorm Castle for this particular reason, this Icy queen would definitely explode --- who does he think she is? To summon her when she is required, and to send her away when she is no longer needed?!

Still, it was not a wise move to go up against the boss in their current situation!

If he was already Level 80, equipped with several pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, then it could have been possible for him and Sun Xin Yu to work together in bringing down this Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses! But now... Zhang Yang raised up his head and looked around. He really would not want to waste the final summon of the Friendship Jade!

"Are we going to engage or what?" Sun Xin Yu demanded in her crystal clear voice.

Zhang Yang revealed a smile on his face as he said, "Engage!"

"Huh? If we are engaging, why are you moving back then?"

"Silly girl, with just the two of us to go head on against the boss, won't we get raped by the boss?" Zhang Yang patted Whitey as he arrived at the flat side of a mountain.

"... who are you calling silly?" Sun Xin Yu sounded dangerous.

Zhang Yang couldn't help but tease her further, "What a silly girl, making me repeat myself twice! Oh dear, there's no cure for this one!"

'Qiang!' Sun Xin Yu pulled out her dagger.

"Don't get mad, it was just a joke! I say that you, icy, should smile more often. If you keep your face that tense all the time, your face might not last through your 30s!" Zhang Yang began to laugh.

Sun Xin Yu was silent for a moment before she asked.

"The boss is at the other side of this area, how are you going to engage with the boss from here?"

"Mountain men will play by the mountain! Got it?" Zhang Yang nudged his head in the direction at the mountain wall, trying his best to crack a mountain joke.

"Stop being so lame!"

"Can you see the cave by the top side?" Zhang Yang pointed at the mountain wall.

As Sun Xin Yu raised her sight of view upwards, and she saw it, 40 meters above the ground she was standing now, the mountain wall had seemed to have been skewered by gigantic spears countless of times, leaving a series of crack marks on it. Some of the crack marks were shallow, but some of them were deep enough to hide people in it. Some of them were actually as deep as seven to eight meters!

"So, what's with them?"

"The entrance of these caves are extremely narrow, at least for the boss. That big-mouthed idiotic Tyrannosaurus will never fit into it, we fight from the cover of it and wear the boss down!"

"Well, but he would be out of your range as well, what good would the cover do?"

"Indeed! But, we will control the rhythm of the battle! When we feel like engaging, we can just engage! When we are out of health points, we can retreat into the narrow cave and get patched up, take our time for our

skills to cool down. We can kill him at leisure!"

Sun Xin Yu gave it some thought, and then she asked, "That being said, the problem is still unsolved. How are you going to reach the cave on the mountain wall?"

Those crack marks are basically 40 meters from the ground, making it impossible for any player to jump up to any of them! It sounded like Zhang Yang was making a pointless suggestion!

At that instant, Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, as he took a piece of item out that he left it long in his backpack --- [Frog King's Powerful Flippers], upon activating, player can jump extremely high for the next 10 seconds, cool down: 1 minute only!

And it is a Level 20 equipment! Sun Xin Yu was shocked by what she just saw, "I can't believe you actually held on to that!"

Zhang Yang smiled, always believing that such equipment with unique abilities would always have their use, someday! He would not even abandon a level 1 equipment with such attributes!

After putting on the [Frog King's Powerful Flippers], Zhang Yang activated the equipment's special effect. With a powerful leap, he instantly leaped over a height of approximately 50 meters, and started climbing up the cliff face.

However, the duration of the "powerful leap" had ended by the time he was climbing. So Zhang Yang had to wait for another minute doing nothing but stand on the shelf of rock before he could continue to leap for a higher 'milestone'! It took him about six or seven minutes before he could squeeze himself into one of the crack holes on the wall. When he saw that it wasn't deep enough, he had to spend more time jumping further up to try the other holes.

Another five or six minutes had passed, and Zhang Yang had finally found himself an ideal crack hole which was about 10 meters deep, 2 meters tall and 2 meters wide, enough for a player to move around freely.

"Icy, I am counting on you to get the boss here! After I've taken its aggro,

you can freely interpret the situation to attack or use {Vanish} to clear yourself from the aggro of the boss."

Without a word, Sun Xin Yu rode on her wolf mount straight towards Morchason.

The range of the boss's aggro was approximately 30 meters wide. The moment Sun Xin Yu entered that range, Morchason instantly let out a thunderous roar and lumbered to its feet. With the powerful and muscular legs powering it forwards, Morchason opened up its bloody big mouth and crunched its teeth at Sun Xin Yu!

Sun Xin Yu immediately started running!

Morchason was right behind her with its two powerful, long and muscular legs! Every step it took shook the ground with incredible vibrations, emitting out a series of thunderous rumbles!

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], waiting for Morchason to enter the range of his attack. The moment Morchason stepped into the range distance of 30 meters from him, Zhang Yang immediately fired a {Spear of Obliteration} straight at the boss!

‘-2,298!’

The first damage value inflicted on Morchason appeared right on top of the boss's head!

Sun Xin Yu had merely gotten close to the boss. Compared to a direct attack; after that obliterating strike from Zhang Yang, most of Morchason's aggro value was pulled over towards Zhang Yang, so the boss began to advance ferociously towards Zhang Yang who was standing at the entrance of the crack hole.

{Block}!

Raising up his shield upon the activation of his skill, his shield was caught between the mouth of the boss! With the shield pressing against the sharp teeth of the boss, sparks flew, with a horrifying screech! While holding out until the boss withdrew its mouth, a number of scratches were seen on the [Titan Wall]!

That was why equipment were designed to have a of durability in this game!

After a long period of time using an equipment, it will naturally be damaged or even break! Engaging in a seriously intense battle would greatly decrease the durability. And when the durability of that equipment hits zero, it would lose all of it's additional attributes, which meant that players would need to find a blacksmith to repair it, in order to use it again for future battles!

Furthermore, the durability of an equipment would increase correspondingly to the quality of the equipment. The better the quality meant greater durability, meaning a longer time of use. For players, having their equipment 'damaged' was not too big of a deal, as the equipment would still function with all of it's additional attributes, as long as there is still one durability point remaining, as long as it is not 'broken'!

For tankers, their shields take the most impact of all other equipment. So the game developers have made the shield far more durable, compared to other equipment. [Titan Wall] had a durability of 800, which was far more durable than the other equipment on his body, like [Furious Chest Plate] which had only 100 durability points!

Unfortunately, monsters did not have the attributes of equipment durability!

If not for that, players could have depleted the durability of all the boss's teeth, leaving it as a toothless hag!

Zhang Yang was waving his sword around to fend off against the ferocious attacks from the boss while shouting out to Sun Xin Yu, "Icy! You may start attacking!"

Both of them started attacking from both sides.

After a few seconds of battle, Morchason suddenly let out a thunderous roar, lashing out its tail which was as thick as a tree trunk at Zhang Yang! But before the tail could reach Zhang Yang, it struck the mountain wall first! The powerful strike of the tail actually shook the while mountain for awhile and the rocks and dust were dropping from the ceiling within the

crack hole!

Although the sound made by the attack was extremely loud and intimidating, the attack stopped there!

Zhang Yang could not help himself proudly ask, "How is it, Icy? Are you impressed?"

Sun Xin Yu instantly rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

However, Zhang Yang could not mount his [Battle Mount] within holes and caves. After merely a minute, his health points were starting to get low. He quickly activated his {Shield Wall} and continued to rely on the activation of the health recovery effect of his [Armor Set], and when things got tensed up, he activated his {Berserker's Heal}.

Even with all his powerful skills activated, he could only last against the assault of the boss for 50 seconds long before his health became critical!

"Icy! Use {Vanish} now! I am about to draw back!" Zhang Yang shouted out, and began to run inwards into the crack hole. Of course, Whitey was twerking it's big fat butt, following closely.

As they were retreating, Morchason tried to snap at them, but it failed to touch Zhang Yang. The boss went berserk, flinging it's large head around while ramming at the entrance of the crack hole, shaking up the mountain stones, causing the stones and dust on the ceiling within the crack holes to rain down.

At that moment, the boss was like a continuous wave of explosives! Anyone who got too close would only become it's victim!

Zhang Yang threw another strike of {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss. After that, he calmly took his sweet time to patch himself up with the [Silk Bandage] that he brought along.

[Silk Bandage] (Consumable)

Use: Recovers 8,000 health points within 10 seconds. While patching up, you cannot have any other movement, or else the effect will immediately be interrupted. The cool down time will be shared across all

other types of bandages.

Cool down time: 1 minute.

Required: Professional tier First Aid

As Zhang Yang had previously acquired the title of 'Specialist tier First Aid', and with only one [Silk Bandage], he immediately healed himself by 16,000 health points!

Chapter 300: Takeshi's Fort

Zhang Yang launched another {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, and resumed his assault on the boss.

Morchason was truly frustrated, and it let out a series of thunderous roars, fruitlessly gnashing its teeth against the rocks. Sun Xin Yu had immediately followed up.

Actually, if Zhang Yang wanted to, he could have used the special terrain of this crack hole to launch a series of attacks every six seconds, using his {Block} to immunize himself from any damage, even being able to slay the boss without receiving any damage! But if he did so, he would make Sun Xin Yu feel awkward, therefore, he abandoned the thought and decided to carry on.

From the looks of it, Zhang Yang seemed to have found a way to cheat. But the game initially encouraged players to discover new battle tactics to engage in battle. The repetition of using only the same tactics are just meaningless and boring! However, only a few players could implement newly discovered tactics like what Zhang Yang was doing right now, before the implementation of flying mounts!

After some time, Zhang Yang's health bar was about to hit the bottom again. He quickly informed Sun Xin Yu, "Icy, I am about to retreat again, you can activate your {Blur} to force your way to stay alive for awhile!"

He went straight for the crack hole as he spoke.

As Morchason could not lay its assaults on Zhang Yang, it turned all its aggro towards Sun Xin Yu and immediately began to stomp its way towards Sun Xin Yu.

One toe of the boss was as large as seven or eight Ping Pong tables bound together! The damage from the stomping covered a large area, and even with the activation of {Blur}, it was inevitable for her to be inflicted with damage! Sun Xin Yu quickly activated her {Sprint}, increasing her movement speed. Then she began to run towards the opposite direction.

At that moment, Zhang Yang ran out of the crack holes in time, once again attracting the aggro of Morchason, luring the boss to abandon Sun Xin Yu. The boss turned around and began to charge back at Zhang Yang. But just before it reached him, Zhang Yang quickly withdrew again.

Morchason could only turn back around to attack Sun Xin Yu. However, Sun Xin Yu had already ran a distance away.

Apparently, Zhang Yang was calculating the time frames silently. The poor boss was being meddled with like a marionette! As the boss will turn to whoever had the higher aggro value within it's range of attacks, it could only turn back to look for Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

That little time was enough for his {Block} to cool down, so he took the opportunity to give it another blow before running back into the crack hole. At the same time, the cool down for the [Bandage] had ended, and he quickly patched himself up, restoring himself back to his solid state!

Reengaging into battle!

The aggro value was the most important basic knowledge when it comes to battling against monsters and bosses! If the aggro value distribution is erratic, the monster would either be really easy to defeat, or impossible to fight! That would leave the battle full of unpredictable possibilities! And because of the existence of this aggro value distribution system, only could players be divided into different roles; tankers kiting, healers healing, and damage output!

Thanks to this aggro value distribution system, Morchason had become an idiotic monster from head to toe. It was more like a toy, instead of a Yellow-Gold boss, being played around by Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu!

As long as the boss does not heal itself, it will surely be taken down in just a matter of time!

Half an hour later, Morchason was left with only approximately 300,000 health points, close to it's demise!

Zhang Yang once again patched himself with a [Bandage] and went out

of the crack hole. Just when he was about to land on the ground, he activated {Charge}, clashing into the thick, muscular lower body of Morchason!

Safely landed!

Whitey landed in similar pattern, and then Zhang Yang leaped onto the back of Whitey, instantly boosting his health points to 52,381/57,810!

Morchason gave a thunderous roar and attempted to stomp on Zhang Yang with its gigantic foot claw.

190,000! 180,000! The boss was near death! Just when things were getting smooth, suddenly, a party of approximately 20 players rode into the scene. Their leader was tagged, 'Sanada Jubei, Level 66, Male Human, Templar, {Takeshi's Fort}' right above his head! The rest of his party members were maintaining a distance of about 3 meters away right behind him, clearly revealing him as their leader.

These players were all from 'Takeshi's Fort'!

Zhang Yang was not familiar with any player from the other countries, so he had no idea if this Sanada Jubei was a famous player or not in his previous life! Every country, region used different languages, however, the game had an in-built translator. Even though the translations were not always accurate, the meaning would always be conveyed.

They were staring Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu, and three of them were pointing at Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. As they were still very far away, Zhang Yang could not hear what they were saying. But he could recognize that those three were among the players that he and Sun Xin Yu slaughtered while they were searching for the boss!

Reinforcements! What 'great' timing!

"Icy, let's pick up the pace! We've got company!"

The two of them were increasing their strength in slaying the boss, while Zhang Yang managed to push the boss a little backward!

There were over 20 Japanese players coming their way. Knowing the fact

that these Chinese players had crossed the border over to their territory to snatch the bosses within their area, and killing three of their members along the way, who could ignore that!

The party started charging at them.

"Is your cool down time over?" Zhang yang asked.

"17 seconds left!"

"Alright. Let's wait until they enter the aggro range of the boss, then I shall use {Shadow of the Void}, and you shall use {Vanish}! Let the boss handle those shorty japs!" Zhang Yang laughed.

The players of the Takeshi's Fort had already collided into them. Other than Sanada Jubei, the rest of them had jumped down from their own [Mounts] and had began their assaults on Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. At first, Zhang Yang thought that Sanada Jubei had a [Battle Mount], but upon closer observation, the player wasn't even attacking him, he was only trying to act tough!

Sun Xin Yu activated her {Blur} without hesitation as she turned around and began her counter attack against the players from Takeshi's Fort. Her equipment was very powerful, and her assassin profession was specialized for player versus player battles! After a few sidesteps and slashes, an enemy fell! The player dropped a pair of gaunlets that glittered in a greenish light.

A Green-Copper equipment? They actually came to seek for a fight with such low grade equipment?

"Just, disappear!" Sun Xin Yu said.

Although Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu are powerful, kiting a boss while engaging 20 over players, was a little too much to ask!

"Time to disappear!"

{Shadow of the Void}, {Blur} were both activated at the same instant! Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu immediately disappeared from the sight of the Japanese players.

But poor Whitey could not disappear together with Zhang Yang. Immediately, it became the main target of the boss. Boom! Boom! Boom! With every stomp inflicting more than 10,000 damage, Morchason stomped Whitey to it's demise!

The moment Whitey was dead, the aggro of Morchason immediately switched straight onto those Japanese players! With a deadly swing of it's long tail and a resounding sonic boom, the Japanese players were all flung into the air!

When the city gate catches fire, the fish in the moat suffer from it!

Sanada Jubei and his party members were screaming in agony. Why did this boss turn against its 'countrymen'?! It was alright if it did not aid in chasing down the foreign intruders, it actually began to attack it's compatriots!

Left without a choice, they were forced to engage!

Although Morchason was basically a fool right before Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu, it now acted like a true Yellow-Gold boss! With some stomps and swings of it's tail, the party was wiped out!

20 seconds had passed, and Zhang Yang came out from the void. Seeing how the boss was chomping down their asses, Zhang Yang could not help himself but to laugh out loud.

Afterwards, he quickly ran towards the boss --- because if Morchason killed every single players on it's aggro list, it will disengage from the battle and recover all of it's health points. By then, all of the trouble that he and Sun Xin Yu went through will all be for nothing!

"You filthy Chinese pigs! I am going to tear you both into millions of pieces!" Sanada Jubei was cursing in rage!

Zhang Yang arrived at Morchason, however, he did not launch any of his attack but only pointed the tip of his sword at Sanada and said, "Dream on! Just get lost!"

In China, many people had amicable terms with the Koreans and Japanese, several being fans of their media and culture, but so were those

who used terms like 'Shorty Japan1' and 'Gaoli bangzi2'. Zhang Yang had no idea which type of people were the majority, but he was very sure of one thing, he did not have any good opinion towards Japanese men!

Although Sanada managed to activate {Sacred Protection} to grant himself a 5-second of invincibility, it only prolonged the inevitable. The moment the {Sacred Protection} vanished, Zhang Yang pierced through Sanada's chest with his sword and fresh blood oozed out like a fountain, depleting all of Sanada's remaining health points!

Grunting in anger, his body slowly slipped onto the ground. How could this had happened? They were having the advantage in numbers, while the two China players were engaged in a boss battle! Logically speaking, it should be just a walk in the park to take them both out for good, but how did the situation get turned around like that?

"Just roll away with your 'eggs' and get lost!" Zhang Yang withdrew his sword and turned back to the boss, blocking the big mouth of Morchason! The moment these bunch of Takeshi's Fort players were all dead, the aggro of the Morchason was instantly switched back onto Zhang Yang.

Sanada Jubei was releasing his soul back to the the graveyard while posting comments on his regional channel saying, "There are two China pigs trespassing over into our territory, just by the Mountains of Miduo, and he is a Guardian! Gather around and chop up the two China pigs into pieces!"

In just an instant, the regional channel was full of their unrestful voices, with countless of them swearing to start a war.

In their previous attempt, the players of the Takeshi's Fort had managed to reduce the health points of the boss by a few 10,000, leaving Morchason with only about 70,000 health points left. Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu finished off the boss in a short time, leaving behind tons of loots on the ground!

Zhang Yang quickly began to search the ground. He did not have the interest of finding any equipment, what he was looking for was the drop of the [Monster Attack Order]! Hoping, praying for it to drop!

After conveniently picking a few of the Yellow-Gold equipment and some Gray-Silver equipment, and finally, Zhang Yang found a piece of pale purplish parchment. It was just the size of a palm, one side of it was had the word 'Order' and the other side had the word 'Monster'.

[Monster Attack Order] (Consumable)

Use: Marks a territory and lead monsters into bring destructive damage to the territory that is targeted.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to reveal a sinister smile on his face, having thought to himself, "One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, I bet none of you would have guessed... that I would obtain a [Monster Attack Order]... I shall make you look 'good'! Don't you guys love to fight for glory? Don't you guys want China to only have one territory? I shall fulfill your 'dream'!"

TL Notes:

1. Shorty Japan - a term used to make fun or discriminate Japanese.
2. Gaoli bangzi - a common Chinese slang term used in damning the Koreans.

Chapter 301: Monster Siege again!

"Icy, let's go, it's time to leave!" After getting his hands on the [Monster Attack Order], Zhang Yang naturally felt contented.

"You go on ahead, I am going to slaughter some more Japanese pigs!"

Looking at her excited eyes, Zhang Yang could not help but to feel riled up, and he suggested, "Fine! Let's go kill some more of them piggies! Just let me activate this [Monster Attack Order] first!"

With a gentle tap on the [Monster Attack Order], a three-dimensional projection of a map appeared right in front of his eyes. On the left hand side of the map were the names of the eight main regions while the right hand side of the map was empty.

'Ding! You have used the [Monster Attack Order]. First, please confirm the region!'

Zhang Yang reached out his finger and gently touched the 'China region' on the map, then, the projection on the right side instantly began to shift and a complete map of the China region appeared! Within the map, the Thunderstorm Castle and the Imperial Castle were both highlighted.

'Ding! You have selected the 'China Region'. In this region, there are two territories available for attacking, known as Thunderstorm Castle and Imperial Castle. Please select your specific target!'

Zhang Yang revealed a wicked grin on his face and gave a gentle, steady tap on 'Imperial Castle'.

'Ding! You have selected your target as China Region, Imperial Castle! The [Monster Attack Order] can only be used once. Once it is used, you cannot recover it anymore, proceed?'

Poof! The [Monster Attack Order] instantly turned into a piece of scrap, breaking up in Zhang Yang's palm and dispersing into the air.

"Let's go! Time to slay some shorty Japs!"

Zhang Yang summoned his regular [Mount] and rode for the valley together with Sun Xin Yu.

Not long after they departed, Zhang Yang received a private message from a fuming mad One Sword Stroke, "Zhan Yu, you ruthless son of the beach!"

Zhang Yang shook his head without any pause and said, "Hey you, you used the [Monster Attack Order] on my territory back then. I didn't make much fuss about it then! What, I'm not allowed to do the same back to you? How shameless!"

"... You just wait, I'm definitely not going to let this go! I'm decreasing the fare for my territory teleportation fees! Even if it means I'm not earning anymore, I'll deprive you of your income!"

"Ha, by all means, if you succeed in keeping your territory! Oh right, I'm very busy right now, no time to chat now, bye!"

After ending the conversation with One Sword Stroke, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu began their 'conquest' on hunting down the players in the Japan and Korea regions. When they came across a large number of enemies, they would stay hidden and not engage. When they came across a small number of enemies, they would simply engage and slaughter them all! Since the Level 60 maps are all so large, all they had to do was to hide, and the enemies would never find them unless they dispatched tens of thousands of players to sniff them out!

At that moment, the players in Korea and Japan regions were throwing all sorts of curses. Other than the parties of at least 20 or 30 players, any other small parties would not dare to set foot on the leveling grounds of Kalojar Highlands.

Both of them continued sweeping the area clean, day and night, however, as the real world time was already close to dawn, and Sun Xin Yu needed to go to work, both of them tore their own [Teleportation Scrolls] and made their way straight back to Thunderstorm Castle. Some well-informed news 'transporters' were posting the news about their deeds on the game forums.

‘Slaughtering within the land of Shorty Japan and Gaoli bangzi, boosting the morale of Republic of China!’. This person used an exaggerated title which instantly attracted a large number of clicks and replies. At first, many players thought that he was simply trolling, but later on, a bunch of players from Japan and China regions started replying furiously on the thread. They were calling them bullies, and challenging them to face the professional players from their own region!

Looks like it wasn't fake news afterall!

In just a short moment, the reputation of Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were escalated high up into the sky, even being called ‘heroes of the race’! Zhang Yang could not help but frown, he only intended to get the [Monster Attack Order], those players were simply collateral.

The enemies of the Lone Desert Smoke such as Imperial Sky and The Dominators also revealed themselves one after another on the forum page, trying to defame Zhang Yang by saying that he was only asking for attention! However, they ended up being drowned in the saliva of the ‘Online Water Army!’ to the point where they started being insulted instead --- it was an act that boosted the morale of the entirety of China, so do it yourselves if you are capable of doing it, if not, just drown yourselves by the drains at the side!

5th January, 7 pm!

The moment where the monsters would attack the Imperial Castle was finally here!

Zhang Yang and the gang abandoned the thoughts of grinding their levels, and instead, they went to the Meadow Flatlands. Although they could not join the battle Imperial Castle, but they could still at least watch the scene from afar! It was not a bad idea at all!

A few days back when they were defending their own territory, they were always hoping that the monsters were weak! But now, they could only hope that the monsters were all stronger than average bosses! It would be ideal if the first wave of the assault can level down Imperial Castle!

Apparently, Lone Desert Smoke weren't the only ones who came by to

enjoy the scene, guildmasters of the other large guilds such as Crimson Rage, Sky High, Sunset Amber, Radiance and others, along their own core players were showing up one after another to enjoy the scene as well!

First wave, second wave, third wave...

The main gate of the Imperial Castle was already been broken through! The battle was invading into the inner side of the territory!

Boom!

A flash of white light passed, the Magic Cannons had been fired!

"They have already activated their Magic Cannon in the forth wave!" Lone Desert Smoke could not help themselves but to compare their own experience, as they only activated their Magic Cannon on the fifth wave!

"The monsters who spawn starting from the second half of the forth wave are all elite grade, it was indeed very challenging to handle!" Zhang Yang was happily retelling his experience to the other guild leaders.

Snow Seeker revealed a smile on her face and said, "From the looks of it, looks like Imperial Sky won't make it through the day!"

Indeed, the Lone Desert Smoke had relied on Zhang Yang's [Friendship Jade] to survive the assault, and even so, their territory was almost destroyed by the end of the assault!

After defending against the assault of the forth wave, the monsters of the fifth wave began to arrive!

The Magic Cannons on the upside of the wall were emitting out a series of blinding white blasts, wiping the invasive monsters away. However, as the those cannons had limited shots, they were quickly used up!

A large number of elite monsters gushed into the Imperial Castle. The spectators from afar could not see the events that were happening within the castle, but all they could see were wave after wave of monsters gushing, in like water going through a ruptured dam!

The boss of the fifth wave finally appeared! It was that farting boy Moriarty the Wind Surfer! His appearance was the last straw that broke

the camel's back!

‘Server Announcement: The territory: Imperial Castle was destroyed by the monsters!’

"Oh yea!" Fatty Han and the other spectators were cheering and clapping, celebrating! Meanwhile, the people from Sunset Amber, Radiance were smiling from the bottom of their hearts. Previously, they were sabotaged by the Imperial Sky during the Soaring Sword Competition. Since then, they had bore deep grudges towards Imperial Sky! Nothing pleased them more than to witness the loss of their territory!

Zhang Yang was also receiving a tons of cursing and scoldings from the members of Imperial Sky through private messages. One Sword Stroke knew that there was no point in any of it, so he chose to let Zhang Yang walk away with a smile, without saying a word.

Setting the status to not accepting private message from strangers, Zhang Yang found his tranquility without trouble.

After logging out from the game, Zhang Yang confirmed with Sun Xin Yu on their dinner with her before he began to prepare to go out.

Walking beside a pretty police officer whose militaristic uniform did nothing to hide her voluptuous body, brought lots of envious looks from the street! After having dinner, he forcefully brought Sun Xin Yu to a movie, {Heart of the Knight}, which was shot in the {God’s Miracle}.

This movie was in high demand, and a lot of people were watching it, making the tickets hard to purchase. However, the movie itself was not that good, the story line was a little dull and old-fashioned, but the special effects, on the other hand, were off the charts.

However, Rome was not built in one day, to melt the ice frost of Sun Xin Yu and see her blooming with joy and laughter wasn’t going to be easy, the amount of effort to do so must be tremendous!

After the movie, Zhang Yang escorted Sun Xin Yu back to her house before taking a cab back to his own apartment.

When he went online, Zhang Yang received a message sent by Sun Xin

Yu, saying "Thank you!".

He could not help but smile, then he began to sweet talk, "Am I not your 'boyfriend'? It's my obligation to do so!"

"... Don't think I had no idea about it. You were only saying it to save yourself from getting shot in the face!"

"Then, why didn't you call me out?"

"Did you really want to die so badly?"

"No, not at all!"

"So let's stop playing pretend now, I officially declare that I am dumping you!"

Although he had previously been trying to rid himself of that 'Boyfriend' title, now that his dream had come true, Zhang Yang suddenly felt a little heavy-hearted...

Sun Xin Yu may be icy cold and all, but she was a beauty nevertheless. Her body was out of this world! Pui! Zhang Yang could not imagine who would be picking away such delicate flower in the future!

As the Imperial Castle had been destroyed by the monsters' assault, there was once again, only one territory in the whole of the China region. Players who had linked their [Teleportation scrolls] to Imperial Castle would have to rush all the way to Thunderstorm Castle to link [Teleportation scrolls] there.

Players who knew about the story from the beginning to the end could not help themselves but to laugh at the Imperial Sky for writing their own death sentence! Initially, they were planning to use the Monster Assault on the castle to get rid of Lone Desert Smoke's Thunderstorm Castle. Not only did Lone Desert Smoke manage to defend themselves, they had replied with a [Monster Attack Order] of their own! Unable to hold out against the exact, same assault, they had lost their own Imperial Castle instead!

Lifting a rock up only to drop it on their own feet!

In the modern age of the internet, secrets no longer existed! The Imperial Sky had become the public joke, pushing them to go low profile ever since, rarely even appearing on the forums.

Since the Level 70 Dungeon, 'Vestibule of Stones' was for a party of five, Zhang Yang waited for the four ladies; Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er to reach Level 70 for starters. Only then did he make his move to acquired the first clear of the dungeon.

Currently, only the party who won the Soaring Sword Competition championship had crossed over the threshold of Level 70. Therefore, there was no stress at all for Zhang Yang and his party in acquiring the First Clear of the dungeon. All of them easily acquired one skill point for themselves!

"Guildmaster, guildmaster! There are two shorty Japs calling out for you and Ms. Sun Xin Yu on the official forums!"

Zhang Yang was looking for good stuff in the Auction house when he received a private message from a member of his own guild. He could not help but to smile, and he replied, "If they want to challenge us, why not! Just let them come over here if they are capable of doing so!"

"But they mentioned saying that they want a match on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre'! Guildmaster, what is a 'Hovering Amphitheatre'?"

Zhang Yang was shocked for a moment. That's right! He knew very well what a 'Hovering Amphitheatre' was!

Hovering Amphitheatre was some sort of an arena which exist for players to challenge each other. But to activate the Hovering Amphitheatre, a player must pay a large sum of gold pieces first. Once the Hovering Amphitheatre is activated, the player can simply challenge another player to battle. No restriction on regions. However, the challenged player can choose to accept the challenge or decline the challenge.

The battle mode on Hovering Amphitheatre had the Level-Drop Penalty! There was a total of 3 grades. In a C-grade challenge, the loser will lose 1 level; in B-grade challenge, the loser will lose 2 levels; and finally in the A-

grade challenge, the loser will lose 3 levels!

TL Notes:

1. Online Water Army: a group of Internet ghostwriters paid by either enterprises or companies to post online comments with particular content that affects the flow of the situations.

Chapter 302: Hovering Amphitheatre

The Japanese players were trying to wash away their humiliation, and they were really putting in a lot of effort and money into doing so! It was actually unbelievable that they actually managed to dig out something such as this Hovering Amphitheatre!

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and replied, "Since they are willing to spend money to buy more humiliation, then I shall grant them their 'wish'!" He quit the game and looked up the official forum page where the Japanese posted their challenge invitation. By looking at it, he found out that the post was already been replied over tens of thousands of times. Some were summoning Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu to stand out and accept their challenge, while some other were cursing and scolding these two Japanese players for not knowing their own boundaries.

However, someone exposed that these two challengers actually belonged to the runner-up party of the Soaring Sword Competition held in the Japan and Korea regions, one being a tanker and the other being a thief. They definitely shouldn't be underestimated --- but why didn't they get the first place in the competition then? It was unfortunate, that they shared the same server as Korea, and Korea had always been a strong force in the world of online games. Naturally, they had a powerful presence in {God's Miracle} as well, constantly oppressing the players from Japan.

Zhang Yang used his ID that had already been verified by the officials to comment, and he accepted the challenge of the two shorty Japs.

In just a short period of time, the two Japanese players replied. The duel matches were set to happen on the next day on 7th of January by 9 pm. It will be Tanker VS Tanker and Thief VS Thief, and the duels would answer all questions! The two Japanese players were shouting out like mad men, claiming that they would give a good beat down on Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu until they were on their knees, begging for mercy!

Faced with the provocation from the Japanese players, the players in China region were also agitated. One by one, they were posting their

supports for Zhang Yang and SunXin Yu.

Before the real duel had even begun, the battle of words had already reached the peak!

The officials of the game even took the opportunity to sell tickets for the duel matches, and whoever wished to watch the matches must pay for it! And it's not expensive too, just two gold pieces! But think about it, how many players are there in China and Japan, that amount of profit...

One day had passed quickly, and the time to duel had come!

"Noob tank, you better not lose!" Wei Yan Er stared up at them as if she was the one in charge.

Han Ying Xue threw a flirty wink and said, "Silly Yu, I shall give you a sweet kiss as the reward of winning the match!"

Zhang Yang felt a shiver down his spine for one brief moment and said, "Are you trying to make things hard for me? I have to consider whether to win or not now!"

"Don't worry, I shall solve your problem and accept the kiss on behalf of you!" Fatty Han thumped his chest and said.

"Sister Sun, do you best! We are rooting for you!" Wei Yan Er also cheered for Sun Xin Yu.

"Zhan Yu, now that you are representing the entire China region into this battle, if you dare to lose this to these shorty Japs, I shall slaughter you with my own bare hands!" Greensleeves Prince of Sunset Amber said.

"Zhan Yu, if you win against those shorty Japs, I will stay with you for a night!" that was from Perfumed Water.

'Ding! Player Kigetsu Zan (Japan-Korea Server) has sent you an A-rank Hovering Amphitheatre Challenge, accept or decline?'

Zhang Yang heard a voice notification from the system right by his ears, and almost at the same instant, Sun Xin Yu had also received a A-rank Hovering Amphitheatre Challenge from Player Kichiku Michi as well.

Accept!

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu both vanished in an instant and they were teleported into a virtual arena.

‘Ding! The duel will commence in 5 minutes, please make preparations for it!’

Meanwhile, the players from both China and Japan-Korea were tossing in their gold pieces to enter the spectator area, and the number of the audience was increasing rapidly as time passes. Unfortunately, the two matches were held at the same time, so everyone had to choose!

Zhang Yang did not summon his Whitey out, and on the contrary, he took off every single piece of his equipment and only kept the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and the [Titan Wall] on him!

If he was on a battlefield, he would do anything necessary to kill all his enemies! But this was a highly prolific match, and it involved the name of their countries, their races! So, he had to win, and he had to leave the opponent with no excuses for it!

Seeing Zhang Yang taking off almost everything, most of the audiences were puzzled by his act. What is going on? Was Zhang Yang trying to let go of the winning chance of this match?

But those who knew Zhang Yang well, began to smile.

Fatty Han cheered, "Little Yang is about to get real! Those Japs are going to drop their pants to the ground, and then they'll have to bow down and sniff them!"

"These shorty Japs really need to be taught a good lesson!" Lost Dream was tossing his fists around and said, "Unfortunately I can't go to the Japan-Korea server, or else I will kill them myself!"

"Guildmaster, do your best! Go go go!" The entire guild cheered for him.

‘Ding! The match of Zhang Yang VS Kigetsu Zan will commence in 10 seconds!’

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

Zhang Yang raised up his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and [Titan Wall] and

walked towards his opponent slowly.

Two opposition sides ---

Zhang Yang

HP: 9,520

Attack: 1,178 - 1,378

Defense: 800

Damage absorb Attribute: 300

Level: 71

Kigetsu Zan

HP: 19,840

Attack: 1,576 - 1,776

Defense: 730

Damage absorb Attribute: 820

Level: 69

Judging from the attributes from both sides, the regular attack of Zhang Yang could not even penetrate the defense of Kigetsu Zan, not at all! So how would this carry out then?

Kigetsu Zan stared at Zhang Yang, full of rage and said, "Are you trying to humiliate me?"

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "Don't get me wrong, now that we are evenly matched with this current situation, people won't say anything about me picking on you!"

"You mother of... Argh!" Kigetsu Zan pulled out his battle axe with murderous intent and said, "I shall make you regret your actions!"

The two dashed towards each other and used {Charge}!

As the two of them clashed into each other, both of them were stunned almost at the same instant. But why 'almost'? Zhang Yang had initiated his Charge by just a few fractions of a second earlier!

That had cause him to recover from stun a tiny bit earlier than his opponent!

It was enough to determine the results of the battle!

Zhang Yang swiftly circled to the back of Kigetsu Zan and activated his {Blood Rage}, instantly boosting his rage points up to 42 points, and he swung his sword at his opponent.

‘-136!’

The damage was so low that the audience went ‘awww’, and the rage points accumulated from that hit was just 5 points.

Kigetsu Zan had also recovered from stun, and he turned around trying to face Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang had predicted his movement by observing all the micro movements of his body, and with a swift slip again, he stayed on the back of his opponent for about 3 seconds, and he gave another hit that inflicted about ‘-73’ points of damage.

Poor Kigetsu Zan continued to make attempts to face himself towards Zhang Yang, trying his very best to shake Zhang Yang off his back, but he never succeeded. All he could ever do was to let Zhang Yang continued to poke his ass from his back! His health points was around 20,000 points, to kill him by inflicting these small amount of damages that Zhang Yang is doing to him right now requires at least 3 minutes, enough for his {Berserker's Heal} to cool down!

But the main point was the indignity! This time around, it was them who invited Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang for this match to stand up for the dignity and the pride of their Imperial Japan, isn't it? Allowing Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu to travel into their lands just like that was already an insult!

Things were worse now! The fact that a near-naked player could toy with him like that! This... nobody would be able to swallow in this kind of humiliation!

{Destructive Smash}!

Zhang Yang had finally accumulated enough rage points, with a flash

from his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], he finally inflicted Kigetsu Zan with more decent damage!

‘-1,340!’

Kigetsu Zan was moving left and right trying to turn around, and as he began to realize that he could not shake off Zhang Yang, he began to run forward in a straight line.

--- Zhang Yang almost had no equipment on him, so his agility attribute must be very low now, his movement speed would definitely be no match to Kigetsu Zan’s!

After Kigetsu Zan ran forward for some distance, he turned his head around, only to get even more enraged! Apparently, Zhang Yang was resting his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] on his shoulder while staring at him nonchalantly! He had not even tried to pursue Kigetsu Zan!

"Bastard! Bastard!" Kigetsu Zan had lost it and began to curse continuously. He ran all the way back to Zhang Yang. Swinging his axe up into the sky, he tried to cleave Zhang Yang’s head.

Approach, activate skill!

Zhang Yang dodged the slash from Kigetsu Zan without much effort, and then he raised his shield up to engage, and used his {Block} to block the following {Wave Blast} from his opponent. With another swift glide, he went right to the back of Kigetsu Zan once again!

‘-204!’

As the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] struck by, another damage value appeared right on Kigetsu Zan.

The battle progressed with Zhang Yang continuously staying behind Kigetsu Zan and poking Kigetsu Zan’s ass with his sword, and every time when Zhang Yang’s {Block} was completely cooled down, he would create a chance for Kigetsu Zan to attack him, accumulating 30 rage point with his skill {Block}. The rest of the time, he would just focus staying on behind Kigetsu Zan to poke his ass with his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and activate {Destructive Smash} whenever he had enough rage points, to

reduce the healing effects on Kigetsu Zan.

The battle was absolutely one-sided, took a lot of time, but within two minutes, Kigetsu Zan was already close to death! But what humiliated him the most was that he was not even be able to touch his opponent yet!

Kigetsu Zan was drowned with his shame. He was running forwards, attempting to gain distance between himself and Zhang Yang while waiting for the reduction effect on his healing effects to fade, planning to use {Berserker's Heal} to heal himself back to his full health!

But Zhang Yang had already predicted his moves, and with a stomp on the ground, he activated {Thunder Strike} and reduced the movement speed of Kigetsu Zan!

Kigetsu Zan quickly used his {Thunder Strike} as well, leaving both of them moving slowly, at least he had the higher agility value still!

The logic was right! Initially the agility attribute of both parties were different, the agility attribute of Kigetsu Zan was 110 points, which was 10 points higher than Zhang Yang's 100 points of agility attribute. But after the speed reduction was applied on both of them, the difference between the two agility attribute points was shortened! It became a situation where the agility attribute of Kigetsu Zan became only 55 points, which was only 5 points higher than Zhang Yang's 50 points of agility! As the movement speed was reduced, the difference between their speed was shortened quite much! Both of them were moving like snails!

‘-229!’

‘-1420!’

Zhang Yang was still poking Kigetsu Zan's ass with his [Dark Enigmatic Sword]!

Left with no choice, Kigetsu Zan grit his teeth and activated his {Berserker's Heal}.

‘+4960!’

It was a pitiful healing value, because of the 75% reduction on healing

effect by {Destructive Smash}, the {Berserker's Heal} could only heal Kigetsu Zan not more than 5000 health points! It was a tragedy, a tragedy that was too cruel to even look at!

Kigetsu Zan was tearing up. What a menace! To actually toy with people to this point!

Having activated his {Shield Wall}, his other life saving skills, and his {Berserker's Heal}, Kigetsu Zan had nothing left to defend himself in the arena!

Time to slaughter!

‘-3022!’

Zhang Yang had finally emptied out Kigetsu Zan's last drop of health points with a fatal blow using his sword.

It was a total torture and slaughter! Kigetsu did not only suffer the lost physically and mentally, he also received the penalty of the A-Grade Challenge, being ‘downgraded’ by 3 levels! He was definitely going to be cursed upon after this, a tragedy that he will never forget in this life!

Everyone on the audience area was speechless with what they had just witnessed! Previously, they thought that the ‘Butterfly Steps’ that Zhang Yang invented during the Soaring Sword competition was already the best creation in the world of Player VS Player! But no one had thought that Zhang Yang would pull off a performance that far transcended that!

Quite a large number of people were stunned to see that it was actually not that difficult to bring a Guardian down to the ground. After witnessing Zhang Yang taking off almost all of his equipment and defeating the fully equipped Kigetsu Kan, it seemed that the officials were right all along! No profession was stronger than the other, only players!

Meanwhile, somewhere in a corner, One Sword Stroke could only frown! He knew that Zhang Yang was a skillful player, but he had considered himself close to that level as well. But he knew, that he would never have been able to defeat Kigetsu Zan after taking off his equipment like Zhang Yang did. And Zhang Yang had not taken a single damage from it!

That would require skills that go far beyond one's imagination! One must also have an incredible motor nerve system, and also a very sensitive feeling towards the situation of battles! These all 3 criteria are a must for a player to be so good!

But as Zhang Yang grew stronger, One Sword Stroke only grew more determined! It would be a true achievement to defeat Zhang Yang at his top form! He couldn't wait for the Professional League Championship to begin. He was very eager to have a battle of the century with Zhang Yang in the arena!

...

After Zhang Yang was teleported out from the arena, Sun Xin Yu was already waiting outside. The real battle between her and her opponent merely took 17 seconds, the rest of the time was spent on playing 'hide and seek' in the arena. In the end, Sun Xin Yu was far more superior in term of skills! She successfully caught her opponent, which sealed her victory!

"Little Yang, good job! You've tortured that Jap well enough to entertain me! I feel so much happier now!" Fatty Han was smiling very happily, "Let's go, we shall go and have a good drink together!"

Zhang Yang reequipped himself and replied, "No go! Not unless it's on you. You always leave the bill to me!"

Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang had rounded up on him. One by one, they congratulated him, and after some idle chatter, they finally left.

"Time to grind for experience points!" Zhang Yang recruited Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream into his party, and they departed to the Level 70 map, the Kingdom of Oz.

The five of them rode on their [Mounts].

The [Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus] that Sun Xin Yu was riding had leveled up to Level 63. It had grown up from a mini tyrannosaurus to a 3-meter tall tyrannosaurus! It's body is completely covered in crimson red skin, it was very attractive! From afar, it looked like a gigantic ruby!

Han Ying Xue was envious of it, so she said, "Silly Yu, you really are

biased! I don't care, you must take the responsibility and find me a [Pet Mount] too, and it should at least be a Yellow-Gold grade!"

"I want it too! Me too!" Wei Yan Er quickly took the opportunity to beg as well, raising her hands high up to the sky.

"Sigh!" Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "You two should be more like Daffodil Daydream! Look at her, when did she ever demand for anything like this before?"

"Daffodil Daydream, you can't be like this forever. It is the fate of a mistress to demand for everything from her man!" Han Ying Xue continued with a straight face, "Furthermore, even if you become the main wife, you'll have to throw more tantrums. You need to keep him in check! Sooner or later, you will be replaced by another mistress out there!"

Zhang Yang dripped cold sweat all over his head, and he said, "What the heck are you talking about?"

"Oh yea, the 23rd of January is upon us, I'm about to become an adult, and finally, I will be claiming the company back!" Wei Yan Er did a fist pump.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to laugh, "What an ungrateful daughter you are, to actually want to kick your dad off the company so urgently!"

"What choice do I have, if dad does not step down, those bloodthirsty relatives of mine shall suck the company dry! By then, it will be too late to chase them out of the company! If I leave the company to them, they will definitely taint everything that my mother and my aunt worked on, for so many years!" For once, Wei Yan Er was dead serious.

Chapter 303: The Ravine of Coyotes

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and then he said, "You two young ladies should be more careful about this. They may be your relatives, but you will be taking a load of money off their hands. Who knows what may happen!"

In his previous life, he had not heard about Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, was it because they had an accident before he knew about them? Some people would kill for tens of thousand dollars. Silky Soft Holdings was a large-scale company, worth tens of millions! That kind of profit would drive people into the madness of greed and kill for it!

The Kingdom of Oz was just located by the north side of the Forest of Tanila, being the nearest map from Thunderstorm Castle among the six Level 70 maps. Of course, it would naturally become their first choice to grind their levels.

After rushing for a distance, they arrived at a narrow valley. Looking at the valley side, the place was crawling with demons. There were small-sized demons with Crimson red bodies, there were also blue apparitions, and also a bunch of scantily clad succubi.

"Let's begin our work here!" Zhang Yang tapped on the head of Whitey, Whitey immediately let out a roar and began to charge into the valley.

The five of them were so powerful that they quickly wiped out the monsters, providing Zhang Yang and his party a sea of experience points. After grinding for more than three hours, Zhang Yang had finally achieved a level up, reaching Level 72, bringing him one step closer to equipping the [Titan Armor Set].

The five of them were slaughtering their way through, forcing their way through to the other end of the valley. Before them was a small camping site with only ten tents being set up there. The surroundings were set up with defensive fences, built with sharpened woods. There were also two heavily armored soldiers guarding, by the entrance of the camp site.

The armors on the two soldiers were heavily weathered, and they were

stained in aquamarine blood. It seemed that they did not even have the time to fix their equipment, or even wipe them clean!

[Ravines of Coyotes - Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 74

HP: 74,000

Defense: 400

The information of these NPCs were shown in green words, it also meant that this entire camp site was a friendly station. To find a camp in such a desolated place, Zhang Yang was 90% sure that such places would have quests to complete!

"Hold it right there, who are you people?" The two soldiers instantly drew their swords after catching sight of Zhang Yang's party. They did not sound friendly at all.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "We are adventurers!"

"Adventurers? God damn it, I knew it! That god damn state of Empire abandoned us and left us for dead! Alright, fellow adventurers, you may enter our camp site. Maybe our chief will give you some small errands to run!" One of the soldier informed them.

As the five of them entered the camp site, they saw a pergola, set right in the middle of the entire camp site. There was an officer with the name 'Captain Kang Na' shown right above his head, standing right in front of a table, revealing a worried frown on his face. Beside Kang Na, there was a warrior equipped in a full body of armor, with a name 'Quartermaster Patna' right on top of his head.

[Captain Kang Na] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 75

HP: 3,750,000

Defense: 800

[Quartermaster Patna] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 73

HP: 3,650,000

Defense: 800

D*mn, a captain and a quartermaster --- Gray-Silver bosses! Ever since they they entered the high level maps, Gray-Silver bosses had been all over the places, meaning that they were certainly losing their prestige over time!

"Adventurer?" Kang Na raised his head up and glanced Zhang Yang and his party, before scowling, "Just the five of you? What can you do?"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "If the five of us were able to clear a path and arrive at your camp site, does that not speak for our strength?"

Kang Na blinked in surprise and said, "That is true, this valley is crawled with demons in all corners. You making it here should mean that you really have some skills! However, our camp is now facing a crisis that cannot be solved with skills alone!"

He then stared at the five of them and said, "Alright, rookies, I shall give you a chance! Our camp is seriously lacking of supplies, and our soldiers are required to stay and guard this camp site. So, you rookies go ahead and get us something to eat! Hmm, preferably meat, large pieces of meat! We have not been eating fresh meat for weeks!"

'Ding! Captain Kang Na has given you a quest: Supply for the Camp, accept or decline?'

Accepted.

Zhang Yang approached the Quartermaster Patna and asked, "Quartermaster, anything here for sale?"

Patna gave a good laugh and said, "Adventurer, you have good intuition, knowing that I have some here! Here, feast your eyes upon them!" the NPC reveal his interface for sales.

Holy god, there were really plenty of good stuffs in there! Alchemist recipes, a variety of blueprints for different professions such as

Blacksmiths, and also a variety of [Skill Books] for different professions. However, these items could not be bought with gold pieces, but a type of item called the [Demonic Stone].

These so-called [Demonic Stones] can be bought from the NPC, but the price is 1,000 pieces of [Demonic Stone Shards] for each stone. Zhang Yang tapped on the description of the [Demonic Stone] with his finger and immediately, the information popped right out: You must be equipped with the [Soldier's Badge] to be eligible to collect [Demonic Stones] or [Demonic Stone Shards] from the dead bodies of the demonic monsters within the Ravines of Coyotes. The higher the grade of the demon, the higher the rate of dropping a [Demonic Stone]!

Zhang Yang was curious, so he asked, "Quartermaster, how do we get [Soldier's Badges] then?"

"Only brave warriors who have earned our approval will be eligible to wear the [Soldier's Badge]! So, rookies, get the quests done well and you might gain the captain's approval!" Patnar explained.

"Silly Yu, are the stuffs here good?" Han Ying Xue asked.

The descriptions of [Skill Books] and [Recipes] were not visible to people who have not learned them yet. Therefore, the four ladies on his party could only stare at the names of those [Skill Books] and [Recipes] dumbly.

Zhang Yang nodded and told them, "It's worth the shot!"

The warrior profession [Skill Book] was named {Heroic Leap}! In his previous life, he did not acquire this [Skill Book] through any quests in this location, but he had acquired it through slaying a boss. This skill allowed a warrior to leap from one place to another, the effect was basically similar to {Charge}, but the only difference was that {Charge} could not travel through obstacles, while {Leap} could!

Of course, the obstacle must not be too tall.

"Let's go and get these NPCs some food to eat!" Zhang Yang flipped on his [mount].

Although each [Skill Book] was sold at only one piece of [Demonic

Stone], but judging from the fact that 1000 [Demonic Stone Shards] were required to exchange for only one [Demonic Stone], Zhang Yang knew that it was not going to be easy at all, and they had no clue on the drop rates of those [Demonic Stone Shards]!

Han Ying Xue and the girls once again summoned their [mounts] as well and rode out of the camp site with Zhang Yang.

[Supply for the Camp] (Difficulty: D-rank)

Description: The captain of the Ravine of Coyotes - Kang Na would like you to collect 200 pieces of Iron Back Rhinoceros leg meat! "Humph, it's been so long since we have tasted good meat, the thought of it is making us drool!" You can find Iron Back Rhinoceroses by the Swan Lake in the Ravine of Coyotes.

Completion: Collect the thigh meat of Iron Back Rhinoceros 0/200

Quest reward: Soldier's Badge

As the five of them came out from the valley, they arrived at the Swan Lake. Along the lake, there were many white rhinoceros chewing on the grass and drinking from the lake. Although their numbers weren't small, they were scattered across the entire area, making it difficult to round them up.

"The quest says that each of us must collect 200 pieces of thigh meats of the rhinoceros, I think it's best we split up!"

So they went out into the area in four different directions. Han Ying Xue, as always, tagged along with Wei Yan Er.

Although the Iron Back Rhinoceroses were quite large in size, but they were just regular Level 73 monsters, posing no threat at all to Zhang Yang. But as the number of monsters around was low, the effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] could not be triggered often. It could only function as a regular Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon!

Although the number of monsters in the area were abundant, the drop rate of the quest item was not high at all. It took about an hour for Zhang Yang to complete collecting all 200 pieces of thigh meat of the Iron Back

Rhinoceros! On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream were almost done with the quest as well, but Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue still had a certain number to collect in order for them to catch up.

Zhang Yang went on to help the two ladies finish up, and after another 20 minutes, everyone in the party had finally collected all 200 pieces of the meat. Then they headed back to the camp site ready to turn their quests.

"Very good, you are more capable than I thought, after all! But don't get ahead of yourselves, you people are just a tiny bit better than those rookies! Compared to my soldiers, you are still far behind!" Captain Kang Na had a holier-than-thou look on his face.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Supplies for the Camp, obtained 200,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have acquired an item [Soldier's Badge]!'

[Soldier's Badge] (Accessory, White)

Equip: allows you to collect [Demonic Stone Shards] and [Demonic Stone] from the demons you slay within the Ravine of Coyotes.

Level required: 70

"Rookies, you have completed one simple quest! Now, here's another! The reason remains unknown for the sudden increase of these foul demons around this area. Go and investigate!"

Captain Kang Na still had that arrogant look pasted on his face, ordering Zhang Yang and the others around with his loud, annoying voice.

'Ding! Captain Kang Na has given you a quest: Investigate the Demon's Territory, accept or decline?'

Wei Yan Er began to complain, "This NPC is so full of himself! I really want to beat the crap out of him!"

"It's just an NPC, it's all part of the script. If you want to beat someone, beat the designers from Dream Technology!"

[Investigate the Demon's Territory] (Difficulty: B-rank)

Description: The Captain Kang Na of the Ravine of Coyotes wants you to investigate the Demon's Territory, and find out the reason behind the increasing number of demons lurking around. The Demon's Territory is located approximately 20 kilometers from the Ravine of Coyotes.

Completion: Investigate any anomaly within the Demon's Territory 0/1

The five of them rode out on their own [mounts] towards the west. After traveling through a forest, a large camp site was spotted right in front of them. The camp site was about seven to eight kilometers in radius. The previous campsite was more like a hut compared to this!

Around the campsite, there was a large number of demons wandering around. Succubi prowled around the outside, showcasing their scantily clad, seductive bodies, with nothing but a piece of leather around their ample chests and tight spats that barely covered their butt cheeks. At their lower spines, devilish tails sprouted out. More importantly, compared to the previous succubi that they encountered before, these succubi were all elite monsters!

[Succubus] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 75

HP: 75,000

Defense: 400

Chapter 304: Investigation in the Demon's Territory

"Why aren't there any male succubi?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"..."

"Are they even called male succubi to begin with?"

"I think they are called incubuses..." Daffodil Daydream whispered to herself quietly.

"Hmm...In that case, could they just give birth to male succubus?" Persistent till the end, Wei Yan Er refused to let the topic die off without getting a satisfied answer.

Zhang Yang rustled his hair furiously. If he did not answer her question, it would only be hell for him as she will continue bugging the party with more and more stupid questions. He gave it serious thought and finally came up with a suitable answer. "I believe that this race is a peculiar, special one. I think that if the succubi gave birth to male offspring, they will inherit the father's race. The female offspring will be succubi by default!"

"Woah..." Wei Yan Er eyes glinted with joy at the newly acquired knowledge. However, she cocked her head and asked, "Why is that?"

"...How the hell would I know? What do I look like? The father of all succubi? Ask the game developers yourself!" Zhang Yang snapped impatiently.

Han Ying Xue patted Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "Ah...my sweet stupid Yu, now you know my pain!"

Zhang Yang pondered for a brief second and realized what she meant. She must have had to endure Wei Yan Er's insanely huge curiosity for several years! Zhang Yang smiled weakly as he understood her! Perhaps, the reason that Han Ying Xue went to England for her studies was not all because of Luo Yang Ming, could it be, that she was also running away

from her precious, demonic little cousin sister?!

Zhang Yang clapped his hands together and cried out. "Alright guys! Let's start the fight!" He then patted the white bear's head in a light, yet decisive manner.

The party now had a total of three battle mounts. Their total battle power had increased to a whole other level, especially with the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and [Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus]. Both of the battle mounts were Yellow-Gold tier! Their battle power were about the same as similarly leveled players with Gray-Silver equipment!

"Mmmm~ Human male! Play with me!" One of the succubus immediately engaged with the party and lashed the whip in her hand. She licked her red lips seductively, moaning at the same time as she gyrated her hips.

Whoo PISHH!

The whipped landed on Zhang Yang head, even though he thought that he actually dodged it.

"You sly minx! Taste my axe!" Wei Yan Er leaped forward and swung the giant axe in her hand.

With the combined attack from five players and three battle mounts, the succubus only fought for a few minutes before moaning in a great, loud ecstatic cry as she collapsed. Just as she fell defeated, a few [Silk Cloth] and copper coins burst out! There was even a piece of [Demonic Stone Fragment] which was swiftly looted by Wei Yan Er by her lightning speed snatching!

"Sigh! You girls don't know how to take care of your own image. At least make an effort to do so!" Zhang Yang sighed heavily and laughed. "I knew it, women are the brutal ones!"

"ahem Excuse me! I'm not a woman! I'm still a girl!" said Wei Yan Er as she stuck her tongue out.

Han Ying Xue, on the other hand, blew a kiss at Zhang Yang and winked. "I'm not a girl, but I'm not yet a woman. A maiden, I would say at best!"

A cold sweat dripped down from Zhang Yang forehead. What a woman! If the little girl does not what she's saying, it's best to leave it that way! Why can't you just keep your lecherous mouth shut for just a good d*mn minute!?

There were many monsters in the camp. As the party proceeded in deeper, they had killed so many monsters that they had already lost count of them. After a while, they finally arrived at a small castle. This was the central point of the entire Demon Territory. Instead of a regular, medieval like castle structure, this was more of a gigantic round pillar. With only one floor, it was not all that tall in height. Outside the entrance of the castle were four large flags that represented various demonic races. Under the flags were eight elite tiered Flame Hell's Devil.

[Flame Hell's Devil] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 600

These stone-like beings were naturally high in defense. The average Level 70+ Elite tier monster would have only roughly 400 Defense! Yet, they had 50% more than that! In addition to that, these devils had the {Burning Aura}, dealing 1000 Fire damage to every target within 40 meters of their vicinity. Luckily, the same aura effect would not stack upon each other!

"I think, that's where we're supposed to investigate!" said Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue cast a {Holy Shield} on Zhang Yang and winked at him. "Go on!" said Han Ying Xue with the expression that says "Go, be the meat shield!".

Reading the expression on her face like a book, Zhang Yang rolled his eyes and said, "You're already so brutal to me as a maiden. I wonder how orc-like you'll become when you become someone's woman!" As soon as he said that, he rode off to the monsters, leaving Han Ying Xue behind, sulking.

"KIIIII KIII!" One after the other, the monster reacted violently as Zhang Yang entered their aggro. Zhang Yang had only engaged one of them, but the other seven of them were also triggered. Stomping their stone feet into the ground, they fired flaming green-emerald projectiles at Zhang Yang. If Zhang Yang were to fight these monsters alone, like he always did, he would have evaded the attacks with a quick sidestep. However, now that he had brought the devilish Little Snow along, he would not let her have it her way, knowing that the woman was lazy and would definitely slack if given the opportunity. With that thought in mind, he took the hit head on, without dodging it.

{Burning Aura} could have only done minuscule damage to him. Even though the monsters had 1,400 physical attack damage, all eight of them combined would only damage Zhang Yang by around 10,000 damage. At most, if Han Ying Xue could not keep up the healing, he would only need to activate {Berserker's Heal} since it had only two minutes of cool down time. Might as well use it, or it will be wasted there in his hotkeys, collecting dust!

"As expected of Zhan Yu! Only the guild master could do something as brave as tanking all eight monsters at the same time! I believe that no other tanks could stand up to those monsters like the way Zhan Yu did!" Daffodil Daydream praised Zhang Yang.

Hearing what she said, Han Ying Xue budged in and laughed manically. "Oh, please. If you have a crush on our precious dummy there, just say it! We're all practically family now! You don't have to act all shy and bashful! Be straight! Be firm! Say it to his face!"

"N-N-No! I-I I er..." Stopping her attacks, Daffodil Daydream crouched down and hid her vermillion colored cheeks.

Zhang Yang frowned. "Woman! Control your words! Would it kill you to not be a jack-**ss* for just one day?"

"Why? Feeling heartbroken?" Han Ying Xue provoked Zhang Yang.

"Oh! Sister! You're such a thug! Thug life!" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang let out a loud sigh and turned back to focus on engaging the

monster. After a brief moment of silence, Zhang Yang spoke. "You know, when we were fighting the rhinoceros back there, I heard a male and female rhinoceros chatting about something. It went like this. The male rhinoceros said, "My love! Run away! The devilish snow has arrived!" and then the female rhinoceros said, "Who the hell does she think she is!? I will stab her myself!" and before the female rhinoceros could do anything, the male rhinoceros quickly said, "No! You must run! That devilish snow loves to 'blow the horns'. Hearing that, the female rhinoceros ran away."

Before Zhang Yang could continue on, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream were already snickering away. Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with her dumbfounded expression on her face. "Why did the female rhinoceros ran away?"

"Dummy! Shut up! Don't you dare..." said Han Ying Xue as she shook her fist at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang put up a smug and said, "Well, after the female rhinoceros ran for a while, she turned back only to see that the male rhinoceros from before had caught up with the female rhinoceros. Surprised, she asked the male rhinoceros, "Dearest, why did you ran away?" The male rhinoceros stared at the female rhinoceros with wide, unblinking eyes and said, "Not only does she love to 'blow horns', she also loves to 'squish the eggs'!"

Finish with his joke, Zhang Yang could not help but started laughing manically. It was a joke that he had read in the forums from a few days before.

Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream could not stop snickering madly, as they fought to hold back their laughter. Han Ying Xue on the other hand, was all flushed with anger. Only Wei Yan Er was the only person who had no reaction whatsoever. She only stared with a poker face at everyone else, wondering what Zhang Yang meant by 'blowing the horns' and 'squishing the eggs'.

At a monstrous speed, the party cleared all eight of the Flame Hell's Devil and proceeded to enter the weird, pillar-shaped castle. Once they entered, they were greeted with two dividing pathways. One led to the

right, and the other to the left. There was no direct path that led ahead.

"So...which one?"

Zhang Yang answered nonchalantly. "It's just a round shaped pathway. I'm sure we'll be heading to the exit at the end of the pathway. So...guys to the left, girls to the right. Let's go to the left, then!"

"RIGHT!" said all the girls at the same time. Just when they realized that. "Jinx!" and a laughter broke out.

Going by the majority, Zhang Yang followed the ladies and took the right pathway. Regardless, the pathway was not as clear as he thought it would be. Every 20 to 30 meters, there will always be a blue, round, and fat Floating Apparition. Well, there was nothing else that could be done besides killing it!

"Nyehehehe! That blue bum bum is cute! I want one!" said Wei Yan Er excitedly.

BOOM!

Just as the last drop of HP was drained from the blue Floating Apparition, it exploded and dealt 10,000 Shadow damage to everyone around.

Wiping away his sweat, Zhang Yang turned over and cocked his head.

"Still think it's cute?"

"...no." Wei Yan Er sulked.

Following the pathway, the party killed each and every single Floating Apparition and collected a large number [Demonic Stone Fragments].

However, the monsters here did not have a 100% chance of dropping the stone. The fragments had only a 10% drop rate from elite monsters! It was expected, as the normal monster only had less than a 1% [Demonic Stone Fragment] drop rate. On the side note, the complete [Demonic Stone] was nowhere to be seen. Zhang Yang guessed that only the bosses would drop that.

After following the parthway, the party arrived at a narrow, straight, and

short pathway that was only 10 meters long. After the narrow pathway ended, the party came up to another dividing pathway.

It was like there was another circle leading to another smaller circle. With no choice but to move down the semi-spherical pathway, the party hacked their way through and arrived at the end of the second pathway, only to find another pathway.

Wei Yan Er sulked and said, "I'm betting that after this route, there will be another circular pathway!". She guessed right. After walking for 10 meters, they had arrived at yet another circular pathway. The circular pathway got smaller and shorter after every end, and the party was getting impatient. After repeating the same path for seven times, they had finally arrived at a hall! On each of the walls in the rectangular hall had lit torches that illuminated the entire hall.

The place was extremely clean and spotless. On the floor, there was a gigantic magic circle and radiated with black rays in the shape of a hexagon. The light converged together and formed a black colored portal which spawned one elite tier monster and 10 normal tier monsters.

At the other end from where Zhang Yang and the party were standing, there was a humanoid creature that seemed to be made of a dark, gaseous substance. Though it was slightly dark, Zhang Yang could easily see that the aforementioned monster did not have any legs and was floating in the air, a few centimeters from the ground. Every time monsters walked out of the portal, the creature reached out with its right arm and engulfed the group of monsters in a black gas. The clump of cloud, carrying the monsters inside, floated away and flew out of the hall, from a hole in the ceiling.

[Dream Demon, Knightmare] (Yellow-Gold, Demon)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Han Ying Xue gritted her teeth angrily and screamed. "Here we are,

walking around in circles for the entire day, and yet the monsters could just fly out of here that easily!?"

The actual distance from the entrance to the center was only a few hundred meters. But by circling around endlessly, Zhang Yang and the party had traveled for at least 1.5 kilometers!

‘Ding! Quest: Investigate the Demon’s Territory has been completed. Please head back to Captain Kang Na to report your findings!’

The five of them exchanged a look after receiving the system notification.

"Should we...I don't know...try to whack the boss for a bit?" said Wei Yan Er.

"Hmm. It might be a little tricky since there will be monsters spawning continuously!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and said, "I think we should give it a try anyways. Alright, when the monsters spawn, clear all of them! You guys take on the elite monster. I'll kill all of the normal tier. I can easily wipe them all with {Horizontal Sweep}, if my Dark Enigmatic Sword triggers."

"Let's go!"

Chapter 305: Summoned Soldiers

Zhang Yang rushed to the front and entered the boss' attack range. The moment the boss reacted in a hostile manner, the battle started promptly.

With nothing with his bare fist, Knightmare thrust's his massive knuckles towards Zhang Yang. The massive fist cast a huge shadow that enveloped Zhang Yang. He quickly used {Block}.

As per the usual battle strategy, Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu went behind the boss and attacked from there. Daffodil Daydream and Han Ying Xue stood behind Zhang Yang, attacking with fire spells and healing.

Knightmare shared the standard attack interval of around 2 seconds. After the first strike, the second attack came 2 seconds later. This time, Zhang Yang could not use {Block}, and he could not evade the lightning speed fist coming at him. Zhang Yang had to take the fist, fully undefended.

'-7,812!'

A massive, painful attack landed, taking away a significant amount of HP and leaving a debuff on him at the same time;

[Shadow Radiation]: Cause 1,000 Shadow damage to all targets 10 meters around. Last for 10 seconds.

Zhang Yang screamed. "Get away from me! At least 10 meters!"

Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu immediately kept their distance from him. During their escape, Wei Yan Er had slipped in an insult, calling Zhang Yang something that meant swine king, leaving Zhang Yang madly infuriated.

Although Zhang Yang had responded fairly quick, and Wei Yan Er and Sun Yin Xue had escape swiftly, they had still sustained two damage ticks from the {Shadow Radiation}. Daffodil Daydream and Han Ying Xue only needed to step back a little and were still able to attack and heal. As for Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er, unless they were willing to take on the damage of {Shadow Radiation}, they would have to wait until the debuff

on Zhang Yang expires. Nevertheless, the damage from {Shadow Radiation} was quite painful.

Zhang Yang felt something was odd, and checked the battle log.

Knightmare's physical damage had dealt 7,812 Shadow damage to you.
(2,201 damage reduced, 994 damage absorbed)

The moment a physical attack deals Shadow damage instead of the usual physical damage, Zhang Yang's ultra-high Defense would lose its meaning! The boss' attack was similar to Knight class players. Knight class players would always deal holy damage!

That was why Zhang Yang felt that the boss' attack was odd. It would be wrong to say that it was a magic attack since it could be "blocked". However, it could not be considered a physical attack either since it had Shadow damage! That aside, Zhang Yang could not spent too long dwelling on this ridiculous mental argument. 2 seconds later, Nightmare punched Zhang Yang again, the {Shadow Radiation} on Zhang Yang had been refreshed to 10 seconds again!

With him constantly radiating shadow damage, there was literally nothing that Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er could do!

"Hey! Noobie tank! We can't fight like this!" Wei Yan Er complained bitterly.

"Then sit down and grow a tree or whatsoever! Didn't you learn {Spear of Obliteration}? Start using that to attack then!" Zhang Yang scolded.

Sulking, Wei Yan Er quietly complied, and started hurling spears, 10 seconds at a time.

7 to 8 seconds into the battle, the magic circle on the floor glowed brightly and a magic portal appeared. A group of demons walked out of the portal. The strongest monster from the group of demons was the Level 76, elite tier Flame Hell's Devil. The other weaker ones were just 10 normal demons such as imps, Floating Apparition, and even Succubi. Right this time, Nightmare should be casting a bubble to transport the demons outside of the hall. However, since the boss was engaging Zhang

Yang and his party, the demons were immediately sent into battle with Zhang Yang. The problem was, Han Ying Xue was currently generating the second largest aggro value as she was healing vigorously, prompting the demons to target her first.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Since the beginning, Zhang Yang had reserved {Horizontal Sweep} for the sole purpose to dealing with the group of demons. With a good swing of the Dark Enigmatic Sword, the blade shone brightly and dealt more than 4,000 damage to all. SHIING! The sword's effect was triggered and another blast of {Horizontal Sweep} was cast, killing all the normal tiered demons, leaving the elite Flame Hell's Devil alone standing.

With the huge aggro value generated by Zhang Yang, the Hell's Devil shifted its target from Han Ying Xue to Zhang Yang. Stomping violently, the Flame Hell's Devil thrust its stone fist at Zhang Yang. With burning flame enveloping the fist, the heat of it was felt even before it touched Zhang Yang.

"Ice! Brat! Get the Devil! Daffy! Deal with the boss!" Zhang Yang cried out.

Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er nodded their heads and did what Zhang Yang has asked. Ignoring the damage from Zhang Yang's {Shadow Radiation}, they took the damage and attacked the Hell's Devil. Instantly, the stress on Han Ying Xue sky rocketed to a point where she was swiveling from side to side so quickly that her boobs were slapping against themselves! She was moaning as if she was both in pain and ecstasy. Zhang Yang sighed to himself. This woman was a treasure. One of a kind. There's no one else like her.

Her moans were so loud, and indecent. She sounded like she was climaxing all the way, in both pain and pleasure. Zhang Yang was trying his utmost best to keep his shaft from standing at attention, while Daffodil Daydream and Sun Xin Yu were blushing so furiously that both their heads looked like oversized peaches. The only person not reacting to Han Ying Xue's moans was the innocent Wei Yan Er. At most, she had

stopped to look at her sister, cocking her head like a curious dog. After a micro second, she went back to cleaving the Devil, having lost interest in her cousin sister.

The fact that Han Ying Xue continued moaning without pause, finally blew off what remained of Zhang Yang's patience. He roared, "Hey! B*tchy Snow! Shut your mouth for just a second!"

Han Ying Xue grinned. "OooooOOoooOohhhh~
AAaaaAAaaaAHHhhh~~"

Zhang Yang facepalmed himself and finally sent fire against fire. "One more moan, and I'll personally put my pokey in your hokey!"

Zhang Yang's funny euphemism worked like charm, which instantly silenced Han Ying Xue as she rolled her eyes at him.

With only around 150,000 HP, the Flame Hell's Devil was unable to endure the focus fire from Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er. After 20 seconds, it was defeated. Promptly after killing the Devil, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er leaped away from Zhang Yang to reduce the pressure on Han Ying Xue.

The calm did not last for long. Since the portal will summon another wave of demons in just 30 seconds, the peace only lasted for just 7 to 8 seconds before another wave spawned. Zhang Yang resorted to the same tactic as before. Zhang Yang used {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} to clear the weaker monsters, while Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er dealt with the Devil. Though it may seem effective, Han Ying Xue was the only one who seemed to be having the short end of the stick. Without a break, she had jiggled her mounds here and there in order to cast all sorts of healing spells just to keep the team alive. In the end, her efforts had caused her to moan again. The team was forced to deal with her constant moaning.

Overall, the battle was extremely tough. Luckily, Han Ying Xue had good equipment, along with unparalleled management of her skills. Even though she had been constantly healing several members at once, her MP was far from dropping!

On the side, Daffodil Daydream was having a tough time dealing with

the boss. Alone, she was slowly pricking the boss with her spells.

By the time the boss' HP reached 80%, the summoned group of demons had been upgraded. From just one, the summoned group of demon had two elite tiered monsters now!

The party could handle one elite monster in 30 seconds. But with two of them at the same time, thing might be turn sour for the party.

Every time they killed one elite, the portal would send out another wave, leaving them with an extra elite to deal with! They would eventually be overwhelmed!

Without second thoughts, Zhang Yang spoke up.

"I'll kite all the monsters. All of you, take this chance to use the [Teleportation Scroll]! That portal is ridiculous. We're not here to kill the boss. The boss is here to kill us!"

"But what about you!?" everyone asked.

Well, it was good to know that they cared about him. Zhang Yang smiled and explained. "I have the {Shadow of the Void}. After you guys teleport away to safety, I'll activate the skill and escape as well!"

"Okay!" Everyone nodded and prepared their [Teleportation Scroll].

Zhang Yang swiftly used {Shield Wall} to buy some time for the girls to teleport away. After everyone had vanished from the battle field, Zhang Yang activated {Shadow of the Void} and escaped as well. 20 seconds of invisibility gave him time to run to absolute safety. There, he used his own [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to Thunderstorm Castle.

"How are we gonna kill the boss with the portal there!?" cried Wei Yan Er bitterly.

"Hm...Looks like the only we for us to kill the boss is to rely on the quest. Perhaps, there is a way..." said Zhang Yang. The poor white bear had sacrificed itself in the battle field. He could only summon his old skeletal horse and rode with the girls through Oz and into the Ravine of Coyotes. Within the hour, the party stood in front of Captain Kang Na.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Investigate the Demon’s Territory
Obtained 200,000 Experience points!’

"Haha! Greenhorns! You did well! The demon territory is a dreadful place! Not a single one from my troops was able to handle the quest at such speed! Well done indeed! You’re strength is worth acknowledging! Adventurer! You now have the qualifications to be one of us!" said Captain Kang Na with a warm smile on his face.

Zhang Yang gave an adventurer salute and said, "Respected Captain! We will put our bodies and souls to protect the future of humanity!"

Han Ying Xue cringed. "Dummy. That was too corny!"

"Yeah! That lame-*ss speech is so cringey!" said Wei Yan Er as she dramatically flailed around, as if her whole body was itching.

Though that sort of speech was indeed a little too inappropriate in the real world, Captain Kang Na was greatly moved by Zhang Yang. "That’s the kind of response I wanted to hear great warrior! You have the heart of a true fighter, brave and full of justice! Alright, based on the information you have collected, that magic circle has to be the transportation mechanism that the demons had constructed! No wonder the number of monsters will never go down! They would keep replenishing their numbers!"

The captain wavered a little. "This would be too dangerous. The situation has escalated to a whole other level. If the demons had set their base here, they could easily transport a large army and plunge Oz into a never-ending chaos! We have to move out now! We have to destroy the portal!"

‘Ding! Captain Kang Na has a quest for you: Sortie. Will you accept it?’

Without a second thought, Zhang Yang and his fellow members accepted the quest. They were all left dissatisfied, however, not being able to kill the boss.

[Sortie] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Assist Captain Kang Na in destroying the demon’s portal! Time waits for no man. The longer you wait, the stronger the

demons will be! You have to make haste!

Progress: Destroy the Demon's Teleportation Circle 0/1

Quest Reward: Summoned Soldier

[Summoned Soldier] (Usable)

Use: Summons 1 Elite Soldier of the Ravine of Cayote to assist you in battle! Last for 10 minutes. Cost 1,000 gold piece for every summon.

Charges left: 3/3

Level Requirement: 70

Bound upon acquire.

No wonder they could not defeat the boss earlier! Nightmare was the guardian of the magic circle! It was a quest-based boss! If the boss could be killed without accepting the quest, there would have been no point making a quest all around it!

Captain Kang Na lead four foot soldiers out of the camp and call out to Zhang Yang and his party. "Adventurer! It's now or never!"

He then summoned a grey horse for himself. The other foots soldier followed and summoned their own horses. When his followers were ready, Captain Kang Na gave a 'hiyah!' and rode off. Zhang Yang and his party did the same and followed Captain Kang Na with their own specific mounts. The party rode for 20 minutes and arrived at the demon's territory. Unlike Zhang Yang, Captain Kang Na did not choose to hide himself and had barged into the large encampment. With his huge battle axe in hand, the captain went on a killing spree like a true war general.

D*mn! This Gray-Silver NPC is so violent!

The party did not stop for even a second. With haste, the party had arrived at the center point of the camp and proceeded into the pillar-like castle. Since it had not been 5 hours, all the elite monster inside the castle had not yet respawned, providing the party a free flow to the center of the castle and to the stone hall with the magic circle.

Captain Kang Na stopped the party from proceeding, and spoke to

Zhang Yang. "Adventurer, I need your help in dealing with the demons. My soldiers and I will need some time to destroy the magic circle!"

"Roger. Leave the demons to us!" Zhang Yang thumped his chest.

"Let's go!" Zhang Yang led the four ladies to face Nightmare for the second time.

Without wasting a second, Captain Kang Na and his soldier went around the magic circle to do something that Zhang Yang had no clue about. His only wish was that they could, at the very least, stop the monsters from appearing from the portal.

Zhang Yang turned to Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er. "I need the both of you to fight together. Don't waste time, leave that snow b*tch to the healing!"

Han Ying Xue immediately rolled her eyes and sighed heavily. "Dummy! Do you really want to work me to death?"

In truth, it was not too difficult for Han Ying Xue to heal two more players in the same time. Priests always excelled at mass healing. Still, it was a troublesome situation.

On the other side of the battle, Captain Kang Na and his soldier had seemed to stop the portal from summoning monsters. It helped them wonders!

90%...80%... with everyone chipping in their strength, the boss HP was dropping down at a tremendous speed.

In the heat of battle, Zhang Yang had received a sudden call from Hundred Shots. "Zhan Yu! There's a problem with the Mining Cave!"

"What's wrong?" Zhang Yang asked. The Mining Cave was one of the guild's "gold mine". With a large number of excavation going on in these few days, the amount of mineral mined from the Mining Cave was able to accommodate the guild members request, and had increased the Territory Defense Level to Level 2! There was so much surplus that it was all placed in the Little Merchandize Shop to be sold! The profits were never as lucrative as the Territory itself, as it required players to constantly mine

the minerals in the cave. However, it couldn't be dismissed, since they could at least farm close to 1,000,000 gold coins worth of mining every day! That was the reason why Zhang Yang had paid close attention to Mining Caves.

"There's this guy who claims to be Yan Er's cousin brother! He said that he deserves to mine in the cave and wants to send some players in!" said Hundred Shots, with great uncertainty.

Zhang Yang was stunned. "Is that guy's IGN iLuvHanYingXue?"

"That's right!"

What a loser! That f*cking *sshole actually dared to show his face at the Mining Cave! If his face could get any thicker, he would be asking for a share in the Thunderstorm Castle!

"Ignore that wanker! If he dares to do anything, kill his sorry *ss!"

"Understood!" said Hundred Shots without any objection. He sounded eager. Perhaps, Luo Yang Ming had went overboard with his arrogance and had pissed off Hundred Shots. Since he had claimed to be someone from Wei Yan Er family tree, Hundred Shots had been holding back. However, now that he had gained the approval from Zhang Yang himself, Hundred Shots could unleash his arrows!

Chapter 306: Heroic Leap

The battle between Knightmare continued on. This time however, the party stayed strong, while the boss was close to death!

10%!

"SHI MA LE SHI TU!" The boss suddenly cried out in a loud screech. Its body suddenly expanded out like a balloon.

'Ding! Knightmare has entered Berserk state. All damage increased by 50%!

"The boss has gone berserk! Kill it quick!"

Upon entering the Berserk state, Knightmare had gained immeasurable strength. With a single punch, Knightmare could deal more than 12,000 damage on Zhang Yang. Not even Han Ying Xue, the super healer could balance out the damage! As a resort, Zhang Yang had to unleash all his ultimate skills. {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Rearm}, Clear Lotus's {Substitute}, and the set-equipment set effect were all used and only then, Zhang Yang was able to survive and kill Knightmare. By then, Captain Kang Na and his soldier had just finished with the portal. It looked like, the quest's secret completion requirement was to kill the boss!

CRACK!

With a thundering crack, the magic circle on the ground shattered into millions of particles and dispersed into the air.

"Well done adventurers! You have performed splendidly!" said Captain Kang Na as he clapped his hands to congratulate the party.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Sortie. Obtained 500,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: Summoned Soldier!'

"Adventurers! Though the magic circle may have been destroyed, this place still remains dangerous! I urge you all to leave this place immediately!" said Captain Kang Na. He then turned around and left

Zhang Yang all by themselves.

"Hmph! What a useless NPC! Look at how he left us here after completing the quest!" said Zhang Yang with a laugh.

"Let's take a look at the loots! Loots!" said Wei Yan Er as she went on to pick up the battle loots.

[Poison Flame Chest Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +235

Strength: +94

Dexterity: +217

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 70

"Hey Ice Cube, you want this? It doesn't have any set-equipment effect, at least it's better than the one you're wearing now!" said Zhang Yang.

"No!" said Sun Xin Yu coldly without glancing at him.

"Noob tank! What are you planning to buy for me as a birthday present?" said Wei Yan Er out of the blue.

"Hmm?" Zhang Yang pointedly turned away.

"Present! Birthday! Present!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Ah...that. Well, it's a present after all. If I tell you what it is, it would not be a present anymore! It should always be a mystery until you receive it!"

Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue disgruntledly. "Tch. Well then, what sort of mystery would it be?"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and sighed heavily.

[Energy Crystal] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +59

Strength: +24

{Unidentified}

Equip-Effect: Absorbs 46 damage on attack.

Equip-Effect: Creates a 1% chance to cast an {Energy Shield} when an attack is received. {Energy Shield} will disappear after 30 seconds, or after absorbing 5,000 damage.

Level Requirement: 70

"This sh*t is good. Finally, I can change my hundred-year-old necklace!" Zhang Yang helped himself and kept the necklace for himself.

[Boots of the Crimson Gem] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +118

Intelligence: +108

Spirit: +47

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 70

Both Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream insisted on maintaining their set-effects, so the boots would be placed for sale in the Little Merchandize Shop. So far, the shop had been supplying 60% of all Yellow-Gold equipment in the market. In other words, almost 60% of every player's Yellow-Gold equipment had come from Zhang Yang and his guild members! In a way, it was an extremely efficient way of building a good reputation in the market and obtaining a good, long term profit.

After clearing all three Yellow-Gold equipment, the rest of the remaining equipment were Gray-Silver, which were all ignored by the party and went in straight into Zhang Yang's inventory. What remained were two other items that were not equipment. They were two solid, black, glowing stones. The complete [Demonic Stones]!

In total, they had two completed [Demonic Stones] and 1,892 [Demonic Stone Fragments]. With that amount, they could only purchase three skill

books.

With no intention of purchasing the skill books just yet, Zhang Yang said, "We should now head out of this place and grind at the camp area. No matter what, we should farm at least 3,000 [Demonic Stone Fragment] to allow everyone here to get themselves a skill book!"

"Ok!"

The five of them then went their separate ways and took 3 hours to farm a total of 3,000 [Demonic Stone Fragment]. After trading them for 3 completed [Demonic Stone], they went back to the Ravine of Coyote to purchase five skill books for everyone.

[Heroic Leap]: Leap far and high into the air, across all obstacles and towards the distant enemy! With great force, you can land on the ground and stun the target, and everyone 5 meters around it for 3 seconds.

Attack Range: 20 meters.

Cost: 50 Rage.

Cool Down Time: 2 minutes.

Compared to {Charge}, {Heroic Leap} could not only stunned the target for a longer duration, but was an AoE skill! The only disadvantage was that the skill would cost a large amount of Rage instead of generating it!

Wei Yan Er had also selected {Heroic Leap} as well. Everyone was extremely pleased after purchasing their respective class skills.

Just when Zhang Yang wanted to asked the ladies to farm for more [Demonic Stone] to purchase a few more recipes, he received a distress call from Hundred Shots.

"Zhan Yu! That guy, "iLuvHanYingXue" brought his own people to raid the Mining Cave!"

At first, Zhang Yang was stunned. But then, he started laughing. Did he really think that it would be a great idea to raise his sword against Lone Desert Smoke? He shook his head and said, "Kill them all. Leave no survivors!"

"Will do!"

"Hey dummy, what's going on?" asked Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang thought about it, and decided to inform Han Ying Xue about the situation in the Mining Cave. "Your precious Luo Yang Ming wants a share of our Mining Cave!"

This time, Wei Yan Er frowned. Annoyed and disgruntled, she broke out into a rant. "What a greedy bastard! Just when I thought he was already taking up too much of the company, he also wanted to sully his hands in 'God's Miracle'! I cannot let him continue any longer! I will personally go back and give him a piece of my mind!"

Without waiting for any response, Wei Yan Er tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and went away. With her gone, the party had no interest to continue grinding and followed her back to Thunderstorm Castle.

The Mining Cave was located at the west of Tanilla Forest. It would take roughly 30 minutes by mount. By the time Zhang Yang had arrived to the location, the area outside the Mining Cave was filled with dead bodies of random players. Hundred Shots and a few more Lone Desert Smoke players' name tag were dyed in red. So red, that they would already be winning the lottery!

"Ah! You had finally came, my beloved cousin sister!" Just when Wei Yan Er showed herself in the Mining Cave, Luo Yang Ming had appeared out of nowhere and approached Wei Yan Er with an enraged, infuriated expression on his face. He pointed at Hundred Shots angrily and yelled, "Yan Er! Expel that wanker out of the guild! Just who does he thinks he is?! Doesn't he knows that I'm your cousin brother? How dare he raise his voice at me! He even stopped me from going into the Mining Cave to mine some minerals! Pui! (sound of spitting), just which dog pound did he crawl out from!? How dared he did not recognize a man from the same house!?"

Instead of explaining, Wei Yan Er puffed her cheeks angrily and screamed at Luo Yang Ming from the top of her lungs. "You're the one who crawled out from the dog pound! I have told you a gazillion times!

Zhan Yu is the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke now! Not me! Don't ever use my name to justify your nefarious actions!"

"Hmm? Cousin sister?" Luo Yang Ming was genuinely surprised, though only for a second. He then smiled, or rather grinned evilly and said, "Don't coy with me! I know that Lone Desert Smoke is being sponsored by us, the Silky Soft Holdings, and you were the guild master before that anyway, no? I know that you're only using Zhan Yu as a puppet! Honestly, you're just using him! The real master mind behind all of this is you! You control everything from behind the scenes! Am I right?!"

Even a pig would be smarter than this idiotic swine! No, calling him one would be a disgrace to all swine in the world! It does not take a rocket scientist to correctly figure out how lucrative the profits from a Territory were! In truth, Zhang Yang was holding to a mother hen that would only lay golden, no! Platinum-Golden eggs! However, how much was it worth, exactly? No one had clearly calculated. It was one of the uncertainties that a Territory had. Other factors like an attack from other guild, a raid from a wave of monsters, or perhaps the shutting down of 'God's Miracle itself, could affect it! However, as long as Zhang Yang possessed a Territory in his hands, the profit will be on par, or higher than a multi-million dollar company!

Unable to hold down his anger, Zhang Yang rode his white bear and went forward. "To the man named Luo, your mother is summoning you back for dinner!"

"Oh please, my mother—" Luo Yang Ming turned around and bit his tongue. He wanted to return the insult until he saw it was Zhang Yang. He opened his eyes wide and glare at Zhang Yang. "You rotting, stinking barbarian! This is not a place for you to talk! Know your place, peasant! F*ck off!"

He then turned to Wei Yan Er and switched to a politer tone to talk to her. "Yan Er, we are cousins! Relatives! That guy? He's nothing but a stranger! How could you let a stranger manage something important like a Territory!? This brother does not fear hardship! Just let Zhan Yu transfer all the ownership of all the Territories to me! I'll personally handle all the

management! Only blood-relatives can be trusted!"

Other than Zhang Yang, almost everyone present at the scene were frowning furiously. This man's face was so thick that no digger in the world could get to his epidermis layer in a lifetime! His narcissistic, self-praising, arrogant, shameless, and egoistical behavior was off the charts! It was already beyond human comprehension and could be framed as a work of art! A talent worthy to be recorded in the Guinness World Book of Records!

"I ain't got time for you! Hmph!" With such level of greed and egoism, Wei Yan Er had nothing to say to him and turned to Hundred Shots. "Uncle Hundred! Next time you see this douche bag! Feel free to kill him! Do not mind me! You do not have to worried about me!" With that, she turned away and got some distance between the two of them.

"Wait! W-Wait!" cried Luo Yang Ming. He then turned to Han Ying Xue and beg for her help. "Please, little snow, help me get some sense into little Yan Er's head!"

Without even responding to his plea, Han Ying Xue dragged Zhang Yang and said, "Let's go! Let's go grind some levels!"

Zhang Yang nodded and the whole party went away. Luo Yang Ming started to give chase, but Hundred Shots shot a volley of arrows and killed the man. By the time he revived and came back, Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and the rest of them were already long gone.

His expression gradually turned sour. He knew that Wei Yan Er's 18th birthday was just around the corner. This little brat was always threatening that she would reset the main company's accountings after inheriting the company at her coming of age. No doubt, she would wipe these parasites off the board! Luo Yang Ming was not as stupid as played out to be. At the very least, he knew that when judgement day comes, his own family's little factory will be forced to close down!

After so long, Luo Ming Yang had already gotten used to the high life. It would cost him his entire integrity to go back to where he crawled from. He had always mingled along with his foxy minx and bastardic b*tches,

and each and every one of them had been addressing him as the boss. Without the factory backing him, how could he continue living the same lifestyle?

He would never allow such things to happen to him! NEVER!

TL Note:

1Red – According to Chinese culture. The color red signifies prosperity and good luck.

Chapter 307: At Her Doorstep

A few days went by, and Fatty Han and Lost Dream had managed to get themselves to Level 70. Zhang Yang then proceed to recruit them into his small team to make nine men and ventured throughout Oz to search for every available quest. The problem, was that they could not find any quests that rewarded them handsomely. Most of the quests they found were the repetitive types that required them to kill monsters and submit items. A few days went by like this and by January the 16th, Zhang Yang was the first to reach Level 73!

As expected, no matter how fast his killing speed was, it would take him roughly 8 days to gain a level! To get to Level 80 would take another 2 months! By then, the Professional League would already have started!

For the past two days, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not acting as themselves. After enduring the urge to ask, Zhang Yang finally caved in and broke the ice.

"Hey! What's with the two of you!? Usually you're all so noisy and chirpy like a broken piano! What's gotten into you two?" Zhang Yang asked.

"It's nothing! Just, not feeling too happy!" said Wei Yan Er lazily.

"Why are you feeling down?" Fatty Han start to stick his nose.

"You wanna know?"

"Yeah!"

"You really wanna know?"

"Yeah! Yeah!"

"...Not telling!"

Fatty Han facepalmed himself. Fatty Han tried his best to coax Wei Yan Er to reveal the reason. She did eventually, only after she had her fun messing with Fatty Han. After sulking for a long time, she finally smiled a little. She smiled sadly and said, "Lately, there this problem going on with the Silky Soft Holdings. Rumors were spreading about the quality of the

material that we use for our products. The rumors went on about how we have no quality control and so on! They are basically saying that we are cutting corners and cheating on our customers!"

"So, how do you, as the capitalist of the company, justify yourself?" said Lost Dream as he posed like a person leading a revolution.

"Hmph. Please, we do not need to justify ourselves. Without us, people would already be losing their jobs!" snorted Wei Yan Er, disgruntled.

Zhang Yang interjected. "What's the damage?"

"Bad." Said Han Ying Xue. "There were simultaneous reports stating defects in the products from all over the places! Either we really do have problems, or someone is out there trying to slander our company!"

"What will all of this lead to?" asked Fatty Han.

Han Ying Xue raised a finger and said, "Firstly, once there are too many negative rumors spreading out in the public, markets, retailers, direct sales, and distributors will reject our product and will refuse to sell our product in the market! Once there are too many stagnant sales, the company will suffer from a great lost, since we could not reach the product turnover sales! All of these will probably stop us from getting financial support from the banks!"

She then raise a second finger. "Second! When the sales goes south, our company stock will plummet. If the numbers goes down too much, parties will be trying to get their hands on our company! Without the help from the banks, the company ownership might fall to others!"

"Is there a counter measure for this?" asked Zhang Yang.

"The office is already cracking their heads trying to solve this. GRAHHH! It's so frustrating!" said Wei Yan Er as she ruffled her long hair. "Dammit! I was about to take over the company and all these problems are popping up! Dammit it all!"

If the topic was anything about the gaming world, all of them, except for Fatty Han would definitely have something up their sleeves. However, when it's about business in the real world, none of them had any clue.

Terms and jargon like revenue, turnover rate would definitely be confusing to them! Even with nine brains in the party, there was nothing that they could do to help solve the problem. In the end, they had to push this matter to the back of their heads and continue on grinding.

The team split up, having completed the quests. It was much more efficient, this way. Just when Zhang Yang started grinding monsters alone, he received a call from Yu Li.

"Zhang Yang, please come over to my house tonight. Ah...right. I found myself a new home. Everything will be moved over in just two more days!"

"Hey! Why didn't you tell me sooner! I could always come over and help out!"

"There's no need for you to work up a sweat. There are always people to hire for this kind of job. Oh, and one more thing. My mother wants to meet you!"

Zhang Yang gulped. "...Does your mother know about us?"

"Yeah...it's my fault. I misplaced the pills and my mother found them. You know what!? It's your fault to begin with! Why can't you just use rubbers like everyone else?!"

"Oh come on! Teacher! Using a rubber would only get in between the two of us! There's a third party getting in between us! No! Trojan can find himself another b*tch to get inside. I ain't wearing one!"

"...Oh please, you just love it raw don't you. And you love to finish it inside. Inside! Hmph!"

"Nyehehe. Jokes aside, what time do you want me to come over?"

"Hmm...7pm in the evening should be fine! Come earlier if you can! We'll be waiting for you to start dinner together. Get a pen and write down my new address. Don't end up at the old house!"

"Okay!"

Zhang Yang continued to game until it was 5pm before logging off. Usually, Zhang Yang and Yu Li would always do it in a hotel. He had never

has the chance to meet and greet her mother in person. Since this was going to be his first time stepping up to her front door to meet her mother, he started to grow anxious and nervous, wondering if he was just meeting Yu Li's mother...or his future mother-in-law!

Before heading to Yu Li's new home, Zhang Yang took some time to buy some expensive healthcare products as a gift.

Taking the chance, Yu Li had not spared any expenses in buying a new home. She had found herself a good neighborhood in the uptown. There, the security of the new estate was tight. They did not allow taxis to enter the premises and Zhang Yang has to reveal Yu Li's home address and the security had to make a call to Yu Li herself to confirm his identity, before allowing Zhang Yang to enter.

As expected of the higher end apartments, even the elevators were all pimped out, with music and fancy decoration going all out! After enjoying the ride up to the highest, 19th floor, Zhang Yang walked for a little before ringing Yu Li's doorbell.

The person welcoming him in was Yu Li herself. Curiously staring after seeing the bags that Zhang Yang carried, she giggled and asked, "What's with those?"

"Hmm. More gifts, better impression!"

Yu Li laughed at his logic and pulled him in. She then closed the door behind Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was already impressed by the apartment itself, but he was even more impressed to see her new home. Compared to her old home, this was a huge upgrade from the small trailer size home, to a massive palace! Her house was 180 square meters! The apartment had 3 bed rooms and two toilets. Compared to her old home, this was a luxurious mansion! A true home for a princess! Still, the emptiness of the home had given the illusion that the place was gigantic, since they had just moved in and had not brought in the furniture.

After getting himself ready, he entered the house and saw a middle-aged woman leaving a room. When she saw Zhang Yang, she immediately scowled, gazing at him up and down.

Zhang Yang did not respond much, since it was a typical response of a mother seeing a man taking the hands of her daughter. He then proceeded to address her in a polite manner. However, to his surprise, Yu Li's mother did not acknowledge him. During dinner, she only had a plain, sulky face. After only five minutes into dinner, she pushed her chair away and went to her bed room, leaving Zhang Yang in an extremely awkward situation.

Yu Li entered her own room and came out and sat beside Zhang Yang. Annoyed, Zhang Yang asked, "What's wrong with your mother? Why was she so cold towards me?"

Yu Li laughed and scooted closer to Zhang Yang. In an extremely seductive voice, she said, "If you knew that your own daughter was under the care of a sugar daddy, what would you think of the man?"

Zhang Yang's heart sank. "You even told you mother about that?!"

"Hey, think about it. With that expensive medical cost and this house, how could I make up an excuse like that? Before my mother found out about the pills, I actually lied that it was all sponsored by the university." said Yu Li as she gave him a certain condescending look.

Zhang Yang could not help but dripped cold sweat. If he knew any bastard would actually take in his own daughter like that, he would take up the kitchen knife and fight with him to the death. Zhang Yang scratch his hair and cocked his head. "Well...you have a point there. At least I got off lightly, since your mother didn't kick me out of the house!"

"Hmph. At least you're smart enough to know that."

Yu Li pushed herself close to Zhang Yang and picked at his ear lobe. "I've yet to mention that you were once my student! I bet that she'll be raging on if she knew about it!"

Aroused, Zhang Yang had to push Yu Li aside and said, "Hey, stop it. Don't go too far. It's not just me who would be in trouble. This is your own house!"

"Relax. My mom has been having trouble sleeping lately and will always take sleeping pills before going to bed. Don't worry. I made sure she had

taken her pills just now."

Sneaky as a snake, Yu Li's other hand had slithered under the table and had made its way to Zhang Yang's pants. There, with a gentle caress, she unzipped his pants, pulled down his underpants and let loose his "rattlesnake". A mature woman always had her ways. After the two of them have experienced their world rocking, heaven thundering moments, Yu Li had fully embraced her nature and was behaving like a true, passionate lover. With a naughty expression on her face, she placed both her hands and played with his hardening shaft in her soft, gentle hands.

"Hehehe! Looks like little Zhang Yang is being more honest than Zhang Yang himself!" Yu Li teased.

Zhang Yang had to suck in a deep breath. Her movements were so gentle yet, they had lit a vigorous flame in his heart and had stolen his breath. The woman beside him was truly breath-taking. Her red, burning lips looked like they crave for his. Her eyes, expressed the loneliness she felt when Zhang Yang was not with her. As her body burned with the desire for his touch, Zhang Yang could no longer tame the fire in him and reached out with his arms around Yu Li. He then pulled her closer to him and said, "Teacher...You will always belong to me!"

"I...Will always be yours!"

Yu Li bent down. She pulled her hair back and lowered her head, taking his member into her supple lips, playfully toying with her tongue.

Zhang Yang pulled his head back at the sheer impulse that hit him. With a forceful push, Zhang Yang cupped her head closer to him, and watched as his prideful organ disappeared between her lips. After a passionate lick, Yu Li pushed herself away and looked into Zhang Yang eyes. Zhang Yang helped her to her feet and he planted his lips onto her burning lips. Satisfied, Zhang Yang was ready to take this loving action to the next stage. However, Yu Li stopped him.

"Shower!" said Yu Li as she stopped him from unbuckling her own pants. With a hand around the hilt of his 'sword', she pulled him to the bathroom like a dog by its leash.

Zhang Yang kicked open the bathroom door and the two of them started to kiss each other frantically as if they were long lost lovers. In an instant, the two of them rushed to help each other remove any fabric that remained on them. Clothes, pants, undergarments were flying everywhere and until the last two pieces of clothing were removed, the two lovers embraced each other tightly. Zhang Yang struggled, but eventually manage to turned the shower on with a foot.

Shush...

"Ohh..."

As the warm water ran down their bare backs, mixing with their bodily fluids, both Zhang Yang and Yu Li gave out the most satisfied moans, as they embraced. Hugging her from behind, he placed his large hand on her chin and pulled Yu Li to face him. Like a puppy that had finally saw her master, there was the burning desire flaming in her eyes. Zhang Yang planted a kiss and stroked her wet hair over her ears.

After ravaging each other for some time, they heard a loud thump of the door and the figure of a person entering the toilet. While running, she was struggling to remove her jeans and said, "Hmm? Li Li, why would you take a shower before finishing your dinner? Why, today, I—"

The person that had just barged into the bathroom was none other than Yan Fei Fei. Before she could finished her sentence, she had already caught sight of the other two, who were locked together in the shower room, firmly connected at the hips. Stunned and abash, she quickly stood up from the toilet seat and rushed to pick up her jeans. She quickly realized it was a bad idea, so Yan Fei Fei tried her utmost best to remain calm as she squeezed her thick thighs back into the extremely slim-fitting jeans. All three of them were completely silent. Neither one of them had anything to say. Abashed and ashamed, Zhang Yang was flushed red. Yu Li, on the other hand, had sneakily, silently, pulled herself out of Zhang Yang, and had turned around to hide her face in Zhang Yang's chest.

After what seemed to be an eternity, Yan Fei Fei had successfully pulled her pants up and had scurried out of the bathroom as if it was on fire.

Still, having her leaving the room, Zhang Yang regained his composure and the mood to continue. Being a man, it was not big of a deal if he was seen in the act. It's not like he would lose anything else! He lifted her face up and whispered. "Teacher, I think she has left the bathroom, let's continue!"

"Continue? Are you daft?!" Yu Li rolled her eyes. She quickly turned off the shower and left the room to wipe herself dry. Still wet, Zhang Yang laughed. "Hey! It was you who wanted to do it in the first place! I wanted to have dinner and you wanted to have Zhang Yang Junior!"

Picking up the clothes on the floor, Yu Li ignored Zhang Yang and continued to put on her own clothes.

"Hm. Why is she here?" said Zhang Yang curiously. Yan Fei Fei did lived together with Yu Li previously, but what was the reason for her to also live with Yu Li here?

"Oh. That. Well, I had an extra room. Might as well let her stay in it. Fei Fei is a good girl. I can't have her staying alone!"

"Did she know about us?"

"Well, she does now."

Chapter 308: Something Is Amiss?

"What on earth are the both of you..." Yan Fei Fei shook her head in disappointment and disgust.

"You just can't keep it in your pants, could you!" said Yan Fei Fei to Zhang Yang. He shrugged.

"And you! Some dry spell, huh! You'll literally impale yourself on any guy you see! I couldn't...just...you should be ashamed of yourself! I, am ashamed for you! Get it together, girl!"

"Hey. You came in without knocking! I should be the one going off on you!" said Yu Li refusing to back down.

Zhang Yang wanted no part of this. He was feeling famished. He left the scene and went to the dinner table to help himself.

"Fei Fei, I remember you saying that you're going to shoot a video or something. Why are you back so early?" asked Yu Li.

"Tch." Yan Fei Fei clicked her tongue disgruntledly. "Well, sorry for disturbing you two love-birds in your precious moments!"

"Video?" Zhang Yang grinned playfully. "You aren't doing those, cheap, amateur kind of...hmm...how do I put this delicately, French style, adult, action romance video?"

"Well, not the way you said it. At least you got one part right. It's definitely not for kids." Yan Fei Fei nodded.

"Sigh..." Yu Li sighed and quickly spoke up before Zhang Yang got misled. "Fei Fei is currently working for an undergarment company. She's the model for their latest products."

"Oh..." said Zhang Yang. But as he thought of it, Yan Fei Fei did have an excellent body of a woman. She was definitely more than qualified to be a model for an undergarment company. Her voluptuous body would showcase the fabric wholesomely. Naturally, if it was Yu Li dressed in a black, laced bra, coupled with tiny thongs, she would be looking badahonkas! He could already picture her, walking down the runway in

high heels, jiggling her semi-nude body all around! It would definitely be a super erotic scene that would send every man covering their bleeding noses with tissues!

In truth, Zhang Yang had already seen her in it! It was back when they were having a role-playing session in the hotel room!

Putting the blissful memory aside, Zhang Yang had a sudden realization. "Didn't you use to work in a bank? Why did you run off to be an underwear model? Is the pay better, there?"

"Sigh..." Yan Fei Fei let out a long and tiresome sigh. "It was all because of that d*mned robbery case back then! After that incident, my colleagues had been giving me strange looks! They thought that I was already violated by that robber. They think that I am a used woman. An old abalone, a spoiled oyster!"

"We get what you mean..." said Yu Li.

"It's a rich area so...ANYWAY! Since they thought I was...that kind of woman, men were actually trying to get a little "something, something" from me!" said Yan Fei Fei as she gestured furiously at her groin. "There's this time when the bank manager himself asked me for a quickie! What the hell! If I didn't reject him forcefully, I would really be a rotten fish, a broken doll, a---"

"Oh! Come on!" Yu Li stopped her again.

"So, here I am now. I just couldn't take all the harassment in the bank. I left no sooner after the manager himself rejected my application to be reassigned to another branch."

Zhang Yang understood immediately. Perhaps, the time she quit the job was when Yan Fei Fei came back late at night when she encountered them in the bedroom, putting pussy in the playpen.

"You still haven't explained why did you came back so early." Yu Li came back to the topic.

"Oh. There was a problem in the company. The shooting was postponed and I had to call it early!" Yan Fei Fei facepalmed herself. "Aiyaya...I'll be

d*mned if my eyes grow something! I am both shock and disgust! Just today alone, I had witnessed two unwanted scene! The first one was really, disgustingly, shocking!"

"You little minx! Are you begging to be smacked!"

Zhang Yang was curious about that and asked. "Hmm? What, or whom did you saw? What's so surprising about going twenty-toes with someone?"

"Earlier today, when I received the notice about the shooting's cancellation, I went to the dressing room, and was ready to pack up and leave! Who knew, when I was halfway changing, I heard the moans of a pervert! What could I do? The only thing I could do there was to hide in the locker!" said Yan Fei Fei excitedly.

"Hmm? Let me guess, was it the same guy that you have been complaining about peeping at you with that perverted glare?" asked Yu Li.

"Bingo!" Yan Fei Fei snapped her fingers. "That Luo guy, was someone remotely related to the company's boss, and he's been treating the place like his own home! That S.O.B is always hiding at some corner, seizing every chance to disturb us models! And I kid you not, there are so many gullible ones, like you said Zhang Yang, putting their pussies in the playpen."

There was a sudden tick in his brain. Undergarment company, relative of the boss, Luo?

Zhang Yang could not just dive into the pool. He tried to test it out before going all cannon ball with it.

"Could you, perhaps be, and I'm just speculating here, working for a company called Silky Soft Holdings?"

"Yes! Oh my god. You didn't strike me as the man who would know about Silky Soft! Well aren't you a swell guy, you must be taking my girl Yu Li to shop for high-quality bras!" said Yan Fei Fei, both curiously and surprised.

It was a bull's eye. She was talking about Luo Yang Ming!

Yan Fei Fei continued her story. "That Luo guy was always bugging me as well. I really can't stand him. That's why I hid in the locker. In the end, I saw something that I shouldn't have seen. The man had his arms around the manager herself. And my god, the two of them were so close and passionate. I had to look away! I was so shocked that I couldn't say a word!"

Zhang Yang snickered under his breath. "That's perfectly normal. You said it yourself! That man is a huge, raging pervert!"

"That's not the main point! Do you know who was the manager?" Yan Fei Fei rolled her eyes before continuing. "She was also a relative of the boss! They don't share the same surname, she's Liu and he's Luo. Even though they were not from the same family, they are still cousins!"

Both Zhang Yang and Yu Li were shocked. Yu Li gasped and Zhang Yang twitched a little. Zhang Yang had never expected Luo Yang Ming to be so ruthless that he would lay hands on his own cousin sister!

"Those two cousins were kissing and hugging so passionately and then I overheard something that I shouldn't. This is so much like those dramas on TV. They were saying something about splitting the property when the boss passes away! I was so afraid that my knees went weak! I couldn't even breathe properly then. I had to cover my mouth. I was so scared that they might do something to keep me silent if they found out I overheard it all!" said Yan Fei Fei. Zhang Yang immediately noticed that she was trembling.

"Correct me if I'm wrong. But you're saying that they were planning to seize the family property?"

"From the tone of their conversation, I'd say, yes!"

Zhang Yang was highly intrigued. "What exactly did they say?"

"I'm sorry. They were too busy talking about it that I couldn't hear much from their conversation. Those guy were doing it so hard that the slut, I mean...that Liu girl was already crying for the lord's name that even he was getting annoyed by it. How could I bear to continue listening after that?"

Zhang Yang was already busy thinking about this sudden news. Were the recent rumors about Silky Soft Holdings all, Luo Yang Ming's doing? But...Luo Yang Ming's ultimate goal was to seize Silky Soft Holdings, so why would he cause it to lose its stock value? It did not make any sense!

After thinking of many ways to make the connections, he got lazy and decided to relay the news to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er and remind them to be extra cautious about that Luo Yang Ming.

Coincidentally, Yan Fei Fei had not had her dinner and the three of them grabbed more plates and cutlery. After filling their tummies with food and alcohol, Zhang Yang prepared to leave, but was quickly tugged on by Yu Li to stay over.

"Hey...Mr. Zhang, could you have me as your lover as well? Hick" Yan Fei Fei was already drunk. Her face was flustered red and her eyes were unfocused.

Zhang Yang not paying attention to Yan Fei Fei. However, he felt a sudden pain in his wrist. It was sudden and painful since she was digging in with her nails. He quickly replied, "Calm down woman, how could you blatantly steal someone's husband right in the face of your own sister!"

"Hick Li Li is your second roomie, I could be your third!" Yan Fei Fei was so intoxicated that she ignored the killing glare of Yu Li and continued. "Do you know why during ancient times, they called their wives by their room numbers instead? That's because, one wife, one room, geddit?!"

"Yeah I get that. My answer is no. I may not be the prime example of a man, but when I want a woman, I want, a woman. Uno. At least, if I wanted more, it has to be someone I really like. That, or she would just be like someone from the red-light district." Zhang Yang waved his hands a big no, as if signaling to a plane that it was a no-landing zone, and dragged Yu Li into her bedroom and locked the door. Who knows, when they were asleep, some other woman might crawl in, or perhaps, slither into the room and make things a whole lot worse!

"Hmph!" Yu Li smirked. But behind that fake smile, lay an authentic joyful smile. "At least you're a good man. To reward you for your loyalty, I

shall see what I can do about this!"

Zhang Yang smiled like a baby and tackled Yu Li onto the bed. "You may not know the inside of my head. But you can go ahead and enjoy yourself as I wrestle with a man's instinct."

It did not take long, for the room to be filled with the cries and moans of Yu Li.

...

The next morning, when Zhang Yang was about to leave Yu Li's house, he saw Yu Li's mother in the living room. The moment he stepped out, she was staring, or rather, glaring at him as if she was wishing him death. It was as if he was an abomination, the worse crock of the entire nation.

After hastily returning to his home, Zhang Yang immediately logged into the game and was immediately bombarded with a gazillion of question to why did he not log into the game yesterday night.

He simply could not. After wrestling in Yu Li's bed for a good time, he was too tired to do anything else and went straight to chase after Peter Pan, let alone log into the game! After dodging questions and getting a scolding from the gang, the party went on to grind their levels. Mostly all the quest in Oz had been cleared, and the team then proceeded on to a new map and came to a place known as the Black Moss Wilderness.

Unlike the Kingdom of Oz, which was filled with harmless citizens, Black Moss Wilderness was how you would describe a place that had yet to receive the touch of society. The place was covered with wild beasts. It was eerie, and gloomy. Even during the daytime, the place was covered in thick mist and dark clouds, giving them poor visibility, even during daytime.

Zhang Yang had vaguely recalled that a group of Elves that had set up a camp in this map. Since he could not remember their precise location, Zhang Yang was blindly groping about. However, it did not take long before they encountered an overly large encampment.

The camping grounds were so huge. There were camps and tents that

were set up, with flags soaring high in the sky. Zhang Yang frowned. According to his memories, he did not remember this camp being so huge! In the past, when he reached this place, the camp was only located under the cover of a hill, with only seven to eight camps! Yet, here there were hundreds, even thousands of camps, being set up in this massive flatland.

Within the camp grounds, there were hundreds of female Elven warriors sparring with each other. Elves were famous for their prowess in archery. However, those female warriors carried both a bow and a sword, making them capable of engaging in both ranged and melee fights.

Wei Yan Er asked, "Why can't we equip a bow?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "You can. Go and get yourself a "God of Bow" Inheritance!"

When the female warrior noticed the arrival of Zhang Yang's party, they got into their combat stances and were on guard. The frontmost female warriors unsheathed their swords while the female warriors behind them drew their bows, ready to let their arrows fly.

Zhang Yang swiftly jumped down from the white bear and did an adventurer salutation to them. "We are adventurers from White Jade Castle! We mean you no harm!"

"Adventurer?" A voice ranged loudly as a female Elven priestess stepped out from among them.

It was quite obvious that this NPC was a prominent one among the NPCs here. When she walked over, the warrior opened a pathway for her. The warriors bowed respectfully to her.

[Priestess Priestess Thea - Moon Glory] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 3,750,000

Defense: 800

Thea gaze at everyone and observed the mark of the White Jade Castle on their chest. "By the Moon Gods, for he had guided me in my dreams!

These guests will help us to rescue the Priestess of the Moon! Bless the gods, bless us all! You came! You have fulfilled the prophecy!"

The priestess gestured and the warriors lowered their weapons.

Bingo, a quest!

Zhang Yang spoke, "To serve the proud Elven race would be our honor!"

Thea nodded and gracefully spoke, "Dear adventurers, we face an imminent threat! Our beloved Priestess of the Moon has been kidnaped by the Red-Skinned Beastman of the Blood Moon Castle! We must to rescue the Priestess of the Moon as soon as we can! That said, the Blood Moon Castle defenses were too strong! At our current strength, we can never breach their castle wall!"

Zhang Yang responded, "Oh respected Priestess, how may we assist you?"

"I can use my Alchemy and Smithing skills to forge a Teleportation Device that could transport troops to inside the castle itself! However, the Teleportation Device requires many materials and ingredients. I will require your assistance to gathers said materials and ingredients," said Thea. "But first, the one item I need most would be a large quantity of the Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger."

‘Ding! Thea – Moon Glory has a quest for you: Collecting the Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger. Would you accept it?’

It was a necessary quest for the party to enter the castle to rescue the Priestess of the Moon. Be it S or A ranked, it would only be a collection quest. Though it might be a little annoying, it was necessary to proceed with the quest!

[Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Thea – Moon Glory has instructed you to collect 200 counts of the Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger. You can find the monster at the Valley of the Ent, west of Black Moss Wilderness.

Progress: Collect Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger 0/200

The party took the quest and rode to the designated destination.

"Hey! Did you guys notice that there were no males in the entire camp?" said Fatty Han suddenly.

"Elves in this game are more like amazons. Their culture and beliefs are in the Moon Goddess, and their leader will always be a Priestess of the Moon. No male has ever taken that position. That is why, I think, the males are at home, nursing the kids or something," said Zhang Yang.

Endless Starlight eye's glinted. "If I could live in such a world, that would be just great!"

Zhang Yang snickered. "Elven races would actually support polygamy, meaning, one woman could have many husbands! You better think again."

Both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight kept their mouths shut.

"Oh right! Snow b*tch, little brat, I advise you to stay clear of that Luo guy. I'm guessing that that bastard will be incredibly jealous of the little brat for taking over the company and will do something nasty about that," said Zhang Yang.

"Him? He's all teddy bears and cotton candies inside, how could someone like him come up with anything?" said Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang turned to Wei Yan Er and said, "Do you have a cousin name Liu?"

"EH!? How did you know about that?" Wei Yan Er widen her eyes. She puffed her cheeks and grinned evilly. "Hehe, could it be that you have eyes on her? You sneaky little bastard. You shouldn't be looking at other women besides my cousin sister!"

"Please, cut the crap. I got hold of some bad news about her. That Luo guy and your cousin Liu are secretly planning to take over Silky Soft Holdings behind your back!"

Wei Yan Er scratched her head. "Liu Shu Yan might be a little sneaky sometimes. But if she ever wanted to take over Silky Soft Holdings, she wouldn't be able to! As long as sister Han and me are in the company,

there is no way anyone could take over. Not even my father could stop me, legally."

Zhang Yang frowned. Worriedly, he said, "But, what if something happens to you guys?"

"What do you mean by that?"

"I mean, say, both of you had encountered a bad accident and went missing?"

"Hey! Touch wood! You nasty noob tank! You dare to curse me and my cousin sister! I'll summoned the great power of the super Saiyans and pull every single strand of hair on your head!" said Wei Yan Er fiercely.

On one side, Han Ying Xue was already seriously thinking about it. "So, you're saying, someone is out there trying to do something to me and Yan Er?"

"There is that possibility."

Han Ying Xue remained quiet for a while, "If something happens to me, the company ownership will automatically be given to Yan Er. But, if something happened to the both of us...That will be bad. The entire company's property will fall into the hands of that bunch of leeches!"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Eye growth: In Chinese culture, there was a taboo for anyone who witness, spy, either intentionally or unintentionally, the naked body of another person without the party's consent. The growth would be similar to a small acne growing at the corner of the eyes.

Chapter 309: Collecting the Dragon Crystals

The crowd arrived to the Valley of the Ent and was greeted by a mountain full of ancient trees that soared up to the sky. In the mountain, there were many of those fore mentioned Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger roaming freely. As their names suggested, they had wings sticking out of their backs, and razor-sharp fangs that could pierce even the toughest armor.

[Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 73

HP: 7,300

Defense: 70

"Let's split up!" To have the team farm a total of 200 teeth would be troublesome. It would be for the best to have them split up and farm for their own parts. Han Ying Xue had quietly remained by Zhang Yang's side as they started going their own paths. Naturally, Zhang Yang had to farm her parts too since she was a priest with low attacking power.

"Dummy. Did you really mean it, when you said that the Liu and Luo couple were planning to harm Yan Er and me?" said Han Ying Xue. No wonder she was so serious.

Zhang Yang shrugged. "I'm not too sure about that either. But, at least, now you know about it, and you can take some precautions."

With the bear under him, Zhang Yang kited 20 to 30 monster in one shot and killed them all. Though they may have wings sticking out from their backs, they could not fly. They could only hover in the air after running at great speed and attack Zhang Yang like levitating bulls.

Han Ying Xue bashfully asked. "I heard form that perverted fatty that you could fight, like, in real life?"

"But of course!" Zhang Yang thumped his chest and proudly gloated.

"While I can't possibly fight a hundred at a time, I could at least take on more than 10 men at the same time."

Han Ying Xue turned away and glared somewhere else. "Then...you should be our bodyguard!"

"...Woman, I'm sure there are plenty of such services out there. You could at least do yourself a favor and hire the professionals."

"I don't trust strangers!"

Zhang Yang heart fluttered a little. Han Ying Xue had her full faith in him. Zhang Yang still shook his head. "That Luo might have some hidden plans that might exceed my calculations. I'm one man. If I were to be your bodyguard, that would mean that I would have to stay by your side for a good deal of time! We would probably end up annoying the shit out of each other, me before you!"

"You silly dummy! This lady here is a wonder of the world! If you were to take a picture of me, that picture would be a masterpiece! Why are you complaining when I'm allowing you to remain by my side!"

"Just shut up and do your job, will you?"

It was always harder to complete a collection quest. Unlike the regular killing quest, these quests required luck, since the drops were determined by random number generator! People like Sun Xin Yu were so lucky that she had collected 200 teeth on her own in just 30 minutes. On the far end of the scale, Lost Dream had rotten luck. He had already spent close to one hour and had yet to finish collecting. When everyone had already finished with their quests, they had to go assist him.

The luckiest of them all was Daffodil Daydream. She had managed to capture herself a Gray-Silver battle mount. It was a Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger Cub. Her capture had brought the total number of battle mounts in the party to four.

Zhang Yang said, "As the difficulty of the map gets higher, so will the rate of appearance of battle mounts. However, the higher tiered battle mounts will get even harder to capture. Take the current standards as

example. When players were carrying Yellow-Gold equipments, the Yellow-Gold mounts will be rare. Until players reach the point where Violet-Platinum equipment becomes a norm, they will try to make Violet-Platinum tier battle mounts the bare minimum, snuffing out the Gray-Silvers."

"That means, we don't really have to rush for battle mounts at this stage?"

Zhang Yang nodded. "You are correct!"

The party returned to the elven camp and submitted their quests, one at a time.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Collect Tooth of the Quad-Winged Saber Tooth Tiger. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points!'

"Wonderful! Now, I trust you to collect the second ingredient!" said Thea to her free laborers. "The next ingredient that I require, would be the [Burning Amber] of the Ash Wonderer. Please make haste dear adventurers!"

Endless Starlight started to complaint, "D*mn. I haven't even caught my breath yet and yet we have to run off again!"

"Stop whining and start running!"

[Burning Amber] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Thea – Moon Glory requires you to collect 200 counts of [Burning Amber]. You can find Ash Wonderers at the Lava Pits, west of the Black Moss Wilderness.

Progress: Collect [Burning Amber] 0/200

The team took 20 minutes to reach the new farming ground and started killing their way to complete the quest.

The monsters called Ash Wonderers were just a new kind of Fire Elementals. All of them carried the {Burning Aura} even when they were only normal tier monsters. Still, the damage was unbelievably low. The problem was not the difficulty in killing the monsters, like all of other

collection quest, the problem lay in their drop rates. The team spent a long time completing the quest. After returning to the camp ground and submitting the quest, they were only rewarded with a measly 300,000 Experience points.

"One last thing now! We are almost there!" said Thea happily. "The last ingredient that I require to complete the Teleportation Device is the Dragon Crystal. I need you to visit the Dragon's Slumber Temple and collect a Dragon Crystal!"

[Collect Dragon Crystal] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Thea – Moon Glory had request you to collect a piece of [Dragon Crystal]. You may collect the [Dragon Crystal] from the corpse of a dragon in the Dragon's Slumber Temple, north of the Black Moss Wilderness. Be caution, there are hidden dangers lurking on the area.

Progress: Collect Dragon Crystal: 0/1

No choice. They would have to run around again! The party made their way through the Black Moss Wilderness and towards the Dragon's Slumber Temple. Half an hour later, they could already see their destination from a long distance. Standing there was an emerald blue tower, so huge, and it had actually scraped the dark, grayish sky. The team rode on and on. The tower made no sign of getting closer It was like traveling in a car, and not seeing the moon and mountains moving even after traveling a distance. The team had actually traveled for another 30 minutes before actually reaching their destination.

From afar, the building looked like a tower, however, when they stood at the bottom of the tower, it looked more like a huge stadium. The entire construct was oval in shape, with a diameter of more than 1,000 meters. Due to the mega towering structure and the weight it seemed to bear, its base somehow looked fragile in comparison. The temple had an entrance at every four points of the tower base floor. There were a total of 30 floors to the top, with each floor sharing the exact same design. Each floor measured at least hundreds of meters tall. The problem, was that the structure was extremely puzzling. There was a huge gap between them

with no visible stairs or pathway to get to the next floor. That said, it would seem like players would have to have flying mounts to get across each floor.

Without delay, the party rode their mounts and the others walked, all into the towering, mega structure's first floor. Inside, there were nothing but gigantic corpses laying around. Each corpse was so huge that Zhang Yang's group were like ants to a huge elephants.

"Didn't they say that dragons were extremely rare? Look at this place! It's filled with dragon bones! It looked like someone had a huge *ss party with dragon ribs!" Fatty Han joked.

"Isn't this quest A-classed? Why aren't there any monsters for us to kill?" said Lost Dream suspiciously.

"Just be careful. Let's not split up for now. Stick together and search for the dragon"

Wei Yan Er lazily scanned the area and said, "Where are you...Dragon Crystal..."

"Dragon Crystal huh...I think it mean something like the essence of a dragon. Perhaps it would be at somewhere the heart would be." Lost Dream tried to explain.

Fatty Han snickered. "Essence? That would be at the heart, it should be somewhere...for a dragon? 3 meters below their waist!"

Endless Starlight claps his hand and praised. "D*mn bro! Well said! They say that the essence of a man lies deep within one's manhood! Fatty Han, you're a genius!"

Almost everyone else beside the two perverts rolled their eyes as they started to initiate their dirty talk.

"The quest item should be glowing. It be easy to spot it. Take your time, and be careful!" said Zhang Yang. The party took their time to search around each corpse but found nothing. The area didn't even seem to have any hostile monsters. The only thing was the deafening silence.

"Huh...It's taking too long. Let's split up!"

Everyone nodded. They were all getting annoyed. Each of them took a direction and followed it till the end and came back to the center to regroup.

After 20 minutes, the party regrouped, empty handed.

"We have searched everything!"

At the center of the Temple, there was a huge skeleton that measured approximately 200 meters in length. Hoping that they would find the quest item, the party proceeded to search from the tail, and slowly move up the torso. After just a few seconds, Fatty Han's loud voice was heard howling. "Ooi! Come to me!"

Everyone came around and gathered to where Fatty Han was and saw the huge, football size ruby-red crystal, glowing violently as if there was a raging fire inside.

Smiling from ear to ear, Fatty Han bellowed. "I knew that it would be somewhere below the waist!"

Fatty Han actually was standing at the pelvic region of the skeleton.

"Such a big crystal...I think it should be enough for everyone if I break it up!" said Wei Yan Er as she picked it up.

THOOM!

Just as Wei Yan Er picked the Dragon Crystal up, the loud, cracking sound of the wind blew up, sending a howling gale through the vicinity.

"What's happening?" Wei Yan Er was shocked.

"This is an A class quest. Do you really think that it was going to be so easy?" Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and said, "Get ready to fight!"

During their conversation, shadows of dragons were emerging out from the skeletons. Red, black, green, blue, and even copper colored shadows flying around! The different types of dragon merged together, turning into something menacing, and even worse, solid.

[Ancient Dragon Soul] (Yellow-Gold, Summoned)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500,000

Defense: 1,400

BOOM!

This dragon that was formed from many other the different dragons had a multi-colored outer shell, and stood a few hundred meters tall, stomped the ground. It growled angrily, "Cursed intruders! You have tainted the grounds of Dragon's Slumber Temple! Your sins will be forgiven only by your death!"

Zhang Yang quickly turn around and screamed at the little brat. "Hey! Take the crystal and keep it!"

"I can't! There's this system notification telling me that it cannot be looted!"

"F*ck it! That means we'll have to kill this boss first!"

BOOM! BOOM! BAM!

The earth exploded with each step the dragon took.

Zhang Yang did not waste even a second and rushed towards the dragon with {Charge}. Zhang Yang sliced the dragon for 1,683 damage and quickly stack up as much {Cripple Defense}. The rest of the party immediately moved into action. Each of them got into position and started to attack. After a while, a bright blue light glowed around the dragon, only to blast out in all directions. The light blast radius was so wide that it had even manage to hit ranged players such as Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Hundred Shots.

'Ding! You have received the effect {The Blue Dragon's Curse}. Dexterity has been reduced by 20%. Last for 1 minute!'

Everyone received the debuff.

Translator's Thoughts

1. The original joke was not that. It was 晶字乃是三个日字组成, which explains the formation of the word 晶 and Endless Starlight made fun of that. It made sense in mandarin but it does not carry the meaning in English. I took the liberty to create a new joke.

Chapter 310: The Ancient Dragon Soul

Once the skill effect was released, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream started whining. Also affected as Sun Xin Yu, as classes that highly depended on Dexterity were the ones that were effected the most.

After 15 seconds, there was a green hue glowed brightly and everyone received another debuff.

'Ding! You have received {Curse of the Green Dragon}. Vitality has been reduced by 20%!

Hundred Shots immediately cried out to exclaim. "I think there were Green, Blue, Red, Black, and also Copper colored dragons merging into that big dragon. I think the boss dragon will have five types of curses!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Hey, little brat. That dragon's much better at cursing than you ever will be!"

"Hmph! So what? That thing is still going down, either way!" said Wei Yan Er.

Following the predictions, every 15 seconds, there would be a blast of light, followed with a curse. The Black dragon curse would reduce 20% Strength. The Red dragon would reduce 20% Intelligence, the Copper dragon curse would reduce 20% Spirit. Although the curse would wear off after 15 seconds, the boss would always be right on time to renew its effects with another one.

{Warrior's Will}, {Ice Barrier}, and {Holy Shield} could dispel the curse. However, they had much longer cooldowns. The rate at which the boss would cast the curse was just too quick. Having had their main attributes reduced, the party's total attack power had suffered a massive reduction. Luckily, the boss's curse did not include a Defense reduction, and even though Zhang Yang had suffered a 20% HP reduction, his attack power did not suffer much.

"Fus Ra Duh!" the dragon spoke in a twisted dragon tongue and stomped the ground with its massive foot. Everyone was instantly afflicted with a

curse that had made their body to move involuntary. They gripped their heads tightly and cowered down.

‘Ding! You have received {Dragon’s Intimidation}. You have fall into the state of {Fear} for 10 seconds!’

The boss flung its massive claw and sliced Zhang Yang.

‘-7,790!’

Being in the {Fear} state, Zhang Yang was unable to control his body and had to take the hit. Unfortunately, the attack landed on his back and had bypassed his shield defense value. With them vulnerable, the boss moved forward to chase after and attack them with a clean sweep.

10 seconds felt like an eternity. With an average attack speed of 2 seconds, the boss had already dealt more than five attacks! With no healing, and completely exposed, it would be enough to kill Zhang Yang! Sensing that danger was imminent, Zhang Yang quickly used {Warrior’s Will} and removed the state of {Fear}. He activated {Block} to shield himself from an attack and consumed a bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion].

There was a problem. The boss’s [Dragon’s Intimidation] was a little complex. Just after 1 minute after the initial cast, the boss had once again placed everyone into the same state.

This time, Zhang Yang countered the skill with a {Shield Wall}. The third cast, he had summoned Clear Lotus and used {Substitute} to remove the debuff. {Rearm} was used immediately to reset all the cool down time for all his skills. The fourth cast was removed by {Warrior’s Will}. The fifth cast was countered with {Shield Wall}. At this point, the boss had still over 3,000,000 HP. The party would have to endure another three casts of {Dragon’s Intimidation} to finish off the boss. That said, all of Zhang Yang life preserving skill had been used. How would he survive another three counts of {Dragon Intimidation}?

Zhang Yang speedily opened the aggro list. If Endless Starlight could position himself as the second aggro target, he could use {Shadow of the Void} to escape from the area and allow Endless Starlight to tank the boss. A Defender has {Sacred Protection} and {Sacred Healing} that could

prolong his survival. That could at least, hold the boss off for another two castings of {Dragon's Intimidation}!

On the side note, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, were attacking like madmen, pushing their aggro beyond the capabilities of any other skilled tank. Still, Hunters and Thieves had skills that could remove their aggro value on them. Zhang Yang himself could use {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battle field. The only one who would be in real danger would be Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream!

Zhang Yang braced himself and cast {Provoke} on the boss. Hoping that the skill was effective on the boss, it should make things easier.

Immune!

Disappointed, but not unexpected. If {Provoke} worked on the boss, it wouldn't be much of a Yellow-Gold.

"Ice Cube, Old Dream, get ready to use {Vanish}, Fatty, Hundred Shots, get ready to use {Fake Death}. The moment before the boss uses {Dragon's Intimidation}, I'll activate {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battle field. Let Endless Starlight take on the boss," said Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er suddenly realized that she had no role in Zhang Yang's improvised plan. Her eyes widened, and she said, "Hey, noob tank, what about me?"

"You...hmm...Prepare to erhm...take one for the team? Die a glorious death?"

"Waaa...Why you...little ungrateful tank! How dare you not take responsibility!?" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang wiped away a cold drop sweat. "Little brat. I think you should dial back a little on the television dramas. They would do you more harm than good."

"Hmph!"

Zhang Yang calculated the timing and when there was only 2 seconds left before the boss activated {Dragon's Intimidation}, Zhang Yang yelled.

"{Vanish} now! {Fake Death} now! I'll use {Shadow of the Void}!"

Poof! Poof!

Two smoke puff burst out from where Lost Dream and Sun Xin Yu were standing, as the two of them disappeared from the battle field. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had triggered their own skill and were laying perfectly still on the ground. Only when Zhang Yang had made sure that the four of them had cleared all their aggro, only did he activate {Shadow of the Void} and enter the other realm, removing himself from the battle field.

1 second...2 second...!

Just then, the boss activated {Dragon's Intimidation}. He prematurely ended {Shadow of the Void} and returned to the battle field. The boss was already chasing after Wei Yan Er and had killed her in just two strikes. After dealing with her, the Ancient Dragon Soul turned around and had set Daffodil Daydream as its next target.

{Ice Barrier}!

It was a shame that that skill would only provide a small window of invincibility and not clear the character's aggro. Still, it was still able to draw the boss' attention and she could last for a short duration of 10 seconds, buying Endless Starlight more time. However, as the {Ice Barrier} ended, Daffodil Daydream too, succumbed to the boss in just two hits. This time, the boss had set Endless Starlight as its next target.

Frantically, Zhang Yang went all Rambo on the boss, rebuilding his aggro so that the boss wouldn't target Han Ying Xue when Endless Starlight goes down.

"...Wuuu" Wei Yan Er cried. "Noob tank, why I can't release my soul from the body?" she whined.

Zhang Yang turned to Daffodil Daydream and asked. "What's going on?"

"The system has prevented us from releasing our souls. It says: Unable to release the soul during a battle!"

"Hm...I think it's just for this occasion. It must be because of the boss

fight. You guys go ahead and rest while we wrap this up."

The battle continued on, as the firepower had only affected a little since only Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were out of the fight.

3 minutes into the battle and Endless Starlight had used up all of his survival skills. After the third {Dragon's Intimidation}, Endless Starlight was crushed to death. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had managed to overtake Han Ying Xue in the aggro table and was in control once again.

When the boss had over 1,200,000 HP left, Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} was ready once again. So far, the skill was already raised to Level 8, having only 3 minutes of cool down time. {Shield Wall}, on the other hand still had a 30 second cool down time, allowing him to stand his ground for another two more {Dragon's Intimidations}.

1,000,000! 800,000! 400,000! 100,000!

Full Rage! {Killing Cleave}!

'-9,016!'

It was just enough to finish the boss. Upon its death, the boss wailed and cursed the party, saying, "Sinners! You have tainted the sacred Temple of the Dragons! You're hereby cursed to face the full wrath of all Dragons!"

BOOM!

The humongous dragon burst open, scattering all the merged souls into the air and disperse into the corner of the Temple, leaving no bodies behind. With no bodies, there were no battle loots!

Fatty Han frowned furiously. "What a!@#!@#\$ system! What the actual f*ck! We just busted our butts killing this sorry piece of sh*t and it didn't give us anything?!"

Zhang Yang laughed and pointed at the spot where the red crystal was supposed to be. "Look there!"

A golden treasure chest sat right there, waiting for the party to open it.

"WOAH! Sis! Quick, revive me! I want to open that chest!" Wei Yan Er urged.

Han Ying Xue nodded and revived Wei Yan Er and without saying anything, the little girl dashed over to the chest, without bothering to recover her health. The greedy little girl was practically molesting the chest, while the rest of the party was highly amused at her comical acts.

Finally satisfied with her groping, Wei Yan Er proceeded to open the chest. At that moment, a black puff of smoke spewed out from the chest and damaged the little girl for 10,000 damage, instantly killing her.

"Wuuuu....What kind of idiot would place a trap in a treasure box? D*mn you, dragons!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"That's on you. Who told you to run off like a monkey without restoring your HP?" Zhang Yang teased.

"Sis! Revive me!"

"{Revive} would have to wait for 5 minutes. Sit tight and wait if you don't wanna run!"

Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight had already left the place and were already running back to their bodies. With no choice, Wei Yan Er obediently released her soul and ran back to her body from the graveyard.

Being good sports, the party had waited for the little girl to come back and let her to open the chest. There were a total of three counts of Yellow-Gold equipment, seven counts of Gray-Silver, and one quest item, the {Dragon Crystal}. There was only one, but everyone's quest had been fulfilled.

The three Yellow-Gold equipment were a Leather Armor glove, a Cloth Armor boots, and a defensive ring. Since everyone wanted to preserve their set equipment effects, none of them wanted the glove and the boots. Eventually, the equipment was placed in Zhang Yang possession to be sold off in the Little Merchandize Shop. The ring however, was taken by Zhang Yang.

After completing the quest, Zhang yang used a [Teleportation Scroll] to go back to Thunderstorm Castle, and back to White Jade Castle to have the ring Identified.

[Undying Hero's Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +84

Strength: +34

Equip Effect: Absorbs 66 Damage upon being attacked.

Equip Effect: Grants a 1% chance to summon the {Undying Hero} to deal 1,000 Shadow damage to a target on every attack.

Level Requirement: 70

So far, Zhang Yang had two Level 50 Yellow Gold rings. Merlinda's Appreciation Ring, and the Ring of Raging Blaze. After consideration, Zhang Yang decided to keep the Merlinda's Appreciation Ring. Even now, healing 10,000 HP every 3 minutes was still rather OP, far stronger and better than a 50 damage absorption skill. Zhang Yang put on the new ring and teleported back to the party via the Lover's Charm.

Chapter 311: Rescuing the Priestess of the Moon

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Collect the Dragon Crystal. Obtained 500,000 Experience Points!’

After submitting the [Dragon Crystal], everyone obtained only a little experience. It was only about the same as killing monsters. After the Level 70 threshold, the amount of experience points required to gain another level was a headache.

"This is wonderful! Now, I can create a Teleportation Device!" Thea the Priestess took out a bunch of Tiger Teeth, and Burning Ambers from somewhere on the back of her body. She then placed the ingredients on the ground and the Dragon Crystal on top of the pile. She then proceed to pour vials of potion-like stuff on the pile.

"Say, Little Yang. Where you do you think that this lady kept all the Tiger Tooth?" said Fatty Han as he stared pointedly at Thea's voluptuous butt. His question was completely rhetorical.

Zhang Yang kept quiet for a while and finally facepalmed when Fatty Han would not stop staring at Thea's butt. "Fatty...How dry are you? Are you so desperate for some, that you would stare at a virtual character's rear? Please find yourself another girlfriend to help you solve your loneliness at night!"

Fatty Han laughed. "Oh please, Little Yang. Don't be saying stuff like that. Don't tell me that all the people in the movies and television were fake, and you can't hug, touched, or even take them to bed?"

"That...That's a whole other story! At least you know that the person behind the camera is a real human!"

"Ah! You cannot deny the fact that those characters were also the products of fiction! The only difference between the one in front of us and the one in the movies is that one was an image captured by a camera while the other has been created by data! How could you guarantee that

this lovely lady right here was not created based off a real female model? Artists are not magician who could create something out of nothing. Technically, they draw inspiration from their real life experiences!"

Zhang Yang gasped. "Woah! Fatty! Since when did you become so wise? You must have created such a viewpoint on life after all those hardships and heartbreaks from the ladies!"

"Hey!" Fatty Han started to put up airs like a philosopher that was lost in his thoughts. "We are the sum of all our past experiences. I am but a sword hidden in a sheath. For someone to discover the real me, one would need to dig deep into my soul and discover a youthful man of artistic sense!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "I have known you for close to 20 years and just only managed to discover this part of you now!"

Everyone grinned, some were almost at the point of laughing out loud. Endless Starlight snickered and said, "Fatty Bro, what the big boss had just said, what...buahahaha, was too true!"

"Oh...f*ck off you little prick. Little Yan and I have a friendship as strong as the steel that was forged from the brutal fights in the streets! The kind of bond we have could withstand anything you throw at us! We drank beer together, broke bread together, found the same girls in the clubs..."

"F*ck you Fatty, who would want to go to the club with you! Please do not tarnish my name here!"

As the crowd laughed and joked, Thea was finally ready to craft the Teleportation Device. With a sudden blast of light ray, a weird, awfully similar gadget appeared in her hand. It was black, but it look awfully similar to that of a hair dryer!

Lost Dream frowned. "I think the designing department of Dream Tech was too lazy. Look at that bloody contraption! It's hideous!"

"Adventurers, I, have but one last request of you." Said Thea with a stoic expression. "The next candidate of the Priestess of the Moon is being held at the Blood Moon Castle! You have to make haste in order to save her!"

You have proved your strength to us and show us that no one other than you are perfect for this mission. On behalf of the Moon Elf race, I beg of you! Please head towards the Blood Moon Castle and rescue our Priestess!"

"Candidate for the Priestess of the Moon?" Zhang Yang repeated, seemingly coming to an epiphany.

The Priestess of the Moon is the highest rank, and served as the leader of the Elven race. Theoretically, she would be at least the same rank as the King of the White Jade Kingdom. An Ascended tier boss! However, how could such a boss could be trapped in a Level 70 map? Either that, or she was in a similar circumstance as Princess Serena! Now that Thea had explained the situation, the Priestess that was kidnapped had yet to inherit the throne. It was only natural that someone like her would be targeted.

"That's right. There's hasn't been a Priestess of the Moon guiding the Moon Elves for at least 300 years! Bless the Moon God for she had not forsaken us! For she had even elected a successor for our race!" said Thea. "Please. Adventurer! I beg of you!"

'Ding! Thea – Moon Glory has a quest for you: Rescue the Priestess of the Moon. Will you accept it? This quest will be linked to a part of the main story quest. Complete the quest for a luxurious reward!'

A main story quest!

Everyone exchanged a look, nodded their heads in unison and accepted the quest without saying a word.

[Rescue the Priestess of the Moon] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: The Priestess of the Moon of the Elven race has been kidnapped by the Red-Skinned Orcs of the Blood Moon Castle! You have to rescue her as soon as possible! The Elven race requires a new leader! Godspeed! Who knows what the Orcs will do to the Priestess of the Moon! Blood Moon Castle is located at the East of the Black Moss Wilderness.

Progress: Rescue Priestess of the Moon 0/1

"Please take this with you!" Thea passed the "hair-dryer" to Zhang Yang and said, "This device can only be activated when you're 500 meters away

from the Blood Moon Castle. It can directly transport you into the castle. However, since I forged the device in a hurry, the device can only be used once!"

[Carelessly made Teleportation Device] (Quest Item)

Use: Teleports you and your team mates into the Blood Moon Castle. Can only be used within 500 meters away from the Blood Moon Castle. Transports a maximum of 10 persons.

"Let's go! Let's save the world. Again!" said Zhang Yang as he summoned his white bear.

The party rode like the wind towards the west. They reached their destination about 30 minutes later. Unlike the topography of the Thunderstorm Castle, the Blood Moon Castle was built on a flatland. The castle was fully exposed and surrounded by a vast empty field and could be attack from all directions. That being said, the castle was impregnable. With thick castle walls and an uncountable number of magical cannons. The defense of the castle was astonishing!

Zhang Yang took out the "hair-dryer" and said, "Let's fly!"

However, when Zhang Yang clicked on the machine, it responded with a message. 'Ding! You can only use this device within 500 meters from Blood Moon Castle!'

"What's wrong?"

"...My bad. We have to walk a little up front."

The party had to move a little further. As they moved, the device did not prompt anything but shone brightly, enclosing the party in a large light cage. With a loud crack, the party disappeared. When vision returned to their eyes, they had found out that they had indeed been teleported into the castle. Judging from the surroundings, they were in the kitchen. The nine of them were unfortunately trapped behind a stone oven and an invisible chain fastened them to the wall, rendering them immobile.

"Hey! I can't move! How bout you guys?"

"I can't move either!"

"Me too!"

"What the hell is going on?"

The party channel was instantly rowdy.

"Tesmo, you'd better be puttin' some effort in yer back eh. Our great lord Pilo is going to marry that Elven babe. He ordered us to make 'em good meal. If we screw this up. We be losing our heads!" During the commotion, two red-skinned orcs entered the kitchen. One was tall, and the other was much shorter. It was the shorter one that had just spoke.

The taller orc said, "I'd say Piji, but our Lord Pilo has the purest blood flowing in his veins. I'm curious at the fact that he would marry to a female Elf? I must say that those puny little minxes are too skinny for us orcs. My word, how could they bear to give birth to great warriors in the future? What say you my good orc?"

"Yer moron!" the shorter orc shook his head. "Heard from Lord Shalin, dem Elf babe was a saint. She be the Priestess of the Moon! Think of it, if she be bearin' me kids, it surely be a godly kid innit? He be carryin' some of dem godly powers eh?"

"I comprehend your speculation, my dear friend."

"What yer yapping like that for eh? Put em plates out now!"

As the shorter one finished with their conversation, the two of them exited the kitchen. Just then, Zhang Yang and the team regained their mobility and were surprised by a sudden notification.

'Ding! You have obtained a sudden news. The red skinned orc leader Pilo wants to marry the Priestess of the Moon! You have to move faster to save the Priestess of the Moon!'

'Ding! Main Quest: Rescue the Priestess of the Moon! A time limit has been added. You now have 10 hours to rescue the Priestess of the Moon. The quest shall be permanently terminated upon failure.'

The normal quest could be re-taken again if the party fails to meet a

certain criteria of the quest by visiting the NPC and start over again. However, main story and hidden quests were different. With only once chance, its either win it, or pack it!

"Comrades! Let's hurry! We must save that Priestess of the Moon!" Fatty Han cried.

"Could you be more civilized, pervy fatty?"

"What are you talking about? I'm merely stating the obvious!" Fatty Han raised an eye brow.

"Enough. Let's work!" Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and headed to the exit of the kitchen.

"Did you guys feel that the tall orc was very polite?"

"And that shorter one was savage as f*ck!"

"Would you guys please focus!?"

Just when the party left the kitchen, a pair of orc guards spotted them and charged at them.

"Intruder!"

They swung their weapons in the air like lassos and aimed to bash the living hell out of Zhang Yang.

[Red Skinned Berserk Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 400

"Aren't all orc green in color? Why are they all red here?" asked not by Wei Yan Er, surprisingly, but Daffodil Daydream.

Since it was Daffodil Daydream instead of the annoying little brat, Zhang Yang had no qualms explaining. "These red skinned orcs were once a faction of the main orc race. Their ancestors were tempted by the demons and had succumbed to the demonic force. Their bodies were infected with the demonic power, turning them into a blood red color."

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight each engaged one orc and with the party laying waste to them, the elite monsters were kill in matter of seconds. The obtainable loots were just a few pieces of Silk and coins. Coins were to be expected but the quantity of the Silks was just too scarce. Be it Tailoring or First Aid, player would need a large volume of these Silks. Even though they are relatively cheap in the auction house, the supply in the market is always on shortage. Players would have to farm on their own to supply themselves.

As the party continued venturing into the deeper parts of the castle, they had encountered and killed a number of red skinned orcs. After 30 minutes, the party came into a large hall. At the entrance of the hall were two humongous red skinned orcs! With its top half naked, and a small loin cloth covering its lower half, the muscular body of the orc was greatly emphasized, bringing out their destructive power and intimidation. They were both carrying huge morning stars made of wolf fangs. Imaging getting your head bashed in with those spiky balls...

[Red Skinned Crusher] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 76

HP: 760,000

Defense: 600

They were also elite tier, but these two brothers had 10 times more HP than the regular monsters around. They even had 50% more Defense! With these types of stats, they could be the equivalent as a Gray-Silver boss!

Endless Starlight felt a sudden rush of goosebumps when he saw their weapons. "Hey, Fatty bro, how would it feel if you were pricked in the *ss by those weapons?"

"Hehehe. I'm telling you. These two monsters are actually called The Butt Crackers!"

Zhang Yang slid towards Endless Starlight and lightly kicked his butt. "In that case, you should try and solo tank the boss this time! Try and let the

monster rip you a new one!"

"WAA. Mama mia! No!" cried Endless Starlight, covering his butt with his hands. However, he went on forward and tossed his shield from afar, triggering the fight.

"Intruders? Such brilliant timing! I was just lacking a cup! I shall make do with your skull and fashion it into my drinking cup!" said one of the orcs as they charged towards Endless Starlight.

Wham! Bam!

10 seconds into the battle, one of the Red Skinned Crusher's morning star glowed as it smashed Endless Starlight. He was then immediately sent lying on the floor motionless. Unable to get up, he was stunned for 6 seconds and was beaten like a flat pancake by the two orcs!

‘-10,524!’

‘-10,248!’

The two devastating damages had nearly killed him off when Endless Starlight frantically activated {Sacred Protection}.

"Why did the damage suddenly spike up!?"

Endless Starlight answered hurriedly while attacking, "The stun carried another effect that will increase all received damage by 100%!"

"NYAHAAHAH! Now that what I call as Butt Cracker!"

Zhang Yang effortlessly activated {Provoke} to draw one of the Red Skinned Crusher to lessen the burden on Endless Starlight.

No wonder the monsters were named Crusher. Their stunning capability was heightened to a point that it could even cause additional damage to their target. Luckily, both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were well-equipped. Though the battle was slightly nerve-wrecking, the party managed to take down the two monsters without any casualties.

"Phew! If all the monsters from now on are as strong as these Crushers, I'd better prepare myself!" wailed Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang reached out with his hands and uncovered the loots.

[Bloodied Staff] (Green-Copper, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 446 – 646

Equip Effect: Increase 1% Critical rate.

Level Requirement: 70

Note: There were weird blood stains on the tip of the staff. Wonder where did that come from?

Noticing the equipment description, both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight started to grin evilly.

The entrance of the hall was shut tight but was easily pushed open by the combined force of everyone in the party. Inside, there was a huge empty space. Deep inside, there was a huge, approximately 3 meters tall red skinned orc lying motionless. At his side, there was a 5 meters long battle axe with fresh blood still dripping at the blade.

[Dilloca the Butcher] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 76

HP: 3,800,000

Defense: 800

"Just a Gray-Silver? What a letdown!"

"It's better this way. The easier the boss, the faster we can complete the main story quest!" said Daffodil Daydream with her chest held up high.

"Endless Starlight, go and tank it. I'll be the attacker this round!" Zhang Yang unequip his shield to reduce the extra generated aggro.

Endless Starlight nodded and wielded his battle hammer and shield and charge to the boss. Within 30 meters, he tossed out his shield and started the fight.

Once triggered, the boss bellowed. "MUAHAHAHAHA! Another bunch of rats for me to kill!"

Chapter 312: A Sneaky Business

Gray-Silver? It be had nothing on Zhang Yang. Dilloca the Butcher was immediately flattened like a pan cake.

That being said, how could a pan cake fill your stomach when you break fasting? The equipment that the boss dropped was nothing but scraps. All the Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment were swept into Zhang Yang inventory, ready to be sold in the shop. Right now, the current market value of Green-Copper equipment was worth peanuts, on the other hand, Gray-Silvers proved to be slightly better and were worth a couple of beer, with some snacks on the side. That being said, Yellow-Gold bosses were still as rare as the blue moon.

The end of the hall was another large door which led to a long winding stairway that led to the second floor. Almost all of the monsters in the second floor were the same Berserk Soldiers. The group went on a killing spree and obtained a large quantity of [Silk]. 30 minutes into the second floor, the party came to another large hall, and another Red Skinned Crusher, with the same morning star similarly made from wolf fangs.

This turn, Endless Starlight was not brave enough to go on alone. Instead, the battle started with both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight each taking on one. After killing the door guards, the party entered the hall of the second floor. Deep inside the hall, there was an orc, draped in full fashionable accessories, with gold and silver blings hanging all over his body. He looked like a walking a chandelier. He did look like an orc, neither did he really resemble a human. With a face that read money, business, and trade, his eyes went up and down the surroundings, as if he was frantically trying to find something, or someone.

[The "Honest" Florick] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Note: The one and only, world's most honest being alive!

This boss had a yellow name tag on him, which meant that he will not promptly attack anyone.

"Hmm? Where did you guys sneak in from?" said Florick when he had noticed Zhang Yang from afar. Without any visible change in stance, he did not have any hostility towards them and gestured the party to approach him. "Could it be, that you have heard about the famous Florick and decided to pay him a visit?"

He quickly laid down a large sack and opened it to show the party a bag full of colorful shiny equipment. "Count yourselves lucky. This batch of stock had only arrived today. If you want to buy, make it quick. I'm about to leave to meet with an old client.

Everyone was immediately weirded out, for since when, could a boss turn into a merchant? However, when Florick took out the equipment and displayed it to them, they were immediately entranced by the gleaming luster. Like cats drawn to light, the party swarmed around the weapons only to find themselves gasping for air. They were all Celestial tiered weapons! All of them!

The Sword of the Sky! The Heaven's Helm! The Opal Chest Plate! The Hands of the God of War! The Sky Scraping Heavenly Pillar!

Everyone started to drool like deranged gods. What was going on? Could a Celestial weapon be sold off? If this fate?!

"N-N-Noobie tank! Look at the battle axe!" said Wei Yan Er, stuttering. She lifted the gigantic axe and showed it to Zhang Yang.

[Nova Breaker, Agulos' Heavenly Axe] (Celestial, Two Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 98,038 – 118,038

Attack Interval: 3.8 Seconds

DPS: 28,431

{Level 10 Socket 1}

{Level 10 Socket 2}

Equip Effect: Grants a chance to summon the great Agulos' soul, giving the attack a fixed chance to cause a Critical strike.

Level Requirement: 0

"Am I going blind? Do all of these Celestial weapon cost only 1,000 gold?" said Endless Starlight.

"I think I'm going blind as well, because I'm sure that they are sold for only 1,000 gold!"

"J-J-Jackpot!"

Zhang Yang sensed that something was incredibly off. How could a Celestial weapon be sold? Furthermore, there was no Level Requirement and they only cost 1,000 gold coins each. That meant that a character could equip this Celestial equipment from head to toe! If that was the case, how would the game be balanced? Besides, he had not heard anyone from his past life owning a Celestial tier equipment!

Zhang Yang hurriedly tried to stop the party. "Don't buy them. Something has got to be off!"

"Dude! I'm already wearing them! Look at me!" said Fatty Han as he pat his chest proudly. He then spun around to show everyone how fabulous he was, wearing a complete set of equipment from top to bottom.

Tempted, the rest of the party started buying equipment as well. It was a euphoric feeling, as if you had just stepped up from a 1986 Toyota Sprinter Trueno (AE86) to the latest model of the Mitsubishi Evos series. 1 The feeling of owning a bad*ss weapon was surreal.

Slim and Handsome, HP 2150.

Lost Dream, HP 2850.

... ..

Those who were wearing complete "Celestial" tier equipment had only over than 3,000 HP! They were basically naked!

Technically, to wear a full set of Celestial equipment, your HP should have been boosted to close to a million. However, their HPs were less than

10,000! They were all fakes!

"What the..."

"KYAAA!"

Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er shrieked in horror. "We've been had!"

There was a hidden note under the properties of the equipment description that stated : (1) This is a product of imitation. (2) Item will disappear after 15 minutes. Those two sentences were so small to begin with, and they were only visible after a player had made the purchase!

Everyone frantically swapped back to their original equipment and glared at Florick. Especially the two girls, who were basically misers. The two of them grabbed Florick by the collar and screamed in his face. "You cheater! Give me back my money!"

"Sorry. Goods sold are not refundable!" said Florick with a straight face.

"What goods? They're all fakes!"

"That's preposterous! I am Florick! The one and only, the world's most honest merchant! You shall not slander me, women! Or, I will sue you in court!" said Florick, as he hurriedly packed up his wares and made ready to leave. "I have another client to meet. Please leave!"

"You cheater! You refuse to return my money?!" said Wei Yan Er with a pain in her voice. Wei Yan Er had spent more than 10,000 gold coins just to purchase a full set of "Celestial" equipment. How was she going to let the man go?

"You want your money back? Well then, I shall see to it! Defeat me if you can!" Florick growled and took out a large axe. He then took out four weird looking sticks and struck the ground with it at four corners around him. The sticks were round on the top and had slim shafts, like pins. Florick's name tag had changed from yellow to red, indicating that he was a hostile target.

With a flash, Zhang Yang scrape the floor with {Charge} to rush towards

Florick, while Endless Starlight tossed his shield.

"Stupid boss! Give me back my hard-earned money!" Wei Yan Er gritted her teeth as she cleaved the boss over and over again, her fury off the charts. Until the moment Wei Yan Er gets her money back, she would probably never sleep again.

Fuum!

One of the pins on the ground had blasted a wave of fire and dealt around 2,000 damage to the party. 2 seconds later, it released another wave of fire.

"What sort of plaything is this?" Everyone was intrigued by the pins and checked on its properties.

[Flame Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Deal 2,000 Fire damage every 2 seconds, to all targets within a 10 meters radius.

[Squall Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Increases 10% Dexterity to all ally within 30 meters of the totem.

[Great Earth Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Grants ally the ability to absorb 20% incoming damage on attack.

[Vitality Totem]: HP: 1,000, Defense: 0. Restore 1,000 HP every 3 seconds to all allies within 30 meters of the totem.

"Dummy, what class is this boss supposed to be? How, and why did he stab that many sticks into the ground?" Han Ying Xue asked.

"Hm. That is called a Poke Poke Master!" said Zhang Yang with a straight face.

"Please..."

Zhang Yang laughed. "Alright. The boss' class is called a Totem Master. This class plays with the natural elements of Fire, Wind, Earth, and Water! That being said, they are pretty good in melee combat as well! In the future, whoever who gets to become a Totem Master after the Inheritance patch would have strong DPS power, and also a strong supporting capability! Sill, the totems are rather fragile and can be easily destroyed.

However they can only be struck by targeted skills, not AoE."

"In my opinion, that's pretty useless. I mean, just look at the totem's HP. People will simply wipe them out!" said Wei Yan Er.

"It's not that simple. You can place four totems at the same time, while others can only destroy them one at a time. Think of it this way, while others spend some time being delayed by the shared cool down to destroy one totem, you have already summoned four. You still have the advantage!" said Zhang Yang. That being said, unlike the Aura skill, the totems were immobile and had a limited range, whereas the Aura skill is basically permanent and always moved with the player!

The party destroyed the four totems and proceeded to target the boss. Once the totems were destroyed, the boss' attack and defense were no different compared to a regular Yellow-Gold tier boss. He posed no threat to the party, but when all the totems were destroyed, the boss would always immediately summoned them again. It was getting annoying.

"Cheater! Liar! Give me back my money!" Wei Yan Er cried endlessly.

"A bunch of gullible pricks! I will kill you all and take all your money!" said Florick, displaying the same manner of greed as Wei Yan Er.

Wham!

The boss cleaved Zhang Yang for 6,974 damage. Suddenly, a dark gust of wind blasted out of the back of the axe, propelling it further and causing more damage.

'-7,021!'

As the second damage text popped, Zhang Yang quickly referred to the battle log to get a better understanding on what just happened.

'Florick used {Force Strike} and dealt 6,974 damage (3,000 damage reduced, 1,026 damage absorbed).'

'Florick's {Force Strike} had triggered an echo effect and dealt 7,201 damage (3,000 damage reduced, 1,026 damage absorbed).'

What a complicated attack pattern! What was more important was that

the boss could actually use a Warrior's {Force Strike}.

After the axe cleaved through Zhang Yang, the boss pulled back the axe and waved his hands. A blot of white lightning blasted out and struck Zhang Yang. The bolt of lightning leaped off and struck Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Lost Dream. All of the melee attackers had suffered close to 10,000 damage except for Zhang Yang. He had only taken 6,974 damage.

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. In truth, there's no way I would give up riding a 1986 Toyota Sprinter Trueno (AE86) over a Mitsubishi Evo. For the sake of the story, let's say they don't like to ride the old classic.

Chapter 313: The Darkness

According to the battle record, it was Florick's {Chain Lightning} skill. After striking the current target, it would jump to the next target for a total of three times. Each strike caused 10,000 Nature Damage.

"Damn it, is this boss a physical-type or a Spellcaster? Why does it know all kinds of skill?!" Lost Dream complained.

Florick's {Chain Lightning} undoubtedly increased the workload for Han Ying Xue. This time, the bewitching queen did not have time to joke around and tease them with any of her obscene moans, but instead shouted in desperation, "Hurry up, kill the boss, I'm exhausted!"

"HAHA! Your money is mine! Is mine!" Florick laughed cynically.

Zhang Yang could not help it, but laughed and said, "B*tchy Snow, I think this boss, Florick and you make a good match! If both of your greediness were combined, nothing can possibly match up to it!"

"En, exactly, cousin is very greedy!" Wei Yan Er nodded her head again and again.

"Yan Er, do you want to experience what it's like being homeless tonight?" Han Ying Xue threatened Wei Yan Er.

Wei Yan Er immediately changed her tone and spoke seriously to Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, how could you insult my lovely cousin?! My cousin is so smart, generous, beautiful, honest, kind and cute... Wu wu wu, I can't take this anymore! I'm done! I'm telling the world's biggest lie, I will be going to hell in the future!"

"Sh*tty brat!" Han Ying Xue snapped.

In spite of Florick's wide array of skills, Zhang Yang was still able to get a good grip on the boss' aggro. Han Ying Xue may be complaining, but it was mostly because she was lazy. Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the team had strong attacking power, thus, Florick was quickly overwhelmed. He fell within seven to eight minutes.

"I'm going to whack you to death!" Wei Yan Er attacks got faster and

wilder in the heat of the moment.

"No! I still have so many treasures and I haven't used up all of them yet! I need to raise my 37 wives and children!" Florick uttered a despairing cry. Little brat used {Killing Cleave} to wipe out Florick's last drop of HP. Florick fell defeated and a copper coin rolled out of his hand. Desperately, he reached out and tried to catch the copper coin, however, his body lost strength as his arm stretched out halfway.

"My money..." Florick breathed his last.

Florick dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, eight pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, a few pieces of cloth, some coins and ETC.

Wei Yan Er was disappointed and asked, "Where did Florick hide the money he stole from us?"

Zhang Yang picked up a bag under the ETC category and threw it to Wei Yan Er and then grinned, "Will you be greedy next time?!"

[Florick's Money Bag]: All of Frolick's fraudulent claims are hidden in this bag, you are going to be rich!

Wei Yan Er suddenly burst out with laughter and quickly opened up the money bag. There was actually around 100,000 gold coins in the money bag and it was divided up nicely for the players. However, Zhang Yang did not buy any fake equipment from Florick, so he actually earned an extra 10,000 gold coins or so!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I like this boss!"

"Not us!" the rest of the people disagreed in unison.

"Quickly, distribute the equipment, this is a time limited quest!"

Hundred Shots was always the cautious one.

[Forsaken Sting] (Yellow-Gold, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 464-664

Attack Interval: 1.8 seconds

DPS: 314

[unidentified]

Equipment: When the target is struck, there is 1% chance of interrupting target's spell casting.

Level Requirement: 70

"Although it is even faster than the 1.9 second interval you usually see, it's too small to make a difference. While, the main point is this is Level 70 Yellow-Gold weapon," Zhang Yang turned to the two Thieves in the party, "It is definitely better than you current main attack weapon!"

Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream rolled. Fortunal had blessed Lost Dream and he won the [Forsaken Sting]. Before the dagger is identified, its attributes would worse than a Level 60 weapon. So, Lost Dream just kept the dagger in his inventory first.

[Boots of Sorrow] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +235

Strength: +94

Dexterity: +217

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 70

Because of the existence of set equipment, they wouldn't spare any such equipment a second glance unless they were Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment. Therefore, the boots were directly thrown into Zhang Yang's inventory, fated to be sold in Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop.

A Gray-Silver Servant!

[Servant: Codger Florick] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Summons Codger Florick as your servant in battle. Lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon one Servant at a time. Summoning any Servant will cause all other Servants to be in cooldown. Cool down time: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 70

Binds on obtain.

"This one isn't bad, let's request together. Whoever rolls the highest points will get this!" Zhang Yang said.

After rolling the dice, Han Ying Xue won the Servant. Conveniently, this would help offset her low attack power.

Han Ying Xue immediately summoned the Servant. It was a red-skinned Beastman, which looked like Florick, only smaller in size. It held a big broadaxe in both of its hands. However, one wouldn't feel threatened by him, but rather feel that he's just a sneaky little urchin whose up to no good.

Han Ying Xue laughed and posted her Servant's skill description in party channel.

{Stealing}: Steals from the target. There is 1% chance of stealing 1% of the target's total number of gold coins. Skill range: 3 meters. Cool down time: 5 minutes.

Everyone was speechless. Florick had turned from a con man to thief!

After passing through this hall, there was still a corridor, and then a staircase that was connected directly to the third floor.

"No monsters?" everyone came to the castle's third floor but did not see any appearance of monster. All of them were surprised.

"That's not possible. I'm sure there are Bandit-types in stealth mode!" Zhang Yang said, "Starlight, you walk in front!"

"Sigh, am I fated to be the bait each time?" Endless Starlight groaned, but otherwise obediently did as he was told.

After they walked forwards for a few steps, a red-skinned Beastman suddenly emerged from the dark and smacked the back of Endless Starlight's head with the hilt of its sword. Endless Starlight was stunned. The red-skinned Beastman wielded its two swords and madly slashed at Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang quickly used {Charge} and dashed towards the red-skinned Beastman without using {Provoke}. Zhang Yang was able to take over the red-skinned Beastman's aggro by just slashing once.

[Red-Skinned Lurker] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

Bandit-type monsters were at their most dangerous during the first 10 seconds when emerging from stealth mode. Even so, they were poorly matched against tank! Zhang Yang pulled the monster, and all of them piled up and wiped the monster out.

The massacre proceeded. Because they needed to deal with stealth-type monsters, their progress was slowed down. After about 40 minutes, they reached the hall on the third floor.

There were two Red-Skinned Crushers at the doorway. After some thrilling but safe battles, both of the monsters crumpled to the ground.

They opened up the two heavy doors, and everyone went into the hall.

It was all dark in the hall!

It was pitch dark in the hall!

It was a room that measured to at least thousands of square meters. Other than the light coming out from the doorway, the hall was completely dark! It was completely silent, other than the footsteps!

And when they stopped moving, their breathes and heartbeats took over the dead silence!

Endless Starlight said, "It's really dark..."

"Oh my god!"

"You scared me!"

"Shut your mouth! You scared us!"

The moment Endless Starlight started to talk, everyone had jumped, like dropping a stone into a calm lake.

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Starlight, you're trying to say that it's so dark that the boss could easily get the jump on us and we won't be able to see a single thing, right?"

"Yes! Exactly!" Endless Starlight nodded his head again and again. But no one saw it, as it was too dark in the hall.

"Even if the boss standing in front of us, we wouldn't know any better!" Hundred Shots agreed.

Shush!

At this moment, a mass of phosphorescent light suddenly floated across their head. The emerald flame gave them highly limited visibility. The flame was not bright, but it was a like light bulb in this absolutely dark environment.

The flame went off once every 10 seconds, flashing on and off, and everyone moved forward by using this weak glowing flame.

"Wait a minute!" Zhang Yang suddenly stood still and turned around. Han Ying Xue, who was walking behind him, was not prepared and suddenly bumped into Zhang Yang's arms.

"Stupid Yu, you are such a jerk!" Han Ying Xue scolded in embarrassment.

"My bad! My bad!" Zhang Yang immediately said, "It should be nine of us, right?"

"Noob tank, have you just graduated from primary school? You don't even know how to count?!"

"...You guys, quick, headcount, now?!"

"1, 2, 3... 7, 8, 9!"

By using the light of floating emerald flame, everyone started to count up.

"Yes, yes, there are nine of us, stop being a soccer mom, silly Yu!"

"...Little brat, did you include yourself?"

"Of course... not!"

Everyone shivered in fear, ten of us?

"The boss is among us!" Zhang Yang said.

Shush!

The will-o'-the-wisp flashed right then, revealing the ferocious and horrible face of a complete stranger!

Zhang Yang shouted in surprised, and slashed at the boss.

‘-1,433!’

"Urgh!" a strange sound was uttered and they heard a low and hoarse voice saying, "Damn it, that hurts! I'm not going to play around anymore! I will kill all of you!"

‘-3,774!’

‘-3,824!’

Damage texts floated across Zhang Yang's head. Although the single damage was low, boss' attacks were quite frequent and it attacked at almost each second, what a relentless rate of attack!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Fortuna (Latin: Fortūna, equivalent to the Greek goddess Tyche) was the goddess of fortune and personification of luck in Roman religion.

Chapter 314: Sightless Slayer Hazel

Shush!

Another flash of light floated across them, and this time, they finally read the monster's information.

[Sightless Slayer Hazel] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Everybody started to attack the boss.

However, the hall was too dark. Besides, the doors had automatically closed when they started the battle, so they could see anything in the limitless and eternal darkness, let alone know which way they were facing!

The emerald flame flashed again for a brief moment, before the hall became completely dark again. The melee attackers could still slash blindly, as long as the boss was not moving around. However, blind rangers were as good as no rangers!

Hunters could still fire randomly in the dark and hope they hit something. However most of the Spellcasters' attack spells required casting time, and in such a dark hall, if the boss disappears from Daffodil Daydream's sight, the spell casting bar would be interrupted!

"How do we fight against this boss? We don't even know where the boss' position is!" the three ranged attackers complained.

Zhang Yang was groping in the dark, and when he felt the boss' weapon collide with his body, he immediately retaliated. Luckily, the boss did not move around constantly like players would. After Zhang Yang got hold of the boss' aggro, the boss wielded its two sharp swords and slashed at Zhang Yang nonstop. If the boss had been controlled by a player, the party would have been wiped out hundreds of times!

Shush!

The light flashed once again, and Hundred Shots and the other two ranged attackers quickly launched attacks without wasting the opportunity. Fire arrows and fire balls were randomly launched.

Annoyingly, the light would flash for about three to four seconds only, so everybody had been blindly attacking most of the time! Luckily, they were in Party Attack mode so they did not have to worry about accidentally hurting their own team members.

Although the dark environment had weakened the team's attack power, as long as they had a strong tank and a healer, they still could slowly defeat the boss! It so happened that both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were the strongest tank and healer in the server, respectively!

After about a minute, Zhang Yang found himself slashing air! He was shocked and yelled, "He disappeared!"

The party stopped attacking. Everyone was stumped. In total darkness, none dared move, fearing that they would step into a trap, or fall down the abyss if there was a sudden chasm.

Zhang Yang immediately said, "Everyone, come closer to me, hurry up!"

With their full faith in their longtime leader, everyone rallied to the sound of his voice.

"The boss is Bandit-type monster, it must have used {Vanish} just now! Do you guys still remember the Bandit-type bosses we've all fought against? Every time they emerge from {Vanish}, they will reset their aggro list! Later on, if any of you receive a sudden attack, do not fight back, let me pull the boss first!" Zhang Yang commanded.

About five to six seconds later, Han Ying Xue suddenly shouted, "Ah!" and they could see the Party column, Han Ying Xue's HP was reducing dramatically!

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang was never trained to fight in the dark, it was too difficult for him to rely on his hearing to identify the boss' position! But {Thunder Strike} was an AoE skill, as long as the enemy was within the skill range, it

would receive damage. This was the reason why Zhang Yang had told everybody to come closer to him!

‘-756!’

Although they could not see the boss’ shadow, a damage text appeared in the dark!

"Urgh! Damn! Damn you all! I just wanted to play hide and seek with you guys, why you guys are hurting me?! Why?!" Hazel roared angrily, dashed towards Zhang Yang and slashed at Zhang Yang wildly.

"Hunters step 3 meters back for your minimum range. Daffodil Daydream, please sticks with the melee attackers so that we can change positions together. Everybody, try to surround him!" Zhang Yang assigned tasks as he tanked the boss.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

The light flashed across them on occasion, but otherwise, their efficiency was greatly reduced when fighting in such a dark environment. Besides that, the boss used {Vanish} at random intervals, and attack indiscriminately whenever it revealed itself. Fortunately, Zhang Yang always caught hold of it before it could deal serious damage. Besides, everyone had good equipment, so they wouldn’t be killed off easily.

It wasn’t a particularly powerful boss, but it was surely a difficult battle.

‘Ding! Hazel has launched {Fan of Blades}!’

A system notification echoed out, Hazel’s body suddenly burst out with countless flying sword of lights, which flew towards everyone’s directions.

Many ‘-7,000’ damage texts floated across everyone’s head. Some of them even got hit twice, but with 17,000HP being the lowest maximum HP value of the party, none of them were killed.

Hazel disappeared once again!

Han Ying Xue quickly cast all sorts of healing spells such as {Healing Shower}, {Healing Bond} and {Holy Shield}.

After fighting for so long, Zhang Yang had actually figured out Hazel’s

battle pattern. Hazel would emerge from {Vanish} each time, within three to eight seconds!

1, 2!

Zhang Yang was counting in his mind, and activated {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier without hesitation!

After the skill adjustment, the current {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier acted like an Aura which sets Zhang yang as the center and radiates by a 3 meters radius. Everyone's HP was very low, even with Han Ying Xue's strong healing, it was not possible for her to heal everyone's HP up within such a short time. The boss could most likely kill its next target!

Slash!

Another three seconds later, Hazel emerged from the shadow, and used {Ambush} on Hundred Shots.

'-703!'

'-718!'

Zhang Yang stomped on the ground and activated {Thunder Strike}, which caused damage to Hazel and immediately pulled back its aggro.

Hundred Shots let out a sigh of relief and said, "Good thinking Zhan Yu! I wouldn't have survived that!"

Endless Starlight quickly said, "Uncle Hundred Shots, don't forget about me! I'm a strong tank as well!"

"Starlight, you are only slightly less perfect than Zhan Yu!" Hundred Shots quickly said.

"How am I not Zhan Yu's equal?"

"..."

Endless Starlight was definitely a competent tank, whenever the boss disappeared, Endless Starlight would cast {Devotion} among the crowd as the boss would receive damage whenever it appears nearby. At the same

time, Endless Starlight could also pull the boss' aggro immediately. Although {Devotion}'s total damage was high and it could last for 10 seconds, it was no match for {Thunder Strike}, so Zhang Yang always successfully pulled over the boss' aggro.

Zhang Yang said, "My gut feeling is that Endless Starlight would be on the list if there is any China's Top 10 Tanks or a Top 10 List of Godly Magicians in the future!"

Endless Starlight immediately laughed happily.

"Then I must be the king of Top 10 Berserkers!" Wei Yan Er was being boastful.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, I'm not sure whether will you listed in Top 10 Berserkers but someone among us must be the queen of Top 10 healers!"

"Stupid Yu!" Han Ying Xue was flustered.

Luckily, Endless Starlight had also learnt {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier, and Zhang Yang's {Rearm} would reset all his skills' cool down times, so they would be able to use three count of {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier within a short period time. On the other hand, Hazel launched {Fan of Blades} at each 20% of HP loss. When Hazel was left with 20% of HP, it finally killed a player with the combo of {Fan of Blades}, {Vanish} and {Ambush}.

However, Hazel was fated to indecently assault afterwards!

14 Minutes later, Hazel uttered a horrible scream and fell defeated.

"You guys are too fierce, I just wanted to play hide and seek with you guys!" Hazel breathed its last.

The dark hall suddenly brightened after Hazel died. It seemed that he was the source of the darkness.

"We finally defeated the boss!"

Everybody let out a sigh of relief, while Han Ying Xue used {Redemption} spell on the unlucky Fatty Han to save him.

"How many floors are there?"

Zhang Yang thought for a while and answered, "I think there are four levels, we should be on the second last floor already!"

"Let's distribute the equipment!"

Looting from the boss' corpse was still the most exciting part of a boss fight.

Wei Yan Er immediately ran to the corpse to pick up the loot.

[Immortal Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +59

Strength: +30

Dexterity: +30

Equipment: Increases chance of Critical by 1%.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 70

"This is good!" Zhang Yang nodded and immediately gave up his roll, as this necklace was more suitable for physical-type attackers.

The team threw their dices. Fatty Han won the necklace with highest points.

[Stinger Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +118

Strength: +47

Dexterity: +109

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 70

Although this was a Level 70 Yellow-Gold equipment, it was definitely the best leather armor for Level 70 players. However, the Thieves and

Hunters in the team were unwilling to part with their set equipment effects. Thus, this glove was fated to be sold in Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop.

Zhang Yang nodded, and thought to himself, "No wonder set equipment in the future would get so scarce! The effects were too strong." for example, this Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment is actually able to support players up to Level 80. Even then, Level 80 set effects aren't that much better!

As a result, level 70 equipment would be most likely skipped over.

"By the way, let's go out tomorrow!" Fatty Han suddenly sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

"Why?"

"Speed dating!"

Zhang Yang almost fell over and asked, "Are you really seeking for a spouse?"

"He he, I just registered on the website, and coincidentally, there is a big speed dating event. Let's have a look tomorrow!"

"Why ask me then?"

"I feel embarrassed, going alone!"

Zhang Yang scratched his head and said, "You are so thick-skinned, but you are actually scared of going on a speed dating event? I'm really speechless!"

"Damn, we are brothers for life. Are you helping me or not?!"

"Alright, alright. Pick me up tomorrow!"

"Tomorrow, 7.00 pm, wait for your Highness to drop by!"

"Get lost!"

Hazel did not drop any great equipment, despite being a Yellow-Gold boss. However, Hazel was merely a mini-boss in Blood Moon Castle. The great equipment should be dropped by the final boss, Red-Skinned

Beastman Lord Pilo!

Everybody continued moving forward and reached the fourth floor in castle.

The type of minions had changed to guards which carried shield. Under the team's strong attack power, the shields hardly made any difference and they were torn apart in no time.

There was an iron cage in the middle of the hall in which a female elf with white dress was held prisoner. The female elf had a graceful, slender body shape but had a massive rack, and her soft and silky long hair went straight down to her buttocks.

Zhang Yang took a look at the profile on top of the head of female elf, and he nearly burst out laughing!

This female elf was Merlinda - Song of the Forest!

She was a captive in Underground Tower and Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal. Here she is now, captive in Blood Moon Castle!

This NPC had a knack of getting caught, somehow! She's a specialist!

"You guys... Zhan Yu! Praise the Moon God, she sent a warrior to save me!" Merlinda saw everyone, especially after she saw Zhang Yang, and she instantly revealed an extremely relieved expression.

The crowd was surprised. Although all of them communicated with NPCs every day, low grade NPCs did not have "memories", and they could only communicate with the players by the preprogrammed script. However, advanced NPCs had such advanced AI that it was difficult to distinguish them from players.

Zhang Yang moved forwards and asked, "Merlinda, why are you here?"

"I have found the Elves' Staff of Treasury Prophecy and assigned my people to deliver it back to Holy Land of the Elf Athuran in Chaos Realm. Who knew that our Elder unexpectedly believed that I'm the next Priestess of the Moon appointed by Moon God and told me to go back to Holy Land of the Elf to inherit the position itself! But when I was passing here, I was

captured by this bunch of Red-Skinned Beastmen!" Merlinda looked at Zhang Yang and said, "My warrior, you must save me!"

"Tsk, stupid Yu, this pretty girl NPC seems to be interested in you!" Han Ying Xue seemed to be slightly unhappy.

"...You're jealous of an NPC?"

"Whose jealous?! Hmph!"

This pitiful Merlinda, anyhow she should already be upgraded to a Yellow-Gold boss, why is she still getting captured by others?

Zhang Yang nodded as he said, "Do not worry, we will get you out of here!"

Merlinda trusted Zhang Yang and nodded confidently as she said, "The key to unlocking this cage is with Beastman Lord Pilo. You guys must defeat him to get the key!"

‘Ding! Your relationship with Merlinda is now improved!’

Inexplicably, Zhang Yang received a system notification.

Chapter 315: Beastman Lord

Besides Merlinda, there were no other NPCs. Zhang Yang and the gang looked at each other and focused their sight on the grille at the end of the hall.

"Let's go!"

There was a long corridor which was connected to staircase after they opened up the grille. Everybody followed the staircase and reached the top of the castle.

It was an outdoor environment and the wind was violent. The entire ground on this floor was all flat, and the area was larger than a football field. The nine of them stood there like insignificant ants.

A Red-Skinned Beastman stood magnificently not far from them. Its height was three meters tall with ripped abs. Its muscular arms were much thicker than an ordinary people's thighs! The Red-Skinned Beastman was holding a giant axe, where it puffed its chest out in an imposing fashion!

[Red-Skinned Beastman Lord Pilo] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 2,400

It was a Violet-Platinum boss!

Everybody was astonished, as this was the third Violet-Platinum boss they met. The first Violet-Platinum boss was defeated by Smaug's phantom, the second Violet-Platinum boss was killed by the power of the entirety of Lone Desert Smoke!

Now there were only nine of them, could they defeat this boss?

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Let's try this once, if it's clearly impossible, I will summon Smaug's phantom as a last resort!"

"Wait a minute!" when Zhang Yang wanted to move forwards, but Wei

Yan Er stopped him suddenly. Wei Yan Er suddenly summoned her [Fire Chocobo Chick] and smiled. "We are able to use mounts here!"

Everyone was speechless. No genius would have seen this coming. It was only because the little girl simply felt like peeking at her pet mount at that moment!

Still, this meant that four of them could use their battle mounts now, it would really make a huge difference to their combat effectiveness! Although Zhang Yang had the {Beast Taming} skill and he could use his mount as a battle pet at any place, a combination of their hitpoints would do wonders for him!

"Let's fight!" Zhang Yang got atop his Whitey, lifted his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and at his command, the great bear let out a roar and charged at the boss.

Those who had pet mounts also followed him closely.

"Bold intruders, how dare you step into my domain!" Pilo suddenly shouted and it lifted its axe, "How did you guys come in? My domain is impregnable and indestructible, how could these stinking little pests come in? Are you guys colluding with spies in this castle? Hmph, who is so bold to actually betray me, I'm going to slash that spy into pieces and behead that spy' entire bloodline! Could it be Slane, the bastard who wants to overthrow my throne? Damn it, all of you are fools, after this, I'm going to kill Slane, that traitor!"

This boss was a paranoid one. Zhang Yang and the rest had not uttered a word but the boss was already coming up with all sorts of presumptions!

Slash!

The boss swung its axe and Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield and used {Block}.

Dang!

Zhang Yang and Whitey were knocked three steps back!

"En, this boss is very strong! Just like me in real life!" Fatty Han said.

Wei Yan Er quickly stuck her tongue out and said, "Pervy fatty, the boss' arms are much thicker than your thighs, stop bragging!"

Fatty Han said serious, "I never brag! If I started bragging, the Earth would go upside down, the Moon would be out of its orbit! Do you know how did Chang'e escape to the Moon? I blew her up to the Moon with a single breath!"

Everyone was speechless. Even Endless Starlight also said, "Brother Fatty, too much bro, too much. I wanted to help at first, but I don't even know how to carry on!"

‘-10,174!’

Pilo started the second attack with its axe. Zhang Yang had to take the damage head on!

"Ha ha, let's have some fun!" the boss turned its giant axe the other way round and struck the ground with it, as if he was using a sledgehammer!

Suddenly, a countless amount of sharpened spears popped out from the ground!

However, the spears did not strike all corners of the map, but instead struck different spots at a time. There were two variations, and they were divided by squares, it was as if all the white squares on a chessboard were lighting up, before the black squares followed.

Everyone was spread out, so only some of the party members were hit. However, those who were unlucky, got hit for ‘-5000’ damage.

The sudden, unpredictable attack startled everyone.

Fortunately, everyone's HP was almost 20,000 points. Even if they received another spear attack, they would not be killed!

Three seconds later, the sharpen spears struck out from the ground once again and the "Qiang Qiang Qiang" sound was made as the spears skewered the air.

The spears were alternating between the ‘white’ squares and ‘black’ squares.

These people were not stupid. In fact, all of them were professional. They immediately understood the spears' attack pattern and started moving accordingly.

The battle was started and it was totally different compared to their boss fights. This battle required everyone to constantly change position. Otherwise, '-5,000' of damage texts would appear continuously. Han Ying Xue had to cast healing mainly on Zhang Yang, so she did not have enough time to take care of the rest. At most, she could only throw {Regeneration} on them whenever she managed to find the time!

Qiang! Qiang! Qiang!

This battle scene was very spectacular, countless of sharp spears struck towards the sky time and again!

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were so busy counting the timing of the spears and changing position that they did not even have the time to talk nonsense. Otherwise, they would definitely have started a joke about getting their asses impaled or something.

Pilo caused about 10,000 points of damage on Zhang Yang for each attack and Pilo attacked every two seconds. Zhang Yang could use {Block} every six seconds, resulting in him taking 3,000 damage per second. This was close to Han Ying Xue's limit.

However, Pilo's defense value was too high, even if Zhang Yang weakened Pilo's defense value by 50%, Pilo still had about 1,200 defense values. Also, as the team had to constantly run about, their damage output had decreased significantly.

Like emptying the tank of an oil tanker, one drip at a time, they slowly worked on the boss.

Seven minutes later, Pilo's HP was down to 80%

"Hah, I never thought you guys would last this long! Ha ha, I will let you guys try something else more powerful now!" Pilo laughed madly.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Flames were rapidly spewed out from the left and right, and instantly, the entire ground turned into a sheet of flames. Each flame was three meters wide and nearly took up the entire 'square' that the spears sprouted out from. Luckily, there were three meter wide gaps between each flame, which were the safe zones for the players.

'-8,000' damage text appeared above the heads of those who got scorched!

"F*ck, did this boss come from circus, what's with all these stage effects?!" Lost Dream could not help but yelled.

"Stop complaining, quickly figure out how these flames work!"

The flames activated every three seconds, but with the boss and the spears, they couldn't figure it out. If it was anyone other than the peerless healer, Han Ying Xue keeping them alive, they would have been wiped out already!

After running about in panic, they finally caught the pattern. But everyone's HP had already been drastically reduced at this point. Han Ying Xue could only cast {Regeneration} when she was able.

77%, 74%, 71%... After they were able to stabilize the battle, Pilo's HP resumed with its slow but steady descent.

"You fools, why you guys are not dead yet?!" Pilo swung its axe at Zhang Yang's head. Fortunately, due to all the gimmicks from the stage, this boss did not have any powerful skills, other than {Dividing Slash}. As long as they did not stand in front of this boss, they would not receive damage from {Dividing Slash}.

"Stinky boss, you are the one who should die!" Wei Yan Er shot back.

"Little brat, you are indulging in online games all day long. If you were born 20 years earlier and met 'professor Yang and professor Tao2' then you would have been the one suffering!"

"Who are 'professor Yang and professor Tao'?"

Another six to seven minutes later, Pilo's HP had been reduced to 60%!

"Damn it, these stinking little pests actually have some skills! It seems like I really need to be very serious this time!" Pilo howled loudly, "My courtiers and people, it is the time for all of you to serve your King!"

‘Ding! Pilo has released [Summoned Guards]!’

"Grr..." suddenly, nine fully armed Red-Skinned Beastmans spawned hundred meters away from the crowd and uttered a crazy howl before rushed towards Zhang Yang and the gang, swinging various weapons.

[Pilo's Guard] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

It seemed like the number of the guard boss summoned was based on the number of the players in the battle! This was where a small party would shine. Otherwise, hundreds of thousands of monsters would have spawned and overwhelmed the team. For a small group of elite players however, it was a different story!

"Starlight, start kiting the minions and call for us once you have them all. The rest of you, clear them up, then come back to me!" Zhang Yang commanded. He paused for a while and looked at surrounding to make sure that there were no more surprises like spears and flames, and then he said, "Also use the [Summoned Soldier] to show the boss that not only it can summon minions!"

"Noob tank, 1,000 gold coins are required for each summon!"

"... Alright, you can apply for reimbursement!"

"That's great!" Wei Yan Er happily used [Summoned Soldier].

Pa! Pa! Pa!

More and more human soldiers popped out. As Fatty Han and the rest had also completed the quests of the Coyotes camp and obtained [Summoned Soldier], they too started summoning.

[Veteran of Coyotes Camp] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 70

HP: 70,000

Defense: 400

Although the Veterans of Coyotes Camp were slightly weaker than the Red-Skinned Beastmans summoned by the boss, they were still very strong!

Endless Starlight dashed towards the nine guards and started to pull the monsters, using {Devotion}. The summoned Veterans of Coyotes Camp charged at the Red-Skinned Beastmen.

Translator Notes

1Chang'e or Chang-o, originally known as Heng'e, is the Chinese goddess of the Moon. She is the subject of several legends in Chinese mythology.

2'Professor Yang and professor Tao' started the treatments of online gaming addiction by using traditional Chinese medicine, Western medicine and even electric shock at China in the year of 2004.

Chapter 316: The Third Violet-Platinum Boss

At first, it was a nine versus one fight. Now, it became an all-out chaotic skirmish!

In terms of strength, the guards summoned by Pilo were much more powerful, but Endless Starlight was also a top tank with the best equipment, good intuition and control. Thus, he easily pulled five monsters and left another four monsters to the Summoned Soldiers to deal with.

Although the Summoned Soldiers had weaker attack power than players, they had vastly more HP. They would serve as good tanks!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest tentatively switched their targets and attacked the elite guards. With their strong attack power, the elite guards were killed, one after another.

The nine elite guards all fell defeated in less than three minutes. Because the guards were summoned, as a result, their corpses quickly disappeared without any loots! While at Zhang Yang's side, the nine Veterans of Coyotes Camp had lost most of their HP, but none of them had killed. Besides, Han Ying Xue simply threw {Regeneration} on them and their HP started to increase!

"Unfortunately, these veterans cannot gain levels. How nice if they could gain level up to Level 80 or 90!" Hundred Shots lamented.

"Only three charges remaining, it would be pointless even if they could!" Lost Dream shook his head and ran towards Pilo.

Zhang Yang commanded, "Veteran, attack this Red-Skinned savage!"

"Yes, sir!" Zhang Yang's summoned soldier immediately saluted Zhang Yang and rushed towards Pilo, brandishing his spear.

"Wow, very impressive!" Wei Yan Er's eyes shone brightly and pointed at her summoned soldier and then commanded, "Veteran, sing a song!"

"Yes, sir!" Wei Yan Er's summoned soldier raised his chest up and sang, "Sister doesn't open her mouth, sister is not talking, what is sister thinking..."

Everybody gaped at the soldier!

Zhang Yang felt like fainting on the spot and groaned, "Little brat, stop playing around. Quickly, hit the boss!"

"Sigh, I see everybody fighting so hard. I thought I could make my veteran sing you guys a song as a morale boost!" Wei Yan Er shrugged her shoulders and raised her hands then continued,

"Veteran, although I wanted to give you a 'Yes', I have no choice as the rest of the people do not agree! Do not worry, true gold will always shine anywhere, someone out there would appreciate your talents!"

"This is... talent show?"

"Little brat changed her favorite genre again!"

After the nine veterans had joined them, the team's attack power increased significantly. In addition to that, the map no longer spat our spears or flames. As a result, they attacked Pilo with ease.

50%!

"My fellow courtiers and people, quickly, show yourselves, and fight for your King!" the boss yelled loudly once again.

Shush, shush, shush!

Nine elite guards spawned hundreds of meters away from the crowd once again. Nine elite guards shouted loudly and rushed towards Zhang Yang and the gang.

Endless Starlight had already lifted his hammer and shield and had dashed towards the elite guards without Zhang Yang's command. The crowd also sent their veteran NPCs towards the elite guards. The veteran NPCs' HP bars were already full with {Regeneration}!

Zhang Yang did not waste any opportunity to fling {Spear of Obliterations} at the distant elite guards. Every little bit of help would

count. Wei Yan Er also followed suit. Her melee attack was up to about 4,800, so the damage caused was quite significant!

After clearing the second wave of minions, all of them turned around and continued attacking the boss.

40%!

For the third time, Pilo summoned the nine elite guards.

Everyone thought that the boss would change its attack pattern at every 20% reduction of its HP, but there was no change this time! They had already adapted to these elite guards, and the third wave was taken out even sooner!

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Their bodies hit the ground uneventfully.

30%!

"Stinking little pests, I may have underestimated you guys!" Pilo stared them with bloody red eyes then howled, "More! More minions! Crush all these silly intruders!"

Shush!

18 Elite guards appeared!

This time, everyone was slightly nervous. If all 18 of these elite monsters surrounded and fought against a player, even Zhang Yang himself would succumb after two or three rounds of attacks!

"Send the veterans ahead. Starlight, don't be a hero and just do what you can!" Zhang Yang immediately commanded, "If the veterans die, summon them again. They have no cooldown periods! Just another 1,000 coins!"

"Noob tank, I..."

"Apply for reimbursement! Apply for reimbursement!" Zhang Yang did not wait for Wei Yan Er to finish her words.

The Veterans may be lower in level, but it did not really matter! In 'God's Miracle', levels had a hard bracket at every 10 levels. For example, a level

79 monster would be slightly stronger than a level 70 monster, but they would be outrightly outclassed by level 80 monsters!

The disadvantage of Zhang Yang's team was they were outnumbered. Although Endless Starlight had pulled six monsters, the other nine players still had to fight twelve monsters at once. Suddenly, the battle became a lot harder!

Luckily, they could use [Summoned Soldiers] three times without waiting for a cool down period. Therefore, they could immediately summon the Veteran again when the Veterans fell!

After seven Veterans were killed, they finally cleared all the 18 elite guards! Still, the veterans had a 10 minute duration. The remaining ones would disappear too, in time to come!

20%!

Another 18 elite guards had been spawned again!

"Ha ha ha, stinking little pests, I have the best soldiers and the strongest war horses, my soldiers are going to kill all of you!" Pilo shouted, and the eighteen Arhats rapidly rushed towards Zhang Yang's gang.

"Oh my god, why is it not over yet?!"

Zhang Yang was frowning as he said, "Perhaps the boss would summon 27 to 36 elite monsters when its HP drops to 10%. That would really be trouble!"

"No time to worry about that, hurry up and clear all these minions first!" Han Ying Xue cried. She was already pushing past her limit. Any more pressure, and she might slip up, and someone may die, leading to a cascade failure.

Having learned slightly from the previous wave, they only lost 4 veterans this time.

10%!

Boss' body started to turn into bloody red and its damage output instantly skyrocketed as it roared wildly!

‘Ding! Pilo has entered Berserk state, damage output increased by 20%!’

At first, Han Ying Xue could scarcely heal Zhang Yang’s HP, but now she could only panic and and stare helplessly as the boss turned into a Berserk state!

Zhang Yang quickly activated [Merlinda's Ring of Grateful], drank health recovery potion and tried to reduce Han Ying Xue’s healing pressure. Zhang Yang kept {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} for last! 5%!

"Warriors of Blood Moon Castle, come and fight for your King!" Pilo shouted as it lifted its axe!

36 Elite guards appeared hundred meters away!

It was not just the normal 36 normal monsters, but the genuine elite monsters!

Everyone was instantly astounded!

"Let’s use the Veterans to fight the elite monsters, try to hold up against them as long as possible, and we will focus on defeating the boss! Regardless of whether the minions disappear after the boss is killed, at least we complete the quest requirement!" Zhang Yang said as he commanded his Veteran to rush towards the terrifying wave of elite guards.

The rest of the people also sent out their Veterans as they attacked the boss without wasting any second.

The nine Veterans were able to hold up eighteen elite guards for a long time, but these nine Veterans collapsed was faster when they faced the 36 elite guards. Horrible shrieks and bodies fell every 10 seconds!

The corresponding players quickly summoned other new Veterans to replenish their numbers. In total, they had used their [Summoned Soldiers] 16 times. After another 11 summons, they ran out of uses!

During this time, the boss was left with less than 3% HP, which was a total of 220,000 HP!

"I will activate {Vanguard's Aggression} protective barrier!" Endless Starlight shouted, immediately lifted his shining blue armor and shrouding all the people within the protection barrier. At the same time, Endless Starlight also used both {Strong Hammer} and {Devotion} to pull the six elite guards.

Endless Starlight waited until the last moment before multiple weapons struck him, and activated {Sacred Protection}, granting him invincibility!

Endless Starlight used the five seconds of invincibility to its fullest!

3, 2, 1!

The moment the effect was over, he took one wave of attacks which almost emptied out his 20,000 HP entirely! He quickly activated {Sacred Protection} and recovered his HP! However, that would only buy him a second or two at most!

At this time, Zhang Yang had activated {Vanguard's Aggression's} protective barrier while also activating {Shield Wall} at the same time! Endless Starlight's {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier was already fading.

"Quickly, kill the boss!"

Everyone let out their warcries!

140,000! 110,000! 90,000! 70,000!

{Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier's duration ended! Zhang Yang quickly used {Rearm} to end all skills' cool down, and then activated {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier once again!

50,000! 30,000! 10,000!

"No..." when Pilo was left with only 10,000 HP, it actually turned tail and started fleeing!

"F*ck, what kind of boss is this? It actually wants to escape!"

Caught off-guard by the boss' sudden move, the gang stood rooted to their spots for a moment, before coming to their senses and giving chase. If they dragged the fight any long, they would definitely be overwhelmed

by the elite monsters in no time.

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er threw {Spear of Obliterations} toward the boss which caused a total of about 6,000 damage. Daffodil Daydream also quickly used {Fire Blast}, and a '-2,812' damage text appeared above Pilo's head.

Just a little bit more!

Luckily, they had Hunters in the team. When the boss ran out of the 3-meter minimum range, the Hunters launched their arrows!

'-3,012!'

'-3,362!'

"Argh..." Pilo got shot in the back of its knees, the final bit of his HP bar fading away. Pilo fell on his face and tried to crawl forward, "I'm the Lord of Red-Skinned Beastman, I could have ruled the entire Beastman, conquer the whole continent, but I got an arrow to my knee.."

'Ding! You and the party members around have killed Pilo. Obtained 888,938 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!'

Chapter 317: Alchemist's Intuition

The instant when Pilo died, the 36 elite guards vanished in a puff of smoke at the same instant, and the assaults were put to an end, leaving everyone with great relief.

"Quickly, let's see what the boss dropped for us!"

Anyone would be crazy about the loots of a Violet-Platinum boss, so everyone was a little excited about it. They circled around the dead body of the boss. Poor boss, not only he was shot in the knee, but he also had to bear the humiliation of being studied like a exhibition showpiece after his death!

The first thing they managed to recover from the loots was a dark key, known to be used to open up shackles that were specially designed to special characters such as Merlinda.

The second trophy they recovered from their victory was a piece of [recipe] for a specific profession.

[Recipe: Alchemist's Intuition]

Usage: Teaches you Alchemist;s Intuition.

Require: Professional Alchemy.

Bound upon picking up.

"Why is it bound upon picking up!" Zhang Yang could not help but to grind his teeth, because if not, he could have given this recipe to Yu Li for her to learn the skill. But now, only one of his party members could claim it now!

And among the entire party, he was the only one that is a Professional Alchemist!

Only he would gain something out of it.

"Silly Yu, is that good?" Han Ying Xue was asking him while blinking her large eyes.

Zhang Yang patted the recipe on his chest and acquired the skill, and

then he posted the description of the recipe onto the party channel.

[Alchemist's Intuition]: Every time when you craft a potion, there is a certain rate that the crafted potion will transmute, adding a new effect upon it's initial effect. There are 10 levels of transmutation in total, the higher the level of the transmutation, the better the additional effect will be, ranging from 10% to 100%.

"Wow! This skill is awesome!" Everyone was caught by surprise!

But Zhang Yang was smiling bitterly, because he initially intended to delete Alchemy profession and pick another profession that would be more suitable for PvP. This sudden acquisition got him good, forcing him to abandon his initial thoughts! He shook his head again and again and complained, "Looks like I'm forced to craft some potions now and then now, huh?"

"Haha, generosity will always be rewarded!"

"Holy god, you guys are just going to sit there, waiting to get free potions from me, right?!" Zhang Yang gave out a breath of sigh. After he masters [Alchemist's Intuition], he would instantly become a god-like being in his profession, not only could he no longer delete his current profession, he would also need [Herbalism] to enhance his profession further!

Players who were focused on [Herbalism] tended to be lower leveled, but high-level potions required high-level herbs, so he could only rely on himself!

He should just give up on [Smithing] then, since he picked that profession only for the [Shield Blueprint] in the Level 10 dungeon in order to be able to earn an initial amount of gold in the beginning of the game! Now that his earnings from his territory and the Little Merchandize Shop are on track, he no longer needed it.

[Boots of Brutality] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +189

Agility: +81

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"Little girl, you just struck jackpot!" Zhang Yang threw the pair of boots to Wei Yan Er.

But Wei Yan Er was shaking her head about and said, "I want [Armor Set]!"

"Armor Set, your head!" Zhang Yang flicked his finger against the shiny forehead of Wei Yan Er and said, "Do you think [Armor Sets] come raining from the skies? Don't be so d*mn greedy. Plus, these boots are not bound upon equipping, just take it for now and use it first. When you get your new [Armor Set] later, you can sell these boots for money!"

Wei Yan Er gave some thoughts about it for a while, and did as he said, with a joyous smile.

"I know all of you are waiting for [Armor Sets], but don't get your hopes up too high, after level 80, [Armor Sets] come as rare as they go! Violet-Platinum grade is one level higher than Yellow-Gold grade. One piece alone would already surpass the [Armor Set] of your Yellow-Gold stuff!" Zhang Yang spoke straight to the point, "When we start exploring level 80 maps, you'll find that your level 60 Yellow-Gold sets would be good up till Yellow-Gold bosses, but once we meet a Violet-Platinum boss, it would be doom, for us all! The battle with Polo just now was just an appetizer! The defense of the boss was as high as 2,400, so what can those baby Yellow-Gold equipment do to it?"

The gang nodded in realization. Things had been going too well for them these days, and they had been steamrolling through bosses without a hitch, giving them a sense of misguided invincibility, thinking that they could reach the sky with a single bound and switch all their Level 60 Yellow-Gold [Armor Set] to all Level 80 Violet-Platinum [Armor Set] equipment!

[Spiky Helmet] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Agility: +378

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

This time, the two thieves and the two hunters were tossing for points to compete for the equipment, and by the end of it, Hundred Shots won, with 91 points.

[Ring of Beastman's Ancestor] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +141

Use: Releases the soul of the Beastman's ancestors, inflicting massive damage to the enemies, lasts for 10 seconds. Cool down: 24 hours. When equipped with this ring, the player will be cursed by the soul of Beastman's ancestor, and cannot remove the ring for 24 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

After coming across the ring, everyone was looking into each others faces. Although the description stated that it could inflict massive damage to enemies, that value was not specified. Other than having the attribute of vitality, there were no other attributes on the ring. Also, the cool down of the item effect is as long as 24 hours! What's even more unacceptable was that the cooldown and the binding shared the same duration - 24 hours! After the 24-hour cool down, are you going to take it off or use it again?

Dilemma!

Lost Dream said, "It better be powerful, or else it's a shitty deal to have it stuck on you for 24 hours!"

"Let's toss for points to decide who has it!"

Zhang Yang outrolled them all with a total of 89, successfully keeping the ring. As it is, rings that only add vitality points were far more useful for tankers to have.

[Gaunlets of Peaceful Soul] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +282

Intelligence: +189

Spirit: +81

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

Daffodil Daydream and Han Ying Xue tossed the dice. However, Han Ying Xue was out of luck this time and the item was taken by Daffodil Daydream.

The boss dropping a total of 4 pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment in one shot. It was considered to be a highly generous act already! Other than that, there were also other nine pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, and all of the equipment were distributed among them all one by one. The remaining equipment pieces that were not wanted by anyone of them were tossed at the Little Merchandise for sales. Out of it all, Zhang Yang obtained a pair of boots.

[Blazing Defensive Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Strength: +54

Agility: +27

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"Let's go, off to rescue the lady priestess!"

The gang went back to the forth floor of the castle, when Merlinda was pleased to see the return of Zhang Yang, her face lighting up. "Zhan Yu, are you holding up fine?"

"What a bias NPC, we had also fought so hard, but she only concern for Zhang Yang alone!" Fatty Han was pouring out his grievance.

It was all because Zhang Yang was the one who triggered Merlinda's dialogue in the first place, so she would only have eyes for him!

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and said, "I'm alright, and we can actually get you out of here, right now!"

He took out the key and unlocked the prison door, and Merlinda immediately walked right out from the prison chamber with her white dress that looks bright and clear, and she looked just like a goddess of the moon, her beauty unmatched in the entire world.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Rescue the Priestess of Moon, acquired 1,000,000 experience points! Quest duration: 4 hours 36 minutes 58 seconds, quest appraisal: Perfect! The result has been added into the appraisal of the Main Story Linking Quest!' Everyone received the voice notification from the system, but they did not receive any rewards immediately after, obviously they had not completed the final part of the quest yet.

"Now, let us take leave of this forsaken place!" Merlinda told the gang.

{Hair Dryer} could only be used once, furthermore, it can only teleport players into castle, not out of the castle. So the gang could only fight their way towards the exit of the place. It was actually a good thing since they could actually harvest more experience points on their way out. After another three or four hours, they arrived at the outside of the castle.

But it did not mean that they had escaped yet!

The Blood Moon Castle is surrounded by a tall castle wall all around, and there were many Magic Cannons placed right on the wall. Therefore, one cannot simply climb to the top of the wall and jump over, the fall

would kill them!

--- they had to locate the main gate before getting themselves out of there!

"Zhan Yu, we must destroy every single one of the Magic Cannon if we plan to get out of here in one piece! Or else, these Magic Cannons will blow us to smithereens!" Merlinda turned over to Zhang Yang.

'Ding! Merlinda has given you a quest: Destroy the Magic Cannons, accept or decline? This quest is linked to the Main Story Linking Quest, complete the Main Story Linking Quest to acquire luxurious rewards!"

What else to think about it? Of course they're accepting it!

[Destroy the Magic Cannons] (Quest difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Destroy 32 Magic Cannons on the wall of Blood Moon Castle, create conditions for a safe escape from Blood Moon Castle!

Completion: Destroyed Magic Cannon 0/32

Going up along the stairs to the top of the castle wall, the gang began to sweep through the monsters in the clockwise direction. They also hacked the Magical Cannons to pieces that they encountered along the way.

The number of the monsters on castle wall was far more higher than the number of monsters within the castle, and all of them were elite-grade, brutal and deadly! But at the same time, they also had the super healer Merlinda at their side, who healed 5% of their health every second! That was totally unbelievable!

Furthermore, the {Higher Regeneration} of the NPC affected multiple targets at the same time like an AOE effect. With just a gentle lift of her hands up, everyone was buffed with a {Higher Regeneration}, healing once in every 30 seconds, and players with higher health points were having the time of their lives, being healed by percentages!

"Witchy Snow, seems like you need to get a boob job! She's outhealing you, outboobing you too!" Zhang Yang teased her.

Wei Yan Er immediately took the opportunity to tease Han Ying Xue as

well, "That's right! It's not like yours are really that much bigger than everyone else, so stop feeling happy about yourself all day and night!"

Han Ying Xue obviously took great pride in her perfect pair, so she glared at both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er and said, "You two are just saying that the grapes are sour because you can't have it, just envy on! I'm not going to fall for it!"

With the healing support of {Higher Regeneration} from Merlinda, Zhang Yang had no fear at all! With a few gentle pats on the Whitey's head, he charged right into the horde and began to slash like crazy! {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave} were activated one after another, activating the special effect of his [Dark Enigmatic Sword]!

Now that he mounted onto his [Mount], boosting his health points to exceed 60,000, and the {Higher Regeneration} healed him by 3,000 health points every time, and with the addition of Han Ying Xue's healing, he had become truly undefeatable! As he basically steamrolled over the monsters, the gang arrived at the position of the first Magic Cannon without much effort. From there, they began to destroy the Cannon!

Endless Starlight looked upon Zhang Yang with envious eyes and he said, "I must get a [Mount] for myself as well!"

For a tanker, the damage boost from having a [Mount] was not that important, the real uttermost importance was the massive boost in health points, giving tankers a massive boost on their survival ability!

[First Level Magic Cannon] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 1000

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er joined hands and stacked their {Cripple Defense} onto the cannon to bring down the defense of the Magic Cannon down to 500 points. Then, the gang laid waste to it! The 1,000,000 health points of the cannon was no match at all with the assaults of the gang. In just a few moments, the Magic Cannon was turned into a pile of scrap

metal!

Zhang Yang could not help but to think, "If only these Magic Cannons could be brought back to the Thunderstorm Castle, they would have been a great addition to the territory's defense!" There are only three Magic Cannons on the walls of Thunderstorm Castle, they'll quickly be overrun by a force large enough. If it weren't for Zhang Yang's [Friendship Jade] back then, Thunderstorm Castle would have been completely leveled down to the ground!

"Hehe, never thought that you would be so sensitive towards money and gold!" Wei Yan Er patted Zhang Yang's shoulder.

It was actually called putting material resources to good use, and the little hypocrite was actually calling him out for something she was known for herself! Zhang Yang shook his head again and again, and finally said, "Let's keep moving forward!"

Although there were numerous elite monsters appearing along their way, however, under the terrifying advance of the gang, every single one of the monsters quickly fell! One Magic Cannon, two Magic Cannons, three Magic Cannons... 30 Magic Cannons, 31 Magic Cannons!

At last, they had arrived in front of the final Magic Cannon on the wall. They got to work.

"Intruders, stop it right there! Now!" a thunderous roar was heard, and they saw was a large dragon flying over them, a shadow suddenly jumped from the back of the two-legged dragon, ascending down from the sky. The blazing light behind the shadow was so blinding as if the light was coming out from a raging sun. The party was forced to shield their eyes.

Boom!

The shadow descended with a loud bang, and a red-skinned, imposing, giant of a beastman appeared right by the upside of the Magic Cannon. The beastman had a shield in its left hand and a long spear in its right, with a set of metallic heavy armor on the entire body, which rattled, due to the aftershock of its violent landing.

[Soldier Captain Slane] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 1,500

"Who are you people? How bold of you to trespass into the territory of the Blood Moon Castle and have your way there?" Slane was shouting in rage. And when his sight was set upon Merlinda, he frowned and asked, "How did you get out of there? Pilo that imbecile, he just wouldn't listen, insisting on having some sort of wedding! What a joke! If it were up to me, I would have simply ended you on the spot and be done with it! All the cubs are born the same!"

The boss spoke in a very barbaric manner, and the pretty ladies were all blushing in embarrassment. Meanwhile, Fatty Han was left with his jaw slack, and he muttered, "Well, damn! That's what I call an idol to be looked up upon! Straight to the point, I like it!"

"You barbaric beastman, today you shall pay for all your insolent acts!" Merlinda pointed at Slane while talking in a huffed manner.

Although she had not yet officially become the Priestess of the Moon, but she definitely had the stature of being one soon, standing tall and regal!

"Hahaha, since you have escaped, that would only mean that imbecile Pilo is already dead!" Slane held up his spear with a firm grip and let out a big laugh, "Very well, from now on, I am the new King of the Red-Skinned Beastmen! I declare, that you intruders must all die! As for you, my noble priestess, you shall become my woman and give birth to a child of god, for me!"

Chapter 318: Dance of Heaven and Earth

After a bunch of crap talk, the battle was triggered immediately.

It wasn't that Zhang Yang and his gang did not want to initiate the battle, but it was because the game had entered a cutscene, and they could only speak at that point!

Shoof! Zhang Yang initiated the battle with a {Charge}.

Although Slane was only a Yellow-Gold boss, his attacks were extremely brutal, and he constantly activated {Tornado Cleave}, inflicting high damage to any players around him. Regrettably for the boss, now that Zhang Yang and the gang had Merlinda on their side, her constant healing had turned the tables!

Even without Merlinda on their side, Zhang Yang and the gang could just carry out some tactics and bring down Slane --- afterall, they managed to slay a Violet-Plantinum boss all by themselves, what could a slightly above average Yellow-Gold boss do to them? Now that Merlinda was supporting them, the battle had become a cakewalk for them! They only remained where they were, ignoring the attacks of the boss, because they could!

In the case of Wei Yan Er, where she has to carefully manage the rage points that she has on hand, she simply embraced the damage inflicted upon her, now! With basically infinite rage points, she could just activate her skills at will, as long they were already cooled down!

With all the crazy skills and attacks thrown on him, Slane was slaughtered alive within 8 minutes!

"Sigh, he could be the king of the beastmen, and he chose to stand his ground and die by our hands! This is called committing suicide, even the gods and fairies wouldn't be able to save him!" Fatty Han put his palms against each other and made a posture of praying to the buddha, "Farewell, my respected idol!"

"He left behind a number of Yellow-Gold equipment, at least!" Wei Yan

Er went up with joy to pick up the loots that were left on the ground by the boss.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The rest of the gang destroyed the last Magic Cannon with their joint attacks.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Destroy the Magic Cannons, acquired 1,000,000 experience points!’

Slane dropped a total of four pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, six pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, all of them being Level 80 equipment. The gang were no longer expecting a huge transition to a Violet-Platinum set anymore, so the four Yellow-Gold equipment were distributed among them. Of course, they did not spare any of the Gray-Silver equipment a second glance, so the rest of all equipment would be taken back to the Little Merchandize for sales.

Merlinda gazed into the distance and said, "Zhan Yu, all Magic Cannons have been destroyed, we can leave now!"

‘Ding! Merlinda has given you a quest: Escape from the Blood Moon Castle, accept or decline? This quest is linked to the Main Story Linking Quest, complete the Main Story Linking Quest to acquire luxurious rewards!’

Of course they accepted it!

[Escape from the Blood Moon Castle] (Difficulty: C-rank)

Description: You have successfully destroyed the defense of Blood Moon Castle, grab the opportunity to escape now!

Completion: Escape from the Blood Moon Castle 0/1

This quest is only ranked as C-rank, obviously it was a simple one. The gang gave a breath of relief as they stepped out of the walls.

No longer in battle, those who were without a [Battle Mount] were summoning their [Mounts] one after another. Merlinda had also summoned a white tiger.

Wei Yan Er's eyes sparkled and she said, "Aww, what a cute, massive cat!"

"... Little girl, if you are to go to the zoo full of wild animals, I'm sure the tigers would appreciate your attention!"

The gang headed towards the elvish camp site.

"Master Thea!" Merlinda immediately jumped down from her [Mount] and walked towards Thea, "I could never imagine that you would personally come forth! Your noble presence puts me to shame, I am not worthy of it!"

"Merlinda, you are the new Priestess of the Moon, soon after, you complete the ritual back in the sacred land of ours, and you will become the leader of the Moon Elves! Your stature shall be even far greater than mine!" Thea smiled gently and turned to Zhang Yang and the gang to thank them, "Adventurers, you have completed the quest, I would like to express my gratitude on behalf of the entire race of the Moon Elves!"

She bowed gently at Zhang Yang and the gang, and the elvish warriors behind her, knelt down on one knee. It was a bone-chilling scene!

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Escape from the Blood Moon Castle, acquired 200,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have completed the Main Story Linking Quest: Hope to the Race of Elves! Appraisal: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have acquired Luck Attribute +1!'

'Ding! You have acquired a skill book {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!'

[Skill Book: Dance of the Heaven and Earth]

Use: Teach you the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}.

Required profession: None

Required Level: 70

Bound upon pick up.

This skill can actually be learned by any profession!

The gang all found that they had all been rewarded with the same [Skill Book: Dance of the Heaven and Earth].

"... We'll only talk about this after learning it!" Everyone tapped the skill books on themselves and learned the skill. Since the skill books are bound to the players who picked them up, they could only learn the skill for themselves.

[Dance of the Heaven and Earth]: Activates a devastating assault upon the enemy, inflicting Chaos Damage of 10,000 for every second! Lasts for 10 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Cool down: 24 hours.

That would mean a total damage of 100,000 points in one single activation! Furthermore, chaos attribute damage ignores defense and magic resistance, which meant that 100,000 damage would always be inflicted!

Everyone drew a collective breath --- this amount of damage is just brutal! Even if Zhang Yang mounted on his [Battle Mount], he would not survive that!

The gang was overjoyed except for Zhang Yang, he was the only one who sighed lightly at aside. This {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} is the best skill for the current stage of the game, but the weakness of this skill was that it would soon be phased out in the later stages of the game. It could not be upgraded, and would still deal the same amount of damage upon players reaching Level 200!

If a tanker stacked up on more damage reduction passives, they could still turn themselves completely immune to the attack! Furthermore, with the improvement of equipment over time, the health points of the players will increase as well. So, this {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was only a temporary gimmick, and even then, it could only be used as a final resort in a battle, as it had a long cool down of 24 hours.

"In the upcoming Professional League Championship in few days time, let's just throw our {Dance of Heaven and Earth} at all of our opponents at the same time, then we shall become the champions!" Fatty Han was excited, as his PvP abilities were lacking, but it shouldn't be too difficult to

activate one skill, was it?

Everyone nodded to express their agreement! If the number of players who learned this skill increased, PvP matches will become meaningless. It would turn into a cowboy match of seeing who pulls the trigger first, and who had more health points to outlast their opponent!

In the future, the arena would forbid the use of powerful skills that had a cool down time of more than 10 minutes!

Zhang Yang could only keep this to himself. Afterall, even the beta players will never be able to foresee this kind of future development, and he cannot leak the future to anyone, so he could only bury this fact deep down in his heart until it happens.

"Fellow adventurers, please stay for the night and have a good rest. Tomorrow, we shall depart for the sacred land of Chaos Realm! We shall wait until you are strong enough to step into the Chaos Realm. By then, you must not forget to make yourself guests in Arthulan. We, Moon Elves are forever indebted to you!" Thea said.

Everyone nodded.

Of course, they could not possibly waste one night there, so they mumbled a simple excuse and left the camp site, marking the beginning of their new journey.

After earning a large amount of fortune, none of them were up for any other quests. So they just slayed some monsters around the wild to maintain their lead in the leveling board. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang headed back to the White Jade Castle to stock up the Little Merchandize with their newly acquired loot. From the looks of it, this batch of equipment is bound to generate a large sum of fortune for them.

After that, he got rid of his 'Smithing' and approached Herbalist Mentor to learn a series of new profession-based skills.

'Ding! You have chosen to forget your Smithing Skills. Once forgotten, even if you relearn the art of Smithing, the recipes and skills you once learned will not exist anymore, accept or decline?'

Accept.

‘Ding! You have forgotten Smithing, now you can learn a new profession skill.’

‘Ding! You have chosen the Herbalism as your second profession skill!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a new skill: Herb Search!’

‘Ding! You have acquired a new skill: Pick and Pluck!’

[Herb Search]: The navigation map will show the location of available herbs around the area.

[Gather]: Allows you to collect herbs in good condition.

Unfortunately, the newly learned Herbalism skill was still at Level 1! Left with no choice, Zhang Yang could only summon his Whitey and dashed forward over to the Level 10 Leveling area. He could only travel to the lowest level map to begin his training on his Herbalism skill, because he still cannot gather high-level herbs yet. Attempting to harvest them would only damage the herbs, and garner him no experience points!

‘Ding! You have acquired a new skill: Blood of Life!’

When the Herbalism level of Zhang Yang has reached middle-class level, he automatically obtained a new skill, and this is actually a ‘free gift’ for all players who practiced the art of Herbalism.

[Blood of Life] (Level 1): Recovers 100 health points within 10 seconds.
Cool down: 2 minutes.

It was really a fortunate thing that they adjusted the ratio of the in-game time and the reality time, plus the leveling up of the herbalism skills took little effort. It took him two days and two nights to level up his Herbalism skills before he achieved the Professional grade! The skill {Blood of Life} will level up automatically based on the level of the player’s Herbalism. So when Zhang Yang had elevated his Herbalism skill up to professional grade, the {Blood of Life} had been leveled up to Level 3 as well.

[Blood of Life] (Level 3): Recovers 2000 health points within 10 seconds.
Cool down: 2 minutes.

This skill {Blood of Life} was actually quite a handful skill, similar to a regular bottle of red potion. The only weakness was that the cool down time was a little lengthy, and the healing amount did not come all in one shot. But, what else could you hope for, it is already a good skill that would save you a few bottle of potions in a battle. After all, this is just a free skill that anyone can obtain.

It was already almost 6.p.m the next day when he logged out of the game. Actually, he intended to rank up his profession skills to the Specialist grade, but Fatty Han came over to forcefully drag him out on a speed date.

"Fatty, are you sure you are going on a speed date?" Zhang Yang felt that it made no sense whatsoever.

"Let's just go! Fermenting yourself in your little apartment room everyday is not healthy for your both mental and physical state! Little Yang, you must not always live in the virtual world, plus, you are not some kind of isolated hermit!" Fatty Han replied seriously for once.

Zhang Yang burst into laughter and said, "Alright, just because you say so, I'll tag along this time, good gentleman!"

"It's accompanying me, brother fatty, not gentleman! What's in it for a gentleman, just strings and limitation that binds one person into the mold of an obedient 'gentleman', there's no fun at all. I'm a man without strings and limitations!" Fatty Han pulled open his car door.

"Hey fatty, haven't you been picking up many pretty girls by driving your sport car around? Why are you attending this sort of speed date then?"

"Hehe, I fell in love with one of those pretty girl upon first sight!"

"Entering into a relationship without the aim of marrying her is kind of disrespect towards the lady, an act of indecency, you know?"

"... I'm being serious this time, if she is willing to, I am willing to take her over to the Civil Affairs Bureau to register!"

Chapter 319: Luo Xin Yan

Fatty Han drove Zhang Yang over to a hotel's conference hall. A banner hung over the entrance of the hall: Best Century Major Speed Date Assembly.

However, entry was not free, men were required to pay a sum of 100 dollar to enter, while women could simply walk in. Although Zhang Yang and Fatty Han did not care for that small sum of 100 dollars, they were still sighing over the fact that men and women will never be equal, despite all the protests, and slogans, and speeches about true equality.

The two of them searched around for a table to sit, and leisurely ate the melon fruits that were served on the table. These melon fruits were free of charge, but if anyone wanted a refill, it would cost some money. Of course, they could order some other food, but they would all cost some money.

"Don't you have a photo of your beloved lady? Take it out and show me, let me see the charm that actually got you to keep your balls in check!" Zhang Yang was munching on some orange slices to keep his hunger at bay. Thanks to Fatty saying that there would be dinner for him here, he had not yet eaten. Now, he was so hungry that he was beginning to see stars!

"Of course I do! Have a look! Look!" Fatty Han took out his phone and presented it to Zhang Yang as if he was presenting a precious item.

It is a pure, sweet looking girl, she wasn't really that pretty, but she gave people a fresh kind of feeling, and she looked to be about 18 or 19 years old.

"Not bad at all!" Zhang Yang nodded to express his approval. Well, finding a wife is totally different compared to finding a boyfriend or a girlfriend, and a pure looking girl is far more reliable than a sexy-ass woman.

"Of course, when have I ever shown a lapse in judgment?" Fatty Han was blatantly boasting at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang burst into laughter and said, "Then how does she feel towards you?"

"Well, we just had two conversations, and I haven't had the chance to ask! Today's the day I find out more, and also, she's a local! So I came all the way here! She should feel quite alright with me, I guess!"

"So after all we have been through, only now you are telling me that it's just your own wishful thinking and feelings!"

"Well I am not bad on the outside, and as long as she spends some time together with me, she is definitely going to dig me!" Fatty Han confidently told Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang passed the phone back to Fatty Han and said, "She is just about to begin her university life and here you are, rushing her into things now?"

"This is called fate!"

More people were arriving as the time passes, but the lady that Fatty Han had his eyes on had not shown up yet. A little while later, a man, seemingly the official person-in-charge, went up on stage and gave a few words to the crowd. After that, he announced that the Speed Date Assembly had officially begun and everyone can look for their dates freely.

"Let's go, it seems that she had stood you up!" Zhang Yang had already eaten up all the melon fruits that were available on the table, leaving the plates spotless.

"Just a little longer ---" Fatty Han was not willing to give up, his eyes fixed to the entrance of the hall. Suddenly, he widened his eyes and said, "There she is!"

They could only see two pretty, young ladies walking in from the entrance, both of them were in their late teens. The lady on the left was slightly shorter than the other one, and she had that pure sweetness around her, looking just like the photo that Fatty Han showed Zhang Yang.

The other lady was about 170 cm tall, with a tall and thin body, small

waist, well-shaped buttocks, with long hair flowing over her shoulders, she was very pretty. The outer corners of her bewitching eyes tilted upwards like a feline, and her lips were thin and red, charming several men at first glance.

However, Zhang Yang was startled!

Luo Xin Yan! The woman who toyed with his feelings for half a year! In the end, it turned out that she was a mistress sent by Liu Wei to suck the warehouse of Clear Water dry, she was a woman who had almost succeeded in bringing him down to his knees!

He immediately raised his alertness level from his head to toe! If 'history' was repeating itself, Luo Xin Yan should only appear in his life two years after. But as he sailed across the sky to be reborn, many events had been altered from the original timeline. It was perfectly possible that Liu Wei had sent her to string him up like a puppet!

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head again and again. He only happened to be here by coincidence, only a god could predict things this far!

He buried down all his restless thoughts deep and calmly remained in his seat.

On the other side, Luo Xin Yan and the pure lady had spotted Fatty Han thanks to his obvious mass, and were already approaching them.

"Fatty---" Luo Xin Yan snapped, "So you are the one pursuing our Xiao Wei?"

Fatty Han is lustful, but he was no fool who would have weak legs whenever gazing upon a pretty woman in front of him. Instead, he immediately took offense and fired back, "What's it got to do with you!"

"Humph! Xiao Wei is my roommate, of course I must watch out for her, to prevent her from being played around like a doll!"

Her tone struck Fatty Han deep down in the gut. He furiously growled, "Hey! Don't you dare make things up off the top of your head!"

"Xin Yan!" Xiao Wei pulled the sleeve of Luo Xin Yan and gently said,

"Fatty Han is a decent person!"

"Pfff---" Zhang Yang could not hold it, the milk that he just drank came back gushing right out of his mouth. It was fortunate that his head was laying low and the milk had not struck anyone else. As he coughed repeatedly, he wondered how did Fatty Han manage to butter up that pure lady into believing him so much. She had so much faith in him that she would call him a 'decent' person! It was like calling a tiger a vegan!

"You have no quality at all!" Luo XinYan suddenly turned her 'firepower' towards Zhang Yang and began to fire away, "Xiao Wei, people say that the same type of feathers flock together! Looking at the company he keeps, he can't possibly be a nice person! Tonight is the last time you're seeing him!"

"Xin Yan!" Xiao Wei pulled Luo Xin Yan's sleeve again, blushing in embarrassment.

Zhang Yang stood up and pulled Luo Xin Yan into his seat which was right beside Fatty Han.

"What are you ---" Luo Xin Yan was about to reach out to pull Xiao Wei up from her seat.

However, right before she could even finish her words and reach Xiao Wei, Zhang Yang had forced her into his seat, and then he sat right on top of her, grabbing her hands to prevent her from getting up.

"You hoodlum! Let me go!" Luo Xin Yan screamed.

Zhang Yang smiled gently and said, "One would damage ten temples rather than destroying a marriage! Do you understand?" So be quiet, and just sit there, and watch!"

Luo Xin Yan had lit up like a firecracker, snarling at him furiously! As she struggled to get up from the seat, Zhang Yang overpowered her with his mighty strength and kept her pinned down.

"You f*cking hoodlum, let go of me!"

Zhang Yang turned to Fatty Han and Xiao Wei and he said, "You two,

take your time and enjoy your evening, we are not going to interrupt you!" then he turned back at Luo Xin Yan and aimed his lips at her red lips, and it went in for the kill! He kissed her!

"Mmm---" Luo Xin Yan's eyes widened as she uttered something inaudible.

Fatty Han and Xiao Wei were left with their eyes wide open and their jaws hanging wide. Who knew that Zhang Yang would be so bold as to do such extreme actions in public! Fatty Han was giving him a thumbs up behind his back. He thought that Zhang Yang was truly his brother in arm, bold enough to strike on the spot like that!

At first, Luo Xin Yan still tried to struggle, but under the forceful kiss of Zhang Yang, her strength began to fade and by the end of it, her feline-like eyes grew hazy, and she seemed to sink into the moment. Her nostrils were flared, as she moaned a little.

After all, Zhang Yang was most familiar with Luo Xin Yan, even if compared to the experiences of this life! In his previous life, Zhang Yang had shared the same roof with her for about half a year, and he knew what exactly turned her on!

Only after a long while, Luo Xin Yan only managed to recover from the 'attack'. She could not help but to feel ashamed of herself for actually beginning to enjoy the forceful kiss performed by a man that she had never met before!

The more Luo Xin Yan thought about it, the worse she felt about herself. How could she possibly stay here any longer? So she stood up quickly and tried to leave. However, her legs were already weak, and as she stood up in a swift manner, she almost fell down flat on her face! But as she quickly braced herself against a chair, she met Xiao Wei's curious gaze. Knowing that her face was telling a very strange story, she covered her face and quickly walked out of the hall.

"Xin Yan---" Xiao Wei stood up.

"Don't worry, I shall help you escort her back, you and Fatty Han can take your time and chat!" Zhang Yang smiled, and then he stood up and

followed Xin Yan.

After walking out of the hotel, Zhang Yang did not go after Luo Xin Yan, because he did not have the mood to do so!

In the previous life, Luo Xin Yan had really done a number to him, not just by breaking his heart, but also sucking dry the entire warehouse of Clear Water guild, costing a loss of more than tens of millions of dollars! What she left behind for Zhang Yang, was a short clip of her, confessing that she only got together with him because she had taken Liu Wei's money and had been told to do so! Everything she had with Zhang Yang was just a lie, a farce!

Zhang Yang gazed at the back of Luo Xin Yan slowly fading into the street, as he sneered in satisfaction.

After taking a cab back to his apartment, Zhang Yang thought to himself, that maybe it was time to give himself a new place to live.

Logging onto the game, Zhang Yang summoned his Whitey and went straight to the Black Moss Wilderness. Then, he picked a spot with fewer people and began to grind for experience points by slaying monsters, while collecting herbs to improve his Herbalism skills.

'Ding! You have used {Gather} on the [Corrupted Grass], your Herbalism dexterity has increased by 1 point!'

'Ding! You have obtained [Corrupted Grass] X 2!'

...

'Ding! You have used {Gather} on the [Black Leaf Lotus], your Herbalism dexterity has increased by 1 point!'

'Ding! You have obtained [Black Leaf Lotus] X 3!'

...

Because in the current stage of the game, the number of players who had managed to reach Level 70 and above were so small that they may be counted in one hand, so Zhang Yang had no pressure at all. He claimed all of the herbs on the entire map, and where ever he went, he would just use

{Gather} to pick up herbs at his will!

The night had arrived, and Zhang Yang had succeeded in elevating his Herbalism to the Specialist grade, and his {Blood of Life} had been elevated up to Level 4 as well, giving him a healing effect of 8000 health points within 10 seconds, which was not bad at all.

The latest update version of the game helmet had an additional function of a 'wake-up call', so Zhang Yang had set the alarm at 7a.m. At seven in the morning, the helmet brought his brain out of sleep, and automatically logged him out of the game.¹

After a series of serious training, Zhang Yang once gain logged into the game and began to craft potions at the Alchemist shop in the White Jade Castle.

As he just bought a new recipe - {{Enrage Potion}}, the use of it was to instantly increase 100 rage points. Because these [Enrage Potions] were not highly in demand, Zhang Yang had kept the recipe to himself instead of passing it over to Yu Li.

'Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4!'

...

'Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4!'

...

'Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4! Because of your {Alchemist's Intuition}, the [Furious Potion] acquired a transmutation!'

[Furious Potion (Transmutation 3)] (Consumable)

Use: Instantly gain 100 rage points, while increasing your attack by 30%, lasts for 10 seconds! Cool down: 1 minute. Use of any potions will cause other potions to enter a state of cool down as well.

Level required: 60

{Alchemist's Intuition} gave potions additional effects other than just their initial effects, and the potions would transmute based on the rate ranging from 10% to 100%. If this 'Transmutation 3' gives an additional

effect of a 30% increase in attack, then a 'Transmutation 10' should be able to give an additional effect of a 100% increase in attack!

Awesome!

Zhang Yang was motivated to continue brewing more potions!

*

Translator's Thoughts

Editor Tonicquill here, I might go on a slightly personal rant here, so kindly move on to the next chapter:

The original text merely stated that the helmet would "buzz", I think? And wake him up via physical stimuli while he's already in VR? I couldn't let that slide, so I was about to create some theories on behalf of the author like maybe, just maybe, the helmet gets him into REM (Random Eye Movement) sleep while he's playing in 'sleep' mode, and maybe he would be in a dream-like state as he plays the game, so he'll appear to be sluggish and stoned? There should be some drawbacks to this 'sleep' mode.

The Space Marines from Warhammer 40k turn off parts of their brains at a time in order to sleep while being awake at the same time. Some birds could fly while they're asleep, in similar fashion to the WH40k Marines. Batman has trained himself to get full night's sleep in 4 hours. The organic infiltrator units from the Terminator franchise can get a full night's sleep in 1 hour if I'm not mistaken? I mean, other than the altered perception of time that the game has now, as a sci-fi'ish person, I couldn't let certain major plot holes slide. Hope I did not overstep any boundaries. That being said, let's just all, enjoy the story together, yea? Try your best to cast aside such doubts.

Chapter 320: Dividing the Power

‘Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4!’

...

‘Ding! You have crafted [Enrage Potion] X 4! Because of your {Alchemist’s Intuition}, the [Furious Potion] have acquired a transmutation!’

...

Zhang Yang had crafted thousands of [Enrage Potion] in a single breath. But unfortunately, the rate of {Alchemist’s Intuition} kicking in was extremely low, and less than 100 bottles of potions had acquired transmutation. Furthermore, most of them only acquired grade 1 to grade 3 transmutations. Naturally, the higher the grade, the harder they are to occur! For instance, the number of potions that had undergone grade 7 transmutation or above were only 7 bottles. 3 of them had undergone grade 7 transmutation, 2 of them had undergone grade 8 transmutation, one of them had undergone a grade 9 transmutation while the last bottle undergone a grade 10 transmutation.

Even then, most of it was due to his extremely high luck attribute!

He then deposited all the non-transmuted potions into the guild’s warehouse, waiting for the correct moment to distribute them to the members when necessary. These non-transmuted potions will still have their uses in battle. For example, tankers will not be able to kite monsters if they had no rage points left in them, they could use these potions to gain more aggro!

As for those [Enrage Potions] that had undergone transmutation, he kept them into his own backpack. One frustrating fact was that if the potions had different grades of transmutations, they would be categorized as an entirely different item, and they would no longer stack up together. Although there were only 97 transmuted [Enrage Potions], these potions had solidly occupied 10 of his backpack slots!

Awhile later, Fatty Han came online as well.

Zhang Yang could not hold his smile and he sent a voice message over and said, "Someone did not even log into the game last night, is it because someone has been shakalakaboombooming with someone else?"

"Sigh, little Yang, why must your brain always filled with those thoughts? Can't you be a little decent for once?"

Zhang Yang almost fell flat on the ground, to be criticized in such manner by a legendary pervert! He did not know whether to cry or to laugh!

"Oh, so, you two were just holding hands, leaning against each others shoulders while looking at the stars in the sky for the whole night?"

"Hehe, I'm just going to keep that to myself, it's a secret!"

Fatty Han paused for awhile and said, "Oh yea, you were really savage last night! To kiss that b*tch by force, that really left me stunned! Worthy of being my brother! Even when you're acting all gangster on her, you look awesome! Xiao Wei said she had never seen that b*tch run away, all flustered like that before!"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "You sure about this 'real' love?"

"Yes, yes, and yes, unless it's Xiao Wei, I'm not getting married, ever! To show my determination, I have decided to deposit all the educational discs of Ms.Aoi and Ms.Matsushima over at your place, and I will turn over a new leaf!"

"... you can just throw them away!"

"Well, they have been with me for so many years, they do hold a special place in my heart, you know!" Fatty Han was feeling regrettable and said, "All these years, you have no idea how much I have sacrificed as offerings to them, all the sweat, all the jiz---"

"Stop stop stop! Hold it right there, I haven't had my lunch yet!" Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine as his mind automatically started picturing how Fatty Han would juice himself out, in front of the computer

while doing it. It was just too much for Zhang Yang to bear, and he was feeling ill, just thinking of it!

After more idle chatter, Fatty Han set out to grind for experience points. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had realized that his herbs had almost been used up, so he too, set foot in the Black Moss Wilderness. He kept going back there, because despite not having much minerals and ores, the entire land was rich with herbs!

Just as he was sunken into the joy of collecting herbs, suddenly, Zhang Yang received a voice message from Hundred Shots.

"Zhan Yu, the number of players applying to join our guild is getting out of hand, and many of them are actually highly skilled! But we have reached the population cap for Level 2 guild. We'll be missing out on some good recruits! I would like to suggest that you elevate our guild to Level 3 guild with a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]!"

Ever since Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had made a mess in the Japan-Korea server, and the incident of the two Japanese players challenging them, Lone Desert Smoke was becoming even more famous, turning their guild into a national symbol! Other guilds were struggling to recruit players, while Lone Desert Smoke was having a shortage of space!

All bosses that are higher than Level 80 had the possibility of dropping a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order], but unfortunately, for Zhang Yang and gang, they was no sign of a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] even after they had slain a few Violet-Platinum bosses!

However, when players have attained Level 80 and above, the chance of encountering a Level 80+ boss would increase, as would the rate of getting a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]! After all, Zhang Yang and all his gang members were currently around Level 70+, so they could only wander around the map of Level 70. Therefore, it would be really difficult for them to encounter a Level 80 boss!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "It is really difficult to suddenly obtain a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order], how about we establish a Sub-Guild then?"

"Sub-Guild?" Hundred Shots frowned vaguely. They discussed about this before, but because they were really worried about juggling the standards between the two guilds and the inconvenience that it would cause, they had not implemented it until now. Furthermore, if the Sub-Guild is not being managed well enough, discord might be sowed among the members, with the Guildmaster himself being dragged into the mud in a worst case scenario!

If the Sub-Guild was managed too poorly, some ambitious players would try to take over, and cause them shame in public!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "If Heaven wishes it to rain or your mother to remarry, there is no way in stopping them! If there really are people who would try to make a scene, the Guildmaster will cause an even bigger scene!"

"Then, who shall manage the Sub-Guild then?"

"Let Fatty Han and Endless Starlight go over to manage it. With them both there managing and supporting, the progression in Dungeon of the Sub-Guild should be able to keep up, they won't look too awkward."

"Alright."

Establishing a Sub-Guild was a very short process which required only a short period of time. Firstly, Fatty Han and the appointed members would leave the guild, and then they would register a new guild, with a new name at the reception of Guild-Establishment. When there were 30 players responding to this establishment, then 'Lone Desert Smoke First Sub-Guild' would be established.

Zhang Yang broadcasted the announcements in White Jade Castle, informing everyone about this new development. Those players who wished to join Lone Desert Smoke will be placed in the Sub-Guild for a certain amount of time. If they performed outstandingly, then they will be promoted to the main guild.

Fatty Han went over to the Sub-Guild in great delight, shamelessly asking for the Guildmaster spot. His main aim was to be a fox, assuming the majesty of the tiger, to experience the joy of barking orders left and

right for his own pleasure. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight was hugging onto the leg of Zhang Yang while bawling madly, giving everyone the impression that he could not bear the sorrow of leaving Lone Desert Smoke.

But, at the end of it, Zhang Yang solved the situation with only one sentence, "The Sub-Guild is full of pretty ladies!" The little brat actually bought it and disappeared in just a second. Everyone only found out that Endless Starlight was actually unwilling to leave the pretty ladies in Lone Desert Smoke, not Lone Desert Smoke itself!

Zhang Yang then summoned all the higher ranking players in the guild for a discussion, where they temporarily came up with a few guidelines.

1. Members in the Sub-Guild who perform well are eligible to be promoted to join the main guild. While members in the Main Guild who under-performs will be demoted to the Sub-Guild for further observation.

2. Although there are differences in the names of Main Guild and Sub-Guild, everyone should be considered as full-fledged members of Lone Desert Smoke, like a family. The Sub-Guild must be treated as equals by all means!

3. The resources of the Main Guild and the Sub-Guild would be shared equally, as would the loots and earnings. Therefore, the points accumulated in the Sub-Guild can be spent in the Main Guild.

At that moment, the reputation of Lone Desert Smoke was reflected. After only 3 hours, the number of applications to join the newly founded Sub-Guild had already reached the maximum capacity of Level 1 guild. Although the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order] was not that difficult to come by these days, elevating a Level 1 guild to Level 2 guild required the accumulation of experience points, other than just the [Guild Upgrade Order].

They'll have to take it in stride!

Zhang Yang irresponsibly threw all the responsibilities to Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, and then he went on to collect herbs and grinding on his own.

After going offline to have his dinner, Zhang Yang logged back into the game and managed to secure a new alchemy recipe :{{Level 4 Intelligent Potion}}.

[Level 4 Intelligent Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Increase 100 intelligent points, last for 1 hour.

Required level: 60

Coincidentally, he had a few hundreds sets of the materials for crafting this potion, so he got to crafting.

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Intelligent Potion] X 4!’

...

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Intelligent Potion] X 4! Because of your {Alchemist’s Intuition}, the [Level 4 Intelligent Potion] acquired a transmutation!’

[Level 4 Intelligent Potion (Transmutation 2)] (Consumable)

Use: increase 100 intelligent points, magic attack increased by 20 points, last for 1 hour.

Required Level: 60

After 5 to 6 minutes, all of the materials had been crafted into [Level 4 Intelligent Potion], but only 19 of the potions were transmuted potions, and there was no sign of potions that had undergone grade 7 transmutation, not even one!

Even his 10 points of luck did not seem to be near enough. Only if he could reach 30 to 40 of luck attribute points, he should have a 10% rate of transmutation!

"Daffodil, come back to White Jade Castle, I’m passing you some potions!" Zhang Yang sent a private message over to Daffodil Daydream.

"Alright, coming."

Traveling back to White Jade Castle was easy, and within just a couple of minutes, Daffodil Daydream had arrived back at the castle, riding on her

[Mount]. Although her [Mount] was only a Gray-Silver grade, it looked magnificently appealing. It's pair of dual wings allowed it to glide in the air, looking significantly stunning!

It was the image of a pretty lady riding on her [Mount]. Along her way, Daffodil Daydream had attracted the attention of countless players from below.

"Guildmaster ---" Daffodil Daydream jumped down from her [Mount] and realized that only Zhang Yang was there. Her oval, olive-skinned face instantly turned a little red, as she fidgeted around with her sleeves in her fingers and asked, "You call me over for something?"

"Yea, I just crafted some potions, here are some for you!" Zhang Yang traded a bunch of [Intelligent Potions] over to Daffodil Daydream, and among those potions were some good stuff like grade 4 and grade 5 transmuted potions!

Daffodil Daydream immediately widened her bright eyes and said, "You're too good, guildmaster!"

Is she treating him more than a friend? It was getting awkward.

Zhang Yang was feeling uneasy about the situation, so he let out a sudden "Oh!" and asked, "Oh yea, I haven't seen Witch Snow and that little girl online yet, have you seen them?"

Daffodil Daydream thought for a while and said, "Yea, I haven't seen them for awhile now, either."

Zhang Yang felt puzzled, if Wei Yan Er did not come online during the day, it might be because she had gone for school, but she had never ever missed a night before, what could be the reason?

Daffodil Daydream went on to grind again. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang went on to the mailbox and sent a portion of the potions that he had crafted to the second-party including Fantasy Sweetheart. A portion of the potions were reserved for Han Ying Xue. However, the entire night passed without them logging in.

On the next morning, Zhang Yang could not beat it anymore, so he gave

Han Ying Xue a call.

Tut... Tut... The phone rang for awhile before it was being picked up.

"Hello---" it was a weak voice coming from Han Ying Xue.

"I'm Zhang Yang. Anything happened to you and Wei Yan Er?" Zhang Yang was worried.

"... Wei Yan Er's father ran into an accident and passed away yesterday." Han Ying Xue only replied Zhang Yang after a pause.

Zhang Yang was shocked, then he asked, "How did it happen?"

"Her father left a suicide note, saying that he would want to take responsibility for all the negative news about the company, and he apologized to Yan Er's mother. So he decided to end his life to make up for it!" the voice of Han Ying Xue indicated her tiredness, it was probably because she did not have a good rest at all.

"How is little girl holding up?"

"She cried for the whole night, and she just fell asleep just now."

Zhang Yang thought to himself for awhile and said, "I'm coming over right now!"

"... Alright. We are at her place, just take down the address."

After taking down the address, Zhang Yang immediately departed out and took a cab to the destination.

Wei Yan Er's house was located at a high-class villa area. After going through a security check by the guards, he finally arrived at the doorstep of Wei Yan Er's house. It was a three-storey high house, with a large garden by the entrance, and also a series of facilities like a swimming pool, a tennis court and the likes of it.

Han Ying Xue personally came out to invite him into the house. The body of Wei Yan Er's father had not yet been recovered from the Police. After all, the deceased was the CEO of a multi-billionaire company, a thorough autopsy was required to ensure that there was no foul play. There were a number of people gathered in the middle hall of the house,

and the only person that Zhang Yang recognized was Luo Yang Ming, so all of them were probably relatives.

After seeing Zhang Yang, Luo Yang Ming immediately jumped over and asked, "Little Snow, who is he? Is he qualified to be here at all?"

"Oh, buzz off!" Han Ying Xue spoke to him coldly and dragged Zhang Yang up to the second floor.

Luo Ming Yang was so furious that he tightened his grips on both hands, but when a pretty-faced, frivolous girl tapped his shoulder gently, he was back at ease, a cold grin on his lips.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue entered a study room, and both of them sat down facing at each other.

"Did the little girl's father really commit suicide?" Zhang Yang began to ask.

Han Ying Xue shook her head and said, "Who knows! I don't know! We just received an email. His so called 'Death Wish Note' was sent from his email address. So in theory, only he himself could have access to the account, but ---"

She did not have to finish her words for Zhang Yang to understand, no matter how good the firewall of the company was designed to prevent hackers, according to Wei Yan Er, her dad was a flirtatious person, god only knows if there were any 'Secretaries' under his 'care' as he logged into his email.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "I am genuinely worried for your safety, for both of you!"

Han Ying Xue set her sight upon the floor, and it was as if she was gazing through the floor at the people downstairs, and she asked vaguely, "Can people really be that ruthless when it comes to money?"

Zhang Yang solemnly said, "The numerous negative news about Silky Soft Holdings back in the days could have been staged for this, I guess! Setting up a good reason for Yan Er's father's death! They could just say Yan Er's father could not bear the enormous stress from the company, and

to prevent himself from seeing his own company fall, he committed suicide!"

"How much could a fallen company get them? 2,000,000,000, or only 1,000,000,000, in fact! There are so many of them, each of them can only get, at most, 100,000,000 to 200,000,000!" Han Ying Xue was muttered dejected.

Zhang Yang said, "Even if it is only one or two hundred million, it is definitely better than not getting anything at all! Furthermore, maybe one to two hundred million isn't much to you, but for regular folk, this amount of money is no small matter for them! People die for money, birds die for food, the ancient idioms used to say that!"

"Zhang Yang, I need your help!" Han Ying Xue stood up and looked at him with renewed hope!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. A Chinese culture saying: If Heaven wishes it to rain or your mother to remarry, there is no way in stopping them - an inevitable occurrence

Chapter 321: Beat Down

The Han Ying Xue at that moment, seemed very weak, her lovely and gentle eyes were lost in despair.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I will do my best!"

"Thank you." Han Ying Xue frowned and said, "I do not know who to trust anymore! If Yan Er's father has been murdered, then their fangs must have found their way into the inner circle of the company's management, no one in the entire company can be trusted!"

Too much thought had been put into this already!

Luo Ming Yang had a simple thought, and that was to make sure Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Wei Yan Er's Father stay dead, then the entire Silky Soft Holdings will become theirs to claim! They did not care how bad will the company becomes in the future, as long as they could get their hands on the profit, they were already satisfied!

Wei Yan Er slept all the way until 3 p.m before she woke up. When she saw that Zhang Yang was present, she tried to pout at him like she always did, but quickly broke down into tears again. Then, she sobbed, "My dad is gone!"

Zhang Yang sighed gently and patted her shoulder, and he said, "Everything will pass! You still have your cousin sister, and you still have us, your friends! You are not alone!"

Of course, Wei Yan Er did not stay in her own house after that, instead, she went to stay with Han Ying Xue at her warm house. Zhang Yang insisted on becoming their driver to send them both back to their place safe and sound.

"Silly Yu, you are welcome to stay here for the next few days." Han Ying Xue suggested. She glanced at Wei Yan Er's house which had been flooded by those 'animals' and said, "I'm very worried that Luo Yang Ming and his goons will knock on our door to make a scene!"

Her worries were not based on nothing, and Zhang Yang had always

wondered why he had never heard of Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er before, in his previous life!

Anyone could see that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were extremely good looking, and they were highly skilled. They also had the heart and grit to match up to everything else! So according to all these facts right in front of him, there is no doubt that these two girls should have become famous players in the game, like Snow Seeker! But somehow, he had never heard of them in his past life, and the most suitable explanation was that they had already quit the game before the Professional League Championship had even begun!

If Zhang Yang had not intervened, they would just believed that Wei Yan Er's father died of car accident, and they would definitely have let their guards down. By then, it would be possible that they would also suffer similar 'accidents', and their names would just disappear from society for good!

Zhang Yang felt a chill from head to toe, and he knew, no matter what, he must not let that kind of thing happen to these two ladies!

"Alright, I will be your personal bodyguard for these few days!"

"You can use Yan Er's game helmet to log in, and I will order a new one. Also, I don't think she will log into the game for these few days." Han Ying Xue said mournfully.

Han Ying Xue's house had 3 rooms, two living rooms and two bathrooms. So the three of them could have their own personal rooms. As for the use of bathrooms, they had to be strict in the sharing part, so Zhang Yang would only use the one on the west side while the two ladies would be sharing the one on the east side of the house.

"Silly Yu, you are not going to release your foul beastly attitude and go gangster on me and Wei Yan Er in the middle of the night, are you?" If Han Ying Xue could say such things, it only meant that she was getting back to her usual self.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again, and said, "No worries, I will never take opportunity on others!"

"You better be, and I am telling you now, I have a tazer, a pepper spray and all other sort of stuffs that can prevent perverts, all lying there in my room! It would only mean death for you if you try something funny!" Han Ying Xue warned Zhang Yang.

"Fine! Fine!" Zhang Yang took the game helmet over from Han Ying Xue, then he walked into the guest room and began to log in to the game.

He then informed Fatty Han and the rest of the gang about the horrible things that had happened to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. Everyone felt so sorry to hear about it. Fatty Han said that he would go visit them, while Daffodil Daydream and the rest who were living afar expressed that they were going to fly over to Zhou Su City to attend the funeral of Wei Yan Er's father.

On the next day, Fatty Han and Sun Xin Yu came by to Han Ying Xue's house.

"Little Yang, you stayed overnight over here?" Fatty Han asked Zhang Yang pointedly.

"What are you thinking?"

"Well, there are two pretty ladies in there, and they're nicely spread over multiple preferences of men, if you get what I mean. One mature, one young, and they are both feeling hurt, being in a state of 'void'. It is extremely easy for you go, you know, 'get in'! Little Yang, I approve and give my utmost support on you having a 'double kill'!" Fatty Han patted Zhang Yang's shoulder gently, expressing an expression that said 'I know, you know'.

"Shut up!" Zhang Yang then turned towards Sun Xin Yu and asked, "Anything suspicious?"

Sun Xin Yu gave Zhang Yang an intense stare before she begin to speak, "After the investigation, it appears that Mr. Wei ingested some alcohol before he drove. However, the amount of alcohol in his blood stream wasn't high. However, there were also traces of high dosages of sleeping pills inside his system, which caused him to be disoriented while driving. As a result, he died in a crash!"

Zhang Yang felt uneasy under her intense gaze, and he was shocked to hear about the result as well. He paused for awhile and said, "No suspicion at all?"

"If, let's say that the 'Death Wish' email from Mr. Wei is real, then his suicide is most likely true! But if the email was forged by someone else, then the police will take in account, on the possibility that someone was drugging him on purpose!" Sun Xin Yu explained coldly.

"Doesn't Mr. Wei have his own personal driver?" Zhang Yang was curious, a big boss of a large-scale company like Mr. Wei wouldn't drive by himself. Plus, he was not some youngster, so he wouldn't simply race around for the thrill of it!

Han Ying Xue smiled coldly and said, "I guess he was on his way to meet his mistress, his driver could not know."

Although she treated Wei Yan Er like her real sister, but she obviously did not share the same respect towards Mr. Wei.

"Icy, didn't I tell you that the biggest suspect is that annoying guy Luo Yang Ming? Why didn't you guys bring him in for questioning yet? That guy is definitely the spineless type. A few good scares will definitely crack him up!" Zhang Yang told Sun Xin Yu.

"Police work requires solid evidence!" Sun Xin Yu was still speaking coldly to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could only smile and he turned to Fatty Han, "Fatty, let's go and have a chat with that guy."

Sun Xin Yu frowned her pretty looking eyebrows and asked, "What do you guys intend to do?"

"Did you say police work requires solid evidence? We are gangsters, hoodlums! As long as we suspect someone, it's enough reason to shake them up!" Zhang Yang replied.

"Personal torture to extract confession is illegal!"

"Then arrest me!" Zhang Yang put out both of his hands, "Or just

pretend you know nothing about this!"

Sun Xin Yu was enraged, but she only turned her head away after giving some murderous glares at Zhang Yang.

"Move out!"

Zhang Yang requested for the contact number of Luo Yang Ming from Han Ying Xue and he dialed the number. After just awhile, he heard a man's voice over the phone saying, "Hello? Who are you? How did you get my number?"

"You with the sir name Luo, if you did nothing wrong, what are you so afraid of!"

"You're insane! I'm hanging up if you're not telling me who you are!"

"Hehe, hang up then! Because if you hang up the phone right now, I shall let lose the recording of the conversation between you and Liu Shu Yan, discussing about your conspiracy!" Zhang Yang took a wild guess, hoping to strike gold. Zhang Yang assumed that if they really had something to do with the death of Mr. Wei, these two siblings must have had more than one conversation about it.

Instantly, the sound of Luo Yang Ming breathing rapidly was heard over the phone, and after quite awhile, Luo Yang Ming finally began to talk, "So what do you really want?"

"Of course it's money!" Zhang Yang gave a few sinister laughs and said, "Meet us alone, drive alone! We shall negotiate the amount of money that you need to pay us to get back the recording! I will only wait for half an hour! Any later, do dress up nicely for the cops, yeah?"

Luo Yang Ming immediately panicked and said, "Please don't! Please calm down! I'm coming right now! Please don't go to the police station!"

"Fine, then go to this address!" Zhang Yang gave Luo Yang Ming an address.

After hanging up the phone, Zhang Yang let Fatty Han drove him over to the address he gave to that guy.

Luo Yang Ming was really a coward, to cave in so easily. An idiot like him, can they really get the proof on his conspiracy?

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to have doubts in his plan.

Having the sport car parked at the dark corner side of the bridge, Zhang Yang got down from the car and said, "If that guy shows up alone, just ring the phone once, if he brings some muscles along with him, ring the phone twice!"

"You can count on me! Just relax!" Fatty Han pounded his chest and told Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang walked down from the bridge alone. It was alright, because the weather was quite cold that day, and there was no sign of hobos around the area. He quietly waited for awhile, and then his phone began to ring! And it only rang once before it was cut off.

In just awhile, a shadow of man was visible within his sight, and under the pale moonlight, he could see that the shadow was indeed that rich bastard, the son of the rich, selfish family!

"Hello --- I'm here, where are you?" Luo Ming Yang was beginning to feel anxious and began to call out. Although the security in Zhou Su City was not bad, there were still cases related to guns and murders happening around the city. It would take a lot for the coward to have come out alone by himself.

Zhang Yang was standing by the shadow of the bridge, and under the cover of darkness, he began to talk, "You who carries the surname Luo, you really are a bogey, you attempted to rape your cousin, and then you killed your own uncle! Any other dirty things that you haven't done yet?"

"What can I really offer you to stop all this?" Luo Ming Yang was indeed an idiot. He had not denied anything once, and had already admitted that he indeed was involved in the 'accident'.

"How much money do you want, you just say it!"

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again, and then he walked out of the shadow into the light, and the moonlight instantly shined on his face.

"You... You are the guy that went to Wei Yan Er's house yesterday!" Luo Ming Yang lost his voice while attempting to shout.

Zhang Yang was shocked for a while there before he could react. His face is different from his avatar's face in the game, no wonder Luo Yang Ming could not recognize him!

Luo Yang Ming was sensing that something was not right, so he began to back up slowly!

Zhang Yang dashed forward, and it was like an eagle grabbing a chick, with only one hand, he grabbed hold of the back collar of Luo Yang Ming and lifted that coward up into the air.

Although Luo Yang Ming was an idiot, he knew at once that he was outmatched and outclassed! Instantly he stopped struggling and said, "Boss, anything can be settled, just say the price, please don't hurt me!"

Zhang Yang took out his phone and called Fatty Han, "Hey fatty, come over here for some exercise! Move your bones and muscles for a little bit!"

The instance Luo Yang Ming heard what Zhang Yang said over the phone, his face turned pale immediately and said, "wha... what are you guys going to do?"

Crunch!

Zhang Yang swung his fist, at the same instant, he let go of the collar and Luo Ming Yang staggered back, clutching his jaw. He then spat out some blood and broken teeth from his mouth!

Luo Yang Ming was given a beat down to the point that he could not understand! Anything could be settled with words right? They could have discussed over it and have a happy ending. But why would he be beaten up without even having the chance to negotiate at all!

Crunch!

Zhang Yang swung another powerful punch and Luo Yang Ming let out a horrible and terrified scream. More teeth flew out of his mouth.

Fatty Han had also arrived at the scene, and seeing that Zhang Yang was

having a hell of a good time beating up that coward, he too rushed forward and said, "Allow me to enjoy for a bit!"

Zhang Yang took a few steps back while Fatty Han cut in and began to do some weird stuff to that guy. Fatty Han let out a few sinister laughs, and pressed Luo Ming Yang face down into the ground, and shoof! Fatty Han took off Luo Ming Yang's pants!

The man was barely conscious, but was instantly shaken out of his stupor! He began making muffled groans, thinking that he was about to be violated by that fat man! The horrific screams coming from Luo Ming Yang broke through the night, and his tears were dripping down, like there was no tomorrow.

Chapter 322: The Confession

Fatty Han's hands were fast and deft. With a few seconds, he had unbuckled the rather thick jeans and had pulled the pants down, revealing a pair of floral, Hawaiian style boxers.

"Erhm...Fatty. Are you...erhm...are you planning to give him the experience of a woman?" said Zhang Yang with a shiver.

"Please. Boobies are the only pair I'll take. That and nice, curvy buttocks." Said Fatty Han. "This is what I call a real life "Cripple Defense"."

Zhang Yang let out a long sigh of relief. Even Luo Yang Ming who had been pinned down was screaming at one point, thinking that his anus was truly in danger. After hearing Fatty Han's explanation, he relaxed and stopped struggling violently.

Fatty Han then removed Luo Yang Ming's leather, hard sole shoes and smacked his unprotected butt with the hard end.

"Owiie!" Luo Yang Ming screamed like a woman. His entire body stiffen up like a solid wood, trying his best to struggle. His sudden buckle even shoved off someone as heavy as Fatty Han!

"Hahaha! That was fun!" said Fatty Han, laughing like a hyena. Fatty Han turned Luo Yang Ming face down and sat on him again. This time, he sat on his lower back and made sure that Luo Yang Ming could not move again when he continue "spanking" his butt with the shoe until it was all red and swollen.

Zhang Yang groaned. "I've never known that you would be into BDSM."

"Please. I haven't beaten up anyone for such a long time, I'm starting to get a little crazy! Bear with me a little, yeah!"

"Please stop! Please! Have mercy!" cried Luo Yang Ming. "I'll give you anything you want! Just, please stop hitting me! It hurts!"

"Hmph! Fatty, don't stop. Smack some testosterone into him! This sissy needs some manliness smacked into him!"

"Will do!" Being large, Fatty Han had heavy hands. The sheer momentum of his arms, coupled with the hard, rough surface of the shoe's sole, had caused the poor Luo Yang Ming to faint from the pain and was awoken again and again from the same sensation. Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han knew that the death of Wei Yan Er's father had something to do with Luo Yang Ming. That was why they were relentless in punishing him for over 30 minutes!

It was winter. It was so cold that you can practically freeze a bucket of water in just 10 minutes. Yet, Luo Yang Ming was smacked to the point where he was drenched in his own sweat. With pools of sweat underneath him, it was clear that the pain he suffered was tremendous. After having their suppressed rage released, Zhang Yang nudged Fatty Han aside and moved in to and slap Luo Yang Ming's face.

"Alright, speak up! Was it you who caused your own uncle's death?"

If Zhang Yang had started off with that question, Luo Yang Ming would surely have denied it. Now that Zhang Yang had given him a good spanking, the only thought in Luo Yang Ming's mind was to not piss off the two attackers any further.

Obediently, Luo Yang Ming answered. "We have always known that at every Saturday, he will sometimes drive himself to visit his lover and his son. That's why, we spiked his wine with a large dose of sleeping medication."

"Hmm. Did Liu Shu Yan put you up to this?"

"Hm. Liu Shu Yan was the master mind behind all of these. I was the one that carried it out. It's true! I'm no one! I'm just a little guy! Please, let me go! Please!" Luo Yang Ming started to cry like a little girl.

"Hmph! I believe you!. Only because a little pea bag like you couldn't have the intelligence to come up with such a plan!" Zhang Yang boldly proclaimed. "So? What's next in your grand master plan? Do you actually plan to do something to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er?! I know that after killing off Wei Zhang Tao, you guys would not inherit the family property!"

"The plan was to wait after uncle's funeral. After that we will plan another accident to have her killed."

Zhang Yang slapped him again. "Right now, with the problems surrounding Silky Soft Holdings, you plan to use them as a good reason for them to suicide, right!? Not bad. Not bad at all! Were all the negative rumors about Silky Soft Holdings spread by you?"

"Yes..." said Luo Yang Ming having lost all resistance. "Those years where we had taken money out of the company, no one, not even uncle, knew about it. Uncle was a klutz. The only thing in his mind was to play with women! However, Little Xue played quite a role in office management as well. If she ever found out of the discrepancies, we would be the ones in trouble! I would rather have her die before me!"

The last sentence took Zhang Yang over the edge. His face hardened up, and he spat on the ground beside the man's face.

"What a shameless prick!" said Fatty Han as he spat directly on Luo Yang Ming's face.

"Let's go. We got what we needed," said Zhang Yang as he turned off the phone. His entire confession had been recorded.

"Hey! Give me the recorder! Please! I'll pay you! I'll pay you a fortune!" said Luo Yang Ming as he started struggling frantically.

Zhang Yang scoffed and kicked him in the face before turning away. "I don't need your money. Use that pathetic money of yours to visit the doctor...while you still can!"

The two of them got into the car and left Luo Yang Ming in the dirt.

Back at Han Ying Xue's house, Sun Xin Yu was still there waiting. Zhang Yang did not even bother to clean himself up and directly dropped the phone into Sun Xin Yu fair hands. "Take this. It has everything you'll need to prosecute that bastard!"

"You guys...what did you—"

"You don't want to know!"

"...You. I see. Let's just say an anonymous citizen handed this over!"

"You're absolutely right. The police and the citizen should help each other out during hard times!"

With the confession in hand, the Public Security Bureau had everything the needed. The "suicide" news was brought up to light and had cause major uproar in the media around Zhou Su City. There were headlines about this investigation all over, in the newspapers, for the next few days! After a thorough investigation, the Bureau had managed to uncovered more than 10 suspects that were involved in his homicide case, however, the main culprit, Liu Shu Yan had manage to slip out of trouble! Since the only mouth that was tying her to the case was Luo Yang Ming's. However, there were no proper evidence that stated her involvement in this case! Furthermore, she was backed up with a very efficient lawyer!

This sly fox was very good. She was the mastermind, but her hands had never been sullied. Luo Yang Ming did all the heavy work. Since the two of them had never recorded their conversations, Luo Yang Ming would only appear to be falsely accusing her. The case was dismissed, and she got off the hook under the premise of false allegations.

Zhang Yang and the rest of them were waiting outside the station when Liu Shu Yan walked out of the station, free from all charges. When the woman entered her car, she stared coldly at Han Ying Xue. Zhang Yang could have sworn that he saw the woman was smiling.

"What a completely retard! Why didn't he keep any sort of evidence that he could have used as leverage?! What a loser, now he's taking all the heat!" said Fatty Han disgruntledly.

"This woman would not rest until she gets what she wants." said Zhang Yang. Deep down, his instincts were screaming when he saw the smile. It contained such a killing intent, faint, yet so powerful that Zhang Yang would not ever get a good night's sleep.

"That's why, noobie tank should continue on protecting me and cousin sister!" Wei Yan Er had regained her spirit.

Zhang Yang was slightly relieved. In truth, he did not want anything to

happen to them. He frowned and said, "I'll say, what you really want is to have me to make you more dishes! Isn't that right, you little brat!" said Zhang Yang, as he rubbed the little girl's head.

"Nyehehehe!" Both Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue grinned happily.

Zhang Yang had lost his parents when he was only a little boy. Since childhood, he had learned to cook on his own and had manage to raise his culinary skills to a certain extent. During his stay in her house, Zhang Yang was the one who had been cooking all the meals for Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. With his level of cooking, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had completely fallen for his cooking.

Fatty Han shot him a thumbs up, flashing a wink that practically says, "We are a good team!"

Sun Xin Yu was starting to get agitated. "With only Zhang Yang staying over, it would be extremely inappropriate for the both of you! From here on out, I shall take over the role and protect you both!"

Wei Yan Er walked up to Sun Xin Yu and cocked her head cutely. "... Sister Sun? Can you cook?" she asked like an innocent little girl.

"I...I-I-I'll order takeout!" said Sun Xin Yu coldly as she stuttered. Apparently she had zero cooking abilities.

"No.NO.NO.NO!" said Wei Yan Er as she turned her head left and right at a high speed. "Takeouts are not as nice as the one that noobie tank cooks!"

Sun Xin Yu sighed. Helplessly, she blushed with a great deal and walked over to Zhang Yang. "Don't you dare agree to them!"

"Huh? Why?"

"There's no why! Just don't!" said Sun Xin Yu.

Zhang Yang cocked his head as well and pretended to gasped. "Oh! You're jealous!"

Sun Xin Yu slid across the floor and went up straight closer to Zhang Yang. "GRAH! W-W-Who's j-j-j-jealous!? Hmph! I'm leaving!"

Although she said she was leaving, but Sun Xin Yu turned around to walk into the station instead.

Since Wei Zhang Tao, Wei Yan Er's father had just passed away, Wei Yan Er was not in the mood to hold a party for her birthday. In the end, she had only called for Han Ying Xue, Fatty Han, Zhang Yang, and Sun Xin Yu to have the traditional Longevity Noodle¹. Two days after the court order, Wei Yan Er was so busy cleaning up the mess in Silky Soft Holdings, and other related matters. After the dinner, made specially by Zhang Yang, everyone took a stroll outside before logging into the game.

Since it had been a while since they had logged in, many guild members had missed them. The moment the notification rang, announcing their logins, members started to bombard the girls with greetings. Zhang Yang invited them into his party and took Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue to take up some quest and kill monsters for experience points.

"Grah! Annoying!" cried Wei Yan Er. "These days, I finally gone through the accounting. Those parasites have already eaten up a large empty hole inside the company accounts! My god! Even cheese rolls have lesser holes than this!"

Han Ying Xue was also frowning. "The company will be announcing the past year records in just a few days. I have no idea how this issue will affect the stock value. Furthermore, the suppliers will want us to settle the accounts with them as well! I have no idea how to solve this huge gap!"

"Couldn't you just ask for a loan from the bank?"

"After reading the company financial report, I could swear that no bank will be willing to offer us a loan!" said Han Ying Xue as she shook her head disappointingly. "We might need to lay off a few large departments, tuck in, and hope for the worst to past by before we can relax!"

"I had never known that those little parasites could really spend that much! No wonder that worm would resort to attempting to kill me and cousin sister off! The amount of money that has been taken out of the company would be enough to have them shot in the head! More than once!" cried Wei Yan Er furiously.

"Enough with the bad news. There will be a bridge and we'll cross it when we get to it. Until then, let's just focus what's now!" Zhang Yang transferred a large number of [Intelligence Potions] to Han Ying Xue and said, "You guys have been inactive for some time now. You'll need to speed things up a notch and get back on track!"

That being said, Zhang Yang himself had not been training for the past days. Still, he was at Level 74 with 51% experience points, while Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were still at Level 71.

After arriving at the usual grinding site, Zhang Yang and the party killed one wave of monster when a figure was seen from afar galloping towards them. Initially, the trio thought they were players, however, when the figure got closer, it was a soldier, fully clad in armor, on a handsome horse.

[Leanger, the Messenger] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 80,000

Defense: 450

Leanger stopped the horse when he was close to Zhang Yang. He then got down the horse and salute Zhang Yang. "In the name of Prince Serena, Zhan Yu has been requested to return to the castle immediately!"

The three of them exchange a surprised look. An NPC could search for a player?! How intriguing.

"What does Princess Serena need of me?" said Zhang Yang.

"My apologies. I was only sent here to summon you back," said Leanger as he saluted again. "The message has indeed been delivered. Please head back to the castle at once. Fare thee well."

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Longevity Noodle: People from China or those who practice the Chinese culture usually eat long yellow noodles that represents the

longevity of one's health. They say that if the noodles are lifted up high from the bowl, they would signify a long and prosperous life.

Chapter 323: Meteor Sword

Leanger got back on his horse and rode off.

Puffing her cheeks out, Han Ying Xue scoffed. "Dummy, I'd never known that some kid like you would actually manage to hook up with a princess! That, and the Elven Priestess of the Moon. What a player!"

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to her, as he was busy thinking about the reason why Princess Serena would actually summon him. Normally, an NPC would only interact with a player via direct communication and interaction. That applies to NPCs with complex AI as well. All things considered, Princess Serena had actually sent someone out to contact him. It was extremely odd.

Zhang Yang took out a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and said, "You guys, continue your training. I'll head back for a bit!"

With a flash of bright light, Zhang Yang arrived at Thunderstorm Castle and "jumped" to White Jade Castle via the Teleportation Points. He then made his way quickly to the castle doors.

"Peasants are not allowed into the royal grounds!" cried one of the eight guards who were blocking the castle entrance.

Zhang Yang said sternly. "I am Zhan Yu. I am here under the order of Princess Serena herself!"

One of the guards standing closest to Zhang Yang approached him. "Are you really Zhan Yu?"

"The one and only!"

The guard nodded his head and opened a pathway for him. "Follow me!"

The guard led Zhang Yang directly into the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna.

"Please wait here! I will notify the princess," said the guard as he entered the chamber. After a moment, he came out of the chamber and allowed Zhang Yang to proceed further. "You may enter."

Inside the chamber, there were the same 24 gigantic pillars, along with heavily armored soldiers, standing at the side of each pillars. All of them were Elite tier soldier with their Levels hidden away! The defense of the castle had been upgraded to a whole other level!

Serena was sitting at her throne reading a book when he entered. As his heavy footsteps got louder, she closed the book gently and set it aside to welcome Zhang Yang. "Ah. Zhan Yu, please sit!" said Serena as she gestured to a small chair near her throne.

Zhang Yang went up to the chair and made himself comfortable. "Princess, I have no idea why you were in a rush to meet me. Is there anything of importance?"

Serene did not respond to him immediately. Instead, she glanced to the left and right without looking at him and said, "Zhan Yu, do you know of the Imperial Heaven's Empire?"

"Yes. Imperial Heaven's Empire was humanity's first and only empire. It was divided about 1,000 years ago, which was why there were many smaller kingdoms now," said Zhang Yang. It was the background of the game.

Serene turned to look directly at him. "My ambition, is to expand the great kingdom of White Jade to become the next Imperial Heaven's Empire!"

With no successor to the king, this princess had the heart of a real queen! That being said, it was already expected. If she did not have any intentions of expanding her kingdom, she would not have led the expedition to conquer Tukula Fortress in the first place, and would not have let herself become a hostage.

"How ambitious! We as thy followers, shan't disappoint thee" Zhang Yang continued to kiss her *ss. At least, there was no one around to judge him.

Serena nodded her head in satisfaction. "You have proven yourself worthy when you planted the flag of White Jade Kingdom in the Tanilla Forest! Your actions have demonstrated the power of my kingdom!"

Zhang Yang was getting worried, thinking that she would have him surrender his territory back to the kingdom. It was the one food provider of Zhang Yang, and if she wanted it back, he would not be giving it up without a fight.

"All is well, but that's not enough!" said Serena as she stood up suddenly. With a heroic stance, she roared, "I had advised my father, the king, to lead an army to enter the territory beyond the fortress but my father, the king wishes only to defend and not expand the borders of the kingdom! Before I succeed the throne, I am no position to command a large army in order to fulfill my ambitions! Therefore, I have to find another way!"

She paused a little. "Zhan Yu, do you know why the Imperial Heaven's Empire could rule over all of humanity and become history's first ever human empire?"

"No!" That was not a lie. The game's introduction did not include any further explanation.

Serena smiled and crossed her arms as she sat down gracefully back on her throne. "Legend has it, that Imperial Heaven's Empire had obtained a Celestial weapon called the Meteor Sword. Only with the sword, humanity had managed to suppressed all other beings in the world and built an invincible empire! However, it was also the cause of their downfall. Imperial Heaven's Empire was built on military strength, and was able to suppress other races in terms of military power. The following generations grew greedy. A greedy king is never loved by their subjects. They tried to enforce their will over the seven great generals, but were only brought down in retaliation!"

"Imperial Heaven's Empire has long lost it's royal blood line. The original seven generals of war had expended all their military forces. It was by then, when the officials wanted to take over the military in the name of the Emperor. One by one, they rose up to take the lead, but their true intentions were to take control of the Meteor Sword and to rule over the nation! Left with no choice in their hands, the seven generals had to resort to forbidden magic and banish the entire palace into an alternate dimension. However, they had also created a key that could open the

dimensional gateway. The keys have been split into seven parts. Each general kept a part and their descendants now hold it. To open the gates, one must gather all the parts. One can enter the palace from there and obtain the Meteor Sword!"

Celestial weapon?

Serena continued. "After a thousand years, countless men have tried their best to search for the descendants of these seven generals, to search for the key parts, to obtain the Meteor Sword, but no one had succeeded! No one and no kingdom had ever been able to search for any clues! 7 years ago, I had sent spies out in various directions. After spending a large amount of gold, I have gathered the information about the location of the descendent of the seven generals! I know where they are! However, despite my efforts, father has vehemently disagreed! He thinks that the sword is a bad omen, a cursed weapon! That is why, I leave the search to you. Zhan Yu, you are my only hope in finding the sword!"

'Ding! Serena had a quest for you: Search the Meteor Sword. Will you accept it? This quest will link to the main story quest. Complete the quest for a luxurious reward!'

A main story quest had just turned up at Zhang Yang door step!

Now Zhang Yang had finally understood the benefits of getting a good Relationship with Princess Serena! To think that she would deliberately seek him out for such a request!

Zhang Yang spoke out. "My princess, your wish is my command!"

Serena smiled and gave him a small pamphlet. "This is the current location of all the seven generals' descendants. I cannot disobey my father, the king's command. Therefore, the kingdom cannot support you in any way. You are on your own in this dangerous mission. Please be careful!"

"My Princess. Rest assured, I will complete the mission!" said Zhang Yang as he took the pamphlet.

"I will take your word for it. Please, hurry. I am not the only one who knows of this. The other seven kingdoms have already done the same

thing! Please hurry!" said Princess Serena agitatedly.

"Roger!"

After exiting the royal chamber, Zhang Yang flipped open the pamphlet and read the paper. What a pain, all seven NPC were all scattered in all different maps! Just travelling alone would be tough! Among the seven NPC, three were located in three different Level 70 maps. Three others were located three other different Level 80 maps. The last NPC is located in a Level 90 map! In that case, to finish this quest, Zhang Yang would have to grind his way to Level 90!

For a start, Zhang Yang could at least gather the three key fragments from the Level 70 maps. Zhang Yang opened the quest window and read the description to see it could be shared with others.

[Search the Meteor Sword] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Princess Serena has ordered you to search for the ancient Celestial weapon, the Meteor Sword! The Celestial sword exists in the treasure vault within the royal palace of the Imperial Heaven's Empire. However, the palace, the vault and the sword is currently trapped within an alternate dimension. First, you have to search for the seven key fragments to form a perfect key. Only then, you can open the dimensional gates to enter the palace. The same key could be used to open the treasure vault.

Progress: Meteor Sword 0/1

Unable to share. In the lower corner of the quest description, the option button to share the quest was grayed out.

"Noobie tank, what did the princess ask you to do?" ask Wei Yan Er in the party channel.

"Hehe, a main story quest!" said Zhang Yang with a smile on his face.

"...Woah! What are you waiting for! Share it! Let's go! Come on! Share it!"

"Nope. The quest cannot be shared."

"What!?"

Zhang Yang first returned to the Thunderstorm Castle and went to Oz with the white bear panting beneath him. One of the seven descendants, named Alousous, was located somewhere in the small town of Lagguda. The information did not mention his exact position, neither about the exact position of the town Lagguda.

Riding around like the wind, Zhang Yang had spent over 3 hours and had finally came to a small, ancient looking town. The entrance of the town had a large clock tower that did not move; the long hand was pointing at 37 minutes while the short hand was pointing at 1. It seems that the clock was broken.

Zhang Yang patted the bear's head and the bear slowed down. Slowly, it walked through the streets of the ancient town. The strangest thing about this place, was the fact that it was shining brightly outside, yet, the moment Zhang Yang entered stepped into the town, everything turned dark and gloomy. Even the sky was void of sun light yet it did not seem to be night fall. A cold wind blew by, sending dusts and a few piece of paper rolling off the floor, giving a ghostly feel.

Where are all the people?

With a dead silence looming over the place, only the bear's footsteps could be heard. With each step it took, there was nothing else, besides the sound of its footsteps and the echoes it produced. That sort of atmosphere had given Zhang Yang a cold chill down his spine. The place was just too eerie for him to be alone. After a quick search, Zhang Yang arrived at the center plaza of the town. Standing there, Zhang Yang scanned the entire town and could not even find a shadow of a person. The entire place was completely devoid of any sign of human activity! It was as if some form of famine or plague had robbed the town of all life.

Clak. Clak. Clak.

Footsteps echoed behind Zhang Yang. Along with it, came the sound of ragged breathing as if someone was breathing through a mask. It was so terrifying that he did not even dare turn around to meet this approach.

Shaking, Zhang Yang tried to calm himself and gripped the hilt of the

sword tighter. Props to the game developers for such convincing effects! The virtual atmosphere was so real that it could even induce a heart attack for the weak-willed.

"Young man~~~" came a shady voice from behind.

With all the strength he had, Zhang Yang pulled out the sword from the sheath at lightning speed and, ready to slash whoever it was that surprised him. However, before the blade landed on its target, Zhang Yang's quick reflexes saw that the person behind him was an older man with a walking stick, and was hunched back. Zhang Yang stopped the blade immediately with both of his hands, creating a powerful after shock that blew away some of the dust on the floor.

Zhang drew a long breath, calming down when he saw the name tag on the old man. He then slammed the sword back into its scabbard and walked closer to the older man.

[Alousous] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 1

HP: 1/50

Defense: 10

This man was the person that he was looking for! This NPC seemed so weak and a simple draft would easily blow him to his feet. Could Zhang Yang simply kill the man and take the key? Zhang Yang was seriously considering it in his thoughts. Technically, a majority of all the quests would not be so simple. If he killed the NPC, it would definitely not drop anything, instead, it might cause the quest to be stuck forever, since the key fragment would be forever lost!

That was what the game developers wanted the players to think. In truth, the NPC would simply die in a quick swing of the sword. After considering it for some time, Zhang Yang had decided to just act rationally. "Old man, what had happened here? Where are all the other people living here?"

Alousous held the walking stick closely and stood still. "They...they have

all plunged into eternal sleep! Young man, this place is too dangerous! Please, leave this hellish abyss while you still can!"

Zhang Yang got down from his white bear and said, "Old man, could you please explain to me, why are the people in this town in eternal sleep?"

Obviously, he could not just walk away. How else would he obtained the key fragment?

"Sigh! Please do not think highly of yourself! There were many, many others like you! Young adventurers who thought they could take on the world! Many had come and many had refused to listen and chose to remain. In the end, they met the same fate as the citizens here. Never again to have a waking moment!" Alousous sighed heavily.

Zhang Yang could not help but ask. "If you could just explain, how did an old man like yourself escape and remained awake?"

"How, you ask? That's because I wasn't as greedy and gullible as the rest of them!" said Alousous while he shook his head. "Young man, do you intend to stay?"

"Yes!"

"Sigh!" Alousous sighed again. "This town used to be a beautiful and peaceful little town. People were happily working, happily living. Until 20 years ago, or 30 years...an evil witch came into town and offered a lie. The lie told the citizens that they could attain immortality by drinking the potion she had made!"

The old man shook his head. "One fateful night, 1.37 midnight. The entire town was frozen in time. Just like that clock over there. No living being in this town could move! No one would ever awaken from their dreams! They will never grow old! Neither will they awaken!"

"Did anyone defeat the witch?"

"She is a powerful witch, young man. Those who had drank on the potion will extend her own life span, killing her once will kill one of the citizens here!"

"Is there any other way to defeat her?"

Alousous dwelled in his thoughts for a moment before he answered.

"There is a way. There is a Mirror of Truth that belonged to the queen, it could dispel all evil spells! That alone could defeat the witch! Young man, if you truly wish to help this town, please don't rush into things. Leave this place and head to Hera's Castle, and retrieve the Mirror of Truth to defeat the witch!"

'Ding! Alousous has a quest for you: Retrieve the Mirror of Truth! Will you accept it?'

...There is but one problem with this quest. The Mirror of Truth had already been destroyed by him, a long time ago! Is this what they call shooting oneself in the leg? Zhang Yang laughed. He accepted the quest and bid the old man goodbye. "Old man, I shall try my best!"

The game would never make a quest impossible to be completed. That is why, even if the Mirror of Truth is destroyed, there had to be another way to eliminate the witch. Still, he must visit Hera's Castle. Zhang Yang then rode hurriedly towards Hera's Castle. Crossing rivers and over the mountains, Zhang Yang finally arrived at the ancient castle.

At the gates, Zhang Yang got down the bear and talked to one of the guards. "My name is Zhan Yu and I am here to speak with the Queen!"

"Kah Kah Kah! Do you think the Queen will talk to any sloppy adventurer who comes up to her castle?" one of the guards laughed.

"I came from the town of Lagguda. Something has happened to the town and I am here to seek the assistance of the Queen!" Zhang Yang explained. Since the quest had instructed him to talk to Shaenita in Hera's Castle, the word Lagguda should be an important keyword or pass phrase.

"Lagguda?" Bingo. One of the guards expressed his concern and quickly replied. "Wait here. I shall inform the Queen about this."

Chapter 324: Underwear Thief

Without keeping him waiting, the guard came back and welcomed Zhang Yang into the castle. "Please follow me. The Queen will see you."

The guard led Zhang Yang all the way into the castle and into an exquisite library. There were two guards standing outside the library which were both Elite tier and their levels were three question marks, an indication that their levels were at least 20 levels higher than Zhang Yang.

"Your highness, the visitor from Lagguda has arrived," said the guard with the utmost respect.

"Let him in." The voice of Shaenita rang from within the library.

Zhang Yang walked in to the room and saw Shaenitta was sitting by the corner with a book in her hands. As expected of a queen, she was dressed in a black, fashionable dress which wrapped around her tightly that brought out the figure of her slim body. The cutting on her chest was so low and it squeezed her hookers out like a pair of water balloons! Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder how women actually breathed when their breasts were squeezed like that. Behind her were two handmaidens that also had their levels hidden.

When Zhang Yang finally approached her, Shaenita puts down the book in her hand and glanced up. Her eyes widened and was instantly burning with rage. "You!"

D*mn! NPCs with AI had "memories" and were really a nuisance when they actually remember what you did to them! If it were any other normal NPC, it would not matter what a player did him! You could beat him, slam him, give him a cock screw punch, R.K.O the s.o.b, pinch his nipple, or anything else, and the NPC will completely forget all about it once you leave its aggro range. The NPC will run back to its original place and reset its memories.

Zhang Yang smiled awkwardly. "Your highness, I represent the citizens of Lagguda to beg for your help!"

"Hmph!" Shaenita scoffed. "You're not a citizen of my kingdom, who are you to represent the town of Lagguda?" It was plainly obvious that Shaenita was still angry at him.

"I'm but a adventurer. Fulfilling the wishes others in order to move forward. Now that I have given my word to the people in Lagguda, I stand by my plea to you. Please help us!" said Zhang Yang. It's best to have his slate cleaned before asking for anything else in return.

Shaenita looked at Zhang Yang and solemnly sighed. After a long pause, Shaenita finally spoke. "A few years back, many had asked me to investigate a case where people would disappear after entering the town of Lagguda. Since the number of missing people were but a small number, I had always pushed the thought to the back of my head. I had never thought that it was all the work of an evil witch!"

Now that Zhang Yang had drawn her attention, he had to strike the iron when it's hot! "Your highness, that witch was using some kind of time magic to obtain life force from the people who have consumed her potion. There is an easy to way to kill the witch, that is to use the Mirror of Truth!"

"You dare to mention about the mirror!" Shaenita shot up to her feet. "If it wasn't for your foolish act and gullible brains, the Mirror of Truth would still be intact! You dare to feign ignorance about this?!"

Zhang Yang bowed down horridly. "Your highness! When there is a will, there is a way! Everything that had been wronged, can always be right! Can the Mirror of Truth be fixed?"

Shaenita sighed and sat down. "The magic behind the Mirror of Truth is not the mirror itself, it is the magical tool's spirit! To fixed the Mirror of Truth, you must first revive the spirit that lives in the mirror!"

Jackpot. There's never a quest that could not be done!

Zhang Yang asked, "Your highness. How does one revive the tool's spirit?"

Shanita rested her chin on her silky, fair hands. While gazing to the horizon of the land from the window beside her, she said, "To revive the

tool's spirit, it's not a big of a deal. All you need is a bottle of Ethereal Springwater. However, the only place to obtain the Ethereal Springwater is in the deepest parts of Siccory Mountains within the Chaos Realms. It will be tough for you, since that place is crawling with huge and dangerous monsters!"

Chaos Realms? This is a bad joke. That place can only be access after Level 100! This is just a Level 70 quest! How could the quest require Zhang Yang to be at Level 100 to complete it!

Zhang Yang frowned. "Is there any other way to obtained the Ethereal Springwater?"

Shaenitta shook her head and stopped suddenly. "I recall that there was an adventurer named Gus who lived in the Tanjar Flatlands, the Town of Sivar. He had ventured into the Chaos Realms and obtained a bottle of Ethereal Springwater himself! Zhan Yu, if you can retrieve the Ethereal Springwater, and fix the Mirror of Truth, I will promise to lend you the mirror!"

What the hell!? This queen is being a b*tch! The mirror was nothing but shattered into pieces of glass! The queen was taking advantage of Zhan Yu to basically fix the mirror for free! But from the way she phrased it, it seemed that Zhang Yang was the one who was gaining a huge favor from the queen! As expected from a manipulative politician!

‘Ding! Shanita has a quest for you: Fix the Mirror of Truth. Will you accept it?’

It's not like he could simply ask for a better way around, does it?

Zhang Yang left the palace and rode the white bear towards the Tanjar Flatlands.

Tanjar Flatlands is a Level 70 map. Luckily, it was not far from Oz. It was just right beside the Black Moss Wilderness. Oz was to the left of Black Moss Wilderness, while the Tanjar Flatlands was to the right. Still, a Level 70 maps was just too huge, that Zhang Yang had spent 5 hours just to travel from the far left to the end of the right.

Compared to the silent town of Lagguda, Sivar was much livelier. With many people walking around, filling the street, the town brimmed with liveliness. Along the street, Zhang Yang stopped once in a while to ask for the location of Gus the adventurer. Never had it cross his mind that Gus was rather infamous in this town. The thing was, it was not because of the tale of his adventures, it was the mischiefs that he had done in town.

"What? You want to talk to that old pervert? The guy that will fall to his feet and flip a beautiful girl's skirt to peek at her panties?! Is that the man that you're looking for?" This was said by an NPC in Sivar. However, it crossed his mind that that description would fit how Fatty Han would behave, 40 years in the future.

As he proceeded to the east of the town, Zhang Yang finally encountered the legendary adventure who had ventured into the depths of Siccory Mountain and obtained the Ethereal Springwater, the brave and bold adventurer, who was currently crawling over a brick wall, trying to steal the neighbor's laundry, specifically undergarments that were worn by woman. However, even after he had successfully crawled over the wall, an older lady, roughly by the age of 40, had come out of the house, and with a butcher knife in her hand, had started to chase after Gus.

Right then, Gus had not managed to steal any of her undergarments. Still, despite his age, his veteran status as an adventurer made itself clear as he started sprinting away. Behind, the old woman was puffing with steam, throwing a huge fit as she was slowly left behind.

Zhang Yang quickly hopped on his bear and chased after Gus as well. No matter how fast you may run, you can never outrun a four-legged beast.

After a good distant from the house, Gus stopped by the road side for a quick rest. Panting for his breath, he jumped when he saw the bear sniffing at him. Unconsciously, Gus covered the female fabric in his chest. "I'm warning you, young man! Don't be thinking of any funny business! It took me 3 days of scouting to get Marilyn's panties!"

Zhang Yang nearly fell off his bear. The 40 year old woman who was

chasing him not two minutes ago was not what a normal man would want to have as a wife. Zhang Yang knew this because he had seen her clearly just now. To think that a man would have her panties, and do something... indecent...the man would need to have the heart of the bravest warrior!

Zhang Yang shook off the thought of what would Gus do to that piece of undergarment and said, "Look, Gus, I just want to buy the Ethereal Springwater that you have."

Gus raised an eyebrow suspiciously. "I have you know that the Ethereal Springwater was obtained with such bravery. I nearly lost my own life venturing deep into the Chaos Realms to get that godly water. It's practically priceless! Young man, are you sure you want to buy it?"

Money? That word meant nothing to Zhang Yang now. He was not the kind of person who would use the money in some investment kind of trade. All the dollar bills that he owned was sitting in the bank's vault, collecting dust. If anyone wanted to compete in money spending, no miserly millionaire could even be a match for him!

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "State your price, old man!"

Gus looked at Zhang Yang while raising both eyebrows, one side at a time and was scratching his graying beard. He looked like the kind of man in the thrift shop trying to cut you a deal, but instead, he was just trying to get more money from you!

After tapping his foot a thousand times, Gus finally answered, while gritting his teeth, "100-"

100 gold coins? That's too low! But if it's 1,000,0001, that would be daylight robbery!

"—pieces of woman's panties!"

Zhang Yang actually fell from the white bear after hearing his demands.

"Nyehehehe! 100 female panties! You can't buy them from the store! I want them used! Not fresh! If it has to be fresh, it must be fresh from the laundry! And make no mistake, I better not be sniffing some men's boxers! You feel me?" said Gus, with a shameless expression, and a smug grin.

‘Ding! Gus has a quest for you: The Great Underwear Thief. Will you accept it?’

...Was there an option for him to reject the quest and beat this @#\$\$% with a cast-iron frying pan instead?

[The Great Underwear Thief] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Search and give Gus 100 female panties! Pss! Don’t forget, the best ones are the fresh ones! Don’t be swiping the male underpants eh?

Progress: Panties collected 0/100

Quest Reward: Ethereal Springwater.

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath to prepare himself for the worst possible quest that he has ever done in his life. To become an underwear thief was harder than he had expected.

Zhang Yang rode the bear and sighed all the way. He could not believe that the game developers would actually make a player commit such degenerate acts. Zhang Yang started peeking left and right for freshly dried underwear. He finally saw one at the far end of a street. He sighed heavily. He is the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke, the champion of the Soaring Sword League, China’s number 1 tank! How did he end up doing something as retarded as stealing people’s underwear! If word spread about this, there is no hole in the world for him to hide his face! He would literally lose all his fame in one night!

Behind the house, there were a few hanging laundries, one of them was a cute pink underwear that was surely was not worn by men! The backyard was only protected by a low fence. The bear leap over the fence effortlessly and proceed on to swipe his "prize". However, before Zhang Yang could reach out his hands, a low bark was heard from behind him. Zhang Yang quickly turned around only to find a large black hound waiting for him.

[Guard Dog, Black Star] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 75

HP: 150,000

Defense: 400

Note: The Guardian of the town! Rocky's Partner! Untamable!

"Woof!" the hound barked and leap towards Zhang Yang.

The white bear lifted its paws and forcefully pushed the black hound back to its place. Zhang Yang then started swing his Dark Enigmatic Sword to slice the hound. Even though he was never a person who would treat animals badly, but for the sake of this ridiculous quest, he had to kill the poor guardian.

Even though the hound was an elite tier, it was too weak to be a fair opponent to Zhang Yang. Within 40 seconds, the dog was beaten to its last drop of HP. However, before it could be killed, the hound whimpered ran away, its tail tucked between its legs. How fortunate, the system was protecting it.

Zhang Yang ignored the hound and picked the underwear and kept it in his inventory. With a "ding" ringing in his ears, the quest progress went up by 1.

A thousand-mile journey begins with the hardest step. Now that he had taken one, the rest should be a walk in the park.

Continue stealing!

Without delay, Zhang Yang had found another victim and leaped across the fence, towards the laundry.

"Woof!" The black hound appeared again, its health fully recovered. The hound charged heroically and was sent running again by Zhang Yang.

2/100!

The third piece! The hound appeared again! Same thing went with the 4th and the 5th!

The hound was persistent! Every time it was sent packing, it would always appear again from behind the fence and was ready to fight Zhang Yang until the last drop of its HP.

Zhang Yang could not help but recalled a joke he heard from Fatty Han.

It went like this: A hunter came up a mountain to hunt for bears. He failed and was beaten by a bear. The next day, the hunter came again and was sent home again by the bear. On the third day, when the bear saw the hunter coming up again, the bear asked, "Hey. Are you really here to hunt or to seek for some BDSM sh*t from me?"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Chinese numbers are slightly different. There are 10s, 100s, and 1000s. After that, things start changing. Instead of 10,000 going by ten-thousand, they are referred to by a specific term known as 'wan'. When referring to 1,000,000, the Chinese will refer to it as 'one-hundred-wans,' aka one hundred 'ten-thousands'. I hope it makes sense to you.

Chapter 325: For the Sake of Fixing the Magic Mirror

The black hound relentlessly made its return over again and again.

15/100!

...

43/100!

...

Since the town was...a town, the number of people who lived here were few. That means, the number of laundries were as little. Many of times, Zhang Yang would have to sit there and wait until the underwear re-spawned again. For as long as it seemed, Zhang Yang got really agitated as times goes by. Every time there was someone coming out of their house to dry their clothes, Zhang Yang would be the first to visit the house and wait for the golden chance to swipe the ladies' undergarment.

81/100!

...

99/100!

...

"Woof!" The black hound barked, "welcoming" Zhang Yang for the last time as Zhang Yang defeated the little critter to claim his final "prize". Once it's done, he rode frantically to Gus to dump all the "dirty" load.

"What a blessing!" said Gus as he buried his face in the pile of slightly damp laundry.

Zhang Yang felt the ultimate disgust. Turning away, he cried, "You done? The request is completed. Where's my reward?"

"Here!" said Gus as he tossed the Ethereal Springwater to him as if it was worthless. "Now scram! Don't interrupt me in my moment of bliss!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: The Great Underwear Thief.

Obtained 15,000,000 Experience Points!

'Ding! You have obtained: Ethereal Springwater x1!'

15 million?! That's too much to be true! However, after thinking about it, Zhang Yang understood the reason behind it. As he had trudged along doing the quest, he had not obtained any drop of experience points! Perhaps defeating that black hound a hundred teams would have granted him that amount of experience points afterall!

Zhang Yang sighed. It may seem luxurious, but the system was just too stingy to not provide any bonus experience points. He quietly left the place with haste and go on his way. The moment he rode off a good distance, he saw a group of housewives coming out from their homes with kitchen knives in their hands. Everyone was pissed off. Just when he thought that he was about to be sliced and diced - Gordon Ramsey style -, the group of housewives headed for Gus!

"HEY!! PERVERT OLD MAN! SURRENDER OUR CLOTHES!"

"You sick old bastard! I'll beat you up good!"

"Gus! How could you even steal my granny's pants! Today, I'll make sure you regret your decision to ever steal from us!"

...

While the crowd of people surrounded the old man, only the one black hound gave chase to Zhang Yang, barking ferociously. Luckily, the group of housewives had their anger and frustration directed at Gus, they failed to noticed the black hound was barking at the real culprit!

Zhang Yang ignored the hound and made his way out of the town. After some time, the hound turned back around after leaving its original position. Zhang Yang left Sivar and took a long, cumbersome journey back to Hera's Castle.

"Noob tank! Wakey wakey! Time to make dinner for us!" Zhang Yang was only about to set foot into the castle when the annoying voice of Wei Yan Er came shouting. Zhang Yang logged out and realized it was already past 6pm. He then rushed down to made the "family" their dinner. He

came down to the kitchen and got as busy as Hell's Kitchen would be during rush hour. However, unlike the contestants, Zhang Yang was much more agile and proficient in cooking and had made several dishes in a flash. Content with his work of art, Zhang Yang went to the girl's room and gave a hard and loud knock to notify them dinner was ready. He then hurriedly rushed to the toilet. Back when he was preparing dinner, he was already being called upon by nature, but since preparing a meal required constant observation, he could not just leave the stove on. Only after all the food was served, only did he permit himself to answer the call.

Turning and spinning around the house, he rushed into the toilet and relived himself. It was then he realized one fatal error of his decision. The toilet that he was in, was meant for Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue! When nature calls, you could not just put it on hold. Grah! So be it! Since it would only take a few seconds, at most a minute, if something is to happen during that duration, it's the worse of luck.

After emptying his bladder, Zhang Yang cleaned his hands zipped his pants up and was ready to pull the door when he noticed a pair of black colored fabric. It was a T-back undergarment. Such a design could only mean that it belonged to Han Ying Xue the B*tchy Snow!

Honest to god, and everything that He had created. Zhang Yang could swear at he had no fetish for a women's undergarment. However, since he had been the Great Underwear Thief for such a long time in the game, his hands had automatically, and involuntarily moved to grab that piece of laced clothe and place it in his pockets. It was how he usually store items in his in-game inventory.

Flop!

The toilet door opened and it was Han Ying Xue.

The two of them made eye contact for a moment and both of them turn to the dangling piece of cloth that had protruding out from Zhang Yang pocket. Silence filled the small toilet. After 7 to 8 seconds later, Han Ying Xue took a step back. Knowing that things had gone wrong at the maximum level, Zhang Yang frantically took out the panties and tossed it

back to where it was.

"Wait! Let's me explain! It's an accident!"

Instead of the typically, expected response, Han Ying Xue seemed to understand him. Not in the way he wanted, however. "Well, it's understandable since you're living with two world class beauty and had not burst out like a raging beast. You did hold yourself back for a long time. This is nothing. Worry not. I'm completely fine with it."

What?!

Zhang Yang pulled the woman into the toilet and shut the door behind him. "You need to listen to my explanation before jumping to any messed-up conclusion!"

"Hey! Like I said! I understand what's happening!" said Han Ying Xue while nodding understandably. The problem was her expression was different from her usual outbursts. If this incident got out unresolved, that little brat would be the first to know. After that, the little trumpet will surely spread the word to Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream and the others! Like falling dominoes, it would only get worse and worse...

Zhang Yang pressed his entire body to block the door and said, "Please listen! I really took it by reflex!"

"Like I said! I understand and believe you! Now, can you please let me out?!"

"Y-You! You're not sincere!"

Han Ying Xue crossed her arms and her eyes turned soft suddenly. She took a step forward, drawing the distant closer and kissed Zhang Yang on the lips. "How about now?" said Han Ying Xue.

What was that? Was he just harassed by a lady pervert!?

Stunned, Zhang Yang was as stiff as a strawman. After a good second, "Y-You...W-Wha...Why?"

Han Ying Xue cocked her head playfully and flicked her index finger against Zhang Yang's forehead. "Sigh...Dummy. You're really a big dum-

dum!" Han Ying Xue winked. "If I had no feelings towards you, why would I allow a man like yourself to stay with me? Do you think I'd let any wolf enter my house of lambs?"

Han Ying Xue stared into Zhang Yang eye's with a face that says: All men sure are dumb!.

Zhang Yang stuttered. "Y-You like me?"

"What are you stuttering about? Did that really shock you that much?" said Han Ying Xue as she leaned against the wall, emitting a lustful, sleazy aura.

"But...why?"

"What do you mean why?" She giggled. "You may not be as handsome as what I want from a man. However, you do have the qualities of what a man should be. You're a figher. You're dependable. Brave, strong, buffed, and other qualities that satisfies my taste!"

"...Well...that's pretty straight forward."

"Sigh. What a tragic event. I had never thought that my confession would happen in a toilet. This is so not romantic! It's a total lady-bone killer!"

Zhang Yang was so confused that he was sure that his brain was all gooey and soupy inside. His heart beat was so fast and he was already not thinking straight. Han Ying Xue's confession was just too sudden! While looking into her dreamy eyes, he heard Han Ying Xue calling out to him.

"Is your head spinning?" Sighing heavily, Han Ying Xue pulled Zhang Yang large palm and pressed it against her left breast. "Can you feel my heart beat? If my words could not get through to you, perhaps the beat of my heart could!"

Waves and waves of confusion had successfully sent a surge of blood rushing to his face, making it flustering with red. Underneath her clothes, Zhang Yang could not feel nothing else but his own heart pulsing faster than a steam train! Unconsciously, Zhang Yang's palm had started curling its fingers around.

Han Ying Xue moaned, and her face twisted with a surge of pleasure. With her cheeks dyed pink, she playfully pinched Zhang Yang's arms and said, "I said to feel my heart, not make yourself comfortable!"

What an impossible demand!

Han Ying Xue slowly removed Zhang Yang's hand and said, "Is it all that hard to believe?"

Nodding obediently, Zhang Yang could not help but to think that this was just a bad prank.

Han Ying Xue lunged herself and locked her hands together around Zhang Yang's neck. "Kiss me!"

How could he!? This minx is a world-class calamity! If he were to fall into her deceit, it would be the end of the chapter for him! Still, her sensual eyebrows were like magic working their way to hypnotize Zhang Yang. Her rose-colored lips were like the burning flames that could attract poor insects to burn themselves. In that moment, Zhang Yang knew that he had f*cked up. His resistance towards this woman is practically 0!

Or perhaps, he already had feelings towards her a long time ago and had not realized it till now...

Zhang Yang lowered his head and pressed his lips against hers. Time stopped for the both of them. Both of their hearts were pulsating so strong that they could feel each other's heartbeat. After an eternity, they separated their lips, a line of fluid stretching between the both of them.

Be it bashful, happy, angry, or excited, Han Ying Xue's expression was gold. Giggling, she said, "Dummy, now that you had touched me, you had kissed me, you're now my man!"

"Actually, I had been meaning to ask you...Just how old are you?"

"Hmm...that is a good question. I'll answer that question when you're the grandfather of my grandchildren 50 years later!" said Han Ying Xue with a wink.

"..."

"Now, begone! Yan Er will be out soon and if she sees us together like this, it would be a whole other mess to deal with," said Han Ying Xue. She then pushed Zhang Yang away and out of the door.

Still confused over what had just happened, Zhang Yang did not know how he found his way back at the dining table. Completely dumbfounded, he thought that Han Ying Xue had just confessed to him, and kissed him, was all simply too surreal!

Wei Yan Er was just too thick headed to realize what had just happened. She took no notice of extremely odd behavior of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue on the dining table. Minding her own business, she walloped the food on the table and once she was done, she tossed the chopsticks on the table, said "Thanks for the meal!", and disappeared into her room. They had a rule, or rather a competition, that whoever was the last person eating should be the one cleaning everything up.

Still confused, Zhang Yang decided to put it all behind his head and logged into the game to finish the quest.

"Your highness. Zhan Yu has arrived and had completed the mission!" said Zhang Yang as he took out the Ethereal Springwater and offered it to Shaenita.

One of the handmaiden walked and retrieved the bottle for Shaenita.

Shaenita took the bottle and opened it immediately. With a wave of her wand, a puff of black smoke came floating out of the bottle and formed into various of shapes in the air.

"Wonderful! This is, indeed, Ethereal Springwater!" Delighted, she summoned another handmaiden and said, "Fetch me the pieces of the Mirror of Truth!"

"Yes, your highness!"

It took them a while, but the hand maidens had come back with a large box. The box was then placed onto the large desk. Shanita took the bottle of Ethereal Springwater and emptied it into the box. She then start waving her wand whilst chanting an incomprehensible spell.

Bang! Bang! Boom!

Like fireworks, the box started to glow with various colors, emitting popping noises here and there. This lasted for at least 3 to 4 minutes until Shaenita stopped her chanting. A bright white light burst out from the box and formed into a face of a man. With a loud groan, "uuuUUUAAA! I'm back! I'm finally back!"

Pieces of the shattered mirror pieces started to float up into the air. The broken pieces then glued themselves together and formed a large mirror.

Zoom!

A bright light flashed all the way from the bottom of the mirror to the top and all of the cracks and gaps in the mirror were repaired instantly.

Thud!

The mirror dropped back down and landed on the desk unscathed. A cloud formed from within the mirror and formed the face of a man. "Ah! My beloved lady, is there anything you want to ask of me today?"

Chapter 326: Saving Lagguda

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Fixing the Magic Mirror. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!’

Shaenita raised her gaze to Zhang Yang and praised him. "You have done your part, adventurer. It is my turn to fulfill my end of the bargain. I will lend you the Mirror of Truth, however, you must return it back to me within 10 days!"

The man in the mirror turned around to observe the person who was about to receive his aid and was shocked to see the same person who was responsible for his demise! "Oh! My beloved queen! T-T-That man! Please don't let him take me! He was the reason! He was the person! He was the one responsible for my death!"

Zhang Yang picked up the mirror and grinned evilly while meeting the mirror's gaze directly. "If I were you, I'd be grateful to have been revived in the first place, instead of basking in your narcissism. Or, should I find another stone to wreck your body once more?"

The man in the mirror fell silent when he saw that even Shaenita, his owner, had remained quiet and ignorant to his plea.

‘Ding! You have obtained the item: Mirror of Truth!’

‘Ding! You are now affected with the {Item Return} effect. Lasts for 10 days. All attributes will be permanently reduced by 100% upon failure to return the Mirror of Truth after the stipulated duration.’

Zhang Yang skipped past the warnings and checked the mirror's properties whilst leaving the palace.

[Mirror of Truth] (Quest Item)

Use: Dispels all Black Magic within the vicinity.

"Hey listen up! I'm not just some random Celestial item that can be found all around the world, so you best consider yourself fortunate enough to even talk to me! That being said, I expect you to handle me with extreme care! Furthermore, I demand that you serve me my favorite

Energy Crystals! They had better the best of quality or else—HEY! WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU—Watch your hands! Where are you touching!"

Annoyed, Zhang Yang kept the blabbering mirror into his inventory and it was immediately silenced.

"Sigh...what a long day..." Zhang Yang stretched himself out and summoned the white bear to ride towards Lagguda. Again, once he stepped foot inside the border of the small desolated town, the atmosphere grew heavy and the air was shrouded with a complete utter silence. There he was, one moment pleased to be greeted with silence from the absence of the mirror. Then the next moment, here he was, desperately wanting to be rid of the town's eerie silence. He came to the center of the town and met the old man in the plaza. "Old man, I have brought the Mirror of Truth!" He then proceeded to take the mirror out of his inventory.

"Ahhack! D*mn you! What else did you stuff inside!? I'm all sore here and there! Listen, you! I am the greatest of all Celestial items! I do not deserve treatment like this! I'm warning you! Never again..." The man in the Mirror of Truth continued on rambling as he plucked out feathers from all over him.

Delighted and surprise at the discovery, Alousous continued observed the mirror. "How and why would the queen lend the magical tool of the nation to a man such as yourself? This is fabulous! Fantastic! Bless the queen! May her reign last forever and ever more!"

...His thanks should be targeted towards Zhang Yang instead, since he had just spent an entire day just to steal some panties.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Retrieve the Mirror of Truth. Obtained 2,000,000 Experience Points!'

Alousous gazed up and down, looking at Zhang Yang and the Mirror in turn. "Young man, your feats have raised my hopes. Now, I truly believe that you could defeat the evil witch and rescue our town! Let's not waste time, please take the mirror with you and head west. The witch is living in a small, rundown garden!'

‘Ding! Alousous has a quest for you: Save Lagguda. Will you accept it?’

...

[Save Lagguda] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: You have obtained the one weapon to defeat the evil witch. Please take the mirror with you and slay the evil witch! The entire town of Lagguda awaits your victorious return!

Progress: Kill the Evil Witch Daphne 0/1

Zhang Yang took off alone. The lair of Daphne was pretty close to Lagguda. After traveling merely 3km away, Zhang Yang came to a small farm. There were weird flora that flourished around the garden and have been tended to carefully. In the middle of the garden were a few small shacks and one of them had smoke coming out from the chimney on top.

Just before he was about to barge into the shack, he noticed there were blinks in the mini-map that notified Zhang Yang about the location of herbs. Zhang Yang zoomed in and was shocked to see there were extremely rare herbs that were growing in the garden! Almost of them were rare and awfully scarce.

Two factors limit the production of herbs. A low number of spawn points, and an extreme lengthy spawning duration. These herbs that were growing in the garden were known for both factors! Even though they were only Level 70 herbs, they were extremely rare and valuable! Without hesitation, Zhang Yang leapt down from the bear and started to harvest the herbs.

"Insolent fool! How dare you steal my precious herbs! Begone!" A loud and coarse sound of an old woman roared from behind him. Zhang Yang turned around only to be greeted by an old hag that looked like she was already at the age of 60. Her skin was wrinkled and she was as skinny as a stick. Dressed in a black magician cloak, the old hag took out a foot-long wand and point it at Zhang Yang. Instantly, a black ray blasted out and struck Zhang Yang.

‘-4,574!’

[Daphne the Witch] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 750,000

MP: 400,000

Defense: 400

Zhang Yang jumped back onto the bear and charged towards the boss. She was merely a Gray-Silver tier. There was absolutely nothing to fear about the battle. Since there were walls and obstacle laying around, Zhang Yang could easily block the boss' line of sight to disrupt her spellcasting!

Just as he got within range, Zhang Yang pulled out the mirror from his inventory and yelled. "It's your turn to shine now, magic tool!"

"CALL ME THE GREAT MAGIC MIRROR!" Even though the man in the mirror protested, he carried out his task. Like oil and water, the mirror had automatically activated its power in the presence of Black Magic, just like how an anti-virus program automatically activates when a virus was present in the computing system.

SHIING!

A bright light blasted out from the mirror and illuminated everything that the mirror was facing, including Daphne.

"KYAA!"

Clumps of black clouds oozed out of Daphne shrieked in horror. Her reaction was rather amusing, similar to how a vampire reacts upon being exposed to sunlight.

"No....NO! It cannot be! Why...? Where did my life source go!? What has happened to my immortality!? What have you done to me? WHAT HAVE YOU DONE TO ME?!"

While being accused by the distraught old hag, Zhang Yang felt extremely awkward. He was indirectly innocent since it was the mirror that had snatched away her black magic. He then started swinging his sword and taunted the witch. "Time for you to die!"

"Grr! It doesn't matter if I've lost my Vitality Puppets! I can always find more!" Without delay, Daphne started chanting her attack. Before the man in the mirror could voice his complaints again, Zhang Yang swiftly stuffed him back into his inventory and equipped himself with the shield.

"Hehehe! Feel the honor as being the first replacement of my Vitality Puppets!" cried Daphne, giving out a typical witch's cackle. Pew! A {Shadow Arrow} blasted and damaged Zhang Yang for 4,500 HP.

Zhang Yang planted five layers of {Cripple Defense} and shot back. "Old witch, you're not my type! Give it up!"

"Insolent fool! Weep for your own dark future! You shall be plunged into eternal sleep!"

The boss' {Shadow Arrow} casting rate was rather fast, at 2 seconds per shot, pushing her DPS up to 2,200! Guardians never had any solid form of defense against magic. They could not use {Block} either. Without the shield, the Defense value would not apply, thus forcing Zhang Yang to receive the highest damage possible.

With the immense damage received, his Rage gauge was constantly filled. Zhang Yang would not need to worry about the cost of the skills, as he could blatantly cast all his skills at will.

Even though Daphne might be a Gray-Silver tier, her natural anti-tank magic attack had managed to damage Zhang Yang down to his last drop of HP in just half a minute, despite having attack no better than the physical attack of a Yellow-Gold tier boss. Relying on his set-equipment set-effect, and a bottle of [Level 4 Healing Potion], Zhang Yang had managed to keep his HP up to a certain degree. He then commanded the bear to move across the field, behind a wall to disrupt the witch's line of sight.

This would possibly reduce the total damage output, but at the same time, could reduce the damage received. As long as he could survive each clash for more than 2 minutes, he could easily win the battle with the 2 minute cool down of {Berserker's Heal}.

As easy as it seemed, the boss was still a boss. To defeat her that easily

would put a shame to all Gray-Silver tiered bosses in the world.

As the battle continued on for another 4 minutes, Zhang Yang had managed to decrease the boss HP down to 130,000. He decided to activate the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}.

FOOM!

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

With each slice, the boss would take a clean amount of 10,000 damage. After the skill’s 10th consecutive strike ended, the boss had received a total of 100,000 damage!

Full Rage (points) {Killing Cleave}!

‘-8,940!’

Zhang Yang then consumed a [Transmute (5) Enrage Potion] to raise his Rage to 100 points and also gained an additional buff that increased 50% of his attack power!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

{Destructive Smash}!

{Force Strike}!

With a chain of attacks landing on the boss, coupled with the bear’s own claw strikes, the boss’s 130,00 HP swiftly plummeted down to the last bit.

"OOOUUUAAHHH!" The old hag wailed and fell defeated.

Nodding contentedly, Zhang Yang felt that the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was truly OP beyond words. It would be especially indispensable during the race to win the First Clear Achievement of a Hardcore Mode dungeon! When a sudden jolt of power is required to kill

the boss, all 9 of the members who had the skill could activate them at the same time and instantly deal a massive amount of 900,000 damage! What could match up to that!?

Zhang Yang smiled knowingly as he fantasized using it in dungeons. He then went on to pick up his battle loots. Naturally, all the Gray-Silver tier equipment were junk to him. Only one item drew his attention, it was an Assembled Equipment part.

[Fireglass Necklace Fragment] (Gray-Silver, Necklace Fragment)

Use: Combine five fragments of the Fireglass Necklace to form a complete Fireglass Necklace.

Level Requirement: 70

Since the fragments did not have any specific numbers to them, he could farm the same piece over and over again until he could assemble the item.

Zhang Yang tossed the fragment into his inventory. Just one of the five pieces would not be worth anything. When five fragments are gathered, they would worth a whole lot more. For example, each fragment could cost around 10,000 gold coins, but the cost of the completed equipment would be worth roughly 70,000 to 80,000 gold coins. If the item had any specific effects, it would fetch an even higher price, naturally.

Since drop rates were so unpredictable, one could gain four pieces successfully, without a hitch and be stuck forever, trying to gain the final piece. Furthermore, before the product is actually forged, no one could really judge the equipment's properties to deem it worth the trouble of farming in the first place!

Setting that aside, Zhang Yang went on to collect all the precious herbs that had spawned in the garden. All of them could be used to concoct [Invincibility Potions]! These potions will grant their users the ability of being literally invincible, to be immune to all attacks! It was one of the game's strongest potion! Just like [Mobility Potions], [Invincibility Potions] are categorized into three different ranks. Beginner, Intermediate, and Advance, each respectively having 3 seconds, 5 seconds, and 10 seconds of effective duration.

Logically, being one of the strongest potion in the game, it also had one of the longest cool down time, which was 30 minutes. That meant that, there was absolutely no way that a player could use the potion in the PvP arena.

After digging up all the herbs and grass, Zhang Yang hopped on his mount and rode back to Lagguda happily.

Back at the town's entrance, the clock's hands were no longer frozen. The time had changed to 1:58! The witch's spell was lifted! The curse was gone! Instead of the gloomy, dark, spooky town, light had been reintroduced into the streets!

One by one, windows and doors were open as many people were sticking their heads out to finally see the world again, after being frozen in time. Happiness filled the streets as Alousous greeted each and every one that he saw. With a jubilant smile, the old man greeted Zhang Yang. "Warrior! You have done this town a great favor! You have rescued everyone in Lagguda! You're our hero! The savior!"

Slowly, the citizen walked out of their home. Puzzled and confused of what has happened to them, they started asking one another questions.

Zhang Yang nodded and hopped down from the bear and patted the old man's shoulder. "I'm but an adventurer. The honor is mine!"

"Young warrior! You're brave and wise! I shall ensure the land will always praise your name in songs and poems for decades to come!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Save Lagguda. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

Alousous took out a piece of shiny metal from his pocket and gave it to Zhang Yang. "This old man has nothing to give you except this. It was an heirloom from my ancestors! It is said to be a treasure or some sorts, but I have no knowledge of it. Please take it. Instead of keeping it, I feel that it may be of some use to you!"

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 3!'

[Dimensional Key Fragment 3] (Question Item, Unique)

Description: Gather all seven fragments of the Dimensional Key to form a complete Dimensional Key that opens the dimension gate to the royal palace of the Imperial Heaven's Empire. In the situation where players that possesses the key fragment is in the same map as you, a system location notification of their position will be announced. If you are killed by a player possessing the key fragment, the key fragment in your inventory will have a 100% chance of being dropped upon death. The item will never appear elsewhere again.

Unique item! That meant that the same item will never appear elsewhere in the whole of China!

Dammit! After running all day long, running errands here and there, he had only manage to obtained one of the seven key fragments!

Sighing, Zhang Yang felt that it was rather unfair. He bade Alousous farewell and hurried back to Hera's Castle to return the Mirror of Truth back to Shaenita. Once the mirror was back into Shaenita's hands, like a spoiled child, the man in the mirror started to rumble about how Zhang Yang had been "mistreating" him.

The second, reachable descendant of the several generals is located in the Crimson Flame Hills. The NPC carrying the key fragment is called Tiffany..

Just as Zhang Yang was racing towards the destination, he was disturbed by a voice message from Wei Yan Er. "Hey! Noobie tank! Time for supper!"

"...Didn't you had enough for dinner? How are you able to eat so much at night?"

"What are you talking about? I'm a growing child! Of course I need more that that!"

"Glutton!"

Zhang Yang logged off and went to the kitchen to make the girls supper. Even though he was scolding the little girl about eating too much, he was, in fact, getting a little hungry himself.

In just a few minutes, the man had stepped out of the kitchen with light

snacks and a couple of hot drinks. He knocked on the door and the three of them sat down together, enjoying their late night supper.

While munching on the piece of bread, Wei Yan Er was busy scrolling her phone and spoke. "There's this guy in the news who had died while playing 'God's Miracle'! Woah. His house had caught fire and he had not realized it until it was already too late. He was actually burnt alive! And then there's this some university professor, a professor Tao, stating something about how the psyche of the human mind might be affected by too much VR diving! He had even urged the government to ban the game!" cried Wei Yan Er, her voice muffled by the piece of bread still in her mouth.

Chapter 327: Batmans of the Ghastly Mountains

When a user plays the game, the body will be place into a sleep-like state. The gaming helmet did more than just connect the user to the game. A weak electrical current flowed through the body to maintain a certain level of connectivity between the user and the helmet. This allowed the helmet to monitor the user's body health status. This function was thoroughly checked by the health department.

The function to allow player to continue playing the game consciously even in sleep was a newly added feature. Since the developers who had introduced the function did not apply any additional update to the helmet had led everyone to believed that the function had already existed in the helmet and was only waiting to be released. Just like a game update. It will only be open to the public, one update at a time and would only gather a number of response for a brief period of time before dying down.

The time adjustment (1 hour in real time is 3 hours in-game time) garnered exceptional response, as it was able to indirectly prolong a human's lifespan! Even without the advanced time adjustment in the game, the ability to play while sleeping was already impressive enough. So far, the number of active players had been expanding continuously, from 200,000,000 to 300,000,000 players in a year. While the whole world enjoyed the game, some groups had publicly expressed that 'God's Miracle' was a disaster and should be stopped. Judging from the reaction of those said critiques, unless they were only seeking momentarily attention by being a clown of the year, there was no other reason for them to do so!

Zhang Yang grinned, "Why is there suddenly a professor Tao?"

Wei Yan Er blink a little, "After some research, this Tao professor had a father. His father was once an infamous man named Professor Tao Hong Hong, and now everybody calling his son the Second coming of Tao."

Professor Tao was a professor, that meant that he had his own battles to

fight in his field, which was almost similar how players fought each other bravely. Zhang Yang sighed, "Some people just love to cry wolf. When there is nothing happening, they would try to stir up something. All in all, it go back goes back one main objective, money."

Wei Yan Er griggled, "Be careful what you say. Professor Tao is a good friend with Researcher Yang. You best be careful, or else you will be caught and be strapped down to the electric chair!"

After supper, Wei Yan Er was the first one to flee back to her room, leaving Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue alone in the kitchen to do the cleaning-up. In truth, there was no reason for them to do so. There was a dish-washer in the kitchen which could wash everything with just a push of a button.

"Dummy. Just so you know, even though I had confessed my feelings to you, I'll have you know that I am not a loose girl. I won't be randomly confessing my feelings to any guy that I like. Oh and, I'm warning you. Don't let me catch you crawling into my room late at night!" said Han Ying Xue with a straight face.

Make up your mind woman! Was that a threat or a seduction!? Zhang Yang was a good man. He would had never have the thought of doing something as lame as sneaking into a woman's room while she slept. However, now that she had said it sternly, that idea was already planted in his mind. It was just like a person telling you not to think about elephants, but you would inadvertently start thinking about elephants.

"Please. I would never go to you. In fact, you're welcome to come into mine. I never lock my doors when I sleep!" Zhang Yang counterattacked, leaving Han Ying Xue to turn away with her cheeks blushing in pink.

"Hmm! Rascal!"

After cleaning up, Zhang Yang went back to his room with only the thought of finishing the quest to find all seven key fragments. He rode his way through the Crimson Fire Hills and into the small village called the Alfalfa Village to search for Tiffany. The village was rather historical. Outside, there were a few stone-carved statues of people, giving off an

ancient, antiquated impression.

From afar, it would not take anyone a pair of binoculars to see Zhang Yang riding his white bear. Noticing his approach, a group of little kids had came up to him carrying sticks and wooden poles. Everyone surrounded Zhang Yang and glared at him as if they were adults, trying to intimidate Zhang Yang with their numbers.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and stopped. "Where are all the adults here?"

The kids exchange a look with one another and remained quiet. The silence lingered until an older teenager who looked like he was at the age of 13 to 14 walked out. He crossed his arms and glared at Zhang Yang like an old man. "What business do you have here, stranger?"

Zhang Yang smiled. "I'm Tiffany's relative. I'm here to pay her a visit!"

"Sister Tiffany!"

"He's sister Tiffany relative!"

Once they heard the name 'Tiffany', they lowered their guards almost immediately and surrounded Zhang Yang. Chitter chatter started to fill every small corner of the village. The little children were bombarding him with questions that any adult could expect, such as how did he catch the bear, or what does the outside world looked like. The worst one of all was a young boy, with snot leaking out of his nostril, asking Zhang Yang to pass his marriage proposal to Tiffany. It seemed that Tiffany was really popular in the village.

Annoyed, Zhang Yang had waited patiently for something to happen, a trigger event of the questline, perhaps, before he snapped eventually. "Tony!" he cried. Tony was the eldest teenager in the crowd. "Where is Tiffany?"

Tony snorted. "Sister Tiffany had led a few men to fight the batmen."

"Bat...men?" Zhang Yang asked.

"50 kilometers east of the village, lies the Ghastly Mountain. There were

flying monsters that looked like bats. They consume blood to survive. So, in order to prevent an attack to the village, we will always send a number of livestock as tribute for them to feed on. However, 2 years ago, their numbers multiplied. Eventually, our livestock was insufficient to satiate them. It was then, when the monsters started demanding for human sacrifice!"

Tony slumped. "People were afraid. None of us were willing to do anything. Eventually, the elders of the village had to sacrifice themselves in order to save the village. My grand-daddy and grand-mummy gave themselves up! However, the batmen were greedy creatures! They wanted more. Eventually, all of the elders of the village had given up their lives. After that, they had come to us and demanded the young ones! At this point, the villager had realized that there was no way to escape this. It was either to kill, or be killed. Sister Tiffany had stood up among the crowd and encouraged us to defy the batmen. Because of her, the adults in the village had rallied and were willing to fight. Under the command of sister Tiffany, she managed to lead the adults to victory and push the batmen back!"

Zhang Yang nodded. "She was always a brave young girl."

Tony came close. "Big brother, I see that you're carrying weapons and armor. Are you perhaps a warrior? You can help us to check on sister Tiffany and the other adults!"

'Ding! Tony has a quest for you: Retrieve News. Will you accept it?'

[Retrieve News] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Tony of Alfalfa has requested for you to search for Tiffany and the other adults. Find them and see to their condition. Tiffany and the others should be fighting the batmen up at the Ghastly Mountain.

Progress: Search for Tiffany and the adults from Alfalfa Village 0/1

Zhang Yang bade the young children goodbye and pulled the reins of the bear. With a loud roar, the bear dashed off and headed east. The next thing he saw simply looked magical. A few kilometers away from the village, he saw a huge mountain peak, that was actually floating a

thousand kilometers up among the clouds! Beneath the floating peak was a flattened mountain. The entire scenery looked like some godly figure had used some godly sword skill to slice the mountain in half and had somehow, left the mountain on top of the clouds! No wonder it was called Ghastly Mountain! It actually looked like it would fall down at any moment! If you were standing at the top of the flat mountain, anyone could feel the tremendous pressure, fearing that the clouds might disappear anytime, sending the gigaton mass of earth to fall down like the an Armageddon-bringing meteor! If that were to happen, it would definitely be much more than {Block} could take.

The flattened part of the mountain was rather small and short. Measuring at almost at 300 meters tall, Zhang Yang took no time at all to reach the top. Since the massive peak was hovering on top of him, its shadow loomed over the area, turning the place as dark as the evening.

On the route to the top, Zhang Yang had noticed many corpses. A few were normal human beings, yet many more were belonged to an odd race that had wings protruding out from their back. Based on the sheer number of them, the death toll of the odd race was far greater than the humans.

Zhang Yang was skeptical. The villagers from Alfalfa were nothing more than normal villagers. How could they possess the battle power to pull this feat? The village was so small, yet the battle here had somewhat made it look like it was an intercontinental war between humans and the monsters! How many villagers exactly, were participating in this battle? From the looks of it, no matter how many monsters there were, the humans were winning by a landslide. Either the monsters were too weak... or Tiffany was too strong, for the sake of the story...

Just as Zhang Yang stood there deep in thought, a few men and women came back down the mountain, running amok. Some of them had weapons in their hands, while the others were sprinting empty handed. At first, Zhang Yang thought that the reason behind their haphazard steps were because they were going down a slope, after all. But upon a closer look, he understood the reason behind the chaos. There were hundreds of flying monsters following behind them closely.

[Alfalfa Villagers] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 70

HP: 7,000

Defense: 70

"ARCK!" With a scream, one of the woman was captured by the flying monster. With a flash, Zhang Yang pulled the reins and rode as swiftly as he could. Within range, Zhang Yang immediately cast {Spear of Obliteration}.

‘-2,189!’

The attack landed on the monster. Provoked, the monster dropped the women and immediately shot down towards him. The woman landed unscathed, since the monster had not gained much height off the ground.

[Ghastly Mountain Batman] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500

Defense: 70

The monster glided down from the sky and divebombed Zhang Yang. However, a mere normal tier monster could not cause Zhang Yang any damage whatsoever. The attack has merely knocked some dirt off Zhang Yang’s armor. Zhang Yang countered the batman and sliced him with a quick sword stroke. After dealing 2,000+ damage, Zhang Yang activated {Blood Rage} and gained 50 Rage. With a quick smash to the ground, Zhang Yang used {Destructive Smash} and killed the monster. With his monstrous strength, he could easily wipe out the entire swamp like a wasp’s nest.

Every flying monster stopped their pursuit of the villagers and changed their target to Zhang Yang. He took out and consumed a bottle of [Transmuted (6) Enrage Potion] and gained 100 Rage.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

SWOOSH!

Those that were too close to Zhang Yang received a clean hit, damaging them with more than 6,500 damage. PAK PAK PAK! The Dark Enigmatic Sword effect was triggered on and on, dealing a massive amount of damage that instantly killed more than 20 airborne batmen. The bottle of [Transmuted (6) Enrage Potion] had increased Zhang Yang attack power by 1.6x, making him practically a God of War at his level!

Undaunted, the monsters continued swarming Zhang Yang. Still, their attacks were so weak that even if he got surrounded by a thousand, or a million of them, it made no difference. With the sheer number of monsters, it was easier for Zhang Yang to kill all of them since the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect could be triggered almost endlessly. {Blast Wave}, {Horizontal Sweep} were used repeatedly. In just 4 to 5 minutes, Zhang Yang was completely surrounded by the dead corpses of the batmen. Not a single monster was left alive!

Every Alfalfa Villagers present on the scene could only stare in awe and disbelief. It was almost impossible for Zhang Yang alone to kill all of the monster singlehandedly!

"I'm Tiffany's relative!" said Zhang Yang as he went ahead to pick up the drops on the ground. It was not the coins nor the ETC items that he wanted, but the [Silk]. They were rather useful, not for selling in the market, but for making [Bandages] for healing.

Instead of being in awe, they villagers nodded their head as if they had expected the result, thinking that Zhang Yang was somehow related to Tiffany. It seemed to explain his admirable performance.

"Where's Tiffany?" Zhang Yang asked. He glanced around and found out that none of them had their own specialized name tags. In fact, every one of them shared the same [Alfalfa Villager] name! Zhang Yang could make out who was who at that point. However, he could easily guessed that Tiffany was not among them. Special quest NPCs would almost definitely have their own names!

"She was taken by the batmen!" said a villager.

Sigh! Somehow, Zhang Yang knew that the quest to obtain the second key fragment would never be that simple.

Chapter 328: Giant Cyclops Phango

"What happened?" Zhang Yang asked frantically.

"When we were led to destroy the batmen under Tiffany's command, we had successfully pushed them back to their lair! However, when we thought that victory was already in hand, there came down thousands of monster's reinforcements! Among the monsters, one of them was exceptionally strong and even defeated Tiffany. Unfortunately, she was nabbed and and taken to Ghastly Mountain!" explained one of the villagers.

"Warrior! You look tough. Could you please rescue Tiffany on our behalf?" asked another.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Retrieve News. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! The Alfalfa Villagers have a quest for you: Rescue Tiffany. Will you accept it?'

Hmph! Zhang Yang would accept any rescue mission in a heartbeat, compared to any other ridiculous quests, like the stealing panties!

That being said, how does one "walk" to that floating mountain? It's not like he could fly in the first place. He could, if he was Level 100 and had captured a flying mount. But, what could he do now?

He frowned. Perhaps there was something else that could assist the quest by asking the villager. "Tiffany is my relative. I would had done it even without you telling me. However, I have one complication. The Ghastly mountain is floating up in the sky. How do I get up there?"

Everyone exchanged a distress look, as if they had no clue either. After a few moments, someone cried out. "I got it!"

"Hm?"

"I had heard this from the elders of the village. They said that there is a teleportation point at the bottom of the hill! It could directly teleport a person to the top of the mountain." The villager walked out of the crowd

and spoke.

"Where is the Teleportation point again?"

"At the other side of the mountain. However, I also heard that there is a terrible and dangerous Giant Cyclops living there that will kill anyone living near there!" he added.

Monsters were meant to be killed. If he could not do it alone, he'll just bring a party. There was nothing to be concerned about. Zhang Yang laughed. "Please head back to the village. I'll think of a way to rescue Tiffany!"

The villagers nodded their heads and left Zhang Yang without much fuss. Zhang Yang rode the white bear and made his way to the foot of the mountain to the west. Zhang Yang was not in any particular rush. There were many herbs on the route and he took his time to harvest some [Wild Steelbloom] and [Stone Root]. Though they were rather uncommon herbs, there were not all too rare to begin with. However, since the number of Level 70 players with Herb Picking profession were few and had yet to set foot in the level 70 maps, the fore mentioned herbs were hardly seen in the market. That was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang had changed his profession to learn Herb Picking. That way, he could at least be self-sufficient.

A sudden bleep on the map indicated that a [Warden's Weed] was available in the west of where Zhang Yang was. Delighted, Zhang Yang kicked his feet against the white bear and headed straight for the rare herb. The [Warden's Weed] was used to craft a [Level 4 Strength Potion], which was the most effective potion to raise physical attack for the moment.

"Psss..."

A red viper appeared right beside Zhang Yang, revealing itself only when Zhang Yang approached the herb. The snake raised its triangular head, poised to strike Zhang Yang at any moment.

Starting from Level 60 and onward, be it minerals or herb, monsters will be nearby the spawning point to "guard" it. The strength of the monsters

around will correspond to the rarity of the herb and mineral spawned. Some of them were normal monsters, some could be elite, and for the extreme cases, bosses could be guarding them! Just like the [Refine Iron Vein] back when Zhang Yang was only Level 10 which was "guarded" by the Black Panther King! The developers never made anything easy.

That said, the [Warden's Weed] was not all too rare, hence the red viper guarding it was merely a normal tier monster. It took only seconds for Zhang Yang to kill that single snake and turn it into experience points. The red viper had also dropped a few [Snake's Meat].

[Snake's Meat] are one of the ingredients for the Cooking profession. Cooking, First Aid, and Fishing are three supportive type skills that can be trained together with two other Item Production profession like Alchemy, Rune Craft, and many more. Compared to First Aid, Cooking and Fishing were a hassle that will take more time and effort. Since those professions didn't do much for players, not many players practiced them. That being said, some players who dislike PvP or PvE1 would spend their time fishing and cooking in the game. That was how, non PvP, non PvE players would spend their free time.

Cooking can produce items that could heal HP and MP. Unless the snacks can be purchased in shops, the items produced from Cooking had extra beneficial effects such as increased Vitality, Strength, or even provide a {Haste} buff. Only higher level ingredients can produce items with additional effects. [Snake's Meat] were one of those ingredients that can be used to produce such of healing items.

Zhang Yang took the [Snake's Meat] and swept them all into his inventory. Since he was the kind of person who did not like sitting around, he had not taken up Cooking as his profession. However, he came prepared. There were players in the guild who were low level but possessed high levels of Fishing and Cooking. He will pass the items to them and let them deal with it!

'Ding! You have used Collect on [Warden's Weed]. Your Herbalism mastery has gained 1 point!'

‘Ding! You have obtained [Warden’s Weed] x2!’

Zhang Yang went on and collected more herbs and [Snake’s Meat]. Killing two birds with one stone, Zhang Yang had managed to gathered a small haul and was rather satisfied with it. After hiking a little through the slope, he found the surroundings shrouded in mist. Zhang Yang moved close to the source and stumbled upon a large fountain. Clear water still flowed out of the fountain and formed a beautiful small rainbow. However, beside the mystical fountain was a large giant. Even though he was seated, he was already at least 7 to 8 meters tall! He had the same appearance as a human, but only had one eye positioned on his forehead.

The giant was only wearing a pair of pants made from the leather of a beast. Resting on the right of him was a huge stone club, stained with dry blood. Perhaps, many had already crumbled under it.

[Giant Cyclops Phango] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 75

HP: 750,000

Defense: 800

There was the giant cyclops, but where was the Teleportation point? Zhang Yang went around the giant and searched on. However, no matter how many rounds he circled, he could not find the Teleportation point. Perhaps, the only way to reveal the Teleportation point was to kill the boss!

Zhang Yang drew the sword and sent the bear charging, rushing towards boss, ready to kill him.

Phango’s aggro effective range was wide. Right when Zhang Yang had stepped out of the bushes around, he spotted Zhang Yang and immediately picked up a large boulder, and tossed it towards Zhang Yang.

The attack was both fast and accurate. Zhang Yang reacted swiftly enough and raised his shield to block the boulder. Amazingly, with a loud crash, the large boulder was smashed into pieces as it made contact with the shield. The white bear growled and rushed instantly to the boss with

{Wild Charge}. Following the attack, the bear started clawing the boss. Zhang Yang followed and slashed at the boss' feet.

"URGH!" the giant wailed. He then picked up the gigantic stone club and smacked Zhang Yang on the head.

‘-3,756!’

The damage was rather high. However, considering that Zhang Yang's {Block} had a 6 second cool down, the boss' DPS was reduced to roughly 1,000. To defeat his long 60,000 HP, the boss would need about 1 minute. However, since Zhang Yang had too many of surviving skills, the boss would already be killed many times over before that happens!

"Human! Why did you attack me!" cried Phango in a low, husky voice.

Zhang Yang was stunned. Was not it normal for players to kill monsters? To bring peace and harmony back to the land? Since when would a monster ask a player the reason behind their attack?

After a long awkward silence, Zhang Yang had to think of what to say and finally opened his mouth. "Giant Cyclops! I want to use the Teleportation point!"

"HMPH! You're in the same league with the bat monsters!" Phango bellowed angrily. In a fit of rage, the giant stomped his feet with such force that it left a small crater with the shape of its feet in the ground below him. Zhang Yang had no clue what kind of relationship he had with the batmen, but it was most definitely a hostile one. However, now that he has already started the battle, he could not just leave it hanging. Zhang Yang shrugged and continued raining attacks down on the boss! Even though he was taking severe damage, the boss' HP was dropping at a faster rate than his.

Within two minutes, the boss was left with only 10% HP! Suddenly, the boss made a huge leap backwards and fled the battle!

Trying to run away? Not on my watch. Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and gave chase. The boss leaped back again. This time, he jumped into the pool of water that was made by the fountain. A loud and

massive splash of water was sent all over the place.

Not that a boss running away from a player was normal to begin with, the weirder thing was that the boss' HP had began to heal itself rapidly! Zhang Yang checked on the boss and found an additional buff. {Fountain of Life}.

{Fountain of Life}: Restores 1% HP every second.

After only a few moments, the boss' HP was already restored back to 17%!

What the actual hell! The boss is cheating!

If that was the case - Zhang Yang commanded the bear to rush and jump into the pool as well! He too, gained the buff and started healing as well.

"The Fountain of Life is mine! None shall take it from me!" screamed the boss as he picked up a boulder from nowhere and tossed it at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang frowned. Even though he had considerable DPS, it was surely not enough to overwhelm the healing effects of the fountain! It was the same for him. The boss would never be able to kill him while he remained in the fountain. However, if he does nothing to change the tide of war, they could easily fight till kingdom come and nothing would be accomplished.

Zhang Yang came up with a plan. For the moment, he shall dwell in the pool until all his skills are ready to used. He then left the pool and tried to kite the boss out of the pool. However, even though the boss was merely a Gray-Silver tier, it was smart enough to stay in the pool until he was completely healed before leaving. Now that both of them were fully recovered, the battle started over again!

Zhang Yang continued kiting the boss as far as he could, however, the boss was smart, or rather, the designer of the boss had set a limit before it would automatically turn back towards the fountain. Phango chased after Zhang Yang by several hundred meters and hit his limit. From there, he gave up on the chase and turned back.

...

With nothing else coming up in his mind, Zhang Yang checked his skill tab to see that {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} still had 3 hours before it could be used. He wanted to try and slowly grind the boss' HP down to 100,000 and used {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} to kill the boss in one go without giving the boss any chance to jump into the pool.

Zhang Yang steeled his decision and left the battle to collect some more herbs until the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was ready to be used. [Wild Steelblooms] were considered to be a common herb around this area. Even though the herb could only be found in maps higher than Leve 70, the mass number of spawning points made it easier for Zhang Yang to collect a large number of herbs since the re-spawn time was only around 20 minutes. Zhang Yang spent his 3 hours carefully, without wasting a single minute and filled his inventory with all sorts of herbs!

Hm. Now that {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} is ready to be used, it is time to kick some *ss!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. PvP, PvE: PvP is short for Player Vs Player. PvE is short for Player Vs Enemy. In this case, PvE is used to classify battle between players and non-player entity, that is monsters, or NPC.

Chapter 329: The Search for a New Source of Energy

"Give it up human! I will never surrender the Fountain of Life to the likes of you!" Phango lifted the stone club again, preparing for another brawl.

The beginning phase of the battle was fairly straightforward. Zhang Yang kited the boss up to 70 to 80 meters away from the Fountain of Life before starting to attack him. Based on the damage statistics, the boss was no match to Zhang Yang. Still, it had an extremely long HP bar! With time, Zhang Yang gradually ground the boss' HP down to 10%, which was only 80,000 HP.

Phango jumped back, and just when he was about to turn around to run, Zhang Yang activated {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}. A hollow shadow emerged out of Zhang Yang's character and formed a soldier that wielded a long broadsword. The shadow then flew across the field and sliced into Phango like a piece of bread.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

....

As expected of an ulti skill, once the skill is activated, the boss' HP could be seen dropping down like an burst fire hydrant. Before all 10 slashes could land, Phango's huge body suddenly burst out with a bright light and exploded with a loud boom!

The top half was completely missing, while the lower half of Phango was left standing. Blood and innards could be seen directly. It was extremely vile and disgusting!

The game should be rated R for this level of gore! What a twisted scene! No ordinary human could hold the contents of their stomach in after

seeing all the blood and organ flying around!

This was not the first time Zhang Yang had used the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, but the skill had not dealt the final blow to the witch, Daphne. That was why he was spared such a gruesome scene!

Just when Zhang Yang was about to let it all out, the upper body of Phango came back and he fell to the ground lifeless, in one piece. Perhaps the developers of the company thought that it was just too much for younger audience and only displayed it briefly for the wow-factor.

Zhang Yang shrugged and went to pick up the battle loots. There were a total of three Gray-Silver equipment, seven Green-Copper equipment and one Assembled Equipment fragment. It was a shame that it was not the one that he wanted which was the Fireglass Necklace.

[Bloodlust Snake Skin Boots Armor Piece] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor Piece)

Use: Combine four leather armor pieces to form a complete Bloodlust Snake Skin Boots.

Level Requirement: 70

Sigh...the smiths in 'God's Miracle' sure are godly. They could fix any kind of equipment! Zhang Yang bit down on his bitterness and kept the armor piece in his inventory. This equipment only required four armor pieces, it should be easier to assemble than the Fireglass Necklace.

All that's left was the Fountain of Life!

This contraption could easily heal 1% HP at every second. It would definitely change the tide of war. If only he could take it back to the Thunderstorm Castle, and use it to his advantage during a monster or enemy raid! Plus, if he could actually sell the item, it would definitely be worth the moon!

Just when Zhang Yang got close to the Fountain of Life, he received a system notification.

'Ding! You have discovered a drying Fountain of Life! You may use

Alchemy potion bottles to store the water from this fountain. The collected item will grant the user the ability to heal 50% HP over 10 seconds. Cool down time: 10 minutes. Item does not share the same cool down as the other potion. Hurry! The Fountain of Life is drying up!

What the hell!? Of all the times to be drying up, it had actually chosen this time to be drying?! This is made purposefully so that players could not make use of this feature over a long term!

glup

The water level in the pool was getting lower and lower. Zhang Yang started to panic. Immediately, he opened his friend list and contacted Sun Xin Yu. "Icy! Go and buy 100...No! 50 stacks of potion bottles for me! Get over here as soon as possible! Be quick!"

A player's inventory are limited, Zhang Yang had only realized that half way as he was instructing Sun Xin Yu. If he had asked Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er, they would surely be asking tonnes of question instead of getting to work pronto! Sun Xin Yu, however, replied with a simple affirmation and hung up.

Zhang Yang hurriedly put on the Lover' Charm: Yang, and within 3 minutes, Sun Xin Yu appeared by his side.

"I have no time to explain. Just use the bottles and fill them up with water from this fountain!" said Zhang Yang as he took 10 stacks of potion bottles from Sun Xin Yu.

'Ding! You have obtained [Fountain of Life] x1!'

'Ding! You have obtained [Fountain of Life] x1!'

...

The two of them were bent over at the fountain, as if the water was made of gold, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were scooping up as much water as they could. By the time the water level got even lower, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu took out their boots and hopped into the fountain to get more of the water. After 1 hour of continuous work, the water from the fountain was completely dried up, leaving a huge magical circle at the

bottom. By that time, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had managed to gather a total of 18 stacks, 3,673 bottles of [Fountain of Life]! It was a big haul!

Sun Xin Yu was surprised. "You must be some sort of luck magnet. How did you even find this place?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Hur hur. Impressed?"

Sun Xin Yu ignored his smug reply and said, "With just four more days till the Professional League, these [Fountain of Life] will really help us!"

The prowess of the bottled [Fountain of Life] was good, but as good as it seemed. For a non-tank player, 50% HP would be less potent than a [Level 4 Healing Potion] that could heal 8,000 HP, and the [Fountain of Life] required 10 seconds to fully take effect. The main specialty of this healing potion was the fact that it did not share the same cool down sequence with other healing potions. While using any level of healing potion will cause all healing potion to be in cool down, consuming the [Fountain of Life] would not, and player could use the other healing potion while the [Fountain of Life] is in effect. Its effect could rival a healer! How could they not be strong? Especially during PvP match.

Zhang Yang kept a stack of [Fountain of Life] for himself and let Sun Xin Yu store the others in the guild storage. He then reverted his attention back to the magic circle at the bottom of the dried-up fountain. No wonder the fountain would dry up, it was to make way for the Teleportation point at the bottom of it! If the fountain water remained, how would the magic take place?

Zhang Yang placed his hands on the circle and heard a system notification.

‘Ding! You have discovered an ancient Teleportation Circle. The magical power that powers Teleportation magic has run out. If you want to reactivate the magic within, you will need to search for a new source of energy’

‘Ding! You have been given a quest: Search for a New Source of Energy. Will you accept it?’

Can he not?

[Search for a New Source of Energy] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: To the South, Raging Runners roam in the Rolling Rock Canyon. The Stone Core of the Raging Runners contain mysterious powers! If you collect enough Stone Cores, you could perhaps reactivate the magic circle!

Progress: Collected Stone Cores 0/1,000

1,000. Right. ONE THOUSAND!?

Zhang Yang tossed all sort of insults he could think of in the back of his head. What were the designers of the quest thinking? To collect 1,000 of the quest item is no easy feat! To put it logically, by the time he had collected the Stone Cores and activated the Teleportation Circle, Tiffany would have been killed already and had her blood sucked dry! All that would be left of her would be dried meat! Granted, the quest did not imply a time duration, or else he would have already failed. Still, Zhang Yang couldn't help but groan. What were the developers thinking when they designed this quest...

Zhang Yang left the mountain and rode his way to the south, and came down to the Rolling Rock Canyon. For a canyon, it was rather small. From the higher ground where Zhang Yang was, standing, he could see that there were roughly close to hundreds of stone elemental beings rolling around, giving out a rocky, grinding sound.

[Raging Runner] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 600

The normal Level 70+ elite tier monster would have around 400 Defense value. Yet, these stone elemental beings had roughly 50% more defense than the norm. Zhang Yang did not care about the Defense and rode down the land and into the canyon, and charged bravely at a Raging Runner.

‘-1,356!’

The monster only just rolled over Zhang Yang and had already cause a noticeable damage to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang understood from the attack and had a roughly estimation about the monsters. He then ignored the first monster and headed straight into the heap and kited about 16 to 17 monsters in one flush!

Based on his current equipment in hand, he could never endure the simultaneous attack from all of the monsters. However, relying on his agility, he could make sure that he was only taking at most 3 monster attacks at a time! He could easily handle that.

15 targets, that was the maximum number of monsters that {Horizontal Sweep} could strike. Even without the help from the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect, Zhang Yang had gotten used to using the kiting technique when it came to multi-killing. With the current godly weapon of his, if Zhang Yang still insisted on killing the monsters one by one, it would be a huge disgrace to the weapon itself!

With {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep} being activated repeatedly, coupled with Zhang Yang’s white bear movement speed. The Raging Runners were clearly getting frustrated. It would be extremely funny if the names of the monster would suddenly change from Raging to Infuriated!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Like popcorn in the microwave, the stone elemental being would break apart violently, leaving behind their cores. Zhang Yang had taken only less than 2 minutes to change all 15 monsters into kernel pops. This sort of grinding speed was definitely unmatched! With the Dark Enigmatic Sword in hand, Zhang Yang could be the game’s seventh class, the Grinding King!

The only problem he faced currently was the fact that the drop rate of the Stone Cores was just too low. Of the 15 monsters that he had just killed, only 1 had dropped a Stone Core. Zhang Yang grit his teeth as he knew that this would be a long day...

There were only a few hundred of Raging Runners in the entire canyon.

Even if Zhang Yang could possibly kill them all in a go, he would have to clear them all two to three times before he could gather all the Stone Cores. The major problem was the low drop rate! Since it was all RNG based, who knew how much time he would have to kill and kill again until he gathers 1,000 Stone Cores!? Still, Zhang Yang was not in a rush after all. In fact, he could take his time since there were no time limit for the quest.

Riding the bear, Zhang Yang kited another wave of monsters. This time, he was in luck. He managed to haul two cores. However, the next waves of monster did not drop a single core! Zhang Yang kept on at it till the next morning and had only managed to gather 58 cores. It was hard, but at least he had begun his first few steps for the thousand-mile journey. Still, it was not all for naught. In one night, Zhang Yang had already gained 12% experience points which was incredibly fast!

Zhang Yang opened the China level ranking board and saw that the top 10 players had barely changed.

1. Zhan Yu, Guardian, Level 74
2. Frost Night, Assassin, Level 73
3. Daffodil Daydream, Pyromancer, Level 72
4. One Sword Stroke, Guardian, Level 72
5. Fire Fountain, Pyromancer, Level 72
6. Blooming Ichor, Assassin, Level 72
7. Drizzler, Berserker, Level 71
8. Little Snow, Priest, Level 71
9. Snow Seeker, Cryomancer, Level 71
10. Lord Dullahan, Templar, Level 71

Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and several others were already over ranked and "kicked out" of the ranking list. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had missed some gaming time since the death of Wei Yan Er's father. They had been overtaken, but were still in the top ten list.

On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu was lucky enough to obtained the [Heaven's Pearl] which granted the user 50% extra experience points, which had allowed her to remain on the ranking board even though she had a full time job!

For a few nights and days, Zhang Yang had spent his time camping in the canyon, killing stone elementals beings. At the same time, he had also spent a little time to collect some herbs.

Sadly, before he could finish the quest to gather the Stone Cores, the Professional League had already started.

On the 31st of January, the officials had announced the battle procedure of the S class and A class League battle. Since Zhang Yang and his team was the champion for the Soaring Sword Competition, they were seeded and could start on the 1st of February, fighting the first runner-up of the Soaring Sword Competition as their opponent.

Who would want to miss out the fight between the champion and the first runner up? The two teams, who happened to be strong guilds with deeply held grudges against each other, would surely bring a certain level of heat in the battle arena! On the side note, the officials had also released several new rules. One of them was the banning of using skills and items with cool down time exceeding 10 minutes. One extra rule was added, that had peaked Zhang Yang's interest. It banned non-hunter classes from using battle pets in the battle arena.

Zhang Yang clearly remembered that during his previous life, there was no such rule implemented in the battle arena. Looks like the developers had taken notice of Zhang Yang and had purposely set it as such to offset Zhang Yang's overwhelming prowess. Zhang Yang thought that it was rather justified. Zhang Yang was already overpowered to begin with. To allow someone like him to use a battle pet in the arena would rob the opponent of all their will to fight. Having the opponent giving up before the match even beings would only put off the heat of battle.

On the 1st of February, the first team battle Professional League had started. S class and A class both had their own battle areas and all players

were welcome to visit the respective arenas to spectate the match.

Zhang Yang's own battle team were as such: Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream, and himself. Fatty Han, Galileo, and Fantasy Sweetheart had taken the leading roles of the secondary battle team.

The main battle team - (Zhang Yang's team) had accepted to carry the name of Silky Soft Holdings. The secondary battle team, which was led by Fatty Han, had accepted a contract from another veteran I.T company in china. The main team's name was Silky Soft Battle Team, while the secondary team name was Pride and Honor Battle Team.

This was the first Professional League ever. Even though the Soaring Sword competition was a success, the sponsors were not too deeply involved, thus their monetary remuneration was not very luxurious.

Zhang Yang's team had accepted 5,000,000 dollars a year as a payment to carry the name of Silky Soft Holdings. That was due to the fact that the company owners themselves were in his team. On the other hand, Fatty Han's team, Pride and Honor Battle Team had accepted an 8,000,000 payment a year!

Zhang Yang knew something else. According to proper history, after two to three month after the start of the first Professional League fights, all companies would increase their sponsorship rate due to the massive increase in popularity of the fights. Some even signed lucrative contracts with the individual players themselves!

'Ding! The battle of Silky Soft Battle Team VS Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team will commence in 5 minutes! Members of Silky Soft Battle Team, please proceed into the battle arena within 5 minutes prior of this notification. Failure to do so will cause an automatic forfeit of your participation!'

7.30pm, Zhang Yang's team had received the same notification. Without delay, everyone entered the battle arena and allowed the system to teleport them to their own station. One thing that Zhang Yang felt rather impressed was that players could enter the arena no matter where they

were. Upon exiting, the players will be teleported back to where they were before entering. Participants no longer needed to be within a major city to enter the battle arena. That being said, players had to be out of combat mode.

Zoom! Zoom! Zoom!

One by one, they appeared next each other. Once everyone from Silky Soft Battle Team had gathered, an interactive window appeared in front of Zhang Yang. As the team leader, he had to decide the order in which they would fight.

"First, the 1v1 fights. I will fight the first battle. Ice, you're second. Little brat, you're third. Daffodil Daydream, fourth. Lost Dream, fifth. Hundred Shots, sixth. Snow b*tch, you're the seventh. Everyone got that?"

"As for the team fights, Ice cube, little brat, Lost Dream, Snow b*tch, and me will fight. Remember, try to win the first 5 matches. Do not drag it to the sixth or the seventh. The same goes for the team fights!"

Chapter 330: Rematch with Imperial Sky

When both captains had submitted the name list, the system will have lock in their entries. The name list would not be modifiable any more. In the case where the battle team did not contain the players that was listed in the presented name list, the said battle team will automatically be forfeited from the battle without any discussion.

‘Ding! The battle of Silky Soft Battle Team VS Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team will commence shortly. Both opponents shall proceed into the battle arena. The battle shall start in 30 seconds!’

Zhang Yang immediately walked up into the battle grounds.

"It's Zhan Yu!"

"Their ace in the first round!?"

"Zhan Yu! You can do it! Fight! Fight! Fight!"

Fervor from the audience could be heard from all the way up in the spectator seats around the stadium. Cheers from the audiences could be heard before the match starts. However, once the battle starts, the surroundings will be muted to allow the contestants to focus.

Zhang Yang turned to the audience and waved at them to express his thanks. The contestant from the other team had also entered the grounds. His name was To The Sky. Level 70, male Beastman, Sniper, HP: 19,340.

The crowd booed when they saw that Imperial Sky had not sent out One Sword Stroke in the first battle. "Who is this To The Sky?! Never heard of this guy! What a huge let down! We were expecting the strongest of both sides to have a face off!"

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was completely unfazed. To The Sky was the main Hunter in the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team, in his previous life. Even though he was not in the top 10 Hunter list, his capabilities were worthy enough to be his opponent.

‘Ding! The battle will commence in 10 seconds!’

To The Sky gathered his composure and prepared to fight Zhang Yang. He knew that Zhang Yang would be his opponent in the first round, that was why he was sent to brush it off. This is a strategy that throws the tower over to waste an enemy's chance. However, he was not satisfied at being the sacrificing lamb. Even though he knew that Zhang Yang was strong, he would go down swinging! Also, he was a secret weapon! Perhaps even Zhang Yang himself would be shocked to see it!

The horn of war was blown and the battle started. Zhang Yang lifted his shield and his sword up high and dashed towards his opponent. To The Sky controlled his pet behind him and shot a {Concussion Shot} at the 30 meters maximum attack range. The skill landed and stunned Zhang Yang for 4 seconds. A black panther suddenly jumped out from the side and attacked with lightning speed.

In the game, a majority of physical attack type monsters will have roughly the same attack interval rate, which was 2 seconds. Only a portion of the monsters could have higher or slower attack rate. The panther race possessed faster attack speed. Its attack was, on average, one attack per second.

The game was fair. The developers had made everything balanced. Under the same level, same tier, the faster the attack speed, the lower the attack damage would be. If the opponent was a class that wears Cloth Armor type, it is better to have faster attack speed pets. The low defense of the Cloth Armor would not affect the low attack damage of the pet. It also could prolong the spellcasters' casting time! It could be as effective as prolonging a 2 second spell to be as long as 4 seconds.

However, to send out a fast attack speed pet to attack a tank class player would be extremely bad and unwise. With high defense, a passive damage absorption skill, and a passive damage reduction skill, the damage output of the pet would perhaps only be at most, 3 digits or even 2 digits!

Zhang Yang took a millisecond glance at the pet and turn his gaze back onto To The Sky. Black panthers are extremely common, they could be found at any random hill or mountain! It was not even considered to be at elite tier!

‘-O!’

As expected, the black panther could not even deal 1 damage to Zhang Yang.

The {Concussion Shot} from before had slowed him down. At his snail pace, and the black panther lightning speed attacks, Zhang Yang felt that it was wise to kill some time by using {Block}. Might as well use it for the sake of efficiency. {Block} would also grant him an extra 30 Rage for a successful parry!

{Block}!

‘-722!’ {Block} reflect damage.

‘1,479!’ {Shield Bash}.

Having only 12,000 HP, the black panther had 1/6 of his HP taken away.

"F*ck!" cried To The Sky from afar. Well-equipped tanks are really something. Not only were they as solid as rocks, they also could ditch out painful attacks!

Knowing Zhang Yang prowess, To The Sky did not waste any more time. He started shooting at Zhang Yang and was able to chip off a decent amount of Zhang Yang's HP.

4 seconds later, the slow effect from the {Concussion Shot} ended. Regaining his normal speed, Zhang Yang leaped towards To The Sky. However, just before he could jump, he was stunned. Zhang Yang quickly checked on his status window and saw a debuff called {Maim}. He was stunned for 3 seconds.

Now Zhang Yang understood why this Hunter would, against the odds, bring a pet panther to fight a tank. It was all because of the skill {Maim}!

{Maim} is a pet's passive skill that can stun the target for 3 seconds with a 10% chance on every attack. The black panther was brought into the battle, not because of its attack power! It was because of its high attack speed, it had a higher chance to proc a {Maim}!

Zhang Yang grinned out of habit. He then quickly used {Warrior's Will}

and freed himself from the stun.

‘-8,672!’ {Destructive Smash}, Critical!

"Aurgh!" The panther cried in pain. The devastating attack was so strong that it left the panther with only over 1,000 remaining HP!

To The Sky's face was drained of colors. The black panther was supposed to be his trump card. If it were to die, it should at cost Zhang Yang half of his HP! Panicking, To The Sky focused on saving his pet. He immediately shot a {Breaking Shot} to control Zhang Yang for 4 seconds! That was his intention. However, Zhang Yang was better. Right after {Destructive Smash} had struck the ground, he had already consumed a bottle of [Beginner Mobility Potion]!

The effect of the [Mobility Potion] is special. Only after consumption, it will grant the user the immunity to all movement restriction skill! However, if the user was stunned or dazed, the user could not consume the potion to dispel the debuff. It can only take effect after consumption! That was why, the user had to be sharp in predicting the enemy! Zhang Yang had made the right call.

He knew that the opponent would not sit tight and let his black panther be killed. He predicted that the opponent would do something to save the pet. Besides {Concussion Shot}, a Hunter's other ranged interrupting skill could be {Breaking Shot}!

After consuming the potion, a rainbow color glow formed underneath Zhang Yang's foot, granting him immunity from all movement restriction skill for 3 seconds!

{Breaking Shot} landed on Zhang Yang!

Immune!

"What!?" To The Sky yelled. Could the game be stable and have lesser bugs?! Give him a chance to live for once!

‘-2,184!’

Zhang Yang did not need to activate any skills. With a quick slice, the

black panther wailed and dropped to the floor.

"Why did Zhan Yu killed the pet before the Hunter? A Sniper's pet is not even strong to begin with, why would Zhan Yu waste that much time on the pet?" The same question started repeating itself among the audience, as none of them understood what was happening in the battle ground.

If it was heard by To The Sky, he would be sure to take off his boots and toss it to the crowd in a fit of anger. He may be a Sniper, but having the black panther with the {Maim} passive skill made it a very powerful asset indeed!

A Hunter could tame four pets at a time. However, only one pet could be summoned into the battle to aid the master in battle. During battle, the Hunter could not switch pets. Once the pet dies in battle, the Hunter would have to wait for 10 minutes before he is allowed to revive the pet, or to summon the other pets he had collected. To The Sky was all by himself now for the next 10 minutes! However, even if To The Sky could summon another pet into the battle, it would be meaningless without the {Maim} passive. A normal pet would only be like a kid hitting a castle with a wooden twig! Not only would the tank not feel a single thing, it would only be granting "free" Rage points!

Zhang Yang scoffed. He knows that victory was already in hand. With large, bold steps, Zhang Yang rushed towards his opponent. To The Sky was extremely disgruntled. He then begun to kite Zhang Yang. As expected, his skill was good. But whenever a Hunter attacks, he would have to remain stationary for a brief moment. Since the battle ground had a limited space to begin with, Zhang Yang was able to reach To The Sky in just few minutes. He was already 20 meters away from To The Sky in a jiffy!

{Heroic Leap}!

Zhang Yang leaped. As far and high as the God of War, he glided through the air and landed firmly next to To The Sky! The massive shockwave was so strong that it had shattered the ground beneath Zhang Yang. The slam had also sent countless of tiny debris flying in all direction

with Zhang Yang at the center of the commotion. As the dust was slightly blown away by the wind, a massive crack was seen throughout the arena!

HOHO! This skill effect was really showy!

The skill was bought in the Ravine of Coyotes. It was a "buyable" skill like {Blast Wave}. Still, a majority of the players had yet to know about it. {Heroic Leap} could not cause any kind of damage. It could only stun the target. But, from the audience's perspective, the skill display was so extravagant that everyone started cheering loudly.

It was just too darn cool!

"Again! Do it again!" the audience screamed.

{Heroic Leap}, 3 seconds stun.

One more!

{Blast Wave}, 4 seconds stun!

Seven seconds later, To The Sky had only 9,000HP, out of the 20,000 HP that he had! Once he regained his movement, he quickly flipped back and jumped 10 meters away with {Tumble}.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang was again next to To The Sky and stunned him for another 1 second!

If he could cry and not be humiliated by it, To The Sky wished that he could just let it out! The guy was genuinely confused with Zhang Yang. Is he a Guardian or a Thief? How could a Guardian have so many long stunning skills! It was not fair!

After recovering from the stun, To The Sky bent down a little and planted a {Ice Trap}.

Traps are a Hunter's specialty skill, with various kinds of effects. For example, the {Ice Trap} will trigger when a player steps on it. It will trap the target in a huge ice barrier, rendering the target immobile for 10 seconds. The target will be freed instantly if any amount of damage was received during the entrapment.

Zhang Yang smiled. He then moved around the trap and activated {Thunder Strike} to slow down To The Sky as he continued to attack him.

The {Trap} that was planted will always be invisible to others. However, Zhang Yang saw To The Sky planting the {Trap} with his own eyes. If he had still stepped on it, he would have to call himself a dumb pig!

7,000! 5,000! 3,000!

To The Sky was slowly being pushed to the gates of death and Zhang Yang sent him off with a {Killing Cleave}.

With that, Silky Soft Battle Team had just gained their first battle victory!

Zhang Yang gazed up at the audience's seat and saw Wei Yan Er was pouting her lips. "Hmph! Noobie tank! What a loser! How could you take so long to kill a greenhorn? You sir, had just lost my respect for you! Bleh!"

She stuck out her tongue.

"Oh...my heavens...I am so saddened by what you had just said! Oh, my heart is so weary that I have to take a break from cooking ANYTHING at all! For at least 2 days!" said Zhang Yang while pretending to be a withering old lady.

Wei Yan Er jumped. She panicked and immediately pulled Zhang Yang's left arm. While smiling innocently, Wei Yan Er said, "This little girl has learnt her lesson! Please don't be angry. Big brother..."

"F*ck! Who you think I am? A weak-hearted lolicon?! Scram!"

Chapter 331: Going up Ghastly Mountain

The second match, Sun Xin Yu versus Blooming Ichor!

Both of them had fought against each other before and now they were meeting each other in the battle arena once again. Their gazes locked, furious and grudgingly! However, the resulting, endless match made people extremely angry and bored as when there is match between Thieves, they will only play hide and seek with each other!

Still, Sun Xin Yu was more skillful and she successfully caught Blooming Ichor after some time. After two to three attacks, Blooming Ichor's HP bar had become empty instantly!

Zhang Yang's gang won another match!

The third match, Wei Yan Er versus Lonely Tree.

Lonely Tree was the Thief who defected from Sunset Amber to Imperial Sky. Previously, he was the main Thief in Sunset Amber and now he was apparently doing well, developing and growing rapidly in Imperial Sky.

Wei Yan Er hated traitors the most, especially due to her personal experiences. Her full might was brought out upon her opponent!

Based on both of their strength, both of them were equally matched. But Wei Yan Er drank a Mobility Potion and blew up Lonely Tree's combo. The little brat hacked at him madly with her big broadaxe and the pitiful Lonely Tree was terribly traumatized.

Zhang Yang's gang won three matches in a row!

The fourth match, Daffodil Daydream versus Venshi!

Venshi also had a traitor label on top of his head, he was the main Spellcaster in Radiance. During their match back then, he apparently goofed around and caused their team to lose deliberately to Imperial Sky in the Soaring Swords competition!

Both of these Spellcasters chose to be Pyromancers, so the both of them fired blazing fireballs at each other, flames danced in the wind and warped

the air as they entered the battle arena and fought with a most extravagant display, unlike that of fireworks. In terms of the performances of their matches, the audiences enjoyed watching this match the most!

Both of them were skillful, constantly running out of the maximum skill range to interrupt each other's spell casting bars.

As more high-ended players broke through the Level 60 bracket, one after another, Yellow-Gold equipment had become very common. Although Lone Desert Smoke block-booked a few Yellow-Gold bosses, there were a lot of area maps which were above Level 60. A lot more bosses for everyone else. Both spellcasters were equipped with Yellow-Gold equipment from head to toe!

The slightest bit of advantage would tip the balance!

Daffodil Daydream had the additional advantages from Zhang Yang's transmuted potions, medicines and even the [Fountain of Life]!

After some intense fighting, Daffodil Daydream successfully defeated Venshi and scored another point for Silky Soft team!

4-0!

Sky and Ocean Electronics team was on the brink of elimination!

There were seven duels and one point for each duel; two points for party matches. Whichever team that got five points first would not need to fight for the rest of the match!

One Sword Stroke finally appeared in the battle arena for the important fifth match!

Lost Dream versus One Sword Stroke.

"Silly Yu, do you think Lost Dream can win this?" Han Ying Xue was not asking out of concern for the loudmouthed chatterbox, but for herself. She was hoping that she would not have to fight afterall, being the lazy woman that she is.

Zhang Yang thought about it and replied, "In terms of skill, Lost Dream is on par with One Sword Stroke, but Assassins have always been an ill-fit

against Guardians.

"I think Lost Dream could win this!" Wei Yan Er said, for the sake of arguing, and nothing else.

"If you say that Lost Dream can win, then he shall win this!"

"..."

At last, Lost Dream lost the match!

Lost Dream performed as expected of a first class Assassin, executing his skills and combos with precision and perfect timing. Still, he fell short of finishing off the hunk of corroded iron, and was beaten down. There was nothing for him to be ashamed of.

4-1, Sky and Ocean Electronics team finally scored a point!

The sixth match, Hundred Shots versus Tobacco Breath.

Tobacco Breath was a Templar who had rarely appeared in battle arenas! Hundred Shots, being wary about this unknown opponent, failed to grab any present opportunities and was taken out!

4-2!

Han Ying Xue was forced to fight for the seventh match.

Her opponent was her old enemy, Fire Fountain!

Fire Fountain was shocked when he saw Han Ying Xue, what an unfortunate match-up, why does he have to face this super healer once again?!

Although Han Ying Xue had no sense of direction, she did not forget faces easily. She looked intently at Fire Fountain. Suddenly recognizing him, she waved her hand and said, "Oh, it's you!"

Fire Fountain was shaken to the core, as this super healer had already caused psychological trauma to him in their previous clash! Fire Fountain's lips twitched and he shouted loudly, "Let's start the fight, cut the bullsh*t!"

The battle had started!

History could only repeat itself!

Although Fire Fountain attack power was strong, Han Ying Xue healing power was even stronger. She threw {Putrefying Poison} on Fire Fountain and kept on spamming healing spells on herself as if she was fighting an NPC.

The pitiful Fire Fountain wanted to cry as Han Ying Xue stood rooted to the ground, casually throwing DoT skills on him, while healing herself. She did not even glance up at his incoming attacks, only intently gazing at her own MP bar! It was ridiculous! The worst part of it all, was that he could not damage her one bit! Her healing completely counteracted every move he threw at her! Fire Fountain was eventually overwhelmed by DoT effects, which was a humiliating way to go!

The current PvP was different compared to the previous PvP in the open world, they were currently being spectated by thousands of people. Fire Fountain was going to be the biggest joke of the year!

Why does it have to be me?!

Fire Fountain could only rage within himself, as his HP slowly, inevitably went down!

5-2!

Silky Soft team successfully defeated Sky and Ocean Electronics team and also obtained the first victory of the competition!

There was another ongoing match for the S-Class Professional League, which was the match between Crimson Rage's Crimson team and Breaking Dawn's Shun Feng team.

This match was more intense as they scored 4-3 for the first seven duels and entered the final party match. Lastly, the female army defeated Shun Feng team by exerting outstanding performance and great teamwork. The final score was 5-4!

However, Silky Soft team won with the score of 5-2 and their net win points were two points ahead of Crimson team, therefore, Silky Soft team took the first position.

Everyone was jubilant after Imperial Sky's defeat as the relationship between both of these guilds, had never improved one bit ever since the attacks on each others castles.

After Zhang Yang left battle arena, he was immediately teleported back to Rolling Rock Canyon and continued chiseling away at the rock monsters.

After smashing the monsters for a while, a golden light flashed on Zhang Yang's body and he rose to Level 75!

That really took a long time!

After so many days, Zhang Yang had collected 786 [Rock Cores]. Victory was almost there.

Two days later, on the 3rd of February, Zhang Yang had finally gathered all the [Rock Cores]. He went back to the bottom of Ghastly Mountain, to the magic circle in Fountain of Life.

Zhang Yang threw five stacks of [Rock Cores] into the magic circle and he immediately received a notification from the system.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: The search for a new source of energy!'

'Ding! Magic circle have activated!'

F*ck, this mission was so hard and no rewards were given at all, the system was really stingy!

Zhang Yang grumbled to himself as he activated the teleportation portal.

A dazzling white light suddenly appeared. The teleportation portal seemed to be waking up from slumber. Lights and color danced before his eyes, the captivating scene lightening his mood up by a slight bit.

Once Zhang Yang entered the portal, the scenery in front of him changed and he appeared in another cave! The cave was not too deep and there was a way out about ten meters away from him. The weather was sunny and fresh, a contrast difference from the gloomy weather at the

bottom of the mountain.

Is this where he's supposed to be?

Zhang Yang walked out from the cave and saw that he was halfway up the floating part of Ghastly Mountain. The sun struck the land here, unhindered by the clouds below it.

Zhang Yang got on Whitey and quickly rode out of the cave.

"Human?" a rasp voiced out. A batman which hung from a tree suddenly flew down and glided towards Zhang Yang. The batman stretched out its 10 razor sharp fingers and reached out!

[Ghastly Mountain Elite Batman] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 400

Zhang Yang calmly lifted his sword and met the batman's clash.

"Aack..." as they fought halfway, the batman suddenly screeched loudly, threatening to deafen Zhang Yang! His ears really hurt this time! The scenery in front of Zhang Yang instantly turned black, and Zhang Yang could not help it but put both of his hands on his head.

'Ding! You have been affected by the Ghastly Mountain Elite Batman's ear-piercing screech effect, you will not be able to control your own movements for three seconds!'

This was no different from the stunning effect, only that they were named differently!

'-1,342!'

'-1,408!'

The elite Batman used this chance to slash at Zhang Yang madly with its sharp claws.

Three seconds later, Zhang Yang immediately counterattacked and the Batman was hacked to death.

Zhang Yang looked across, and saw a lot of Batmen hanging from big trees, similar to how actual bats did! If the Batman did not have the {Ear-Piercing Screech} skill, Zhang Yang could have kited a few of them and finish them all at once with the special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword].

With {Ear-Piercing Screech}, these monsters could stun Zhang Yang perpetually, until his death!

To play safe, Zhang Yang had to clear the monsters one by one!

Zhang Yang patted Whitney and continued moving forward. He killed each monster that flew down from the tree. Despite the roundabout method, he only used about three hours to reach a huge altar.

A stone statue stood in the middle of the altar, standing at about 10 meters tall, it had the shape of a Batman and a pair of huge wings extended from its back. Both its legs were slightly bent, like it was about to spring up from the ground. The Batman statue held a dark spear. Zhang Yang looked carefully and found out that the spear was a real spear, and red lines flowed through it.

There was a basin at the bottom of the statue, where dried blood caked the surface. It had not been used for a long time!

Zhang Yang was not sure if the bloodstains came from animals or humans! Either way, Batmen ingested red blood, wherever it came from!

Suddenly, two Batmen flew down and glided to a nearby altar. As Zhang Yang was in the blindspot, they did not notice him immediately.

"What a waste, the female human we captured last few days ago has escaped! Otherwise, the ancestor could have been resurrected!" one of them croaked.

"That's right, we still need the blood of a virgin with extreme 'Yin' physique. Our ancestor would then break free from the seal and lead us a new age, instead of hiding in this little mountain! Damn it, how could such a weak human escape from here?" the other batman hissed.

"The human weakling does not have wings, she can will not be able to

evade us for long. Unless she falls to death, there's no way she can leave this floating mountain alive!"

"En, let's continue looking for her!"

The two Batmen flew away.

Chapter 332: King of Batman

‘Ding! Tiffany has already escaped from the clutches of Batman and she is hiding somewhere in Ghastly Mountain! Find her immediately, and escort her out of Ghastly Mountain!’

No wonder the quest had no time limitation. The game developers had simply solved the problem by mentioning Tiffany had escaped from the clutches of Batman. Such convenient ‘coincidence’.

Still, where could Tiffany be hiding at? This Ghastly Mountain was not exactly small in size!

Zhang Yang thought for a bit, knowing that the system definitely would not let allow players to complete the quest so easily. As always, to make things difficult, Tiffany would most likely be at the top of the mountain. Also, this would mean that players would have to fight their way through hordes of monsters in order to achieve their objective. Besides, clearing monsters is the supreme path and concept of online games!

Time to set off!

Zhang Yang patted Whitey and continued going up the mountain, where he killed endless of monsters along the way, quickly losing count.

Without the appearance of bosses, nothing could slow Zhang Yang down. Three hours later, Zhang Yang reached the top of Ghastly Mountain.

Zhang Yang travelled through the dense woods, there was no Batman monster here but tigers, wolves and other wild beasts. All of them looked ferocious and violent, but they were merely normal monsters, and Zhang Yang killed them all with ease.

Shush!

When Zhang Yang moved forwards, suddenly, the sound of a weapon zinged in front of Zhang Yang, and he subconsciously raised his shield to protect himself and activated {Block}!

Dang!

The sword clashing with Zhang Yang's shield, producing a series of sparks!

Zhang Yang dropped his shield and immediately thrust his sword towards the attacker. As he finally focused on his target, he realized that the attacker who sneaked up on him was not a wild beast, or a Batman, but a young pretty lady with black silky hair, a tall and slender figure, wielding a sharp, gleaming sword!

He quickly moved a step backwards moving the young pretty lady out of his own range, and his sword swooshed harmlessly before her! Even if the name of "Tiffany" was not being shown on top of her head, there were no other humans here, only her!

[Tiffany] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

Tiffany also realized that Zhang Yang was also a human, so she stopped her attack and put back her sword into a scabbard on her back. She stared at Zhang Yang with her slanted, light gray eyes and asked, "Who are you? How did you get here?"

"I'm here to rescue you!" Zhang Yang answered and continued, "I have some kinship with you and I specially came to look for you from White Jade Castle, which is far away from here. Coincidentally, I heard from your villagers saying that you have been captured by the Batmen, so, I made my way up here!"

"Do you have any way to leave this Ghastly Mountain?" Tiffany was very surprised and excitedly asked Zhang Yang.

"Yes, there is a cave halfway up this Mountain, and also a teleportation portal which directly teleports us back to the bottom of this mountain! As long as we can make it to the cave, we would be able to get back to ground safely!"

"That's great!"

Both of them quickly went down the mountain. However, Tiffany did not have a mount, so they made rather slow progress.

Zhang Yang patted Whitey's butt and said, "Get on, you walk too slow!"

Tiffany hesitated for a while, but she decided to get on up. However, the sword that slung across her back jabbed into Whitey's butt.

"Roar!" Whitey growled in pain and instantly moved its four limbs and madly rushed down the mountain.

The monsters along the way were almost cleared by Zhang Yang, so there were not many obstacles and they smoothly reached the teleportation portal in the cave.

Wait a minute, that's it? Seems way too easy for a quest.

As long as they enter the cave and activate the teleportation portal, they would reach the bottom of Ghastly Mountain!

Both of them came down from the mount and walked into the cave.

Shush!

Suddenly a huge, beastly claw lashed out from within the darkness inside the cave. Gleaming silver, with the flash of multiple swords, the claw headed directly for Zhang Yang's chest!

"Watch out!" Tiffany shouted and kicked Zhang Yang's left hip. Hard. Zhang Yang was flung four meters away. At the same time, Tiffany also pulled out the sword on her back and dashed towards the beast.

Ding!

The sharp claw clashed with sword. The clang of steel rang through the cave and sparks flew!

Zhang Yang had actually lifted his shield and activated {Block}, but he was kicked by Tiffany and flung away, which also wasted one cycle of the {Block}'s cool down time!

Her good intentions had unwittingly inconvenienced him a little!

Zhang Yang pondered as he ran back to Tiffany with his sword drawn. Within the dark environment, he vaguely could see the attacker's outline.

It was a tall and huge Batman, with terribly huge wings, even though they were barely unfurled. Its upper body was bare, and it wore some crude loincloth, made from the dressed skin of animal, with long, lanky limbs.

Its face was scary, hook-nosed like an eagle's beak, and its forehead was protruding like a long horn was growing out of its forehead! And finally, a pair of cloudy gray eyes, murderous rage intent in its face!

[King of Ghastly Mountain Batman] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Zhang Yang groaned, why would he meet a Yellow-Gold boss in a side quest. Besides, this was only Level 70 area map and Yellow-Gold bosses should not be so abundant!

"Ha ha ha, do you think that you can escape from here?" King of Batman made a wry smile, it flexed its huge wings behind it and a strong wind was blown towards Zhang Yang and Tiffany. Both of them were blown out of the cave!

This King of Batman strode after them, coming out of the cave. In visible light, he could be seen more clearly now. King of Batman was more than three meters tall, and had a wingspan of up to eight meters!

Tiffany fearlessly swung her sword and dashed towards King of Batman, while yelling, "Demon! How many villagers have you killed over all these years?! Today, you must pay with your blood!"

King of Batman made another wry smile as it calmly caught her blade, "I thought it would take me some time to find you, but I discovered the appearance of this human. So, I decided to wait for you at the teleportation portal. As expected, like running rats, you turned up here!"

Zhang Yang shook his head in embarrassment, to play into the hands of a monster like that!

"Demon, you haven't won yet!" Tiffany slashed at the boss, a flash of white light bursting out of the sword. It did good damage, but the boss' HP bar was so abundant that it did not seem to do anything!

Zhang Yang had also moved in and added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss to reduce its defense value so that Tiffany's damage power was magnified. In a short time, Zhang Yang quickly got a solid hold of the boss' aggro, while also drinking health recovery potions and the [Fountain of Life].

"Ha ha ha, the lady, whose blood courses with so much "Yin", lay down your sword, and obediently dedicate your virgin blood to our great ancestor. The Batmen will rise again!" the boss violently lashed out at Zhang Yang as it continued rambling on.

Shush! Shush!

The boss' huge wings were like cutting wheels, its wings spun about occasionally. It did not cause any damage but knocked back Zhang Yang and Tiffany by about three to four meters away.

Tiffany yelled and the sword in her hand moved even faster and struck the boss again and again, each strike causing more than 3,000 points of damage.

In this game, a player could take on a boss single-handedly, but only if he was sufficiently leveled, and had really good equipment! With all his long cool down skills, he could still duel with Gray-Silver bosses. However, he would need to equip some Violet-Platinum equipment in order to take on a Yellow-Gold boss all by himself!

Zhang Yang drank Red Bottle, gulped down [Fountain of Life], activated {Berserker's Heal}, summoned Merlinda's Shadow and used {Shield Wall}. He had used up all his emergency skills within a minute, and the King of Batman's long HP was reduced by less than 10%. Even if Zhang Yang used {Rearm} to clear all skills' cool down time and repeat the steps again, there was no chance of beating this boss!

Zhang Yang did what he could, tanking to his limit before he decided to hand over the pressure to Tiffany!

Zhang Yang hopped down from Whitey and used {Shadow of the Void} to escape from the battle. He ran 30 meters away from the boss, and then emerged from the void, and quickly started gobbling down his health recovery consumables.

Because the Gold-Eared Bear King was "combined" with Zhang Yang, the pet itself did not carry any aggro from the boss. So, when Zhang Yang escaped from the battle, Tiffany was the one who had the highest aggro in the boss' aggro list. Although Whitey still had a few drops of HP left, it would have definitely been finished off by the boss. Because of Whitey was not targeted by the boss, it was spared.

Zhang Yang came up with a quick idea and commanded Gold-Eared Bear King to activate {Wild Recovery}. The Gold-Eared Bear King started to recover its HP, 5% every second.

Zhang Yang was surprised when he saw Tiffany holding her own solidly beneath the boss' violent, stormy attacks! Her HP bar was holding steady.

Zhang Yang selected Tiffany and looked carefully, realizing that the NPC had a powerful passive ability.

{Soul of Ancestral Blessing}: When attacked, damage is reduced by 90%.

It was like using a {Shield Wall} for the entire battle, oh my god, what a powerful effect!

Zhang Yang recalled that the first Descendant of The Seven Generals, Khrishan was also the only person who did not get poisoned by the witch in the town of Lagguda. Obviously, the Descendants of The Seven Generals carried power in their bloodlines. Although they were not as powerful as their ancestors, they definitely held potent power!

Zhang Yang quickly recovered his HP within a short time and immediately ran towards the boss, using {Charge} to close the distance. After that, he quickly hopped on Whitey and combined both their HP once again.

Although Tiffany's immune ability was outstanding, her attack power was not strong. So, Zhang Yang easily pulled back the boss' aggro.

Zhang Yang activated {Rearm} then launched all surviving skills and used {Shadow of the Void} once again to escape from battle. After that, he continued eating the health recovery cakes to recover his HP at a quiet corner.

Even though Zhang Yang activated {Rearm}, the boss still had more than 80% HP left. Unless his {Shadow of the Void} was cooled down and ready, he would not survive the next charge!

After Zhang Yang recovered his HP bar to full, he took out his shield and dashed towards the boss once again. This time, he did not ride on Whitey and tried to share some aggro and let Tiffany act as the tank.

Even though Tiffany's defense was high, the boss' HP was too long and its HP was hundreds of times Tiffany's! Even if Zhang Yang, Whitey and an NPC, Tiffany combined their attack power, they would not hold out for long. Even Tiffany would not outlast the boss!

Currently, Zhang Yang was looking forward Tiffany to shout something "Eternal life" and use {Berserker's Heal} when she a few drops of HP left and recover her HP bar to full!

The Boss' HP was reducing and the same went for Tiffany. Although her passive ability was outstanding, the boss could still cause about 1,000 points of damage on her for each attack and her 70,000 HP would only last for about two minutes!

10,000... 5,000... 2,000, Tiffany was close to the brink of death!

"Demon, I will destroy you, at any cost!" Tiffany shouted, taking a piece of metal out.

Clenching it tightly, there was a burst of extreme, bright light that emanated from it and quickly surrounded her body!

'Immune!'

'Immune!'

The boss' attacks instantly became useless!

Another additional effect appeared on top of Tiffany's head.

{Ancient Magic Shield}: Immune to all damage, attack power increased by 100%. Lasts for 10 minutes.

10 minutes of invincible effect, this skill was incredible! Zhang Yang thought, the boss must be extremely angry for bumping into such an NPC!

However, that silver metal looks like the [Key Fragment] that Zhang Yang obtained before. It was probably the second [Key Fragment]!

The King of Batman revealed an astounded expression and said, "That is the energy of the Ancients!"

Zhang Yang charged at the boss, unleashing his onslaught.

Tiffany's attack power increased by 100% which could cause much more damage on the boss, at the same time, meaning that she had a solid grip on the aggro now. Zhang Yang could attack the boss as much as he wanted now!

However, even with {Ancient Magic Shield}, close to ten minutes later, the boss still had 2,500,000 HP!

Zhang Yang quickly took out his [Key Fragment] in his backpack and asked, "Tiffany, can you use the power just now once again?"

Tiffany turned around, surprised as she asked, "You also have the [Ancient Fragment]? Quickly, hand it over to me, it will give me some more time!"

The NPC seemed to call the [Key Fragment], [Ancient Fragment]! Zhang Yang immediately threw the fragment to Tiffany.

Again, with a bright burst of light, she had another 10 minutes of immunity!

What an obvious cheat!

The boss would not complain about this and continued acting based on its duty. Its attacks to Tiffany became useless once again!

30%, 20%, 10%... the boss' HP became lesser.

500,000, 300,000, 150,000, 80,000!

King of Batman roared, its wings behind its back were extended and beat frantically. It rose up in the air and shouted, "I will be back!"

Do you think that you are the grey wolf in Happy Lamb and Grey Wolf1?

Zhang Yang gave a roar of rage and launched {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Happy Lamb and Grey Wolf is a Chinese animated television series. Grey Wolf/ Wolffy is the main antagonist of the series. His catchphrase (which he utters in one form or another each episode) is "Darn goat! I'll definitely come back/ I'll come back for sure/ I'll be back/ I'll get my revenge!" (Mostly "I'll be back" in later seasons, which is based on The Terminator.).

Chapter 333: Burrow

Shush!

A shadow emerged from Zhang Yang's body and formed a shadow which held a rapier. The shadow thrust the rapier rapidly like a flash of light and penetrated the King of Batman's body. Rapid '-10,000' damage texts appeared on top of its head, one after another!

Such a scene would never get boring!

"No!" King of Batman struggled to stay afloat and tried to escape from the devastating attacks. But without invincibility, there was no escaping such an attack!

Within 10 seconds, the boss abruptly lost all its remaining HP!

Bang!

The corpse of King of Batman was sliced up in the air and its blood poured like blood rain. The scene was sanguinary and adrenaline inducing. As always, a moment later, the corpse of the boss came crashing down again, back in one piece. It was just a cinematic effect of the skill.

"The demon is finally dead!" Tiffany felt relieved but expressed some sadness on her face and said, "Our village is finally free from the threat of these vampires! The dead will never be forgotten!"

Zhang Yang, left the NPC to her questline script, and silently shoved all the drops from the boss into his backpack and said, Tiffany, let's go back to the village!"

"Alright!"

Both of them entered the cave and came to the middle of the magic circle. A ray of white light flashed and they were immediately teleported back to the ground which was where the Fountain of Life located at.

"This is the Cyclops' lair?" Tiffany was shocked and asked, "You are a brave warrior, to even defeat the Cyclops. Is it that the gods had mercy on us and sent a savior down to earth?"

They rode on Whitey and rushed towards Alfalfa Village. Zhang Yang took advantage of this opportunity to flip through King of Batman's loots.

The loots included one Yellow-Gold equipment and nine Gray-Silver equipment, this boss was very stingy. However, it was probably due to the fact that Zhang Yang only managed to defeat the boss by relying on an NPC, Tiffany's invincibility skill. In that case, getting a Yellow-Gold piece of equipment wasn't that bad a deal!

Besides, this Yellow-Gold equipment was a Level 70 two handed axe. Even though the two handed axe's attack interval was 3.5 seconds, instead of the perfect 3.8 seconds, it was still a level 70 Yellow-Gold weapon, guaranteed to fetch a good price!

[Axe of Lunar Eclipse] (Yellow-Gold, Two Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 1,023 – 1,423

Attack Interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 349

Equipment: After hitting on the target, there is 10% chance of obtaining Acuity effect and ignoring 10% defense. Lasts for 10 seconds. The maximum stacked Acuity effect is 3.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 70

Perhaps he should gift it to Galileo, the main Berserker in the second party of Lone Desert Smoke and also the second S-Class Professional team of Lone Desert Smoke. Although the kid had a Violet-Platinum weapon, that weapon could only be equipped at Level 80. They would be fighting in the Professional League tonight, this axe would definitely help.

Zhang Yang did not even bother to look at the Gray-Silver equipment, as all of them were fated to be sold in Little Merchandize Shop. On the other hand, this boss also dropped an Alchemy recipe which Zhang Yang immediately patted on his body, learning the recipe.

[Troll Recovery Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Restores 100 HP every five seconds. Lasts for an hour.

Level Requirement: 60

This [Troll Recovery Potion] seems normal, 1,200 HP restored within a minute, and 72,000 HP restored within an hour which was slightly higher than Zhang Yang's HP limit. Zhang Yang still had his {Alchemist's Intuition}, the effect of this [Troll Recovery Potion] could not be predicted after transmuted.

Whitey ran like the wind, and finally they reached Alfalfa Village.

"Sister Tiffany!" a small group of children at the gateway of the village spotted them from afar, and came running towards them. They were clapping and cheering.

Tiffany hopped down from Whitey and gently smiled at the children, no wonder those children dreamed of marrying Sister Tiffany.

The rest of the villagers also ran out from the village, relieved when they saw Tiffany. While, Tiffany announced that the King of Batman has been killed, and their village was no longer subject to the threat of vampires. The villagers cheered, tears streaming down some of their faces.

Tiffany brought Zhang Yang to her house, which was a very clean and neat cottage.

"Zhan Yu, this is your [Ancient Fragment]. I'm very sorry, I had extracted the power within this [Ancient Fragment], and you may need hundreds of years to recover the power within it again!" Tiffany handed over the [Key fragments] to Zhang Yang and apologized sincerely.

Zhang Yang pondered internally, the NPC's {Ancient Magic Shield} could only be activate once every hundred years. This skill's cool down time was extremely long, perhaps it was worth the ten minute duration afterall! Zhang Yang took the [Key fragments] and said, "Tiffany, I purposely came from afar to search for fragments similar to this [Ancient Fragment], can you lend me your fragment?"

Tiffany hesitated and smiled as she answered, "Although this was left behind by my ancestor, I will not be able to use it for another hundred

years. Besides, our biggest threat, King of Batman is already eliminated and I no longer have any real reason of using it! Since you need this, it is yours!"

Tiffany handed over the second [Key Fragment] to Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 5!’

Zhang Yang took nearly 10 days to finally obtain the second [Key Fragment]!

"Anyway, Zhan Yu, thank you for saving me!" Tiffany smiled sweetly towards Zhang Yang, she stood on tiptoe and gently kissed Zhang Yang lips.

Her lips were as soft as cotton, and tasted slightly sweet!

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Tiffany. Gained 5,000,000 Experience Points!"

What a tragedy, no other reward was given to Zhang Yang, it seemed that her kiss was the only reward!

"By the way..." Tiffany took out a book covered with gray-brown leather and handed over to Zhang Yang, "This is a secret skill passed down by my ancestor. I relied on this to escape from the bat's guards. I believe this would assist you greatly!"

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: {Burrow}!’

Zhang Yang was stunned. What, {Burrow}?!

[Skill Book: Burrow]

Use: Grants the skill {Burrow}.

Class Requirement: Not limited.

Level Requirement: 70

Bound.

It was really that {Burrow}! The {Burrow}! Zhang Yang had struck the jackpot!

Zhang Yang quickly patted the skill book on his body and learned the skill before viewing the description of the skill.

{Burrow}: Allow you to burrow through the ground but the movement speed is reduced by 50%. Lasts for 10 minutes. Cool down time: 1 hour.

This was a marvelous skill that had some similarities with {Shadow of the Void} which allowed a player to bypass the enemy defense lines and penetrate deeply into enemy hinterland! The differences were that {Shadow of the Void} allowed the player to escape from the battle and increased a player's movement speed, while, {Burrow} just allowed the player to hide in a place from the enemy which the enemy unable to attack the player, besides, the player's movement speed would be reduced by 50%. However, it lasted far longer!

No matter what, Zhang Yang had earned something incredible!

"Zhan Yu, please visit the village if you have time, our Alfalfa Village will always welcome you!" Tiffany said sincerely.

"Alright, I will come when I have time!"

After Zhang Yang got the second [Key Fragment], he did not go to Great Lake Valla immediately to look for the third Descendant of The Seven Generals but directly tore off [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Thunderstorm Castle, and then teleported back to White Jade Castle.

In an hour's time, Fatty Han and the rest were going to fight for their first S-Class Professional League match, so Zhang Yang was going to be there to support them!

Zhang Yang disconnected from the game and prepared dinner. After feeding three stomachs, Zhang Yang logged into the game.

Currently, the competitions for S-Class and A-Class Professional League were in full swing, the number of people watching the competitions frequently broke a high record which brought a wide range of business attention. This could be expected, as soon after there would be a huge influx of wealthy businessmen coming into 'God's Miracle' to seize the opportunity.

Zhang Yang gave the [Axe of Lunar Eclipse] to Galileo. The young boy was surprised and delighted. He constantly bowed to Zhang Yang and made the people around laugh out loud.

At 7.30 pm, the seventh S-Class Professional League started, Pride and Honor Battle team versus Mugen's Master Cow team.

Fatty Han and his team scored 3-4 for the first seven matches and put themselves at a disadvantage. They also started a party match as the final match which decided the final outcome! Fatty Han knew that he did not have much ability in PvP so he did not join the party match. However, they lacked a real commander candidate. Unfortunately, they lost the party match and their final total score was 3-6, defeated.

Zhang Yang consoled them and greatly praised Galileo as the young little boy definitely had a great potential, he must be a powerful player in the future and it would be a waste not to hone his skills.

Although the second team had lost, Zhang Yang had another piece of good news. One of the fanatic, non PVE players in the guild could finally cook [Snake Meat]!

Zhang Yang quickly threw all the [Snake Meat] he had to a middle-aged uncle who carried the bizarre IGN of "Uncle Susan". After cooking for at least 3 hours, the whole batch of meat was cooked.

[Delicious Snake Meat] (Consumable)

Use: Restore 30,000 HP and 20,000 MP in 20 seconds and increases your dexterity attribute by 50 points. Lasts for 15 minutes. Can only be used under non-combat situation, any movement or combat would disrupt the consuming effect.

Level Requirement: 60

Unfortunately, the additional attribute was dexterity, instead of strength and vitality needed by Warriors. Anyhow, these 50 points of dexterity attribute were free and there was no harm in receiving it!

Zhang Yang rationed the meat and mailed them in separate bulks to Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu and the rest.

However, Cooking and Fishing were not easy for the players!

Alchemists could concoct potions at an incredibly fast pace. Up to four potions could be produced in one second. However, Cooking and Fishing were totally different, as these two skills completely simulated reality. The time taken to fish and cook was equal to the time taken in real life!

For those players who preferred gaining levels and obtaining best equipment, Cooking and Fishing were definitely a waste of time for them! But there were no exceptions when it came to anything at all, like Uncle Susan. He logged into the game every night to Fish and Cook. It was how he enjoyed the game.

Chapter 334: Heading for Emerald Island

As Uncle Susan was cooking the [Snake Meat], Zhang Yang also started making [Troll Recovery Potion].

‘Ding! You have made [Troll Recovery Potion] X4!’

...

‘Ding! You have made [Troll Recovery Potion] X4. Due to {Alchemist's Intuition}, [Troll Recovery Potion] has become transmuted!’

...

‘Ding! Congratulation, your Alchemy mastery has increased to Specialist-level. The number of potion and medicine that can be made at once is increased to six!’

After Zhang Yang’s Alchemy mastery became Specialist-level Alchemist, Zhang Yang would not gain any more experience from making any potions and medicines at the current phase, as he required the learning of new recipes or the gathering of new herbs to continue increasing his mastery. He would only worry about this when he reaches level 90.

[Troll Recovery Potion (Transmute 2)] (Consumable)

Use: Restore 100 HP every five seconds. When you are hit, there is 3% chance of restoring 10% HP. Lasts for 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 60

The chance for [Troll Recovery Potions] to be transmuted was very low. Although Zhang Yang had made about 1,000 potions, only six potions were transmuted. Among the six transmuted potions, the highest transmuted level was 5 and its additional effect was that when the player is hit, there is a 3% chance of restoring 25% HP.

If the ratio remained the same, a transmutation of level 10 would restore 50% HP!

Unfortunately, the chance for the potion to be transmuted was too low! But this was understandable, as the Lifesteal effect was too godly, so the

number of the transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion] had to be strictly limited.

Zhang Yang distributed most of the non-transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion] to Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the main force members. Zhang Yang also teleported back to Thunderstorm Castle and planned to head for the Great Lake Valla to look for the third Descendant of The Seven Generals.

Whitey ran like lightning and travelled through the dense woods. Zhang Yang suddenly received a voice chat from Li Ru.

"Hello, hero Zhang, come over and help me tank a boss, I have a quest to complete!"

Li Ru was Zhang Yang's ex-classmate, so he immediately complied with her request. After Li Ru had joined Lone Desert Smoke, she had not asked him for any help. It was a small favor, so he had no problems helping out. However, Zhang Yang happened to be in a party with Wei Yan Er at that time, and since she would ask a million questions, he did not join Li Ru's party but asked Li Ru about her coordinates. Upon receiving them, he patted Whitey and directly rushed towards her location.

Currently, Li Ru was Level 53, and was still training at the Burning Flatlands. It was the pace of a casual player.

Zhang Yang ran for about two hours to reach the destination. However, Li Ru and her party members had gone to clear the minions for leveling while waiting for Zhang Yang. So, Zhang Yang waited for them a while at the destination then only he saw four players with mount were rushing towards him.

Besides Li Ru, the rest of three members were male players and Zhang Yang could see those three players were interested in Li Ru as they were competing to stay next to Li Ru.

Life of Seeking Love, Broadsword Lord and Stylish Pig were those three male players' names. All of them were Guardians, which was puzzling. Three tanks and one spellcaster, what kind of party arrangement was that?

The three men looked at Zhang Yang, their eyes were obviously full of hostility and alerted.

They seemed to treat everyone who appeared around Li Ru as potential love rivals because their facial expression showed that they wanted Zhang Yang to leave as soon as possible.

"Zhang Yang, let me introduce you my three supervisors in my company. I do not need to mention their names!" Li Ru walked next to Zhang Yang and gave him a teasing smile which made Life of Seeking Love and the other two slightly twitched their lips.

Finally Zhang Yang understood the three men intentions, they were not just wanted to pursuit a beauty but also yearned for Li Ru's huge assets. If they courted Li Ru, they could own the company. They would fulfill their careers and love lives at the same time!

Zhang Yang had no mood wrangling with these jealousy men and he smiled as he said, "Where is the boss, hurry up, let's go kill the boss. I still have other quests to do!"

"We waited for you about two hours and we never utter a word, what are you rushing for?!" Broadsword Lord was the first to trigger the wrangle as he could not bear the way Li Ru looked at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang only threw a faint smile and did not bother with the man any longer.

Li Ru said, "It is around here, is a Gray-Silver boss. You can handle it alone, right?"

This Burning Flatlands was Level 50 map, the highest level of Gray-Silver boss was Level 60. Zhang Yang was already used to killing Level 70 Gray-Silver bosses by himself. This would be a hitch! He grinned and answered, "I will give it a try!"

"Hey, don't just spout out hot air, we do not want to die with you!" this time, Stylish Pig tried to trigger the wrangle. These three persons were obviously hostile to each other but once Zhang Yang appeared, they tentatively formed an alliance and allied to gang up on Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang gave them a half-hearted smile. If Zhang Yang had not hidden his profile to prevent the in-game paparazzi, these three males would definitely have a very different attitude now! Zhang Yang was starting to get annoyed, but kept his calm demeanor and said, "Let's go to the boss!"

The boss was a giant wolf with silver white body, Level 55 with 550,000 HP but it had 10 followers and all of them were Level 53 normal monsters. No wonder Li Ru and the rest dared not fight the boss, as there were 11 of them. Even if Li Ru's party had a healer, they would still face trouble.

Zhang Yang just wanted to complete the quest as fast as possible and then leave, so he immediately patted Whitey and dashed towards that bunch of monsters. He swung his sword and launched attacks.

"Idiot!" those three persons shook their head again and again.

{Horizontal Sweep} launched which coincidentally stimulated [Dark Enigmatic Sword]'s special effect. Those monsters instantly killed and all defeated.

Broadsword Lord and the other two men were suddenly stunned when they saw Zhang Yang's super high damage.

Zhang Yang did not even want to waste time entertaining them. Zhang Yang swung his sword and drastically depleted the silver wolf boss' HP.

Silver wolf boss' basic attack was less than 4,000. When it struck Zhang Yang, it could only cause about 1,000 damage. So, Zhang Yang only used {Berserker's Heal} once and then defeated the boss as fast as a lightning.

"I'm leaving!" Zhang Yang took out [Teleportation Scroll] and quickly teleported back to Thunderstorm Castle.

"Sh*tty Zhang Yang, I purposely wanted to make you jealous by using those three guys, but now you are making me mad!" Li Ru immediately spoke to Zhang Yang via voice chat.

"Why would you do that? We are old classmates, we should just leave it at that?" Zhang Yang said.

"Hmph, I will think of other ways to seduce you again!" Li Ru unwillingly disconnected the voice chat.

Zhang Yang did not think about it any further and rushed back to the Great Lake Valla once again.

The map name, Great Lake Valla, was 90% in a huge lake called Lake Valla. Level 70 maps were quite large and this Lake Valla was like an ocean. Besides, there were about 10 islands in the lake, small patches of evenly distributed land.

The Descendant of The Seven Generals that Zhang Yang was looking for was in one of these islands and the descendant's name was Khrishan.

The characters in 'God's Miracle' knew how to swim since the dawn of their creation, but they still swam much slower than they ran. The swimming speed was 10% of the character's normal running speed and it was not even worth comparing to the speed of mounts!

If a player used such a slow speed, like a turtle to find the NPC, it would take too long. Besides that, players could also tire out, swimming all the way would not cut it!

Zhang Yang pulled on the reins of Whitey and ran around the lake to look for a transport.

Two hours later, Zhang Yang reached a small fishing village, and he found an old fisherman at a small pier.

"Old man, I would like to rent a boat for sailing, is there a ferry here?" Zhang Yang asked the fisherman.

Old fisherman looked up, glanced at Zhang Yang and asked, "Where do you want to go?"

"Emerald Island!"

Old fisherman thought for a while and showed two fingers as he said, "20 gold coins!"

"Alright!" Zhang Yang. He did not bother bargaining, unlike what Fatty Han would do. Time was money, and every second spared was money

saved. Fatty Han could haggle with anything and anyone that moved for ages!

Old fisherman immediately showed all five of his fingers and said, "The price goes up, 50 gold coins!"

F*ck!

Zhang Yang took out the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and remained silent, running a thumb down the blade.

"Just 20 gold coins, hahaha, 20 gold coins" the old fisherman immediately backed down.

Zhang Yang boarded the fishing boat, and paid the gold coins. The old fisherman opened up the sail and brought Zhang Yang into Lake Valla.

Although it was a sail boat, its speed was comparable with the nuclear-powered destroyer. About half an hour later, Zhang Yang saw a huge island within his sight.

"Behold, Emerald Island!" the old fisherman said.

At that moment, a tide of white, foamy water rolled towards them. Only after a moment, only did they realize that it was actually a three meter tall wave rushing directly at them!

Bang!

The billow hit them and the fishing boat instantly capsized. Zhang Yang and the old fisherman fell into the lake.

The wave sent Zhang Yang 10 meters away from the point of impact. Zhang Yang popped his head out of the water, spluttering. He had no idea where the wave could have come from, as it was a calm, sunny day.

"Ah!" that old fisherman broke the surface of the water, and immediately cried out in despair, "My boat! My boat!"

Retribution for greed!

Zhang Yang swam towards the island in front of him, ignoring the old man!

‘-1,342!’

As Zhang Yang was swimming, pain lashed across his leg, and a damage text immediately appeared above his head! He quickly took a dive but he could only see the blurry lake water around him. When he turned around, suddenly, a huge snake eel, four meters long, as thick as a human leg appeared in front of him. The snake eel’s body was a shiny, silvery color, and dangling from its lower jaw was a long beard!

[Shiny Silver Snake Eel] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 73

HP: 73,000

Defense: 400

At this moment, that Shiny Silver Snake Eel nimbly flitted around Zhang Yang and bit his elbow.

‘{Block}!’

Zhang Yan quickly counterattacked. Because the old fisherman wanted Zhang Yang to pay another 100 gold coins as a sailing fee if Gold-Eared Bear King was summoned, so Gold-Eared Bear King was currently tucked away in his bag. As a result, Zhang Yang’s attack power was slightly reduced.

Chapter 335: The Missing Daughter

Having accumulated a sufficient amount of rage points, Zhang Yang flung a {Blast Wave} forward and took advantage of the 4-second stun on the monster to summon out Whitey.

The man and the bear joined forces on the battlefield, or rather, battlegrounds, instantly inflicting an extreme amount of damage on the Shiny Silver Snake Eel.

But, it would be no surprise for one given a name such as a Snake Eel to have the characteristics of both eel and snake. Not only could the monster electrify its target, it also had the ability to use poison. Electrification caused 5,000 points of elemental damage and also paralyzes the target for 2 seconds; while the ability to poison actually had a damage over time (DoT) effect, inflicting a total of 3,000 elemental damage points. However, the poison effect was unstackable.

Paralysis and the stun effects were basically the same, players could not move under both conditions, they were as irritating as ever! Zhang Yang was basically immune to the poison effect, thanks to his equipment.

After a short battle against the sea and the creature, Zhang Yang finally slayed the Snake Eel, and loots dropped from the elite monster. However, he only received two pieces of [Shiny Fish Scales] which were only worth 50 to 60 copper pieces. He threw them away without second thought.

As he was now swimming to Emerald Island, it was inevitable for Zhang Yang to battle countless Snake Eels and their kin. As a result, he had acquired countless fish scales!

As humans were relatively poor swimmers, Zhang Yang spent more than half an hour to reach the land of the island. After he arrived at the shore of the island, he turned around and saw piles of dead Snake Eel bodies all lying on the shallows, it was a horrifying sight.

The surroundings of Emerald Island is covered in an emerald forest. From afar, players could see that the place is like a piece of Emerald jade, hence the name 'Emerald'.

Zhang Yang rode on Whitey and began his search in the forest. But the island was shockingly big and vast, as large as the level 20 to level 30 maps! After exploring around for a long time, Zhang Yang finally discovered a manor by the far north side of the island.

The manor was extremely large, and right behind it was a large garden. The stone fort was five stories tall. Right by the entrance of the manor, there were four guards doing their jobs with dedication.

The moment the guards detected the presence of Zhang Yang, one of the guards went up front to Zhang Yang and questioned him, "Who are you?"

These four guards are Level 70 NPCs, normal grade, but their names were in green, meaning that they were friendly towards all players.

Zhang Yang did a salute and said, "I am Zhan Yu. An adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

"Adventurer, you said?" The four guards were looking at each other and one of them later said, "Since you are an adventurer, you must be available for hiring! Our lord's daughter has been missing for a few days now, and although our lord had sent many in search for her, none had managed to find her! If you can find our lord's daughter, he will handsomely reward you!"

Zhang Yang was not given the opportunity to decline, one of the guards had already led Zhang Yang with much enthusiasm into the manor, then into the castle, and then up to a study room on the the second floor.

There was a sturdy man right behind a study table, he was large and tall, and he is a Descendant of The Seven Generals - Khrishan!

[Khrishan] (Yellow-Gold Leader, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

"Dear adventurer, I believe that you have heard from my men, that my daughter Meryl has gone missing! Young man, please do me a favor, and

bring me back my daughter, I will definitely pay you a great sum!" Khrishan informed.

‘Ding! Khrishan has given you a quest: The Missing Daughter, accept or decline?’

It seems that the only option was to accept the quest! Although players can forcefully attack and kill Friendly NPCs, there won't be any experience points or loots from such acts.

To be able to acquire rewards from NPCs with green names, players can only follow the script and instructions obediently in order to complete the quests. However, if there was a change due to the events of the quests, or a cinematic cutscene, the NPCs can then switch their names from green to yellow or red, and players can slay them to get rewards!

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and left the manor. He brought up the quest list before him to check if there were any instructions given on the quest he just received.

[The Missing Daughter] (Difficulty: B-rank)

Description: The beloved daughter of Khrishan, Meryl has gone missing, you must find her as quick as possible! The wilderness is just too dangerous for a little girl!

Tips: Meryl loves to travel over to the south of the island by the cliff called the Heaven's Wave to look at the sea, you might find some useful clues and trails to follow.

Completion: Find Meryl 0/1

Zhang Yang immediately rode towards the south direction, going through a few dense forest growths before he arrived at the south side of the Emerald Island.

This so called Heaven's Wave was just about ten meters high, and Zhang Yang went on around the surrounding and discovered a vague glow on one side of the ground, so he approached it and took a closer look on the spot to find out that it was a pearl of a necklace. It seemed that the pearl had broken off a necklace.

‘Ding! You found the broken necklace of Meryl, she must have gotten herself into some sort of accident. Please look around, there might be other clues around.’

Searching a little more closely around the vast area, Zhang Yang found another pearl soon after. By searching around, locating one pearl at a time, he followed the trail of ‘breadcrumbs’. He picked up the pearls he found and followed the trail, leading him to an area of water. If he continued to go forward, he would be walking straight into the water already!

In reality, people could have easily set this up, but you can always trust the cliché plotline of a game! Zhang Yang jumped right into the lake and dove into the water. As he had the [Lungs of the Mermaid], he could breathe underwater without having to worry about drowning in the water.

After some searching around, he uncovered a cave entrance about four or five meters down under the water. Immediately he swam towards it and entered the cave. The cave was dark and deep, and Zhang Yang swam for approximately two minutes before he saw a glimpse of light right above the surface of the water, before he swam up to the surface.

Right before him was an island within an island, and a beach right before Zhang Yang. There were crabs that were as large as cows creeping around the beach, crabwalking around, they clicked their mandibles and brandished their pincers menacingly.

[Giant Pincer Crab] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 75

HP: 75,000

Defense: 400

The moment when Zhang Yang set foot onto the beach, a Giant Pincer Crab nearby began to wave its large pincers around and charged towards him.

{Block}!

"Chichichi---" The Giant Pincer Crab began to spit bubbles out, as its

two eyes swiveled around to look at Zhang Yang, trying to crush him within its pincers!

"You big crab! Just rest in peace by the beach!" Zhang Yang spun with his sword and ran right between the two pincers, causing burst of sparks.

After exhausting the monster's health point down to 5% left, that Giant Pincer Crab began to spread its legs in attempt to flee. Zhang Yang immediately flipped onto Whitey and pursued, and in just a matter of seconds, he caught up with it and emptied out the remaining health points of the crab without much effort. But as the crab was running, they had attracted the aggro of two other Giant Pincer Crabs, which gave chase.

Zhang Yang did not have the time to recover at the moment, so he simply turned around and met them with his blade. It was fortunate that the first monster only managed to reduce his health points by less than 10,000 points, so he did not have to worry about not being able to handle the coming battle, not at all!

After a short while, the two Giant Pincer Grabs were near death, and they began to flee like the first one, attracting the other Giant Pincer Crabs in the surroundings. Before Zhang Yang could break free from battle he had to slay dozens of them, clearing up a whole plot of land!

Having to fight so many monsters in a row, he had activated a few of his life-saving skills which had long cool down periods. After slaying all the monsters pursuing him, Zhang Yang immediately sat down on the beach and consumed [Snacks] to recover his status.

20 seconds later, Zhang Yang was fully recovered.

These Giant Pincer Crabs dropped [Clam Shells] which can be opened up for other items such as clam meats. Of course, there was a certain low rate that players might get pearls from the [Clam Shells]. Pearls can be used to craft some special potions, and only can be obtained from opening a [Clam Shell], so it can be categorized as a 'Rare' item.

Zhang Yang cleared the monsters that stood in his path, and along his way, he managed to pick up a total of 78 [Clam Shells], but he only obtained 3 [Small Pearls] out of all the [Clam Shells].

After getting through the defense line of the beach, he arrived at a sea of reef rocks, and there were many monsters with lobster-like lower bodies and humanoid upper bodies. These monsters were holding long spears while patrolling around the area.

Are these the 'legendary' shrimp soldiers and crab generals? Zhang Yang thought cynically.

[Red-Tailed Lobster Man] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 76

HP: 76,000

Defense: 400

What else to do? Just slay them all!

Fortunately, although these were just 'shrimp soldiers', the Lobster monsters were far more combative than the Giant Pincer Crabs, all of them stayed and fight to their deaths, none of them fled, none!

However, there were so many of them that even a night of fighting did not clear the area. He could only log out of the game to train his physical body. It was his old habit, and old habits die hard.

He jogged around the small housing area. Although February is still a cold month with cold weather that makes the air cold to breath in, but Zhang Yang was still wearing very little while jogging out. He only wore a sport t-shirt which prominently showed his sturdy and solid body. It was not clear how many lonely wives had set their thirsty eyes upon the sight of him running around!

The women that live in the area can be mainly categorized into two types, the rich types, and the mistress-type. These mistresses are basically 'taken in' by old men, so they certainly lacked satisfaction in certain aspects. Seeing a sturdy and strong man like Zhang Yang jogging around their neighborhood, 'triggered' their lust.

After Zhang Yang returned back to Han Ying Xue's house, he recalled being eye-raped by those 'hungry' women and felt an intense shiver down

his spine. If he had jogged a little slower, some of those 'hungry' women might have already caught up to him. He had already encountered too many of 'those eyes' in the bar, during his previous life.

Back inside the house, Zhang Yang saw Wei Yan Er wearing just a small T-Shirt along with a small pair of thongs with a picture of a cute bear on the front. She was yawning while walking towards the bathroom. Although the boobies of this little girl were not fully developed yet, her two thighs were long and smooth, and her complexion was crystal clear, she somehow looked far better than most of the so-called 'beauty-leg' models!

Zhang Yang felt a sense of shame and guilt, so he quickly turned away and said, "Little girl, there's a man in your house, please take care of your image!" Although he would always take the opportunity to run his eyes over a beauty, Wei Yan Er was already like a little sister to him, so just having the thought of it would make him guilty.

"Groot groot groot!" Wei Yan Er was rinsing her mouth with water, she only spoke after awhile, "Aren't you my brother-in-law? You won't be such an animal that you would 'eat' us two sisters right?"

"... when did I become your brother-in-law?"

"Wa, noob tank, so now, are you denying it all after you have accepted the 'goods'?" Wei Yan Er reached her head out from the bathroom, "Cousin sister already told me everything!"

That witch, unreliable witch! She said that she would keep the secret into her grave, but the moment she turned around, she already began to betray him!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and put the soya drink and the deep-fried dough sticks onto the table. He was already used to eating these, he was totally not a fan of the "American" breakfast of fried eggs - sunny side up and toast. When he moved into Han Ying Xue's house, he had also brought along his habit and supplies, so Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had 'picked it up' from him after their first try on the soya drink and the deep-fried dough sticks. Nowadays, Zhang Yang would go out early to buy

some breakfast from the shops two streets away. He just treated this as a regular morning jog everyday.

As Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er was talking to each other, Han Ying Xue also walked right in. She was also wearing a T-shirt and a pair of tight pants, which was much better compared to that little girl. However, the main point was that maybe she wasn't fully awake yet, or she was doing it on purpose, her tatas were set free! Braless! The pair of two round spherical objects that she was so proud of were 'towering' right in front of Zhang Yang's eyes, and the outline of the tips that seemed to be trying to drill their way out through the fabric poked out prominently!

"Pff---" Zhang Yang choked and spurted the soya drink out from his mouth, and the choke got him good, causing him to cough continuously.

It's not decent to seduce people like that!

"Hey Witch, please wear your bra, you're going to burn holes in your shirt!" Zhang Yang spluttered.

Han Ying Xue straightened her back, throwing out her massive pair and smiled sweetly at Zhang Yang, "At least your eyes are getting 'moist' aren't they?"

"... They'll sag if you don't support them anytime soon."

Shocked, she silently turned around and walked into her room.

Wei Yan Er had also changed her clothes and sat steadily by Zhang Yang's side, and then she winked and whispered dramatically, "Noob tank, you really are doomed, she's going to 'eat' you alive!"

Zhang Yang frowned with sweat running down all over his head, he had not even claimed full payment from Yu Li yet, and now he has to face Han Ying Xue. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu has been looking at him kinda funny! The thought came across that there was a 1% chance of him sleeping with her, but he suddenly calmed himself down, the percentage of sleeping with her is obviously so much lower than the chance that he would end up with a bullet in his head!

As for Lin Yu, he did not pay much mind on her.

He had enough women on his mind, he did not need to find trouble for no reason!

Well, nevermind, the cart will find its way around the hill when it gets there², he need not pay so much mind on it now!

Zhang Yang logged into the game and continued slaughtering those poor Lobster Men until six in the evening, and finally, he managed to clear a path to the ancient ruins of a palace.

This ancient palace had been destroyed, and all that was left were the broken walls of the palace. Zhang Yang could see a huge statue made of stone being placed right in the middle of the entire area. The statue took the form of male mermaid, having a macho upper body, muscular and hot, like popstar icons, holding a trident in both of his hands, while the lower body was a fish's body, but it was blocked by some of the broken walls around, so Zhang Yang could not see the entire lower body of the statue.

Zhang Yang took out his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and charged towards the statue on Whitey.

Shoof!

The moment he set foot into the area of the palace, an arrow came straight at him! Ranged attack cannot be countered with {Block}, so the arrow inflicted a damage of '-1371' onto Zhang Yang.

At the same instant, the attacker that shot the arrow at Zhang Yang walked out into the light. It was a female Naga, with a human upper body and a snake's body as her lower body part. She looked just like the elves, and her face tattooed with their clan markings. She held a long bow in her arm, and she was loading up another arrow, ready to shoot!

[Screeching Siren] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

Having no time at all to hesitate, Zhang Yang immediately patted

Whitey and ran behind cover.

The Screeching Siren let out a deafening screech, sending a cone of wave-like patterned attack at Zhang Yang.

‘-1342!’

That attack did a number of damage on Zhang Yang, and at the same instant, it pushed Zhang Yang 5 meters backward.

Screeching Siren took that moment of advantage to reposition herself and let her arrow fly, and it did another 1000+ damage onto Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang brought up the battle logs to find that this monster was capable of using {Sonic Screech}, which inflicts one round of damage to the target and pushes the target 5 meters backward!

Whitey immediately charged back up and Zhang Yang instantly countered the upcoming attacks from the monster.

It was fortunate for Zhang Yang that the rate of {Sonic Screech} used by the Screeching Siren was that high, and the damage inflicted by hunter-type monsters will reduce when players get within melee range. In a nutshell, this Screeching Siren is almost similar to the DPS of a Red-Tailed Lobster Man.

After taking out the Screeching Siren, Zhang Yang continued to push forward. But the next monsters that appeared right before Zhang Yang was a Male Naga, holding a long spear in both hands, and it was obvious that this monster is a warrior type monster!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Shrimp soldiers and crab generals - numerous underlings; ineffective troops
2. The cart will find its way round the hill when it gets there - things will eventually sort themselves out

Chapter 336: Mermaids

[Screeching Naga Warrior] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

It's attributes were similar to the Screeching Siren, and it was also capable of using {Sonic Screech}. However, it was a warrior type monster that can perform both ranged attacks and melee attacks, unlike the Screeching Siren that was poor in melee combat! This instantly gave Zhang Yang a small headache. But he took care of it swiftly.

Along the way, approaching slowly towards the center of the palace, any Naga monsters that appeared within Zhang Yang's sight were all put down to the ground by his sword.

Normally, humanoid monsters dropped clothing ingredients, but Nagas were categorized as abnormal types! Instead of dropping clothes, they dropped {Clam Shells}, and Zhang Yang acquired quite a number of pearls from all the {Clam Shells} that he collected.

Half an hour later, he finally arrived at the front of the statue that is located in the middle of the palace. He finally got a good look at it. At the bottom of the statue was a large, round fountain. Although the palace was already abandoned for a very long time, the fountain was still functioning, the sound of water giving a soothing effect.

Splash!

A girl came out from the water in the fountain, silky long hair in black that censored her otherwise naked snow-white body! Her skin was like the finest jade ever, smooth and fine. Only two pieces of shell covered up her boobies like a bra, protecting the pair of significant existence that stood round and tall on her chest.

[Meryl] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 70

HP: 7000

Defense: 70

She leaned by the base pool of the fountain, resting her face on her arm as if she was thinking of something.

There were also many female Nagas roaming around the surrounding of that fountain and they seemed to be guarding the place. It was most probably that they were trying to prevent Meryl from running off, because every one of the monsters looked sharp and vigilant, trying to look out for any suspicious activities around!

To save Meryl, Zhang Yang knew that he had to slay all the monsters in the surrounding!

Zhang Yang patted on Whitey's head and charge onward to engage with those weaker monsters around. Because the skill {Sonic Screech} that these monsters had dragged out battles longer than they should have been, Zhang Yang could not efficiently slay the monsters, and so, it took him about an hour to clear all the monsters.

If he only opened up a path straight to the fountain without taking out all the monsters, he would definitely be swarmed up by the monsters when he is rescuing the NPC. By then, it would have become one against one hundred! Zhang Yang is skillful, but he knew he wasn't capable of going against a bunch of Level 70+ monsters at the same instance, unless -- he had a full set of [Armor set] of Level 80 Violet-platinum grade equipment, he could cut corners!

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had experienced a few similar situations, and he had ran in blindly, without thinking about the consequences! With the experience of a veteran, he knew that he had to do this the hard way.

Slash!

Clearing up the surrounding of the fountain, Zhang Yang struck down the last Naga with his sword, and the monster dropped a piece of Black-

Steel grade [Boots]! He could not help himself but to be shocked by it, a Black-Steel equipment, it's been so long ever since he saw one!

After clearing all the monsters around the area, he could finally move on to rescuing the NPC.

Zhang Yang approached the fountain on Whitey, and saw that Meryl was resting by the pool of the fountain. But then, she was awoken by the heavy foot steps of Whitey, and with a face of confused expression, she raised her head up and looked around with her sharp eyes.

The moment she saw Zhang Yang and Whitey, Meryl began to panic, and instantly, she opened up her mouth and began to scream on a supersonic frequency, "Ah---".

Fortunately, the monsters in the surrounding had been cleared out by Zhang Yang, it was a wise move indeed. Her scream would have attracted all the monsters towards them!

Zhang Yang quickly tried to calm her down, "Don't be scared, I'm not a bad person. I've been sent by your father to rescue you."

Meryl only glanced at Zhang Yang as she continued to scream at a deafening frequency.

Should he just pick this little girl up and run all the way back? Zhang Yang took a few steps forward, and Meryl quickly she swam to the middle of the fountain, terrified.

Splash!

The large tail of a fish broke through the surface of the water, the scales of the tail pinkish in colour, and the fish body was extremely beautiful, it was like anything he had ever seen!

Zhang Yang was left with his eyes and mouth opened wide, because, the fish tail is attached to the upper body of Meryl!

Meryl had finally exposed her true form in front of Zhang Yang, with her upper body being a very pretty human girl, while her lower body was the pinkish body of a fish!

--- A Mermaid!

Meryl was actually a beautiful mermaid!

Zhang Yang was confused by the situation, so what kind of transformation is this? What a twist!

Meryl stared at Zhang Yang in alarm, then she began to ask, "Who are you? The guards, there should be guards outside, what did you do to them?"

... Is Meryl really the daughter of that Krishan? Well, Meryl is a mermaid, she would be kin to those Nagas, Lobster Men and the other creatures of the sea.

And of course, Meryl might be a half-blooded mermaid or human or whatsoever, because her mother might have been a mermaid as well, with her father was a human.

"I'm Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle. When I came across the Emerald Island, I was recruited by your father Krishan to locate you on purpose." Zhang Yang explained to Meryl. As for the Naga guards outside, he did not mention them at all. It was obvious that Meryl is related to these sea creatures. To inform her that he slaughtered them all... It's better to bring that secret to his grave.

Meryl looked at Zhang Yang, and then she closed both of her eyes and shook her head gently, and said, "I can feel that what you are telling me is true. But Zhan Yu, I don't want to go back to that so-called 'home' anymore, please take your leave!"

If he couldn't bring Meryl back to Krishan, then Zhang Yang will never be able to complete his quest, and he will never get his hands on the 3rd piece of the shattered fragment of the key!

So Zhang Yang tried get a better understanding of the situation first, "Milady Meryl, can you tell me why wouldn't you agree to go home?"

Meryl hesitated for a moment before she began to talk, "Alright, you seem like an upright person, so allow me to tell you a story."

She swam back to the side of the pool, pushed her hands against the side of the pool and leaned against the side of the pool. Then she rested her pretty chin on her arm as she slapped the water with her pinkish tail by the side of the pool, which was constructed with white jade stones.

"My mother, Siniia was a princess of the Merfolks race, and she was the most beautiful woman among all mermaids in the entire race! 17 years ago, as she swam up to the surface of a lake while a storm hit by, she was washed away by the wind and waves to a shore of an island, close to death! At that time, Krishan appeared and he saved my mother!"

Wasn't this a fairy tale story where the prince rescued a mermaid princess, making a touching story that made people sing and cry over it? The only difference was that, Krishan is not a prince.

The water droplets on Meryl's body began to dry up, as Zhang Yang stared, that pinkish fish tail of hers began to transform into two long snow-white legs. Of course, the 'important' part was covered up with a seashell.

She knelt down on the side of the pool and hugged her knees, then she continued to tell the story, "There is a rule for every single one of the Merfolks. If any of us is saved by human, we must fulfill one request of the human who save us. What Krishan requested was to take my mother as his wife! However, my mother had already fallen in love with someone else, and she had already pregnant with me in her womb!"

So now the story has twisted from a prince being not a prince in the story, and now being a bad person who tried to take away other people's wife-to-be!

"My mother begged Krishan to pick another request, but Krishan would not listen! We had to keep the oaths and promises we swore, so my mother had no choice but to marry Krishan!"

Meryl spoke out with a heavy sense of sorrow.

So now Krishan became the 'big bad boss' all of a sudden. From the looks of it, to acquire the fragment of the key, Zhang Yang need not complete the quest that was given by Krishan. All he had to do was to wait

for Krishan to turn into an 'enemy' against him and just slaughter him to get that fragment of the key!

"Zhang Yu, can you tell me, is it right or wrong to uphold one's oath?" My mother insisted on upholding her oath, and she ended up living her remaining life in sorrow, washing her cheeks with her own tears everyday, and she passed away at an early age, just like that!" Meryl looked at Zhang Yang with her moist, pretty pair of eyes.

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts about it and said, "It depends on what kind of person are you holding your oath on for! If the person is decent, of course you must uphold your oath for that person! But if the person is bad, upholding the oath would only mean hurting yourself!"

Meryl pulled Zhang Yang's arm over and begged, "So, please don't take me back to that place! Krishan is not my father, but the murderer of my mother! He kept my mother locked in the manor and never let her venture out, because he was worried that my mother would escape!"

"After my mother passed away, his intentions were made clear, he wanted to make me his wife instead! I could only escape during the night and I managed to reach the Merfolks race and begged them to look for my real father to take me back!"

So the truth had been told! But Zhang Yang still had an unsolved question in his mind, so he asked, "If you are willing to go with the Merfolks race, then why did you leave a trail back there with the fragments of your necklaces, the pearls for me to follow?"

Meryl shook her head and said, "Those are not my doing, it should be one of the guards that were ordered by Krishan to follow me! He followed us all the way to the entrance of the cave, that was where he got caught by Gethelo and got imprisoned in a cell. But none of us had thought that he had actually left a trail that would lead you here!"

Just as Zhang Yang and Meryl were speaking, footsteps could be heard suddenly, it was Khrishan and five other elite-grade guards walking into the scene. They immediately surrounded Zhang Yang.

"Adventurer, good job. You have found my daughter for me! Take this,

this is your handsome rewards!" Khrishan took out a bag of gold and threw it at Zhang Yang, "Now you may leave!"

Pak, the bag of gold reached Zhang Yang's hands. It was bulgy and there was probably hundreds of gold coins in it.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Missing Daughter, acquired 1,000,000 experience points!'

"Warrior, please don't go!" Meryl had lost herself the moment she saw Khrishan, and she quickly sought aid from Zhang Yang in desperation, "Protect me until my real father arrives to get me! Wise, just adventurer, please, lend me your aid!"

'Ding! Meryl has given you a quest: Buying Time, accept or decline?'

Accept.

[Delaying Time] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Buy enough time until the Prince of the Merfolks arrives to aid! Tips: One of the statues within the fountain contains a secret passage, there are numerous traps along the passage, they should provide advantageous effects to your quest!

Completion: Make sure that Meryl is not taken away within 30 minutes
0/1

Zhang Yang reread the quest again and again, and then he whispered to Meryl, "Meryl, quickly, go to one of the statues located at the center of the fountain and look for a secret passage!"

"Alright." Meryl followed his instructions and swam back into the fountain pool, leaving a line of water line behind her. She swam to the center position of the fountain where the statues were located and began her search for the secret passage.

Khrishan was enraged, then he spoke, "Adventurer, are you trying to be funny with me?"

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and pointed at Khrishan, "You low-life sadist, not only did you force another man's wife

to marry you, driving her to death, now you actually intend to marry her daughter! Bastards like you shouldn't be left alive! Pui!"

"You bastard! How dare you curse me, the great Khrishan! Kill him, kill him now!" Khrishan raised up his hand and gave the order, and the five elite-grade guards immediately charged at Zhang Yang!

Chapter 337: Buying Time

Krishan immediately turned from being a green-named NPC to a red-named boss monster! Meanwhile, he gained two extra effects on him.

[Twisted Heart]: Attack increased by 1000%, immune to all damage, last for 30 minutes.

[Arrogance]: Movement speed reduced by 50%, however, recover 10% movement speed for every guard dying in battle, last for 30 minutes.

30 minutes of invincibility, game-breaking attack, reduced movement speed. The main idea of the quest was clear: Buying Time! Let's not talk about Zhang Yang for the moment, the system is fair and will not allow any players to have the chance to slack while doing a quest, not even in a quest that requires hundreds or thousands of players to complete, no player shall be able to take advantage of any quests!

Meanwhile, the five elite guards were granted an additional effect {Pursue} on each of them, having their movement speed increased by 100%, lasting for 30 minutes!

Zhang Yang turned around and began to run! He ran around the fountain and began to play 'hide and seek' with the five elite guards. The five monsters were the 'keys' in keeping the restriction on Krishan's movement speed, so he should not even kill any single one of them! Or else, Krishan would regain his regular speed, destroy Zhang Yang!

The five guards were pursuing Zhang Yang closely, while Krishan headed towards Meryl.

Zhang Yang was shocked to see Krishan walking towards Meryl. Immediately he jumped into the fountain pool and began to swim towards Meryl as well.

"Found it!" just when things were getting tense, Meryl suddenly found the switch and she shouted with excitement, 'Ka! Ka! Ka!', the bottom of one statue suddenly cracked right open, and right in front of Meryl was a secret passage. The entrance of the passage was extremely small and tight,

it seemed that only one person could go in.

"Go in!" Zhang Yang cried frantically. This was one instance where his combat prowess would not be of any use at all.

"There's no water in the passage, I can't get in!" Meryl looked at Zhang Yang hopelessly.

--- a mermaid's tail will only transform into a pair of legs when there is no water at all, and the passage was completely dry!

Zhang Yang had already swam to the side of Meryl, so he picked her up on his back and began to squeeze into the passage with her.

"You imbeciles, go get them back to me at once!" Khrishan roared at his guards.

"Yes Sir. Khrishan!" All five of the guards quickly squeezed themselves into the passage one after another, pursuing Zhang Yang and Meryl.

Zhang Yang was carrying Meryl on his back while Whitey was following them from behind. The passage was not as dark as he expected as there were numerous blue gemstones adorning the passage walls. Even in the dark, the slight glow from the gemstones gave Zhang Yang limited visibility.

After walking forward for tens of meters, the passage began to widen. It was about 4 meters broad and 2 meters high at the moment, and it was enough for a person to sprint forward without hesitation or worries on crashing into the sides while running!

The footsteps behind Zhang Yang's back could be heard very clearly, the boots of their heavy armor stepping on the solid ground of the passage, the grinding between the soles of their boots and the sands on the ground causing continuous sharp and clear crisps, echoing throughout the passage. As the echos were getting more and more mixed up, it eventually got difficult to differentiate whether the sounds were coming from the front or the back!

Zhang Yang turned his head around for a peek, and he saw the five guards holding torches, hundreds of meters behind them!

As he was carrying Meryl, his movement speed was down to only 80%. He may not feel the weight, but his movement speed had definitely gone down. It was just a matter of time before those guards caught up on them!

Zhang Yang was not too worried about the five guards, but he could not kill any of the guards or else the restriction on Krishan's movement speed will be lifted and he really steamroll over him by then!

Didn't the description of the quest mention that there were traps in the passage? About time they showed up now!

Zhang Yang continued running forward while looking around for any possible clues. He ran for another tens of meters and finally, he saw a handle by the wall in front of him.

[Trap Handle] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 1

Defense: 1

Zhang Yang had no time to hesitate, so he went up to the handle, reached his hands on the handle and pulled it down with his strength!

Ka ka ka!

A stone door smashed down onto the ground from the top of the passage with a loud 'bang', blocking the five guards just when they were about to catch up with them. Their fingers were almost reaching Meryl's hair, before the door shut down for good!

[Defensive Stone Door] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 1,000

This door should be able to hold the five guards for awhile here, but if Krishan arrives, the stone door would go down when the big man starts punching it!

As Zhang Yang was moving forward, he saw numerous suspicious glowing pupils approaching. As they got closer, Zhang Yang quickly realized that these actually belonged to huge gray rats, each of them the size of a cat! They were lurking in the dark with their shining, bloodthirsty pair of eyes, giving Zhang Yang a chill down his spine!

[Sewer Rat] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500

Defense: 70

Although they were just normal monsters, their numbers were huge! Zhang Yang saw the seemingly countless rats with his bare eyes and knew that he would not be able to take them all at once!

"Ah --- rats!" Meryl was instantly shocked and let out a scream, and she slapped on Zhang Yang's shoulder continuously as she tried to lift herself higher up on Zhang Yang.

"Of course I see them!" Zhang Yang shouted in annoyance and he put Meryl down. Then he pulled out his sword and activated his {Blast Wave} -- he could not enter combat as he was carrying a person on his back.

Shoof!

A wave blasted out, and in the narrow passage, the {Blast Wave} washed up all the available areas within the passage, going out as far as a distance of 3 meters!

The rats were huge in size, which are about 20+ cm in length and they were tightly packed together in the passage. Up to a thousand rats could be within the space of the 3-meter area!

{Blast Wave} was only limited by distance, and nothing else. Not the amount of targets, or if they were being blocked by others!

Instantly, approximately thousands of '-723' appeared at the same instant and the special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was triggered. Furthermore, the special effect of the sword was triggered as rapidly as the

firing of a machine gun!

‘-723!’

‘-723!’

‘-723!’

...

Zhang Yang was blinded by the damage values that were appearing in front of him, he could only see countless ‘-723’ bombarding his view sight on the screen. If this scenario happened in an older online game, the game could have crashed or players could have been disconnected due to technical errors!

After at least one minute, the numbers finally stopped flashing up. Zhang Yang could only see a sea of dead rats in front of him, with a relatively small number of rats still alive.

Ji ji ji!

The remaining rats were letting out their raging screech and ganged up on Zhang Yang.

As the cool down of the {Blast Wave} had ended, Zhang Yang threw another {Blast Wave} at the remaining rats, and it was another spectacular scene where damage values danced in the screen!

After the second wave attack, only dozens of rats survived!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and activated his {Horizontal Sweep} and {Thunder Strike} onto the remaining rats, clearing out every single one of them!

These rats did not drop anything, however, Zhang Yang looked at his experience bar, it actually increased by more than a grid!

Holy god! One should know that after reaching Level 70, a player would have to grind for at least 10 days to be able to gain 1 level, and one grid of the experience bar required one solid day in reality to fill up, which meant 3 days and 3 nights of game-time of non-stop grinding. And now, Zhang Yang had just achieved all that in slightly over a minute!

Are there any other methods that were better and faster than this?

The special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was like a bug when it came to blasting enemies out in AOE style while grinding!

The large number of rats were initially spawned at the spot to block players when the NPCs that were pursuing them were blocked by the stone door. If players could take out all the rats, then they can continue to move forward; but if the five guards broke the stone door before the players could defeat all of the rats, the quest would have likely ended up in failure!

But no one had thought that the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] would be so powerful, and the rats were also being very 'cooperative', squeezing themselves in a tight area of space. Further more, the {Blast Wave} was an AOE that inflicted damage across all targets within the area of it's effect range. With all these 3 conditions together, a miracle where Zhang Yang acquired 10% experience points within one minute became real!

It was so satisfying for Zhang Yang!

So now, Zhang Yang could only hope for more similar traps ahead of them, the more, the better now!

After turning his head back for a peek, he saw that the remaining health points of the [Defensive Stone Door] was still at 920,000! Zhang Yang quickly widened his steps while running forward.

After running for about 3 to 4 minutes, suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a loud and thunderous 'bang' coming from behind, and the crowded sounds of footsteps began to continue again! Zhang Yang knew that it must be Khrishan, he must have arrived at the stone door. Any obstacles would become a piece of thin paper apparently, when Krishan arrives!

But Zhang Yang had already got himself at least a 3 minute gap!

The second handle had appeared right in front of Zhang Yang.

Pulling it down!

Boom! The stone door dropped down and the path was blocked. It also

had a similar 1,000,000 health points and 1,000 defense points!

Ji ji ji! Countless sewer rats were approaching from the front gushing towards Zhang Yang.

But in his eyes, these countless rats were oddly cute, maybe it was because of the countless experience points!

{Blast Wave}!

Another spectacular scenario presented itself, with the countless damage values jumping up and down on Zhang Yang's sight view on his screen. It was visible that Zhang Yang was gaining experience point in a very swift manner, and he gained another 12% of experience points on his experience point bar!

Zhang Yang turned to Meryl, and he could not help but to think about losing her after delaying for 29 minutes and giving up on the quest, and then he could restart the quest all over again to take advantage of the experience points by repeating the same process all over again! But it did not seem possible and it was not right to do so. Although Meryl was just a normal-grade NPC at the moment, the quest description had stated that her father is the king of the Merfolks, and her mother was a princess of the Merfolks! She would most definitely be equipped with a sophisticated AI, which meant that she will definitely remember if you ever did something to provoke her!

Meryl felt embarrassed after being looked upon by Zhang Yang with that weird look, so she spoke shyly, "Warrior, please don't look at me with that kind of eyes!"

Zhang Yang laughed while moving forward with her on his back, and at the same time, he began to speak nonsense, "You're so pretty that the sun stayed quiet with your presence!"

Meryl actually bought it, and her face turned red immediately as she blushed. His words was super effective on her, she then rubbed and pinched her face with her hands and shook around without a pause, as if she was very happy but shy at the same time.

After the second trap, it was the third trap, then the forth trap, then the fifth trap... The seventh trap!

A stream of golden light shined upon the entire body of Zhang Yang, and he was elevated up to Level 76 in a magnificent scene!

He felt so satisfied!

However, it was time for him to say goodbye to this fortune he was earning while running away with Meryl. Both of them saw a light source in front of them, and as they were approaching it, the light source was enlarged, and by the end of it, was the exit of the passage, apparently.

Splash!

Enormous waves were stirring up, Zhang Yang and Merul came out onto a half-round platform with Whitey following them closely. On the platform, the three directions were the sides of the cliff around the platform while a lake loomed below them!

Splash! Splash! Splash! Countless Snake Eel monsters emerged from the surface of the lake and began to roam around in the lake, the number was shockingly enormous!

Zhang Yang then turned to Meryl, "Meryl, I'm putting you into the lake, you can just wait in the lake until your father arrives. Then you will truly be safe!"

"No---" Meryl quickly responded and used her two long and white arms to hug Zhang Yang tightly by his neck, "Those Snake Eels are the worst enemies of the Merfolks, they will definitely tear me into pieces if I go down into the lake now!"

Chapter 338: The King has Arrived

Zhang Yang took a look at the quest timer. Currently, 24 minutes had passed and there were only 6 minutes left before the King of the Merfolks arrives to get Meryl!

Protect her to the end!

Another two minutes passed, and the five guards had finally come out of the passage and stood right in front of Zhang Yang. They shouted, waving their weapons, and charged towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang flipped onto Whitey and let Meryl climb behind him where she hugged him tightly. After tightening his teeth, he gulped down a transmuted Level-5 [Troll Recovery Potion], with the additional effect of having a 3% rate to recover 25% health points when hit by enemy. It was equal to recovering 0.75% of health points every time the enemy struck him. The health points of Zhang Yang after mounting onto Whitey is about 60,000 points, it would mean that he would recover 450 points every hit!

Furthermore, with the additional effect of the [Troll Recovery Potion], he could probably hold on for a long time!

After activating his {Blast Wave}, the five guards were all stunned!

These henchmen were carrying the effect of {Pursue}, so they could catch up with Zhang Yang and Meryl much sooner. Furthermore, they ensured that Krishan kept moving at a snail's pace, so Zhang Yang had to keep them alive, he could only use his Status Effect Skills to restrict their movements!

4 seconds later, the five guards had recovered the stun effect and resumed their pursuit of Zhang Yang.

They were like gazelles, Zhang Yang could not shake them off, even while mounted! In just a short while, the five guard had already caught up to him and were hacking at Whitey's plump rump!

Zhang Yang could only turn Whitey around to face them all head on.

If he was alone, Zhang Yang could simply jump down from his bear mount and activate his {Heroic Leap} and {Thunder Strike} to slow down the guards. But now that he had Meryl by his side which appeared to be a burden to him, he could only use Whitey to shield her from being taken away while he was on the mount. Because if he jumped off Whitey, Whitey would switch from being a [Mount] to a regular pet, and the paraplegic Meryl would end up lying on the floor helplessly!

Zhang Yang defended himself from their attacks, constantly moving about to avoid taking more hits than necessary. He was buying time for this {Blast Wave} to cool down, in order to restrict their movements without hurting them too much.

He was losing health points constantly, but he had used a transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion] which constantly fueled him with some health point recovery effect. He could last for a bit this way!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Heavy steps could be heard approaching the exit of the passage, and then came Krishan from the exit. He revealed a crazy smile on his face and said, "You are not getting away from me!"

Piak piak piak! Meryl was in a panic and she could not stop slapping Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "Warrior, he has caught up with us! What should we do? What should we do!"

Zhang Yang was getting annoyed by her repetitive questions, and he roared in anger, "If you won't calm down, I'm going to throw you straight to him!"

Meryl was shocked, and she dared not prod Zhang Yang anymore, so she fell completely silent.

Zhang Yang kited the five guards around the platform in circles, while Krishan was like a big boss, following his minions closely.

2 minutes left!

But the five guards were not weak in their assaults as well. Every single hit from them inflicted Zhang Yang with at least 1000 damage, and Zhang

Yang had already activated his life-saving skills once! Now that his health bar had almost hit the bottom again, he could only activate his life-saving skill one more time! It was lucky that his life-saving skill had already cooled down.

1 minute left until the quest timer reaches it's end!

Suddenly, a stream of vertical white light emerged on the surface of the lake from afar, and a tall wave of about two to three meters high was vaguely visible from where Zhang Yang stood. The wave was rolling towards their location aggressively, as if it was intent on washing away everything that stood in its path!

"Zhan Yu, just hold on a little longer, my father is about to arrive!" Meryl was screaming in joy and excitement.

The tide of wave seem familiar somehow. It looked similar to the one that had capsized his boat when he was arriving at the Emerald Island! Could it possibly be that King of Merfolks, was it all his doing?

"Father has no idea where mother is, so he had been searching for her all these years. Sometimes he would release his frustration by stirring up big waves!" Meryl gave an explanation that make sense, "These are the things I was told by Gethelo and the others!"

"Quickly, kill that bastard!" It seemed that Khrishan could feel that something was off, so he quickly commanded his five guards to finish off Zhang Yang.

40,000!

30,000!

The health points of Zhang Yang were decreasing without a pause!

30 seconds left! 20 seconds left!

The high wave was approaching closer and closer by the second, and vaguely, Zhang Yang could see the a shadow of a merman right on top of the wave! The merman held a golden trident in his hand, letting out thunderous roars to express his rage!

"Quickly! Quickly!" Khrishan could not move fast, so all he could do was to command his guards to do it for him!

20,000! 10,000! 5,000! 1,000!

Shoof! One of the guard threw his axe at Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang had already used up all his life-saving skills, and he had been dodging their blows endlessly! But the forth attack was so sudden and near, it seemed like he could not dodge it!

The blade of the axe came closer and closer to his face, if this attack lands on his face, he will be a dead man!

‘Ding!’

Just when everything seemed lost, a golden trident was hurled from afar, deflecting the axe right before it could land on Zhang Yang’s face!

The flashing of sparks was blinding!

Kiang!

The golden trident surged with incredible power! After deflecting the axe, it embedded itself, deep into the surface of the rocks in the direction it was flying towards. A third of the trident was already buried in the solid rock!

Zhang Yang had once again escaped death! He let out a breath of relief and turned his eyes to the quest timer. The quest timer had already reached 0:00!

Boom!

The wave had arrived, and the water spouts were splashing all over the platform, causing enormous thunderous sounds all around that shook the ears of everyone within range. The Snake Eels were like small little mud fishes, washed up by the huge impact of the wave! Their dead, white bellies lay motionless above the surface of the water!

It was at that moment, when the merman stepped on the water and leaped over to the ground on the platform. He waved his left hand and a white light surged through his body. Every single droplet of water on his

fish tail was instantly dried up, and the tail transformed into a pair of macho legs. He stood right in front of Zhang Yang like an unmovable mountain!

[Gethelo, The King of Merfolks] (Mythical, Humanoid Creature)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Wow, a very important person (VIP) has arrived!

The moment the timer of the quest reached its end, the two effects on Krishan had also disappeared automatically, and Khrishan had regained his normal movement speed. Of course, his attack had also restored back to his default setting, he was no longer a ridiculous, unkillable being! He pulled out the sword that hung from his belt and said, "Human and Merfolks have a peace treaty, and neither have broken them. That mermaid had made an oath with me, are you trying to go against the oath you merfolks had sworn?"

Gethelo raised his right arm and moved his arm towards the location of where the trident landed, and the trident emerged from the rock and flew right into his hand.

He spun his trident around in a circle on top of his head and stirred up a strong wind around him. Then he pointed his trident at Krishan and spoke in a calm, commanding manner, "I'm here for my daughter!"

"Father, it was him who imprisoned mother. It was him who forced mother to lived in agony! It was him who pushed mother to her death!" Meryl pointed her finger at Krishan.

Wow, from 'Gethelo' to 'Father' in an instant! She really adapts fast! Because he's royalty?! Zhang Yang thought to himself disapprovingly.

Gethelo was staring straight aright at Krishan with murderous eyes and said, "Human, you dared to imprison my fiance, this crime must not go unpunished! You will pay, now!"

"He forced mother to marry him, all because he saved her!" Meryl began to accuse Krishan of his crimes.

Gethelo was enraged after hearing all about it, and he shouted, "You worthless piece of human, how dare you mistreat my Siniia! Unforgivable! Unforgivable!"

Krishan laughed out loud and said, "So you are the man that Siniia thought about everyday! It was such an unfortunate event that she could not see you for one last time before she departed from this world!"

"You bastard! Die!" Gethelo was bristling with anger, he waved his trident around and charged at Krishan.

"Haha, then I shall kill you, before I take your daughter for myself!" Krishan was laughing madly while swinging his sword at Gethelo. He barked at the five guards, "Go get them, boys!"

The five guards immediately raised their weapons at Gethelo and charged forward.

"Get lost!" Gethelo let out a thunderous roar and spun his trident around. The swing was swift, and instantly, the five guards were inflicted with a damage of about 30,000 on each of them!

Mythical bosses are indeed strong!

Two seconds later, Gethelo spun his trident once again and did another 30,000 damage to each of the guards! The elite guards only had about 70,000 health points on each of them. After two rounds of attack from the trident, they were only left with not more than 10,000 health points each!

Zhang Yang flipped down from the back of Whitey, and then he placed Meryl at one corner. Now that Gethelo was at the scene, Meryl would definitely be safe!

He used a [Bandage] and recovered 16,000 health points, and then he flipped himself back up on the back of Whitey and charged towards the five guards.

With a {Horizontal Sweep}, he inflicted 4,000+ damage to each of the guards. It wasn't necessary at all, for they were one more swing away from death anyway. He was simply bored of just standing by and watching!

As expected, Gethelo spun his trident around once again and put down all five of the guards on the ground for good.

After taking out the trash, it was natural for Gethelo and Zhang Yang to turn their attention towards the big boss! However, Zhang Yang did not dare charge in front, as all his life-saving skills were still on cool down period, and his health points were far from recovered. If he were to charge into Krishan now, he would just end up being smashed to death!

Gethelo let out a long shout, and he stomped on the ground with an aura emerging from his feet before he charged over to Krishan! Shoof! He stabbed his trident out in an attempt to pierce Krishan's chest.

Of course, Krishan would not just stand there and do nothing about it. Immediately he raised his sword to counter the attack. The two leader-grade NPCs engaged in battle!

Zhang Yang followed Gethelo from behind. He knew that he could not do much damage to the boss, but he could at least lend his aid to Gethelo by applying five layers of {Cripple Defense} to weaken the defense of the boss! It was definitely better than doing nothing at all!

Furthermore, if the monster is slayed by the NPC all by himself, the player will get nothing at all!

Although they were both leaders, a Mythical grade creature was two grades above a Yellow-Grade! Their levels were different as well, resulting in Krishan being outclassed in every aspect!

Gethelo was stabbing and slashing Krishan with incredible speed and strength.

Splashes of blood were oozing out from Krishan's body in flower-blooming patterns as Krishan was stabbed and slashed by Gethelo. The trident really did a great number on Krishan!

90%, 80%, 70%... Although Krishan had a large amount of health points,

it was dropping at an alarming rate!

Krishan would activate his {Tornado Cleave} once in a short while, and very frequently too. He would activate the skill once in every 10 seconds. But Zhang Yang had {Block} to counter the attack, as long he timed his {Block} well enough, he would not have to receive any damage from the boss.

Since that Gethelo was keeping the boss busy at the moment, all Zhang Yang had to do was to reserve his {Block} for the boss's {Tornado Cleave} attack.

50%, 30%, 10%!

Under the ridiculous onslaught from the Mythical-grade boss, Krishan had no other choice but to die in tragedy.

Shiik!

Gethelo pierced through Krishan's chest with brute force, and then he pulled his trident back out from Krishan's chest and gave another horizontal strike on Krishan's chest, tearing flesh out from the already gaping wound! Fresh blood was oozing out from the cuts on the body!

"No---" Krishan let out a pathetic cry while puking blood as he choked on his own blood. Then he collapsed onto the ground unwillingly and died.

Pak, a silver-white piece of metal dropped from Krishan's dead body. Other than that, the boss did not drop anything else.

Zhang Yang reached out for the silver-white metal piece and picked it up, and immediately, he received a system notification.

'Ding! You have obtained an item: [Key of the Void Fragment 2]!'

Zhang Yang had no other choice, because during the final battle with the boss, Zhang Yang was just poking around like a small little bee, the outcome would be the same with or without him around! The system was already very generous for giving him the fragment of the key he was looking for.

So now, he would just have to wait to see what kind of reward he would

receive after completing this quest!

Meryl and Gethelo had finally reunited, the scene of a daughter reuniting with her father was presented in front of Zhang Yang. Of course, they were exchanging their sweet nothings to each other as warm tears dripped down their cheeks.

After a long while, Gethelo had finally turned his attention towards Zhang Yang, and he thanked Zhang Yang, "Warrior, you have saved my daughter from harm, now I am in great debt with you."

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Buying Time, acquired 10,000,000 experience points!’

Zhang Yang was touched by the moment when they had finally realized that he was still there, even after their most melodramatic reunion.

He said, "Curbing the violent and assisting the weak is just my duty, nothing else!"

Gethelo nodded and said, "The Merfolks will forever be your friends! Farewell, my friend!"

Are they trying to toy with him? Zhang Yang was just pretending to be modest in front of them and they did not give him anything in return! It would still be reasonable if they didn't give him some legendary weapon, but at least they could have provide him something good!

What kind of stingy quest is this! Only one fragment of the [Key of the Void]!

It was still fortunate that the experience points earned from the quest was really abundant, which elevated Zhang Yang by 1 level! At least it was worth his time after all!

"Zhan Yu ---" the status of Meryl had been elevated by three grades after she had reunited with Gethelo. Now that she had become the ‘Princess of the Merfolks’, her grade had been elevated to Violet-Platinum grade, and she had inherited all the spells of Gethelo as well. With just a gentle flick of her fish tail, all the water droplets on her tails were gone, and her tail transformed into a pair of long legs.

She walked up to Zhang Yang and bowed to him, and then she thanked him, "Thank you so much for everything you have done for me!"

Since he had already pretended to be modest, let's proceed with it! Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Meryl, I shall miss you!"

Meryl instantly blushed and she smiled, her face was as red as a tomato. She took out a little turtle of a size of a palm out of nowhere and gave it to Zhang Yang, "This is a present that my father gave to me, I have decided that you should have it instead! So whenever you see this little turtle, you will think of me!"

After that, she walked away with a crimson face and leaped into the water of the lake.

'Ding! You have acquired a new [Battle Mount: Mythical Turtle]!'

Gethelo had a funny look as he witnessed his daughter handing the turtle over, and after staring at it for a while, he too, leaped into the lake. A few seconds later, the father and daughter appeared hundreds of meters away from the shore, riding a wave, leaving Zhang Yang behind.

From afar, Zhang Yang could vaguely see the image of the princess of Merfolks, Meryl blushing in front of him.

He could not help but smile, and then he brought up the attributes of the [Mythical Turtle] to have a look.

[Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Right in the middle of Zhang Yang's backpack, a [Lease of the Mythical Turtle] automatically appeared and occupied one slot of the backpack.

[Lease of the Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unleash a [Mythical Turtle] that can be mounted on into battle. Movement speed of the [Mythical Turtle] will be reduced by 90% when on land. However, underwater movement speed of the [Mythical Turtle] will increase by 300%, and you will be able to breathe

underwater. If you die while mounting the [Mythical Turtle], you can only summon the [Mythical Turtle] again 10 minutes after death. You can only summon one [Battle Mount] at a time. Summon time: 2 seconds.

Required Level: 30

Bound upon pick up.

A Violet-Platinum grade, underwater [Battle Mount]! Awesome! No wonder Gethelo looked like he was having a constipation when Meryl handed the [Mythical Turtle] over to him. It was a priceless gift meant for his daughter afterall!

Zhang Yang could not help but smile like an idiot, because he just earned something very useful for future usage!

Chapter 339: Mythical Turtle

Because the [Mythical Turtle] was current at Level 0, it could only appear in the form of a small little pet. It was fortunate that this [Mythical Turtle] could be summoned out together with Whitey. Zhang Yang quickly tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to the White Jade Castle, and he picked a spot where there was a large number of monsters and began to train the [Mythical Turtle].

It was fairly easy to level a pet up, in addition to the fact that Zhang Yang was currently engaged with monsters that were Level 70 and above, so the [Mythical Turtle] received an enormous amount of experience points. In just a short while, the little fellow had already leveled up to Level 30, and was immediately upgraded to [Battle Mount] status. With Whitey as the higher level [Battle Mount], the [Mythical Turtle] was automatically unsummoned back into the backpack.

So when Zhang Yang attempted to summon the [Mythical Turtle] out, Whitey was replaced by the presence of the [Mythical Turtle] and was banished into the backpack instead.

Level 30 [Mythical Turtle] had already grown larger than the size of a mature turtle, with a thick and solid turtle shell just like a millstone, covered with blocks of mysterious patterns of lines. It looked very mystical.

[Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Level: 30

HP: 18,930 (with vitality aura)

Focus points: 100/100

Defense: 1,140

Attack: 2,890 - 3,290 (Attack interval: 3 seconds, Damage per Second: 1,030)

Skill 1: [Shared Life] (Passive) : Combine the health points of the owner and the pet together.

Skill 2: [Turtle Shell Defense]: reduce damage received by 90% for the owner and itself, last for 10 seconds. Consumption: 20 focus points. Cool down: 10 minutes.

Zhang Yang was very satisfied, this meant that he had acquired another life-saving skill!

A Violet-Platinum [Battle Mount] is really powerful! Compared to his current [Battle Mount], a level 75 Yellow-Gold which only had a total of 19,800 health points, and an attack range from 4,212 - 4,612, the Turtle definitely did not lose out.

Of course, the [Gold-Eared Bear King] had also learned a skill {Iron Build}, increasing 30% of the health point cap, and with the addition of the 16% increase from (Vitality Aura), it's attributes still surpassed the Turtle.

However, the movement speed of this [Mythical Turtle] was a huge minus. It was slow! It would take half a day just to move a few steps! The kind of leisurely momentum the turtle had would really give hot-headed people brain cancer! It was fortunate that Zhang Yang had the skill {Pet Taming}, so he need not necessarily mount himself onto his [Battle Mount], he can just let the [Mythical Turtle] take it's own sweet time crawling slowly at the side while he went on to kite the monsters over to the [Mythical Turtle] and let it begin it's killing streak!

In the following days, Zhang Yang spent most of his time and efforts on leveling up [Mythical Turtle], he was now halted by his level when it came to getting the next piece - [Dimensional Key Fragment 4]. He had nothing better to do at the moment. Furthermore, the 7 fragments of [Dimensional Key] had to be together for them to function. So even if he really acquired the 3 pieces of fragment within the Level 80 dungeon map, he would still have to get the final piece in the map of Level 90 dungeon!

His current objective was to level up as much as possible!

On the 5th of February, Zhang Yang and his 'Silky Soft Team' had took part in another match of the Professional League Championship. This time, their opponent were the Angel Wings who they had engaged before during the Soaring Sword Competition, and they had named themselves as

the 'Tengfei Technology Team' for the current competition.

This time, the match was a devastating blow to the opposition party, Zhang Yang's party won the match by scoring a 5:0, and they had accumulated 2 more points, placing themselves ahead of other parties with a total tally of 8 points!

And on the next day, Fatty Han and his 'Huatian Team' managed to proceed into their second match of the competition, and they scored 5:4, narrowly keeping a positive revenue of points!

On the 10th of February, Zhang Yang and his 'Silky Soft Party' once again scored 5:1 and secured their victory over the 'Millennium Team' of The Glory, solidifying their first place on the list of points accumulated.

On 13th of February, Zhang Yang had not only leveled up his [Mythical Turtle] to Level 75, he had also managed to level up himself to Level 77!

[Mythical Turtle] (Violet-Platinum Battle Mount)

Level: 75

HP: 38,280 (with Vitality Aura)

Defense: 2,100

Attack: 6,271 - 7,071 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 2,224)

Those attribute points had left Zhang Yang speechless and drooling at the same time! It totally left Zhang Yang's own defense and health points behind! Compared to the regular attack - 2,038 - 2,238 of Zhang Yang, the attack of the [Mythical Turtle] was much more intimidating and terrifying. If it's attack interval can be shortened down any further, it would become a nightmare!

By reaching Level 50, the [Mythical Turtle] had also learned a new skill.

[Tear]: inflicts 120% physical damage to target. Consumption: 50 focus points.

If the [Mythical Turtle] was not so slow on land, Zhang Yang would definitely use the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll] to 'cut' the {Icy Built} and {Iron Build} from Whitey and transfer the two skills over to [Mythical

Turtle] without any hesitation!

Unfortunately, he would have to use the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll] when he obtains a stronger [Battle Mount] or pet!

This year, the 14th of February was a little special, it was not just a regular Valentine's Day but also China's most celebrated traditional festival --- Chinese New Year!

As Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had basically cut ties with their relatives, they had no one else to celebrate a reunion dinner with. On the other hand, Zhang Yang had been alone for more than 10 years, so when three of them were coincidentally gathered together, they decided to make themselves a reunion dinner. Unexpectedly, Sun Xin Yu did not travel back to her hometown to celebrate Chinese New Year with her family --- one thing was for sure, Zhang Yang knew that she is not from Zhou Su City.

So, on the 14th of February, with Valentine's Day and Chinese New Year stacked together on the same day, all four of them were seated around a table, having their dinner together.

Zhang Yang managed to cook a few dishes and placed them on the table, and the four of them had some red wine as they had some light conversation. As they had been through a lot of bad experiences year after year, they seemed to have forgotten their hardships for the moment, as they spent the entire night together.

That night, they did not log into the game, but stayed up playing some board games till 5 am, before they retired to their rooms, yawning. Of course, they wore their game helmet and logged into the game, as they could play in their sleep.

The moment they logged into the game, they received waves of wishes from the players in the entire server, it was a merry atmosphere.

As Chinese New Year had arrived, everyone was filled with joy. However, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er remained down, even if they momentarily forgot their troubles in the heat of the celebration. The deficit of the Silky Soft Holding was far worse than they could imagine, although they had sold a number of companies and parts of their holdings, they still could

not cover up all of the 'holes' that had cropped up from the damage caused by the internal sabotage!

Silky Soft still had most of its integrity up in view of the public, but banks simply refused to offer them any loans, having had their reputation tarnished to that extent. They might have to wrap up at that rate!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er wracked their brains until they gazed upon a bypassing Zhang Yang. Perhaps he could stabilize their situation after all.

It was safe to say that Zhang Yang had nothing but money!

The Little Merchandise Shop, the Territory, and now a mining cave! The total earnings from managing all these had given him a total of 700 millions in earning! Zhang Yang, being the free-spirited, simple man, was never aware of his own exact net worth, but only knew that he had money. When he did check on it however, he had to pinch his face to make sure that it was not a dream, and that his eyes were not playing tricks on him!

Silky Soft Holdings could be said to be a centipede, because an idiom says that a centipede dies but never falls down¹, as long as the company survives the hardships, then it could definitely rise back up from the ashes and reborn! Zhang Yang had always had high hopes on Silky Soft Holdings, and since his money was idly resting in his bank account, why shouldn't he take it out and put it to use? He had a territory, and his Little Merchandise, and also other ways to earn money, so he would always have a stable income!

However, his money was not enough to revive the company just yet, because there was still a deficit of 300 million in cash! Now that Zhang Yang recalled, there was a person called Li Ru, and the woman is a rich person. However, he had never thought that Li Ru would immediately agree to help right after she heard about Zhang Yang's request! It left Zhang Yang with mixed feelings, and he was definitely shocked by her instant decision! If he was being untruthful, Li Ru would have been cheated a total of 300 millions! How would she be willing to risk parting with such a sum?!

Li Ru's company could not give 300 millions directly to Silky Soft Holdings, but she had loaned the money from the bank and succeeded on getting 300 million for Silky Soft Holdings.

On the 19th of February, Silky Soft Holdings had released a new announcement on the news report, announcing the two new shareholders: Zhang Yang occupied 21% of the shares while Li Ru occupied 10% of the shares, putting in a successful investment of 1 billion, solving all the problems that Silky Soft Holdings was facing.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had finally gotten rid of their problems, but Zhang Yang had gained tons of new problems!

Because, under the recommendation and support of the two pretty ladies, Zhang Yang was forced to take up the position of a CEO in the company!

He frowned with sweat all over his head and said, "I don't know anything about economy or finance, let alone on how to be a CEO!"

Han Ying Xue threw a flirtatious wink at him and smiled, "It's very simple to be a CEO, you just have to know how to sign. Pick up a pen, and write your name down! Like what the wisemen say, the secretary will handle things for you, and if there's nothing to handle, then you just 'handle' the secretary. A most favorable position for men like you!"

Zhang Yang flipped his eye balls backward and said, "What do you mean, men like me? If it's so simple, why don't one of go be CEO?"

"Little Snow needs to go to school, and as for me... My purpose is to spend money, not earn them!" Han Ying Xue stated.

Although Zhang Yang was still trying to reject the arrangement, it was 3 against 1, in favor of Zhang Yang becoming CEO. And that was it, Zhang Yang found himself as CEO of Silky Soft Holdings. He had been played by the devilish ladies! On the 20th of February, Zhang Yang was officially the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings.

Donning a suit, complete with a tie, Zhang Yang walked right into the company with an appearance of a human but the mannerisms of a goofy

dog. Whether he was in the elevator or on his way to his office, every employee was greeting him by 'Mr.Zhang', making him very uneasy.

Alright, a man should make a good career sooner or later, and countless people in this world would be envious of the position he is in right now! Zhang Yang comforted himself and continued to walk towards his new office.

After entering the office of CEO, he shut the door tight and took out his game helmet, and he began to play the game from there.

As he was so near to reaching Level 78 currently, he went on to grind for experience points for the entire day, and through his efforts, he was elevated up to level 78 by the end of the day.

On the 24th of February, the S-Rank and A-Rank matches of the Professional League Championship that were postponed due to the celebration of Chinese New Year were finally resumed. Meanwhile, the D-Rank matches of the championship had not acquired a fixed schedule or battle chart for them to compete against each other yet. So if they wished to take part, they could just let the system decide their opponent based on their rate of victory to accumulate points and increase their rate of victory in the championship. Even during the Chinese New Year period, a number of teams had already met the criteria for accumulated points and the rate of victory, and succeeded to be eligible to take part in the C-Rank championship.

When B-Rank championship matches begin, the Professional League Championship of the {{God's Miracle}} shall become a competition fully based on the fixed system.

On the second day of Zhang Yang joining the Silky Soft Holdings as the CEO, he received a call from Fatty Han saying that his old apartment was on fire last night, and everything in his apartment was lost! Fortunately, everyone in the same floor of the apartment was able to escape in time, and no one was killed during the incident!

The cause on how the fire started still remained unknown, the police were still investigating the source of the fire. However, two suspects

instantly came into Zhang Yang's mind.

Number one, naturally it would be Liu Wei! That fellow had already being humiliated by Zhang Yang multiple times, and knowing his vengeful personality, he would most probably take his revenge whenever he see fit!

Number two, it might be the fish that got away last time during the Mr.Luo incident, Liu Shu Yan! He had foiled her plans, and this was probably a warning from her!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. A centipede dies but never falls down - old institutions die hard

Chapter 340: The Flying Dutchman

Zhang Yang dwelled in his sea of thoughts. In the end, he felt that Liu Shu Yan was the main suspect. If Liu Wei ever wanted to act, he would have already done so before he entered Silky Soft Holdings. Since it all happened after he had become the C.E.O, perhaps Liu Shu Yan's prime reason in doing so was due to the hatred and the intention to seek revenge on Zhang Yang.

With that thought in mind, Zhang Yang went back and shared his thoughts with everyone, which put everyone on edge, especially Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. They asked Zhang Yang to protect them even more.

Fatty Han took the opportunity to talk to his own gang members. That guy knew everyone in the local community and had even had many underlings. With their help, Fatty Han could investigate the location of Liu Shu Yan. Zhang Yang had mentioned before, that the people with Fatty Han were mostly street thugs. They are not police. They will not follow the legal procedures. They had their own protocols, which was to beat first, and question later. Zhang Yang felt no guilt in doing so, since the woman was never a good person.

However, ever since Liu Shu Yan had left the police station, no one had ever heard from her again. Fatty Han had been sending out his thugs to search for the woman but to no avail. Not even a trace of her shadow could be found in the city. Even though Zhou Su City was not a big place, it still had at least 6 million to 7 million doors to knock on and houses to ransack. And that was on the impression that Liu Shu Yan was not hiding on purpose. If she did try to get off grid, it would only make things worse for Fatty Han to search for her. It would be like searching for a grain of sand in the middle of the beach!

Imagine a venomous snake is hiding somewhere that you cannot see, and then imagine the possibility of getting bitten by it at any moment, and there was nothing you could do to prevent it. That sort of feeling is extremely uncomfortable. Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er had spent some time to discuss about the matter. They even

considered moving to another house. However, before they could reach to a final decision, the little brat had told Sun Xin Yu about their plans and had invited the unsuppressed wrath of the policewoman.

...

On the other side of things, Zhang Yang had spent half of his time in the office as the C.E.O of Han Ying Xue's company, Silky Soft Holdings. Even though his job was indeed as easy as signing papers like what Han Ying Xue had said, to give the work to a secretary, or to do the secretary when there is no work, Zhang Yang was not as sexually-deprived as Fatty Han. It was true that his job was easy, but he was constantly being harassed by the secretaries!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel that Wei Yan Er's late father was a playboy among playboys. He had actually hired six, sexy, booty-licious, badahoonkers, secretaries! Zhang Yang had to use those kinds of adjective to describe them, because they were all Victoria-secret level super models! What a perverted old man...

After Zhang Yang had taken over the C.E.O position, all of the female secretaries had approached him. One by one, they had used their skills to seduce Zhang Yang. In broad daylight, they would wear overly short pencil skirts and sexy garter belts. Each time they entered Zhang Yang's room, they would drop something on the floor to make a move. They would make sure to moan obscenely to draw Zhang Yang's attention and bend down while sticking out their chest to display their deep cleavages. Either that, or they would bend over to let Zhang Yang see their butts. Zhang Yang could swear that some of them did not even have anything beneath their clothes!

Still, being a man, and not a hypocrite, Zhang Yang took the liberty to enjoy the "view". Whenever the girls came up to him and offered him a show to remember, Zhang Yang would just sit back and relax while the girls did their things. However, things had escalated to a point where the girls would deliver him a cup of coffee a few times a day. The unwanted coffee was one thing, the main problem was the fact that they would "accidentally" drop the coffee and spill some of it onto his shirt, giving

them the excuses to make physical contact. Physical contact, meaning, overly sexual rubbing and borderline molestation.

There was even one time where one of the secretaries had spilled the coffee on Zhang Yang's pants. Without even acknowledging it, the girl had bent down, like a hungry wolf, and made her way down to his zippers, and was that close to greeting little Zhang Yang. That crossed the line for Zhang Yang, which led him to publicly have the secretary fired on the spot. With that, the rest of the female secretary were silently warned. Since then, their behavior had changed a 180 degree. From the slutty, sexy girls who would gladly hop on his cock at his command, to smart, casual, serious with work secretaries. They had even dressed decently for a change and were sure to hide every part of their body.

Eventually, after a very short period of time, they had found out that Zhang Yang did enjoy the occasional display of "affection", as long as it did not go over the line. After that, they reverted back to their revealing outfits and came back to being the secretaries who would moan as they bent over, displaying their fronts and their rears. The only thing that had changed in his office was that, he had to get his own coffee.

After work, Zhang Yang would come back to the game and continued his quest to search for the lost Dimensional Key Fragments. Back at the Great Lake Valla, he had ignored all other quests and had only one focus in his mind. Originally, he did not plan to grind in this map since the entire place was practically water. Before a player could get their hands on a flying mount, their movement speed will be greatly affected. However, now that he had Mythical Turtle, things had turned out to be better! Since players had chosen to flock to the other five land-based training grounds, no one else was in Great Lake Valla, thus, Zhang Yang was able to grind to his heart's content, without anyone disturbing him.

Zhang Yang arrived at the lake side and summoned the Mythical Turtle to his side. The Gold-Eared Bear King morphed into an orb of golden light and shot back into his inventory. Zhang Yang hopped onto the turtle's back and commanded it to move towards the lake. The problem with turtle was its moving speed. It moved at an incredibly slow speed to the

water, lumbering on its flippers.

Seeing that he was literally moving at a snail pace, Zhang Yang remembered a joke. A snail had fallen sick and had asked a turtle to buy some medicine from the pharmacy on the opposite road. After two hours of long waiting, the turtle had not returned. Puffing with anger, the snail had bellowed angrily and said, "What is taking that turtle so long?!" Just as the snail had done letting out his frustration, the voice of the turtle could be heard from the outside the door. "Complain again and you'll walk over there yourself!"

Zhang Yang chuckled by himself. Just when the turtle had touched the surface of the water, there was an immediately change in speed. Like a train, the turtle suddenly sped up and he found himself practically flying in the water!

Hmph! Good speed!

The movement speed of the Mythical Turtle was so fast that it trumped the movement speed of the white bear! Furthermore, as expected of a Violet-Platinum tier mount, after diving into the water, a huge air bubble formed around the turtle's back and protected Zhang Yang from the water. The main purpose of him being deep in the water, other than to grind, was to search for the water-specific herb called [Devil's Algae]. This herb could only be found around or in an underwater environment. Any small river or pond would have it, albeit an incredibly low spawn rate. Still, the sheer size of this massive lake accounted for that scarcity! Zhang Yang wanted to collect the [Devil's Algae] to craft [Level 4 Strength Potion]. As the herb was currently not available in the market, he had to harvest them on his own.

'Ding! You have used Collect on [Devil's Algae]!'

'Ding! You have obtained [Devil's Algae] x3!'

It was a pity. His Herbalism has reached to the level of Specialist. Collecting herbs in level 90 maps or lower would not increase the profession's mastery level. The herb - [Devil's Algae] was not especially rare, thus the monsters around the herbs were not too strong. It was just a

normal tiered monster, Marching Crab that required only three to five hits to kill.

Zhang Yang took his slow sweet time collecting herbs, and killing monsters. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Yang had already collected close to one stack of [Devil's Algae]. There was a sudden bleep in his mini-map. Zhang Yang did not take notice of it, since it was probably just another indicator of a [Devil's Algae]. However, it did not take long before Zhang Yang saw that something was wrong with it. The bleep was moving.

Could it be that the Devil's Algae had gain consciousness and had decided to swim away?

Zhang Yang was extremely intrigued. He then patted the Mythical Turtle and swam towards the bleep. With haste, the turtle arrived at the source of the blinking light. Zhang Yang could not keep a straight face when he saw what was presented to him. It was a huge sailing...NO! Swimming ship! Zhang Yang was close to a hundred meters below sea level and the ship was fully submerged!

The ship was at least 200 meters long. The sails of the ship was still intact and was guiding the massive and grand ship like a huge dragon, swimming majestically under the water. Hanging on top of a rotting old center mass of the ship was a flag with a human skull. Written on the lower side of the flag were the words "The Flying Dutchman". On top of the ship were many types of wild moss and weeding, and a large portion of them were [Devil's Algae]. No wonder the bleeps in the mini-map could move! Zhang Yang was grateful for this lucky find. The ship was moving at an extremely slow speed, probably the same as the speed of the turtle when it was walking on land. The size made it look majestic, despite the moving speed. Zhang Yang swam alongside ship to have a good look at it.

After thinking thoroughly, Zhang Yang had realized that the name Flying Dutchman was the name of the legendary ghost ship! According to the folklore, the ship once belonged to a group pf infamous pirates. They had robbed and plundered a number of treasure! On one fateful day, during one of their usual robbing routine, they had encountered a powerful magician. Even though the pirates managed to kill the magician,

they had been cursed by him. As a result, no one heard from them for long. Many had spread the word that the crew members had perished with the ship. In truth, the ship was not destroyed. It merely had been turned into a submarine! That was why no one ever heard from them.

From a distance, Zhang Yang noticed that there were a few skeletons patrolling on the ship. Some of them were cleaning, while some were standing on the observatory platform, looking into the telescope. It appeared that none of them had realized that they had already died, and had continued moving and behaving as if they were alive.

Just then, Zhang Yang realized something. Pirates robbed others of their wealth. Now that they had sunk into the water...there should be treasure on the ship!

Greatly motivated, Zhang Yang patted the turtle and swam towards the ship like a torpedo. This is a chance that should not be missed. The Flying Dutchman had an entire massive body of water to roam about! If he misses this chance, he could take another long month to search for it!

Once the turtle was alongside of the ship, Zhang Yang immediately dismounted and hopped onto the ship. Two skeletal crew members noticed the intruder and immediately drew swords from their sides and growled at Zhang Yang.

[Flying Dutchman Crew Member] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 77

HP: 77,000

Defense: 400

‘-6,284!’

The Mythical Turtle snapped its beak and dealt heavy damage on one of the skeletons. At the same time, {Tear} was activated, dealing another 7,620 damage to the same monster. In an instant, a total of 14,000 damage was dealt! This kind of damage can only be dealt by strong entities! As expected of the Violet-Platinum mount! What a monster!

Feeling extremely lucky to own the mount, Zhang Yang started his own attack on the incoming skeleton.

‘-1,840!’

Even though Zhang Yang was supposed to be ultra-strong, his attack was only a pea shooter compared to the attack of his own pet! After a short skirmish, Zhang Yang had wasted close to 20,000 HP to kill both of the elite tier monster. Zhang Yang took a short amount of time to fully recover, using [Bandages].

Onboard the ship were 10 and more skeletal monsters. Zhang Yang drew their attention with {Spear of Obliteration} and killed them one by one. After clearing every monster he could see, Zhang Yang tried to find his way into the ship’s interior. The problem was that the cabin of the ship was sealed shut. If he wants to get inside, he would have to find another way in. Zhang Yang searched all over the ship’s rear and gave up, after he could not find any entry points.

He then mounted the turtle and swam towards the bow of the ship. Along the way, he had killed another 10 and more crew members before arriving to the ship’s front. At the frontmost of the ship, there was a huge man, wearing the ship captain’s hat, steering the ship. The man was shouting commands like, "Man the bridge!" or "Raise the sail!".

[Captain Mordor] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 78

HP: 780,000

Defense: 800

The boss was obviously one tier higher than the normal monster. Having a perfect body with no decaying muscles, the only part that made it non-human were the glowing, emerald green flaming eyes!

Chapter 341: Floating Clouds Guild

Zhang Yang did not rush into the battle with the boss first. Instead, he spent some time to clear out the other monsters, using {Spear of Obliteration} and killing them one at a time. Zhang Yang was not stupid enough to rush into the herd and fight them all once like he usually does. These monsters were all elite tiered. If he rushes in crazily, he would probably be in trouble.

With Mordor standing there, minding his own business, Zhang Yang successfully killed all the monsters without triggering the boss fight. It took him a brief 10 minutes before the boss was the only target left for Zhang Yang to kill. He was still, in fact, shouting commands, as if there were still crew members around to listen to him. Now that everything was ready, it was time for the boss.

Zhang Yang patted the turtle and charged towards Mordor at an amazing speed.

"HM!? Land breather!?" cried Mordor as Zhang Yang entered his range. The boss shifted his hat to one side, drew his curved saber and bellowed. "Lo an' behold, mateys! 'tis time t' shed some blood!"

With no monsters around, Mordor's command was for naught. After a few seconds of unresponsiveness, Mordor turn around and frowned when he noticed there were no one around to assist him. Mordor leaped forward to slice at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang intercepted the attack with a {Block} and counterattacked immediately. Compared to Zhang Yang's sword attacks, the Mythical Turtle attacks were much higher than Zhang Yang, and were actually causing significant damage to Mordor!

"Curse ye! I'll slice off yer hands 'n feet fer me fishes!" bellowed Mordor with rage as he swung his sword, cutting through the water and striking Zhang Yang's armor with such force that sparks started flying underwater!

Zhang Yang laughed and provoked him more. "You can try!"

"Yer be a small fighter! Ye dare to be spouting nonsense in presence of the great Mordor! I 'ave scuttled more scallywags than ye have eat'n

hardtack!" It seemed that Mordor had the mouth to keep up with witty chatterboxes like Zhang Yang!

Out of the blue, the boss thrust his hands out. Right then, the muscles and skin on his hands immediately rotted away, leaving a clean, "meat-less" boney hand, and touched Zhang Yang!

‘Ding! You have received the effect of {Decaying Touch}! Defense has been decreased by 100 points! Lasts for 30 seconds!’

Soon after, a second strike came again, causing {Decaying Touch} to gain another stack, decreasing Zhang Yang’s Defense by 200! The problem with this skill was that unlike {Cripple Defense}, {Decaying Touch} could be stacked by more than 5 times! In just half a minute, Zhang Yang had completely lost all his Defense!

‘-4,572!’

The boss’ damage gradually increased as Zhang Yang’s defense decreased. Each strike dealt at least 4,500 damage! His DPS was decreased to at least 1,500!

"Ar! Ar! Ar! Ye be impressed! Now ye know how strong Mordor be!" Mordor scoffed through his panting breath as he continued slicing at Zhang Yang with all his might. "Witness the power of Mordor! Water Dragon Rush!"

Shoom! Shoom!

Two tornado-like whirlpools were formed by the swing of the boss and headed towards Zhang Yang. Each whirlpool was the size of a regular human and was at least 3 meters long.

Although Zhang Yang did not know what was the skill about, he knew it was not something that he should touch. Zhang Yang quickly maneuvered the turtle away to safety and attacked the boss from another angle. Since the whirlpools’ movement speed were slow, Zhang Yang was not worried about it since they were fairly easy to avoid.

Mordor continued trading blows with Zhang Yang and conjured two more whirlpools. Slowly, the numbers rose. All of the summoned

whirlpool moved slowly, and were heading towards the boss's direction. Zhang Yang quickly moved away. Right now, he wanted to kite the boss away from the whirlpools. Although he succeeded in kiting the boss away to a safe location, the whirlpools followed. As if they were conscious, they followed the boss and headed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang frowned, but it was not a huge problem for him. Zhang Yang then kited the boss all the way from the front of the ship to the rear! Luckily, the boss had only 780,000 HP. Since Zhang Yang and the turtle were combined, their DPS had reached to 6,000! He only needed 2 minutes or so to kill the boss off! Zhang Yang used one count of {Shield Wall}, {Turtle Shell Defense}, {Berserker's Heal}, a bottle of {Level 4 Healing Potion}, a bottle of {Fountain of Life}, and the set effect of the set equipment, to kill the boss without any hitch.

Once Mordor was killed, Zhang Yang had lowered his guard and had recklessly got caught in the whirlpool. He was then sent spinning out of control for 10 seconds before he was able to escape the whirlpools. If he had been caught in them during the battle with the boss, it would have definitely spelled a certain doom for him. Zhang Yang realized his mistake and patted the turtle to speed towards the battle loots.

Mordor's drops were fairly average. Zhang Yang picked up three counts of Gray-Silver equipment and seven Green-Copper equipment. However, he was slightly lucky. One of the Gray-Silver drop was the equipment fragment of the [Fireglass Necklace]. These few days, Zhang Yang had amassed a total of three [Fireglass Necklace] fragments. He had also obtained one fragment from the auction house. Right now, he had gained the final piece and was ready to forge the complete necklace!

Now that he thought of it, he was almost Level 80 before finally managing to forge a Level 70 Assembled Equipment. No one could predict that a Level 80 boss would directly drop a Level 80 Violet-Platinum or Yellow-Gold necklace for him. If that was the case, this [Fireglass Necklace] would be for naught.

It could not be helped. Assembled Weapons were mainly created to sort of compensate the extreme rarity of high tiered weapons and equipment.

If Assembled Equipment were easily obtained, it would completely throw the game off balance, and cause the mass majority of player to seek out Assembled Equipment instead of actual equipment. At this current rate, even players would have the same chance to obtain strong equipment without burning a hole in their pocket, or wait too long before they could obtain one! This balance was to allow a proper scale of power between lower-level players and higher-level players! Everything was set to be balanced!

Zhang Yang kept all the battle loots and was heading to the internal cabin when he noticed something from afar. A group of nine players were heading towards his direction. Zhang Yang was baffled. The map was extremely huge to begin with, allowing players to choose a variety of areas to grind their level. Since that was the case, the players heading towards Zhang Yang were not here to train. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was currently located deep within the lake. Like HP and MP, when a player dives into water, they will have a "Breathing Gauge". Slowly and surely, the gauge will run out and if the player did not resurface to catch a breath, they will be drowned alive! Only those who possess Water Mounts like Zhang Yang could dive deep into the lake to grind.

Now that everything was established, the players did not possess any mounts and were swimming by themselves! Obviously, their main target was the ship! The Flying Dutchman!

The ship was moving slower than a snail could crawl, but it was always constantly moving. Plus, it will always remain underwater! Without guidance from a certain quest, Zhang Yang truly believed that the players would never spend their free time swimming underwater just to search for this ship! Although the movement speed of the players underwater was slow, the ship was even slower. Without much effort, the nine players had arrived the ship's rear. Now that they had arrived, Zhang Yang checked their profiles.

Everyone had the same guild tag "Floating Clouds". Based on their equipment set, he could distinguish that one of them was Guardian, two Hunters, two Thieves, and the four remaining players were Cloth Armor

wearers. All of them had the buff "Underwater Breathing", most probably gained by consuming a potion.

Among the nine players, the highest-leveled player there was the person named Wind Up 30 Feet. The lowest level player was Branda Nights at Level 70. Everyone of them noticed Zhang Yang and started raised their guards.

One of them, the Guardian named Snow.Wolf.Lake (with the dots)¹ approached Zhang Yang and said politely, "Excuse my sir. Could you please shift your business here to some place else? This ship belongs to the Floating Clouds guild!"

It was a polite, civil request. However, beneath it, there was an intangible sense of unmeasurable pride and arrogance. Zhang Yang could deal with that. Even if the player was genuinely courteous, Zhang Yang had no intention of surrendering the place to them! In his previous life, he had picked up news that the Flying Dutchman's boss, Van der Waals – Dunkirk, would drop treasure maps! These maps will lead players to a treasure that rewards them with extremely rare and powerful equipment, or even skill books!

However, there were limits. The fourth kill of Dunkirk would not drop any [Treasure Maps]. As per usual, the first kill would have the big drop, the [Treasure Maps] dropped would surely lead to the best of the best items! After all, they were pirates, and they did steal from the best. Still, they had limited lifespans and they could only steal so much in their lifetimes. It was not like the treasure they had amassed could provide for all players in this game.

Zhang Yang could swear that the current boss right now has not yet been killed even once! That would mean the kill that he was about execute would drop the jumbo loot! With a bonus, the [Treasure Map] that the boss will drop later will be the best of the best! That was why Zhang Yang would not surrender the ship to them, for a single, polite sentence. Especially when they were wearing the same expression that practically saying "You should consider yourself lucky that we did not kill you on sight!"

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and revealed his own profile information. He was never a man who favored a fair fight. If his title would scare the nine players away, it would be for the best since he would not want to be accused of being a bully or something.

"Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of Snow Sprite City, Warrior of Centaur, Hero of White Jade Castle, Level 78, Male Human, Guardian, [Lone Desert Smoke]."

The sudden, long title that appeared on his head had clearly scared and blinded the nine players from Floating Clouds.

"H-H-He is Zhan Yu!"

"The leader of the champions of the Soaring Swords Competition! The MVP!"

"The guild master of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"The only guild in China that has two battle teams participating in S – class Professional League!"

Everyone chanted their discovery, and some of them were clearly showing fear. There was a saying, people lived and left the world with their name. Zhang Yang was now, the man greatly feared by almost everyone in the entirety of China!

Snow.Wolf.Lake, assumed to be the party leader of the group of nine, had looked at Zhang Yang and said, "So what if he was Zhan Yu?! He is just one man! And there are nine of us! What are we afraid of?! If we tuck our tails and run away, the name Floating Clouds will forever be tarnished!"

"Right now, we are underwater. We are all slow. He is slow! We have so many ranged attackers! Surely we can kite him to death!" said one Hunter named Heartless Aqua Luna.

Wind Up 30 Feet nodded in agreement. "If we kill him, it will be a massive boost to our guild's name! Also, when he won the Soaring Sword Competition, he won two Violet-Platinum equipment! Perhaps, we could get that off him..."

"That would be a huge bonus!" said everyone with a sudden glint of greed in their eyes.

At the current stage of the game, Gray-Silver tier equipment were the bread and butter for all of the players around. Every piece of equipment could be sold for as cheaply as a few hundred gold coins to a thousand gold coins based on their bonus attributes and effect. Weapons were usually expensive. Even though Yellow-Gold were fairly common now days, those who were wearing Yellow-Gold equipment were part of large guilds. Even then, only the higher officers of the guild had the privilege to put on Yellow-Gold equipment!

Obviously, Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop was a major provider of those equipment, and they were categorized to that of the prices of cars and houses!

Yellow-Gold equipment that turned up in the open market were mostly forged by farming Assembled Equipment fragments which were hunted from Gray-Silver boss! Those were sold up to 10,000 to even 100,000 gold coins! Weapons, rings, and necklaces could go as far to even more than 100,000 gold coins!

Violet-Platinum equipment were literally priceless. You can never find them in the market. Across the entire China region, One Sword Stroke has one, while the rest of the Violet-Platinum equipment were in possession of Lone Desert Smoke!

If Yellow-Gold equipment were worth so much in the first place, what would a Violet-Platinum equipment go for?

1,000,000?! OR MORE!

Just like when Yellow-Gold equipment has made its first debut to the market, the first Violet-Platinum could fetch up to 1,000,000!

There was a reason why greed was among the seven deadly sins. Because of greed, these nine members of Floating Clouds would willingly fight Zhang Yang, not knowing that he would basically massacre them all without a flinch.

The intention to kill had already steeled in their will. Even if they lost, they will only lose a bit of experience points. They stood to gain a lot more from killing Zhang Yang.

All of them started to breath raggedly. Zhang Yang only needed to read their expression to know what they were thinking of. Zhang Yang sighed heavily. If they want a blood bath, so be it. He shall grant them a blood bath.

Shush!

Wind Up 30 Feet shot the first arrow and started the attack.

‘Ding! You’ve been attacked by the Snow.Wolf.Lake party. You have 10 minutes to return fire!’

With the system giving Zhang Yang the green light, all members of Floating Clouds (present at the field) had their name tags turned red.

Zhang Yang lightly hummed and the Mythical Turtle swam like a speeding bullet towards the Cloth Armor class players. Even though he was not sure which was the Priest or the Spellcaster, when the battle starts, the persons having a progress bar above their heads will display the spell names and he could easily differentiate which class was which.

Everyone knew that Zhang Yang had the multi target AoE skill {Horizontal Sweep}. That was why when Wind Up 30 Feet shot the first arrow, all of them had fanned out, not allowing Zhang Yang to catch them all at once.

As expected of the Mythical Turtle, at such an amazing speed, Zhang Yang had arrived at the nearest Spellcaster in just 2 to 3 seconds!

"How is he so fast!?"

Everyone was baffled. Was he using some sort of hacking program? How could he possess such insane speed underwater!?

‘-6,724!’

‘-8,242!’

The Mythical Turtle attacked once and used {Tear} and had dealt close

to 15,000 damage in an instant. That Spellcaster had only over than 13,000 HP. He was killed in such a speed that he was not able to use any evasive skill such as {Ice Frame} or {Apparate}!

Everything that had just happened, happened in a flash!

Whack! Wham! Bam!

All sort of attacks, spells, debuffs had landed on Zhang Yang. But at his current level of equipment, physical attack class equipped with Gray-Silver equipment would be lucky to deal over 1,000 damage on Zhang Yang. On the other hand, Spellcasters' attacks were strong. Their attacks could easily reach over 2,000!

After the barrage of attack, Zhang Yang only lost close to 10,000 HP. However, he was mounted on the Mythical Turtle, and with both of them sharing their HP bar, Zhang Yang had pushed his maximum HP to 85,900. With that amount of HP, he was technically far stronger than any elite tier monster around! That 10,000 damage that he had just received was nothing but a mosquito bite!

Immediately, Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Mobility Potion] and eliminated the debuff from {Blast Wave}. Zhang Yang controlled the Mythical Turtle and flew towards the other surviving Spellcaster!

Zhang Yang's current target was not as stupid. He knew that the attack from the Mythical Turtle was ridiculously strong. In defense, that Spellcaster activated {Ice Frame} without a second thought.

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Snow.Wolf.Lake: Snow.Wolf.Lake (Chinese: 雪狼湖) is Hong Kong's first modern musical. The title combines the Chinese name of the two main characters; "Wolf" 狼 in the title refers to the main male protagonist, and "Snow" 雪 refers to the main female protagonist. The "lake" 湖 refers to a plot related element.

Chapter 342: Crimson-Gold Crab

The Mythical Turtle mount, possessed by Zhang Yang had given him the highest advantage in underwater battle. Whichever target Zhang Yang chose, the turtle would swim towards his target like a homing missile! On the other hand, the poor enemy could never surpass Zhang Yang speed and could only use skills to evade and survive!

Zhang Yang had the natural athletic ability that was able to move behind his opponent during a battle! That was proven during the fight in the battle arena! Now that he had the Mythical Turtle with him, he was able to chase after two of the Thieves and one of the Guardians, not giving them any single chance to attack him!

Once the Spellcaster had activated {Ice Frame}, Zhang Yang had pulled the reins and had headed towards the last Spellcaster. They had a total of three Spellcaster and one Priest. When he had turned his target to the last Spellcaster, he too had activated {Ice Frame}. Zhang Yang turned around and headed straight to the Priest. Knowing his power, Branda Nights drew in a deep breath, and opened his mouth, and activated {Terror Shriek}.

[Terror Shriek]: Causes fear to all targets within 2 meters, making them to turn around in fear. Lasts for 5 seconds. Cool Down Time: 1 minute.

Zhang Yang responded quickly with {Warrior's Will} and dispelled the effect on him.

Branda Nights was shocked and quickly cast a {Holy Shield} on himself. He knew that he would never beat Zhang Yang in a contest of speed. Since escape was not an option, might as well try to heal a little.

‘-2,726!’

‘-8,073!’

‘-8,874!’

The first attack was greatly diminished by the {Holy Shield}. Close to 4,000 damage was absorbed by shield. However, the next attack - {Tear} by Mythical Turtle and Zhang Yang's sure Critical strike - {Destructive

Smash} had landed cleanly without any reduction in damage. With their combined attack, they had emptied Branda Nights' 13,000 HP and had him immediately sent to the graveyard!

Two down, seven more to go!

The battle had only started for 5 seconds, and two members were already dead. The party had lost their composure. With the Priest killed, and the other two Spellcaster yet to "come" out of their {Ice Frames}!

Seeing them acting in hysterics, Zhang Yang laughed and shot towards Wind Up 30 Feet.

{Breaking Shot}!

Pak!

Zhang Yang was finally struck. The turtle stopped moving and Zhang Yang's character started to wander like a drunkard in the water.

"Make a move! Have him controlled!" screamed Snow.Wolf.Lake in the party channel. "Thieves! Get to them and have him stunned! Old fart, you first! Have him stunned for 10 seconds with {Ambush} and {Kidney Shot}! Wintermelon! Take turns with the old fart, and we could at least stun Zhan Yu for 40 seconds! I don't believe that we can't kill that guy in 40 seconds! Smokey! Gunner! Get out of your {Ice Frames} and hit him!"

Believing that they may have the chance to defeat Zhang Yang, every surviving member of the party regained their confidence. However, planning to have Zhang Yang killed and actually doing so is a whole other world of difficulty.

A player's movement speed was reduced during underwater movement. After a Thief enters stealth mode, their movement speed will be further reduced! Their speed was so slow that you would be wondering if you were watching a slow-mo video playback! Even though Zhang Yang was rendered immobile by {Breaking Shot} for 4 seconds, it was not enough for either Thieves to reach Zhang Yang! Even if the other Hunter, Heartless Aqua Luna could lengthen the {Dazed} duration by firing another {Breaking Shot}, it was not enough for them to reach Zhang Yang!

During that time, no one dared to attack Zhang Yang. The effect {Dazed} was just a temporarily state of immobility that could be easily dispelled by applying the slightest damage to the target! All of them were waiting for the Thieves to start their chain of stunning before they could attack for as long as 40 seconds!

Zhang Yang grinned. With a sudden twist of his body, Zhang Yang rushed towards the Spellcasters who were already out of their {Ice Frames}. Spellcaster were natural tank-killers. Zhang Yang had to destroy the two targets as his first priority before the others.

‘Apparate’!

Both of them blinked away and were able to move 10 meters away from Zhang Yang. However, even if they could evade the first charge, they could not do the same for the second rush. 10 meters of distance would only take the Mythical Turtle half a second to travel!

Pak! 3 down!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel extremely impressed with the Mythical Turtle during PvP. During traveling, the turtle would regain 50 Focus points, and would ensure that every attack on the enemy could include one normal attack and one activation of {Tear}! The accumulated attack damage would sum up to 15,000! Zhang Yang only needed to plant one more strike to kill most of all the non-tank player characters!

Speed kill! All Spellcaster had been killed without breaking a sweat! Now that his natural enemies had been dealt with, the rest should be an easy task. It took him less than a minute to completely wipe them all flat and send them to the graveyard. The two Thieves gave him the easier kills. Since the beginning, they never had the chance to attack Zhang Yang. Instead, Zhang Yang had managed to catch their movements before they could enter stealth and had cast {Horizontal Sweep}, killing them both with a normal attack and {Tear}.

When the storm hits, there is nothing that you can do!

After clearing the battle field, three of the nine players had dropped a total of three equipment. Zhang Yang helped himself and took them all.

Zhang Yang had given them the warning signs, but greed had clouded their judgement and had caused them to pay the price! Everyone would have to take responsibility of their actions!

Zhang Yang took his chance to enter the cabin. However, he did not rush into the hull. Instead, he waited on the inside. If the attackers revived and decide to leave, Zhang Yang would leave them in peace. But if they decide to make a comeback and ambush him while he was inside the cabin, Zhang Yang would be ready to launch a counterattack.

After a while, Zhang Yang saw them reviving. Disappointed in their next actions, Zhang Yang sighed. Humanity's greed is immeasurable! After reviving, they had recovered back to full health and were headed towards the cabin again! However, to the least of their expectations, they did not predict that Zhang Yang would be waiting for them at the entrance of the cabin!

Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Rage Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)] and activated {Horizontal Sweep} in a swift motion. The attack had caused everyone in the party to be in a disarray. Since they were all heading towards the entrance, they were all grouped together closely. Because of that, the Dark Enigmatic Sword had able to trigger its effect and had blasted them with two waves of 4,000+ damage. All of them had lost more than half of their maximum HP. Zhang Yang then cast a {Blast Wave} and stunned them all shortly. One by one, the turtle had been able to attack with quick snaps, killing them and dropping more of their equipment.

Zhang Yang then leaped into the group with the {Heroic Leap}, stunning them for a longer period. With this wave of attack, three Spellcaster had managed to save themselves by activating {Ice Frame}. However, it only bought them 10 seconds of additional time, and nothing else! In the realm of the underwater, the Mythical Turtle prevailed. None shall escape from it!

10 minutes later, everyone revived again, but this time, Zhang Yang strike preemptively. Everyone was killed instantly since they had only 20% remaining HP after being revived. After three rounds of killing, Zhang

Yang had managed to collect a total of 10 Gray-Silver equipment. It was...a great haul?

Zhang Yang waited to strike again but this time, but the bodies that were slowly floating up to the surface disappeared. They had all revived directly at the graveyard! However, Zhang Yang was cautious. Instead of heading into the cabin immediately, he waited for close to half an hour for them. It could be a trick. They could pretend to have given up and come back again only to strike him from the back. However, as time passed, Zhang Yang had convinced himself that he was being overly cautious. Perhaps, they had really given up, and were scarred for life!

Zhang Yang humored himself and went into the cabin after waiting for 30 minutes.

Inside the cabin were a number of Spectral Pirates. They were all hiding in the shadows and would wait until Zhang Yang was close to them before striking. However, their methods would never work against the combined strength of Zhang Yang and his Mythical Turtle!

After some time, Zhang Yang felt that he had memories of Floating Clouds of his past life. Zhang Yang thought hard. He remembered the name, but could not recall why would he remember them. After killing on and on, Zhang Yang had finally associated them to his memories.

In his previous life, Floating Clouds was a rather famous guild. They had even managed to enroll themselves in the S-class Professional League, with good rankings! The guild master's name was Blue Phoenix. Some said that she was a beauty to behold. There were three vice guild masters. They were called, Handsome Suppressed, Weed Lord, and Tooth Fairy. These four players were best friends in reality. They had been together ever since they were in primary school, all the way to graduation from a university. Their bond was practically unbreakable. Besides their friendship, the three males really liked Blue Phoenix. This had led Blue Phoenix to be in a tight spot. Since their friendship grew deep, whomever she chooses will lead the same outcome. One of them will be happy and the other two, or three will be sad. Eventually, Blue Phoenix chose Handsome Suppressed.

Weed Lord and Tooth Fairy had nothing to offer but blessings for those two and silently moved out of the love triangle. On the day of their wedding, both Weed Lord and Tooth Fairy had incidentally obtained bad news from the drunk Handsome Suppressed. Blue Phoenix had chosen him was because he had raped her while she was intoxicated and had impregnated her.

This news had led both Weed Lord and Tooth Fairy to be extremely mad and had killed Handsome Suppressed in a fit of anger. Both of them were sentenced to prison for 20 years and 22 years respectively. Blue Phoenix was saddened by the death and had left the game and the guild, leading to the disbandment of the guild ultimately.

When Zhang Yang first joined 'God's Miracle', it was at the time when Floating Cloud was just disbanded. That was why he did not recall much about the guild.

Now that Zhang Yang had thought about it, he was contemplating whether to or not to give a piece of advice to all three of them. Zhang Yang may not be a savior of humanity, but if he could save four players with a lift of a finger, why not?

However, there was the catch. What should he say? Since the incident had yet to occur, and their relationship was as strong as platinum, it'll just appear that he was antagonizing them! In the end, Zhang Yang sent an anonymous, mysterious, foreboding message to remind them of their friendship and if they refuse to listen, he could do nothing else.

For now, Zhang Yang placed the matter about Floating Clouds at the back of his head and continued on killing more and more Spectral Pirates.

Shush!

A fiery red shadow shot passed Zhang Yang in a flash. Zhang Yang turned just as quick and smiled when he saw what it was. The fiery red shadow was a tiny little crab, roughly the size of his palm. The opaque red shell was so vibrant that it seemed to be dyed in blood. The crab remained stationary and stared at Zhang Yang while snapping its tiny claws. Its eyes were constantly shrinking and popping back out.

[Crimson-Gold Crab] (Rare Yellow-Gold Battle Mount, Beast)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Note: Can be sealed.

Zhang Yang swiftly contacted Han Ying Xue and said, "Hey Snow B*tch, take the Lover's Charm from Ice cube and come to me. Here's the Yellow-Gold battle mount that you had always wanted."

Zhang Yang could only hear a sudden cry of happiness before she hung up without saying another word. Zhang Yang shrugged and put on the [Lover's Charm: Yang]. Not soon after, a white light flashed and Han Ying Xue appeared right beside him. Shocked, Han Ying Xue struggled for a moment before she could adjusted herself to the underwater environment. Zhang Yang laughed for a bit and handed the [Mermaid's Lungs] to her.

Chapter 343: The Ghost Captain

The Crimson-Gold Crab's main attraction point was that its color was extremely pleasing to the eyes. Perhaps it was because Zhang Yang was reminded of the color of blood. Han Ying Xue was clearly delighted at the sight of it. She quickly took a [Sealing Leash] out and used it on the crab.

The little crab was shocked. Like a real-life crab, it actually tried to run away when Han Ying Xue approached the little critter.

23%...36%...45%...Pak! Fail.

"That's 100 gold coins wasted away!" cried Han Ying Xue bitterly as she took out another [Sealing Lease] and used it on the crab.

17%...57%...89%...100% Success!

This bloody woman's luck is off the charts. She had managed to capture the little crab after two tries! Zhang Yang was feeling a little envious of her when it all changed into pitiful laughter when Zhang Yang tried to imagine how Han Ying Xue would sit on the crab, walking sideways. That being said, now that Han Ying Xue has arrived, she might as well joined Zhang Yang for a little killing spree. It would be nice to have someone healing him.

The two of them proceeded deeper into the ship. Even though Han Ying Xue was slightly slower, Zhang Yang could go on further and take on monsters without Han Ying Xue needing to be present right on the spot during the battle. Zhang Yang had more than 80,000 HP! He could at least hold his own before help arrives. Before he ever got in danger, Han Ying Xue would already reach him and cast a simple {Heal} and a {Regeneration} and be on her way. Other than that, she could do nothing much and gain the share of experience points. The small party of two killed their way in and gained a decent amount of experience points, causing the little crab to almost reach Level 30! It was almost ready to be mounted!

[The Reins of the Crimson-Gold Crab] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unsummons a mountable and battle-ready Crimson-Gold Crab. The Crimson-Gold Crab can travel both on land and in water, and grant you a 100% increase in movement speed. During underwater travel, the mount will grant the user the ability to breathe underwater. If you were to perish during a mounted status, the pet can be summoned again after 10 minutes. You can only have one active mount at a time. Casting time: 2 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

Bound.

The Crimson-Gold Crab was somewhat a jack of all trades. Its movement speed on land was not too fast, and it was not too slow in water. A jack of all trades, yet master of none. Still, Han Ying Xue was extremely pleased with her catch. After all, she had just obtained her first mount! A Yellow-Gold at that too! She was so happy that her smile was from ear to ear!

The Crimson-Gold Crab had two skills. The first being the common {Shared Life} and the second one was {Sharp Claw}, which cause 100% melee damage to one target.

When the crab had finally reached Level 30, Han Ying Xue had made herself comfortable on the crab and had started to ride it. Zhang Yang turned to witness the sight and laughed uncontrollably. Han Ying Xue raised an eyebrow and said, "Dummy, do you really think that you're cool when you're riding a turtle?"

"Well, at least I have style. While you...well..." Zhang Yang burst into a huge laughter as Han Ying Xue kept quiet, finally realizing that her crab was walking funny.

"Hmph!" She scoffed disgruntledly. "This maiden simply likes to walk horizontally!" Zhang Yang laughed even harder.

With the mount taking her wherever she wanted to, Han Ying Xue movement speed was increased. Still, her speed could not match up with that of the turtle's, but she never got left behind. With the growing level of the crab, Han Ying Xue was able to contribute a little bit of damage in

battle. However, the damage was insignificant due to the level gap suppression.

Without much time, the second floor of the ship was almost cleared. Until they reached the third floor, they came to a small room and saw a man dressed unlike that of a crew member. He was neatly dressed and was seen focused on scribbling something on a piece of paper. There were many compasses and measuring tools laid messily on the table.

[Navigator Zuro] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 79

HP: 790,000

Defense: 400

Without the help from Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang could easily defeat this Gray-Silver tier boss with a few ulti skills. Now that he had Han Ying Xue with him, he could go wild. Within 3 minutes, Zhang Yang had reduced the boss to a pile of rotting bones, without breaking a sweat.

The boss did not drop anything of value. If only the boss would drop a fragment of the Assembled Equipment, Zhang Yang would have gained some good Yellow-Gold equipment. However, the items that Zhang Yang picked up were all Gray-Silver and Green-Copper. All of those items were fated to end up in the Little Merchandize Shop.

The party continued on and as the Crimson-Gold Crab grew, the faster the party proceeded. That being said, it would never match up to the Mythical Turtle! With haste, the party took on the third and fourth floor quickly and swiftly. The two of them had finally arrived to a rusty door, where the last boss awaited them behind it!

The last boss was a short, middle-aged man. Although he was small in size, he was well built. Wearing the standard pirate outfit and hat, the most iconic symbol of a pirate captain was the iron hook on the left wrist of the man. The man was lounging at his desk with both of his feet on top of the desk. On the side of his old, rotting wooden chair was an opened treasure chest. He was jubilantly counting the gold coins pieces by pieces

as he stacked them on the desk. As he counted, he tossed the coins back into the chest by his side. There was a extremely similar smile on his face that Zhang Yang could immediately identify.

[Ship Captain Edward – Dunkirk] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 1,500

Zhang Yang grinned and turned to Han Ying Xue. "Woman, see that smile on his face. It's exactly the same as yours!"

Instead of being mad of the insult, Han Ying Xue smirked and scoffed. "Oh please. He's not as beautiful as I am!"

"...Narcissistic Queen!"

"Excuse me, this maiden prefers the word confident!"

"You know, I just realized this. Why did you start calling yourself "maiden"?"

"Hmm. Listen here you swine. I am but a young maiden. Besides, I'd haven't...you know!"

Oh my god. This woman is going to cause a whole lot more trouble...

Fearing for what comes next, Zhang Yang quickly ignored Han Ying Xue and rushed towards the boss. "Edward – Dunkirk! Give me all of your treasure!"

The boss' area of aggro effect was huge. Zhang Yang had only stepped two or three steps forwards, and he had already noticed his presence and had lowered his fet from the table. Only when Zhang Yang had provoked Edward with his words, he slammed the desk and closed the treasure chest. He stood up frantically and swept all the gold coins on the desk into his pockets. He walked off the desk and pulled out a chipped saber from his waist and got into his combat stance.

"Ye' be regrettin' ye words, boy! Ay be chippin' flesh before yer popped

out from ye mommy's womb!"

DING! CHIIING!

Sparks flew when Edward's sword clashed with Zhang Yang's shield, even when they were underwater. Han Ying Xue was far from where Zhang Yang and the boss was. Instead of joining the fray herself, she stayed back to heal Zhang Yang from a good distance. Han Ying Xue was rather smart. Since the boss could possibly have one or many kind of AoE skills, it was best for her to observe the battle from a safe distance and enact her role as a healer properly.

On the side note, her crab was only Level 58, it would not contribute to the battle much. The risk of her standing close to the boss to allow the crab to attack was not worth the damage!

-7774!

Edward – Dunkirk's attack was strong. With a single, undefended attack, he could easily deal more than 8,000 damage on Zhang Yang, after all the damage reduction and absorption passives! Zhang Yang was a professional Guardian. He would not allow his {Block} to be wasted for even a second. Each {Block} was used right on time to ensure the maximum effective usage would be applied. Thus, within 6 seconds of battle, he had only taken 2 attacks!

In 6 seconds, Zhang Yang would nullify roughly 15,000 damage. The boss DPS would be roughly at 2,500. This kind of attack would be nothing for Han Ying Xue to handle. Zhang Yang would not need to activate any defensive skills or use healing potions! Even though the boss HP was hellishly long, Zhang Yang could take his slow sweat time to grind him down to zero since Han Ying Xue, the super healer was by his side.

"Ye' scoundrels! Damnation seize ye souls! Ar' smash ye heads in!" bellowed the boss in a fit of anger. With his left hook (hand) raised up high, a ceiling full of gold coins started to rain down!

'Ding! Edward – Dunkirk has used {Mountain of Treasure}!'

Ding! Ding! Shuaaaush!

Countless gold coins rained down upon them and quickly, the flood was practically flooded with gold coins. Quickly, the coins rose from the floor and had already reached to Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's knee levels! Even though they were on mounts, the heavy metal that dropped from the sky had buried them deep in the sea of coins! The massive pressure of the coins had encased the both of them with only their heads popping out of the sea of coins! Neither of them could move!

Wham!

Taking the chance, the boss rushed towards Zhang Yang and attacked him furiously. Worried, Zhang Yang forcefully turn around, ignoring the boss just to check on Han Ying Xue.

"Hey! Dummy! Stop fighting! Quick, take the coins! Let's fill up our inventory with all of these coins!" Han Ying Xue was "swimming" among the coins, dipping her hands in the sea of coins.

What a miser!

Since their characters were trapped, Zhang Yang could not use {Block} and Han Ying Xue could not heal, and from over 80,000 HP, Zhang Yang took a great deal of damage and his HP was reduced down to half in just 10 seconds! Luckily, the skill {Mountain of Treasure} was not permanent. Once the effect duration ended, the coins in the room disappeared into thin water.

"No! Not my money! No!" cried Han Ying Xue in despair. Angrily, Han Ying Xue turned to the boss and glared at him murderously. She went up front to the front lines and fired a {Punishment Ray} at him. "You rotting piece of stinking pirate! Give me back my gold coins!"

"...Woman please, at least heal me first!" Zhang Yang screamed at her.

Han Ying Xue was still puffing with rage. She glared at Zhang Yang and tossed a {Regeneration} and turned back to the boss. Gritting her teeth, she said, "Dummy! Kill this boss and get this maiden's money back!"

"Erm...The money did belong to the boss...not you..." said Zhang Yang awkwardly.

"Listen to me when I'm talking! This maiden's money is this maiden's money!"

"Please stop using maiden this maiden that. No one talks like that anymore..."

"Hmph!"

Edward's skill, the {Mountain of Treasure} was considered to be an ultimate skill that was capable of immobilizing every player for 10 seconds! If any other tank were to face the boss in place of Zhang Yang, they would surely have perished if they could not cast {Shield Wall} or {Sacred Protection} in time. On a side note, {Shield Wall} and {Sacred Protection} were two long cool down skills. If the boss's {Mountain of Treasure} was cast every 30 seconds, how could any tank survive?

Here's where battle mounts came into play. They basically extended the HP of players, turning everyone into tanks, and tanks into - super tanks!

If Mythical Turtle rarity was Green-Copper instead of a Violet-Platinum, the bonus HP granted would be at most 10,000! Even with his current equipment, Zhang Yang would face great difficulty in surviving the 10 seconds immobilization! That is why higher rarity battle mounts were extremely valuable!

"Non shall be taking me treasure, laddy!" bellowed Edward again as he swung his sword menacingly at Zhang Yang, creating ripple of wave with each strike!

Han Ying Xue had stopped attacking and was focusing on only healing Zhang Yang. Even though having a high maximum HP was beneficial in a battle, having 10,000 HP and 100,000 HP gave healers a lot of work! Han Ying Xue had been healing non-stop for sometime and had only managed to restore Zhang Yang HP to over 60,000!"

Slightly annoyed, Han Ying Xue complained begrudgingly. "Dummy! Could you not have such beefy HP?! This maiden is tired of healing you!"

...

"If I did not have that much HP, we would both have been dead a long

time ago, "maiden".

Chapter 344: Treasure Chest

The mechanics of Edward – Dunkirk's skill, the {Mountain of Treasure} were really complicated. There was no fixed interval to it. It could be as frequent as once a minute, or it wouldn't even occur after a certain period of time. If Zhang Yang had not been lucky enough to stumble upon the Mythical Turtle, he would have already been gritting his teeth, thinking of a thousand ways to defeat the boss. As expected from an open-world boss. The game developers had turned off their common sense while designing open-world bosses. There was only one strategy, to take as many players as you can, and to overpower him with numbers! If 10 was not enough, bring a 100. If 100 was not enough, bring 1,000! Or even 10,000!

Edward – Dunkirk was supposed to be defeated via such a crude, inefficient strategy. However, even attributes designed for such numbers were shattered with the appearance of a single Violet-Platinum battle mount! It should have taken more than a thousand players to take on the boss, and yet Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were able to fight the boss. Just the two of them!

As the boss's HP slowly, but steadily dropped from 100% to 80% and 60%, the boss would roar shout out the same old line over every 10% HP loss. "Give up! The booty shall be mine and mine alone!" and after the line which was quickly getting old, he would wave his metallic hook arm and throw sharp hooks with chains in all directions. An iron hook did up to 10,000 damage, and the boss actually sent three waves of hooks out per cast. If players did not have any life preserving skill active, they would surely be killed! Not even the current tanks with their best equipment could survive after taking that huge amount of damage, let alone the other more fragile classes!

Luckily, Han Ying Xue had the Crimson-Gold Crab at Level 58 now and having the rare, Yellow-Gold battle mount had pushed her HP up from 14,320 to 31,240 HP! Coupled with Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}, Han Ying Xue HP had surpassed 35,000 HP, enough for her to endure attacks from the "Meteoric" iron hooks!

Even though there was already the existence of tiers among items, monsters, and bosses, bosses alone were separated by yet another category! Edward was a Yellow-Tiered boss, AND the final boss of a map. A player might be able to defeat a Yellow-Gold tier boss in any random field, but if they think that they could defeat Edward – Dunkirk without paying the blood price, they will only be mopping the floor with their own blood!

It was different for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. They had underwater battle mounts! It was natural for them to be able to handle a boss such as Edward!

...

After some time, Zhang Yang managed to bring down the boss to 5%! Edward – Dunkirk's green emerald eyes suddenly burst into bright red flames. His entire body was dyed in red as if someone has just showered him with blood. The deep red color of his entire body emitted some kind of ancient power that was not to underestimate.

‘Ding! Edward – Dunkirk has berserk! All damage increased by 100%!’

"Crap! The boss has gone berserk!"

In his normal mode, Edward was already overwhelming, now that his attacks were doubled, that would only spell instant doom for them!

Frantically, Zhang Yang reached out to Han Ying Xue. "Use {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!"

"Okay!"

Shush! Shush!

Two shadows emerged from both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue and headed straight to Edward. The shadow morphed itself into two humanoid warriors, wielding two swords and tore into Edward's body!

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

"GRWAHHH!" The boss bellowed with so much rage that it released a shockwave that pushed them back a few inches. In a flash, the boss waved his hands and cast the "meteor" iron hook skill. It now had a 100% buff to it!

Zhang Yang turned with such speed and cast {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue. He then activated {Shield Wall} and protected both of them. 10 seconds after the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, the boss had still over 150,000 HP. {Shield Wall} ended at the same time!

‘-17,345!’

Edwards sliced Zhang Yang with a quick stroke and dealt the strongest damage Zhang Yang had ever received!

"WTF!? The boss is just too strong!" cried Zhang Yang in horror. "B*tch! You best stay close to me! If the boss throws another iron hook out, I will use {Vanguard Aggression}!"

As expected, during berserk mode, the boss did not follow his original pace. Just 10 seconds after the first iron hook skill, he cast the same skill over again. Luckily, the boss skipped {Mountain of Treasure}. If he had used both skills at the same time, they would have been dead!

Zhang Yang frowned. His brows were furrowed as he concentrated extremely hard to survive and attack at the same time.

{Turtle Shell Defense}! 90% damage reduction for 10 seconds!

The boss had 100,000 HP left!

...

50,000!

{Turtle Shell Defense} ended. {Rearm}! {Shield Wall}, {Vanguard Aggression}!

40,000! 30,000! 20,000! 10,000! 0!

"NOOOO! Curse...ye..." Edward growled his last as he tumbled down to the cabin floor. His lifeless body floated aimlessly around the cabin like a dead fish.

"Fuah! We did it..." Zhang Yang let out a breath. He had used up all his skills in the process, and if the boss had still survived for a few seconds, the bodies that would be lifelessly floating around the room will be theirs! Anything could have happened! The boss could have done something to turn the table around at any point when he had his last 1% of HP!

Zhang Yang stretched his body and was happy that he survived the entire ordeal. On the extreme end, Han Ying Xue was extremely disgruntled. With a face that could have sent shivers down anyone's spine, she turned to Zhang Yang and said, "...The boss had just attacked us with a room full of gold coins. Yet after his death, he had only dropped 8 gold coins...WHAT.IS.THE.MEANING.OF.THIS!?"

Zhang Yang swallowed his saliva and said, "Calm yourself, woman. I'd rather he dropped a couple of equipment than a few more coins. One Yellow-Gold equipment could be sold for at least a few 10,000 gold coins! Think about it."

"Having equipment is not the same as being drowned in a sea of gold coins!"

"...I think the only two people who would love that would be Scrooge McDuck and you."

Han Ying Xue glared angrily at Zhang Yang but suddenly burst into huge laughter. The two of them happily waltzed towards the loots to collect them. They had collected a total of three Yellow-Gold equipment, eight Gray-Silver equipment. All of them were Level 80. There was one more item, and it was a piece of Treasure Map!

When Zhang Yang noticed the piece of [Treasure Map] he knew immediately that it was the most valuable item that the boss had just dropped. Since Edward – Dunkirk would only drop three pieces of [Treasure Map] in his own "life", the first map will lead to the best [Treasure Chest]!

[Earth Spirit Gauntlet] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Strength: +54

Dexterity: +27

Equip Effect: Absorbs 104 damage upon being attacked.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

Among the three Yellow-Gold equipment, Zhang Yang had obtained a pair of gauntlets. Han Ying Xue had obtained a magic staff. Even though it was not as strong as a Violet-Platinum tier, it was still fairly powerful!

[Bloodstone Staff] (Yellow-Gold, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 1,198 – 1,598

Equip Effect: Increases your magic critical rate by 1%

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

The last piece of Yellow-Gold equipment was a Leather Armor hat. However, despite being a Yellow-Gold tier, its attributes were not too good. The bonus Vitality was too much, while the Strength and Dexterity boosts were too little. It was not suitable for any attacking class. Zhang Yang just placed it together with the rest of the Gray-Silver equipment and kept in his inventory, ready to be sold in the Little Merchandise Shop.

As for the [Treasure Map], Zhang Yang kept it to himself.

"Hey Silly Yu, are we going to hunt for the treasure now?" said Han Ying Xue excitedly.

Zhang Yang nodded. "Hell yeah."

Han Ying Xue smiled from ear to ear. The [Treasure Map] was drawn very explicitly and had indicated that the treasure chest was at the west corner of the Great Lake Valla. The two of them left the ghostly ship and made their way to the treasure chest. Zhang Yang did not want to resurface to travel on land but instead, he insisted to travel underwater,

since it was much faster for him, and he wanted to collect more herbs. Although the distance to their destination was far, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue chatted and joked with each other happily without realizing that 2 hours had already passed. They reached their destination and Zhang Yang found his inventory having an additional stack of [Devil's Algae].

The destination was a small island the size of a basketball court (approximately the size of a stadium). The land on the island was extremely scarce and was practically a large, mountainous route. The mountain alone was at least a hundred meters tall! There was a huge, obvious problem with this island. The mountain alone bore no trees. In fact, the entire mountain was completely brown and clean! If one would compare this mountain with the face of a teenager, this mountain must have been taking care of its face really well!

The two of them went on shore. The moment their characters moved out of the water, their clothes were instantly dried, as if they had never been submerged in water. This feature was set to allow maximum comfort for the players.

On land, there was no use riding the turtle anymore. Zhang Yang then unsummoned the Mythical Turtle and brought out the Gold-Eared Bear King in its stead. Han Ying Xue, on the other hand, remain seated on the Crimson-Gold Crab, walking horizontally which led to Zhang Yang bursting into huge laughter.

There were no signs of any monsters spawning on this deserted island, allowing both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue to reach the foot of the mountain relatively fast. They traveled around the mountain, before heading up, since there was literally nothing there to explore. On the far side of the mountain, they found a cave which was blocked by a huge stone. Zhang Yang tried to attack the stone but ended up damaging his sword, losing 10% Durability!

"Stupid me!" Zhang Yang cried in anguish.

Luckily, they found a way to move the stone. It was a door to the cave and could be opened easily. Zhang Yang followed the description of the

map and found a palm size round stone sitting on the rock by the side. Han Ying Xue read to Zhang Yang the means to operate the stone and instructed him to turn the stone which acted as a knob.

"Three turns to the left and seven turns to the right, then, four turns to the left, two turns to the right."

"What?? Slowly, woman!"

"Sigh...Three left, seven right, four left and two right."

"Ok...I think I got it!"

Ka Ka Ka ka!

The stone door then turned and rolled to the side and exposed the entrance to the cave. The moment Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue set foot into the cave, the torches on the wall lit up by themselves and revealed the interior of the dark cave.

"Hmph. I would have preferred the door opening by saying "Open sesame!" That would be wayyy cooler!" said Han Ying Xue.

The two of them entered the cave and proceeded deeper. The cave was huge. It was so huge that Zhang Yang could not even see the ceiling. The pirates had basically hollowed out the entire mountain from within! The place was practically glowing with gold and silver luster! With the light being emitted from the torches on the wall, the treasures glimmered with rainbow-colored lights that filled the place with a vibrant, metallic gleam!

Zhang Yang made a bet with himself that the woman would jump into the sea of treasure and start swimming in it like a certain cartoon duck that he had seen when he was very young.

Among the stacks of treasure, a huge stone statue of a warrior that stood right in the pile of treasure. It was positioned there as if it was tasked to guard the treasure. Zhang Yang kept his guard up worrying that something might trigger a battle. Han Ying Xue, on the other hand, commanded her crab to march right into the sea of treasure.

Ka! Ka! Ka! Ka!

Before she could get off the crab, the stone statue started rattling. Dust that had accumulated on it started to fall off the statue. Rock and tiny debris rained down from the ceiling. The entire cave shook.

"None shall take our treasure!" said the statue as it came to life. It opened its eye lids, revealing a pupil-less pair of eyes, and swung the stone axe at Han Ying Xue.

‘-4,892!’

Han Ying Xue jumped and shrieked when she took the damage. She returned to her crab and hurried back to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was already laughing maniacally when Han Ying Xue came to him. "Consequences of being too greedy, woman!"

"Hmph! Stop talking and start killing! Dummy!"

Zhang Yang patted the bear and rode into the fight. He swung his Dark Enigmatic Sword and sliced at the stone statue. A loud crashing sound, accompanied with a bright spark occurred when his sword struck the stone.

[Treasure Guard] (Elite, Tool)

Level: 78

HP: 78,000

Defense: 600

Elite only? Hmph! Small fry!

Zhang Yang and the white bear combined their attacks, while Han Ying Xue assisted them with her crab, and both of their attacks swiftly reduced the Guard into mere pebbles.

After the short battle, Han Ying Xue was the first one to jump into the treasure pile and scoop up the coins, letting them flow out of her hands. She was behaving like a young girl who was playing with water in a water theme park! Zhang Yang smiled when he saw that adorable part of her. He then got down from the bear and scooped up as many coins as he could, only in a well-mannered way. With each fistful of coins Zhang Yang

stuffed in his pocket, the inventory only registered an increase of a few copper coins. The system would never allow a player to have such a sudden gain in fortune.

Despite that, Han Ying Xue was still delighted. While she was having the time of her life, Zhang Yang got busy killing the other Treasure Guards in the cave. There were actually more than one of those statues, placed a certain distance from each other, and Zhang Yang spent some time hunting them so that Han Ying Xue could enjoy her time here collecting all the gold coins. Zhang Yang did not mind having to kill all of the guards by himself since they did provide some experience points.

After slowly collecting and killing their way in the cave, they finally reached the deepest part of the cave after only half an hour. Sitting quietly on the three-meter-long and 1 meter wide stone desk, was a chest that gleamed with a purple luster. The chest was not that huge, yet it was extremely eye catching! On the outside of the chest were carvings of mythical creatures that made the chest look like it was meant for royalty.

"What the...a Violet-Platinum Chest!" Zhang Yang shouted in surprise when he saw the chest.

Even though they saw the chest just sitting there, seemingly ready for the taking, they did not throw themselves at it. After the first attack by the stone statue, they had their guards up. Standing guard beside the chest, was another one of those stone statues, only that it was much taller and wielded a huge axe.

Now that he was going to fight once again, Zhang Yang switched back to the Mythical Turtle. Somehow, he knew that the stone statue was going to be at the level of a last boss. Why else would this boss be guarding the Violet-Platinum chest? Even though the Mythical Turtle might be much slower, the attack and HP, not to mention its {Shield Wall}-like skill, completely outclassed the other pet!

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle but he did not ride on it. Instead, Zhang Yang rushed to the boss and started the battle.

Cruck! Cruck! Krack!

Countless stone pieces started crumbling down the statue and in mere seconds, the stone statue had "come" alive, and took a huge step forward. Similar to the previous stone statues, this boss opened its stone eye lids, however, it was not the pupil-less eyes that Zhang Yang had expected. They shone brightly like the headlights of a truck!

[Andasia the Guardian] (Yellow-Gold, Tool)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 2,000

"Sigh...What a load of crap. We have the treasure map! Why would we have to go through more bosses?!" Han Ying Xue complained angrily.

Zhang Yang rushed ahead and entered the range of {Spear of Obliteration}. He then activated the skill and hurried back to the Mythical Turtle. There, he got on and waited for the boss to come to him instead. The Mythical Turtle was actually moving, but the speed was so slow that it could be ignored...

"GOOOOON!" Andasia growled and swung his massive stone axe at Zhang Yang.

As mentioned before, even though Andasia might be a Yellow-Gold tier boss, but its strength could not be compared to that of Edward – Dunkirk. After a normal attack, Andasia would have a skill similar to that of {Destructive Smash}. Now that Zhang Yang knew about the skill, he made up a sequence of his skills to counter that skill whenever the boss uses it. With that, there was nothing else to be worried about! To Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, Andasia was just an elite monster that had a longer HP and a stronger attack. It was only a matter of time before they could kill him off.

After 20 minutes, Zhang Yang had turned the stone statue into pieces of stone pebbles. It was so easy that the pair was left fuming, thinking that it had not left them any loots! However, they soon realized that they had already obtained the battle loots. It was the treasure that the stone statues

were guarding. They were only there to see if players were worthy of claiming the treasure!

"MUAHAHAHAHA! TREASURE! WOOHOO!" cried Han Ying Xue as she jumped on the table and caress the chest like it was her own baby daughter. Her drool almost dripped onto the lid.

Chapter 345: Blizzard Sky, Luna's Dew

"...Could you please refrain from drooling all over the chest. You're gonna get it dirty!" said Zhang Yang while crossing his arms.

Han Ying Xue pushed herself back up and rolled her eyes at him. She then opened the chest and revealed the haul.

[Titan's Cape] (Violet-Platinum, Cape)

Vitality: +141

Strength: +40

Dexterity: +20

Equip Effect: Absorb 81 damage on attack.

Equip Effect: Grants a 10% chance to reset the cool down of {Block} every time you use {Destructive Smash}.

[unidentified]

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

It's a Titan armor set!

Zhang Yang was extremely happy. With that, he had collected a total of four pieces of the Titan armor set. With one more piece, he could activate the second set equipment effect!

Great!

"Hoho! This maiden has the best of hands!" said Han Ying Xue as she kissed her own pair of hands.

"Yeah yeah, I'll give you a red packet when we go back. Don't stop now!"

[Heart of the Death Knight] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Equip Effect: Reduces all Restriction effect received by 50%

Use: Immune to all damage and status restriction effect. Increases damage by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool Down Time: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 80

Now, this is a real haul! This is too strong to be real! It's a bug! No! It's a cheat!

Han Ying Xue turned to Zhang Yang and raised two fingers. Two red packets.

Zhang Yang happily nodded his head. For two red packets, this accessory was definitely worth the trade! The passive skill was able to reduce the effects of all restriction skills on him by 50%! This would definitely be useful during PvP fights! For the final decisive match, the equipment could be the one thing that could turn the entire fight around! For example, when a Thief has chained their stun perfectly, this item could break that chain and help the user engage in a perfect counter attack!

Furthermore, the item had an active skill! Upon activation, the user would be granted 10 seconds of invincibility and increase damage for 50%! Even though the cool down might be a little long, the skill alone was definitely worth the wait! After all, it was a Violet-Platinum accessory!

Han Ying Xue continued digging around, but there was no more equipment. All that was left in the chest were two skill books!

[Paired Skill: Blizzard Sky]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Blizzard Sky}

Special Restriction: Cannot be learned once {Lunar's Dew} is already learned.

Class Requirement: Unrestricted.

Level Requirement: 70

[Paired Skill: Lunar's Dew]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Lunar's Dew}

Special Restriction: Cannot be learned once {Blizzard Sky} is already learned.

Class Requirement: Unrestricted.

Level Requirement: 70

Han Ying Xue crossed her arms and asked curiously. "Hey Silly, what are these Paired Skills? It seems that the two skills books have something to do with each other. Look at the description, it says that one player cannot learn them both."

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Paired Skill are those skills that require help from another person. Like those Wuxia stories, some skills cannot be used alone! It has to be done by a pair!"

"Oh! Like Yang Guo and Xiao Long Nu's Forbidden Lover's Sword? The Sword Art of the Horny Husband and Vixen Wife?"

"...Since when did those two learn that sword art?"

"Beats me. Or is it Fiery Fist of Fury?"

"...You're just making stuff up now. Anyhow, which skill do you want to use? {Blizzard Sky}? Or {Lunar's Dew}?" Zhang Yang was annoyed.

After thinking it through, Han Ying Xue picked the {Lunar's Dew}. "I'll take this. This name suits a young maiden like me! Kinda sounds like a moon goddess, doesn't it?"

Zhang Yang facepalmed himself. Without wasting any more energy dealing with the woman, he took the other skill book and learned it instantly.

[Blizzard Sky]: Deals 5,000 Chaos damage every second to all targets within 30 meters, around the target. Lasts for 30 seconds. During the channeling duration, players must remain stationary. Any physical movements would cause the skill to be stopped instantly. During channeling, players would gain invincibility. Both {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew} must be used simultaneously. Both players have to hold hands to activate the skill. Cool Down Time: 3 Days.

It was a little pitiful that the skill had fixed damage instead of a percentage-based value. It would surely be deserted in the late game stage. Compared to the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew} had a longer cool down, and stronger damage. Best of all,

the skill was an AoE type! The major drawback was the fact that both players would have to be holding hands!

"Haha! With {Lunar's Dew}, this maiden will be the strongest maiden in the world! None shall defeat me!" said Han Ying Xue as she laughed into the sky.

"Calm your tits. Anything else in the chest?" snapped Zhang Yang, already irritated at Han Ying Xue's previous antics.

"Hm...There's this broken sword hilt." Han Ying Xue pulled out something that looked like an ancient sword hilt. The condition of the sword was extremely old and brittle. It looked like it could not even be used to crack open a walnut. Useless as it seemed, there were ancient markings carved at the side of the hilt, making it somewhat important.

"...Is this an Assembled Equipment?"

"Nope."

"Then, what is it?"

"See for yourself, woman! I'm not an encyclopedia!"

[Mysterious Sword Hilt]: Use it to induce a quest.

Class Requirement: Warrior, Knight, Thief

Level Requirement: 70

This quest item was the last item in the chest. After Han Ying Xue took out the sword hilt, the chest glowed a little and turned into millions of light particles, dispersing into thin air. Blinking in shock, Han Ying Xue bellowed. "What!? We have been busy for a whole day and this maiden here has busted her butt to serve someone ahem. Why is there nothing for me!"

Zhang Yang dripped a cold sweat. "Well, at least you got a skill out of the deal."

"Please. This is half a skill. Plus, I have to hold your stinky hand to use it! Sigh!" Han Ying Xue sighed heavily and shrugged exaggeratedly.

"Fine. I'm sorry!"

Zhang Yang took the sword hilt from Han Ying Xue, since she could not trigger the quest.

After accepting the sword, Zhang Yang's quest list was refreshed with a new entry.

[Mysterious Sword Hilt] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: You have discovered an ancient sword hilt. You can still feel an ancient power sleeping from within the broken sword! Due to the lack of knowledge, you failed to identify the source of the power from within. However, your instincts tell you to search for an old blacksmith in White Jade Castle call Banderas. Perhaps the elder blacksmith will know something about the sword hilt.

Progress: Ask Banderas about the origins of the Mysterious Sword Hilt
0/1

"Are we going right now?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"Not unless you still want to eat dinner? I could go and get the quest done, but someone might be grumpy later," said Zhang Yang as he raised his eyebrow questioningly at Han Ying Xue.

"Hmph!"

Both of them tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to Thunderstorm Castle. After a long day of battle, both of their equipment durability values were low and were in need of fixing. From Thunderstorm Castle, Zhang Yang went back to White Jade Castle and had the new equipment Identified, placing them for sale in his shop.

In the past few days, Zhang Yang had been visiting the auction house. He found that there was someone trying to stir up the market by monopolizing all the pet skill books. Zhang Yang had wanted to purchase the skill, {Wild Recovery} for his Mythical Turtle, but had never gotten the chance, since the extremely common skill book was nowhere to be found on the market! Zhang Yang had poked around a little and found out that only the common pet skill books were affected. There were some other pet

skill books for sale, but they were sold for ridiculous prices. To think that someone would try to flip prices to such an extent.

Zhang Yang arrived at the auction house and decided to try his luck for a change, however, his eyes almost popped out their sockets when Zhang Yang saw the search result. The books were all there. Thousands of them. However, the price was just too absurd. A few days ago, a {Wild Recovery} skill book would only cost as much as 20 gold coins. Yet, in front of him, were such books being priced at 500 gold coins. What more, the auction price was not placed at a minimum bet. They were all set at a fixed price of 500 gold coins!

How could anyone be that greedy!?

Zhang Yang did a few more taps found the name of the seller. The player clearly did not intend to hide his identity. It was Jurassic Lover!

Hm! It was the same dishonest trader from his past life!

Zhang Yang immediately recalled the name and the person. This player was the same player who once caused a huge market meltdown in his previous lifetime. He was the kind of person that could cause an item in the market to raise up by several hundred percents of its original value. His usual tactic was to buy all item at the lowest price and sell them at a huge marked up price. No doubt, this man knew his stuff. Many times that he had successfully grabbed the business opportunity and became a multi-billionaires by exploiting 'God's Miracle' market.

Eventually, Jurassic Lover's tactic in messing up the market was greatly criticized by the public. Players who had to buy items from him always got riled up upon hearing the name Jurassic Lover.

As of now, values like 500 gold coins were nothing for Zhang Yang, since he had a few more zeros in his own bank account. However, ethically, he was not pleased with the man's dishonest trading's behavior. For him, no matter how much money he had in the world, he would rather throw the money into the river than giving them to the man!

Zhang Yang then decided to buy the item later in the future. Since the particular skill book had a decent drop rate, the price would never remain

at that position for long. At most, Zhang Yang predicted that the price would only last for a few days before plummeting back down. He gave up the search for the skill book and headed to the blacksmith to forge out a complete Fireglass Necklace.

[Fireglass Necklace] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +59

Intelligence: +24

Equip Effect: Increases 46 Fire resistance.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 70

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes in frustration when he saw the attributes. Equipment type that increased elemental resistance were not very useful! It was a total waste of an equipment effect slot. This would only cause the equipment to nerf a DPS class player. Luckily, it was at least a Yellow-Gold tier item. Since it was a rare drop, it could still be sold out!

Zhang Yang took out the sword's hilt and handed it over to Banderas, "Master, do you perhaps know about this sword's origin?"

The dwarf blacksmith took over the hilt and examined it carefully. His uninterested expression gradually turned serious, and he gazed up back at Zhang Yang with his tiny eyes wide open. "This sword...hm...I can sense powerful godly energy from this. Even though there's nothing left except for the hilt, it still has contains some power!"

Zhang Yang was not expecting much from it. Surprised and slightly intrigued, Zhang Yang asked, "Master, do you have any means to restore the sword back to its former glory?"

Banderas shook his head sadly. "The ancient art has long been gone with history. I do not possess the ability to repair the blade of the sword, although I do not claim to be the best blacksmith in the world. Others may be able to do it. However, when I was examining the sword's hilt, I sensed a strong power lying dormant. Perhaps something could happen if

you awaken the power!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Mysterious Sword Hilt!’

What a drag! It did not even reward a single point of experience!

Zhang Yang frowned disgruntledly and asked again. "Master. How does one awaken the power from within?"

Banderas picked up the hilt and examined it. He then pointed something out to Zhang Yang. "Look here, there are three magic circles that have sealed the power of the sword. I fear that the power will remain dormant until all seals are broken!"

"Master, how does one break the seal?"

"I'm but a blacksmith, breaking magic circles and seals are not part of my specialty. Perhaps you should try and search for Margery. She is a magician and a scholar. She could help." Banderas returned the sword hilt to Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Banderas has a quest for you: Consult Margery. Do you accept?’

Chapter 346: Level 80, Finally!

[Consult Margery] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: According to Banderas, you should look for a magician scholar named Margery. Request her help to solve the problem with the seals on the sword's hilt. Margery lives in a place called the Pandemonium. You will face great difficulties in meeting her. Note: Margery will only appear in the Hardcore Mode of the Pandemonium dungeon.

Progress: Obtain the method to unseal the power of the sword 0/1

Pandemonium would be an upcoming 25-man, Level 80 dungeon. There would be a total of seven bosses from the beginning till the end, which was quite a number compared to the other dungeons he had ever conquered. On a side note, the monsters in the Pandemonium belonged to a specific race and power. Level 10 dungeon had the underground crypt dwellers. Level 30 dungeon had werewolves, and so forth and so on. In this dungeon, however, out of the seven bosses, there were four different forces that were vying for superiority, hence the name Pandemonium.

Now that the quest needed Zhang Yang to raid a Level 80 dungeon, he had to put it aside first. He would need 25 level 80 members, a matter that was out of his hands. Zhang Yang thought of a way, but eventually placed getting to Level 80 as the main priority. He should reach Level 80 as soon as possible and collect all three Dimensional Key Fragments in the Level 80 map. Now that he had taken such a long time collecting all the keys, he guessed that by the time he has collected all the keys in the Level 80 map, he would have gathered enough eligible players to raid Pandemonium.

Zhang Yang left the blacksmith and went to the bank to take out all the previously collected [Warden's Weed], and went to the Alchemy shop to buy a few empty potion bottles. To concoct a [Level 4 Strength Potion], he would need 2 counts of [Warden's Weed] and 1 portion of [Devil's Algae], which he had already gathered.

...

‘Ding! You have made [Level 4 Strength Potion] x6!’

...

‘Ding! You have made [Level 4 Strength Potion] x6! Due to Alchemist's Intuition, [Level 4 Strength Potion has been transmuted!’

[Level 4 Strength Potion (Grade 3 Transmutation)] (Usable)

Use: Increases Strength by 100 points, and 3% Critical rate. Last for 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 60

Zhang Yang had made more than 400 bottles of [Level 4 Strength Potion] in one go. Among the 400 bottles, 32 bottles had the Transmutation effect, and he was extremely lucky to have 2 bottles of Grade 10 Transmutation! The effect was a 10% bonus Critical rate!

It was a pity that players were restricted to only one potion bottle effect at a time. Zhang Yang would love to have both Strength and Troll Recovery potions in effect. Zhang Yang shrugged at the limitations and gulped down a bottle of [Level 4 Strength Potion] before he went on to grind.

In the same time, the Battle Team Professional League was still in progress, with Zhang Yang's Silky Soft Battle Team standing strong at the top of the point accumulation board. They had not lost a single round! Fatty Han's Pride and Honor Battle Team was not performing as well, in fact, they were the second lowest team.

...

On the 9th of March, Zhang Yang reached Level 80! He had obtained 1 SP and learned a new skill. What was more important was the fact that he could finally put on the equipment that he had stashed in his storage bank!

The first, was obviously the Titan set, Titan's Helmet, Titan Greaves, Titan Wall, and Titan's Cape! After that were the two Violet-Platinum Rings, Ring of Imprisonment, and the Heart of the Death Knight. The last

two was the Yellow-Gold tier, Blazing Defensive Boots, and Earth Spirit Gauntlet. The Helmet, Greeves, and Cape had a total of 5 Level 3 Gem Sockets. Level 3 Vitality Gems could provide an additional 50 Vitality, compared to the Level 2 Vitality Gems that could only provide less than half of that, which was 20 Vitality!

Zhang Yang swapped all nine of his equipment and achieved a whole new level of power!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 80

HP: 69,880 (Inclusive of Vitality Aura and Titan's set equipment set effect, 10,000 HP bonus)

Defense: 2,200

Damage Absorption: 1,658

Weapon Attack: 2,421 – 2,621

With his god-like stats, the only lacking point was his attack power. Even though the Dark Enigmatic Sword was extremely useful in AoE attack, it was only a Level 60 Yellow-Gold. Its single target attack power was not on the same level as the rest of his equipment!

Now that he had reached Level 80, it was time for him to search for the remaining Dimensional Key Fragments! The first stop was a place called the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night - for an NPC named, Kent Joseph.

There were only three Level 80 maps that he needed to visit. The only reason Zhang Yang had chosen the Grand Canyon, was because it was the closest to him! Still, close was a relative term. From Thunderstorm Castle, Zhang Yang had run close to 7 hours before he arrived at the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night.

As the name described, the place was a huge canyon, with endless folds of earth. This place was dubbed as Eternal Night, due to the dark clouds covering the sky, blocking the sunlight from ever reaching the surface of the canyon. With the absence of sunlight, the place was plunged into an

eternal night, causing the lack of plantation, making it a place where Spectres could prosper!

As far as the maps go, Zhang Yang adapted quickly. It was not because he was getting stronger, but because he had fresher memories of the higher level maps. Lower leveled maps like Level 50 maps were not fully explored. There were many of them and Zhang Yang had only ventured through three or four of them before entering the Level 60 border. However, there were only three Level 80 maps. Before reaching Level 90, the majority of players would likely have ventured through all of them a couple of times. However, in his previous lifetime, Zhang Yang had been in the Eternal Night Grand Canyon for the duration it took for him to gain three levels. In his past experience, Zhang Yang had never encountered any NPC named Kent Joseph. On a side note, his memories about Kalin Town were also quite jumbled. He had to rely on the quest manual to search at the "north" of the canyon. The description was extremely vague and Zhang Yang had to spend more than 7 hours to find the town of Kalin. Kalin was a small, ancient town. It was not abandoned not deserted, it was just old. The buildings were as old as the earth formed over the years. However, the town was brimming with life. There were many people walking around, and it was rather crowded.

Zhang Yang had questioned over a dozen visitors, and none of them knew who or where did Kent Joseph live. Zhang Yang frowned, but since the quest has already led him here, there should be clues as to where he could find the NPC. A sudden idea came to his mind, and that was to ask elder occupants, instead!

Zhang Yang searched throughout the streets and found an older man seated on the sidewalk. He came up to him and asked, "Excuse me, do you know a man named Kent Joseph?"

"Kent?" The man expressed a nostalgic face. "Old John's kid? Little Kent? Of course, I knew him! I remember carrying him in my arms when he was only a little kid! Why'd you ask? Is he back? If he is, he's too late. Old John passed away a few years back, due to illness!"

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow. "Back? Did he go somewhere?"

The old man hummed a little and said, "Roughly 20 years ago, Kent joined the army. We never heard any news from him since! Sigh...That kid...He was a kind human that was full of justice in his head. He was a nice lad. May the gods bless him!"

Zhang Yang quickly asked more questions. "Where did he joined the army?"

"Hm...if I remembered correctly, he joined the army troops at Black Coal's Sentry. But, I don't think that he will still be there!" said the old man. He then got up and walked away slowly.

Zhang Yang sighed with another piece of vague information that he had just received. With just the name of a place called Black Coal's Sentry as the only hint, Zhang Yang had no choice but to go there.

After a short journey, Zhang Yang arrived at Black Coal's Sentry in an hour. Zhang Yang recalled that he had been there during his previous life. However, he had no recollection of any army troops stationed there. The land was completely dyed in black, hence the name Black Coal. The place was completely devoid of life. There was no trees nor grass growing at all. On top of a small hill were a few old, and torn flag posts. It was clear that this place had long been deserted by the army.

Zhang Yang made his way up to the post and examined the surroundings. Beside the abandoned station, there were many tombstones resting in peace there. Zhang Yang did a head count and counted at least 50 to 60 tombstones there. Each on every tombstone had names of the deceased engraved on them. Zhang Yang examined every tombstone and was stunned when he saw the name Kent Joseph present on one of the tombstones.

Did the descendant of the seven great generals die in the battle?

The quest manual explained the key fragment was in possession of Kent Joseph, and not Old John. Now that Kent was dead and buried, did the quest intend for Zhang Yang to exhume the grave?

Zhang Yang contemplated for a while and finally reached a decision to become a grave robber. Since the only clue left was this grave, he had to

do it. What else could he do?

...DIG!

Zhang Yang walked the talk. He jumped down from the white bear and used his Dark Enigmatic Sword as a shovel to dig up the dirt near Kent Joseph's tombstone. The white bear was not left out, it plunged its massive claw into the dirt and helped Zhang Yang dig away.

"STOP! WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!" a voice cried out from behind.

Zhang Yang spun and saw a man at the age of around 40 years old. He was holding a bouquet of flowers that had been completely mushed up in his grip.

[Veteren Soldier Schroeder] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 80,000

Defense: 450

Note: A veteran soldier that was stationed here as a Black Coal Sentry.

What timing! He did not arrive early, nor late. He arrived just when he was needed to. It reminded Zhang Yang of an old wizard from a certain western novel. Schroeder had arrived just in time to catch Zhang Yang digging up the grave. It was definitely part of the quest line!

Zhang Yang kept his sword back into its sheath. The white bear followed and moved away from the spot, trying to hide the fact that they had tried to dig the grave. Zhang Yang walked towards Schroeder and asked, "Elder brother, why would you stop me?"

Schroeder was so angry that his face turned from a furious red to the bright rays of the sun! Schroeder was so angry that he was about to engage in an unavoidable fight! Schroeder then tossed the bouquet of flower to the side and clenched his fists. "How dare you disturb those who were resting in peace! Young man! I'll teach you a lesson myself!"

Without any delay, the older man threw a supersonic fist at Zhang Yang! His name was immediately changed from green to red! Zhang Yang had

no choice but to fight this NPC!

Zhang Yang drew his sword hopped on the bear to attack the NPC. Having leveled up to Level 80, the bear's HP was raised to 32,700, with a Weapon Attack of 4,769 - 5,179. Zhang Yang himself had close to 70,000 HP! With both of them combined, their HP had reached beyond 110,000 HP! They had even exceeded the HP limit of normal and elite tiered monsters!

The NPC was completely outclassed! Even his attacks were puny, in comparison to Zhang Yang's. From the perspective of Zhang Yang, his Defense was so thick that the NPC only dealt over 1,300 damage per hit! It was nothing but an itch!

Zhang Yang did not need to rely on any ulti skills that he had. By simple hacks and slashes, Zhang Yang defeated Schroeder! However, his HP was stuck at 1 point left and had gained an immunity status. At the same time, Zhang Yang received a system notification.

'Ding! You have defeated Schroeder. Please make a choice: 1, Kill him. 2, Ask clues about the death of Kent Joseph!'

Chapter 347: The Search for Kent

What kind of question was that? Clearly, Zhang Yang is not going to kill him!

Zhang Yang withdrew the blade that he had placed right at Schroeder's neck. "Sir. I bring you no ill intent. I am Kent Joseph's distant relative. I have come back to Kalin on behalf of his father. I have to meet Kent. I will never believe it until I see his body!"

Schroeder got back to his feet and dusted off the dirt on his shirt. He got closer to Zhang Yang and asked curiously. "You know Kent?"

"Of course! I'm one of his nephews!" Zhang Yang shamelessly established a close relationship with an unknown person. He did not even know how he looked like. Luckily, Wei Yan Er was not around, or else that little brat would be teasing him for the next few days.

Schroeder's face darkened, "Must you disturb the spirit of Kent?"

Zhang Yang gripped his sword. "I do not believe that Kent would just die like that. Like I said, unless I see his body in this grave, only then I will believe that Kent's soul has been taken by the gods!"

Schroeder sighed. There was a long moment of hesitation going on in his mind, which was reflected in his expression. "You...Sigh...You're right. Kent is not dead. Kent is still alive and breathing. That coffin beneath the earth is empty. There's no need to dig it up."

"Was that why you didn't want me to unearth it?"

"Saved your time by explaining it, did I?"

Zhang Yang scoffed. He lowered his guard and asked. "Why the secrecy?"

Schroeder sighed again. His expression was twisted between agony and extreme fatigue. It felt like he had grown much older in an instant. "Young man, would you like to hear a story?"

Here it comes!

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "It is a young man's honor to listen to the tales of the elder and experienced."

"Well said." Schroeder's expression was slightly elevated. With a light smile, the man started his story. "22 years ago, I joined the army. You must know, this place was a huge mess. The army I speak out would just be a masquerade for something else. A word used in bad taste. Mercenary, would be a better description for what we were doing since tens of towns paid for our cause. Those of us who joined the army were from poor families. We had to risk our lives for the sake of money! After I joined the army, I befriended Kent. He was a brave and mighty soldier. Unlike me, a man who fought for money, Kent was a man who truly wished to serve the nation and its people."

"We were brothers-in-arms. Together we had killed Spectres, exterminated monsters, defeated bandits, and had many more adventures! We had become even closer since. Roughly 20 years ago, Kent and I were investigating in a hidden village. There we found out that the village was being raided by a bunch of bandits. Both of us then proceeded to fight. Yet...I..."

There was a sudden Schroeder glint of rage in his eyes. His voice suddenly got louder. "The bandits had masks covering their faces. At first, we didn't care about it. After killing a few of them, Kent unmasked one of the bandits as they fought. It was then when we found the truth. The bandits that we had fought were our own comrades. The same comrades that we fought alongside, under the same banner!"

Schroeder smashed his fist on one of the tombstones. His forceful strike shattered the withered piece of cement. Schroeder did not waver. He even spat on the grave and continued. "Once we discovered the truth, we went back to report about the situation. Yet, to our horror, we were attacked by those who we had called friends. We had just found out that the entire army was in it! They were all bandits in disguise! The bandits were the army! The army was the bandits!"

Zhang Yang had been quiet for the entire time listening to Schroeder rant. In his mind, he thought that having a family and friends who were

both your allies and enemies. How could one's life be so ironic?

"However, they had severely underestimated Kent's strength. He single-handedly took down the entire army in Black Coal's Sentry! Everyone at this post was killed! After the ordeal, we calmed down and had a serious discussion about reporting this matter. The problem was that the mercenaries were too wide-spread. They had already formed a strong stance in the hearts of the people. If Kent and I reported this matter to everyone, there will be war. A war so large that it would involve many casualties! Innocents will die! In the end, Kent decided to go anonymous. He hid his real identity and formed a small elite force to take down the Mercenary Leader Cazaro."

Schroeder smirked. "To help his cause, I made a fake grave and spread the rumor about his death. I had spread the fake news that we were ambushed by Spectres and I was the only survivor. No one but me knows about his well-being. This way, Cazaro cannot use Kent's close relatives to threaten him."

Zhang Yang had a little dilemma going on in his head. It was better for him to have Kent dead. Zhang Yang could simply be a grave robber and take the key fragment from this corpse and be done with it. Now that the story had turned out to be this way, a certain manhunt quest awaited Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang thanked the man and asked. "Sir. Do you know where Kent is now?"

Schroeder gazed up to Zhang Yang and said, "Can I trust you?"

Zhang Yang raised his right hand. "I swear by the God of War, I am not on the side of Cazaro! For I am a seeker of justice and truth!"

Schroeder thought about it for a little while more and revealed the truth. "In that case, I will take your word for it. My instincts tell me that you're a trustworthy warrior! Kent is located at White Stone Hills. He has established a stronghold in the name of a small bandit. However, he has never robbed from the poor. In fact, he had specifically engaged in small battles with the mercenaries to weaken their forces. One more thing, Kent

goes by the name of John Smith!"

"You have my greatest appreciation, Mr. Schroeder." Zhang Yang bowed to Schroeder and left the place. He called to his bear and rode towards the west.

After another long journey, Zhang Yang arrived at the steep edge of a large hill. At the hillside, there was a huge creek, measuring approximately 300 to 400 meters tall. There were a few large trees that had grown at the side of the entrance. Zhang Yang walked closer and could feel a cool breeze blowing out from the creek. Zhang Yang followed the trail and move up the hill. In just a few steps, there were two armed huge men ambushed him from a large rock. Without saying anything, the two men jumped at him and began to attack.

[White Stone Looters] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 81

HP: 8,100

Defense: 80

They were only normal monsters in which Zhang Yang had no interest of wasting his time on. With no intention of fighting, Zhang Yang ignored the attackers and head straight on. The two attackers did not stop and followed Zhang Yang all the way up the hill.

"Intruders!" cried three more attackers. They too, attacked Zhang Yang.

If they were not any higher or equal to elite tiered monsters, Zhang Yang would not even draw his sword! He continued on.

After a long journey up, Zhang Yang stumbled upon a large wooden gate. He destroyed it and entered the bandits' lair. Along the side of the pathway were clay houses. All the bandits that were "residing" in the houses came out to attack Zhang Yang. Naturally, Zhang Yang did not attack. Instead, he continued to play chase with them and had formed a long, 100-men or more "train" behind him.

After a short while, Zhang Yang had to stop. There was a boss in his

path!

[Team Captain Afael] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 81

HP: 810,000

Defense: 900

Before attacking the boss, Zhang Yang turned around and attacked the oncoming wave of bandits.

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

...

Zhang Yang’s Defense was that of a bunker, naturally, the bandits were not able to deal any damage to him! Not even a single bit of damage was able to penetrate his defenses!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

A sea of over 5,000+ damage text popped out but did not reoccur. The attack did not trigger the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect.

Zhang Yang shrugged. It happens sometimes. After the 1 second global cool down, Zhang Yang activated {Blast Wave}. Compared to {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave} attacks were not strong, however, its AoE range was much better and wider since it was considered to be penetrative! The more monsters, the rowdier it got, and the stronger the skill effect would be.

Wham!

More than 20 "-1,093!" damage text popped out with a few being Critical strikes. This time, the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect was triggered and blasted another wave of attack. However, it only triggered once.

10 seconds later, Zhang Yang used {Horizontal Sweep} again, but it did not trigger the sword’s effect, until the fifth use of {Horizontal Sweep}, which dealt devastating damage to all.

Zhang Yang had spent close to 5 minutes to deal with all the attackers. All in all, the Dark Enigmatic Sword effect trigger rate had definitely dropped!

Zhang Yang frowned in frustration. Equipment with percentage trigger rate, such as the Dark Enigmatic 2% trigger rate, had a hidden setting behind it! The written trigger rate would only be in effect when the item level and the player's level correspond to each other. However, when the player's level starts to overshoot the item level, the item's trigger rate will be forcefully dropped. The Dark Enigmatic Sword item level requirement was Level 60. From Level 60 and Level 70, the item trigger rate will remain the same. However, when Zhang Yang had surpassed the item level by a long shot, the trigger rate will drop! Right now, Zhang Yang guessed that the sword effect trigger rate would only be at 1% or less. After Level 90, it would be lesser than 0.5%!

This had been set by the developers, to make sure that players would change their equipment at a faster pace. If they had not set it that way, a low-level item that had superior item effect could be used until late game!

It was a real shame that the Dark Enigmatic Sword could not carry Zhang Yang a little further. This sword was a mass killing machine. Looks like, by all means, the sword could only last until Zhang Yang reaches Level 90 before it will be replaced.

Zhang Yang sighed and summoned the Mythical Turtle out. After Level 80, the Violet-Platinum pet had grown vastly stronger. Zhang Yang had managed to buy the {Wild Recovery} skill book from the auction house when the prices had finally plummeted. So far, the Mythical Turtle attributes were as follows: HP: 50,480 (With Vitality Aura), Defense: 2,400, Weapon Attack: 7,038 – 8,038. It was strong!

Zhang Yang walked a few steps forwards and tossed a {Spear of Obliteration} at Afael. After that, he swiftly returned to the Mythical Turtle and waited for the boss to come to him instead.

"Intruder! You dare to stroll around White Stone Hills?! I'll tear you apart for your imprudence!" cried the boss as he chased after Zhang Yang, with

a large battle hammer in his hands.

BANG!

Like hammering a nail to a plank, Zhang Yang took a strong blow and received 2,982 damage.

A Level 80 Gray-Silver boss was a little stronger than a Level 70 Gray-Silver boss. However, Zhang Yang's defenses had been doubled after reaching Level 80! Compared to when he was only Level 79, the damage received from the boss was almost halved!

Zhang Yang grinned and counterattacked.

Zhang Yang's movement speed while riding the Mythical Turtle was so slow that he could have shoved his middle finger up the turtle *sshole just to make it walk faster. Still, the boss was not player-controlled. It would never use any kiting technique, and would always head into the battle, and fight with the player head-on without having any strategies.

After laying down five {Cripple Defenses}, Zhang Yang's attack was maximized! Especially the Mythical Turtle. On average, its attack was around 7,500. The boss's puny 450 Defense barely reduced the value! The turtle had over 4,100 DPS which was stronger than Zhang Yang's 3,300 DPS!

As expected from a Violet-Platinum tier battle pet! Such a strong ally!

In contrast, the boss DPS was only at most 1,000! To kill Zhang Yang's current combined HP at 120,000 would need at least 2 minutes! On the contrary, Zhang Yang's and the turtle's combined DPS at 7,400 could easily dry out the boss' 810,000 HP in less than 2 minutes! Zhang Yang could easily defeat the boss without relying on any survival skill!

In truth, with half of his equipment being Violet-Platinum tier, and the Violet-Platinum battle pet, Zhang Yang was the equivalent of a Gray-Silver boss at the same level!

As they continue grinding Alfael's HP down, Alfael stopped attacking at 10% HP. A progress bar appeared on top of his head. It was {Heal}!

While a player {Heal} skill could be cast instantly, Alfael's {Heal} had a 1 second casting time!

Zhang Yang immediately cast a {Crash Magic} but failed!

Immune!

In a split second, Zhang Yang activated the Ring of Imprisonment's effect to force a 2-second stun on a target!

Immune!

What the world!? If he could not even stop the casting, why would it have a 1-second casting time? Might as well make it an instant cast!

'+202,500!'

A large, green colored number text floated up the boss's head and Alfael had recovered close to 25% of his HP. Luckily, the boss had Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} effect which greatly decreased the healing received! Now Zhang Yang understood why the boss had a 1-second casting delay, it was to allow players to cast a {Destructive Smash}!

Having healed over 200,000 HP, it was still a futile effort to stop his inevitable death! Zhang Yang ground his HP down to 10% again. With no more {Heals} to cast, the boss could only smash at Zhang Yang and fell dead.

'Ding! You have killed Alfael. Obtained 810,000 Experience Point!'

The boss only dropped a few Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment, which Zhang Yang did not even spare a look and swept them all into his inventory. He then called out the bear and rode his way up the hill.

SHUSH!

A bright flash of light gleamed in the air, and Zhang Yang caught the sight of a long spear flying through the air. Wielding the spear was a large green orc that was snarling at him with his mouth wide open, revealing a pair of sharp fangs and teeth.

[White Stone Elite Robber] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 82,000

Defense: 450

Now that an elite tier monster had appeared, Zhang Yang would not dare to be too relaxed. After all, an elite monster had a strong attacking power that could easily deal significant damage to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang pulled the reins on the bear and used {Wild Charge}, dashing to the orc to attack it with its paws.

Based on the Gold-Eared Bear King's current attributes, he could roughly stand toe to toe with an elite monster without Zhang Yang assistance! If Zhang Yang were to attack it, it would end the fight so fast before Zhang Yang even started counting down the seconds. As such, the green skinned orc was already lying in a pool of its own blood within seconds.

However, even though he was that strong, Zhang Yang was not able to engage in mass-killing. Zhang Yang's current pushing rate was massively reduced, due to the sharp decline of the Dark Enigmatic Sword's ability! The bear's attack was at 5,000 while Zhang Yang current attack power was only at around 2,500! Zhang Yang was unexpectedly weaker than his own pet!

He could not even compete with the bear, let alone the Mythical Turtle! Pets that were stronger than their owner! Looks like Zhang Yang would have to get his hands on a Violet-Platinum weapon to make things right for him!

Chapter 348: Unstoppable

It's sad to say that Zhang Yang's pushing speed was reduced, due to him not able mass-kill. Still, it wasn't like he had the attack power of a grunt. Zhang Yang's attack power was still considered to be somewhere among the best. That being said, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were the best among the best! There could be others out there who were stronger than they were!

However, being combined with the Gold-Eared Bear King, Zhang Yang could consider himself as a one-man-army! The most important factor was his Defense. From the beginning till now, Zhang Yang had never needed to sit down to heal himself with any recovery items! If he had an issue with HP, all he had to do was to use {Berserker's Heal}! He was like a perpetual moving machine! This kind of efficiency was far superior to Sun Xin Yu or Wei Yan Er!

After two hours of trekking, Zhang Yang had made his way to the second outpost of the hill and found himself another boss to defeat.

[3rd Commander Balgor] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 820,000

Defense: 900

This was another green-skinned orc, with a huge build. He was holding a large Wolf Fang Club that would occasionally be swung around to destroy random boulders in his path. Orcs were one of the first four races that roamed in the Union and were the toughest, sturdiest race among all. Balgor wore nothing but a pair of small leather pants. The hair behind his head was almost a foot long. It was quite manly of him to hunt in the wild. The wind would occasionally blow his hair, making it something like a scene from a movie to emphasize a man's coolness. Even his muscles were so ripped and well built! The six packs in his abdomen looked like shiny, fresh baked bread!

Still, no matter how manly he was, he was just a Gray-Silver tier boss. Zhang Yang had no need to make any sort of preparations to kill him. Zhang Yang only needed to summon the turtle out and draw him into the battle with the {Spear of Obliteration}.

Balgor was considered to be a warrior type monster. Aside from the normal smashing and bashing, Balgor also possessed warrior skills such as {Tornado Cleave} which was used once every 20 seconds, and {Destructive Smash} which was used once every 30 seconds, carrying a 50% healing reduction rate which lasted for 30 seconds! This skill was used so often that Zhang Yang did not have any room to breathe. The good thing was, Zhang Yang had no need of healing at all!

In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Yang had hacked Balgor up and made him his b*tch! Balgor dropped a few Gray-Silver and Green Copper equipment that were not worth mentioning. There was also a piece of Alchemy recipe, meant for making Level 4 Healing Potions.

Even though Zhang Yang could easily buy [Level 4 Healing Potion] from shops, it was just too expensive to buy in bulk. It was always better to concoct them on his own. Money was nothing to him, but the skill {Alchemist's Intuition} was! He could concoct a potion that could possess a Transmutation effect! Since he never made any healing potions, he did not know what the bonus effects would be.

After clearing the boss up and collecting all the goods, Zhang Yang recalled the bear and rode further up the hill.

Along the way, Zhang Yang only encountered elite monsters. Since it was taking quite some time, Zhang Yang went on and harvested some herbs on the side. The herb [Purple Seed Orchid] was all over the hill in abundance. These herbs could be used to concoct [Blazing Potions] which could enhance a Pyromancer's attack. Overall, Zhang Yang had taken four hours, plowing through the hill. He had collected a total of 132 [Purple Seed Orchid] before he reached the third boss.

[2nd Commander Gullini] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 83

HP: 1,660,000

Defense: 1,500

After entering Level 80 maps, Yellow-Gold bosses were much weaker. If Zhang Yang was in a Level 70 map, Gullini's HP would surely be at least 8,000,000! However, after Level 80 maps, Yellow-Gold bosses would be downgraded to make way for the superior Violet-Platinum bosses.

Gullini was a tiny little Gnome. Like Orcs, Gnomes had a similar green colored outer skin. However, they possessed smaller bodies, comparable to Dwarves! Zhang Yang wondered how did the Dwarves end up being named "Dwarves" since the Gnomes were obviously smaller! On the side note, Gnomes had trademark features such as long, sharp noses like Pinocchio. They had no hair on their scalps. Their scalps were so free of hair that they could be used as mirrors!

Gullini was seen standing guard on the route. In his right hand was a large battle axe that was taller than he was. In his left hand was a shield. He was obviously a tank class monster!

Zhang Yang stopped and called out the turtle. Now, Zhang Yang had the utmost confidence to fight a Yellow-Gold boss all by himself!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-5,380!’ Critical!

How lucky! A critical strike!

Gullini bellowed angrily and brandished his axe, rushing towards Zhang Yang. "Human! You dare to attack the great Gullini!? Gullini will smash you into bits and make stew out of you!"

Zhang Yang hopped on the turtle and waited for the boss to come to him.

‘-6,024!’

‘-7,423!’

‘-1,976!’

The Mythical Turtle had attacked with a normal attack, followed by a {Tear}, coupled with Zhang Yang's own normal attack. They had instantly dealt more than 15,000 damage on the boss.

"URGH! What power! You've hurt the great Gullini!" cried the boss as he retaliated.

{Block}!

'-383!' {Block} reflect damage.

'-1,516!' {Shield Bash}.

Zhang Yang had not activated the Titan's set equipment second set effect. With that, he could double the attack of {Shield Bash} to greatly increase his DPS.

{Block}!

'-582!'

Since the boss' Defense was so strong, Zhang Yang had first used {Cripple Defense} on him. However, on the second {Cripple Defense}, the boss had suddenly raised his shield and blocked Zhang Yang attack. What that was surprising, was not the use of {Block}, but the fact that he could still deal 582 damage on Zhang Yang, even with Zhang Yang's greatly upgraded defense! Zhang Yang calculated that the boss' minimum damage was at least 5,000!

As expected from the boss, if a player could deal 5,000 damage on damage reflect of {Block}. He must have 5,000 Strength! Right now, Zhang Yang only had 1,133 Strength points, which was very far from what he wanted to reach!

This battle is a match between a super tank and a super tank!

Player had dubbed tanks as turtles since their Defense values were as strong as turtle shells. That is why, right now, there was a total of two, NO, THREE NINJA TURTLES, FIGHTING EACH OTHER!

Like Zhang Yang, the boss could use {Block} to negate Zhang Yang attacks. However, the boss' {Block} cool down was as long as 15 seconds,

whereas Zhang Yang's {Block} was only 6 seconds long. Any tank that did not invest in {Block} first, are useless tanks!

Gullini had all the basic Guardian skills like {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}, and {Shield Bash}. Luckily, he did not have the passive skill - {Shield Oath}, which could reduce 20% incoming damage. The boss' damage was quite devastating since his normal attack could deal as much as 6,000 damage! Even with Zhang Yang's 6 seconds {Block} cool down rate, the boss DPS reached as high as 2,000!

In less than 1 minute, Zhang Yang was already beaten down to his last drop of HP.

{Berserker's Heal}!

'+120,360!'

That exaggerating healing power that had just restored all of Zhang Yang health. It could easily cause the shock of any healer, even Han Ying Xue! Still, even with Zhang Yang's and the Mythical Turtle's combined attacks, the boss' HP was dropping slowly. He still had more than 74% HP left! Zhang Yang would have to last for another 4 minutes before he could kill the boss!

Technically speaking, even though all Level 80 Yellow-Gold bosses have suffered a slight nerf, having their HP reduced to a certain extent, they were still not something that a player could solo-kill! However, Zhang Yang could do it since he possessed a game-breaking amount of recovery skills! {Berserker's Heal}, {Fountain of Life}, {Healing Potions}, {Troll Recovery Potion} that had been transmuted, {Shield Wall}, and if he still faced difficulties, everything could be used once more with {Rearm}!

The best fact was that the {Fountain of Life} healed in terms percentages, not fixed values. Zhang Yang's lengthy HP was at around 110,000, and 50% of that would be 55,000!

Zhang Yang used his skills one by one, consumed healing potions, [Fountain of Life], and even used the special effect of his necklace that could grant Zhang Yang an additional 5,000 damage absorption! It was unlucky for the boss to face a player such as Zhang Yang. He hacked and

slashed his way until the boss was down to his last 10% HP.

Naturally, Zhang Yang had done his part to achieve that feat, by using almost all his ulti skills.

‘Ding! Gullini has gone Berserk!’

The boss entered Berserk state after his HP dropped lower than 10%.

‘-15,782!’

His body glowed with the usual red light and gained a huge muscle mass! His power had grown so strong that one axe attack caused huge damage to Zhang Yang.

As predicted, Zhang Yang had kept {Shield Wall} on standby to anticipate the boss’ berserk mode. The Titan Wall’s equipment effect extended {Shield Wall’s} effect duration by 5 seconds! Zhang Yang now had a 15 second long {Shield Wall}.

Now that everything is ready, all that’s left to do was to slash! Slash as hard, as fast as he could!

9%! 8%! 7%!...3%!

15 seconds! {Shield Wall} ended, but Gullini still had 3% HP, 50,000 HP left!

Zhang Yang clenched his teeth and focus only on attacking.

2%...1%...0%!

‘Ding! You have killed Gullini. Obtained 1,660,000 Experience Points!’

Pak!

The Gnome jumped in shock, dropped the axe on the ground and ran away, with his tail tucked between his legs.

Zhang Yang noticed that the axe was lootable! The first battle loot from him.

[Gnome Commander Battle Axe] (Yellow-Gold, One Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 732 – 1,132

Attack Interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 358

Equip Effect: Increase 1% Critical rate.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang whistled! It was a shame that it had a 2.8 seconds attack interval. Still, it was a Level 80 Yellow-Gold weapon. After having it Identified, it should be much stronger than his current Dark Enigmatic Sword.

Zhang Yang had a sudden idea. He would use the axe for single monster fights, and the sword for mass-kills!

Zhang Yang kept the [Gnome Commander Battle Axe] and proceeded to check on the other drops. Zhang Yang was quite impressed at what Gullini dropped for him. There was a Chaos Gem that could increase his inventory size, a Magic Scroll, and a piece of Rune Craft recipe!

[Magic Scroll: Extreme Fervor] (Usable)

Use: Increases attack power by 30%, but lowers Defense by 50%. Applies to all party member. (Maximum of 10 men). Last for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 80

This Magic Scroll would work best during boss fights. Since attacking classes had little Defense, they would not lose much defense. On the other hand, + 30% damage would be a huge buff. Since everyone in Zhang Yang's little party of nine, had the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, with the attack buff...The boss would be crying before the fight even starts!

Zhang Yang took the Chaos Gem and used it immediately, increasing his inventory space to 90 slots. It was a pity that the Chaos Gem drop rate was extremely low. Players would use it immediately. Only a few would sell them. So few, that Zhang Yang's intention to increase his inventory size to 200, would just be a pipe dream. Especially, since Zhang Yang had taken up Herbalism. With {Alchemist's Intuition} the different types of

Transmuted potions had piled up and stuffed his inventory up!

Chapter 349: Bloody Shura Mauta

Having defeated Gullini, there were no more monsters in Zhang Yang's way. After passing through a narrow mountain path, he came to the top of the hill and saw a huge, tile-roofed house. Outside the tile-roofed house was a tall and muscular middle-aged man. He was working on a boxing bag, his shirtless body gleaming in the sun, as his rippled muscles worked.

[Joe. Smith] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: Leader of gang of bandits in White Stone Hills.

The boss' aggro range was wide, so it directly rushed towards Zhang Yang with its huge fists.

"Kent!" Zhang Yang shouted.

The boss blinked in surprise, and immediately stopped attacking Zhang Yang and asked, "Who are you?"

Zhang Yang laughed as he answered, "Kent. Joseph, son of old John, you kept your identity hidden for 20 years and became the leader of a gang of bandits, right?"

Zhang Yang saw that the name on top of the boss' head turned into "Kent. Joseph" and his name also turned from red tag to green tag. He was no longer aggressive.

Kent was frowning as he asked, "Young man, how do you know about this?"

"Schroeder, he told me!" Zhang Yang answered.

Kent was silent for a while, before he looked at Zhang Yang with a dangerous glint in his eyes, as he asked, "What are your intentions?"

"I something from you, which looks like this." Zhang Yang took out a

[Dimensional Key]'s fragment and shook it in front of Kent.

"Eh, how you have a Soul Fragment?" Kent revealed an obviously surprised expression.

Alright, Alousous said he did not know what a [Dimensional Key] fragment was, Tiffany called it an [Ancient Fragment], and now Kent is calling it a Soul Fragment! After a period of 1000 years, the exact name and use of [Dimensional Key] has been lost in history and named differently by the seven Descendants of The Seven Generals.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "So, you and I have some kinship! Kent, I need the fragment from you to complete a quest, what should I do to earn it from you?"

Kent pondered as he said, "Although this Soul Fragment had powerful magic, it can no longer help me anymore. Still, you'll need to put in some effort to claim it, as you said!"

Kent slowly paced in front of Zhang Yang and said, "Show me your ability first! First, you need to go to the Raven Ridge and bring me back the head of the army chieftain, Bloody Shura Mauta, who is garrisoned in Raven Ridge.

'Ding! Kent. Joseph has a quest for you: Kill Bloody Shura Mauta. Will you accept it?'

Accept.

Zhang Yang answered, "Okay, I will bring back Mauta's head to you!"

Kent laughed out loud and paused then asked, "If you broke into my place here, you probably my followers who got in your way, right?"

"Yes, you are right! Am I in trouble now?"

"No!" Kent shook his head happily and continued, "Those people were the disciples of Spectres, the real bandits. I recruited them, only to use them to fight against the filthy mercenaries, just a dog eat dog method to fight against the mercenaries, their lives truly mean nothing to me!"

Damn, this Kent is so ruthless!

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey, followed the mountain path and went down the mountain.

[Kill Bloody Shura Mauta] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Kent. Joseph requires you to slaughter Bloody Shura Mauta! This man is a ringleader in the mercenary and he is a sadistic killer who loves the sight of blood, but he is quite capable, so you better bring some friends! Hint: Bloody Shura Mauta is garrisoned at the east of Raven Ridge.

Progress: Hand over the head of Bloody Shura Mauta to Kent. Joseph 0/1

Zhang Yang went as fast as he could and reached Raven Ridge in a short period of time.

This ridge was much more barren than White Stone Peak. There were graves could be seen on the ridge from far away, also, there were red-eyed ravens that perched atop gravestones and made loud raspy calls as they took off.

Raven Ridge was not high and steep, and its upland was quite flat. From the hillside, the surroundings of the ridge were surrounded by a tall wall and only a passage on the hill path could be accessed.

Zhang Yang looked from far away and he saw guards standing watch atop the wall and heavily armed soldiers everywhere. These guards were Level 82 elite monsters!

There were at least hundreds of elite monsters already in sight, not including the ones who were within it! They also tended to patrol in groups, thus, it was impossible for Zhang Yang to lure them out separately for him to eliminate them one by one!

With so many monsters at once, even for Zhang Yang, he needed to think about this more than twice!

Well, better avoid these monsters and look for the boss directly!

Zhang Yang thought to himself and activated {Dig}!

Once {Dig} was activated, the soil beneath Zhang Yang's legs

immediately became soft like water and Zhang Yang sunk into the soil. It was like swimming in the water, so he "swam" all the way up the hill.

{Dig} was simply magical, even if Zhang Yang was deep beneath the soil, he still could see the scene on the ground, right through the soil.

Although the movement speed was decreased by 50% when using {Dig}, Zhang Yang did not need to clear the monsters, so he made really good progress. The 10 minutes duration of {Dig} was sufficient for him to move more than halfway up the hill!

{Dig}'s effect ended, and Zhang Yang was ejected back up to the ground and appeared in a camp.

Three guard monsters immediately surrounded and attacked Zhang Yang.

[Raven Ridge Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 82,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang used {Block} and normal attacks at the same time, and after getting enough Rage, he launched {Blast Wave} which caused the three monsters to be stunned at the same time. He took the opportunity to summon Whitey.

"Roar!" Whitey immediately appeared and started clawing into one of the guards. Zhang Yang quickly rode on Whitey and his attributes skyrocketed.

Zhang Yang could use {Dig}, but his pet could not, and only could run on the surface of the ground while following him. Therefore, Zhang Yang unsummoned Whitey so that it would not be attacked by the monsters.

However, these three elite monsters were pieces of cake for Zhang Yang. After launching a few attacks, Zhang Yang defeated the monsters which dropped a few pieces of silk clothes.

Zhang Yang went out of the camp and continued moving up the hill. At

that moment, he was a quarter away from the top of the hill.

"Intruder!"

Once Zhang Yang stepped out of the camp, a flashing axe rapidly came at his head.

Zhang Yang stared at the attacker and realized that it was still an elite guard, similar to those in the camp. Still not a major threat.

All the elite monsters were like dummies for Zhang Yang, they quickly fell defeated and dropped a few copper coins.

"What a poor system!" Zhang Yang sighed. In order for this system to maintain the value of gold coins, the output of coins had been severely decreased.

Zhang Yang felt depressed about it as he continued moving up the hill. Although he had avoided at least three-quarters of the monsters, he still needed to clear a lot of minions in front of him. After hacking his way through, Zhang Yang finally reached the top of the hill in 30 minutes later. He turned back and thought that if he never used {Dig}, he would probably have had to spend at least two hours to reach the top of the hill.

A huge camp appeared in front of Zhang Yang. There were four guards who were guarding the camp, and because of the camp was tightly enclosed, Zhang Yang could not see the situation inside the camp. He had no idea where Bloody Shura Mauta was!

Therefore, Zhang Yang decided to summon the Mythical Turtle first, as players were not allowed to change pets during combat!

After Zhang Yang summoned Mythical Turtle, he threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the guards.

‘-2,567!’

"Where did this thief come from? You actually dare to come to Raven Ridge to seek for death, don't you know our master is Bloody Shura Mauta?!" the four guards raised their weapons and rushed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately sat on the Mythical Turtle and said, "I'm coming to kill Bloody Shura Mauta today! Big turtle, rush towards them!"

Mythical Turtle immediately used its fastest speed to move its limbs. It was like a slow motion scene. One flipper was slowly raised up, and Zhang Yang actually stared at it, waiting for the moment for it to come back down on the ground! Not even one step was made!

"Damn, what a shame!" Zhang Yang laughed, wielded his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and dashed towards the four guards himself.

"Big turtle, I have already ran for 10 meters and you have not yet even made one step, what's wrong?!" Zhang Yang ridiculed at Mythical Turtle as he launched attacks towards those four guards.

Luckily Mythical Turtle did not protest, otherwise, it would have definitely given a slap to Zhang Yang with a huge flipper.

After a round of clashing, one of the guards with the least HP suddenly shouted loudly, "Master Mauta, the assassin is here! Assassin is here!"

"Which vulgar little thief actually dares to assassinate me!" a burly man strode out of the camp. His top was undone, which exposed his hairy chest and a few ferocious scars!

He held a sharp saber in his right hand, while his left held a wine bottle. He took a swig from it as he spoke.

[Bloody Shura Mauta] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 84

HP: 1,680,000

Defense: 1,500

The same guard who had shouted immediately rushed to the feet of Mauta and said, "Master, there's the Assassin!"

"Useless crap, you could not even handle an assassin, why would I still need you?!" Mauta stared and lobbed the guard's head off with his sharp saber.

"Puff!" The head rolled off and stopped at a pile of rocks. The headless body was spewing out a lot of blood like a water spring.

His body soon fell over.

F*ck, that was so cruel. It really was the Bloody Shura, cruel to his followers as well!

"Ha ha ha, Lord Kazalo had me stay back here for these few days, I was getting terribly bored, and now someone automatically shows up in front of me. At least I get to have some fun with this toy now!"

Mauta put the saber on his shoulder and strode towards Zhang Yang, his saber still dripping with fresh blood!

Chapter 350: Search for the [Titan's Chest Plate]

Zhang Yang hastened the fight to his limits, as fighting one boss and three minions at the same time would be ridiculous, even for him. He quickened his attacks upon the elite guards!

Fortunately, those three elite guards were already close to death. Under Zhang Yang's storm-like bombardment, they soon fell, groaning their last.

"Fool, I'm going to slice you into pieces and make you scream for three days and three nights. Now, entertain me as you struggle futilely against my might!" Mauta smiled evilly as he swung his saber at Zhang Yang.

‘-6,273!’

The boss' damage was very high, more than 6,000 points of damage in a single slash! Although the HP of Yellow-Gold bosses in Level 80 area maps were reduced, their attacks were still very strong!

Zhang Yang rode on the Mythical Turtle and stood motionless at that spot like a dummy, as he could not even move around to change positions!

Zhang Yang's current situation could be compared to how people would not have time to cover their ears when the crackling of thunder hammers their senses! Although the speed of the boss' attack was not as fast as thunder, the Mythical Turtle was simply so slow, that Zhang Yang had no choice but to receive all the attacks!

Of course, the movement speed aside, the Mythical Turtle was immensely powerful! It had a high attack power and a high HP limit which were sufficient to offset the weakness of a slow movement speed!

Moreover, the boss' attacks were fast, so even if Zhang Yang rode on Whitey, Whitey would be unable to evade the attacks! But if the boss uses any AoE skills like {Rain of Fire} or {Frost Arrow}, Whitey could at least avoid them!

After Zhang Yang added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss,

Mythical Turtle and his attacks were instantly magnified. Mythical Turtle was especially affected by this, its {Tear} caused more than 8,000 points of damage on the boss, and almost caused 17,000 points of damage on critical strikes!

Currently in China server, there was no players' single attack could be higher than the Mythical Turtle!

Zhang Yang whistled at the high values floating before his eyes.

"Let me hear your screams, weakling!" the boss flourished his saber, drooling from the mouth as his bloodshot, dilated eyes gazed upon his foe.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, undaunted. "Today, I'll be the one doing the slaughtering, Shuro!"

"Come, I do not fear anyone!" Mauta was extremely angry, his eyes bulged as he stared at Zhang Yang.

98%, 95%, 92%... Boss' HP started to steadily drop.

90%!

"Ha ha ha, what a fun toy, let me have fun with you!" the boss laughed maniacally and swung his saber, stomping on the ground.

The light reflected by his saber had been transmitted into the soil, and with the boss at the center, the ground within a radius of 30 meters suddenly flashed with rays of light exiting the cracks in the ground!

'Ding! Bloody Shuro Mauta has released {Shroud of Swords}!'

Zhang Yang's first response was to pull on the reins and try to escape, but he was riding on Mythical Turtle, who barely budged. Zhang Yang could only sit there in resignation and receive another attack full-on!

Shwoop, shwoop, shwoop!

Countless of dazzling swords light shot up into the sky where they blew up like fireworks. The pieces then came raining down! More swords continued shooting out of the ground as this went on!

'-612!'

‘-612!’

...

As the rays of light came down, ten damage texts appeared above Zhang Yang's head, all at once!

Zhang Yang exhaled in relief, as the boss' ulti damage only did a total of around 6,000 HP damage. In fact, each wave of boss' damage could have dealt up to 5,000 points, but Zhang Yang's immense attack immunity reduced it to slightly over 600 points!

If the attackers from his party had received this kind of damage from the boss, within 10 seconds, the boss could have caused 50,000 points of damage! Besides, this {Shroud of Swords} was an AoE skill, so the party would have suffered massive casualties if they were here!

Luckily, the 50,000 points of damage was not released all at once, otherwise, Zhang Yang would have cried out in dismay!

"Ei, little guy, you are quite capable!" Mauta took out his saber and slashed it at Zhang Yang once again. The boss had been stuck in a pose for the last 10 seconds as he casted the skill, causing only around 6,000 points, which was an absolute waste of time for the two of them!

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Bloody Shuro, I told you I'm the one who's going to chop your head off!"

"Arrogant and ignorant fellow, I will rip your bones out and crush them before your dying eyes!" Mauta roared with anger, with Zhang Yang's taunts getting on his nerves.

Both of them continued fighting intensely!

With Zhang Yang's current equipment, skills, and items preparation, he could totally fight a Yellow-Gold boss alone! Besides, the pitiful Mauta only had one AoE skill of note, which was the {Shroud of Swords}! This skill was designed to fight against many players but when the boss used this skill to fight against Zhang Yang alone, it turned out to be a highly inefficient move!

80%... 50%... 20%... the boss' HP depleted dramatically, as the DPS of Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle together was more than 7,000, a value that was actually far more powerful than a normal 5-man party!

"Bastard, it hurts, I'll pay it back tenfold! I'm going to use the most brutal methods to torture you!" as Mauta's HP dropped bit by bit, his dialogue had also started changing from an arrogant tone to manic, angry tone of disbelief.

Zhang Yang did not bother with the back and forth of words any longer and continued slashing madly on the boss. He could not let his guard down, who knew if the boss had an emergency skill, or a ridiculous berserk mode?!

At 10%, the boss' whole body turned blood red, and he entered his "berserk" state, which increased his damage by 50%!

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to activate the [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor]'s special effect! It was time for a trial run.

Instantaneously, a green-skinned Beastman's shadow emerged from Zhang Yang's ring. It had the look of a Beastman's Prophet, holding a staff that looked ancient and moved with a speed that matched its aged appearance.

The summoned old Beastman slowly waved the staff in its hand, and a globe of light gradually gathered up at top of its staff.

The special effect of the ring releases the soul of the ancestor, and apparently, would cause massive damage to the enemy. But, this old Beastman did not look like it was going to do anyone any harm, and Zhang Yang even worried that the old Beastman would die of old age at any time!

"Ha ha ha, weakling, are you going to rely on this? Is this old man your grandfather? Ha ha ha, let me kill both of you together!" Mauta laughed out loud as he lifted his saber and swung at Zhang Yang and the green-skinned Beastman!

{Dividing Slash}!

The saber directly went through the old beastman's shadow and struck

Zhang Yang.

‘-11,202!’

No time to play around with a "Berserk" boss!

At that moment, the old beastman's spell was finally prepared! In fact, it had a two second cast time, but Zhang Yang somehow felt like that took ages! Perhaps it's due to the fact that he was on a slow turtle, accompanied by a slow shadow of an ancestor!

Shush!

A mass of bright light emerged from the old beastman's staff and shot towards the boss.

Although the old beastman was slow in motion, that mass of bright light flew through the air. The boss had no chance of evading the light. It struck him squarely in the chest!

Zip!

A few strong flashes of electric current fizzled over the boss' body, like sparkling lights that danced through his body, what a spectacular view!

A debuff icon appeared on the boss' head.

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}: Receives extremely strong electric current bombardment, unable to move, receives 10,000 Nature damage every second. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "You will be struck by lightning if you talk too much nonsense, didn't you know that?"

By taking the advantage of the 10 seconds, Zhang Yang quickly unleashed a flurry of attacks.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle produced about 7,000 DPS, and within 10 seconds, they successfully emptied the boss' remaining 170,000 HP!

"Ah!" Mauta uttered a pitiful cry, his tall, huge body collapsed to the ground.

Finally, they killed the boss!

Starting from the Level 80 area maps, Yellow-Gold bosses were becoming pushovers, as their HP had been drastically reduced!

Zhang Yang reached out and grabbed the boss' drops. Firstly, he picked up Mauta's bloody head, as it was the quest item. It had priority above all else.

After completing the quest, then only did Zhang Yang start to check the loot.

The boss dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, the upper parts of a cloth armor and a leather armor, which were of no use to him. The rest were seven pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, which would be automatically sent to the shop!

These few days, Zhang Yang had been acting alone. Lacking Zhang Yang's guidance, the number of the equipment hunted by the 9-man party had decreased rapidly, which led to Fatty Han complaining that Zhang Yang had no sense of brotherhood, and did not share any of the fortune with him!

Zhang Yang laughed and divided the profits of Little Merchandise Shop, and distributed it to his main force. Each member had a 5% share of the shop. Based on their shared system, the hunter of the equipment made no difference, and everyone would receive the money every month, anyway.

The 5% shares cannot be underestimated, although the profit of Little Merchandise Shop was not as high as the territory, the Little Merchandise Shop actually generated about 30,000,000 of net profit, and 5% of it would be 1,500,000. This was a stable income, so after a year, the members of Zhang Yang's gang would become millionaires!

Everyone in the main force was there because of their skills, save for Fatty Han. By bribing these people with 10 million as their annual incomes, Zhang Yang got back way more than what he's paying for!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, when he participated in A-Class Professional League, his annual income was already more than 10 million. Besides, Hundred Shots and Lost Dream were also in the S-Class bracket!

Zhang Yang unsummoned Mythical Turtle, and then used {Burrow} to leave Raven Ridge. After that, he summoned Whitey to go back to White Stone Peak and made his way back to Kent. Joseph.

"Pa!"

Zhang Yang threw Mauta's bloody head at his feet.

Kent was clearly surprised, as he bent down to pick up Mauta's head. He had a look at it, and then threw it down the hill. "Young man, color me impressed! I honestly did not expect you to get the job done so soon!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Kill Bloody Shura Mauta. Obtained 2,000,000 experience points!'

Zhang Yang smiled as he said, "So, I should have proven my strength, now!"

Kent crossed his arms and said, "Steady now, young man!"

Kent looked at Zhang Yang and said, "Come, let's fight, I want to know how strong you are!"

Suddenly, Kent's name changed from a green tag to a red tag!

Shush!

Kent swiftly punched at Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield and activated {Block}.

'-120,359!'

{Block} was invalid and Zhang Yang only had 1 HP remaining, Zhang Yang could not help but fall off his mount, where he sunk to a knee and started coughing out blood!

"Ha ha, young man, confidence is good, but too much of a good thing, is never good!" Joseph lowered his fist and his name changed back to green.

Obviously, the system deliberately made the player fail. Otherwise, no

Level 85 Yellow-Gold boss would be so powerful!

Zhang Yang was left with no choice. Obviously, Zhang Yang would have to initiate another new story quest.

Kent slowly paced back and forth as he said, "If it is so easy to defeat Kazalo, I would have killed him 20 years ago! He was stronger than I am, and if you cannot even handle one of my attacks, how in the world are you going to defeat him?!"

Zhang Yang was eating health recovery cakes. He asked, "Kent, does that mean that we are going to let Kazalo continue harming the innocent people?"

Kent sighed, "I know that there is a strong relic that can defeat Kazalo, but it is extremely difficult to get this relic! For 20 years, I have been looking around for this relic, but I am surrounded by enemies all around me. I cannot leave this spot safely. Not that I am afraid of death, but once I die, there will be no one else to fight against Kazalo anymore!"

Here it comes! Zhang Yang spoke up, "Kent, let me help you search for that relic!"

"You?" Kent looked at Zhang Yang and hesitated, "Although you are quite capable, to ask you to search for a [Titan Chest Plate] would be ridiculous!"

En? [Titan Chest Plate]!

Zhang Yang's eyes shone. He speedily rushed to the front of Kent and got so close to Kent's face that their noses almost touched, and then asked, "Did you just say, [Titan Chest Plate]?"

Kent actually blushed, and he quickly pushed Zhang Yang away and said, "Young man, you look good and all, but I only like women, so please stay away from me!"

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "Kent, tell me where the [Titan Chest Plate] is, and I will definitely find it for you!"

Kent hesitated a while and then said, "Okay, since you insist, I'll tell you!"

Kent looked into the sky as he started telling a story, "According to legend, in the prehistoric age of mythology, the powerful God of Titans created a Titan set equipment which had supreme, godly power! Unfortunately, in the Gods' war, even the immortal relics were not spared. So, the Titan set equipment also took great damage in the war. The Titan set equipment lost its original supreme power, and the eight Titan equipment set parts were scattered in every corner of the world! Although the Titan set equipment had lost its godly power, in the hands of mortals, they would still overpower everything else!"

Chapter 351: Blackwater Abyss

The Titan set equipment actually had such a great backstory?

Since the Titan set equipment was created by the God of Titans, even if the Titan set equipment is already damaged, how should it just be a Violet-Platinum grade?!

Zhang Yang could not hold his doubt anymore, so he unequipped his [Titan Wall] and handed over to Kent, asking, "Kent, I came across this [Titan Wall], at least that's what it calls itself, can you have a look at it?!"

"Oh?" Kent was a little surprised and took the shield and examined it carefully. He focused on the shield, and after a while, he passed the shield back to Zhang Yang, smiling as he said, "Young man, this [Titan Wall] is an imitation. Although it is not the real [Titan Wall], I have to confess that the craftsmanship of this shield is very intricate, it faithfully reproduces the image of the original. Imitation or not, it does have power in its own right, the one who forged this shield must have been very skillful!"

Imitation! Then, this perfectly explains why there were so many Titan sets around. They were all just imitations, this allowed the game to produce as many sets of it as it liked.

Zhang Yang laughed as he shook his head at the cheap method of covering up a plot hold, and asked, "So, this [Titan Chest Plate] that you are looking for is the real deal?"

"Exactly!" Kent nodded his head and continued, "The genuine Titan equipment contains immensely powerful strength! The [Titan Chest Plate] is able to resist all mortal attacks. If we equipped it, even Kazalo will have a hard time harming us!"

Zhang Yang earnestly asked, "Kent, please tell me, how do I search for this [Titan Chest Plate]?"

Kent hesitated again, and then said, "[Titan Chest Plate] is in the deepest depth of Abyss of Blackwater, and it is guarded by a huge python! This d*mned huge python is no ordinary beast, as it understands the power and

value of the [Titan Chest Plate]! When I said guard, I meant that the chest plate is in its stomach! The d*mn thing swallowed it whole to start absorbing the power from within. That's some completely messed up digestive system! D*mn it, the power within the [Titan Chest Plate] is going to be completely absorbed at this point!"

Zhang Yang quickly said, "I will reclaim the [Titan Chest Plate] right away!"

Kent nodded his head in approval. "Then, you must be careful!"

'Ding! Kent. Joseph has a quest for you: Snatch back the [Titan Chest Plate]. Will you accept it?'

Accept!

Zhang Yang left White Stone Hills once again and headed to the Abyss of Blackwater.

[Snatch back [Titan Chest Plate]] (Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: Kent. Joseph requires you to head for the Abyss of Blackwater immediately to snatch back the [Titan Chest Plate] from huge python! Warrior, you must hurry up, every single day that passes, the Huge Python Mopy will absorb even more strength from the [Titan Chest Plate]! Abyss of Blackwater is to the north of Grand Canyon, you better bring a few friends, as it is not easy to fight against Huge Python Mopy!

Progress: Snatch back [Titan Chest Plate] 0/1

This was an S grade difficulty quest!

If it was a B or A grade difficulty quest, Zhang Yang would have completed the quest alone without hesitation! But an S grade difficulty quest, the boss would never be an enfeebled Yellow-Gold boss. It had to be a Violet-Platinum boss, the toughest tier of bosses at this stage of the game!

Zhang Yang had planned to invite Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang to come over and defeat the boss together, the quest had a time limit! Although the quest did not clearly mention the time limit, being an S

grade difficulty quest, there should be quest score, so if he completes it in a speed beyond the prediction of the developers, he might once again score a beyond perfect rating!

Zhang Yang thought again and then decided not to waste time and immediately looked for the boss. For this, he has decided to use the last charge remaining of [Friendship Jade]!

Of course, Zhang Yang would still bring along Han Ying Xue. If the two of them proved enough to be able to defeat the boss, Zhang Yan would definitely keep the last charge of the [Friendship Jade]. Since Han Ying Xue just needed to ask for [Lover's Charm: Yin] from Sun Xin Yu, she could immediately teleport to Zhang Yang at a short notice.

Zhang Yang made the call to Han Ying Xue as he was rushing to the Abyss of Blackwater and said, "B*tchy, ask ice cube for the Lover's Charm, I need you to heal me soon!"

"No need to be so troublesome, the Lover's Charm is always with me!" Han Ying Xue smiled sweetly and said, "That frosty lady want me to return the Lover's Charm to her? Humph, that's not happening!"

Zhang Yang felt a headache starting up. These two ladies better not start a fuss out of nothing now!

"Then, come over to my place now. If you are here, I'll get things done even quicker!" Zhang Yang said.

"Thank you for summoning me, Your Highness!" Han Ying Xue said in an awfully melodramatic tone, and immediately appeared beside Zhang Yang.

"You intend to play a role of Lady Yang, or Zhao Feiyan?"

"Wu Zetian, fated to cause her husband's death, stopped her son from robbing power off the throne, and gained independence as the emperor herself!" Han Ying Xue threw a flirtatious look to Zhang Yang and summoned her Storm and Gale Direwolf. The Red Gold Crab could only increase her movement speed by 100% when on the ground. Of course, it would shine during combat.

Both of them rushed towards the North, and they reached the north of Grand Canyon in a short period of time. There was black liquid flowing in a river stream, and the river extended to a huge, black lake. The river was flowing so fast that no raft could possibly survive the rough journey. Foam and mud frothed about.

"How do we proceed? Are you actually planning to swim in this filthy ditch?" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyeballs as she said.

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Black water wouldn't necessarily be smelly, perhaps it is petroleum, that's black gold there!"

"Yo, it is sticky and disgusting!" Han Ying Xue complained, "If I knew that, I should have come after you've made it through here!"

"Cut the bullsh*t, just summon your Red Gold Crab and move!" Zhang Yang shouted. He knew that Han Ying Xue enjoyed dominance. However, if one were to strongly assert command over her, she would give in and obey.

Although Han Ying Xue pursed her lips, she still obediently summoned the Red Gold Crab.

Zhang Yang also summoned his Mythical Turtle, and the both of them entered the black water river, and followed the current!

The river rapidly went into the valley, going deeper and deeper down, until they were plunged into total darkness. After what seemed like hours, they saw light once again, and saw the high walls of the cliffsides on either side of them.

Quack!

Vultures flew over their head, except that they were skeletal, spectral, huge birds without any feathers or flesh. Other than that, they acted as they did in life, the scavengers of carcasses that they were.

On both sides of the river, there were countless skeletal animals of different types. They all blindly wandered around, their eyes flashing the familiar green.

The flowing speed of the black river gradually slowed down at a certain point, eventually stagnating. Still, the entrance to the abyss seemed far away. They could still swim along the river, without having to bump into the spectral animals at this point.

But, Zhang Yang said, "B*tchy, let's go ashore!"

"Why?" Han Ying Xue was a lazy person, and the less she had to work, the better.

"There are herbs!" Zhang Yang smiled, as he could see the appearance of plenty of herbs on the both sides of the river in the mini map. Besides, there were also rare medicinal materials which required long duration of respawns, such as [Ancient Vines]. These vines took up to a full day to respawn, they were incredibly rare!

Once they went ashore, a Blackwater Sabre-Toothed Skeletal Tiger dashed towards them, its sharp teeth snapping at Han Ying Xue, who was the closest to it.

[Blackwater Sabre-Toothed Skeletal Tiger] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 84,000

Defense: 450

‘-6,102!’

A damage text immediately appeared above Han Ying Xue's head. Fortunately, she was already mounted on her crab, giving her almost 50,000 HP. The attack barely fazed her!

"Silly Yu, quickly save me!" By right, Han Ying Xue should be much stronger than Zhang Yang at this rate, thanks to her pet mount! The pet mount would be responsible for attacking, and she could simply heal herself, how would any elite monster be a threat to her?

But, Han Ying Xue's first reaction was to ask for help from Zhang Yang. She knew the right tone, and the right role to play the b*tch in distress. She just knew how to trigger a man's desire. Men would die protecting her,

without really knowing why.

Zhang Yang, fully aware of this, shrugged and lifted his sword. He dashed towards the skeletal tiger. First, he used {Provoke} to pull away the monster's aggro and then took turns attacking, along with Mythical Turtle's bites. They definitely had the monster's attention now.

At that moment, Han Ying Xue had already trained her Red Gold Crab to Level 76, so their attacks were quite impressive, although they could not be compared to the Mythical Turtle. But, Han Ying Xue and her Red Gold Crab's attack power would already bring shame to most dedicated attackers! With the two game-breaking pets, the Blackwater Sabre-Toothed Skeletal Tiger became a pile of bone fragments within a short period of time. It gave a lot of experience points to Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

"It is great to ride on the coattails!" Han Ying Xue came down from her pet mount and looted the monster's drops.

Zhang Yang raised one of Mythical Turtle's right legs and flapped it in front of Han Ying Xue.

"What are you doing?" Han Ying Xue stared at Zhang Yang.

"I thought you wanted to ride on the coattails?"

"..."

With the presence of Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang pulled all the monsters without hesitation. He summoned Whitey and stayed among the monsters, and then turned around and pulled about 10 monsters at once. After that, he started group killing.

Unfortunately, the chance of triggering the [Dark Enigmatic Sword]'s special effect had greatly reduced after Zhang Yang had reached Level 80. Although 1% and 2% was only a difference of 1%, it was half its value!

However, [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was still a godly AoE weapon that could not be replaced at the current phase. Although the chance of triggering special effect of {Horizontal Sweep} had been reduced a lot, it still did impressive damage when using {Blast Wave}, his main monster-

killing skill.

Five to six minutes later, there were a lot of bones around Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Bypassers could have easily mistaken them as grave robbers or something, at that rate.

Han Ying Xue happily looted the monster' drops all over the ground, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had a good habit of not missing any loot. Even single pieces of copper coins would be swept off the floor! In the meantime, Zhang Yang was busy harvesting the herbs.

After looting the drops and harvesting the herbs, both of them continued moving forward and they pulled another wave of monsters and started clearing them off.

Han Ying Xue was very satisfied. Although Zhang Yang was a Guardian, he had the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and a bunch of AoE skills which surpassed the attacking power of attackers! Although Wei Yan Er also excelled in group killing, she was limited to normal monsters only, as she would not last against the combined attacks of an elite crowd!

Moreover, as Zhang Yang had both high defense and strong attacks, nothing wiped out huge waves of monsters better than he did!

By staying together with Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue's leveling efficiency was at its highest, and she could do her healing with one eye closed. Naturally, Han Ying Xue would wish to ride on Zhang Yang's coattails more than anyone else.

Chapter 352: Huge Python Mopy

Both of them continued pushing forward like locusts crossing the border, not missing out any herbs or monsters!

Still, they had to tread carefully. Up ahead, the black river swirled into a huge and bottomless vortex. If both of them aren't careful, they might actually end up being flushed down it!

If both of them really did get caught by the current, there would be no escape! Either they would have to use a [Teleportation Scroll] to teleport back to the city, or commit suicide and resurrect at a graveyard! Both of these were totally unnecessary expenses.

Three hours later, they came to the deepest of the abyss. Both of them had already obtained plenty of experience points and herbs, and Han Ying Xue's backpack was already fully stuffed.

They could see from afar, that a huge python had coiled its body under a huge rock. Its body was thicker than a train!

The huge python's scales were thick and heavy, and each scale was as big as a manhole cover, which made them drip cold sweat.

Before they approached it, both of them could already smell a nausea-inducing stench.

Han Ying Xue used her hands to cover her mouth and nose, and then complained, "How long has this smelly snake gone without a bath? Oh my gosh, I can't even breathe, how are we supposed to fight it?!"

"Adjust your olfactory sensitivity!"

Both of them were fine after adjusting their olfactory sensitivity.

[Huge Python Mopy] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 2,400

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyeballs and asked, "Silly Yu, don't tell me that you plan to take on this Violet-Platinum boss with just the two of us?"

"Yeap, that's the idea!"

"Brother, you are going to die fighting against this boss, and I'm not going to die with you. I'm heading back to the city! Good luck!" Han Ying Xue was already pulling out a [Teleportation Scroll].

Zhang Yang anxiously said, "Let's just give it a try, if it's too tough, I will use the [Friendship Jade]!"

Han Ying Xue kept her [Teleportation Scroll], rode on Red Gold Crab and stayed behind Zhang Yang, saying, "Silly Yu, carry on then!"

First, Zhang Yang equipped the [Friendship Jade], and then moved a few steps forward and summoned the Mythical Turtle. After that, he threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss.

‘-2,451!’

{Spear of Obliteration} had the special effect of ignoring defense. Although the boss had 2,400 of defense, it could not negate the damage from the {Spear of Obliteration}.

"Si!"

Huge Python Mopy stuck its red tongue out and angrily slid towards Zhang Yang.

40 meters away, its huge tail was lashed out like a giant whip and struck Zhang Yang.

‘{Block}!’

Zhang Yang responded swiftly as always, he raised his [Titan Wall] and blocked the attack.

Huge Python Mopy twisted its long body and wound itself around Zhang Yang.

‘-11,824!’

Zhang Yang immediately received a huge amount of damage.

Han Ying Xue quickly healed Zhang Yang's HP by spamming all her healing spells.

After the boss was done twisting around Zhang Yang's body, it immediately moved back and lashed its tail at Zhang Yang again.

‘-12,012!’

Violet-Platinum bosses were really strong and ferocious, this one was dealing 5 digits of damage at a time!

Luckily Zhang Yang was mounted atop his turtle, with a HP limit that exceeded 120,000. Any other tanks would have been crushed to death by now! At this stage of the game, battle mounts were a necessity if players intended to stay ahead of everyone else. Therefore, the presence of battle mounts made a huge difference to battles!

Huge Python Mopy's attacks were random and unpredictable, it occasionally swung and simply whip its tail which caused strong whirlwind like hurricanes. Besides, this was an AoE attack, even if Han Ying Xue was standing 30 meters away from boss also received the attacks, thus, ‘-19,000’ high damage text popped up on top of her head!

Han Ying Xue quickly yelled, "Silly Yu, quickly, use the [Friendship Jade]!"

Two waves of AoE had pushed her to the limit. Healing Zhang Yang alone was already a monumental task for her, but she was taking heavy damage herself, it was impossible to carry on!

After all, Han Ying Xue was only Level 78, equipped with a Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment! If she was equipped with her Violet-Platinum set equipment, she definitely could heal Zhang Yang and herself and keep up with the battle!

Zhang Yang saw the boss using its tail to wind up for yet another huge attack, and knew then, that it was an impossible battle! He immediately activated the [Friendship Jade] and used the last remaining summon.

"Roar!" Smaug's phantom appeared and roared towards the sky, wielding his Blood Shadow Blade. He dashed towards Huge Python Mopy without

saying a word!

‘-143,210!’

Smaug’s sword came raining down, causing a ridiculous amount of damage!

Huge Python Mopy furiously turned towards Smaug’s phantom. But fighting against a Holy boss, was too much for a mere Violet-Platinum boss!

Both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue only needed to stand aside and watch the battle between the two bosses.

Unfortunately, I had to use the last charge of the Friendship Jade. I can only dream of getting another!

As Zhang Yang watched Smaug’s phantom toy with the Huge Python Mopy, he sighed dejectedly.

"Silly Yu, that [Friendship Jade] has already given you three Violet-Platinum bosses. If you don’t curb that greed of yours, lightning will strike you down!" Han Ying Xue said.

Zhang Yang was shocked and said, "Evil b*tch, should I start calling you an evil w*tch instead? You read my mind!"

"Please, your face said it all!" Han Ying Xue scoffed.

"How is the little brat now?" Zhang Yang tried to divert the topic.

"She’s still pretty depressed. At least she’s a little more talkative these days, even saying that she has decided to go for a good university!"

Zhang Yang felt worried for Wei Yan Er and said, "With her half-hearted attitude, how is she going to achieve anything?!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyeballs and said, "Yan Er is actually really smart, you know!"

"Hey! If you are telling lies, you will be punished by lightning strikes!"

"..."

As they continued chatting, Huge Python Mopy was fighting for it’s life

against the powerful strikes of a Holy boss. At this stage of the game, it's like a cheat code being activated. Just how powerful would the Holy bosses in the future be?

'Ding! The party you are in has killed Huge Python Mopy. Obtained 4,250,000 experience points!'

Within two minutes, Huge Python Mopy was slain, and a huge corpse sprawled like an overturned train, with a length of several hundred meters!

Smaug's phantom went back to Zhang Yang's side, sheathed his blade, and stood upright like a loyal bodyguard.

"Wow, I'm going to be rich!" this time, Han Ying Xue took no notice of the slime and muck, but instead, ran to the smelly corpse and picked up the coins, equipment, skill books and ETC which had spilled all over the floor.

"Ei?" after Han Ying Xue picked 10 gold coins, she wanted to pick up a very ancient looking armor, but was unable to. She asked, "Silly Yu, what's wrong with this thing? Why I can't pick this equipment up?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "This is my quest item, it's not for you to take!"

"Ah, so you had that good a quest and you never even bothered to mention it to me, let alone share it. Finally, I have seen through you!" Han Ying Xue grumbled.

"Silly girl, I wanted to share the quest with you when you arrived, but the quest assistant notification showed that I am unable to share the quest with other players! It's a single player quest!"

Zhang Yang walked over and picked up the armor. The quest notification rang in his ears, signifying the fulfillment of a part of the quest!

[Titan Chest Plate] (Quest Item)

Description: Although this piece of armor has been dilapidated, you can

still feel the immense power within it! You feel like an ant before its divine might!

Zhang Yang had a feeling that this armor would be his, by the end of the quest! However, it should be an imitation like his [Titan Wall], as Celestial equipment would not appear at Level 80 stages of the game!

Han Ying Yue continued picking up the rest of the drops.

[Scepter of Snake King] (Violet-Platinum, Staff)

Magic Weapon Attack: 1,897–2,297

Equipment: Each time you cast spells, there is a 1% chance of obtaining extra 200 spell damage bonus.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

"Ha ha, my hands are lucky!" Han Ying Xue gleefully admired the staff. Staves did not have attack speed limits, as casting speeds depended on the skills themselves.

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "You probably used up all the luck there, I won't be getting anything now!"

"Ha ha, my luck will get you a suitable weapon!" Han Ying Xue assured Zhang Yang as she thumped her chest.

Her fist sunk into her huge, soft melons each time it made contact, inadvertently jiggling the rest of the soft flesh around it. Zhang Yang's eyes wandered, and lingered upon the marvelous sight.

"Silly Yu, you miss them, don't you?" Han Ying Xue thrust her chest out at him, the bountiful mounds of sinful creations jiggling in response. She then cackled like a witch.

"F*ck you! Evil witch, they would have drowned you to death if you lived in ancient times!" Zhang Yang covered his nose as he said. Blood was threatening to spurt out from it at any moment.

"Ha ha ha" Han Ying Xue laughed to her heart's content, before she

continued picking up the boss' loot.

[Snake's Spur] (Violet-Platinum, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 599–799

Attack Interval: 1.3 seconds

DPS: 538

Equipment: All attacks ignore target's 500 defense value.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

"Damn, this is a great offhand weapon for Assassins!" Zhang Yang exclaimed.

Chapter 353: Slaying the Enemy's Chieftain

Assassins excelled in stealth attacks. Emerging from their stealth mode, they would acquire an additional 30% damage over their initial damage output. With two weapons to wave around, they could also stun players of any professions, at similar levels and similar grade of equipment. As long as they weren't dealing with tankers, no one else stood a chance against them!

But, when engaging in a boss battle, the attack speed of the secondary weapon was too rapid, resulting in the extremely small amount of damage output due to balancing algorithm of the game. The faster the attack rate of the weapon, the lower the damage output of the weapon. So, when they are attacking a boss with extremely high defense, they would basically be like ants trying to bite into the hide of an elephant! From this point of view, defense points would always nullify their attacking power, so they could only depend on superior equipment grades and excellent player skills, along with proper mana management to cover for this weakness.

This secondary weapon dagger [Snake's Spur] actually had a special effect that ignores 500 defense points, prior to identification! At the current stage of the game, regular Violet-Platinum bosses had about 2,400 defense points, and after being smashed with 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, they would be left with only approximately 1,200 defense points. With the special effect of this dagger, the defense points should be deducted further down by 600 points or so, leaving only 400 to 500 defense points on the bosses. This would definitely allow the wielder to unleash quite an astounding amount of damage!

This dagger was ideal!

"Humph, that 'cold' labeled one has the advantage, this time!" Han Ying Xue curled her lips as she threw the dagger over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was wise enough to not get himself caught in the middle of a fight between two women, men usually die horribly when in such

positions!

[Mask of the Shadowy Death] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: 48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Agility: +378

Equip: Reduces the cool down time of {Take Aim} by 1 second.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

Although leather armors could be used by both thief and hunter professions, the special effect clearly favored hunters. Of course, some rich 'thieves' would spend a fortune to get their hands on this equipment. The special effect aside, this fine piece of equipment would still be a Violet-Platinum equipment!

Zhang Yang kept the [Mask] into his backpack as well. He would leave the decision in the hands of those two hunters.

With the quest completed, the two of them retraced their steps, but the turbulence of the black river was streaming rapidly all the way down, making it impossible for them to go up the way they came down from. Feeling helpless, the both of them finally gave up and took out their [Teleportation Scrolls].

Zhang Yang was thinking of killing himself and directly reviving at the Graveyard. But once he thought about the possibility that he might end up in an unknown Graveyard, deep down the abyss, he decided against it. Who knows, if it really happens, then he would have died for nothing, and only bring more trouble to himself!

It was just a journey back to the White Jade Castle, and he had to at least identify the [Goblin's Head Lobber], if he intended to use it for battles in the future.

[Goblin's Head Lobber] (Yellow-Gold, One-handed Axe)

Attack: 1,131 - 1,531

Attack Interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 512

{Level 2 Socket 1}

{Level 2 Socket 2}

Equip: increases critical rate by 2%.

Required Level: 80

After inserting [Gemstones] with the [Runestones] that he acquired from Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang's attack instantly rose to 2,577 - 2,977.

Then he made some fine repairs on his equipment before he teleported back to Thunderstorm Castle. He then summoned Whitey and headed towards the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night in a hustle.

It was another long journey that took about seven hours, before Zhang Yang finally arrived at the White Stone Peak. It had been a long while since he last visited this place, so the monsters on the mountain had respawned. Zhang Yang went up to the hillside and switched to his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and then he cleared out all of the non-elite monsters along his way. After that, he activated {Dig} and went all the way up to the mountain and stood right before Kent.

He dug out his [Titan Chest Plate] out and shoved it over to Kent, "I have completed the quest!" He felt that he had already repeated this sentence many times over already.

Kent was filled with surprise while he received the [Titan Chest Plate] from Zhang Yang, and then he put his hands on the equipment and stroked it like his 'precious', revealing his obsession towards the relic. After a long while, he finally opened his mouth and said, "Young man, I'm impressed with your capability! Not only did you manage to recover the [Titan Chest Plate], you also managed to complete the quest in such short time! I can't help but to be impressed by you!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Recover the Titan Chest Plate, acquired 5,000,000 experience points! Quest rating: Perfect! The rating will be calculated into the final quest rewards!’

What the hell, the system was actually planning to keep the rewards from the players until they completed the entire quest? Why must the system learn from those crooked businessmen, trying to delay when it came to giving their ‘employees’ their salaries!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Kent, we can now go get that sun of a beach, Kazalo, can't we?"

"Yes, with this piece of [Titan Chest Plate], I shall be able to withstand against his [Star-Devourer], and we shall be able to finish him once and for all!" Kent was agitated with excitement, and he let out a trembling roar at the top on the mountain and said, "My brothers and sisters, it's time to follow me on a heist that you have never seen before!"

"Roar!" all of the thieves in White Stone Peak shouted and roared in unity, their voices thunderous enough to pierce through the heavens!

"Let's move out!" Kent turned to Zhang Yang, and then he summoned a battle horse with shiny armor all over its body. This battle horse was so much taller than the regular military horses. The moment it appeared, the continuous clapping of horseshoes against the ground and the heaving stream of air coming right out of its nose gave an intimidating presence. It almost seemed to be breathing flames

‘Ding! Kent Joseph has given you a quest: Slay the Chieftain of the enemy, accept or decline?’

What a handsome horse! If Wei Yan Er would ever have the chance of seeing it, that little girl would definitely abandon her own mount for this one!

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and quickly summoned Whitey.

[Slay the Chieftain of the enemy] (Difficulty: S-Rank)

Description: Kent Joseph has invited you to hunt down the ‘Cancer’ of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night, Kazalo, and restore true peace to the

people of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night! Warrior, the time to boil your blood with justice and fight for a righteous cause, is now!

Completion: Slay Kazalo 0/1

With a long roar, Kent came down from the mountain on his horse at an extreme speed, just like a bolt of lightning. Without much effort, he reached the bottom of the mountain.

As Zhang Yang charged down from the mountain, he could see the thieves were already lining up in a position of a large formation! The formation was incredibly neat, at a level that could be compared to the official army! By the looks of it, Kent had spent his fortune and time just to plan an attack to take out Kazalo, during all these years. He had managed to turn these 'Scattered sands' into a strong 'Castle'! It was unbelievable that he could actually train up a bunch of thieves into such a disciplined army!

"Brothers and sisters, today, we shall carry out a heist that history has never seen before!" Kent stood at the front of the formation on his horse, while holding a huge axe in his hand. His aura was really intimidating and pressurizing. He waved his axe and said, "We shall go head on against Kazalo and his army and end this once and for all! As long as we kill them all, the Great Canyon of Eternal Night shall be ours to claim!"

"Kill!"

"Kill them all!"

"I want women and money!"

The thieves were roaring out like an army of madmen.

It was indeed, killing two birds with one stone! Using a bunch of thieves to engage with a bunch of real bandits, it would not matter whichever side dies, it would still be great news to the regular people in the Great Canyon of Eternal Night!

"Now, charge!" Kent turned his horse around to face his army, and then he pointed his axe eastward and said, "Brother and sisters, fortune and fame are just ahead of us, for the taking! Charge! Charge!"

"Charge forward!"

Shoof!

At least tens of thousands of thieves got on their horses, following Kent, and charged towards the east! The stomping of the horseshoes from the army stirred up dirt and dust into the air, and from afar, it was like the forces of nature itself were attacking!

Zhang Yang patted the head of Whitey and followed the army of thieves. It was fortunate that they were only two times faster, compared to the regular speed of a player's sprint. Therefore, Whitey should probably be able to catch up to them with ease.

But Zhang Yang did not charge at the front. It was obvious that there would be a large-scale battle coming right up, so he did not intend to serve himself as one of the 'cannon fodders' that would be blown to bits in the front lines.

After charging forward for about an hour, Kent led the army to the front of a castle. The facilities of the castle seemed quite complete. [Magic Cannons] were installed right on top of the castle wall. Even a Violet-Platinum grade boss would be blown to bits if he or she ever tried to penetrate the defense line of the castle with brute force!

Kent realized the threat, and he immediately gave the command for his army to halt. Then, he raised his left hand and bellowed, "Bring out the catapults!"

Rolling out one after another, three large-scale catapults appeared right in front of the army, and all of the catapults were the sizes of large trucks. The thieves cooperated with professional efficiency as they moved rocks that were as large as millstones and loaded them onto the catapults.

Zhang Yang was left with his jaws and eyes opened wide. How did the three catapults miraculously appeared in the battlefield? It was so fake! He had not seen them when they were charging to the enemy! Could catapults be kept in backpacks, now?

"Release the catapults!" Kent shouted loudly, and with 'Ki ki ki' sounds,

the three large rocks shot out like shooting stars, flashing through the sky, and flying towards the wall of the castle!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The distance between the castle and Kent's army was about 300 to 400 meters long, but Zhang Yang could still feel a slight tremble across his feet as he stood by and watched the spectacular scene!

Boom! Boom!

The catapults were shooting out a series of 'cannonballs' towards the direction of the castle. In just a short while, the walls of the castle were devastated by the assaults from the catapults. Quite a number of the [Magic Cannons] were blown into pieces, along with the wall!

That is the weakness of the [Magic Cannon]!

Although the attack power of the [Magic Cannons] were immense and terrifying, they did not have the range of the catapults! So they would just 'sit' there, waiting for the catapults to blow them up into pieces!

After a while, the castle side had also begun using their catapults to defend themselves, shooting large rocks towards Zhang Yang and the army. The rocks were huge, that when they landed on the army, a large number of the thieves were blown away!

The first stage of the war would be to see the effectiveness of the ranged weapons. After a period of exchange, most of the [Magic Cannons] had been obliterated. The catapults had ended up crushing each other, so all at once, the battlefield no longer had any terrifying siege engines left!

Kent charged at the front of the entire army and waved his axe around, and roared, "Brothers and sisters, after this battle, fortune and treasure await!"

"For gold!"

"For beer!"

"For women!"

"Kill!" Kent roared intensely.

"Kill ---" All of his army followed and let out their thunderous battle cries!

"Kill!"

"Kill ---"

"Charge!" The tens of thousands of thieves followed Kent closely as they charged towards the castle!

Zhang Yang was not hot-headed to the point that he would follow them in the front lines. Although the [Magic Cannons] had mostly been cleared out, there were two of them remaining! These 'toys' could inflict a total damage of 200,000 to all the targets within the range in a single shot. The total health points he had, even while mounted, was not enough to survive that! He simply laid back and continued enjoying the dramatic scene!

Furthermore, one player could not do much in a large-scale battle. He wouldn't make much difference!

Boom!

The [Magic Cannons] that still remained on the wall had begun to open fire at the thieves, as expected! Streams of white lights shot across the army. Whether the ones struck were elites or normal monsters, they were instantly vaporized!

Fortunately, after waves of assaults from the catapults, the [Magic Cannons] had settled down into their long periods of cooldown! The last thing the game needed was a rapid-firing cannons with infinite ammunition!

Kent was born to be brave, so he charged on without any sense of fear and was the first to arrive at the gates of the castle. With a few swings of his axe, he destroyed the gate of the castle with brute force! He really was a great general!

Zhang Yang was envious of what he saw, hoping to emulate that sort of image, one day, and lead his guild to war! Be it 'Territory Sieges' or 'Monster Attacks', it would have great effects on their morale! Zhang Yang shouted and patted the head of Whitey, and quickly followed the army!

The moment they entered the castle, the map instantly switched to a smaller map. The map showed that the interior design of the place was like 'Stromgarde Keep1' from World of Warcraft, but unlike the one in World of Warcraft, the castle interior was not ruined, and the design of the place was extremely grand, where the roads were made of white jade! The place looked just like a palace! Unfortunately, at the moment, it had been reduced into another bloody battlefield. The thieves had already engaged in deadly battles with the mercenaries. Blood was spilled everywhere on the streets, and the roads were filled with bloody, mangled corpses!

Zhang Yang was trying to locate the whereabouts of Kent, because a boss like this would be like a firefly in a dark place. He would be the center of attraction, and the center of the plotline! It was the best option for Zhang Yang, since he did not know what to do at the moment!

As expected, he saw the man's shadow flashing by! Kent was riding on his battle horse while spinning his axe around, blowing the surrounding enemies away. It did not matter if the enemies were cut into half or chopped to death, blood would just spill and departed limbs from the body of the enemies were flying around. It was war, after all.

He was really a powerhouse NPC in the cinematic mode, compared to the 'Cannon Fodder' who had a low attack of 5!

Zhang Yang tapped on Whitey's head again and aided them in killing their enemies. His main quest was to slay Kazalo. Although it was not necessary for him to be the one slaying Kazalo, he should at least inflict some damage to the boss! Otherwise, he would fail the quest and get nothing in the end!

The two bosses were bound to clash anytime soon, his best option was to hang on to Kent like a fly!

The mercenaries definitely outnumbered the thieves, but there is a Kent on the thieves' side! This Yellow-Gold boss was impressively strong and intimidating! With a swing of his axe, most of the enemies were instantly sent to their afterlives! The situation for the thieves was like a pillar of rocks in the midstream of a river that supports the bridge! Not only did it

prevent the thieves from breaking formation, it also gave them the advantage over the battle!

The thieves were marching forward steadily, slowly pushing deeper into the castle.

Zhang Yang stayed right behind Kent, where he would activate his {Horizontal Sweep} and his {Blast Wave}, just to get some experience points. Whenever the special effect of the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] got triggered, the damage values looked awesome!

The two sides were depleting their number of fighters in a very swift manner. As Kent was going forward, following the path ahead, he managed to push on into a spot on the highest location of a building in the castle. It was a tower that was about 13 floors high, and it was exceedingly 'thin', about the square area of 3 to 4 houses.

Kent had finally stopped moving because there was a very powerful person standing right in front of him!

[Kiev the 3rd] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 84

HP: 1,680,000

Defense: 1,500

Kiev was a middle aged man with a lean and skinny body, wearing tights that covered most of his body. He held sharp swords in both of his hands, and he looked like he was an 'Assassin'.

"Joe ---" Kiev let out a loud roar and pointed a sword at Kent, "So it was the bastard who has been a pain in the *rse all these years! Now, you dare to show yourself on our doorsteps! Good, very good! Then I, Kiev shall be the one who breaks every single one of the bones within your body!"

Kent also roared and said, "Pitiful bandits, taking all the people's money! You didn't just do a lousy job protecting the people, you actually stole from them! You worthless sh*ts, die! Just die!"

The two bosses roared at each other, and they engaged in a fierce battle.

Zhang Yang had also charged forward and smashed five layers of his {Cripple Defense}. Then he continued to unleash all his attacks onto the enemy boss as well!

Although two bosses were the same grade, Yellow-Gold, it was really obvious that Kent was far superior. One boss that was only a mini-boss of his organization, while the other boss was a powerhouse. Although the amount of their health points were the same, that's where their similarities ended!

Kiev was brought down on his knees in just short amount of time!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Stromgarde Keep - a ruined capital city in a Kingdom in World of Warcraft.

Chapter 354: Kazalo Appears

Because the boss was taken down mostly by Kent, the loot dropped from the body were extremely miserable to look at. All Zhang Yang got was a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment and two Gray-Silver equipment. Furthermore, that piece of Yellow-Gold equipment was just a mere cloth armor with weirdly high attributes of Spirit and Ice-Resistance. So, he could only put it out for sale at his Little Merchandise.

"Pui! Filthy scumbag!" Kent spat on the dead body of Kiev and charged into the tower with large strides.

There were no thieves among them, the sounds of battle far behind them. Well, it was obvious that they had stepped into the battlegrounds of the final showdown between two kings!

As they entered the tower, Zhang Yang was automatically dismounted from Whitey. Because Zhang Yang had {Beast Taming}, Whitey had immediately turned into a combative pet and followed Zhang Yang from behind.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and unsummoned Whitey. Since he would not be riding Whitey within the tower and the super slow movement speed of the [Mythical Turtle] would not affect his movement in battle, he kept Whitey into his backpack for the moment. He intended to summon [Mythical Turtle] after the boss battle begins!

There were still monsters within the tower, and all of the monsters were Level 85 elite-grades. But with Kent rampaging about, the monsters did not stand a chance at all. The monsters were slaughtered one after another with ease. Every single one of the monsters was killed in one hit! They were not able to do anything at all! It was actually a bad thing for Zhang Yang because he would not be getting a single point of experience!

However, he soon figured that he could hurl {Spears of Obliteration} at the monsters within his sight. Even if he attracts the aggro of the monsters, they would instantly be killed the moment they get closer, and Zhang Yang would immediately acquire experience points!

Being invincible all along the way, the two of them arrived at the seventh floor of the tower. At that moment, another boss appeared to block their way forward.

[Phoebe the 2nd] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

This time, it blonde beauty with her luscious hair dancing in the air. It was unfortunate that she was blind in her left eye, wearing a black eye-patch. Otherwise, she had a strange and seductive appeal. She had a great body that was beautiful and charming, with a T-Shirt on her upper body that showed her navel button. She wore a pair of hot pants that exposed her snow-white, long thighs. She was bare footed, and held a golden leather whip in her hands.

The 'queen' has three main special plays, the 'Wax Play', 'riding the Spanish donkey1', and the 'Whipping Exercises'! Zhang Yang could not help but start thinking of weird stuff in his mind!

"It's you ---" the moment when Phoebe saw Kent, she revealed her hatred through her one good eye, "Seven years, Joe, seven years, since you took my eye from me! For seven years, I have been waiting for the day I can get my revenge! Joe, I'm going to suck you dry, of every drop of your blood!"

"Hahaha! You escaped seven years ago, but today, you are destined to die by my sword!" Kent let out a loud laugh and swung his axe around, charging towards Phoebe.

"Joe, for seven years, I have not forgotten how you blinded my eye with that sword of yours! That scene plays through my mind every single day!" Phoebe lashed out her whip with utmost prejudice.

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to charge at the boss, and then he summoned the [Mythical Turtle] out while applying his stacks of {Cripple Defense} on Phoebe, "Kent, someone has really been missing you! Seven years, my goodness, she's madly in love!"

Kent laughed out loud and said, "Unfortunately, I have no interest in such vicious ladies!"

"Shut up!" Phoebe was enraged even more, and the golden whip in her hands swung around even more intensely! It tore the air open as it lashed at the two of them.

‘-6,212!’

Zhang Yang was instantly inflicted with a damage value. Although he was not the first aggro of the boss, but the attacks of Phoebe had an AOE effect. Zhang Yang had let his guard down and suffered some damage for his complacency!

"Hahaha! Young man, this woman is a beautiful snake, now you have tasted her power!" Kent laughed at Zhang Yang's expense while swinging his axe around, reducing the health bar of Phoebe in a very swift manner!

"Joe, you are a scumbag who deserves to die over a million times! You destroyed my beauty, and now you dare to humiliate me!" Phoebe was screaming in a high pitch, her golden whip was surging with vague red aura.

‘-6,342!’

Zhang Yang once again received a damage value. He was so shocked, he had already made sure he activated his {Block}, how could he possibly be hurt?

‘You have blocked Phoebe's {Chaotic Dance of the Snake}.’

‘The additional fire damage of Phoebe's {Chaotic Dance of the Snake} has inflicted a fire damage of 6,342 points on you (2,000 damage immune, 1,658 damage absorbed).’

What the hell, a physical attack with an additional fire damage! No wonder Zhang Yang was still receiving damages from the attack even though he had already activated his {Block}!

It was fortunate that the boss only had one AOE skill - {Chaotic Dance of the Snake}, and the cool down period of the skill was 20 seconds long!

So, Zhang Yang reserved his {Block} to counter the attack. Even if he received additional fire damage from the attack, the long cool down period of time was enough for him to take a bottle of [HP Potion] to recover his health points!

Under the powerful damage output of Zhang Yang and his turtle, the health points of Phoebe plummeted, and by the end of it, she let out a miserable scream and collapsed into her own pool of blood.

And this time, the loot was even more miserable to look at! Phoebe only dropped two pieces of Gray-Silver equipment! Not even one piece of Yellow-Gold equipment! Stingy as f*ck!

From the looks of it, the final boss Kazalo would be dropping anything good, so Zhang Yang could only count on the final reward of the quest! Zhang Yang could already predict that the rewards would include the [Titan Chest Plate]. However, the previous quests included a S-Rank difficulty quest and a cumulative quest rating. Would there be any add-ons for a good performance?

Zhang Yang unsummoned the [Mythical Turtle] and followed Kent from behind without questioning further.

Every monster that appeared on the way were instantly killed by the swinging axe of Kent. Both of them arrived at the highest floor of the tower in just a short amount of time.

A powerful, hulking middle-aged man was standing right by the large windowsill of the floor with a sword in his hands. He was looking down to the battlefield from up high. Although he had already heard the footsteps of Zhang Yang and Kent coming up, he did not turn around, and spoke with his back facing them, "Joe, you must be Joe. Smith, aren't you? I just don't get it, why must you go against us so badly! I have already sent you secret letters! As long as you join us, you will have your territory in the mountains! You won't lose anything!"

[Kazalo] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

Kent was shouting in rage, "Kazalo, you and your men had been plaguing the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night for so many years! Today shall be the day that I end you and rid the 'cancer' of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night!"

Kazalo burst into laughter and he finally turned around. His face was almost square, with a pair of sharp and fierce-looking eyes, giving a sense of calm, and yet intimidating aura. He shook his head and said, "To hear these words from a thief in the mountains, it's like listening to a joke!"

"Kazalo, prepare to die!" Kent took a deep breath and began to charge towards the boss with his axe.

"You're just a small fry, you need to know your own place!" Kazalo did not even look at Kent, and with an upwards swing of his sword, he intended to deflect the axe!

'Ting!'

Kent's axe was broken in half, like it was made of tofu! With only one hit, the boss had broken Kent's axe!

"Hahaha! Tremble before my [Star-Devourer]!" Kazalo was laughing madly, and he continued to raise his sword up, ready to slash at Kent's body.

Kent showed no signs of dodging the blow! With his right fist raised, he forcefully threw a fist at the boss with incredible strength!

'Ting!'

The [Star-Devourer] reached the body of Kent first, but it did not slash Kent into half like it did to the axe. Instead, the hit gave out sparks upon impact, inflicting a certain amount of damage to Kent.

On the other side, Kent's fist had landed on the boss, inflicting an incredible amount of damage to the boss!

"Huh?" Kazalo was shocked and confused, he questioned his own eyes

and said, "What kind of armor are you wearing? It can actually withstand my [Star-Devourer]!"

Kent lifted up his other fist and began to punch it out, "Curious, aren't you? Let's wait until I punch your brain out of that thick idiotic skull of yours, and then I shall tell you! I won't let you die without knowing!"

"Dream on! What can one good piece of equipment do to you, I will still be able to obliterate you! I should thank you for bringing me such good armor!" Kazalo confidently resumed his attacks!

"Young man, please aid me by securing the entrance of this place, don't let anyone in!" Kent shouted at Zhang Yang as he engaged in the fierce duel.

'Ding! The objective of the Quest: Slay the Chieftain of the enemy has been modified, you must secure the entrance of the floor by the stairs, stop any of the mobs from giving aid to Kazalo, until Kent slays Kazalo. If Kent dies, the quest will fail!'

It meant that Zhang Yang did not have to slay the boss, all he had to do was to block the entrance. The more monsters that got through him, the higher chances of Kent losing the battle and ending the quest in a failure!

Zhang Yang took in a long deep breath, and reminded himself to hurl his {Spear of Obliteration} towards the boss from afar whenever the opportunity presents itself. Because as long as he could inflict some damage on the boss, at least he would be able to receive some experience points and loot. Although the value of the loot was expected to be low, it was better to get one or two pieces of equipment than end up empty handed. Plus, the boss was a Violet-Platinum grade boss, anything dropped from him would be worth hundreds of thousands of dollars!

As he was looking down from the higher ground, he saw a wave of approximately 10 elite-grade monsters marching up the stairs.

Zhang Yang had already summoned his [Mythical Turtle] by his side, ready to engage anything that comes his way, together with his turtle!

Tut tut tut! The first monster had already arrived in front of Zhang Yang.

[Kazalo's Close Quater Guards] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang immediately took out his axe and hacked at the enemy, inflicting a damage of 2,812 on the monster. His rage points were instantly accumulated, rising up to a total of 31 points! At the same instant, he activated his {Block}, saving himself from the counterattacks from the monster, giving him another 30 points of rage points!

As the second monster was approaching as well, he immediately switched his weapon to [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and activated his {Horizontal Sweep}. Instantly, another two damage value of 4000+ were inflicted on the monsters at the same time.

That's right! {Horizontal Sweep} did not have the attribute to pass through solid objects, but the entrance of the stairs was so narrow with Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle] blocking the way, only two of these elite monsters could squeeze to the front to attack Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was also limited to hitting the two targets in front of him.

First he activated his {Blood Rage}, and then he let out a burst of {Blast Wave}!

This time, 10 damage values appeared at the same time within his sight view! The [Dark Enigmatic Sword] kicked in, inflicting further damages to the monsters!

Zhang Yang then switched his weapon back to the [Goblin's Head Lobber] and continued to station himself and his turtle at the narrow entrance, where they continued to unleash their assaults on the two monsters in front of them.

The quest only required him to delay the elite monsters from reaching Kent, it did not say that Zhang Yang would need to clear out all of the monsters in front of him. Therefore, it was not necessary for him to work on killing them off. As long as he could block them at the entrance until

Kent slays the boss, he would have done his part.

His strength value was already very high at the moment, so the monsters would not be able to knock him back. Like a sturdy rock, he stood against the tide!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Spanish donkey - a tool for torturing people, but in modern days, it has become a tool for BDSM!

Chapter 355: The Mighty Titan Chest Plate

‘-1,391!’

Every single attack of the monsters inflicted Zhang Yang with approximately 1,400 points of damage value. Zhang Yang did not dare kite both the monsters by himself, so he only kited one of the monsters and allowed [Mythical Turtle] to block the other monster.

When his health points were beginning to run low, Zhang Yang would take a bottle of grade-5 transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion], or a [Fountain of Life], or activate {Berserker’s Heal}, depending on the situation.

While waiting for those activated skills to cool down, Zhang Yang did not forget to throw his [Spear of Obliteration] onto the boss. Even if he could just reduce a 1 second period of time required for Kent to slay the boss, it would definitely reduce the pressure on him in blocking the monsters by the stairs as well.

One minute later, another wave of elite monsters began to charge up the stairs in an attempt to break through Zhang Yang’s defense. They were shoving the monsters in front of them, threatening to push Zhang Yang back. He was forced to use a combination of several skills to stabilize his position!

{Blast Wave}!

{Heroic Leap}!

{Wild Assault}!

{Blast Wave} and {Heroic Leap} were both skills that had crowd control effects, while {Wild Assault} is a new skill learned when a warrior reaches Level 80.

[Brutal Smash]: Delivers a fatal blow to the head of the target with the strength of a beast, inflicting 100% physical damage based on strength attribute, stuns the target for 4 seconds. Cool down: 2 minutes.

Consumption: 30 rage points. Range: Melee.

{Brutal Smash} was a skill that had a control effect over one monster only, so if wisely coordinated with {Blast Wave}, a single target could be stunned for a total of 8 seconds! It would be extremely useful in PvP matches!

Zhang Yang turned his head around to check on the boss, and could see that the boss was still left with 97% health points! It would still take another 15 minutes or more for Kent to slay the boss! Although his equipment is top-notch, and he is well equipped with many lifesaving skills, he couldn't possibly hold back two elite monsters for 15 minutes!

In a haste, he brought up his voice communication device and reached out for help, "Witch snow! Come quickly! Help!"

"Silly Yu, what's up? Can't hold your piss! Can't you just hold on a little longer?" Han Ying Xue teased Zhang Yang.

"Just get over here, woman! I'll make a superb dinner for you tonight!" Zhang Yang roared in desperation.

In just a short moment, Han Ying Xue activated the [Lover's Charm] and teleported straight to Zhang Yang's location. When she saw the number of elite monsters on the stairs, she was almost struck speechless. After a moment, she asked, "Silly Yu, how on earth did you attract so many monsters?"

"Just heal me, now!"

With Han Ying Xue healing him from one side, Zhang Yang no longer had to worry about his survival. He finally managed to hold off the assaults of the monsters, wave after wave, with ease.

As the third wave began, the number of those newly spawned monsters was increased up to 20 in a single wave! The fourth wave still had 20 monsters spawning to join into battle, and the fifth wave increased the number of newly spawned monsters to 30 in a single wave! The monsters were accumulating as more waves came!

That would mean that after every two waves, an additional 10 monsters

would spawn with each subsequent wave!

Fortunately, it was safe to say that the entrance of the stairs was hard to break through, and was easily defensible. Even if there were 10,000 coming at them, only two monsters would be able to launch their assaults at Zhang Yang and his [Mythical Turtle] at a time! But as the number increased, so did the forces that worked against him. If he was careless, they could actually shove him back. He would have to put in far more effort in holding his ground!

11 minutes into the battle!

The boss was left with 26% health points, but the number of the monsters clogged up at the stairs had gone up to over 300! Although Zhang Yang and his [Mythical Turtle] had slain a few of the monsters, it was like trying to put out a burning cartload with a glass of water!

As the battle entered its 12th minute, another wave of 60 monsters joined the battle, totaling up the horde to 400!

The 400 monsters exceeded the strength of Zhang Yang, and slowly, he slid back, unable to maintain his position.

"Witch snow! Let's use our {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!"

"... Silly Yu, don't you start groping me!"

"Relax, I have standards!"

"B*st*rd!"

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue retreated at the same instant, leaving a gap by the entrance of the stairs. Immediately, a large number of monsters gushed in like a wave of tsunami from the entrance of the staircase, ganging up on the two of them!

As they held each others hands, they unleashed the dual skill! The {Blizzard Sky} and the {Luna's Dew}!

The floor around them actually sunk down, and pieces of small snow flakes began to rain down, forming a layer of snowy-white frost on the ground! Then, a bright moon appeared right on top of the tower, and a ray

of moonlight shone on the two of them!

This chilly moonlight turned out to be lethal!

‘-5000!’

‘-5000!’

...

As the moonlight struck the monsters, the monsters were continuously inflicted with a series of damages!

‘Immune’!

‘Immune’!

The monsters did not flinch under their assaults, but continued to launch their attacks fiercely on Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, but the two of them had been rendered invincible at that moment!

17 seconds later, the large horde of monsters began to die off, one after another, with more casualties at each passing second!

The {Blizzard Sky} and the {Lunar’s Dew} lasted for a full 30 seconds, and when the skill stopped, no monsters were left alive on the battlefield!

"Okaaaay, maybe the developers might nerf this skill soon..!" Han Ying Xue had never slaughtered so many monsters by herself before, and was shaking in excitement.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "When you reach Level 100, you can go ahead and get a damage-type ‘Inheritance’. It will turn you into a healer that both heals her allies, while channeling damage upon your enemies!"

13 minutes into the battle, another wave of 70 monsters spawned and charged up by the staircase again!

But they had survived a wave of 400 monsters, what was 70 to them!

Zhang Yang positioned himself by the entrance of the staircase once again with his [Mythical Turtle] and once again, formed a blockade!

14 minutes into the battle, the number of the monsters had accumulated up to a total of 138!

Meanwhile, on the other side, Kazalo was left with merely 7% of his health points! Victory was just right in front of them!

It was really fortunate that they had that overpowered dual skill, or else they would not have lasted the battle! It would take countless players to guard against that horde of elite monsters! This was why the quest has been graded as an S-Rank. Although it wasn't a quest that required players to defeat a Violet-Platinum boss, players were required to hold back a horde of super strong, elite-grade monsters!

30 seconds left!

Zhang Yang steadily held his ground, a number of monsters well within his capabilities!

20 seconds left!

Kazalo was left with only 2% of his health points!

10 seconds left! 9, 8, 7... 3, 2, 1!

"No! You can't possibly have defeated me! I'm the invincible Kazalo, I'm the wielder of the [Star-Devourer]! I should be the one who would rule the entire world!" Kazalo was letting out his last miserable breath, right before his last drop of health points were cut off by Kent!

Pak!

Kazalo's heavy body shook the ground, and his [Star-Devourer] fell beside him with a 'cling!' The glow of the sharp blade gradually faded, turning slowly into the natural shine of regular steel.

The remaining elite monsters started running away upon witnessing the death of their leader.

Kill the head, and the body will follow! When Kazalo died, it was natural for these monsters to run for their lives.

Zhang Yang did not pursue them, because he knew, he would get nothing in return for slaughtering these monsters. He could always get an abundance of experience points without having to chase their asses around.

Kent picked up the [Star-Devourer] from the ground and turned his eyes towards the dead body of Kazalo, and kept it in its scabbard. After that, he turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Young man, we have succeeded! We have slain the chieftain of the 'cancer' and have rid the people of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night of its 'pests'! Now, I shall rebuild an army for the people, an army that can really protect the people from harm!"

"Then, I wish you best of luck, Kent!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Young man, you are a brave warrior, I need a warrior just like yourself by my side, come, help me build the army!" Kent invited Zhang Yang to join his cause.

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head and said, "Thank you for the offer, Kent. But I am an adventurer, I wander around, building my strength, exploring the world, that is my most desired dream! So I must decline your invitation."

"Hahaha, young man, maybe the thing that you seek is somewhere in this vast world!" Kent did not pursue the matter any further, and he said, "No matter what, I must thank you. Without your aid, I would not have defeated Kazalo! Take this, as promised!"

Kent placed a piece of the metal fragment that glittered silver into Zhang Yang's palm.

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 7!'

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Slay the Chieftain of the enemy, acquired 5,000,000 experience points! Kent's remaining health points: 35%, quest rating: Perfect! The rating will be calculated into the final reward of the quest!'

'Ding! You have completed Linked Quest: Rebuild the Republic Army! Total rating: Perfect!'

Kent took off the [Titan Chest Plate] that was on him and gave it to Zhang Yang, "Young man, hold on to this. This belongs to you now. Now that Kazalo is dead, you can have this chest plate!"

[Titan Chest Plate] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +806

Strength: +230

Agility: +115

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: Absorbs 232 damage when hit.

Additional effect 1 (Only effective on Player Zhan Yu): Cast a {Titan's Shield} onto yourself or your targeted party member. When {Titan's Shield} is activated, a player's casting will not be interrupted. {Titan's Shield} can last for 2 minutes, or absorbs a total of 300,000 damage points and then vanish. Cool down time: 4 hours.

Additional effect 2 (Only effective on Player Zhan Yu): When {Shield Wall} is activated, you will recover 10% of your health points for every second until the shield vanishes.

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 80

Titan Armor Set (5/8):

Note: This is a legendary equipment forged by the god of Titans himself, not some cheap replica!

The additional effect probably came up because he had completed S-Rank quests with perfect ratings! So, although the equipment was not bound to him, the two additional effects would only be accessible by Zhang Yang alone in the entire game!

Yes indeed, this was the difference between the original item and its replica!

The additional effects of the equipment are super dope! The {Titan's Shield} was a super powerful protection skill for himself and his party members! Although the cool down period is a little too long, it could

become the key to changing the tide of a battle!

The second additional special effect was even more incredible!

Zhang Yang had already leveled his {Shield Wall} up to level 6, and the cool down period of the skill was currently at 4 minutes 30 seconds. With the additional special effects of his shield, the [Titan Wall] that extends his {Shield Wall} by another 5 seconds, his health points would recover by 150% whenever he activates {Shield Wall}!

In a nutshell, he has become even harder to kill!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Trying to put out a burning cartload with just a cup of water -- an utterly inadequate measure.

Chapter 356: Answering a Fool According to His Folly

The good news was that the fourth fragment piece of the [Dimensional Key] had been acquired. The bad news was that, even though Zhang Yang had been hurling [Spears of Obliteration] at Kazalo throughout the entire the boss battle, he had not earned a single experience point! And the boss did not even drop anything at all!

At least he acquired the [Titan Chest Plate], which was already worth all the trouble he went through!

More importantly, he had already collected enough [Titan Armor Set] pieces to activate the second special effect of the [Armor Set]: Every time {Block} is activated, the next activation of {Shield Bash} wouldn't consume any rage points, while it would deal an additional 100%, lasts for 3 seconds.

Back in White Jade Castle, Zhang Yang inserted the [Gemstones] that he had acquired into the two empty sockets of the [Titan Chest Plate]. Instantly, his health points were increased up to a total of 76,590 points, and his damage absorption attribute reached up to 1,774 points, while his defense became 2,240 points! His survivability was once again boosted up to another level!

He is currently the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings. Although all he really had to do was just to sign some papers, he was required to attend some company activities and some important meetings. Because the company had been shadowed by lots of negative news for awhile now, many of their top models had jumped ship to other companies. This month has been the toughest month for Silky Soft Holdings, and the worse has finally passed. Everything has gone back to normal as they should be, and Silky Soft Holdings is now back in business! Naturally, they had to recruit a new batch of models to present their latest products on their 'menus'!

As the CEO of the company, Zhang Yang was required to interview the new batch of models.

He only found out later on that this rule was apparently set by Wei Yan Er's father when he was well and alive. Enough was said about that, all men should know why such a rule was set.

It was fortunate that the models had already been filtered out through initial sign ups and interviews, so this session was more or less the final hurdle! Of course, having gone through the filter, these girls were truly lookers with pretty faces and bodies appropriate of modeling in lingerie. Although he did not plan to do anything with the girls, it would be really satisfying and fun for him to wash his eyes by looking at pretty, sexy girls. This would be interesting!

Currently, he was alone in the interview room, seated at a working desk, with a large-sized couch placed right beside the desk. It was odd to see a couch beside his desk. Zhang Yang could not help but to start having creative ideas. The things he could possibly do on the couch...

What he did not know was that Wei Yan Er's father would have 'settled' the girl on the couch itself if he liked what he saw!

The girls coming for the interview came into the room, one after another, showing off their assets, flaunting as much as they could to earn 'points'. It was all to 'win' the interview! These women knew that Zhang Yang is the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings, and also a shareholder of the company. So they tried to use all their skills on Zhang Yang during the process of their interview, one after another. They were showing their yearning, hungry expressions at Zhang Yang. As long as Zhang Yang wanted it, they would give it to him!

Zhang Yang rated them based on his own preferences, as he did not care about professionalism or whatever sh*t when it came to picking models.

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Zhang. I'm entry number 21, my name is Luo Xin Yan---" the soft and sexy voice of a woman came through the door.

Zhang Yang was still rating the previous interviewee, which had a pair of very big boobs, a hot body, and a deceitfully baby face. She would surely be popular among men! However, when he heard the three words 'Luo Xin Yan', he snapped his head up in shock, what were the odds!

The woman that came in right after, and closed the door shut right behind her was the woman who had a history with Zhang Yang in his previous life, the woman with the name 'Luo Xin Yan'!

It is already March, although it was still considered to be late spring, some vain women had already started wearing skirts and dresses. Of course, Luo Xin Yan was one of them, and for an interview such as this that could decide her future, she would definitely dress up nicely and put up enough make up to make her look her best! With a pair of red high-heels on her fair, long legs, wrapped up in black ultra sheer¹. She had a very thin knee-length skirt around her waist that wrapped around her body, revealing her sexy, seductive figure.

The interview was facilitated in an air-conditioned room, but the temperature wasn't too chilly. She probably brought along a coat to handle the elements outside.

Luo Xin Yan also caught sight of Zhang Yang. She was shocked to see him to the point that she opened her small little mouth wide, staring at him like a deer caught in headlights! She could have never imagined that the hoodlum who forced himself on her mouth would actually be the CEO of a huge company like this one!

Previously, she had already cursed Zhang Yang over the incident many times over and was finally prepared to move on with her life. But what she did not anticipate was that Zhang Yang would actually appear right in front of her, as a CEO of the company!

Zhang Yang was very entertained by the expression that Luo Xin Yan showed him. He crossed his arms and smiled vaguely. In his previous life, Luo Xin Yan had caused so much misery to him, that Zhang Yang would never let her off so easily this time. Furthermore, the thoughts of having her back by his side were repulsive.

As Zhang Yang had been really obedient towards her demands, he would give her any luxury that she desired! But, it appeared that her greed knew no bounds, and she was a heartless ingrate! Instead of being thankful for having Zhang Yang as her man, she had stabbed him the back! Zhang

Yang would never forget the heartbreaking betrayal!

Luo Xin Yan began to calm herself down, and then she lifted up her skirt and took her panties right off and threw it on the floor. Then she strutted up to the sofa, bent down and squeezed her boobs together forwards, showcasing them. She then rolled her skirt up and revealed her plump, round butt with a thick black bush in between it, showing it to Zhang Yang.

She pushed her two palms against the sofa and turned her head over, "Didn't you want to 'please' me that day? Bring it, as long as you sign the contract to hire me, I'm yours to 'please'!"

Thud, thud, thud, Zhang Yang approached her slowly.

Luo Xin Yan revealed a cold smile, thinking to herself that men were all about the few seconds of pleasure! She believed that there was nothing to lose in those few seconds. And if she happened to 'encounter' men who were talented and good at 'pleasing' women, it would be a bonus!

"Argh ---" She let out a moan, with her eyes closed and her brows knitted as she felt an 'unknown' object entering the crevice right beneath her butt. It was cold, but it was extremely thin. Luo Xin Yan could only scorn in her heart. So, this tall and macho Zhang Yang has such a tiny object in his pants, what a joke!

Zhang Yang, from a seated position on his sofa, spoke up. "I don't have the habit of 'pleasing' prostitutes!"

Luo Xin Yan was stunned, as she instantly felt there was something wrong about this! Even if Zhang Yang's 'little buddy' was really long, he couldn't possibly reach her from the sofa, right beside her! She looked around again to see that Zhang Yang was still well dressed and his 'little buddy' was still safe and sound underneath his pants!

She quickly put her hands to her crotch to investigate, only to realize that there was a ball pen inserted within her! She only realized then, that the cold and thin 'unknown' object was in fact, a ball pen!

Luo Xin Yan instantly felt embarrassed and enraged at the same instant,

but she remembered that Zhang Yang was the man controlling her fate at that very moment, so she did not dare to treat him like how she treated him during the 'Speed Dating Event'. She spoke softly in a calm tone, "Mr. Zhang, I'm sorry for being so blind about you. Please forgive me. You're such a significant person, you don't have to bother so much about a little peasant like me."

How could he not see this side of her in his previous life? Such a manipulative, cunning side of her, so shallow-minded and snobbish!

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh quietly. In his previous life, he was really blinded so much by his own lust, or should it be that blind love had made him so stupid! Now, this woman, Luo Xin Yan, only disgusted him so much that he was genuinely remorseful over his stupidity for loving her so much in his previous life!

He smiled vaguely and said, "I will never give you this job!"

Luo Xin Yan instantly sank into silence, and after standing up, she turned her back on Zhang Yang and was ready to leave the room.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Although I won't be signing you as a model of the company, there is another job that pays you millions a year. I'm just wondering if you are interested in it."

Luo Xin Yan froze mid step and stopped. With a quick and loud "shoof!", she spun around and looked at him with a happy face, "What did you say? A job that pays mi... millions a... a year?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "That's right!"

Luo Xin Yan immediately walked back to Zhang Yang and said, "So you're simply a rabbit that doesn't nibble the grass near its own hole! I thought that you were a decent person!" She thought that Zhang Yang was going to take her as his mistress.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I want you to become a mistress, for someone else!"

Luo Xin Yan suddenly turned furious, "What do you think I am?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "You tell me, what should you mean to me then?"

Luo Xin Yan went into silence, and finally, she gritted her teeth and said, "One million a year, not a cent less!"

In his previous life, Liu Wei had planted Luo Xin Yan in his life to spy on him. In this life, Zhang Yang had decided to do the same thing to Liu Wei, to plant Luo Xin Yan on Liu Wei in order to spy on him, and to ambush him when the time came!

According to the history of his previous life, the Silky Soft Holdings should have already been 'torn apart' by Luo Ming Yang and those scumbag relatives. So, it would have been impossible for Luo Xin Yan to attend today's interview. In that case, she should be meeting Liu Wei anytime soon to become his woman! Two years from now, she should be sent to spy on Zhang Yang.

Time to answer a fool according to his folly!

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I'll bank-in 100,000 into your account on the 1st of every month! You will be earning about 1,200,000 annually, far more than what a model could earn!"

Luo Xin Yan grit her teeth as she thought about it, because being a mistress is a totally different from having a one-night-stand with a man!

Zhang Yang continued on, "You don't have to do anything after you return to school. Just, go to classes, as usual, finish your classes as usual. One day from now, one month from now, who knows, a man called Liu Wei will appear in front of you. Then, you know what to do! What I want you to do is simple, just report to me every single word he says. Send me recordings, send me notes!"

Luo Xin Yan blinked in surprise, and then she said, "You're asking me to become a corporate spy!"

Zhang Yang gave some thought about it and replied, "Yeah, that's the idea!"

Luo Xin Yan immediately shook her head and said, "That's too

dangerous, one million is not enough!"

Zhang Yang smiled coldly and said, "Don't you think that you're the only woman I can ask of this! 1,200,000 is just an extra earning for you in a year. I believe that you would not really want to be somebody's mistress for the rest of your life, right? After you have earned enough, you can just pick a favorite spot and vanish! I also believe that this amount of money is enough for you to disappear and have a good life! There's more to this, whenever you get me some useful information, I shall add a bonus of 100,000 to your account!"

Luo Xin Yan was trying to bargain for more, hoping that Zhang Yang would increase his pay. These 100,000 extras did it for her! After giving it some thought, she said, "Alright! I'll do it!"

Zhang Yang gave her a contact number to keep him informed of things.

Luo Xin Yan's butt wagged from side to side with each step, as she walked all the way to the door and left the room. After just a short while more, Zhang Yang heard the sound of the door opening again, and another girl came in, "Mr. Zhang, I'm interviewee number 22, my name is Wang Ya ---"

A delicate and attractive beauty walked into the room, she had a pretty face, with curly locks of hair going down her visage. Her boobs were so round and huge that they were on the verge of bursting out of her clothes!

Zhang Yang could not help it but wonder, why are all these women so well-endowed! The reason is simple, this is a company that manufactures bra! So they would turn their eyes towards models who would best display their 'weapons', they had to be huge! This was also the final stage of the interview, the 'lesser' women had already been eliminated up to this point!

As the beauty ran her eyes across the room, she saw the pair of black panties that were left on the floor by Luo Xin Yan. She could not help but smile knowingly! No wonder it took so long for the previous interview to end!

Thinking that she had it all under control now, she smiled and began to take off her clothes.

Zhang Yang stared wordlessly at the scene, "..."

...

Who would have thought that it would be so tiring to host an interview!

After everything was settled, Zhang Yang closed the door of the office shut and put on his game helmet. Ever since Luo Xin Yan had walked out, all of the remaining interviewees seemed to have been ‘enlightened’ by the panties on the floor, the moment they walked through the door, they used all of their ‘skill sets’ to seduce Zhang Yang!

But none of them thought realized, that even if Zhang Yang was really lustful, it would still be impossible for him to have so much ‘stamina’ and ‘juice’ to take them all, one after another!

In the end, the company managed to recruit a total of 30 models out of 64 interviewees. That was about half of the number of the interviewees. Zhang Yang had followed his own preferences in picking the 30, after which, he passed the name list to his secretary, leaving the ‘cleaning up’ for his employees to do.

The moment he went online, Zhang Yang went straight to the Alchemist Shop to buy some [Potions], and then he proceeded to his warehouse and crafted all of the materials into [Level 4 Healing Potion].

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Healing Potion] X 6!’

...

‘Ding! You have crafted [Level 4 Healing Potion] X 6! Because of [Alchemist’s Intuition], the [Level 4 Healing Potion] has transmuted!’

[Level 4 Healing Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)] (Consumable)

Use: Immediately recovers 8,000 health points, and proceeds to recover 3,200 health points over the period of the next 10 seconds. Cool down: 1 minute. Using any kind of potion will send all potions into the same cool down duration.

Required Level: 60

Awesome, grade 4 transmutation is giving an additional 40% of the

initial healing amount. It also means that grade 10 transmutation could give up to a total amount of 16,000 healing points! Unfortunately, this additional healing amount of health points was just like [Heal], it had a cool down of 10 seconds before any healing potions can be used again.

This [Potion] will really come in handy during Player VS Player match!

Zhang Yang then gave these [Level 4 Healing Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)] to the members of the two parties that were taking part in the S-Rank Professional League Championship. Lost Dream and the rest of the party members were shocked to receive the potions from Zhang Yang and they thanked him over and over again.

Just as he was preparing to craft more potions, Zhang Yang suddenly received a message from Hundred Shots.

"Zhan Yu, we have a situation. I received news that The Dominators has been gathering other guilds to aid them in launching an assault on our Mining Cave! They are planning to take our Mining Cave from us!"

--- it had been a regular thing for large-scale guilds to plant spies in their enemy guilds to spy on them internally.

Zhang Yang was shocked, he paused for a brief moment and shook his head, "This 'Hypocrite' still has not learned his lesson yet! Still trying to get back at us, eh? Fine, make some arrangements then! If The Dominators want a fight, then let's bring the fight to them! We shall show no fear!"

"Yes!"

Zhang Yang contacted Han Ying Xue and the gang, "That 'Hypocrite' is trying to trouble us once again, let's go and show him some 'colour', shall we?"

"Yes! Awesome idea!" Wei Yan Er was excited to let some steam off. She had been focusing on her studies very hard these days. As she had been looking at books and homework, she had not logged into the game for days! Her playful nature was screaming out for her to let loose!

Other than Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, and Galileo were also players who

lusted for battles. Everyone else seemed to be very excited about it!

"Let's go!"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Ultra Sheer - super thin long socks that reach beyond thighs. Covers almost the entire leg. Also known as stockings.

Chapter 357: Mining Cave Defense Battle

Hundred Shots immediately summoned all the top-tiered players of Lone Desert Smoke and made arrangements to gather them at the Mining Cave as soon as possible. After some days of progress, the Sub-Guild had accumulated enough guild experience points to be eligible to use the [Level 2 Guild Upgrade Order]. Then, they upgraded the Sub-Guild up to a Level 2 guild, increasing the limit of the players that they could recruit into their guild, up to 20,000. In just a short period of time, they had also almost hit the maximum limit of members of the guild!

Approximately 20,000 top-tier players of Lone Desert Smoke were roaming close to the entrance of the Mining Cave.

Zhang Yang and his party members arrived at the hilltop nearby the Mining Cave. They had a vantage point on the only path that led straight to their Mining Cave.

All nine of them already possessed their very own [Battle Mounts]. Endless Starlight and Lost Dream were having slightly inferior [Battle Mounts] of Gray-Silver grade. It was even worse for Fatty Han, he was still riding on a large lizard that was only of Green-Copper grade! Wei Yan Er laughed at him so hard that she almost fell off her own [Battle Mount].

As all of them had [Battle Mounts], so they would all be terrifyingly powerful forces, especially when it came to Player VS Player battles. When mounted, each of them would have an incredible amount of hitpoints.

Unfortunately, it was not suitable for Zhang Yang to summon his [Mythical Turtle] to battle on land. If their opponents took a few steps back, the turtle would take minutes to catch up to them!

So, Zhang Yang had to summon Whitey, boosting his maximum health points up by only 32,700. It was so unfortunate that Yellow-Gold [Battle Mount] had a really obvious difference when compared to a Violet-Platinum [Battle Mount]! Although the [Gold-Eared Bear King] had a passive skill that gave a 30% increment on the maximum health points of the player when mounted, it was still far from the 50.480 maximum

health points that the [Mythical Turtle] could provide! The difference was really huge!

After a while, Zhang Yang and the gang could see a bunch of people coming up right above the horizon from afar. All of them were riding on their battle horses and battle wolves, charging towards the entrance of the Mining Cave with murderous intentions on their faces!

There were more than 30,000 of them, by the looks of it, charging over like a bunch of black ants, gushing towards the entrance of the cave!

Zhang Yang began to rouse up his guild members via the guild channel, "Brothers and sisters, the enemy is just right before us, they look thirsty! Why don't we give them something to drink! Ready and steady!"

'Chiang chiang chiang', every single member of the Lone Desert Smoke drew out their weapons one after another, roaring into the sky.

Zhang Yang had also pulled out his battle axe and was prepared to battle. He roared, "Charge!"

Zhang Yang led his party, with Han Ying Xue and the others right behind him, and they were followed by the large army of the Lone Desert Smoke.

The long awaited Humbly Gentleman finally appeared, leading his own army on a large grasshopper, brownish-yellow in color! The two hind legs of the grasshopper were extremely thick and muscular, and the grasshopper had a pair of extremely thin wings that constantly quivered, but it could not fly. However, it could jump over a distance of seven to eight meters!

This grasshopper was obviously a [Battle Mount], because there were no signs of [Mounts] with such of designs.

He stared at Zhang Yang with his eyes filled with extreme hate, "Zhan Yu, it's been awhile since then!"

This 'Hypocrite' has every single right and reason to hate Zhang Yang. Without Zhang Yang and his 'Lone Desert Smoke', The Dominators would have been able to go to Shang Hai and they would have been eligible to

join the S-Rank Professional League Championship. Instead, they were stuck in the A-Rank Professional League Championship!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hypocrite! So you have not learned your lesson yet, here you are trying to challenge me again!"

Humbly Gentleman looked at Zhang Yang with cold eyes and said, "Now, Radiance also possesses a Territory as well! So it's not necessary for us to visit your Thunderstorm Castle just to use the teleportation service of yours! We no longer have to pay for your bullsh*t! Zhan Yu! It's been a while since you've occupied this Mining Cave, I think it's time you step out of it and let the others in!"

Right after that, a few other players came forth atop their [Battle Mounts], one of them was a male human warrior with the label of 'Dragon Slayer, Level 76, {Brilliance}', "Zhan Yu, we can share the wealth, we need not have to spill any blood over this! As long as you agree to let us come into your Mining Cave to mine together with you, we would not only be on friendly terms with you, but we will also protect this Mining Cave!"

Another player said, "That's right. The battle would only bring us unnecessary loss, instead, why not work together?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "If I went all the way to your place and demand that you share your wealth and properties, would you agree with it?"

Humbly Gentleman glanced at Zhang Yang coldly and said, "So you're saying that battle is inevitable!"

Wei Yan Er was enraged and she shouted at Humbly Gentleman, "You 'Hypocrite'! You really know nothing about shame! So, basically, you knock on our doorstep looking for trouble, and make us look like the unreasonable batch! Your face is thicker than concrete walls! No, thicker than two or three layers of concrete walls!"

"Cut the crap, battle it is! It's just one 'Lone Desert Smoke', and there are the four of us joining forces together! What's there to be afraid of!" another player of the Beastman profession, with the name 'Kiyumi, Level 77, {Meteor Rain}' cut in and said.

All of the opposing players were coming from 4 different guilds: The Dominators, Brilliance, Meteor Rain and Death's Wish. If it was one guild against another one guild, Lone Desert Smoke was unmatched!

Humbly Gentleman humphed lightly and said, "Zhan Yu, you're the one who forced our hands!"

Although it was them who came all the way over with the intention of taking over other people's land property, but to be able to lay the blame on the 'victim' instead, as if they were the ones who were wronged, this 'Hypocrite' is indeed worthy of his name!

Humbly Gentleman raised the staff in his hands and roared, "The Dominators, charge!"

"People of Brilliance, it's time for you show your strength to your enemies!"

"Let the world know of our strength! Meteor Rain!"

"The Death's Wish is the strongest guild of all! Not Lone Desert Smoke!"

The four guild masters of the four guilds were roaring, commanding their subordinates to launch their attacks on Lone Desert Smoke!

Instantly, the roar of 30,000 men from the four guilds gushed in towards Zhang Yang and his guild like a tidal wave.

Territory, Mining Cave, Land Lease, were the 3 most profitable sources of income in {{God's Miracle}}. Among all these three so-called 'resource points', one can only acquire a Territory by using the [Territory Command Order] or [Territory Subjugation Order]. Meanwhile, Land Properties required [Land Leases] for a player to make purchases of the land. So these two did not come easy.

But the case was very different for Mining Caves. As long as there were miners going into mine in the cave, there would definitely be profit!

This has made the Mining Cave one of the most wanted 'resources'. If one guild can block the entrance of a Mining Cave, then that guild can acquire a stable stream of income by sending their members down the

mines to mine! The sum of the profit from the mining activity is abundant!

With a wave of his hand, Zhang Yang also roared, "Brothers and sisters! For Lone Desert Smoke!"

"For Lone Desert Smoke!"

Everyone on Zhang Yang's side roared with vigor, riding on their [Mounts] behind Zhang Yang, while charging straight towards the large army!

The armies from two sides clashed into each other, and many players had jumped down from their [Mounts] to engage in intense battle --- most of the players did not have [Battle Mounts] yet, at the current stage of the game.

The melee profession players charged to the front, while the ranged profession players closely followed behind them. Everyone was unleashing their AOE skills, making the scene flooded with arrows, hails and rain of fire. In the midst of the crossfire, many players from both sides were instantly killed. Almost in an instant, a large number of players were turned into streams of white lights that were channeled straight to the graveyard.

"Witch Snow, follow me closely! We shall become 'Zhao Yun1' and 'charge seven times through2'!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

"... Silly Yang, you pervert! But, you look like a spear made of wax3! What, only seven charges and you're done? Fatty Han could do it all day, you're way behind him!"

Fatty Han had longed to hear such words, no matter who said it. He began to grin with a perverted facial expression on his face.

"Fatty, you're brilliant!" Endless Starlight immediately praised Fatty Han.

"Of course! It's a fact!"

Still, Han Ying Xue nodded, and thumped the shell of her [Red Gold Crab], and followed Zhang Yang. The two of them forced their way into

the center of their enemy!

With Zhang Yang's terrifyingly high defense currently, other than the Berserker's {Tornado Cleave}, he basically ignored all of the AOE skills from his enemies --- as AOE attacks were often weaker, and took some time to cast. For example, the {Barrage} of the hunter required 10 seconds to cast, and would barely damage Zhang Yang, if at all. Therefore, there is no way these AOE attacks would penetrate the defense of Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang charged into the sea of players, like water through creeks of a brick wall! Instantly, he switched to his [Dark Enigma Sword] and activated his {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep}, unleashing his assaults on his enemies, with wave after wave of his skills. As his [Dark Enigma Sword] triggered its special effect, the sword unleashed endless damage to the horde of enemies around him, like a radioactive bomb expanding out, reaching out to all the enemies nearby!

"Kill Zhan Yu first!" Humbly Gentleman quickly shouted to inform everyone, "Surround him! We must not let him get back to his army!"

He knew that Zhang Yang had a skill called {Shadow of the Void} that provided him a way out of difficult situations. He did not know what it was called, though!

Zhang Yang laughed maniacally, "Witch Snow, come now, let them have a taste of our {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}!"

Although the skill required a cool down of 72 hours, that was according to the in-game time, not the real time! It has been more than a day in real-time since they had unleashed their joint attack on Stormgarde!

Han Ying Xue reached out and held Zhang Yang's hand.

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

Immediately, the two of them became the center of the skill, and an area as wide as 30 meters of circumference was covered in hail snow which rained down from the sky. Meanwhile, the moon rose up into the sky and began to emit out waves of moonbeams into the surroundings.

The moonbeams began to shoot out in all directions.

‘-5000!’

‘-5000!’

‘-5000!’

...

Instantly, countless damage values popped up within the effective area of the skills, flooding up the entire area!

After 3 ticks of the damage, players were already beginning to die! They could not even heal themselves before they died! It was really a ‘jackpot’ for Humbly Gentleman as he had sent such a large number of troops to surround Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Squeezed tightly together in one spot, with their own allies pushing their backs, they all were shoved into the moonlight!

"Retreat! Retreat! Stay the hell away from him!" Humbly Gentleman was almost crying like a schoolboy! Not only have Zhang Yang’s equipment become impossibly strong and powerful, he also had such a skill up his sleeve! Is the game trying to push him until he dies?

After tens of seconds, finally, no one was charging at Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue anymore.

This is the difference between players and monsters. Monsters do not care about anything! As long as their aggro bars were not empty, even if there was a sea of traps, swords and other weapons right in front, the monsters would still charge at their targets! Players could observe and act accordingly to the situation. Since Zhang Yang was seemingly untouchable and unapproachable at the moment, everyone stopped, knowing that it was suicide!

30 seconds had passed, the {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar’s Dew} had stopped. Although Humbly Gentleman had shouted ‘retreat’ in time, more than 1000 players were already killed by the attacks!

That number of players dead was actually pretty terrifying!

The surroundings of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue was instantly

cleaned out! At least hundreds of equipment pieces glittered in Green-Copper or Gray-Silver light, all over the ground!

"Time to go!"

Zhang Yang quickly informed Han Ying Xue, and then the both of them began to retreat back to their army. At first, with the two of them activating the joint attack of {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, they had been invincible for 30 seconds! Now that the skill was over, it was time to go back. They would be overwhelmed by the numbers if they stuck around!

Of course, it could become possible for one player to go up against hundreds of players at the same time at the later stages of the game, if a player could get a full set of legendary equipment and a high-quality pet!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Zhao Yun - courtesy name Zilong, was a military general who lived in the late Eastern Han dynasty and early Three Kingdoms period.
2. Charges seven times through - a famous scene in Romance of the Three Kingdoms in which Zhao Yun charges seven times through the ranks of Cao Cao's armies
3. Spear made of wax - looks impressive but useless.

Chapter 358: Like Water Through a Brick Wall

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue's surroundings were immediately cleared. The two of them swiftly turned back to their mounts and rode to their army.

"After them! Don't let them get away!" cried Humbly Gentleman with great hatred.

If Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue managed to escape to safety, it would be a massive blow to Humbly Gentleman's soldier morale! However, during the casting of {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, all four guilds had scattered a great distance from them to avoid the attack. Now, to have them chasing after them was an incredible tough task. Furthermore, both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had mounts! A majority of the enemy soldiers were still running on their two feet! How could they run after a person who on a mount!? It was impossible! Not even a hundred foot soldiers could chase after them, all they could do is eat the dust that was flung onto them.

"Boss! Sister Snow and you were too cool! That's bloody sick yo!" said Endless Starlight in the party channel.

"Was that the Paired Skill?"

"Yeah...that's the Two-In-One Skill! Fu fu fu!" said Fatty Han after he shot an arrow and smile a V-shaped smile.

"AIYA! Noon tank! How could you be picky! I also want to be one with you!" said the little brat with a straight face, without any signs of her being shameful.

Zhang Yang stopped attacking immediately and almost slipped and fell when he heard what Wei Yan Er just said. "You stupid fat-f*ck! Can you please be a little more decent!? Please don't be teaching that kind of stuff to a little kid!"

Fatty Han did not respond, but instead, Wei Yan Er struck the earth with

her axe and glared at Zhang Yang. "Hey! Who are you calling a little kid?!"

"Who else!? Stop stopping and start killing!"

Everyone around the vicinity laughed at their comical act and continued killing. Even without Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue's Paired Skill, Lone Desert Smoke's combined attack force was naturally above the combined forces of all four guilds. During recruitment, Zhang Yang had a specific standard for players who wanted to join the guild. Because of that, the war between the guilds was leaning towards Lone Desert Smoke. He could not claim that each of his members could take on ten men at a time, but he was sure that they could handle a few opponents at once all by themselves!

Lone Desert Smoke players' average level and equipment strength were better than the majority of the opponent guilds. In truth, they were supposed to be overwhelmed by the sheer number of enemy, however, the entire battle did show any signs of that! After all, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had gallantly performed a powerful attack on the enemy and had killed a large number of them, the enemy had already lost motivation!

Never underestimate the power of morale in a war. In large numbers, morale played an important role to determine the outcome of a battle! With Lone Desert Smoke burning with vigor, they had successfully pressurized the opponents, causing them to drop their weapons as the deaths continued to pile up.

However, even with Lone Desert Smoke's superiority in war, both sides were suffering huge casualties. Zhang Yang turned his sight on Humbly Gentleman and said, "I'll be right back. I need to kill that hypocrite!"

Destroy the leader, and the gang will collapse. Zhang Yang wanted to do just that. Since the morale of the enemy was already rock bottom, killing the leader would definitely be the final step in winning the war. Zhang Yang activated {Dig} and headed underground towards Humbly Gentleman. The best thing about this skill was the fact that he could have a clear view of what that was happening above ground and would never be detected nor blocked by anyone! Naturally, mounts would be left out

during the activation of the skill.

Without much time wasted, Zhang Yang arrived at where Humbly Gentleman was. This man was a p*ssy to be blunt. He had never taken the reins and led his troops in the front lines. As a low-defense Spellcaster, he felt safest barking orders from far behind.

"Heh." Zhang Yang scoffed.

BOOM!

Zhang Yang broke the earth underneath Humbly Gentleman and stabbed him like a real ninja!

{Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

Shoosh! A bright light flashed, followed by a shadow that emerged out from Zhang Yang to form a man wielding a sword. The shadow then cut into Humbly Gentleman's body.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

After three pops, Humbly Gentleman dropped dead! The mount he was currently on was only a Gray-Silver tier that only increased his maximum HP by 11,000 which only gave him a total of 28,000 HP!

Pew! A quick gleam of gold jumped out in the air from Humbly Gentleman's body. With lightning speed, Zhang Yang swiped the boots and stashed it in his inventory. Confused and disoriented, Humbly Gentleman had no idea on how Zhang Yang was able to kill him! To prevent any infiltration of Thieves, Humbly Gentleman had set up a perfect barricade around himself. He had placed members around him, forming a perfect ring. Even though Thieves could be invisible with their Stealth mode, they could not phase through living objects. He had completely lowered his guard and had paid for it with his face kissing the dirt, along with his dignity and his Yellow-Gold boots!

Naturally, Zhang Yang had planned it all out. This battle had to be cut

short/ Thus, he had no need of saving his ulti {Dance of Heaven and Earth}. If he had not used it, that man would have the time to activate {Ice Frame}, leaving Zhang Yang open to attacks! Or worse, Humbly Gentleman could have escaped!

Now that he had started the fire, it's best to pour oil to spread the fire! This time, Zhang Yang changed his target to Kiyumi, the guild master of Meteor Rain. He then activated the Ring of Beastman's Ancestor and summoned an old orc from the ring. He then pointed his magic staff towards Kiyumi and started chanting a spell.

Pew! A long, white, electric burst out and shot towards Kiyumi.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

With three hits, similar to Humbly Gentleman, Kiyumi suffered a huge burst of damage and dropped down. Even though Kiyomi had a Gray-Silver mount like Humbly Gentleman, he was still killed within 3 seconds by the old orc’s {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}.

In less than a minute, Zhang Yang had killed two of the enemy’s leaders!

Even though anyone could easily revive after running back to the body in their soul form, or simply be {Revived} by a Priest, the morale of the entire army was greatly affected. Zhang Yang’s brave and bold feat had sent down a cold shiver to the enemy. Inversely, Lone Desert Smoke was massively invigorated, knowing that their boss had single-handedly defeated two leaders! With them removed from the battle ground, the enemy’s morale had dropped to a new level and was clearly faltering.

From the corner of the battle field, came a loud commanding roar. "Kill Zhan Yu! Do not let him live! Kill him now!"

The loud roar belonged to the guild master of Brilliance, Dragon Slayer. After all that had happened, that man still wanted to be Zhao Zi Long! He thinks he can remain unscathed from this?

Zhang Yang laughed at his idiocy and activated {Shadow of the Void}. His entire character slipped into another dimension, rendering him invisible to others.. 20 seconds later, he had reappeared at the furthest distance possible for him to travel.

"Praise the guild master!"

"Long live Zhan Yu!"

"Victory for Lone Desert Smoke!"

"In the name of Zhan Yu, we kill!"

"In the name of Lone Desert Smoke, we shall kill them all!"

"For glory!"

"For titties!"

"Please refrain from using indecent context in your speech. This is your first offense. There will be no further chances given," said Hundred Shots amidst the cheers.

With the raging morale from all Lone Desert Smoke members, victory was just an inch away, the moment Zhang Yang had slain Humbly Gentleman and Kiyumi. The battle continued on and the results were extremely obvious. Victory was already considered to be in hand. The delay was due to the fact that there were still unrelenting players from the opposing side who still believed that they could still turn the tables around.

Zhang Yang smiled and rode his bear away from the battle. He had done his part and decided to let the rest of the guild take care of the scraps. Without pausing, Zhang Yang rode towards the Altair Flatlands.

In the party channel, Hundred Shots had been constantly reporting on what was happening on their side, from how many enemies killed, to total equipment collected. Even though Lone Desert Smoke had suffered many casualties, with players losing their experience points and equipment, the end result was still a major profit.

Unlike the grand canyon that had not seen the lights of days, Altair

Flatlands was a complete inverse of that. This place was brimming with light that it could be said to not have seen the stars in the night sky, excluding the sun which was a star. During the day, it would be the same as your everyday brightness. However, when night falls, the place would be filled with light from the corner of the horizon, glowing with such radiant colors and brightness.

Zhang Yang had come here to search for the fifth descendant of the seven generals, called Eins Brook. According to the quest description, the NPC lived in Lake Basilock, in the west region of Altair Flatlands. Other than the name provided, Zhang Yang had to find his physical location by himself. Luckily, Zhang Yang was familiar to Altair Flatlands. If he was not, Zhang Yang could have taken a full day to search for Lake Basilock.

In two hours or less, Zhang Yang had arrived at the lake. Although the lake was not as large as Great Lake Valla, it was still huge. At least, Zhang Yang could still see the land on the other side of the lake. There was a small island...or rather, large rocks that formed a small tiny island in the middle of the lake. Perhaps, when it rains cats and dogs, the rock will be completely submerged by the rising water.

Zhang Yang started to think. With the lake being so huge, where should he start searching for the NPC? After some thoughts, he decided to start by searching around the lake. As simple as it should be, the journey was just too long to complete. By the time he was only halfway through, the war between Lone Desert Smoke and the four armies had already come to an end.

In conclusion, Lone Desert Smoke had 18,326 casualties, 3,906 losses of equipment, and had killed a total of 32,982 members! They had even collected a total of 5,389 equipment!

Zhang Yang was extremely satisfied with the results of the war. He then tasked Hundred Shots to distribute the equipment obtained from the war to all members, based on their achievements, and reimburse the players that had lost their equipment in the war. In a minute, there was a flood of messages filling up the guild channel. Everyone in the guild had probably received the news from Hundred Shots' announcement.

As they were celebrating, Zhang Yang was frowning in dismay. He had made a complete circle around the lake and had found nothing. There were nothing, but deserted land at the side of the lake. It was a thick forest, yet there were no traces of any human activities. Zhang Yang had wasted a total of 5 hours!

Zhang Yang frowned and decided that he should just start with the lake instead. He then summoned the Mythical Turtle and dove underwater. The Mythical Turtle shot through the water like a torpedo and was only leaving a trail of bubbles behind its tail.

The search of Eins Brook was clearly a long and arduous quest. Zhang Yang had spent 3 days searching the entire lake, and had only managed to cover 75% of it! Naturally, Zhang Yang had not wasted his time to search all the way, he had also managed to collect countless [Devil's Algae], which was considered to be a small consolation prize for him.

On the fourth day, Zhang Yang had arrived at a different island within the lake. It was a rather huge island that was filled with sky-scraping trees, that measured close to a hundred meters! The leaves on the tall trees were so tightly compact and spread, that Zhang Yang could roughly estimate that the shadows cast by the tree could take up as much as 10% of the entire lake. While the sun rays could still seep through the tiny gaps of the leaves, it had made the island truly mystical and serene.

Within the thick forest, there was a man-made pathway that headed straight into the forest. From where Zhang Yang stood, he could roughly see a white colored building. Zhang Yang unsummoned the turtle and called out the bear. As he rode further and deeper into the forest, he had a good feeling of reaching his destination, because for the past few days of lingering in the lake, he had only encountered beasts and not human tracks!

Soon after, Zhang Yang had arrived at a small village. There was a huge white stone statue erected at the entrance of the village. The white colored building that he had saw back then was this statue.

Just when he was standing and looking at the statue, many villagers had

surrounded Zhang Yang, pointing weapons at him and looking rather hostile.

"Outsider! How dare you remain on your horse and not bow down to Lord Eins Brook!" said a villager that behaved like the chief villager of the group.

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Zhao Zi Long, or as commonly known as Zhao Yun, courtesy name Zilong, was a military general who lived in the late Eastern Han dynasty and early Three Kingdoms period. In the novel Romance of the Three Kingdoms, Zhao Yun had never been wounded in battle before, so there were no scars on his body.

Chapter 359: It's All About the Reputation

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I'm not on a horse. This is a bear!"

Zhang Yang was expecting some rude comeback, but the villagers were obviously not programmed to have a sense of humor. They had only screamed angrily at him and demanded him to get down from his mount.

[Fanatic Follower] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

Note: They are the most loyal followers of Eins Brook.

As they were all normal tiered, Zhang Yang would not have trouble facing thousands of them! However, that was if he were to attack them. The NPC name tags were all in green! Which meant that Zhang Yang could only take a beating and not return any!

Zhang Yang sighed and moved towards the entrance of the village. However, when the bear was about to enter the village border, it was stopped with such a sudden force, as if it had just hit an invisible wall! The huge force nearly threw Zhang Yang off!

Zhang Yang finally understood. For him to enter the village and meet Eins Brook, he has to follow the rules! In Russia, do as the Russians do!

Zhang Yang got down from the bear and smiled as politely as he could. "Please. Everyone. There's no need for a fuss. Let's talk it out! Honestly, I am here because of my overwhelming admiration of Eins Brook!"

"That's Lord Eins Brook!"

"...Lord...Eins Brook."

The villagers then lowered their weapons. One of the villager that had the name "Solace" walked to the front and said, "Young man. Lord Eins Brook is the Son of the Fire God! He is the only man who can listen to the Fire God's words! You have no right to meet him!"

[Solace] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 86

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

He was the only elite tier NPC among the crowd. It seemed like he was the village leader.

Zhang Yang asked. "What could I do, to have the opportunity to have an audience with the great Son of the Fire God?"

Solace observed Zhang Yang from top to bottom with discerning eyes and said, "First, state your name and origin."

"I am but a lowly adventurer from White Jade Castle. My name is Zhan Yu. During my days adventuring in the wild, I had accidentally obtained news of...Lord Eins Brook's miracle. To express my admiration to him, I have traveled far and wide!" Kissing people's butt was free, besides, it seemed that the situation might really need it.

Hoping for the best, Zhang Yang was rewarded with a large smile from Solace. The villagers were also so happy that they were smiling from ear to ear. That kind of smile was something that you would not see when you praise someone.

With a smiling face, Solace's expression softens and was warmer. "Young man, you have made a wise decision. Ahh...Praise the Lord Eins Brook, for he is the son of the Fire God! He shall be the prophet of the Lord. To listen and convey His every command and deliver His judgment to us all! To have the opportunity to serve His grace, that is a certain blessing from the previous incarnation!"

Incarnation? This game is based on a western culture! How was there such a thing as reincarnation? Don't all westerners believe in eternal lives of peace in heaven? Reincarnation was a really eastern concept!

Zhang Yang hurriedly interjected Solace. "Blessed be upon thee! Please tell me, how do I have an audience with His grace! For I wish to fulfill my

wish!" That was a load of crap. Zhang Yang true wish was to have "His grace" beheaded, and swipe the fifth piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment, and be done with it.

If Solace knew what Zhang Yang was about to do, he would have marked Zhang Yang as an "Infidel," and have the entire village murder him. IF they could.

Solace nodded his head in satisfaction. "Lord Eins Brook will open the Worship Altar every month and announce the words of the Lord! However, only the most loyal followers shall have the qualifications to join such holy event. Zhan Yu. From here on out, you must steel your beliefs and serve the Lord's wishes! Only then, you shall gain His blessing!"

'Ding! You have unlocked a new Reputation: Son of the Fire God. Current Reputation Level: Neutral!'

'Ding! You can only meet Eins Brook after obtaining the Reputation rank: Revered!'

If Zhang Yang could scream and yell, he would have. Farming Reputation points was the most boring thing to do! He could almost feel the vomit surging out from his mouth when he recalled farming Reputation points for the Centaurs!

However, a quest was a quest. He had already gather four pieces of the Key fragments, he could not just stop halfway through. Besides, if collecting key fragments would be such a nuisance, the last reward for completing the quest should be extremely luxurious! At least, it would surely be so much better than any of the previous rewards from all the previous quests that he had already completed.

There was a blue color exclamation mark hovering over Solace's head. It indicated that Solace now had a repeatable quest for Zhang Yang to complete.

Zhang Yang then talked to Solace over again and accepted a bunch of scrap quests, like killing tigers to protect the village, collecting exotic fruits and giving them to Eins Brook as an offering, and chopping some wood to resupply the village. Almost all of the quests offered by Solace were

ranked D. Naturally, it was not hard, thus the Reputation points rewarded were rather measly. One quest completion reward was only at 250 points. Luckily, the in-game time was set to be 3:1, so he could invest some time in farming for those points.

The next problem was the fact that the quests had daily limits. He could only complete each quest once a day! Solace had 10 daily quests for Zhang Yang. One quest completion would reward him with 250 Reputation points. In two days, he would have reached Friendly. In four days, he would have reached Respectful, nine days to reach Admired, and 17 days to reach Revered! That meant that it would take as long as 6 real days for him to complete the requirements for him to meet Eins Brook!

That was the main problem with Reputation points! It could not be done in a flash!

Sighing heavily at his fate, Zhang Yang left the village and started clearing all his daily quests. All of the 10 daily quests had Zhang Yang running all around the place like Hermes the messenger. None of the quests were concentrated at one spot! The developers had it that way just to toy with the players and waste their time!

As Zhang Yang went around the world, he had roughly gauged the center of the entire island. It was about a 7 to 8 cubic kilometer square of the area that he could never enter. The place was blocked by an invisible wall that could not be breached, even with {Dig} or {Shadow of the Void}. The developers were smart enough to seal all the possible loopholes to prevent players from "cheating" their way in.

Even though the farming of Reputation points was a boring, dead task, Zhang Yang was lucky that the island had an abundance of Herbs and monsters lying around. As he cleared the quest, he had also collected herbs and killed monsters to gain some experience points. Zhang Yang had accepted the Reputation points farming since it had not drastically affected his leveling speed.

After 2 hours, Zhang Yang had finally completed all the 10 daily quests. He went back to the village and had his Reputation raised to Neutral:

2,500 / 3,000

This time, Zhang Yang had a thought. Players would eventually stumble across this place, and not because of the Dimensional Key Fragment quest. The system would never set up a map solely for Zhang Yang alone, for the sake of a single quest. Since it had to be that way, the Reputation points that Zhang Yang had farmed should have other uses, besides meeting the son of the Fire God! There should be a Reputation shop!

Zhang Yang went back to the village and search for the NPC. It was a little longer than expected, since the Reputation shop NPC was called the "Priest of God".

[Maltus, the Priest of God] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

After having a short, meaningless conversation with the NPC, he opened the shop menu.

Zhang Yang nodded in satisfaction when he noticed there were quite a number of useful items, such as Enchanting Gemstones, the Pet skill book {Sprint}, and a few Professional recipes!

Enchanting Gemstones were special. They could be used to further upgrade all kinds of Gemstones that were socketed in the equipment. For example, Zhang Yang's [Level 3 Vitality Gemstone] had a 50 Vitality bonus. After having the Gemstone "Enchanted" it would increase its specs from 10% to 100%.

Similar to Gemstone, Enchanting Gemstones will have a failure rate, ranging from 10% to 100%. The chances were completely random. If players wished to have 100% Enchanting rate, they would have to keep on enchanting the equipment with the same [Enchanting Gemstone].

Enchanting Gemstones require a specific rank of Reputation. However, it did not mean that with Reputation, you could acquire it, players would still

need gold coins to purchase them!

To put it blatantly, it's all about money.

On the side note, the skill {Sprint} was extremely well sought for. It allowed the mount of a pet to gain a double movement speed burst in a short period of time. It was extremely useful for both chasing and running away!

So far, Zhang Yang's Professional Alchemy was the only Profession that required recipes. As such, he had taken a liking to one of the recipes that were for sale. The [Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]. The potion will grant players, a strong and useful 5,000 bonus to Natural damage resistance for the next 2 minutes.

Surely but sadly, all of these good items would only be sold to players with a Reputation rank of Revered. With such a good cake, Zhang Yang had to share this piece with everyone. He then contacted Han Ying Xue and the rest of his friends and informed them about the news and had them farm Reputation points with him. Truth be told, he had indirectly dragged them down the waters with him. In truth, farming Reputation alone in the fields was just too boring.

Zhang Yang posted the Reputation shop item descriptions and drew in everyone else, like cats to a fish. While the others had taken quite some time to arrive, the easiest and fastest was Han Ying Xue. She had asked Zhang Yang to put on the Lover's Charm to allow her to teleport to his side instantly.

The moment Sun Xin Yu arrived, she walked up to Han Ying Xue and thrust her hand out coldly. "It's about time now. Can I have the thing you borrowed from me?"

Han Ying Xue scoffed coldly back at her and turned away. "Hmph! The Lover's Charm was not yours to begin with! Why must I return it to you?"

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. "Woman, how old do you think you are? What are you trying to pull by acting all cute and immature? Are you trying to be like a little girl now?"

He was no psychologist, but it does not take a Ph.D. certificate to know that there was something going on between the two females. Zhang Yang did not want any internal conflict between his own members and had decided to act out.

Sensing that Zhang Yang was at her side, Sun Xin Yu smiled smugly and turned her gaze to Han Ying Xue. "That's a gift from Zhang Yang!"

"Please. That's what you said! Back then, Zhang Yang had only passed it to you to help him claim the Territory! It was a tool to only allowed you to pass the final wave! It's not like he had given it to you as a gift! Stop trying to be presumptuous!"

The smile on Sun Xin Yu faded and was replaced with a sulk. "Give it back!"

"No!"

The two females then bumped their voluptuous chests against one another, trying to assert dominance over the Lover's Charm. Zhang Yang could swear that only he could see an electrical spark flaring between the two tigresses.

"Erhm..." Zhang Yang tried to speak but was immediately interjected by the two females.

"Shut up!" said both of them simultaneously.

"I think..." Zhang Yang tried to speak again.

"Who do you think should have the Lover's Charm?" asked the both of them.

Zhang Yang frowned. Logically, Zhang Yang felt that the Lover's Charm should be on Han Ying Xue. It would surely come in handy to have a healer on standby for he is a tank. He could have an emergency call for help to kill any sudden boss. However, Sun Xin Yu had been extremely helpful. Even though having a healer would be helpful in boss fights, Han Ying Xue would only be useful in boss fights! Sun Xin Yu was extremely helpful during the Territory War, and the day when he went to the Japan-Korean Region to farm for the Monster Attack Order! It's nail biting to not

be able to make a clear decision here.

The problem now was the fact that they were fighting over it. It's a female fight! If a man suddenly jumped in to solve the problem, he might end up being chewed out by them, or something worse...

The smartest way to do was to turn around and run. However, as the party leader, the guild master, and their friend, he had to take the responsibility! Both of them were main assets!

Zhang Yang thought of a strategy and tried it out. "Why are you even quarreling over a piece of accessory?" What best, but to demean an object, so that they would not view it as a precious item! "It's just a piece of a badge, just pass it to whoever who needs it. Isn't that simple?"

"NO!" both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue screamed simultaneously. For Han Ying Xue to scream every now and then was normal, but for Sun Xin Yu to raise her voice like that, it was extremely rare.

"In that case, how about a game of scissors, paper, stone? The winner takes it all?" said Zhang Yang.

"Fine!"

The two of them pushed against each other, squishing their breasts together, but it was impossible since the both of them had the chests of inflated airbags! There was no way for them to have a moment like men who could easily bump their foreheads together physically!

"Hehehehe. Noob tank! You're one sly, two timing pig!" said Wei Yan Er as she stood behind Zhang Yang, watching the entire scene. If there were some popcorn on the side, the little girl would definitely be munching on them happily.

Zhang Yang sighed tiredly. "I'd say, you could have spent some of the spare time you have to read some books and filled your empty brain with some knowledge. Yet, you're here, standing behind, me smirking like a crazy girl, hoping the worst to happen."

"Excuse me? What are you saying? It's 3am here! How could I study in the middle of the night! That's ridiculous!" Wei Yan Er pouted in defense.

"Hmm. Have you actually thought of going to any special schools?"

"Please...this young lady is as smart as Einstein, of course, it would be one of those top tier institutes."

During their little casual conversation, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were still busy throwing out their fists in an intense game of scissors, paper, stone.

Stone vs Stone!

Scissors vs Scissors!

Sun Xin Yu Paper won over Han Ying Xue's Stone!

"Grrr...3 matches!"

"Ok!"

The game continued on but Han Ying Xue was completely crushed by Sun Xin Yu after 2 consecutive losses.

"...5 matches!"

"Ok!"

...

"7 matches!"

...

"9!"

"21...!"

The two of them continued to haggle over their winning conditions. It's not like Sun Xin Yu was losing, but Han Ying Xue was still holding the Lover's Charm. Even if she won the match, Han Ying Xue would only further increase the match count until Sun Xin Yu could win it fairly and squarely! After some time, Wei Yan Er was already yawning. Zhang Yang quietly nudged the bored little girl.

"Let's go. I'll collect some herbs while you farm some Reputation."

"Ok."

The two of them walked away, leaving Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue puffing at each other. Without having the final decision settled, Zhang Yang was at a loss. He only knew one thing; from that day on, whenever Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue encounter each other, they would continue their match, probably till the end of time...

As time passed, everyone's Reputation points had accumulated and rose from Friendly, to Respectful, and Admired. Since everyone had started farming from the first day together, their Reputation growth was the same, since they could only complete the quests, once a day. On the 19th of March, everyone came together and completed the last Reputation quest. Everyone glowed with a bright green light and gained the Reputation rank of Revered.

At the same time, Zhang Yang had reached Level 81!

The experience point required to level up during Level 80 to Level 90 was roughly 20% more than the experience points required to level from Level 70 to Level 80. At Zhang Yang's grinding speed, he had needed at least 10 days (real world time) to gain just one level!

"Congratulations!" Solace clapped his hands and expressed his gratitude. "You have passed each and every one of the tests! I am proud to bestow upon you, the name, the honor, and the rank of the most loyal followers of Eins Brook! Walk tall and proud with the name. I have but one more good news for you. Due to your unrelenting selfless acts, Eins Brook was proud of your deeds and has granted you the permission to have an audience with him."

Finally! After so many days of tirelessly farming (and picking herbs), Zhang Yang had the chance to kill that s.o.b.

Zhang Yang was so excited and he could feel the tears falling down. "Brother Solace, where is Lord Eins Brook?"

"The Lord is in the Fire God's Altar, waiting to hear the words from the Fire God himself!" said Solace. "Go forth! You mustn't let the Lord wait for you!"

Translator's Thoughts

1. This opinion is based on the author.

Chapter 360: A Time to Counter

"How fortunate! He has the chance to meet with the great Lord Eins Brook!"

"ARGH! I'm so jealous!"

"I know right?! The great Lord will only agree to meet one follower every month!"

Right after the moment when Solace had dropped the news about how Zhang Yang and the gang had obtained the privilege to have an audience with Eins Brook, they were in shock, surprise, astonishment, and the kind of expressions you would expect when someone announces that they had just won the lottery.

Zhang Yang pretended to be as excited as well. After the ordeal, Zhang Yang and the party went on to the Reputation shop to get themselves the Enchanting Gemstone and {Sprint} pet skill book. After spending their gold coins, everyone proceeded to learn the skill, recipes, and they waited until everyone was ready to use the Enchanting Gemstone.

Under normal circumstances, the most common outcome of Enchanting would be a 30% increment in stats. Obviously, it is hard to get a better Enchanting result. Endless Starlight was fortunate enough to obtained 90% Enchantment results in just two tries. However, being a little greedy, he wanted to keep on Enchanting until he could obtain a 100% Enchantment result. However, after Enchanting for 10 consecutive turns, he had only managed to obtain a 60% Enchantment result. The little guy was left speechless.

Zhang Yang did actually learn from the other person's mistake, and he was not greedy in the first place. As long as he could get a 50% Enchantment result, he would stop there. He knew that Level 2 or Level 3 Gemstones were not really that powerful in the first place. The difference between 50% and 100% would be 200 Vitality points. Zhang Yang would not put much attention and effort just to gain that little amount of HP.

[Sprint]: Increases 100% movement speed of the mount for 15 seconds.

Cool Down Time: 10 seconds.

After Zhang Yang gave his advice, everyone followed his footsteps and were satisfied with 50% or higher Enchantment results. They knew that they should not hope for 100% perfect results unless it was a given. Still, even though they no longer strove for perfection, they had already spent close to 1,000 gold coins, each! That would be the same as 1,000 RMB! If they were to try and push themselves to roll for the best result, they would have to spend more than that! It all depended on luck! Zhang Yang advised them not to seek perfection in their Enchantment since they were only in the middle stage of the game! Each time they changed their weapons, they would need to re-socket their Gemstones, which leads to a re-Enchantment of their Gemstones. The amount of spending would skyrocket, and even Bill Gates would cry!

The team rode their way back leisurely to the village. Along the way, they cracked jokes about the way how the game burns a hole in their pocket. Some mentioned Bill Gates, while others mentioned Donald Trump!

After reaching the village area, Zhang Yang led the way to the altar to face their "lord". Zhang Yang came to a pathway that led outside the village, into the forest, and towards the center of the island, where Zhang Yang had stumbled across before. After pushing their Reputation rank to Revered, the invisible barrier was miraculously removed from the area and they could enter the place normally.

The entire altar was made of a type of white colored stone structure. With nothing but the white shade and a little gray here and there, the altar was made to look extremely majestic and grand. Right in front of the altar was a huge white statue that was crafted to look like a Fire God. Its feet were made to look like it was standing on fire. Its expression was crafted to make it look angry and blazing fire out of its mouth. This image of the Fire God was probably by the design of the villagers.

Zhang Yang rode closer and saw there were 10 huge men clad in armor, standing near the entrance of the altar. Their posture and the number of fallen leaves on their wide shoulder suggest that they had been standing there for quite some time, not to mention their commitment to...standing.

Zhang Yang approached them and one of them called out. "I believed that you're the visitors who have just arrived on this island?"

[Eins Brook's Personal Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Note: Eins Brook loyal personal guard.

Zhang Yang nodded. "That is correct sir. We are here to worship..L-Lord Eins Brook. Please notify his grace that we have arrived."

The NPCs were all green tagged. That meant the NPCs had yet to detect Zhang Yang's real motive.

"Follow me." Said another guard. He then took Zhang Yang and his gang into the altar. When Zhang Yang got closer to the altar, he took note of the construction of this mystical building. The altar looked more like a huge church. Inside the mega structure was a hall that was built over 24 pillars that supported a large dome shaped ceiling. Like the Sistine Chapel, this altar had paintings on the ceiling. Instead of angels, the ceiling was painted with pictures of what seemed to be the Fire God battling all sorts of enemies.

In the huge hall, there were many followers holding hands together, standing 2 meters apart. They were all holding hands and chanting something with their eyes closed. Zhang Yang could not understand the language they were using, but it seemed to resemble the monks in Tibet.

The deep and low chanting of the follower was not the typical Gregorian holy chant. In fact, it had made the entire ordeal feel like it was some sort of a requiem. The problem was not of the atmosphere of the hall. From the looks of it, it seemed that there were at least more than thousands of followers, with each of them being Level 85 and at elite tier. Having more than 85,000 HP, these monsters could pose a threat to the party if they were to attack all at once. On a side note, Zhang Yang was extremely pleased, despite the fear. If he could somewhat, kill all of them, how much

experience points would they amass?! Yes, it would be difficult, but not when Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had the skill {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}!

They moved forward on and saw a large throne, with a middle-aged man sitting at the deeper part of the altar. The man was sitting leisurely on the throne, with one hand supporting his forehead, as if he was in deep thought. The man was just a regular jack on the streets. He was not special in any way or so. He was not muscular, nor skinny. He was just average, in both his physique and his appearance. The best term to use to describe this man was, an average Joe!

[Eins Brook] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 86

HP: 8,600,000

MP: 4,300,000

Defense: 2,400

Note: "The son of the Fire God". The savior of all.

Zhang Yang smirked. Finally, he had the chance to see the fifth descendant of the seven generals!

The guards that had lead Zhang Yang to the throne bowed to Eins Brook. "Your grace, the outsiders that you summoned have arrived."

"Well done. You may leave," said Brook without batting an eye.

"Yes, your grace." The guards took several steps back while still bowing and left the throne. Only after a good distance, they stood upright and walked away normally.

Brook then turned his gaze at Zhang Yang and the party. His complexion suddenly turned sour as he bellowed. "How impudent. You dare greet the son of God without bowing?"

Zhang Yang answered his wrath with a laugh. "Eins Brook. It seems that you have gotten used to playing the act of...whatever it is that these gullible villagers think of you. I'll have you know. We are not dumb."

Brook widened his eyes when he heard how Zhang Yang had accused him. Instead of getting enraged, the man smiled. "Indeed, it seems that you're not as dumb and gullible as the villagers here. As expected of the adventures that roamed the world. Hahaha! Do you know how these villagers came to believe that I was the son of the Fire God?"

"How?" asked Wei Yan Er. The little brat had always like to poke around things that she should not have.

"These close-minded pets had never encountered a single Spellcaster in their life. When I had casted a fire spell, they had thought that I was the offspring of the Fire God! After I made up some lore about my past, they had truly believed that my power was the evidence of me being the son of the Fire God!"

He stood up. "For the past few days, I have been observing you. Indeed, I must say, that you have the capabilities. I do not know the purpose of your arrival, nor do I care. But I could guess it could be something of money and authority! Hence, I have a proposal for you lot. As long as you promise to serve me, under my league, I will provide you with an inexhaustible source of wealth and power over the villagers. When the time is right, I will lead an army and roam the great lands, and finally, restore the rights and glory of my ancestors!"

Zhang Yang was surprised. This NPC knew about his own ancestor's past. That would mean that among the seven descendants of the seven generals, he was the only person who knew about their ancestor's identity!

Zhang Yang continued to laughed. "Ah, so it is because that no one in this villager has ever seen a Spellcaster! That is why you were able to trick them in the first place! Who do you think you are? Just because you have ruled over a few people in the island, do you think that you can rule over the land? Do you even know how big the world is? You couldn't even be compared with a band of bandits! How are you to conquer the land with your power? You are clearly over your big, inflated head."

"Nyehehehe. Well said noob tank!" said Wei Yan Er as she snickered away quietly from behind.

There was an angry flare in Brook eyes. With a loud call, Brook bellowed. "Silence!" The voice echoed through the entire hall. In response, all of the followers stopped their chanting and dropped their hands in unison.

"Imbeciles! Insolent! Heretic! Begone with you! To hell shall you go!" cried Brook. He then lifted his arms up high and screamed. "These people are heretics! They were brought here by the fallen gods to deceive us with their lies! Kill them!"

In a flash of a second, the boss, the followers in the hall, and all their name tags were instantly flashed from green to the hostile red!

"Kill the heretics!"

"Death to heretics!"

"Kill the sinners! In the name of Lord Eins Brook!"

More and more followers started to fill the halls from all entrances. As more and more numbers started to pour into the hall, the number of monsters had already far surpassed several thousand!

If Zhang Yang had not procured the skill {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, how would they win this fight...

Frantically, Zhang Yang scanned the hall for something. He spotted two stone rooms at the side of each corner and immediately formulated a plan of attack. Each room entrance had the width of only 2 persons. If Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight could block the entrance, they could force the monster to squeeze into the entrance and defeat them via the bottleneck strategy. That or, they could all die once, and pull the monsters out of the hall after reviving and split the monster into two separate groups, with one tank each.

Either way, both methods were too slow...

Everyone started to panic as the thousand over monsters rushed towards them.

Zhang Yang finally stopped contemplating and decide to use what he had at the moment. "Snow B*tch! To me! It's time for another {Blizzard

Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}!"

Han Ying Xue jumped to his side and grabbed his hands. However, they did not immediately activate the skill. Since the skills had a 30 seconds activation duration, when the monster could get a little closer, they could buy a little more time. However, even when the enemy got extremely close to them, Zhang Yang still waited.

10 meters.

"Erhm...Dummy...?" said Han Ying Xue. Her voice was a little shaky.

"Not yet." Said Zhang Yang with a straight face.

5 meters.

Wei Yan Er screamed from behind. "Hey! Are you guys activating the skills or not?! We are going to be killed!"

3 meters.

"Dummy! It's now or never!"

2 meters.

"Not yet!"

1 meters. The followers were only an arms reach away from attacking Zhang Yang when he screamed.

"NOW!"

"KYA!"

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

Shush!

In a split second, the temperature in the hall dropped to a sub zero temperature. Uncountable flakes of snow started to materialize in the air. The ground was filled with snow as the glow of the moon filled the ceilings. With that, damage texts started to pop out.

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

If they were playing the game using the old standard PC, even using the latest 2017, GTX 1080Ti graphic card with the best i7 CPU, they would surely be faced with tremendous lagging! The sheer amount of graphic demand in this scene was the same as during the monster attack on the Thunderstorm Castle!

"Woah! This skill is awesome!" said Wei Yan Er in awe. "Noobie tank, could you get me a Paired Skill as well?"

Zhang Yang could not move, attack, and had to maintain the channeling posture. However, he could still talk. "That's fine. When I have the chance that is."

"What's that? There's no sincerity in your words! You're messing with me!"

"Woah woah woah! Since when did the little girl know how to detect sarcasm!?"

"Woah woah my *ss! Noob tank! You're always pulling my nerves! I'll tell you what I'll do. I'll turn off the heater when you're taking a bath! Hah! I'll see how you enjoy taking a bath in cold water!"

"Oh! That reminds me. Little Yang, how are you? Did you do a *little somethin' something'* if you know what I mean..." said Fatty Han with a perverted smirk on his face.

Both Lost Dream and Endless Starlight started to eavesdrop when they heard Fatty Han's pervert topic.

Zhang Yang sighed. "You guys....Could you at least be a little serious?"

"Nyehehehehe" the group of three perverted wolves snickered.

With the activation of {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, the HP of the enemy were dropping at a tremendous speed. Though it may seem fast, they still had to take at least 17 hits from the skill to deplete their 85,000 HP. At the same time, Wei Yan Er and the rest of the team had jumped

into the fray and started killing as swiftly as they could. On average, each monster would take at most 15 seconds to kill.

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. The author finally uses RMB! That's Ren Ming Bi, the currency of China.

Chapter 361: Eins Brook

Like withered leaves during autumn, the monsters dropped gracefully into the pile of snow. The enemies behind the first group that had fallen came taking over the empty space in the front. One by one, they continued to fall over and over.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Fanatic Follower. Obtained 9,494 Experience Points (50 points Party bonus)!’

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Fanatic Follower. Obtained 9,494 Experience Points (50 points Party bonus)!’

...

Like popcorn, the popping sound of the system notification continued to ring in everyone ears. As for their experience points, it was going up so swiftly that they could practically see the experience bar slowly filling up!

An elite monster will grant 10 times the experience points of a regular normal tier monster. Since they were killing so many elite monsters like they were flies, Zhang Yang and everyone else’s experience bar was filling up like a cup full of beer in a free-for-all buffet.

30 seconds later, after the skills ended, the entire hall was covered in dead corpses and a few Fanatic Followers that had entered the hall a little later. As they say, the early bird gets the worm, but the second mouse gets the cheese. However, the problem was, this cheese, bites back. Zhang Yang and the party cleared the entire hall and made sure there were nothing left. They had only taken less than a minute to kill every last monster. On the other hand, like all MMORPG gamers would feel, killing was easy, but the looting, would take up most of the time.

As expected from the OP, super imbalanced skill!

The crowd worked together to collect all the loots. They had collected so many [Silk], and more than 10 Gray-Silver equipment. Upon entering Level 80 maps and higher, almost all Gray-Silver boss was only treated as Green-Copper tiers. Basically, they were worthless. That being said, there

were still a few equipment that could be sold for a few gold coins, especially those that had a set equipment set effect.

[Rhino's Hide Boots] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +67

Strength: +34

Dexterity: +76

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

Rhino Guard set equipment set effect: [Rhino's Hide Coat], [Rhino's Hide Gloves], Rhino's Hide Boots.

3 Set Effect: 100 Dexterity bonus.

The thousands of elite monsters had produced a total of 11 Rhino's Hide Boots, 9 Coats, and 8 Gloves. In precise, they had farmed a total of 8 complete set equipment. Now that they had several completed sets, selling them at a few thousand gold coins per set would not be a problem.

Wei Yan Er rubbed the coat with her tiny little fingers and said, "Why is the set effect is called Rhino's Guard, when the equipment were made from Rhino's hide. It should be called Rhino's Butcher!

The question was asked by Wei Yan Er, however, everyone turned their head towards Zhang Yang in unison.

F*ck!

Zhang Yang ignored the crowd. It was a stupid question, and answering it would only be wasting his saliva.

Brook did not participate in the fight, instead, he remained standing at his throne even after every single Fanatic Follower had been killed. The boss had already "exited" the story mode, and now fell into the open-world category. It would only attack when players enter his aggro range.

Everyone waited in suspense. Zhang Yang stared at the boss, and

everyone asked the same question.

"What's the plan?"

In the presence of a Violet-Platinum boss, there was a certain pressure. Everyone did dare to try anything at all. After all, it was the strongest boss they had faced so far. In truth, Zhang Yang himself did not fight this boss in his life. He thought for a while. "I think we should all withdraw outside. We'll kite him out there and fight there. At least we can fight while riding the mounts."

Fighting while on a battle mount would increase a player's lifespan, as in HP. It could also provide a certain degree of attack power. Unlike Zhang Yang and other Hunter class players, if the rest could unmount their mounts and have their pets battle together with them, it would be efficient. At least range class would not need to be in melee range to have the battle pets participating.

Everyone agreed with Zhang Yang's plan and withdrew towards the entrance of the altar.

Zhang Yang patted Fatty Han's shoulder and said, "Yo Fat*ss, control your pet, and kite the boss out!"

Fatty Han turned his head swiftly. With crocodile tears, Fatty Han cried, "Bro...why me?"

"Because you're my bro."

"Bro, that's cheating."

Knowing that he did not have much choice, Fatty Han controlled his white bear cub towards the inside of the altar. In truth, he wanted to mimic Zhang Yang's style and had purposely went on the hunt for a white cub. However, unlike a Rare Battle Mount, the white bear cub that he had tamed was only limited as a pet. It could not be used as a mount nor a battle mount.

A Hunter could summon both a pet mount and a pet in the same instance. They had one benefit, if one or the other died in battle, it would not affect the cool down time of the other. While other players would have

to wait for a 10 minutes cool down time to re-summon the battle mount.

"Your sacrifice will be remembered, little cub," cried Fatty Han when the little white bear cub had entered the boss's aggro range. The girls were all "owwww~" when they saw the little, clumsy, cute, and adorable mammal trying to make its way to the boss. The boss noticed the bear and immediately got up from his throne to give chase to the little bear.

Immediately, Fatty Han controlled the bear to turn around and frantically run back to him. Although the boss' movement speed was much faster than the cub, it was slightly delayed since the pet had quickly gotten out from the attacking range of the boss. However, after 2 to 3 seconds, the boss had reduced the distance between him and the cub to 20 meters! The boss immediately stopped and started to cast its spell.

Casting {Fire Missile}!

0.5 seconds...1 second...1.5 seconds...Pak!

The spell which needed more than 2 seconds of casting time failed the moment the cub managed to run out of the boss' attacking range. Brook had to stop casting and start chasing again. The biggest problem with A.I controls was the fact that they did not think about the future or act in response to player's tactics. It will only move, attack, and cast skills based on its original programming. This boss was programmed to chase and attack the target when it was in its range. It did not run up closer to the cub, but instead, it ran until the cub was at the 20 meters casting range, which was the maximum range of the boss. This has led the little white bear to have sufficient time to run away from the boss and prevent it from receiving any attacks from the boss!

The little pet had escaped safely and returned to Fatty Han's side unscathed. Everyone was surprised and a little jumpy when they saw that the bear was completely unharmed.

Fatty Han patted the little bear and laughed. "Hahaha! As expected from my own pet! It's stronger and better than the others!"

While the rest was standing by, Zhang Yang was already on his Mythical Turtle, waiting at the front for the boss to arrive. Once he got the boss in

sight, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} to draw the boss' attention.

‘-3,385!’

Brook received the damage and immediately stopped chasing the bear. He stopped where he was and started chanting a {Fire Missile} at Zhang Yang.

What was the worst enemy a Guardian could face? Magic type. Zhang Yang immediately jumped down from the turtle and dashed towards the boss.

{Charge}!

Sliding on the white floor, Zhang Yang knocked into the boss and hacked the boss with his one-handed axe.

‘-2,177!’

This time, the boss had finished its chant and blasted a fiery projectile towards Zhang Yang.

‘-13,426!’

Countering Zhang Yang's 4 digit damage with a 5 digit attack, Zhang Yang had taken a huge damage. A Guardian would lose all meaning of its immense physical Defense since a magic type attack would be affected by Magic Defense. Not even {Block} was useful in this situation!

If the boss could deal over 13,000 damage every 2 seconds, not even the super healer like Han Ying Xue could handle the support! Still, while facing a Violet-Platinum, boss, her superb equipment and mana control was profound enough to handle the battle, though it would take a lot of effort.

Luckily, Zhang Yang was well prepared, with many survival skills!

"Endless Starlight! Try and gain more aggro! If I can't handle the pressure, I'll clear my aggro with {Shadow of the Void}. Try your best to catch hold of the aggro!"

"Aite boss!" said Endless Starlight. In this party, his role was to be the

secondary tank. If he could not take up the role, there was no further reason to keep a useless, non-attacker, and non-healer player in the party!

The Mythical Turtle was slow but it had managed to get close to Zhang Yang to allow him to jump on his back. Once Zhang Yang got on, his HP limit was shot up to 128,190! To put into comparison, the Gray-Silver mount that Endless Starlight had was only to provide a measly 32,480 HP max-limit to Endless Starlight! The difference was truly heaven and earth!

It could not be helped; Endless Starlight was only Level 77. The equipment he was wearing were a mix of Level 60, and Level 70 Yellow-Gold equipment. There were no Violet-Platinum equipment pieces on him! However, even though his HP was considered to be low, others might not be able to compete with him; not unless they could procure themselves a Violet-Platinum battle mount like Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately took control of the fight and everyone could relax and concentrate on attacking. It was lucky that the boss level was at Level 86. Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party were mostly between Level 77 and Level 78, the damage they could deal was not fully reduced due to the Level penalty. The attack output was even stronger when Zhang Yang had stacked up to 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}. Those that had battle mounts enjoyed it the most! The damage their (battle mounts) could provide were rather significant!

"Fools! Death be upon you! You cannot hope to win the son of the Fire God!" cried Brook. With a loud burst of explosion, there were a total of 9 {Fire Balls} that burst out from Brook's wand and shot towards everyone.

'Ding! Eins Brook has used {Mass Missile}!'

Usually, skill attacks could only be blocked by defensive skills. Since the party did not know about the nature of the skill, they did not use any defensive skill and took the attack head on.

'-15,000!'

'-15,000!'

...

Instantly, other than the two tanks, the rest of the party had taken 15,000 damage.

"OH COME ON!" cried Han Ying Xue in a fit of anger. Puffing with steam, Han Ying Xue cursed all sort of vulgarities under her breath and swiveled around to cast all sorts of mass-healing skills to heal the party.

"Little Yang, next time, try and recruit Fantasy Sweetheart into this party. Since there's one slot empty, might as well fill it in. It's better and safer to have two healers, innit?" said Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Tell the truth. You want her in, to heal you, or to be with you?"

"Nyehehehe."

"So how are you with Xiao Wei lately?"

"Hehe! Just wait for the invitation to the wedding dinner!"

"Eh?! Fatty! You're getting married?!" cried Wei Yan Er in pure shock. "Which sister in this world had knocked herself to the wall and have her brains all messed up?"

That was a little too much, even for Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang defended his brother-in-arms and said, "Come on. Don't say that. Our Fat*ss here has a few good points to him, you know?"

"Like what?" asked Han Ying Xue out of the blue.

"Yeah! Like what?" said Fatty Han as he turned his face to Zhang Yang.

"Well...I erhm..." Zhang Yang stumped. To find good points about Fatty Han would be the same as finding the chances of survival while fighting a Violet-Platinum boss, while wearing nothing but Gray-Silver tier equipment.

Everyone laughed at Zhang Yang's silence. Only Fatty Han was smiling bitterly, shrugging resignedly. "Oh well."

Brook's {Mass Missile} attack could be cast without a warning. The skill was a nuisance since it could target everyone within the vicinity! When

players did not have the time to defend against the skill, the party's healer, which was Han Ying Xue was having a bad time! Luckily, almost everyone had battle mounts, and coupled with Zhang Yang {Vitality Aura} that provide a 16% bonus Vitality, they could endure two shots of the skill without being killed. This had provided Han Ying Xue sufficient time to heal them!

Still, Brook's attack was strong. Even with Han Ying Xue the super healer in the party, Zhang Yang was forced to use one surviving skill, one [Healing Potion (Grade 9 Transmutation)] and still suffered from great HP loss!

Chapter 362: The Fifth Dimensional Key Fragment

As always, Zhang Yang's party total attack power was not to be underestimated. The boss was strong, but so was the party. They had managed to hack down Brook's HP down to 75% in less than a minute.

During that time, Brook lifted his wand and cried out, "Spirits of Fire! I summoned thee to assist me!"

In a split of a second, eight Fire Elementals appeared on the battle field. They had miraculously been formed roughly 40 meters away from the boss. Slowly, the elementals moved towards the center where they spread out to where Brook was at. The elementals were only as tall as half of a man's height. Burning in the air, they hovered a few inches above the ground, like the glowing orbs of ghosts.

'Ding! Brook has used {Summon Fire Spirits}!'

[Fire Spirit] (Elite, Summoned)

Level: 85

HP: 100,000

Defense: 450

Immediately, Zhang Yang switched his targets and call out. "Aim for the minions!"

Usually, when the boss summons something out, they would target the players and chase after them. Their roles were simple, to either immobilize them or damage them. The player could simply move away and kill them before any bad stuff happens. This time, the summoned elementals were all moving towards the boss! That must be a hidden agenda behind their movements! Also, their slow movement speed had practically given the players a chance to destroy them. Like the previous bosses that Zhang Yang had encountered, the summoned minions might buff the boss or even heal him! By any means necessary, it would be wise

to kill them before they could do anything at all!

The rest of the team understood, without having Zhang Yang to point it out for them. Melee players pulled the reins of their mounts and headed to engage them. Ranged players stood from afar and attacked from there.

After a few experimental shots, it was just as Zhang Yang had guessed. The elementals would not attack the player, much less even pay any attention to them. Unfortunately, the elementals would not be affected by any status effect skills. They would just continue on, at a constant, unintermittible speed, towards the boss.

Everyone's combined attack power, coupled with the battle mounts that they possessed, had managed to kill one of the Fire Spirits with relative ease. Shortly after that, another one dropped and turned into ash. Following next was the third. And then the fourth...

These Fire Spirits were so slow that they had needed more than 30 seconds to travel a short distance of 40 meters. Thus, with Sun Xin Yu and the other attacking class had a luxurious amount of time to terminate them.

That being said, it would still be impossible for them to kill all of the Fire Spirit within the stipulated timing. Each of the Fire Spirits had 100,000 HP and were widely spread across the battle field. After killing one, the players would have to travel a short distance to kill the other. That travel time alone had provided the Fire Spirit the opportunity to move closer to the boss!

Zhang Yang started calculating and if the situation continued on, at least two Fire Spirits would successfully have made it to the boss. Though he may not know what would happen if they did, it could not be pretty.

Zhang Yang hesitated for a while before he jumped down from the Mythical Turtle and ran towards the empty spot where the Fire Spirit was killed. He wanted to lure the boss away to extend the distance for the Fire Spirits to travel and provide more time for the team to kill the remaining Fire Spirits.

Although his plans and execution might be flawless, Brook was not

stupid enough to be "trick". Or rather, Brook did not chase after Zhang Yang even when he had the aggro. The system might have set the boss to be stationary when Brook has summoned the Fire Spirits. He had to remain stationary until they had come to him or if they were killed off.

Zhang Yang quickly went back to his original position. There could be a chance that the Fire Spirits might heal Brook, and if that was the case, Zhang Yang had to be in place to make sure that {Destructive Smash} is on the boss.

Zhang Yang came to him, dealt a clean {Destructive Smash} and the two remaining Fire Spirit had arrived to the boss.

Brooks laughed and pointed his wand at one of the Fire Spirits. "Let the Fire Spirit cleanse your sins!"

Foom!

The Fire Spirit exploded into a large fiery wave that spread to all directions. The initial wave was so strong and powerful that the fire could even reach the end of the island!

‘-100,000!’

Immune!

‘-100,000!’

Transferred!

Absorb!

...

It was during this time, everyone is tested for their intuition and speed.

Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream had disappeared the moment the wave struck them and had evaded the attack via the I-Frame. Daffodil Daydream used {Ice Frame} to render herself immune to all attacks. Endless Starlight used {Sacred Protection}. Zhang Yang used {Sacrifice} to protect Han Ying Xue and had activated the Titan’s Chest Plate’s extra effect to protect himself.

Sadly, that was the only survival skills that were used. Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and Wei Yan Er were killed instantly. None of them had any life-saving "immunity" skills.

When everyone thought that the worse was over, Brook pointed his wand to the other remaining Fire Spirit and repeated the same line again, releasing another intense blast that spread all across the battle field.

‘-100,000!’

‘-100,000!’

Both Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream were immediately sent out of stealth and died.

Immune!

Immune!

Daffodil Daydream and Endless Starlight both still had their "invincibility" skill active, so they were unscathed.

Transferred!

Zhang Yang's {Sacrifice} was still active on Han Ying Xue and he had taken all the damage on her. At the same time, the Titan Chest Plant effect was still active, and was able to further absorb more damage before it breaks. In fact, the Titan Chest Plate effect could absorb a total of 300,000 damage! There was a surplus of damage that could not be absorbed.

‘-12,904!’

After the grand attack, Zhang Yang's team was only left with five members, leaving Daffodil Daydream as the only person capable of being the attacker.

How could they continue the boss fight when the boss' own normal attack was overwhelmingly strong?! Even with Zhang Yang's iron clad defense and Han Ying Xue's super healing capabilities, they could not last until the boss was defeated. They could only throw in the towel at this point. Especially since the team was left with just one attacker, or even

two, if you take Zhang Yang as one of the main damage dealers.

"Noob tank. I think we should kill all the minions before they reach the boss. Or else, they will explode and kill us all," said Wei Yan Er after a long silence.

The party kept quiet when one of them accidentally cough out a laugh.

"...You'll make an Isaac Newton. Really...I mean it. It's just, why didn't you say it 300 years ago!?"

"That's because I wasn't born 300 years ago, dummy!"

As expected of the little girl, she was still new at detecting sarcasm. Knowing that continual struggle would be meaningless, Zhang Yang ordered everyone to give up the fight and start it over. Everyone allowed the boss to burn them to death and they regrouped.

"Those Fire Spirits are the main problem."

"I agree. But I feel that our DPS was a little too weak."

"You're not wrong, though. In fact, we might not make it if we rely solely on DPS. The boss summoned those fire thingies at 75% HP. I fear that it might summon those things again at 50% and at 25% HP."

"How about this, when dealing the first wave of minion, take a bottle of {Power Potion}, in the second wave, use any skills that can increase attack damage. Kill the third wave of minions normally. If there's not enough time, kill them with {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}. However, I must warn you, that skill is our trump card. God knows, the boss might go berserk later. Do not use the skill unless it's really necessary!"

"Roger."

Everyone revived and healed themselves back to full health, and had a lively chat until all their skills were ready to be used. The pets that had been killed in the battle were also revived. The team could not proceed on without them. After 6 to 7 minutes, everyone was ready to go.

Fatty Han sent his little white bear cub into the altar and lured the boss out again.

The battle took off smoothly without using any strong skills. They all waited until the boss summoned the minion, and then only used all their skills in one lump sum.

75%...

"Fire Spirits! I call upon thee to assist me!" cried the boss and the same Fire Spirits were summoned.

Zhang Yang knew that the boss would not attack, hence he ignored the boss and jumped down from the Mythical Turtle to attack one of the Fire Spirits. Everyone else consumed a bottle of [Power Potion], gaining a 20% increase in attack damage and attacked the minions.

Slightly faster than before, the party had killed the first, followed closely with the second and third. At the 29th second after the boss had summoned the Fire Spirits, the last Fire Spirit was only one step distance away from the boss before it was killed in time.

It was a pity that the active skill of the Titan Chest Plate had a 4 hour cool down time. Since it would be a long time since it could be used again, Zhang Yang could only rely on all his other skills to survive. However, when the boss had over 57% HP, Zhang Yang had reached his limit.

"Endless Starlight! Prepare to take over!" Zhang Yang cried.

"Ok boss!"

Zhang Yang immediately activated {Shadow of the Void} and slipped into the other dimension. After getting to a safe distance, he sat down to eat recovery snacks.

Before the battle had even begun, everyone already knew what they were supposed to do and not to. Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream whom did not have any aggro clearing skill started holding back to make sure they did not OT Endless Starlight, which might lead them to be killed the moment Zhang Yang left the battle. At the same time, Endless Starlight had used {Dance of Heaven and Earth} to increase the damage deal on the boss to increase his aggro value on him. Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han had their own aggro clearing skills and had easily

done so.

After healing, Zhang Yang came back to the boss, hopped onto the Mythical Turtle and regained the aggro target. Zhang Yang tried his best to get the boss to attack him and to make sure no one dies in battle.

50%...

"Fire Spirits! I summon thee to assist me..." The same call, the same speech, and the second wave of Fire Spirits was summoned again.

Everyone changed their targets and attack the minions. All skills, accessory effects, anything that could increase their damage were activated to deal with the second wave.

Their speed gradually became faster, and the monster were all killed in just 28 seconds.

"That's great! Keep it up, guys!"

Endless Starlight might be the future top tanks in China, but his talents were not truly demonstrated in the face of a Violet-Platinum boss. Right now, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue were the only two players in the party who had more than a full set of Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment. Sadly, Endless Starlight's equipment were just too weak!

At 31%, Endless Starlight had used all his survival skills and had unfortunately died. The boss had immediately switched to Zhang Yang after Endless Starlight's death. Zhang Yang's own DPS of 3,200, coupled with the Mythical Turtle 3,600+, were able to grab the aggro successfully! Furthermore, the passive skill {Shield Oath} had provided an extra 20% aggro generation on each attack that allowed Zhang Yang to ace the aggro list.

Now that Zhang Yang was taking the helm, both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had no need to hold back any longer. Even after Endless Starlight had died, it would not affect the overall damage output. He had done his job as the secondary tank, and he had done it flawlessly.

25%!

Brook had summoned the third wave of minions. This round, everyone's skill and potion were still in their cool down status. The only thing they could do was attack as furiously as they could.

One by one the minions were taken after, but it was the same as the previous fight, there were at least two more minions that they could not defeat in time.

"Fatty! Use {Dance of Heaven and Earth} to kill that one! I'll take care of the other!"

"Ok!"

Both brothers activated their skill and instantly killed the remaining Fire Spirits, leaving the boss alone!

"Heretic! Blasphemy! Death! Death be upon you!" cried the boss crazily.

22%, 16%, 11%...

Zhang Yang had already used {Rearm} to reset all the skills. Besides {Shield Wall}, and {Vanguard's Aggression}, all other important skills were already used twice! Finally, the boss had reached 10% HP!

As expected, the boss glowed with a bright reddish light and gained a huge size increase. He had entered Berserk state.

"I am the son of Fire God! I am Invincible!" bellowed Brook.

'Ding! Eins Brook has gained the power of Fire. Gained a 100% increase in attack!'

"Everyone! To me!" cried Zhang Yang.

Everyone pulled their reins and rode towards Zhang Yang. After gaining a huge boost in attack, the boss could easily kill everyone, except for Zhang Yang.

Pew!

With increased speed, Brook threw out his wand and blasted a series of {Fire Missile}.

Before the attack landed on Zhang Yang, he had managed to protect

everyone with {Vanguard's Aggression}. A huge bubble had formed around him and formed a protective light barrier.

"Everyone, use {Dance of Heaven and Earth}!"

At the same time, all six remaining members of the party used {Dance of Heaven and Earth},

Shush! Shush! Shush!

One by one, shadows formed and entered the boss' body, dealing huge damage to him.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

At the same time, Zhang Yang had been recovering nonstop ever since he had activated {Shield Wall}. It was all because of the Titan Chest Plate's special effect that granted a 10% HP healing each second.

After 10 seconds, Brook's HP was left with 24,000 HP!

...

10,000!

4,000!

0!

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Eins Brook! Obtained 1,075,050 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

The moment the boss dropped, everyone received a luxurious amount of experience points. All, except for poor Endless Starlight. At the very least, they had killed the boss.

"Me! Me! Lemme! I want to pick!" Excited like a child on a sugar rush, Wei Yan Er jumped down from her Chocobo and proceeded to pick up the loot on the floor. It was not just Wei Yan Er, in fact, everyone else was eager to see what the boss had dropped for them. After all, it was a Violet-Platinum boss!

Zhang Yang found a piece of a silver-metallic object on the floor and picked up the fifth piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 4!’

Zhang Yang had collected the fifth piece. With only two pieces left, Zhang Yang could form the final Dimensional Key to open the path to the Imperial Heaven's Empire!

Chapter 363: Party Summon Order

As Wei Yan Er skipped happily towards toward the loot of the boss, everyone could not help but smile, especially those who did not have any Violet-Platinum equipment.

[Party Summon Order] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Use: Summons your party (Maximum 10, including Party Leader) to your side. Cool Down Time: 1 Hour.

Leve Requirement: 80

Everyone exchanged a look and raised an eyebrow. What kind of item would not increase attack, defense, or any stats, but summons a bunch of people to one's side?

While everyone was extremely confused, Zhang Yang was the only person who was laughing happily. Since no one expressed their desire for the item, Zhang Yang took the item and kept it. "Hey guys. It's not as bad as it looks. If anyone could get their hands on a Group Summon Order or an Expedition Summon Order, that would be nice."

In 'God's Miracle', 10-man parties are the basic party built system. 5 of the 10-man parties would form a 50-man Group. 20 of the 50-man group would form a 1000-man Expedition. There are Expedition Summon Orders and Group Summon Orders, both in which could respectively summon 999 players, or 49 players to the user's side.

It was an incredible item to hold on to. If a few Thieves could smuggle themselves into an enemy territory, they could use the Expedition Summon Order to call out a few thousand players to their side and easily topple over the Territory. It could also be used to eliminate an important enemy NPC boss.

That is, if they could get their hands on several Expedition Summon Order! Since the usage of the item was too good to be true, the item drop rate was extremely rare. Party Summon Order's drop rate was rare but it's not impossible to obtain one. On the far side of the scale, Expedition

Summon Orders were so rare that it could take the luck of a thousand men to farm it. Zhang Yang had only known about the item's existence in his previous life. However, to whom it belonged to, was unknown to him.

Wei Yan Er continued to reveal another item.

[Leve 3 Guild Upgrade Order] (Violet-Platinum, Usable)

Use: Upgrades the Level 2 guild to Level 3.

Requirement: Guild Master position.

If they could smile harder and wider without tearing their lips apart, the party would gladly do it. This piece of upgrade order had been on their radar for as long as they had been a Level 2 guild.

"It's finally out!" cried Fatty Han.

"Finally shot it out?" said Endless Starlight with a perverted smile on his face.

"Oh, I'll 'shoot' your sister!" Fatty Han gave him the finger.

"Sadly, I don't have any sisters. How about you shoot one out for me?" said Endless Starlight laughing. Fatty Han fell silent as he could not come up with any comeback.

Zhang Yang picked up the guild upgrade order and bellowed proudly. "We, the Lone Desert Smoke shall be the first guild in China to be a Level 3 guild!"

"Yeah!" Everyone cheered. The guild's strength was their strength, the guild's pride was their pride. The guild was like their home, their country, their homeland. With their guild standing stronger than ever, every member of the guild would have their standards increased! Even the common members too, would feel a certain level of pride to walk in the game, having the name tag - Lone Desert Smoke hanging over their heads.

Zhang Yang then opened the guild upgrade window and prepared to use the Level 3 Upgrade Order. Lone Desert Smoke had long since reached the maximum experience points to reach Level 3, the last step they needed to take was to obtain the Level 3 Upgrade Order!

‘Ding! Lone Desert Smoke has fulfilled the conditions to upgrade to Level 3. Proceed to upgrade Lone Desert Smoke to Level 3. Will consume one [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]. Proceed?’

Heck yea!

‘Upgrading...’

‘10%...30%...50%...70%...100%!’

‘Ding! Congratulation! Lone Desert Smoke has been upgraded to a Level 3 Guild!’

Every member of Lone Desert Smoke heard the notification bell. Within seconds, the guild channel was instantly filled with words of gratitude by almost all the members.

‘Server Announcement: Congratulations to guild Lone Desert Smoke. They are the first Level 3 Guild! All members of Lone Desert Smoke will receive a 3 days benefits: 100% Bonus Experience Points, 50% discount on equipment repair fees, Gem Socketing fees, and Item Identifying fees.’

The benefits of becoming a Level 3 guild was the extra benefits upgrade! The maximum member limit had been increased to 30,000. Furthermore, the 20% bonus experience points gained from grinding and completing quest had been increased to 30%! Either benefit was a huge help to further strengthen the guild’s prowess.

Right after the system notification was released, other guild masters like Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, Crimson Fire, and Sky Shaman had sent their congratulations to Zhang Yang. Unexpectedly, even One Sword Stroke had sent his regards as well! Perhaps, he was trying his best to resolve the conflict between the two guilds.

However so, the two guilds had already formed a deep, intense sense of enmity. The conflict between the two guilds could never be resolved with a few simple words! Even then, Zhang Yang would never find peace with One Sword Stroke, as long as Liu Wei stood with Imperial Sky!

[Holy Gauntlet of Justice] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +81

Intelligence: +40

Equip Effect: Absorbs 162 damage on attack.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

This gauntlet was a Defender's specific equipment. Zhang Yang could use it nonetheless, but he would be wasting the 40 Intelligence points. Now that the party had a Defender, it would only be fitting to hand it over to him.

Smiling from ear to ear, Endless Starlight took the item and rubbed it against his face. Though he was not Level 80 yet, he was excited to have finally obtained a Level 80 Violet-Platinum equipment.

The remaining equipment Wei Yan Er had drawn out were seven counts of Yellow-Gold equipment. Even though right then, Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment were still extremely rare, Lost Dream and many others did not set their sights on the equipment, since they had already had Violet-Platinums as their targets.

Fatty Han sighed heavily and said, "What a tiresome day. We have been fighting this boss, not to mention the bloody Reputation farming! The only person benefiting from this conquest was the Starlight brat! Sigh..."

Zhang Yang was not as depressed as Fatty Han. He knew, that no matter how strong the equipment was, they would eventually be discarded after 10 to 20 levels. On the other hand, the [Party Summon Order] and the [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] would forever retain its value!

Zhang Yang smiled. "Hey fatso, at least you got one Yellow-Gold equipment out of the pan, don't be too greedy! Appreciate what you have!"

"Ah...hah...You're right."

Since killing Eins Brook was not a quest request, they had no need to search for an NPC to complete any quests. Since they had been lingering in the small island for quite some time, the party wanted to go back to the main city.

"Wait guys, we did kill the fake son of god...Would the NPCs in the village be angry at us? Would they stop selling stuff to us?" said Wei Yan Er just when she was about to tear her [Teleportation Scroll]. Skill books and recipe were one-time items that can only be bought once and never again, however [Enchanting Gemstones] were different. Those items were used to upgrade equipment and would definitely continue to remain relevant in the future. If killing the boss and had jeopardized their relationship with the villagers, it was possible that they could no longer buy those items!

Now that it was out there, everyone started to have thoughts about it. They stopped and went towards the village and check the situation. Luckily, the villagers seemed completely oblivious about that, they were still treating Zhang Yang's party with the same friendly attitude, all the while spouting the same nonsensical words of worshiping the son of the Fire God.

Now that everyone was the same as before, everyone calmed down and went back to Thunderstorm Castle. Everyone except for Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er wanted Zhang Yang to use his [Teleportation Scroll] and use the [Party Summon Order] to summon them to White Jade Castle. They wanted Zhang Yang to have a taste of using the summoning order. In truth, they just wanted to save some gold coins!

After a long period of grinding, Zhang Yang felt a little bored. Instead of continuing the search for the pieces of Dimensional Key Fragments, Zhang Yang took his time to do some other activities. The last key would require him to reach Level 90 before he could visit the map, and since he is only at Level 81, there is still a good 9 Level gap for him to take his slow, sweet time. Right now, Zhang Yang did what he found to be his favorite past time activity, that is to concoct potions, while anticipating any "prizes" that pop out. Having a transmuted potion as a bonus felt like he

was obtaining a rare loot from a boss, or so he thought it was.

The problem was that, he was still lacking one important herb to concoct the [Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]. He then visited the auction house to do a little shopping and at the same time, checked for goods that others might have left out.

They say that those unwise shoppers were aplenty in the streets, it's either luck for him to stumble into one. This time, Zhang Yang was pretty lucky himself, he had purchased himself a good pet skill book!

[Madness]: Increases your pet attack speed by 50%, whilst granting a 10% chance in each attack to restore 30% HP. Last for 10 seconds. Cost: 50 Focus. Cool Down Time: 10 Minutes.

Zhang Yang pondered over it for a little and finally decided to let the Mythical Turtle learn the skill instead. So far, almost all bosses had been fought with the Mythical Turtle. On the other hand, the Gold-Eared Bear King would be used to kill small monster and mini-boss, therefore, with or without a power boost, it would not matter much.

He bought half a stack of [Paralytic Flower] from the auction house, and empty potion bottles from the Alchemy Shop. After gathering the materials needed, Zhang Yang started to concoct the [Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]. Half a stack was not the usual amount of which Zhang Yang did his purchasing. In fact, he would buy even more than just a single stack, if they were available in the market. [Paralytic Flowers] were rare, thus the supply in the market was extremely scarce. Currently, Zhang Yang was probably the only person in the city to be capable of concocting the potion. When the recipe becomes more widely available to others, the number of herbs in the market would drop even lower!

[Level 4 Natural Resistant Potion]

Use: Adds 5,000 Natural Resistant. Lasts for 2 minutes. Cool Down Time: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 70

The transmuted bonus of the Natural Resistant Potion could increase

the effect by 10% to 100%. That meant that, if Zhang Yang was lucky enough to concoct a Grade 10 Transmutation, the Nature Resistance value would be 10,000!

The night went by and Zhang Yang logged off to make dinner for the girls. After having their meals, Wei Yan Er sneaked away to her room to read the news on her PC. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were left in charge of cleaning up.

"Eh? Sis, noobie, the official site posted something about a guild war coming up in the next few days," cried Wei Yan Er from her room upstairs.

Zhang Yang was stunned. He had never heard of any guild wars in his previous life.

Wei Yan Er came down running and sat on the sofa, which was directly adjacent to the kitchen where Zhang Yang was. "Noob tank, what's the guild war?"

Zhang Yang frowned and sighed heavily. "Hey kid. I am here washing up after you. Besides, you just read the post yourself, didn't you? Why are you asking me for!"

"Tch." Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue, which made Zhang Yang slightly irritated. "You're the one who claimed to be a beta-tester! You're supposed to know everything there is about the game!" said Wei Yan Er while pouting her lips.

"Oh god..." Zhang Yang facepalmed himself.

Wei Yan Er shook her legs while waiting for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue to finish cleaning the dishes.

"You done?" asked Wei Yan Er when she saw Han Ying Xue wiping her hands dry with a cloth. "The guild wars is as the name describes. It is a competition where two guilds will have a face off with each other. Just like the Soaring Swords Competition! However, this match will not host an offline competition. The champion guild will be rewarded with a +3 Level to all members of the winning guild! They will also get a Gray-Silver battle mount! Crimson Flaming Horse!

Chapter 364: Guild Wars

A sharp shiver went up his spine.

Even though Zhang Yang had a Yellow-Gold battle mount, and a Violet-Platinum battle mount, a majority of Lone Desert Smoke members had not yet still owned a battle mount! Especially the normal members! Even Fatty Han's battle mount was still a Green-Copper giant lizard!

If Zhang Yang wins the competition and gives everyone in the guild a Gray-Silver battle mount, his entire guild would become very powerful indeed!? Zhang Yang shivered with excitement with that thought alone.

Wei Yan Er snickered happily when she saw Zhang Yang's reaction. "Haha! Noob tank! Are you actually be that greedy? Why are you getting so excited about getting a free Gray-Silver mount?"

Zhang Yang laughed along. "I am excited! If you think this is how I get excited, you should see how I am when I'm REALLY excited!"

Wei Yan Er cocked her head in confusion which did not last long, as she had lost interest in what Zhang Yang said.

"Oh ho! I would definitely love to see you jerk it off when you're excited!" said Han Ying Xue as she wanted to join the dirty talk.

Sensing a domino effect coming along, Zhang Yang hurriedly switched back to the topic. "What about the second place? Or the third place? Are there no prizes for them?" Zhang Yang was thinking about the second Lone Desert Smoke guild.

"Erhm...the second place will reward all members +2 levels and a Green-Copper battle mount. The third place will reward all members +1 level and a Black-Steel battle mount." Wei Yan Er rubbed her hands together evilly and said, "I really wonder how a Black-Steel tier battle mount looks likes."

Everyone went up to the computer and read it slowly. Han Ying Xue promptly said, "I think we should hurry up and fill up the guild as soon as possible."

The coming Guild Wars did not have any member limit restrictions.

Thus, making Lone Desert Smoke, being the only Level 3 guild, the guild with most numbers! As such, even if Zhang Yang had no need to consider about the member's talent, he could still win the competition solely by numbers. It's 30,000 members vs 20,000 members! He had a 50% extra attack force right there!

Fortunately, Wei Yan Er was on same track as them. She understood the numerical advantage of a Level 3 guild. "Haha! Victory is ours!"

...

Unlike Soaring Swords, the Guild War was announced out of the blue! There were only 3 days of preparation for them! The announcement was made 3 DAYS prior to the event! The competition is categorized by local regions, any guild from Level 1 to 3 could enlist themselves as a participant.

Zhang Yang quickly summoned Hundred Shots and had him hold a recruitment drive to "fill" up the guild member slot to its limit before the competition starts. That said, Zhang Yang had specifically instructed Hundred Shots to not forsake the standards of players solely to increase the member count.

The competition was not held at the battle arena. There's no way to fit in 50,000 players in a small stadium and have them battle it out. Instead, the system had generated 3 types of terrain to suit the competition. There were the Flatlands, Mountainous Regions, and City Scapes. The terrain of the competition will be selected randomly. The winner of the guild war will be determined via a demerit system, whereby with each member's death, the guild will lose one point. There were no death penalties during a player's defeat, they would not suffer from any experience point loss nor item drops. After death, they would only be kicked out of the map.

Each guild war will last for 1 hour. Both sides will start with 20,000 points and after 1 hours, the winner will be decided, depending on the points remaining. In cases where there is a draw, the guild that had the lower number of members originally participating shall win the match. Thus, having many members also had its drawbacks.

However, there could be a situation where a small group of 30 could play hide-and-sneak and delay the entire 1 hour duration. According to the rules, the average loss of members would determine the winner, creating a situation where a player could skip the fight and win the match.

Naturally, when two large forces meet, it would not be a matter of quantity, but quality, to take down the enemy in one clean sweep. The more participants a guild had, the lesser contribution a single member could make. The best way to win the war would rely on strategy and command.

Zhang Yang had a problem. Currently, Zhang Yang had not found any suitable candidate to be a war commander. Hundred Shots was suitable to be a management personnel. He could organize the guild members and other miscellaneous matters but not handle any "military" management. It could be said that he does not have talent in that sort of field.

...

On the 25th of March, the Guild War competition officially started. The event would start at 9 pm, until 5 am the next day. Since the game could be played while players were asleep, the period where most players would be asleep had become the most active period in the game.

To maintain the level of excitement of the entire competition, the officials had selected two seeded guilds for every major city in the China region. Before the top 16 finals begin, the 16 seeded guilds would never be meeting each other!

Without any surprise, Lone Desert Smoke was by far, the strongest guild in the entire China server, so they were automatically selected to be one of White Jade's seeded guild, the second seeded guild fell to none-other than Crimson Rage.

'Ding! The match between Lone Desert Smoke VS Battleship Holysheets shall begin in 5 minutes. All members of Lone Desert Smoke, please proceed to the battle field to make your preparations!'

After a short wait, every member of Lone Desert Smoke received the system notification. Everyone fractionally opt to immediately be teleported

to the battle field, and was sent to a limitless flatlands. As far as a thousand meters away from where they stood, players with blue flags sticking to their backs, appeared one by one.

Zhang Yang turned his back and noticed that a red colored flag was hovering behind him. The flag was some sort of realistic hologram that could only be seen but not touched. This would allow players to have a free range of movement and not to be affected by the physics of the flag.

The top right of Zhang Yang's control U.I showed a 4 minutes and 34 seconds count down before the match started. Both sides had 20,000 points allocated. The total number of participating member of both guilds were 19,423 for Lone Desert Smoke, and 12,198 for Battleship Holysheets.

Zhang Yang had zero confidence in commanding his guild. After a moment's hesitation, he simply ordered everyone to spread out and surround the enemy, and attack from every direction. This technique was learned when Zhang Yang was playing Starcraft back when he was in university. To attack from several directions was much better than to attack in a concentrated formation, or so he thought. It was time to bring the Zerg Rush into the battlefield

Before the match officially began, there was an invisible wall blocking both sides from proceeding any further. At the last-minute count down, both guilds had stopped increasing. Lone Desert Smoke had a total of 26,721 members, and Battleship Holysheets had 19,876 members.

Based on the sheer numbers alone, Lone Desert Smoke was already destined to win the match. Even the average individual strength of each member had far exceeded that of the opponent's. However, Zhang Yang would not dare to let his guard down. He knew clearly that with a good strategist and commander, they could use 300 soldiers to defeat an army of 10,000!

10 seconds...

Zhang Yang gripped his axe harder and his shield closer. Everyone was already standing by with their own weapons raised in the air as they waited for the wall to disappear.

00:00! Battle starts!

"Go!" Zhang Yang shouted at the top of his lungs, inducing a strong and violent fervor to all members! With the horns of war blown, the two armies started to run towards each other like waves!

It seemed that the opponent had neither the intention to withdraw nor defend. The opponent shared the same vigor in their battle cries as they got closer and closer.

As the front line players had finally made contact with the enemy, the mass murder had officially begun.

Since there were no death penalties during a guild war, players were more than willing to take chance to slay as many foes as possible, knowing clearly that their survival did not matter. Thus, they could fully experience a full-fledged battle of ancient, fantasy war.

Zhang Yang held back before rushing into the mass to observe the tide of war. It seems that the opponent had no particular strategy and was charging blindly into the crowd without a plan. There was nothing to predict and nothing to counter. Zhang Yang came to a simple conclusion. This match was a match of numbers and individual bravery. If that was truly the case, Battleship Holysheets had no chance to overthrow Lone Desert Smoke!

Having close to 50% surplus forces over the opponent, Lone Desert Smoke had surrounded the enemy and started to unleash hell from above. Zhang Yang smiled as he observed the opponent's points on his U.I module dropping.

12,431!

9,831!

7,341!

4,198!

1,782!

341!

O!

Within 20 minutes, Lone Desert Smoke had emerged victorious with a complete massacre of the opponent. They had won with a complete kill, while only having a 4,310 player loss. Although Lone Desert Smoke might have won the match, their strategy was not invincible, in fact, the opponent had charged in thoughtlessly. In a match where they were seriously outnumbered, either their guild master was thinking with his groin, or they were not even trying at all.

Everyone was pleased with winning the first war. In the past, Zhang Yang and his own gang were the ones who have always been fighting for the guild's name. This time, this war, everyone had contributed their share. Each and every one could finally stand tall, without shame, and say, "I am a member of Lone Desert Smoke!"

After half an hour, Fatty Han shared the news. The sub-guild had also emerged victorious and had moved on to the next match!

On this night, Lone Desert Smoke would participate in two guild wars. Their next opponent was surprisingly, Pride!

Without holding back, Zhang Yang led his army and slaughtered their opponent mercilessly and won the second round.

On the next day, officials from 'God's Miracle' had released the next round of guild names. 1,024 guilds in China that had survived two rounds and were qualified to compete in the third round. Those famous guilds in China had remained strong and resilient. None of them had been dropped out.

After sundown, the guild wars continued. In the first match, Zhang Yang had won without a hitch. However, on the second round, Lone Desert Smoke was pushed to its limit had nearly lost the match!

Their opponent was a guild called "Path of Calamity", a second rated small guild from Wild Willow City. It was a known name, but not too famous or strong, compared to a first rate guild like Crimson Rage or Sky High. The main cause of trouble for Lone Desert Smoke was the skills of the enemy's commander.

With him taking the command, Path of Calamity was able to direct their players from left to right, and all around the map. The guild fully utilized the Mountainous Region and had a hit and run battle with Lone Desert Smoke. Every time the guild appeared, it would always have the upper hand and will somehow, manage to deal significant damage to Lone Desert Smoke before disappearing again!

Half an hour into the battle, Lone Desert Smoke points dropped down to 17,234, while Path of Calamity had over 18,114!

In this situation, Lone Desert Smoke had finally faced a challenge. It was like Lone Desert Smoke was Goliath, and Path of Calamity was the tiny little David. Quick and sneaky as ever, Lone Desert Smoke was never able to counterattack properly, while Path of Calamity had always managed to deal a little damage. The problem grew worse as the countdown drew closer. If the situations remained the same, Lone Desert Smoke will lose!

Zhang Yang searched for Han Ying Xue and quickly said, "Woman, we have to run into their main attack unit and unleash {Blizzard Sky}, and {Lunar's Dew}."

"Okay!"

Han Ying Xue nodded. Both of them rode as fast as they could into the large group.

Since their opponent were mostly running instead of riding mounts, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had entered their center force without trouble.

"T-T-That's Zhan Yu! Lone Desert Smoke guild master!"

"If we kill him, Lone Desert Smoke' morale will drop!"

"Haha! Awesome! We're killing their King and Queen!"

During a guild war, all players would have their profile information automatically revealed to the public, allowing the opponent to easily identify Zhang Yang.

Chapter 365: Pandemonium

"Wait! Something is not right! Why would they run up with just two players?! Hey! Don't go in such large group! We might not know what are they planning!" In the guild channel of Path of Calamity, a player named "Mountain Mover" kept on advising the guild members to think before they act. "I suggest we send a Group of 100-men to attack them. Even if it is a trap, we would only lose 100 points!"

Sadly, his words meant nothing, as no one paid heed to him. Everyone else was already intoxicated by the thought of obtaining the pride of killing China's number 1 man! Neither one of them were willing to allow the honor to slip past their hands! Not even for their own guild mates!

"Stop them now! Guild master!" Mountain Mover urged the guild master of Path of Calamity to subdue his own guild members.

Sage of God Killer smirked. "Mover, that guy is the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke. There's a myth saying that he has never lost a match. If we kill him here and now, winning or losing this guild war would only be a bonus reward!"

Sage of God Killer had almost zero confidence in his own second rated guild members. However, the idea of killing Zhan Yu, the most powerful man in all of China region was extremely tempting. Who would not want to have a free advertisement saying: "We are the guild that killed China's number 1 tank!" Imagine the glamor they could fish with that feat.

Mountain Mover knew that it would be futile to continue persuading his guild master from doing such foolish move. Under his breath, he muttered, "Dumbest, smart person that could do the dumbest dumb move ever!"

To grasp what killing China's number 1 man meant to them, the Path of Calamity had 2 to 3 thousand players rushing towards Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Although a handful of them noticed Mountain Mover shaking his head in dismay, the attacking guild members refused to back down. Everyone wanted to be the person to kill Zhan Yu! With that

thought in mind, no one would willingly spare any brain power to listen to Mountain Mover's words.

"Let's do this!"

Zhang Yang held out his hand to Han Ying Xue, and the both of them held their hands together, casting {Blizzard Sky}, and {Lunar's Dew}.

This ultimate skill was used in public, only during the defensive war of the Mining Cave back when four guilds allied themselves, led by The Dominators. Being the prideful person, Humbly Gentleman would never want to expose his defeat, in order to prevent the world from knowing about his own loss to Zhang Yang. Thus, the ulti was not known to the general public. That was, until now. After the current war with Path of Calamity, every other guild will surely get hold of the words about Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, allowing them to take preventive measures against those two.

Snowflakes started to form in the sky, as the land was instantly covered in a pale white snow. The wind started to blow and the enemy players started to receive damage.

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

Uncountable numbers of damage text popped out among the enemy's crowd. In just two ticks, there were already massive deaths! Somehow, during chaos, human will only act based on their own instinct. In this case, those players of Path of Calamity were behaving, just like that of an NPC army! They knew that their own army were being slaughtered but they had still pushed further, not even knowing what killed the front members! Players from behind pushed themselves to the front, and got themselves killed. The biggest, idiotic behavior was that, the players in the back were still moving forward!

Path of Calamity had begun to suffer a major loss in points. In just 30 seconds, their accumulated points dropped from 18,114 to 15,341!

"F*ck! F*CK!" screamed Sage of God Killer from the top of his lungs. The smug grin on his face, before the attack had started, had morphed drastically into a raging sulk. He turned to Mountain Mover and screamed at him. "You knew this would happen! YOU KNEW! WHY DIDN'T YOU WARN ME!"

Mountain Mover kept quiet. He no longer had the patience nor energy to deal with his nonsense. Did not warn him? He had been screaming, begging, pleading on his hands and feet, figuratively, trying to stop his guild mates from doing such foolishness! Disappointed with his guild master's behavior and attitude, he opened the guild option window and quit the guild promptly.

Losing their talent "war general", Path of Calamity started to suffer in the chaos. Without a proper guide, none of them could act as a part of a large contraption, thus turning the entire battle to a one-sided-massacre.

After obtaining victory, Zhang Yang tasked Hundred Shots to find out the commander of the enemy. After getting off the battle field, Hundred Shots immediately return to Zhang Yang with the news. Zhang Yang then sent a friend request to Mountain Mover. He was the talent that Lone Desert Smoke lacked currently. If Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had not used their paired skill, they might have already perished under the strategic attacks of Mountain Mover. That said, since Mountain Mover was not prominent in the guild, no one was willing to respect him as the commander.

"Zhan Yu?" Right after accepting the friendship request, Mountain Mover immediately sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

"Hmph. You had us nearly tasting defeat!" said Zhang Yang.

Mountain Mover scoffed. "I had. If only my stupid guild mates had listened."

Zhang Yang took the provoking tone and said, "Yes. I strongly believed so. That is why I am here to recruit you to join Lone Desert Smoke. I want you to join us and be our Strategist!"

"Please. It's not like I'm in need of money." Mountain Mover replied

coldly.

Zhang Yang laughed. "I believe that you are a talented strategist. I believe that you truly desire an absolute authority, the position, and rank where you could lead an army into war! That, I can give you. I offer you my complete trust and support. I will never interfere you in battle strategies, and will always provide utmost cooperation!"

There was a long silence after Zhang Yang's reply. His temporary silence had indicated Mountain Mover was seriously considering about Zhang Yang offer. Zhang Yang took the chance to continue pestering him.

"After the event where players enter the Chaos Realm, there will be a large scale war between Regions! Think of it. Don't you want to have an iron-blooded army, to invade other enemy's city and to show off the power of China?!"

Mountain Mover remained silent. However, there was a ragged breath coming from the communicator.

"How about it?" Zhang Yang asked after a few seconds of silence.

"...I...hmm...I can join Lone Desert Smoke. There, you can observe and evaluate my talents yourself. In the same time, I will observe and evaluate Lone Desert Smoke's capabilities and the trust in me," said Mountain Mover as he finally gave his verdict.

"Deal!" Zhang Yang roared happily.

Zhang Yang immediately recruited Mountain Mover into the guild and announced it in the guild channel himself. "Our newest member, Mountain Mover will be our guild's war strategist! In any large scales battle from now on, his words are my words. Whoever who wishes to disobey him may leave the guild now."

Everyone was stunned at the sudden announcement but took his words literally. No one quitted the guild.

The next day, at the third-night guild war, Mountain Mover had joined the battle with his first debut as a war strategist. He had only sortied 5,000 elitists and successfully defeated the enemy's 18,000 army. With

that accomplishment, he had proven himself to be a strong strategist.

On the other side, Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild, led by Fatty Han had not encountered any formidable foes. In fact, Zhang Yang had "cheated" in the event. He had repeatedly transferred Mountain Mover between his guild and the sub-guild, back and forth as many times necessary to allow him to command the two guilds in their war. Mountain Mover himself did not feel any trouble in doing so, since he had a knack of commanding army.

Taking Zhang Yang's method of cheating, the entire guild war event had several loopholes that could be exploited and abused. It was not meant to be a long-termed event. Thus, after this event, there probably would not be a second guild war anymore. Zhang Yang had never encountered any such event hosting during his previous lifetime.

Zhang Yang was extremely impressed at Mountain Mover's performance. In fact, Zhang Yang himself did not need to step into the battlefield during the wars on the fourth day! As a result, Mountain Mover had proved his worth to everyone in the guild, and brought the guild to the next stage effortlessly.

29th of March, Zhang Yang had reached Level 82. On the same day, the guild had 20 players that had reached Level 80. Majority of them had relied on the Level 3 Guild reward experience bonus to reach Level 80 in such a hasty manner. They were the first guild to produce a party qualified to raid the latest dungeon, the Pandemonium.

After winning the guild wars, Zhang Yang led the other 19 players to The Abandon Vale at the Altair Flatlands. The entrance to the Pandemonium dungeon was just at the entrance of the Vale.

Everyone gathered and entered the dungeon.

'Ding! You have entered the Pandemonium (Hardcore Mode)!'

There were four types of species ruling over the vale. They were Vampires, Werewolves, Humans, and a Stone Golem. Other than the Stone Golem, Vampire, Werewolf, and Humans were races with large communities. Only the Stone Golem Sulga was the only being of its

species. It was also the last boss of the dungeon.

In terms of landscape, Vampire, Werewolf, and the Human forces were positioned in a triangle. They were all located at the far side of each other, all surrounding the center where the Stone Golem Sulga was situated. The lore of the dungeon depicted that all three forces wanted to invade Sulga's residence to claim the ancient treasure that resided there. However, due to their mutual hatred to one another, none of them were able to proceed.

All three forces had constructed a Gateway. Only through lighting up the holy fire at all three forces, a Gateway would open, which would lead you to where Sulga resides.

A player could freely choose on where to start their attack, which was not limited in any specific order. As long as the players fulfilled the requirement, that was, to light up all three holy fires at three different places, they could enter the final stage and battle with the last boss, Sulga.

Zhang Yang believed that, based on their current equipment, Zhang Yang's own gang could easily raid the dungeon, relying on all sorts of skills and potions! As for the reason why Zhang Yang wanted to take along other members along, he did not want to waste the free skill points obtained from the First Clear Achievement. Not everyone could easily receive main story quests or hidden quests to obtain free skill points. As the saying went, the grass that grows during the night would make a horse strong! A person could only get stronger by taking the extra effort.

Zhang Yang's 20 men party stood at the entrance of the dungeon. There were three routes splitting apart, which led them to three different camps, the Vampires, Werewolves, and Humans.

"What sort of nonsense is this...We're clearly standing in the wilderness, how can we not use our mounts!" Wei Yan Er sighed.

"Of course you can't. It would be unfair. Having a mount in the dungeon could change the difficulty of the raid! That is why, to prevent any exploits or bug abuse, the developers had decided on one final implementation, and that is to restrict players from using mounts in all dungeons!" said Zhang Yang. He was not making that up. In his previous life, he had

listened to the news where a news reporter had interviewed one of the game designers who had explained about the dungeon's concept.

"What a bloody idiot!" Wei Yan Er shrugged.

The party took the route to the further right and came to a camp. Outside, standing at the entrance of the encampment, were four guards. They were equipped with weapons and were standing guard ever so vigilantly.

[Werewolf Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 450

Elite tiered monsters in a dungeon had always been stronger than monsters in the open-world field. The monsters that stood in front of them had HP that was far stronger than the Yellow-Gold boss in the Level 80 maps! It was made that way on purpose. The monster in a dungeon was designed based on the number of participant in the paid. Since the Pandemonium was a 20 men dungeon, the long HP would be justifiable. If they were to only have 18,000 HP, would they not be killed in an instant?

"Endless, you're up!"

"Okie dokey!"

Endless Starlight took the preemptive strike and used {Shield Toss} from a good distance. The shield ricocheted off three of the Werewolf Guards before bouncing back to Endless Starlight. As aggro works in an area, all four of the monsters there growled and rushed towards their attacker.

Endless Starlight activated {Sanction} and {Hammer Drop} to fully lock on to the monsters' aggro. Only then, the party started their attack. After having their HP below 50%, the monster began to metamorphosis into their full beast forms, changing from a humanoid appearance into large werewolves! In that form, the monster gained a 20% bonus attack power. However, having Endless Starlight as the strong tank, the monsters could

not do much with their boost of power, and were defeated without much struggle.

The party moved on forward and killed their way towards the first boss in no time. The first boss was a beautiful werewolf who was still in her human form. Her name was Aica. This boss was just a mere Gray-Silver tier. Zhang Yang had not needed to move a muscle, as even Endless Starlight could easily overpower the boss solely based on his equipment! Even though Aica may have plenty of skills, and even killed a few members of the party, the boss was not able to withstand the combination of Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, and the main party attacking force. Both tanks took turns to activate {Vanguard's Aggression} to completely negate the boss's ulti and ended the battle in just 1 minute.

This match was won, not by skill, but by the sheer power of their equipment. All they did was to simply hack and whack.

After distributing the loot, the party continued killing their way towards the second boss. By then, everyone's skills were already ready to be used again and after a flashy scene of ultis, the second werewolf boss crumpled to the ground. Just like that, they had cleared the Werewolf section of the dungeon.

After lighting up the holy fire in the Werewolf encampment, the team proceeded to clear the Human, and then the Vampire encampment and opened the Gateway leading to Sulga.

After 10 minutes or so, the team had reached to the final boss, Sulga.

The boss was, as the name suggested, a 70 to 80 meter tall stone-made giant golem. Sulga was completely motionless. One could even mistake it as a statue instead of a living being. There was even a thick layer of moss growing on its body! If it was not for the name tag hanging on its head, Zhang Yang would have already skipped over the boss!

[Stone Golem Sulga] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 85

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,000

"What the hell!? 10 million?! My god. This boss is much stronger than a Violet-Platinum boss!" cried Fatty Han in a fit of rage.

Zhang Yang explained, "This is a 20-man dungeon. It's normal for the boss to have that much HP. If it was a 5 men dungeon, the boss would have roughly 2,500,000 HP!"

"B-But...This is a Yellow-Gold tier!"

"Yeah! And the first Yellow-Gold dungeon boss at that!"

"Level 80 maps are practically "owned" by Violet-Platinum bosses. That is why the dungeon will have a Yellow-Gold boss. I did mention this before, didn't I? The open-world bosses will always be one tier higher than dungeon bosses."

"Enough talking! You better start thinking of a way to fight this boss!"

Zhang Yang started to think. "Let's just give it a try. Reserve {Dance of Heaven and Earth} until the last 10% HP. That, or any important situation."

"Understood!"

Zhang Yang actually knew the way to defeat the boss. He just did not want to reveal it to the party. Since there were no other players were racing to raid the dungeon and claim the First Clear Reward, Zhang Yang decided to train the party's response rate. One way or another, it's good training for them.

Zhang Yang had been using the Gold-Eared Bear King in this dungeon. As the Mythical Turtle's movement speed on land was so slow that even a grandmother could walk faster, it was not suitable for traveling.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins on the bear and rushed towards the boss.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-3,198!’

A sudden quake struck the land and the boss moved. There was a crack on the golem face and it revealed the golem's eyes and mouth. The gap

opened wider and out came a low, deep voice that echoed throughout the area.

"Insolent fools! The ancient secret is sealed for good! None shall obtain it! Greed shall be punished with death! Begone, foul creatures!" Sulga moved extremely slowly as the calcification of its outer layer started to crumble. Step by step, Sulga started to walk faster. Bit by bit, as the rocks "peeled" off its surface, Sulga's movement speed started to gain speed!

Chapter 366: Easy as Pie

Once Zhang Yang got the boss' aggro, all the other melee fighters rushed straight for it. The other ranged fighters remained further back, while maintaining the furthest attacking range. Before the final boss, everyone had taken their time, slowly hacking and slashing the bosses without a sense of urgency. Since the previous bosses were just Gray-Silver difficulty, none of them felt pressured, and had easily defeated the previous obstacles. However, when it came to the last boss, everyone kept their guard up, knowing clearly that the boss was a Yellow-Gold boss.

With their broad range of "seriousness", the damage dealt on this different occasion differed greatly.

Players who were part of Zhang Yang's permanent party had superior equipment, skills, intuitions, and coordination. Their overall attack damage was much better and "sharper" compared to the rest of the party members. Especially Sun Xin Yu! Her main weapon, the Snake's Spur, could ignore up to 700 Defense value, and coupled with Zhang Yang {Cripple Defense}, Sun Xin Yu's attack was only affected by 300 Defense of the boss!

The main point was her main and secondary weapon, which granted her a whopping 6,000 DPS. Her attack damage was practically double that of anyone else in the party!

"Your greed shall be your doom!" Sulga bellowed. Cracks started to form over of its main body. As large rocks and stones fell down, the part that split apart from the main body were its hands. Now having a proper humanoid form, Sulga slammed its hands onto the ground. A progress bar appeared on the top of its head, with the name {Rocky Spear}.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

‘-5,000!’

It's 5,000 damage a second to anyone who were attacked by the skill. The progress bar on the boss' head was still going on, despite the skill already being cast. It seemed that this skill was a channeling type, which

would last for 10 seconds! Anyone else, besides a tank would surely die if they take all 10 strikes.

That is, if the player was a complete novice. The {Rocky Spear} had a rhythm and pattern to its attack. The skill could be easily evaded right at the moment when the rocky spear bursts out of the ground. Those who were recruited by Zhang Yang had a certain degree of prowess, naturally, none of them were dumb. Although some of them might be a little sluggish, their response rate was fast, after taking two to three of the attacks.

Out of the 20, 4 of the party member were healers. As the skill {Rocky Spear} continued to attack, Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart, and the two other healers were busy healing for a living. Two Priests and two Sacred Knights were sufficient enough for the party to easily handle any kind of threat.

Best of all, Zhang Yang had not needed any sort of healing!

Even though Sulga was the last boss, it was just a Yellow-Gold boss, despite having such a long HP. The attack from a Yellow-Gold boss had a certain border and could not exceed that line. On average, the normal basic attack would be at most 12,000. Smashing on Zhang Yang, the final damage would only be at, most 6,000!

Even though Zhang Yang was unable to ride on the Bear King, Zhang Yang's own tanky HP was good enough to tank the boss close to 20 seconds before Zhang Yang would need emergency healing. In a situation like this, the healers only needed to heal him once in a blue moon. Priests would only need to maintain the {Regeneration} on him while the other two Sacred Knights would only need to directly heal him once in a while.

It was as expected. Zhang Yang had half of his body clad in Violet-Platinum equipment! He could even tank an actual Violet-Platinum boss! Why would he even be nervous of a Yellow-Gold boss?

That was just Zhang Yang. After all, a Hardcore Mode is still a Hardcore Mode. The danger was not just targeted to the tank alone. Having loads of skills and attack pattern, it could kill off the attackers and the healers,

which would eventually lead to the entire party's downfall.

After a series of chaotic events, everyone managed to survive the {Rocky Spear} ordeal.

Wei Yan Er giggled playfully. "This is fun! Let's do this again!"

Throughout the entire attack, Wei Yan Er had unleashed her athletic skills, she made it seem as if dodging bullets would be easy for her.

On the far side of the scale, Fatty Han performed the poorest. Still, he had only taken 3 counts of attacks from the {Rocky Spear}. Panting with anger and fatigue, his fat flaps bobbed around as he moved away to a safe place. "Fun!? Please! I'm practically sodomized!"

"Ah ha? You mean...your buttohole got poked?!" said Endless Starlight with a surprised expression.

Lost Dream laughed uncontrollably. "Starlight! What would be the first thing you'd do if one random morning, you woke up and found out that you have turned into a woman?!"

Endless Straight straighten up and put on a serious face and said, "The first thing I would do. Is to let Fatty Bro do me!"

Fatty Han made a weird face where different parts of his face would cringe and twist. "Please don't. I appreciate the kind gesture of it, but just the thought of it."

After 20 seconds, Sulga slammed his hand into the ground again, triggering {Rocky Spear} for the second time. Everyone was sent into a crazy dance, but since they had the experience before, everyone was getting the hang of it. Even Fatty Han was only struck once!

90%...

After the ordeal, everyone concentrated their firepower and dealt a series of attack.

"The sins of Greed shall bring none but death!" bellowed Sulga. "Rolling Rocks! Smash them to bits!"

'Ding! Stone Golem Sulga has used {Rolling Rocks}!'

Thump! Thump!

Materialized almost instant, there were a total of 36, one story house sized-giant rocks rolling from out of nowhere, in a well-organized, 6 x 6 pattern. Like a wave, the rocks rolled in unison at a slow pace. The mass of rocks was so heavy that the earth trembled vigorously. If one would be rolled over by it, what would the damage be? It could even cause instant death.

However, all boss' skill in the dungeon would never create a situation where none could survive it. There is and always will be a way of dodging it. If it was un-dodgeable, then it would depend on the player's equipment. Zhang Yang glanced around and he found a way to evade the skill. There was a tiny gap, roughly the size of one human's width, in between the rocks!

The problem was that, the rocks were too big, making all 36 rocks cover most of the battle field. It was not possible for one to run out of the skill's effective zone. The only way of surviving was to slide through the tiny gaps between two rocks! The gap was so small that it would require pin point accuracy to make sure that the rock does not smudge you across the floor.

"Get ready guys! Jump in between the gaps among the rocks!" said Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang raised his concentration to another level to multitask his way through the fight by tanking the boss and positioning himself through the gaps at the same time. Just when he was at his limit, he heard Sulga's bellow. "Greed shall be the death of you!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

{Rocky Spear} was unleashed and spears made of rocks pierced through the earth.

Great! Two skills at one time! That's what you call as being attack by a tiger from the front, and a wolf from the rear, leaving one a hard choice on whether to attack or withdraw.

Only during the worse of scenarios, one's ability could be truly displayed. Players like Sun Xin Yu, those that were part of Zhang Yang permanent party, displayed an outstanding performance albeit the chaos. They could easily dodge one skill, while preparing for the other with less difficulty. While Sun Xin Yu and the others were doing just fine, the newly added party members were unable to perform as the same. Their reflexes were slightly sluggish and could not multitask as well as the others. While paying attention to the {Rocky Spear}, they had missed out the {Rolling Rocks} and vice-versa.

As seen from before, the {Rocky Spears} were painful but not fatal. Whereas the rolling rocks dealt 100,000 damage a hit. If Zhang Yang was not prepared for it, he would have died. Smudged all over the floor!

As the rocks continued to roll, two of them had actually phased through the boss and were only destroyed after rolling to the edge of the mountain. In this wave, a total of four players were crushed to death. Two players had used their skills to gain an invincible effect to escape death.

"What the hell!? Hiding behind the boss was not even safe!" cried Fatty Han in a fit of anger. He had thought that he could be safe from the boss' attack by using the boss as a shield. No one had known that the rocks could actually phase through the boss. As a result, he now lay flat on the ground.

The boss had killed four players, including Fatty Han, one of the main party members! Zhang Yang was disgruntled at the fact that Fatty Han had died before using the skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth! What a huge waste!

80%...

Sulga unleashed another wave of {Rolling Rocks} and {Rocky Spear} at the same time. It seemed that both skills were set to be used at the same time to purposely give players a harder time. As expected, in this wave, three players had died. Two of them were the same players who had used their skills to grant them momentary invincibility. Since the skills were still on cool down, they could not rely on them and had died due to

carelessness. The remaining player that died as he was too focused on avoiding the rocks, and was pierced to death by the rocky spears.

70%...

Another wave of {Rocky Spear} and {Rolling Rocks}, casualty: 1.

60%...50%...40%....

As Sulga's HP dropped, it had only used these two skills over and over. Though it may seem boring, it was still able to kill many more players. At the last 30% HP, the surviving players remaining on the battle field were Zhang Yang's permanent party member of eight, Galileo, and Fantasy Sweetheart.

Even the strategist, Mountain Mover had also died. His ability in coordinating the party during the war was better than good, however, his skills in the dungeon were only average. At best, he was at the same level as Fatty Han!

Knowing that, Zhang Yang had still recruited him for this dungeon raid with the intention of gearing him up. In the future, when he leads a team during battle, he would not need to stand in the front lines. However, he would definitely be targeted by opposing Assassins. Having lousy equipment would only be assisting in the kill!

After 30%, there were no longer casualties in the party. All the survivors were soon to be China's top tier fighters, naturally, they had already gotten used to the boss's strategy.

20%...10%...

'Ding! Stone Golem Sulga has gained a 50% increase attack buff due to extreme anger!

A familiar, bloody-red glow appeared on Sulga's stone body.

This time, the {Rolling Rocks} unleashed by the boss were even larger in size. The gap between the rocks had become so small that evading had become impossible.

Zhang Yang immediately screamed. "To me! Don't bother dodging the

rocks! I'll use {Vanguard's Aggression}. When the boss enters the Berserk state, it will continue to cast {Rolling Rocks}. There's no way to survive this unless we use surviving skills to rush for the kill. Consume a power potion and use all your skill, at no expense! If you have {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, use that as well!"

Right after that, Zhang Yang activated {Vanguard's Aggression} and consumed a bottle of [Power Potion]. Since all skills had a global cool down of 1 second, Zhang Yang chose to use the [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor] ring. Hang Ying Xue and the others gathered closely to Zhang Yang, each took a bottle of [Power Potion] and casted [Dance of Heaven and Earth].

‘-12,000!’

‘-12,000!’

‘-12,000!’

‘-12,000!’

...

Shadows emerged from everyone who used {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and formed into swordsmen. The figure leaped towards the boss and started its attack.

9%...8%...7%...The boss's HP dropped down like an open fire hydrant, dropping at such fast pace that the speed of the HP bar was one of the fastest Zhang Yang had ever seen! That was the combination of 8 instances of {Shadow of Heaven and Earth}! It was a total of 1,080,000 damage!

Boom rolls rolls

The rolling rocks landed on the players at the same time. Having Zhang Yang's protection over them, even though the boss had gained a 50% damage boost, it could only deal roughly 15,000 damage to everyone.

3%...2%...1%...0%!

Sulga growled in a deep husky voice and crumbled.

Chapter 367: Unsealing the First Magic Circle Seal

‘Ding! You and your party have acquired the Pandemonium (Hardcore Mode) First Clear Title, as the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your name will be published on the list of the First Clear title, allowing the world to praise you!’

Once Sulga died, Zhang Yang received the system notification immediately. He let out a sigh and then keyed in those advertising words. Luckily he was a shareholder of Silky Soft Holdings now, so he did not feel as embarrassed as before.

Suddenly, the server was flooded with plenty of their First Clear notifications. Besides that, Zhang Yang and his 20-man party members were entitled to rewards of 10 gold coins, 1 skill point, and 500 alliance reputation points.

Zhang Yang added the skill point into his {Warrior's Will} and maximized the level of this skill. Now, it had only a one minute cool time duration! However, Zhang Yang had taken his newly acquired [Titan's Chest Plate] into consideration, knowing it would be a good choice if he prioritized maximizing his {Shield Wall}'s level. That was an extra 150% of HP!

The party members were grinning as they were entitled to reward of a skill point and got to be enlisted in the First Clear rankings. This was especially true for the irregular party members, they were extremely excited! In fact, there were not many 20-man party dungeons. There was only Level 20 Marzerway's Lair, Level 60 Poison Fireland and now, Pandemonium!

No one could ever be faster than Wei Yan Er when it came to picking up the loot dropped from bosses. Wei Yan Er's actions were very fast, once the boss had died, she had bent over to pick the loot.

First, she picked up 12 pieces of gold coins and put them into her

backpack, before she started picking up other loot.

[Vortex Gauntlets] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Intelligence: +123

Spirit: +54

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

It was a heavy armor with the additional attributes of Intelligence and Spirit, so this must exclusively be for Sacred Knights. This heavy armor was distributed after the two Sacred Knights in the party bid on it.

[Carrion Cutter] (Yellow-Gold, Two-Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 1,570–1,970

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 466

Equipment: Every time the target is struck by this weapon, there will a chance of cutting the target's carrion and cause 2,100 physical damage to the target.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

Wei Yan Er was still using a Level 60 axe, therefore, she quickly bid for it without hesitation and won the two-handed axe. But, compared to the previous Alps' drop, Death Blade which was a Violet-Platinum and two-handed sword, it was so much better than [Carrion Cutter] which also made little brat regret it for so long.

[Devotion Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +120

Intelligence: +138

Spirit: +61

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

After some bidding, the equipment was taken by a Spellcaster who was named "Destroyer". Both Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream had more chances to obtain the equipment, so they willingly stepped back.

Except for the three pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, the rest of the equipment were Gray-Silvers which were also distributed to the party members.

Mountain Mover said, "This system is very stingy, there is only a Yellow-Gold boss in this dungeon and it only dropped three pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. It will take very long for all the party members in a party to gather whole sets of Yellow-Gold equipment!"

"This wasn't that bad, at least we still obtained some Yellow-Gold equipment, which is much better than defeating Gray-Silver bosses!"

But then again, the difficulty of the final boss in this Hardcore Mode was pretty high, therefore, not many equally leveled players in other guilds could defeat this final boss. As a result, it was unrealistic to universalize the Yellow-Gold equipment! Conversely, Gray-Silver equipment were already universalized.

Zhang Yang and his party could easily clear the dungeon, only because they had the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}. This marvelous skill had carried them past the boss' hardest Rage Mode! If it was any other party, at least three tanks would have been needed to take turns using {Vanguard's Aggression}. Even so, it was not easy to withstand 15,000 points of terrifying damage, which also tested the healers' ability!

Zhang Yang did not immediately disband the party, but continued searching in the canyon as his [Mysterious Sword Hilt] still needed Margery as a guide in the subsequent quest. This might also need another battle, so Zhang Yang kept everyone with him.

After hundreds of meters, Zhang Yang saw an old woman who was wearing a scholar's gown, and the name on top of her head was Margery!

[Margery, the Greatest Historian under the Sky] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000

MP: 4,000

Defense: 80

Zhang Yang quickly walked over and said, "Scholar Margery, I'm an adventurer from White Jade Castle and I have something to ask of you!"

Margery used her staff like a crutch and looked at Zhang Yang with her poor eyesight then said, "To think that you can actually find me, even though I live in such secluded area! Alright, since you are here, I will grant your wish!"

Zhang Yang took out the [Mysterious Sword Hilt] from his backpack and handed over to Margery then said, "I inadvertently got this sword hilt, and according to Smithing Master Banderash, there are three magic circle seals carved on this sword hilt, I would like to ask you, how can I unseal these three magic circle seals?!"

"Inadvertently..." Han Ying Xue pursed her lips.

Margery took over the sword hilt, looked carefully then said, "These are magic circle seals from ancient times, full of endless mysteries. It's not easy to unseal them!"

Margery mentioned that it was not easy, not impossible!

"Great scholar, please elaborate more!" Zhang Yang said.

Margery closed her eyes, pondered for a while then said, "These three magic circle seals are interlocked with each other. I can only see the first magic circle seal, while the mysteries within the other two magic circle seals can only be discovered after the first magic circle seal has been unsealed!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Refer to Margery for information!’

Margery slowly paced for a few steps and said, "If you want to unseal the first magic circle seal, you are required to defeat Lord of the Myriad Ghosts as it has an [Ancient Magic Stone]. After that, you are required to search for a [Millennial Heroic Soul], as this can protect the impact of the [Ancient Magic Stone] from destroying the sword hilt!"

‘Ding! Margery has a quest for you: Unseal the first magic circle seal. Will you accept?’

Of course, Zhang Yang would accept the quest!

"Come back to me when you have found both of these ingredients. I also would like to take a look at the remaining two magic seals. These could be useful for my research!" Margery gave the order.

Since everything had been resolved, everyone tore their [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Thunderstorm Castle. Zhang Yang returned to the same route where he came from as he planned to gather all the ingredients to unseal the first magic circle seal. He could take advantage of the empty dungeon, he did not need to clear the monsters once again.

[Unseal the first magic circle seal] (Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: You got a clue of unsealing [Mysterious Sword Hilt] from Margery. What are you still waiting for, take action now! You are required to get [Ancient Magic Stone] from the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts and a [Millennial Heroic Soul]! It was said that Lord of the Myriad Ghosts is in the westernmost of Grand Canyon of Eternal Night. While it is rumored that Honduras in Killua Castle, which is located in Black Feather Forest, snapped a photo of a [Millennial Heroic Soul] three years ago. You better pray that he has not used it yet!

Progress: Obtain [Ancient Magic Stone] 0/1, [Millennial Heroic Soul] 0/1

Zhang Yang felt helpless, as he was at Altair Flatlands now, but the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was located at Grand Canyon of Eternal Night, while Honduras was located in the Black Feather Forest. Therefore, this was another time-consuming quest which would require Zhang Yang to run

around!

Well, complaining was useless, Zhang Yang decided to start the journey at once!

Zhang Yang exited from the dungeon, rode on Whitey and rushed towards Grand Canyon of Eternal Night.

Five hours later, Zhang Yang entered Grand Canyon of Eternal Night's map, where he continued rushing to the west, and after another two hours later, he reached the Tomb of Despair.

Level 80 map was very huge!

However, if compared to the Chaos Realm's map, this Grand Canyon of Eternal Night's map was not that huge! Chaos Realm's map was different from the maps below Level 100, each main city had their own respective maps at every 10 levels. However, the level spans of Chaos Realm's maps were huge, for example, Siccory Mountains started from Level 110 to Level 140, which spanned by 30 levels!

The bigger the level span, the bigger the maps! Besides, after Level 100, the penalty of level gaps had increased from 10 levels to 30 levels, which encouraged the players to challenge stronger monsters!

Zhang Yang was familiar with Tomb of Despair as in his previous life, he had completed quests at this place and he still remembered there was a quest that rewarded a Gray-Silver accessory. Besides, this was definitely good news for most of the players who still had not yet occupied their accessory slots!

This Tomb of Despair was located within the mountains, and its entrance was very narrow. If the players did not pay attention, no one would think that there was another world there!

The entrance was very dark, and Zhang Yang walked blindly, without any light for a long time before he finally saw lights that looked like burning torches slowly appearing in front of him. The closer he walked towards the torches, the clearer he could see.

There was no monsters at the dark area in front of Zhang Yang. But

there were hunchbacked skeleton soldiers wandering back and forth close to the burning torches. They made cracking noises as they moved.

[Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 83

HP: 83,000

Defense: 450

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts must be in the deepest part of Tomb of Despair. Zhang Yang took out his [Goblin's Head Lobber] and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the frontmost skeletal soldier and started the battle.

An elite monster certainly was no threat to Zhang Yang, but when the skeletal soldier's HP dropped to 50%, it suddenly took out a sharp bone from its rib cage and stabbed at Zhang Yang's chest!

'Ding! You are stunned, due to the effects of Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair's sharp bone and you will lose 2,000 HP every second. Lasts for 5 seconds!'

This effect directly deducted 2,000 HP not deal 2,000 points of damage! Even though Zhang Yang's defense was strong, this effect totally ignored Zhang Yang's high defense!

Zhang Yang quickly activated {Warrior's Will} to remove the stunning effect, so that the HP deduction effect could be removed as well! After that, Zhang Yang defeated the minion with ease.

Luckily he had maximized his {Warrior's Will}'s level so the cool time duration was only one minute! Most of the tanks at the moment had not even maximized {Block}'s level, how could they have the extra skill point to add to {Warrior's Will}'s level? {Warrior's Will} would not help much if its cool down duration was 10 minutes!

Chapter 368: Rhine Wildhammer's Quest

Zhang Yang struck like a hurricane, the elite monster could only live for 10 seconds under the combined attacks of Zhang Yang and Whitey! However, even with {Rearm}, Zhang Yang was still forced to take quite an amount of unnecessary damage. As Zhang Yang had quickly burned through two {Warrior's Will}'s effects, he needed to withstand the sharp bone stunning effect and lose 6,000 HP in the progress. (Zhang Yang's [Heart of the Death Knight] helped to reduce 50% of status restriction duration, thus, 5 seconds of stunning became 2.5 seconds to him, and he only suffered 3 seconds worth of damage). In the end, the elite monster still caused sizable damage to Zhang Yang!

In order to save time, Zhang Yang did not eat health recover cakes after defeating the monsters, but drank [Level 4 Healing Potions] one after another. Also with the effect of transmuted [Troll Recovery Potion], was sufficient to support Zhang Yang. He did not need to take any breaks to recover his health condition.

There were tombs at the left and right sides of the passage, and there were many minions near the tombs which made it very suitable for training. But Zhang Yang wanted to complete the quest, so he did not waste time on these minions. He looked around each tomb and only moved forward if there were no minions.

However, the quest description never mentioned that the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was in the deepest part of the Tomb of Despair, and it was just Zhang Yang's own guess. On the other hand, there might be more than just the boss, Lord of the Myriad Ghosts. It would be good as Zhang Yang could have extra income if Zhang Yang met other mini-bosses. Besides, there might be the appearances of treasure chests!

There were many floors within the Tomb of Despair. As Zhang Yang was clearing the minions on his route at the bottommost floor, he saw a boss blocking his way.

[The Sobber, Heiminus] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 840,000

Defense: 900

"Wu wu wu" Zhang Yang could hear boss' sobbing sounds from afar. When Zhang Yang came closer, the sobbing sounds became clearer. The sobbing sounds were echoed endlessly in an unobscured passage, clear and sorrowful sobbing sounds, full of resentment which could actually horrify anyone in the middle of the night!

Heiminus was all but the skeletal remnants of a sorrowful existence, with green burning flames in its eye sockets, unable to even shed a drop of tear. But, it still covered its cheeks with both of its hands and wept terribly.

Zhang Yang switched his battle mounts and summoned Mythical Turtle, as Mythical Turtle was more powerful when fighting the boss!

Zhang Yang used {Spear of Obliteration} to pull the boss' aggro.

'-2,986!'

"Wu!" Heiminus wept with grief, looked up at Zhang Yang, the green burning flames danced within its eye sockets and it shouted, "Abominable human, are you going to hurt me again? I won't let you do as you please this time, I will fight back, I really will fight back!"

The boss chased after Zhang Yang.

'Ding! You are affected by Sorrow Aura and your damage is reduced by 10%!'

Heiminus had a peculiar aura which immediately reduced Zhang Yang's damage by 10%. It was very annoying.

Pa!

The boss swung its bony hand at Zhang Yang, but the first attack was negated with {Block} which gave him 30 Rage.

After Zhang Yang added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss, he immediately fought back.

97%, 95%, 92%... Although Zhang Yang and the Mythical Turtle's attacks were reduced by 10%, their total damage was still very strong. Just within 30 seconds, they successfully reduced boss' HP to 75%!

'Wu!' Heiminus suddenly screeched, and Zhang Yang suddenly had a sad feeling that he could not even describe. He could not even raise his hands when his tears automatically started flowing from his eyes.

'Ding! You are affected by Heiminus' Sorrow effect, and you cannot control your own behavior. Lasts for 10 seconds!'

F*ck, this emo boss not only loved to weep and sob, but it was getting contagious, this was getting too annoying!

Zhang Yang quickly used {Warrior's Will} to remove this effect, while Mythical Turtle had no choice but to lie on the ground and shed tears silently.

Zhang Yang continued fighting the boss.

Another 30 seconds later, Heiminus activated its Sorrow Aura once again but Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} was still under a cool down period, therefore, Zhang Yang could only receive 5 seconds of the ([Heart of the Death Knight]'s effect)! Luckily, Heiminus was just a Gray-Silver boss, its attacks by hand just caused about 3,000 damage to Zhang Yang, and within 5 seconds only deducted Zhang Yang's HP by 9,000!

When the third time of Sorrow effect was activated, Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} was ready.

30 seconds, 60 seconds, 90 seconds, 120 seconds... the Boss' HP dropped drastically and was almost depleted.

Zhang Yang used {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} which additionally recovered 150% of his HP, and then directly defeated Heiminus! Starting from Level 80 maps, Gray-Silver bosses were equivalent to Green-Copper bosses and were no longer as strong as they once were. Not to mention, Zhang Yang was already equipped with almost a full body of Violet-Platinum equipment, which was much stronger than Heiminus!

Also, {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} had only a few minutes of cool down duration. After killing a few minions, {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were ready once again and did not have to spend money! Besides, a bottle of [Level 4 Healing Potion] in the current market could be sold for 100 gold coins!

After Heiminus was killed, it dropped four pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, which was quite stingy. However, it still dropped two [Chaos Gems], and helped Zhang Yang extend his backpack space to 120 slots, so that he could put more herbs and potions.

Zhang Yang continued moving forward, although the tombs were very dark and very chill, they spawned a kind of herb, called [Zombie Moss] which could be used to concoct [Zombie Potion]!

[Zombie Potion] was very interesting, after using it, it allowed the players to "Scam Death"!

After the player who drank [Zombie Potion] died, the player could tentatively turn into zombies and continue the battle, lasting for 30 seconds! During this period, the player would ignore any damage but could not ignore status restriction skills. However, after 30 seconds, the player would still die! But if it was in PvP, 30 seconds of damage ignoring were sufficient to defeat the opponent who were close to death. However, if the grade of equipment for both sides were different by a lot, even 10 minutes of [Zombie Potion]'s effect would still be pointless!

On the other hand, [Zombie Potion]'s effect was also good when defeating the boss, the player allowed to continue fighting 30 seconds. When the number of players was high, the damage input to the boss was still powerful!

Nevertheless, [Zombie Potion]'s recipe not easily dropped and [Zombie Moss] also not easily collected! [Zombie Moss] only grew in Level 80 and above tomb's environment, besides, its re-spawn time was 72 hours. Also, less than 10 [Zombie Moss] were growing in each tomb!

After Zhang Yang cleared two floors of Tomb of Despair, he successfully obtained four [Zombie Moss] which was terribly low amount! Luckily, only

a [Zombie Moss] was required to concoct a [Zombie Potion]. Thus, these four [Zombie Moss] could concoct four [Zombie Potions].

An hour later, Zhang Yang reached the second floor of Tomb of Despair and fought the second boss, Cassandra.

[Cassandra] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 85

HP: 850,000

Defense: 900

The boss' flashing green light eyes asides, Cassandra would definitely be a top beauty, she had a slender and voluptuous body figure, tear-drop shaped breasts, a plump booty and a curvy waistline.

She was wearing black tight leather, which totally displayed her voluptuous body figure. But her face was too pale, like some kind of sickly beauty.

The boss was holding a sword, and blood still dripped from the tip of the sword. Her pink tongue kept licking her red lips, which gave a completely femme fatale vibe!

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle once again and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, and then rushed towards the boss using {Charge}.

"Here comes another prey!" Cassandra excitedly screamed and raised her sword in readiness, "What an aromatic, delicious smell of blood!"

After Zhang Yang pulled the boss' aggro by throwing {Spear of Obliteration}, he started stepping backward until Mythical Turtle was able to engage the boss. Both Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle bombarded the boss' HP. It was just a Gray-Silver boss, how powerful could it be?

Cassandra's attack power was similar with Heiminus, but she had a few offensive skills, thus, her overall damage was much higher than Heiminus! But, she did not have the aura that reduced player' attack power, and she did not even have status restriction skills. As a result, Zhang Yang and

Mythical Turtle's damages were much higher now!

Other than using {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang also drank two bottles of [Level 4 Healing Potion] before successfully defeating the boss. Besides, other than a few pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, Zhang Yang obtained two [Chaos Gems] and instantly, his backpack space became 140 slots!

Zhang Yang went on to the third level of the Tomb of Despair!

After fighting his way for a period of time, Zhang Yang suddenly stopped, and then doubled back a few steps, turning around to look at a tomb on his left side.

Eight skeletal soldiers were attacking a red bearded dwarf, and at that moment, the battle almost ended. When Zhang Yang started moving towards the battle, the dwarf already fall defeated, groaning in pain, dropping his big hammer.

Once the dwarf died, the eight skeletal soldiers also instantly disappeared, and the nearby of the tomb also became empty.

Zhang Yang sighed. He was too late!

That red-bearded dwarf was the NPC who offered accessory quests. As long as players passed by and rescued him from the monsters, and helped him get the "treasure chest" behind the fourth boss, Briggs, players would be entitled accessories as the quest reward.

This pitiful NPC would continually be attacked by the monsters, and if no players passed by, then this NPC would die for many times! If there is a counter for the number of NPC deaths in God's Miracle, this dwarf would surely top the list!

However, if players had completed the quest, this dwarf NPC would no longer spawn, this was called a "mirror" technology in this game.

Five minutes later, the dwarf re-spawned, along with the eight elite skeletal monsters!

[Rhine Wildhammer] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 85

HP: 100,000

Defense: 450

Note: Claiming himself as a great explorer, but the others usually call him a grave robber.

"Damn it, why are there so many spectres here! God of Titans, please, quickly send someone to save me this pitiful Rhine!" the dwarf raised his big hammer to meet his foe as he grumbled.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, patted his Whitey to dash into the tomb chamber and said, "I thought I heard a coward crying for help!"

"What, you dared to call the great explorer as a coward? Mortal, let's fight a duel!" Rhine roared angrily, giving one of the skeletons a particularly good thump.

"Hey, is that how you to talk to your rescuer?" Zhang Yang waved his sword, launched {Blast Wave} and stunned all the eight skeletal soldiers, and then rescued Rhine immediately!

"Alright, human kid, since you have helped me, I can forgive your rudeness, but you have to compensate me!"

"Roar!" the eight skeletal soldiers awoke from their stun and started attacking Zhang Yang.

While Rhine Wildhammer did not help Zhang Yang a hand but hid away and put on a bandage to recover his HP. However, the times taken for NPCs and players to put on bandage were different, the bandage progress bar under the NPC's tag moved extremely slowly. Obviously, the NPC would not help immediately, but would instead wait for Zhang Yang to clear all the monsters. The other case would be if Zhang Yang got close to death. The NPC too would help out.

In terms of attack power, the eight skeletal soldiers were pieces of cake for Zhang Yang. But when these monsters were reduced to 50% HP, they would use sharp bone paralyze effect. If these monsters took turns to use

this status restriction skill, it would be very troublesome for Zhang Yang!

Therefore, Zhang Yang switched targets repeatedly until all the monsters were at 51% of their HP.. After that, he used {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep} to reduce all eight monsters' HP to 50%!

The eight skeletal soldiers initiated sharp bone paralyze effect together on Zhang Yang!

'Ding! You are stunned due to you are affected by Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair's sharp bone paralyze and you lose 2,000 HP every second. Lasts for 5 seconds!'

'Ding! You are stunned due to you are affected by Skeletal Soldier of Tomb of Despair's sharp bone paralyze and you lose 2,000 HP every second. Lasts for 5 seconds!'

"..."

All of sudden, the system notifications rang around Zhang Yang's ears, nonstop.

'{Warrior's Will}!'

All the debuffs were removed!

Zhang Yang immediately bombarded the eight monsters without hesitation and worries, while using {Shield Wall} and {Berserker's Heal}.

"Hey, human, you are kind of powerful, huh!" Rhine stopped putting his bandage and his HP bar became full. Rhine gazed at Zhang Yang with narrowed eyes, "Since you are helping me, I will not fuss over your rudeness earlier on!"

Luckily, the NPC had not helped Zhang Yang out just now, otherwise, Zhang Yang would not be able to precisely control the monsters' HP, and be unable to remove the eight sharp bone paralyze effects at once by using {Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang smiled happily as there were two extreme combinations, some dwarves were kind and honest; while some dwarves were greedy and cheapskate. Rhine Wildhammer definitely was the second type of dwarf,

which was greedy and cheapskate. That was why Rhine fooled away Zhang Yang's kindness of helping him.

However, it was pointless to fuss with an NPC.

"Dwarf, I have something else to do, stay safe!" Zhang Yang said.

"Wait a minute!" Rhine blocked in front of Zhang Yang and said, "Warrior, you look capable, I can give you a task! Help me enter the fourth floor of Tomb of Despair and search for a useless box, and I will give you a sacred treasure of our Dwarf race!"

'Ding! Rhine Wildhammer has a quest for you: This is just a little favor. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang did not accept the quest immediately but equipped [Party Summon Order] and then activated it.

Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream, Fantasy Sweetheart, Lost Dream, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and Endless Starlight appeared around Zhang Yang within one to two seconds. Wei Yan Er asked in the party channel, "Noob tank, why did you teleport us there? Do you know [Teleportation Scrolls] are very costly?!"

Chapter 369: This Is But A Small Favor

[Party Summon Order]'s teleportation was consensual.

When someone in the party used a [Party Summon Order], a dialogue box would pop-up in the rest of the nine party members' interface, to give them the option to accept. The players could choose to accept, or reject, or even ignore the dialogue box but the dialogue box would last for only a minute. after a minute, the system would reject the summoning automatically.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er loved to be garrulous with Zhang Yang as they knew that Zhang Yang would not summon them for fun, so both of them only appeared around Zhang Yang after three to four seconds later. Besides, Zhang Yang had to reimburse them the "ticket" back to the city!

Zhang Yang pointed at Rhine Wildhammer and said, "Talk to that NPC to receive a quest!"

Everyone talked to that dwarf and received the quest, "This is just a little favor".

[This is just a little favor] (Difficulty: B)

Quest Description: Help Rhine Wildhammer to get the treasure! You must ensure that Rhine Wildhammer survives. If Rhine Wildhammer dies, this quest will be deemed a failure.

Progress: Help Rhine Wildhammer get the treasure 0/1

Quest Reward: [Dwarf's Blessing]

[Dwarf's Blessing] (Gray-Silver, Accessory)

Use: Removes all the effects that restrict a player's action. Lasts for 10 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

This accessory was born for PvP, as it could remove all the status restriction skills. However, it was not as useful as {Warrior's Will} which also could remove DoT damage effect, or give an invincible effect like

{Sacred Protection}. However, this NPC gifted the players an auto ability of anti-status restriction effect, which was also quite good!

Especially when fighting against Thieves, an extra anti-status restriction effect ability would also increase the survivability!

This was why Zhang Yang summoned everyone here for the quest.

"Hey, you guys have to work harder! As I'm rewarding you guys our Dwarf race's precious treasure. If you guys cannot protect me, then you guys should just slit your necks up with a knife to commit suicide!" Rhine said with his cheapskate's face.

Luckily, everyone was used to dealing with the cheapskates Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, so they did not bother about the NPC.

After everyone had received the quest, Rhine started walking in front of everyone.

When Zhang Yang was alone, he had already swathed a path through the various monsters, and now that there were so many of them, it was even easier to defeat all the minions along their way. Half an hour later, they reached the third boss, Brighton.

[Brighton] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 86

HP: 1,720,000

Defense: 1500

It was a huge and tall man with a ferocious face, his top was bare and full of scars, and some parts even exposed his internal organs and bones! For spectre, bones were their fundamentals, while blood and flesh were not necessary for their survival, therefore, their physical injuries would not be recovered automatically.

The party no longer needed to be extra careful when fighting against Yellow-Gold bosses. All of them rushed towards the boss and launched vigorous attacks.

Brighton was a gatekeeper boss, although his HP was low, he must be

harboring an ulti! Unfortunately, he was only the third boss, although he was stronger than the previous two Gray-Silver bosses, he was still no match to the party. A minute later, he was killed by the party!

Brighton dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, both of them being cloth armor. The gloves were given to Fantasy Sweetheart while the helmet was given to Daffodil Daydream. Besides, the boss also dropped three [Chaos Gems]. It seemed that all the bosses here would drop [Chaos Gems].

Zhang Yang did not even win a [Chaos Gem]. However, he had already taken four [Chaos Gems] previously, so he did not feel particularly bad about it.

After killing the third boss, the party continued moving forward and rushed into the fourth floor of Tomb of Despair.

"I smell my lovely precious!" Rhine sniffed, about, his huge brandy nose twitching. He sped up and moved forwards.

Everyone quickly followed closely, as if the NPC died, they would have to run back to the same place and receive the quest once again.

All of them defeated the minions easily along the way, and half an hour later, they reached the front of the fourth boss,

[Briggs] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

MP: 870,000

Defense: 1,500

This was a magic-type boss. This boss had a hunched back, wore black robes, held a dark green staff, was barefooted, and had the bones of its toes exposed.

"My precious treasure!" grave robber Rhine saw the boss like a pervert seeing a naked beauty, the excitement shone in his eyes, he shouted and rushed towards the boss with his greedy face, as if he would sacrifice

anything for the treasure.

Zhang Yang and the rest immediately turned to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. The resemblance was uncanny!

Wei Yan Er fidgeted uncomfortably and asked, "Why are you guys looking at us?"

When everyone heard her ask so, they immediately burst into laughter.

While at this moment, Rhine had already initiated the battle, and both of these NPCs had already started fighting each other.

Although Rhine received a boost and mysteriously grew stronger upon seeing his Rhine, as a mere elite monster, he could not be the boss' opponent. So, Rhine was in pain as his HP dropped drastically. He quickly yelled, "You guys, hurry up, come over to help me, I'm your employer!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and raised his [Goblin's Head Lobber] and then rushed towards them.

This quest's difficulty was B which also means that the boss was not hard to defeat. The true fact also was shown, under the crowd's powerful crushes, the boss was quickly defeated.

Once the boss was dead, Wei Yan Er quickly ran over the boss' corpse to pick up the coins, while Rhine excitedly rushed towards the back of Briggs' corpse for a stone chest. Rhine broke the stone chest and took out a fiery red colored hat.

Rhine held the red hat like his baby and even gently stroked the hat against his face obsessively.

Wei Yan Er stood beside him, similarly stroking the gold coins in her hands!

After some time, Rhine only put the red hat on his arms then came to the front of Zhang Yang and his party members. After that, he threw a piece of silvery white small pendant at everyone and said, "You guys did a good job, here are your rewards, I'll take my leave then!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: This is just a little favor. Obtained

2,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: [Dwarf’s Blessing]!’

Rhine went off quickly without saying anything, as if he was afraid that Zhang Yang and the rest would snatch away his "treasure".

After everyone distributed Briggs’ drops, they continued moving forwards and immediately reached the final floor of the Tomb of Despair. They were there for the final boss, Lord of the Myriad Ghosts!

If the first two bosses were a Gray-Silver grade, the third and the fourth bosses being a Yellow-Gold grade, then the fifth boss would most probably be a Violet-Platinum grade!

Everyone had been bored of fighting against Yellow-Gold bosses, but Violet-Platinum bosses were not common encounters yet!

They cleared the monsters along the way, and after they had cleared the fifth floor of monsters, Zhang Yang had already collected 10 [Zombie Moss] in total. Unfortunately, the [Zombie Potion]’s recipe was not dropped so easily, so Zhang Yang would have to keep waiting.

There was a wide space in the middle of the mountain in the deepest of the fifth floor of Tomb of Despair. It was chilly here and the cold wind actually made people shiver!

A monster which was hidden by the black fog appeared in front of the party, its body size was huge, reaching up to eight meters tall. They vaguely saw its skeletal skull and two green evil flames burned in its eyeholes.

"Ah!"

A head stretched out from the monster which was covered by the black fog, uttering a cry with a terrified expression, but it seemed to be held back within the black fog by something else!

"Ah!"

From these screams, one after another, more heads stretched out from the black fog, but then disappeared in the black fog again. It seemed like

countless of wraiths stayed in this body.

[Lord of the Myriad Ghosts] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

Note: The King of Spectre of the Tomb of Despair!

"Yo, this boss is scary!" Wei Yan Er complained.

"Little brat, I thought you are not afraid of anything?"

"My cousin said, I'm a big girl after 18 years old, I have to learn to be demure and lovely, only can I trigger men's desire to protect me, and also to control them!" Wei Yan Er said flippantly.

After hearing those words, Zhang Yang and the rest were speechless, but Han Ying Xue only sighed.

"What's the plan?" everyone looked at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders, as there was the Fastest Dungeon Raid Level Clearance Ranking for the dungeon's bosses, therefore, many players would come up with tactics for the optimal party class combinations and tactics. But there were so many open-world bosses, and the bosses did not re-spawn as swiftly as a dungeon boss. So, only a few famous open-world bosses would have comprehensive tactics available against them, from intensive research.

Those open-world bosses were hardly defeated, but there were many members in a strong guild, so strong guilds could just use their numbers to defeat the open-world bosses. So at this point, tactics have become pointless!

Zhang Yang did not fight against this Lord of the Myriad Ghosts before so he did not know the corresponding tactics.

Zhang Yang simply answered, "Just do what feels right. We're not racing for time. If worst comes to worst, we die once, and start again from the

scratch!"

Zhang Yang summoned Mythical Turtle and directly dashed towards the boss.

"A live one? Here?" Lord of the Myriad Ghosts uttered in a weird tone that sounded like a chorus of voices. The boss looked at Zhang Yang with its burning green flames eyes, and suddenly, its body inflated as if someone had blown gas into it, and it instantly became hundreds of meters tall!

"Become part of the king's body!" the boss uttered again with the voice of the thousands of thousands of people screaming, and a black light suddenly emerged from the black fog that formed a huge palm which tried to grab hold of Zhang Yang!

When they looked carefully, the palm was made up from countless of faces; all the faces showed terrified expressions and screeched continuously!

Chapter 370: Lord of the Myriad Ghosts

The devilish boss manipulated everything an ancient devil!

Within the black fog, countless of faces continuously moaned and screamed in pain in a terrifying image of sorrow! This scene exactly looks like the end of days!

That huge palm came at Zhang Yang, but Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield and activated {Block}. At the same time, he also lifted his axe on his right and hacked at terrifying evil palm.

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

...

12 ‘-1,000’ damage texts floated on top of Zhang Yang’s head continuously. At the same time, Zhang Yang’s axe chopped nothing but air!

The party members saw that Zhang Yang had the boss’s attention, so all of them surrounded the boss and started launching attacks, while ranged attackers also threw fire arrows and fire balls from afar. But their attacks also hit nothing like Zhang Yang. These fire arrows and fire balls phased through the black fog, until the maximum 30 meters skill range, where fire arrows fell on the floor and fire balls were automatically extinguished.

"This is not from the boss’ body, look for the actual target!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted loudly and continued rushing towards the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts’ huge body!

As the boss received attacks from the ranged attackers, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts roared with the voice of the thousands and thousands of people shouting, and three masses of black fog emerged from the boss’ body and turned into three evil palms which raced towards Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream. The palms were made up by countless of anguished screaming faces!

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

...

Multiple ‘-1,000’ damage texts floated above these three persons’ heads. When the boss kept its evil palms, each of their HP bars had already lost 12,000 HP!

Zhang Yang was frowning, as this boss caused 1,000 damages to all types of classes, which made his pridefully high defense useless!

He quickly referred to the battle record to check what type of attack he had received, ‘You have lost 1,000 HP due to the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts’ bite!’

It was "Lost" instead of "Being Hurt", these two words produced the same outcome, but they had totally different algorithms. "Being hurt" would be affected by defense, magic resistant, passive immune and equipment absorption effect, while "Lost" would directly deduct the HP, ignoring any resistance effects, even ignoring "invincibility" skills and effect!

It was like the sharp bone paralyzing effect that Zhang Yang encountered from the skeletal minions previously, which directly deducted 10,000 HP within 5 seconds, without any discount!

In this scenario, the tank’s only remaining advantage over the other classes would be his high HP.

Zhang Yang rushed towards the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts, within a 10 meters range, and activated {Charge}!

Shush!

Zhang Yang was like a speeding arrow, he struck against boss and the [Goblin's Head Lobber] on his hand crunched into the boss once again.

‘-1,942!’

This time, the attack finally dealt damage to the boss.

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts screeched, the black fog emerged from its

body once again then turned into evil palm, and whacked towards Zhang Yang. Previously, everyone was attacking the boss' "invincible" evil palms and did not deal any damage to boss, therefore, the boss' aggro list became disorderly, so the boss had launched counterattacks to the four persons who attacked it before. At this time, the boss' body only received damage from Zhang Yang, thus, the boss' aggro list was back to normal.

Zhang Yang received another 12,000 damage and his rage bar became full. He immediately added 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss which activated the signal to lay it all out.

Every party member quickly read the situation and started attacking the body directly. The melee attackers also went around to the back of the boss to launch their attacks. The ranged attackers were standing in a group, but were separated by three meters to allow the healers to heal without much difficulty.

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts' attacks seemed weaker than other Violet-Platinum bosses as it dealt only 19,000 damage at once, but its attacks ignored any defensive skills, while also launching an attack every two seconds. Each strike was a guaranteed hit, and its DPS totaled up to 6,000. It was still a Violet-Platinum boss through and through!

Fortunately, this time, Zhang Yang had brought along two healers, which were Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart. They were the top healers in Lone Desert Smoke. Both of their abilities were sufficient in healing all of the party members' HP!

Although this Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was not a magic-type boss, it caused Guardian's strongest defense skill, {Block} to lose its role which also prevented the use of {Shield Bash}! As Zhang Yang already had the five piece effect of the Titan set equipment, his {Shield Bash} did not require rage anymore, and its damage was doubled. When this {Shield Bash} struck on the boss with 5 stacks of {Cripple Defense}, it could actually cause 4,830 points of damage to boss, an impressive amount of doubled damage!

However, when fighting against the Lord of the Myriad Ghosts, Zhang

Yang only had his higher HP to rely on!

"Mortals will eventually be swallowed up by death!"

"Death is the beginning to eternal life!"

"Mortals, become part of the body of the king, and you will all be immortals!"

Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was attacking them as it uttered these words. Each line was uttered with the chorus of a thousand voices, it was bone-chilling!

After Zhang Yang had stabilized the boss' aggro, the boss targeted Zhang Yang alone. The two godly Priests were in charge of healing, even though Zhang Yang lost his immune ability, he still happily withstood the boss' attacks.

90%, 80%, the boss' HP started to reduce steadily.

"Foolish mortals, give up on your mundane ideas, and allow the king to devour your flesh and souls!" Lord of the Myriad Ghosts angrily shouted. After that, the boss swung its body and countless of heads dropped from the black fog, all over the ground!

This scene was extremely bloody and terrifying which could actually scare off a weak-willed person!

"Oh my god!"

The first person who screamed was not the timid member of the party, Fantasy Sweetheart, but Fatty Han!

Everyone was speechless and Han Ying Xue was curious and asked, "Sweetheart, why aren't you afraid?"

"I love to watch horror movies, so..." this little beauty with a baby face and plump bosoms shyly answered.

Zhang Yang laughed and asked, "Fatty, why are you screaming?"

"You guys, don't you feel that this is scary?" Fatty Han answered with his half-opened mouth.

Endless Starlight laughed evilly and said, "Brother fatty must have gotten f*cked in the ass!"

When they were talking, the soil on the ground wiggled and formed into headless clay figurines! These clay figurines reached out and picked up the heads on the ground, and stuffed them on their necks, it was like magic, instantly a clay figurine army was formed!

[Restless Spirits] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

These spirits look ferocious, the spirits even constantly uttered the same frightening screams as they lifted their hands, moved their clay feet and slowly moved towards Zhang Yang. There were about four hundred of them!

"Damn, why do I have the feeling of watching zombie movie?!" Lost Dream yelled loudly.

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Starlight, move to the ranged attackers' position and kite that monster that are after them, and I will pull the monsters at the melee position!"

There were too many monsters to be squashed into the players' AoE skill range, therefore, it was pointless to pull the monsters into a group but to at least kill 50 of the monsters first.

"Roger that!"

Endless Starlight quickly kept his war hammer and moved backward to protect the ranged attackers.

Normal monsters were totally harmless to the well-equipped tank, but these monsters were still threatening to the other classes, especially in such a high amount of monsters! Endless Starlight had already prepared his {Vanguard's Aggression} and could be used at any time.

The spirits didn't move very quickly, but there were so many of them

that they slowly surrounded the party like a zombie attack in horror movies!

Zhang Yang changed his weapon to his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] and launched {Horizontal Sweep}!

Suddenly, a wide cloud of '-6,000' damage texts floated across the monsters' head, along with a few critical strikes which dealt up to 13,000 points of damage, and some spirits were killed instantly! The special effect of [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was activated and immediately launched another sword of shadows!

"Ah!" the spirits screamed in pain and started moving towards Zhang Yang.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang wielded his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] once again and launched a conical-shape shock wave. Suddenly, those areas of monsters were all stunned and more than 10 '-1,264' damage texts popped-up!

The special effect of [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was activated, as when fighting against so many monsters, even a 1% chance of special effect activation would also be easy to trigger!

Pa! Pa! Pa!

The spirits were just the normal monsters, even though they were in high amount, they quickly fell defeated!

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang trampled on the ground, and then another series of damage texts popped-up!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest did not stand by idly, and also helped to clear out the horde.

The pitiful minions' basic attack was only 1,700, even when attacked Zhang Yang from his back, they also caused nullified damage! '-0' texts popped-up when the spirits put their hands on Zhang Yang!

Less than a minute later, the minions at the melee position was all

cleared! There were still a hundred monsters after the ranged attackers, which showed that Zhang Yang's sword was peerless in AoE attacks!

Unfortunately, this special effect was greatly weakened after Level 80, otherwise, they would have killed all the minions even faster!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest turned around to help Daffodil Daydream and the others. Zhang Yang was still tanking the boss and Endless Starlight was steadily pulling the minions. He did not require Zhang Yang's help!

In a short time, the minions at the ranged position were also cleared. Everyone headed back to the boss and vigorously launched attacks towards the boss.

70%, 60%...

After a while, the boss dropped countless of heads once again to form another clay figurine army which then lumbered towards Zhang Yang and his party members.

Previously, everyone did not use any long cool down skills. This time, they cleared the minions with ease, obtaining plenty of experience points!

Chapter 371: Blood Rage Armor Set

Fatty Han could not help but feel content for the moment, "Little Yang, let's slow down the pace for a little bit and kill some more monsters. We can get more experience points!"

Wei Yan Er laughed out loudly at Fatty Han and said, "Wretched fatty, you just don't want to engage with the scary ghost boss, am I right?"

Fatty Han sunk into shame and blushed as the gang continued teasing him! Everyone was laughing at him for being afraid of ghosts!

56%, 53%, 50%!

"Argh --- No! No! No!" Lord of the Myriad Ghosts let out a thunderous roar and collapsed down to the ground. The black mist that was surging through the body of the boss had also dispersed through the surroundings, followed by countless hideous faces crying miserably, while rushing towards the gang in a ferocious manner!

‘-1,000!’

‘-1,000!’

...

It was an AOE attack, nothing more. Zhang Yang and the gang were inflicted by the attack and lost quite a number of health points. Basically, each of them had lost approximately 20,000 of health points! If it wasn't for the Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment that they were wearing, and the one or two pieces of Violet-Platinum grade equipment at hand on some of them, and also the {Vitality Aura} that Zhang Yang possessed, which boosted each of their health points beyond 25,000, that wave of AOE attack would have wiped them out clean for good!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly healed everyone up. Because if the boss used any more powerful skills, one more wave of attack would be enough to instantly-kill every single one of them, as they were already low on health!

Boom!

As the boss smashed heavily onto the ground and the black mist completely dispersed, a gigantic skeleton of a head appeared right before them. The size of that gigantic skeleton can be compared to the size of a house! The flesh and blood of this skeleton seemed to have decayed into dust completely, and the skeleton was only left with two large holes of eye sockets that ignited with the evil flame of the undead, from within the two sockets!

"So this is the real form of the boss?"

"Haha, there's only a head without any limbs or body! Let's see how it fight!"

The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts spread its mouth opened and let out a solid and husky voice, "Damn you, bastards! You bastards smashed all the souls to disperse, all the souls that I've collected! Do you have any idea how much effort was needed to collect so many souls! Damn you! Damn you! You forced me to use my body that has yet to recover to its former state!"

The ground began to tremble! Boom!

As the boss was talking, the surface of the ground had begun to tremble and the rumble began to roll across the ground, like an earthquake followed by an avalanche!

Boom!

Boom!

Two large arms of a skeleton emerged from below the ground, followed closely by a large torso of a skeleton that appeared right before the gang! Then, two legs of a skeleton that emerged from the ground! The sole of one foot was already the size of a large bus!

This gigantically sized skeleton had all four limbs attached to its body, except for the skull. But as the entire body had emerged from the ground, the gigantic skeleton reached it's armed to that skeletal head of Lord of the Myriad Ghosts, picked the skull up and attached it right to the neck joint! It was like attaching a piece of lego head onto the top of a lego body!

A dark aura then surged and surrounded the gigantic skeleton. Lord of the Myriad Ghosts cracked its neck, and then the rest of the joints and knuckles like it was trying to adjust itself to a newly formed body!

[Lord of the Myriad Ghosts (Complete Form)] (Violet-Platinum, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

Note: The completed form of The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts!

"Oh f*ck sh*t! The boss is at full health again!" The gang was all screaming in dismay.

"You pitiful weaklings, I shall smash you all into pancakes!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts roared out like thunder from the sky it self and reached out with its large skeletal hand towards Zhang Yang. It gave him a large, boney slap!

{Block}!

‘-1,304!’ Reflect damage of {Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield up not because he wanted to, but because it was his natural response that caused him to raise his shield up to protect himself from harm! But no one had ever thought that after the boss entered its complete form, its attacks patterns and effects were changed as well! The attacks could not be blocked, just like any other regular melee boss!

He immediately bashed out a {Shield Bash} on the boss!

‘-10,432!’

An unexpected value of damage was inflicted onto the boss! The {Shield Bash} scored a critical strike, apparently!

Initially, {Shield Bash} could only inflict a basic damage of 2,608. But after being blessed with the additional effect of the 5 pieces of [Titan

Armor Set], the damage output of the skill had been doubled! With a critical attack, the damage output of the skill could reach up to 4 times higher than the initial damage value!

That was awesome!

The rest of the gang were shocked to see that high amount of damage!

The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts was enraged, as it pulled it's right hand back over its skull and gave another Zhang Yang another bash!

‘-11,634!’

This time, Zhang Yang could not use his {Block} again right after he had used it once, so all he could do was to endure all the impact of the attack. But his defense, his damage immunity and his damage absorption of his equipment were all activated! The basic attack of the boss was reduced from 19,000 down to 11,000, he had negated almost 40% of its damage!

Everyone was stunned for a second there after seeing it, and then they resumed their assaults on the boss as hard as they could at the moment. Everyone knew that it would be pointless for them to complain even if the boss healed itself, so the best thing for them to do at the moment was to bring down the boss as soon as possible, speed is the key!

Truth be told, although this Lord of the Myriad Ghosts looked imposing and all in it's Completed Form, it's damage output had actually decreased! It could only inflict a total damage of approximately 12,000 in 2 seconds, and the damage value was further reduced down to approximately 4,000 after Zhang Yang's {Block} and the damage reduction passives on his equipment. That was a reduction of 50% on the boss's initial damage output of approximately 6,000 per second!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were much more relieved on their role in healing the gang, and according to the current situation, Han Ying Xue alone was enough to support the entire party! After reaching Level 80, she had managed to equip a Violet-Platinum grade staff, turning her into the super saiyan of healers! The only thing that she lacked off now was a long MP bar. As her MP usage on activating healing skills is massive, her current amount of MP she had at the moment is not sufficient for her to

heal at will. She would need to coordinate carefully and time correctly to heal effectively.

98%, 96%... the health point of the boss had begun to reduce again.

90%!

"Enough of this nonsense! Stop these futile struggling, you imbeciles!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts halted its assaults on the team, and suddenly, white spikes made of bones sprouted out of its body, covering the entire body. And shoof shoof shoof! The white spikes of bone were shot out in all directions from its body!

‘Ding! The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts has unleashed {Reign of Bone Spikes}!’

‘-19,800!’

‘-19,980!’

‘-19,960!’

...

Instantly, everyone was inflicted with damage that almost reached 20,000! Fortunately, they had entire sets of Yellow-Gold equipment, at the very least, and also the {Vitality Aura} from Zhang Yang, so they had about 25,000 HP. If it weren’t for all these, they would have been instantly-killed by the ‘rain’ of attack!

‘-5,312!’

Wei Yan Er did not even give a sh*t, because she knew that someone was healing her from behind. So, she furiously charged forward and unleashed her worst as she was gaining rage points exponentially! She bawled out and slashed at the boss, however, the boss did not receive any damage and instead, she was inflicted with a value of damage!

"The boss has damage reflect now!" the little girl was shocked and she immediately informed everyone about it. It was really lucky for her to have a very high health points. As she was left with more than 6,000 health points after the boss’s assault, she had not killed herself after receiving the

reflected damage, leaving her with less than 1,000 health points!

[Reign of Bone Spikes]: Reflects all damage, last for 10 seconds.

Right after it happened, everyone noticed that there was an additional special buff on the boss. However, it was not a buff that would benefit them.

Everyone halted their assaults on the boss. Zhang Yang. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had to command their pets to stop their attacks as well. For that period of time, only the boss could unleash its assaults on everyone around without having to worry about being attacked!

10 seconds had passed quickly. Everyone rounded up the boss once again and continued on their attempt to take down the boss.

88, 84%...

Whenever the health points of the boss reduced by 10%, the boss would unleash the {Reign of Bone Spikes} once and gain the damage reflect effect. By doing so, the boss gained an opportunity to inflict great damage to the players around and also restricted the damage output of the players. If players were careless, they might end up killing themselves after taking the reflective damages from their effort to attack the boss, while the buff of reflective damage is still effective!

Luckily, there were no idiots in this party. Even Fatty Han had learned his lesson after being 'taught' for so many times by experiences. He had grown wiser, even though he is still not a professional player, at the least, he won't repeat simple mistakes such as this one!

When the boss was left with 50% of health points, everyone stopped as they did not know if the boss would immediately transform itself into another form like a 'Transformer'!

... No it did not!

There was only a {Reign of Bone Spikes} raining down towards the gang inflicting them with massive damage. It was still manageable for Han Ying Xue, but the MP bar of Fantasy Sweetheart had almost met the bottom!

"Increase your damage output! Everyone!"

Zhang Yang took a glance at the two healer's MP bars and frowned a little bit. Too bad, they just came out from the 'Pandemonium' not long ago, so their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} were all on cool down! Even if they wanted to, they could not increase the speed in killing the boss!

40%, 30%... the health bar of the boss was reducing steadily. Zhang Yang had to make do with it. What he was focusing on was to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression} every time the boss unleashed it's {Reign of Bone Spikes} to reduce the stress on the two healers! Although he was unsure of whether the boss would go into Rage Mode in the later stages of the battle, but if they can't even overcome the situation now, what could they do about Rage Mode then?

20%!

15%!

10%!

"Undeads from the deepest dark abyss, come forth and show your allegiance to the king!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts did not go into any sort of Rage Mode when its health points hit 10% low. Instead, the boss activated a powerful skill!

Following the roar of the boss in a low pitched voice, the entire ground shook and cracked right open, a large crack appeared right in the middle of the ground and there were vague signs of burning flames igniting up by the crack!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The crack was getting bigger by the moment, and in just a brief period of time, the entire ground was torn into pieces, as streams of raging flames sprouting through the cracks all over the ground, just like hot springs of water gushing out from the ground! Zhang Yang went on to touch the flame to test out on the damage those flames would inflict. Instantly, he was inflicted with a '-6,226'!

'You were inflicted 6,226 fire damage by the {Unleash of the Earth

Core's Flame} (2,000 damage immune, 1,774 damage absorbed)!'

Zhang Yang took a look at the battle log record and said, "Don't let the flames touch you! The basic damage of the flame attack is about 10,000 points! And it's a fire attribute attack!"

As the ground was trembling violently, suddenly!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Skeletal hands emerged from beneath the ground one after another through the cracks, and all of the skeletal hands were almost as huge as the boss's hand! What closely followed were large white skeletons emerging from beneath the ground, crawling their way out of the cracks. All of them were holding scythes in their hands that were about 10 meters long. They looked exactly like Grim Reapers!

[Death Collector] (Elite, Undead)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Only monsters that were 20 levels higher than the player would show '???' on their level status, that would only mean that these newly spawned elite monsters were at least Level 100!

Zhang Yang quickly kited the boss around using some tactical movement of his. He tried his best to avoid all of the Death Collectors while he was on it, "These monsters are obviously too strong for us now, everyone, just focus on the boss! Kill the boss, and all these monsters should vanish! If not, it would be illogical and unwise for a game company to spawn so many super powerful elite grade monsters!"

Everyone understood and agreed as they went around all of the spouting flames of 'spring fountains' from the crack holes on the ground. Then, they began to focus their firepower on the boss!

9%, 8%, 7%... the health points of the boss was reducing while these Death Collectors were pursuing Zhang Yang and the gang tightly from

behind! But their movement speeds were extremely slow, allowing the players to avoid them with ducks and rolls!

However, there are still flames spouting all around the area. One small careless mistake would cost 10,000 health points. Therefore, the entire gang was fully focused on getting the job done!

At that moment, the scene was really messy and chaotic!

5%, 4%, 3%!

Everyone gulped down [Power Potions] to power up on their strength to attack, and they activated the best skills that they had! But it was really an unfortunate thing for them as their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} were all still under cool down period at the moment. If not for that, they could have unleashed hell onto the boss when the boss was left with 10% HP and didn't have go the worst and dangerous stage of the battle!

2%!

1%!

0%!

"Argh --- " The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts let out a miserable and raging cry, then it's body smashed into the ground and shattered into pieces. Instantly, the pieces turned into a pile of shattered bones on the ground!

Boom!

That gigantic skull-head of the boss did not shatter into pieces, instead, it fell right down to the ground and smashed heavily among the pile of shattered bones. The impact was thunderously loud!

"You imbeciles of the living, do not take this as your victory over me, I shall return!" The Lord of the Myriad Ghosts spoke out its final words before the flames within the two eye sockets on the skull flickered and vanished. Everything went silent for a moment.

"If you dare to return, we shall return you to dust one more time!" Endless Starlight growled at the pile of bones.

"You mother of something!"

The moment when Lord of the Myriad Ghosts died, the elite skeletons with no level stated on them went crawling back to where they came from, the cracks one after another. Crack crack crack! The cracks closed together and the ground became one piece once again, and the streams of spouting flames had also stopped. The entire area had finally returned to its peaceful state.

"Finally, we beat it! I'm so tired!"

It was still simple at the beginning of the battle, but the final part of the battle, when the boss was left with only 10% of health points was really hard and tiring. They had to dodge the spouting flames and the elite monsters, and at the same time, they were required to keep their damage output on the boss at a high rate! It was indeed a tiring battle! After slaying the boss, everyone could feel a heavy large boulder lifted from their shoulders, and the harder the battle was, the more excitement and joy could be felt by the players when they finally stand victorious!

Wei Yan Er was the first one who went up to collect the coins among the loot. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang went up to pick up a piece of shiny black stone from among the loot.

[Ancient Magic Stone] (Quest Item)

Description: This is a magic stone that has been passed down from the ancients, it contains powerful magic power!

Zhang Yang was smiling with a satisfied expression on his face as he placed the item into his backpack.

After Wei Yan Er picked up the coins, she turned her focus on the equipment.

[Kroll, The Axe of Devastation] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed)

Attack: 2,356 - 2,956

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 699

Equip: 21% rate to ignore all defense of the target for 10 seconds when

hitting on the target.

{Unidentified}

Level required: 80

"Mine! Mine! It's mine!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes, as it has been at least a month ever since she had longed to get a good quality Violet-Platinum grade two-handed weapon that had an attack interval of 3.8 seconds. Immediately, she hugged the shining piece of weapon piece, with strange bright lines on it, without fearing that she would be cut by the sharp edge of the weapon.

Among the whole party, only the little girl can wield a two-handed axe. So, the rest of the members had to give up on the fancy piece of weapon to that little girl and selected the 'cancel' button on their screen.

Seeing that little girl was still drooling at her 'new toy', Zhang Yang took over her 'job' in looking through the loot.

[Blood Rage Chest Plate] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Agility: +378

{Unidentified}

Required Profession: Thief

Level Required: 80

Blood Rage Armor Set (1/8): {Blood Rage Mask}, {Blood Rage Necklace}, {Blood Rage Mantle}, {Blood Rage Chest Plate}, {Blood Rage Gaunlets}, {Blood Rage Greaves}, {Blood Rage Boots}, {Blood Rage Ring}

3 Pieces: Increase 500 points on agility.

5 Pieces: When you activate {Vanish}, immediately recover 100 points on MP.

8 Pieces: When attacking a target, there is 1% chance that you will acquire the 'Light of Perception' and summon an ancient thief to fight by your side!

Chapter 372: Killua Castle

After the guardian and the priest, the third Armor Set for a profession has appeared!

But, there was only one Armor Set for DPS Profession, unlike guardians and berserkers, priests and pastors, the differences between these were like two different professions already! And each of them had their own Armor Set!

Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream are both in need of this equipment, so they agreed on to decide by tossing the dices. Sun Xin Yu threw out a 21-point as the first toss, and just when she thought she was not fated to be the owner of the [Blood Rage Chest Plate], who would have thought? Lost Dream threw out a 12-point roll only! Who would have thought Lost Dream was so out of luck on that day!

[Song of Victory] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Equip: Every time a Critical attack triggers, there is a 10% rate to activate a victory cry, boosting one of the attributes of strength, agility, intelligence attributes by 300 points for all party members (Maximum 10 members) (Boosts the attribute of the player that has the highest points), last for 10 seconds.

Level required: 80

The gang were looking at each other discussing about this piece, this little piece of accessory was indeed a little overpowered, somehow! But, it doesn't matter who took it, as it was a fine piece that provides benefits to everyone. So, as long as they are in the same party, everyone could still enjoy the perks of the additional buff this small piece can offer!

And of course, there was no doubt that this accessory should go to a Thief!

Thieves wielded two weapons, and a number of attacks that thief can do within a set period of time, let's say within 10 seconds, was the highest among all of them! Furthermore, thieves had the highest agility attribute

value, and their critical rate was also quite high, it would be easier for them to trigger the effect of the accessory!

As Sun Xin Yu had already taken the [Blood Rage Chest Plate]. Of course, it was natural that this piece of fine accessory should go to Lost Dream. It wasn't a bad deal. Although this accessory had a little smell of 'the spirit of serving the people wholeheartedly', but it could still be activated even if the player went solo. It would still be a fine piece!

300 points of attribute boost might not be much for one player, but it would become a boost of 3,000 points if there were 10 players, and the effect would make it worthwhile!

Other than the three pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, the boss had also left six pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment behind. However, only two pieces of them were taken by the gang, the remaining four pieces will be sold at the Little Merchandise.

After they were done with the boss, everyone tore their [Teleportation scrolls] and teleported back to the main city. Of course, mainly because they had just gotten some new equipment, so they would want to take them back to identify them.

Zhang Yang was dragged along by Wei Yan Er to help her identify her new weapon. So, after paying 200 gold pieces, this magnificent piece of a Violet-Platinum weapon finally revealed its true form.

[Kroll, The Axe of Devastation] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 3,494 - 4,094

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 998

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: 30% rate to ignore all defense of the target for 10 seconds when hitting the target.

Required Level: 80

Holy mother of lord, the range of the basic attack of this weapon has already exceeded the attack of Zhang Yang which already accounted his strength value in it!

So when Wei Yan Er switched the weapon on, her melee attack reached into a terrifying range of 8,311 - 8,911! When the special attack of the weapon activates, she can inflict a high damage of approximately 8,600 in a single attack on a high defense boss! That is just wickedly awesome!

Just by comparing the damage in one single attack, it has already gone up to no just two times of Zhang Yang's attack!

Zhang Yang felt a little envious of the little girl after seeing this. Now, he is currently equipped with a Level 70 Yellow-Gold weapon. When it is compared to a Violet-Platinum weapon, of course, the difference between the two weapons would be like miles apart!

However, he believes that this quest 'Mysterious Sword Hilt' would definitely reward him with an impressive one-handed sword. If not, then this quest won't be limited to only warriors, knights and thieves these three professions only --- it doesn't matter which type of thief profession you picked, there is no way a thief profession of any kind can lift up a two-handed sword!

So, next item to be collected would be the [Millennial Heroic Soul]!

However, Zhang Yang did not travel straight to the Killua Castle in Black Feather Forest immediately to find Honduras. The reason is simple. It would be unwise to begin another main quest right after completing one. Zhang Yang knew that he needed to restock and prepare himself first before setting onto another main important quest, so he did not have any intention of starting any quests with a higher difficulty. Because this [Millennial Heroic Soul] would not be easily earned, he had to prepare for another tough battle!

He then concocted a number of [Potions] until the next morning, before he went offline to go for a morning jog.

After buying breakfast and heading straight back to the house, he saw that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were just placing their feet on the

ground from the bed. Then, the three of them went on a 'war' on who was the best eater of the deep-fried dough sticks dipped in soya bean, and they really made a mess with joy! After finishing up with their breakfast, Han Ying Xue sent Wei Yan Er to school, while Zhang Yang went to the company by public cab.

It's really a joke that he would still be taking a cab to his company even after he had become a CEO of a multi-billionaire company, even after he has personal properties that were worth hundreds of millions! If this routine of his was to be spread out to the public, people would laugh at him, hard!

Well, might be time to buy a car, then!

Zhang Yang arrived at the company, and he was greeted by the secretary on duty with a cup of hot coffee, and a deep line of very obvious cleavage, plus the very upturned curve of a round butt! She attempted to seduce Zhang Yang with all she got before she removed her presence from the office, and she threw a wink right before the door closed. This kind of life is quite good. He could enjoy the pretty view of pretty ladies all around him, play online games whenever he wanted to, he can even tackle girls whenever an opportunity presents itself! More importantly, Zhang Yang did not have any big and great dreams ahead of him, so this kind of life suited him very much.

Of course, there was the two poisonous cancer tumor lurking in the dark, making him feel uneasy! There is no sign of that Liu Shu Yan, and Liu Wei had been quiet for too long already, god knows what he is planning in the dark! It was just too disturbing to just even think about!

Putting on the game helmet, Zhang Yang logged into the game.

The [Dimensional Key Fragment 6] can be located within the Black Feather Forest, while the [Millennial Heroic Soul] was somewhere deep in the forest as well. However, these two quests have nothing to do with each other. The sixth descendant of The Seven Generals is called Culonca. He was currently living uphill somewhere by the Snow Peach Mountain, a totally different region from the Killua Castle, located tens of thousands of

kilometers away from the castle itself!

After giving some thoughts on it, Zhang Yang decided to leave for the Killua Castle as a start.

Even if he managed to get the [Dimensional Key Fragment 6] now, it would mean nothing, without all of the fragments collected together in one place to form the complete piece of the [Dimensional Key]. But, it will be a totally different story if he can get the [Millennial Heroic Soul]. After getting it, he can just travel back to meet Margery, and hand over the 'Mysterious Sword Hilt' and unseal the first seal!

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey and began his journey to the Black Feather Forest.

Now that he had his hands on a [Party Summon Order], whenever he encounters a boss that he cannot handle, he can just summon his party members to aid him. This piece of [Party Summon Order] is definitely a god-like piece in saving lives!

After a long seven to eight hours of journey, Zhang Yang finally entered the last map on the Level 80 Black Feather Forest region.

How Black Feather Forest got its name, was because of the countless dried trees seen in the middle of the map. All these dried trees were thousands of meters tall, and the treetops covered over tens of thousands of area in kilometers. Because of the dark-inked green of the leaves, looking from afar, it's like seeing a land of black feathers covering the forest.

Therefore, the name Black Feather Forest.

Zhang Yang was riding Whitey, while traveling on a familiar road, and they traveled all the way up to the west side of the Black Feather Forest. They could already see a large castle from afar. By sight alone, they started heading for it!

A flag with a golden griffin symbol painted on, stood high up on top of the castle, fluttering in the wind, giving out some flapping sounds. The castle had a deep moat surrounding it, serving as a protection facility for

the castle. The moat was approximately 50 meters wide, and there was a hanging bridge connecting the two sides of the land that allowed people to enter the castle. The door of the castle was wide open, and there were four fully-armored soldiers, standing guard, by the entrance. There was also a general sitting high on a battle horse, in metallic armor.

[Brunoss The Ranger] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 1,500

On the other hand, the four guards were all Level 82 elite-grade NPCs, with 82,000 HP. They were similar to any other elites in the game.

These NPCs were all labeled as green-name monsters which mean that attacking them would only bring disaster to oneself, it would definitely be a stupid decision to pick a fight with them. Zhang Yang tapped on Whitey and went up to them.

"Hold it right there, outsider!" Brunoss raised up his long sword in his hand and stopped Zhang Yang from going into the castle.

"Why would you stop a fellow adventurer from entering the castle, honorable General Ranger!" Zhang Yang halted Whitey from making another step.

"Bring your name and your intention to my ear, outsider," after being buttered by Zhang Yang, Brunoss became so much more friendly than before, his face showed it all!

"Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle. I have business to attend to with a person named Honduras!"

"Honduras? The trader that turned into a traitor that sold his soul to the devils?" Brunoss suddenly trembled in anger, as both of his eyes were burning with murderous aura looking straight at Zhang Yang, "Guards, bring this outsider into custody! It's hard to say, this outsider might also be a devil's man sent here to spy on us!"

"Yes, Sir Brunoss!" the four guards rounded up on Zhang Yang and pointed their weapons at Zhang Yang from four directions. If Zhang Yang showed any sign of resistance, they would undoubtedly launch their attacks on him!

If the labeled names of these NPCs suddenly changed from green to red, then Zhang Yang would definitely have launched his assaults on them without having second thoughts! However, the five NPCs, including Brunoss himself still had green names! They were still friendlies!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, and he did not resist in the end. Instead, he flipped down from his [Battle Mount] and unsummoned Whitey.

After taking Zhang Yang into custody and putting him in a jail within the castle, the four guards left him after locking up the door to his cell. Well, there were basically only five jail cells in the entire jail. Other than Zhang Yang's cell, there was only one more cell that held someone in it, the other jail cells are empty at the moment. Even before looking at the name labeled on top of the head, Zhang Yang knew for sure, that it must be Honduras sitting in the next jail cell!

[Honduras The Great Trader] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 8,500

Defense: 80

This NPC seemed like a 40 years old middle age man. Although the NPC appears as a prisoner at the moment, the clothes that he wore were still fancy and grand. He had a big belly that pushed the clothes out tightly, and he had that look of a rich, crooked, trader! He looked at Zhang Yang and turned his face over, sighed like he was having a real bad luck, frowning very hard.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Honduras, what devilish deed have you ever done to deserve such treatment? I only mentioned about looking for you at the front of the castle and I have been put here without any chance

to plead for myself!"

Honduras turned over to Zhang Yang, looked at Zhang Yang more closely and said, "You were looking for me? Do I know you?"

"I heard that you have made a purchase of a [Millennial Heroic Soul], and I would like to make a purchase of that item from you. That's the main reason for me to travel all the way from White Jade Castle to look for you." Zhang Yang expressed his real intentions to Honduras, "Allow me to introduce myself, I'm Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

"An adventurer?" Honduras looked at Zhang Yang for awhile in silence, and suddenly, his eyes were widened and he was pleading for help like a person that was about to drown pulling on a grass, "Zhan Yu! Please help me! If you can get me out of here, I will give the [Millennial Heroic Soul] to you for free! Real, for free!"

After waiting for awhile, there was no sign of any notification from the system. Zhang Yang felt weird about not receiving any notifications!

He could only follow the script to uncover the truth behind all these. So, he took out his [Goblin's Head Lobber] that he had kept in his backpack for awhile, ready to throw a powerful swing at the door to the jail cell.

"Stop ---" Honduras quickly stopped him, "Adventurer, let's not be hasty! If it's that simple to leave this place, I could have left anytime I want!" As he was speaking, a bunch of shiny keys appeared right on his hand as he took them up and shook them in front of Zhang Yang.

Chapter 373: Rescuing Winchester

Zhang Yang was shocked to see the keys, "How did you manage to get the keys to the jail cell?"

"Haha, my friend! You have underestimated the power of gold and coins!" Honduras laughed hard, but he quickly frowned again and said, "I can escape, but my daughter, Adele will suffer a worse fate. And I have only one daughter, nothing must happen to her!"

It was actually unbelievable to see this crooked trader turning out to be a good loving father.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Then, how can I help in such regard?"

Honduras sat down and began to explain, "Let me tell you the entire story from the beginning till the end!" He paused for awhile, trying to find the best way to tell the story, and finally began. "I, Honduras, am the best trader there is in Kullia Castle, and also the richest man! 20 years ago, I married the prettiest girl in Kullia's Castle, haha! Every man in the city envied me! No exception!"

Zhang Yang laughed and reminded Honduras to get back to the topic, "Honduras, just before you get way over your head, kindly consider the current situation that you're in right now!"

Honduras was shocked and he went into silence for a moment, and then he lowered his head down with his hands on his ears and said, "Although I am all wealthy, all that wealth could not save my wife from disease! 3 years ago, my wife had left me and my precious Adele and went on to meet the gods in the heaven, all on her own. And now, Adele is the only family I have left, she is all that I have left of my life! A few months ago, the younger brother of the baron of Killia Castle proposed, saying that he wanted to marry my Adele and take her away! This Winchester is already same age as me, and he still dares to marry my daughter!"

He punched the ground revealing his raging face, "3 days ago, Winchester went out on an expedition and was ambushed by demons. Ever since then, there was no news about his whereabouts, at all! Back

here, Leonardo accused me of making a deal with the demons and betraying Winchester! That's his intention, his scheme all along! He wants to take my Adele, and my property from me, so he framed me on purpose!"

Is this the game-version of the governor versus the rich?

Zhang Yang then reacted, "Honduras, so you need my help to prove your innocence, right?"

"That's right!" Honduras nodded and said, "If I'm all on my own, I can just leave everything behind and get a new fresh start in other places! But my Adele is still here! And she visited, and told me that the prick Leonardo threatened her with my life, and wanted her to marry him! Pui! Luckily my daughter is bright and rejected him. If not, I would have died of a heart attack! If I am to die and he manages to marry my daughter, then all my wealth would go to him! Every single dime!"

Honduras paused for a moment again to reorganize his words, "Leonardo has placed people to monitor Adele, and she has no chance at all of leaving this city! So there it is, my warrior, this is why I must prove myself innocent and walk out of here, upright! I will not pull my daughter down to mud! My precious daughter!"

Then he looked at Zhang Yang and said, "And, I don't believe that this Winchester would die so easily! He's a great warrior, a strong one! Demons will not stand a chance against him! Warrior, I require you to look up for Winchester and bring him back! If Winchester lives to come back and tell the truth, that will definitely prove my innocence! Also, I suspect that this prick Leonardo is the traitor who betrayed Winchester because it's been so long since he wanted to become the baron to this castle!"

'Ding! Honduras has given you a quest: Rescuing Winchester, accept or decline?"

Obviously, to get the [Millennial Heroic Soul], Zhang Yang had to get Honduras out of the jail. So to get him out of the jail, he must first find Winchester. And he knew, he cannot skip or take shortcuts on this, he must do the quest step by step.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and accepted the quest. Nothing comes by easy, no shortcuts!

[Rescuing Winchester] (Quest Difficulty: A)

Description: Winchester has been ambushed by the demons and his whereabouts remains unknown. You must quickly find him and bring him back to Killua Castle to prove Honduras's innocence!

Hint: Winchester was ambushed by the Malin Bridge, there might be some clues left there. Malin Bridge is located on the east side of the Killua Castle.

Completion: Rescue Winchester 0/1

Honduras passed the bunch of keys over to Zhang Yang, "Adventurer, I'm counting on you!"

Zhang Yang took the keys over, opened up the door to the jail cell and passed the keys back to Honduras, "Just sit tight and wait for the good news!"

He walked out of the jail like a boss, and it was obvious that the game system did not plan for players to engage in battle in the city area, so there were no guards at all at the entrance of the prison. Zhang Yang summoned out his Whitey and left the premises in pride.

The guards by the entrance of the Kullia Castle had already changed their shifts, so the new guards did not recognize Zhang Yang. So, they did not stop or interrogate Zhang Yang as he was passed through the main gates of the castle.

After leaving the castle, Zhang Yang headed east for about half an hour, and then he saw a stream of rapid rivers. The water current was rapid and strong, and the sound of the water flowing, was loud and clear as a waterfall. He searched by the two sides of the river and discovered that there was a visible bridge not far from where he stood. He patted Whitey's head and headed over to the bridge.

No long after, he arrived at the bridge, and all he could find were the dead bodies of some humans and some demons where limbs had been

torn apart, the scene was just bloody disgusting! The red blood belonged to the dead humans while the black blood belonged to the dead demons.

From the abandoned, dead, torn up bodies and weapons in the surrounding, the battle between Winchester and the demons had begun right on top of the bridge, and the battle went on to the small forest by the east side. As Zhang Yang followed the trail, the amount of blood splashes on the ground was getting lesser and lesser. That could only mean that the battle was about to end at that location.

After just a brief moment of walking, there was no longer any sign of blood on the ground, but there were signs of footprints walking straight into the thick forest, right before Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang went straight into the forest, following the trails and signs there were left behind, hoping that he was getting closer to Winchester.

About half an hour later, Zhang Yang arrived at a small mountain ridge, and following the mountain ridge forward, he could see dozens of demons wandering at the entrance of a cave, as they were growling and giving out who-knows-what sounds.

Was Winchester in that cave, waiting for someone to rescue him?

Zhang Yang asked himself that as he approached the bunch of demons.

[Raging Void Dweller] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 83

HP: 83,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the Raging Void Dweller at the upper-most side among the horde. But as soon as the attack landed on the monster with a '-2,914' damage, the rest of horde suddenly charged over at Zhang Yang, obviously, the aggro of the monsters were linked!

He quickly moved in strategical movements, while kiting the monsters around. With his skills {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Striker}, {Heroic Leap} in restricting the movement of the monsters, he took his own sweet time to

slowly torture them to death.

In less than 5 minutes, the horde of Raging Void Dwellers had fallen under the axe of Zhang Yang.

After picking up all the loot on the ground, he went up to the entrance to see if Winchester was in the cave.

There was a middle-aged man with a deep wound in his abdomen, standing with his sword. The man was sturdy and tall, with a stern and frosty face of a superior that looked regal! Even after he witnessed Zhang Yang slaying all the monsters one after another, he did not lower his guard down against Zhang Yang. He was still gazing at Zhang Yang vigilantly, like he was afraid that Zhang Yang was trying to trick him by slaying his own fellow monsters before giving him a final, fatal blow!

[Winchester] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 86

HP: 10,233/ 1,720,000

Defense: 1,500

"You're Winchester, right?" Zhang Yang began to talk to the man, "I received news from Honduras that you were ambushed not long ago, so I have been sent here to aid you!"

Winchester looked at Zhang Yang with doubt and asked, "Honduras? Why would he send you here to help me? He and I are not really friends to each other, we hardly know each other!"

Zhang Yang said, "Ever since you were ambushed by the demons, a man named Leonardo had accused Honduras of making a deal with the demons to betray you. So now he's being imprisoned! To prove his own innocence, he would like me to escort you back safely, alive to clear his name!"

"That little piece of prick Leonardo! Curse that sun of the beach!" Winchester suddenly let out an outburst of anger, his eyes were ignited with murderous aura, "That bastard, he could actually make a deal with the demons to betray his own brother, his own blood brother!"

He looked at Zhang Yang once again with much lesser vigilance, "Warrior, I'm badly wounded, and I am even struggling just to stay awake, barely... I cannot engage in any battle at the moment, at all! If we are to return back to Kullia Castle now, Leonardo will definitely take the advantage of this and attempt to murder me, then he will just find another man to carry the crime --- such as yourself!"

Zhang Yang followed the script and asked, "Then, what do we do?"

"So now we must heal me from my wounds before we can take on that bastard Leonardo!" Winchester said, "I have been inflicted with the demon's venom, only the purest blood, the unicorn's [Blood of Purity] can cure the demon's venom! Warrior, please help me, bring me a bottle of the unicorn's fresh blood."

'Ding! Winchester has given you a quest: Blood of Purity, accept or decline?'

Accept.

"Warrior, you must hurry, the demon's venom is spreading, eating through my flesh as we speak. I can't hold on much longer!" Winchester was struggling to finish his words.

"Rest assure, I will bring you the fresh blood of the unicorn in time!"

"I shall leave everything to you."

After leaving the cave, Zhang Yang mounted onto Whitey and he brought up the quest list to check on the new quest given to him. He checked to see if there were any hints on the location of Unicorns.

[Blood of Purity] (Difficulty: A)

Description: Winchester requires you to bring him a bottle of [Blood of Purity] from a unicorn to purify him of the demon's venom! You can find Ai Carlo The Unicorn in The Valley of the Wind by the south side of the forest.

Completion: Acquire the unicorn's [Blood of Purity] 0/1

With a specific direction to go to, things became simple and easy!

Zhang Yang went towards the south direction on Whitey for two long hours before he arrived at a large valley. There were huge trees that were outstretched to the heavens, all around the valley, and there was a lake right in the middle of the area. The lake wasn't big, and the surface of the lake rippled constantly, making the scene beautiful to look at.

However, searching for a unicorn in this valley would still be like searching a needle in a haystack, even after he reaches the location stated in the quest description! It's just extremely annoying and hard!

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and decided to stay in one spot, to wait for the unicorn to come to him naturally!

It would obviously be unrealistic and stupid for him to search the entire valley for the unicorn. And it would make sense that an animal, beast or no beast, would need to drink, because water is essential to every living being! So, all he needed to do is to just sit nearby the lake and wait for the unicorn to come forth for the water! So it's just a matter of time before that happens!

After making that decision to stay put, Zhang Yang is in no rush. So he rode on Whitey and began to wander around the lake to see if he could discover anything interesting while he was waiting.

As he was currently free and doing nothing, and there were many herbs around available for picking, he decided to do something useful with his free time. Since he is in a 'treasure trove', why not make the best out of it and gather some herbs?

Chapter 374: Unicorn

After wandering across half the lake, Zhang Yang spotted a white shadow flashing by his eyes. It was a extremely handsome white horse, as pale as lightning, arriving at the side of the lake. The horse lowered it's head down to the surface of the lake and began to drink the water. The hair all around the body of the horse was so white and glossy that it glimmered in the light, enunciating every muscle, every defined curved of its body, it was an enchanting sight!

Most importantly of all, there was a single horn that was about half a foot long on top of its forehead. The horn was sharp as a spear, giving off gleams of cold light!

[Ai Carlo The Unicorn] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Finally, found it!

Zhang Yang was so delighted after he spotted the unicorn, because other than this quest which required him to search for [Blood of Purity], he still had a quest - 'Materials for the Instrument', a Main Story Quest which he accepted when he was Level10. The quest required him to get a [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn], [Heart of the Black Dragon], and the [Book of the Damned] of the undead!

For the [Book of the Damned], he could only get it when he can enter the Chaos Realm, where he can equip the [Friendship Jade] and wade over through the homeland of the undead and summon his fellow party members over to walk in and 'steal' it! If he can get his hands on one [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn], then he would only need to worry about finding the final item, the [Heart of the Black Dragon]!

In just an instant, a quest that seemed impossible to complete was just one step from being completed now!

But, Zhang Yang could not understand some part of it. A Mythical Unicorn should be at least a Level 150 super boss! That would mean that this kind of boss would be, at least, an Ethereal grade, how can it just be a Level 85 elite beast! It's just not right at all!

Well, with that in mind, Zhang Yang still rode on Whitey and charged towards the unicorn.

It only takes around ten to twenty seconds to charge through a distance of a hundred meters atop Whitey. In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang has already arrived the side of the unicorn. Shoof! Whitey began to use {Wild Charge} and slammed solidly onto the body of Ai Carlo!

One second later, Ai Carlo recovered from the stun effect and turned its sharp and pointy horn towards Zhang Yang. It began to defend itself and swung its horn at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

It was just a Level 85 Elite anyway, Zhang Yang can subdue this beast with ease!

"Human, why are you attacking me!" Ai Carlo suddenly opened its mouth and began to speak like a human, in human language.

Zhang Yang was shocked, so that's why they are called Mythical Creatures because they can speak human language! That's why they were graded higher than Elite! He spun his sharp axe around and said, "I need a drop of your blood to save a man, if you can just stand still and let me get just one drop of your blood, I will spare you!"

Ai Carlo let out a roar of rage as if it was heavenly insulted! The horn right on its forehead began to glow vaguely as Ai Carlo launched its assaults at Zhang Yang.

The battle grew fierce for a moment as they continued to attack each other in a blaze!

80%, 50%, 20%... the health bar of Ai Carlo was reduced steeply under the oppressive assaults from Zhang Yang.

"Human, stop!"

A stream of white light suddenly shot from the forest nearby the lake. As swift as a sudden clap of thunder which leaves no time for covering ears, it landed on Zhang Yang and formed into a large ball of shield that trapped him within! This ball of shield is very strong and infinitely tough! No matter how Zhang Yang tried to break it with his powerful strikes, the shield could not be even scratched!

Well, you can't expect such a quest to be completed so easily after all! God damn it!

Zhang Yang gave up on struggling and turned his sight towards the direction where the light came from.

Dozens of elven beauties walked right out from the forest. One of them held a staff in her hand, wearing a snowy-white long dress of a priest. The rest of the elves were holding swords in their hands, and they had bows and arrows hanging by their backs. All of them had really short leather skirts around their waists, revealing much of their fair limbs, looking very sexy.

Zhang Yang only focused his eyes upon the spellcaster type NPC that was walking in front of them all, "Priestess Thea - Moon Glory?"

This was the NPC that Zhang Yang met earlier on when he had rescued 'Merlinda - Song of the Forest'. During that quest, she had become the ancient priest of the elves! So, according to the story of the game after that quest, she should have brought Merlinda and traveled back to the Chaos Realm to let Merlinda to carry on as the new Moon Priestess. So the question is, why is she here?

Could it be that... that the princess had been held captive by someone or some monsters again?

Thea pointed her staff and touched Zhang Yang gently, and the spherical shield disappeared almost in an instant and Zhang Yang regained his freedom. She began to talk, "Warrior, please don't hurt Ai Carlo!" She waved her staff again and touched Ai Carlo very gently. A stream of white light surged through the unicorn and Ai Carlo's health

points recovered swiftly.

Meanwhile, that unicorn was staring at Zhang Yang with unease, and it pawed it's hooves against the ground for awhile, while puffing out streams of air from its nose. It was obvious that it was still angry at Zhang Yang! Well, it's understandable. If someone takes a knife and poke your ass while you're drinking water by the lake, wouldn't you feel mad about it? At least, that's what Zhang Yang thought to himself.

So Zhang Yang ignored that unicorn and turned his attention towards Thea, "Priestess Thea, haven't you all returned to the Chaos Realm already? Why are you still here?"

Thea let out a soft sigh, "As we were passing by this valley, it was not our intention of stopping by, but as Merlinda noticed that Ai Carlo's mother was being rounded up and attacked by a horde of demons, she put herself into battle. Although we managed to fend off the demons, she was badly wounded and she's on the verge of losing her life!"

Ai Carlo revealed a sense of guilt on its face just like any human can, "If Merlinda did not shield me from a powerful blow, then she would still be alright now. Now, she's dying because of me! If only I was full-grown, then mother would not have to stay to protect me, and Merlinda would not have been wounded so badly because of me!"

As expected! That woman is nothing but trouble, no matter where she goes! Although she is not being held captive by anyone this time, she is suffering a worse fate than that, she's about to lose her own pitiful life! However, the doubt that Zhang Yang had in him had been cleared out. No wonder Ai Carlo is just a Level 85 elite beast, because it has still not yet grown to adulthood!

So, that's why it's named 'Ai Carlo The Unicorn' but not, 'Ai Carlo The Mythical Unicorn'.

Zhang Yang quickly said, "Priestess Thea, can't you save Merlinda with your heavenly skills?"

"She's wounded too badly!" Thea shook her head and revealed a helpless expression on her face, "I have already sent men to search for the

[Fountain of Life]. Only a relic item such as that can really heal Merlinda! Zhan Yu, it's not a coincidence that you appear here today! You're a great and powerful warrior, a mysterious adventurer! Please aid us in search of the [Fountain of Life]!"

'Ding! Priestess Thea - Moon Glory has given you a quest: The Search for Fountain of Life, accept or decline?'

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to pause for a moment, this so-called [Fountain of Life], is it the same thing as the hundred over bottles that are now laying quietly in his backpack? Is it the same thing as the thousands of bottles that are stored in his guild warehouse?

So he accepted the quest to check on it, "Priestess Thea, I'm a friend of Merlinda, I will not sit by and do nothing!"

[The Search for Fountain of Life] (Difficulty: A)

Description: The new Moon Priestess, Moon Priestess, Merlinda - Song of the Forest has been badly wounded and in desperate need of [Fountain of Life] to heal her. Brave Warrior, please depart immediately! You can find the [Fountain of Life] by The Valley of the Miracle within the south site of the forest. Please be cautious, powerful creatures are probably guarding this kind of miraculous fountain. It would be wise to bring along some friends. Of course, bring along some empty bottles as containers, or else you will not be able to bring it back, even after you defeated the powerful creatures around! You can acquire the empty bottles from the Alchemy Shop.

Completion: Acquire a bottle of [Fountain of Life] 1/1

Huh? It actually works!

"Warrior, thank you!" Thea thanked Zhang Yang with all her heart.

Zhang Yang took out a bottle of the [Fountain of Life] and passed it over, "Priestess Thea, I have acquired some mysterious items thorough my adventure! Rumor says, that this bottle of [Fountain of Life] has unbelievable ability to heal life. You can try to use it on Merlinda's wound and see if this works for her!"

Thea revealed a sense of disbelief on her face and took the bottles into her hands, as she popped the cap opened and took a sniff, she was so delighted with shock and joy at the same time, "Warrior, you are really an amazing person! This is the [Fountain of Life]! This is indeed the [Fountain of Life]!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Search for Fountain of Life, acquired 3,000,000 experience points!’

... this is the easiest quest that Zhang Yang had come across in his entire time in the game, and the fastest one to complete as well!

"Come, let us go to Merlinda at once! I wonder if one bottle is enough to cure her!" Thea quickly rushed into the forest. Wait a minute, her words shook Zhang Yang for awhile. If he was to go through all the trouble, come back and had to go back to the fountain to get more, that would just be annoying! But now that he still had hundreds of bottles in his backpack, there was no need to worry at all!

Ai Carlo stared at Zhang Yang without even blinking, "Human, although you hurt me before, but you have cured Merlinda, and you're a friend of hers, I will not hate you any longer. Besides, if that bottle of [Fountain of Life] can really cure her, I will give a bottle of my blood to you as a token of gratitude!"

After finished talking, it turned around and followed Thea and the others and went into the forest as well.

Zhang Yang began to have thoughts, should he torture and slay this tiny young beast before it hits adulthood? If he waits for this little beast to grow into an Ethereal-grade boss, then he shall have lots of trouble fighting it in the future if their paths cross!

Zhang Yang was conflicted with his own good and evil thoughts in his mind, while riding on Whitey, following those NPCs from behind. After passing through a few layers of trees and bushes, they arrived at the temporary camp site. There were hundreds of tents set up within the premises.

Thea went into one of the tents with the [Fountain of Life], but the tent

she went into was a little smaller than the others. The tent could only fit a few people inside, plus there were a bunch of guards staring at Zhang Yang with those vigilant eyes of theirs. So he knew it would be impossible for him to enter the tent.

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

After awhile, white lights were flashing out from the tent and in another brief moment, Thea walked out from the tent, followed by a female elf with pointy ears, with round and a prominent pair of boobs, a curvy waist wrapped in tight clothes. That's Merlinda!

"Merlinda, you're well again!" Ai Carlo cheered in joy and went up to the side of Merlinda. And what happened next was Ai Carlo burying its head in between Merlinda's two round and prideful pair of boobs!

Legends say, unicorns are the symbol of purity, and they will only get near to kind souls of virgins! But what Zhang Yang just witnessed was that this unicorn with that horn on the fore head, was definitely a horny creature! And just by looking at where the head was shoved into, it's indeed the symbol of the 'purest' that picks only virgins, as virgins are clean and untouched!

Merlinda filled her face with a smile and hugged the neck of Ai Carlo gently, "Thank goodness you're safe, Ai Carlo!"

After the girl and the unicorn had a warm reunion, Merlinda turned her attention towards Zhang Yang with her pair of shy eyes, "Zhan Yu, you have once again saved me!"

'Ding! Your relationship with Merlinda has increased!'

Increased further? Is the system going to put him into an actual relationship with an NPC?

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed, it's just a coincidence! For so many times when Merlinda's in trouble, he was the one who helped her. The number of times of him helping her has qualified him to be her personal knight!

He simply said, "It's my greatest honor to be able to serve the great

Moon Priest!"

Just by Merlinda's side, there are Thea and the Elvish warriors lining up to become her personal knight! Zhang Yang would not want to get ganged up and beaten up by them for trying to take up that place! However, does this mission only increase the relationship with Merlinda? Although Zhang Yang did not have to put much effort into it, but this is an A-rank quest after all, so there must be some reward that would make things worthwhile, right?

Merlinda gave Zhang Yang a pleasant smile and said, "I have never imagined that I would see you here! Zhan Yu, you improve in god speed, I believe I will see you play an outstanding role in the literary world of Chaos Realm and become a legend. Everyone will sing your names in songs and poems!"

Ai Carlo then took a few steps forward to Zhang Yang and said, "Human, I promised that I would give you a bottle of my blood if you can save Merlinda's life."

Merlinda heard about what had happened previously and she was shocked, "Zhan Yu, why did you hurt poor Ai Carlo?"

Zhang Yang explained himself, "I have a friend who is inflicted with the demon's poison, and only the purest blood of a unicorn can cure him of it. So, I can only apologize to Air Carlo for what I did earlier on."

"Come on!" Ai Carlo closed its eyes and raised its rump at Zhang Yang, ready to be poked! For the blood of course.

What the hell! Of all parts, why must it be the butt? It did not matter much, as long as Zhang Yang could get the bottle of [Blood of Purity] back to cure Winchester.

Zhang Yang took out his [Dark Enigma Sword], because it will be more convenient to use a sword when it comes to pricking for blood. He emptied out a bottle of potion and served the bottle as the container for the unicorn blood. After getting enough fresh blood of the unicorn, ZHANG Yang looked at Ai Carlo for a moment and saw the unicorn's miserable face as if it was suffering excruciating pain. He thought to himself, that he

was really lucky that the unicorn did not kick him with its back legs!

Suddenly, a thought passed by Zhang Yang's mind. As Ai Carlo is still a youngling of a unicorn, so it is basically still not yet 'Mythical'. Even if he kills it and cuts the horn off, it would not mean a thing! But the mother of this beast was a real Mythical Unicorn, and since she is dead, the horn would serve no purpose by just being left there. It would only be a god damn waste!

Zhang Yang walked up to Merlinda and asked, "Do you know where did they bury Ai Carlo's mother?"

Merlinda was shocked, "Zhan Yu, you are not trying to take advantage of the body of Ai Carlo's mother, are you?"

Bingo! Clever! But, if she's really so clever in guessing things, why is she still getting caught by bad people for so many times?

Zhang Yang told her with just, "How could that be possible, I just want to pay my respects to the mother!"

Merlinda bought his words and told him where the body was buried.

Ai Carlo's mother was buried within a forest in the valley, not far from the forest. After everyone had paid their respects, Thea gave the order to depart from the valley. Most probably, she could smell the electrical current between Zhang Yang and Merlinda. On the other hand, Ai Carlo hated Zhang Yang very much and couldn't wait to leave that man behind so that Merlinda would only focus her love on itself. Pretty obvious, by just looking at how the young unicorn stared at Zhang Yang every single time.

After bidding farewell to the elves and waiting for them to remove themselves from his view, Zhang Yang quickly took out his [Goblin's Head Lobber] and used it as a tool to dig, then he began to dig the ground.

In just awhile, he finally dug out the deadly wounded body of the Mythical unicorn. The body was pure white even though it's already dead, and the horn on its forehead reaches up to 2 feet long. There was some blood stain on it, black blood, should those be from the demons themselves!

"I'm really sorry, please rest in peace. Please forgive me, please forgive me..." He repeatedly apologized for what he was doing to a dead body.

Zhang Yang then cut off the horn of the Mythical Unicorn and shoved it into his backpack. As he did that, the quest assistance taskbar showed that under the 'Materials for Making the Instrument', the [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn] has been obtained, leaving the mission to be completed by 1/3!

He then quickly buried back the body of the dead mythical unicorn and destroyed any evidence of him digging up the grave. Or else, it would certainly be a 'great' news that will definitely reduce the relationship between him and Merlinda, if she ever finds out about this! Ai Carlo will definitely challenge him to a death battle! That's its mother, no matter what!

Riding on Whitey, Zhang Yang left the 'crime' scene and went back straight to Winchester. After curing Winchester, he should be able to bring the NPC back to Killua Castle and rescue Honduras, to get the [Millennial Heroic Soul]. By then, he should be able to unseal the first magic circle seal of the sword hilt!

So, after having him go around in a big circle, this mysterious sword hilt better be some kind of a heavenly weapon or equipment, if not, it would have made Zhang Yang look like a fool, going through all sorts of annoying troubles!

Chapter 375: Returning to Kullia Castle

Charging all the way back like a thunderbolt, Zhang Yang arrived back at the cave where Winchester was resting by.

Fortunately, the NPC was still there. Zhang Yang was very worried that the demons would have launched their assaults on poor Winchester after he left, and they might kill him just like that, and Zhang Yang would have failed the quest!

"Warrior, you return so soon! Good news or bad news?" Winchester looked at Zhang Yang suspiciously. Following the normal quest flow, players should have located the unicorn first, activated the side quest where players need to go on searching for the [Fountain of Life], before finally returning here. So, it should be impossible for players to return in such short period of time.

Zhang Yang took out the [Blood of Purity] and passed it to Winchester, "Let's cure the demon's venom coursing through your veins first!"

Winchester took the bottle and popped the cap open to have a smell of it, and then only he was relieved, like he just put down a very heavy burden off his shoulder, "Looks like I made the right choice to trust you, you are indeed a capable man, with a good soul!"

He took off the clothes on his abdomen, which revealed a very deep and obvious wound. The wound was extremely deep, as anyone could vaguely see that his intestines were about to pop right out from the wound! What was even scarier was that, there were dark colored tissue and skin all over the wound, obviously, they were signs of the demon's venom spreading into his body!

Fortunately, Winchester was a major character in the game, or else, anyone inflicted with this kind of venom would have been dead long ago!

Winchester poured the [Blood of Purity] onto his wound and in an instant, a stream of pure holy light channeled through the wound, followed by an unholy stench in the cave. Drops of dark liquid were dripping rapidly out from the wound, as they were purified by the [Blood

of Purity], and turned into ashes when they touched the ground.

The process took exactly 3 minutes before the wound of Winchester was completely healed. He was finally cured of the demon's venom and ready to go back with Zhang Yang!

Winchester laughed and turned to Zhang Yang, "Warrior, do you have something to eat? I'm hungry!"

If he could ask for food, that should mean he is all cured from the venom, already!

Zhang Yang took out some snacks from his backpack and passed them over to Winchester.

After Winchester took the snacks, he chewed everything and swallowed them down like a hungry wolf. His health points were recovering back as Zhang Yang stared at it with his own eyes!

So basically, the [Snacks] that Zhang Yang gave the NPC would not heal the health points immediately, it should work by healing 50,000 health points within 20 seconds. So if this NPC needed to heal himself back to full health state, that would require him to take about 30 to 40 [Snacks]! But such characters in the game could not be measured based on the basic rules of the game. Winchester only took 3 [Snacks,] and his health was already back to full.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Blood of the Purity. Obtained 3,000,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have acquired a reward: Ring of Hope!'

[Ring of Hope] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +67

Strength: +61

Equip: 1% rate to recover 1,000 health points when hitting your target.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

It was not too bad at the least, this quest has given Zhang Yang a reward, although it was just a Yellow-Gold grade equipment. But it has always been harder to acquire rings, necklaces, and accessories in this game. So, this [Ring of Hope] should cost a substantial amount. If he meets some rich buyers, he can definitely sell it out at a price that is higher than any of the regular Violet-Platinum equipment pieces!

Winchester walked out of the cave and looked in the general direction of the Killua Castle, "Warrior, let us travel back to Killua Castle together, and give a big 'surprise' to Leonardo!"

'Ding! Winchester has given you a quest: Return to Kullia Castle, accept or decline?'

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I believe Leonardo will definitely have to pick his eyes and jaw off the ground when he sees you!"

"Hahaha!" Winchester laughed together with Zhang Yang.

[Return to Kullia Castle] (Difficulty: A)

Description: Winchester wants you to travel with him back to Kullia Castle. Caution, Leonardo will definitely not admit defeat so easily. He will be doing everything in his power to kill Winchester. Warrior, you must protect Winchester and make sure that he returns to Kullia Castle in one piece!

Completion: Escort Winchester back to Kullia Castle 0/1

Winchester is a Yellow-Gold boss, so it was actually very hard to tell, who is escorting who now!

After coming out from the cave, Winchester summoned a handsome horse that neighed loudly in pride. This magnificent black [Battle Horse] let out a powerful puff, and took off towards the direction of Kullia Castle like a black thunderbolt.

Zhang Yang did not dare to be left behind as he must make sure that Winchester reaches the castle in one piece. So, he also summoned his Whitey and pursued Winchester from behind.

A horse and a bear charged forward at lightning speed, everything else around seemed to be flowing backward and the wind from the front was really strong, blowing their faces to the point that Zhang Yang could feel his tongue coming right out from his mouth and his saliva dripping! After just awhile, they already had the sight of Kullia Castle in their view! They were already not far from there!

Shoof!

Suddenly, tens of arrows were shot out right from rocks from both sides, left and right. The arrows pierced through the air sharply as they flew towards Zhang Yang and Winchester!

‘-434!’

‘-3,512!’

Zhang Yang and Winchester were hit by the arrows, and they were both inflicted with damage. However, the defense and the damage immunity of Zhang Yang has far exceeded the Level 80 Yellow-Gold boss! Winchester was inflicted with a damage of approximately 3,500, while Zhang Yang was only inflicted a damage of not more than 500 points!

"Hahaha! Winchester! I predicted that you wouldn't die so easily! Sir Leonardo sent me over to stand guard at this location until you show yourself here!" a man with a two-handed sword jumped right out from behind the rock and shouted at Winchester.

[DiCaprio] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of the Seven Generals serving Leonardo.

"Humph! One of the dogs of Leonardo! When did you get the courage to show your sword right before me!" Winchester did not hold himself back as well, not even looking at his opponent.

DiCaprio was enraged and he cried out loud, "Winchester! You are

nothing but a weeping dog who weeps in failures! What is there to be proud of! Brothers! Kill these two men!"

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Another wave of arrows flew from behind the rocks at the two of them, Zhang Yang and Winchester!

"Warrior! Let us clear out these annoying pests first!" Winchester smiled and let out a laugh, and then he rode on his horse and leaped over the rocks.

This horse is obviously a [Battle Horse], as Winchester is on the horse, but could pull out the sword from his back and swing it around. In almost an instant, splashes of fresh blood were visible, and countless miserable cries were heard from behind the rocks.

Zhang Yang could not just stand aside and show that he could do nothing, so he immediately patted on Whitey's head and charged to the other side of the rocks. Then, he launched his fierce assaults at the soldiers that had let loose the arrows at him earlier on! These soldiers were all Level 83 elites. After encountering Zhang Yang and Winchester in close quarters, they began to abandon their bows and arrows and pull out their swords from the sword hilts tied to their waists to engage in melee battle!

"Winchester! Your time is over! If you were clever enough to hide your real name and stay quiet in the dark, you might have had the chance to leave out your remaining days quietly! But now, you have only one choice, death! I will not let you destroy Sir Leonardo's magnificent plan!" DiCaprio swung his two-handed sword over his head, at Winchester.

"Hahaha, if Leonardo is so capable of doing everything, then why does he need to make a deal with the demons to ambush me! Humph! For power, he would rather sell his own soul to the demons. To pass the title 'Baron' to a traitor like that, no doubt, the entire castle and the people in it will suffer a fate far worse than being burnt alive!"

As their truth and beliefs were not on the same page, the two Yellow-Gold bosses began to engage into a fierce battle.

Zhang Yang kited the remaining soldiers around into one spot and switched to his [Dark Enigma Sword], and then activated his {Blast Wave}!

In just less than a second, every single one of the soldiers within his attack range was inflicted with 1,000 damage points. At the same instant, the special effect of his [Dark Enigma Sword] was activated, and another two rounds of damages were inflicted upon the soldiers! When his assaults stopped, he acted, and continued to strike!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

In about two to three minutes, the soldiers were taken care of and every single one of them fell before the sharp blade of Zhang Yang and the deadly claws of Whitey.

Zhang Yang could not afford to waste his time on picking up the loot all around the ground, so he quickly flipped onto Whitey and charged towards DiCaprio, and began his full assault on the boss.

Although bosses like this DiCaprio are Yellow-Gold, the truth is, these kinds of bosses would only have a higher amount of health points, and normally would not have any deadly skills, or even any special skills that would bring devastating damages. So, this DiCaprio is only designed to only attack blindly like a wild boar. How would he able to go up against a battle against Zhang Yang and Winchester joining hands together?

In less than a minute, DiCaprio had to face his own demise and collapsed onto the ground without any chance to even moan.

This boss only dropped two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and a few pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. The two Yellow-Gold equipment were a set of leather greaves and a pair guardian's gloves.

As Violet-Platinum bosses were beginning to appear within Level 80 dungeons like a new species being discovered within a new area, it's impossible for any of the bosses to drop equipment pieces of armor set! If they did, then the value of defeating a Violet-Platinum boss would decrease!

"Pui! Traitor!" Winchester spat on the dead body of DiCaprio with

contempt, "Warrior, let's continue with our journey! But be warned, this might be the first ambush that Leonardo planted along the way back to Kullia Castle, but it will definitely not be the last one!"

The two of them rode on their [Battle Mounts] towards the direction of Kullia Castle.

As expected, after traveling for merely two to three minutes, another platoon of soldiers revealed themselves and blocked their way.

"That imbecile Decaprio, he still let these two slipped through even he brought so many men with him!" This time, the leader of the platoon was a spellcaster with a weird looking staff in his hands. He looked like a 30-year-old man, clad in a light red robe, with a face filled with disdain.

[Claudier] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Mana: 850,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of the Seven Generals serving Leonardo

So, this boss is a spellcaster type, and it would be natural that he has an army of spellcasters as his minions, and all of them were Level 83 elites. This battle will be much more difficult than the previous one. When engaging into battle with spellcaster type monsters, the defense of Zhang Yang is nullified against magic type attacks, and he cannot duck and roll to avoid most of the magic damage.

Winchester went straight up to Claudier without having second doubts.

Zhang Yang knew his own capability, so he did not kite too many monsters in one attempt to keep the situation under control. If he kited too many monsters at once, he might need to use consumption items such as [Fountain of Life] and [Healing Potion]. But it is in his best interest, that these items are to be spared until desperate times, before consuming them! Zhang Yang also let Winchester sustain some of the monsters'

attacks. Since he's an NPC and his health bar was freaking long, as long as he does not die, Zhang Yang can just 'heal' him back to his full health just by tossing some [Snacks] over to him.

After taking out every single monster around him, Zhang Yang engaged the boss battle with Claudier with the intention to aid Winchester in winning the battle!

Spellcaster type monsters were indeed impressive! In just a short amount of time, Winchester had lost about 300,000 health points after being attacked by those 'minions' of the boss! If Zhang Yang had not rushed in to help, Winchester would definitely have died upon being ganged up by Claudier and these elite-grade 'minions'!

The main reason was also that of the aggro system in the game. The boss would just engage in battle when a target is detected within the aggro range. If not, Winchester could have begun by slaying all the 'minions' first before engaging Claudier, giving him a higher chance to win the battle!

But as players join in later, it totally turns the battle tide! Zhang Yang came in and slaughtered all 'minions' that were poking around Winchester, reducing the damage received by Winchester. On the other hand, the situation had turned into hell for Claudier! Instead of overpowering Winchester in the earlier battle, now the boss is being raped by Zhang Yang and Winchester, with their continuous strikes to the point that Claudier was actually crying out miserably! Claudier's health bar was reducing like an avalanche crashing down the hill, and in just a brief moment, he knelt down in defeat.

Chapter 376: The Hunt of the Evil

Claudier had actually dropped some good items!

[Amateur God Oil: Light as Feather] (Usable)

Use: Enhances your boots, permanently increase movement speed by 10%.

[Beginner God Oil: Light as Feather] would only grant a 5% bonus movement speed. Ever since Zhang Yang and his friends had dominated the Cave of Bones, the supply for [Beginner God Oil] was able to meet up to his demands. It was by luck that Zhang Yang could finally stumble upon the [God Oil] that would grant him 10% movement speed.

The boot that Zhang Yang was wearing now had a 5% movement speed bonus. However, he was eager to put on the Titan set equipment instead. The [Amateur God Oil] would best be kept for the Titan boots instead of using it on his current one.

Besides [God Oil], the rest of the loot was not worthy of mentioning. None of the Yellow-Gold equipment in the stash was up to his standards. All of the loot were dumped into his inventory and would be sold in the Little Merchandise Shop.

The two of them proceeded forward and met with Leonardo's generals. All of them were killed separately instead of fighting them as a whole. Zhang Yang was extremely grateful that the story had set the bosses to be separate and to be killed one by one. If they were to gang up to fight together, Zhang Yang and Winchester would surely be killed without even having to lift their weapons.

Still, it was surprising, yet expected to be. After all, they were playing a game. The developers would surely have needed to provide some kind of leverage for the players to grind or to kill the boss monsters. If the developers had placed a Celestial tier boss right in Beginner's Village, how would anyone get past that?! If the bosses in the first few dungeons had the ability to kill everyone in the raid, being overpowered to an unbelievable level, who would want to continue playing such a game?

Right now, naturally, Zhang Yang was strong enough to solo a dungeon or even an S rank quest, but so strong that he could solo kill a Violet-Platinum boss. He could, but the chances of him dying would be extremely high. Zhang Yang had hoped for Leonardo to have several more generals for him to kill. Seven Yellow-Gold bosses had already dropped him a mountain of Yellow-Gold weapon. Although he had no inclination of using them himself, he wanted to get them to sell them off in his Little Merchandise Shop. The equipment could be off to players which will earn him lots of gold coins!

After a lot more hacking and slashing, the two finally arrived at Killua Castle.

"T-That's...That's Lord Winchester!" Standing at the entrance of the door was Bronoss The Ranger with his mouth gaping wide open. Surprised, delighted, and relieved, Bronoss leaped off his horse and knelt before Winchester. "Thank the gods for your safety!"

Winchester nodded. "It all thanks to this brave warrior. I could have never escaped from the demons without his help!"

Bronoss turned to Zhang Yang and raised an eye brow. His eyes widened suddenly and cried in surprise. "Didn't I throw you in prison? How did... eh? It seems I'm confused."

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Ranger, don't think too much of it. All you need to know is that, I am not with the rebels!"

"Lord Winchester. Honduras, who had betrayed and framed you were imprisoned! However, we still lack enough evidence to have him on trial! Now that you are here, you can personally identify the man that had made the deal with the demon!" said Bronoss.

Winchester sighed and shook his head. "You're wrong. Honduras was not the person that had betrayed me! The real culprit is none other but my own brother! Leonardo!"

"What!?" Bronoss jumped to his feet. His eyes lost focus as he started to tremble at the revelation.

"That's is the truth! He was the one who betrayed me! It was all for the ownership of the castle!" said Winchester. "Brunoss, as a ranger of justice, you need to make your decision now. Would you serve me, or follow the man who had made a deal with demons?"

Brunoss calmed down and stood up high and tall. His eyes were now focused and serious. There were no longer traces of fear and doubt in them. "Lord Winchester. I am yours to command, and I would never doubt you!"

"Well said. Gather every ally in the castle. We shall overthrow Leonardo's evil reign!"

"Yes, my lord!"

Brunoss the Ranger saluted Winchester and rode away towards the castle.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Return to Killua Castle. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!'

Winchester turned to look at Zhang Yang. "Warrior. We are getting closer to victory. If we fight harder, we can capture and bring Leonardo to justice!'

'Ding! Winchester has a quest for you: Hunt of the Evil. Will you accept it?'

Why do such quests always throw decisions at the players? It's not like Zhang Yang would walk away from the quest. Plus, Zhang Yang had to know what kind of rewards could he have by killing Leonardo!

[Hunt of the Evil] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Defeat Leonardo and obtain victory! Leonardo is located at the main chamber of the castle. Assist Winchester in delivering the last blow!

Participation Limit: 10 men (Shareable)

Progress: Kill Leonardo 0/1

Quest Reward: Titan's Necklace

[Titan Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +202

Strength: +58

Equip Effect: Absorbs 116 damage on attack.

Equip Effect: Grants an additional 10% aggro generation on an attack, if a shield is equipped.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang was both happy, yet sad.

The good news was that he would gain another Titan equipment. The bad news was that the equipment effect on the necklace was too bland! The additional 10% aggro generation was actually useful for other tanks! But for him, he already possessed incredible firepower which could generate enough aggro! What could he do with the 10% bonus? The boss would only attack him!

Zhang Yang sighed and accepted his fate. At least, he could secure another Titan's equipment, and that was the most important factor.

Zhang Yang noticed the quest was shareable. He immediately had an idea and quickly informed everyone else. "Yo! Come along. I've got a good quest here!"

Just as he finished talking, Zhang Yang equipped the [Party Summon Order] and summoned the part to his side.

"Noobie tank, what's so good about the quest? You summoned us so quickly, I was actually busy doing something!"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and smirked. He promptly shared the quest with everyone and was rewarded with a loud gasp.

"It's my set equipment necklace!"

"God d*mn! This is good sh*t!"

"Awesome!"

Everyone was extremely pleased. Zhang Yang's reward was the Titan's Necklace, but the rest of the party member had a different reward. Their quest reward was their own respective set equipment necklace.

"Alright guys, follow that NPC. He's our god of fortune! Cover him, and do not let him die!" said Zhang Yang pointed at Winchester who was already halfway to the castle riding his horse. Everyone promptly summoned their rides and chased after him.

"My lord!?"

"Lord Winchester!"

As Winchester ride by, the castle residence bowed down in respect to him. From afar, it seemed that Winchester was a mighty lord when he was still reigning. Without much time, everyone reached to the entrance of a big and glamorous castle.

There were eight guards that stood guard at the entrance. When they saw Winchester approaching them, Winchester was greeted with the similar surprised expression, followed by them kneeling down. "Hail the lord of the castle!"

"At ease," said Winchester with a certain noble tone to his voice. "The castle has been infiltrated by demons, no thanks to Leonardo. I want to bring justice and to punish those who had committed the crime. Everyone, to arms, and follow me into the castle, to exterminate the evil!"

The guards were confused. They thought that they had already captured the betrayer, the greedy trader, Honduras. Why and how did the betrayer title shift to Leonardo?

"Do not listen to his words!" cried a middle-aged man who shared a similar look to Winchester. The man turned to Winchester and bellowed. "This man is not a man! He is a demon who is impersonating my brother! My brother, the previous lord of the castle Winchester is already dead! This man! Is an imposter!"

[Leonardo] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 86

HP: 1,720,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: The younger brother of Winchester.

This time, Brunoss had arrived and brought along a large group of followers. He and everyone else had heard what Leonardo had just said and started to fall into a state of confusion. To their knowledge, demons were masters of deception. Winchester had been lost for a number of days! It was hard to differentiate between the real and the fake!

Winchester bellowed angrily. He pulled out his sword and raised it up, high to the sky. "I am me! Winchester Rein Alocain, son of Damian Rein Alocain! The Lord of Killua Castle and the Whisperer of Wind and Fire!"

"Demon! Stop your foolish attempt! We shall not be deceived by you!" Leonardo started down to Winchester. "Not only you have killed my brother, you have the nerve to take up his face and to mock his name! My fellow citizens, warriors of Killua Castle, kill this demon and bring peace to my brother's soul!"

Both soldiers from both sides started to accuse each other of siding themselves with the demon. Oblivious to the real truth, both sides stood at an impasse as they continued to throw slanderous words at each other.

Wei Yan Er got annoyed and stomped her feet the ground. "You bloody idiots! Are you deaf?! That guy knows that he is exposed, which has led him to start throwing the blame to the other guy as a demon in disguise! What are you still standing around for? Start killing already!"

The little brat was just adding more wood to a fire. Since she was just using pronouns instead of the actual person's name, both sides have just become more and more confused!

Winchester scoffed. "Leonardo, you and I are born with the same flesh and blood! You have always loved to have a quarrel with me at any occasion! However, you are fated to be a loser! You cannot win over me! Ever! You are my brother, and I can tolerate your wild ambitions, but this? This dream of yours to hand the castle and its people to the demons, that I

shall not permit!"

Winchester took in a deep breath. "Come at me. None shall interfere. We shall decide this ourselves!"

"As you wish! Demon!" cried Leonardo with dignity. From his tone and speech, he was careful not to confess to the identity of Winchester and would only address him as a demon.

KLANG!

Two NPC rushed towards each other and parried each other's sword strikes.

"Hmm...Something is odd. How could this quest be an S rank when the boss is only a Yellow-Gold tier..." said Zhang Yang as he sensed something was odd. The map he was in, was not the same as the previous map that he had explored. Yellow-Gold bosses were easy to defeat, and even having a Violet-Platinum boss in the quest was not enough to qualify the quest as an S rank. If that was the case, then, what's the real difficulty?

"Dummy dear. Why are you so reluctant to accept the truth? Couldn't the quest be a little easier?" said Han Ying Xue seductively.

Zhang Yang frowned. "It's not that I'm reluctant. I'm afraid that the quest might be harder than we think."

"Could there be a sudden change in the quest?" asked the party, as they stood by and witnessed the two bosses having a go at each other.

Chapter 377: Demon Portal

Both of them were cinematic NPCs, but Winchester was winning by a landslide!

By the time Winchester had over 30% HP left, he had already managed to bring Leonardo down to his knees. Victory was just a sword slash away!

"It looks like the quest WAS that easy!" everyone agreed.

"Lord Wakala! Help me!" Out of a sudden, Leonardo cried in terror.

Winchester scoffed and pointed his sword at Leonardo's throat. "Give up your foolish dreams, Leonardo. From the moment you raised your sword against humanity, you were destined to have this ending."

Winchester lifted his sword up high. When his blades fall, Leonardo's head will roll!

BOOM!

A cloud of black gas seeps out of Leonardo's body and formed a large hand that grabbed hold of the sword as it came down, stopping the blade from slicing off Leonardo's head.

Winchester was shocked. He pulled back his sword and jumped back. Horror filled his face as he screamed, "T-This...this is demonic power! Leonardo! What have you done?! You have brought a demon into the castle!?"

"Hmm...haha..HAHAHAHA!" As the situation had developed to this extent, Leonardo had no use to pretend anymore. He laughed loudly and said, "Winchester! I may never be an equal to you! You have always had the upper hand ever since we were kids! That is why I have kept a trump card against you! Lord Wakala! Reap the fruits of your victory!"

"Imbecile..." A deep husky voice was heard out of Leonardo's body. To be accurate, the voice came from the necklace that he was wearing.

Shiing!

A black light blasted off the necklace and formed a portal. A pair of eerie

red hands that looked like the claws of an eagle first reached out to grab the edges of the portal, followed closely by the face of a demon. Twin horns grew out of his forehead and a pair of bell-shaped eyes glowed with a dark flame.

"Urgh..." the demon growled as he dragged his massive body out of the portal. He had a massive body, measuring over 10 meters. A dark, bloody red colored skin and a pair of bat-like wings stuck out of his back. He also had a long devilish tail that was pointy at the end.

[Demon General Wakala] (Violet-Platinum, Demon)

Level: 88

HP: 8,800,000

Defense: 2,500

When the demon appeared, it brought along a sickening aura that awakened inner anger, causing everyone to have a strong bloodlust. They could easily kill each other for the sheer fun of it!

Until this point, the truth has not been clearer. Every NPC had pointed their weapons towards Wakala. Some were ready to start the fight, and some were trembling in fear.

The demon glanced around the field, looking down at everyone as if they were nothing but rodents waiting to be crushed. He then turned to Leonardo and spoke in a deep demonic voice. "The portal is yet to finish. You imbecile. How could you reveal everything before that!"

Wakala sighed disappointingly. "Two days! Two days! You're such a bloody waste! Such a simple task, yet you could not do it properly. You're such a disappointment."

"Lord Wakala, I am not at fault here. It's all because Winchester had suddenly shown up! I can only do so much before..."

"Excuses!" said Wakala coldly. He then turned to Winchester and smirked.

"Winchester...Winchester...Did it ever cross your mind that you will be

betrayed by your own brother! Thanks to him, I could infiltrate the castle! All of your defenses were for naught!" Wakala laughed. But his laughter was accompanied by Winchester as well!

"Hahaha...you're so wrong...Demon, you came here alone. Do you really think that you could defeat me? No matter how strong you were, you shall die right here and now! Right after I kill you, we shall prepare for a counter attack! Without you, we can easily eliminate the demon army!"

"Such boldness! Hahaha! That is indeed a good plan! But, I seem to detect a major flaw in your plan of attack. That is, I will be the one who kills you instead!" said Wakala with a sinister laugh. "I had never attacked this castle, thanks to your magic cannons. But now, what can you use against me?! Hahahaha! Furthermore, even though the Teleportation Circle has yet to be done and could not be used to do a mass transport, it could still be used at a limited capacity!"

Wakala then cast some sort of summoning skill. He thrust out his hands, causing the necklace that was hanging on Leonardo's neck to snap off and fly into his hands. Wakala murmured a few words and chanted a spell. The necklace glowed with a dark light and a black portal formed right beside him.

In no time at all, a pair of blue colored hands appeared out of the portal. Like pulling oneself out of a pool of mud, the pair of hands grabbed the side of the portal and dragged the blue body of a blue colored Floating Apparition.

Winchester cried out bravely, "Everyone! Destroy that portal! Do not let the demons into the castle, or many others will die!"

'Ding! There has been a change in your quest: Hunt of the Evil. You must complete the following: 1, Kill Wakala. 2, Destroy the demon portal within 30 minutes. 3, Winchester must stay alive throughout the ordeal. If any of the conditions are not met, the quest shall be deemed a failure!'

Everyone in Zhang Yang party received the quest changes notification. They were unable to move due to the quest cinematic sequence. Only now did they regain their mobility.

Zhang Yang immediately laid down the first command. "I will tank the boss. You guys attack the portal. If there are monsters, Endless Starlight, hold them off!"

"Roger!" Everyone nodded. Things had gone out of control.

The boss had gained a buff, restoring 4% HP every second, that would last until the portal is destroyed. Even though Sun Xin Yu and the rest had immense firepower, they could not deal a strong enough damage to cause a drop of 1% HP every second to cope with the healing buff, even with {Destructive Smash} on him. They had to destroy the portal first!

As for Leonardo, he was simply sitting by the side. Since he had been defeated by Winchester, leaving him with only one bit of HP left, he had been kneeling down by the sidelines. However, he had an invincible status effect which rendered unkillable.

Zhang Yang rushed to the front of the boss and got his attention with a {Spear of Obliteration}. The quest demanded that Winchester is to remain alive. Right then, Winchester had only over 30% HP left, which was over 500,000 HP. Facing the Violet-Platinum demon boss would put him in grave danger.

"Human! Succumb to the power of the shadow!" Wakala swiftly took out a pale silver axe and swung it hard towards Zhang Yang. The blade of the axe cut through the air, giving out a scary whistling sound! Zhang Yang tried his best to hold off the boss while diverting part of his attention towards the portal. What a troublesome boss! All Violet-Platinum bosses are like that! If he could, Zhang Yang could pace himself and carry out the fight at leisure. The problem was due to the fact that the quest demanded the portal to be destroyed within 30 minutes! 30 minutes was a long time. An S-ranked quest wasn't that kind, the portal must have a monstrous amount of HP!

[Demon Portal] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 1,000

Bloody hell! 50 million?! If it were just the rest of the party attacking, they would take roughly 20 minutes and more just to destroy the portal! That was not counting monsters that will occasionally appear from the portal! Since the party would need to invest a few seconds in defeating the monsters, they will be delayed by the monsters! There's no way that 30 minutes would be enough!

Now they understood why the quest was set to be S rank!

Zhang Yang frowned harder than he had ever frowned before. Facing such a high HP portal, {Dance of Heaven and Earth} has lost its prowess! How could they possibly damage a 50 million HP portal with just 100,000 damage?!

"F*ck it! Use all your ultis! Consume all potion that could increase your attack! Use the [Power Potion], even the ones with Grade 10 transmutation!" Zhang Yang ordered.

Everyone looked closely at the portal's HP and understood Zhang Yang's order. They knew that the quest had demanded them to perform beyond their limit. No one argued and took potions of their respective classes, and used skills that could increase their damage for a short time, and a bottle of [Power Potion]!

[Beginner Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] (Usable)

Use: Increase 20% attack power. Due to the transmutation effect, a 20% increase in attack power will be granted. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

As expected of a Grade 10 Transmutation, it had increased the potion effect by 100%!

Everyone braced themselves and use [Dance of Heaven and Earth] without even thinking twice!

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

...

Although {Dance of Heaven and Earth} was not a long-term skill, and could not have its attack increased by a player’s equipment or other levels, it could be affected by buffs and debuff of the enemy! Nine players took their potions, increased their attack power to the best they can, and used {Dance of Heaven and Earth}! Zhang Yang had even used {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}.

In just 10 seconds, the portal had received more than 2,000,000 damage! However, the damage was done with nine counts of {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and one {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}! Like a wooden sword, it cannot be used again after one simple sparring match!

The rest of the NPC were restless, as they strived to destroy the portal as well. By then, the blue colored Floating Apparition had managed to pull itself out of the portal. It immediately growled and attacked one of the NPC soldiers who was standing closest to it.

Endless Starlight then kited the monster and attacked it, along with the rest of the party. The Floating Apparition was a Level 85 elite tier monster. Once the number gets high, even Endless Starlight might have trouble tanking them. It’s best to kill them as fast as possible. With haste, the team quickly turned the monster into grind meat, giving the party a tiny bit of experience points.

When the first monster emerged out of the portal, the portal did not stop functioning. Instead, it immediately started to transport another monster. This time, it was an elite tier succubus!

Zhang Yang kited the boss as far away as he could, as Wakala would occasionally use {Tornado Cleave} which will cause more than 20,000 damage to all targets within 20 meters away from him. If the boss had not used the skill, Zhang Yang would not have kite the boss away, since no one else was attacking him! He could at least join the fight in destroying the portal and occasionally attack the boss to keep the aggro on him high.

Despite that, Zhang Yang would throw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the

portal every 10 seconds. Even though he could only deal over 3,000 damage to it, it was still damage!

"Make haste o demon's force!" cried Wakala as he opened his hands wide. A black light ray blast off his chest and onto the portal.

Instantly, the portal gained a buff. "Transport Speed Increased by 100%!"

The buff was as described. The speed of which the succubus emerged from the portal increased dramatically. Right then, more than half of her body had already come out!

Zhang Yang leaped down from his bear and commanded it to attack the portal. His HP then dropped to a staggering 76,730! Still, he had no worries of being killed by the boss! Since the boss carried a recovery buff, having the bear with him would be like slicing water with a knife! It was a pity since the battle had started abruptly. Zhang Yang had no chance to swap his battle mount to the Mythical Turtle, or else he would have gained a tremendous boost of attack power!

"Human! Give up! This world shall be ruled by the darkness! Bow down and surrender your fate to the shadow!" Wakala kept on using the same provoking sentences to Zhang Yang as he attacked.

"Do not falter over mere words, warrior! Demons are the race of deceit! Look at Leonardo! He has fallen to such a grade, for he had succumbed to the demon's temptation!" cried Winchester in response.

Zhang Yang laughed at Wakala and said, "Wakala! If you're willing to be my underling, I might even consider joining the dark side!"

"Foolish human!" Wakala bellowed angrily at Zhang Yang and smacked him with his massive palm.

"Demon! Begone! This is not your place!" cried Winchester as he stopped attacking the demon portal and attacked Wakala with a quick jab of his sword.

"Imbecile! With the power of darkness in my hands, you have but only to serve the greatness of it! Now, bow down to me!" Wakala scoffed and hurled another palm towards Winchester. With a loud thud, the demon

had managed to deal more than 16,000 damage on Winchester.

If the quest had not demanded Winchester's survivability, Zhang Yang would not have minded having one or two more extra meat shields to take the boss' attack. Instead, he could only coax Winchester to give up attacking, "Winchester, please lead the attack on the destruction of the portal! Let me handle it here! You had said it yourself, destroying the portal is the number one priority!"

Winchester spat a mouthful of blood and wiped away some of it from his lips. He glared at Wakala disgruntledly and said, "Then, I shall take your word. Warrior, you must prevail. Until we have destroyed the portal, we shall join you to defeat this evil!"

Finally, this quest NPC could work for his life!

Even though the speed of the portal transporting the demon was faster by two-fold, it was not as fast as it seemed to be. Once it got out, they would be killed by Zhang Yang's party and the NPC soldiers around. Among their attacks, Winchester and Brunoss were Yellow-Gold bosses! Even though their remaining HP was so pathetic, their attack power was as strong as before!

"Make haste O demon forces!" Wakala bellowed again as he blasted another dark ray towards the portal, increasing its speed to 200%!

As obvious as the sun in the sky, the buff could be stacked on indefinitely!

If they do not destroy it as soon as possible, the speed of which the demons were transported will be increased to the point of no return!

Chapter 378: Destroying the Portal

Time is of the essence. Right now, time is a luxury none of them had! For each passing second was vital and could not be wasted on anything else!

Zhang Yang's party had used their utmost best to damage the demon portal, and within 10 minutes, they had already dealt enough damage to hack down the portal to 56% HP! In the first 10 minutes, they had relied on their {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and Zhang Yang's {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} to deal damage. Luckily, they were not greatly affected by the monsters that were coming out of the portal!

For every passing minute, the boss would turn around and send a dark beam to the portal, and cast a {Haste}-like buff on it to add 100% of its transport speed. At the beginning of the battle, everyone was able to pace themselves, with nothing but the portal to focus on. However, after 10 minutes, the party was beginning to struggle. Before they could kill the first demon, the second demon had already come out of the portal. If this piles up, there was no longer any meaning in defeating the monsters that come out of the portal! The monster would only keep piling up before they could even kill them, and eventually overwhelm everyone.

Zhang Yang came to a final decision and said, "Ignore the monsters, let the NPC take care of the monsters. You guys handle the portal! Endless Starlight, attack the portal, unless the monsters start attacking our own party member! If the number of monster exceeds your power, activate {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Sacred Protection} to protect everyone. Both Han Ying Xue and I will pair up to use {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew} to clear everything."

"Ok boss!"

Everyone else nodded as well. Even though the situation had indeed turned south, as long as Zhang Yang did not falter, everyone would follow and steel their mentality, as if Zhang Yang was their beacon of hope!

1, 2, 3...18...46 monsters!

As the battle dragged longer and longer, the number of monster piling

up in the field increased. Since the party did not spare any time to attack the monsters, causing the monsters to attack the NPC and forming a battle of their own. Occasionally, there will be a few escapees breaking off from the crowd and attacking the party members. Endless Starlight will then kite the monster away from the party and into the crowd of NPC soldiers.

Whenever possible, he would lead them directly to Winchester and Brunoss, since the two Yellow-Gold NPC had AoE attacking skills. As long as Endless Starlight could drag the monster into their attacking range, the NPC's attack will "splash" on them and the monster's aggro will be diverted to them instead.

The number of NPC soldiers was extremely limited. Although they were also the same tier as the monster's, they could not endure the never-ending attack of the monsters that would only increase in numbers! When the battle entered the 20 minutes threshold, the NPC soldiers were nearly wiped out. The only survivors were just the two Yellow-Gold boss and seven soldiers that were at their limit.

"Boss! I can't handle this no more!" cried Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang nodded and ran towards Han Ying Xue. "Hey b*tch! Time for our show!"

"Wuuuu! If only I can combine together with noob tank to make some skill. That would be so much fun!" said Wei Yan Er enviously.

"...Yan Er, what are you always tailing Little Yang? Come and combine with me!" said Fatty Han with a tease.

"No!" Wei Yan Er rejected him instantly.

Fatty Han sulk sadly and said, "But...why?"

"You're too ugly!"

Fatty Han kept quiet.

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

A storm of snow and gale engulfed the entire battle field, damaging all monsters within the region, effectively killing them all! One by one, the elite tier demons dropped like flies, after a good aerosol spray! 30 seconds later, other than the two new demons that had just emerged out of the portal, the rest of the demons were completely wiped out.

"No! This cannot be!" Wakala bellowed angrily. "Despicable humans! I will crush you! I will obliterate you!"

The situation was so frantic that the party member had no time to be impressed at Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's paired skill. While the skill was killing all the monster, everyone had dug deep into their very souls and started attacking as fast as they could.

8%... Which was 4,000,000 HP!

While there were still demons lurking out of the from the portal, the NPC soldier were all battered up! There was no hope in depending on them to suppress the incoming demons! The battle was at a crucial stage, nearing it end! Even though 8% was a small number, it would still require almost 2 minutes for the party to destroy it! In 2 minutes time, how many demons would have already emerged out of the portal?

If they could ignore the demons and solely focus on the portal, things might be a little different!

Zhang Yang decided to act. "Everyone! Focus on the portal. Let me handle the monsters from the portal!"

He then threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards the monster that came out from the portal and shared the load of Endless Starlight and the NPC soldiers. As such, the amount of stress Zhang Yang had to handle now was immense!

2...4...10! More and more monsters were being dragged away by Zhang

Yang!

Just when the number is right, Zhang Yang activated all sort of skills!

{Blast Wave}!

{Thunder Strike}!

{Heroic Leap}!

All status effect skills were unleashed, and none were kept on standby. When he was almost killed, he would restore himself with {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} auto recovery effect!

He will stand strong!

He will not fall! Until the end!

5%...3%...1%...

"Fight on guys! We can do it! The portal is almost destroyed!" everyone cheered.

300,000! 200,000! 100,000!

BOOM!

As Wei Yan Er delivered the last strike, the portal crumbled into pieces of light which dissipated into nothingness!

"Oh yeah!"

"Don't be too happy just yet! There's still monsters and the boss!" Zhang Yang scolded the party as they started to cheer and forget about the battle they were in. They stopped cheering and started cleaning up the monsters on the field.

"Despicable! You have foiled what I have been planning for 3 years!" bellowed Wakala after the portal was reduced to nothing. As the flames grew larger and violent in his eyes, Wakala let out a deafening roar.

"DEATH TO ALL HUMANS!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "You, who have been addressing us as nothing but imbeciles. I shall give you one in return. Your grand scheme, that you have planned for 3 years had been foiled easily by a bunch of lowly humans.

Clearly, your level of intelligence is much lower than mine!"

Lost Dream laughed. "Hey yo Zhan Yu! What's with you taunting the boss?"

"Hehe, to make it even!"

Winchester walked up to the boss after defeating the last monster in the field and said, "Wakala, you have nothing to support you now! I would like to see how do you plan to walk out of this castle!"

Wakala cracked an evil smile and said, "You think a few pests could stand up against a mighty demon general?!"

"What an egotistical demon!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue and swung her giant axe towards the boss, landing the first strike, after hitting him with {Charge} first.

"Be gone to whence you came from,!" Brunoss drew his bow and fired arrows at the boss. He was a Wind Ranger, a class that was capable of both ranged and melee attacks. It was said to be a combination of both Thief and Hunter.

Now that all the monsters were cleared, it's players and NPC against one boss!

This time, the recovery buff on the boss had disappeared. He was nothing but a regular Violet-Platinum boss, with a slightly higher attack and HP! However, facing Zhang Yang and his party, what was the use having a higher attack or HP? Wakala was nothing but a piece of meat waiting to be chopped down to bits!

Right then, Zhang Yang was certain that the quest difficulty lay with the destruction of the portal. Now that they had accomplished that, the boss was nothing but a bonus that would grant them a few Violet-Platinum equipment!

Jackpot...?

90%...80%...like an open hydrant, the boss' HP dropped quickly. The attacking team consisted not only of Sun Xin Yu, but also Wei Yan Er and

the others. There were also the two Yellow-Gold bosses, Winchester and Brunoss! With such a powerful force attacking, Wakala could only delay his inevitable death! Within 3 minutes, Wakala flapped his bat-like wings crazily, flying up a few meters in the sky before slamming down with a loud crash!

"No! This...cannot...be...!" At the moment Wakala died, Leonardo stood up instantly. He then screamed like a girl being surrounded by 10 hungry wolves!

"Leonardo...what am I to do with my brother..." said Winchester, as he paced slowly towards Leonardo.

"No! Winchester! You are my brother! Your only brother! You cannot kill your own blood and flesh!" screamed Leonardo with panic and terror reflected in his eyes.

"That's where you're wrong, kiddo. My brother, Leonardo has died, a long time ago!" said Winchester with a solemn tone in his voice. He took out his sword and laid the killing blow.

With that, all conditions of the quest were met!

Winchester walked back to the crowd. He then flicked off the blood that was staining his sword before return it to its scabbard. He bowed to everyone and said, "Fellow adventurer, I give you my thanks for saving Killua Castle. You have saved the citizens of this castle from being engulfed in the shadows and rule by the demons! I, Winchester represent all people in this castle, and give you the utmost respect and gratitude!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Hunt of the Evil. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have obtained a reward: Titan's Necklace!'

Besides Zhang Yang, everyone else was wearing a long smile on their faces. The quest was extremely good, the equipment rewarded from the quest could be worn without having it Identified!

As such, the only equipment that Zhang Yang was lacking to complete the Titan set were the Titan Gauntlets and Titan Battle Boots.

"Winchester, please give the order to release Honduras!" Zhang Yang had not forgotten to complete the other quest! That was his main purpose in coming here, in the first place!

Winchester nodded and spoke to Brunoss. "Brunoss, please visit the dungeon and release Honduras from prison. That man is not only innocent, he had also contributed to this victory!"

"Yes, my lord!"

Zhang Yang hopped onto his bear and followed Brunoss to the castle dungeon.

With haste, the two of them arrived at the prison, where they met up with Honduras the trader.

"Warrior, you've succeeded?" said Honduras when he saw that Zhang Yang was with Brunoss. Zhang Yang did not look like he was being escorted back to prison, which gave Honduras hope of being released.

"Luck was on my side!" said Zhang Yang with a smile.

Brunoss then announced. "Honduras, Lord Winchester decreed that you are to be released from prison! You have risked your life to save Killua Castle! Your deeds shan't go unrewarded. My lord will see to your reward!"

"Bless the gods!" Honduras smiled till his eyes were closed tight. He then took out the keys to the prison and unlocked the door. That alone had angered Brunoss to the extent that he could pull out his bow and unleashed hell on the man.

"Oh! My baby daughter Adele! I'm coming back to you!" said Honduras, as he slid out of the prison door. Zhang Yang hurriedly chased after the man, he still owed him a Millennial Heroic Soul!

Chapter 379: Sword of Purging Devourer

Honduras ran at such speed, that Zhang Yang wondered that whether he was really true to his heart about meeting his daughter, or is that he wanted to actually skip town to get away from Zhang Yang!

Luckily, Zhang Yang's mount could keep up with anything on two feet. No matter how fast Honduras ran, Zhang Yang was always able to chase after to him. He never had to worry about losing him.

Honduras ran a good distance and turned back, only to see Zhang Yang was smirking at his futile attempt to flee. Finally giving in to his fatigue, Honduras panted and walked with a slower pace. He knows that no matter how fast he ran, he could never outrun Zhang Yang and his bear. His actions had only proved that he wanted to con Zhang Yang!

The duo finally reached a town and went around a few streets before coming to a large building.

"Master...!" Standing near the entrance were two gardeners, When the saw Honduras walking towards them, they exclaimed in surprise.

"I'm back!" Honduras nodded. "Where is my daughter!? Where is Adele?"

"The mistress is in the flower garden, sir!" said the two gardeners in unison.

"Oh! My beloved daughter Adele!" Honduras rushed to the back of the mansion. This time, he definitely missed his daughter.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins and rushed to follow him. He crossed a small river inside the mansion and came to a large flower garden, with flowers of all kinds that radiated a perfume-like fragrant scent. The place was extremely grand and pleasant, like the garden of Eden. At the side of the garden was a small stone pavement, with a small stone table and bench. Sitting sulkily alone was a beautiful little girl with lush, dark hair.

[Adele] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 81

HP: 8,100

Defense: 81

"ADELE! MY DAUGHTER! MY BABY GIRL!" cried Honduras in a melodic tone as he rushed towards Adele with his arms wide open.

"Father?! FATHER!" The sulky, solemn face disappeared, and was immediately replaced with relief and joy. She jumped down from the bench and skipped towards Honduras.

With the father and daughter reunited, the long talk started immediately. Questions about their health, places that they had been and other et ceteras popped out.

For a minute, Zhang Yang was happy for the both of them. But that did not mean that they could just leave the man's savior standing at the side! Zhang Yang moved closer and coughed softly to remind them of his presence.

Honduras ignored Zhang Yang's attempt and continued to have the father and daughter conversation with Adele. Zhang Yang had coughed even louder, yet Honduras continued to ignore Zhang Yang. On the other hand, it was Adele who took notice of Zhang Yang and broke off from her father. "I've heard. You're the hero that rescued my father! I thank you, honorable warrior Zhan Yu. Thank you for saving my father. You have my utmost gratitude."

"The honor is mine to have! I am pleased to be able to meet such a beautiful young lady," said Zhang Yang as he bowed down. He then reassumed a rude stance and turned to Honduras. "Hey. Do you want to be called a lying trader for the rest of your life? Where's my reward? I'm an adventurer, a mercenary at best. My service cannot go unrewarded."

"Aiyah! What a greedy bastard!" Honduras finally stopped pretending and revealed his true nature.

Zhang Yang was troubled, he was called a greedy person by a dishonest trader. How would Zhang Yang respond to that? In any means necessary, Zhang Yang put on a stoic stance and said, "Honduras, you gave me your

word! You will give me the Millennial Heroic Soul in exchange if your freedom! I'd say, business is all about trust! You must really want to be a dishonest trader for the rest of your life!"

"Hmph! That's where you're wrong!" said Honduras, ready to refute Zhang Yang's statement. "My words were for you to save me! My freedom was granted by Lord Winchester! Not you! You have done nothing!"

Zhang Yang could really faint from what he said. He had met a few people that he could not argue with, but to argue to this extent was extremely rare! Zhang Yang clenched his fist so tightly that he could swear that he could punch him right in his throat and be done with it. He could simply ransack the entire mansion if he wanted to! Instead, he pulled out his Goblin's Head Lobber and smirked.

"Listen here, dishonest trader, do you know the name of this axe?" said Zhang Yang with a heavy killing aura.

"...What does it have to do with this matter?" said Honduras, unfazed.

"Hm. Hm. Hm. This axe is called the Goblin's Head Lobber. I have beheaded a few monsters with this wonderful blade. Now, I could easily kill a few monsters without much trouble. Do you think I can behead a single human?"

Hoping to scare Honduras, Zhang Yang brandished his axe in front of it. However, Honduras remained unfazed. It appears that Honduras was a man who willing to take a beating than losing his fortune.

"Father, you have given your word to Mr. Zhan Yu. It's best for you to keep your word." Adele interjected. She was slightly upset and nudged her father. "Have you forgotten about mother's words? That the most important virtue is honesty!"

Adele plea got through Honduras and he started to twitch and twist. "My baby girl. Do you know how much did I spend to buy the Millennial Heroic Soul?"

Honduras sighed heavily and turned back to Zhang Yang. "Fine! I'll take it that you actually helped me out! I will give you a chance! I spent over

20,000,000 gold coins to buy that Millennial Heroic Soul. Now, you can have it for only half its initial price! For 10,000,000 gold coins, you have it! You must know this, if it's not for my daughter, I would die before I lose 10,000,000 gold coins!"

10,000,000 gold coins!?

Even though there were two more Territory had appeared, part of Thunderstorm Castle fees were earned from players that had reached Level 50 and more. Since the number of player that travel in between maps had risen, the profits had only risen continually! Just on the travel fees alone, Zhang Yang had earned more than a million gold coins on daily basis! Honestly, it was not even hard for him to fork out 10 million gold coins.

However, the main point was that, there was no quest ever that had required a player to pay 10 million gold coins! It just meant that this NPC wanted to mess with Zhang Yang!

"Father!!" Adele was already on the edge. "I have seen the accounts! That Millennial Heroic Soul had only cost you 5,000,000 gold coins!"

F*ck! He spent 5 million and plans to sell it for 10 million!? What a good trade! If it wasn't a cheat!

Honduras nearly cried. He turned back to Adele and patted her on the head. "Oh my sweet sweet Adele. Who are you supporting here?!"

"Hahahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed to a point where he was sure to have a stomach ache. "Miss Adele. I see that you're a girl of culture. In fact, if you succeeded over your father's business when you're a little older, you might actually be able to save your father from being called a dishonest trader!"

"Thank you! Respected warrior!" said Adele with a large smile on her face.

Honduras shook his head and sighed heavily. "With that attitude, you would surely be losing business! Aiyayaya! I might as well live for only a few more years. Fine! Warrior! You win. I give up. You can have the Millennial Heroic Soul for free. Just, promise me, that you'll leave here and

never come back! Don't let me catch you socializing with my baby daughter!"

"Father..." said Adele with a face blushed with the pink of a mildly abashed person.

Honduras brought Zhang Yang into his mansion and towards a hidden chamber. There, he commanded Zhang Yang to wait outside as he went in to fetch the Millennial Heroic Soul. He came out later with a red box, about the size of a regular shoe box.

"Here. Take it. Inside this box, is the Millennial Heroic Soul. Now, leave. Don't let me catch you doing any funny business with my Adele!"

Zhang Yang took the box off his hands and opened it. Inside the box, he examined the object that shared a similar appearance with a ginseng root. It was only one foot long and was entirely green. As he held up the Millennial Heroic Soul, he could feel a powerful aura emitting from it.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Winchester. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Millennial Heroic Soul!'

During the time when Zhang Yang was arguing with Honduras, all the way to his mansion, and obtained the Millennial Heroic Soul, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party members had long left the castle and went to train their own levels. Zhang Yang got away from the mansion and headed towards the Altair Flatlands. It's easier to go directly to Altair Flatlands from Black Feather Forest than to travel from Thunderstorm Castle. That way, Zhang Yang would not have to waste a [Teleportation Scroll], saving him a few gold coins and time!

After a long ride, Zhang Yang arrived at Altair Flatlands and entered the dungeon - Pandemonium. Ever since the in-game time was altered, the dungeon refresh rate had remained loyal to the real time. A 20 man dungeon would take 3 days (real time) to refresh. It was 9 days in the game. Since the dungeon was not yet ready for other parties to raid, there were no monsters inside the dungeon when Zhang Yang entered the Pandemonium. He ran effortlessly, all the way inside and towards

Margery.

"Ho! Adventurer! I see you have found the 2 items that I asked," said Margery, as she hobbled towards Zhang Yang with her magic staff which she used as a walking stick.

"Scholar Margery. Yes. I have found them." Zhang Yang took out the Ancient Magic Stone and the Millennial Heroic Soul, and passed the Mysterious Sword Hilt to Margery.

After she obtained all three items, she nodded as she examined the items. "Hm...These items are the right ones indeed. Now, I will start channeling the spell to break the first seal. Adventurer, please be patient, while I try to break the seal."

She then held the hilt in her left hand while placing the Ancient Magic Stone and the Millennial Heroic Soul on a marble desk. She pointed her magic staff at the items on the desk and started chanting in some weird language. Without a word of warning, a bright, radiant light burst out of the Ancient Magic Stone. The bombardment of light was so blinding that Zhang Yang had to close his eyes shut and turn away.

The entire process took close to 3 minutes!

After that, the light started to dim down and eventually went out completely. Zhang Yang turned back and saw that the Ancient Magic Stone and the Millennial Heroic Soul on the marble desk were gone. On the other hand, there was a 3 foot long sharp sword, with a purplish glow in Margery's hand.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Mysterious Sword Hilt. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!'

"Adventurer! Please take this. This is the ancient godly Sword of Purging Devourer. This sword contains the power of untold possibilities. I'm certain that this sword will be of much use to your adventures in the future," said Margery as she placed the sword into Zhang Yang hands.

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Sword of Purging Devourer!'

Zhang Yang was extremely excited. Although the sword's quest duration

and length were not as long as the Dimensional Key Fragment's quest, he had spent a great deal of time and had always looked forward to the reward!

[Sword of Purging Devourer, the Mystery of the Ancient Legend] (Violet-Platinum, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 2,219 – 2,619

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 864

[Level 3 Socket 1]

[Level 3 Socket 2]

Special Effect 1: Consumes another weapon Special Effect. Can only be used once.

Special Effect 2: Lowers the Level Requirement of the weapon by 10 Levels.

Note: Unlock the first seal!

Bound.

Consumes another weapon special effect? What is that?

Could it be that Sword of Purging Devourer could copy the Dark Enigmatic Sword's skill?

Furthermore, the sword was a Level 90 sword! Yet, it could be worn right away at Level 80! This would immensely support Zhang Yang as a low DPS Guardian!

The best of all, the Sword of Purging Devourer had only unlocked at the first seal! How much stronger would the sword be when the other seals are broken?!

Chapter 380: The Search for the Sixth Key Fragment

What a load of surprise!

Margery smiled kindly and said, "Adventurer, I have discovered the means to break the second seal! For the next step, I need you to collect three items. They are Zinc Alloy, Dark Magical Fruit, and Light of Miracle.

'Ding! Margery has a quest for you. Breaking the Second Seal. Will you accept it?'

After breaking the first seal, the Sword of Purging Devourer was so strong that it could be a bug! If all the seals were broken, just how strong would the sword be!?

However, here comes the problem. Zhang Yang knew that all the items that Margery has just asked for can only be collected after Zhang Yang reaches Level 100! It has been made clear that after breaking the second seal, the Sword of Purging Devourer would evolve into a Mythical tier! If Zhang Yang could have guessed that, after breaking the third seal, the sword will evolve to Ethereal tier!

Even though the process of breaking the seal is troublesome, the end rewards would be outstanding! In the future, Zhang Yang would no longer the need to swap swords between boss fights or regular monster fights!

Without wasting much time, Zhang Yang readied the Dark Enigmatic Sword and activated the Sword of Purging Devourer special skill.

'You have activated the skill of Sword of Purging Devourer. Please select the weapon that you wish to absorb. Please be advised, the weapon that will be selected has to belong to you. The weapon that is selected for absorption will be destroyed in the process!'

Zhang Yang selected the Dark Enigmatic Sword in the pop out.

'Ding! You have selected "Dark Enigmatic Sword". The effect that will be absorbed is: Grants a 2% chance to replicate a previous attack.' The

selected "Dark Enigmatic Sword" will be destroyed. Confirm selection?’

Confirm!

Ping!

A bright light burst out and the Dark Enigmatic Sword started to age and waste away as if time had sped up for a thousand years. The sword then crumbled into many rusted pieces as the Sword of Purging Devourer glowed intensely for a brief second.

[Sword of Purging Devourer, the Mystery of the Ancient Legend]

Weapon Attack: 2,219 – 2,619

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 864

[Level 3 Socket 1]

[Level 3 Socket 2]

Equip Effect: Grant a 2% chance to replicate a previous attack.

Special Effect: Lowers the Level Requirement of the weapon by 10 Levels.

Note: Unlocked the first seal!

Bound.

For the three items that Margery has asked for, Zhang Yang had little to no recollection of it. He knew the location of the items, but not the specific position or how to obtain them. He moved out of the dungeon and checked the quest log for a clearer explanation.

[Breaking the Second Seal] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: You have obtained confirmation from Margery herself, the means of breaking the second seal. You can find [Zinc Alloy] at the Skeletal Spirit Mining Cave of the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster. You can find the [Dark Magical Fruit] at the Gunma Volcanic Island of the Camaro Islands. You can find the [Light of Miracle] at the Siccory Mountains of the Radiant Canyon.

Progress: Zinc Alloy 0/1 Dark Magical Fruit 0/1 Light of Miracle 0/1

As expected, no matter the locations, they were all located in the Chaos Realm, a place where a player can only enter after reaching Level 100.

Right now, there was no way Zhang Yang could complete it now. Zhang Yang sighed and calmed himself down. He then tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and moved to Thunderstorm Castle. Even though the Sword of Purging Devourer had already been Identified, it still lacked the necessary upgrade. The Sword of Purging Devourer still had two empty sockets and Rune Stone enchantments.

He then made his way to the Gem Shop and purchased two [Level 3 Gem Stone], and had them socketed in. After that, he requested Han Ying Xue for Rune Stones and had the two new Gem Stones enchanted to 50% and 70%. After that, Zhang Yang replaced the Goblin's Head Lobber with the Sword of Purging Devourer. His basic attack power has increased from 2,914 – 3,334 to 3,863 – 4,263!

Hehehe! A Level 90 Violet-Platinum sword was strong!

...

Today's guild war had come to a conclusion and had produced the top 8 contenders. In three days, the final champion will emerge victoriously, and Zhang Yang hoped that Lone Desert Smoke would be the champion. However, as obvious as it seems, the Guild Wars competition was not as greatly welcomed as the Soaring Swords Competition. Thus, the officials had not made any vigorous attempt at bringing up the heat of the competition. After this, the competition would not be held again.

In the evening, Lone Desert Smoke faced Storm Riders. Under the guidance of Mountain Mover, Lone Desert Smoke sliced through the enemy like a hot knife through a butter. As they were not in the top 4 guilds, after two more battles, they would win the championship!

Even though Mountain Mover had only joined Lone Desert Smoke for a few days, he had already gotten used to commanding the guild and made himself memorize all the members' classes and strengths, allowing him to craft up all kinds of counter measures and attack strategies in the nick of

time. Everyone was highly impressed by his ability and obeyed his commands as the word of god himself. This level of cooperation made Mountain Mover most pleased.

A good soldier and a good strategist go hand in hand. All soldiers would want to work with a good strategist, and a good strategist would want to command a cooperative and powerful army. In this case, Mountain Mover was the good strategist, and Lone Desert Smoke the finest army that he could ever command. Even if he was to be chased away by Zhang Yang, Mountain Mover would plant his feet down in the earth, would never give up his soldiers.

Unless everyone possesses a Paired Skill like Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, it was impossible to win a war, without a powerful and insightful strategist that could turn the tides of war with a simple plan! After Zhang Yang was done with the guild war and the Team Battle League Competition, Zhang Yang took his leave and rode towards the Snow Peach Mountain at the Black Feather Forest, in hopes of finding the sixth descendent of the seven generals, Culonca.

The geographical landscape of Black Feather Forest was mostly flat, yet there were plenty of mountainous regions scattered all over the land. The Snow Peach Mountain was located at the North-East section of the entire map. As the name suggested, Zhang Yang could feel a cold breeze, accompanied by white snowflakes that slowly drifted in the wind.

The quest logs had only revealed that Culonca was located at the Snow Peach Mountain. As usual, a quest will never reveal the objective precise locations, Zhang Yang had to depend on himself to search for Culonca.

Zhang Yang had spent some wandering around the Snow Peach Mountain, and after half an hour, he saw four players grinding some monsters at a spot to his north. He was only slightly shocked to see actual players grinding their levels here. Players that come to this map should not have any other motives, besides questing! It may not be Level 80, but it should be at least Level 77 or 78, and above!

"Yo! Warrior dude!" Zhang Yang walked to the side to avoid confronting

the lot. Yet, after walking a few steps, one of the players noticed his presence and called out to him.

Zhang Yang stopped his bear and turned around. Among the four players, the one that had called out to him, waved his hands vigorously as he ran to his side. His IGN was Treasure Water and his class was a Sacred Knight. His guild was...He did not have a guild, as well as the other three players that were with him. Truthfully speaking, with their current level, they could easily earn a good position in any possible guild that would take them in! Thus, the reason why levels were so important in any given MMORPG!

Treasure Water was able to recognize Zhang Yang as a warrior due to him carrying a shield on his back, not to mention the presence of the Rage gauge.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Is there anything I can do for you?"

Treasure Water smiled back kindly and said, "Sorry to bother you. Originally, we were a group of 5 players trying to do some quests here. We came across a boss and was about to defeat it when our tank had some matters to attend to, leaving us unable to defeat the boss. So, we wanted to come here to grind some monsters and be done with it. Until we saw you!" Treasure Water gestured at Zhang Yang.

"I had never thought that we could stumble upon another player, and a tank at that! Since this place is as deserted as the Sahara Desert, we've actually given up on continuing the quest! So how about it? We ask of you to join our party and do the quest together and help us take on the boss. Bro, I'm telling you, the quest reward is rather awesome!"

Although Zhang Yang had no intention to sidetrack, the man had been rather friendly towards Zhang Yang and presented no hostility towards him. Zhang Yang felt that killing a boss might not take as long as it should, and he nodded. "Alright. Count me in!"

In a moment, a player called Thinking Five Million had sent Zhang Yang a party invitation which Zhang Yang accepted in a heartbeat.

"Oh yeah! I was right!" said a Thief player named Blizzard General. "Wait

a second! 111,260 HP!? What the papa pucking pickiddy puck! Is this guy a player or a boss!?"

"Hey guys, Kindling had only over 20,000 HP! Have a load of this guy! If I tell him that we found a tank that had over 100k HP, he will surely be asking us not to drink so much!" A player named Bleeding Tornado cried out.

"Zhan Yu!?" One by one, they too notice of Zhang Yang's IGN and were left dumfounded. Treasure Water laughed and said, "Looks like I have unintentionally recruited China's number 1 tank!"

"China's number 1 tank! So that's why he has such high HP!"

"Woah! You're already at Level 82! You must be wearing a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment! That explains the high HP!"

"Bro...Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipments are only ok. He must be wearing Violet-Platinum!"

Everyone started to argue about the topic of equipment tier and HP bonus.

Zhang Yang smiled and clapped his hands hard to gain their attention. "Guys! Are we going to discuss about equipment or are we going to kill a boss? Either way, I'm fine with it. I'm just saying..."

"Hahahaha. You're cool bro. You're cool."

The four players were obviously good friends, like Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party. As they talked and chatted about, Zhang Yang realized that they too were friends in real life.

The team was led by Thinking Five Million and reached to a flattened side of a hill. On the other side of the hill, everyone could see a gigantic, mechanical puppet that was attacking a large boulder with both its mechanical arms. Like an engine's pistons, the puppets arms struck the stone with his fist with such force that the residual shock shook the entire mountain, sending tremors and quakes.

[Optimus Prime] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 85

HP: 1,700,000

Defense: 2,000

Everyone stopped as Treasure Water tried to explain the situation to Zhang Yang. "We had actually stumble upon this quest when we were grinding some monsters. We found an S.O.S bottle which was sent out by an NPC called Culonca. In the bottle, the message said that he was trapped at some place and requested to be rescued. The reward would be a fantastic ring, but in your case, I don't think that you'll even want the ring. Zhan Yu."

Culonca? Zhang Yang had never thought that this sudden encounter would only help him to find Culonca!

While Zhang Yang was in his thoughts, Treasure Water shared the quest to Zhang Yang.

[Someone Help Me] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: You have incidentally found an S.O.S bottle in the stomach of a white deer. In the bottle, there was a map scribbled poorly, along with the word "Someone help me!". You have traced the drawing of the map and found the target was located at Snow Peach Mountain of the Black Feather Forest. Brave warriors! Heed the call and save a man in need! Be advised, the quest is likely to be dangerous!

Progress: Rescue Culonca 0/1

Quest Reward: Ring of Grandiose

[Ring of Grandiose] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +67

Strength: +27

Equip Effect: Absorbs 74 damage on attack.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang was right. The quest was about Culonca, the sixth descendent of the seven generals! One thing that he agreed with Treasure Water was that Zhang Yang had no interest in the ring reward. After all, both of his current rings were of Level 80 Violet-Platinum tier.

Zhang Yang did not swap out the Mythical Turtle and had used the Gold-Eared Bear King to take on Optimus Prime. Before Zhang Yang had come in, Treasure Water's party did not have a tank, thus, even though they had a healer in the party. They knew that the boss fight was out of their league. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was a special case. Alone, he could easily overpower the boss. Now that he was in a party, the extra damage of the Mythical Turtle could be foregone.

‘-3,982!’

Zhang Yang tossed a {Spear of Obliteration} to gained the boss's aggro and dealt a strong amount damage that had left the rest of the party member flabbergasted.

"Are you sure that he is a Guardian? From the looks of it, he could be a Berserker with a shield!"

"Yeah! He's right. Zhan Yu's {Spear of Obliteration} basic damage was already at 4,000! That means his weapon damage has already reached beyond 4,000!"

"What power...Hah! Kindling will surely be jealous to the high heavens when he sees how powerful this tank is!"

"YEAH!"

Everyone laughed and cheered, yet none of them slacked in their attack. Everyone was cooperative, and performed their roles of their character classes.

The boss took the attack from Zhang Yang and turned his entire metallic body towards him. When he turned to face Zhang Yang, everyone could see a number of holes on his chest and body. It appears that if Optimus had gone through numerous battles. The original blue and red color scheme on his metallic body was mostly dyed in rust black. One of its

arms was in such a bad shape that it looked like it could fall off anytime. Black oil was spilling off his damaged arm like blood. With one fully operational arm, Optimus attacked Zhang Yang, making loud metal clanking noises as the arm thrust towards him.

"In the name of high heavens and the gods above, kill that bucket of rust!" whilst attacking the boss, a voice suddenly rang out from the bottom of the pile of rocks and dirt. Zhang Yang turned his head quickly and glance through. In the small gap of the rocks, he saw a man's head.

[Culonca] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 82

HP: 9,999 / 82,000

Defense: 450

The NPC name tag was green! That only meant that Zhang Yang cannot resort to brute force to get the Key Fragment!

The battle started for a while now yet Optimus had not made any speech besides the loud, annoying metallic crashing sound at every movement. Since the start, Optimus had only attacked the party with its fully functioning arm. Every time the metallic arm crashed onto Zhang Yang, it would sent a mini quake to the ground, making it hard to stand firm.

Still, no matter how bombastic its movement or how awesome the after effect it made, a Yellow-Gold boss, will forever be at a Yellow-Gold level difficulty. Zhang Yang had no trouble to deal with a Violet-Platinum boss, what more a Yellow-Gold? Within two to three minutes, the boss crumbled down into a pile of mangled scrap metal.

At the moment the battle was over, the party checked on their damage report and found that Zhang Yang had contributed 42% of the entire damage output. It was close to half! The rest of the three attacking class player had to feign ignorance to this fact or it will be extremely shameful to face Zhang Yang. Treasure Water was the only player who did not bother to check the damage report, as he was a healer since the beginning of the game. It had become a habit for him, to not be bothered about

damage.

Everyone was so impressed at Zhang Yang, and was praising him for having the ability to take on the boss single-handedly. For them to be nearly bystanders, they were extremely satisfied to have the ring as the reward and wanted Zhang Yang to claim all the battle loots.

Now that is what they say, 'You scratch my back, I'll scratch yours.'

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't be that way. If it weren't for you guys, I would not have killed any boss in the first place. Since everyone is part of the party, let's skip the formality and move on to the sharing. I'll have you know that you guys had saved my *ss big time. I was here originally to find this NPC Culonca. If it weren't for you guys, I'd be wandering like a fool around the entire Snow Peach Mountain before I find this bugger! How about this? I'll take one equipment and you guys take the rest? Seems fair?"

Everyone exchanged a happy look and nodded their heads.

It's extremely hard to find someone as kind and generous as Zhang Yang these days.

Chapter 381: The Return of Megatron

Zhang Yang had proactively taken only a pair Gray-Silver boots and moved to one side.

Treasure Water and his friends had understood Zhang Yang good intentions to give them all the equipment and felt extremely grateful for his actions. Unlike Zhang Yang, they had high demands of Yellow-Gold equipment.

"Hey guys? Could you speed things up at the part where you're supposed to help me?" cried Culonca. During the boss fight, the boss had not crushed the spot where Culonca was stuck. The attack from the boss had only managed to loosen the land around and made the small hole into a long crack in the earth. However, the gap was only as large as his head and Culonca could only stare from the inside.

Zhang Yang and the rest of the party member went towards the gap and forcefully pulled Culonca out by his hands.

"My word. I am but an old man. You, young lads, could have been a little gentler with me!" said the 60 years old man. Although the man was already an old text book, he was in amazing shape. He must have been a strong man when he was younger.

Culonca dust of the dirt on his clothes and turned to the party. "Still, I am grateful. Thank you for saving me from that wretched giant robot there."

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Someone Save Me. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Ring of Grandiose!'

Even though Zhang Yang had treated the ring as another item that was meant to be tossed into the Little Merchandise Shop, Treasure Water and his party treated it very much differently. Besides Zhang Yang alone, the rest of the party were smiling happily as if they had just won the lottery, while Zhang Yang had just drawn a dud.

While the party was chatting about the reward they had just obtained, Culonca walked towards the boss' dead body and pulled out a glowing crystal forcefully from Optimus's chest. "Hey. You guys seem strong. Would you like to help me on some errands? I will reward you handsomely!"

"What about it?" Thinking Five Million replied Culonca immediately. The first quest reward was already a Yellow-Gold ring, how would the next reward be after escalation?

Culonca smirked. "I need you to travel to the Crumbling Valley and search for a similar Mechanical Servant, called Megatron. Take this Energy Crystal and revive him, and bring him back here!"

'Ding! Culonca has a quest for you: Revive Megatron. Will you accept it?'

Everyone accepted the quest without thinking twice.

[Revive Megatron] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Culonca wants you to find the deactivated Megatron at the Crumbling Valley. Use the Energy Crystal that Culonca has given you to revive the Mechanical Servant and lead the machine to Culonca. The Crumbling Valley is located to the North of Snow Peach Mountain.

How weird! The subsequent quest was lowered to C tier!

However, Zhang Yang did not give it much thought of it. He also did not care about the quest reward. The most important reason was that he only cared about triggering the quest that would lead him to the Dimensional Key Fragment. By any means, it's best to complete the quest and let it run its course.

Zhang Yang and the rest of the party summoned their mounts and took off. By then, the drop rate of a battle mount was still a scarcity. Among the four merry friends, only Blizzard General had a battle mount, the rest of the party only had normal mounts which were available for purchase at Level 40.

After descending down Snow Peach Mountain, the party headed north and after 20 minutes of traveling, they arrived in a cold, abandoned valley.

Everything around the valley spoke of the aftermath of a great war. Rocks, pebbles, and a barren landscape illustrated the great history of what that had occurred there.

Crack!

As the party moved forward, a skeletal monster broke out of the earth and bared its fangs towards the party, displaying hostility. The skeletal monster was completely battered. Just like the Crumbling Valley, the monster had broken bones, tattered wounds, rotting flesh, and many other features that had given off a feeling of ancient war.

[Tattered Skeleton Soldier] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 84,000

Defense: 450

Up till this point, Zhang Yang had finally felt the annoyance of Spectre monsters. Anywhere he went, they would surely be a nuisance and would not let him be!

Zhang Yang unsheathed the new sword he has just obtained and sliced the enemy with a clean downward slash. At the same time, his shield was held up high and had blocked off another monster attack.

‘-3,989’ Normal attack.

‘-4,246!’ {Shield Bash}.

Although they had already witnessed Zhang Yang prowess from the boss before from before, they had not yet gotten used to seeing such a devastating damage coming from a player, and a Guardian at that!

"Boss Zhan Yu, how are you able to deal such high damage? That was just a normal sword attack and {Shield Bash} correct? Kindling, that s.o.b had only managed to deal 1,500 damage with his {Shield Bash}! How are you...What did you do?!" Everyone asked.

After having interacted with Zhang Yang for a short period of time, all four friends had already fallen for Zhang Yang, hard. One by one, they

started calling him "boss" and "big bro". From the manner of their conversation, Zhang Yang recognized that they and the unknown player called "Kindling Justice" were second-year high school students who were living together in a dorm. From the way they address each other, Zhang Yang knew that they shared a strong bond with each other. Naturally, they would be playing together.

Zhang Yang posted the properties of the [Titan Chest Plate] into the group chat, explaining why Zhang Yang's {Shield Bash} was so strong, as if he had permanently triggered a Critical strike.

All five of attacked simultaneously and killed the Tattered Skeleton Soldier.

"I have been meaning to ask, why haven't you guys join a guild? You do know that joining a guild will grant you some extra bonus experience points?" Zhang Yang asked. He had judged and evaluated these four players, and felt like they possess some sort of prowess to them.

"We did. But, most of them were really strict. That's why we left. For the past few months, I think we had already joined and left at least 13 guilds? Guys?"

"Nah...At least 16!"

"Bro, I think we've nearly hit 18!"

Zhang Yang started to twitch. Even though Zhang Yang would agree that there were a few guilds that were famous for being extremely strict, but quitting 18 guilds would only prove that these lads were a problem. With that thought, Zhang Yang was a little worried and never mentioned anything else about guilds.

The party went on and encountered many more Skeleton Soldiers which dropped some gold coins, experience points, and occasionally, a few equipment. Which was nice. The party killed their way quickly and entered the deepest part of the valley.

Deep in the valley, there was a huge lake. The lake was extremely calm and clear, yet in the center of the lake was a huge mechanical servant's

head. One of the mechanical eyes was blackened while the other was clear, yet dark. The head alone was big enough to be a house, or a restaurant! Zhang Yang stood closer to the edge and could make out the rest of the massive body of the servant through the crystal-clear water.

"Are we supposed to revive that thing?" everyone asked. Since there were no name tags nor any clue to indicate its name, everyone could not be sure that it was Megatron.

"Let's try it out!" said Zhang Yang. He then summoned out his Mythical Turtle.

"Woah! Boss! Is that an Underwater Mount? You even had that?!" Treasure Water cried out in amazed. But when everyone saw the tier and the mount's HP, they could not say another word.

These guys had yet to even battle a Violet-Platinum boss, and yet Zhang Yang was already riding a Violet-Platinum mount! No wonder people will always say that there will always be someone better than you!

Zhang Yang hopped on the Mythical Turtle and jumped into the water. Like an arrow, Zhang Yang shot towards the massive servant and headed towards the head. He then aimed at the broken eye and shoved the Energy Crystal in it.

BOOM!!

A powerful shockwave blasted out in all direction, sending the waters off the lake. The shockwave continued and create a huge tidal wave that dried the lake. Not just the lake, in fact, the entire valley started to vibrate and shake in a dangerous manner that sent stone and dirt off the top of the peaks.

As if they were standing on a woman's vibrating dildo, their vision started to degrade tremendously, unable to focus on anything or anyone.

"I think!" one of the screamed, trying to overlap the massive loud noise. "I think something is about to happen!"

"YOU THINK!? EVEN A BLIND PERSON COULD SEE THAT!"

"IDIOT! HOW WOULD A BLIND PERSON SEE!"

...

While the four of them were busy having their menial argument, the gigantic servant glowed with an intense brightness, creating an even more violent surge of shockwaves.

BOOM!

With an even bigger shockwave, the servant's eyes glowed like a miniature sun, that was too blinding to see, even when they had already squeezed their eyes shut!

Shush!

The servant stood up, creating yet another massive tidal wave that lowered the water level of the lake by several meters. Thud! Thud! Thud! The servant got out of the water and moved towards the land. Water droplets the size of a pickup truck splashed down from above. The light in its eyes dimmed down and turned into a blood red color. After standing still for only a few seconds, it turned its head to a certain direction and started moving toward it.

[Megatron, Alien Lifeform] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 2,600

Alien lifeform? What is that? Does that mean that this machine was from outer space?!

Everyone exchanged a worried look. This contraption could have weighed a few million tonnes, easily, judging from the massive quake it made, every time it took a step. If it does not listen to the party, how do they bring back the servant back to Culonca?

By the time they were thinking of a method to draw its attention, Megatron had already covered a good distance away from the party. Everyone summoned their mounts and chased after it.

Luckily, the direction where Megatron was moving towards was where Culonca was, and only then did the party relaxed.

Although Megatron movement speed was extremely fast, like nothing had Zhang Yang had ever seen, they were still able to chase after, it since the body of the servant was extremely huge, allowing Zhang Yang to see its figure, even though they were left far behind. By the time Zhang Yang had returned to Snow Peach Mountain, they were surprised at the sight of Megatron standing still at a place, completely motionless as if someone had hit the shutdown button.

When Zhang Yang approached closer, he could see Culonca was already climbing onto its shoulders with a big smile on his face

"You're late!" cried Culonca. He then did something to Megatron's chest plate and the servant's chest opened like a cockpit in the all-time famous, Japanese iconic symbol of mechas, mobile suit Gundam. Culonca jumped towards the cockpit and entered the contraption.

"Sorry, there's some trouble along the way!" said Zhang Yang from the top of his head.

Thinking Five Million immediately cried out, "Yo! We have brought Megatron back! What about our reward?"

"HAHAHAHAHA!" Culonca laughed maniacally. "What a bunch of stupid adventurers! Are you daft?" Culonca then went into Megatron and closed the hatch. A robotic voice echoed out of Megatron, "I merely gave you a few scraps and you're as obedient as a dog! Did you really think I would be that generous?! HAHAHAHAHA! Do you think I would even care about a few obnoxious adventurers? I had only used you to help me obtained Optimus Prime's Energy Crystal and travel to the dangerous land of the Crumbling Valley to revive Megatron!"

Chapter 382: Foil the Plan

"F*ck! What a sh*tty NPC!" cried Bleeding Tornado.

Even though the NPC had obviously turned against the player, his name tag was still in the color of green. Zhang Yang and the other players could not attack him just yet.

Zhang Yang tried to trigger something to initiate the battle. "Culonca, just what is that servant?"

"HAHAHAHA! Now, that is the question I wanted to hear." His sinister laugh echoed through the cockpit. "This machine is a living mechanical being that came from outer space! For it possesses an immense power, strength, and the ability to transform! According to my extensive research, these aliens were divided into two factions! They are the Autobots and the Decepticons. The previous enemy that you had just defeated for me was the leader of the Autobots! He was the last of his kind! It was a pity that when I had revived him, he was still conscious and I was unable to control him!"

Culonca continued. "It was only later when I had found the body of Megatron, the fallen Decepticon. At the same time, I had also found out the hidden secret of controlling these mechanical servants. I had used that method and cast a spell on the body of Megatron which will allow me to control him, after his resurrection!"

Culonca started laughing maniacally. "However, the only Energy Crystal was already used on Optimus Prime, and without it, I could not revive Megatron! Never had I thought that the leader of the Autobots was so strong that he had trapped me in the earth! That is, until you fools had freed me from my peril! Now that I've said it, I should be thanking you for it! Not only have you freed me, you have also brought me Megatron!

Zhang Yang had been bamboozled by the system again!

Culonca was a typical villain. After gaining massive power or the means to topple the hero, he will start monologuing, revealing all his plans to everyone as if he would have died if he had not.

"Do you know why did these mechanical servants had come to our world? They were here to search for a power source called the Allspark, an ancient artifact that could create mechanical life. Be it the Autobots or the Decepticons, they were both born from the power of the Allspark! To think that the precious treasure had fallen into our world! Haha! Now that I have gained control of Megatron, I could finally start searching for the Allspark! I shall use the power of the ancient artifact to create an indestructible army to dominate the world! I shall reform the earth as to how my ancient ancestors would want!"

"Ah.." Blizzard General clapped his hands as he had an epiphany.
"Transformers!"

"I see it now! D*mn! It's Optimus Prime and Megatron! How could I have forgotten about them!" cried Treasure Water.

"How nostalgic! How many years has it been since they had made the last movie?"

Everyone started to discuss the years when they had watched the movies and the cartoon animation of the Transformers series.

"I, Culonca must thank you for your contribution to my conquest. Now, you can die without having any regrets!" Culonca bellowed and the name tag "Megatron" turned red.

‘Ding! The quest: Revive Megatron, has been deleted!’

‘Ding! You have received a quest: Foil the Plan!’

[Foil the Plan] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Culonca has managed to gain control of the alien mechanical lifeform, Megatron. Planning to search for the ancient artifact Allspark, Culonca wants to dominate the world by creating an army of mechanical servants. Warrior! You have to stop his plans and save all of life’s creations. The fate of the world lies in your hands!

Progress: Defeat Megatron 0/1 Kill Culonca 0/1

Everyone’s quest log suddenly popped out and displayed a change in

their original quests. Zhang Yang had not cared about it one bit, as long as he could kill Culonca and obtain the Dimensional Key Fragment from him forcefully.

"Guys, roll out!" Zhang Yang laughed at his own attempt at mimicking Optimus Prime's voice and battle call.

"Submit to the power of the Decepticons!" cried Culonca from the inside of Megatron chest. The movement of the giant mecha was rather rigid and slow, which automatically told everyone that Culonca was just a novice at "piloting" the machine. He then controlled Megatron's arm and thrust it towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang raised his shield to intercept the attack. With a loud crashing sound, Zhang Yang was pushed deep into the ground, making a meter-sized crater from where he was standing. Right then, Zhang Yang's strength was already off the charts, yet he had still been pushed back. With all the power he had, Zhang Yang forcefully repelled the attack and managed to parry Megatron's massive metallic arms back.

"Ho...Impressive! I have never assumed that you possess such brute strength! However, could you hold up forever with a mechanical servant?" cried Culonca as he taunted Zhang Yang. The machine then drew back its arm and thrust another punch at Zhang Yang.

‘-5,978!’

The attack had landed on Zhang Yang and dealt only 5% of Zhang Yang long 100,000 HP! The rest of the party did not stand by in awe, instead, they started their attack as soon as they had the chance. Everyone upheld their class roles; attackers attack, healers heal.

"Urgh! Annoying pests! Death be upon you lot!" Culonca growled and left Zhang Yang be. He then moved Megatron towards Blizzard General and smashed him with the massive mechanical palm.

‘-12,073!’

When the massive damage dropped on Blizzard General, he panicked. Colors started to fade from his face as he has just realized that he had lost

close to one-third of his HP! He managed to survive, as he was riding on a Gray-Silver battle mount, or else he would have lost more than 50% of his original character HP!

After one attack on Blizzard General, Megatron left him and switched his target to Thinking Five Million. Similar to all his previous attacks, Megatron smashed him with his massive palm.

Something was odd. The battle with Megatron was extremely different compared to any other battle that any player had ever encountered. The boss seemed to be immune to the aggro system! It will attack anyone, and anytime he wanted!

Based on damage alone, Zhang Yang would take the lead in rank and position. Also, as a Guardian, the amount of aggro generated by him would have made sure that no one in the party could ever OT! However, the situation now begged to differ!

They checked the aggro list and found out that everyone's aggro value was changing faster than a traffic light could! Even when those players had not made any attack on Megatron would have their aggro surged up to the maximum, whereas Zhang Yang, who was attacking furiously from the start had his aggro value dropped to the lowest!

Was there a bug in the system?

Zhang Yang could not help but think of an explanation.

"Megatron is just a servant! Who he attacks is determined by Culonca! Since Culonca is hidden inside the machine, he could not take damage, and would not have his aggro controlled! He can freely attack whoever he wants!"

The rest of the party started to panic when they heard Zhang Yang's explanation.

Zhang Yang quickly added. "Blizzard General! Use {Vanish} and leave the battle! Do not think of continuing the fight. The three of you! Hide behind me, I will try to move around to prevent Megatron from attacking you!"

"Hohoho! Feel the power of Megatron!" Culonca taunted. "Think about it! No sooner after this, I will create more soldiers just like this! I will create an empire far larger than the Imperial Heaven's Empire! No matter who it is, be it the Spectres, the Demons, Humans, all Demi-humans alike shall bow down to my reign!"

"Hmph. Just because you have obtained a little bit of power, you think you can rule the world with it?" Zhang Yang scoffed. This Megatron contraption was just a Yellow-Gold boss entity. Even if Culonca could create a million more like it, a Celestial tier boss could easily wipe everything out of existence with just a lift of its finger! Even Princess Serena, a Mythical tier entity could easily wipe out every living being in the land with her sword!

"I am the descendant of the mighty Luis Kant Muer Witwicky! I will re-create...NO! I will make a new glorious empire, far better and stronger than any empire had ever existed! My name shall forever be etched in the walls of history!" Culonca screamed as if he was greatly offended by Zhang Yang's menial scoffs, which led to several consecutive attacks on Zhang Yang.

"Hm...I know now why people say that a tank must have an annoying, punchable face! Big bro Zhan Yu is sure is strong! Not only does he have the skills, but he also has a face that could endure a good punch!"

"Haha! Yeah! He could grab the boss aggro when the boss had no fixed aggro to begin with! Go Zhan Yu!"

"Guys, it's not just the face. Big bro Zhan Yu has also a poisonous mouth that could literally make any person, in this case, the boss angry!"

"As expected from Zhan Yu boss! Go Zhan Yu Go!"

Everyone slapped Zhang Yang on the back enthusiastically, which left him wordless. If he could, he would have paused the fight for a while to give them all a good slap on the face before continuing the fight.

No wonder these guys have always been jumping guilds! It was probably because of their loud blabbering mouths! Perhaps, a good number of players were sick of them!

"Stop yapping! Attack the boss!"

Due to Zhang Yang's consistent verbal insults on Culonca, the boss had only attacked him. From the looks of it, verbal assaults were especially effective at gaining aggro, since Culonca is a man of pride. He thought highly of his own ancestors and would never accept insults to them. Now that most of the aggro was on Zhang Yang, everyone else could lower their guard a little and attack the boss.

Truthfully, Zhang Yang could easily take on the boss without a hitch. However, now that the other party members had joined the fight, he would have to play his role of the tank and protect his teammates. Instead of improving the battle, their presence in the battle field had only affected Zhang Yang's performance. Still, it was only this special boss.

In just three minutes, Megatron's HP was cut down to only 100,000.

"No...! No! This cannot be!" Culonca started to panic. "Impossible! It's not possible! You could not defeat me! You would not defeat me!"

"It's time to face reality, Culonca!" said Thinking Five Million with confidence. Everyone else laughed at his taunt. Just when the rest of the team wanted to pitch in their share of insults, a sudden loud noise was heard.

WOOOOOOOONG.....

A sudden glow in the one eye of Megatron shone and its entire mechanical body stopped, as if the machine had just run out of power!

"GRAH! Move! Move and kill these bastards for me! Piece of trash! I revived you! Move! Aren't you but nothing but a piece of rusting tin can!?" Culonca's voice could be heard from outside the cockpit.

Immune!

Immune!

...

The party had not stopped attacking even when the machine had stopped moving, however, their attacks seem to have no effect on the

machine. Their attacks were only responded with the word "Immune" as they attacked.

Megatron opened its mouth and cried, "None shall insult the great Megatron!"

The chest plate hatch opened and reveal Culonca inside the cockpit. Megatron forcefully grabbed Culonca from inside and tossed him to the ground.

"I AM MEGATRONNNNNNN!!!!" cried the machine as it extended out its arm and legs. He then stomped on Culonca and bellowed, " I am King! I am the strongest! No one can control Megatron!"

"GUUAH!"

Culonca spat blood as he was being stepped on. A sudden "ding" was heard and a silver piece of metal fell off his body.

Zhang Yang focused on the item and realized it was the Dimensional Key Fragment!

Just when he was about to move towards it, he realized that he was frozen in place!

He had been forced into a cinematic scene!

Chapter 383: Search and Destroy the Allspark

"Dimensional power!?" said Megatron as he noticed the key fragment. He then held out his palm, and the key fragment somehow moved on its own and flew into his palm, as if Megatron had the power of telekinesis, despite being a mechanical being.

"Marvelous! With this power of Dimensional Travel, I can finally complete my search for the Allspark! Beware my words, Earth Dwellers! For now, I am wounded! You shall live for another day! But I will be back! And I will lead an army to dominate this pathetic world!"

Beep Beep Boop Ching Klang!

The mechanical servant transformed and folded itself into the shape of a jet. He then took off at an intense speed, leaving the airspace with a loud sonic boom and disappeared in the air. Megatron flew like a jet, but would be possible to chase after him with a flying mount. However, right now, there were nothing Zhang Yang and the rest of the party could do but stare blindly at the Megatron leaving, with only a fraction of his HP left, with the Dimensional Key Fragment at that too!

Everyone regained control of their character only after Megatron had disappeared.

'Ding! Megatron has obtained a piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment! He will use it to complete his search for the Allspark! His intention to the entire land is naught but dire threat! Warrior! You have to stop him!'

'Ding! You have accepted the side quest: Search and Destroy the Allspark!'

[Search and Destroy the Allspark] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Zhan Yu, you must search and locate Megatron before he locates the position of the Allspark and summons an army of mechanical soldiers! You have to find him and kill him. The Allspark must be destroyed in order to foil any future threats to the land. Tips:

Dimensional Key Fragments will resonate with each other!

Progress: Destroy the Allspark 0/1

Zhang Yang was stunned. He quickly turned to the party and asked, "Have you guys obtain any new quests?"

"Nope!" said the guys with a straight face.

Zhang Yang finally understood what was happening. The side quest that had just triggered was only given to players with the original quest "Meteor Sword". For any other player, the quest would be concluded as soon as they were done with the quest "Foil the Plan". As for Megatron and the Allspark...if he had directly tried to invade any major city, he will be killed instantly without any chance of resistance. There are many other Celestial tier bosses in each of those cities!

Culonca had received a major strike from Megatron but he had not died just yet. From the looks of his HP bar, he was just one clean sword strike away from being sent to the graveyard. Wrenching in pain, Culonca spat out a mouthful of his own blood while still monologuing on his own, "Impossible! There's no way! I've worked for more than 10 years for this! I will never accept this ending! Never!"

"Oh! Just die already!" cried Blizzard General as he laid down the final blow, successfully ending Culonca's life.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Foil the Plan! Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!'

Zhang Yang sighed at the reward the quest had given. Nothing but a luxurious amount of experience points was the least of what they had expected. The four merry friends cried all sort of insults at the dead body of Culonca, cursing him to come back alive so that they could beat the crap out of him again!

The game utilized some sort of player's lens perspective; in cases where an NPC had died, the player who had just completed the quest will never again see him! If the quest did not belong to a hidden quest or a special quest, other players could still trigger the quest, but not the same player

that had already completed it.

Culonca was just an elite tier monster, naturally, he would not drop anything special but a few [Silk] and coins. Zhang Yang had not even bothered to look at the drops, lest being the other four players.

Zhang Yang opened the world map and noticed a small blimp at the northern part, far from where he was. Even though it was far away, this was the first time a quest had provided the location for where Zhang Yang needed to go next! Zhang Yang jumped on his white bear, bid everyone goodbye and rode towards the bleep on the map.

After riding for a least 2 hours or so, Zhang Yang left the grassy plains and found himself in a huge wasteland, covered in ice and snow. Not far from where Zhang Yang stood, he saw a huge hole. Zhang Yang approached the hole. Immediately, he had a bad intuition, and tried to test the depth of the hole by throwing a piece of rock into it and waited. He waited and waited until god knows how long but there was no sound of the rock reaching the bottom of it!

If Zhang Yang did jump into the hole, he would probably be jumping straight to the domain of Lucifer! At least, Zhang Yang had a way to prevent death, for he had the skill of the Heart of the Death Knight, which would grant him 10 seconds invincibility to nullify even falling damage! But the main problem was the fact that the hole devoid of light! There was no way for Zhang Yang to even know if he is to about to reach the bottom!

Jump? Don't jump? Or jump on another day? Zhang Yang kept on contemplating hard. He then thought to himself, right then, it was impossible for any player to possess any Flying Mount! As far as the system goes, it would never allow a player to jump to their death, when clearly the situation calls for it! If that was the case, then...could there be a lake at the bottom of this bottomless pit?

Zhang Yang ruffled his hair into a mess. Frustrated at his indecisiveness, Zhang Yang made sure that there was no one around the area before he let out a frustrated scream.

"F*ck it!" Zhang Yang said. If he dies, then so be it. It's not like he would

lose any experience points or level. A mere 10% loss of equipment durability is nothing, it's not like it would burn his pocket to fix them anyway!

Zhang Yang unsummoned the bear and took a deep breath.

"LEEROY JENKINS!!!!!" Zhang Yang screamed as he jumped into the hole. The sound of the wind brushing across his ears was so loud that he could not even hear his own scream! The speed at which he gained started to have a piercing effect, and Zhang Yang felt a slight painful pull from the side of his cheeks.

Shush!

At the speed of him falling down, Zhang Yang could have sworn that he would be the fastest man alive! Still, he was still gaining speed! The giant hole was so deep and dark, and Zhang Yang felt a great nervousness at the beginning of his fall. However, as the time dragged on, Zhang Yang was still falling, eventually, he felt bored and irritated. Nothing but the sound of the wind accompanied him as he fell. There was nothing, or rather, due to the absence of light in the hole, it was just darkness and wind.

1 minute...5 minute...30 minutes! Zhang Yang had been falling for 30 minutes, and still counting!

Since he was playing the game in his sleeping state, however bored he became, he would not feel tired. He then decided to call on Wei Yan Er and teased her for the fun of it. This little brat was a real fun to tease!

Hmm? Finally!

A bright blinding light pierced Zhang Yang's vision like a sharp needle. As he got used to the presence of light, he began to see what lay beneath the hole! As he approached the bottom, he finally saw a blurry reflection of himself. It was a huge lake!

Splash!

Like a bullet hitting the water, Zhang Yang prepared himself and made himself fall feet first, while crossing his arms. He remembered it well, as an experience he had at a water theme park's water slide. Since the speed

of which he entered the water was too quick for any human eyes to catch, the splash was not any regular splash, Zhang Yang had dived down at such tremendous speed that he had made a tsunami of the lake! Even though it was water that he was crashed into, the massive repelling force was still too strong that it was not dampened so easily! Zhang Yang had forcefully taken a huge damage, his HP dropped from 78,440 to only 7,241! And that was Zhang Yang we were talking about. If it were someone else, the sheer repulsive force of crashing into the water at that speed would easily kill someone!

Still, anyone could easily survive that with survival skills that could grant damage absorption, or temporary invincibility.

It took some time, but Zhang Yang managed to swim his way back to the surface of the water. Once he managed to get a breath of air, he summoned the Mythical Turtle and shot his way to land. Zhang Yang got himself out and was immediately dried up. He felt a little relieved for surviving such a fall and felt like Wei Yan Er could have fun at this place.

From where he stood, Zhang Yang noticed that there was nothing but one circular wall at the edge of the lake. He turned and saw another exit besides the hole from where he jumped in. The exit was a small ledge which could lead him out of the lake and into a huge hill.

Like the movie "Journey to the Center of the Earth", Zhang Yang felt a euphoric moment of discovery. The place was practically a rain forest with plants and grass all over the place. The source of light that Zhang Yang saw early was emitted from a fiery ball hanging on top of the "sky". The ball of fire was not the sun, but it was still shining brightly and spreading heat across the land.

The forest was filled with beings of various size and shapes, similar to what you would see in a rain forest in the real world. However, due to the different environment, the animals here had undergone a different kind of living process. Of by which, the only major difference Zhang Yang could observe was their size. They were huge! There was a bug the size of a real-life bull and a bull the size of a 6-story building! There was even an eagle so big, that each side of its massive wing could measure at least a hundred

meter long! Just when he thought that Megatron was huge, he was nothing but a regular human size mechanical robot when he dwells among these colossal beasts! And Zhang Yang was nothing but an ant! In fact, an ant could probably be bigger than he is, in this amazing world.

Naturally, size was nothing when judging the power they held. Zhang Yang had even encountered three Celestial tier boss that were no bigger than you and I. The only difference they had was the immense power they held.

Zhang Yang opened the world map to check his location, but only saw a blank map with his avatar, and the bleep was at the same location. In the mini-map however, he saw an arrow that pointed Northwest from his location. It was pointing to the location of the sixth fragment of the Dimensional Key. However, due to the great distance between them, the mini-map could not be enlarged any bigger and had replaced the location with an arrow pointing to its direction. Zhang Yang summoned the Gold-Eared Bear King and rode towards the direction.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Within a few steps, Zhang Yang was already interrupted by a loud stomping noise that had sent tremors beneath his feet. At his front, he saw a ridiculously huge mountain goat rushing out of a bush, and charging towards him at great speed.

[Earth Core Berserking Antelope] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

Facing a beast as large as a building, Zhang Yang could not help but feel like a tiny little ant. However, just because the monster was incredibly huge, it did not mean it was any stronger than a regular Elite in this game!

"Meeeeeeaaa!" the Antelope bleats and lowered its head to charge towards Zhang Yang with its horns facing him. Although Zhang Yang felt intimidated by its sheer size, it was just a millisecond before Zhang Yang

regained his confidence. No matter how big or scary it looked, it did not change the fact that it was only a Level 85 elite tier monster, having the same attack power as any other Level 85 elite tier monster. Zhang Yang felt a little funny, thinking that he was afraid of the Antelope that had only 5,000 to 6,000 attack power!

With a whack and slash, the Antelope fought bravely and even managed to gain a 50% attack power bonus after entering the Berserk state. However, it died in the hands of Zhang Yang. It may still fight and defeat other players but while facing Zhang Yang, the monster would only be facing death itself, with nothing but a short struggle.

The Antelope had dropped two to three counts of [Antelope Fur].

Zhang Yang proceeded on and slew a few more Earth Core Berserking Antelope and picked up a few more [Antelope Fur]. Although these elite monsters would only drop fur, Zhang Yang was not disappointed at all, because the forest he was in was filled abundance with many kinds of herbs. Although it was a shame, that the herbs found here were not rare, like the [Zombie Moss].

Along the way, as he collected more herbs, Zhang Yang headed towards the Northeast and came across a huge cave, with crystals forming on the walls! The cave was as huge as a large stadium, with a ceiling measuring at several hundred meters tall. There was literally nothing but crystal pillars in the cave. Like walking inside a kaleidoscope, the crystal forming the walls were of all sort of colors, like red, yellow, green, and all the hues of the rainbows! Due to the light reflected and refracted by the crystals, the cave was illuminated clearly, but as far as Zhang Yang could see, he could not determine the end of the cave.

Although the cave was so huge that it could probably fit Megatron in his jet form, it was still considered as an "indoor" environment. Zhang Yang was immediately ejected from the bear as soon as he set foot into the cave. Zhang Yang sighed and shrugged it off.

Tat...tat...tat...

Echoes of his footsteps could be heard resonating throughout the entire

cave.

As he walked forward, Zhang Yang thought that it would bring a huge advantage to any player who gets hold and uses the Allspark. As per what Megatron and Culonca have explained, the Allspark could be used to create countless mechanical soldiers. If a player could use it, it would summon an army at no cost, which would allow him or her to win any sorts of battle!

It was a shame that the quest would have him destroy the Allspark, making it impossible for anyone or anything to possess it.

PEW!!

Just when Zhang Yang was having his deep thoughts, he saw a green hue shooting through the cave. It was a large green-emerald crystal pillar that flew towards him like a missile!

With lightning speed, Zhang Yang lifted his shield and activated {Block} out of instinct.

BOOM!

Although Zhang Yang's speed was so fast that it could even rival the speed of sound, the peak of the crystal had hit Zhang Yang's shield at the top angle, causing Zhang Yang to lose his balance and stumble back. At the same time, a huge, red colored mechanical servant appeared in his sight. The mecha was equipped with two huge cannon-like weapons on each of his shoulders. In his right arm, he had a long chain coiled up.

[Starscream] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 85

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of Megatron's right-hand man. A cunning war general.

What the hell? Another Transformer character?!

After Starscream's first attack was blocked, it thrust out his right arm

and uncoiled the black chain. Like a long viper, Starscream sent the black chain towards Zhang Yang and chained him by the waist.

‘-6,212!’

The attack was too quick and accurate, that Zhang Yang had no time dodging it.

"Earth dweller! Was is you who attacked Lord Megatron!" Starscream shrieked. His robotic voice was truly annoying, being high pitched and loud. "Was Megatron so debilitated, that he allowed himself to be wounded by a mere puny warrior? He even lost one of his eyes! Looks like it's time for me to lead the Decepticons!"

A charging sound was heard from his left shoulder and the cannon fired a light beam which blasted Zhang Yang directly at his chest.

‘Ding! Starscream had used {Laser Beam}!’

‘-10,170!’

Zhang Yang took a great amount damage. He then immediately opened the damage log.

"You have received 10,170 Natural Damage (3,000 damage reduced, 1,830 damage absorbed) from Starscream's {Laser Beam}!"

D*mn! What a cheating attack! The boss had a physical attack, a binding chain, and a cannon attack! How would one actually defeat it?!

Fortunately, the laser attack was strong, but it had a long cool down, so the boss could not use it consecutively. That or Zhang Yang would have already been shot down like a honeycomb.

To counter a boss with high Defense, Zhang Yang had to rely on {Cripple Defense} first, and then only laid down all his attacking skills. It was a pity that Starscream had suddenly ambushed him, or else Zhang Yang would have time to swap his bear for the turtle. Because of that, he had lost a great deal of DPS power.

With him alone, Zhang Yang would not be stupid enough to charge recklessly. The cave interior was filled with a great number of crystal

pillars. He could use the pillars to take cover from the boss' attacks and restrict the boss' movement due to his colossal size!

PIANG! PIANG!

As Starscream gave chase, he had already broken many crystal pillars. This was why having a small size had an advantage. Just when the boss was about to attack, Zhang Yang had moved away and forced the boss to be blocked by one or two pillars. The boss would have to resort to attacking the pillars in order to clear a path towards Zhang Yang. Utilizing this strategy, Zhang Yang had brought out the full potential of the pillars, almost taking no damage at all! All but the laser beam was negated. Zhang Yang would still have to take a clean hit from the laser beam. Luckily, the laser attack had a 20 second cool down time, providing Zhang Yang enough time to heal himself back with [Healing Potions] and [Fountain of Life]! Besides that, he also had other skills such as the {Berserker's Heal}, and the {Shield Wall} that could easily allow Zhang Yang to cut down the boss HP to 10%!

Chapter 384: Devastator

"What power you have, for a tiny little earth dweller!" cried Starscream. He wavered a little and withdrew a few steps back. Suddenly, his massive body made a huge loud crack and he then transformed into a huge jet plane just like Megatron. In this case, Starscream's jet plan was red in color. It fired its afterburner and was about to take off.

If Zhang Yang was slower by a little later, Starscream would have already shot through the cave and disappeared just like Megatron did back then. Zhang Yang could not allow it to happen. He then jumped to the front and activated {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, and the ring {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}.

The shadow formed and quickly seeped into Starscream's body. At the same time, an old orc mage appeared by Zhang Yang's side and started chanting a spell.

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

In just a few seconds, Starscream's HP dropped from 10%, all the way to 0. Starscream was able to only travel a few hundred meters when his HP was completely drained, causing him to "die" and crash violently into the pile of crystal fragments. With a loud explosion, Starscream mechanical body exploded into many parts and was sent flying in all directions.

Zhang Yang ran to the body and picked up a funny item called [Laser Cannon]. Besides that, he had also picked up two other Yellow-Gold equipment which was not worth mentioning, and six other Gray-Silver equipment.

[Laser Cannon] (Usable)

Use: Deals 10,000 Natural Damage to all targets in a 3 x 3 meters area.

Range: 30 meters.

Cool Down Time: 1 hour.

Uses left: 10/10

Level Requirement: 80

The [Laser Cannon] looked somewhat of a miniature version of the magic cannon that was etched on the walls of Zhang Yang's Thunderstorm Castle. Though it may have the same AoE attack power, its damage was greatly reduced and had a long attack interval. It also had a limited usage, which made it a mere toy. A powerful, lethal toy at that!

Zhang Yang picked up all the loot and went on his way.

Not long, another mechanical servant came up and attacked Zhang Yang.

[Brand New Mechanical Robot] (Elite, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 800

Even though the monster's defense was strong, Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} and {Cripple Defense}. Basically, Zhang Yang would be hitting him directly, never to worry about high or low defense. Zhang Yang only needed to worry about a monster's defense when other players were around. Having the Sword of Purging Devourer, Zhang Yang took a few minutes to reduce the moving mechanical robot to a pile of scrap metal!

Zhang Yang reached out to collect the loot and picked up four counts of [Mithril]!

[Mithril] was a type of metal mineral that can be found in maps in Level 60 or higher. The Mining Cave that Lone Desert Smoke occupies also produces this kind of minerals. [Mithril] is one of the hottest selling minerals in the game! The mineral will remain as a hot-selling item as

long as new players keep coming in. Until new players stop joining in the game, the item will forever remain in high demand.

The monster did not drop any coins directly, but a single [Mithril] could be sold for 1 to 2 gold coins! It was a worthwhile trade! Zhang Yang had killed more than several hundred mechanical servants and discovered that not all of them would drop [Mithril]. Instead, they only dropped worthless [Iron Bar] and [Solid Iron Bar]. Only a few would actually drop [Refined Iron] and [Thorium]. [Thorium] is a kind of mineral, higher tiered than [Mithril,] which would normally spawn in maps higher than Level 90!

After half an hour or killing, Zhang Yang had faced six larger mechanical servants. They were slightly apart one another. One of them, which was placed at the further left, had its eyes glowing in a weird, reddish hue. While the machine with the glowing red eyes was active, the rest were completely motionless.

[Hook] (Gray-Silver, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 880,000

Defense: 1,200

Note: A mechanical part of the great war general, the Devastator.

"Filthy scum!" cried the truck with a giant hook. The truck was all too similar to the tow trucks that are used by law enforcers to tow away illegal parking cars. The truck transformed itself into a humanoid figure and weaved his right arm (without the hook) towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang remained motionless and did not even bother to use {Block} against a mere Gray-Silver tier boss.

‘-2,778!’

Zhang Yang took a clean hit without resisting and only received damage that could not even surpass 3,000!

Zhang Yang smirked confidently. He had nearly equipped himself with a complete set of Violet-Platinum equipment, on the contrary, the boss

could even call Zhang Yang the real boss!

After a good whack, smack, and splat, Zhang Yang had only traded a {Berserker's Heal} for the boss' life.

Boom.

The mechanical body of the boss exploded in flames, which immediately died down and dropped one Gray-Silver equipment and three Green-Copper equipment.

Fuuuuooong...

As the next moment, the second mechanical servant was activated. A bright glow flashed at the head lights. However, it did not immediately start its attack. In fact, there was a progress bar appearing above its character, which indicated it required some time, a total of 20 seconds before the battle starts.

Zhang Yang quickly seized the chance and swapped out the Mythical Turtle in place of the bear. With the little time left, Zhang Yang sat down and started munching on recovery snacks to heal himself. Before, he had no time to properly judge the battle beforehand, but now, Zhang Yang knew that he had to fight a total of six Gray-Silver bosses. Luckily, the bosses did not jump on him altogether. Even though they were playing tag with each other, at least they were "polite" enough to give Zhang Yang 20 seconds to prepare for the next fight.

[Excavator] (Gray-Silver, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 880,000

Defense: 1,200

Note: A mechanical part of the great war general the Devastator.

20 seconds later, the machine was activated. After spinning around, it transformed itself into a bipedal form and started to charge towards Zhang Yang.

Shush!

The massive shovel was sent smashing downward and smashed Zhang Yang right on his head.

After another round of one-sided battle, Zhang Yang managed to defeat the Excavator even quicker now that he had help from the Mythical Turtle. In just 1 minute and a half, Zhang Yang had wiped the floor with the boss and had only consumed a bottle of [Fountain of Life]. If the environment was not an indoor setting, Zhang Yang could have gotten atop his battle mount and defeat the boss without using any healing, midway into the fight!

After clearing the second boss, Zhang Yang sat down again to heal himself and waited for the third boss to come at him.

The third battle was with a Cement Mixer, and Zhang Yang had only used a {Berserker's Heal} just when it had finished its cool down.

The fourth battle was with a Flattener, at which Zhang Yang had used {Shield Wall}, healing over 150% of his HP.

The fifth battle was with a Crusher, and Zhang Yang had used {Berserker's Heal} just after finishing its cool down.

For the last battle with a Pick-Up Truck, Zhang Yang had consumed a bottle of Grade 7 Transmutation Level 3 Healing potion and another same bottle after a minute into the fight. He had killed the boss with only 3,245 HP remaining.

Truthfully speaking, Zhang Yang had no need to consume any healing potions to fight the boss. He could have just allowed the Mythical Turtle to tank the boss for a bit and share the damage load. Naturally, the entire battle duration would be prolonged slightly. Zhang Yang had chosen not to be cheap and used the potion anyway to save some time instead. Zhang Yang had no need to save any gold coins in the first place!

After killing the boss, Zhang Yang quickly sat down to heal himself back to full health. In any event, where a wave of machines come to attack him, it would be quite an annoyance but not fatal to him.

Fuunnng! Fuuunng!

When Zhang Yang was healing, all six dead machines glowed with an intense red color as if they were resonating with each other!

Zhang Yang had no idea what was happening, were they trying to revive and attack him in one go?

"We had underestimated you, earth dweller!" All six bosses spoke in unison. After a loud crashing and clanking sound was heard, the machine rose up and started to merge together weird shape and sizes! Like the robots combining themselves in the show, Power Rangers, the machines transformed themselves into parts that fitted to the main body; heads, hands, and even legs!

Kachack! Kang! Klang!

All six parts joined in together and formed a complete, colossal machine!

A progress bar appeared on the top of its character with a 30 seconds countdown timer!

[Devastator] (Yellow-Gold, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 2,000

Note: Formed from the combination of Hook, Excavator, Cement Mixer, Flattener, Crusher, and Pick-Up Truck!

What the hell! After fighting so many bosses, Zhang Yang was actually expecting to fight something even stronger than a regular Yellow-Gold! It was actually rather disappointing for him!

However, a Yellow-Gold boss could never be compared with a Gray-Silver boss. Even though Zhang Yang had high confidence in his battle strategy to defeat the enemy, he had never underestimated an enemy's battle prowess! He used his remaining time to heal himself quickly.

After 20 seconds, Zhang Yang had recovered to full health and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss.

Immune!

Obviously, the system would not allow the boss to be vulnerable to players' attacks during the "preparation" time of 30 seconds!

...3...2...1...0!

"You have proven yourself to be among the strongest in this planet! For, it would require the six of us to defeat you!" the Devastator growled in a deep, mumble. It then thrust out his right arm and attacked Zhang Yang. After combining, the boss' mega structure was so huge, that it might be even larger than Megatron! Its fist was so huge that it could cast a gigantic shadow when it was about to smash Zhang Yang from above.

What a self-loving, narcissistic boss! So what, if it was a Yellow-Gold tier? There were many other bosses of the same tier, having stronger, deadlier, and faster attacks!

After all six Gray-Silver bosses were combined, their power had indeed gained a massive boost. Still, how strong they were, they were only a Level 88 Yellow-Gold boss. Far from the prowess of a Violet-Platinum boss, let alone a Mythical tier.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and delayed in attacking the boss. Instead, he unequipped his shield and attacked without it. He wanted the Mythical Turtle to gain more aggro, allowing it to be the temporary tank. Having close to 4,000 DPS, the Mythical Turtle's total damage output was only a little higher than Zhang Yang, and he could not use {Block} reflect damage and {Shield Bash}. As long as Zhang Yang held back just a little, the Mythical Turtle could maintain its aggro value.

After activating the Mythical Turtle's {Turtle Shell Defense}, Zhang Yang re-equipped his shield and started to attack after 20 seconds. With haste, Zhang Yang gained the boss attention and became the main target of the boss.

Zhang Yang activated the turtle's {Wild Recovery} and {Madness}, and the Mythical Turtle recovered rapidly.

Zhang Yang began to attack with all he had. After obtaining 5 pieces of

the Titan's set equipment, it had granted Zhang Yang's {Shield Bash} much higher DPS. The damage output for {Shield Bash} after {Cripple Defense} was 4,696. Having 6 seconds of cooldown interval, the additional DPS it added to Zhang Yang's overall DPS was 783. If he was lucky enough to trigger a Critical strike, it would add much more DPS!

Nothing but wails of pain coming, only from Zhang Yang's enemy, the Decepticon, Devastator!

Chapter 385: The New Servant

In the cartoon, Devastator was one of the savage generals of Decepticons, and its iconic combination function was extremely strong!

Admittedly, to smack around a strong villain from a childhood cartoon was a very exhilarating moment! Zhang Yang was very excited, as this cartoon was a classic, over 60 years ago.

{Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall} and [Heart of the Death Knight]'s effect were activated in succession, and Zhang Yang drank the Grade 10 Transmutation potions like a jug of water, while also drinking a health potion. Then, he used {Rearm} to reactivate {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} once again. He vigorously bombarded Devastator' HP down to less than 10%!

"No! D*mn it, earthling!" Devastator roared as its body pivoted, its left arm suddenly falling off and transforming into Long Haul, "I will crush you to pieces! I will!"

Long Haul remained the same Gray-Silver boss that was close to death, with one HP remaining, but it carried an invincible effect which made it immune to all damage as long as Devastator still stood.

This means that as long as the main body is not destroyed, even with Long Haul having only 1 HP, it would never die!

This was another kind of a boss' berserk mode!

Zhang Yang was holding on to his {Titan's Shield}, the key to his survival! Currently, he retained only 50,000 HP, which was far from critical!

Qiang qiang qiang!

Devastator' HP was depleted by another 2%, and its right leg also suddenly became separated from its main body, which then transformed into Bonecrusher, and continued launching aggressive attacks towards Zhang Yang!

Three versus one!

6%, Devastator' left leg suddenly broke off and turned into Hook!

The boss had lost its two legs and was unable to move, but its huge hand was enough to cover the distance of 30 meters. So, if Zhang Yang wanted to continue attacking the boss, he had to also remain in the range of the boss' attacks!

With the four bosses allied and attacking Zhang Yang at the same time, Zhang Yang's HP also started to decrease rapidly!

4%!

The boss' right arm finally fell off as well, and turned into nothing but scrap. Five versus one!

Zhang Yang thought that the boss' main body was a dummy, but Devastator's eyes suddenly flashed and emitted two rays of laser that instantly dealt 8,000 damage to Zhang Yang!

{Titan's Shield} initiated!

2%! The main body part of Devastator also transformed into Mixmaster. At present, there was only Scavenger still intact as Devastator' head. To bombard the boss' remaining 2% HP, regardless of {Thunder Strike}, {Horizontal Sweep} or {Blast Wave}, any of these AoE skills could also kill the six bosses at the same time!

A Yellow-Gold boss and five Gray-Silver bosses were definitely powerful, but {Titan's Shield} could absorb 300,000 damage which was equivalent to four times of Zhang Yang's HP! Who else could defeat Zhang Yang?!

1%!

0%!

Zhang Yang finally bombarded Devastator' last drop of HP, and Devastator' huge head also turned into Scavenger's appearance!

The six Gray-Silver bosses only had 1 HP, and their invincible effect had disappeared!

'{Horizontal Sweep}!'

Zhang Yang slashed them with his shiny sword, and six bosses fell defeated at the same time. A gold chest dropped from them.

Zhang Yang quickly opened up the chest. Regardless of opening whichever grade of chests, players would always be excited!

[Servant: Devastator] (Silver-tier)

Use: Summons Devastator as your servant in battle. Lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon one Servant at a time. Summoning any Servant will cause all Servants to be in cooldown. Cooldown time: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

Binds on pick up.

Zhang Yang thought for a while, and decided to pick up the Servant directly as his original [Servant: Clear Lotus] was already outdated, and although her {Substitute} was still strong, 30 minutes of cooldown just to summon her for a {Substitute} skill was not really worth it!

Zhang Yang then summoned Devastator to see its standards.

[Devastator] (Silver-Tier Servant)

Level: 88

HP: 22,400 (25,980 with {Vitality Aura})

Defense: 2,500

Melee Damage: 4,689 – 5,289 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 1,663)

Skills: {Quake Strike}, {Force Blast}, {Heavy Fist}

{Quake Strike}: Beats the ground continuously with both arms, causes 2,000 physical damage every 2 seconds to all the surrounding targets within 20x20 meters. Lasts for 10 seconds. During this period, the caster must always maintain a channeling status. Cooldown time: 5 minutes.

{Force Blast}: Causes all the targets within caster's 5 meters range to be knocked back 10 meters behind and interrupts the targets' casting bar. Cooldown time: 5 minutes.

{Heavy Fist}: Uses a huge fist to strike a target, and the target will receive

a melee damage equivalent to 100% of physical damage. Cooldown time: 5 seconds.

This Servant's basic damage was similar to a player who was equipped with Level 80 Yellow-Gold equipment, but its offensive skills were not strong enough, which was {Heavy Fist} only. Although both {Quake Strike} and {Force Blast} were powerful skills, their cooldown times were too long.

However, this Servant was huge!

Zhang Yang was only as tall as Devastator's toe, and Zhang Yang could not imagine what happens if he summons this servant in a place where the space is not big enough!

There was nothing else of note in the chest, only two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment with mediocre attributes were found in the chest, Zhang Yang could not even find any Gray-Silver equipment in the chest! Zhang Yang assumed the Gray-Silver equipment was included in the loot from the previous six Gray-Silver bosses.

After picking up all the loot, the gold chest automatically disappeared, and Zhang Yang continued moving forwards.

The system was not designed to let the players confront with the boss so easily, and along the way, there were so many minions popping up and launching attacks towards Zhang Yang. However, it was not a bad deal, as Zhang Yang could also get experience points and mining bars along the way!

About two hours later, Zhang Yang finally reached the deepest of the cave.

The landscape here seemed more capacious, and the mini-map finally showed a blinking spot which indicated that the sixth piece of [Key fragments], just within 200 meters!

Zhang Yang looked up and he saw that Megatron was standing on a 10 meters tall hillside far away. Megatron seemed to be fiddling with something like a Rubik's Cube, and this cube emitted unusual rays towards a metal ore.

The metal ores that came into contact with the rays trembled vigorously, and then turned into mechanical servants! The huge robots were transformed from big metal ores while the smaller robots were transformed from the smaller metal ores. To Zhang Yang, they were all giants!

This must be [Allspark]!

It was amazing and it could continuously create the mechanical lifeforms!

Luckily, Megatron had just created the normal minions through [Allspark], therefore, Zhang Yang did not really bother about it! The main issue was that Megatron's eye and the scars on his whole body had been fully repaired.

What frustrated Zhang Yang the most, was that Megatron had actually turned into a Violet-Platinum boss!

[Megatron, Leader of Decepticon] (Violet-Platinum, Mechanical Servant)

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

Defense: 3,000

This must be the effect of [Allspark], since it could create mechanical life, curing some injuries would not be a big deal!

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang could not fight this Violet-Platinum boss alone.

Zhang Yang equipped the [Party Summon Order], called up Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest into the party channel and said, "Let's fight a boss!"

"Is it a Violet-Platinum boss?" Wei Yan Er excitedly asked, as although she already had a Violet-Platinum two handed axe, she still had not obtained any Violet-Platinum set equipment parts, which made her impatient.

"Stupid brat. If it's not a Violet-Platinum boss, I can simply defeat the

boss myself without having to call any of you guys up, right?"

"Hmph, if not for my stupidity, how else would you be able to appear smart in contrast?"

"... That's some abstract thinking, since when were you so smart?"

After all nine people had joined the party, Zhang Yang activated [Party Summon Order], and then Sun Xin Yu and the rest instantly appeared around Zhang Yang.

"Megatron?"

"Leader of Decepticon?"

"Is this the legendary Transformers?"

Lost Dream and the rest of the guys were astounded, as all of the boys loved Transformers!

"Where is Optimus Prime?"

"He is dead, write him a note to hell if you have any questions!" Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders as he said.

Wei Yan Er had no idea what the Transformers were, and she did not even know that Transformers represented the men's childhood memories. She swung her broad axe with murderous intent and said, "Quickly, kill the boss and drop me some set equipment!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I will pull the boss, Starlight will tank the minions. If I can last long enough by then, let's kill the boss together!"

"En!"

Zhang Yang held his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and dashed towards the boss. Endless Starlight did not move immediately, but held his shield up, carefully surveying the crowd of monsters. When killing groups of monsters, tanks fear getting swarmed out to a point beyond their control. Also, it would be like trying to catch chickens in a chicken coop with doors open on all sides. Catching hold of them all at once would be difficult.

"Earthling, you actually had the guts to follow me here?" Megatron looked at Zhang Yang with his eyes, full of strong hatred. Megatron kept the [Allspark] and took out a red flashing sword from his back with its two hands, and then strode towards Zhang Yang, "Great, at least I can have my revenge at once!"

As the boss moved, the minions surrounding the boss were all affected by the aggro link, and instantly, the minions formed a tidal wave of robots and rushed towards Zhang Yang.

That was good, as Endless Starlight would not need to chase after the minions by himself!

"Evil b*tchy, Fantasy, don't cast healing on me first, as now, all the minions' aggro are on me. If any of you cast healing on me, they will come after you! Let me use {Berserker's Heal} first!" Zhang Yang lifted his sword and shield.

"Roger that!"

Megatron strode forward and it waved the sword in its hand and threw a huge cleave at Zhang Yang's neck.

{Block}!

-1! {Block} reflected damage.

Before adding five stacks of {Cripple Defense} on the boss, even if Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} which ignored the boss' 50% defense value, with the boss' 1500 defense value, Zhang Yang could barely hurt him.

-3,196!

Zhang Yang quickly followed by a "free" {Shield Bash}, and this time the damage was impressive!

Chapter 386: A Fierce Fight against Megatron

"Idiots, all of you do not deserve to take possession of this world!" Megatron launched another attack and slashed at Zhang Yang, "I proclaim that this world will be ruled by us!"

"I never thought that this mechanical boss would have such a great ambition in its mechanical brain!" Han Ying Xue teased.

"Sure, everyone must have a dream!"

"Sigh!" Fatty Han sighed, "When will my little dream come true?!"

Zhang Yang smiled as he said, "Fatty, you are that eager to get married to Xiao Wei, huh? She still has not graduated from university, calm your flaps down!"

"Xiao Wei is good at everything but she is too strict with me!" Fatty Han sighed again and again, "It is my fault as I had an impulse to confess to her about something that had happened previously. So, she was worried about it and she calls my house phone every hour to 'check' on me, and if I do not pick up the phone within 3 rings, she will break up with me! Sigh, now I even fear to go to the loo. Like yesterday, I ran out off the toilet for a phone call and I did not even wipe my ass! Luckily there was no one else in my house, otherwise, people would have seen my naked *ss!"

"Yo!" all of the girls covered their noses and mouths with their hands.

At this moment, the minions rushed towards them like a tidal wave, but Zhang Yang was already prepared and waited for them. Zhang Yang launched {Blast Wave}!

‘-1,228!’

‘-1,228!’

...

All of sudden, countless of ‘-1,000’ damage texts floated among the minions, and one after another of minions replaced those which were

defeated. [Sword of Purging Devourer] flaunted the [Dark Enigmatic Sword]'s special effect like a new baby. Therefore, the scene was like fireworks, with dazzling damage texts.

As the [Sword of Purging Devourer]'s level requirement was Level 90, it meant that the 2% chance of activating special effect would only decline after Zhang Yang reaches Level 110!

Besides, Wei Yan Er also provided a {Strength Aura} during the battle, and 8% of Strength didn't seem like much, but it actually increased Zhang Yang's Strength attribute by 100 points, and this was a permanent Strength increment! On the other hand, if Lost Dream successfully triggered critical attacks, then [Song of Victory]'s special effect would be activated which would also increase another 300 points of Strength attribute!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

'-7,924!'

'-8,243!'

'-8,721!'

...

A series of '-7,900' damage texts floated among the minions once again, within the range of Zhang Yang's sword slashes, a lot of minions instantly screamed in pain and fell defeated. But they never dropped any equipment and only equally distributed 850 experience points to everyone.

{Horizontal Sweep} also immediately activated [Sword of Purging Devourer]'s special effect of cloning the attacks. The damage texts floated among the minions again and again!

Zhang Yang then summoned [Servant: Devastator], and once this huge fellow appeared, it uttered a thunderous roar, and both of its arms struck the ground and then started beating the ground continuously with both arms.

{Quake Strike} activated!'

‘-1,980!’

‘-1,980!’

...

{Quake Strike} was a terrifying AoE skill as it dealt 10,000 basic damage within 10 seconds!

After three rounds of attacks, at least hundreds of minions were killed instantly, and this scene left Han Ying Xue and the rest astounded!

"Although I have seen this many times, that damage is too powerful. I strongly request to weaken this, otherwise, our pure attacker classes are going to look lame!" Lost Dream shook his head as he said.

Endless Starlight laughed happily and said, "Now you know that tanks could be quite capable, huh!"

"Pfft, it's not you launching such powerful attacks!" Fantasy Sweetheart pursed her lips as she said.

"Pretty sis Fantasy, you are wrong by saying so. Boss Zhan Yu and my hearts are always united, both of our souls are eternally bound and beat as one! Thus, there is no difference between both of our attacks!" Endless Starlight said shamelessly.

Suddenly, all the girls looked at Zhang Yang together.

Zhang Yang quickly put up his hands and said, "I don't even know this person!"

Endless Starlight shyly smiled and said, "Brother Yu, have you forgotten the Little Star at the beautiful Da Ming Lake?"

Everyone burst into laughter.

Before all of the minions had been cleared, the party could not strike the boss. So, all of them launched AoE skills to kill all the minions ferociously! The thousands of minions were indecently slaughtered by party members' strong firepower, especially Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer]!

After four minutes later, all of the minions were almost annihilated!

"Wretched earthlings, stop it!" Megatron roared again and again, and it stretched out its left arm, and a [Magic Cannon] immediately unfolded itself from its arm, and a white light flashed at the muzzle of the cannon, gradually growing in size.

A casting bar appeared on top of the boss' head: [Magic Firearm].
Casting time: 3 seconds!

Zhang Yang quickly yelled, "Everyone, back away from me! At least 10 meters, no, at least 20 meters!"

The mechanical servant was like a moving castle, and that [Magic Firearm] was a miniature [Magic Cannon]! Thus, Zhang Yang believed that the power of this [Magic Firearm] would almost be able to wipe out any average player, and that he would be able to withstand it!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest were smart enough, all of them immediately stayed away from Zhang Yang.

Shush!

Three seconds later, a ray of bright light from the muzzle of Megatron's [Magic Firearm] shot towards Zhang Yang!

Bang!

‘-30,170!’

‘-40,000!’

Two damage texts immediately floated across Zhang Yang's and Mythical Turtle's heads respectively. Zhang Yang was unable to evade as he was already locked on as a target by the boss! As for the slow-moving Mythical Turtle, it stood no chance from the beginning!

As expected, this attack from the boss was an AoE and the coverage area of [Magic Firearm] was about 10x10 meters around the main target, and the basic damage was up to the terrifying amount of 40,000 damage!

This kind of high damage could only be withstood by a tank with the best equipment! If it was other attackers, they could only use survival skills!

"F*ck, is this the power of a Violet-Platinum boss? That's ridiculous!" everyone exclaimed as the Violet-Platinum bosses they met generally dealt about 20,000 basic damage.

"No! All of you, look at the boss' defense value!" Zhang Yang suddenly said.

"Dropped from 3,000 to 0!"

"What's going on?"

Lost Dream slapped his thigh as he said, "Ah, I get it! In sci-fi movies, if a space battleship wants to launch the main gun, it is required to draw away all the energy around it, including the energy of the shield! Thus, the boss' [Magic Firearm] would deal high damage to the enemy, while at the same time, the boss would also harm himself. Although the [Magic Firearm]'s damage is extremely powerful, the boss' defense value has drastically dropped as well!"

Everyone agreed and found this explanation logical.

Since the boss had zero defense value at this moment, everyone quickly launched attacks toward the boss vigorously! The boss' zero defense value gave an advantage to the physical-type attackers. Within Zhang Yang's party, except for Daffodil Daydream, the rest of the attackers were all physical-type attackers!

Suddenly, the party's attack power skyrocketed!

However, this good moment would not last long, as the boss recovered 100 defense value every two seconds. The boss would slowly recover to 500, 1,000, 2,000 until its defense bar was full, which was 3,000. This was only in theory, as in fact, half of the boss' defense value was already weakened by five stacks of {Cripple Defense}.

A minute later, Megatron's defense value recovered to full, and it stretched out its left arm once again. That [Magic Firearm] aimed towards Zhang Yang!

"Get out of the way!"

Everyone scurried away.

Bang!

A ray of bright light emerged from the muzzle, Zhang Yang and Mythical Turtle were immediately harmed by the high damage!

The boss' [Magic Firearm] was extremely powerful, if it was another tank with poor equipment, they would have been one-shotted! But, Zhang Yang had about 80,000 HP and these 30,000 damage values could not even reduce half of his HP!

Conversely, Megatron's defense value dropped drastically after it launched [Magic Firearm]'s attack.

The first time, everyone was not ready, but this time everyone was ready and immediately drank a [Power Potion] and madly launched attacks towards Megatron!

The boss increased its own attack power, but at the same time, the boss had also weakened its defense. On the other hand, this helped the party increase their attack power as well!

After the {Cripple Defense} debuffs, it only had 750 defense, which was actually similar to a Yellow-Gold boss.

"I'm Megatron, I'm undefeatable!" the boss angrily howled, and suddenly it lowered its body and beat the ground madly with both of its arms.

'Ding! Megatron has used {Quake Strike}!'

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Suddenly, the ground was like a jittering carpet, and the party felt as if they were in a ferryboat that was being continuously rocked by extremely big waves! The rocks were all broken, and the broken stones were hitting them like bullets!

'-14,820!'

'-14,940!'

'-14,780!'

...

Zhang Yang and the rest were blasted with huge damage values! Besides, the quaking ground caused them to stumble around drunkenly, therefore, they could not cast healings and attacks!

Within these 10 seconds, everybody continuously stumbled and fought to regain their footing! Luckily the damage was a one-time off, otherwise, 15,000 of damages every second could actually annihilate them directly!

Megatron attacked Zhang Yang madly, and because Zhang Yang was only buffed with two {Regeneration} skills, he lost a total of 50,000 HP! Also at that moment, Megatron's defense value had also been recovered back to 3,000, and the [Magic Firearm] had also started charging up!

"F*ck!"

Zhang Yang cursed the boss and activated his {Shield Wall}, while at the same time, he also commanded Mythical Turtle to initiate {Turtle Shell Defense}.

‘-6,170!’

‘-4,000!’

A bright light emerged from the muzzle of [Magic Firearm], and Zhang Yang only received 6,000 damage, while Mythical Turtle was even more powerful, with its {Turtle Shell Defense} resisting the damage by up to 90%. Therefore, Mythical Turtle only received 4,000 damage!

Finally, 10 seconds had passed!

Everyone stood up and started attacking, and casting healings.

"Little Yang, the boss' {Quake Strike} is much powerful than your robot servant!"

"... Bullsh*t, one's a boss, and the other's a servant, whaddayathink?!"

After getting through Megatron's combo, Megatron's HP bar had been reduced to 50%!

Now, the party had already found out the boss' attack patterns,

therefore, they knew when to launch attacks and when to evade. As a result, they now had it easy!

As long as you can anticipate a boss' attack pattern, the boss could be defeated with ease. The same goes for the open-world, overpowered bosses!

40%, 30%, 20%...

Megatron's powerful damage had almost come to an end. Although Megatron's damage was still quite strong, Zhang Yang was still undefeatable in front of Megatron. Megatron's futile attacks would only be counteracted completely by Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart!

10%!

"Bastard, damn it earthlings, I want to kill all of you! I must kill all of you!" Megatron roared loudly and launched the second {Quake Strike}.

This was also the last rage mode of the boss.

They passed the boss' attack smoothly. After this, they were going to claim victory!

3%, 2%, 1%!

Bang!

Megatron's huge mechanical body fell defeated, and then countless sparks poured out from its body and causing some exploding sounds.

"Hu, finally defeated the boss!"

Zhang Yang walked over to the boss' corpse and picked up a shining silvery metal fragment and a cube-shaped metal block that was bigger than his brain.

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Dimensional Key Fragment 6!'

Zhang Yang kept the sixth fragment, but that cube-shaped metal block was un-lootable, and actually had a HP bar!

[Allspark] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Note: The miracle created by an ancient Great God which can create mechanical lives.

Unfortunately, players were unable to use [Allspark]!

Zhang Yang felt that it was too bad that he could not use the [Allspark], and with a heavy heart, he raised his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and brought it down on the [Allspark].

‘-4,134!’

Instantly, like a sodium compound reacting with water, the [All Spark] then ignited with a bright light and lit up the air! This process lasted for about 10 seconds, and when the flame was extinguished, the [Allspark] was only left with a fragment about a size of a little finger.

Zhang Yang was speechless as he seemed to be having an endless fate with fragments!

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Destroy [Allspark]. Obtained 5,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have successfully completed side quest. Please pick up your reward!’

Eh?

Zhang Yang’s eyes shone and picked up the [Fragment Allspark], this item could only be used after it has been broken into slag?

[Fragment of Allspark] (Tool)

Use: Create Level 85 elite mechanical Servants to help you guard your territory. You must have a territory, or your guild must have a territory. Otherwise, if you summon the mechanical Servant, it will disappear automatically after 5 minutes. Mechanical Servants can permanently guard the territory, but they cannot be resurrected after death and they can only be active within the range of 1 kilometer from a territory. The number of the mechanical Servant that territory can accommodate is

decided by the level of city defense. Level 1 city defense: 100, Level 2 city defense: 500, Level 3 city defense: 1,000, Level 4 city defense: 2,000, Level 5 city defense: 5,000. Cooldown time: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 80

Bound.

Zhang Yang was stunned!

Chapter 387: Spirit of the Flame

As the mining cave had been providing many different kinds of mining ore, Thunderstorm Castle had already been built up to the Level 2 city defense and they were almost reaching Level 3 city defense!

In other words, the total amount of mechanical Servants that Thunderstorm Castle could accommodate would be up to 1,000!

These were 1,000 Level 85 elites! With the help of the players, if there is another monster attack, Zhang Yang was confident that he could easily defend Thunderstorm Castle against a monster attack.

"Noob tank, did you get any good items? Your smiling so tightly that your eyes have disappeared!" Wei Yan Er said sweetly.

"Is it that bad?" Zhang Yang smiled as he asked.

"Yes! Yes!" Wei Yan Er nodded again and again.

Zhang Yang then posted the [Fragment of the Allspark]'s description in party channel, and everybody 'ooed' at it.

"Oh my gosh, our Thunderstorm Castle is going to reach Level 3 city defense, would it be possible to accommodate 1,000 robots?"

"He he, if other guilds want to attack our territory, I can't imagine their expressions when they see our elite robots!"

"Ha ha ha, it must be quite interesting!"

Everyone was laughing joyfully, while Wei Yan Er was more interested in the boss' loot. Therefore, she quickly ran over and picked up the loot.

[Titan Handguards] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +564

Strength: +378

Dexterity: +161

[unidentified]

Class Requirement: Berserker

Level Requirement: 80

Titan Armor Set (1/8):

3 pieces: Increases your Strength attribute by 500 points.

5 pieces: Reduces {Tornado Cleave}'s cooldown time by 1 second.

8 pieces: Every time you successfully hit a target, there is 1% chance to acquire 'Blessing of Titan', inflicting serious damage to the target.

Zhang Yang was very excited when he saw [Titan Handguards] but when he read the equipment's details further, he almost collapsed! As it was the Titan Armor Set for Berserkers. These game developers were pretty lazy, they did not even bother to change the name of armor set!

Without a doubt, this equipment would go to Wei Yan Er. The little brat was extremely happy, and her beautiful eyes became crescent moons as she smiled.

[Fearless Hammer] (Violet-Platinum, One Handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 1,305 – 1,705

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 538

Equipment: After successfully hitting the target, there is 1% chance of recovering 500 HP.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

This hammer could be used by Guardians, Defenders and Bandits but Defenders had {Mace Mastery}. On the other hand, there were no Bandits in the party, and Zhang Yang already had the [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Therefore, this hammer suited Endless Starlight the best.

[Flag of Brave Fight] (Violet-Platinum, Accessory)

Use: Increases your Strength attribute by 1,000 points. Lasts for 15

seconds. Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

"Wow! It is mine! It is mine!" Wei Yan Er smiled even happier, today must be her harvest day!

Certainly, the accessory that increases Strength attribute should be prioritized for Berserkers. Therefore, Wei Yan Er happily received the [Flag of Brave Fight]. The boss' loot was left with only six pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, and after distributing two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, the rest of the Yellow-Gold equipment was given to Zhang Yang to sell in Little Merchandise Shop.

"Let's return to the city! Let's return to the city!" Wei Yan Er could not wait for her equipment and weapons to be identified, and of course, she would want Zhang Yang to pay up for her!

Everyone was unable to walk out from this cave, therefore, they tore off [Teleportation Scrolls] and returned to White Jade Castle.

Little brat dragged Zhang Yang to the Item Identifier to identify her [Titan Handguards]. After that, Zhang Yang went to his Little Merchandise Shop to put on the equipment they had just looted for sale. Next, Zhang Yang went to the auction house to seek for some good items as this was also one of his interests.

"Come on, have a look at these!" a lot of street vendors were nearby the entrance of an auction house and obviously these people were unwilling to be defrauded of the 20% transaction fee by the auction house, therefore, they chose to peddle outside auction house. Besides, there was no better place than to peddle outside the auction house.

There were a few good items for sale there, and some Yellow-Gold equipment too! Unfortunately, Zhang Yang already had a lot of equipment and he was only interested in skill books and recipes!

"Hey brother, don't look at that Yellow-Gold equipment, you cannot afford them! Come here, look at the Level 70 Gray-Silver equipment, they are good and cheap. Let me tell you frankly, you do not have many

chances to battle against bosses, thus, it is pointless for you to equip all the Yellow-Gold equipment. Gray-Silver equipment would be better as it is affordable and fulfills your requirement of gaining levels!"

When Zhang Yang was browsing around, that street vendor took the initiative to chat with Zhang Yang.

Initially, Zhang Yang did not notice who the street vendor was. When he looked up at the street vendor, he was an Orc Bandit, and equipped with nondescript equipment. He was wearing a cloth armor hat, heavy armor boots and holding a scarlet staff!

Indeed, bandits could wear cloth armor but cloth armor did not increase any Strength and Dexterity attributes, therefore, it would be pointless to wear cloth armor! Similarly, Bandits could wear heavy armor but heavy armor would not add any attributes to bandits. Same went to the staff, Bandits could equip stave,s but the staff would not add damage attributes to a Bandit.

In short, this bandit was either an idiot, or is simply trolling about!

However, the cloth armor hat, heavy armor boots, and scarlet staff the Orc Bandit were wearing and holding were all Yellow-Gold grade! Besides, these were all the top equipment at the current phase, with Violet-Platinum equipment being a luxury equipment.

‘Big Cannon, Level 76, Male, Orc Bandit, [Mysterious Heavens Fort].’

This Orc Bandit deserved the name Big Cannon, as he was good at exaggerating the equipment and criticized Zhang Yang when he first saw Zhang Yang! However, he was correct as ordinary players truly needed only Gray-Silver equipment to fulfill their requirement of gaining levels, and ordinary players hardly battled against bosses! But this Orc Bandit liked to bad-mouth and easily offended people.

Zhang Yang did not bother him much. Zhang Yang also hid his profile as he did not want people to recognize him to avoid causing any trouble. Because of this, some arrogant fellows would often swagger around him.

Big Cannon continued as he saw Zhang Yang smiled at him, "Brother,

what is your level now? Don't worry, here I have equipment from Level 20 to 70 and these will definitely fulfill your requirement! Look at me, I'm wearing all the Yellow-Gold equipment, I look cool right?"

It's more than just cool, it was actually convulsion!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I'm not interested in equipment, show me some skill books and recipes!"

Zhang Yang had been waiting impatiently for [Zombie Potion]'s recipe as he was not able to find it, and so far he never saw anyone selling it in auction house yet.

"He he, you are seeking for the right person! Our guild just defeated a Yellow-Gold boss yesterday and it dropped a pet skill book, but our guild's main force doesn't have a Hunter, and the rest of the Hunter members in our guild do not value this good skill book, so I'm taking it out for sale. Have a look at this, this is the best pet skill book {Spirit of the Flame} and I'm only selling it for 10,000 gold coins!" Big Cannon was acting like a pimp, he took a skill book with red cover from his inventory and showed it to Zhang Yang.

{Spirit of the Flame}?

En!

Zhang Yang's eyes suddenly shone, could it be that skill? If so, I must have found good stuff!

"Fine, I want this!" Zhang Yang nodded with great satisfaction.

"Honey, my petal hasn't learned any skills yet, buy me a pet skill book!" at that moment, a Human couple appeared in front of Zhang Yang, the male's name was Overlord Prince of Dragon City, while the female's name was Rose Fairy.

The female was embraced within the male's arms as she cooed. The female was a Hunter, and there was a floral-spotted tiger following behind her.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City patted the female's hand and talked to

Big Cannon with an arrogant expression, "What pet skill books do you have? Show me the most expensive one, I have a lot of money!"

"Honey, you are so domineering!" Rose Fairy said with an admirable expression.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City lightly touched the female's chest and smiled with a complacent face.

F*ck, that was the typical wealthy fool!

Big Cannon quickly waved the {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book towards Overlord Prince of Dragon City and said, "Overlord Prince, right? Have a look at this {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book, yesterday our guild defeated a Yellow-Gold boss and it dropped this skill book. This absolutely a godly skill book! How is it? I know that Overlord Prince, you are rich, if the price I offer is too low, it would mean that I am looking down on you, Overlord Prince. So, 50,000 gold coins it is!"

Although Big Cannon was bad-mouthed, he was good at hoodwinking people, and he successfully hoodwinked that Overlord Prince of Dragon City into confusion!

"Honey, I want this!" Rose Fairy shook Overlord Prince's arm as she said.

Zhang Yang was frowning, he did not bother how Big Cannon hoodwinked Overlord Prince, but Zhang Yang must get that {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book! Zhang Yang said, "Big Cannon, I had eyes on that {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book first!"

"Hey, who the hell are you?!" Rose Fairy stared at Zhang Yang.

Big Cannon said, "Brother, I haven't sold this skill book to you yet! I'm sorry, we are just trading for money, right? Overlord Prince, he is willing to buy this with 50,000 gold coins. Dude, please don't call this injustice if you don't have money. Nowadays, everyone looks at the money!"

This was going to be trouble!

Zhang Yang sighed as he said, "Alright, I will buy this with 50,000 gold coins, first come first serve!"

Overlord Prince of Dragon City was frustrated then shouted, "60,000 gold coins!"

"Honey, you are so imperious!" Rose Fairy supported Zhang Yang, and some females really loved to see their man flaunting his wealth for their sake.

However, Zhang Yang would not do such a thing like these wealthy fools, even though he was very rich himself, as it was not worth it at all! But this was related to {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book, he had to get the skill book!

"70,000!" he said calmly.

"80,000!"

"100,000!"

"110,000!"

"200,000." Zhang Yang lost his patience and started adding the bid by 100,000.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City suddenly laughed and said, "Damn it, is this guy a confederate?! You really thought that I'm a wealthy fool and don't understand what you two doing?"

F*ck, if you are not a wealthy fool, then who else is the jackass?!

Chapter 388: The Competition

Overlord Prince of Dragon City could not believe Zhang Yang, and even Big Cannon also shocked, he looked at Zhang Yang as he said, "Dude, you don't make trouble just because I'm not selling the skill book to you! You are poor, because you were born in a poor family's background and you are disappointed, I get it, just don't blame society for it!"

F*ck, Zhang Yang could not bear with them anymore!

Zhang Yang opened up Trade window with Big Cannon and keyed in 200,000 gold coins, but he never selected "Confirm transaction".

In 'God's Miracle', the amount of money keyed into the Trade window is restricted by the players' money. If the players had 100,000 gold coins, they would not be allowed to key in 100,001 gold coins in the Trade window, even an extra copper coin was not allowed!

The reason Zhang Yang did so just to prove to Big Cannon that he could pay the price of 200,000 gold coins.

Big Cannon stopped talking, regardless of who the winner of this auction is, he would be the biggest winner of all!

From Big Cannon's reaction, both Overlord Prince of Dragon City and Rose Fairy realized that Zhang Yang actually able to pay 200,000 gold coins.

"Honey!" Rose Fairy saw that Overlord Prince of Dragon City did not continue bidding, she shook Overlord Prince of Dragon City's arm again and again as she acted like a spoiled child.

"... 210,000!" Overlord Prince of Dragon City endured the pain in his heart! He must be an idiot for wasting so much money to buy a pet skill book that he was not even sure about! Although he was pretty rich, he did not reach the level that he could simply spend the money like water.

Rose Fairy was immediately contented with Overlord Prince of Dragon City's reaction and gave a snort of disgust towards Zhang Yang. For her, this is not about {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book anymore but pride!

"300,000." Zhang Yang was not going to give up {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book, therefore, he continued bidding with Overlord Prince of Dragon City and Rose Fairy. Zhang Yang sighed internally as he realized that he had acted almost similarly to the both of them.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City's facial expression had changed, and his veins on his face almost burst as 300,000 was been far beyond the limits he can tolerate.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City sent a private message to Zhang Yang, "Bastard, get out of my way immediately. Otherwise, I will order my followers to kill until your level drops to zero!"

This scumbag, did he not know that the game had already revised such a function?

Zhang Yang ignored Overlord Prince of Dragon City and talked to Big Cannon, "300,000 gold coins, and hurry up, wrap it up already!"

Big Cannon looked at Overlord Prince of Dragon City, but Overlord Prince of Dragon City avoided Big Cannon's gaze. Therefore, Big Cannon knew what to do, and he said, "Alright, deal!" the skill book that he intended to sell at 10,000 had been jacked up to 300,000, therefore, he had nothing more to complain!

Rose Fairy anxious and yelled, "Honey! Quickly, increase the bid! Bid him to death!"

"Increase my *ss!" Overlord Prince of Dragon City got angry, turned around and slapped Rose Fairy in her face. Because PvP was not allowed in the main city, Overlord Prince of Dragon City was not able to slap Rose Fairy, but waved his hand in front Rose Fairy's face and slapped the air.

Rose Fairy turned furious and yelled loudly, "You this weakling scumbag, you cannot fight against others so you decide to release your anger on me! You son of the b*tch, I'd rather get f*cked by a dog, I don't want you to touch me!"

She flung Overlord Prince of Dragon City's arm away and ran away without looking back.

Zhang Yang already completed the transaction with Big Cannon and got the {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book.

He summoned Mythical Turtle and patted {Spirit of the Flame}'s skill book on the Violet-Platinum Mythical Turtle, and let it learn the skill.

{Spirit of the Flame}: After activating this skill, all of the pet's physical damage will cause Fire damage. Lasts for 10 minutes. Cooldown time: 1 hour.

This was an extremely powerful skill!

Most of the bosses in 'God's Miracle' had high physical defense and low Magical resistance. Therefore, when the pet activates {Spirit of the Flame}, the pet will completely ignore the boss' defense and cause terrifying damage!

This was also similar to Zhang Yang's {Eagle Eye}!

Although {Spirit of the Flame} only lasted for 10 minutes, it is sufficient to fight against the bosses at the current phase! When fighting against minions, there would be no need of activating such a powerful skill at all.

Ta ta ta!

As Zhang Yang planned to enter the auction house to continue looking around, he saw that there were about 10 players riding war horses towards him from the corner of the street. One of them looked high-handed, like he was some sort of famous figure.

Eh?

Zhang Yang was lightly stunned internally as the person who was leading the group was somebody he knew long ago, Rogue Bunny from Rogue Family! Those following behind him were the Bunny brothers.

"Overlord Prince, which vulgar fellow triggered your anger? We, Rogue Family, will help you destroy him!" Rogue Bunny patted his chest as he said, and his face was full of righteousness.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City laughed out loud and looked at Zhang Yang as he said, "Bastard, I already warned you! Whoever fights against

me, will pay a price! How is it? I have so many people with me, now you should be afraid of me!"

Rogue Bunny walked forward and he suddenly frowned as he recognized Zhang Yang, "Why does this fellow look so familiar?!"

Bunny Bro Three also walked forwards and looked at Zhang Yang carefully. Suddenly he cried out involuntarily, "He was the bastard fellow who tricked us into saying "we are all stupid" in the beginner villages, after that he annihilated all of us!"

"He is..."

"... Zhan Yu!"

"Zhan Yu!" be it the members of Rogue Family, Overlord Prince of Dragon City or Big Cannon, all of them showed a shocking expression. Ever since Soaring Swords competition, Zhang Yang had become the China's top player and commanding the strongest guild in China, who would not be aware of this?!

Overlord Prince of Dragon City was taken aback and said, "Zhan Yu, since you are a famous figure, I will show you some respect! As long as you apologize, we are even!"

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, "Why should I apologize? I wanted this skill book first and you wanted to snatch it away from me, and now you call your people over to gang up on me? Although I don't like to make trouble, that doesn't mean that I'm a coward!"

Zhang Yang did not intend to argue with Overlord Prince of Dragon City, and since PvP was not allowed in the main city, Zhang Yang directly moved forwards into the auction house.

"Bastard!" Overlord Prince of Dragon City was extremely angry, and he pulled his sleeves and made to chase after Zhang Yang.

"Overlord Prince!" Rogue Bunny quickly stopped him and said, "Zhang Yang has Lone Desert Smoke behind his back, we can't afford to offend him!"

Overlord Prince of Dragon City calmed down a little, but he was still angry and said, "I cannot take it! If we let him go just like this, how am I going to face people in the future?"

"Overlord Prince, calm down, there is still a chance in the future! The true man must endure a moment of anger and wait for the right timing and chance to fight against the enemy!" Rogue Bunny thought as he said, "Besides, we are not allowed to PvP in the main city. Let's look for a chance to ambush him in the open world! Although that fellow is the China's top tank, how can he fight against 40 of our people? Even the invincible King Kong will also be defeated by us!"

"Ha ha, deal! You keep your eyes on him, as long as this deal is done, I'll reward you!"

"Thank you, Overlord Prince!"

...

Zhang Yang did not find good stuff in the auction house. After searching around, he used a [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Thunderstorm Castle. Most of the main quests at the moment could not be completed, and the last [Key fragment] could only be found at Level 90 map, Ten Barren Sea; while the second seal of [Sword of Purging Devourer] could only be unsealed when he is able to enter Chaos Realm, and the other two main quests also could only be continued after he entered Chaos Realm. Thus, he had nothing to do now other than to train for his levels.

The use of [Fragment Allspark] was very restricted, as it could only be used in Thunderstorm Castle. Otherwise, the mechanical Servants Zhang Yang summon would disappear automatically after five minutes. Zhang Yang urged the guild members to quickly gathered the ingredients to upgrade the Thunderstorm Castle to a Level 3 city defense.

[Fragment Allspark] created a mechanical Servant every hour. Theoretically, 72 mechanical Servants would be created within a day of real time and seven days were required to reach the number of mechanical Servants to accommodate a Level 2 city defense.

The guild members of Lone Desert Smoke were pretty supportive, as all

of them aggressively looked for the ingredients to upgrade the Level 3 city defense as Zhang Yang urged them. Of course, Zhang Yang would not allow his guild members to work for nothing, and he bought all of their ingredients at market price.

After a day, Zhang Yang and his guild members were to meet their semifinal's opponent in battle, which was Lone Desert Smoke's sub-guild!

Indeed, it was a battle between Lone Desert Smoke and Lone Desert Smoke!

Due to Mountain Mover's outstanding commands, the sub-guild performed with excellent competitiveness instead of performing like a low ranked guild! They continuously beat opponents and overcame difficulties, and finally, they met their main guild in the semifinals, which made a lot of people astounded with the capability of Lone Desert Smoke's sub-guild!

Of course, Sage of God Killer, the guild master of Sage of God's Path was extremely regretful!

Both sides underwent a friendly battle, and lastly, sub-guild automatically threw in the towel and quitted the battle. As a result, the sub-guild was going to battle against Imperial Sky and Radiance for the third place.

After a while, the battle between Imperial Sky and Radiance had ended and Imperial Sky finally won the battle, which caused Radiance's battle of revenge to fail. This also meant that, the finale of the guild war was similar to the Soaring Swords competition's final, which was a battle between Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky.

This finale also caused a lot of discussions in the forum, had Imperial Sky also dispatched a cyber army to criticize Lone Desert Smoke, as a Level 3 guild was being oppressive towards a Level 2 guild. Even if they win the battle, they would have won disgracefully, which would shame China's strongest guild!

Zhang Yang did not even bother about it and he would not talk about fairness with Imperial Sky. Besides, he upgraded his guild level by killing the boss and the boss dropped a [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order], he paid

hard work for it, why should Zhang Yang give up this superiority?

After a day, the battle between Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky finally commenced!

Previously, both of these guilds were fighting each other on a smaller scale, and they did not have a war with each other. Therefore, this guild war attracted a lot of attention, countless of players came to the audience seats and were ready to enjoy the war between two strong guilds!

Certainly, almost 90% of the people believed that Lone Desert Smoke would win the final victory. After all, everyone had seen the capability of Lone Desert Smoke, besides, the number of Lone Desert Smoke's people were more than half of the opponent. If Lone Desert Smoke could not win this, it would be doubtful whether it is a one sided contest!

Chapter 389: Sailor Moon

Even though everyone had guessed the outcome of the competition, the entire process of the battle was really out of expectation.

It was totally a one-sided slaughter!

Under the tactical command of Mountain Mover, the Lone Desert Smoke exhibited their explosive battle power to the public by taking out Imperial Sky off their feet with just a snap of their finger tips! It was really lamentable to see how a large army of absolute power was broken down by one super tactician on their enemy side. The difference of just one person could really make a difference!

During the competition, Zhang Yang had also let Fatty Han and the Sub-Guild join into the main guild on purpose. The intention was to let every single one of them get their very own Gray-Silver grade [Battle Mount]!

And it really did happen, because this system of the competition was full of loop holes to exploit. The moment Lone Desert Smoke secured their position as the Champion of the competition, even the newly joined members such as Fatty Han and the remaining members of the Sub-guild obtained the rewards --- to be elevated by 3 levels and one Gray-Silver grade [Battle Mount: Crimson Flaming Horse]!

Later, Zhang Yang arranged for Fatty Han, Mountain Mover the members of Sub-Guild to go back to the Sub-Guild with the intention for them to join the competition for the third and the fourth place that was about to start in awhile.

When Mountain Mover was leading the members of the Sub-Guild which was deemed to be much weaker in battle, it was obvious that the performance and show of strength from the Sub-Guild obviously improved by a lot! They actually won the match against Radiance by using the guerrilla tactics¹, and secured the third place in the competition! What was said to be a waste was that Zhang Yang did not join in, and he missed the opportunity to get the reward of the winning, together with the sub-guild!

It was just nonsensical!

If he knew that he would also get the reward by just being on the Sub-Guild, he would have put himself into the Sub-Guild and elevated himself to yet another level!

No wonder this was a one in a lifetime kind of competition, as there were simply too many loopholes to exploit! There was nothing fair to begin with even in the first place!

Now that the members of Lone Desert Smoke in both the Main Guild and the Sub-Guild had their own [Battle Mounts] of Gray-Silver grade and Black-Steel grade from the winnings, the entire force of the Lone Desert Smoke had definitely crowned themselves above every other guilds in the China server! Other than the Large-Scale guild Imperial Sky, no other guilds can stand against Lone Desert Smoke, at least not in the China server!

The other guilds that can pose a threat to the Lone Desert Smoke are the top-tier guilds from the other 7 main regions! After all, no matter the Soaring Sword Competition, or the Guild War Competition, these competitions were held separately in different regions. So there were a total of 14 champions in all 7 main regions!

After acquiring the Level +3 reward, Zhang Yang had reached Level 85, but still, he is surrounded by the best players in the server!

Another 3 days have passed, the Thunderstorm Castle had been successfully upgraded up into a Level 3 territory defensive castle. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang has been busy making more than 200 elite grade Mechanical Servants. With the 100 plus Mechanical Servants left from his previous battles, the army of these Mechanical Servants had reached up to a total of 400! Zhang Yang had plans for these Mechanical Servants, to use them as an element of surprise when in desperate times. To hide the army from plain sight in order to keep them as an element of surprise, Zhang Yang purposely used his privilege as the Baron of the Thunderstorm Castle to create a secret warehouse, to store the army.

In each passing day, there would be an increment of 72 servants in the

warehouse. It only took about 7 days for their number to grow up to the maximum capacity for the Level 3 Castle Defense.

Zhang Yang felt more relaxed in the coming days, because he did not have to run around completing quests, as long as he grinds his levels and crafts some potions to keep on track, he would be up to speed. Ever since he acquired the skill {Alchemist's Intuition}, he became obsessed with making potions. Always looking forward to the surprises of his random transmutations, he would never grow tired of it.

But, it's not like he can really slack off on his progress as he pleases, or just play the game casually. In other words, the game is always full of competitions and disputes.

It began a few days ago, a number of assassinations, ambushes happened on the players of Lone Desert Smoke who were sent on to the mines to gather some materials. That had caused the production of the guild to decrease steeply! Not all players signed up for the game to be top warriors and fighters. There were also players who logged in every day to live a peaceful life, mining and collecting materials at leisure, to be sold in the marketplace for gold. They did not have top tier equipment, or levels to match up to the pace of the game. Since they were such peaceful players, they were easy targets!

This situation escalated to the point where Hundred Shots was forced to arrange escorts to protect these peaceful players. But the culprits were cunning and sly, because they will just avoid doing anything and stay hidden when they come across those large group of players, while they will slaughter the players if the group is small. This kind of issue has caused major inconveniences to Lone Desert Smoke!

After all, players had to stand their own ground, with each man for himself, so even their defenders would be overwhelmed at times.

These culprits are very good in hiding, because up until now, they have not exposed themselves yet. That has presented a helpless situation for Hundred Shots to solve, he could only increase the number of players in escort.

And on this day, Zhang Yang had just made a Mechanical Servant with some [Fragment Source of Cinder] and was ready to use his [Lover's Charm] to teleport himself to Sun Xin Yu. He wanted to prevent any means of travel before going straight into grinding his level. Suddenly, he received a group invitation.

This invitation came from a player named, Sailor Moon². Zhang Yang took a look at the player's character information and realized that she was actually one of the members of Lone Desert Smoke. He accepted it immediately and joined the party of three, making it into a party of four.

Team Leader - Sailor Moon, human spellcaster, Level 62.

Team Member - Sailor Chibimoon³, human spellcaster, Level 62.

Team Member - Sailor Mars⁴, human spellcaster, Level 62

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to sweat in silence, did he just join the 'Sailor Moon' party?

"Guildmaster! Please help us!" Sailor Moon was shouting out in the party channel, her voice filled with anger and helplessness at the same time.

Zhang Yang frowned, "What's the matter?"

"There's a bunch of people clinging onto us, saying that they just want to be friends with us. At first, we did not mind them at all, but they have been following us and harassing us, and then they began to block our path, physically! And when we were about to use our [Teleportation Scrolls], they would interrupt us. They had no intention to kill us as well, they're just blocking us from leaving. Now they are trying to force us to be girlfriends of their boss!" Sailor Chibimoon spoke up.

"These bastards are just being as*holes!" Sailor Mars boiled with anger and said, "Guildmaster, we have just joined the guild not too long ago, and we don't know who to call for help! The first person we thought of is you! Please help us!"

Although these three girls weren't talking in order, Zhang Yang could piece up the information. Also, their voices were so similar! With just a second of distraction, one would have lost track of who is speaking at the

time!

"How many are there? These people." Zhang Yang asked them.

"10!" Sailor Moon replied in an instant.

If the number is huge, then Zhang Yang will have to summon a large number of people as well, but since it's just 10... He can definitely take them on himself without a problem!

While riding on Whitey, Zhang Yang let out a short shout and charged towards the direction of the 'Sailor Moons' in high speed. He informed through the party channel, "Just hold on for a little longer, I'll be there before you know it!"

"Guildmaster, you must bring more men!"

"That's right! Kick their asses!"

"It's driving us mad!"

The three girls were talking at the same time, and Zhang Yang couldn't decipher a piece of information. All he could hear was some noise.

The Sailor Moon were not too far from Thunderstorm Castle, so it only took approximately 20 minutes for Zhang Yang to arrive. There were more than 10 male players present at the scene. They were of different professions, different races. These men were surrounding three girls in white robes. They had them trapped beside a lake, surrounded by half of a circle of men, with their backs against the lake.

These men did not attack, and they were all smiling like perverts. They would heal each other whenever the girls attacked them. And whenever the girls attempted to use their [Teleportation Scroll], they would wait for the right timing and launch an attack on the girls to interrupt the teleportation.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel shame as a man. For the first time in {{God's Miracle}}, he is actually seeing such immoral players! So, what's difference between these players and those hoodlums who take liberties on girls on the streets?

The only difference is that there are cops in the real world, but in {{God's Miracle}}, these sorts of people can do whatever filthy deeds they want without having to worry about cops!

With a closer look, these people are from that hoodlum guild, called the Rogue Family! And that filthy rich boy, Overlord Prince of Dragon City was among those hoodlums --- god damn it! Do know, that this fellow actually made Zhang Yang looked stupid in their previous engagement!

He should have guessed it right, other than those hoodlums in the Rogue Family, no other players would do such a shameful thing.

Zhang Yang patted Whitey and charged in on them, with a long leap and a "shoof"! He collided into the two healers standing at the back of the other hoodlums --- there were a total of 11 hoodlums, two of them were healers, two of them were spellcasters, three of them were thieves, two of them were hunters and two of them were warriors.

"Who's there ---" As these hoodlums were focusing their attention on the three girls, they had never thought or expect a man to charge in all of a sudden. It was until Zhang Yang's sword reached the neck of a healer, when they realized what was happening.

If it was up to an experienced and skillful player, the player would just activate {Terror Shriek} to terrify Zhang Yang with a moment of restriction effect! But, good skillful players were hard to come by these days, and these are mere hoodlums from the Rogue Family! How would it be possible to find good and skillful players in a guild like this?

‘-4,193!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword pass and the healer was inflicted with a damage. That value was one-third of his entire health bar! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had gained a total of 37 rage points. Because when he was charging over to the hoodlums, he had already activated {Blood Rage}, and now he has a total of 67 rage points on his rage bar!

Regular attacks will not trigger the common cool down of the skill sets. So Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] with a {Horizontal Sweep}!

The sparks from the sword flew across the air, and the seven players from the Rogue Family were inflicted with damages ranging from 7,700 to 8,500 in the same moment. There was a critical attack on one of the spellcasters, which instantly killed the fellow!

That was considered as a good strike! Then, the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] kicked in, and another wave of damages ranging around 7,000+ were inflicted upon every single hoodlum within the effective area!

"Argh ---"

The miserable crying continued and another three hoodlums were killed and turned into white lights, one after another.

Whitey continued to attack with its claws, causing approximately 5,000 damage in every attack. For the hoodlums who were left with only a little health points left, these attacks with such an amount of damage would prove to be fatal. One touch is already a touch of death!

"Zhan, Zhan Yu!" one of the hoodlums had finally set his eyes right on Zhang Yang's face and recognized him. As he finally identified who the attacker was, he was shocked and angry at the same time! All the mixed expression was revealed on his face! "We did not even touch a hair on your head, why would you ambush us? Don't think that you can do whatever you like just because you're the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang was amused, and he laughed hard. A hoodlum would actually try to appeal to his civility! It was really something to remember by!

"Stinky hoodlums!" Sailor Mars threw out a ball of fire onto Overlord Prince of Dragon City and began to cast the spell for {Explosive Flame}.

"Eat this! Serves you right!"

"Don't ever think that we girls are meant to be bullied!"

The girls all squealed out in agitation at the same time, making it hard to hear their words. Sailor Chibimoon and Sailor Moon were also throwing balls of fire attack over to the hoodlums and began to cast their own

{Explosive Flames} as well.

Overlord Prince of Dragon City was shocked, "Rogue Bunny, didn't you said you'll torture him to death? Now that he's here already, why aren't you doing it?"

Rogue Bunny was frowning with cold sweat, he was only trying to butter the spoiled rich boy! Now that Zhang Yang and his Lone Desert Smoke were in their prime, who would dare to challenge them now? Anyone who does that would be committing suicide! It could have gone way much better if that filthy rich boy could just forget everything he had ever said to butter him and not bring it up again!

Zhang Yang shook his head, "You are cornering and harassing my guild members, and you dare to question why I, as their guild master would charge in and interrupt you hoodlums? Ha! I can see that your heads have been knocked dead by a donkey!"

"Knocked by donkeys so many times that they can't even think straight!"

"They have scrambled eggs for brains!"

"I would say these hoodlums did not have brains, to begin with!"

The three 'Sailor Moon' were speaking and giggling all at the same time.

Although Zhang Yang was still talking, his hands were still swinging his weapon around without any pause! He was currently equipped with almost a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment already, and the weapon within his hands was a Level 90 Violet-Platinum weapon. So, be it his attack or his defense, he was so powerful that these hoodlums should fear him to the point that they should flee on sight!

On the other hand, these hoodlums from Rogue Family had just reached Level 70, and they had just purchased some Level 70 Gray-Silver equipment. So, their attacks could not even inflict any physical damage on Zhang Yang, not even a little! Although their spell-type attacks could still pose a threat to him, but those 1,000 to 2,000 flashes damage would mean nothing on the 100,000+ health points of Zhang Yang! Even if Zhang Yang stood still and allowed them to hit him, it would take hours,

or even longer to empty out his health bar!

Not to mention that Zhang Yang has assistance from the three 'Sailor Moon' girls. Although their levels weren't that high and their equipment wasn't that good, the focus fire of three spellcasters was obviously very powerful. It served greatly as a support from the side. In just a brief moment, they had already sent every single one of the hoodlums, including Overlord Prince of Dragon City to the Graveyard.

"Humph! We just proved to them that girls are not to be bullied! Pile up their dead bodies! Make sure they get the message!" Sailor Chibimoon seemed to be making threatening gestures while saying it.

Zhang Yang took a glance at the faces of the three girls, and he understood why that Overlord Prince of Dragon City would be so interested in them.

The three girls had almost the exact same faces! And all three of them were pretty and young, and full of youthful energy!

Although players can customize their faces in the game, it would be extremely hard to customize their faces until they all looked the same! Only the natural born faces would look the same, and by scanning their facial features and making some adjustments, only can they make their faces so similar within the game!

So thinking about the obvious, these three girls must be sisters in the real world.

The sort of people like Overlord Prince of Dragon City would never be able to resist such delicate flowers, that was the main reason why he stuck around, putting in his best effort to keep them from leaving.

"Guildmaster, you are amazing! You shooed away these hoodlums single-handedly!" Sailor Mars was looking at Zhang Yang with admiration in her eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That's because you girls helped me out!"

The three girls looked at each other and began to giggle with their hands up to their mouth, accentuating their round boobies.

"You three are sisters, aren't you?" Zhang Yang asked the girls while he picked up all the items and equipment that fell from the hoodlums after they died. Although he was not interested in the equipment, it would be better for him to pick them up than to leave them there, waiting for the hoodlums to come all the way back. This should teach them some manners!

"Yes, in fact, we are triplets!" Sailor Moon pointed at herself and said, "I'm the eldest, the first to be born. This is the second, only 3 minutes after me. Last but not least, she is the youngest, born 5 minutes after that!" She pointed at Sailor Chibimoon and Sailor Mars while explaining.

Zhang Yang nodded, as he took out two of the equipment, leather armor pieces, and passed them over to the girls, "Here you go, it's your share for our victory!"

"Hehe!" the girls took it without any hesitation and kept them into their backpack.

"So where are you from, sir?" Sailor Moon asked him out of her own curiosity.

"Zhou Su City." Zhang Yang told them.

"Oh, what a coincidence! We're attending classes in a university in Zhou Su City!" Sailor Chibimoon clapped her hands in excitement.

"You did us a great favor, so please, let us repay you with dinner! Please?"

"That's right, you must come, little Bin is good at making dishes!"

"So that concludes it, tomorrow night it is!"

The three girls were talking all at once again, and then giggled together.

Zhang Yang frowned at the way they invited him to dinner. The girls said it all, he had not even opened his mouth yet!

"Then, you girls wouldn't mind if I bring along two more people, right?" Zhang Yang smiled. Since they looked so sincere, he could not just reject them already.

"Boy or girl?"

"Girls!"

"Your girlfriends?" the three girls were filled with curiosity to find out.

"... you three are really talkative!"

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. Guerrilla tactics - a form of irregular warfare in which a small group of combatants uses military tactics such as ambushes, sabotage, raids, petty warfare, hit-and-run tactics, and mobility to fight a larger military force.
2. Sailor Moon - Main character in Sailor Moon anime series.
3. Sailor Chibimoon - one of the sailor character in Sailor Moon anime series.
4. Sailor Mars - one of the sailor character in Sailor Moon anime series, representing Mars.

Chapter 390: The Needle that Fell Out of the Haystack!

The next day, Zhang Yang went to meet the girls, along with Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er... and also Sun Xin Yu! They went straight to the address that the 'Sailor Moon' girls.. erm, no, the Zhao Bin sisters gave to Zhang Yang.

So, the three girls are Zhao Bin, Zhao Yu and Zhao Xue. All of them are 19 years old. They had just moved into the life of a university. Their hometown is located at Jinnan District. Although the three of them were going to the same university, but they were of different majors, so they could not stay in the same dorm. The bond of their sisterhood is strong, as they cannot live without each other in their lives. So they are renting a unit near their university, so that they can stay together.

Initially, Zhang Yang intended to bring only Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, but as they ran into Sun Xin Yu, the Icy Queen actually followed them without saying a word. Zhang Yang was actually shocked to see that she actually cared!

The four of them arrived at the doorstep of the address, and the three sisters welcomed them in afterward. They were obviously very curious about Zhang Yang's relationships with the three pretty girls that came with him. So, they kept on poking around with their 'interrogation' skills, hoping that they would get what they wanted to hear.

Han Ying Xue was acting like a queen, making herself look as if she was Zhang Yang's girlfriend, while speaking to them. Meanwhile, the Ice Queen was burning in flames of jealousy beside them, which made the triplet sisters laugh silently.

Wei Yan Er was about their age as well, and she will be going for the National College Entrance Examination in 3 months time, before she becomes a freshman. So, the four of them had many topics that clicked, and had a blast chatting.

After having dinner and a little chat, the four of them got ready to leave.

But as they were just about to leave, Zhang Yang stepped out of the door and suddenly, he lunged back and squashed the front portion of Sun Xin Yu, who was right behind him.

The Ice Queen blushed in shame and in an angry tone, "Asshole, if you did that on purpose, I'll arrest you and take you back to the police station!" Her chest was the most sensitive part of her body, and ever since she had known Zhang Yang, she had already lost count of how many times that part of her had been felt up, squashed up, roughed up by him already!

"Shhh --- " Zhang Yang turned around and put his finger on his lips, telling her to shut up. He had a serious expression on his face. Then, he slowly closed the door until there was only a slight opening by the door panel and said in a very low voice, "Look!"

"What's so nice to look at!" Wei Yan Er shouted out loudly by the door, trying to take a peek as well.

The girls were peeking out from the slight opening by the door panel.

" --- Liu Shu Yan!" Sun Xin Yu and the two sibling sisters were shocked to see that woman.

"Who's Liu Shu Yan?" Zhao Yu asked them out of curiosity.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Well, what do you know? Can't believe that we tried so hard to find her, and now she pops up in front of us!"

Well, what a coincidence! A very juicy one too! It was supposed to be a simple dinner with the girls. Now it turned out to be a 'bingo'!

"Still, although she is an important suspect in a criminal case, there is no evidence to prove that she is the one who lit up your apartment. So, I'm afraid that even if I detain her now, we won't even hold her for 24 hours before she goes 'wild' again!" Sun Xin Yu told Zhang Yang.

"Not a problem, the main thing is that we know where she is now. So there's no worry over her being stubborn and not talking!" Zhang Yang put a sinister smile on his face.

"Why am I feeling like the three of us are invisible now? Hello?"

"We're in a different realm now, no one will mind us, or even see us."

"Pity us!"

The triplet sisters began to cry and sigh beside them.

Zhang Yang took out his phone and dialed his brother in arms, "Fatty, come over quick, we have spotted that b*tch Liu Shu Yan!"

As of the current development of the game, players can make calls or receive calls when they are logged in {{God's Miracle}}. Players can choose to bind their phone numbers and their pager numbers with their account. That makes it possible to communicate from within the game, with the players, even if the caller is in the real world at the moment.

"Alright, I'm on my way!"

Sun Xin Yu stared at Zhang Yang and said, "You are not going to do something that I don't like at all, are you?"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "If you can get her to turn herself in, then I will gladly watch by the side!"

"I'm going back!" Sun Xin Yu saw that Liu Shu Yan had already gone into the house and closed the door shut, so she walked out of the door. Then she stopped and stood there for awhile and said, "If anything happens, call my number!"

Zhang Yang felt a glimpse of warmth in his heart, as that was how Sun Xin Yu usually express her affection towards him. That's just how she expresses herself.

After Sun Xin Yu was gone, Zhang Yang also had Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er scurry back to their house. Because what was about to happen was not going to be a pretty sight. Zhang Yang said goodbye to the Zhao Bin sisters. He did not want the triplets to be caught in his own affair. Better to be safe than sorry.

Soon after, Fatty Han arrived in a hurry.

Zhang Yang looked at him and nodded. It's show time! The two of them

went up to the front door of Liu Shan Yu's house, and they were ready to do what must be done. They knocked the door.

After awhile, the door 'crack' opened, and the next thing they saw was the head of Liu Shu Yan peeking out by the panel of the door --- fortunately there was no peep hole in the door, as this design of door seemed to be very old, the houses in this area were considered old.

Zhang Yang smiled at her, specifically at her.

The facial expression of Liu Shu Yan changed in an instant, from heaven down to earth. There, she realized that it was Zhang Yang! She quickly pushed the door with the attempt to close the door shut, however, 'boop'! She could feel that something was stuck in between the door, preventing her from closing it.

"We have been looking for you for a long time, missy." Zhang Yang pushed the door open and took back his foot that had stopped the door from closing.

Well, this Liu Shu Yan was indeed worthy of being the 'Mastermind' behind the entire scheme. She was calm again after a very brief moment, then she walked steadily back into her house, "Well, you must be very tired!"

Zhang Yang looked at Fatty Han and nodded, and the two of them walked right into the house as well.

"Zhang Yang, you already own the entirety of Silky Soft Holdings, what more do you want!" as she pleaded, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han took a good look at her close up, finally. This Liu Shu Yan was indeed pretty and she had a great body as well, as a woman of course. The parts that should be big are big, and the parts that should be small are small, all at the right size to the point that men would drool by looking at her. And, she was wearing a pair of high heels, with long stockings that were almost transparent, up to her thighs. The way she positioned her feet as she sat down was definitely seducing.

Zhang Yang gave a soft smile and said, "Looks like you have forgotten about the fact that you burned by apartment down!"

"Natural disasters happen because of natural causes. That's just how nature works, kid! Why would you blame an act of nature on a weak helpless lady like me!" Liu Shu Yan was trying to make pity of herself.

Zhang Yang shook his head with an annoyed face and said, "There are only 3 of us here, you can just be honest with us, you know?"

Liu Shu Yan began to talk in an aggressive manner, "I really didn't do anything, so how honest would you want me to be?!"

This woman was being very careful, as she was probably worried that Zhang Yang and Fatty Han might have activated some recorders. Every word she used, every sentence she spoke, she picked her words carefully enough.

Zhang Yang revealed a smile with his teeth and said, "Well, we are not cops, we need no evidence."

Liu Shu Yan suddenly laughed out loud and said, "So what are you going to do to me? Rape me? Hmm --- that's good, because I have not had a man in bed for a long time, my p*ssy needs a good scratch these days! You two can come at me at the same time, show me what you got underneath your trousers! Let me savor them!"

Right in front of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han, she took off her clothes one layer after another, then she lied down onto the sofa. Then, with one hand grabbing her own boobs, massaging them, like she was really excited, while the other hand was down in front of the bushy 'cushion', trying to dig her finger into the 'entrance' in between her 'cushions'. She was moaning like a cat, seducing the two men to 'stand up' and make their entrance.

"What the f*ck! What a slut, man!" Fatty Han looked at her with scorn, but his eyes were already nailed onto the 'important' parts of Liu Shu Yan, and he just could not turn his eyes away from them! "I shall teach her a lesson for you, little Yang! I'll take it from here!"

"Fatty, she's a snake, a fiend! A pretty and sexy one of course. But you better not 'enter' her, because once you do that, there's no turning back! And God knows what kind of trap she has prepared for you, once you do

it!" Zhang Yang warned Fatty Han straight up.

"Don't worry, didn't I just said I'll take it from here? Head back first, wait for my good news!"

Zhang Yang nodded, then he turned around and left the house. After that, he went straight back to Han Ying Xue's house.

Fatty Han did not let Zhang Yang down at all. In just a few hours, he had already contacted Zhang Yang and told him that Liu Shu Yan had been taken care of, and she that had already given herself up to the police station and had revealed every single truth about her own crimes.

Zhang Yang was amazed and yet confused, how did that fatty do it? So, he asked Fatty Han about it. As he knew, Liu Shu Yan was definitely very tough and extremely hard to break without using violence. So, how could she break so easily then?

"Haha, that slut loves men for a reason, right? So all I had to do was to call 20 of my brothers over, muscular and strong on the upper body, and also 'strong' down there! I lined them up before her, not a single fabric covering their bodies. I also put a small little blue pill into each of their mouths before letting them do their 'work'! After that, she submitted to everything! And most importantly, she let everything out, I got it all recorded!" Fatty Han was laughing hard.

Wow, 20 men with viagra! The 'force' must have been strong!

Zhang Yang could only shake his head, "Fatty, you really are 'filthy', you know that? Filthy good, man!"

"Cheh, this is a tactic! To win the battle without having to fight! All famous generals used tactics!" Fatty Han said without any sense of shame.

But in the end, that Liu Shu Yan really did went to prison after that. At least 20 years of serving was waiting for her, ahead of her life, at least 20 years of prison life! So she will definitely not be a problem to Zhang Yang, well, at least for 20 years.

Now that the potential threat has been removed, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er no longer required protection anymore. So he decided to move out

from their places. A man living under the same roof as two ladies, he would still feel a bit uncomfortable with it, no matter what.

But his old apartment and everything in it had been burned to crisp! So now, he could only think about buying a new house for him to stay.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er found out that he was trying to look for a new house, so they decided to aid him in his search. They tagged along with him to several locations, most of which were per their suggestions. The designs, the location, everything should follow their so-called 'guidelines'!

Zhang Yang tried to say no to their proposals, but according to some 'wise' people, a woman is like 500 ducks¹. He only had one mouth, how could he win against 1000 ducks! So by the end of it, he let the girls decide everything for him.

Another few days had passed, the army of Mechanical Servants had finally reached the 1,000 maximum capacity of a Level 3 Castle Defense. So, to increase the limit capacity on the number of Mechanical Servants he can produce, he must elevate his current Castle Defense level up to Level 4. In order to do so, he needed [Mining ores] that are acquired from Level 90 Mining Profession skills. So, it was impossible for him to proceed at the moment!

Zhang Yang had reached Level 86, so he is just 4 levels away from reaching Level 90. He was also looking forward to getting the final piece of the [Fragment of Dimensional Key] and becoming eligible to enter the fallen palace of the Imperial Heaven's Empire. He intended to seek out the [Ancient Godly Weapon - Meteor Sword] and complete the main quest that was assigned to him by Princess Serena.

This linked quest is believed to be the longest main story linked quest that Zhang Yang had ever received. There were quests among quests, it was extremely annoying! Of course, the reward of this extremely long and annoying quest should have heavenly, or else, what was the point of all this?

'Server Announcement: Player One Sword Stroke has successfully

stopped the resurrection of the Witchking of the Undead - Yeekla, and contributed greatly to preserving the peace of the main land, this great deed will be published on the list of the glorious deed for the world to admire!"

‘Server Announcement: Player One Sword Stroke has acquired Level +2, Skill Point +1, Lucky Attribute +1 as rewards!’

Zhang Yang suddenly received a server notification which congratulated One Sword Stroke, while he was making potions!

Well, that was marvelous of him! That should be one of the main quests in the game. The rewards were handsome. Just by seeing the level increment, the skill point reward, lucky attribute increment, Zhang Yang knew that there must be more, such as a skill book, some powerful equipment that made the entire quest worth while, and also a powerful pet as additional rewards!

One Sword Stroke, a skillful player, formidable opponent that one must not forget!

After awhile, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were beginning to discuss about One Sword Stroke’s achievement on the new quest that he had completed. They were making guesses which boss did Imperial Sky slay, and what kind of rewards did they get.

"At the best, it could only be a Violet-Platinum boss! The officials have introduced before, Mythical grade bosses will only start appearing in Level 110 dungeons. Now that Zhang Yang is only at Level 86, we’re still far away from entering the Chaos Realm!" Lost Dream said.

Everyone nodded to express their agreement on this.

Zhang Yang then reminded them, "Well, they might have acquired some sort of skills like {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! So, the next time we engage with them, we must be ready to use our life-saving skills!"

"It’s actually a fortunate thing that the arena forbids the use of such skills, or else every match or every competition like the Professional League Championship will mean nothing, as people would just activate

powerful skills and see who dies first. No skills will be tested anymore!"

After the gang had their discussion and chit chatting, they soon forgot about the achievement of Imperial Sky. But this was actually a huge success for the Imperial Sky as they managed to reforge their image and name in the game. Although they would still not be as good as Lone Desert Smoke, at least they have stepped up to show their strength to the public!

*

Translator's Thoughts

1. A woman is like 500 ducks - it means a typical woman is very good in making arguments. The noises made during the argument suggest that the noises are like the sounds made by ducks.

Chapter 391: Imperial Sky Assault (1)

However, just a few days after, Zhang Yang received an important news.

The news came from Luo Xin Yan. Just like 'history' unfolding it self into the present, she actually did meet Liu Wei when she joined the Model exhibition in her school. And just like history, Liu Wei fell for her and took her in as his mistress.

Luo Xin Yan was really greedy. It wasn't enough for her, even after Liu Wei provided her 50,000 dollars every month. So, she still continued to be the 'spy' and consistently contacted Zhang Yang. Only, she was not able to provide any important information, therefore she was not given any additional rewards. But this time, the news that she brought up to Zhang Yang, was definitely worth something!

--- One Sword Stroke had also acquired a piece of [Territory Conquest Order] when he completed the Main Story Linking Quest! Meanwhile, under the influence of Liu Wei with a substantial amount of gold, Imperial Sky, Rolling Rocks, and Storm Riders, three top-tier guilds were going to join forces as a temporary measure in order to lanch their assault on Thunderstorm Castle! They were going to activate the [Territory Conquest Order]! They were going to start a war with the Lone Desert Smoke!

At first, Zhang Yang could not understand. Be it a Territory Conquest or a Territory Defense, the battle could only be led by one guild. So how can these three guilds join forces?

Luo Xin Yan then explained it clearly to Zhang Yang, that Rolling Rocks and Storm Riders would temporarily send their top players over to join Imperial Sky. In that way, they could gather all of their best players to form an ultimate force to win the Territory Conquest! So, what about the maximum capacity of the members in one guild? They wouldn't be able to fit so many top players in one guild! Of course, One Sword Stroke had already get his hands on one [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] when he had completed the previous quest! He hasn't used it because he wanted to keep it as an element of surprise! When he is ready and the time is right,

he will use it and move forward with his plan. By then when Lone Desert Smoke sees it in the system notification, it will be too late to react!

Indeed, there weren't any guild strong enough to take on Lone Desert Smoke one on one. But these three guilds were three of the top guilds in the China server, and they have joined their elite forces together into one powerful force! This force might just overwhelm the best of Lone Desert Smoke!

Furthermore, the Imperial Sky still hasn't used their [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order]. If Luo Xin Yan did not give this news to Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang and the guild would only make preparations and planning according to their current Level 2 Guild. They would only make preparations to go up against the basic number of '20,000' players in Imperial Sky. But, Imperial Sky can simply use the [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] and increase their maximum capacity of players up to 30,000 and expand their force at the final moment before they begin the Territory Conquest, like an hour earlier or so. Then, they will have the element of surprise over Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke!

Over these few days, the Imperial Sky and the two other guilds have done preparing their forces, so that meant, that it's just a matter of time before they activate the [Territory Conquest Order] and launch their full-scale attack!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. He should have guessed it! Liu Wei had been in the dark, hiding for too long, and it's about time he made his move!

But, why aim at Thunderstorm Castle?

Well, Thunderstorm Castle is the first territory that appeared in China server, so the time and effort used to set up the territory were the longest, and the Castle Defense level must be the highest as well. And, not to mention that there is a top-tier guild called Lone Desert Smoke running the territory behind it! So this territory was definitely the hardest to fall among all three territories in the China server. So why would they want to aim at the most difficult one?

After thinking further through, Zhang Yang finally understood.

One Sword Stroke had an insatiable appetite, so large that he will not stop until he is bloated with it all! So after his latest achievement, if he takes down Thunderstorm Castle, then Imperial Sky will become a stronger guild than can replace Lone Desert Smoke at the top, becoming the best guild in the entire China region! But if he proceeded to conquer the other territories that will actually give him the same benefits in terms of economic growth for his guild, but they will never be able to shake off the shadow that had been cast upon them by Lone Desert Smoke!

The higher the risk, the higher the benefits!

There is only one question left. Can One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei secure their victory over this conquest? We shall see about that!

Without Luo Xin Yan's news, maybe Zhang Yang would have been beaten before he could react, but he had prepared the one thousand army of Mechanical Servants! That's his secret weapon that his enemies did not know of! That's his element of surprise! These 1000 Mechanical Servants can charge out to save the fight when they are in desperate times. This army of Mechanical Servants was the key to turn the tables!

When the time comes, let's see who surprises who!

Zhang Yang did not leak the news regarding Imperial Sky, Rolling Rocks, and Storm Riders. He only told Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and a few more core players of the guild about it, so that everyone is prepared for it.

But, only one day after he received the news. One Sword Stroke had launched the [Territory Conquest Order] on Thunderstorm Castle, igniting the countdown to a war!

'Ding! Player One Sword Stroke has launched [Territory Conquest Order], the Territory Conquest will begin tomorrow at 7 p.m. The Territory Conquest will last for 3 hours.

Participants limitation: All members of 'Imperial Sky' and 'Lone Desert Smoke' only.

During the Territory Conquest, all teleportation services or scrolls will

be unavailable.

All players who are killed during the Territory Conquest will be teleported back to the main city and these players will not be able to rejoin the conquest!

After the 3-hour conquest, if Imperial Sky takes down the Territory Main Hall, then Imperial Sky will be deemed, victor! Player One Sword Stroke will take over and become the new Baron of Thunderstorm Castle."

Both sides of the guilds received the same notification message from the system.

"Haha! The Imperial Sky still hasn't had enough from us. Let us give them bastards some real firepower this time!" Lost Dream was crunching his fists already.

A battle maniac like Wei Yan Er would, of course, have sharpened her weapons and was prepared for battle at any time.

Everyone knew that the Imperial Sky had a 'Secret Weapon', but none of them knew how Zhang Yang got the news. Zhang Yang had also kept the fact that Luo Xin Yan told him the news from everyone around him, not because he didn't trust them, it was just that, the more people know, the easier the news would leak. And most importantly, it wouldn't benefit anyone as not many even knew Luo Xin Yan.

One day had passed.

It was 6 in the evening, and all members of the Lone Desert Smoke were gathered at Thunderstorm Castle. From that moment on, the Teleportation Circle service had ceased functioning for all outsiders, except for the members of Lone Desert Smoke. Many players had no idea on what was about to happen, so there was an uproar on why the Teleportation Circle could not be accessed!

The members of the Imperial Sky were beginning to gather by the front of the Thunderstorm Castle outside the castle wall. Later, they were joined by the members of the Rolling Rocks and the Storm Riders.

"So they really are patient about this, it's almost time to begin, and they

are showing no intention of using the [Level 3 Guild Upgrade Order] yet!" Hundred Shots laughed.

"The later they use it, the shorter time we will have for our preparation. Well, they've done great, all those efforts in trying to 'surprise' us! So unfortunate for them ---"

All members of the Lone Desert Smoke were standing on the castle wall while smiling and laughing, for they already knew the 'little surprise' that their opponents thought no one knew.

It was already 6:50 p.m.

'Server Announcement: Congratulations to Imperial Sky for becoming the second Level 3 Guild in the entire China server! For the next 3 days, all Imperial Sky members will receive the reward of earning 100% additional experience points, and the cost of repairing equipment, inserting gemstones into sockets, and identifying equipment will be halved!'

Finally, One Sword Stroke had taken out his 'Ultimate Game Card'!

7 p.m.!

'Ding! The Territory Conquest has begun!'

In an instant, every single player that was not from Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky were teleported 2 kilometers away from the Thunderstorm Castle!

Gu loo loo! As sounds of heavy objects were heard, 5 catapults appeared at the front line of the battlefield. Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! 5 huge rocks were shot out from the catapults' swings, and the stones were flying over like missiles, smashing onto the castle wall of Thunderstorm Castle.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the rocks were smashing onto the castle wall, the walls were blasted into pieces as countless bricks of the wall flew all around into the surroundings! Those who did not react fast enough, could not avoid the assault of the huge rocks and were the first to die. As for those who

survived the impact of the huge rocks, also took great damage!

"So, now we're dealing with catapults, eh? We have our own catapults too!" Mountain Mover was the absolute commander in this battle against the large army of the Imperial Sky. He raised up his hand and made a commanding gesture. Then he shouted, "Aim at their catapults, fire back at will!"

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

The catapults within the Thunderstorm Castle premises were also beginning to fire huge rocks back to the formation of the Imperial Sky army.

However, although catapult attacks can bring a substantial amount of damage to the castle wall, but the damage inflicted on living targets weren't really that high. Even if the rocks landed on the targets, it would only be able to wound the targets badly. These targets can then take some [Snacks] or some [Potions] to recover their health points, and they will be as good as new. So, these kinds of attacks cannot be effective against living targets.

After all, catapults are meant to use for breaking down castle walls only. If catapults can also inflict great damages to players, then what use would be the [Magic Cannons]?

Boom! Boom!

The two guilds exchanged fire with catapults. But catapults were just like Magic Cannons as well, they had limited 'ammo', and every catapult can only fire 20 huge rocks in one battle.

In just about 10 minutes, the battle of catapults had finally ended as both sides were out of 'ammo'. Thunderstorm Castle had lost two Magic Cannons, while the Imperial Sky had lost 3 catapults, all blown to bits!

It was all money down the drain!

Be it the catapults or the Magic Cannons, money was required to purchase these kinds of weapons from the system, and the price of each weapon of this sort exceeded millions of gold! Besides, these kinds of

weapon can only be used on certain occasions only. More importantly, once these sort of weapons are destroyed, there is no way to repair them, and the only way to replace them is to buy a new one!

So from this point of view, the officials are eager to see players triggering Territory Conquest, because they can earn more money if players are required to make additional purchases of the weapons to defend their own territory!

One Sword Stroke was riding on a [White-boned Sabretooth]. With a shoof, he pulled up his axe from his waist and said, "Brothers and sisters, charge now! Thunderstorm Castle should be ours for the taking! We shall paint the flag of Imperial Sky with the blood of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

The 30,000 plus troops charged in like a tidal wave towards the direction of the Thunderstorm Castle.

Mountain Mover raised up his left hand and said, "Aim the Magic Cannon at the most saturated point of the army, on my mark... Fire at will!"

Shoof!

Streams of white lights were shot right out into the saturated point of the army, followed by a burst of explosion! The white light expanded out by an area of 10 X 10 meters as they wiped out every single player within that perimeter! Everything melted, there was not even any sign of dead bodies!

Unfortunately, the area of the explosion was not large enough, it only managed to wipe out approximately 100 members of Imperial Sky!

"Ready, again! Fire at will!" Mountain Mover raised up his hand again and pointed at the most saturated point of the enemy army.

Shoof!

Shoof!

The Magic Cannons were serving their purpose, as they shot out streams of white lights that blinded and most importantly, destroyed! After ten shots, Imperial Sky had lost more than a thousand soldiers already! However, the Magic Cannon had reached its firing capacity for the battle. After all, no matter how strong and valiant a weapon can be, it won't hold after being used for many times, which clearly exceeded its durability!

If all three Magic Cannons were intact, they could have taken out more 3,000 players! The main idea was that, even before the real battle begins, the enemy would have already lost 1/10th of their army! It could have been an advantage for the Lone Desert Smoke in that sense!

The Imperial Sky arrived at the front door of the castle and began to launch their assaults on the door itself. It's the only way in!

[Level 3 Territory Door] (Item)

Level: 1

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 3,000

Magic Resistance: 3,000

Standing right before a magnificent door, Imperial Sky should have trouble breaking through the super strong door of the castle! As the other two territories were just Level 1 territories, their castle doors only have 1,000,000 health points, 1,000 defense and magic resistance. So it would not be wise to compare the difference!

Furthermore, the information of the Territory Door will not be revealed to anyone, until players are in a Territory Conquest!

One Sword Stroke indeed had many 'secret cards' that were not revealed yet, so people may think that he shall be the one who triumphs over his enemy. But, how about Zhang Yang? How many 'secret cards' did Zhang Yang have up his sleeve for the moment?

So what should be done next?

Well, One Sword Stroke had no other choice at the moment but to make

great sacrifices! Fight, by sacrificing the bulk of his army if necessary!

With a wave of his sword, One Sword Stroke commanded his members to attack! Countless players were gushing up onto the door like a tidal wave and they began swinging away in an attempt to bring down the door, by force!

Chapter 392: Imperial Sky Assault (2)

Right on top of the territory walls and door, the Lone Desert Smoke had arranged some surprises for them! Spellcasters, hunters of the Lone Desert Smokes were stationed at the top of the walls, showering their AOE attacks onto the members of the Imperial Sky all around the walls and door on the outside, trying to weaken their assaults on the castle door.

Rains of hailstones, flames, and arrows were descending onto the members of the Imperial Sky. It did not matter if they were the regular members or the elite members of the Imperial Sky, Rolling Rocks and Storm Riders, they could only take everything coming down on them and suffer great damage. The bloodshed was extreme, and many had fallen!

But, it seemed that One Sword Stroke had already predicted this situation. These players that he had sent up front were all mounted on Gray-Silver grade [Battle Mounts]. The purpose, was to boost the health points of the players on the front line. Plus, he had also arranged a large number of healers by the back of the front line to heal who constantly casted {Holy Shields} onto the players on the front line, no matter what the costs were!

This was indeed a good strategy. As their health points were boosted high enough to sustain high damage and survive, the healers can heal them in time and lower down the death rate!

After all, the number of players that can fit on the castle wall and on top of the Territory Door was limited, and the AOE skill attacks dealt lower damages. So if the attacks were not concentrated enough, or the interval of the assault waves were not stacked quickly enough, then their enemies would not be instantly killed, and they will have the chance to heal again!

"They really came well prepared!" Zhang Yang smiled.

But Han Ying Xue began to show some worry on her face, "3 guilds joining together to challenge us. If we compare the combat power of the players, they might be even better than us now! And if they manage to break through our door, then the battle will become hell for us, right?"

Mountain Mover came up and explained, "But the main objective of a Territory Conquest is not to slay your enemies, it's to make sure the guild flag that is installed right in the Territory Hall remains standing! As long as the flag is still standing after 3 hours, even if we're all slain, we will still be victors! Buying time! That's the key!"

"So, we must be more focused on preventing their thieves from stealing our flag!" Zhang Yang nodded.

"Oh! So that's why you sent sister Sun over to the Territory Hall!" Wei Yan Er suddenly understood.

This was because Sun Xin Yu was unmatched in 'stealth'!

Zhang Yang laughed, "Wow, little girl, it's really a marvelous thing to see that you're actually becoming clever! Good for you!"

"Humph! I'm going to make you look bad one day for underestimating me all the time!" Wei Yan Er crunched her teeth together while speaking in a low voice.

The assault squad of the Imperial Sky did not give up on taking down the door even though they were bombarded heavily by Lone Desert Smoke. And under their selfless effort on attacking the door, the strong and sturdy Level 3 Territory Door was eventually taken down in about 10 minutes, blown to bits! For that, the Imperial Sky had sacrificed about 300 players as the cost of bringing the door down!

So the battle went on, and it was still 2 hours and 31 minutes away from the end of the conquest!

"Tankers to the front line, healers to the back, and heal the front lines! Assault teams, give it your best!" Mountain Mover commanded the Lone Desert Smoke members, while at the same time, he was waving his hands around, stationing all the members to places they should be.

Mountain Mover had made a decision, to station all the defensive forces at the front entrance of the castle, forming a shape of a bag. Tankers were lining up at the front-most positions, while right behind them, where the assault teams of the Lone Desert Smoke! When the enemies clashed into

them, the tankers blocked them, while the assault teams unleashed hell on the enemies with their highest damage output! The situation was like Leonidas and his 300 Spartans going against the massive army! They easily took down all the enemy squads that were sent up to test out their formation and defenses!

This was undoubtedly a very impressive tactic, and the effects were outstanding! It was that moment when the members of Imperial Sky that rushed in blindly, were welcomed with 'hell of fire', and the rate of death on Imperial Sky increased greatly!

"Zhan Yu, come and let's have a good 'chat'!" a loud cry came up, and it was One Sword Stroke, riding on his [White-Boned Sabretooth] coming in through the entrance of the castle. As the assault teams of the Lone Desert Smoke launched their assaults on him, he was inflicted with '-O!', and this value kept on popping up whenever an attack landed on him! That was a damage absorption effect going on!

Well, nothing could be done on that. Other than Berserker's {Tornado Cleave}, most of the AOE attacks were lower in damage, so when they are up against a tanker with good equipment, it's just tragic!

For example, the {Barrage} of the hunter can only inflict 200% range attack damage over 10 seconds. So at every second, it's just 20% of the range attack damage. Even if the player acquired a Level 80 Violet-Platinum range weapon with an interval attack of 3.8 seconds, and also a full set of Violet-Platinum armor equipped, the basic ranged attack of the player would only be approximately 9,500. So 20% of that amount of attack would only be about 2,000 or maybe less!

So, how do you break through his defense?

Seeing their guild master One Sword Stroke appeared right in front of them, the members of the Imperial Sky were agitated with excitement. They began to cheer and cry out loud! Everyone could see that One Sword Stroke is a favorable man in Imperial Sky, with high prestige!

Meanwhile, at beside of One Sword Stroke, there came Liu Wei - 'Heaven's Pride'. He was riding a gray-silver Gray Silver, looking like a

Prince Charming.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "One Sword Stroke, we have crossed path many times in the Professional League Championship. So, you! Are! Unworthy! To! Be! My! Opponent!" He spelled out his words one by one to make it clear to One Sword Stroke.

As the Professional League Championship was held, the Silky Soft Battle Team and the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team had crossed blades for 14 times in total. The results of the battles were 12:2; Zhang Yang and his guild won the matches single-sided! And Zhang Yang had engaged in battle with One Sword Stroke 5 times in total. Zhang Yang had won over 5 times, totally being overpowering One Sword Stroke.

After hearing Zhang Yang's words, One Sword Stroke did not burst into anger, he laughed instead, "Well, that was the past, and the past shall remain in the past. The present is now! The tides in the ocean can change, and now it's about time we Imperial Sky sing the song of victory!"

Meanwhile, Liu Wei was feeling annoyed, "Why are we wasting time speaking to him! Time is slipping away and we have a time limit on this conquest! Take down Thunderstorm Castle now!"

One Sword Stroke glanced at Liu Wei with disdain --- this idiot doesn't get it at all, does he? Zhang Yang is a godly existence in the Lone Desert Smoke. So by defeating him, surely his defeat will crush the morale and the will of Lone Desert Smoke. And honestly speaking, Zhang Yang himself was already like almost half of the battle power of the entire Lone Desert Smoke!

The army should go into war with tactics and strategies. Those who only know how to shout and charge are idiots!

So by having such an idiot by his side, he could not help but to sigh quietly in his heart, "Come, let us unleash hell upon them with our {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash}!"

After saying it out loud, One Sword Stroke reached his hand towards Liu Wei. And before the eyes of Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke, including his own members of Imperial Sky, the two of them held hands

like lovers, fingers crossed!

What the heck! That scene was so blinding that even dogs with sunglasses will be blinded as well! Nothing can be unseen!

Zhang Yang frowned at what he just witnessed, and then he quickly recovered and informed through the party channel, "Little girl, witchy snow, you two should stand back a little, this is definitely a Paired Skill!"

The best way to deal with Paired Skills is to stay out of the skill's effective area. Because the players who activate Paired Skills would have to stay in a spot and let the skill unleash its potential, so they cannot pursue anyone running away. But this situation was very different, Lone Desert Smoke had to stand their ground to make sure that their enemies do not pass through the entrance of their territory! Once they move out of the way, the members of Imperial Sky will gush into the castle like a strong current of wave, and what comes next would be a slaughterhouse!

"Tankers to the front! Assault teams and healers to the back!" Zhang Yang shouted as loudly as he could.

Boom!

A thunderous burst of sound followed by a vague burning sky appeared, everyone was looking up into the sky to see it.

Countless stars were falling from the sky and crashing down upon the location of Zhang Yang and his members of Lone Desert Smoke. Streams of falling stars, the size of houses came crashing down. When they entered the atmosphere of the earth, they flew through the air vigorously and ignited into balls of flames, gigantic balls of flames! They were like balls of flames bursting out from a volcano, it was a very daunting sight!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the meteors crashed onto them, the position of the entrance of the castle was instantly turned into a land of flames. The members of Lone Desert Smoke were suffering intense waves of damage, and everyone was inflicted with damages ranging from 2,000 to 3,000 in every second! Every second!

It is just like the paired skill of {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, these paired skills of {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash} that One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei just unleashed could deal 5,000 damage in every second! But the damage value is a little lower because the {Starfall,} and {Meteor Crash} inflict fire type damages, so players who have fire resistance would be able to resist the fire damage and lower the damage values. On the other hand, the paired skill, {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} inflict chaos damage that ignores all defense and all resistance! Of course, the damage output would be higher!

The duration of this paired skills were also very long. Zhang Yang tried to launch a {Spear of Obliteration} at Liu Wei, and all he got was the word 'Immune'. Obviously, all the paired skills are alike, players that are activating paired skills will be come invincible until the skills end!

"Heal up! Everybody, hold on tight!" Zhang Yang shouted with his loudest voice, because they cannot afford to lose the defense line by this entrance! At the very least, they must not lose their defense line by the entrance at such early stage of the conquest!

However, Zhang Yang and his guild did not just encounter with the {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash}, they were also encountering the assaults from the Imperial Sky army, consisting of spellcasters and hunters that bombard waves of AOE attacks at them! As for Lone Desert Smoke, all of their spellcasters and hunters had backed away to the back of the battle line, as they were attempting to avoid getting caught in the rain of the paired skills! So, the front line was left with only tankers and warriors, and they had no way of retaliating when under such heavy fire, not at the moment.

If it was just the paired skills, Zhang Yang and his guild members wouldn't have any problem standing their ground against it. But with the aid of hundreds of hunters and spellcasters from the Imperial Sky supporting from behind, with waves of AOE attacks, Lone Desert Smoke could not heal before the next wave came onto them!

As mentioned earlier, AOE attacks weren't really causing high damages to the targets. The damages inflicted on top tier tankers are even lower!

Basically, normal tankers with average equipment were inflicted with about 100 damage in every wave of the AOE attack. But when there were about 100 of them bombarding over, that will become a total of 10,000 damages, which clearly exceeded the limit of the average healer!

The number of Tankers on the front line was decreasing rapidly as the battle continued!

"Should we use our paired skills as well?" Han Ying Xue asked Zhang Yang.

"Let's not be hasty, it's not the right time yet. Let's wait for more of them to gather at this spot first!" Zhang Yang began to laugh.

The skill {Starfall} and {Meteor Crash} was indeed impressive, especially when Zhang Yang and his guild members had no choice but to stand their ground and take on the full effect of their paired skills! The damage done on the Lone Desert Smoke was tremendous! But it was fortunate for the Lone Desert Smoke, that the paired skills only lasted for 30 seconds, and Lone Desert Smoke lost about 300 players as the cost of surviving that wave of attack!

"Hahaha! Aren't our paired skills marvelous, Zhan Yu? One Sword Stroke spoke with a sense of pride in his tone.

"Not really. Just like that. Meh." Zhang Yang spoke calmly. Well, it was actually true, because that wave only took out about 300 members of the Lone Desert Smoke, and Imperial Sky did not break the defensive line by the castle entrance as well. It wasn't much.

"Zhang Yang, did you really think that we have only one set of paired skills?" Liu Wei revealed a sinister smile on his face, "Come, let's continue!"

The two of them, Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke were still holding their hands like they were never going to let go. At first, Zhang Yang really thought that these two were burning in the flame of gayness, having the passion not to let go of each other, to the point where they did not give a sh*t to how everyone would view them! But from Liu Wei's words, he sensed that they seemed to be having a second set of paired skills!

One Sword Stroke let out a breath of sigh, once again the loose-lipped had ruined another part of his plans. The element of surprise! Elements of surprise should only be used at the most crucial moment for it to work their wonders! That is why there's a word 'surprise' there! So, what good is shouting out loud, telling the world you have a 'surprise' for your enemy! So much for keeping secrets!

"{Absolute Decade},{Frost Prison}!"

Liu Wei let out a loud roar, and immediately, layers of frost began to form on the ground surface that was already destroyed by the meteors, and countless ice blades shot right out from the ground, towards the players of Lone Desert Smoke!

As they had suffered a large hit from the previous assaults of the paired skills, the Lone Desert Smoke needed to heal themselves, and they needed a substantial amount of mana points to cast the healing skills. Although there were many healers on the scene and they could take turns and heal the wounded, it takes time for them to do so! And now, their opponents had already begun their next assault wave! So they had no time at all to take turns and switch to heal the wounded!

Zhang Yang made a defining decision, there he shouted, "Witchy Snow! Let's do it!"

"Alright!"

"Everyone stand back!" Zhang Yang said in the guild channel.

Seeing the Lone Desert Smoke were retreating back and the entrance of the castle was opened up, One Sword Stroke revealed a smile and said, "Charge! At all costs!"

He already knew that Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had the super paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, but they had to charge! Because they are the invaders, and to win, they must make some sacrifices!

{Blizzard Sky}, {Lunar's Dew} activated!

In an instant, the sky began to turn white, hail began to fall, followed by a large moon that appeared right in the sky, and there they began!

Terrifying values of damages were inflicted upon the army of Imperial Sky!

It looked like the Imperial Sky was sending men to die in vain, but the fact was, it wasn't! They were actually using their advantage in numbers, sacrificing their guild members to open up a path!

From this point of view, One Sword Stroke is indeed, not a simple man, he is willing to make the necessary sacrifices to win when the time is right! And he will not hesitate at all when he needs to make such sacrifices! He indeed has what it takes to make resolute decisions!

30 seconds passed before they knew it, and the paired skills from both sides had ended. The member on two sides clashed on and began to understand the true meaning of 'cut and thrust'! It means, melee combat!

Judging purely by the strength of the players, the combination of the three guilds is obviously much higher than the force of Lone Desert Smoke alone. However, the members of Lone Desert Smoke all had their very own Gray-Silver [Mounts], which greatly increase their attack and health points. The battle was more evenly fought than expected.

The battle progressed unusually intensely, as there would be players dying at every ticking second! Blood was shed at every single corner at the entrance of the castle! In the game, non-environmental objects such as blood and dead bodies would only exist in the surroundings for a short while, then everything of such sort will disappear.

But, the location of the entrance was filled with a river of blood, and everyone was stained with blood, splashing over in the air. The battle was really dramatic!

The Lone Desert Smoke only needed to stand their ground for 3 hours in order to win. So, they were willing to sacrifice themselves, buying as much time as they could!

Shoof!

A stream of {Flaming Tongue} suddenly shot right out at Zhang Yang. Although Zhang Yang was very focused in the intense battle, part of his focus was still on One Sword Stroke. And he witnessed it, that stream of

{Flaming Tongue} came fresh out from the palm of One Sword Stroke!

At that instant, the members of Imperial Sky around Zhang Yang turned their focus onto Zhang Yang and began to launch their all-out attacks in him!

Zhang Yang was still left with about 40,000 health points at the moment. So, theoretically he was not at the danger level yet, he was still far from it! But he could feel a sense of danger that made him activated his {Shield Wall}!

That attack from One Sword Stroke was obviously a signal, a signal that triggered every single member of Imperial Sky around Zhang Yang to focus their assault fully on Zhang Yang!

Because the moment when they slay Zhang Yang, would be the moment they break the undefeatable record of Zhang Yang. That would give a fatal blow to the morale of Lone Desert Smoke and make them vulnerable!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Streams of {Flaming Tongue} were fired, one after another onto Zhang Yang. Even though Zhang Yang had already activated {Shield Wall}, he would still be inflicted with 170 damage! So, it seemed that this {Flaming Tongue} was a similar skill to {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and its basic attack reached up to 10,000!

"So do you think you're the one with super skill?" Zhang Yang said.

He then let out a gentle breath and activated his {Dance of Heaven and Earth} on One Sword Stroke!

One Sword Stroke too, came straight up and activated his {Shield Wall} to counter.

10 seconds later, One Sword Stroke's {Shield Wall} was down, but Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was still active thanks to the special effect of [Titan Wall]. The skill went on for another 5 seconds before it ended! Zhang Yang laughed out loud and activated the special effect of the [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor]!

Since {Shield Wall} only had 7 minutes of cool down, even without adding the skill points, it could be activated multiple times in one large-scale battle! Since Zhang Yang had already activated his super skill, he had to make sure that his opponent dies by the end of the battle! Or else, it would be a humiliation towards his action in activating the skill - {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

The old beastman appeared, floating in the middle of the air, waving its staff at One Sword Stroke and launched multiple streams of an electrical surge right onto One Sword Stroke!

Chapter 393: Imperial Sky Assault (3)

"F*ck this sh*t!" One Sword Stroke could only curse out loud and take a few steps back!

He could still hold his ground if there was only the {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} charging up on him, because with his defense capability and a few healers healing him, he could hold his ground! But when Zhang Yang launched his super skill onto One Sword Stroke, the members of the Lone Desert Smoke quickly noticed the flamboyant effects, and they also locked on to One Sword Stroke. Without the protection of his {Shield Wall}, he would definitely take heavy damage!

One Sword Stroke continued to back his steps. Although he could not dodge the attack of the {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, he could still let his guild members aid him by blocking the assaults from the members of Lone Desert Smoke so that he could be healed in peace!

The [Battle Mount] beneath his butt was a Yellow-Gold grade. So when he is mounted onto his [Battle Mount], his total health points would reach up to 70,000. Although it's still far from the maniacal Zhang Yang's health points, once he activates the [Ring of Endless Desire], he could still make it through a critical stage!

[Ring of Endless Desire] is the Violet-Platinum ring that One Sword Stroke got from the previous lucky draw during the Soaring Sword Competition. Activating it will turn every single damage inflicted on him into health points, and it lasts for 2 seconds! It's actually a strong and powerful life-saving effect of a ring!

"Haha, Zhan Yu! You have failed to kill me this time!" One Sword Stroke was running away like a coward, but he tried to provoke Zhang Yang by saying that it was Zhang Yang's failure for not being able to kill him. His tone was full of scorn.

Zhang Yang heard and he laughed, "If you're not happy about it, then let's just settle this one-on-one!"

That sent One Sword Stroke speechless. Although he already admitted

that his skills as a player can match up with Zhang Yang, his equipment was vastly inferior! Of course, he could not say this out loud as it will only make him look bad. So the next question is why is his equipment still inferior to Zhang Yang's equipment?

The one thing that measures the strength of a guild is the capability of the guild in slaying bosses, seeing how many bosses can one guild slay. Equipment is basically the only absolute thing in the game that defines one's strength in an online game. By admitting that his equipment is not as good as Zhang Yang's, it would mean admitting that Imperial Sky is not as good as Lone Desert Smoke!

One Sword Stroke will never say it out loud, even when he knows it himself, deep down his heart!

Just when the battle was getting even more intense, Zhang Yang received a voice message from Fatty Han all of a sudden --- that guy is now the Guildmaster of the Sub-Guild, and he would normally just get rewards from events like he did in the previous Guild War Competition. So basically, he would just sit tightly at the Sub-Guild. After all, he is the one person that Zhang Yang trusted the most, a true brother in arm.

And for that, Zhang Yang had not brought him over for this defense.

"Little Yang, the Dominators and the few other guilds have f*cking joined together to attack our Mining Cave again!" Fatty Han was speaking out of rage.

Zhang Yang frowned, "They really grew ears that can hear thousands of miles away all around their bodies! One small movement of any grass in our guild, and they would eventually find out!"

The system will not spread the news on the server about Territory Conquest events, but right before the conquest is about to begin, the system will lock up the teleportation circle of the territory where the conquest is going to happen. That phenomenon was a very obvious hint that a conquest is about to begin! Furthermore, there are spies in every single guild. Guilds can still enclose top confidential secrets, but an event like a Territory Conquest, a conquest defense that involves the entire

guild? It's not possible to hide such information from the other guilds.

"Little Yang, all members of the Sub-Guild are basically made up of the Servicing players, and today we have transferred many elites to the main guild for that stupid conquest! We're in trouble here!" Fatty Han was worried through the roof.

Well, it's true that Zhang Yang had been moving most of the Servicing players over to the Sub-Guild, ever since the Sub-Guild was founded. The main aim is to increase the strength of the Main Guild in battle. Other than that, Zhang Yang had also moved most of the elite players from the Sub-Guild as a temporary measure so that he can prepare the Main Guild to become strong enough to go up against the merged forces of 3 guilds! However, the drawback is that the Sub-Guild is weakened and left vulnerable.

Zhang Yang made a decision on the spot and said, "Just hold on first, Mountain Mover will go and help! I'll take it from here!"

"That's great!" Fatty Han laughed as if his problem had been solved, then he asked again, "Then how about the defense against the conquest? Are you going to be alright with it? If we lose the Mining Cave, we can get it back anytime we want. But a territory? It's just too important!"

"Calm down, my friend. We won't lose the territory because they don't have it in them!" Zhang Yang smiled gently and contacted Mountain Mover through the party channel, "Mountain Mover, the Dominators and a few more guilds have joined forces to attack our Mining Cave again. I need you to kill yourself and get back to the main city immediately. Then, use the teleportation circle of Radiance and get over there to help Fatty Han. Secure our Mining Cave!"

"Yes sir!" Mountain Mover nodded quickly and got moving.

Since the current battle had turned into an all out tug-of war, only strength mattered, there was no more room for tactics! So it's pointless for Mountain Mover to stay here as his forte was all about tactics. So, it would be more efficient and effective for him to aid Fatty Han.

He took out all of his equipment and charged in between the crossfire of

the two sides of the guilds! Without any additional attributes from the equipment, a naked Level 80 Spellcaster only had about 3,000 health points! In an instance, he was bombarded by countless fire balls, ice blades, and arrows, and turned into a stream of white light that headed back to the main city.

Zhang Yang had been holding back before this. He wanted to let his fellow guild members experience the battle with Imperial Sky for a little longer so that his guild members can be trained to face this kind of battle in the future. But now that their Mining Cave was being attacked, and the resource point might be fallen into the hands of others at any time, he couldn't just sit on his *ss peacefully anymore. "Brothers and sisters! It's time we show them our real strength! Let them have a taste of Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Rawgh!"

"Kill ---"

"Kill!"

With just one inspirational phrase, the morale of Lone Desert Smoke went through the roof! Everyone roared out their strong will to crush their enemies! So this what the power of an idol could do, every single word and action can affect everyone around them!

One Sword Stroke frowned a little at the fact that Zhang Yang gave up on defense and instead, he decided to go all out at Imperial Sky. He couldn't understand why Zhang Yang would make such irrational decision. Lone Desert Smoke had an advantage over Imperial Sky, for which they were the defenders, while Imperial Sky has limited time to break through their defense! Even if there is only one player left on their side, Lone Desert Smoke would still claim the victory as long as they keep their flag in the Territory Hall safe! They could have just stood their ground, smile, and win by the end of all this, if they played their cards right!

But he suddenly smiled coldly, after he received news about the Dominators and the other guilds ganging up on the Mining Cave.

Everything made sense now!

"Brothers, charge! For the glory of Imperial Sky! Take down the Thunderstorm castle and our guild shall be flagged as the number one guild in the entire China server!" One Sword Stroke quickly raised his axe up in the air and roared.

"Kill them all!"

The situation at the entrance of the castle was already like a meat-grinding factory for god's sake, and now the situation got elevated up to another level! The situation became even more horrifying! Countless limbs that were detached from bodies flew across the air, and the blood spilled like red rain! This scene of the endless massacre would give people with weak stomachs a hell of a time! Some might just faint the moment they see it!

"Hahaha, Zhan Yu! Looks like Lone Desert Smoke has many enemies! And now, have a taste of these wise words! 'A just cause enjoys abundant support, while an unjust cause finds little support'! Hahaha!" One Sword Stroke would never let go of such an opportunity to verbally assault Zhang Yang.

Instead of being provoked, Zhang Yang smiled, because he had already sent a private message to Snow Seeker to seek aid from Crimson Rage on defending his Mining Cave. They were allies for a reason, and allies would only do right to provide aid at times like these! And of course, Zhang Yang had always been deceived by that sexy little cunning woman, she had taken advantage of him many times already.

Liu Wei began to laugh, "Zhang Yang! You are now in the belly of the 'beast', your enemies! You're destined to fall this time!"

Wei Yan Er pointed her axe at Liu Wei and said, "Hey pretty little gigolo! Come and face me alone if you dare!"

Liu Wei turned to Wei Yan Er and looked at her with a perverted face, "Alright, I'll reserve one room on the Ya Tian Hotel, waiting for you!"

"Bastard!" Daffodil Daydream shrieked and shot out a {Fire Blast} at Liu

Wei.

Basically, this little girl is the little sister figure that everyone adored in Lone Desert Smoke. So, everyone was provoked when Liu Wei said uttered that line.

Liu Wei quickly took a few steps back, as he knew that he was a 'fragile' spellcaster. It would be better to keep a distance. He also realized that he was way out of his head for a while back there.

Although both sides had 30,000 players on their own sides, but there is a special restriction set on the battle for Territory Conquest. Once a player is killed during a conquest event, the player will be forced to leave the battlefield and will not be able to rejoin the battle again. Unlike challenging open world bosses where players can just respawn and rush back to continue the boss battle within a time frame, every death counts in Territory Conquest, and one death means one less player on the battlefield!

In just an hour, the number of players on both sides has been reduced drastically, and both of them had less than one tenth (10%) of their forces!

That was the time where the effect of three guilds joining forces showed. There were at least 500 players more left on the Imperial Sky compared to the numbers on Lone Desert Smoke! That's actually a huge difference!

These 500 players were incomparable to the number of 30,000, but as the end-stage of the battle was approaching, this number could actually be the decisive factor in the battle!

It was about two hours until the conquest ended, so the Imperial Sky had the time to slowly weaken the Lone Desert Smoke until there were maybe 7 or 8 players left. Even after that, they would still have a lot of time to break into the main Territory Hall and destroy the flag, and take over the Thunderstorm Castle! As victory was within their grasp, Liu Wei could not hold himself anymore, he began to show his cocky face and laugh loudly, "Zhang Yang! Time to face your failure!"

Zhang Yang could not help but to reveal a sinister smile on his face, "Well, do you seriously think you have won?"

Liu Wei still couldn't sense the scheme Zhang Yang had under his sleeves, so he continued to laugh, "Are you implying that you can magically summon out an army? Hahaha!"

Standing right behind Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and the rest of the gang were trying to hold their laughs, but they failed. They chuckled and laughed. Then, Han Ying Xue said, "Silly Yu, this guy can really read your mind, he might be fated to be your blood brother!"

Seeing Zhang Yang and the gang were calm and smiling, One Sword Stroke knew that there was something wrong about all this! A chill crept up his spine!

And surely enough! Everyone heard Zhang Yang shouting, "Heaven Storm Tigers, move in!"

Almost immediately, a loud tremble was felt by everyone, followed by the rumbling of foot steps which everyone could hear clearly, coming from some corner of the castle. The rumbling was getting louder and louder, indicating that something was approaching their location at a high speed! So what is coming at them? The Imperial Sky members were uneasy and worried. In just a brief moment, the mystery was revealed. Countless Mechanical Servants were marching up from the streets towards the entrance of the castle. All of them are ten meters tall, Level 85 elites with black and shiny armors on them!

Holy sh*t! F*ck this!

Seeing this army of countless Mechanical Servants marching up, blotting the streets and roads before them, One Sword Stroke and the remaining members of the Imperial Sky turned their hateful sights towards Liu Wei and they voiced out in unity, "You and your big mouth!"

Liu Wei went silent in awkwardness, "..."

These Mechanical Servants were too huge to be true! Even though there was only 1,000 of them, they gave an impression of an army the size of tens of thousands! They were just plain intimidating!

Looking at how the faces of the Imperial Sky withered as if they were

going to be poked in their *sses, Zhang Yang could not help but to recall back a story long ago.

In previous years, the game 'Starcraft' was really popular, and there was a guy who went on TV to challenge an online player of the game. But, he ended up being slammed on his own face and defeated repeatedly. Later on, he finally met an opponent that was a little weaker than the average players on the server. So, he brought his troops and forces straight onto the home base of his opponent. Just when he was about to win, he also felt the itch to shout, "Well, what a hard-earned victory!"

And the opponent immediately replied, "Don't think you have won!"

In just an instant, that opponent of his activated a cheat and summoned countless troops, descended upon his troops. There he was, being bombarded until he lost everything...

Seeing One Sword Stroke and the remaining members of Imperial Sky looking like they had just tasted some dead flies in their mouth and were choking, he was most entertained!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Heaven Storm Tigers, attack!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The 1,000 Mechanical Servants charged at the enemies, or stomped over the enemies, or even double punched the enemies! They launched a full-scale attack onto Imperial Sky!

Chapter 394: Imperial Sky Assault (4)

If the 500 men that Imperial Sky had just produced could turn the tide of war, then the 1,000 heads of Mechanical Servant that Zhang Yang had just summoned could easily send Imperial Sky packing home, with their tails tucked between their legs.

Just when they thought that victory was at hand, Zhang Yang had pulled something out from his pocket, using some sort of cheat code!

"Haha! Just look at their faces! It's funny as hell!"

"Haha! I'll tell ya, if this was a comedy movie, they could really be holding that little gold man in the Oscars!"

"Yo! Quit playing, guys! Might as well try acting for a change of profession!"

One by one, when the tables had turned against Lone Desert Smoke, players from Zhang Yang's side started to taunt the enemy.

Before the order of attack, the mechanical army had stood still, behind the castle wall, and after Zhang Yang had called for the attack, each mechanical soldier had mobilized and jumped across the frontlines - towards the back of Imperial Sky's defense line.

With the rain of hell being laid down to Imperial Sky, players of Lone Desert Smoke regained their vigor and joined the fray.

Statistically speaking, Lone Desert Smoke had caused quite a lot of trouble with just 1,000 elite tiered monsters at Imperial Sky's doorstep. However, no matter how strong they may be, the mechanical soldiers were not as strong, or rather, as smart as a player! They could be easily tricked. As long as the enemy tanks could draw their aggro towards them, other players could easily handle them. However, a player would not be too direct. Naturally, they would have to deal with those "tofu" class and have the mechanical servant knock on hard wood.

Now that Lone Desert Smoke had the mechanical servants at their command, the output strength was not as simple as $1+1=2$. It was rather

like a chemical reaction that would produce a massive change. It would be like introducing sodium, or even potassium metal, to water! The reaction it gives would be literally explosive!

"Zhan Yu! Don't you think that you have won this yet!" said One Sword Stroke, as he saw how Imperial Sky's forces were being pushed back, like a Snow Plower on the street after a cold December snow storm.

Zhang Yang smirked. Unless One Sword Stroke could summon an army like he did, there was absolutely no reason to be scared of him! He then replied confidently. "Accept your loss. This is the end, One Sword Stroke!"

One Sword Stroke suddenly smiled knowingly, as if he had another trick up his sleeve. "Did you really think that I would be stupid enough to fight you, head on in the front lines? Knowing clearly that I would die?"

"OOhhhh! I see what going on!" said Zhang Yang also with a smile. "You must be hiding some kind of "super-secret" strategy that you have already started? Like, did you have several Thieves sneaking pass the front line and trying a "backstab" strategy?"

One Sword Stroke dropped his smirk. He knew that something was odd from the way Zhang Yang had said it.

The method or means to win a Territory Conquest battle was not the kill count. If they could achieve a complete wipe, that would be great as well. The defender side would have the upper hand for they had the grounds to defend. On the contrary, the attacking side would not have to blindly attack with brute force. The method or means to win a Territory Conquest lay at the guild's final flag that stood in the main hall!

One Sword Stroke's main plan was to breach the main defense line. He did not care about wasting any resources. He was willing to sacrifice as many men as he wanted to get the main defense line broken. After that, he would order his team of Thieves to stealthily sneak through and destroy the flags in the main hall! Once the flag is taken, it would be Imperial Sky's victory.

"I applaud your brilliant effort of deploying such powerful forces. But, now that you had expended such forces in the front line, how is the

defense in the Territorial Hall?" said One Sword Stroke.

Zhang Yang's smirk turned into a deafening laughter. "You said it yourself, that it would be stupid to fight in the front lines. However, let's be clear at one thing. Even if we died right here and now, as long as the flag stills stand in the main hall, we will not lose! I feel that calling yourself stupid would be an understatement! Do you really think that I left the hall unprotected? Please do not associate your stupidity with anyone! It's truly degrading!"

One Sword Stroke nearly choked himself at such an insult. Not only did Zhang Yang have the upper hand in combat, he also had the most poisonous tongue that anyone would probably lose their nerve whilst be talking to him! That, and the mother**** army of mechanical servants!

Those Level 85 elite tier soldiers could deal devastating damage to those non-tank class players! How could Imperial Sky still stand toe to toe with such enmity?

At the same time, Zhang Yang had just received a notification from Sun Xin Yu, saying, "There were around 20 stealth Thieves entering the main hall, I have killed them all. There're no further threats here."

In the next moment after Zhang Yang had given his acknowledgment to Sun Xin Yu, One Sword Stroke was seen shouting madly at something. He had even thrown his sword down in a fit of anger. Zhang Yang could have easily guessed that when he had just received the good news, One Sword Stroke had received the news of his "backstab" attempt having failed remarkably.

Based on the recent feat, Zhang Yang could still confidently say that Lone Desert Smoke has won the Territorial Conquest.

Zhang Yang relayed the good news and boosted the morale of his own guildmates. It was the ripe time to engage the final counter attack! A full-scale counterattack!

Having the mechanical servants to be the meat shields and the main attackers at the same time, members of Lone Desert Smoke could not have it any better. With great vigor, everyone laid down the last attack.

At this time, before the attack reached them, there were many players instantly dropping out of the guild. Due to the system only allowing players from the two guilds involved in the Territorial Conquest battle to remain in the battlefield, players who left the guild were instantly removed from the map.

"Crap! They had actually resorted to that method to escape?"

Zhang Yang thought to himself. The players who had just left the guild should be the elite players from Rolling Rocks, and Storm Riders that were assigned to Imperial Sky. Now that the fate of them losing the battle had been sealed, there was no reason for them to remain in the fight, only to throw their life away, losing experience points and equipment durability!

In reality, all that Zhang Yang had thought was the truth to that was what One Sword Stroke was facing. If he could cry a river, he would have!

His greed was too large. He wanted to assimilate both Rolling Rocks and Storm Riders. Little did he think that doing so would require him to win the Territorial Conquest. In this case, not only was he on the verge of losing his dream to create a mega-guild, he was being literally pressed down by none other than Zhang Yang!

One Sword Stroke had wanted to permanently keep the members that had entered his guild. Just like how the ancient philosopher, Liu Bei had "borrowed" the province of Jing! Borrowed but not returned! It was rather unfortunate for him that the players had already left on their own even before One Sword Stroke could persuade them to stay.

It was a legendary failure!

10 minutes after members of Imperial Sky had left, Lone Desert Smoke had gained an immense advantage, and had slaughtered the enemy clean, with no survivors!

'Ding! Congratulations to guild Lone Desert Smoke for defeating all members of Imperial Sky! The Territorial Conquest has been won before the duration had ended!'

Zhang Yang laughed and announced in the guild channel. "Everyone,

teleport to Thunderstorm Castle now and head towards the Mining Cave! There's still The Dominators for us to kill!"

"HURRAH!"

After the Territorial Conquest ended, the teleportation circle was reactivated. One by one, everyone used the [Teleportation Scroll] to "fly" to the main hall and proceed towards the mining cave with their mounts.

"Tell me something! What's going on there?" Zhang Yang contacted Fatty Han as he rode towards the battlefield.

"It's alright. Even though we were short in hand, we were still able to hold it up with Mountain Mover's leadership! How long will you take to reach here?"

"Roughly 30 more minutes!"

"Yes! That's perfect! Once you arrive, we can finally start our counterattack and kick that bastard so hard, his sh*t will burst out from his mouth!"

"Please...Could you not be that disgusting?"

Since everyone in the guild had a mount of their own, the trip had only taken them 25 minutes to reach the Mining Cave.

Once they arrived at the site, Zhang Yang only saw a sea of players, far larger than the one that he had just fought in the Territorial Conquest. The battle was between the Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild vs the greedy The Dominators and other guilds that had set their sights on the Mining Cave for a long time. They had gathered more than 50,000 to 60,000 players to fight this war.

The location of the Mining Cave was rather a mountainous landscape, making it rather extremely wise to apply a well-thought strategy. Under the command of Mountain Mover, the sub-guild of Lone Desert Smoke was able to literally kite the entire guild left and right. They had never needed to have a frontal attack since it would only increase the loss of players in a fair fight. They had wanted to avoid that, thus the kiting. All for one sole purpose, to drag the battle longer, and to buy time until the

main guild arrives.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, Crimson Rage has arrived to assist you!" Zhang Yang had received a notification from Snow Seeker just as he was about to charge into the fight.

"That's brilliant. Let's get started then, shall we?"

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and rode to the frontmost of his army. "Let's kill some bastards!"

Dust started to form, as thousands of Crimson Flaming Horse galloped towards The Dominators and three other guilds. At the other side, Crimson Rage and their female fighters had emerged from the other side of a hill, forming a pincer attack against the enemy.

"Hold on! Why is the main guild here?"

"Weren't they fighting in the Territorial Conquest war with Imperial Sky?"

"Crap! What is happening now!?"

The Dominators were unlike Imperial Sky, who had the guts and bravery to stand in battle, that much Zhang Yang would admit. The moment they saw the main guild came charging in, everyone started to lose their courage and started to panic.

Humbly Gentleman gritted his teeth. "D*mn that Imperial Sky?! How dare they call themselves the second strongest guild in China!? Even after allying with Rolling Rocks and Storm Riders, they still couldn't hold off for f*cking 3 hours! Tch! Useless! F*cking useless!"

The moment Humbly Gentleman knew about the Territorial Conquest that was launched by Imperial Sky, he seized the chance to plan an attack to the Mining Cave. If everything had followed according to plan, Imperial Sky would have defeated Lone Desert Smoke and conquered Thunderstorm Castle, and he would have conquered the Mining Cave. After losing the war, Lone Desert Smoke would lose their soldier's morale and firepower. There was no way that they could seize back the Mining Cave after tasting defeat.

However, things have gone out of hand! Imperial Sky could not be hoped upon!

Mountain Mover laid down the command, mobilizing all the remaining players of the Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild to join the incoming reinforcements to form a perfect surrounding attack.

Truthfully speaking, the combined number of players of The Dominators and the other three guilds had outnumbered all of them. However, numbers do not win wars. On the contrary, they were lacking firepower. They could not be compared with Lone Desert Smoke main guild, and Crimson Rage! They could not even be on the same ground with the Lone Desert Smoke sub-guild! To make things worse, all of the players from the main guild had Gray-Silver mounts! Even all of the players from the sub-guild had Black-Steel mounts! It was a massive upgrade which the Dominators never had! It was not a battle anymore. It was just a slaughter fest!

Compared to the enmity they had for Imperial Sky, players of the Lone Desert Smoke guilds hated the Dominators more. Now that they had the chance to kill them, everyone pulled their strength from the very depths of their souls to release their frustration towards them.

Zhang Yang flew across the battlefield like an eagle searching for his prey. In this case, Zhang Yang was searching for Humbly Gentleman to maul. Among the crowd of players, Zhang Yang had to attack. He pulled his sword out and activated {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep} as many times as he can. With the special effect triggering repeatedly, the skills weeded down players like a scythe through a bush.

"Hypocrite...!" Zhang Yang cried his name when all the other players by his side were finally killed. "Why is it that every time I see your face, it would look like a poor, abused dog that would never stop barking!"

"Don't think too highly of yourself, Zhan Yu!" said Humbly Gentleman through his teeth. "Don't think that your luck will always be at your side!"

"Is that how you threaten me? Really? That's the best you could think of?" Zhang Yang laughed. With Sun Xin Yu and the rest of his personal

elite party, they had surgically killed so many players to make their way towards Humbly Gentleman. With Zhang Yang's sword's special skill triggering endlessly, they had wiped the enemy from behind the enemy lines!

Once they had realized that they stood no chance, the expression they wore quickly changed from madness to blind fear. Zhan Yu the killing machine was just too overpowered. How could one stand a chance to fight him when his sword could repeat the same skill as many times as possible!

After half an hour into the battle, The Dominators and the rest of the guild were completely crushed beyond recognition. The remaining survivors had lost all hope and had left the battlefield, leaving a mountain full of dead bodies and dropped equipment. It's like being struck by lightning and tornado at the same time; a complete, thorough catastrophe.

Lone Desert Smoke's consecutive battles were recorded by the members and were posted on the official forum, creating a hot sensation for a brief period of time. Everyone was naturally surprised and amazed at Lone Desert Smoke's capability. But the most popular talk about the two wars was the appearance of the mechanical army!

Weren't they character from Transformers?!

Especially during the scene where Zhang Yang would shout: "Heaven Storm Tigers". Everyone laughed at how comical Zhang Yang's call was.

Chapter 395: Silent Hail Town

The all-out-war between Lone Desert Smoke against The Dominators and Imperial Sky and the rest of the guild was just a menial war among other greater and bigger guild wars in the whole region of China. Statically speaking, wars between guilds were always present. It could be triggered for all sorts of reasons, such as the case of Mining Cave rights, a revenge war, a retribution war, and etcetera.

In the real world, there were many limitations to how people could have their way with each other. Here, they sought out a way to let out their frustration in the game. Many a thing that could not be done in real life, were free to be done in the game.

One of the most direct approach to solve one's conflict with one another, was a slaughter fest. Zhang Yang love picking fights, but he did not favor fights with no purpose behind them. That was why he had never thrown the first punch. That being said, if someone were to be bullying him, he would not give a f*ck about popping a sword in that guy's head. Still, since Imperial Sky and The Dominator had been on his ss for a couple of times, Zhang Yang was finally going to give up the final fck that he had been saving up. He started a retaliation, and he was not going to pull his punches.

He let each of his friends (Hundred Shots, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and the gang), to lead a team of their own to search and kill both Imperial Sky and The Dominators. Targeting the grinding spot of the two guilds, they had hunted down and killed as many members as they could, until both guilds were crying for their moms. As for Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream, they teamed up and recruited seven to eight talented and well-equipped Thief class players, and formed a small hit squad. Their main targets were the higher leveled players of the two super guilds. All of these kill attempts had left One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, and even Humbly Gentleman cowering behind the castle wall, fearing that once they leave, they would be instantly killed.

Players like One Sword Stroke, loved to grind alone, just as Zhang Yang

would. As a natural high defense Guardian, One Sword Stroke was able to tank a Thief to his death. But that was only applicable in a lv1 fight. If a group of Thieves was to jump on him and chain-stun him, lest being One Sword Stroke, not even Zhang Yang could survive that!

Upon passing the Level 80 threshold, gaining a Level would be tough as hell. There were many occasions where One Sword Stroke had worked his *ss off to amass 30% to 40% of his experience points, only to emptied down back to zero by Sun Xin Yu and her team of invisible creed of assassins. It was lucky for One Sword Stroke that the system had removed the Level penalty, or else, it would be a better revenge for Zhang Yang.

After being killed for so many occasions, One Sword Stroke had finally sortied a team to grind together with him. However, it was not of any use. Even a tiger would want to rest after hunting; the HP bar of a player would not always be full during a monster fight, and the healer would not want to overheal. Sun Xin Yu would carefully wait for the chance to strike One Sword Stroke at the moment where his HP was at its lowest and was vulnerable to attack.

In the previous life, One Sword Stroke and Sun Xin Yu were able to gain popularity due to their constant fights. In which case, most of their fights ended with Sun Xin Yu's loss. Without a strong guild supporting her back, she was at disadvantage, since she did not have strong equipment. In this life, however, Sun Xin Yu had been supported by Zhang Yang all the way. She was able to completely crush One Sword Stroke due to her skills, and partly because of possessing the utmost strongest equipment that she could have ever obtained. To put in comparison, Sun Xin Yu could not have a 100% rate of winning a match against One Sword Stroke. However, it is safe to say that Sun Xin Yu and One Sword Stroke would be on equal terms with each other. On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu had taken the chance where One Sword Stroke had lowered his guard, causing him to lose a competitive advantage, allowing Sun Xin Yu to completely overthrow him.

According to her report, in just one week, Sun Xin Yu had killed One Sword Stroke 11 times, and had also obtained one Level 80 Yellow-Gold

tier Chest Plate from him!

Being attacked at such brutality, One Sword Stroke plotted his revenge. He had recruited his own band of assassins to kill Zhang Yang. Sadly, their plans to taking Zhang Yang's head would only be a pipe dream. Zhang Yang had the best of the best equipment, any Guardian could have. He had many skills, which included many life preserving skills that could save his *ss wherever he was ambushed. The most OP fact was, if he was indeed being cornered to a point of death, he could easily use the [Lover's Charm] and escape unscathed. That, or he could use the [Party Summon Order] to instantly call in reinforcement to kick their sorry *sses.

As the conclusion, the fight between Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky was won by Lone Desert Smoke, by a landslide!

Still, no war is without casualties. Lone Desert Smoke had a price to pay. There were many guild members who had been killed and lost their experience points, equipment, and gold (for equipment repairing). However, Zhang Yang had no need to burn a hole in his pocket to reimburse them for their losses, since he had a Territory income! On the contrary, Imperial Sky had nothing to reimburse their side.

Eventually, Imperial Sky finally raised the white flag. Most of their players had stopped playing for 3 days. When there are no players to kill, there is no war to fight. Thus, the war was called off. On the other hand, The Dominators had long since retired.

After the three-day cool off period, an armistice was called and everything returned to the way it should be, where players could return to the field to grind in peace.

Zhang Yang had reached Level 86 so far. To reach Level 90 was not all too far, but it was hard. For the next few days, Zhang Yang had dedicated his energy and time to fully focus only on ground.

He came to the Level 80 map, Grand Canyon of Eternal Night to train. The land was so large that there were too many other side quests to complete besides the Dimensional Key Fragment. There were still two other Level 80 maps with quests to complete, but since the canyon was

the nearest to Thunderstorm Castle, Zhang Yang had prioritized the map first.

Along the path to a place called the Silent Hail Town, he remembered that there was a hidden quest available there. It had something to do with the Level 100 threshold update, which was said to be one of the valuable Inheritances, called the Vampire Inheritance.

There was one major flaw of the Inheritance, and that was that each player could only receive one.

Inheritances could not be forfeited and deleted. Once a player has accepted any kind of Inheritance, he or she could never accept a second one. That meant, that if they spot another kind of Inheritance that was better than the one that he or she had possessed, they had no other means than to give up on the newer one. That was why, it is of vital importance that during an Inheritance selection, one must think twice before accepting it. For this is the literal meaning of a once in a lifetime chance.

The Vampire Inheritance was indeed a good and most favorable Inheritance which could be accepted by any player or any class.

Inheritances were classified into two types. The first being, the rarest and strongest, that is the Unique tier Inheritance. The other was the common kind which was weaker and had a more standard enhancement, which was the General tier. Hence, a Unique Inheritance had been called the S class Inheritance. The General tier Inheritances were ranked at many levels. Some which were strong enough to reach roughly at the same level or approaching the level of S class Inheritance would be dubbed as the A class Inheritance. There were Inheritances that were so bad and useless that they had only provided a 10% in a certain attribute and would be dubbed as the Trash Inheritances or the Z class.

Vampire Inheritance was classified as a General tier Inheritance with a B class rating. It was naturally strong for a good reason. However, Zhang Yang did not want it. His target was the S class God of War Inheritance! There was no reason for him to accept the quest for the Vampire Inheritance. Still, there was lose hope in completing the Vampire

Inheritance in a Level 80 map. Even if he could trigger the quest and complete it, he would only be obtaining a piece of the Inheritance Shard and not the main piece. There's absolutely no way for him to complete the Inheritance quest without entering the Level 100 maps.

However, just because he did not want it, that would not mean that other players would not want them either. As mentioned before, A classes almost, or approach the ability of an S class Inheritance. Vampire Inheritance was B class rated and was still extremely strong.

Zhang Yang riding his Gold-Eared Bear King towards the night sky of the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night. Just when he had seen the silhouette of Silent Hail Town, he heard a deafening shriek which caused Zhang Yang to pull the reins of the bear to a complete stop.

"What the f*ck was that..."

From the far side, where the forests end, he saw a human figure jumping out of the bushes. She was tall and slender, having long hair that dangled in the winds as she ran at full speed away from the forest. In her hand, she held a short and shiny dagger that reflected the stars in the night sky.

[Sherry1] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 83

HP: 32,467 / 83,000

Defense: 450

Just two seconds after she came out of the forest, two more shadowy figures jumped out to chase after her. Those two were vampires with razor-sharp fangs. However, unlike the Dracula, those two did not have bat wings. They were probably a lower-classed vampire. Only high-ranking vampires could have wings!

[Lower Vampire] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 84

HP: 84,000

Defense: 450

At this time, Sherryl did a reverse somersault. The blade in her hand glittered as she flew backward in the sky. With a quick strike, she pierced one of the vampires in the chest with sniper-like accuracy.

"GRAHH!" The vampire screamed in agony as the stab in his chest started to glow in a bright white light, consuming its entire body which turned him into a dead man. Sherryl had just one shot killed the vampire!

Zhang Yang figured that the dagger must be blessed with some sort of holy water or that sort of thing. Unless the dagger was coated with holy water, there was no way that an elite tier NPC could kill an elite tier monster in one single strike.

Zhang Yang rode as quickly as he could towards the NPC and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards the remaining vampire.

"You're nothing but food to us! How dare you rebel!" cried the last vampire on the scene. It then jumped towards Zhang Yang with his arms wide open, ready to stab Zhang Yang with 10 claws.

"Watch it!" said Sherryl as she hurled herself and kicked the vampire aside with a dropkick.

Zhang Yang laughed and readied his sword and shield. "Relax, I had it under control. It's just a vampire. It could not even put a scratch on me!"

"How insolent! You dared to look down on the vampires?!" bellowed the vampire.

Zhang Yang sighed and slaughtered the mere Level 84 elite vampire. With the help from an elite NPC, the vampire was quickly killed without even the need to use any long cooldown skill. The vampire dead body turned into a clump of fine ash, leaving Zhang Yang a few [Silk], and coins.

"Warrior! You're strong!" said Sherryl as she sheathed her tiny blade into her side.

"So are you! Where do you learn to fight like that?" said Zhang Yang with a smile.

"Hmm. Please, I must ask you to rest at my house. It's been a long time since I had met a strong warrior such as you!" said Sherryl with an invitation.

Even though the NPC had verbally invited Zhang Yang, he did not receive any quest notification. It seems like Zhang Yang had only helped the NPC with a small chore. Perhaps it had not reached to the point of triggering a quest. Zhang Yang nodded and followed Sherryl.

Since Sherryl was on her foot the whole time, Zhang Yang unsummoned the bear and walked side by side with the NPC for close to 20 minutes before reaching the town. Since the canyon was eternally dark, the town was even darker. With the cold draft blowing across the town, carrying the frozen flakes of snow. The temperature of the entire place was close to subzero. Even though the time was supposed to be daytime, the place was only illuminated by lit torches around the town. There were close to 10 families around the town, though there were still a few kids playing in the snow in the streets. At least, that was the only source of laughter and vigor emanating from the entire town.

"Warrior, our town had always been under the threat of the vampire clan," said Sherryl as she sighed heavily. "This place...This canyon has never seen daylight. While I'm sure that other places in this land have seen day and night, this place, however, has only been blessed with endless snow and nights. We do have daylight, or as should I call it, a temporary shine. At most, we do have 3 hours of sunlight in this place every day. Those creatures hated the light, yet...they treat this place as their paradise!"

Zhang Yang nodded to acknowledge her statement. "I do have one question. Why didn't you guys leave?"

Sherryl laughed bitterly. "Is not that we don't want to. We couldn't. Vampires live on blood, and their favorite was always human blood. They had enclosed us like live stocks, waiting to be eaten when they are hungry. There is no way to leave this place without being killed! It's funny. Since it's always snowing, we had difficulty in farming crops and food. When the situation had escalated to a point where hunting for food was an

impossible task, they would hand deliver us dried up animals that have had their blood sucked dry!"

Zhang Yang started to frown.

"Worst of all, a few townsmen had begun to appreciate these creatures for delivering food! Sloths had manifested themselves in the hearts of the townsmen! They had already given up on fighting back since they were powerless, to begin with. All they can do is wait and die," said Sherryl disappointingly.

Zhang Yang frowned even harder. "Don't those people know that, even though they could still live, but they would be under the constant fear of being the next meal for the vampire?"

"They had ways to cope with that. Although no one had ever said it out loud, everyone is always wishing and praying hard that the monthly sacrifice would not be them!" said Sherryl.

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "I understand. Let's go."

The two of them entered the town and headed straight to her house. The brick house was slightly larger than the normal houses in town. Once they had entered, Sherryl quickly prepared the fireplace and burned a few logs to warm the house.

Zhang Yang thanked Sherryl for her kind gesture but in truth, he had not felt anything. Zhang Yang had already tweaked the sensory settings and had made sure that he would not feel the change of temperature to the extreme. "Where are your parents?"

There was a short silence when Sherryl answered with a bitter sad tone. "My mother had been chosen to be a sacrifice. My father had charged into the castle of the vampire to save my mother and had never come back." There was a sudden glint in her eyes and her voice was filled with rage. "Someday, I will drop the hammer of justice upon all these creatures!"

Sherryl excuse herself and went to prepare dinner for the both of them. After eating, Sherryl HP was recovered back to full health.

While cleaning up, Zhang Yang asked, "I understand that the vampire

would only hunt humans for food. Why would they try to kill you?"

Sherryl scoffed. "I had inherited my father's will to become a Vampire Hunter! One month after I entered adulthood, I have already killed 13 vampires!"

"Wait. You're just 16 years old?" asked Zhang Yang, surprised.

In the game, 16 years old was considered to be adulthood. Sherryl nodded her head.

As expected of a westerner, they had the tendency to reach puberty faster than any Asian. Sherryl had a mature face and a slender, voluptuous body of a grown woman. If Wei Yan Er was present, she would definitely be jealous till kingdom come!

Zhang Yang snickered quietly and said, "If you want...I could escort you out from here."

From where Zhang Yang stood, he understood that the Vampire Inheritance quest should be located in Silent Hail Town, and the NPC who was supposed to give out the quest was Sherryl. However, from where he stood right then, he did not know where his progress was. How or where the quest started was completely mysterious to him. Even though the Vampire Inheritance was considered to be a General tier Inheritance, but the means and paths of the quest taken by players who wish to receive the Vampire Inheritance were different!

Just like a maze with four entry points, players would start quests from a different point or story, only to reach the final point, which was the quest itself. Hence, this pathway was revealed secretly by a player that had discovered and had completed the Sherryl route. It was lucky that Zhang Yang had even remembered about the quest! Among all the other Inheritance quests, this was the only one available under Level 100.

Chapter 396: Incoming Vampire Attack

Since Zhang Yang had no idea on how to trigger the Vampire Inheritance quest, he had to just follow what Sherryl tells him to do. However, he was not afraid of completing the quest, because he could always let other players to complete the main Inheritance quest. All Inheritance quests were the same. First, they had to complete a series of quest to obtain a piece of Inheritance Fragment. Secondly, to gather all the Fragments which varies in different type of Inheritance, and start the main Inheritance quest. Finally, complete the long and draggy chain quest to obtain the Inheritance skill.

Some Inheritances did not have the same first step, but the second and third steps were usually the same.

The shards obtained were not bound by account. Which meant, Zhang Yang could complete all the Inheritance quests and obtain all the shards only to give it to someone else to complete the main Inheritance quest.

Sherryl staggered and sulked. "I...I have friends here. I can not just abandon them..."

'Ding! Sherryl's relationship with you has dropped!'

What? Just one wrong suggestion would decrease a person's liking?

Zhang Yang sighed but he understood something. If he wanted to trigger the pre-requisite quest of the Vampire Inheritance quest, he would need to main a good Relationship with Sherryl the NPC. He nodded and said, "When you were fighting the vampires alone, don't you wish to have a partner with you?"

Sherryl turned her face to Zhang Yang. Her eyes widen with curiosity. "Warrior, do you meant to join my fight against the vampire?"

"Yes. I do."

Sherryl smiled but her smile faded away quickly. "I thank you. But I can only accept the thought of it. I cannot ask you to put your life on the line for a fight that has nothing to do with you!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Well, I did kill one of them. It's too late for me to pull out now, don't you think so? Killing one or a hundred would not make a difference! I'd say, Sherryl, we should cooperate together to chase the vamps away from the town of Silent Hail!"

Sherryl smiled. "You're one trustworthy warrior! I'll have you know, killing one vampire was easy, but do you know that there were at least 1,000 vampires in the castle! The ones that we had just killed were only the weakest among the vampires in the castle! Furthermore, a stronger ranking vampire has the power to dominate and control other lower ranked Spectres. They could easily drown us all with the sheer number of enemies!"

Zhang Yang smiled. Killing a sea of monsters was his specialty anyway, thanks to the sword's special skill that he had. Come one hundred or one million, he could kill them all!

"We can't say that we can't defeat them if we haven't even tried!"

Just then, there was a loud commotion happening outside the house. Zhang Yang and Sherryl then exchanged a look and went outside. To what Zhang Yang had least expected, there were hundreds of winged vampires hovering across the town, forming a circle to prevent anyone from escaping. Each of them shrieked ever so deafeningly that their cries could easily perforate one's eardrum!

"It is time for the sacrifice of the month!" There was a woman's voice echoing through the town. Although it was not loud, it was very clear.

Sherryl face turned pale. She trembled in fear as she pointed at one of the vampires in the air. "T-That's... Desionia! She is the second wife of Madros, the Vampire King! Her powers are unmeasurable! Why would she come!? Why is she here? She's never been here before! Zhan Yu! There would normally be only more than 10 vampires around during the monthly sacrificial!"

Zhang Yang kept quiet. But he knew that it was all because of him! But, it was better to keep quiet about that sort of thing. "Let's see what does that Desionia wants to do."

Sherryl smiled bitterly and said, "I have no words left to describe you, warrior. Be it reckless or strong, you have to know that Desionia is incredibly strong as a vampire! You...*sigh* Please help me! Chase those vampires away!"

‘Ding! Sherryl has a quest for you: Chase the Vampires. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

[Chase the Vampires] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description; Chase away all the vampire in Silent Hail Town. Once Sherryl dies or is taken away, the quest will be deemed as failure.

Progress: Chase the Vampires away: 0/1

The two of them moved closer to the town. The screams of the vampires were so loud that the townsmen had to cover their ears with their hands as they rushed out of their house and gathered at the town’s plaza.

Shush!

A female vampire descended down with speed and grace. The female vampire had long hair that dropped down to her feet. Although the air was chilly and the floor was covered with snow, she wore only a thin white wedding dress. Unlike her dark, black hair, her eyes were bloody red, that glowed in contrast with the white background. As she walked slowly towards the plaza, she took out a long black leather whip and coiled it around her right hand.

[Desionia, Vampire’s Bride] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

No wonder Sherryl was scared, the enemies that she had fought were an elite tier. Now, walking towards the human crowd of Silent Hail Town was a Yellow-Gold tiered boss!

Silently and slowly, both Zhang Yang and Sherryl blended into the crowd and remained quiet.

Desionia walked towards the crowd and withheld her steps when she was roughly 3 meters away from the front. She then turned her head towards the furthest left and slowly glanced through all of the townsmen. When the townsmen felt the gaze of Desionia's cold dead eyes falling on them, they would lower their heads and close their eyes, hoping that the female vampire would not call out to them. She was like the god of death, hand picking anyone to deliver their last breath!

"Sherryl!" she cried. "Who is Sherryl! Stand out!"

By the time Zhang Yang wanted to cover Sherryl behind his massive armor, more than half of the townsmen turned their head around and had locked on to Sherryl! Zhang Yang gritted his teeth. These men must be the lazy sloths that Sherryl had mentioned earlier. These pigs were the ones who would do anything to stay alive!

"Ahh..." Desionia sighed as if she was appreciating Sherryl's beauty. "What a beautiful girl."

Desionia flapped her wings once and she hovered above the ground and landed right in front of Sherryl. Zhang Yang scoot aside, preparing to start a fight if she would do something to Sherryl. The rest of the townsmen moved back a good distance.

Desionia reached her left arm out and caressed Sherryl face with her finger. She traced her cold, pale fingers down to her chin and slowly moved towards her neck.

"To hell with you! Creatures of hell!" Sherryl cried as she swiftly drew out the dagger that was hidden behind her. It was the same dagger that had killed the elite vampire with a single strike.

"How wild!" Desionia reached out her arm and caught Sherryl arms at her wrist. Desionia had only smiled when Sherryl was struggling hard to free her hands from Desionia's grasp. She then pulled Sherryl closer to herself and planted her face to Sherryl breast. She took a deep breath and let out a satisfied moan. "You smell so delicious! Where do you think I

should start with you?" said Desionia playfully.

The townsmen who were moving back had returned to their homes. Based on the tradition, every time the vampires had selected the town's sacrifice, the townsmen would gain another month of a carefree moment before they would face another round of fear. As to what would happen to the victim, the townsmen would not give a d*mn about. To them, to see the light for another day was considered to be a blessing. There was no time to care for anyone else! Right then, Zhang Yang who was ready to strike the vampire was the only person left standing close to Sherryl.

Sherryl turned her eyes and met with Desionia with anger and contempt. "I'm not afraid of you, demon!"

"HAHAHAHA!" Desionia laughed. With her hand still grasping firmly to Sherryl, she said coldly, "Little girl. I'm afraid to tell you that you have used the wrong pronoun. We belong to the great race of Vampires. The greatest race that would live forever! And you, my beloved Sherryl, it is not me, it is we! You, my child, are one of us!"

"Horse sh*t!" Sherryl cursed.

At this time, Zhang Yang stomped forward with haste and cried aloud. "Sherryl, loosen your grip!"

Sherryl was shocked at Zhang Yang's sudden bold move but understood what he wanted to do immediately. She then released the dagger in her hands and allow the silver dagger to drop to the floor. At lightning speed, Zhang Yang lowered himself and skidded through the snow, grabbing the dagger in the air. As he was still sliding through the ground, he jumped upward and stabbed Desionia with a half-moon turn in the air.

[Sacred Silver Dagger] (Tool)

Use: Blessed with holy water from the church, this dagger is imbued with great power to damage Spectres. Due to its silver content, its power against vampires is increased further.

Uses left: 3/3

Level Requirement: 80

It was obvious to Zhang Yang that Desionia was all too confident that no one would defect. Little did she know that the weak little "food" would actually fight back! It was even a bigger surprise for her when there was another fearless one that would act against her! That surprise move had caused her to miss the dagger and was left with a deep bloody wound in her chest.

‘-100,000!’

Zhang Yang eyes nearly popped out when he saw just how much damage he had just dealt! Sadly, it was a shame that it was a tool and not an equipment. If it was, he could have use it against the Vampire King and hack 1 million HP of the bugger’s HO with just 100 slashes of this miracle blade.

"ARGH!" Desionia staggered and immediately flew up into the night sky. Panic, rage, regret, and most of all, the expression of shock was written all over her face as she cringed in pain. "Kill that man!"

Shush! Shush!

The vampires that filled the night sky obeyed Desionia and shot down from the sky towards Zhang Yang and Sherryl.

"Let’s go!"

Zhang Yang pulled Sherryl up to her feet in one strong pull and ran behind her as the both of them ran towards the brick house.

Zhang Yang could summon his mount and fight the monsters with it, but he would have to endure the monsters’ physical attacks. As the disadvantages outweighed the benefits, Zhang Yang had rather rely on the good old fashion brick house to protect them.

As fast as their feet could move, the two of them ran into the house, with Zhang Yang behind Sherryl. Only after seeing Sherryl entered the house, Zhang Yang stopped and stood guard at the entrance.

"Here. Take it," said Zhang Yang as he returned the silver dagger back to Sherryl. For him, the dagger could only be used three times. But perhaps, there was a chance that Sherryl could use it perpetually. She was, after all,

an important NPC for the quest.

"KYAAA!!" With a loud shriek, a vampire had flown close to the entrance. It then slowed down by spreading its wings wide and thrust his sharp claws at Zhang Yang.

"Oh! F*ck off!" Zhang Yang cried and slashed the vampire with the godly sword in his hand.

The situation got worse by the minute when many more vampires had descended down and formed a wave of enemy. They started to shriek together towards Zhang Yang.

‘-570!’

‘-570!’

...

The shriek had formed a visible wave in the air and had caused nearly 600 damage to Zhang Yang. The problem was the sound wave could not be blocked! If it was one or two monsters, Zhang Yang could handle it just fine. But when the number reached more than 10, it would cause a problem, even for a tank.

"Warrior! Put this on!" Sherryl cried out loud and took out a silver pendant. Her eyes screamed of fear of losing him. Zhang Yang did not know what was the pendant for but since the NPC had given it to him at the moment of peril, it had to be something useful!

[Holy Silver Pendant] (Tool)

Item Description: Blessed by the holy water from the church. This pendant would negate all evil and their negative temptation on you.
Duration: 1 hour.

"KYAA!!!" As he put the pendant on, the number of vampires had already reached to more than a hundred. With a loud unison shriek, the air literally tore apart forming visible waves that were traveling towards Zhang Yang.

Immune!

As the sound waves touched Zhang Yang's character, the word "Immune" ticked.

This is good stuff!

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased. "Don't think that you're the only one who can shout like that! Watch me! BRAAAAAAAA!!!" Zhang Yang shouted and activated {Blast Wave} at the same time.

Chapter 397: Fallback

‘-952!’

‘-953!’

...

With just one {Blast Wave}, the vampires gathering outside the house were stunned. More than 30 vampires had received the direct hit from that skill which had caused a high proccing chance for Zhang Yang’s [Sword of Purging Devourer] sword effect. The skilled chained for 4 procs and stopped at the fifth.

Even though the skill had echoed four times, the monsters were all elite tier, with HP bars as high as 85,000! Four {Blast Wave} had only dealt close to 5% of their own HP. However, the accumulated damage had exceeded 120,000 damage! It was more than {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}. But {Blast Wave} had only a 20 second cooldown rate!

That entrance of the brick house was a gate that shaped like a valve, forming a natural one-person blockade. The entrance had forced the vampire to bottleneck themselves, allowing only one monster to enter at a time. Zhang Yang was troubled since he could not use {Horizontal Sweep} efficiently. In fact, the skill had no penetrative effect, which only allowed him to attack just one vampire per skill usage.

Obviously, the skill {Horizontal Sweep} that was obtained via a hidden quest and was ranked as the highest skill, had the greatest damage output. However, the AoE splash effect of the skill was completely rendered useless in this situation. Without the ability to hit multiple targets, the sword would lose its ability to proc properly. Zhang Yang’s DPS had been lowered drastically.

Even so, Zhang Yang blocked the entrance. The vampires that had taken damage from the back had no means of pushing forward. Angered by frustration, the vampires shrieked again, causing the walls to vibrate in resonating with the sound waves. Dust and smaller pebbles started to fall

off the walls. There were many other vampires that had started to claw their way through the brick walls. However, despite their effects, Sherry's house was made from thick and solid bricks, and not fragile wood. The wall surrounding the house and the gates, stood still, while the vampires' claws were already torn apart.

Smiling at Zhang Yang, she said with pride. "During the construction of the house, father had factored in the possibility of a vampire attack. He chose the sturdiest materials to build the bricks which formed the wall of the houses and the gates. These vampires stand no chance at breaking it down. Not even Desionia could break it!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her proud statement and asked, "How about the upstairs windows?"

"Fear not, the window frames had been coated and blessed with holy water. If the vampires were to enter through the windows, they would immediately turn into ash!" said Sherryl.

As to prove her point, Zhang Yang heard a scream of agony and the sound of fine sand falling onto the floor, coming from upstairs.

Zhang Yang nodded with confidence that Sherryl would be safe, and only then did he turn back to the entrance and focused all his attention on killing the vampires. All skills were soon unleashed upon them.

"Warrior! Let me help you!" Zhang Yang heard her voice from behind and felt a pair of warm hands rest on his back. The warmth of her hands spread out and enveloped his entire character. He then gained a new buff.

[Sherry's Blessing]: Restore 3,000 HP every 3 seconds for 30 seconds.

It was obviously a priest {Regeneration} skill - on steroids. Not even the super healer, Han Ying Xue could reach that amount. At most, at her current level, her {Regeneration} could only heal less than 2,000 at every tick!

With the healing buff on him, Zhang Yang could relax a little. Even though healing 3,000 HP every 3 seconds could not heal him much, he had only been receiving damage from one monster at a time! Healing

1,000 HP every second could easily break even with the damage received, and still have much more left over!

Both Zhang Yang and the white bear stood guard at the entrance, turning each vampire that tried to enter into a pile of ash. Although there were a hundred or more enemies, Zhang Yang had no problem reducing that number down with the help of his amazing sword.

"I've seriously underestimated you!" cried Sherryl after seeing what Zhang Yang was capable of.

Zhang Yang laughed and took out the [Laser Cannon] from his inventory. He aimed at one of the hottest spot among the vampire and fired the bazooka-like weapon. A bright light blasted away, the vampires around the area were damaged with 10,000 HP.

It was a pity that the bazooka had 1 hour long cool down time! Even though he still had the mechanical servant in his inventory, he was genuinely afraid that the giant Devastator might tear down the house as it appears in the battlefield. It's not like he was in need of its help for the moment, might as well be safe than sorry.

From 300 to 100, Zhang Yang had speedily killed the vampires outside the entrance. Sherryl was just standing at one corner, gaping at Zhang Yang's prowess. All she did was to heal Zhang Yang by a 30 seconds interval.

"Hold!" Desionia bellowed from behind. Her voice carried some kind of sort of authoritative aura, and even Zhang Yang could feel the dominating power from it.

"Capture all the townsmen!"

Shush!

One by one, the remaining vampires who were fighting Zhang Yang flapped their wings and shot into the sky. There was only a temporary silence before the screams and cries came echoing from the plaza. Zhang Yang asked Sherryl to get into the house.

"HAHAHAHAHA!" the eerie laughter of Desionia could be heard. "My

sweet sweet Sherryl, you better come out or I'll kill the people in the town~"

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue and turned towards Sherryl. "Don't fall for her lies. She just wants us to surrender! If she wanted to kill the townsmen, she would have already done so!"

Sherryl kept quiet and nodded her head.

"O Sherryl~~" Desionia playful voice was heard as she descended down and landed in front of the house. Zhang Yang remained on guard. In her hands, she was holding an older man by the throat and said, "Tell Sherryl your name~"

"I-I-I. I'm Mogue—ACK!"

Just when the poor NPC had reported his name, Desionia had planted her fangs into the old man's neck.

"NO! UNCLE MOGUE!" cried Sherryl as she screamed. She opened the door to the house and started angrily at Desionia.

After consuming the NPC blood, a blood red hue glowed on Desionia's face, restoring the lost HP to its full status.

[Blood Sucking]: Consumes the blood of your target and heal 10% of your HP every second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool down time: 5 minutes.

Zhang Yang knows that the skill was only for Vampires to use. However, if he obtains the Vampire Inheritance, he would also inherit the skill!

Thud...

Desionia threw the now deceased Mogue to one side. There was still some blood stains on her hand. She then lifted her hand to her face and playfully lick the blood off her hands. There was an orgasmic expression on her face as she swallowed the blood.

"Now you see my dear~ I am done playing with you," said Desionia with a smile. With a quick movement, she grabbed one more townsmen that the vampire had already captured and said, "Come out now~ Or~ I will kill another one! And another, until everyone is dead!"

What kind of sick f*ck would do that!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Based on the norm, Sherryl would surely surrender herself in order to save her friends. After that, she would be kidnapped by the vampires and he would have to be the knight in shiny armor and kill the evil king in order to rescue the damsel in distress.

Sherryl followed her guts and succumbed to Desionia's threat. Just when she was about to walk out of the gates. Zhang Yang had a sudden idea. He then quickly grabbed Sherryl's arm and place his sword on her neck. The sudden gesture had suddenly shocked Sherryl, and even Desionia herself.

"Trust me." Zhang Yang whispered to Sherryl. He then turned to Desionia and said, "Leave now, or I will kill this woman!"

After Desionia obvious reaction, she laughed out loud and hold on her stomach as if she had just seen the most hilarious comedy ever. After a long laugh, Desionia finally calmed down and said, "You intend to threaten us with just a mere human? Are you daft? Kill her if you want. I shall find another human to replace her!"

"Any human you say, that means she means nothing to you then? Perhaps I should just rape her and feed her to my bear then." Zhang Yang gripped his sword tightly and made a small cut on her neck. As the blood started to ooze out from the wound, panic filled Desionia's face.

"Wait!" she cried out.

Zhang Yang knew it clearly that something was not right. If Sherryl was just "any human" as Desionia had just described, the vampires would not have chased after her so furiously. As an NPC that would trigger such a drastic event, how could not she be an important character!

"Shall you take your leave now?" said Zhang Yang provokingly.

With great contempt, Desionia glared at Zhang Yang. After what seemed to be a long stare down between the two of them, Desionia screamed to the high heavens and bellowed angrily. "Return to the castle!"

One of the vampires come to her and kneeled down. "Mistress Desionia, Lord Madros had commanded us to bring Sherryl back to the castle. If we

return empty-handed. I fear that the lord would be extremely displeased."

Desionia scoffed and said, "Leave. I will explain this matter to the lord myself!"

"Yes! We listen and obey!"

Every vampire present replied in unison. They spread out their wings and shot to the sky, disappearing towards the north.

Desionia was the last one present. Zhang Yang noticed and he had not removed the sword from Sherryl's neck because of it.

"Enjoy your temporary peace. I will return." Desionia spoke with such vile that Zhang Yang knew she meant her words. She spread her wings and flew towards the same direction as the other vampires.

Zhang Yang then removed the sword and cheered. "Looks like we won!"

"Yes, indeed. However, you nearly killed me there, warrior!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Chase the Vampire. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!'

Just when Zhang Yang was expecting a follow-up quest, the system notification ended there with no other notification popping out.

"Sherryl! My dad died because of you!" cried someone. The captured townsmen from before had gathered at Sherryl's doorsteps with expressions that spoke of murder and vengeance.

Zhang Yang pulled Sherryl and stood in front of her. "Sherryl was willing to sacrifice herself just to protect you guys! What gives you the right to slander her!"

"It's her. It's all because of her! Those creatures wouldn't have attacked us if it wasn't for her! Why would the vampires spare our lives in place of hers? I'd say, she's one of them!" cried one of the townsmen.

"Yeah!"

"Burn the girl!"

Voices of angry townsmen filled the place, and Sherryl remained quiet.

Zhang Yang turned back and saw Sherryl was in shock. Zhang Yang understood her feelings. She was about to give her life in order to save the very same people who were throwing insults and death threats to her. It was a massive psychological attack which Zhang Yang could never measure. The trust and love towards the town was shattered instantly.

Zhang Yang sighed and summoned his bear. "Let's go!" Zhang Yang pulled Sherryl up and sat behind her on the bear. With a loud roar, the bear then galloped away from the angry townsmen. There was no reason to argue further.

After a short moment, the townsmen began to chase after Zhang Yang with fire and pitchforks.

Chapter 398: The Garden of Vampires

The townsmen had chased after Zhang Yang for about two kilometers before stopping to catch their breath. Although they had stopped, Zhang Yang could still see where they were, due to the light from their touch and the loud inaudible screaming.

Zhang Yang continued to ride until they reached to a thick forest before helping Sherryl down from the bear.

With wide, unfocused eyes, Sherryl finally broke. "Why...Why..."

Zhang Yang sighed. It was understandable that Sherryl would react that way. She was only 16 years old for god's sake. Zhang Yang tried to lighten her mood. "Those townspeople of yours are really scary."

Sherryl smiled weakly and turned towards the direction of the town. The glint in her eyes still suggested the shock from being treated harshly by the townsmen.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and gave into his recklessness. "Wait here. I'll be back."

"Where are you going?" Sherryl asked. She seemed to regain some level of vigor.

"I'm going to kill that lord vampire king Madros or something." Zhang Yang replied with a warm smile. "If that bloody bugger is dead, then no one will blame you for something as outrageous as you being one of the vampires!"

Sherryl expression softened greatly but quickly grabbed Zhang Yang by his arm. "Warrior! Don't do that! It's too dangerous! I cannot allow you to be in danger because of me!"

'Ding! You have gained a good Relationship with Sherryl!'

Hoho...

Zhang Yang smirked. "You need not worry about me! You see, I have a bunch of very strong friends! Together, we can kill Madros!"

"Warrior..." Sherryl tried to talk Zhang Yang out of his reckless idea.

"Too late. I've already decided," said Zhang Yang, confirming his decision. "Sherryl, I don't know what the vampires want from you. But I do know this. You're extremely important to them. That is why I must ask you to remain hidden. Keep a low profile and wait for the good news!"

Sherryl hesitated but eventually succumbed to Zhang Yang's confidence.

Even so, after the entire wild commotion, Sherryl still had not given any follow-up quest! As hard as it sounds, a hidden quest was surely hard to trigger! Zhang Yang thought to himself, now that he had already proceeded with the "event" so far, and he had confirmed that Sherryl was the NPC that would give out the Vampire Inheritance quest, he could just kill Madros some other day and not need to come back for Sherryl! Would not that be a waste of time since the girl would not trigger the quest?

Zhang Yang nodded confidently. "You take care of yourself. I'll be on my way now."

"Good luck." Sherryl wished Zhang Yang well and gripped the dagger hard, whilst nodding her head up and down.

Zhang Yang rode the bear and galloped as fast as he could towards the north, where the vampire had flown. After riding a few hundred kilometers for god knows how long, Zhang Yang had arrived at a desolate garden. The garden was huge and wide. In the middle of the garden was a flower circlet. In this godforsaken place which was devoid of any sunlight, there were many odd plantation and flowers that had grown beautifully. As Zhang Yang approached closer to the flora, he noticed that the stems of the flowers were transparent and what made the plants look red was the blood that was flowing in it!

Behind the garden was a three stories building. It was obvious that the building was extremely old. There were veins glowing all over the exterior of the building. The dark, black building was encased in coils of growing veins that had only made it look like it was a man-eating "beast" that could just swallow him as he enters it.

Separating the main building from the outside world was an iron gate

that measured two person's height. Inside the flower garden were vampires tending to the flowers, but it was not clear to what they were actually doing.

Zhang Yang pushed the iron gates, which gave out a loud rusty creak as it swung open. Riding the bear, Zhang Yang moved slowly. After the gates was a long, white pavement. In the middle of the route was a beautiful large water fountain. After that was the eerie looking building.

Zhang Yang rode slowly towards the building. The bear's paws were soft like a cat's, making no noise as it moved. However, the metal plates of his armor were constantly crashing into each other, as the bear wobbled up and down.

"H-Help...me..." A faint cry of help was heard coming from the flower garden.

Zhang Yang jumped from the sound of it. It was extremely scary being alone, in dark, creepy place. Surely anyone would be scared when they suddenly hear a cry for help in this situation. He quickly stopped his tracks and searched for the source of the sound. But no matter how hard he searches, there was nothing of a human to be found.

"Heeellppp...Me...." The same faint cry was heard again.

This time, Zhang Yang heard is clearly. He got down from the bear and walked into the bunch of flowers. He then bent down and pulled the flowers. Once the flowers were broken off their roots, it literally bled. Zhang Yang continued until he found a soft spot. Inside the area was a man, or half of what seems to be a man. The body had already decayed halfway through, roots growing from inside the man's organs. No wonder the flowers were able to grow so beautifully, their nutritions were coming directly from a human! The blood that flowed in the plants was human blood!

What a disgusting setting! Props to the designer!

The man opened his eyes. Although he was unable to move, he was still able to move his eyeballs and glared at Zhang Yang. "Please...kill me. End my life!"

[Half-dead Human] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 1

HP: 1/50

Defense: 1

Zhang Yang nearly vomited from the sight of the man still being alive after all that he had been through. Filled with pity and disgust, Zhang Yang granted the man's wish. He pulled his sword out and stabbed the man in his chest, ending his tortured life.

"T-thank...You..." As life seeped away from the man, Zhang Yang retrieved his sword but there was no bloodstain on his blade. The plants had already sucked the man's dry!

Just then, a shadow appeared on the ground and shot over him. Zhang Yang immediately hid himself. The shadowy figure landed gracefully on the ground and walked towards a flower. The person then pressed his lips to the tip of the flower and began sucking the fluid in it. As the bloodily liquid flows out of the flower and into the man's, his pale face regained its color. The man continued sucking out the blood from the plant until the plant withered away. With obvious vigor regeneration, the man spread out his wings and flew back into the building through the roof.

Zhang Yang knew then, that was the more brutal method to draw and store blood from a human. Even if it was just a game, Zhang Yang had to applaud the designer and the director for coming up with such an amazing story lore. Because right then, Zhang Yang was filled with immense rage. He hopped on the bear and gently ruffled the bear's forehead. "It's time for a massacre."

The bear growled faintly and galloped towards the building.

"I smell the smell of a Human! A living human!"

Unlike the unguarded garden, the building had two elite vampires standing guard at the entrance. The system had the vampires react to Zhang Yang only when he had entered their aggro range, and not based on sight.

Zhang Yang started the battle with a {Spear of Obliteration} thrown at the left vampire.

"Ack!" the vampire winched in pain. The two targets then lunged themselves at Zhang Yang.

‘-1,172!’

‘-1,219!’

Having more than 100,000 HP, Zhang Yang had barely felt anything! Based on calculations, the two enemies had a basic attack of around 6,000. Even though it was rather average, it was made to look like a pea shooter, since Zhang Yang had a strong damage reduction ability, reducing close to 80% of their attacks!

Zhang Yang set his sights on the one that he had attacked before and launched a series of sword slices.

"What a strong warrior!"

"Such strength, the blood would most definitely be of quality!"

Like hungry men who had not eaten in days, the two vampires licked their lips, drooling at the sight of Zhang Yang. Their attacks were weak albeit being fast and swift.

"My blood? Please, you don't have enough qualifications to taste my blood!" Zhang Yang taunted.

The match was a 2v2 battle, with Zhang Yang and the Gold-Eared Bear King against the two vampires. With over 6,000 DPS, they had easily killed the first enemy in just 15 seconds. Losing all 80,000 HP in the battle, the vampire fell to the ground and turned into fine ash, which was blown by the winds. The second one was also defeated in about the same time.

"Is that all?" Zhang Yang scoffed.

He then proceeds to push open the door. To his dismay, the door creaked loudly. Compared to the creep exterior, the inside of the creepy building was surprisingly pleasant. The entire hall was illuminated with

the warm light coming from a candle chandelier hanging on the ceiling. The hall which Zhang Yang had just entered was the living room. Like what you could expect from a wealthy old western family; the hall was filled with cushioned chairs and a marvelous, grand wooden craved table, and a large fireplace. There were more than 10 well-dressed vampires, both male, and female who were sipping what seems to be red wine. There was even music playing in the background which made it look like a social party for the snobs.

Although they were classified as Spectres, the vampire considered themselves to be one of the noble creatures. They felt superior compared to the skeletal soldiers, or zombies, and the undead that would look and behave savagely. The vampires would never associate themselves with the rest and would live in the grandest and upscale castle. They would then consider themselves as the Blood Race and refuse to be classified as a part of the Spectres.

Everyone turned to Zhang Yang at the moment he pushed the door open. All heads turned to him, which immediately made Zhang Yang think that he had just made the worst mistake ever. One of the beautiful ladies laughed and clapped her hands. "Welcome! Oh my! What strong, young man!" She emphasized the word "young".

Another lady joined the conversation and giggled behind a paper fan. "Ohohohoho...My dear Phoebe, control your lust!"

"Why should I, Lorraine? Imagine the both of us in bed, intertwined with each other! The pleasure of taking his blood while he breathes next to me! Who could resist that! Ahh! I must have him!" Phoebe screamed in a weird, pleasure-like moan. She stood immediately and spread her wings, tearing the dress on her back. With lightning speed, the vampire lunged towards Zhang Yang, with her hands bared and claws ready to stab Zhang Yang.

"I hope that you don't mind me joining you! Phoebe!" said the same female who had interjected her.

"Piss off! Why are you always trying to snatch my toys! It was the same

as before and it is the same as now! I'd never want to share the same men with you! You always have it too rough! The men you play with always end up dying!" Phoebe growled angrily.

"Hohohoho! Whoever gets her hands on him first shall own the warrior!" cried the vampire named Lorraine.

Zhang Yang raised his eyebrows, along with his sword and shield. "Why don't I have a say in this?"

"Give up fighting and give in to me!" Bellowed Phoebe as she placed her attention on Zhang Yang. There was a certain aura to the vampires here. As if each of them were strong. Even though they were all elite tier, they had special names to them instead of the general noun. These elite monsters were strong. They had over 200,000 HP and could be called mini-bosses.

Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards Phoebe and withdrew slowly until he reached outside the building. Zhang Yang wanted to be able to ride on the battle mount, to allow himself to be stronger!

BOOM!

Zhang Yang kicked the door behind him and rolled backward, just in the nick of time to avoid the attacks of both Phoebe and Lorraine. Zhang Yang quickly jumped behind the bear and was ready to lay down attacks. It was a shame that he wasn't ready. If he had been, he would have swapped the battle mount to the Mythical Turtle and gained even more power!

"Surrender to me, human! Bow down, and I shall grant you the ultimate pleasure before your death!" Phoebe taunted Zhang Yang as she clawed her way to Zhang Yang.

After parrying a number of attacks, Zhang Yang laughed and replied, "Shame that you're completely not my type!"

"HAHAHA!" Lorraine laughed. "Looks like it's time for you to change your appeal!"

"Imbecile!"

The two of the female vampires continued to have their war or words, yet the physical attacks on Zhang Yang had not slowed down! However, Zhang Yang did not mind. His main target now was only Phoebe. Dancing with his blade, Zhang Yang had delivered a series of attacks which drained the enemy's HP down rapidly.

Even though Phoebe had slightly more HP than the average elite monsters, she had only 200,000 HP! Zhang Yang had killed a 80,000 HP in just 15 seconds, so at most it would take 40 seconds or less to deal with 200,000 HP!

"Ack!" Phoebe finally winched in pain after her long HP was left with over 20,000 HP. Before Zhang Yang could deliver the final blow, she shot into the sky and flew to the flower garden.

"D*mn!" Zhang Yang cursed. Somehow, he knew that she would do that.

"Don't try to escape!" Lorraine bellowed. Seeing her comrade being attacked to that state, she roared angrily as she clawed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had not want to deal with Lorraine just yet. Frantically, he left the place, only to see that Phoebe had landed in the flower garden. There was a glint of panic in her eyes. With all the power left in her body, she quickly dashed around the garden. Her speed was so fast that Zhang Yang could only see flowers disappearing in a fraction of a second. After that, there was a sudden blow of strong gale that swept away most of the dust, revealing herself standing in the center of the garden. In her hands, there were blood dripping off, but it was not her blood. It was the blood that was oozing out from the flower. With great speed, she sucked in all the blood from each flower and gained a boon status.

Consuming fresh blood, recover 10% HP every second for 10 seconds.

Even though Zhang Yang was efficient in using {Destructive Smash}, leaving no gap in between the skill's cooldown, 3 seconds had passed since Phoebe had flown away. By the time she started consuming the blood, the debuff from {Destructive Smash} had already expired.

‘+20,000!’

‘+20,000!’

...

"Crap!" Zhang Yang cursed. Phoebe had started healing, and at great speed at that! Hoping that he could make it in time, Zhang Yang pulled the reins and made the bear leap 10 feet forward.

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-8,343!’

‘+5,000!’

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relieve when he had managed to delivered the skill, causing Phoebe recovery to receive a 75% reduction.

"You bastard!" Phoebe shouted from the top of her lungs. She then spread her wings and shot towards Zhang Yang, causing him to be pushed behind a great distance.

"Tch!" Zhang Yang cringed as he pulled the rein to prevent himself from falling over.

"Come get me!" Zhang Yang taunted and charged towards the two vampires. Zhang Yang still focused his fire on Phoebe instead of Lorraine. After receiving the {Destructive Smash} interruption during her blood sucking, she had only managed to heal over 40% of her HP.

"No...NO! NO! ACK! SAVE ME! NOO! KYAA!" cried Phoebe as she lost her mind when Zhang Yang had landed the last attack which completely depleted her HP. The wound at which Zhang Yang had sliced into Phoebe turned into a burning ember. The ember spread all over, causing Phoebe to panic. As much as she tried to claw the ember from spreading to her entire body, there was nothing that she could do except to scream at the top of her lungs. As quickly as the time ticked away, Phoebe's entire body turned into a glowing amber before crumbling down into a pile of gray ash.

"Phoebe! My dear! Phobe! No!!" Tears started to fall from Lorraine's bloodshot eyes. She lunged herself at Zhang Yang and pinned him down.

"Bastard! You have killed my daughter! When I'm done with you, you'd wish that I would end your life right now! I will turn you into a vampire and torture you for all eternity!"

Threats aside, Zhang Yang was actually more surprised at the fact that both Lorraine and Phoebe were mother and daughter! What kind of game designer did Dream Tech hire!

"All your blood are belonged to me!" Lorraine flapped her wings with much power, granting her the ability to move around with better agility. Attacks came from all directions!

Zhang Yang laughed despite being attacked by a crazy mother who had just lost her daughter. When two monsters had attacked Zhang Yang, he was not troubled by it, now that Lorraine was the only one left, what sort of trouble could she do to him?

Zhang Yang picked himself up and retaliate even harder. Just as Phoebe, Zhang Yang took no time at all to kill Lorraine. Before he knew it, Lorraine had left with only 10%. As expected, she too, shot towards the garden to suck on the flowers.

"Crap!! Again!?" Zhang Yang scolded himself for being reckless. Not only had she healed herself, she had chosen a place much further away from where Phoebe was. Zhang Yang cursed angrily and chased after her with {Destructive Smash} ready in hand.

This time, he was rather lucky, when Lorraine had shot off, the {Destructive Smash} debuff on her still had over 7 seconds of active duration. Zhang Yang had managed to reach her and deliver another {Destructive Smash} before the effect wore off. Thus, Lorraine had only healed by 25%. Easy peasy, lemon squeezy.

Chapter 399: The Vampire's Touch

Both Lorraine and Phoebe had dropped a weird item called [Vampire's Fang].

[Vampire's Fang]

Use: Collect and combine 7 Vampire's Fangs to form a [Vampire's Touch].

"Huh." Said Zhang Yang as he read through the item description of the [Vampire's Fang]. [Vampire's Touch] was an Enhancing item similar to that of Rune Stone, and a Whetstone that is used on weapons to increase its power. Like the item name suggested, the [Vampire's Touch], would grant a Lifesteal effect on the weapon that was chosen to be enhanced. Since it was a rare effect, it was stronger than regular enhancement via other methods. The Lifesteal effect gained from this item cannot be stacked with Rune Stones nor Whetstones. Among the three enhancing items, only one can be applied at the same time.

Unlike the Rune Stones made from Rune Crafters, or Whetstones made from Smithers, [Vampire's Touch] can only be found by hunting the vampires and collecting their fangs. Furthermore, [Vampire's Fang] would only be dropped by special vampires and not the "nameless" normal monsters. The drop rate was so low that not even the boss might drop them.

All and all, the item was extremely rare.

After collecting all the battle loots, Zhang Yang sat down to heal himself. After killing two elite monsters with super long HPs who were capable of healing themselves, he had suffered quite the damage and was only left with less than 20,000 HP. Zhang Yang was rather relieved that the other vampires who were in the building did join the fight with Lorraine and Phoebe, providing enough time for Zhang Yang to heal.

After healing, Zhang Yang entered the living room again. Instead of fighting, the vampires inside were still enjoying themselves with glasses of wines and vibrant conversation between themselves. They were cheerful

and happy as if someone from their party had just won a major battle of some sort.

During the battle initiation by Phoebe and Lorraine had broken the door earlier, Zhang Yang had no need to make a flashy appearance to enter the hall. None of the vampires inside were alerted by his entry. Zhang Yang had chosen to lure one monster at a time, and picked one of the vampires, and attacked with him {Spear of Obliteration}. The vampire that was lured was named Tolor, and he jumped from his seat and flew towards Zhang Yang.

"Eh!? You're the human from before! Where is Lorraine? Where is Phoebe!?" The vampire cried out in surprise.

Zhang Yang smirked and landed one attack. "You'll soon find out."

"Bastard!" Tolor bellowed and attacked with the same style as Lorraine and Phoebe; hands wide open, with sharp claws ready to dismember Zhang Yang's limbs. Even though the male vampire looked very strong, he was beaten to a pulp by Zhang Yang. He had also flown to the garden to heal himself but had only prolonged his death by a minute or so. Tolor did not drop any [Vampire's Fang] which left Zhang Yang slightly disappointed.

Like changing the tea leaves of a pot, Zhang Yang defeated all the vampires in the hall one by one. Fortunately, he had collected all 7 pieces of the fangs and formed one complete [Vampire's Touch].

[Vampire's Touch (Beginner)] (Usable)

Use: Use it on a weapon, grants the ability to restore 5% HP on every hit.

Level Requirement: 80

The item description dictated that the Lifesteal effect would only be active on a successful hit. That would mean that skills like {Thunder Strike}, and {Shield Bash} that did not attack with the sword would not trigger the Lifesteal effect. However, if Zhang Yang were to use AoE multi-target skills like {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep}, coupled with the sword skill echoing effect, it would all be factored in!

Take {Blast Wave} for example. Even though the skill was based on the weapon's attack, 5% of 1,178 would be 60 HP. However, if the skill was used on a group of 30 monsters, and the sword would proc for four counts, the total amount healed would be over 7,000!

Without thinking twice, Zhang Yang used the item on the sword and replaced the Lifesteal effect with the original one. By far, the profession Rune Craft was not strong nor OP enough. Only until one was able to produce a Rune of +6 and +7, only then it would be considered to be a powerful profession that would burn gold on the side. At least, by then, it would be worth every penny spent.

Zhang Yang wrapped things up in the hall and proceeded forward. After the living room was a long empty corridor which led to a staircase to the second floor. The building was the nest of the vampires, the system would naturally make it harder for players to pass through it. Before Zhang Yang could reach the staircase, vampires from both ends of corridor attacked Zhang Yang in a large group. Even though they were elite tier, they were the "real" elite tier, unlike Phoebe and Lorraine who had far more HP and attack. Naturally, Zhang Yang had cleared the corridor with ease and went up to the second floor.

Before Zhang Yang could observe the environment of the second floor, a white figure came shooting towards him. There was a long black whip on her right hand which was all coiled up to her shoulder. Reflex kicked in and Zhang Yang raised his shield at lightning speed.

"Despicable insect!" A female voice came roaring from behind his shield. The voice belonged to Desionia, the second bride of the Vampire King, Madros.

At her height, she had looked down on Zhang Yang with fangs dripping regular saliva. With a loud hiss, she pushed Zhang Yang away and uncoiled the whip in his right arm.

Again! Zhang Yang had no time to swap out the Mythical Turtle!

Zhang Yang cursed himself and leaped back towards Desionia.

‘-8,345!’

‘+417’

After five {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} had dealt over 8,000 damage which in turn, healed him for over 400 HP. Zhang Yang curled his lips, feeling satisfied with the effects of the new sword's passive ability. Even after deducting the possible heal from {Shield Bash} and damage reflect of {Block}, his DPS had surpassed 4,000. That meant, that at each second, he could recover at least 200 HP! It was similar to reducing 200 DPS directly from the boss!

It was a pity that the DPS of a Level 80 Yellow-Gold boss was around 2,000. Deducting 200 from that would equal to a 10% "discount"!

Being an Alchemist who concoct potions for himself, he had no qualms about using all his potions, even the powerful ones like the [Troll Recovery Potion]. Players would only have regular potions at their disposal, and the ones that Zhang Yang consumed all the time were at least Grade 5 Transmutation! For the past few days, Zhang Yang had been making potions till he had lost count of the number of stacks he had made. Those potions that were produced normal, or had lower grade transmutation were all sold in the Little Merchandise Shop or thrown into the guild warehouse. Only potions that had over grade 5 transmutation were used by Zhang Yang himself!

With potions, [Fountain of Life], {Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall} and other means and methods to restore his health, Zhang Yang had no problem fighting a Yellow-Gold boss one-on-one! For now, Zhang Yang was most probably be the only player in China to be able to solo a Yellow-Gold boss!

"Succumb and bow to the power! Present yourself as a slave to me!" cried Desionia as she danced around with the coarse whip in her hand.

"Master has captured Sherryl! The ceremony of holy matrimony is about to happen and there's nothing you can do to stop it!"

Zhang Yang stopped breathing for a second. Sherryl was captured? That soon?

Zhang Yang sighed. He had hoped that this story would be a little

different. However, contrary to his thoughts, he was expecting something like this to happen. Still, there was something odd. Who and what was Sherryl? Was she so important that the last boss would capture her himself?

‘Ding! You have received a quest selection: Rescue Sherryl. Would you accept it?’

A sudden quest option window popped out. Zhang Yang not read the quest description and immediately accepted it. He still had the boss to defeat first.

"Feel the despair! Feel the power of darkness engulfing you!" Desionia bellowed and laughed as loudly as thunder itself.

Suddenly, Zhang Yang felt a little shaky, as his entire vision was distorted. His character moved itself and threw the shield and sword to the ground, covering his ears and starting to scream like a deranged maniac.

[Despair Shriek]: Causes the target to fall into a state of despair. Causes immobility and disarm. Lasts for 5 seconds.

What the hell!?

Zhang Yang raised his head to observe Desionia. All he could observe was the glint in Desionia’s eyes. A similar rage of revenge burning in her eyes. High leveled NPC or monster would have higher A.I programming, granting them the ability to have memory. She bore great enmity towards Zhang Yang. Powerful enough that she would never find peace in her time if she did not shred Zhang Yang into pieces.

A shield is an ultimate weapon for a tank. Without the piece of equipment, Zhang Yang had received more than 9,000 damage in just one attack. Without the shield granting him the Defense and passive damage reduction skill, Zhang Yang had taken the full, unrepressed damage from Desionia.

Zhang Yang immediately activated {Warrior’s Will} and dispelled the state of despair that his character had fallen into. With a quick barrel roll, Zhang Yang picked up the shield and the sword and swiftly reequipped it.

Luckily, the boss was an NPC that would not be greedy to pick the equipment and kept it for herself. If that had really happened, Zhang Yang would have raged quit the game so hard that no amount of reincarnation would bring him back to play the game.

"Give up on your hopes and dreams and fall into the depths of the abyss!" Desionia shrieked again.

"Hmph! Fool me once, shame on you. Fool me twice, shame on me! Let's see how long you can keep this up!" Zhang Yang launched his attack.

Desionia's {Despair Shriek} had only a 1 minute cooldown. If it was any other tank, they would surely have to rely on other people to survive this boss. Their {Warrior's Will} would never have been enough to last the battle! Zhang Yang on the other hand, had already maximized the level of {Warrior's Will}. His skill had only 1 minute cooldown as well! Once the boss activates {Despair Shriek}, Zhang Yang would instantly activate {Warrior's Will} to dispel the debuff on him. Furthermore, the skill had granted a sure-Critical Strike hit for the next {Destructive Smash}! One strike of the skill would deal 15,000 damage to 17,000 damage! It would be a double edge sword for the boss to use her {Despair Shriek}!

She was a boss, but in this fight, Zhang Yang had too many life restoring skills that he had literally made the boss look like the player instead! Without meticulous effort, Zhang Yang had speedily brought down the boss' HP to 10%

"Despicable insect! I ought to squash you and remove your pitiful existence!" cried Desionia as the confidence in her expression faded away and was replaced with madness. She lunged towards Zhang Yang, carrying a flowery scent and soft embrace into Zhang Yang's arms.

"HISS!" Desionia grabbed Zhang Yang tight in her arms and buried her fangs deep into Zhang Yang's neck.

{Vampiric Paralysis}!

[Vampiric Paralysis]: Causes a target to be paralyzed, enabling the user to have a chance to suck on the target's blood. Lasts for 10 seconds.

As if Zhang Yang was going to enjoy the moment and feel her voluptuous breast pressing into his. Zhang Yang immediately activated {Warrior's Will} and dispel the immobility on him. In 10 seconds after, he had gained a buff which increases 50% of his attack!

Even though Desionia had restored her health, she had carried the effect of {Destructive Smash} on her, causing her to only restored 25% of the intended amount. With a quick strike, Zhang Yang hit her with a {Destructive Smash} again, dealing a devastating attack! Her 43,500 HP was not at all enough to withstand his onslaught any longer!

"ACK!" The bride of the vampire king collapsed with a loud moan and turned into ash.

Chapter 400: Constance

The boss fight had rewarded Zhang Yang with two Yellow-Gold equipment, and six Gray-Silver equipment. Among them was a rather strong dagger.

[Thorn of Desionia] (Yellow-Gold)

Weapon Attack: 402 – 602

Attack Interval: 1.4 seconds

DPS: 358

Equip Effect: Grants a 10% chance to restore 500 HP on every attack.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 80

Even though the dagger was not up to tier, it was still one of the strongest Yellow-Gold weapons out there. Surely there were people who would want the dagger since there were not many Violet-Platinums circling in the market at the moment.

Zhang Yang picked up the loot and moved forward. There were many other monsters along the way which were killed and turned into fine ash. Just as he felt happy that the monsters had granted a luxurious amount of experience points, he was reminded about the quest that he had just received right before the boss fight with Desionia.

[Rescue Sherryl] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: The King of Vampires, Madros, has kidnapped Sherryl. The ceremony to wed Sherryl to Madros, making her the third bride will happen shortly. Warrior, you have to pick up the pace in order to save her in time!

Duration remaining: 2 hours 47 minutes.

Progress: Rescued Sherryl 0/1

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He hated quests with time limits. Still, for a

quest to be ranked at S-level, it was understandable. Furthermore, the time taken to finish the quest will be taken into consideration for the final quest score.

The monsters on the second floor were mostly just normal tiered. Zhang Yang had effortlessly turned their living flesh into grayish ash. In the battle of the normal monsters, Zhang Yang had picked up many pieces of [Silk]. Like a hot knife through butter, Zhang Yang had butchered his way through the entire floor. Right before he arrived at the staircase to the third floor, he stopped and changed his battle mount to the Mythical Turtle. He would not make the same mistake as before.

After climbing the stairs and arriving at the third floor, he was immediately interrupted by a woman in a familiar white dress. Her hair color was different compared to Desionia. Unlike the deep, charcoal black, hers was blonde.

[Constance, Bride of the Vampire Lord] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: Intensely jealous. The manifestation of envy!

Just when Zhang Yang was ready to command the turtle to strike first, he was stunned at the sight of the green colored name tag.

"Warrior!" said Constance when she saw Zhang Yang had arrived at the floor. "Worry not. I come in peace."

An NPC with a green color name tag meant a friendly character. Zhang Yang slid his sword back into its scabbard. There was no way Zhang Yang could attack a green color name tag NPC. "Why are you in my way?"

Constance clicked her tongue irritably. "Madros, the bastard! When he married me, he had vowed to love me, and only me! However, 30 years ago, against my will, he took another bride for himself! He married Desionia! Just when he swore to never take on another wife, he had turned

back on his words and picked that human insect! I cannot allow this to happen again! Warrior, I will help you kill that bastard!"

Woah...So this was what jealousy would do to a woman. How many big shots had committed homicide just because they were dissatisfied about playing second fiddle? (In context to ancient China family)

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Alright."

With a Yellow-Gold boss helping him in battle, he would not need to summon Han Ying Xue or anyone else to assist him in killing the last boss.

Since the boss fight was not going to happen, Zhang Yang swapped the turtle for the bear. If he had waited for the turtle to follow him to the last boss, he would have already grown a beard as long as Rapunzel's hair!

"Follow me!" said Constance coldly. She gestured Zhang Yang to follow her and led the way. There were no monsters on the third floor, allowing both of them to proceed quickly and arrive at a room at the end of the floor.

Creak...

The door was opened slowly, yet it still made a creepy creak. "Madros is inside. Be quick with it!" said Constance as she headed in.

The room was dark and quiet. It was so dark that Zhang Yang could not even see his own feet. It was as if a temporary blindness had robbed him of his vision. 20 to 30 steps forward, he heard the same creak, followed by a loud click. The door behind him was shut. The light started to appear from the sides. The torches on the side of the wall of the room had lit up one by one and quickly brightened up the room.

Just when Zhang Yang had gotten used to the darkness of the room, he was blinded by the sudden illumination, which forced him to shut his eyes. It took some effort but after he had readjusted back to the light, he opened his eyes to observe his surroundings. The room was too large to be called a room. It was roughly 300 to 400 meters square wide. The problem with this "hall" was that there were close to hundred elite-tiered vampires standing at every corner, with their fangs bared at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang frantically searched for Constance and found her standing at the furthest corner from him, laughing sinisterly. Her name tag had changed to red!

Zhang Yang was bamboozled! Of course, he would be, everyone with an average level of intellect would be tricked as well. Constance was a friendly NPC back then! A normal player would have already treated her as a comrade instead of being wary.

"My minions! Kill the human!" cried Constance as she lifted her pale fingers to point at Zhang Yang's general location. The vampires in the hall spread their wings in unison, creating sudden airwaves that sent the dust on the floor flying in all directions.

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine. There is no way that he would survive the battle with a hundred elite tier monsters!

"Yo, b*tch! Come now!" Zhang Yang speedily opened his Friend List and dialed up to Han Ying Xue.

"What? I'm busy grinding with Yan Er! Buzz off!" said Han Ying Xue lazily.

"No time to explain! Put on the charm now! My life is at stake here!"

"Oh! So you want the damsel to save the prince in distress now huh?"

Within seconds, Han Ying Xue had arrived at the scene.

At the moment she had appeared in the battlefield, she was greeted with the cries of hundreds of vampires. The color drained from her face.

"Dummy! No more surprises like this in the future! I'll bite your nose off the next time you rope me in like that!"

"Enough! Time for our skill!" Zhang Yang bellowed. He had activated {Shield Wall} and had only managed to survive the fight because of the skill's healing capability. Anyone and everyone would know that once the {Shield Wall} ended, Zhang Yang would be shredded into pieces, even if he had the thick defense of an elephant.

Zhang Yang reached out and grabbed Han Ying Xue's fair hand and

activated {Blizzard Sky}, and {Lunar's Dew}.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

Since the vampires could fly, space was filled rather economically by them, thus increasing the efficiency of the skill.

"Kill them! Kill the humans!" cried Constance with a loud shriek.

"Hey Dummy, why are you always in trouble when it comes to women?" asked Han Ying Xue with a laugh.

"...Why? Jealous much?" said Zhang Yang.

"Please. I'm not talking about the people in the game. I'm talking about Zhao Bin, Zhao Xue, and Zhao Yu! Those three are exquisite! A rare beauty! How could you not drown in the triplet's beauty?" said Han Ying Xue. She was jealous.

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. "Erhm...they...I mean the girls were just freshmen in university!"

"Hmph! Only God knows what kind of dirty thought dwelling in that filthy mind!"

As they were having their conversation, most of the vampire had already turned into piles of ash that had defiled the beautiful scenery of the skill.

"Woah, that's really a lot of experience points!" said Han Ying Xue.

After 30 seconds prior to the skill's activation, the hundreds of vampires were killed, leaving the hall barren and lifeless.

"Bastard!" bellowed Constance angrily. She spread her own wings and shot towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed tauntingly and parried her claw. "Relax woman,

you'll get to meet your friends real soon!"

Constance raised her head and stared into Zhang Yang's eyes with great contempt. She opened her mouth and shrieked loudly, causing Zhang Yang to feel a great pain in his eardrums, forcing him down to the floor, closing his eyes and ears, abandoning his weapons.

{Despair Shriek}, looks like it was a skill exclusive for a vampire's bride. Zhang Yang immediately dispelled the debuff with {Warrior's Will} and returned to the fight. With a quick dodge and turn, Zhang Yang was back in front of Constance.

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-24,890!’

A great damage text burst out with a slightly larger font since it was a critical strike. Both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were slightly surprised.

"Dummy, are you really using a hack? How could you deal such high damage?"

Zhang Yang immediately opened the battle log and said, "It was a Critical Strike and a Lucky Strike stacked together."

The passive bonus effect of using {Warrior's Will} was to grant a 100% chance to land a Critical Strike. If that attack had triggered a Lucky Strike, it would deal a massive 6x the original damage!

Now that the army of vampires were killed, Zhang Yang could easily settle the boss on his own. Now that a super healer had arrived to the scene, it was more of a concrete certainty that Zhang Yang would win the fight. Pairing his power with the bear, Zhang Yang had basically turned the fight into a one-sided brawl.

Not long after, Zhang Yang heard a loud "cling!" and realized that Constance's body had turned as hard as a rock! Zhang Yang turned his gaze to Constance's character and noticed a new status effect on her head.

[Petrifying Recovery]: Immune to all damage and status effect. Restores 5% HP every second. Last for 10 seconds. Channeling required.

Compared to the other vampire's recovery skill, Constance's recovery skill had even granted her a 10 seconds invincibility! She would have restored 50% of her HP without interruption! Not even the debuff of {Destructive Smash} would affect her!

After the 10 seconds skill duration ended, Constance spread her wings out, breaking the stone encasement, like a butterfly out of a cocoon.

She hovered a few meters into the air. Her wings were bigger now and cast a shadow over Zhang Yang.

"This is the gift from the king when he had bestowed immortality upon me! Surprised?" Constance smiled wryly. She now had 60% HP left.

Zhang Yang scoffed. Unless the skill had a cool down time of only 2 minutes, Zhang Yang could have killed the boss before she could have a chance to activate {Petrifying Recovery} for the second time.

"Dummy. When a player gains the Vampire Inheritance, would he gain that skill as well?"

"More or less." Zhang Yang nodded. "That's actually the reason for me being here. To farm the Inheritance Fragments! The Inheritance is strong, but it doesn't suit you though."

"Please. It's not like I want it in the first place!"

With haste, Constance was killed before she could activate the {Petrifying Recovery} for the second time. As it was with any other vampire, Constance screamed and put up a scene before turning into ash.

Chapter 401: The King of Vampire

"Look here!" cried Han Ying Xue as she displayed three bottles of potions for Zhang Yang to see.

[Blood Potion] (Usable)

Use: Restore 10% HP every second, for 10 seconds. Cool down: 10 Minutes. All potions will share same cooldown duration after consuming this potion.

Level Requirement: 80

The potion was a mirror image for the vampire bloodsucking skill. Rather than sinking one's teeth into someone's else's neck, one could easily heal the same amount by just consuming a bottle of potion. However, there was a problem with the potion. The 10 minutes long cool down time. To put it in comparison with other potions in the game, a normal potion would only have a 1 minute cooldown time. In 10 minutes, one could already consume 10 bottles. For a [Level 3 Healing Potion], one could heal over 40,000 HP. [Level 4 Healing Potions] would only be available for players after Level 90. The recovery amount reached up to 10,000 HP a bottle. If the battle could drag as long as 10 minutes, the bottle of [Level 4 Healing Potion] would be efficient. On the contrary, if the battle would only last for 4 to 5 minutes, the [Blood Potion] would be a game changer.

It was sad that Zhang Yang had only picked up 3 bottles. If they could be mass produced, half of potions in the market would lose their value.

"Well, d*mn. Bosses these days sure are stingy!" Zhang Yang picked up the loot and kept it. Equipment that was farmed in the fields would automatically end up in Zhang Yang's inventory is no one else would want to claim them. Since no one else would want it, Zhang Yang would be the one to place the items in the Little Merchandise Shop.

Constance had dropped two counts of Yellow-Gold and seven counts of Gray-Silver equipment. Neither of them piqued any interest from Zhang Yang nor Han Ying Xue. Naturally, they were all fated to be sold.

"Let's go. It's time to kick the final boss' *ss!" said Zhang Yang. He tried to share the quest to Han Ying Xue, but failed. It was to be expected since the end of this chain quest would reward the player with an Inheritance Fragment. It was considered to be a Unique item and could only be completed by one person at a time.

Han Ying Xue shrugged it off and the both of them continued moving to the end of the hall. After a large door, a narrow little corridor revealed itself. Unlike the rest of the castle wall, the material that made the corridor wall was different, for it was as white as snow. It was after a long walk before Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were greeted with another color. At the end of the corridor was a red door. The door was so old and gave off some sort of magical vibe, since there were many strange symbols and runes carved into the surface of the door. With the color of snow on the wall and the cold temperature of the surroundings, it gave the both of them cold eerie shivers.

Han Ying Xue sneaked behind Zhang Yang and cowered behind him.

Zhang Yang gritted his teeth uncomfortably and said, "Are you... perhaps...scared?"

"N-No! I'm soooo not afraid!"

"Woman, you do realize that you're holding my right arm! Loosen up and let me go! If you don't, I might be able to react in time if something jumps out!" said Zhang Yang as she stuck out her tongue.

Han Ying Xue scoffed and gave Zhang Yang a cold shoulder before releasing his arm.

Zhang Yang snickered a little and opened the red door. "You know? When you're younger, there is always a fear of monsters lurking in the closet or under the bed. I realized that the best way to tackle the problem is to open the closet or look under the bed yourself!"

"Oh Hell No!" cried Han Ying Xue loudly as she shook her head.

"What a pansy!" said Zhang Yang. He then gave a large push, and the door answered with a loud creaking noise. Behind it was another large

room, that was decorated just like a church! The only missing piece to make it a real church was the image of Jesus at the end of the aisle. Although there were paintings of flying angel babies like the Sistine Chapel, and stained glass windows, with no real light source, this "church" seems to have been abandoned for a long time. Beneath their feet, there was a large magic circle etched into the ground. Without chairs and benches around, the place was instead filled with sacrificial items at each corner of the pentagram. In the center of the magic circle was an unconscious young woman, wearing a beautiful white wedding dress.

Zhang Yang narrowed his gaze and confirmed it was Sherryl. She still alive was Zhang Yang could clearly observe her breast—chest was moving with life.

"Welcome...Welcome..." A deep husky voice came echoing from an unknown source.

"Madros?" said Zhang Yang as he tried to trace the source of the voice.

"It is I! Madros!" From the corner of the room, a shadowy tall figure walked out. He was dressed in a deep crimson cloak. His entire outfit was adorned with many gold accessories which Zhang Yang would refer to as blings. The man had the appearance of a man in his 30s. He had a full head of thick hair which had been combed all the way back his head. Perhaps, the man was using Gatsby hair gel, since his hair was all shiny. With a monocle hanging on his right eye, the man gave off the vibe of a noble man, and a proud one at that!

[Madros, King of Vampires] (Platinum-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

Defense: 2,500

Madros carried an Invincibility effect on him, even though he was not a green name tagged NPC.

"Hot d*mn that boss is handsome~" said Han Ying Xue as she swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

"Hmm. That's new."

"What is?"

"That you're into mature old men. You must have an exquisite taste for men."

"Jealous?"

"Is that even possible?" Zhang Yang gave his comeback.

Madros walked gracefully towards the both of them with both his hands crossed behind his back. He had a long saber which hung at his hip. It clinked slightly with his steps. Still crossing his hands behind his back, Madros gazed at Zhang Yang and rubbed his chin. "Hmm. For you to step in my presence, I assume that you have met my two brides. Could it be that you have already defeated them?"

"I beg your pardon, sir. For I must hereby announce you a widower!" said Zhang Yang as he shrugged. "Well...sorry for your loss!"

Madros eyebrows twitched a little. He laughed immediately. "All is well! All is well. For I have here, a third wife!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "Why must you have her and not anyone else as your bride? What is so special about the girl?"

Madros raised an eyebrow and stopped walking. He turned to look at Sherryl and spoke without looking at Zhang Yang. "What makes you think that I will tell you?"

"You can keep it a secret for all I care. But know this. No one will know why you did it in the first place. And if you succeed, there would nothing for you to enjoy about it. So you can keep it a secret, kill both of us, and the world will not know what had you done." Zhang Yang tried a reverse psychology attack. Instead of threatening, he played the verbal game.

"Or could it be that you want to keep it a secret since you're afraid of two lowly humans. Aren't you the king of vampires? So much for your immortality, huh?"

"Jest all you want human, but you have killed two of my wives. That is

not something a regular lowly human could do. But, you're right about one thing. I do wish to have the world know my power. I have kept this secret too long for time to tell."

Madros laughed with a chuckle. He then reached his hand out, causing a huge, gold-framed throne to hover from its original position, and towards him. The vampire sat down and crossed his legs proudly. "16 years ago, this castle once belonged to Drauders Martin, the previous king of vampires."

Madros chuckled for a while and turned to Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. "The father of Sherryl!"

Zhang Yang flinched. "You're saying that Sherryl is also a vampire?!"

"Oh no! Heavens no! If she was a vampire, I wouldn't have paid any attention to her!" Madros laughed. "On the contrary, Sherryl was the only human child of Martin! The only living vampire that was born from a biological mother!"

Madros stood up and his fist clenched tight. "I would complete the vampire's wedding ceremony and take her powers for myself! Only then, I would be the first vampire to walk under the sun!"

"Why now?" Zhang Yang interjected quickly.

Madros smiled. "Why? Because after defeating Drauders Martin for the past 16 years, only now have I known about the existence of Sherryl! I was completely oblivious to the fact that he had a daughter! A human daughter! I had sent my minions to fetch her for me, but little did I know that she had put up a fight. I had to take her for myself!"

Zhang Yang frowned. Only now, did he know about Sherryl? It was all crap talk. Sherryl would have lived and died of old age if Zhang Yang had not stumble her in the first place!

Still, he was worried about the quest. "You seek to kill Sherryl?"

"As long as I could obtain the power to walk under the sun, the minions that I would create would have no need to cower in the dark! They can march with me, under the sun, boldly and proudly!" said Madros with a

smirk. "For the glory of the vampire clan, I'm sure Sherryl would be delighted to offer her life!"

"Delighted? I wouldn't be too sure about that." Zhang Yang had already had the Mythical Turtle on standby. Even though the boss could not attack nor be attacked, Zhang Yang was free to conduct any action! He then leaped as far as he could towards Sherryl!

"Stay away!" Madros slightly raised his voice and created a violent wind that slit Zhang Yang's back.

‘-11,623!’

Zhang Yang immediately received a strong damage. The boss' name tag was no longer green. After attacking, he had become an enemy. Zhang Yang turned around and grinned. With quick reflex, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} to him.

"You dare!? Insects! Vermin!" cried Madros. He then spread his giant black wings and shot towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang hurriedly withdrew back and kited the boss a little further so that the turtle could attack!

"I was hoping that I could treat you as a guest, but since you refuse to behave, I'll have you removed from this world!" Madros landed, cracking the tiles beneath him, and immediately slashed at Zhang Yang with a sword drawing technique.

Kang!

Zhang Yang raised his shield in time. There was a loud metal clashing sound, followed with one straight, glowing scratch on his shield. No bosses had ever done something like that to him before!

"Or perhaps, I should do something with you instead of ending your life. Maybe, a blood sacrifice as a wedding gift! That would be marvelous!" Madros wielded his blade in an odd manner. Instead of slicing, Madros had struck Zhang Yang in the same manner of hammering instead. Even though the weapon handling was wrong, Zhang Yang was sent back a few meters, even though he had blocked the strike with his shield.

Both Zhang Yang and the Mythical Turtle started their attacks. After the Mythical Turtle had learned the skill {Spirit of the Flame}, each of his physical attacks had been turned into fire elements which would ignore the boss' defense value! Each of its attacks would be at the highest value, around 4,300! Paired with Zhang Yang's own 4,700 damage value, both of their attacks had reached almost 9,000!

"Hey, dummy? Should I summon my servant?" Han Ying Xue asked.

"No. Not yet!" said Zhang Yang immediately to stop her. "We do not know the boss might enter a berserk state at 10% HP. You can summon it after the boss has less than 20% HP!"

"Hmm. Ok..." Han Ying Xue nodded.

'19,123!'

While talking, Zhang Yang had taken another heavy blow which had taken away close to a quarter of his HP.

"Hey, dummy? Why is the boss so strong?" Han Ying Xue complained as she had to heal Zhang Yang immediately after the attack.

Zhang Yang dodged one incoming attack and opened the battle log. The damage was indeed oddly high for his level and tier. "I think it's the boss' sword effect. Something that says, "Light of the Blood Race". It has a chance of triggering 150% damage!"

Again, Han Ying Xue nodded obediently and healed Zhang Yang. While they were fighting and healing busily, Han Ying Xue suddenly popped up another question. "Hey, dummy? If I were to be lost in the woods someday, what would you do?"

"...Why the f*ck would you go to the woods? You know that you're a directional idiot!"

Han Ying Xue frowned and gritted her teeth. "I did say IF! What IF! Stupid! Now answer the question!"

"Sigh...First, I would call the police, and have a nice big meal after that."

"What?! I get the police part, but why a meal?"

"After eating, I would be ready to search for your sorry *ss in the woods for a long time!"

Han Ying Xue smiled happily. "Well...at least you know what you're doing."

"Vile vermins! Surrender to the power of the darkness!" Madros bellowed and pointed one of his boney fingers at Han Ying Xue. "Bind!"

"Crap! Dummy! I can't move!" Han Ying Xue cried.

"How long!?"

"30 seconds!"

"DAMMIT!" Zhang Yang shouted with much frustration. Without her, Zhang Yang would have to fight the boss on his own for 30 seconds!

"HEHEHEHE! Let's play, vermin!" This time, Madros used his saber as a saber should be used, and sliced Zhang Yang at such a high speed. Without Han Ying Xue healing him, Zhang Yang had suffered great damage and was in danger! The main headache for Zhang Yang was the sword's special skill! It seemed to have a high proc rate! On average, every 10th strike would trigger the high damage attack. To make things worse, it was by chance. It would occasionally trigger the burst damage twice in a row! When that occurs, Zhang Yang would lose 50% of his HP!

If Zhang Yang had not had such a large HP pool, in this case, any other tank would have been dead when the sword's skill, "Light of the Blood Race" procced twice in a row.

To survive the entire ordeal, Zhang Yang had used {Berserker's Heal}, a bottle of {Blood Potion}, and {Shield Wall}.

"Dummy, I think that you're the only person in the entire game that could endure the boss for 30 seconds without a healer! If some other tank were to switch places with you, I think they would have already died in the first half of the battle!" said Han Ying Xue as she sighed heavily.

"Well, of course!"

"...Please. Don't let it get over your head."

Zhang Yang laughed and continued laying more devastating attacks on the boss. Even though the boss' attacks were strong, Zhang Yang had not been slacking off. With the turtle attacking together, both of them had taken around 17 minutes to wound the boss until he was left with only 52% of his HP.

50%...

"Ah..." A scream was heard. Zhang Yang turned and saw that Sherryl had woken up. What an inappropriate timing to suddenly interfere with the battle!

"Wonderful! You have awakened, my bride to be!" With speed, Madros sheathed his sabre and flew towards Sherryl.

"Stay away from me, demon!" Sherryl, despite being bound in an elegant dress, did an acrobatic jump and dodged Madros.

"Do not be bashful, my bride. Be good, and complete the final ceremony! We shall re-create a bright future for the vampire clan!" Madros reached out his arms to grab Sherryl, but was immediately stopped with an attack in the air. The boss puffed with anger and turned to glare at Zhang Yang who had just thrown a {Spear of Obliteration}.

Chapter 402: Lost Love

Zhang Yang laughed manically and bellowed. "Old man vampire! If you want to marry my woman, you would have to go through me first!"

"ahem" Han Ying Xue coughed a little and glared at him.

What a woman! She would even be jealous of a fictional character!

Zhang Yang's attempt to piss off Madros was a huge success when he snarled and bared his fangs at Zhang Yang. Madros flew away from Sherryl and approached Zhang Yang with a strong killing intent that would scare off any weak-willed fighter. "You're nothing, but a being that triumphs over the apes in the forests. Don't get cocky, boy! Your species are but food for the vampire clan! You'd dare raise your voice in the presence of the King of Vampire? You dare to threaten me?! You dare take away my wife-to-be!? When I'm done with you, you'll pray that death would be the only thing you know!" Madros raised a hand at Zhang Yang and snapped his fingers. A shot of compressed air burst out and tore through the air at a speed faster than sound. That was the same skill that Madros had used to attack Zhang Yang in the beginning.

The skill was something like Zhang Yang's {Spear of Obliteration}, a type of range skill which required a fix distance from the target, before activation. If not, the boss would have continued using it from the beginning till the end. The attack was fast and quick, not to mention, the color of air itself. There was no way Zhang Yang could have dodged the attack. Within a fraction of a second, after Madros had snapped his fingers, Zhang Yang took a huge damage.

Sherryl took the opportunity to run away from the table and to Zhang Yang's side.

"Warrior! You must not let Madros get to me!" said Sherryl with a determined expression. "In the worst-case scenario, I want you to kill me! If the vampire gains the power to walk under the sun, all of the humans in the world will perish!"

Zhang Yang went silent for a good 30 seconds before speaking. "You..."

knew about your heritage?"

Sherryl nodded her head lightly and hummed without saying anything else. There was a glint of sadness in her eyes that Zhang Yang did not miss. Zhang Yang would have praised her if the character was a real person and the situation she was in was real. The shock of realizing that the people you have been living with for 16 years were not your real parents would have shaken anyone psychologically. The girl was brave.

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword and grabbed Sherryl with his right hand. With the shield in his left arm raised up, Zhang Yang pushed Sherryl behind him and said, "Relax, I've seen the future. You would live and have grandchildren singing your birthday song when you're 80! The only person who is going to die tonight is Madros!"

"Insect!" Madros brandished his saber. His eyes glowed with an intense crimson red of rage and bellowed. "Return my rightful bride to me!"

"Screw you. Old pervert!" Zhang Yang jabbed.

"So be it. Death shall be of you!" Madros walked, instead of dashing towards Zhang Yang, and he understood why. There was a visible aura emitted around him. Something about it spelled incredible trouble for Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

'Ding! Madros has gained the effect {Lost Love}. Madros has gained a 10% increase in attack power! For every minute Sherryl refuses to go back to his side, Madros will continue to gain 10% attack power every minute!'

That was not something Zhang Yang could take lightly. An attack buff on a boss is something Zhang Yang hated the most in a boss fight. Madros had a strong basic attack. The stronger he becomes, the weaker Zhang Yang would be. His Defense value, damage absorption and damage reduction would be rendered useless if the battle is dragged on.

Shing! Crack!

Madros had only taken out his saber and swung his blade to the ground. It seemed effortless and harmless on sight, but the sheer power he held created a clean cut in the earth they stood on. It was as if someone had

just run a huge cutter through the floor! Furthermore, his powers were clearly shown with each step he took. Gravel and pebbles floated, resonating with his aura and breaking into fine dust after he walked past them.

With nowhere to run from, Zhang Yang braced for the worse. Madros swung his sword hard and had even proc the sword's {Light of the Blood Race}. With lightning speed reflex, Zhang Yang blocked the sword's attack, sparing himself from taking the hit. "Ayy! Snowy, summon your servant now! The boss still has over 50% HP and he has already gone berserk!"

Han Ying Xue nodded her head and summoned the servant [Money-Greed Florick] out. A sly old man appeared in the field and proceeded to sneak behind the boss. With a quick hand movement, there was a bag which seemed to be a money bag appearing in his hands. It was Florick's {Stealing} skill.

"Bring it!" Han Ying Xue summoned her servant back to her and reached her hand out, demanding the booty that he had just stolen. With a saddened face, as if Florick's mother had just passed away, the servant lowered his head and surrendered the bag to Han Yang Xue.

Zhang Yang laughed and asked, "How much did he steal?"

"Sigh...Hard to tell, the chance of failing the steal is rather high, you know?" said Han Ying Xue with a heavy sigh.

From back when Zhang Yang had known Han Ying Xue, he had already guessed that she was a money hoarder. When it comes to money, she would bend over backward just to make sure no one would get their hands on her money. There were times that when he had not noticed, the woman would do some sleight of hand! That probably was happening now. Zhang Yang was at a loss of words and merely laughed at her comment.

With his own sleight of hand, Zhang Yang summoned his own servant, the gigantic, Decepticon transformer, Devastator!

As its name implies, the servant was even bigger than the building there were in! Right at the second it appeared on the battlefield, the servant had

already demolished the entire ceiling. Half of its body was outside the room as it used its bulldozer parts to completely trash the entire roof, making room for itself to move around and maneuver freely.

"What are you doing!?" Madros was furious, and he had every right to be. The room was built as the most sacred ceremonial station, but it was wrecked into pieces by some person who had completely ruined his plans! Enraged, the vampire had no need to rush to the massive, over-sized servant and delivered a god-like blow to it, dealing 17,234 damage to Devastator.

Zhang Yang commanded the machine to attack Madros as soon as it could get free of the building's top. Even though the Devastator was powerful, it was merely similar to a player at the same level with a full Yellow-Gold equipment set. Its HP was merely a thin sheet of paper, ready to be pulverized by the boss!

Once Devastator had made a hole big enough for it to move around freely, it then clenched its fist together and clobbered Madros! While taking the attack, Zhang Yang, the Mythical Turtle, and Florick had surrounded Madros and launched their attacks at the same time.

Since the boss would gain 10% attack bonus every minute, Zhang Yang could not spare any second to waste! He had to make sure that the attack DPS would be at its maximum if he wants to survive and win this fight. Luckily, the servants that were summoned had 5 minutes active time before they disappear. At least, within the 5 minutes duration, Zhang Yang felt confident that they would have time to defeat the boss before he defeats them.

"Demon! I will kill you myself!" cried Sherryl as she slid out her silver dagger and joined the battle.

‘-10,000!’

Zhang Yang was puzzled. The dagger in her hands no longer had the ability to deal 100,000 damage. However, it was obvious that the dagger could be used for more than three uses as long as it was in Sherryl's hands. Each slice would deal strong, consistent damage which had made

the boss lose his elegance as his HP dropped.

"Bind!" screamed Madros. He was already fighting for his life before this, and when Sherryl joined the fight, it made it worse. Sherryl was obviously an important person for him and he had to somehow keep her alive, but at the same time, he could not afford to ignore her attacks. In a desperate situation, he had used "Bind", and immobilized her for 30 seconds.

46%, 38%, 30%...

Though the Violet-Platinum boss had a long HP gauge, under the focused fire of everyone, he would still be receiving a great deal of damage. The problem started to form when the {Spirit of the Flame} on the Mythical Turtle had ended after its 10 minutes active duration. It was when the boss was only left with 27%. With the turtle's magical attack capabilities removed, the overall DPS had dropped significantly.

By the time the boss had less than 7% HP left, both Devastator and Florick had disappeared. Zhang Yang and the Mythical Turtle were the only attackers left in the field.

5%...

"Death...is...not possible! I'm immortal! I AM IMMORTAL!" Madros had suddenly gone mad. With a sudden flash, his entire character had turned into countless of actual bats which flocked and attached themselves to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was suddenly rendered immobile by the bats. Even his vision was covered by the hairy mammals! All he could feel then was a prickly sensation that had penetrated his metal armor and his skin. Besides that, there was a strong urge to just fall to the ground and sleep.

'Ding! You have received the effect: {Bat's Attack}! Fatigue will overwhelm you! Lasts for 10 seconds!'

Screw that! {Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately regained his senses and vigor. However, he was still being covered by bats! The skill was still ongoing! Obviously, the boss' skill had two effects. One was to immobilize the target, and the other was to heal himself!

Right then, Zhang Yang had just removed the immobility on him, but the boss was still recovering himself nonetheless.

"Dummy! That's actually quite gross! Are you actually enjoying that? I thought you have already used {Warrior's Will} to dispel the skill!"

"You think I enjoy this?!" Zhang Yang was too busy to think of a smarter jab than that. He quickly activated the skill {Heart of the Death Knight} and gained 10 seconds Invincibility. If he had known earlier, he would have just used the accessory instead of his skill! A complete waste of an OP skill!

The bat was instantly repelled off his character and reformed back into Madros himself. The boss had already recovered 17% HP!

'Ding! Madros has gained {Lost Love} (Stack 7). Gained 170% attack bonus!'

Wham!

With more than 1,500,000 HP still on the boss, it was proving to be an impossible fight! A 170% attack bonus, Violet-Platinum tier boss was not something Zhang Yang could take a hit from!

Even though Zhang Yang still had the {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, and the {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, accounting the {Dance of Heaven and Earth} on Han Ying Xue, they would only deal 300,000 damage! There's still the problem of 1,200,000 HP!

'-22,218!'

Zhang Yang's quickly took a strong blow from the boss the second when the Invincibility effect on Zhang Yang had worn off.

"Quickly, think of something, dummy! If this goes on, we cannot defeat him!" said Han Ying Xue as she started to panic. The boss' current attack power had already exceeded her healing capabilities.

Zhang Yang had used {Rearm} to reset all his skills. While consuming potions, using skills, his eyes were constantly scanning the field to search for a viable location to have the battle. The problem was, the entire field

was flat! There were no walls, no pillars, no desks nor wardrobes for him to cower behind, for even a second!

"Hahahah! Vile vermins! Give your blood up to me!" Madros laughed sinisterly and thrust his saber at Zhang Yang.

"You would have to go through me first!" Sherryl screamed. Her character suddenly appeared in front of Zhang Yang, protecting him by becoming his meat shield.

"Curses!" Madros cried. Before the final ceremony was completed, Sherry must not die! Without her, he could never gain the power to walk under the sun! With great force, Madros pulled his saber back and stopped his movement by extending his wings. With a strong push, Madros had flown into the ceiling and had tried to attack Zhang Yang from another angle.

With the sudden interruption, Han Ying Xue was able to finish her chanting, just in the nick of time to heal Zhang Yang. Madros shot down from the sky and tried to slice Zhang Yang head. This time, the rage in him was so great that it created a pressure that could be felt from a distance.

However, all was well. Zhang Yang laughed. Sherryl had not bought time for Han Ying Xue, but had also allowed Zhang Yang's {Block} to finish its cooldown, just in time.

He waited for Madros to reach him and blocked his attack with his shield.

Sparks burst and filled the environment around Zhang Yang and Madros, announcing the successful blocking of Madros' attack.

Chapter 403: Reborn Anew

Sherryl had jumped and shielded Zhang Yang for a second time. Having to pull back at the last minute again, Madros had finally given up trying to maintain his composure. Madros had been screaming in an incomprehensible language ever since Sherryl and stepped into the field and had blocked Madros' attack for the second time.

Because of Sherryl, Zhang Yang was able to endure longer and had successfully hack away freely. It was only a matter of time before the boss was truly defeated.

"Traitor! Since you wish to die that badly, I shall grant your wish then!" Madros bellowed. He thrust his saber towards Zhang Yang and did not show any signs of stopping even when Sherryl was protecting Zhang Yang. The blade pierced through the air, giving out a whistle like sound as it plunged into Sherryl's abdomen. Madros had finally resort to this mean for if he had not, not only he would be losing Sherryl's ability to walk under the sun, he would be defeated by Zhang Yang!

‘-33,300!’

Sherryl took a massive damage and had lost more than half of her original HP.

"That's enough!" Zhang Yang screamed and pushed Sherryl away. "I can't ask you do shield me anymore. You have done your part, it's time for me to do mine."

With 6% left, the boss had still over 549,000 HP.

"Snowy! Take a bottle of Power Potion. Time for us the use {Dance of Heaven and Earth}." Zhang Yang screamed.

"Got it!"

Both of them immediately consumed a bottle of [Grade 10 Transmutation Beginner Power Potion] and gained 40% increase in attack power.

"Here goes nothing!"

{Dance of Heaven and Earth}!

{Dance of Heaven and Earth}!

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Two skills and one [Ring of Beastman's Ancestor] was unleashed. A great display of power was unleashed and depleted the boss HP down like an open hydrant. After merely 10 seconds, the boss was left with over 30,000 HP. His face and appearance had drastically changed to become extremely battered. His bat wings were broken had half and could no longer flap. All it could do was hanged limply behind the back of the boss.

Madros falls down at such speed and crashed into the ground. Madros got up to his feet, holding himself up with just a little bit of strength left. Before he knew it, Zhang Yang witness the boss turned tails and ran away!"

"You can't escape!" Sherryl jumped to her feet and threw the dagger towards the boss.

‘-10,000!’

Although the strike had done the same damage from before, it was proven to be lethal only now. With only 20,000 HP or less, Madros ran faster. Pride and honor had nothing to do for him then.

He was running away like a beaten dog!

Without wasting any second, Zhang Yang gave chase and threw a {Spear of Obliteration}, dealing around 4,000 damage to the boss. The boss responded with a loud growl of pain but kept his distance away from Zhang Yang. No matter how, the distance between them will always maintain at 20 meters.

"Curses!" Madros growled again. Knowing that he was being beaten down like a wild dog, and was chased by none other than his lowly attacker, Madros' pride of being the king of vampire was at stakes. Luckily, being a vampire grants him a superhuman regeneration ability. With limited time, his wound would have already closed and the wings behind his back had already reattached properly.

"Warrior! You must not let him escape!" Sherrly was chasing with all her might cried loudly behind Zhang Yang.

"Trust me!"

‘-3,982!’

Zhang Yang tossed another {Spear of Obliteration}, dealing another clean attack on the wounds that had just closed up. The wings on his back were clearly ready to fly when Zhang Yang’s attack had crippled him again.

"ARGH! If I die, I’d be dragging you down with me!" Madros turned around when he knows that escape was not an option for him any longer. He unsheathed his sword and begun to charge at Zhang Yang on foot.

"Hmph! I’m too early for hell!" Zhang Yang scoffed and activated {Killing Cleave}.

Wham! -16,724! A critical strike!

"Ack! ARGH! Ahhh!" Madros falls to the floor with his chest up. A scorched mark appeared on his chest, which slowly expands and turned into burning amber. The glowing amber spread all over his character and killed the vampire, turning him into a pile of ash with a few bones remaining.

Sherryl sighed in relief and pants. "The wretched vampire king finally dies!"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Looks like eternal peace is finally at hand!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Sherryl. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points. Time Taken: 2 hours 11 minutes. Quest Score: Perfect!’

Sherryl walked over to the boss’ ash remains and picked up a small, black shard. It was a sharp object which was probably one of the bones that had not disintegrated. She removed part of her wedding dress and revealed her entire left shoulders. She took a deep breath and stabbed the shard into her heart.

"Owph!" She groaned as the fresh river of blood started to flow out of her chest.

"What are you doing!?" Zhang Yang screamed.

With a pale face, Sherryl called for Zhang Yang to come closer. "I have the blood of the vampire in my veins. This piece of bone that belonged to the vampire king should remove them from me. I can finally be human! A pure human!"

The blood flows out of her chest which part of them had dyed her white wedding dress with the red color of blood. The black shard had absorbed the blood and started to glow in a red hue. There was a silver thread that had swirled magically in the bones.

After some time, Sherryl had pulled the shard out of her chest and gave it to Zhang Yang. "Warrior, I shall entrust you with this Vampire's King Bone Shard."

'Ding! You have obtained the first piece of Inheritance Fragment!'

At the moment Zhang Yang had picked the bone out of Sherryl's bloodied hands, he received the system notification instantly.

"Warrior. I must return to town now and inform every one of the good news! I trust that after you had finished with your business here, you'll come to town and pay me a visit! I'm sure that everyone in town would like to thank you for everything that you had done!" Sherryl helped herself up to her feet. She bowed weakly and walked away.

[Vampire Inheritance Fragment (1)] (Inheritance Tier: B)

Description: Gather all six pieces of Vampire Inheritance Fragment and complete the Vampire Inheritance Keepsake. Activate the Keepsake to initiate the final Inheritance quest. Complete the quest to obtain the Vampire Inheritance. Apart from the class skill, you will also obtain the special Vampire original skills. Be advised, all Vampire Inheritance Fragment will resonate with each other. If you were killed by other players that possess the Vampire Inheritance Fragment, the Fragment in your inventory will drop. All Fragments can only be carried in a player's

inventory and cannot be stored.

Finally!

Han Ying Xue took her time to pick up all the money on the ground before heading over to Zhang Yang to see the fragment. After reading it, Han Ying Xue asked, "So, what are you going to do with it?"

"Hm...I think I'm going to give it to Yan Er. The Vampire Inheritance is a good way to heal oneself. It's really useful for the little brat which could solve her survivability."

"But it's just a B tier!"

"So? B is good enough!" said Zhang Yang with a stern expression. "The best S tier Inheritance for every class is limited to only one. That's 6 classes. Which means there are only 6 players in the entire region of China could have the S tier players. Beneath that would be the A tier Inheritance. Now, A tier Inheritance is not a Unique type, it is a General type which means everyone could get their hands on it. However, keep in mind that an A tier Inheritance is extremely tough. Just like the S tier Inheritance, A tier is so difficult to farm that it is considered to be a super-ultra hidden quest! It's close to impossible to even trigger the starting point!"

Zhang Yang was speaking the truth, the total players that had S tier and A tier Inheritance were only 17 players! The scarce number of players that had inherited the S and A tier Inheritance had proven that it was extremely difficult to complete. Luckily for Zhang Yang, the person who had obtained the Inheritance "God of War" was too show-body about it, that he had posted the steps to the last details in the forums. As for the rest of the 16 players, there were completely silent about it.

That being said, if someone had already triggered the quest to obtain the Inheritance Fragment, no one could repeat the same quest again. That means that no one could trigger the Sherryl route anymore!

"You know what? I'm too lazy to argue with you. That's stuff for when we reached Level 100." Said Han Ying Xue lazily as she returned the Fragment back to Zhang Yang. In turn, however, she quickly paced

towards the pile of battle loots and started to pick them up.

"Haha!" She laughed abruptly. She turned to Zhang Yang and showed him a pair of Violet-Platinum boots. "Dummy, I guess you owe me another red packet! Guess what have I found?"

"Is it the Titan Boots?" Zhang Yang was excited.

"That's right! Am I lucky or what?"

"Lucky! The queen of luck!"

Han Ying Xue grinned happily and pass the boots to Zhang Yang.

[Titan Battle Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +81

Dexterity: +40

Equip Effect: Absorb 162 damage on attack.

[unidentified]

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

With the boots in hand, Zhang Yang would need one last piece of Titan's equipment to unlock the full set equipment set effect!

Han Ying Xue continued to reveal more battle loots. She started to sulk disgruntledly when there was no more equipment left. Madros had only dropped three Violet-Platinum equipment. Besides the boots, there were two other Cloth Armor class equipment which was a glove and a magic staff.

Han Ying Xue had already a Violet-Platinum magic staff in hand and she took the glove with a grin. The magic staff will be given to either Daffodil Daydream or Fantasy Sweetheart.

After a while, she pulled out another item. It was a skill book called

{Reborn Anew}.

[Skill Book: Reborn Anew]

Use: Teaches the skill {Reborn Anew}

Class Requirement: Priest, Sacred Knight

Level Requirement: 80

"Hey, dummy? What is this skill called {Reborn Anew}? Is it the same as {Redemption}?" Han Ying Xue asked. {Redemption} was the skill that Han Ying Xue used to revive players after the boss fight. The new skill {Reborn Anew} sounds about the same as {Redemption}. She had guessed it since the skill class requirement was a Priest or a Sacred Knight.

Zhang Yang was stunned. With wide opened eyes, he cried out, "You say {Reborn Anew}?"

"Yeah. What about it?" She asked.

"Well, we had just hit the jackpot again!" Zhang Yang smiled from ear to ear. "Well? What are you waiting for? Learn it!"

Han Ying Xue pouted and learned the skill. However, her cocky expression immediately faded away when she read the skill description.

[Reborn Anew] (Level 1): Cast the skill on a player. For 1 hour, the player will be revived on the same spot with full HP on death. Players that revive with this skill shall not receive any experience death penalty.

Cool Down Time: 1 Hour.

"D-D-Dummy...This is...too OP!" cried Han Ying Xue with hoy. She was so happy that she leaped towards Zhang Yang and planted her lips on his.

"Bleh!" Zhang Yang pushed her away. "You sow! Watch it! You got your saliva all over my face!"

Chapter 404: Collecting Skeleton Bones

Han Ying Xue quickly activated a {Rise Anew} on Zhang Yang.

The effect of the skill is very grand and pretty to see. A stream of white light blanketed over Zhang Yang, while tiny sized angels, looking a little like cupids, appeared dazzlingly all around Zhang Yang, singing and dancing for 10 seconds long before everything vanished.

"This skill can be upgraded, and I'm guessing it either increases the duration or decreases the cooldown time period!" Han Ying Xue felt very satisfied with the skill.

"Yes, after you upgrade it up to Level 10, it should give you a 30 minute cooldown time period, and the duration will most probably stay at 1 hour!" Zhang Yang nodded and said.

"So if you no longer need me here, I better get back to Wei Yan Er. I've kept her waiting for long enough, she might get mad and go hulk on me!" Han Ying Xue asked for a [Teleportation Scroll] from Zhang Yang, because saving up whenever it's possible was the one rule that she would never break!

However, after taking over the scroll, she did not use it, instead, she went out of the place and summoned her [Crimson Flaming Horse]. Zhang Yang was confused, as she smiled and told him, "I forgot, Wei Yan Er is still on this map somewhere. If I use the scroll to travel back first before looking for her, I'll be traveling even further!"

Zhang Yang frowned with sweat all over his head and said, "You took one of my [Teleportation Scrolls]!"

"Don't be stingy, just treat this as the payment for my hard work!"

After Han Ying Xue left, Zhang Yang went back to Silent Hail Town to make sure that Sherryl was safe. When he arrived at the town, the people of the town were celebrating, singing songs and dancing over the news brought back by Sherryl, for the entire vampire race had been eliminated.

The moment he stepped into the sight of the people, they welcomed him

with cheers and passionate hugs. Then, they lifted him up and threw him into the air repeatedly, bringing him into the middle of the celebration.

After celebrating with them, Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went straight back to Thunderstorm Castle. After settling some unimportant stuff, he went straight to the White Jade Castle to identify the [Titan Battle Boots]. After inserting the [Gemstones] into the empty sockets, his health points had finally exceeded 80,000, reaching up to 81,870 in total!

As for the [Fragment of Vampiric Inheritance] he just acquired, this item could only be equipped, so Zhang Yang could not just throw it into the guild's warehouse or the bank. And he can just give it to anyone on his party who wants it later on. Everyone has only one chance of obtaining one inheritance, that is why everyone will definitely be focusing on getting S-Rank or at least A-rank Inheritances. Players that only seek for the highest attainments are considered to be single-minded, and they will not turn around before they bang into walls. Since that most of his party members will not look back at those Inheritances that are lower than A-rank, this piece of [Fragment of Vampiric Inheritance] will most probably be staying in Zhang Yang 's backpack for a while.

Zhang Yang had only managed to rest for a few seconds before he received Wei Yan Er's invitation to join her party. Her voice was loud and clear, "Noob tank! Come help me tank against some monsters!"

"Hmm, so you and Han Ying Xue can't take care of them?"

"If they are just normal monsters, we wouldn't need to contact and ask for your help right? These are all elite monsters! Attacking one drew another four or five of them in! Even cousin snow cannot heal me up for much longer! Come quickly!" Wei Yan Er was breathing heavily.

"Fine! Fine! I'm on my way already!" Zhang Yang equipped the [Lover's Charm: Yang] and activated its teleportation function.

Shoof!

A white light flashed before his eyes and Zhang Yang was teleported to the middle of a dark and lifeless canyon. All he could see were countless

skeleton monsters lurking around in the surroundings. Whether these low-grade undead monsters were low or high in levels, they lacked intelligence. So they are only capable of wandering around without any sense or purposes.

[Black-Rock Skeleton Soldier] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

"So, you girls are required to defeat these skeleton soldiers?" Zhang Yang switched his [Lover's Charm] away and turned towards the two ladies.

"Yes, the quest requires us to collect 100 Skeleton Bones!" Wei Yan Er replied.

Zhang Yang was curious, "Which NPC has such heavy taste, asking two pretty ladies to collect bones!"

"A weird old man, living in a cottage, made of twitch-grasses, over that direction!" Han Ying Xue said, "The reward for completing this quest is great! Players can get 5,000,000 experience points, 200 gold pieces, and one piece of Gray-Silver equipment!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "You should mention the 200 gold pieces first! Haha!"

He brought up the world map and looked at it. So this place is called Black-Rock Canyon. It was a desolate location among a bunch of high mountains. Zhang Yang could not help but to frown with sweat all over his head, "So let me guess, it must be a person with no sense of direction who wandered around until she stumbled upon this NPC."

"Hahahaha!" Wei Yan Er began to laugh, and she was laughing without any sense of remorse!

Han Ying Xue attempted to share the quest with Wei Yan Er so that they can do the quest together. She thought that it might not be possible, but it turned out to be the opposite!

[Collecting Skeleton Bone] (Difficulty: C)

Description: Grave Keeper - Kyle Dylan wants you to collect 100 Skeleton Bones to prove that you have the courage and strength to battle against the monsters. Any player on the same party who manages to collect 100 Skeleton Bones will complete the quest for the rest of the party members.

Completion: Collect Skeleton Bones 0/100

Reward: Experience Points +5,000,000, Gold +200, Skeleton Ring

So this is the ring that Han Ying Xue was talking about, the Skeleton Ring, a Gray-Silver grade ring. Although it is not appealing to the three of them at all, rings are hard to come by in the game, so even if it's just gray-silver grade, it would still be very popular among normal players.

Zhang Yang raised up his sword and shield and aimed a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Black-Rock Skeleton Soldiers. He launched it flawlessly at the monster.

"Rawgh!"

The skeleton soldier let out a roar and charged towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies. As it was charging at them, 4 other skeleton soldiers were attracted due to the chained aggro system in the game, and all of them followed and charged towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies as well!

When 5 elite monsters attack together, their combined damage output gets really high. No wonder little girl couldn't hold her ground against them all at the same time.

Zhang Yang activated {Blood Rage} and boosted his rage points up to 30 points. Standing his ground until the monsters entered his attack range of the {Charge}, he swayed his body and ran forward.

With one swing from the [Sword of Purging Devourer] on his hands, the monster right before him was inflicted with a damage value of '-3,980', and his rage gauge was increased by 37 points.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

That sweep had inflicted all 5 monsters with approximately 7,000 to 8,000 damage. But, the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] did not trigger.

"Owh!" the monsters were roaring with rage, and they attempted to reach out with their large skeletal hands.

‘-474!’

‘-492!’

‘-456!’

‘-489!’

‘-477!’

All of the damage they delivered upon Zhang Yang did not exceed 500.

Wei Yan Er was stunned by what he just witnessed, "These stinky monsters can damage me by 5,000 with every single hit! They're not even getting past 500 on yours! It's just not fair!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "It's pointless to cry, even when your life is miserable! Hahaha!" He wielded his sword, as if he was dancing around in style, while unleashing the damage of his {Blast Wave} upon the monsters, inflicting each of them with a damage of ‘-1,088’, and at the same time, stunned all five of them for 4 seconds.

The number of the monsters he engaged with was too small, so the special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was very hard to trigger, as there was only 2% rate that the special effect would trigger when hitting the monsters.

"Humph!" Wei Yan Er charged into the monsters to release her temper. With a powerful swing of her giant axe, she accumulated enough rage points and it was time to unleash her worst with her {Tornado Cleave}!

‘-15732!’

‘-15248!’

‘-14873!’

‘-15567!’

‘-16212!’

As she inflicted those great number of damages to the monsters, the damages that Zhang Yang previously inflicted upon the 5 monsters appeared to be inferior, in comparison to Wei Yan Er’s. In just an instant, 20% health points of the monsters were swiped away cleanly!

"Little girl, those are some nasty damage points over there!" Zhang Yang was admiring. If they talked about DPS, Zhang Yang would not lose too much to Wei Yan Er, but to compare their damage in one single hit, it would be unwise to compare the damage of a one-handed weapon with 2.8 seconds interval attack with a two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds interval attack!

Wei Yan Er was laughing proudly. But, other than {Tornado Cleave}, she did not have other AOE skills, so she could only continue fighting the monsters with her {Destructive Smash}.

With Zhang Yang kiting the monsters, Han Ying Xue became much more relieved. All she had to do was to cast a {Regeneration} when either of the two needed it, and she would just yawn in boredom the rest of the time.

In less than a minute, the monsters had fallen to the two monster slayers. But no Skeleton Bones were dropped!

Zhang Yang could not help but ask, "What kind of quest is this? We did not get any of the quest item even after we defeated 5 elite monsters!"

"That’s right! We have been here, slaying these monsters for half a day already. But we could only collect about 20 of the Skeleton Bones! So, take your own sweet time!"

Slaying monsters would still give players experience points.

So, after Zhang Yang got over his reluctance, he shot out another {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the skeleton soldiers, and drew the second wave towards them.

Cling clang cling clang! After a moment of slashing and chopping, the 4 Black-Rock Skeleton Soldiers were smashed into pieces of white bones, scattering all over the floor. Fortunate for them, this time, they had finally acquired one [Skeleton Bone] for their efforts.

"We have slain so many of these skeletons, what if a Skeleton King or something spawns out later on? Will it be pursuing us around the area?" Wei Yan Er smiled.

"... If it does, that thing will only attack you two, I won't aid you two in attack it, or do anything about it!" Han Ying Xue drew a line between her and the two of them quickly.

"Humph! Han Ying Xue! You're so unfaithful!" Wei Yan Er looked at her cousin sister with disdain.

"Oh, right! Didn't you both say that you would help me buy a new house? How's the progress now? I haven't heard any news from you yet!" Zhang Yang was kiting the monsters, while turning his head towards the two ladies, asking about it.

Han Ying Xue sighed and said, "Silly Yu, do you think it's really that easy to find a house in a place with good environment, good air, good neighbors, and good security?"

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "I just need a place to live, why are you guys making it into something very complicated and serious?"

"Noob tank! You're selfish!" Wei Yan Er began to blame Zhang Yang, "You only think for yourself, but not for others around you! I despise you!"

Zhang Yang was at the brink of puking blood, "I'm just a guy living alone! What's there around me? Or are you saying there are ghosts around me?"

"Wow, you really are one unbelievable boy, noob tank... So you are saying that my cousin and I are ghosts to you?" Wei Yan Er was enraged.

"... are you saying...that you two are moving in with me?! Are you?"

"That's for certain!" Wei Yan Er said it out like it's meant to happen. "Or

else why would we put so much effort into helping you!"

Zhang Yang let out a sigh in surrender, "Oh please, you're the one, the two who wanted to help me search for my new house! Besides, if you two are coming along, why should I move out then?"

"Noob tank, you're the worst! Not going to cook for us, are you?" Wei Yan Er stared at Zhang Yang with hate, as though Zhang Yang had just committed an act that would put him on death row.

"Hmm, so now that he has a new love, he forgets the old ones already! You better watch yourself before I cut your 'brother' off!" Han Ying Xue was staring at the sacred part in between Zhang Yang's legs and made a threatening gesture with her hands.

Well, an ancient wise old man once said, only women and small-minded men are hard to please!

Zhang Yang could not win this battle against the two, and he lost. So he could only let go of his steam on the elite monsters that roamed around him, slashing and chopping without pausing!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er walked up together and posed their victory fingers at Zhang Yang.

The drop rate of the quest item was extremely low, but it was fortunate that any one of them who collects the quest item will raise the counters in all of their quest objectives. So, after one night of continuous farming, the three of them had finally collected 100 Skeleton Bones.

But before they could go and turn the quest in for the rewards, Zhang Yang had been forced by the two ladies to log out of the game and buy them some breakfast!

What a miserable life!

Zhang Yang changed into his sportswear and began his training in the morning. After a long jog around the neighborhood, he went on and bought the usual breakfast, fried dough, and soya bean. Then he went back to the house straight. By that time, the two ladies had left their beds, and were powdering their faces, making ready for their day with some

make-up.

"What's all the make-up for? It's just a breakfast, in your own house! Don't you think it's a waste of time? A waste of your own life?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Humph!" The two ladies snorted at Zhang Yang.

After finishing up with their breakfasts, Zhang Yang went on to the company as usual. As he was taking the elevator up to his office, he could feel that everyone was giving him a strange look, and all of them were showing weird expressions on their faces. He was not aware of it at first, but the moment he stepped into his office, his secretaries started laughing at him. That was the moment he knew that something was amiss.

"Mr. Zhang, who made fun of you?" one of the secretaries walked up to Zhang Yang and took down a paper that was pasted to his back. There was a Snoopy drawn on it, and a phrase 'I'm an idiot' written clearly right below the Snoopy.

"That brat!" Zhang Yang crunched his teeth tightly. No wonder she was so nice to him this morning, being so passionate and caring. All her gentle words that had warmed his heart in a cold morning like this. So, this was her plan all along this morning! He had actually felt touched by her!

After shutting the door of his office, Zhang Yang put on his game helmet and logged back into the game. Right after he spawned in the game, he saw that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were standing right beside him.

"Little brat!" Zhang Yang roared in anger.

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er could not hold it anymore and burst into laughter.

Later, the three of them went back to the Grave Keeper - Kyle Dylan to turn in the quest for their rewards, after going through hell. Following down a path of a small road, they arrived at the cottage made of twitch-grasses. A seemingly 60-year-old man was standing outside the cottage, with a cane in his hand. When he saw the three of them walking towards him, he revealed a hopeful expression on his face, "Adventurers, have you

completed the quest?"

"Yes, my respected old man!" Wei Yan Er was the one in charge of handing over the quest items. The [Skeleton Bones] were all in her backpack. The little girl quickly took out all of the quest items and placed them nicely in front of the NPC.

"Not bad! Not bad at all! You have completed the quest, outstanding!" Kyle Dylan praised the three of them with his deepest sincerity.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Collecting Skeleton Bones, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have acquired 200 gold!'

'Ding! You have acquired an item: Skeleton Ring!'

This quest rewarded players with the most gold among all of the quests that anyone has ever come across. Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder, how could this old man, living in the middle of nowhere, be so rich!

"Adventurers, you have proven your courage and strength, and a heart of justice to battle against the darkness!" Kyle Dylan kept all the [Skeleton Bones], "Do you wish to continue to serve under the name of justice?"

"Yes, my respected old man!"

"Good, very good!" Kyle Dylan nodded and looked at the three of them, "This time, I need you to eliminate the Brainless Zombies in another area and bring back 50 [Tooth of a Zombie] as proof!"

'Ding! Kyle Dylan has given you a quest: Tooth of a Zombie, accept or decline?'

Accept.

After that, Zhang Yang and the two ladies summoned their [Mounts] and departed towards the direction of the quest area.

The quest area was just nearby. It only took them a brief moment to reach the location of that area. What they saw before them was a mass grave, with damaged gravestones all around the area. And there were

countless zombies, rotten to the core, wandering around the area, without any sense of aim. And they would randomly moan, 'Ooo...'. It made the atmosphere of the place spooky and weird, it was uneasy for the living to stay there for long.

Chapter 405: Zombie Dental Extraction

[Brainless Zombie] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 86

HP: 86,000

Defense: 450

Although these Brainless Zombies were named 'Brainless', their brains were still very much intact. Only their flesh and bones were rotten to the core, with visible maggots creeping all around their flesh. It was disgusting as hell!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had twitches on their faces, looking as if they had been hit in the balls the moment they saw the zombies.

"Why do I have a feeling that we're watching some zombie flicks?" Wei Yan Er complained.

Zhang Yang took up his shield and sword, and then he flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Brainless Zombies, as per his regular routine, to throw a {Spear of Obliteration} to attract monsters from afar to get everything under control so that monsters wouldn't swarm up on him.

"Owh!" The Brainless Zombie let out an outburst of angry moans and began to lumber towards the direction of Zhang Yang. While it was at it, pieces of rotten flesh were falling from its body. Right behind that zombie, two other Brainless Zombies were attracted, as their aggro was affected as well. The two zombies joined the first zombie and charged towards the three of them.

The Brainless Zombies may have looked slow when they were wandering around, but once there's a target to pursue, an enemy presence within their aggro sighting, they would become vicious, and their movement speed would suddenly increase! They could move faster than a champion in a 100-meter run! Well, it made sense. If their movement speed wasn't fast, then they would definitely be kited around and tortured to death easily by spellcasters, hunters and other ranged professions. Then, it will

become unfair to the melee professions in such regard.

Zhang Yang engaged the zombies with the first swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. There and then, Zhang Yang had their aggro all set on him. Well, it's time to kite them!

"Stinky monsters, really! Why were you born so ugly! I don't mind ugly, but they scare people by rushing like creeps! And their numbers! Argh! Their numbers are really big!" Wei Yan Er used a {Charge} and rammed into the zombies, while she lost it and started complaining.

Zhang Yang laughed as he kited the monsters closely, swinging his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Unfortunately, the number of the monsters were too little, so the special effect of the sword did not trigger, leading him to use his own skills to inflict heavy damage onto the monsters.

"Noob tank, will you pick my cousin over sister Sun?" Wei Yan Er suddenly turned her head around and asked Zhang Yang in a low voice while she was slicing up the monsters.

Zhang Yang frowned at the question and said, "Little girl, just focus on your studies and stop poking around in adult business!"

"Pui! You're just 5 years older than me, and you're already nagging like an old man!" Wei Yan Er let out a heavy sigh from her nose.

"Hey, what are you two babbling about!" Han Ying Xue grew curious, as she was a distance away from them, and could not hear what they were saying.

"Cousin is such a jealous girl! You don't even let your cousin talk to her future sister's husband-in-law! Sigh!" Wei Yan Er was shrugging on purpose, acting like she was helpless.

As Zhang Yang was fighting the monsters, he could not help but wonder, deep into his thoughts, like peeling his own layers of onions in.

Ever since Han Ying Xue revealed her love to him, he had not given her his true answer yet. He would only get through by joking or changing subjects. Because he wasn't sure yet, if he's just into her sexy hot body, or if he is really falling for this witchy snow. Not to mention that he still had

Sun Xin Yu and Yu Li, clearly, he still had some attachment to them. No matter how hard he tried, he could not just forget about those two beautiful women.

It was fortunate enough that up until now, Han Ying Xue had not been forcing him to give her a clear answer yet. She was only teasing him out of habit. Recently, the weather was changing and the temperature began to rise back according to the season. This witchy snow had begun to show her super sexy hot body, only wearing a thin layer shirt in front of Zhang Yang. She was not worried at all, that Zhang Yang might just lose it and push her onto a surface, and finish her!

Zhang Yang had confronted her about it before in frustration, but this woman was really something! She actually said that things would eventually happen when one man stays with two pretty ladies, and so to prevent Zhang Yang from doing some 'animalistic' stuff on the little girl, she better sacrifice herself by luring him with her sexy body, to save that little girl from being 'eaten' by him! By then, she can also help Zhang Yang 'unleash' his evil thoughts.

For that, Zhang Yang would be left speechless and frowning.

Witchy Snow was being so ambiguous. So, does she like it or does she not?

Zhang Yang had this thought to himself as doing his job with slaying the monsters while maintaining his rhythm in battle. By only swinging his sword around and activating some of his skills, he slew the zombies one after another.

"Strange, these monsters are already rotten to the core, but they can drop items such as clothing? It's actually better for them to wrap themselves with the clothing, you know? So that they won't terrify other people to death!" Wei Yan Er spoke as she was picking up the loot dropped from the zombies.

"Why are you so talkative today, little girl? Haha! Well, this is just a game, if they made it too realistic, and you don't get a thing after you kill the monsters, and you would still be complaining as well, wouldn't you?"

Zhang Yang teased her.

Wei Yan Er wrinkled her small little nose, "Sigh, I was just saying it for fun, why would you take it so seriously? What a stiff *ss!"

Speaking to this little girl required a certain level of a psychological constitution, or else, one might burst a vein in the brain by just speaking to her!

Zhang Yang laughed and ignored her for the moment, and then he turned his attention to luring the next wave of the zombies with his {Spear of Obliteration}.

The drop rate of [Tooth of a Zombie] was extremely low as well, maybe even lower than the drop rate of those [Skeleton Bones]! The three of them had already cleared through half of the area and they had only managed to collect approximately 30 of the quest items. It looks like they will need to clear the entire area to collect all 50 [Tooth of a Zombie]!

Boom!

Suddenly, the ground got broke through from beneath, and a gigantic rotten hand emerged from the ground, and slowly, the hand clenched into a gigantic fist. Another gigantic hand followed, emerging from the beneath the ground just like the first one, then the third, and the forth... until there were a total of 8 gigantic hands emerging from beneath the ground! Then, one ugly *ss motherf*cking monster emerged from the ground and stood right before Zhang Yang and the two ladies.

It was a super-sized zombie monster that was at least 10 meters tall. Well, this was something new! The wounds all around the giant monster were leaking out some sort of putrid pus, it was really disgusting! It had two wide and thick legs, thicker and larger than a leg of an elephant!

If the lower body was deemed to be just like an ordinary individual human, only a little "bigger", then the upper body was completely out of the conventions of a normal human! Eight arms! Anyone would get the idea!

Other than the two arms that were attached to its shoulders like a

normal human, there was a second pair of arms attached to the ribs, and a third pair of arms attached to the abdomen, and last but not least, the fourth and final pair of arms attached right on the back of the gigantic zombie, like a pair of wings!

[Black-Rock Zombie Lord] (Yellow-Gold, Undead)

Level: 87

HP: 1,740,000

Defense: 1,500

The face of the boss was almost completely rotten already, only one-half of its face were the remnants of something that remotely resembled a human. There were also maggots wiggling around the holes on the face, the eye sockets, and the nostrils! It was too disgusting to even look at! Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue did not even dare to look straight at it!

"No matter how ugly the boss is, it still is a Yellow-Gold boss! So the items and equipment the boss would drop can be sold for gold!" Zhang Yang smiled.

The moment the zombie lord was 'activated', it looked around with its empty, hollow eye sockets to scan for targets. As soon as it detected the three of them, it locked its target onto the three of them immediately, and began to charge towards them with large steps!

Zhang Yang shot out a {Spear of Obliteration} to get the boss's attention and drew its aggro over to him.

"Rawgh!" the boss gave an outburst of raging roars, and it reached Zhang Yang with only two to three steps. The boss slammed Zhang Yang with its gigantic palm.

Zhang Yang raised up his shield and activated {Block}.

Boom!

The gigantic hand of the boss was reflected back, while Zhang Yang did not even move an inch from where he stood! He was currently equipped with almost a full set of Violet-Platinum [Armor Set], so his strength was

already as powerful as a Yellow-Gold boss!

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er recovered from the horror of that hideous visage and raised her axe. With her giant axe, she began to slash and hack, "This boss is even more 'capable' than Prince Nezha! Even Shotalo only has six arms, while this boss has eight arms!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then why didn't you mention that Nezha also has three brains!"

"It's pointless to have so many brains. One on the left and one on the right, and one in the middle, it would only mean war for the three brains!" Wei Yan Er curled up her lips.

Well, this girl's thoughts were really intriguing, so 'different' from regular people.

Zhang Yang purposely teased her, "Then, the centipede must be the greatest being in the entire world! You can't count how many hands it has, right?"

"Haha! Stop making a fool of me!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyeballs at Zhang Yang and said, "Those are legs, not hands! You're dumb!"

Zhang Yang, "..."

"Rawgh! Rawgh! Rawgh!" The boss began to roar continuously. Although it had eight arms, all eight arms could not attack at the same time. There was a cool down period for each attack. After one slam, the boss had to wait for 2 full seconds before it could slam again. So basically, this boss is basically just like the Cyclop boss that they encountered before.

Shoof! A stream of red light suddenly surged throughout the body of the zombie lord.

"Argh! Why can't I move!" Wei Yan Er suddenly panicked and cried.

As Zhang Yang was smashing his sword onto the boss, he felt numbness across his entire body, and he too became frozen in motion! They were paralyzed!

[Paralytic Poison]: Paralyze for 5 seconds. Players will not be able to

move at all during this period of time.

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} and deactivated the {Paralytic Poison}. Then, he looked at the boss and realized that there was an additional beneficial effect on the boss: 30% chance of causing paralysis to the attacker when being hit, lasts for 2 minutes.

God damn it!

Although this did not pose much of a threat to Zhang Yang and the two ladies, it would greatly reduce the efficiency of their damage output, slowing down the process of the entire battle. They could have taken the boss down in one or two minutes, but now, it would require about three to four minutes to do so!

As Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were mounted on their [Mount], so the moment they were 'poisoned', they could feel that their asses were numb even when they were trying to unmount! They were just like wooden sculptures, frozen the moment they were 'poisoned', and they remained in the same pose for the next 5 seconds.

Wei Yan Er had a low threshold when it comes to humor. The slightest feather would set her off. So, when she saw Zhang Yang trying to slash the boss, but got 'poisoned' because Whitey went on to bite the boss and triggered the effect, their movements stopped and Zhang Yang was stuck with a silly pose in mid-slash, with a facial expression that looked like he had been hit in the balls, the little girl laughed very hard.

Right after he was freed from the poison effect, Zhang Yang quickly dismounted from Whitey. He knew, because when he was mounted on Whitey, he was at the disadvantage, as the two of them hitting the boss would mean more attacks, which was likely to increase the chance of triggering the boss's skill. The rate of this passive skill triggering was just too high!

Wei Yan Er followed Zhang Yang's lead and dismounted from her Chocobo pet as well.

Because she was wielding a two-handed giant axe, she struck more sporadically than Zhang Yang, but her damage was sky high, so the rate of

her triggering the poison skill would be much lower, compared to Zhang Yang.

Of course, one Yellow-Gold boss was like a free gift to Zhang Yang and the two ladies. They were now strong enough to take on higher grade bosses already! Although the Black-Rock Zombie Lord was giving them a hard time, it was more of an annoyance than anything else. About 3 minutes later, the zombie lord let out a loud roar and collapsed onto the ground, causing a tremor across the surroundings. Then, everything became quiet.

"Oh! Time to split the loots!" Wei Yan Er cheered and ran up to the loots.

The Black-Rock Zombie Lord dropped 3 Yellow-Gold equipment, and 7 other Gray-Silver equipment. And also, this was a boss after all, so it actually dropped a total of 3 [Tooth of a Zombie], giving a joyous surprise to Zhang Yang and the two ladies. It would have required them to slay at least twenty to thirty elite zombies just to acquire this number of [Tooth of a Zombie]!

After slaying the boss, they continued on to slay more zombie monsters. And about 3 hours later, they had cleared out most of the area, and finally, they had collected all 50 [Tooth of a Zombie]!

The three of them quickly rushed back to the old man by the cottage to turn in the quest for the rewards.

After going through some mountains and forests, they were finally back at the cottage. The old man, Kyle Dylan was there as always, waiting for their return with his eyes full of hope.

TL Notes:

1. Nezha - A deity in Journey to the west, a general that fought the Monkey King, Sun Wukong, when the latter rebelled against the Jade Emperor.

2. Shotaro - Believed to be one of the random anime character that Wei Yan Er watched and quoted.

Chapter 406: Eliminating the Necromancer!

Wei Yan Er placed all the [Tooth of a Zombie] onto the floor as if they were presenting treasures to him. "Respected Elder, take a look. We're good, aren't we? To be able to complete the quest in such short time! You must not be stingy, please give us more rewards!"

Oh my god, this little girl has been thinking all about the money and gold, she even tries to negotiate with an NPC!

Kyle Dylan smiled awkwardly, "Little girl, you are fighting in the name of justice, so it would be rude to judge your courage with gold pieces!"

"Don't you worry about it!" both of her eyes began to glitter as she spoke, "You can just throw tens of thousands of gold on me!"

Kyle Dylan burst into laughter, then he continued, "Little girl, you're funny! Alright, jokes aside. Adventurers, you have done it again, completing the quest perfectly!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Tooth of a Zombie, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!"

Wei Yan Er filled her eyes and cheeks with tears, staring at the NPC with a spiteful glare and having thoughts to herself in silent --- Did she really look like she was joking at all?

Kyle Dylan kept all the [Tooth of a Zombie] and turned to Zhang Yang and the ladies, "You have cleared out the nest of these skeleton soldiers and zombies, but there are still other undead creatures existing in this area! So, my young and brave adventurers, are you willing to carry on the will of justice and proceed with a new quest?"

"You stinky old man, you think can get us to work without paying me? No chance!" Wei Yan Er put up a sour face.

Zhang Yang quickly pulled Wei Yan Er to the side and smiled, "Respected elder, this little girl just loves to joke around, so don't take it

too seriously! Haha! As adventurers of justice, we are willing to fight on against the undead, so you can count on us for any upcoming quests!"

Although the second quest did not reward them with any gold and equipment, the experience points given from this single quest were substantial, like the amount of experience points earned from main quests and hidden quests! And for that amount of experience points from each single quest completed, Zhang Yang would complete the remaining chained quests! Furthermore, this was a series of Story Linking Quests, the final quest would more often than not, give good rewards. There might even be some sort of [Armor Set] being part of the rewards!

"Hahaha! I can tell that this little girl loves to joke around!" Kyle Dylan laughed.

Wei Yan Er continued to fill her eyes and cheeks with tears, as she wasn't joking at all about the gold!

Kyle Dylan coughed gently and said, "Other than the skeleton soldiers and the zombies, there is the necromancer of the undead! These foul creatures are hidden by the Tomb of Lune. Every time the blood moon rises, they will attack the villages outside the canyon, causing chaos and unnecessary losses! So my fellow adventurers, please investigate the Tomb of Lune and eliminate these foul necromancers, and bring back 30 [Bone of the Necromancer] back as proof!"

'Ding! The Grave Keeper Kyle Dylan has given you a quest: Eliminate the Necromancers, accept or decline?"

After accepting the quest, the three of them made haste over to the Tomb of Lune. The location was not far from the cottage as well. It was just around the middle area of the canyon.

The entrance of the tomb was rather obscure. The metallic door by the entrance had rusted thoroughly, due to years of exposure to rain and frost without any repairs, causing them to be broken and permanently open. With the doors half open, revealing part of the view behind them, they could see a dark path before them.

A cold breeze was felt, and they could hear the howling of the wind

across the dark path that lay before them.

Han Ying Xue went to the back of Zhang Yang and hugged him from behind, as Wei Yan Er walked in casually like it was nothing. It was as if she did not know fear!

"Let's move!" Zhang Yang said, but he did not move at all.

"Yes! Let's move!" Han Ying Xue said in a haste.

"... how can I move when you're hugging me so tightly?" Zhang Yang sighed.

"Oh, I'm just too nervous." Han Ying Xue let go of Zhang Yang and went on to grab hold of Wei Yan Er.

Boom!

Zhang Yang kicked down a metallic door and shouted, "I'm home!"

The tomb was exceptionally spacious, and repetitive heavy echoes of Zhang Yang's voice immediately echoed back repeatedly, 'I'm home', 'I'm home'. Han Ying Xue got even more cowed until she began to babble in some non-human language and her two arms grabbed on tighter until the little girl could not breathe, her tongue sticking out and asking for help.

"Don't scare me! You moronic Zhang Yang!" Han Ying Xue scolded in a trembling voice.

The path by the entrance of the tomb was very dark and spooky, but after walking forward for about 50 meters, the path started getting brighter as they walked in deeper, because there were lit-up torches on the walls on two sides of the path, illuminating the remaining long path that lay before them.

"How do these necromancers know how to light up torches? Are these torches burning on infinite fuel?" Wei Yan Er was bored, and she began to feel curious again.

"You'll lose if you take it too seriously!"

Shoof!

They walked in deeper and realized that the surroundings were beginning to change. There were rooms on both sides, coffin chambers! Zhang Yang led the ladies and slowly approaching the first door of the coffin chambers. As they were approaching it somewhat comfortably, a skull that was surging with a dark light shot right in the face of Zhang Yang!

‘-2,010!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with damage! He was caught off guard and let out a surprising yell. Then, he activated {Charge} and rammed into a necromancer in a black robe, interrupting the second enchantment of the {Shadow Bomb}.

[Black-Rock Necromancer] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 87

HP: 87,000

Defense: 450

These undead necromancers were just skeletons wrapped in skin, and they were extremely skinny and dry! Their two eye sockets had evil flames dancing within them, just like a ghastly flame.

"Spellcasters are truly different!" Zhang Yang sighed lightly. Regular elites that were Level 80 and above, such as skeleton soldiers and zombies could only inflict damage ranging from 500 to 600, but this necromancer can damage him by more than 2000 damage points!

Fortunately, although their damage on Zhang Yang was rather high, but these necromancers did not gather around in a group. They were all scattered around the place. Therefore, they could only be eliminated one by one! As this area was an indoor environment, only Zhang Yang could bring along Whitey, while Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had to dismount from their pets and carry on by foot.

For the three of them, it would be more efficient to lure the monsters into one place and kill them all at once! Zhang Yang took advantage of the special terrain of the passage that lay before them. He lured in tens of

necromancers and got a solid hold on their aggro, and then he used the wall to run out of their view, gathering the monsters at the entrance of a coffin chamber. There, he began his killing streak with his AOE skills.

Kiting so many monsters at a time, especially when his defense was useless against these spellcaster type monsters, gave a lot of pressure to Han Ying Xue! The good thing was that Zhang Yang had many life-saving skills like {Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall}, {Blood of Life}. He could just activate the skills in turns to stay alive while killing the monsters because these skills had short cooldown duration! So it would be a waste to not use them!

As they passed by, the coffin chambers were cleansed of the foul monsters, and Zhang Yang had picked up two pieces of [Zombie Moss] along the way. Unfortunately, there was no sign of the recipe for [Zombie Potions]. Zhang Yang could only let out a breath of sigh and wait for another chance.

There was no telling how many floors there were in the Tomb of Lune. Since they had only managed to collect 10 pieces of [Bone of the Necromancer], which was only one-third of the amount they were supposed to collect. So, they ventured deeper on into the area.

After just a while, the three of them had arrived at the deepest floor of the bottom area. A set of stairs that was made of stone led them down deeper, but they could only see as far as 20 steps before the passage turned down a corner, out of their sight. Only God knows what was waiting at the other side of that corner.

Zhang Yang and the ladies followed the stairs down to the corner. After just a while, they had arrived at a new floor of the tomb cave, the second floor. The view remained the same, being the same one long passage, with many coffin chambers at the two sides.

"Let's begin clearing out the monsters and wrap this up!"

An hour later, the second floor of the monsters had been cleaned out thoroughly. But they were treated far worse this time. They managed to get only 9 pieces of the item quest. Going deeper down the tomb cave, the

three of them arrived at the third floor of the area and began their 'wiping operation'. Slowly, the number of [Bone of the Necromancer] had finally increased from 19 pieces up to 20, then 25, and finally, 29!

"So, now what? This is the last coffin chamber. If we can't get the final piece of the quest item, then we will have to wait until the monsters respawn!" Wei Yan Er stared into the endless darkness of the passage and sighed.

As they had already hit the end of the passage, there was only one last coffin chamber that had yet to be cleaned, so if they fail to get the last piece of the quest item, they will have to go back all the way up to the first floor of the tomb cave and wait for the monsters to respawn.

"Hey! Humans! Fantastic! It's just marvelous to see a few humans down here!" Right down the corner of the coffin chamber, there was a red-bearded dwarf battling seven necromancers at once. His health points were low. He was so delighted to see Zhang Yang and the ladies, that he immediately cried out for help in joy!

It's... it's that Rhine Wildhammer! Rhine Wildhammer the same tomb raider, who is always getting himself in trouble! He was the one dwarf who will give players a necklace that would grant them immunity to skill effects!

This dwarf was really loving his job a little too much. He had just survived the Tomb of Despair, and now here he was, digging up trouble in the Tomb of Lune! Well, he was indeed a passionate 'archeologist'! It's just like Merlinda and her knack of getting captured, this NPC here is always in danger of being hacked to death by the undead!

Zhang Yang activated {Charge} and rammed into the necromancers, and then he activated his {Blood Rage}, increasing his rage point by 30 points, followed by a {Blast Wave}, boom! A shockwave was emitted across the monsters, stunning the seven necromancers while inflicting every one of them with damage values of '-1,088'.

The special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] kicked in and did it's job, inflicting more damage to the necromancers! And again!

After the 4-second stun effect, the necromancers were left with not more than 3,000 health points. All of them were crying in rage and turned to Zhang Yang as they began to cast their {Shadow Bombs}.

"Thank goodness!" Rhine Wildhammer quickly took out a bandage and patched himself up. The way he patched himself out showed that he had already been doing this for so many times that he could do it in his sleep!

Wei Yan Er charged in and joined the battle. She went up to the monsters and began her hacking and slashing on the necromancers like a mad girl.

After just a brief moment, the seven necromancers were reduced to dust, and fortunately, the final piece of the [Bone of the Necromancer] finally appeared!

"Wow --- you guys really are good!" Rhine Wildhammer did not hold back on thanking Zhang Yang and the ladies, and then he turned over and cursed the monsters, "These impenetrably, thickheaded, mindless piece of... Necromancers! They are already dead, but they seemed to be still guarding some sort of precious treasures here! It's not like they can eat it or anything!"

After spitting and cursing for a bit, Rhine Wildhammer turned to Zhang Yang and the ladies, "Hey, do you want to do some trading? I will give you 10, no, 20 pieces of gold!"

This red-bearded dwarf said it out like he was about to break his wallet.

"No can do! 20 pieces of gold are too little! You must give us at least 15 pieces of gold!" Wei Yan Er was shaking her head around and said.

"Deal!" Rhine Wildhammer quickly replied.

Zhang Yang, "..."

Han Ying Xue, "..."

'Ding! Rhine Wildhammer has given you a quest: Hey! You're hired! Accept or decline?"

The three of them accepted the quest at the same time.

[Hey! You're hired!] (Difficulty: C)

Description: Escort Rhine Wildhammer out of the tomb. If Rhine Wildhammer dies, the quest will be deemed as failed.

Completion: Escort Rhine Wildhammer out of the tomb 0/1

"Wait just a second!" Rhine Wildhammer ran to the back of a coffin and took out a backpack that was larger than himself. He then put the backpack on his back slowly with care, and said, "Alright, let's move!"

Chapter 407: The Spartan Warriors

Rhine Wildhammer was following closely behind the group with his large backpack on his back. Every time when they passed by a coffin chamber, he would look around intensely as if he was worried that monsters might suddenly leap out from the room and take away his precious backpack.

As they did not have to battle any other monsters along the way, they arrived at the second floor of the tomb cave in just a short time.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Footsteps were heard from the front. Zhang Yang and the ladies exchanged looks and halted abruptly.

In just a while, a party of five appeared right before Zhang Yang and the ladies. They had one tanker, one healer, and three attackers, it was a standard party formed, to complete a quest.

Seeing Zhang Yang and the ladies, the five of them halted as well. They were clearly wary, as they slowly drew their weapons and readied themselves. In open world maps, it was a normal occasion where bad players kill and rob weaker parties. So it was actually wise for them to be so careful.

"Why are we stopping!" Rhine Wildhammer was looking down on the road while walking, and he banged into the little girl's ass. Wei Yan Er was enraged and kicked him aside like a ball. There, Rhine Wildhammer fell right in the middle of Zhang Yang and the party of five.

"Huh? That's is the NPC!" the five of them were shouting at the same time, and they were waving around their weapons ready to charge at Rhine Wildhammer.

Of course, Zhang Yang would not let them chop up the NPC as this NPC is part of their quest! He ran to the front of the NPC and pulled out his sword, preparing himself.

"Hey, brother. We mean you no harm." said one of the Spartan Warriors

by the name of Spartan Warrior, a guardian. He seemed like the leader of the party. With one hand raised, he stopped his party members from attacking, "This NPC is the target we need to slay to complete our quest, please step aside and let us do our job."

Spartan Warrior then said, "Look, brother. This NPC will respawn in just a while more. You can just retake the quest later!"

Han Ying Xue was provoked by the idea, "Then why don't you let us complete our quest first, and then come back for the NPC after he has respawned? How about that?"

"Spartan Warrior, don't waste our time with them, just kill them all!" one of The Spartan Warriors by the name 'Freezing With Heart', a thief, snapped impatiently.

Spartan Warrior waved his hand around and said, "Freezing With Heart, violence isn't the answer to all things, so don't always say the word 'kill'."

Although he said it, he still looked at Zhang Yang with a deadly glare.

Zhang Yang then said, "Fellow friends, I have a proposition. Why don't you come with us? Our quest is to escort the NPC out of the tomb. So after we have completed our quest, you can go ahead and slay the NPC and complete your quest as well. You guys won't be staying around here, right? It won't only save your time, but also, we all get what we want. Doesn't it sound good?"

He was very sincere while he was giving the proposal, trying to make everyone happy. Well, his proposal was indeed a perfect solution to both parties, because Zhang Yang did not want to stir things up.

But his sincerity became an act of showing weakness to the party of five. So one of them by the name of 'Ten-Times-Of-Grass', a spellcaster said, "So, you want us to help you escort the NPC out of the tomb for free? Dream on!"

Spartan Warrior burst into laughter and said, "I say, we have five over here, and there are only three of you. There's no way you can win, so just hand over the NPC, and no harm will come to you! So, don't do anything

stupid that you will regret, you will end up losing all the experience points that you have on hand!"

"Humph! They have wasted so much of our time here! It won't be so easy for them to back off now!" another one by the name 'Invincible Mouth-Sacrificer', a Holy Knight turned his attention over to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, and he began to 'scan' their bodies, "At the least, these two pretty ladies must show us some skills of theirs to entertain us! By performing a striptease!"

Zhang Yang was enraged by the words, but he tried to calm himself down and keep his expression neutral. Although he unintentionally had become a king who currently ruled the game, he would never let anyone humiliate or curse his party members, especially the girls and women!

He pulled out his sword and warned, "Beware, words are the cause of a tragedy!"

"Haha!" the five of them were laughing, and the last member of their party by the name 'Sloppy Sloth', a hunter, said, "I'd say, brother. You're really fun, as in funny! Do you really think that you three stand a chance against us five? Who do you think you are? One Sword Stroke? Or are you Zhan Yu? Hahaha!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could not help but smile, as they heard what Sloppy Sloth just said.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of loud sigh and said, "I'm Zhan Yu! Not One Sword Stroke!"

The five members of The Spartan Warriors were looking at each other in silence, and then they burst into laughter, pressing their hands against their stomach. It was obvious that they did not believe Zhang Yang, having the thought that Zhang Yang was just boasting! Well, it was understandable. Because the number of players in China server is increasing lately, and it had already reached up to 10 million players for now. So to be able to run into a famous player, especially the Number One player in the entire China server, it's like winning a lottery worth 5 million dollars!

Wei Yan Er took up her giant axe and said, "Why are we still wasting our precious saliva with them? Just f*ck them up!"

"Little lady is fired up! But I like it!" Ten-Times-of-Grass was looking at the little girl with his perverted eyes.

"Bastard!" Wei Yan Er let out a roar in anger and activated her {Charge} and rammed into Ten-Times-of-Grass. With a full power swing of her giant axe, she slashed at that pervert without showing any remorse.

‘-9,471!’

One moment later as the axe swung by, blood oozed out like a pretty little fountain from Ten-Times-of-Grass’s body! His total health points were only about 20,000, so after this slash of attack, he was only left with two-thirds of his health bar!

"Oh mama! This girl is crazily strong!" The five of them began to panic as they saw the damage value that appeared right on top of their party member. The damage value was just terrifying!

Zhang Yang rammed into them with a {Charge} as well. He then activated {Blood Rage} and sliced them up with his [Sword of Purging Devourer], boosting up his rage points with his assault. The next thing the five of them noticed was Zhang Yang activating his {Horizontal Sweep} over them!

In that instant, all five of them were inflicted with damage values ranging from 7,000 to 8,000!

Unfortunately, there were only 5 targets, so the special effect of Zhang Yang’s sword did not trigger.

Wei Yan Er laughed like a mad girl and activated her {Blood Rage} as well, followed by a powerful {Tornado Cleave}! The Spartan Warriors were all inflicted with damage values of 17,000 in that instant, right after they were assaulted by Zhang Yang!

After suffering the damage from the combination of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Tornado Cleave}, other than Spartan Warrior the guardian tanker, the remaining four of his party members were wiped out in an instant!

Just like that!

It couldn't be helped. The passage was too narrow for The Spartan Warriors to carry out any formations or tactics. Plus, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had put so much pressure, so swiftly in their assaults, they could not even process what had just happened to them! The two attacks were happening almost at the same instant, giving no chance at all for them to react!

Spartan Warrior looked around and realized that he was the only one in his entire party who was still breathing, and his facial expression became very interesting to look at! Very entertaining to look, at the very best! What a painful poke in the ass! This was just ironic and outrageous! They were still swaggering and making jokes before Zhang Yang and the ladies, and now, things suddenly changed in just one split second! In short, weathers can change fast!

The brief battle ended when [Gold-Eared Bear King] letting out a roar and plunged its paw right through the Spartan Warrior's chest, inflicting that poor soul with a damage of about 4,000, and with another activation of a skill, poor Spartan Warrior was sent straight back to the graveyard.

Later on, Spartan Warrior and his other four party members stared blankly at each other with their helpless expression on their faces.

"Oh, right. Now I remember. That Guardian has a familiar face, he really does look like Zhan Yu!" Suddenly, Sloppy Sloth slapped his own lap and said.

"What a bad luck, man. We actually ran into the Number One Tanker in the entire China Server while trying to complete one quest!"

"... so are we going to complete the quest or not?"

"Complete you ass! Didn't you see the videos of the competition or whatsoever? Zhan Yu has an overpowering 'forbidden' skill that can bombard anyone within the radius of two miles from where he stands! This skill can damage all the targets within range by 20,000 damage points! How powerful is that! And what can we do against him? Take your 'little brother'?"

"Holy cow, even my 'little brother' is not that strong! Let's use yours!"

"Haih, just forget about it for the moment, we should just wait for a little while. After they have completed their quest, they should leave. We shall go back to slay that stupid NPC!"

Well, the strength of the paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} were exaggerated how many times by only-god-knows how many players who do not know the truth behind them! But there are still advantages over this. At least normal people won't dare to attempt to blunt the edge of Zhang Yang's advance and saves him from a lot of trouble.

Zhang Yang kept his sword and shield and turned to Rhine Wildhammer, "Stop pretending to be dead, and get up now."

Only then, the red-bearded dwarf crawled and stood back up on his feet. Then he smiled guiltily and said, "I was just too nervous just now! You should know, we dwarf are natural warriors, fearless warriors across all the lands. We won't blink even danger comes to us! Be it a tidal wave of swords or a sea of volcanoes, or whatever tsunami they claim to be..."

He kept on babbling on as he followed Zhang Yang from behind.

After just a while, the four of them had arrived at the entrance of the tomb, and they walked right out. Finally, sunlight --- although the day was a gloomy day.

"Hey, great work!" Rhine Wildhammer tightened the opening of his backpack and said, "May the gods of Titans bless you!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Hey! You're Hired! Acquired 4,000,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have acquired 15 gold coins!'

Right after the red-bearded dwarf finished his words, he began to run in a hurry, and only God knows how he can run so fast with that huge backpack on his back!

"Alright, time to turn over the quest items to Kyle Dylan for the rewards!"

The three of them summoned out their [Mounts], and traced back the way they came from.

"My respected old man! We're back!" Wei Yan Er took out all the [Bone of the Necromancer] and threw it right in front of Kyle Dylan.

"Very good! Marvelous! You have completed another quest without flaws!" Kyle Dylan smiled with joy and said, "The gods have been watching, you are indeed brave and fearless adventurers, spears of justice itself!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Eliminating the Necromancers, acquired 4,000,000 experience points!'

After completing two quests in a roll, they had already acquired a total of 8,000,000 experience points! Immediately, the three of them filled up one big chunk of their experience point bar!

Kyle Dylan kept all the [Bone of the Necromancer] and said, "Adventurers, you have eliminated most of the undead in this area! However, as long as Shaman Mordoro lives, his endless creation of the undead will doom this land once again! 3 months, 3 more months and this land that you worked so hard to cleanse will be swarmed by these undead creatures once more, and break the peace that you have built upon this land for now! Adventurers, you must rid the source of it all, slay Shaman Mordoro to ensure the peace of this land!"

'Ding! Grave Keeper Kyle Dylan has given you a quest: Eliminate Shaman Mordoro, accept or decline?'

Accept.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Mr Kyle Dylan, rest assured that we will eliminate this Shaman Mordoro and bring true peace to this land!"

"Then, I am counting on you, my brave adventurers!" Kyle Dylan bowed to Zhang Yang and the ladies as tears began to fall from his eyes.

[Eliminate Shaman Mordoro] (Difficulty: A)

Description: Grave Keeper Kyle Dylan requested that you slay the evil Shaman Mordoro and bring the wicked heart back to him as proof that

you have slain the evil shaman! Warriors, Mordoro is very powerful, please bring along more friends.

Hint: Shaman Mordoro can be located at the Undead Palace in the deepest site of the Black-Rock Canyon.

Completion: Return to Kyle Dylan with Mordoro's heart 0/1

Reward: Gauntlet of Glory

[Gauntlet of Glory] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +134

Strength: +54

Agility: +27

Equip: Absorbs 104 damage when hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

This pair of gauntlets had a set of attributes similar to the Earth Spirit Gauntlet that Zhang Yang had on him now! This should be the best set of gauntlets there was, before Zhang Yang can get his hands on the [Titan Gauntlets]. Although these [Gauntlets of Glory] had no use for Zhang Yang, but he can sell it out and definitely get a good price for it!

Although equipment can be sold for gold coins, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not interested in such kind of way of earning gold coins. They preferred to take gold coins hands on and count them one by one in their bare hands! They savored that kind of sensation!

The three of them got onto their own [Mounts] and departed to the deepest area of the Black-Rock Canyon.

And coincidentally, they actually met The Spartan Warriors once again! The sight of seeing Zhang Yang and the ladies had them running in the opposite direction without even looking at them, not even once, and they disappeared in just a short moment. Their faces showed it all, they were

scared, and they did not want to die again.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Little girl, look at what you've done to them with your ugly face! They did not even dare to look at you before they ran away, not even once! Hahaha!"

"Pui! They were afraid of you! Not me! Alright?" Wei Yan Er was not willing to be teased by Zhang Yang and made a funny face at Zhang Yang, "You ugly horse!"

Black-Rock Canyon was a vast area. As the three of them rushed forward for nearly one hour without stopping, they finally arrived at the bottom of the canyon. What they saw before their eyes, was a large palace made of metallic materials. The palace towered tall, with a magnificent view of it, giving off such a holy impression that they felt sacrilegious.

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were curious, such a sacred palace is actually the lair for the undead? Is this what they call a sparrow's nest occupied by pigeons?

The answer was very obvious, right in front of their eyes.

There were many undead creatures wandering around the entrance of the palace. There were bleached bone skeletons, rotten zombies, and some necromancers in black robes. And they would moan with spooky low voices randomly as they wandered. The number of the bleached bone skeletons were the highest among all, while the number of the necromancers in black robes were the least, looking lesser than 1% of the monsters that were wandering around.

Zhang Yang patted Whitey and charged towards the monsters near the entrance of the palace, "Time to work!". By throwing a {Spear of Obliteration} over at one zombie near to him, he attracted the zombie over to him.

"Rawgh!" The zombie let out a raging roar the moment it was hit, and then it raised up its arms and charged towards Zhang Yang madly. And, due to the effect of the chaining aggro of the system, two skeleton soldiers nearest to that zombie were pulled into the battle as well, and together, they pattered towards Zhang Yang with their skeletal feet.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Little girl, lure a few more monsters over to me!"

"Alright!" Wei Yan Er replied, and she also threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the skeleton soldiers.

"Rawgh!" the skeleton soldiers let out a roar and began to charge towards Wei Yan Er from afar.

But it was really unfortunate for the little girl, as one of the monsters the skeleton soldier had invited along was a Necromancer! Right after that, the necromancer targeted the little girl and began to chant the spell of {Shadow Bomb}!

Zhang Yang unleashed his {Thunder Strike} on the three monsters that were after Wei Yan Er and pulled them over to him. But, he couldn't do anything against the Necromancer which was very far away from him.

Shoof!

The necromancer shot a {Shadow Bomb} at Wei Yan Er, inflicting her with a damage of '-5,127'.

"Oi! Noob tank! Quickly, kite the monster properly!" Although the little girl was mounted on her pet, boosting her maximum health points up to almost 50,000 points, she was not used to having a monster target at her in his presence! She began to cry out loud, "You noob tank! You're letting the monster hurt me! Noob tank!"

Zhang Yang burst into laughter and said, "The monster you picked to lure is a bad choice! Hahaha!"

He kited the monsters and began to take a few steps backward. As long as he can step out of the attack range of the necromancer, the monster will automatically pursue. And, as long as he separates the monsters that he is kiting away, from the monsters that were wandering in the area, he did not have to worry about attracting any unwanted baggage.

TL Notes:

1. Sparrow's nest is occupied by a pigeon - to occupy what that belongs

to others. Here, it means that the evil undead army has occupied the palace and made it into their own lair.

Chapter 408: Book of Experiences

It was really an unfortunate thing that the paired skills - {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} were still under a cool down period. Or else, they could have kited the monsters in the entire area and unleash hell upon them with the paired skills. The amount of experience points that they could have acquired by doing so would have definitely been substantial, and it would have been a very satisfying experience!

However, Zhang Yang could only frown whenever he thought about that. That One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei are really two lucky sons of bitches! They actually managed to get their hands on two sets of paired skills! Although one set of paired skills had a very long cooldown period, if used wisely, every set of paired skill can unleash hell onto the monsters in an area, and vacuum in a sea of experience points for the players!

So, Zhang Yang could foresee that One Sword Stroke will definitely be leveling up like mad and catch up with Zhang Yang!

However, Zhang Yang still had a heavenly weapon, that is the [Sword of Purging Devourer]! The special effect of this [Sword of Purging Devourer], after absorbing the special effect of the [Dark Enigma Sword] had turned the sword itself into a new generation of legendary AOE weapon! The high defense of Zhang Yang aided in triggering the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] as it will keep him alive long enough to do so! If other players tried to rope in entire crowds of monsters like he did, they would have never been able to survive long enough before the special effect of the sword could take off. To be rounded up by so many monsters at the same time, let's not talk about grinding up first, these normal players would not survive longer than a few seconds, and they will be torn into pieces in split seconds!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

In just a few seconds, the monsters were falling to the ground one after another, right before Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er, and they dropped countless copper coins and some [Silk].

The three of them did not clear up the area, instead, they simply tried to open up a path for them to get into the palace. So they only clear those monsters that were in their way into the palace. The reason was simple, because their main aim was to slay the boss, Shaman Mordoro, nothing more. They need not have to go through all the trouble of battling every single monster in the area. In just a short while, they had already let themselves into the palace.

The number of monsters inside the palace were surprisingly small, but all of them were Death Knights on battle horses!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "I really hate this kind of monsters!" These foul Death Knights had a skill called {Death Strike}, which can double the damage done to their targets, and if the player is out of luck that day and the hit becomes a critical attack, then the damage will become 4 times higher!

"Well, look who's talking, I should be the one who needs to be complaining right! I'm the one who should be stressed up because I need to heal you guys! Not you!" Han Ying Xue snorted after she complained.

"I was being considerate for you, that's why, I said I don't like these monsters at all!" Zhang Yang smiled at her.

"Well, at least you still have a heart!"

Wei Yan Er could not take it anymore and said, "You two are being so 'sweet' that I'm about to throw up! Please go get a room, and stop disgusting me!"

"You little rat!" Han Ying Xue gave the little girl a cold stare.

Zhang Yang charged towards a Death Knight with big steps. Death Knights could mount themselves on a horse no matter where they are, but a player cannot. This area of the palace was considered an indoor environment. So, the three of them were forced to dismount and proceed on foot. As Zhang Yang had gained a suitable distance from the Death Knight, he threw out one shot of {Spear of Obliteration} at the one Death Knight that he had approached. After the strike landed on it, the Death Knight charged over on its battle horse.

[Black-Rock Death Knight] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 200,000

Defense: 900

What a powerful set of attributes this monster had there! It's two times better than the regular elite monsters' attribute stats!

"Living souls, must, die!" a low voice came from within the metallic helm of the Death Knight. This Death Knight then raised up its sword and swung it towards Zhang Yang's head!

‘-986!’

As the sword slashed through Zhang Yang, he was inflicted with a damage that almost reached 1,000! Elites undeads like the skeleton soldiers and the zombies out there could only inflict a damage of about 500 to Zhang Yang with each of their attacks. So, this Death Knight can actually do double the damage that those elites could inflict! And this attack was not even the {Death Strike}!

Of course, Zhang Yang did not have to worry about such small amount of damage, because in the end, this was just a mere elite grade monster. Its threat was far less than the threat that Yellow-Gold and Violet-Platinum bosses present to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang is strong enough to single-handedly take down a Yellow-Gold boss, so there is no reason at all for him to fear a mere elite graded Death Knight!

Cling Clang Cling Clang! Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were like predators cutting up their preys, with all their slashing and chopping. With ease, they had taken down the monster, and the monster collapsed onto the ground and dropped some coins and a piece of yellowish paper page.

Wei Yan Er saw it and acted very quickly, and she picked up the both the coins and the paper sheet! She wouldn't miss anything, of course! As the little girl took a quick look at the description of the paper page, her face was filled with joy in an instant. Then, she quickly kept the paper page

into her backpack.

Zhang Yang could not resist his curiosity on what on earth did the little girl got into her backpack, so he asked, "Little girl, what previous stuff did you just stuff into your backpack? Why are you being so mysterious?"

"Humph! Not going to tell you!" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang, followed by a funny weird teasing sound.

Zhang Yang did not mind much about it, and he continued to kite and slay the monsters. In the process of slaying 7 Death Knights, a total of 3 of these paper sheets dropped from the slain monsters, and they were being snatched and kept into the little girl's backpack. Zhang Yang was getting more and more curious and he got interested to find out what it was all that about. So right after they slain another 3 Death Knights and the fifth sheet of paper dropped, Zhang Yang was one step ahead of the little girl and snatched the paper from the ground before the little girl could reach it.

"Oi, noob tank! That's mine! Give it back!" Wei Yan Er felt offended and began to make noise about it.

Zhang Yang took a good look at the description of the paper and understood why the little girl was being so persistent to get all the paper sheets.

[Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book]

Use: Combine 10 pages of Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book to form a Beginner's Experience Book. Each Beginner's Experience Book can give 1,000,000 experience points.

"You're such a selfish girl, little girl. You actually tried to keep this all to yourself!" Zhang Yang said.

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue at Zhang Yang again as usual.

Han Ying Xue then realized and said, "Oh, then if a player is rich enough to spend money in the game, and with this experience book, that player can level up from Level 0 to Level 300 in an instant right?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "You'll find out, that it's impossible to do that soon enough!" He passed the residual page over to the little girl and aided her in collecting the remaining 5 pages of the residual pages so that she could later combine the pages into a complete [Beginner's Experience Book].

The drop rate of this [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book] was not low at all. They had picked up the remaining 5 of the pages required after killing another 10 Death Knights. After getting all the 10 pages altogether, Wei Yan Er combined them together, and in that instant, a stream of blinding light flashed by and the 10 pages of the residual pages in her hands had turned into a complete yellowish book, which seems kind of an old book, more like ancient!

[Beginner's Experience Book] (Consumable)

Use: Immediate gives you 1,000,000 experience points. Cooldown: 72 hours. Any use of an Experience Book will make all other different levels of Experience Books enter the same cooldown period.

Level required: Level 80

"Haih, what a letdown. This book can be used only once a day?" Wei Yan Er sighed. Yes, the in-game time 72 hours was equivalent to 24 hours in real time.

Zhang Yang smiled and explained, "Of course, it's natural to set it up like this. Or else, if a rich player gets his or her hands on this book, then he or she could just tap the book and level straight up to Level 300! With a complete set of Yellow-Gold armor equipment, the player can rule over the entire server, not only in China, but the entire world! He or she will become strong enough to slay any boss in the game! And that, would make the game so unfair to the other players."

"Speaking of rich, aren't you rich now?" Han Ying Xue curled up her lips and said.

"That's right, noob tank. How much money do you have now? I mean your properties and cash and all that!" Wei Yan Er had her eyes glitter with stars the moment she talks about money.

"To be honest, I'm not so sure myself!" Zhang Yang shook his head. Now that the number of players above Level 50 was increasing, the income he earned from the territory was unimaginably high, and he still has his Little Merchandise shop! Still, the earnings from the Little Merchandise could be compared to the earnings from the Teleportation Circle placed right in the territory. However, the earning from that shop was endless, and the number was definitely not small at all.

Wei Yan Er tapped the [Beginner's Experience Book] against her body, and a stream of golden light surged through her entire body. Just like that, she acquired 1,000,000 experience points immediately. Although the amount was not really that big of a deal, it was free! It would be a loss not to take it, since it's free! Furthermore, one must slay at least 120 Level 85 elite monsters just to get this amount of experience points. So, it should be worthwhile to get this amount of experience for free!

The three of them proceeded forward and slew about 50 to 60 Death Knights along with their way. They managed to collect enough pages to combine the second and the third [Beginner's Experience Book], and one was given to Han Ying Xue while the other was given to Zhang Yang. But those were all of the Death Knights that had spawned in the palace. They had already run out of Death Knights to slay after they got another 3 pages of the [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book]. So they replaced, their targets with the Abominations that were lurking in the surrounding.

[Black-Rock Abomination] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 200,000

Defense: 900

Han Ying Xue could not help but to feel surprised, "These monsters are so much stronger than the ones outside the palace!"

Zhang Yang merely nodded to express his agreement on this. Then, it was business as usual. He threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Black-Rock Abomination to kick off their slaughtering.

"Rawgh!" That Black-Rock Abomination let out a roar and turned its fat, distorted body towards Zhang Yang and charged forward. This Abomination had a ruptured, leaking belly that exposed its intestines and inner organs, and there was some sort of green liquid dripping out through the holes on its belly. As the monsters charged forward, the greenish goo trailed across the ground and melted its surface! There was a rotten smell flowing through the air that would disgust anyone who breathed in the scent, it was absolutely disgusting!

This monster was equipped with an Aura Effect that spread across a radius of 20 meters, damaging all targets within the effective range by 2,000 Nature Damage every 2 seconds. The body of this monster seemed to be protected by a layer of greenish fog that billowed around it.

Zhang Yang charged into the monster and with his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he locked onto the monster and began to slash like crazy!

"What a disgusting monster! Yuck!" Wei Yan Er went around to the back of the Abomination and began to channel her damage onto it. Launching assaults on the back of a monster can avoid taking damage from the monsters and also increase the rate of hitting the monster as well.

But, who would have guessed this, the Abomination suddenly stuck up its ass and splattered a pile of greenish goo onto the little girl! The goo splattered all over the little girl 'nicely'.

"Argh --- yuck! Pui! Argh! Bastard!" Wei Yan Er was so disgusted and angry that she started screaming like a banshee. She then raised up her giant axe and increased her speed in slashing up the monster like a mad lady! She has lost it!

The splattering piles of greenish goo on the ground were extremely dangerous! Anyone who accidentally stepped on them will be inflicted with a Poison Effect that caused 2,000 poison damage every 3 seconds! It also removed a 1,000 defense points! It's just outrageous and 'ferocious'!

"This kind of aura skill should only be given to bosses! This isn't fair!" Han Ying Xue began to complain already, "If a mere elite grade monster can have such powerful skill, how are players going to survive this! It's not

fair at all!"

It was fortunate that they had Zhang Yang around to kite this monster! Zhang Yang was currently equipped with an almost complete set of Violet-Platinum [Armor Set], and he had a total of 2,280 defense! A regular tank with a full set of Yellow-Gold Armor Set would also have about 1,000 defense or so. If they ever encountered such a monster with such an annoying aura, then their defense would have definitely been reduced down to almost zero!

The tanker, the Berserker and the bear were joining forces to slay the Black-Rock Abomination, and it didn't take long to finish it off! But unfortunately, after all the efforts, there was no sign of any [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book] at all.

As they pushed forward, Zhang Yang engaged with another Black-Rock Abomination, and they killed it. Although the monster dropped quite a number of Gray-Silver equipment pieces, there were no signs of any [Beginner's Residual Page of Experience Book] still. Well, it seems that the residual page would only be dropped from the Black-Rock Death Knights.

After battling continuously for almost an hour, the three of them had finally cleared out every single monster in that floor of the place, and they finally planted their feet into the main chamber of the palace.

"The scent of the living!"

A sharp voice came from somewhere in the area. Then, two gigantic statues made of rocks that stood by the entrance of the main chamber suddenly began to move!

Koom! Koom! Koom!

Dust and debris were falling from the statues as the two statues started standing straight up.

They were in humanoid form, but they had an extra a pair of large, bat-like wings on their backs. They had these weird and unmistakably demonic faces, with two horns on their foreheads. There seemed to be an incision between the two horns. It looked more like a third eye that was

currently shut!

[Obsidian Gargoyle Gillock] (Yellow-Gold, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 1,500

[Obsidian Gargoyle Margheeta] (Yellow-Gold, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 1,760,000

Defense: 1,500

Outstanding! Two Yellow-Gold bosses appeared at the same time!

Chapter 409: The Obsidian Gargoyles

Right before the battle began, Zhang Yang quickly unsummoned Whitey and summoned the Mythical Turtle out. Things might get difficult, and he needed another powerful 'tanker' by his side.

"Hehehe, actual, living, breathing souls, stepping into this place! Can you recall how long ago was it since the last living soul set foot into our lair, Gillock?" Marginte was speaking in a sharp, weird voice, and he would make some weird noises as he spoke.

Gillock paused and gave some thought before replying, "Should be... about 15 to 16 years ago!"

"So it's been that long already? Hiss hehe!" Marginte suddenly unfurled his wings and flew up into the air, and the next thing was him flying at Zhang Yang and the ladies, "This is going to be a hell lot of fun! Weehee! "

"Hahaha! Marginte, please restrain yourself a little bit here! You're scaring our guests! At least leave one alive for me!" Gillock was also flapping his wings and began to fly into the air, and followed suit!

Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield up high and blocked the first attack of Marginte, and slashes at its belly as if flew past!

"Argh ---" Marginte was deflected away by the shield Zhang Yang wielded and took some damage. Although he was only inflicted with a damage of approximately 3,000, it provoked him well enough! The boss raged and let out a deafening growl, trying to gauge at Zhang Yang's face with its claws!

"So, which one do we hit first?" Wei Yan Er asked.

Under normal circumstances, it would be wiser to focus on bringing down one of them first. After being done with one of them, players will have plenty of time to take down the other boss. However, in the case of two bosses appearing at the same time in the same stage, there might be a possibility that when one dies, the other one will revive the dead one back to life, at full health, or something equally unfavorable! Who knows!

Better to act than have too much thought about it. Zhang Yang decided to take down one of the bosses first, because it wouldn't take long for them to take down a boss with merely 2,000,000 health points!

Zhang Yang put a mark onto Gillock and said, "Focus fire on the marked boss first!"

"Alright!" with a clear assignment at hand, Wei Yan Er began to act. She laughed evilly and took up her giant axe, and swung it across the body of the marked boss vigorously! Light flashed off the surface of her axe each time she raised it up for an attack.

Zhang Yang smashed five layers of {Cripple Defense} onto Gillock first, and then did the same to Marginte whenever it was convenient. Both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had AOE skills, so it was actually wise to smash {Cripple Defense} onto Marginte as well, as it can increase the damage inflicted upon Marginte. Plus, the duration of the {Cripple Defense} lasts for 30 seconds long. As long as he keeps on smashing the skill onto the boss before the effect fades, the effect will last forever. More importantly, it won't affect the efficiency of his damage output at all.

"Puny living creatures! Tremble before the power of darkness!"

"Flame of darkness shall engulf every corner there is!"

Gillock and Marginte were roaring together as they shot greenish beams of light at Zhang Yang.

'Ding! You are inflicted with the Devouring Void (Black) Effect! If Gillock hits you, the damage inflicted will be increased by 50%!

'Ding! You are inflicted with the Devouring Void (White) Effect! If Marginte hits you, the damage inflicted will be increased by 50%!

In just an instant, Zhang Yang received two negative effects!

'-10,586!'

'-10,723!'

The two bosses slashed at Zhang Yang and inflicted him with two large damage values! The damage output of these two attacks can be compared

to the attack of a Violet-Platinum Boss! It was like Zhang Yang was being attacked by two Violet-Platinum bosses at the same time!

He realized that the god-damn 'Black and White' effects were terrifying, so he quickly commanded [Mythical Turtle] to focus its assault on Marginte!

[Mythical Turtle] activated its {Spirit of the Flame} and {Madness}, which obviously boosted up its attack power like mad flames! After attacking for some time, [Mythical Turtle] managed to attract the aggro of Marginte, lifting half of the pressure from Zhang Yang. Although the giant turtle does not have any passive skills that granted it immunity from damage, but as a powerful Violet-Platinum grade [mount], it had a defense of over 2,500! Without having the 'Black and White' effects on it, the boss could only inflict a damage of approximately 9,000 on the [Mythical Turtle].

Meanwhile, a priest is naturally good in AOE healing. Han Ying Xue is a powerful healer with a high capability of healing, so they did not have to worry about her not being able to heal them up.

10 seconds had passed, and the two bosses had once again activated their {Devouring Void Effect} effects onto Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle]. Since there were two of them, Gillock activated his {Devouring Void (Black Effect)} onto Zhang Yang, while Marginte activated his {Devouring Void (White) Effect} onto the turtle! However, the effects would only kick in when the 'Black' and the 'White' effects were activated together. As there were two tankers, the 'Black and White' effect could not be activated!

'-5,821!'

Gillock had landed his claw on Zhang Yang, but the damage Zhang Yang received was halved! Without the {Devouring Void Effect} running its course, the assaults of this Yellow-Gold boss had been reduced back to its original state!

With one hand raised, Zhang Yang summoned his servant [Devastator] to boost his damage output. It was time to end the fight! Since the cool

down period of a Silver-tiered Servant was 30 minutes long, by the time they are done with the bosses, the cooldown period should have ended already!

Han Ying Xue also summoned her own Servant out after she saw Zhang Yang's [Devastator]. Wei Yan Er only had a servant who was a Green-Copper grade Level 40+, and she was ashamed of it. Therefore, she did not even summon it out.

Under the bombardment of two powerful attackers, with the aid of two powerful servants as well, the health bar of Gillock decreased steeply! After just a brief moment, the health bar had dropped down to the dangerous level of 20%!

The boss let out a deafening roar out of a sudden and wrapped himself within the two large wings behind his back. Every part of his skin all around his body began to petrify into rock, and in just a few seconds, the boss had turned back into a statue of rock.

[Petrifying Recovery]: Recovers 5% of health in every second, lasts for 10 seconds. During activation period, the user is immune to all damages.

"What the f*ck!" Zhang Yang cursed, and he quickly turned towards Marginte and began his assault --- the effect of {Destructive Smash} on Gillock could still last for another 5 seconds, and Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} still had 3 seconds left before it completely cools down. So instead of wasting time on Gillock while waiting for the 3 seconds to pass, he turned his assault to the other boss.

‘+22,000!’

A healing value appeared right on the body of Gillock, but thanks to the 75% healing reduction effect the {Destructive Smash} had caused, the amount of healing value had already been reduced steeply.

The 3 seconds had passed, and Zhang Yang quickly turned back to Gillock and activated his {Destructive Smash} straight onto Gillock! Even though the boss was immune to all damage, the effect of the {Destructive Smash} had been applied onto the boss, and the duration of the effect had been refreshed! 10 seconds later, Gillock only managed to recover another

'+22,000' of health, and only managed to recover his health bar back to 31%. If Zhang Yang had not applied the effect of {Destructive Smash} onto Gillock, things could have turned out to be much worse!

As the boss has returned to normal, no longer immune to damage, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er immediately turned their focus back to Gillock and unleash their worst onto the boss!

25%, 16%, 7%... Gillock was bombarded with so many powerful strikes that he could not even breath, and his health points were decreasing madly! The special skill - {Petrifying Recovery} seemed to have a cool down period, so the boss had nothing left up his sleeve. All Gillock was able to do was to roar pathetically, flapping his wings, trying to stir up some wind.

0%!

"Argh ---" as Gillock roared miserably, his wings spazzed out, lifting himself up into the air about 3 to 4 meters from the ground, before smashing back to the ground in a lifeless heap!

"You living scums!" Marginte was enraged by the death of Gillock. With a powerful flap of his wings, he carried himself into the air, "You murdered Gillock! You killed him like an animal! Unforgivable! Unforgivable!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Really sorry for ruining your 'partner'! Or let's have it this way, I'll be doing you a good service, by sending you to the afterlife to continue your 'gayness' with your 'partner', so that you can enjoy your 'anal' relationship! Haha!"

"Noob tank, what's 'gayness' and 'anal' relationship?" Wei Yan Er asked, out of her curiosity.

Zhang Yang got a headache suddenly, how could he forget that there was a good, little, untainted girl here! He tried his best to think of a way to explain, and then he quickly answered, " 'Gayness' is some kind of happiness, and 'anal' is actually a kind of annual funding, you know? Where you invest money with a partner and check on it every year!"

Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang and said, "Do you think I'm stupid? They are all game bosses, why would they have to fund anything annually?!"

"Well, it's a long story..." Zhang Yang started making up some stuff, and fortunately for him, he managed to 'convince' little girl into believing him.

After slaying Gillock, Marginte was like a vegetable, ready for them to chop and cook! So they handled it with 'care'.

Zhang Yang unleashed everything he got, hooking Marginte's aggro back to him from the [Mythical Turtle]. And finally, Han Ying Xue felt relieved of her pressure. Although the turtle had a very thick skin, its defense was still inadequate, and turtle only had a 20% damage immunity on it, unlike Zhang Yang, who had a total of 50% damage immunity!

Cling clang cling clang! Marginte was beaten up so badly to the point that he could only constantly hissed in anger, which was weird. Although he used his {Petrifying Recovery}, it wasn't enough at all! With Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} which had a 75% reduction in healing effect, the boss could only heal himself by a little at a time and delay the inevitable.

Another 3 minutes passed, and Marginte collapsed onto the ground and went on to meet his 'gay' partner.

"Hahaha! Those two bosses were like vegetables! Fresh and easy!" Wei Yan Er was laughing with pride.

"Stop talking nonsense and pick up the loot already!" Han Ying Xue said.

The bosses had dropped quite a 'handsome' amount of coins; Gillock dropped 10 gold coins, while Marginte also dropped 10 gold coins, so there was a total of 20 gold coins dropped! Wei Yan Er was so excited and happy to see the amount, that she was smiling to the point where her eyes had been kneaded into a pair of crescent moons!

Other than that, of course, the two bosses dropped a large amount of loot, as there were two of them! 5 of them were Yellow-Gold equipment, and 13 of them were Gray-Silver equipment. It was a great day, with a great

amount of loot! However, only one ring among all the equipment had a decent effect, while the other equipment shall be sold in Zhang Yang's Little Merchandise Shop.

[Petrification Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +67

Strength: +61

Equip: 1% rate to stun target when hitting target, lasts for 3 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"If the special effect of this little fellow can be triggered during a PvP match, it can turn the tide around, for sure!" Zhang Yang said.

Wei Yan Er's eyes were beginning to glitter, with stars blinking all around her, "So, if I wear this ring, does that mean that I can defeat you?"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Even if you wear 10 of these rings, you will never defeat me! Haha!"

"You! I hate you!" Wei Yan Er was angry, but she still kept the ring into her inventory, because rings, necklace, accessories were really hard to come by in the game, so one must not ask for too much!

"Let's continue with our quest!"

The three of them went right into the main chamber of the palace. All they could see was a building, tall and vast, supported by many columns of pillars that were about five or six meters thick. However, the atmosphere of the surrounding was a little gloomy, making the sacred place look ghostly.

Phew ---

A chilly draft passed by, followed by a vague shadow of ghostly existence floating away from the shadows behind one of the pillars. There was no sign of any legs beneath the shadow, as if the shadow was floating in mid-air, and the shadow had a pair of large and thick arms, and a face that only

a mouth on it, with no nose, no eyes, or ears. It seemed to be a spectral-kind-of monster.

[Black-Rock Spectre] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 88

HP: 200,000

Defense: 0

"Huh?" after seeing that the monster had 0 defense, Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were surprised. It was just too weird!

"The system will not be so kind to us! This monster must have some sort of powerful skill!" Zhang Yang stood in front of the two ladies and pulled out his sword and shield. With a shake of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he charged forward and attempted to attack the Spectre.

‘-4,282!’

"Argh!" the moment when the Spectre was hit, it immediately let out an angry roar into the sky. Followed by a sound of ‘Boom’, Zhang Yang was blasted four or five meters backward, at the same time, he was inflicted with a damage of ‘-3,623’!

Chapter 410: The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang reengaged into battle with the Black-Rock Spectre. Raising up his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he swung it straight towards the Spectre.

"Argh---" the Spectre once again let out a roar of rage, and the sound had this powerful force that blasted Zhang Yang a few meters back. The damage inflicted on Zhang Yang was almost similar, about 4,000 damage points!

"What the f*ck!" Zhang Yang could not take it anymore and cursed. As he had already used his {Charge}, he could only run towards the Spectre again, on his feet. Meanwhile, the Spectre was floating slowly towards Zhang Yang as well. As they once again clashed into each other, Zhang Yang was once again thrown a few meters back, right after slicing the monster with his sword, just once! How long will it take for him to kill this god-d*mn Spectre, if this goes on?!

"Hahaha!" as she was looking at Zhang Yang from the sidelines, seeing Zhang Yang being bounced back every time he tried to get near the boss, like a leather ball being tossed around, instead of helping him, she actually laughed at him heartlessly!

This monster is really annoying! It could only activate a single skill called the {Repelling Screech}. With just one annoying skill, it gave a hell of a time to Zhang Yang to even approach it! Zhang Yang was not able to channel his damage output onto the monster peacefully!

After laughing for quite awhile, Wei Yan Er finally engaged into battle to aid Zhang Yang.

And so it began, two leather balls being bounced around like mad people, trying to play a game of pong with the Spectre!

"Hahaha! Gegege!" Wei Yan Er really enjoyed this new style of battle, being 'bounced' around. She was laughing and giggling all the way

throughout the entire battle.

Although the spectre had 0 defense and players should be able to unleash high value damages onto it, because of the waves of {Repelling Screech}, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er could only run around and try to approach the spectre by picking and rolling around, having no way at all to focus their assaults on the monster! Any melee profession players would face the same problem as the players would have trouble staying by the side of the monster and attacking!

After battling and repeatedly being bounced around for 2 minutes long, the god d*mned Spectre was finally slain!

"Hahaha! Interesting fight!" Wei Yan Er was still laughing.

The three of them continued to push forward, as there were more Spectres coming out from their hiding spots behind the pillars, causing great trouble to the three of them. It took them about one and a half hour just to get rid of those annoying Spectre. Finally, Zhang Yang and the ladies arrived at the bottom-most section of the palace chamber.

There was a throne chair placed on the higher ground, by the far end of the chamber, there were at least tens of steps of stairs that allowed people to walk up to the throne chair. The throne chair was huge and was completely made out of gold. Many diamonds and gemstones were crafted onto the surface of the throne, making the chair look magnificent!

Right above the throne chair, there was a man in a black robe, sitting on it. Even the head of the man was covered in a black scarf, protecting his face from being seen by others. However, his gender can be identified by just looking at his body figure. Right beside the black-robed man's right hand, there lay a sharp-edged long spear that surged with a gloomy aura.

[The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro] (Violet-Platinum, Undead)

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

Defense: 2,500

"Should we call uncle Hundred Shots and the others over here?" Wei Yan Er asked.

Zhang Yang took a look at the boss and said, "I don't think it's a good idea. Look at the beneficial effect of the boss!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er looked at the boss again.

[Undead Regenerative Aura]: Recovers health points once every 2 seconds. Recovers 2,000 health points as a basic amount of recovery. Healing amount of the boss will increase, based on the number of living souls within the effective range of the aura. One extra living soul within the effective range will provide the caster an additional 100% healing effect. Range of the aura: 100 meters radius out, with the caster as the center point.

"The more people present, the more amount of health the boss can heal!" Zhang Yang frown.

So now, it's just up to the three of them and one pet. The boss could basically heal over an amount of 16,000 health points every second. The math was simple. The basic healing amount was set at 2,000 health points every second. So, each living soul within the effective area will boost the healing amount of the boss by up to 4,000 health points per second. When a second living soul is present, the healing amount will be increased to 8,000 health points per second. And, the third living soul will be boosting the healing amount of the boss up to 12,000 health points per second! Turtle is also a living soul, so that makes the fourth living soul that boosts the healing amount of the boss up to a total of 16,000 health points. And after applying the effect of {Destructive Smash}, the boss would still be able to heal 4,000 in every second, lowering their DPS altogether by 4,000 points!

If more players are coming, although their total amount of DPS will increase substantially, but the healing amount of the boss will multiply on as more living souls are present! With another one additional living soul presence other than the three of them, it would increase the healing amount of 16,000 by another 100%, making it into an amount of 32,000!

So now, it is wiser to just keep the number small, like now, just the three of them and one turtle, narrowing the healing amount of the boss down by at least 16,000 health points.

This boss was purposely designed to limit the number of players.

With this kind of aura effect, if the number of players were more than 10, then the boss would become invincible already! Even a Level 300 player with a full set of legendary armor will not be able to defeat this boss if the player cannot end the boss within 2 seconds. The boss will just heal back to its full health state!

"So, just the three of us then?"

"Four! You forgot Turtle!"

Zhang Yang patted the turtle's head, and with his sword pulled out readily to engage into battle with the boss, he let out a cry, "Have some potions and get ready!"

Shoof! Business as usual, he began by throwing the {Spear of Obliteration} straight at the boss!

‘-4,372!’

A damage value appeared as the spear went by his head, quickly followed by a raging roar from Mordoro. The initiated attack triggered the boss to stand up from the throne, and with his right arm reaching out to the side, he grabbed the long spear that lay by his side. Two ghostly green flames ignited right at the eye pupils of Mordoro as he walked towards the direction of Zhang Yang, as if he was having a walk in the garden, but his movement speed was astoundingly fast! In just a split second, the boss had already reached Zhang Yang and he began to swing the long spear in his hands towards Zhang Yang.

‘+32,000!’

At that instant, the effect of the {Undead Regenerative Aura} kicked in and healed the boss. Without the effect of {Destructive Smash} to weaken the healing effect, Mordoro was healed by an amount of 32,000 health points, healing him back to his full health state!

"You insolent living scum! How daring of you to come forth to me with such misguided intent!" Mordoro spoke in a very low voice, as if the sound of thunder was rumbling in a rhythm forming up into audible words, trembling across the ears of Zhang Yang and the ladies, to the point that their ears hurt!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield to block the long spear that was about to stab him, and 'Ding!', the shield and the spear clashed! Zhang Yang could feel a powerful force trembling across his shield, pushing him two steps back! He could also feel that the force had numbed his shoulders and arms! He had almost let go of his weapon in his hand as he could not hold it in his hands!

What a powerful boss!

He was struck back a little, but he stood firm and reengaged into battle with the boss.

Because the boss had an aura skill that heals him overtime, Zhang Yang quickly activated {Destructive Smash} onto the boss, followed by layers of {Cripple Defense}. Then, he worked together with Wei Yan Er and smashed another 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss.

"Imbeciles, there is no point in resisting the inevitable, kneel before the great power of darkness!" Mordoro was looking down on them with disdainful eyes as he wielded his long spear and stirred up a strong current of wind across the area. It was as if the boss was charging up for an attack! As expected! The boss charged toward Zhang Yang with his long spear, like an enraged dragon, piercing towards Zhang Yang!

'-11,380!'

'+8,000!'

While giving a blow to Zhang Yang, the boss was healed with 8,000 health points at the same time!

To increase the damage output of Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue healed up Zhang Yang with the time gap she had at hand, then she cast a {Putrefying Poison} onto the boss. Although the damage was not

really affecting the boss much, the decaying effect could reduce about 10,000 health points from the boss, providing an overtime damage of 600+ for every second!

"Hahaha! Tremble before despairing darkness!" the aura skill wasn't the only skill Mordoro had. After engaging in battle for just awhile, he reached out with his right palm open, and tens of small black balls emerged around his hands. The black balls then dropped onto the ground and formed into puddles of black water that were wriggling like worms, it was disgusting! These black liquidated balls then gushed over Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle].

The movement speed of these black water puddles was extremely slow, slow enough for players to dodge with ease, but not for the turtle!

The movement speed of Turtle was much slower than the movement speed of the puddles of black water! After just a short while, the black water had caught up on Turtle.

Splash!

The black water puddles exploded violently, doing an area splash on Zhang Yang and the ladies, inflicting each of them with a damage value of 10,000 Shadow damage!

"Stupid Turtle!" Wei Yan Er yelled.

"Turtles are just born slower, it's not his fault alright!" Zhang Yang laughed, but the remaining puddles of black waters were still pursuing them, slowly! He quickly unsummoned the Turtle back into his inventory as the Turtle would become dead meat if all the black water puddles touched it!

It was really an unfortunate thing to do, because Turtle the turtle was an indispensable attackers! Plus, Zhang Yang could not summon Whitey out, as he was now currently engaged in a battle.

But the good thing about this was that the healing amount of the boss had been reduced to 4,000 health points every 2 seconds.

Zhang Yang kited the boss by picking and rolling around the area,

dodging whatever black water puddles that were pursuing him. It was a fortunate thing that they had already cleared most of the monsters in the palace. Now that the palace had been cleaned of the monsters, they could roll around with the boss without having to worry about being ambushed by monsters.

"Hahaha! Tremble before the despairing darkness!" Mordoro would cast the black water puddles all over the ground once every 20 seconds, giving no time for Zhang Yang to slack at all. All he could do was to move around, dodging those 'things' while kiting the boss at the same time.

It was really a fortunate thing that the area was vast enough, and that the movement speed of the black water puddles were really slow. As long as they were more aware of their surroundings, they did not need to fear being touched by the black water puddles that would explode upon touch!

90%, 80%... even though the health bar of the boss was reducing very slowly due to the {Undead Regenerative Aura}, after bombarding the boss with all that they had for 10 minutes straight, Mordoro was soon left with 50% of his health!

"So, it seems that I have underestimated you!" the greenish flames on the eye pupils of Mordoro flashed all of a sudden, as his right arm began to ignite in flames, and the greenish flames began to blaze on all the way down to long spear in his grip!

Zhang Yang tightened up his *ss, as he could not afford to make any mistake at this point!

Boom!

Mordoro raised up his long spear and plunged the tip of the spear straight into the ground of the place. The moment the spear plunged into the ground, the earth shook as if there was a 10 magnitude earthquake striking the area. The ground began to shatter into pieces, as the pieces of the ground were stretching unevenly across the entire area. Boom room room! The pieces of ground were being crushed into dust, which surged across the air!

‘-12,186!’

‘-19,580!’

‘-19,910!’

Zhang Yang and the ladies were inflicted with a high value of damage as the air surged all around them! That wasn't the end of the attack, it was just the beginning of it! 18 streams of green flames beginning to ignite and grow right from the ground surrounding the boss, with the tip of his spear as the center point. These flames then expanded out towards eight different directions into the surroundings, and across the ground in an instant, expanding out into the shape of a spider web!

As the green flames spread across for quite a distance, they started to come to life from the ground at a high speed, forming blades at the tip of each flame. These blades were all about 3 meters long! Right after they formed, they reached out into the surroundings at high speed! Like thick whips of flames, with bladed tips, each of them reached out for their targets!

"Rawgh!" as he heard some weird noises, Zhang Yang could see that there were many terrifying human faces with horrifying expressions drilling their way out from within the green flames, moaning with weird noises, and grimacing at Zhang Yang and the ladies. While they were at it, Zhang Yang could also see their white teeth gnashing, as if they wanted to chew him alive! Are you kidding me? Green flames with bladed tips that can flexibly pursue targets, while having scary faces drilling out from the flames? Fortunately, the tenacity of these flames was really good. Even though these faces were trying to drill themselves out from them, but after reaching out for about one or two feet, they would be held back by the elasticity of the flames.

"Dodge!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted, aware of the damage they were about to receive if they just stood there and did nothing.

Actually, Zhang Yang did not have to shout to inform Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, because the moment they saw the faces drilling out from the flames, they had already began to run from them! So, it would be impossible for the faces to get near, or to touch them!

"Hahaha! Listen to the song of misery straight from hell!" Mordoro pulled his spear from the ground and pursued Zhang Yang. Waving up his left hand, it was another wave of black water puddles splashing onto the ground, making the place even merrier!

"To hell with this man! They expect us to survive all this?" Zhang Yang began to lose his composure and he cursed as he kited the boss, running all around the area like a mad man!

However, the 18 streams of green flames were like living beings, they actually tailed Zhang Yang and the two ladies! As the green flames spread, the human faces continued pushing out from the flames, crying out in sharp voices that stacked together. It was really disturbing to hear all that! What that was even worse was that the area where the green flames spread across would stay burning!

"I can smell the scent of despair and terror!" the boss laughed in a very low and bassy voice, "Shake in fear! Fear! And finally, subdue yourself to the power of darkness, become my loyal servant!"

"Stop bragging, you stinky sh*t! Just wait until we chop your god d*mn doggy head down and kick it like a football!" Wei Yan Er replied defiantly, clearly more annoyed than anything else.

"Give up on this futile resistance, tuck yourselves into the embrace of darkness!" Mordoro spun his long spear so fast that there were visible ripples in the air!

Zhang Yang quickly took a few steps back. The movement speed of the black water puddles were extremely slow, but the green flames were moving extremely fast! He had to keep moving around without stopping at any one spot at all times to prevent those horrifying faces from biting him!

The 18 streams of green flames were like 18 gigantic pythons, twisting and turning all over the place, trying to catch up to Zhang Yang and the two ladies, forming walls of flames along the way, trying to cut the three of them off. Countless human faces were crying out into the area, just like the sound that could be heard, only from hell. It was just terrifying!

"It's time to speed things up!" Zhang Yang was frowning. Although this

palace was vast, but as the 18 stream of green flames spread across the area, cutting off ways for them to run, if they delayed this battle a little more, all three of them would definitely be trapped inside the green flames and be burnt alive, or should we say, bitten to death, alive!

40%, 30%... The boss had the {Undead Regenerative Aura} that would recover his health overtime, so even though Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had been giving everything they had into bringing down the health of the boss, their damage output efficiency had been reduced by almost 20%! With all the interruption from the black water puddles and the green flames, it would be hard to maintain the rate of their attacks on the boss, and that led them down to not being able to reduce the health points of the boss quickly enough.

"Keep it up, guys! You guys are doing great!" Han Ying Er was in charge of healing Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. Other than that, she needed to time herself and cast the {Putrefying Poison} onto the boss, leaving her with no time at all to chant the {Punishment Ray}!

"This might just work!" looking at the one quarter of the entire area that was not yet being occupied by the green flames and the remaining 20% health bar of the boss, Zhang Yang was confident that they might just pull this off! Plus, all three of them had not yet activated their super skill - {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

"Devastator!" Zhang Yang summoned [Devastator] out with a wave of his hand to aid them in battle.

--- as servants were not counted as living souls, they would not affect the {Undead Regenerative Aura} of the boss and consequently increase the healing amount of the boss.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Right after [Devastator] joined the battle, he used his large fists to punch the boss hard. The boss looked puny standing right before the huge body of [Devastator]!

17%, 14%, 11%... the health bar of the boss was getting lower and lower, while the surface area that had been engulfed by the green flames was

getting larger, the party was almost drowning in a sea of green flames already!

[Devastator] had the disadvantage of having a very huge body mass! Although Zhang Yang and the ladies still had space to stand apart from the flames, the huge fellow had no place to stand anymore. It was during that moment, when everyone knew that [Devastator] was doomed! The green flames touched [Devastator], and the flames began to spread across him!

In an instant, the green flames had spread all over [Devastator]. Countless human faces were drilling through the body of [Devastator], the scene was really horrifying!

Boom!

The huge body of [Devastator] was reduced to bits in one short instant, and the 20,000 health points were reduced to zero in just a blink of an eye!

"Holy cow! What a mess!" Zhang Yang was shouting in shock.

If players were to be touched by these green flames, they would be instantly killed!

8%!

"Take some [Power Potions], and let's activate our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! Together!" Zhang Yang took a bottle of [Beginner's Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] first, and then activated his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, followed by the special effect of {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had also taken their own [Power Potions] and had activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} as well!

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Three shadows wielded their swords, cutting through body of the boss, slashing like crazy! The body of the boss was suddenly surging with

streams of white electrical radiance, as the old beastman started hammering strikes of lightning strike onto the head of the boss.

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

...

The health bar of the boss was reducing crazily, as if a water pipe had ruptured, and the liquid in it was flowing out!

2%!

Mordoro was already at the brink of his death!

But, the green flames and the black water puddles were approaching the three of them, trapping them in a corner!

Zhang Yang tightened his teeth and shouted, "Charge into the black water puddles! I'll activate my skill - {Vanguard's Aggression}!"

Chapter 411: Victory at a Price

Although the black water puddles could inflict AOE damage of 10,000 upon touch, upon the activation of {Vanguard's Aggression}, the damage can be minimized greatly! As for the green flames, it was a different story. Judging from how [Devastator] was drilled to bits within seconds, and no damage values appeared on its head, it was obvious that the attacks ignored defense, damage immunity, and damage absorption. So one touch, and you are as good as dead!

Wei Yan Er had been hanging around Zhang Yang throughout the entire battle, so Han Ying Xue had to approach them quickly to enter into the radius area of 3 meters, marking Zhang Yang as the center point. By entering the effective range of {Vanguard's Aggression}, she would be able to enjoy the special effect of the skill.

The black water puddles were right in front of them already!

Zhang Yang quickly activated the {Vanguard's Aggression} and activated his {Shield Wall}, almost at the same time! With the special effect of his [Titan Wall] kicking in, the damage he received was reduced steeply, and he was recovering 10% of his health points in every second! He was like a god for that 15 seconds!

1%!

That final drop of the health points of Mordoro was only 80,000!

{Killing Cleave}!

The moment the cooldown period of Wei Yan Er's {Killing Cleave} was over, she activated it again, almost immediately, swinging her heavy and powerful giant axe over at the boss and inflicting the boss with a terrifying damage of '-32,312'!

As Zhang Yang's {Killing Cleave} was still on cooldown period, he activated his {Block} to avoid some damage first, and then he activated his {Shield Bash}!

'-10,502'!

Critical Strike! Lucky!

Right after all that, the boss was left with around 40,000 health points! Since they already did not need Han Ying Xue to heal them anymore, Han Ying Xue began to hurl {Punishment Rays} at the boss as well.

‘-7,243!’

The inherent damage of {Punishment Ray} was extremely low, but with the extremely high magic attack attribute of Han Ying Xue, the skill had exhibited an outstanding damage value!

The green flames were spreading over closer than ever!

30,000! 20,000! 10,000!

"Argh ---" Han Ying Xue screamed miserably, and somehow the voice turned Zhang Yang on. Her body was engulfed in green flames as the human faces tore her apart into bits! The moment she was killed, she did not even have the option to release her soul, and was transferred straight to the graveyard.

Wei Yan Er followed her to the graveyard a few seconds later. Things were happening too quickly!

‘-8,334!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword across the boss’s body with a {Horizontal Sweep}! The boss was only left with about 1,000 health points! One more hit! A gentle hit, a strong brutal hit, it did not matter anymore! Just one more hit, and the boss is as good as dead!

The green flames were so close that they could touch Zhang Yang at any second now!

Zhang Yang activated his accessory [Heart of the Death Knight], but unfortunately, the invincible effect of this piece of accessory was not effective against the assault of the green flame! Countless human faces were drilling through his body. Even though Zhang Yang had a total of 70,000+ health points at the moment, and the skill - {Shield Wall} activated, everything was helpless before the blazing flames! He was

instant-killed!

Boom!

A white light surged through Zhang Yang's body as he was revived back, with his health bar full again!

--- it must be Han Ying Xue's skill, {Rise Anew}!

Zhang Yang swung out his sword with all his might at the body of the boss as soon as he was able to - with a shoof! At the same time, unfortunately, the green flames engulfed him once more and he was burned into bits in the next split second!

‘-4,343!’

‘Ding! Your party has slain The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro, acquired 8,900,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have been killed, all equipment will acquire a 10% reduction on their durability!’

Shoof, Zhang Yang was transferred back to the graveyard right after the notifications.

When Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er saw Zhang Yang's soul had respawned by their sides, they let out a breath of sigh and disappointment and said, "Sigh, after all the effort and everything that we have been through, it was all for nothing!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Who says so! Hahaha!"

"You slew the boss?" Wei Yan Er asked curiously.

"Of course I did!"

"Then, why are you here in the graveyard?"

"Heard of Arthur and Mordred? Killing each other at the same time?" Zhang Yang smiled.

Han Ying Xue curled up her lips and said, "I only heard about ‘sharing life and death’, so, aherm! Silly Yu and the boss are really ‘we are entangled together forever, never to part for a second, like wind, like sand,

indispensable for minutes! Haha!"

"Stop showing off your knowledge on wordings and stuff, let's get moving! We're going back to pick up our 'trophies'! Or else, the system is going to refresh everything, and all this would really have been for nothing!"

The three of them rushed back to the palace in their soul forms. It was really fortunate for three of them, that the graveyard that they were transferred to was just located right in the middle of the Black-Rock Canyon. So, it did not take them long to get back to the location of the palace. After about 10 minutes, they arrived by the side of Mordoro's dead body. They managed to revive themselves nearby their dead bodies that were torn to bits.

Han Ying Xue gulped down a bottle of [Mana Potion] and quickly, she began to chant some of her healing skills to heal up all the three of them. It was just an act of precaution --- for example, in case other players appeared and ambushed them! So it was wiser for one to maintain health points at the maximum when traveling in the open world. You will never know what lay ahead of you in the 'wild'!

As usual, Wei Yan Er only aimed for the coins and picked up the 20 gold coins first, and then only she began to look at the remaining 'trophies' that were scattered on the floor, besides the boss.

"Haha! It's another [Armor Set]!" Wei Yan Er cheered with her hands raised up in the air, but immediately, she pulled her head and hands down facing the ground, "Unfortunately, this is not for me."

[Ring of Sincerity] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +141

Intelligence: +94

Spirit: +40

Equip: Reduces 5 seconds of cooldown period for {Holy Shield}.

{Unidentified}

Required Profession: Priest

Required Level: 80

With this ring, Han Ying Xue has finally gathered 3 [Sincerity Armor Set], activating the first special effect of the Armor Set! She was giggling and jumping in joy until her huge pair of boobs were jiggling about as if forces were applied on them, with the surface of the boobies rippling like watery sacks. Zhang Yang could not help but scold her for teasing him so!

[Raging Blaze Hand Guards] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +282

Intelligence: +189

Spirit: +81

Equip: Increases 100 damage points for Fire-Type Skills.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"Hmm, this should be given to Daffodil Daydream!" Zhang Yang kept it into his inventory temporarily.

"Noob tank, do you like sister Daffodil Daydream?" Wei Yan Er tried to pry from Zhang Yang.

"Where did you get that idea from? How did you even come up with that?"

"Because, if you like someone, you will give her things!" Wei Yan Er cocked her head a little and said.

"... then, do you mean to say that I like Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and the other men in the guild? Because I always give them things." Zhang Yang spoke flatly.

The expression of Wei Yan Er changed all of a sudden and she pointed at Zhang Yang, "You! You like men! Oh my god!"

Han Ying Xue twitched her lips and said, "Ignore her, let's get all the equipment. I'm still hoping one boss can give me an entire set of [Armor Set]! Then I will finally have it!"

But her 'hope' was not realized as the boss only dropped two Violet-Platinum equipment, the remaining were a bunch of Yellow-Gold equipment. Because Zhang Yang and the ladies already had better equipment, so they were not interested at all. Zhang Yang took everything into his inventory as he was planning to sell all of them for gold coins.

As there was no sign of Zhang Yang's [Armor Set], he sighed and said, "Little girl, what kind of 'lucky hands' are yours? I'm still one out of seven short! And it's been so long ever since!"

"Humph! Don't get me started on this! I haven't made any noise even though I'm 6 out of 7 short!"

The last item on the ground was naturally, the quest item [Mordoro's Heart]. The heart looked like a red diamond, and looked like it's still full of life, still beating! The pulses were strong and lively.

"This is weird, aren't the undead...dead? How is the heart so lively? And it's beating stronger than an ox!" Wei Yan Er was beginning to ask some more senseless questions.

"Just give it a rest, we just have to complete the quest, and that would be enough for us!"

The three of them kept the [Mordoro's Heart] and came out from the palace. They had finally obtained the necessary requirements to turn in the quest item for rewards!

They went all the way back without encountering any problems, and they arrived at the little cottage of Kyle Dylan. There, the NPC was looking forward to their return. When he saw Zhang Yang and the ladies, his face was filled with hope again.

"This old man is quite suitable for this role, always waiting for us to come back to him!" Wei Yan Er nodded.

The three of them halted their [Mounts] and dismounted. Kyle Dylan

was smiling at them, "It's good to see you all back here safe and sound, and I bet you guys have already completed the quest!"

"Here, this is the [Mordoro's Heart] that you ordered!" Wei Yan Er took the quest item from her inventory in a hurry and was ready to place it onto the hands of Kyle Dylan. But she was stopped by Kyle Dylan himself!

"Careful there! Careful!" Kyle Dylan looked very tense as he stared at the lively beating heart in the hands of the little girl, then he took the quest item into his hands as gently as possible.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Eliminate Shaman Mordoro, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!'

Wei Yan Er was curious, seeing Kyle Dylan being so careful with the heart, "My respected old man, may I know why are you being so careful with this heart? Is it because this heart has some sort of use?"

"Of course it does!" Kyle Dylan revealed a gentle smile on his face as he waved at the three of them, "Come, come. Follow me. I want to show you something, and also tell you a story!"

He walked out the little cottage and went to the little garden at the back of the cottage.

So, did this mean that there was another quest following up? Zhang Yang and the ladies exchanged a look, and then they followed the old man out of the cottage, and into the little garden.

At that moment, they could see dust stirring up from afar, approaching their location. There were five players riding on [Storm and Gale Direwolves], heading over at a high speed. At first, Zhang Yang did not realize it, but as the five mounts were approaching nearer, they saw that the five players who were coming at their way were, in fact, the five players of The Spartan Warriors who were wiped out by Zhang Yang and the ladies!

Three of them looked at each other and smiled.

Meanwhile, The Spartan Warriors were not aware of Zhang Yang and the two ladies. They thought they were just 3 random players trying to

accept a quest. Zhang Yang could hear the voice of the Ten-Times-of-Grass coming loud from afar, "What a stupid quest! Wasted our entire day just to get it done! If it's not for that ring, I would have slaughtered that NPC and choke the life out of him --- Huh?"

The five of them saw Zhang Yang at the same time and they were terrified. Their faces were filled with pure terror as they began to back off very slowly.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely at them, "We are just going to accept a quest, if you're here for the quest as well, give us a moment, we're about to leave."

"No rush at all! We're not rushing at all!" Spartan Warrior quickly bowed at them and spoke in a very good manner. The other four of his party members were also being courteous, as they were afraid that Zhang Yang could charge at them and slaughter them all.

"Pff!" Wei Yan Er was trying to hold her laugh, but obviously, she failed. "These people look exactly like the sniveling traitors in war movies!"

"Speaking of traitors, now that we're about to enter the Chaos Realm, when the war is triggered, who knows, you might even see some traitors with your own bare eyes!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Humph! If they ever appear in front of me, and I find out about them, I'm going to chop them down one by one, until none of them are still standing!" Wei Yan Er purposely took out her giant axe and swung it around to emphasize how she would do it! But her action scared the five Spartan Warriors until they hugged each other in one spot, having thoughts that the little girl was not happy to see them and was about to chop them into pieces.

"About 20 years ago, there was a plague that appeared out of nowhere and began to spread across our village. Many perished because of the plague!" Kyle Dylan kept the [Mordoro's Heart] into a weird looking container as he continued to tell the story, "Among the perished, my wife, Anelia was one of them. She was infected, and she passed on!"

The NPC's name has the term 'Grave Keeper', but there was no sign of

any grave in the garden. Could it be, that he was only keeping an eye on his wife's gravestone where she was buried?

Wei Yan Er was filled with curiosity, so she asked, "And then? And then?"

"... some of the dead villagers had turned into undead creatures. So, our chief was afraid that the other bodies would undergo the same changes and turn into undead creatures. So he commanded everyone to burn every single dead body with blazing fire!" Kyle Dylan began to get agitated as he stood up, took a few steps back and look into afar. Then he revealed a sense of hatred on his face, "I begged him, I knelt down with my knees on the cold stones of floors and I begged him not to burn away my Anelia. But he refused and threw her body right into the blazing flame! I did the best I could and managed to get my Anelia out from the fire, But, this is all that's left of her, just her skull!"

The NPC suddenly revealed a very strange facial expression on his face as he continued to talk, "I fled all the way here, and all these years, I have been doing everything I could to resurrect my Anelia! Now, her resurrection is upon me! It's happening!"

Kyle Dylan began to laugh like a mad man, revealing his true colors beneath his gentle face!

TL Notes:

1. We are entangled together forever, never apart for seconds, like wind, like sand, indispensable for minutes - means two persons sharing life together, including life and death. The same sort of line for newlywed but in Chinese culture.

Chapter 412: The Resurrected Anelia

"Why do I have a bad feeling about this...!" Wei Yan Er beat on her chest and said.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and said, "I really hate these types of dramatic quests, always making us look like fools!"

Kyle Dylan was laughing madly like he was about to drown himself into madness, as if he was being possessed by a demon! He gazed at Zhang Yang and the two ladies, "I must really show my gratitude to you adventurers! You worked so hard, aiding me in collecting all the ingredients that I need to resurrect my Anelia in the name of Justice and some treasures and coins! Thank you so much! For twenty years, twenty years! I have waited for so long, and today is finally the day!"

Boom!

A powerful quake trembled across the ground for just a brief moment, then everything went quiet.

"Can you hear that?" Kyle Dylan was looking madly passionate, "That's the sound of my Anelia, resurrecting! I really have to show my gratitude! The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro was the strongest undead there is, and with his heart, my Anelia shall have unlimited power!"

This NPC just turned into some evil character with a savage face, "Those bloody villagers, they must have grown envious of me for being the richest man in the village and took all my properties right after I escaped! Humph! When my Anelia's resurrection is complete, I shall bring her to the village and rain chaos upon them, let those filthy scum villagers pay for what they have done!"

Boom!

The ground shook again, and again! Boom! Boom! Boom! The quakes were getting stronger and stronger, as the plants in the surrounding trembled as if they were human. Boom! Boom! Boom! Tall trees began to fall, as sand and dust were kicked up by the impact of the fallen trees.

"Noob tank, this looks a little too 'magnificent'!" Wei Yan Er gripped her axe a little tighter.

"Sigh, why do we have to battle no matter where we go, can't you give me some time to rest?" Han Ying Xue was sighing with a helpless tone.

The Spartan Warriors quickly backed off while hugging each other tightly.

Boom!

Suddenly, a gigantic white-boned arm emerged from beneath the surface of the ground! This arm was huge! It was about 3 or 4 times thicker and larger than the arms an average person would have! Upon a closer look, the white skeleton arm was obviously combined together by many thigh bones, definitely not some natural human bone. It made sense now, that was most probably why Kyle Dylan had asked them to collect so many [Skeleton Bones], [Tooth of a Zombie], and also [Bone of the Necromancer]!

Boom!

Another white-boned arm broke out of the ground! The two huge arms were like bulldozers pushing across the ground, pushing away the soils on the two sides. In that instant, dust and sands were everywhere in the air, all they could see was shattered rocks and marbles flying all over the place!

"Hahaha! Come out! Come out now! My Anelia! My beloved Anelia!" Kyle Dylan was jumping about joyfully, with a crazy look, as if he just had drugs! "Now, no one will stand in our way! No one! No one! Hahaha!"

'Ding! Grave Keeper used you to provide him the necessary ingredients to resurrect his late wife. This terrifying existence of undead will bring catastrophic consequences to the human nearby! You must be responsible for what you have done, warriors!'

'Ding! You have automatically accepted a quest" Slay Anelia! If you give up on the quest or you cannot complete the quest within 1 day, you will receive a penalty of Level -1!'

What the hell!

Zhang Yang and the ladies stared at each other, and cursed in unison! For everything that had happened, it's all because of the system guide, isn't it? If the game could just give some sort of notification to inform the players, nothing of this sort would have happened right?

This is just helpless, and hopeless! Since things have already escalated to this, they just have to go with it!

"Silly Yu, should we kill those five Spartans first?" Han Ying Xue took a quick glance at the Spartan Warrior and his 4 party members. After all, they had been slaughtered by Zhang Yang and the ladies once, revenge was a sentiment that they most likely harbored.

Before Zhang Yang could reply, a gigantic white corpse broke out of the ground! The corpse was about 3 meters tall, and the white bones on it seemed all thick and strong, but the size of the human skull and brain above the neck were of a regular human size, sticking right on top of the gigantic body! It was really disproportionate to look at!

[The Resurrected Anelia]

Level: 89

HP: 8,900,000

Defense: 2,500

"My dear Anelia ---" the eyes of Kyle Dylan grew gentle as he looked at the face of Anelia with an obsessed face. He was looking at Anelia as if she was not a gigantic white-boned undead, instead, he believed that she was still his beautiful wife! He must have lost his mind!

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly, "It's another drama mode, we can't move, again!" Fortunately for him, he managed to summon [Mythical Turtle] out right before all these happened.

"Kyle? Kyle Dylan?" Anelia was speaking out in a very low and husky voice, looking down at Dylan from the tall and huge body of hers, "Why have you become so short all of a sudden? That's not right, why is

everything becomes so small around me? Argh! My hands! My legs! My body! What is going on with me! Argh ---"

"My dear Anelia, please listen to me first!" Kyle Dylan quickly told Anelia every single detail about her death and her resurrection.

"I... I'm already dead?" Anelia was feeling lost, as she reached out her hands up around her face. She was shivering as she was filled with despair. She placed her shivering hands onto her face and said, "My face, is my face also changed? Like my body and hands?"

"My dear Anelia, no matter how you change, I'll always love you!" Kyle Dylan told her gently and looked at her passionately.

"That's just so touching!" Han Ying Xue could not move, but she still could talk, "If only someone, some man would tell me that, my life would be perfect!"

Zhang Yang, "..."

But, Anelia did not seem to be able to listen or accept any of this. After clutching her face in a daze, she suddenly let out a thunderous raging roar towards the sky and began to slam on the ground with her hands. The slamming caused the ground to shake and tremble as if the water was boiling, constantly fluctuating! She then roared at Kyle Dylan with rage, "Why! Why did you resurrect me! I wasn't born a monster, and I sure didn't die as one! So what meaning does it hold, for me to live like this! I hate you! I hate you!"

"Anelia---" Kyle Dylan intended to comfort her.

"Shut up!" Anelia continued to roar.

"My dear Anelia, please calm down first!" Kyle Dylan made another attempt to comfort his resurrected wife.

"I said, shut up!" Anelia roared in anger yet again, but this time, she raised her huge white-boned arm and slammed it across the ground straight at Kyle Dylan! With one powerful sweep of her arm, flesh and bones of Kyle Dylan splatted right across the air onto the ground, he was instantly smashed into a pulp! "No---" Anelia shouted as she lost her voice.

In the past, she was still an ordinary woman, but now that she has become a Violet-Platinum boss, of course, she would lose control of her new strength, of course, she wouldn't know how strong she had become!

"Argh!" Anelia began to scream in a sharp voice, and her body began to radiate with terrifying a sense of power.

"You---" Anelia raged and looked straight at Zhang Yang, the two ladies, and the 5 Spartan Warriors standing further from her. Her eye sockets were ignited with an evil flame, "My husband is already dead, why are you still alive? I want to kill! Kill every single one of you! The world does not need a single living person!"

Right after she was done talking, Zhang Yang and the players in the area had finally regained control, and they could finally move!

Wei Yan Er pointed straight at the nose of Anelia and said, "You old b*tch! You 're the one who killed your own husband and now, you're trying to blame this one us? What a b*tchy Pan Jin Lian!"

"Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, "If she's Pan Jin Lian, then she must be the worst looking Pan Jin Lian there is in the entire history!"

"Bastards!" the boss began to stomp the ground with her white-boned feet, charging towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies! Well, they were standing so much closer to the boss, of course, they would be the ones who would get the aggro of the boss first.

A boss battle was already upon them, and having no time to even look at the five players of The Spartan Warriors, Zhang Yang quickly equipped the [Party Summon Order] on him as a precaution. What if the five of them, The Spartan Warriors, decided to ambush Zhang Yang and his party when they are in deep trouble? With the [Party Summon Order], let's see who will be the one doing the looting by then!

{Spear of Obliteration} fired away! Zhang Yang charged in a few steps forward and engaged the boss in battle.

"Go to hell, and meet my husband!" Anelia let out a cry of sorrow and slammed her white-boned hand at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Without wasting every single second, Zhang Yang raised up his shield and blocked her slam, then he raised his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and began his assault!

"Hey, old ugly b*tch! Eat my axe!" Wei Yan Er let out a roar and went to the back of the boss. Wielding her giant axe, she directed the swing onto the white bones of Anelia, and her strikes sent sparks flying as the axe was sliced across the surface of the white bones! That hit gave a good crack on the huge thigh of the boss!

After all, the body of the boss was just made up of some bones of elite monsters, how can this boss be compared to the other Violet-Platinum bosses!

"Argh ---" Anelia roared at Zhang Yang with her mouth wide opened. Although her head is just as large as a regular human being, her mouth is large enough to swallow down a full-grown pig! As the mouth was wide opened after the boss roared, black fumes engulfed Zhang Yang! Countless black skulls moaned and roared within the black smoke!

‘-10,000!’

A very nicely rounded up damage value was inflicted on Zhang Yang, and Zhang Yang had also acquired an additional negative effect!

[Fatigue]: reduces 10% of both damage dealt and healing effect, lasts for 15 seconds.

What that was even worse, was that this negative effect could be stacked by up to 5 times!

Zhang Yang quickly informed, "Witch Snow! Don't stand on the same line as me and the boss!"

"Alright!"

Meanwhile, after seeing Zhang Yang and the ladies engaged in battle with the boss, the five players of The Spartan Warriors stabilized their trembling hearts and let go of their fear.

"This is a great chance!" Ten-Times-of-Grass was agitated with excitement.

"That's right! They're engaged with a boss, and it's a Violet-Platinum boss! Strong as f*ck! So three of them plan to slay a Violet-Platinum boss? Dream on! We can't even bring down a Yellow-Gold boss with all five of us!" Freezing With Heart was a little agitated with excitement as well.

"Let's wait! They won't be able to hold on much longer against this powerful Violet-Platinum boss! When Zhan Yu is about to die, we shall charge in and take the advantage the god has given us! Kill him! Kill Zhan Yu! And after we upload the playback of us doing so to the forums and official websites... Haha! We shall become the first in the entire China server to ever kill Zhan Yu!"

First! Number one!

In online games, who wouldn't want to get the title of 'Number one'! Number one on the Leveling list, number one on the profession list, who cares! As long as it's a 'Number one', it was a majestic-looking title wherever you go!

"Hehe, if we can even get a few pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment after we kill them, then we will be rich and powerful!"

The five of them were getting pumped to do it as they talked on. Then they turned their eyes towards Zhang Yang and the two ladies without any fear anymore. Instead, they were looking at Zhang Yang with greedy eyes as if Zhang Yang was already destined to be killed by them.

"Anyone who has seen this look of mine must die!" Anelia was getting crazier, and because she was beginning to get used to her new body, she became more comfortable in advancing and retreating, basically, all of her movements became smoother. And now, she had finally begun to unleash the power of a Violet-Platinum boss!

Chapter 413: Thrown into a Battle of Chance

Zhang Yang had been aware of his surroundings, taking in everything, including the expressions of the five Spartan Warriors. He had not missed that. He smiled coldly and said, "Witchy Snow, hang back a little and keep my health bar at 50%."

"Hmm... what are you trying to do?" Han Ying Xue couldn't understand what Zhang Yang wanted to do, so she asked.

"Those 5 behind us aren't looking at us so pleasantly. So, I plan to set up a bait and see if they would change their minds maybe? Their decisions shall decide their own fate." Zhang Yang laughed.

"... Noob tank, you're very... 'benevolent'!" Wei Yan Er was laughing very hard.

"Well, if they weren't thinking about taking advantage on us, then they wouldn't be lurking around us still! Haha!"

Han Ying Xue slowed down her healing on Zhang Yang, slowly letting Zhang Yang's health bar reduce from 90% down to 80%, 70%, and all the way down to 50%!

It seemed really dangerous to do so, but now that they were in an outdoor environment, Zhang Yang was mounted on his [Mount], boosting his maximum health up to a total of 133,470 points! So 50% of the maximum health he has is approximately 70,000 health points! Plus, all non-members of his party will not be able to see the specific amount of health points he has, they would only see the percentage of the health bar left.

The Spartan Warriors had no idea how much health points Zhang Yang has at the moment, all they could see was that Zhang Yang's health bar was reduced swiftly down to 50%, and then the health bar was maintained at 50%. So they began to lurk from the shadow.

To them, their chance to strike has finally come!

Freezing With Heart gave the signal, "Alright! Let's get going!"

The five of them looked at each other and nodded. They raised up their weapons and began to approach Zhang Yang slowly.

"Go to hell, all of you!" Anelia suddenly let out a sharp and thunderous roar, as a stream of dark light surged around her body. The dark light then shot out from her body in all directions!

‘-20,000!’

‘-20,000!’

‘-20,000!’

...

In that instant, everyone was inflicted with a large damage value, and that wasn't all, everyone was inflicted with a DOT effect!

[Shadow Corrosion]: Inflicts 3,000 Shadow damage every 3 seconds and reduces 50% healing effects, lasts for 15 seconds.

"Son of the sniper!" all five members of The Spartan Warriors cursed at the same time. Other than Spartan Warrior the tanker, who had approximately 30,000 health points on him at the moment, the remaining of his party members only had around 20,000 health points. After being assaulted by the boss with that powerful skill, the remaining four were left with only approximately 5,000 health points. The worst part was that the negative effect actually inflicted DOT damage on their health points! None of them could handle that sh*t!

It had turned into a catastrophic disaster for The Spartan Warriors!

All five of them had their faces wet with tears. "What a stupid boss! We were coming to aid you, and this is how you repay us! Don't you know who are your enemies and who are your allies?"

Invincible Mouth-Sacrificer quickly activated his {Sacred Protection} and entered his invincible state, trying his best to heal up his 'brother-in-arms' a little! However, he was just a holy knight in the end. He specialized in single-target healing. However, there were 5 players - including himself -

that required healing, so it made sense that he couldn't handle it! Priests would fare better in this sort of AOE healing.

He quickly shouted, "Quickly, use your skills! I can't hold it up much longer!"

There and then, the five of them had activated their own life-saving skills to save their own *sses.

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er suddenly laughed madly and broke off from the battle. She rode on her [Crimson Flaming Horse] and charged towards the five of them.

At the current situation, [Battle Mounts] were still rare, or at least, the five Spartan Warriors had not yet acquired such rare equipment. Standing before the [Battle Mount], they never stood a chance. All they could do was to watch Wei Yan Er charging in swiftly, like a mad general on a horse with a giant axe!

"Taking advantage of others when we're busy? You better go home and suck on your own thumbs!" Wei Yan Er wielded her axe and directed the swing towards Ten-Times-of-Grass!

‘-14,211!’

It was a {Destructive Smash} indeed, Ten-Times-of-Grass turned into a stream of white light immediately and got transferred straight to the nearest graveyard. He had already activated his {Ice Barrier} to remove the effect of [Shadow Corrosion], so he had nothing left to block the heavy strike that Wei Yan Er gave him!

Wei Yan Er giggled and turned her horse around, charging towards her second target, Freezing With Heart!

Taking advantage of others? The Spartan Warriors were already wounded badly by the boss! So now, it was actually Wei Yan Er who was taking advantage on The Spartan Warriors, finishing what the boss had started!

Although the 5 of them had already broken out of their formation, the distance of 20 to 30 meters made no difference. In just an instant, Wei

Yan Er had caught up with her next target and had swung her axe again!

‘-9,212!’

Freezing With Heart had also let out a sad scream and disappeared into a stream of white light, joining his pal, Ten-Times-of-Grass.

Wei Yan Er turned her horse towards her next target, Invincible Mouth-Sacrifier, and she began to charge again, terrifying Invincible Mouth-Sacrifier until he almost pissed his pants! His face turned pale the moment he saw her charging towards him, because he never expected the little girl to come at him first! He had healed Spartan Warrior first, but Wei Yan Er did not charge at him firstly, even though she knew he was the healer. Instead, she went on killing his other two ‘brother-in-arms’ on her horse mount!

As his {Sacred Protection} had already been activated previously, it’s futile to even think about running away. So all he can do at that moment was to focus healing himself!

‘-15,789!’

{Tornado Cleave} activated! Wei Yan Er swung her axe through and instant-killed Invincible Mouth-Sacrifier!

‘-4,221!’

Zhang Yang also turned around and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at Sloppy Sloth, taking away the health points that he had just recovered from a [Red Potion].

Wei Yan Er had already arrived at where Sloppy Sloth was, right after Zhang Yang had damaged him, and with a powerful swung, she struck Sloppy Sloth without holding back!

‘-9,284!’

Sloppy Sloth let out a miserable cry and collapsed in his own pool of blood.

There was only one left on The Spartan Warriors party, Spartan Warrior himself!

What a tragic day! They were supposed to wait for the boss to wound Zhang Yang and the ladies before they could cut in and finish the job, but instead, they were the ones who were wounded badly! Left near dead, and having expended their life-saving skills, it was no wonder that they were so easily slaughtered by Wei Yan Er!

It was really a tragedy that would make people fill their faces with their own tears!

Zhang Yang did bother much about The Spartan Warriors, because he knew that Wei Yan Er alone was enough to take care all of them! A Violet-Platinum boss was so much more intimidating and threatening!

"Pitiful humans, why are you still alive? Just die already!" Anelia let out a hissing scream while reaching out with her arms. Clouds of black shrouds were surging around one of her arms, and she clawed her arm towards Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Cheh ---

Although the {Block} was effective in blocking the attack, the [Titan Wall] was covered with a black shroud. Zhang Yang took a look and he cursed, "What the f*ck! The attack of this boss has a corrosive effect on equipment! My shield lost 29 points of durability just by touching her hand!"

As long as the durability of equipment did not hit 0, the effect and function of the equipment would still be there, even if there was just 1 point of durability left. But once it hits 0, then wearing the equipment will mean nothing, it will be just like being naked! To get the equipment functional again, one would have to take the equipment to a Black-Smith to repair it!

Fortunate for Zhang Yang, the [Titan Wall] was a Violet-Platinum that he used very often, so he knew the exact durability of the shield to be 1,920. Although he had engaged the boss with his shield at 1,600 durability points, it would still take a very long time to whittle away those durability points, even for a boss.

"Argh ---" on the other hand, Spartan Warrior could only struggle for a bit before he was chopped down by the giant axe of Wei Yan Er. There, he was transferred to the graveyard to join his brothers.

"Noobie!" the tragic hero Spartan Warrior heard Wei Yan Er looking down upon him as he was being transferred to the nearest graveyard. He had never felt so humiliated in his entire life, that he felt like killing himself with a piece of soft tofu. Obviously, he was on the brink of losing his mind.

Wei Yan Er took up her giant axe and spun it to make herself look cool, and then she patted her horse and ran back to the boss.

Without the need to worry about being stabbed in the back by the five 'noobies', Zhang Yang and the ladies began to unleash all their power onto the boss, without a single sign of holding back!

However, Zhang Yang was inflicted with the negative effect [Fatigue], so his attacks had been reduced by 50%, causing him to be able to inflict only about 2,000 damage onto the boss with each hit! If it weren't for his {Eagle Eye} that ignored 50% of the target's defense, and also having 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, he would have been affected, even more, having his damage output lowered even further!

Zhang Yang had already dismounted from the Turtle. Although he could boost his maximum health points a lot higher by mounting, it would expose [Mythical Turtle] to the effect of [Fatigue].

After waiting out the {Fatigue} effect, Zhang Yang quickly activated Turtle's {Spirit of the Flame}. All attacks of the Turtle had turned into Fire-type attacks in that instant, and the attack of Turtle had been boosted up to another level!

Although the damage output of Zhang Yang had been reduced steeply, Wei Yan Er and Turtle were still inflicting damages to the boss as steadily as usual.

On the other hand, the five members of The Spartan Warriors were running in their soul state.

"Are we still doing this?"

"... Forget about it, after we revive ourselves, we'll just wait until those god-slayers finish off the boss, before we get the quest done."

"Gosh, she was really worthy of the title 'One of the Strongest Core Players in Lone Desert Smoke', look at her! How fierce she can be when in battle! What kind of axe do you think she's wielding? That berserker can inflict me with about 9,000 damage with a regular attack. It only took her 3 slashes to kill me!"

"Better don't provoke them ever again! Let's just hide from them whenever we see them!"

When the five of them were running around in their soul state, Zhang Yang and the ladies were engaging the boss in a fierce battle. The boss had many different patterns and styles of attacks. She would switch between applying {Fatigue} and {Shadow Corrosion} effects, depend on her mood. The negative effect - {Fatigue} only affected Zhang Yang alone, but the {Shadow Corrosion} was very horrifying! Not only could it inflict 20,000 Shadow damage directly, but also inflict a total DoT damage of 15,000 points, adding up to a total damage of 35,000! Even Han Ying Xue would 'choke' on it!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had crafted a large number of high grade transmuted potions and had seen to it that the two ladies had an abundant supply as well. They were able to enjoy the perks of spamming the potions without worry! And thanks to this large number of [Mana Potions] with extra effects, Han Ying Xue could heal more comfortably.

"I'm the master of the undead! Spectres, awaken from your slumber, and fight for your master!" Anelia's humanity was beginning to slip away, as she was transforming into a true aster of the undead!

She raised her hands up and sent black shrouds across the air, over to the six corpses on the ground.

Right after that, a series of violent cracking sounds could be heard, and those corpses started to shuffle on their feet. The eye sockets of these corpses were ignited with green flames of the undead, clear and bright.

The corpses then opened up their arms and roared into the sky in rage.

[New-Raised Skeleton Soldier] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 85

HP: 85,000

Defense: 450

At that exact moment, the five players of Spartan Warriors had finally arrived at the locations of their own corpses and selected 'Revive'. Shoof shoof shoof shoof! Five of them revived and stood on their feet in the middle of the battlefield!

"Rawgh!" the six elite skeleton soldiers had empty aggro bars, the moment they were raised from the dead. So, the moment the five players respawned nearby, the skeleton soldiers immediately set them as their primary targets! Growling all the way, other than the one skeleton soldier raised from the dead Kyle Dylan close to where Han Ying Xue was, which charged straight for her, the remaining 5 skeleton soldiers went on to slaughter the five players of The Spartan Warriors.

These five poor souls had just respawned, and they had only 20% health points on them. Furthermore, they were not particularly skilled in the game. So, when the elite skeleton soldiers came up to them, they did not stand a chance and got slaughtered all over again. With some miserable screams spreading into the surroundings, the five of them were quickly sent back to the graveyard.

"What just happened? Why are we dead again?"

The five of them were looking at each other, their faces gaunt and manic.

Zhang Yang quickly flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at the skeleton soldier from afar attracted its attention, shouting, "Little girl! Kill the small ones first!"

"Roger!"

"Kill, kill them all!" Anelia cried out in a hostile tone of her sharp voice.

There were more than a few white bones all over her body that had already been smashed and shattered to the ground like bread crumbs, all thanks to the powerful smashes and slashes that Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had brought upon her. But that had only provoked her even further!

Zhang Yang stepped up and clashed with the remaining 5 skeleton soldiers, with the activation of his {Horizontal Sweep}, a powerful swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] directed straight at the monsters. The special effect of his sword was triggered as well, and countless aurablades were dancing around the monsters, luring them over to Zhang Yang.

The firepower of five elite monsters and a Violet-Platinum boss was quite powerful. Zhang Yang did not dare to slack or to be negligent at all. So, he activated his {Shield Wall} to tank them, and finally, he took them all out one after another.

But these monsters had a skill on each of them, that was, when these monsters die, they would cause the damage done to them to turn into the health points for the boss! Although these monsters had been slain, the health bar of the boss had recovered by 2%!

"It's all because of those five nincompoops! That was how 5 more monsters were spawned!" Wei Yan Er scolded.

The situation was obvious just now. The number of elite skeleton soldiers Anelia can summon depended on the number of corpses in the surroundings! If The Spartan Warriors had not died, there would only be one skeleton soldier summoned, and there wouldn't be a problem at all!

If The Spartan Warriors could hear what Wei Yan Er just said, they would probably puke blood immediately --- it was Wei Yan Er who slaughtered them in the first place!

Zhang Yang frowned, "They were just killed again, so there are another 5 fresh corpses around for the boss to rise again!"

"What a bunch of losers, can't they just find a better spot to die?" Han Ying Xue started attacking the boss directly.

One minute had passed, Anelia let out a deafening cry again and said, "I'm the master of the undead! Spectres, awaken from your slumber, and fight for your master!" She raised her hands up and sent black shrouds across the air over to the corpses of The Spartan Warriors on the ground, just like how she did previously.

Clak! Clak! Clak!

5 Death Knight began to spawn out from the corpses! The Death Knights were resting on their own battle horses, and the horses would paw their hoofs on the ground from time to time, breathing out fire from their noses!

[Newly-raised Death Knight] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 85

HP: 200,000

Defense: 900

Wei Yan Er was staring with her jaw hanging, "That doesn't make any sense! How can a horse even come out from the corpses!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Something to think about, The Spartan Warriors should be proud of themselves, because they can still transform into such powerful foul monsters!"

"Whinny!" the five battle horses from hell let out their battle whine, moving their powerful legs, carrying the Death Knights towards Zhang Yang and the ladies like howling gale!

Death Knights were not regular elite monsters, and if 5 of them activated {Death Strike} at the same time, together with the boss's attack, even Zhang Yang could be instant-killed!

At that instant, the three of them were in a very dangerous situation!

Chapter 414: Powerful Summons!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The Death Knights did not even allow the party time to prepare themselves. They came up, wielding their heavy swords at Zhang Yang, as if they were about to slay a god!

‘-1,785!’

‘-1,536!’

‘-1,693!’

‘-7,384!’

‘-1,634!’

The five Death Knights directed their heavy swords right at Zhang Yang, and one of them was able to score a {Death Strike}, inflicting a horrific damage on Zhang Yang!

The boss did not just stand there and watch as well. She reached out for them with her massive arms. Fortunately, Zhang Yang was ready. He had reserved his {Block} just for her! With his shield raised up high, he activated {Block} and repelled the arms, preventing himself from being damaged even further.

Zhang Yang could not care whether the damage output of Turtle was reduced or not at this time. He immediately flipped himself over onto Turtle, boosting his maximum health points up to 130,000 to increase his own survivability.

{Blast Wave}!

All five Death Knights were hit and they were stunned, giving Zhang Yang and the ladies a brief moment to breathe and buffer a little.

"Focus on one monster, and kill it first!" Zhang Yang quickly marked one of the Death Knights with the symbol of a ‘sun’ and commanded the ladies to attack it.

Han Ying Xue also took a moment of her time to activate {Putrefying

Poison} on the Death Knights, all five of them. Then, she turned her attention towards healing Zhang Yang with everything she had. The damage output of one boss and five elite monsters combined was very powerful! Even Zhang Yang's defense would not hold up for long. With all the damage done to him and Han Ying Xue healing him, his health bar was like a roller coaster, going up and down, breaking even at around 50%.

This time, he wasn't just pretending. It was because Han Ying Xue could not keep his health points up!

[Devastator] and [Money-Greed Florick]¹ were summoned to increase their damage output in an attempt to end the battle a little faster. As for the centaur servant that Wei Yan Er had, the power level of this servant is just too weak compared to the other two servants. So it would be pointless to summon it out.

{Force Blast}

[Devastator] blasted the 5 Death Knights 10 meters back the moment he was summoned out, followed by a powerful {Blast Wave} from Wei Yan Er in attempt to restrict the movement of these elite monsters.

But still, Zhang Yang's health bar was still decreasing madly, and it was about to hit the bottom!

{Berserker's Heal}!

'+133,470!'

A healing value that left Han Ying Xue speechless and impressed at the same time appeared right above Zhang Yang, healing him back to his full health state!

In terms of AOE attacks, Wei Yan Er was no match to Zhang Yang! But, Zhang Yang is currently inflicted with a {Fatigue} effect, causing his attack to decrease tremendously. The defense of these Death Knights was uniquely high, causing the attack of {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike} which already had low damage output, to become even weaker, reducing the effectiveness of their initial damage output capability!

It seemed that it would be wiser to level up the skill {Eagle Eye} up to

Level 10 as a priority!

When this skill is at the maximum level, it would allow the player to ignore 95% of the defense of the target! So, it could have surprising effects when used to engage multiple monsters at the same time --- of course, it did not make sense to use {Cripple Defense} on the monsters one by one when there are many monsters around!

50 seconds later, the first Death Knight had finally been slain!

"I'm the master of the undead! Spectres, arise from your slumber and fight for your master!"

Another minute later, Anelia began to summon her little minions. But this time, there were no corpses for the boss to use, so Anelia was just wasting her breath and her expression!

Boom!

Another 40 seconds have passed, and the second Death Knight was slain!

Although they were focusing on one monster at a time, some of their skills such as {Tornado Cleave} and {Horizontal Sweep} would inflict damages to the other monsters around them. That was the reason why they were getting faster in slaying the monsters!

The third one followed, and the fourth one, then last but not least, the fifth one! All have been slain! Zhang Yang and the ladies had finally made it through the dangerous situation they were in!

Han Ying Xue staggered in relief, "It was really lucky for us that there were only 5 of them dead! If there are more corpses on the ground, then we won't have been able to pull it through! Any party would not survive if more elite monsters were spawned!"

Anelia possessed the [Mordoro's Heart], and all thanks to this [Mordoro's Heart], Anelia had earned a new ability. As Kyle Dylan had used the heart to resurrect Anelia, it had given her the ability to raise the undead! And Anelia had many very powerful AoE skills. So the more players present, the higher the death rate would be, and the number of

elite monsters that Anelia could summon would be much higher as well!

If the death counts of the players reach a certain extent, then the boss would bring disastrously high damage to all players by just summoning elite monsters, causing more deaths. When there are more death counts on the players, the boss could just summon elite monsters with her ability, and the number of the monsters she can summon will increase together with the increasing death count. The boss could simply overwhelm the players in that manner!

Zhang Yang then said, "I hope those 5 nincompoops won't come back and die again!"

After clearing the five monsters, Zhang Yang dismounted from [Mythical Turtle] once again, allowing the mighty and powerful Turtle to unleash its best potential in battle, channeling the highest damage output it could!

70%, 60%... the health bar of the boss was constantly reducing.

For every one minute, Anelia would attempt to summon something. But, unfortunate for her, there were only Zhang Yang and the two ladies breathing with life. So the strongest 'special ability' of the boss had become totally useless!

Pak! Plak!

The bones on Anelia were clashing violently against the sword and axe, causing them to fracture bit by bit. The fracture-lines were beginning to form deeper cracks, as pieces of bones were beginning to fall from her body as if she was oppressed! As the boss's health bar was around 50%, one of her leg was actually hacked off by Wei Yan Er with a powerful blow, literally!

Boom!

The body of the boss collapsed, as she lost balance, and the impact of her falling trembled across the ground, leaving a wave of rumble and a stir of dust into the air.

"God damn human! Insolent living souls!" Anelia could not stop cursing,

trying to support her large body with her other leg that was still attached to her body! She repeatedly slammed at Zhang Yang in rage and hatred!

In this game, there is no such thing as a wounded or weakened status, meaning that, as long as one is still alive, it would not matter if the health bar is full, or if there is only 1 health point left, the attack of a monster or a boss would not undergo any difference --- unless they are affected by status effects from skills such as stuns or movement speed reduction. Although Anelia was only left with one leg, but she could still jump around as if she had both legs!

"Hahaha! This boss is like a kangaroo now!" Wei Yan Er could not help but to laugh out loud!

But this kangaroo is definitely the deadliest one there is in the entire world. As her body was badly wounded, the boss was enraged even more. Although it had not yet increased her damage, but it would likely trigger some sort of skill or effect that she had yet to use!

Red visible lights were flashed violently across the eyes of the boss, as her right arm suddenly turned bloody red, and it looked like her hand was covered with endless blood, flowing around like armor, up her entire arm!

Zhang Yang felt a chill down his spine, it had been a while since he felt fear! As his {Shield Wall} was still under cool down period, he activated his [Heart of the Death Knight] without hesitation, entering a 10-second state of invincibility!

Boom!

The right arm of Anelia extended far out and stabbed straight into the chest of Zhang Yang like a long spear!

‘Ding! Anelia has unleashed Fatal Bone Spear!’

Immune!

After the boss stabbed him in his chest with the skill, he suddenly realized that the boss had acquired a negative effect on her.

[Overstressed]: Suffers 20% additional damage when being hit, last for 15

seconds.

Although Zhang Yang was not aware of how powerful the {Fatal Bone Spear} was, as he was invincible at the moment, but after realizing the new added negative effect on the boss, he knew that the moment had finally come!

With the boss having the negative effect to receive 20% additional damage, it was a great chance for Zhang Yang and the ladies to hustle up! Time to strike violently!

40%, 30%, 20%... the health bar of Anelia had almost hit the bottom, but Han Ying Xue's mana bar was almost depleted as well! After all, the boss has many means in her AOE attacks. To have her healing Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er with higher skills of healing, even with her {Divine Soul} activated, which reduces 75% of mana consumption, she would not be able to hold up so long as well!

And she had also been taking [Mana Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], or else, she would have been done for, since the beginning, and forced to stare from aside, doing nothing!

When the health bar of Anelia was reduced down to 10%, the right arm of the boss turned bloody red again!

{Shield Wall} has completely cooled down, so Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all and activated it right away!

‘-37,554!’

That was really terrifying! Zhang Yang was still inflicted with almost 40,000 damage even with his {Shield Wall} activated! Fortunately, he still had about 80,000 health points on him at the moment, or he would have been instant-killed!

Zhang Yang brought up the battle log to check: Anelia's Fatal Bone Spear has inflicted 37,554 physical damage on you (160,456 damage immune, 1,990 damage absorbed).

This... this is just outrageous! A basic damage of 200,000!

Without activating skills, no tanker at the current stage of the game could sustain that amount of damage and survive!

This was just domineering! No wonder the boss became weak for the next 15 seconds, so this was her 'end game' plan! A total damage of 200,000! It would still be worth it, even if the boss stayed weak for another 1 minute!

Even a Level 80 tanker with a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment would have only about 30,000 health points. Without a pet mount to boost the maximum health points, the tanker would still die without activating {Shield Wall}, without a doubt!

So the future was very tough on those tankers without pet mounts. They will definitely be struggling a lot!

During the first hit of {Fatal Bone Spear}, as Zhang Yang was invincible due to his activation of [Heart of the Death Knight], Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not aware of how powerful the skill is. But this time around, the damage value appeared on Zhang Yang took their breaths away, leaving them speechless.

'-54,264!'

While the boss was still under the influence of the negative effect {Overstressed}, Wei Yan Er quickly took a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and swung her axe with full strength! Instantly, she inflicted the boss with a horrific value of damage! It felt really awesome!

"Wow!" Wei Yan Er was agitated and she screamed in excitement!

Zhang Yang nodded and praised her, "That value of damage is really a little overpowered. It can be compared to an attack of a boss! Too bad, the cooldown is a little too long as well."

"Humph! It's not just overpowered by 'a little' alright? It's overpowered to the max!" Wei Yan Er was feeling flattered. This little girl really loved to show off.

18%, 16%, 14%... as Anelia was being weakened by {Overstressed}, her health bar was reduced incredibly fast within the 15 seconds!

"What a waste, that all our {Dance of the Heaven and Earths} are still on cooldown period!" Han Ying Xue sighed. If one could just activate {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} while the boss is in her weakened state, it could bring about 170,000 damage to the boss, a terrifying damage value indeed! But the unfortunate thing was that this skill had a 24-hour cooldown period, and they had just activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} during the battle with The Vengeful Spirit Mordoro, so they would need to wait for another 20 hours before they can activate it again!

"Power of darkness, please grant me unlimited power to exterminate these imbecile living souls!" Anelia looked up into the sky and let out a sharp and yet thunderous cry. Her large body began to give off the cracking sound of bone joints as the body shrunk smaller and smaller by the moment!

In just a brief while, Anelia had shrunk down to the size of a regular human person, and at the same time, she also gained a double edged effect. The effect is beneficial and harmful to her at the same time! How so?

[Unholy Strength]: Damage increases by 30%, however, loses 10,000 health points every 3 seconds, last for 5 minutes.

At that very moment, the boss still had 5% of health left, a total of 440,000 health points left!

Theoretically, if Zhang Yang and the ladies could hold on for 132 seconds, then they did not have to hit the boss, they only had to wait for the effect of {Unholy Strength} to reduce the health to zero and kill the boss! But the key here now, was that Han Ying Xue was already at her limit. Her mana bar was about to hit the bottom already! Now that the boss had somehow gone 'berserk' and the boss's attack had increased substantially, this final stage of the battle where the 5% health must be reduced to 0 will become very difficult and dangerous!

{Titan's Shield}!

Zhang Yang had finally activated his final trump card! He activated his Titan Set Armor's additional effect skill {Titan's Shield}, giving him the

ability to absorb 300,000 damage!

"Let's slay this thing fast!"

After going into berserk mode, the boss could inflict a damage of 16,000 in a single hit! Even the {Titan's Shield} can only withstand 19 hits from the boss!

With everything they got, Zhang Yang and the ladies unleashed every single possible hit onto the boss!

3%!

2%

1%

Pak! The {Titan's Shield} was broken at last!

Fortunately, Han Ying Xue's mana bar had regenerated a little over the period of time when they were engaging the boss, so she had enough mana points to heal Zhang Yang in the nick of time!

0%!

Finally, Anelia screamed in misery and collapsed onto the ground heavily.

TL Note:

1. [Money-Greed Florick] - before the amendment, the name was [Codger Florick].

Chapter 415: Titan Set Armor Completed!

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Slay Anelia, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!'

The mesmerizing sound of the system notification sounded across the ears of Zhang Yang and the two ladies. Those were the sweetest sound notifications they have heard for the day.

"Please do not engage a boss with only 3 members in a party, that was so tiring!" Han Ying Xue shook her head again and again. Her mana bar had dried up once, and now it got sucked dry once again.

But Wei Yan Er was happy about this, "Sister snow, the fewer we are, the more gold coins we get after slaying the boss!"

Han Ying Xue immediately revealed a conflicted expression right on her face.

Then, Wei Yan Er went on to pick up the loot dropped by the boss. With a joyful smile on her face, the little girl picked up 20 gold coins, and that was the moment when she discovered a pair of gloves glittering in a shiny violet complexion. She picked it up and went to Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, come worship my incredible lucky hands! Take a look at what my hands have picked up for you!"

[Titan Gauntlets] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +282

Strength: +81

Agility: +40

Equip: Absorbs 162 damage points when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 80

Titan Set Armor (8/8)

Finally! It's complete! All eight pieces of the armor set were in place! Zhang Yang filled his face with tears of joy, as it was really a long journey - full of hardship and patience. Ever since he got the first piece of the Titan Set Armor [Titan Greaves], it had been a long 5-month journey, 5 months!

Without having the patience to wait until the equipment is identified, Zhang Yang equipped it on straight away right after tossing his [Earth Spirit Hand Guards] off into his inventory. There, he finally acquired the special effect when all eight pieces of the Titan Set Armor are together in one place: When you are hit, there is a 1% chance that you will acquire the Titan's Blessing, and the attacker will be stunned for 10 seconds. This effect is effective on the bosses of Violet-Platinum or lower grade.

This effect is wicked sick if it's ever triggered in a boss fight! It can save a life, no, save lives!

Wei Yan Er grew envious of Zhang Yang, and she teased, "Now that noob tank has one complete set of Armor Set, I have only two pieces of my Armor Set. How long do I need to wait before I can complete my Armor Set too! Months? Years? Wu wu wu."

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "If the bread can get it, the butter will get it too! Haha!"

"You sarcastic son of a beach!" Wei Yan Er harrumphed and proceeded with her looting.

[Battle Flag of Recovery] (Consumable)

Use: Installs a battle flag on the ground, heal members of your party (Maximum 10 players) by 2,000 health points every 10 seconds, members must be within the 30-meter radius of the area, with the flag as the center point, lasts for 5 minutes.

Required Level: 80

Well, this was actually a useful piece of consumable convenient for Party Battles! It's like an AOE healing skill, it was definitely practical for battles! Zhang Yang quickly called dibs on it and kept it into his inventory.

"Yan Er, stop fooling around with the inferior stuff and get on with the armor set equipment!" Han Ying Xue urged the little girl.

"Alright!" Wei Yan Er replied with a strong nod and quickly looked for any possible items that glowed violet!

[Blade of Endless Abyss] (Violet-Platinum, Dual Weapon)

Attack: 2,356 - 2,956

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 699

Equip: When hitting a target, there is a 1% chance to reduce 5% strength of the target. Can stack up to 3 times. Lasts for 10 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"The weapon attack is really good, but the special effect is little underwhelming." Zhang Yang commented. The attack of a boss is usually fixed, so it would be pointless to reduce the strength of a boss. And in player vs player mode, unless it's a battle of attrition where the one lasting the longest wins, it would be impossible to wait for so long until the effect triggers 3 times and stacks onto each other!

"If we sell it, it will still be worth quite a fortune!" Han Ying Xue nodded, but she was not really into this kind of selling and buying business. She preferred to get the gold coins in her hands, as it's more exciting to pick up the gold coins by herself, and holding them in her hands felt more practical and real.

"Wu wu wu, so after all that we have been through, battling the boss, we only get three pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment as our reward? And only noob tank gets to complete collecting all eight pieces of his armor set equipment! This is really unfair!" Wei Yan Er lamented

[Cryonic Warrior Greaves] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Intelligence: +80

Equip: Absorbs 162 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 80

"... doing all the heavy work for this Starlight boy I see!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh, because this equipment was specially designed for a defender, as it increases the intelligence of the person who equips it.

"Humph! At least get 100,000 gold coins from him as service charge!" Wei Yan Er bared her 'fangs' as she spoke. She wasn't in a good mood, as she did not get any of her armor set.

Zhang Yang kept the remaining Yellow-Gold equipment into his inventory and said, "Since the boss is slain, and the quest is completed, let's go back now!"

He was eager to identify his [Titan's Gaunlets].

The two ladies nodded, but both of them requested Zhang Yang to teleport back to the main city and use the [Party Summon Order] to summon them back.

These ladies were capable of squeezing oil out of stones, so Zhang Yang had nothing to argue with them and just did what he was asked to do.

Arriving back at the White Jade Castle, Zhang Yang went straight over to the Identifying Shop to identify his newly acquired [Titan's Gaunlets]. Then he inserted the [Level 3 Vitality Gemstones] onto his equipment, powering it up by 50%! Now, he finally had a complete set of Level 80 Violet-Platinum armor set on him! Initially, the Titan Set Armor only glittering in a vague and gentle violet glow. But, the moment he identified the final piece of the armor set equipment and equipped it, this set of Titan Armor Set suddenly began to bloom in a dazzling violet glow that catches the eyes of the public! He looks awesomely 'shiny', in that sense!

There were many players nearby at the Identifying Shop as well. Seeing Zhang Yang suddenly transformed into some sort of godly existence, everyone was exclaiming on how cool he seemed to be. Some of them were quick on reflexes as they already activated the function of the recorder in the game. If this magnificent scene is uploaded on the forums, this would definitely win a large number of clicks!

Zhang Yang was caught by surprise as he had never thought that the armor would glow so bright, attracting so much unwanted attention to him! So he quickly deselected the 'Show special effect of your armor' in the option menu and instantly, his [Titan Set Armor] became dimmer. Only the lucky ones with quick eyes could see him glowing in 'holy' violet light.

If he had not switched the 'special effect' on his armor off, he would have become a huge 1000-watt light bulb running around in the city! Wherever he goes, he would shine upon the place!

As he was rounded by a bunch of players, Zhang Yang quickly summoned his mount and rushed towards the auction house.

Every time when he returns to the main city, he would visit the auction house to try his luck. Oftentimes, he would find something useful.

As usual. He would first seek for the skill books for pets. Although he did not find any high grade skill books, but he had managed to secure two [Pet Skill Engravement Scrolls], and it was worth his time! But when he went over to search for [Skill Books] for Professions, he was out of luck that day.

Now that he had acquired a full set of Titan Set Armor, he did not have much equipment needs for his next 20 levels journey. The only need he had left was to switch the two rings and two accessories with better ones! The Armor Set effect of his Titan Set Effect would remain irreplaceable until Mythical grade equipment appears, and the [Sword of Purging Devourer] still had two seals that had yet to be unsealed. So, as long as he stays on track and completes all the quests related to the sword, the 'Holy' sword will be able to 'grow' even stronger!

So now, leveling up is the priority!

As he had been so busy with so many quests that had provided them so much experience points, along with slaying so many elite grade monsters while progressing through his quests, he was just one small step away from reaching Level 87! And he had only used one day to complete leveling up to Level 87, becoming the first player in the entire China server to ever reach Level 87!

All he ever wanted was to grind his level up further, however, accidental situations tended to befall on him at the best 'suitable' times!

As Silky Soft Holdings was trying to rebuild their business base, many of their business partners were beginning to treat their partnerships a little differently. So the Silky Soft Holdings must be very cautious on every move they make in the future. This time, his company had a contract related to getting a large company in Northern Beijing City, the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. The two large companies were attempting to work together for once, taking a bundled sales strategy to fight a 'war' with a price.

But as for how they are going to divide the profit, it was a large problem. Because portion as small as one out of one thousand ratios of in and out, can be about millions of dollars for the both companies. So they cannot just simply act on it!

Therefore, although Zhang Yang did not really understand anything about this, he still had to present himself at the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings's headquarters in Northern Beijing City and have a meeting with the CEO of that company. He had the obligation to handle the details of their partnership. Although he was just an observer, but his presence would mean the sincerity of the Silky Soft Holdings in their partnership!

This was actually the biggest step that Silky Soft Holdings would be taking ever since they started rebuilding their business. Therefore, they valued every part of their company. They had already arranged the managers of all departments in their company to get involved in the operation this time around. Zhang Yang thought that he did not have to worry about anything as he was the CEO. There would be a car escorting

him to the airport, and when he arrived at the destination, there would also be a car escorting him over to the hotel. That was all in his own thoughts.

On the April 29, he brought 3 of his secretaries along. But when his car arrived at the destination, Zhang Yang realized that they were not at the airport, but they were at the train station instead!

The three pretty secretaries were giggling and smiling while they were trying to pull him up to the train. They informed him that the negotiations would only take place on the day after tomorrow, and they would have plenty of time to be sentimental and have fun 'shaking' on the train!

Now that he was surrounded by three young and sexy women who kept on 'luring' him in, who knew how many men on the train, being envious of him, quietly to the point that they were drooling to themselves! The secretaries had booked their very own Soft-sleeper seats, and the decoration for the coach of the train was very luxurious! The bathroom even had a bathtub in it! The standard of the coach was comparable to a 5-Star hotel!

No wonder one ticket was worth more than three times of the price of a plane ticket! It was all worth the money, just by looking at the coach now!

At first, all six of Zhang Yang's secretaries wanted to tag along. But Zhang Yang thought that it would be way beyond exaggeration for a mere contract meeting, so after picking his troops more carefully, he finally managed to reduce the number of people following him down to only 3, and it was actually still too many! One secretary was all he needed! These three pretty women were giggling all the time. All three of them went into the bathroom of the coach to take a bath, and had come out with only bras and panties on them, walking around, shaking their boobies right in front of Zhang Yang, trying to get on his 'nerves'!

It was really fortunate that he had brought along his game helmet. So, after Zhang Yang put on his helmet and lay down on his bed, he went on and played his own game.

All the while on the coach, the three secretaries pampered him to the

point that he only needed to hold out his hand to be dressed, and open his mouth to be fed! They were about to turn him into a lazy person! But the duration of the journey from Zhou Su City to Northern Beijing City was about 16 hours, add or take. So they arrived at the station in less than a day.

So, they arrived at the designated hotel to meet the negotiation team of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. After a night of rest, Zhang Yang and his main team departed for the company office of the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings, ready to begin their 3-day negotiation on the details of their partnership.

The CEO of the Crimson Cosmetic Holdings was a charming lady, with an outstanding appearance and personality. She was aged at about 28, with a slender and yet attractive body figure. Her boobs stood at attention, and she had a fair face, with a little blush on her face. An angelic face like this would attract most men to take a quick glance at her - both intentionally and unintentionally.

An attractive lady at this age is really mature and attractive. This woman had a strong impression to be kept in admirable order. Every word and every move she made really showed that she was so much more mature and attractive than those young and simple-minded pretty girls that he had met before.

Xu Lan, that is her name.

Zhang Yang took a good look at the woman, and he was shocked! He could not help himself and let out an obvious exclamation, "Snow Seeker!"

"Zhan Yu!" Xu Lan was also very surprised to see him.

So, this Xu Lan is actually the Guildmaster of the Crimson Rage in the game. The two of them actually met once during the Soaring Sword Competition that was being held in Shang Hai.

"Haha! I should have guessed it earlier! How could I not connect the dots! Crimson Rage and Crimson Cosmetics are of course, related!" Zhang Yang laughed.

Chapter 416: Island of the Sacred One

Xu Lan smiled. She did not drop her professional demeanor, since the two of them were surrounded by their own staff members. Moreover, they were both in public. "I finally see the reason why during each First Kill announcement, Lone Desert Smoke would put up an advert for Silky Soft Holdings. Even the name of your battle team is Silky Soft Battle Team. You're the C.E.O of Silky Soft Holdings!"

"You flatter me too much. I'm but a sheep in wolf's skin. Who would have thought that it was a good idea to make me a C.E.O?" Zhang Yang laughed. "Speaking of which, who would have thought that we were allies in the game, and business partners in the real world!"

"It must be fate. I hope that Mr. Zhang would show a little leniency! You have already hoarded so much in the game!" Xu Lan grinned happily. Zhang Yang had always admired Xu Lan, or rather, Snow Seeker because of her mature methods of handling any kind of situation. There was something attractive about it.

Luckily, Zhang Yang had been through much worse. Over the past few months, Zhang Yang had always been played, teased, and been through the temptation of the devil himself, as he stayed over at Han Ying Xue's house. That woman would always find some method to sexually trigger the poor man. Case and point, Han Ying Xue had always worn thinly-layered clothing that would reveal her voluptuous curves. That, and the six, super-hot and sexy secretaries in his office who would always try their best to bring their "A game" for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had been through so much that it was even possible for him to walk through the valley of shadow and death, and he would fear no temptation from anyone! A simple skip of his heart would suffice to satisfy his lust, which would only calm down after that one beat.

"That's a manner of etiquette. Business is business, private is private. What I do in my own free time is a whole other matter. Still, I'm just a man wearing the title. Silky Soft Holdings is not mine to throw about. But, if I did have my own company, I wouldn't mind giving you the company

itself!"

"You sneaky fox!" Xu Lan snickered shyly.

Everyone in the company was shocked to see how the timid little woman had become so friendly with another in their own ground! It seemed like Xu Lan had never been seen behaving in such a manner, that everyone had thought her to be the typical workaholic.

The business meeting went off smoothly since there were two higher ranking officers on the table who were allied guild masters in a highly regarded game. Even though there were slight conflicts in the agenda, both sides had come to an agreement easily, without the need of slamming the table top, or flipping it.

Zhang Yang was completely oblivious of the content of the minutes of the meeting. Out of habit, Zhang Yang had invited Xu Lan for a one-day fun trip in Jing Tian City. Since she had already come over, and that the meeting was already over, might as well spend the rest of the day leisurely. Even though they had plenty of opportunities of adventuring in the game, the experience of walking in town with someone was a whole different experience.

The three other secretaries who had accompanied him had not left his side. They had joined the fray and had made the entire situation rather awkward. Xu Lan had been throwing weird glares at Zhang Yang.

The meeting agenda was unsurprisingly dragged out longer than planned. From three days, it was extended to 6 days! However, the discussion was fruitful and had ended with a final decision that led to them collaborating together to produce a new line of products. At the end of the meeting, after discussing and arguing for 6 days, both companies had finally reached a final agreement, and left, satisfied with each other. The fruitful meeting had ended with a decision to have a celebration at a hotel where Zhang Yang was forced to drink to a point where he was taken into uncharted waters in terms of drunkenness. In the morning, with a throbbing skull, Zhang Yang found himself buried under a pile of half-naked women.

Luckily, after crawling out of the steaming heap of womanly flesh, Zhang Yang had checked out Zhang Yang, Jr. and was delighted to see that he had not been inside any woman! Or rather, no one had taken a chance to taste junior!

After hanging out for a few days with Xu Lan, Zhang Yang had gotten a clearer understanding of what kind of person Snow Seeker was. The beautiful dame was still, surprisingly without a partner. It was not that she was asexual or something like that. Contrary to popular belief, Xu Lan had a love interest back when she was still in university. She had made a move and even got to discuss marriage. However, right after graduation, the boyfriend was involved in a freak car accident which took his life. If there was anything odd about Xu Lan, it was her extreme loyalty. After the accident, she had never searched for a new life partner which had ended up with her placing all her attention on work.

Normally, she did not have the tendency of going out or hanging out with what normal girls of her age would. Inversely, she had gotten hooked up in online gaming, which had also poisoned most of the top-rated product models into playing the game as well. As such, Xu Lan was rather proud of her doing. From what she heard from her peers, the life of a model in the entertainment world was extremely unfair. If they wished to be on the news, they would have to make a deal with the photographers, with their own bodies. If they wished to have a good position in the company, they would have to 'deal' with the company's top brass. Compared to that sort of life, all the models had to do to get to Xu Lan's good side was to behave nicely, and perform admirably in the game!

Zhang Yang understood why there were so many rotten female players in the guild. They had been involved in the entertainment circle for a while, and were well-versed in the ropes! Even their speech patterns...

All in all, the meeting was adjourned and brought to an end. Everyone bid each other farewell, and Zhang Yang returned to his own headquarters. Back at Silky Soft Holdings main branch, it was another round of celebration with Han Yang Xue, Wei Yan Er. Even Li Ru was there. Li Ru had taken some courage from a few cans of beer and had

made a move on Zhang Yang. Han Ying Xue was there to interfere with her, fortunately. Han Ying Xue had "foiled" Li Ru's plans of "attacking" Zhang Yang when he was in the bathroom.

On one end, Zhang Yang was quite pleased with how Silky Soft Holdings had turned up to be. Even though Liu Wei was taking a lot of heat, he had not taken much damage. There was still the Liu's family "mothership", backing up his ventures. For the past 2 months, as 'God's Miracle' progressed, the Lius had pushed their business module in the game.

Judging on how much has Zhang Yang amassed, he was still far from where Liu Wei was standing. Although he may earn much more than he could in the game, there were still things that could not be settled with money. It had to be either power and position. As much as he could admit it, Silky Soft Holdings had become his stronghold, allowing him to interact with the business world and engage in monetary battle with Liu Wei.

Zhang Yang went back to his usual lifestyle and started to madly grind. As swiftly as he could, he had successfully become the first player in China to reach Level 90.

"Zhan Yu, I have to say. Among all the warriors under the stars in the sky, you sure have grown fast!" said Warrior Instructor Ani. As usual, her attractive body had permanently drawn in many perverted men.

"Sigh..." Ani sighed sadly. "Looks like I can no longer instruct you! You have grown so strong, that I have nothing left to teach you!"

After paying 200 gold coins, Zhang Yang had picked up a Level 90 Warrior class skill, which was also the last skill available from Ani.

[Last Vigor]: Increase your HP limit by 30% and heals 30% of your maximum HP. Extended HP limit will last for 15 seconds.

Cool Down Time: 5 Minutes.

For a tank, this skill worked as the name suggested. A final push, to determine the outcome of the match. Be it a boss fight, or a PvP battle, it would serve as a lifesaver. The Mythical Turtle had also reached Level 90. The HP of the pet, after receiving the Vitality Aura would push the turtle's

HP to 65,790! With the both of them combined, the HP limit would reach 144,460! It did not stop there, with the activation of the skill {Last Vigor}, the HP limit would be boosted up to 187,790! Besides that, there was a healing effect of 56,337! It was a powerful lifesaving skill!

Like Warriors, other classes would stop learning new skills after Level 90. Adversely, after the Level 100 threshold, players could only get new skills through skill books.

Moreover, Zhang Yang had reached Level 90! He could finally finish the quest in search of the last Dimensional Key Fragment!

With a long sigh of relief, Zhang Yang stretched his body and summoned the bear. Brimming with great excitement to finally finish the quest, Zhang Yang rode to the only Level 90 map in the region of China, the Ten Barren Seas. Although it was the only Level 90 map in the entire region, it was much bigger and wider than all three Level 80 maps combined together. As the name suggested, Ten Barren Sea's was an ocean. The entire map region was considered to be mostly ocean waters, with plenty of islands scattered all over the ocean. The islands themselves were huge; as vast as a Level 60 maps! It's safe to say that the entire map was like the stars in the night sky; an endless sea, with countless big islands. Among all the islands in this biome was an extremely small piece of land which housed a gateway to the Chaos Realms, only usable for players who have reached Level 100.

The person Zhang Yang was supposed to look for, was called Madran. In the quest log, it was mentioned that the NPC was living in the Ten Barren Sea's, Island of the Sacred One. Again, the most annoying part was the fact that the quest description never revealed the NPC's location. As such, Zhang Yang hoped that the island in which the NPC resided in would be smaller than the usual big*ss ones. If not, god knows how long it would take him to find that one NPC!

Zhang Yang rode through the darkness in the Grand Canyon of Eternal Night and ventured towards the Ten Barren Sea. As he slowly left the canyon, the dark, gloomy clouds had started to scatter wider, away from each other. Rays of light seeped through the clouds and onto Zhang

Yang's skin. Zhang Yang felt a new warmth like never before, as if he had just transcended into a new realm.

The map changed drastically. From the hard, lifeless dirt on the ground, to soft sandy beaches that sunk beneath the paws of the bear. One vast sunny beach appeared in his sight. Everything about it screamed about summer! The blue emerald water of the sea, gushing onto the golden sands of the beach. The big looping waves that rolled themselves up like blankets! Sun, sand, sea!

Zhang Yang felt like he could just sit back on a recliner and enjoy a sip of red wine by the seaside, as if he was on a holiday. That was, not accounting for the huge lobster monsters walking around the beach.

Zhang Yang walked closer to the sandy ground and tried to find someone to ask for the exact location of the Island of the Sacred One. Within a few kilometers, he found a small fisherman's village, with more than 10 houses around. The number of people around this small village was scarce, but enough to set sail on the seas.

Zhang Yang rode to the edge of the village and approached a middle-aged man who was smoking a pipe. "Excuse me, sir, I'd like to ask about the whereabouts of the island called Island of the Sacred One.

"Ho ho. Now aren't you a religious lad?" the man put down the pipe and turned to Zhang Yang.

Religious?

Zhang Yang smiled and continued, "No sir, I'm just a messenger, seeking a man named Madran..."

"STOP RIGHT THERE!" the man yelled abruptly. He quickly turned sideways rapidly to search for something that would suddenly jump out and kill him.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Yang was genuinely surprised at the man's reaction.

"Are yer daft? If those god-loving-good-for-nothing-fanatics heard you speak of the Sacred One's name directly like that, they would hang yer

head off like a tuna!" the middle-aged man warned.

Madran? The Sacred One?

Zhang Yang laughed in his mind. It was Eins Brook all over again!

Zhang Yang asked again, "Sir, could you tell me more about Ma---I mean, the Sacred One?"

"Hm...Let's see. I think it's best for yer to know about the situation eh." The man drew in a deep puff smoke and blew it into the air above him. "I'd say, about 17 years ago, the Sacred One brought 12 disciples and had spread his religion throughout the land. He claimed to be the son of the God Zolanor, which had descended onto these plains to be messiah. After several years, almost half of the population of Ten Barren Sea had turned to him to seek for his teachings. Every year, at this time, there will be a huge number of people visiting the Island of the Sacred One."

"I see. No wonder you thought I was one of Madran's followers!"

"Right on. Lower your voice!"

Zhang Yang nodded and looked towards the endless horizon of the sea. "How do I get to the island?"

"Everyday in the afternoon, there will be ships docking in the harbor by the sea. That ship will transport you to the Island of the Sacred One. If you wish to head there, just wait for a little while. A ship will be arriving soon!" as the man finished his sentence, he returned to his pipe, filling more tobacco in it, and spoke no more.

Zhang Yang did not bother to bid farewell to the NPC, and headed straight towards the harbor. There was nothing to do there, besides waiting. Thus, Zhang Yang had summoned the Mythical Turtle and dived into the waters to farm for some [Devil's Algae].

The moment the Mythical Turtle was summoned out, it had jumped into the waters and started to chase after the fishes around, before Zhang Yang could even get the chance to ride it. Half an hour later, Zhang Yang had already picked more than 20 counts of [Devil's Algae]. The mastery of Herbalism, which had been stagnant for quite some time was finally

growing towards the level of Master.

Fwosh!

From where Zhang Yang was, he could hear the sound of water crashing. He looked up and saw a huge turtle-shaped like boat sprinting on the surface of the water at the speed of a torpedo! Within a few moments, the boat slowed down and docked at the harbor.

Zhang Yang stopped his actions and carefully observed the boat. There were more than 10 elite guards with weapons, stationed at the head of the ship, as well as the rear end. They were all Level 92, and were guarding a few weirdly dressed humans in the middle of the ship, with name tags saying "Loyal Followers".

Zhang Yang immediately shot up to the surface and swam back to land, and onto the boat.

The elite guards did not even glance at Zhang Yang and allowed him to walk past them, and onto the ship. On the other hand, it was the followers on the ship who had greeted Zhang Yang by cheering, "Hail the Sacred One!"

Zhang Yang had said nothing else but replied the exact same words.

The ship docked for just a few moments before it started to take off. Instead of heading directly to the Island of the Sacred One, the ship traveled along the land and circled around the coastline. After it had picked close to a hundred more followers, the ship finally left the shore and headed into the deep sea.

Zhang Yang was greatly impressed at the speed of which the ship traveled on water. If Zhang Yang had right, the ship would be at the same speed as a flying mount! After only half an hour of traveling on waters, the ship started approaching an island. At first, Zhang Yang did not know that the island was the Island of the Sacred One, until all the followers on the ship started to stare at it, as if they were finally returning home after 10 years of separation.

Just as they were about to reach the coast, something happened.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Waters around the ship had exploded as if someone had detonated a bomb. The explosion of water was not an attack, but the surfacing of a three-story-tall lobster monsters! Close to 10 of them surrounded the ship. Riding on top of the lobster monster were Naga warriors. They had human bodies but a snake's lower half, with a menacing look on their face that clearly spelled hostility.

They were all Level 92 elite monsters, except for the one that was blocking the huge ship upfront. The Naga that was riding the lobster monster was a Yellow-God tier Naga.

[Ankhdorea] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 93

HP: 1,860,000

Defense: 1,700

One of the elite guards on the ship had immediately rushed to the front and had pointed his sword at the Naga and had screamed from the top of his lungs. "Curse you, seamen! The Island of the Sacred One is just right ahead, you dare to show your blasphemous faces here!?"

"Hahaha!" Ankhdorea laughed. His voice gargled as if there was still water in his mouth. "You, humans of the land, we Naga thrive where there is water! If not for Island of the Sacred One being there, I would be glad to deliver damnation to where hope is just around the corner!"

"Seamen! If the Sacred One finds out about your attack on his beloved followers, the wrath of his holiness shall befall on you! Heed my words, wretched ones. For the wrath of the Sacred One shall be the end of you seamen!" said the guard with confidence.

"Piss off! Do not mention the Sacred One. He is nothing but a slaughterer who has killed many of my brethren. Now, we will return the favor! A bloodbath is what he delivered to us, and a bloodbath is what we shall return to him! All you people here best pray that Madran will tame his raging heart!" Ankhdorea brandished his trident and bellowed, "Kill

them! Spare not one!"

It did not take long for the Nagas and their lobster monsters to capsize the ship and kill everyone. Be it the followers or the elite guards, all of them were screaming helplessly as they drowned in the water.

The Naga initiated the bloodbath quickly and efficiently. They were indeed stronger at sea, as they killed the people with such speed and agility. As easily as a human could move on dry land, the Naga had done the same with the humans in the water. In an instant, the emerald water of the sea was dyed crimson red.

Right after the ship was overturned, Zhang Yang was dragged away by the raging waves and was sent violently to a nearby land. Zhang Yang had no chance to swim, the water current was just too strong.

The Naga had appeared with a flash and had disappeared in the same manner. With Ankhdoria leading the party, the Naga had ridden their lobster mounts and descended into the water.

After the ordeal, Zhang Yang went back to where the ship was sunk and received a system notification.

‘Ding! You have survived a mass slaughter. Perhaps you should report this unfortunate turn of events to someone!’

‘Ding! You have received a quest: The Lone Survivor. Will you accept it?’

Chapter 417: Kill Cynapor

[The Lone Survivor] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: As the lone survivor of the eerie massacre, you feel a sense of guilt, and the obligation to report the incident to a higher authority. Hurry over to the Island of the Sacred One and bring this matter to the Public Safety Officer Julio. Inform him of the incident and allow him to make preparations to prevent any deadly attacks of the Naga.

Progress: Inform Julio 0/1

Zhang Yang controlled the Mythical Turtle and turned around, and shot towards the Island. Although the turtle did not have an engine powering it, it was still as fast as the ship itself, before it was sunk. Splitting the waves as he sped through the water surface, Zhang Yang had arrived land in just 5 minutes. Once Zhang Yang stepped on land, like a bullet train arriving at the station, the turtle suddenly moved ever so slowly that Zhang Yang had jumped down and started to walk on his own two feet. Zhang Yang immediately swapped the turtle for the bear and rode towards the designated direction.

The rainforest on the island was thick and flourishing. The place was like Eden; especially when there were occasional deers, wild rabbits, and other fauna running around happily, around the skyscraping trees. After the thick forest, the presence of humans started to get heavier. From where Zhang Yang stood, he could see that there were many people looking at the same general direction. There were many kinds of expressions on their faces when he arrived. Some were crying, some were happily smiling, and some were so grateful with tears pouring out of their eyes, they were bowing down on all fours.

Zhang Yang proceeded to investigate the location of Julio, and once he had obtained reliable information, he arrived at a small station, situated at the side of a small hill. There were elite tiered guards everywhere in the station. Some were patrolling around, while the others were standing guard. At the center of the entire group of guards, was a taller man with a

well-built physique. Beneath the huge, heavy armor, the man looked like he could kill a bear with a single punch.

[Public Safety Officer, Julio] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 1,900,000

Defense: 1,700

Zhang Yang rode his way towards the officer and stopped a few meters away from him. He saluted the man before reporting the entire incident. "General Julio. I have grave news for you!"

The stoic and calm expression on Julio was immediately replaced with rage and madness when he heard Zhang Yang's story.

"I knew the Naga were nothing but warmongers! But this time, they have gone too far! They had slaughtered the loyal followers of the Sacred One! This is an open act of blasphemy! Adventurer! I do not care who you are or where you came from. But since you had obeyed the summons from the Sacred One, you have to follow my orders! I hereby command you to go to the Naga's lair, located at the Ruins of Apolli and kill their leader, Cynapor!"

'Ding! The Public Safety Officer, Julio has a quest for you: Kill Cynapor. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang frown disgruntledly and said, "Sir, I am but alone. You wish to have me to make my way to the enemy's lair and kill their leader alone?"

"Excellent. You seem to have a perfect hearing!" Julio nodded his head.

Perfect hearing?! You won't need to have a perfect hearing when you hear me screaming in your ears!

Zhang Yang was so angry that he could just jump on him and take his head instead! With great effort, Zhang Yang calmed down and proceeded on with the quest. At least there should be a reward which would make it worth his while.

[Kill Cynapor] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: The Public Safety Officer Julio has commanded you to invade the Naga's lair and kill their leader, Cynapor. You must bring his head back as proof. The wretched Nagas lair is situated at the Ruins of Apolli, 500km west of the Island of the Sacred One, under the sea.

Progress: Severed Head of Cynapor 0/1

Quest Reward: Julio's Appraisal.

[Julio's Appraisal] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +120

Use: Increases 50 points - all attributes. Last for 30 seconds.

Cool Down Time: 5 Minutes.

Level Requirement: 90

Zhang Yang slowly read through the quest description and closed the quest window with a sulky face. What a f*cked up quest...

Although Zhang Yang had never seen or heard of Cynapor, he knew that when even his subordinate was already a Yellow-Gold tier, would not Cynapor himself be someone of a higher tier? It had to be a Violet-Platinum boss, at least! Furthermore, being the leader of the Naga race, Cynapor would definitely be heavily guarded by all the elite forces of his races! To kill the leader, he would have to go through countless of obstacles and strong bosses! It would be a waste of time! Such a troublesome quest should only be rewarded with a Violet-Platinum! Not some cheap Gray-Silver piece of crap! Who would be willing to do it?!

If not for the Dimensional Key Fragment, Zhang Yang would not have even care about the douchebag. But having gone so far, it was simply something he had to do for the fragment!

After thinking about it for some time, Zhang Yang finally decided to put this quest on the sidelines. Since each player could receive as many as 100 quests at the same time, Zhang Yang was better off trying to complete a few better ones around the island before attempting the troublesome one.

Zhang Yang had ventured through the entire island and found many different types of the most down to earth kinds of quests. There were extermination quests, collection quests, guarding quests, and much more similar kinds. In his ventures, he had found that he was unable to enter the palace, like building centered on the island. There was some kind of magical seal protecting it, that even {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void} could not penetrate the shield. Alas, Zhang Yang had no choice but to take on the stupid quest and kill what's-his-face.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and stomped the ground like a pampered kid. He then rode the bear and came to the west side of the island. There, he switched to the Mythical Turtle and sped through the water, towards the west. Since the Mythical Turtle granted underwater breathing, Zhang Yang had taken the opportunity to harvest some [Devil's Algae]. Back on the island, Zhang Yang had taken a quest that required him to farm some materials. Zhang Yang swam close to the monsters that were guarding the herbs and killed them for their drops. The ingredients gathered could be traded to the cooks in the islands and they would whip up something for Zhang Yang to eat.

After swimming for 2 hours or so, Zhang Yang found the place where he had intended to be. It was an old, underwater castle, which was surrounded in ruins. The castle was obviously created by humans at a glance, since there were many statues that were made to look like regular humans. There were statues of Warriors, Hunters, and even Spellcasters.

Perhaps, this castle had once belonged to an actual island. Perhaps, a war had erupted at some point in the past, that had caused the entire island to be destroyed and lost in the deep sea.

Outside the castle were many Nagas patrolling. The males were holding spears, while the females were carrying bows and arrows. None of them looked friendly to begin with. They were all Level 94 elite tiered monsters, with HP bars reaching as high as 94,000. There was no other way to enter the castle, other than the front door which was heavily guarded. Looks like Zhang Yang would have to dye the water red in order to breach the door.

Zhang Yang swam close to the nearest male Naga and threw a {Spear of

Obliteration} the moment he was 30 meters away from him.

‘-4,423!’

"Sssss! Filthy human!" cried the warrior Naga. With a quick swing of its tail, the Naga rose from the ocean floor and swam like a torpedo towards Zhang Yang.

‘-7,902!’

‘-9,613!’

The devastating attack was purely from the Mythical Turtle. The attack was one normal attack and one {Tear}.

After reaching Level 90, Zhang Yang merely gained a new skill and some skill points to use. Since there were no changes in terms of equipment, Zhang Yang had not gained any improvements to his HP limit or his attack power. On the other hand, the battle mount was different. It would receive an upgrade with every 10 levels gained!

At Level 89, the Mythical Turtle’s average attack power was only 7,579. After reaching Level 90, the average attack power of the Mythical Turtle had reached 8,428! An 11% gain in attack power!

"It’s futile to fight us! The water is our realm! You’re powerless here!" cried the warrior as he thrust his spear to attack Zhang Yang. It was true that the Naga thrived in water. They were moving beyond the speeds of a human on land. It was a pity that, as they were fighting Zhang Yang, be it on land or water, an elite tier monster would only be treated as a normal tier. Together with the Mythical Turtle, Zhang Yang had practically butchered the poor Naga.

Zhang Yang had ended the battle quickly and proceeded to loot the battle drops. He picked up a clamshell and when he opened it, there was only meat, but no pearl. Though it was unfortunate, Zhang Yang felt nothing about it and continued to kill his way towards the royal palace.

After some time, Wei Yan Er, Fatty Han and the rest of the team had entered the Level 90 map. Every one of them cried out to join him in his fights. Zhang Yang had no choice but to allow them. He had asked them

to visit the guild storage and bring along Underwater Potions. When everyone had made their preparations, Zhang Yang had used the [Party Summon Order] to teleport them to his side.

Since Zhang Yang had only procured one [Mermaid's Lung] which was forcefully taken away by Wei Yan Er, the rest of the team had to use the [Underwater Breathing Potion] to breathe underwater. Since Zhang Yang had the skill Alchemist's Intuition, some of his potions were Transmuted, granting a bonus ranging from a 10% to a 100% increase in swimming speed. The little brat, even though she was already wearing the [Mermaid's Lung], she had still consumed a [Grade 10 Transmuted Underwater Breathing Potion] to increase her swimming speed to 100%. However, even with the speed buff on them, Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's battle mounts' were still faster. Everyone was envious, yet they enjoyed their time underwater.

Zhang Yang tried sharing the quest to everyone and succeeded. However, every one of them immediately complained about the quest when they saw the reward.

The 10-men party was gathered and had punctured through the barricade of Naga like a nail and hammer, and entered the palace's compound.

At first glance, the first area they had entered was supposed to be a garden. Now, instead of flowers, many types of seaweeds were thriving in the area. There were many different kinds of small fishes swimming around freely. Tempted, the turtle turned its head left and right as it saw the fishes swimming past it. Finally, after it could take it anymore, the turtle turned its head up to Zhang Yang, trying to ask for a brief moment for it to have a feeding frenzy.

Zhang Yang sighed and patted the turtle's head, saying, "Let's finish things up here first. I'll let you have your feast after!"

The Mythical Turtle lowered its head sadly and proceeded to swim forward.

With the entire elite team with him, Zhang Yang easily cleared the

monsters in the garden area and had stumbled upon the first boss without a hitch.

[Group Captain Jue Was] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 92

HP: 1,840,000

Defense: 1,700

Once they had taken a good look at the boss' HP, the party snickered. Lost Dream said, "Man! The bosses these days sure are easy as pie! Come on! Not even 2 million there! We could kill it in two to three hits!"

"Yeah, easy for you to say. Without a tank, let's see you manage that!" said Endless Starlight. He hated pompous brats and have never found peace with Lost Dream.

Lost Dream scoffed lightly and replied disgruntledly. "Give me 10 well-equipped Thieves, and we could take turns to use {Blur} and {Vanish} to erase aggro, I'm sure we could defeat the boss easily!"

Chapter 418: The King of Naga

Since the boss fight had not yet started, the party was paying attention to Lost Dream's and Endless Starlight's petty squabble. They shrugged helplessly, in pity for the two childish men!

Zhang Yang ignored the two of them and proceeded on with the boss. "It's just a Yellow-Gold tier. Just kill and be done with it."

"Understood."

Everyone nodded in unison. If the boss was a Yellow-Gold boss in a dungeon instead, the party would have been a little more cautious. After all, dungeon bosses were defeated with skill. No amount of high tiered equipment would save you from being a dumb meathead. But an open-world boss was different, their difficulties were just based on their tiers, it's true that they may have skills which required skills to defeat, but when the team is strong as f*ck, there's nothing to it anymore.

"Tch! It's the despicable subordinates of Madran!" Joe Was clicked his tongue and brandished a long metal pole. With quick movement underwater, the first person Joe targeted was Zhang Yang.

"I shall be honored to send you to meet your god!"

Foom! CLING!

The metal pole was swung at incredible speed, but was immediately blocked by Zhang Yang's equally fast shield block. However, since there was no ground to stop the sheer momentum of the spear, both Joe and Zhang Yang was sent backward. However, the Mythical Turtle had immediately paddled its flaps and forcefully stopped its movements to charge back at the boss. Joe Was, being a Naga of the sea, was able to stop himself from being pushed too far. With a quick swing of his massive tail, Joe shot back towards Zhang Yang and prepared himself for another godly smash.

"He looks so proud wielding the pole. Does he think himself as the monkey god Sun Wu Kong?" said Wei Yan Er as she swam towards the

boss. Without waiting for an answer, Wei Yan Er swam close to the effective range and activated {Charge}, and started to swing her own axe at the boss.

Unlike Wei Yan Er who was a melee type attacker, the ranged attackers had no need to swim around. They could start attacking, as long as they were 30 meters away from the boss. Fatty Han laughed and said, "Sun Wu Kong huh? Now that you mention it, did you know that when he trashed the entire heaven palace, he was all-powerful, and was able to destroy most of it? But when he was sent to retrieve the scroll in a journey to the west, he was unable to defeat most of the demons and had to ask for help?"

Lost Dream laughed and said, "That's simple! During his ruckus at the heavenly palace, all the gods and goddesses were nothing but regular officers. If the palace was destroyed, so be it, they only needed to wave their hands to rebuild the entire thing! It's not like it would work them up to a wreck. On the other hand, during the journey to the west, the home of the demons that Wu Kong had fought were built by the demon's own blood, sweat, and tears! It's only natural that the demons would fight for their lives! Imagine someone knocking down your door and trashing your place, I'm sure you'll squash them and make apple juice from their skulls!"

"Hey! Wankers! Are you nothing but regular officers yourselves? You think the boss would be defeated with just a wave of your hands?" Zhang Yang scolded whilst attacking at the same time.

Everyone else laughed while Lost Dream and Fatty Han quietly lowered their heads, feeling guilty.

Still, under the massive power of the entire party, the Yellow-Gold boss' 2 million HP was nothing to be feared. With nothing but the wail of the boss, Zhang Yang rushed to deliver the last killing blow.

Just before the sword was about to drop on Joe Was' head. A loud deafening voice echoed through the water.

"HOLD!"

It was then, that the voice had spread through and enveloped the party

member with a large air bubble, rendering them immobile to a certain extent. No matter how much they moved or struggled, the air bubble was not like the usual soap bubble that would pop at a single touch. The bubbles encasing the party were too strong to be real.

"It must be a change in the plot!" Zhang Yang explained. From the moment he received the quest from the bloody Julio dude, he felt that the quest was just something to mess with gullible players. Compared to the other players in the team, these kind of sudden changes in the quest development were no surprise to him.

Out of nowhere, a male Naga with a slightly larger character size rushed over. Besides the skin color and the body build of the Naga, he wore a large golden crown. He was also riding a large shark mount and had a large trident in his hand.

[Cynapor, The King of Naga] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

"Lord Cynapor, these humans are Madran's lackeys! We should hurry up and kill them!" cried Joe Was, like a bullied child.

"Joe Was. You're too quick to judge them. They are not the underlings of Madran!" said Cynapor. He glanced through the party members and locked onto Zhang Yang's Mythical Turtle. "I know that turtle. It once belonged to Gethelo the Merman, yet it now falls in the hand of that human male. I could tell that he and Gethelo have some sort of connection! He would never be the underling of Madran!"

"But, my lord---"

"Silence." Cynapor gave a quick glare to Joe Was.

The King then swam towards Zhang Yang and had a good look at him.

"Young warrior. Would you listen to my plea before you act?" said Cynapor politely.

Cynapor waved his hands and the air bubbles encasing Zhang Yang and his party disappeared.

‘Ding! You can select one of the following choices. 1, Ignore Cynapor’s plea and kill Joe Was. You will now openly engage an all-out war with the Naga. 2, Spare Joe Was’s life and listen to Cynapor. Option 1 will reward you with a Relationship points with a certain individual on the Island of the Sacred One. Option 2 will cause you to be marked as an enemy to everyone on the Island of the Sacred One.’

Both options were like double-edged swords!

Zhang Yang remained quiet and thought of the options available. Even though option 1 was rather fair and tempting, since Joe Was was only one sword stroke away from death, Cynapor had come alone and was easy to defeat now that Zhang Yang had a full team with him. However, Zhang Yang was standing in front of the royal palace of the Naga! Who knew, Cynapor might just call out for help and the entire army of Naga will swarm to his aid! At least, the previous boss that had sunk the ship, Ankhdoria was not here. Still, Cynapor is the King of Naga! He should have more than a couple of Yellow-Gold underlings!

From another point of view, option 2’s Relationship with a certain individual was too vague, to begin with! It could anyone! It could be the cook, the fisherman, the ship captain, the harbormaster, or even perhaps the wanker with the name Julio! After all, Zhang Yang’s ultimate goal was to obtain the last fragment by killing Madran! What would Zhang Yang gain by getting any Relationship with Madran?

In the end, Zhang Yang finally settled with a decision. "Option 2!"

Everyone in the party followed Zhang Yang without any objection.

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword to display his cooperation and said, "Naga King, I think...a discussion is way overdue!"

"Hmph! I only have to discuss crushing your head!" said Joe Was.

Cynapor laughed and turned his back. "Please follow me to the royal palace!"

With Cynapor leading the way, the other warriors that were patrolling the palace had formed a line to welcome the king and his guests. Cynapor had led the party inside one of the buildings still stood. Inside, Zhang Yang had noticed that there were no one inside the building. Unlike how human's behaved and ruled, a royal palace like this should have many maids and servants stationed inside the palace to serve their king. Besides the guards outside the palace, the building was completely empty.

"Please sit." said the King as he sat down on the throne.

Everyone was troubled. How do they sit in water? Everyone was literally in a hovering status. Sitting down would not make any difference. However, since the king had decreed it, it would be best to sit down on the chairs provided, or it would be unpolite not to do so.

"Adventurers, why are you here?" asked Cynapor.

"Because you called us here?" was what Zhang Yang wanted to say but if he did, it would be massively disrespectful to the king. Instead, Zhang Yang explained the events chronologically. "I am an adventurer who was headed to the Island of the Sacred One. In the middle of the journey to the island, the ship that was ferrying the followers of Madran was attacked by your kind. Everyone died, and I was the sole survivor. I then reported it to a person named Julio, on the island. He had, in turn, sent me here to have your head."

The crowd went silent. Besides the sound of the ocean waters, there was no one making noise until Joe Was opened his mouth. "I know that person. Julio. He is a greedy and sneaky bastard! If he is not hiding on the island, I would have sliced his head off!"

Cynapor nodded and asked Zhang Yang. "Adventurer, I believe that there is a misunderstanding here. You might have come to believe that the Naga are attacking your brethren. However, I feel obligated to inform you of the truth. Madran is an evil man. He plans to revive an ancient Demonic Statue. If he succeeds, it would spell doom for the entire world!"

"Demonic Statue?"

"You heard right. There was a legend that spoke of the War Demonic

Statue. It was one of the demon artifacts from the war of the gods. It contained unimaginable power! I have no idea where did Madran acquire the artifact. But I do know this. He had also obtained the means of reviving the statue! The reason behind why he had amassed so many followers is to select the most suitable person and offer them up as a sacrifice to the Demonic Statue. That is his plan. To trade human life, for the power of the Demonic Statue!"

Zhang Yang nodded. He understood what was happening with the quest storyline. "That is why you had sent out your soldiers to attack the ship that was ferrying the followers. It was to prevent Madran from "collecting" enough "sacrifices"?"

"You are correct, earth dweller. However, we do not know accurately, which of them was the real sacrifice. That is why we killed them all."

Zhang Yang had no feelings for the people who had died in the capsized ship. Nothing. Yet, he felt that as a human, he should be. Especially when Cynapor had confessed that he had commanded the kill for those people. The tone that he used was as if they had killed nothing but rodents in the drain. Since they (humans) were not their kin, their death meant nothing to the Naga.

Luckily, it was all but a game's storyline. If he had listened to his words in real life, Zhang Yang would have sprung into action and beat the living hell out of them.

Cynapor had not noticed the change in Zhang Yang glare, and continued to speak his mind about Madran. "In the end, destroying the ship was nothing but to slow Madran down. Eventually, the man will get what he wants. Unless we are able to completely rid him of this world, he will prevail. When that day comes, it is not only us, the Naga, who will perish, but the entire world, including you, humans shall be thrown into the flames of hell."

Cynapor made a sad expression and sighed heavily. "What is wrong with you humans! Why is it that you can kill one of your own so easily? Such a thing would never happen to the Naga!"

"That, my lord, is why I said, the humans are the lowest of all races!" Joe Was spits his saliva which was dissolved immediately in the water. Besides Zhang Yang, the rest of the party members were ready to leap on him at any moment.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily in response to Cynapor. He had no interest in arguing about the virtue among the humans. "Naga King, is that what you wish for? The death of Madran? Will that truly solve all problems?"

Cynapor nodded his head without a trace of hesitation. "Madran, and his 12 Disciples! When that deed is done, the secrets of reviving the Demonic Statue will be forever lost!"

'Ding! You have received a choice. Give up the quest: Kill Cynapor, and accept a new quest: To Bury the Secret. Will you proceed with the change?'

Zhang Yang glanced at his team, and they all nodded in unison. Zhang Yang nodded back to acknowledge, and accepted the quest. It was pretty obvious why he would do so. The main reason was the quest only had a stupid reward in the first place. Secondly, Zhang Yang wanted to kill the NPC and that way, he could easily obtain the last piece of the Dimensional Key!

[To Bury the Secret] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Madran has been secretly preparing the revival of the Demonic Statue. Once he succeeds, the entire realm will be blanketed in a dark shadow! Warrior, you have to kill Madran and his 12 Disciples to prevent this catastrophe! Make haste, for Madran is one step to victory!

Progress: Kill Madram 0/1 12 Disciples 0/12

Cynapor was extremely happy. He nodded when he saw the glint of determination in Zhang Yang's eye.

"Madran and his 12 Disciples are always hiding in the magic seal that is protecting the palace in the center of the island. I can tell you this with great confidence. If you want to destroy the magic seal right now, it would take a lot of effort and sacrifice to do so. However, now that you are here, I'd say, there's a good chance of things being much simpler!"

In truth, right after accepting the quest to kill Madran, Zhang Yang was having a massive headache, thinking of a way to penetrate the shield.

Chapter 419: Breaking the Cages

Zhang Yang replied immediately, "Naga King. I assume that you have a brilliant idea?"

Cynapor laughed. "Brilliant? Wrong there. I'd called it the last measure. That idiot Julio is our answer. Didn't he want my head? Then, a head he shall get. I'd bet the Trident of Poseidon that he would take the head to meet Madran! When he does, I want you to follow him! That is how you can sneak past the magic seal."

Joe Was suddenly grew anxious. There was a glint of panic in his eyes. "My king, you are our king! The King of Naga! Without your leadership, we would be nothing but wandering soldiers!"

Cynapor sighed and smacked Joe Was lightly at the back of his head. "You fool. Do you think that I would take my own head off for the death of a simple human? I never said that I would give him my head. I will use magic to create a head. The human warrior could take the fake one and trick the idiot Julio!"

"Phew! That freaked me out!" Joe Was calmed down.

"What's up with those naming...Joe Was?" Wei Yan Er cocked her head.

"It's just a name, get over it," said Zhang Yang.

Cynapor clapped his hands together. A faint light glowed around his hands, which grew larger and brighter in a green hue. The light formed a ball and flew a few centimeters away from him and started to form a human-sized ball. The ball kept on spinning and spinning as if it was a 3D printer. After two minutes of "printing", the light faded and revealed a head that was the exact copy of Cynapor's. There was even blood dripping from the severed neck! Complete with a dangling spine and blood vessels! Anyone who sees it would surely be struck with horror!

The move had surely taken a toll on Cynapor. Panting heavily, Cynapor lifted the head from the ground and handed it over to Zhang Yang. "The magic in his head will last only for 12 hours. I urge you to hurry. Fu..."

Zhang Yang accepted the head and immediately placed it in his inventory. "Thank you. We will set off for the Island of the Sacred One immediately."

The 10 of them headed out of the palace without saying anything else, and shot towards the island. Besides Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, the rest of the team had no water mounts and had to swim by their own efforts. Zhang Yang feared that by the time they reach the island, the "head" would only have only a few minutes left. That was unless they swam like Michael Phelps.

During the designing of this quest, the person had already factored in the possibility of a player not possessing any aquatic mount. That was why, the assigned magic duration was 12 hours.

"Take the time to train here, guys. I'll reach the island first, and I will summon you guys there with the order."

Everyone nodded and turned around to start killing underwater monsters.

The [Party Summon Order] only one hour of cool down time. Zhang Yang had taken close to 2 hours to travel from the island to the place in the beginning, which left him plenty of time to use the [Party Summon Order].

Since he was in a hurry, Zhang Yang had summoned the turtle and used all its strength to get him to the island as fast as possible. He had not even had the spare time to harvest the herbs! In return for his efforts, the turtle had only taken half an hour to reach the island. He quickly used the [Party Summon Order] and called the nine other members who were left behind.

"Let's go!"

Everyone summoned their mounts and galloped towards the location of Julio. With haste, the team had reached hillside, leaving a trail of dust behind them.

"Lord Julio. I have completed my mission!" Zhang Yang jumped down from his bear and handed the bloody head to him.

"Hmm?" Julio turned and check the head that he had just received. After a short duration of skepticism, the man smiled sinisterly and laughed manically. "This is it! This is wonderful! Magnificent! The bloody seaman is dead! With this head, Lord Madran will finally have an audience with me! I will be one of his trusted men!"

After laughing for a good minute, Julio stopped promptly when he realized that he was completely out of character. "Good job in completing the mission. Well done," said Julio, back in his usual stern voice.

Since the quest [Kill Cynapor] was deleted, the party had not received any rewards.

Just when Julio was about to turn away, Zhang Yang placed a hand on his shoulder and put up the best fake smile. "Lord Julio. We are loyal believers of the Sacred One. We wish to have an audience with the Lord himself. Would that be too much to ask?" Zhang Yang could physically throw up right away, if he ever heard himself saying that out loud.

"Imbecile! Do you think I do not know what are you up to?! You wish to take all the credit away from me!" Julio started to get all aggressive and raised his voice. "Scram! Begone!"

Wei Yan Er frowned angrily. With her finger tapping on the handle of her axe, she asked Zhang Yang, "Noobie tank, can I skill this douche now?"

"Hold your horse, sweetheart. Let him disable the magic seal first." Zhang Yang grabbed her shoulder and pulled her back. The party left, but not for long. They went into hiding in the bushes, near the station where Julio was. After a while, Julio was spotted leaving the station with a horse. Zhang Yang gave the signal to his team and tailed him until Julio reached the center of the island, where the palace was.

After a short gallop, Julio had arrived at a magic circle. He got down the horse rather sloppily and took out a piece of crystal. He walked to the magic barrier and pressed the crystal against the magical wall. The barrier wall absorbed the crystal and formed countless of bright lines which formed the hologram of a human head. "Why are you disturbing me, Julio!?"

"Lord Marvados!" Julio kneeled down and unwrap small cloth to reveal the head of Cynapor. "Your humble servant has killed the King of Naga, Cynapor and wishes to deliver his head to the lord!"

The hologram looked down on Julio and glared at the head. "You have done well Julio. You shall bring the head of Cynapor and come to me. The Sacred One will be pleased!"

Bzz...

The head hologram dispersed. The barrier that Julio was facing suddenly made a loud, thunderous crack. A tear in the barrier seal was seen opening up.

Pleased, Julio wrapped the head and walked into the barrier.

"This is it! Jump him!" Zhang Yang cried. All the party member kicked their mounts and dashed towards the crack in the barrier.

Hidden behind the opaque barrier was a huge circular magical altar, surrounded by many stone figure. Each of the statues was anomaly huge and were made to be positioned to look at other stone statues at the center of the circle.

Zhang Yang had immediately recognized one of the statues at the 1 o'clock direction. It had the same face as the man who had appeared as the hologram earlier on. If that was the case, these 13 stone statues would represent the 12 Disciples and Madran himself.

"You---!" Julio turned back and found that Zhang Yang had successfully breached the barrier. With rage in his eyes, Julio bellowed angrily. "I'll crush you! I'd do anything to prevent you from grabbing the right to meet Lord Madran!"

"...What a stuck up boss. I'd say, he might be as stuck up as the fatty!" said Han Ying Xue with a sinister grin.

"Yo...What did I do to you?" said Fatty Han with a sad, close-to-crying kind of expression. In his defense, Fatty Han felt that he was indeed a little more perverted than a regular man. But being a pervert had nothing to do with being an *sshole like Julio!

Julio puffed out angry steam from his nostrils and jumped down his horse. He unsheathed the sword from his waist and attacked Zhang Yang who was the closest to him.

"Little brat. You can now kill the man. Go wild!" Zhang Yang received the attack and grabbed onto the boss' aggro firmly.

From the moment she saw the NPC, she already had insatiable urge to beat the crap out of him. Now that she had received the green light from Zhang Yang, she yelled her battle cry and leaped into the battle axe-first.

The rest of the party did not stand to watch, and moved to their attack positions.

It did not take long for the party to kill a mere Yellow-Gold boss. In the end, they had killed the boss and obtained a Yellow-Gold and two Gray-Silver equipment from Julio.

[Sinister Ambush Chestplate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +302

Strength: +121

Dexterity: +274

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 90

Without the shine of a Violet-Platinum light, the best they got was a shiny gold luster. The four Leather Armor classed players rolled for the item which was won by Hundred Shot, rolling 87 points.

As for the Gray-Silvers, there was a silent agreement that it should be sent, packaged, and delivered to the Little Merchandise Shop. There were no Violet-Platinum drops, since the boss was nothing but a small minion. It was already fortunate of them to obtain some loot in the first place!

"There's a door there!" cried Daffodil Daydream. The young lady pointed at the direction of the statue at the 1 o'clock direction. Beneath the statue

was a secret passage, with a staircase that led down to the underground. It was probably opened for Julio.

"Hmm. Looks like the master is welcoming us directly. Well, might as well make ourselves at home!"

Everyone walked down the stairs and was greeted with nothing but darkness. With a quick thought, Zhang Yang had reactivated the equipment effect and it had lit up the pathway like a megawatt lantern.

Wan Yan Er suddenly laughed out of control and had to stop walking. "Noobie tank! Pffft! Are you a---wait for it---a firefly?! HAHAHAHA!"

"Wait! He's not some bug! I'd say, he like the sun in the sky! Shining brightly!" said Endless Starlight, kissing Zhang Yang's butt.

Everyone laughed and immediately understood the underlying meaning behind Endless Starlight sudden cries. However, it was indeed helpful. With Zhang Yang leading down the staircase, it was much easier to see.

After 5 minutes of walking, they had walked out of the narrow pathway and had arrived at a large, empty hall. The hall was much brighter now, and the party had just realized that it was extremely huge. The ceiling was at least a hundred meters tall, and the hall was at least the size of three football stadiums! In this massive empty hall, there was an indented area, which revealed itself as a pool of blood when the party had gotten close. No one knew how deep it went, but one thing was sure, it was blood, and it was boiling.

Right behind the massive, Olympic-sized pool, were cages with a human in each cage. Despair, dread, and hopelessness were in their eyes.

From afar, Zhang Yang could see three soldiers doing something. One of the soldiers had opened a cage up and pulled out a man. The two other soldiers dragged the man by his feet towards the pool. With nothing but the screams of horror, the soldier had pulled out a long broadsword and had cleaved the man's head off, clean.

Thud...*rolls*...Splash!

The head rolled on the ground and fell into the pool of blood. The

soldier then picked up the headless body and tossed it into the pool as well.

"Not bad. A clean cut, today! Looks like you're getting the hang of it."

"Yeah. It's the sword, it's all about the sword. It's nice to have it sharpened once in a while."

"Don't sweat it. We'll be given a new blade soon enough when this is over."

"Hahaha. You're absolutely right! I swear that---"

The chattering of the soldier dissipated into the darkness as they left the pool.

Zhang Yang saw what had happened and felt the dread of it. "Erhm...I think Cynapor was wrong after all. It's not a special sacrifice that Madran needed to retrieve. Its blood. A lot of blood."

"That looks more like a human goulash..."

The party moved around the pool and tried to follow the soldiers. As they walked closer to the scene, they found more markings on the stone slab where the most recent parting of a head from its shoulders had just occurred. It appeared that countless heads had rolled into the pool and had stained the flood with so much blood, that it had dried and formed a thick layer of blood plaster. Rage burned in their hearts, and the urge to seek revenge boiled like the pool of blood.

When Zhang Yang had gotten closer to the cages, one of the women in cages reached out her extremely thin arms, begging for Zhang Yang and his party to save her.

"H-Help...me...pl-ple-se..."

Her voice was so frail. Her face, especially, told of the days or even weeks she had not been fed. She was so skinny that she was practically skin and bones left.

Sun Xin Yu was the first person to react to her plea. With quick movements, she jumped to the cage and busted the lock, releasing the

poor woman from her captivity.

"You're safe now." Said Sun Xin Yu with the softest voice that Zhang Yang had ever heard. It was extremely soothing to hear her voice when she was not putting up a cold act. The woman cried and hugged Sun Xin Yu. "Why...Why...I don't understand. Why would the Sacred One do these to us! We believed him! We worshiped him! The Sacred One...no...his is not the Sacred One. He is the Damned! The Damned One!"

"Hush now. It's alright. I will make this right," said Sun Xin Yu as she wiped away the tears from the poor woman's eyes.

After stroking her hair and face for a while, the poor woman calmed down and said, "Brave ones, I beg of you! Please save everyone here!"

'Ding! Lena has a quest for you: Breaking Free. Will you accept it?'

Accept.

[Breaking Free] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Lena had requested that you rescue all of the captive prisoners. Note: There are 12 places such as this. They are all guarded by Madran's 12 Disciples. Every 5 minutes, each blood pool will claim one prisoner. To complete the quest, you must prevent the deaths of 500 prisoners. The quest will be deemed failure when the death toll had surpassed 500. Each rescued prisoner will increase the reward experience points by 1%

Progress: Rescue all the prisoners 0/1

Zhang Yang then unsheathed the blade and swung it forcefully, causing the metal cage in front of him to collapse, freeing the prisoner inside. With a loud voice, he yelled, "We will free all of you. Please, find a way outside this place and inform everyone of the truth of Madran!"

One by one, the prisoners were freed by Zhang Yang with the help of everyone in the party. All of the prisoners had mixed feelings. Some were extremely grateful for Zhang Yang and his party while the others were burning with rage, even though there were little to no life force to them. From their perspective, they had traveled a great distance just to worship

the person who they thought was the Sacred One. Who would have known that they were captured and treated as livestock, instead!

"Something's wrong!"

A voice came from the far side of the pool. It was the three soldiers who had killed a person from before. The soldiers had found out there the prisoner had escaped their cages and had alerted more soldiers to come into the hall. Close to 10 or more soldiers had mysteriously spawned out of nowhere and had joined the fight.

Some of the prisoners who had just been sprung from their cages ran back to the broken cages in fear. Zhang Yang had dashed to the front and called out to Endless Starlight. "Starlight. Come. Let's wrap this up quick."

"You got it boss."

With the battle hammer in his hands, Endless Starlight did not wait for Zhang Yang, and rushed at the incoming soldiers.

The enemies were only Level 93 monsters. There was a total of 15 of them. For other parties with average equipment, this situation might be a little too much for them to handle. But for Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, it was just a regular grinding session. The soldiers could not break through the line of defense and could only throw insults at them.

"Heretics! The wrath of the Sacred One shall befall upon you! The judgment of God is absolute!" cried the soldiers.

"Tch! Sacred One? Don't make me laugh. He is nothing, but the devil himself!" said Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang activated {Blast Wave} and stunned the soldiers. The Sword of Purging Devourer glowed and repeated the skill over, and over again!

Sun Xin Yu and the rest started their attack. Like hungry tigers, the team devoured the soldiers in just two minutes. Among the loot that they had picked up, there was a new cloth material, the [Inscribed Cloth]. Besides using the cloth in the profession of Tailoring, it could be used to create [Inscribed Bandages] which could heal 20,000 HP over the period of 10 seconds.

Zhang Yang had picked up a set of keys from the fallen soldiers, and had given the keys to the freed prisoners and had released the other prisoners who were still in their cages. The party then left the place and searched for the door of which the soldiers had come through.

Chapter 420: Marvados

Zhang Yang found the door which the soldiers had through, proceed inside. The place behind the door was like a dormitory for the soldiers. It was a narrow passageway, with doors on either side of the place. The first few rooms had their doors opened wide with no one inside but messy beds. It looked like the rooms belonged to the soldiers who had just rushed out to attack Zhang Yang.

As Zhang Yang and the party proceeded further down the pathway, more soldiers had rushed out and had attacked them. Without much trouble, the lot hacked their way through the mess and proceeded on through the mess. After covering a short distance at a slow pace, the team arrived at a dome-shaped room. The room was clearly big, since it housed a similar pool of blood like before.

There was man cloaked in a white long robe that was sitting in a chair at one side. There were two other beautiful females who were clinging rather intimately onto him. Behind the three bizarre characters were 12 soldiers in perfect formation. They were all well-equipped, with metal cuirasses, and long spears in their hands.

[Marvados] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 1,900,000

Defense: 1,700

[Armored Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 92

HP: 200,000

Defense: 1,000

The boss was holding a wine glass in his hand, that was filled with a liquid that shared the same color of blood. When the man noticed the presence of Zhang Yang in the room, the guards were signaled with a snap

of his fingers, and they had charged towards them.

Marvados was cool and calm. While sipping his glass casually, he said softly, "I should have known that Julio would be dead by now."

The guards had already surrounded Zhang Yang and were pointing their spears towards the party, but they were not attacking.

Zhang Yang had not yet sheathed his sword. He swung the sword extremely fast and the blood flew off the blade and spurted on the floor. "I do need to apologize for that. I kinda went overboard and accidentally killed the poor bastard."

Marvados chuckled and placed the wine glass down. "His death does not concern me. I had never had any inclination towards that arrogant man." The woman who was standing next to him took over the cup and the other had taken out a piece of white cloth to carefully wipe the corner of his lips.

"My lord." The guards that were waiting for the order from Marvados dared not act on their own will.

Marvados stood up and thrust his hand out in a dramatic, anime-ish pose. "Kill them."

"Yes sir." The guards replied in unison and started their attack. A magical staff magically appeared in the hands of Marvados. With a quick glare, he bellowed, "The Sacred One's plan must never be foiled!"

"Endless Starlight, take the boss. Kite him away. Let me take on the guards!" said Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had no problem entrusting Endless Starlight to handle the boss, since it was only a mere Yellow-Gold tier. With his current equipment, he could easily tank the boss without a need of immediate healing. Furthermore, Mardavos was probably a magic type, having a magic class Defender tank him would be wise.

On the contrary, the 12 elite guards were a greater threat than the boss. Even though their HPs were not as long as the boss, together, their combined attack would prove lethal to any tank. Zhang Yang had the

better equipment and it would be logical to have him take the heat, instead.

"Got it, boss!" Endless Starlight grabbed the boss' attention with a quick toss of his shield.

The 12 guards had no original targets to attack in the first place. When Endless Starlight had tossed the shield and went up to the boss, they had went after him. Zhang Yang quickly went up to the guards and activated {Thunder Strike}, inflicting the first aggro on the monsters, while also slowing them down.

"Futile resistance!" Marvados scoffed and pointed his staff towards the group of guards saying, "The Lord decrees, that those who devote their lives to serve shall gain His powers!"

Shring!

A bright light came down from nowhere and struck the group, granting them a boost of power. Whatever buff Marvados granted, it had profound effects. The men had grown in size. The original breastplates they wore suddenly burst off as the buckles gave way.

[Marvados Blessing]: 30% increase in Attack Power. Lasts for 5 Minutes.

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. If one of them gained a 30% power boost, it would not matter to Zhang Yang. But now, all 12 soldiers had gained power! The overall damage gained would prove to be too much for Zhang Yang to endure.

"We need to kill these guys off, quickly!"

Without delay, the group had rushed forward and unleashed all their AoE skills.

Zhang Yang joined the fight as well. All his AoE skills were used. {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}, {Heroic Leap}, {Brutal Smash}, all status effect skills were used mostly to prevent damage from inflicting him. However, when those proved to be insufficient, {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and even the new skill, {Last Vigor} had to be used to save himself. In this boss fight, Marvados was nothing but a side character, the main problem was

his 12 guards!

One by one, the party targeted one monster and proceed to the next when the first was killed. This way, they could kill the monsters more efficiently when their AoE skills were on cooldown, and they could switch to single target skills instead.

Just when the party had killed every single elite guard and were ready to switch their target to the boss, Marvados pointed his staff at the dead guards and said, "The Lord decrees, that eternal life shall be granted to His servants!"

Whoosh!

This time, a blast of dark light came down from nowhere and seeped inside the lifeless bodies of the dead guards.

"Urgh....Orh...." Slowly, the dead soldiers started to make some eerie noises. One by one, their muscle twitched and moved in a disgusting manner. They scrambled up and started to dash towards Zhang Yang.

[Revived Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 92

HP: 200,000

Defense: 1,000

Sigh...There's no end to this!

Zhang Yang immediately cried, "Stop attacking the monsters. Kill the boss! Or else these critters will keep on coming back to life!"

Zhang Yang changed his battle strategy. Instead of tanking the guards head-on, he blasted them with {Thunder Strike} and kited them around. However, Zhang Yang had never expected the undead minions to have such fast movement speeds, that even after the slow debuff, they were still running faster than Zhang Yang could!

'Ding! Revived Guard has received the effect: God Titan's Wrath. Stunned for 10 seconds!'

...

'Ding! Revived Guard had received the effect: God Titan's Wrath. Stunned for 10 seconds!'

...

Since Zhang Yang had received a barrage of attacks from a group of monsters, the Titan equipment set had finally shown its prowess. A holographic image of a metallic, god-like character hovered behind him for a brief second when the equipment set effect was triggered. With a snap of his fingers, the monster was stunned for 10 seconds.

On the other side of the battle, even though Zhang Yang was not participating in the battle against Marvados, the elite fighting party of nine was able to quickly hack away at the boss' HP till he was close to death!

"For the Lord has decreed! Eternal life and happiness for those who worshiped His name!" Marvados pointed his staff at one of the soldiers who was chasing after Zhang Yang. At first, Zhang Yang felt something was off. Perhaps, the skill was going to be used on the monsters and made them stronger. However, to his surprise, one of the guards had burst into dust, leaving its empty armor falling down to the floor. A light ray glowed around the area for a while before it flew from the place where the soldier had fallen, towards Marvados. The light surrounded Marvados and fully restored his life! Wei Yan Er had inflicted {Destructive Smash} on the boss. But even with the 50% reduced healing rate, the boss was still able to recover to its original, unharmed state.

"Sh*t!"

"I'd be d*mned if the boss could still revive the dead guy there! He'd be invincible then!" said Endless Starlight.

"Why do you always go for the worst case scenario?! Will you be satisfied if that really happens?!" Zhang Yang scolded.

Luckily, it did not happen.

After a mere minute, Marvados HP had plunged down again.

"For the Lord has decreed! Eternal life and happiness for those who worship His name!" this time, the party was not surprised. Marvados had repeated the same skill, which had sacrificed one of the undead guards and had restored his HP back to full health.

"...Thank god that this boss had only 1,900,000 HP. If it was a Violet-Platinum tier with 9 million HP, we would have been in for a treat!"

"That's nonsensical. A Yellow-Gold boss would never be that OP!"

However, the boss would never bother about being OP, or not. It would only act as it was programmed, killing the players as swiftly as possible, and surviving by any means necessary! Luckily, the person tanking the boss was a Defender with high magic defense. Fortunately, Endless Starlight had a strong equipment, and was able to defend the party easily. He did not need to ask help from Han Ying Xue for emergency healing.

On the other side of things, Zhang Yang was under tremendous pressure from the monsters. Although now there were two fewer monsters to worry about, the pressure placed on him was still immense. His HP was being maintained by Han Ying Xue, while being knocked back down by the monsters so rapidly, that his HP bar was like a pulsating heartbeat.

Although Zhang Yang was taking a beating, it was fortunate that Endless Starlight was facing next to no problems in facing the boss. The main healer for Endless Starlight, Fantasy Sweetheart, could take some time off him and heal Zhang Yang with {Regeneration} and {Holy Shield}. At least, it could take some load off both Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang had no other choice but to bite down the hardship and push on until all the guards had been "eaten" by the boss.

Slowly, and eventually, the boss had taken the third, the fourth, all to the last one. As the number of soldiers decreased, so did the pressure on Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. After the last one was down, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue did not immediately jump to the boss, but sat down and have a little time off to cool off their fatigue. The two of them were constantly on overdrive for so long and simply had to relax for a minute or two. Since the boss was only going to last for so long, Zhang Yang could

take his rest without much worry.

However, at 80%, the boss suddenly cast another spell.

"On the first day, the Lord commendeth. Let there be light!"

A blinding light burst out from the boss' staff and had successfully blinded the party. No matter how quickly one could respond, the light would always be the faster. Everyone had to stop for a good second to cover their eyes, for it was incredibly bright.

[Blinding Light]: Causes the enemy to lose their sight temporarily. Unable to focus on a target for 10 seconds.

The boss' skill was not an attacking skill, but rather a temporary stun. The entire party had to stop attacking.

In 'God's Miracle' a player can only attack a target by locking onto a target. Losing their sights will lead to a disability of locking onto a target. Luckily, the party members were smart. Instead of locking onto a target, they switched to their AoE skills and targeted the floor around the boss instead. Although they could attack, the damage inflicted on the boss was only but a scratch.

After 10 seconds, the blindness stopped and everyone was enraged. They cried angrily, throwing insults at the boss and releasing their frustration by hacking the boss even more furiously.

The thought of using {Dance of Heaven and Earth} had crossed everyone's mind. Undoubtedly, it would kill the boss easily. However, this boss was just the first among the 12 Disciples of Madran. If they used their trump card now, how would things be when they fight with an even stronger boss?

60%...

"The Lord said, give the Earth water, and water filled the Earth!"

Qiang! Qiang!

Pillars of ice pierced out of the ground beneath them, and dealt as much as 12,000 damage to everyone. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had

to jump into action to heal everyone before anything else.

"What the hell! This isn't water! It's ice! Don't be playing around with God's words!" cried Fatty Han.

"Nyehehe. I guessed the boss has no knowledge of physics. Water has three natural states!" said Wei Yan Er as she giggled happily. She was showing off her knowledge, since, among the party member there, she was the one who had just recently been in school, and had very limited time to act as a teacher herself.

40%...

"For the Lord granted the Earth fire, and fire lay its fiery breath upon Earth!"

Foom!

Before the pillars of ice could disappear, cracks had started to appear on the surface of the ground. Without any warning signs, the cracks spewed strong tongues of fire which had scorched those that had not able to dodge in time, for 12,000 damage.

Like frightened chicken, everyone had jumped on their feet and had started running around in disarray.

Chapter 421: The Four Horsemen

"The system must be cheating! This boss must be a Violet-Platinum boss, masking as a Yellow-Gold!"

"F*cking prick, must be thinking of saving Violet-Platinum equipment. That's why he paid the right people off to be classified as a Yellow-Gold! Sh*t is still as difficult as a Violet-Platinum fuck!"

"Yeah! D*mn! It's not what we signed up for!"

Everyone was pissed off when the fight between Mardavos was so much tougher than Julio, even when both of them were of the same tier.

20%...

"The Lord had wished for land, and the earth sprung new land for the Lord!"

Right after the boss had finished talking, a large meteorite fell down from the sky, smashing down on them. From the words that the boss had just said, they were expecting something to come out from the ground! None of them was prepared to defend against the falling rocks!

It was not one, but an endless cascade of falling rocks. The skill dealt the same basic damage as the previous skills that the boss had cast, but compared to the ice pillars and the flaming tongues, this meteorite shower was falling continuously! Eventually, it proved to be impossible for both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to heal everyone. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had already used {Vanguard's Aggression} during the previous skills. Luckily, Zhang Yang was still able to use {Rearm} and reactivated {Vanguard's Aggression} just for one last time.

A blue spherical barrier was placed and had protected everyone. However, safety was nowhere to be seen. By the time the barrier had expired, the meteor shower had not yet finished falling. However, during the protective duration, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were able to heal everyone. After {Vanguard's Aggression} had ended, the continuation of the meteor had dealt so much damage that the party had

lost the HP they had painstakingly recovered.

The decisive moment had arrived, just when both sides had little to no HP left. The party was left with a few drops of HP, while the boss still had over 4%. Zhang Yang and everyone else gritted their teeth hard and rushed forward without the need to care about their lives any longer. The last spurt of power had cost them Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream.

After the boss was killed, everyone still stared at the corpse warily. Taking the chance they had, they had quickly taken out recovery snacks, and had healed themselves with every second they had. There was lingering silence among them, and no one was willing to let their guards down. After a good long while, everyone finally relaxed. However, there was still tension between them. If the boss had such a strong power since the "first" half of the battle, he would have already wiped them all clean before Marvados was even required to heal himself with the soldiers' lives. If the first boss was already this tough, how would be for the next 11 bosses?

Compared with the rest of the party, Wei Yan Er, being the youngest and most carefree person, had skipped towards the battle drops while whistling happily.

[Boots of Meditation] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +151

Intelligence: +137

Spirit: +60

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 90

Even though it was not a Violet-Platinum tier, this Level 90 Yellow-Gold equipment was still an incredibly good item, even by the current standards. The boots was then given to Fantasy Sweetheart. The sweet, busty girl then bowed down happily and thanked everyone for the item.

Her actions were earnest, yet her movements were so aggressive that she did not realize that her gigantic badahoonkers were bouncing around, causing the pervy Fatty and Endless Starlight to cover their pants.

Han Ying Xue sneaked a peek at Zhang Yang and whispered in his ears. "Don't stare too much though, you might be hypnotized!"

"Hohoho. Jealous much? For she still has it, and you've lost it?"

"Lost it? I did not lose anything! I can get it whenever I want!"

"Nope. You've clearly lost it. She's got the charm. You've got nothing."

"Please. I could steamroll over her with one of these!" said Han Ying Xue as she grabbed hold of her left mountain of delightful flesh and jiggled it at him.

Zhang Yang fell silent. He had completely regretted about taunting the jealous little woman.

[Fragment of Hammer of Sanction] (Yellow-Gold, Weapon Fragment)

Use: Combines 12 Fragments of Hammer of Sanction, and one Hammer's Hilt of Hammer of Sanction to form a complete Hammer of Sanction.

Level Requirement: 90

"Another Assembled Weapon!" cried the party.

The previously assembled weapon that Zhang Yang had wielded for a long time now had made everyone drool for it. Who would not want to own such a powerful killing tool! Since Violet-Platinum weapons were available for Level 80 players could be farmed in Level 80 maps, there were Assembled Weapon there as well, but they were mostly Gray-Silver tier. The end result would only be at the same level as a Yellow-Gold tier. None of the party members were interested in owning such a weapon. However, the Level 90 area was different. A drop of Assembled Weapon would automatically be one of the Yellow-Gold tiers! Which inevitably meant that the end result, would create a Violet-Platinum tier weapon!

"What!? It's a hammer fragment! Awesome! Hell yeah!" cried Endless

Starlight happily, since his class had the Hammer Mastery passive skill, which granted the player a boost of strength when using a hammer type weapon.

Zhang Yang laughed and gave the fragment to Endless Starlight. "There are 12 Disciples in this fight, and a final boss. I'm guessing that each of the Disciples will drop a piece of the hammer fragment, and the final boss would drop the hammer's hilt."

"Oh man! This is just too great. It's like a dream come true!"

While everyone was happy for Endless Starlight, Lost Dream muttered something disgruntledly. "Hmph. Just hope that it's not a two-handed hammer."

A Defender could only use a one-handed hammer.

Although Lost Dream was muttering softly, his voice was able to reach Endless Starlight's ears, slightly annoying him.

"Alright guys. We've had our rest. Time to move on." Said Zhang Yang. He sensed something was coming up between the two of them, and tried to prevent something that might affect the party's performance. They still had 11 more Disciples to kill.

Zhang Yang led the way, while Endless Starlight was the rearguard. The party moved in a single file and proceeded beyond the dome hall. After passing a doorway, the team was immediately ambushed in the dark. There was not enough light to see the enemy. However, it did not take long before Zhang Yang realized that the pathway was the same as the previous pathway that had led them to the dome hall. It was another dormitory for the soldiers.

Zhang Yang and his team lowered their guards a little, since the enemies were the same elite soldiers that they had fought before. With no trouble, Zhang Yang slashed his way forward, collecting more [Inscribed Cloth], before coming upon a large room. The room was an exact copy of the first gigantic hall from before. It had the same blood pool, and a ridiculous number of cages that were all filled with prisoners.

It was all a repetitive process. Zhang Yang and the party member silently split up to rescue as many prisoners as they could. Amid the chaotic rescue, came a group of 12 elite guards, who were all killed by Zhang Yang and the team with relative ease. After they were done with the guards, the party continued to release all the prisoners, and went to the same doorway from which the guards had just come out from. They walked down a similar pathway with the same dormitory, and came to a similar dome-shaped hall, except for one issue. The boss was nowhere in sight.

Everyone started to get a little worried.

Bury the Secret was the quest that the party had accepted. The quest had required them to kill Madran and his 12 Disciples. If anyone of them was not killed, the quest would never be completed. This was bad. Among them, Endless Starlight was trembling in fear. The hammer fragment that he was carrying needed to have a total of 12 pieces, if either one of the bosses were missing, he would never form a complete hammer!

"Did someone come before us and kill the boss?" ask Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang looked up and down, before answering her. "I don't think so. In fact, I know so. Currently, I am the only Level 90 player in China. There is little no chance that other players would have come to this island before us. Besides, we have just walked through the only pathway. How do you explain the first boss being there? It must be another reason."

"How could it be?"

"Perhaps the boss got lonely and decided to move to the neighbor's hall for company!" said Fantasy Sweetheart, giggling.

Zhang Yang cried, "It could be that!"

"...Wait a second...Does that mean that we have to fight two bosses at the same time?" cried Han Ying Xue as if she was about to bawl. The woman hated working hard.

"I'm afraid, it could be that."

Everyone left the empty hall and proceeded through a doorway which Wei Yan Er had found. The party repeated the same thing over again. They

walked through the pathway, killed more elite guards, came into a large hall, rescued more prisoners, killed more elite guards, and finally arrived at the next boss room. Except, that the third boss was not present!

"What is the meaning of this!" cried Fatty Han.

"I'd say, we'll be fighting three bosses in the next hall!"

"I bet that the next boss will not be there as well!" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang frowned worriedly. Words that came out of Wei Yan Er's mouth always came true, especially when it was something bad. Zhang Yang signaled the party to move forward, and they had killed and rescued their way to the next boss room. Lo and behold, Wei Yan Er's premonition had come true. The fourth boss was not around as well.

"Haha! Perhaps we could fight 4 bosses at the same time! The system must be thinking highly of us!" said Hundred Shots laughing. There was a hint of annoyance buried shallowly beneath his laughter.

"Keh Keh Keh! I knew it! Perhaps, the next boss would also be miss---
HMM!! HM!!"

Before the little brat could finish talking, Han Ying Xue had already pushed her jaw back up and sealed it firmly with a headlock.

"The boss will be in the next room!"

Everyone prayed out loud. Even though everyone had wished for the best, having the thought of fighting just one Marvados had made them tremble in fear, thinking that the next foe they would be fighting, were four bosses.

The party moved on and proceeded after the fifth blood pool.

After completing the same repetitive process, the party had reached the fifth doorway that led them to the boss hall.

"Come on! May the bosses be there!" cried Fatty Han as he squeezed his eyes shut, and pressed both his palms together.

Zhang Yang turned back and glared worriedly at Fatty Han. In his previous life, 1 month from now, Fatty Han would get involved in a series

of fights which had ended with a metal baton striking his skull, hard. The strike had cost him his life. This time, in this lifetime, Zhang Yang had made many changes which had led Fatty Han completely off the previous life's route. Still, who knew what destiny called for. Zhang Yang swore to protect him. He had to prevent the incident from happening at all costs. No matter what happens, Zhang Yang would not let Fatty Han get into any fight!

After the party proceeded through the doorway, they arrived at the fifth boss' hall. Expecting the worse, Fatty Han opened his eyes and had never felt so happy to see a boss. Still, the horror of facing four bosses at the same time had kicked in. All three bosses that were missing from their halls, were all there, with the fifth boss.

[Bellroy, The Four Horsemen] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 1,900,000

Defense: 1,700

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

The other three bosses, lined up in a straight line, where Mecca, Gray, and Cindy. All of them carried the title - "The Four Horsemen". They were all Level 94 Yellow-Gold tier, and were riding large handsome horses, hence the title. There were large swords on the side of the horses.

"Crap...It's really four bosses," said Fatty Han. Everyone had mixed feelings about the boss. Even though they were hoping that it would be four bosses, but at the same time, they had wished that it would not have to come to that.

"Let's just be thankful, it's four instead of all eight," said Daffodil Daydream firmly, even though she herself was trembling with fear.

"Hold up. There's an aura effect on the boss!"

Chapter 422: Overwhelming Aura

[Gluttony Aura]: Inflicts the status effect of {Gluttony} every 3 seconds, on any target within the aura ranged. {Gluttony} will decrease 1% of the target's attack power. Maximum stack: 50. Additional attack buffs will be granted to the aura's owner whenever one of the following auras is applied on the target: {Greed Aura}, or {Slayer Aura}, or {Destiny Aura}.

Two auras: 50% bonus attack.

Three auras: 100% bonus attack.

Four auras: 150% bonus attack.

Aura radius: 20 meters around the owner.

{Gluttony Aura} belonged to Bellroy, while the other three auras belonged to the other horsemen. As the aura skill description depicted, if more than one aura is stacked, the bosses would gain an attack bonus buff.

{Greed Aura} would cause players to receive a stackable debuff, just like {Gluttony}. {Greed} would cause players to receive additional damage received, by 1% per stack, with a maximum of 50 stacks. Debuffs will stack once every 3 seconds.

{Slay Aura} would inflict direct damage of 3,000 chaos damage, every 3 seconds.

{Destiny Aura} would create a field where players will be stunned for 3 seconds, at a certain chance, every 3 seconds.

Zhang Yang practically threw in the towel when he had read the description of the auras on each of the bosses. To make things worse, he just realized that the bosses were sharing the same HP bar! That meant, they could not kill the bosses one by one to slowly terminate the threat of the auras! All 7,600,000 HP had to be dealt with before all the bosses could die.

"Boss, how you want to split it? You'd take two, or three at the same time?" asked Endless Starlight.

Without a doubt, these bosses had to be kited away from each other to prevent the aura from stacking on each other. If each of the bosses gains a 150% attack power boost, the team would not even last for 1 minute.

Zhang Yang thought of a strategy for a long time before talking to Endless Starlight. "You'll take on Mecca. I'll let my Mythical Turtle tank Cindy. I will take on Bellroy and Gray at the same time. These four bosses share one single HP gauge. That mean, we have no need to fight them all. Just focus only on one at a time, and that is Mecca!"

This was a last resort. Endless Starlight might have a strong equipment, but he would never be as powerful as Zhang Yang. The battle would be over in a flash for Endless Starlight if Zhang Yang had allowed Endless Starlight to tank two bosses at the same time. Furthermore, Mecca's {Greed Aura} was able to increase the damage taken. If Endless Starlight had more than one boss on his *ss, the auras would stack atop each other, and would further increase the overall difficulty.

Besides Mecca, the other bosses' aura effects could lower a player's damage output, damage them over time, and inflict a group status effect skill. If everyone were to fight within the aura range of the bosses, the team could not deal much damage, while taking damage over time, and risk getting stunned every 3 seconds!

If the attacking players did their jobs well without taking much damage, and Endless Starlight properly tanked the damage, it would not greatly affect the team's overall performance.

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle and got it ready for the attack. "Hundred Shots, when the fight starts, I need you to kite Cindy to the turtle. Can't ready depend on the turtle's movement speed to move to Cindy. Endless Starlight, you'll position the boss to the left, and I'll position my own bosses to the right. Remember to keep the distance between us as far as 40 meters!"

"Got it, boss."

"Understood."

"Any questions? Fatty, follow me. When I fight Bellroy, I want you to

attack Gray. When Gray chases you, I'll draw his attention," said Zhang Yang.

"Leave it to me."

Zhang Yang gazed at Fantasy Sweetheart and said, "Sweetheart, I want you to focus on Endless Starlight. However, at the same time, you'll need to heal the Mythical Turtle once in a while."

"Ok!" squeaked the busty dullard.

Lastly, Zhang Yang turned to Han Ying Xue and laughed. "I guess you'll be healing me then. It's all up to you now. You'll be focusing on me, and you'll also have to make sure that the Mythical Turtle does not die!"

Han Ying Xue glared at Zhang Yang for a long time, until Zhang Yang was extremely afraid that she might just jump in and hump his brains out. That woman might actually do that! She walked closer and said, "Dinner's on you!"

"...Fine..."

Without a doubt, Zhang Yang was glad that she had just demanded dinner and nothing else. Right when he turned his back to face the boss, he could feel a sudden shiver down in his spine. Zhang Yang could have guessed that it was because of a certain Frost Snow giving him the death stare.

"*cough* Erhm. Let's get ready!" Zhang Yang charged up to the boss with Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, and Fatty Han following him.

{Spear of Obliteration}, {Finger of Justice}, {Take Aim}!

Four attacks flew out in the air and landed on all four of the bosses. With a great battle cry, the four foes charged at their attackers.

"Criminals will be punished!"

"The Sacred One does not tolerate evil!"

"Kneel down before the Lord!"

"Judgement shall be on you!"

With their short opening speeches delivered, the horses neighed furiously and galloped towards their targets.

Hundred Shots leaped back and ran towards the turtle. Although it was slow, the turtle was still able to snap its jaw and add a {Tear} on Cindy. The Mythical Turtle had easily taken over the minimal aggro generated by Hundred Shots.

Endless Starlight had kited Mecca for as far as 50 meters away from the Turtle, maintaining a good distance to prevent the auras from stacking with each other.

Zhang Yang had started his attack and grabbed hold of both Bellroy's and Gray's attention firmly.

'Ding! You have gained the effect {Glutton} (1 Stack). Attack power reduced by 1%!'

Zhang Yang had received the first stack of debuff on him, which had lowered his basic damage by 1%. Although he had received the DoT effect of the other boss' aura, it was as low as 294 damage every 3 seconds, which was close to light caress.

Sun Xin Yu and the other of party members had started to attack Mecca as furiously as they could. They knew that this slugfest was a matter of speed. Healers were extremely important in this kind of fights since their speed and power of healing would definitely affect the outcome of the battle.

Back to Zhang Yang's battle, he clearly felt the power of the aura stacking effects when both Gray and Bellroy were on his radar. Each of the bosses had gained an additional 50% attack boost, causing their attack to pack quite the punch.

'-12,831!'

'-13,042!'

Their huge sword swings had literally torn the air around them ever so violently that Zhang Yang could hear, and feel the devastating blow from them. Each of the bosses had whacked him for close to 13,000 damage

points, EACH! Han Ying Xue alone could not heal that much HP alone! From the first strike onward, Zhang Yang knew what he had to do. Speeding the fight up would be the very least he could do. On top of that, Zhang Yang had to utilize all his other defensive skills and various jugs of potions!

Bellroy attacked Zhang Yang without waiting. By the time the huge, blade landed on Zhang Yang's shoulder, he could feel a faint flash of light behind him, and the boss was stunned in his place. The Titan's set equipment set effect had triggered its skill and had stunned Bellroy for 10 seconds.

The 10 seconds stun was too good to be true. Not only had it greatly reduced the attack power, its aura was also deactivated!

‘-7,328!’

As seen from Gray's diminished attacks, the aura stacking bonus attack was gone for 10 seconds. Han Ying Xue was able to heal Zhang Yang back in time, and had even managed to spare some time to heal the Turtle!

Since all the bosses shared the same HP bar, all attacks on the boss had been averaged out and had caused the entire battle to be dragged on for a little longer. Still, they had only 7,600,000 HP, which was still lesser than a Level 80 Violet-Platinum. Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the party members could easily deplete the boss' HP in less than 3 minutes.

The problem was not the attack, but the endurance. Could the tanks and the turtle hold out for that long?

3 minutes later, the HP gauge had been hacked down, leaving all the boss with 20% HP and had allowed the usage of {Killing Cleave}. This was a new threshold for all players to attack. Almost all class had skills like a Berserker's {Indiscriminate} and {Killing Cleave}. Pyromancers had {Rage of the Flame}. There were other class skills which had not revealed themselves yet, but the important aspect was the fact that they could only be activated or used on a target with less than 20% HP.

Sadly, during this crucial moment, the Mythical Turtle had drawn its last breath. Even though the Violet-Platinum tier battle mount had a higher

Defense compared to Zhang Yang, and a strong Defensive boost skill, it was only limited to a few seconds and had long cooldown. Although both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had managed to find some time to heal the turtle, they had their focus on Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. It was already a miracle that the turtle was able to hold on for that long.

Cindy's menacing attacks had crushed the turtle, and had turned the poor turtle into an empty shell.

"Victory shall be granted to those to worship the Lord!" Cindy raised her sword high, as she claimed victory. Without delay, Cindy shifted her horse and turned to attack the second aggro target, which was Han Ying Xue. Although Han Ying Xue had realized that she was being targeted, there was nothing she could do in time, as the boss had taken no time at all to reach to her side. A sword was swung and struck Han Ying Xue.

Transferred!

With speed on par with lightning, Zhang Yang had cast {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue. At the same time, Zhang Yang quickly made his way to Cindy and had attacked her. He had to draw all the aggro from Han Ying Xue to him as soon as possible. Although the amount of aggro generated by healing was small, Han Ying Xue had been healing for a full 3 minutes, so even Zhang Yang would have to work his *ss off to snatch her aggro!

As expected, after 5 seconds, Cindy was still attacking Han Ying Xue. Zhang Yang continued to attack Cindy and displayed an utmost prowess display of footwork. He stood in between Cindy and Han Ying Xue, utilizing every possible move to physically block Cindy's attack.

"Curse you!" Cindy growled madly and wanted to circle around Zhang Yang to get to Han Ying Xue.

This time, Zhang Yang performed faster and moved around like a fish in the water. With little but fast movements, Zhang Yang had anticipated every possible move that the boss was about to make, and blocked them without fail.

"I'll be d*mned. Dummy! You're one hell of a protector!" said Han Ying Xue after witnessing Zhang Yang's heroic actions. "Look at you, trying

your very best to protect this lovely maiden. I've decided to accept your love!"

"What the hell, woman!? Can you please choose the right time and place to say such things! We are fighting now!" Zhang Yang cried out in frustration. He had no time nor the effort to spare for Han Ying Xue's random rants or compliments. This time, she was spouting nothing but harassment!

Bellroy had long since recovered from the Titan's stun and had rejoined the other two bosses, combining their aura. All bosses had gained a 200% attack boost and were capable of dealing as much as 18,000 damage per boss. Without any action taken, Zhang Yang would go down in mere seconds!

"What about {Dance of Heaven and Earth}?" everyone asked.

"No! Not here!" Zhang Yang shot down their suggestions to use the ultimate skill. {Dance of Heaven and Earth} was a skill with a 24 hour long cool down time. Undoubtedly, the skill could only be used once! If they were to use this skill and waited for the skill to be used again, the quest [Breaking Free] would definitely fail. On the other hand, the quest - [Bury the Secret] was an S tier quest. The time taken to complete the quest would surely be used to evaluate the final score. Zhang Yang had never wished to compromise that just to complete the quest! Perfect score, nothing else! With a steeled decision, Zhang Yang would not use {Dance of Heaven and Earth} here because he knew, from the bottom of his heart, that the other bosses up ahead would be even harder than this fight.

After a good time moving around swiftly, Cindy's attack had finally been diverted to Zhang Yang. It was both good news and bad in the same time. Cindy has stopped targeting the healer. But now Zhang Yang was taking attacks from three bosses at the same time. It was not something that anyone, not even himself could last against! In the depths of desperation, Zhang Yang used {Shield Wall} to protect and heal himself, thanks to the [Titan Wall] and the [Titan Chest Plate] armor effect. In that 15 seconds, he had gained an immense defensive power and was able to heal himself back to full health! A 15 seconds, God of War effect!

14%...

On the overall perspective, the four bosses were at the ends of their lifelines.

5%...

After the 15 seconds {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang was once more plunged back into the mouth of the tiger. 87,000 HP was strong, but here, it was as weak as soft tofu being squashed into smithereens.

Zhang Yang still had one last trump card, the [Heart of the Death Knight] which granted him 10 seconds of true invincibility.

4%...

2%...

1%...

0%.

"T-The L-Lord shall...bless...his..s-serva-ant.." One by one, the horsemen dropped fell from their horses and left the world with one last speech at the tip of their tongues.

They had done it. Even so, there was still a lingering fear in their hearts. If the bosses had slightly more HP, they would have killed Zhang Yang. Once the main pillar falls, so would everyone else in the party.

"Why are the bosses here so hard to defeat?"

It was natural that they would voice out their complaints. Compared to the other Yellow-Gold bosses that they had encountered before, it was heaven and earth. It would better for the system to just change their tier to Violet-Platinum instead of hiding it behind a mask.

"How should I know?" said Zhang Yang. Level 90 was just a brief period. Once players had surpassed Level 100 and entered the Chaos Realm, the difficulty of all the monsters and boss would have a major upgrade. Perhaps, the system had made the bosses here harder to defeat, to allow a certain level of adjustment for the player to get used to. After all, Yellow-Gold bosses were being seen more frequently than before. What was the

use of just increasing the difficulty then? It may be frequent, but the number of bosses would never be too many for everyone to fight. As such, close to 90% of players around China had never fought a battle as hard as Zhang Yang and his party had just been through.

"Enough sulking! Let's check out the boss' drops!" The chirpy voice belonged to none other than Wei Yan Er.

As expected and predicted, each boss dropped one fragment of the hammer. Endless Starlight had swept them all and had collected a total of five pieces. The man was so happy that his smile had closed his eyes shut.

[Evil Breaker Glove] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +151

Strength: +137

Dexterity: +60

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 90

Sun Xin Yu had a pair of Level 80 Violet-Platinum gloves and had no need to participate in the rolling for the item. Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and Lost Dreams rolled for it, and Hundred Shots won the item.

[Ring of Grandiose] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +76

Strength: +68

Dexterity: +68

Equip Effect: Grants a 1% chance to inflict 10,000 Shadow damage on every attack. Upon successful proc, a magic shield will be cast on the user which will absorb 10,000 damage. The shield will last for 30 seconds, or after 10,000 damage points have been absorbed.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 90

"This is a bloody good ring!"

It was good. The effect itself was enough the ring to be a Violet-Platinum tier. However, the 1% proc rate was too low.

Chapter 423: The Three Saints

"I'd say, the price for the ring could go as high as 100,000 gold coins! I'm sure there will be people fighting for it!" said Fatty Han as he examined the [Ring of Grandiose].

Fatty Han's logic was right on one aspect. Rings and accessories were rare drops. Players would definitely put on a high price for it, even though it was not a Violet-Platinum tier.

"Fatty bro, I think you're missing one digit." Said Daffodil Daydream.

"Huh? What? You're saying the ring is actually worth more?" Fatty Han asked curiously.

Zhang Yang nodded. "Don't be surprised, but a ring like that would fetch prices as high as a million. However, I urge that we do not sell the ring just yet. Since neither if you have a Violet-Platinum ring, might as well use this for the moment. Until the day we can get a better one, we shall keep this."

"But...Little Yang, by the time we farm for new rings, this one would not be worth selling anymore," said Fatty Han with a bitter sad face.

Zhang Yang cocked his head and frowned. "Don't tell me that you already used up all your money!"

Fatty Han smiled. "No. But what's wrong in earning more? There's no limit to how much you can make, right?"

Wei Yan Er had picked up two more Yellow-Gold equipment, but neither of them was good. One silk armor had too much Spirit, and the other heavy armor added magic defense. Both of these two equipment were considered dissonant stats, and everyone agreed to put them up for sale in the Little Merchandise Shop.

"Let's go. There's no time to waste. We have eight more bosses to kill!"

The party proceeded on and had repeated the entire rescuing process, and came to the sixth blood pool. After they had made their way to the boss room, everyone was stunned, and filled with dread and horror. The boss room was empty.

"Oh god..."

"Don't tell me..."

"F*ck my life..."

"Sigh..."

Fatty Han cried angrily and said, "Little Yang! Don't tell me that the future boss fights will be in groups?!"

"What do you think?! Of course, it will be! Duh!"

The party proceeded on to the next pool, and the next one after that and had still not encountered any bosses, even after the eighth boss.

"...Crap...Are we going to fight 5 bosses at one go?"

Everyone stared at Fatty Han with a sudden burst of anger but simmered down quickly. They knew that it was not Fatty Han's fault. Truthfully speaking, they were thinking the same but had remained quiet about it.

After the ninth pool, Zhang Yang and the party came into the boss room. Everyone let out a sigh of relief when they saw the bosses. There were only three in total.

[Rayleigh, Shield of the Three Saints] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 3,000

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

[Dolor, Spear of the Three Saints]

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 1,500

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

[Cherry, Wings of the Three Saints] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 1,000

Note: One of the 12 Disciples.

As the title suggested, Rayleigh was a Guardian-class boss. He wielded an axe in his right hand and a shield in his left. His shining armor, encasing his entire character was all grand and scratch-free. Zhang Yang had one principle. That is, a knight in shining armor was not something to be respected, for he had never truly had his metal tested in battle. The next boss was Dolor. The man had two gladiuses hanging behind his back. Zhang Yang had deduced the boss was a Thief class, since warriors carried their weapons at the waist instead of on the back. That and the occasional fading presence of the boss. The last boss was a woman named Cherry. Despite her cute name, the woman was a full-grown adult. She carried long magician staff in her right hand and was wearing a long white robe which covered her body entirely, besides her chest...

The hole in the middle of the chest was large enough to reveal half of her breasts to the world. The lower half of her robe had a gap at each side of her waist. The dressing style had reminded Zhang Yang of a Qi Pao, the traditional clothing for women. However, unlike the Qi Pao, her robe was just too revealing. The gap was extended up to close to her lower breast which revealed quite a lot of flesh, emphasizing her voluptuous body and her long fair legs.

Fatty Han snorted and smiled from ear to ear. "Well. Guys, count me out in this. It's my policy to never strike a woman. Especially when she is that hot! I mean, look at that---"

Zhang Yang smacked Fatty Han's head to shut the man up.

Zhang Yang examined the bosses and found out that the bosses were sharing the same HP gauge. It was as the same as the previous gang of four. However, the biggest difference was that, there were no annoying auras!

"I don't believe that the later bosses would be easy. They must be hiding something. Let's just hope it's not some ridiculous super killing skill."

Zhang Yang nodded. "That's true. Now listen to me. That boss is a tank class. Everyone could see the shield there. The one with the swords is a Thief class. The woman should be a magic user but I'm not sure if she is a healing type or an attacking type. But, based on my judgment, I'm guessing that she should be a healer. A tank, an attack, and a healer should be a perfect formation."

He continued, "Endless Starlight, I want you to kite Rayleigh. That boss is a tank class, so I'm hoping that its attack will be lower, to trade for its high defense. I will handle both Dolor and Cherry. Everyone else should focus all their fire solely on Cherry for she has least Defense among the boss."

"Understood." Everyone understood. Truthfully, there was no need for Zhang Yang to even explain, since that was the most common battle strategy. Hit the healer first, and then the attacker. Leave the tank for last, since he should pose no threat to the party.

"Alright, if everyone is ready, let's begin."

"Foolish mortals! How dare you defile the temple!"

"I hereby represent the Sacred One in laying judgment upon you!"

"In the name of the Lord, the Light shall purify your malicious presence! Be gone! Maverick!"

The battle started with the bosses' individual speeches and they rushed towards Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. The entire battle scene had changed. Not in terms of system UI or battle strategy. It was just the atmosphere of it. Endless Starlight was silent and stoic. Wei Yan Er was not making any noise or doing any annoying gesture. She was calm. After the party had been through several battles, this one was of the times that they knew a trivial mistake would lead to a catastrophe end. Everyone had the same glint in their eyes. The same when soldiers go to war. Determination.

In just a few steps, Cherry had stopped running and had pointed her

staff at Zhang Yang from a good distance. From the progress bar appearing on her head, Zhang Yang had determined that Cherry was a Priest since the spell that she was casting was called {Punishment Ray}. That and her righteousness speech. Dolor, on the other hand, had vanished without a trace and entered stealth mode.

Zhang Yang gripped his sword tighter and activated {Charge}. Instead of Zhang Yang, the rest of the party had a tenseness in their heart. At such a close range, Zhang Yang would not dodge the attack. Zhang Yang swung his sword hard and laid down the first attack. With a quick spin in the air, Zhang Yang slashed his sword downward and attacked with the first {Cripple Defense}.

"Weep for your sins! Surrender yourself to the power of the Lord!" Cherry had just finished her spell and a bright light blasted off her staff. In the split second, everyone, including Zhang Yang was prepared for the worse. Han Ying Xue had already prepared to cast a healing spell on Zhang Yang if her power was too strong.

‘-9,411!’

As the damage text floated away from Zhang Yang’s character, everyone sighed with great relief, as the damage was not at all devastating. During that time, Dolor had appeared with a puff of smoke and had knocked Zhang Yang’s head with the sword’s hilt, successfully stunning him. Zhang Yang was not prepared for that since he was too focused on the Cherry’s {Punishment Ray}!

Dolor danced around swiftly as how a Thief would do after they have managed to {Ambush} their enemy. Each of the sword slashes had dealt close to 10,000 damage. Dolor had gained a buff. 30% increase in attack power which lasts for 10 seconds. It was the same as a player Assassin. Every time they appeared from stealth, they would gain a similar buff.

Without delay, Zhang Yang used {Warrior’s Will} to free himself from the stun. There was a good reason for him to do, so even though the stun duration was only 2 seconds. (Stunning duration was shortened by 50% due to the equipment effect of Heart of the Death Knight.) Zhang Yang

had not attacked Dolor. If he had not freed himself to attack him, Dolor would immediately attack Han Ying Xue, since she would heal Zhang Yang and gain aggro from Dolor. Zhang Yang had to build aggro on him to prevent Han Ying Xue from being attacked.

Zhang Yang slashed and activated {Horizontal Sweep}, and damaged both Cherry and Dolor for 8,412 and 8,134 respectively. With that, Zhang Yang could have an ease of mind to let Han Ying Xue heal him without any interruptions.

Right then, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the party had arrived and started their attack. Melee attackers went into position and laid down a flurry of attacks.

"Hmph! No matter how many of you there are, in the presence of the servant of the Lord, you are nothing but ants!" Cherry scoffed arrogantly and struck her staff into the ground.

Right at the moment when Sun Xin Yu's blade was about to reach her back, a bubble grew from under the staff and pushed everyone away at an intense speed, damaging them for 20,000 Holy damage. Everyone was thrown 10 meters away from Cherry.

"Woah! A Priest isn't supposed to do that! This isn't fair at all!" cried Fatty Han.

Luckily, both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were long-ranged supporters. Even though they had taken 20,000 damage, it was no trouble for the two healers to bring their HP back to full capacity.

After being healed, Sun Xin Yu and other melee fighters rushed back to the fight. Luckily, Cherry's barrier-like skill was not used frequently. All the melee fighters were able to attack her without being blown away again.

Dolor had all the Thief skills a player would. After having his stun removed, Dolor stunned Zhang Yang once more with {Kidney Shot}, stunning Zhang Yang again for 6 seconds. However, having {Heart of the Death Knight}, Zhang Yang was only susceptible to 3 seconds of stun. 3 seconds later, Zhang Yang countered Dolor's furious attacks to prevent

him from losing too much HP and Dolor from gaining too many combo points.

After 10 seconds, Dolor vanished into the shadows once more. Unlike players, the boss' movement speed was too quick for Zhang Yang to react. Dolor had appeared almost instantly as soon as he had vanished and had bashed Zhang Yang, stunning him for 4 seconds. Even though Zhang Yang had half the stunning duration, being stunned while he was attacking was extremely annoying. Imagine an actor who was acting passionately and asked to stop suddenly just because the director said so.

Still, as annoying as it may be, Zhang Yang was unable to do anything. Although {Warrior's Will} had been leveled up to max, it still had 60 seconds of cool down time. It could not dispel the stun as frequently as to how the boss could stun! It was already a miracle that he could possess the passive skill that reduced half of all status effect skill!

At the other side of the battle, Endless Starlight was facing with a little bit of trouble. Rayleigh had been repeatedly using {Brutal Smash} on Endless Starlight, stunning him for 4 seconds per skill use. The skill had a 2 minutes cooldown time, yet the boss was using it every 20 seconds! Endless Starlight had finally felt the immense annoyance after being stunned for 4 times. Once Endless Starlight was stunned, even for a 4 seconds period, Rayleigh would completely ignore him and proceed to target the next target in the aggro list. There was once when Endless Starlight was stunned, the boss had almost killed Fantasy Sweetheart. Luckily, Zhang Yang was quick enough to cast {Sacrifice} to divert the damage to him instead.

After getting used to all of the bosses' skills, Zhang Yang moved closer to Endless Starlight and allow him to take on all three of the boss simultaneously. The benefit for him in doing so was to allow Zhang Yang to hold on the aggro of Rayleigh. Once either one of the tanks gets stunned, Rayleigh will proceed to target the second target in the aggro rank. Zhang Yang was hoping that Rayleigh would target either him or Endless Starlight instead of the other low-HP players. He had already spent {Sacrifice}, and cannot save anyone within the 1 minute cooldown period.

Secondly, the AoE skills {Horizontal Sweep} and {Tornado Cleave} could deal better damage when all of the bosses are gathered together in one place. Those two skills were, after all, the ultimate AoE skills among the group.

"Rayleigh, protect me!"

60 seconds into the battle, the bosses HP bar had dropped down to 73%, and Cherry suddenly cried for help.

"I listen and serve!" Rayleigh responded and cast {Sacrifice} on Cherry, as he was still fighting Endless Starlight.

Having a protective barrier, Cherry immediately stopped attacking and cast a skill called {Holy Starburst}, with only 5 seconds of casting time.

"The boss is protected by {Sacrifice}! We cannot disrupt her!" cried Lost Dream. He had already used {Low Kick} on the boss but was only rewarded with the word "Transferred". The skill was diverted to Rayleigh instead.

"Embrace the power of the Lord!" Cherry's {Holy Starburst} was completed after everyone had tried to cast their disruption skills. A ball of bright light erupted out of her body and split into three smaller balls of light. All of them flew to each boss.

‘+100,000!’

‘+400,000!’

‘+400,000!’

Three high valued healing texts popped up on all three bosses, healing them for a total of 900,000 HP. On average, their shared HP bar was raised back to 83%.

"Crap!"

The healing skill had proved to be so strong, that everyone was spouting insults and curses. Luckily, Cherry had the effect of {Destructive Smash} on her, causing her to receive 75% reduced the healing effect. If Zhang Yang had not struck her with the skill, the bosses would have healed

1,200,000 HP.

Even though the bosses did not possess any auras, they were strong. They also fought in an uncannily similar manner to that of a player's party.

Chapter 424: Rain Down, Hell from Above

Making complaints now would not do anyone any good. Since the boss was designed to be that way, they could only complain to the designers.

Zhang Yang shouted, "Little brat! Maintain {Destructive Smash} on Rayleigh!"

"Ok!" Wei Yan Er nodded her head vigorously and made sure not to waste any second of the skill's cool down time.

Now that they had formed a new plan, Cherry's {Holy Starburst} would heal one boss with 75% reduced healing, one boss with 50% reduced healing, and one boss receiving a full heal. Zhang Yang's plan would prevent an extra 200,000 HP from being healed. It was a real shame that Zhang Yang's party did not have one more player who could inflict {Destructive Smash}.

{Destructive Smash} had a cooldown time of 8 seconds, and its effects would last for 10 seconds. In theory, they could inflict all three of the bosses with {Destructive Smash}. However, both of them only had 2 seconds to spare. Furthermore, Dolor the Thief was extremely tough to detect, for he was always in stealth. There was little to no room for them to make the strike. None of these bosses was a good fight!

Rayleigh's Defenses were too strong, Cherry was always using the area knockback skill, as for Dolor the Thief, he had been sneaking around, and had been stunning players whenever and wherever he wanted to! There was no room for a perfect attack!

Luckily, the party's attacking power was stronger than Cherry's healing power. The second {Holy Starburst} had only healed themselves for around 8%, while the team was able to take off 27% of the bosses' HP. Comparing the damage to the healing ratio, it was nothing to be worried about.

50%...

"Foolish mortals! Pray to the Lord, and He shall deliver salvation!"

Rayleigh roared to the sky.

Boom!

Rayleigh stomped on the ground with his right leg and created a gold-colored aura beneath his feet. The light glowed brightest from where he stood and faded after 5 meters.

"Hey...I think that's my {Sanction}!" Endless Starlight cried.

"That can't be right. The boss is a Guardian. How could he have a Defender's {Sanction}!" said Lost Dream sarcastically, as he attacked. Right then, Rayleigh struck Endless Starlight with {Brutal Smash}, stunning him for 4 seconds and headed straight to the second aggro rank.

‘-10,000!’

‘-10,000!’

...

As the boss approached the group of melee attackers, the light around the boss had dealt 10,000 basic damage to everyone.

"Sh*t! It's really {Sanction}!" They cried in surprised and quickly ran from the vicinity of the boss.

"How could a Guardian have a Defender's skill?" Fatty Han cocked his head.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That's probably because the boss might be a Defending Guardian!"

"Wut?"

Everyone frowned. They were not sure whether Zhang Yang was joking if he was being serious. Only Wei Yan Er had voiced out and asked, "Is there such a class?"

After being stunned by the boss for 4 seconds, Endless Starlight had taken 4 seconds of {Sanction} damage. Good thing that he was a Defender with a high magic Defense. Out of the 10,000 damage, Endless Starlight had taken close to 5,000 damage instead. Still, he had taken 4 seconds of

{Sanction} and had suffered more than 20,000 damage, which did not require any immediately healing.

Rayleigh's {Sanction} skill was complicated. Occasionally, he would use it once every 10 seconds, forcing the party to move around endlessly, to escape the AoE skill. However, there was a trick in escaping the skill. There is a 1 second delay before the skill could inflict damage on a player. A player must be in the vicinity of the skill to receive the damage and will only continue receiving damage every second for a total of 10 seconds, if they continue to stand in the golden light. Once the light is seen beneath the boss, one could easily jump away to prevent any damage.

Unfortunately for Endless Starlight, who had to tank the boss, under the effects of {Brutal Smash}, would be stunned for 4 seconds, and will take 4 seconds worth of damage from {Sanction}.

Running around like rats being chased by a cat, the party had managed to bring the boss' HP down to 40%.

"Heretic will be destroyed! Snow storm! Bury the sinners in your snow!" Cherry cried.

White clouds suddenly formed around the battlefield, and had hurled sharp and long icicles! Each of them dealt the same 10,000 basic damage. The problem was worse, the area of effect, was as wide as 10 meters.

"Move away! Move away!"

Before any of them could even see where they were landing, Rayleigh's was there to attack, with his {Sanction} still active!

"What the f*ck! First, the Warrior has the Knight skill. Now the Priest has a Spellcaster skill! What's next? The Thief having Hunter's skill!? F*ck this!" Fatty Han madly yelled.

"D*mn! Don't jinx it! Stupid pig!"

Unlike a player's {Hail Storm} which required constant magic channeling. The boss's {Hail Storm} has only required a 2 seconds cast time of creating clouds above to continue hurling more sharp icicles down the earth, as the caster itself would be free to move around. In this case,

Cherry was able to move around to attack and cast {Holy Starburst}.

Everyone, including Zhang Yang himself, had to run around like cats and dogs. Out of the party, Endless Starlight had the short end of the stick. Once he was stunned by the boss, he would be susceptible to both {Sanction} and {Hail Storm}. He would be killed by all the attacks!

Zhang Yang checked the situation and found that he was ranked second, behind Endless Starlight in the aggro list, for Rayleigh. "Starlight! Kite the boss away!"

Previously, Zhang Yang had dragged all three bosses together to inflict enough aggro and to maximize damage dealt by {Horizontal Sweep} and {Tornado Cleave}. However, now that two bosses had revealed a new skill, the strategy to optimize usage of the two AoE skills was no longer worth its toll.

"Got it, boss!" cried Endless Starlight. He then dragged the boss away to the opposite direction. Now that he had kited him away from Cherry, he could reduce the chance of him getting hit by Cherry's {Hail Storm}, since Cherry had shown the tendency to cast {Hail Storm} on an area with the most concentration of players.

30%...

"Fear not, for the Lord has laid down His blessing upon his loyal followers!" Dolor has finally come out of hiding. This time, as Fatty Han had speculated, Dolor had taken out a longbow and had fired one single arrow into the sky. The arrow then glowed with an intense radiance and burst into countless light arrows which fell back down to the earth, targeting the area with the most players.

It was another barrage of attack which dealt the same 10,000 basic damage.

Everyone started to run around, again! They were so mad and tired at the unfairness the bosses had displayed. First, they fought with human-like cooperation, now they had cheating skills which could deal AoE attacks! None of that was fair!

"The Lord's judgment shall be delivered!" All three bosses cried out in unison, casting the golden light, the ice clouds, and the barrage of the arrows.

Just when they had thought to solve the problem, a new one arose. After having Endless Starlight pull Rayleigh away, the boss would automatically leave Endless Starlight and runs back to Cheery and Dolor. After a series of trial and error, the party had discovered that 30 meters was the maximum distance between Rayleigh and the other bosses before he would start running back. The battle was designed that way, so that all three AoE skills would be stacked atop one another to increase the difficulty.

"This is the limit guys! I can't kite him any further. You guys will have to make do with it!" cried Endless Starlight.

"How troublesome!" said Fatty Han as he continued to fire arrows.

The only advantage that Zhang Yang could find was the HP. Luckily, the bosses were only Yellow-Gold tiered. All of the HP combined would only be, at most, 9,000,000. If they were Violet-Platinum tiered, it would be a whole lot more troublesome. Probably, even losing the fight before 50%!

20%...

10%...

The AoE multi-target magic attack skills were strong, but the damage inflicted on every target was not too life-threatening. The healers of the party were still able to keep everyone alive and well. However, it took so much effort that their MP expenditure was off the charts. Fantasy Sweetheart had already emptied her MP gauge for a number of times. Han Ying Xue had to step up to heal Endless Starlight many times around, or he would have already died!

The final push arrived when the boss was left with only 10%, and so was Han Ying Xue's MP bar.

"Are you sure we're not using {Dance of Heaven and Earth}?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"No." said Zhang Yang even when he was tempted to. "There're still five more bosses to go. We must keep our trump card for the worse! Please hold on! How long till you can use an MP potion?"

"21 seconds!"

"Fantasy?"

"38 seconds."

Zhang Yang nodded his head and call out to Endless Starlight. "Starlight! Come to me! Use your {Vanguard's Aggression}!"

"Got it, boss!" Endless Starlight dashed towards the center of the party and activated the skill there. A bluish-white barrier expanded 3 meters out from where he stood.

Upon activation of the shield, all bosses had cast their AoE onto the crowded party. Since {Vanguard's Aggression} was used, each of the bosses' skill had only managed to damage the party member with more than 1,000 damage.

There was a change in the skill. Before the patch, the skill was made to look like a stationary barrier. This time, the skill was like a user's aura. It could be moved when the caster did.

6%...

After Endless Starlight's {Vanguard's Aggression} ended, Zhang Yang took over and used his, and also {Shield Wall}.

2%...

"The Lord shall beseech eternal life upon his followers!" Cherry cried. "Rayleigh, protect me!"

"I hear and obey! The Lord shall provide and serve!" Rayleigh cast {Sacrifice} on Cherry, as she started to chant {Holy Starburst}!

"Oh no!" Zhang Yang panicked. "Kill the boss, quick! End this fight before the boss could cast that skill!" Zhang Yang jumped at the boss and activated {Killing Cleave}.

Due to {Sacrifice} protecting Cherry, the damage was dealt by Rayleigh. However, it was still directly hurting Cherry since all the bosses shared the same HP bar. Zhang Yang and his team would have to deal 180,000 in 5 seconds to prevent Cherry from finishing her chant for her healing spell. Yet, during this decisive moment, two of the healers had already expended all their MP and could not do anything!

150,000! 110,000! 70,000! 10,000!

Besides their trump card, the party had used all their skills, small or big, they used it, as long as it dealt the strongest amount of damage in the shortest time.

5 seconds...

O!

Just as Cherry was about to strike her staff onto the ground to cast the light, the party had successfully depleted the boss' HP!

"Ack!"

"Ufffhh!"

"Urgh!"

Three thuds were heard as the three bosses fell to the floor.

"W-We've done it." Lost Dream dropped his daggers and fell to his knees.

Everyone did the same and fell to the floor due to their immense fatigue. This boss fight was too tiresome. Everyone sat down on the floor to relax for a moment. But not for Wei Yan Er.

She is just like a chirpy little plaything, with a perpetual mood of seeking joy in everything. Giggling and laughing with the happiness of defeating the bosses, the little brat skipped and hopped over to the loot.

Chapter 425: Requiem

"Weepee! I hope that the bosses will give us some awesome stuff!" said Wei Yan Er with an innocent smile.

Zhang Yang, still huffing from the fatigue of the fight, said, "Don't get your hopes high girl, lest you be disappointed. If Yellow-Gold bosses drop Violent-Platinum gears, I'd be running all day searching for them! If the boss does drop Yellow-Gold equips, then...wait for it. There're no Yellow-Gold equip stronger than a Violet-Platinum!"

Wei Yan Er listened but Zhang Yang had already lost her halfway through his explanation.

Daffodil Daydream interjected in and said, "Yan Er, don't worry too much. A Yellow-Gold drop is still worth a lot of money!"

Only after Daffodil Daydream had explained it that way, Wei Yan Er had smiled and walked away happily.

"Daffy. I heard that you're moving out of your old house?" asked Han Ying Xue, while waiting for the little brat to pick the loot.

"That's right. Before guild master had hired me, my previous job's salary was too low for me to have a room of my own. That is why I have been sharing a room with someone else. However, I was having a bad time, since my roommate is a lazy, sloppy...woman."

Daffodil Daydream had suddenly got agitated. There was a glint of anger in her eyes.

"We had already agreed to clean the place once a day, on alternate days. However, when it was her turn to do the cleaning, she would always give all sorts of excuses to skip the work! In the end, I had to do it myself. The girl had always been taking advantage of me. Whenever I did some cooking, she would always invite herself for dinner and eat for free. Worst of all, she would leave without even saying thanks! If I were to have one of her fruits in the fridge, she would be nagging at me for a week!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Everyone was stunned. Never have Daffodil Daydream expressed herself at that level of magnitude, besides trashing Endless Fantasy.

"Well. There're 9 billion people in the world and you've just happened to bump into one of the scrappiest!"

"What a tool!"

"I'd slap her but I'd rather not get dungs on my hands."

Everyone nodded their head.

"I'm not finished!" said Daffodil Daydream. "Last week, when I had not logged into the game due to a major flu, I had asked for her help to get some medication but she didn't even care! That b*tch even blasted the stereo for the entire day! GRAH! I'm so mad!"

"Now that I have some money in my bank account, I decided to get myself a room of my own, and live there peacefully!"

"Sister Daffy, why don't you come to Zhao Su?" said Wei Yan Er. "It so happens that noobie wants to buy a house. Let's get a bigger one and live together!"

Huh?

Zhang Yang frowned at the little brat's endless means of disrupting his peaceful life. On the other hand, there was a slight happiness in Daffodil Daydream's eyes. She looked interested but did not say anything.

Han Ying Xue joined the conversation and said, "Daffy, my girl. Living alone is not safe for a girl. Come and live with us. I'd say, the more the merrier! Plus, it's easier for us anyway!"

Daffodil Daydream smiled happily and nodded her head. "I'll get a plane ticket tomorrow, then."

Zhang Yang literally cried. These three women had made their decision without Zhang Yang's opinion. Han Ying Xue had invited Daffodil Daydream to live in his house without asking him first! He then sent a private message to Han Ying Xue saying, "Aren't you a little worried about her making a move on me?"

"Please, don't flatter yourself. You're not a rare specimen and not every woman would want you! Then again, if she does make a move, could she even compete with me?" said Han Ying Xue. She then winked and sent a flying kiss to Zhang Yang, which made his heart skipped a beat. It was of fear.

"You minx, don't play with fire! I'm still staying with you under one roof!" said Zhang Yang with anger.

"Come at me! I'm not afraid of a monk! By the way, I never lock my door when I sleep. You already know that I wear nothing beneath the blanket," said Han Ying Xue with a sinister smile.

"Tch. Prepare to get dirty tonight, then."

"Oh please. Like you would."

Wei Yan Er had picked up three hammer fragments and had given them all to Endless Starlight. She had also picked up two rather strong Yellow-Gold equipment.

[Abyssal Mask] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +302

Strength: +121

Dexterity: +274

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 90

"Phew! These Level 90 equipment sure are strong!" said Fatty Han.
"That's probably worth a mountain!"

"Erhm. Fatty bro. Could you please be a little more open-minded? Why are you always thinking of money?" said Fantasy Sweetheart. Since they both were in the secondary party, her relationship with Fatty Han was as close as Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream. Close, but not too close, like Han Ying Xue.

"Perhaps, he's trying to earn enough money to get a certain part of him enlarged! HAHAAHAHA!" said Endless Starlight.

"WHAT!? I don't need to get it enlarged! I can prove it to you! Mine is the biggest! The biggest!" Right then, Fatty Han proceeds to strip all his equipment.

"Stop! Please Stop! Alright! You have the biggest one! Alright!" said Endless Starlight. If anyone laid eyes on that Fatty Han's manly part, no one would have any appetite for a week!

Everyone laughed it off.

[Hell's Lord Chest Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +312

Strength: +121

Dexterity: +60

Equip Effect: Absorb 115 damage on attack.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 90

"Tank's equip! Hell yeah!" cried Fatty Han, whilst jumping with joy. Fighting a boss would definitely require a strong tank. Thus, tank equipment were always expensive, especially strong ones. It was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang had worked so hard to get the recipe to craft the shield in the Level 10 dungeon.

"Hm...I'd say, it would be worth 300,000 to 400,000 gold coins." said Daffodil Daydream. She was the treasurer of Lone Desert Smoke, working with money had made her exceptionally sensitive to the appraisal of items.

"Jackpot!" Fatty Han screamed.

This was the benefit of being ahead, in terms of level. Having a higher level than the average player gave you the advantage of farming higher

leveled equipment. One could sell the highest leveled equipment in the game before anyone could and would manipulate the economy. On the other hand, when players are already reaching Level 90, how much could the Level 60 strongest sword could be sold for? When it first appeared, it could be sold for the same price as the chest plate, but now, it could go for as much as 10,000 gold coins.

"Have you noticed anything? Ever since we had fought here, the number of equipment drops have been getting lesser and lesser!" cried Endless Starlight.

"Yeah!"

Level 80 Yellow Gold bosses would normally drop 2 to 3 Yellow-Gold equipment and 6 to 8 Gray-Silver equips. However, in Level 90 maps, Julio had only dropped 1 Yellow-Gold equipment, and 2 to 3 Gray-Silver drops. It was a significant drop in value.

The Three Saints had dropped 3 Yellow-Gold equipment, and 6 Gray-Silvers. It was much less than what a Level 80 map boss would drop.

[Skill Book: Requiem]

Use: Teaches you [Requiem]

Class Requirement: Priest, Sacred Knight.

Level Requirement: 90

"What does this skill do?" everyone asked. Even the name of the skill seemed special for a Priest and Sacred Knight to have.

"Noobie tank, what is that skill?" asked Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly and said, "Even if I am a beta player, it does not mean that I know every single detail of the game!"

There were too many skills for every class and sub-class in the game. There was no way for Zhang Yang to remember every one of them, when he still had other details of the game to remember in the first place! At most, the only class that Zhang Yang could clearly remember was the Guardian's and Warrior's skill.

Having more skills did not harm a character. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart rolled the item, which was won by Han Ying Xue who learned it immediately after obtaining it.

[Requiem]: Sings a despair requiem. Converts all HP to MP. Limits to 1 HP at minimum. Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

"Holy....This is good skill! I won't have to worry about MP anymore!"

In normal circumstances, a player's HP would always be higher than their MP. In a state of full health, it could recover all MP back. Han Ying Xue had over 30,000 HP. She would only consume close to 800 MP to restore herself back to full health. Her maximum MP was 16,000 in total (Sincerity Set effect: Increases MAX MP by 5,000 points).

If the skill had a lower cooldown rate, she could practically have an endless supply of MP!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "It's good. Yes. But be careful when and before you use the skill. Don't stand in the attack range when you use it, or you'll be killed!"

"Please. Do you think I'm as dimwitted as that little brat?" said Han Ying Xue while she pouted her lips.

"Erhm...sister Daffy. What is dimwitted?" asked Wei Yan Er as she nudged Daffodil Daydream.

"Well...erhm...it's a synonym for stupid..." said Daffodil Daydream awkwardly.

"Hey! HAN YING XUE! CALL ME DEEWITED AGAIN AND I'LL CUT TIES WITH YOU!" cried the little brat. She had even mispronounced "dimwitted".

Everyone laughed. Hundred Shots quickly interjected everyone's happy time before things got out of control. "Guys, let's continue with the quest. Remember, the clock is still ticking. Even though the quest does not have a time limit, but time in real life is still flowing."

Everyone nodded and Zhang Yang was proud of what Hundred Shots

had turned out to be. The party hurried on, and made their way to the ninth pool.

The guards were as easy to deal with as before, making it easy for the team to proceed with the rescuing of the prisoners. After releasing them from the cages, the party proceeded to the boss room only to find it empty again, for the third time! Knowing that, the team had no reactions. Since it was already a norm, the team moved onto the next boss without hesitation. This time, before they knew it, the 10th boss was there, along with the 9th boss.

The pair was a couple. The man was stoic, bold, well-built, and handsome. The woman was beautiful, tall, and had long red hair. Both of them were sitting in one chair, cuddling each other lovingly.

[Ezali] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples. Logan's wife.

[Logan] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples. Ezali's husband.

As it was with the previous group boss battles, Ezali and Logan shared the same HP gauge. However, this time, they were both Violet-Platinum tier, with a massive 19,000,000 HP!

"Yes! Finally! Violet-Platinum!" everyone was excited at the opportunity of fighting a Violet-Platinum boss. However, they had only seen the rewards of it. Neither of them besides Zhang Yang had a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment. They were blinded by the rewards, but not the path

to getting it.

"Looks like we are lucky to have, not one, but two Violet-Platinum bosses! It seems after the 9th and 10th, from here on out, the bosses would be all Violet-Platinum!"

"Haha! One Sword Stroke can suck my d*ck! He would be jealous of us!"

"Sigh...why must there be two of them! Why can't they just live alone!" said Han Ying Xue. She had always loved to slack in battle and heal only with {Regeneration}. She hated battling tough opponents since they required actual, constant healing!

"Starlight. Which one would you take on?" Zhang Yang asked with a smile.

"Heh! I'm surprised that you still need to ask me, boss. I'll take on the woman!"

"Haha! I like your style! Perverted fox!" cried Fatty Han.

"Bro! You're calling me a pervert? It's like a pot calling a kettle black!" said Endless Starlight.

"Oh please shut it! Both of you have the brains of a tuna fish!" said Daffodil Daydream. "Could you at least think of a way to defeat the boss? We just had our butts served to us by three Yellow-Gold bosses! Right now, there are two Violet-Platinum, that will, probably, be even tougher to defeat?"

Everyone agreed with Daffodil Daydream's angry statement. Especially when she had confessed about being smacked around by the previous bosses. No one knew how the two boss this round would kick their sorry butts.

Zhang Yang laughed and calmed everyone down. "Relax. Never try, never know. Starlight! Take on the woman. I'll handle the wolve— I mean... Logan. Yeah. Sorry about that. Alright! Drink up your potions and let's get started."

Zhang Yang went ahead but waited for Endless Starlight to match his

speed. At the same time, both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight cast their first skills.

{Spear of Obliteration}! {Shield Toss}!

"What is this bunch of rats!?"

"You dare to defile the Holy grounds?"

The bosses were greatly annoyed at having their "cuddling" session disturbed by the party. Both of them stood up and growled loudly like a certain character from a certain Japanese animation film. There was a glow of light which seeped out of their body and soared upwards. At the beginning, the light shared the same color, but eventually, both Ezali and Logan gained their own specific colors of light. Logan released light of snow white, while Ezali emitted light of crimson red. Both lights expanded and shot out as far as 40 meters and remained there.

‘Ding! You have received the effect: Icy Touch (Stack 1). Receive 500 Ice Damage every 3 seconds, for 10 seconds. Icy Touch can be dispelled by Burning Touch after 10 stacks.’

‘Ding! You have received the effect: Burning Touch (Stack 1). Receive 500 Fire Damage every 3 seconds, for 10 seconds. Burning Touch can be dispelled by Icy Touch after 10 stacks.’

Since both of the bosses stood together, both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had received both Icy Touch and Burning Touch at the same time. Sadly, the melee attackers who were following Zhang Yang closely behind had also received both the DoT effects.

"Starlight. Kite your boss further away!" cried Zhang Yang as he kited Logan away from Endless Starlight as he kited Ezali in the opposite direction.

Even though Icy Touch and Burning Touch repelled each other, they still required a certain condition. The DoT effects had to be stacked by up to 10 stacks. Before the stack count reaches 10, none of the DoT skills could be dispelled and will continue to stack further.

One or two stacks posed no problem. But when the stack counts reach a

dangerous number, it could prove fatal.

‘Ding! You have received the effect: Icy Touch (Stack 2). Receive 1,000 Ice Damage every 3 seconds for 10 seconds. Icy Touch can be dispelled by Burning Touch after 10 stacks.’

Even though Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had retreated rapidly, the boss’ DoT auras were triggered once every 6 seconds. On the second time, Zhang Yang had only taken the Icy Touch, while Endless Starlight had only taken the Burning Touch.

"Snowy B*tch! Heal that boy! Fantasy! You’re with me!" said Zhang Yang. Since Zhang Yang’s equipment was much stronger than Endless Fantasy, Fantasy Sweetheart’s weaker healing could keep up with Zhang Yang. Vice versa, Han Ying Xue had the better healing power, which was suitable for Endless Starlight since his equipment was weaker, and would take more damage from the boss’ attack. If it was the other way around, it might be fatal for Endless Starlight. This matching was the best since it was to balance out the differences in both tanks and healers’ capabilities.

Fatty Han started laughing. "Little Yang. You can’t behave like that. I know the number 1 rule is "New is always better". But you can’t always stick to that!"

"What number 1 rule? I never said that! F*ck you, f*cking fatso! You could keep quiet and 1 hour and no one would call you a mute!"

"That’s right! Fatty bro always loves to make things up!" said Fantasy Sweetheart, pouting her cheeks.

Chapter 426: A Tight Battle Spot

Logan stomped down onto the ground thunderously, looking simply heroic. As he presented himself out like a prince battling evil dragons in a fairy tale, it had made him look more like the good guy and Zhang Yang and his gang looked more like a bunch of evil goons who were trying to cause havoc!

"Intruders, this is as far as you can go!" Logan spoke with a powerful voice. He then swung the long sword in his hand with brute force towards Zhang Yang! It was like a flash of lightning, flashing through!

But Zhang Yang was even quicker! His shield was raised up high right before the sword could even touch him.

{Block}!

‘-59!’

"Hell yea!" Seeing the number of damage reflected back on the boss, the gang could not help themselves but cheered for Zhang Yang. The attack of the boss was extremely fast! And to be able to react so fast, and to activate {Block} at the very last moment, like one millisecond, or maybe one centisecond right before the attack hits, required extremely great reflexes and perfect timing for one to do that!

Unfortunately, the defense of the boss was 2,600 points! Even though Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} that ignored 50% defense, but without 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, the boss would still have a total of 1,300 defense points. That was why the reflective damage from his shield was only 59 points.

{Cripple Defense}!

‘-319!’

{Shield Bash}!

‘-4,396!’

Zhang Yang smashed the first layer of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss

before he gave a 'free' blow of {Shield Bash} on the boss. That instant bash attack gave a satisfying damage!

With his initial move to secure the aggro of the boss all onto him, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of his gang immediately unleashed everything that they had, rounding up on Logan and attacking the boss madly with their weapons.

Endless Starlight was left in tears, "Why didn't you guys come and attack the boss that I'm kiting?"

"Hehe, you're too noob! It won't be safe for us!" Wei Yan Er giggled.

It actually wasn't because Endless Starlight was a noob or that he was not good enough for them, the main reason was that his equipment grade was a little weak compared to the equipment of the attackers on the party, like Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er. Tankers do not only rely on their skills to pull the aggro of their targets, they also need good equipment to support them in doing so. Without good enough equipment to boost their damage output to a satisfactory value, the attackers will be bringing more damage to the targets, and when that happens, the targets will switch their aggro onto the players that unleash higher damage values! In this situation, Endless Starlight will only lose the aggro of the boss over to any of the hard-hitting attackers!

Zhang Yang tried to comfort him, "The main reason being, Defenders do not have skills like {Cripple Defense}, so the physical damages that can be done to the boss will be reduced steeply!"

Endless Starlight immediately recovered to his complaining, self-righteous attitude, "That's right! The system is biased! All the good and useful skills have been given to the Warriors!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "You can't say that either because Knights can also learn a skill similar to {Cripple Defense} later. However, the skill is aimed at the magic resistance of bosses, so Knights will have to work closely with Warriors!"

"However, the bosses in {{God's Miracle}} have high defense, and very few of them have high magic resistance!" Hundred Shots added in a hurry.

Endless Starlight was excited to know that he could still learn a new skill regarding defense reduction, but his excitement was soon 'extinguished' by Hundred Shots' words. Everyone was laughing at him.

"Bunch of weak and pathetic humans, I can crush you all with only one of my fingers!" Logan let out an outburst of raging roars and began to swing his long sword even more violently. The sharpness of the blade cut open the air as swirls of air were formed into masses of air balls, emitting out some intense sonic booms!

"Come at me! Come 'crush' me with your fingers!" Fatty Han tried to provoke the boss, as he took the time he had left after shooting the boss, turning around and shaking his big fat ass at the boss! He even slapped his booty a few times without any sense of rhythm!

Logan was instantly enraged. Although there weren't any changes on the aggro list of the boss, the boss switched his target to Fatty Han all of a sudden and pointed one of his fingers towards Fatty Han. The fingertip of that finger of the boss seemed to have a bloody vague light glowing on it.

Fatty Han laughed as he saw how the boss reacted, and then he showed the boss his middle finger, "Who doesn't know how to pose? Haha!"

"You imbecile! You must die!" Logan shouted, and a stream of light radiating in the color of blood was shot out from his fingertip, straight at Fatty Han at a very unusually high speed!

Switch!

The attack landed on Fatty Han, but a damage value of 14,694 points appeared right on top of Zhang Yang instead!

Fatty Han was very shocked. If it wasn't for Zhang Yang activating {Vanguard's Aggression} on him in time, he would have to suffer the damage. Although he wouldn't die just yet, he still carried 6 layers of {Touch of Frost}, that had placed him in a very dangerous situation! And Fantasy Sweetheart was focused on healing Zhang Yang as her priority target, she would only throw a {Regeneration} onto the other players around and activate {Mending Prayers} to heal a player nearest to her at random. So, it would not be possible for her to cast the tanker aside and

focus on healing any other attackers!

After Logan struck out that attack, he no longer put his attention on Fatty Han and turned his attention back on Zhang Yang.

"Brother fatty! Please don't provoke the boss without any reason!" Fantasy Sweetheart was not Han Ying Xue. Although she had been tagging along with Zhang Yang and his gang for a while and had obtained quite a number of good equipment, she was still no Han Ying Xue. The main reason being due to the number of skills she had been far lesser than the skills that Han Ying Xue had. So, whether it is her capability of emergency healing, or to sustain the endurance of the entire party, she would still not be as good as Han Ying Xue.

The little lady was so busy that she did not even have time to scratch her head! She was currently required to heal Zhang Yang with everything she got, while having to heal the others with her {Regeneration} whenever she is able, to prevent the effect of {Touch of Frost} from further reducing the health points of her remaining party members - other than Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed, "That should be a random skill from the boss. It should be a coincidence that Fatty Han was struck. Maybe the boss was already trying to use the skill on us randomly, and Fatty Han went on to provoke him! Haha!"

"Haha! Wretched fatty! Literally 'an open mouth having the tendency to catch flies in the mouth!' Wei Yan Er was making fun of Fatty Han.

'Ding! You have been affected by Touch of Frost (10 Layers), receive 4,500 frost damage every 3 seconds, lasts for 10 minutes. When Touch of Frost has been stacked up to 10 layers, it can be deactivated with Touch of Flame!'

The battle went on for 60 seconds, and both effects of 'Touch of Frost' and 'Touch of Flame' had been stacked up to 10 layers! Each of them will be receiving 5,000 damage every 3 seconds, but for a healer to heal all 10 of them - it's a heavy task!

Zhang Yang pulled Logan over towards Endless Starlight, "Starlight, time to undo the effects of the skills by stacking them together!"

"Roger!"

The two tankers who were kiting a boss of their own began to move towards a point where the two of them would intercept. The other members of the party were naturally following them closely. In just a short moment, they met with each other at the intercept point, and so did the two bosses!

Boom!

A frosty white stream of light emanated right out of Ezali, while a scorching crimson stream of light emanated right out of Logan. Then the lights slid across the head of everyone around.

‘Ding! You have been affected by Touch of Frost (1 Layer), receive 500 frost damage every 3 seconds, lasts for 10 minutes. When Touch of Frost has stacked up to 10 layers, it can be deactivated with Touch of Flame!’

‘Ding! You have been affected by Touch of Flame (1 Layers), receive 500 frost damage every 3 seconds, lasts for 10 minutes. When Touch of Flame has stacked up to 10 layers, it can be deactivated with Touch of Frost!’

Everything went according to plan, and Zhang Yang and his party members were able to loop the effects on them from ‘10 layers’ all the way back to ‘1 layer’ for the first time, and now they just had to wait for the effects to stack up to 10 layers before they do it again. As long as they can repeatedly loop the effect cycle by splitting up and regrouping at the right timing, it didn’t matter if the health bars of the bosses are very long. It was just a matter of time before the bosses have to give in and die!

"Phew! Finally, we have come across two bosses that are easier to fight!" Fatty Han let out a breath of relief.

However ---

"Logan, hurry up and get rid of these useless pests!" Ezali was getting impatient.

"Yes love, I shall follow everything you planned for!" Logan replied her immediately.

The two bosses raised up their long swords in their hands and clashed the two swords into each other. Two streams of lights, the white one gushed into the body of Ezali while the red one gushed into the body of Logan.

‘Ding! Ezali has acquired Defiant (1 Layer), physical attack increased by 10%!’

‘Ding! Logan has acquired Defiant (1 Layer), physical attack increased by 10%!’

The two bosses instantly acquired an additional beneficial effect on them as they were raising up their swords up in the air, and let out some raging roars!

"What the f*ck! Your mouth! You f*cking wretched fatty!"

The two bosses split up again and the battle returned to the previous rhythm. The only difference was that the physical attack of the bosses had increased by 10%. Fortunately, the damage of the debuffs {Touch of Frost} and {Touch of Flame} were not increased as they were considered as magic type attacks!

The shared health bar of the two bosses was currently at 87%.

Zhang Yang made a rough calculation in his own mind. At their current situation, it would require them to repeat the cycle for 8 times in order for them to empty out the shared health bar of the bosses! After 8 times of this repetitive cycle, the physical attack of the bosses will increase by 180%, boosting their basic attack up to about 38,000! Let alone potions, the healing capability of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart would not be able to catch up with the damage done to their party members!

And if they don't kite the two bosses to intercept and meet each other, then the effects of {Touch of Frost} and {Touch of Flame} will be stacking up indefinitely until the healers no longer can keep with their healing!

What the f*ck! This situation is like pushing people to choose whether to jump off a building or jump into a river and drown! Neither of the choices were beneficial!

"Zhang Yang! We will not make it if this goes on!" Zhang Yang wasn't the only person to see the problem. Hundred Shots quickly spoke to Zhang Yang about it.

Zhang Yang nodded, "Maybe it's time! Everyone! Take your [Power Potion] and get ready, it's time we hold nothing back and activate our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} together!"

They could still crunch their teeth together and get through the previous bosses without much of a problem, but these two bosses had an extremely long shared health bar, or maybe it's just too long!

Everyone followed Zhang Yang's instruction and took their [Power Potions], and then they unleashed their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} and other whatsoever hell onto the bosses.

In the brief 10-second of time, the two bosses were inflicted with a massive number of damages, however, those were just a number of hits. Even though everyone had already taken [Power potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. they could only inflict a damage of 140,000 to the bosses. Yes, it is indeed a disastrous damage for the players, but for a boss with an extremely long health bar, especially having a shared health bar with another boss that made it even longer? No so much. They only managed to reduce the shared health bar of the bosses by 7%.

Zhang Yang was trying to take out all of the scrolls available in his inventory as he was holding on against the boss. He would just throw any scrolls that can reduce attributes or stats onto the boss, as he kept on using the scrolls that can increase damages onto all of his party members! In short, he was clearing out everything in his possession in an attempt to take down the bosses!

The reason he was willing to go so far was that he will not be able to meet Madran - The Son of God. And to not be able to meet Madran, he would never get his hands on the seventh piece of the [Dimensional Key Fragment]. Be reminded that all seven pieces of the [Dimensional Key Fragments] must be in one place to form a complete piece of [Dimensional Key] which was required to access the treasure vault in the

void!

Zhang Yang had been busting his ass trying to complete this main quest. And now that he is just one fragment short from completing the quest, he was never going to let everything go to waste, just because he was just trying to be stingy about the items in his inventory! So he's throwing everything he had out like a Santa Claus!

With Zhang Yang's contribution regardless of the price to be paid, the firepower of the entire party got boosted up by a notch immediately! They were able to bring down the health bar of the bosses even faster.

70%, 50%, 30%... as the shared health bar of the two bosses were reducing rapidly, the beneficial effect on the bosses' {Defiant} was stacking up layer by layer, and their damage output were increasing as the effects were stacking up!

"Here you go!" Zhang Yang tore the last piece of [Fatigue (Scroll)] on hand and threw it straight onto Ezali --- as he had more life-saving skills and better equipment compared to Endless Starlight, he made the choice to throw the final piece of [Fatigue (Scroll)] that reduced the attack of the boss onto the boss - Ezali, that Endless Starlight was engaging.

Chapter 427: Knock Down!

"Boss, I'll love you for eternity for taking care of me so much!" Endless Starlight let out a weird cry.

"Get lost!"

The effect of the {Defiant} had been stacked up to 6 layers, and the attack of the bosses had become a little too powerful for the players to handle. One single hit onto Zhang Yang could inflict about 20,000 to 30,000 damage! Fortunately, {Block} could immunize the user from any damage every 6 seconds, and it did not matter how strong the attack was. That reduced the DPS of the boss down to about 7,600 points.

Although this amount of DPS was still beyond the healing capability of Fantasy Sweetheart, with appropriate timing, using life-saving skills and some [Potions] on hand, Zhang Yang could still manage! On the other hand, since that the [Fatigue (Scroll)] had already reduced the attack of the boss by 10% and he had Han Ying Xue the super healer to back him up, Endless Starlight could still manage to hold on.

"Brothers and sisters! Increase your damage output even more! I've used up every single thing including the cost for marrying a wife and the cost of my own funeral! If we can't take out these bosses, I'm literally going to become naked poor!" Zhang Yang roared out in tears, trying to inspire his members one more time.

Everyone was laughing, as they already realized that it is already impossible to increase their damage output, even more, they were already doing far more than they have ever done in the past!

20%!

Enter the 'slaughtering' state, everyone suddenly got a leap on their firepower when they were supposed to not be able to perform even better already! Especially Wei Yan Er! As she was activating her skills without even thinking about the consequences, her damages were mostly critical attacks! Whenever she attacked, she inflicted the bosses with about 80,000, each hit, with her giant axe!

So there she went, elevating all the way to number one on the list of personal damage output! But the damage done by [Mounts] and [Servants] are calculated as part of the damage output of their owners. When the calculation goes that way, although the personal damage output of Zhang Yang was lower than that of Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu, with the aid of a Violet-Platinum [Mythical Turtle] and a [Devastator], he became the number one on the list of total damage output!

As Sun Xin Yu and the others did not have the skill {Pet Taming}, they could not use [Pet mounts] in an indoor environment. All they could do was to stare at Zhang Yang as his Turtle wreaked havoc in the indoor environment.

Wei Yan Er was irritated by the fact and she clenched her teeth, "Noob tank! I'll give you 3 days to get me one Violet-Platinum [Pet Mount]!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I won't do something that does not benefit me!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er continued to slash the boss without holding back and she said, "You give me a Violet-Platinum [Pet mount], and I shall give Cousin Snow or sister Sun, or maybe sister Daffodil as your wife! Or if you want, you can have sister Fantasy as well! You can pick!"

"No way you getting Sweetheart! She belongs to our second party!" Fatty Han quickly shook his head and responded.

Endless Starlight was triggered as well, "That's right! I can use my body and strip naked for the boss! But Sweetheart is the spiritual support of our second party! Boss cannot lay his finger on her, not even one finger!"

"F*ck! When did you guys learn to talk so much nonsense! Focus on the boss, now!" Zhang Yang roared in fury.

16%, 12%, 9%!

In the 'slaughtering' state, the health bar of the bosses was reducing very rapidly.

6%, 4%!

The effects of {Touch of Frost} and {Touch of Flame} on everyone had already stacked up to 10 layers once again!

"Don't mind about it anymore, just continue!" Zhang Yang did not bother neutralizing the effects this time around. The reason was simply because picking and rolling would consume a lot of time, which would undoubtedly prolong the battle even further. Now they needed to end the battle as soon as possible, so there was no time to waste at all, not even one small millisecond!

3%

"The followers of the gods will never perish!"

"Devotion of faith will bring us back to life once more!"

The two bosses began to state their final words as if they already knew they are going to meet their doom.

2%!

It still remained uncertain if Zhang Yang and his gang members would win for sure! The two bosses were still left with a total of 380,000 health points on their shared health bar. If any of the tankers suddenly fell and died, it would give Logan and Ezali enough time to slaughter up everyone for a couple times over!

1%

As they are on the brink of tasting victory, everyone was even more focused on slashing and bringing the bosses down to their knees. There was once a wise man who said, the last part of an endeavor is the hardest to finish. If they are to be wiped out by the bosses when their health bar is only left at 1% health points, everyone will surely sink into depression!

0%!

Finally, the health bar of the two bosses had been emptied out! As the two bosses let out a miserable cry, both of them collapsed onto the ground at the same moment.

The moment right after the bosses were dead, everyone quickly sat down

and had their [Snacks] to heal up. They were all carrying 12 layers of the negative effects on them, half of them were carrying {Touch of Frost} while the remainder were carrying {Touch of Flame}. Every single one of them was inflicted with 6,000 health points in every 3 seconds, and the effects would last for 10 minutes!

"What the f*ck, man! One [Snack] cost 10 gold coins and it's more expensive than a meal of fast food already!" Fatty Han revealed a very painful expression on his face, like he just felt a sting in his heart! So by the end of the day, he decided not to use any of his {Snacks}. Because one death only reduces 10% durability of all equipment, and it only takes about 50 gold coins to repair them all. Although one [snack] seemed to be cheaper than the repair fee, the problem was that the DOT effects on them lasted for 10 minutes long! It meant that each of them had to take about 30 [Snacks] to stay alive until then! So it would be wiser to just die and respawn later if a player ever wanted to save some money.

The effect of these two negative effects cannot be deactivated with skills like {Warrior's Will}, {Ice Barrier}, and {Sacred Protection} as well. So, there are only two ways to stay alive while carrying these negative effects. One, is by having [Snacks], and other than that, either - players are being healed by healers, or they will have to report themselves back at the nearest graveyard.

"Sis, heal me up while I pick our loots up." Wei Yan Er could not sit still anymore while knowing that their 'trophies' were still lying on the ground. So, she quickly went up to pick up all the equipment and the items the two bosses had dropped.

[Frosty Freeze Boots] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +151

Intelligence: +137

Spirit: +60

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"This pair of boots is not bad at all, having no rubbish kind of attributes!" Zhang Yang nodded.

Unfortunately, the three professions that required clothing armor have not yet reached Level 90 yet. Although Daffodil Daydream called it and took it for herself, she would not be able to equip it for the moment. However, the player with the lowest level among them was Fantasy Sweetheart, and she had already reached Level 87, while Sun Xin Yu had just been elevated up to Level 89. That being said, everyone was not far from becoming Level 90 already.

[Robe of Lividity] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +302

Intelligence: +274

Agility: +121

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

The attributes of the equipment are very good, but when everyone saw the shocking name of the equipment, everyone was looking at each other. They were all shocked by the special design of the equipment.

"At least pretty ladies will not be wearing this piece, I guess!" Endless Starlight took up the robe and turn the robe around to take a closer look. In {God's Miracle}, it did not matter if it is a robe or a dress, the equipment will show out as a robe on its appearance when male players equip it, while the equipment will show out as a dress on its appearance when female players equip it.

The robe seemed to be unclean as if it has not been washed for very long, and there are patches of plaque on the chest part, the back part and the butt part of the robe. There was an uncomfortable vibe just by the looks of it. Male players did not care so much about appearance, so they

could just put it on. But for the ladies who worried about every single inch of makeup on their faces, they would definitely die first then put it on.

Unquestionably, Han Ying Xue and the ladies shook their heads, decisively refusing to take the robe. So, this robe could only be sold at the Little Merchandise.

"What a waste!" Zhang Yang kept the [Robe of Lividity] into his inventory. Judging by the attributes alone, this robe was definitely the best Level 90 Yellow-Gold cloth armor there is, in the current game!

[Crimson Blaze Hand Guards] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +318

Strength: +91

Agility: +210

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

After seeing the attributes of the handguards, Fatty Han widened his eyes and stared straight at it, "What exaggerated attributes!"

In {{God's Miracle}}, equipment for the head, the chest, and the leg added the most value of attribute points to a player. The gloves and the boots, handguards, and greaves? Not so much. They only added half of the attribute values to a player even though they were the same grade, same level as the equipment of the head, the chest, and the leg. Next were the necklaces, capes, and rings. These equipment added even less value of attribute points to the player, about half compared to the handguards and greaves.

Compared to the [Frosty Freeze Boots], the attribute points that this [Crimson Blaze Hand Guards] can provide is almost two times that amount! It seemed that Violet-Platinum grade equipment are really so much more powerful!

But, after tossing the dice to decide who gets it, this pair of hand guards

went to Lost Dream, and Fatty Han could only drool on as he witnessed Lost Dream keeping the equipment into the inventory.

[Perfectly Smithed Greaves] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +635

Strength: +181

Agility: +90

Equip: Absorbs 179 damage points when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

The moment when the attribute points of this equipment were presented, it was Endless Starlight's turn to widen his eyes and stare straight at the equipment piece, "Great stuff! What an incredible power up it would give!"

Zhang Yang smiled, and then he took the equipment over from the little girl and threw it to Endless Starlight, "I already have my [Titan Set Armor], I'm not going separate my Armor Set pieces to equip this. So you can have it."

Normally, tanker equipment that gives agility attribute points should go to Warriors, while tanker equipment that gives intelligence attribute points should go to Knights. But, the main attribute of a defensive equipment that tankers seek were the vitality attribute points and the damage absorption points. Because some mere agility and intelligence attribute points would not make much difference for a tanker.

Other members had given up on tossing the dice, so Endless Starlight got to keep the much-wanted equipment.

Unfortunately, the two Violet-Platinum bosses only dropped two pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment. Everyone was ranting and complaining about how stingy the system was. They felt that they had put much more effort and deserved better than that!

There were 4 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment in total. Other than the {Frosty Freeze Boots} and the {Robe of Lividity} that came out earlier on, the other two Yellow-Gold equipment were a little underwhelming to look at as their attribute points were a little weaker. The gang basically ignored the two pieces. Of course, the two fragments of [Hammer of Sanctions - Body Hammer] were nevertheless presented to them as their rewards as well. So from there on, there were finally 10 pieces of fragments of the [Hammer of Sanctions] in the inventory of Endless Starlight!

"I believe that the bosses in the upcoming battle won't be squeezed in one stage anymore, would they?" Fantasy Sweetheart was speaking out of her hopes.

"Very hard to tell!" Wei Yan Er began to speak her 'special' mind out loud, "And the final boss might come out together with the two remaining bosses!"

If that's the real case, everyone should just wash their heads and get ready to die!

As the gang proceeded forward, they killed a couple dozens of monsters and completed the great rescue of the Followers by the 11th Blood Pool.

With their restless hearts, everyone charged into the boss stage to meet the boss.

A middle-aged man wearing a set of red-blood armor stood right in the middle of the room, with an unusually awesome aura. The man was very tall and sturdy, and his two arms that were exposed on the outside of his armor were so thick that they were comparable to the size of an ordinary man's thigh! His hands were holding a hammer that was half of his own height, and he had golden hair that was about one foot long, floating softly in a gentle breeze. There were strange looking runes on the hammer itself, blinking from time to time, looking extremely mysterious.

[Roxburgh, the Warbringer] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples, representing the strongest force.

"Luckily, it's just one boss this time!" the gang let out a breath of relief.

"Don't let your guard down so soon. Although it's just one boss, this boss is definitely not going to be easy to take on!" Hundred Shots reminded the gang to stay cautious.

"Let's get on with this and complete the 'Breakthrough the Cage of Prison' quest! This quest has a limited time frame!"

"Right, and we have no idea what kind of skills or tricks this boss has on his sleeves, let's test it out once and check it out!" Zhang Yang pulled out his sword and shield as he charged towards the boss with big steps.

So, it began with a with a {Spear of Obliteration} that shot out straight from Zhang Yang's hands.

Chapter 428: The Warbringer

Roxburgh, the Warbringer let out a burst of thunderous roars as he lifted up the hammer backhandedly. Then, he charged towards Zhang Yang right after he took up his hammer.

"You insolent piece of sh*t, how dare you touch me! The deity of the divine servants shall not be offended! Intruders must be eliminated at once!" Roxburgh had arrived in front of Zhang Yang with only a few steps, and he lifted up his heavy hammer up into the air and smashed it down with brute force!

Boom!

Although Zhang Yang had already raised his shield and blocked the attack of the boss, the strength of the boss is just too great! That smash actually staggered Zhang Yang back for about seven to eight steps back before Zhang Yang could regain his balance and stand firm! He could feel that his legs were numb, and it seemed that he could not even take another step at the moment!

"Hahaha! With that little strength in you, you dare to stir things up on my turf? What a bold move indeed!" Roxburgh wielded up his hammer once again and with a swift movement, he swung the hammer in the opposite direction and smashed at Zhang Yang again.

‘-12,721!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a high damage, and a small little crack appeared on the Titan Armor’s spot where the hammer hit! He was being staggered backward once again to the point that he lost balance in his stance!

"What a fierce boss! The hammer is like a high-speed moving truck straight on the face!" The gang was shocked to see Zhang Yang being pushed to a tight spot like this!

A boss with such brute strength, although its attacks were not really that terrifying, but the brute force of the boss had the effect to stagger players

and blast the players backward, forcing the players to lose their stance! And the automated attack function in this game required a 'Lock On' for the attack to be precise. So, when a player is staggered, there was no way the player can hit the target, no way at all!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang was already got used to handling these sorts of overbearing bosses in his previous life. Although he was being staggered about, but the sword in his hand would still land precisely on the body of the boss. He did not waste any single chance of attacking!

"Wow! My boss! You're doing awesome!" Endless Starlight was praising Zhang Yang.

This time, no one 'accused' Endless Starlight of trying to butter up Zhang Yang, because what he said was the truth that lay before their own naked eyes. If they were in Zhang Yang's position right now, they knew that they couldn't have done as well as he was doing right now!

"You weak imbeciles, pests! I will crush every single bone you have in you!" Roxburgh let out a course, mad laughter as the variety of runes on his hammerhead began to radiate in blinding light, an unintelligible, virtual shadow of a hammer suddenly swung towards Zhang Yang and landed solidly on him!

'-76,038!'

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a very high value of damage! Although his maximum health points had already reached 87,670 points, but he had been wounded earlier and was left with only about 68,000 hitpoints when he was hit by this attack! He was instantly killed on spot!

'Ding! You are killed!'

'Ding! You are resurrected by the {Rise Anew} effect!'

The main benefits of {Rise Anew} for the tankers was the ability to resurrect the tankers once, while still maintaining the aggro of their targets!

Everyone was frightened by what they just witnessed. What did they boss just do? Is it some kind of skill? How is the damage so high and powerful?

Zhang Yang still had about 80% of his health bar on him, and he was instantly killed in one single hit from the boss! Plus {Rise Anew} can only be used once per hour!

Zhang Yang quickly brought up the battle logs: Roxburgh used {Heavy Assault} and inflicted you with 76,038 physical damage (21,856 damage points reduced, 2,106 damage points absorbed).

The basic damage had reached over 100,000 points!

Zhang Yang frowned for a bit and said, "Starlight, come stand by me!"

"Alright!" Endless Starlight was not stupid, he had already figured it out, "So the damage of that hit from the boss can be shared?"

Zhang Yang nodded, "It should be, or else, who on earth can sustain that amount of damage points!"

Although the {Heavy Assault} of the boss had a clear method of telegraphing, the sign would only appear at the same time as the assault comes out. It would already be too late to activate {Shield Wall} by that time! Furthermore, no one knew how long the cooldown period of that skill is. If this skill could be activated once per half minute or sooner, then the cool down period of the {Shield Wall} would definitely not be enough to allow players to use {Shield Wall} frequently enough to counter this {Heavy Assault} from the boss!

However, if the damage of this hit can be shared among players, then it would make better sense at least. The maximum health points of Endless Starlight was somewhere up to 42,000 points, and he also had an 85% physical damage immunity. He could share the load of about 50,000 damage points once.

Endless Starlight came up and stood side by side with Zhang Yang. They tried to be as close together as possible.

Roxburgh gave another blow over onto Zhang Yang with his hammer. Other than inflicting about 13,000 damage points onto Zhang Yang, the attack also added one negative effect to him --- that attack was a{Destructive Smash}that reduced healing effects by 50%!

That actually made the situation worse and even more dangerous!

So, this {Destructive Smash} basically follows closely right after the activation of {Heavy Assault}. Even if the {Heavy Assault} does not instantly kill the target, it could still inflict a great amount of damage on the target. With an additional negative effect from the {Destructive Smash} that follows closely right after, players will be inflicted with a 50% reduction in their healing effects, and it would be much harder for the player to heal so much HP after being damaged by the powerful skill - {Heavy Assault}! Any tanker might snap anytime and die!

"Hahaha! Useless pests! Cry before your own demise!" Roxburgh laughed madly, and with a sudden rise of his heavy hammer into the sky, countless shadows of the hammer were radiated out into the surrounding like arrows!

‘Ding! Roxburgh unleashed the {Hammer Shadow Assault}!’

‘-19,800!’

‘-19,800!’

...

As the {Hammer Shadow Assault} struck them, everyone was inflicted with a basic damage of about 20,000 points!

"What the hell! This boss is just mean and violent!" everyone was shocked and exclaimed at the same instant.

A boss with super AOE skills such as Roxburgh does not fear being rounded up by players. At the current stage of the game, a basic damage point of 20,000 can directly kill at least 90% of the players in the entire game!

"Haha! So tell me, Roxburgh, what can you do other than brag!" Zhang Yang gave his sword a flourish, "I'm still standing here!"

"You bastard!" Roxburgh was enraged, and his face turned twisted and ferocious, "A mere mortal like you, I will smash with ease!"

"I'm waiting!" Zhang Yang slapped out a {Shield Bash} on the boss and

inflicted about 5,400 damage points.

"Useless pests! How dare you! You will regret it!" Roxburgh let out a mad roar and began to swing his hammer about.

Wei Yan Er could not help but to laugh, "Noob tank, you're so noob! You actually squabbled with the boss, an NPC, not a real person! You cracked me! You made my day! Haha!"

‘-36,038!’

‘-39,466!’

The runes on Roxburgh's hammer began to radiate brightly again, and countless shadows of hammer began to emerge from the surrounding and flew towards Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, inflicting the both of them with massive damage points!

"Haha! You were right! The damage can be shared!"

Everyone began to smile, because the most fatal skill of the boss was no longer a threatening factor to them! Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly healed up Endless Starlight, as he was only left with 3,000 health points on him after the attack. One more hit and he would have surely been dead!

Right after the {Heavy Assault}, the boss chained a {Hammer Shadow Assault} that made everyone yell in alarm.

"Haha! Feel despair! Cry in misery! And tremble before the absolute power!" Roxburgh saw that the gang was jumping up and down yelling for help, and he instantly burst into his mad laughter again. Then, he wielded his hammer and swung it towards Zhang Yang again.

90%, 80%... although Roxburgh has been acting powerfully all the while ever since they engaged him, the threat that he posed to Zhang Yang and his gang was not really that great --- of course, forgetting about the one moment where Zhang Yang was instantly-killed because they haven't understood the features of the {Heavy Assault}.

"Haha! This boss only knows how to brag!" Fatty Han laughed out loud

because he only needed to stand at the same spot and unleash everything that he had onto the boss without having to worry or think about anything. It did not require any pick and roll, or any formation at all! Undoubtedly, the difficulty of battling this boss was greatly reduced, and it suited the style of Fatty Han who loved to play as part of a team. As his damage output was not that bad himself, he was not ditched behind by the other 5 DPS profession players in the party.

Zhang Yang said, "After encountering so many hard bosses, now it's a good time to give us one boss that is easy to take on!"

"Hehe, picking up soft fruits, like soft persimmon! I love it!"

70%, 60%, 50%... Roxburgh only had one health bar, and it would not be enough to hold against so many players if his health was lower than 10,000,000 points. In just a brief moment of time, his health bar was reduced to below 50%. This boss didn't seem to have any other new skills, Roxburgh was just repeatedly spamming his {Heavy Assault}, {Destructive Smash}, and {Hammer Shadow Assault} over and over again!

For a party with regular equipment pieces on them only, the {Heavy Assault} and the {Hammer Shadow Assault} would have been fatal to them! Especially the {Hammer Shadow Assault}, that skill could wipe out every single DPS profession player with average equipment on them, which would later lead to the wipeout of the entire party! But, to engage with a top-tier party, Roxburgh could only sit back and wash some vegetables while waiting for the party to send him to his demise.

40%, 30%, 20%... the health bar of the boss was getting close to the bottom as they attack, as the boss had no chance to fight back at all before the strongest players in the entire China server!

"You damned pests! Cowards! Face me alone, if you dare!" the boss was beaten to the point that he could only roar in anger, waving his hammer around like the sunset was about to end, he was just trying to prolong the inevitable, for he was about to meet his end.

10%, 7%, 4%... finally, the final drop of health points of Roxburgh was depleted! After letting out an outburst of an angry roar, the boss collapsed

onto the ground heavily and dropped a few pieces of loot.

Although this boss had managed to K.O Zhang Yang once, being the boss that performed the best among the 11 disciples that they had encountered so far, the process of battling Roxburgh was actually so far the easiest boss battle, compared to the previous boss battles! This boss was only designed to test the equipment of the players. If the players fulfilled the requirement in terms of equipment, then this boss battle would become very easy. But, if the equipment of the players did not meet the requirement, well, no matter how many players are sent forth to the boss, they would all perish under the powerful skills of the boss!

After the boss died, Wei Yan Er walked up to pick up the gold coins and the loot with a joyous smile on her face.

[Boots of Loyalty] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +151

Strength: +137

Agility: +60

{Unidentified}

Level Required: 80

"Yo! This is one high grade pair of boots for DPS profession players, man!" Zhang Yang exclaimed. But of course, it would only be high grade, without comparing to other equipment of the Violet-Platinum class! But there weren't many Violet-Platinum equipment at the current stage of the game yet!

Wei Yan Er made a funny face and stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, you really are getting old now. You forgot that I have already acquired a [Titan Battle Boots] already, haven't you?"

"Oh! Then, you finally have 3 pieces of your Armor Set already then?" Zhang Yang asked her.

"Of course I do now! It gives me additional 500 points of strength!" Wei

Yan Er was feeling proud.

"Haha! No wonder your damage output today is so incredible, that explains it!" Zhang Yang smiled. With the current equipment Wei Yan Er had on her, 500 points of Strength could give her a boost of 10% attack.

"Humph humph humph! When was I ever weak? I'm always strong!" Wei Yan Er threw the boots over to Zhang Yang. Any equipment or item that no one wanted to claim would be thrown over to Zhang Yang. Then, Zhang Yang would take them and sell them at his Little Merchandise Shop for profits. Therefore, Zhang Yang had gotten stuck with another new nickname, the 'Rubbish Collector'.

[Mark of Remorse] (Yellow-Gold, Necklace)

Vitality: +76

Intelligence: +68

Spirit: +68

Equip: When you use a healing skill, there is a 10% rate to recover 100 mana points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

Unfortunately, everyone had an Armor Set Necklace piece on them already. So, Zhang Yang could only take the 'not-so-bad' healing necklace and sell it in the Little Merchandise Shop.

Right after that, Wei Yan Er picked up a hammer that had many rune signs around the head of the hammer. It looked very similar to the hammer that the boss wielded.

[Hammer of Raging Fury] (Violet-Platinum, One-Handed Hammer)

Attack: 1,312 - 1,712

Attack interval: 2.5 seconds

DPS: 605

Equip: After striking the target, there is a 2% rate to inflict 14,000

physical damage points to the target and other enemy targets around. This physical damage cannot be blocked or dodged!

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Huh! The special effect of this weapon is the downsized version of the {Heavy Assault} that the boss used!" Han Ying Xue took the hammer over from Wei Yan Er and then tossed it aside.

"What an incredible attack this weapon has!" Hundred Shots was praising the weapon, "This weapon is really worthy to be a Violet-Platinum weapon! It should have almost the same DPS as the [Sword of Purging Devourer] that Zhang Yang wields, after it is identified!"

"Unfortunately, it's a little on the fast side, so the damage of this weapon might be a little bit lower than expected."

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, "Starlight, do you want to take this hammer, or do you plan to try out your luck to see if the Hammer of Sanctions is a one-handed or two-handed after it's completed?"

"... I think I shall keep both, I'll use whichever that is better!" Endless Starlight was speaking without any sense of shame.

Everyone was laughing at him.

After passing the fragment of the [Hammer of Sanctions] over to Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang said, "Alright, let's make haste, and continue our quest. We only have to rescue one last batch of Believers, and that does not require us to battle any bosses at all, so we should be able to complete the quest quickly!"

The gang proceeded forward as they pushed on and arrived at the location of the final blood pool. After clearing up all the monsters in the area, they succeeded in releasing the Believers from all the cages that they came across.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Break Through the Cage of Prison, total death of Believers, 388. You have acquired 5,000,000 basic

experience points, and acquired an addition of 5,100,000 experience points!"

Everyone received the system notification in the same instance.

"Huh? Just experience points?" Fatty Han was feeling mistreated, "After battling so many bosses, and they didn't even give us a few pieces of equipment! What a stingy game developer!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This is actually an additional side quest. Whether we do this quest or not, we will also have to clear out the monsters in the areas we passed through earlier on. So, this is like a convenient ride for all of us, without having to do extra work! 10,000,000 experience points aren't that bad either. Just think about it, how many monsters do you need to slay just to get 1,000,000 experience points?"

"Now that you have laid it out so clearly, this quest is indeed a bonus for all of us!"

"Alright, let's go now, we only have two bosses left to deal with!" Daffodil Daydream was trying to hasten them up.

"Alright! Let's move!"

The gang proceeded forward.

Zhang Yang was actually more eager about getting the final piece of the [Dimensional Key Fragment], because he was just two steps away from getting it now!

The party charged into the boss stage and they laid their eyes on the final Disciple, right before them.

It was a middle-aged man with a very refined look, dressed in light gray robes, while holding a blue staff in his hand. He was not huge nor small in size, just the average size of a regular person.

[The Apostle of Wisdom - Shaloni] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 95

HP: 9,500,000

Defense: 2,600

Note: One of the 12 Disciples

Chapter 429: Shaloni

"Do you want me tank the boss?" Endless Starlight took the initiative to propose. He had just acquired two pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment. Although he still could not equip them, his confidence level had been boosted very much! Furthermore, the boss before them was a Spellcaster type boss, so it was also more suitable for a Knight to tank the boss, in theory.

Wei Yan Er could not help but laugh, "Hold up there, you have not even reached Level 90 yet! That means you can't even equip them yet! So, what are you trying to show off then?"

"Lost yourself in the excitement eh?"

"You people just love to blow me in the face!" Endless Starlight smiled sheepishly, and he also sucked up his butt cheeks while doing that.

"Argh---" the ladies could not bear to see him do that, so they shouted out in unity.

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and said, "Old rules, try it out first, figure things out along the way!"

"Silly Yu, just be careful, the effect of my {Rise Anew} is still under cool down period. It can only be used again after 5 minutes." Han Ying Xue reminded Zhang Yang.

"Alright, I'll keep that in mind." Zhang Yang nodded, and then he charged towards the boss at a high speed. As he was charging, he swung out his right arm forward and threw out a {Spear of Obliteration} straight towards the boss!

‘-4,382!’

Shaloni was inflicted with damage by the attack, and the attack succeeded in provoking the boss. Shaloni waved his staff up and aimed the tip of the staff at Zhang Yang, and shoof! A stream of dark light emanated out and formed a gigantic skull. The gigantic skull had its gigantic jaws wide open, and it seemed ready to crunch on Zhang Yang!

‘-14,694!’

The skull came through, and Zhang Yang was inflicted with a high damage value. Since the attack was a magical type, the skill {Block} was totally useless. Zhang Yang could not do his usual move, that is to activate the superb skill {Block} that immunized him from receiving damage, followed by a {Shield Bash} right after.

After the first attack landed on Zhang Yang, Shaloni began to move towards Zhang Yang with big steps. He spoke in a very low voice, "You little ants, how dare you crawl all the way in here! Roxburgh is a fool to allow ants to pass his defense, he was too weak! He is not worthy to follow in the footsteps of our ‘Son of God’!"

Wei Yan Er immediately reacted, "Stinky boss! What are you so proud of? You’re about to be stepped beneath our feet!"

"Haha! Other than the great gods and the great ‘Son of God’ who can make me lower my head, other mortals are just like dust to me!" Shaloni took a few steps back and took up his staff to point at Zhang Yang again, and then he sent another gigantic skull attack at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang kept moving backward until the boss moved forward to a spot about 3 to 4 meters away from the Turtle, before he charged to engage the boss. About 10 meters from the boss, Zhang Yang used {Charge} and clashed into the boss.

There it began. Zhang Yang began to pull the aggro of the boss, while the rest of the gang stepped up and unleashed their assaults on the boss. They channeled every single drop of their firepower onto the boss, as if they were unleashing tsunami waves and volcanic explosions onto the boss.

"Mortals, you can stop your useless act and struggle, tremble before the great power!" Shaloni raised his staff up high, and a casting bar of a 3-second chanting spell appeared right below the boss’s head. The spell attack was called the {Stardust Explosion}.

"A large ‘explosion’?" everyone was intimidated by the name of the skill for a while there. The Fatty Han said, "Little Yang, where should we hide?"

"...just follow my lead! From behind!" Zhang Yang almost got choked to death by what Fatty Han just said. This wretched fatty has experienced so many boss battles already, why is he still such a wimp?!

The boss finished the chanting of his spell very quickly. In just an instant, many oval white balls with smooth and shiny surface appeared all around the ground, they looked like a bunch of large white eggs standing straight up. Some of the white balls were crowded in some spots, but some were further away from each other. There was nothing else much about the situation.

The face of Zhang Yang immediately changed, the moment he saw these white balls, "Get as far away as possible from those white balls! Quickly! Do it now! Those white balls will definitely explode!"

Dodging around like a bunch of chickens dancing around, the gang realized that those 'eggs' were not really placed into the surrounded evenly, as some of the spaces between the 'eggs' were a little 'wide'. So, they quickly scattered out and scrambled, looking for a safe zone to stand.

5 seconds later!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

All of the white balls exploded at the same time, and the flashes of explosions were blinding! Fortunately, the radius of each explosion was only about two meters out. As long as they find a spacious spot in between the white 'eggs', they could dodge the impact of the explosions. On the contrary, if they stood in between the spaces where the white 'eggs' were concentrated around, they might even get 'lucky' and get blown up by two or three, or even four explosions at the same time!

As no one was blown up by this skill, Zhang Yang could not predict the damage that these explosions could cause to players. But, they would definitely cause super high damage, because regular skill attacks from bosses won't be 'cheap' on trying to kill the players! After all, the boss had already wasted 3 seconds to chant a skill, and they were given another 5 seconds to get clear of the explosion zones. If the damage of these explosions were not high and merely ranging by the thousands, then it

would be very humiliating for the boss!

Shaloni kept himself close to Zhang Yang, while trying to bash Zhang Yang up with his spells. As his regular attacks did not require any chanting period of time, he only needed to point his staff at Zhang Yang and launch his assaults at Zhang Yang. However, there was a 2 seconds cooldown for every attack that the boss launches, so, it might as well treat these cool down period as the same thing as 2-second of chanting time!

But, the benefit of using instant spells, is that players would not have the chance or the time to interrupt the boss with their long ranged attacks, because the boss can instantly launch the attack without having to chant!

"Hahaha! Let us have some fun!" Shaloni let out a loud laugh and raised his staff high up in the air, pointing it towards the sky.

Shoof shoof shood!

Suddenly, 13 streams of dark light were shot right out of the staff of the boss, burying themselves deep into the bodies of Zhang Yang and his gang, including the three pets among them!

'Ding! You have been affected by the {Touch of Soul}, lose your mind and blur the line between friends and foes, all damage from the player will be converted into health points of Shaloni, lasts for 10 seconds!'

After the system notification, black chains formed from dark lights appeared around the 10 players and the three pets! Their body masses were enlarged by a few times! Everyone lost control over their own bodies, and they could only see their own in-game avatars attempting to slaughter their own friends.

What that was even worse was that this skill could not be canceled or nullified! Although Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream activated their skills such as {Warrior's Will}, {Ice Barrier} and {Sacred Protection}, they were just wasting their skills. Well, trying was better than doing nothing.

Fortunately, after being turned into 'puppets', their attacks were greatly reduced. It did not matter whether it's the tankers, the DPS profession players or the healers, all of them became melee type players for the time

being. Every single attack only inflicted about 2,000 damage points, and the defense points of the players did not affect the damage received as well.

Shaloni did not take advantage of them as they were vulnerable 'puppets', he only stood aside and laughed like a madman. If the boss actually joined in and unleashed hell on them, then it would have become a total mess for them! Even Zhang Yang would be killed within the 10 seconds of chaos!

As they observed familiar faces hitting each other like enemies, everyone was filled with anxiety. And finally, the weird and fearsome moment of 10 seconds had passed! The chains around everyone vanished into thin air and the size of everyone's body had returned back to normal. They had finally regained control of their own bodies!

"Hahaha! Are you having fun yet?" Shaloni resumed his assault on Zhang Yang, pointing his staff, shooting black gigantic skulls that tried to crunch Zhang Yang alive.

"The boss recovered about 100,000 health points!" seeing that Shaloni only managed to recover about 1% of his health bar, everyone felt relieved. Actually, the calculations were simple enough for everyone to realize. The attack of everyone had been reduced down to about 2,000 points, and everyone was able to hit once every 2 seconds. Because everyone had been turned into melee type combatants, they would need to approach their targets in order to hit, which required time. Therefore, each of the players could only attack about 3 to 4 times within that 10 seconds.

However, although the 10 players and 3 pets only recovered about 1% of the boss's health, think about it, what would happen if more players were in this battle against this boss? If there were more players around, when the skill of the boss activates, surely the amount of health points that the boss can recover would be far more!

Furthermore, if there were too many players joining into battle this particular boss, then it would become much harder to dodge the explosions! The reason was simple, the 'safe zone' of the area was limited,

and the body mass of the players in {{God's Miracle}} could not overlap each other. If players cannot get themselves a spot in the 'safe zone', then they would have no choice but to suffer the impact of those explosions!

"I can see that the bosses in this area are very cocky! They love to show off and throw empty insults! Haha!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little girl, are you sure that you're not talking about yourself?"

"Humph! You stinky, noob tank! Are you asking for another big tortoise to be stuck on your back?" Wei Yan Er said fiercely.

"Alright, you win! Fine!"

"Ancient Demonic Souls, pay heed to my summons, and get rid of these disgusting pests!" Shaloni suddenly paused all his attacks and once again, he raised the staff in his hands up high in the air and began to chant a new spell.

'Ding! Shaloni has summoned Demonic Souls, lasts for 30 seconds!'

Immediately, 10 monsters with entirely black bodies dug themselves out from the ground. Their heads were especially huge, about one-third of the mass of their entire bodies. Their bodies were triangular in shape, and they had no legs at all, hovering in the air.

[Ancient Demonic Soul] (Normal, Summoned)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Hoof! The legless monsters began to float towards Zhang Yang and the gang. They weren't particularly fast, and they ignored the pets and went straight for the players.

"Hehe, what kind of funny business is this! Level 1 monsters? Are they here to serve us? Let me handle them!" Fatty Han finally felt like picking up soft fruits again. So, he released an arrow at one of the monsters that were floating towards them.

Pak!

The arrow landed on the Ancient Demonic Soul, and the monster shattered into pieces. But, the pieces then began to move and reform, becoming two Ancient Demonic Souls!

Seeing that Fatty Han did not believe in ghost tales and stuff, and that he was ready to shoot again, Zhang Yang quickly shouted, "Fatty! Stop!"

"Huh?" Fatty could not understand, "Little Yang, these monsters are just Level 1, what are you so afraid of?"

"Are you sure it is that simple?"

Just as they were arguing, Shaloni began to chant the spell for {Stardust Explosion}!

Pak pak pak! In just an instant, countless oval-shaped white balls, with smooth and shiny surfaces, appeared all around the ground just like before, filling up the area.

"Get clear! Get clear!" Everyone began to pick and roll, searching for safe spots.

This time, things were a little different. 11 Ancient Demonic Souls were pursuing them as they were trying to avoid touching the 'eggs'!

As they were in a hurry to search for a safe spot to avoid being blown up, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots did not manage to avoid the Ancient Demonic Souls that blocked their way forward. They charged through the Level 1 Ancient Demonic Souls, thinking that these low-leveled monsters would not inflict any high damage.

However!

‘-33,420!’

‘-34,180!’

Two high damages were inflicted upon Fatty Han and Hundred Shots! What a coincidence that the values of the damages were the upper limit of their health points! So, the two were out of luck and they were instant-killed on spot!

"Owh ---" the two Ancient Demonic Souls that killed Fatty Han and Hundred Shots suddenly expanded in size, and they opened up their dark mouths, screeching out chilling roars. After that, they began to pursue the other remaining players in the surroundings, at high speed!

[Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul] (Elite, Summoned)

Level: 95

HP: 300,000

Defense: 500

"Starlight, lure the two monsters in, and kite them!" Zhang Yang quickly made arrangements to handle the two Bloody Ancient Demonic Souls. Although the two monsters had acquired much more health points, it also meant that their attacks had become 'normal' as well!

"Understood!" Endless Starlight quickly activated his {Finger of Justice} and {Shield Toss}, hooking the aggro of the two 'new species' Ancient Demonic Souls over to him.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Right at that moment, the smooth white balls suddenly began to explode, spreading out blinding and glittering streams of white lights all around the area!

"Very good! Two dead! And more will follow! By the end of this, everyone will be dead!" Shaloni let out a thunderous, mad laugh.

Chapter 430: Ancient Demonic Souls

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han quickly reflected on what that just happened.

But what that had happened had already happened, nothing good would come from blaming anyone! Fortunately for the remaining surviving members of the party, the {Stardust Explosion} was over, leaving behind a spacious area for them to avoid being touched by the Level 1 Ancient Demonic Souls that had the ability to instant-kill!

Endless Starlight kited the monsters away to a quiet side of the area, while everyone else felt not hurry attack the two monsters, because these summoned Ancient Demonic Souls would just last for 30 seconds. So, all Endless Starlight had to do was to kite them around until the time was up, and let them vanish on their own.

Soon, 30 seconds had passed.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The summoned Ancient Demonic Souls let out a screech and vanished into thin air. However, the two Ancient Demonic Souls that already tasted blood did not vanish like the others, they were still beating Endless Starlight up!

"What the f*ck! So these Ancient Demonic Souls will no longer be restricted by the time limit and vanish! Let's turn our attention towards the little ones!" Lost Dream quickly said.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Everyone, DPS players! Focus fire on the two 'little ones'!"

Sun Xin Yu and the others quickly turned their attention over to the two Bloody Ancient Demonic Souls and began their heavy assault! As the healers on the party were experiencing tremendous stress in keeping everyone alive, they only had one choice, that was to slay the two monsters first. Only were they able to lighten the stress that was being placed on Lost Dream!

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were feeling even more embarrassed, as they were the ones who caused all this. If it wasn't for their carelessness, the others would not have to turn their focus away from the boss and onto the other two monsters instead. They had to do extra damage and extra healing just to take down the two monsters.

Although the two DPS players in Zhang Yang's party had been killed, Sun Xin Yu and the other 3 DPS players were very powerful. It only took 15 seconds for them to take down the first Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul! Fortunately for them, the monster did not die and reform back into two! Or else, the 'crime' that Hundred Shots and Fatty Han committed would have become even more serious!

However, when they brought down the health bars of the Bloody Ancient Demonic Souls to 7%, Shaloni suddenly let out a thunderous roar and raised his staff high up in the air, pointing it towards the sky again, "Hahaha! Let us have some fun!"

In just an instant, 9 streams of dark light shot right out from the staff of the boss, burying themselves deep into the bodies of Zhang Yang and his remaining gang members, including his pet Turtle!

'Ding! You have been affected by the {Touch of Soul}, lose your mind and blurs the line between friends and foes, all damage from players will be converted into the health points of Shaloni, lasts for 10 seconds!'

What the f*ck! The boss is using {Touch of Soul} at this time? What a great timing!

Everyone lost control of their avatars once again, punching and kicking at each other mindlessly, causing as much havoc as possible.

Fortunately, the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul did not lose its aggro on Endless Starlight. It was still beating on Endless Starlight without any moment of pause!

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

Everyone worriedly they kept their eyes on the health bar of Endless Starlight. If he was to be killed by the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul within

that 10 seconds, everything would become hell for them!

"Little Starlight! You better don't fall asleep!" Fatty Han was lying down on the ground in his soul state, but he had been entertaining himself, talking to Starlight.

"Brother Fatty, if I ever become a king, I shall take you in as my queen!" After being chained down and controlled by the {Touch of Soul}, Endless Starlight could not do anything other than to stare at the surroundings. So, he took the time to have fun with Fatty Han, as they began to talk nonsense!

9 seconds! 10 seconds!

The control has been lifted! Endless Starlight was only left with 892 health points! He was still alive!

Right before the palm of the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul could land on his face, Endless Starlight quickly activated his {Sacred Protection}, protecting himself with a semi-transparent force field that made him invincible for 5 seconds!

Ching Ching Chiang Chiang! Under the heavy assaults from everyone, the Bloody Ancient Demonic Soul had finally been slaughtered! And finally, they have gotten rid of the mess that Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had left behind for them!

Turning their focus back towards the boss, now!

"Ancient Demonic Souls, please answer my summons and get rid of these disgusting pests!" after a brief moment of battle, Shaloni suddenly paused all his attacks and once again, he shouted to the sky and summoned another 8 Ancient Demonic Souls from the ground!

Everyone had learned their lesson well from the first time, so no one was stupid enough to run into the seemingly harmless monsters. Everyone was avoiding any contact with the monsters, staying away from the monsters, as far as possible.

However, Shaloni would also activate his {Stardust Explosion} right after summoning these foul creatures, making the players dance even more

vigorously - like a bunch of loose chicken! Maybe the boss was designed to enjoy such a sight!

Pak pak pak!

In just an instant, countless oval white balls, with smooth and shiny surfaces, appeared all around the ground just like before, filling up the area. They may look nice and smooth on the outside, but they were deadly from the inside!

Zhang Yang frowned and said "Avoid touching the Ancient Demonic Souls. If you really can't avoid touching those explosive eggs, you can at least activate your life-saving skills to stay alive. Although I'd say that the explosions will still inflict great damage, it would definitely be better than getting killed by the Ancient Demonic Souls and turning them into something far more dangerous!"

Everyone nodded to express their acknowledgment, and they made it their first priority to avoid the Ancient Demonic Souls at all costs.

Boom!

10 seconds later, every single one of the oval white balls exploded! The white flashing lights were terrifying and beautiful at the same time!

Wei Yan Er was caught in one of the explosions as she was trying to avoid all the Ancient Demonic Souls that were pursuing her. Her health bar was reduced by a lot, about 20,000 health points lost!

"If I had known earlier, I would have rather been blown up than to feed myself to the monsters and make them stronger!" Fatty Han regretted charging straight into the monsters. If he was well and alive now, he would definitely be kicking the boss hard and contributing more now. If not for his 'dead' status now, he would have thumped his chest and stamped his feet to express his sorrow and anger.

"One white ball inflicts about 20,000 damage points, so if you're hit by two at the same time, the explosions will still kill you!" Zhang Yang calculated and told Fatty Han.

Following the boss' spamming of the 3 skills over and over again, Zhang

Yang and his party members familiarized themselves to the assault pattern of the boss. After all, everyone who has arrived at this stage of the game in this very boss stage is not an idiot --- well, the idiots have already been killed in action by now!

80%, 70%... the health bar of Shaloni was reducing slowly, but constantly. Because of the {Touch of Soul}, the boss could still recover a small portion of its health points, and everyone needed to pick and roll at the right timing to avoid taking unnecessary damage. Plus, they needed to bear with the 10 seconds of being controlled like puppets, hitting on each other. All these factors had caused the reduction of boss's health bar to be super slow!

The boss only had a total of 9,500,000 health points. If everyone could just stand their ground and unleash their damage straight onto the boss without much interruption, they could have taken down the boss in about 4 minutes! But now that they are picking and rolling for around two-thirds of the entire time during the boss fight, and the boss could recover its health over time, and they took about 10 minutes to take out half of the health bar of the boss!

Tactically speaking, everyone was very clear about what they needed to do. However, being clear about the tactics is one thing, carrying it out perfectly is another! Especially when the duration of battling the boss is prolonged, not many people can actually keep their concentration up all the time. Most people would feel anxious and frustrated. So, some of them could not avoid touching the 'eggs', and they were hurt by the impact of the explosions.

Fortunately for them, none of them had been struck two explosions at the same time - yet. Other than the two tankers, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, only a few players had more than 40,000 health points. So if they were to be caught in between two explosions at the same time, they would surely be killed in an instant!

40%, 30%!

"Wa! Ya! Ya! What the hell! This stinky boss really has a long health bar

there!" Wei Yan Er got caught up in another explosion, blowing her up, until she was shouting in pain.

If the difficult part about the previous bosses that they had encountered before along the way was their horrifying damage output, then the difficult part about fighting this boss was the duration of time required to defeat him. Players cannot afford any single mistake during this long duration of time, because that one small mistake would risk getting the party wiped out!

"Come, tell a joke!" as everyone had just avoided the {Stardust Explosion} and the situation seemed to be stable at the moment, Zhang Yang smiled and asked for a joke in an attempt to ease down the tensed mood of everyone.

To be in an intense and yet stressful battle, only Sun Xin Yu would be able to handle it with a calm mind. As for Zhang Yang, he was already used to such boss battles, as he had already encountered many similar boss battles in his previous life. Sun Xin Yu could do it because of her profession in real life. Compared to being a trained cop, a mere tens of minutes of stress is a walk in the park for her!

Fatty Han was immediately riled up the moment he heard Zhang Yang asking for a joke, so he quickly said, "Let me tell first! Let me!"

"No! Don't! Anything that comes from this wretched fatty is definitely 'tainted'!" the ladies were trying to stop Fatty Han from saying another word.

"Endless Starlight too! No jokes from you!" Just as Endless Starlight was about to open up his mouth, he was shot straight down. He blushed after being shut up by a bunch of ladies!

"Then, allow me to tell you guys a joke!" Lost Dream took over this 'sacred' mission and said, "It all happened yesterday when my little brother came back home. He came to me and said to me with pride, 'Bro, I'm no longer a virgin!'"

The ladies blushed when they heard the words 'no longer a virgin', while Zhang Yang and the other men were all revealing their 'wolfish' faces and

smiled like a bunch of perverts.

"So I told him to sit down and tell me slowly." Lost Dream continued his story, "But my little brother tightened his teeth and clutched up his ass, and he said, 'I cannot sit, Ow!'"

"Pff --- " Zhang Yang and the men started to laugh out loud.

Han Ying Xue and the ladies were looking at each other, as they were not aware of the meaning of the joke.

Wei Yan Er did not get it at all and asked, "Is that some sort of joke? What's so funny about it?"

Zhang Yang gave it a long thought and said, "A man will never understand what is pain, until they are poked from behind!"

"It's 'girl'! You moron!" Wei Yan Er immediately corrected Zhang Yang.

At that moment, Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart had finally got the meaning of the joke, and they blushed. Only Wei Yan Er was still trying to understand the meaning of the joke, scratching her own head.

After fooling around for a while there, everyone eased down a little, and they felt more relieved, increasing their efficiency in battle.

20%!

Time to enter the 'slaughtering' state of time! Everyone in the party immediately unleashed everything they had, and the health bar of the boss began to reduce a little faster.

"Impossible! You are just a bunch of ants! How can you manage to hurt my sacred body!" Shaloni, who was already wounded badly, started bleeding more. Although it did not affect the boss's capability to battle, but he was looking really fatigued.

"Stinky boss! Just give up already!" Wei Yan Er swung her axe until strong currents of wind could be felt. She went in irrationally, taking her [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] that filled up her rage gauge and went on to activate all her skills without considering anything else at

all!

‘-90,440!’

Within that 10-second period, the damage output of this little girl was terrifying! Even Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream or Daffodil Daydream could not go near her damage output!

16%, 13%, 9%!

"Ancient Demonic Souls, please answer my summons and get rid of these disgusting pests!" Shaloni was almost out of breath, this particular summon seemed to be his final attempt to summon the foul Ancient Demonic Souls!

Everyone quickly started scattering to avoid any contact with the foul monsters. They had already reached this far, if they failed there, it would definitely be a crime that cannot be forgiven for a thousand years!

7%! 4%! 1%!

"I... I'm the.. in.. invincible... in..."

Pak! The health bar of the boss was finally emptied out! Shaloni collapsed onto the ground and dropped out a number of loot all over the ground.

"Haha! Stinky boss is finally dead!"

Everyone let out a breath of relief. It took them almost 30 minutes to defeat the boss, everyone was exhausted! Another word to describe this is - tedious!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly went up to bring Hundred Shots and Fatty Han back. When it came to Fatty Han, the two ladies decided to use ‘paper scissor stone’ as the deciding factor --- of course, the loser would have to do it! Naturally, Fatty Han started sobbing there and then. After being rescued, he went to a corner and drew circles on the ground to reflect upon himself.

"Yo! Time to reveal the equipment!" Wei Yan Er was filled with joy, even her face showed it all. She had already leaped over to Shaloni's dead body

and began her 'touch' on the loot.

Chapter 431: The Resurrection of The Ancient Demonic Statue

[Brutal Onslaught Chest plate] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +302

Strength: +274

Agility: +121

{Unidentified}

Required level: 90

Wei Yan Er uncovered the first piece of equipment among the loot, which was a piece of Chest Plate that glittered in a gold complexion, looking dazzling. The piece was just magnificently beautiful to look at.

"Haha! I'm calling dibs for this one!" Wei Yan Er was grinning broadly as she held the equipment in her hands. Everyone saw how badly she wanted the Chest Plate, so they gave up on trying to take it from the little girl. Pleased with herself, she kept it in her inventory. After that, she was ready to uncover the second piece of equipment.

[Staff of Wisdom] (Yellow-Gold, Staff)

Magic attack: 1,372 - 1,772

Equip: 10% rate to add 50 intelligence points when hitting a target, can stack up to 3 times.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream already possessed their very own Level 80 Violet-Platinum staffs, and the quality of their staffs were so much higher compared to this [Staff of Wisdom]. Of course, they did not have any need for it, so the staff went to Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Little girl, time to take out a Violet-Platinum and show us the power of your 'lucky hands'!" Zhang Yang teased Wei Yan Er.

"You're really dumb, noob tank. Of course, we are viewing the stuff starting from the worst to the best! If we have already taken a look at the best stuff in the beginning, then when we are looking at the remaining stuff, we would feel disappointed!" Wei Yan Er shot back immediately.

Then, the little girl put her hands back into the loot and took out an ancient looking ring that radiated in a faint purplish light. The glow was pleasing to look at.

[Ring of New Hope] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +159

Intelligence: +105

Spirit: +105

Equipment: Increase critical rate by 2%.

Use: Heals yourself and recover 50,000 health points in an instant.

Cooldown: 12 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Wow! This is one fine, magnificent Magic Ring!" Wei Yan Er exclaimed immediately, and then she looked at her own hands and said, "Sigh, my hands are just too lucky! Lucky hands! These hands must be the best of the best!"

The attributes of this ring were indeed magnificent, it was definitely the best Magic Ring at the current stage of the game! It provided a substantial amount of attributes, and also gave an additional of 2% critical rate for free! The main attraction of this ring was that it had a life-saving special effect function that gave a total of 50,000 health points immediately upon activation! The amount of HP this ring could recover was actually 5 times of what [Merlinda's Appreciation Ring] could provide!

"At least, the system did not mistreat us! We have been through so much

hardship, killing so many bosses already!" Han Ying Xue quickly selected the button 'Need'.

As expected, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart weren't that kind to give the ring away to Han Ying Xue. All of them took out their dices and started rolling for it. May fortune favor the bold!

In the end, Han Ying Xue won, with 100 points!

Everyone could only admire the superb luck that this Witch Snow had. Every single time good stuff drops, this witch would definitely win the Dice Toss with the highest value!

She did have her shortcomings - she was only Level 88 now, so she would have to wait for a while longer before she can equip the ring.

After Wei Yan Er picked up another small piece of the [Fragment of Hammer of Sanctions], the remaining loots were a few pieces of [Inscribed Cloth] and a piece of Tailoring Profession Blueprint, which was taken by Daffodil Daydream. She then tapped it on her chest and learned to make whatever it was on the blueprint.

[Incandescent Electrical Robe] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +907

Intelligence: +601

Spirit: +259

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases attack by 2%.

Required Level: 90

After viewing the attributes of the final product that Daffodil Daydream made, everyone was stunned. This piece of equipment was just too good to be true! A magnificent piece of work! Definitely a great masterpiece!

Fatty Han was drooling, "If you make this equipment and sell it, you can

definitely sell at top price! Pretty Daffodil, please take me in as your 'Mistress'!"

Indeed, at the current stage of the game, any Violet-Platinum equipment is super rare! Any piece of Violet-Platinum equipment can reach up to hundreds of thousand dollars!

Furthermore, this [Incandescent Electrical Robe] has very powerful attributes. If the seller bumps onto a rich person, the seller can actually sell it for up to millions of dollars without any problems!

So, if one can sell hundreds of this, that person would become a millionaire already!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Do you think it's really so convenient? Daffodil, take a look at the ingredients required to make this robe. Are they really that easy to gather?"

Daffodil Daydream picked her way through onto the ingredient required menu and showed it out to the others: Inscribed Cloth X 1000, Azure Pearl X 10, Mythical Pearl Silk X 5, Sacred Thread X 1.

"Holy!" Zhang Yang took in a deep breath and said, We can get as many [Inscribed Cloth] as we need because they're easy to come by, but these [Azure Pearl] and [Mythical Pearl Silk]... these two items are definitely very rare, and extremely hard to come by. Price is not the problem, the problem is that there is only a limited number of these items in the game! And the final item [Sacred Thread] is even 'better'! I have never even heard about it before!"

"If it's so easy to make a Violet-Platinum equipment, then Violet-Platinum grade equipment would become very common in the game. The system will not make such mistakes!" Hundred Shots nodded and said.

"Alright, settle down. Time for us to meet our 'Son of God'!" Han Ying Xue stretched herself and gave a good yawn, "After all this, I'm getting myself a great meal!"

While she was talking, she gave glanced at Zhang Yang with her sexy eyes. Obviously, she had not forgotten about how she got one big meal

from Zhang Yang previously.

Zhang Yang took a peek at Sun Xin Yu without saying anything. This piece of 'ice' was basically invisible all the time, other than when they are engaging a boss. But as a police, her eyes and ears must be very sharp. So she might have heard Han Ying Xue and would invite herself later!

As predicted, the end of her mouth twitched a little. If Zhang Yang had not actually paid attention to her, he would not have seen that!

It's going to be 'merry' later on!

The gang proceeded forward. The terrain in the area was a little different from the terrain that they had gone through earlier on. Before that, everyone was running on a platform where the path coiled up in many layers of large rings that led up to the top - as they followed the path, and from there onwards, the path stopped halfway across like half a circle. There was a long straight path that led straight towards the center point of the half circle.

There were no signs of any monsters along the way. Everyone was charging through as quickly as they could, trying not to waste a single second. After passing through the long straight path that led straight to the middle of the area, they found themselves standing on a vast, underground space!

The area had a surface area of at least 5 kilometers squares out, being about two hundred meters up from the lowest floor. The place looked just like a large palace hall, similar to a sanctuary! Right in the middle of the area, there was a sturdily stationed gigantic metallic monster, and the head of that metallic monster was about to touch the highest spot of the entire area! It was huge!

[Ancient Demonic Statue - Cazacrol] (Inactive, Servant)

Level: Inactive

HP: Inactive

Defense: Inactive

Well, who would have thought that there actually was an undated product in an unaddressed factory! The grade, the HP bar, the Defense, were all still unavailable from view!

There was nothing else in the area, other than that large demonic statue. The final boss Madran seemed to have vanished into thin air!

Zhang Yang and his gang waltzed up to the statue. As they approached the statue from about a hundred meters away, there was a low voice coming from within the demonic statue, saying "No wonder Cazacrol has stopped restoring itself, you imbeciles must have ruined the sacrificial altars!"

So, the boss was hiding inside the demonic statue all along!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Yes indeed we did! All 12 of your disciples have been defeated by us! And, we also freed all of the Believers! So Madran, prepare to die!"

"Imbeciles!" a cold humph came from within the statue, "Although the power of the demonic statue has barely been restored, it will be enough to crush you! It can recover its lost power with bloodshed while killing any living human! Then, Cazacrol shall return to its full potential state! Unfortunately, I can no longer wait for Cazacrol to recover more power before revealing it to the public! Since you imbeciles are so eager to die, then let us use your blood to celebrate for the birth of this war machine!"

Boom!

The sturdy lifeless demonic statue suddenly opened up its eyes and revealed a pair of crimson bloody eyeballs within the eye sockets. An outburst of its aura revealed it's thirst for blood. It went across the entire area like a storm in all directions. Boom! Boom! Boom! As the berserking aura passed through, the ground trembled, as if the ground itself was in fear.

Right beneath the head of the demonic statue, a bar saying 'Activating' appeared, and the progress of the bar was swift! It only took 1 to 2 seconds to complete loading!

Boom!

Cazacrol took its first step, and that stomp instantly cracked the ground in half, trembling the ground to the point that Zhang Yang and his gang lost their balance!

[The Ancient Demonic Statue - Cazacrol] (Mythical, Servant)

Level: 110

HP: 1,028,903/30,000,000

Defense: 4,900

"Rawgh!" Cazacrol let out a thunderous roar that shook the heavens, and the roar emitted out, wave by wave, echoing throughout the surroundings, and pak pak pak! The walls in the surroundings began to crack! It showed how powerful the intimidating aura of a Mythical grade boss was!

"Holy cow! A Mythical boss! How are we going to fight against this thing!" Lost Dream was screaming in shock.

"Zhang Yang, can you see the level of the boss?" Hundred Shots asked Zhang Yang. Because in {{God's Miracle}}, players can only see the information of NPCs and monsters that were 20 levels higher or less, or else, all players could see are question marks.

Zhang Yang nodded as he charged forward to engage the boss, "It's a level 110 Mythical boss, with 4,900 defense points. However, it only has about 1,000,000 health points left, it's not like we stand absolutely no chance at defeating this piece of junk!"

"4,900 defense points!" everyone was frowning and sweating in cold fear. Without any {Cripple Defense}, the two dagger wielding Thieves, Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dreams will not be able to even break through the defensive armor of the boss. They would only be able to inflict 1 damage point to the boss - even by brute force!

Furthermore, there was also a damage penalty in effect, when players and the monster are 10 levels apart. Now that they were 20 levels lower than the boss, how much of their damage would be reduced as an act of

the penalty then? Time to try it first and worry about it later!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘2,012!’

This {Spear of Obliteration} that ignored defense could initially inflict a damage of about 4,000+ points, but now its attack has been reduced by about 50%!

"Hahaha! Mortals, dedicate your bodies as tributes and let your deaths be meaningful, at least!" Madran laughed madly from within the Servant. As he was laughing, Cazacrol reached out its hand and slammed at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Boom!

The strength of Cazacrol was just too powerful, to begin with. Although Zhang Yang raised up his shield in time to block that slam from the boss, he was still slammed into the ground as his two legs sunk into the ground up to his knees!

"How unfortunate. We have already used up our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} in our previous battle. Or else, we could have released our super skills on the boss, and even a Mythical boss will have to die." Endless Starlight sighed.

"Hahaha! Can you feel the power of the Ancient Demonic Statue?" Madran was laughing out loud while Cazacrol reached out its hand and gave Zhang Yang another slam.

‘-48,038!’

Shoof! Zhang Yang lost half of his health bar in just an instant!

"What the hell! So this is the power of a Mythical boss! It's worthy of its title! The attack is just way too powerful!" Everyone was in shock!

Such a powerful attack! Even Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart will not be able to keep up in healing so much health even if they worked together! After all, the equipment of these two pretty ladies were still

mostly Yellow-Gold grade, with a few pieces of Violet-Platinum grade. So, their tiers were basically only half of Zhang Yang's, at the current situation!

Zhang Yang quickly made up his mind, and he commanded, "Witch Snow! Let's use our paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!"

Under the activation of {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, the two of them be invincible for a full 30 seconds!

Han Ying Xue responded and quickly ran to the side of Zhang Yang.

"Hahaha! Give up on the futile attempt to struggle! Every attempt you make is hopeless, right before the absolute power!" Madran laughed madly again, and launched another slam over at Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue!

{Blizzard Sky}, {Luna's Dew} activated!

In just an instant, the ground was covered by the petals of snowflakes falling from the sky, and a moon rose up high in the sky!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

Cazacrol was beginning to be inflicted by a continuous chain of damages, and the damage values were appearing right on top of the boss - constantly!

Chaos Damage was not affected by any Defense, Magic Defense or even the Level Difference. It would strike squarely with its full power!

Sun Xin Yu and the remaining members saw the opportunity, and they rushed in around the boss, taking their own [Power Potions], and begin to unleash their full assault onto the boss.

This 30-second duration of time is the best time to channel damages to the boss. And if they cannot empty out the health bar of the boss within that period of time, then when Zhang Yang is no longer under invincible state, he will definitely be instant-killed by the boss and squeeze him into something else!

As Zhang Yang needed to supervise the {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, he only managed to smash one layer of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss. So, Wei Yan Er continued his work and smashed 4 more layers of {Cripple Defense} as a start, reducing the Defense of the boss down to 2,500 points before everyone could begin their full assaults onto the boss! Well, that managed to increase the damage output of the entire gang, which increased the efficiency on reducing the boss's health bar!

800,000, 600,000, 400,000!

Although there was a level penalty that reduced their damage output on the boss, the firepower of these players wasn't that bad themselves, their attacks were still very powerful and sharp! However, when the boss spawned, it's health bar was already lower than 20%, which caused the gang to enter their 'Slaughter Mode' immediately, adding a substantial amount of firepower which made up with the firepower loss due to the level penalty suppression effect!

300,000! 200,000! 100,000!

"No! No! Stop!" Madran let out an angry roar, "You idiotic mortals! Stop at once! Heed my warning and stop!"

"Hahaha! Stinky boss! Don't you love to laugh? Laugh more now! I dare you!" Wei Yan Er wielded her giant axe over and over again, and she ignored all defenses of her target when the special effect of her weapon triggered! It was really effective and convenient to use such a weapon with such a special effect on bosses that had super high defenses!

"Bastards! You idiotic imbeciles! You will regret this! I will make you regret this!" Madran's voice was at its breaking point.

50,000! 30,000! 10,000!

Boom!

At the same instant when the {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} ended, the health bar of Cazacrol was totally emptied out as well! The gigantic demonic statue collapsed and scattered into pieces across the ground!

"Look at what you imbeciles have done!" looking at the wreckage of their

deed, an old man in a red robe appeared among the pieces of the statue. He had a size of a regular person, with a regular human face, and he had an ancient-looking staff in his hand. His face was filled with unspeakable rage at the moment.

"You have destroyed everything that I have worked on for 20 years!" the old man roared into the sky and his veins were popping out of his forehead. It was obvious that he was inconsolable at that moment! "I will tear you all into pieces, like how you did to my demonic statue!"

[Madran - The Son of God]

Level: 96

HP: 9,600,000

Defense: 2,600

The final boss has finally revealed himself!

Chapter 432: The Beginning of a Bitter Battle!

"Argh ---" Fatty Han suddenly screamed like a little b*tch - as if his parents had just died in front of him. His scream was miserable.

"You f*cking fatty! Why did you suddenly scream like an animal shouting out a mating call! The boss has not even started poking your ass yet!" Zhang Yang asked and laughed. The two of them had already gotten used to joking around with each other.

"... the boss died, but there was no loot!" Fatty Han let out an enraged roar.

"The boss hasn't died yet --- Oh, you mean Cazacrol?"

"Yes! We just managed to take out a Mythical grade boss, and nothing dropped from it! What the f*ck, man! Is this some sort of prank, or what!" Fatty Han was very angry with the fact he did all the hard work for nothing.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "The boss only had about 1,000,000 health points, the system put it in just to raise the difficulty of the battle by a little. So what can you expect? Do you think you just took out a fully-powered Mythical boss? Haha."

"Pui! Even if the boss only has 1 point of health when it spawns, it also counts as our kill! Of course, the system must award us with something! Some fine equipment will do too! Fatty Han was really pissed and he tried to argue.

"Haha! Then unleash your anger onto this boss!" Zhang Yang charged in on Madran, and with a slash of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he swung out a regular attack onto the boss and hooked over the aggro of the boss to himself.

Madran had already given up so much for the past 20 years to build up his pet project, and all his efforts have gone to waste in just one brief moment - because of Zhang Yang and his gang. He was already on the

verge of exploding as his rage was at the limit. His face was very savage, and scary and the same time. As a Spellcaster, he actually used his staff as a stick to hit his enemies. He had obviously lost it! He rapped the head of Zhang Yang as hard as he could, as if he wanted to mince Zhang Yang into a ball of minced meat with his own bare hands! Otherwise, he would not be able to release his anger!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang did not have to be polite as well, and with his shield raised, he blocked the attack from Madran's staff, followed by a {Shield Bash} that scored a critical hit, inflicting a damage of 3,732 points onto the boss.

"Argh!" Madran felt the pain and he let out a roar. His eyes were flashing with murderous intent as he raised his staff, pointing the tip of his staff right at Zhang Yang.

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" the boss waved his staff around and activated a skill!

'Ding! Madran has unleashed {Lightning Storm}!'

Shoof!

A stream of blindingly white light shot out from the tip of the staff, and the light traveled at Zhang Yang just like a bolt of lightning. It was really fast! That light inflicted a damage of '-14,694' onto Zhang Yang. After that, the lightning jumped from Zhang Yang and struck Endless Starlight, who appeared to be the nearest to Zhang Yang at the moment. That attack inflicted Endless Starlight with a damage of 45,750, which instantly-killed him and sent him straight to his demise!

And it was not over yet! That same stream of lightning then jumped from the dead body of Endless Starlight over to Lost Dream who happened to be the closest to Endless Starlight! An even more terrifying damage value was inflicted onto Lost Dream! A total of 126,000 damage points was inflicted on him, sending him straight back to the graveyard!

The killing streak continued, as the lightning jumped on from the dead body of Lost Dream over to Sun Xin Yu, then onto Wei Yan Er! First, Sun

Xin Yu was inflicted by a damage of 378,000 points, followed by Wei Yan Er who was inflicted with a damage of 1,134,000 points, sending both of them straight to the graveyard as well! Those amount of damage could have killed the two ladies over a couple of times already!

With just a round of attack, the only ones left were Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart! Other than Zhang Yang, all of the DPS profession players had been wiped out clean!

"Holy mother of god, this boss skill is too sick to be true!" Fatty Han put his hands on his head and screamed like a squealing piggy!

Han Ying Xue calmly speculated, "Every time the lightning jumps, the damage it can inflict will be multiplied threefold! So, after the second jump, it can already instant-kill any one of us!"

Calculating based on Zhang Yang's amount of damage immunity, this {Lightning Storm} of Madran had a basic damage of 21,000 points. However, with every single jump, the damage of the skill will increase by 3 times! Furthermore, it seemed that this skill would chain on until everyone is dead, there was no limit to how many times the lightning can jump! So after jumping a few times, the damage that it would inflict would reach the millions!

"The leaping should have a limited range!" Zhang Yang was having deep thoughts on it while he was engaged with the boss, slashing and cutting the boss as much as he can, "Or else, after killing the little girl, the lightning should have leaped on to another one of us, even though we were very far away from her."

"I wonder, how far can the lightning jump?!" Fatty Han was just being random.

"Oh, if you want to find out, of course, it won't be easy! Come over here!" Zhang Yang laughed and called Fatty Han over.

"Argh!" the face of Fatty Han immediately became bitter, "Little Yang, I'm not planning to die so young!"

"Don't worry! I will take good care of your pretty wives, you can go peacefully!" Zhang Yang told a joke, trying to ease him up, and then he went back to the topic, "Get to a spot at my back, 10 meters from me to be exact. Let's see if the lightning will charge over to you after hitting me! Since there is an 80% chance that we are going to be wiped out this round, let's just try to understand the skill of the boss as much as possible!"

"Argh! Why do I have to suffer so much? Is it because I befriended a bad person?" Fatty Han walked carefully up towards Zhang Yang, and he stopped on a spot about 10 meters away from Zhang Yang. Then, he continued to shoot his arrows at the boss.

"Aiyak!" Han Ying Xue suddenly filled her face with shock and fear at the same time, then she said, "Silly Yu, something invisible is attacking me!"

"Me too! I felt it too!" Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart were also saying the same thing.

"Hundred Shots, Fatty, do you guys feel anything wrong?" Zhang Yang quickly asked.

"Yes, there's something invisible attacking us. The damage isn't high, it's just about 1,000 damage points per hit!" Hundred Shots nodded and told Zhang Yang.

At that moment, Zhang Yang also noticed it too. He was inflicted with '-0' damage. If it was an attack from the boss, then the damage wouldn't be so low!

"The damage isn't high, but there is a slow effect!" Han Ying Xue was annoyed.

Madran let out a cry and raised his staff at Zhang Yang. A stream of dark light emerged from the staff and turned into a black skull. The black skull flew over and struck Zhang Yang's chest, inflicting him with a damage of approximately 15,000 points.

However, this boss was really annoying. Right after using a magic attack, he would immediately use his staff to swing at Zhang Yang's head!

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" the boss waved his staff around

and activated the {Lightning Storm} for a second time. Zhang Yang and the remaining members of his party had been anticipating this.

‘-14,694!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with an expected damage value, but the attack stopped there! The lightning did not leap over to anyone!

"Fatty, come closer to me! Move 3 meters closer!" Zhang Yang said.

"My life is just like a dining table that is occupied with many breakable utensils!" Fatty Han was trying to express his feelings with his lame joke as he moved a few steps forward.

"Hey, wretched fatty! You should be happy that you can still battle!" Wei Yan Er was very bored and judging from her impatient characteristic, it was torturous for her to just lie down and watch others battling the boss.

"Eye of the Illusive Soul, swallow their souls, and leave nothing behind!" Madran finally activated his second skill.

‘Ding! Madran has unleashed {Eye of the Illusive Soul}!’

Instantly, a large black eyeball homed in on Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Hundred Shots! The eyeballs on their body would twitch and turn a little randomly, and it was really disgusting and terrifying to look at!

[Eye of the Illusive Soul]: Allows you to see and attack the Illusive Souls. If you can kill one Illusive Soul within 30 seconds, the [Eye of the Illusive Soul] will be lifted. Or else, you will be transformed into an Illusive Soul by the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]!

Hundred Shots quickly informed everyone, "So it was the Illusive Souls that was attacking us earlier on, we cannot see them without the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]!"

"Quickly, we only have 30 seconds to kill them, or else we will become one of them!" Daffodil Daydream quickly said.

"How many are there? Are their attributes powerful?" Zhang Yang could not see the Illusive Souls, so he asked Han Ying Xue and the other two

who had the [Eye of the Illusive Soul] on them.

"Three!" Han Ying Xue then posted the attributes of the Illusive Souls onto the party channel for everyone to see.

[Illusive Soul] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 95

HP: 100,000

Defense: 0

Zhang Yang gave some deep thoughts about it, then he said, "Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream, Witch Snow, you three combine your attacks and focus on only one Illusive Soul, but stop your attacks when the Illusive Soul is only left with about 10,000 health points. Then, Witch Snow will take it out first and release herself from the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]! As for Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream, you two have enough firepower to take out your own Illusive Souls. So after you guys help Han Ying Xue, you guys just have to focus on killing your own Illusive Souls. It shouldn't be hard for you two!"

"Alright!"

Han Ying Xue was a healer, a profession that was weak on attacking power. Although her equipment was really powerful, she lacked skills that could inflict higher damage. So, if she ever went into battle on her own, she would be at a disadvantage! Furthermore, the longer Han Ying Xue is 'tied down', the more stress Daffodil Daydream was going to have. Because Daffodil Daydream would have to cover Han Ying Xue's part to heal up Zhang Yang and also the other remaining members of the party. Her stress would become tremendous!

Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream worked together and focused on one of the Illusive Souls, and then they attack the monster that was only left with about 10,000 health points. After Han Ying Xue slaughtered the monster with ease, Daffodil Daydream and Hundred Shots turned to their own Illusive Souls and began to focus their assaults onto the monsters. With their strong attacks, it would still take about 15

seconds to kill a monster with 0 defense and 100,000 health points. There was still about 5 to 6 seconds left when they managed to kill the Illusive Souls and unbind themselves from the effect of the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]!

Other than that, the Illusive Souls would only attack players without the [Eye of the Illusive Soul]. So, Han Ying Xue, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream could focus on slaying the monsters.

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" Madran waved his staff around and activated the {Lightning Storm} for the third time.

‘-14,694!’

Zhang Yang was struck by a lightning until he was crispy on the outside, tender on the inside, just like the previous encounter with the lightning strike. However, Fatty Han was still alive and well, shooting arrows towards the boss.

"Fatty, come two more steps closer to me!" Zhang Yang laughed as he spoke to Fatty Han.

"Go away! I don't want to do this anymore! I'm not listening to you! La la la!" Fatty Han roared.

"Haha! Brother fatty, just take two more steps and everything would still be fine." Endless Starlight could not help himself, as he was basically a talkative person with no tendency to shut his mouth. He immediately laughed after saying it.

"Endless brat, are you looking to be beaten up?"

"You have destroyed all the efforts of my life, my entire life! You pests! Imbeciles! It would still be hard for me to calm down even after I crush you all into dust!" Madran let out a thunderous roar and continued to swing his staff at Zhang Yang repeatedly. This annoying boss actually turned out to be pretty lethal in melee combat. His physical attack actually reached up to about 20,000 points! Because physical damage tended to be reduced or lowered due to the defense and armor of players, the damage inflicted onto the players would be slightly lowered. But, the annoying part

about this boss' melee assaults was that the staff had a certain rate to stun the players, and the rate was not that low either!

However, Zhang Yang could also use his {Shield Bash}. Because currently, his {Shield Bash} could deal double damage, making it one of the strong damage skills that can contribute to bringing down the boss as quickly as possible!

"Embrace my wrath and die!" Madran suddenly pointed his staff towards Daffodil Daydream! Right after that. The body of the little beauty with a pretty face and a pair of huge boobies suddenly surged with sparkling lightning, making her look like 'The Flash'. It looked very fantastic. But what was even more 'fantastic' is the additional negative effect that was suddenly added onto her.

[Strength of Madran]: explodes after 10 seconds, inflicts you with 1 point of Nature Damage, but inflicts all targets within a 10-meter radius with 50,000 Nature Damage, with you as the center point.

"Holy sheet, get away from everyone now, Daffodil Daydream!" Everyone was screaming at her, telling her to get away from them after reading the negative effect that she is carrying.

"Alright! I'm going, I'm going!" Daydream quickly nodded and turned around in a rush. As she was turning very fast, her pair of papaya-sized heavy boobs jiggled through the air and bounced up and down. The 'scenery' was really stunning!

Among the members of the party, one would be able to recall the drooling sound coming from Fatty Han and Endless Starlight after witnessing that 'scenery'.

Chapter 433: A Smooth Clearance

10 seconds was enough for Fantasy Sweetheart to run into the 'safe zone' area.

Boom!

Immediately, a stream of white dazzling light emanated from the entire body of the pretty faced pair of huge boobies, radiating out into the surrounding. But there was no one around within the effective range of the effect, so the attack was the equivalent of shooting bullets into the ocean. Pak! Fantasy Sweetheart was inflicted with 1 point of damage.

Right after the effect faded, Fantasy Sweetheart returned to her position and continued to do her duty on the battlefield.

Although Zhang Yang and his party were lesser in number now, that was also an advantage for them, as there was no more space for them to run, when someone is being inflicted by the {Strength of Madran} effect without having to worry that others would be wounded when the skill explodes!

"Although we are slow in progress due to our small numbers, we have the time to slowly torture the boss!" everyone saw a glimpse of hope to win the battle.

"Let the lightning swallow your souls!" the boss let out another roar and pointed his staff at Zhang Yang to activate another {Lightning Storm}!

'-14,694!'

'-63,000!'

After the lightning landed on Zhang Yang and inflicted him with about 15,000 damage points, it leaped straight over to Fatty Han and instant-killed him!

"Wah! You bastard, little Yang! You sacrificed me now! Are you happy now? We are now short of yet another DPS player in the party!" Fatty Han could not accept his own death.

"Don't worry! You died with honor, and the honor is mine! Because you have confirmed for us that this lightning attack can only jump by about 5 meters long!" Zhang Yang laughed while raising his shield up to block the staff assaults from the annoying boss.

Another DPS player has died. There were only 3 players with high DPS left, that was Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream. The total DPS of the entire party had been reduced down to less than 20,000 points! So, the progress of reducing the health bar of the boss had become extremely slow.

90%, 80%, 75%!

"My followers, reveal yourselves, and fight for your master!" Madran raised his staff up high in the sky and commanded loudly. 12 streams of dark lights came out from the staff and shot across to the 12 different corners of the area.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Skeletons were breaking out of the ground one after another. They looked really familiar! Each of the skeletons had a different sort of weapon on their hands. Four of them were riding on skeletal horses! The skeletal horses were stomping their hoofs on the ground, roaring out angrily!

It turned out that, these skeletons were actually the 12 disciples that Zhang Yang and his gang had met and engaged! Their names were labeled on each of them, crystal clear! However, they were now no longer bosses, instead, they were just elite monsters that have 200,000 health points on each of them. Even though their strengths are much weaker now, but to battle one boss with 12 elite-grade disciples at the same time, Zhang Yang and his incomplete formation of his gang would definitely be faced with an extreme challenge! The boss and the monsters had an absolute advantage over Zhang Yang and his gang!

"Slaughter them all!" Madran let out a furious roar and pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and his gang. He gave the command for the 12 disciples to launch their assaults towards Zhang Yang and his gang!

Instantly, these 12 skeleton monsters let out a miserable screech and

stomped their way through, charging towards Zhang Yang and his gang.

Zhang Yang quickly left the boss aside for the moment and used {Charge}, aiming for the skeleton monster that was nearest to him, followed by a {Thunder Strike} that inflicted quite some damage to all of the monsters within his attack range.

"Rawgh ---" the 12 skeleton monsters were enraged, and they wielded their weapons, charging at Zhang Yang. Although some of the disciples were Spellcasters, they were all currently melee type monsters after having been resurrected.

Zhang Yang quickly flitted left and right, moving between the 12 monsters, dodging as many attacks as possible to minimize the damage he received.

"I shall not rest my rage as long as you pests are still alive and well! I'll tear you into pieces!" The skeleton monsters weren't actually scary at all, what really scared them was the fact that there was a boss commanding these skeleton monsters! Although Madran did not have a mount, and he was a Spellcaster that was supposed to be weak and slow, he was spry and fast! After using a ranged attack with his spell attack, he ran very swiftly to Zhang Yang before Zhang Yang could even react! Then, the boss swung his staff at Zhang Yang!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang blocked the attack, but the boss seemed to be addicted to melee attacks! Tock! He immediately swiveled and gave another knock on Zhang Yang with his staff.

If it was just an attack from a mere regular monster, Zhang Yang could have dodged the attack with ease. But, the attack of the boss was swift and merciless! It seemed almost impossible to dodge that attack!

‘-12,732!’

Zhang Yang felt the knock of the boss' 'stick' in his head, and that attack actually stunned him! Although he had activated {Warrior's Will} right after that, the luck of Madran struck the jackpot! Out of 7 hits from the

boss's staff, 2 of them that triggered stun effect on Zhang Yang, rendering him immobile! The monsters started ganging up on him!

The assaults from the boss were unceasingly unleashed onto Zhang Yang and his gang. {Eye of the Illusive Soul}, {Strength of Madran} and {Lightning Storm} were spammed thorough the battle. The powerful oppression from the boss had finally crippled the party of Zhang Yang. At one time, Han Ying Xue was healing up Zhang Yang. But one of them was inflicted with the {Strength of Madran} and they did not manage to isolate the explosion from the remaining members of Zhang Yang's party! The explosion took out all of the remaining party members, except Zhang Yang himself, and Han Ying Xue!

Ching chiang ching chiang! Zhang Yang activated his life-saving skills one after another and fell under the claws of the boss and his 12 disciples, an expected outcome.

"Finally! Everyone got wiped out! Haha!" Wei Yan Er was happy, "I can finally join into battle the boss!"

Only this little girl would be so happy after the entire party has been wiped out!

"Haha, only our little girl is truly enjoying the fun of playing this game!" Everyone released their souls and began to run back to the boss in their soul states. Zhang Yang sighed a little and said, "Every one of us has already obtained a certain level of material gain, so now, we should be more focused on getting more equipment drops from the bosses, not savoring the process of battling bosses!"

But Fatty Han said shamelessly, "I'm just a regular guy who loves to count gold coins, silver coins, or whatever coins that are valuable! That's the most interesting part of the game, for me!"

The Graveyard was just located at the upside of the island. So, it did not take long for them to get back to their own dead bodies. After approximately 10 minutes, everyone in Zhang Yang's party had arrived back in the lair of Madran, and resurrected themselves. Then, they quickly picked a safe spot and took [Snacks] to recover their initial states.

"Fortunate for us, that Mythical grade boss was not reset!" right in the middle of the boss area, Madran was still standing there with an angry face, whilst surrounded by his 12 skeletal disciples. Meanwhile, Cazacrol remained as a pile of shattered stones.

If Cazacrol was also resurrected, they would have a lot of problems battling all of the monsters together! One must not underestimate the remaining 1,000,000 health points on the Mythical boss! The penalty oppression on the levels' significant difference between the Mythical boss and Zhang Yang's party members was the largest problem that they had! If they did not have the paired skills such as {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, it would be extremely difficult for them to defeat the boss!

"After we begin to engage with the monsters, I'll kite the monsters, while Endless Starlight kites the boss! Everyone will focus on taking out the monsters first!" Zhang Yang commanded. As they had already spent a significantly long period of time understanding the skills of Madran, Zhang Yang then decided on how they should carry out the boss battle, "If any healers or tankers get affected by {Eye of the Illusive Soul}, then DPS players will need to step in and replace the healer or the tanker to hold off the boss for the time being!"

"Then, what should we do if 1 tanker and 2 healers are being affected?" Wei Yan Er blinked her large pair of eyes and asked.

Zhang Yang immediately roared at her, "Can't you be more optimistic about this?"

"We should always be ready for the worst! If we can handle the worst scenario already, then what else is there to be afraid of?" Wei Yan Er was huffing at Zhang Yang.

Everyone was laughing at their conversation. Then Zhang Yang praised the little girl and said, "I can't believe this little girl is wiser now, and she might be as wise as a gorilla, now!"

"Wah! You stupid noob tank! Would it kill you to not insult me for once!" Wei Yan Er growled at Zhang Yang.

"But, if we really encounter such a fate, what should we really do?"

Hundred Shots was beginning to feel worried.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "So, let Endless Starlight be the main tanker. We can assume that the boss won't inflict the main tanker with his skill effects. If the boss really picks me and the two healers of our party, there will be nothing to fear as well!"

After considering, based on the damage output capability of Zhang Yang, everyone nodded without any worries on their minds.

"Alright, everyone knows the deal about {Lightning Storm} right? This skill will strike the player with the boss's aggro first, then it will start jumping about! So, listen up! Any DPS profession player must not get the first aggro of the boss. Everyone has to make sure that you are at least 5 meters away from the main tanker, then nothing bad will happen to us!" Zhang Yang reminded everyone.

"Take note! Anyone who is inflicted by the {Strength of Madran}, you will have to stay away from everyone, as far as possible! Don't be like a certain someone and just stand there!"

"Silly Yu! What did you say? I dare you to say it again!" Han Ying Xue also growled at Zhang Yang with rage.

"Hahaha! Get ready for the battle guys! Time to kill some monsters!" Zhang Yang raised his shield and sword up, "Starlight, let's rock!"

The two tankers maintained a space of 5-meters in-between them as they were engaging the boss. Together, they charged towards Madran!

Pak! With a {Shield Toss}, Endless Starlight initiated the first attack at the boss, grabbing hold of the aggro of the boss.

"It's another bunch of imbeciles that knows no fear about death, eh!" Madran let out a thunderous roar. It seemed like Madran had totally forgotten about Zhang Yang and his party members. Madran raised up his staff and pointed the tip of his staff at Endless Starlight, "Kill them all!"

The 12 skeletal disciples charged at Endless Starlight immediately, after Madran gave the command.

Zhang Yang charged straight up and crashed into one of the elite monsters, followed by a gulp of an entire bottle of his {Rage Potion}. He activated his {Thunder Strike}, delivering a powerful strike on the ground, dealing damage to all surrounding enemies within his attack range, successfully hooking over the aggro of all the monsters!

Right after that, he quickly kited the monsters away from the boss as far as possible. After his 1-second common cool down period had passed, he immediately activated {Blast Wave}. With the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] triggered, more damage was inflicted upon all 12 skeletal disciples, and Zhang Yang succeeded in maintaining their aggro on him.

Wei Yan Er had lost her patience long ago as she sat on the floor, while waiting for the party to be wiped out earlier on. Of course, she would charge in with her, er, {Charge} and begin her onslaught on the monsters!

The attack power of the 12 elite skeletal monsters was not that bad either. However, without their boss to command them, they were all but a dozen of skeletal soldiers without an aim. They could be inflicted with stuns, and movement reductions! One more assault of {Thunder Strike} was enough to make them suffer. With Zhang Yang's exquisite skills of dodging around, all of them could only roar around in misery.

But Madran was not standing by the side idly. Although his {Lightning Storm} would only affect Endless Starlight alone, his other skills like the {Strength of Madran} and {Eye of Illusive Soul} could still affect the remaining members of Zhang Yang's party, giving all of them some chaotic moments in the battle.

1 minute later, the 12 elite monsters were finally cleared out. Everyone was finally able to focus back on bombarding the boss with everything they got.

"You bunch of damned imbeciles! Kill one and another comes back! It's worse than killing cockroaches!" Madran began to curse, and he was waving his staff round and round, throwing a bunch of skills at Zhang Yang and the gang!

The most threatening skill of the boss was summoning his 12 disciples! Fortunately, that skill would only trigger once each time the boss loses 25% of his health bar. If that skill was activated randomly, then Zhang Yang and his party would have to waste a lot of their firepower on taking out the disciples, and through that process, a substantial amount of mana points would be exhausted, and healing would become impossible in the latter stages of the battle.

75%. 50%, 25%!

After surviving the assaults from that wave of summoned disciples, everyone already knew that victory is within their grasp! Everyone was already agitated with joy as the battle would soon be coming to an end!

Zhang Yang was even more agitated, as he was about to obtain the final piece of the [Fragment of Dimensional Key]! This long-winded Main Quest is about to come to an end! This is the final step already!

10%!

4%!

1%!

"No ---" Madran let out a scream of despair as his last drop of health points were blown away by Daffodil Daydream with a fireball. The boss collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead.

Chapter 434: Herb Foraging Familiar

Wei Yan Er was still sulking, and she kicked and stomped on the dead body of the boss, "Stinky boss, how dare you try to kill me and waste so much of my time! Humph! Now you should know, I'm not a person you should be meddling with!"

Fatty Han laughed and said, "Little Yan Er, you're actually raping the dead body of a boss! Careful and don't spill out of the stomach of the boss!"

"Aiyo!" all the ladies could not stand that wretched fatty anymore, even Sun Xin Yu could not help but twitch in anger.

Wei Yan Er was about to bend down to pick up the loot that had been dropped from the boss, but, the moment she recalled what Fatty Han just said, she could not bear to bend down anymore. If she really did accidentally 'squeeze' something out from the stomach of the boss, then it would be horrifically disgusting!

"You wretched f*ck! You're so wretched that you're almost on the same par as a master of the century already! How could we never discover your true 'talent'?" Zhang Yang shook his head and took over Wei Yan Er's job of picking up the loot.

With a touch, Zhang Yang grabbed up a piece of heavy armor that glittered in a gold complexion. This piece of equipment looked simple and unsophisticated.

[Greaves of Giant Elephants] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +302

Strength: +274

Agility: +121

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

Zhang Yang laughed, and then he threw the piece over to Wei Yan Er, "Little girl, catch! This pair of greaves suits you very much!"

Wei Yan Er was very happy at the beginning, but she immediately jumped in rage when she realized Zhang Yang's intention, "Stinky noob tank! You're saying that my legs are as thick as the legs of an elephant, aren't you! Rawgh!"

"Aiya! When did you become so clever, little girl?"

"Humph! Humph! Humph!" Wei Yan Er rolled her large eyes in disdain. Although she did not speak anymore, it was obvious that she was not willing to give in to Zhang Yang's teasing.

"Silly Yu! Don't always bully little Yan Er!" Han Ying Xue stepped up for the little girl.

"Sister Snow is always the best!"

"Yan Er can only be bullied by me and me alone!" Han Ying Xue giggled as she used her two hands to pinch and rub Wei Yan Er's face.

Wei Yan Er, "..."

Zhang Yang reached out his hands again and picked up another piece of golden equipment.

[Demonic Whirlpool] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Exiles the target into a chaotic whirlpool full of demonic aura. Targets that are within the Demonic Whirlpool cannot be inflicted with any damage, at the same time, the targets will be immobile. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Required Level: 90

"It's great for PK battles! You can go one against two with this precious piece!" Zhang Yang weighed the accessory in his hand and asked everyone, "So, who wants this?"

"Me! Me!"

Everyone was trying to talk at the same time with the attempt to get the

accessory piece from Zhang Yang as most of them were PvP maniacs. Furthermore, with this piece of accessory, a player could activate miraculous effects when battling two or three enemy players at the same time! While in the dungeons, the player who holds this accessory can also use it to restrict the movement of a monster when there are too many monsters around. In that sense, the player can reduce his or her own stress in dealing with many monsters at the same time.

After rolling for who gets the accessory, this masterpiece was finally taken by Sun Xin Yu herself. Han Ying Xue tried to provoke her, because she wasn't happy with the result of the dice-throwing, "The dog that bites never barks!" That enraged Sun Xin Yu to the point that she almost lost herself to her own rage.

Zhang Yang was having a headache about these two pretty ladies. Although the two of them were not close to each other, at least, these two would not provoke each other in the first place. However, as time had passed, the two of them have begun to show signs that they could not 'co-exist'! Whenever they meet, they would cross eyes like two enemies about to slaughter up each other!

Sigh, if only the two ladies would succumb to his 'charm', then his life would have been so much easier.

Zhang Yang put down the thoughts for the moment and went on picking up the loots. He bent down and picked up a shield that radiated with a purplish light.

[Kingdom's Heart] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +1,512

Vitality: +1,058

Equip Effect: Absorbs 537 damage points when being hit.

Equip Effect: Increases 2% of the damage immunity.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Holy mother of cow! This equipment is dope!" Endless Starlight was already madly admiring the piece of work. He charged down and hugged Zhang Yang's legs and said, "Boss, boss! Please give me the shield! You're like a father to me! I'm willing to do anything for you! I can die for you, cry for you, and 'come' for you!"

Zhang Yang was disgusted by Starlight and tossed the shield straight into the face of Endless Starlight, "Get lost!"

After taking the shield into his hands, Endless Starlight went aside with joy. Although he was not hurt or wounded in any kind of way, there was an obvious mark of a shield on his face. But, he was contented, as he had already gotten his hands all over the shield.

Everyone chose to give up on the shield, and he quickly put the shield into his inventory with much joy on his face.

"This [Kingdom's Heart] is definitely the best shield there is in this game at the moment!" Hundred Shots said, "Starlight has finally become more powerful!"

Zhang Yang nodded to express his agreement. Judging from the attributes of this shield, it was actually even better than the [Titan Wall] that Zhang Yang had! However, after considering the Armor Set effect, Zhang Yang would definitely not break up his Titan Set Armor just to equip this [Kingdom's Heart] as his shield. It just did not make sense, as the special effect of the Titan Set Armor would give him a lot more advantage! Well, at least he won't be doing this until he gets his hands on the Mythical grade equipment.

And there came the shameless Endless Starlight again, "I've always been very powerful, alright?"

"Haha!" everyone laughed at him.

Zhang Yang reached out and picked up another piece of equipment. The final boss Madran was not stingy on dropping good loots at all. Zhang Yang actually picked up another piece of Violet-Platinum equipment! This time, it was a piece of leather armor with a simple and unsophisticated design. There were countless runes crafted all over the leather armor.

[Chest Plate of the Abyss] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +635

Strength: +181

Agility: +420

Equip: Increases 2% rate of healing or damage inflicted.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"No wonder this is only dropped after we slay the final boss! It's just too powerful!" Fatty Han was staring at the attributes of the equipment without even blinking at all! He looked just like Endless Starlight did when he saw his previous shield. Fatty Han charged up and snatched the chest plate from Zhang Yang before anyone could react.

"Let's decide who gets it with the dice!" Zhang Yang nodded.

The four of them who wore leather armor did not have to be polite at all. They tossed the dice one, after another to try out their luck. At the end of it, Lost Dream was the winner in securing the chest plate.

"Anymore Violet-Platinum grade equipment?" all of them were looking forward to see what came next.

"Let me see!" As Zhang Yang was looking through the loots, he suddenly came across with another piece and smiled, "There's another one!"

[Cloak of the Dark Wings] (Violet-Platinum, Cloak/Cape)

Vitality: +159

Equip: Increase 3% healing or damage inflicted.

Use: You can fly! Increases movement speed by 300%! Lasts for 10 minutes. Cool down: 1 hour

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"... it can make us fly!" The gang widened their eyes after seeing the special effect of the item!

It was every human being's dream to be able to fly in the sky! Although Zhang Yang mentioned before, that players can capture a flying battle mount after they enter the Chaos Realm, that would be in the far future as they still had 10 levels to go before they could enter that realm, which would take approximately 3 months to achieve! And now, this item was offered a ticket to early access of that! Of course, everyone would be agitated with excitement! Who wouldn't want to fly now?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "This equipment also boosts attack, other than vitality, so any profession can have this. Let's throw the dice and decide who gets it, then!"

"Hehe, One Sword Stroke will definitely be jealous when he finds out about this! He might even bang a wall after knowing about this!"

Pak pak pak! Everyone tossed their own dices, and by the end of this, it was Han Ying Xue, the lucky witch, who won the prize! She took the equipment, taking away everyone's dream of flying!

Zhang Yang did not join in on tossing the dice. Firstly, he already had the [Titan Cape], which was actually almost as good as the [Cloak of the Dark Wings]. Secondly, he was already tired of flying in his previous life, and he did not care if he could fly a little earlier in this life. However, although Han Ying Xue got the [Cloak of the Dark Wings] already, Zhang Yang took it over from her, saying that he would return it to her when she reaches Level 90, because she cannot use it until then, anyway.

Han Ying Xue spat at Zhang Yang and said, "Filthy Yu! You expect me to wear it after you use it? But nevermind, I'll just take it as the offer you made, to help me identify this cloak first!"

'Ding! You have acquired the Dimensional Key Fragment 1!'

Finally, the final piece of the Dimensional Key Fragment had fallen into Zhang Yang's hands. What a long journey! He had given so much time into committing to this quest!

And after Zhang Yang picked up one [Sacred Thread] and a [Hammer of Sanctions - Hammer Handle], there was nothing left on the ground anymore.

"So, it seems that the [Sacred Thread] can be obtained from Madran. Then, does it mean I would need to wait until Madran respawns first before I can get enough materials to make one [Incandescent Electrical Robe]?" Daffodil Daydream let out a sigh. She was planning to start gathering the required materials once she returned back to the main city. She intended to make two [Incandescent Electrical Robes] and give them to Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Like I said, the system won't let the value of Violet-Platinum equipment be washed away." Zhang Yang nodded as he said.

"Let's go. We need to turn in our quest to the old fisherman! Completing an S-rank quest should be very rewarding! At least give us something better than what we just got here!"

After Madran died, the magic barriers outside vanished without a trace. Zhang Yang and his party got onto the island without any difficulties at all. At that time, the Island of the Sacred One had already descended into chaos, as a large number of Believers were engaged with the guards already. The once peaceful and beautiful island had been filled with fresh blood and miserable screaming. It looked more like a hellish island now!

"Good job!" King of Naga - Psyborna revealed himself before Zhang Yang and his party all of a sudden, as he was lurking from the shadow with his long snake body. He slapped Zhang Yang on the back for completing the quest.

"It's another Violet-Platinum boss! Should we slaughter him up?" Fatty Han had already killed so much that his sanity was already going.

"Stupid wretched fatty! Even if we are really going to do it, we must wait until he gives us the rewards of the quest first!" Wei Yan Er is a battle maniac. She held her giant axe in her hands, ready to smash the fatty.

At the same time, 10 Nagas lurked out from behind Psyborna. All of them were above Level 90, and all of them were Yellow-Gold graded! They

lined up neatly behind the King of Naga, cutting off the steam of Wei Yan Er and Fatty Han who had planned to attack them.

"Fellow adventurers, you have taken down Madran and averted a major crisis!" Psyborna looked at everyone and praised them with joy and sincerity, "You did not just save mankind, but you have also helped us, the Nagas! I hereby represent the entire race of Naga in expressing our highest form of gratitude, to you all!"

The King of Naga bent his back down a little and bowed towards Zhang Yang and his party members.

"Look at you! They are so sincere, and you intended to kill them and take their fortunes away! You should be ashamed of yourselves!" Zhang Yang teased the two of them.

"Pui! They're not sincere at all! Look at how they bowed at us! They did not even bow completely! It's not like they have backaches or something!" Wei Yan Er quickly started to defend herself.

"These are just some small gifts, I hope you will like it!" Psyborna waved his hand and 10 streams of light ascended onto Zhang Yang and the remaining 9 members of his party.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Bury the Secret, acquired 5,000,000 experience points! Completion Rating: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have acquired items: Whistle for a Herb Foraging Familiar!'

Zhang Yang was shocked and he took out the item in a hurry. It was a whistle that glittered in a silver complexion. Judging from its appearance, it did not differ much from the other regular whistles.

[Whistle of Herb Foraging Familiar]

Use: Blow the whistle to summon a Herb Foraging Familiar. Herb Foraging Familiars will search for [Herbs] on its own and gather the [Herbs]. One hour later, the Herb Foraging Familiar will return to you and put the [Herbs] that it had managed to gather into your inventory. You must make sure that your inventory has enough space in order to acquire the [Herbs] collected, or else the [Herbs] collected will vanish. The Herb

Foraging Familiar is very good at keeping its tracks hidden, so it is very difficult to be discovered by monsters. You are required to pay 1,000 gold coins for each summon of the Herb Foraging Familiar. Last for 1 hour. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Bound upon pick up.

A new item had just appeared in the game!

So this was exactly like obtaining an auto function on gathering [Herbs]! Zhang Yang could not help himself but to laugh in joy. Having a Herb Foraging Familiar was like having a Herb Collecting assistant. Furthermore, he would not have to worry about the level of this little fellow. This little fellow would follow Zhang Yang into any area or territory, no matter how hostile the environment was. This little fellow could gather herbs in any area in the game!

But, the only weakness of summoning this little fellow was that one would have to pay 1000 gold coins!

Now, Zhang Yang still had no idea on how capable this little fellow was. Was it efficient enough to keep up with Zhang Yang's capability in gathering herbs? If its capability is about the same as a player, then it would be an absolute loss in terms of gold coins! Because no player could actually collect herbs that are worth 1,000 gold coins within an hour!

But the main problem was that, there were no Herbalists in the entire game at the current stage who can keep up with Zhang Yang's level now! So, there is no way that Zhang Yang can just bring someone weaker, and charge into high-level maps to gather herbs! Zhang Yang was also a Herbalist himself. He would not spend so much effort and time in gathering herbs. So, with this little fellow around, Zhang Yang would save a lot of his time, and Zhang Yang was willing to pay for that!

For him, this was really a great fortune that would benefit him for a very long time!

Zhang Yang looked at the remaining members of his party, and he saw that everyone was very joyful. It seemed that everyone had acquired something good for themselves as well.

He smiled and asked, "What good stuff did you guys get?"

"Haha! I got an 'exclusive' hammer that can be used to forge equipment. It would give a 1% additional effect to the equipment I forge!" Wei Yan Er was beaming with joy.

Daffodil Daydream, "Hmm, I got a sewing needle instead. While crafting clothes, there is a certain rate to boost the attributes of the clothes!"

"Mine is..."

Everyone announced their quest rewards from the NPC.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "It seems that the reward of this quest is rewarded to the players, based on the specialized skills of their own professions!"

"What a fortune for everyone!" everyone was cheering in joy. They were all so joyful that they did not realize that Psyborna and his Naga people had left the scene.

As all of them had acquired a few pieces of equipment from the quest completion, they departed back to the main city in a hurry, so that they could identify their equipment as soon as possible. They tore their own teleportation scrolls and teleported back straight to the Thunderstorm Castle.

As Zhang Yang wanted to test out the efficiency of this [Herb Foraging Familiar], so he summoned Turtle and entered a water territory on purpose. Then, he took out the [Whistle of Herb Foraging Familiar] and blew it hard.

'Ding! You have chosen to summon Herb Foraging Familiar. For that, you will be paying a sum of 1,000 gold coins, accept or decline?'

Accept.

Shoof! A small fellow that looked like a cross between a bunny and a raccoon immediately appeared right at the side of Zhang Yang. It had a pair of wings. The creature was covered in silver fur, and was most lovely and cute! But, this cute little fellow immediately drowned in the ocean sea

water, after having a few gulps of sea water, the little fellow died, with its belly facing upwards!

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. He did not see this coming. There was no notice or description about the [Herb Foraging Familiar] drowning in water!

There goes 1,000 gold coins, for nothing!

Zhang Yang wasn't stingy about saving up this 1,000 gold coins, but to lose the money like this, was just totally not worth it! He scooped the little fellow up, tore his teleportation scroll and teleported straight back to Thunderstorm Castle.

After leaving the water territory area, the [Herb Foraging Familiar] actually came back to life! It fluttered its pair of wings and began to fly around in the air lightly. Then, it flew out from the Thunderous Castle. It was probably going out to gather herbs already.

Zhang Yang intended to perform an experiment with his [Herb Foraging Familiar]. He went up to his teleportation circle and teleported himself over to the White Jade Castle. He wanted to find out whether the little fellow would actually follow him over to the White Jade Castle when the summon time period ends.

Chapter 435: Dimensional Key

After returning back to White Jade Castle, Zhang Yang was piecing up the fragments of the [Dimensional Key], while he put the [Cloak of the Dark Wings] into the shop for identification.

Boom!

When the 7 pieces of [Fragment of Dimensional Key] were put together in one spot, streams of immensely beautiful light shone out to the surroundings, one wave after another from the pieced key, just like a blinding sun, and it continued to vibrate in a mysterious and inexplicable way. Every player in White Jade Castle stopped what they were doing. Those who were indoor quickly ran out of the house and looked at the direction of Zhang Yang.

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Streams of white lights surged through the 7 pieces of the Dimensional Key fragments, and the fragments were beginning to piece themselves up, like a lively wiggling snake. Finally, the pieces of the fragments were slowly merging together to form the [Dimensional Key]!

"Noob tank! You did something again right?" Wei Yan Er asked Zhang Yang through the party channel.

"Hehe!"

Zhang Yang was laughing with content as he was waiting for the fragments to merge into the [Dimensional Key].

About half a minute later, the seven pieces of fragments of the Dimensional Key had stopped glowing in the surpassingly beautiful light. They had finally been pieced together! However, it was not a shape of a key! Instead, the fragments had merged into a cylindrical bar that was about half a foot long. The diameter of the cylindrical bar was no thicker than the thickness of three fingers combined together. The cylindrical bar was entirely red.

[Dimensional Key] (Quest Item)

Use: Activates the Dimensional Door, the holder of this Dimensional Key his party members (Maximum 5 members) can teleport into the forgotten Heavenly Might Imperial Kingdom and activate the treasures!

Note: Certain pieces of the Dimensional Key fragments have once been used in the past and it consumed a lot of energy. So, the Dimensional Key will be destroyed after 3 times of activation.

Special Restriction: Players who are Level 100 and above cannot enter or teleport into the location.

Huh? Only 3 times?

Zhang Yang was shocked. Still, he quickly calmed down in realization. No wonder he had not heard of anyone completing such a quest in his previous life. That was because the number of entering the realm is limited! Furthermore, the main quests affected the progression of the game. Some quest items were unique, and one-of-a-kind. Therefore, if all 3 attempts to search for the [Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword] ends up in failure, then the quest will remain a myth that will never be completed! No players will ever have the chance to complete the quest!

Although he had no idea how dangerous the Heavenly Might Imperial Kingdom was, he could already predict the difficulty of the quest, judging by the difficulties of getting all 7 pieces of the Dimensional Key Fragments. So that place would surely be extremely dangerous!

No rash decisions shall be made, as rash decisions would only waste the chance of activating the portal to the Heavenly Might Imperial Kingdom!

Zhang Yang thought to himself, that he should only activate the portal to that realm, after Han Ying Xue and the remaining party members have reached Level 90! There were 3 advantages in doing so. Firstly, reaching Level 90 would reward the players with more skill points which can be used to upgrade their skills. Secondly, they can equip new equipment and items. Thirdly, they can still acquire one additional skill point for themselves after getting the First Clear of the Rock Frost Palace!

This quest had also set up a restriction to prevent Level 100 players from being eligible to complete this quest. So, the 5 players must be Level 90

and above, and they must have a set of insanely powerful equipment and also be skilled in combat. With all that combined, they should be able to complete the quest!

After placing the [Dimensional Key] into his inventory, the beautiful light that radiated across the sky vanished instantly. When the people were still puzzled at what that just happened, Zhang Yang quickly ran out from the crowd, and went straight to the Identifying Shop.

"Argh --- what a devastating loss!" Suddenly, Endless Starlight let out a miserable cry into the party channel.

"What happened? Did someone with his eyes on his back just poke your ass?" Nothing decent would ever come out of Fatty Han's mouth.

"2,000 gold coins! All lost!" Endless Starlight cried out miserably as he could not accept his fate, "It took me so much effort just to collect the parts to assemble this [Hammer of Sanctions], and it turned out to be a two-handed weapon! My 2,000 gold is gone! No!"

"Hahaha! Then, just go ahead and reset your Class to Templar!"

According to the official introduction of the game, when players reach Level 100, they could activate their Inheritance, and the better part was that they could also change their Class Branch if they ever change their minds on their previous decisions. For example, a Guardian can change their Classes over to become Berserkers, or a Templar can change their Class over to become a Sacred Knight. As long as they were all under the category of Warrior, they could switch to whichever branch of their Classes that they preferred!

However, once the players have reset their Classes, they would forget all the required skills of the Class Branch, and their level will be reduced back to 0. But at least it was much better than deleting an account and starting over again. Because all items and equipment, and all the Class skills that the players have would remain. The only thing that the players would lose would be the experience points.

For example, Zhang Yang is a Guardian at the moment. If Zhang Yang wants to change himself to Berserker, skills that he had acquired from the

skill master of his class would all vanish, so would skills such as {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Crash Magic} that he acquired from the skill books of the Guardian Class. But, skills like {Burrow}, {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} and {Blizzard Sky} would all remain.

Of course, there was a cost for resetting your class. 10,000 gold coins would be charged to prevent players from changing their Class Branch at leisure.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Starlight, post the attributes of the hammer up for us to see!"

"Alright." Endless Starlight agreed.

[Hammer of Sanctions] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed)

Attack: 3,969 - 4,568

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS:1,123

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases 5% attack.

Equip: When you are hitting your target, there is a 10% rate to activate sanction upon your target and stun your target for 10 seconds. Effective on Violet-Platinum grade bosses and other lower grade bosses, however, the rate will be even lower.

Required Level: 90

"Wow! The special effect of this hammer is impressive!" after seeing the link that Endless Starlight posted, everyone was surprised to see the attributes of the hammer.

Zhang Yang also nodded to express his agreement, then he said, "Little girl, I think you should hold on to this hammer for now. In the future when we are engaging boss battles and with you swinging the hammer at the bosses, if the special effect can be triggered and stun the bosses for 10

seconds, then we shall own them like bosses instead!

"But I have my passive {Axe Mastery}, and this is a Hammer!"

"Don't be silly! Just look at the special effect! When you reach Level 90, a 5% increase to your attack and new equipment that are 10 levels higher than your current equipment, this weapon would definitely be more powerful than your giant axe, even after your axe is boosted with your passive skill {Axe Mastery}.

"What? Noob tank! Who did you call stupid!" Wei Yan Er jumped in rage.

Zhang Yang laughed. However, he did not mention one thing to everyone. If his [Sword of Purging Devourer] can unseal its second seal and 'swallow' in the special effects of other weapons, then this Hammer was a good 'target' to him. The special effect which can stun targets for 10 seconds long was a very practical effect!

By the end of the discussion, the little girl took the Hammer and put it into her inventory.

Poor Endless Starlight did not just spend 2,000 gold coins to do a Heavy Smithing in order to make the Hammer, he had also spent 500 gold coins to identify the weapon! Would he get all the gold coins that he had spent on the Hammer back from the little girl? Well, everyone knew the answer to that question! So, poor Endless Starlight could only swallow everything down and accept the fact that he had just lost big money!

After identifying the [Cloak of Dark Wings], Zhang Yang put up the cloak and activated the special effect of the equipment. Two gray-silver wings emerged from the sides of his lower ribs. The two feathered wings spread out about three meters out across the surroundings, and they were very attractive!

This pair of illuminating wings was just like another new pair of hands to Zhang Yang. He could move the wings however he wanted just with his thoughts. The feeling was just amazing! Shoof! He immediately thrust himself into the air like a flying general and flew towards the Auction House.

As he flew by, the players in the city were left with their eyes and jaws wide open!

What is going on? Could a player actually fly in the sky?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, then he made his character information public on purpose to show himself off with much cockiness!

Later on, he landed by the Auction House, but the effect of his two illuminating wings could not be deactivated, and they just stayed on him, spread wide open! This pair of illuminating wings were literary 'Illuminating' wings as they could pass through any solid object, the walls, the chairs, the players, the buildings and etc. It was really amazing to look at. There, he got swarmed up by the players who were too curious and wanted to take a closer look at him. As he felt suffocated by the crowd, he decided to hide at his Little Merchandise Shop for the moment. So he flapped his wings and flew again.

After half an hour, the Herb Foraging Familiar suddenly came back to Zhang Yang. It immediately teleported out of the air right in front of Zhang Yang! As it was crying out softly, the Herb Foraging Familiar went straight back into Zhang Yang's inventory. Zhang Yang quickly took a good look at his inventory and found out that a variety of herbs had been added to his inventory.

The variety was truly vast, and the numbers of each variety were different. There were actually a few extremely rare herb types among them! If Zhang Yang was to sell all of the herbs collected by his Herb Foraging Familiar according to the market price, all of these herbs would probably earn him about 500 gold coins. And judging from this amount of earning, it was a little too expensive to spend 1,000 gold coins to summon this little fellow!

However, this was just from assigning the little fellow into gathering herbs in Level 60 maps. If Zhang Yang placed the little fellow into Level 80 and Level 90 maps to gather the herbs, would it balance out the cost? Well, it was possible!

And of course, money was not his priority, his priority was saving time!

That's the most important thing of all!

Just when Zhang Yang planned to grind his level up, he was forced to log out of the game by Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. After he logged out, only did he realize that the reason being that everything in the fridge had been 'cleaned' out, and there was nothing left for them to eat for the coming days! So the ladies commanded him to go to the grocery store on the street to restock.

Zhang Yang could only frown, as he realized that he was being treated as the man who cooks for them. This pair of ladies was really treating him like he was part of their lives already!

But! He knew exactly why they would treat him as the cook! His cooking is quite a 'bomb'! To imagine Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue going into the kitchen and actually cook out of their guilty conscience, Zhang Yang felt a chill down his spine. Normal people will never 'survive' their cooking!

So, he quickly went to the supermarket near their place and shopped like crazy for their daily groceries. Just as he came back to the small district and entered a tall building, he intended to take the elevator. The two doors of the elevator were about to close when he arrived. He quickly ran up and shouted, "Wait! Wait for me!"

The moment right before the elevator doors were closed, a large hand came in between the doors and stopped the doors from closing, causing them to reopen again.

"Thank you so much." Zhang Yang ran into the elevator with all his groceries and pressed on the button 'floor 15'. While he was at it, he saw that the button 'floor 19' was lit.

Only then, did he look over to the people by his side in the elevator.

Other than himself, there were 6 other people in the elevator. The six of them obviously belonged to a group, and four of them looked like regular people, standing in a formation of a fan, protecting two persons who were standing right in the middle of them. Although it wasn't really obvious, but Zhang Yang could still tell it.

The four people were about 20 years old, and they were wearing casual vacation outfits. They were not really macho or tall either. They were simply unremarkable. But, Zhang Yang could 'smell' danger from them, without any reason, other than purely from the intuition of his 10 years experience in fighting.

"These guys are probably bodyguards! And, they have these cool and yet intimidating impressions on them! They might have even killed before!" Zhang Yang only thought to himself as he took a few steps backward. He did not want any trouble out of the blue!

Even though his reaction was very small, the four bodyguards noticed and they turned their attention towards him immediately. The eyes of the four bodyguards were glaring at Zhang Yang as if Zhang Yang was being 'targeted' by a bunch of ferocious beasts!

Zhang Yang quickly looked over to the other two man in the middle of the four bodyguards. One of them was an elder who looked like he was about 50 years old, while the other was slightly younger, looking to be in his thirties. The elder man was obviously a person of high status. Although he did not speak at all, he had the intimidating aura that made people afraid to meet his eyes.

Meanwhile, the middle-aged man was a lot 'greener'. Although the man was also looking strong, he still had a long way to go before he could become as intimidating as the elder!

One of them was an officer, and the other one must be his secretary!

That was Zhang Yang's conclusion. After being a CEO for a couple of months, his knowledge and experience were no longer as shallow as before. He had met many high-ranking officers and had shaken their hands. But, none of them can be compared to this elderly, there was just a large gap between this elderly and the high-ranking officers that he met before! And they cannot be compared to his secretary either! This secretary was more intimidating than any one of them as well!

Chapter 436: Sun Xin Yu's Old Man

Translator Note: Apparently there is a minor error on the site, causing a chapter to be skipped. Fear not, the real chapter 435 is on my patreon page. (26/10/2017).

Zhang Yang did not intend to cause any unwanted trouble to himself, so he lay low, standing at one of the corners of the elevator.

However, the elder man set his extremely sharp eyes onto Zhang Yang, giving him an uneasy feeling, as if countless cold needles were stabbing into his heart. Zhang Yang intended to turn his head away from the old man, but after giving it a thought, they barely even knew each other, so what is he being so afraid of? So, he did not hold back and returned the stare.

The elevator was fast, it already reached the 15th floor in just a brief moment. Ding! The doors of the elevator opened. But, when Zhang Yang was about to set out of the elevator, a hand intercepted him and blocked his way out from the elevator. Zhang Yang traced the arm back to its owner, and realized that it belonged to one of the bodyguards of that old man!

Zhang Yang frowned in frustration and said, "Please, give way! I need to get off the elevator!"

However, the bodyguard did not move a muscle and remained as still as a statue, as if he had not heard anything he said.

Zhang Yang was enraged. Although he did not intend to stir things up, he was not afraid of getting his hands dirty if necessary. So, he reached out and caught the hand in a vice grip!

That bodyguard immediately reacted as well. He reached out his hand to grab Zhang Yang. As his palm reached out swiftly, Zhang Yang could hear the sound of the air by his ears as the hand came at him!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Zhang Yang began to fight back, and the two of them started fighting in

the narrow space of the elevator. But, the bodyguard was really skilled! Zhang Yang tried everything to break himself out of the elevator, but he could not succeed. He was totally trapped inside the elevator by that bodyguard!

‘Ding!’

The door of the elevator closed, and the elevator continued to elevate.

"What the fart!" Zhang Yang was in extreme rage as he began to act more violently towards the bodyguard. The bodyguard held his own, and they continued fighting to a standstill. Finally, Zhang Yang gave in and stopped fighting. Judging from the situation, he had no chance at all in winning, because the other 3 bodyguards had not joined in yet!

The bodyguard did not force Zhang Yang's hands as well. After seeing that Zhang Yang had stopped fighting, he too stopped and returned to his position with his three other colleagues forming a formation to protect the two men in the middle.

‘Ding!’

The elevator stopped at the 19th floor, and the door opened.

"Here you go, sir." one of the bodyguards gestured Zhang Yang out of the elevator.

"What the fart is going on!" Zhang Yang knew that this must be an order given by that old man, so he could not help but to curse and scold the old man deep within his heart.

"Young man, you are scolding me deep in your heart, didn't you?" the old man suddenly spoke up, with an intimidating, but calm aura.

"That's right!" Zhang Yang admitted it without any hesitation, because he was really angry at the moment.

The old man laughed out loud and uncharacteristically put up a gesture of peace with two fingers and walked right out of the elevator.

Zhang Yang had no choice but to be escorted out of the elevator as well, under the supervision of two of the bodyguards. They all followed the old

man. But there was a distance between them and the old man, and the distance was definitely a safety precaution.

The old man stopped at the front of an apartment and rang the doorbell.

Huh? Zhang Yang was surprised and shocked because this was actually Sun Xin Yu's house! He finally understood the situation. This old man must be Sun Xin Yu's old man! Her father!

The door was opened and Sun Xin Yu appeared with her pretty, cold face. When she saw the old man, the slightest bit of shock being betrayed by her mask of a face, "Dad---" her eyes scanned the surroundings swiftly and she saw Zhang Yang. A familiar annoyed expression immediately popped up.

As expected!

The father and his daughter went into the apartment, but the four bodyguards and the secretary man all remained at the doorsteps of the apartment.

"Zhang Yang --- " that secretary turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Come, let's have a talk."

So it seemed that they have already looked into his background and knew all about him! Zhang Yang let out a sigh and walked with the secretary away from the doorstep.

"Allow me to introduce myself, my name is Gong, Gong Ru San. Or you can just call me by my sir name, Gong." The secretary took out a packet of cigarettes and offered it to Zhang Yang.

Gong? As in Lao Gong? Zhang Yang felt a chill through his body and said, "Well, you're elder than me, so I'll just call you brother Gong!" Knowing that the old man is Sun Xin Yu's father, Zhang Yang was no longer dissatisfied about what the old man did to him. He also had a rough idea of why he was brought here.

"Haha! Suit yourself!" Mr.Gong was being frank and open-hearted, "Brother Zhang, you're indeed 'skillful'! I really have to admire your luck! You could actually win the heart of that prideful woman!"

Zhang Yang already knew that Sun Xin Yu must have come from some influential family background, but he had no idea at all how influential it was. So he could not help but to ask, "Brother Gong, so what's the deal with Sun Xin Yu's father?"

"Sun Xin Yu never told you anything about him before this?" Gong Ru San was slightly shocked, then he smiled and said, "Then, I must keep my mouth shut! If Xin Yu ever finds out, then I'm as good as a dead man! Haha!"

What the fart! Zhang Yang cursed within his heart and said, "Brother Gong, do you have any advice for me, then?"

"Well, there's no advice I can offer you. Secretaries like us exist to share the burden of our leaders. So, I hope to understand some of the situation from you, Mr.Zhang!" Gong Ru San suddenly became serious as his own intimidating aura started flowing out.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely. Because he had already died once, this was not something that would scare him anymore! However, since that he had nothing to hide at all, he decided to entertain the secretary.

The two of them were asking questions and answering questions in turns. Unaware of the time, half an hour had already passed. If it wasn't because Sun Xin Yu and his father coming out from the apartment, their conversation would have went on.

"Let's go back now." Mr.Sun said softly. Gong Ru San bowed down instantly at the old man and said yes. The old man then looked at Zhang Yang with a deep meaning behind his eyes, "Young man, let us talk when we have the chance!"

"Dad ---" Sun Xin Yu snapped in frustration.

"Fine, fine, I'm not that forgetful yet. I will not forget what I promised you!" Mr.Sun crossed his hands by his back and walked up to the elevator. After just a brief moment, the elevator arrived, and Mr.Sun left the place with his six men, very swiftly.

Zhang Yang walked up to Sun Xin Yu and said, "What the hell! What's

with your dad? I was almost beaten up!"

Sun Xin Yu seemed to hesitate for a moment, but then she opened up her apartment door and said, "Come in and talk."

"Yo, you're finally letting me into your apartment!" Zhang Yang walked straight into the apartment and changed into a pair of slippers. He looked around, studying every inch of the place. Before this, he only knew that Sun Xin Yu lived here, but the Ice Queen had never let him set his foot into her apartment. Ever!

"Stop staring!" Sun Xin Yu felt annoyed, but she was blushing, especially when Zhang Yang opened up her bedroom door. After Zhang Yang saw the cute fluffy bear on her bed, she blushed even more.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and turned around, "Don't hug the bear anymore, I can sacrifice myself and let you hug me!"

"Do you wish to die?" Sun Xin Yu tightened her teeth as she spoke in disdain.

"Aaah!" Zhang Yang sat onto the sofa and put the groceries aside, and then he put his legs on the coffee table and said. "I was being 'interrogated' by the secretary of your father to the point that I have almost told him everything about my ancestors! So, I think you owe me an explanation."

Sun Xin Yu kicked his legs off the coffee table, and sat down with a cold expression on her face and said, "My father's name is Ma Ding Kun, he is the Secretary of a provincial Party Committee for the Province of Su Jiang."

"Pff!" Zhang Yang had just taken a sip of water, and had nearly spat it out. Nearly. No wonder she could ask the party secretary to do as she asks. She was actually the loving daughter of the Secretary of a provincial Party Committee for the Province of Su Jiang! But thinking about it, something was still not right. Previously, Sun Xin Yu had already exhibited her large network connection in the entirety of Shang Hai. Although this Ma Ding Kun was a Secretary of a provincial Party Committee for Province of Su Jiang, he would not have to power to put his hands on the affair in Shang Hai. Shang Hai was the capital of the international metropolis of China!

Sun Xin Yu saw Zhang Yang's thoughtful gaze, so she continued to explain, "My second uncle is the mayor of Shang Hai!"

"Cough!" Zhang Yang was choked by the water he was trying to drink. He coughed on and tried to continue the conversation, "Just tell me everything at once! Stop revealing stuff like that one after another! My heart can't take it!"

"My grandfather is Ma Tian Hang!"

"Pff ---" Zhang Yang had finally lost it and spilled the water from his mouth. Holy god! Ma Tian Hang was the Chairman of the Standing Committee for the entire China! So, this entire family is not simple at all! Zhang Yang coughed for a long time, before he regained his breath and continued to ask, "Then, why is your surname Sun?"

"I followed my mom's surname." Sun Xin Yu spoke softly.

Illegitimate daughter? A mistress? Zhang Yang began to think out of the ordinary and messed up his own mind.

"Don't think so damn much on that. My mother is the legitimate wife of my father. They love each other very much, and they got married legitimately!" Sun Xin Yu told Zhang Yang with a serious face, "It is just that my father loves my mother too much, so he decided to allow his daughter to follow the surname of his wife if they ever got a daughter."

Zhang Yang then asked, "But I can see you and your family aren't that close, right? Or is there something that I missed out?"

"My grandfather wants me to marry an A-hole! That's why I moved out and stay here. I don't want to listen to his whining and scolding every day!" Sun Xin Yu snapped coldly.

My gawd! Zhang Yang had so much thought about Sun Xin Yu and he had come up with a number of theories about her background. But now that he knew about her, he could not accept that everything was actually so simple and uncomplicated! She was merely staying away because she felt annoyed!

Zhang Yang put his legs up on the coffee table again and placed his chin

on his hands and said, "Then, why did your dad look at me as if I was a thief? He wouldn't really believe that you and I have already... you know... Haha! If I really got you as my girlfriend, then I would become the Son-in-law of the 'Emperor', won't I?"

"Tsk! Who would actually like you in the first place!" Sun Xin Yu shook her head without restraint.

This beauty had fair, pearl white skin, and she was definitely hot as f*ck! And when she's in her police uniform, she was pretty in much more different ways. Zhang Yang could never fathom on why he had actually turned himself away from her.

He tapped on the sofa right beside him and said, "Pretty girl, come over here and give me a quick rub on my thigh!"

Sun Xin Yu suddenly looked very angry, but she actually went on to sit by the side of Zhang Yang. A powerful punch landed on Zhang Yang's thigh, Zhang Yang felt the excruciating pain on his thigh to the point where he started breathing in cold air!

"You really used a lot of force in this massage..."

Sun Xin Yu remained silent for a moment, then she suddenly said, "Don't stay with that woman from now on!"

Zhang Yang was shocked, at first he thought Sun Xin Yu was talking about Yu Li, but he instantly reacted and realized that Sun Xin Yu was most probably talking about Han Ying Xue. He let out a breath of sigh and said, "Did you really think I wanted to? I have to cook for two super duper lazy 'worms'! And I'm about to become their personal cook in their house!"

"It's obvious that you're just reluctant to leave because of your lust for sex!" Sun Xin Yu spoke out coldly.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then I shall show you my lust for sex!"

He made an intimidating gesture towards Sun Xin Yu as if he was about to kiss her.

But Sun Xin Yu remained undaunted. She did not even move! She just looked at him coldly.

"Coward."

Just when Zhang Yang was withdrawing his head backward, he could hear the low-voiced insult from Sun Xin Yu. Although her voice was really soft, it was enough for Zhang Yang to hear it. Zhang Yang was provoked, and he planted his lips straight onto the red and sexy lips of Sun Xin Yu.

"Hmm ---" Sun Xin Yu let out a soft mutter, and surprisingly, she did not struggle or fight back at all.

Lips to lips, touching each other only on the surface, feeling each other out, and slowly the action got more vigorous. The two of them started to breathe heavily as they started moving more violently by the seconds. Their hands were already unconsciously, passionately groping about. Their body temperatures were rising.

After a long time, their lips parted from each other, and they looked into each other's eyes.

Sun Xin Yu did not show any sign of shame. And then, she nonchalantly blurted out, as if she had just had a walk in the park, or something, "Zhang Yang, I like you!"

Right after she confessed, she chased Zhang Yang out of her apartment and closed the door shut, leaving Zhang Yang outside the door of her house dumbfounded

TL Notes:

1. Lao Gong - Means 'husband' in Chinese literacy.

Chapter 437: Realm of Sacred Glory

As he headed to the ground floor in a daze, Zhang Yang felt a rush of joy in his heart, but he also felt an unexplained sense of pure terror down his spine.

Deep down his heart, the shadow of Lin Yu was fading by the second. And on the other hand, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had earned more ground in his heart. He could not help but think, it was possible that he might end up like the main character Zhi Zun Bao1 in the story of 'A Chinese Odyssey: A Pandora's Box' who finally finds his true love after time-traveling through 500 years of time?

But speaking of true love, one was enough as it is! If there were two true loves in one's life, then the troubles would be endless!

Zhang Yang walked into the house to find Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er fighting over for a bottle of perfume that was deemed to be a limited edition, like their lives were depending on it. They did not realize that Zhang Yang had spent a longer than usual period of time outside.

After finishing up with his cooking in the kitchen, the three of them sat at the table and enjoyed the food. In the afternoon, they would be heading out to check on a new house. It seemed that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had finally picked a place for him.

The new house was located in an urban area. The environment was very good. Of course, transportation was convenient as well. There was an indoor swimming pool and a tennis court within the premises around the house. There were 21 bedrooms in the house itself! And as expected, the price of that house was really 'something'! It would cost Zhang Yang about 40 million dollars!

However, the moment when Zhang Yang got off the car, he realized it straight away. This was definitely not just a coincidence! The house that the two ladies picked for him is actually the same house that he had stayed for two years in his previous life!

Well, this must be the will of god, or some butterfly effect that caused

the timelines to fixed itself.

After entering the large house, the three of them began to pick their favorite rooms. Of course, Zhang Yang would naturally pick the one that he had stayed in in his previous life. But what he did not expect was that Han Ying Xue had also picked the same room as him. Both of them really had similar tastes when it came to picking rooms! Both of them did not plan to be polite, as they both wanted the same room. Han Ying Xue insisted that even if she had to sleep with Zhang Yang for the night, she will do it just to secure the room to herself!

Zhang Yang was left helpless, so he could only give in to the demands of Witchy Snow and let her have the room.

Peace was always a temporary state. Before the night fell, Sun Xin Yu had invited herself over, and she carried a small luggage with her as well, popping up at Zhang Yang's new house. She seemed to have made herself at home, and planned to stay in with them. As she did not even greet any one of them, Han Ying Xue was furious, placing her hands on her waist.

The next morning, Daffodil Daydream took a plane and rushed over to pay a visit to Zhang Yang and the ladies. So, Zhang Yang and the ladies went to the airport to pick her up, then they escorted her over to the house. The initially quiet large house had suddenly become a 'bird nest'! The smell of flowers were in every corner of the place, and there were many sights for sore eyes in the house now.

Safe to say, his house is now a barbie house full of pretty dolls!

Another fortnight had passed in just a blink of an eye. Zhang Yang and his small party had all been elevated up to Level 90, However, the Level 90 dungeon Rock Frost Palace was designed for players to explore in a large-scale of 50 players. Although there were only 6 bosses in the entire dungeon, they were extremely difficult.

Zhang Yang wrote down some battle tactics and passed it over to Endless Starlight. He planned to let Endless Starlight lead a party to explore and clear the dungeon. Meanwhile, he was making potions for future use, and he would also tease Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu once in

a while, while bullying the little girl out of boredom. His days were considered very casual.

One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, and Humbly Gentleman had been laying low. They did not try to stir anything up. It seemed that everyone was trying hard to level up. Everyone was focused on becoming strong enough to breakthrough Level 100 so that they could explore the Realm of Chaos even further.

Now that everyone was still below Level 100 at the moment, whatever the players did were merely small things. To be known by everyone in the world, one must achieve great heights in the Realm of Chaos! With that, only then would players become recognized by the world!

Even though Endless Starlight had already acquired the battle tactics from Zhang Yang, they were progressing very slowly in clearing the dungeon of the Rock Frost Palace. They had not been able to take down the first boss, even after seven or 8 days of trying! Of course, one of the main reasons was because they were short in numbers. Only 34 members of the guild were over level 90.

And again, another fortnight passed, and Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky and other large-scale guilds had gathered enough number of players who were at least Level 90. Once again, the competition of securing the First Clear of the dungeon in Hardcore Mode had begun once again. Although Level 80 and Level 90 was just 10 levels of difference, players had spent about 3 months, just to close the gap and elevate themselves up to Level 90 and above!

For most of the players, the last time they had competed for a First Clear had been a lifetime ago. So, when the competition sparked up once again, players were all agitated with excitement. There would be people posting on the forums and walls of the game's official website. Countless players appeared to predict the outcome as they were guessing who would get the First Clear of the dungeon this time around!

However, the Rock Frost Palace was extremely difficult to manage! Although players had only taken about 2 days to clear the Hard Mode, the

first boss of the same dungeon in Hardcore Mode had stopped all guilds, possibly for good. No one had been able to break through the defense of the first boss, until now!

The main reason being, the boss had too many AOE skills that he could use to wipe out players in seconds! The entire party had to make sure that they ducked and rolled perfectly in order to survive the attacks of the boss. None of them could afford any mistake, not even a small one! If any of them made a small mistake, the entire party could be wiped out!

A boss like this required absolute precise coordination among the entire party, which meant that 50 members of the entire party had to remain perfect throughout the battle!

Even Zhang Yang was helpless. It was impossible to single-handedly take out these kinds of bosses that turn the sky upside down. So all Zhang Yang could do was to let all of his guild members practice, and practice.

After filtering out the good and the bad, the 50-member party had been reduced down to a 42-member party. Although their numbers were a little smaller, their efficiency had greatly increased. After a dozen times of being wiped out, the Lone Desert Smoke had finally succeeded in slaying the first boss, being the first party to ever slay the first boss of the Rock Frost Palace.

Although the remaining 5 bosses were very difficult to deal with, after experiencing the excruciating suffering in battling the first boss of the dungeon, everyone had already gone through a hellish nightmare that trained them to become stronger. Their efficiency in clearing the remaining bosses of the dungeon had obviously increased a lot. They were breaking through hordes of monsters like a hot knife cutting through butter, solving their problems with their crushing force! In just a brief moment, they had already slain the second, the third, the forth, and the fifth boss of the dungeon, heading straight into the deeper site of the dungeon, ready to face the final boss.

On the other hand, Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage, the Radiance and other guilds were performing with the strength of a large-scale guild. They had

also managed to slay the first boss and progressed through the remaining bosses, heading straight to the final boss. Now that everyone performed outstandingly, it remained unclear on which guild would be able to secure the First Clear of this dungeon!

Just when things were getting hotter, Zhang Yang and his party members joined the fray! After making up the strongest formation of the party, they took down the last boss Longrich Doc like an unstoppable trunk hitting straight into the face of the boss! There, they had secured the First Clear of another dungeon.

With everyone acquiring an additional skill point, having their Level 90 equipment, and slaying quite a number of Violet-Platinum bosses over the month, the capability of the party had increased tremendously, in terms of equipment!

Zhang Yang was planning to activate the [Dimensional Key] and lead his party into the Heavenly Might Imperial Kingdom to acquire the [Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword]. With that sword, he would be able to complete the long-winded Main Quest that Princess Serena had bestowed upon him. However, it was really a bad timing for {{God's Miracle}} to celebrate their one year anniversary since their launch. And for that, the official activated an event that rewarded players who participated.

After reading the description of the event, everyone went mad! Even Zhang Yang, who had lived twice, was agitated with excitement! Without hesitation, Zhang Yang postponed the 'Meteor Sword' quest and participated in the anniversary event!

According to the official announcement, in the upcoming three days from 28th June to 30th June, all monsters would have a certain chance of dropping an item called the 'Glory of Stardust'. This 'Glory of Stardust' did not have any function on its own. It could not be sold to the merchants in the game as well. However, on the 1st of July, the game would open up the 'Realm of the Sacred Glory'. Players would only need to turn in 10 of the 'Glory of Stardust' to the NPC that would spawn in the main city during the period of the event in order to enter the Realm of the Sacred Glory.

In the Realm of the Sacred Glory. Killing a monster would give players 3 times of experience points. Furthermore, that map would spawn a large number of new treasure chests. Although most of the treasure chests did not give good equipment or items, but a very small number of the treasure chests did. They might drop top-tier equipment, skill books, or even skill points!

Other than that, treasure chests might even give 'Glory Points'. Players would be able to collect the glory points, as much as they can. The game would keep count on the 'Glory Points' each player can collect every 12 hours. Players with the least scores would be eliminated and sent out of the realm. This process would be repeated 6 times, and the last player remaining in the realm with the highest score would be awarded with levels and the title reward!

The fact that the treasure chests had a certain rate of dropping attractive rewards like equipment and skill books, already motivated everyone to act on it. Now that they added rewards like a level and a title reward, players would, of course, be crazed over the event! Furthermore, the Realm of the Sacred Glory would only be opened once, so every single player in the eight main cities would only have one chance to compete in becoming the top 1 and claim the title of this event!

Number one in the world!

The glory of achieving this height was just mesmerizing!

The moment when the officials released the news, all players were boiled with excitement, and they were all sharpening their blades and cracking their fists.

The system did not seem to trouble the players at all. Although the drop rate of the [Glory of Stardust] wasn't really that high, at least it wasn't too low to the point where players would not get even one after an entire day of killing the monsters. To get 10 [Glory of Stardust] in 3 days time was just like a walk in the park. Anyone could complete the task very easily!

Therefore, on the 1st of July, 90% of the players have managed to collect 10 [Glory of Stardust]!

On the night of 30th of June, almost every player was already waiting at the site of the Teleportation Circles of the main cities where the NPCs were going to spawn. They were all eager to enter the Realm of Sacred Glory the moment it opened, because the earlier they could enter the realm, the longer they got to stay in the realm to progress on their accumulation of the 'Glory Points', and the more 'Glory Points' they would be able to collect.

Zhang Yang had also gathered his usual party members and waited at the site, just like the others.

The moment when the clock struck 12 and marked the beginning of the 1st of July, a beautiful lady NPC in a crimson red chinese traditional wear 'Qi Pao' spawned right in the middle of the crowd. The lady looked gentle and lovely with her outfit. A few male players around her were trying to put their dirty hands on her boobies and her ass with some dirty thoughts in their mind. However, thunder strikes came out of nowhere and struck those players until they were all fried. Then, the system locked them up in the prison of the main cities, forbidding them from taking part in the event!

The beautiful NPC did not waste any time and she went straight to the point. With her hands waving in the air casting the spell, a large portal appeared right in the middle of the city square in an instant.

'Ding! The Realm of Sacred Glory has been opened. You can use 10 'Glory of Stardust' to enter the realm. Note: You only have 1 chance to enter!'

"Let's go! Time to go in!"

Zhang Yang and his remaining 9 members stepped into the portal at the same instant, as the portal was as large as the widely opened mouth of a big blue whale! The portal was 'sucking' in the players into the realm like a gushing tidal wave. The width of the portal did not seem to be narrow at all, even with all the players being 'sucked' in at the same time.

'Ding! You have entered the Realm of the Sacred Glory!'

Everything that Zhang Yang saw in front of his eyes instantly changed,

and now, he found himself on a mountain. He could see a few zombies lurking around the vast space of the area from afar. The zombies seemed like they were wandering about without any sense of purpose. But he suddenly frowned and shouted out into the party channel all of a sudden, "Witchy Snow, Ice Queen, little girl, are you guys standing together next to each other now?"

"I'm alone all by myself!"

"Me too!"

The remaining 9 members of his party were shouting into the party channel as well. They had entered the portal at the same time, however, they had all been teleported into a different area of the realm. Furthermore, there were no coordinates at all, they could not access their world map! They could only see about a 200-meter radius of the area around them.

"Then, let's proceed on your own and see who's luckier!" since things had already been laid out, Zhang Yang could only accept the fate.

"Wa! Healers like us will definitely suffer more than you guys! Not fair!" Han Ying Xue let out a miserable sigh.

Healers had weaker DPS capabilities compared to all other Classes, so they were at a major disadvantage.

But there was no point in complaining any further. As Zhang Yang attempted to activate his [Party Summon Order], the system notification popped up, informing that it cannot be used. Well, it was understandable. The initial intention of the system is to separate all players from each other and let all players proceed by themselves individually. If players could easily work in a group, then the purpose of the event would be defeated.

Zhang Yang deduced that the system was doing all this is to prevent some players from helping other players to gather the 'Glory Points'. Or else, if all members of one entire guild helped only one player to collect the 'Glory Points', then it would become a competition between guilds already!

Zhang Yang summoned out Whitey and charged straight up to the zombies around him.

With a blast of {Spear of Obliteration} striking out, a damage of '-5,499' was inflicted on the monster nearest to him. That blow actually took off half of the health bar of the monster!

Zhang Yang was a little bit shocked, and he suddenly said, "The damage output of the tankers and healers are boosted in this realm!"

On the other side, Han Ying Xue had also realized that her attacks had been increased by 30%. That increment could already make up for the weak spot of the Priest's in their magic attacks.

Zhang Yang swung his sword at the zombie and killed it. Upon his kill, he acquired about 20,000 experience points! Outside of the Realm of Sacred Glory, players could only acquire about 9,000 experience points in similar situations. So, the experience points that they can acquire in this realm was about two times more!

Unfortunately, the monsters in this realm were rather scattered, with one in the north and one in the east. If Zhang Yang could lure the monsters to one spot and kill them all in one shot, then he could have earned tremendous experience points!

The loot that the monsters dropped was very normal. They would only drop some copper coins, and some [Inscribed Clothes]. Zhang Yang progressed forward and slew another seven to eight zombies. Then, he found a scarlet treasure chest lying quietly right behind a large rock!

He quickly hustled over there on Whitey. As he arrived closer to the treasure chest, he jumped down from Whitey and began to put his hands on the treasure chest, trying to open it up.

A 10-second progress bar appeared right on top of his head and began to fill up by the seconds. That was a process of opening up a chest. Players would not be able to make any movements while the progress bar is filling up, or else the process would be interrupted, and the players will have to restart the process all over again.

"Wa! I've just got a Yellow Gold equipment! And 12 'Glory Points'!" the cheerful voice of Wei Yan Er was heard through the party channel.

That little girl really had good luck this time!

'Ding! You have opened a Glory Treasure Chest!'

'Ding! You have acquired Inscribed Cloth X 3!'

Right after that, the treasure chest closed automatically and vanished after 1 second.

What bad luck!

Zhang Yang let out a sigh, but then he gave it some thought. If equipment and 'Glory Points' were easy to come by from opening up treasure chests, then {God's Miracle} would descend into chaos!

As he proceeded forward, Zhang Yang slew all the monsters that he came in contact with and opened up all treasure chests that he found along the way. After opening up 11 treasure chests, the best he could get from the chests was a Green-Copper grade equipment. He was so infuriated! Even the Hard Mode of the Rock Frost Palace would drop Gray-Silver grade equipment or items at the very least! Following the increasing numbers of Level 90 over time, the Green-Copper equipment would eventually be phased out by the Gray-Silver equipment, and the Gray-Silver grade equipment would become the accepted norm for regular players soon enough!

To give him a Green-Copper equipment at this time was like throwing rotten sludge straight at his face!

As Zhang Yang was struggling in such regard, the exciting voices of his party members filled the party channel. Most of them were bragging about their finds. The luckiest one was, of course, that Witchy Snow, who had already managed to collect 89 'Glory Points' at the moment. That number was about two times of the number of 'Glory Points' collected by Sun Xin Yu, who was the second highest achiever in the entire party!

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was still stuck at having zero 'Glory Points' at the moment. If this went on, he would definitely be among the first

batch that is going to be eliminated and be kicked out of the realm!

TL Notes:

1. Zhi Zun Bao - the main male character in the story of 'A Chinese Odyssey: A Pandora's Box' where he travelled through time 500 years earlier and miraculously met his true love.

Chapter 438: Level 4 Gem Stone

"Nyehehehe! In your face, noobie tank! How does it feel to be trampled over! Hahaha! This is the payback for your bullying ways!" the little brat laughed like how an audience laughed at a clown.

Zhang Yang remained unfazed. Based on Han Ying Xue and everyone else's progress, he had deduced that the Glory points found in chest varied from 1 points to 20 points! It was not completely random either. If the chest was found nearby an area with normal tiered monsters, it will produce Glory points ranging from 1 to 10 points. Most of them had not even spawned any Glory points! On the other hand, if the chest was found in an area with elite monsters, the Glory points found inside would be between 11 points to 20 points. These types of chests would more likely spawn Glory points.

Since the start, his luck had not been that good, since he had only been able to find normal monsters. However, Zhang Yang had faith that his luck would turn for the better.

'Server Announcement: Light flashes to all corners of the realm. Rainman has found an AncientTreasure Chest and obtained a powerful equipment: Star Dragon Boots!'

[Star Dragon Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +806

Strength: +540

Dexterity: +230

[Level 3 Socket]

Level Requirement: 80

The server channel was filled with the announcement notification. The system notification had even posted the item properties, allowing every player in China to be able to read and check on the item.

Across the entire server, players from all around different cities got heated up, for the item tier was Violet-Platinum! The best and strongest equipment tier in the game, so far! Now that one player had obtained the item, everyone got fired up. For the item could be obtained from a chest, and not just from a boss!

From Zhang Yang's perspective, he did not care about the item. He had bigger problems at hand. Just how big is this Realm of the Sacred Glory? All he had been able to see was the never-ending scenery of mountains and grassy plains. This event takes all players from all servers of the game! The numbers could easily reach 100 million, yet all Zhang Yang had encountered were monsters, and not a single player! Just how large did the developers make the map up to be?

Zhang Yang could not comprehend the sheer vastness of the map, and decided to go with the flow. After a certain number of chests, Zhang Yang finally managed to open one and score his first Glory point. The points did not require player to pick, open, or do practically anything at all.

As long as players opened the chest, the points would automatically be added to the poll and be displayed at the side of the player's head's up display user interface.

1 point...2 points...20...50...

As slow as Zhang Yang's progress was, it was entirely controlled by the system random number generator system. There was really nothing Zhang Yang could do to boost the numbers. Based on Zhang Yang's current equipment build, he had not needed to take any breaks and could go on forever in killing monsters and opening chests. Right now, to maximize the effort of earning more Glory points, Zhang Yang had placed the monster killing as his second priority and had set his main goal into finding more chests instead.

He rode the bear everywhere, and if there were no chests among the group of monsters he encountered, Zhang Yang would not stop and continued to run towards the next chest. If the monsters could not chase after him, Zhang Yang would not bother to turn around. The time

allocated for him to be in this "realm" is limited. Even though the monster did give extra experience points, they wouldn't matter if he could not earn enough Glory points in the first place.

After continuously collecting items from chests, Zhang Yang had finally filled up most of this inventory space. Although he had 190 slots in his inventory, most of the slots were filled up with many kinds of different potions and their different transmutation grades. In the end, Zhang Yang had to resort to discarding lower tiered items in order to make way for better items.

‘Ding! You have opened a Glory Treasure Chest!’

‘Ding! You have obtained Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone x1!’

‘Ding! You have obtained 16 Glory Points!’

Zhang Yang was stunned at the word [Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone] and quickly examined his inventory. There, sitting quietly at the corner of Zhang Yang's saturated inventory, was the item.

Zhang Yang took it out and felt the glossy surface of the gemstone. Like other gemstones, it was extremely smooth on the surface, and fit just right in the palm of his hand.

[Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone] (Usable)

Use: Place this Gemstone in a Level 4 Socket or higher, to grant 50 Dexterity points to an equipment. Socketing has a 40% chance of failure.

Zhang Yang smiled happily. It was a jackpot. Gemstones that were level 3 and below could be bought from a Gemstone store. However, Level 4 Gemstones and higher could only be obtained from monsters, chests, or Hardcore Mode Dungeon Speed record reward. Still, if one had the wallet of Donald Trump, one could easily fuse Level 3 Gemstones into Level 4 Gemstones.

However, that percentage chance and money would only be burning a hole in pockets!

In most games, including ‘God's Miracle’, players could invest a fortune

and be able to "win" the game easily. Those who insisted in not spending any cash in the game would have to rely on talent and effort. Either money or effort could bring a player to victory, and if players had neither, gaming would be extremely tough for them. There were games that would give players a huge advantage for investing money, while other games had little to no benefits for cash players.

‘God’s Miracle’ was both pay-to- win, and play-to- win. It was balanced in both ways; put in enough effort, you can earn enough money in the game to re-invest in it again to earn more.

After that, Zhang Yang had opened more chests and had obtained a [Level 4 Vitality Gemstone], [Intelligence Gemstone], and [Spirit Gemstone]. None of them were in bulk. Zhang Yang had only managed to haul two counts of [Spirit Gemstone] and one count of the aforementioned Gemstones. Worst off, he had not obtained any [Strength Gemstones]! Since Vitality was considered to be the most universal attribute in all 5 major attributes, the [Level 4 Vitality Gemstone] granted a bonus 100 Vitality points, double that of others.

"Yo! Boss, how much is your current Glory points?" asked Endless Starlight out of the blue.

"129 points." Zhang Yang casually replied.

"D*mn! That’s a lot! You have more than I do!"

"Can’t help it. I’m handsome, that’s why!"

"Please! 129 points? That’s far from what I have!" the little brat interjected in the party chat. "I already have 153!"

"Haha! You’re saying that you’re beautiful?" said Zhang Yang.

"Nyehehehe! At least you have good eye sight!"

Without realizing it, Zhang Yang had already spent more than 2 hours in the realm. Only then, Zhang Yang had spotted the first player in the map. The opponent was not a China player.

Instead, he had a tag behind his name saying: "North America".

Even though the other player was only Level 78, Zhang Yang had still jumped atop his mount and killed the poor player in a few hits. In the game, the enmity between players across the continent and server would forever be hostile. That was why, Zhang Yang would kill anything that did not bear a red flag, even if he was Level 78, or Level 1!

'Ding! You have obtained 1 Honor Point!'

Zhang Yang obtained Honor points after killing the player. Honor points were collectible points that could be earned when a player kills another player of a different server. Points collected could be used to exchange items and equipment that would be bound to a player. It was another method of obtaining equipment if one could not kill a dungeon boss. Honor points would only be given if the player killed is from another region. Players from the same region, for example, China's Emerald City and White Jade Castle cannot earn points by killing each other. Normally, players can earn 1 Honor point by killing NPCs, players equal or lower than the player's level.

Players could earn more points by killing more important NPCs like army generals or Kings or a ruler from another kingdom. In this case, the King would grant up to 10,000 Honor points! The problem was, it is not easy to just jump into the vast army and target their king. Unlike chess, the Kings in the game were one of the strongest entities.

Slowly yet surely, Zhang Yang had gathered more Glory points and had reached above 300 points. With no sense of security since the game did not provide a means to check one's current position in the ranking list, the only way Zhang Yang could convince himself that he is in the ranking list was to open more and more chests. By the time the system was close to revealing the rank, Zhang Yang had the urge to ask his friends.

"Hey guys? How much points do you guys have?"

"421!"

"583!"

Everyone reported their collected points and to put in comparison, Han Ying Xue, the ever so lucky lady had collected 682 points with Fatty Han at

the lowest with only 398.

"Aww. Fatty bro. I don't understand, why do you have such luck!"

"Nyahahahaha. I'd say, remember to wash your hands every time you're done with the loo!"

"Sadly, Fatty bro might be kicked out!"

Amid the jokes around, by the time the clock struck 12 noon, every player's character was frozen in place.

'Ding! The system is currently calculating the system rank. Please wait...'

'Server announcement: Current number of players in Realm of the Sacred Glory: 687,349,832.

Players with Glory points of 400 and less will be eliminated from the Realm of the Sacred Glory.

Player elimination will start in 30 seconds. Please be ready.'

Without much delay, the system announced the result.

"ARGH! What a waste! I was only 2 points behind! 2 motherf*cking points!" cried Fatty Han disgruntledly. Cry as he may, the system ruthlessly kicked players out without a second thought.

After much discussion and inquiry, it was found out that almost 90% of Lone Desert Smoke guild members had been kicked out of the map.

The longer you spend inside the Realm of the Sacred Glory, the more benefits you could reap from it. It would serve as a great chance to improve the status of the guild. Yet, after finding out that 90% of the members of the guild had been kicked out, it would not help much, but only a tiny fraction of that.

Zhang Yang asked Snow Seeker and even Greensleeves Prince, and found that their guilds had suffered from similar losses. Both guilds had 90% of their guild members kicked out of the Realm.

The second portal opened and the second round of the "Treasure Hunt" started. This time, many players who had not participated were first to

arrive. Since they had not joined the first round, they had lost a great deal of time to find and gather Glory points. Unless they had the best of luck, they would not have much time to compensate the 12 hours lost from the previous round.

This round, Zhang Yang was extremely lucky. The Glory points that he had obtained from most of the chest were all 10 and above. He had even surpassed Han Ying Xue! Even though the real-time ranking list was hidden away from players, Zhang Yang had found out that he was the highest in the guild.

After the second round, the elimination condition was set to 1,000 Glory points and below. The number of players left to join the third round was only around 7,000,000, which was not even enough to fill one major city!

From the third round onwards, the ranking list was released to the players. At the same time, the system had made an announcement, eliminating 90% of all the players inside the realm. Those who were listed in the ranking list had to push themselves to the limit, to position their names at the top of the list, in order to prevent elimination. With the threat of elimination hanging over their necks, players who were listed lower in the list had to force themselves to run amok in panic to search for chests.

Zhang Yang had the experience. Now, instead of just blindly searching, he completely ignored fighting the monsters until he could find another chest. If the monsters still chased after him, he would kill them all in one wave. With his battle mount and his combined strength, monsters stood no chance. Only strong tanks like One Sword Stroke and Endless Starlight might be able to follow his method.

After the third, fourth, and the fifth round of elimination, only 10 players, including Zhang Yang was left in the realm. The only player from Lone Desert Smoke to remain in the field was Zhang Yang alone!

Initially, the little brat had a chance to enter the final 10, however, she had encountered a European player and had been in a fierce fight. They had spent more than 2 hours just to have a go at each other and in the

end, both of them were eliminated.

Chapter 439: Captain America

In this final round, the format had changed.

All 10 players were teleported to a small hillside. The method to obtaining Glory points remained the same, that was to open as many chests as you can find. However, the chests were all buried deep in the earth. Moreover, one must first hunt monsters to obtain maps that would reveal the locations of the chest. Without a map, players would have no means of finding the chest. In one instance, only one chest is spawned. Many maps that lead to the same chest would be dropped by the monsters. There would be situations where two, three, or even all players would end up searching for the same chest. During this time, players will be placed in a battle royale style combat, and the players who are killed would be unable to revive until the chest is opened, and only then would they be revived at a random point around the hill.

A battle royale, and only the strongest shall remain!

The time limit was still 12 hours. When the event ends, the players with the highest Glory points will be awarded with a Level +3, SP +1, and a title "Warrior of the Sacred Glory". The reward for the second place is Level +2 and SP +1. The third place will be awarded with Level +1 and SP +1.

Zhang Yang opened the event ranking list and examined the 10 players' identity.

1. Dusk Phoenix (Europe, Glory Points: 2,930, Level 93, Bandit.)
2. Captain America (North America, Glory Points: 2,881, Level 92, Berserker.)
3. Caesar the Great (Europe, Glory Points: 2,849, Level 91, Sniper)
4. One Sword Stroke (China, Glory Points: 2,789, Level 91, Guardian)
5. Musashi Ou-sama (Japan-Korea, Glory Points: 2,713, Level 92, Templar)
6. Zhan Yu (China, Glory Points: 2,702, Level 94, Guardian)

7. Saabo (South America, Glory Points: 2,647, Level 91, Witch Doctor)
8. Lord Mandala (India, Glory Points: 2,613, Level 92, Pyromancer)
9. Xindalu (Africa, Glory Points: 2,589, Level 91, Beastmaster)
10. October Miracle (Australia, Glory Points: 2,547, Level 91, Cryomancer)

The way to collect more Glory points was not ensured by opening chests. It was still highly dependent on luck. Zhang Yang knew his own speed. He was sure that no one could keep up with him. However, most of the chests he found were empty. At most, the elite chests could cough out around 11 or 12 Glory points. Speed was no longer an option for him.

However, now that things have changed to only one chest at a time, the battle required guts and intellect. The first to obtain the map would not definitely get the chest. Those players who had manage to keep themselves in the game so far must have a certain level of equipment prowess and skills. Zhang Yang could take on 2, or 3 at a time. But if he goes overboard, all 9 players might gang up on him, and that would be too much for Zhang Yang to handle. He could not do the standard 'Zhang Yang' charge in and fight style.

With only a few seconds of preparation time, all 10 players had their characters unfrozen from their spots and were free to move around. Luckily, all 10 players were not spawned at the same spot. In fact, all of them were spread far apart from each other. This round, the system was rather generous. Instead of little to no monsters, monsters in this final round were spawned close to each other in great numbers. Zhang Yang did not think twice and gathered them together and had wiped them all clean. Zhang Yang gathered close to 20 and more elite monsters, and rounded them up with {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}, and {Heroic Jump} before finishing off the entire herd with {Horizontal Sweep}. With such a concentrated swarm of monsters, the sword effect procced endlessly until most of the monsters were killed.

In 2 minutes or less, Zhang Yang had killed most of the monsters and had killed a few stragglers individually. Zhang Yang was actually

disappointed. Not because of the immense experience points that he had just obtained was not enough, but due to the time limitation and also at the fact that he was in an event. If he could just ignore the urge to win, he could spend the rest of the event farming the monsters, easily leveling up to Level 95 in just four days. Sadly, in just 12 hours, there was not much time for Zhang Yang to even gain 10%! Might as well go on with the event and win the rewards.

Zhang Yang hurriedly went to the pile of battle loots and searched for the map. There were many piles of coins and cloth material which he had completely ignored in order to save space for the map and items from the chest. He was moderately lucky to obtain a map during just the first wave of monsters. He picked it up and examined the piece of paper quickly. The paper quickly vanish and reappeared in his U.I. There was a treasure chest right in the middle of the map, with Zhang Yang's position marked with a blinking light. Without thinking, Zhang Yang jumped on the bear and made his way to the chest.

After a small distance, Zhang Yang was about to arrive to the treasure spot when he encountered another lucky player. Captain America was seen from afar, rushing to his position. Zhang Yang did a quick calculation in his mind and realized that there was not enough time for him to dig and open the chest. In the end, Zhang Yang equipped his shield and sword and charged towards the man.

"Huh? Look what the cat dragged in. Ain't you one of those China pigs, huh? Welp, might as well kill ya!" Captain America had an odd and ferocious look. From afar, Zhang Yang could already identify the man, since he was riding a large black panther, while brandishing a huge axe. Along with his chosen Orc's race, he had a fierce strong look, with a killing aura so strong it could literally split leaves apart.

"Hmph. Call me all you want. You're the one going down." Zhang Yang replied and charged towards the enemy.

{Wild Charge}!

{Pounce}!

‘-4,301!’

‘-5,574!’

The bear and the panther jumped towards each other, knocking them out in the same time. Their owners had also launched {Spear of Obliteration} at the same time, down to the second. Both of them had received damage, but Zhang Yang had taken more of it. During a PvP fight in the Realm of Sacred Glory, a tank would not receive the 30% increase in attack buff. That was why the attack from Captain America had dealt more damage than Zhang Yang.

When both sides had taken damage, both their HP gauge had only dropped a fraction. Since Zhang Yang had the experience of a lifetime, he was able to immediately judge the amount of total HP that the enemy had from the drop of his HP. From his guess, Captain America would have a total of 70,000 HP and more.

Although {Pounce} and {Wild Charge} had different names, their effects were the same. Both skills would stun the target for 1 second. However, since Zhang Yang was wearing the accessory - [Heart of the Death Knight], the stun duration was halved, and he regained control in just 0.5 seconds, allowing him to slash at Captain America first.

‘-3,863!’

Zhang Yang gained 32 Rage points, but since all skills shared the same global skill cool down, Zhang Yang was unable to cast a second skill. Without wasting time, standing there to wait for the skill to refresh, Zhang Yang leap to his feet and moved behind Captain America.

"F*cking piece of China pig!" Captain America regained his senses quickly and was enraged. He knew about the skill, but how could it be that he was stunned for 1 whole second while the china pig was only stunned for half a second?! It did not add up! Captain America turned around as fast as he could, borrowing the momentum of the heavy axe, and smashed at Zhang Yang.

"Hmph! You're strong!" Zhang Yang could not help to compliment the American fighter. Even when Zhang Yang was already behind Captain

America, he was still able to maneuver around swiftly and attack Zhang Yang with such precision, proving that he was no ordinary fighter. Unfortunately for the Captain, Zhang Yang was a tank, a super tank at that.

{Block}!

‘-1,052!’ Block Reflect damage.

‘-4,838!’ {Shield Bash}

"What the f*ck!? I'd smash your head in, you chink!" cried Captain America angrily. Before Captain American could deal any damage to Zhang Yang, he had already taken close to 10,000 damage! With enough Rage built up from taking damage, Captain America activated {Tornado Cleave} and attacked Zhang Yang swiftly. Zhang Yang was highly impressed, as he had not seen the attack coming.

Zhang Yang was rather impressed at Captain America. {Tornado Cleave} was an AoE attack skill that did not require lock-on. As long as the skill is activated, every target within 3 meters range would received damage. In his position, Captain America could not lock on to Zhang Yang, since he was standing too close to him! The decision to use {Tornado Cleave} was fast and wise.

Since Zhang Yang had already used {Block} less than 2 seconds ago, he had to take the skill head on and received 9,094 damage which caused his Rage to fill up. With quick foot work, Zhang Yang leaped around and got behind Captain America. With the bear joining the attack, its attacks followed closely with another claw attack. Both attacks had dealt more than 5,000 damage each.

"Crap! Sh*t! F*ck!" Captain America continued to throw insults and profanities as he tried to turn around to catch Zhang Yang, but kept on failing.

For Zhang Yang to achieve this feat, he had to be much better than Captain America. Fortunately, Captain America was very much weaker in controls, compared to Zhang Yang. Even though he was the top player in North America region, he was unable to keep up with Zhang Yang. He

tried his best to adjust to Zhang Yang footwork but could never position himself in time. It was like a futile attempt to chase after your own shadow! With nothing but sword attacks striking his back, Captain America was helpless against Zhang Yang.

Even though Zhang Yang was a Guardian, his attacks were too strong, since his current equipment was the best so far! No one could match his equipment! His attack power was unparalleled to anyone at that current time!

"Captain America? Hmph! You're nothing. Go rot back in your homeland and be a hero there." Zhang Yang slashed down vertically from above and activated {Killing Cleave}, successfully killing Captain America and turned him into a pillar of light. Sadly, Captain America did not drop any equipment, or else Zhang Yang could have earned a fortune!

"Watch it you! I'll be back! When I do, I'll gorge your eyes out, china swine!" said Captain America before he release his soul to be revived by the system.

"Please. Who you think you are? Arnold Schwarzenegger? You should have named your character T-100 then." Said Zhang Yang right at the moment when Captain America disappeared from the battle field. He then jumped from his mount and started to dig into the dirt with his sword.

Luckily, digging was simple in the game. As long as you have a treasure map in your inventory, you could dig out the chest with just a few digging strokes. Zhang Yang foregone lifting the chest out of the ground and directly jumped into the hole to open the chest.

10...9....8...3...2...1...

'Ding! You have opened an Ancient Glory Chest!'

'Ding! You have obtained [Level 5 Vitality Gemstone] x1!'

'Ding! You have obtained 97 Glory Points!'

Jackpot!

Zhang Yang had remembered that in his previous life, the [Level 5

Vitality Gemstone] could be sold for at least 5,000 gold coins! As expected of the price, since the supply for the item would never meet the demand of the market. This particular Gemstone granted a bonus 1,000 Vitality points. Sadly, it could only be socketed into a Level 5 Socket of a higher level equipment. If he could, he would have socketed all 11 sockets of his equipment with the [Level 5 Vitality Gemstone], and enhance at least 50% of them! That was a bonus of 160,000 HP! Coupled with the current 16% Vitality Aura, the bonus would soar even higher!

What a shame...

Zhang Yang opened the inventory window and stared at the blue [Level 5 Vitality Gemstone] in awe. There was strong sense of satisfaction.

This chest had granted Zhang Yang with a luxurious amount of Glory points, unlike the previous rounds. He had gained 2,799 Glory points, pushing his rank from the fifth to the second place in one go.

If the next chest was as the same as this, Zhang Yang only needed two more and could rank first!

Chapter 440: Raising Rank

After Zhang Yang emptied the chest, he got out of the hole that he had dug and got to ground level. Just then, he saw the silhouette of a man walking away. He selected the player and examined him. It was Caesar the Great. The player must have obtained the map to the chest but was one step too late. Since every one of them were still enemies, there was no reason for him to find trouble when there was none. Caesar the Great had only observed the situation and when there was nothing else he could do, he bailed. Now that it had come to this, there was no point putting up a brave front.

Zhang Yang jumped on his bear and moved on to the next group of monsters to kill.

"Dummy? How are you?" Han Ying Xue asked in the party channel.

"I'm fine. Though I'm still at rank 4," said Zhang Yang. After 3 to 4 minutes, he had encountered another swarm of monsters and had proceeded to slaughter them all.

"Not bad for a noobie tank! If I had not gotten a fight with some bastard, I would have scored much higher than you!" cried the little brat disgruntledly.

"Ah huh. Yeah. Great. You're the best." Zhang Yang replied dismissively.

Zhang Yang had killed all the monsters as he was talking but had not found any piece of map. Still, he was not disappointed. He still had 12 hours to slowly farm his way. Zhang Yang rode the bear far and wide, and stumbled across another swarm of monsters. He killed them all swiftly and easily, and had managed to obtain a new treasure map. Once obtained, there was no more time to lose, so he turned around and headed towards the map's location. The hill was not too large, but to get from one end to the other end would take about 10 minutes or so. The second treasure chest was not too far from where he had picked the map from and had only taken him 7 to 8 minutes to get there.

The place that the map had directed Zhang Yang to was a deserted plain

with no trees nor boulders to shield oneself from an attack. Zhang Yang arrived and quickly hid himself to prevent the other three players who were already at the chest from seeing him. Quietly, Zhang Yang got himself in a prone position and carefully observed the players. All of them were at least standing 20 meters away from each other and had formed a perfect triangle formation, facing each other in a Mexican standoff.

All of them did not move, nor made any aggressive actions. Neither of them wanted to engage or the third player would be able to reap the benefits from the fight. The three were Dusk Phoenix, Musashi Ou-sama, and Xindalo. All of them were human males, except Dusk Phoenix who was an Elven female. Like all female elves, she was sexy, tall, and had a body that could captivate men. She was not as hot as Sun Xin Yu or Han Ying Xue, to be honest. Still, her body and the way she looked had reminded Zhang Yang of his university life.

As expected the triangular standoff. No one moved for such a long time! With a sudden inclination to do something, Zhang Yang stood up, got on his bear and rode towards the trio slowly. He approached them slowly, allowing the trio to notice his presence.

When they noticed Zhang Yang's presence, all of them frowned, but immediately relaxed. If the three of them continued their standoff, it will eventually be dragged on forever. But if one more player joined the fray, it would break off the stagnant which will force them to take out some of them. Unfortunately, the chances of them having any form of cooperation was literally 0.

The stagnant position was suddenly broken off when Dusk Phoenix summoned her White Lion mount and leaped towards Xindalo. Shocked, Xindalo jumped to his feet and leaped on his mount. He quickly shot an arrow at Dusk Phoenix and withdrew a few steps. Xindalo was a Hunter class player. With a 3 meter blind spot, he had to make space between him and his target in order to attack.

With Xindalo and Dusk Phoenix busy fighting each other, Mushashi Ou-sama was still afraid to dig up the chest, due to Zhang Yang's suspicious presence in the scene. Since he did not have the skill {Beast Taming}, he

could not keep the battle mount in the field to attack in his stead. The battle mount would at most for 2 seconds before disappearing.

Zhang Yang did not want to waste any time and decided to attack Mushashi Ou-sama instead. He leaped to 30 meters range and threw a {Spear of Obliteration, dealing 4,000 damage to the opponent. At the same time, he had gauged the enemy total HP and found out that he had more HP than Captain America, at around 80,000.

"Puny Jap!" cried Zhang Yang as he attacked the man, with a face ready to maul the man.

"Urusai!" said Mushashi, untranslated by the system. Musashi raised his hammer and brought it down like a true samurai.

"HMPH!"

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the hammer, with a quick turn and slide, Zhang Yang moved to the side and borrowed the momentum of the hammer's strike to spin around, and sliced Mushashi for more than 4,000 damage, gaining more Rage points.

Two men and two animals started attacking each other with vengeance and fury.

"I detest Japan thugs like you!" cried Zhang Yang as he stopped relying on moving around. He wanted to fight the Japanese players head on to release all his fury.

"Anta koso. Nani mou shiranai kuseni!" cried Musashi. Finally, after a while, a translated text come in, "We, Japanese are the most elite race in the world! You, Chinese dogs who only love to sit and wait for someone to spoon feed you shall fall! The cars you ride are built by us! Everything from computers, phones, camera, and many other digital appliances were made by us! One of these days, the economical power house of China shall fall into our hands! I'll be there to see your family and descendants be our slaves!"

Zhang Yang was ticked off. How could a person such as him be so closed minded? Not everything in the world was invented by the Japanese. Zhang

Yang could name many other brands to rebuke Mushashi, but it would be of a waste of time. Zhang Yang gave up reasoning with him and decided to provoke the man. "Yea? You and your AE86 thugs can screw yourself! When I'm rich, I'll buy every single one of your precious Japanese companies! Talk to me, when you can do the same thing!" Zhang Yang laughed. He knew that in the near future, 'God's Miracle' would be a mega industry with 2 to 3 billions of players! The chance of pioneers emerging out of this game would be extremely high! As long as Zhang Yang had the keen eyes to spot them, he could build himself an impregnable business fortress and earn billions!

"Hmm. Don't be too full of yourself, China dog!" Musashi retracted his hammer and place it against his waist, prepping himself for a sword drawing style. The man was obsessed with the samurai path, as if he was one himself. Still, Zhang Yang was not going to look down on the man. Only players with ability and skills could survive this long in the event. With a Guardian as an opponent, Musashi withdrew. He knew that exchanging blows with him would only be a waste of time, and he would run out of juice. He pulled the reins of his Raptor and moved away from Zhang Yang.

Hmph!

Zhang Yang scoffed. Was he trying to lure him in? Noob Japanese, Zhang Yang had not brought out his real game yet and that was already kind enough for him! Zhang Yang leaped to the front and stuck to Musashi's movement, and followed him wherever he turned. Like a shadow following the owner, Zhang Yang stuck to him and slashed him with every chance he get.

"Konnoyarou!" yelled Musashi.

In theory, there was no way a melee fighter could keep up with a tank in terms of equipment. A tank's Defenses were so strong that it could reduce the bursting damage a melee fighter had. However could a melee fighter match with a tank's HP? If this slugfest continued on, the first person falling down would definitely be the melee fighter!

Musashi knows this, that was why he was trying his best to keep away from Zhang Yang. While controlling the battle mount, he was performing evasive movements that was on even match with Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang was much better in every way. There was no way a person could defeat a PvP veteran with so much additional experience from the "future", like Zhang Yang! The slugfest continued between Musashi and Zhang Yang. A hammer would drop and a sword would come slicing. Both sides suffered damage, but it was Musashi who was raging. Zhang Yang was calm and cool, even though the urge to flatten the Japanese's face was overwhelming. Still, he was able to quench his battle lust by occasionally slamming his shield in Musashi's face. It was not {Shield Bash}, since the skill could only be activate after a successfully {Block} occurred. It was just a physical movement that would not deal any damage. However, it was a move that had greatly angered Musashi.

After a few more shield slamming, Musashi had snapped. "You are a disgrace! There is no honor in your fight! You do not deserve to hold that sword! How dare you call yourself a fighter!"

That was the only translatable sentence that Musashi had uttered. The rest was in Japanese that Zhang Yang had only managed to hear, but not understand.

Zhang Yang laughed. It was true. Zhang Yang had slammed the shield in his face just to humiliate the man. There was no honor with his battle style, but that had not gotten to Zhang Yang, since the opponent was an enemy in the game, and not in real life. Musashi did not deserve his respect!

"Chikushō!!!" Musashi was practically shouting in desperation, as he was already out of means to win the battle. All sort of skills were used to survive, but none of them had managed to keep him alive. He was about to lose the fight!

"AHhh Mouu!" Musashi stopped fighting all of a sudden and swiftly withdrew.

"You can have the chest. I'm done!" said Musashi as he runs in a

different direction.

Zhang Yang chased after the man and said, "Please. It's not the chest I want. I'd rather give the chest up to kill your head!"

"Kisama!" Musashi drew out his hammer. He had not expected for Zhang Yang to give up the chest just to kill him.

"You are going to far!" said Musashi bitterly. His experience bar had already reached 85% so far. If he was killed by Zhang Yang, he would lose all his experience points and would have to start from the bottom! It had taken him 10 days in real life just to collect that much!

"There's never too far in a battle! All I want is your head to roll!" cried Zhang Yang with a sinister smile. With little effort, Zhang Yang hacked at the man and killed him off.

"Watch your back! I'll be back for you!" said Musashi as he turned into a white light, to be revived at a random corner of the hill.

Zhang Yang felt odd. Almost all defeated players would say the same thing after being defeated.

Having killed Musashi, Zhang Yang got out of battle mode and gazed towards where Dusk Phoenix and Xindalo, and found that Xindalo had already been killed. She sat down to rest and recovery herself. Just then, she noticed Zhang Yang glaring at her. She quickly entered stealth mode.

Zhang Yang was not worried. As a Guardian, he was not scared of being ambushed by any melee class attackers. Plus, he had the [Heart of the Death Knight], so all status effect debuff will be halved! Not even two Thieves could tie him down!

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang walked towards the ground where the chest was buried and unearthed the soil. A violet-aura was emitted when the soil on the chest was removed.

Zhang Yang was excited. If the chest could give more a few more [Level 5 Gemstones], that would be swell!

Just when he bent over to open the chest, he was stunned. It was

{Ambush}!

Although he could not move, he could still see Dusk Phoenix's character appearing behind him. She first attacked Zhang Yang with her swords and then summoned her battle mount.

Impressive. Attacking normally without skills had global cool down as well. By summoning the battle mount after attacking, it would not waste any time at all since she could not attack nor cast any skills during that duration. Furthermore, being idle would only recover 20 Focus points for her, which could replenish her Focus points after using {Ambush}.

The bear beside Zhang Yang had not remained stationary. Knowing that its master was being attacked, the bear hurl itself towards Dusk Phoenix and attacked her.

"Huh!?" Dusk Phoenix was astonished. In the beginning, she felt that it was extremely odd for his bear to remain active in the field even after dismounting it. But she was even more surprised when the bear could even be used like a Hunter's pet and attack an enemy! It was a first for her!

Being attacked, her summoning was lengthen from 2 seconds to 2.3 seconds.

In that brief period, Zhang Yang had awoken from his stunned state and said, "Thou art but a fine missus, wherefore art thee a thief?"

Even though the game had a translator embedded in the conversation tool, but such an old form of language was unnecessary to translate, since it was fairly understandable. Dusk Phoenix raised an eyebrow and said angrily, "Man, how dare you insult me for being a thief!"

Without any further exchange of words, Dusk Phoenix attacked Zhang Yang swiftly, along with the female panther beside her. Zhang Yang parried her sword strike with his. Fighting against a high attack interval player, the efficiency of {Block} was greatly reduced. However, since he had extreme Defenses and a high Damage Absorption passive, Dusk Phoenix had only manage to deal less than 1,000 damage to him without a skill.

That was the main reason why a melee attacker would never win against a tank in a slugfest. Having high attack intervals would mean a lower attack output per strike. Each strike would then have their attacks reduced by the defense and skills of the tank. On the other hand, having a two-handed weapon would have lower attack interval, so {Block} would be extremely effective against this type of weapon carrier!

That was, if a player did not possess {Eagle Eye}! If a player had {Eagle Eye}, they could easily defeat a tank since they could ignore some of the tank's extreme Defense!

When Dusk Phoenix was not able to deal devastating damage to Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang was able to hack away Dusk Phoenix's HP bar away like an axe to a tree. Dusk Phoenix was good. She footwork was excellent. She was light as a butterfly, floating in the battle field and stinging like a bee. She was strong enough to make someone of lower prowess to grow dizzy trying to chase after her. Her speed of moving around was good to a point that a player would be sliced to death without even landing a sword on her! However, that was against someone who was "noober" than her. Zhang Yang was someone who had already reached the pinnacle of PvP combat. Instead of being made like a fool, Zhang Yang had turned the tide of the battle and made her suffer the wrath of a Guardian!

Still, Zhang Yang mentally nodded at her prowess. Ever since the end of the first Professional League, top players made a giant leap in terms of their own progress. Since Zhang Yang had already reached the pinnacle of PvP, there was little to no room for him to progress anymore! How could he, when he is the strongest in the entire game! In order for one to become stronger, one would have to fight stronger opponents! With no space for him to improve himself, many players in the game had move on closer and closer to where he stood. Right now, he could still fight these players, but how about in 6 months time? Could he still hold them back?

Why 6 months? That's because 6 months later, the final fight for the 8 Regional S class Professional League would take place. The winner of the battle team would walk away with the strongest battle team of the world title! In his previous life, China had many talented battle teams, but could

not stand among the world's league. The best result China had hauled was only the second place, and it was won by the all-female battle team, Crimson Rage. Almost all male players in China had to bury their face in the ground for allowing that to happen. They could have done better. That was why, Zhang Yang would die hard to win the world Professional League! No matter what it takes!

Back to the battle, Dusk Phoenix realized half way that Zhang Yang was too strong. Having more than half of her HP left, Dusk Phoenix activated {Sprint} and {Vanish} to escape from the fight.

Hmph!

{Thunder Strike}!

No response...

Zhang Yang rushed to where the opponent had disappeared and stomped the ground to cast a net of electrical current. However, there were no response. Dusk Phoenix had probably left the battle field instead of trying to make a comeback. For him to chase after and reveal a hidden Thief in this wide-open field, it would be like searching a speck of dust in a pile of snow!

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly and went back to the chest. Killing others was important in this event, but opening chests to earn Glory points came first.

'Ding! You have opened an Ancient Glory Chest!'

'Ding! You have obtained [Level 5 Intelligence Gemstone] x1!'

'Ding! You have obtained 82 Glory Points!'

D*mn! It was an Intelligence Gemstone! Zhang Yang wanted Vitality or Strength! Zhang Yang sighed heavily and decided to give the Gemstone to Han Ying Xue to earn some happy points from her.

Still, the 82 Glory points was so good that it had pushed him over Captain America. He had collected 2,881 Glory points so far, putting him at the second place with only 48 Glory points behind the first place, Dusk

Phoenix!

Just one more! One more chest, and he would be at the first!

Chapter 441: A Mess

The number of monsters in the valley were constantly respawning at an alarming rate. Zhang Yang had mentioned it before, if he had not wanted to hunt for the chest, grinding levels here would be a sweet dream! However, no matter how much experience points the monsters would give, the Level reward from being the champion or even the second place was extremely valuable! Furthermore, the chest would have a chance to drop [Level 5 Gemstone] of any kind! There was even a chance to open up a Violet-Platinum equipment! Who would want to waste their time hunting monsters when such a luxurious booty awaits them! Hence, the battle between 10 players was a silent rage.

After 1 hour in the battle, the game developers had received requests from many players around the world to have a look at the current battle through "God Mode". Players were allowed to watch the game but were locked from carrying out any conversation of any kind.

It was when Zhang Yang had found out that almost all channels, including the guild, party, private message, and other means of communication through the outside "world" was blocked. The only means to communicate was the "talk" function which was opened to the public. The "talk" function mimicked reality. The louder you shout, the further it can be heard. Although there was a limit, and it was distance.

Over time, a few more chests were revealed. Zhang Yang was rather unlucky, since most of the treasure map he had farmed had already been dug out by other players. Sometimes, whenever he was rushing to the chest, the map will be destroyed out of the blue, indicating that the chest was found and had been looted of its contents. Luckily, Dusk Phoenix and Captain America, once more being ahead of him, had not made any chest discoveries. All three of them had not made any progress! However, the remaining seven players had been crawling up. Although their rankings had been a little messy, the problem was, all of them were gaining Glory points.

For the next chest discovery, no matter who was the one who made it to

the chest, the entire ranking list would have a major change. Even the 10th place, Lord Mandala could rank first!

While he was busy worrying about the rank, his sword sliced through many more monsters and had earned another treasure map. Zhang Yang smiled and quickly hopped to his bear, and made his way as swiftly as possible towards the chest. Just as he arrived to the destination, he discovered that the place was filled with seven more players and two dead bodies on the ground. Zhang Yang was the last person to arrive to the spot! Technically, before the chest is opened, none of them was the first, nor the last!

The two dead bodies belonged to Saabo and October Miracle. Since the reviving condition in this event is special, neither of them could release their souls from their body and had to wait there until the chest is opened!

One Sword Stroke glared at Zhang Yang and said, "Zhan Yu! Please put aside our conflict and team up! We are both of the same side here! I hope we could temporary set aside our quarrel and face them all together!"

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly and said, "I had never know you could speak in such as gentlemanly way! Fine. I agree. Let us deal with the outsider and till the two of us stands last!"

Zhang Yang had high confidence. He had two ulti skills, {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}. He strongly believed that none of the others had such an OP skill in their skill tree. He had not used the skill before when he faced Musashi, Captain, and Dusk Phoenix, because the situation had not reached to such high tension. Having such a high cool down, the skill could never be used so casually!

Even though the two of them had joined forces in dealing with the rest of the players, all eight of them had not moved a budge! The opponent were still the 6 strongest players! If they could split up and take on three players each, it would be a huge gamble! Since no one knew each others abilities, it was best to resort to chaos and pick at straws from there!

Dusk Phoenix smiled bitterly and laughed. "Well, since no one willing to make a first move. I'll be glad to wait. Neither of us are rushing, right?"

"Hush lady, how dare you speak for me! It would be your wish for all of us to remain idle, no?! You're currently at rank 1, if this goes down without a fight, you would surely be winning this event!" Captain America scoffed and pointed at the two dead players on the ground. "Look at those two idiots. They must have fallen for your provocation. Hmph! They must have died in vain. I'd say, you best take care of yourself. I might accidentally smash your head in."

Over Zhang Yang side, he tried to start a fire by provoking the Japanese player. "Ooi! Shorty! Mushi Mushi! Come over and I'll mush you!"

"Kisama..." Musashi Ou-sama remained motionless.

"Pussy! You should change your name to Pusashi instead. It suits your behavior, since you're such a pussy!"

"Shut your mouth!"

Both Musashi and Zhang Yang remained motionless. Musashi knew that Zhang Yang was deliberately trying to provoke him. If he had resorted to fleeing instead of fighting, it would put his country to shame!

Finally, after having thinking it through, Musashi pulled the reins of his mount and leaped at Zhang Yang. Captain America followed behind him and attacked Zhang Yang as well. "Musashi Ou-sama, I shall assist you!"

Before the commotion, all seven of them, except Zhang Yang, had remained passive, since anyone who tried to stick out would be hammer down like the two dead players on the side. Secondly, if they were to start the battle among them when Zhang Yang had not arrived, it might place them all in a disadvantage situation where Zhang Yang could easily kill them. Now that Zhang Yang had arrived, there was no more hesitation. Captain America had crossed path with Zhang Yang before, and he knew that he could not defeat him alone. Thus, when Musashi had blatantly jumped to fight him, Captain America had proposed his alliance with Musashi.

"Hm! Happy to know that both U.S.A and Japan still has some good ties!" said Musashi. He too, was aware of his own capability. Hence, when

Captain America offered his help, there was no reason for him to reject.

Zhang Yang faced both of them fearlessly and rode into the fight with the bear.

On the other side, Dusk Phoenix, One Sword Stroke and the rest had their equilibrium disrupted. There was five of them. If someone offered an alliance, it would be three vs two or even four vs one! Knowing this, One Sword Stroke acted first and struck Dusk Phoenix with a preemptive attack!

"F*ck!" Dusk Phoenix cursed. She was offended, that instead of anyone else, she was the first person being attacked. Instead of having her to fight alone, she used {Fan of Blades} to attack everyone in the vicinity. She was not afraid of triggering the entire battlefield since she had the skill {Vanish}. On the contrary, she had purposely attacked all of them to invoke a fight. Only through the chaotic battle could she make use of her stealth to slip out. Guile was the main factor to being a true Thief!

Even though Zhang Yang was facing with two players alone, his strong equipment had made him bear to invincible! Coupled with all sort of status affecting skills laying down on them, including the passive stunning by the Titan equipment set, both Captain America and Musashi Ou-sama were being pressured further!

Having thought that gaining an extra player to fight Zhang Yang would be a piece of cake, Zhang Yang's array of skills had proved them wrong! Zhang Yang utilized the skill {Beast Taming} efficiently where and when a situation called for it, for Zhang Yang could dismount at any moment to stomp the ground, casting {Thunder Strike} and then hopping back up the bear to run away! Zhang Yang's overwhelming skill had greatly humiliated the Japan-America partnership!

Those that were watching had mixed reaction. Audiences from China was cheering happily while audiences from, Japan-Korea and America had fallen silent. How could the two of them be forcefully shamed by only one China player! What sort of partnership is that?

The longer the battle dragged out, the better Zhang Yang fought. Having

to fight two professional player at the same time, his prowess had been elevated to its full potential. At one point, he was even better than he ever was! 100%? No! Zhang Yang had surpassed that! He was at 150%!

Zhang Yang was focused on killing Musashi first, and had laid down all sort of skill bombarding him while maintaining status effect skills on Captain America to weaken him. Since Zhang Yang had a "thick" skin, he could prolonged the battle by first weeding out the weaker one!

Being beaten down like a wild dog, Musashi was raging and cursing while Zhang Yang hacked him down to his last bit of HP. Since he had already died once, losing all his experience points in the process, there was nothing left for him to lose!

"Prick! If I die, I'm taking you down with me!" cried Musashi.

Zhang Yang laughed, "Sorry, but I have to interest in joining the kamikaze squad!"

"GRAAH!" Musashi raged on and unleashed as many skills as he could, including the skills that he had reserved for later use. Although all the skills were unleashed, Zhang Yang had not noticed any abnormal skills such as {Dance of Heaven and Earth} coming from him. Putting that aside, although outwardly, he was behaving rather barbarically, the man was calm on the inside. He knew that even though he could kill Zhang Yang, he could not ensure that he would be the one opening the chest later! He might be killed immediately after this fight!

The clash between Musashi, Zhang Yang, and Captain America had reached its climax, and Zhang Yang had suffered major HP loss. If Zhang Yang had not been a tank, he would not have lasted this long.

The main reason Zhang Yang was not in deep trouble, aside from the fact that he was a tank, was because the cooperation between Musashi Ou-sama and Captain America was not perfect. After all, the two of them were fighting together for the first time. Neither of them have had the chance to engage in a proper discussion. Additionally, the two of the were professional players who often engaged in battle alone. In a combined attack, one had to be the main, while the other would be the secondary

filler. With both of them being highly arrogant with their own skills, neither of them were willing to take on the support role!

Two minutes into the fight, Musashi had become the third player to be eliminated in this chest hunt.

Zhang Yang laughed and quickly activated {Berserker's Heal}. However, he had failed to noticed that he had the debuff {Destructive Smash} on him and had only managed to heal 25% of the intended recovery rate. Captain America had succeeded in proclaiming the S score for his job class quest, granting his {Destructive Smash} to deal a 75% reduced healing rate! It was the same score in which Zhang Yang had obtained.

With Musashi's death, Captain America attacked faster than he ever did and growled. "Zhan Yu! You will die by my hands!" If he had not be able to kill Zhang Yang, having teamed up with Musashi, Captain America's loss would be the loss of both Japan and North America all together!

Even though Musashi had died, he was able to force Zhang Yang to use his recovery skill, providing a battle advantage to Captain America.

"Don't let it got over your head though..." said Zhang Yang coldly. With Musashi out of the way, he was able to fully focus on Captain America alone. His sword danced around like a dragon in the sky and a snake in the ground, forcing Captain America to turn around frantically to avoid getting hit, but failed ever so miserably.

Blood splattered everywhere as Captain America was being sliced and diced repeatedly by Zhang Yang.

"Bastard! You Bastard!!"

Zhang Yang merely laughed at his feeble attempt to retaliate. Within two minutes, Zhang Yang had forced Captain America to use all his skills and had killed him after a short fight.

All the players that had saw the fight gasped in awe. How could one player defeat two professional players when they were both considered to be the best of their own countries?! Even though their classes countered each other, Zhang Yang's ability was still impressive, nonetheless.

Zhang Yang sat down to quickly recover himself and gazed at the other ongoing battle. Two other players had already been killed, leaving One Sword Stroke, Dusk Phoenix, and Lord Mandala in the field.

Since the equilibrium of the battle field had been broken, Zhang Yang felt a little Déjà vu when the three of them were standing at the edge of one another in a perfect triangular shape.

Zhang Yang rode towards One Sword Stroke on his bear and said, "One Sword Stroke, lets make a deal. Each of us pick a player. The first person who manages to down their opponent gets to open the chest."

"Sound like a good idea," said One Sword Stroke.

Zhang Yang laughed. "In that case, pick your foe."

Chapter 442: A Sabotage

One Sword Stroke did not hesitate and immediately rushed towards Dusk Phoenix. A Guardian ate 1 Thieves for breakfast, by default. Even though One Sword Stroke was a proud man, he would not jeopardize victory for the sake of pride. He purposefully left the harder target for Zhang Yang to handle as he took on the easier one.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and nodded with a smile. He left One Sword Stroke alone and decided to accept the challenge.

"Curses!" Dusk Phoenix cried. She did not wait for One Sword Stroke to come to her, but instead she leaped forward and swung her sword hard to parry One Sword Stroke's attacks.

On the other side, Lord Mandala muttered something under his breath and instantly cast a fireball at Zhang Yang, dealing close to 2,000 damage. That attack was a Pyromancer's {Fire Blast}, an instant-cast skill which did not require any chanting. The skill allowed Lord Mandala to ride away on his mount, while attacking at the same time.

Although a Spellcaster did not have a blind spot, however, like a Hunter, it would be over once an opponent manages to get close to him. Similar to all ranged attackers, once a melee fighter gets into their range, ranged attackers would face a dangerous situation where the melee attacker could finish them.

An instant-cast skill had a long cool down rate, Lord Mandala could not rely on the skill to kite Zhang Yang. The main reason being that Zhang Yang, or rather, all Warriors had the skill {Berserker's Heal} which only had 2 minutes of cool down time. If Lord Mandala relied solely on {Fire Blast}, he could only take out 1/3 of his HP before Zhang Yang could use {Berserker's Heal}.

After a good distance, Lord Mandala jumped down from his mount and started chanting a spell.

'-5,094!'

A blast of fire came down from the sky in a form of a huge meteorite. It smashed into Zhang Yang, dealing close to 5,000 damage and even stunning him for 3 seconds. The skill was called {Fallen Meteor} which caused 150% Fire damage and stunned a target for 3 seconds. The casting time was 1.5 seconds.

After stunning Zhang Yang, Lord Mandala activated {Heart of Flame} and proceeded to chant the Pyromancer's strongest spell, the {Explosive Flame}.

Zhang Yang smiled.

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately regained his movement and rushed over to Lord Mandala. Since the bear was close to him, Zhang Yang had mentally commanded the bear to use {Wild Charge} on him. The bear rushed towards Lord Mandala at an insane speed and stunned the man and his mount for 1 second, canceling Lord Mandala's chanting animation and spell.

Zhang Yang laid down his first attack on Lord Mandala, dealing 4,223 damage. After 1 second, Lord Mandala regained his senses but just as he was about to cast another spell, Zhang Yang stunned him again with {Brutal Smash}.

"What the f*ck!" Lord Mandala cried. He immediately used {Apparate} to remove the stun on him and teleported 10 meters away from his current position. Since his character had teleported, Lord Mandala's mount had regained its senses as well, but had to run towards its owner.

Zhang Yang laughed at his futile attempt to run away. Zhang Yang swiftly jumped down from his bear and used {Charge} to "fly" to Lord Mandala.

Like an arrow head, Zhang Yang glided through the dirt and stunned the poor man again. Closely after the brief second stunning duration, Lord Mandala was about to use {Fire Blast} when Zhang Yang had stunned him again with {Blast Wave}!

If he could cry, Lord Mandala would have done so. Since the start, Lord Mandala was only attacked once, but stunned repeatedly! What was the use of {Apparate} if the opponent could stun him continuously for all eternity!

"Hehe. I'm not done yet." Zhang Yang muttered.

{Thunder Strike}!

Just when Lord Mandala had regained his movement, Zhang Yang had stomped on the ground, sending a wave of electricity that slowed Lord Mandala down, leaving him speechless.

Spellcasters were supposed to counter tanks! But how could Lord Mandala kill Zhang Yang when he possesses so many stunning skills?! Even though Lord Mandala had {Fallen Meteor} to stun Zhang Yang, the stunning duration was halved by Zhang Yang's [Heart of the Death Knight]! There was no way for Lord Mandala to keep a safe distance from Zhang Yang.

Lord Mandala had battled other players before, and none of them were as annoying as Zhang Yang! At the very least, Lord Mandala could still deal some damage to the opponent! Zhang Yang had too much HP to begin with! By the time he had blasted half of Zhang Yang HP off, Lord Mandala would have only 10% HP, or even lesser than that!

Sighing with great despair, Lord Mandala could not help to have the urge to put up the white flag. The guy was a tank, a walking turtle! They were supposed to be tough, that Lord Mandala would agree. But how could anyone explain a tank that could ditch out nuclear like attacks!? His opponent had the HP of a super tank, the attack of a raging Berserker, and the stunning skills of a sneaky Thief! What do you call such a player? A hacker? A mother f*cker?

Even though Lord Mandala tried his best to retaliate, he was unable to escape the fate of being killed by Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had not even needed to fully bring out his true potential and had killed the poor Pyromancer in less than a minute.

Zhang Yang turned over to One Sword Stroke and observed the man.

There was no one else besides One Sword Stroke who was looking all too nervous on the battle field. Zhang Yang felt something was off only for half of a second before he realized what was going on there. Dusk Phoenix had entered stealth mode and had been playing hide and seek with One Sword Stroke!

Zhang Yang had to laugh. "Looks like I win this round."

"Hmph." One Sword Stroke scoffed. He was a little disgruntled. Even though he had picked Dusk Phoenix as his opponent, he had not expected Dusk Phoenix to run away in mid battle. Disappointed, One Sword Stroke accepted his loss and accepted his defeat.

Zhang Yang proceeded to dig out the chest and opened it as quickly as he could, while being on alert at all time. He was eyeing left and right to make sure One Sword Stroke did not play dirty, or that Dusk Phoenix does not do anything funny. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had managed to open the chest, and loot everything out without any trouble from either of them. This time, Zhang Yang had obtained enough Glory points to push him up to 2,966, making him the first on the ranking list.

After the chest was emptied, all the players who had been killed were finally given the option window to revive. One by one, all the bodies around disappeared and the field. One Sword Stroke glared at Zhang Yang disgruntledly and went on his way.

After the ordeal, all 10 players had their chances of opening a chest each, causing their rankings to go up and down each time they opened a chest. No one had their ranking holding onto one position. Sadly, after the previous ordeal, Zhang Yang had become public enemy number one. Whenever there was a situation where three players were present around the chest, they would automatically come to a silent agreement and attack Zhang Yang altogether.

Zhang Yang was torn. If all of them were melee class, he had the utmost confidence to defeat them with all of his skills. However, if any of them were Hunters or Spellcasters, Zhang Yang would not dare to take the heat. There was a high chance for him to actually be killed by them! After all, all

surviving members in this realm were the top players, the best of the best, even in all eight regions.

Lucky for him, Zhang Yang had {Shadow of the Void}. If he couldn't win the battle, or have a chance of being killed, he could use the skill to escape the field at any moment he wanted. Zhang Yang was smart enough to keep {Burrow} at hand. The 10 minute active duration skill was too good to reveal now. If he still had the [Cloak of the Dark Wings], which was already taken by Han Ying Xue, he could have gained one more means of escaping!

Right now, the tension in the field got higher and wilder. Players tended to attack whenever they saw each other. As time passed on, the tension grew as well. 3 hours...6 hours...eventually, the entire battle had reached the 11th hour and 45 minutes point.

At that moment, all 10 players had one thought circulating in their mind. The next chest would be the last, and that chest would determine the winner.

So far, Zhang Yang was ranked at the highest, but that position was not at all secure. Captain America, ranked at second was only 24 Glory Points away from Zhang Yang, and even Musashi Ou-sama was only 82 points away from Zhang Yang, and he was ranked at the last. Technically, if he opened the chest before anyone else, Musashi could be the winner. That is, if he were to obtain 82 points or more for the last chest.

When Zhang Yang obtained the treasure map, he remained stationary and smiled. Instead of rushing to the chest, Zhang Yang took his time and observed the area, before barging in. He waited and loitered around until the timer had ticked in the last 10 minutes, before activating {Burrow}.

Like a Thief, {Burrow} forbade any interaction with objects, or it will forcefully dispel the skill and reveal him. Zhang Yang had no intention of opening the chest. Instead, he wanted to prevent other players from opening the chest! Since he was leading, to win the event, he only needed to make sure that no one else could open the chest!

Zhang Yang knew that he was the main target, thanks to all his grand

performances. A nail that stuck out would get hammered. In this case, he would be hammered really hard, if he were to appear right there and then. No matter how strong he was, he was just one man. How could he tank 9 more players that were slightly lower, if not at the same level as him?

Zhang Yang submerged into the earth and "walked" beneath the other players. This magical {Burrow} was able to detect players and hear their conversation.

"Now that's that. I suggest that everyone stays put for now and wait for Zhan Yu. We will pool together and kill him."

"I agree. Even though I do not like this idea, that guy is far beyond our league. 1v1 or 2v1 is no longer an option."

"I see. For now, it's a truce. Until he dies, we will not fight each other, for it would only benefit him."

Amidst the conversation, two more players had arrived and joined the armistice. The internal fight that Zhang Yang was waiting for did not occur after all.

Another minute went by and the last three participants joined the group, leaving them all staring at each other blankly.

"Where the hell is Zhan Yu?"

"Maybe he spotted us and had decided to pull put?"

"What now? If we wait, he will be the winner!"

Even after much argument, none of them came to a final decision, much less do anything. As the timer ticked on, their patience ran low. So far, everyone had accumulated Glory points to a point where their scores were merely one or two points away from each other. If any of them could get their hands on the chest, it would be a victory for them. Finally, the temptation of wanting to obtain the Level reward and title had surfaced.

"Let's dig it up first."

Zhang Yang did not know who was the person who suggested it, but the idea was approved by everyone almost immediately. Once the chest was

unearthed from the ground, October Miracle was the first to show his hands. With a quick cast, he activated a spell that materialized a large water elemental being.

The water elemental was about 10 meters tall, with a blue, bulky, semi-transparent body. Right at the moment of his appearance, the blue monsters spread its blue slime and blasted a white light at everyone in the vicinity. All eight players around the chest were encased in ice.

[Ice Prison]: Frozen in place. Unable to move. Effect can be dispel by receiving an attack. Lasts for 20 seconds.

What a strong immobilizing skill!

Zhang Yang gritted his teeth. It was good that he had never looked down on anyone who he did not know. Even though he had the experience from his past life, which encompassed many aspects of the game, other players from other parts of the world had experienced things that Zhang Yang was never able to learn.

Naturally, October Miracle did not attack anyone and took the chance to open the chest.

10%...50%...70%...80%...

The entire process would have taken him 10 seconds to complete. But by the 8th second, Saabo emerged out of the ice and blasted October Miracle with a shadow whip. Cursing in a foreign language, October Miracle was disgruntled when his attempt to open the chest was interrupted. He then cast a [Frost Dragon] towards Saabo and commanded the water elemental monster to attack him as well.

Zhang Yang sighed at the sight of two element Spellcaster blasting each other with arcane power. More importantly, there were many other players who could still hold in the urge to strike!

How would one not own a dispel skill at this current stage? Everyone would have it! Except for Saabo, everyone else were patiently waiting for the right time to strike! However, Zhang Yang did not care about attacking. He had already have a plan to strike out at the last 0.1 second.

Boop! Boop!

One by one, the icy blocks that encased all players were broken down, forcing them to participate in a chaotic war that could not be avoided.

Translator Note:

1. Food. A jargon in the gaming industry. Food means an easy target or a specific target that was meant for a person/individual/entity to kill. For example, Rabbits are Food for Eagles since eagles could easily snatch the poor rabbit from the sky.

Chapter 443: When the Dust Settles...

Zhang Yang was all too busy enjoying himself from beneath the ground.

Whoever who gets their hands on the chest would inevitably be the winner for this long draggy event. Level +3 and a one of a kind title would surely be enticing to many players. The same thought lingered in everyone's mind, the last chest belonged to them! So what, if they were killed after opening the chest? The reward alone was more than enough to compensate for that!

The battle raged on with everyone at their limits. No one would want to keep their ultimate skill on reserve when this battle is the last battle! Skills that were similar to {Dance of Heaven and Earth} were used, so frequently, that Zhang Yang was finally made to believe that luck was not really on his side after all! If he had already appeared in the scene a short while back, he would surely have been killed! Even if he would to activate {Rearm} to reset his skill's cooldown to reuse them again, it was impossible for him to survive 9 counts of {Dance of Heaven and Earth}-like skills!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang had carefully observed, and found out that there were players who had more than one {Dance of Heaven and Earth} type skills. He would have guessed that, like himself, the skill originated from an accessory or an equipment.

Although these folks were the top players of their represented region, when two or more players decided to work together to defeat one, they would. Musashi Ou-sama was one of the poor guys that were killed by three players altogether. Naturally, he would be pissed, but what made him angrier was the fact that Captain America, the same guy that spouted bull crap about the Japan-America friendship, had joined the party in killing Musashi!

In the ground, Zhang Yang was wishing that he could get some popcorn, since the "show" was too good to miss. Out of the corner of his eyes, he suddenly spotted one character vanishing from the field. It was Dusk

Phoenix. She had taken the opportunity amidst the chaotic battle and had disappeared from sight.

As the battle reached its climax, everyone had to remain on high alert at all times. Unlike Zhang Yang, who could sit back and relax, they had to keep an eye on the field for players, and another eye on the sky to evade incoming attacks from afar! Once a player's HP dropped to a certain extent, players would be like sharks in the water that would target the player with the lowest HP and kill them first!

Defense came before offense in a free-for-all group battle!

As the chaos continued, October Miracle, Xindalo, Caesar the Great all fell, one by one. The ordeal went on until the last 2 minutes!

What that was left of the massacre were a few players, which eventually led to the fall of Lord Mandala and Saabo, and even China's second strongest player, One Sword Stroke was killed. The last person standing among the dead bodies was Captain America. Fresh blood was dripping down from his two-handed axe, as he roared to the sky!

"U.S.A! U.S.A!" He turned to One Sword Stroke and spat on his corpse. Captain America was able to defeat the man because of a hidden ulti killer move that he had saved up. If he had not, and if One Sword Stroke was to fight him fair and square with the use of extra skills, it would be difficult to predict who would have walked out the victor. One Sword Stroke could not nothing but stare with great disdain at Captain America. He was so angry, that he could just log out immediately and throw his gaming helmet!

After a barbaric laugh, Captain America walked towards the chest. With the mindset that he had already won the battle without counting the dead bodies, Captain America opened the chest.

Just when the chest was about to snap open, a ring of stars appeared on his head, and he was unable to move. The boobilicious body of Dusk Phoenix emerged from the shadows behind Captain America. Without delay, the Bandit continued slashing the Berserker.

"You f*cking c*nt!" Captain America could not move. Still, it was his

mistake for not counting the dead bodies first before opening the chest. He had not even healed himself before proceeding to open the chest, leaving 30% HP for Dusk Phoenix to end his life. As expected, Captain America had not lasted for more than a few hits, and was already plunging down to his last 20% bit of HP. Dusk Phoenix added a {Kidney Shot} right after {Ambush} ended. She took a bottle of Stamina Potion and restored all her Stamina altogether!

Pak Pak Shush Shush!

20%...15%...10%...0%!

Being stunned from the moment he opened the chest, with his dispel skill still in cooldown thanks to the commotion from a few moments back. It couldn't be helped, to counter a Bandit with a handful of status effect skills, one must have an anti-status effect at hand! Poor Captain America only had 30% HP after the bloody ordeal, and had his {Warrior's Will} still on cool down. There was no way for him to turn the tide around!

After dealing with Captain America, Dusk Phoenix stood there unmovingly and spoke to the sky. "Come out, Zhan Yu. I know you're there."

Zhang Yang smirked. The woman was smart. She had not let down her guard, even after everyone was killed.

"A man like you should not play like a rat. Have you no shame?" Dusk Phoenix provoked Zhang Yang with a stern face.

Zhang Yang complied and floated up from the earth behind her. Currently, all his skills were ready to use, and nothing was in a state of cooldown. If he was to lose a lvl match with her, he could just buy a tofu and smash his head to death with it.

"Bloody hell! You really are here!" cried Dusk Phoenix, with an astonished face. She turned around slowly. Both her swords were sheathed on her back. "Now that it's just the two of us, let's talk business."

Zhang Yang chuckled and pulled out his sword. "Might as well just kill you. Talking sounds troublesome."

"Sigh..." Dusk Phoenix smiled. "No wonder I could never find a man who can satisfy me." She smiled seductively and cupped her breasts together. "Looks like the rumor that Asian men are romantic was nothing but a rumor."

Imagine yourself watching the same comedy over and over again. Now, imagine someone telling the same joke. How would you react? That was how Zhang Yang reacted to her seduction. Nothing. He had too much of it from all women in the guild, and in real life, and Han Ying Xue's company...Too much that he was numb from it. Still, he frowned. "What are you implying?"

"Let's make a deal. I take this chest, and in exchange, I'll be your woman. Since you're already in the first place, you would be second when I've taken the chest. At least, the second place reward is as good as the first. Minus the title and one Level reward," said Dusk Phoenix as she playfully rested her hands on her waist, while bending over to reveal her cleavage to Zhang Yang. Slowly, the woman cat-walked like a super model on a runway, towards Zhang Yang and placed her hands on her waist. No wonder they say that Europeans do know how to make a man steamy.

The problem was, she had no idea that there were close to 100 million players currently watching their every move!

Zhang Yang laughed boldly. "Come on. What are you trying to sell? Bottled Swiss Mountain Air? You live somewhere in Europe, I live in China! How could you possibly be my woman? Furthermore, you don't speak my language. We can understand each other now, all thanks to the game's auto translation mechanism. Do you expect me to carry a Google Translate app with me every time I want to talk to you? I am a man who wishes to bring glory to my motherland, I can't be having wet dreams every night now, can I?"

"Hmph! What a down to earth guy!" Dusk Phoenix walked towards Zhang Yang and stopped one foot from his face. Her face was blushing greatly, and she puckered her lips. "Kiss me."

"You know what?" Zhang Yang paused.

Dusk Phoenix closed her eyes, expecting the man to fall into her trap.

"Kiss this."

Zhang Yang lifted his leg up high and kicked the woman away.

Normally, any actions that do not utilize weapons would only cause 1 damage to the target. The same happened to his kick. Other than the pitiful damage, the kick was backed by Zhang Yang's 1,262 Strength points, which had forcefully sent Dusk Phoenix flying, 7 to 8 meters away.

"What the hell!?" Dusk Phoenix cursed. There was a glint of anger and a little shame in her glare. Even though being kicked or being slashed at would not generate much pain, as a woman, she was still enraged at being kicked by a man so crudely.

Zhang Yang chuckled. "I know what you're trying to do. Silly kid. You are trying to utilize the system's anti-harassment feature to forcefully kick me out of the event! I guess, two can play that game. How did my kiss feel? Was it romantic enough for you?"

Her face changed from anger to a stoic, poker face.

She had fought Zhang Yang a few times before and had realized that she was not up to his standards. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was a tank, which made her attacks feel like cotton fluffs. It was a sudden spark of idea that got her to make use of the system anti-harassment system to kick Zhang Yang out of the event. She only needed to be slutty for a few moments to seduce Zhang Yang and send him out of the realm, and into prison!

Why fight head on when you can lure an enemy into a pit of spikes? Dusk Phoenix had wanted to draw Zhang Yang into her trap, but little did she know that Zhang Yang was an expert in springing such traps!

The woman had failed so miserably that her shame had turned into rage. The woman's puffy red cheek and her eyes started tearing up! She did not summon her battle mount, nor enter stealth mode, but instead, she charged head-on towards Zhang Yang, crying out her battle cry as if she had lost it.

"Calm down. No one like a berserk woman. Well, that's not exactly true,

all sorts of men exist. Though most of them wouldn't like this," said Zhang Yang as he raised his shield and sword, ready to intercept her attack.

Right at the moment before her blade was about to strike Zhang Yang's shield, Dusk Phoenix twisted and turned in the air, and managed to side-step into his blindspot. Her angry face suddenly turned into a sinister laugh.

Boom!

A fiery dragon burst out of her necklace and charged towards Zhang Yang.

{Shield Wall}!

Zhang Yang activated his ultimate defense skill right at the millisecond the dragon had burst out. He knew that the woman had something hidden. He knew that she would not be agitated that easily, with such a lame provocation. Hence, even when she was putting up a fake crying face, he was wary. His thoughts were just an impulse away from triggering {Shield Wall} if something was to happen. And he had guessed right.

'-18,894!'

Even when the ultimate defense skill was unleashed, Zhang Yang had still taken close to 20,000 burst damage! Without the magical barrier protecting him, the damage would have reached as high as 80,000! Zhang Yang own maximum HP was only 88,000 HP, and it had already been reduced down to around 72,000 HP before the dragon had even dealt the damage. If he had taken the hit without the {Shield Wall}, he would have been a goner.

Dusk Phoenix's 'damsel-in-distress' tactic was truly brilliant. But, it was not good enough to weaken Zhang Yang's alertness. The woman must have thought that Zhang Yang having 70,000 HP was good enough for her to kill him with a single skill burst, making Zhang Yang feel like a complete fool for not utilizing his defensive skills beforehand.

Having one plan foiled after another, Dusk Phoenix was stunned. That was her last trump card! Zhang Yang knew that women always had

backup plans. If he had not had the experience of two lives and an abundance of gaming experience, he might have fallen for her act and gotten himself killed by the dragon skill. Still, it was not time to let down his guard. Only god knew that Dusk Phoenix might still have some other plans in hand.

{Dance of Heaven and Earth}!

Shush!

The shadow emerged out and rushed at Dusk Phoenix!

Immune!

When the shadow reached to where Dusk Phoenix was, it bumped into an invisible wall and could not move closer. However, it did not stop nor cause the shadow to dissipate. The shadow swordsman continued to slash his way in and attacked Dusk Phoenix despite not being able to touch her physically.

Immune!

Immune!

No matter how much the shadow struck, Dusk Phoenix was not able to take any damage. At the same time, she took out her swords from her back and attacked Zhang Yang.

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

Zhang Yang had guessed that Dusk Phoenix was using some sort of equipment that granted her temporary immunity. Likewise, Zhang Yang’s {Shield Wall} was so strong that Dusk Phoenix was not able to deal any damage at all! On the contrary, Zhang Yang had been recovering 10% HP per second, and was recovered to full HP in a matter of a few seconds.

10 seconds later, {Dance of Heaven and Earth} expired, and the shadow swordsman vanished. At the same time, Dusk Phoenix started to move back. It seemed like her invulnerability skill lasted around the same time.

In that case...

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Zhang Yang activated the ring's skill and summoned an old orc magician. The orc pointed its staff at Dusk Phoenix and chanted a spell.

"Oh god!"

Dusk Phoenix panicked. Right at the moment the first bolt blasted off, Dusk Phoenix had disappeared in a puff of smoke, making use of the I-frame from {Vanish} to negate the skill's damage.

Zhang Yang wanted to praise her, but he best remain quiet for now. The woman was good. Her reaction speed was as good as Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream. Or rather, slightly better than Lost Dream, but slightly weaker than Sun Xin Yu.

Now that Zhang Yang had forced Dusk Phoenix to use {Vanish}, there were no more skills for her to use. She was no longer a threat to him. A Thief's strongest skill was {Ambush}, combined with the chaining of {Kidney Shot} to deliver a long stunning duration. Zhang Yang had no fear of Thieves. Why should he be afraid of Dusk Phoenix?

Zhang Yang moved towards the chest. If Dusk Phoenix continued to play hide and seek, she would lose her last shot for the chest. But if she did appear to attack Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang would bring down hell from above. Even if that took them over the time limit of the event, it did not matter! He was already at the first place!

When the coast was clear, Zhang Yang did not hesitate to open the chest.

'Ding! You have opened an Ancient Glory Chest!'

'Ding! You have obtained [Level 5 Dexterity Gemstone] x1!'

'Ding! You have obtained 91 Glory Points!'

Zhang Yang had opened the last chest. Since there was only 1 minute left on the countdown timer, there was nothing left to fight for. When the dust settles down, there will only be one winner.

"Zhan Yu. Mark my words. When we enter the Chaos Realm, I will have

my revenge!" From afar, Dusk Phoenix was yelling from the top of her lungs.

Zhang Yang laughed and shouted back at her. "Next time, if you do see me! I'll smack that *ss so hard that you'll be begging for more!"

"F*ck you!" Dusk Phoenix screamed back. Zhang Yang could have sworn that he noticed a red blush on her cheeks before she left the area. She had no need to leave, since the event would end soon. However, she just could not stand the sight of the Chinese man. She feared that she might actually succumb to her anger and beat the crap out of him. Or was it the other way round?

'Ding! Server Announcement: The event Realm of the Sacred Glory has ended. The top three winners will be announced shortly!'

'Ding! Server Announcement: Player Dusk Phoenix has won the third place. Obtained reward: Level +1, SP +1!'

'Ding! Server Announcement: Player Captain America has won the second place. Obtained reward: Level+ 2, SP +1!'

'Ding! Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has won the first place. Obtained reward: Level +3, SP +1, and a Unique title: Warrior of the Sacred Glory!'

Chapter 444: Dimensional Key

Once the system made the announcement, Zhang Yang's character glowed brightly and gained 3 Levels instantly, pushing him up to Level 97!

Zhang Yang was suddenly assaulted with deep fear. If he had been a little more diligent, he would have gained more levels before the Sacred Glory event had started. If so, he would have shot up to Level 100! That was good, in a sense, but what would happen to the "Dimensional Key" quest? Would it not be available to him, forever?!

Zhang Yang place the SP on {Shield Wall}, making it Level 9, with only 3 minutes of cooldown time!

At first, Zhang Yang was never interested in the title "Warrior of the Sacred Glory", but when he found out its hidden features, he equipped the title without hesitation. The title effect was: 10% increase attack when attacking Spectre and Demons. It was a great boost to him, since most of the enemies in the game were Spectres!

Zhang Yang opened his inventory to consolidate all his items. From the chest, he had obtained 78 pieces of [Level 4 Gemstones]! Sadly, he had only managed to procure 8 pieces of [Level 5 Gemstone]. It did not matter, since they were extremely valuable! The main factor that made the item priceless, was the fact that they cannot be bought with gold coins! In the future, it would be a huge advantage for Zhang Yang. Whenever he farms equipment with Level 4 Sockets or Level 5 Sockets, he would not need to buy Level 3 Gemstone to compensate for it!

Within a brief moment, Zhang Yang was teleported out of the Sacred Glory Realm, and back to White Jade Castle. Once he arrived, his messenger rang on and on, like there was an emergency call from the hospital. He received many calls of congratulations from all his friends and guild mates. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had even asked for Zhang Yang to treat them to a big fancy dinner, which Zhang Yang had no excuse to reject.

Even though he had agreed for the big dinner plan, Han Ying Xue and

the other ladies in the house got lazy. In the end, their big dinner was only a fancy takeout meal.

After playing for so long and remain indoors, Zhang Yang realized that it was mid summer. Even though the air conditioning in the house was turned on, all four ladies in the house wore their summer dresses indoors! Nothing but the most simplest, thinnest fabric plastered against their skin! Their slender bodies were totally exposed. All thanks to the so-called "summer dresses". Sun Xin Yu was the special case. When Zhang Yang saw her right after he had logged out of the game, she had just come back from the gym down stairs. At first, she wore sports bra and spats, which was quite revealing, yet normal. But when she was done bathing, she wore a mini Tee! Nothing more! There was not even a bra beneath that thin cloth! Her forbidden peaks were clearly shown to the world, which would entice any normal man!

Zhang Yang nearly spat out his drink when he saw Sun Xin Yu coming out of her room after changing. Ever since she had confessed her feelings to Zhang Yang, the woman had gotten bold. She had been lackadaisical about Zhang Yang and treated him less like a stranger. Was that a good thing? Zhang Yang could not answer his own question...Perhaps, did she not mind about Zhang Yang being able to take a peek under the hood?

Zhang Yang turned back and saw that Han Ying Xue had noticed his response to Sun Xin Yu. She merely scoffed and took out a fat banana out of the fruit basket. After peeling the skin ever so seductively, the women sucked on the banana slowly, from the tip, all the way down to the shaft. Instead of biting down the banana, she merely pulled it out and slobbered over it while winking at Zhang Yang. Unlike Sun Xin Yu's unintentional show, Zhang Yang was immune or rather, annoyed at how Han Ying Xue was constantly teasing him! Still, her actions were greatly seductive. Wouldn't hurt just to look at, would it?

There was a fiery sensation going on down south...

Now that Han Ying Xue knew that she had managed to get his attention, she bared her teeth and bit the banana forcefully. The glare in her eyes spelled doom to a certain part of Zhang Yang...

He could not help but feel extremely scared for some reason. What a complicated person...What does she want? For real!?

Anyhow, the food arrived and everyone dined in. On the dinner table however, there was a cold war going on between the bombalicious babe Han Ying Xue and the stone-cold Sun Xin Yu. If Zhang Yang were to wear a heat reader, he could practically see sparks zapping across the two women. Those two were at each other's throats, spiritually. It was so intense, that the air-head Wei Yan Er was able to detect the hostility between those two. While chewing down the lobster meat in her mouth, the little brat stared at Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue, her eyes going back and forth. Her gaze then turned to Zhang Yang and she snickered. Zhang Yang had no idea what is going on in her tiny little mind, but he knew that it would not be good. Daffodil Daydream on the other hand, played an award-winning role of being invisible to the crowd.

After finishing the dreaded dinner, Zhang Yang pushed all four ladies back to their rooms and urge them to go online. He still had the Dimensional Key quest to complete, which would lead him to the Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace to search for the Meteor Sword.

Zhang Yang had recruited all four girls into his party. The reason why he did not invite the other core members, was due to the party member limit of the portal entry. He had to pass on Fatty Han and the rest. Naturally, he picked the four of the girls because of their innate talents. That, and it was much better to have an all-girl company for once.

After gathering, Zhang Yang took out the Dimensional Key and focused his thoughts into the key. The red color gem-like object burst out a stream of rainbow light which formed into a light portal. The doorway of the portal was extremely small, which could only fit in one person at a time.

"Enter, now!" Zhang Yang cried. He needed to stay focus on controlling the portal, which required him to be the last person to enter. Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party entered the portal, one by one and when the last person entered, Zhang Yang held the key tightly and entered with his back facing the portal. Once the light engulfed his body, Zhang Yang turned around quickly and forced his way in. There was a light, pushing

current that was not too strong. It still required them to lean forward and put a little force in their forward movements.

‘Ding! You have entered the Fallen Land, Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace. Monsters that are killed inside this realm will not respawn!’

The white light faded away, and his vision returned to him. Zhang Yang realized his footing was little more solid than usual, and found out that he was standing right at the entrance of golden castle. There were beautiful decorations to his left and right. Almost everything was made of gold, and had given off some sort of blinding effect.

Zhang Yang's mini map had a good overall layout of the Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace. Zhang Yang opened the world map up, and his position was currently at the North West of the entire Royal Palace. The Treasure Cove was located at the South East of the entire Royal Palace. To reach there, they would have to travel diagonally for a long time...

Luckily, this time, the portal had sent the party in as a whole, instead of spawning them at random places.

"Wow...This place is beautiful." Wei Yan Er was stunned by the dazzling beauty of the palace. She started to spin around playfully. "Noobie tank! Let's just move here! This place is much better than your cooped-up apartment."

Zhang Yang frowned. He was annoyed at her statement. Was not it her fault that his place was cooped-up?

"Activate your auras. We're going to start raiding the palace now," said Zhang Yang. He did not wait for Wei Yan Er to obey him, and proceeded on further into the palace.

"Hmph. Dummy, how long exact have you spent doing this quest? For as long as it worth, there better be some good rewards waiting for me at the end!" said Han Ying Xue.

"Erhm. You meant, for me. Anyhow. The quest should be lucrative," said Zhang Yang nonchalantly, as he shrugged.

Daffodil Daydream said, "Well, even if the quest itself does not give any good rewards, the Violet-Platinum bosses in here should be good enough for us!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Well. Don't be too pessimistic there, Daffy. I did spend a great deal of time in this quest. If the quest was to reward me with just experience points, it better be worth at least half of a level, or I'll call it a huge waste of my time."

Everyone made jokes and teased each other as they proceeded deeper into the palace. It had been a long time since they had entered the palace, but there were still no buildings, just an extremely large courtyard, filled with trees, chairs, tables, and a place to drink tea! It did not take them long to find the first monster to fight.

[Restless Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 200,000

Defense: 500

The skeletal soldier was dragging a huge sword over the floor of the palace grounds. The sword looked like a regular sword. However, what made it different from the rest was the fact that sparks were created just by dragging its tip across the ground, even though the ground was tiled with stones. Instead of a metallic, clinging sound, the stone tiles were torn apart!

"This...place...not for...the living...intruders...death...kill..."

With a low, barely audible tone, the skeletal said something that triggered the battle. The skeletal soldier picked up the sword that it was dragging along and slashed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was expecting the sword's attack to be slow and sluggish. However, the skeletal soldier proved itself to be an elite tier monster by swinging the sword at such a fast speed, forcing Zhang Yang to react just as quickly. He swiftly raised his shield to block the strike, but was forcefully sent backward. The sheer power of the strike had made Zhang

Yang lose his footing. With quick reflexes, Zhang Yang borrowed the momentum from the backward force and spun around. At the same time, Zhang Yang returned the attack with a counterattack from the side, via a sword slice!

‘-4,387!’

After the sword sliced through the skeleton, its armor was caved in with a deep horizontal hole, breaking the armor down into two pieces. That was just a cosmetic appearance and nothing more. The defense value of the skeletal soldier did not change. However, the armor breaking effect would not have occurred if the sword was of White-Wood grade. Only high tiered weapons could create such an effect on lower tier armor.

"Did you guys hear the skeleton talking?" said Wei Yan Er surprised.

"Well. I'm not surprised. This place exists only temporarily. I won't be surprised, even if the grass could talk! Remember, players can only enter this dungeon three times!" Zhang Yang explained, as he continued to fight the monster.

"Tch... If only we can find, capture, and rear a talking monster!" said Wei Yan Er with her puppy eyes. Zhang Yang shook his head. He had always felt that Wei Yan Er had a whole, other-worldly taste compared to other people.

Sun Xin Yu and everyone else laid down their attack and quickly terminated the monster. The monster had dropped a few coins, a few [Inscribed Cloth], and even silvery, shiny boots!

[Hallowed Greaves] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +76

Strength: +38

Dexterity: +84

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 90

"Aiya! What a noob equipment!" said Wei Yan Er with disgust. Even though the boots had not yet been Identified, the stats would only increase by 50% after Identification, it was still quite weak, compared to her current equipment.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Come on. What do you expect? It's just a Gray-Silver equipment for Pete's sakes! Appreciate for what it is. We could sell the bloody thing for a few hundred gold coins. If the monsters here could drop that many equipment, even if they are all Gray-Silver, it would still be worth quite a fortune!"

When the word "fortune" got out, both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er chuckled. Zhang Yang could swear that those two had money symbols appearing in their eyes!

The party of five proceeded deeper into the palace, and found many similar skeletal soldiers around. Without the need to provoke the monsters, they would automatically target them and launch their attacks. Even though these elite monsters were stronger than the regular elite monsters in the "outside" world, their difficulty was greatly compensated with a vast number of drops. 10 skeletal soldiers had already dropped 4 counts of Gray-Silver equipment!

Everyone was happy. Since this place did not limit the duration you spend in the area, they could easily wipe all the monsters at leisure! Even the monsters that were not in the palace could be farmed for their lucrative drops!

After Fatty Han and the others knew about it, they too wanted to have a part of the haul. Zhang Yang added them into the party and tried to exploit a possible loop hole by using the [Party Summon Order] to "pull" them into the world. However, when Zhang Yang activated the accessory, the system responded. "Failure to summon party members due to Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace participant limit."

Zhang Yang was not disappointed. Somehow, he knew that the developers would not make a silly mistake like that. Now that Fatty Han and the rest of the core party members were all together, Zhang Yang had

not bothered to kick them out.

Fatty Han suddenly let out a loud cry. "F*ck me! I swear that I ain't gonna touch booze no more!"

Zhang Yang laughed at his sudden sweeping declaration. "Why the sudden accent. It does not suit you. Isn't booze harder to quit than asking you to have a diet?"

"Grah! It's not that." Said Fatty Han. "You got it all wrong. It's...well... Yesterday, when I went over to Xiao Wei's house to meet her parents. On that day, I can't remember how much I have drunk. But the next morning, Xiao Wei had glared at me like she could just stab me with her fingers. I asked what's wrong and she revealed to me what I had done. Last night, when I was at her place, I drank so much that I was heavily intoxicated."

"Huh...that's normal."

"Wait. I'm not done. Her father asked me this question. "What do you think of my daughter when you first met her?" You know what I said?"

"Oh f*ck."

"Yeah. I said, "Girl's got buns, hun!" I said that!"

Everyone burst out laughing and even Zhang Yang had to stop, rolling on the floor while clutching his stomach.

Chapter 445: Sweeping Gold

The Royal Palace was too huge to explore. Honestly, Zhang Yang felt that if the monsters did not drop those lucrative equipment, he would not even want to explore the entire place! Not even if you paid him! After spending close to 24 hours of real world time, Zhang Yang and his party had explored only 20% of the entire Royal Palace. The total equipment that they had amassed had already reached the thousands.

Inevitably, all of their inventory slots were not enough to store that much. Zhang Yang remained inside the Royal Palace while the four of them went back to the main city using the [Teleportation Scrolls]. After depositing all of the equipment in the guild storage and personal storage, Zhang Yang had recalled them back into the Royal Palace with the [Party Summon Order]. Zhang Yang was not afraid of the item now working, since he had tried it previously. The system had not allowed him to summon more than 5 of them. That was the only condition.

Luckily, the [Party Summon Order] had only a 1 hour cooldown time. They had no worries of farming more equipment over and over again, and could repeatedly go in and out of the Royal Palace once their inventory was full again. The party continued onwards and arrived at a small building by the second evening. Inside, there was the first boss of the world. Truthfully, they could go around it and skip the boss fight. But, who would want to skip when they could kill it for its drops, with their eyes closed!

[Steamy Little Gu Gu] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 96

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 1,700

The boss was only a Yellow-Gold tier. Zhang Yang could solo the boss with his hands behind his back! Considering the fact that most of the players in the entire game had endured many hardships, they could easily defeat this boss as well. Perhaps a strong team would be required to kill a

Violet-Platinum for now. Hence, this boss was placed there like a bonus!

Swinging their weapons half-heartedly, the party killed the boss without no effort. The boss had dropped one Yellow-Gold equipment and two Gray-Silver equipment. After collecting the equipment, Zhang Yang felt that something was a little odd. The Royal Palace was not terribly difficult as he had imagine it would be. The monsters were not tough to defeat, and would bestow them a heap of equipment! It was like this place was a reward in itself. A reward for entering the place for completing the Dimensional Key quest! Besides the equipment, there were many herbs that were available for harvesting in this place. How could a place in a different dimension produce such an abundance of herbs? That did not matter for him. All he had to do was to pay yup 1,000 gold coins to summon the tiny little critter to harvest the herbs, while he went around killing more monsters.

The little critter was undeniably cute. When Zhang Yang first summoned it out, Wei Yan Er had let out a deafening shriek and had hugged the little thing! The Herb Foraging Familiar was so annoyed at the little brat that it had squirmed out of Wei Yan Er's arms and had disappeared into the palace ground. One hour later, the Familiar returned and deposited all the herbs that it had gathered into Zhang Yang's inventory, before disappearing from the world.

"Hm...Noob tank? Where, and how does that little cutey store all the herbs?"

"Erhm..." Zhang Yang frowned. How does one explain the mystical concept of online gaming to a naïve little kid. "I think, it has some sort of a backpack with him?"

"Huh? Really? I want to see!" said the girl with wide, unblinking eyes.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and decided to ignore the girl.

After spending 5 more days of real world time, the team had finally explored every inch, every nook and cranny of the entire Royal Palace. Zhang Yang could guarantee that he had killed every single one of the monsters inside this realm. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were diligent in

doing so; they had even turned over stones and trees just to make sure they could squeeze in all available drops from the monsters in this place. In these 5 days, they had collected a total of 3,532 Gray-Silver equipment and 17 Yellow-Gold equipment!

Even though the price for Gray-Silver equipment had plummeted drastically, it was still normal to sell one Gray-Silver equipment for a few hundred gold coins. When the equipment was special or had slightly higher stats than a regular one, it could be sold for hundreds or even a thousand gold coins. With such an abundance of Gray-Silver equipment in hand, they could at least sell them all for 600,000 to 700,000 gold coins! With the few Yellow-Gold equipment that they had acquired, their total earnings could reach a million! In truth, Zhang Yang was happier about the number of herbs in this place! There were so many varieties and rarities of herbs, that his Familiar had collected. Zhang Yang felt that after a thousand years of being isolated from the real world, all these untouched herbs that grown ever so wildly, and benefited Zhang Yang alone!

Zhang Yang and his party had spent 5 days in real time, which would be 360 hours in the game. Taking away the time that they took to eat and workout, Zhang Yang had summoned the Familiar to harvest herbs for a total of 350 times. Although he had spent 350,000 gold coins for it, all the herbs that the little critter had collected for him were worth more than a million! On the bright side, the best herbs he collected were so rare that no one was willing to sell them! The rarest herb he obtained was the [Mythical Fruit].

[Mythical Fruit] could be used to concoct a potion called [Growth Potion], and the potion would permanently increase all Attribute points by 10! This potion effect was the same as the [Fate Crystal] found in the 10,000 Phantoms. However, 10,000 Phantom's respawn rate was 10 days (real world time). Besides, the monsters there were mostly Level 50. Since the spawn point was randomized, no super guild could monopolize the place, since anyone could easily wipe the place clean. It all depended on luck, and luck alone. Hence, the reason why the [Mythical Fruit] is priceless.

All Zhang Yang required was to obtain the recipe to craft the [Growth Potion]! On a side note, Zhang Yang had the skill {Alchemist Intuition}, providing the chance to craft out a [Transmuted Grade 10 Growth Potion] which would, probably grant the user 20 points of all Attribute!

After the party went out of the Royal Palace to empty their inventories, they moved deeper into the Royal Palace and came to the Treasure Cove. The entrance was blocked by a 50 meters golden door. Wei Yan Er tried to pushed the door open, but failed do to so. The door did not even budge when she had pushed it till her face was red. Disgruntled, the little brat had swung her axe and bashed the door, and as a result, the door remained unscathed while the little brat's axe was notched! The system reported a loss of 10% Durability for her axe, making the little brat as angry as a little boar.

Zhang Yang laughed for a good while before he took out the Dimensional Key and slotted it into a hidden keyhole on the side. A loud mechanical cog cracked away and the door was unlocked. The key popped out and the golden door cracked opened into two panels. The doors opened wide and revealed a darken hallow. There was nothing. Zhang Yang could not see anything from his side.

"Erhm...are we supposed to go in there?" Daffodil Daydream asked.

"Yeah..."

Foom!

Zhang Yang stepped back immediately on reflex, like a knee-jerk reaction. It was the sound of the torches hanging on the walls of the interiors being lit up. It was a passage way with many other routes, left and right. However, before Zhang Yang could go in, the only path he saw from outside the door was a straight pathway with no end.

"Get ready. This is why the real danger lurks."

"Hehe! Somebody is being a scaredy cat!" Wei Yan Er playfully taunted Zhang Yang.

"Yeah. I'm soooo scared! Woo~ Please, lead the way then!" Zhang Yang

shot back with a sinister smile.

"Hell no." Wei Yan Er immediately regretted her decision of taunting Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed for a good while before stepping into the darkened room. Unlike the exterior of the palace, the Treasure Cove was dark and gloomy. It felt like a whole other world where the exterior was a cheerful and happy place, while the Treasure Cove was a world where despair and death loomed. Zhang Yang swallowed his saliva and pulled out his sword and shield out, which he had forgotten to do so, before entering the Cove. There was a sense of danger in this place. Even though he wore what was currently the strongest tank equipment in the world, he had never heard of a team that had managed to complete this quest in his past life, thus the lingering fear in his mind. Zhang Yang strongly believed that the team that tried to raid this place was not just a simple team, it had to be a strong and well-equipped team. At least, better than his current party.

Zhang Yang kept his guard up high, and his alertness at its peak, as he walked through the dark passageway. Halfway through, the system made an announcement.

'Ding! You have entered: The Treasure Cove. You have 12 hours to search for the Meteor Sword. Failure to located the sword in the designated duration will result in expulsion from the Imperial Heaven's Empire Royal Palace. You can use the Dimensional Key to reenter the Palace after expulsion. The Treasure Cove has 5 floors. There will be a strong boss to guard each end of every floor. The Meteor Sword is located on the fifth floor. Good luck!'

A countdown timer popped up in everyone's U.I, along with a buff icon called, {Expulsion}.

Before the area of the Treasure Cove, there was no time limitation. The time limitation was only implemented upon entering the Treasure Cove. No wonder the previous raiders had failed to complete the mission. Once the battle with the boss took up too much time, it would waste the players' time, and would eventually lead to expulsion. Players could try again for 2

more runs, and if they failed after that, this place would forever be sealed.

While he was thinking a way to solve the time problem, a loud stomping sound echoed through the entire room. A fully armored soldier marched to where Zhang Yang and his party was. The sound of his footsteps were terrifying. It was not the sound of his metal armor slamming hard against the floor, but the sound of his ominous hum. It felt like he had survived numerous battles and had never lost one!

[Treasure Cove Guards] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

"Defend the Cove! Kill the intruders!" cried the soldier bravely. From the tiny gap of his helmet, Zhang Yang could see a lick of green flame. It was a higher leveled Spectre. No wonder it had so much HP.

"Wait! Is that an elite monster? It doesn't make sense. His HP and Defense are stronger than a Yellow-Gold boss!" Daffodil Daydream cried angrily.

The soldier pulled out his sword and slammed into Zhang Yang. "Yeah. I get that."

Zhang Yang was too lazy to explain why this monster was so strong, neither did he attempt to understand it. No matter how strong it was, there was no escaping the fight.

"Old man! They say, all work and no play makes Jack a dull man. Well, at least you'll get paid if you work. But now, you're already dead! Why are you still fighting!? What about retirement? Go and relax somewhere!" cried Wei Yan Er as she tried to persuade the monster to give up on the fight. Zhang Yang wanted to chip in, but he knew that if he said anything at all, this little brat would figure out a way to ask something else. The chain will never stop if he starts it!

The fight continued, and Zhang Yang realized that the soldier was no

ordinary elite monster. Each strike contained so much force, that it managed to push Zhang Yang away! The force was so strong that it felt like his legs would snap at any time if he resisted. Even further into the fight, Zhang Yang realized that the monster had a certain level of intelligence. When there were other melee fighter around him, the soldier would prioritize them before Zhang Yang. Luckily, Sun Xin Yu was extremely quick. She realized the issue and had managed to find a solution almost immediately. She found out that when the monster was not attacking Zhang Yang, it would almost instantly switch to her. With lightning speed reflexes, Sun Xin Yu would use {Vanish} to eliminate all the aggro on her and give Zhang Yang enough time to build more aggro on the monster.

After that turn, both Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er found a way to negate the monster's attacks. When the monster was attacking Zhang Yang, they would join in and attack. At the moment the monster stopped, they would leave his attacking range and allow the monster to attack Zhang Yang instead.

With the abnormal lengthy HP, and the absurd battle style of the monster, the party had taken close to 3 minutes to kill him. Luckily, Zhang Yang himself had found a better solution to kill the monster faster and more efficiently. Whenever a monster like that appeared, Zhang Yang would lure it to the corner, and Zhang Yang would attack him with his own back on the wall. That way, Zhang Yang could negate the knockback effect, which allowed him to remain "stationary," to fight him better.

After killing more than 10 monsters, Zhang Yang started to frown worriedly. If this continued on, they could not reach their destination in time! They were already at their fastest pace, there was no way to squeeze more DPS out of them!

For now, Zhang Yang moved the problem to the back of his head. The team proceeded on, killing their way into the Treasure Cove and arriving at the end of the floor, after 4 hours. Almost instantly, another problem arose. There was no passageway that led them to the next floor! The boss that was supposed to be there, was nowhere to be found! Where was the

promised passageway and the boss!?

Chapter 446: The Fourth Prince Ludovic

"Let's search for it!" Zhang Yang cried annoyingly.

Everyone spread out and started to search in all directions. Some thought that it must be some sort of switch mechanism that could open a hatch, or reveal a secret wall.

"Nyahaha! I found it!" Wei Yan Er laughed happily. Right at where she stood, there was a large humanoid statue. At the base of the statue was a glowing jade. In the game, items or objects that could be interacted with would be highlighted with a glowing aura. Items or objects such as herbs, minerals, and even switches would be highlighted to help players spot them.

"WAIT! DON'T TOUCH IT!" Zhang Yang stopped her. The stupid and reckless little brat might kill herself by triggering the boss alone. Zhang Yang and everyone else rushed to Wei Yan Er's side. Zhang Yang nodded and Wei Yan Er twisted the jade. Cracks started to form on the statue and fall down from the top. With a loud crack, a hand burst out and slammed downward.

"Aiyaya! What is that!? Monster? Ghost?!" Wei Yan Er cried out randomly.

With stones raining down from above, Zhang Yang and everyone started to jump away to safety.

The statue cracked even more violently after some time. It seemed that the source of the great vibration was coming from within the statue. It was so powerful, that the entire floor was trembling like a subwoofer! Everyone was forced to stagger about like drunkards!

Crack! Crack! The statue continued to "peel" off its stone skin and reveal its main body. After all the stone had been removed, the boss appeared in gold, shining armor. He was carrying a gigantic axe behind him.

[The Fourth Price, Ludovic] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

"Oh...my...god...Level 100 boss..." Zhang Yang gaped. First, he had goosebumps. Trembles of fear followed next.

Level 95, or 99 would not have much difference from each other, but when a boss reaches Level 100, like Ludovic, the prowess and difficulty was on a whole other level. It was the game's setting. Every 10 Level gap, equipment, itemd, monsters, players, and even bosses would undergo an upgrade. Hence, this boss had already gained that fore mentioned upgrade, and would be extremely difficult to defeat. A Level 90+ Violet-Platinum boss would have only around 2,600 Defence. Ludovic had an extra 300!

No wonder the previous team in Zhang Yang's previous life could never make it alive! Just the minions alone would already take too long a time to defeat. Yet, now came a Level 100 Violet-Platinum boss! It would not be such a problem if they were not restricted with time and level limitations. This "dungeon" ... this place had a Level 100 limitation, and also a 36 hour duration for them to conquer. Was it impossible? No. But it was close to impossible!

The Level 90 dungeon Rock Frost Palace had already caused players to be stuck in there for more than 2 months! Players had actually taken 2 months to figure out a way to defeat the entire dungeon. Yet, this Level 100 "dungeon" Treasure Cove had forced players to complete it within 36 hours! How!?

Ludovic's entire body was revealed to the party. It was massive, like a professional, heavy weight MMA fighter. An emerald-green flame burst into his eye sockets, indicating that Ludovic had come back to life. Slowly, Ludovic stared down at Zhang Yang and everyone else, and said in a low husky voice. "Are these the descendants of the seven traitors? Death, shall it be!"

Without saying anything else, Ludovic drew out his axe from behind his back and swung it hard at Zhang Yang and everyone else.

Zhang Yang jumped into action and embraced the oncoming attack with

his shield.

PANG!

Sparks burst into the air when the gigantic axe pummeled the shield. Although Ludovic's attack was nullified, Zhang Yang was sent flying. Instead of knocking him back a few meters, Zhang Yang was literally sent flying backwards. It took a great deal of strength to get back up on his feet, which eventually ended up with Zhang Yang spitting blood out of his mouth.

"Augh!" Zhang Yang struggled to remain on his feet.

"Woah. Noobie tank! What are you throwing up blood for! It's not like you have cancer!" Wei Yan Er teased.

"Bloody brat! There's a time and place for everything, and now is neither the time nor the place!" Zhang Yang scolded her sternly, which made her quieten down. He regained his strength and sprinted towards the boss.

"Hmph. No hero, no villain, could ever harm the great prince. Your resistance is all but for naught!" said Ludovic in a very snobbish manner.

Zhang Yang was careless. While sprinting with all his might, Zhang Yang had forgot to guard his side. Ludovic had sent a powerful soccer kick towards Zhang Yang, hitting him right in the chest area, which sent him flying like a bullet. He ricocheted against the wall and fell down to earth, throwing up more blood as he got back up his feet.

"Grah!" Zhang Yang was getting annoyed at tasting the rust in his mouth. He quickly got up to his feet again and glided towards Ludovic with a {Charge}. A quick slam was avoided, with Zhang Yang extreme reflexes, and he managed to land his first hit on the boss. His sword struck the boss' armor, sending out sparks everywhere, and the word "-3,182" floated up.

Enraged, Ludovic picked up his axe and swung it hard at Zhang Yang.

SPLISHH!

‘-15,238!’

A fresh pool of blood dripped down from Ludovic's axe after he had chopped Zhang Yang.

Beep

Zhang Yang's Rage gauge was filled almost instantly after he had taken the devastating attack. He quickly jumped towards the boss, avoiding more attacks and landed {Cripple Defense} on the boss to support his team mates. All this time, beside Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and everyone else had remained idle to allow Zhang Yang to build more aggro on the boss before they could attack.

"Feeble bugs! I will squash you with my fist and feet! Your death will be quick and painless!" Ludovic bellowed. He picked up his axe and spun it around in circle. A bright flash of light shot out in a horizontal sweep and dealt damage to everyone close to the boss' melee range.

'Ding! Ludovic has used: Tornado Sweep, all target within the attacking range will receive 25,000 Physical damage!'

Zhang Yang had thick defense, it would not matter for him. But the others had taken close to 20,000 damage. Even though they had Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment on them, their 50,000 HP was instantly halved. The girls jumped backward instantly and withdrew to the side to heal themselves with [Bandages] and Han Ying Xue's heal.

"Behold! Feast your eyes on my strength! Bow to the power of absolute force!" Ludovic was talking too much, that even the little brat had gotten annoyed. Zhang Yang was about to approach him to attack, when an axe swung by. Zhang Yang took the axe attack, and was sent flying by another kick to the chest!

Zhang Yang saw the kick coming to him. With quick breathing, Zhang Yang relaxed his body and avoided the incoming "wrecking ball" simply by bending backwards, like Mr. Anderson from the Matrix.

Almost all the girls present on the scene gasped in awe and surprise. Daffodil Daydream cried out immediately, "Guild master, how did you do that? How did you avoid that attack?"

From her perspective, the boss' attack was too fast to dodge. Unless players were to use special skills to induce a sudden movement, it was impossible to physically dodge the attack!

"That kick attack is not an actual attack. It's not considered to be a boss attack. That is why there is a flaw which you can exploit. Its easy to dodge once you had grasp the technique." Zhang Yang explained.

The kick that sent him flying the first time had not caused any HP damage. It was all merely an effect. But the effect had a knockback effect, which could send him flying off his feet. It was troublesome, since he could not counterattack!

This type of attack was not alien for Zhang Yang. Ever since the game had undergone the first update, the effect was already added in. It was similar to the knockback effect from bosses and stronger monsters. As long as the Strength value is higher than the target, one could easily induce a knockback effect. In Ludovic's case, the effect was placed in its kick attack. Since the attack was not an attacking skill which could cause HP damage, the movement speed of the leg was fixed to allow players to avoid it physically.

These kinds of movement in a fight was extremely common after the Chaos Realm threshold. Zhang Yang had been reborn, and it was close to a year since he had fought such a boss. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had made a few mistakes with Ludovic. Not that he had gotten used to it, but he was using everything in his power to avoid being sent flying again.

This type of fighting style is actually applicable in PvP. Zhang Yang had used a similar method of fighting Musashi Ou-sama in the recent past event. Taking a shield to the face would not cause damage, but it could disrupt the opponent's vision. However, when Zhang Yang was slamming his shield into Musashi's face, it was all to humiliate him and throw him off his game.

To slam someone off their feet would require the attacker to have a much higher value of Strength compared to the victim. Right now, Zhang

Yang could send a player off their feet, provided that the player was equipped with Yellow-Gold equipment, or lower tier. This sort of attacking style was known as the Supporting Attack. In his past life, players around had crafted a series of supporting attacks and incidentally caused a huge uproar about it. There was a case where a random rank-less player, equipped with only a beginner dagger, killed an A-class Professional League PvP fighter solely by using the "supporting attack".

Hence, after the incident, many professional players had adopted the style and utilized them to enhance their fights.

...

"Die! Pest!" Ludovic bellowed again. This time, he spun his axe in circles and created many afterimages of his axe around his body. With a loud battle cry, the mirror images of the axe blasted off in all directions.

'Ding! Ludovic has used: Axe Barrage. Inflicts 20,000 Physical damage to all targets within the vicinity. Lasts for 10 seconds!'

"To me!" Zhang Yang cried out as he casted {Vanguard Aggression}. The attack would deal 20,000 damage per seconds. That meant it could deal 200,000 damage in total! How could anyone survive that?

With Ludovic as the center, the axes shot out to all directions, and even to the edge of the gigantic room. Zhang Yang frowned at the sight of it. This time, he could use {Vanguard's Aggression} to save everyone. He could use {Rearm} and use it again for the next {Axe Barrage}. But what about the third one? Right now, the boss still had 92% HP. If the skill was activated at regular intervals instead of by the HP percentage of the boss, {Axe Barrage} could be repeat endlessly, and it would be impossible to survive that!

How could a 5-men party win this round? The system would never design such a broken boss fight! There must be a way to survive the skill, without using counter skills!

Zhang Yang frantically scanned the entire room and found a abnormally large pillar at the far side of the room.

"Guys! I will kite the boss over to that pillar. When the boss uses {Axe Barrage} again, you can avoid the skill by hiding behind the pillar!" said Zhang Yang. During the skill activation, Zhang Yang had observed and found that the skill required the boss' channeling. Hence, when everyone runs behind the pillar, the boss would not chase after them. Furthermore, he noticed the axes that had flown out were stuck in the pillar and had not phased through.

10 seconds later, Ludovic raised his axe up high and swung it hard towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang then kited the boss. Slowly but surely, he managed to drag the boss over to that pillar. He stopped 3 meters away from the pillar, providing enough space and distance for everyone, including himself, to escape the skill, if the boss were to use {Axe Barrage} again.

Now, the boss was not stupid. The raging soccer kick was used repeatedly. If Zhang Yang did not possess his past life experience, he would have faced this sort of attack for the first time and would be kicked so far and so often that the boss could have joined the World FIFA competition. Even when the players were standing close to the pillar, the boss was not stupid enough to let them stay there forever. With all sort of kicks coming from different angles, the boss' prime objective was to keep everyone from staying at one place for too long. Tanks could not rely on the pillar to prevent the knockback effect!

If another tank were to replace Zhang Yang, they would surely be kicked until he becomes a football (not American football). With him away from the pillar, the boss would then use {Axe Barrage} to kill everyone easily.

This is the main point of surviving the skill. Players would have to figure out a strategy to stand close to the pillar, during and before the {Axe Barrage} is used. If they had figured that out, any less-than-average tank, healer, and attack could defeat him.

"Death to you, insolent fool!" cried Ludovic as he thrust another kick at Zhang Yang.

"Again, with the same trick?" As light as a feather, Zhang Yang twisted

and turned, effectively moving away from the kick. Right after the kick was thrown into the air, Zhang Yang moved to the side, and slammed his shield right in Ludovic's helmet.

Pang!

The slam had successfully knocked off Ludovic's helmet, and revealed his half-rotten face, just like Two-Face in the Batman. Some of his hair got stuck on the helmet, causing some of his skin on the head to be ripped off as the helmet was blown away. Zhang Yang had not intended to do that. He had wanted to knock Ludovic back, so that he would have more space to start a hit combo. It was a pity that his Strength was lower than Ludovic.

"Ugly snob!" Wei Yan Er cried out and laughed.

"Ugly?" Ludovic heard her laughed and was enraged. "Did you just call me ugly? I am the fourth prince! The most handsome man under the heavens! You ignorant fool! How dare you deny the gift of gods? Are you blind?"

"Nishishishi! Ugly snob! Ugly snob!" Wei Yan Er continued to teased and jumped around as she did.

"I am the most handsome man! Handsome, I'll tell you!" Ludovic rage built up, and he swung his axe around like a tornado!

'Ding! Ludovic has used: Axe Barrage. Inflicts 20,000 Physical damage to all targets within the vicinity. Lasts for 10 seconds!'

As the afterimage of the axe started to form around Ludovic's body, Zhang Yang and everyone else started to make their way to the back of the large pillar.

"Are you daft? Why did you purposely anger a lunatic?! D*mn girl, know what you're doing, please!" said Zhang Yang as he took the chance to wrap himself up with a [Bandage].

"Okay..." Wei Yan Er sounded like she had learnt her lesson. "Does that mean that I should stop teasing you as well?"

Wei Yan Er smiled, and Zhang Yang sighed. Sometimes, Wei Yan Er was pretty smart in insulting someone. She did not even need to utter a single profanity!

To ease the burden on Han Ying Xue, everyone took out their own [Bandages] and heal themselves. Compared to a bottle of [Healing Potion], a [Bandage] was much cheaper. Zhang Yang had always preferred to use [Bandage] to heal himself since he had the title - "A Physician's Friend" that granted him a 100% increment in [Bandage] effectiveness.

The four ladies were impressed. Han Ying Xue, however, was extremely jealous. Back when she had saved Zhang Yang to defeat the Python King, she had not realized that it was the last step of the quest. If she had known that, she would have done the repetitive quest before that!

After Ludovic had finished channeling {Axe Barrage}, he picked up his axe, and chased after the party behind the pillar, and started attacking.

Chapter 447: Spider Silk Dress

With the all-powerful pillar standing there, Ludovic's {Axe Barrage} was rendered ineffective on the second time. In the 10 seconds of channeling duration, Zhang Yang and everyone were able to heal themselves with their own [Bandages] to save Han Ying Xue's MP. 10 seconds later, everyone shot up, with Zhang Yang taking all the heat, like an indestructible punching bag.

70%...

"I will smash you into mincemeat!" as the battle dragged on, his temper tantrums got frequent. By the time that boss was damaged to 70%, its normal axe attacks were imbued with powerful forces, that the wind generated after swinging it could cause damage when it struck everyone else.

"What a disgusting face! Stupid Yu! It's all because of you! You just HAD to knock his helmet off! Well, have a good look now! Dammit! Great...I just lost my appetite!" said Han Ying Xue.

"You dare to mock my beauty!? You're nothing but peasants! No! You're nothing but insects! I will never forgive you!" Ludovic continued to throw a fit.

"Buddha once said, charm is deceptive, and beauty does not last; in the face of Time, nothing will last." Zhang Yang quoted. He wanted to sound wise, but failed so miserably due to his laughing, not-taking-it-seriously kind of tone.

Everyone fell silent as they did not know how to react to Zhang Yang's random, sudden speech.

The team had 3 attackers, and Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream were not the average, run-of-the-mill attackers. They were the best there were, currently. With Zhang Yang matching their damage output, and the Mythical Turtle attacking, the team's firepower was as strong as a 10-man party. Along with the inexhaustible number of Grade 10 Transmuted Power Potions in hand, the team was able to maintain a

shocking amount of damage output.

Even though the materials to craft Power Potions were expensive, as the game had progressed into the Level 90 threshold, lower leveled materials, including the herbs to craft Power Potions had become less of a scarcity, hence the lower price of them. Because of that, Zhang Yang was able to find a large number of herbs in the market and purchase them all to craft Power Potions in large quantities. All Grade 9 and Grade 10 Transmuted Power Potions would be reserved for his team mates, while the rest would be placed in the Little Merchandise Shop to be sold. Some of them were also placed in the guild's storage as a motivation to allow guild members to farm more Contribution Points in order to exchange them.

10 minutes into the battle, Ludovic had finally been hacked down to his last 20% HP.

Once his HP range had entered the {Killing Cleave} bracket, Wei Yan Er had consumed another Grade 10 Transmuted Power Potion, activating {Indiscriminate} and whacking the boss with {Killing Cleave}. Her attack had even managed to land a Critical Strike!

"I'll be d*mned. A Berserker is really powerful!" cried Zhang Yang. Even he was impressed at the damage Wei Yan Er had just dealt.

"Yeah! I wish that other classes would have skills like {Indiscriminate}!" said Daffodil Daydream. She was slightly envious of Wei Yan Er.

"Hahaha! Relax. All classes do have that sort of skill as well!" Zhang Yang explained. "I remember a skill called, {Scorch} for Pyromancer. Upon activation, it would cause a 100% increase for all attacks on targets with 20% HP or less. It's much better than a Warrior's {Indiscriminate}!"

100% increase in attack is almost the same as having a 100% increase in Critical Strike. Both dealt double the original attack. However, even since a 100% increase in attack power could have the potential to have a Critical Strike. If the caster is lucky, the attack could trigger a Critical Strike which will cause the original attack to have 4 times the attack power.

"B-But...The Instructor did not teach us the skill..." said Daffodil Daydream sadly.

"Hm. In that case, it must be a skill that requires a skill book, which could be farmed from monsters!" said Zhang Yang.

The team continued blasting, hacking, stabbing and slicing. Eventually, Ludovic had reached the end of his line.

"Pests! Insects! I would never lose to such scums! I am but a royal member of the Cylonia Royal Family! The blood in my veins are of that of the highest of nobility! I will never allow myself to be defeated by the likes of you!" cried Ludovic as he entered a berserk state.

Wei Yan Er laughed. "Noble blood? What are you talking about? You're rotting from the inside, literally! Blood or not, there's no nobility in your veins right now."

"You bastard! Humiliate me or my family honor, and I shall kill you!"

"Oh, shut up already. Kill, die, kill, die. Could you at least come up with a better way to intimidate your enemy? You're like a kid!" so said the kid.

"GRAHHH!" Ludovic was greatly angered to the point where he could no longer come up with any more insults. If the boss was a human player, Wei Yan Er could have been the first person alive to kill a man by forcing his blood veins to pops via anger alone.

When the boss' HP dropped to 1%, it stopped there. Ludovic's character glowed with an intense red hue. Along with his battle cry, Ludovic bellowed. "If I am to die! You will be coming with me!"

BOOM!

The boss' huge body exploded in a massive explosion, like a human-size H.E. grenade. The impact of the shockwave had sent everyone off their feet, and into the walls. The explosion was too quick and everyone, not even Zhang Yang had any time to prepare for it. Each of them was left with only 1 HP left.

Zhang Yang made a split-second decision and activated {Berserker's Heal} to restore all his HP, in case anything else was coming to get them. Fortunately, his intuition was right on spot. Right after the boss died, there was tunnel that revealed an underground tunnel at the very same spot

where the boss had exploded. Over 10 soldiers, clad in metal armor had rushed out of the tunnel, and had charged towards Zhang Yang and the party.

Han Ying Xue quickly made her way to the back of the party and cast a {Healing Shower}. Zhang Yang quickly used {Charge} to rush into the group of enemies, and used {Thunder Strike} to slow them down and provide enough time for the team to heal up.

[Armored Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

All the soldiers were heavily armored with metal cuirasses and long spears in hand. Zhang Yang had not dared to charge directly into the fight with these elite soldiers that were as strong as Yellow-Gold bosses! Instead, Zhang Yang engaged in a kite-and-chase strategy. There was one factor that had made the monsters weaker than Yellow-Gold bosses. Despite being more powerful than them, the monsters could be affected by status effect skills!

Zhang Yang had kited the monsters around the pillar and had used {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}, {Heroic Leap}, and other skills that could induce a slow or stun effect on them. With that, Zhang Yang's kiting strategy was a success. Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er both had joined Zhang Yang after being healed by Han Ying Xue. Daffodil Daydream had not required much healing, since her attacks were ranged.

Each monster had 3 million HP, so 10 of them would total up to 30 million HP. It was much longer than a boss's! However, since they could take on status effect skills, the battle was only made harder by the draggy fight. However, their attack power rivaled that of a Yellow-Gold boss. Hence, if the kiting was not done properly, the entire party could be wiped out if the stunning or slow was not done perfectly. Luckily, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream each had their own unique status effect skills. In any situation where monsters had managed to keep up

with Zhang Yang, they would proceed to stun them.

Eventually, since this was a matter of cooperation and time, the battle ended with a consecutive fall of the Armored Guards. Every soldier was defeated only after 20 minutes of constant running and stunning. As soon as they were done, Zhang Yang made sure that the coast was clear, before dropping to all fours and resting. There was a wet, sticky feeling behind his back. He was not sure if it was an effect in the game, or if he was really sweating in his bed!

As such, Zhang Yang now understood more about the reason why the previous teams had never been able to clear this Royal Palace dungeon. The previous boss was already tough to begin with, coupled with the sudden explosion and 10 ambushing soldiers with the power of Yellow-Gold bosses! That was only the first floor! There were four more to go! Just how high would the escalation of power be, after this floor, and the one after?

While everyone was resting, Wei Yan Er hopped jubilantly towards the loot. After picking up the gold coins, Wei Yan Er flipped open a loot and had obtained a beautiful, tight dress.

[Spider Silk Dress] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +336

Intelligence: +302

Spirit: +134

Equip-Effect: Increases your attack and healing effect by 2%.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 100

"I want it!"

"Mine!!!"

"I like it."

"Erhm. Can I have it?"

All four ladies of the party voiced out their intention to own the dress. Zhang Yang felt that it was a little strange. Although the dress did have good properties, it was a Level 100 equipment. Furthermore, this dress was not much stronger than a Violet-Platinum Level 90 dress. So, why the request? It made sense on why Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream would want it, but why Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu?

After a while, Zhang Yang understood why. It was because Wei Yan Er had tried it on and had showcased the dress' beauty.

The dress was a good replica of a Chinese traditional women's attire, called the Qi Pao. It was made with a light green color fabric and had beautiful woven purple-red trims on it. Since the dress would adjust itself according to the wearer's body figure, it would emphasize the women's figure naturally, without overdoing it.

It couldn't be helped, the artist that designed the armor and equipment of the game did not have much sense of creativity and concept for fashion. Many equipment were designed to be extremely plain. Dresses like the [Spider Silk Dress] were extremely rare. No wonder the ladies would want to get their hands on it.

Since everyone wanted the dress, all they could do was to roll for it, fair and square. As they continued rolling for it, Zhang Yang had a sudden urge to roll for it as well. He was extremely lucky, and rolled 100 points, and gained the dress.

"Give it!"

"Dummy, what are you doing? I want it!"

"I like it."

"Erhm...guild master? Could I have the dress?"

Zhang Yang frowned at first, but he had a sudden idea to pull a prank.

"Haha, the first person who kiss me will have the dress!"

"What!? You want me to kiss an old uncle?! YUCK!"

"I'll kill you."

"Erhm...guild master...."

Everyone except Han Ying Xue protested. Han Ying Xue raised an eyebrow at his proposal and walked towards him. With quick motions, she grabbed his head closer to her and kissed Zhang Yang on his cheek.

"Hmph. Now, for my dress," said Han Ying Xue with a sinister smile as she held her hands out.

Zhang Yang immediately regretted his decision to pull the prank, as he was immediately assaulted with a killing glare by Sun Xin Yu. After him, she turned her gaze and glared at Han Ying Xue. This time, her glare carried a heavier killing intent. Han Ying Xue noticed her glare and responded, by tilting her head provocatively. The two of them knew that they had feelings for Zhang Yang. Before this, it was unclear, since women would only leave subtle hints at their target. But now, Han Ying Xue's public kiss to the cheek was a public declaration of her love for him. The real battle had started.

Sun Xin Yu continued to glare at Han Ying Xue. The two of them did not waver.

"Zhang Yang!" Both of them turned to Zhang Yang, since there was no other way to solve this conflict.

Both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were snickering by the side, watching silently, hoping for some popcorn to eat.

The phrase "A silent tiger would look like a sickly cat" could clearly describe this situation. Both girls thought that they could "grab" Zhang Yang quietly. But when one tries to do so, the other would retaliate. Now, both of them had to reveal their claws in order to claim Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang gulped down his saliva, walked towards the two of them with an earnest smile. He pats their shoulder side to side and say, "Let's kill some monsters first, shall we?"

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue bashfully turn away from each other. Although they were unsatisfied with his answer, neither of them could do

anything for the moment. Wei Yan Er on the other hand, looked disappointed, as if she had just missed the chance to watch a live soap opera unfold.

Chapter 448: An Upgrade in AOE

Wei Yan Er continued to pick up the loot that had been dropped by the boss. The second Yellow-Gold equipment was a pair of leather boots, with additional of fire resistance attributes, so everyone just ignored it. They deduced that even if they placed it into the Little Merchandize to sell, no one would actually spend a dime to purchase this pair of boots. So by the end of it, Han Ying Xue took it and dismantled it into materials for making a Runestone.

But afterwards, the little girl picked up a staff that was aquamarine in colour. This aquamarine staff radiated with a vague violet light, presenting it's fascinating appearance like a crystal jade. Everyone already knew that this was one fine staff, just by looking at it.

[Staff of Nostalgia] (Violet-Platinum, Staff)

Magic Attack: 2,321 - 2,921

Equip: Increases 10% of damage and healing effect.

Equip: When you succeeded in casting a spell, there is a 0.1% chance of having a nostalgic experience which recovers you back to 100% of your health and mana points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Looking at the attributes of the staff, everyone took in a deep breath. Staffs of the same level and same grade and tier did not have much difference. Unlike other types of weapons, players would have to look at their attacking speed to determine whether it's good or not. Therefore, the key to judging whether the magic type weapon is good or not, depended on its additional attributes or effects.

This staff actually added 10% damage and healing points of the wielder! Judging just by this additional attribute, this staff was already very powerful! The second additional attribute that this staff provided was even more awesome than the first one could offer! There was a rate of

recovering 100% of both health and mana bars! Any player should know, this was one attribute that could really turn the tide of the battle around during PK battles!

The rate was low, and it was a reasonable rate. Because if the rate was high, the wielder of this weapon would single-handedly break the game!

Daffodil Daydream gave it some thoughts and said, "Ms.Snow, I think you should have this staff. Think about it! If the duration of a boss battle is a little longer, you won't have to worry about having not enough mana with this staff."

Although Daffodil Daydream would face the same problem as Han Ying Xue, having the need to worry about having insufficient mana points during a boss battle, she was more of a DPS player in the party, and there were still other DPS players on the party to cover her part if she ever ran out of mana points to use. But it was a totally different story when it came to healers being in a boss battle, especially a battle involving only 5 players as a party. If a healer of the party had insufficient mana points to activate skills that kept the party members healed up well and alive, the entire party would be wiped out in just a brief moment, unless the boss had only 1% of health bar left at that time!

So, after Daffodil Daydream did some math on it, she decided to let Han Ying Xue have this awesome staff.

The two of them were being polite at first, but the staff was taken by Han Ying Xue by the end of the discussion, though the day she is eligible to equip the staff was still a little far away.

Wei Yan Er reached her hands into the loot, and she actually picked up a piece of [Aura Stone]!

[Middle-tier Aura Stone] (Consumable)

Use: Improves an Aura Skill by 1 level, the skill must not be higher than level 6.

Required: Aura Skill

[Low-tier Aura Stones] could only be used to level up an Aura Skill up to

Level 4, after that, they would not be able to level up the Aura Skills further. So it had become meaningless for Zhang Yang and his party members to hold many [Low-tier Aura Stone] after their Aura Skills had been leveled up to Level 4. They could only wait for the appearance of [Middle-tier Aura Stones] before they could level up their Aura Skills even further. However, Daffodil Daydream and Sun Xin Yu had not learned any Aura Skills at the moment, so they could only stare at Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, fighting to get the stone by throwing dices!

In the end, the stone went to Wei Yan Er! This little girl placed her hands on her waist and laughed out loud like a mad girl, looking extremely cocky!

But it actually did not matter if it was the {Vitality Aura}, the {Life Aura} or the {Strength Aura}, any improvements on any of the Aura Skills would be very practical in battle. And since that they would be staying together in one party whenever they go on a quest, they could all enjoy the beneficial effects of the Aura Skills on each of them!

After cleaning up the loot from the ground, the five of them came up to an entrance of an underground passage. After they walked along the staircases that led them down, they arrived at the second floor of the Treasure Cove. The environment of this floor was a little different from the first floor. The entire area of this floor was supported with long thick pillars. These pillars were like fluorescent tubes, radiating with bright and yet soothing lights all around them. These pillars were the reason why the floor was so bright that everyone could see every inch of the floor!

In this vast area, there were countless skeleton monsters wandering about, without any sense of purpose. The number of these skeleton monsters was so high that people would feel goosebumps just by looking at them!

[Skeleton Rangers] (Elite, Undead)

Level: 95

HP: 500,000

Defense: 1,000

"Oh my gawd! There's... there's so many monsters here!" Daffodil Daydream could not pronounce her words properly as she was really shocked to see so many Level 95 elite monsters in a single area. Every single one of the monsters had a total of 500,000 health points. Although their health bars were a little lower than the health bars of the monsters in the previous floor, their number were tenfold, or maybe hundreds of times higher than the number of monsters on the first floor!

"Even if we were to activate our paired skill {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, I don't think we can clear this much monsters!" Han Ying Xue was beginning to complain.

Zhang Yang looked around and said, "Haha! We're going to be rich!"

"Noob tank! Are you mad? There're so many monsters here! I think, we need at least 2 to 3 days to clear everything out. And you will definitely not going to finish that stupid quest of yours in time!" Wei Yan Er said it with a humph.

"You are right! It is definitely not possible under normal circumstances! But there is a staircase here! As a wise man once said, this is a pass that one man can hold against ten thousand! I can block at the entrance to this staircase. In that way, only two or three monsters at most will squeeze into the available space before me and attack me. Then we shall control everything from thereon!" Zhang Yang reached out for Han Ying Xue and said, "Give me the [Cloak of the Dark Wings], I'll go to lure the monsters here."

If Zhang Yang charged in blindly, and if he lured too many monsters to the point that he couldn't make it back to his party members, or too few monsters to the point that AOE attacks would become meaningless, at the least he would have the ability to fly in the air. Although the cloak could not be used to attack the monsters, it was ideal to be used in situation like this, where players need to lure a large number of monsters and get away when needed.

Zhang Yang put on the [Cloak of the Dark Wings] and activated the special effect of the cloak. He immediately opened up a pair of large wings

on his back and commanded them with his thoughts. He instantly fluttered up away into the air and flew straight towards the direction of the Skeleton Rangers.

"Rawgh --- " the monsters below reacted quickly as Zhang Yang flew into their range of aggro. They began to chase after Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang fluttered with his pair of wings in the air as he soared through the air. Although the Treasure Cove was quite vast, however, the movement speed of Zhang Yang had increased up by 300% while he is in the state of flying. In less than 5 minutes, he had already arrived at the bottom of the Treasure Cove's second floor. Right after he arrived, he immediately flew back up straight to the entrance of the stairwell at a high speed, with an entire army of monsters tailing him very closely!

Boom!

Zhang Yang landed on his feet and took off the cloak, and then he quickly passed it to Han Ying Xue. Then, he quickly equipped his [Titan Cape] back on and summoned his [Mythical Turtle]. The man and his turtle began to stick themselves in between the narrow entrance of the stairwell, making sure that nothing passed the entrance.

With his blazing speed, the monster army only managed to catch up with Zhang Yang on the entrance of the stairwell after about half a minute. The scene of monsters marching up towards them was really magnificent to look at. What they saw right before them were countless skulls, with their eye sockets lit up with the green flames of spectres. It was really terrifying, to the point that the four ladies felt a tingle on their skulls!

"Get ready!" Zhang Yang had been in battle mode all along, so he was regenerating 2 rage points in every second. By the time he informed everyone to get ready, he had already accumulated 120 rage points. He wielded his shield and sword up and threw out a shot of his {Spear of Obliteration} from afar like he usually did.

"Rawgh!" the Skeleton Ranger that was shot by the attack let out an immediate roar with its jaws wide opened. The width of the opened jaws

was so wide, that the Skeleton Ranger could actually swallow a mature pig whole!

"Argh ---" Wei Yan Er let out a scream, and she humphed at the Skeleton Ranger, "Do you think that you're the only one that knows how to shout?"

Piak! Piak! Piak!

The monster army had finally crashed into them, like a strong tidal wave!

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang wielded his [Sword of the Purging Devourer] across the monsters right before him, inflicting a damage of '-1,030' onto each of them within his attack range! The numerical numbers were so dense! The higher the number of monsters there are, the more packed the monsters were in one spot, and the more effective the {Blast Wave} would be! Because this skill could penetrate and spread across all the monsters within the attack range, all the monsters within the attack range would have to suffer the damage inflicted by Zhang Yang!

This skill had struck at least 50 monsters, and the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] would of course be triggered without mercy! Another wave of damage was inflicted across the monsters within Zhang Yang's attack range, again and again!

In just a brief 5-seconds, the damage of {Blast Wave} was repeated for 7 times, inflicting a total of at least 360,000 damage points upon the monster army! Although this amount of damage value did not really mean a lot when it is done onto the Skeleton Rangers, Zhang Yang's DPS had already reached a terrifying height for the moment!

"This is really a god-like AOE weapon!" the four ladies were feeling envious over the sword that Zhang Yang wielded, especially Daffodil Daydream!

Daffodil Daydream had an AOE skill called {Hellrain}, inflicting damage upon all enemies in a 10x10 meter square. Although the {Hellfire} did not have a penetration attribute, it rained down hellfire onto the monsters,

straight from the heaven! No monsters could escape that! Undoubtedly, if she got her hands on a fine weapon like Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer], then her AOE attacks would become insanely powerful!

Zhang Yang was being disgusted, over and over again. As the number of Skeleton Rangers was too many, and with the monsters from behind consistently pushing the monsters at the front further up, some of the skulls of the monsters came into contact with Zhang Yang!

Seeing Zhang Yang's face squeezed against the skulls of the monsters, Wei Yan Er actually laughed out loud without any remorse! As she was laughing, she stood on top of Turtle and began her assault towards the army of skeleton monsters. Sun Xin Yu had also clambered up the Turtle and had activated her {Fan of Blades}.

The monsters in the game would never attempt to get onto the [Mythical Turtle] like how the two ladies did. So, they rounded up on Turtle from all directions and began their assaults. This was the difference between a player and a monster. On the contrary, if the monsters were as clever as the players, then there would be no telling who the players were and who the monsters were, already!

"Haha! Eat my cannons to the heavens! And my thunder strikes across the earth! I shall be the only one that is puffed with all glory in all directions!" Wei Yan Er was giggling as she slashed up the monsters.

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang took a peek at Wei Yan Er, with a face filled with bad intention.

The little girl was sharp, and instantly sensed it, so she asked, "Noob tank! What are you looking at!"

"I think you are trying to be like the maiden of the Heavenly Mountain2, aren't you!"

"Oh! Are you just beginning to realize that both of us are pretty ladies then? Haha!" Wei Yan Er proudly proclaimed!

"Well, I didn't feel that way actually. All I see is that you two are the type of girls who have not fully 'developed' yet! But, the maiden of the

Heavenly Mountain was framed by one of her fellow sister apprentices. So, who framed you? Sigh. I can't tell your front from your back!" Zhang Yang could not hold his laughter anymore as he finished his sentence.

"Noob tank! You're as good as dead! Rawgh!" Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with a ghastly face.

"Silly Yu! Please don't always bully little Yan Er! Grow up, man! You're not a little boy anymore, so stop bullying little girl!" Han Ying Xue stepped up for Wei Yan Er.

"Wah! I'm not a little girl anymore! I'm already 18 years old! 18! I'm a big girl now!" Wei Yan Er was enraged, "It's all just because you have more meat on your chest! What's there to be proud about?!"

Although the number of monsters was very high, they could not break through the defense line of Zhang Yang and Turtle, they could only stand at the blockaded entrance and let out their roars at Zhang Yang and his party members. The monster could only stand there, waiting for their health bar to be emptied out and collapse onto the ground. Each monsters only had a total of 500,000 health points, with 5 of them acting on slaying the monsters, each of them only needed to take out 100,000 health points to carry out their parts!

The experience points are acquired was definitely increasing, like a rocket shooting up. Every few minutes, with more monsters collapsing down to the ground one after another, the experience bars of Zhang Yang and his party members were progressing so rapidly that even the naked eye could see the bar visibly going up! If One Sword Stroke and other opponents of the Lone Desert Smoke could see how much experience points they were getting from killing this monster army, they would surely be envious!

After battling for a full 2-hours, the monsters on the second floor were completely being wiped out! Zhang Yang and the ladies sat down on the ground, exhausted. Right before them were countless dead skeleton rangers piled up all across the ground. Some of the monsters that died in the early battle had already been removed from sight by the system!

Other than Zhang Yang, the four ladies had leveled up once. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang only had about 10% left in his bar before he hits Level 98! His experience bar showed it all!

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel shocked and excited at the same time. If the next 3 floors of the Treasure Cove also had this amount of monsters for them to slay, then he might have the chance to level up past Level 100! If that happened, would he be kicked out of the realm by the system?

TL Notes:

1. Maiden of the Heavenly Mountain - a maiden in the story of 'The Dragon Chronicles - The Maidens of Heavenly Mountain'. This maiden was betrayed by her own fellow female apprentice who she trusted the most. Then she became obsessed with becoming the best in the world.

Chapter 449: The Third Prince, Marlin Frodo

As the dead bodies of the monsters were far too vast, all five of them were involved in picking up all the loot on the ground. But, although the monsters in this area were harder to deal with, the loot that was left behind after they died were considerably good. Or, one should say that the loots that are dropped in this area were a little more mediocre. Well, these monsters were all elite grade, after all.

The only problem was that, Zhang Yang and his party members were being pampered too well by the monsters out there. They would feel uncomfortable or unhappy if the monsters they slew did not drop any equipment. It was a dissonance of standards!

As time was a pressing matter, Zhang Yang and the ladies could only pick up the valuable loot from the ground. As for the coins and cloth, they just left them all on the ground. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had to bear the 'pain' of seeing the coins being left behind to the point that their faces were twitching all the way as they were leaving! They kept on looking back with their reluctant faces!

The movement speed of using two legs to walk was definitely incomparable to the movement speed of flying with two wings. The party took about 30 minutes to arrive at the bottom-most area of this floor. The main reason being, there were still some 'leftover' monsters intercepting them as they were on their way, and that had delayed some of their time. If it weren't for those monsters, they could have arrived at the place about 10 minutes earlier.

The boss that is guarding this floor is a man with a macho and large body. Unlike Ludovic, who came out as a statue in the first place, this boss held a golden sword, while sitting still on the throne. With one of his hand pressed on his forehead, it seemed like the boss was in deep thought.

[The Third Prince, Marlin Frodo] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

"Haha! So the young and the old are all out now!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud, wielding her giant axe and stated, "Come, let us slay him already!"

Encountering a boss without any information or description on him, the only thing that any player could do is to charge in and engage the boss directly, only then would the players slowly experience and understand the skills and the move sets of the boss. Players would be required to battle while they do some research on which tactics would be more suitable to be implemented on the boss.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Alright, let's do this!"

With his sword and shield ready in his hands, Zhang Yang charged towards the boss with large steps as he shouted, "This is a robbery! Give me your money and your beautiful ladies!"

Marlin Frodo was enraged by Zhang Yang's words. He stood up from his throne with anger, and his eyes were ignited with flames right in the middle, burning bright in the air. He reached out and launched a powerful attack at Zhang Yang. With both his shield and his sword ready in his hands, Marlin Frodo let out a thunderous roar and began to charge at Zhang Yang. From afar, the boss had already thrown a shot of {Spear of Obliteration} over at Zhang Yang!

‘-17,094!’

‘-4,976!’

It happened almost at the same instance. Zhang Yang had also thrown a shot of his own {Spear of Obliteration} over at the boss. However, the attack power of both sides were obviously different by a few notches! The difference was about 3 times! Although Marlin Frodo had a shield in his hand and looks like the Guardian type class, his attack was as powerful as the attack of a two-handed boss! This was totally insane!

Zhang Yang was cursing deep in his heart, as he continued charging.

{Charge}!

{Charge}!

The two of them charged and clashed epicly into each other, but the boss seemed to have an immunity against status restriction effects! Although the boss was struck in the face by the {Charge}, he wasn't stunned at all. Right after {Charge}, the boss already swung his sword at Zhang Yang.

It was fortunate, that Zhang Yang had [Heart of the Death Knight] that reduced the status restriction effect by 50%. So, Zhang Yang was only stunned for 0.5 seconds before he recovered! Right after that, he immediately swung his sword and began to fight back.

After Zhang Yang had succeeded in hooking the boss onto him, Sun Xin Yu and the remaining party members immediately took action and began their assaults on the boss. The battle was set ablaze in just an instant!

Marlin Frodo was a standard Guardian, so he had all standard skills that a Guardian should have. Just like Zhang Yang and other Guardian class players, this boss also had skills like {Block}, {Shield Bash},{Thunder Strike} and a variety of other skills as well! But of course, the intelligence of the boss AI wasn't very high. The boss would directly use {Block} whenever the cool down period of the skill was over. The boss never took the nature of the attacks on him into consideration.

However, the impact of the {Shield Bash} was so much more ferocious than expected. One single bash of his {Shield Bash} could inflict a damage of 15,000 points on Zhang Yang! Furthermore, the boss really loved to bash his shield to the left and right of Zhang Yang's face. Zhang Yang's face was being bashed up really badly to the point that others could see purplish and greenish bruises being 'imprinted' all over his face! Zhang Yang looked really disfigured at that point!

Similar to the first boss, Marlin Frodo also knew to use 'Supporting Attacks'. However, he did not use his legs to do it, and instead, he used his shield to do it! Even though he wasn't using {Shield Bash}, he could still

bash his shield straight onto Zhang Yang's face, and he looked like he was deliberately going for his face! Fortunately, Zhang Yang could still dodge all the attacks that weren't direct, so he wasn't exactly being raped by the boss.

Seeing Zhang Yang so troubled, Wei Yan Er felt a rush on her chest, and she could not help herself from laughing, "Hahaha! What an unfortunate event! I forgot to bring a mirror to show noob tank how 'awesome' his face looks, now! I believe, he might even be 'surprised' by his 'handsome' looks now!"

The other 3 ladies could not help laughing either. Although Zhang Yang could evade all the boss's 'Supporting Attacks', but the impact of the {Shield Bash} were unblockable. So, after being bashed up on his face a couple of times, he looked like a pig head, literally!

As Zhang Yang's entire face, including his mouth was swollen to the point that he could not even speak properly, "Yo leddle picoff gal (You little piece of girl)!"

"Yo! Yo leddle picoff gal!" Wei Yan Er tried to mimic Zhang Yang's words and repeated out loud what he had just said. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream burst into laughter while even Sun Xin Yu cracked a slight smile.

Zhang Yang shook his head. The little girl had always been teased and laughed at, now that she got her chance to take her 'revenge', of course she would make the best out of this! So, the best way to handle her now is not to pay any attention to her! This little girl always had a brief period of enthusiasm on everything, so when nobody is paying any attention to her, she would 'cool down' on her own.

Boom!

Marlin Frodo stomped his left foot onto the ground and a surge of white light emanated out from his body, and formed a 30-meter radius bubble. Sparks of visible electricity were surging through, within the spherical area.

'Ding! Marlin Frodo has unleashed a {Thunder Strike}! Inflicts 20,000

Nature Damage to all targets within the effective area in every 2 seconds, lasts for 10 seconds. Reduces 100% movement speed and 50% attack speed of all targets that are hit. Lasts for 15 seconds.'

Reading the description of the system notification, everyone was frowning! Is this still known as a {Thunder Strike}? This was like an upgraded version of the {Thunder Strike} that they really knew!

Without having the need to inform, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had already turned around and had ran like hell. The attack of the boss's {Thunder Strike} was extremely strong and painful, and it had its own movement restriction effects. If they did not run away from the effective range, it would become very dangerous, when they are affected by the movement restriction effect!

Fortunately, although the effect of the boss's {Thunder Strike} was extremely powerful, the effect only kicked in after 2 seconds, leaving enough time for Zhang Yang and the ladies to remove themselves from the effective area of the skill!

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were already standing far from the boss in the first place, so they only had to move a few steps backward to leave the effective area of the boss's skill. But Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had to run like hell. The most unfortunate one was [Mythical Turtle]. It was already slow to begin with! So, Turtle could only cry in anguish.

Although 2 seconds wasn't really that long, as long as players could react in time, then it was enough for players to run for about 30 meters far out. Zhang Yang and the two ladies were quick on their reflexes, so they managed to get into the safe zone without any problems.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

Two seconds later, the entire effective area of the {Thunder Strike} was surging with an electrical pool bolts. The light of the electricity surged through every inch of the effect area, like silver snakes lashing out. The sound of it, was pretty scary!

Zhang Yang used his thoughts to command Turtle, having Turtle

activate its {Turtle Shell Defense}, removing 90% of the damage that the Turtle received.

"What a poor turtle!" Wei Yan Er revealed a compassionate face and said, "Noob tank, I can't believe this! You were looking ugly on the outside, now your insides have matched that! How can you torture your pet like this!"

Zhang Yang quickly ran to a safe spot, and then he turned around and began to launch his assault at Marlin Frodo. The {Thunder Strike} of the boss did not require any control on the part of the boss. For that, the boss began to pursue Zhang Yang right after he saw Zhang Yang running. Zhang Yang engaged the boss as he looked at the little girl and said, "Little girl, are you planning to skip dinner tonight?"

Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue, but became more obedient after that.

"Silly Yu, it would be really great if your {Thunder Strike} could be upgraded to this scale!" Han Ying Xue let out a sigh.

What kind of nonsense is that? Can players learn the skills of bosses? If players could do that, then the PK battles would become chaotic in the future! Any player with a boss skill would slaughter many players just by stomping their feet onto the ground! It would become a battle to see who is faster in activating skills!

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head. After the {Thunder Strike} of the boss had finally ended, Zhang Yang kited Marlin Frodo back to the initial position, allowing the [Mythical Turtle] to join the battle, unleashing its damage output onto the boss.

"Hahaha! Interesting!" Marlin Frodo wasn't like the first, talkative boss. While he was bashing up Zhang Yang's face with his shield, he was also laughing with pride, "For 1,000 years, we have been trapped for 1,000 years! Now, we can finally return to the human realm!"

"Stop daydreaming, dude! The world outside does not belong to you anymore! The Imperial Heaven's Empire that you once knew no longer exists! And you all don't have to be the ghost that stays! You can just die now and get reincarnated! Stop being inhuman and inghost at the same

time, already!" Zhang Yang was really annoyed at being bashed on the face repeatedly.

"It's all the seven traitors' fault!" Marlin Frodo suddenly let out a burst of enraged roar into the sky, "The palace was sealed by the seven traitors! If you can make it here, that means that you must be the sons and daughters of the seven traitors! Hahaha! The seven traitors have already been reduced to dust! So, let me use your blood to make offerings to the gods!"

Marlin Frodo smashed his shield into one of the stone pillars that supports the ceiling of the floor. A loud booming sound spread across the area and the pillar was instantly split into two. In the midst of the dust flying in the air, the pillar came crashing down onto Zhang Yang and the ladies, like an avalanche!

'Ding! Marlin Frodo has unleashed {Debris Crush}!'

Zhang Yang and the ladies quickly scattered into the surroundings, trying to dodge the debris that came at them. But [Mythical Turtle] had short legs, and it could not evade anything at all. So, it could only accept it's fate of being crushed by the debris. Turtle was being crushed into a slosh of mincemeat on the floor, in the matter of seconds! Even though Turtle still had more than 90% of health bar, it was instantly killed by the debris that crushed it, turning it into a stream of white light which later went straight into Zhang Yang's inventory.

Although the boss did not cause any direct damage to Zhang Yang and his party members with his {Debris Crush}, the debris that came crushing down on them were actually much more terrifying!

Marlin Frodo laughed out loud. Instantly, the boss had become a professional demolition man! He began to destroy the pillars that supported the ceiling of the floor! Boom! Boom! Boom! The floor of Treasure Cove was experiencing a level 7 earthquake, the ground was trembling, without any pause!

Zhang Yang tried to kite the boss to a spot where there were no pillars around, but the boss would leave him and went on to find a new pillar to smash on his own. It seemed that the boss would feel uncomfortable if he

did not smash a pillar once in a while! After a few more pillars went down, Zhang Yang came to a realization! "Oh no! Slay the boss! Quickly! Hurry up and slay the boss!"

Daffodil Daydream had also realized it all of a sudden, "When the boss smashes every single pillar on this floor, the entire Floor 1 will collapse on us, and we shall all be dead!"

The debris of one pillar could already kill the [Mythical Turtle], a pet as strong as a tank, almost instantly! If this entire Floor 1 collapsed on them, then all five of them would only have one way out of this, death! Therefore, the boss seemed easy to take on. Although the {Thunder Strike} of the boss was a little troublesome to deal with, that was not the difficult part of battling this boss, so it seemed! If the developer of the game had placed a time limit on this boss, meaning that the players needed to kill the boss within a certain time frame, or things would get really difficult!

There was a total of 36 stone pillars in the entire Floor 2, and 11 pillars had been smashed down. That being said, Zhang Yang and the ladies were only left with two third of the time to slay the boss. But, Marlin Frodo still had 75% of his health bar left! Judging from the total DPS of Zhang Yang and the ladies, it would be impossible for them to kill the boss within the time frame!

Zhang Yang quickly looked into his inventory and took out every single scroll that could improve their damage output efficiency. Even Han Ying Xue had to pick a suitable time to cast her {Putrefying Poison} whenever she could! All of them put in their best efforts to bring up their damage output efficiency, increasing their fire power to the max!

"1,000 years ago, we have conquered the entire land. So 1,000 years later, this land still belongs to us!" Marlin Frodo roared out at the sky, revealing the golden hair beneath his helmet. He looked like a mad demon with his blonde, long hair moving across the air, even though there was no wind at all.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The stone pillars were smashed down one after another, and dust filled

the air, as countless debris crumbled down upon the ground. The entire area of the floor was shaking violently, as if the floor would collapse down on them, anytime soon!

If this was reality, then Zhang Yang and the ladies would have ran as far as possible from the floor. Who would actually stay and fight, knowing that the entire floor above it is about to collapse down on you! But there was no need to consider about any architecture or physics when you are in a game. As long as the time is not up, no matter how shaky or tremor-riddled the entire area was, the place would not collapse!

18 pillars, 14 pillars, 9 pillars... the number of remaining pillars was getting smaller and smaller, by the minutes!

20%! The health bar of Marlin Frodo had finally entered the 'Slaughter Stage'!

Zhang Yang gulped down a [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and said, "Time to use our {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! There's no need to hold back, anymore!"

In just an instant, the fire power of the entire party suddenly soared up crazily! Their DPS got so high, that even the boss was crying in pain! 10 seconds later, they had brought down the health bar of the boss down to only 5%!

"I'll admit that I have underestimated you!" Under the bombardment of their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, the armor on Marlin Frodo had shattered so extensively, that Zhang Yang and the ladies could see the skeletal ribcage of the boss, beneath the armor. That was the moment when the boss became even more mad and kept bashing on Zhang Yang's face even more violently with his shield!

4%, 3%!

"Hahaha! We don't have to call for delivery tonight! As long as we cut off noob tank's head off to make some stew, then we shall have a nice and tasty pot of pork soup!" Wei Yan Er was slashing up the boss with her giant axe as she laughed madly.

Boom! Boom!

Another two stone pillars collapsed! And now, there were only 3 pillars left on this floor!

"Quickly! Faster!" Zhang Yang had no time to handle the little girl. Although the boss was only left with 270,000 health points, only 3 pillars remained. Furthermore, the boss had already been left with 20% of its health bar, so the rate of the pillars being broken down would increase!

2%!

Boom!

Another stone pillar crumpled onto the ground. Marlin Frodo began to laugh madly, "I shall bury you all alive!"

1%!

Boom! The final second stone pillar was also smashed to pieces and collapsed down to the ground. And now, the entire floor was supported by one final stone pillar, barely! Zhang Yang and the ladies could see that the ceiling of the floor was shaking violently, as if it would collapse at any time!

"A little more faster!"

"F*ck the boss up!"

"Only 70,000 health points left!"

The five of them were shouting encouragements to each other. They were working their asses off, until their eyes had turned red!

50,000! 30,000! 10,000!

Marlin Frodo charged up to the final pillar in the entire floor and he raised up his shield! He then slammed his shield straight into the final pillar!

Slaughter time!

‘-18,924!’

Zhang Yang swung out his final hit onto the boss with everything that

he had!

"Argh ---" Marlin Frodo instantly let out a miserable scream. The shield in his hand made contact with the pillar, but there was no sign of strength in that hit, at all!

Boom!

The boss collapsed against the final pillar on the entire floor, sliding down onto the ground in a very slow manner, lifeless!

Chapter 450: Recovery Aura

Phew!

The moment the boss was slain, the five of them swayed weakly on their feet, and they sat onto the ground without a care about their unflattering positions. They could only spare the energy to breathe heavily!

That was really close!

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder if he did not have {Alchemist's Intuition}, which allowed him to make potions with the highest level of transmutation to boost the firepower of his party up by 10% to 20%, would they still have made it? Furthermore, all of them had the super skill - {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and they had 3 Aura Skills to boost them. Still, they had barely made it, after having all these perks!

It would not be far-fetched to say, that even among all eight main servers of the game, Zhang Yang and his party would still remain as the strongest party there is in the entire game! They were on the brink of tasting defeat when victory was within reach! Well, how many parties could actually clear this boss?

This was just the second floor of the Treasure Cove! God knows what kind of crazy powerful bosses lay in wait, in the 3 floors below!

Wei Yan Er always got agitated with excitement, whenever it was time to pick up loot. She just sat there for a brief while, before regaining her bubbly energy, going on to pick up the loot dropped by the boss.

[Raging Sand Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +168

Strength: +67

Agility: +151

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effects by 2%.

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 500 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"Wow, this little thing is awesome!" Zhang Yang nodded. Level 100 was the hard bracket of another level of difficulty in the game. So, whether it be in term of skills, the toughness of the monsters or the attributes of equipment, there would definitely be a groundbreaking difference. Although Yellow-Gold tier equipment did have additional attributes on them, all these additional attributes were not in terms of percentages, just figurative values.

However, no matter how awesome a Yellow-Gold equipment was, it was still a mere Yellow-Gold tier equipment. It was definitely not comparable to Violet-Platinum Tier equipment --- unless the level of the equipment differed too much. Sun Xin Yu had a Level 90 pair of leather gloves, so of course she would not be interested over these [Raging Sand Gloves]. So, she passed this pair of gloves straight to Zhang Yang and Zhang Yang kept it into his inventory.

"Hmm, an awesome pair of gloves like, this can get us at least tens of thousands of dollars!" Daffodil Daydream nodded and said.

Wei Yan Er was thrilled, and she clapped her hands with joy, "Yea! I would finally have enough money to buy that set of limited edition perfume!"

Ever since the Silky Soft Holdings was struck by the sh*tstorm, the two ladies of the company had been throwing their own money into the company to keep it running. Though they had already spent almost all of their money, they could not get enough to do it. That was why they asked Zhang Yang to invest, later on. Although the current Silky Soft Holdings was showing much promise and a certain depth of potential, the two ladies were not employed by the company to work and earn salaries, so they could only wait for the dividends to come during the end of the year. That was why these two ladies had almost dried their wallets up. If they had not been earning some 'pocket money' from the game, they surely

would have been forced to sell their bodies to Zhang Yang, just to get a good meal.

Wei Yan Er took her own sweet time in searching over the loot, and she finally picked up a longbow that glittered gold. The body of the longbow was magnificent, by the looks of it. There were countless engravings of animals crafted over the body of the longbow, and the bowstring is made of a crimson red, elastic material. Only God knows what that bowstring is made of.

[Nabula's Boar Hunter] (Yellow-Gold, Bow)

Attack: 1,313 - 1,913

Attack Interval: 3.6 seconds

DPS: 448

Equip: Increase your range attack by 5%.

Equip: Additional 5% damage to beast targets only.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Note: According to legend, Nabula was squatting at one side feeling bored, so he picked off the edge of a section of the branches from a tree and used it as the body of a bow, and he made the bowstring with the belt on his pants.

Han Ying Xue was initially fidgeting with the bowstring, but when she saw the note by the end of the bow's description, she immediately let out a squeak and threw the longbow to the ground, as if she was afraid that there was unclean 'stuff' left on the bowstring.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud when he saw how she reacted. As everyone decided to give up on the bow, Zhang Yang picked it up and kept it in his inventory.

Wei Yan Er did not stop there, she went on and picked up another jade-like necklace that radiated in a violet light. She then posted the description of the item on the party channel.

[Violet-Platinum Jade Necklace]

Vitality: +176

Intelligence: +116

Spirit: +116

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effects by 3%.

Equip: Increases your critical rate by 1%.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana points by 300 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"This is just beautiful!" Wei Yan Er put the necklace around her own neck, and she kept turning left and right, trying to show how good she looked with the necklace around her neck. This little girl was already a vibrant pretty little girl. So when she put on the necklace around her neck, she looked even more beautiful and young. Even though Zhang Yang had been soaking his eyes with the images of pretty ladies all around him, he was still amazed by the looks of the little girl.

"Your eyes are going to fall off if you keep on staring." Han Ying Xue humphed coldly as she glared at Zhang Yang's lower part of his body without a clear sense of purpose. Zhang Yang could actually feel the murderous intent coming from the direction of Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang could not help but recall the way Han Ying Xue had bitten into the banana without mercy. He felt a chill down his spine as the image was brought up from the depths of his mind. He quickly sent a private message over to Han Ying Xue, "You're jealous of a little girl? Shame on you!"

"Humph! Men are unreliable! Didn't you say that you wanted to 'earn honor' for your country by hooking up with a foreign babe?" Han Ying Xue replied, with a tone filled with jealousy.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel a slight sense of embarrassment. He had not expected that there were so many pairs of ears hidden behind

walls. Obviously, the words that he said about 'win honor' for his country, had already spread like wildfire, in the entire China server! He shook his head in shame and said, "I thought about it, but there are no foreign babes for me to win over!"

"You son of a b*tch!" Han Ying Xue humphed.

The two ladies of Magic Class had their very own necklaces of their Class type Armor Set. Since Han Ying Xue wanted to keep 3 pieces of her Armor Set equipment on her so that her Armor Set effect would kick in, she gave the [Violet-Platinum Jade Necklace] to Daffodil Daydream. Daffodil Daydream only had two Armor Set equipment, so she couldn't activate the Armor Set effect, even if she wanted to. It was natural for her to get more powerful equipment first before she could collect other pieces of her Armor Set.

Wei Yan Er reached out for the loot, and she actually picked up another good item! A Skill Book!

[Skill Book: Recovery Aura]

Equip: Teaches you the skill {Recovery Aura}.

Required Level: 90

"Aura? As in Aura Skill?" The five of them lit up in excitement.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, and he said, "Daffodil, Ice Queen, the two of you, discuss and decide on who should have this skill. Either one of you should have it."

Since everyone in the party would have the chance to enjoy the effects of the Aura Skill, along with the fact that a player was limited to activating only one Aura at a time, it was better if more players on the same party had Aura Skills of their own. That way, all players would be able to activate their own Aura Skills at the same time and boost the entire party.

After the two pretty ladies discussed at length, Daffodil Daydream was the one who got the Skill Book. After she learned the skill, she posted the description of the Aura Skill effect onto the party channel.

[Recovery Aura] (Level 1): Recovers 100 health points and 30 mana points of all party members within the effective range of the Recovery Aura in every 3 seconds. The range of effective area: 30-meter radius circular area, with the user as the center point. The effect will last until the user is dead, or the effect vanishes automatically. You can only activate one Aura Skill at the same time.

This Aura Skill was very good indeed. Not only could it recover health points but also can recover mana points. This skill would definitely be beneficial to the players when it came to a lengthy battle. Although 30 points and 100 points weren't really that significant, but this was just the effect of a Level 1 {Recovery Aura}. When the level of this skill is increased, the effect will definitely become much stronger.

Lastly, Marlin Frodo had also given them the second piece of the [Middle-tier Aura Stone]. This time, Zhang Yang was lucky. He won the dice throwing and got the piece of [Middle-tier Aura Stone] to level up his {Strength Aura} to Level 5. Now, he can boost the vitality of all his party members by an additional 20%!

At that moment, they had already left the location where they battled the boss. They were carefully looking up at the ceiling on top of their heads, fearful that it might just collapse on their heads at any time! Deep in their hearts, they knew that it was just a visual effect, but those effects were just too convincing!

The five of them arrived at the location of the throne. However, none of them could locate the entrance that led to the third floor of the Treasure Cove!

Wei Yan Er got impatient as everyone looked up and down for the entrance, so she kicked the throne with brute force. Her kick was so powerful that the golden throne gave off a sound of 'Qiang!,' and vibrated for a brief second.

Zhang Yang turned his head over and took a look at the direction where the sound came from, and then he began to laugh out loud, "Little girl, you really did a great job this time! You actually found the entrance for us all!"

Wei Yan Er was stunned for a brief moment, and she did not know what to say for the moment. But her face was really thick, so she laughed out loud as well and said, "I'm so clever, nothing can stump me!"

At the same time, the three ladies walked up to the two of them. Zhang Yang reached out for the golden throne and pushed it with brute force. The throne only moved a little, and then it was once again stuck firmly on the ground.

The little girl just only realized it and said, "So, the passage is hidden below the throne!" She immediately realized her Freudian slip, so she quickly acted busy and used her two small hands to cover her mouth, acting away stealthily as she could.

"Little girl, your strength is the highest here, come quickly and help me!" Zhang Yang said.

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream are Magic Class players, and their equipment were more focused on adding their Intelligence and Spirit attribute points. So the strength of both of them added up together were minuscule, compared to Zhang Yang's Strength! Sun Xin Yu had Agility set as the main attribute, so her Strength was limited as well. Even if these three ladies tried to help, they could not do anything as well.

Wei Yan Er was different, because her Strength attribute was even higher than Zhang Yang, after equipping her equipment. Her Strength alone was almost equal to the sum of Zhang Yang and the three ladies combined!

The little girl rolled up her sleeves a little and walked up to Zhang Yang. She stood firmly by the side of Zhang Yang and placed her hands on the throne.

"One, two, three! One, two, three!" The two of them worked together and they managed to move the throne. As the throne constantly trembled while being pushed away, the width of the entrance was growing wider and wider, and finally, the throne was pushed aside.

Rumble! Boom!

The throne rolled across the ground for a while and stopped, and the spot where the throne was placed revealed a passage that led deeper into the Treasure Cove.

"Haha! What a loser, noob tank! Your Strength is not as good as mine! Sigh, I can't help but suspect if you are actually a man?" Wei Yan Er teased while she was shrugging.

Zhang Yang frowned as he turned his head around and looked at Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue felt baffled as she realized Zhang Yang was staring at her, so she said, "Silly Yu, why are you staring at me like that?"

Zhang Yang switched to the private chat with Han Ying Xue and said, "Little girl is suspecting whether I'm a man or not, so I'm thinking about how I should prove it to her! Haha!"

Han Ying Xue knew exactly what Zhang Yang meant, so she instantly blushed and scolded, "You perverted hoodlum!"

The five of them entered the passage and went down the dark passage. After a few turns of walking down the stairs, they arrived at the third floor of the Treasure Cove.

The floor seemed similar to the second floor. But, the number of monsters wandering about in the area was not as many as the number of monsters on the second floor. Furthermore, the monsters weren't skeleton soldiers anymore, they were maids, complete with frills and aprons. Of course, these maids were basically well-dressed, walking skeletons, without any trace of flesh on their bones remaining. The only item that had not completely 'decomposed' was their palace attire, which indicated that they used to be glamorous, pretty women when they still breathed.

[Gentle Palace Maid]

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

"Silly Yu, let's 'do' this!" Han Ying Xue put a {Holy Shield} on Zhang Yang. She had uttered 'do' in such a suggestive manner that nobody would have missed it.

That witch! She's trying to make things complicated again!

Zhang Yang gave himself into the temptation and pulled out his sword, and charged at one of the maids.

Chapter 451: Take Both When You Can!

Although the name - Gentle Palace Maid had the word 'gentle' in there, these maids were anything but that! After being struck by the {Spear of Obliteration}, the maid immediately let out a deafening screech. Her mouth was large enough to swallow Zhang Yang's head whole!

The monster leaped towards Zhang Yang like a frog, similar to how those swordsmen in wire-fu wuxia films glided through the air! However, those swordsmen in the movies had soft, graceful landings. They could even stand on leaves and branches of the trees! But on the contrary, this so-called Gentle Palace Maid landed heavily, and the impact was so strong that the thick solid tiles beneath their feet cracked open!

Zhang Yang laughed, and then he said, "This 'gentle' monster should go and cut off some weight!"

"She has no flesh left, what is there to cut off?!"

"Throwing away a few bones and joints might do the trick just fine!"

The ladies began to tease the monsters like how Zhang Yang did it. They were giggling gleefully.

"Rawgh!" the Gentle Palace Maiden let out another screech and waved her 'soft' hands over, trying to choke Zhang Yang's neck!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield to engage, and bam! The claws of the monster were repelled! Two seconds after the attack, this monster raised her leg at high speed and kicked at the forbidden zone between Zhang Yang's thighs!

The elite monster's regular attacks were not as fast as the attack of a boss. So, Zhang Yang managed to react immediately before it was too late, and by turning around quickly, he evaded the 'definitive' attack of the boss by less than an inch!

Han Ying Xue giggled hard and she said, "Only if you dodged it a little slower, you would have become the legendary leader of the swordsmen in the movie, 'The Legend of the Swordsman1'!"

"But, cousin sister, you're the one at a loss if that really happens!"

Han Ying Xue blushed on the spot.

After putting a lot of effort into the battle, Zhang Yang and the ladies finally took down the monster. Daffodil Daydream could not help but to say, "Fortunate for us, the elite monsters outside this area aren't this strong."

"And also, thanks to Silly Yu for tanking it for us. If other tankers were tanking it for us, I think we would have really suffered!" Han Ying Xue nodded to express her agreement on this.

The party proceeded and cleared all the monsters along their way. But as they progressed halfway across the floor, the "Banishment" effect kicked in, as the final second of the clock struck, kicking the five of them, one after another out of the Treasure Cove.

At first, Wei Yan Er wanted to use the [Dimensional Key] to return to the Treasure Cove immediately right after they were kicked out from the realm, and clear out the remaining 3 floors of the Treasure Cove! But her suggestion was shot down by the other 4 members of the party. Although 12 hours in the in-game time is equivalent to 4 hours in real time, they had already played the game for the whole day, and now, it was almost dinner time already. It would be wiser to make sure that everyone is well fed before they continue the game, without having the need to worry about dinner as they engage the bosses in the later stages.

Since that the monsters do not respawn, they could reenter the realm and continue where they left off at anytime they want --- of course, the one absolute condition for them was that none of them could surpass Level 100 before they clear the Treasure Cove!

The little girl was trying to beg Zhang Yang to prepare dinner, as she really liked to eat his cooking. After she persuaded him with soft and gentle words for a long time, Zhang Yang had finally relented and agreed to cook for her. He realized that some supplies were running low, so he had to go to the supermarket with Han Ying Xue to restock.

The two of them got at the supermarket as swiftly as they could. As they

only wanted to buy some seasoning ingredients, they did not take any shopping carts along as they planned for a quick grab and go. That was the initial plan, to search for the things they want, and grab them and go. However, Han Ying Xue became sidetrack by her cravings for junk food. She scooped up lots of junk food from her left and right, and shoved them over to Zhang Yang's arms. Zhang Yang could barely see anything in front of him, as the packets of junk food had piled up so high that they blocked his entire front view.

They were already halfway through their shopping trip, so it was not worth the effort for them to go all the way back just to get a shopping cart. Coincidentally, a 7-year-old boy came by, pushing a shopping cart. Han Ying Xue quickly stopped the boy. She took one packet of junk food from Zhang Yang's arm and beamed at the little boy with her angelic face, "Hey there, kid. I've got something yummy here, wanna trade your cart for it?"

"Okay!" The little boy agreed on the terms with excitement. Licking his lips, the little boy snatched the packet of junk food, as he was worried that the two strangers might suddenly turn their backs on the deal. After getting what he wanted, he left the trolley with Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang and vanished very quickly.

Han Ying Xue turned around and grinned at Zhang Yang, with the beauty and slyness of a fox.

Zhang Yang shook his head helplessly as he started transferring the goods into the shopping cart, "You really are a witch... you even tricked a child!"

The two of them continued to walk across the corners of the supermarket, and finally, they got everything that Zhang Yang needed. But after they made the payment, Han Ying Xue insisted on dragging him over to the undergarment department!

Zhang Yang frowned, his temple moist with sweat as he tried to dissuade her, "You run an undergarment company, and you're worried about having not enough bra and panties to wear? Also, this is a mall, do you expect to find products of the same quality, they might damage your

skin! That's a lot to lose!"

"Sigh! I'm poor now, so I have to save up as much as I can!" as Han Ying Xue saw the dismayed face of Zhang Yang, she pursed her lips and whispered gently into Zhang Yang's ears, "Oh, and I shall consult you after I try them on!"

Zhang Yang suddenly felt a rush that shot straight up into his brain as the boiling blood gushed up in between of his nose. Blood threatened to spurt out of his nostrils! He found himself nodding before he knew anything else.

However, the moment he stepped into the department, Zhang Yang immediately started regretting it. Almost all of the people around him were women. Even though some of them brought along their husbands and boyfriends, the men were standing outside the borders, waiting for their women. He was the only one who had actually ventured into the dangerous territory!

An auntie was holding up a large size bra as they walked by. She looked at Han Ying Xue and turned to Zhang Yang, giving him a thumbs up while saying, "Young man, your lady is fine and beautiful!"

Han Ying Xue was overjoyed, and she quickly took one packet of the junk food from the trolley cart and 'generously' gave it to the auntie, "How nice of you, auntie! This is for you!"

Zhang Yang and the auntie both stared incredulously. The witch was really acting as if the supermarket belonged to her! She's actually handing out 'gifts' to other people, not having paid for them yet, as if she was doing charity!

Han Ying Xue only took a look around, not even buying anything from the place. Zhang Yang frowned in annoyance, "You witch! You tricked me!" Han Ying Xue flashed him a flirtatious smile and said, "Well, people have said it before, to know if a man loves his woman or not, all you need to do is to see whether the man is willing to accompany you, while you go around buying your lady products!"

The two of them walked back home after that. Zhang Yang went straight

into the kitchen, as the 'Chef' was his role in the house. In just a brief moment of time, he was done cooking. He placed all his delicious dishes on the table, and the four ladies could not stop praising him after they tasted the dishes.

After having their dinner, the four ladies started having a game of 'scissors, paper, stone,' to decide who should be the one washing the dishes. By the end of it, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were that ones in charge in washing up the dishes and utensils. This rule is actually a house rule that Zhang Yang had set up after going through a lot of hardship. He had made it clear that he would be in charge for cooking all sorts of good food for them, however, the responsibility to clean the dishes would belong to the four ladies. How they chose to do it did not matter to him.

After returning back to his room, Zhang Yang was just about to put his game helmet up, when he heard a gentle knock on his door. He put down the game helmet and walked up to the door. Han Ying Xue stood by the door, posing in such a seductive manner that could only have been equaled by Jessica Rabbit. As soon as the door was opened, she invited herself in.

"Yes! Come in!" Zhang Yang resignedly looked at her rear, shrugging, as she walked past him and strutted into his room.

As annoying and as befuddling as she was, she had one heck of a figure. Her waist had the perfect curves and slenderness, while her round *ss perkily displayed themselves as she took each step. It was a such an irresistible sight.

"It's about time to gather around in the game, what are you doing in my room?!" Zhang Yang was annoyed and slightly cross, for he was really tired of this witch's ambiguous teasings.

Han Ying Xue smiled flirtatiously and said, "I got some new bras on, I was hoping to seek your opinion on them!"

Instantly, his nose heated up, and something thick and red threatened to leak out! He forced the thoughts away and snapped, "Witchy Snow! This is your final warning! Please stop playing with fire, if you really light me up, I

might just take you, right here, right now!"

"Who's the pussy now! Come at me!" Han Ying Xue stood defiantly, like a fearless pig, unflinching in the face of boiling water.

Zhang Yang took a large step towards her and pulled the delicate creature into his arms, and then he said, "You better not regret this!"

Han Ying Xue put her hands around Zhang Yang and hugged him strongly, and started nuzzling against Zhang Yang's chest and said, "You really are stupid, why do I have to make the first move every time!"

Zhang Yang was shocked. This was not a topic he was prepared to discuss. It wasn't because he did not dare take the initiative to act, but because his heart had been in turmoil for the longest period of time! He had no clue about his feelings for the two women who had already confessed to him! Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had already occupied a certain level of importance within his heart. Before he actually finds clarity on whom he really loves, Zhang Yang did not intend to do something that he might regret doing in the future.

"Are you thinking of that woman? That sow?" Han Ying Xue felt it immediately.

Zhang Yang did not intend to lie to her, so he nodded.

"Don't you dare think of other women when you're clinging on to me like that!" Han Ying Xue was enraged.

Her soft plush and warmth in his arms, Zhang Yang could not help but begin acting. He was a normal man, his arms would not remain static, of course, they would start wandering about! He then shifted his thoughts over to the men of the ancient times, where a man could have up to 3 to 4 wives at the same time! Didn't he have high standards of his own? He would be much pleased if he could have one girl on each arm!

Since he was definitely reacting positively to both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, and they liked him as well, what was the point of twisting himself up, wrestling with himself on rejecting one of them! Why choose only one, when he could have both!

"I only want one on my left and another one on my right, people can't categorize me as a pervert, I guess." Zhang Yang tried to justify himself, as his hands buried themselves within the prideful pair of mounds that defined Han Ying Xue. It has been quite a while since his hands had 'traversed' this pair of mountainous boobies!

The abundant, fulfilling sensation of having his palms sink into such luscious melons, while having their elasticity wrap themselves around his fingers was heavenly! Zhang Yang could not hold himself back, giving in to his basic instincts, almost howling like a wolf! He could not stop his hands from kneading the dough!

"Alright. The time of counseling is over!" Han Ying Xue's eyes were very watery, her face was flushed red, like the deep crimson of a tomato, biting on her succinct lips. She summoned all her remaining strength and pushed Zhang Yang away. Their mutual attraction was unmistakable. If things got any more heated, they might go all the way and end up together on the bed.

Zhang Yang grinned and pointed down at a certain something and said, "Bloody Witch. Look what you've done. Are you seriously going to leave me like that? You really need to take responsibility for this."

Han Ying Xue looked at him and then gazed down at the impressive bulge. She blushed even deeply, and muttered, "So, what do you want me to do about that?"

Zhang Yang grinned with evil intent and whispered into her ear.

"You pervert." Han Ying Xue looked at Zhang Yang with her dazzling eyes as she muttered.

"Then, I should just go to the Ice Queen!"

"No!"

Han Ying Xue let out a huff and said, "Close your eyes!"

"Hehe!"

"Don't laugh!"

...

10 minutes later.

"Are you getting there yet? My hands are getting sore!" Zhang Yang could hear her complaining.

...

20 minutes later.

"You pig! Why aren't you cumming yet!"

...

Half an hour later.

Han Ying Xue slunk out from Zhang Yang's room, her face totally red. She banged into Wei Yan Er who was humming a song while walking back to her room. The little girl gave her a characteristically chirpy hi to Han Ying Xue, which sent her blushing even further. She half-dashed straight back to her room and closed the door shut, without even looking back at the little girl. After the door was snapped shut, the little girl was left at the corridor of the room, with a lot of riddles in her mind, as she blinked her big, round, watery eyes and stared at the door.

After a brief moment, the five of them had met up in the game. Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's eyes met. Both of them were still thinking of the 'bad things' they had just done back in Zhang Yang's room. Zhang Yang felt another heatwave coming his way, while Han Ying Xue merely raised her eyebrows suggestively, which accentuated her 'enchanted' appearance even more.

Sun Xin Yu seemed to realize that something was going on between them, her eyes constantly flitting between their gazes. Something had magnetized their eyes together, and she could see it. She could not help but to emit out a sense of murderous aura.

Zhang Yang activated the [Dimensional Key] once again, and the five of them went into the opened portal, one after another. They then found themselves at the front of the palace once again. The moment they set

foot in the Treasure Cove, a 'Banishment' effect appeared on their HUDs, displaying a time clock which started to count down from 11:59:59.

To save some time, Zhang Yang had asked Han Ying Xue to give him the [Cloak of the Dark Wings]. Then, he flew straight to the third floor and used his [Party Summon Order] to summon all four ladies straight to where he stood.

Chapter 452: The Second Prince Rogalli

It took them about two hours to find themselves standing before the third boss in the Treasure Cove.

However, the boss on this floor was not alone. He had 11 underlings around him!

[The Second Prince Rogalli] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

[Royal Guard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

Rogalli did not have a full set of armor on him, like the 2 bosses that Zhang Yang and his party had previously encountered. Instead, this boss wore a grand, magic robe, embroidered with magical runes in gold thread. Instead of looking like a prince, this boss looked more like a priest from some sort of cult!

Right beside him were his Royal Guards, equipped with full sets of heavy armor. They seemed to be guarding the prince with everything they have.

The five of them stood in stunned silence. It was common for many players to bully one boss in a boss battle. But this time around, the situation is different. Currently, the boss had many powerful underlings with him, 12 to be exact! Furthermore, these underlings were all very powerful and tough! Although these underlings were labeled as elite grade monsters, all of them were as strong as Yellow-Gold bosses! They would be battling one Violet-Platinum boss and 11 Yellow-Gold bosses at the same time! How was it possible?

If Endless Starlight was there with them, then Zhang Yang could let him

go ahead and tank the bosses as he handles the remaining monsters. At his current strength, he could actually handle 11 bosses at the same time, 'manipulating' them with Status Restriction skills, without much trouble, at that --- of course, the monsters had to be vulnerable to Status Restriction skills. Or else, the combined attack of all 11 Yellow-Gold bosses would wipe out anything and anyone in no time! As the system limited entry to only 5 players at a time, Endless Starlight would not be able to join them.

Even if Endless Starlight were to come here, Han Ying Xue could not possibly keep both their rapidly leaking HP bars up at the same time! So, if they were to bring Endless Starlight into Zhang Yang's party, then they would have to swap out another DPS player for a second healer. After that, there would only be one DPS player left in the party. It would take forever to kill these elite monsters, with only one DPS player in the party! Furthermore, two healers would have not enough mana points to heal up two tankers over such a long period of time, even if they had three bars of mana with them!

"So, what do we do now?" the four ladies turned their sights over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts, and said, "Witchy Snow, Little girl, and Daffodil Daydream, you guys, take a few steps back. I will stand right here. Ice Queen will go and lure the monsters! Now, the aggro of these monsters should be linked together. So, Ice Queen, when you go engage with the monsters, all the other monsters will come after you as well. But, these monsters will be coming at you in a predictable order. So, let's do it this way. Kite the monsters over to me, and ensure that only one of the monsters 'sees' me. Then, you can activate your {Vanish} to disengage yourself from the aggro of the monsters. That way, the monster would switch it's aggro onto me instead, and the remaining monsters will run back to their initial positions!"

This is the 'Aggro Swapping' tactic, very practical and effective against multiple underlings of bosses. It was a commonly seen tactic in the Realm of Chaos.

Sun Xin Yu would never react dramatically or use beautiful words, she merely nodded.

Zhang Yang then said, "If Ice Queen succeeds in separating one monster from the rest, then you guys should just do your best! But, if there are too many monsters coming your way, along with the boss, then Ice Queen shall remain in her 'stealth' mode. I shall use my {Shadow of the Void} to stay out of harm's way. The three of you, stay as far away as possible for the moment. Just remember, don't engage with the boss and die for nothing!"

"Understood!" the three ladies started backing off.

"Time to move!" Zhang Yang nodded at Sun Xin Yu, then he whispered to her, "Be careful."

Sun Xin Yu's pretty face flashed a rare moment of joy. She turned around, displaying the graceful view of her back, as she charged to the direction of the boss.

"Protect the prince!"

The aggro range of these Royal Guards spread far and wide, even when Sun Xin Yu was still 20 meters, one of the Royal Guards had already detected her presence and had started roaring thunderously. The Royal Guard immediately raised a metallic boot and started charging towards Sun Xin Yu, his sword flying out of its scabbard.

Upon moving, the 10 remaining monsters, including the boss, started acting up, following the first monster closely.

"The dignity of the royal family must not be tarnished! All intruders shall be eliminated! We shall have it no other way!" Rogalli let out a thunderous voice and raised up an aquamarine staff high into the air, "Warriors! Push forth and crush them!"

"Yes, your highness!"

Streams of dark lights shot out of the staff, and the 11 monsters were engulfed by the dark light. Then, they started bloating up exponentially!

[Crushing Vow]: Immune to all Status Restriction skills, increases damage by 50%, reduces 20% damage received, lasts for 10 minutes!

"What the f*ck!" Zhang Yang could not help but curse out loud! Then he said, "Ice Queen! Don't lure two monsters at a time! These monsters are immune to all sorts of Status Restriction skills! I only have confidence in tanking two of them at most!"

An increment of 50% additional damage on a Yellow-Gold boss would make it as powerful as a Violet-Platinum boss of the same level! Zhang Yang's confidence in doing so showed his power, to be able to tank against two of these monsters at the same time! Zhang Yang had to be the only one in the entire China server who was capable of doing this!

"I'll try my best!" Sun Xin Yu shouted out in the party channel. Just as she got close to Zhang Yang, she activated her {Vanish} as instructed by Zhang Yang, and disappeared.

Groom! Groom! Groom! As the monsters trundled across the ground with their heavy feet, none of the 12 turned back! All of them charged at Zhang Yang as they roared!

What the hell!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shadow of the Void} and fled the battle!

After the battle had ended, Rogalli immediately led his 11 underlings back to their initial positions and took their default stances again.

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu then reappeared and regrouped with the three ladies. The skills - {Shadow of the Void} and {Vanish} have very long cool down period, so they could only wait for the skills to cool down before giving it another try.

Sun Xin Yu could not be faulted, as this was just the first try. Sun Xin Yu needed time to slowly get familiar with the aggro sensitivity of the monsters.

10 minutes later, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu went up for a second attempt, producing more promising results. 'Only' seven monsters

continued to go after Sun Xin Yu, but it was still a failure.

20 minutes later, the two of them began their third attempt at luring the monsters. There was a slight improvement as well on their third attempt! This time, only 3 monsters followed Sun Xin Yu!

Zhang Yang nodded and he could not help but feel impressed, she is really good! With just three attempts and she had already gotten the hang of it!

After half an hour, Sun Xin Yu went on for the fourth attempt. With her {Vanish} activated at the last moment, 11 monsters turned back and returned to their initial position, except for one. That one monster was roaring in rage, as it charged towards Zhang Yang.

It was a successful Aggro Swap!

Zhang Yang quickly flung the {Spear of Obliteration} straight at the monster and inflicted it with a damage value of '-4,928'.

"Rawgh!" the Royal Guard immediately let out a raging roar, and in a low, rumbling noise, it said, "Anyone who disrespects the Royal Family shall be eliminated!"

Zhang Yang raised up his shield to engage. Right after his {Block}, he conveniently activated his {Shield Bash} and smashed his shield right into the monster's face. 'Kuang!' The shield clashed against the metallic armor on the monster's head with a loud and clear bang. The impact of the strike concussed the monster, and forced the monster to take a few steps back.

"Huh? Why is this monster is so noob!" Wei Yan Er smirked, "So noob, that it can't even withstand the strength of noob tank!"

An elite monster was just an elite grade monster after all. Although the attack of the monster was already as strong as the attack of a Yellow-Gold boss, the strength attribute of the monster would remain the same, not something to stand against Zhang Yang, who already has a set of powerful equipment on him.

The situation was like a 'naked' player holding a Violet-Platinum weapon in hand, trying to battle a player with a full set of powerful

equipment, but with only a White-Wood weapon in hand. The attacks of both sides were almost of the same level, but the same balance was not present in terms of strength.

This elite monster that had super strong attack power, but nothing else much!

Although this Royal Guard had the {Crushing Vow} effect and was immune to all Status Restriction skills, the 'Supporting Attack' was not really a means of an assault. Under the precise control of Zhang Yang over his avatar in the game, this monster was bombarded to the point that its pattern of attack had changed drastically, unable to land a hit on Zhang Yang!

"Wow, noob tank! At least you're not making a fool of yourself there!" Wei Yan Er looked at Zhang Yang with admiration as she wielded her giant axe, slashing the monster until it lost its balance. The monster was in a really bad shape.

"Of course I must look good!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"You're so full of yourself!" the four ladies hooted at the same time.

At the earlier stages of the game, as the grade and level of equipment were not high enough, players could never have enough power to knock monsters back. It was not possible for a player to send a monster backward. Therefore, players began to fuse 'Supporting Attacks' as they picked and rolled, and with the increasing number of high-tier equipment that were appearing for players to grab allowed them to be more efficient. So, more and more players were getting into the norm of using 'Supporting Attacks' in battle against monsters and bosses!

Zhang Yang had been trying to introduce the ladies to the effectiveness and the convenience of using 'Supporting Attacks' in battle, and, he had managed to pique their interest in it. He wanted them to understand the 'mechanism' by themselves. All he needed to do was to supervise them from one side, and they would improve their skills and strength very rapidly!

About 3 minutes into the battle, the monster was slain, and it collapsed

down to the ground right before the powerful attacks of the gang. More shockingly, this monster actually dropped a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment which got Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er really excited.

As the skill, {Vanish} had a 5-minute cooldown period, and the skill {Shadow of the Void} had a cool down period of 10 minutes long, the gang could only wait it out before they can strike again. However, the moment after the cool down period of Sun Xin Yu's {Vanish} was over, Zhang Yang decided to take a risk. He sent Sun Xin Yu over directly to lure the monsters in an attempt to save some precious time.

"But, what if ---" Sun Xin Yu looked at him with a worried face.

"Well, at worst, I'll only die once!" Zhang Yang smiled, "But, I believe that you will not let that happen!"

Sun Xin Yu could not hide her embarrassment, her eyes were filled with hope, as she started blushing, while glaring at him, but with a sense of sweetness in it. As she continued blushing, she turned around and charged towards the monsters.

"This time, try to get two of them over!" Zhang Yang increased his demands.

Well if they lured two of the elite monsters over, by the time when they slay the two monsters, the cooldown period for Sun Xin Yu's {Vanish} would be over, and they would not be wasting any time at all!

Right then, Sun Xin Yu halted at the moment she was about to enter the aggro range of the monsters.

She was indeed worthy to be called a professional player. After she entered the range where she had lured the first monster, she took one step closer to the monsters before she activated her {Vanish} to disengage from battle. But this seemingly insignificant 'one step' actually brought in two Royal Guards to Zhang Yang. The two monsters charged at Zhang Yang in an intense manner.

It was another success!

Zhang Yang met the two approaching monsters without any sense of

fear. With a vibrant swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and the continuous bashing on the monsters' faces with his [Titan Wall], Zhang Yang suppressed the two monsters with so much brute force to the point that the monsters could not even stand properly.

Wei Yan Er had also picked up some hints on how Zhang Yang did it, so she also went up to one of the monsters and started swinging her giant axe as hard as she could. With the oppressive hammerings of Wei Yan Er, the monsters were bombarded to the point that they were constantly being pushed back by the attack, unable to regain their balance. Remaining armor pieces and the pieces of shattered bones were falling off the monster, roaring in hopeless rage. The little girl laughed joyfully as they roared in her face.

However, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream were using different approaches, rather than applying brute force on the monsters. So, they could not really do much in this battle. Daffodil Daydream could not help but to voice out, "Guildmaster, Warrior Class and Knight Class can suppress their opponents purely with Strength. They can even use such tactics to interrupt Magic Classes from chanting spells successfully as well! What can the other Classes do?"

Zhang Yang did not stop what he was doing as he continued to attack the monsters, "That's not entirely true. Warriors and Knights are indeed more powerful in terms of Strength. Thieves and Hunters are more inclined to the 'Agility' attribute, so they can unleash more potential as they gain more speed, for speed is their mantra. The higher agility points that they have, the faster they can attack, and the more damage they can do to their opponents. If your opponents are moving at the speed of light, then you will not be able to lock onto them. So when that happens, no matter how powerful your attacks are, you can't even touch them. Magic Classes have the advantage when it comes to Status Restriction skills, and their explosive power. They can actually end the battle, even before their opponents approach them!"

"Sigh. So Magic Classes are actually weak in the sense of toughness, what a loss!" Han Ying Xue let out a breath of sigh.

"Well, that's not entirely true either. Actually, Magic Classes need to put their focus on combining their skills during PK battles!" Zhang Yang tried to rack his brain to find a suitable explanation to back up what he just said, but because he had never actually studied about the specificity of the Magic Class, so he could only throw a vague explanation to the ladies, "You will find out soon enough, in the future!" The truth was, he could not think of any suitable examples, to begin with.

After slashing for awhile, the two monsters were taken down and the cool down period for Sun Xin Yu's {Vanish} was over. At the moment, Zhang Yang could also use his {Shadow of the Void} again. Sun Xin Yu was feeling much more confident with her aggro estimation already, so she had become more proficient at luring the monsters. That was why the next round of luring the monsters was another success. Only two monsters were hooked over to Zhang Yang as well.

The same method was repeatedly and about half an hour later, all 11 elite monsters were cleared out. Only the boss was left alone in the middle of the area!

"Alright! Let's move!" Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer].

"But, what if the boss resummon the 11 elite Royal Guards the moment we engage in battle with the boss?" Wei Yan Er blinked at the gang with her large eyes.

"You and your big mouth!" the four of them scolded the little girl in unison!

Wei Yan Er was shocked and she placed a hand over her heart, to show that she was really shocked.

Zhang Yang charged towards the boss with large steps, as he threw the {Spear of Obliteration} across the air, and onto the boss, triggering the boss battle.

"You imbecile, pests!" Rogalli humphed out loud and raised his staff at Zhang Yang, and he shouted, "I'm very tired, I need rest! Why are you disturbing my rest!"

Shoof!

A stream of dark light shot right out from the tip of the staff, and turned into a large skull all of a sudden. The skull opened up its jaws and flew towards Zhang Yang attempting to swallow him whole!

‘-17,094!’

"Haha! Then, let us put you to rest, for eternity! You can have as much rest as you want by then!" Zhang Yang swung his sword towards the boss. But, the magic robe that the boss had on was extremely tough! Zhang Yang's sword rang as if, it was striking something metallic! But fortunately, the damage values still appeared as Zhang Yang attacked the boss. The boss also felt the pain, and he shouted in rage as Zhang Yang 'poked' him again and again.

"You imbeciles! You piss me off!" Rogalli raised his staff right up into the air and fired another dark light from the tip of his staff that transformed into a large skull!

Sun Xin Yu and the others quickly surrounded the boss and began to launch their assaults on the boss savagely.

Chapter 453: Death Water Elemental

After being ganged up by the party, Rogalli was even further enraged. As the second prince of the Imperial Heaven's Empire, Rogalli is usually the one bringing along his underlings, rounding up on the weak. How could he accept such treatment?

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

The boss repeatedly casted the large dark skulls after Zhang Yang, damaging Zhang Yang by about 17,000 damage with each hit. But, Zhang Yang had a total of 90,000 health points, without even being atop the [Mythical Turtle]. There was really nothing to worry about, at that moment!

Of course, a Violet-Platinum boss is not so simple. Rogalli had not yet revealed his true power!

"Spirits of the air, heed my summons, and gather to me!" Rogalli raised his staff up into the air and started chanting a spell in a loud voice. Instantly, 5 beams of iridescent light swam around, Rogalli like guards patrolling around him.

"Die!" Rogalli completed his chanting of the spell, and immediately aimed his staff at Zhang Yang. Instantly, the five beam of lights combined onto one and shot straight towards Zhang Yang!

‘Ding! Rogalli has unleashed {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}!’

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shield Wall}! The boss had been accumulating his power into this attack, of course it would be a hard hit!

‘-22,894!’

Boom! The combined beam of light struck Zhang Yang, and colorful sparks shot off Zhang Yang’s body! An extremely high damage value was still inflicted upon Zhang Yang, even after he activated his {Shield Wall}! The basic damage of this {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} reached up to a total of 125,000 points! If Zhang Yang had not activated his {Shield Wall}

in time, he would have been taken out on the spot, an instant-kill!

"You're still alive? You are persistent!" Rogalli saw that his super attack had not taken out Zhang Yang, and he could not hide his astonishment, "You really do have some skills, to be able to come so far!"

Zhang Yang laughed in pride, and said, "Well, you haven't seen 'anything' yet!"

The four ladies were disgusted by his words, and Wei Yan Er immediately said, "Yo, noob tank! This boss has lived for thousands of years! You trying to show it something that it hasn't seen yet is just stupid! Haha!"

Rogalli was enraged even further, so he let out a raging roar into the sky, "Element of earth, protect me!"

In just an instant, a beam of yellow light began to form and gather in front of the boss, swiftly forming into three shields. These three shields spun around the boss rapidly.

'Ding! Rogalli has unleashed {Earth Shield}, the shields can absorb a total of 300,000 damage!"

"What the hell! That is some shield! It's even much more powerful than {Holy Shield}!" Han Ying Xue was really shocked.

Zhang Yang laughed and teased her, "Just wait, until you have about 150,000 magic damage, then your {Holy Shield} would be able to absorb the same amount of damage as this boss' shield! Be patient! Haha!"

"... 150,000 magic damage..." Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes!

Under the protection of the {Earth Shield}, all attacks launched at the boss only caused the word 'Immune' to pop up on the boss repeatedly. However, once the boss had been inflicted with 100,000 damage, one of the shields that were spinning around him will vanish. With the firepower that Zhang Yang and his party produces, they could get rid of one shield in about every 10 seconds! So, about 30 seconds later, the final shield that was spinning around Rogalli had vanished, and the boss started to lose his health points again.

"The power of the earth is way beyond your imagination!" Rogalli suddenly let out a roar and repeatedly knocking his staff onto the ground, as violently as he could!

'Ding! Rogalli has unleashed {Gravel Bullets}!'

Kroom! Kroom! Kroom!

The surface of the ground began to tremble, and instantly, patches of black whirlpools appeared, one after another, occupying the ground! Stone pikes shot out from the black whirlpools, swiftly retracting not soon after. Then, they repeated their actions again! The speed of the process was extremely swift!

The five of them had been through more battles than they could remember. Nobody needed any reminding to scramble to safety.

About half a minute later, these black whirlpools started to disappear, one after another. But, it did not mean that Zhang Yang and the ladies could let their guards down. The black whirlpools reappeared on the surface of the ground at different positions, causing Zhang Yang and the ladies to panic, and start running for more safe spots again!

"Hahaha!" Seeing that everyone was panicking, Rogalli could not help but to laugh out loud. He was a Magic Class boss, so he did not have to run around to attack Zhang Yang. With just a raise of his staff, he could fire dark skulls that chomped at Zhang Yang's health bar mercilessly.

Everyone was suffering to the point that they were crying out loud! They had to make sure they dodged the stone pikes while also making sure that their DPS is maintained so that they could reduce the health bar of the boss down consistently. They were so busy that the party chat was completely motionless!

After a brief while, the boss activated his {Earth Shield} once again, shielding himself up once again, slowing down their pace even further! Fortunately for them, this boss did not have any skills that could recover his health bar. If he started reversing the damage they were dealing on him, it would become impossible to defeat the boss!

95%, 90%, 85%... the health bar of Rogalli was reducing at a snail's pace.

Finally, two minutes later, the health bar of the boss had been reduced down to 80%!

"Spirits that wander in the air, heed my summons, and gather to me!" Rogalli raised his staff into the air and began to chant the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}. Once again, 5 light beams of iridescent brightness swam around Rogalli.

"It's the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} again!" After the spell for the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} was complete, the boss directed the light beam straight towards Zhang Yang, with his staff pointed at Zhang Yang! This skill is extremely deadly!

It's now or never, swim or sink! Activating {Last Vigor}!

Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was still on cooldown period, so he had no choice left, but to activate his second life-saving skill - {Last Vigor}!

Zoom! His maximum health points immediately soared up to 118,100 points in an instant!

‘-97,894!’

The {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} exploded right on Zhang Yang, inflicting him with a damage value that was enough to instantly kill 99% of tankers in the entire game, at the current stage of the game! Whether it be the defense or the damage absorption, it means nothing when put before this absolutely high damage value! Instead, the passive skill of the tanker, which reduced 20% of the damage received could actually offer an unexpectedly great effect!

After the attack, Zhang Yang was left with only about 20,000 health points!

Han Ying Xue quickly placed a {Holy Shield} onto Zhang Yang, and focused on healing him up as quickly as possible.

"Elemental of Water, wandering in the air, please accept my greetings, and battle for me!" Rogalli raised up his staff once again, but this time,

puddles of water emerged on the surface of the ground, one after another, forming something humanoid. The crystal clear water still flowed smoothly around in the human form, which made them rather bizarre.

After these humanoid creatures were completely formed, the remaining puddles on the ground were absorbed by the humanoid water creatures, vanishing. They started to walk towards Zhang Yang and the ladies in a random formation. They weren't even fast.

[Death Water Elemental] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Note: If you are wise, you will not attack these dangerous creatures, and you will definitely not want them to touch you!

In {{God's Miracle}}, things that seem harmless are usually the most dangerous things in the game! Even if there wasn't such an indirect warning in the note attached, Zhang Yang and the ladies would not even try to attack, or touch these weird creatures. They had experienced this many times already with similar monsters, this had to be a trap!

"Will we die instantly if we touched these things?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"I'm 80% sure that we will die if we do touch them! Do you still remember what happened on the Island of the Sacred One? Fatty Han really got us into trouble, there!" Daffodil Daydream nodded.

However, this time, the black whirlpools did not vanish from the ground, they were still on the ground, jabbing out more the stone pikes, leaving players with lesser places to stand in the entire area.

"Die! Just die!" Rogalli laughed madly as he fired more black skulls at Zhang Yang, one after another. That had been the most regular and frequent attack that the boss have been using throughout the entire battle. It was like the automatic attack of a physical type boss.

"The boss should enter a new Phase when he loses another 20% of his

health bar!" Zhang Yang went around a pillar to get out of the boss' sight, forcing the boss to move around to get a better aim. He went around the pillars for a few times, waiting for those Death Water Elemental to approach. When these summoned monsters circled around the pillar, he ran to another pillar, not far from the previous one, sending the monsters on a wild goose chase.

"Holy sh*t, this is just Phase 2, and we already have to evade stone pikes and water elementals! What kind of nonsense do we have to deal with, in Phase 3, Phase 4, and Phase 5!" Han Ying Xue was already crying in misery.

"Guildmaster, your quest is definitely not an S-rank quest! It must be at least an SSSSS-rank, it's crazy!" Daffodil Daydream was also making complaints.

Zhang Yang had already kited the boss far away from the location of the boss. The four ladies followed closely from behind. However, [Mythical Turtle] had short flaps! It was going nowhere! But Turtle was extremely lucky. Although it was slowly walking towards the boss, it miraculously did not step onto any of the black whirlpools that appeared across the ground!

However, one of the Death Water Elementals had caught up with Turtle, and reached out towards Turtle with a watery arm! With a gentle touch, the Death Water Elemental suddenly turned into a stream of clear water, and flowed into the body of Turtle!

Boom!

In less than 1 second, the [Mythical Turtle] was turned into a landmine explosion! The pieces of Turtle were splattered across a circular area, with a radius of 30 meters!

"Oh my god, this is terrifying!" Wei Yan Er patted her heart in alarm.

"I'd rather get skewered by the stone pikes anytime soon!" everyone was nodding to agree on that point.

Previously, the gang had needed to dodge the stone pike attacks from the ground. It had already got in the way of their movements so extensively

that they could hardly dish out any damage! Now they had to evade a bunch of Death Water Elementals as well! It was getting even more out of hand! The gang had only managed to reduce the health bar of the boss down to 60%, after 4 minutes of hellish nightmare. The boss was now entering Phase 3!

The moment the boss entered Phase 3, Rogalli launched another {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} at Zhang Yang!

But this time, the cool down period of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} had already ended. So, Zhang Yang handled the attack with ease.

It seems that the boss would only launch his {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} whenever he enters a new Phase. Having gotten familiar with the sequences of the boss, things have gotten much smoother. The cool down period of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was only 3 minutes long. So, whenever they have taken out 19% of the boss's health bar, all Zhang Yang had to do was to look at the remaining cool down period of his {Shield Wall}. If it was ready, then Zhang Yang and the gang could simply continue inflicting damage onto the boss. But if the cool down period was not over yet, all they needed to do was to halt their attacks, until Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} was ready once again, before they resumed their assaults.

"Elementals of Fire, please listen to my proposal, and eliminate all of my enemies!" Rogalli began to use a new skill, in his new Phase.

Boom!

A wave of flame exploded right out from the body of the boss, causing a ring of fire to spread into the surroundings!

As the wave of flame rolled across the ground, Zhang Yang and the ladies were all inflicted with a basic damage of about 25,000 points, each!

"What the hell! Ice and fire dual damage!" Zhang Yang roared frantically while stealing a glance at Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. He could not help but think that these two ladies were also like ice and fire! So, that meant that he had always been 'sandwiched' in between ice and fire, ever since he knew them!

Chapter 454: Ring of Blazing Flame

Rogalli shook his body, turning into a 'Rocket man' launching a spray fireworks into the surroundings! He would send out a wave of flames across the area from time to time, giving Han Ying Xue a hard time!

Fortunately, Daffodil Daydream had already leveled her {Recovery Aura} up to Level 3, so everyone could heal 500 health points and 230 mana points every 3 seconds, lightening some of Han Ying Xue's workload. The recovery of 230 mana points every 3 seconds would also be turned into an abundance of hitpoints, thanks to the efficient catalytic converter that was Han Ying Xue.

Everyone in the party was beginning to get the flow of this super difficult battle. They were getting better and better in evading the hits, slowly bringing up their DPS!

Especially Wei Yan Er. Because of limited rage points, the rate of her using her rage points was not high at all during boss battles, so she couldn't unleash her full potential. But whenever she is engaged in battles with these kinds of AoE-happy bosses, she need not worry about running out of rage points! She only needed to wait until her skills were cooled down before she spams her skills again. There was nothing to worry about, she only had to throw every single skill onto the boss, and everything would be fine!

As a result, they actually managed to bring down the health bar of the boss down to only 41% within 3 minutes. Zhang Yang quickly told everyone to stop attacking, as the cool down period of his {Shield Wall} still needed ten seconds. If they pushed the boss into his Phase 4 at that moment, one {Elemental Disruptive Bomb} would be enough to force Zhang Yang to activate his {Last Vigor} to stay alive.

But {Last Vigor} would not reduce the amount of damage received. If the boss had any new super skills that can hit really hard in Phase 4, then Zhang Yang would be doomed! Well, one must be cautious when crossing a road, no matter if the traffic is busy or not. It would be best to stop and

look at both directions of the road before crossing. As a wiseman once said, 'Better late than dead'. So, it was unwise to put himself into a dangerous situation just to save 10 seconds!

40%!

"Spirits of the air, heed my summons and gather to me!" the moment Rogalli entered his 4th Phase, he immediately began chanting the {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}. This skill was meant to take out the tanker and throw the party into disarray. If this skill could be activated without incantation, no party would stand a chance!

During Phase 4, the boss had another AOE skill - {Shadow Bomb}. But, this skill shared a common cool down period with {Tidal Flame}, and the damage of this skill is slightly higher than {Tidal Flame}. Therefore, although the difficulty of this battle was increased, it did not put too much pressure on Han Ying Xue. She still healed them all up fine.

The five of them were getting more familiar with the pattern of the battle. After another 3 minutes, and they had reduced the health bar of the boss down to 21%.

Zhang Yang tried to 'suppress' the fire power of the entire party for awhile, until the cool down period of his {Shield Wall} was over. Then only, did they push the boss into his Phase 5, which was also the 'Slaughter Stage' of a boss fight!

"Argh ---" Rogalli suddenly became enraged to the point that he had cracked his voice. After nuking Zhang Yang with an {Elemental Disruptive Bomb}, Rogalli activated another new Super Skill for his Phase 5. A green shroud began to emerge from his body and spread across the area, clouding up the entire area. Zhang Yang and the ladies were afflicted with an additional negative effect.

[Paralytic Poison Shroud]: Inflicts 1,000 Nature Damage to all enemies every 3 seconds. There was a 10% rate of paralyzing the enemy, lasts for 10 seconds. The effect of paralysis can be lifted.

After reading the description of the {Paralytic Poison Shroud}, Han Ying Xue immediately let out a miserable scream. Her 'workload' was about to

get real heavy!

The damage of the {Paralytic Poison Shroud} is not that high itself. The {Recovery Aura} could already negate half of that damage. However, when the paralysis effect of the {Paralytic Poison Shroud} strikes the players, things would be much harder for the players as the movement of the players will be restricted. Players would not die if they are touched by the black whirlpools, but they would be torn to pieces if they ever get touched by any of the Death Water Elementals!

The final stages of a battle would be the time to see the full prowess of a healer. All Han Ying Xue needed to do was to make sure that her healing skills are activated accordingly, at the correct timing. She needed to make sure that the health bar(s) of the tanker(s) in her party do(es) not go below the danger point, and she also needed to make sure that other party members do not die. Although all of them had their own skills, capable of countering the Status Restriction skill, the cool down period for the skills were just too long. They should only activate their skills as a last resort!

After the health bar of the boss had been reduced below 20%, the damage output of the party was increased by a little, and they were using every single skills that can 'Slaughter'. In just a brief while, under the bombardment of their fire power, the health bar of the boss was already reduced down to only 10%!

Rogalli finally felt a sense of fear. He began to increase his speed in activating his skills! Other than that, the movement speed of the Death Water Elementals had also increased by a notch, making the battle even harder than before!

"We can do this! We're strong!" The party members started encouraging each other.

8%, 6%, 4%... the health bar of the boss was getting shorter by the second! And now, there were only a few 'drops' of health points left!

"F*ck him up! Humph! Use your everything on him!" Han Ying Xue was shouting and 'humping' in frustration!

Zhang Yang heard the way she shouted and had to crack a smile. Then

he sent a private message to Han Ying Xue, "You were also 'humphing' me like this when we were in my room."

"You 'bust-tart'!" Han Ying Xue instantly blushed.

3%! 2%! 1%!

"No ---" Rogalli roared in a thunderous but terrified voice, before he collapsed onto the ground, dead.

The moment Rogalli was killed, all of the black whirlpools and the Death Water Elementals in the surrounding vanished without a trace. Everything went so quiet, as if no battle had even occurred in the area before! But, the three equipment that Rogalli dropped on the ground radiated with mesmerizing lights. One of them was a Leather Armor that glittered gold, another was a dark green helmet, and last but not least, was a ring surrounded by a lightly flame.

Wei Yan Er went up to pick up the coins while Zhang Yang went on to pick up the equipment, one after another. The first equipment they looked at was the Leather Armor.

[Scaly Breast Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +302

Strength: +121

Agility: +274

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effect by 2%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Zhang Yang looked at Sun Xin Yu, but Sun Xin Yu shook her head and pointed at her chest, implying that she already had a better set of armor equipped. Somehow Zhang Yang's lingered on her magnificent mounds instead.

If it was another beautiful lady, he could easily tear his eyes away. But,

the situation was much more different when it came to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. These two beautiful ladies were his 'crushes'! There was nothing shameful in men admiring their crushes!

Sun Xin Yu blushed as she noticed Zhang Yang 'drooling' at her through his eyes. Han Ying Xue was not too happy about it, so she cut in by coughing pointedly, a few times. The jealousy towards each other began to surge in the shadow.

Since the Leather Armor was not desired by anyone, Zhang Yang could only slide it into his inventory and continued to look at the two pieces of equipment that were still lying on the ground. So, he started by looking at the dark green helmet.

[Deadly Fate Helmet] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +712

Strength: +471

Agility: +191

Equip: Increases your damage and healing effect by 4%.

Equip: Increases your Maximum Health Points by 1,000 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Wei Yan Er did not wait for Zhang Yang to open up his mouth, she was already repeatedly bobbing her head up and down, "I want it! I want it!"

"Little girl, this is actually an awesome helmet, man! Just look at the additional Strength! This power, this agility! And it also increases your Maximum Health Point by 1,000 points! Wow! This is really the best of the best! So how can you just take it like that! You must offer something in return, man!" Zhang Yang tried to trick the gullible brat!

"You're really bad! If you try to bully me again, I shall tell everyone about what you and cousin-sister did after dinner!" Wei Yan Er whispered into

Zhang Yang's ear and threatened Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was really shocked, but after giving it some thought, how would the little brat even know what happened behind his closed door? She had to be bluffing! But his initial intention was to tease the little girl just a little. If he unintentionally provoked her, and she goes on telling nonsense to everyone, then he shall be exposed to a risk where Sun Xin Yu might get very angry, at his peril!

Zhang Yang just laughed and passed the [Deadly Fate Helmet] over to Wei Yan Er.

Meanwhile, the little girl was smiling and wrapped her arms round Zhang Yang's shoulder, forcing him to stoop down. While acting all brotherly with Zhang Yang, she said, "Noob tank, you can just put away all your worries. I will keep you and sister Snow's secret nicely. As long as you make more of my favorite dishes, and buy me more gifts in the future."

Zhang Yang could only shake his head helplessly. Then, he picked the ring up from the ground.

[Ring of Blazing Flame] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +176

Intelligence: +116

Spirit: +116

Equip: Increases your fire magic damage, maximum of 150 damage points.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana Points by 500 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"Wow, this boss is really generous! He actually dropped another piece of fine equipment for us!" Han Ying Xue spoke with an exaggerated face. Then, she took the ring over and examined it, "It's really beautiful!"

This ring was indeed a fine craft!

Although the basic attributes of the ring could only be considered as middle-tiered, but the two additional effects were really awesome! One increased additional damage, while the other one added Maximum Mana Points, which could lead to an increase of the damage output, or increases the endurance of one's capability. If there was one thing lacking on the ring, it did not add health points, and that was a small matter!

"Sister Daffodil, congratulations on acquiring a fine ring!" Wei Yan Er snatched the ring from him and tossed it at Daffodil Daydream, beaming a wide grin, "On behalf of noob tank, I hereby present this gift to you! So, pretty face, you are mine now!"

"You little girl!" Daffodil Daydream was more of a shy person, so she stamped the ground in embarrassment, blushing.

After picking up 3 pieces of equipment, Zhang Yang kicked the dead body of the boss aside and he discovered another item, a Skill Book, with a crimson red hardcover!

[Skill Book: Fatal Strike Aura]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Fatal Strike Aura}.

Required Profession: None

Required Level: 90

Among the five of them, only Sun Xin Yu had not acquired any Aura Skills. So, this Aura Skill Book would naturally be hers. Only one player could activate one Aura Skill at a time, and everyone in the same party could enjoy the effect of the Aura Skill as well. There was no point fighting over it at all.

Sun Xin Yu learned the skill {Fatal Strike Aura} and posted the description of the skill onto the party channel for everyone to see.

[Fatal Strike Aura] (Level 1): Adds 1% critical rate of all party members that are within the effective range of the aura effect. Range of effective area: 30-meter radius circular area having the user as the center point. The effect will last until the user is dead or when the effect vanishes automatically. You can only activate one Aura Skill at the same time.

An increment of 1% critical rate for one player was not really much, but when everyone on the party is boosted with a 1% increase in their critical rate, then the situation would be very different. Furthermore, this was just a Level 1 Aura Effect. Until the Aura Skill is leveled up to 10, there should be at least an increment of 10% critical rate by then!

Other than that, Rogalli had also dropped a piece of [Middle-tier Aura Stone]. The stone was taken by Daffodil Daydream, which was later used to level up her {Recovery Aura} up to Level 4. Now, her Aura Skill could restore 800 health points and 300 mana points every 3 seconds. It had become even more practical than before!

Chapter 455: 'Civil War' in the Imperial Sky

After picking up the loots, the dead body of the Rogalli vanished without a trace. The five of them went back to the place where they had first encountered the boss, and made their way down the the fourth floor of Treasure Cove.

"Little Yang! Let me tell you a great piece of news!" right after Zhang Yang and the ladies stepped foot into the passage, Zhang Yang received a voice message from Fatty Han.

"What is it?" Zhang Yang was not really interested to find out, as he knew Fatty Han a little too well to know that most of his 'great' news were either baseless rumors, or idle gossip. His news was of no help.

Fatty Han laughed and tried to build up his story dramatically, but he had always been a 'big mouthed' person! So, he let the words slipped out of his mouth after a brief while, "One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei have turned on each other!"

"Hmm!" Zhang Yang widened his eyes. That really caught his interest! So he quickly pressed, "How did you know about this?"

"My god! Someone exposed this 'scandal' at the forum, and that someone is one of the high-tiered members of Imperial Sky!"

Was it because One Sword Stroke no longer had any value to Liu Wei, and now Liu Wei was trying to end their 'honeymoon'? Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and then he asked, "How did they end up turning against each other in the first place?"

"Hehe! I heard that it's because of one woman!"

"What?"

"According to the rumors flying around in the forum, One Sword Stroke had laid his hands on Liu Wei's girlfriend! In the end, they were caught red-handed by Liu Wei, in bed! The two of them actually got into a

fistfight, right in her face! Hehe! That's really messed up man! Haha! This Liu Wei tried to 'steal' Imperial Sky over for himself, but ended up getting his girlfriend stolen by One Sword Stroke! Ironical, poetic justice!" Fatty Han burst out laughing.

Zhang Yang was shocked. Were they talking about a girlfriend? So is it possible that they were talking about Luo Xin Yan? He quickly asked Fatty Han, "Do you know the name of his girlfriend?"

"Her name is erm... Luo something... Xin something... You see... I can't really remember, you know how my brain works."

"Luo Xin Yan?"

"Right! That's right! Her name is Luo Xin Yan! Wait, how do you know?" Fatty Han asked as he was very curious, but immediately came up with an assumption and said, "So, you already saw that post earlier on! Gah, why did you try to make me happy? You should have told me from the start!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I haven't seen the post yet, but I do know that this Liu Wei does have a girlfriend. Carry on! Tell me more!"

Fatty Han also 'knew' that Zhang Yang had his reasons for hating Liu Wei. After all, Zhang Yang was almost played out by Liu Wei, barely making it to the Soaring Sword Competition in Shang Hai! So, Fatty Han would not be surprised if Zhang Yang had been keeping an eye on Liu Wei.

Then he continued, "But! Liu Wei is also not simple in other regards. After he left Imperial Sky, he took a large number of players along with him and formed his own guild. I think the name of his guild is 'The Myth'. Hate to admit it, but it sounds awesome!"

The Myth?

Zhang Yang felt a terrifying chill down his spine. In this life, although Liu Wei had been progressing very differently in 'God's Miracle' under Zhang Yang's influence, but in some aspects, they were uncannily similar! The guild that Liu Wei had founded in his previous life was also called 'The Myth'!

"Oh, I see. So, how about One Sword Stroke? Did he say anything at all?"

"Of course he's mad! He began a quarrel with that son of the beach Liu Wei!" Fatty Han laughed. Be it Liu Wei or One Sword Stroke, Fatty Han had always hated these two guys. So now that these two were quarreling with each other like a cat and a dog, of course he would be satisfied watching the 'drama' progress, "Now that the two guilds are hurling insults at each in the forums, some 'bored' people have joined in and have added some 'seasoning' to the fight, making situation even 'better'! Haha! Now, the forum is chaotic, thanks to them!"

Zhang Yang was at a loss on whether to cry or to laugh. His initial intention was to send Luo Xin Yan to Liu Wei, hoping to plant an eye and an ear next to Liu Wei, so that he would truly be able to keep an eye and ear on Liu Wei's every single move! With that, he could at least prevent that son of the beach from planning in the dark! But now that things had escalated to a whole new level, his move of sending the girl to Liu Wei had led to the 'dissolution' of the gay partnership between Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke!

But now, One Sword Stroke should be the one Liu Wei hates the most! No men could ever endure the sensation of being cuckolded! Liu Wei, likely to harbor a grudge for a long time, would surely think of a way of 'handling' One Sword Stroke'. So he shouldn't be planning any evil schemes on Zhang Yang for at least a brief period of time.

In other perspectives, Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke did not really hate each other as much. Imperial Sky and Lone Desert Smoke had been rivals since the earlier stages of the game. Competition between guilds was inevitable. No one would like to play second fiddle. If Zhang Yang was in the other man's position, he would have also done anything to crush his rivals, making his Lone Desert Smoke, the best guild in the entire China server!

The survival of the fittest applied to all online games. The strong would step over the weak. This phenomenon was very common in all online games!

But, who would have thought the almighty number one tanker in the entire China server had once fallen into a love trap with Luo Xin Yan, in his previous life! Although Zhang Yang had been rivals One Sword Stroke for so long, Liu Wei had been the perpetrator of most of it. He actually had deep respect for One Sword Stroke's capabilities! But, to think that One Sword Stroke would actually steal other people's 'wife', that was really something that Zhang Yang could not understand!

Zhang Yang shook his head and decided to put his thoughts on the matter aside. His main focus at the moment was to clear the entire Treasure Cove!

After walking down a few flights of stairs, Zhang Yang and the ladies arrived at the fourth floor of the Treasure Cove.

"Rawh ---" The moment they walked out of the stairwell, a large white skeletal tiger lunged out from a dark corner by the stairs and bit Wei Yan Er. 'Crack!' The skeletal tiger left four teeth marks on the armor of the little girl!

'-14,216!'

Wei Yan Er was inflicted with a high damage value in an instant! She had almost immediately lost 25% of her health bar!

[Starving White Skeletal Tiger] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 95

HP: 3,000,000

Defense: 2,000

Note: Pet of the First Prince, Jesse Rogue. After a long period of time, this creature has turned into a Spectre. But they have never forgotten their natural instinct, that is to feed!

The surroundings were too dark. Only after the little girl was attacked did Zhang Yang realize that they were being ambushed! He then quickly 'Displayed' the special visual effect of his Titan Set Armor, radiating in a mesmerizing holy light, that made him look like a god that had descended

down from the heavens. His holy light then shone 2 to 3 meters out, illuminating everything around the area.

Zhang Yang let out a thunderous roar and activated {Provoke} on the White Skeletal Tiger. The White Skeletal Tiger immediately charged towards him right after that. With his sword raised, Zhang Yang inflicted the White Skeletal Tiger with a damage of about 4,000 points, and instantly hooked the aggro of the monster over to him.

His basic damage ranged from 4,168 to 4,568, but the {Strength Aura} of Wei Yan Er was already at Level 4 right now, along with the title of 'Divine Radiance of the Warriors,' which allowed him to deal an additional 10% damage to all demons and spectre type monsters. With all the buffs on him, his normal attacks ranged from 4,568 to 5,025 points!

The White Skeletal Tiger was afraid of pain, so it immediately let out an intimidating roar of a tiger. With it's mouth opened wide, the monster revealed four long and sharp fangs, and it leaped towards Zhang Yang.

"You stinky tiger! How dare you put holes in my armor! I'm not through with you!" Wei Yan Er was raging with fury as she screamed at the tiger.

"The tiger had only bitten you once, why are you so mad about it?"

"... Wu wu wu... this stinky tiger did some damage to my armor and the durability of my armor has dropped by 1%!" Wei Yan Er revealed a miserable and bitter expression on her face as she violently hacked the White Skeletal Tiger up.

When the durability of an equipment drops, players would have to spend coins to repair it. That was the main reason why the little girl was so mad about it! Asking her to spend coins or money was like asking a tiger to lose its teeth!

The White Skeletal Tiger was quickly hammered into a pulp under the combined attacks of the party! The skeletal body of the tiger shattered into pieces across the ground, and dropped a Yellow-Gold shield!

[Tiger-Tooth Thorny Shield] (Yellow-Gold, Shield)

Defense: +1,008

Vitality: +504

Equip: Absorbs 344 damage.

Equip: Reflects 100 physical damage when engaged with melee attacks.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 90

"Wahaha! This is a fitting compensation for biting me so hard!" Wei Yan Er smiled while she took the shield and placed it into her inventory.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "One Yellow-Gold shield could at least earn us 40,000 to 50,000 gold coins you know. How much gold coins would it take for you to repair that 1% damage of your armor?"

"... although it doesn't require that much gold coins to repair my armor, I was emotionally affected, I scared sh*tless, mind you! So the remaining balance shall be the compensation for my emotional trauma!" Wei Yan Er tried to justify her words.

The party continued to move forward. The design of the fourth floor was a little different from the third floor. The walls in the surroundings did not have lit-up torches on them, not even one. There were no pillars that looked like fluorescent light tubes to support the ceiling of the floor as well. Every corner of the floor was just dark. Only god knew what kinds of monsters lurked in the darkness.

Fortunately, the special effect of Zhang Yang's Titan Set Armor was a great deal of help. Although it illuminated the surroundings by about 2 to 3 meters, at least they won't be completely blind. Whenever a monster lunged out from the darkness, the party could react in time.

"Wooh!" Another roar of a wolf was heard, followed by the appearance of a large, white skeletal wolf. This time, the monster had pounced at Han Ying Xue! While it was still flying through the air, it opened its foul mouth and was ready to bite Han Ying Xue off! The foul smell from the mouth spread across the air and threw everyone off!

Zhang Yang was prepared for the moment. He would not let the monster

get what it wanted. He lifted a leg up and sent it flying into the buttocks of the white skeletal wolf, knocking it off its flight pattern!

"Wow! That was very cool!" Wei Yan Er's eyes glittered as she praised Zhang Yang. Such was a perfect example of a perfect 'Supporting Attack'. It could actually dissolve a monster's attack without the need of activating any skill!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Little girl, you should train on this as well!" With a quick flick of his hand, he launched a {Spear of Obliteration} at the wolf.

"Rawgh---" the lunge attack of the white skeletal wolf was interrupted mid-air, then it got struck by Zhang Yang straight away even before it could regain its stance. The monster let out a raging roar and began to lunge at Zhang Yang. The large body was like a dark cloud, hovering over Zhang Yang as it lunged towards him.

However, such elite monsters only had longer health bars and higher attack power compared to other regular monsters. Against the insanely equipped party of Zhang Yang, they were swiftly reduced to dust.

Unfortunately, this monster did not drop anything. Naturally, the little girl sulked.

The party went on forth, having no knowledge of how many more monsters lurked in the dark corners of the floor. Monsters lunged at them from time to time, sometimes it was a tiger, sometimes a leopard, and sometimes a wolf, or even a lion! These monsters would lunge at them, and Zhang Yang would just use his 'Supporting Attack' to counter them. As the 'Supporting Attack' was really effective and successful against the monsters, the ladies clearly saw its use, and were greatly motivated to start practicing them!

After spending about seven to eight hours, the party had finally reached the end of the floor, and Zhang Yang had also earned tons of experience points, which was sufficient for them to hit Level 98! He was about to reach Level 100 real soon!

"Silly Yu, you're about to reach Level 100!" Looking at the flashy stream

of golden light streaming through Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue asked, "So, the first to get into the Chaos Realm will get a definitive advantage in the game right?"

Zhang Yang nodded as he added the 5 free attribute points that he had just earned from leveling up, channeling them to his Vitality. But the truth was that, at the current stage of the game, with their immense Violet-Platinum equipment, such basal attribute points hardly made any difference! For example, when a player reaches Level 100, they would only have 500 free attribute points. One piece of Violet-Platinum helmet could already add 1000+ vitality attribute points. So, when players reach the standards of Mythical, Ethereal or greater tier already, then the free attribute points would barely make any difference.

Then Zhang Yang went on to say, "The first thing that we should focus on after getting into the Chaos Realm is to secure one Territory. Then, it will become much more convenient for our guild members to step into the Chaos Realm. And of course, more income!"

The four ladies agreed with what he said, and they nodded in unison. A Territory is like a money printing machine! They have already experienced the benefits of it.

The party pushed forward for some distance before they saw a large humanoid skeleton glowing luminously in the dark! This skeleton was about 10 meter tall! Every single one of the bones looked like fluorescent tubes. It was such a strange, spooky sight!

[The First Prince, Jesse Rogue] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 100

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 2,900

"Haha! Another Violet-Platinum boss! So, after we have slain him, we should get enough gold coins to last us for at least a year or two!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Guildmaster, are you really that short on money?" Daffodil Daydream

was asking him, out of her own curiosity.

"Oh, when I'm living with so many 'Ah Jiaos' in a plush apartment? I do need money, as much as possible!" Zhang Yang teased.

"You bastard (Bastard)!"

"Hoodlum!"

The ladies scolded Zhang Yang playfully, except for Wei Yan Er, as she could not understand what they were talking about, so she said, "I'm your sister-in-law, so I'm eligible to stay here for free, and eat here for free!"

Zhang Yang waved his sword and his shield, "Alright, let's move!"

As he charged towards that skeletal boss, he threw a {Spear of Obliteration} over and inflicted 4,867 damage on the boss.

"Who dares interrupt me while I'm deep in thought?" The boss roared in a thunderous voice as he began to walk towards Zhang Yang. As the boss had a luminous body, it made him a walking, visible lamp post of a target. It was a lighthouse, directing all blind ships to itself!

Crack!

The boss suddenly tore off one of its ribs and used it as a makeshift dagger! The tip of the 'dagger' shot towards Zhang Yang!

{Block}!

'-5894!'

'-10000!'

'-10000!'

'-10000!'

'-10000!'

Although Zhang Yang had raised up his shield to block against the attack of the boss, the rib bone blew up, and tiny pieces of the shattered bones shot out into the surroundings, inflicting everyone with damage of 10,000 on each of them! It was an AOE attack!

"I hate humans! They are just a bunch of hypocritical, filthy animals! No... they do not even deserve to be called animals either! They only deserve painful deaths!" Jesse Rogue let out a raging roar before he went on to 'pluck' another one of his rib bones off. Once again, he made to stab Zhang Yang!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Every single time when the boss stabbed Zhang Yang with his 'rib bone dagger', the 'rib bone dagger' would explode, 40 meters across the surroundings, and inflict damage to all targets within the effective range of the explosion. It wouldn't hurt to mention that it hurt like hell too!

Fortunately, Han Ying Xue is a Priest, her speciality happened to be AoE healing, she could heal the entire party members at the same time. With the additional support from the {Recovery Aura} of Daffodil Daydream, which had already been leveled up to Level 4, everyone in the party could recover 800 health points every 3 seconds! Although that amount of healing was not really that high, it came at such a rapid rate that the healing efficiency could not be underestimated!

The battle had already hit its peak point, not long after Zhang Yang and the ladies had engaged the boss. Han Ying Xue had already been put to work at full capacity. There was no slacking for this lazy woman!

TL Notes:

1. Ah Jiao - means a mistress or a young wife (as in second/third wife).

Chapter 456: Demon Blade of Death

Crack! Crack! Crack! Soon, all 12 ribs were all torn apart from its ribs, and it stood before them, a ribless spine.

Wei Yan Er laughed at the boss and said, "Stinky boss, let's see what else you can do now!"

Jesse Rogue let out a roar, and its entire body quivered for a very brief moment. 12 bones emerged right from his spine, forming a new set of rib cage! The boss had returned back to its initial form, which meant that the boss could tear off his rib bones one by one and attack them with that terrifying AOE attack again!

Wei Yan Er's jaw fell slack for one moment, and then she pointed at the boss furiously and said, "You stinky boss! You cheated!"

Crack! Jesse Rogue tore out another rib bone, held it firmly in his hand, and stabbed at Zhang Yang. As the rib bone blew up, everyone was inflicted with massive damage values.

"I have never seen a boss that loves torturing himself so much!" Han Ying Xue said.

"He's hurting himself, and we are the collaterals! Better not provoke a hard forced 'kid'!" Zhang Yang laughed.

Fortunately for them, Jesse Rogue had no other skills, other than these explosive ribs. But, this one attack was already powerful enough to give Zhang Yang and the ladies a boatload of problems! Not only did it force Han Ying Xue to heal everyone frantically, even Zhang Yang was forced to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Sacrifice} on the ladies who were low on health, or could not be healed in time by Han Ying Xue. The party was already barely hanging on, if the boss added any new tricks, it would be over!

This boss was neither hard nor easy!

It was easy because Zhang Yang and the ladies did not have to pick and roll, or apply any tactical formations. On the other hand, the rib bone

attacks left them no room for any evasive measures! Everyone could only stand still and endure the damage! Furthermore, the attack of the boss was extremely painful and consistent! One small mistake could cause the entire party to be wiped out as well!

It had been completely turned into a battle of pure firepower! So, Zhang Yang and the ladies could only hold on and do their best on the boss.

90%, 80%, 70%... the health bar of Jesse Rogue decreased rapidly, as rapidly as Han Ying Xue's. Without the [Level 4 Mana Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] that recovered 7,500 mana points in one go, and the Level 4 {Recovery Aura} of Daffodil Daycream, Han Ying Xue would have already fallen back, and the entire party would have been wiped out!

"Quickly! We must go faster!" Han Ying Xue cried out.

Her vulgar panting was like the mating calls of a wildcat. Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he had already 'released' once before he logged into the game, or else he might have lost it and shouted out into the sky like a 'colorful wolf'!

There was nothing special about this battle at all. It was just simple but rough. There were no tactics or whatsoever, to begin with! All they could do was to focus on channeling their firepower at the boss until the battle ends! However, the tension of the battle was extremely high for Zhang Yang and the ladies. No one would want to be wiped out, while at the brink of slaying the boss! So none of them wanted to make any mistakes and get wiped out, only to repeat the entire battle again! That would be infuriating beyond words!

None of them held back on consuming their potions. All of them were gulping their [Level 4 Healing Potions (Grade 10 Transmutation)] like mad as they were battling the boss. The moment their cool down periods for Potion usage were over, they would quickly consume another [Level 4 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. There was no time at all to hesitate, in order to survive the boss battle! Their health had never been full since the battle began, not even with all the crazy buffs and healing!

60%, 50%, 40%... the health bar of the boss was getting lesser and lesser

by the seconds!

There were no other words to describe this battle, other than continuous slashing and continuous healing!

30%, 20%!

Here came the 'Slaughtering Stage' of the boss battle, and the damage output of the entire party was increased by a notch, which increased their speed in bringing down the health bar of the boss at a whole new level of efficiency!

10%! 6%! 1%!

Finally, Jesse Rogue let out a miserable scream, and his glowing skeletal body went dim, and then he collapsed onto the ground heavily. The boss dropped 3 pieces of equipment after he died. One of it was a pair of snowy white gloves, while the other was a darker red long knife with an ancient sense of style on it, and last but not least, a golden crown.

The five of them let out a breath of relief as they finally completed a restless battle! They finally made it through!

As usual, Wei Yan Er went up to pick up the coins and the equipment dropped by the boss, with a joyful smile on her face. The little girl picked up the gloves first, and then she posted the attributes of the equipment on the party channel.

[Silver Silk Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +168

Intelligence: +151

Spirit: +67

Equip: Increases 2% damage and healing effect.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana Points by 500 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"So, from Level 100 onwards, the attributes of the equipment are much more incredible, I'm assuming!" Han Ying Xue stepped forth and took the snowy white pair of gloves. She put them on and looked at her left and right hands, saying, "The basic attributes didn't change much, but the additional special effects really do have some kick in it! These gloves are almost as good as a Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment!"

"Well, the normal monsters in the Chaos Realm are very strong to begin with. So if the developer did not power up the standards of the equipment, then most of the players will get blockaded at the Chaos Realm! The one factor that supports a game are the players, so it's actually wise for the game developers to be considerate for their players." Zhang Yang surmised, as he slid the gloves into his inventory.

Although this pair of gloves was almost as good as a Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment, but there is still a difference between the two tiers. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream already had Violet-Platinum tiered gloves, so of course they would have no interest in it. Zhang Yang could only see it in the form of coins in his Little Merchandise Shop.

Wei Yan Er went to pick the dark red long ancient looking knife. The handle of the knife was molted with stains, and they looked like bloodstains! In 'God's Miracle', there were no differences between a knife and a sword. They were all considered as Swords. Sometimes players could simply wonder, which designer in the game company came up with such a half-assed classification.

[Demon Blade of Death] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed Sword)

Attack: 3,020 - 3,620

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 873

Equip: Increases attack by 10%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 3%.

Equip: After hitting your target, there is 1% to trigger the activation of {Death Rush}, inflicting all enemies within the range of 3X3 meter square

with the effect of {The Pain of Death}, causing 1,000 Shadow Damage to the targets in every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. The effects of {The Pain of Death} cannot be stack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

After viewing the special effects of the weapon, Zhang Yang and the ladies were looking at each other, all of them were shocked!

10% increment of attack! 3% increment of Critical Rate! These two special effects already made the weapon ridiculously powerful! It also had an AoE special effect that dealt damage by a DoT basis! Against a large number of monsters, this weapon would be insane!

In other words, this was the two-handed version of [Dark Enigmatic Sword], and the attack of this weapon was so much higher than the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] itself! After all, the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] sort of 'stole' the AoE attack over as it's special effect. But this [Demon Blade of Death] was born with such a ridiculous special effect on its own!

Wei Yan Er was already staring at the weapon with her large glittering eyes, and she quickly said, "I hereby claim this weapon as mine! Haha!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her and said, "Tsk! Do you know how much money people are willing to pay for this weapon if we are selling it out? Look at the attributes, the additional damage that it offers, and the additional Critical Rate that it offers! Look at it's overpowered, oppressive special effect! People would be willing to spend millions of dollars to buy it! You sure you don't want that money?"

"You're so miserly, noob tank! It's just a few million!" Wei Yan Er hugged the [Demon Blade of Death] as tightly as she could, as if she was worrying that Zhang Yang would jump over and snatch the weapon away from her.

The four of them started laughing at the little girl, as it was really rare for her to actually think of other people being stingy! It was such a rare scene!

Other than the little girl, none of them could wield a two-handed

weapon, so the [Demon Blade of Death] was Wei Yan Er's to take.

Lastly, it was time to review the golden crown.

[Brilliant Crown] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +704

Strength: +202

Agility: +463

Equip: Increases 5% damage and healing effect.

Equip: Increases Maximum Health Point by 1,000 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

"Ice Queen, looks like you've struck the jackpot. This is one fine piece of Leather Armor!" Zhang Yang passed the [Brilliant Crown] over the Sun Xin Yu.

"So true! Congratulation, Sin Yu!" Daffodil Daydream praised and congratulated her.

Sun Xin Yu was satisfied with her new crown. So, she kept it in her inventory for the moment, as she still needed to grind her level up by 5 levels before she was eligible to equip it.

Other than the 3 fine pieces of equipment, Jesse Rogue also 'gifted' them with a [Middle-tier Aura Stone]. This dungeon seemed to really hand out [Middle-tier Aura Stones]. As they had acquired one [Middle-tier Aura Stone] from each of the boss, the total tally had already reached 3 [Middle-tier Aura Stones]. This time, the stone was given to Han Ying Xue, increasing the survivability of the party even further.

However, time was already up right before they were about to open up the entrance to the fifth floor of Treasure Cove. Before they could actually open up the entrance, they were already teleported out from the realm.

Zhang Yang was not in a hurry to enter the fifth floor, because all of

their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and some Super Skills were still on cool down period. So, it would be wiser for them to wait it out before going back to the fifth floor of the Treasure Cove. After all, they were about to engage with the Final boss of the Treasure Cove, it would really be disadvantageous to go in without their Super Skills ready.

While preparing for the final battle in the Treasure Cove, Zhang Yang gave a call to Luo Xin Yan in an attempt to pry about the details concerning Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke. After talking for awhile, Zhang Yang only found out that Luo Xin Yan had only expanded her appetite. She no longer had the intentions of being an underground lover of Liu Wei. She was aiming to become a rich and aboveboard wife now! It was so much better than being an underground mistress!

Liu Wei was clearly never going to marry her on paper. One Sword Stroke was different. Although he was also a spoiled rich kid in a powerful family, he was not as lowly as Liu Wei! Luo Xin Yan managed to seize this opportunity. She would often reveal some classified business information that she got from Liu Wei, straight to One Sword Stroke. That was how the family business of One Sword Stroke, the Sky and Ocean Electronics was able to earn so much money!

Furthermore, Luo Xin Yan was really good in bed. With her skills, she could definitely 'enrapture' him, until he lost sight of everything! That was most probably how she made him her little b*tch, fulfilling all her needs and wants.

So apparently, Luo Xin Yan was willing to accept the call, only because she wanted revenge. Previously, Zhang Yang had humiliated her so much during the interview. So, she called back and said, "Zhang Yang, do you still remember when I took off everything and stood naked in front of you? You actually didn't want my body, even after I had shoved my pussy straight up at you. Now that I'm about to become a wife to the boss of a very prominent company, do you regret not f*cking me up when you had the chance?"

"But there's nothing left to say, even if you regret it now! Don't ever call me, or I'll call the police!"

Pak! She hung up right after she finished her words.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again without saying a word. Still, he had to give it to her. She had played her cards well. She definitely had sharp and unique eyes, to actually mark One Sword Stroke as her 'target' in the first place. Indeed, One Sword Stroke was the best of the best in {{God's Miracle}}. He was earning about 400 million to 500 million a year, inclusive of all sponsorship fees and endorsement fees throughout the year. He was also the spokesman for his own company, even before his company was successful. So he was considered as one of the 'real deal' in the business industries!

Unfortunate for him, One Sword Stroke had always been oppressed by Zhang Yang in this life. Well, he had constantly been the 'permanent runner-up,' for more than half a year already, because of Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang logged into the game again and went straight to the Auction House to purchase a large number of [Herbs], restocking the [Potions] for the upcoming battles. This time, Zhang Yang got lucky! Finally, he has found the recipe for the [Zombie Potion]! So he successfully secured the recipe with 30,000 gold coins in the Auction house.

[Zombie Potion] (Consumable)

Use: If you die when the [Zombie Potion] is still effective, you will be turned into a zombie temporarily to continue the battle. Zombie effect lasts for 30 seconds. After you are turned into a Zombie, you will ignore all attacks, but you can be controlled with Status Restriction Skill. The effects of [Zombie Potion] will last for 1 hour.

Chapter 457: Queen Madisha

Zhang Yang went straight to the warehouse of his guild, and took out all of the [Zombie Moss], and turned them into tons of [Zombie Potion]. Thanks to his {Alchemist's Intuition}, he had also made some transmuted [Zombie Potions]

The transmuted [Zombie Potions] did not only increase the duration of users being transformed into zombies, they also increased the attack of the users after they are being zombified. So, a [Zombie Potion] with Grade 1 Transmutation only gave an additional 5% attack to a player, when the player is zombified. For every increasing level of transmutation, the damage of the zombified players would increase by 5%. So, the highest amount of attack value a zombified player could get would be a total of 50%. This meant that when a player is using a [Zombie Potion] with the highest grade of transmutation, an additional 50% attack would be added on top of the basic attack of the player. That was the limit to it since the highest transmutation grade was only Level 10.

Unfortunately, the [Zombie Potions] that Zhang Yang had made were all Grade 1 and Grade 2 Transmutation only, which could only provide players an additional of 5%, 10% attack. The best he had at the moment were Grade 4s, and he only had managed to make 2 of them.

But it would still be a gain no matter what. It doesn't matter who dies in a battle, as long as they had consumed a [Zombie Potion] before they die, they could all continue to attack, or heal for the next 30 seconds! Zhang Yang and his party were about to engage in battle with the final boss! Now that they have these [Zombie Potions], it would surely be much easier for them to clear out the final floor and slay the boss!

After the cool down periods of their respective {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} were all over, Zhang Yang recruited the ladies back to the party and activated the last entry chance of the [Dimensional Key].

Pak!

Soon after Zhang Yang and the ladies entered the portal before them,

the [Dimensional Key] began to crack a little, and the key began to disperse into dust and flew across the air.

If they are unable to slay the boss within the remaining 12 hours in the realm, Zhang Yang would never have a chance to come back to this realm, ever again! And since that this quest was a one-time quest, this quest, which could possibly grant him the [Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword], shall forever remain forever incomplete, and no one else would ever get the chance to complete it as well!

Rushing through the corridors of the palace and entering the Treasure Cove chamber, the timer started counting down from 12 hours.

Going through the fourth floor until the end, Zhang Yang and the ladies had come well-prepared this time. They had purchased [Torches] this time. The entire floor was really dark and they had zero visibility. It would be wiser to use the [Torches] and grant them limited vision. Each of them held a [Torch] in their hands, and they split up to search for the entrance to the fifth floor. As they had already cleared the entire floor, they did not have to worry about monsters ambushing anymore. In just a brief moment, they had found their way to the fifth floor.

As they walked down the staircases before them that led them deeper down to the Treasure Cove, they saw the entrance to the fifth floor, and they were eager to see what lay beyond that. Everyone was struck with awe, and their breaths were taken away for a second at what lay before their eyes! Yes, this is what a real Treasure Chamber is supposed to look like! Every corner of the floor was filled with mountains of a cryptocrystalline variety of silicas, diamonds the size of fists, chests filled with jewelry and accessories! If this was the reality, even the richest folks of the world would feel shameful!

On top of that, there was a long rack of weapons along one of the walls of the chamber, and a variety of weapons, with weird looking designs. Every single one of the weapons radiated holy auras that were awe-inspiring! Just from the looks of it, these weapons seemed to at least be of legendary grades!

Right beside the long weapon rack, there was another equipment rack. It was stacked with heavy armors, leather armors, cloth armors, all types of armors and equipment! It was a marvelous scene to look at!

Zhang Yang tried to pick up one weapon from the weapon rack, and he had the shock of his life! The weapon could be equipped!

[Dragon Slayer] (Mythical, One-Handed Axe)

Attack: 4,135 - 4,735

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 1,584

Equip: Increases 20% damage dealt.

Equip: After striking your target, there is a 10% rate of increasing your strength by 1,000 points, lasts for 10 seconds.

Required Level: 110

Special addition: Reduces Required Level by 20 Levels.

Special restriction: Can only be used in the Treasure Cove, it will disappear once taken outside.

A Mythical tier weapon! Zhang Yang lost his breath for a moment there. All of the equipment and weapons could be equipped! Although they could not be taken out from Treasure Cove, but at the least, Zhang Yang and the ladies can take advantage of these equipment and weapons when battling the final boss!

The four ladies had also discovered that they could use the equipment. They were equally stunned.

Wei Yan Er simply grabbed hold of some leather armor pieces and heavy armors pieces, and then she equipped them up to check them out, "Wow! These are really some fine and powerful equipment! Let's stay here, and never leave this Treasure Cove, forever!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "It won't matter whether if they are White-Wood or Celestial tier equipment, if we can't get them out from

Treasure Cove! So stop dreaming, and pick the best combinations possible, and get going. We have a boss to slay!"

The five of them went up and picked the equipment and weapons according to their Classes.

Of course, Zhang Yang would naturally pick the [Dragon Slayer] as his main weapon, while he also picked another Mythical tier shield as his secondary equipment.

[Shield of the Faceless Corrupter] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +3,960

Vitality: +3,880

Equip: Absorbs 1,428 damage when hit.

Equip: While being struck, there is a 10% rate of removing 100 defense points from the target.

Equip: Increases Maximum Health Points by 10,000.

Required Level: 110

Special addition: Reduces Required Level by 20 Levels.

Special restriction: Can only be used in the Treasure Cove, it will disappear after leaving the Treasure Cove.

After switching to the newly acquired Mythical Tier equipment and weapon, the total health points of Zhang Yang had reached a total of 219,820 points! His attack had reached 9,412 - 10,012!

Similarly, Han Ying Xue and the ladies had also experienced large improvements on their stats! Although they could not equip shields, and their health points, could not be compared to the health points of a tanker, but their health points had exceeded 150,000 points, with support from the {Vitality Aura}!

Now, the attack power, the survival capabilities and the healing capabilities of the party had sky-rocketed! Instead of feeling joyful, Zhang Yang was worried, "This is just too convenient to be true, the system would

never give us so much help out of the blue. I'm going to assume that the final boss is incredibly powerful and difficult to deal with!"

"Well, that's true! The system suddenly giving each of us a Mythical Tier weapon for free is already suspicious enough! The final boss must be at least a Mythical Tier boss!" Daffodil Daydream nodded and said.

The five of them recalled the final battle on the Island of the Sacred One. The appearance of a Level 110 Mythical Servant boss had really given them a hell of a time. Although the boss was only left with about 1,000,000 health points, they already had an extremely difficult time dealing with it with the boss. Of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue hadn't used their paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Lunar's Dew}, they might have even failed their quest then.

The fear still lingered!

"We have no choice now. Even if there's a sea of fire and blades, we can only endure the pain, and charge through them!" Zhang Yang waved his battle axe and said, "Let's go and have a look at our final boss, see what kind of monster is it this time. Maybe it has 3 heads and 6 arms! Haha!"

"Even if it has 6 heads and 12 arms, I still have the confidence of chopping its heads off, period!" Wei Yan Er was filled with pride and confidence, as she thumped on her flat chest and said.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at her, "Little girl, I think we have warned you many times already... if you really want them to 'bloom' nicely, stop hammering down your chest already! They're going to be concaved in at this rate!"

"You stinky noob tank!" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang, and turned her head away from Zhang Yang furiously, with a humph.

The five of them proceeded forward. There were no monsters at all on the fifth floor. It was strangely quiet and they could only hear their own footsteps. They could not help but to feel a chill down their spines! The four ladies started edging closer to Zhang Yang, making Zhang Yang look like a mother hen 'babysitting' four little chicks!

As they did not have to battle any monsters at all, the five of them arrived at the bottom of the Treasure Cove in about ten minutes. There, they finally encountered the final boss of the dungeon.

[Queen Madisha] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 110

HP: 33,000,000

Defense: 4,900

Note: The founder of Imperial Heaven Empire, the great Queen Madisha. She's well known to be full of conspiracies while being a total femme fatale. She can conquer any man with a charming blink. She is the one and only individual to have actually built an empire that united the world!

Madisha was clad in a magnificently glorious, royal robe. She had a crown on her head, and her body was truly hot and curvy. Her waist was so slender that people might be worried of strong winds actually blowing her torso off, snapping her by the waist! Her boobies were truly 'glorious'. Her hips and *ss were finely shaped as well. Although she has already been transformed into a Spectre, but her appearance had not turned skeletal. She still remained as a beautiful and sexy female human, with a face that lived up to her description, there was an unexplained sense of seduction that mesmerized people, especially men, the moment they laid eyes on her!

She sat on a chair in front of a dressing table, with her back facing Zhang Yang and the ladies, as she combed her long straight hair in black with a very well refined comb. Everyone could see her pretty and mesmerizing face in the mirror.

Well, beauty is also a deadly weapon, and seduction is an even better poison. If Zhang Yang had not been staying with beauties like Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, he might have fallen under the 'spell' of this seductive queen, falling to his knees to submit himself to her!

Han Ying Xue felt a sting in her ego, "Her ass is too huge! And her thighs are really thick! Her boobs must be fake!"

The other three ladies nodded to express their agreements as well! Because as pretty women themselves, it was just affronted to them!

"Silly Yu, go now! Burst the fake boobs of that thousand-year-old b*tch!" Han Ying Xue shoved Zhang Yang's back.

"What the hell! You're such a hoodlum, a female hoodlum!" Zhang Yang took up his axe and charged at the boss.

The aggro range of Madisha was really vast. When Zhang Yang was about 30 meters from where she stood, she had already detected Zhang Yang and stood up from her chair. As she turned around, a lock of black hair shot out at the direction of Zhang Yang like a spear!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield and 'Chiang'! The long hair clashed into the shield and let out a loud and sharp sound!

"What a handsome and strong man!" Madisha charged towards Zhang Yang and as she grabbed hold onto another lock of hair in her hand, she gave a small flick and the lock of hair became as hard as a spear made of something metallic! She shot the 'hair spear' straight at Zhang Yang's eye!

Zhang Yang was only able to prevent the spear from striking that vital part. The 'hair spear' still nicked his face, and blood started flowing.

Sun Xin Yu and the ladies surrounded the boss and began to launch their assault on Madisha. However, although they had already switched their equipment to Mythical Tier and gained a tremendous amount of strength, the damage that the boss received was still substantially reduced, as the level of the boss was at least tens of times higher than their levels!

"I'm so lonely! You look strong, come, ravage me!" Madisha stuck out her moist, pink tongue as she gazed at Zhang Yang with glistening eyes, trying to tease Zhang Yang. Her attacks were totally contradicting her words, as she lashed out at him at full force! She coiled and lashed her hair spear at Zhang Yang, and every stab was not far from Zhang Yang's throat, ears, nose, and other vital parts!

"What the f*ck! What a sick woman!" Zhang Yang tried his best to continue evading the blows. Although players would not die immediately

even if they were struck in their vital spots, however, if their throats are pierced, players would not be able to drink [Potions]. If the eyes of the players are stabbed, then they would not be able to see. There will be about 10 seconds of 'recovery period'!

These new effects were supposed to be gradually made available for the players to experience, but who knew that they would already have a taste of it in the Treasure Cove!

"Little man, are you worried that your stick is not large enough to satisfy me?" Madisha teased Zhang Yang with a ridiculously lustful tone, as she gazed at him hungrily with glazed eyes and a tongue that lolled over her lower lip.

Chapter 458: Bloody-Shadow Strike

"... What kind of queen is this! What a shameless b*tch!" Daffodil Daydream had finally lost it.

Han Ying Xue sent a private message over to Zhang Yang saying, "Silly Yu, the boss is questioning your capability!"

Zhang Yang laughed, and replied, "Should I be offended? Well, you've seen how capable I am!"

"You hoodlum!" Han Ying Xue blushed, with a slight frown on her face as she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

Madisha sniffed the air a little and revealed a shocked face, and suddenly laughed knowingly, "Huh? These 4 girls are still virgins? Little man, seriously?"

"Cough!" Zhang Yang almost choked in his own saliva, and he could not help but sigh, "This boss could actually sniff out your virginities! This game is that intrusive huh? Awesome! Though, who knows if it's real or not!" He turned his head to look at Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream.

"You hoodlum! What are you looking at!" Han Ying Xue snapped at him.

"What a shameless boss!" Daffodil Daydream was also blushing.

Sun Xin Yu did not even say a word, but she began to lunge out rapidly, with the two daggers in her hands, like a ferocious t-rex. Obviously, she wasn't calm at the moment!

"Haha! Very good! The blood of the virgins can be used for my facial care, and little man can stay to rid me of my loneliness!" Madisha wetted her glistening crimson lips with her tongue, making them look even more 'sexy'.

"No wonder Imperial Heaven's Empire perished in the past. With a whore of a queen like this, all the people of that empire were like grass by the roadside!" Zhang Yang was shouting in rage.

"No wonder the 4 princes looked totally different! I wonder, how many 'dads' were involved in 'producing' them!"

"Well, the number of 'dad' involved is still a small issue. Judging from their weird-*ss looks, I'm afraid that their 'dads' might not even be human! This boss has really 'heavy' tastes! Haha!"

"You bastards!" Madisha suddenly let out a cry of rage as the words from Zhang Yang and the ladies provoked her. As she threw out her hair spear at Zhang Yang, a powerful impact instantly blew Zhang Yang off his feet. Giving no opportunity for Zhang Yang to regain his strength and get back on his feet, the boss immediately lashed out again, and impaled him to the ground!

"Zhang Yang ---" the four ladies were screaming his name at the same time, "Are you alright?"

"If you got stabbed in the middle of your chest, would you still be alright? There's a freaking hole in my chest! Argh!" Although Zhang Yang had already set the pain-receptor function to the lowest, he was still struck by an excruciating pain, and he had to grit his teeth to prevent himself from shouting out anymore. Without hesitation, he swung his axe at the hair spear that had just pierced his chest!

Although the hair spear of the boss was really sharp, it was still made of hair after all. How could mere hair be compared to a Mythical tier weapon! The axe sliced cleanly through the hair!

Zhang Yang leaped to his feet immediately after that, but his chest still had a huge hole in it, and fresh blood was oozing out right of the chest wound! He realized that he now had an additional negative effect!

[Bleed]: Loses 5,000 health points in every 3 seconds. This effect cannot be canceled by any defense skills or damage reduction skills. Lasts for 15 seconds.

"Blood, fresh blood, look at that, just spectacularly beautiful!" Madisha was drunk in ecstasy as she sang those words. She raised her right hand up, and her hair started to form together again, and it eventually formed into another hair spear! She sent it towards Zhang Yang again!

Zhang Yang raised up his axe, and slashed at the hair, "You ugly old b*tch! I'm going to slice your hair clean off your head for what you did to me!"

"Would she actually get bald from that? Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er burst into laughter.

Madisha had always highly regarded her own beauty. Now that she had been called 'ugly old b*tch' by Zhang Yang and 'bald' by Wei Yan Er, of course she would be enraged until she screamed and cried.

"Demonic Hair Barrage"!

As the boss let out tears of rage, she also cried out a skill name. Madisha's black hair began to curl around, like snakes intertwining around together, forming black arrows made of hair, all around her head, before all of them were shot out into the surroundings, in all possible directions!

These hair arrows were unavoidable. Zhang Yang and the ladies were caught in the attack. They were skewered by the arrows as they desperately tried to evade. This was how oppressive a Mythical boss could be!

Everyone was inflicted with a damage of about 40,000 points and they were also inflicted with {Bleed} effects. Zhang Yang's first {Bleed} effect was still kicking and ticking, so he was inflicted with a second layer of {Bleed}, and the negative effects started stacking up. Now, Zhang Yang was losing a total of 10,000 health points by every passing second!

"Mythical bosses are no laughing matter! This is one heck of a strong and powerful boss!" Everyone was shaken up. Each of them had to activate their skills to slow down the effect of {Bleed} as they needed to reduce the stress that Han Ying Xue was experiencing right now.

But that was the first 'dish' of the boss battle! Just a brief moment after she activated her {Demonic Hair Barrage}, she slammed her palm against the ground, which was made of green jade. As she twisted her hand, it broke through the jade and sunk into the ground. With a powerful grip, the ground trembled a little and she actually pulled up a large part of the

ground, like lifting up a blanket from a bed, without removing it completely!

Madisha let out a deafening scream as she began to shake the ground with her left hand that currently buried beneath the surface of the ground. The entire ground shook, sending waves of the shattered rocks that shot up into the sky. The scene was extremely magnificent!

It was like a 7.0 magnitude earthquake! Zhang Yang and the ladies were shaken up to the point that they could not remain standing. At the same time, the shattered rocks from the ground were launched at them, and each small pebble of these shattered rocks inflicted a damage of about 10,000 or 20,000 points!

The apocalyptic scene lasted for about 10 seconds before Madisha retracted her left hand. Then, she went back to using her right hand, forming up more hair spears which she directed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was so terrified that he quickly activated his {Shield Wall}! Although he had removed his Titan Set Armor to wear some Mythical tiered equipment, he had still kept his [Titan Chest Plate] equipped. This particular piece of equipment was really awesome in it's own way! With the two special effects, this piece of equipment was almost as good as a Mythical Tier equipment!

With his {Shield Wall} activated, Zhang Yang's health bar was regenerating by 10% for every second that passed. Currently, he had about 220,000 Maximum Health Points, that meant he would heal about 22,000 health points per second! This amount of healing was already higher than the healing capabilities of Han Ying Xue!

Although the attack of the boss was really powerful in a sense, once Zhang Yang activates his {Shield Wall}, every single attack from the boss becomes a gentle touch. As the boss delivered what that was possibly her most fearsome combo yet, Zhang Yang's HP was actually increasing, instead of decreasing.

"Little man, you're really tenacious! You're 'lasting' longer than I expected! I like it!" Madisha was grinning coldly as she sent more of her

hair spears at Zhang Yang, one after another. Her attacks were really fast and deadly!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I'm not a 'quick' gunner, lasting for 30 minutes is a piece of cake for me!"

Han Ying Xue heard him, and she immediately blushed, because she had experienced it firsthand herself, witnessing his immense stamina! She was embarrassed, yet joyful at the same time, a sense of pride filling her heart. But, she did not dare let down her guard even for a second in healing up the party. Other than Zhang Yang who had his {Shield Wall}, which kept him practically immune from all attacks at the moment, the other party members were losing their health, like crazy! They were not far from death! If the boss were to activate another wave of {Demonic Hair Barrage}, they would definitely be instantly-killed!

The battle continued on for a brief moment before Madisha let out another deafening cry. She activated her {Demonic Hair Barrage}, and shot her hair arrows into the surroundings. Her hair literally filed up every corner of the area!

As the hair sliced through everyone, the five of them really hit by 'jackpots'! The air was red with the mist of blood, and every one of them simply looked gory! Daffodil Daydream was worst off. One of her eyes was skewered by one of the hair arrows! She did not just lose a lot of blood, but she was half blind! She could not even aim at the boss properly, and her attacks were missing!

Next up was Wei Yan Er. A hair arrow had went straight through her chest! Fortunately for her, although the wound looked really nasty, it did not affect the attack power of the player. Everything was just a visual effect.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This boss is really nasty! The little girl is already having trouble developing. Yet, the boss still wants to damage that area! Sigh, this is so inhumane!"

Wei Yan Er immediately screamed and whined!

Madisha became more ferocious by the passing seconds. She began to

act even more vigorously upon Zhang Yang! As she continuously struck Zhang Yang's armor, the sound of her hair spear clashing on his armor could almost make a drum kit!

Suddenly, the boss sent her hair spear right through Zhang Yang's chest. Although Zhang Yang was inflicted with damage, the part of the royal robe that covered her butt suddenly got corroded! A large hole quickly expanded, and part of her fair *ss was revealed through that hole!

Zhang Yang was shocked when he saw what happened! "Huh?" Then, he realized that the boss had been afflicted with a new negative effect: Defense Decay (1 Layer), reduces 100 points of defense.

This was actually the special effect of the [Shield of the Faceless Corrupter], having a 10% rate to trigger a reduction of 100 defense points. But, no one would have thought the visual effects of this debuff would look like this! The developer of the game had to gall to actually 'expose' the boss so blatantly!

Zhang Yang was pleased to see that, so he laughed and said, "Well, this is the real deal when it comes to 'Cripple Defense'! If the {Cripple Defense} of the warriors did this, then, when people use 5 layers of {Cripple Defense}, tsk tsk tsk! It would surely be interesting to have that! Hahaha!"

"Shameless!"

"Pervert!"

The ladies scolded him.

Madisha was not bothered at all, having her butt exposed like that. She continued to wield her hair spear like an experienced general in a battle field. Every single blow from her spear was striking not far from Zhang Yang's vital points.

But, the special effect of {Defense Decay} was triggered repeatedly! Zhang Yang must be extremely lucky, today! The magnificent looking, royal robe of Madisha began to be filled with more holes. After just a brief moment, the royal robe had become a fish net, instead of a royal robe!

Holes littered all over the entire robe!

Madisha let out a soft roar, and then she moved her left hand, and grabbed hold a fistful of fabric. With a strong tug, she tore off the entire royal robe! It was already ruined, completely, and it infuriated her so. By taking the robe away, the boss exposed her fair, naked body! The heavenly, blessed body of the boss was definitely a marvelous creation that exceeded nature. The parts that were supposed to be big could not be grasped entirely in one palm, while the parts that were supposed to be small could comfortably fit in a hand!

Annoyingly, mosaic boxes covered up the upper part and the lower part of the boss' 'very important' parts!

"Mosaic-boxed movies and games are the reason why the human race is still underdeveloped!" Zhang Yang let out a miserable cry into the sky!

Although Madisha was battling the five of them with her naked body exposed, there was no sense of shame on her face at all. Instead, she was gazing at Zhang Yang sleazily. She would even slap her own curvy ass, winking at Zhang Yang while saying, "Young man, don't you want to release it in me? Once, maybe?"

Although this is a virtual game, the players were well immersed into the game, thanks to the current wonder of Virtual Reality. These overly realistic effects of the game might just make people forget, that this is just game sometimes! Instead, it would fool people into thinking that it was the second reality!

Zhang Yang felt a rush, and his heart rate shot up. Fortunately, he had more control over his brains, than his 'gun'. If he really was a man with an insatiable lust, then he would already have slept with all his sexy secretaries, and his beautiful models over and over again! As for Zhang Yang, he was happy to let his eyes roam more than his 'gun'. He would only sleep with the women he liked, like Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu.

"Hahaha! My will is strong! Are you trying to seduce me? You're way out of your league!" Zhang Yang laughed, as he continued to swing his axe at the boss!

"You must be an 'incompetent' man! No real men in the world can possibly resist my charm! And there never will be!" Madisha let out an angry roar as her eyes began to glow red. Likewise, the hair spear in her hands instantly turned bloody red! "{Bloody-Shadow Strike}!"

The spear struck!

Zhang Yang raised his shield high up as his instincts kicked in. He activated his {Block} reflexively. But, the spear of the boss was unstoppable! It actually went straight through the Mythical Tier shield and right into Zhang Yang's chest, and once again, nailing Zhang Yang to the ground!

'-235,160!'

'Ding! You died!'

'Ding! You are resurrected because of {Rise Anew}!'

In just an instant, Zhang Yang experienced the sensation of being alive, to being dead, then from being dead, to being alive again! Holy sheet! Even with his {Block} activated, he could not block against the {Bloody-Shadow Strike} from the boss. If it weren't for Han Ying Xue's {Rise Anew}, Zhang Yang would have been dead, and the rest of the party members would have followed him to the graveyard!

That must be the ultimate skill of the boss! That was why the skill {Block}, which can be used every 6 seconds, could not block against this attack!

"Silly Yu, you still had about 160,000 health points before the boss struck you with her ultimate skill right? So, what really happened? How did you die right after one hit?" when facing an insta-kill, it did not matter how capable a healer is, there would be no room to even start healing in the first place! Han Ying Xue could only stare in shock at Zhang Yang when he was being instant-killed, she hated this kind of situation the most as she could not do anything.

"The basic attack of that ultimate attack was about 300,000 points. That attack still struck me with about 240,000 damage, even with my defense!"

Zhang Yang grit his teeth, thinking about it. His current Maximum Health Point was about 220,000 points, he would not survive the attack of the boss, even if he had full health!

It seems that the hardest challenge of this boss battle was finding a way to survive the {Bloody-Shadow Strike}.

Up till now, Zhang Yang and his party had taken out a total of 5,000,000 health points of the boss. It did seem to be a lot, by the looks of it, but Madisha was a Mythical boss with a Maximum Health of 30,000,000 points! So 5,000,000 is just one portion out of six, which was actually lesser than 20%!

Two minutes later, Madisha's eyes started glowing red again, it was time for the boss to lash out with her second {Bloody-Shadow Strike}!

Zhang Yang took a look at his own health bar, and he saw that he still had about 180,000 health points left. After making a calculated decision, he activated his {Last Vigor}, boosting his health points up to 243,314/286,120!

‘-238,342!’

The spear of Madisha once again went right through Zhang Yang's shield and stabbed straight into Zhang Yang's chest! The strike was so mighty, that no words could describe its power!

{Berserker's Heal}!

‘+286,120!’

Zhang Yang healed himself back to his full health state in just an instant, and he started retaliating with ferocity!

"This was the reason why the system gave us so many Mythical equipment before the boss battle! Without these Mythical equipment to support and boost our health bars, even though guildmaster's equipment was on par, it would still have not been enough to go up against a Mythical boss!" Daffodil Daydream let out a sigh.

The Maximum Health of Zhang Yang, before he switched his equipment

with the Mythical Tier equipment was about 90,000 points. Even if he activated his {Last Vigor}, he would still be instantly-killed by the boss' {Bloody-Shadow Strike}. Furthermore, a mere 90,000 health points could only last against 3 hits of the boss, as each of the boss's attack inflicted about 40,000 damage! If Han Ying Xue healed him just a little slower during the battle, Zhang Yang would have died as well! So, be it the ultimate skill of the boss, or the regular attacks of the boss, Zhang Yang would hardly survive, with 90,000 health points only!

Zhang Yang had already activated his {Shield Wall} and {Last Vigor}, he had activated the special effect of his equipment [Heart of the Death Knight], in order to stay alive against the assaults of the boss! Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang had a long HP bar and rage point bar. His {Shield Wall} cooled down in 3 minutes, which allowed him to repeatedly use it in relatively short bursts. Therefore, he could spam his {Shield Wall} twice within one cycle, before he repeats the entire process again!

Normally, the tanker would put their Skill Points into their {Block}, because of the skill {Block} was the most practical skill that a tanker could wish for! This dungeon had a restriction whereby only players below Level 100 were eligible to enter. So, regular players would only have 9 Skill Points in hand, which allowed players to elevate one of the skills to the max level. After adding all their Skill Points onto their {Block}, naturally they would not be able to add one single Skill Point on their {Shield Wall}. So, if players ever step foot into this dungeon without increasing the level of their {Shield Wall}, they would cry miserably when they find out about this.

However, Zhang Yang had earned at least 26 Skill Points throughout the game up till now. Not only could he upgrade his {Block} and {Warrior's Will} to their max level, he could also upgrade his {Shield Wall} to Level 9, which was only one level short of full mastery!

Therefore, only the best among the best party, in all eight servers would be able to clear this special dungeon!

Chapter 459: Five Floors, All Clear!

Although Madisha was very aggressive, Sun Xin Yu and the other three ladies were not made of mushy papers! Even though their levels were tens of levels lower than the boss, and their attacks had been weakened due to the level gap penalty, they managed to perform outstandingly with the Mythical equipment, and were dishing out a decent amount of firepower! The health bar of the boss plummeted rapidly by every passing second!

This was indeed an extremely difficult battle for all of them. The health bar of the boss was just too long, and everyone in the party felt the massive stress knowing that none of them could afford a tiny mistake. The tanker could not fall, the healer could not fail, and the DPS players were a must in order to bring down the boss, and claim victory over this boss battle! One DPS player short would delay the battle by about 4 to 5 minutes, which would be sufficient for the boss to 'have fun' and wipe them all out!

The battle progressed for an agonizing 13 minutes. The health bar of the boss had finally been reduced down to 20%! It was finally entering the 'Slaughtering State'!

Without the need for Zhang Yang to say so, Sun Xin Yu and the other two DPS role ladies took out their [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], and gulped them down without any delay! Followed by the activation of their most painful and powerful skills, they began to launch their assaults onto the boss!

"{Demonic Hair Barrage}!"

Madisha screamed in rage, and her hair formed into arrows, which scattered all over the place, like bullets!

The party suffered serious injuries, as they were all inflicted with damage points of about 40,000 each. They were afflicted with {Bleed}, which carried a DoT effect.

"Hahaha! Just die! There's no need to struggle any further!" Madisha let out a manic cry, as she dug her hand into the ground once more, like she

did before, shaking the earth as if she was shaking her own blanket in her own bed, causing countless of shattered rocks to shoot up from the ground, giving the five of them some very hard hits!

"Gather to me now, everyone!" Zhang Yang quickly let out a shout, as he had been waiting to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression}. As everyone reached his side, he activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} and reduced the 90% damage that they were bound to receive in the following attack.

However, the {Vanguard's Aggression} would only last for 10 seconds. The moment the effect of this skill was over, the boss swung her head around and arrows made of her hair flew off her head once more, piercing everyone around her until they looked like running, bipedal hedgehogs!

Under the pressure of the boss's assaults, Han Ying Xue had pushed herself beyond her capabilities as she could no longer maintain the high pace of healing and maintaining the health bars of the entire party. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had also used {Rearm} to refresh his skill for immediate use again, so he no longer could activate another {Vanguard's Aggression} right after that. "Argh ---" Daffodil Daydream was the first to let out a miserable cry as her health bar was emptied out by the DOT effect of {Bleed}! Then, she collapsed and crumpled to the ground!

However, everyone had already taken a [Zombie Potion]! Daffodil Daydream immediately transformed into a zombie, and crawled right back on her feet! Then, she continued to attack the boss!

Although the [Zombie Potions] that they took were only 'Grade 2 Transmuted', as the effect of the [Zombie Potion] kicked in, the players that are transformed into zombies would be given an additional 10% attack! So the attack power of Daffodil Daydream became much more powerful than her attack power compared to when she was still 'alive'! She used her fireball attacks to bombard the boss as hard as she could!

Just a few seconds later, Wei Yan Er had also joined in the 'zombie party'. As she let out a miserable scream, she collapsed onto the ground and then scrambled right back up to her feet. Then, she took up her giant axe, and began to slash at the boss, as hard as she could!

Sun Xin Yu wasn't able to hold on for much longer either, and in just a brief moment, she collapsed in her own pool of blood and died. As the effect of the [Zombie Potion] kicked in, she also started to crawl back up on her feet like how Daffodil Daydream and Wei Yan Er did. They could still channel their damage output onto the boss for another 30 seconds after their 'deaths'!

10%!

The boss was left with the remaining 3,000,000 health points!

"Use your {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! Just use them!" Zhang Yang screamed. Because players would only turn into zombies for 30 seconds before they literally 'die'. If they did not use their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} during this period of time when their attack power was boosted by an additional 10%, it would be a total waste!

Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream nodded, and they activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} as they were still zombies!

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Three virtual shadows emerged from each of their bodies, and turned into human silhouettes which held heavy swords in their hands, before charging at the boss swiftly. Instantly, shadows of swords flashed across the body of the boss as the health bar of the boss plummeted rapidly!

Although the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} could not gain any additional enhancements in terms of the basic attack power of the skill itself, or the adding of any values to the player's physical or magical attack, the skill would still get boosted by beneficial effects or potions, based on percentage-figured rates. offered by beneficial effects or potions! Just like the usage of [Power Potion], transmuted [Zombie Potion] and other equipment that provided additional attack in term of percentages, would modify the final attack of the skill.

Mythical equipment could increase damage or healing effects by 70%, and with the additional 10% increase on attack power, provided by the [Zombie Potion (Grade 2 Transmutation)], each basic attack of the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} was increased by up to 18,000 damage!

Furthermore, the Chaos Damage attribute was not restricted or weakened by the 'Level Gap Suppression' of the game. So this 18,000 damage would fully strike the boss, and the combo effect of this skill would continue until the skill ends!

The three {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} inflicted a total damage of 540,000 points to the boss! There were also other attacks in the meantime! The health bar of the boss was rapidly reduced down to 2,000,000 points!

"We should be able to do this! Let's pick up the pace and do it even better!"

Because the players are invulnerable when they are in 'Zombie Mode', they needed no healing at all! So Han Ying Xue only had to make sure Zhang Yang and herself do not die before the boss does. This was the ideal moment in time for Han Ying Xue to showcase her power! Activating {Healing Bond}! This skill healed both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue herself at the same time!

1,800,000! 1,500,000! 1,100,000!

The boss was already left with less than 4% of health at the moment, but the effect of [Zombie Potion] on Sun Xin Yu and the other two ladies had ended! Each of them collapsed to the ground, for good this time! They would stay dead until they resurrect themselves later.

The assaults of the boss were becoming more aggressive than before! It seemed that her {Bloody-Shadow Strike} no longer had a cool down period, all of a sudden! Right after the boss struck out with her {Bloody-Shadow Strike}, she already activated another {Bloody-Shadow Strike}, a few seconds later!

{Titan's Shield}!

Zhang Yang was forced to activate his final life-saving ultimate skill! He shielded himself with a shield effect that could absorb a total of 300,000 damage, and survived the boss' {Bloody-Shadow Strike}.

"Witch Snow, quickly! Time to use our paired skill! I don't think we can

hold on for much longer!" Zhang Yang quickly reached his out for Han Ying Xue's hand.

They grabbed hold of each other. Then, they activated their paired skills - {Blizzard's Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!

At the same instant, the hair spears in Madisha's hand began to turn bloody red again. It was obvious, that she was preparing to launch another {Bloody-Shadow Strike}!

The sky was filled with the beam of the moonlight, and the ground was filled with frost and snow! Snowflakes were drifting slowly down, from the heavens!

‘-5,000!’

‘-5,000!’

...

The health bar of the boss began to reduce by 5,000 points in each second!

Truth to be told, this set of paired skills wasn't that powerful. The damage per second was only 5,000 points! But the advantage of using the paired skills, was that the users would become invincible throughout the activation of the skills! Not even a boss could interrupt them. It was like giving out a total of 150,000 damage for free! Furthermore, the users of paired skills could also take advantage of the 30 seconds of invincibility to wait out for their skills' cool down periods!

30 seconds later, Madisha was still left with a total of 950,000 health points!

"Die! All of you! Just die!" As her life was about to end soon, Madisha lost her interest in teasing and seducing Zhang Yang, instead, she looked like a mad lady, fighting for her life! She kept on spamming her {Demonic Hair Barrage}! The {Bleed} effect on Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had already been eliminated when they went into their invincible forms. But under the crazy bombardment of {Demonic Hair Barrage} from the boss, they were once again inflicted with the [Bleed] effect, and within a brief period of 10

seconds, the [Bleed] effect on them were already stacked up by 4 layers!

Now that Han Ying Xue could no longer keep up in maintaining the health bars of Zhang Yang and herself, she focused on healing Zhang Yang until the last possible second, before she let out a miserable scream and collapsed onto the ground. After that, she was turned into a zombie. She crawled back onto her feet.

"You can stop healing me already and use your {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} now, because I can also become a zombie myself. Try to reduce the health points of the boss by as much as possible!"

"Alright!"

Han Ying Xue activated her {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, and began to cast the spell for her {Punishment Ray}. Although the magical damage of the {Punishment Ray} wasn't really that high, with all the Mythical Tier equipment supporting Han Ying Xue, the basic damage of the skill was boosted up to 20,000 points!

900,000! 800,000!

"Argh!" without Han Ying Xue healing him up, Zhang Yang could only hold on for another 4 to 5 seconds before he met his 'doom'! But right after collapsing onto the ground, Zhang Yang turned into a zombie and crawled back right up to his feet, and once again engaged in battle with the boss.

"Guildmaster! You can do this!"

"Noob tank! Don't let me down! Or I'll forever look down on you!"

"Do you best."

Sun Xin Yu and the two ladies lay dead on the ground, while they tried to cheer for Zhang Yang through the party channel.

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes and said, "Why aren't you guys cheering for me?"

"... cousin sis, are you a DPSer in the first place?"

Han Ying Xue kept silent.

It was Zhang Yang's turn to activate his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! At the same time, he also activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}. The scene was so much merrier when two skills were activated at the same time, on the boss!

700,000! 500,000! 300,000! 100,000!

On the crucial moment, the effect of [Zombie Potion] on Han Ying Xue ended! She collapsed to the ground and died! At this crucial moment, Zhang Yang was all alone on the battlefield!

{Killing Cleave}!

‘-59,821!’

Zhang Yang began to feel anxious, as he knew that the effect of the [Zombie Potion] on him would only last for another 5 seconds! If he lost this battle now, even though they still had about 11 hours left, all of their super skills that had long cool down periods, had already been used up! Without the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} and paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}, it would be impossible for them to slay the boss!

So Zhang Yang had to do it, this time!

However, there was a side effect to being ‘Invincible’ as well! Zhang Yang could no longer acquire Rage Points from receiving damage!

{Block}!

‘-5,930!’ Damage reflected!

+30 Rage Points.

‘-11,860!’ {Shield Bash}!

The boss still had about 24,000 health points, and the effective time of the [Zombie Potion] was only 2 seconds away from expiring!

At that moment, Han Ying Xue and the ladies had almost forgotten to breathe as they were so anxious to see Zhang Yang making it through. They held their breaths, hoping that Zhang Yang would not fail at the very last moment!

"Noob tank! If you dare to let the boss live this time, I'm going to feed you rat poison!" The encouragement from Wei Yan Er was always so special and 'heartwarming'.

What the hell! This little girl!

Zhang Yang wielded his axe even harder, swiping its edge across the vital spots of the boss and inflicting a damage of more than 15,000 points, boosting Zhang Yang's Rage Bar up to 50 points!

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-30,212!’

Right after the strike, the effect of the [Zombie Potion] was over! Zhang Yang collapsed onto the ground on his face, and he just stayed quietly on the ground, dead.

"Argh ---" Madisha had also let out a miserable scream, as she fell to her knees, slumping over. The surroundings were peaceful once again.

‘Ding! Congratulations for being the First Party in the server to slay a Mythical Tier Boss, your glorious deeds shall be remembered forever in the Historical List of the world. As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your party name will be published on the Historical List, allowing the world to praise you!’

A request to key in the party name popped up in front of Zhang Yang's screen!

"Did we clear it?"

The four ladies were not sure about it. After all, they had not received any system notification like Zhang Yang did.

"Yes! We have cleared it!" Zhang Yang announced it in the party channel, "And, we have gotten another First Clear for an Open World Boss!"

"Oh yeah!" Other than Sun Xin, the ladies cheered in joy.

"So, release your souls and get back to your dead bodies, and start picking them up! This is a real Mythical Tier boss! We're rich!"

The five of them quickly released their souls and began to run all the way back to their dead bodies. But, the graveyard was located in a garden within the city. It took them roughly 20 minutes to get all the way back to the fifth floor of the Treasure Cove!

The moment they were resurrected, there was no time for them to recover back their statuses. All of them were busy picking up all of the items and equipment on the ground as quickly as possible. There is a time limit for the corpse of the boss to remain, before it disappears! If the loot disappears from the ground, then they would all be in 'ruins'! All of their efforts throughout the 5 floors would mean nothing!

Chapter 460: Reward? Rewardsss

Zhang Yang stepped up and inserted the now-customary promotional phase into the input box. "Silky Soft Bras! Providing you the best protection for your assets! Lone Desert Smoke."

As such, the server proceeded to announce the victory notification throughout China.

As the rewards, all of them obtained 10 gold coins and 500 Union Reputation points. However, there was no SP rewards but a Luck Attribute point. There was also a Level 4 Gemstone reward which were given, based on the players' main attributes. Naturally, Zhang Yang obtained a Vitality Gemstone.

It did not take long for players throughout China to start an uproar. Under any condition, it would be extremely tough for one to search for a Violet-Platinum boss. And yet, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to take down a Mythical tier boss, with just a party of five! None of that made any sense! Of course, none of them knew about the chamber that was filled with Mythical tiered equipment. They basically had a trial run of Mythical Equipment against a Mythical-tiered boss.

Greensleeves Prince, Sky Shaman, Snow Seeker, and other guild masters who were on friendly terms with Zhang Yang sent their congratulations. One Sword Stroke also sent a rather polite private message. Zhang Yang had a feeling, that perhaps One Sword Stroke wanted to make amends with Zhang Yang.

After replying to a bunch of messages, Zhang Yang set the conversations aside and placed his attention on the boss loot. Even though the party was equipped with full sets of Mythical tiered equipment, they were only available for use within this Treasure Cove. As much as they could dream, the system would never allow them to exit the premises with the equipment.

As the final boss of this place, Queen Madisha naturally provided luxurious drops. There were four radiant pieces of equipment on the floor.

Three of them were a ring, and a necklace, and a magic staff. The remaining drops were random books scattered all over the floor.

As per usual, Wei Yan Er looted the drops, while Zhang Yang was in charge of distributing them. However, if he waits for Wei Yan Er to run back here, the loot might disappear anytime soon. Zhang Yang then proceeded to pick up a blue colored, frosty ring.

[Frost Vengeance Ring] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +407

Strength: +194

Dexterity: +194

Equip Effect: Increases 1,200 Maximum HP.

Equip Effect: Increases attack and healing effect by 5%

Equip Effect: Increases 50% Ice Elemental attack of your weapon.

[unidentified]

Level: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Level.

Everyone arrived soon after, and their eyes popped out when they saw the properties of the ring. It was a Mythical tier ring! Even though they were wearing similarly tiered equipment on their bodies at the moment, they were all 'Cinderella's Glass Shoes'. Upon leaving, the equipment would vanish into thin air. The ring, however, was the real deal. They could be worn, traded, sold and most importantly, brought out of this place!

Han Ying Xue frowned, perturbed by a dissonance in the attributes of the equipment. "Dummy? This ring is clearly meant for physical classes. If so, why does one of the equip effect adds 50% Ice attack? Those are what Cryomancers look out for, don't they?"

The other girls cocked their heads, expecting an explanation from Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed at their reactions and explained, "Don't forget, that the moment a single player reaches Level 100, the system would commence with the Inheritance Patch!" Zhang Yang wagged his finger at them. "Warriors, Knights, and even Thieves would be eligible for an Inheritance called the Frost Blade Fighter. The Inheritance would layer all their regular attacks with the Ice element. Hence, this ring is made specifically for them!"

Everyone nodded their heads. Daffodil Daydream interjected. "I'd say, this ring is already extremely powerful, despite not having the Ice effect boost!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "True that. But the real source of this ring's power is the lowered level requirement! Think about it, players around would only be wearing Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment at most. But, by having this Level 110 Mythical equipment on, you would stand heads and shoulders above them all!"

"Nyeh! The boss had only dropped four pieces of equipment." Wei Yan Er pouted her lips discontentedly.

"Hmph. Icy, Little Brat. I want both of you to discuss on who should be getting this ring. Even though the Ice elemental boost is of no help for now, the stats of the ring would already be a major upgrade for the both of you. Next time, when you obtain better equipment, you can take this ring and sell it off. I reckon that players would love these sorts of equipment, with lowered level requirements. Especially, when they are rings or accessories. Perhaps, this ring could even be sold for 10,000,000 gold coins!" said Zhang Yang, with a straight face.

Wei Yan Er shook her head immediately. "No, no. I don't feel like it!" In truth, she wanted the ring, but it also felt like she was carrying 10 million dollars of cash in hand. The fear of being stared at, or perhaps the pestering had made her reject the ring.

As for Sun Xin Yu, she had always been pampering the little brat. Without hesitation, she gave the ring to Wei Yan Er. The little brat was so happy that she started calling her - "elder sister" hugging her so sincerely,

that Han Ying Xue was soon filled with envy and jealousy. She had even fish hooked the little brat by the mouth and had dragged her away from Sun Xin Yu.

Zhang Yang laughed for a little while, and picked up a second ring. This ring looked and felt extremely solid in his hand. It had a yellowish hue around the ring which reminded him of mother nature itself, and various runic inscriptions that were not unlike those on the One Ring.

[Great Earth Ring] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +432

Strength: +83

Dexterity: +83

Equip Effect: Absorbs 167 damage when attacked.

Equip Effect: Increases 1,500 Maximum HP.

Equip Effect: Increases 2% Critical Strike rate.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Level.

"Hoh! A powerful tank ring!" cried the little brat overdramatically.

"Noobie tank! It's your treat tomorrow!"

"Yeah! That's right. Since your main story quest is about to reach the end, you must treat us with a fabulous dinner when you do!" said Han Ying Xue, joining the fray.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and smiled. He was happy, but he pretended to be angry. "Treat? The last time I remember, you guys were too lazy to go out! I even made reservations for the last dinner. What happened? You guys just bailed on me!"

Zhang Yang took the ring and kept it in his inventory. Right now, the stats prior to Identification were already good. He would be even happier, after Identifying the ring. With that thought in mind, Zhang Yang

snickered happily and quietly to himself.

Before Zhang Yang could pick up the next equipment, Han Ying Xue barged in and demanded to be given a go at picking the equipment. She snatched a long necklace on the floor and examined it. The necklace had a long, black chain, and an amulet with a deep black-green jade affixed in the center. It gave out a soothing aura.

[Heart of Jade] (Mythical, Necklace)

Vitality: +400

Intelligence: +202

Spirit: +202

Equip Effect: Increase 600 Maximum MP.

Equip Effect: Increase healing rate by 10%

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Level.

Without a doubt, this necklace should go to Han Ying Xue. However, instead of keeping it in her inventory, she tossed the necklace to Zhang Yang and said, "Help me Identify this."

Zhang Yang frowned deeply, as Wei Yan Er snickered evilly by his side. She also took the [Frost Vengeance Ring] and passed it to Zhang Yang, asking him to Identify the ring as well. Neither of them had the slightest sense of embarrassment.

The last piece of equipment was a Magic Staff. At first glance, everyone would be impressed at the structure and build of it. The staff was purely made out of a crystal-like material. It gave out a bright, and soft, green-emerald radiance.

[Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life] (Mythical, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 4,024 – 4,624

Equip Effect: Increases Magic damage and Healing rate by 14%

Equip Effect: 1% chance to heal yourself during every attack on a target. Healing rate is equal to the damage you have dealt.

Use: Summons the Life Tree to protect you. Grants Invulnerability for 1 second.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: This powerful magic staff contains the essence of the Life Tree. It contains a portion of the power from the Tree of Life!

Everyone gasped in awe as they read the equipment description. The effects were too outrageous. Han Ying Xue took the Magic Staff into her hands and asked, "Say, if we take this staff, and sell it, how much do you think that it would be worth?"

Zhang Yang scratched his chin. "Hard to say... Even if no one fights for it, it could be sold for 5,000,000 in the Little Merchandise Shop. But if we placed it in the Auction House, it could go as high as 10 million, or even 20 million! This Magic Staff has 4,000 Magic attack, and that is before Identification. After Identification, I'm sure that the Magic attack would be around 6,000! You could strip all your equipment down and equip only this staff, and you'd still have a stronger attack than a full Level 90 Violet-Platinum equipment player. Think about what I just said, one staff alone is worth an entire set of Violet-Platinum equipment. I think, 20 million would be worth it," Zhang Yang stated.

Han Ying Xue was not interested in the magical attack, although it could help increase her healing rate. More importantly, she already had the mana regenerative staff in her hand. Hence, she pushed the staff at Daffodil Daydream. The poor girl was flabbergasted and could not respond, having heard its true value from Zhang Yang. "I'm..erhm.. this... It's too much! Please sell it! I...I can't use this!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her cute, little girl-like reaction. "All the more reason to use it, Daffy! If you use this staff, you'll be the strongest attacker

in my party! Altogether, wouldn't it be for the better, if anyone in our team gets an upgrade? The stronger we are, the better bosses we could kill! So what about 20 million? It's nothing. That being said, when you reach Level 120 or Level 130, you can still sell it off!"

"B-But! Its value would not be the same!" Daffodil Daydream was on the verge of tears.

"Aiyaya! Sister Daffy. Why are you nit-picking at the details? I'd say, might as well give up resisting his wishes. It's too late for you to escape his grasp. All that belongs to him, belongs to you! All that is you, belongs to him! Nyahahaha!" Wei Yan Er chuckled evilly.

Daffodil Daydream lowered her head and nodded quietly. She was hiding her vermilion-colored cheeks, that spoke of immeasurable shame. Perhaps, she agreed on the part "Everything that is her, belongs to Zhang Yang."

Luckily, Han Ying Xue did not notice her blush, as she was too busy flipping over the skill books. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, had walked over to Queen Madisha's dressing table and found a long bladed sword lying down at the lower left of the table. The blade of the sword was dark, with living, silvery lines, swirling around. There was a green little dragon that swam along the surface of the blade as well. It was moving and weaving up and down the length of the blade!

'Ding! You have obtained: Meteor Sword!'

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Search the Meteor Sword! Please return to White Jade Castle and present the sword to Princess Serena, in exchange for a luxurious reward!'

Zhang Yang let out a long, tiring sigh. It had not been easy to complete the entire quest. Zhang Yang took the sword and kept it in his inventory. He then walked down towards Han Ying Xue, who was busy examining the books. They were all Recipe scrolls for different professions. None of them were skill books, unfortunately. Everyone was disappointed, as they wanted a Pair Skill!

Still, Queen Madisha was kind enough to drop a piece of Middle-Tier

Aura Stone. Sun Xin Yu took it and upgraded her {Fatal Strike Aura} to Level 4, which granted an additional 4% increase in Critical rate. There was one more item. A chest that left them staring, dumbfounded.

[Mystery Treasure Chest]: You have found a chest that was hidden away secretly by Queen Madisha. Your instincts tell you that this chest is extremely important. However, no matter what you tried, it was impossible to open the chest via the regular method. Perhaps, you should inquire Princess Serena about the chest.

Player Ownership: Zhan Yu

Item Bound on Acquire.

Chapter 461: Server Update

Once everything was accounted for, Zhang Yang traveled to Thunderstorm Castle and then to White Jade Castle. There, he used the [Party Summon Order] and "pulled" everyone back, as per Han Ying Xue's insistent instructions. After everyone gathered together, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er dragged Zhang Yang along, making sure that he did not run away when it came to Identifying the Mythical equipment for them.

Although he did not want to, he did not have much of a choice to begin with. He took out all the Mythical equipment and gave them to the Identifier.

The older gentleman was taking his time, reading a piece of newspaper. When he saw Zhang Yang coming into his store, the man placed down his reading glasses and spoke to Zhang Yang in a rather annoyed tone. "Young man. There's no need to rush. A gentleman must always be conscious of his posture."

The man walked lazily towards the table and picked up the [Frost Vengeance Ring] to examine it. He then picked up a piece of magnifying glass. The man gasped with a loud snort and placed the ring closer to the magnifying glass. He discarded his reading glasses and looked at the ring again, only to be shocked by it. "W-What is this? Such a masterpiece! Only a master craftsman could have made this marvelous piece. My god. Young man, you have no idea how fortunate you are, to have stumbled upon this ring!"

"Nuff said. Get to revealing the Ring's properties," said Wei Yan Er as she had been tapping her fingers on the wooden table since the beginning. "How much is it?"

Although Zhang Yang had not noticed it, the little brat had a rather refreshing, innocent appearance, that was able to entice a "dangerous" part of society, a certain group of people who had preferences for flat and short females. Her high-pitched voice was able to attract many male eyes, and many had even sent private messages, trying to court the young lady.

All of them were of course blacklisted by the little brat, almost immediately.

The old Identifier examined the ring and after 3 to 4 minutes later, the old man looked up at Zhang Yang with a satisfied look. "2,000 gold coins."

"You, bloody, stinky, greedy old man! How dare you charge us 2,000 gold coins for 4 equipment! Might as well put a gun at my face and demand for my entire life savings then!" cried the little brat.

"One! One for 2,000 gold coins!" The old man was not startled by her outrage. Instead, he put on a stoic face and emphasized the fees. Behind the counter, his legs have given up, and were trembling like crazy!

Zhang Yang placed the outer side of his hand on the little brat's head and ground his knuckles, hard.

"Get it done." Zhang Yang told the old man. Zhang Yang was not surprised at the Identifying fees. He had visited this place often. In fact, 2,000 gold coins for Identifying was after a 50% discount, for having the title, "Hero of White Jade Castle". If someone else were to have their equipment Identified, it would cost 4,000 gold coins.

"2,000 gold coins just for Identifying? What the hell is that equipment?" A passing male elven Spellcaster walked by and observed the equipment that were being Identified. Although he could pick it up, it could be taken out of the premises. Zhang Yang immediately noticed that the man had a faint smile on his face. It was the same kind of smile any cunning, conniving fox would carry. "Hm. Bro, this magic staff. Sell it to me."

Zhang Yang had no intention of selling it off then since Daffodil Daydream was supposed to use it. Zhang Yang looked straight at the player and took notice of his name and profile information.

"Royal Highness of Thunder, Level 87, Male Elf, Pyromancer, The Myth".

When Zhang Yang saw the guild "The Myth", a surge of anger rose up his heart. Still, for a mere magic staff, it was not worth the trouble of taking down the entire guild. Instead, Zhang Yang nonchalantly pushed him aside. "Sorry bro, we're using it."

Even though he was rejected, Royal Highness of Thunder did not leave the premises. He stood by and continued to observe the equipment being handled by the Identifier.

Ka ching! Ka ching!

After paying 6,000 gold coins, the properties of the two rings and the necklace were revealed. Zhang Yang swapped his old ring for the Great Earth Ring and raised his HP to 96,980. His HP was just an inch more to reaching 100,000!

As for the last item on the menu, the old man took his time to analyze the magic staff. Zhang Yang had seen this many times before since he was the only guy bringing ridiculous weapons to his shop. What the old man would do would be to pick up the magnifying glass, express a shocked and surprise face, rub his eyes, and shout out the price. This would often happen when an extremely rare item is presented to him. However, this time, the old man took even longer to examine the item before announcing the price.

"Looks like the staff won't be just 2,000 gold coins..." Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"What?! That's absurd!" cried Daffodil Daydream. The other ladies of the team were not interested since the staff would end up in Daffodil Daydream's hands. She felt a little guilty since Zhang Yang would be paying the fees.

"T-This is...an ancient miracle. An ancient power! A blessing from the past!" cried the old man.

"This is new," said Zhang Yang to himself.

"Say...We have given you the opportunity of a lifetime to witness and hold an ancient artifact in your hands. Perhaps you could give us a little service by lightening the fees?" said Wei Yan Er.

"10,000 gold coins." The old man expression reverted back to his stoic composure faster than Fatty Han could look at a nip slip. "I expect full payment. Not even a copper coin less."

Zhang Yang sighed and paid the man 10,000 gold coins.

"WTF?!" cried Royal Highness of Thunder. He had never heard of such a high fee when it came to Identifying a single equipment. Even his own Yellow-Gold equipment had cost him a few hundred gold. What could the equipment prowess be, if the price for Identifying it was so high!?

After receiving the sack of gold coins, the old man picked up the magic staff and tweaked it here and there, before handing it back to Zhang Yang. A bright glow shot up to the sky when the staff left the old man's hand, and into Zhang Yang's.

[Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life] (Mythical, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 5,778 – 6,478

Equip Effect: Increases Magic damage and Healing rate by 20%.

Equip Effect: 2% chance to heal yourself on every attack on a target. Healing rate is equal to the damage you had dealt.

Use: Summons the Life Tree to protect you. Grants Invulnerability for 2 seconds.

[Level 4 Socket 1]

[Level 4 Socket 2]

Level Requirement: 110

Special Effect: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: This powerful magic staff contains the essence of the Life Tree. It has a portion of the power of the Tree of Life!

"Oh dang! The Magic Attack is so high! It's so much stronger than my current attack power!"

On the far side of the shop, Royal Highness of Thunder gritted his teeth. A glint of jealousy and envy was prominent in his eyes.

Zhang Yang peeked around and noticed how much of the player around were reacting the same way as Royal Highness of Thunder.

Zhang Yang then tapped Daffodil Daydream's shoulder and whispered

into her face. Wracked with paranoia, he had put his face extremely close to her. "Daffy. I want you to keep your guard up. I don't want any of the guys to be approaching you."

Even before Zhang Yang had spoke, Daffodil Daydream was already blushing like a cherry tomato. A puff of steam shot out of her head when Zhang Yang spoke like that to her.

"I...I...I...I D-Don't worry...I...I...I won't fall for anyone else...!"

Wei Yan Er laughed maniacally and rolled on the floor. "Sister Daffy. What noob tank was saying, he wants you to be careful of other people who might literally jump on you! They are aiming for your staff, not you!"

Zhang Yang nodded and turned his gaze to Daffodil Daydream to wait for a reply. However, Daffodil Daydream had a totally alarmed, eyes widened, cherry tomato red face. She was so embarrassed of her own reaction and had immediately disappeared by using a [Teleportation Scroll].

"That's a cute reaction," said Wei Yan Er.

"Oy dummy...What's with you? Why do all girls flock to you? Did angels get together and made a dream come true? Did they sprinkle moon dust in your hair of gold, and star-light in your eyes of blue? Haha! Is that why all the girls in town follow you all around?" Han Ying Xue grumbled.

Zhang Yang frowned. "Did you just quote the song lyrics of "Close to You" by The Carpenters?"

"Haha! So you do know your oldies! Just so you know, girls love it when a guy listens to old songs! Looks like the Daffy girl would never be able to escape your evil grasp." Han Ying Xue teased him.

On the sidelines, Sun Xin Yu made it a point to fidget with her daggers, and glared at Zhang Yang with murderous eyes.

Zhang Yang sighed. He was tired of dealing with the two women. After exiting the shop, Zhang Yang head straight to the Royal Castle and when he approached the gate, he reported his name to the guard and was led to the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna, where Princess Serena was. It was

easy to enter the Royal Castle now, compared to previous attempts. Perhaps it was because he had already completed the quest.

As he entered the chamber, Zhang Yang saw Princess Serena slouching on her throne in a completely un-princess-like manner. There was a frown on her face, and she was sulking as if she had been waiting for quite some time for Zhang Yang to arrive.

Zhang Yang quickly approached her, and kneeled down, 10 meters away from the throne. He saluted the princess and greeted her. "Princess Serena. It is I, Zhan Yu."

"Zhan Yu! You have returned!" Princess Serena got to her feet immediately and walked closer to Zhang Yang. "Have you found the Meteor Sword?"

"Your Highness. You'll be glad to know that I had found it." Zhang Yang took out the sword from his inventory and presented it to her, holding it up high above his head, and kneeling down at the same time.

Princess Serena bent down and took the sword out of Zhang Yang's hands.

"This, this 'is' the Meteor Sword!" She exclaimed. Princess Serena returned to her throne but remained standing. Instead, she stood facing Zhang Yang and held the blade up with both hands, the flat of the blade placed against her forehead. The magical swirling green dragon that was "living" in the blade of the sword shrieked and flew out of the sword. It then magically expanded, and turned into huge dragon measuring close to a hundred meters wide! The dragon flew around, finally coming to a rest behind Princess Serena. The dragon roared magnificently. It's roar echoed throughout the palace, and even spread across the entire city! All the citizens knelt before the castle, expressing not fear, but admiration, for the magical beast.

The dragon was not in physical form. It was ethereal and was phasing through the walls and pillars of the chamber.

"All hail Princess Serena! Long Live Princess Serena!" All the guards in the palace and chamber shouted out their salutations for their beloved

Princess Serena.

"Rawgh!" the dragon roared and dispersed into millions of green particples. It then swirled around the chamber space, and before rushing towards Princess Serena. A bright light shone out, and the entire castle was illuminated with a warm light. The clouds in the sky were pushed away, revealing the giant ball of fire in the sky, to introduce a new light upon the castle.

Shring!

A golden light radiated from Princess Serena's character. Zhang Yang knew the light. It was all too similar when a player leveled up. Back then, Princess Serena was 20 Levels higher than Zhang Yang and thus, he had never been able to see her profile. This time, he knew that the princess had gained not one, not two, but 30 consecutive Levels, for the light had burst out for a total of 30 times. Although Zhang Yang could not remember her Level, he clearly remembered her being a Holy tier boss. After the radiance stopped, Zhang Yang checked her status, and was stunned at the word - "Ascended".

[Serena, Princess of White Jade Kingdom] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Note: True wielder of the Meteor Sword! Her power rivals the Gods. None shall be on equal to her.

Such a dominating presence! Zhang Yang was extremely envious of Serena, especially at how she could gain 30 Levels, just by holding the sword against her forehead. Perhaps, he should have done it himself earlier!

"I thank you, Warrior Zhan Yu! You, truly are my one and only warrior!" After gaining the status of Ascended, Princess Serena's armor morphed into something, even more, grander than before. The smile on her face when she was with Zhang Yang had never been more radiant. "I could

never have achieved this without you, Zhan Yu. If you had not brought me the sword, my father, the King would have married me off to Amula of the Black Dragon City. Hmph. I understand the logic of my father wanting to protect the citizens of this kingdom. But, that does not mean that he could just marry me off to any perverted scoundrel!"

Zhang Yang could feel the anger in her words, even though she was merely frowning in frustration. Back then, when she was merely wielding the Sword of Life and Death, she could massacre all the players and make rivers flow with blood. But, now that she held the Meteor Sword...only God knows of what she would be capable of.

‘Ding! Your Relationship with Princess Serena has increased!’

Oh! Come on! Relationship? Zhang Yang wanted something more materialistic, for once! Zhang Yang maintained a stoic facial expression and said, "It is an honor to serve the Princes, I ask for nothing but your good graces, my Princess."

Princess Serena nodded her head happily. "With this sword, We can unite all the Kingdoms in this Union to form an Empire! You, Zhan Yu, Our warrior, you are by greatest benefactor!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Search of the Meteor Sword. Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained a reward: Level +3, SP +2, Luck +3!’

Shring! Shring! Shring!

Zhang Yang’s character glowed in a brilliant golden light, three times, and rose from Level 98 to Level 101!

‘Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has become the first player to achieve Level 100! Obtained reward: SP +1, Luck +3!’

‘Server Announcement: The first Level 100 player has emerged. Chaos Realm will be available for entry after the server patch. Inheritance Patch will be implemented. Please refer to the official website for more information about the Inheritance Patch!’

‘Server Announcement: Server Update and Service Patch will commence in 30 minutes. Please log out to prevent any item loss. Please refer to the official website for more information about the patch content. Please make necessary preparations before the patch!’

Zhang Yang was thrown away. He had just received 4 SP in one go! Zhang Yang was happy, although only for a millisecond before frustration kicked in. The main story quest - "Search of the Meteor Sword" had only rewarded him with a Level +3, SP +2 and Luck +3. Though it may seem a lot for anyone else, Zhang Yang felt that all the effort that he put out for the past few months was a complete waste!

"Oh!"

Just then, Zhang Yang remembered something important. Zhang Yang immediately took out the mysterious box that he had found from Queen Madisha and handed it to Princess Serena. "My Princess, I have found a box but I am unable to open it. I hope that Princess Serena could assist me in opening this mysterious box."

Somehow, he knew that the real reward lay within that box.

Princess Serena smiled warmly and knelt down to his level. "Zhan Yu, you have shed much blood for me. If there is anything that We can do for you, We will do everything in Our power to help you out."

To hear such words coming from a Princess' mouth was everything that Zhang Yang could hope for.

Princess Serena took the box and examined it. She then places the box on the floor and pointed the sword at the box. With a quick hum, the box opened ever so easily, when Zhang Yang and everyone else could not.

With an eager heart, Zhang Yang peeked into the box...Only to see...

An egg!?

What's this? A herbal egg? Would it grant Zhang Yang unbelievable powers after he boiled it?

Zhang Yang was on the verge of crying. When all hope had been poured

into the box, all it could do was to give him an egg. An egg, that looked like a regular chicken egg!

[Mysterious Egg]

Description: Who knows what will hatch from this egg? Perhaps, you should wait and see...

Incubation time: 71 Hours, 59 minutes, 59 seconds.

Bound.

An egg. Zhang Yang had suffered for so long, only to be rewarded with an egg.

No matter, Zhang Yang had one last hope remaining. This egg had to be a Mythical Beast's egg! That was the lie Zhang Yang told himself, although he knew that it would be 1 in a million chance for it to be a real Mythical Beast's egg. Still, there was still hope. No one knew what it was, or what would hatch out of it!

After leaving the Royal Castle, Zhang Yang immediately logged out of the game since there were only a few minutes left before the server update started. By that time, it was already way past midnight. Zhang Yang stripped down to his boxer and found that he stunk. His shirt felt like a crumpled, dried up biscuit. It must be from the excessive dried sweat, thanks to such a stressful quest. Zhang Yang sighed heavily, and made his way to the bathroom for a shower and went to bed soon after.

It took him a whole night to regain back his vitality, and he had even overslept for an hour past 8am. Zhang Yang did not skip his routine workout, even though he had woken up slightly later. However, unlike his old house which was already destroyed. Zhang Yang's new housing estate required him to drive for quite a distance to buy regular fried dough and soy milk. The housing estate which he lived in now did not have roadside stalls nearby since it was an upscale, uptown kind of area. If he wanted to get some light snacks and cheap food, he would have to drive. That's one of the tradeoffs he would have to bear.

Zhang Yang bought breakfast for five and by the time he made it back

home, the four ladies had just woken up from their beauty sleep. Everyone got up, got dressed, put on their thick layers of makeup and ate breakfast. Sun Xin Yu had gone off for work, while Zhang Yang had taken the job as Wei Yan Er's private driver to her school.

Wei Yan Er was already 18 years old. She had already finished her high school. The purpose of Zhang Yang sending Wei Yan Er to school on that day was to fill in a form about her future job prospects.

In truth, it had been terribly difficult for Wei Yan Er to graduate from high school, due to her frequent lapse in concentration, her lack of academic intelligence, and her poor memory. Still, she was not bothered by it. Her future path had already been decided. For her, taking on high school was nothing but a ritual, a ceremony that she had to go through to be 'normal'.

...

The developers had announced the server patch out of the blue and had even made the server patching duration to as long as three days. Hence, with nothing to do at home. Zhang Yang had invited Fatty Han to come over at night and have a little fun. They then moved on to a hotel and had a grand dinner to celebrate Wei Yan Er's official graduation from high school. Naturally, the bill had to be settled by none other than Zhang Yang.

Chapter 462: Battle Companion

Fatty Han had even brought along his girlfriend, Xiao Wei. The girl was extremely sweet and polite. Nothing like what Fatty Han had described. If Fatty Han had never mentioned about her being as ruthless as a hungry lion with him, Zhang Yang would have never imagined it.

The night continued on, and everyone was enjoying the dinner and conversation. However, when someone mentioned the name Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke, everyone's mood turned foul. As the saying went, nations that crumble from foreign attacks will rebuild, and come back stronger than ever. But what of an attack that comes from the inside? Even though Imperial Sky could never reach the strength level of Lone Desert Smoke, the guild was still one of the strongest guilds in China's region. Despite so, the guild had crumbled down due to internal strife, because of a single woman. Everyone understood the damage, but Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had a deeper insight of it.

The conversation returned to its liveliness in a matter of glasses. Among the company, only Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were the only men on the table while the rest were troublesome women. These ladies simply loved messing with them. Later through the night, all 5 women had managed to force Zhang Yang and Fatty Han to shotgun one large carton-load of beer down their stomachs. Eventually, both of them had to run back and forth to the washroom to unload everything they had drank down. The scene was exceptionally funny to them since they had never seen Zhang Yang being much of a clown.

After that merry little dinner with the ladies, everyone drove themselves back home. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was too intoxicated to drive and had to depend on Han Ying Xue to take the wheel. After returning home, Zhang Yang did nothing else, but collapsed on the couch and slept. The next thing he knew, it was already morning. The moment when he opened his eyes, he was assaulted with a wracking of a headache. The light from the sun did nothing to ease his pain. Zhang Yang drank more water than he had ever drank before, and felt that it tasted much better

than before. He took a good cold bath, and went to bed to sleep a little while more.

After waking up for the second time, he felt a little better and proceed to greet the ladies of the house. He even played and teased Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, and felt a little better after.

Before the server came back online, there was absolutely nothing for Zhang Yang to do at home. He then went to visit the office of Silky Soft Holdings and reviewed a few things in his office. There, he checked read up on the server patch notes.

The joint venture between Silky Soft Holdings and Crimson Cosmetic Holdings was a success. They had even managed to launch their first joint product in the market. Both sides were working hard to further improve the joint venture of the two mega companies. Hence, the staff of Silky Soft Holdings were working at their best performance as if they had unlimited vigor. While that was happening, the secretaries in Zhang Yang's office had inherited the burning vigor as well. Since summer in China was extremely hot and steamy, the secretaries had followed the trend and wore the most exposing outfits that they could find. Before this, they would have to bend down a little to expose their deep cleavages to Zhang Yang. Now, their clothing had such low cutting, that their badahonkadongs were at the brink of spilling out! Just walking alone would send tremors down their watermelons. That, and the ultra-short pencil skirts that couldn't resist springing up the curvature of women's buttocks, thanks to the elastic tension, exposing the thongs that they wore beneath. Even though Zhang Yang was still in the office, he felt like he was sitting at the beach, enjoying a refreshing scene of bikini babes by the sea side! A true experience of summer happiness!

What more could he ask for?

Back at his house, there were the two Missus Universe freeloading, in his office, there was a group of hungry hyenas, just waiting for Zhang Yang to jump on them! What more could a man wish for?

Feeling blessed, Zhang Yang opened his personal computer and visited

the 'God's Miracle' official website. After scrolling down for a bit, Zhang Yang checked out server patch notes and read.

1. Please make adequate preparation for the release of the Chaos Realm. Monsters in the Chaos Realms are extremely strong. Players are recommended to equip a full set of Level 90 Gray-Silver tier, to enjoy the content of the Chaos Realm.

2. Monsters description will be more details. However, be advised that the level gap between the players and the monsters will affect the amount of information being displayed.

3. Official release of Flying Mounts. Players can now use the [Sealing Lease] to capture Flying Mounts in the Chaos Realm. The method of capturing Flying Mounts is similar to capturing regular Mounts. The number of regular mounts had been increased in pre-Chaos Realm regions. Players can now enjoy capturing all their favorite mounts before proceeding to the Chaos Realm.

4. Official release of the Inheritance Class. Players of any class will have the opportunity to obtain an Inheritance title. Be advised, all players are only limited to only ONE Inheritance title, and cannot forfeit the title upon receiving. Please review the Inheritance before accepting the quest.

5. Official launching of War of Kingdoms. All players from all 8 major Regions can now access the Chaos Realm and engage in a Kingdom war with other major cities (Kingdom). Any death of the Kingdom's King/Ruler will result in a "Rebuilding" phase for 15 days, of the defeated Kingdom. All players from the fore mentioned kingdom will face a penalty. Attack Power reduced by 50%, Maximum HP reduced by 50%. All other players from other Kingdoms will gained a boost of Honor Points by killing players who are currently penalized.

6. Level Suppression system has been lengthened from 10 Levels to 30 Levels. In conjunction with this change, players who kill monsters above their Level Gap will gain an Excessive Level Bonus Experience Points.

After scrolling through the content page, Zhang Yang read it and realize that the changes mentioned in this content patch were rather similar to

that of his previous lifetime.

After getting used to playing the game for almost every other day, the sudden unavailability of the game had made Zhang Yang uncomfortable. Sitting down was rather uncomfortable for Zhang Yang, since he had been lying down to play the game. The worst fact was that the game required 3 days to patch!

On the next day, Zhang Yang had received a short text message from his pretty teacher, Yu Li which only contained three short words. "Wanna do it?"

Within nothing to do at home anyway, Zhang Yang drove to her house and picked Yu Li up from her new house. The both of them "did it" in a hotel room, all afternoon and evening. The second day was spent in the hotel room with Yu Li.

Later on the third day, the server for 'God's Miracle' was launched again, rather late in the evening.

After waiting for 3 days long, players had experienced the torturous emptiness in their hearts. During the relaunch, an abnormal number of players had expressed their happiness at finally returning "home". While some were happy, almost half of them were extremely pissed off at the draggy patching duration.

When Zhang Yang logged into the game, the first thing he did was to review the Mysterious Egg that he had obtained from the Mysterious Box.

[Mysterious Egg]

Description: The Incubation is completed. Please sacrifice your blood to the egg to form a binding contract with the mysterious lifeform.

Bound.

Huh. Nothing complicated. All Zhang Yang had to do was to drip some of his blood onto the egg. Zhang Yang then proceeded to slice his fingertip and let his blood drip onto the surface of the eggshell.

Tick...Tick...Tick...

The eggshell was like a super-absorbent sponge that had absorbed the blood without a trace. The egg only vibrated slightly and stopped the next second.

Huh. Zhang Yang guessed that it would require much more than a few drops of blood to "revive" coax the being inside the shell.

This time, Zhang Yang placed his palm on the blade and jerked it hard, to cause a deeper cut. After pouring the blood in his palm on the egg, the same thing occurred again but a progress bar appeared. It showed "1%..."

Zhang Yang frowned. He had just given the egg a handful of blood, and yet, the entire progress was only 1%?! Luckily, this was just a game. If he had to "donate" so much blood to reach 100%, he would have died for 10 times before it could happen.

Zhang Yang immediately called for Han Ying Xue over to heal him. When Han Ying Xue arrived, she had not come alone. In fact, the entire party was present to see what sort of situation required Zhang Yang to slid his own wrist. Once Han Ying Xue was prepared, Zhang Yang grit his teeth and proceeded to slice off his entire hand. Like an open hydrant, his severed stump poured out blood at such an astonishing rate that was draining his HP as well. As previously mentioned, the miraculously "thirsty object" had absorbed all the blood! There was not a single drop of blood that was wasted!

In reality, if one were to slice off one's hand, they would either faint from the shock and die later from excessive blood loss. Since they were in the game, all Zhang Yang had to suffer from was his drastic HP loss. Han Ying Xue immediately cast {Regeneration} and various other healing spells to match the rate of Zhang Yang's HP loss.

"Nyehahaha! I was right to call you noobie tank! Look at your HP! It's going down like a ruptured dam! Haha! Noob! Noob!"

"Oh lord, forming a contract would take so much blood! This egg must be something great!" said Daffodil Daydream. Almost everyone knew that he had obtained the egg from completing a Main Story Quest. Hence, the crowd that was circling Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. The entire process

took much longer than expected. Zhang Yang had lost track of time since he had been pouring blood onto the egg. He did note that Han Ying Xue had to stop healing twice because she had actually drained her entire MP gauge - twice.

After 90% of Han Ying Xue's MP gauge was drained for the third time, the egg had finally responded. The egg stopped absorbing the blood, and a small blood pool started forming the side.

Crack...

"Woah! It's hatching!" cried Wei Yan Er as she jumped to her feet. Everyone got closer, while Zhang Yang was forced to squat down to let everyone peek the egg.

Crack...

"Come on! Whatever you are! Break the eggshell and come out!"

More and more cracks started to form on the surface of the egg. A bright white light seeped out from the tiny cracks of the egg.

"OMG! IT'S COMING OUT! IT'S COMING! COMING!" cried the little brat, as she grabbed the Herb Foraging Familiar's neck even tighter! The poor little beast was suffering, and was about to faint! The little brat was so bored when Zhang Yang was pouring his blood onto the egg, and had forced Zhang Yang to summon out the familiar for her. She only wanted a dose of its cuteness!

"I wonder what it could be!"

"A dragon! It has to be a dragon! When Zhang Yang gave the sword to the princess, a dragon appeared! This egg must be the dragon's offspring!"

"Don't be silly. Do you think that dragons lay eggs?"

"Erhm...yeah. What else could lay an egg?"

"Your mom."

"F*ck off."

Crack...Crack...

As everyone was having fun guessing around, more cracks formed, and finally, a piece of the shell was kicked out.

An extremely tiny spear that had broken the shell. The spear retracted back into the egg and started slashing about, collapsing the entire egg shell from within, revealing a tiny, thumb-sized humanoid girl that carried a spear and a shield on her back.

The little thumb-sized girl had long black hair. Even though she was so small, she had a magnificent body. If she was enlarged to normal size, she would have the most busty pair of breasts and a curvy butt that could rival even Sun Xin Yu! Her facial expression was so cute, which only emphasized her perfect complexion. Her face was so perfect as if someone had carved her out from a piece of jade.

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Melee Attack: 3 – 5 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Vitality: 1

Strength: 1

Dexterity: 1

Spirit: 1

Skill: NIL

Special: [Seal 1] [Seal 2] [Seal 3] [Seal 4]

Note: Zhan Yu's Battle Companion

Everyone gasped in awe when such a little cute Barbie doll suddenly appeared in front of them. While the ladies were squealing, Hundred Shots asked, "Zhang Yang, what is a Battle Companion."

"I have no idea!" Zhang Yang too was surprised, himself. He had never heard of the term "Battle Companion," even in his previous life!

Felice was small, but despite her tiny size, she was deceptively agile. When Wei Yan Er wanted to grab her. She jumped away as quick as lightning and landed on Zhang Yang's shoulder. Felice expressed her anger by slashing her spear around frantically.

"What a jump!"

That jump from the ground up to Zhang Yang's shoulder was no easy feat. It may be easy for a cricket to do so. But for a humanoid being like Felice to do so would be the same as Zhang Yang leaping up to a 10-storey building!

Zhang Yang turned his head, and looked at the thumb-size Felice, as she looked at him as well. There was a glint in her eyes that expressed a sense of longingness. It felt like he was looking into a mirror, with the same look in his eyes when he had just lost both of his parents. The same pain when he was just a young boy.

Unconsciously, Zhang Yang reached out with his index finger to her.

Towards Zhang Yang, Felice was not afraid, nor expressed any hostile reactions towards him compared to the others. Instead, she reciprocated his actions by reaching out with her own hand to grab Zhang Yang's finger.

At that moment, when the two beings touched, Zhang Yang felt a sudden rush from his spine and up to his head. Something had changed in him, but he did not know what.

'Server Announcement: Official release of Battle Companion! All players can now form a contract with an NPC to form a Battle Companion. Please refer to the official site for more information for Battle Companion!'

'Server Announcement: Official release of Battle Companion patch will commence in 1 minute. Please make adequate preparation. The server will resume function after 5 minutes!'

'Server Announcement:59 seconds till server update...'

'Server Announcement:58 seconds till server update...'

Chapter 463: Entering the Chaos Realms

"NOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!"

A simultaneous roar from all players in the entire world could be heard. Just as they had taken 3 f*cking days to introduce a simple Inheritance patch, they would need to endure another server shut down now, just to patch some Battle Companion crap?! What the hell!?

No matter how much the players complained, there was no stopping from what that was to come. The patch would still commence. Players from all over the world lost connection to the game in less than a minute. But, luckily, the patch was only 5 minutes. The server came back online slightly earlier. Some of the players that were not as active like Zhang Yang had not realized that and logged in after the server was patched the second time. With such a little time, Zhang Yang and his gang took the chance to review the Battle Companion 'crap' from the official site.

Just when the system had finished announcing the patch, the official website had published the relevant information on Battle Companion. To think that they had taken no time at all to prepare for all the documents, prior to releasing such spontaneous patches.

Zhang Yang read the content released on the official website.

Battle Companions were like Hunter's pet. They can be summoned out, and removed from the battlefield. However, the major difference between a pet and a Battle Companion was that a Battle Companion had their own judgments and "sentience". They could make their own decisions and could execute complicated actions, based on general instructions. As long they laid down the command, they would complete it as to how the situation dictated. A Battle Companion could disobey a player if the request is unreasonable, or suspicious. It meant that they could break the contract at any time they want, and had the same power authority as a player. To put it in simple terms, a Battle Companion was more like a mercenary than an underling.

Like Hunter's pet, Battle Companions could gain levels as the players

killed monsters. There was one factor that made a Battle Companion much stronger than a pet. Battle Companions could equip weapons and armor which would give them the opportunity to grow much stronger than a pet could.

Players could only form a contract with one Battle Companion at a time. To swap a new Battle Companion, the player must first break the contract with the original Battle Companion. Battle Companion was easy to obtain. As long as a being has a mind of its own, be it a friendly target, or a hostile target, players could even sign a contract with a dragon if they had the capabilities of convincing them to form a contract. When a Battle Companion died in a field, whether or not by the hands of a player or a monster, it would lose a level.

Zhang Yang had mixed feelings in his heart. He had relied on his past "history" to carve himself a bright "future" in this timeline. However, most of the actions he had taken had been according to the previous timeline. However, this time, he had taken a new turn which had triggered something that was never released in the previous life! Zhang Yang could not help but wondered if his actions would lead to something even bigger. However, now that he has come to this, there was no way left, but forwards!

Zhang Yang relogged into the game and found a new Battle Companion window which displayed the information of the little girl. By just a simple thought in his mind, Zhang Yang had summoned Felice out into the world. Unlike summoning a pet or mount, a Battle Companion would not require any channeling or casting delay. Summoning a Battle Companion was an instantaneous action.

When Felice was summoned out, she jumped out from Zhang Yang's palm, lightly stabbing Zhang Yang's shoulders to stick her landing better. With a proud expression, Felice stood tall, puffing out her chest with pride.

Zhang Yang laughed at her comical attempt to guard him and said, "You precious little thing. Do you understand what I am saying?"

Felice nodded her head but when she opened her mouth, nothing but "ah ah eh eh" came out. Perhaps she was a mute, or perhaps she was made that way, due to her low level. Maybe when she gains a few level, she would gain the ability to talk to Zhang Yang.

While Zhang Yang was enjoying his time with Felice, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the troublesome ladies had joined his side and wanted to play with Felice. Unfortunately, due to Han Ying Xue's and Wei Yan Er's rough treatment, Felice was angry and had repeatedly tried to stab them with her toothpick-size spear. Since her level was too low, her attacks had not made any damage. Not even a single damage. Poor little "Thumbelina" was so frustrated, that she had morphed herself into a beam of light, and had returned back to Zhang Yang's inventory.

Furious and disgruntled, Han Ying Xue pestered Zhang Yang to summon her out again. However, Zhang Yang had gained a liking for the little critter, and decided to take her side, and refused to summon Felice out just so that they could play with her. Furthermore, as the official site had mentioned, a Battle Companion could terminate the contract with the player anytime they wanted to. If Zhang Yang ever angered or annoyed Felice to an extent, she might just kick his butt and leave Zhang Yang.

Right then, Zhang Yang did not even have a hint of Felice's ability. To think that the trigger point to initiate the Battle Companion system would require the clearance of the quest "Search of Meteor Sword", Zhang Yang felt that Felice was something extremely special and unique since he had obtained her from the Queen of the Imperial Heaven's Empire after all. It would not make sense if Felice did not have any special abilities.

Zhang Yang removed himself from the crowd and teleported to the Thunderstorm Castle. There, he summoned the bear and rode all the way to the Ten Barren Seas. Right then, when the Chaos Realm was opened to the world, Zhang Yang had the greatest advantage, that was, his Level. The second highest level player in the game was only Level 96. Do not judge the difference of four Levels from 96 to 100, so the amount of time that the second player would need to grind to reach Level 100, would reach one months' time! During that one month, Zhang Yang could have already

roamed around the entire Chaos Realm!

The first item on his to-do-list was to capture a Flying Mount. Not only could a Flying Mount grant a player a wider, clear view of the landscape from above, the speed of which it could travel would be three times faster than regular mounts. While a level 90 map was already a headache for Zhang Yang, not having a Flying Mount in the Chaos Realm would make him suffer, from all the time wasted solely on riding his regular mount.

After Zhang Yang arrived at the Ten Barren Seas, Zhang Yang swapped the bear for the Mythical Turtle and spent close to 5 hours traveling on waters to reach the island at the center of the sea. Located at the very center of the island was the portal that led to the Chaos Realm. Even though the portal had long existed even before the system had made the announcement, no player could go through it!

On the island where the portal was located, there were no beasts and no monsters roaming around. Zhang Yang arrived on the island and swapped back to his bear to reach the center of the island without much delay. When Zhang Yang arrived in the center of the island, he was greeted by a black colored portal, with dark matter swirling in a circle, like a two-dimensional black hole.

Zhang Yang had used this portal once, back in his previous life. When he used it that time, Chaos Realm had already been explored by pioneer players. Zhang Yang only needed to link his [Teleportation Scroll] to the territory there, and had not needed to use the portal again the second time. Travelling to the Chaos Realm would not require of him to travel to the island again, It felt like a strong déjà vu when he approached the portal for the first time, a second time. Zhang Yang drew a deep breath and jumped into the whirlpool of darkness.

Whmmmmmm... Thud.

It all happened in an instant. First, a sensation of being sucked into oblivion, second, a sudden surge of speed, and finally, third, a bright light flashed in his eyes, and he appeared on the other side. In the Chaos Realm, every player would arrive at a football field-sized gigantic altar.

Behind Zhang Yang was the same portal where he had just walked through, and in front of him were the plains of Chaos Realm.

‘Ding! You have entered the Chaos Realm!’

Zhang Yang walked a little further and reached the end of the gigantic altar. Arranged in an orderly manner, there were eight portals which led to eight other different types of Ten Barren Seas, which belonged to eight different regions. The current map which Zhang Yang was currently in was named Tibanya Wasteland. Monsters in this map ranged from Level 100 to Level 130, which was quite a huge jump.

Even though Zhang Yang had recalled the location of the territory in this map, it was a matter of one year ago. When he opened the world map, it was completely dark, since he had not yet explored any of it. Hence, it took him quite some time, but Zhang Yang managed to locate the exact position of the territory that he had decided to conquer.

He was about to get into an extremely heated conflict. First, he would have to get himself a Flying Mount to save him a great deal of time to travel across the Chaos Realm, Next, he would want to conquer a territory to save him more time to travel back and forth between the portals. Lastly, by the time he has achieved two of them, Zhang Yang could start the quest to obtain the God of War Inheritance. That was enough of a workload for anyone else but Zhang Yang wanted more. In one month’s time, he wanted to conquer not just one, but two territories!

To conquer a territory would be a war between players. However, since Zhang Yang was the only one qualified to enter the Chaos Realm, that would mean that all territory in the realm were his to conquer, provided that no one could surpass Level 100 within the stipulated duration.

Zhang Yang had decided, that after conquering the territory in the Tibanya Wasteland, he would enter the Grandu Ice Ridge, and take the territory there for himself! One of the reasons for him to do so was because the Teleportation Point in the Grandu Ice Ridge led to the Japan-Korea region’s Ten Barren Seas.

When those bastards enter the Chaos Realm, they would cry in dismay,

knowing that the only place where they could link their [Teleportation Scroll] had been taken away! Each time they wanted to travel to the Chaos Realm, they could only teleport to the Ten Barren Seas and travel 5 hours to the island, and use the portal! You have to obtain the [Territory Conquest Order] to conquer an already-occupied territory. Furthermore, defending was way easier than attacking. Lone Desert Smoke was China's strongest guild. Additionally, territorial attacks were only limited between guilds. There was nothing for Zhang Yang to be afraid of, in a lv1 fight!

Zhang Yang could only look forward to witnessing the expression and dismay when they realize that they had lost their convenience of traveling!

After setting his direction straight, Zhang Yang rode the bear and headed towards the first destination. After the altar, the area was nothing but a wasteland, as the name implied. It was littered with dying flora, while various cacti thrived. After just a few steps out, Zhang Yang could hear a low growl. Out of the brown, withering bushes, a leopard jumped out and sank its fangs deep in the white bear's thigh.

[Ravaging Leopard] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 104

HP: 16,160

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 4,702 – 5,502

Skills:

[Claw Attack]: Tears down the defense of the target. Deals a total of 5,000 physical attack in 15 seconds.

The bear growled in pain and retaliated immediately by slamming its paws into the leopard. Even though the monsters in the Chaos Realm was strong, the white bear was still a Yellow-Gold tier pet mount. With such a large difference in power and tier, the paw attack had sent leopard flying off its feet. The white bear had already received an attack by the leopard before it was sent flying. There was a visible bleeding wound on the bear's thigh, but in the mounting status, all damage will be dealt on the shared

HP bar. The attack was a DoT skill from the Claw Attack. However, instead of suffering any loss in HP, Zhang Yang superior damage absorption passives had completely nullified all the potential damage!

Zhang Yang snickered. With a quick thought, Zhang Yang summoned Felice out. Battle Companions are similar to that of a regular pet, they both required hands-on-the-field experience points to level up.

With the Sword of Purging Devourer dancing in the air, the Raging Leopard fell in its own pool of blood. It had dropped a piece of [Leopard's Tail], and a rabbit's foot that was yet to be digested.

[Lucky Rabbit's Foot] (ETC)

Description: A limb that once belonged to a lucky bunny. Now, it belongs to you!

Zhang Yang frowned. How could a lucky bunny be eaten by a leopard and still not get digested...

The monster had given them a luxurious amount of experience points. Although the total experience points were divided across Zhang Yang, the bear and even Felice, the 5,000 experience points that were given to her, was enough to raise her level to Level 5.

There was a sudden growth in height and size as she gained levels. At level 5, she was already half a foot tall!

Zhang Yang continued on and killed more monsters that pounced at him. There were leopards, lions, boar or only normal tiered enemies. Still, their attack powers rivaled that of elite tiers! That large amount of experience points had sent Little Felice's Level up high!

Level 10? Level 20? Level 30!

When the little girl reached Level 30, Felice had grown from the size of Thumbelina to a normal teenager! She wore a silvery white battle gown. Although the appearance of it looked like it was made of silver, it was neither steel nor silver, for the quality of her armor was much sturdier than that of common armor!

"Big Brother!" Felice cried out the most earnest, and cute voice to Zhang Yang.

Chapter 464: Felice, Too Cute, Too Powerful

Zhang Yang jumped when he heard Felice finally uttering her first word. He would have never expected "Big Brother!" to be her first word!

On cloud nine, Zhang Yang smiled happily and said, "Felice, do you know who you are?"

Felice was surprised at the sudden question and went quiet, as she dwelled in her sea of thoughts. After a slight wincing, Felice shook her head and replied, "I think I do, but whenever I try to remember it, I would have a headache!"

Zhang Yang walked closer to her and patted her head gently. She was at his shoulder height, and it was easy for Zhang Yang to rub the top of her head.

"There's no need to hurt yourself thinking about it. You'll have my word that I will protect you!"

"Yes, big brother!" Felice nodded her head enthusiastically.

Zhang Yang opened Felice's profile window and analyzed her properties.

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 30

HP: 43,530

Defense: 1,960

Melee Attack: 5,888 – 6,488 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear]: Deals 100% physical attack, imbued with Fire elemental damage. Requires: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 seconds. Cost: 50 Power.

[Dragon Barrage]: Deals 150% physical attack on a target. 10% chance to stun the target. Effective against boss monsters with lower stun rates.

Requires: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 minute. Cost: 50 Power.

[Dragonhawk Transformation]: Morphs into a Dragonhawk. Possesses a series of skills that are not available in human form. Unable to use skills of her human form while in Dragonhawk form.

Special: {Seal 1} {Seal 2} {Seal 3} {Seal 4}

Note: Zhan Yu's Battle Companion

Zhang Yang was greatly blown away when he saw Felice's long HP, thick Defense, and her absurd attack power. She was only Level 30 and yet, she already had 40,000 HP! Han Ying Xue herself had only close to 50,000 HP despite being higher than Level 90, and that was already under the effects of Zhang Yang's Vitality Aura buff. Felice currently possesses much more HP than what Zhang Yang had at her level! And she was far from her full potential!

As for her attacking power, even though {Blazing Dragon's Spear} was not too impressive since it would merely be an extra attack above the regular attack. However, the skill was inherently strong, since it had Fire elemental damage, which could ignore Physical Defense. {Dragon's Spear Barrage} was strong. It had a fixed chance to stun, and could even be used on a boss!

Lastly, transformation?

Zhang Yang asked curiously. "Felice, you can transform?"

"Yes, big brother!" With a quick concentration, Felice glowed brightly and morphed into a beautiful Dragonhawk. She grew a long tail and a pair of beautiful wings that had an eight-meter-wide wingspan. From the size of a regular human, she had morphed into a 5-meter long flying majestic beast. Her feathers were gleaming with various vibrant colors.

[Felice] (Dragonhawk)

Level: 30

HP: 32,950

Defense: 880

Magic Attack: 3,192 – 3,792

Skills:

[Pulverizing Flame]: Breathes fires from above, deals 3,000 Fire damage every second to an area, 10x10 meters wide. Lasts for 10 seconds. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Cost: 100 Focus.

[Fire Missile]: Fire a Fire Missile at a target. Deals 200% Magic, Fire elemental damage. Casting time: 2 seconds. Cost: 20 Focus.

Additional Effect: Can Fly.

Hmph. Strong.

Right then, Felice was already really strong. Something about the four seals on her properties had to mean something. Unsealing them would probably unseal even more power. Right then, Zhang Yang had come to an understanding, that perhaps the main story quest reward was indeed worth it, after all!

Sadly, even though Felice's Dragonhawk mode was strong, she could not carry Zhang Yang, even though she could fly. At most, she could lift Zhang Yang via her claws for a short distance, before having to put Zhang Yang down.

Zhang Yang proceeded to kill his way deeper into the new world. As he arrived at his intended destination, Felice had reached Level 64 and had gained a massive boost to all of her stats.

The destination where Zhang Yang had arrived at was a small town. Right then, Zhang Yang was standing on top of a large hill facing directly towards the town. From the top of the hill, Zhang Yang could clearly see the overall landscape of the entire town. The town was occupied by humans. Their buildings and structures were mostly westernized, with a large empty plaza in the center of the town. The stereotypical giant clock was situated at the entrance instead.

Zhang Yang was sure that this town was the first territory that China players had first conquered in his previous life. Even though there were better territories in later maps, this map was important, since it

determined the ease of teleportation between the outside world and the Chaos Realm.

This little town was the first station that any player would come through from China region, and also the only obstacle that any player that wanted to invade China's region. They could either fight their way through, sneak through, or better, fly above the town if they had Flying Mounts.

However so, if any Tom Dick or Harry could get their hands on a Flying Mount, and fly over territories, this little town would not have such significant value in the first place.

This town would play an important role in the defense of China's region territory. If someone from other regions had taken over this place, they would have gained unrestricted access to China's Chaos Realm portal, and would be able to march in to take over any China's territory at will.

Zhang Yang had the highest bit of determination to conquer this territory, however, there was one major problem. He did not know how to obtain the town's [Territory Command Order]! Might as well take a stroll around town before jumping to any random conclusions.

There were many tall cliffs after the hill. The land was extremely hard to venture if one were to travel on foot. Unless he had a Flying Mount now, Zhang Yang would have to walk down the hill from the south and travel around the entire mountainous region, only to circle back again to reach the town.

Very soon, after descending the hill, Zhang Yang arrived at a small graveyard. This place had already become a playground for the Spectres. There were many rotting corpses walking around the place that made eerie, skin-crawl inducing shrieks.

[Wandering Skeletal Soldier] (Normal, Specter)

Level: 105

HP: 16,200

Defense: 100

Ranged Attack: 4,808 – 5,408

Melee Attack: 3,128 – 3,728

Skills:

[Armor Break]: Deals 150 Ranged attack to a target, and reduces 50% of the target's defense value. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: Fallen soldier of the war that had taken place 7 years ago. Countless brave warriors had sacrificed their lives to protect the land from invading demons

"Hold! Don't go any further!"

Just as Zhang Yang was about to enter the battlefield, and an older gentleman walked towards him. The man had a walking staff, and had trouble walking towards Zhang Yang.

[Grave Keeper Douglas] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 1

Note: Not combatant NPC.

Zhang Yang turned to the old man and said, "Do not worry for me, old man. I am very strong. The monsters here can't touch me!"

When Zhang Yang stopped his tracks, Felice flew down from the sky and reverted to her human form to stand beside him.

"What I'm worried of, isn't you, son." Said Douglas nonchalantly, which made Zhang Yang slightly ticked off. "I don't want 'you' to harm 'them'!"

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow. "What are you talking about? Have you gone senile? Aren't they Spectres?" said Zhang Yang.

"You are right. They 'are' Spectres. Listen to me dear boy. Many years ago, there was a war that befell this land. These Spectres that roamed around here were the human heroes who had sacrificed themselves to fight and preserve peace for the town of Morning." Douglas explained the situation, while walking around the graveyard, dusting off the dried leaves on one of the tombstones.

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought. The name of the town, Morning, was the name of the territory that he wanted to conquer. Since he had no clue on how to obtain the town's [Territory Command Order], it was best to follow the quest here rather than just roam around aimlessly without a clear lead.

Zhang Yang stopped to think for quite some time before saying, "I cannot allow these Spectres here to roam around freely. What if someone were to get hurt or killed by them? Heroes or not, they are now Spectres. If someone were to be gravely injured, who is to be held responsible?" said Zhang Yang.

Douglas cringed. "They are brave warriors! They fought in the war and died! If someone were to approach them, the dead warrior would attack out of their unrelenting fighting spirits. Perhaps, there is a way to save them. Only with the Calming Ethereal Holy Water, these Spectres would rest in peace."

Zhang Yang interjected immediately and said, "Old man, where can I find this holy water? As an adventurer, I pledged my sword to fight for peace! Please allow me to search this holy water to bring peace to these fallen heroes."

"If you are as strong as you said, you can make your way to the Poison Blood Valley. In the deepest part of the Valley, there is a small spring. That spring contains the Calming Ethereal Holy Water." The old man shook his head in disappointment before walking away. "I must say, you are not the first warrior to venture to the Poison Blood Valley. There were many warriors like you, who claimed to be strong, but never returned. I am certain that you would be the last to go, and I hope that you would be the first to make it back alive." The old man had not sincerity in his words.

‘Ding! Douglas had a quest for you: Calming Ethereal Holy Water. Will you accept it?’

Accept.

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Empty Flask!’

[Calming Ethereal Holy Water] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Head to the depths of the Poison Blood Valley and returned the water from the spring. Be adviced, the Poison Blood Valley is a place of great danger. Be alert at all times. Bring a comrade if necessary. Poison Blood Valley is located in the West.

Progress: Calming Ethereal Holy Water 0/1

Zhang Yang smiled and nodded politely before leaving. "Felice, let's go."

"Yes, big brother," said Felice obediently, like a little sister. She morphed into the Dragonhawk form without Zhang Yang asking. Zhang Yang stared at the mythical beast, hoping that he too, would quickly stumble upon a Flying Mount as soon as possible. Unlike regular pet mounts, a Flying Mount was extremely rare, and would take a lot of luck to stumble upon.

Zhang Yang, Felice, and the white bear slaughtered random beasts along the way and quickly arrived the Poison Blood Valley. The valley got its name from a long flowing river that flowed down the center of the valley. Instead of normal blue waters, the river had greenish, thick, lumpy liquid that flows from the edge of the valley. From afar, Zhang Yang could already smell the putrid smell of the water. On both sides of the river were stone paths that were dyed in deep red colors. Zhang Yang did not know if the pathway was dyed with blood or if it was just a natural occurrence. There were herbs growing along the crimson pathway.

Just then Zhang Yang realized that, he had not yet released the Herb Foraging Familiar! Zhang Yang quickly summoned out the familiar, paid the 1,000 gold coins fee and allowed the familiar to roam. Right when the familiar appeared at his feet, it quickly flew behind Zhang Yang and circled around carefully. The little critter stared at Felice with hostility and decided to flap its tiny little wings and disappear into the nearby forest. Perhaps, the little critter was already annoyed at Wei Yan Er's random "assaults" and was preparing to escape when it was summoned out.

Thump...Thump...Thump...

There were loud, heavy footsteps echoing through the land. Before Zhang Yang could do anything else, a large, 10 meters tall giant walked

pass Zhang Yang not far from where he stood. The orc wore nothing but a crude loincloth and a long spikey club that rested on his left shoulder. His right arm was dragging the carcass of a dead leopard that had been flattened to the point where its limbs were not in their regular positions.

[Savage Man-Eating Orc] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 9,194 – 9,994

Skills:

[Head Bash]: Forcefully bashes the target's head, dealing 150% melee damage and stunning the target for 2 seconds.

Note: One faction of the gigantic orc race. Prefers to behave savagely. Loves human meat.

"Big brother! This giant orc eats human!" cried Felice angrily. She wielded her spear in her hand and made to run towards the orc.

Zhang Yang immediately held his hand out to stop the little girl. "Felice, listen to me. Don't rush into things. He's too strong for you now. Allow me to take this."

At the current stage of the game, the system had already tweaked the Level Suppression Gap to 30 Levels, Felice had only needed to gain 10 levels more to be able to deal unsuppressed damage. By then, she would be a strong attacker in her own right?! Until then, she would have to listen to Zhang Yang and watch from the sidelines. If she dies, she would lose one level, which would put a strain on Zhang Yang. Even though pets and Battle Companions required less experience points compared to players, it would still take ages to level them up!

Zhang Yang hopped onto the bear, and charged towards the giant orc.

"Ohhoo...food. Food coming. Me kill."

The giant orc released the carcass his hand, and he grabbed the club from his shoulders. The orc wielded the spiked club with both of his gigantic hands, and slammed it down at Zhang Yang with the force of a thousand men!

WHAM!

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was already using the skill - {Wild Charge} and could not move away in the midst of a skill animation. However, Zhang Yang was already prepared for an attack. He held his shield up high, and activated {Block} at the last minute.

‘-730!’ {Block} reflect damage.

The white bear threw its massive body with the power {Wild Charge}, and swiped its massive claw at the orc’s foot.

‘-4,412!’

‘-4,291!’

As expected from the Yellow-Gold battle mount, its attack was as strong as Zhang Yang. It was a pity that the bear was only Level 98. If Zhang Yang could grind a little more to push it to the threshold of Level 100, the bear attack power would have been a lot higher.

It could not be helped. Zhang Yang had gained so many bonus level rewards from events and quests, causing him to reach higher levels much faster than this battle mount. Bonus levels are rewards granted to the player. As a battle mount would only gain experience points from hands-on battles, the bear would be unable to gain any experience points, despite the system granting the owner bonus levels.

Felice did not just sit quietly. After seeing her "big brother" attacked by the giant orc bully, she jumped into the battle, and morphed into the Dragonhawk, and attacked from afar. From mid-air, she spewed out Fire Missiles, and bombarded the orc with damage values surpassing 6,000!

Zhang Yang was stunned. He had wanted to call out for Felice to withdraw, but when he saw the damage that she had dealt to the orc, despite still having the suppressed damage via the level gap, he gave up on

the idea and continued to attack the orc. Her attack power was already beyond the Level 98 bear. If she were to gain more levels and participate in battle with Zhang Yang, she would be the main attacker! By then, Sun Xin Yu and the other super-powered attackers in Zhang Yang's team would not be able to exceed the damage that Felice could deal!

Even though the orc had a little over 1 million HP, Zhang Yang had the bear and Felice, and was able to defeat the boss without a hitch.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to deliver the last killing blow, the orc growled loudly and his spiked club started glowing red. Zhang Yang could not react in time to dodge the slam.

"Club feels good! I smash!"

Wham!

‘-7,336!’

Zhang Yang could not counter the attack since {Block} was still in a cooldown state. Blood started to flow down and submerged Zhang Yang's helm. The orc's {Head Bash} was strong enough to even stun Zhang Yang for 2 seconds.

"Big Brother!" Felice cried out in rage. She flew down from the sky and returned to her human form. With a powerful kick on the ground, Felice launched herself at the orc and cast {Dragon's Spear Barrage}.

‘-7,867!’

Felice was fortunate to have proc'd a stun effect on the orc!

TL Note:

1. Big Brother: If you watch Japanese anime, you would know how a person feels when a little girl calls the main character Onii-chan. That sort of feeling was what Zhang Yang felt, Onii-chan...Onii-chan...lol.

Chapter 465: Cleansing the Spectres

"Nicely done!" Zhang Yang cried out. He had the [Heart of the Death Knight] equipped, and would only experience half of the intended stun duration. However, since his character level was already 20 Levels beyond the item level, the equipment's effect would be reduced. Thus, Zhang Yang had experienced 1.2 seconds of the 2 seconds stun.

After a slugfest, Zhang Yang defeated the giant orc and obtained a few pieces of [Inscribed Cloth] and a few silver coins.

When Zhang Yang looted the item, he found the [Inscribed Cloth] odd, considering the fact that the orc only had a short loincloth on. After he finished up with his business there, Zhang Yang called out to Felice. "Let's go!"

"Mm." Felice answered obediently.

Zhang Yang appreciated her words. If only Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would obey Zhang Yang so obediently, then he could ask them to warm his bed for him. That, or he could just ask them to be nice to each other. He would rather have that, than the constant cold war between the two of them.

Zhang Yang went on and found an old gigantic house that was built from stacking gigantic flat boulders like Legos. The house was so huge that it could be a hall, rather than a house.

Creek...

Before Zhang Yang could go closer to the house, a female orc opened the door and walked out of the stone house. This female orc was much larger in size and height compared to the previous orc that Zhang Yang had just killed. Unlike the male orc, she wore a super-sized bra that held her overly large wrecking-ball sized breast. If she were to have a bra size, it would be beyond human measurements. Perhaps, Silky Soft Holdings could specially manufacture a bra with a ZZ cup size... Or perhaps...not... They would be bankrupt if they were to cater for beasts.

Zhang Yang was not even trying to hide. The female orc turned around and quickly noticed Zhang Yang's presence. She growled with a thunderous roar and charged at Zhang Yang. Her roar was so deafening that it hurt Zhang Yang's ear. When she got closer to Zhang Yang, she cracked a sinister smile and cried, "Fresh meat! Human meat! Best meat! I kill! Eat fresh!"

Zhang Yang charged forward with the bear. With agile maneuvers, Zhang Yang bent over and lay down on the bear's back to evade one of the incoming punches, and sliced at the female orc's thigh. It was not that Zhang Yang wanted to attack her legs, the monster was just too huge, and Zhang Yang had no means of jumping any higher than her thighs.

"Hah!" Felice grunted as she changed into a Dragonhawk and fired Fire Missiles to the orc. In just a short minute, Zhang Yang and Felice had killed the Man-Eating Female Orc. Even though he had lost over 70,000 HP, he could recover all his HP loss with a simple activation of {Berserker's Heal}. Compared to anyone else, the monster's basic attack of 9,600 could have killed anyone easily without them having a chance to attack. A normal party would have to bring in at least 5 members before they could even consider attacking the monster.

Zhang Yang moved forward and found many more stone houses like the previous one. Usually, there was only one orc inside. Other times, there were two and, more rarely, three at a time. If Zhang Yang had to fight two orcs at the same time, he would need to use either {Shield Wall}, or {Berserker's Heal}. If he had to fight three orcs at the same time, he would need to use both skills to survive.

Aptly scaled to their difficulty, the orcs had given Zhang Yang a luxurious amount of experience points, which was shared with the bear and Felice. The bear had reached Level 99, and Felice had gained 3 Levels. Zhang Yang alone had only managed to raise a tiny microscopic bump on his experience bar. After Level 100, the experience needed to level up was just too much. Level 96 players would take 1 whole month to reach Level 100, for god's sake!

The Valley was not huge to begin with, and Zhang Yang had only taken

3 hours or so to reach the deepest part of the valley. There, at the edge of a thick forest, Zhang Yang could see a spring. The pool of water was not far from the smelly green colored river, yet it maintained a beautiful, clear color. Zhang Yang soaked his sweaty hands into the pool, and he could see beautiful starlights glistening at the bottom of the pool.

Zhang Yang took out the flask that he had obtained and filled the glass bottle up with the water. The quest notification popped up, and notified a change in the quest.

[Calming Ethereal Holy Water] (Quest Item)

Item Expiration: 4 Hours 59 Minutes 59 Seconds.

Crap!

There was even a time limit for the item! Zhang Yang had greatly appreciated Felice's help in killing the monsters. Thanks to her, they had managed to this spring in 3 hours! Without her, they might have taken close to 6 hours to kill their way there! If they had taken that long to arrive to the spring, the elite monsters that they had killed on their way here would have respawned after 5 hours. That meant Zhang Yang would have to kill the monster on the entrance of the valley again, which would only further delay the time taken to return to the old man! The quest item could have expired and he would either have to double back, or the quest might even be deemed a failure!

Zhang Yang kept the bottle of holy water in his inventory and rushed out of the valley. With no monsters around to block his way, Zhang Yang had only taken 20 minutes to leave the valley and reach the graveyard.

"Old man, I've brought back the water."

Douglas limped his way around and said, "Well. I never expected to see you so soon! You have indeed proven your words!"

Zhang Yang took out the bottle of holy water and gave it to the old man. He was slightly annoyed at the man, when he had previously mentioned the number of warriors who have gone and never came back. Zhang Yang was the first person to arrive at this place. What warriors were he talking

about?!

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Calming Ethereal Holy Water. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

"This is but the first step, young warrior. What you have to do next is to sprinkle the water on the bones of the fallen warriors. With that, they can finally rest in peace."

‘Ding! Douglas has a quest for you: Cleansing the Spectres. Will you accept it?’

[Cleansing the Spectre] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Use the holy water and sprinkle it on the Spectres in their graves to grant them peace.

Progress: Cleansed Spectre 0/100

[Calming Ethereal Holy Water] (Quest Item)

Use: Cleanses the souls of the Spectres, granting them peace to leave this world. Can only be used on the corpse of a defeated enemy.

Zhang Yang left the old man behind and went into the graveyard. There were many roaming skeletal warriors, and Zhang Yang had engaged with one in no time. The skeletal warrior had produced a bow out of thin air and had fired an arrow at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang did not even need to unsheathe his sword, his bear and Felice had whacked the poor Spectre up in less than 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang walked over to the battle and by the time he had taken out the Holy water, the skeletal warrior was already defeated. Zhang Yang then used the [Calming Ethereal Holy Water] on the corpse. The water was completely absorbed into the bones. Before Zhang Yang could even close the bottle, a human ghost appeared from the remains, and bowed respectfully at Zhang Yang before dispersing into millions of light particles.

One down, 99 more to go.

Light particles spread all over the graveyard as Zhang Yang, Felice, and

the bear raided the entire graveyard, and killed every single roaming skeletal monster. A problem was found when Zhang Yang had cleared the entire graveyard and his quest progress was stuck at 99/100. There were no more Spectres for him to cleanse anymore! Even though normal tiered monsters respawned fairly quickly. It would still take 3 hours for them to respawn. To make matters worse, Zhang Yang had only taken close to half an hour to kill every single Spectre within the vicinity! He would have to wait for 2 hours and 30 minutes for the Spectre to spawn again!

Zhang Yang got around the graveyard frantically, and started to search for any leftover monsters that he had missed. Fortunately for him, he finally found one. The skeletal monsters were so similar to that of regular humans! It was natural for Zhang Yang to miss out one or two. The one he found was rather different, compared to the regular skeletal monsters. It was seated on the ground, and was resting his head on his palms, like he was actually thinking.

Zhang Yang paced over to the skeletal monster and had Felice kill the thing in less than 4 strokes. When Zhang Yang poured the holy water on its remains, a human ghost appeared. But this time, the ghost carried a name tag.

[Sous's Soul] (Spirit)

Level: 1

This ghost was not the same as the previous 99 souls that Zhang Yang had cleansed. After it appeared, the ghost had bowed at Zhang Yang and had opened its ethereal mouth. "Forgive me for asking. But, could you, kind adventurer, fulfill my one last wish?"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Do you have unfinished business?"

"Yes." Sous nodded and gazed at the general direction of Morning Town. "I have a younger sister living in that town. She's... She was born blind. My parents were killed by the demons a long time ago. Hence, both of us had grown up together. However, I left this earth a little too early to let go of my younger sister! I cannot leave this world not knowing that she is safe without me! Before I left her to join the expedition army, I had promised

to return to her with a Star Spirit Flower. That flower is a mythical flower that would cure anything, even the blind! However, now that I am dead, I cannot fulfill my promise. Adventurer, I beg of you, to bring my sister a Star Spirit Flower. She is called Luilina. Please, do this in my stead."

'Ding! Sous's Soul has a quest for you: Sous's Last Wish. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "You are a respected human being and a kind brother. I give you my word."

"I thank you from the bottom of my heart, young adventurer," said Sous before his soul faded away.

There was a long silence, when suddenly, Felice hugged Zhang Yang from behind. With tears in her eyes, she pleaded, "Big Brother! You cannot leave me behind!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "Silly child. I promised you, didn't I? I will always be there to protect you!" Zhang Yang patted her head.

"Mm..."

Zhang Yang opened the quest log and read the quest description.

[Sous's Last Wish] (Difficulty Level: B)

Description: Sous wishes that you will help him deliver a special flower to his younger sister, Luilina. Such a flower can only be found at the highest peak of Red Copper Mountain. Red Copper Mountain is located to the south. Luilina is currently living in the outskirts of Morning Town.

Progress: Obtained the Star Spirit Flower 0/1

Zhang Yang first returned to Douglas and completed the mission for only 200,000 experience points. However, despite the abysmal amount of experience points, Zhang Yang was not disappointed. The main quest was not cleansing the Spectres. He knew that the quest might have led him to another which, he hoped, could lead him to get the [Territory Command Order], for Morning Town.

Zhang Yang rode towards the south, with Felice in her Dragonhawk

form. The little merry party reached to the Red Copper Mountain, after only 2 hours of hiking.

The mountain was grand and tall. The Red Copper Mountain had gotten its name from the color of the soil and the color of the trees growing ever so scarcely around the mountain. With little to no trees at all, the surface of the mountain was made up of steep cliffs, which made climbing it rather difficult. However, it did not stop Zhang Yang from reaching halfway through where he had encountered the first monster. The monster was a large snake that measured close to 10 meters in length.

[Spectrum Venomous Snake] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 110

HP: 17,600

Defense: 100

Magic Attack: 3,106 – 3,506 (Natural Damage)

Skills:

[Venom Spit]: Deals 200% Natural damage with a 10% chance to cause {Poisoned} to the target, which will cause the target to received 20% extra damage when attacked with Natural damage attacks. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

Chapter 466: Flying Mount!

Puah!

A venomous projectile flew through the air and splattered all over Zhang Yang's armor. The green liquid almost immediately started sliding off his armor. The damage done to him was only 3,061 Natural damage.

The monsters in the Chaos Realm were a distinct step above their pre-Chaos Realm brethren. Immediately, Felice started acting on her own, without waiting for a single word from Zhang Yang. She shot down from the sky, and morphed back into an energetic young woman. With a quick thrust of her spear, Felice stabbed the snake.

‘-6,201!’

She was already Level 77, having grown far stronger since the time Zhang Yang fought the orcs. Sadly, her attacks have been reduced by the system's Level Gap suppression. On monsters over level 107, she would only deal 50% of her damage! However, even with half of her attacks "taken" away by the system, one attack from her spear was already enough to take away 1/3 of the snake's HP.

Zhang Yang smirked. He was extremely satisfied to see how much Felice had grown. To speed things up, Zhang Yang and the bear joined the fray, landing one attack each and killing the snake before it could even launch a second attack.

She could already deal such a high amount of damage at only Level 77. What would happen when she reaches Level 100? Would she kill a monster with one hit? Zhang Yang could not wait to find out. With her alone, Zhang Yang would be unstoppable!

He reached down and picked up the loot, obtaining a few pieces of [Snake Meat]. He could bring the materials back and pass it to any guild member who has taken up the Cooking profession.

Zhang Yang continued up the mountainous road and killed more snakes that ambushed him. The snakes were hiding in the creeks along the

pathway and they had jumped up from behind Zhang Yang as he walked past by. Zhang Yang was not bothered by it. He was already strong to begin with. Now that he had Felice and his bear together with him, he killed them all in less than 2 hits. Zhang Yang killed on and on and managed to get the bear to Level 100, while Felice had reached Level 80.

The Level 100 Gold-Eared White Bear had 43,680 HP with Zhang Yang's Vitality Aura boost, and an Attack Power of 5,886 – 6,486, attacking once every 3 seconds. Its DPS was at 2,062.

As for Felice, she was at Level 80 and had a total HP of 139,300 in her human form, boosted by Zhang Yang's Vitality Aura. Her melee attack power was 14,145 – 15,145 with an attack interval of 3.8 seconds. Her DPS was 3,855.

Zhang Yang had nothing to say. The bear had a great track record from the beginning. This was just the bear living up to its standards. That alone pleased Zhang Yang. But when he saw Felice's stats, he was overjoyed, and slightly ashamed. Felice's stats had already surpassed his own! His own HP was 97,190, his attack was 4,081 – 4,481, and his DPS was 1,529. How could he be the master when his Battle Companion is already stronger than him!

"Felice. You make me feel so tiny!" said Zhang Yang, with a sigh. Right now, he could not live up to his promise to protect her. Right now, it's the other way around!

Felice smiled warmly and said, "Big Brother, you need not worry! I'm sure big brother will be stronger in the future."

Such a kind little girl, unlike that little brat Wei Yan Er who would always tease him at every chance she gets!

As they continued on slaying more and more snakes and obtaining more [Snake Meat], Zhang Yang found an odd little shiny thing lying next to the [Snake Meat].

"Hmm?"

It was a snake, measuring only about half a foot long. It was completely

white, and had silvery lining all over its tiny, miniature body. For someone like Zhang Yang, he could appreciate the snake's beauty. Its eyes were smaller than green peas, but the brilliant green would actually surpass a jade!

The odd thing about it was the fact that the snake had a pair of tiny little wings sticking out from its back. It was actually hovering a few inches from the ground!

[Juvenile Snowy Scale Wind Serpent] (Rare Yellow-Gold Flying Mount, Beast)

Level: O

Note: Can be sealed.

A flying mount!

Zhang Yang eyes glinted with joy! He had never expected to find a Flying Mount so soon in the Chaos Realm! Even though it was only a Yellow-Gold tier, Zhang Yang did not mind having a lower attack power mount, since the primary purpose of a Flying Mount is to fly! Just by being the first player to obtain a Flying Mount was enough for him to ignore the shortcomings of it. It was just lying there for him to take! What is there to complain about?!

Zhang Yang immediately took out a [Sealing Lease] and used it on the little Wind Serpent to seal it.

1%...2%...3%...57%...Pak! Fail...

As if the little serpent had taken notice of Zhang Yang's presence, it extended its wings and started to take off. Felice immediately morphed into her Dragonhawk form and growled at it. Seeing a large hostile enemy coming at it, the little serpent turned around and cowered behind Zhang Yang's greaves.

It was natural to be afraid of Felice. She did carry the name - "Dragon" after all!

Zhang Yang took out another [Sealing Lease] and used it to the little

serpent.

1%...2%...34%... Pak! Fail...

Zhang Yang remained calm, he still had 8 more turns to make it his. On the other hand, Felice was agitated. In a louder voice, she growled and shrieked at the little serpent. The poor little fellow trembled and curled up at Zhang Yang's greaves. Felice growled again in a lower volume, as if she was trying to convey a warning. The little serpent better submits itself to Zhang Yang, or she would gobble it up!

Zhang Yang tried for the third time.

1%...2%...3%...97%...98%...99%...100%!

'Ding! You have successfully sealed the Juvenile Snow Scale Wind Serpent as your Flying Mount!'

'Ding! You have captured your first Flying Mount! The tutorial will commence. Before Level 30, the Flying Mount cannot be used as a Mount nor a Battle Mount. The Juvenile Snow Scale Wind Serpent will follow the player around upon summoning and will share a portion of the experience points you gain from combat. The Flying Mount will be usable after reaching Level 30. When the Flying Mount reaches Level 100, it can be used to ferry multiple players at the same time. Please visit the official site for more inquiries or use the in-game communicator to speak to one of our correspondents. Please enjoy the game. Thank you.'

The Juvenile Snow Scale Wind Serpent had disappeared from the world and Zhang Yang inventory had gained a new lease.

Zhang Yang smiled, as he thought it that was funny to think that the serpent will acquiesce to a kind approach instead of tough love. It was like the serpent was in a police interrogation room, and he was playing the role of the good cop while Felice acted as the bad cop.

"Nice one!"

"Teehee..." Felice blushed and nodded her head in acknowledgment. Zhang Yang could not take that level of cuteness and had to caress her head softly.

Zhang Yang summoned the little serpent out to gain experience. Since it was only Level 0, the little serpent was hovering around by his side like a pet that would not contribute in any battles. It would have to gain more experience to level up and reach Level 30 to attack. Zhang Yang did not mind having the snake leech experience points from him. He did, after all, gain the first Flying Mount. The joy of it was justifiable! Level 30 was nothing. Zhang Yang could find a massive field and start mass-killing to gain that amount of experience points easily. Plus, he wasn't technically alone. He had Felice in her Dragonhawk form and she alone, could wipe the monsters out!

After half an hour of hiking, Zhang Yang arrived at the mountain top but had yet to find the Star Spirit Flower. Zhang Yang circled around the top of the mountain and stumble upon a large Three-Headed Crimson Hydra that was resting on a large boulder. The Hydra was at least 30 to 40 meters in both height and width. Its scales were deep red in color. Zhang Yang would not have noticed the Hydra if not for three heads sticking out from the massive body.

All three head of the Hydra shared the same shape, but each of them had a distinct color. One was green, one was red, and one was white. The heads were all triangular in shape, making it look like a king cobra.

[Three-Headed Crimson Hydra] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 115

HP: 5,750,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 12,434 – 13,434

Magic Attack: 7,390 – 7,990

Skills:

[Fatal Poison]: Causes {Poisoned} to a target, and deals 200% Magic damage of Natural element. The target will have a certain chance to receive the same damage as the previous attack. Lasts for 15 seconds. Effect does not stack.

[Burning Fangs]: Spits poisonous fire projectiles at the target. Deals 200% Magic damage in the form of Fire Damage. Causes the target have a certain chance to be blinded. Lasts for 15 seconds. Effect does not stack.

[Ice Burst]: Fires an Icy projectile to the target. Deals 200% Magic attack in the form of Ice Damage. Immobilizes the target for 5 seconds.

Note: The King of snakes at Red Copper Mountain. Be advised, many have fallen to the Hydra.

In almost every common situation, the quest item would be situated right next to a boss which would have to be killed before the player could retrieve the quest item.

Instead of jumping into battle, he turned around to scout the area. Behind the boss, hiding among the smaller rocks around, was a mythical flower. The flower was shiny, and had petals that glowed with the starry shine of a star!

Although Zhang Yang was too far away from the flower, and could not directly access the properties window of the flower, but he was already guessing that it was the quest item he needed.

Zhang Yang turned around and checked Felice's stats. She was already Level 83 and was 32 levels behind the boss. She would still suffer from the Level Gap Suppression attack reduction. After a few seconds of thinking, Zhang Yang said, "Let's skip the boss for now. We'll find some more monsters to grind and gain a few levels before we fight the boss."

Felice lowered her head. "I'm sorry, Felice is too weak to fight. I'm sorry for dragging big brother's feet."

Zhang Yang caressed her head and said, "There's nothing wrong. You have done a great job growing so fast. Without you here, I would already have been overwhelmed."

Felice's sorrow turned into a smile, and she followed Zhang Yang down the mountain to kill a few more monsters. Zhang Yang had even unsummoned the bear and the little serpent to increase the experience gain for Felice. After an hour of speed grinding, Felice finally reached

Level 85. Although her stats were about the same as when she was Level 80, her attacks would not suffer any reduction from the Level gap Suppression when she fights the Hydra.

Zhang Yang summoned the bear and the Juvenile Flying Serpent, and returned to the hill to prepare for the boss fight. The white bear was the attacker, but Juvenile Flying Serpent had yet to reach Level 30. To hasten the progress of it becoming a legitimate flying mount, Zhang Yang had to summon it out to feed it experience points.

"Alright. Let's kill the Hydra!"

Zhang Yang jumped onto the bear and charged bravely at the Hydra.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-4,219!’

"HSSS!" The Hydra immediately shot up and hissed loudly. At that close proximity, Zhang Yang could finally observe the entire boss' body. It was a streamlined creature with no legs. Like a normal snake, it had a long body, and the three heads branched out from 2/3 of its frontal end.

FWOOSH!

Like a one meter steel pillar flying down from above, the Hydra lashed its tail at Zhang Yang's head.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang lifted his shield and successfully blocked the tail attack. Now that the boss was only a Yellow-Gold tier, Zhang Yang did not suffer any knockback effects, and could even swat the tail aside, as if it was made of straw! Bullying the boss was possible thanks to his Violet-Platinum equipment!

Chapter 467: Luilina

Hydra resumed an attack stance. After the green head retracted back, the red color head expanded the venom sac below its jaw and spat out a stream of fire, passing right through Zhang Yang's face.

‘-9,882!’

Zhang Yang rolled over quickly. He had already taken a huge amount of damage, and had also gained a debuff called [Burning], which could induce {Blindness} at a certain rate within 15 seconds.

"Bloody snake! How dare you!" Felice jumped into the air and changed to her Dragonhawk form. She shot into the sky and flew closer to the boss, attacking him with a [Fire Missile] to enact vengeance.

‘-8,921!’

The boss took its share of damage, slightly higher than what it had done to Zhang Yang, and wiggled its head.

Zhang Yang frowned. Right then, Felice was only 30 Levels behind the Hydra. Technically, her attacks should be higher than that! Zhang Yang thought for a while and had an idea. "Felice! Attack the white head after this!"

"Yes! Big brother!" Felice nodded her head and flapped her wings to readjust her position in the air to target the white head.

Pew!

‘-17,188!’

Bingo!

The Hydra took almost double the original damage. All three heads retracted and winced in pain.

"Big Brother! You're a genius!" Felice cried out happily.

Zhang Yang laughed. Felice's attack was fire based. The red color head of the Hydra should be Fire based as well. Hence, it should have a higher resistance towards Fire attacks! That was the reason why Felice's attack

could not inflict the damage that it was meant to be.

Even though the three heads were dealing elemental-based magic attacks, it still preferred to use melee attacks. Using its massive and thick snake body, Hydra hurled itself at Zhang Yang, far more often than it did use a magical attack. As a Guardian, Zhang Yang had a higher affinity to physical Defense. He would take no more than 6,000 damage whenever {Block} was not available.

Occasionally, the boss would spew green colored clouds to poison Zhang Yang. At other times, it would blow out a cloud of ice to freeze Zhang Yang for 5 seconds. The Fire attack was also used occasionally to blind Zhang Yang. During {Blindness}, Zhang Yang could only guess the location of the Hydra and hack away blindly.

Felice was performing at her best. More and more {Fire Missiles} were sent to the white head, dealing a constant damage of 17,000 and higher. However, during the moments when Zhang Yang could not attack or be rendered immobilized, he would lose a great deal of aggro, causing the Hydra to target Felice instead.

When the Hydra switched its target, it turned to Felice and pounced, extending its neck and biting down on Felice. Felice was not able to dodge in time, and was brought down to the land by the boss. Within a split second, Felice had morphed back to her human form and started going to work with her spear.

In her Dragonhawk form, Felice was vulnerable to attacks, since her Defense was only 880. However, in her Human form, Felice's Defense was significantly higher at 3,760 Defense value.

Felice was only Level 85, but her stats were higher than normal. Hence, she could fight toe-to-toe with the Yellow-Gold boss, and showed no signs of losing! Zhang Yang could not help but frown with worry. Ever since he had entered the game, this was his first time being OTed. Luckily the target that OTed him was an NPC. If that was not the case, he would have been ashamed of himself.

"Stinky snake! I am your opponent! Why are you attacking a little girl

for! Do you not know shame!" cried Zhang Yang. He came out of the icy prison and headed to the boss. With quick action, Zhang Yang cast {Provoke} and managed to draw the attention of the boss.

"Big Brother! I'm not afraid of the snake! I can take him on!" said Felice as she morphed back to her Dragonhawk form and attacked the Hydra with more {Fire Missile}. Even though she had much higher Defense in her Human form, she could deal much higher damage in her Dragonhawk form!

Zhang Yang hacked at the boss and said, "Big brother is a Guardian. Let big brother take the hits! Felice can attack him while I draw his attention!"

"Yes! Big brother!" said Felice obediently and continued her barrage of {Fire Missiles}.

Together, their continuous attacks had forced the Hydra to flinch and hiss, more than anything else. At one point, the Hydra had to move its massive body around, whipping its tail all over the terrain and smashing the boulders around into tiny pebbles.

Felice was just too powerful. Her Dragonhawk form had more than 9,000 DPS, which was much more than Zhang Yang, even with the bear helping out! Felice was even stronger than the super attackers like Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream, and Lost Dream!

Zhang Yang was extremely grateful to have her. Fuh! As expected of the first-born Battle Companion in the entire game!

Needless to say, the boss was just a Yellow-Gold boss, and only lasted for about 6 minutes, before it curled up and died with a sorrowful wail.

By the end of the battle, Zhang Yang had used both {Shield Wall} and {Berserker's Heal}.

Shring! Shring! Shring!

The boss gave a large amount of experience points, allowing Felice, the white bear, and the flying serpent to gain levels. Even though the experience points was shared equally to all parties, the amount of experience points was enough to grant the little flying serpent 5 levels,

pushing its level from Level 27 to Level 32 in one go. With that, the little flying serpent immediately grew to become a 7 meter long, flying serpent!

Since it had reached the Level 30 threshold, the flying serpent could no longer appear in the field as a pet and had turned into a small light orb, returning to Zhang Yang's inventory.

"Big brother! I'll help you pick the flower!" said Felice proactively. She morphed into her Dragonhawk form and flew over to the cliff side to pick the Star Spirit Flower.

Hmm. This should be how a little girl behaves. If Wei Yan Er ever behaved in such a way however, it would probably only happen during the end of the world.

As Felice flew back to Zhang Yang, he went over to the loot and picked up 4 equipment. 3 of them were Gray-Silver tiers and the remaining one was a Yellow-Gold tier.

[Snake Scale Chest Plate] (Yellow-Gold, Leather Armor)

Defense: +24

Vitality: +370

Strength: +331

Dexterity: +148

Equip Effect: Increases your attack and healing rate by 2%.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 110

Zhang Yang swooped all the equipment into his inventory, only examining the Yellow-Gold equipment. For him, none of the equipment was worth keeping. At least, they could be sold for some tens of thousands of gold coins as a reward for killing the Hydra. It was a good amount of side income to feed those girls in his house.

By then, Felice had arrived at Zhang Yang's side. She handed the flower to Zhang Yang and stood aside, quietly and obediently.

With quest completed, Zhang Yang unsummoned the bear and replaced his mount with the Snow Scale Flying Serpent. The flying serpent was 7 meters in length. Its wingspan was 10 meters wide. It was no less intimidating than Felice's Dragonhawk form.

Felice only glared at the Flying Serpent, and the proud flying serpent retracted its head closer to its body. It stared at Felice with admiration.

Zhang Yang cracked a laugh and mounted the flying serpent, descending the mountain.

It was a pity that the Level 32 flying serpent could only "glide" around the surface, instead of actually flying. Whenever Zhang Yang encountered a larger obstacle, it could not fly over and could only circle around it. Luckily, as the flying serpent could travel in the air, it was still much faster than the white bear. After a few hours, Zhang Yang arrived at Morning Town.

The small town was empty and had little to no people walking in the streets. After Zhang Yang explored the entire town, he had only stumbled upon less than 10 pedestrians. Thankfully, the streets were clear enough for Zhang Yang to speed through to reach the western outskirts of the town, where Sous' little sister, Luilina resided.

Zhang Yang arrived at a small, flower garden that had many beautiful flowers, planted unevenly throughout the garden. The person who did the gardening was clearly not a professional. Zhang Yang trod across the garden carefully and saw a small hut at the west end of the garden. The door was wide open, and there was no one inside the house.

Zhang Yang guessed that the small house belonged to Luilina. But, where was the person?

Zhang Yang frowned and started to kick some dirt around the garden, thinking about her possible locations. Just then, Felice cried out, "Big brother! Over there!" Felice pointed at the far side of the garden. A girl was walking out of the forest, carrying a small flower basket in her left arm, and a walking stick at her right.

[Luilina] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level:1

Note: Sous' little sister, a poor, blind girl.

Luilina looked like she was already at her 18s. She had a long blonde hair that flowed gently in the wind. Her complexion was perfect, and she had a slender, lithe body. She would have been the perfect woman to marry, if not for her permanently closed eyes. The dress she wore was aged and cheap. Although there were patches all over her dress, it had been well taken care off.

Naturally, her hearing would be well-honed, so she quickly noticed Zhang Yang's presence from afar, and raised her head at his general direction. She opened her eyelids and exposed a pair of clouded eyes, "Who's there?"

"I'm a friend of your brother," said Zhang Yang softly.

"My brother's friend?" Luilina spoke softly. There was an obvious tone of sorrow in her voice.

Zhang Yang got her attention and proceeded to give the flower to the girl. At first, she was genuinely surprised for receiving such a flower. But no sooner, a smile appeared. "Did brother...ask you to deliver this flower?"

When the girl received the flower, it started glowing brightly. Particles of light seeped out of the petals and flew into Luilina's eyes. The cloudy layer of her eyes dissipated, and her normal black pupils were revealed. More and more light particles zoomed into her eyes and made both of them glow with a soft radiance.

"I...I...I can see!" cried the petite, little girl happily. Tears started to flow down her pinkish cheeks and she pointed her fingers to the surroundings. "T-The sky is blue! I can see it! The trees are green! Red roses too! Ah! I see them blooming! How beautiful! sob."

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Sous' Last Wish. Obtained 200,000 Experience Points!'

Zhang Yang wiped away her tears and said, "You brother, Sous never forgot the promise he made. Luilina. From the bottom of my heart, I am

sorry for your loss. You have the world's best brother!"

Luilina smiled cheerfully and said, "Indeed he was."

Felice pouted her lips and before she could say anything, Zhang Yang pulled her back. "I'm glad that you think so."

Luilina smiled at Zhang Yang and said, "You're a good big brother as well! I must thank you for granting his last wish. Please, rest at my house. It's not far from here!"

When a girl offers an invitation, there's no reason to reject. Especially, since he had nothing to do after the quest was completed. Perhaps, her invitation to her house might trigger some sort of event!

All three of them walked to her house and made themselves comfortable. Although the house was not big, nor luxuriously decorated, it was tidy and clean. There was even a scent of flowery smell that lingered around the house. The three of them started to talk. Luilina talked about her brother, where during the whole time Felice could not help but to divert the conversation to be about Zhang Yang.

Not long, the glow in Luilina's eyes faded away and a layer of cloudy membrane coated her eyes. Luilina returned to become a blind girl.

Zhang Yang was surprised. The Star Spirit Flower was potent enough to shed light into the eyes of a blind girl, allowing her to see temporarily, but not cure her blindness.

"Erhm...Luilina..." said Zhang Yang.

"Worry not, big brother. I am happy. Although it was momentary, I had my fun looking at the world." Luilina turned to Zhang Yang with her dead eyes and smiled.

Zhang Yang hesitated, but eventually caved in and revealed to Luilina, her brother's story. He told her about the war, the expedition, Sous' death, and even how Sous was able to rest in peace knowing that Zhang Yang was able to fulfill his last wish. Luilina cried endlessly when she listened to Zhang Yang's story.

Time passed on when Zhang Yang realized that, it was already late in the evening. Zhang Yang bade Luilina farewell and headed back to town.

Zhang Yang felt annoyed. Luilina's tragic loss and her sad life had left him hanging with a cliffhanger end to the quest. Zhang Yang wandered about town aimlessly, unable to get over it yet. However, a short distance away from Luilina's house, he spotted three drunk youngsters zigzagging around. They were obviously heavily intoxicated.

Zhang Yang took notice of them but did not put it into his mind. Not until the thought of it returned to him after the silhouette of Morning Town came to his vision. Besides the forest, there was nothing outside the town, besides Luilina's house. The three drunk youngsters must be heading to Luilina's! To make things worse, they were drunk, intoxicated, and tipsy. They could do things to a helpless, blind girl living alone!

Zhang Yang turned around swiftly and shot towards Luilina's house without hesitation.

Just when he touched down, he heard a loud scream of a girl coming from inside Luilina's house. Rage built up in his heart and Zhang Yang ran towards the house.

The door was left opened and Zhang Yang could see the three drunkards holding Luilina down, their hands roughly exploring her body! Her dress was torn apart, leaving the most important places still intact. If Zhang Yang had been slightly later, he might have been too late.

One of the youngsters was shouting dementedly, "Stop pretending, little minx! Consider it your lucky day that a man such as I would be willing to touch you! You'll be thanking me when I'm done with you! Haha! In fact, you'll be begging for more!"

"Haha! Young Master Bendoch is right! The little minx is indeed beautiful! It's a shame that those pretty eyes do not work, or else she would have been the most beautiful girl in town!" said another man.

"Enough! Get on it already. I'm waiting for my turn!" said the last youngster as he started to remove his pants.

Zhang Yang was still at the entrance of the house as they expressed their monstrous intentions. With heavy killing aura, Zhang Yang shot into the house and swung his sword in a wide arc, as hard as he could.

"ARGH!" one of the youngsters got hit and wailed in pain as he lost a large portion of his HP.

They were all Level 105 normal tier NPCs. Such a strike should have killed them easily!

Chapter 468: Begging for Life, when Death Knocks

"You! Who are you!" One of them looked like their ringleader, the one they called Young Master Bendoch shouted at Zhang Yang with anger. The moment one of them had been slashed, the other two had sobered up immediately upon the sight of spilled blood.

"Me? I am no one. Just a passing grim reaper!"

Zhang Yang took note of their green colored name tags and was troubled by it. Killing a friendly NPC would not do him any good. There might even be a chance of him increasing the enmity of the residents who live in the town of Morning. It might even affect the quest availability or worse, he might not even be able to get himself a [Territory Command Order].

Right then, Zhang Yang had already succumbed to his anger. With furious killing intent in his eyes, he brandished his sword, not hiding his intention to spare any of them. When Felice arrived at Zhang Yang's side, she was infuriated. Fiery sparks burst out from the tip of her spear.

"You dare to assault me?!" the youngest among them walked out and patted his shoulder proudly. "I am the only son of the Mayor of Morning Town, Rockya! Touch me, and I'll make sure that father assembles an army to grind your bones to dust!"

"Yeah! That's right! You're nothing but a foreigner! Young Master Bendoch, please, help me. I will torture this man to death!" said the other youngster who had been wounded by Zhang Yang.

More confident than ever, Bendoch stuck out his chest proudly and pointed rudely at Zhang Yang. "Peasant, I am now giving you a chance to beg for your life! Do it, or I shall have father kill all your family and friends!"

"Young Master Bendoch! Look!" The unharmed youngster pointed at Felice.

"Such beauty!" Bendoch could not contain his lust when he saw Felice standing behind Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed, and his anger subsided a little. Not only were they completely oblivious to the threat, that was a really bad target to direct your lust at! Only the worst of men would have such poor judgment! They were barking up the wrong tree. So what if Bendoch's father is the mayor? He was just the mayor of a small town! He had no authority over Zhang Yang!

"What a waste of a human life...I guess you will do better in your next lives." Zhang Yang said coldly and brandished his sword. Without hesitation, Zhang Yang sliced and diced the youngsters in Luilina's house.

"Grah!"

"ARGH!"

"Mama!"

Crying and wailing like little girls, the three were like tiny bats trying to attack a giant golem. Before the presence of Zhang Yang and Felice, the three youngsters were cut down to their last drops of HP. When he struck them again, they stopped taking damage for a reason.

"Mercy! Have mercy!" cried the trio as they planted their heads on the floor, begging for their lives.

'Ding! You have received an optional quest, if you choose to spare the three youngsters, the quest option will end. If you choose to kill all three of them, the quest shall start. For the next 3 hours, you will be marked as an enemy of Morning Town, and will be hunted by all soldiers of Morning Town. If you are killed within the stipulated duration, your death will result in quest failure. The penalty for failing the quest will be Level -5!'

Losing 5 Levels would also mean that Zhang Yang would automatically be kicked out of the Chaos Realm!

However, the thought of him failing was only a brief second. Zhang Yang did not give it much thought, and killed all the perpetrators there, ending their pathetic lives.

"Big Brother...D-Did you k-kill them?" said Luilina as she sobbed away.

"Don't worry. Everything is alright now. I'll protect you! I shall protect you in your brother's place!" Zhang Yang comforted the sobbing Luilina.

Instead of calming down, Luilina was horrified. "Big Brother! Bendoch was the only son of the mayor of Morning Town. You must leave now! Please! There is a magic charm on Bendoch! The mayor will know if something were to happen to his son! Please run away as far as you can! No matter how strong you were, there's no way for you to defeat an army!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Very well. In that case, we shall go! Follow me!"

Luilina shook her head and wiped away her tears. "I can't. I was born here. I was raised here. I can't just leave!"

"But...If you remain here with the dead guys, I'm sure the mayor himself would not let you walk away unscathed!" said Felice worriedly persuaded her to leave the house. "Follow big brother! He will take care of you!"

Luilina hesitated for a while and shook her head.

Zhang Yang sighed. "Are you afraid of holding us back?"

Luilina jerked a little. "I am but a blind helpless little girl. If I join you, I will only be a liability! Furthermore...I—" Luilina sucked in a deep breath. "This house is precious to me! It's a house both my brother and I lived in! I—I don't want to leave here."

Zhang Yang chuckled. "Very well. In that case, allow me to remain here as well! Let's wait for the army then! I'll beat them all to a pulp!"

Luilina started to breathe raggedly. "You can't! That's way too dangerous!"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and smiled. He prepared to barricade the house and planned a bottleneck strategy. Not sooner later, Luilina tapped her walking stick against his greaves. "Bro brother...I...I will follow you! Let's leave..."

The little girl had nothing to pack but a garden hoe. According to her, it

was her most precious possession, since it was a gift from her brother, Sous. He had made it by hand, specially for Luilina.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "You brave girl. You have done the right thing."

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent and placed Luilina on its back. Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and flew into the sky.

'Ding! You have been given a quest: Survive against all odds. If you give up the mission, the system shall deem the quest as a failure. In the stipulated duration, the deaths of Luilina or yourself, shall be deemed as a quest failure. The penalty for failing the quest is Level -5!'

Well...Zhang Yang would have to keep himself alive, while also making sure Luilina that survives the army attack.

Zhang Yang stopped flying suddenly and dropped to the ground. He figured something out and summoned the bear. Zhang Yang figured that the bear would be better at transporting the girl, since it is much stronger than the recently obtained flying serpent. Furthermore, it was much safer for a blind girl to travel on solid ground, than in the air.

"Big brother! They have mobilized an entire army after us!" said Felice. She could soar much higher into the air, and had a clearer view of the oncoming enemy.

"Good job Felice. Let's move on!"

Zhang Yang and Luilina rode the bear and moved on. The bear had grown slightly bigger now, and had a fabulous butt. From the back, you could see its huge hairy butt jiggling hilariously. Under normal conditions, Zhang Yang could never place anyone else on the mount. Since Luilina was a quest NPC, the system might have allowed a player and an NPC to ride the mount at the same time. With one more load on its back, the bear movement speed was made slightly slower. Felice continued to fly in the sky to update Zhang Yang of the enemy's position.

Just 7 to 8 minutes later, Felice had no need to report any longer. Zhang Yang only needed to turn his head around, and he could see a sea of

flames coming, in the form of riders, holding torches in their hands. By his calculations, the army would only need 3 to 4 more minutes to catch up with Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang stared at the army worriedly, when he had a sudden stroke of a genius idea. He turned the bear around and moved out of the pathway, and headed to a steep slope towards the far west.

As he rode on as swiftly as he could, the army behind him had closed the gap to only a few hundred meters behind! Zhang Yang climbed up the slope and finally met a dead end, with many random boulders of different sizes. With determination and a prepared stance, Zhang Yang stopped and turned around to face the incoming army.

Chiang! Chiang! Chiang!

The riders had arrived and surrounded Zhang Yang in a large circle, cutting him off all escape routes.

Even though Luilina could not see, her other senses served her well. She knew what was going on. Colors drained away from her face as she gripped Zhang Yang's hands tighter.

Zhang Yang only smiled. As they were waiting for someone to walk to the front, Zhang Yang took the opportunity to analyze the situation. There were more than 50 riders around, fully clad in metal armor.

[Morning Town Knights] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 105

HP: 1,050,000

Defense: 1,100

Melee Attack: 7,464 – 8,264

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Forcefully bashes the target and deals 150% melee attack. Grants a 10% chance for an additional attack.

Note: The main attack force of Morning Town, only loyal to Mayor

Rockya.

The knights around opened a pathway up to allow an individual to move to the front.

[Rider's Captain Seiya] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 5,500,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 9,812 – 10,812

Skills:

[Eye 4 Eye]: Sacrifices your own HP to deal devastating damage to the enemy. Deals 2% HP damage for every 1% HP lost. Maximum damage: 90%.

[Sacrificial Heal]: Sacrifices one of your underling to restore 50% HP.

Note: Famous for his brutal tactics in warfare. Rockya's loyal underdog.
Crap...

Zhang Yang swallowed his saliva. 50 elite tier enemies were too much for Zhang Yang to handle. Add in a Yellow-Gold boss in the fray...it might be the end of Zhang Yang. Yellow-Gold bosses were not worth the effort to kill anymore. The problem was that the boss in front of him was "un-skippable". What more, the powerful attack power of Seiya was only going to make the fight difficult.

"Brave as you may be, your unworldly act of killing Bendoch will be judged by the gods! And I, Seiya shall send you to him!" Seiya's voice was so heavily laced with killing intent. He waved his hands, and all 50 knights charged towards Zhang Yang.

"Ah, I'll send you to him alright!" Zhang Yang drew in a deep breath and yelled at the top of his lungs. "Felice!"

Felice shot down to his side. Zhang Yang then scooped Luilina off her feet and tossed her to Felice. "Take her somewhere safe!"

"But, what about you?" cried Felice worriedly.

"Big brother knows what he is doing. Off you go!" said Zhang Yang with a confident smile.

Felice nodded and held Luilina in her claws, and shot back up into the sky.

Zhang Yang jumped back on his bear and pulled on the reins. With one strong stroke, Zhang Yang slashed apart a large boulder that lay behind him.

‘-932!’

Along with a bright spark, the stone seemed to have taken damage. The earth rumbled so violently as if someone had turned on their mother’s vibrator. Everyone, including Zhang Yang himself, lost their balance and fell over.

BOOM! THUD!

Two large pillars broke out of the earth and formed an arm! Another arm burst out in a similar fashion, and a stone giant started pulling itself above the surface!

More and more of its body started to appear. Before he knew it, the massive stone giant had already managed to "sprout" to his chest level. The knights and Zhang Yang were thrown off their mounts and started rolling down the slope uncontrollably.

After the massive tremor ended, the stone giant finally revealed itself to be a 60 to 70 meters tall monster!

A loud, deep growl, similar to that of a ship’s horn, burst through the airspace. It lifted one of its massive stone arms and slammed it down on the person who had disturbed its slumber, Zhang Yang!

{Shadow of the Void}!

Zhang Yang disappeared into another dimension just before the arm reached him.

The stone giant growled again and shifted its target towards the knights

who had been left behind by Zhang Yang. Since Zhang Yang had left the battle with {Shadow of the Void} all aggro that had been generated by him was shifted to the knights, making the poor knights to receive the hellish punches of the stone giant!

Chapter 469: The Enemy of my Enemy is...

Let's Just Set Them Upon Each Other

Zhang Yang knew this stone giant from his past life. Located near the first territory after arriving at the Chaos Realm, this Mythical tier boss resided on a hill. Since the boss lingered around the hill close to the town, many players have repeatedly committed suicide against it, hoping to get a shot at killing it. In his past life, he had seen the boss a couple of times in his previous life. At most, the boss was constantly fighting with players that had come from Morning Town.

Now that Chaos Realm was just released, and Zhang Yang was the only person who could access this realm, the boss was alive, well, and left alone. Not until Zhang Yang had roused it just to help him kick some butts!

This was the reason why Zhang Yang had lured the army to the slope, in the first place. He figured that the boss could do the dirty work for him. After which, when he has successfully triggered the boss, he would escape the battle via {Shadow of the Void}, and let boss take care of the army for him!

They were no match for the stone giant. With its massive stone arms, one clean slam to the ground was enough to send stones ricocheting to the sky and soldiers to the heavens. Thanks to the aggro system, the NPC army and the stone giant engaged each other in a fight.

Zhang Yang had escaped several hundred meters away from where he disappeared. There, he noticed that the bear had already died and had reappeared in his inventory as the reins. Felice shot down to the earth and placed Luilina gently down. After carrying Luilina for a short distance, poor Felice had reverted back to her human form, drenched in sweat. She was lying on the ground, gasping for breath, as if she had just finished a marathon.

[Stone Giant Yanita] (Mythical, Elemental Being)

Level: 120

HP: 36,000,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 31,115 – 33,115

Skill:

[Earthly Smash]: Slams the earth with the force of mother earth. Deals 30,000 physical damage to all targets, 40 meters around the caster.

[Stomp]: Stomps the ground with the power of the earth. Deals 300,000 damage to all targets within 3 x 3 meters of the targeted area.

[Toss]: Picks a boulder nearby and tosses it at a target. Deals 100% melee attack to the target. Range: 3 meters – 40 meters.

Note: A wild ancient stone giant, awoken from its long eternal slumber. Whoever who disturbs it would have to accept its tectonic wrath!

Seiya's troops were in serious trouble. With one Yellow-Gold boss and 50 elite tier Knights, the accumulated attack power was like an ant, compared to the Mythical boss. In a monster vs monster fight, unless the fight is dictated by lore, a higher tiered monster would always reign supreme.

The stone giant slammed the ground and dealt 30,000 damage. It was a damage designed to severely cripple players, not NPCs. That amount of damage was nothing, compared to the 1,000,000 HP NPC elite Knights. One strike was only enough to take off 10% of their HP. As for Seiya, his attacks could only deal around 1,000 damage to the monster. It was a landslide match-up.

Similarly to the boss, Seiya's attacks of between 5,000 and 6,000 would take forever to hack away the 30 million HP of his enemy...

The stone giant was an ancient being. As per usual gaming concepts, the older the age of the monster or NPC, the stronger it would get. This stone giant was like an ancient killing machine, with a berserked speed, this elemental being bashed the living hell out of the Knights, killing them all

in just 10 minutes or so. Seiya was the only one who had survived the ordeal and had managed to escape. Even though the boss was Mythical tier, it lumbered with the speed of a stone giant. After Seiya had taken off on his horse, the boss turned back after running for a distance, and went back to its hibernation state.

When the stone giant finally stopped giving chase, Seiya stopped his horse and gasped for air. Little did he know that Felice was right above him, and had shot him with a {Fire Missile}. The attack came down from the sky and had caught him off guard.

By then, Zhang Yang was able to resummon the bear and charged towards Seiya.

"YOU!" cried Seiya with rage. It was all his fault that all his Knights were killed! He had been played like a fool! It was his fault that he was forced to tuck his tails between his legs and run away like a true coward! Even though he was a plaything for the Mythical tier boss, he was still a Yellow-Gold tier that could easily take on a single player! He pulled the reins on his horse and charged at Zhang Yang. "Hmph! You've come at the best moment! I shall kill you, and put the blame on you for killing all the soldiers that came with me! That way, Master Rockya would not punish me!"

Zhang Yang ignored the idiotic speech and lunged himself at Seiya. Seiya was just a Yellow-Gold boss, he was not an opponent that would require intense planning and strategy to kill. Furthermore, he had already taken much damage from the previous fight with the stone giant. Even without Felice's help, he alone would be able to kill him without any trouble!

It was like killing a trapped monkey!

Wham! Bam!

Felice was furious. She was greatly angered when the man had publicly expressed his intentions of killing her "Big Brother"! With fury, Felice spat out {Fire Missile} as rapidly as she could, and burned Seiya till his armor was glowing red hot! His entire armor was so hot that it looked more like lava than anything else! His body was steaming with vapor, and he looked

like a deliciously cooked lobster!

"Bastard! Bastard!" yelled the boss helplessly. The man was a coward. At the moment he realized that he was not capable of defeating his opponent, he turned tail and ran. Zhang Yang would never allow that. He quickly chased after the boss. Felice, on the other hand, had no trouble keeping up with a man on a horse. She was, after all, a creature of flight. With a swoop of her wings, she reached the boss. If her {Fire Missile} took too long to cast, she would revert back to her human form to attack with her spear, and then go back to chasing him in her Dragonhawk form.

After running for quite a distance, but still far from safety, Seiya realized that escape was not an option. He turned around hoping to fight them off, but ended up being chewed alive by Zhang Yang and Felice.

In less than a minute, Seiya was defeated and had dropped a Yellow-Gold equipment and two Gray-Silver equipment. Although defeating Seiya was partly thanks to the stone giant, Zhang Yang felt no guilt since it was his plan after all! He scooped up all the equipment without hesitation. Among the equipment, one of it was a One-Handed Hammer. At the current stage of the game, One-Handed Weapon and Shield were the most expensive equipment in the market, since they were rare, and most sought after. They could be sold for at least 100,000 gold coins!

By borrowing the stone giant's power, Zhang Yang had only taken less than 20 minutes to defeat the army. He started to feel a little over his head and went back to where he had dropped off Luilina.

'Ding! You have eliminated the first wave of troops! Obtained Luck +1 and 5,000,000 Experience Points. Please make adequate preparations for the second wave! The second wave will start in 64 minutes, 28 seconds!'

Second wave!?

Zhang Yang was shocked and annoyed. A second wave? However, the quest had mentioned that the entire quest would span over 3 hours. If the second wave comes after one hour, it had to be the last.

Perhaps, since the penalty for failing the quest was high, the reward for succeeding in clearing it would be luxurious! Losing Levels was nothing all

too serious, since Zhang Yang could always regain them. Levels are earned by investing time into the game. However, Luck attribute points were different. Zhang Yang had amassed a total of 19 Luck points since the start of the game and now had a 2% chance to trigger a Lucky strike! Furthermore, by having higher Luck points, the chance of him creating Transmuted grade potions would increase!

With great risks, come great rewards!

Even though he still had one more wave of troops after him, Zhang Yang did not fret, since he had found a reliable "attacker". When the second wave comes, he could repeat the same thing and trigger the stone giant again. With nothing to do at the moment, Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent and brought Felice around to grind. There was still more than 1 hour before it happens!

Felice was a beast, and not just in the literal meaning of it. Her killing rate was much faster than Zhang Yang. In one hour, they had amassed so much experience points that the serpent had reached Level 39, and Felice had reached Level 87. It was a pity, for she only had 3 Levels to Level 90, where she would gain another huge boost to her stats.

With the time almost up, Zhang Yang summoned out the bear and brought Luilina with him, and waited at the same spot where the stone giant was resting at.

"Big Brother! Here they come!" cried Felice in the air.

Zhang Yang stared in the direction of Morning Town and saw nothing but empty hills and flat plains. There was no sign of an army!

"Grr..."

Just then, Zhang Yang heard the roar of a beast coming from the sky. Zhang Yang was greatly surprised. He looked up, and saw a formation of griffins rushing across the night sky, towards him!

Crap! Flying Mounts!?

Still, as he thought of it, he was currently in the Chaos Realm, where Flying Mounts would play a huge role. If a player could own Flying

Mounts, why can't NPC do so? If Zhang Yang had waited patiently, and trained his flying serpent to Level 100 before starting the quest, he would not have needed to expend any effort at all, he would only need to wait in the air for 3 hours. These flying mount-type enemies were here to prevent players from exploiting such a loophole.

Thud...Thud...Thud...

One by one, the soldiers that were riding on the griffins landed on the area where Zhang Yang was waiting. Some of them were still airborne and formed a neat formation, circling Zhang Yang from above, with more than 100 units!

[Morning Town Cavalry] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 5,383 – 6,183

Ranged Attack: 8,194 – 8,994

Skills:

[Armor Penetrating Arrow]: Fires a piercing arrow at a target, deals 150% ranged physical attack, unaffected by Defense.

Note: Morning Town air force defense. Master Rockya's elite units.

Similar to the previous attacking army, this wave had one boss who prominently stood out among the soldiers. He rode a larger griffin and had a large, longbow slung across his back.

[Captain of the Morning Town Cavalry, Branden] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 5,500,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 6,514 – 7,314

Ranged Attack: 9,347 – 11,347

Skills:

[Armor Penetrating Arrow]: Fires a piercing arrow to a target, deals 150% ranged physical attack. Reduces 50% of the target's Defense for 15 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked. This skill ignore all Defense.

[Fatal Arrow]: Deals a fatal attack. Causes 150% ranged physical attack and prevents the target from receiving any buffs. Reduces 50% of all healing rate on the target. Lasts for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Chapter 470: An Upgrade on the Pet Mount

Zhang Yan did not dare to risk giving these monsters the chance to strike first!

These are all ranged-attacking monsters, and they had already surrounded Zhang Yang from all directions! Just imagine this, if 50+ of these monsters launched their assaults on Zhang Yang at the same time, he would be instantly-killed, even if he were to activate his {Shield Wall}! So Zhang Yang made a quick decision to throw Luilina over to Felice and say, "Felice, take Luilina and get the hell out of here!"

"Roger!" Felice was well aware that Zhang Yang had more than one method of escaping, so she did not raise any objections this time around, and started taking off, with Luilina in her arms.

"After them! Do not let them escape!" Branden growled ruthlessly.

Zhang Yang did not even summon any of his [Mounts] this time to prevent any unnecessary deaths of his beloved pets. He turned around and plunged his [Sword of Purging Devourer] into the ground and started saying a 'prayer', "Mr. Stone, when more players are strong enough to enter this realm, you are going to have a miserable life ahead, where you will be killed over again, and again. So, why don't you kill some of these scums and unleash your wrath while you can? Get some payback in advance, and think later!"

‘-862!’

A damage value appeared on the spot where Zhang Yang had plunged his sword in. The entire pile of rocks began to tremble again. The gigantic body mass of Stone Giant Yanita emerged from the ground, right before the eyes of everyone. With an intimidating, thunderous roar, it slammed its hand onto Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shadow of the Void} and disengaged from the battle with Stone Giant Yanita immediately! It was not the time

to toy around anymore!

Shoof! Zhang Yang broke out of the 'horse-hive' defense of the cavalry army, and left the entire army to endure the wrath of Stone Giant Yanita.

"Rawgh!" The Stone Giant let out an outburst of rage as this was already the second time it had been poked, right in the *ss, just as it was having a good nap! Such interruptions can never be forgiven! The Stone Giant instantly went berserk, as it began to slam its hands all around, like a crazed monkey! A few of the griffins were smashed into mush, and fell from the sky in pieces. Their riders either shared their fate, or dropped straight to their deaths! Some lucky ones survived the fall. But could it really be called luck? They survived, just to face the wrath of the Stone Giant on the ground!

Meanwhile far from the battlefield, Zhang Yang reappeared as his {Shadow of the Void} began to fade. Felice approached Zhang Yang, still carrying Luilina. She barely hovered above the ground, as she was exhausted from carrying the NPC! But she did not drop her of course. However, there were still 7 Griffin-riders pursuing them, firing arrows at Felice! Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and summoned Whitey. He leaped on Whitey's back and charged towards the enemies.

"Brother!" Felice flopped to the ground, unable to fight back as she was still carrying the NPC! So, she could only endure all the attacks from the enemies. Fortunately for her, Felice had an extremely long health bar. Or else, she would have been taken out already!

"Kill! No mercy!" The 7 Morning Town Cavalries landed onto the ground as well, as they continued to shoot arrows from their bows. Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! The arrows flew right at Zhang Yang and Felice with precise accuracy!

Zhang Yang quickly jumped down from Whitey, and placed Luilina on the back of Whitey. Zhang Yang gave a command in his mind, and Whitey immediately carried Luilina and ran in the opposite direction. Without the NPC in the way, Zhang Yang could finally unleash his power, without having to hold back! He pulled his sword out and raised his shield, and

then he began to charge at the Morning Town Cavalries! As he was charging through the arrows that were flying towards him, the arrows were deflected off his armor and fell to the ground, one after another. The sound of arrowheads clashing into the armor was really loud and clear.

Because Felice was also facing the same type of attacks, she transformed back into her humanoid form, drawing her lance. She seemed to enjoy the heat of battle, with Zhang Yang by her side.

These monsters were in the air, and Zhang Yang had no idea on how to gather the monsters in one spot. The monsters would automatically fly away from each other the moment when they got too close to each other. There was no point in Zhang Yang and Felice trying to force them into one same spot. Therefore, Zhang Yang had to battle without kiting the monsters into one spot.

Without caring much about it, Zhang Yang targeted one of the monsters and began to slash like hell. Now he only had to wait for the cooldown period of his {Spear of Obliteration} to be over. Then, all he needed to do in order to hook the aggro of the other 6 monsters over to him is to throw the {Spear of Obliteration} at them! Even though Felice had a very long health bar, and very thick armor and defense, she did not have the ability to recover her health. If the monsters ever focused fire on her, she would still go down easily!

The regular arrows of the monster could only inflict him with about 3,000 damage, but the {Armor Penetrating Arrows} had extremely sharp edges. One arrow could deal more than 9,000 damage on Zhang Yang! Fortunately for him, the cooldown period for this skill is very long. If they could fire them rapidly, Zhang Yang would be finished off in no time!

Zhang Yang was constantly spamming all his Status Restriction Effect Skills, timing them appropriately. He tried to stun the monsters to reduce the damage he would receive as the battle went on.

Although the humanoid form of Felice had weaker attack power compared to her Dragonhawk form, Felice was still so much more aggressive and stronger than Zhang Yang! She had already slain one of the

monsters within 2 minutes, and had went on to take on her second monster. As she tangled with one of the monsters currently attacking, Zhang Yang could feel his pressure being lifted substantially!

As Zhang Yang took down another monster on his end, he finally let out a breath of relief. The difference of battling 4 monsters at once, compared to 6, was a lot. It was like a 50% drop in difficulty!

After another round of mindless slashing, Zhang Yang had already used up all his skills. He had even activated his {Rearm}! After slaying another 3 monsters, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle and went to the side to patch himself up with some [Bandages]. He was only left with about 2,000 health points! He had to leave Felice with the remaining monsters.

After he patched up and took some [Snacks], Zhang Yang rejoined back the battle and activated {Provoke} to hook the boss back to him. At that moment, Felice was left with only 8,000 health points!

Using everything they had, the two of them finally took down the last monster, and Zhang Yang quickly took out his [Snacks] and continued to heal himself. What actually surprised him was that Felice could also heal up by consuming [Snacks]! Seeing how she has been 'functioning' so far, other than the fact that she is an AI, Felice is basically similar to a normal player already!

After just a while, the two of them had regained their full health states. Whitey had also returned with Luilina upon the mind command that Zhang Yang had transmitted.

Zhang Yang turned his head around, and looked at the direction of the other battlefield. The Morning Town Cavalries were basically flying around in the air while they were battling the Stone Giant Yanita. Therefore, the strongest skill that the Stone Giant had - {Earthly Smash} had totally no effect on the Morning Town Cavalries. The Stone Giant could only use {Toss} as it's main attack. The damage that the boss could do to the cavalry army was largely restricted. That was why it had only taken out about 20 Morning Calvaries after all this while.

Of course, compared to Zhang Yang's performance, it was doing far better. Zhang Yang should be burying himself alive in shame!

After some time, all of the Morning Town Cavalries were completely wiped out by the Stone Giant, and the boss still had about 20,000,000 health points. Zhang Yang took a good look at it, and decided to give up on the idea. The army had not weakened it at all! If his party of 10 were all here, it could probably be done. But now that he had seen how powerful this boss is, it would be better for him to just give up on his previous plan and walk away!

After Yanita had wiped out the cavalry, it went back to its peaceful sleep. Unfortunately, Branden was so prideful that he had not retreated when he had the chance. He charged in at the boss and was crushed to his demise, leaving no chance for Zhang Yang to cut in and slay him!

Of course, Branden had a Flying Mount, so Zhang Yang would not have any chance to slay him at all, in the first place!

'Ding! The second wave of pursuers have been wiped out, you have completed the quest: Survive the desperate circumstances - much earlier than expected. Acquired 10,000,000 experience points, Lucky Attribute +1 as your reward!'

'Ding! You have acquired a selective quest: In for a penny, in for a pound, accept or decline?'

Zhang Yang frowned and accepted the continuation of the quest.

[In for a penny, In for a pound] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: You have wiped out the defensive force of the Morning Town. Now, Rockya is a general without his army! You have slain his son, warrior. He is not going to let you off this easily! So, you have decided that since you're already in for a penny, why not in for a pound and finish what's been started! Travel back to Morning Town and slay Rockya!

Completion: Kill Rockya 0/1

Zhang Yang widened his eyes, as he began to see a Territory waving at him! He was another step closer to owning a new Territory!

Zhang Yang did not rush back to the Morning Town. Instead, he brought Felice and Snow-Scale Wind Serpent along to level up first. After all, he was all alone at the moment, so he would not be able to seek help from his party members and guild members. He could only rely on himself, his Flying Mount, and Felice!

Though the description said that the Morning Town had lost most of its Defense force, it still was the lair of this foul Rockya! It would be best to keep an eye out and be ready for anything! After all, Zhang Yang had a lot of time to spare on hand. It would take at least 1 month for other players to be able to enter the Chaos Realm. Furthermore, the quest did not state any time limit, so he could take his own sweet time at completing the quest.

After looking around for a bit, Zhang Yang found himself on a deserted mountain. He could see a large amount of Normal-tiered Spectres wandering around the area, without any sense of purpose.

He decided to choose that spot to grind.

Zhang Yang got Felice to transform into her Dragonhawk Form to lure the monsters, while he looked out for a cave. After he kept Luilina safe in the cave, he summoned the [Snow-scale Wind Serpent], and both of them guarded the entrance of the cave. In just a brief period of time, Felice came back with a large number of monsters. Judging from the looks of it, there should be at least a hundred of them!

As Felice flew past Zhang Yang from above, she transformed back to her Humanoid Form, and stood ready with her lance!

These Spectres began to gush towards Zhang Yang. He activated his {Blood Rage} a few seconds before the monsters reached him. He had already acquired 30 points of Rage Points. The moment the monsters got close to him, he activated his {Blast Wave}!

Instantly, a damage of '-1,418' was inflicted onto each of the monsters within the effective range, and the scene was glorious! The special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] got triggered, and another wave of damage was inflicted upon every single monster within the effective range,

over and over again!

When Zhang Yang took over the aggro of the monsters, Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form and flew out of the cave, hovering above them all. Then, she spat out her {Pulverizing Flame} between her open beak, and covered the ground in a sea of flames! The ground started burning up as the monsters that were within the effective range of the attack were inflicted with a damage of 3,000 fire damage for every second! The attack was really powerful and intimidating!

However, although these skeletal creatures from the foul depths of darkness could not fly, they did not just stand there, waiting for their health points to deplete. Many of these Spectre monsters had ranged attacks, so they started firing their arrows, inflicting damage on Felice! Although these are just normal monsters, but tens or hundreds of them shooting at the same time would also inflict extremely great damage to a person over time. After the {Pulverizing Flame} was over, Felice was only left with about 10% health! So, she quickly flew into the cave, to the back of Zhang Yang, to take shelter from the arrows.

Zhang Yang handed her a [Bandage] and Felice quickly transformed herself back to Humanoid Form before applying the [Bandage]. She patched herself up, and her health was brought back up by 20,000 points. Unfortunate for her, this amount of healing was far from enough. She had lost so much more than that! So, she could only wait out the cooldown for the [Bandage] to complete its cycle.

Still, with her 'flamethrower' attack, Felice had managed to inflict a total of 1,500,000 points of damage, while burning about 80 monsters to a crisp in the process! A stream of rich experience points came in and the little Serpent was leveled up twice! Unfortunately, Felice needed even more experience points to level up again. She still needed about 10% more before she could reach Level 86.

Zhang Yang wielded his [Sword of Purging Devourer], slashing and slicing up the monsters before him. After a while, more monsters were slain, and Felice had finally acquired enough experience points to level up! A stream of golden light coursed through her entire body, and she reached

Level 86! Her health bar was full again!

At the same time, the cooldown period for her {Pulverizing Flame} was over. So Felice transformed herself into her Dragonhawk Form, flew out on the monsters and activated her {Pulverizing Flame of Rage} once more! That attack inflicted a great number of damage to the monsters as the fire blazed on.

After 3 rounds of {Pulverizing Flame of Rage}, hundreds of Spectres lay dead. Looking at the chart of damage output, the damage output of Felice was not far behind Zhang Yang's! Zhang Yang could not help but to praise her in his heart. Although Zhang Yang's damage output was not as good as the DPS players on his party like Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er, he was still unsurpassed in AoE attacks, especially since he had the [Dark Enigmatic Sword]. The special effect of the sword enabled him to trigger repeated AoE attacks onto the monsters within effective range! That made him very powerful in terms of AoE killing, to the point that no one could rival him!

With Felice's aid, be it one on one or an AoE kill, Zhang Yang had the right to look down upon the entire world!

He could not help but to 'pet' Felice on her head and said, "Felice, you really are a great and incredible helper for me!"

Felice turned to him and smiled, her face is so cute that Zhang Yang wanted to melt on the spot!

After finishing up the first wave of the monsters, Felice flew out to lure the second wave. After they had settled the second wave, it was time for a third wave! This little cave behind Zhang Yang had unwittingly been turned into the graveyard of the Spectre. After just three hours, the dead bodies of these skeletal Spectres had piled up like mountains around the entrance of the cave! Zhang Yang would take the time to pick up the loots available on the ground whenever Felice flew out to lure new wave of monsters back to him. Every time, he would only manage to pick up about one-third of the loot from the ground, before Felice comes back with a new wave.

Zhang Yang was also trying to pick up the more valuable loot, but many would still disappear and be flushed away by the system. If Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could only see this, they would definitely be heartbroken to see all the 'valuables' disappearing!

Level 90, Level 100, Level 101!

Five hours later, Felice had reached the 'limit capacity' on her level, as pets and Battle-Companions could not exceed the level of the player, their owner. So, now that Felice has reached the same Level as Zhang Yang, she would no longer be able to share experience points with Zhang Yang. The experience points would only be shared among Zhang Yang and the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent].

After Felice had reached Level 100, all of her attributes got a major upgrade!

[Felice] (Humanoid Form)

Level: 101

HP: 174,190 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 4,480

Melee Attack: 17,535 - 18, 535 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds, DPS: 4,746)

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear]: Inflicts 100% melee attack, with fire damage on a target. Required: Melee Weapon. Cool Down: 1 second. Consume: 50 Mana points

[Dragon's Spear Barrage]: Inflicts 150% melee attack of physical damage onto a target, with a 10% rate of stunning the target for 2 seconds. Effective on Bosses as well, but with a greatly diminished rate. Required: Melee Weapon. Cool Down: 1 minute. Consumes: 50 Mana points.

[Absolute Defense]: When being hit, takes 1% damage from all attacks, lasts for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 12 hours. This effect can only take place when Felice is in her Human Form, and will wear off the moment she changes her form.

It seems that Felice has acquired a new skill in her Human Form, and that skill was a ridiculously powerful 'Shield Wall'!

[Felice] (Dragonhawk Form)

Level: 101

HP: 131,660 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 880

Magic Resistance: 4,480

Magic Attack: 10,517 - 11,117

It did not matter whatever form Felice was in, be in Human Form or Dragonhawk Form, her attributes were enough to put every single Tanker and DPS player to shame! She had become so much more powerful than them all!

They had almost cleared out all the monsters in this area, and the remaining monsters were just too scattered, so Zhang Yang was not in the mood to waste time in slaying them. He rode on the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] and flew to another end of the mountain. He located a small cave and began to 'harvest' more experience points. Soon after, [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] had already reached Level 84!

Because Felice could no longer earn experience points, the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] was receiving the bulk of it! After merely two hours, [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] had finally reached Level 100!

A stream of golden light beamed across the body of the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] as the body of the Serpent expanded out, growing up to a total length of 10 meters! It had a wingspan of about 15 to 16 meters! It looked mighty, and magnificent!

[Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] (Yellow-Gold Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 100

HP: 33,600 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 1,800

Magic Attack: 4,256 - 5,056

Skills:

[Shared Life] (Passive): Unites the health points of the pet and the owner together.

[Venom Spout]: Spouts venom towards a target, inflict 100% Magic Attack of Nature Damage, there is a 10% rate of poisoning the target. The target will receive 20% additional damage when being struck with Nature Attribute Attacks during effective period. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effects cannot be stacked. Instant cast. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

This is actually a Spell type [Mount]! This is wonderful! Magic Attacks will not be affected by the Defense of monsters, including Bosses!

With everyone prepared now, it's time to collect the bounty for Rockya!

Chapter 471: Mayor Rockya

Zhang Yang hopped on to the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent] as Felice and Luilina followed him up. As he telepathically controlled it, the Serpent began to hover and fly into the sky, heading towards the Morning Town.

Finally, it was possible to soar freely in the sky! The feeling is just too sweet!

The flying speed of the Serpent was at least three times faster than the movement speed on the ground. In just 10 minutes, Zhang Yang could see the Morning Town from afar! Zhang Yang took a stop at the front of Luilina's little cottage, and put the blind little girl there as a temporary measure. He planned to slay Rockya first, which should guarantee Luilina's safety after that.

The Serpent soared into the sky with Zhang Yang and Felice, right after Zhang Yang was done putting the NPC in her little cottage. As they arrived on top of the Morning Town, the first rays of the morning sun were already streaking across the world, blanketing it with warmth and beauty. Zhang Yang proudly stood atop the Serpent as she searched for the whereabouts of Rockya's house. It should be really simple. All Zhang Yang had to do was to look out for a large house, with the largest land and the best decorations!

Zhang Yang did not take long before he located a fancy large house on the northern side of the town. The Serpent let out a roar and flew straight towards the yard of the fancy house. They landed in the garden yard, right before the doorsteps of the house.

"Who goes there? How dare you trespass the property of Master Rockya!" a series of clumsy footsteps were heard coming from the path ahead, as 4 guards arrived at the scene. Each of them held a blade in their hands, and they were all fully armored Level 110 Elites. Their attributes were about the same as the two waves of cavalries that had attempted to pursue and hunt down Zhang Yang.

After letting out a shout, the four guards raised their weapons and

attempted to slash him. Felice raised her lance and engaged in battle with one of the guards. As for the remaining 3, Zhang Yang went up to 'entertain' them.

Previously, Zhang Yang and Felice had survived a full-scale assault from 7 of these elites, so it stands to reason that 4 elites wouldn't be a problem for them! Furthermore, Felice and the Serpent had both surpassed Level 100, so their DPS capabilities had greatly improved. They bombarded the four elite monsters to the point that they could not even fight back! In just a brief moment, the monsters collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead. They dropped a number of loot.

The Serpent flicked its pair of wings and glided across the ground in a snakey zig-zag, but the hall was just ahead, and its head was too huge! It barely squeezed itself through the entrance, as it could only 'rant' out its dissatisfaction and discomfort by hissing sharply into the hallway.

Zhang Yang did not plan to charge in alone like an idiot, so instead, he shouted, "Rockya, you are one fine sun of a beach! Now is the time that you pay for all the crimes you have committed!"

"You vulgar piece of sh*t! How dare you accuse me of such crimes!" A middle-aged man leaped down from the balcony of the second floor! With a heavy landing that shook the ground, Zhang Yang could see that the man's body mass was huge! This man was about 1.9 meters tall, with a macho body. His arms were thicker and larger than a normal human's thigh!

[Mayor of Morning Town, Rockya] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 120

HP: 12,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,297 - 19,297

Skills:

[Quadruplex Strike]: Hits the target 4 times in a row, inflicting 100% melee attack of Physical Damage on every hit! However, the user will be affected by the {Exhausted} effect, damage received will increase by 100%, lasts for 10 seconds. The [Quadruplex Strike] cannot be dodged, evaded or immune. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Fatal Blow]: Inflicts 150% melee attack of physical damage to the target. Reduces 50% healing effect of the target. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: The Mayor of Morning Town. A foul and merciless man. Always takes advantage of the town folk and has done countless evil deeds!

Zhang Yang immediately started thinking up of a suitable method to handle this boss. The {Quadruplex Strike} could not be blocked. So it can only be waded through with either high health points, or a {Shield Wall}, or using an invincibility effect. While {Fatal Blow} could be blocked with {Block}, it had a negative effect, which Zhang Yang had to try avoiding. Or else, his {Berserker's Heal} and other healing skills would get a large 'discount' on their healing effects.

"You piece of sh*t! You killed my son! Slaughtered him like he was a nobody! I want you to pay with your blood!" Rockya pulled out his sword from the scabbard hanging from his waist. The sword looked more ceremonial than functional, as grand and ornate as one could be. He charged at Zhang Yang with rage. As he leaped towards Zhang Yang like an ancient general leaping across the sky, he brought his sword down with all his might.

Zhang Yang immediately raised up his shield and activated his {Shield Wall}. Although the effect of reducing 50% healing effect was extremely annoying, but that effect would only last for 10 seconds. As long as he doesn't heal during that time, it wouldn't make much difference! If he accidentally wastes the cooldown of his {Block}, he would be receiving at least 10,000 damage from each blow of the boss, and that would not be 'fun' at all!

Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form, and blasted the boss with her {Fire Missile}! Boom! The fireball blasted onto the boss and

inflicted the boss with an approximate damage of 20,000 points. Her DPS had already broken through the 10,000 point!

However, Rockya was unlike the previous boss, like Branden. While he was wielding his sword, his left arm was not left unattended as well! Hardening up his fist, the boss let out a powerful punch at the Serpent, all of a sudden! After a loud bang, the Serpent was blasted by the impact of the punch and flew backward for about seven to eight meters far! The Serpent felt the excruciating pain and tears began to roll from its eyes.

That was a 'Supporting Attack'! Although it did not inflict any damage at all, that punch was really intimidating! It showed the powerful strength of the boss!

Although Zhang Yang was mounted atop his [Battle Mount] for the moment and his health points had been boosted high up, the disadvantage of being mounted was made very apparent here! The body mass of the Serpent was so large that it was hard to evade blows! He could not dodge the attacks according to his will, as the space was really limited! He quickly dismounted the Serpent. Then only, did he begin to really fight the boss seriously?

"You lowlife scum! Just die already!" The blade of the boss's sword flashed bloody-red, and a progression bar appeared right above the head of the boss! Two seconds later, the boss swung his sword at Zhang Yang! The blade of the sword was swung so swiftly that it was like a flash of lighting, no, it had turned into four slashes!

It was the {Quadruplex Strike}! The boss had activated it!

‘-10659!’

‘-11,237!’

‘-10,052!’

‘-11,889!’

The four flashes of the lightning from the blade happened at almost the same instant! 40,000 damage! It did a great number on Zhang Yang! Fortunately, the Maximum Health Points of Zhang Yang had already

reached 97,000 at the moment, so the boss could not instantly-kill him so easily!

That was really awesome!

Zhang Yang quickly gulped down a bottle of [Healing Potion] and healed himself by 10,000 points.

"Die! Die! Die!" The boss was screaming his lungs out as he began to swing again. But this time, the blade of his sword had darkened instead.

Zhang Yang's {Block} had just cooled down, so he raised his shield and activated the skill again to shield himself from the damage. After that, he quickly brought up the Battle Log to confirm his suspicions. The strike that the boss had just hit him with was the {Fatal Blow}. He began to calculate the cooldown of that skill. So, all he needed to do was to wait for the boss to strike him with another {Fatal Blow}, then only would he be able to calculate the cooldown for the boss's {Fatal Blow}! And then, he should be able to allocate the use of his {Block} appropriately, according to his health bar condition.

About 20 seconds later, the boss activated the second {Fatal Blow} and inflicted Zhang Yang with a damage of 17,882 points, at the same time, inflicting Zhang Yang with a negative effect which reduces 50% of Zhang Yang's healing effectiveness!

Zhang Yang already knew this would happen, and was prepared for it.

After battling for some time, the health bar of Zhang Yang was about to hit the bottom, after being bombarded by tons of skills by the boss. He quickly mounted the Serpent and instantly acquired a boost of 33,000 health points. Then, he endured another 3 hits from the boss before activating his powerful healing skill, the {Berserker's Heal}! After that, he jumped down from the Serpent and continued to battle the boss.

"You shameless lowlife scum! Argh!" Seeing Zhang Yang's health bar returning back to its full state, the boss was enraged, and he threw a punch at Zhang Yang with his empty hand.

Zhang Yang dodged a little to the side and with a quick spin, he

slammed his shield right into the face of the boss! Well, it would be impolite not to reciprocate after all. So, Zhang Yang merely responded to the boss!

Pang! The face of the boss was stamped with a new reddish mark!

Rockya was so angry that he continued to roar. Although the slam in the face did not inflict any damage, but it was most humiliating! The boss was already furious at Zhang Yang for killing his son, and now, another bash in the face had just made him so angry that his face turned red!

"Haha! A wise man once taught me, when you hit someone, just hit him in the face! Are you having fun yet?" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. The boss was a Violet-Platinum boss after all, and Zhang Yang did not have any advantages in terms of equipment, and he was Level 120 too at that! He had to be really powerful! If it wasn't for Felice's aid, Zhang Yang would never have come alone to challenge the boss!

"Just die!" Rockya was so angry that he lost his breath and his face started turning purple instead. He continued to wave his sword at Zhang Yang!

Boom! Boom! Boom! The battle was fierce!

Felice had become the number one DPS in the boss battle. Her DPS had reached up to 10,000 points, and she had already surpassed Zhang Yang on the list! The boss suddenly turned around and switched his target onto Felice! Yes, that happens when your DPS is higher than others, the aggro of the boss would go after the higher DPS. However, Felice was staying high up in the air, in her Dragonhawk Form, and the boss does not have any Flying Mount in his possession, so he could only roar at Felice from the ground. Unable to do anything, he turned back to Zhang Yang.

The battle continued on for about 2 minutes, and Zhang Yang had already activated his {Berserker's heal}, {Last Vigor}, and {Shield Wall} after being bombarded by the boss. Although he could still activate {Rearm} to refresh all the cooldown of his skills, the boss has only lost about 2,400,000 health points. If he used {Rearm} now, he could only inflict so much damage to the boss before all his skills are used again. It

would not be enough to take down a boss with a total of 12,000,000 health points!

Zhang Yang quickly said, "Felice, come help me tank the boss for a while!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice agreed to help, and she began to descend from the air, and transformed herself into her Human Form. Then she went up, burying the tip of her lance in the side of the boss.

As the aggro of the boss was already hooked to her earlier on because of her DPS being the highest in the battle, the boss had turned to her right way as she was descending to the ground. Rockya let out a battle cry before launching his assault on Felice.

Zhang Yang quickly activated {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the boss battle and sat aside to heal up with his [Snacks] he brought along.

Felice had already activated her {Absolute Defence}! Every single hit that landed on her only managed to inflict her with 100+ damage. They were mere tickles.

After Zhang Yang had recovered back to his full health state, he immediately charged back at the boss, and began his aggressive assaults on the boss.

Since Felice had already activated her {Absolute Defence}, it would be wise to let her tank the boss for a little longer. Better to make use of everything when it's still worth the while! Two minutes left before the {Absolute Defense} fades away!

75%, 60%, 55%... two minutes later, the health bar of the boss had been reduced down to 53%.

"Felice, get out of there now!" Zhang Yang shouted at Felice.

"Roger! Big brother!" Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form once again and flew up into the air. Rockya could do nothing but watch her take off!

"I'm angry! You won't like me when I'm angry!" Rockya grounded his teeth together, then he turned to Zhang yang furiously.

The two minutes that Felice had bought for Zhang Yang, was long enough for Zhang Yang's life-saving skills to cool down. After using all of his life-saving skills once more, the boss was left with only 30% health!

{Rearm}!

Zhang Yang cleared out all the cooldown period of his skills and was ready to repeat what he did for the previous two rounds! One more time!

25%, 20%, 15%... the health bar of the boss was reducing constantly. However, when the health bar of Rockya was at 3%, all of Zhang Yang's life-saving skills had already been activated!

The boss still had about 350,000 health points on him, while Zhang Yang had already activated his {Rearm}, and he only had about 50,000 health points left.

But Zhang Yang was not worried by the circumstances at all. He knows that he still had a last resort, the [Zombie Potion]! So, even if he really dies, he could still come back as a zombie and continue to attack the boss! Of course, he must make sure the boss is taken out within 30 seconds, for that would be how long the potion lasts!

It was now 350,000 points against 50,000 points!

270,000 points against 40,000 points! 180,000 points against 30,000 points!

Suddenly, a progression bar appeared right below the head of the boss. It was another {Quadruplex Strike} under 'construction'! If that strike comes, Zhang Yang would surely be dead!

Shoof!

The shadow of a lance suddenly flew at the boss! It was Felice, flying down towards the boss at a high speed, already in her human form! With her {Dragon's Spear Barrage} activated, she inflicted the boss with a damage of more than 25,000 points and stunned the boss, interrupting

the boss from casting the spell for his {Quadruplex Strike}! Bravo!

Zhang Yang felt a tremendous joy in his heart. Although he was prepared to die, if he did not have to, of course, he would take that option!

While the boss was weakened, stunned, Zhang Yang, Felice and the Serpent lashed out with all their might. Rockya could only let out a miserable scream and collapsed onto the ground, nice and slow. He finally died! At the same instant, Zhang Yang was only left with about 8,000 health points! It was really close! Most importantly, he did not have to die!

Chapter 472: Daffodil in distress!

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: In for a penny, in for a pound!
Acquired 5,000,000 experience points!’

The boss was finally dead, and it was time to ‘harvest’ the loot and see what the boss dropped.

Rockya had dropped a total of 4 pieces of equipment, but among the 4, only one of them was a Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, and the remaining 3 were all Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. Ever since the number of Violet-Platinum bosses appearing is getting more and more, the Yellow-Gold Tier equipment were slowly dropping in popularity and value. It seems that the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment has taken over the role!

This special piece of Violet-Platinum equipment is a light-silver leather cloth. Purplish sparkles hovered over the equipment, making it look otherworldly.

[Silver Tiger Fur Cuirass] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +847

Strength: +242

Agility: +548

Equip: Increases 3% damage.

Equip: Increases Health Points by 1,200.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

A 3% increase in damage and an additional 1,200 health points? Well, damn! That’s pretty good! Zhang Yang happily. He has decided to give it to Sun Xin Yu. No matter what, she was now one of his ‘wives’, of course he would naturally pick her over others. What that Fatty Han doesn’t know wouldn’t hurt him.

After picking up the remaining 3 Yellow-Gold equipment, the dead body of the boss was still lying quietly on the ground. Zhang Yang could not risk missing out anything, so he lifted a leg and kicked the dead body aside. As he took a closer look, he found a small piece of green jade on the ground!

Without the need to check on it, Zhang Yang already knew what it is, it was the [Territory Command Order] that he urgently needed! Because the word - [Order] was stamped in the middle of the [Territory Command Order] on it, in clear red! The name 'Morning Town' was crafted on the back of that jade.

[Territory Command Order: Morning Town]

Use: Launches a 'Territory Conquest' after 72 hours. The battle will last for 3 hours long. The last player with the [Territory Command Order] shall become the new Baron of the Morning Town.

Holding the [Territory Command Order] in his hands, Zhang Yang could not help but laugh out loud. Only one player in the entire game server could enter the Chaos Realm at the moment! This 'Territory Conquest' would be a very relaxing process! Zhang Yang could even set up a small cozy chair and lean back against it, enjoying the sun, while having a good nap! No one else would be able to enter the Chaos Realm to snatch the [Territory Command Order] from him.

If One Sword Stroke, Humbly Gentleman and his other 'nemesis' hears about this, would they become so envious that they would smash their skulls or dig out their eyes? Zhang Yang could not stop smiling as he visualized their expressions!

Without wasting any more time, Zhang Yang activated the [Territory Command Order], and instantly, the server began to make the announcements!

'Server Announcement: A Territory without a Baron has appeared in the Chaos Realm. The 'Territory Conquest' will commence in 72 hours. All players, please be ready for it! The Territory was located at the Wilderness of Dubaiya, and the specific location will be announced when the

‘Territory Conquest’ begins! The ‘Territory Conquest’ will last for 3 hours long. When the battle is over, the last player carrying the [Territory Command Order] will become the new Baron for the Territory!’

The announcement was made 5 times repeatedly across the system server.

Right after the announcements stopped, Zhang Yang received countless private messages, while the guild chat blew up! Everyone knew for a fact that only Zhang Yang had reached Level 100 and he was the only one that is eligible to enter the Chaos Realm in the current stage of the game. So unquestionably, the person who is going to get the [Territory Command Order] would be Zhang Yang! No one else!

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, Sword of Light and the rest of his allies started sending in their congratulations. They repeatedly praised Zhang Yang for being extremely lucky, for he had managed to get a [Territory Command Order], an extremely rare item in the game, in such a short period of time, after entering the Chaos Realm!

As Zhang Yang is the player above Level 100, this [Territory Command Order] was like a free gift from the game itself. Of course everyone would look at him in envy!

When Liu Wei received the news, he smashed his game helmet onto the ground.

"Noob tank! Daffodil got killed by some ruffians, and they're watching over her dead body! The moment she respawns, she'll be killed immediately! Come help her!" Zhang Yang suddenly received a private message from Wei Yan Er.

"What?" Zhang Yang felt a rush of anger up his head. He has always been a man who protects the weak. He would rather do something wrong and get himself locked up, instead of watching the weak gets bullied! His determination in such regards is really admirable! Furthermore, Daffodil Daydream has been a gentle and kind person. She always treated everyone in the guild with her kindness and she is well-known for that. Now that someone was actually camping over her dead body, of course it would

anger Zhang Yang and his guild members!

He quickly contacted Daffodil Daydream through the voice communication device, "Daffodil, where are you now?"

Daffodil Daydream was shocked and relieved at the same time to hear Zhang Yang's voice, then she said, "I'm currently lying dead by the Crimson Flame Hills. I was there to grind my levels. Never expected to be ambushed there. They stopped me and said that they wanted my staff. Of course I did not agree, so they started attacking me. I killed 3 of them, but there were too many of them! So, I was killed after that. Since then, they have been guarding over my dead body. I do not dare to resurrect, I'm worried I might drop the staff if I get myself killed again!"

This lady is a smart lady indeed. From the way Zhang Yang had spoken when he contacted her, she knew that he already had the gist of her situation, and wasted no time telling him the details.

Zhang Yang suddenly remembered something. When he was identifying equipment with his fellow ladies at the Identification Shop, they had met Royal Highness of Thunder. As he was tearing up his [Teleportation Scroll], Zhang Yang asked, "Are the players from The Myth?"

"Yes! It's them alright! And their leader is called Royal Highness of Thunder! Seems more like a Royal Highness of ass*le to me!"

So it was really him! That day, his greedy face had been projected right at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had intended to warn Daffodil Daydream about this, but the server was closed for 3 days straight. So, Zhang Yang had completely forgotten about this little man!

Looks like the man had been thinking about this for the past three days. The moment the server was reopened, he actually came after Daffodil, guarding by her dead body, all for the staff!

A stream of light beamed upon Zhang Yang as he transported himself back to Thunderstorm Castle. After walking out of the palace, he summoned the Serpent out.

The appearance of the Serpent right in the middle of the Thunderstorm

Castle attracted a lot of unwanted attention. Many players began to round up around Zhang Yang and the Serpent. To them, no pet or mount could be this big!

In a game, 'size' came before power. If you happened to be riding on a Black-Steel mount the size of a small mounting, it would still attract more attention than a small Mythical dragon!

Needless to say, the Serpent looked magnificent. Its body was covered in snowy scales, and it had a large and long body! In contrast, it had small, green eyes that looked more like beans. The Serpent did not look scary at all. Instead, it looks kind of cute.

"Wow! What kind of Mount is that? It looks awesome!"

"Is this a snake? How can there be a pair of wings on it?"

"Snakes can't fly! If they do, aren't they supposed to be dragons?"

"Hah! You morons! How could Mounts even fly! Do not think that it can fly just because it has wings. I can tell! Its as good as an Ostrich!"

"That's right! The official notes said that [Flying Mounts] can be obtained only from the Chaos Realm. It's only been a day since the Chaos Realm is opened. It's impossible to catch a [Flying Mount] so soon!"

Zhang Yang jumped onto the Serpent and gave a command through his mind. The Serpent fluttered its wings and plunged straight into the sky!

Everyone on the ground was silent.

Zhang Yang sent Daffodil Daydream a party invitation, but Daffodil had already joined a party. Hundred Shots quickly added Zhang Yang into the party right after that. Other than Zhang Yang, there were also a few of their regular party members. Only Sun Xin Yu happened to be offline, as she was currently working at the station. They were now grouped together because they had all found out about the trouble that Daffodil Daydream was in right now.

All of them had used their [Teleportation Scroll] to travel back to Thunderstorm Castle. Then they began to rush over to the Crimson Flame

Hills. The Crimson Flame Hills was a Level 70 Map. Although it was just located at the side of the Forest of Tanila, which was close to Thunderstorm Castle, it would still require about 3 to 4 hours for them to get there.

The [Flying Mount] of Zhang Yang is three times faster than any of the [Mounts] on the ground. So he traveled like a rocket that pierced through the air. After just a while, he caught up to the second last in place, Endless Starlight. He overtook Starlight in just the blink of an eye.

Endless Starlight was surprised, so he asked, "Boss, you were the last to depart from Thunderstorm Castle, how did you overtake me so quickly! What the hell! How did you get so much speed? Boss, even if you want to save Daffodil, you can't just use some sort of cheat codes, man! You will be banned!"

Zhang Yang could only frown at Starlight. Fortunately for him, there was only one such whiner in the party at the moment. The other whiner, Fatty Han, was not here at the moment. The party chat would have devolved into everyone arguing and fighting over pointless topics if that wasn't the case!

Shoof! Shoof! Shoof!

Zhang Yang soon overtook Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Wei Yan Er. With his [Flying Mount], he could ignore the geometry of the ground, and just fly straight towards his destination. He was at least five times faster than everyone!

Wei Yan Er was also surprised, then she said, "Noob tank! When did you run ahead of me? I didn't even see you approaching me!"

Zhang Yang laughed and finally, and he posted the Snow-Scale Wind Serpent's information onto the party channel.

"... Zhan Yu, you are one lucky son of the b*tch! Not only you get a [Territory Command Order], which is considered lucky enough, you actually managed to be the first in the entire game to get a [Flying Mount]!" Lost Dream was admiring Zhang Yang.

"Silly Yu, bring me along when you grind, I want to go to the Chaos Realm!"

"Me too! Me too! Take me with you!"

Zhang Yang cannot afford to stay idle to babysit Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er in grinding their levels because the upcoming month would be a crucial month. He would like to make use of the at time to conquer more Territories before players start to come into the Chaos Realm. Of course, Territories required costs to manage. So from the perspective of economic, it would actually be more cost-efficient to only conquer one Territory!

As all servers were natural enemies, even if Zhang Yang really takes down the Gateway Territory for the Japan-Korea server in the Chaos Realm, it would still be impossible for him to open up the Gateway Territory to the players in the Japan-Korea server to swarm in. Only the players in China server would be able to use the Teleportation Circle of the Gateway Territory that Zhang Yang has conquered. More importantly, the cost required to maintain the Teleportation Circle would not change, even if nobody were to use it. The cost was fixed. Nothing can be done to change that. Therefore, having two Territories would mean that Zhang Yang would have to pay for one extra Teleportation Circle, all for nothing.

Conquering Gateway Territories of other servers would be a means of strategy at winning the game. The eight regions of the game were meant to fight against each other. The game developers had always encouraged players to fight against each other, when they first created the game! Zhang Yang was just taking preemptive actions now!

Shoof! Shoof!

Zhang Yang overtook Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart with his high speed, and became the first in place to rush towards the Crimson Flame Hills.

...

Right in the middle of a vast land of the Crimson Flame Hills, Royal Highness of Thunder and his small army from The Myth stood around the dead body of Daffodil Daydream in a fishnet formation. Players who are

dead can revive themselves within the range of 30 meters from where they were killed. So if one plans to camp by the dead body of a player, then one must make sure that they cover all possible spots of respawning.

"Master Thunder, we have been camping around this little b*tch's dead body for over two hours already. Are we still camping any longer? Looks like she's not willing to resurrect at all!" one of the 'goons' from The Myth said.

"Nonsense! Of course we are going to camp! Didn't you see this little b*tch using 10,000 gold coins to identify that staff? When have you ever come across a weapon or an equipment that required 10,000 gold coins to be identified? Hmm? If this staff is to be sold out in the market, it can cost 10,000,000 to 20,000,000 dollars! So forget 2 hours, even if it's two days or two months, we must camp here until she gives up the staff!" Royal Highness of Thunder shouted and screamed at that member of his guild, until his saliva splattered on the poor guy's face!

"Correct! Master Thunder is brilliant!"

"Furthermore, didn't this little b*tch dropped a pair of Violet-Platinum boots when we first killed her? Haha! Just one pair of boots of this caliber can earn us tens of thousands! Humph! I do not only want that staff, I want to force her to drop every single piece of equipment on her, and let her run naked in front of my eyes! Literally! Haha!" Royal Highness of Thunder was laughing arrogantly.

Just as they were discussing about how to make Daffodil go naked, a shadow came over their heads and the ground around them. They could feel strong winds beginning to blow around them!

Chapter 473: Massacre

Royal Highness of Thunder and his 'goons' reflexively craned their necks upwards to look into the sky.

What they saw was a gigantic shadow of a bird hovering in the midair. As the sun was just over the 'gigantic bird', they were partially blinded by the sunlight, and could barely make out the scene. Most of them had almost instantly shut their eyes, staring back to the ground, recovering from the glare.

Hoof!

Zhang Yang gave a command to the Serpent, and they both landed heavily onto the ground. Felice was also standing atop the Serpent's back like a steadfast bodyguard, her lance held ready.

"Huh?" the goons from The Myth were all stunned when they saw the Serpent landing right before their eyes.

Could this be? The legendary [Flying Mount], circulating in the official forums?

Zhang Yang stared at them, with blazing eyes and gazed at the dead body of Daffodil Daydream. Without wasting any time, he said, "Felice, focus on the Magic Type enemies! Burn them all to a crisp!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice nodded and she transformed into her Dragon-hawk Form. She rose into the air as she started casting her {Fire Missile}, aiming at one of the Spellcasters of The Myth.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang rode on the Serpent, ready to slaughter up one of their Hunters. The movement speed of the Serpent was extremely swift. Before that Hunter could even blink, the Serpent was already right in front of his face. With a quiver in his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang swung his sword straight at the Hunter's throat and inflicted him with a damage of '-4,198'.

The Serpent was not willing to sit back and do nothing, it opened its mouth wide and began to spout out some greenish corrosive venom right

from its mouth. The Hunter's face was covered in the greenish venom, as his 'handsome' face started sizzling away! He was inflicted with a damage of '-9,283'!

The equipment of that Hunter was pretty decent. He actually had over 25,000 health points. These two attacks had managed to take out half of his health bar. He screamed in terror as he tried to leap 10 meters back with his {Leap Dodge}!

Zhang Yang laughed at him as he saw the Hunter failing to react in a way a professional player would. So, he activated his {Charge} and came straight from the back of the Serpent and clashed into the Hunter like a lightning bolt, giving the Hunter a good Stun. Zhang Yang accumulated 10 Rage Points immediately after doing that. Because non-lethal skills did not share the common cool down period, and Zhang Yang did not have to wait for the cooldown, he immediately wielded his [Sword of Purging Devourer] once again and activated his {Destructive Smash}.

'-25,722!'

An extremely high damage value was inflicted onto the Hunter! It appeared that the {Lucky strike} had been triggered on that particular strike, and the damage of Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} was tripled!

Not even a second had passed since Zhang Yang's arrival from the skies! Everyone from The Myth had not even been able to react yet, and one of them had already been taken out!

On the other side of things, Felice had already finished her casting of the {Fire Missile}! Crimson red flames were shot straight out from her small little beak, and the unfortunate Spellcaster was immolated.

'-22,034!'

The {Fire Missile} was ridiculous, killing the Spellcaster on the spot, in just one single blow! There was no holding back at all!

"Bastards!" finally, the members of The Myth had come to their senses, and they started fight back. As Felice was still hovering midair, the ranged Profession players, like Spellcasters and Hunters started targeting Felice

out of convenience. Meanwhile, the melee Profession players charged towards Zhang Yang. They seemed to be fairly experienced in group battles.

Zhang Yang laughed and jumped back onto the Serpent. The Serpent casually hovered off the ground, and out of their formations. Zhang Yang reached out and slashed at a passing Thief.

‘-4,122!’

‘-8,649!’

After just one hit of his regular attack, the Rage Points accumulated was enough to let Zhang Yang activate his {Horizontal Sweep}. So, he used the skill immediately right after the regular slash and the two damage values were inflicted onto the Thief almost at the same instant, severely wounding the Thief. The Thief was terrified and quickly activated his {Blur} to get away.

It was futile!

‘-8,744!’

The cooldown for the Serpent’s {Venom Spout} was over! It opened up its big mouth and spat the greenish venom onto the Thief’s face, inflicting him with a damage of more than 8,000 points, finishing him off!

"What the fart! Who is this! How could his damage so high and powerful!"

"He has a [Flying Mount]!"

"Only players who enter the Chaos Realm can get [Flying Mounts]!"

"Nonsense, only one person can actually enter the Chaos Realm at the moment! That is ---"

"Zhan Yu!"

The members of The Myth finally figured out who was slaughtering them up, as their faces turned pale. Well, like they say, a big tree makes a good shelter. Now, Zhang Yang was a superstar, and Lone Desert Smoke had long been established as the best of the best in the entire China

server! Who would dare to launch an assault against them?

"Ignore that eagle, hawk, or whatever bird that is! Everyone, focus on Zhan Yu! Guildmaster Heaven's Pride has given his words! Anyone will get 100,000 dollars for each kill on Zhang Yang! Brothers, we don't have to scare ourselves sh*itless! Everybody, charge!" Royal Highness of Thunder was shouting in excitement.

Money is a mysterious force that motivates and moves people into even throwing their lives into doing the impossible. The Myth began to act, after listening to Royal Highness of Thunder. They really believed that they had the advantage in numbers, even believing that if every single one of them spat on Zhang Yang, he would eventually drown from the sheer amount of sputum!

They began to charge at Zhang Yang, forgetting their previous fear. Now, they were attacking with full coordination! However, the [Flying Mount] was ridiculously quick! Regular attacks could not even land on Zhang Yang. They could only rely on the system's lock-on, along with their skills.

However ---

‘-0!’

‘-213!’

‘-0!’

‘-891!’

A series of low damage values were inflicted on Zhang Yang. To a player who is currently mounted, with a total of 130,000 health points, those were mosquito bites. Zhang Yang could hardly even feel a thing!

"Sun of a beach! What kind of equipment does this guy have on him? How is he so tough? Can anything hurt him!"

"Guardians are naturally designed to withstand Physical Damage! Spellcasters can make a difference! Let's insta-kill him!"

"We shall become famous after killing Zhan Yu!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed as he rode on the Serpent. The

Serpent was weaving about, swiftly and unpredictably, like the wind. They went up to a Spellcaster, and Zhang Yang slammed his shield into the Spellcaster with powerful brute force, launching him into the air like a piece of paper caught in the wind. The Spellcaster flopped onto the ground, his chanting having been interrupted!

‘Supporting Attack’!

With the Serpent’s swift movements, Zhang Yang had finally unleashed his full potential. He moved through his enemies freely, while dodging every single hit coming from the members of The Myth, using his ‘Supporting Attacks’ on the Spellcasters with full force whenever they started chanting, interrupting their skills again and again, with the extremely powerful impact of his shield against their faces! None of the Spellcasters were allowed to even cast a single spell!

Ignoring Zhang Yang had been a gross miscalculation on the part of The Myth! Felice was still hovering midair, bringing hell to their formations!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Fireballs came raining from the sky, and descended onto the members of The Myth. Those who were low on health were instantly killed by the flames, while the others ate an additional fireball or two, before they too joined their comrades in the graveyard!

So, who should they focus on? It had become a million-dollar question!

If they focused on the one in the air, it was pointless taking down a non-player battle companion! But, if they focused on Zhang Yang, could they really take him down? Could they even hurt him? Physical attacks did absolutely nothing, but Magic attacks might work! However, those Spellcasters were being toyed around so roughly by Zhang Yang and his shield, that they were constantly sent flying about like grains of rice! They could do nothing to Zhang Yang! Nothing at all!

Were their standards and level really that far apart? Were they really so weak, or was Zhang Yang just too bloody strong?

Tens of player were unable to take down one single player? Was this it?

Royal Highness of Thunder could not accept the ending of this because he was certain that the [Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life] had to be the finest staff at the current stage of the game. He would do anything for it! But because the server was closed for a couple of days, he had been bouncing on the tip of his toes, waiting for the perfect chance for Daffodil Daydream to finally act on her own, without party members around her. He had even managed to kill Daffodil Daydream once, and had taken her Violet-Platinum boots. Although the boots were not as precious as the staff he aimed to get, but Royal Highness of Thunder had already tasted the 'sweetness' of getting a Violet-Platinum equipment! That was why he was so insistent on camping by the side of Daffodil's dead body.

The appearance of Zhang Yang had made him shocked and excited at the same time. Liu Wei had set a bounty on Zhang Yang's head. Anyone who kills Zhang Yang would be rewarded handsomely!

It was supposed to be a double win for him. But, who would have thought Zhang Yang was practically invincible! Zhang Yang had been able to oppress them single-handedly! They could only postpone the inevitable!

"Kill! Use everything you've got! He's just one man! He can't possibly fly solo for long!" Royal Highness of Thunder could only blurt out empty words of encouragement.

In the end, online games were all about the standards of equipment! Powerful equipment would not always make up for a lack of skills, but they definitely made a huge difference! Zhang Yang happened to have an abundance of both. He had the equipment, and he had the skills! It was a divine combination!

Zhang Yang continued dodging at leisure, and he also had {Warrior's Will} to cancel out all the Status Restriction Effects on him. Also, his [Heart of the Death Knight] could decrease 50% of the time he would be under a Status Restriction Effect! With so many tricks up his sleeves, the members of The Myth were toyed around like fools, and they could not do anything about it!

Even if Zhang Yang chose not to cancel any of the Status Restriction

Effects with his skills, he still had 130,000 health points to tank against their assaults! He also had a 20% passive immunity to damage, 2,320 defense points, 2,228 points of damage absorption effect! Even if he stood there and did nothing, they would still take 4 to 5 minutes to empty out his HP bar alone!

Let's not forget that Felice was still supporting Zhang Yang in midair with her {Fire Missile}.

Each {Fire Missile} could inflict up to 20,000 points of damage. Who would be stupid enough to stand there and let her rain her {Fire Missiles} down on them? If their health points were just a little lower, they might just get themselves instant-killed. Even their tanks could only withstand two or three of those fireballs! They did not have any super healers like Han Ying Xue to heal them up!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Felice was like floating turret, launching {Fire Missiles} after {Fire Missiles}. The death count was really 'astounding'!

It was a total massacre!

11 left! 9 Left! 5 left! 2 left!

Zhang Yang raised up his sword and plunged his sword straight into a Berserker, sending him straight to the graveyard! From that moment onwards, the only member of The Myth that was left standing was Royal Highness of Thunder himself!

"Daffodil Daydream, you can resurrect yourself now." Zhang Yang informed her through the party channel.

"Alright." Daffodil Daydream had released her soul and had been waiting by her body.

Crunch!

Zhang Yang bashed his shield right into the face of Royal Highness of Thunder and instantly, the face of Royal Highness of Thunder started bleeding. Pah! He spat out some broken teeth! Half of his face had swollen

up immediately! He had survived up to this point, only because Zhang Yang had left him alive on purpose. He has better plans for this 'pr*ck'!

"Zhan Yu! Don't cross the line!" Royal Highness was speaking through his swollen face. He could not even pronounce his words nicely, "Our master, Heaven's Pride, is not someone you can trifle around with ---"

Poom!

Zhang Yang smashed his shield into his face again, and more blood splattered on the ground as Royal Highness of Thunder was sent flying 4 meters away again!

Right after Royal Highness staggered to his feet-poom! Another blow landed straight on his face! Zhang Yang hammered him with the shield again!

Those were all 'Supporting Attacks', unable to inflict a single point of damage on Royal Highness of Thunder, However, it was truly embarrassing to be humiliated this way. Royal Highness held a fairly high rank in The Myth, but now that he was being smacked in the face, like a little kid being repeatedly smacked on his butt!

Zhang Yang turned over and asked in a cold tone, "Daffodil, how long did he camp by your dead body?"

"More than two hours!"

"Very well then, I shall slap him for 3 hours!" Zhang Yang said calmly. That dead calm was enough to send a chill down Royal Highness of Thunder's spine. He knew just then, that, sh*t was about to happen.

Piak!

Pak!

Pak!

Royal Highness of Thunder turned into a life target practice. After a series of smashes and bashes, his face was so swollen, that it no longer looked like a face of a human. But, Zhang Yang did not stop there or even think of ending it right then. He wordlessly continued to bash that swollen

face up! He just kept on hitting Royal Highness of Thunder right in the face! It was brutal!

The eyes of Daffodil Daydream began to well up with tears as she watched Zhang Yang standing up for her. She was touched to the point that she did not know what to say.

Royal Highness of Thunder could no longer keep count on how many times he had been struck in the face. So, he decided to lie down on the ground like Snoopy does on the roof his kennel. He believed that Zhang Yang would stop if he stayed down.

But he was wrong, very wrong! The moment he lay on the ground, Zhang Yang began to use his legs instead of his shield! He started kicking the face of Royal Highness of Thunder like a soccer ball!

Royal Highness of Thunder could only cry and endure the pain. He would never have thought that it would be possible to torture people like this in {{God's Miracle}}! He believed that if he could not win, he could just run. And if he cannot run, then he could just die and run back to his dead body to resurrect once again!

But now, he could not even run if he wanted to, and he could not even die if he wanted to! Zhang Yang was not inflicting any damage on him! He was still at full health! What he was experiencing now was worse than death!

After being kicked and stepped on for tens of minutes, Royal Highness of Thunder finally could not take the humiliation anymore, so he decided to sign out of the game immediately. However, it was another dead end! He immediately received a system notification: You cannot sign out of the game while you are engaged in battle. If you forcefully disconnect yourself from the server, your character will receive a penalty of -3 Levels!

Royal Highness of Thunder could only grieve in silence, "..."

It's extremely difficult and time-consuming to level up even once! After getting over Level 90, it would take about 12 days in real-time just to gain 1 Level! So, a penalty of -3 levels would mean the loss of a whole month! Now that everyone was fighting to get into the Chaos Realm as soon as

possible, a drop of 1 level would already be a major setback. A penalty for dropping by 3 levels? That was unthinkable!

Therefore, Royal Highness of Thunder had no choice but to endure the punishment!

He silently took the blows, believing that as long as he did not fight back, the other party might eventually get bored!

Zhang Yang did not hold back in any of his attacks. 3 hours went on, and Zhang Yang had made sure that Royal Highness of Thunder had suffered for 3 hours, before he ended his life with a few slashes of his sword. But that wasn't the end. He had already stationed Wei Yan Er and the others by the Graveyard nearby. Although Royal Highness of Thunder chose to resurrect at the Graveyard immediately, he was immediately put down again by Wei Yan Er and the others.

After killing him another 5 times, Royal Highness of Thunder finally dropped the Violet-Platinum boots that he had snatched earlier from Daffodil Daydream! After picking up the boots, the gang called it a day and left Royal Highness of Thunder alone. But, what they left behind was a broken man with a broken mind and a shattered ego.

Everyone was furious at the imprudence of The Myth, so Hundred Shots decided to put up a new order in the guild. The Myth was now a kill-on-sight target!

Although The Myth had been a very prestigious guild in Zhang Yang's previous life, the current The Myth was still too weak at the moment. Although they had managed to convince some skillful players from Imperial Sky to defect to them, but the standard and the size of the guild was still far from being a prestigious guild! How could they withstand the wrath of the Lone Desert Smoke? They would only be slaughtered like rats!

Who wouldn't like to relentlessly beat a dog that is already in the water? Imperial Sky had been very hostile towards The Myth. Now that the Lone Desert Smoke had lit The Myth up, Imperial Sky also started attacking The Myth! As The Myth was now sandwiched in between two large-scaled,

furious guilds, they were utterly miserable, with every step they take being a potentially perilous one. Anyone from Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky would slaughter them, the moment they find out that they belonged to The Myth! The members of The Myth no longer even dared show their guild name in public!

72 hours of the in-game time passed, and Zhang Yang was forcefully teleported back to Morning Town.

‘Server Announcement: A new Territory has spawned at the coordinates XXXXX, YYYYY. Territory name: Morning Town! The ‘Territory Conquest’ will last for 3 hours, and the last player who holds the [Territory Command Order] shall claim the Territory and become the new Baron of Morning Town! From now onwards, the Wilderness of Dubaiya will be set up as a special battle area, all players shall not enter! When players die, they will be transported back to their main cities and revive there!’

‘Server Announcement: Currently, the player currently holding the [Territory Command Order]: Zhan Yu! The player holding the [Territory Command Order] will be marked with a special indicator, and the player will not be able to leave the Territory Area!’

‘Server Announcement: The ‘Territory Conquest’ has begun! Commencing countdown!’

Phew~~

A burst of cold wind blew past Zhang Yang as he was surrounded by emptiness. It was a horrible sensation, but did nothing to dampen Zhang Yang’s bright mood, for in this ‘Territory Conquest’, Zhang Yang was the only chess piece in the entire area! So, he just stood there like an idiot, letting the cold wind hammer against his face.

One Sword Stroke, "..."

Snow Seeker, "..."

Greensleeves Prince, "..."

"You f*cking b*st*rd!" Liu Wei smashed his newly replaced, brand new game-helmet up again.

Chapter 474: Winst Castle

Well, this had to be the easiest, most peaceful, and most boring 'Territory Conquest' in the entire history of gaming!

Zhang Yang sat on Whitey and wandered around the small town. The Mayor was dead, thanks to Zhang Yang, but it seemed that nothing had changed at all. His death had not changed anything at all! The entire town was still very silent. The town folks were still doing what they were supposed to do. Nothing had changed at all!

1 minute, 5 minutes, 10 minutes... 1 hour, 2 hours, 3 hours!

'Server Announcement: The 'Territory Conquest' has ended, the last player with the [Territory Command Order] is --- Player Zhan Yu! Morning Town is now a private Territory. Everyone shall be teleported back to their main cities immediately!'

It was an ending that everyone saw coming. No matter how envious the other people were, the irrefutable fact was that the Morning Town belonged to Zhang Yang now!

Zhang Yang did not change the name of the Territory. He kept the name as it was. After that, he turned his attention to the most crucial part of setting up a Territory, the Teleportation Circle! This facility would affect everyone in the future! So, without hesitation, he quickly spent 1,000,000 gold coins on it! Naturally, Zhang Yang only built a one-way Teleportation Circle that would teleport players from Morning Town to White Jade Castle, and linked his [Teleportation Scroll] to the new Teleportation Circle.

From now onwards, everyone would have a convenient way to Chaos Realm, once they have reached the required levels.

Han Ying Xue and the others were loved much more than they can imagine. When they reach Level 100, Zhang Yang would just invite all of them by forming a party and using his [Party Summon Order] to summon all of them over to the Chaos Realm, saving them a lot of time. They would not have to lift even a single foot.

After done setting up the Teleportation Circle, the next thing to set up were the defenses of the Territory. Zhang Yang spent another fortune, fortifying his new Territory. Castle walls emerged from the ground all around the Territory area. Two large metallic doors fortified the main entrance. Of course, Zhang Yang was only able to set up Level 1 Defenses, and money was not the issue. The required mining ores were hard to come.

Since Zhang Yang need not worry about other players attacking his Territory for the time being, Zhang Yang decided to take his own sweet time at collecting the required materials, and focused his attention on locating a second Territory.

After they left Morning Town, Zhang Yang flew atop his Serpent, towards the Gulattoo Icelands. It was where the Koreans and Japanese players would emerge from, the moment they enter the Chaos Realm! Furthermore, Zhang Yang remembered the place well. After all, there had been many large-scale wars between the players of China server and the Japan-Korea server. He had participated in so many of the battles there, more than he could remember!

‘Server Announcement: Derick - King of White Jade Kingdom has stepped down, Princess Serena will now lay claim to the throne!’

As he flew through the air, Zhang Yang suddenly received a Server Announcement!

Huh? So Princess Serena has taken the place of her rightful throne!

Zhang Yang was shocked. There had been no such occurrence in his previous life! Ever since he had completed the quest for locating the [Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword], everything had taken a new turn that was never around in his previous life! They even added a new system called the Battle-Companion system, and now Princess Serena is stepping to be the ruler of White Jade Kingdom!

Alright, let’s put that aside for now, and focus on the main aim!

The Serpent was fast, and more importantly, it could fly. So, it could ignore the geometry of the ground, flying over the mountains and the

seas!.

However, the sky was also a hostile area!

Suddenly, a large, eagle-like creature flew at Zhang Yang and the Serpent like a missile, its two metallic claws outstretched! It was aiming for the Serpent's throat!

[Sky Devourer Condor] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 112

HP: 17,680

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,186 - 5,986

Skill:

[Tear]: Uses metallic claws to tear open its target, inflicting 150% melee attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: A ruthless predator of the sky, loves to prey on pythons.

So, it was just a normal tier monster. Zhang Yang did not even feel like killing it himself, so he ignored it, knowing that Felice would automatically act on her own accord. Felice spat a {Fire Missile} and burnt the Condor into a 'roasted chicken' in an instant. The 'roasted chicken' then dropped from the sky and crashed into the ground.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head. He thought to himself about it, what if he was riding on a Phoenix? Would the Condor still have dared to attack him with its claws? Would it even dare to approach him?

After flying for over an hour, Zhang Yang arrived at the Gulattoo Icelands. Right before his eyes lay a vast, white snowy area, covered in glaciers, showing off the magnificent scenery of the North.

Zhang Yang took out his world map to study it for a bit, before telepathically commanding the Serpent to go northwest.

Quite a number of monsters tried to ambush Zhang Yang. But, none of them could stand before a furious Felice! A few elite tier monsters were

able to survive her fireballs, forcing Zhang Yang to spend some time finishing them off. But, none of them could stop Zhang Yang from going forwards!

After flying for another ten minutes, Zhang Yang finally arrived at his destination. A huge castle was now right beneath them. The tallest building within the castle was a hall, and a white-themed flag was installed right on top of the palace. It bore a fierce tiger as its mascot. The flag fluttered as it caught the wind.

"Outsiders! This is the territory of the Duchess Winst! Get to the ground at once! This is a restricted area!" Just as Zhang Yang was admiring the magnificent scenery of the castle, suddenly, three knights riding on Snow Condors flew out from the midst of the castle and blocked Zhang Yang's way.

Their names were currently green, so there was absolutely nothing to gain from attacking them. Zhang Yang nodded and commanded his Serpent to land. After they had all landed on a flat platform within the castle area, Zhang Yang noticed several dozens more of Snow Condor in the area. It was obvious that these Snow Condors were Winst's aerial units.

The three knights had also landed and they had dismounted the Snow Condors. One of them walked up and said, "Outsider, tell me your name!"

"Zhan Yu, an adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

"White Jade Castle?" The three knights exchanged looks and they started to look at Zhang Yang in disdain. "What kind of small f*cking castle is that? Never heard of it!"

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at them deep in his heart. White Jade Castle was the center of White Jade Kingdom. The land was so vast, being much larger and wider than this small little piece of land this Duchess Winst had! These three imbeciles were just frogs in a well, they must not have seen the outside world yet, other than this little piece of land. They could actually feel so proud, occupying such a small piece of land and castle!

But Zhang Yang had no reason to argue with three NPCs, they were not human after all, so he said, "I have heard great tales about the prestigious name of Duchess Winst, so I have traveled a great distance from White Jade Kingdom just to open my eyes to the greatness of Duchess Winst. I really do hope that you sirs can allow that, and let me experience the divinity of this land!"

All three knights started cracking grins as he continued buttering them up, and the leader of the knight said, "Alright, since you are so sincere, we shall allow you to stay and look around for a few days! But, strictly no flying above the castle! This is your only warning, or we will attack immediately!"

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey and left the platform. The streets were very lively, brimming with activity in every corner. Stalls covered both sides of the streets!

After walking for some distance, Zhang Yang found himself on a very wide street. The two sides of the street were full of people, but there was not a single person in the middle of that road. It was like they were making way for a very important person.

"Rumors say that the 'precious' master tailor of Duchess Winst has crafted another fantastic formal dress!"

"I heard that only intelligent people can access the necessary spectrum in their vision to even see the dress. If you're stupid, you lack the faculties to even process the visual input!"

"That's really fantastic! So...it's like a stupidity detector!"

"Jakyl! Bet 5 coins that you can't see it!"

"Pui! You may have smashed my head between doors a thousand times, but I'm still more intelligent than you!"

People started chattering as Zhang Yang stood close by to eavesdrop.

... "The Emperor's New Clothes"? Zhang Yang frowned. He gritted his teeth, preparing himself for a horrific sight. Wrinkled old buttocks, I'm ready, come to me!

"The Duchess is here!" everyone began to feel excited as they started talking louder and louder.

Zhang Yang had also fixed his eyes on the road. All he saw was a band of people walking down on the road like bosses. However, the one in the front was not a middle-age man - as the original tale went, or a wrinkly old lady - as Zhang Yang had assumed, but a lady with blonde hair, blue eyes, and a boombalicious body! This lady was completely naked, with her head raised high, as if she was above all others!

Unfortunately, the 'vital' parts of this beauty had been censored by mosaic boxes! God d*mn it! What a way to shoot men down.

[Duchess Winst] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 12,000,000

MP: 1,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Magic Attack: 10,249 - 11,449

Skill:

[Magic Barrier]: Opens up a magic barrier to shield yourself from harm. The magic barrier can absorb damage. The specific amount of damage that can be absorbed differs based on the number of players engaged in battle. The magic barrier can absorb an additional 10,000 damage with each additional player in the battle. When [Magic Barrier] is in effect, the [Radiant Punishment] cannot be interrupted. Instant activation.

[Light of the Stars]: Summons light from the stars, inflicts 100,000 Holy Damage to all targets within the area of 100-meter radius, having the user as the center point. Chanting time: 2 seconds.

[Radiant Punishment]: Punishes the target, inflicting 150% magic attack of Holy Damage on the target. Instant activation. Cool down period: 2 seconds.

Note: The owner of the Winst Castle, the 17th Duchess of the Winst, a

true narcissist.

Well who would have thought this 'Duchess Winst' was such a young, hot lady!

Staring at the lady whose butt cheeks took turns bouncing up and down with each step she took, with her 'explosively' large pair of boobies perked up by her straight back, Zhang Yang could not help but to feel 'satisfied'. He could only feel sorry and pity for Fatty Han and Endless Starlight. If these two were here with him to 'savor' this scenery, they would definitely drool and flood the street!

"Do I look beautiful?" the Duchess was shaking her hot-ass body, while walking through the street, looking around proudly. She also posed seductively in many ways, trying to show off her 'New Dress'.

"Does my new dress looks beautiful on me?"

How could a man.. eherm... a person say that a lady is not beautiful, when that lady stood buck naked in public? The people at both sides of the road were nodding indefinitely. The truth was, they were already 'stunned' by what they saw. They also praised and tried to 'butter' her up by saying that she's very beautiful and that the dress was simply stunning.

Just then, a sharp, shrill voice tipped the balance of the fragile, tense atmosphere, "But, this big sister does not have anything on her!"

A vague voice of a child came right out from the crowd and silenced the entire street. All of a sudden, the people began to chatter again, as people started dropping their pretenses! Zhang Yang could see the smile on the Duchess's face froze, and then her face turned black as she started to heat up. Suddenly, she shouted with anger, turned around and ran back to where she came from. It was like a free, naked show for the public!

Not long after that, the entire castle imposed a martial law. The silver Snow Condors began to fly into the sky, one after another, and the knights on them were shouting continuously, trying to inform everyone in the area, "From now on, a martial law is in effect. Everyone must remain in your own homes! You are not allowed to shelter any outsiders! Or else, you will be executed for treason!"

The streets that was filled with chattering and laughter instantly turned quiet. Only Zhang Yang and another mysterious man in a cloak remained standing at the far side of the street.

"My friend, mind lending me a hand?" the mysterious man took the cloak off his head and revealed a handsome face. His smile revealed his perfect, white teeth.

Chapter 475: Messick

[Messick] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

MP: 10,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 8,094 - 9,094

Skills:

[Light of Life]: Recovers 10% health points. Consumes: 500 MP

[Foul Chatters]: Begins to curse at a target, inflicting a large amount of aggro. Instant activation. Cool down: 5 seconds.

Note: Calls himself the best tailor in the world.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. So this was the person who had tricked the Duchess into walking naked in the public! So he said, "You really have balls of steel! You even dare make fun of a Duchess!"

Messick laughed and said, "I say you, my friend, can't we get out of this dangerous place first, before we speak any further?"

'Ding! Messick has given you a quest: Escape from Winst Castle. Will you accept it?'

Obviously, to conquer the castle and make it his own Territory, Zhang Yang would have to overthrow Duchess Winst and take her place. This daring tailor must be her 'worst enemy' in this story. So, aiding him against the Duchess should lead him to a final battle with Duchess Winst!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and accepted the quest.

[Escape from the Winst Castle] (Difficulty: C)

Description: You chose to aid Messick. Messick is currently being pursued by Duchess Winst and her men. You have made yourself a public enemy of Duchess Winst and her men! Help Messick escape from Winst

Castle, and do not let him die!

Completion: Aid Messick in escape from the Winst Castle 0/1

Fortunately for him, this quest did not have any penalties that could potentially reduce his levels. On the other side of things, there weren't any rewards that would give Zhang Yang any luck attributes!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh and summoned out his Serpent. Meanwhile, Felice had transformed herself into her Dragon-hawk Form, ready to make an expeditious retreat. But before Zhang Yang could call out her name, Messick had already tried to climb up on her back! Felice was so furious that she had swiveled her head around and launched a {Fire Missile}.

Messick was struck in the face, turning black like a big piece of charcoal. Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head again and again. This 'brother' would still think of taking advantage of a lady at a time like this! Zhang Yang was at a loss for words, unable to find anything to say about this NPC.

Without wasting any more time, Zhang Yang lashed out, aiming at Messick's despicable buttocks, and with a powerful kick, he launched Messick onto the back of Serpent, jumped aboard and gave a command to take off. The Serpent immediately fluttered its wings and flew right into the sky. They flew right out of Winst Castle.

However, their movement attracted 5 knights who were patrolling in the surrounding areas of Winst Castle! They immediately reacted and flew right towards Zhang Yang on their Snow Condors.

The flying speed of the Serpent was indeed impressive! With just a few flaps of its wings, it had already brought Zhang Yang and Messick to the exterior of Winst Castle. There were only 5 knights on their tails. Zhang Yang quickly patted on the Serpent's neck, controlling it to turn around. They headed straight to face the 5 knights.

"Hey, are you actually thinking of battling in the sky?" Messick rubbed his forehead with his hand, looking very anxious, "Please, put me down first before you do that! I have acrophobia! You know what that means?"

I'm terrified of heights! Argh!"

Zhang Yang had no time to 'entertain' Messick, as they were already on the verge of crashing into one of the knights! Right before they reached the knight, Zhang Yang gave a good swing at one of the Snow Condors with his [Sword of Purging Devourer].

Felice had also joined the battle, as she could fly on her own. Immediately, she began to chant the spell for her {Fire Missile}!

The battle has begun!

"Haha! How could you start the 'party' without me!" Messick grumbled as he produced a piece of clothing from out of nowhere! In a flash he had jumped into the jumpsuit-like apparel, except that it was webbed between the arms and ribs. The fabric there was as thin as a cicada's wings. When he opened up his hands, he looked like a bat!

"So, my friend! Just let the girl give me a sweet kiss later, and then I'll take care of these 5 fools for you! Very well! That's the deal!" Messick was muttering more to himself than to anyone else. Before Zhang Yang could say a word, Messick had already jumped off the back of Serpent. Was he trying to get himself killed by falling? And didn't he just say that he had a fear of heights?

As he opened up his arms, he actually started gliding like a flying squirrel! More impressively, Messick could evidently steer himself into his desired direction! He glided through the air and flew towards a Snow Condor.

Tsk! That is pretty impressive!

Bang!

Messick kept his 'wings' as he landed onto the Snow Condor. He raised up his fist and gave the knight on the Snow Condor a powerful punch that the knight would never forget!

Although he did not seem to be very likable or reliable, for that matter, he was still an elite tiered NPC after all! His punch inflicted about 7,000 damage on the knight!

After Zhang Yang turned around to take a look at him and saw how he was doing, he instantly felt relieved. Although the attacks of Messick were not particularly powerful, he did have the ability to regenerate his own health points. Against an equally powerful monster, he would naturally outlast them! Zhang Yang tried to hook the aggro of the other 4 monsters over to himself. Although the DPS of Felice was extremely high, but Zhang Yang had {Provoke}, so he still managed to reel in the aggro of the monsters.

The Serpent helped whenever it could. Spits of greenish venom were splattered on the monsters, dealing a DPS of up to 4,500 points! After just a while, the first knight had fallen! The second knight followed, and the third, and moving on to the forth! After slaying all 4 knights, Zhang Yang and Felice quickly turned their attention towards the fifth knight that Messick was dealing with. It did not take them long before they too, slew that knight and brought the battle to an end.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Escape from the Winst Castle! Acquired 500,000 experience points!’

Zhang Yang commanded the Serpent to bring them down to the ground, and then he looked at Messick and said, "Now, we should be able to have a proper conversation, right?" It would be illogical if the quest ended here, there had to be more to it! There should be a chain of quests coming up!

Messick suddenly turned serious, he stopped fidgeting as he looked at the direction of Winst Castle, "I'm a person who loves traveling around the world. So, when I was 15, I left Winst Castle to pursue my dream, traveling all over the land and gathering more knowledge. Everything was great, until 3 years ago. I received news about my parents' death! They were great tailors. But, just because they could not make a dress that would satisfy that f*cking b*tch, Winst, she sentenced them to their death and chopped their heads off in public!"

No wonder Messick had gone through all the trouble just to embarrass that Duchess Winst! There was such deep hatred involved!

Messick laughed at himself and said, "After I found out about my

parents' death, I actually came back and attempted to murder that b*tch to avenge my parents' death! How ridiculous of me to actually think that I can do it! When I arrived back at the town, I realized that the b*tch has a massive army under her command, and she's really powerful herself. I would have no chance at all!"

"So, I came up with another plan. I got close to her and tried to persuade her that I'm the best tailor there is in the entire world! Slowly, I convinced her by making some nice dresses for her, until I began to gain her trust. That was when I knew it was about time. So, I decided to humiliate her instead of trying to murder her. I made up a lie about how I have made a fantastic dress that could differentiate between the wise and the stupid. I believe you heard and seen enough to understand whose stupidity it actually determined in the end! That stupid b*tch actually bought it, and she really 'wore' it in the streets! Haha! She really did embarrass herself to the core!"

He smiled even more 'maliciously' than Fatty Han and Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he knew, this fellow must also be an 'impressive' pervert, himself!

Messick paused his smile and said, "So don't laugh at me for not daring enough to fight that b*tch! I don't want to die for anything! Now that I'm still alive, my existence is the only 'stain' on her life! My friend, I'll be traveling to other places once more, you should get moving, and get the hell out of here!"

Having finished retelling his backstory, Messick actually turned around and ran into the distance. In just a few seconds, he had already vanished from his sight! That fellow truly ran like a cockroach!

Zhang Yang frowned, speechless at what that had just happened. So, this quest really ends here, after aiding that Messick in running away? That's it?

Just as Zhang Yang started to ponder on his next move, he saw Messick jumping right out of the bush! Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, "What happened? Don't tell me, you already started to miss me the

moment we parted?!"

"No, d*amnit! There's a bunch of knights behind me!" Messick screamed miserably as he fell to the ground right in front of Zhang Yang, with his bottom facing the sky. Zhang Yang saw that there was at least 7 to 8 arrows buried in his *ss! He could not help but to wonder if any of the arrows had actually 'penetrated' his anus!

Right after witnessing Messick's fall, a platoon of 12 flying knights appeared right before Zhang Yang. Each of them carried longbows, and they were all riding majestic looking Snow Condors.

"Brother! Please, help me!" Messick reached out for Zhang Yang in desperation.

"Huh? Isn't this the other guy that aided Messick in humiliating Duchess Winst? Kill him as well!" one of the knights shouted, and the 12 of them began to load their arrows into their longbows. Then, they began to fire the arrows at Zhang Yang and Messick!

What the f*ck!

This bastard! So, he ran off after he said he would, and now he brought so many knights back to Zhang Yang! What a troublesome guy!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and quickly jumped back onto the Serpent. Together, they charged at the enemies! Now that his life was at stake, Messick no longer performed any more unnecessary flourishes! He charged at one of the knights and began to launch his assaults.

Messick had about 1,100,000 health points, and he also had the skill - {Light of Life} to regenerate his own health points! He also had the skill - {Foul Chatters} that was so piercing to the ears, that even Zhang Yang was close to being provoked, himself! He was basically a self-healing meat shield! On the other hand, there were only 12 elite tier monsters. Even if Zhang Yang did not dare lure all of them in at once, he could let Messick tank all of them as he focuses on one monster at a time. It would actually be more effective that way!

"Hey there! You bunch of stupid ass h*les! I haven't even impregnated

your wives yet! Why are you going so far!" Messick would try to provoke the monsters with his tongue as he fought. Every time he opened his mouth, a series of foul, provocative words flew right out from his mouth and enraged the knights. The knights were so enraged that they could not stop hitting him with everything they got! So, this skill - {Foul Chatters} was ridiculously effective! Zhang Yang had finally seen it with his own eyes!

So Zhang Yang and Felice only focused on one monster at a time. With support from the Serpent, the three of them managed to bring down the health bar of their target down to 50%.

"Brother, my friend! I need help! Argh!" Messick was being turned into a pincushion, as more arrows struck him, his eyes rolling upwards from the pain.

Well, he did have {Light of Life} to regenerate his own health points, and the cooldown period of this skill was extremely short! Although he looked like he was in bad shape, but his health bar was still at around 50%! He was still far from death!

Zhang Yang did not 'entertain' him, he simply continued to focus his assaults on his opponent until they were dead, before he activated his {Provoke} and brought the second monster over to him. After slaying the second, Zhang Yang moved on to the third knight, and then the forth... even though Messick looked all battered and bloody, but his health bar was ridiculously long, and he had the ability to regenerate his own health points. Messick was definitely an unkillable cockroach!

However, Messick only had 10,000 MP. He could only activate his {Light of Life} 20 times, which was about twice the amount of his full health points! In other words, he is like having two HP bars which he can use as a back up when he is low on health! When Zhang Yang took down the seventh knight, Messick had finally ran out of MP, and was truly getting into trouble.

For the remainder of the battle, Zhang Yang hooked in the rest of the monsters and tanked them himself. Felice and the Serpent threw in a

deadly combination of flame and venom. After some slashing and bashing, burning and bombarding, Zhang Yang had finally taken out all 12 knights!

"Pui! That b*tch really is malicious! She actually sent a heavy platoon to guard the only passage out of Winst Castle! My friend, what say you, escort me out of this hell! I need you, my friend!" Messick was plucking the arrows from his body as he pleaded for Zhang Yang to get him out of the area safely.

Zhang Yang folded his arms across his chest and said, "What's in it for me? Nothing, right? Not interested!"

Messick was beginning to feel anxious, as he began to show his pitiful face at Zhang Yang. But Zhang Yang did not fall for it. Then, he finally broke and said, "Alright! Fine! If you can escort me out of this place safely, I will tell you a secret! It would definitely make you rich! You'll earn a fortune, that will last you for the rest of your life!"

Zhang Yang only looked at Messick without saying a word.

"... very well then, it is the treasure house of the Winst family! I know where it is, and I also happen to know how to activate it!"

Chapter 476: Returning to the Winst Castle

That got Zhang Yang's attention, so it might really be true that there was a treasure chamber deep within the Territory!

He smiled and said, "Alright, seeing that you are so sincere already, I shall help you one more time!"

"You! You only agreed to help because you heard about the treasure chamber!" Messick was annoyed, "You are even more shameless than I am!"

"Don't you dare say something like that to my big brother!" Felice was annoyed by Messick's words, so she raised up her lance and jabbed the sharp tip straight into Messick butt. Previously, Zhang Yang wasn't aware of any of the arrows had really gone straight into Messick's anus, but this time, he was very positive that the lance totally penetrated Messick's 'vital' spot. Messick was in much pain that he kept howling towards the sky as he jumped about 3 meters high, with his hands pressed against his face! His face had turned really pale!

After recovering from the pain, Messick began to whine and complain, "I'd say you, my friend! You must educate this foul little lady friend of yours over here! I might just die thanks to her, before the underlings of that Duchess b*tch can get to me!"

Zhang Yang faked a cough and told Felice with a serious face, "Felice, you really should not do that. This fellow is just too d*mned dirty. You will just taint your hands by poking him with your lance! So just use your {Fire Missile} next time, if he tries anything weird again!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice readily agreed to Zhang Yang's words.

Messick rolled his eyes and frowned, "I'd say you, my friend. You must not mislead little girls! You see, I have more time than you do, so why don't you let me aid you in educating her for a few days..."

Boom!

Felice had immediately turned into a magnificent Dragonhawk and had coughed out a blast of {Fire Missile} straight at Messick's face. Messick let out a miserable cry once more, his face blackened with soot once again. So, he lay down on the ground, pretending to be dead.

Zhang Yang kicked him back up the Serpent and jumped on as well, "Felice, let's get moving!"

So, the Serpent and Felice fluttered their wings and shot up into the sky in the same instant. The scene was beautiful, and spectacular! They flew towards the direction of the mountains.

Just like the Morning Town, the Winst Castle was right in the middle of the only route to travel in and out of the Ten Barren Seas from the Japan-Korea server. In other words, the only way of getting into the Ten Barren Seas would be through the Winst Castle! However, possessing a [Flying Mount] changes that. Zhang Yang and Messick could ride the Serpent and simply fly over the mountains and other obstacles on the ground. After about 10 minutes of soaring through the sky, they had crossed over mountains and arrived at a vast and snowy ice land.

The Serpent landed and lowered its head to let Zhang Yang and Messick dismount it.

Messick let out a yawn and stretched his back right after he got down from the 'transportation'. Then, his eyes began to 'lurk' around, trying to seek for a chance to escape.

Zhang Yang gave a signal to Felice, and that little lady understood. She immediately opened up her beak and spat another {Fire Missile} straight towards Messick.

"Argh ---" Messick had lost count of how many times he had shouted in misery as he was once again standing in the middle of a sea of flames, like a rat, without a place to run.

Zhang Yang nodded at Felice again before she stopped her attack, and transformed back to her Humanoid Form. He laughed and said, "Phony tailor, it's your turn to hold up to your end of the deal!"

Messick was at the end of his rope, so he resignedly said, "My friend, your little lady over here is too 'hot' for me! But, I like it!"

Zhang Yang frowned immediately because this fellow here was definitely on the same 'level' as Fatty Han and Endless Starlight! If Fatty Han takes him as a Battle Companion, then... well, things would surely get 'merrier'!

Theoretically, players could pick any creature with limited A.I. as their Battle Companions. That would include monsters, NPCs, and even bosses! But, signing the Contract Bond to acquire a Battle Companion would be extremely difficult. The player must get the 'consent' of the monster or the NPC first, and they had to agree on their own accord!

As Felice was basically the first Battle Companion in the entire game, so her situation was slightly different. Normally, players would need to purchase a [Book of Contract Bond] in order to 'persuade' a monster or an NPC to become the player's Battle Companion. Only after the player and the monster or NPC have both signed the Contract Bond, then only the process would be complete. That way, players would be able to store the Battle Companion into their personal Battle Companion Slot. After that, players would be able to summon these Battle Companions at will.

When he saw Felice getting furious, he quickly stopped her and said, "If you don't want to turn into a roasted pig, you start talking, we had a deal! So, stop whining and get to the point! Now!"

"Alright! I'm not going back to Winst Castle to see that crazy b*tch anymore anyway!" Messick got to his feet and activated his {Light of Life}, and the burn marks on him vanished in an instant. He moved his arms and legs around a little bit and said, "You better empty out her Treasure Chamber, so that she learns well! Get her angry and run! Haha!"

Finally, Messick has told Zhang Yang about the hidden location of this Treasure Chamber and the method of operating the mechanism of it to enter the chamber. Right after he was done talking, Messick hurriedly left, as he noticed Felice staring at him murderously, yet again! As she had transformed into her Dragonhawk Form again while he was still talking,

that wretched Messick could not help but feel a chill down his spine! Fearful of being burned yet again, he had taken his leave in a hurry

Zhang Yang turned his sight towards the direction of Winst Castle, and said, "Felice, let's go back to Winst Castle now!"

The Serpent took flight again, and under the cover of the lightless night, he managed to get back into the castle without being noticed!

Following the instructions that Messick had given him, Zhang Yang arrived at the tallest building of the entire castle. It was the same, conspicuous tower with the flag, that had gotten Zhang Yang's attention when he first got here. Four statues of ancient gods were placed right outside the palace. Each of the statues held up a different kung-fu pose.

Zhang Yang began to lead Felice and the Serpent into the palace as the Serpent was struggling to fit its long and large body into space.

"Who goes there!" two heavily armored guards with lances in their hands suddenly leaped out from behind the pillars! Their lances flew at Zhang Yang, before he could even retort.

[Palace Guard] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 17,800

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,103 - 6,103

These Normal Tiered monsters had no skills of their own whatsoever. They only knew regular attacks!

Felice answered them with her own lance. Slash! Slash! One slash at a time, she took out the two Palace Guards with ease! Having such a powerful Battle Companion, Zhang Yang became much more relaxed. Against normal monsters, he no longer needed to raise a finger. Felice would easily wipe the floor with them! Even if the monsters survived the first hit from Felice's lance, the Serpent would finish them off! So, it did not matter, even if Felice does not manage to take them out with a single

blow.

Proceeding forward like an unstoppable train, Zhang Yang ventured deeper into the palace. He stopped at a towering statue.

According to Messick, there would be a switch mechanism right on the back of this statue. All Zhang Yang needed to do to get the entrance open would be to turn the switch button 3 times to the left, 4 times to the right, and 2 times to the left. After Zhang Yang did what he was told, he heard a sound - 'Click cluck!'. A door appeared right behind the statue, and the path that leads down to the underground seemed eerie and spooky.

Zhang Yang went down the stairs swiftly, Felice following closely behind. Meanwhile, the Serpent attempted to squeeze itself into the entrance, however, got its body stuck in between two walls beside it! The big fellow was unwilling to admit the fact that it was no longer a cute, little thing, but a giant beast. It blinked its two little eyes pitifully at Zhang Yang, trying to wriggle its butt in, as if it wanted to prove that it still had a slim, small body! Well, it looked more cute than pitiful.

As Zhang Yang could feel the dust falling from the ceiling, he could not help but to get worried that if Serpent continues forcing its way through, the entire underground tunnel might just collapse! So, he quickly unsummoned Serpent and continued his way deeper into the Treasure Chamber that he had been promised. As hoped, he did arrive at the Treasure Chamber! That Messick may not be all bad, after all!

The chamber was vast, and torches hung on the walls, illuminating the entire chamber. There was a large number of Treasure Chests lying around the sides of the room where Zhang Yang stood. Some of the Treasure Chests were open, and there were countless jewelry, gold, silver and other kinds of treasure within those chests! Illuminated by the torches, the treasures looked like a scene from a fairytale!

"Who dares to trespass into the Treasure Chamber of the Winst Family! Whoever you are, you must die!" Suddenly, a guard with a full set of Heavy Armor came out of nowhere and swung his sword towards Zhang Yang!

[Treasure Chamber Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 8,123 - 9,123

Skill:

[Heart Pierce]: Inflicts a massive blow to the target. The attack depends on the duration of the charge. Inflicts a basic damage of 100% melee attack. Damage will increase by 100% for every 1 more second of chanting period. Can stack up to 500% of damage. Chanting time: 1 - 4 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

Note: Loyal Squire of the Winst Family, guards the safety of the Treasure Chamber. Anyone who dares trespass the Treasure Chamber becomes their target for elimination!

This {Heart Pierce} was something to watch out for!

It was still manageable for Zhang Yang as there was only one monster coming at him with {Heart Pierce}. But, what if a few more monsters charged at Zhang Yang with {Heart Pierce}? What that was more impressive the fact that this monster was supposed to be a melee-type monster, but its {Heart Pierce} was actually a ranged attack! What the hell is this!

As he thought about this, Zhang Yang had already charged up to the monster, with his [Sword of Purging Devourer] drawn! He swung his sword across the air and the sharp edge of his sword cut through the armor of the monster. The sound of metal clashing into each other clanged across the area repeatedly, as Zhang Yang continuously slashing the monster without mercy.

Felice had also transformed into Dragonhawk Form and had begun to launch her skill - {Fire Missile}!

The existence of this elite monster was definitely a nightmare to every other single player in the current stage of the game! Its normal attack was

already 8,600 damage! Players would normally only have about 30,000 HP, even if the players are equipped with a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment. They would most probably die after four to five hits from the monster!

Zhang Yang was no such player, however. The normal attack of the Palace Guard could only deal about 3,000 damage, due to his ridiculously high defense. Even though the Palace guard had a terrifyingly long health bar of 1,150,000 health points, Zhang Yang and Felice working together was another different matter! It would only take about 1 minute for them to slay this monster.

Not long after the battle started, a progress bar suddenly appeared right above the head of the Palace Guard. Zhang Yang saw it with his sharp eyes and he reacted almost immediately. He smacked the Palace Guard with his shield and threw him off his balance. The progress bar of the monster was interrupted before it could even be launched!

Shoof!

However, the monster was still able to land one attack on Zhang Yang, inflicting Zhang Yang with a damage of 2,842 points!

Well, it was a Skill attack, and as long as the monster can lock onto a target, then the monster would definitely be able to hit its target! However, because the progress bar of the monster was interrupted by Zhang Yang's 'Supporting Attack', the monster could only inflict Zhang Yang with 100% Basic Damage, and Zhang Yang did not feel a thing at all!

The battle raged on, with the sound of the metal clashing into each other. Zhang Yang had fully exerted the potential of 'Supporting Attack'. He oppressed the monster with his crazy and powerful moves, to the point that the monster could not even regain its balance! Out of 5 of his poorly swung normal attacks, it would be considered to be very lucky if one of its attacks could even land on Zhang Yang!

In just a brief moment, the Palace Guard clanked to the ground, dead, dropping a pair of Gray-Silver Tier gloves. Unfortunately, Gray-Silver Tier equipment were no longer worth a penny at all! Maybe the gloves, shields,

and necklaces could still be sold for hundreds of gold, but the gloves and chest plates of this tier would only sell for about 50 gold, at best.

Zhang Yang continued to push deeper into the Treasure Chamber. Naturally, Palace Guards would cut in and interrupt his process, coming in one after another. However, every single one of them fell quickly under his sword, providing a substantial amount of experience points.

As Serpent was too big to move freely in the Treasure Chamber, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey instead to move faster. Why didn't he summon Mythical Turtle? The reason was simple, it was because the Turtle was simply too slow! Unless Turtle had a pair of rockets strapped behind its back, it would not be able to keep up with the rapid pace that Zhang Yang had set.

After pushing forward for a while, Zhang Yang found himself in a large hall. And finally, there was a more powerful monster in front of him!

[Guardian Tenbardu] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 5,750,000

Defense: 2,000

Melee Attack: 9,820 - 10,820

Skills:

[Ground Crusher]: Cracks the ground open with extreme power, causing the floor to break, creating rocks that will be launched at its target, inflicting 200% Physical Damage to the target.

[Meteor Summon]: Summons a wave of meteors that will rain down upon an area of 10 X 10 meter square, inflicting 20,000 Physical Damage every second! Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Bleed]: Target will bleed continuously while being struck in the head, neck, chest and other vital parts of the body, inflicting an amount of health loss, equivalent to 1% of the target's maximum HP.

Note: The left-hand man of the Duchess Winst.

This boss was completely bare-chested, only wearing a pair of trousers. He was similarly bare-footed, and he wore a pair of punching gloves on his hands. Vague, cold, light beamed from in between his fingers.

Zhang Yang had no worry of facing a Yellow-Gold boss, however, there were 5 fully-armored Elite Tier Palace Guards, standing right behind Guardian Tenbardu! Those were the deadly Palace Guards who were capable of using {Heart Pierce}! If they ever activated their skills at the same time...

Zhang Yang took a deep breath, preparing for a tough battle ahead, awakening his full potential!

"Felice, just follow my lead! Whichever monster I take, support me with everything you've got!"

"Roger, big brother!" Felice nodded.

With a throw of {Spear of Obliteration}, the battle finally began!

"Where did the rat come from? How dare you trespass the Treasure Chamber! Allow me, Tenbardu, to be the one who ends your life!" Tenbardu was not particularly tall, but his muscular body packed a lot of power. Those bulging, explosive muscles would twitch and jerk about whenever he moved.

His footwork was extremely swift, as he charged up to Zhang Yang at supersonic speed! He raised his fist and threw a punch at Zhang Yang's head!

The Physical Attacks of the boss had a {Bleed} effect. Zhang Yang did not dare to let the boss hit his 'vital' parts! So, he quickly raised up his shield when he saw the fist flying at him! It would really be troublesome, if Zhang Yang ever lets the boss touch any of his 'vital' parts!

Kaboom!

The fist of Tenbardu landed on the shield solidly, pushing Zhang Yang two to three steps back! Obviously, the boss slightly overpowered him!

Zhang Yang already has a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment over his

body, so he would have enough strength to literally crush a Yellow-Gold boss! But, his [Titan Wall] was just a Level 80 Violet-Platinum shield. It would not be a problem for him to crush a Level 80 Yellow-Gold boss! But, Tenbardu is a Level 115 Yellow-Gold boss! Those numbers made a lot of difference!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang was geared up for defensive battles. Naturally, he would be lacking in the offense department.

"Kill!" The five elite Place Guards also joined the battle. They started to surround Zhang Yang in a circular formation.

Zhang Yang picked one of the Palace Guards, and began to launch his assaults aggressively, with his [Sword of Purging Devourer].

Felice was unlike a [Mount] which would require Zhang Yang's command to act, this little lady had a high amount of autonomy, which would allow her to adapt and act in various situations. She immediately joined the battle and supported Zhang Yang with her {Fire Missile}.

The moment that Zhang Yang had been waiting for finally arrived! The Rage Points that Zhang Yang accumulated was enough for him to strike! With a stomp on the ground, Zhang Yang activated his {Thunder Strike} and caught all 5 Palace Guards with slow down effects. He quickly ran out of their formation to minimize his injuries. But, the boss was not affected by his {Thunder Strike}. He continued punching at the face and neck of Zhang Yang, trying to inflict Zhang Yang with his {Bleed} effect!

Zhang Yang was not able to evade the swift punches of the boss, but he could at least put up his best efforts at preventing the boss from punching the 'vital' points of his body! His main aim was to avoid being afflicted with the {Bleed} effect!

The attack power of Felice was extremely powerful! With just a few strikes, she had already managed to hook over the aggro of the Palace Guard. However, Zhang Yang activated his {Provoke} to hook the monster back to him as a temporary measure.

After a short while, the five elite monsters suddenly stopped their assaults. Progress bars appeared on their heads, all of a sudden!

They were about to activate their {Heart Pierce} together!

Chapter 477: Monk of Flame Inheritance

Zhang Yang let out an intimidating roar. Instead of retreating, he pushed forwards against the elite monsters, slamming his shield into one of the monster's faces! At the same instant, he raised his right leg and gave a powerful kick right at the other elite monster beside the monster he was currently engaged with.

Bam! Book!

Although Zhang Yang was at a disadvantage in terms of, Strength when standing up against a Level 115 Yellow-Gold boss, but he could still take on the Elite Tier monsters without much trouble. The two Elite Tier monsters staggered back as he pressed on, unable to retaliate. Their chanting for {Heart Pierce} were repeatedly interrupted!

‘-2,814!’

‘-2,711!’

Zhang Yang was inflicted with two basic damage values of the monsters' normal attacks, rather than two {Heart Pierce}, as he had managed to interrupt the monsters from casting the skills.

He then turned around and launched another sidekick at the third Elite Tier Palace Guard without any moment of pause. With a similarly powerful force from his kick, the guard was forced to stop chanting for his skill. Zhang Yang kicked the body of the guard until he was slouched over!

‘-2,911!’

Another normal attack landed on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang quickly reacted, and activated his {Blast Wave}!

Pak! Pak!

The remaining two Palace Guards were stunned at the same time, and their chanting for {Heart Pierce} was interrupted as well! The main reason why Zhang Yang did not just activate his {Blast Wave} straight, was because the effective area of {Blast Wave} not being wide enough to cover all 5 monsters. Plus, the 5 monsters were not standing in the same spot.

As they were surrounding Zhang Yang from 5 different directions, Zhang Yang could only hit 2 or 3 of them with his {Blast Wave}. If they were standing in front of Zhang Yang on the same spot, Zhang Yang would not have to go through so much trouble!

The 5 Palace Guards were busy trying to chant their skills, but instead, each of them only managed to inflict Zhang Yang with their basic damage. What a sad case for them!

The boss came right up and launched an angry attack at Zhang Yang, and that punch landed right on Zhang Yang's neck! As the sharp edge of the glove slid over his neck, he succeeded in giving Zhang Yang's throat a surgically narrow cut! Instantly, fresh blood started oozing out from the cut!

‘-4,183!’

‘-972!’

The first damage value came from the punch of the boss, it was a direct hit! And the second damage value came from the {Bleed} effect, which reduced 1% of Zhang Yang's health bar!

The small amount of damage wasn't a problem at all. But the main problem was that Zhang Yang's throat had been sliced right open! Although it wouldn't inflict him with any additional damage, that cut on his throat would not allow him to consume [Potions], because the Potion would simply drip out from the cut on the throat! It had become a serious problem for him! Of course, the cut, or any other wounds would disappear as time passed by, but still, it would require about 30 seconds for that to happen!

"I am Tenbardu! I am the undefeated!" The boss roared into the sky and launched another powerful punch towards the ground.

Instantly, a large crack appeared on the ground, and it rapidly streaked towards Zhang Yang, at blinding speed! Zhang Yang was not able to react to that. He lost his footing and he started falling into the crack! As the ground rushed up to meet him, Felice dove down and wrapped her claws around Zhang Yang's shoulders, lifting Zhang Yang up in the nick of time.

Then, she carried him up for about 3 to 4 meters high into the air.

Crack! Crack! Boom!

The crack continued to expand by up to 30 meters far, opening up by about 3 meters! Following the crack's expansion, a row of sharp stones sprouted out from the ground, forming an uneven, crude wall, made of stone!

It was the boss's skill - {Ground Crusher}!

"Good job! Felice! You saved my life! Haha!" Zhang Yang was laughing out of pure joy as he extended his gratitude towards Felice.

Felice blushed as she smiled, then she continued to rain hellfire upon one of the Elite monsters with her {Fire Missile}!

"B*stard!" Tenbardu let out a roar of anger as he continued to pursue Zhang Yang.

One minute later, the first Elite monster finally fell to Zhang Yang, Felice and Whitey's combined assaults!

"You bastards! How dare you kill my men!" Tenbardu was enraged at the death of his man. He reached out for the sky and launched a powerful attack. The ceiling of the Treasure Chamber suddenly became a realm filled with stars! Shoof shoof shoof! Countless meteors were raining down to the ground in an area of 10 X 10 meter square feet, right in front of the boss! It was like a hail of mortars during a world war!

{Meteor Summon}!

'-11,916!'

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a high damage value as he was caught in the middle of the 'meteor shower'. He quickly made a tactical retreat by backpedaling rapidly, until he was out of the effective range of the {Meteor Summon}!

"Haha! Yes, you should run, like the stray dog that you are when you are facing me, the Guardian Tenbardu!" the boss laughed out loud and continued to pursue Zhang Yang. He launched his assaults aggressively,

and every single hit from the boss went for the ‘vital’ spots around Zhang Yang’s head! The eyes, the neck, even the ears!

Suddenly, "{Ground Crusher}"!

Tenbardu punched the ground again, as another crack expanded across the ground and another roll of stone hideous stone spikes sprouted out from the crack! The rumbling sound was ‘spectacular’ to hear.

Actually, this boss was not really that difficult to take on. But, the 5 Elite monsters that came with him had made him significantly more difficult. If Zhang Yang only had to tank against the boss’s aggressive assaults, with all his skills unleashed, he could have easily taken the boss down!

If Zhang Yang was still the old Zhang Yang, then he would have failed to survive against a boss with the support of 5 super strong Elite monsters. Now that he had Felice supporting him, his damage output had increased by more than double, or maybe triple! As time passed by, the remaining 4 Elite monsters soon fell, one after another!

Since all of the ‘supporters’ were now dead, the boss had now become child’s play. He could actually torture the boss at leisure!

Activating super skills one after another, Zhang Yang unleashed hell upon the boss. In less than 5 minutes, Tenbardu let out a miserable cry and collapsed onto the ground. After the long animation of the boss’ dramatic death finally ended, the loot began to drop out of the dead body.

Naturally, Zhang Yang would not even look at the normal Yellow-Gold equipment and the Gray-Silver equipment. He shoved all of them into his inventory immediately. But, after picking up 4 pieces of equipment, he discovered a piece of pale-silver fragment lying on the ground. It was like a small corner of a broken turtle shell. Both sides of the fragment had mysterious runes.

[Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment (3)] (Inheritance Class: Z)

Description: Collect all 4 pieces of the ‘Monk of Flame Inheritance’ fragments, combine them to acquire the Inheritance Keepsake of the Monk of Flame. By doing so, you shall activate the Quest Line for ‘Monk of

Flame Inheritance'. Upon the completion of the final quest of the Quest Line, you shall acquire the Monk of Flame Inheritance. Other than the skills of your own Class, you shall obtain parts of the skills the Monk of Flame has to offer. All 4 pieces of the [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragments] will resonate when they are close to each other. If you are killed by other players who also happen to have the [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment], the [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment] on you shall drop, and other players would be able to claim it. All [Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragments] cannot be stored anywhere, only taken along by the players.

It was an Inheritance Fragment!

Still, Zhang Yang could only stare at it in dismay. After entering the Chaos Realm, well, the Inheritance Patch had been released upon the opening of the Chaos Realm. So it was perfectly normal for players to get [Inheritance Fragments] from bosses! This Class Z [Monk of Flame Inheritance] belonged to the lowest category of all! No wonder Zhang Yang got it from killing a mere Yellow-Gold boss!

The best Inheritance ranking would naturally be the Class S, followed by the Class A, then the Class B, Class C, Class D, Class E, Class F, Class G, Class H, and last but not least, the Class Z, making up a total of 10 Classes. So, Class Z was the worst of all Inheritances! Among the 10 Classes, Class C Inheritance was a 'dividing crest' that showcased the power difference between the different Classes. Those Inheritances that were above Class C would allow players to activate "Transformation Skills", an awesome skill to have! Unfortunately, those Inheritances that are lower than Class C does not have such perks. Players would only get to acquire new skills according to the Inheritances that they acquire.

Let's have a look at the [Vampire Inheritance] fragment which was currently in Zhang Yang's possession. Zhang Yang could activate the Vampiric Transformation if he wanted to, and it would last for 1 hour. This transformation would offer the player incredible regeneration, and also the ability to feed on blood to recover health points! Basically, this Inheritance Fragment would turn a player indestructible! Of course, the

cooldown period of this Transformation Skill would be as long as 72 hours! So, the possessor could only use it to show off, once in a while!

So after the Inheritance Patch was released, the strength and capability of a guild would be decided based on the number of players in their guild who were capable of 'transforming'! The more players with Inheritances of Classes C and above, the stronger the guild would be, and also, the better they would be able to perform in both assault and defense battles!

According to rumors from his previous life, Imperial Sky, at its peak, had over a hundred players with at least a Class C Inheritance. Many of them 'transformed' as they charged towards the castle during 'Territory Conquests'. If other guilds did not have the same number of players with at least Class C Inheritances, then there would be no way for a guild to hold out against the assault of Imperial Sky! It would be like a hot knife cutting through butter!

Because of that, Imperial Sky was able to secure the 'throne' to the best guild in the entire China server, in Zhang Yang's previous life! The Crimson Rage from his previous life was also considered as a super strong guild, however, the number of players with at least Class C Inheritances were not more than 40! The guild, Clear Water, that Zhang Yang had belonged to in his previous life only had 7 players with at least Class C Inheritances!

After putting the Inheritance Fragment into his inventory, Zhang Yang would not waste his time collecting the remaining fragments of this particular Inheritance. After all, it was the lowest Class there is. So, he decided to take it back to White Jade City to try to sell it. There should be some people who would willing to purchase it to try its effect.

The only inconvenience that these Inheritance Fragments would bring upon players would be, that players had to equip it, in order for the effect to be available. So, he cannot sell it in his Little Merchandise or throw it into the Auction House.

After clearing the stage, Zhang Yang continued to proceed deeper into the Treasure Chamber and slew a couple more monsters. Then, he arrived

at a secret chamber which was much smaller. There, he encountered the second boss. It also happened to be the end of the entire Treasure Chamber. This boss was a middle-aged man, a Spellcaster clad in a white robe. He wore a magic hat on top of his head. He was very skinny, and he held an emerald staff in his right hand.

[Chiller Shenro] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 5,750,000

Defense: 2,000

Magic Attack: 5,752 - 6,552

Skills:

[Frost Arrow]: Launches a Frost Attack at the target, inflicts 200% Magic Attack of Frost Damage to the target and reduces 50% movement speed of the target. Lasts for 5 seconds. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Frost Coffin]: Randomly forms a Frost Coffin around a target, inflicts 50,000 Frost Damage to all targets within attack range and freezes the target. Targets that are frozen would not be able to do anything for 10 seconds. The {Frost Coffin} could be activated instantly. But the duration for the {Frost Coffin} to completely solidify would be 3 seconds.

Note: The right-hand man of Duchess Winst.

Fortunately, this boss did not have any underlings around him.

So, Zhang Yang had nothing to be afraid of. All he needed to do was to watch out for the {Frost Coffin}. This 'right-hand' posed minimal threat to Zhang Yang!

"Felice, let's do this!"

Zhang Yang charged towards the boss with large steps. Along the way, he charged up and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss.

A damage value was inflicted upon the boss. Shenro let out a nasal shout and raised up the staff in his hand at Zhang Yang as he began to cast the

spell for {Frost Arrow}.

At the same time, Felice had completed casting her skill, and the {Fire Missile} was ready to take off! A fist-sized {Fire Missile} was blasted straight at the boss. Her attack was much higher than Zhang Yang's. Her {Fire Missile} did a damage of '-21,231', and the aggro of the boss was switched over to her, making her the primary target of the boss.

But, the boss was already begun with his chanting. It was not possible to interrupt his spell at that point. He had activated his {Frost Arrow}, before he switched his target to Felice! An arrow formed from the frost out of mid-air and was fired straight at Zhang Yang, damaging him by 7,612 points.

Although that amount of damage was not really that high in the first place, the spells of the boss could not be interrupted, nor blocked with skills. So the DPS of the boss had reached up to 4,000 damage already! Zhang Yang only had about 97,000 Maximum HP! With his current amount of HP, he could only tank against the attacks of the boss for about 25 seconds, tops!

Furthermore, the total DPS that Zhang Yang, Felice and Whitey could channel out at the moment, was only about 20,000 damage. So, it would still need about 5 minutes to empty out a total of 5,750,000 HP!

Obviously, it was not possible to tank against the boss. So the most logical course of action would be to use the terrain of the ground when it comes to soloing a Magic type boss, or a Ranged boss, for that matter.

Zhang Yang ran towards the boss as rapidly as he could. When he was 10 meters from the boss, Zhang Yang activated his {Charge} and crashed into the boss. With a flick of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he began to launch his assaults on the boss, as aggressively as possible. Trying hard to maximize the efficiency of his attacks, he also used his shield to bash the boss in the face.

Even though Shenro was a Magic type boss, his Strength was still similar to a Melee type boss. Zhang Yang kept bashing his shield into the face of the boss, and although there were marks of his shield stamped on the

boss's face, the boss was not staggered at all. The chanting of the boss was not interrupted at all!

Well, logically speaking, because Magic type bosses usually needed to chant in order to launch their skills, if players could easily tie them down with supporting attacks like that, Magic bosses would turn into 'Santa Clauses', giving players 'free and easy' equipment! It just simply would not do! Players would take advantage of that and slaughter the Magic bosses repeatedly for powerful equipment, which would eventually break the game!

Chapter 478: The Return of the Whiner

Zhang Yang went all out, trying his very best to capture the aggro of the boss.

However, his DPS never even surpassed 4,000 damage. To get the boss' attention from Felice, one would have to reach a DPS of 10,000 damage, at least! That wouldn't be achieved so easily! After pushing himself, having gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion] and even activating his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, Zhang Yang finally succeeded at becoming the primary target of the boss.

30 seconds after the battle raged on, Zhang Yang found himself close to death, having been tossed around relentlessly by the boss, without any moment of pause. He had no choice but to activate his {Berserker's Heal}, and healed himself back up to full health again.

Right after that, Shenro raised his staff and chanted a few spells in quick succession. Instantly, the air surrounding of Zhang Yang began to freeze, and a layer of frost began to form on the ground, followed by a second piece of frost rising up vertically to the left of Zhang Yang, and the third wall of frost forming on the right side! The frost walls slowly merged together as they tried to 'imprison' Zhang Yang.

Well, obviously, that was the {Frost Coffin}! The boss was up to no good!

Zhang Yang quickly turned around and ran like hell. Whitey turned tail and lumbered after him. Felice conveniently started flying away. Wings are always convenient. However, the effective area of the {Frost Coffin} was vast. It covered a 20 meters radius area across the ground! Even though there is a 3-second gap for the {Frost Coffin} to completely form, if a player did not react at the very moment when the boss begins to chant the spell for the skill, then the player will definitely be unable to get out of the effective area of the skill!

3 seconds later, the {Frost Coffin} had completely formed. Instantly, the entire effective area was covered in frost! Zhang Yang could see and feel the chill through every single cell of his body! It was extremely cold!

Without prolonging the battle, Zhang Yang charged back into the battle with his {Charge}. He raised his sword once more and began to inflict the boss with as much damage as possible.

Shenro let out a thunderous roar and he struck Zhang Yang with another shot of his {Frost Arrow}.

Zhang Yang was going all out. After he activated his {Shield Wall}, {Last Vigor}, and {Blood of Life}, he immediately activated his {Rearm} to reset the cooldown of all his skills! Right after that, he continued to bombard the boss with all his Skills again. Once they were in cool down again, he retreated to the narrow parts of the chamber. He went up to the path right outside the entrance, and used the corner of the entrance to remain out of the boss' line of sight. By moving just that little bit at the right timing as the boss tried to angle his way about, he managed to prevent the boss from hitting him.

Consuming [Bandages]!

‘+4,000!’

‘+4,000!’

...

Zhang Yang began to heal up repeatedly, as the green numerical values started appearing right on top of his head one after another.

Shenro was halfway chanting his {Frost Arrow} when he was forced to stop his chanting, and had to shuffle his feet in order to get to Zhang Yang who was now healing himself uninterruptedly.

Zhang Yang could only use his ‘First Aid Kit’ four times before the boss stood right before him! As Zhang Yang was using his fifth [Bandage], the boss was already right in front of him! Actually, Shenro could have interrupted Zhang Yang from using [Bandage] to heal for the fifth time, by throwing a normal punch at Zhang Yang. However, the first choice of attack for all Magic type bosses in this game would always be to chant a Magic type skill. So, when the boss was done chanting his skill for another {Frost Arrow}, Zhang Yang had already healed himself up by another

8,000 HP!

Before the boss could let his arrow fly, Zhang Yang quickly stepped back into the secret chamber. The boss had to follow him, of course. That marked the beginning of the wild goose chase.

"You coward! Face me, and fight like a man!" Shenro roared and hobbled after Zhang Yang, as they ran in and out of the entrance.

In, and out, and in, and out...

Like an idiot, the boss followed Zhang Yang about, unable to strike him.

Although Zhang Yang was moving around a lot more now, his DPS never got any lower! He kept using his two powerful skills - {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash} the moment the cooldown periods were over. He was so efficient, that not a single second was wasted! His constant movement was more to wait for their cooldown periods than to evade the boss!

Whenever the {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were ready, Zhang Yang would stop running and step right up to fight the boss head-on. Whenever his health started getting too low, he would start running in and out of the entrance again. The boss was in a total mess as he as being herded around a like a cow!

80%, 60%, 40%... the 5,750,000 HP of the boss was dropping rapidly!

If Zhang Yang had an Inheritance above the Class of C at the moment, he would only have to activate his 'Transformation,' and then he would be good to tank up against a Violet-Platinum boss alone, without any problems at all! Without even talking about the power of a Class S Inheritance, even the Class B King Kong Inheritance that Zhang Yang once possessed in his previous life, could turn him into a King Kong, and gain an instant boost, giving him 300% Defense, 70% Magic Immunity, 20 times his Maximum Health Points, and 3 times his attack power! These transformation power ups were enough for Zhang Yang to completely overpower a Violet-Platinum boss!

Inheritances were over-the-top!

Unfortunately, searching for an Inheritance with a 'Transformation Effect' was difficult enough. It would only be more difficult getting a Class S Inheritance. As previously mentioned, in the near future, the power of guilds would directly correlate to the number of members who can transform. Even a low leveled guild, completely made up of 50 players who are capable of transforming would flood the earth with the blood of their enemies! Inheritances with 'Transformation Effects' would determine the strength of guilds in the future!

So Zhang Yang is very determined to acquire the God of War Inheritance! All he can hope is that the Inheritance will 'wait' for him before anyone else claims it!

Zhang Yang had been silently reminding himself to search for the [God of War Inheritance Fragments] right after he secures Winst Castle as his second Territory.

Now that Zhang Yang has opened up the Chaos Realm, every server would enter the Chaos Realm from their own respective entrances. Judging from the current situation, these 'special' Territory points would be as easy to acquire as Morning Town. As for other Territories that were spread across the Chaos Realm, they would require tougher quests. Well, the game developers had been considerate when they were designing this part of the game. They did not intend to have players waste half a day every time they had to travel around the Chaos Realm. With eight Territories acting as starting points for the players from all eight different servers across the world, the players had to travel a great distance to meet up at the center point!

So, one month would be enough for Zhang Yang to conquer all eight Territories from all eight servers! However, if he really did that, he would be declaring war on the other seven servers. All other seven servers would definitely join forces to take down the China server!

Never, ever unite your enemies to a single cause! So, Zhang Yang would only be taking the Gateway Territory belonging to the Japan-Korea server.

Five minutes later, Shenron finally admitted his defeat as he let out a

miserable scream and fell beneath the [Sword of Purging Devourer]. As a parting 'gift', it had left Zhang Yang with a substantial amount of experience points.

The loot dropped by Shenron were considered average. There was only 1 Yellow-Gold equipment and 3 Gray-Silver equipment, which could still be sold for gold coins. So, Zhang Yang swept them into his inventory. Unfortunately, the boss did not drop any [Inheritance Fragments], slightly disappointing Zhang Yang.

The guardian no longer being in the way, Zhang Yang moved on to claim his treasure!

After looking around in the secret chamber, Zhang Yang realized that none of them were actually valuable! Even though the secret chamber was littered with treasure chests, it was all junk?! How ridiculous! All he found were some [Pearls] and [Jewelries]! Each of these [Pearls] and [Jewelries] could only get him some silver coins if he sold them in the market! The only thing that mattered in this game would be gold coins, and these [Pearl] and [Jewelry] would have to be sold to NPC businessmen in order to turn them into something worthwhile. Zhang Yang resignedly accepted what he could get, for these [Pearls] and [Jewelries] could at least earn him some money.

After searching around for 5 to 6 minutes, Zhang Yang only found more [Pearls] and [Jewelries] in all of the chests. But one particular chest was locked.

It would seem that the 'real' treasure was here, buried within this dark-red chest!

Zhang Yang drew his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and swung it at the chest. All he heard was a 'Chiang!', and sparks were seen as the sword edge clashed into the lock of the chest. There was not even a scratch on the lock of the chest!

Chiang! Chiang! Chiang!

Zhang Yang could not believe it with his own eyes. Even after dozens of strikes with his powerful sword, the chest remained intact.

So this is it? Dead end?

Zhang Yang frowned. Just as he was to retrace his steps, hoping to find something that he might have missed out, he heard the sound of footsteps approaching him. Thud, thud, thud! The footsteps indicated that someone was approaching him in a hurry. He quickly turned his head around and saw Duchess Winst in a gorgeous aristocratic dress standing right at the entrance of the Treasure Chamber.

Zhang Yang almost failed to recognize her, after she had put on a dress! The difference was really astounding!

Standing right before Zhang Yang, this blonde woman did look very noble and refined, calm and poised, even though she wasn't exactly resting. She looked totally different from the Duchess that Zhang Yang had seen naked in the street. The neckline plunged down and her two boobies were half-exposed in the air. Pressed against each other, a very deep, defined cleavage was formed in between the two large boobies, and she looked marvelously seductive.

"You daredevil! How dare you trespass my Treasure Chamber! Death is your only way out!" the Duchess raised her staff up and pointed it at Zhang Yang with an intimidating aura. Her boobies jiggled with that sudden movement.

Zhang Yang frowned again, for a different reason this time. Is the boss here to battle him, or is she here to seduce him? She was not making any sense at all!

He laughed out loud and said, "My dear Duchess, why aren't you wearing that 'Fantastic' dress today?"

Winst was instantly enraged! The staff in her hand suddenly glowed with a golden light, followed by a stream of lightning bolts striking down on Zhang Yang! All at once, Zhang Yang was inflicted with a damage of 10,000 points.

Zhang Yang frowned, sensing trouble in the coming fight. The {Radiant Punishment} of the boss had not required any chanting time! He would not be able to fight her like he did against Shenro! So, no more playing

with angles and obstacles! It would be suicidal, moving around, trying to kite her as he waits for the cooldown of his skills!

This Duchess has extremely powerful attacks, and she could also activate her {Magic Barrier}. Fortunately for Zhang Yang, the amount of damage that the {Magic Barrier} could absorb would depend on the number of players around the boss! However, it would still be a serious problem if she is able to activate this skill frequently enough.

Well, Guardians are naturally at a disadvantage when they ever encounter a Magic type boss. So Zhang Yang could not even think of any possible way that he can win this battle!

Should he activate his {Shadow of the Void}, and make his escape, first? He could wait for Han Ying Xue and his gang to reach Level 100 first before they come back together and slay this b*tch. However, it had its risks too! A large number of players from all eight different servers across the world would have already entered the Chaos-Realm by that time! What if the Japan-Korea server ever forms an 'international alliance' with other servers? Things would escalate, and get messier if he ever waits that long!

No matter the cost, Zhang Yang decided to take down this b*tch and take over the Gateway Territory for the Japan-Korea region before that happens! He planned to make the players from the Japan-Korea region look bad again.

"Hey, my man! I've thought it through, and I have decided to come back and make another scene!" Just as Zhang Yang was about to make a tactical retreat, the voice of a macho man was heard from the same direction of the Duchess. A man with a handsome, yet wretched face appeared right behind the boss.

It was Messick! The whiner!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, Messick has {Foul Chatters}, which can hook over the aggro of the boss! It could not be helped, he was born with those perfect, Aryan looks that were asking for a punch to dislodge the perfect symmetry. He also has {Life of Light} to recover his own HP. So, he

would definitely be the most suitable tank against this boss!

Messick had an MP bar that was long enough for him to activate {Life of Light} for 20 times, which would recover a total amount of 2,200,000 HP. Furthermore, he has a total of 1,100,000 HP. So, he basically has a total of 3,300,000 HP before he dies! If the boss wanted to kill him first, it would require about six to seven minutes!

Zhang Yang himself would be able to tank against her for two to three minutes long. If the boss really cannot be killed within that time, then Zhang Yang would have to admit defeat.

Shoof!

With a {Charge} Zhang Yang triggered the boss battle. Currently, the cooldown for all his 'healing' skills was over. So, he should be able to tank against the boss for a good while. When he no longer can tank, he would activate his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from battle, leaving Messick to be the main tanker of this battle. By the time Messick falls, the cooldown periods for his {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} should all be over by then.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Streams of lightning fell upon Zhang Yang, one after another, inflicting him with a damage of 10,000 points, repeatedly. Meanwhile, Felice and Whitey were also attacking the boss with all their might, showing that they were not just a bunch of Looney Toons¹ cheering for him with some useless fireworks. On the other hand, Messick's mouth was really full of foul words! He pratted on at the Duchess, saying that her boobies were mismatched and oddly shaped, and that her butt was shapeless. Zhang Yang also heard something along the lines of her thighs being as large as elephant's legs, and something that had to do with her farting like a skunk! The Duchess was so greatly provoked that she started smoking up in anger!

In the list of the boss's aggro, the aggro for Messick was increasing, extremely rapidly. In just a few seconds, it had already exceeded Felice's! So it would only be a matter of time before Messick would capture the

aggro of the boss over from Zhang Yang, and become the main tanker in the battle!

Well, it was impossible to understate, or downplay the power of {Foul Chatters}. Zhang Yang could not help but think that only Messick has the power to sway bosses over to him by the word of mouth! The one and only!

TL Notes:

1. Looney Toons: a bunch of people that only jokes around and do nothing contributing.

Chapter 479: The Unkillable Cockroach

Streams of lightning rained down upon Zhang Yang as high damage values, ranging between 11,000 points and 12,000 points were inflicted upon him, one after another. After just a brief period of time, Zhang Yang was already forced to activate his {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} to keep himself alive for a little longer, followed by the activation of his {Last Vigor} and {Blood of Life}. While he was at it, he also consumed [Potions] every time the global cool down period for using [Potions] was over.

Meanwhile, the aggro value on Messick was increasing drastically. Zhang Yang was now certain that he would not even have to activate his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle. All he had to do now was to stop attacking for a moment, and Messick would definitely gain the aggro of the boss!

"That's right, b*tch! Your tits are fake, I know! And that's not it! The doctor who did that was crappy. He actually made them lopsided, look at that! One's like a huge melon, the other is a wrinkled-up raisin! Haha!" Messick was blabbering out more nonsense with his mouth, trying his very best to provoke the Duchess, "Hey, don't look at me like that! I'm just being honest. Hey, let's not forget that I was your tailor. So, which part of your body haven't I touched?"

Zhang Yang frowned, sweat dripping down his brow. This wretched fellow was good. The best of the best in his art!

The Duchess was enraged to the point that her chest was about to explode. Without any hesitation, she left Zhang Yang alone and started to point her staff at Messick. Bam! She gave Messick a {Radiant Punishment} to release her anger.

‘-15,973!’

Messick did not have any damage absorption abilities like Zhang Yang had. So, he had no choice but to take on the full damage of the {Radiant Punishment}.

"Wow! You really are a b*tch after all! So mean and ferocious! You

should get yourself abducted by bandits and get banging together all night long! That should be plenty of fun for them, and you!" Messick continued spouting out more nonsense, even as the boss mercilessly bombarded him.

It was a certainty now, that this fellow really had a foul mouth!

Zhang Yang had also activated his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle. At a safe cover, he started to consume the [Snacks] that he had prepared to replenish himself. Although the aggro value of the boss on Messick was already a lot higher than the aggro value on Zhang Yang, he was still dangerously close to the boss. If the boss ever decides to activate her {Light of the Stars} all of a sudden, then Zhang Yang would be as good as dead!

After a brief moment, Zhang Yang had recovered his HP back to its full state. He let out a battle cry and charged back to the boss. Zhang Yang flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, and clashed into the boss with {Charge} at the same instant.

"You low-life traitors!" the Duchess screamed through her teeth. Although her face had not yet been touched by Zhang Yang, but the color of her face was changing rapidly! Obviously, Messick's {Foul Chattering} was driving her crazy!

Voom!

A translucent barrier appeared around the Duchess all of a sudden, shielding her from harm. At the same time, a progress bar appeared right above her head, as she began to chant.

{Light of the Stars}!

"Felice! Attack her! Quickly!" Zhang Yang cried out in panic. This skill could inflict damage to all targets within the area of 100-meter radius, and the damage of this skill went up to 100,000 Holy Damage! Although Zhang Yang would not be instantly-killed because of his high amount of damage absorption, that skill would definitely put him close to death!

Furthermore, the cooldown of the skill was really short! Even Zhang Yang and Felice would be killed if the Duchess activates {Light of the

Stars} again!

Based on the description of the skill, the {Light of the Stars} could be interrupted, provided that the {Magic Barrier} of the boss is destroyed!

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, the amount of damage this {Magic Barrier} absorbs would be based on the number of players present! Although there were 3 persons and a pet launching their assaults towards the boss at the moment, Zhang Yang was the only player around! So, the {Magic Barrier} could only absorb a total of 10,000 points of damage!

However, all skills shared a global cooldown period, and Magic Skills required cast times. A mere 2 seconds was what they had to destroy the {Magic Barrier}. If they could not get their skills ready at the right moment, it would be all over!

Felice charged at the boss down from the sky. Although her {Fire Missile} could have destroyed the boss's {Magic Barrier} in a single hit, but she too required 2 seconds to cast the spell. Furthermore, the {Fire Missile} was a ranged attack. It would require more time to travel through the air! By the time the {Fire Missile} strikes the boss, it would already have taken about 2.2 seconds to 2.5 seconds!

So, she immediately transformed into her Human Form and raised her lance straight at the boss, and stabbed forward!

‘-7,825!’

‘-16,175!’

A {Spear of Blazing Dragon}, followed by a normal attack managed to destroy the {Magic Barrier}, while also inflicting a damage of 24,000 points!

As the barrier was now down, Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield up and smashed it into the boss. Activating {Crash Magic}!

Pak!

Right before the progress bar was about to complete, the Duchess was interrupted. She let out a scream of frustration and raised her staff up

again. A stream of lightning flew at the head of Messick.

Messick was zapped to the point that he was screaming in weird, falsettos and acciaccaturas, but his vulgar tongue forever remained in his mouth. He continued to provoke the Duchess by criticizing her body, her face, and her temper. With his tongue alone, he had made the Duchess sound like a tasteless, ugly b*tch. The Duchess was so furious that her blood veins were about to pop!

No wonder Zhuge Liang¹ could really mess Zhou Yu² up with his so-called 'wisdom'. Zhang Yang could not help but to feel a chill down his spine as he listened to Messick's foul words! Still to deal with the killer of your parents in such a light-hearted manner was already an act of mercy!

After a brief moment, the Duchess shielded herself with another {Magic Barrier} again, and started to chant the spell for the {Light of the Stars}.

This time however, she had picked the wrong time to do so. Even before her {Magic Barrier} was erected, Felice was already launching a {Fire Missile} at the boss! The barrier was almost immediately destroyed half a second later! Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he continued to gave the boss a {Crash Magic} and interrupted the boss's chanting progress.

So there were benefits in having lesser people in a boss battle, after all. If hundreds of players were to battle this boss at the same time, even if they had the necessary DPS to carry their weight (Each additional players increases the amount of damage that the {Magic Barrier} can absorb by 10,000 points, and the chanting of the spell must be interrupted within 2 seconds, so each player would have to have a DpS of about 5,000 damage.), the limited space would make it impossible for them to efficiently dish out that amount all the time. They were free gifts for the boss.

If the {Magic Barrier} could not be destroyed in time, the {Light of the Stars} would rain hell upon the players, doing 100,000 Holy Damage. So, other than an insanely powerful tanker like Zhang Yang, who has an insanely powerful set of equipment, with an insanely long HP bar, and a 20% passive damage absorption, other players would never survive this

without activating their life-saving skills!

"Guards! Guards!" The Duchess was having trouble taking down Zhang Yang, and it was starting to annoy her, and she had been listening the foul words coming out from the foul mouth of Messick the whole while! Of course, she was already at the verge of losing herself to her own anger! In frustration, she began shouting for reinforcements.

Zhang Yang was shocked for a moment, as he had not expected the boss to call for back up! If the boss really summons a few elite monsters like the Palace Guards at a crucial time like this, then victory would seem unlikely! Yet, this had not been mentioned in her description!

After waiting for awhile with bated breath, there were no signs of any new monsters coming in. Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. Apparently, the boss was just rambling in fury.

Although there were not many people in the boss battle, the damage output of Zhang Yang and Felice was more than sufficient. Felice's DPS had exceeded 10,000 damage, putting every single player in the world to shame! Although the HP of the Duchess was massive, it was still being drained at a rapid pace!

However, the assaults of the boss were not weak at all. Messick was forced to activate his {Light of Life} repeatedly just to stay alive! But, he could only hold on for another 6 minutes before he runs out of MP to activate his life-saving skill. Now, he could only stare at his own HP reducing down rapidly!

At the same time, the boss was still left with about 2,500,000 HP!

"Brother, promise me that you will kill this b*tch, and avenge my parents for me!" Messick turned his head towards Zhang Yang and revealed the sad, resolute expression of a warrior about to meet his end.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "You can go peacefully now. I will avenge you and your parents!"

"%#^&!@%\$!" Zhang Yang could only see the mouth of Messick moving rapidly, as his voice was muted. As for the words were coming out from

his mouth, Zhang Yang could actually guess them. Those words were not decent words, not even close! Zhang Yang managed to lip read stuff like 'your mum' and 'c*nt'!

Without the {Light of Life} supporting him, the HP bar of Messick was traveling down a one-way track. In just a brief moment, his HP had been reduced from 500,000 points, down to only 300,000 points, and then further down to 100,000 points. By the end of it, his HP bar was emptied out, and he finally collapsed onto the ground and died. It was a valiant effort. He had actually tanked against the boss for close to seven minutes! It was something that not even Zhang Yang could do!

"Haha! Now, it's your turn!" the Duchess turned towards Zhang Yang and Felice, and she began to charge towards Zhang Yang. She started to bombard Zhang Yang aggressively. All this while, Zhang Yang was trying to hook the aggro of the boss as well as he could, and Felice had been holding back to make his job easier. So, currently on the aggro list, Zhang Yang had managed to get a little more aggro value than Felice could.

But, the boss was left with about 1,000,000 HP at the moment. All the skills Zhang Yang had were on standby. Victory was now a certainty!

He quickly gulped down his [Power Potion] and activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}!

Without the need to hold back anymore, Zhang Yang began to unleash all of his potential.

The HP of the boss began to drop even more rapidly, starting from 1,000,000 HP, down to 800,000 HP, then further down to 500,000 HP! The Duchess was getting angrier and angrier by the second. She shouted and screamed repeatedly as the rate of her activating the {Magic Barrier} and the {Light of the Stars} grew in frequency! Although there was no indication, or description saying that the boss would go into a Berserk Mode, she was definitely acting like it now! Her {Magic Shield} would be activated once every 10 seconds! Each time however, she was quickly interrupted!

The {Crash Magic} of Zhang Yang had a cool down period of 10 seconds.

Soon, it would no longer keep up with the constantly increasing rate of the {Light of the Stars}, so Zhang Yang would no longer be able to interrupt the boss with this skill!

The boss was still left with about 230,000 HP at the current situation. Suddenly, she began to chant another fresh round of {Light of the Stars}! But, Zhang Yang had just only interrupted her 5 seconds ago! So, he could only stare at the boss as she continued chanting!

{Dragon Lance of War}!

Felice flew right towards the boss at a high speed, lance-first! Not only did she damage the boss tremendously, she had also stunned the Duchess for 2 seconds long!

The {Light of the Stars} was interrupted once again!

"Nicely done!" Zhang Yang praised Felice and took the opportunity to channel as much damage as possible onto the boss.

2 seconds had passed and the Duchess had recovered from the stun effect. She once again began to chant the spell for the {Light of the Stars}. She seemed to go all out, as she knew that she was about to die! Going out with a bang, perhaps?

Zhang Yang had also activated his {Sacrifice} and {Shield Wall}. He started the final sprint to the finish!

Pak!

The boss had finally succeeded in chanting the spell for the {Light of the Stars}! Instantly, the entire secret chamber was lit up with the beaming stars all around. It was like countless lasers shooting across the area!

‘-37,772!’

‘-10,000!’

Both Zhang Yang and Felice suffered heavy damage. That was the final chance for the boss!

150,000! 100,000!, 50,000!

"Argh ---" the Duchess finally let out a miserable scream as her graceful body slid to the ground slowly. Her body fell right on top of Messick's dead body, and she dropped a bunch of loot.

It was not easy at all! Battling a Magic type boss was really tiring! If it weren't for Messick, the super strong human shield and his {Foul Chatters}, Zhang Yang would not have been able to take down the boss by himself! He would not even know how to battle the boss in the first place!

The Duchess had dropped one piece of Violet-Platinum equipment and two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. Other than that, there was a shiny, silver key. This key was initially hung around her neck. Felice had spotted it with her sharp eyes and had held it up to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was very sure that this key would unlock the dark-red chest that he had found earlier on! He patted Felice on the head and praised her.

Zhang Yang kept the two Yellow-Gold equipment in his inventory without even taking a look at their attributes. Then, he moved his hands toward the Violet-Platinum shield that radiated in a purplish light.

[Mark of the Winst] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +2,016

Vitality: +1,411

Equip: Absorbs 688 damage when being hit.

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 5,600 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

This shield was truly worthy of being a Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. To compare with Zhang Yang's current shield, his [Titan Wall] only adds an additional 1,344 vitality points, after identification! After all, the levels of the two equipment had a 50% difference, so their attributes would also have a 50% difference!

However, when Zhang Yang reaches Level 120, he would already be focusing on Mythical Tier equipment! Although this shield seemed

promising, but players would only get to equip it when they reach Level 120. As it was not really that practical to use, Zhang Yang decided to put it up for sale. No matter what, a Violet-Platinum Tier equipment should be worth at least a couple of millions, and the money would cover some of his own expenses.

Just as he was about to use the key on the lock of the Treasure Chest, the dead body of the boss suddenly twitched! It was an unexpected twist of events!

Zhang Yang was so terrified that he had let out a very high pitched scream! How could the dead body of the boss still move after dropping the loot! Is she zombified or what?

Then, a hand came right up from beneath the dead body and pushed the dead body of the Duchess aside. It was Messick! He crawled right back on his feet and started to whine as usual, "Pui! Pui! Pui! This stinky b*tch really goes heavy on the perfume! I was about to suffocate!"

... holy sh*t, this fellow really is an unkillable cockroach!

Zhang Yang walked up to him, pulled out his sword and jabbed it into Messick's butt.

"Argh ---" Messick grabbed on his butt as he screamed in pain and jumped. Then, he tightened his teeth and stared at Zhang Yang, "What was that about!?"

"I couldn't tell if you were a person or a ghost!" Zhang Yang teased.

Messick: "..."

"How can you be not dead?" Zhang Yang was very curious, as he witnessed Messick being struck to the ground with his own eyes.

"What the f*ck! Were you really wishing for my death that badly?" Messick rolled his eyes at Zhang Yang.

Playing dead?

Zhang Yang could not help but frowned. There had been no mention of this 'playing dead' skill, not in the description of the NPC, and not in the

skill lists as well. Well, whatever, he's alive and well now! Zhang Yang walked up to the Treasure Chest, and he bent down to unlock the chest.

After using the key on the lock, the lock fell off. Zhang Yang reached out and opened up the chest. The next thing Zhang Yang saw was beautiful, bright light, shining out of the chest.

There was a pale-yellowish necklace that looked ancient, a piece of bronze armor plating, a yellow-gold scale, a piece of green jade-like [Order], and a scroll.

"Treasure!" Messick immediately regained his bubbly demeanor. He charged up to the chest and tried to snatch it from Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang furiously kicked him aside, "Everything outside this Treasure Chest is yours, I only want these few pieces!"

"Pui! Those are all junk! How can you compare them to these fine babes here! Don't mistake me as a tasteless hillbilly!" Messick cupped his hands over his butt as he charged back at the Treasure Chest.

This time, Felice ran up and blocked his path. With her lance pointed between his eyes, she stared at Messick coldly and said, "Don't get any funny ideas!".

"Hehe, aren't we 'brothers-in-arms'? I say you, my brother. People say that there are three things that determine the 'brotherhood' of men! One, to battle side by side with each other! Second, drinking booze and the third, picking up women together! We may have not yet fulfilled the latter two, but we have definitely fought side by side, together! I don't mind having a toast with you at the bar and introducing you to some women later! So, don't you pretend like nothing ever happened between us..."

And the NPC went on with his own 'speech'.

Zhang Yang shook his head as he commanded Felice to block that annoying NPC from touching the chest. Now, Zhang Yang could finally pick at the chest in peace.

TL Notes:

1. Zhuge Liang: military leader and prime minister of Shu Han during the Three Kingdoms period. He constantly defeated Zhou Yu when it came to war tactics, the main hero of the fictional Romance of Three Kingdoms

2. Zhou Yu: a military general and strategist serving under the warlord Sun Ce in the late Eastern Han dynasty. Always gets outsmarted by Zhuge Liang when it comes to war tactics.

Chapter 480: The Forbidden Scroll

The ancient-looking pale-yellowish necklace and the bronze armor plate were both Violet-Platinum Tier. Unfortunately, although both of these equipment were powerful, players could only equip them when they reach Level 120! By Level 110, Zhang Yang would no longer be looking for Violet-Platinums. He would be hunting for Mythical Tiered equipment. These Level 120 Violet-Platinum equipment would be mere decorations by then.

Still, they would fetch a great price! If Zhang Yang sells them, they would definitely capture the eyes of a large number of buyers, and earn Zhang Yang a lot of money! They were still good loot, no matter what.

The single piece of yellow-gold scale was not an equipment, but instead, it was a material.

[Golden Dragon Scale] (Material)

Description: A piece of scale that fell from the body of the Golden Dragon. Even though the scale has fallen off the dragon, you can still feel the terrifying power that surges through the scale! If you collect a few more pieces of these [Golden Dragon Scales] and locate a fine Grandmaster, then you can create a very powerful equipment!

A dragon scale? This is an awesome find!

According to Zhang Yang's knowledge, special equipment such as the [Colorful Dragon Scale Armor] and the [Dragon Scale Shield] can only be forged with the highest quality of [Recipes]. Not only would [Recipes] be required, all sorts of other specific materials were required to forge these special equipment. For instance, all sorts of [Dragon Scale] were required in order to forge Holy Tier equipment!

It was like winning a lottery!

Zhang Yang put the [Golden Dragon Scale] into his inventory as quickly as he was able to. Although one piece of [Dragon Scale] was not enough to forge anything, but without starting at 1%, there will never be a 100%! So, it's a good start!

The following items that Zhang Yang at was the scroll.

Before he could even take it up to examine, Zhang Yang already saw that the scroll was shrouded in an evil presence. It was visibly covering the scroll. Skulls floated amongst the shroud, moaning and groaning!

Is this a [Forbidden Scroll]?

Zhang Yang was shocked and excited at the same time. A [Forbidden Scroll] is also a type of the [Magic Scroll]. But, because of its terrifying power which could bring unimaginable destruction, it is 'Forbidden'! In his previous life, as Zhang Yang had started the game too late, he had only managed to hear about a number of extremely rare and powerful items, without having any of them in his hands. He had no idea how much power they had, exactly.

So, how powerful is a [Forbidden Scroll]?

There was once a world war between the China region and the Japan-Korea region in Zhang Yang's previous life. The China region had recruited over 300 million players, and they managed to crush the stronghold at their Gateway Territory, charging straight into the main cities of the Japan-Korea region! They took down a total of 5 main cities within 3 days!

However, the Japan-Korea region attempted to cut off the Chinese supply routes instead, as they sent out an army directly towards the Gateway Territory of the China region. It was a good move. When the enemy is too strong to take on, then, attack something important to the enemy! So, they launched an army of their own towards the stronghold at the Gateway Territory of the China region, in order to drive the army of the China region back to save their own Gateway Territory! But, Crimson Rage that was in charge in the defense of the Gateway Territory did not even flinch as they faced the massive army. Instead, Snow Seeker only tore off one scroll, just one! It was the scroll of [Heaven's Fall]!

Lo and behold, and heaven truly fell upon the enemy!

At that moment, the ground shook and cracked, the mountains split and scattered! Volcanic lava spewed out from the cracks in the ground! Other

than the Territory, everything within the range of 10 Kilometers was demolished!

The Korean-Japan army was immediately wiped out! Only hundreds of them survived the effects of [Heaven's Fall]!

Another example, also from Zhang Yang's previous life, was when the Imperial Sky battled a Super Boss - Crystal Dragon Cassiudoss, in the Lost Land! Anyone who had ever fought the boss would understand that this Crystal Dragon Cassiudoss was like a BUG in the game! Not only was the HP bar of the boss too long, the boss also had ridiculous AoE attacks. Any player would just die when the boss started bombarding the area with waves of extremely powerful AoE attacks. There was no way of even getting close to it!

Imperial Sky had used a total of three [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] during that boss battle ----- providing all players within the effective area of the scroll with 80% damage immunity effects, and also a substantial amount of HP recovery. So, they survived the ridiculous assaults from the boss and finally slew the Crystal Dragon Cassiudoss, claiming the title of First Clear for the boss stage!

Of course, those [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] were very hard to come by in the first place. There was no fixed rate of the scroll dropping. One [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] was already like a winning lottery ticket! One [Forbidden Scroll: Light of Divinity] could reach up to tens of millions of gold coins! If this item ever appeared in the Auction House, only the large-scale guilds could afford to bid for it!

Zhang Yang was so excited to see the scroll that he hurriedly unfurled it. While he was at it, the shroud of dark energy aura started surging even more violently as he unrolled more of it. It was getting stronger by the moment, as if the dark energy was gushing out from the scroll!

[Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] (Consumable)

Use: With the user as the central point, all targets within the effective area of 5 Kilometers radius will be punished with the Judgement of Doomsday. All targets will lose 10% of their HP per second. The maximum

HP that the targets lose cannot exceed 100,000 damage. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 100

What the hell! So powerful!

The effective range was 5 Kilometers wide! That was a little too much! No wonder Crimson Rage could wipe out the entire army of the Japan-Korea region with [Heaven's Fall] in his previous life! So one, [Forbidden Scroll] already has this much power! Reducing 10% of the targets' HP in every second? It would actually be even more effective if the enemies are stronger! Although it was limited to only a maximum of 100,000 damage every second, that was still a total of 3,000,000 HP being reduced within a duration of 30 seconds! Let's not forget the area this effect would take place! 5 Kilometers wide! Who could outrun that?

Zhang Yang put the [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] into his inventory without any hesitation. This is actually a weapon of mass destruction! It's a nuke in a world of magical cannons! No one would even dare to mess with you, if they ever find out that you have such an insanely powerful weapon in your hands!

"Hey, brother. You can't just take everything!" Messick was looking forlornly at Zhang Yang, as if his parents had just died --- well, his parents did die. He begged, "I also helped you a lot. I even told you everything about this place!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Let's put it this way. When I become the new Baron of this town, I shall give you a high ranking!"

Messick rolled his eyes at Zhang Yang and he said, "Although this stinky b*tch has died, do you really think that it's that easy for you to become the next Baron?"

Without saying a word, Zhang Yang took out the final piece of green jade-like [Order] that was the last item the chest, tapped on it gently and said, "Everything will be different, with this!"

'Region Announcement: A Territory without a Baron has appeared in the

Chaos Realm. The 'Territory Conquest' will commence in 72 hours. All players, please be ready for it! The Territory is located at the Gulattoo Iceland, the specific location will be announced when the 'Territory Conquest' begin! The 'Territory Conquest' will last for 3 hours long. When the battle is over, the last player with the [Territory Command Order] will become the new Baron of the Territory!

So this green jade-like [Order] was actually a [Territory Command Order]. Zhang Yang had used it immediately upon picking it up.

"Huh? A [Territory Command Order]!" Messick was staring at Zhang Yang with bulging eyes, "You actually got a [Territory Command Order]? How lucky are you!"

With the Region Announcements appearing on the region, Zhang Yang received multiple private messages from Snow Seeker and his other alliances and friends. It was a real shock for them that Zhang Yang could actually take down two Territories within 4 days! More importantly, Zhang Yang was all alone in the Chaos Realm! So he must have slain the bosses and conquered the Territory all by himself.

Zhang Yang decided to let Messick remain within the castle. After Fatty Han and the other gang members reach Level 100, he would come back with them to 'take care' of him! This NPC had super high HP, and he could also recover his own HP. He also had {Foul Chatters} which did a great job at provoking enemies into attacking him! So, this NPC was definitely a very suitable 'candidate' for a secondary tanking role. This was why Zhang Yang had decided to keep him as a Battle Companion.

Zhang Yang was only uncertain if Messick would still have such an amount of HP after he becomes a Battle Companion.

So, upon the activation of the second piece of [Territory Command Order] in hand, all Zhang Yang would have to do right now is to wait for the 72 hours to pass, before he can claim this Territory. Zhang Yang used a [Teleportation Scroll] and traveled back to Morning Town, and he was finally ready to look for the quest that would lead him to the [God of War Inheritance]. Not long after he left the ground with the Serpent, he saw a

large dragon flying towards him at a high speed. In just an instant, the dragon had arrived right before Zhang Yang.

It was a blue dragon. Its body was hundreds of meters long. A man in shining armor, with a long lance in his arm, sat on its back.

[White Jade Dragon Knight] (Elite, Humanoid Creature)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Attack:???

Skills:???

Note: The elite force of White Jade Kingdom, representing its strength!

"Zhan Yu! Under the command of her majesty Queen Serena, I hereby summon you back to the main palace of the city. The Queen would like to have a few words with you!" The Dragon Knight patted the dragon and stopped in front of Zhang Yang as he declared those words.

... is this another main quest for him?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I shall return immediately to see her majesty, Queen Serena."

"Godspeed!" The Dragon Knight let out a roar, patted the dragon, and headed back in a hurry. As the dragon flapped its wings, in just a blink of an eye, the Knight and the dragon were already hundreds meters away from Zhang Yang. The dragon was far faster than the Serpent!

Zhang Yang grew envious of the Knight, and immediately started thinking of getting a new [Flying Mount]! A dragon, perhaps! But the question was, when would he be able to do that?

After landing on the ground, he took out his [Teleportation Scroll] and teleported back to White Jade Castle. After he arrived at White Jade City, Zhang Yang summoned the Serpent, and rode it towards the palace. As the Serpent flew across the sky, many people were caught off-guard, as the

shadow looming past them was the last thing they would expect. Some of them started drooling as they imagined themselves flying on a serpent too.

After arriving at the entrance of the palace, Zhang Yang dismounted and reported himself to the two palace guards at the gate. Then, the guards escorted him straight into the main palace, and into the Royal Chamber of the Dawning Light. It belonged to the late King of the White Jade Kingdom, Derick. Now that Serena has stepped up, it was a given that this main palace belonged to her now!

The former princess now wore a grand and magnificent royal robe, which tightly wrapped around her slim, slender body. A crown sat on her head. The Ancient Godly Weapon, Meteor Sword hung by her waist. She looks extremely domineering and intimidating, being the true queen of the kingdom!

"My Queen." Zhang Yang started bowing.

"No need for that!" Serena stood up from her throne and said, "Zhan Yu, I wish to go to war, to expand the land of White Jade Kingdom and to share our prosperity. I am going to make significant achievements, unlike all the languishing kings and queens of the world! Would you aid me in such a quest?"

So, what is this new queen up to now?

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I, Zhan Yu will share your worries and solve your problems, and my sword will always be by your side!"

"Very well!" Serena nodded and said, "I am promoting you to be the War General of this expedition. You shall conquer the world with me tomorrow! We shall first conquer the Black Dragon Kingdom, the Emerald Kingdom, Tranquil Wind Kingdom and the other remaining Kingdoms of the 7 main Kingdoms. After that, we shall march into the Chaos Realm and dominate the world. The heavenly glory of the Imperial Heaven's Empire shall flourish, once again!"

Zhang Yang felt a chill straight down his spine. In his previous life, all 8 Kingdoms had remained independent for as long as he could remember. There were never wars or expeditions among Kingdoms. But in this life,

Queen Serena actually planned to start a war to combine the eight Kingdoms into one! This was a completely new turn of events!

"Go now, and rest. Tomorrow, we shall set out for war!"

After Zhang Yang left the palace, he quickly informed Han Ying Xue and the others about this. Everyone was confused and shocked to know about the war. So, when war sparks between two Kingdoms, what could players earn from being a part of the war, then?

The region answered their questions almost immediately.

‘Region Announcement: White Jade Queen Serena has declared war against the Emerald Kingdom! The war will commence in 24 hours. All players can join the war and earn Merit Points by slaying players and NPCs. Merit Points can be used to exchange high quality equipment, potions, gemstones and scrolls. For more specific information, kindly go to the Special Merchant in the Main City Hall of War!’

Chapter 481: Declaring War over Emerald City

Right after the Server Announcement, every single player in the China region was feverish with excitement!

A war between two Kingdoms! The first war between two Kingdoms!

Many players traveled back to their main cities to take a look at what the Special Merchant had to offer, to see how much Merit Points would require for each of the equipment and items available. After taking a good look at the list, everyone was shocked to find that among the list, there were a few pieces of Level 100 Violet-Platinum equipment!

At the current stage of the game, players would already be respected and cheered on for having a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment. After all, the number of Violet-Platinum bosses appearing across the open world map was just too small. So Violet-Platinum equipment can only belong to those players at the top. Even rich players needed luck to get a Violet-Platinum equipment!

Now that they had a chance of obtaining Violet-Platinum equipment without the need to defeat a boss, of course everyone would be happy! They only needed to kill NPCs and players to stand a chance at obtaining Violet-Platinum equipment!

Although this war was limited only between White Jade Kingdom and Emerald Kingdom, the announcement did not state that players from other cities would not be able to join the war! Players from the other 6 cities could join the war tomorrow and choose their sides. However, they had to make their decision before the war begins, or they would lose the opportunity of joining the war. They would not be able to switch sides after that, until the end of the war.

Of course, the players from White Jade Castle and Emerald City could not pick sides. They would have to fight for their own main cities.

"Noob tank, the NPC here does have some good stuff for sale!" Wei Yan

Er suddenly screamed in joy and posted a link to one of the items on sale.

[Dual Bladed Axe of the Grand Marshal] (Violet-Platinum, Two-handed Axe)

Attack: 4,242 - 5,242

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DpS: 1,248

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases 10% damage.

Equip: When you hit a target, there is a rate of 1% at inflicting 300% damage.

Equip: Increases 2% Critical Rate.

Required Level: 100

The DPS, the attacks and the additional effects of this two-handed axe was the pinnacle of the Violet-Platinum Tier! It could only be surpassed by a Mythical Tier or Ethereal Tier!

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, then he said, "So, how much Merit Points does this axe cost?"

"40,000 points!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "Then, I suppose that it's not going to be easy to earn Merit Points, or else the axe would have cost more than that!"

Fatty Han, Endless Starlight and the other gang members joined in on the discussion. At the same time, Zhang Yang had also started sharing some information on the Chaos Realm. When Zhang Yang mentioned Messick the whiner, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight seemed to show a lot of interest in him. They both made up their minds that the first thing they would do in the Chaos Realm would be to meet up with this Messick. They believed that they would be able to bring Messick down to his knees by

intimidating him! Or, they could use their hardcore attitudes on Messick, and the man would surely raise his ass up for them!

Naturally, the vulgar words from the mouths of these two wretched men had provoked the ladies, and they were scolded by the ladies like hell.

As the war was just upon them, all players from all eight main cities were preparing themselves. Equipment, check! Weapon, check! Potions, check! They were checking to see that everything was in place to make sure that they could perform at their best in the coming war. As the official notes had stated very clearly, players killed during the war would not be given any form of penalties, nor will they lose Experience Points upon deaths of their avatar in the game. Players will not even drop equipment upon death as well! The only penalty they would get is the reduction of their equipment's durability, by 10%.

That did not matter to them at all. Who would still keep count on the repair costs when they could just earn Merit Points for better equipment without the need of spending a dime at all, and now that they were basically 'immune' to all penalties of dying, who would not push themselves to their full potential, in order to earn some fine equipment for themselves?

However, Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again as he could see through the real 'agenda' behind this big event. The game developer would never devalue the high Tier equipment, so it will surely be extremely difficult for players to earn the Merit Points! So, it would seem that a lot of players would have to pay the system to repair their equipment when the war begins, and the developers are only going to earn another round of fortune! Most players would only earn enough Merit Points to exchange some fine quality [Potions].

After reaching Level 100, players would no longer get benefits from the merchants! For instance, the Level 4 [Gemstones] were not available for sale. Players would be required to battle monsters and bosses in order to obtain them. The Level 4 [Mana Potion] and Level 4 [Healing Potion] were also unavailable in Potion Shops, players could only obtain them via Alchemy.

However, the Recipes for the [Level 4 Mana Potion] and [Level 4 Healing Potion] were extremely rare to come by, and even Zhang Yang had spent a lot of effort on getting his hands on these two Recipes. Currently, most players with the Alchemy Profession could only make Level 3 [Mana Potions] and [Healing Potions], at best. So, the market had increased the prices for the [Level 4 Mana Potion] and [Level 4 Healing Potion] by up to 100 gold coins for a bottle! Even though they definitely overpriced, the demand simply overshadowed all other concerns!

For that, players started going crazy when they discovered that the 'Merit Point Dealer' for the upcoming war event had these Potions on 'sale'. The Merit Points required in order to exchange potions were not high. Each [Level 4 Gemstone] only cost 2,000 Merit Points, while [Level 4 Mana Potion] and [Level 4 Healing Potion] only cost 200 Merit Points.

Unfortunately, all the items and equipment that players earn from this event would be bound to the players. The developers have made it so to prevent players from selling their spoils for money.

24 hours had passed in just a few blinks of an eye, and a Temporary Teleportation Door appeared in the middle of the central square of White Jade Castle. Players would be transported to the outer skirts of Emerald City's Tama Fortress. This Tama Fortress was basically the counterpart of White Jade's own Tukula, which was the fortress that was once conquered by the demons. It was then released from the grasp of the demons after the Level 50 Expedition.

When the time was up, the Temporary Teleportation Door was activated. Players were teleported over to a location, about 1,000 meters away from Tama Fortress, one after another.

Right behind the players was the massive army of White Jade Kingdom. The troops were lined up in neat formations, complete with military columns and square formations. Each formation consisted of tens of thousands of soldiers. There were a total of 500 square formations! The scene was spectacular!

At the other end of the battlefield, the players of the Emerald City were

also on standby, stationed atop the walls of their fort. The players from the opposing sides met each others' gazes in a tense silence. As this event presented great opportunities to the players, almost all players from all 8 main cities had joined the war. The battlefield had been occupied by players from all 8 main cities!

The number of 'supporters' for both the White Jade Kingdom and the Emerald Kingdom remained unknown for the moment, as the system did not state the numerical statistics of it for players to refer to.

As they stood in silence, Queen Serena finally arrived through the Temporary Teleportation Door on a white battle horse. Right behind her were a platoon of elite guards, with nothing to indicate their Levels. Right above her was a platoon of Dragon Knights! Her honor guards simply looked intimidating! Meanwhile, other than the players who were standing atop Tama Fortress, mere 1,000 NPC soldiers stood with them. It was obvious that the defenses of Tama Fortress were greatly outnumbered by the assault force of White Jade Kingdom!

The new Queen then raised her [Meteor Sword] and let out a battle cry, "Warriors of White Jade Kingdom, the time to write your legacy is now, or never!"

'Ding! The war between 'White Jade Kingdom' and 'Emerald Kingdom' has begun! You will earn 1 'Merit Point' for each enemy player you kill. You will earn 1 'Merit Point' for each normal Tiered NPC soldier you kill. You will earn more 'Merit Points' by killing a general! The war will end when the Monarch of either side dies!'

'Ding! If you die in the battle, you must wait for 30 minutes before you can revive (Excluding the effects of special skills). Each player can only resurrect 3 times at most. Players will be spawned at their corresponding main cities if they die for the fourth time.'

'Ding! After the war is over, the player with the most Merit Points will be awarded the title of 'Imperial Aggrandizer' (Correspondent to White Jade Kingdom) or 'Imperial Aegis' (Correspondent to Emerald Kingdom).'

All players from both sides received the notification from the system.

After a brief moment of silence, the players on the side of the White Jade Kingdom let out a heaven-shaking, thunderous roar as they began to charge towards the direction of Tama Fortress!

At the same instant, Zhang Yang suddenly received another notification from the system.

‘Ding! You have been appointed by Queen Serena as the War General of this expedition. You will earn 1% worth of Merit Points from all kills on opposition players and NPCs who are killed by the NPCs of White Jade Kingdom.’

Zhang Yang was pleasantly surprised at the sudden ‘gift’ from the system!

Although 1% was a small number, there were about 5 million of NPCs in this war! If each of the NPCs managed to kill one player or one NPC of the opposition, then Zhang Yang would earn 50,000 Merit Points by simply standing at one corner!

Zhang Yang felt like crying tears of gratitude, there and then, as he had finally experienced the advantage of the ‘affection’ that Queen Serena had for him, for the first time!

Meanwhile, the NPC army of White Jade Kingdom marched towards the wall of Tama Fortress. The massive army still maintained their formation as they marched forward. Looking at the crowd of people, Zhang Yang felt tempted to take the [Forbidden Scroll] out from his inventory and use it on the enemy.

The scene was really spectacular and breathtaking!

"Zhan Yu ---" One Sword Stroke approached Zhang Yang atop his mount, he did not intend to join into the battle so soon. He went up to Zhang Yang and smiled, "Well, it's really rare to see you, without having the need to battle!"

Right beside One Sword Stroke was a young beautiful lady on a black panther, having an ID name that matched quite well with the ID name of One Sword Stroke. Her name was ‘One Sword Smile’, and she was only

Level 56 at the moment.

Zhang Yang tensed up the moment after he recognized the lady, she looked just like someone he knew --- Luo Xin Yan! It was so obvious, and it made sense as well! However, Zhang Yang only looked at Luo Xin Yan for a brief moment, before he turned his eyes back at One Sword Stroke saying, "Looks like we can't afford to battle each other today!"

Imperial Sky and Lone Desert Smoke have been competing against each other in every battle and every event. Meanwhile, the Silky Soft Battle Team and the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team were and forever would be a nemesis for the S-rank Professional League Championship! So Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke have always been enemies. But now that Imperial Sky have chosen to support White Jade Kingdom, they could not afford to battle each other at a crucial event like this.

One Sword Stroke smiled and pointed at Luo Xin Yan, "Allow me to introduce to you, my girlfriend!"

"Don't you dare say that you know me!" right before Zhang Yang could even react and talk, he had already received a private message from Luo Xin Yan. He was a little shocked, but after putting some thoughts in it, he understood. Luo Xin Yan had not yet revealed it all to One Sword Stroke. After all, knowing that she had been a corporate spy would really make people uncomfortable. If One Sword Stroke ever finds out that she had once been a spy, and was possibly 'spy'ing on him, even now, then everything that Luo Xin Yan has done would be reduced to 'dust'.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely without a word.

Although the relationship between Lone Desert Smoke and the Imperial Sky had improved a little after the event of Liu Wei betraying and leaving Imperial Sky, they could not be called allies just yet. Zhang Yang did not particularly like One Sword Stroke either, so professional courtesy would only bring him to acknowledge the other man this much.

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and the other guildmasters of larger guilds walked up to Zhang Yang right after that. After they greeted each other with some small talks, suddenly, One Sword Stroke came up with an

idea, "Why don't we compete and see who gets the title of the 'Imperial Aggrandizer'!"

With him voicing that out, Greensleeves Prince, Sword of Light and the others agreed to compete against each other to see who would be the winner. Well, everyone should have a little competition for being the best, at least!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I will not be joining this time!" He had an additional method of earning Merit Points, so it was extremely easy for him to 'win'. If he joined in this little competition, it would be as good as cheating.

However, as Luo Xin Yan was still eager to take revenge on Zhang Yang for humiliating her back in the day, she spoke in a cold tone, "So, even the mighty and powerful Zhan Yu would get cold feet sometimes, I assume?"

One Sword Stroke laughed out loud and said, "Brother Zhan Yu is definitely not afraid of us at all, he is probably too powerful to compete with us, the 'insignificant' ones! He probably doesn't want this to be one-sided!"

With those words, One Sword Stroke had turned Snow Seeker and the other guildmasters against him. Well, words are the most powerful weapon in the world, sometimes.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. He had not planned to join in, as it was already one-sided, and it would not be due to his individual prowess. Since One Sword Stroke had already placed his face so near for Zhang Yang to bash, why not just cooperate and bash it more than just once then? Zhang Yang could not let him down, as Zhang Yang was moved by his passion and sincerity!

"Alright. Since that everyone is in the mood, then I will not take the fun out of you guys! Let's compete, then!"

Chapter 482: Chapter 482 The Siege

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent, much to the delight of Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue. Both of them insisted to ride along, something which he did not mind. The serpent had reached a point where it was strong enough to lift 3 to 5 players. However, in this mode of transportation, players who are riding along would not be able to participate in fights.

The flying serpent shot into the sky, taking Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er to the front lines. The moment they reached, the little brat and Han Ying Xue summoned their own mounts and headed straight into enemy lines. With Han Ying Xue taking care of Wei Yan Er, Zhang Yang was left at ease. Together with Felice, they went back up to the skies. Why not make use of the First Flying Mount in the game? It would be a shame not to!

The battle was completely one-sided. White Jade Kingdom's army had almost 5,000,000 soldiers. including the almighty killing machine, Prince Serena. Escorting her was a group of elite dragon riders. The Kingdom's army was large, but the group of elite dragon riders were the most outstanding units. The Level-hidden elite tiers had the power that was equivalent to Mythical or an Ethereal tier monsters!

As for Prince Serena herself, when she was merely a Holy tier NPC she could already massacre a field full of players with her Sword of Life and Death. Now that she had already procured the Meteor Sword and gained the status of Ascended, how powerful could be she? Emerald Kingdom was no match to this level of power!

White Jade Kingdom's army pushed on hard, and had soon crossed the border's river. A single fortress stood to defend it, but it was nothing, compared to the devastating power of 5 million soldiers.

From the player's perspective, the war meant nothing but the opportunity to gather a few Merit Points. The outcome of the war would not cause much effect to their lifestyles. No changes would be made to the

losing city, no permanent loss of power, much rather, they would all be under the same united banner. This was not even a civil war, where one side would be sure to suffer a penalty. Hence, players had no care about winning or losing. They only wanted to farm more Merit Points. Thus, the war was fought with no morale nor raging vigor. No vengeance, no greed, just a bunch of players participating in a huge event.

The enemy players were now fighting on the frontlines, halting the NPC soldiers. Against these tougher enemies, they were having trouble killing enemies and gaining more merit points. As a result, Zhang Yang's 'passive' income of merit points was also dropping. In this situation, Felice had rushed out, and blasted the earth with her {Pulverizing Flame}, sending a sea of flames across the ground.

Unlike NPC, players would never stand to fight till they fall, giving free kills and points to the enemy. They would withdraw from the front lines and recuperate in safety. It was these very players, who were on their way to the rear, critically low on HP, who were Felice's targets. Her attacks were precise. With {Pulverizing Flame} blasting down, dealing 3000 Fire damage a second to an area of 10 x 10 meters, many of those players were quickly finished off.

Many of them had 5,000 to 6,000 HP and the risky daredevils had even lesser, at 2,000 to 3,000 HP. One single blast of {Pulverizing Flame} was enough to wipe them all clean, earning him a large amount of Merit Points. Whenever Felice was done with her attack, Zhang Yang would immediately call her back and unsummoned her from the world. It was to hide her away from the other players who had taken notice the situation and were about to launch their attacks on Felice. Since her attack took 30 seconds to cool down, it was best to hide her away, even for a brief moment.

Princess Serena led her company of dragon riders and moved on towards the fortress. An ambitious guild, hoping for fame and glory, had ambushed Princess Serena in a pincer attack. However, Princess Serena did not even need to raise a finger. The 12 dragon riders had zoomed down to ground level and unleashed their dragon breath fire on all the players in the area.

In less than half a minute, more than 10,000 players were dead.

It was a shame that the kills of the dragon knights did not garner him Merit points. If Princess Serena were to lift her finger, the earth would split in two; her Meteor Sword would obliterate all that is living in sight.

Just like that, the entire White Jade Kingdom's army marched on forward. The Emerald Kingdom's forces were forced to rapidly withdraw. With haste, the fortress was taken over easily. The invading forces marched on and took over the Level 40 maps, Level 30, Level 20, and eventually, the Castle of Emerald itself!

The NPC army had been left behind, marching in their fixed, rigid formation. The battle was now between the players of the two kingdoms, since the army's movement speed was slow. Players themselves had obtained a large number of Merit points. Zhang Yang naturally had obtained far more than anyone else, for his points had already surpassed 8,000! 2/3 of the points came from Felice alone. Her carpet bombing, and Zhang Yang's aerial capabilities gave them a solid edge over everyone else. They had constantly been targeting the retreating, weakened players.

Just as the raging players was about to invade the castle gates, a few spots on the castle wall glowed brightly. A beam of light flashed by and landed down like a heavy, particle beam cannon. When the blast subsided, the area was vaporized. Nothing in ground zero survived.

Without a doubt, it was a Magic Cannon! The strongest defense mechanism! Without a siege catapult, it would almost be impossible to directly deal with the super-powered cannons. Right now, there was no other way, but to rush in with sheer numbers.

Hundreds of blasts later, the players of White Jade Kingdom finally saw reason, returned to lick their wounds at the back of the marching army. If they are killed for more than three times, the fourth death would result in expulsion from the war.

"Argh crap! I died! Bloody cannons! Was I too outstanding? Too good looking for you!?" said Wei Yan Er, having been among those who were vaporized.

"I told you so. Don't always rush into things! You've gone from putting a load on me, to actually dragging me down with you!" Han Ying Xue sighed.

Zhang Yang chuckled to himself. With Han Ying Xue's healing capability, the only items that would really overwhelm her healing would be the instant-kill magic cannons.

"How many points has the little brat earned so far?"

"Nyehehe. I got more than 1,400 points!" said the little girl like a big smile on her tiny little face. "Oh crap! I'll need to wait for 30 minutes before I can revive! How much have you guys collected?"

"Woah. The little girl got 1,400?! I only have 800!" said Lost Dream.

"Hm. I have around 1,200." Said Hundred Shots.

Everyone reported their collected Merit points. Some were happy with their "scores" while some were lamenting over it. Technically, ranged attackers should be earning more than melee attackers. Ranged attackers could snipe at a fleeing target, afterall, or pick off a nearby enemy who is one hit from dying to the blows of another.

Ranged attackers also had many AoE skills at their disposal. The points system does not count the amount of damage that you deal, but the number of players who have died by your hands. For the valiant but inefficient, even if they deal a total of 10 million damage, that might not have even earned them 10,000 points! As the saying goes, the early bird gets the worm, but the second mouse gets the cheese!

By the end of it, only Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had still remained silent. Fatty Han called out, "Hey! Starlight! How many points did you get?"

"...74..." said Endless Starlight sadly.

Everyone laughed, after Endless Starlight awkwardly revealed his score.

It was understandable, still. A tank would have trouble dealing damage in the first place, and if their opponents decided to run away, a tank could not do anything about it, besides waving them goodbye. Truthfully

speaking, Endless Starlight had done a good job snagging 70 points.

"How about Zhang Yang?" Hundred Shots added.

Zhang Yang smirked. He did not want to reveal his total points, since it might actually cause them to feel despair. Vaguely, Zhang Yang said, "Only a few thousand points. More than you guys anyway."

"How many exactly?" said Han Ying Xue as she emphasized on the last word.

"...8,275!"

"What the—That's a lot!"

"You cheating noob tank! How did you manage to kill so many people? This young lady here has been running around like a mad dog! I even rushed into their ranks to swing about, and only managed to accumulated 1,400 points! Cheater!"

"Hm..., 8,000 points is indeed hard to believe. If the system had calculated by damage dealt, it would make sense for Zhang Yang to get 8,000 points. But by the number of players killed, 8,000 points is just too much to be true!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang laughed. None of them had Flying Mounts yet, so they would have no idea on how flying would make a whole difference in warfare. He could easily fly behind enemy lines and kill players before escaping. Since players can only attack targets within 30 meters, Zhang Yang would only need to fly 31 meters above them to stay safe!

As they were happily chatting, more hot-headed players had rushed to the castle. However, despite their reckless bravery, the magic cannon had blasted them off into oblivion.

The magic cannon power was just too strong. It was firing continuously, without any signs of overheating or running out of ammo.

Many players from the White Jade side were starting to worry. None of them had any idea on how to get past the massive firing range. Not even numbers can solve this problem! You can send in 5 million players, and all

of them would be blasted to smithereens.

Just then, Princess Serena opened her mouth, but Zhang Yang was too far to hear anything. When she stopped talking, the 12 dragon riders behind her sortied. Like F22 fighter jets, the 12 dragons shot past the field. Even though there was only 12 of them, each dragon was at least a few hundred meters wide! When all 12 of them formed a V-shaped formation, they could easily eclipse the sun and cover the entire earth in darkness.

The dragons reached the castle within 4 flaps of their gigantic wings. 12 dragons spew raging hot fire on the castle walls, which immediately caved in. The flames had obliterated the cannons, along with their operators.

Boom! Boom!

The remaining cannons immediately retaliated. The magic cannons turned upwards to the dragons. Despite being huge, the dragons were as agile as tiny raccoons. Even before the cannons fired, the riders would already take evasive action, by simply anticipating the unmistakable glow of the barrels!

The dragons flew back to the castle top and blasted the castle walls again. More and more magic cannons were destroyed!

Having taken so many fireballs directly, the walls were beginning to cave in. Crack lines started forming on their surfaces. The cracks appeared like thunder during a storm, spreading quickly from the top to the bottom of the castle. More and more cracks branched out, as if the wall was aging at a rapid speed. No sooner later, a large part of the castle crumbled like the hollowed-out, rotten trunk of a tree.

Vrouum! Rawgh!

Just when almost all of the magic cannon of Emerald Castle had fallen, 12 dragons burst out of the crumbling castle walls, and charged towards the White Jade Kingdom's dragon riders. Dragons from both sides of the war started launching fireballs at each other.

Now that is what you call toe-to-toe, wing-to-wing.

"Charge!"

"Hurrah!!"

Even though there were still numerous magic cannons that were still functioning in other parts of the castle, players had gained enough morale to charge up the front. Players of White Jade burned with intense morale and swarmed the castle like a tsunami.

Similarly, when the dragons from Emerald Castle had burst out heroically, their players had also rushed out of the castle to fight the incoming players.

The result of the war did not matter to either side, since their main objective was to earn as many Merit Points as they could. Hence, neither side would want to have their fight in the castle, even though it would be easier to engage in a defensive fight. On a flat, empty terrain, players could blatantly engage with each other, be it kill or be killed, and the war would be over quickly that way. Time is of the essence since the war would end, once either leader of the warring kingdoms is killed.

Pew! Pew!

The magic cannons on the castle wall constantly blasted the players. However, since they had been vastly reduced, the light beams blasting into the sea of players would be like bowling balls hurled into the Pacific Ocean. They would hardly make any difference, in the grand scale of things.

The war zone was starting to turn ugly. Every second of every minute, players would be dying. The cycle continued on and on. Screams filled the sky as the sun started to set, slowly relieving the last rays of light from the blood-soaked shade of a once grassy plain. The battle was only between players. The NPC army in Emerald Kingdom was not moving, and the NPC army of White Jade Castle had yet to arrive. Apparently, the system had made it so to provide time for players to fight each other. If both NPC armies were to fight, the war would end in a heartbeat.

10 minutes...20 minutes...30 minutes...3 hours...5 hours...10 hours...

Even though players who fall in the war could revive after 30 minutes, the number of players in the battlefield had decreased dramatically, as

their Merit points rose exponentially.

After dying for the fourth time, players would be revived back at their main city, unable to participate in the war any further. As for players who originated from Emerald City, they would be revived at White Jade Kingdom, instead of their own original "birthplace".

When the war was still at its premature stage, it was a chaotic crossfire of players swinging wildly at anything that moved, and even if Zhang Yang used {Shield Wall,} he would be instantly killed. Even professional players will face a great deal of trouble trying to survive in the chaotic war. However, when the number of players started to drop, the weapon tiers, skills, players co-op, and party formation would start to shine.

Right then, the players who were still alive on the field were the strongest in both skills and equipment. Players who had died 30 minutes before had come back to revive, only to be killed swiftly again by the much stronger survivors. The numbers had decreased from 200 million to only 500,000 players. These 500,000 players on the field were the elite among the elites. Hence, players from both sides of the war had a silent agreement to not engage in an all-out slugfest. Instead, they went around to search for newly revived players. There was no reason to go for an all-out kill. They were fighting for Merit points, not for the glory of mankind itself.

Chapter 483: The Appearance of the Emerald Kingdom's King

Players had all the right to spend every single second, fighting for merit points. But, wisdom sometimes trumps strength. Reviving on the spot would only give you 20% HP for a start. It's not safe to roam around with such low health. The battlefield may look empty, but the place was filled with invisible Thieves lurking about, preying on the weak. Suffice to say, if you are newly revived, the first few seconds where you sit down to heal would be the most dangerous period. Since you can only revive yourself for a total of three times, the remaining players would be extremely cautious about their lives, while Thieves would have their eyes and ears wide open. Professional players had something else in mind, besides obtaining equipment, they wanted to get Titles. Those rewards can never be discarded after gaining levels, unlike that of an equipment. It would be something that you can wear on your name tag till kingdom comes! Plus, it's cool!

At that stage, no one was willing to take risks, hence, high leveled players tend to avoid each other, aiming instead for stragglers and errant weaklings. At most, they would only withdraw from the area respectfully.

That would be the norm, but things were different for the little brat. That little kid did not care about her odds, the ire of others, the incredulity of her actions. None of that mattered to her, she simply pounced on anything that stirred. Thanks to her efforts, Zhang Yang's little band had gathered up into an unstoppable force.

Zhang Yang would be in the air, attacking players as they move forward. Many players obviously thought they would be able to defeat them by swarming up to them in large numbers, but were inevitably defeated by Zhang Yang and his party.

Booooo-----

The horn of war was blown, and could be heard several kilometers from the castle. The metal gates opened up and a neatly organized formation of

NPC soldiers marched out from the small castle gates. One by one, platoons came out and formed a bigger formation in the field outside the castle. One more horn was blown, and a handsome, middle-aged man rode out of the castle on a dark red horse. The soldiers made way for the man and he stood at the front of the front line. The man wore a suit of armor that gave out a bright, golden luster. He wielded a normal sized battle hammer on his right, and a bloodied red shield at his left. The cape on his back fluttered in the wind, further adding onto the image of strength to him and his army behind.

[Moucander, King of Emerald Kingdom] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Attack Power:???

Skills:???

Note: The King of Emerald Kingdom. For 12 years, he ruled, he fought, he endured.

The boss has finally made an appearance.

"Kill the boss! EQs! EQs!" cried players when they saw the tag "Ascended". How much was a Violet-Platinum worth, during this stage of the game? If a Violet-Platinum equipment could be sold for several hundred thousand, how much would a Ascended equipment be? After all, an Open World high-level boss' first kill would be accompanied by a server announcement, so, who would not be jealous?

When the boss finally made his appearance, players lit up with joy. However, they were so blinded by greed and ambition that they failed to notice the army behind him.

During that moment, the army of White Jade Kingdom had finally arrived. However, the final "trump card" was not there. Queen Serena and her elite team of dragon riders were nowhere to be seen.

After a short exchange of verbal assaults, armies from both sides let out a deafening battle cry, and like two great tsunamis, the two enemies clashed with each other, head to head. Players had taken the chance to join the fray and quietly meted out the final hits to farm Merit Points. Be it as they may, no one could compete with Zhang Yang in terms of efficiency.

He had a flying mount to begin with. His movement speed was unmatched at the moment. Like a heavily armored, flying brick of an assassin, he remained hidden in the shadows, sneaking in from where no one could see him.

The flying snake shot down to the earth at breakneck speed and spat its poison attacks. Players with HP lesser than 9,000 would be instantly killed by Zhang Yang. On the other hand, Zhang Yang's {Blast Wave} could wipe out a large area of players. Whenever there were concentrated clumps of players, their numbers would work in his favor, triggering his {Blast Wave} over again and again. Even though the damage dealt by {Blast Wave} was low, it was enough to land the final killing blows.

On the side note, he was the General of the White Jade Expedition Army. The NPC army would grant Zhang Yang 1% of the Merit Points. His Merit points were rocketing at such a speed that he had already surpassed 200,000 points in a blink of an eye.

With NPCs sortied out in the field, the power levels were on an even scale. The battle continued on, as blood was spilled, and bodies were dropping. If Zhang Yang were to turn back, all he would only be greeted by the sight of an endless red. The greens were all submerged and dyed in the blood of both players and NPC soldiers. The blood fest continued on for another two hours, and even though players had joined the fight, their numbers were still at a stable 400,000 or so. By then, most of the NPCs had already fallen. When their numbers run out, the boss should finally step in.

A sea of players rushed towards the last boss, even though they knew that the boss was a Ascended tier level. Their reasoning was that, if each of the 100,000 players could at least deal 100 damage to the boss, the

total would go up to 1 million damage. A few rounds of that should easily solve the problem! Or so they thought...

On the other side of the battlefield, players from Emerald Kingdom had hated the fact that they could not switch sides to attack the boss. Some of them were shouting many kinds of proposals, but only one got through.

"Guys! It doesn't matter which kingdom wins. How about we think of the bigger picture? Players of Emerald Kingdom shall make way for players from White Jade Kingdom to kill the boss without any interruption. We hope that you would do the same for us when the boss for White Jade Kingdom appears later! If we could cooperate together, it would be easier to defeat the bosses!"

The proposal immediately gained everyone's agreement, but it was only a premature decision. Before Queen Serena appears, no one would be willing to give up their one and only boss to the opposite side.

"Wait!" cried Zhang Yang, stopping Wei Yan Er from rushing over. "Calm down. Do you remember when we first fought the Mythical tier boss? The dungeon had a pile of Mythical tier equipment for us to use, then. Even so, it was a miracle for us to survive the battle! Ascended and Mythical equipment are three tiers apart. The boss is not someone we can just defeat with sheer numbers. Wait for Queen Serena and let them fight it out. We cannot and never would be able to survive a hit from the boss! Let the two Ascended bosses fight it out, and then we'll attack from behind."

The little brat sulked when Zhang Yang had stopped her but calmed down when she listened to Zhang Yang's explanation. Then again, even if players from Emerald Kingdom verbally agreed to let them fight the boss without interruption, would they hold on to their words? There were many who shared the same line of thought as Zhang Yang. Instead of rushing in like retards, they stood back and observed.

"Fools. You dare to attack a king?!" Mucander muttered and swung his hammer into the air. In an instant, the air around literally cracked. The air where he struck his hammer then made mirror-like cracks that hovered in

the air. When the players had stupidly rushed through the cracks, they broke and dealt massive damage to those who ran through the cracks.

‘-155,324!’

‘-167,283!’

...

All players within a hundred radius from the boss were instantly inflicted with damages of more than 150,000! All players were killed faster than the attack from a magic cannon blast. After the attack, no one was standing. No one made any noise. No one survived.

...

Such power can only be that of an Ascended tier boss.

Players that were rushing from behind immediately held their steps and turned around to flee. No one, not even the strongest tanks could take such a hit and still survive! The boss’ first attack was already an AoE attack type, with at least a hundred-meter wide radius. How could anyone survive such an attack, even before landing a single hit on the boss?

When Moucander laid down the first strike, he had let out a loud battle cry and gained the bloodlust. He charged up front and chased after players to kill. With his powerful attacks, he had no need to even reach the players to kill them. All he needed to do was to swing his hammer in the air, and he could deal destructive attacks on everyone within the vicinity of a hundred meters. To make things worse, the skill’s cooldown time was merely 10 seconds!

Almost immediately, all the players from White Jade Kingdom turned tail and ran with haste. Some unfortunate players who had just waited 30 minutes to revive were killed instantly when the boss’ attacks were within their respawn locations. Those ill-fated players had no idea what killed them and had to spent another 30 minutes waiting. Some were even instantly kicked out, because they had already ran out of tries.

In such a chaotic scene, no one could even uphold the agreement proposed by the Emerald Kingdom players. Verbal agreements meant

nothing, when players from White Jade Kingdom were running away like sheep. During this commotion, reasoning made no sense anymore. Greed ruled the battle ground when players from Emerald Kingdom started to "reinforce" their king and kill the players. Now, White Jade Kingdom was actually running out of players.

Moucander's devastating attack and its ridiculously short cooldown time could possibly have turned him into a world class boss. To defeat a boss of such caliber, a large number of player would have to join hands and charge in with sheer numbers, and among those vast number of players, they had to have decent skill and equipment! That, or, players would be wiped out before they can even approach the boss!

That, or the [Forbidden Scroll]!

"Dummy! What should we do? If we let this go on, our forces will be completely annihilated!" cried Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang looked down and then turned back. "Right now, all we can do is to hang on until Queen Serena gets here. That's no other way!"

Even though Zhang Yang had a [Forbidden Scroll] in his inventory, he had no intention of wasting it on the boss. The scroll would be extremely effective against players or NPC armies! It would be a complete waste to use the scroll right there and then.

As the situation continued to worsen, One Sword Scroll, Greensleeve Prince, and Snow Seeker had started leading their troops towards Zhang Yang's party. Somehow, in their opinion, if they were to stand behind the world's greatest tank, things would be fine.

Zhang Yang could not help but frowned. If he had unlimited {Shield Walls}, he could at least put up a fight with the Ascended boss. But now, there is literally nothing to do besides waiting for Queen Serena to arrive and babysit them all.

"Haha! Fools! Know your place! Die and rot in hell!" Moucander laughed as he rode his super-speedy mount and chased down more players, wiping them out by droves with his hammer. His movement speed was just a little over the speed of Zhang Yang's flying mount!

Eventually, the number of players of White Jade Kingdom dropped from 400,000 to 200,000. The power balance had been shattered. If Moucander were to stop and return to his castle, players of White Jade Kingdom would still retreat as far as they could, since the number of both sides differed too greatly.

Chapter 484: The Queen's Protection

"Oyy! Stop following us! Buzz off!" cried Zhang Yang. For a while now Zhang Yang and his party had been flitting about, trying to remain inconspicuous, while One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker and Greensleeve Prince had followed them closely. Zhang Yang was immensely annoyed. With such a large number of player concentrated in a small area, it would surely attract the attention of the boss! If that happens, they would be in serious trouble!

Lo and behold, speak of the devil and he doth appear. Moucander tugged on his reins, and rode like the wind towards Zhang Yang!

"Oh @\$#@!" Zhang Yang face turned white. These idiots!

Most unhelpfully, One Sword Stroke and Snow Seeker scattered from his party.

Moucander paused only a brief second, and decided to charge towards Zhang Yang.

"Mother f*cker!" Fatty Han cried. They were very well aware of the boss' power by now!

Zhang Yang immediately called out, "I'll take the boss! RUN!"

"But--!"

"No buts! RUN! I have a flying mount, I can just fly up in the sky, and there nothing the boss can do to me!" cried Zhang Yang angrily.

"No. That's not what...I mean, you should have done that earlier. We wouldn't have to panic, then!"

"D*mn you!"

Zhang Yang then left his party behind, and flew in a different direction. With a flying mount, Zhang Yang had been a red-hot target for anyone else, besides the boss. It was already a blessing for the boss to lay off him for so long.

"Trying to escape?!" Moucander smirked as he charged towards Zhang

Yang's general direction.

Zhang Yang coughed out a laugh and kited the boss towards him. After noticing the distance between the boss and him getting closer, he shot up to the sky. Even though the boss' mount was no slower than Zhang Yang's flying mount, it should not be able to chase him in the sky!

Just as he turned around to taunt the boss, he was greeted with a huge surprise. The boss had left the surface of the earth, and was airborne!

"What the f*ck?" Zhang Yang was surprised and struck speechlessly. More importantly, he was terrified. How could a man with no wings fly!? He was like superman! He was literally flying vertically, at such a terrifying speed and had effortlessly chased after Zhang Yang in no time at all!

200 meters...160 meters...120 meters....

Just when he had narrowed the gap to 100 meters, the boss widened his eyes in concentration and threw the hammer in his hand towards Zhang Yang.

WHAT THE HELL!

Zhang Yang screamed in his heart. He was carrying a shield! He should be a tank! That would only mean that the hammer throw would be a boss' version of the {Spear of Obliteration}!

With no time to be questioning the logic of the skill, Zhang Yang instantly activated {Shield Wall}.

‘-23,772!’

First, he flew like Superman. The next thing Zhang Yang saw was that the hammer had flown back like a rocket, and back to his hands. Oh come on! Thor and Mjolnir?

The boss was annoyed. It was as if he had expected his hammer to kill his target in one hit. He weighed the hammer in his hand, and hurled his hammer again.

Zhang Yang frowned like a deranged man. Wasn't that a skill!? How could it not have cooldown!? That, or the cooldown was already ticking at

the moment he hurled his hammer out, and when he received his hammer back, it was ready to be used again! That's too short!

‘-24,582!’

Zhang Yang took another blow. But it did not stop there, the boss continuously hurled his hammer over and over again, with the sole purpose of killing him. Luckily, Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} had the Titan's Chest Plate reinforcement effect to restore his HP. If he had not, the {Shield Wall} would only allow Zhang Yang to endure a few hits at most! Still, it was only 15 seconds! With only a few seconds left on the timer, Zhang Yang knew that the end was coming soon. He made up his mind to kite the boss for just a little while longer to buy time for Queen Serena to arrive.

Having run out of all his emergency skills, Zhang Yang equipped the Lover's Charm. Just before he activated it, a loud thunderous voice roared through the high heavens.

"Moucander! You dare!"

The sky cracked a thunderous roar. From the edge of the horizon, a green sword aura burst out and morphed into a large dragon. The dragon homed in on Moucander and struck him to the ground.

WHAM!

Like a meteor, Moucander crashed into the earth and made a huge crater with him at the core of the crash site. A large mushroom cloud of dust formed. After that, the dragon dissipated into millions of particles, vanishing without a trace.

Crack!

The earth split apart, and out came Moucander from the crater, with his face covered in dirt.

"Serena--!" Moucander cursed like venom.

Not far from where the sword aura first burst out, Queen Serena had finally arrived. The young queen rode gallantly and charged forward with

the sword in her hands, pointing towards the enemy. "Moucander! We shan't forgive the man who would harm Our beloved general! We shall obliterate you, till your bones dried out and your flesh festers with maggots! Hell will give you no quarter!"

She thrust her sword into the air and sent out a similarly green light aura to the sky. The dragon reappeared and lunged itself towards Moucander.

"Hmph. Looking down on us?" Moucander bellowed, and hurled his hammer at the dragon.

BOOM!

Another loud thunderous crack burst out to the high heavens. This time, Moucander had barely managed to evade the dragon. However, the force of the dragon was proven to be stronger, sending Moucander hurtling back a great distance.

Everyone, including Zhang Yang stared, with their jaws dropped down to the center of the earth. The previous demonstration of Moucander was terrifying, but that was him attacking the players. He had not yet displayed his full potential. But now that he had an equal opponent to fight, he was being pushed back by Queen Serena with her sword! Now, everyone knew the power of a Ascended tier boss, and what they could do!

Aside from that, the one thing that no one could understand was the relationship between Queen Serena and Zhang Yang.

"Did I just hear her say, "beloved general"?"

"F*ck! Moucander was chasing Zhan Yu like a dog, and that Queen Serena came to rescue Zhang Yu and beat Moucander up!"

"What the hell is happening? How did Zhan Yu get someone as powerful as Serena to cover his *ss?!"

"Goddammit! That's a queen! Zhan Yu is so lucky!"

Everyone was impressed, in awe, envious, and jealous of Zhang Yang's luck. If they could, they would want to walk in his shoes, literally for a day!

On the other hand, One Sword Stroke, Luo Xin Yan, and the many others who followed them were jealous! That being said, they had every reason to feel jealous, little did they know the hardships Zhang Yang had gone through to gain such favors.

"Meteor Sword!? That is the ancient weapon!" Moucander cried in surprise, when he had a clear view of the sword that Queen Serena held in her hands, as their weapons crossed.

"Moucander...We would have spared your life if you were to surrender to Our reign! Yet you have raised your sword at Our beloved general! Death is all We will give!" cried Queen Serena with a heavy killing intent! She swung her sword with force and sent out the dragon once again.

Zhang Yang felt a little overjoyed. Being nothing more than a common player, the Queen herself was so enraged on his behalf, how could he not feel happy?

Moucander roared with rage and charged towards Serena at lightning speed. He raised his shield up high and lunged at the dragon. "Fool, do not overestimate yourself, just because you are wielding an ancient sword! Begone! I shall personally have your head!"

He was an Ascended tier boss. Other than Celestial tiers, most bosses would gain a boost of status points when they were enraged, similar to that of a Berserk state. Moucander brandished his hammer and struck down the dragon. With the dragon out of his way, Moucander lunged at Serena. Serena did not waver, and parried his hammer strike with her sword. They started raining blows on each other with fervor. Amid the fight, the sword glowed and formed the same dragon.

Both Kingdom's representatives were Ascended tier, there was no way for players to get between them. Their power was so strong that even the sheer rebound of their attacks would kill players who got too close. Zhang Yang was nothing but a helpless soldier when two super-powered bosses were having their slugfest.

There were many players on the sidelines, staring in awe while others were already calculating the timing to land the killing blow. Should they

land the killing hit, they would receive a large pool of experience points! Perhaps, even an Ascended tier equipment drop! Despite that, none of them were willing or stupid enough to charge in. They would end up being a pile of ash before they could even breathe! No one would even go near to the bosses! It would be suicidal.

In the air, Zhang Yang did his own calculations. He had the skill - {Shadow of the Void} that would grant him 20 seconds of invincibility to get close to the boss. If his position and timing were accurate, he could land the final blow without being killed himself. However, the accuracy required would be down to the millisecond. If he appears just a little earlier, he could be turned into sand before he could blink.

To get the glory, one must walk through the valley of shadow and death! With that resolution in mind, Zhang Yang steeled his decision.

Even though both bosses were Ascended tier, Serena clearly had the upper hand. Every time the Meteor Sword struck Moucander, the sword would send the dragon out and deal enough damage to take away 1% of Moucander's HP. Right then, a Level 110 Mythical tier boss would have 33,000,000 HP. An Ascended tier boss would normally be Level 200 or more, and their HP would be more than a few 100 million! 1% of that would at least be a few million!

"Holy crap! That babe packs a punch!" said Fatty Han, after staring at her violently jiggling boobs during the entire time.

"Huh. After getting that sword, the princess turned into a Queen that could rival the gods!" said Endless Starlight, as his eyes remained glued to the globes.

Boom! Foom!

When the sword and the hammer struck each other, the excessive power that leaked out shattered mountains afar, and even the fabric of reality around them were twisting and churning around chaotically! Black holes were forming and disappearing rapidly around Serena and Moucander! Zhang Yang gulped down his saliva, wondering if he would actually be safe within the dimension of the {Shadow of the Void}...

Although Moucander was the same tier as Serena, his attack power was much weaker than her. When he had already lost more than 20% HP, Serena had only lost 2% of her own HP. To put things into comparison, Moucander was fighting 5 of himself!

"Protect his majesty!" cried the soldiers of Emerald Kingdom who were covered in white ceremonial robes. They then got together and chanted a healing spell.

Green healing texts started to pop up on Moucander's character, but his long HP showed no indication of it!

Chapter 485: S Class Inheritance

Fragment

"Futile!" Serena proclaimed, as she swung her sword and blasted the healers behind Moucander with a wide green sword aura. The green light radiance morphed into the dragon and tore them all to pieces. Without any signs of losing strength, the green dragon flew straight on and clawed its way through the castle wall. A loud crashing noise was heard, and the castle wall collapsed, revealing a large hole that drew the attention of many players around.

The blade aura had more power than it was expected to have and soared to the sky, at where the Dragonriders of Emerald Kingdom hovered. The light force cleaved through the giant dragon in half and brought its rider down.

It couldn't be help, that's the power of the Meteor Sword. Players had to drop their jaw and stare in amazement. The sword had destroyed the castle wall. That was justified. But the residual power had even killed a giant dragon that had its level hidden away from players! Who in the field had not raided the Level 50 dungeon Poison Fireland? The little bugger that disguised its dragon form had managed to deceive many unfortunate players. Those who wanted revenge had even returned to the dungeon at Level 80 or 90 and would still be killed in a blast! That's just how powerful a giant dragon was! And yet, Serena had only needed to graze the dragon to cleaved it in two! There were no words to describe her power!

After Serena's display of power, the hatred in the glare of players towards Zhang Yang had grown stronger. Now that the relationship of Serena and Zhang Yang had been publicly displayed, if Zhang Yang were to be killed and have his corpse camped, he could easily call for the Queen to rescue him! Whether or not it was possible, it's better to be safe than sorry.

"Lucky f*cker!"

Not far from the battle, Liu Wei cursed. He was being guarded by more

than 20 players around. He spat on the ground with such enmity towards Zhang Yang, he was willing to give up his life to kill that bugger.

His talent in gaming was only average, but he had money. A lot of money. With close to unlimited financial supplies, he had hired many professional players to be his underlings and had spent enough money to buy himself a full set of the best equipment available in the market. Through his monetary efforts, he had managed to survive till this point. Just then, he noticed the presence of One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan in the corner of his sight. A sudden rage rose to him like bile.

It's not that he held precious memories with the woman. It was the humiliation she had put him through. Word had already got out. Liu Wei had already become the laughing stock of his circle of friends. If he does not do something about this, he would not have the right to raise his head in his circle.

However, that's easier said than done. One Sword Stroke's family business had gained massive profits through the help of Luo Xin Yan, who provided business strategies. One Sword Stroke's family business had multiplied their business profit to several folds over the past few months. Even though their 700 to 800 million dollar company would never stand on par with the Liu's family multi-billion dollar assets, they were not easy to be trampled upon.

Zhang Yang was despicable, but One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan were his prime source of shame, and he made up his mind there and then.

...

Players from both sides of the war had started their final push. Since they would never get anywhere close to the two bosses without killing themselves, its best to just fight among themselves. However, it was obvious that Serena was having the upper hand in the battle, Moucander was bound to fall sooner or later. The victory of White Jade Kingdom was as clear as day!

Hence, many of the players had given up on killing the boss. Instead, they turned their sights to the players instead. Best not to cry over spilled

milk, and start farming cows instead.

The battle between Serena and Moucander was almost coming to an end. The Queen had laid down more attacks than Moucander could, leaving the king battered and covered in his own blood. Zhang Yang's eyes were constantly glued to Moucander's character. He had taken into account Serena's attack and Moucander HP loss per second and was constantly making adjustments to his timing!

2%! It's time!

Zhang Yang activated {Shadow of the Void} and rushed towards Moucander. His heart was beating at such a rate that he might even die of cardiac arrest, there and then. The battle between Moucander and Serena was so intense, that the attacks in the crossfire would reach as far as hundreds of meters away. It was made that way by the system so that players were not able to reach the boss! The game was only at the age of the Violet-Platinum. Mythical equipment were rare enough and it would be a huge problem if an Ascended tier equipment appeared now!

Based on the game's setting, you qualify to loot the drops of a monster, as long as you have scratched it. The question then, is, would the boss drop anything at all? If he does not, it would a slap in the face, but if he does, it would be another question of snatching the loot. However, right then, no one could even get close to the boss, much less attack them. Naturally, no one would have a chance, at all! If others can't get it, and I can't get it, what's there to complain about?!

Zhang Yang counted the seconds down. 1...2...3...4...10...15...16...

At that moment, he manually disabled {Shadow of the Void} and unleashed {Killing Cleave} at Moucander. He knew that he only had a one split second window to land a hit. If he fails to kill the boss with it, he would get caught in the crossfire and be killed instantly. Technically, he would use {Horizontal Sweep} or {Blast Wave} that had AoE attacks, which could tough the boss in passing. But then again, there was a problem with the boss' high defense value.

In his past life, he had fought a Holy tier boss before, and remembered

that the boss' Defense value was close to 20,000. Supposedly, this Ascended tier boss should have more than that amount. Even if Zhang Yang had Level 4 {Eagle Eye} that could ignore 65% of the enemy's Defense, it should still be high enough to only deal Suppressed damage (1 damage). Worst off, the gap between his level and the boss' level was more than 30 Levels, and he would not be even able to deal any damage at all! With no damage, his effort would be all but for naught.

That is why he resorted to the {Killing Cleave}. The skill ignored all Defense, was un-Blockable, and unavoidable. It was probably the only skill that would deal damage to the boss!

‘-8,522!’

Splat!

Zhang Yang thrust his sword into Moucander's back. His blade protruded out of the King's chest. Surprised, Moucander stared down at his chest to look at the blade, and turned back to see his killer. His HP was down to 6,000 HP before that blow, and to have a Level 101 player kill him?!

The boss dropped the shield and sword in his hands and fell to the ground, as his life force seeped out of him completely. 10 minutes ago, he had been boldly chasing after Zhang Yang, yet now, he was killed by that same puny, weakling.

"Hmph." Zhang Yang scoffed. He felt satisfied. Call it what you may, cowardice, experience, backstabbing, but revenge was still sweet revenge!

‘Ding! You have killed Moucander, King of Emerald Kingdom. Obtained 100,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have utilized an unorthodox method to kill the first Open-World Ascended tier boss. You have lost the qualifications to be named in the Hall of Fame!’

100,000,000 Experience points!?

Shring!

Zhang Yang's character glowed in a golden hue, and gained a level. That was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang wanted to land the killing blow! It was to allow him to obtain the 50% experience points gain. In the game, the system would grant 50% of the entire experience pool provided from the monster to the player who lands the killing blow.

Zhang Yang smirked. It was a huge gain. He then turned his sight to the body of the fallen king and noticed two loot. One was a dark-green, two-handed battle axe and a milky-white shard that looked like a jade fragment.

It was a pity that the boss had only dropped two drops. Still, it was more than he could have asked more. Zhang Yang had only needed to land a hit to gain two drops from the boss. It was an Ascended boss after all, and for the system to drop anything at all was already a blessing.

'Server Announcement: Moucander, King of Emerald Kingdom had been slain! The War of Kingdom had ended! The player with the highest score: Zhan Yu, shall be given a title "Imperial Aggrandizer".'

'Server Announcement: White Jade Kingdom has absorbed the Emerald Kingdom. The origins of players of both major cities will not be affected.'

With the system announcing the title owner, the battle had officially closed its curtains.

Everyone had seen the bright flash of light coming from Zhang Yang. If they had any sense of logical thinking, they would have easily guessed that he had landed a hit on the boss, and had obtained a massive amount of experience points to gain a level. Those who had eyes as sharp as eagles had noticed Zhang Yang looting the battle axe and the milky piece of jade. That was the drop of an Ascended boss! The urge to rush over at him and kill him for the equipment was overpowering!

Zhang Yang noticed their rash behavior and felt a little disappointed in their stupid actions. Could they not see that Queen Serena was standing right next to Zhang Yang? His "bodyguard" had just defeated another Ascended tier boss, all by herself! Her power exceeded that of a god even though she only bore the title of Ascended.

Before the greedy players got close to him, logic found its way back into their heads and calmed them down.

"Noob tank! Did you just kill the boss? Nyahahaha! Come on! Show me the goods! I wanna see how strong an Ascended tier equipment is!" cried the little girl.

Fatty Han and the rest of the party cheered for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang gave his thanks.

The battle axe was extremely strong for its level. At his current Strength level, Zhang Yang could barely lift the weapon up, much less swing it around! The blade of the axe was curved like a scythe. There were markings on the blade that glowed with a pale, blood-colored hue. The shaft of the axe had black linings that flowed with a dark energy, from the blade, down to the hilt.

[Agos, The Destroyer's Blade] (Ascended, Two-Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 30,612 – 36,612

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 8,845

Equip Effect: Increases 35% damage.

Equip Effect: Increases 3.5% Critical rate.

Equip Effect: Upon attack, grants a chance to trigger the Destroyer's Blade effect to deal 5.6x damage.

[unidentified]

Level Requirement: 200

Special: Lowers the Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Zhang Yang had nothing to say. As expected from an Ascended tier weapon! In his previous life, he had never even been able to obtain such a weapon before!

Before Identifying, the item would only have 70% of the original specs. Upon identifying, the axe should have more than 12,000 DPS, 50% damage

increment, 5% critical rate increment, and a chance to deal 8x damage!

Better yet, the weapon even had a special effect that would allow Zhang Yang to equip the axe at Level 180!

Zhang Yang believed that he could finish the God of War Inheritance quest before he reaches Level 150! By then, he could equip a Two-Handed weapon on his main hand, and a Shield on his secondary!

Zhang Yang could hardly contain his excitement! He was about to unlock the power of a Berserker, and the ultimate defense of a Guardian! How strong would he be, when he gains this Inheritance!

"Hey hey! Dummy~ What did you get? I see that you're smiling like a retard! You must have obtained a legendary item!" Han Ying Xue laughed.

Zhang Yang chuckled and posted the axe's properties in the party channel.

"Holy moley! That's crazy damage right there!"

"D*mn! It's more than 30,000 damage in one hit! You plan to behead someone with that?"

"Haha! That's my weapon! Good job! Since you can't really use it, this young lady shall take it off your hands!"

Everyone was enjoying themselves, chattering about the equipment prowess. Not far from where they gathered, players noticed Zhang Yang had already picked one equipment out of the loot. Greed had managed to find its way back into their hearts as the players roared and charged towards Zhang Yang!

"Insolent!" Serena roared and swung her sword around. The green dragon appeared, and swept all players off their feet, instantly killing them!

Just then, they remembered that this very NPC had just killed Moucander with relative ease. She was much stronger than Moucander ever was! How could they, mere players, be her opponents?

In an instant, no other players dared to charge forward. Some of them

had a plan. Mentally planning their assault, hoping that Serena would eventually leave Zhang Yang alone at some point in time! That would be their cue to kill Zhang Yang, and get his equipment!

Zhang Yang glared around and continued to pick up the last piece of drop on the floor.

[Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragment Piece] (Inheritance Class: S)

Description: Collect 10 Fragment of Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragment to form a complete Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Keepsake. You can initiate the Inheritance quest for Milkmaid Deity. You will obtain the Inheritance - Milkmaid Deity upon clearing the quest line. You will gain skills of your related class and skills of Milkmaid Deity. All Inheritance Fragments will resonate with each other and if you are killed while carrying an Inheritance Fragment in your inventory, the Inheritance Fragment will drop at a 100% rate. All Inheritance Fragments can only be stored in a player's inventory.

Special Requirement: Milkmaid Deity Inheritance quest can only be taken by Priest class.

HOHO! S class Inheritance Fragment! So is this how you get it?!

According to Zhang Yang's knowledge, there were only five S class Inheritances in his past life. The warrior class, God of War Inheritance was taken by a North America player. The Knight class, God of Holy Knights Inheritance was taken by a European player. The Hunter class, Shadow Striker fell into the hands of an India player. The Thief class, Shadow Dancer inheritance went to Sun Xin Yu, and the Spellcaster Inheritance, God or Arcane Magic Inheritance was taken by a player from the Japan-Korea region.

As for the sixth Inheritance, the Priest class S class inheritance was never found! The developers of the game had never revealed the method of obtaining it. No one knew the method of obtaining the Inheritance, much less even, the name of it!

Now, the mystery had been solved! The Priest class S class Inheritance was called Milkmaid Deity! Zhang Yang frowned. Which bugger was the

person who was in charge of naming the Inheritances! S class Inheritances are such a big deal, that once obtained, the player will be wearing the title like a crown! Who in their right mind would want to have a tag named "Milkmaid Deity!"

Translator Note:

The original name of Milkmaid Deity was 奶牛之神. Which literally translates to Milk – Cow – God. In mandarin, or China's mandarin, 奶牛 also means babysitting or supporting. The term is used to dub healers. Initially, we planned on using God of Heavy Support, or other names that carry the meaning of support. However, there would, of course be jokes about Han Ying Xue having more milk to heal which brings us back to square one. In the end, we've figured that the most suitable translation would be Milkmaid Deity.

Chapter 486: Milkmaid Deity

Zhang Yang fiddled with the Inheritance Fragment and thought of the God of War Inheritance.

In his previous life, the blabbering North America player had publicly announced the method of obtaining the first fragment of the God of War. As long as you get your hands on the first piece of the Inheritance Fragment, the system will automatically lead you to the next fragment, either through quests or other means when a player enters the map that has a piece of the Inheritance Fragment. It was made easy for players to collect all other Inheritance Fragments.

Hence, as long as players get the first one, the rest of the Inheritance Fragments would be easy to collect over time. The first piece of the God of War Inheritance Fragment was not obtained by quest nor a boss drop. It was found deep inside a cave! It was as easy as finding a cave! The problem however, was getting into the cave.

Zhang Yang noticed that something was wrong when he obtained the fragment. The first thought was that the system must have watered down the difficulty. The only Inheritance Fragments that could be obtained bosses were lower class Inheritances. For example, the Monk of Flame Inheritance Fragment. The Inheritance required only four pieces. Zhang Yang could have easily obtained them by killing more bosses. Z class Inheritance quests were fairly easy to complete. The Inheritance quest would require players to run a few errands or fight a few medium difficulty bosses. It was only a matter time and effort when it comes to obtaining lower class Inheritances.

High level Inheritances do not behave the same way. For example, Zhang Yang's Inheritance in his past life was the King Kong Inheritance. All eight Inheritance Fragment pieces were obtained through all sorts of methods, such as quest rewards or treasure chests. None of it was obtained from a boss drop. Quest rewards that were based on Inheritance Fragment were fair on average, however, those Fragments that were obtained from Treasure Chests were a hassle. The system would only

provide a vague description of the Fragments' locations. Players would have to search every nook and cranny of every corner of the location that the system provides. Zhang Yang had taken over half a month (real time) searching the entire valley for the sixth piece of his Fragment. Half a god d*mned month!

Whether the system has watered down the difficulty or not, an S class Inheritance is something that only 6 persons in the world can own. Zhang Yang posted the S class Inheritance Fragment to the party channel, and everyone was thrown off their feet.

"Milkmaid...Deity?" In truth, they were more confused than amazed.

"Sis! I think, you might actually be the milk cow, not the milk maid, if you get this Inheritance!" laughed the little girl as she rolled about, clutching her stomach.

Han Ying Xue snorted. She thrust out her chest proudly and said, "How could you compare such beautiful features to the likes of a cow!?"

"I'll be d*mned! That's an S class Inheritance. Just how strong would a person be, once they obtain that..."

Curious and intrigued, no one in this world had yet to obtain the first Inheritance. No one knew to what extent does the strength of the Inheritance stretch. However, there was without a doubt that the Inheritance Fragment would go to Han Ying Xue. Milkmaid deity...The name of the Inheritance was obviously directed towards healing and supporting. Since Han Ying Xue already has massive boobies, would her cup size increase from D to E after...

After the battle ended, Zhang Yang followed Serena and entered the Emerald Kingdom. The new Queen circled around the main cities, followed closely by the large army behind her. After demonstrating her powers to the citizens of Emerald Kingdom, she quickly gained support from the NPC citizens and successfully assimilated the kingdom. No NPCs seemed to protest. This was how the developers of the game had envisioned a hostile take over, apparently.

Since PvP in the main city is disabled, Zhang Yang had no fear of getting

jumped on. He bade farewell to Serena and joined Han Ying Xue and everyone else at the White Jade Kingdom to spend his Merit points.

Zhang Yang had a total of 200,000 and more Merit points and was completely clueless at how to spend them all! The merchant sold a total of seven Guardian specific equipment that were respectively meant for the Head, Body, Hands, Leg, Foot, Primary and Secondary weapon slot. All of them were Level 100 Violet-Platinum tier. Even though every individual piece was stronger than his current equipment, he was wearing a set equipment! In the end, the effect of the Titan Armor set was much stronger. The only slot worth changing was his weapon.

However, the Sword of Purging Devourer had yet to be fully unsealed! Furthermore, the sword was just too strong to give up on, for a random weapon that only has a 2.5 seconds attack interval! It was not exceptionally strong, thus it wasn't worth the change.

Even though the equipment offered by the Merit points merchant were strong, none of them were worth buying. Zhang Yang had absolutely zero desire of purchasing them. Other items, such as the [Level 4 Vitality Potion] was not worth it as well. Zhang Yang was an Alchemist. He could make potions and create Transmuted grade potions. The potions that the merchant was selling did not have any Transmutations, hence, potions were out of the picture. Lastly, at the end of the item page were the [Level 4 Gemstone].

He had over 200,000 Merit points. Each [Level 4 Gemstone] would cost 2,000 Merit points. That means he could buy at least 100 pieces. There were only 11 sockets for one character's total equipment, how could he use all 100 Gemstones?!

While other players were contemplating on choosing the right item to buy with their limited Merit points, Zhang Yang was annoyed at having too many Merit points, for he did not know where else to spend them on! If anyone else knew about this, they might be downright pissed.

Other than the [Level 4 Gemstone], Zhang Yang had nothing else to spend the Merit points on, since most of the items sold by the Merit points

merchant would be bounded to him, and cannot be sold nor traded. It makes no sense to earn any money from this.

After buying 60 pieces of [Level 4 Vitality Gemstones], he spent the rest of his remaining Merit points on [Level 4 Strength Gemstones]. He was not sure on when he would complete the God of War Inheritance quest, but when he does, he would need to prepare himself two equipment types. One for Defensive purposes, and the other for Attacking purposes. After spending all his Merit points, Zhang Yang stored all his [Level 4 Gemstone] to his warehouse. He also emptied out most of his inventory and readied himself for the Chaos Realm once again.

In 30 hours, the Territorial War for Wynst Castle would start. Zhang Yang had not immediately started his journey on searching for the first God of War Inheritance Fragment. He decided to grind a little around the area instead. Without much time, Zhang Yang was teleported to Wynst Castle and had waited aimlessly for 3 hours, till he obtained the Territory with no effort.

After he gained ownership of the castle, Zhang Yang wanted to modify part of the castle for a change. Since the territory was part of the Japan-Korea region, and their entrance gate to the Chaos Realm, players will force themselves into the town if they did not possess any flying mounts. That, or, they would forever be stuck in the small region outside the Chaos Realm.

It was a predictable scene. When players of Japan-Korea region find out their gateway to the Chaos Realm occupied by others, they would be enraged, and would initiate an all-out-round-the-clock war. That is why, Wynst Castle has to be fortified to prevent the downfall of the castle, or it should at least provide a major inconvenience to them.

Of course, it would be impossible to rely on a single castle to block all players from Japan-Korea region. Unless Zhang Yang manages to gather all players from China to join his fight in keeping them back. Zhang Yang wanted to capture the territory simply to annoy the players there. He wanted to slow their progress down a little, and deny them their teleportation points, making them take the long route each time they had

to travel to the Chaos Realm.

Regardless of their methods, the territory would most like spend more of its time smoking and on fire, than standing with the regality of a territory. Still, without a [Territory Conquest Order], no one could claim the territory. They could force their way through and damage the territory as much as they could, but the players from Japan-Korea region would never be able to use the Teleportation points.

However, even if someone were able to get their hands on a [Territory Conquest Order], the fight would be between two guilds. In a guild vs guild fight, Zhang Yang and his Lone Desert Smoke would never lose to anyone!

Corner someone to a wall, and they would have nothing to move but front. Players of Japan-Korea region might even mobilize their strongest players and attack the castle with a [Territory Conquest Order]. Even though Lone Desert Smoke was strong, but without the use of the Forbidden Scroll, they might lose to the strongest alliances from another region!

That was why Zhang Yang decided to add a few magic cannons to the castle wall.

After one comes another, and just when the Emerald Kingdom was taken down by White Jade Kingdom, Serena had started another Kingdom War with the next kingdom, the Black Dragon Kingdom.

Similar to the war from before, players could earn Merit points by killing NPC troops or enemy players. Besides White Jade Kingdom, Emerald Kingdom, and Black Dragon Kingdom, players from other major cities could freely support the kingdom of their choice. Since Emerald Kingdom had already been assimilated by White Jade, they had no other choice but to support White Jade.

Right then, Zhang Yang had no use of Merit points, and he would not have joined the battle if he was not able to defeat the boss like Moucander. However, surprisingly, Zhang Yang was instantly killed when he had used {Shadow of the Void} to get close to the boss fight. The

developers might have already found out about his exploitation and had decided to remove the loophole. Then again, it was good enough that the system had not confiscated the Ascended axe, and the S-class Inheritance Fragment from Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang knew better than to be angered about it, and dared not voice his complaints, fearing that they might actually confiscate them!

In the end, Zhang Yang decided to skip the next war and the following wars, since he had already obtained the title "The Challenger". Since he had no use for Merit points, and nothing to gain from risking his life to kill the boss, Zhang Yang left the city wars entirely to spend his time on something more productive.

With the Meteor Sword in the hands of Queen Serena, war was nothing but a playground for her. After Black Dragon Kingdom, she had even managed to conquer Blood Moon Kingdom, Crimson Sky Kingdom, and the other 5 cities, and had formed the first United Kingdom of China! (In-Game, not the UK in real life).

This did not even happen in his past life!

After conquering the entire of China's region, the Queen was not satisfied with her conquest, and had readied her army to enter the Chaos Realm! Zhang Yang had mixed feelings about the changes that he had brought into this world.

Just when Serena had united China, Zhang Yang had started his search for the God of War Inheritance.

He remembered the words of the North America player from his previous life. Something about the first God of War Inheritance Fragment coming from the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. Coincidentally, the required materials to break the second seal for the Sword of Purging Devourer were [Zinc Alloys] which were available in the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. However, the priority was the God of War Inheritance, and the quest to break the sword's seal would come second.

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent and soared into the sky to travel to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster. The map in the Chaos

Realm was so vast and huge! The Wilderness of Dubaiya was already four times the size of the Ten Barren Sea! To travel from Morning Town to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster had taken him close to one whole day!

The name, Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster was aptly given, as the place was roaming with Man-Eating Orcs measuring up to 10 meters in height, similar to the ones Zhang Yang had faced before. Even though the society of the orcs was primitive, they were naturally born with the instincts of warriors and hunters. As soon Zhang Yang entered the borders of the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster, he was nearly shot down from the sky by a flying boulder. It was an orc that had fired the rocky projectile. As it picked up another boulder from the ground, saliva was oozing out from the corners of his mouth, as he stared at Zhang Yang.

Chapter 487: Cloak of the Orcs

Zhang Yang ignored the monster. There's no reason to make a detour for a single orc.

Even though there were monsters that were airborne and sharing the same airspace as he, there were more monsters that were roaming the earth than in the air. Zhang Yang had merely spent a short time defeating monsters that were randomly scattered in the airspace and reached his destination, the Cavern of Lava and Amber.

The map was the lair of the Man-Eating Orcs. Even though Zhang Yang had not yet entered the system of caverns, he had a good idea about the sheer number of orcs in the map by counting the orcs that were coming in and out of the cavern.

[Molten Man-Eating Orc] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,381 – 10,381

Skills:

[Raging Smash]: Bashes the target with rage. Inflicts 150% melee physical damage. Has a fixed chance of stunning the target.

[Rock Toss]: Tosses a rock at an enemy. Deals 100% melee physical damage. Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 3 – 30 meters. Instant cast.

Melee monsters were harder to kill. If Zhang Yang rounded them up, they would bombard him with a shower of flying rocks and kill him instantly. When a melee monster could use ranged attacks, kiting would be a fatal and useless strategy.

To sneak past them would be a challenge for Zhang Yang, since the monsters were all gathering rather closely to each other. If he accidentally draws the attention of one monster, it would trigger the nearby monsters

as well. To put in perspective, it will be hard for him to sneak into the lair. The place was like a major city to the monsters, like how White Jade Castle was to the players there. Imagine how hard it would be for an orc to infiltrate the city, when there are so many pairs of vigilant eyes looking about.

Zhang Yang flew onwards and reached a small river. He descended to a lower altitude and spotted a small straw house at the side of the winding river. He got off the flying serpent and demolished the fences, and made his way to the doorway of the house. He put away his sword and knocked lightly on the door.

The wooden door of the house was so old and battered, it literally shattered down into broken wooden pieces when Zhang Yang's metal gauntlet touched the door.

"Bloody hell. Which bugger did it!?" cried an angry male voice from inside the house. Zhang Yang moved away and saw a 10-meter-tall male orc. It grits its teeth and expressed enmity towards Zhang Yang.

[The "Honest" Gululu] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1,200,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,352 – 10,352

Skills:

[Sneak Away]: When Gululu's HP reaches 20%, he will try to sneak away.

Hmph. This is the person Zhang Yang was looking for!

"Die! Filthy orc!" cried Zhang Yang as he drew out his sword and slashed at Gululu rapidly. The flying serpent and Felice immediately started their attacks only after Zhang Yang had landed his attack.

Gululu grew madder and hurled his fist towards Zhang Yang and begin bashing him. In just a matter of seconds, Zhang Yang and his two other "minions" had clobbered him up to a pulp!

As the skill described, when Gululu's HP reached 20%, it immediately waved its left arms and disappeared in a puff of smoke! That was supposed to be Gululu's {Sneak Away} which was extremely similar to a Thief's {Vanish}.

Zhang Yang adjusted his position and struck down the earth with {Thunder Strike}. The electric wave spread across the ground and zapped Gululu's massive body, jolting him out of his stealth mode.

As Zhang Yang approached him to lay down more attacks, Gululu got down on all fours and begged, "Please, spare my life! Have mercy!"

Zhang Yang did not and continued slashing away like the wind.

"Please stop! I'm not an Orc! Don't kill me!" Gululu wailed out in pain.

Zhang Yang stopped then and placed his sword over his neck. "If a pig says that it's not a pig, would people believe that?"

"No! Please! I'm really not an orc," said Gululu as he tore off something from his chest. He started tearing off his clothes and revealed himself as a small red-bearded dwarf with a height of roughly around 1 meter. The cloth that he had torn off was a faint, white color fabric that pulsed in and out of the visible spectrum. The piece of cloth was called the [Cloak of the Orcs]. Equipping it would grant the appearance of a Man-Eating Orc to the player, which would last for 24 hours. After turning into an orc, the player will be deemed as a "Friendly" to the orcs and could roam around the Cavern of Lave and Amber without being attacked. Players can also complete a few orc quests to gain access to merchants to buy a few local products.

Zhang Yang's main purpose was to venture into the deepest part of the cavern. That was where the first piece of the Inheritance Fragment would be. In which, Zhang Yang would have to search for the NPC and get his hands on the [Cloak of the Orcs].

"A dwarf?" Zhang Yang laughed. "Sure, I'll spare you. In return for that fabric."

"No! Over my dead body!" said Gululu as he shook his head like a

turning fan. "I have spent my entire fortune for this cloak! I'd die before I surrender this!"

Even though the NPC's name contained the word "Honest", it was bracketed with double quotation marks. Zhang Yang had encountered this NPC in the past and knew very well how "honest" he really is. Zhang Yang remained cool and said, "That's fine by me. I'll kill you first, and pry the cloak off your dead fingers."

Gululu blinked rapidly and quickly went on all fours again when he saw Zhang Yang drawing out his sword. "Please! Wait! How about I tell you a secret? This cloak has a time limit to it. Even if I give it to you, you would not make full use of it! However, if you really need it. I can make one for you if you bring me the necessary items!"

'Ding! The "Honest" Gululu has a quest for you: Making the Cloak of the Orcs. Will you accept it?'

Since it was not possible to take the cloak from the dwarf, Zhang Yang had no choice but to accept it.

Zhang Yang nodded and accepted the quest request.

[Making the Cloak of the Orcs] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Gululu has agreed to make you a [Cloak of the Orcs], in exchange for his life. Gather the following materials, 1000x [Inscribed Cloth] (You can obtain Inscribed Cloth from any humanoid monsters above Level 90), 20x [Magic Dye] (Purchase from Ankhgar, the Traveling Merchant), 5x [Psychedelic Deer Fur] (Obtainable from killing and skinning an adolescent Psychedelic Deer. Psychedelic Deers are roaming in the west of the Psychedelic Valley).

Progress: Inscribed Cloth 128/1000 Magic Dye 0/20 Psychedelic Deer Fur 0/5

Quest Reward: Cloak of the Orcs x1

[Cloak of the Orcs] (Tool)

Use: Transforms you into a Man-Eating Orc. Gululu is terrible at such

handiwork, but it is believed that the cloak he makes would be able to fool the dumb orcs. However, be wary of the Iron Fangs White Wolf, for their sensitive noses could easily snuff out intruders.

Leve Requirement: 100

Binds upon Acquisition.

Among the three types of material needed, the [Inscribed Cloth] was the highest in quantity. However, it was also the most easily obtainable material. You could easily farm the cloth from any humanoid monsters around. The toughest one was the [Magic Dye]. Even though it could be bought with gold coins, the traveling merchant was always traveling! There was no fixed position to locate the bugger, and it would take some time to track him down!

In his previous life, there was one player who was too free and had nothing to do, and decided to follow the NPC around. He then charged players for 1 gold coin for the location of the traveling merchant. It was extremely cheap, so that player had amassed millions of gold coins in the time span of 2 years. Since Ankhgar was always hard to track down, a player would not mind paying such a small sum of gold to get his precise location.

Even with the flying mount, Zhang Yang would need to fly around the map to search for that one single NPC. It was difficult, for if he flew too high, the ground would not be visible, but if he flew too low, the scope of his vision would be narrowed. It could not be helped, for the sake of the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang would have to search every nook and cranny to find that traveling bugger.

Zhang Yang hopped atop the flying serpent and left Gululu's straw house. Even though Ankhgar was constantly traveling, he had a few fixed routes. In the massive map, there are four long pathways for him to travel by. If players have a flying mount, they could circle over the pathway and find the NPC from the high altitude. The idea was simple enough, but the time taken was another matter...

Zhang Yang had taken more than 2 whole days of in-game time to

finally find Ankhgar. When he saw the NPC, he wanted to take out his sword and dismember his legs so that he would not be traveling, anymore!

Zhang Yang descended and jumped down from the air, and landed down next to the merchant. "Traveling merchant! May I have a look at your goods?"

"Mmm. You have good eyes. What do you need? I have the nude shots of Duchess Fischer. I even have the video recording of the Elven Priestess - Phoebe Moonwalker's bathing scene! Worry not, for all of the imagery is recorded with the highest-grade crystal ball! I promise ultra-HD quality pictures! Fret not of any mosaic censorship, my friend!"

Ankhgar was a male human adult, aged roughly around 30. He had a face full of untrimmed beard and messy hair. After his introductory speech, the man unpacked his cloth baggage and displayed a variety of items on the ground.

Zhang Yang winced. Looks like Messick is not the only perverted NPC in the game, after all.

Zhang Yang browsed the item menu and found the [Magic Dye] that he needed. Each bottle cost only 5 gold coins. Zhang Yang had spent 100 gold coins to buy 20 bottles to meet the quest requirement. Even though it was not much of a burden to his wallet, it was a massive blow to his psychological state of mind!

The [Magic Dye] was bound to Zhang Yang upon his purchase. Which meant that only the player who bought the item could use it. No wonder the player could make a living from selling the location of the traveling merchant! Anyone could have earned the same amount of money if they could just buy the merchant's wares in bulk and sell them in major cities.

Zhang Yang had bought a total of 100 bottles, instead of 20, for insurance. 100 bottles could make a total of 5 [Cloak of the Orcs]. Since the Caverns of Lave and Amber was huge to begin with, Zhang Yang might take a long time to search the entire system of tunnels in the cavern. It's better to be safe and sorry. Who knows, how long Zhang Yang might take to search the fragment of the God of War Inheritance? If he

had only one or two [Cloak of the Orcs] and had used them all, and still failed to find the Fragment, he might have to spend another 2 days just to search for the freaking traveling merchant!

Zhang Yang kept the 100 bottles of [Magic Dye] and flew away, all the time holding back the massive urge to slice off the merchant's legs! Next, Zhang Yang traveled west for his next objective, the Fur of the Psychedelic Deer.

"Yo! Wanna check out the latest work of Master Chen, the Great God of Trend? Buy a copy of "A Crazy Night with Chihu Xent"! Live your life the fullest, bro!" cried Ankhgar from the ground.

Chapter 488: Boy? Or Girl?

After flying for half an hour, Zhang Yang arrived at the airspace of the Psychedelic Valley. He then descended down towards the earth surface and found himself in the middle of a beautiful flourishing valley that was filled with life. The rivers were clean, the trees were growing thickly in the forest, and the animals were thriving. There were even rabbits among other small critters, playing around in a small flower bush. It was like Eden. However, even in the most peaceful of environments, danger could exist in many ways. Just when one of the little rabbit was happy hopping around a tree, the root shot out and grabbed the little rabbit. The tree's trunk cracked open a mouth and swallowed it whole.

Felice was a young, growing girl. She was attracted to small cute animal, just like any other girl around. As she was happily following the rabbit, she was heavily startled by the tree's action. The little girl was not a calm little girl. She immediately morphed into her Dragonhawk form and blasted the tree with her {Fire Missile}.

The carnivorous tree was hidden all too well in plain sight. Before it attacked, Zhang Yang had not noticed it at all! Normally, if an entity is a monster, a name tag would be placed on its character. This carnivorous tree looked and behaved just like every other harmless tree in the forest. The system would reveal the name tag, only when the carnivorous tree starts to attack.

[Psychedelic Carnivorous Tree] (Normal, Elemental Being)

Level: 125

HP: 19,400

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,598 – 6,598

Skills:

[Engulf]: Swallows a target whole and digests it in its trunk. Deals 3,000 natural damage every second. Lasts for 3 seconds. When the skill is in

effect, the target will be immobilized and cannot engage in any movement.
Instant cast. Range: Melee Range.

[Tree Bark]: Immune to all Natural type damage.

Pew!

Felice blasted the tree for 20,122 Fire damage, which had immolated the entire tree, causing it to be killed in one shot.

After the tree died, it dropped a piece of [Solid Wood] which could be used for construction purposes. Zhang Yang smirked and took the wood. Territories required many materials in order to level up. Each consecutive Leveling would require even more materials. Many of the materials required cannot be purchased from NPCs, and players would have to farm them from monsters.

Zhang Yang left the flying serpent to roam around the airspace 10 meters above them, while he and Felice would move on the ground to search for the Psychedelic deer.

Ssh Shh!

Without warning, one tree uprooted itself and started hurling its massive vines towards the flying serpent. The vines were simply too fast. There were just too many of them, and Zhang Yang had no idea on how to block all the attacks, even with his god-like blocking technique. With haste, the vines wrapped around the flying serpent and forcefully pulled the serpent towards itself. This time, an evil face appeared on the trunk of the tree. A wide crack appeared and spread open, revealing a disgusting mouth-like opening. The tree being pulled the serpent and Zhang Yang closer to its mouth!

[Psychedelic Elite Carnivorous Tree] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,381 – 10,381

Skills:

[Engulf]: Swallows a target whole and digests in its trunk. Deals 5,000 natural damage every second. Last for 5 seconds. During the skill is in effect, the target will be immobilized and cannot engage in any movement. Instant cast. Range: Melee Range.

[Tree Bark]: Immune to all Natural type damage.

Elite tiered monsters are in another league compared to the normal tier monsters. Even though they possessed the same skill, the damage and effort of the skill differed from each other.

"BROTHER--!" Felice screamed in horror as she saw how her beloved Zhang Yang was about to be swallowed whole by the monster. She descended down from the sky like a rocket and morphed into her human form in mid-air. She spun the spear on top of her head as quickly as a helicopter's blade and slashed it downwards to attack the tree.

CRACK!

‘-26,052!’

The stun effect was in place, and the carnivorous tree turned limp. The vines that had entrapped the serpent and Zhang Yang loosened up. The serpent quickly wriggled out of the wooden vines and managed to get itself back into the airspace. Mad with rage, the serpent spat its venom attack on the monster. A large "Immune" text popped out when the venom attack landed. The serpent was not like a Battle Companion, for they did not possess enough sentience and knowledge to understand the mechanism. When the serpent noticed its attack had done nothing to the tree, it sucked in a long breath and spat more venom instead.

"Haha! Dumb snake!" Zhang Yang lightly bashed the flying serpent's head and laughed. This was one of the weaknesses of a spell-type battle mount. In a scenario where the monster has magic immunity, the battle mount could not deal any damage at all! Zhang Yang laughed and called out, "Felice is much better than you!"

Instead of a cute smile, Felice sulked instead. "Big brother...how could

you compare me with a stupid animal...?"

"Sorry! My bad! My bad!" said Zhang Yang almost immediately. He then quickly lunged himself at the carnivorous tree and slashed away.

The poor Snow-Scale Wind Serpent blinked its green little eyes and stared incredulously at Felice for a moment. If it could open its mouth and talk, it would be saying, "Please... You morph into a big-*ss* bird thing and pew pew your fire missiles! You are spitting red fire while I spit green poison! We're just the same! Who are you calling stupid! You dumb chick!"

"Aurgh..." the carnivorous tree groaned and flung out more vines to entrap Zhang Yang. Even though the properties had explained that it was a melee type monster, its vine could reach out as far as 50 meters away! It's even further than a regular ranged attack! Furthermore, the vines it projects out could reach as many as a thousand! Zhang Yang could barely defend himself with {Block} and other defensive maneuvers, but the flying serpent he was on would take the hit and will be trapped by the vine attack! It would just be the same as taking the attack himself!

What a troublesome monster!

Zhang Yang believed that if Wei Yan Er or Lost Dream, and other players who had super-charged attack skills would still lose to this tree if they did not resort to their ulti skills. Or perhaps they could not even defeat one without ultis!

Fortunately, even if the vine attacks could not be properly blocked, the attacks would still factor in the target's defense and damage reduction passives. The attack done on Zhang Yang was only over 3,000, which was considered as cat's claw to him.

Felice, in her Dragonhawk form had been attacking the tree with many blasts of {Fire Missiles}. Even though the tree was immune to Natural damage, it was exceptionally susceptible to Fire type attacks. Each of Felice's attack could deal around 30,000 to 40,000 damage! If Zhang Yang had not reacted quickly to control the aggro of the monster, Felice would have been the first on its aggro list.

After a messy trading of attacks, the carnivorous tree was finally burnt into a crisp, and dropped seven counts of [Solid Wood] which made Zhang Yang happy, though for only a second. Even after the tree was reduced down to a burst block of trunk, the flying serpent was still mad at it and continued to spit more venom on its crispy wooden corpse. Zhang Yang laughed and patted the serpent's head, saying, "Enough with the spitting! Look at the ground! Geezz. How am I supposed to pick up the wood with all your saliva on it!"

Suddenly, Zhang Yang remembered something. "I haven't given you a proper name yet, have I? Hm...since the white bear is called Whitey, I shall call you Whitey Jr!"

Whitey Jr. blinked and stared at Zhang Yang, and did not react in any way at all. It's hard to tell whether or not the serpent liked the name!

Zhang Yang moved on and finally found himself a Psychedelic Deer!

The Psychedelic Deer was just a normal monster. Felice could easily kill the poor deer with one single blast of {Fire Missile}. However, Zhang Yang had done this quest before in his past life and he knew one annoying detail about it. Only the male Psychedelic deer would drop their fur! If Zhang Yang simply goes about killing every deer he sees, all of the Psychedelic deer would run away and hide when the kill count reaches a certain number! If that happens, the respawn duration would reach as high as 2 to 3 days long! Zhang Yang would never wait that long just to farm for 5 counts of fur!

He turned to Felice and said, "Felice, could you fly over there and checked the gender of the deer out for me?"

Felice gave Zhang Yang a poker face and remained quiet.

Battle Companion were not servants, they did not need to obey every single command from a player. If they felt that something was wrong, they can choose to deny the command. If the players choose to forcefully make the Battle Companion obey him or her, it could break the contract and the Battle Companion might even choose to leave the player.

Felice would not listen and obey such a disgraceful command, and

Zhang Yang had to do it himself.

Zhang Yang went prone on the ground and crawled over to the Psychedelic Deer. The deer was as tall as a regular size human, and could easily be spotted from a good distance. When it heard Zhang Yang crawling over, it whipped its head up and jumped to its hooves to charge towards him.

Bump!

Zhang Yang quickly got up to his feet and defended himself with his shield. He lifted the shield upwards and forcefully bashed the deer away. At his current Strength value, he could easily knock away the deer without moving a budge. The poor deer fell off its feet and landed on its back.

Zhang Yang immediately ran up, and grabbed the hind legs, spreading them apart!

Psychedelic Deer: "..."

Zhang Yang: "..."

"It's a girl." Said Zhang Yang as he quickly released the deer and ran back. Zhang Yang returned to the flying serpent and shot into the sky, leaving the furious female deer stomping the ground in anger.

Please, forgive me for my sins!

Zhang Yang felt like he was a pervert old uncle that runs around a park to trick little girls into doing some crazy, unspeakable sh*t with them! That was a man tricking another, but Zhang Yang just had to spread the legs of a female deer! How shameful would it be if someone had recorded the scene and distributed it throughout China!

Felice, who had been watching from the sidelines since the beginning, was rolling on the floor, laughing her lungs out. After a round of persuading, Felice had finally caved in and agreed to check on the gender of the deer they encountered. The two of them continued their sexual harassment journey and left many traumatized victims in their wake. If the deer could speak, the entire valley would have been screaming with cries of help like "THERE'S A PERVERT AROUND!!"

The number of female deer in this valley were too many to count. 30 minutes since their first victim, Zhang Yang had only managed to kill 3 male deer and obtain their fur. From a "dirty" perspective, those three "dudes" had a sea of hundreds of female doe to copulate! What a time to be alive! No wonder the number of male deer were so little, perhaps all of them were already "worn" out from the number of doe around!

Zhang Yang suddenly recalled the 6 female vixens in his office and felt a sudden chill down his spine. If he had not had such a strong will to resist their temptations, Zhang Yang would have already been swallowed whole by the six horny vixens! Zhang Yang Jr. might be rendered completely useless by the end of the day!

After close to an hour of hunting and harassing, Zhang Yang finally collected 5 counts of Deer fur. He then quickly made his way back to Gululu's straw house, all the while trying to make himself forget that he had ever done this deer harassing...thing...

Along the way back, Zhang Yang had a more leisure experience, farming the [Inscribed Cloths]. Zhang Yang had no need to target a specific monster or gender, and only killed any humanoid monster that was available along the route to Gululu's house. Just halfway through the journey, Zhang Yang had already amassed more than 1,000 [Inscribed Cloth]. Zhang Yang zoomed into the air and reached Gululu's straw house in just one hour.

Zhang Yang entered the house and found Gululu tinkering with something on the table. When he saw Zhang Yang entering the room, he quickly grabbed a white cloth on the side and hid it from view hastily. Angry and annoyed, Gululu stood up and yelled, "Could you at least knock the door!"

Zhang Yang shrugged. "What door?"

Gululu sighed heavily. There was a door, but it was already destroyed by Zhang Yang when he first came to his house. Gululu walked out of his seat and used his body to block the item from Zhang Yang's line of sight. "Why are you back so early?"

"Meh. All the things that you asked for? I got them." Zhang Yang unloaded his inventory and placed the items that he had asked for on the table.

"Not bad, for a human! Hm...This is good...This is great! With this, I can finally enter the—" Gululu bit his own tongue to stop himself from saying anything more. Pretending that it had not happened, Gululu examined the items on the table.

"Alright. Leave me alone. I need complete silence to focus on my work!" said Gululu, as he shoved Zhang Yang out of the house.

Zhang Yang already knew that the NPC was a big cheater. The materials he gathered was more than enough to make 3 [Cloak of the Orcs]! The dwarf had cheated him of his materials and had even refused to let Zhang Yang observe the crafting process. Perhaps, he was trying to use the extra materials to do something else...?

Zhang Yang had merely waited outside the house for a while when Gululu stomped out and threw a large piece of fabric at Zhang Yang. "Take it and leave! Do not let me see you again! I'll have you know that I chipped in my own materials to craft this for you!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Making the Cloak of the Orcs!'

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Clock of the Orcs!'

What a shame that the quest had not given any experience points!

The quest was a repeatable quest. As long as a player could hand over the three materials in their correct amounts, Gululu would craft out the [Cloak of the Orcs] again. However, since the NPC would consume all materials, even if it was enough to make two cloaks, the trade had to be precise, or the NPC would silently keep the materials to himself.

Zhang Yang rode on the flying serpent and came to the Cavern of Lave and Amber. Zhang Yang put on the [Cloak of the Orc] and his character was turned into a huge, 10-meter-tall male orc, wearing only a piece of small loincloth like a Japanese sumo wrestler.

"Haha! Big brother is so shameless!" cried Felice as she blushed.

"Laugh? Haha! I'll grab you!" said Zhang Yang as he gently lifted Felice and put her on his shoulder. He then paced quickly into the caverns.

The form he took just then was extremely huge and heavy. Each of his steps was so heavy that his lightest footsteps already shook the ground.

"Ho. Food! Good Food! Me eat!" cried one of the Man-Earing Orcs when it saw Felice on Zhang Yang's shoulder. It rushed towards Zhang Yang with both its hands outstretched.

Wham!

Zhang Yang greeted the incoming orc with a high-five to his face. The orc was blown off his feet and was sent flying till he smashed strongly, face-first into the cavern wall.

"Hahaha! You funny! He strong! Haha!" the orcs around the cavern laughed barbarically.

Among the orcs, it was a culture for them to respect the strong. When they see something they want, they would take it without question. Naturally, if they faced an overpowering foe, they would respect the stronger one and give up.

That was why Zhang Yang had wanted to display his strength when one of the orcs wanted to attack him for Felice. The orc that was "high-fived" to the face sulked angrily and sneaked away with a shameful expression.

Chapter 489: A Vixen Orc?!

His strength clearly demonstrated before every orc present and they submissively made way for him. That was what power could do in the orcish society. Not politics, not money, but by fists of fury. Whoever who wields the biggest stick shall be treated with utmost respect. As the saying goes, the strong prey on the weak.

Zhang Yang ventured into the deepest section of the orcs' lair.

The Cavern of Lava and Amber was unsurprisingly huge, considering the average height of the orcs which surpassed 10 meters when standing upright. The ceiling of the cave loomed 40 meters above the ground, providing sufficient space to move in comfort. Despite being in a cave, its interior was well-lit with shards of white stalactites that hung down a few inches from the ceiling. The stalactites were filled with glowing white, non-florescent liquid, giving off a warm light that was easy on the eyes. Although they did not provide the lighting of modern-day bulbs, Zhang Yang could view his surroundings and walk easily, without the need to squint his eyes.

After walking far enough to be out of the range where news of his strength had spread, he was challenged again by random orcs who wanted Felice as his dinner. They would only crumble before Zhang Yang, who found no need to draw his sword.

The cavern was ancient and was filled with many mineral deposits around the ground and the walls of the cavern system. There were many rare and high-leveled metal ores like Platinum and Magnesium which were needed to raise the Level of his territory to Level 4. It was a pity that Zhang Yang had the Herb Foraging Familiar instead of the Mineral Foraging Familiar. Zhang Yang could only stare at the precious metals as he walked past them since he could not engage in any actions that would break off his camouflage.

The concentration of minerals that spawned here could rival that of a Mining Cave! However, being the lair of high leveled orcs, the monsters

here were at least Level 120 Elite tier monsters. It would be a challenge to occupy this place perpetually. Professional miners would never reach a higher level than other players due to their specialized roles. It would be impossible for them to defeat the Level 120 Elite tier orc inhabitants of the cave. If a large number of players was sortied to handle the problem, the expenses would not be covered by the earnings of the miners here. That was why, even when many players had already reached Level 150 in Zhang Yang's previous life, the place was never occupied by any groups of players or guilds.

Zhang Yang continued on his venture and encountered a massive female orc that had appeared out of nowhere.

"Food! Good!" Her voice was so deep that anyone could have mistaken her for a male. It was not just that alone, her appearance was bigger than Zhang Yang by one or two meters. Her chest was grotesquely huge, covered only by a thin layer of fur pelt. The muscles in both of her arms and chest were bursting with power! Imagine being choked by those...

The female orc glared at Zhang Yang and bellowed arrogantly, "Shorty! Give me that piece of meat!"

Zhang Yang grunted in annoyance and swung his fist at the female orc.

"You dare to hit me!? Why would you not listen to me! In that case, I shall make you listen to me!" The female orc bellowed ragingly and hurled its spiked club at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not take out his sword and shield, as his character was currently in the shape of an orc. Although he had grown much larger, the sword and the shield remained the same. In his hands, the sword was like a toothpick and the shield was like a maple leaf. How could he hold a toothpick up and a leaf as a sword and a shield?

Zhang Yang held nothing back at all, guiding his fist into the face of the female orc. He pulled his fist back and sent it off again, wasting no time. His continuous punches came like lightning, with almost no intervals between. After one punch landed, another landed on her face. And another one after that. Zhang Yang was like Ip Man doing his consecutive

chain punches, too fast to even see. She took so many hits that she lost her balance and fell to the ground. The punches were all Supporting Attacks. The attack interval of a Supporting Attack is fully determined by the user's own dexterity and agility. Thanks to his training, Zhang Yang could punch 7 strikes in a second. To him, it was not as fast, but it was enough to send his enemy to the ground.

Thud!

With swollen eyes that were bulging out of their sockets, the female orc did not get up. Instead, she went on all fours and begged for her life.

"I yield! I yield!" said the female orc, as she spat out a couple of broken teeth and a pool of saliva, mixed with her own blood.

Zhang Yang could not equip his sword and was only able to deal Supporting Attacks. The damage dealt to the monster were all superficial. Zhang Yang scoffed, blew air to his fist, looked away arrogantly, and left the female orc be.

"Wait! Shorty! At least, share the little human with me! At most, I'll be in bed with you for one night!" said the female orc, disgruntled. She got up to her feet and winked at him. Zhang Yang saw how she had posed herself suggestively, and that wink so disgusting that it had almost forced Zhang Yang to display yesterday's semi-digested dinner to the world.

A vixen! A female orc vixen!?

Never in his life was there ever such a savage entity that would rely on seduction to get what it wants. No wonder they say that Love is blind. Well...true love, that is...

Zhang Yang forced himself to swallow the disgust and ignore the "hot chick" that was selling off her body for a good meal, and continued on his way.

"Hey! I must say, shorty...I am the most beautiful orc around here. Other orcs have been begging to have a night with me, and I would be demanding 3 good meals! You're not too tall for my taste, but you have the strength that suits me. I'll give you one last chance. I'll have you know

that chances like this do not come around often!" said the self-proclaimed beauty queen.

Zhang Yang groaned painfully. He cringed and spun around to give her a good round house kick to the head. Now that he had released his annoyance and anger, he turned back and walked away. Just as he took his first step, he felt a tight grip on his other leg. He turned down and saw the female orc hugging his left leg with both of her hands. Zhang Yang grunted and forcefully shook his leg free, but the female orc was holding on tightly!

"Mmm~~ You're the strongest orc that I have ever seen in my life! Please! Take me! I'm in love with you! Please, take me! I promise that I'll never sleep with another orc in my life, ever again!" said the female orc in ecstasy as she crawled to Zhang Yang and hugged Zhang Yang's leg with her hands and feet.

Love? Love my butt!

Zhang Yang let out some cold sweat and decided to punch some common sense into the female orc's head. After a good amount of beating, the female orc finally loosened her grip, allowing Zhang Yang to wriggled away. The moment Zhang Yang got back his legs, he jumped to his feet and sprinted like Usain Bolt.

Being strong had never been such a nuisance before!

"Teehee! Big brother is such a captivating man, that no matter what form you take, there will always be girls flocking to you!" said Felice smugly.

Zhang Yang cringed and frowned. While he was having the time of his life, the little girl had thought that he was an omnipotent god!

After shaking off the sex-crazy female orc, Zhang Yang searched around the cavern and went in deeper. After a great deal of searching, Zhang Yang finally stumbled across the aforementioned Iron Fanged White Wolf. Unlike the green name tagged orcs around, the Iron Fanged White Wolf had a red colored name tag which meant that they would immediately attack Zhang Yang if he walks into their aggro range.

Even though Felice is capable of killing the normal tier wolves with one clean blast, Zhang Yang's camouflage would immediately be dispelled the moment Zhang Yang is engaged in a fight. It would be a bad idea, since he had already infiltrated deep into the enemy's lair. Unless he uses {Burrow} to run away, he would be surrounded by a large number of Elite tier orcs and be beaten to death!

After evading the Iron Fanged White Wolf, Zhang Yang moved around the cavern and took a longer route to reach the deepest and darkest section of the entire system of the cavern. The cave that he arrived at was as large as a football field. To think that the God of War Fragment would be hidden in this place, it would take Zhang Yang a great deal of time to search for it! Although it was not comparable to searching for a needle in a haystack, it was not that simple as well. It's just a matter of time and the level of patience that one has.

The cave was the orc race's sacred ground. The entrance of the cave was heavily guarded by over 20 orcs and four Iron Fanged White Wolves. The problem was that the wolves were constantly on high alert, not providing any chance for him to sneak past! Zhang Yang could fight his way in, but there were 20 and more elite orcs, and one of them was a Violet-Platinum boss! Zhang Yang did not dare do it.

Technically, he could, by getting himself killed again and again. When players revive at a spot, they could choose to revive anywhere, 30 meters away from their bodies. Hence, even though they would be killed instantly after reviving, they could progress slowly by respawning 30 meters forward each time. It might consume a lot of time, but it should be possible to reach the end of the cavern.

This strategy can only be applied if the place is not a dungeon-based instance. In a proper dungeon, after a player dies, they can only revive at the entrance of the dungeon and would have to run physically to their bodies. Zhang Yang did not need to do anything so tedious, as he had {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void} to sneak past the enemy guards.

Since he had no idea on what was hidden in the cave, Zhang Yang decided to use {Burrow}. {Shadow of the Void} would remove all living

entities in his vision, whereas with {Burrow}, Zhang Yang could still observe anything above the ground. If there are monsters inside the cave, things could end badly for him.

Zhang Yang returned Felice to his inventory and activated {Burrow}. The ground beneath his feet turned into liquid form, allowing Zhang Yang to sink in like a submarine. Zhang Yang sunk 20 meters into the ground and walked underneath the feet of the monsters and into the cave. Luckily, there were no monsters inside the cave and after walking away from the cave entrance, Zhang Yang resurfaced on the ground and brought out Felice back to the world as they started their journey to search for the God of War Inheritance Fragment.

Only after entering, did Zhang Yang understand why the orcs were guarding this place. There were many giant-sized coffins inside the cave, scattered all over the area. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had only managed to complete a few quests in this place to purchase a few skill books and recipes from the Reputation merchant there. Never once had he ventured this deep into the cave to stumble across this sacred ground.

It looks like Zhang Yang would be grave-robbing once again. With great force, both Zhang Yang and Felice opened the cases of each coffin and practically rummaged the contents inside for the Inheritance Fragment.

As time went on, Zhang Yang took 10 hours or so to have searched only 25% of the total coffins in the area. The only silver lining was that it was a sacred ground. There would not be a single monster inside there to interrupt them. Even though Zhang Yang was no longer disguised by the [Cloak of the Orcs,] he had no fear of being discovered.

24 hours later, Zhang Yang was losing patience.

Luckily, only the first pieces of Inheritance Fragments are the hardest to find. With the first piece acquired, it would serve as something like a GPS, guiding players to other Inheritance Fragments. However, those would merely be the pre-requisite quests. After gathering all the fragments, Zhang Yang would have to complete another series of quest to obtain the God of War Inheritance.

Zhang Yang logged out a few times for his biological needs and workout routine. He occasionally had fun with Wei Yan Er, and even teased Han Ying Xue along the way. Two days had passed, and Zhang Yang had almost turned over every coffin in the cave, making no progress whatsoever.

Was the...the American pig trolling the world, making up a tall tale about his Inheritance? If that was the case, he would conquer the territory for the North America region, kill that f*cker, and camp around his body for 3 days and 3 nights!

Just when he was about to throw a fit, Zhang Yang notice a shadow moving around the entrance. It slunk around to a corner of the cave. It squatted on the ground and got busy with something.

Zhang Yang moved in closer without making any noise, and realized that it was the dwarf, Gululu!

Chapter 490: Starting the Inheritance Quest

How did that dwarf get in?

Zhang Yang moved like a shadow and quietly hid behind a coffin closest to the dwarf. He peered out and saw that he was unpacking many large bottles, mixing them up together. There was cloud of colored gas floating up and around him. After mixing a couple more liquids, he raised a bottle of what seemed to be a completed potion and spoke to himself happily. "I did it! I will be the first to find the ancient treasure! I will be the one to write this historical event down in the books! I will be the greatest explorer there is! I will be the richest there is!"

Gululu then poured the liquid onto a solid block on the floor, melting it away. The rock was pitch-black and looked extremely tough, but when Gululu poured the liquid over it, it turned into a sand and was blown away. Gululu then brushed the now softened rock away and unearthed a black colored box.

The box was not big. It measured only 20cm wide, 10cm long, and 10cm tall. It looked plain, and was not even locked.

"Ah! My precious!" cried Gululu happily. He then opened the box's lid and tossed it aside. There was a large, 17 to 18 cm long metal pole. The metal pole was extremely tattered, and both ends appeared to have been broken off something larger. It seemed to be the broken-off handle of an axe, or a hammer.

It had to be the Fragment of the God of War Inheritance!

Just when the dwarf NPC reached out to touch it, Zhang Yang reached out as well and tapped Gululu's shoulder.

"WOAH!"

The dwarf jumped in surprise and leaped up 2 meters high in the air. Zhang Yang was greatly impressed at his sudden burst of strength and grinned. Gululu, on the other hand, turned to Zhang Yang in shock and

asked, "Why are you here?"

Zhang Yang smiled silently, his hand shot out to grab the metal pole in the box.

"Argh! It's mine! My precious!" cried Gululu in a fit of anger. He then took out a large battle hammer and swung it at Zhang Yang's head.

Zhang Yang raised his shield effortlessly and deflected the hammer, knocking it completely off-course. Zhang Yang snickered and said, "Dwarf, that thing belongs to no one! Finder's keepers, loser's weepers!"

"Bastard! I found it! It belongs to me! I have been searching for more than 10 years! I shall have your head!" cried Gululu angrily.

Zhang Yang finally understood how things were. The NPC was the "guide" for the God of War Inheritance quest. As long as player waited in the cave long enough, the NPC would appear! As long as the player takes note of such small, slinky actions, they would find the Fragment of the God of War Inheritance. That, or they would not be able to find such a small, unassuming object in such a large field.

It was kind of sad for the dwarf. If the Fragment is taken away from the NPC, it would be forever gone, since the quest is Unique, and could never be repeated again.

Felice morphed into her human form and thrust her spear at Gululu. "Little Dwarf! How disrespectful you are to big brother!"

Gululu was terrified of Felice. Back then, the fair maiden had launched a {Fire Missile} and burned half of this brown beard away. Dwarves treated their beards as prized possessions, and would never shave them off. Gululu remembered her fire attack very well and cowed away.

Zhang Yang took the chance and took hold of the metal pole as Gululu scrambled from Felice.

[God of War Inheritance Fragment (1)] (Inheritance Class: S)

Description: Gather all God of War Inheritance Fragments to form a complete God of War Keepsake. You can start the Inheritance quest after

obtaining the Keepsake. You will acquire the Inheritance God of War after completing a series of quests. You will gain a boost to your class skills and also the God of War Inheritance skill. All Fragments of the God of War Inheritance will resonate with each other. If you are killed by a player who possesses a piece of the same Fragment, the Fragment in your inventory will be dropped upon your death. All Inheritance Fragments can only be stored in your inventory.

Special Restriction: God of War Inheritance can only be acquired by Warrior classes.

Got it!

Now that he thought about it, the first piece of the Inheritance Fragment had been rather easy to obtain, since all he did was running and searching. That was only due to Zhang Yang's past experience. If he had not been reborn with his memories intact, it would have been impossible for him to obtain the piece! In fact, that knowledge was not enough, even if players, other than Zhang Yang had managed to get into the cave, they would need to have the luck of spotting Gululu!

Luck! Luck is required to obtain most of the Inheritances! Naturally, some players were lacking in the financial aspect. Some of them would be willing to sell the piece of Inheritance that they had, and sell it off to the highest bidder. Even it is an extremely rare piece, money comes first for these folk. As the game progressed, higher leveled Inheritances played an important role in taking the top. The inheritance that could induce a transformation, even more so! If players had chosen to sell an Inheritance Fragment that was capable of transforming a player, it would be a mistake that would haunt them for the rest of their lives!

Once a player activates the Inheritance transformation, they could easily raid a Hard mode dungeon alone, or perhaps even a Hardcore mode as well! During PvP battles, unless players had transformation skills of their own, they should simply throw in the towel when facing one such player.

Now that Zhang Yang had easily swiped away the hard-earned treasure that Gululu had found, the poor dwarf stomped on the ground angrily like

a child. The dwarf was so enraged that he even ignored Felice and charged towards Zhang Yang to fight him head on. The little dwarf swung his hammer rapidly at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang only laughed and held his arm out, holding the short dwarf back by his head. No matter how fast or strong the dwarf was, it meant nothing if he could not even touch Zhang Yang! Still, Gululu was a green name tag entity, killing him would not do any good to Zhang Yang.

"Bastard! I'll bash yer head in!" cried Gululu as he withdrew a few steps away. Gululu then took aim and came at Zhang Yang with a jump attack. However, Zhang Yang was much quicker, and he easily avoided the jump attack simply by taking a few steps back. Gululu's attack landed on a coffin instead and knocked the entire thing down.

Wham!

The lid of the coffin cracked open and the body inside rolled out.

"Who dares disturb the dead!" a low voice echoed through the entire cave. What followed next were massive skeleton hands bursting out from inside the other coffins, each of them spawning an Orc Spectres!

F*ck me, that's more than a thousand elite Spectre monsters! What a cunning NPC!

"Felice!" Zhang Yang called out to her and Felice nodded her head. Zhang Yang then unsummoned her and immediately activated {Burrow} to escape via the underground pathway. Poor Gululu had his plan backfire on him, as he had become the one and only target for the spectres to attack. It would not be a good end for him...

Zhang Yang then used a [Teleportation Scroll] to return to Morning town. Now that he had the first and vital piece of the Inheritance Fragment, the next steps would be to hunt for the remaining 9 Fragments. Zhang Yang wanted to complete the Inheritance before more players from the Japan-Korea region enters the Chaos Realm. By then, he could transform and kill all the players himself! How awesome would that be! Haha!

Zhang Yang smirked. Now that he had the first piece, the nine others should be easier to hunt. Zhang Yang mounted on Whitey Jr. and flew, map after map. As long as there is a piece of the God of War Inheritance Fragment available in the map Zhang Yang arrives in, the system would automatically notify Zhang Yang about it. Most of the Inheritance Fragments should be included in a quest. They could be hidden in plain sight, or stashed in the most obscure of places. When Zhang Yang holds the first piece of the God of War Inheritance Fragment near another Fragment, both Fragments would glow and produce a bright light, which would show the position of the Fragment.

The Fragment pieces are not dropped by monsters in the first place. They were merely hidden away in random places that had many monsters guarding them. Before actually hunting them, Zhang Yang would have to kill his way around to make sure that the place was safe. The God of War Inheritance Fragments were all over the place, they were deep in a valley, sometimes buried deep in a snow pile, buried on the side of a steep cliff, buried deep in the desert, and the last piece was in a pot, deep in the ocean! There was even a Level 135 Mythical tier shark boss guarding it!

Zhang Yang got Felice to lure the boss away, and he rode the Mythical Turtle to swim towards the pot to get the Inheritance Fragment. The pot was buried in the seabed, and it took quite some time to retrieve the last piece of the Inheritance Fragment!

Zhang Yang unsummoned both the Mythical Turtle and Felice, before leaving the battlefield with {Shadow of the Void}. Zhang Yang arrived at a safe location and quickly teleported to Morning town.

His hands trembling with excitement, Zhang Yang assembled all the Fragment pieces together with extreme care. As the last piece fell in place, a bright radiant glow burst out, and all of the fragment pieces fused together, as if they were being welded together. The fragment pieces formed a long battle axe, shining with an intense radiance.

Zhang Yang picked up the hammer and found that it was unexpectedly easy to lift. Zhang Yang took the axe up and carefully examined the axe. All of the fragments had magically welded together. The surface of the axe

was so smooth, and there were no traces of any cracks!

[God of War Inheritance Keepsake] (Quest Item)

Use: Initiates the God of War Inheritance quest.

Class Requirement: Warrior

Level Requirement: 100

Without hesitating, Zhang Yang initiated the quest. The axe glowed brightly, and the light entered his body as it surrounded him like an ethereal spirit.

‘Ding! You have initiated the God of War Inheritance. This is a series of quests. When you have completed all the quests, you will obtain the God of War Inheritance!’

‘Ding! You have accepted a quest: The Search for Meka!’

[The Search for Meka] (Difficulty Level: D)

Description: After gruesome hours of searching, you have collected all 10 pieces of the Inheritance Fragments and formed an ancient axe. Based on your inexperienced knowledge of history, you have failed to determine the origin of the axe. However, you have heard of an old warrior named Meka. With the man’s vast experience with weapons, he might be able to tell you something. Meka is currently residing at the Shuhada Lake of the Dayu Rainforest. What are you waiting for! Get to it, quickly!

Completion: Find Meka and ask him of the axe’s origin 0/1

More running around again...

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. However, it was a good thing, as he was the first player in the entire world to start an Inheritance quest. Perhaps, if word gets out that he is the first to obtain an Inheritance, people will start going crazy! Nobody but Zhang Yang was in the Chaos Realm, and nobody else had ever laid eyes upon an Inheritance Fragment. For him to acquire a complete set of an S-tiered Inheritance would be too much for them. Zhang Yang should be looking out for flying slippers coming his way.

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and shot to the sky towards the Dayu

Rainforest. The poor flying serpent was pushed to the limits as Zhang Yang flew nonstop for several hours. When Zhang Yang reached the Dayu Rainforest, he stopped for a while, allowing the serpent to have its rest as he determined the direction to Shuhada Lake. The Dayu Rainforest was like the Amazon rainforest, where trees grew to the scrape the skies. Zhang Yang flew over the forest and saw nothing but vast greenery. Luckily, the lake was huge and easy to spot from the sky. Since Zhang Yang had some recollections of the place from his past life, he had only taken another 10 minutes prior to the previous rest and arrived at his destination, the Shuhada Lake.

Zhang Yang had determined the exact location via the minimap and landed next the blue lake. The flying serpent was so exhausted that it lay flat on the ground and refused to move. Even when Felice tried to growl at it, the flying serpent did not budge.

Since Flying Mounts were more suitable for long distance travel, Zhang Yang unsummoned the flying serpent and summoned the bear for a change. He rode the bear around the lake and begun his search for the NPC called Meka.

Chapter 491: Meka

Meka was not difficult to spot. In no time at all, Zhang Yang had already found a small hut by the lake. There was a vegetation farm next to the hut. A middle-aged man was in the midst of it, watering the plants. The man was sloppily dressed in tattered cloth linen clothes. Everything from his movements, to his appearance, had no indication of his colorful past. Still, there was one thing about his appearance. Zhang Yang could see that, beneath the ragged clothes, the man had a muscular body. He had a pretty good looking face too. Zhang Yang believed that if he were to change into something a little more luxurious, he would easily be one of those noble elitists. Even right then, there was a sense of maturity, especially the light in his eyes. He had some mysterious charm that would entice even the loveliest of maidens!

He was definitely a man of tales.

[Meka] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1,200,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack:???

Skills:???

Note: Once a world-renowned warrior, until he took an arrow to the knee. Literally.

The NPC was out of the norm. He was only Level 120, and Zhang Yang was able to see his HP and Defense value, but not his Attack nor Skills! Zhang Yang had never done the God of War Inheritance before, thus he had never seen this NPC before in his life. Zhang Yang got down the bear and walked towards the garden's edge and spoke politely. "Excuse me, sir. Are you Meka the Warrior?"

"Mm. Warrior?" Meka muttered, his eyes glinted with a burning passion which died down almost immediately. He then shook his head and said, "I

am indeed the person you seek for. But, I'm no warrior. I'm just a hermit now. Farming is all I do. I'm no longer fit to be a warrior! Young man, how may I help you?"

"Sir, there's this—" Just as Zhang Yang started to speak, there was a loud commotion from inside the forest behind the hut. A group of 12 female soldiers marched out and surrounded Meka around the garden.

The female soldiers were all equipped with metal cuirasses that were designed to be 18-SX! The armor was more for censorship purposes than actual protection! Even so, the low-cut design of the metal made them look more like metal corsets. The upper portions of their bodies were completely exposed, leaving more than half of their breasts exhibited to the world to see. Their lower halves were protected only by thin sheets of metal skirts. Perhaps, they were trying to mimic Wonder Woman's costume, except that this was far more erotic and outrageous. One kick, and they would show the world their huuhaa!

Metal may not come cheap, but isn't there a better way of saving costs!?

[Snowflake Castle Guards] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 17,800

Defense: 100

Skills:

[Entice]: Entices a target, rendering it unable to engage in any actions or movement for the next 3 seconds. Instant. Range: 10 meters

Note: Snowflake Castle's loyal soldiers. Answers only to the Lady Countess Kate Jingle.

"Meka--!" cried the leader of the group, as she stood up front and approached the middle-aged man. "Lady Countess Kate Jingle has requested you for an audience in the castle. We are here to escort you back!"

Ayy! Ever heard of queuing up?

Zhang Yang bit his lip angrily. He was there first and was already

engaged in a conversation with him! Don't think that a public service officer could barge in anywhere they want! It's an abuse of power!

Meka shook his head. He continued gardening and averted his gaze away from the female soldiers. "I do not wish to see her. Please leave. You're disturbing me."

"Insolent! Lady Kate has already thrice invited you! It would be going against the high court for rejecting such an invitation. Today, the invitation has been turned into an order. If you refuse to have the audience of Lady Kate, her orders demand us to bring you to her by force, dead or alive!"

The female soldier pulled out her spear and let out a spirited 'hah!'. The other 11 soldiers who were surrounding the garden followed her actions and quickly got into their battle stance. With a unified movement, the female soldiers approached Meka and trampled over his neatly planted garden.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily, followed by a disgruntled grumble. They could have chosen a better timing to talk to Meka, but no! They had to barged in just when Zhang Yang was about ask Meka about the Inheritance Keepsake! Obviously, this was part of the quest's script. The system had made it so that a player will never have a smooth-sailing quest. Now that the situation has developed to this extent, Zhang Yang completely forewent reasoning. He slid across the ground with {Charge} and crashed into the leader of the group. He intended to get them out of the way and proceed with the quest.

Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and blasted the group with {Pulverizing Flame}, dealing 3,000 fire damage every second! Zhang Yang adjusted his position during the commotion and activated {Blast Wave}. His attack had struck all 12 soldiers and had stunned them for 4 seconds, providing enough time for Felice's {Pulverizing Flame} to tick by at least 4 times to deal a total of 12,000 damage!

When the stun effect ended, Zhang Yang had regained enough Rage, Rage that he used to cast {Horizontal Sweep}. The powerful slash had

dealt more than 8,000 damage to everyone. With less than 6,000 HP left, all 12 female soldiers were defeated at the same time. However, they were not instantly killed. They fled with only 1 HP remaining. Perhaps, the system had turned them unkillable?

"Wretched fool! You dare to attack the guards of Lady Kate? You shall be obliterated! Thousands shall hunt you down till the end of time!" cried the leader of the soldier group as they fled.

Felice was not satisfied. She soared into the sky and shot down towards their direction. However, after 10 seconds or so, she flew back with a solemn face. "They had something magical; some sort of barrier was protecting them! I cannot deal any damage..." Felice looked so cute, trying her best to serve Zhang Yang. He then patted her head gently.

With the god-mode granted by the system, there was no way for them to be killed. Obviously, they would be an enemy that Zhang Yang would have to deal with later in the quest progresses.

"Young man, I see that the spirit of youth is brimming in your soul!" said Meka, though it did not sound like a compliment, especially when the short skirmish had not affected his mood. He readjusted the crops that had been destroyed and continued to water the plants on the far side of the garden.

Zhang Yang sighed and followed him closely and took out the ancient axe. "Mr. Meka. I have spent days and nights searching for this Keepsake and had ventured around the world to ask of its origin. No one could tell me anything about it! However, I heard about a man. A man who had experienced countless wars and battles, who could possibly explain the origin of this Keepsake. Perhaps, it could be you?"

Meka did not raise his head. Instead, he continued to water the crops around him. He only shifted his glare from the corner of his eyes and was shocked immediately. He dropped the watering can in his hand and exclaimed out loud. "The Fallen Axe of the God of War!"

Zhang Yang put up a faked surprise reaction and gasped. "Mr! You do know about this axe!"

Meka realized that he had given his interest away, and was too late to not get involved about it. Reluctantly, he nodded. There were still traces of surprise in his eyes.

"Mr. Please tell me about the axe!" said Zhang Yang eagerly.

Meka frowned and contemplated for a while. "The axe's origin is something that everyone has agreed not to speak of, for it has unimaginable power! I cannot simply indulge you in its secret for naught! Perhaps, you can do something for me and I'll tell you about the axe's great secret after you have fulfilled my requests.

There is no free lunch in the world; everything comes with a price! Even something as trivial as information!

Zhang Yang nodded his head and asked. "I'm honored. If you have any last wishes, I'll be more than happy to grant them for you."

Meka turned solemn with a slight trace of anger. "Young man. I do not have any last wishes. I'm not going to die just yet."

Zhang Yang laughed awkwardly and said, "Wrong choice of words... Sorry!"

Meka turned his gaze to somewhere far away and with a thousand-yard stare, he spoke. "I was once a brave warrior. There was nothing that I could not kill. I have slain dragons, monsters, castle lords, demons, and many other entities that posed a threat to the human world. Every single day, there would be countless noblewomen who come asking to be my lover. Sigh...what a drag...I almost lost count of every single woman that I had shared a bed with, but it had to be more than 20,000!"

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine. Even if he was born as a studhorse stallion, doing it just once a day would already be 365 times a year. 20,000 "shots" would take roughly 54 years to fire. Just how much "ammo" does he have!? Or rather, how big was his balls!

Meka expressed a nostalgic emotion. "I had an arch enemy. He hated me, but he could never win a fair fight against me. Hence, he sent a woman to approach me. She made a fool out of me! Back then, I was

rather famous for doing it a lot. Whenever someone comes to me asking for it, I would never reject it. However, the sly b*tch made me impotent!"

The middle aged man slammed both his fists against each other and said, "She planted a poison in my body, making me losing my manhood! I'll be d*mned for my own actions. My strength, my prowess, all originates from my manhood! Ever since I lost my ability to pleasing a woman, I was no longer the same man."

Zhang Yang stared in disbelief. This famous man, a man who had won countless wars, remained undefeated, was that all because he had an insatiable lust?! Did he have a massive raging boner as he killed and slew his enemies?! What sort of raging pervert would do such a thing!

Zhang Yang tightened his face as hard as he could, to resist the urge to laugh like the little brat usually did.

"After I had lost my powers, I had to move out of my hometown. To avoid becoming the laughing stock, I've chosen to live the hermit's life." Meka continued, after sighing.

"However,...the shadow always exists wherever the sun shines. No matter where I go, trouble will always find its way to me. Just as I had settled here, the Lady Countess Kate Jingle had already taken a liking to me and had decided to invite me to her castle! Naturally, I had to reject her. If I was still as capable as before, I would never reject such an invitation! I would have already **** and **** her brains out!"

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine. Awkwardly, Zhang Yang diverted the topic back. "Sir. What is it that you would have me do?"

Meka looked at Zhang Yang with excitement in his eyes and said, "I have been a recluse for a while, but I have done some research. I've found the means and methods of removing the poison from my body! Young man, I've now lost all my battle power, and I am not able to engage in any battles. That is why I am asking you to collect a few materials for me! When the deed is done, and my manhood is restored, I shall tell you the tale of the Fallen Axe of the God of War."

'Ding! Meka has a quest for you: Materials to Treat an old Wound. Will

you accept it?’

Accept.

[Materials to Treat an old Wound] (Difficulty Level: A)

Description: Meka had requested you to search for ingredients to heal his old wound that had robbed him of his manhood. The materials are as follows: Rhino’s Horn (The thicker, the better. You may find a large number of Rhinos in the Iron Bull Valley in the west). Wolfberry Flower Stem (The longer, the better. You may find Wolfberry Flowers in the Poison Shroud Swarm to the North). The Tiger Penis of Tiger King Anusuba (The Biggest d*ck should belong to the Tiger King Anusuba. You may find Anusuba at the Blood Mist Camp located in the East).

Completion: Rhino’s Horn 0/200 Wolfberry Flower Stem 0/50 The Tiger Penis of Tiger King Anusuba 0/1

Thicker...Longer....D*mn, this old man, the desire to restore his manhood is strong!

Zhang Yang nodded his head at the man and said, "Sir. Wait for my good news. I shall return, soon enough! Felice, off we go!"

Zhang Yang hopped on the flying serpent and soared to the west. After a short flight, Zhang Yang came down to the Iron Bull Valley. There were many types of species of the bull, such as the bulls, cows, wildebeest, and also the largest among them, the rhinos. Many of them were merely normal tier. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang’s hunting targets were the elite tiered White Back Rhinos!

[White Back Rhino] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 130

HP: 1,300,000

Defense: 1,400

Melee Attack: 9,110 – 11,110

Skills:

[Stomps of War]: Shakes the earth, deals 5,000 Natural damage to all targets within 3 meters. Causes knockback - 10 meters away from the caster and slows down the target's movement speed by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Charge]: Charges to the target. Stuns the target for 5 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

[Horn Attack]: Attacks the target with a sharp horn. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Has a small chance of dealing 3 times the normal attack.

Note: The strongest entity in the Iron Bull Valley. Occasionally consumes meat to sharpen its teeth.

"Let's whack'em Felice!" cried Zhang Yang, as he dove down from the sky. When he was 10 meters away from the rhino, he jumped down from Whitey Jr. and charged at the rhino that was 3 meters tall and 8 meters long.

Needless to say, having a battle mount grants two major advantages. The first being the life sharing passive skill that increases the maximum HP. The second, having an increase in movement speed. For Zhang Yang, since he had the skill {Beast Taming}, he could dismount anytime he wanted to and get on the mount again whenever his HP is getting low. Since Zhang Yang was a melee attack class, he had no need to move around, especially since the opponent is a monster. They would not move around like a player would, but instead, they would blindly attack the players head on. Hence, movement speed was not all too important for Zhang Yang. However, during mounting, many skills would be rendered unusable. After all, being mounted did restrict a great deal of the rider's movements.

Zhang Yang swung his sword and dealt 3,420 damage. Zhang Yang first landed {Cripple Defense} since he had not yet fully mastered {Eagle Eye}. Landing a full charge of {Cripple Defense} would be the highest priority, especially to those with high Defense.

Compared to Zhang Yang, Felice was much stronger. Her {Fire Missile} had easily dealt more than 20,000 damage to the rhino, turning it into a towering, black figure of soot!

"Gauun!" The best awoke from being stunned and growled to the high heavens. Its stomped the ground angrily and charged towards Zhang Yang with its horn faced down.

{Block}!

‘-981!’ {Block} reflected damage.

‘-4,974!’ {Shield Bash}!

After two attacks, the rhino’s aggro was locked onto Zhang Yang. Ignoring the airborne Felice, the rhino was determined to gore Zhang Yang.

Wham!

The rhino stomped the ground with such force that it had sent out a white, electrical current that spread all around. Zhang Yang felt a slight tingle, with a damage text popping up on his character. He was immediately pushed back to 10 meters away and felt that his feet were quadruple their normal weight. As the ground was flashing with electrical current, Zhang Yang’s movement speed had greatly suffered.

{Stomp of War}!

Fortunately, the skill would only affect targets that are on the ground. Both Felice and the flying serpent were completely unaffected by the attack and was attacking without stopping. Fire missiles and poisons spits were constantly splashing on the rhino’s massive body.

Shush!

The rhino kicked its hind legs out and took off like a jet, ramming against Zhang Yang with its sharp horn, stunning him for 5 seconds.

{Warrior’s Will}!

Zhang Yang retaliated immediately by smashing a guaranteed critical hit of {Destructive Smash}!

‘-17,802!’

The rhino took a sudden burst of damage and was enraged. Its entire

character glowed with a red hue and it charged towards Zhang Yang again. This time, the attack that was dealt to him was massive.

‘-20,537!’

{Horn Attack} 300% damage!

What a strong burst of damage! The attack could even instantly kill a Gray-Silver tiered tanker!

Chapter 492: Gathering the Materials

After all, Zhang Yang was not a mere Gray-Silver Tier tanker. He had a full set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment! Furthermore, those were not some random pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, cobbled up together into one set! Zhang Yang had a complete set of equipment! How would it be possible for a mere Elite Tier monster to suppress him!

Zhang Yang began to use his 'Supporting Attacks'. He smashed his shield against the monster aggressively! Although the body mass of the White Back Rhino was huge, the system of the game does not differentiate the toughness of the monster based on its appearance. Only the numbers corresponding to the statistics and attributes would be taken into calculation. Therefore, when Zhang Yang bashed his shield against the monster, the Level 130 Elite Tier monster felt like it was hit by a train, because Zhang Yang's Strength was much higher than its own. As Zhang Yang's 'Supporting Attacks' kept staggering it, it could not even use normal attacks on him!

Zhang Yang did not even need to use his {Block}. That way, he could reserve his {Block} for the rhino's {Battering Horn}, which would no longer harm him. Zhang Yang blocked all the skill attacks of the monster with his {Block}, one after another. The damage output of two persons and a Serpent was really outstanding. In about just a minute, the huge 'fellow' had collapsed right in front of Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly went up to the dead body of the monster and began to cut the rhino's horn off, and then he placed the 'huge and thick' horn in his inventory.

Moving on.

So Zhang Yang started 'poaching', and continued to slay as many rhinos as he could. He would always remember to cut the horns off, as that was his initial objective, which was to collect the [Rhino Horns]. Fortunately for him, the area had a large number of White Back Rhinos. He merely took four hours to collect all 200 [Rhino Horns]. Then, he quickly rode

atop Whitey Jr. and departed for his next destination --- the Venomous Swarm.

It was a forbidden, hostile land that would give people the creeps. Unidentified grayish gas gushed out from the swarm, clouding the air, making the entire place very eerie. The moment Zhang Yang set foot into the shroud, he was inflicted with a 'Poisoned' status.

[Poison Shroud]: Inflicts 2,000 Nature Damage to the target every 3 seconds. Lasts until the target leaves the effective area of the {Poison Shroud}.

His damage absorption could now absorb a total damage of 2,228, and with another 20% of his damage immunity, he would absorb anything that did less than 2,785 points of damage! Meanwhile, Felice had over 4,000 magic resistance points in her Dragon-hawk Form. This {Poison Shroud} could cause 1 damage on her every second. It practically did nothing to her at all!

Other players would only be committing suicide in this swamp. But, the 'Poison Effect' of the place barely even bothered Zhang Yang and Felice. It was as if the two of them were casually walk in their own garden, behind their house, and of course, Whitey Jr. was strolling along, just as comfortably!

Zhang Yang let out the little [Herb Foraging Familiar]. The little familiar gobbled up the 1,000 gold coins and went off into the woods to work. Zhang Yang had no idea at all if [Lycium Stem] was considered as a kind of [Herb] or not. But since there was no harm in trying, why not let the little familiar go out for a walk and work at the same time? This was still a Level 100 map after all. The little guy just might bring back a large number of valuable and rare [Herbs] from this Level 100 map!

Zhang Yang also happened to be a practicing Herbalist. So, he activated his skill {Herb Search} to locate available [Herbs] in the area. All available [Herbs] within an area of 100 meters would show up on his map, with him as the center point of it. However, after entering the Level 100 map, his map would only show the location of the [Herbs] available in the area, but

no longer showed the names and details of the [Herbs]. Zhang Yang would have to go closer and use his skill - {Observe} in order to read the details and attributes of the [Herbs].

Soon after, Zhang Yang began to see a flashing dot on his map. Before he could get down from Whitey Jr., the flashing dot of light had suddenly disappeared. Zhang Yang understood immediately. That was the [Herb Foraging Familiar] doing its work, as promised. So, Zhang Yang turned towards another direction, as he wanted to avoid clashing into the 'working field' that his [Herb Foraging Familiar] covered.

In no time at all, Zhang Yang found another new flashing dot on his map. So, he quickly patted Whitey Jr. and went towards it. When he arrived at the location, he only saw a weird-looking plant by the upside of the swamp. The stem of the plant was pitch black in colour, and a pale-blue flower bloomed right on top of the stem.

He used his {Observe} to take a closer look at the plant. This was the [Wolfberry Flower] that he had been looking for, all the while!

Hiss!

The moment Zhang Yang got down from Whitey Jr., a weird-looking monster suddenly emerged out of the pond nearby and charged right at him! This creature had the head of a snake, the body of a turtle, and the tail of a deer along with four legs and claws of a leopard! Apparently, this monster was guarding the [Wolfberry Flower]. The moment it revealed itself, the monster opened it's mouth wide and attempted to bite Zhang Yang.

[Turtle-Snake Chimera]

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 5,598 - 6,598

Skills:

[Poison Infection]: A certain rate of inflicting poison effect on its current target. The target would be inflicted with an additional 2,000 Nature Damage every 15 seconds. The effect can be stacked up to 5 times.

Pang!

Zhang Yang quickly raised up his shield and activated his {Block}. The Turtle-Snake Chimera bit into the solid shield and almost lost it's teeth! Zhang Yang laughed out loud and began to swing his sword at the Turtle-Snake Chimera.

This monster did not only know how to bite. The four sharp claws were also its weapons. It would raise up it's claws and slash at Zhang Yang at random times, giving Zhang Yang no time to predict and guard against it's claw attacks! In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang was already inflicted with five layers of {Poison Infection}! Unfortunately for the monster, five layers of {Poison Infection} could only damage Zhang Yang by 10,000 damage, and it only damaged Zhang Yang once every 3 seconds. So every time the effect of {Poison Infection} kicked in, Zhang Yang was only inflicted with 2,000 damage, which was not even enough to break through his defense!

"Hahaha! Noob tank! My cousin and I received a Main Story Quest! We would get a reward of +2 Levels when we complete the quest! So, right after this quest, we would be able to enter the Chaos Realm! Finally!" Just when Zhang Yang was in the heat of battling the Turtle-Snake Chimera, he suddenly received a voice message from the little brat Wei yan Er.

He smiled to himself, saying, "How could you go behind my back and take a Main Story Quest without me! You wound me!"

"Can't help it, we already got the quest after cousin sister saved a perverted old man from death. We tried to do a Quest Share with the others but the system did not allow us to do so! So, noob tank! You must look for two [Flying Mounts] for me and my cousin, as soon as possible!" Wei Yan Er squeaked shrilly.

Zhang Yang frowned and he said, "It's not so easy to find one [Flying Mount]. And you want two? There are a large number of [Mounts] on the

ground though. Why don't I help you change for a better one?"

"You liar! How else did you get a [Flying Mount] so soon upon entering the Chaos Realm!" Wei Yan Er snarled.

That was really pure luck! Luck does not come every day!

Zhang Yang shook his head resignedly and said, "Alright, I will try to find two fine [Flying Mounts] for you and your cousin."

After he agreed, the little brat Wei Yan Er was finally contented. Then, she hung up and went straight to her Main Story Quest.

Zhang Yang started scolding himself silently. Based on the speed of regular leveling up, the second player should only be able to enter the Chaos Realm in about 10 days more or so! But Zhang Yang had forgotten to take into account the Main Story Quests, the Hidden Quests that would reward players with additional levels! There might already be other players in the Chaos Realm by now!

The real 'World War' was about to explode!

After a series of aggressive fighting, the Turtle-Snake Chimera was finally slain and it went limp before Zhang Yang's sword. The monster dropped a few pieces of [Snake Meat] and [Level 5 Turtle Shells]. The [Snake Meat] could be used as an ingredient for cooking, while the [Turtle Shell] was one of the materials required to make a Defensive Armor piece. So, any player with the profession of Tailoring, Leather Work, or Smithing could make use of them.

Currently, only Zhang Yang had managed to acquire a [Level 5 Turtle Shell]. If Zhang Yang took it back to The Little Merchandise Shop, there would definitely be a bunch of crafting type players swarming around his shop, fighting for the materials!

After clearing the monster from that area, Zhang Yang picked up the [Wolfberry Flower] and succeeded in collecting his first [Wolfberry Flower Stem], bringing him closer to getting his quest done. Surely the NPC would be getting closer to restoring the former glory of his dick!

Getting back on Whitey Jr., Zhang Yang proceeded forward. He slew

many Turtle-Snake Chimerae, collected many [Wolfberry Flower Stem] and quite a number of [Level 5 Turtle Shells]. He was earning another small fortune here!

One hour later, the [Herb Foraging Familiar] had returned to him with quite a number of [Herbs]. Zhang Yang took a look and realized that there were no signs of any [Wolfberry Flower Stem]. Although the Profession skill {Herb Search} could locate and indicate the location of [Wolfberry Flowers] on the player's map, this type of flower was a specific quest item, and no such [Herb] existed in the entire game for general usage. That was why the [Herb Foraging Familiar] could not locate any of the [Wolfberry Flowers].

Well, it's logical if one stayed calm and thought about it. If the [Wolfberry Flower] really was a type of [Herb], then only Herbalists could pick them up. If that was true, wouldn't this particular quest be too unreasonable? Wouldn't players have to remove their initial Profession Skills, and switch to being a Herbalist in order to be able to pick up the [Wolfberry Flowers] for the sole purpose of this quest?

Two hours later, Zhang Yang had collected a total of 50 [Wolfberry Flower Stems]. He had finally collected enough of the second material for the quest. Only the [Tiger Penis] has yet to be collected!

The Serpent was soaring through the sky as they made haste for Blood Mist Camp. After about half an hour of flying, Zhang Yang had finally arrived at this god forsaken terrifying land, where the name was self-explanatory.

The Blood Mist Camp was the lair of bandits. Among them aren't just the human, there are also orcs, dwarfs and even elves! These living beings ended up here because they had done terrible things, things that are never to be forgotten and forgiven! So they are basically devils in flesh that seek refugees in Blood Mist Camp.

But that is not Zhang Yang's destination. What Zhang Yang seek is that Tiger King around that area!

As the entire area is covered in trees, Zhang Yang was forced to land,

unsummon Whitey Jr. and summon Whitey out. Then, he rode on Whitey, across the thickset jungle, searching for the Tiger King.

"Leave your woman and your gold, then we shall consider sparing your life!"

Suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a loud voice and three bandits revealed themselves, leaping out from the bushes beside him. They blocked the path before Zhang Yang. Then, two more bandits jumped right out and block the path right behind Zhang Yang, cutting his escape route.

"Just shut the f*ck up! We kill the man and take the woman back to warm our beds!" another bandit was getting impatient. So he took up his mace and swung it at Zhang Yang's head.

Right before the mace was able to reach Zhang Yang, Felice raised up her lance very quickly and pierced the chest of that bandit. As she pulled her lance out from the bandit, fresh blood oozed out right from the hole. With a closer look, Zhang Yang could see that the lance had actually left a large hole, right in the middle of the bandit's chest! Poor bandit, he could not even react! He could only stare at Zhang Yang and Felice with he eyes wide open before he collapsed onto the ground.

--- how could a mere bandit match the power of Felice?

The remaining 4 bandits were shocked to see their 'comrade' died right in front of their eyes, but they drew their weapons in anger, nevertheless! They began to launch their assaults towards Zhang Yang and Felice. Other than monsters with higher intelligence, normal monsters would act according to the aggro system of the game. They will not flee to save themselves, even if they knew that they were grossly outmatched.

So Zhang Yang and Felice worked together and fought back. Without much problem, they took the 4 bandits out as if they were just breathing! Zhang Yang managed to pick up some coins and a few [Inscribed Cloth] from the dead bandits. There was another black piece of [Order]. Zhang Yang took a look at the description and realized that the [Order] was actually an item that would trigger a quest! But, Zhang Yang's current priority was to locate and obtain the God of War Inheritance. So he had no

time spare for insignificant quests. Therefore, he placed the [Order] right into his inventory. If he ever finds time to spare, he would probably go about finishing it. If not, then he would simply throw the piece away later.

The jungle was full of bandits lurking around in every corner. Zhang Yang had already encountered another group of bandits after walking for a brief moment. Although these bandits did not pose any threat to him at all, it was still highly annoying to be stopped in your tracks like that!

But, when he walked into another territory, nothing came out to him for the next three minutes! Nothing! No monsters, nor bandits jumped out at Zhang Yang!

In an instant, Zhang Yang realized that he was either out of the bandits' turf, or he had already stepped into the territory of the ferocious Tiger King that he had been looking for. That would be why the bandits dared not ambush him in this area!

The answer to his question was revealed a brief while after he walked for a short distance. There were a couple of large rocks right in front of him. A tiger with a snowy-white body was resting on top of one of the rocks. This tiger was not a normal tiger. It had a pair of golden wings on its back!

Chapter 493: Tiger King Anusuba

The tiger was magnificent in every manner, except for one thing. Its size. The thing was the same size as a tiny kitten!

Zhang Yang could not help but begin doubting. There is that age-old saying - size does not matter. Yet, how would that middle-aged uncle accept something of this size?

But wait, this was not the Tiger King related to his questline! It was a [Flying Mount]!

[Winged Tiger Cub] (Violet-Platinum Flying Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Note: Can be sealed.

A Violet-Platinum [Flying Mount]! If it already looked like this as a cub, how would it be as an adult?! A white tiger! A rare specimen indeed! People are going to swoon over this mount!

Zhang Yang held off the urge to take out his own [Sealing Leash], and sent a voice message over to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, "When are you guys going to wrap it up?"

"Hehe, what's wrong Silly Yu, you miss me already?" Witchy Snow began to tease Zhang Yang as usual.

"Well, we're about to complete it! Just give us more time to slay one more boss! We will be able to turn in the quest after that!" at least Wei Yan Er got straight to the point.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I just discovered a Violet-Platinum [Flying Mount]. I'm giving you 30 minutes to come over here now! If you cannot make it, then I shall use my own [Sealing Leash] on it and take it for myself!"

"No! No! Don't you dare do that!" Wei Yan Er immediately lost it and screamed, "Wait for me, you must! Humph! Stinky noob tank! If you dare

snatch away my [Flying Mount], I will kill you! And then I'll kill you more!"

"Silly Yu, you are indeed really lucky. You actually found another [Flying Mount]! And a Violet-Platinum Tier [Flying Mount] at that!!"

Being the first to enter the Chaos Realm, of course, Zhang Yang would be able to take it all. Everything here was still original and untouched. These were 'virgin lands'. Nothing in this realm have been tainted or touched by any player! Furthermore, Zhang Yang had been wandering around the Chaos Realm for almost 20 days! All things considered, it was a rather reasonable rate at encountering a [Flying Mount] in the entirety of the Chaos Realm!

Zhang Yang nodded as he said, "Hurry up, then. I don't think there's anyone else around here yet, but it's not yours till you get it!"

The two ladies nodded and they quickly proceeded with their quest. Now that they were already Level 98, as long as they complete their Main Story Quest, then they should be able to claim the reward and reach Level 100 to enter the Chaos Realm. Furthermore, Zhang Yang simply needed to activate his [Party Summon Order] to get the two ladies over to his location immediately.

Although this little tiger cub was one Tier higher than Whitey Jr., it would merely be the case of having more DPS on his personal gang of companions. The gains were almost negligible. Handing it over to Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue would be a huge jump in power, however! After all, the Chaos Realm was just too vast, and the topography of the map was extremely complex. Without a [Flying Mount], players would be facing endless obstacles.

"Rawgh!"

Zhang Yang was getting bored, getting into a staring contest with the cub, while waiting for the ladies to arrive while keeping an eye on the Winged Tiger Cub, when he suddenly heard a thunderous roar that shook the heaven. Then, a fearsome looking tiger, which was the size of a small mountain, appeared right in front of the Winged Tiger Cub. This ferocious looking tiger dropped the prey that was in its mouth, a musk deer, onto

the ground the moment it saw the Winged Tiger Cub!

The Winged Tiger Cub immediately let out a joyous mew and ran at the small mountain with a purr. On the other hand, the huge tiger stood proudly with its chest raised up. The two large eyes of the tiger were focused on the Winged Tiger Cub like two large lanterns, emitting out a green glow, turning knees of onlookers into jelly.

[Tiger King Anusuba] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 128

HP: 12,800,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 18,739 - 20,739

Magic Attack: 10,731 - 12,731

Skills:

[Tear]: Tears into the target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage, chance of dealing Double Damage.

[Pounce]: Pounces on the target, interrupting the attack or spell chanting of the target, stuns target for 3 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Metallic Slash]: Uses the tail to whip on the target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the effective range of the {Metallic Slash}.

[Frost Arrow]: Sends a Frost Attack towards the target, inflicting 150% Magic Attack in the form of Frost Damage. Instant activation. Cool Down: 2 seconds. Range: 3 - 40 meters.

[Berserk]: When HP is reduced to 10%, Anusuba will obtain the Strength of 'Berserk'! Additional 50% damage and additional 200% Movement Speed.

Note: The Conqueror of the Blood Mist Camp, the one and only King! According to legend, Anusuba had once forced itself upon a wounded female dragon!

After reading the side note of the boss, Zhang Yang could not help but frown. No wonder Meka wanted its [Tiger Penis] so badly! This ferociously looking tiger had actually forced itself upon a female dragon! The organ responsible for it must have some serious power! Obviously, the little cub over there was the 'end product' of its brave deed for 'getting on top' of the female dragon! What a lewd, hard-boiled beast!

Zhang Yang began to estimate the approximate attack power of the Tiger King, as his 'Supporting Attack' loses its effectiveness against a boss. He would only be able to rely on his {Block} in order defend himself. The normal attack of the boss would still damage him by approximately 11,700 after taking into account the Damage Immunity effect of his equipment, and the boss would attack once in every 2 seconds. Even by activating {Block} once every 6 seconds to block the damage done by the boss, the DPS of the boss from only its normal attacks would still be about 3,900 damage.

Other than just its normal attacks, the boss also had other skills like {Tear} and {Metallic Whip}, which increases its DPS by up to 5,000 damage! Furthermore, Zhang Yang only had a total HP of 141,200 the moment he mounts Whitey. That would mean, that he had to go head on with the boss for 30 seconds!

To take down this boss without any backup at all, Zhang Yang would have to work together with Felice with perfect timing.

Although the boss also had a ranged attack, it only had a maximum range of 40 meters. Felice could definitely grab hold of the boss's aggro and fly up further into the sky, out of range. As long the boss is not a flying type, then she should be able to kite the boss around, theoretically.

According to the game's system, if the target with the highest aggro is not within the range of attack, then the monster would attack the next highest until the original target gets within range. This makes it possible for two players to play tag with the boss.

However, it wouldn't be that easy and simple to kite a boss. This boss had ranged attacks! If Zhang Yang puts too much distance between himself

and the boss, the boss would automatically send {Frost Arrows} flying towards Zhang Yang from afar! More importantly, Zhang Yang's {Block} was ineffective against Magic Attacks like {Frost Arrow}! So, he had to maintain a distance that was not too close that it would swipe at him and devastate his HP, nor one that was so far that it would immediately launch a {Frost Arrow} after it turns around from Felice!

After making some calculations, Zhang Yang finally came up with an idea on how to battle the boss. To battle a boss that requires him to move around so much, the Mythical Turtle would not be an ideal choice. So, he decided to go all out with Whitey. He patted Whitey and said, "My friend, let's do this! Felice, attack from midair!"

"Alright, big brother!" Felice nodded as she began to transform into her Dragonhawk Form.

Whitey let out an intimidating roar as it charged towards the Tiger King. The aggro range of Anusuba was vast, it had already detected the approach of Whitey about 30 meters from it. After detecting that it's territory had been encroached on, it let out a thunderous roar, opening up it's mouth, and frost began to form right in front of it's mouth! The frost formed into a shape of an arrow which flew towards Whitey.

Zhang Yang laughed, abruptly dismounting Whitey!

‘-1,738!’

The {Frost Arrow} went smack into Whitey. Although the {Frost Arrow} dispersed into frosty air as it crashed into Whitey, making Whitey shake its fur like a wet dog, the attack had only damaged Whitey by less than 2,000 damage.

--- {Icy Built}, 90% damage immunity to all Frost type attacks!

Unfortunately, {Icy Built} would only activates when Whitey is being mounted. Or else, Zhang Yang could have mounted Whitey to gain this effect as well! By then, he would have become unstoppable against the boss!

‘-4,212!’

Zhang Yang flung a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, followed with a {Charge}, colliding heavily into the boss. (Non-lethal skills do not activate the universal cool down period)

With a flick of the [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang struck the boss! But, because normal attacks would be reduced by the Defense points of the monster or the boss, Zhang Yang had only inflicted the boss with a damage of 2,909 points.

Anusuba could not endure the pain, as it let out a thunderous roar. It chomped its mouth down at Zhang Yang. With its mouth wide opened, a strong stench hit Zhang Yang in the face like a Mack Truck.

"What the f*ck!" Zhang Yang almost lost consciousness as he 'tasted' the smell straight up from the mouth, "Which immoral game designer thought of making everything so realistic?! Do they want players to actually die?!"

Well, evidently, a Tanker must not only excel in getting himself a powerful set of equipment, or to excel at evasive maneuvers, or to have perfect timing of skills, a Tanker must also be able to endure hell in all shapes and sizes! Zhang Yang believed that 7 out of 10 Tankers would have fled from the stench! None of them would have been able to unleash even half of their potential with that stench bothering them!

Felice giggled at his predicament. Her damage output was consistent, as she launched {Fire Missile} after {Fire Missile}, charring the great tiger!

After smacking 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss, Zhang Yang started getting to work, channeling his damage output onto the boss at his fullest. Whitey had joined in on the 'party,' as it slashed the boss with its powerful, sharp claws.

As calculated, under the combination of normal attacks and the {Metallic Slashes} of the boss, the HP bar of Zhang Yang was already at the bottom after a mere 40 seconds! He had lasted a few seconds longer than expected, because he had taken a bottle of [Healing Potion (Grade 7 Transmutation)]. After he lost a certain amount of his HP, he dismounted Whitey and let Whitey activate its {Wild Recovery} to recover 50% of its

HP. Then, he got back onto Whitey to regain another 20,000 HP!

After activating all of his life-saving Skills, the {Berserker's Heal}, the {Shield Wall} and the {Last Vigor}, Zhang Yang managed to hold on for another 2 minutes.

At that moment, all of his life-saving Skills were still under cool down! So, he quickly activated {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the boss battle. He ran to one corner and started taking his [Snacks] to heal himself up. Felice came straight down from the air and transformed back into her Humanoid Form. She activated her {Absolute Defense} and started an epic slugfest with the boss!

After Zhang Yang healed himself all up, he immediately rejoined the battle.

With activation of {Absolute Defense}, Felice acquired a 99% damage immunity, making her almost invincible! Unfazed, she held her ground against the much larger boss, not even bothering to defend herself from its strikes. She activated her {Blazing Dragon's Spear} and {Dragon's Spear Barrage} repeatedly, inflicting the Tiger King with massive amount of damage! It was so infuriating for the boss that it kept roaring towards the sky in rage!

Another 2 minutes passed, and the {Absolute Defense} of Felice was over. Felice quickly transformed back to her Dragonhawk Form and flew back into the air, keeping a distance in between herself and the boss. Although she was struck by two {Frost Arrows} as she regained distance, it wasn't really much, considering the fact that she had hundreds of thousands of HP.

Having no means of reaching Felice, the Tiger King immediately turned towards its secondary target, Zhang Yang, and began to attack him!

At the same time, the cool down periods of Zhang Yang's {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were over. Zhang Yang could now focus on going all out on the boss for another 2 minutes!

6 minutes passed, and the HP bar of the Tiger King was now only 50%! But Zhang Yang only had one last shot on his {Rearm}! At that moment,

Felice began to cooperate with Zhang Yang in kiting the boss around as she kept coming down into the aggro range of the boss, luring the boss over her, before she got back out from the aggro range of the boss again and sent the boss back to Zhang Yang. The process was repeated multiple times, making the boss look like an idiot, giving Zhang Yang some time to breathe properly and wait out for the cool down period of his Skills.

At this stage of the battle, their DPS had started dropping. The two of them kited the boss around, like two kids playing with a kitten, for tens of minutes! Finally, they managed to reduce the HP bar of the boss down to 10%.

Chapter 494: Two Skill Books on the House!

This was the crucial 10% stage. Anusuba was beginning to get extremely agitated! Its entire body began to radiate in a bloody red, glowing light. The boss looked as if it had just taken a dip in a blood tub! The two glowing eyes of the boss started releasing chilly vapors. The foul stench from its mouth grew even stronger, suffocating Zhang Yang to the point that he almost smashed his face into the ground!

Still, this Tiger King was actually is brave enough to stick its penis into a female dragon! Now that it looked like it's on heat for mating, its entire body was smoking! The movement speed of the Tiger King was boosted so extensively that Felice was no longer capable of kiting it anymore. Whenever she landed on the ground, the boss would suddenly phase through the air, appearing in front of Felice. right after releasing a {Frost Arrow}, followed by a violent chomp of its jaws! Its movements were so fast that Felice was not able to react in time! With just a few attacks, it had already brought Felice critically close to death!

Zhang Yang was shocked, but quickly recovered when he understood the situation that they were now in. Without any hesitation, he quickly took a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, followed by his super Skill {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

‘-14,000!’

‘-14,000!’

...

The boss was instantly inflicted with a series of high value damage! The Tiger King was so terrified by the bombardment of those Skills that the hair all round its body were stood up on end, causing it to look like a hedgedog!

"Rawgh!" Anusuba turned around swiftly and chomped down on Zhang

Yang.

‘-19,764!’

An extremely high value of damage was inflicted on Zhang Yang! One single hit from the boss had taken away one-fifth of Zhang Yang’s HP!

Never, ever trifle with a berserking boss!

Zhang Yang found no reason to hold back anymore, so he activated his {Rearm} - followed by his {Shield Wall}. Now, all of his skills were no longer on cool down period. Time to earn a living!

10 seconds later, he activated more of his emergency skills! A second activation of {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, followed by a second {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, and together with the assaults from Whitey, about 400,000 HP of the boss was reduced. Finally, Zhang Yang managed to hook over the aggro of the boss onto him. A battered Felice came down to the ground, joining in the fight, no longer having to worry about herself.

{Shield Wall} had been activated, {Berserker’s Heal} was also activated, followed by his {Last Vigor}! Zhang Yang even activated his [Heart of the Death Knight] just to stay alive. His HP bar was decreasing at an insane rate!

Fortunately for him, there was not much HP left on the boss. Furthermore, Felice had transformed herself into her Humanoid Form and had activated her {Dragon’s Spear Barrage} and stunned the boss for 2 seconds long! That gave Zhang Yang a 2-second gap to breathe and finally, he managed to slay the Tiger King before his HP was reduced to zero!

Phew!

Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. But actually, even if he really had died just now, he could still transform himself into a zombie, as he had already taken a [Zombie Potion] before he had set out to search for the Tiger King. Then, he would still have 30 seconds more to slay the boss! But, he would not have gotten any experience points if he were to slay the boss as a zombie. Furthermore, the durability of his equipment would

drop by 10% after he dies. Repairing his equipment would require quite a substantial amount of money!

After taking [Snacks] together with Felice to heal up their HP bars, Zhang Yang turned to the Winged Tiger Cub to check on it. What he saw was the little cub tearing flesh and munching on the dead deer. It was enjoying the meal as if nothing had happened just now. It did not seem to care about the death of the Tiger King.

Well, these type of [Flying Mounts] had limited Intelligence, unlike the Battle Companions who had actual 'Independent' personalities and thoughts of their own. Furthermore, if one were to look at things realistically, this was still a cub, so it could be excused for not understanding everything that had just happened before it. The only thing that it cared about was its stomach!

Zhang Yang got back on his feet and he took up his [Sword of Purging Devourer], prepared to 'harvest' the [Tiger's Penis].

Tsk ---

After seeing how 'magnificent' the Tiger King's [Tiger Penis] is, Zhang Yang could not help but cry out of embarrassment. Well, as people say, to fall just slightly behind the best was still better than the worst. But, to compare a human's proportions to a beast's, of course, there would be a shockingly huge difference! It's like comparing your tiny little penis with some penis from another dimension! This [Tiger Penis] looked like a freaking Nuclear Warhead compared to a human penis! No wonder the Tiger King was able to 'finish things up' inside the female dragon!

After putting the bloody penis in his Inventory, Zhang Yang turned on his voice communication device and ask, "Witchy Snow, little brat, how long more do you ladies need?"

"We're almost there! Almost there!" Han Ying Xue replied hastily.

Anusuba had dropped a total of 3 equipment. One was a pair of blue-green greaves, another was a crimson red ring, and last but not least, a pair of completely white cloth boots. Other than that, the boss had also dropped two [Skill Books]! That came as a pleasant surprise to Zhang

Yang.

The greaves and the rings were both Level 120 Yellow-Gold equipment, so Zhang Yang placed them into his inventory straight away. As for the pair of cloth boots, he took some time to look at its attributes. It was a pretty decent item.

[Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +423

Intelligence: +274

Spirit: +121

Equip: Increases damage and healing effects by 2%.

Equip: Increases Maximum Mana Points by 540 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: - 20 Required Levels.

A once-in-a-blue moon rarity!

The best thing about this pair of boots were not its attributes, but the Special that reduces the required level by 20!

Upon entering the Chaos Realm, the level gap for maps were getting wider, like the Dayu Rainforest, which is a grinding map for Level 110 - 140. So, it would be so inappropriate for a bunch of Level 110 players to actually wait at least 9 to 10 months, while they grind themselves up to Level 140 in order to equip the Level 140 equipment that they had acquired from slaying Level 140 monsters and bosses! That would be a mental torture for the players!

Therefore, some equipment with these types of Specials would drop occasionally. Most of the time, the Special would have a reduced '20 Required Levels' so that players could get to them slightly earlier. Of course, such equipment would be rare.

For instance, these [Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] would be one of the Rare equipment that had such Specials on them! As for the two other equipment, they did not have such Specials on them. So, players would have to wait until they reach Level 120 before they can equip them.

Such Rare equipment with such specialties would usually be sold at sky high prices! If a Violet-Platinum equipment without such a Special could be sold at the price of 100,000 gold, then a Violet-Platinum equipment with the said Special could sold at three times the gold!

Well, the main reason would be, after players reach Level 100, they would require at least 10 days to Level up once. So the Special would allow the players to equip the Rare equipment - 200 days earlier than anticipated, which would greatly help the players!

So, after he passes this equipment over to Han Ying Xue, the healing capability of that witch would be heavily upgraded. Also, when she completes the quests for the [Milkmaid Deity Inheritance (S-Tier)], then she would become the true Queen of Healers of the entire world!

Zhang Yang continued to look at the remaining loot on the ground. He moved on to the two [Skill Books]. One of the [Skill Books] had a golden, hardcover, while the other one had a violet hardcover. He smiled vaguely and said, "Felice, which skill do you think I should learn?"

"The skill on the violet one!" Felice immediately responded without having the need to think.

"Why?"

"Violet-Platinum Tier is better than Yellow-Gold Tier!" Felice told Zhang Yang her reason.

Zhang Yang frowned, intrigued, for little lady did have a dry sense of humor! He laughed and picked up the [Skill Book] with the violet hardcover to have a closer look.

[Skill Book: Molten Armor]

Use: Teaches you {Molten Armor}

Required Class: None

Required Level: 100

A skill that required no classes? Zhang Yang could vaguely remember that he had heard about such a skill before, but he could not recall where and when he had heard about it. Without thinking any further about it, he immediately learned the skill.

[Molten Armor] (Level 1): Forms an armor of flames around you. When you are attacked, the fire armor will reflect Fire Damage equivalent to the caster's level back at the attacker. Lasts until the skill is automatically canceled. The Fire Damage reflected will increase, based on the level of the Skill. The Fire Damage would be doubled for every additional Skill level.

Zhang Yang was currently Level 103, so he would be able to reflect 103 Fire Damage back to the enemies whenever he is struck. Although the damage wasn't particularly high, it was still a Passive Skill! It won't affect the attack interval and shared cooldown of Zhang Yang either. It would really be a waste to not accept this 'free' passive damage reflect ability!

It would only get better when Zhang Yang is being surrounded by a group of monsters, he would be able to inflict 103 Fire Damage back at all of the monsters attacking him, without the need to even move a finger! Well, as the reflecting Fire Damage accumulates over time, the total damage that is reflected back at the monsters would be surprisingly good as well! Furthermore, when Zhang Yang improves this skill up to Level 10, he would be able to reflect 1,030 Fire Damage back at his enemies whenever he is struck, making him even more powerful!

There was no harm at all in getting more Skills, as there were no limits. The game said nothing about it. Best learn the skill before anything else.

After that, Zhang Yang picked up another [Skill Book] to have a look.

[Skill Book: Frost Strike]

Use: Teaches you {Frost Strike}.

Required Class: Warrior, Knight, Thief.

Required Level: 100

Another Skill Book that he qualified for! Naturally, Zhang Yang learned the Skill without thinking.

[Frost Strike]: Unleashes a single, powerful Melee Attack onto the target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Frost Damage and 100% additional Magic Damage, freezing the target for 10 seconds. The target would not be able to do anything or move within the 10 seconds. This freezing effect would also take effect on Boss type monsters. However, there is certain rate that the freezing effect would fail to initiate. Requirement: Melee Weapon. Cost: 50 Rage Points. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Zhang Yang lost his words for awhile. A Melee Attack that has Frost Damage, with an additional Magic Attack? Judging by those percentages, this Skill would already be a game-breaker! Furthermore, this Skill could actually 'freeze' targets, which was as good as 'Stunning'! And it actually worked on bosses!

Well, damn! Zhang Yang was really getting along now!

He could not help himself but laugh on his own. Felice felt a little uncomfortable looking at Zhang Yang laughing all by himself. She worriedly muttered, "Big brother, you really look silly!"

Although Han Ying Xue had informed him that they were almost done, nobody should ever take the words of the witch seriously. Zhang Yang waited until he was so bored, that he 'seduced' Felice, in a way, into playing Scissors, paper, stone with him. The winner would receive a kiss.

Unexpectedly, the little lady agreed! By the end of it, she had kissed Zhang Yang so many times that his face was full of her pink kiss marks! Zhang Yang could not help but to sigh. The game developer had made this girl so lively!

2 hours later, Zhang Yang had finally received a joyful voice message from Wei Yan Er, "Noob tank, summon us over now! Quickly!"

Zhang Yang activated his [Party Summon Order], and with a shoof, the

two ladies finally appeared beside Zhang Yang.

Now that both of them are finally Level 100, Zhang Yang could finally summon them in the Chaos Realm with his [Party Summon Order]. The moment the little brat appeared, she jumped and down, looking left and right, like an impatient monkey asking for its treat, "Noob tank, where is my [Flying Mount]?"

Zhang Yang pointed straight towards the direction of the little Winged Tiger Cub which had just finished it's delicious meal. It was resting on a large rock with its belly facing the sky, having its belly tanned under the sun, "There!"

The little brat immediately let out a cheer as she took out her [Sealing Lease] straight from her inventory and threw it at the little cub.

Even though she failed several times, but her luck was considered pretty good, as she did not even have to make ten attempts at it. Now, she only needed to level up this beastly little cub, and she would become much stronger than ever!

Wei Yan Er decided to grind up the level of her new [Flying Mount] in that area, and she also dragged Han Ying Xue along to accompany her as well. As Zhang Yang had nothing else to do, he passed the [Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] over to Han Ying Xue before he departed back to Meka for the quest rewards.

But before he could even get close to Shuhada Lake, he was already ambushed by the snipers of Snowflake Castle. So, it took him more than 2 hours to break his way through before he finally landed on the side of the little cottage of Meka.

"Er... have you... collected all three materials?" Meka looked at the face of Zhang Yang, full of hope. Well, this was about his penis after all. It was something Zhang Yang could empathize with.

As Zhang Yang took the three materials out from his inventory, he wondered to himself that if he ever quits 'God's Miracle' in the future, would he end up an old medic in the military, treating infertility?

"There is hope! There is hope after all!" Meka looked over the materials with gratitude, as tears dropped down across his cheeks.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Heal the Recurring 'Problem'. Acquired 500,000 experience points!'

Meka was already running into his little cottage, as he babbled on, "Young man, I need to concoct a potion and save my peni... urgh... to clear the poison out of my body! So while I am at it, I must not get any disturbance. So, please keep watch over the door for me and let nothing get in my way at restoring my peni... eherm! My former glory!"

'Ding! Meka has a quest for you: Not to be disturbed. Will you accept it?'

What to do? Of course, he would accept it!

[Not to be disturbed] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Meka is currently concocting a potion to cure himself from the poison he claims to be in his body system. The potion will be able to bring back his peni... eherm! Clear the poison from his body! But, concocting the potion requires time and Meka must not be disturbed at all. Or else, the process would be interrupted, and unforeseen circumstances would arise! Warrior, guard the door and let no one enter the little cottage!

Completion: Protect Meka while he is concocting the potion to cure himself 0/1

So the difficulty for this quest was A-rank. Zhang Yang would have to prepare for a rough ride ahead!

The ground suddenly began to tremble.

Suddenly, Zhang Yang heard the galloping sound of the horses over from the direction of the rainforest, approaching his location at a high speed. In just tens of seconds, he could already see hundreds of white, handsome horses approaching from the distance. Female knights sat atop each of the horses, their hips angled with a mix of sexiness and grace! Their ornate, finely crafted, shining plate armors exposed a great deal of flesh at the all-too-important, juiciest areas, and each of the women was a

coquettish beauty in her own right.

[Snowflake Castle Knights] (Elite, Humanoid(Female))

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,381 - 10,381

Skill:

[Soar]: Dive bombs at a target, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage. Can interrupt the chanting progress of the target.

Note: Snowflake Castle Knight Corps, they are extremely powerful combatants!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. These were not just extremely powerful combatants, they were ridiculously powerful, terrifying enemies! Hundreds of elite Tiered monsters stood right before his eyes! Fortunately, these female Knights were all Melee type monsters. Or else, Zhang Yang would have to lay down his arms, wash his neck nicely and prepare himself for the Knights to chop his head off!

He started backing off, until his back was against the surface of the door that he was supposed to guard, and quickly contacted Han Ying Xue and said, "Witchy Snow! Come over here and heal your big brother!"

As Felice has been calling him 'big brother' for the past few days, Zhang Yang had accidentally used the word 'big brother' on Han Ying Xue without realizing it.

Han Ying Xue humphed and said, "Dummy, do you really think that your qualified be my 'brother'?"

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh sleazily as he said suggestively, "I'm afraid that you might even call me something better than that, over and over again, when we 'repeat' that thing!"

In such regards, he had an abundance of experience. Before Yu Li had

tasted the pleasure of the activity, she looked just like a decent teacher. But after being ravaged by Zhang Yang aggressively, she was left screaming like a little b*tch!

"Bust tart! You're going to die!" Han Ying Xue was not as pure as the little brat Wei Yan Er, so of course, she got the point immediately. She immediately turned red and scolded Zhang Yang.

Shoof!

A stream of white light appeared. Han Ying Xue had activated her [Lover's Charm] appearing beside Zhang Yang.

Chapter 495: Hold the Peni... eherm, Door!

Hold the door!

Upon seeing the hundreds of female Knights before them, Han Ying Xue lost her tongue for the moment, before she recovered and said, "Silly Yu, why couldn't you just lure a small number of monsters every time you summon me?"

Zhang Yang shook his head as he said, "Nonsense! If I'm only fighting a small number of monsters, why would I even need your help?"

"You ruffians! How dare you go against the will of Snowflake castle! In the name of the Countess, we shall kill you all!" a female Knight with a pair of extremely outstanding boobs shouted, as she waved her sword and directed it at Zhang Yang! Instantly, the hundreds of female Knights right before Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue started their charge.

As this was going to be a Defensive Battle where the door drew the line, Zhang Yang had already summoned out the [Mythical Turtle], which stood by his side, guarding the door of the little cottage. Meanwhile, Felice had already transformed into her Dragonhawk form as she started taking off.

Currently, the [Mythical Turtle] was Level 103, and had a total of 65,420 HP on it! That amount was actually more than the HP of 90% tankers at the current stage of the game! With a thick shell and a super healer like Han Ying Xue supporting it, it would be able to guard the door as easily as it breathes!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry as he met their charge. With his {Blood Rage} activated, he acquired 30 Rage Points instantly. With a flick in his sword, Zhang Yang sent out a {Blast Wave} out front, as his attack spread out in a conical area, stunning all the female Knights within the effective range of the skill. Each of the female Knights within the effective range was inflicted with a damage of 877!

The replicated effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered

repeatedly and inflicted the horde with a few more rounds of damage. The area blew up with numerical values of damage.

Felice was bombarding the horde by activating her {Pulverizing Flame}. Streams of blazing flames were splattered upon the monsters, inflicting them with massive damage! The monsters were inflicted with 3,000 damage in every second! The entire battlefield was blazing in a sea of flames. The scene was magnificent!

However, the HP of these elite Tier monsters were just too long. Although the damage was as high as hundreds of thousands damage, it was still not enough to instant-kill them. It would require a few rounds of equally damaging combinations before they die!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The forces had already forced their way through the flames, and they were approaching Zhang Yang at a high speed! They were charging towards Zhang Yang, their spears pointed straight at him as if they were in a jousting contest, with their lives at stake!

As there was a super healer like Han Ying Xue supporting him, Zhang Yang courageously faced the oncoming spearheads!

[Mythical Turtle] was a Violet-Platinum [Mount]. It had the advantage of being a higher Tier [Mount]. Zhang Yang also had a full set of Violet-Platinum equipment. Of course, he would be much more powerful than these monsters! The [Mythical Turtle] and Zhang Yang were both far superior to the female knights. With these two 'dams' standing in front of the door, there was no way that these Elite monsters would be able to 'break' through the turtle-man 'dam'!

Grounded combat had its limits. They could not maneuver in three-dimensional combat like how it would be between warplanes and submarines. For instance, [Mythical Turtle] and Zhang Yang currently had their backs against the door. So, they would only have to face the assaults of the monsters from one direction, the front! Furthermore, the battle horses were massive, so only 4 of the Elite monsters could attack Zhang Yang and [Mythical Turtle] at the same time. The rest of the monsters

could only line up for their turns behind their comrades, standing idly!

Of course, the damage of four elite monsters was nothing that Han Ying Xue couldn't heal.

Other healers would be able to perform just as well initially, but they would run out of MP in no time. They would be overwhelmed by the sheer numbers! It was different for Han Ying Xue, because she had {Divine Soul}, a Skill that reduces the MP consumption of all her healing skills by 75%! Furthermore, she was a highly skilled professional player, with a superhuman level of MP management, gained through her experience from hundreds of impossible battles. Well, practice makes perfect, and Han Ying Xue had lots of it, being a veteran member of Zhang Yang's crazy little party! This level of healing was a piece of cake for her. As long as she has enough [MP Potions] on hand, she would be able to keep up, all day long!

That did not seem to be necessary, as the monsters were finite in numbers! The AoE attacks of Zhang Yang and Felice are extremely powerful and effective! In not more than 10 minutes, the HP bars of a large number of monsters had been emptied out, and they collapsed onto the ground, one after another.

Han Ying Xue quickly said, "Quickly, summon Yan Er here, now! Look at the number of monsters here! She will definitely earn quite a lot of experience points here!

Tsk! This witch was treating the little brat better than him!

Zhang Yang took his [Party Summon Order] out. Well, it had already been more than 2 hours already, since he last used it. The little brat instantly appeared right before Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue atop her flying tiger. Fortunately, she had materialized at a less chaotic corner at the side of the house, away from the thick of battle. If she had appeared in the midst of those deadly knights, she would have been immediately shredded to pieces!

As they were currently in an indoor environment, the mount of the little brat was unsummoned automatically, and she fell straight onto the

ground on her butt. She rubbed her butt in anger.

"Noob tank! I hate you!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hurry up then, get us out of here then, so that you can summon your [Mount] and get its levels up!"

Still, the monsters were blocking the way out by the door, how could Wei Yan Er get out of the indoor environment? She steeled up her heart, took out her axe and started swing it at the roof of the house like a mad girl. She actually took out the entire roof of the house! After that, the system indicated that the area was no longer an indoor environment! That little brat actually managed to summon her [Mount] again!

That actually worked?

Zhang Yang shook his head in amazement, only this little brat would be crazy enough to come out with such ideas and follow through! This time, her wild idea had actually worked! Zhang Yang was left speechless, as he did not know what to say at all! Well, let's hope it doesn't affect Meka's progress in any way. If this NPC ever gets interrupted and something goes wrong, he might end up having a weird penis! It might become the joke of a life time when he goes into the 'battlefield' again, if ever!

As the little brat had resummoned her [Winged Tiger], Zhang Yang could now see that it had already reach Level 42. It was so much bigger compared to the time Zhang Yang last saw it. The body was fully covered in snowy white fur, and its wings were like the wings of a bat, no, in fact, they were actually the wings of a dragon! It looked most magnificent and attractive!

Zhang Yang had also mounted atop his [Mythical Turtle], and the two of them worked together, blocking the monsters at the entrance of the house.

The [Winged Tiger] suddenly opened up its mouth wide, and spat out a blazing breath of dragon breath! It waved its head to the left and right, allowing the dragon's breath to sweep across the area in a conical AoE, burning every monster there with a damage of 2,000!

Zhang Yang was startled, "Little brat, your 'baby' does AoE attacks?"

"Of course it can!" Wei Yan Er was feeling proud and happy. She only had a Gray-Silver Tier [Mount] before she got her [Winged Tiger]. Now that it was such a jump in Tiers, she was in cloud nine! She quickly posted the skill description of her 'baby' onto the party channel.

[Flame of the Dragon Breath]: Releases Dragon Breath at the targets. The attack spreads out over a conical area, inflicting 2,000 Fire Damage to all targets for every second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Instant activation. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Cost: 100 Focus Points.

This skill was highly similar to Felice's {Pulverizing Flame}. It was just slightly weaker, and that's nothing to be ashamed of when Felice is involved!

With two [Mounts], two powerful players and one superb Battle Companion, the firepower of this little gang had already surpassed that of a full party of 10! In just a couple of minutes, another large group of monsters crumpled to the ground! Golden lights flashed through the body of the [Winged Tiger] as it continuously gained more levels!

After more than an hour, the entire army was wiped out, and the area was peaceful once again. The [Winged Tiger] had actually shot up to Level 67! It was even faster than the speed of a rocket!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er quickly went out to 'clean up' the ground. The number of loots these hundreds of monsters dropped were substantial! The ladies were so attracted by the glittering coins that were lying all over the ground where they have slain the monsters!

Before Zhang Yang even has the chance to breathe properly, the sky was suddenly darkened, as if a dark cloud had formed over their heads. Zhang Yang looked up to see what was going on. That was the moment when he realized that they were in deep trouble. He saw the underbellies of a large number of Griffins hovering above him. More female Knights sat on the back of each Griffin. The Griffins let out shrill screams in unison as they descended swiftly towards the little cottage! The female Knights started to fire sharp edged arrows as they descended!

What the f*ck!

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes in exasperation, "Little brat! Look at what you have done! You've taken out the roof, and now, we are now sitting ducks! They can just keep shooting at us like stationary targets! Whose side are you on?"

Wei Yan Er moved her eyes around innocently and she giggled, "I'm still young and naive, you said it yourself, so I don't know anything about this! I'm innocent!"

Zhang Yang felt a vein popping. What movies has she been watching, recently? How could she come up with such a low standard excuse! As they were still in combat mode, Zhang Yang could not switch mounts, so Felice was the only one who could battle in midair. However, despite her immense power, she would still be crushed by their sheer numbers!

In aerial combat, it was a dogfight. Combat would take place at 360 degrees. Every single monsters on this fleet also happened to be ranged monsters. So, thousands of monsters could actually fire their arrows at a single target altogether. Even if Zhang Yang were to activate his {Shield Wall}, he would still be instantly-killed on spot!

Well, Zhang Yang would never forgive himself if he allowed Felice to die in such a manner, so he quickly led the 3 ladies into the cottage.

Fortunately for them, although the little cottage was tiny, it was divided into three distinct sections. The first section was the front living room, the second was the main living room, and last but not least, the third was the bedroom. Meka was concocting his potion in the bedroom. Well, this wasn't exactly a tiny cottage, afterall!

Normal monsters have limited intelligence. Although Zhang Yang and the ladies were inside the little cottage, none of the monsters came down to tear off the roof. Instead, the monsters landed on the ground and squeezed in through the door towards Zhang Yang and the ladies.

But, that was not it. The first living room was quickly being filled up! Other than the Griffin riding Archers, there were also Spellcasters and Warriors types gushing into the little cottage. Zhang yang was most

bothered by the appearance of a single Priest in a white robe!

That Priest was healing up the monsters, undoing all the efforts of Zhang Yang and the ladies!

The HP bars of the Elite monsters were just too long, giving the Priest enough time to heal the Elite monsters back up before Zhang Yang and the ladies could kill the monsters. The Priest would also use AoE Skills that would heal 4 to 5 monsters, and sometimes even 10 monsters at the same instant! Her presence had completely halted the deaths of the army! Zhang Yang and the ladies were forced to huddle up together!

Fortunately, this quest was not about slaying monsters, it was to buy time for Meka.

But a little while later, the real challenge was revealed!

A beautiful lady, dressed in a very fancy dress made her way into the little cottage. She held a black staff in her hand. Her golden hair reflected the pale sunlight, and her lovely blue eyes were fixated on them. She had a great figure. Her chest 'boomed' out, and so did her rear. It was so perky that her booty buttocks formed the perfect shape of a peach. Whenever she took a step, the thin fabric would stretch and crease around her buttocks, revealing the atomic shape of her atomic buttocks, which would awaken the passion within the hearts of everything that loved women!

[Countess Kate Jingle]

Level: 135

HP: 40,500,000

Defense: 5,560

Magic Attack: 19,521 - 21,521

Skills:

[Thunder Flash]: Strikes the target with the power of thunder, inflicting 150% Magic Attack in the form of Nature Damage to all targets nearby. Instant activation. Range: 40 meters. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Thunderous Annihilation]: Summons thunder and inflicts Nature

Damage to all targets within the area of 40 X 40 meter square area. Lasts for 30 seconds. Instant activation. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 3 minutes.

[Lightning Shield]: Summons a shield made of lightning to shield the caster, reflecting 10,000 Nature Damage back at the attackers. Lasts for 1 minute. Instant activation. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

Note: Countess of the Snowflakes Castle. Her words are absolute and are not to be disobeyed!

Chapter 496: Meka and the Countess

This Countess is a level 135 Mythical Boss, and her level is already 32 levels higher than Zhang Yang's level! The damage he inflicts on the boss would be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game! That was just unfair! Zhang Yang and the ladies would not be able to channel their damage output efficiently, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game!

Furthermore, this is not just some Yellow-Gold boss! This is an actual Mythical Tier boss!

Zhang Yang had not forgotten the day when he had to struggle against the Spectre b*tch from the Imperial Heaven's Empire who had been dead for thousands of years! It had been so tiring! Compared to that encounter with that boss, although they had one more Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount] and a Battle Companion with higher Tiers with them this time, they were still far stronger than they are now.

Why? They had been given full sets of Mythical Tier equipment before they engaged in battle with that Spectre b*tch! Even with all those 'power ups', they were still having difficulties in battling that boss! They were actually close to being defeated, themselves! Now? There were only the 3 of them here. This would be mission impossible for them!

Well, all they can hope for now is that Meka finishes concocting his potion as swiftly as possible, and quickly fixes his penis! Then, he can swoop into the scene and save Zhang Yang and the ladies by defeating the entire army with his newly revived penis! Or else, they are going to die.

"Kill them all." the Countess gazed upon Zhang Yang and the 3 ladies as she gave the command to attack - in a very cold and merciless tone. In an instant, countless arrows were released, and countless circular magic formations were formed right above the sky, releasing a bombardment at Zhang Yang and the ladies.

However, the little cottage played its role there and then, with its diminutive structure. Most of the attacks landed onto the walls and bricks

of the little cottage. The bombardment of the magic attacks and the arrow shootings were so strong that the entire cottage was trembling, to the point that the walls were beginning to break off, brick by brick!

Boom! Boom! Shoof! Shoof!

Under heavy fire from the monsters, holes started filling up the wall. Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Instantly, countless arrows flew in from the sky. Many magic attacks had been mixed into the arrow attacks, greatly increasing the chances of them being hit!

Zhang Yang and the ladies quickly took a few steps back further into the little cottage. After just a short while, they had found themselves at the very end of the little cottage, the bedroom!

Meka was still squatting on the floor, by the side of a small furnace. While this middle-age man was still throwing the materials into the furnace with care and love, he was sweating all over his face. He was so focused on what he was doing that he did not even realize that Zhang Yang and the ladies had entered the bedroom!

"A bunch of imbeciles!" the Countess snapped coldly, as she began to walk towards Zhang Yang and the ladies impatiently.

"Please, forgive us!" the monsters fell to their knees in fear.

The Countess did not even look at them as she raised her right hand up and pointed her staff at Zhang Yang. Buzz! A bolt of blazing white lightning flew at Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang quickly took a few steps forward and met the lightning strike head-on!

{Thunder Flash}! Not only could it inflict damage to its primary target, it could also leap over to the next closest targets. Zhang Yang did not want Wei Yan Er to suffer from the leaping of the bolt, so he ran out of the range!

‘-42,214!’

A large patch of burn mark was ‘stamped’ onto the middle of Zhang

Yang's chest, as he was inflicted with a very high amount damage. A large chunk of his HP bar was lost! That attack was not as powerful as he had expected, judging by the attack power of the boss. Because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, every single hit from the boss had a chance of dealing double damage!

"Silly Yu, the damage of this boss is too much! I can't heal you up in time!" Han Ying Xue knew her own healing capabilities very well. She could only heal Zhang Yang by 7,000 HP per second. That amount of healing would not be able to balance out with the damage the boss was capable of putting out.

Furthermore, this attack came solely from the boss. If those Elite monsters decide to join in, how long would this party last, then?

"Just buy me some time! My quest doesn't require me killing this boss. All I need to do in order to complete this quest is to delay enough time for that uncle over there to finish with his 'work' and 'stand up'!" Zhang Yang told the ladies.

"I don't think that buying time is any much easier than killing the boss!" Han Ying Xue refuted.

Zhang Yang laughed it off. If they could manage in keeping the boss occupied and delay some time, then, they would naturally stand a chance to kill the boss. But, Zhang Yang had no idea at all on how long would Meka take in order to complete his potion. A minute? Two minutes? Or is it ten minutes? Or twenty minutes? If it's just one or two minutes, it was possible for Zhang Yang to hold on, if he activates all of his super skills and life-saving skills. But to hold on for at least a twenty minutes? They might as well abandon the quest now!

Zhang Yang stepped up and barricaded the entrance of the little cottage with his body. As for Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Felice, and last but not least, the [Mythical Turtle], they went straight into the last room of the cottage and remained there. Since that they could not slay the boss, they might as well buy as much time as possible.

Buzz! Buzz!

The boss activated her {Thunder Flash} over and over again on Zhang Yang, and inflicted a substantial amount of damage on him. He would turn into a roasted chicken at this rate! Surges of flashing thunder kept slamming into his body, and Zhang Yang could even smell his own charred flesh!

Wei Yan Er was really heartless as she was laughing at Zhang Yang instead of pitying him. Felice was so angry to see her laughing at her 'big brother'. She could not take it anymore as she raised up her lance and pointed straight at the little brat, attacking her to the point that the little brat was screaming for help!

{Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall}, {Last Vigor}! Zhang Yang had activated every single Skills that he has. He had even activated the ultimate life-saving skill of the [Titan Wall]! However, under the oppressive assaults from a Level 135 Mythical Tier boss, every effort that Zhang Yang put in were all washed away. He was only postponing the inevitable!

Zhang Yang could not help but let out a sigh after the boss had struck through the shield of the [Titan Wall]. Just when all hope was lost, and he was about to give in to the boss, he suddenly heard a series of laughter coming from behind him. Meka suddenly leaped up from the floor. Boom! With his slim and athletic body, he broke through the roof with brute force and landed right outside the little cottage, like a god descending down to the earth from the heavens!

[Meka] (Mythical, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 140

HP: 42,000,000

Defense: 5,920

Melee Attack: 25,191 - 29,191

Skills:???

Note: The reinvigorated penis... eherm! The reinvigorated Meka!

"Hahaha! Kate! Didn't you want to see me badly? I'm here, as you asked

for!" Meka was monstrously powerful. He did not even need a weapon! He punched his fist into the air and instantly, a visible stream of air flow radiated out from his punch, across the surroundings! Bam! Bam! Bam! Every single one of the Snowflakes Castle's female Knights was sent flying off by the powerful airflow emitted out from Meka's fist! The armor and clothes on their bodies were shredded, revealing the scent of spring across the surrounding.

This delinquent middle-age man then let out a howl like a wolf and gave another punch into the ground. That punch was extremely powerful and concussive, that the ground was cracked as it trembled! Waves that were tens of meters tall were formed from the impact of the punch, as well across the Shuhada Lake! Mighty waves were beating the shore and the scene was powerful and dynamic!

--- Finally, Zhang Yang had witnessed that wretched man's handsome and yet perverted heroic posture, with his penis rejuvenated!

"Meka! I have heard of your name across many lands! Come and fight me!" the Countess challenged Meka in a cold tone.

"You want a battle with me? Then let's have a battle that you will never forget!" Meka let out a roar in excitement as he charged towards Kate. Boom! Boom! Boom! His hands were blazingly fast. Zhang Yang and the ladies could not even see them coming! All of them were kicked right out from the little cottage. Right after that, torn pieces of clothes were flung right out from the little cottage.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The sound of clashing did not stop as the entire cottage shook violently!

Zhang Yang, "..."

Han Ying Xue, "..."

Wei Yan Er, "Wow! These two bosses are battling so vigorously that the cottage is shaking!"

The cottage shook continuously for one entire hour before it stopped. After a brief moment, the Countess came out from the cottage, her clothes

torn and askew, her eyes lost in tenderness and love. After she half mumbled, 'Back to the castle', she led her army and went straight back to her castle.

Another brief moment later, they finally saw Meka stepping out with a lightness in his feet, the pent-up expression on his face no longer there.

Han Ying Xue shivered as she quickly asked Wei Yan Er to leave with her, "Yan Er, let's go and grind up your Winged Tiger!"

After the two ladies left, Zhang Yang went up to Meka and asked, "Mr. Meka, so tell me, what's the story behind this axe?"

"Young man, I shall never forget about the things I promised you!" Meka nodded as a gentle wind blown by. His blonde hair was flowing in the wind and the man's mature charm had been exponentially raised.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Not to be Disturbed, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!'

Meka turned solemn, as he looked into a far distance, trying to reorganize his emotions, and then he began to say, "According to legend, for god knows how many tens of thousands of years, the gods in the heavens had a great war! The war was nasty! Even the gods could not avoid death. Only they know how many of the powerful gods fell on that day!"

He paused a while before he continued to talk, "These gods, well... even though they had fallen, but their souls and wills were not extinguished! They were searching for humans who were worthy of inheriting their godly power, offering them to extend their lives in a new form! The axe that you obtained earlier on is the weapon that the gods have used before during the war. You can locate the places where the gods fell, get the god's acknowledgments, and inherit the god's godly power!"

"Use your heart to feel the power within this [Axe of the Fallen], and it will guide you towards the right direction!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Search for Meka, acquired 100,000 experience points!'

A mere reward of 100,000 experience points? Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head again and again. He took out the Inheritance Keepsake of the God of War and when he touched that axe once again, Zhang Yang instantly received a notification from the system.

‘Ding! You have found out about the hidden story behind the axe. By the guidance of Meka, you have used your heart to feel the power within it. Somewhere within it, you heard a vague voice saying, "Go to the Camarro Islands! Go to the Camarro Islands!"’

So, the next stop is the Camarro Islands!

Zhang Yang used a [Teleportation Scroll] and traveled back to Morning Town. After the cool down period for his [Party Summon Order] was finally over, he summoned Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er over to his location. Then, he linked their [Teleportation Scrolls] onto the Teleportation Circle in Morning Town for their convenience.

The little brat was very eager to ride on her [Flying Mount], so she went off with the [Winged Tiger] to grind it’s level up. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue was not as energetic. She got Zhang Yang to identify her [Enigmatic Prophet's Boots] before she headed down the streets for a casual walk. After that, she went off to see that blind little girl Luilina and went straight to Winst Castle to gaze upon the view of the Chaos Realm from the top of the palace.

Zhang Yang summoned out the Serpent and headed straight towards the Camarro Islands.

In order to unseal the second seal on his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang was required to locate the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang]. However, after weighing the importance between the quests, naturally, getting the [God of War Inheritance] would be his main priority. Whatever side quests or minor quests that come after that would have to wait until he gets his hands on the [God of War Inheritance].

After flying in the sky for about 4 to 5 hours, Zhang Yang had finally entered the area of the Camarro Islands. It was a grinding map ranging from Level 100 to Level 130. Like the ten barren seas, it was a large ocean

dotted with small islands.

Chapter 497: Inheritance Trial

Zhang Yang took the Inheritance Keepsake of the God of War out of his inventory. The axe suddenly became 'alive,' and freed itself from the grip of Zhang Yang. After that, the axe radiated and turned into a stream of light, and it began to fly off.

He quickly patted Whitey Jr., and the Serpent soared to the sky and chased after the light.

Although the light was traveling quite swiftly, it would stop after a certain distance, as if it was waiting for Zhang Yang to follow it. That way, Zhang Yang would not lose track of it.

Although this small axe got the chance to rest, however, Whitey Jr. was giving its all, flying at its top speed, just to keep up with it. Whitey Jr. was so exhausted that its two beady eyes were swollen with tears. It would turn around to look at Zhang Yang, trying to look pitiful, pleading Zhang Yang to let it stop and rest for awhile.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted the head of the Serpent, then he said, "You can do it, Whitey Jr.. In future, I shall get a white snake to be your lifelong companion! White snake, green snake, and only Xu Xian(1) is missing!" Zhang Yang tried to crack a joke, based on the Chinese Odyssey titled, 'Legend of the White Snake'.

"So, who is this Xu Xian, big brother?" Felice was not carrying anyone, and on top of that, she had exceptional stamina! There was no sign of tiredness or fatigue on her face. Furthermore, she could simply sit on the back of Whitey Jr. whenever she feels like taking a break. So the most unlucky one in this situation is Whitey Jr..

"Erm... Xu Xian is a physician. His sister-in-law is the captain of the officers in town, something like a modern day government servant. Well, with a good family background and a decent job, he managed to win back a fair and beautiful white bride as his wife, and also got another energetic and hot green girl, as a bonus!" Zhang Yang began to talk nonsense as he started to tell Felice the story of the 'Legend of the White Snake'.

Felice was listening to the story with a very focused mind. Unconsciously, she stopped flying on her own as she slowly transformed back to her Humanoid Form and sat on the back of Whitey Jr.. Poor Whitey Jr.. another weight was added on its back, as more tears flowed from its small beady eyes. After she was done listening to Zhang Yang's story, Felice could not help but to wonder as she patted on the body of Whitey Jr., "Whitey Jr., you can turn yourself into a beautiful white bride, can you?"

Whitey Jr., "..."

After soaring through the sky over a certain distance for 2 hours straight, the flying axe had finally landed on the ground. With a loud and tremendous clash, it cleaved through a thick and sturdy rock and went right through.

Zhang Yang landed on the ground together with Whitey Jr. as he made his way down from the back of the Serpent. He walked up to the axe and grabbed the handle with both hands. Then, he began to put his strength into pulling the Inheritance Keepsake of the God of War, out of the rock.

The moment he pulled the axe out of the rock, a very powerful magnetic force came over and pulled the axe away towards a new direction.

This is basically a deserted island where there is no sign of men at all, not even beasts or Spectres! Zhang Yang got on the back of Whitey Jr. and followed the axe.

Not long after, Zhang Yang found himself standing at the entrance of a cave. This cave was not as deep as he had expected it to be. It was only approximately 30 meters deep in. Zhang Yang activated the Appearance Effect of his [Titan Set Armor], and his entire body began to glow. He proceeded deeper into the cave, displeased about how he glowed like a walking lighthouse.

Although the cave was not deep in, it was vast and spacious. The ceiling of the cave was at least 30 meters above from the ground and the width was about 20 meters wide, at the least. Rather than a cave, this was more like a horizontal crater. It was as if a giant had punched the muddy ground

with all his might!

Zhang Yang stopped by a gigantic corpse which lay at the deepest part of the cave.

The gigantic corpse had already decayed into a mere skeleton, lying against the wall of the cave. It was about 7 meters tall. Furthermore, this skeleton was completely gold in color, as if it was a masterpiece, made of pure gold!

However, some parts of its left chest had been broken off, apparently, the owner of this skeleton was killed by a blow through its chest.

Boom!

The axe in Zhang Yang's hand began to radiate a heavenly light of seven colors, and the light was absorbed into the giant skeleton!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

In front of Zhang Yang's own eyes, the skeleton started moving! After stretching, as if it was just waking up from sleep, it got to its feet and stood gloriously in front of Zhang Yang. Suddenly, the axe tore itself out of Zhang Yang's grip, and flew straight into the grip of this gigantic skeleton! Instantly, invisible waves were blown across the surroundings, followed by the sound of huge tidal waves bursting and rumbling across the ears of Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang heard a sound coming from behind him and he could not help but to turn around to have a look. What he saw was a huge tidal wave as high as hundreds of meters tall, moving fast and strong across the sea, outwardly into the distance!

Holy mother of lord! This is one amazingly overpowered being here! It had been dead for so long that only the skeleton remained, but it is still capable of stirring up such impact by raising a hand up! How cool and overly powerful is that!

Zhang Yang stared at the skeleton as he tried to read its details.

[Ares, The Fallen God of War] (???)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Attack:???

Skills:???

Note: One of the hapless gods that had fallen during the War among Gods.

No matter how high the level of the bosses are, they would still inform players their levels, through their information description, just like the Celestial Tier boss that Zhang Yang encountered when he was still back in the newbie town. Even though there were about 300 Levels differences between the level of the boss and the levels of the players, Zhang Yang and the other players could still see the Tier and the level of the boss, at the very least.

But this Fallen God of War did not show any other information, other than its name! This is most likely due to the fact that this is an actual god, which is even higher than the Celestial Tier!

"Mortal ---" the skeleton began to talk in a very deep voice. Although the voice of the boss was not loud, the air around him was thrown about. Miniature tornadoes were beginning to form, one after another as the strong winds collided with each other. Such is the divine power of a god!

If this boss ever slammed its palm down, even a Celestial boss would most probably be instantly killed!

Zhang Yang's mind was in a mess as his mouth started moving politely and uttering idle pleasantries to the 'god' right before him, "God of War, I have heard tales about you! I have gone through many challenges to collect all of your [God of War Inheritance Fragments], and I have traveled a great distance to locate you with only one goal, to obtain your Inheritance!"

"Haha! Mortal! You are very direct, and I respect that!" the gigantic

skeleton began to laugh and the air was thrown up again, causing the ceiling of the cave to tremble and the rocks and stone to fall from the ceiling. Even the rocks in the surroundings were rumbling! It was as if the cave would collapse at any time!

He nodded and said, "Since that you have acquired my Inheritance Keepsake, of course, you are worthy of obtaining my Inheritance! However, before that, you must pass my trial! It only proves that you are only fortunate enough to stumble across every single fragment of my Inheritance Keepsake. In order to become my successor and inherit my power, you must have a boundless 'Courage', the 'Bloodlust', and of course, a wise mind with 'Determination'!"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "Then, show me your trials, and I shall complete them all to prove to you that I am indeed worthy!"

"Very well. My remaining power is limited. It is only enough for me to reveal myself for a brief moment. In no time at all, I shall return to silence and continue to rest in darkness for eternity!" the voice of Ares continued to rumble across the surroundings of the cave.

Zhang Yang could not help but frown deeply. This 'god' knew that he was running out of time, yet he does not know how to cut the crap and save more time! But, this 'god' had been in the dark, without any chance to talk or even breathe for tens of thousands of years! It was quite understandable, all things considered.

"The first trial shall test your 'Courage'!"

Ares raised a finger pointed it at Zhang Yang from where he stood. A stream of colorful light began to engulf Zhang Yang entirely.

Zhang Yang only saw a blinding glare in front of him as he squeezed his eyes shut. After he reopened his eyes and regained his vision, he found that he was standing right at the top of a bottomless cliff! There was no way for him to back away from the side of the cliff! There was only a bridge, with a width of less than half a foot, right before his eyes. The bridge was connected directly to the peak of a mountain, at least 1 kilometer away from where he stood!

The wind was howling in between the mountains making the bridge very shaky and unstable. It was like a long snake. Looking down the endless pit below the bridge would definitely give quite a punch to a person's mental state. Some people might just turn away the moment they see that bottomless area below that bridge!

Even though Zhang Yang knew that this 'scene' was in virtual reality, his heart was still pounding madly, as if his heart was about to beat through his chest and fall out! Well, this is perfectly normal, as normal people would have felt the same. If anyone dares say that this is nothing, then that person must be mentally sick!

'Ding! You accepted the first trial from Ares! You must reach the other end of the bridge within 20 minutes. The timer will start the moment you set foot on the stone bridge. You can only fail 3 times, or you shall never be able to complete the quest for the [God of War Inheritance]!'

What the hell!

Zhang Yang tried to summon the Serpent with his mind, but he immediately received a notification from the system straight away, saying that he cannot summon a [Mount] in this area! Not just that, he could not even summon Felice out! It totally cut off any options for Zhang Yang to cheat in this trial!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and he aimed properly at direction he was supposed to go. He suddenly closed his eyes tightly and charged forward in a hush!

Thud thud thud!

He had nothing on his mind at that moment, other than trying to make sure he was running perfectly straight!

According to an average movement speed of a player in the game, a player can move 10 meters every second. It meant that a player could run over 1000 meters in 100 seconds! To be able to finish walking on a stone bridge that is no wider than half a foot from one end to the other end is already not an easy task, even without a limited time frame. Currently, Zhang Yang was only given 2 minutes to complete the task!

Well, since he really has to do it in order to pass the trial, he simply squeezed his eyes shut and thought about nothing as he kept running forward!

Isn't this trial all about 'Courage'? Well, running across a thin, long bridge, with his eyes closed, is considered a very brave move in itself, right? Of course, Zhang Yang would only dare to try such a stunt in the game.

The wind was howling into both of his ears, however, Zhang Yang was not affected at all. He ignored everything, the only thing he cared about at that moment was the time, as he ran forward. He did not dare to even open his eyes a little. He knew that if he ever takes a peek down on the bridge, it would definitely send him tipping down to 'hell'.

50 seconds... 80 seconds... 100 seconds... 110 seconds!

Zhang Yang opened his eyes, and found himself on the other side of the bridge. He had arrived at the other end of the stone bridge on the peak of the mountain!

'Ding! Congratulation, you have passed the first trial!'

The scene around Zhang Yang suddenly blurred and changed into another set of scenes. Now, he was put into an ancient arena.

"The second trial will test you your 'Bloodlust'!"

The deep, cold voice of Ares was spread across the entire arena.

'Ding! You have accepted the second trial from Ares! Within this period of time, you shall forget every single skill you have and you shall not be able to use any items from your inventory. What you are required to do is to kill without mercy until you have defeated every single enemy in the arena! Please take note that you would have to restart this trial if you are killed. Furthermore, you can only die 3 times, or else you shall never be able to complete the quest for the [God of War Inheritance]!'

Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang!

The metallic door at the other end of the arena began to open up as

metallic chains pulled the door upwards. A muscular man, with a giant hammer over his shoulder walked into the arena and let out an intimidating roar. Without even a simple greeting, he charged straight towards Zhang Yang, swinging his hammer!

The moment he entered the arena, all attributes of Zhang Yang were reduced to zero, and all the equipment he had on him had disappeared! He was basically a naked man, wearing only a diaper to cover his 'vital' spot! However, there were countless weapons lying on the weapon rack at the sides of the arena. So, he quickly made his way straight to the weapon rack and picked up an axe and a shield. Then, he began to go head on with the hammer guy.

The damage calculation in the arena is very different. All characters did not have HP bars to indicate whether they have high HP or low HP. A variety of methods could be used to kill the opponents. You can just take off the head, or cut off the hands of the opponents and let them bleed to death. Everything was just like the real world! There was nothing related to the system of the game, at all.

Zhang Yang let out a thunderous roar as he slid across the ground and through the two legs of the muscular man. While he was at it, he lifted the axe in his hands and the entire axe went straight into his crotch! Blood spilled all over the ground as the man spilled his blood and guts! It was disgusting! After he staggered around for awhile, the man collapsed onto the ground and died.

Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang!

Before Zhang Yang could even take a deep breath, the metallic door was once again pulled upwards, and a one-armed middle age man with a slender frame walked right out. This time, the opponent only had a knife on his only arm, the right arm. The man would spin around with his knife sporadically. The knife would glint, sending a terrifying thrill that was made even more intense by the cold, chilly air around the arena, every time he struck!

Zhang Yang was overwhelmed by his own will to kill at the moment. He

walked to the dead muscular man that he had killed previously and pried the axe out of the man's ruptured guts.

As he was picking up the axe, that one-arm man was already beginning to charge at him with large strides. With the knife in his hand, Zhang Yang could feel the knife rushing for his throat!

Zhang Yang would be dead, if the man gets him by his throat. Everything in the arena was so real, that there was no HP or MP, or any sort of attributes involved anymore! Every game knowledge Zhang Yang had was now meaningless! Well, Zhang Yang had pretty decent fighting skills in real life. By the time the knife almost reached his neck, Zhang Yang had already raised his shield and blocked the attack!

However, before Zhang Yang could even begin to fight back, the one-arm man had already turned the other way around and struck Zhang Yang with another blow! He was moving fast as lightning!

The sound of the knife clashing with the shield was heard over and over again.

Zhang Yang could only keep raising his shield around to protect the frontal part of his entire body as the one-arm man continued moving his knife around in such an agile way! Zhang Yang did not even dare lower down his shield!

What the hell! What amazing skill!

Zhang Yang endured it for a little while more, and suddenly, he moved his arm all of a sudden and bashed his shield right onto the face of that one-arm man. Blood spilled out from his mouth, as the one-arm man staggered a few steps back. But, as his veteran appearance suggested, he immediately righted himself and charged back towards Zhang Yang while waving his knife about!

Ting! Ting! Ting!

In a battle of swords, the shorter the weapon you have, the more danger you are exposed to. The one-arm man was using a short knife, so he was moving extremely fast, so much faster than Zhang Yang's heavy axe! Every

single cut he attempted on Zhang Yang was very close to the throat and chest of Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang could feel his murderous intent blazing.

Sliced!

Blood was spilled across the air as the chest of Zhang Yang was sliced! A wound that was about one foot long instantly appeared on his chest! The wound was so deep that his bones were slightly exposed!

"Argh!" Zhang Yang was angered by the cut as his killing instinct kicked in! With a sweep kick that knocked the man's legs out from under him, the one-arm man fell straight to the ground. Before he could even get back on his feet, Zhang Yang had already taken his head right off with the heavy axe in his hands!

A slaughter fest has begun!

Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang! The metallic door was opened up once again, opponents with murderous looks came into the arena, one after another, to challenge Zhang to death.

After all, only one would survive by the end of these battles! Of course, Zhang Yang would not allow himself to be slaughtered by other while he does nothing. He gave it his best to survive waves of battles, taking off heads of his opponents one after another! So much blood was spilled onto his body to the point that he looked like he just had a bloodbath! There was no way of telling whose blood was whose anymore!

The monsters that died here did not disappear as well. The bodies were piled up, to the point that the entire arena was flooded with blood, severed limbs, and mangled corpses! The scene was spectacularly bloody!

It was an endless killing spree, and Zhang Yang wasn't even aware that the blood had flooded the arena, up to his ankles! The blood was so thick that it took him a lot of effort to move his legs!

TL Notes:

1. Xu Xian: the lover of Bai Suzhen (human form of White Snake) in the folk tale of 'Legend of the White Snake'.

Chapter 498: The True Ordeal

The massacre was endless!

Zhang Yang had lost count on how many opponents he had slain! However, both sides of the arena were piled up with countless bodies, and the very air itself was shrouded in red mist!

In this arena, the passing time would be much slower than the time in the game. Because Dream Technology has managed to adjust the in-game time and the real time to the ratio of 3:1, they would have no problem adjusting it further, here!

Zhang Yang felt that he had been killing for an entire month, already!

Whenever he battled one opponent during the day, he would have one night to rest it off, before he would encounter another new opponent the next day. Zhang Yang figured that he had probably 'overnight' for over 30 times! Finally, he was teleported out of the arena!

Although he reacquired all of his equipment, and all of the blood on him had disappeared the moment he left the arena, however, a month of restless killing had taken a toll on his psyche. There was a murderous look on him, and his eyes looked dead and empty. Some might even wet their pants by simply making eye contact with him!

From the depths of his heart, he was furious at the game's developers. Such a quest was too much! Making one participate in such a mass slaughter could really change a person's soul and plant the seed of evil in it! He recalled that the [God of War Inheritor] in his previous life was an American who had a thirst for killing! Having gone through this part of the quest now, he believed that it wasn't really the true nature of the American. After all, he must have passed the trial after killing so many people, and it had affected him so much!

Even though he felt as if he had stayed in the arena for over 30 days, it had merely been a few hours on the 'outside' world of the game. At least he did not feel any thirst or hunger after he completed the trial.

"The third trial will test your 'Determination'!"

The deep voice of Ares boomed across his ears, and the scene in front of Zhang Yang changed again, this time, he found himself by a lake! The water of the lake was so crystal clear that he could see the bottom of the lake. The moon was high in the sky, its reflection clearly seen on the surface of the lake.

At one end of the lake, there was a heavenly beautiful woman dipped in the pool. Her fair, naked body was reflected under the pale, clear moonlight, it was an immeasurably mesmerizing scene!

The woman appeared to be at the age of 24 or 25 years old, the age where humans would be at their prime, and women would be at the height of their beauty. Her body shape was lined with perfect grace, her skin as white as polished jade, with the water sliding off its flawless surface! Her fair neck was graceful and long, and her folded arms that were wrapped around her flat stomach 'unintentionally' lifted her full, heavy breasts up, and two light, strawberry-yogurt pink circular tips jutted out of the mountains. Her slim, hypnotic waist could only be matched by her round, perky buttocks. Her two long thighs were so fair that they appeared to be an illusion - blurry to the eyes! Her perfectly shaped body formed an hourglass that was lacking in neither symmetry or proportions.

When it comes to Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Yu Li, they were truly beautiful creatures. However, humans are never perfect. There would always be some flaw. But, the body of the woman right before Zhang Yang's eyes is the definition of perfection. There were no flaws, at all! Every inch of her fair skin was perfectly sculpted!

Zhang Yang could not take his eyes off this surreal image!

'Ding! You accepted the third trial from Ares! Warrior, you must guard your soul! To defeat you, the enemy will use all sorts of schemes and conspiracies that exist in this realm, including Seduction! Ares will never want a person without a stout heart to inherit his legacy and power! So warrior, you have only once chance to prove yourself within these 30 minutes! Don't mess it up and make yourself look stupid!'

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel embarrassed. Although he had overcome the 'one month' of killing and slaughtering, he was now in an extreme need to 'release' his stress! What better way to let it all lose in one climatic, spurt of love and passion?!

But, Zhang Yang was not so silly that he would mix up the game and reality together! He was not so 'hungry' to get a hard-on while looking at a virtual character! At worst, he could just ram into Han Ying Xue's room and 'teach' the witch a good 'lesson'! Well, the witch might even get into it and have fun with him!

So, is this trial a bonus for him, then?

As for the beautiful woman bathing by the side of the lake, it seemed that Zhang Yang did not exist in her eyes. Even though they were just tens of meters away from each other, the woman had not even spared a glance at Zhang Yang. She did not even turn her head over towards the direction where Zhang Yang was standing. However, when Zhang Yang saw the information right above her head, he could not help but to feel shocked!

[Lachesis, The Goddess of War] (???)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Attack:??

Skills???

Note: Represents the Goddess of War, the existence of this Goddess trembles over the gods in the divine realm!

What the f*ck! He actually got a chance to feast his eyes upon the scene of a Goddess of War bathing with his eyes! Looks like this Ares is not all stout of heart either! Of all women in the world, he actually picked the Goddess of War to be the projection for his trial object! It seems like he had a thing for this Lachesis, back then!

"Come... come!"

Low voices were suddenly heard by the ears of Zhang Yang. The voices were more like moans, and the voices were so seductive, attempting to rob Zhang Yang of his senses, making him lose grip of reality! It was a difficult sensation to explain, so let's take an inappropriate example. It's as if a person is feeling an urge to urinate while dreaming, but a part of his subconscious is strongly suggesting him not to.

Zhang Yang was feeling that way, all the time, as he stood over there. A strong seductive force was trying to lead him into walking forward! But he seemed to remember that he needed to complete the quest! He knew that everything would be over if he ever walks towards that woman!

It was like being awake, and not being awake at the same time! It was the unexplainable sensation of drifting across a fantasy!

At the same moment, a blazing white light suddenly burst right out of the chest of Zhang Yang. Felice actually broke through the restriction of this area and materialized as Zhang Yang's Battle Companion!

The drifting feeling was instantly removed from his body as Zhang Yang instantly regained his senses! Although the woman in the lake was extremely beautiful and seductive, it was really difficult to actually shake Zhang Yang's will. A normal man would only look at a poster with a pretty sexy girl on it, and feast their eyes upon it, instead of charging towards the poster with their erected penises.

"Felice! How did you manage to come out?" Zhang Yang was really curious on how Felice broke through the restriction of the area.

Felice was gazing upon the beautiful woman in the lake with a confused expression on her face as she was muttering, "Big brother, I feel like I know her! But no matter how hard I try to remember, I just cannot recall who she is!"

After listening to her, Zhang Yang suddenly realized that features of Lachesis actually looked just like Felice's!

Could it be, that Felice is actually the daughter of Lachesis?

To think that Felice is already as powerful as a Mythical Tier, with 4

seals still holding her back, would she become as powerful as a Celestial Tier being, if all 4 seals are unsealed away? This actually makes sense for such a powerful existence to have a Goddess of War as her mother!

Meka did say that a war erupted over thousands of years ago. Lachesis might have fallen during that war, while Felice got away from it, most probably because of the seals! Anyway, this is just a game, any designed story in the game by the designers would do, as long as it makes sense.

"Big brother, why do I feel like crying right now?" Felice turned around and looked at Zhang Yang, as tears began to roll down her cheeks. She looked really sad at the moment.

Zhang Yang quickly pulled the little lady into his arms as he said, "Don't cry. I'm here for you."

With the appearance of Felice, this supposedly extremely difficult trial had become extremely easy. Zhang Yang hugged the little lady for half an hour and passed the third trial very easily.

This time, he was not transported to another special scene. He found himself back in the middle of the cave he found Ares. Right in front of him was the gigantic skeleton of Ares, lying against the wall again.

"Very well. You have passed the first three trials. So, let us move on to the next phase. The true ordeal is about to come at you!" the deep voice of Ares was thunderous, "You have the 'Courage', the 'Bloodlust', and the 'Determination'! But those are not enough! You must also possess a certain level of Strength in order to proceed with the Inheritance of my power! Or else, you might just be crushed by the fragments of my rampant power!"

"Furthermore, the vitality of my soul is nearing it's limit. I must recharge my soul in order to prolong my pitiful existence. So, warrior, go on and slay a Black Dragon named Anubask, and bring me back the blood of that giant lizard! Pour it on me when you return! With the nourishment of the dragon's blood, my soul should be able to cling on to this world for another one or two years!"

Right after Ares finished his words, he sat right back to the corner of the

cave by one of the walls and continued to pretend to be dead.

‘Ding! Ares has given you a quest: The True Ordeal, accept or decline?’

... can he really choose not to accept this?

[The True Ordeal] (Difficulty: S-rank)

Description: Ares wants you to kill the Black Dragon Anubask and obtain the [Black Dragon’s Blood] to prolong the vitality of his soul. Warrior. The Black Dragon Anubask is extremely powerful. You better be prepared! Bring along a thousand, no, ten thousand players before you head for the boss! The Black Dragon Anubask is rumored to be found by Crimson Flames Peak in the area of the Land of the Flaming Rocks.

Completion: Slay the Black Dragon Anubask 0/1, acquire the Black Dragon’s Heart 0/1.

Slay a black dragon?

Zhang Yang felt a group of muscles twitching below his left eye. The Land of the Flaming Rocks is a Level 120 - Level 150 map, and Ethereal bosses start appearing in the map, starting from Level 140! He was very positive that this Anubask must be an Ethereal Tier boss at the very least! If he ever encounters any Ethereal Tier boss with his current equipment, he should rejoice if he even gets to walk away in one piece! To even think about slaying a Black Dragon is totally absurd!

Unless Zhang Yang invites Queen Serena over to aid him on this. Slaying a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss would definitely be easy and enjoyable if he ever takes on the dragon boss, together with an Ascended Tier NPC that wields the heavenly [Meteor Sword] by his side. Or else, he would really need to recruit a large number of players before he can take down an Ethereal boss!

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had mobilized all his entire guild members from his previous guild - Clear Water in order to obtain the Inheritance from the King Kong boss. After they had been launching their assaults without any pause for one day one night straight, they finally took down that King Kong boss!

But the only Lone Desert Smoke members who can enter the Chaos Realm at the moment are Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. The rest have not even reached Level 100 yet. Although they already have a tanker, a healer, and a DPS player already, it would still be a joke if the 3 of them went up against an Ethereal boss!

Well, if you intend to sacrifice yourself, at least die a meaningful death!

So what should he do now? Should he really wait for most of his guild members to reach Level 100 and enter the Chaos Realm, before he heads out for the Black Dragon Anubask?

Furthermore, Zhang Yang had already accepted a Main Story Quest where he is required to gather 3 different kinds of materials, back from when he was Level 10. One of the materials required would be the [Black Dragon's Heart]. He had already acquired the [Horn of the Mythical Unicorn] previously. So if he can just get his hands on the [Black Dragon's Heart], he would only need to locate [Book of the Damned] before he can finally complete that quest!

After all, he has the [Friendship Jade] which allowed him to disguise himself as a Spectre and infiltrate deep into the lair of the Spectre to steal the [Book of the Damned] with ease. Well, it would mean that he can finally complete that quest that he accepted ever since he was Level 10 within a short period of time right, after he gets his hands on the [Black Dragon's Heart]!

Chapter 499: Black Dragon Anubask

However, it was actually not impossible to slay the boss at the current moment. It would only require the support of powerful items such as the [Forbidden Scroll]!

Zhang Yang could not help but let out a breath of sigh as he began to think about the insufficient number of good cards on his deck. If only he could get a large number of [Forbidden Scrolls], then he should be able to crush this boss without any problems. Unfortunate for him, being the first to enter the Chaos Realm, Zhang Yang had only managed to obtain one [Forbidden Scroll] ever since he stepped foot into this realm. It seems that the rate of dropping of this item is extremely low. So, hoping for players to sell out a rare item like the [Forbidden Scroll] isn't going to cut it.

Zhang Yang could not simply put aside the [God of War Inheritance], even momentarily. He was so fixated that his heart screamed for him to somehow find a way to finish the quest. After giving thoughts on how to proceed with the quest, he finally decided to travel over to the Land of the Flaming Rocks to check on how powerful the boss can be. If he really stands a chance to tank against the boss, then he can just summon Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er over to aid him in battle! Zhang Yang was so determined to slay the boss, no matter on how great the cost is! As long as he can slay that dragon, every effort he puts in would be worth it!

After he made his decision, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and headed straight to the Land of the Flaming Rocks.

Although the map of this Land of the Flaming Rocks is just a Level 120 - 150 grinding map, there were 4 maps in between the map of Land of the Flaming Rocks and the map of the Camarro Islands. In other words, the distance between these two maps would still be very far and wide. Whitey Jr. Was once again 'tortured' to flying across the maps. When they arrived at the map blazing with volcanic lava, Whitey Jr. looked like it was about to die of tiredness.

The level of Zhang Yang was way too low for the map. The moment he

landed on the ground, it was like a naked beautiful woman stepping into the lair of dirty swines! The monsters were already charging towards him, 40 to 50 meters away while they were 'howling' as if they had just spotted their prey. Poor Whitey Jr., without being spared a second of respite, was forced to go airborne again to leave the swarm of monsters behind.

Though the ground was definitely hostile, the sky was not much safer. Flying birds, with no indication of their levels, flew towards Zhang Yang, one after another as they began to launch their attacks on Whitey Jr. and himself.

Although the Level Gap Suppression function of the game is effective, making Zhang Yang's attack power drop and the damage he receives to increase a lot, but it was still a simple task for Zhang Yang to slay normal monsters. The only difference was that their HP bars were a little longer. It only felt like battling an Elite Tier monster of his level!

Zhang Yang took out every single monster that came in his way as he headed for the Crimson Flame Peak.

The moment he entered the area of the Crimson Flame Peak, where lava flowed everywhere across the ground, Zhang Yang stopped encountering those annoying birds, and that concerned him a little. Obviously, he had entered the territory of that foul Black Dragon, Anubask. No living creature in that land would dare to provoke or disturb the dragon. None would even dare to move within it's radar!

In no time at all, Zhang Yang had located a gigantic black dragon by the west side of the peak!

This black dragon was at least 300 meters long. Those dragons that the Knights of the White Jade castle rode upon were merely the size of baby dragons when they are to be compared to the size of this black dragon! Its body was fully covered with dark and black scales. Each of the scales were as large as the size of a cover lid of a well. The dragon looked very fierce and intimidating!

At that moment, the black dragon was still lying on the ground, having a nap. The two nostrils of the dragon were even wider than an underground

sewer, as breaths of fire were coming right out of the nostrils, heating up the ground below its head, to the point that the ground was blazing red! Even hard rocks across that area were cracking up!

The dragon curled its massive body up as it slept. Its tail is at least about a hundred meters long. Even though it was just asleep, the massive body of the dragon was already intimidating enough as it is!

[Black Dragon Anubask] (Ethereal, Dragon)

Level: 150

HP: 450,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Attack:???

Skills:???

Note: According to legend, the Black Dragon Anubask was once the Battle Companion of the Hell's Lord, Chigallor. Filled up with Evil force by Chigallor himself, this dragon has an eternal lifespan, just like the gods! However, during the War, Anubask was severely wounded, and has yet to fully recover still.

A difference of 47 levels! Zhang Yang could only see the level, the HP amount and the Defense of the boss. As for the attack power and the skills of the boss, Zhang Yang could only see a bunch of question marks.

So it appears that this dragon was there when the great War happened!

No wonder Ares had mentioned the name of this dragon as a specific target! It seems that during the great War among the gods, the God of War and the Hell's Lord must have been enemies, and this black dragon must have chewed on his penis for a couple of times to be able to piss him off so much that he would still remember the name of this dragon, thousands of years after he has fallen!

There was one problem... this is a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss! To be able to take down such powerful boss, Zhang Yang must at least reach Level 120, in order to disable the 'Level Gap Suppression' function of the

game! Although it sounded like a simple 17-level difference between Level 103 and Level 120, it's really not an easy task to grind from Level 103 to Level 120. Without any quest rewards that would reward Zhang Yang with levels, it would take up approximately 170 days just to grind 17 levels to reach Level 120!

170 days is a freaking half a year!

Furthermore, this freaking boss has over 450,000,000 HP! Zhang Yang frowned so intensely that his face almost started cramping up! Zhang Yang could still remember clearly, that the King Kong boss in his previous life only had a total of 45,000,000 HP. Both bosses were Level 150, however, the difference in both of their HP amount was like day and night!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, the entire guild of Clear Water had been mobilized when they were battling the King Kong boss, and it took them a day and a night of non-stop fighting before they narrowly defeated the boss. It was a close call, as they had almost failed to defeat the boss! At the current stage of the game, although Lone Desert Smoke is the strongest guild there is in the China server, but the timing is not right. Most of the members of Lone Desert Smoke were still around Level 90. It would take up to 3 to 4 months at the least, before all of the core players of the Lone Desert Smokes can enter the Chaos Realm!

Before Zhang Yang set his eyes upon the mighty boss, he still had some ideas in his mind, and looked around the terrain to see if he could exploit it in any way to kill the boss in a cheap, but effective manner. After thoroughly scouting the area, that didn't seem feasible.

Boom!

Just as Zhang Yang was about to give up on slaying the dragon, a stream of white light suddenly gushed out of his chest as Felice appeared right in front of him, as if she had lost control over herself.

The little lady stood on the back of Whitey Jr. as she stared at the Black Dragon Anubask with her eyes blazing with hatred and rage, "Big brother! I think, I have seen this large, crawling lizard from somewhere before! I just can't find the reason why I hate it so much! I feel like tearing this

lizard into pieces!"

Zhang Yang was a little moved by her words. He always had been suspecting if Felice is the daughter of the Goddess of War. The Goddess of War was among those who had fallen during the great War, and she had somehow managed to protect Felice! Furthermore, this black dragon must have engaged with the gods during the war, so there is a big possibility that Felice have seen the dragon before. Well, this dragon might even have something to do with the Goddess of War's death! Then the rage and hatred that Felice has towards the dragon would be understandable!

"Big brother, I can't hold it anymore!" Felice let out a roar and turned into her Dragonhawk Form. Then, she charged straight towards the boss.

Zhang Yang was freaking out! Although Felice might at least be a Mythical Tier Battle Companion, however, even with her 4 seals removed, and as a Celestial Tier Battle Companion, it would still be impossible for her to defeat the boss! No matter how powerful she gets, she would never have the HP to outlast a boss. For instance, Felice only has about tens of thousands of HP, just like a player with a full set of Mythical Tier equipment. It is totally incomparable to the amount of HP of a boss!

Well, it is a suicidal act for a battle companion to charge towards the boss without any backup!

Zhang Yang tried to unsummon Felice back into the Battle Companion slot in his inventory, but failed to do so! The little lady was disobeying his orders, and Zhang Yang could not do anything about it other than to watch!

"Well, do or die!" Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and he patted Whitey Jr. and charged straight towards the boss. He had promised that he would take care of Felice for as long as he is able to. Even it was just a promise that he made to a virtual character in a virtual game, Zhang Yang did not want to go back on his own words.

Felice descended down to a position that was about the height of 30 to 40 meters above the Black Dragon Anubask. Then she suddenly transformed herself back into her Humanoid Form, as she raised her lance

up and stabbed it straight down the head of the black dragon.

As an Ethereal boss, the aggro range of Anubask is very vast, as expected. It had already detected Felice as she was approaching it from above. It opened its eyes and scrambled to its feet, opening its mouth up wide as it flung out a blazing dragon breath towards Felice!

{Sacrifice}!

Zhang Yang did not even bother to check if he could use the skill on a Battle Companion. Without thinking, he had already thrown his skill right onto Felice and activated his [Heart of the Death Knight], entering a state of invincibility.

Boom!

Although the boss attacked after Felice did, the dragon breath attack had reached Felice first, as it was a ranged attack. A blazing blast of dragon breath collided into Felice as the flames engulfed Felice entirely! But Zhang Yang did not see any 'Immune' word appearing on top of him. It seems that the skill - {Sacrifice} cannot be used on a Battle Companion!

However, Zhang Yang did not see Felice in the Battle Companion slots of his inventory!

--- When a Battle Companion dies, the Battle Companion will receive a penalty of -1 level and returns back to the Battle Companion slot in the owner's inventory. The Battle Companion can only be summoned again after 1 hour.

Since he could not see Felice in the Battle Companion slot, that would only mean that Felice was still alive!

Hoof!

A human silhouette broke right through the blazing dragon breath and appeared right in front of the head of the black dragon! A lance plunged straight into the head of the dragon!

‘-2,428,201!’

20,000? 240,000? Zhang Yang rubbed his eyes and took another look at

the numbers... What the f*ck! It's more than 2,420,000 damage!

What is this? A cosmic Explosion? Super Saiyan Felice? Or did the Buddha possess her momentarily and unleash a heavenly strike! Zhang Yang tightened his grip on Whitey Jr. as hard as he could, as he was stunned to see that amount of damage done to the boss!

"It's you!" Black Dragon Anubask spoke in a thunderous voice, "You actually survived! How can you be not dead?!"

Felice let out another cry and swung her lance around agilely like she was dancing in the wind. Her powerful stabs could actually penetrate the super thick scales of the dragon! Her strike had left a large cut on the dragon! The blood of the black dragon was oozing out of the open cut, like a spectacular fountain! Zhang Yang felt excited, as he saw the dragon's blood oozing out like that! Well, it was not because he was sadistic or what, it was simply because that blood was exactly what he needed for the quest! As he could not go up and collect the blood at the moment, as it was engaged in a battle, he could only watch all the blood oozing into the surroundings, seeing how the blood had gone to waste, just like that.

‘-602!’

‘-710!’

‘-582!’

Naturally, the boss would not just stand there and let others slaughter it up! Immediately, the dragon opened up its mouth and began to launch it's attack aggressively. However, none of it's attacks had inflicted Felice with damage that is more than 1,000!

{Absolute Defense}!

Felice had activated her super damage immunity Skill. She was basically invincible for the next two minutes!

This little lady over there is definitely in Story Mode! Or else, she would not have inflicted a damage that is higher than a million! However, it's actually normal, after Zhang Yang had given some thoughts on it. There had been no Battle Companion System in his previous life. Well, Felice did

not appear before in the game in his previous life. He could only imagine how important this 'NPC' is now!

‘-7,128,921!’

A stream of blazing light flashed across the lance of Felice, and Zhang Yang knew exactly what it was! It was her {Blazing Dragon's Spear}! However, this {Blazing Dragon's Spear} of Felice had just inflicted over 7 million damage on the black dragon! That was not just an awesome amount damage, that was heavenly!

"Why is this happening? How can this be happening?" The black dragon boss was roaring thunderously, as it endured the divinely powerful attacks of Felice. The initial amount of 450,000,000 HP was decreasing gradually at every passing second!

300,000,000!

200,000,000!

100,000,000!

Zhang Yang could felt the intense beating of his heart, that he lost his breath for a moment there. If Felice can continue to channel such a high damage output onto the boss, then it was possible for her to slay the boss within the 2-minute effective period of her {Absolute Defense}!

Chapter 500: Glare of the Death God

Is this mighty and powerful Ethereal Tier boss about to be slain Battle Companion who was 50 Levels underneath it?

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel giddy and lightheaded! But after seeing the HP bar of the boss dropping lower than 20%, he was very certain that it was not his eyes playing tricks on him, everything that was happening was the real deal!

Zhang Yang did not act like a clueless animal, nor did he become hot-headed and charged right towards the boss --- although he actually thought of doing it initially, that was just his emotions taking over for a second, because he could not watch Felice charging up to a powerful boss, getting herself killed!

In the game, it would not matter how powerful the mounts or the Battle Companions are, once the player who owns them dies, the mount and the Battle Companion would disappear as well. So, the best way for Zhang Yang to help Felice is to find a suitable spot and make sure that he survives!

Although the Black Dragon Anubask appeared helpless against the assaults of Felice as it could only damage Felice by up to 600 to 700 damage every time it struck her, that was only because Felice had already activated her {Absolute Defense}. The basic attacks of the boss is actually reaching up to 60,000 or 70,000 damage!

Furthermore, open world bosses also have powerful AoE attacks! Hence, if Zhang Yang had charged up to the boss, that would get himself killed for nothing, instead of helping her!

Felice struck harder and harder as the battle went on. It was like she had really held a grudge against the black dragon for thousands of years! Every single attack from her lance took away millions of HP. She looked cold, as if she had turned into another person. She was silent and calm, steely and focused, as she bombarded the boss with her assaults. That was no longer the naive and cute little lady that Zhang Yang knew.

The roars of the Black Dragon Anubask were so loud that it shook the sky, and the clouds dispersed into the surroundings of the sky! However, it could not do anything against Felice! Its HP bar was still decreasing rapidly from 80,000,000 to 50,000,000! Then, it dropped further down to 20,000,000 within seconds!

Little Felice was truly soloing the boss, as if she was an equal boss!

"I give up! I'm willing to serve you! Please, don't kill me!" well, those who can live long normally would definitely be afraid of death. Anubask no longer had the pride of a dragon, as it began to lower down its head and tried to express his allegiance to Felice.

If little Felice actually accepts the black dragon's allegiance and allows it to serve her, then would the boss become her mount by the end of it? Zhang Yang could not keep his imagination from running wild. Furthermore, this mount would be a legendary dragon that had actually served Hell's Lord back in time! If there were seals on the dragon to be unsealed, then, wouldn't this boss become a Celestial Tier mount by then?

However, Felice was not moved by its offers by one bit as she continued to wreak havoc upon the boss with her lance, as hard as she could. Her assaults became even more aggressive than before! The tip of her lance was ignited with blazing flames as she swung her lance towards the boss. The scenery was like doomsday pouring down from the sky, as flames flowed down from the heavens and scorched everything on the ground! If there are any life forms in the vicinity, they would definitely have been killed by the merciless bombardments from Felice as well!

Sigh. So much for getting a Celestial Tier mount. Zhang Yang could not help but to sigh resignedly.

10,000,000 HP left!

4,000,000 HP left!

"Rawgh!" Anubask continued to roar in misery as it began to unfurl its wings, getting ready to flee into the skies. But it was interrupted by a throw of Felice's lance, that went straight through its body! That hit took out the last chunk of HP bar of the boss! There it goes! The great Black

Dragon Anubask had fallen! Its massive body crashed heavily into the small peak of a mountain close by. Its body was so huge and heavy that it had crushed the small mountain in half! A substantial amount of blood was gushing out from the wounds and cuts on the body of the black dragon, flooding the entire mountain with red!

Felice let out a roar that shook the surroundings. Green veins started flowing across Felice's head, spilling down her face like a waterfall, as she was pushed back in the direction she had been facing, like the recoil of a gun. Her voice broke through the air and crushed the part of the mountain that was within the range of 10 kilometers in front of her!

It was terrifying!

After she was done with the long roar, Felice suddenly closed her eyes and fell straight from the sky, crashing into the ground.

Zhang Yang quickly unsummoned Felice back into the Battle Companion slot in his inventory with his mind. Then, he stared into the Battle Companion slot in his inventory and saw Felice lying quietly as she hibernated. Her face was extremely pale as if she had strained herself too much. She was comatose.

Zhang Yang tried to summon her, but he received a system notification immediately. Felice was currently hibernating, so he would have to wait for another 72 hours before he can summon her out again.

Well, Zhang Yang had two questions that needed immediate answering when he gets back to that old, deceased God of War, Ares. Firstly, he wanted to know if Felice is really the daughter of the Goddess of War, and secondly, did the black dragon ever slay the Goddess of War. Well, if that's true, then that hatred Felice had for the black dragon really did push her to the point that she had a Cosmic Explosion and totally tortured an Ethereal Tier boss!

Just as he was having these thoughts to himself, Zhang Yang suddenly realized that he had not received any experience points or rewards after the black dragon had been slain! Furthermore, the system also did not notify him with any sort of message about him acquiring the First Clear

for an open world Ethereal Tier boss!

Are you kidding me? So, after all the terrible things that Felice went through killing the boss, everything was for nothing? Nothing at all?

Zhang Yang quickly patted Whitey Jr. and went around the dead body of the boss. If he really can't get anything from this, he is really going to cry out loud, for god's sake!

The dead body of the dragon was massive. One lap around the dead body of the dragon was about 1 kilometer far already! Furthermore, Zhang Yang could not walk too fast as he needed to carefully scan the area for any sign of loot. Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang managed to find a few items right below the belly of the dragon.

Looking closer at them, there was a [Skill Book] with a green hard cover, a heart that was the size of a fist, and last but not least, a 'blood ball' that is also the size of a fist, Zhang Yang could clearly see the blood within the 'ball' flowing about.

Without thinking much about it, Zhang Yang immediately took the 'blood ball' into his hands.

[Black Dragon's Blood] (Quest Item)

Description: The fine blood that is collected directly from the [Black Dragon's Heart]. Although the amount is not that great, it contains the full power of the black dragon when it was still alive. It's concentrated! It is the true essence of the dragon's blood!

Phew! After all that, the quest had finally been completed! Compared to getting the [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang did not even care about the absence of equipment in the drops. At his current strength, he could just go ahead and farm for good equipment when he has time to spare.

The next item was the heart.

[Black Dragon's Heart] (Quest Item)

Description: The heart of the Black Dragon Anubask. It has incredible power. However, only the highest Tiered Spellcaster is eligible to use it.

Zhang Yang could not help but burst into joy. Well, it was like hitting a double jackpot in one go! Now that he already got the [Black Dragon's Blood] and the [Black Dragon's Heart], he only needed to look for the [Book of the Damned] in order to complete that Main Story Quest that he had accepted when he was still Level 10!

Zhang Yang then reached over for the last item, the [Skill Book]. Although this Ethereal Tier boss will just be another cheap plucking when it is thrown to a higher level map, it was still the indisputable overlord of this map. Therefore, the loot it drops would definitely be great!

In the game, bosses would only drop extremely rare items during the first few kills by the players. The loot did not include equipment but only [Skill Books], [Aura Books], and [Forbidden Scrolls]. Equipment would become obsolete as time passes, but skills wouldn't! Skills would only get stronger as players do.

When normal bosses are slain for the first few times, the level and equipment Tier of the players should be around the same level as the bosses. Some of them might even be a little lower than the level of the bosses. Therefore, the system would reward the players with great items and equipment whenever they manage to slay the bosses. However, if the players come back and slay lower leveled boss after reaching a much higher level and getting more powerful equipment, then the system would recognize it as an act of oppressing the bosses instead of challenging the bosses. So, naturally, the loots dropped from the dead bosses would be much 'worse'.

Therefore, the bosses slain would only drop super rare equipment and items in the 'First Clear' and 'Second Clear' rounds. The purpose of setting the game to work like this is to reward players who would actually stand up among the crowd and challenge the difficulty of the dungeons. When players already have the power to oppressively take down the bosses, those bosses would be raped over a thousand times. So it is natural that they would no longer drop good equipment and items.

This is also considered as a 'First Clear,' as Felice was the first one who actually took down this boss. So, this [Skill Book] definitely has a powerful

skill written in it, in order to be worthy of Felice's effort! Because other than the two quest items, only this [Skill Book] dropped from the boss.

[Skill Book: Glare of the Death God]

Use: Teaches you the {Glare of the Death God}

Required Class: No restriction

Required Level: 100

Note: A skill that the Hell's Lord passed down to the Black Dragon Anubask himself! This Skill is tremendously powerful.

A Hell's Lord's Skill!

Zhang Yang could feel a shiver down his spine. He quickly tapped the book against his chest and learned the Skill without saying another word.

[Glare of the Death God]: Stares at a target with the Glare of the Death God, inflicting damage to the target for 10 seconds. There is a 10% rate of triggering Instant-Death on the target. This skill will have certain rate of failing when it is applied on Boss monsters. The Instant-Death effect will be replaced by another effect, whereby there is a 10% rate that the target will lose 1% HP, which can only happens 10 times in a row, at most. The lasting effect will be reduced to 5 seconds when this happens. The effect can be canceled out, but the level of the player that breaks the effect must be higher than the level of the caster. Cooldown: 60 minutes.

This Skill is indeed worthy to be a Hell's Lord's Skill! It is awesome!

Although 10% rate is not high, it was still a negative effect. So once it is placed onto a monster, every other hit would have 10% chance of triggering the effect! It would definitely be very practical to put the negative effect of this Skill onto a player! With this negative effect randomly triggered, the targeted player will be left with only 1 point of HP left!

Unless the player has godly reflexes or can immediately activate skills that can make him invincible over a short period of time, or a healing skill that can instantly heal him up, the player would be killed in a single hit!

Although the effects of the {Glare of the Death God} could be canceled out, the level of the player who breaks the effect must be higher than the level of the caster! That's hilarious, who can actually catch up with Zhang Yang's level now?

Zhang Yang could only laugh. With this Skill, he will not falter when going up against powerful bosses!

After picking up everything, the dead body of the black dragon disappeared. Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little greedy this time. It would have been so much better if only the boss drops a few more [Skill Books] or a few pieces of equipment...

Zhang Yang rode on Whitey Jr. and traveled back all the way to Camarro Islands. When they had finally arrived back at the entrance of the cave, this poor Serpent was so tired that it spat out white foam of bubbles by the end of its mouth. Zhang Yang walked right into the cave where the giant skeleton of Ares lay.

The moment when he took out the 'blood ball', the Inheritance Keepsake for the [God of War Inheritance], the axe that Zhang Yang brought to Ares, immediately floated up into the air. Suddenly, it flew straight towards the 'blood ball' and cleaved into it! The [Black Dragon's Blood] started pouring out, however, not a single drop was wasted. Every single drop of the blood was absorbed by that axe.

"Ah ---" a groan of relief was heard across Zhang Yang's ears, Ares stretched his skeletal arms as he got back his feet, "Mortal, you took way too long with that, I am very disappointed with you! However, seeing that the amount of [Black Dragon's Blood] that you brought back can at least prolong my life for another 3 years, and that you actually managed to slay that huge, disgusting lizard, I shall grant you another chance!"

What the hell? Zhang Yang had never stopped or taken any detours after he accepted the quest! He went straight to the objective of the quest, and Felice went all out and basically instant killed the boss! After that, he had wasted no time at all and had headed back here straight away! So what the f*ck was that all about when Ares said he was still too slow?

It seems that this f*cking God of War would still say the same words even if Zhang Yang could instantly teleport there, instantly kill the boss, and instantly teleport back here!

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The True Ordeal, acquired 20,000,000 Experience Points! Duration: 12 Hours 34 Minutes 29 Seconds. Rating: Perfect. Reward: Shortening on the Linking Quest.’

What a substantial amount of Experience Points! That’s actually awesome! What that sweetened the value of the reward even more was the shortening on the Linking Quest! During Zhang Yang’s previous encounter with the King Kong boss in his previous life, he had lost count on the number of times he had been running around, literally, just to complete some simple quests for the Linking, and had wasted so much time before he could actually confront the boss for real! And the main task to end the Linking Quest was actually slaying the King Kong boss!

If he could really cut short the chain of quests, that would definitely be a great help to him!

Ares paced on it’s skeletal feet, back and forth in the cave for a couple of times before he started talking, "Very well. Go on and slay another 3 monsters that disgust me, and then you shall be able to inherit my godly power! Sigh. I had never realized that the heavens and the earth are so wonderful when I still possessed immortality. Now that my end is nearing every single day, living is truly a happiness that everyone should cherish!"

‘Ding! Ares has given you a quest: The Last Hurdle. Will you accept it?’

Well, this is already the last ‘hurdle,’ as stated in the name of the quest, only an idiot would decline the quest offer!

Zhang Yang quickly selected ‘Accept’ and brought up the quest list to take a closer look.

[The Last Hurdle] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Ares wants you to slay 3 fellows that he hates, deeply. Then, you shall acquire the Final [God of War Inheritance]! However, warrior, you must be aware. These 3 fellows must be slain by you and your hands

alone only. So no matter whether it's your alliance friends or your enemies, as long as they enter the aggro list of the monsters listed, then they will not be your kill anymore.

The first boss is the Aegolous the Gargoyle King. This boss is the claw for the God of Darkness! Slay him! Aegolous is currently located at the Ancient Stone Peak in the land of Grandu Ice Ridge.

The second boss is the Nine Head Hydra Geopolo. This boss is the follower of the Death God! Slay him too! Geopolo is currently located at the Valley of Serpents in the land of Siccory Mountains.

The third boss is the Fire Element King Laguana. This boss is the servant of the God of Fire! Slay him as well! Geopolo is currently located at the Valley of Myriad Snakes in the land of Siccory Mountains.

Completion: Slay Aegolous the Gargoyle King 0/1, Slay Nine Head Hydra Geopolo 0/1, Slay Fire Element King Laguana 0/1.

Slaying bosses all by himself? Zhang Yang let out a long breath. Fortunately, he now has the {Glare of the Death God}. He also had support from Felice and his mount. The chance to slay a powerful boss, all by his own, is definitely looking much better than before. Furthermore, the difficulty of this quest is just A-rank. Those bosses should all be Yellow-Gold Tier.

Now that Felice has crossed his mind, Zhang Yang quickly asked, "My respected God of War, do you know the Goddess of War personally?"

"Of course, the Goddess of War is the prettiest woman in the God Realm. Everyone knows her! Sigh. Unfortunately, she also fell during the great war among the gods. She was caught in the crossfire between the Hell's Lord, the God of Vengeance, and the Devastator!" Ares was feeling angry and sorry for the Goddess of War at the same time.

"Then, did the Goddess of War ever had a daughter?"

"Haha! The Goddess of War had never fallen in love with any of the gods in our realm, so it is impossible that she would have any daughters!"

"Huh?"

"However, she did have a sister, the Goddess of Hope, Fraybe!" Ares was staring at Zhang Yang through the two holes of his eye sockets on his skull and said, "Warrior, enough with the talk, and get on with the quest!"

Right after that, the skeleton walked up to the corner of the cave again and went back to sleep!

Although Zhang Yang wanted to inquire further details about Fraybe and Lachesis, since Ares was no longer responsive to him anymore, then, it should mean that Ares would not wake up until he completes the quest.

So Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it off. In just an instant, he was teleported over to Morning Town.

Zhang Yang had chosen the Grandu Ice Ridge as his first destination because he had already built the Teleportation Circles in Morning Town and Winst Castle. Since he could travel over within 10 seconds, obviously, he would choose that destination as his first choice.

Chapter 501: Han Ying Xue's Battle Companion

The Teleportation Circle was activated. Zhang Yang arrived at the Winst Castle in no time at all.

The moment after he walked right out of the Teleportation Hall, he saw Han Ying Xue running in a hurry towards him. Before he could even open his mouth to ask, he saw that annoying whiner NPC, Messick chasing after her plump buttocks!

He chuckled, amused, "Witchy Snow, why did you simply flirt around and attract weird beings again?"

Zhang Yang appeared to be a savior to Han Ying Xue the moment she laid eyes on him. She quickly ran behind Zhang Yang and used him as her human shield, then she said, "My charm is too great to be ignored! Even NPCs can be seduced by just looking at me! Silly Yu, please save me!"

Messick revealed an impatient expression on his face as he stared at Zhang Yang, "I say you, ugly horse! Stand aside, while a gentleman like myself is pursuing True Love!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then, he turned around and pulled Han Ying Xue into his arms, "Well, you see, this is my woman, you whiner! Do you want more of Felice's {Fire Missile}?"

Messick could still remember very clearly how 'sweet' the {Fire Missiles} that Felice had thrown onto him were, so he could not help but to feel a shiver down his spine as he took a few steps back. His facial expression at the moment was truly 'remarkable'! But he instantly shouted back to Zhang Yang after that, "Your woman, you say? I say you, ugly horse! Stop dreaming about! Do you think you are worthy of this lady who is as bedazzling as the sunlight and as noble as the moon? Do you think you can be her man with your ugly face on your ugly horse body?"

Han Ying Xue smiled as raised her face up a little and gave Zhang Yang a kiss on his cheek, "I am your woman?"

Instead of blushing, Zhang Yang rubbed his face in disgust as he said, "Whiner! Are your eyes so blind that they are actually on your butt? Do you seriously think that she's a beauty?"

Well, Han Ying Xue had set up her avatar in the game to look as plain as possible. Although the results were not ugly at all, but she was far from an actual, bedazzling, mesmerizing beauty! Looks like Messick the whiner had not seen a woman for a very long time, and he could no longer differentiate a vegetable from a bunch of meat!

Han Ying Xue was provoked, as she lifted up her leg and trod on Zhang Yang's foot.

The 'flame of justice' in Messick suddenly ignited as he challenged her, "What say you pretty, let go that ugly beast and charge at me!"

Zhang Yang was stung by the pain on his foot and he tightened his teeth, and then he quickly changed the topic, "Why is this NPC after you in the first place?"

"He insisted on becoming my Battle Companion, and he is forcing me to sign the Contract Bond with him!" it seemed that the focus of Han Ying Xue had successfully been diverted to another matter. Now, her focus was fixed on bad-mouthing Messick as she complained about everything to Zhang Yang, "I will definitely not have this perverted, sick, sexual, psycho following me around! It's very annoying!"

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh out loud. He had intended to let either Fatty Han or Endless Starlight to subdue Messick into becoming either one of their Battle Companions. Well, Messick basically has the same 'scent' as those two wretched perverts. In spite of what he never expected was that Han Ying Xue had such great charm, that Messick would come up to her by himself, and beg her to make him her Battle Companion!

After giving some thoughts about it, Zhang Yang told Han Ying Xue, "I think you should just take him in. Despite this NPC loves to speak foul and wretched language, all of his Skills are good. He is a natural-born meatshield that can really protect you well! Think about it."

Han Ying Xue pointed one of her fingers at Messick and said, "I don't think he wants to protect me at all! Look at his face now! All he wants is to swallow me whole!"

Zhang Yang turned his eyes towards Messick and he could only see Messick drooling at Han Ying Xue, like a hungry wolf. That wretched face of his was beyond saving. Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a breath of sigh, and then he tried to convince Han Ying Xue again, "Well, it would be even more annoying than letting him follow you all over the place, right? Taking him in as your Battle Companion would allow you to keep him in your Battle Companion Slot all the time. You would only summon him out if you ever need him to tank for you!"

Han Ying Xue can be pretty reasonable when it comes to it, so after some pondering, she saw that Zhang Yang did gave a valid point and that it was really a good idea. So she said, "Alright, I shall take you in as my Battle Companion, with half of my heart! Not the whole thing!"

Messick quickly nodded his head like he was shaking up a bunch of onion heads as he took out a piece of [Contract Book].

Initially, players should be the ones purchasing the [Contract Book] and providing it during the signing of the Contract Bond. Nonetheless, Messick really is a wretched NPC! He had actually provided the [Contract Book] and presented it to Han Ying Xue like a slave! What a shameless fellow! Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little ecky around him!

The Contract Bond was identified, and Messick had officially became the Battle Companion of Han Ying Xue. Two streams of white light beamed across each of them, indicating that the Contract has been signed. As Han Ying Xue was only Level 100 at the moment, and because the level of a Battle Companion could not be higher than the level of their owner, the level of Messick was brought down accordingly.

Zhang Yang asked Han Ying Xue to post out the attributes of Messick.

[Messick] (Humanoid Creature)

Level: 100

HP: 71,200 (Without {Vitality Aura})

Defense: 2,820

Melee Attack: 10,802 - 12,802

Skills:

[Light of Life]: Instantly recovers 10% HP. Cost: 100 Focus Points.
Cooldown: 1 Minute

[Foul Chatters]: Begins to curse at a target, drawing in a large amount of aggro from the target. Instant activation. Cooldown: 5 seconds.

[Parry]: Parries attacks, high chance of completely negating one attack.
Cooldown: 10 seconds.

[Play Dead]: Lies on the floor and play dead. There was a high rate of causing the enemies to ignore the caster. If this skill is triggered successfully, the current aggro would be reduced to zero. Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Note: The Battle Companion of Little Snow.

After becoming a Battle Companion to a player, the HP of Messick had been reduced sharply. The skill {Light of Life} had been greatly depowered as well. However, Han Ying Xue is a Super healer, so healing him up should not be a problem for her at all.

Meanwhile, the Skill {Parry} is a very practical Skill, making Messick a powerful Tank in the game. Also, his Attack power had increased exponentially. That should cover up the loss of his HP and self-healing capabilities. It's actually pretty awesome!

As for the Skill - {Play Dead}, it only showed that this whiner is truly wretched. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could only assume that Messick would definitely not fight to his death whenever he find himself in a seriously f*cked up situation! All Battle Companions had a great deal of autonomy. Hence, when the time comes, this whiner would definitely decide to lie down on the ground and play dead.

Han Ying Xue was already very annoyed, so she quickly sent him into her

inventory. The world finally went back to peace, as it was before.

"Silly Yu, have you completed your quest?" she asked Zhang Yang randomly.

"Not yet. But I am about to!"

"Hmm. When you're done, take me up on your [Flying Mount] and help me search for the remaining fragments of my 'Inheritance Quest'!"

"... can't you just ask the little brat to help you? Her [Winged Tiger] is about to gain its flying ability any time from now!"

"Silly Yu, can't you see that I just want to spend some time with you, alone? You dimwitted oaf!"

After leaving the Winst Castle, Zhang Yang headed straight over to the Ancient Stone Peak with Whitey Jr.. About half an hour later, he finally arrived at the deserted mountain land. However, he did not manage to find Aegolous the Gargoyle King, after scouting around in the entire area, together with Whitey Jr..

He circled closer to the area for another two rounds and had failed to find any signs of that boss. Instead of finding the boss, he came across a little cave halfway up the mountain. Logically speaking, that Gargoyle King should be inside that cave!

As Zhang Yang landed by the entrance of the cave with Whitey Jr., he summoned Whitey and let the Serpent rest in his inventory, as the size of the cave is too narrow for the Serpent's large body. So, the man and his bear headed deep into the cave to begin exploring.

The interior of the cave was surprisingly dark, thus. Zhang Yang had to activate the Appearance Effect of his Titan Armor Set in order to reveal an area of 3 to 4 meters around him with the light illuminating from his armor. The cave was starting to give Zhang Yang the creeps, and he quickened his steps. Despite the area of the cave was small to Whitey Jr., it was still rather large to a human. It had a height of about 3 meters and a width of about 4 to 5 meters. Nonetheless, Zhang Yang and Whitey could actually walk side by side. It was not too cramped up after all.

Not long after, they saw a statue that was beginning to tremble. Countless of stone pebbles were falling from the statue itself, as the statue turned into a Gargoyle in front of Zhang Yang's eyes. It looked a little like a monkey with a pair of bat-like wings. It simply looked hideous, with a face that looked like it wanted to chew off anyone's face!

[Albino Gargoyle] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 8,123 - 9,123

Skills:

[Gargoyle Strike]: Deals 100% of Physical Damage in the form of a Melee Attack, there is a certain rate to reduce 10% Attack of the target. Lasts for 15 seconds.

[Petrifying]: Petrifies itself and recover 10% HP for every second. The damage received while it is petrified will be reduced by 50%. But, when the Gargoyle is inflicted with Holy Attacks, the damage received will be increased by 100%. Lasts for 5 seconds.

Note: According to legend, these undead creatures came from the Realm of Hell. During the great war among the gods, they followed their master, the God of Darkness and invaded this world. Although the great war had occurred over thousands of years ago, and most of the Gargoyles had returned back to Realm of Hell, a number of them remained in this realm.

"KREEK!" the Gargoyle let out a deafening screech as it began to move the two sharp claws that looked like the arm of a monkey and clawed at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

‘-912!’ Deflected!

‘-103!’ {Molten Armor}!

+30 Rage Points!

Zhang Yang immediately swung his sword right across the body of the Gargoyle and inflicted a damage of 4000+ onto the Gargoyle, boosting his Rage Points up to a total of 65 points. He then activated his {Frost Strike} without any delay!

‘-8,842!’

A layer of frost immediately formed across the body of the Gargoyle, and the monster was frozen in just an instant, entering a 10 seconds duration of freezing! In other words, the monster will be unable to move for 10 seconds as it is frozen!

This skill is awesome!

Time to experiment with the new Skill that Zhang Yang just acquired! Activating the {Glare of the Death God}!

Instantly, the hollow shadow of a person entered the body of the Gargoyle. Shrouds of dark evil mists began to form right over the Gargoyle’s head as they slowly formed the shape of a shrouding dark skull that was cackling evilly!

Zhang Yang and Whitey struck the monster consecutively, trying to trigger the 10% rate of instant death effect on the monster.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds... 7 seconds, 8 seconds!

Suddenly, right after a slash from Zhang Yang’s sword, the dark skull right above the Gargoyle began to expand rapidly as it opened up its dark foul mouth wide and swallowed the Gargoyle whole! The large mouth shook up for a brief moment, then the Gargoyle stumbled straight onto the ground and died!

What... what an incredible Skill!

Zhang Yang and Whitey could only inflict about 100,000 damage onto the monster before the effect of the {Glare of the Death God} kicked in and instantly killed the monster! Although the monster still had about 1,000,000 HP, it was still instantly killed by the effect of the Skill! There’s

no way one could find any shortcomings about that skill!

Unfortunately, the cooldown of this skill is 60 minutes long!

Slightly regretting the fact that he had used the Skill a little too early, Zhang Yang and Whitey continued to push forward. There was a large number of these Gargoyles along the path of the cave as Zhang Yang went deeper into the cave. They would encounter one of these monsters every time they walked forward for about tens of meters. Without the heavenly powerful {Glare of the Death God} and a powerful DPS like Felice, Zhang Yang and Whitey had to take about 2 minutes or so, just to kill one monster before they could proceed further in.

Well, the cave was indeed dark and eerie, and it continued to pressure Zhang Yang by giving him the creeps. It took 3 days and 3 nights of continuous slashing for Zhang Yang to reach the end of the cave. However, that was not the end of the cave. Right before Zhang Yang, was a huge palace!

Clearly, this palace did not belong to the human, or the elites, or the Orcs, or the Dwarfs. The palace looked like pure evil, shrouded in the atmosphere of darkness. The walls of the palace were full of Gargoyles that were still in their petrified forms. Well, all of them looked very wretched and scary. They stood guard over every corner of the palace.

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, it had been 3 days ago since he first entered the cave. He could actually summon out Felice by now. Zhang Yang quickly summoned the little lady out, instantly increasing their total firepower by a few notches up.

Chapter 502: The Gargoyle King

"Felice, how do you feel now? Are you alright now?" After summoning the little lady out from the Battle Companion Slot, Zhang Yang asked her, with genuine concern.

Felice shook her head and said, "Nothing is off, big brother!"

Zhang Yang could not help but sulked a little. The little girl seemed to be on some form of heavenly steroids, as she went all out on the black dragon boss! So, logically speaking, she should have experienced some side effect from that kind of rush! The ancient Kung Fu masters who had went all out with their Super Skills and all in crushing their enemies would actually shorten their lives by 10 years or so! This little lady actually recovered after a nap? After everything that she went through? That doesn't even make any sense!

What the hell! The black dragon must have died with its eyes opened!

"Can you remember anything that happened before you passed out?" Zhang Yang asked further.

"Nope!" Felice shook her head and said, "I have no idea what happened as well. I just saw a giant lizard, and I just burst into anger and lost control of myself. I just felt like tearing that big lizard into tiny little pieces!"

Ares once said that the Goddess of War had died at the hands of Hell's Lord, the God of Vengeance, and the Devastator. Knowing that the Black Dragon Anubask was once the follower of the Hell's Lord, it might be possible that the black dragon had contributed in bringing down the Goddess of War. That was most probably why that black dragon was targeted by Felice as an enemy! That explained why she had a Cosmic Explosion and went all out on the Ethereal boss!

Of course, all that was built, based on the deduction that Felice was Fraybe, the Goddess of Hope, sister of Lachesis, The Goddess of War.

Well, all thoughts aside! Time to clear up some monsters before saying anything further!

With Felice joining in, Zhang Yang could clear up the monster two times faster! But there were more Gargoyles in the palace. Zhang Yang spent about another 6 days just to reach the deepest area of the palace.

It was a very grand and huge palace, with 12 ink-black pillars holding up the entire building. At the lowest level of the palace, there was a large metallic throne right in the middle. However, there is no one sitting on it. On the contrary, by the side of the throne, a Gargoyle squatted beside it while it was still in its petrified state.

This Gargoyle was so much larger than the Elite Tier Gargoyles that Zhang Yang had encountered outside the palace. Its wings had a silver lining by the tips! That indicated that this Gargoyle is very different compared to the other Gargoyles! This Gargoyle is definitely much grand and extraordinary!

[Aegolous, The Gargoyle King] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 135

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,310 - 19,310

Skills:

[Gargoyle Strike]: Inflicts the target with 100% Physical Damage as a Melee Attack, there is a certain rate to reduce 10% Attack of the target. Lasts for 15 seconds.

[Petrifying]: Petrifies itself and recovers 10% HP every second. The damage received while it is petrified would be reduced by 50%. But, when the Gargoyle is inflicted with Holy Attacks, the damage received will be increased by 100%. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Putrefaction Aura]: Putrefies the target, inflicting the target with 3,000 Nature Damage every 3 seconds. Effect area: With the caster as the center point, 20-meter radius in a circular area.

[Gargoyle Screech]: Lets out a screech and damages all targets within the

range of 30 meters with 40,000 Physical Attack. Casting time: 0.5 seconds.

[Berserk]: When the HP bar is at 10% and below, Aegolous would enter Berserk Mode. Attack increased by 50%, defense increased by 100%.

Note: Loyal minion of the Lord of Darkness. After being severely wounded by the gods during the great war, it still has not fully recovered yet.

Judging from the looks of it, that throne right in the middle of this palace must have belonged to the late Lord of Darkness! This palace must be the Lord of Darkness's lair! This Gargoyle King must have followed the Lord of Darkness here. Because the Lord of Darkness had fallen too, this palace must have been here ever since that war!

Another Violet-Platinum Tier boss!

Zhang Yang felt a rush of joy in his heart. Well, the reason was mentioned before, the rewards that players earn from killing a high Tier boss for the first time and the second time would be luxurious! The system would drop additional items like [Skill Books]! Not to mention, the current stage of the game only spawns a limited number of Violet-Platinum Tier bosses. Well, Zhang Yang had all the more reason to kill it now!

Nonetheless, only Zhang Yang would be so confident to start fantasizing about the rewards! For other players, they would be worried sick, thinking of how to survive the boss that they might just lose their hair! Logically speaking, if Zhang Yang did not have a powerful DPS Battle Companion like Felice, Zhang Yang would have to at least try to get a [Forbidden Scroll] in order for him to solo the boss. In other words, Zhang Yang would have needed to use a large amount of money to bury the boss!

The interior of the palace was vast enough for Zhang Yang to summon the Serpent back out. Although both Serpent and Whitey were Yellow-Gold Tier [Mounts], however, the damage output of Spell Type [Mounts] is obviously much higher than the damage output of Physical Type [Mounts]. Furthermore, the Serpent could fly, had ranged attacks, and its {Venom Spat} could be instantly activated whenever the Skill is available,

which would not affect the Serpent's superior mobility. The amount of damage output of the Serpent would actually be so much more efficient and higher than Whitey Jr.'s!

Whenever the Serpent could be summoned, Zhang Yang would naturally consider using it as the first choice. As for the [Mythical Turtle]... if the system allowed him to put a pair of rockets on its back to increase its movement speed, Zhang Yang would definitely have used it in every single battle!

Thud! Thud! Thud! Zhang Yang charged towards Aegolous. Entering the range of 30 meters which is his maximum range, Zhang Yang quickly threw a {Spear of Obliteration} as he usually did.

'-4,198!'

"Kreek!" The Gargoyle King instantly let out a deafening screech as it opened up its large wings and took flight. The moment it fluttered its wings and went airborne, the Gargoyle King began to dive at Zhang Yang.

The boss was deceptively agile! With a single flick of its wings, the Gargoyle King was already in front of Zhang Yang. It raised up the two monkey-claws and slashed at Zhang Yang!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang had no time to think or to make strategies on how to take on the boss. He reacted instinctively by raising his shield up to block the boss's attack! Pang! A large clash was heard across the surroundings as Zhang Yang was sent back by the powerful strike of the boss, 3 to 4 meters away! But at the instance when the two of them made contact, Zhang Yang had swung his sword and landed a hit onto the boss! He did not waste any single possible chance to strike the boss.

With his legs planted firmly on the ground, Zhang Yang stopped the impact that had pushed him backward as he regained his balance. With a powerful kick off the ground, he pushed himself forwards and charged towards the boss again.

Aegolous let out another deafening screech as it began to raise up its

monkey-claws. This time, dark air shrouded around the claws! The claws landed on Zhang Yang, as it inflicted damage on him, and not only that, Zhang Yang was inflicted with an additional Negative Effect, which reduced his Attack by 20%!

{Gargoyle Strike}!

Fortunate for Zhang Yang, he was not the main DPS for this boss battle! As long as Felice's Attack is not restricted or reduced by any means, it would not affect their total damage output much!

Whitey Jr. and Felice were already in their positions. One was spitting greenish venom at the boss, while the other was channeling balls of fire towards the boss, while Zhang Yang was activating his Skills to inflict damage onto the boss with his sword. Flashes of reflected light from his sword shone upon the body of the boss! The scene was magnificent to behold!

Not long after the battle raged on, Aegolous suddenly let out a long and intimidating roar into the sky, as a rapid progression bar appeared right above its head!

{Gargoyle Screech}!

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Frost Strike}!

‘-6,822!’

A damage was inflicted on the boss, and the boss started freezing up, its chanting having been interrupted! That was a lucky strike! The additional effect of the {Frost Strike} was triggered, and it was effective on the boss!

Zhang Yang did not continue to launch his assaults towards the boss, instead, he took out a [Bandage] and began to patch himself up!

The boss would stay frozen for the next 10 seconds, and the duration of using one [Bandage] is also 10 seconds! It was impeccably the same!

These days, Zhang Yang had been battling quite a number of monsters that are Level 120 and above. So, he had gathered quite a number of

[Spiritual Cloths] which appeared to be one grade higher than [Inscribed Cloths]. He had made quite a number of [Spiritual Bandages] that could heal 50,000 HP in 10 seconds! Plus, he has the title of 'Physician's Friend', so he could heal himself with an additional 10,000 HP. That is just awesome!

Following the last additional heal of '+10,000' HP, Zhang Yang had restored himself back to full health!

Aegolous roared in rage again and again as it continued to extend its monkey-claws at Zhang Yang! Every single claw attack inflicted Zhang Yang with more than 10,000 damage! The boss did not immediately use the same skill again after its previous chant was interrupted. Instead, the skill had entered a cool-down period.

Therefore, Aegolous only began to chant for its {Gargoyle Screech} again, 30 seconds later. Although Zhang Yang activated his {Crash Magic} onto the Gargoyle, but the word 'Immune' appeared right above on the head of the boss.

A visible sonic wave came right out of the boss's mouth and radiated into the surroundings. The boom echoed through air, as the shock waves that exploded out of the boss' mouth struck Felice and Whitey Jr. and sent them flying back for a few meters! Both of them took some damage from the impact.

Actually, when Felice is in her Humanoid Form, her {Dragon's Spear Barrage} had the potential of stunning the boss for awhile. However, the rate was too low, and the boss only required 0.5 seconds to chant its spell. So, in order to interrupt the boss in time, she must stand in front of the boss and maintain in her Humanoid Form for 1 second before she can activate her {Dragon's Spear Barrage} to get the 10% rate of interrupting the boss's chanting --- shifting forms would also cause the Skill Sets to enter the shared cool down period of 1 second. So, sacrificing the group's damage output just to attempt to trigger the 10% rate in order to interrupt the boss's chanting was not really worthwhile!

Zhang Yang was using his {Shield Wall} and {Last Vigor} in an orderly

manner. If the {Frost Strike} struck and managed to stun the boss, then he would immediately use his [Spiritual Bandage] to heal himself up instead of attacking the boss. Although {Frost Strike} was not a guaranteed countermeasure, it could give him one chance to heal himself up. That was actually a good enough deal!

However, the recovery effect of {Shield Wall} was much lower than the healing effect of using the [Spiritual Bandage]. It was an unfortunate for Zhang Yang, as this is the special effect of the [Titan Chest Plate]. This chest plate is only a Level 80 equipment, currently 20 levels lower than the level of Zhang Yang. It was losing power drastically. Just like his previous [Dark Enigmatic Sword], when Zhang Yang reached Level 80, the efficiency of the sword's special effect had begun to drop like hell.

Comparing to the rate of efficiency to when Zhang Yang was still below Level 100, the special effect of the [Titan Chest Plate] could heal Zhang Yang by 10% HP every time it kicked in. But now, the special effect of the chest plate could only heal Zhang Yang by 5% HP every time the effect kicks in. That was half of the effect gone!

The reduction in the efficiency of the special effect is a little too harsh!

Still, Zhang Yang took it in stride. If they did not make it so, such a powerful [Titan Chest Plate] could still be used, even if Zhang Yang reaches Level 3000!

Ting! Ting! Ting!

The [Sword of Purging Devourer] slammed into the boss again and again, as sparks sprinkled across the ground. It was as if the body of the boss had suddenly turned into some sort of titanium material. At the same time, terrifying numbers in green began to pop up on top of the boss with each passing second.

‘+312500!’

‘+312500!’

‘+312500!’

The boss had activated its {Petrifying} Skill! Fortunately, Zhang Yang

had already struck the boss with his {Destructive Smash} and had reduced the healing capability of Aegolous by 75%! Or else, the boss would have healed itself by as much as 1,250,000 HP, every second! It would have been a disaster for Zhang Yang.

5 seconds later, the Skill was over, and the boss had healed itself by a total amount of 1,560,000 HP. That was an amount that Zhang Yang could still deal with. He could just treat it like an extension of the boss's HP bar.

After Zhang Yang had activated every single life-saving skills of his for one cycle, he began to reduce his damage output on purpose, allowing the aggro value on Felice to exceed the aggro value on him. After a very brief moment, the boss had turned its attention towards Felice! Felice immediately descended down to the ground and transformed to her Humanoid Form as she activated her {Absolute Defense}. Then, she took over the role as Tanker for the boss battle.

Zhang Yang used another [Spiritual Bandage] and healed himself back to full health again. Then, he quickly went back up to the boss and began to attack the boss aggressively.

As the boss also had the ability to be airborne, Zhang Yang could not use his {Shadow of the Void} to clear out the aggro completely, as that is not a wise move to do so. As the damage of Felice was a little too aggressive and powerful, it was not possible for Zhang Yang to regain the aggro of the boss within two minutes. When Felice transforms herself back into her Dragonhawk Form and flies back into the air, the boss would pursue her and fly into the air as well. There is no way Zhang Yang can miraculously hook the aggro of the boss back onto him with Felice being the primary target of the boss! Felice might even be taken out while tanking the boss in that form!

Therefore, Zhang Yang needed to retain some aggro and wait for the duration of the {Absolute Defense} to be over before he actually resumes tanking.

Chapter 503: Bewitchment and Disarmment

With her {Absolute Defense} activated, Felice became every tank player's envy. Every attack from the boss was like an itch to her.

Aegolous let out a series of thunderous roars as it fluttered its wings, stirring up waves of strong air currents that were so strong, that they almost blew Zhang Yang off his feet! Zhang Yang could feel as if he was a small raft in the middle of a thunderstorm that threatened to capsize him at anytime!

In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Yang recovered his stance and began to increase his damage output towards the boss.

As the DPS of Felice in her Humanoid Form is much weaker than her DPS when she is in her Dragonhawk Form, it became easier for Zhang Yang to retake the aggro of the boss. With some increment in his DPS, Zhang Yang managed to put himself back at the top of the aggro list of the boss in just 5 seconds.

The boss let out another thunderous roar as it began to turn its attention towards Zhang Yang. The Gargoyle King turned its head towards Zhang Yang and reached out with its monkey-claws in an attempt to slash Zhang Yang. At the same instant, Felice's {Absolute Defense} faded off. Without wasting any time, she took the form of a Dragonhawk and began to unleash hell upon the boss with her {Fire Missiles}.

As for Whitey Jr., all it ever needed to do was to spat it's venomous saliva whenever it was able. It would always be the last on the aggro list of the boss. It was by no means weak in any way, Zhang Yang and Felice were just on a level of their own!

Poor Aegolous, having its fate toyed around by Zhang Yang and Felice.

Well, that is the one disadvantage of being a boss in a game. Although a boss has powerful Skills and terrifying Attack, it must follow the protocol of the Aggro System in the game to decide which target it would hit first. If they had the intelligence to discern situations like how a player could, every boss battle would become insanely difficult as they would naturally

wipe out the Healer Classes first of all! With the Healers gone, the Tankers would be living on borrowed time! Bosses would be able to take out players with ease and not get taken down by a bunch of footmen!

The amount of Aegolous's HP started off strong. It had about 10,000,000 HP. With Zhang Yang, Felice and Whitey Jr. working together, 10 minutes would be enough to empty out that amount. Even though the boss could recover its health little by little with its Skill, Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} had caused the healing efficiency of the boss to drop by 75%! Furthermore, that healing Skill of the boss had a cool down period of 5 minutes! The boss simply could not keep up with them.

30%, 20%, 10%!

The boss suddenly let out a deafening screech as a bloody-red light began to beam across the entire body of the boss. The boss had just entered its Berserk form!

Well, the moment that Zhang Yang had been waiting for was finally here!

After the animation of the boss entering the Berserk form passed, Zhang Yang quickly cast the {Glare of the Death God}! A shroud came over the head of the boss and began to form into a dark skull right above its head.

"This! This is the Special Skill of the Hell's Lord!" It seemed that Aegolous recognized the Skill right away as it let out a roar in fear. It made perfect sense though. Aegolous used to be one of the 'fangs' that served the God of Darkness. It doesn't matter if it was an ally or a foe of the gods, Aegolous must have seen the Hell Lord's power and Skills. No wonder Aegolous would tremble in fear the moment it knew that this is one of the Skills of the Hell's Lord!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and proceeded with his assaults. There was no time to lose at all!

With a swing of his one hand, Zhang Yang summoned out his [Devastator] to aid him. At the current stage of the game, this Silver-Tier Servant could no longer provide anything in terms of DPS, however, Zhang Yang had summoned the servant, not because he wanted to increase the

total damage output towards the boss! He summoned the servant to increase the number of hits that land on the boss! The rate of triggering the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} is not based on the amount of damage output, but the number of hits that land on the boss! As long as the attacks hit the boss, then the chance to trigger the special effect would be based on the 10% rate of triggering. Any hits also stand a chance of proccing the 10% rate and triggering the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}! In other words, the more hits they land on the boss, the higher the chance they can trigger the special effect of the Skill!

From that moment onwards, Aegolous was assaulted violently by Zhang Yang, Felice, Whitey Jr., and the [Devastator] from all 4 directions around it.

‘-125,000!’

‘-125,000!’

...

Although 10% was not a high rate, every hit was an additional chance! The special effect was triggered over again and again! By the time the {Glare of the Death God} was over, the boss had lost 1% HP by a total number of 7 times!

Aegolous was left with only 1% HP remaining! It no longer looked intimidating!

"No ---" The Gargoyle King let out it's final roar that shook the heavens as it flapped its wings one last time before it collapsed down to the ground and died. Boom! Dark flames began to ignite on the dead body of the boss. After that, loot dropped right out of the boss as its dead body burned into a pile of ash. Only a few sharp teeth of the Gargoyle King remained, lying among the loot.

{Glare of the Death God} is just awesome!

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel a rush of joy in his heart. After all, this Skill would only gain more power when used on a tougher enemy! Even if a boss has 100 Billion HP, the {Glare of the Death God} would still

function according to it's power that reduces 1% HP of the boss, no matter what! The boss would still lose 100 Billion HP! Of course, if Zhang Yang used this on a boss with only 10,000 HP, the boss would only lose 1,000 HP every time the special effect of the Skill triggers.

Skills that work via percentages are really useful as the game progresses! The higher the level of the enemy, the better the effects!

After being amazed at himself for awhile, Zhang Yang quickly went up to pick up the loot. Aegolous had dropped a total of 3 pieces of equipment. One was a long crimson sword, another one was a pale-gray cloak, and last but not least, a dark-green ring. Other than that, there were two [Skill Books] as well. Zhang Yang gazed upon them with joy.

He assumed that the crimson sword would be the best item among all of the equipment he got today, so he decided to look at the other two equipment first, as he loves to save the best for the last to savor it.

So firstly, the pale-green cloak - [Gargoyle Cloak]. It is a Level 120 Yellow-Gold equipment more suited for Physical Attack types. So Zhang Yang shoved it directly into his inventory. It would still contribute to Zhang Yang's finance. Next, the dark-green ring.

[Angelus Ring] (Ring, Violet-Platinum)

Vitality: +212

Strength: +137

Agility: +137

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 270 points.

Equip: Increases 2% damage and 2% healing efficiency.

Equip: Increases 35% Shadow Damage of your weapon.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Note: Angelus is a Haunted Mountain in the realm of Hell. Countless dark souls are intertwined there. This ring is formed from the dark energy

that comes from the Angelus Mountain. It has unimaginably evil power.

The ring is truly powerful. The additional Shadow Damage of the ring should reach up to 50% much after being identified! Unfortunately, Zhang Yang had no Shadow Skills, not even one. This ring had been purposely designed for players with the Death Knight Inheritance.

However, Zhang Yang also had the {Frost Strike} that could divert the Physical Attack into Frost Damage. Unfortunately for him, this ring adds Shadow Damage, not Frost Damage. Of course, Zhang Yang would not have equipped the ring as well, even if the ring adds Frost Damage. He would not abandon his Defense ability just to boost the damage of one of his many Skills. That would be short-sighted and foolish!

"Unfortunately, no one has gotten the [Death Knight Inheritance] yet. Or else, people would buy it, even if I put a price of 1 million dollars on it!" Zhang Yang could only let out a sigh. Such was one of the disadvantages of being far too ahead of the game. Just like the current situation, although Zhang Yang could beat the boss and acquire some quite powerful equipment, he would not be able to find any real buyers. He would have to hold on to them for quite a while before people become strong enough to purchase the good stuff from him!

After putting the ring into his inventory, Zhang Yang turned his attention towards the crimson sword.

[Crimson Blazing Sword] (Violet-Platinum, Two-handed Sword, Special Weapon for Battle Companion)

Attack: 5,191 - 6,191

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 1,498

Equip: Increases 10% damage.

Equip: Increases 2% Critical Rate.

Required Level: 120

A special Weapon for Battle Companions!

Compared it to his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang could only weep tears of depression. The Attack of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] is between 2,219 - 2,619. That was not even half of the Attack that this [Crimson Blazing Sword] has!

Zhang Yang threw the [Crimson Blazing Sword] over to Felice and said, "Felice, this is for you!"

Felice took up the sword and had a quick look at it, but she shook her head and said, "But, big brother, this sword is lame! I don't want this."

Zhang Yang staggered for a moment and quickly asked, "Felice, is your lance much powerful than this sword?"

"Of course!" The little lady answered swiftly as she passed her lance over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly took a closer look at the attributes of the lance. He stared speechless at what he saw, like an innocent child!

[Primordial Dragon Lance] (Mythical, Two-handed Sword, Special Weapon for Battle Companion)

Magic Attack: 5,116 - 6,116

Melee Attack: 6,614 - 7,614

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DpS: 1,872

Equip: Increases 20% Damage.

Equip: Increases 3% Critical Rate.

Required Level: 100

Special: Felice's Personal Specialized Equipment.

Special: Weapon will be upgraded as according to Felice's Level and the number of Seal broken.

No... no wonder this little girl packed such a punch! The damage of the lance itself was already a couple of notches higher than Zhang Yang's total Attack! Furthermore, this equipment would actually improve

according to the Level of Felice, growing alongside her! However, for a Lance to be categorized as a Sword Type, it was the main reason why Zhang Yang was struck speechless. Well, that might be the developer's mistake, then.

Zhang Yang looked at Felice as he stared at her from head to toe, looking like a weird, loli-abducting sleazy old man. Felice could not help but to feel self-conscious after being stared at like that. She blushed as she began to wonder out loud, "Big brother, why are you staring at me like that?"

"Little Felice, please take off all your clothes and let me, your big brother, have a good look at them!" Zhang Yang began to laugh in a weird manner.

Felice, "..."

Well, don't misunderstand Zhang Yang for that. He only planned to look at Felice's equipment, nothing more. If the lance is already so powerful, how about the test of the equipment on her? It was obvious that he had only wanted to examine the attributes of the equipment, all of them!

After a series of persuasion and sweet talking, Felice finally agreed to take off all her equipment and showed it to Zhang Yang. Her face was so flushed that it looked like an apple. She looked so cute and pure as her blush only grew deeper. Her breasts had already grown into quite a large 'scale'! Zhang Yang could not help but stared at her until he almost howled into the sky like a wolf in excitement.

Every single equipment on Felice was of Mythical Tier. Furthermore, just like the [Primordial Dragon Lance], all of her equipment would improve based on Felice's level, and the Tier of her equipment could be improved according to the number of Seals that are unsealed! They would grow as she does!

Zhang Yang could already guess deep down his heart. Although Battle Companions are not labeled with 'Tiers' like how the Pets and Mounts are, the equipment sets on them would define their Strength. The initial equipment on the Battle Companions can level up automatically, but these equipment would only level up without any changes to their 'Tiers'.

Just like Pets.

For instance, Whitey Jr. would have a large improvement in its attributes whenever it levels up. It was as if Whitey Jr. had just switched out a new set of equipment, boosting its attributes. For example, a Pet can only equip Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment when it reaches Level 69. When it reaches Level 70, it would be as if the Pet had automatically switched out the entire set of the Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment on it with a new set of Level 70 equipment. This would be why Pets gained so much level whenever the second digit of their level is a zero.

By comparing Pets with the Battle Companions, the 'equipment' of the Pets are hidden, while the equipment of the Battle Companions are shown publicly. The largest distinction is that Pets cannot switch their 'equipment' but the Battle Companions can, giving the Battle Companions more space to improve and grow into more powerful beings, just like players! Players might end up worse than Black-Steel Tier Pets after they take out every single piece of equipment on them. Or, they can be much more powerful than a boss if they ever get the chance to equip a full set of Celestial Tier equipment to boost their attributes!

Unfortunately, the equipment on normal Battle Companions would only improve according to the level of the Battle Companions, unlike Felice's. Felice still had seals to unseal in order to improve the Tier of her equipment! That would only mean that she was capable of improving her equipment from Mythical to Ethereal, moving on to Holy, Ascended, and even going up to the Celestial Tier!

When he gets back, Zhang Yang intended to look upon Han Ying Xue and ask her to summon out Messick that whiner, to confirm his deductions.

Zhang Yang put the [Crimson Blazing Sword] into his inventory as he continued to look at the two [Skill Books].

[Pet's Skill Book: Bewitchment]

Use: Teaches your pet {Bewitchment}.

Zhang Yang turned around casually as he tapped the book against the

Serpent. He now possessed a total of 7 [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll]. He could still retrieve the Pet's Skills if he ever gets a better Pet in the future.

[Bewitchment]: Bewitches the target and get the target confused, restricting the movement of the target. Lasts for 15 seconds. While under the state of 'Bewitched', the target would break free if immediately if the target receives any form of attacks. The rate of successfully applying this effect on bosses is much lower. Casting time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Consumes: 100 Focus Points. Cool Down: 5 minutes.

This Skill is not bad at all. Another Status Restriction Skill that can work on bosses, at Zhang Yang's disposal. Although the Skill does not have a 100% rate of success, the rate was there. When it triggers, it can interrupt any boss's super skill while the boss is in Berserk mode, reducing the threat of the boss.

Moving on to the next [Skill Book].

[Skill Book: Disarm]

Use: Teaches you {Disarm}.

Required Class: Not Restricted.

Required Level: 100

Oh yes! He knew this one well!

Zhang Yang quickly took up the [Skill Book] and tapped it on himself. A stream of golden light coursed through his entire body as the [Skill Book] entered his body. There, he obtained another new powerful Skill!

[Disarm]: Removes the weapon of the target, the target will not be able to equip any new weapon for a set of duration. Last for 10 seconds. Instant activation. Range: Melee. Cool Down: 2 minutes.

This is one of the best practical Skills for PvP! It doesn't matter if it's Melee Class, Ranged Class, Physical Class or Spellcaster Class, the effect would still be the same!

When {Disarm} is activated, the opponent would temporarily lose their weapons. Physical Classes will definitely become useless against anything,

while the Spellcaster Class would not feel good either. Staves could increase Magic Attack by so much that half of the Attack of the player would be removed without the weapon. Without a staff, a Spellcaster would lose half of their attacks!

Unfortunately, this Skill would not work on bosses!

Well, one must not be too greedy after obtaining something this nice. Zhang Yang grinned stupidly on his own for awhile. Just when he was thinking of taking out his [Teleportation Scroll] out from his inventory, he suddenly saw there were a few [Gargoyle Teeth,] shrouded by evil energy, lying on the ground, close to where the boss had died.

While Felice was disgusted by the looks of those teeth on the ground, Zhang Yang picked one of the teeth up and took a closer look at it.

[Gargoyle's Tooth] (Consumable)

Use: Can be inserted into a Level 3 or better Socket, providing 1% Passive Damage Immunity to players.

Required Level: 100

Zhang Yang widened his eyes for a bit. It is actually a [Gemstone]. [Gemstones] usually only add on to the 5 basic attributes in the game. But this [Gargoyle Tooth] adds a very rare attribute, Passive Damage Immunity! This is actually the best [Gemstone] there is for a Tanker. It would make up for Tankers who are lacking in vitality!

Naturally, Tankers who have not met the requirements to be a primary Tanker should focus on getting their HP amount up as much as possible before considering other attributes like this 'Damage Immunity'.

Unfortunately, the boss only dropped a total of 3 [Gargoyle Tooth]. Zhang Yang had them inserted into the [Titan Chest Plate] and the [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Well, after comparing all his options, these two pieces of equipment would stay longer on him before he switches them with more powerful equipment.

For that, Zhang Yang had lost about 3,000 HP, but he had boosted up his rate of 'Damage Immunity' to 23%!

After tearing a [Teleportation Scroll], a white light streamed through Zhang Yang's entire body and he was teleported straight back to Morning Town.

Chapter 504: Nine Head Hydra Geopolo

Zhang Yang caught up to Han Ying Xue and forced her to summon the huge pervert, Messick.

The moment the despicable Battle Companion appeared, the perverted young man cried his eyes out and said to Han Ying Xue, "Oh! My mistress! Please punish me! Punish me with your loving whip~!"

"..."

Zhang Yang had the man unequip his weapon. The man was using a Violet-Platinum tier spear. Even though the level of the weapon was lower than the [Crimson Blazing Sword], it also had the power to level up along with Messick. When the big pervert turned Level 120, the spear will also be upgraded to a Level 120 Violet-Platinum spear.

However, only the level would change, not the weapon tier. The tier would always, and forever will be a Violet-Platinum tier. To have something even better, they would have to earn a better weapon, just like players do.

After all, Felice was not only Battle Companion around!

Han Ying Xue unsummoned the pervert. Messick was behaving just like Fatty Han and Endless Starlight. Everything that comes out of his mouth would either be perverted, sickening, or depraved. Zhang Yang could never had handle such a person.

Zhang Yang first went to White Jade Castle to repair all his equipment, restock the Little Merchandise Shop with a bunch of equipment, herbs, and other etc item that he had accumulated so far. Later on, he came back to Morning Town and flew on Whitey Jr. to the Siccory Mountains to search the second boss, Nine Head Hydra Geopolo.

The poor flying serpent was pushed to its limit again when Zhang Yang arrived at the Siccory Mountains. Later on, he went west and arrived in the Valley of Serpents. The place was naturally filled with many reptiles, mainly snakes. Be it on the tree, in the cracks of the mountain, buried in

the earth, or even the river, there were many types of snakes coming in the form of all lengths and colors. Most of all, they were elite tiered, ranging from level 110 to Level 119.

If they had been normal tiered monsters, Zhang Yang could have kited them all and kill them with the One Straight Flush technique. Both he and Felice were killing machines. Dealing with a bunch of normal tier monsters would be a walk in the park. However, the elite tiered monsters had skills such as the spitting of venomous saliva that would deal natural damage. One or two would not matter, but if that number reaches a certain number, not even Zhang Yang would be able to tank it all. Still, doing it alone would take too long. Hence, Zhang Yang summoned Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to help him. At least, having the both of them around would lighten the atmosphere.

The little brat's Winged Tiger had already reached Level 100. No longer the small and innocent little cub, it had grown into a large, 7 to 8 meters long Giant Tiger. The tiger looked rather cool and flashy whenever it spread out its dragon-like wings. Aesthetics aside, the priority would always be the properties. The Winged Tiger was the same tier as Zhang Yang's Mythical Turtle. Be it attack or HP, both battle mounts were extremely strong.

Han Ying Xue had not yet gotten herself a flying mount, even though she had the Yellow-Gold Crimson Crab that could be used on land and in water. The three of them rode their mounts into the field, along with Felice and Messick as their Battle Companions, forming a decent-sized party.

Most of the snakes and serpents in the valley were capable of flight. They would occasionally fly into the air. Hence, the party did not venture into the airspace to prevent themselves from drawing too much attention. The elite monsters were many, and if they were to draw attention from both land and air, they would be attacked from all directions and things would be rather troublesome or worse, fatal.

The party progressed steadily on. The perverted Messick could not even take few steps without harassing the girls around. He would either hit on

Han Ying Xue, or Wei Yan Er, and even Felice! He had the most depraved pickup lines and compliments, ever! Though Felice would not hesitate to stab him with her spear, the perverted Messick would never quit. Still, as a Battle Companion, he was rather strong, even for a Violet-Platinum tier.

Nevertheless, compared to Felice, he was nothing but a small fry. When the little girl turned into a Dragonhawk, her {Fire Missile} 20,000 damage would match or even surpass Wei Yan Er's damage output.

"Woah! Little Felice! You're so strong!" cried Wei Yan Er, her eyes lighting up in admiration.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted the little girl's head, "Little brat, Felice is much older than you are now. You must call her 'big sis'!"

The little girl cocked her head, confused. However, she soon stared down at her own chest and sulked at a corner when she noticed Felice's matured breast was much bigger than hers.

Even though the monsters around here had more than 1,000,000 HP, the party easily managed it with no problem. Each monster around would take the party only half a minute or so to kill, which would provide a luxurious amount of experience points.

"Huhu! What a nice place for grinding levels!" cried Wei Yan Er excitedly.

"But of course! The monsters here are all elite tiers! One elite monster would already be worth 50 to 60 normal tier monsters!" said Han Ying Xue as a matter-of-factly.

In the party, Zhang Yang and Messick acted as tanks. The dirty talking aside, his skill - {Foul Chatters} was rather efficient at provoking monsters. It might even take effect on regular players!

As the name implied, the Valley of Serpents lived up to its name by housing an endless number of serpents. The party dived into the mindless slaughter for more than 7 or 8 days (of in-game time) and finally reached the deepest portion of the valley. There, minding its own business, was the boss.

[Nine Head Hydra Geopolo] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,310 – 19,310

Magic Attack: 9,869 – 11,869

Skills:

[Poison Spit]: Releases a venomous liquid that deals 150% magic Natural damage. Corrupts the target's armor and decreases Defense value by 50%. Lasts for 20 seconds. Effects cannot be stacked. If the main aggro target is located out of Geopolo's melee range, the person within the melee range on the second aggro rank will receive the attack.

[Death Ray]: Geopolo fires a laser beam from its eyes. Deals half of the target's HP as damage. Petrifies the target for 5 seconds. A Petrified player cannot engage in any action or movement.

[Tackle]: Hurls its head around and deals 100% melee physical attack to all targets within melee range.

Note: Servant of the Death God. Possesses part of the Death God's power. After the demise of the God of Death, the Nine Head Hydra refused to return to the Nether Realm and chose to remain in the human world. Believing that the God of Death would return, the Nine Head Hydra had made countless offspring in hopes of creating an army for the God of Death!

The name of the boss was rather straightforward. The boss had nine heads, each one about the size of Grinding Plate1. Each head had large horns and fangs, which was terrifying to look at. The beast had a huge body where the heads stuck out from. Somehow, the bodily proportions were that of a peacock. The main body had four limbs, and the heads that stuck out were like the tail feathers of a peacock! In stark contrast to the majestic bird, this hydra was hideous to look at.

Zhang Yang and the party first cleared all the monsters around the boss, before approaching it. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er then moved away from the battle, since the quest had requested that Zhang Yang be the only player to engage the boss. If anyone else enters the battle, the quest would fail automatically! Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not even able to help, and to remove all unnecessary risks, they could not even get close to it!

Hence, Zhang Yang only got Han Ying Xue to buff him with the skill {Rise Anew} and asked the two of them to get as far away as possible to prevent them from accidentally getting caught in the battle. Even though the quest had not mentioned anything about permanent failures, a Violet-Platinum boss would take as long as a month to respawn. In real time, that would be close to 10 days! He could not afford to waste that much time!

After analyzing the skills of the boss, the biggest threat would be the {Death Ray}. Zhang Yang could take the other skills on, but he would have to dodge this skill at all costs. Aside from that, the boss should not be a huge problem. As for the {Poison Spit}, it was sure to have a low rate of occurrence during a melee fight. Even though it carried was capable of {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang had three separate damage reduction systems, that would be his raw Defense, the Damage Reduction passive in terms of percentages, and lastly, the Damage Absorption from his armor. All in all, reducing his Defense value alone would not cause too much trouble for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang steeled his mind and rode on Whitey Jr., charging towards the boss.

As expected of the Flying Mount, the boss was only two flaps away from the Flying Serpent's wing. Zhang Yang first struck the boss with a {Spear of Obliteration,} and the flying serpent spat a volley of poisonous saliva. Neither attacks required any slowing down or deviation of flight.

"Hss!" the Nine Head Hydra hissed angrily as Zhang Yang. All nine heads, 18 eyes shot up to the sky and glared at Zhang Yang. One of its heads lashed out at Zhang Yang, while one more suddenly opened its mouth and spoke in a grainy voice. "Mortal! Leave me be, or die with

regret!"

Zhang Yang laughed and bellowed back, "Back at you, wretched snake! I'll regret leaving you be if you're not yet dead!"

"Insolent fool!" Another head rose up and struck Zhang Yang bodily. Zhang Yang blocked the first attack, but did not manage to evade the second head. The other head wrapped itself tightly around him, immobilizing him. "Such a waste! You shall be my meal then! It has been a long time since I last tasted human meat! Such nostalgia!"

Even though the boss had nine heads, all the heads shared the same attack interval. This meant that it could only attack with one head at a time. With {Rise Anew} on him, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear and could bravely attack the boss.

"Mortal! You're nothing but a speck of dust in the eyes of the gods! Stop your futile resistance and surrender to the loving embrace of death!" cried out the nine headed Hydra, its voice shaking the air.

Zhang Yang flew to the head that spoke the most and bashed it with his shield. "Enough with your arrogant talk! You're no god. You're but a poor underling left behind by its master!"

"Silence fool! You know nothing! Your impudence shall not go unpunished!" cried the Hydra. Right then, all nine heads, 18 eyes fixed its gaze on Zhang Yang and released black beams of darkness.

{Death Glare}!

Zhang Yang immediately jumped down from Whitey Jr. Even though Zhang Yang had given the name Junior to the flying serpent, it was not small! On the contrary, the size of the flying serpent was so huge that it would never evade the beam in time.

The beam shot through the air, distorting the space and time around it. The poor Whitey Jr. took the beams directly and was turned into a large stone snake, its HP decreasing down to 50%. Luckily, the deducted HP was only 50% and not 100%. Hence, after taking so many beam attacks, the flying serpent's HP finally stopped at 1% and could not be lowered any

longer. No matter how many more beams were fired from the Hydra, the snake would not go down!

The game does not take into account decimal values, 1% could never be divided into 0.5%!

Translator Note:

Grinding Plate was something that was used to grind tea into fine powders. It could also be used to make soy milk from soybeans.

Chapter 505: The Last Target, Fire

Element King Laguana

Like a boy on a Pogo Stick, Zhang Yang hopped about, evading all the laser beams attacks! Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er who were standing a distance away from where Zhang Yang was battling, clapped their hands and cheered him on.

The boss' {Death Ray} attack radius was vast. Luckily, Felice had the battle awareness and intelligence to maneuver around the beam in the air. All the while, the two girls were having a good time cheering for the both of them, but Zhang Yang was too busy to respond.

The time taken for the entire skill to complete was 30 seconds! Even though Zhang Yang had not been struck by the beam attack, he was extremely tired. The 30 seconds of nonstop dodging had cost Zhang Yang mental energy! Be it his awareness or movement speed, he had to constantly react by the millisecond, or he would be struck! If he was even grazed by the beam, he would be petrified in stone and immobilized for 5 seconds. If that happens, a domino effect would occur. His petrified form would only take more and more hits of the beam attack, hacking his HP away till there's only 1 HP left.

After the dark ray beam stopped being fired by the Hydra, Geopolo retracted its heads and initiated a body slam! Sadly, the poor flying serpent only had 1 HP left. It could not endure a single blow from the boss and had turned into a beam of light, flowing into Zhang Yang's inventory. It would take 10 minutes for Zhang Yang to re-summon the serpent once again. Though there was nothing that Zhang Yang could do at the moment, he had lost a fair bit of firepower!

Zhang Yang sighed. Thank god that he still had Felice in the field to help him. Since most of the damage output came from her, the battle could still go on without being affected much. Soon, the boss' HP had dropped down to 89%.

Not long after, Zhang Yang swung his sword and had managed to cut off

one of the Hydra's nine heads. The long, giraffe-like head fell off and struck the ground, oozing out a pool of fresh blood. The Hydra shrieked and wailed in pain, spewing more blood from the dismembered stump of its body, even splashing some blood on Zhang Yang's face.

85%...82%...78%...

Shortly after the first head was sliced off, Felice's incessant {Fire Missile} attacks burned the second head away, sending the Hydra into brief frenzy.

After two of the heads had been dismembered, the boss did not show signs being weakened. Apparently, the number of heads had no correlation to the Hydra's attack power. Still, it does reduce the attack radius of the beam attack, which gave Zhang Yang and Felice an easier time.

"D*mn you ruffians! I will crush you! I WILL CRUSH YOU!" the Hydra raged on, its distorted voice had turned even deeper and demonic to point that it was just random screeching.

Zhang Yang laughed aloud and said, "I've heard that phrase for many times now. Too bad, I'm still standing, since none of them could actually crush me!"

Even though Zhang Yang had one less attacker in his party, Geopolo the Hydra's HP was hacked away without any pause, since it did not possess any recovery skills. Soon, more of its heads were hacked off, leaving the boss with one last head at 10% HP. At every 11% HP loss, the boss would "drop" one head off. Zhang Yang felt a sense of accomplishment and overwhelming pride. He felt as if he was actually chopping off the heads of a dragon!

When the boss was left with only 10% HP, Zhang Yang had no reason to hold back anymore, and activated {Glare of the Death God}, while summoning Devastator! The bulky machine threw machine gun punches at the Hydra. This time, Zhang Yang was pretty lucky. The {Glare of the Death God} was able to proc for 8 times and the boss was pulverized.

When the massive scaly body of the Nine Head Hydra Geopolo fell to earth and expelled an amount of battle loot, the two money-minded girls,

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er waltzed their way to the loot but cried out disgruntledly when they could not pick the loot. Since they had not contributed to the boss fight whatsoever, they did not have the players' "qualification" to loot.

The two ladies had been holding down their urges to pick the loot. That much Zhang Yang was sure, and no amount of persuasion could pacify them. So, he decided to ignore the ladies and went on to loot all the items.

Geopolo, the Nine Head Hydra was far kinder than Aegolous, the Gargoyle King. It dropped a total of four equipment and one red leather-bound skill book. What a shame! There's no way for an equipment to match up to a skill book! To make things worse, among the four equipment drops, three of them were Yellow-Gold tier and only one was Violet-Platinum tier, which was an emerald-green long spear. The spear's head was wavy, like the body of a serpent, which reminded Zhang Yang of the weapon that Mang Zhang Fei of the Romance of the Three Kingdom had used, an 18 Zhang Viper Spear (roughly 2.14 meters long).

[Viper Lord's Spear] (Violet-Platinum, Two Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 3,684 – 4,284

Attack Interval: 3.4 seconds

DPS: 1,048

Equip Effect: Increases attack power by 7%

Equip Effect: On attack, grants a 1% chance to inflict {Poisoned}, deals 3,500 Natural damage.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Sadly, the attack interval was 3.4 seconds instead of 3.8 seconds. By Violet-Platinum standards, this spear was mediocre. Still, compared to other Yellow-Gold and Gray-Silver tier weapon, the Viper Lord's Spear was several times stronger. Many would still pay a large sum to own it in the Little Merchandise Shop!

Zhang Yang tucked the spear into his bag and picked up the skill book next.

[Skill Book: Aqua Guard]

Use: Teaches you {Aqua Guard}.

Class Requirement: Priest, Spellcaster, Knight.

Level Requirement: 100

Zhang Yang tossed the skill book to Han Ying Xue and grunted, "It's yours."

Han Ying Xue snorted and helped herself to the book without saying anything in return. She patted the book against her oversized chest and gained a new skill in her skill tree.

[Aqua Guard]: Summons 10 water orbs to surround you. Restores 50 MP every 3 seconds. Upon each attack received, one water orb will be destroyed and grants you 500 MP. The water orbs will last for 10 minutes, or until all orbs are destroyed. Instant Cast. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

Han Yang Xue grinned happily and immediately tried the skill out. With a magical flash, 10 blue softball-sized orbs of water appeared in the air and orbited around Han Ying Xue. The water orbs were crystal clear and gave Han Ying Xue an angelic visage.

"Not bad. Looks like our Healer can last much longer in battle!" said Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue smirked wider. Bosses at Zhang Yang stages had plenty of AoE attacks. With each attack landing on Han Ying Xue, she could instantly regain a portion of her MP pool. With the slow recovery of MP that occurs every three seconds, it was a good boost to her endurance in a boss fight. If they encounter a boss with a DoT aura, she could restore a 5,000 MP in one go, by simply activating the skill! All in all, having more skills would never hurt!

After collecting all the battle loots, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er teleported to Morning town. It has been few days since they had

last restocked. They would need to return to town to repair their equipment. As for Zhang Yang, he needed to concoct potions to restock his own supply of top tiered potions. After everything is ready, they could proceed to Laguana and obtain the God of War Inheritance!

Zhang Yang was so excited at the thought of him actually obtaining the Inheritance! In his previous life, the King Kong Inheritance that he obtained was merely B class. That alone had him running from east to west, north, and south! There was hardly the need to fight strong foes! Imagine the strength he would acquire after obtaining the God of War, S class Inheritance!

After concocting a bunch of potions and repairing his equipment, Zhang Yang returned to Morning Town from White Jade Castle and headed to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster. The Searing Peak was located in the eastern direction of the flatlands. The entire mountain was red and the peak of it was shining brilliantly, even in daylight, as if it had been lit up by a raging forest fire.

Zhang Yang circled around the peak and found the boss without much problem. He then descended down and landed near a giant altar. At the center of the altar, there were five fire elementals lined up in order. At the center of them was a larger and more prominent fire elemental. The fire elementals here were vastly different compared to what he had fought when he was only Level 10. They had fiery humanoid bodies, and the one in the center wielded a hammer in its right hand and a shield in his left and was at least 20 meters tall. The other four elementals were smaller, but still stood as tall as 3 or 4 meters, and were equipped in a similar manner.

Without a doubt, the larger guy had to be the boss.

[Fire Element King, Laguana] (Violet-Platinum, Elemental Being)

Level: 125

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,310 – 19,310 (Physical Attack with Fire Attribute)

Skills:

[Flaming Cleanse]: Slams the earth and unleashes a powerful firey wave that will deal 20,00 Fire damage to all targets, 40 meters around the caster.

[Burning Aura]: Causes 5,000 Fire damage every 3 seconds, to all targets 30 meters around the caster. Similar aura effect cannot be stacked.

[Summon Servant: Fire Elemental]: Summons Fire Elementals, double of the number of players in the aggro list. While the Fire Elemental Servants are active, Laguana will enter a hibernation state. In the hibernation state, Laguana cannot attack and cannot be attacked. After 2 minutes, Laguana will awaken and will absorb all the remaining HP from the remaining Fire Elementals, healing himself.

[Fire Constitution]: Restores itself when struck by any and all Fire element attacks.

Note: Loyal follower of the God of Fire. After the fall of the Fire God, Laguana had been searching for the Soul of the Fire God, in hopes of becoming the second God of Fire.

The other 4 Fire elementals were nothing compared to the boss. They were all Level 115 elite tier monsters, with HPs as high as 1,150,000. All of them had a weaker form of the {Burning Aura}; dealing 3,000 Fire damage every 3 seconds. However, they shared a similar trait. Their attacks had Fire attributes which could ignore all Defense, and had an immunity to Fire based attack. However, unlike the boss, Fire attacks would not restore their HP.

Zhang Yang strategy was to kill the monsters before the boss. However, all 5 entities were standing close to each other. No matter how Zhang Yang goes in to attack, all 5 of them would surely be attracted at the same time. In that case, Zhang Yang would have to use the "Aggro Separation" technique.

Under normal circumstances, this technique can only be used by classes

who have aggro clearing skills like a Hunter's {Fake Death} and a Thief's {Vanish}. Zhang Yang was able to use this technique since he had the skill {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battlefield at will.

Just before he was able to activate {Charge}, he felt a sudden distortion in the air around him. Due to his vast experience of battling, he was 100% sure that there was a Thief around him!

Zhang Yang stopped his movement and concentrated hard. Was it a monster...or a player?

No...it cannot be. A monster would never remain invisible for long, since they would automatically break out of their stealth the moment a player is around.

Zhang Yang knew something was wrong. He then pretended to walk in a circle, as if he was deep in thought and walked in a wider circle to increase his "sensing" radius. When he had circled around for the fourth time, he pulled out his sword in a split second and slashed the air before him!

Pak!

Fresh blood was spilled in the air and a shadowy figure that belonged to a SMEXY blonde-haired chick puffed out into visibility!

Dusk Phoenix! The European top tiered Thief class player!

Chapter 506: One More Round with Dusk Phoenix

Since when did this chick get to Level 100?!

But then again, if Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were able to discover the main story quest, others would be able to. There are many wonders and mysteries in 'God's Miracle'. Things like how did Dusk Phoenix being Level 100 wouldn't be that much of a surprise. The real question was, why was Dusk Phoenix here with him?

It would really be a 1 in a million chance that Dusk Phoenix would be there because of a quest! If that was really the case, she should be here Zhang Yang! It was likely, as Zhang Yang had embarrassed the hell out of her in the Land of the Sacred Glory. So, how did she even find him?

Both of them were not exactly friends, so they were not on each other's friend lists. In the game, the system would only give away the location of a friend. Even if Dusk Phoenix had managed to slip past Hundred Shots and got into Lone Desert Smoke, she would only be able to have his general map name and not his exact position. Only a party member could do that. Would Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er leak the information instead? That would be impossible.

So back to the question. How did she find him!?

With the million-dollar question in his head, he lowered his sword to his side and smiled at her. "Duck Phoenix, how did you find me?"

"My name is Dusk Phoenix!" cried Dusk Phoenix in anger as he had deliberately mispronounced her name. She jumped back and only relaxed when she was 14 to 15 meters away from Zhang Yang. At that distance, she would not get hit by Zhang Yang's {Charge}. In anger and rage, she glared at him, "I've said it before. I will have my revenge!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Ah. I remembered that. But, I seem to recall something I said in return as well. The next time I see you, I'd smack that bum bum real good!" With that, Zhang Yang deliberately made a show of

craning his head over to gaze at her curvy butt. The woman was a fine specimen. Her peach-shaped butt was so luscious and thick that all men would be drawn in just to smack'em good!

"You bastard! Eyes up here!" The woman was enraged, but she did give in to her emotions and charge in blindly. Instead, she withdrew even further, before entering stealth mode. With invisibility, she would gain the battle advantage and could fully bring out the potential of a Thief. Her intention was to catch Zhang Yang when he least expects it and slit his throat open. At least, that's what she had in mind.

Zhang Yang was as calm and as cool as a cucumber. Both of them were players from different regions. The Chinese region and European region were natural-born enemies. There was no way that they would find a peaceful resolution. In any case, Zhang Yang could not simply leave her to be in the area, since this quest had specifically mentioned that interference in the battle would result in failure. He would have to eliminate any possible threat!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

Shoom!

A white projectile was fired off and struck Dusk Phoenix.

"Scoundrel! I dare you to fight me fairly! As a Guardian, you have the class advantage against a Thief! How could you not let me enter stealth! Where is the pride of winning in that?! And you dare call yourself China's number 1 tank!" Dusk Phoenix hissed.

Zhang Yang smirked. Did she really think that he would be so easily provoked by her taunts? Zhang Yang ignored her and commanded Whitey Jr. to attack her from the skies. Felice had also joined in the fray by firing a {Fire Missile}.

"Hey, Ducky, don't forget that I actually caught you while you were in stealth. It's not me who's being an *sshole. It's you who is weak! I suggest that you train a little more before you come after me again." Whitey Jr. had spat a {Poison Spit} at her while carrying Zhang Yang on its back.

Splat! Boom!

Felice's {Fire Missile} had also struck her, dealing more than 20,000 damage, hacking away close to one-third of her HP. The woman was shocked, her face turning ashen pale. Felice's attack was so much stronger than Wei Yan Er's or Sun Xin Yu's, after all!

With Felice backing Zhang Yang up, Zhang Yang could have stood idle and still defeat the Thief. With his Defense power, Dusk Phoenix would have died first, and Zhang Yang would remain standing with around 20,000 HP.

"Bastard!" cried Dusk Phoenix. She quickly consumed a bottle of healing potion and restored the 20,000 HP instantly. Zhang Yang was slightly surprised. When everyone else had been spamming [Level 4 Healing Potions] that could only heal 10,000 HP at a time, she had restored 20,000 HP with a single gulp! Perhaps, she had Transmuted grade potions like Zhang Yang?

That was just one of the possibilities. She could have learned some skill which granted her 100% bonus healing power. Zhang Yang had heard of such skill before, but had never encountered it in his life or the previous one.

So be it. With Felice and Whitey Jr. combining their attack, how long would 60,000 HP last?

{Blur}! {Shadow Cloak}!

Dusk Phoenix was already forced to use her emergency skills, a sign that she was in trouble. With a quick wave of her left hand, her character turned into a translucent, fading into the shadows, gaining 50% evasion rate. The {Shadow Cloak}'s effect was to give the caster a 90% chance of being immune to a magic spell.

The woman had finally closed the distance to Zhang Yang and was dancing around him ever-so-agilely.

‘-1,671!’

‘-439!’

‘-5,567!’

In just one second, Zhang Yang had taken 3 strikes that had inflicted him with two different debuffs. One maimed him, while the other was a {Fatal Coat} which dealt 1,000 natural damage every 3 seconds, lasting for 15 seconds and stackable up to 5 layers.

Zhang Yang immediately narrowed his gaze. The woman’s attack was much higher than he had anticipated. Her secondary weapon was able to deal 400 damage! One possible explanation for that would be the skill {Eagle Eye}. Perhaps, the woman had the same skill as him. She could have even maxed out the skill already!

He raised his guard up, treating her with more respect. Even though he may be the only person in China to take all the First Clear Achievement of all the dungeons so far, there could be someone like him who had done the exact same thing in other regions and had gained more than enough skill points!

Dusk Phoenix may have activated her ulti skill, but her semi-invulnerability would only last for 10 seconds. How could anyone kill a well-equipped Guardian in 10 seconds?!

Zhang Yang laughed at the idea and raised his shield. After a successful block, Zhang Yang forcefully bashed the opponent and sent her flying! If he cannot use his skills on her, so be it, but a Supporting Attack did not count as a skill, would not miss!

Dusk Phoenix leaped to her feet like a furious feline. Her cheeks were dyed in a deep pinkish hue. In fury and rage, she screamed in a shrill voice, "Shameless! Pervert! I’ll kill you!"

She brandished her daggers rushed over like a Berserker.

Zhang Yang was baffled, but after reexamining his actions, Zhang Yang understood why she had acted that way. Dusk Phoenix and he were merely enemies from different regions. He did not harbor any particular form of enmity towards her or whatsoever, or even disliked her as a person. That was why he had pulled his punches and had not smashed his shield into her face, as he usually does. After all, his opponent was a woman, and he

had lowered the swing of his shield and went for her body. Instead, he had "accidentally" smacked her breasts instead!

From her point of view, she had been blatantly taken advantage off! How would she not feel angry?

Faced with such an aggressive opponent, Zhang Yang had chosen to mount Whitey Jr. and had attacked from the sky instead. He decided to wait until her skills expired so that he could hit her with more certainty. Zhang Yang steeled his mind. He should not allow the opponent to affect his judgment. Both of them were natural enemies and in a battle, gender does not matter.

Dusk Phoenix bore so much hatred towards Zhang Yang and had decided to pull out her trump card. She summoned out a large sky-blue mythical bird. She hopped on it and chased after Zhang Yang.

Woah! She has a flying mount as well? Zhang Yang was becoming more impressed with every passing moment. Still, he still had the means of fighting it. Without a flying mount, she would not have been able to chase after him! Even though a Thief could turn invisible, she would never have gotten past so many high-level monsters on the ground. Moving through a nest of monsters that outleveled a player would be extremely risky.

"Schmuck! Prick!" cried Dusk Phoenix. The woman forced her bashful expression off her face and commanded the blue bird to attack. The bird opened its beak up and accumulated a ball of blue energy that formed into a Frost Arrow which flew at a high speed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I'm sorry! It was a mistake! I mean, you don't have to be that agitated about that! We're just playing a game! It's not like I'm touching you at all! Besides...what's there to lose? It's not like they would blow up! Or...do they actually contain explosives?"

If only he had kept his mouth shut, Dusk Phoenix would not have been any angrier than she had ever been in her entire life. With rage, the woman pulled the reins of the bird and shot down from the sky. If her rage could take actual form, she would be a ball of fiery meteor, with the sole purpose of obliterating Zhang Yang.

What she failed to realize was that her skill was about to expire. No longer pseudo-invincible, Dusk Phoenix's character returned to her regular status. Her semi-transparent appearance ended, and her entire character solidified.

Felice and Whitey Jr. Had been prepared for that and when her skill had ended, a ball of fire and a wad of poison landed on Dusk Phoenix.

Dusk Phoenix could have endured longer and fight on par with Zhang Yang if Zhang Yang had only summoned Whitey Jr. out. However, Felice's attack was so strong even Zhang Yang would have trouble standing up against her, even with all his emergency skills! What chance did Dusk Phoenix have!

The woman was not the reckless type. Even with her rage and embarrassment, her sense of judgment had remained as clear as daylight. When she knew that she would not endure the combined attack from all his allies, she tugged on the reins and tried to escape.

She was a Thief, an Assassin. A silent killer born from the shadows. The way of the Assassin was quite different compared to the other types of players. An Assassin should be able to kill their opponents in one attempt. If they fail to do so, they must withdraw from the frontlines and find another chance to strike. Since players could not help but to kill monsters, a Thief could wait until the opponent had used all of their ulti, or wait until their HP is low before striking. A Thief has to be cunning. If Thieves were to fight fairly and squarely, that would defeat their purpose. As they say, there is no honor among Thief.

As for Zhang Yang, he had never allowed any Thief to get close enough to him before, ever! No matter what chances she had, the main priority is to create a safe space and prevent anyone from interfering with his fight against the boss! That was why he has to kill her!

Whitey Jr. flew in the air and chased after Dusk Phoenix while spewing out more poison. Its {Poison Spit} was an instant-cast skill which did not require any casting animation. Hence, even while mid-flight, the flying serpent did not need to stop flying to cast the skill, it was a perfect tool for

use during a pursuit!

Dusk Phoenix was rather a good rider. She stopped soaring upwards and had descended down sharply to try and reverse their positions. However, Zhang Yang was a far experienced fighter, so there was no way that he would fall for that!

Dusk Phoenix gritted her teeth. There was no way that she was going to let all the hard-earned experience points to drop down to 0. She then turned around and shouted at him, "Zhan Yu! You have no honor! Is this how Chinese men treat their ladies?"

Zhang Yang laughed at her comment and said, "Well, we definitely do not have the luxury of doing it mid-air, or while on flying creatures. Also, there's no way I'm letting you escape! I'm killing you! That's final!"

Dusk Phoenix clenched her fists tightly. She had never seen such a ruthless man who would not pull his punches against a woman! She was very well aware that she would never escape from Zhang Yang. Still, it would be a huge disgrace if she fails to shake him off! She would be killed in mid-air by the flying serpent's poison spit!

With a quick command, the bluebird descended down to the earth. The moment she was 10 meters above the ground, she leaped off the bird. The woman did not have the skill {Beast Taming}. Hence, when she got off the bird, it disappeared after two seconds. Before the bird was unsummoned, Dusk Phoenix had ran beneath the bird's shadow and had entered stealth. When the bird vanished from the air, so did she.

Zhang Yang had been following her closely and had immediately realized what she had done. Smiling confidently, he called out, "Burn the ground, Felice!"

Felice breathed fire down at where Dusk Phoenix had vanished from sight burning a large patch of the ground.

‘-3,000!’

Close to where the AoE effect ended, a damage text ticked out, and Dusk Phoenix was forcefully revealed. She quickly ran out of the {Pulverizing

Flame} AoE. With so much frustration bottled up, she would have jumped into the sky and bitten off his nose.

Zhang Yang activated {Charge} in midair and flew through the air after he had jumped off the flying serpent. Like a bullet, Zhang Yang plummeted into Dusk Phoenix. The sword in his hands gleamed and started slicing her up.

Dusk Phoenix hummed quietly. After taking a few hits, Zhang Yang noticed a glint in her eyes. A fiery dragon burst out her necklace and came for Zhang Yang.

This was the same skill that Zhang Yang had nearly taken, back at the Land of the Sacred Glory. Zhang Yang had been prepared for it. He immediately activated {Shield Wall} and at the same time, he swung his shield at Dusk Phoenix, casting {Crash Magic} on her.

"Uumph...Zhan Yu--!" This time, Dusk Phoenix was so mad that her face was as red as a tomato! It seemed that Zhang Yang's shield had struck her again in her bosoms. It's really a wonder that her bouncy peaks had not yet been flattened by Zhang Yang. Finally giving in to her anger, the poor woman had charge upfront and attacked Zhang Yang at a ferocious speed.

However, with Felice and Whitey Jr attacking her at the same time, even if she had consumed all of her potions, she would not have survived. Rapidly, her HP bar was hacked away and she fell to the ground, lifeless.

With one death, her current experience bar was emptied down to zero. The woman lost it there and then. Right after she revived, she had thrown herself at Zhang Yang and attacked like a savage, abandoning all the principles of a true Assassin.

Zhang Yang then killed her for a total of seven times. After the eighth time, she still bore the same hatred towards Zhang Yang and had charged at him relentlessly. Zhang Yang finally had enough of it. He then commanded Felice and the flying serpent to stop their attacks. When she got up for the ninth time, he smacked her titties with all his might, sending those mighty mounds bouncing up and down, left and right.

Since the woman was mostly enraged due to his accidental smacking, he

shall smack her till kingdom comes. Let's see how would she be, after a thousand passionate smacks!

Chapter 507: Completed Quest

Hmm. Such bounce, so wow. Very hypnotizing...

It was indeed, mesmerizing to look at!

However, there is always a limit to everything. When something gets far too large, it loses the sex appeal, it would turn into a horror movie!

With Zhang Yang continuous smacking, Dusk Phoenix's swollen breasts could make 99% of all girls envious and 100% of men to have the urge to bury their heads in those peaks! The problem was that, when her breasts swelled up even further, they became so large that they started sagging.

"Zhan Yu! I'll never forgive you!" Dusk Phoenix literally had tears flowing down her pretty face. She had abandoned her daggers and appeared to have no desire of fighting on. Such a torturous session had left her with a mental scar!

Pew!

Felice blasted a {Fire Missile} and killed the mentally broken woman, ending her suffering or rather, stopping Zhang Yang from further embarrassing her. The next second, Dusk Phoenix's lifeless corpse dissipated from the realm. She must have selected to revive at the graveyard itself, since it would take a while to run from the graveyard to revive yourself.

Having taken such intense punishment, the woman must have finally learned her lesson...for now. That was what Zhang Yang thought, but he did not lower his guard. Instead, he waited at the same spot for 30 minutes or so, just to make sure. It's hard to tell if Dusk Phoenix had really given up on her revenge. Zhang Yang felt that it would be better to just to be a little more patient, perhaps, she could really be hiding somewhere among the bushes.

When it comes to patience, Thieves should be the best among all class out there. Since they weren't particularly good in single combat, their sneaking ability would have to be raised to the maximum. Only god or a

GM knows when and from where a Thief would suddenly jump on you and hump your brains out!

After some time, Zhang Yang grew tired of waiting and decided to start the boss fight.

On normal occasions, players who had taken up the Thief class should have the patience to be able to stand at one place for hours, or even days just to hide and kill players. It's even normal for a Thief to stand guard for more than 2 days! Things would last much longer if the Thief user uses a Gaming Capsule! It would even possible to stand guard for as long as a month! That being said, such method would get old and tedious over time.

Zhang Yang had Felice stay far away from the boss as he attacked one of the Fire Elementals near the boss with a {Spear of Obliteration}. In unison, all 5 targets let out their battle cries and lumbered towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang withdrew hastily and calculated the precise moment to use {Shadow of the Void} and escape the battle. Now that all 5 targets had lost their aggro target, the elite tiered Fire Elemental that had taken the damage was the last to return to its original position, while the four who had followed had already returned. The last Fire Elemental that had not yet returned managed to get into Felice's aggro range and attacked her instead, leaving the other four undisturbed.

Zhang Yang then burst out of {Shadow of the Void} and came back into the battlefield. Before the Fire Elemental had managed to land a hit on Felice, he cast {Provoke} on it and drew its attention to himself.

"H-Hu-mans D-ie—" Its voice was extremely deep and low, making it rather to discern the words in its mumbles. Not that it mattered in the first place anyway. The Fire Elemental paced quickly towards Zhang Yang heaved its hammer towards Zhang Yang.

With a quick block and a bash, Zhang Yang retaliated. Since the Fire Elemental had the Fire Immunity passive skill, Felice was forced to remain in her human form to attack with her lance. Sadly, even in her human form, her {Blazing Dragon's Spear} was imbued with Fire damage. Under normal circumstances, the attacks would ignore a target's Defense,

reducing the damage reduction value. However, in this case, while fighting a target with Fire Immunity, it would be a waste. With her physical attack alone, Felice's DPS rate had dropped down to a staggering 4,000, which closer to Zhang Yang's level. The little young lady was so saddened by her weakened performance and had repeatedly apologized to Zhang Yang. "I'm so sorry big brother. I'm useless! I'm no good!"

Such a wonderful little lady...if only the devilish Wei Yan Er would behave like her! Zhang Yang sighed heavily at the thought of it. How wonderful would this world be, if the little brat behaved just a little better...

Even though Felice's attack had been greatly reduced, the overall DPS rate was still solid. The Fire Elemental was killed in no less than 2 minutes and dropped a few piles of Amber Ash. They were but ETC items which could be sold to the NPC for a few coins. Perhaps, even a few copper coins would be hard...

After the battle ended, Zhang Yang waited for 10 minutes for the {Shadow of the Void} to be ready. He then repeated the same process again and successfully killed a second Fire Elemental. For the third attempt, Zhang Yang was careless and had unintentionally drawn in the boss as well. Luckily, Felice and Whitey Jr. were able to fly into the sky to leave the battlefield.

During the fourth attempt, Zhang Yang paid more attention and kited two Fire Elementals at the same time. After spending more than twice the time, he killed all Fire Elementals and left the final target, Laguana alone in the field.

Even after fighting for close to 50 minutes, Zhang Yang still could not let go of the uneasiness he had in his heart. He was still bothered by the possibility of being ambushed by Dusk Phoenix. After contemplating for some time, Zhang Yang had flown around the area with the flying serpent and thoroughly looked under every stone in the entire area for traces of Dusk Phoenix. It was not easy. To search for an invisible Thief hidden in the wilderness was an impossible task!

After one unsuccessful round, Zhang Yang groaned like a madman and decided to start working on the boss. He could not wait any longer! If his quest really gets disrupted by the sexy European chick, he will spend the next few days hunting her down and smashing those boobies inwards! He would show her the vengeful side of men as well!

"Alright, let's go, Felice!" Zhang Yang drew his sword, calling out to the still solemn little lady.

"Alright, big brother!"

{Spear of Obliteration}!

Laguana's voice was different, compared to the other Fire Elementals. His groans were as thunderous as a volcanic eruption. Moving its massive fiery body about, it stomped the earth and smashed its blazing hammer at Zhang Yang. "Since when would a weakling human dare to challenge a god! Do you really think that you are one of us?"

{Charge}!

Wham!

The hammer dropped down from the sky at such speed that Zhang Yang's stance was met with immense pressure. The sheer power had forced him downward, pushing Zhang Yang deep into the earth! His greaves were buried halfway into the scorching land! His bones felt like they were on the verge of breaking! Zhang Yang readjusted his stance, opening his legs wider and forcefully pushed the shield back up, shoving the hammer off him.

"Fufufu! Such a weak human. I barely used any force in that strike!" Laguana lifted his hammer from the crater that it had made with Zhang Yang and slammed it down again.

This time, Zhang Yang's {Block} was still under a cooldown. Yet, he still assumed a similar defensive stance with his shield held up high. He took 12,942 damage. Thanks to the boss' special attack attribute, all his Defense value was just for show.

Zhang Yang snorted. The damage was not that bad.

"Don't get carried away, match stick! Witness how I extinguish your flame!" Zhang Yang traveled with the momentum of the hammer and threw himself into the air. Deftly weaving about the body of the larger entity, Zhang Yang laid down his attacks. Felice quickly joined in, as well as the flying serpent.

Laguana laughed manically and bellowed, "Arroagant human! Foolish human! You will never know why the gods have always looked down on all of you! Witness the power of Fire! Let it cleanse your corrupted soul!"

Voosh!

The boss smashed the earth in front of him and spewed out a sea of flames that spread out in all directions. Zhang Yang took 13,772 damage from it. Felice reacted quickly and morphed into her Dragonhawk form, but still took 15,520 damage. Since Felice had 4,480 magic defenses in her Dragonhawk form, the damage she would receive in her human form would have been higher.

Even though Felice had over 100,000 HP, the boss's {Burning Aura} was causing her quite an amount of damage, since it would deal 5,000 Fire damage in every 3 seconds. However, if Felice chooses to maintain her Dragonhawk form, the damage she would take on every tick would be lowered down to only 520 damage. The problem was that her Dragonhawk form would not be able to ditch out much damage, due to most of her Dragonhawk skills being Fire based. She might even end up healing the boss!

30 seconds into the fight, Felice slowly being force out of the battle. She had to fly elsewhere and heal herself with [Bandages] and Transmuted Grade 10 Healing Potion before rejoining the fight. This is the biggest advantage of a Battle Companion. Like a player, they could consume potions, use [Bandages,], and even sit down to eat recovery snacks to restore their HP! Naturally, they would have to leave the combat before doing so.

Zhang Yang cycled through all his attacking skills and hacked the boss to 80%. The King of Fire Elementals retracted his hammer and roared to

the high heavens. "Come forth! My brethren! Your King requests your assistance!"

Shush! Shush!

Two elite Fire Elementals appeared in the field. The boss then knelt down and froze himself in time. The flickering flames on his body stopped moving, as if time had stopped for him. However, his burning status remained the same!

{Summoned Servant: Fire Elemental}!

{Fire Elemental Servant Form] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 110

HP: 330,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,594 – 9,594 (Physical Attack with Fire attribute)

Skills:

[Flame Bash]: Deals 100% melee Fire damage, stunning the target for 3 seconds.

Luckily, the summoned Fire Elementals were not strong and had little HP at only 330,000. Two of these Fire Elementals were weaker than one of the Fire Elementals from before! Furthermore, these servants were not immune to Fire damage!

Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and started blasting {Fire Missiles}. Zhang Yang rode on Whitey Jr. and charged at the other Fire Elemental Servant. In 40 seconds and less, both of the targets were killed off!

The battle had ended so soon that the boss still had more than 1 minute to return to the battle!

Zhang Yang took the time to heal himself with a [Bandage]. During that time, {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were almost ready once again!

Zhang Yang smirked. The boss's {Summoned Servant} skill must be a

skill that would be boosted or weakened, according to the number of players in the field. The skill would be useful against a large number of players. The elite Fire Elementals had weak HPs, but were still tough to defeat. If players are not prepared enough, the summoned elementals could instantly wipe out all the DPSer and Healers in the field.

As for Zhang Yang, it would be a sad case of try-hard for the boss. Not only could Zhang Yang breeze through the ordeal like it was child's play, it had even given him a luxurious amount of time to heal! Among all the three bosses that the quest had required him to kill, this Fire Elemental King would be the easiest.

2 minutes later, Laguana returned back to the battlefield and had immediately spouted a long speech about killing humanity and experiencing his rage. However, when the boss activated the skill to absorb the HPs of the Fire Elemental Servants, a green healing text popped out, saying: "+O!"

Zhang Yang laughed and continued on with his slice and dice.

In the fight, the scripted "intelligence" of the boss was shown to the world. It was already a fact that the skill {Summoned Servant: Fire Elemental} would be useless in the fight, but Laguana would never fail to use the skill at every 20% HP loss. Zhang Yang had taken advantage of the boss' skill and had easily hacked the boss down to his last 10%. Right then, he used {Glare of the Death God}, but it failed with a word "Resist!"

Oh well, might as well just slice and dice all the way through...

Zhang Yang then activated {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} to save him some time. After some minor hacking, the boss' form retracted into the burning hammer upon his death. There was a pile of battle loot close by. Before heading over to claim his prize, Zhang Yang opened the quest log and saw that the quest "The Last Hurdle" had already been completed.

Hell yell! God of War Inheritance, GETZ!

Chapter 508: The God of War Inheritance

Zhang Yang rushed over with great speed to finish up the quest. In his haste, Zhang Yang did not even bother to review the loots and just swept them all into his inventory. He then rode Whitey Jr. and rushed over to the Camarro Islands. Zhang Yang allowed the flying serpent to take the wheel as he reviewed the drops.

Laguana had dropped a total of 3 equipment, a Yellow-Gold bow, a Yellow-Gold Cloth Armor Pants, and a Violet-Platinum Shield which was rather strong.

[Molten Lava Shield] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +2,016

Vitality: +1,411

Equip Effect: Absorbs 688 damage upon attack.

Equip Effect: Upon receiving an attack, grants a 10% chance to counterattack with a flamethrower, deals 700 fire damage.

Equip Effect: Increases 2,800 Maximum HP.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

The shield would be a hot sale in the auction house. The shield's properties were strong and could even damage the attacker to further generate a tank's aggro on a monster. Compared to Zhang Yang's own shield, this Molten Lava Shield was actually pretty cool!

Besides the equipment, the boss had also dropped one Alchemy Recipe [Fire Breather Potion] and a skill book [Unleashed Demon].

[Fire Breather Potion] (Usable)

Use: Imbues your body with the power of flames. After landing a successful attack, grants a 10% chance to breathe fire on the target, dealing 1,000 Fire damage. Effects last for 1 hour. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 100

This potion was rather useful. It was somewhat equivalent to granting the user 100 Fire damage on every strike (Average of 1,000 damage in 10 strikes). It would be extremely effective when used by Thieves since they had the highest attack speed. Be it PvP or PvE fights, it would come in truly handle.

The journey of a thousand miles begins with a single step. In this situation, the best way of putting it in words would be "the journey to 1,000 damage begins with 10 strikes!"

{Unleashed Demon} was a universal skill, unrestricted by classes. However, Zhang Yang chose to keep it instead with the intention of passing it over to Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu, because he knew that skill's prowess.

The skill would release one demon to entrap one target, making the target unable to attack while being invincible itself. In a situation where there are 4 to 5 Elite monsters around, this skill can be used as a crowd control skill to reduce the load on the party members.

Since he was the main tank, the skill's 3 seconds of casting animation would greatly reduce his efficiency in a fight. It was still best to let someone else like Han Ying Xue learn it.

Compared to the other two bosses, Laguana was the weakest. Zhang Yang could not help but to think that the servants of gods had different levels amongst themselves. Honestly, Laguana's prowess was truly weak when compared to the other two.

After several hours of flying, Zhang Yang entered the cave where Ares lay. When he entered the cave, the guy was stretching as if he had just woken up.

"Huh. Not bad, for a mere human!" Ares snorted. "Back then, I would only have needed one finger to kill them easily, even if those three douchebags were thousands of kilometers apart!"

Oh, really now?

Zhang Yang chuckled and said, "God of War, I have proven myself worthy to inherit your power!"

Ares chuckled as well. "Geh geh geh. Indeed, you have. Very well, little human. I shall bestow on you a portion of my power! However, you must continue your journey to absolute strength. The current you is still weak to receive all of my power!" said Ares, with a stern expression.

"I understand".

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Last Hurdle. Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points!'

"Close your eyes, and concentrate only on receiving my powers!" Area placed his fingers on Zhang Yang's forehead and unleashed a bright radiating light.

Woah! Is that the legendary Martial World's Abhisheka(1) technique! Zhang Yang thought about it while waiting for the process to end.

'Ding! You have obtained the Inheritance, God of War. Inheritance Class: S! Due to the Uniqueness of the Inheritance, you can no longer accept other Inheritances nor discard the God of War Inheritance!'

'Ding! With the guidance of the God of War, you may now equip any Two-Handed Weapons in your main hand and a Shield in your secondary hand. You have gained access to Guardian's and Berserker's skill trees. Skills can only be learned through Skill Books and cannot be obtained from Class Instructors!'

'Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War's Rage!'

'Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War's Shield!'

'Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War Transformation!'

'Ding! You have learned a new skill: Radiance of the God of War!'

'Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War's Crushing Strike!'

'Ding! Congratulations on becoming the first player to obtain a Class Inheritance. The system has awarded you with Luck +2!'

After many bell dings ringed in his ears, Ares retracted his finger from Zhang Yang's head and sat back down. "There. I have given you a portion of my power. Until the day you become stronger, train with all your might. Come back to me when you are stronger, and I shall bestow upon you more skills." After he ended his speech, Ares returned to his deep slumber.

'Server Announcement: A player has obtained the first Inheritance Class! The system will conduct a server restart in 5 minutes! Please make preparations for the server restart!'

Right after the system notification flashed, the server was sent into a major chaos.

Zhang Yang was excited. When he had already gained the skills, Zhang Yang was not paying attention to the NPC and was already examining the new skills.

In truth, there were six skills. The God of War inheritance had given a permanent upgrade to the player, allowing the player to equip a Two-Handed Weapon in their main hands!

[God of War's Rage] (Passive): Increases 50% attack power.

[God of War's Shield]: Summons the God of War to protect oneself. Gains 20% passive damage reduction that last for 10 minutes. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Not bad. A permanent damage boost and an active Defensive skill. What power!

[God of War Transformation]: Calls upon the God of War and transform oneself into his image. Increases your maximum HP by 4000%, Defense by 500%, Attack Power by 500% and gains a 90% chance to nullify all magical attacks inflicted on you. Gains the power of flight. In the God of War Form, you will gain 1 point of God of War Energy Point every 10 seconds. The Energy Points can be used to activate many special skills in the God of War Form. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

Like a god!

Based on his current stats, if Zhang Yang activates his God of War

Transformation, he would have 3,785,600 HP, 11,600 Defense, and 26,552 – 29,152 Attack Power. Perhaps his HP was a little on the low side, or else he would have completely overtaken a Violet-Platinum boss itself!

No wonder the late-game bosses required thousands or even ten thousands of players to fight. If the later bosses were designed based on the standard difficulty graph, the bosses were nothing but tofu for players with Transformation abilities!

Now that he had the God of War Transformation in hand, he could kill an Ethereal tier boss all by himself!

It was a waste that the transformation skill could not be saved up for later uses. A 2 hour long active duration and a 72 hour cooldown period was just too precious to be wasted on random bosses.

Zhang Yang laughed at his own greediness and continued to examine the other skills.

[Radiance of the God of War]: Absorbs the light of victory and mends all wounds on the body, restoring all of your HP. Cost: 100% Rage Points. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Wait a minute? A 30 minutes cooldown {Berserker's Heal}? That's too weak! How could he use it?!

"F*ck!"

Zhang Yang cried in agony as he had just been reminded of something extremely important. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had never encountered such a skill like {Berserker's Heal} and {Sacred Heal}, but he had heard words from older players, talking about how they missed the days where they could use the skills!

Right now, Zhang Yang finally understood what they meant! Those skills would be removed in the upcoming patch! The skills had already been removed in his past life when the someone else had obtained the first Inheritance!

Now that he thought about it, if the developers did not remove the all-recovery skills, players with Transformation Inheritance would be even

more OP. Players who were Warriors and Knights would be completely broken. After transforming and gaining a massive boost in stats, they could simply depend on {Berserker's Heal} to maintain a god-like mode! As long as they put in an effort of staying alive every 2 minutes, they could defeat a boss within 2 hours and still grind their hearts out without the need to worry about survivability! The dignity of a boss would be non-existent!

Sigh...As the saying goes, the sun will set and the moon will rise; if the developers wants to remove the skill, there nothing that a player can do!

[God of War's Crushing Strike]: Strikes the earth with the power of a God and attacks all targets within an area of 100x100 meters mercilessly. Chaos Damage will be dealt, based on 1000% of the Strength attribute. Cost: 3 God of War Energy Points.

The skill {Radiance of the God of War} could be used in any form. However, since Ep would only regenerate in the God of War form, the skill {God of War's Crushing Strike} would only be available during a transformation.

Zhang Yang's current Strength attribute was 1,332. 10 times of that would mean 13,320 Chaos Damage to all targets within 100x100 meters! The skill would be a major damage dealer in a war since it could be used once every 30 seconds! The skill had a lot of potential for improvement, due to the fact that it depended on an Attribute. The attack power was not fixed, and would depend on a player's ever-growing Strength.

Zhang Yang let out an elated sigh. He had not only gained the Inheritance skills, but also a strong Guardian and the bloodlusted Berserker! However, the skills of God of War could only be received from Ares, and the Guardian and Berserker skills can only be obtained from skill books. But now, he could finally equip a Two-Handed Weapon in his main hand! All he needed then was to prepare himself a full set of equipment that is focused on DPS!

First and foremost, he would change the weapon! Even though a Two-Handed Weapon and a One-Handed Weapon had roughly the same

Weapon Attack, the difference in damage output when using a skill would be the difference between heaven and earth!

It's a pity that he would need to put aside the Sword of Purging Devourer. He still had not broken two seals. Since he could already equip a better and stronger Two-Handed Weapon, he would not have to keep on using the One-Handed Weapon. However, if the Sword of Purging Devourer had its second seal unlock, and consumes a Two-Handed Weapon's special effect, turning into a Two-Handed Sword...

Zhang Yang shook his head from the dreamy thought. Even if there was such a feature in the game, the possibilities of discovering one would be too low.

Just then, the system had shut down the system and forcefully kicked all the players out of the game.

"Noob tank! Sister's calling for us. The server is down. Let's go out and eat!" cried Wei Yan Er's voice from outside his door.

Please...the server is restarting. It would only take as long as a few minutes to complete! If they wanted free food, just say it out loud. It's not like he's as stingy as they are. What a sad excuse...

Translator Note:

1. Abhisheka – A technique where a master will perform a sacred rite of transferring power, martial technique, and even knowledge.

2. Energy Point will be shortened to just EP in future chapters.

Chapter 509: Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu

Having obtained the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang was in high spirits and decided that it was good cause for a big celebration. He had invited Fatty Han to join him for dinner together with them at a high-class hotel restaurant. The entire "family" soon gathered up and sat down happily.

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to talk about the Inheritance, starting all the way from the passive stat boosts, to the amazing transformation skill. At that point, everyone had gasped in surprise and shock. Names like pervert, wretch, hypocrite flew in his face.

Zhang Yang blinked in surprise.

"Come on. It's a transformation skill! It's not like I would go faking my identity."

"It's not that. Transforming as in changing your gender. Changing your gender just for the sake of power is so perverted! Tut~tut~tut~ You're such an air-head!" Wei Yan Er patted Zhang Yang's shoulder like she was an elder sibling.

Zhang Yang gave up trying to reason with her and ignore the incessant giggles of the tiresome ladies.

"Hey! Little Yang! When are you going get me an S class Hunter Inheritance?!" cried the Fatty, glaring at Zhang Yang with excitement.

"Huh? Fatty bro, are trying to be a pervert as well? I don't think you'd need one, since everyone knows that you're one!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Fatty, I think you should just get yourself a B class Inheritance. Even a C class would be acceptable. You're all about the transformation, right?" said Zhang Yang. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had obtained a King Kong Inheritance which was a B class. Having cleared the quest line for the S class God of War Inheritance, he truly believed, judging from Fatty Han's capabilities as a player, that even

getting a B class Inheritance would be barely possible.

Fatty Han snorted and blinked, "Little Yang. Are you looking down on your Fatty bro? I'm not saying that I'm a pro, but that sort of difficulty would be a cake's walk! Hell, I can even finish it with my cock!"

Saying that, every waitress who had been around the table glared at him in disgust and incredulity. His girlfriend, Xiao Wei had smacked his bulging belly with all her might, causing the poor Fatty Han to cringe in pain.

"Hmph! I'd say, noobie tank is selfish! Selfish, I'm telling you! How could you leave us alone in the dark as you go around getting yourself the best S class Inheritance!" said Wei Yan Er, disgruntled. Both her hands were placed on her hips as she pouted.

Zhang Yang chuckled awkwardly and pretended to ignore the question. Such a statement was extremely difficult to refute. Might as well just eat up and get drunk.

Everyone had never been happier for Zhang Yang, and had even ordered many alcoholic beverages to toast for his future, many times over. As they drank, other than Zhang Yang and Fatty Han who were heavy drinkers, most of the females around could not hold their drinks after a few glasses. Xiao Wei was around to send Fatty Han home, but Zhang Yang was ferrying five passengers, himself included. The sports car that he had brought along only had room for four. Even though their small bodies would not make that a problem, it would be against the law, and they could be fined heavily. In the end, Zhang Yang got them 5 rooms to spend the night.

The four beauty queens were so intoxicated and they would not even walk straight. Zhang Yang did not want the male hotel crew to take advantage of them, so he carefully supported them, each and every one of them to their own rooms.

The last to be escorted to her room was Han Ying Xue. Just when Zhang Yang had tucked her into bed, the sly witch had slithered her arms around Zhang Yang's neck, pulling him close and planted a hot, passionate kiss

on Zhang Yang's lips. Zhang Yang was shocked but was not all too surprised, for it was totally within her characteristics to pull off such a stunt. He pulled himself away and asked, "Are you drunk? Or were you just faking it...?"

"Of course I'm faking it! Haha! I wanted to let that cold-hearted b*tch lose it really hard!" Han Ying Xue laughed like a seductive succubus. During dinner, she had purposely poured more alcohol in Sun Xin Yu's cup and forced everyone else to drink until their heads started spinning. Zhang Yang would have never known that Han Ying Xue could put up such a convincing act of being drunk! Poor Sun Xin Yu should probably be cursing to the high heavens in the washroom at that moment, puking her guts out!

Zhang Yang frowned, biting his lower lip. "I'm warning you, I did drink a lot back there. I might just lose it here! Don't play with fire, or you'll get yourself burnt! If you push me, I might actually do it!" said Zhang Yang. Even as the last of those words left his mouth, Zhang Yang swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

"Hmph. We're past that. Now, who is going to do who~~" Han Ying Xue murmured. She pulled him down even further and pressed her jugs against Zhang Yang's chest. She started applying pressure, only to relax, kneading her breasts against his hard body in a slow, hypnotic rhythm. It was summer. Zhang Yang only had a thin, muscle T-shirt on, and Han Ying Xue was wearing a low-cut dress. It was made clear that she had no bra on!

"F*ck. F*ck. F*ck. F*ck. F*ck. F*ck. F*ck. F*ck." The same words were racing in Zhang Yang's mind as he tried his best to control himself. Even as he tried to take his mind elsewhere, Zhang Yang could clearly feel a pair of hardening nipples piercing through the garment and scratching against his chest. He could feel the ragged, hot breath coming from her open lips. Her warm lips met his neck and slowly traced down. Worse of all, the ultimate kryptonite to Zhang Yang's resistance were her dazed, dreamy eyes. Her open mouth, and her soft, pink tongue that peeked out from their midst. She craved for a man. She craved for love. Hot, burning,

passionate love.

"B*tch! You asked for it!" Zhang Yang could not hold it in any longer. With one explosive motion, Zhang Yang pinned Han Ying Xue on the bed, his hands around her wrists, holding them above her body. He allowed his weight to rest on her softness, his knee resting just below her crotch, between her amazing, thick thighs. The mounds of wonder were squashed out so forcefully that they started spilling out over her sides. They became a hot, twisted, mess of intertwined limbs. Suddenly, Han Ying Xue grabbed him by the shoulders and pushed him up. She gazed into his face with half-opened eyes, a glimpse of her white teeth between her parted lips.

"I want it—" The woman moaned, her hands drifting down to unbuckle that which kept Zhang Yang's lower half chambered and contained.

"Calm down, you god d*mn swine! I can't believe you!" Zhang Yang would admit on any day that he is a horny, dirty bastard, but he had never expected a woman like Han Ying Xue to surpass even him in that aspect.

"Oh please. Why would I need to constraint myself in the presence of the man I love? I don't need to hide anything. This is my true self!" Han Ying Xue winked. Her hands rummaged around, groping and feeling about, but Zhang Yang pants remained intact. It was her first time, and she was having trouble unbuckling his leather belt, and it was beginning to frustrate her. The combination of her pent up anticipation, along with that frustration had made her so moist that fabric beneath her, and the mattress were getting drenched in her lovely lady's juice.

"Mm. Hm. Let me," grunted Zhang Yang. He had mistakenly believed that Han Ying Xue was still teasing him and got slightly annoyed. Her hands had brushed against his bulging, rock-hard asset, and it was getting close to torture. He gently pushed away her hands and unbuckled his own pants.

After all manner of fabric and garment had been removed, the two of them locked each other up in a tight embrace. Zhang Yang allowed her to get up top. He was being far gentler, compared to his first time with Yu Li. It was Han Ying Xue's first experience, and based on his experience, he

ought to be extremely gentle to maximize the comfort and pleasure, while minimizing the pain. After all, Han Ying Xue was one fine, fine creature. Her first experience should be of pleasure, not pain!

"Why are you being so gentle! That's so not you! Rough me up! Dominate me! Harder!" said Han Ying Xue. She pushed herself up and bit down on his shoulder. "You know...the time when I first fell for you, was when I met you for the first time at my apartment, when you dominated the ice queen so nicely, against the wall, just like that! Yes, I may be a b*tch. But I like my men hard and strong! I need a brute to keep me around! You think you have what it takes to keep this hot piece of *ss around?"

"Have what it takes?" Zhang Yang grinned. "B*tch, you asked for this. Don't start crying later, for once I go hard, there's no turning back!"

"Boy. Stop talking. Do you make love with your mouth!?"

Since the bloody woman was being so provocative, there was no reason to hold back any longer. With the alcohol in his bloodstream, and the amount of frustration build up, and the sense of accomplishment having obtained the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang had so much pent up in that one month of hardship. He then grabbed hold of Han Ying Xue by her hair, dragging her further onto the bed as he pinned her down. His 'weapon' had been teased, tormented, and enraged so extensively that it twitched in anticipation, rearing to plunge itself deep in Han Ying Xue.

"Mmmhhh~~" Even though she was practically begging to be thoroughly ravaged, Han Ying Xue is still a virgin. She may be taking in something far too large, too powerful for her ripe, unplucked fruit. She knit her graceful, lovely eyebrows together, and her eyelids slid over her dazed eyes. The expression on her face intensified his burning lust, sending Zhang Yang's soul into purgatory. Zhang Yang leaned back, allowed the power to accumulate in his body, before thrusting his hips with great force, ramming into her with the brutal might of a warrior. God of War!

"AHH--!" Both their voices were raised at the same time. The woman was a brute herself. She had wanted him to taste the pain of blood with her.

Pulling herself closer to Zhang Yang, her nails digging into his back, she opened her mouth and chomped down into Zhang Yang's shoulder muscle. The pain was so sudden and unexpected that Zhang Yang almost roared like a hungry lion. Zhang Yang winced a little and retaliated. He started to brutally smash the attractive, gentle elf like a savage orc. Blood quickly mixed up with other clearer, warmer liquids as they churned about. The pistoning had started off with great vigor, but it quickly became clear that there was a lot more room before the redline.

Han Ying Xue had gotten used to it in a surprisingly short period of time. Her vulgar grunts were slowly turning into melodic, beautiful utterances. The painful moment for her ended quickly, and was replaced with pleasure. She loosened up a little, allowing Zhang Yang to delve even deeper. Her long, white legs wrapped around him with great desire, urging him to increase his speed for her own pleasure.

If Zhang Yang had not been reborn, he would not have gained a cheat code full of experience in this activity. Without it, he might end up as a scrawny little man after Han Ying Xue is finally satisfied.

Han Ying Xue's lovely, melodic voice permeated all over the room. It bounced off the walls, echoing out of the balcony. They were at it for more than half an hour before Han Ying Xue finally called it a night. When Zhang Yang had been with Yu Li, they could go at it for hours. However, foreplay alone usually took up more than two-thirds of the overall duration. As for Han Ying Xue, since she had asked for the brutal side of him, Zhang Yang had gone all out, continuously, for more than half an hour. The poor man was so tired and he had to lie next to her, panting in exhaustion. If she had asked for more, even Zhang Yang would end up with an IV Drip in his body when the whole ordeal is over.

THUD! THUD! THUD! THUD!

Just when Zhang Yang finally recovered enough to sit up, the hard rapping of the door burst out in the silence. Zhang Yang frowned. Who could it be? If it was a service crew member, they would have used the doorbell, instead of physically knocking. Plus, the knock was strong...and rude, it came off way too strong and impatient. Nothing like that of a

service crew! In that case...it could only be...

Zhang Yang had never been so terrified in his life. He wrapped the blanket around his lower half and made his way to the eye hole of the door. He almost let out a yelp when the person on the opposite side was none other than the harbinger. Sun Xin Yu!

Zhang Yang felt immense guilt rising up in his chest. The sort of feeling that you get when caught cheating on another woman. Zhang Yang returned to Han Ying Xue's side with a solemn face.

Han Ying Xue raised an eyebrow and smirked when she studied Zhang Yang's reaction. "Is it the ice queen?"

"Yes...."

THUD! THUD! THUD! THUD! THUD!

The knocking had turned into the solid bangs of a battering ram. The door might not hold up any longer.

Zhang Yang frantically looked to the left and right for a place to hide. "Go, go and tame that beast, I gotta hide!"

Han Ying Xue sighed. She then picked up a blanket and held it against her chest. "Men..."

Han Ying Xue waltzed lazily to the door and unlocked it casually. She was smart. When she unlocked the door, she had quickly taken a step back. Lo and behold, the door practically flew open. Sun Xin Yu's moist, intoxicated face glowed with a crimson hue. Perhaps there was more rage than anything there. She staggered into the room and started looking around, her head whipping her partially undone hair about. At one point, she had almost fell to her feet.

"ahem This is MY room. You mind explaining yourself?" said, Han Ying Xue, as she slowly pushed the door close with her jade-white legs.

"Where hick. Where is he?" rasped Sun Xin Yu. Her voice was cracking and there was an intense anger burning in her eyes. Her cheeks were dyed in red.

"Who?" Han Ying Xue played dumb.

"You sow! Don't play coy with me! Don't you dare say that you did not lay with him!" Sun Xin Yu burst with anger.

"Yeah. I did. So what are you going to do? Bite me?" Han Ying Xue crossed her arms. "I'm more than capable of making it worth his while! Unlike you, flatty!"

In truth, Sun Xin Yu's chest was nowhere close to being flat. In fact, no one in their right mind would even associate her to that word. Still, when compared to Han Ying Xue, a lady who was so well-endowed, even Sun Xin Yu would appear average.

"Sow! Brag all you want! Your fat lumps will sag down like a potato sack!" Sun Xin Yu shot back.

"Hmph! At least it's better than having a flat chest! Sigh! Look at them! Those sad little things. Is it just me, or is one of them caved in deeper than the other?" Han Ying Xue shrugged bemusedly.

Woah! #burn

When it comes to a battle of words, no one would really be on par with the demoness. Sun Xin Yu may not be able to hold her own in a battle of words, but in a fist fight, perhaps only Zhang Yang would be able to keep up.

Sensing impending disaster, Zhang Yang quickly popped out of toilet. Awkwardly, Zhang Yang scratched the back of his head and said, "What a beautiful night, isn't it ladies?"

"It's raining!" Sun Xin Yu bashfully replied.

Han Ying Xue pouted her lips and said, "Hey, flat chest. There's your man. Now, are you satisfied? You can leave now. We're about to start round two soon."

Sun Xin Yu snorted and proceeded to undress herself.

Zhang Yang jumped in horror. He was genuinely shocked at her sudden, abrupt behavior and cried out, "What are you doing!?"

"If she can do it, I can do it better!" Sun Xin Yu glared at Han Ying Xue. "I'll never lose to her! I'll rather die than admit defeat!"

As expected of alcohol, they revealed the true minds of women.

"Please...Like yours can compete with mine!" Han Ying Xue boldly dropped the blanket she was holding up and pridefully squashed her naked body against Sun Xin Yu's bare flesh. The two of them continued to press their assets against each other until it became clear that there would be no winner. Puffing and huffing, one with arrogance, the other with persistence, neither side wanted to lose! After an intense glaring contest, both of them turned to Zhang Yang, making him jump in horror. He knew that he was going to be the victim but was hoping to get away from this...

Oh crap...

...

The night went by in a torrent of rage and violence, that when the sun's ray pierced through the curtain gaps, it was dissipated by the thick, heavy atmosphere of the steamy hot room.

Zhang Yang had both his hands wide open like a crucified man. They were both used as head pillows for the two vixens in his bed. He had just woken up and was lost in troubled thoughts, wondering if it was morally right to accept two world class super models in his arms like this.

Both Sun and Han had always been at each other's throats and the presence of alcohol had blown all restraints off their hinges. The night before was extremely brutal, for Zhang Yang at least. Whenever he was done climbing the steep mountain of pacifying one creature, the other would jump in and demand for it.

In truth, it was every man's dream to hear a woman crying for it, but even the greatest men have limits! In Zhang Yang's case, both of them had taken turns, crying for more! At one point, no amount of Red Bull was enough to get him back to his feet.

Sun Xin Yu's long fair legs twitched a little. When she opened her eyes, her entire body sprung up so swiftly that Zhang Yang could have mistaken

her for a spring board. Her eyes were wide open and she was beginning to realize her position. She hugged herself and trembled at the fact of what that had happened last night. Her face turned red, and she was at the verge of crying.

At first, his erect missile had been rearing to go once again, but when Zhang Yang saw Sun Xin Yu's broken expression, he felt remorse and tried to console her. "Erhm...Are you only trying to reserve yourself now? I mean, you were a little ahem, last night."

Sun Xin Yu shot a death glare at Zhang Yang and turned away to grabbed her clothing, but her legs gave out due to the pain between her thighs. She let out a painful groan and almost fell over. She quickly supported herself with her hands and made her way back to the bed.

Right then, Zhang Yang had a sudden urge to solve the conflict. Compared to the risks of being "swallowed whole" by the two vixens again, he was more concerned about the future of the two ladies. He wanted to take this chance to fix the conflict between the two of them and hoped that they would make peace with each other. Zhang Yang sat up, his eyes unintentionally raking over Sun Xin Yu's extremely slender and toned waist line. The woman had such a sleek waist and toned abs that had no traces of any excess fat! But even so, she could be as soft as a feather when she chose to, or tense up when she needed a burst of power to kick someone's butt. Last night, Zhang Yang had experienced the best of both worlds when Sun Xin Yu was riding on him like a female knight, carrying herself with such noble dignity, even as ecstasy dictated for her to gallop harder to the peak!

Zhang Yang smile lightly and said, "If you're hurt, it's best for you to stay put and rest."

"I'm an officer of the law. Such a wound is nothing!" said Sun Xin Yu coldly. Looks like she had returned to her usual behavior.

Zhang Yang chuckled at her stubbornness.

"Groans It's morning...why are you making so much noise..." Han Ying Xue stretched her body and sat up straight while leaning her back against

the wooden plank at the head of the bed. The silky blanket slid off, revealing a great deal of her body. No matter how soft the blanket was, it could not properly plaster itself between Han Ying Xue's deep cleavage. Her chest was so extravagant that they could even hold up the blanket like a hanger!

Even though Sun Xin Yu's stubbornness was world class, she could not help but to admit that Han Ying Xue was truly a beauty. Her perfection could even entice the likes of women! Sun Xin Yu scoffed and said, "Sly fox, what do you want?"

Han Ying Xue slid her legs off the bed. But when she wanted to get off the bed, she lazily lay back down and tugged one of Zhang Yang's arms over, using it as a pillow. Still a little sleepy, she rubbed her face against Zhang Yang's warm bicep, which only made Sun Xin Yu angrier.

In a blurry voice, Han Ying Xue said, "Little Sun, you best treat your elder sister with respect!"

"What...? Elder sister?" Sun Xin Yu coldly snapped.

"Yes. Elder sister. I was Zhang Yang's before you. So, technically, I am the elder!" said Han Ying Xue as she buried herself into Zhang Yang's embrace like a lazy cat.

"Hmph. That's was just in bed. You're not really Zhang Yang's wife yet!" said Sun Xin Yu.

Wife...? Oh no...

"Haha! What a shame. Still, I'll always be one step ahead of you!"

Zhang Yang had mixed feelings about it. Firstly, he was quite satisfied with how things had turned out. At first, he was extremely worried that he would never make them accept each other. But, it seemed that they had already skipped the major confrontation and it was now the first wife argument. How efficient could they be...

Zhang Yang accidentally forgot his place and comforted both women by gently caressing them at their slender fair backs, slightly above their curvy buttocks. "There, there. No need to argue about this and that. We are all

one happy family. Let's keep it that way!"

Perhaps Zhang Yang was honest to a fault. Failing to hide his greed only earned the ire of both women.

Chapter 510: Class Balancing

Now that they have already reached this bridge, why not cross it? Perhaps, two little Zhang Yangs were already forming in each of their wombs.

Before allowing the women to leave the room, Zhang Yang held the door shut and got into a heated argument with the both of them. His authoritative aura was finally of some use. Eventually, both of them agreed to take a step back and acknowledge that each other would be with Zhang Yang from now on. However, there was one problem that he simply couldn't address, both of them wanted his hand in marriages, and the other woman to be the side-chick.

In truth, no normal woman would be willing to accept such an arrangement. However, both Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were not exactly normal women. Both of them have had rather unorthodox upbringings. Hence, they had broader mindsets. Han Ying Xue had been brought up in a family of riches, and in her circle of society, having a lover or two was not out of the norm, especially for those with a mountain of fortune. On the other hand, despite being an officer of the law, Sun Xin Yu was born into a family of politicians, such a situation was normal for her as well.

Hence, with their own backgrounds, they would not need to worry much about seeking safe havens with Zhang Yang. Yet, they were still at each other's throats. They had known each other for more than a year now. Be it hostility or enmity, they have grown to know each other pretty well. As much as they hated it, they grudgingly agreed to share their lover.

Zhang Yang could only nod in silence. He patted his crotch and sigh heavily. In the near future, he would have to rely on the magnum to pacify the women. After a few sessions of pacification, he might be able to soften their feelings for each other and perhaps attain peace.

Sun Xin Yu was a tough girl. She had been through numerous years of vigorous training in order to become an officer. When she said that she

could take it, she meant every word of it. Biting down the pain of losing her first night, she quickly got up and drove to work. On the other end, Han Ying Xue was a princess, a little twitch or two would have made her scream with pain and agony. Even going to the loo was enough to make her scream for Zhang Yang.

Now that Sun Xin Yu had left, Zhang Yang's car was just right for four. After they had their breakfast at the fancy hotel, Zhang Yang drove them all back to their villa.

For once in her lifetime, Han Ying Xue was finally thanking Zhang Yang. Her original sweet and glamorous complexion was made even prominent after the night. Both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were so envious that they had to ask what kind of cosmetic products she was using to make herself so beautiful. They've no experience in any of the big bam boom, hence they would have never known that it was Zhang Yang who had spent a whole night grinding and drilling her up! (1)

Back at home, everyone got comfortable and logged into the game.

When Zhang Yang went online, he was in the cave of Ares. He quickly opened up the patch notes and found out that the update was not exactly what he remembered it to be. Unexpectedly, it was a major nerf fest for all class.

{Berserker's Heal}, and {Sacred Heal} had been removed. In fact, the only job capable of healing HP was Priest and Sacred Knight. That or a class Inheritance, Warrior of Light. Luckily, the Lifestealing effects of Rune Stones had not been removed. Passive abilities like Zhang Yang's Titan Chest Plate that added a healing effect to his {Shield Wall} remained.

In other news, the healing capabilities of all healers had been nerfed greatly. Before the update, it would have taken only one healer to fully support on tank player. After the update, under the similar circumstances, it was no longer possible to do so.

The officials' explanation was:

1. As Tank type players obtain Inheritances, the strength of the tanks has increased dramatically. To maintain a status quo between player and the

boss, the healer class has been nerfed accordingly.

2. Healer type players are too strong in the PvP Battle Arena. It is impossible for a battle to end if both sides have Healers in the party. Unless the healer has used up their MP, the battle can never end. Records showed that majority of battles has been dragged for over 2 hours.

The first explanation was completely unacceptable. The ability to fight a boss did not depend on the quality of the healer. However, Zhang Yang could understand the reasoning behind the second note. Since group battles would always include a healer, both sides would only need to have 1 DPS and 1 Healer, or 1 Tank and 1 Healer to win. The battle could be dragged for as long as needed. The winners would usually be determined by the amount of MP the healer has.

Zhang Yang opened the skill window and found that the skill {Berserker's Heal} was indeed removed. Furthermore, he had also noticed that the skill that came with Herbalism, {Blood of Life} had also been nerfed greatly. The cooldown had been extended from 2 minutes to 10 minutes!

After sighing for god knows how many times, Zhang Yang gave up trying to find a proper reason to justify the nerf fest. Even though many would protest the great change, other classes such as Hunter, Thief, and Spellcasters would cheer. That was due to the high winning rates of Tanks and Healers in PvP fights.

What cunning gaming developers! Whenever they nerfed any particular class, the other unaffected classes would rejoice. Even if they start taking fire in the forums, there would be "reinforcements," called keyboard warriors, to help in shifting the blame. The next trend would be to nerf the "unaffected" class to make it a proper class balancing arrangement.

Zhang Yang took out his Sword of Purging Devourer, aware that he should get himself a Two-Handed Weapon as soon as possible. It would be a disgrace to his Inheritance if he does not do so! However, he had been hunting and farming for good Two-Handed Violet-Platinum weapons, but was never able to find any with a Level Requirement lower than 120. Until

he reaches Level 120, they would remain in his inventory. Talk about a carrot hanging by the end of the stick!

While hunting for Two-Handed weapons, he had also hoped that the Sword of Purging Devourer would turn into a Two-Handed Sword after absorbing a Two-Handed weapon ability! If that happens to be the case, it would solve his problem, since the sword was a one of a kind weapon!

After getting over the sad thought of possibly having to part with it, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and flew to Gunma Volcanic Island to obtain one of the materials in order to break the seal on the Sword of Purging Devourer. The "Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang".

"OH F*****!" Just then, the furious, heartbroken cries of Han Ying Xue blasted through the party channel. "My god! My healing powers have been reduced! At least 1/3 of my original power has been taken away! Awwww~"

Seems like the woman had finally read the change log.

Zhang Yang switched to the party chat and consoled her. "It's ok. You're F-cup, aren't you? Even if we take 1/3 of it away, you'd still have D cups! Fret not! It's still standing out!"

Han Ying Xue did not reply to him. Perhaps she was so angry or preoccupied that she had not noticed his chat.

That did not matter since her healing power would be greatly boosted when she obtains the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance! Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder how things would turn out for her when she activates the Transformation skill of the Milkmaid Deity...Would she actually gain cup size or...Fu fu fu...

Wei Yan Er stepped up to be the heroine of the day and helped Han Ying Xue searched for the remaining pieces of the Inheritance. Zhang Yang was delighted to have her take over his supposed role. After a short while, Whitey Jr. reached Gunma Volcanic Island.

There was a live volcano located at the center of the island. Blackened smoke rose up into the sky, expelling all the smoke and ash into the clouds, darkening the skyline. That unstable, volatile scene made the

island seem extremely unsafe to live in, especially when the volcano looked like it would spew out hot molten lava at any time. At the bottom of the mountain was a small town. Since volcanic soil is extremely fertile for crops, the town was rather densely populated. There were many races living there like humans, Orcs, Elves, Dwarfs, Gnomes, and other races that Zhang Yang had never seen before. Other than the hostile Spectre and Demons, it would be safe to say that this town was filled with all races throughout the world.

Since the quest had revealed the location of the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang] in his map, it would not take much time for Zhang Yang to search for it in the small town. There was a high chance of finding the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang] through a quest given by one of the NPCs in the town.

Zhang Yang flew downwards to the entrance of the town and unsummoned Whitey Jr. Only Zhang Yang and Felice walked into the town.

In the game, only quest-giving NPCs have special names unlike common guards, NPCs, or random pedestrians. Most of the occupants of the town had the generic-looking name "Citizen of Loyas Town". If you were to talk to any of those NPCs with the name tag, their lines would be blunt, repetitive, and non-beneficial to Zhang Yang's quest.

He then pulled one of the NPCs over and started a conversation to try his luck. However, all he got from them was the history of Loyas. As for news about [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang] there was nothing but shrugs and "I don't know".

Zhang Yang circled through the town and found one sad looking dwarf sitting by the end of the town with a face bleeding from a fresh wound.

[Dodothi Wildhammer] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 17,800

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,103 – 6,103

Note: World's most "honest and trustworthy" merchant.

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyebrows when he saw the double quotation mark.

Zhang Yang walked to the NPC and asked, "Dwarf, what happened to you?"

"Sigh..." Dodothi sighed heavily and raised his head to Zhang Yang. After glancing for a second, Dodothi lowered his head.

Zhang Yang voice out again, "Perhaps, I could be of service?"

"You?" Dodothi finally looked into Zhang Yang eyes and shook his head as if he was greatly disappointed. "Please keep your arrogance to yourself, human. There's no way for you to solve my problems."

"Hah. But what if I can?" Zhang Yang smirked.

Dodothi raised his right eyebrow, intrigued by Zhang Yang's bold question. "Alright then, you may try. It won't matter to me if you die anyway!"

Zhang Yang frowned. If it was not for a quest, Zhang Yang would have already beheaded the NPC.

"Just when I had restocked some fine goods for sale, I was ambushed by a group of Jackalmen! They killed all my hired guards and took away all of my wares! Those damned Jackalmen! I had lost a great deal of my investment! It cost me a lot of gold! Argh!" Dodothi punched the wall beside him and cried out in pain.

...

How did this useless dwarf survive when all his guards were killed?

Dodothi turned to Zhang Yang while rubbing his wounded fist. "Human, if you can retrieve my goods, I shall reward you with 400—300—wait, 100 gold coins! Mm. Yes. 100 gold coins should be enough for you to hire 10 strong slaves!"

The red beard dwarf had glanced at Felice with disdain. He had assumed that Felice was extremely weak due to her slender and beautiful looks.

‘Ding! Dodothi Wildhammer has a quest for you: Retrieve the Goods. Will you accept it?’

It was not mentioned, but perhaps there was a chance that the [Magical Fruits of Ying and Yang] would be among the goods! Since there were no other leads for the item, Zhang Yang felt that it was better to take the quest and complete it.

[Retrieving the Goods] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Dodothi’s goods have been robbed by a bunch of daredevil Jackalmen! Warrior! Go and slay the devious Jackalmen and get back their stolen booty!

Completion: Retrieve Dodothi Wildhammer’s Goods 0/1

Translator Note:

(1): Apparently, there’s a Chinese culture saying that after the first night in bed, a woman would become more beautiful, and after getting pregnant, she would be seen even prettier. In this case, it was not mentioned whether or not Han Ying Xue is pregnant.

Chapter 511: The God of War

Transformation

After accepting the quest, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and flew along with Felice to the place, called Jackalmen's Ridge.

The ridge was too short to be called a ridge, to begin with. It was close to only 200 to 300 meters in length. Due to the thick, blackened clouds in the sky, Whitey Jr. was unable to get much altitude and only flew about 10 or more meters over the ground. At this altitude, the monsters in the ground were capable of attacking with their ranged attacks. Zhang Yang had no idea where the goods were and felt that kiting so many monsters would be a bad idea. Still, it was a good chance for Zhang Yang to grind some levels. Since they could not fly up high, Zhang Yang decided to walk on foot and hike the mountain with Felice.

"Ayyheeheehee! Fresh meat!" The laughter of a Jackalman could be heard not far. Zhang Yang traced the voice and saw the source of the annoying laughter. It was a male Jackalman, wearing only a pair of short red leather pants, equipped with a short yet sharp dagger. He was similar to the height of a grey wolf rearing up on its hind legs. The Jackalman was laughing hysterically, saliva dripping from his fangs.

[Hysterical Jackalman] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 17,800

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,103-6,103

Skills:

[Stab]: Plunges the blade into a target and deals 150% melee damage.

[Pebble Throw]: Hurls a rock towards the target, dealing 100% melee damage. Range: 3 – 30 meters.

Note: Legend has it that a certain Werewolf had once forced itself upon

a female Jackal beast, creating a generation of humanoid, savage, and cruel Jackalmen, capable of sentient, conscious thinking.

Zhang Yang leaped forth and laid down the first attack, dealing more than 6,000 damage. His attacks had been boosted by the passive skill obtained from the God of War Inheritance.

Oh well, 6,000 damage was pretty decent. Since it was dealt by a One-Handed Weapon, the damage output from a Two-Handed Weapon would definitely be greater!

Felice had decided the situation did not require her to be in Dragonhawk form. She leaped over Zhang Yang's shoulders before he had even reset his stance and cut the Jackalman down, killing him immediately with a single strike that dealt 17,567 damage.

Since he had time to spare, Zhang Yang summoned the Herb Foraging Familiar and allowed the little critter to forage the rare herbs around the area. Zhang Yang and Felice then moved forward, effortlessly killing their way through the normal tiered Jackalmen.

Not long after the first kill, the number of scattered monsters got lesser and lesser. Now all that remained were the small clumps of groups made up of 10 or so monsters.

Even though Zhang Yang had lost the OP healing skill - {Berserker's Heal}, Zhang Yang's passive damage reduction and absorption were still present. For Zhang Yang, 10 or more normal tiered Jackalmen were nothing but food for him.

After hiking halfway up to the peak, the monsters started getting stronger. The monsters around were all elite tiered.

[Jackalman Captain] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1,200,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,532-10,352

Skills:

[Bloodlust Shriek]: Screams with a high-pitched cry, grants a 20% increase to attack power of all allies 10 meters around.

[Gust Slash]: Cleaves a target and deals 100% melee attack. Has a 40% chance to land 2 hits, 30% chance to land 3 hits, 20% chance to land 4 hits, and 10% chance to land 5 hits.

Zhang Yang was surprised to see the skill {Gush Slash} on a monster. It was a skill that a player may have by finding the corresponding skill book. Perhaps, there would be a chance for the Jackalman Captain to drop him one.

"Fresh meat?! Marvelous!" laughed the Jackalman Captain as he salivated and lunged at Zhang Yang with his blade.

Zhang Yang could not help but think that all Jackalman were embodiments of gluttony! Ever since his first Jackalman encounter, all of them had the same lolling tongues, the same puddle of saliva around their feet.

After a short round of exchanging blows, the monsters were all wiped out.

"Wow~ Big brother! You're so strong now!" Felice clapped her hands while admiring Zhang Yang with her wide, beautiful eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted the little girl's head. He felt a little touched and happy to see her earnest reaction.

The duo proceeded on and had found more monsters. Perhaps, a little more than there should be. No wonder the monsters here were so hungry! Food was scarce and there were too many mouths to feed.

Since there were no guides or clues on where Dodothi's goods had been taken to, Zhang Yang had to travel around the entire mountain ridge. After roaming around, killing more and more Jackalmen, he arrived at a small encampment. The camp was filled with plenty of wooden sheds that were crudely built, only to provide roofs to sleep under. There were many sheds around, and if one shed was built for one Jackalman, there should

be roughly 300 to 400 Jackalmen around.

The problem was that the Jackalmen here were all elite tier, and if he simply barges in, he would be swarmed up by them. It would be a fatal mistake, but if he had activated the God of War Transformation, it would be an easy kill. His Defense would be as high as 10,000, which could completely suppress the attack of the Jackalmen. He could then use {Crushing Strike} to mass kill all of them. With Felice's {Pulverizing Flame}, both of them would clear all the monsters within 2 hours which was how long the transformation would last.

Still, to use the transformation skill just to kill elite monsters would be a waste. The 72 hours long cooldown skill was meant for super bosses! Without {Berserker's Heal}, Zhang Yang had lost a powerful recovery skill. He could no longer fight a boss alone and would have to rely on the God of War Transformation.

Zhang Yang had Felice transform into her Dragonhawk form to observe the area from the sky. After a while, she came back from her scouting and reported, "Big brother, there is a merchant's wagon to the west of here!"

"Oh yes! That's a good girl, Felice!" Zhang Yang praised her and patted her head again. Apparently, the little girl loved getting patted on the head. She blushed a little and smiled bashfully, averting her gaze.

Now that he had a clear direction to travel, Zhang Yang, Felice, the Whitey Jr flew towards the west of the encampment, killing their way effortlessly.

After close to 1 hour, Zhang Yang saw the silhouette of the wagon. The wagon was filled with goods, covered with a piece of huge canvas. The wagon was left abandoned there without any signs of horses nearby. Then again, it was expected to be, since the Jackalmen were salivating like deranged perverts looking at a naked woman. It would have been even odder if the horses were still left alive.

As Zhang Yang got closer to the wagon and spotted guards surrounding the wagon. Those sentries were far stronger than the regular elites. Other than the 12 elite monsters, there was one, larger figure that clearly was a

Violet-Platinum tier boss. It was twice as big and taller than the elite Jackalmen, which made it stand out from afar.

[Chiraha, King of Jackalmen] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 18,739 – 20,739

Skills:

[Bloodlust Shriek]: Scream with a high-pitched cry, increases 30% attack power of all allies 10 meters around it.

[Gust Slash]: Cleaves a target and deals 100% melee attack. Has a 40% chance to land 2 hits, 30% chance to land 3 hits, 20% chance to land 4 hits, and 10% chance to land 5 hits.

The boss' skills were similar to that of an elite Jackalman. The only difference was the [Bloodlust Shriek] which had 10% bonus attack damage. Another troubling skill was the {Gust Slash}. There were no fixed attack hits in the first place. If the boss manages to trigger 5 hits, it would be an instant death, since each hit would deal over 20,000 damage!

Without {Berserker's Heal}, Zhang Yang has lost the path of the lone killer. Just as he thought of summoning Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, a sudden urge to use the God of War Transformation popped up. It would have been a waste to do so earlier on, as there were only elite monsters about. But now, he had a boss to kill. Might as well use it, just to try it out.

{God of War Transformation}!

Shush! Shush! Shing!

A radiant light started beaming out of Zhang Yang's body. The light then enveloped his character, and a pair of glowing wings burst out from his back. Upon a single mental command, Zhang Yang flapped his newfound wings and flew upwards.

Beneath the Rage gauge, another gauge appeared, with a similar MAXIMUM of 100 points. Since it would take 10 seconds to gain 1 point, the gauge was still empty at that moment.

"Mm. Felice! Let's start the bloodbath! Hah!" Zhang Yang bellowed with great power and charged at the boss. His maximum HP was at 3,780,000, allowing him to fight the boss head on!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-27,234!’

A short light beam struck the boss, dealing great damage. The boss cried in agony, forcing him to let out a deafening battle cry. All 13 Jackalmen let out a shriek, followed by the sounds of their sword flying out of their scabbards.

"Hmph!"

Zhang Yang grunted as he charged at the boss.

With an unstoppable force pushing him forward, Zhang Yang crashed into the boss, cleaving him for 26,321 damage.

A fresh stream of blood was released into the air as Zhang Yang gracefully planted a clean cleave.

"Food! Bad food! Bastard!" cried Chiraha as it retaliated with its gigantic cleaver.

{Block}!

‘-7,419’ {Block} reflect damage.

D*mn. Even {Block's} reflect damage was truly massive.

Zhang Yang laughed and raised his shield up, bashing the beast on his head with {Shield Bash}.

Pang!

‘-33,393!’

"Fresh meat!"

The other 12 elite Jackalmen were all oblivious to Zhang Yang's current power level and charged towards him, still thinking that they could kill and eat him.

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

‘-4,218!’

Other than the boss, the other 12 monsters were not even able to deal 1 damage to him! With 11,600 Defense points, the elite monsters were completely powerless. Only the boss was able to scratch at Zhang Yang a little.

As expected of an S class Inheritance! It's powerful!

Zhang Yang chuckled and blasted out a {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-56,921!’

‘-53,478!’

‘-112,198!’

...

A sea of 50,000 damage texts popped out, with a few 100,000 critical strike hits. That alone showed the extreme prowess of the God of War Transformation skill.

It was literally a bloodbath. Fresh blood turned the air around them misty red. Felice did not falter, she morphed into her Dragonhawk form and attack continuously. Every time the skill {Pulverizing Flame} was ready to be used, she would immediately use it, spreading a sea of flames that would burn everything to ash!

30 seconds into the fight, Zhang Yang finally gathered 3 God of War EP (1) and used {God of War Crushing Strike}!

Zhang Yang shot down from the sky like a meteor and pummeled the

earth with his fist. Instantly, a crater measuring over 100 meters wide in radius formed around him. Cracks spread out, and the light started to burst out through the cracks. Any target within the skill range received 13,320 damage.

Translator Note:

(1) EP – Energy Points.

Chapter 512: Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang

In terms of individual damage, {Crushing Strike} was far weaker than {Horizontal Sweep}.

However, the attack range of the skill was ginormous! The skill's effective range was as large as 100 meters around Zhang Yang. Be it the boss, or his 12 little brothers, the attack had even managed to attack the monsters who were resting in the wooden sheds of the encampment! Rudely interrupted, the Jackalmen had rushed out of their wooden sheds to attack Zhang Yang.

In his transformed form, these new arrivals were like ants to him. All it would take is just a simple punch to kill them all! He did not even need to move around, adjust angles, or lift a foot! With his now boosted armor, be it a hundred or a thousand, he would not lose a single drop of health!

Such an awesome feeling!

Back before he had the Inheritance, Zhang Yang could already fight a boss alone. But that was when he was weaker and had to remain extremely cautious of his every move, his HP, the boss' attack, his skills, and all of the tiny details that would endanger his life! If he had made any small mistakes, any at all, he could have been killed and waste hours of his time!

Right then, after obtaining the God of War Transformation skill, Zhang Yang was like a lion entering a farm, slaying and eating any poor life stock at will! The feeling of awesomeness was not something you can get by any normal means! But, isn't that what playing games were for? Furthermore, Zhang Yang's God of War Transformation was like a hack program! A god mode hack that was obtained after hours of hard work! It was a special kind of pleasure that only Zhang Yang could feel!

At the corner of his AoE, a single Jackalman was still staggering about with only 20% HP, Zhang Yang targeted him and used a {Killing Cleave}

while at full Rage points.

‘-327,865!’

Oh f*ck.

Zhang Yang himself was astonished by his own attack. He quickly opened the battle log and found that the attack was a Lucky strike that had multiplied his normal attack by 3 times, dealing more than 300,000!

His Luck attribute points then were 22 points, granting him a 2.2% chance of dealing a Lucky strike. On average, it would take 50 attacks to deal one Lucky strike. That sort of proc rate was strong! After all, it could dish out 300% the original power. Furthermore, it could be stacked with a Critical strike, dealing 600% power!

When the day comes when he could finally equip [Agos, the Destroyer’s Blade] that had a damage boost passive, the chance to proc the blade’s active skill, coupled with the 600% Critical and Lucky strike damage boost would be earth shaking! However, the chances of that happening would be the same as winning the Power Ball!

The battle continued on with Zhang Yang’s test run of AoE attack skills. With the God of War transformation granting Zhang Yang a 500% damage boost, it would be more sensible for him to use AoE skills. It was a pity that only {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} could trigger the copied effect of the Sword of Purging Devourer. Still, it was good enough for him to blast all the monsters to kingdom come.

If players had not paid attention to the monster’s properties, they might have assumed that Zhang Yang was just equipping a pair of wings that could grant him flight, battling normal tiered monsters. That would be more feasible, for, under normal circumstances, there was no way any player would wipe out monsters like weeds in a field!

Just 5 minutes after Zhang Yang had started the fight, the boss was now left with 3% HP. Zhang Yang laid down his final sword swing and killed the boss.

"Fre—sh Me---at—" said the boss as a last parting speech, leaving the

world with a smile on its face.

Perhaps, the boss had shared the same jubilant emotion that Zhang Yang had felt, that was way too much fun!

Right then, in the God of War transformation form, a Violet-Platinum boss was not even worth fighting anymore. For Zhang Yang to feel any bit of challenge, he would have to fight a Mythical tier boss! Perhaps, only an Ethereal boss would give him a real sense of danger! Sadly, after using the God of War Transformation for only 6 minutes, he had already killed the boss. The rest of its active time was a complete waste!

Zhang Yang then gathered all the boss drops and headed to the wagon. With a single touch, Zhang Yang was shocked to find that he had taken the entire wagon into his inventory! Zhang Yang felt a little weirded out. What was his inventory made off? A super high-tech 5th-dimensional pocket that could fit in futuristic gadgets? Zhang Yang opened his quest log and found that he had completed the requirements for finishing the quest. All that was left to do was to return to Dodothi and obtain his reward.

But then again, now that he had already activated the God of War Transformation, he might as well use it to its full extent! Zhang Yang flapped his own wings and shot towards the sky. He then proceeded to circle around the mountain and killed every last Jackalman that he could find in the map and collected a large sum of experience points.

Even though he did gain a massive boost of attack power, it was merely 500%. It was not as if he could slay the heavens and conquer hell. After clearing roughly 20% of all the monsters in the Ridge, the God of War Transformation ended. The power left Zhang Yang with a bright glow, and Zhang Yang reverted back to his normal form. At the same time, Zhang Yang had gained a level and reached Level 104.

Zhang Yang rode Whitey Jr. back to Royas Town. Along the way, Zhang Yang took his time to examine the loot that he had obtained from the boss. He had obtained a pair of Violet-Platinum Leather boots, a Yellow-Gold Cloth hat, and a pair of Yellow-Gold gauntlets. Besides that, the boss

had also dropped a skill book. A skill book that Zhang Yang could really make use of – {Indiscriminate}!

{Indiscriminate} was a Berserker-only class skill that would turn all attacks into critical strikes for 10 seconds. Zhang Yang could not learn the skill before, but now he could, since the God of War Inheritance had given Zhang Yang access to both Berserker's and Guardian's skills, though the only way he could learn additional skills would be via skill books.

[Indiscriminate]: Upon activation, all attacks with your weapon will be a critical strike. Lasts for 10 seconds and can only be used on a target with HP less than 20%. Cooldown: 60 minutes.

The skill was perfect but there was one flaw, and that was the weapon requirement. Skills like {Thunder Strike} and {Dance of Heaven and Earth} would not be affected by {Indiscriminate}.

With haste, Whitey Jr. flew to Royas and landed close to the entrance. Zhang Yang walked the remaining distance and reached the sighing dwarf.

"Dwarf!" cried Zhang Yang as he stood in front of Dodothi.

"Tsk. I hate those who are taller than I am!" said Dodothi with dissatisfaction in his voice. "Call me Mr. Dodothi or Lord Dodothi from now on!"

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly and said, "Taller than you? In that case, I think you will be hating 90% of the world's population! Hmph. I have brought you the wagon that you lost."

Zhang Yang opened his inventory and tapped on the icon. Like magic, the wagon expanded and miraculously returned to its original size.

"Hahaha! Wonderful! Splendid! Woohoo! My money! My gold!" Dodothi jumped around happily as he patted and examines the goods beneath the canvas. After some time of celebrating all by himself, he coughed a little when he noticed that Zhang Yang was still there, patiently waiting.

"Alright then. Warrior, you have proven yourself to be useful. Here, just as promised."

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Retrieving the Goods. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained a reward: 10 gold coins!’

10 gold coins? The NPC had agreed to pay Zhang Yang 100! As usual, all dwarves cannot be trusted with anything! They are all natural-born liars! But then again, the race was too bipolar in a way that if they were honest, they would be too gullible and could be cheated by a pig! If they are the lying types, they could lie to the Death God and have him grant them immortality!

"Hey! Dwarf! Didn't you promise 100 gold coins?!" cried Felice in a straightforward manner. She was not the kind that would tolerate swindlers. She held up her lance and pointed it at him, her intentions to kill as clear as day.

Dodothi was greatly surprised and cowered behind Zhang Yang. "Control your slave, Warrior!" He had left out the 100 gold coins topic.

Zhang Yang wanted to strangle the f*cker, but instead, he drew a deep breath and consoled Felice by patting her head. Only then, did she lower her lance.

"Warrior, how about another job?" asked Dodothi vehemently.

Zhang Yang sighed. "Sure, let's hear it!"

"In the mountainous regions, there is a mythical item known as the Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang. Fortunately, I have the location of it! Unfortunately, it's guarded by a bloody monkey! Warrior, if you can help me get the fruit from him, I will give you 100 gold coins!"

‘Ding! Dodothi Wildhammer has a quest for you: The Search for the Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang. Will you accept it?’

Accept! But not for the sake of Dodothi of course! When Zhang Yang acquires the fruit, he would just run off to Margery to unseal the sword! There was no good reason for him to return to Dodothi!

When Zhang Yang nodded his head, the dwarf sensed that something

was off and quickly added, "Hey, don't be having any funny ideas there, warrior! The Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang is worthless to anyone. Even if you try to sell it off, it would only be worth less than a copper! I simply want to have it added to own personal collection!"

Haha! What a sucky liar!

Zhang Yang flew off into the sky without any further conversation. Based on the quest's description, the [Magic Fruit of Ying and Yang] should be at the western area of the ridge. There should be a waterfall there and a powerful boss. Based on what Dodothi had told him, it should be the Monkey King.

With speed matching that of an airplane, Whitey Jr. reached the western side of the ridge and found a large waterfall. There, Zhang Yang rode Whitey Jr. and searched thoroughly for anything that resembled the fruit. However, since he had no idea on what the fruit might look like, he decided to search for the boss instead. As long as he finds the boss, he should be able to find the fruit, since it should be closer to where the boss was.

Zhang Yang descended down further, and by the time he was close to the bottom, he found the boss. It was a giant monkey with a full coat of golden fur. It was as tall as two men and was pacing around on a flat plane of rock. He had a pair of golden, fiery eyes and was glaring at anything that moved. He had a large pole in his hands that he swung about absentmindedly. Perhaps, if he did not possess a pair of large wings behind his back, he could have posed as the great Chinese saint, Sun Wu Kong!

[Winged Monkey King Chakra] (Ethereal, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 37,500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 30,157 – 34,157

Skills:

[Cloud Piercer]: Strikes the head of a target for 150% melee physical damage, stunning the target for 5 seconds.

[Radiant Eyes of the Clairvoyant]: Spots the weak points of the target and strikes it with the might of the earth. Deals 300% melee physical damage. Attack cannot be dodged or blocked. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Thunder Summoning Jutsu]: Summons a nimbus cloud that will strike the target and anyone else 10 meters around the initial target for 40,000 Natural damage.

Special: Capable of flight.

With such a strong weapon attack, Zhang Yang feared that he might not be able to survive without the help of the God of War Transformation. Even then, he was without the {Berserker's Heal}. With {Shield Wall} and {Last Vigor}, he might. But the two skills were not as powerful as {Berserker's Heal}. {Shield Wall} had 2.5 minutes of cooldown, while {Last Vigor} had 5 minutes. It was not possible for him to cycle through the skills.

As a conclusion, it was impossible for Zhang Yang to fight him alone. He had to call Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to help out.

"AIYAYA! Noob tank! Help us! Use the party order now, quick!"

"DUMMY! THERE'S SOMEONE TRYING TO KILL US! HURRY UP AND SUMMON US!"

Just when Zhang Yang had taken out the [Party Summon Order], both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were crying out hysterically for his help. Without wasting another second, Zhang Yang activated the order and the two of them were teleported to his side. They had only less than 30% HP left.

Worriedly, Zhang Yang frowned. "What's going on?"

"There's a party searching for the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments. They tracked us down and wanted to kill us. There were six of them! We had to call for your help!" said Han Ying Xue, with a shocked expression on her face

Zhang Yang did not understand why and how that could have happened. He was sure that no one else had managed to get hold of the S class Inheritance in his previous lifetime.

But...then again...it might be...

Since the name Milkmaid Deity was a little weird for an S class inheritance, the players who had obtained the inheritance might have refused to share any information about the inheritance. However, based on the timing, this would be around the same time when the first S class Inheritance surfaced in his previous life!

"Who are they?"

"I think they were all one big family or friends or some sort. All of them had the name "Hell" in their name tags. Hell's Knight, Hell's Warrior, Hell's Hunter... all in all, there were 6 classes in total!" said Han Ying Xue as she shrugged. "All of them were well-equipped and two of them had Battle Companions!"

Zhang Yang chuckled. "If there were only 6 of them, you should have put on the Lover's Charm and summoned me there! Since they had the S class Inheritance Fragment, we could have killed them and obtained the fragments! It's a Unique item that only one player could acquire!"

Han Ying Xue calmed down and smiled seductively. "Mm. Mm. We were already being beaten around like dogs! We were almost killed there! How could I have thought of a counterattack? That's said, it was 6 v 3! I don't want to lose the 5th Fragment!"

Zhang Yang then thought over it for a while and said, "Well then, in that case, I want you to stop searching for the rest of the Fragments. It does not matter if you're missing a piece or five pieces. We could wait until they hunt for all the pieces and come for you! By then, we will be the ones killing them! And taking their loot! Like killing a boss! Haha!"

"Woah~~ Noobie tank! You're such a scoundrel! I can't say I don't like the sound of that!" Wei Yan Er laughed manically.

Chapter 513: Winged Monkey King

Chakra

"Enough with that. I intended to call you here for a boss anyway!" said Zhang Yang as he pointed at the direction of the golden monkey. "That's him!".

"Eh!? That's... That's a Mythical tier boss!" the two females gasped.

After the Chaos Realm threshold, many of bosses that they had encountered were mostly Violet-Platinum. The only Mythical boss ever encountered was the black dragon that Zhang Yang had killed. None of the ladies had ever seen any Mythical tier boss.

"Dummy...Can you really hold up against that?" said Han Ying Xue with a bit of concern.

There was a reason behind her sudden doubt. Usually, Han Ying Xue would never have doubted Zhang Yang's capability, even when only the two of them were present. The reason was that Han Ying Xue's healing powers were nerfed by at least 1/3. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had already lost the super-OP healing skill {Berserker's Heal}. Also, none of them had upgraded their equipment. There's little to no hope of defeating this powerful boss with just the three of them.

Zhang Yang chuckled and gave Han Ying Xue an evil grin, saying, "You should know better! It's not like you haven't seen my power, it even has a copious amount of agility and endurance thrown into the mix."

Han Ying Xue was a naïve woman, though not to the level of the little brat. However, she knew very well what he was talking about, having tasted the brutal strength of his shaft. Plus, she was the kind of beauty that men would die for, the kind of woman would never be ashamed of public displays of affection. When she made sure that Zhang Yang was looking, she licked her lips seductively and said, "Honey~ I want more!"

Zhang Yang coughed violently when he heard that. Last night, he was nearly driven to a point of no return by the women, one was drunk, and

the other was trying to make a statement. After the "merry" night, Zhang Yang was traumatized. Every time he heard the word, "one more time", or "Again!" he would twitch.

"Sis...Noobie tank...What are you guys chattering about!?" groaned the little girl as she was bored and annoyed at losing in the scissor, paper, stone game with Felice. While Felice was getting more cheerful with each passing moment, the little girl was left sulking.

"It's nothing. Kids shouldn't meddle with the affairs of adults!" Zhang Yang snapped. Zhang Yang had lost his composure for a minute there and had to regather himself for a while before getting ready for the boss.

"Let's go. Don't stay too close to me. Or each other, for that matter. The cloud summoning skill is an AoE. Remember to get away from me when he uses the skill. Especially you! Stupid little girl!"

"Tsk! Please. You reek of sweat! I won't get near you even if you ask me to!" Wei Yan Er scoffed.

Felice, on the other hand, was the epitome of what you could call as an innocent little girl. She quickly interrupted the conversation and defended Zhang Yang, "Big brother does not reek of sweat! You cannot insult big brother so callously!"

Zhang Yang laughed and patted Felice's head. "Keep calm, little Felice. The little girl is being a little girl. She has yet to be a mature woman. Leave the little rascal be."

"Okay!" Felice blushed.

"KYAAAA!" Wei Yan Er was furious. Just before she was about to vent her anger on Zhang Yang, he had left to start the fight while atop Whitey Jr.'s back. The red hot chilli pepper then ran towards the boss and unleashed her anger there instead.

"Ki! Ki! Wu Wu! Ak Ak!"

When the large monkey noticed Zhang Yang approaching him, he brandished his long pole. With one decisive swing into the air, he entered his battle stance, the sheer momentum of which had created a distortion

in the air around them and blew off many dried leaves off their branches.

"KI!" The monkey jumped towards Zhang Yang, attempting to smash him on the head. Naturally, Zhang Yang's first action was to block the attack. Both of them were midair, hence, when the monkey's pole struck Zhang Yang's metal shield, the power had smashed Zhang Yang and the flying serpent down from the sky like a meteor, creating a crater after they landed on the ground.

"Owphh!" Zhang Yang coughed out a mouthful of blood and spit them away. Bosses would never intentionally use Supporting Attacks, the sheer force of the blow had coincidentally resulted in a Supporting Attack. That was how the discovery of Supporting Attack was stumbled upon in the first place. There was once when a player found himself being beaten to a pulp by the boss, but did not receive additional HP damage. After the player tried it out himself and further developed the attacks, thus granting fame as the founder of Supporting Attacks.

Zhang Yang got up to his feet and picked up his fallen shield and sword. He is a tank. No matter what the situation or scenario is, he would have to be quick. Especially when he has to be the first person on the aggro list! If he failed to do so, the little girl would die at the hands of the boss. The little girl had taken his solid, consistent performance for granted. She would always rush into fights without waiting for Zhang Yang. Then again, Zhang Yang had never failed to draw the boss' attention.

‘-1,439!’

Zhang Yang landed a {Cripple Defense} before anything else. This was especially important since the boss had 5,200 Defense. If he had not, Wei Yan Er attacks would only cause less than 50% of her original attack despite wielding a Two-Handed Axe. Unlike others, Wei Yan Er was particularly good at syncing with Zhang Yang at this particular stage of the battle. Zhang Yang would land the first {Cripple Defense} while she would land the next one. After a few well-timed cycle when the two of them took turns swinging, five layers of {Cripple Defense} would be applied to the boss in less than 2 to 3 seconds. Right then, the boss would be left with 2,600 Defense. For Zhang Yang, the boss was practically

naked, since he had his {Eagle Eye}.

Zhang Yang landed a clean hit and dealt 6,682 damage. Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er blinked in surprise at that. No matter how many times they've heard of the prowess of the God of War Inheritance, this was the first time they've seen it firsthand.

Wei Yan Er cried out, "Woah! Noob tank! I can only deal around 8,000 damage per hit! Don't think that I'll stop calling you a noob tank!"

Zhang Yang laughed, "Call me anything you want. I had but only a 50% increase in attack via a passive skill. The one you should be paying attention to is Felice. Take a look."

Felice was not paying attention to their conversation and was busy conjuring {Fire Missiles} to blast the boss. Her attacks would always be above 20,000 damage as long as the target has no Fire resistance.

The poor Wei Yan Er was greatly saddened when she had noticed that Felice's attacks were so many times stronger than hers. In the party, Wei Yan Er's position was shaky, being first, second, and the third place. When compared to individual strikes, Wei Yan Er's damage should be the highest, since she was wielding a Two-Handed Axe. She had always taken pride in having the strongest hits per strike. She immediately got jealous when she saw that Felice's attack could reach up to 20,000 damage with each fire blast.

"Grr! Now I see. You can be so strong if you change sexes! Noob tank! I want an Inheritance too! I want to change too!"

Zhang Yang could not help but frown.

"Right now, I have two Inheritance Fragments with me. There's a B class Vampire Inheritance and a random one, called the Monk of Flame."

Wei Yan Er sulked. "Stingy! You're being stingy! How could you hand me B class Inheritances! I'm your little sister-in-law! I've heard people saying that a man owns half of his sister-in-law! That means I am half your woman! Hah! How could you be stingy with your own woman! If you can't get me an S class, get me an A class!"

Zhang Yang cringed so hard that he became distracted from the fight. Luckily, Felice was still blasting on and on so, that the boss could not shift its target to Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er. While Zhang Yang was thinking hard on how to fix Wei Yan Er's deranged thinking, Han Ying Xue was already rolling on the floor, laughing her *ss off. Only Wei Yan Er cocked her head, confused at her cousin's mad laughter. Zhang Yang gave up and decided to leave it at that.

"Focus on the fight, please!" said Zhang Yang.

Just when Zhang Yang turned back to the boss, the pole struck his head hard, glowing with a golden light. Zhang Yang immediately knew that the attack was a skill.

{Cloud Piercer}!

‘-25,056!’

Zhang Yang would have instantaneously raised his shield to block the attack, but his skill was on cooldown. It would be useless to use the shield to block an attack without {Block} in effect. However, it could still be used to protect oneself from being smashed till one's head bleeds. That, or to prevent the attack from destroying a player's throat, which would prevent the player from consuming any potions!

Han Ying Xue quickly cast a series of healing skills on Zhang Yang and patted her chest in relief. "Hmph...Silly Yu, lucky for you that you have the extra 20% damage reduction skill or else I could have really lost you there!"

Zhang Yang nodded in agreement. While healers were being nerf greatly, the boss' prowess had been left untouched. Naturally, the healers would be in tight spot. If Zhang Yang had not obtained the God of War as his Inheritance, he would not have gained the 20% additional damage reduction passive which would give Han Ying Xue serious trouble. It would be useless even if she had unlimited MP, since the HP lost does not match the HP gain.

Technically, if he had not obtained the Inheritance in the first place, the update would have never happened! {Berserker's Heal}, and other healing

skills would not have been nerfed. Still, it was only a matter of time before other players obtain any other form of Inheritances.

The monkey king's attack was as ferocious as a storm and as fast as lighting. Each swing of his metal pole would send blades of wind out that would slice through trees, raising up a cloud of dust and booms and flying birds in the nearby surroundings. Even the waterfall seemed to defy gravity at that moment!

"Noob tank. Don't you have the skill {Beast Taming}? Try and catch this boss as a pet! Haha! Or perhaps even a disciple! You can name him Sun and you would be Tang the monk! Mm. Whitey Jr could be Bailong! Haha!" said Wei Yan Er. It's truly a mystery to how the little girl thinks. She could just cough out random gibberish during an intense fight!

Still, Zhang Yang was amused. "If I were to be Tang the monk, both of you could be Zhu Bajie and Sha Wujing! Fu fu! Little girl, you can be Zhu Bajie then!"

"That's awesome!" cried the little girl happily. With a straight face, she said, "I've always wanted to sleep and eat all the long! A lazy life is what I want!"

Zhang Yang frowned at the unexpected answer. "Isn't that your current lifestyle?"

Wei Yan Er straightened up suddenly and fell silent, her face flushed with vermillion the color of carnal shame!

Zhang Yang smirked, "Then again, if I were to become a Tang the monk, someone would be greatly aggravated."

"Tsk!" Han Ying Xue self-consciously replied, "Don't think that a woman needs a man to do it."

"Ou?" the monkey king noticed that the three players were not being serious with the fight and got irritated. With a loud cry, his golden eyes flared up with flames and blasted two light beams at Zhang Yang.

The light rays made contact with Zhang Yang but did not deal any damage. On the other hand, there was a progress bar appearing on top of

the boss' character. 2 seconds was all it would take to complete his skill.

It was the {Radiant Eyes of the Clairvoyant}! A 300% damage skill!

Zhang Yang rushed to it and dealt {Frost Strike}.

'-13,289!'

'Resist!'

The boss had taken damage, but had resisted the freeze effect! The progress bar was still filling up!

Felice then shot down to the ground and morphed back to her human form. She thrust out her lance and used {Dragon Spear Barrage}!

'-24,586!'

Unfortunately, the {Dragon's Spear Barrage} stunning rate was too low, and even if the skill had proc-ed, the boss would still have resisted it. After all, their target was an Mythical tier boss! The strongest boss that they had ever fought in the map!

With no options left on the table, Zhang Yang braced himself to take the hit.

Noticing the situation, Han Ying Xue quickly cast {Holy Shield} on Zhang Yang. The skill could not heal, hence, it had not been nerfed. It could absorb damage equivalent to 200% of the caster's Magic Attack. Han Ying Xue's magic attack at that moment was 6,687, so the shield could absorb 13,000 damage!

However, even though the skill effect was not nerfed, the cooldown had been made longer by 60 seconds. It was still a form of degradation!

Zhang Yang still had over 70,000 HP. He then decided not to activate {Shield Wall}. Since he had {Holy Shield} in effect, the incoming attack would have only caused him to lose most, but not all of his HP. It was more than enough.

Chapter 514: Battle Against the Winged Monkey

‘-40512!’

The Winged Monkey had completed the chanting for the {Radiant Eyes of the Clairvoyant}! The quarterstaff of the Winged Monkey King swung towards the chest of Zhang Yang at lightning speed, as it struck him in the middle of his chest, causing some damage. If it wasn't for the {Holy Shield} that had been cast him earlier on, this strike would have inflicted Zhang Yang with more than 50,000 damage!

That was not all. The impact of this swing was so freaking powerful that it sent Zhang Yang flying, along with Whitey Jr. who was beneath him, tens of meters back!

Zhang Yang could taste his own blood in his throat as a small amount of blood was forced out from his mouth! If he had hurriedly attempted to gulp down a [Healing Potion] at that moment, he would have spat the [Healing Potion] out from his mouth, together with his blood. That would have wasted one bottle of [Healing Potion] and one chance for taking a [Potion]!

"Ga Ga!" the Winged Monkey King was pleased with itself. It let out a series of bawls and squalls before it began to launch its attacks again. With the wings on its back opened wide, the Winged Monkey King launched itself through the air, straight at Zhang Yang! The boss raised its metallic quarterstaff and attempted to crack Zhang Yang's skull open!

What the hell!

Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield to block that attack! The impact was really heavy, and Zhang Yang was once again sent flying!

Wei Yan Er laughed heartlessly when she saw Zhang Yang's pathetic floundering. She furrowed her alluring eyebrows and said, "Hey, wild monkey! Where did you get a stick like that?"

Zhang Yang also frowned as he said, "Yeah, why didn't you ask the boss

why is it not wearing any pants and showing off those red buttocks? Why didn't you ask the boss about the secret treasures it has hidden in the area?"

"Oh right! Where does the monster keep the money? Well, if we know the whereabouts of the money, we can just take the money and run, without having to fight it! Just take, and go!" the little brat had completely failed to detect Zhang Yang's sarcasm.

Zhang Yang could not help but to frown again as he lost his smile. He thought about asking Han Ying Xue to help him out. However, that witch is no better than the little brat. The two of them only had eyes for money!

As expected, birds of a feather flock together!

"Ji! Ji!" the Winged Monkey raised a hand and made a waving gesture. Instantly, a thundercloud appeared right on top of Wei Yan Er's head, and lightning was seen surging within the thundercloud! Without any warning, a blinding thunderbolt struck down upon Wei Yan Er, splat on the top of her head.

"Argh ---" Wei Yan Er let out a miserable scream as she took a damage of 40,000 points. She was now a humongous, walking piece of coal. Only her shiny eyes remained distinguishable!

That was the super Skill - {Thunder Summoning Jutsu} of the boss, the skill that strikes the target and all enemies within 10 meters of the target's surrounding with 40,000 Nature Damage! Fortunately for them, there were only three of them, and the size of the boss is massive. Even though Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er are both Melee Class players, but with one at the front of the boss while the other at the rear of the boss, the two of them could still manage to pull a 10-meter gap between themselves.

The little brat also has a Violet-Platinum [Flying Mount]. With her [Winged Tiger] and the effect of {Vitality Aura} that Zhang Yang provided, she had more than 130,000 HP. Her amount of HP was definitely comparable to Zhang Yang's total HP atop his Yellow-Gold [Flying Mount]! Therefore, although a total of 40,000 Nature Damage may seem high, it is still far away from being capable of killing off the little brat in

one hit.

After engaging the boss for a little while, Zhang Yang suddenly felt that there was something missing. So he quickly asked, "Wait a minute... Witchy Snow, where is your Battle Companion?"

"Ah!" Han Ying Xue seemed to just realize it as well, then she said, "That whiner tried to play dead when we were battling the hellish family, I've totally forgotten about him!"

She quickly summoned Messick out with a wave of her hand.

The moment that whiner appeared, he flashed her what he considered to be a charming smile, and stood right before Han Ying Xue. Then he began to speak, "My queen, there's no need to worry. Any enemy who intends to hurt you would have to step over my dead body!"

"You better get lost, then! Countless people have already stepped over your 'dead body'! So much for you protecting me!" Han Ying Xue commanded her [Red Gold Crab] through her mind and the [Red Gold Crab] extended one of its legs out and kicked Messick right into the battlefield.

What an unreliable tank! He would be the last to enter the battle and the first to leave. His {Play Dead} is so much more realistic than the {Fake Death} of the Hunters! Well, Zhang Yang had been there to witness its realism himself! Even he was tricked by the convincing appearance of his 'death'!

Although the party only had 3 players in it, with the support from their [Mounts] and Battle Companions, their total damage output was extremely powerful. Their DPS had already exceeded 40,000 damage! Even though the boss had an HP bar that comes near to a total of 40,000,000 HP, it would only take Zhang Yang and his party about 1,000 seconds to empty the entire HP bar out. 40,000,000 HP isn't that much, in the grand scale of things.

However, the Winged Monkey King is a Mythical Tier boss after all. Even though Zhang Yang had his Passive Damage Immunity increased by 20%, he was still having a tough time tanking against the boss! {Shield Wall},

{Last Vigor}, {Blood of Life}, [Potions]! He activated every single skill and consumed the [Potions] that were at his disposal! Zhang Yang did not even consider being thrifty about it! However, after he activated his {Rearm} once, he only managed to tank against the boss for another 10 minutes. Han Ying Xue could not keep up with the rate that Zhang Yang was losing his HP anymore!

After all, the Healer Class was hugely underpowered at the moment, and the equipment of Zhang Yang and his party were all one Tier lower than the Mythical Tier boss!

10 minutes later, the duration of the {God of War's Shield} was over. The Passive Damage Immunity of Zhang Yang was dropped by 20%, making the situation even worse for him!

Zhang Yang quickly asked for help, "Felice! Relief me for a little while!"

"Alright, big brother!" Felice was not hesitant and lazy like that whiner Messick. She immediately descended to the ground and transformed into her Humanoid Form, charging up to the boss. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang waited for the right timing before he activated his {Shadow of the Void} and disengaged himself from the battle with the boss. Then, he went aside and used his [Bandages] to recover his HP as soon as he was able to.

On the other hand, Felice activated her {Absolute Defense} as she began to tank against the boss, undaunted by its heavy blows.

Another 10 minutes passed, and the battle raged on. Although the attack of Zhang Yang was now a lot higher, it was simply not possible for him to regain the aggro within a mere 2-minutes! Even if he keeps Felice back to his Battle Companion Slot, Wei Yan Er would become the primary target of the boss. Zhang Yang would only be able to stay ahead of Han Ying Xue at most.

However, it is not impossible to take down the boss within such a short amount of time either. Zhang Yang has the {Glare of the Death God}. He could do some massive damage to the boss!

Time to slaughter!

With {Absolute Defense} activated, Felice did not require any healing attention at all. Han Ying Xue only had to give her a {Regeneration} to maintain Felice's HP bar at full state. Han Ying Xue could not help but to feel relieved and happy, "Silly Yu, when can you become as strong as Felice? Things will become easier for me!"

Zhang Yang could not help but to smile like a pervert as he said, "Am I not 'strong' enough for you?"

Han Ying Xue looked at Zhang Yang with a tender passion in her eyes as she suddenly thought of something, turning slightly red. She was most likely reliving the events of last night where she was 'strongly' subdued by Zhang Yang.

When the duration of {Absolute Defense} that Felice activated was left with 10 seconds remaining, the HP bar of the boss was finally reduced down to 20%!

Zhang Yang possessed the 'Slaughtering' Skill at the moment. So, he activated his {Indiscriminate} before he started throwing his assaults onto the boss aggressively. Within the next 10 seconds, every single hit from his weapon became a Critical Attack!

{Ragelust Slaughter}!

'-52,892!'

A high value of number appeared right above its head!

Wei Yan Er could not stand being a bystander, and neither was she willing to lose to Zhang Yang. She also activated her {Indiscriminate}, followed by her {Ragelust Slaughter}!

'-71,889!'

Because the little brat was using a two-handed weapon, even Zhang Yang's 50% additional increase in his attack was unable to make up for it! Especially when her attacks ignore Defense, she was unleashing the full potential of her two-handed weapon, in terms of Attack!

Furthermore, the equipment that Zhang Yang had on him was geared

for Defense, and all the [Gemstones] that he had placed into the sockets were [Vitality Gemstones]. So, his Strength was still far behind the Strength of Wei Yan Er. Other than that, the equipment set that boosted DpS also had an additional increase in their Damage Effect, based by percentages. That made the difference between Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er even larger!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-27,886!’

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-26,880!’

Because the Attack power of the boss was unimaginably high, Zhang Yang need not have to worry about having not enough Rage Points at his disposal. He could use his skills as much as he wanted to!

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}! {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had already gulped down their [Power Potions] in order to increase their damage output to the maximum!

In just a brief 10 seconds, the HP bar of the boss had dropped rapidly like an avalanche!

The {Absolute Defense} ended!

Felice did not transform into the Dragonhawk Form as she maintained in her Humanoid Form to tank against the boss head on. Although her Defense had reached up to 4,480, the Defense wasn’t really doing her any justice when she had to face the 30,000 normal damage of the boss. Each attack from the boss damaged Felice by about 25,000 points! Even Han Ying Xue was terrified by the amount of HP that she needed to heal back!

{Frost Strike}!

‘-12,333!’

After the boss took damage from the strike, the Winged Monkey King was suddenly frozen solid, as it entered a 10-second period of complete

immobility!

"Finally! Something really great has happened!" Han Ying Xue finally found a moment to breathe properly. She took advantage of the moment and healed Felice up as much as she could, while Felice used a [Bandage] to heal herself up as well. The priority of this little lady at the moment was not to increase damage output, but to stay alive!

"Ji! Ji ji ---" The Winged Monkey King broke out of the frost after 10 seconds. Then, the boss began to charge at Felice with its quarterstaff as it launched its assaults on her aggressively.

Even though Felice had about 130,000 HP, she still could not handle the unimaginably powerful Attack of the boss! Her HP was reducing rapidly from 100,000 to 80,000, then from 80,000 to 50,000... No matter how much Han Ying Xue tried to heal her up, she could not maintain the HP level of Felice, at all!

However, they managed to hold on for another 1 minute. The HP bar of the Winged Monkey King was reduced down to 12%!

{Glare of the Death God}!

A shroud of dark mist began to form into a dark skull, right above the head of the boss. The skull tore open its mouth wide as it began to reveal a terrifying and wretched smile! The mouth was so dark, that it looked like a black hole!

‘-375,000!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword across the body of the boss and triggered the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}! That took 1% of the boss's HP bar right off!

This Skill would affect stronger enemies better. The stronger the monsters are, the better the special effects of the Skill. This amount of damage was not just a merely 3,700, or even 37,000. It was a total of 370,000 damage that we are talking about here!

However, although the damage that this Skill could cause on the boss is terrifying, it did nothing to help Zhang Yang regain his aggro. The amount

of the boss's aggro on Zhang Yang only increased slightly. Well, after giving it some thoughts, it made sense as well. If anyone got so lucky that every single hit this person lands on the boss triggers the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}, surely the person would not be able to handle the boss after becoming the primary target of the boss, even if the person is a powerful Tanker!

‘-375,000!’

‘-375,000!’

...

In just mere 6 seconds, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was already triggered for 10 times, and the dark skull right above the boss's head disappeared right after the 10th occurrence. Now, the boss was left only with 2% HP!

"We can do this! Slay the boss!"

1%!

0%!

"Rawgh---" The Winged Monkey King let out a miserably scream right before it died. The massive body of the boss slammed down onto the ground. The metallic quarterstaff fell out of the hands of the boss and clanged onto the solid rock by its side. The clanging discharged some sparks across the surroundings.

This is actually the first Mythical boss that Zhang Yang and his party had slain with their own hands! At that moment, the three of them cheered together.

Chapter 515: Heaven Shaker

Zhang Yang scouted around the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang], while Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er went up to the loot dropped from the boss, full of joy and expectations.

The Winged Monkey King dropped four pieces of equipment in total. One was a pitch black, huge, metallic quarterstaff. One end of it was heavier than the other, ending in a huge, non-reflective crown, so it should work as a bludgeoning weapon, something like a maul, or a hammer. The second equipment was a pair of greaves that was also purely black in color, looking rather bulky. The third one was a fine piece of jewelry, an alluring, dark blue necklace that sparkled brilliantly, making itself look pricey. Last but not least, was an exquisite long gown in the color of creamy white.

Zhang Yang was still searching around for his fruit. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er picked up the gown and put it by herself, trying to see if it fit her, and she asked, "Snow, do I look pretty in this?"

"Not at all!" Han Ying Xue replied, so certain of herself, without any pause.

Zhang Yang overheard them and frowned in frustration. He turned his head back to them and snapped, "Oh please! You should judge it by its attributes!"

[Winged Phoenix Gown] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +857

Intelligence: +548

Spirit: +242

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 1,100 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 2%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Well, the equipment is fine, but it could only be worn after reaching Level 120. By then, they would definitely be loaded with Mythical Tier equipment already. This gown was not likely to be used in the future. However, Han Ying Xue took the gown, regardless of that. If they really are unfortunate enough not to have acquired any Mythical Tier Cloth Armor by then, at least she could still equip this gown.

The little brat picked up the heavy pair of greaves and laughed, "I have a feeling that this is mine! It should be!"

[Mysterious Metallic Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +1,778

Strength: +841

Agility: +363

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 3,500 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Absorbs 358 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Decreases 20 levels of Required Level to equip.

The attributes of this pair of greaves are truly something. The three of them were stunned for a moment!

"Noob tank, is this a Defensive type armor, or an Offensive type armor, then?" Wei Yan Er blinked her eyes and she asked, "We can't call this a defensive armor, what's with the damage increase attributes? And if we say that this is an Offensive type, it actually has a Damage Absorption attribute! What a confusing armor this is!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Let's just say that we have been fortunate enough to have picked up an awesome piece of armor! This piece of armor

enhances both DPS and Defense! It most probably would only drop on the first kill of a boss! So, the next time when others slay this boss again, the equipment that drops might only have DPS or Defense, one way or another!"

"Wow! There's actually such a good benefit for getting the first kill of a boss?" Wei Yan Er gave it some thought, then she threw the greaves over to Zhang Yang, "Alright, since you have not gotten yourself any offensive type armors, you should just keep it. I'll only want purely offensive armor!"

Well, what a pleasant surprise. This little brat is actually quite generous for once!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "This equipment is an awesome piece of equipment for both DPS and Tank players! Look at it this way. If you can ever gather a full set of this type of armor, you will become a DPS player that resemblance to a Defense of a tanker! When you fight in the arena with this type of armor, your opponent would definitely have a tough time battling you!

Wei Yan Er quickly covered her ears with her hands and said, "Stinky noob tank! If you try to draw me in, I am going to snatch those pants back!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he placed the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves] into his inventory. Well, the rate of triggering the Special Effect of the 8-Piece Titan Armor Set was extremely low. On the other hand, the Special Effect of the 5-Piece Titan Armor Set is the actual Special Effect that had been giving Zhang Yang the advantage, all this while. A free {Shield Bash} and a 'Double damage'! As for the the Special Effect of the 3-Piece Titan Armor Set that adds 10,000 HP, it had gradually been losing effectiveness as players started to get more and more powerful.

Wei Yan Er picked up the necklace.

[Blue Jade Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +212

Intelligence: +137

Spirit: +137

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 270 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 2%.

Equip: Reduces the cooldown period of {Holy Shield} by 7 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

This is also a powerful necklace for Priests! Unfortunately, this equipment can only be equipped when the player reaches Level 120. Han Ying Xue had no choice but to keep it deep in her inventory for the moment.

The final piece would be the pitch-black, huge metallic quarterstaff with a lopsided end.

[Heaven Shaker] (Mythical, Two-handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 5,275 - 6,675

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 1,572

Equip: Increases damage by 1%.

Equip: After striking a target, there is a small rate of breaking heaven's floor and summoning a punishment straight from the heavens, inflicting 7,000 Fire Damage to the target.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduces 20 levels from the required level.

Wei Yan Er was feeling confused, "This is clearly a quarterstaff! How can it be a hammer?"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, then he began to explain, "Well, in {{God's Miracle}}, other than the dagger, sword, hammer, and axe, all weapons that can stab are categorized as Sword type. For example, lance,

spear, and other weapons that inflict damage via blunt force trauma are all categorized as Hammer types. So, this quarterstaff is categorized as a Hammer. As for those weapons that cut and slash, they are all axes and swords!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er rolled their eyes at Zhang Yang. What kind of explanation is this? They were not one bit convinced!

But whatever it is, this two-handed hammer is definitely one of a kind at the current stage of the game! First of all, it was a Mythical Tier weapon, which were extremely valuable and rare. Then there was also the 20 levels reduction of the Required Level, giving players 'early access' to the weapon before they even reach Level 120! That alone would be a powerful reason for anyone to fight for it!

"Little brat, do you want this Hammer, then?" Although Zhang Yang was tempted to take it, he had already taken one equipment from the loots, so he felt that he had to let others pick it first, "If you want this Hammer, give me the axe that you are using right now!"

Wei Yan Er gave it some thought, and then she shook her head and said, "I'll pass. I prefer to use an Axe more. The sensation of plunging it into enemies is kind of addictive! Other than that, I believe that you haven't had the chance to enjoy using a two-handed weapon before, right? Here's your chance to have it!"

"Wow, why are you so generous today? Are you having a fever?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Pui! You're the one with the fever!"

Other than the four equipment, the boss had also dropped a [Skill Book] with a blue hardcover. The name of the Skill on that [Skill Book] is {Thunder blade}. This skill is limited only to Thieves, Warriors, and Knights.

"Well, well, well, 'Thunder Blade'!" Zhang Yang nodded at Wei Yan Er and said, "Little brat, this is quite an extraordinary Skill we have here. It is actually the enhanced version of your {Tornado Cleave}! You're so lucky!"

Of course, Wei Yan Er took up the book without being polite and all, as usual. She tapped the [Skill Book] against herself, and a stream of golden light flashed across her entire body. After that, she had acquired another new Skill.

[Thunder Blade]: By repeatedly swinging the weapon, inflicts 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damages all targets within the melee range of the user. Lasts for 6 seconds. Within that time, you can move around, but you cannot do any other actions. You will not be affected by any Status Restriction Effects. Required: Melee Weapon. Consumes: 100 Rage Points. Cool down period: 3 minutes.

Wei Yan Er could not stop jumping giddily about the power of this new skill. She was so eager, that she ran into the surroundings to locate a monster for her to try out her new Skill.

Zhang Yang also found his [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang,] finally! He managed to find it among one of the bushes in the surroundings.

This was one hell of a strange looking fruit. The shape of it was in the shape of a strawberry, and the half of it was white in color, while the other half was black in color. The color of this fruit was just like the name of the fruit, 'Ying and Yang'. However, there was only one fruit among the bushes. It was a one-of-a-kind. So, Zhang Yang had to forget about earning additional Experience Points from the quest by delivering more of these fruits.

Right after they were done 'harvesting' the loots, Zhang Yang and the ladies headed back to town.

Zhang Yang had two equipment that needed identifying. Since he was in a hurry, the moment he set foot on the Morning Town, he quickly used the Teleportation Circle and teleported straight back to the White Jade Castle. He then summoned Whitey Jr. and flew straight to the Identifying Shop to get the job done.

"1,000 gold coins!" the dim-sighted old Identifier raised one of his fingers up and showed it to Zhang Yang.

What a greedy old man!

After paying the cost, a stream of golden light flashed across the weapon, and the mysterious attributes of the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves] came to light!

[Mysterious Metallic Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +2,540

Strength: +1,201

Agility: +518

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 5,000 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 5%.

Equip: Absorbs 512 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduces 20 levels on the Required Level.

Comparing this new piece of equipment to his current one, the [Titan Greaves] only adds 80 Defense, 806 Vitality, 230 Strength and 115 Agility attributes. Additionally, he only gets to absorb 232 Damage while he is being hit! Clearly, the [Titan Greaves] are totally no match for the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves]!

After switching it on, the total amount of Zhang Yang's HP increased from 94,000, straight up to a total of 120,000! What a tremendous boost!

Then, he took out the [Heaven Shaker] and placed it on the table, "There's another one."

A player was standing right beside Zhang Yang when he took out the pitch black quarterstaff-shaped hammer. As the player saw that Mythical weapon looked just like a piece of charred, black quarterstaff, he could not help but to laugh out loud, "Brother, you must be joking! Black-Steel Tier equipment does not require identification! Speaking of which, your level

must be very low, so low to be able to still acquire Black-Steel equipment! Haha! Well, online games these days define a player by the player's level! So you will have to pick up all the hand-me-downs from the forerunners, if your level is too low! Well, it's not that I like to tease people, but you should just focus on leveling up and stop wasting time on picking up remaining loot on the ground! Oh my god... White Piglet! Come and have a look at this! This fellow actually took a Black-Steel weapon to be identified! I can't hold it in much longer, I'll die laughing! Haha!"

This player did not just come in trying to act familiar with Zhang Yang, he also tried to 'teach' Zhang Yang a lesson by giving 'advice' to Zhang Yang with 'compassion'. And that was not it, he had also called one of his friends to join in. The two of them were already laughing hard when they saw that the Identifier was beginning to look closer at the [Heaven Shaker]. However, the thoughts that did not cross their minds was that, why would an Identifier look at a piece of Black-Steel weapon, if the system already indicates that Black-Steel equipment does not require to be identified?

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh along and shook his head for awhile. Naturally, he had no intention to argue with these two imbeciles. Firstly, it would only waste his own precious time. Secondly, well, he would not likely see these idiots again. So, why stir unnecessary things up when he can just ignore them and walk away like a real grown-up man?

"5,000 gold coins!" The Identifier adjusted his old-man glasses, as he raised up all five fingers and showed it to Zhang Yang.

What a 'merciless' old man!

"What? 5,000 gold coins?" The 'friendly' player who had tried to 'teach' Zhang Yang a lesson could not believe what he heard and saw as he quickly turned to his friend, "What the hell! There is a bug in the system! Why does identifying a Black-Steel weapon needs 5,000 gold? This is insane!"

"Sharp Wolf, I think you must be mistaken. It doesn't look like a Black-Steel equipment at all!" the friend was slightly brighter as he finally

realized that something was off.

Zhang Yang paid the 5,000 gold coins, and a stream of golden light flashed across the [Heaven Shaker]. However, the appearance of the weapon remained as a pitch black, huge metallic quarterstaff with a lopsided end.

However, the attributes of this equipment are astounding!

[Heaven Shaker] (Mythical, Two-handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 7,536 - 9,536

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 2,246

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 20%.

Equip: After hitting a target, there is a small rate of breaking through heaven's floor and sanctioning a punishment straight from the heaven, inflicting 10,000 Fire Damage to the target.

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduces 20 levels for the Required Level.

"Hey, brother. What exactly is that equipment of yours? Can you share a link of its attributes, so that we can have a look?" that annoying player could no longer keep himself from prying, so he went up to Zhang Yang with his thick face and asked Zhang Yang to show them.

Zhang Yang felt that he had nothing to lose, so he took a screenshot of the [Heaven Shaker]'s attributes and sent it to the player via chat.

When both of them saw the attributes of the weapon, they drew in a breath of cold air.

A Mythical Tier equipment! Level 120! And a reduction of 20 levels for the Required Level!

What exactly are they looking at now! They could not believe their own eyes!

Zhang Yang switched his [Sword of Purging Devourer] with the newly obtained [Heaven Shaker]. Lord's heaven! His Attack shot up so much that he could not believe his own eyes! Zhang Yang's basic Attack had reached up to the range of 21,947 - 25,447 [(12,541 - 14,514) *1.75, 50% {God of War's Rage}, 20% boost on Weapon, 5% additional boost on [Mysterious Metallic Greaves]]

His Defense was far stronger than the Defense of a Super Tanker, and his Attack can even match the Attack power of the top Tiered Berserkers!

Thanks to the support of the [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang had attained the perfect combination of 'immovable defense' and 'unstoppable offense'!

Zhang Yang walked out of the Identifying Shop, deciding to take a look at the Auction House.

"Huh?" the two imbeciles stared at the back of Zhang Yang, feeling that something was off. One of them said, "Judging by the shield on his back, he should be a Guardian. That hammer is a two-handed weapon. So, how can he equip a two-handed weapon?"

"That shield is most probably for aesthetic purposes!"

Zhang Yang took a walk around the Auction House, but he did not come across anything that would get his attention. So, he went on over to the Bank, withdrew 4 [Level 4 Gemstones] and inserted them all into his Greaves and Weapon to boost their attributes even further. Although his HP has been reduced by 1,500 points, his Strength had increased by 320 points (The socket [Gemstones] increased Strength by 60%).

Zhang Yang had planned it out in advance. For all Defense type equipment, he would just insert all [Vitality Gemstones] into their sockets. As for Weapon types, Offense type equipment or equipment that boosted both offense and defense, he would just insert [Power Gemstones] into their sockets.

After finishing things up, Zhang Yang once again arrived at Morning Town.

Although he already possessed a two-handed weapon, Zhang Yang still has his mind set on unsealing the remaining seals on his [Sword of Purging Devourer] because he was very curious to see how powerful the sword could turn out to be! After all, the [Sword of Purging Devourer] had a special effect that could replicate Skills. That is one ability that can allow Zhang Yang to use AoE attacks, not something that the high damage output of a two-handed weapon could easily replace.

Within these two days, Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream and the others had finally reached Level 100. Then they were all summoned by Zhang Yang over to Morning Town. Following the increasing number of players in the Chaos Realm, Zhang Yang could foresee a chaotic war among the eight servers looming ahead!

After Fatty Han entered the Chaos Realm, he had made up his mind, and knowing that he was not exactly the most skilled of players, had asked Zhang Yang to give him the fragment of [Vampire Inheritance]. He only intended to get a Class B Inheritance, it would be enough to fulfill his needs.

He had been a brother to Zhang Yang. So, Zhang Yang put aside his quest on unsealing the second seal on his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and took Fatty Han on his 'ride' as both of them went on a journey in search of the remaining 5 pieces of fragments for the [Vampire Inheritance]. Because Class B Inheritances were not so unique that only one of each can be found in the entire game, even if someone else has already acquired such an inheritance, they would still be able to acquire one of their own.

Fatty Han had quite some luck kicking about in his belly. As they were trying to locate the fourth piece of [Vampire Inheritance], they accidentally stumbled across a gigantic moth. So, Fatty Han grabbed the opportunity and captured the month. There, Fatty Han had got his own [Flying Mount]!

The number of players who had already entered the Chaos Realm were not very numerous yet. Henceforth, it was the best time for players who are already in the realm to capture [Flying Mounts] for themselves. When more players enter the Chaos Realm, there will be much more players capturing [Flying Mounts] for themselves. The competition for getting a good [Flying Mount] would rise intensely as players will be swarming up around the good [Flying Mounts], the moment they are spawned! It would become so much more difficult later to capture [Flying Mounts]!

Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream and the others had also ventured out to capture their own [Flying Mounts]. Although most of them only had Yellow-Gold Tier [Flying Mounts], it was already enough to allow all of them to fly freely through the maps. As for their attempts at getting higher Tiered [Flying Mounts], they would have to wait until they can enter higher leveled maps.

Chapter 516: The Japan-Korea Region's Counterattack

The first steps of collecting the fragments of an Inheritance are understandably annoying. However, if a player could even get one piece of the fragments, it would just be a matter of time before the player can locate the remaining pieces. So in just 7 days, Fatty Han had already gathered the six pieces of the [Vampire Inheritance] fragments and put them together to form the Inheritance Keepsake of the [Vampire Inheritance]. With that Inheritance Keepsake in his hands, Fatty Han succeeded in activating the Linking Quest for the [Vampire Inheritance].

The first few quests had only required players to run around and kill some weaker monsters. Even with his current level and skills, Fatty Han could have handled things by himself with ease --- despite his controls were not at the level of a professional player, he could still crush every monster that the quests required him to kill without any problem at all!

Furthermore, even if he is no match to the monsters, Fatty Han could still activate his 'holy' Skill {Fake Death}. So, there was no need to worry about him being tortured to death by the monsters.

Zhang Yang could finally stop worrying about Fatty Han. Since this fatty already has a [Flying Mount] as well, he should be able to travel around conveniently. Hence, the 'flying service' that Zhang Yang had been providing Fatty Han was no longer needed. Other than that, two men huddling together on the back of a [Flying Mount], well, it could be easily misinterpreted. You know, gay. Meanwhile, Whitey Jr. Was not pleased with Fatty Han's weight. If the system would even allow the Serpent do it, Whitey Jr. would have spat on Fatty Han's face multiple times!

Meanwhile, outside the game, Silky Soft Holdings was finally regaining its standing and prestige. Be it the 'Set Meal' that Silky Soft Holdings had presented while collaborating with Crimson Cosmetic Holdings, or the main products that the company had introduced to the markets, everything that they did these days packed a punch in the flow of the

market. The results of their performance were blooming like sesame flowers, with each flower growing higher than the last that bloomed! In other words, they were attaining a higher standard in the marketplace, each time they made a move!

Previously after the ‘scandal’, the salesmen of Silky Soft Holdings would need to fall on their knees and beg all hypermarkets to put the products from Silky Soft Holdings on their shelves. However, now, their roles had been reversed, the hypermarkets have become the ones begging the salesmen from Silky Soft Holdings to supply them the goods!

Some of the hypermarkets were proposing to pay in advance for the goods. Unlike the previous encounters, they had actually asked for the goods to be distributed over to their storehouse, before they start providing a small share of their sales! With more financial holdings to be liquidated, the company is now in a better position to expand further. Well, Silky Soft Holdings is advancing by massive strides. As long as the person is not blind, anyone can clearly see the bright prospect of the future that lay before Silky Soft Holdings.

Zhang Yang could not help but let out a breath of sigh. In his previous life, Sky and Ocean Electronics was just a small company with only tens of million dollars of assets. Just because of One Sword Stroke, and because the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team was dominating the game with their unstoppable skills, they had managed to make a name out of themselves and had advertised their company through the game, to great effect. In just 5 years time, the Sky and Ocean Electronics had expanded into a large scale company that had assets worth hundreds of billion dollars! It seemed that the power of ‘idols’ really did the trick well!

With waves of benefits and tons of earnings gushing towards her, of course, Snow Seeker would be happy to see Zhang Yang. She invited Zhang Yang and the high-ranking officers of Silky Soft Holdings over to her Crimson Cosmetic Holdings as their ‘VIP’ guests. Perfumed Water and the other flirtatious women were trying their very best to tease Zhang Yang, saying that they would definitely thank him for ‘providing’ beautiful models who would be willing to spend a night with him. They even

guaranteed that he would be very pleased when he comes.

What a bunch of thick faced whores!

At the current stage of the game, the casual players had also reached Level 95 and above. There would be a very small portion of players entering the Chaos Realm in the near future. Sooner or later, the Chaos Realm is going to become very lively with the 'passenger flow' soon to hit its peak!

'Ding! The Winst Castle is under siege!'

Zhang Yang was on his way to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster, with his mind set on searching for the second quest item - [Zinc Alloy] to unseal the second seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] --- he was bound to encounter a boss. Bosses would mean additional income to Zhang Yang.

However, not long after he flew, Zhang Yang received a System Notification.

Only the Baron of Territories would receive such alarming messages. Be it the soldiers of the Territory, the town folks, or the buildings, as long as anyone or anything that belongs to Territory is attacked by enemy forces, the system would notify the Baron with such alarming messages. Of course, players can choose to mute such notifications.

Well, it was no surprise that Winst Castle would be under attack. Since the players of Japan-Korea server would enter the Chaos Realm only to realize that their Territory Gateway had already been conquered by a player from the China server, well, it makes perfect sense for them to feel unimaginable rage. Of course they would attack Winst Castle!

Even though Zhang Yang had not spent a large sum of money on building facilities, but the basic defenses were a must! Basic defensive facilities such as [Magic Cannon], Soldiers, and even the [Mechanical Servants]! Zhang Yang had brought some [Allsparks] over to the Chaos Realm and made quite a number of [Mechanical Servant]. Although they were just Level 85 monsters, but they were still Elites!

Furthermore, the Level Gap Suppression' function of the game had been increased up to 30 levels. So, an army of Level 85 elites could still give Level 100 players a hard time, and they would greatly outnumber!

With 100 [Mechanical Servants] charging out, one or two players with powerful equipment would still be wiped out instantly --- unless they have 'Transformation Skill' of an Inheritance!

Therefore, although Winst Castle was also under the attack from the players from Japan-Korea server, they were all taken out by the [Mechanical Servants]. They did not even have to use the [Magic Cannon]! One shot from the [Magic Cannon] costs 100,000 gold coins! Using a [Magic Cannon] to kill one player is an act of overkill! It would be like using a cannon to blow away a mosquito! To spend money like that, it is no longer the act of a pompous, filthy-rich snot, it would be an unforgivable sin!

At first, Zhang Yang did not think much about it. He believed that the invaders would be swiftly taken care of by his army of [Mechanical Servants]. However, for the next few minutes, Zhang Yang was still receiving notifications about the attacks on his Territory. He could not help but to frown a little in annoyance as he directed the Serpent to land.

Could it be, that those people of the Japan-Korea server were about to launch a large-scale assault on his Winst Castle?

Zhang Yang could not stop wondering as he took out his [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it up. In just a matter of seconds, he was teleported back to Morning Town. Then he quickly used the Teleportation Circle in the town to travel back to Winst Castle.

After that, he jumped straight onto Whitey Jr. and flew over the top of the castle, together with Felice. He began to survey the area, trying to locate the attackers. It did not take long before Zhang Yang spotted them.

100 [Mechanical Servants] and 100 Castle Guards had been dispatched to engage the invaders. Other than the [Magic Cannons] these two armies were all who defended Winst Castle. There were a total of 20 players. Four Tankers were tanking everything in front of them, while the DPS players

were channeling their damage output towards their enemies as furiously as they could. Meanwhile, there were also 5 healers healing up the Tankers from a safe distance.

The battle was halfway through, as the remaining number of the [Mechanical Servants] was only about a quarter. Not even half of the army of Castle Guard were remained on the battlefield! The enemies must have activated some powerful Skills such as Paired Skills like {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} in order to kill so many Elites in such a short period of time!

Of course, although [Mechanical Servants] and the Castle Guards were all elite Tier, they were still no match to the elite Tier monsters in the Chaos Realm. Each of these [Mechanical Servant] only had a total HP of 150,000, and the Castle Guards were only slightly stronger. These Castle Guards only had a total of 250,000 HP! That was why they are not up to the task of holding back these powerful opposition players! Well, strictly speaking, these NPC soldiers were merely half that of an elite Tier!

Looking at the situation from above, Zhang Yang could see that these players are quite skillful and capable. They were capable of forming a human wall with 4 Tankers as vanguards. That way, they could firmly hold back the NPCs and hook on to the NPCs' aggro while allowing the DpS players behind them to channel their damage output towards the NPCs without any interruptions! That would really maximize the efficiency of their damage output!

Well, it was also not very surprising to see such skilled players in the Chaos Realm. Well, players who can enter the Chaos Realm in the first place must be the top players of their respective servers in the first place. So it makes sense that it would not really that hard for these players to take on this bunch of 'half elite' NPCs.

Zhang Yang looked closer with his eyes opened wider. These 20 players were not from the same guild. They had to be the best players that different guilds could offer! A few days ago, there were only a few players at a time who were attempting to attack the Winst Castle. They were slaughtered by the NPCs like goats instead. Now, they have finally sent their high-tiered players, and had even teamed up together!

With a command through his mind, Zhang Yang ordered Whitey Jr. to descend down to the ground.

At the same instant, the battle on the ground was about to end. Although there were still a number of NPCs remaining, their HPs were already at critical levels. After another wave of powerful assaults, almost all of the NPCs were killed.

The moment when Zhang Yang touched down on the ground, the last 7 NPCs who were still standing took the final hits before they collapsed onto the ground. Now, only Zhang Yang was standing before the 20 players.

Zhang Yang sat on the back of Whitey Jr., looking mighty, while Felice stood next to him with her lance in her hand with pride. The little lady had a cold expression on her face, ready to kill.

"Zhan Yu?" one of the Tankers on the opposition side suddenly blurted out. He actually took a few, calculated steps back when he saw Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang felt a chill down his spine, knowing nothing about this guy. How did he know about him? But after giving it some thoughts about it, he was rather famous himself. He was currently the Number One Tanker in the entire China server. Countless high Tiered players would try to study and learn his tactics and skills! It was comprehensible that many players would recognize him.

The facial expression of Zhang Yang at that moment was as if he did not give a damn about anything. However, as he scanned the surroundings with his eyes, he realized that the 20 players had quietly flanked him from all directions, except for the direction from above. Zhang Yang felt like laughing hard after seeing what was going on. Well, he has a [Flying Mount]. Surrounding him up would not do any good for them at all. If he ever wanted to leave, who could have stopped him, anyway?

However, it wasn't their fault, as they were still new to the Chaos Realm. They were not used to the idea of Air Combat, yet. They must have gotten used to rounding enemies up after years of practice. Well, no one can blame them for acting 'rationally' according to the situation. One can only

say that these players have not caught up to the game's current development.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely as he began to 'welcome' them, "Fellow players, it must have been tiring to travel a great distance just to arrive here. Come, have a rest in the castle."

Rest? F*ck you!

The Japan-Korea players were scolding and cursing him in within their hearts. This Territory Gateway should belong to the Japan-Korea server in the first place! And now, they are being treated like guests in their own Territory-was-to-be? Well, there is a limit to humiliating others!

Apparently, the first Tanker who spoke up was called 'Ode to the Grim Reaper', and he too, was a Guardian. He stood out from the party and said, "Our experts in Korea have been studying your ancestors, and we are very sure that your ancestors were refugees who fled from Korea many years ago! So you are not Chinese, you have the blood of our noble Korea flowing beneath your skin! Come back to our noble Korea! Only then, can you ensure the best possible paths for your future!"

The rage rushed up to Zhang Yang's head in an instant!

Zhang Yang went all 'Sparta' the moment he heard what the Ode to the Grim Reaper said. The ability of that fellow to talk nonsense with his eyes closed is truly amazing! Spectacular! They didn't even know his surname! It is amazing how they claimed to have 'discovered' Zhang Yang's heritage and all!

However, it made sense when the Koreans believe that the entire universe is created by them! To them, Zhang Yang would naturally be a Korean as well! What a joke!

When players first connect to the {{God's Miracle}}, the system will automatically spawn the players in one of the eight main cities based on the location that the players are at. No changes will be made after that. So, even if Zhang Yang travels over to America and signs in from there, the system will still recognize him as a player from China, a player from White Jade Castle.

However, players could apply to change their servers if they ever feel like it. But, they must undergo some annoying steps and pay a substantial sum of money.

Therefore, traitors from China, Korea, Japan, or America do exist in this game. Well, it mattered not, be it Zhang Yang's previous life or this life, there would always be high-Tiered players who lacked such morality, to the point that they would turn their backs against their own people, their own countries. They would just join other servers and go up against their own kin with a snap of their fingers.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "That's right. If you say so, I should be an esteemed Korean by now. My deeds should have spoken for themselves. So, you Korean youngsters should just call me supreme leader, or master would do!"

Chapter 517: An Easy Obliteration

"Zhan Yu!" Ode to the Grim Reaper was enraged. He raised up his sword and shield and pointed the sharp tip of the blade at Zhang Yang, "You dare to insult me?"

So, this imbecile claimed Zhang Yang's nationality to be Korean, but felt humiliated when Zhang Yang claimed himself to be their supreme leader? Now, who is the joke, now?

"What are we waiting for? Stop with the bullsh*t and get rid of him already!" one of the Spellcasters with the name of 'Ancient House Prince' said. It was pretty obvious that he was not very fond of Ode to the Grim Reaper. He pointed his staff at Zhang Yang, and started chanting for his spell.

A Japanese player, perhaps?

Zhang Yang revealed a sinister smile on his face and said, "Felice, let's go and kill that 'Shorty Japan'!"

Felice wouldn't understand the term 'Shorty Japan', but since Zhang Yang was pointing at the Ancient House Prince, she nodded immediately and leaped and transformed into her Dragonhawk Form. She flew into the air and began to chant the spell for her {Fire Missile} as she targeted the Spellcaster.

"Kill him!"

The battle erupted suddenly, thanks to Ancient House Prince. His action was like the trigger that ignited a barrel of explosives! The 20 players launched their assaults towards Zhang Yang, almost at the same instant!

Although a [Flying Mount] is convenient, it had a fatal weakness when it comes to battling players. The body mass of a [Flying Mount] is too large! It would make a fine target for the enemies to aim at! Zhang Yang had the {God of War Transformation} on hand, so he was confident of holding his own, here. He activated the {God of War's Shield} as a start, acquiring an additional 20% Passive Damage Immunity. Then, he jumped down from

the back of Whitey Jr. and activated {Charge,} as he charged towards Ancient House Prince.

‘-23,895!’

Zhang Yang swung his quarterstaff-hammer and landed a solid hit on the neck of the Ancient House Prince. It did not just take away two-fifths of the HP bar of the player, that strike had also broken the neck of Ancient House Prince to the point that it was crooked at a weird angle! The chanting was interrupted instantly!

With the strike, the Rage Points that Zhang Yang has was instantly boosted up to a total of 120 points! The Rage Bar was full! He laughed, as he proceeded to activate his {Destructive Smash} on the Spellcaster.

‘-49,122!’

"Argh!" Ancient House Prince let out a miserable cry as he was sent straight to the Graveyard. Although those were two different strikes that Zhang Yang slammed at almost the same instant on the Ancient House Prince, there was no Global Cool Down for the two strikes, as one was merely a normal attack while the other was a Skill attack. Ancient House Prince was struck so swiftly that he did not even have time to activate his {Ice Barrier} or {Apparate}!

"Holy mother of god!"

After witnessing the terrifying damage that Zhang Yang had brought upon the Ancient House Prince, everyone on the scene was shocked to core. A few of them even rubbed their eyes as they could not believe the truth that they had just witnessed!

What the hell was that? Could a Guardian really do so much damage?

However, these were the top players in their region, after all. They managed to recover from the shock in an instant. The Spellcasters carried on with their chanting while the other players started moving around in a tactical formation. But, because they had locked on to the Serpent, so most of their attacks were launched at Whitey Jr. instead of Zhang Yang.

As Zhang Yang had instantly killed the player that Felice targeted, Felice

was interrupted in the chanting of her {Fire Missile} and she decided to use {Pulverizing Flame} instead, torching up the place, creating a sea of flames beneath her.

However, players are not as dumb as the monsters in the game. They would not just stand there and let the flames scorch their asses. All of them immediately fled from that area as they ran like wild geese! With them running around wildly, trying to avoid themselves from being burned alive, it gave Zhang Yang another opportunity to attack. Zhang Yang went on with a {Heroic Leap} and landed by the spot where the Healers were standing. He stunned all 5 Healers at once!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-47,120!’

‘-48,902!’

‘-95,032!’

‘-49,902!’

4 damage values popped right on top of the 4 healers’ heads, and one of them was a Critical Damage! That Critical Hit sent a Holy Knight straight to the Graveyard! Unfortunately, these Healers were standing quite far away from each other. Although Zhang Yang had managed to strike the 5 Healers with his {Heroic Leap}, his {Horizontal Strike} could not cover that much ground and he had only managed to hit 4 of them!

Well, it was still a productive outcome. The other 3 Healers were left with only a little amount of HP on them. They quickly retreated and started healing themselves up.

Meanwhile, there were no longer any available targets within the range attack of Felice’s {Pulverizing Flame}. Naturally, Felice did not waste any more time in herding the players. She dove down from the sky in high speed. While she was at it, she transformed into her Humanoid Form before she reached the ground. She landed right beside Zhang Yang. As the 1-second Global Cool Down period was over, she immediately raised her lance and struck it straight towards a Priest.

‘-17,880!’

With that strike, the Priest died on the spot! Felice was being very intimidating as she continued to activate her {Blazing Dragon's Spear} on another target. Another damage of ‘-18,067’ popped up on top of one of the healers, and the third healer was killed as well!

Everything was happening so lightning fast! 4 players were already dead!

Ode to the Grim Reaper was feeling angry and shocked at the same time, and he informed one of his teammates, "Pika, go and restrict the Battle Companion!"

"Roger!" the Thief nodded and reached out with his hands as he made a gesture that suggested that he was pressing his palms against Felice, remotely. A stream of light gushed towards Felice and turned into a ball-shaped barrier the moment it reached Felice! Felice was suddenly caught in a barrier!

Felice let out a roar with rage as she attempted to break the barrier. However, everything that she did could not even give a scratch. She began to panic and started screaming for help, "Big brother! I'm stuck! Help!"

This Skill should be similar to the "Banishment" effect. Although it could restrict the movement of Felice for a short moment, but it would also make Felice immune to all damage at the same time! Zhang Yang comforted her as she looked genuinely terrified, "Don't worry, Felice. I can handle all these clowns by myself! It will be just like dancing with a bunch of clowns!"

‘-2093!’

‘-0!’

‘-1025!’

‘-5052!’

...

The attacks of Ode to the Grim Reaper and his party members had finally landed on Zhang Yang! But they could only inflict Zhang yang with

approximately 5,000 damage, each. So they had only managed to damage Zhang Yang by approximately 10,000 to 20,000 damage. Well, dual-weapon wielders like Thief Class players could not even break through Zhang Yang's Defense to even damage him!

It cannot be helped because Zhang Yang currently had a total Defense of 2,400 points, 40% Damage Immunity, and also a total of 2,606 Damage Absorption! Zhang Yang is the only player to have an Inheritance at the current stage of the game. It also happened to be the strongest class, Class S! If he is unable to oppress these players who were at such a disadvantage, then Zhang Yang should be ashamed of himself!

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang did not really care about the damage he receives. He cared more about the Status Restriction Effects that are being used on him! However, ever since he has the [God of War Inheritance], his resistance against Status Restriction Effects has greatly increased. At least, none of the Status Restriction Effects that he had encountered so far would have any effect on him!

Well, such is the power of an [Inheritance], on players without [Inheritances]!

Furthermore, even if he really is affected by a Status Restriction Effect, Zhang Yang still has {Warrior's Will}, [Heart of the Death Knight] and [Mobility Potion] to free himself from the effect. That should be enough for him to unleash hell upon all his enemies!

‘-45228!’

‘-23982!’

The [Heaven Shaker] was just like the golden cudgel, the weapon that was used by the Monkey King who made a mess in the heavens! Every touch from it hurt, every strike from it killed!

At the current stage of the game, even players who are not Tankers would only have approximately 80,000 HP when they are mounted on a Yellow-Gold Tier [Mount]. Taking damage from Skills that inflict 200% Melee Attack of Damage such as {Frost Strike}, {Horizontal Strike} and {Destructive Smash} would cause any player to lose at least 40,000HP. If

there are any Critical Hits among these attacks, the player would be instantly killed!

Furthermore, even if {Cripple Defense} is just a Skill that players use to decrease the Defense of their opponents, but even so, if it comes from Zhang Yang, it would deal upwards of 10,000 damage, which also meant that Zhang Yang could cause at least 50,000 damage to a player by using Skills that inflict 200% Melee Attack of Damage, such as {Frost Strike}, {Horizontal Strike} and {Destructive Smash}! The {Cripple Defense} would serve as a great boost in filling up his Rage Bar, giving him a higher capability of inflicting even more terrifying amount of damage!

"Stop him! Restrict his movement, or do something!" Under the tactical arrangement of Ode to the Grim Reaper, the four Tankers came from 4 different directions, trying to box Zhang Yang in attempting to stop him from making his way over to the remaining Healer and the DpS players. Although the attacks of Zhang Yang were oppressively powerful, but Tankers would always give him a headache, as they could sustain much more damage than players of other Classes!

Zhang Yang let out a loud laugh, and then he used the {Glare of the Death God} on Ode to the Grim Reaper.

With another wave of his hand, Zhang Yang summoned out [Devastator] onto the battlefield and commanded [Devastator] to attack Ode to the Grim Reaper as aggressively as possible. Well, on the other hand, Ode to the Grim Reaper was not really having good luck either. The first hit from the [Devastator] had actually triggered the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}! Zhang Yang rushed in with a stomp on the ground as he activated his {Thunder Strike}, giving a fatal blow to Ode to the Grim Reaper, that instantly killed him!

There was no doubt that the equipment set of Ode to the Grim Reaper was the best among the other Tankers. However, to see Ode to the Grim Reaper being instantly killed by a mere Level 88 Silver-Tier Servant was just unaccountable! How could anyone stand being killed by such a low Tier Servant! Furthermore, because Ode to the Grim Reaper had died so swiftly, none of them were able to see the description of the negative

effect that was inflicted upon him!

The more they did not understand the situation, the more they lost the will to battle, and the more they feared. The three Tankers could not help but to retreat, one step at a time. Their faces were indistinguishable from the faces of albinos!

Zhang Yang felt very satisfied with the current situation. He could already torture them so brutally without even activating his {God of War Transformation}! If he did activate his {God of War Transformation}, would he actually be able to kill all of them instantly?

When a player with an [Inheritance] engages a player without an [Inheritance], the advantage that the player with [Inheritance] has over the player without an [Inheritance] is really oppressive! Although Zhang Yang had not activated his {God of War Transformation}, he still had a 50% damage increment and 20 additional Damage Immunity, pulling him far ahead of players without an [Inheritance]!

Zhang Yang saw the opportunity, so he grabbed it! He charged out of the box formation as swiftly as he could. By swinging his [Heaven Shaker] around consecutively, Zhang Yang oppressively crushed the players of the Japan-Korea region, like a tiger among a herd of sheep! Although it was just him alone, he had crushed the opposition party to the point that they could not even fight back! It was a total wipeout!

The Thief that was still restricting Felice with his 'Spell' saw that Zhang Yang was charging at him aggressively, as if he was ready to bite off his nose. He was so terrified that he stopped using his Spell and activated his {Vanish}, entering Stealth Mode. He did not want to die so horribly!

Felice was finally freed from the 'restriction barrier' that had held her for quite a while. She rejoined the battle and worked together with Zhang Yang in order to taken down everyone else on the opposing side. The two of them were like god slayers! Anyone who stood in their way would only be slaughtered!

After killing eight of them, Zhang Yang only had about 30,000HP left. Without panicking, he activated his {Last Vigor} before activating his

{Shield Wall}. His HP bar instantly recovered completely! But, why did Zhang Yang activate his {Last Vigor}? Because, this Skill gives a temporary boost of 30% on his Maximum HP amount, and {Shield Wall}, while under the Special Effect of the [Titan Wall], could recover his HP based on a fixed percentage. That would mean that, if he has a higher amount of Maximum HP, he would be able to recover more health!

After witnessing the HP bar that they taken so much effort to reduce beginning to fill it self up, the remaining 12 players of the Japan-Korea region considered giving up immediately. They actually thought that without the {Berserker's heal}, Zhang Yang would not be able to hold up his HP for long, as every player only has one HP bar! Furthermore, Zhang Yang was not some sort of God of War that is all powerful! So sooner or later, even Zhang Yang could be brought down to his knees!

However, they had never expected Zhang Yang to possess the powerful relic - [Titan Wall]! Zhang Yang could actually recover his HP bar, just by activating his {Shield Wall}!

Fortunately for them, they did not have to find out that Zhang Yang still had another trump card that could recover his HP back to the full state, in an instant! Or else, they could simply drop their weapons in surrender!

Another minute had passed. From 12, only 5 players remained! The 5 players looked at each other hopelessly. Then, they began to hop on to their [Mounts] and made their escapes. The 5 of them headed towards 5 different directions! They were trying not to give Zhang Yang the chance to catch them all in one draft!

Zhang Yang laughed as he mounted himself onto Whitey Jr.. The movement speed of a [Flying Mount] was extremely fast, and Zhang Yang caught up with 3 of the players with ease. He attempted to kill them one by one, however, two of them got away in the end.

Chapter 518: Aiding Fatty Han

Nevertheless, Zhang Yang was pleased with the outcome of the battle. He had just crippled a party made up of Top Tier players, from a large region and more importantly, he had taken them out all by himself without any other party members around him! That itself was already an impressive achievement. It does not matter even if he fails to capture all of them.

Unfortunately, such days will not remain for long. When other players begin to acquire [Inheritances] for themselves, the advantage that Zhang Yang has right now would diminish, or even be gone! But, the [God of War Inheritance] is the best top-tier S-Class [Inheritance] in the game. Only 6 players would be able to obtain this Class. Ergo, Zhang Yang would still have some advantages over the other players. But, the advantages he holds shall not be as great as before.

The Chaos Realm had been quite merry for the passing days. The server would notify about some Territories being refreshed, and some Territories being conquered by players. In only less than a week, all eight Territory Gateways have acquired their own Barons.

Indubitably, because Zhang Yang had occupied the Territory Gateway in Winst Castle that should supposedly belong to the Japan-Korea region, the Japan-Korea region had taken a slap on their 'shorty' faces. It hurt them so much, having to travel all the way from the Teleportation point in the Ten Barren Seas to enter the Chaos Realm. Zhang Yang's handy work had greatly inconvenienced them, making them take up so much time just to travel to the Chaos Realm!

Furthermore, because Winst Castle is right in the middle of the only path that led deeper into the Chaos Realm, the players from Japan-Korea region are forced to grind only in one-fifth of the Grandu Ice Ridge map! Players with [Flying Mounts] could bypass the castle by flying over it. But the others without a [Flying Mount] would have to forcefully break through the Winst Castle in order to enter the Chaos Realm!

What makes them more depressed is that every time after they have returned to their main city, they will have to repeat the exact same process just to enter the wider part of the Chaos Realm. Zhang Yang's handy work simply gave them too much trouble!

When the number of players who reaches Level 100 increases, the Winst Castle would no longer be able to block the flow of the players from Japan-Korea region. As long as they come in a large group, they would have no problems at all in breaking through the Winst Castle. Although the Winst Castle would no longer be capable of holding the fort against the large group of Japan-Korea players, the place could still prevent smaller group of players. The situation was truly depressing and frustrating for the players of the Japan-Korea region. They would have to mobilize a large number of players every time they wanted to venture further into the Chaos Realm! If they do not do so, they would just be giving their enemies free kills!

Inconvenient! Very inconvenient!

However, without the [Territory Conquest Order], it would be pointless for them to level Winst Castle to the ground! The Baron of the Winst Castle would still be Zhang Yang. As long as he was willing to pay the repairing fees, he can just rebuild the castle as many time as he wants and continue keeping the players of the Japan-Korea region out!

In fact, he had been putting that strategy into practice! Every time after the army of Japan-Korea region leveled Winst Castle to the ground, Zhang Yang would rebuild Winst Castle by spending some money in order to collect the heads of the Japan-Korea players and get his revenge back!

He only loses a portion of his money by doing so, while wasting the time of the Japan-Korea players when they could have spent so much more time grinding up their levels! The most important thing in an online game is player's level. Without meeting the level requirement, a player will never be eligible to enter any higher leveled region, and they would also not be able to defeat high-level bosses, resulting in them not being able to acquire any high-level equipment!

With such an obstacle before them, the Japan-Korea region would definitely fall behind the rest of the game!

Currently, they were busting their asses, killing the bosses available in their area, over and over again in an attempt to acquire a [Territory Conquest Order]! They were determined to get back that which was supposed to be theirs, Winst Castle!

However, an item as rare as the [Territory Conquest Order] would only drop on the First Clear of a dungeon. All bosses located among the maps lower than Level 100 have been slain for so many times that anyone would have lost count by now! Hence, how was it possible for a [Territory Conquest Order] to still drop from the bosses, then?

Because of that, there was almost an in-fighting among the Japan-Korea players as they were arguing about the misuse of the [Territory Conquest Orders] that they had back then. Henceforth, they could only stare at Winst Castle until their eyes dry up!

Since it was no longer possible for them to obtain the [Territory Conquest Order] within their own region, the Japan-Korea players could put their hopes in the wider area of the Chaos Realm. After they managed to break through the Winst Castle, they would just have to search and slay bosses as much as they could just to attempt to get the order. Despite their efforts, a [Territory Conquest Order] would not drop so easily. It seems that they would have to keep on repeating this mundane task for a little while longer.

Well, the Japan-Korea region has become the laughing stock for the players all around the world as they are talked about in the official forums. While the players from other regions were enjoying the drama, the players from Japan-Korea region hated Zhang Yang so much that they would suck him dry and hang his meat and bones up, in front of their doorsteps! However, the players from the China region were respecting Zhang Yang more than they ever could for his handiwork. Teenagers of 16 to 17 years old viewed him as an idol.

Dungeons upwards of level 100 are designed for a much larger scale, in

this case they would accommodate up to 50 players at a time. At the current stage of the game, most large-scale guilds have begun challenging those dungeons. They would get themselves familiar with the boss Skills and the attack patterns of the boss by clearing the Normal Mode and Hard Mode of the dungeons to familiarize themselves with the patterns of the boss.

In the past, the 'First Clear' achievements for the Hardcore Mode of dungeons had remained unique and individual to their respective regions. The eight big regions of the game would produce eight 'First Clears', for the same dungeon! Eight regions led to the possibility of eight 'First Clears'! However, only one party would be able to acquire the 'First Clear' of a dungeon after all players from all eight main regions have entered the Chaos Realm!

Therefore, the Level 100 dungeon - Dragon Throat Fortress was currently being targeted to be taken down at all costs, by all high profile guilds from all eight main regions! Whoever who manages to take down the Hardcore Mode of this dungeon first shall claim the first and only 'First Clear' in the Chaos Realm!

Securing the 'First Clear' of such a scale is what any guild would want. It is the highest form of glory that any guild would kill for!

This is really the defining moment to be number one, in the entire world! Which guild wouldn't want such a title bestowed upon themselves?

Therefore, even if they do not have enough members for it, they would still march into the dungeon to try on the boss! Although the Skills of the boss are clearly stated in the database, to read and come up with theories and to do it were two very different things. Seeing the others doing well is one thing, but when it is one's turn to engage, any form of unforeseen circumstance and errors might just pop right up in the face. Some things must be practiced to perfection in order to get a pass!

Although several more players have been flitting into the Chaos Realm along the passage of time, each guild would only be able to fork out a few representatives at the moment. In Lone Desert Smoke's case, they only

had about 30 members capable of traveling into the Chaos Realm for the moment. Due to Mountain Mover's level being ineligible to enter the Chaos Realm, Zhang Yang could only allow Hundred Shots to lead the party over to the Dragon Throat Fortress dungeon to familiarize themselves with the attack pattern and Skills of the boss. Meanwhile, players who have not reached the required levels yet could only watch the video recordings of those who went to challenge the boss and failed badly. They could only learn from the mistakes that those players made through the videos.

The other guilds were also doing the same thing. In a nutshell, this is the first time that all guilds from all eight regions are fighting over this 'First Clear' title. The competition is even more intense than anyone could imagine. The discussions on the official forums were blazing up, as players from all eight regions were supporting the best guilds in their own regions, as they believed that their top guilds would be the ones who prevail. The servers of the official forums had crashed several times, because of the overflowing comments from the players from all eight regions. That just goes to show how intense the arguments on the forums were!

However, the total number of bosses in Dragon Throat Fortress has reached up to 15 bosses! The first 5 bosses were pushovers, giving out equipment to the players for free. However, the next 5 bosses were slightly harder. 50% of the parties could no longer progress any further into the dungeon. The final 5 bosses were the really challenging ones that are worthy of being called bosses in the Hard Mode of the dungeon. Basically, 90% of the parties could no longer progress any further as the bosses were too damn hard for them to take on! Some of them could not even catch their breaths!

The Normal Mode of the dungeon was simple enough, but the Hard Mode of the dungeon was a good 'entry examination' that separated the wheat from the chaff. Plus, none of the parties were complete yet. The Dungeon Expedition Force of the Lone Desert Smoke only managed to take down 11 bosses of the dungeon before the dungeon reset. The

Dungeon Reset Time for a 50-player scale dungeon is 10 days (In-game Time), but truth to be told, the Dungeon Expedition Force of the Lone Desert Smoke only took two days to defeat 10 bosses. It took approximately 8 days for them to slay the 11th boss!

Furthermore, the final 5 bosses are expected to be increasing in difficulty, and that is just the Hard Mode of the dungeon! How hard would it really be when it comes to the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon then?

Naturally, the higher the difficulty, the better the rewards!

The bosses in Hard Mode would only drop Yellow-Gold Tier equipment, while the bosses in Hardcore Mode would have higher tendencies of dropping Violet-Platinum Tier equipment! So if the difficulty of the dungeon in Hardcore Mode does not meet a certain standard, then everyone will stand a chance of getting Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, and the entire game would be full of players with Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, totally defeating the purpose of equipment tiers!

Zhang Yang had thought about using his {God of War Transformation} to end the boss immediately. However, the cooldown period for the {God of War Transformation} is 3 days long! If he uses it to kill one boss at a time, then Zhang Yang could only kill 4 bosses before the dungeon resets. After the dungeon is being reset, Zhang Yang would have to repeat killing the bosses all over again!

Well, shortcuts are not meant for long-term solutions. Increasing the base skill and strength of the party is the best way to do it. After all, there are still countless of dungeons to be cleared in the future, and the bosses would only get even more difficult in the future. So, it would be impossible for Zhang Yang to always rely on his {God of War Transformation} skill.

According to the 'history' of Zhang Yang's previous life, it took more than 3 months (Real Time) to completely clear the dungeon, starting with the first boss in the Normal Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress to the final boss Dragon Throat Orc Lord Basseula in the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. It was like hell broke loose, as people and monsters were roaring in misery and death!

Therefore, Zhang Yang had no need to worry about other parties snatching the 'First Clear' of the dungeon away. He could just focus on aiding his core players in acquiring their own [Inheritances]. By having [Inheritance], the power level of a player is totally different than before, for the better, of course!

"Little Yang, I've almost completed it all!" the panting sound of Fatty Han was heard loud and clear through the party channel, "Come and help me handle the final boss!"

"Alright, I'll be there in just a second!"

Zhang Yang agreed to help Fatty Han. He brought up his world map to check on the location of that fatty. Then he rode on Whitey Jr. and headed straight towards the location of Fatty Han. Fatty Han was currently in the Hidayat Wilderness map, at where the Antioch Forest was. It is a Level 120 - 150 Grinding Map. Therefore, there were no signs of any players on that map. Unless there are special quests requiring players to go to that map, players would only proceed in an orderly way. So, there is no way that they would suddenly come to a high leveled map to grind their levels.

When he arrived at the scene, Zhang Yang saw that fatty Han was hiding in the bushes by a manor. Fatty Han was acting extremely nervous, as he would look around very carefully like a stealthy criminal who had just committed a crime.

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh as he landed the ground, "Fatty, why are you looking all shady over there? Is someone trying to poke your ass or what?"

"Oh my mother of god!" Fatty Han was instantly scared shitless as he jumped straight out from the bushes, "What the hell, little Yang! Don't scare me like this! And lower your voice down! The area before us is filled with Vampires, and they are all elite Tier! I almost died trying to fight them off!"

Zhang Yang came down from the back of Whitey Jr., "The boss that you need to slay is in there?"

"That's right. The description of the quest states that this is an S-Rank

quest. So I immediately thought of you!" Fatty Han tapped on Zhang Yang's shoulder, "This should be a Mythical Tier boss, right?"

Zhang Yang shook his head, as the quest for the [Vampire Inheritance] is just a B-Rank quest. It's difficulty was just like the [King Kong Inheritance] that he had cleared in his previous life. So, the final boss of the quest should be the same Tier as the King Kong boss as well. This boss should be a Level 150 Ethereal boss.

Of course, there would still be some differences between the bosses, even though they are all in the same Tier. For example, the Ethereal Tier boss Black Dragon Anubask had an HP bar that was 10 times longer than the HP bar of a normal Ethereal Tier boss! If Felice had not gone crazy on the boss, Zhang Yang would not have completed his quest so soon, and it would have taken him a unimaginably long time to complete the quest!

"Let me summon the witch, little brat and the remaining of our party members over before we charge in!" Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order].

"Little Yang, oh my little Yang. You've 'tasted' that big breasted Snow already, have you?" Fatty Han suddenly interrupted Zhang Yang as he looked at Zhang Yang with a sleazy look.

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "Why do you ask?"

"What the hell! Just look at her! That witch is always revealing her flirtatious face at you every single time she sees you. It's like she haven't write the words saying she had been... 'moisturized' by someone! If you are saying that it wasn't you, then this 'someone' will be as good as dead!" Fatty Han looked at Zhang Yang with an ambiguous expression on his face.

"... er... we should start discussing the boss!" Zhang Yang was determined to ignore this annoying fatty and he activated the [Party Summon Order]. In less than 10 seconds, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest of his party members arrived.

He observed her intently, and it was as Fatty Han said, Han Ying Xue was indeed emitting her flirtatious aura all over the place, as every single

gesture she made suggested something sexual. It's like she had been awoken to a new world of passion and love, and she was unconsciously letting it show! While Zhang Yang found it highly distracting, even Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream would go blind if they had to watch her a little longer.

Zhang Yang would have never expected that the witch would actually bring in her her new awakening into the game. Worst of all, Fatty Han could see it as clear as day! Let's just hope that that fatty can keep his mouth shut!

"Brother Fatty! I'm really having a hard time imagining a fat bat flying in midair!" Endless Starlight started to tease Fatty Han about his body size.

"Haha! Little Starlight, there is no need to be envious of me! Rest assured, when I have obtained the [Vampire Inheritance], I shall help you get a C-Class [Inheritance]! At least you can also 'transform' yourself that way!" Fatty Han laughed out loud.

"Fine. Enough with the chatters! Let's hurry up and get things started. We'll get over with it sooner! Move out!" Zhang Yang waved his [Heaven Shaker] around and walked straight towards the manor.

"Who goes there? How dare you trespass into the private property of Count Ferra!" a middle-aged man in the manor shouted. This man was wearing a ceremonial robe of sorts, and looked like a noble aristocrat.

[Vampiric Familiar] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 140

HP: 1,400,000

Defense: 2,440

Attack Power: 9,868 - 11,868

Skills:

[Blood Drain]: Drains the blood of the target, inflicting 10,000 Shadow Damage to the target, while recovering the same amount of HP, based on the damage done to the target.

[Claw Skewer]: Tears open the target with sharp claws, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage.

Note: The Vampiric Familiar that serves The Vampire Count Ferra, loyal to the master, brutal to the enemies.

"What the hell! This is an elite monster? The damage is already as high as a Yellow-Gold boss!" after reading the attributes of the monster, Endless Starlight let out a high pitched scream.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Well, you are in a higher leveled map now, of course the elites here would be much more powerful! If you ever get to the Level 300 map, the attacks of the elite monsters over there should be even more powerful than the attacks of a Holy Tier boss! The damage of this elite monster is not the main concern. The main thing, is that the monster's level is 30 levels higher than us, so there is a Level Gap Suppression!"

"However, the Level Gap Suppression function of the game is only annoying when it comes to boss battles. The elite monsters won't give us that much trouble, yet!" Zhang Yang activated his {Charge} and threw himself into the monster, followed by a powerful swing of his [Heaven Shaker] that bashed the monster in the head.

‘-7,097!’

Huh? That damage is really low!

Under the boost of Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura}, Zhang Yang's attack should have reached up to the range of 22,820 - 26,320. Even if the monster has 2,440 Defense, Zhang Yang's {Eagle Eye} could ignore 65% of the monster's Defense! So, he should be able to cause about 21,966 - 25,466 damage to the monster.

This is the doing of the Level Gap Suppression function! Zhang Yang's damage has greatly suffered because of it!

Chapter 519: The Vampire Count Ferra

In 'God's Miracle', when it comes to the 'Level Gap Suppression' feature of the game, there is a 10% rate of players inflicting only 10% of the damage that they can cause to monsters. Then, there is a 20% rate for players to only inflict 20% of their initial damage. This follows with a 30% rate for players to only inflict 30% of their initial damage. Last but not least, there is a 40% rate for players to only inflict 50% of their initial damage.

In other words, players would never have the chance to inflict more than 50% of their normal damage when the 'Level Gap Suppression' function of the game is activated, due to the large gap between the level of players and the level of monsters. The strike that Zhang Yang landed on the monster was only 20% of his normal damage.

On the contrary, the 'Level Gap Suppression' function of the game would give the monster an advantage over the players. The monsters would have a 10% rate of causing damage 5 times higher than their normal damage, 20% rate of causing a damage 4 times higher than their normal damage, 30% rate of causing a damage 3 times higher of their normal damage, and a 40% rate of causing damage 2 times higher!

Therefore, it is not an easy task to fight way above their levels, especially when it comes to engaging a boss that has a higher level than you.

The situation was exactly like Zhang Yang's previous encounter with the Black Dragon, Anubask. Without Felice's explosive madness, even if Zhang Yang had brought 10,000 Level 100 players along with him, the boss would have 'eaten' them like an evening snack! There was not even the slightest chance of Zhang Yang slaying that boss!

To carry out an Excessive Level Challenge on bosses with a higher level than the players, especially on an insanely powerful boss like the Black Dragon Anubask, players must have enough number of [Forbidden Scrolls] at their disposal. Players must willing to use them like tissue papers, without having to care about the cost. As Zhang Yang had already

obtained the {God of War Transformation}, he had finally acquired the strength that would make it possible for him to go up against the Black Dragon Anubask! However, the insanely long HP bar of the boss would still pose a question on whether Zhang Yang could put down the boss within two hours. The possibility of that lay within the efficiency of his damage output. Since the moment Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} period is over would be the moment where the boss instantly kills him!

Shoof!

The Vampiric Familiar swung one of his hands as blood began to ooze out of the Zhang Yang's chest. A red number popped right on top of Zhang Yang's head.

‘-21,063!’

"My goodness! Are we battling an elite monster or a boss?" Endless Starlight let out a shocked scream.

"The Level Gap Suppression system is pretty awesome. The monster scored a triple damage!" Hundred Shots had certain understanding towards the data and statistics about the game, "If the monster can cause 5 times of it's average damage, then the damage on us would have been even greater!"

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly activated their healing Skills on Zhang Yang to begin healing his HP bar back up. The HP bar of Zhang Yang was recovering swiftly.

Although there is a Level Gap Suppression on the party that causes the firepower of the party to reduce steeply, there is a saying - ‘An elephant can be killed by a large number of mosquitoes’!. In less than 40 seconds, the Vampiric Familiar collapsed to the ground and died. Well, at least the monster dropped a couple of coins and a few pieces of [Spiritual Cloth].

"Killing one elite monster here is so tiring!" Daffodil Daydream complained as she looked at the countless Vampiric Familiars wandering around every corner of the manor.

"Let's do this!"

The party charged into the manor. Although the Level Gap Suppression was still in place, the monsters in the manor did not give the party much difficulty. After all, this party is possibly the best party in the entire world, at the current stage of the game. Even while their fire power is being restricted by the system, it only took them about 3 to 4 hours to slash all their way into the deepest area of the manor. The boss 'Vampire Count Ferra' that they were required to slay was located in a small garden.

[Vampire Count Ferra] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 145

HP: 43,500,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 53,216 - 61,216

Skills:

[Talon's Seduction]: every time when hitting the target, 10% of damage dealt would be turned into HP points.

[Heal]: The vampires have extraordinary healing abilities, heals 10,000 HP every 3 seconds.

[Vampiric Blood Drain]: Transforms into little bats, each bat has 500,000 HP. The number of bats is based on the number of players engaged in the battle, multiplied by 2. Every player will receive the {Vampiric Blood Drain} from 2 little bats. Players will not receive any damage during the duration of this Skill. However, as long as one of the bats is still alive, the players will lose HP and die instantly on the moment when the duration of the Skill ends. Each player's death will contribute to 1% HP recovery of Ferra. The {Vampiric Blood Drain} will last for 30 seconds.

[Bat's Voyage]: Transforms into a bat. Can fly in the air.

Note: The Vampire Count Ferra is said to be one of the oldest ancient Vampires. He is the progenitor of the Vampires' Strength!

After reading the description of {Vampiric Blood Drain}, everyone frowned intensely on the spot.

To empty out a total of 1,000,000 HP within 30 seconds, each of them must maintain their DPS at 33,000 damage! Putting the Level Gap Suppression aside, for now, even if they were battling monsters of equivalent levels at the moment, it would not be possible for them to reach such a high amount of DPS! Each of them could only reach 7,000 to 8,000, at most! Of course, everyone could also gather around and use their AoE Skills to clear the bats out, but the fact that each of the bats had a total of 500,000 HP would be quite the headache!

"Little Yang, why is this boss so insanely powerful?" Fatty Han was flabbergasted. Just as he was about to finish the final quest of his Inheritance Linking Quest, it had just only struck him that it is not possible for him to slay the final boss! Of course, he would feel frustrated and emotional!

This is an Ethereal boss, so it would not be an easy battle at all!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This boss is Level 145. That means the developers had considered only letting players come and challenge this boss when they are at least Level 115. Players should get a whole set of Mythical Tier equipment first, before doing this! Under such consideration, it is only fair that each player only gets 30 seconds to empty out a total of 500,000 HP!"

After all, the game company had put this Level Suppression system in place to prevent players from going out of bounds. If players started getting too far ahead by themselves, the number of high level bosses would reduce very rapidly, and that would reduce the 'lifespan' of the game as well!

"So... are we still... doing this?" Fatty Han was asking, with a weak voice.

"Of course we are! Didn't you see that this is an Ethereal Tier boss? If we take him down, we can get another 'First Clear' title!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud, "So when the boss uses {Vampiric Blood Drain} later, we'll just gather around and use our AoE Skills at the same time. It would still be

possible to clear out those bats within the time frame!"

"Let's try it out now!" Zhang Yang waved his [Heaven Shaker] around to loosen up his joints, and then he activated his {God of War Transformation} and activated his {God of War's Shield}. As two divine wings sprouted out of his back, Zhang Yang looked like a god that has just descended from the heavens. As he began to charge at the boss, he threw out his {Spear of Obliteration,} as usual.

‘-44,520!’

After activating his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang had a total of 575% additional damage. Theoretically, he should be able to cause approximately 90,000 damage to the boss. However, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, Zhang Yang could only cause 50% of his initial damage. Although the amount of damage that he dealt was still terrifying, Zhang Yang was still unhappy about the significant weakening of his power!

"Hahaha! Live creatures setting foot in my territory! Are you those Dragon Slayers or the Master of Justice who are trying to become famous by killing me?" This Count looked noble and dignified. He was dressed in a pale, gold tux. He had that handsome, nobleman vibe to his appearance. His fingers were fine and dainty.

With a leap, the Count leaped midair and he transformed into a giant bat, gliding towards Zhang Yang. He reached out with his right hand. All of a sudden, all five of his fingernails shot out, like 5 blood-coated switchblades. It was a horrific scene!

"What a handsome boss!"

"Agreed! What a manly man!"

"If this man can ride on a white horse, then he can really be a Prince Charming!"

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart instantly started gossiping as they began to talk about how handsome and attractive the boss was.

Wei Yan Er stared at the boss for a brief moment, and then she suddenly said, "I know why the boss does not have a white horse to ride! Because he has sucked the white horse dry! Hahaha!" After that, she began to laugh on. The little brat had a terrible sense of dry humor, and started rolling on the floor, laughing. But after seeing that no one was laughing with her, she stopped and frowned, and then she said, "What a bunch of boring people!"

‘-104291!’

‘+10429!’

As the boss’ claws raked through his flesh, Zhang Yang received a horrifying amount of damage, while the effect of {Talon’s Seduction} kicked in and healed the boss by more than 10,000 HP!

"Oh my lord! Zhang Yang already has more than 10,000 Defense when he is transformed, and he also has a 40% Passive Damage Immunity! So if the damage of one hit from the boss is that high, wouldn’t regular Zhang Yang be dead already?"Lost Dream could not help but to scream in shock.

Indeed, even after Zhang Yang activated his {Vitality Aura}, he would still only have a total amount of 118,720 HP. If Zhang Yang did not have the 20% additional Passive Damage Immunity that the {God of War’s Shield} provided, even with a full bar of health, he would still be instantly killed by the boss! Furthermore, that particular strike had only been buffed up by 3 layers of the game's damage oppression system, due to their differences in levels. If the boss had been lucky enough to roll 4 layers, or even 5 layers of the Damage Oppression buff, the damage would have been even more ridiculous!

Right after he hooked the boss’s aggro onto him, everyone began to channel their damage output on the boss as they activated their powerful skills on the boss.

With their current healing capabilities, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart need not worry about whether they would waste mana on unnecessary healing, such as overhealing someone beyond their maximum hit points. This was because the attack of the boss is so powerful, that one strike from the boss would already inflict more than

60,000 damage! The highest damage that the boss could deal would be about 180,000 damage! It would be impossible for the two of them to overheal anyone or anything! The two of them could let loose on their healings!

Fortunately, the Skill {Block} could negate one third of the boss's damage. The stronger the attack of the boss, the more damage that {Block} would protect the player from! This has largely increased Zhang Yang's survival capability in a battle.

Generally speaking, the normal attack of the boss could cause about 100,000 damage. So, by excluding the effect of {Block} once in every 6 seconds, the DpS of the boss would reach up to 30,000 damage. On the other hand, the healing capabilities of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart have been weakened by the Level Gap Suppression of the game. The HP that they could heal every second only reached up to about 10,000 HP.

In other words, Zhang Yang was losing roughly 23,000HP every passing second!

The {God of War Transformation} has raised the Maximum HP by 40 times! However, even though Zhang Yang has over 4,748,800 HP at the moment while constantly using [Level 10 Potions] to heal himself while the healers are healing him, it would still be not enough at all to keep up with the boss! Now, the best and most powerful Skill would be the special effect of the [Titan Chest Plate]! By activating the {Shield Wall}, he could gain back 10% of his HP for every second!

Although the effect had already been nerfed, Zhang Yang still had a 50% rate of recovery. Plus, the effect of the [Titan Wall] extended the duration of the {Shield Wall} by 5 seconds! So, he can recover a total of 75% HP over 150 seconds. That would already cover back the gap that Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could not heal!

Therefore, theoretically speaking, Zhang Yang should be able to hold his own the boss!

Obviously, that would only be true if the attacks of the boss stayed

consistent at the rate of causing 3 times its initial damage. But, if the boss suddenly hits the jackpot and inflicts a damage 5 times harder than the boss initially does, the outcome would be totally different. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's {God of War Shield} would only last for 10 minutes. After that, he would lose 20% of his Passive Damage Immunity!

Of course, Zhang Yang still had the {Radiance of the God of War} which he could use once in every 30 minutes. He would barely be able to make up for the 20% Passive Damage Immunity that he loses, after the effect of the {God of War Shield} fades.

Chapter 520: A Fierce Battle with an Ethereal Boss

Zhang Yang acted without hesitation as he threw the {Glare of the Death God} on the boss.

For every passing second, his mind only thought of whether the 2-hour 'transformation' duration was enough for him to make his plan work. The cooldown period for the {Glare of the Death God} was only 60 minutes. So, he can actually use the Skill twice two times while he is still in his 'transformed' form. Henceforth, he would use {Glare of the Death God} immediately! Well, who knows whether he could really time it right by then. If he can throw a third {Glare of the Death God} on the boss in between that one split second before the 2-hour long {God of War Transformation} Skill is over, while the boss only has 10% HP remaining on him, then Zhang Yang might stand a better chance at slaying the boss!

Zhang Yang was really lucky this time. The {Glare of the Death God} could not be resisted by the boss. A large dark skull appeared right on top of the boss's head in just an instant!

Although this was the first time many of them had witnessed this Skill, they had already heard from Zhang Yang himself about how powerful this Skill is. Within the 10-second period of time, everyone no longer tried to hit as hard as they could, instead, they were hitting as fast as they could, in order to increase the number of hits on the boss. The main reason was that everyone understood how the {Glare of the Death God} works. They just wanted to increase the rate of triggering the special effect of the Skill, by increasing their attack rate!

'-450,000!'

'-450,000!'

...

The eight DPS players with a bunch of [Pets], 4 powerful Battle Companions (The other two belonging to Lost Dream and Daffodil

Daydream, however, the initial Tiers of their Battle Companions are only Yellow-Gold Tier), and 7 [Servants] were all trying hard to hit the boss as frequently as possible, without thinking about their damage output! Their attack rate was really off the charts, causing the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} to trigger consecutively! All 10 chances of triggering the special effect were used up within 5 seconds!

"You bastard! How is it possible that you know the Special Skill of the Hell's Lord!" Ferra let out a raging roar as he launched his assaults madly towards Zhang Yang with his 10 finger nails, looking like 'blades of hell'.

"Hahaha! I am the representative of the Hell's Lord in this realm. Little Vampire Ferra, surrender yourself and pledge your allegiance to me!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he swung his 'hammer' at the boss.

"Impossible! The Hell's Lord has already fallen! Human, give me the secret Skill of the Hell's Lord. Then, I shall consider turning you into one of my undead familiars, instead of turning you into a dried corpse!" the boss threatened Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han could not help but to feel shocked. After thinking about it, he said, "Little Yang, if only we could all get this Skill and take our turns to use it on a boss, they would all be dead in no time!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I am guessing that this Skill only drops once in the entire game. If everyone could farm for this Skill and learn it, then all boss battles will become too easy!"

The moment when the {Glare of the Death God} ended, the damage output of the party went back to normal again. The boss had over 10,000 defense. Even if they used 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} on him, he would still have about 5,000 Defense. Furthermore, Zhang Yang and his party members had been weakened by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, making the total damage output of the whole party so poor that it was painful to look at! Their total DpS was only about 10,000 damage. Furthermore, the boss also had two HP recovery Skills, {Talon's Seduction} and {Heal}, making the boss even more difficult to kill! The HP bar of the boss was reducing extremely gradually!

"Haha! You utterly useless beings, are no match for me!" Ferra let out a series of words that trembled as he extended his claws out even further. He slashed at the shield of Zhang Yang and sent Zhang Yang flying in the opposite direction. It was fortunate that Zhang Yang gains the ability to fly when he transforms himself into the form of the {God of War Transformation}. So, he instantly flew straight back up to the boss and continued to battle the boss.

The Level Gap Suppression function of the game is really extremely annoying!

Even though the {God of War Transformation} is a very powerful Skill, but Zhang Yang still felt that he was being oppressed by the boss! Back in his life, Zhang Yang had once taken out a Violet-Platinum boss, together with hundreds of its minions when he first transformed as a King Kong. It really felt awesome of him to feel so powerful for the first time!

However, standing before an Ethereal boss made him feel weak again, as if he was being 'shrunk' back to his previous power level!

Well, this is what happens to players when they do not heed the warnings and go on doing an Exceed Level Challenge! Players should be at least Level 115 before challenging Vampire Count Ferra. But, Zhang Yang and his party had insisted on challenging the boss now. Well, who are you kidding? Of course this boss battle is not going to be easy!

"Living beings, tremble before my shadows!" Ferra suddenly turned into a blur, and his body was transformed into 20 little bats, These bats then swarmed up towards the 10 players.

[Ferra's Incarnation] (Normal, Special Creature)

Level: 145

HP: 500,000

Defense: 0

Attack: 0

Skills:

[Blood Drain]: Drains the blood of the target, will die after 30 seconds and recovers 1% health for Ferra.

These bats were basically unstoppable. All of them charged at everyone as they started to bite at their necks, faces, wrists and other spots that were not covered and protected by equipment.

Without the need to inform them, everyone stood together in one same spot and activated their AoE Skills.

{Horizontal Sweep}

‘-98221!’

‘-56860!’

‘-37984!’

‘-20304!’

.....

The 20 little bats were receiving different amount of damages at same time. However, the amount of the damages were that were inflicted upon the bats differed greatly.

Zhang Yang let out a gentle humph. With a golden light gushing out of his entire body, Zhang Yang struck out with his {God Of War’s Crushing Strike}!

‘-28,970!’

‘-28,970!’

...

He initially has about 1,000 points of Strength attribute. But after he switched up to the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves], he had acquired an additional of 1,201 Strength attribute. And after he added the power of 4 [Gemstones] onto his equipment, together with the 10% increment on his Strength that Wei Yan Er’s {Strength Aura} provided, Zhang Yang’s Strength attribute had reached up to a total of 2,897 points!

Unfortunately, the damage of {God of War’s Crushing Strike} would not

be affected by any additional damage effects that are added to the player. However, the Chaos Damage that is 10 times of the Strength Attributes would not be affected by Armor Defense and Magic Defense of the target, not even the Level Gap Suppression effect. The Skill will perform as it always would, without any loss of power!

Although Zhang Yang could only accumulate 1 point of 'God of War Energy Point' every 10 seconds, allowing the {God of War Crushing Strike} to be available for dispatching every 30 seconds, but Zhang Yang did not have any other Skills that would require the usage of the 'God of war Energy Point'. So, after battling the boss for another 5 minutes, he had succeeded in accumulating a total of 30 'God of War Energy Points'. That amount of Energy Points would be enough for Zhang Yang to activate the {God of war Crushing Strike} 10 times!

After the 1-second Global Cool Down Period, Zhang Yang activated another {God of War Crushing Strike} once again, and caused about 30,000 damage to all the bats within his Skill's attack range!

"Wow! What sorcery is this? A player can become so bloody powerful after using a 'Transformation' Skill!" Endless Starlight was looking at Zhang Yang in admiration, and then he said, "Boss, help me get the Class S Inheritance for Knights! I too, want to feel the rush of a 'Transformation' Skill!"

"Endless Starlight, you can stop thinking about the 'Transformation' part, you're already a pervert in transformation form! It's more practical that way!" Fatty Han laughed out loud.

Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Crushing Strike} 9 consecutive times, and after he was done with the skill, his {Horizontal Sweep} had also cooled down. So, he struck with his {Horizontal Sweep} and caused another wave of damage onto the bats! Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, now that he did not possess the special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], the damage values only popped out on top of the bats, once.

However, the impact of the {God of War Crushing Strike} was amazing! After 10 consecutive times of activation, the 'God of War Energy Points' of

Zhang Yang was depleted. But at the same time, every monster around him was inflicted with about 300,000 damage! Meanwhile, Felice spat her flames from midair. After her 10-second {Pulverizing Flame}, she had also caused about 10,000 damage to every one of the bats. However, the {Pulverizing Flame} had a cool down period of 30 seconds. So, Felice could only attack one enemy at a time!

After about 15 seconds later, all the bats were left with only about 100,000 HP! However, the {God of War Crushing Strike} was not available at the moment. So the damage that Zhang Yang could deal to the bats had sharply reduced!

"Dummy, should we use our {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}?" Han Ying Xue asked.

The paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} did Chaos Damage, so they would not be affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. They should be able to deal 5,000 damage for every second and inflict a total damage of 75,000 to each of the little bats in the remaining 15 seconds. With other party members supporting them with their attacks as well, they should be able to clear out the bats with ease!

Zhang Yang shook his head immediately. The boss battle was only beginning. Having no idea on how many time the boss might use his {Vampiric Blood Drain}, if they really used up their paired skills this early in the battle, then how are they going to survive the next round of such attacks? Their paired skills had a cool down period of 72 hours!

Everyone was trying their best at maximizing their damage output as they gulped down bottles of [Power Potions] whenever they could!

On the 20th second, Zhang Yang activated another {Horizontal Sweep} with his long, quarterstaff-like hammer, striking out the best AOE attack skill that he had. Instantly, another wave of damage values popped out on top of the bats, at the same time! A few of them were killed by the attack wave!

{Thunder Strike}!

In his transformed mode, even the {Thunder Strike} could reach up to

20,000 basic damage. But unfortunately, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, the {Thunder Strike} could not reach the expected amount of damage. The bats only received about 10,000 damage, a small number of them was only inflicted with about 2,000 damage!

However, the remaining HP bar of the bats were already rather low. Under the aggressive assault of Zhang Yang's party, quite a number of them were falling off from the body of Zhang Yang's party members as they died.

25 seconds, 7 bats remaining!

26 seconds, 5 bats remaining!

27 seconds, 3 bats remaining!

28 seconds, 1 bat remaining!

On the 29th second, the last bat had finally fallen off the body of Endless Starlight!

After the 30th second, the bats that were on the ground suddenly came back to life as they flew up and reformed back into the middle-age gentleman. Ferra let out a deafening roar, and then he dashed towards Zhang Yang, aiming at his neck.

They had succeeded in surviving one of the deadly skills of the boss!

Everyone let out a breath of relief as their confidence increased! Zhang Yang currently had more than 4,000,000 amount of HP, giving him a much larger margin of error. The two healers could even close their eyes and simply focus on healing Zhang Yang without the need to worry about inefficient healing. They also need not worry about the fact that any slight delay of their healing skills might cause Zhang Yang to be instantly killed!

It was very hard to judge whether this battle was a tough one or an easy one. As long as they can kill all the bats within the time frame of 30 seconds, they should be able to empty out the total amount of 45,000,000 HP of the boss within two hours!

Well, killing the bats within the time frame is interrelated to emptying out the long HP bar of the boss! Because if any of the players cannot kill the bats within the time frame, they would die, and contribute in healing the HP of the boss back up! If that happens, Zhang Yang and his party member would not stand a chance at slaying the boss within the limited time period!

10 minutes, 20 minutes, 50 minutes!

The boss had already used his {Vampiric Blood Drain} for more than 10 times, but the party had managed to kill all the little bats within the time frame! They managed to do that all, thanks to the {God of War's Crushing Strike} that Zhang Yang has. The impact of the strikes really do pack a punch. The damage that the Skill can cause took up half of the total damage output of the party! Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party members saw the potential of having an [Inheritance], and were even more motivated to get their own Inheritances!

60 minutes!

The cool down period of the {Glare of the Death God} was finally over, Zhang Yang activated the Skill once more.

'Ineffective!'

But Zhang Yang was out of luck this time. The moment when the Skill was thrown onto the boss, a large word popped up right above the head of Count Ferra.

"Sun of the beach!"

"Bad luck I guess!"

"This is outrageous!"

Fatty Han and the others immediately complained the moment they saw the letters!

The boss still had 52% HP at that current moment!

Chapter 521: 'First Clear' of Ethereal Tier Boss

Truth be told, out of the 48% HP that they had taken off, 10% of it was the additional 'bonus' provided by the {Glare of the Death God}. This would indirectly mean that Zhang Yang and his party members were only capable of reducing 38% of the boss's HP bar in an hour! Based on their current performance, the boss would still have 14% HP remained on him when Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} wears off!

By then, Zhang Yang should be able to use another {Glare of the Death God}. As long as it takes effect, they should still stand a chance at bringing the HP bar of the boss down to 4%.

Still, 4% of such an HP of such magnitude is still a ridiculously large sum. According to the current total DPS of Zhang Yang and his party members, they would still need to go all out for 6 minutes, before they could empty out that hypothetical 4%. Without the {God of War Transformation}, it begs the question of whether Zhang Yang and gang would even survive for 30 seconds. So a duration of 6 minutes is really a long time for them!

Furthermore, what happens if the {Glare of the Death God} does not work? What then?

Battling super powerful bosses are heavily luck-based ventures! For instance, if the second {Glare of the death God} manages to take effect, then the boss should only have 4% HP remaining on him when Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} fades away. The [Zombie Potions] should be able to take care of the remaining 4%!

If not, they would really be in big trouble!

Although they still had their super Skills {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, 100,000 damage would only scratch the boss!

Going all out!

Zhang Yang and his gang did not have the luxury to even think about

saving cost, or weighing the pros and cons of anything! They took all sorts of [Potions] like there was no tomorrow! Within the 2-hour time frame of the {God of War Transformation}, they continuously spammed the skills over again and again --- immediately right after the cool down period, they would just activate their Skills in an attempt to maximize their damage output as efficiently as possible! Every single one of them understood, that if they failed this time, they would have to wait for another 3 days before they can challenge this boss again!

--- without the support of the {God of War Transformation}, they would merely be insects cowering before the boss!

10 minutes before the {God of War Transformation} ended, the HP of the boss dropped down to the remaining 20%.

Under the effects of [Power Potions], everyone decided that it was the right moment to activate their super Skills. They chose the right timing to do so, and began to channel their damage towards the boss at the very last moment.

{Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

‘-14,000’

‘-14,000’

...

Other than Fantasy Sweetheart, the other nine members in the party activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! Zhang Yang had also activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} to boost the damage output of the entire party! However, the damage that {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} could deal had been greatly diminished, due to the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} inflicts Chaos Damage while {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} inflicts Nature damage. {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} performed much poorer than {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} in this case!

10 seconds later, the boss had lost about 1,500,000 HP.

16% HP remaining!

Without having a second thought, Zhang Yang activated all of his remaining powerful Skills on the boss. Since his Rage Bar would always be filled to the brim, Zhang Yang had no worries about having not enough Rage Points to use.

‘-401988!’ {Killing Cleave}

‘-94212!’ {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-198422!’ {Destructive Smash}!

‘-48222!’ {Frost Strike}!

Even though Zhang Yang had landed quite a number of Critical Attacks, his damage output was still affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, making it impossible to reach his maximum damage output. But, his current damage was already pretty satisfying, especially his {Killing Cleave}! An attack that could reach up to a 400,000 damage could really leave people stunned with their jaws hanging wide open!

This is the power of an [Inheritance]!

Everyone was amazed by it! Fatty Han was anxious and worried at the same time. He was beginning to imagine the glory on him after he gets his [Inheritance]. But at the same time, he was worried that all of their efforts might go to waste if they fail to take down this super boss!

15%, 14%, 13%!

The {God of War Transformation} was nearing its end!

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall} the moment the {God of War Transformation} was over.

‘-58,417!’

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. He had still received so much damage with his {Shield Wall} active! Without the {Shield Wall}, this strike would have definitely dealt over 200,000 damage! He would have been instantly killed!

After tanking the boss for another 14 seconds, the cooldown period for {Glare of the Death God} was finally over. Zhang Yang prayed deep down

his heart as he threw another {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss! If this takes effect, they still had a chance of finishing this! Or else, they would have to die and come back again after 3 days!

Shoof! A shrouding dark skull began to form on top of the boss!

It was a success!

Everyone was cheering in joy, as they now stood a chance at bringing down the boss!

‘-450000!’

‘-450000!’

...

The HP bar of the boss started dropping rapidly, 1% at a time.

"You bastard! It's that skill again!" Ferra let out a raging roar into the sky. He was so furious that his very face itself started twisting up into a knot, "I shall exterminate you! Exterminate every one of you tiny little insects! To actually push me this far, you all must die!"

"Hey witch! Come! It's time to use our paired Skills!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted to Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue nodded, and she directed her Flying Mount [Bumblebee] towards Zhang Yang. She jumped off her [Mount] and stood by Zhang Yang's side.

The two of them held their hands together as they activated their {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!

‘Immune’! ‘Immune’!

The word ‘Immune’ kept popping out on the top of Zhang Yang's head as the boss continuously raked at Zhang Yang with its claws. On the other side of things, the boss was receiving a steady stream of 5,000 Chaos Damage numbers!

30 seconds passed, and the bombardment of the {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} finally stopped. The boss reached out with his claws and

gave Zhang Yang two powerful slashes! The first hit caused 100,000 damage, while the second hit caused 240,000 damage, killing Zhang Yang in an instant!

However, a white holy light flashed across Zhang Yang's entire body, and he got back on his feet immediately --- {Rise Anew}!

However, without the support of the {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang was like a piece of wet paper standing right before the boss! The boss killed him again with another strike that caused 250,000 damage! Still, it was not over, and Zhang Yang got back to his feet for the second time --- the [Zombie Potion]!

Although the [Zombie Potion] allows players to continue fighting for the next 30 seconds after they die, players would no longer be able to retain the aggro of the boss. The boss immediately turned away, turning himself into a bat, and arrived right on Felice in just a blink of an eye. His claws penetrade all the way through her chest.

‘-248,128!’

‘+24,812!’

Blood oozed out from the chest wound of Felice as she turned into a white ball of light and flew back into the Battle Companion Slot within Zhang Yang's inventory. At the same time, she dropped a level back to Level 103. She remained curled up in a fetal position as she lay quietly in the Battle Companion Slot. Zhang Yang would have to wait for another 10 minutes before he could summon Felice again.

"Haha! A bunch of weak imbeciles! I'm bored!" Ferra was finally beginning to display the power of an Ethereal boss! He started going on a killing spree as one after the other falls.

Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream... every single one of them did not stand a chance at all. They were instantly killed by the boss! Fortunately, all of them had already taken a [Zombie Potion] prior to the battle! So, they were able to continue fighting for another 30 seconds after dying. The best part about this 30-second extension was that they would all be invincible for 30 seconds!

At that moment, the boss only had 1% HP remaining! That was only a total of 260,000 HP!

250,000, 240,000... 190,000! The effect of the [Zombie Potion] faded, and Zhang Yang was the first to collapse onto the ground. This time, he lay on the ground for good!

180,000!

150,000!

140,000!

Wei Yan Er sunk to the ground dead.

130,000!

110,000!

90,000!

Sun Xin Yu collapsed!

"Damage output! Damage output! We can finish this!" the gang shouted encouragements to each other as they started the sprint to the finish!

70,000!

50,000!

30,000!

10,000!

8,272!

3,711!

One by one, they hit the ground in dramatic fashion, as one by one, their [Zombie Potion] effects faded! The only one left standing was Fantasy Sweetheart!

{Punishment Ray}!

‘-2,311!’

"We are so close!"

"Go, go, Sweetheart!"

Fantasy Sweetheart swung her arms with all her might, trying her best to cast another {Punishment Ray}! That was literally the final thing she could do in that boss battle! Her own [Zombie Potion] ran out of time, and she too joined her comrades in death.

‘-2,212!’

"Argh ---" the boss let out a deafening roar to the skies as his slender body began to fall. As his body hit the ground heavily, the dust on the ground flew up.

"We did it! We really did it!"

Everyone was cheering through the party channel.

‘Ding! Congratulations for being the First Party of the server to slay an Ethereal Tier Boss, your glorious deeds shall be remembered forever in the Historical Lists of the world. As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your party name shall be published on the Historical List, allowing the world to praise you!’

This kill has finally been recognized by the system! Thank god! Praise the lord!

Zhang Yang quickly entered the habitual ‘Advertisement Slogan’, and the Server started to repeat the announcement over again and again. In just a few seconds, Snow Seeker and Sky Shaman, followed by other players from other guilds began to congratulate Zhang Yang. At that moment, Zhang Yang could not even see anything in front of him, because the new messages kept on popping up right before his face.

"Haha! Everyone, quickly! We must get back to our dead bodies and resurrect ourselves first! Loot, don't forget the loot!" Zhang Yang laughed madly as he selected the option to release his soul. The, he began to sprint all the way back to his dead body!

While running back to his dead body, Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a sigh. He could not help but to think that, even though he already has the [God of War Inheritance], he had still struggled against such

powerful bosses! If he had not come across the divinely powerful skill {Glare of the Death God}, it would have been impossible to slay the boss with just the 10 of them!

Well, it was very tiring indeed to do an Exceed Level Challenge in slaying a boss. Furthermore, this Vampire Count was not really that powerful. He did have the {Vampiric Blood Drain}, a rather considerable AoE attack. But, this Skill was rather unique, as it was basically a ticking time bomb! As long as players slay all the monsters within the given time frame, the party would not be harmed in any way, and they would also get a 30-second window to regroup!

The King Kong boss that Zhang Yang had slain in his previous life was even more annoying and harder to deal with. The boss would randomly shake the ground and throw rocks at the players without any sign of warning! If it is up for Zhang Yang to judge, he would say that the difficulty of this boss battle would be about as difficult as getting a Class C [Inheritance].

7 minutes later, all 10 of them had managed to resurrect themselves. All of them sat down and started taking some [Snacks] to recover. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er was the first to go up to the boss to check on the loot.

Although this was a legitimate 'First Clear', the boss had been ridiculously stingy. Only a total of two equipment were found on the ground. One was a violet necklace, while the other one was a dark-gray leather helmet. Everyone was soon feeling depressed and disappointed.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This is probably the system's way of telling us not to simply go through an Exceed Level Challenge! Still, it doesn't really matter if loot is measly. We can always get more of them in the future. The most important thing about 'First Clears' are the additional rewards like [Skill Books]!"

"Hehe, noob tank sure is sharp as always! You got me!" Wei Yan Er took out two [Skill Books] and said, "There are two of these [Skill Books] and three [Middle-Tier Aura Stones]!"

"Yan Er, stop being such a tease! Just show us their attributes already!"

Wei Yan Er giggled. After picking up all the coins, she picked up the dark-violet necklace and said, "Can you guess what Tier this equipment is? A Mythical, or an Ethereal?"

[Violet Coral Necklace] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,089

Intelligence: +373

Spirit: +373

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,000 points.

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 740 points.

Equip: Absorbs 321 damage when struck.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

"Wow! This is one awesome piece of equipment that we have here!" Fatty Han's eyes were popping out, "A Level 140 equipment that can be equipped when player reaches Level 120! You know how amazing that is? Furthermore, this equipment boosts both HP and MP, while also boosting damage and it even giving players the ability to absorb damage! This necklace has basically covered all aspects of combat!"

"Indeed!" Zhang Yang nodded. It would indeed be a major advantage if a Level 120 player can equip a Level 140 equipment. The player that equips this equipment would no doubt have the upper hand over other players of the same Level (Level 120)! This is one of the 'First Clear' rewards, so it makes sense that such a powerful equipment would be dropped. Well, for the moment, there is no other better equipment that boosts both the offense and defense of players!

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart automatically rolled dices, as if it was a daily ritual. Ironically, they knew

each other so well that there was no need for pleasantries anymore. By the end of it, Fantasy Sweetheart was the one who got lucky and she acquired the amazing necklace.

The next equipment was the dark-gray leather helmet.

[Blackhawk Leather Helmet] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +192

Vitality: +4,356

Strength: +645

Agility: +1,490

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,700 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

"What the hell! Is this a Leather Armor or a Heavy Armor!" Endless Starlight was so shocked that his voice had turned squeaky, "My Violet-Platinum Heavy Armor only gives me an additional 80 Defense! This piece of Leather Armor is too much! It actually adds 192 Defense! If my eyes aren't playing tricks with me, it also adds vitality points by more than 4,000 points! No, it's actually more than 4,000 HP!"

"This is an Ethereal Tier equipment, my friend!" Daffodil Daydream smiled, "Actually, it should give more than 6,000 vitality points after identification! One piece of such equipment would already provide about 60,000 HP... that amount is actually much higher than my current amount of HP!"

"That is why, people say that Levels and Equipment are keys to becoming successful in any online game!" Zhang Yang took the leather helmet over and said, "There are two Thief Classes and two Hunter

Classes here, so, the four of you roll for it! Let's see who gets to keep this masterpiece! Forget the Ethereal Tier, the main point is that this equipment can be equipped, 20 levels earlier! That is more than just awesome already!"

Everyone had no reason to be polite to each other, as they had been party-mates since the beginning! So, the four of them rolled for it. By the end of it, Fatty Han was the one who struck the 'jackpot'! He had succeeded in acquiring the equipment!

However, it requires approximately 10 days or so just to level up once, after the Level 100 bracket. So, when Fatty Han reaches Level 120, it should be another 6 to 7 months in the future. Therefore, it would really be boring and frustrating to do an Exceed Level Challenge on higher level maps. They needed to pay for a bigger price, such as more effort needed to get things done, and they would also have to wait for a much longer time before they can equip any equipment they earn from doing so. After all, it is truly torturous to see a powerful piece of equipment lying quietly in your inventory, within your reach, but also out of your reach at the same time!

Chapter 522: The Vampire Inheritance

However, the last two [Skill Books] that the little brat picked up were much less capable of such torture.

Wei Yan Er took out the first [Skill Book] and pasted the name of the book onto the party channel. The Skill on the [Skill Book] is called {Vampiric Touch}. It is a Skill that was not limited to Classes. Everyone stands a chance to learn it.

Everyone rolled for it. The little brat was the one who got the [Skill Book]. After she learned the Skill and revealed the description for the Skill, Wei Yan Er posted the description of the Skill onto the party channel immediately.

[Vampiric Touch]: Touches the target with the power of a Vampire! Lasts for 30 minutes. During the effective period, whenever the target receives any attack from the caster, 5% of the damage dealt by the caster would heal the caster's own party members (5 members at most). The caster can only place the spell on one target at a time. Furthermore, the healing effect of the {Vampiric Touch} would not generate additional aggro. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 60 seconds.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, and he said, "If only I knew the details about this skill, I would have learned it himself. Or maybe, Sun Xin Yu should have learned it. It's such a waste to give this to the little brat!"

Wei Yan Er was enraged and yelled at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank! I'm also a powerful DPS myself, you know it!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "What power are you talking about? The power of your poor chest? I can't seem to see any power whatsoever!"

"You!" Wei Yan Er was so angry that she kept stomping the ground, "That's because I haven't hit puberty yet! My mum's chest was ginormous! Just like my aunt's! If you don't believe it, you can ask sister Snow! Humph! Humph! I have inherited excellent genes! You shall regret the day you underestimated me! I shall grow a pair of boobs that are larger than

sister Snow's! Just wait and see!"

Everyone could only try their best not to laugh. Well, most of them were covering their mouths and faces, physically stopping themselves from laughing.

Zhang Yang looked at her and nodded, "Little brat, just forget about that unrealistic fantasy of yours and accept the truth!"

"Pui! You bastard!" Wei Yan Er decided to huff off the loot. Then, she picked the other [Skill Book] up and pasted the name of the book onto the party channel.

[Skill Book: Destroyer's Madness]

Use: Teaches you the {Destroyer's Madness}.

Required Class: None

Required Level: 100

'Huh? Another [Skill Book] that does not have any required Class?' Everyone was curious and confused a little at the same time. Ever since they had entered the Chaos Realm, they had come across numerous [Skill Books] that did not have Class Requirements. Does this mean that every [Skill Book] in the Chaos Realm could be learned by anyone, blurring the lines between the Classes in the game?

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, this Skill can support those with [Inheritances] below Class C. So, this Skill will only serve its purpose until you guys get your [Inheritances]. I suggest that you guys get a Class B [Inheritance,] at the very least. So, concerning this Skill, since it wouldn't really matter much, let's roll and see who gets it."

"Silly Yu, what does this Skill do?" Han Ying Xue asked out of curiosity.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely at her and said, "Whoever learns this, just post it up on our party channel later for everyone to see!"

The little brat got it again. The little brat was so full of herself that she threw a supercilious look at Zhang Yang. After learning the Skill, the little brat posted the description up on the party channel.

[Destroyer's Madness]: Upon activating the Skill, additional 50% increase in Attack. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. This skill shares the same Global Cool Down with 'Inheritance Transformation'.

"Only Class S, Class A, Class B and Class C have the 'Inheritance Transformation'. So this {Destroyer's Madness} here is designed to cover the disadvantages of the [Inheritance] Classes that are lower than Class C!" Zhang Yang explained.

Fatty Han had already acquired the quest items that he needed to complete his quest. Right after distributing the 3 pieces of [Middle-tier Aura Stones] among themselves, they tore their [Teleportation Scrolls] and traveled back to Morning Town. All of them agreed on one thing, that they will never repeat something as idiotic thing as performing an Exceed Level Challenge! It was suffering that they did not need in the first place!

Well, by doing an Exceed Level Challenge to kill a boss that is of much more higher level than you will earn the 'First Clear' title for the dungeon, or for slaying the boss. Other than that, you get nothing else. Firstly, you might not prevail. Even if you manage to slay the boss and get your hands on some pretty powerful equipment, you would still need to wait until your level is high enough to equip them! Finally, an Exceed Level Challenge is just too d*mn difficult! Zhang Yang and his party had only managed to slay the Vampire Count Ferra because they were lucky. According to the system of the game, when players engages a boss that has Level Gap Suppression over them, rate of Spell type Skills affecting the bosses would be as low as only 10%! However, out of three times, the effect of {Glare of the Death God} got triggered twice! Zhang Yang had been ridiculously lucky, back there! So, counting on such luck would not be reliable, either! As it is, nobody should be fighting above their weight class in this game!

However, the 'First Clear' for this boss had rewarded every single one of them with an additional Luck Attribute Point. Currently, Zhang Yang has accumulated up to a total of 23 Luck Attribute Points. No doubt, that amount was otherworldly.

Fatty Han did not get the [Vampire Inheritance] right away after slaying

the boss. He still had some leftover quests to take care of before he can actually complete the entire Linking Quest. But they were all simple quests, so it wasn't really a big deal for him.

Endless Starlight, on the other hand, had witnessed how powerful a player becomes after obtaining a high-class [Inheritance]. He could uphold the 'oath' that he took previously, and begged Zhang Yang to aid him in getting a battle-type [Inheritance] for him. Well, according to Endless Starlight himself, he wasn't asking for much, he only wanted a Class B [Inheritance]!

Zhang Yang could not help but frown intensely. Fine, Class S [Inheritances] was definitely out of the picture, as there were only 6 of them in the entire game. Meanwhile, all Class A [Inheritances] was as well hidden as Class S [Inheritances], which would be very difficult to obtain. Even Zhang Yang had no idea on how to obtain any of the Class A [Inheritances]!

That would leave the Class B [Inheritance] as the last option then!

But truth to be told, in Zhang Yang's previous life, the most popular and prevalent [Inheritances] were the Class B [Inheritances]. But to assume that Class B [Inheritance] are easy to acquire, would be total bullsh*t! Although Class B [Inheritances] are not one-of-a-kind, each fragment of the [Inheritance] is unique. For example, if the first player acquires a piece of the fragment in Morning Town, Morning Town will never spawn a second fragment of the same piece!

In other words, other players cannot acquire the fragment from the same location, or the same quest, or the same monster. So, players cannot repeat the steps taken by the first player. Or else, everyone would be able to obtain the same [Inheritance], and Class B [Inheritances] would all become valueless!

As he gazed into the idiotic face of Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang started telling him the method of obtaining the [Kong Inheritance]. With Endless Starlight's current level of skills, Zhang Yang believed that Endless Starlight would still manage it without many problems --- of course, other

than battling that terrifyingly powerful boss, the King Kong Lord!

Zhang Yang was also having doubts about himself. Even the with {God of War's Transformation}, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, he would still be unable to defeat the boss! To acquire the [Kong Inheritance], it would be better for them to reach Level 120 first.

Initially, if Zhang Yang did not have the knowledge of his previous life, he might end up obtaining his first Fragment of an [Inheritance] three months later. With all the preliminary quests before the final quest that required players to battle the boss, players should be able to reach Level 110. By then, players should be able to remove the Level Gap Suppression function of the game.

After Zhang Yang took care of the Vampire Count Ferra, the remaining 'errand' quests of Fatty Han's [Inheritance] Linking Quest were not difficult at all. In just two days time, the fatty had stepped up the figurative podium, triumphantly declaring that he has officially obtained the [Vampire Inheritance]!

On the spot, he posted the series of Skills that he had acquired from his new [Vampire Inheritance]. All members of the gang, other than Zhang Yang were drooling at the Skills.

[Bloodthirst]: Increases 40% damage dealt.

[Immortal Constitution]: Transforms into an immortal subject, providing 5% additional Passive Damage Immunity. Recover 1% of HP in every 10 seconds. Lasts for 10 minutes. Cool down: 60 minutes.

[Vampire Transformation]: Transforms into a Vampire. Increases initial Maximum HP by a multiplier of 20 times. Increases initial Defense by a multiplier of 3 times. There is a 70% rate to be immune to Magic Damage. Increases initial Attack by a multiplier of 3 times. When you are in the {Vampire Transformation} form, you will acquire 1 Vampire Energy Point every 10 seconds. Some of your Special Skills would require Vampire Energy Points to be used. The {Vampire Transformation} lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Bat Form]: Disperses yourself into 10 little bats. These bats will then

approach and stick themselves onto targets and begin draining their blood. Recovers 1% HP every second. These blood-sucking little bats can fly. However, they are very weak, and can easily be killed. Reintegrating yourself would allow you to recover additional HP depending on the amount of blood that the bats manage to drain. {Bat Form} requires Vampire Energy Points to operate, 1 Vampire Energy Point can prolong the duration by 1 second. The {Bat Form} will be over when the Vampire Energy Bar is depleted, or when all of the little bats have been killed. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Currently, Fatty Han only had 4 [Vampire Inheritance] Skills. Of course, his [Inheritance] was no match for Zhang Yang's [God of War Inheritance], however, it was enough for Fatty Han to brag about! The wretched fatty went straight to the arena as he pulled Endless Starlight and Lost Dream along. He then tested out the transformation on the first opponent in the first match they got into, subjecting the poor soul through great! Well, at least he was having fun.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at that fatty. What a ridiculous joke! The {Vampire Transformation} can only be used once in every three days! This fatty had actually used it to show off in the arena during a duel! Zhang Yang was truly struck speechless.

But even without the {Vampire Transformation}, Fatty Han had attained another level in terms of DPS. With just the additional Skill {Bloodthirst}, Fatty Han's damage had gone way up --- and because the Vampire Count Ferra had a very high amount of Defense, the 40% increase in Fatty Han's attack wasn't exactly 40%! In other words, the damage output of Fatty Han would definitely be much higher on players, monsters, and other bosses, besides Vampire Count Ferra.

Therefore, Zhang Yang kicked Fatty Han straight over to the Dungeon Expedition Force of Lone Desert Smoke to explore the Dragon Throat Fortress together with Hundred Shots.

Dragon Throat Fortress was a Level 100 Dungeon, and only a few final bosses in the dungeon were Level 110. Without the Level Gap Suppression to suppress the damage output of players, even Fatty Han could saunter

around like a boss. Him joining the Dungeon Expedition Force had solved the damage output shortage problem they were having. With Fatty Han leading the Dungeon Expedition Force, they managed to take out the 12th boss in the Hard Mode. Three days after, Fatty Han had engaged with the 13th boss in his {Vampire Transformation} form. To battle against this boss, players must have the extremely powerful equipment to survive the battle long enough to slay the boss! With his {Vampire Transformation} kicking in, the Dungeon Exploration party of the Lone Desert Smoke finally broke through the boss and went on to the 14th boss.

By that act, many of the young, pretty female players in the guild greatly admired Fatty Han. Many of them were blinking at him flirtatiously. Unfortunately, this fatty already has someone back in his place. He would even need to 'report' to her whenever he goes out. So, as he 'engaged' with a bunch of flirtatious girls in conversation, Fatty Han would only dare to 'cheat' in his mind, entertaining them with his own cheesy lines.

Without even knowing it, Summer break ended, and it was now time to go back to school!

Wei Yan Er was now a University Freshman. So, her first time entering the university was a huge affair. Zhang Yang purchased an MPV (Multi-Purpose-Vehicle) for her as a gift. The main purpose of the MPV was to allow Wei Yan Er to load and transport her items, such as her 'toys', her clothes, and of course, her perfumes. Even Sun Xin Yu took a day's leave just to send Wei Yan Er off to her campus.

Zhang Yang did not think of it as such a big deal. Wei Yan Er would not be far from home. It wasn't like she was leaving town to study in another state, or in some overseas country. The Zhou Su University was just in the city. It was just 20 kilometers away from where Zhang Yang lived. So there was no need for all the fuzz.

However, the little brat had immediately shot down his complaints, even to his shock, "You can't imagine having a thief living in your own house!" It cannot be helped, that the little brat did not trust the witch that goes by the name of Snow. She had been taking the little brat's items for her own use. Even before she had finished piling her grievances on Zhang Yang,

they saw that very witch walking out from the little brat's room, with a lot of items in her hands as she made her way back to her room like a sneaky rodent!

...

So, Zhang Yang sent Wei Yan Er to the front gate of Zhou Su University. Because the new MPV that Zhang Yang had bought was only to allow Wei Yan Er to transport her stuff, Zhang Yang had not really invested much in it. The moment his low-end MPV entered the campus area, quite a number of people were laughing at them. Of course, Zhang Yang did not mind it at all. He had just graduated from this place about a year ago. He was more nostalgic than anything at that moment.

Chapter 523: Wei Yan Er goes to University!

Not only was Wei Yan Er a local in Zhou Su, she was also on the Board of Directors of her company. Her assets were worth hundreds of millions. The university knew this, and were treating her like royalty! They had already sent her all the necessary information. Her enrollment process was ready-made for her. Now, all she needed to do was to turn up in person at the location and move her things into the hostel.

So, when Zhang Yang drove the little brat over to the front of the hostel building, the area was already flooded with cars. Quite a number of people were busy unloading their luggage from their cars. These students should be Zhou Su locals or from the towns or cities beside Zhou Su. So, it made sense for them to drive there by themselves.

Wei Yan Er made a call, and almost immediately, the three pretty siblings, Zhao Bin, Zhao Yu and Zhao Xue ran out from the hostel towards Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. After all, these 3 sisters have met Wei Yan Er once and they appeared to instantly click. So, it made perfect sense for these three pretty girls to come out and welcome Wei Yan Er with open arms on her first day in university!

With the three of them taking care of the little brat, Zhang Yang felt so much more relieved. They got down from the MPV and unloaded Wei Yan Er's stuff.

The area wasn't just filled with the girls who occupied, or were bound to occupy the hostels, it was also filled parents, boyfriends, and even 'sugar-daddies'. The moment everyone in the area saw that another pretty lady coming out from the MPV, they were shocked!

Besides the flirtatious, buxom looks of Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu was a cool beauty in her own right. Her face shared some of the softness that the three 'Zhao' sisters had. Some of the male creatures might have been 'triggered' into thinking about something 'evil'. Needless to say, several 'sugar-daddies' had walked up to them like bosses and acted as if they

were the friendliest people on earth, as they attempted to invite the ladies for a 'tea session' with them in a nearby hotel. They also 'accidentally' revealed that they were quite rich, letting slip some sensitive topics such as 'Millionaire Assets' and 'Party Secretaries'.

Eventually, Wei Yan Er blew up and scolded the 'sugar-daddies', forcing them to retreat.

But would they give up so easily when they are so rich, or powerful? Some of them might even be rich and powerful at the same time! Also, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue happened to be the prettiest things they have ever laid eyes on, not to mention the fact that they had just been 'rejuvenated' with a touch of 'moisture' by Zhang Yang, making them look even more gorgeous and attractive than ever! Even a noble man would feel his heart rate rising! So, what about this bunch of dirty, lecherous, old goats? The answer was obvious!

Well, so much for Wei Yan Er's peaceful university life.

She had brought along so many items that two-thirds of the entire dorm was already occupied by her items! Even so, this mountain of things had already been filtered through, over and over again! Or else, 3 dorms would not even be enough to accommodate all of her items!

Fortunately, this little brat knew how to butter up others with her sweet tongue. She endured her 'pain' as she brought a lot of nice food and nice games to share with the other three of her roommates. As a result, they did not say a word about her overbearing presence.

To create a good bond between the little brat and her new roommates, Zhang Yang decided to treat the 3 girls to a meal in a nearby hotel after they were done with their packing.

Upon seeing Zhang Yang's ride, the three girls did not hide their disdain. They even looked down on Zhang Yang and the ladies who were with him. Things changed a little after they arrived at the hotel. The hotel seemed to be 'up to their standards', so girls began to ease up. Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a breath of sigh, disappointed with how materialistic people were nowadays.

The 11 of them stepped into the hotel. These 11 were made up of Zhang Yang and his 4 ladies, the three Zhao Sisters, and Wei Yan Er's three new roommates. Although Zhang Yang was filthy rich, he was not in a mood to spend his money like one. So, he simply ordered a few moderate dishes and wine. The expense was lower than 2,000 dollars. Though 2,000 dollars was not 'cheap' at all, they could not really get anything that matched their taste buds in this hotel.

So naturally, the three girls weren't happy about it. They would glance at Zhang Yang out of the corners of their eyes in disdain.

Zhang Yang was feeling confused. Weren't these college students supposed to simply accept anything that comes their way? It was not as if he was treating them to noodles by the roadside! A table of dishes that amounts up to 2,000 dollars is already the amount of salaries of a few people altogether for an entire month! Why would they be unhappy about this?

These three girls were Ma Yun Na, Zhang Yan Ni, and Li Yi Yue. Although they were not that pretty, they had youth on their side, with figures that had been well taken care of. With their make up on, they were 70% close to actual 'goddesses' among girls. However, without that thick make-up, that fact would have a hard time retaining itself.

After they ate for a short while, Ma Yun Na's phone went off. She did not walk away to take the call, but picked the phone up as if she owned the table, "Stepdad... hmm, I'm having my lunch... no, no. When did I ever have a boyfriend before? Don't you know that my heart is only yours to take? Well, I'm just having lunch with some dorm mates. Well, the food is mediocre, shabby... how could they possibly order food at your level! You're a big boss with assets worth tens of millions... ah, you're also around the hotel? Good, good. I'll be waiting for you to come over! Hmm, give me a kiss! Give me another kiss!"

After she hung up her phone, Ma Yun Na said, "My stepdad is coming now! You guys are in luck today! My stepdad is a very generous person, and he is going to treat you all to a meal of high standard seafood meal!"

After witnessing how she ‘stepdad’ed her way here and there on her phone, Zhang Yang and the ladies could already guess that this ‘Stepdad’ has already ‘stepped’ her flat! What a ruthless sugar-daddy!

However, to each person, his or her own way of getting by, so Zhang Yang did not get too hung up about such a trivial matter. Society nowadays laughs at the poor instead of the prostitutes. So instead of being angry at these girls for their questionable morals, Zhang Yang could only smile at them lightly.

--- Sun Xin Yu was wealthy as well. Zhang Yang only found out about it after knowing her for quite a while. Although her father is a powerful official, her mother is a CEO of a company in the market. The company was actually larger in scale compared to a weakened Silky Soft Holdings, back when it was struggling!

For them, a sugar-daddy, or as Ma Yun Na had put it, a ‘stepdad’, who was only worth tens of millions was a small fry to them. Zhang Yan and Sun Xin Yu only exchanged knowing smiles. It was not worth their time reciprocating to her show of wealth. But, Zhang Yan Ni and Li Yi Yue seemed to be very interested in Ma Yun Na’s stepdad. They were clearly very eager to get into his pockets as well.

After about 10 minutes, someone knocked on the door, and Ma Yun Na opened the door. An elderly man who was in his sixties walked right in. Although this old man was well-dressed and adorned from head to toe in branded products, his large belly bulged out, killing off the look he was going for. He had a bald patch on the back of his head, and a stern, serious face. However, his lewd, perverted eyes gave his true heart away.

"Allow me to introduce to you guys, my stepdad. His surname is Chang, full name is Chang Yue Lai, so let’s just call him Chang Yue. He is the boss of a large company, worth tens of millions!" Ma Yun Na twitted on like a bird talking about the owner of her cage, without a care for what others thought of her. She was declaring that this old man belonged to her and only her. It was like a warning to the other women and ladies that they shouldn’t try anything ‘funny’ with her stepdad.

Chang Yue Lai swept his eyes across the room and his radar immediately picked up the three beautiful ladies, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er. His initially serious face immediately vanished, his heart unable to stop itself from jumping up! These 3 ladies were basically on a 'disastrous' level of pretty and attractive! Though Wei Yan Er was rather flat, that pure and innocent look of hers would always send wolves howling and drooling over themselves!

"Stepdad! Stepdad ---" Ma Yun Na was a little bit unhappy about that, as she kept trying to pull and prod the old man back to this realm. After a few attempts, the old man finally came back to his senses.

"Haha, what a fine bunch of young people. It seems that this old man has arrived at an inappropriate time!" Chang Yue Lai tried to amuse them with his joke.

"That's not true! You're still young and strong! I know so!" Ma Yun Na threw a flirtatious wink at him. It sounded as if she was implying something.

Chang Yue Lai cracked a sleazy grin as his right hand moved around the curvy butt of Ma Yun Na. He urged Ma Yun Na to have a sit. After calling the waitress, they cleared the table out and switched the dishes with a new series of seafood dishes. From the looks of it, this meal should cost at least 10,000 to 20,000 dollars!

Ma Yun Na repeatedly praised the old man for his generosity, a proud look on her face. Meanwhile, Chang Yue Lai soaked in her praise and flattery like a round sponge, and even added his own spice to her statements, talking about how large his hypermarkets were, and how much they earned him. Although Han Ying Xue and her gang of ladies were not interested at all, Zhang Yan Ni and Li Yi Yue were doing all they could to appear interested, more eager than ever to be taken under him.

With so many high standard dishes, who else would still be interested in regular dishes? At first, Chang Yue Lai was casually chatting with Ma Yun Na, but after the seafood arrived on the table, he had switched his full attention towards Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, trying to

seduce them with money and power. Ma Yun Na could not help but to feel threatened. She was enviously enraged to the point that her legs quivered uncontrollably. At that point, the looks she threw at them were nothing but friendly!

Zhang Yang sighed dejectedly. His initial intentions were to help the little brat build a good relationship with her new roommates. However, he had made things worse now. Ma Yun Na would turn into an embittered enemy!

Chang Yue Lai was more of a conman than a businessman, but he had clearly been successful in his field. As he continued hammering hard on Zhang Yang's pride like a boss, Chang Yue Lai was also trying to win over Zhang Yang's ladies. He kept spouting promises to convince the ladies to enter the Entertainment Circle, and that they would definitely succeed in doing so, with their gorgeous looks! He claimed that he knew a few famous directors in that field. With some 'packaging' and 'training', the ladies would definitely do well in that line of work.

From his point of view, young girls nowadays only wanted money and fame. Based on these two factors, any girl would take off their pants for him! Well, it can't be helped, for in his case, evidence spoke up for itself. Such simple principles had never been wrong before. Just look at Ma Yun Na, she had given her body up to this old perverted man without sparing a thought! Only god knows how many more stepdaughters like Ma Yun Na had been 'slaughtered' by this old man already!

Annoyingly, however, these ladies that he was trying to 'buy' over at this moment did not seem to have any interest at all, instead, they were looking at him with disgusted faces! Wei Yan Er was practically fuming! She was just a step away from throwing a punch to the old man's face! Tsk! Well, when he gets his hands on her, it would be all the more delightful. The sensation of pressing his old body against the naked, ripe body of such a youthful girl was irreplaceable!

If the girl becomes a 'stepdaughter' to him, the girl would be moaning and calling out for her 'daddy' again and again. That would surely satisfy that sick mind of his.

Ma Yun Na was only getting more and more frustrated as she read his face. She now hated Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er even more than ever! If Wei Yan Er did not have to move in at such a time, if Zhang Yang did not treat them to a meal in this hotel, they wouldn't be in such a situation at all!

From her point of view, no woman will be able to resist the seduction of money and fame. She was certain that they would definitely become 'stepdaughters' of Chang Yue Lai after this meal! She would have to share the 'love' with them after that! Meanwhile, these ladies are so impeccably pretty and attractive! She was bound to be banished into the cold storage, sooner or later!

After Chang Yue Lai boasted about a little while, his phone suddenly rang. After seeing the number on his phone, Chang Yue Lai frowned for a brief moment as he picked up the call, "Director Lee, great to hear from you... yes... yes... Oh, you're sending your daughter to school now?... ah.... that's right, I'm on the 9th floor. Yes, it's the Penny Pavillion Lounge!"

After hanging up the phone, he reverted back to his serious face. But everyone had seen his unease when he spoke on the phone. This Director Lee had to be someone above him.

After a short while, another group of people entered the lounge, and one of them was actually someone Zhang Yang knew --- Gu Jun! He was the Deputy of the Police Department that Sun Xin Yu worked under! Gu Jun looks more dignified than ever, for he was about to become the secretary... the secretary of the state party committee. Basically, he had managed to do it all, thanks to Sun Xin Yu's connections. He was close to becoming an important figure. He had been doing great in his line of work. Rumors have been spreading about the top position that he is about to secure. Things are going extremely well for him, so of course, he would be greatly pleased!

Chapter 524: Please, Save My Son!

"Hey, Mr.Chang!" a middle-aged man in his mid-40s came right up and said, "Come, allow me to introduce! This is Deputy Chief Gu Jun Gu, and we are here to celebrate his impending promotion! This is Department Chief Mr.Liu of the District Publicity Division..."

Chang Yue Lai was delighted.

In order to do business nowadays, a businessman must have good connections with the ranking officers from up high! He would need as much support as possible from the officers if he ever wants to expand his business. Back in his day, Chang Yue Lai had managed to get in bed with a small Director of the Business Administration Department, shoving tens of thousands of 'gratitude' money over to the Director, causing his competitors to close down. After that, he monopolized the marketplace like a boss and earned a substantial sum of money.

Well, that was merely a very low ranking Director, not something that would match up to a Deputy! If he actually manages to get along with an actual Chief....

Chang Yue Lai's mind soared to the galaxies. He started fantasizing about the possibilities of him becoming far richer, earning assets worth hundreds of millions of dollars, and countless pretty women feeling him up. He quickly put on his best manners towards Gu Jun and the other officers. Chang Yue Lai looked like a totally different person as he tried to butter up the officers. Zhang Yang tore his eyes away from the scene. The word 'money' really is the root of all evil. It turned men into great actors and women into harlots!

Although Chang Yue Lai was making a great show of courtesy, Gu Jun did not have the interest or time for him. He simply exchanged some pleasantries with the man. In his current position, Gu Jun would not really be interested in entertaining this small time businessman. Furthermore, Gu Jun was about to ascend even higher up, to the same height with the secretary of the state party committee. With such a bright path ahead of

him, of course, he would look at a higher place.

Zhang Yang let out a sigh, then he said, "Let's leave!"

His initial intention to bring Wei Yan Er and her new roommates closer together had failed terribly. The situation was escalated to Chang Yue Lai serving a bunch of officers right in the middle of their 'lunch session'! Furthermore, Zhang Yang did not want to be misunderstood by Gu Jun. The last thing he would want was to be mistaken as an acquaintance of the perverted Chang Yue Lai! He would not want to unintentionally help the old sly achieve his goals!

"Hey, you people! How can you be so rude!" Director Lee, who seemed to be a friend of Chang Yue Lai suddenly jumped up as he tried to butter Gu Jun up as much as he could. As he saw that Zhang Yang and the ladies did not show any necessary 'respect' to Gu Jun, he thought that it was a good opportunity to 'express' himself.

At first, Gu Jun did not realize that Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were just beside him, but after hearing Director Lee shouting out, he turned his eyes over and saw Sun Xin Yu. That was the one moment that he felt a chill down his spine, and he almost fell face first on the ground!

She was the reason why he is where he is, today! He could not have made it this far without her!

Although he never actually found anything out about Sun Xin Yu, he did know that the Secretary of provincial Party Committee cared very much for this little policewoman, to the point where her breach of conduct, her wrongdoings would all be overlooked! Gu Jun understood that Sun Xin Yu had great power guarding her back, but she had not given him any chance of tackling her, so Gu Jun did not take any initiative to even try. He did not want to risk getting rejected, only to make things worse for himself.

Therefore, he would only cooperate with Sun Xin Yu in the police station without stepping out of boundaries.

Gu Jun quickly walked up to Zhang Yang and extended a warm hand over to Zhang Yang, "It's Mr.Zhang! Haha! When you became the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings, I was outstation. Sorry for not being able to

congratulate you personally! Please, forgive me!"

Well, this would be the definition of saving a person by twisted means!

Gu Jun is very well sophisticated in reading body languages. Of course, he could see the 'relationship' between Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. To butter up to a girl like Sun Xin Yu would be very simple. All you have to do is to be nice to the man she likes. It would definitely be much more effective than praising her a hundred times or a thousand times over!

Well, Gu Jun was greeting him with so much warmth and sincerity that Zhang Yang had no reason to turn away from him. It would be rude if he does that. So he reached out to shake Gu Jun's hand, and smiled, "Deputy Chief, you shouldn't be so courteous towards me! You're serving the people, while I am just an evil capitalist. How can I accept your good will! I'm not worthy at all!"

"What are you talking about! As you said, we are serving the people! Are you saying you are not one of the people I serve?" Gu Jun laughed out loud as he brought Zhang Yang over to have a seat with him. He ignored everyone else who had come along with him, especially the old businessman.

Chang Yue Lai, Director Lee and the others were very shocked to see what just happened. A powerful Deputy Chief of Police Department was treating Zhang Yang so politely! They could not help but wonder if Zhang Yang was related to some powerful officer from other provinces or districts.

Since that Gu Jun was so absorbed in entertaining Zhang Yang, the others could not help but to sit down together in silence. Even though they did not know who Zhang Yang really was, they did not dare to interrupt the very animated and lively Gu Jun. So, they sat down together and sipped on their wine glasses in silence.

As the place was a little cramped, they had another table brought in to make sure that everyone in the lounge was comfortable. After all, they were not spending their own money for this.

Zhang Yang could not reject the goodwill of Gu Jun, so he could only let

the girls and the ladies sit at another table as he went on entertaining the bunch of 'booze addicts' with all the alcoholic drinks on the table. It was indeed a trial of 'alcohol' in this era!

As things had escalated to such an extent, Chang Yue Lai no longer had any room to shine. All he could do was to laugh along as they spoke. He did not even get the chance to pour them any drinks. However, at the end of it all, the bill would still fall into his hands!

Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue did not appreciate being 'scanned' by Chang Yue Lai's filthy eyes, so they opened their mouth like lions and began to order far more expensive dishes like bird's nest and shark's fin soup. A few bottles of Maotail and red wine cost so much that even a filthy rich old man like Chang Yue Lai would feel 'slaughtered.' He lost his breath for a moment when he saw the vengeful girls ordering their mouths off.

However, he did not dare to reveal his feelings about that matter. Although he was worth tens of millions, it would still be a simple task for these highly-ranked officers to 'take care' of him and his business. It would just be a matter of seconds! He had been 'collaborating' with Director Lee to get rid of all his competitors back in the day. That was how he managed to be so successful today!

If one Director Lee was already capable of such things, what would more powerful officers be like?!

Back on the other table, Ma Yun Na and the other two 'gold diggers' were stunned.

They finally found out that Zhang Yang was actually the real 'Buddha' among the saints! They looked at each other in shocked realization! That was why there were so many beautiful ladies around him! Well, Zhang Yang is rich. He could buy these ladies over, and he could even take in tens or hundreds more of such ladies, if he wanted to!

Unfortunate for them, Sun Xin Yu and the ladies were simply too pretty. Ma Yun Na and the two 'gold diggers' did not even have the courage to attempt seducing Zhang Yang, worried that he might simply turn his head

away as if they were nothing! However, now that they were using their heads for once, Zhang Yang had treated them a meal to get Wei Yan Er closer to her soon-to-be dorm mates. He simply wanted her to have a happy experience. So the key to pleasing Zhang Yang would be Wei Yan Er!

The three of them suddenly changed their attitudes and began to be very polite and nice to Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang happened to see that, and sighed internally. However things had turned out to be, Zhang Yang had achieved his goal, nevertheless. At ease now, he turned to chat with Gu Jun. After all, he was also the second-highest ranked officer in the Police Department of the district. Being close to someone of that level would also be a good thing.

Finally, they had a good time in the lounge. The only person who did not share their sentiments was Chang Yue Lai. His heart ached deeply as he read the bill of this 'session'! If this bill was put on Gu Jun's tab, it wouldn't actually be any problem. But, he had been a listener for the entire night. He had to pay for his first-class seat. With no way of knowing if Gu Jun could even remember his name, he felt a piece of his heart being torn out, as his credit card parted from his hand! The money could possibly be spent for absolutely nothing!

After the ladies were back in the car, they couldn't stop going on about the facial expression of Chang Yue Lai the moment he saw the amount on the bill. They were all giggling over it. The three Zhao sisters were looking at Zhang Yang with glittering eyes, as they have never thought that Zhang Yang would be a CEO in real life. A CEO who also happened to be the best professional gamer ever to pop up in the decade.

Han Ying Xue sensed their gazes and pinched Zhang Yang in the waist, and said in a hushed voice, "You hoodlum, are you planning to have more than one wife? Maybe like the emperor with 72 wives?"

After sending Wei Yan Er back to her dorm, it was time for Zhang Yang and his 'remaining' ladies to travel back in their car. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were really reluctant to leave each other, as they were reduced to

sobbing piles of mess. Zhang Yang frowned intensely at them, "Oh come on, the little brat is just 20 kilometers away from home, and that is just a 30-minute drive from home! Don't make it like it's the last time you two are seeing each other!"

Eventually, he had to wrestle the two ladies off each other, literally. Before Zhang Yang and the ladies had left the place, they already heard Wei Yan Er giggling at a joke the Zhao sisters said. The four of them were already laughing like lifelong best friends. Han Ying Xue was so furious at her lightning-fast change of heart.

Back home, now that the playful little brat was no longer in the house, the large house had actually turned quiet and cold. A big piece was missing in the house.

Zhang Yang logged back into the game. As he had been helping Fatty Han with his [Vampire Inheritance], Zhang Yang had not yet worked on getting the [Zinc Alloy] and [Light of Miracle] to unseal the second seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Although he already has the [Heaven Shaker] and no longer had any urgent need of a much more powerful weapon for the moment, he was counting on the fact that he would inadvertently stumble upon new bosses as he searches around for the two quest items.

Players were beginning to congregate in the Chaos Realm. The level range gap for every map in the Chaos Realm was far larger than that of pre-Chaos Realm content. The system had been designed to encourage players by rewarding them with better 'initiatives'. The initial drops from bosses as they are slain for the first time and the next couple of times would have both the attributes of offense and defense and a 20 level reduction on Required Level. They would definitely be among the best equipment at the current stage of the game.

Well, such powerful equipment will not be dropping from the bosses each time they are slain. They would only drop from the first three kills on the bosses. In other words, if a player kills a boss for the fourth time, then the boss will no longer drop such equipment anymore.

Therefore, it would be best for players to move up maps and bosses in the Chaos Realm. The main priority would be to switch to a full set of Mythical Tier equipment.

Even though Zhang Yang had the advantage of his previous life's experience, he could not remember every single spawn point of every single boss in the Chaos Realm. So, he would have to locate them based on the descriptions and hints in quest journals. That would be the only way to do it.

After riding on Whitey Jr. for a while, Zhang Yang found himself at the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. According to the 'terrain' of the world map, this should be one of the main maps of the Indian Region. The Territory Gateway of the Indian Region was somewhere in the map. As Zhang Yang traveled through the map, he could see quite a number of Indian players.

Although regions would be enemy factions by default, players wouldn't simply jump down from their 'planes' and kill players from other Regions. Of course, if an enemy player from another Region appeared in one of their grinding maps, they would understandably try to repel the 'invader'. How else would they be able to grind and hunt bosses in their own lands peacefully?

After flying for a while, Zhang Yang arrived at the Skeletal Spirit Mining Cave. The [Zinc Alloy] would be lying somewhere in the mining cave.

The area is actually the territory of the Harpy monsters. There were countless of these sexy, winged creatures roaming around the entire area. A Harpy has the upper body of humans, but their legs were those of eagles, ending in their deadly, sharp talons. They were well capable of flying.

Although these creatures could fly in the sky, they evidently loved setting up their nests in dark, creepy caves. In this particular game, the Harpies seemed to be limited solely to the female gender. Unlike Wei Yan Er, Zhang Yang did not waste unnecessary cognitive bandwidth on trivial matters like reproduction and survival of the race.

He patted Whitey Jr. and landed near the cave. Almost immediately, he spotted a green-named NPC close to the entrance of that cave.

[The Old Man Kadejah] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 110

HP: 17,600

Note: A craftsman from Slurping Stallion Town, quick-witted and nimble-fingered.

It was a frail, plain-looking old man. He looked to be least 70 to 80 years old. He looked anxious and worried.

A quest should be available here.

Zhang Yang leaped off the back of Whitey Jr. and approached the old man together with Felice, "Hello, sir. Why are you here? There are many dangerous Harpies around this area. They are man-eaters, you shouldn't be here!"

"Young man, of course, I'm aware of that! But my son has been taken by these god d*mned birds. I, I must save him!" Kadejah steeled himself and gazed into the darkness of the cave. He rolled up his sleeves and got ready to charge in.

Zhang Yang quickly stopped the old man, "Sir, you will only get yourself killed if you charge in blindly like this! Let's put it this way. I am an Adventurer, so let me help get your son back. How does that sound?" He doesn't have a rat's *ss to give if this NPC dies, but before he gets himself killed, he should at least give him the freaking quest first!

Kadejah who was barely hanging on by a thread, quickly grabbed hold of Zhang Yang's hands and said, "Thank you so much, brave Adventurer, you have a good heart. You will definitely be blessed by the gods! Please bring my son back to me. Oh my! He's only 5 years old! He must be terrified now!"

Zhang Yang took a look at the old man, whose face was covered with wrinkles and white whiskers, and asked, "Sir, your son is... 5 years old?"

"Hey, warrior! Although I am really old, but I'm not so muddled that I've actually forgotten my son's age!" Kadejah was a little pissed. Well, that's not the point.

Zhang Yang could not stop admiring this old man. This old man must be really strong to actually 'produce' a 5 year-old boy at his age! He deserved a medal for that! Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Sir, rest assured that I am going to get your son back to you, in one piece!"

"Warrior, please be quick! These god d*mned birds might eat him alive! Oh, my poor boy ---" Kadejah could not hold his feelings back any longer and he began to cry.

'Ding! The Old Man Kadejah has given you a quest: Please Save My Son, accept or decline?'

Accept.

[Please Save My Son!] (Difficulty: B-rank)

Description: Please save my son! I was taking my son up the hill to get some dry wood, but unexpectedly, we encountered a few Harpies and they took my son away! Warrior, please save him! My poor Chionocpi!

Completion: Save Chionocpi 0/1

Although the quest did not seem to have any relations with his search for the [Zinc Alloy], Zhang Yang was not bothered by it. Since he is already entering the cave, he might as well complete another quest at the same time while looking for the [Zinc Alloy], earning extra experience points, while killing two birds with one stone!

He walked into the cave with quick steps and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Harpies that was the closest to him.

'-23,532!'

The Harpy let out a miserable screech and came straight down from the air, crashing into the ground, breaking i's neck. The Harpy died immediately after that. A Level 115 normal monster only had a total of 17,800 HP. Now that Zhang Yang was capable of dealing far more damage

than before, one hit was enough to kill the Harpy!

"Big brother, you are getting more powerful!" Felice has always been so cute, and the way she looked at Zhang Yang with her dazzling eyes this time was no different. Well, that completely gratified Zhang Yang's ego.

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang picked up the few [Inscribed Cloths] that the monster dropped, and ventured deeper in.

The cave was creepy and dark for some reason. Zhang Yang could not see the end of the cave on his map. When he brought up his world map, he realized that the endless turns and twisting passages of the cave could really mess one's mind up! Zhang Yang was too lazy to even remember the topography of the area. He bulldozed blindly on, turning away from dead ends, believing that he would eventually find the exit of the cave.

Zhang Yang only encountered normal Tier monsters all the way. The monsters were no match for Zhang Yang's new level of attack power. With just a simple swings from his [Heaven Shaker], he could already kill the monsters. But the cave was deep and extensive, Zhang Yang walked without any stopping for two hours before he finally saw two elite Tier Harpies guarding over a little boy.

TL Notes:

1. Maotai: Maotai is arguably the most famous Chinese liquor, produced and named after a town named Maotai.

Chapter 525: Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order

Compared to the normal Tier Harpies, the elite Tier Harpies were large in size, and their wings were definitely far more vibrant. They held long spears, and by the way, the spearheads glinted in the light, the spears had to be extremely sharp! The wooden shafts of the spears were stained with dry blood, suggesting that they had been used to kill before, and that goes to show that the Harpies are bloodthirsty militants!

[Raging Harpy] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,594 - 9,594

Skills:

[Screech of Despair]: Makes enemies run in despair, the target will not be able to do anything for 5 seconds.

[Force Strike]: Performs a powerful strike on the target, dealing 100% of Melee Damage with a 10% chance of triggering an additional attack.

Note: Loyal Servants to the Harpy Queen Yaniboque. They exist to fulfill the desire of the Harpy Queen. The entire Harpy race hunts for preys only to serve their Queen!

Although these Harpies were half-bird, half-human creatures, the human part of them were beautiful to look at. They had eyes, ears, nose, mouth, eyes brows and other features that a human would have! Even their boobs were fairly huge! They had nothing to cover their torsos except for crude, low-cut leather sash around their chests. Right between their legs, they wore metallic spats that ended right below their buttocks. Zhang Yang could see a few strands of golden hair protruding out from the bottom of those spats, and started wondering if those are bird feathers or a specific type of hair.

The only thing that was keeping this place from becoming a sacred ground for the 'Otakus' were the deadly talons that these creatures had!

Zhang Yang turned his attention to the little boy. He could not help but to give the name of the boy a double take.

[Chionocpi] (Normal, Puppet)

Level: 5

HP: 250

Note: He used to be a puppet. He was crafted by Kadejah with all his love and skill. Because he accidentally fell into 'Fountain of Life', he acquired a special but strange life force. Chionocpi is a fantastic child. His nose will extend whenever he lies.

Oh my freaking god!

At first, he thought that the Old Man Kadejah was still 'strong' at his age, but now, Zhang Yang saw the truth! Chionocpi, Pinocchio! He should have guessed it, earlier on!

The boy was huddled in a corner, shivering in cold and fear. A Treasure Chest lay right beside the boy. Zhang Yang eyed the Chest with greed --- it had been a long time since he last popped open a Treasure Chest!

Although there were two elite Tier monsters in the area, Zhang Yang had no fear. As the cave was rather narrow, he had brought Whitey along instead of Whitey Jr. He let out a cry and charged towards the monsters, together with Felice and Whitey. With a shoof, he flung a {Spear of Obliteration} straight at one of the elite Harpies.

"Rawgh ---" the two Harpies immediately let out deafening screeches and came at Zhang Yang with their spears.

Qiang! Qiang!

Zhang Yang raised his shield over his head and blocked the attacks of the monsters from above him. Then, he moved his shield behind him and crouched down, ready to make a leap. With all his power focused on his glutes, thighs and his leg muscles, Zhang Yang shot to the air! He then

reached out his left hand which was now free, and caught hold of one of the Harpies by the claw the moment it attempted to gain more height, having dove down to use its spear. With a mighty tug, he forcefully brought the Harpy to the ground!

Bam! That Harpy smashed into the ground with such force that the area was clouded up with dust. It had been dazed by the fall! Even though that was not a skill, but that ruthless slam had stunned the monster for almost one whole second!

The game had its share of realism. However, such maneuvers are not stated in the game manual, leaving players to discover them on their own! Furthermore, the effectiveness of such moves would be decided by the skills and controls of the players themselves, and the reactions of their victims-to-be!

A professional like Zhang Yang would have the sense to prevent their head from taking a hit. Even if he gets hit in the head, he could and would use his strong willpower to recover from that hit almost immediately. As it was not a Status Restriction Skill with a set duration of stun, players would be able to recover, based on their own willpower and the toughness of their bodies.

"Stupid bird! Where are you looking at!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud, swinging his [Heaven Shaker] straight at the head of the Harpy, even while he was still in the air!

"Rawgh ---" the Harpy that fell on the ground got back up defiantly. It raised its spear up and directed it towards Zhang Yang's chest. The Harpy that was still in flight had also let out a screech of its own as it charged at Zhang Yang, trying to work in tandem with its downed friend.

"{Dragon's Spear Barrage}!" Felice let out a loud cry as she picked her lance up and shoved it straight at the still-flying Harpy. Her swift movements churned the air current so much that dust was trailing after the movements of the lance!

‘-22458!’

Zhang Yang swung his [Heaven Shaker] hard at the Harpy before him

and caused a terrifying amount of damage to the monster. At the same time, his rage bar was instantly filled! So, he went on and activated his three skills - {Horizontal Sweep}, {Destructive Smash}, and {Frost Strike} one after another, inflicting the monster with an additional 200% Melee damage!

‘-47890!’

‘-90566!’

‘-48500!’

Very good! The {Destructive Smash} was a Critical Attack!

In just 10 seconds, the Harpy had lost more than 200,000 HP! Zhang Yang would have never imagined that he would do so much damage to anything, even with his {Inheritance}! Even if he activates his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, he would only cause about 150,000 damage!

A two-handed weapon really does so much better than a one-handed weapon when activating skills! The difference was tremendous!

Although he has lived two lives, Zhang Yang was still a newbie when it comes to using a two-handed weapon. So whenever he sees the super high damage values popping up on monsters after each attack, he was greatly content and pleased with himself. That sensation would be exactly like the sensation he felt as he stared into the lustful, lost, tender faces of Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. Back then he had satisfied them so much that they were close to losing their senses, and had even pushed the two of them to their climaxes! He would always feel proud of achieving such a feat.

Whenever he thought about Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang could not help but to scratch his head, realizing how much trouble they gave him.

An unspoken battle of wills often occurred around Zhang Yang. The girls were not exactly allies, or comrades, but as the saying goes, If you know the enemy and know yourself, you need not fear the result of a hundred battles. Whatever they were, they knew each other so well that

words need not be spoken. They would just stare at Zhang Yang at the same time, or just stare at each other at the same time, silently wrestling each other for Zhang Yang. Or, they would simply go up against Zhang Yang at the same time, sandwiching Zhang Yang until his eyes roll up, as if he was out of oxygen.

In bed, it was another battlefield. Well, men are not women, after all. Men are considered to be a 'one-time' product. Although some men can still go for a few more rounds after the act, they are not machines. The two ladies would also be fighting in this battlefield, keeping count on each other! One of them would ask for two rounds, while the other would ask for three! Zhang Yang could no longer tell if his days are considered heavenly or hellish!

But, he could not help but to wonder, why would they still be quarreling after they had grudgingly accepted each other in bed with him, at the same time?

Recently, looking at them, Zhang Yang noticed that they have been 'moisturized' to the extent that their beauty, mannerisms, and everything had been amplified several times over! Their skins 'glittered,' as if there was a translucent barrier over them! Daffodil Daydream and Wei Yan Er could only admire them more than ever, without ever finding out their secret skincare product!

Well, there's a chinese proverb that goes, no amount of plowing would destroy the land, only the cattle who did the plowing themselves would suffer! Women will never tire, ever, unlike the finite stamina of men, when it comes to the affairs of the bedroom!

Huh? Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. How did he even end up thinking about all this!

The attack power of the elite Tier monsters still packed a solid amount of punch, but they should be able to actually land their attacks in order to prove it! Zhang Yang went all out with a flurry of strikes, swinging his [Heaven Shaker] around like a black dragon. The two monsters were hit in basically all directions, unable to even regain their balance. They could not

even cause any damage to Zhang Yang, but could only repay him with more Rage points in an endless synergy!

In less than 2 minutes, the two Harpies fell to the ground, leaving some loot behind.

Felice knew that Zhang Yang was not fond of picking up 'cheap' items, so she ran forward and picked up the loot for Zhang Yang. It greatly pleased him! How nice would it be to have a girl doing that for him in real life?

Zhang Yang went up to the boy and said, "Chionocpi, don't be scared. Your father sent me here to get you home."

"I, I, I'm not afraid!" the little boy tried to act tough, but his nose suddenly grew by a few inches!

What a pitiful being, if this were to happen to someone in real life, Zhang Yang was certain that poor soul would have committed suicide! Human truly love to lie, be it for good or bad reasons, well, everyone should have lied at least once in their lives!

It is alright to lie sometimes, but to have a 'detector' that exposes you whenever you lie? That would just make you sad and pathetic!

Zhang Yang walked up to the Treasure Chest. He was glad to see that it was a Violet-Platinum Tier Treasure Chest, and it was not locked! As he was opening up the chest, he turned to the boy and said, "It is very normal to be afraid when you are in such a situation. Come on, I am sending you to your father right away!"

"Thank you, brother!" the nose of that little boy shrunk back to its normal size the moment he spoke again. He nodded and said, "Brother, I promise that I will not wander around and make my father worry again! There won't be a next time!"

His nose suddenly extended out again.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again, but when he heard the 'click', he turned his attention back to the Treasure Chest.

Treasure Chests and bosses are basically similar. Good equipment and items would come out of them only when they are being opened up for the first few times. After being opened up several times more, the same Treasure Chests of the map will no longer drop good equipment or items. Logically speaking, this location should still remain undiscovered for now. It should be the Chest's first uncovering.

Zhang Yang looked around in the chest and discovered that there are three things in it. One of the items was a heavy, black parchment of [Order], another was a crystal clear green [Gemstone], and the last one was an aquamarine-colored robe.

Could this be another [Territory Conquest Order]?

He quickly picked up the [Order] to examine it. However, it did not turn out to be a [Territory Conquest Order], but a [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order]!

Now, that's a pleasant surprise! Well, it's also great news for Zhang Yang, as he had no use for a [Territory Conquest Order] now, anyway. Not long ago, he could have conquered as many Territory Gateways as he desired. All Territory Gateways across all eight Main Region in the Chaos Realm were all his to pick as he was the only one in the entire Chaos Realm. Because he did not want to create too many enemies for China Region, he had only taken down the Territory Gateway of the Japan-Korea Region.

A [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] would increase the maximum capacity of players' number in Lone Desert Smoke by up to a total of 40,000, providing every single member of Lone Desert Smoke with an additional 40% experience points! Normally, it would take up about 10 days just to level up once. But with an additional 40% experience points, a player would save about 3 to 4 days for each level!

After all, the Lone Desert Smoke were at the maximum capacity of their Level 3 experience bar. So, Zhang Yang used the [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] immediately. The next thing that happened was the sweet voice of the server's notification system. After Zhang Yang made some

confirmation with the system, the Lone Desert Smoke Guild had officially been elevated up to Level 4!

The server announcement informed the players of Lone Desert Smoke, and as usual, for the next 3 days, every single member of Lone Desert Smoke would enjoy the additional experience points, along with a 50% discount on all equipment and weapon repairs!

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and other guildmasters started asking Zhang Yang about the where and how concerning the [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order]. They were guildmasters who ran their own guilds afterall, so was completely understandable for them to be so interested. Unfortunately, no two openings of a Treasure Chest, even if it is the same Chest, would ever be the same. So there is no way of telling if the next person, or the person after the next will ever come across another [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] again. Treasure Chests would never be a reliable source of obtaining such rare items.

After convincing them about the unpredictable nature of Treasure Chests, they finally left him alone. Then, he continued to look at the remaining two items.

The green [Gemstone] was actually a [Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone], something that Zhang Yang had no personal need for. So, Zhang Yang placed it into his inventory, keeping in mind that he could just hand it over to Sun Xin Yu, Fatty Han or other members who relied on the Agility Attribute. The robe was a Violet-Platinum equipment. It could already be equipped upon reaching Level 100. Zhang Yang widened his eyes, not because of its power, but because he could see the monetary value of it!

Chapter 526: Land of Savages

Clak clak clak!

A series of noisy footsteps was heard from afar, and a party of players had approached them. The party was consisted of multiple races of players, and were wearing different kinds of weird outfits. The group spotted Chionocpi and cried out "There!"

At the same time, they spotted Zhang Yang, but remained calm and neutral.

Zhang Yang examined each of their properties.

Savage Lord, Level 100, Guardian, Male Beastman, "Land of Savages", India Region.

King Kong Wrath, Level 100, Sacred Knight, Male Dwarf, "Land of Savages", India Region.

King King Arcane, Level 100, Assassin, Male Elf, "Land of Savages", India Region.

Hourglass Figure, Level 101, Sniper, Female Elf, "Land of Savages", India Region.

Bloodbath Apocalypse, Level 100, Pyromancer, "Land of Savages", India Region.

Woah, finally! The famous players of the India region! The core members of the S class Professional League battle team - "Steely Dangs Battle Team"! If Zhang Yang remembered it correctly, Hourglass Figure was the one who had obtained the S class Hunter's Inheritance, the Shadow Striker. That woman was also the young mistress of the Steely Dangs Group, in reality. Her background was no joke. Furthermore, the lady was a beauty and was once voted as the most beautiful girl in all of India. Inadvertently, such a woman would have had her hand requested in marriage many times over. The girl was uncannily similar to Snow Seeker of China, being both skillful in the game, while also being rich and capable of running businesses in real life.

Her most famous feat was when she defended India from being invaded by the European army. She had led a small team and had managed to hold the invaders back until reinforcements arrived. Her actions had protected the entire map of the Indian region from being taken over by any players from the European region. That feat was soon dubbed as the Ninth Miracle in the history of 'God's Miracle'!

It could not be helped. Men would definitely have her in their minds as they beat their meat about.

Even so, she was capable of such a feat due to her S class Inheritance. Right then, all 5 of them had not obtained any Inheritances yet. They were nothing but scraps to Zhang Yang.

"Chionocpi, let's go. We need to find your father." Zhang Yang ignored the Indians and lightheartedly spoke to the little boy.

"Alright!" the little boy cheered happily. He was nothing but a story plot character. He had no knowledge of the tension between players of different nations. In his heart, there was only one thought, and that was to meet his father.

"Hold!" said Savage Lord as he approached Zhang Yang. "Leave the NPC behind and we will spare your life."

"Guild master. This man has entered our region. Why are you being so courteous to him! Take his head and be done with it," said King Kong Arcane with a deep hatred in his voice. He then disappeared in a puff of smoke and headed towards Zhang Yang. If Savage Lord had given the order, King Kong Arcane would drop the man dead in the blink of an eye.

Even though Zhang Yang had hidden his character profile information, his character was marked with a red name tag, revealing that he was an enemy of their region. That sort of red color marked for players of a regional enemy would be even deeper, with a tinge of light violet and black.

Zhang Yang smirked, "Chaos Realm belongs to no one. Since when did you guys own any part of the land?! I found this NPC and killed the two monsters that were guarding him. Yet, you're here, trying to grab what I've

rightfully won over. Can anyone tolerate such an act?"

After Zhang Yang had finished with his speech, four of the Indians were pissed off. Only one of them, Hourglass Figure had chuckled delightfully, as if she was being given a cool drink after a hot, boring day. She placed her hands on her graceful hips and cat-walked towards Zhang Yang. Her slender waist, coupled with her rich and voluptuous chest could truly be a wonder of India.

She flashed her white, even teeth and said, "You are...Zhan Yu, I presume?"

What!?

The other four Indians were shocked, or rather, highly envious of Zhang Yang. Still, they did not lower their guards. Even though Zhang Yang was only one man, they could not be overly relaxed when facing China's strongest player! As professional players, they had the utmost confidence of winning over their opponents, yet none of them would ever underestimate anything or anyone. It a mindset that true professionals would practice.

For Zhang Yang, however, he was greatly dismayed at Hourglass Figure's reaction. He had wanted to lay low and avoid attracting too much attention. But, like the sun in the sky, no matter where he goes, sunflowers would be staring at it.

Zhang Yang could not help but think of Fatty Han and his catchphrase back in his previous life. Zhang Yang smirked confidently and said, "Aye. That's me!"

"Hmph!" Bloodbath Apocalypse swung his magic staff and stabbed the ground. "He is a professional, so is he mocking us for being nobodies?! Our guild master was courteous enough to give you a chance to surrender. Now that you blatantly rejected it, no more talk! A bloodbath it shall be, then!"

Savage Lord lifted his hands and stopped Bloodbath Apocalypse from screaming any further. "Zhan Yu, this is the main battleground for players of the India region. I'll have you know that you have my respect and

profound admiration. Hence, I do not wish to have to kill you now. We shall fight, but I hope that it will be in the battle arena, a few months from now in the World Championship final rounds. Until then..."

"That sounds extremely implausible. But I accept your invitation! We're done here, beat it!" said Zhang Yang arrogantly, as he flung his hands about as if he was chasing away flies.

His rude gesture was the limit. All four of the Indians were greatly offended and came at him. Hourglass Figure had taken a few steps back, one hand below her chin, its elbow resting on the other hand that was around her waist, her mouth parted in delight. In the field, only 3 of them were visible, as King Kong Arcane had entered stealth mode. Zhang Yang could not discern his location, but he was still able to predict where the Thief would come in from, judging by the positions of this teammates.

While facing players with no Inheritance, Zhang Yang was unstoppable!

Zhang Yang smiled widely and yelled, "Felice, let's dispose of these Indians!"

Felice did not know the meaning of Japanese, Korean, nor Indian, all she knew was that those three were Zhang Yang's enemy, which made them targets for her to kill! The cheerful little girl then turned serious. She morphed into her Dragonhawk form and shot into the sky to obtain air superiority, allowing her to target any player at will.

Those who would want to target Felice would have to be ranged attackers since it was impossible to ride mounts in a cave! Zhang Yang grinned and spun around with his Heaven's Shaker.

Splat!

Blood spewed out in the air from out of nowhere, and King Kong Arcane was knocked out of his stealth mode. His face was heavily bruised, and several of his teeth were on the ground.

"How did you find me!?" cried King Kong Arcane, dazed. The man had been in stealth for a good amount of time. He had been standing behind Zhang Yang all the time and had the other three of his comrades draw

attention away from him. Technically, there was no way that Zhang Yang could trace his position.

"Lucky guess," said Zhang Yang, shrugging. He then lifted his hammer and struck King Kong Arcane with {Destructive Smash}.

{Blur}!

The hit from before had taken more than 20,000 HP from King Kong Arcane's HP bar. Knowing Zhang Yang strength, he had activated the anti-physical attack skill {Blur} to invoke a 50% chance of dodging an attack. King Kong Arcane had even leveled up the skill to max, which made him gaining 95% evasion rate!

Shush!

Zhang Yang's hammer went through him like air!

Zhang Yang scoffed and left King Kong Arcane alone, heading straight for Bloodbath Apocalypse. Inheritance in hand or not, magic class players were Zhang Yang's greatest threat. However, with the God of War Transformation skill, he would gain a 90% chance to nullify all magic attacks!

"Oh, please do keep looking down on us!" cried Savage Lord and he glided through the ground and rushed towards Zhang Yang with {Charge}.

Just when Savage Lord was 0.1 seconds from hitting Zhang Yang, Savage Lord saw a glimpse of Zhang Yang's grin. Before he knew it, a large bear's claw was 1mm away from his face.

{Wild Charge}!

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and rushed towards Bloodbath Apocalypse.

All 5 of the India region players were stunned by what they had just witnessed.

The skill had no casting time, or unique postures to telegraph the coming of the attack. The time span for players to react would be less than 0.1 seconds! Yet, Zhang Yang was still able to react within such a time span and had even managed to capture Savage Lord in the middle of his

high speed {Charge}!

Everyone believed that either it was pure coincidence or ...

Bloodbath Apocalypse was good. After all, he was a member of an S class battle team for the Professional League. Just when Zhang Yang had activated his skill, Bloodbath Apocalypse had {Apparated} already and teleported away towards the left. Just as he took a step, he saw that his movement speed had already been greatly reduced! It was then when he noticed that he was struck with the skill - {Thunder Strike}, a Guardian AoE attack skill that could induce a 5 seconds slowing effect!

Bloodbath Apocalypse was stumped. He had paid so much attention trying to run away from Zhang Yang and had not noticed when he applied the effect of {Thunder Strike} on him.

Zhang Yang glided towards Bloodbath Apocalypse.

"Bastard!" King Kong Arcane cried out, enraged. He was right behind Zhang Yang, tailing him closely, but was affected by the {Thunder Strike} attack and had been forced out of invisibility once again.

Pew!

Felice's {Fire Missile} shot out and headed towards King Kong Arcane.

Wham!

‘-20,874!’

All the time, no one had paid any attention to the Battle Companion in the sky. Even though King Kong Arcane knew that Felice was targeting him when he was removed from stealth mode, he did not intend to use {Shadow Cloak} for regular Battle Companions weren't very powerful in the first place! The blast itself had given him the shock of his life!

What the actual f*ck!? How could a Guardian produce damage stronger than a Berserker and a Battle Companion possess magic attack far superior to a Pyromancer!? Just who are these people!

Since Bloodbath Apocalypse was inflicted with the slow effect, he knew that it would be impossible for him to escape from Zhang Yang.

Infuriated, the man started to think back of the initial situation. They could have simply walked away and taken him by surprise at a later venture! Too late for that now. Bloodbath Apocalypse refused to run away, he activated {Heart of Flame} and consumed a bottle of {Power Potion} and started to chant the most powerful spell, the {Explosive Flame}.

10 meters wasn't far. A player could cover that distance by sprinting with all their might within a second. Zhang Yang let out a shout, flying across the ground, and struck him with a normal attack and a {Horizontal Sweep}.

‘-22,439!’

‘-47,882!’

"Umph!" Bloodbath Apocalypse fell with a grunt. His head was brutally bashed open, his brain juice was splattered all over the cave, leaving his skull empty, along with his lifeless body.

Zhang Yang was flabbergasted. He had not expected the hammer to have such a gory effect on his victims. The next second, he stomped the ground hard to push himself around and charge towards King Kong Wrath.

"Holy crap!" Savage Lord recovered from his stun and screamed in horror. He had not expected Bloodbath Apocalypse to be killed instantly without leaving a split-second reaction for him to use {Ice Barrier}. But then again, Zhang Yang had the Inheritance class' 50% attack boost passive and the weapon's 20% attack boost effect. Combined with the 3.8 seconds weapon attack interval, Zhang Yang's attack could rival that of a Mythical tier boss. For him to insta-kill a Spellcaster should not be a mystery!

Chapter 527: Slaughtering the Indians

Savage Lord was enraged. Or he was trying to be. In truth, he was more confused than anything. There were five of them and one of Zhang Yang, yet he was already picking them off in the opening seconds of the battle! They did not even get the opportunity to use any life-saving skills!

"GRAH!" he bellowed, almost puking his guts out. All skills, including the ones that he had reserved for the boss, was unleashed. The man swung his axe and shot out a ray of silvery light. The light then morphed and formed itself into a white fiery bird that flew directly into Zhang Yang's chest.

Eh?

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyes and decided to only use {Last Vigor}. The skill would push his maximum HP to over 140,000. With the 20% passive damage reduction skill, it would take a damage value of over 180,000 to kill Zhang Yang instantly.

Zhang Yang maintained his pace and charged towards King Kong's Wrath.

‘-5,394!’

As the bird seeped into Zhang Yang's body, he had taken that one tick of damage. Zhang Yang then hypothesized that the skill that Savage Lord had just used was similar to that of {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, a skill that could deal 10,000 fixed damage (depending on damage attribute) every second, for 10 seconds.

King Kong's Wrath rushed over to Savage Lord. As a good healer, one must rush over to the tank to heal instead of running amok all over the place.

{Heroic Leap}!

Zhang Yang leaped into the air like a god towards King Kong's Wrath.

{Heroic Leap}!

This time, Savage Lord took the opportunity to feed Zhang Yang his own medicine. Savage Lord had been stunned in the middle of his {Charge} animation. Even though it was the bear who had did it, it was still under the control of Zhang Yang. He wanted to stun Zhang Yang in the middle of his own skill as revenge.

Zhang Yang grinned evilly. Just then Savage Lord was about to crash into him, He timed the location and position perfectly and activated {Brutal Smash} to stun the poor fellow for 4 seconds.

Like a paper plane that had struck a wall, Savage Lord fell from the sky.

King Kong's Wrath panicked and quickly activated {Terror Shriek} the moment Zhang Yang landed at him.

"Good reaction!" Zhang Yang had to compliment the man's skills. Zhang Yang then countered the {Terror Shriek} effect with {Warrior's Will}. Sadly, his attack interval was as long as 3.8 seconds. He would need to wait for another 2 seconds or so to launch another strike. Hence, even though {Brutal Smash} was about to deal damage, it shared a 1 second global cooldown which required him to wait for 0.5 seconds before any skills could be activated.

Since there was nothing he could do at the moment, Zhang Yang just stood there and waited. However, instead of attacking as he normally would, Zhang Yang swung his shield into King Kong's Wrath's face, knocking him off his feet and sent him crashing into the ground, his face digging up a new drain in the ground. It only grew in length as he slid further along, his legs angled to the sky.

"ZHAN YU--!" Savage Lord screamed in agony. He then used {Warrior's Will} to dispel the stun effect on him and charged towards Zhang Yang. At the same time, he flicked his fingers and cast {Sacrifice} to protect King Kong's Wrath.

Wham!

Zhang Yang had whacked the poor fellow who had just gotten back up to his feet. Once he was on the ground again, Zhang Yang stepped on the player's back and laughed at Savage Lord, "No need to get so aggravated.

Though I feel the need to tell you that I don't swing that way. I prefer good, old-fashioned pussies and boobies instead of d*cks and buttoholes."

"Bastard!" Savage Lord lost it. With quick movements, the Guardian swung his hands and threw a beam of light at Zhang Yang. The {Spear of Obliteration} was weak. He was no Zhang Yang. His damage on Zhang Yang was only over 3,000 damage, since he was wielding a One-Handed Weapon.

‘-5,394!’

The fiery bird skill was still damaging Zhang Yang which had drained him by only 5,394 HP per second. 10 of them would be over 54,000, and that could drain half of Zhang Yang's HP bar.

"Just die!" King Kong Arcane had revealed himself in front of Zhang Yang. He had activated {Shadow Cloak} which granted him immunity to Felice's attack and had dispelled the slow effect of {Thunder Strike}. The blades struck the air, followed by a burst of light from the middle of his palm, which King Kong Arcane directed it towards the center of Zhang Yang's chest.

Mm. Mm. Zhang Yang chuckled. He had forced the opponent to expend all of their ulti skills. With a wide malicious grin, Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall}. After the 1 second global cooldown ended, Zhang Yang struck Savage Lord with {Frost Strike}.

‘-36,450!’

Savage Lord was struck with a heavy damage and icy bricks started forming around him, which then grew upwards to encase his entire character in ice. Since the ice was slightly transparent, Zhang Yang could see the disgruntled expression on Savage Lord's face. He had already used {Warrior's Will} to dispel the {Heroic Leap} stun effect and could only sit there and wait until the frozen effect wears off over time.

Thud!

Zhang Yang lifted a leg and sent King Kong's Wrath flying away.

"GRAH!" The diminutive King Kong's Wrath was almost at the brink of

madness. He had never known that PvP would involve such maneuvers where he could be treated like a sandbag by Zhang Yang. Even though the attack had not dealt a single damage, it had made him lose his temper, focus, and most importantly, his dignity.

{Sacred Protection}!

King Kong Wrath could not take it anymore and immediately entered an invincible state. No matter how much rage had clouded his senses, the responsibility of being a healer had never left his judgment. He did not blindly charge at Zhang Yang, but went towards Savage Lord to heal him.

Zhang Yang chuckled. Heal? Really? Right when healers had been so greatly depowered that their powers were as good as smacking a band-aid down the bleeding stump of a severed limb. Could his heal really keep up with the attack combination of Zhang Yang and Felice?!

That aside, be it buffed or nerf, Zhang Yang still had his {Destructive Smash} that reduced healing effectiveness by 75%. Even if he had not used the skill to debuff Savage Lord, it would take four more King Kong's Wrath to fully negate the HP loss dealt by Zhang Yang and Felice.

Wham! Bam!

As one, Zhang Yang and Felice moved on to Savage Lord who was still encased in ice. Even though he was a class that was meant to take damage head on, his long HP and Defense were completely useless, they were emptied out like a broken aquarium! However, Savage Lord responded accordingly. Even though he was restricted from moving, he could still activate {Shield Wall}. The skill's greatest advantage was that it could be used anytime, anywhere, and in any situation, except {Silence} and {Disarmed}.

All three Indian players were safe, but only temporarily. Their invincible protection would only last for 10 seconds. During that time, there was nothing that they could do but to cower and hope for some miracle to save them from being humiliated! The shame of calling themselves professional players, and yet, they could not even defeat a single player and his Battle Companion.

10 seconds passed on quickly and the protection skills had expired. Felice shot down from the sky in her human form and crashed down majestically to the earth, leaving a small crater. With lightning speed, she swung her lance downward and did a quick thrust. After activating Dragon's Spear Barrage, she sent out a normal attack that followed almost instantly!

‘-17,822!’

‘-27,168!’

King Kong's Wrath was horrified. His maximum HP was only as much as 50,000. The 40,000 over damage by Felice was so strong that it had left King Kong's Wrath with only more than 10,000 HP left. Since he could not use a mount to flee from the cave, there was no place for him to escape. One more pebble falling from the ceiling of the cave would kill him off. {Berserker's Heal} and {Sacred Heal} had already been removed from the game, and since he had already used {Sacred Protection}, there were no other skills left to protect himself. All he could do was to leave his fate in the hands of his teammates.

{Blind}!

King Kong Arcane grabbed a handful of sand and tossed them towards Zhang Yang's eyes, causing a momentary blindness and inflicted the {Confusion} debuff.

Zhang Yang immediately counter the debuff with [Heart of the Death Knight] accessory skill and aimed his hammer at King Kong's Wrath. With all the muscles tensing up in his forearm, Zhang Yang forcefully heaved down the hammer with the might of a God of War!

‘-98,774!’ {Destructive Smash}, Critical.

Pak!

King Kong's Wrath's head blew up, as if there was a bomb planted in his skull, splattering all his brain juice and other gory stuff around the cave and even on Zhang Yang's metallic armor.

Zhang Yang felt like throwing up. The scene was too brutal for any

normal human to handle. No wonder Tang the monk had always expressed his disdain towards Sun Wukong. The old monkey would always use his magical pole to smash open the enemy to pieces. How would one feel safe with such a brutal creature that is capable of doing such an act, and actually guide him to the west?

"No!" cried Savage Lord and King Kong's Wrath in horror. They were India region S class Professional League Battle Team! If word got out that an entire battle team was "raped" by a single man in the wilderness, they would have no places to hide their faces.

Zhang Yang scoffed. With {Shield Wall} active, Zhang Yang's HP was constantly recovering. The best thing was that {Rearm} was ready to be used at anytime! He also had {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}! {Glare of the Death God} too! There were still many trump cards that he had not used! Yet the opponent already seemed to have their wills broken. What else could they use against him?

Heaven's Shaker was swung around, bashing his opponents like a sledgehammer smashing into bricks. At the same time, Zhang Yang had been using kicks, hooks, trips, shoves, sweeps, and many other "Supporting Attack" to torture both Savage Lord and King Kong's Arcane to the point that they could not even get into their stances!

Wham!

In less than 10 seconds after the second death, King Kong's Arcane had fallen. 15 seconds after that, Savage Lord had entered the spectral realm.

From the moment Zhang Yang had started the fight and until the last opponent was killed, the entire process had only taken a minute or more, even though so much had taken place in between those times. That was the ferocious power of Zhang Yang and Felice. Besides the split second {Wild Charge} to catch Savage Lord, the white bear had done nothing at all, it had been running up and down the field, trying to catch players as if they were floating butterflies, to no avail!

Claps

From a corner of the cave, Hourglass Figure was leaning against the cave

wall and clapped her hands slowly and gracefully. Her expression was unexpectedly calm and somewhat delighted. Perhaps, it's fortunate that the four fallen Indians had already released their souls to be revived again, or else, they would be completely annoyed at her actions.

During the entire battle with the four men, Zhang Yang had always kept an eye out for the woman. Not once he had let her out of his sight. She was, after all, one of the top players in the world that had obtained the S class Inheritance, and was hailed as the best hunter in the world. Even though when Hundred Shots obtained the Dragon pet, she was still able to step above him in every way possible.

Even though she had not yet obtained the Shadow Striker Inheritance, Zhang Yang dared not to lower his guard around her. He had not activated the God of War Transformation and had his HP and Defense were at their natural values. It would be rather unfortunate if he were to receive a sneaky attack when his HP is low.

Still, all her actions were incomprehensible. She was just standing there, watching Zhang Yang slay all her teammates and had done nothing to stop it. What was she thinking then? Still, if she had joined in at the moment when Zhang Yang had made any careless mistakes, Zhang Yang could still turn the table around with {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, and also {Glare of the Death God}. With so much power in hand, if he was still at disadvantage, he could activate the God of War Transformation at any time to butcher them all.

Before other 5 S class Inheritance makes their appearances, Zhang Yang would remain undefeatable.

"Hmm. Mm. Not bad. I expected no less from the man I've heard so much about. Well done, Zhan Yu." Hourglass Figure placed her one hand on her hip and cat walked towards him. She smiled seductively and said, "I'll give you a chance to join my guild. Think about it carefully."

Zhang Yang smiled and pointed at the dead bodies and said, "Let's say I accept, would you not be afraid of offending these guys?"

Hourglass Figure laughed with her rich voice and bent over. Her peaks

bounced about wildly. Zhang Yang stared at the peaks rather boldly and compared them to Sun Xin Yu. Hourglass Figure does have a wonderful pair of boobs, perhaps she was on the same level as Sun Xin Yu. However, even Sun Xin Yu's toned abs could not match up to her waistline. They were indeed slender and made her boobs stand out even more prominently.

Hourglass Figure gestured at them casually and said, "They are just a bunch of nobodies with a major superiority complex. Zhan Yu, join the India region. Together, we can conquer the world! Or perhaps, conquer me~"

Zhang Yang could not hold in his laughter and said, "In that case, how about I invite you to join China? I don't mind having more partners in bed!"

Hourglass Figure widened her gaze and laughed loudly. "Zhan Yu, my dear. You, do know who I am, don't you? I'm about to own Steely Dangs Holdings! Right now, I own 7% of the total share of Steely Dangs, worth more than 7,800,000,000 USD. Are you sure that you want me to be your lover?"

Crap...he could never allow himself to lose his honor! What's more, he was technically representing China against India! How could he allow himself to lose! Even if it was in terms of financial fortune!

He quickly thought of a way to switch the topic and said, "Hmm. What do you want? Money or man?"

Hourglass Figure cocked her head and crossed her arm to lift her breasts higher up to Zhang Yang. "I know that you are wealthy. It's expected. However, I can offer you a good deal."

She then lifted her index finger.

"1 million?" said Zhang Yang disgruntledly.

"Tsk ts k ts k." She shook her head. "You're either being too humble or looking down on me," said the smexy indian chick. "100 million, in USD."

!" Zhang Yang was thrown away. The women had balls bigger than he

did! Even though 'God's Miracle' was already famous throughout the globe, but it was still one year away from reaching its peak! Yet, this woman would take 100 million right then to coax him over. Zhang Yang could not decide whether she had such foresight or was just too lonely...

Still, Zhang Yang had already amassed more than 100 million worth of fortune himself. Zhang Yang felt that after that amount, anything more or less would be nothing but numbers. He would not be tempted by Hourglass Figure's offer.

Zhang Yang smirked and said, "I stand by what I said. I don't mind have Miss Hourglass Figure in my bed. Come to China and I'll welcome you with open arms."

Hourglass Figure widened her eyes. She was genuinely shocked by his response and shook her head. "What a shame." She turned around without saying anything else and disappeared from Zhang Yang's sight.

"Won't you want to have revenge for your fallen teammates?"

Hourglass Figure stopped midstride, angling her hips and turned her head around, "Right now, I'm not your opponent! That said, you are the first player to obtain an Inheritance, aren't you? You defeated those four idiots without the need to use the transformation skill. For now, I should at least find myself a stronger Inheritance, and come back for you when I do. I shall see you in the world championship Professional League!"

Hourglass Figure turned around after she was finished with her speech. In no time at all, she turned around a corner and disappeared.

Chapter 528: The Hidden Properties of a Battle Companion

Zhang Yang did not stay to guard the dead bodies. Instead, he led Chionocpi out of the cave. The cave was too large and if he had no quest guiding assistants, he would never be able to search for the [Zinc Alloy] when he does not even know what it looked like.

As they walked on, Zhang Yang casually asked, "Chionocpi, did the harpies do anything to you?"

"N-No!" cried Chionocpi. His nose then grew longer. Nervous, Chionocpi quickly added, "There's this weird lady harpy that was always asking me to place my face in front of her. She would make me repeat and lie and then a truth in turn and then repeat it over and over again. I don't know what she wanted me to do, but she made my nose all sticky and wet! What a weird harpy, asking me to use my nose to poke her insides. She knows very well that my nose is made of wood, moisture isn't exactly good for it! She seemed to cry out each time it grew longer and shorter. How scary."

Zhang Yang stopped for a good moment and facepalmed hard. The developer who designed this quest must have been a dry f*ck...

That being said, he turned to Chionocpi and took note of his nose and limbs. If he too had such an ability, he could have already dominated Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue! It's not that his magnum was lacking in any aspect. In fact, Zhang Yang could proudly say that he was superior to most men! It was the fact that the two girls were always at each other's throats, always demanding more and more from him, even as they shot death gazes at each other. When he was done with one, the other would want it, and the cycle would continue until Zhang Yang's golden sack was completely shriveled up!

If he had a single finger that could be controlled like Chionocpi's nose, he should have already pacified both women with ease.

As he sighed heavily, Zhang Yang and Chionocpi made their way of the

cave. The old man Kadejah was waiting anxiously. When he saw the silhouette of Kadejah, the little boy was overjoyed and ran over to the old man with tears in his eyes. The old man bent down and embraced the boy with his arms. "Chionocpi, my boy!"

"Father!" cried Chionocpi as he hugged his father.

After the emotional reunion, Kadehaj lifted his head and thanked Zhang Yang. "Brave adventurer, I can't thank you enough for saving my son!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Please Save My Son! Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, "Chionocpi is a good kid. No one in their right mind would not get in between him and the mouth of a monster."

Kaedjah nodded his head and wiped away his tears. "Adventurer, I do not know whether this piece of news would be useful to you but, I've heard the ironsmith in the town had mentioned about a rare mineral that could be found in the cave. The mineral is expensive and can be sold for a large fortune. Rumors say that the harpies are fond of the mineral and had hidden it away in some chest. The key to the chest is with the harpy leader, the Harpy Queen Yaniboque. If you can defeat her and obtain the key to the chest, you could sell the minerals for a large sum of gold coins!"

...

Eh? No quest notification?

Zhang Yang stuttered a little and said, "I-I thank you for the news. Old man, if I do get rich, I will come back and have a drink with you!"

Kadejah smiled and chuckled, "Thank you. I bid you farewell, adventurer. We shall take our leave now."

As the man turned around, Kadejah looked down to Chionocpi and said, "You must listen to me, and never run around again!"

"Yes, father!" Chionocpi nodded his head, and his nose grew a little. What a prick!

Zhang Yang turned back to the cave and headed to the place where he had rescued Chionocpi in the first place. He wanted to take the opportunity to rush in, since the monsters that he had killed had yet to spawn. Even though the monsters were not difficult to kill, it would still be a little troublesome. Halfway through, Zhang Yang had bumped into the group of four Indians that he had killed not too long ago.

Their face turned pale, but they came at him anyway, thinking that he was as unprepared as they were.

Zhang Yang laughed at their stupidity. He had not used any strong skills when he had first defeated them. So, killing them now would not make any difference. In fact, it would only be easier, since he now knew how they fought. With Felice joining his attack, the two of them had sent the four Indians to their graves again. It was all too simple for him, since Zhang Yang had the S class Inheritance, while Felice was a Battle Companion equipped with a complete set of Mythical equipment. With the two of them, they could completely crush any players right there and then. Come four or five, even 40, or 400, no one would not stand a chance when Zhang Yang activates his God of War Transformation! It would be a walk in the park for him to kill both normal and professional players. The difference in power when he is in Transformation mode was like heaven and earth, with no gray areas in between the two!

Not long after the fight, Zhang Yang came to the place where he first found Chionocpi. The cave was huge, and the routes were as complex as a spider's web. He would usually walk with one hand against a wall at all times when in such caves. However, this cave had circular routes. If he had done so, he would be circling around endlessly.

Zhang Yang enlarged the minimap and found a large cavern that was even bigger than the entire cave! Though it was not clearly specified, bosses usually reside in a large area. Hence, it would be sensible for him to start there first.

After memorizing the pathway, he then proceeded to head in the general direction of the cave. Not long after, the monsters around had gained a tier, turning from normals to elites. Even though they could not cause

Zhang Yang much trouble, it would still be time-consuming for him to kill them all. Besides, the four Indians might come back for his head anytime.

Zhang Yang then decided to use {Shadow of the Void} and {Burrow} to sneak past the monsters and moved deeper into the cave, unhindered. There was no way for Savage Lord and his mates to trace his pathway.

Even though the pathway to the boss' room was clear-cut and simple, the way to it was completely filled with monsters. When {Shadow of the Void} and {Burrow} expired, he had to start killing his way through. It was a good haul as he had gained many pieces of equipment. Despite being barely dressed, the harpies had dropped a total of over 50 Gray-Silver equipment and 13 Yellow-Gold equipment. Zhang Yang was on the verge of filling up his inventory.

"Little Yang! The official site had released information about the tiers of Battle Companions. Check out little Felice's grade. How many stars is she?" said Fatty Han through the voice comm just when Zhang Yang was starting to get annoyed at picking up equipment.

"Oh," said Zhang Yang as he nodded unconsciously. "What was it again?"

Fatty Han laughed and explained.

Battle Companions were unlike pets or mount. That had already been clearly established. It was true that there were Black-Steel, Yellow-Gold, or Violet-Platinums, but players had found out that Battle Companion had more than those grades. Felice was just too special to be even graded in the first place, but Han Ying Xue's Battle Companion Messick, and the little girl's Battle Companion "The Artist", Reina were too far apart in terms of their prowess. Messick's HP was at least seven times that of Reina!

Even though Battle Companions could equip armor or weapons to increase their strength, there was no way to tell if the Battle Companion they had was strong or weak, which left players greatly confused. Hence, when countless of players threw in an endless amount of inquiries to the officials, the developers had gotten sick of explaining and decided to release some information about the Battle Companions.

According to the officials of 'God's Miracle', they had intended to allow players to slowly discover the capabilities of the Battle Companion and find one that suits their own specific play style.

For tanks, they would wish to have DPS type Battle Companions, so that they could help kill monsters faster. That, or a Healer-type to allow oneself to last longer in battle. Inversely, DPS class players would want to have tanker Battle Companions since it would keep them from getting overwhelmed. Naturally, healing types would be effective as well. Supporters are always a welcome sight.

That being said, those categories would branch out into various subcategories under each class of Battle Companions. For example, under the tank class, there were single target or multiple target aggro control. For DPS type, there were magic attack and physical types, ranged, melee, AoE, single target, and many other branches. Theoretically, there was no strongest Battle Companion, only the best suited for each player.

Hence, the official had never released information about Battle Companions, until now, in hopes that they could prevent the game from being too linear where players would end up having the same "strongest" Battle Companions.

Zhang Yang had guessed correctly that each Battle Companion had an original grade which depended on their default equipment tier. For example, Felice would be a Mythical tier, according to her equipment. If he had not unlocked the seals on her, she would only gain levels without gaining tiers.

However, the equipment alone does not determine the prowess of a Battle Companion. If a player could farm or obtain the special equipment meant for their own Battle Companion, an originally Black-Steel tier Battle Companion could be upgraded to a Celestial superman! They could even kill a Battle Companion who started off as Holy tier!

Battle Companion had a specific growth rate which was a hidden attribute. It could be described in such a way. When a special equipment with 100 bonus Strength is worn by a Battle Companion, the effect of the

Strength bonus could go down to 10 or even shoot up to 150, depending on the wearer.

For Strength type Battle Companions, equipping a Strength equipment would be beneficial for them. For Dexterity type or magic attack type, the amount of Strength they gain from the equipment would be minimal.

The system had even used a Star grading system to determine the growth rate of each attribute. The lowest was 1 star and the best was 15 stars. 1 star would only provide 10% bonus and 15 stars would be 150% attribute bonus. This was not limited to only equipment. It was the overall stat bonus. For example, when a [Vitality Magic Scroll] is used to provide 100 bonus Vitality, a 15-star Vitality Battle Companion would gain a 150 Vitality points boost, while a 1-star Vitality Battle Companion would only gain 10 Vitality points, even if the original effect was 100 points.

Normally, like players, a magic attack type Battle Companion would have higher stars for their Intelligence and Spirit attributes and lower stars for Strength and Dexterity. It would be as simple as equipping armors and weapons to see the changes. A tank type Battle Companion would have better Vitality star points, while physical attack type Battle Companions would have higher Strength and Dexterity stars.

"Little Yang! What are Felice's attribute star points?" asked Fatty Han excitedly. "My Napolita has 8 stars in Intelligence, 7 stars in Spirit, but her Vitality only has 6 stars."

Napolita was Fatty Han's Battle Companion that he had obtained just a few days ago. She was a busty, blonde chick. Hmm...the important factor was indeed her bust.

Zhang Yang wavered a little. "Didn't you say that 15 stars was the best? Are you already that satisfied with her?"

"F*ck! Where can you find a Battle Companion with 10 stars in any of their attributes? Just look at the official database! Anything with 7 stars is already pretty good!" said Fatty Han as he defended his big hooters. I mean, his busty Battle Companion.

"Hey! I asked you to check Felice's star count!"

Chapter 529: Attribute Growth Star Points

Zhang Yang finished off the harpies around him and then opened the character window. Compared to when he first started the game, Zhang Yang now had three tabs of windows to browse through, two of them having been added over time. The first, being his own character profile, the second was the summoned pet and battle pet and the last one was the Battle Companion window, where he could look up Felice's stats.

As expected, beside the five basic attribute points, the attack and defense properties, there was a string of stars behind each of the five main attribute points, indicating the level of growth Felice had.

Vitality, 10 stars! Strength, 10 stars! Dexterity, 10 stars! Intelligence, 10 stars! Spirit, 10 stars!

They were all 10 stars! A perfect balance!

Zhang Yang was shocked. If he had not heard to Fatty Han saying that having more than 7 stars is considered strong enough, he would have considered Felice's growth rate to be average! As the saying goes, jack of all trades, master of none. In any online game, investing in all attribute points would be suicidal. Truthfully, if he could, Zhang Yang would wanted to have all her Spirit points to be cut in half and be invested in Strength and Intelligence so that they would be maxed at 15 Stars instead. That way, Felice's attack in her human form and her Dragonhawk form would be much higher.

"Little Yang! Come on, dude! Tell me! What's the star count for Felice's attribute? Don't hide it though. Even if Felice does not have much room to grow, I would laugh. You know? Grade or tiers, does not determine growth power! Haha!" Fatty Han laughed.

Zhang Yang cringed but quickly smirked. He then screen-shotted Felice's attribute properties and let Fatty Han feel the burn in his face. "Here, have a look. Don't feel too disappointed when my Felice beats the sh*t out of your busty dullard!"

"What's up with that!? 10 stars! All of them!?" cried Fatty Han

disgruntledly.

It was no surprise that Felice had much greater power than the rest of the Battle Companions. She was, after all, the first Battle Companion in the game, and was the one who had unlocked the Battle Companion system. If she had been rubbish, it would have been highly irresponsible for the developers to do so for the first player to discover her.

Fatty Han was dissatisfied. He then proceeded to look for Hundred Shots and Endless Starlight to compare their Battle Companions. Perhaps, he was hoping that they had inferior Battle Companions so that he could stroke his ego. All 10 core members of Zhang Yang's team had obtained their own Battle Companions, ranging from Gray-Silver to Mythical. Everyone happily reported their Battle Companion status for a little comparison.

Among all of them, the best was unsurprisingly, Felice. Coming close to her was Sun Xin Yu's Battle Companion, Ankh the Assassin, and then Messick the mother*cking pervert.

Ankh was covered in a black tight suit and had hide behind a black veil that covered everything from head to shoulders. Despite leaving no skin exposed, everyone could easily determine that Ankh was a lady from the body outline of her tight suit. Truth be told, she was a carbon copy of Sun Xin Yu. Ankh's original tier was only Gray-Silver. Despite that, her attribute growth was strong. Vitality, 6 stars. Strength, 7 stars. Dexterity, 10 stars. Intelligence, 1 star. Spirit, 1 star.

Even though her Intelligence and Spirit points were the lowest, Ankh had made up for it with extremely high Dexterity. She was an Assassin class Battle Companion. Having 15 stars in Intelligence and Spirit would not do her any good. Ankh was a good example as to how tiers do not determine a Battle Companion's prowess.

Sun Xin Yu was a burst damage type of player. It was natural for her to pick a Battle Companion that suited her playstyle. Perhaps, one day when Sun Xin Yu has Ankh equipping a full set of Violet-Platinum weapon and armor, she would be able to stand together with Sun Xin Yu and deal an

explosive amount of damage. That's what gamers refer to as nuking. A nuking playstyle focuses on a large amount damage dealt over a short period of time. Perhaps, even tank class player like One Sword Stroke would not survive after being bombarded by Sun Xin Yu and Ankh.

As for Messick, the cowardly, persistent, and perverted little bugger only had 5 stars for his Strength, Dexterity, Intelligence, and Spirit. However, his Vitality was 12 stars! Even stronger than Felice!

Hmph. Such high Vitality befitting of a coward!

However, 10 Stars should not be Felice's full potential. She still had four seals that had yet to be broken. Zhang Yang believed that the breaking of the seals would definitely have a positive effect on Felice's strength. If every seal grants Felice an additional 1 star for her attribute growth, Felice would be a Battle Companion with 14 stars for all her attribute points!

It had been sometime when all 10 of them had gathered together. Naturally, jokes and teases were flying around. Out of the blue, Hundred Shots went silent and withdrew from the merry conversation. Zhang Yang noticed his odd behavior and observed him. Zhang Yang realized that Hundred Shots was actually having a conversation with someone else through the messenger. After a while, Hundred Shots nodded and quickly came back to the group. "Dragon Throat Fortress has been conquered!"

Zhang Yang was the first one to be surprised. "Hundred. Where did you heard the news from? If Dragon Throat Fortress was conquered, the system would have announced it!"

"Oh! Right! Give me a second," said Hundred Shots as he placed his hands on his ears for a second. He then laughed awkwardly and said, "Haha. My bad. Sorry for agitating everyone. Dragon Throat Fortress has been conquered. But it was only the Hard mode and not the Hardcore mode. It was taken down by a guild from Europe call "Mess Up Your Mama!"(1)

Mess Up Your Mama?

Almost everyone cringed, while others twitched a little when they heard the rather bold and senseless name.

Zhang Yang remembered something and then explained the situation to them. "If I'm right. Mess Up Your Mama is a direct onomatopoeia of the Latin name Nihilum. It does mean anything, but the guild is undoubtedly strong. Leave them be for now, but don't let your guards down. They are strong, and we should watch our backs."

"Heh. Sounds like another bunch of proud mother*ckers." Fatty Han puffed. Lone Desert Smoke was not doing any better than the other guilds. They were still stuck at the last boss and could not finish it off. The problem was that the boss' attack power was too strong. At the same time, the demand of the dungeon for players' DPS was also too great. Fatty Han had the Vampire Inheritance transformation, but when it was on cooldown, there was nothing that the party could do, besides slowly grinding their way in.

Even though Nihilum had already taken down the Hard mode, that result would never earn the right to trigger a server announcement. Still, no one could deny that they had already displayed the potential to raid the Hardcore mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. To unlock the Hardcore mode, one must first defeat Hard mode. Similarly, to unlock Hard mode, one must first defeat Normal mode.

"Hey dummy, shouldn't we join the exploration team as well?" asked Han Ying Xue. The exploration team consisted of 50 qualified members. However, it did not include top players like Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and the other strong members. Only Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart had joined the team.

Zhang Yang shook his head to deny Han Ying Xue's proposal. "Worry not about losing the First Clear Achievement. Hardcore mode is not that easy to defeat. In fact, we might still lose even if we join them now. I suggest we spend our time to search for the Inheritances instead. Hundred, Mountain Mover will be reaching to Level 100 soon. When he does, I need you to hand over the commander position to him. In the meantime, why not search for Inheritance for yourself?"

Hundred Shots was the man who had obtained the overwhelming dragon pet in Zhang Yang's previous life. Zhang Yang did not want him to

preoccupy himself with any more dungeon activities that might directly affect the chances of him obtaining the Red Dragon pet. Even though he had only managed to obtain B or C class Inheritance, he was on par with an A class Inheritance player when he acquired the Red Dragon pet.

According to Zhang Yang's well thought out plan, Hundred Shots would obtain the Red Dragon pet while Fatty Han takes the Phoenix pet. With two mythical creatures pairing up, it would be a fearsome presence in the game. The means to obtain the Red Dragon was completely mysterious, on the other hand, the Phoenix pet was just a hidden class quest of a hunter. Still, there was a capture prerequisite, one had to be Level 120 before they could even try to take on the quest.

"Oh! Mess Up Your Mama was able to raid the Hard mode because two of their players had Inheritances," said Hundred Shots. "According to the local forums there, the two players' Inheritances were C class.

Zhang Yang smiled, "There's no need to worry. C class Inheritance is strong, but its prowess would only help them to defeat the first five boss of the Hardcore mode. The last few ones would be extremely difficult."

The stronger the Inheritance, the stronger the boss would be in the chain quest. For example, the black dragon that Zhang Yang had to face would have been completely impossible if Felice did not go crazy back then. Even if he had forced all of his guild members to reach Level 120 and kill the dragon together, they would still lose. They might stand a chance if Zhang Yang asked for the help from Crimson Rage and Sky High!

On the other hand, the Vampire Inheritance bosses were only possible due to Zhang Yang already possessing the God of War Inheritance. On the other hand, Inheritance Classes D and below would only cough out easy bosses. Players would only need to kill mini-boss like entities and run around the world.

"Zhang Yang, when are you going to help me get all the remaining pieces of the Inheritance Fragment?" Han Ying Xue asked impatiently. She had already gathered five pieces of Inheritance Fragments. The other five pieces should be in the hands of the Hell-family Priest. If both sides do not

end this cowardly conflict, the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance would never surface.

"Relax. Don't rush into things. If you do, they will too! Just let them be. When they can't take it anymore, they will strike first, and that's where we'll be waiting for them!" said Zhang Yang. "Then again, even if you have all Inheritance Pieces, it would matter since an S class Inheritance quest boss would not be an easy target. I'm not even sure if we can defeat it yet!"

It was the truth. When they were fighting the Vampire Count Ferra, it had taken all they had to survive. The boss for the Milkmaid Deity quest should be on the same level as the Black Dragon King. Even if Zhang Yang and Fatty Han transformed, two hours might not be enough to defeat the boss!

At least, in the meantime, they should lay low and grind to Level 120 to remove the Level Gap Suppression to win! In the meantime, the group should be able to gather more Forbidden Scrolls to increase the chances of winning.

After the chatting session, everyone left to do their own business. Zhang Yang then moved on and found himself a large cave. It was at least the size of a basketballs stadium with a height reaching to 30 meters tall. Stalactites glowed, protruding from the ceiling of the cave, illuminating the interior with a white-warm light.

At the deeper section of the cave, there was a stalactite that housed a large bird's nest which measured at least the 5 times the size of a king-sized bed. Inside the nest, a large female harpy was sleeping happily. Around the area, there were many hard to see sticks that were arranged in a long row.

[Harpy Queen, Yaniboque] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 37,500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 30,157 – 34,157

Skills:

[Death Shriek]: Unleashes a devastating sound wave to deal 30,000 physical attack to all targets within 40 meters.

[Tackle]: Flies in the sky and shoots down at breakneck speed to claw a target. Deals 100% melee physical damage. Damage will be doubled if either the Head, Neck, Chest, or Abdomen is struck with the skill.

[Tear]: Tears a target apart with sharp claws. Deals 100% melee physical attack and reduces the healing rate of a target for 50%.

Note: The queen of Harpies, greedy, gluttonous, and has a lust for spherical-ended, pillar-shaped objects.

While the queen was sleeping, 20 elite tier Harpy guards stood guard around their queen.

Translator Note:

(1) Mess Up Your Mama – This one was rather hard to translate but the mandarin words were 黑你老母. According to the context itself, the pinyin of it (hei ni lao mu) sounds like Nihilum. Hence, when the Chinese read it out loud, it would sound something like hei ni lao mu. For the novel, we will use the official name Nihilum as the author had stated it in official context like a system announcement. But when the author uses 黑你老母 in conversation– we will retain its original meaning and use Mess Up Your Mama.

Chapter 530: The Harpy Queen

"Away with you! Instead, bring me back the little wooden puppet that would grow his nose when he lies!" The harpy queen drawled lazily.

"Yes! My queen!" Two elite guards knelt down and saluted.

Zhang Yang roared and paced over boldly. "No need to waste your time. Might I suggest you clean your neck a little so I that wouldn't stain my blade when I remove your head!"

"Insolent!" All 20 elite guards raised their spear and glared at Zhang Yang. They awaited for their queen's command to act.

"Hm?" The queen widened her eyes as she lazily crawled out of her nest. She spread open her glorified wings and hovered a few feet above the ground without the need to flap them. Judging from her completely naked upper body, all men would have slobbered over her, but their mood would be killed instantly when they lower their gazes to her lower half, which looked like eagle talons attached to the end of chicken drumsticks.

When Yaniboque spotted Zhang Yang, her expression turned incredibly lustful. "Hm. Hm. It's a little human warrior. Come here my dear, please me and I shall spare your pathetic life~"

Zhang Yang glanced around and saw that the sticks arranged in a row were completely gnawed off. Some of them were even broken. Fuh. No wonder she was A Mythical tier boss, perhaps she was graded that way due to her level of lust! Zhang Yang drew his hammer and hurled it in the air. "Bird lady! Perhaps you would want to have a taste of my Ru Yi bang's power!"

Who could have known that Yaniboque would look at the hammer's long and rough appearance and slobber around like a bitch in heat. She giggled happily and said, "No bad~ Mm~ The stick is long and rough~ But is it hard enough for me~~"

Zhang Yang could have tossed the hammer over to her and let her rub it against her huha. How could a boss behave such a way!? Which developer

was responsible for this boss' development! Bring him out and give him a thousand years worth of torture. Zhang Yang was trying his best to anger the boss, yet she was greatly delighted, or perhaps, took it as an invitation?

What's done is done, might as well just attack and get it over with.

Zhang Yang activated the God of War Transformation. His character glowed with a golden radiance and illuminated the cave for a brief second.

"Ah hah! Wonderful! You are a Harpy as well!" cried the Harpy Queen in an orgasmic voice. "Come and please me! If you can, I will marry you and pleasure you every single day!"

Oh lord, have mercy on this lost soul...

Zhang Yang completely shut himself out from listening any longer. He activated the {Spear of Obliteration} and engulfed the hammer in his hands with a shroud of dark cloud. With great force, Zhang Yang hurled the hammer in his hands towards the queen. A splatter of blood spewed out of the nest, accompanied by a scream of pain.

"Urgh~~" cried the boss. With rage, she commanded, "Kill that man!"

All 20 elite guards spread their wings and zoomed towards Zhang Yang. In a neat formation, they surrounded him and thrust their spears at him.

Zhang Yang reached his hands out and called his hammer back to him. Once the hammer got to his hands, he struck down hard at one of the elite monsters. The monster had taken more than 80,000 damage, generating so much Rage points that it filled up his gauge to its maximum. The monster was sent down to the ground and had even formed a deep crater as it hit the earth. With quick movement, Zhang Yang flew around the cave and shot towards Yaniboque, casting {Destructive Smash} the moment when he was right above her.

‘-380,004!’

Now that is what you would get when you are not under-level!

The queen took the damage and had her head slammed down forcefully. The damage was so high that any DPS class would be ashamed of

themselves, wishing that they could just dig a hole and hide inside. Zhang Yang flung his arm out and cast {Glare of the Death God}. The skill failed and was only rewarded Zhang Yang with a large text - "Resist!"

Such a pity that the boss-killer skill had such a low success rate on a boss. The effect was like the {Frost Strike} and the Frozen effect. For players or any normal monsters, the success rate would always be 100%. But when the target is a boss, the success rate to freeze the boss would be so low that even an ant would not feel a thing if they had stepped on it.

That being said, Zhang Yang could kill a Mythical tier boss and would still have much time to spare in his God of War Transformation skill. Using {Glare of the Death God} would not make much difference. It's like adding salt into the sea. Go ahead and resist, the fight will last only for a few minutes, anyway.

"Bastard! Human! Despicable humans!" Right then, she had lost her lustful emotion towards the man, or perhaps, had only diverted her lust only to the hammer that Zhang Yang was wielding. The harpy queen spread out her wings forcefully and whipped out her talons to claw at Zhang Yang's chest.

{Tackle}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield immediately. A loud metal scratch was heard along with a deep mark on the Titan's Shield. The attack had immediately deducted 18 points of the Shield's Durability (1) and also knocked Zhang Yang backward by 4 to 5 meters. Immediately, Zhang Yang was surrounded and attacked by the group of elite monsters.

‘-232!’

‘-892!’

‘-122!’

‘-0!’

A series of pathetic attacks landed on Zhang Yang. With his 12,000 Defense points, almost all elite monster's attack would not make much damage, even if they do, the residual damage that manages to get pass

through the Defense would still face a 20% damage deduction and 2,606 damage absorption! For them to even deal a few hundred damage meant that they had quite a respectable amount of attack power.

Zhang Yang's Vitality Aura had been leveled up to Level 6. The bonus Vitality was as high as 24%. His original 122,120 HP was multiplied by 40, granting him a godly 4,884,800 HP! A few hundred damage was nothing but tiny specks of thorns for him.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Wham! Bam! Boom!

Instantly, a series of 160,000 damage burst out, some of them were even 330,000 damage! If only one of them was a Lucky strike, the damage would reach over 500,000! Such a damage could kill an elite monster in just two hits!

"Argh~~" Yaniboque cried in pain. Just then, her voice grew louder. It grew so loud to the point that the sound wave was visible to the naked eye!

{Death Shriek}!

‘-11,794!’

‘-29,120!’

‘-28,200!’

Zhang Yang, Felice, and Whitey Jr. took damage. Naturally, the damage Zhang Yang taken was the lowest among the three. The poor flying serpent had only 34,960 HP. The attack had nearly killed the poor reptile! Felice on the other hand was in her Dragonhawk form, having only 880 Defense, and the damage she took was the highest. However, it did not matter, since her HP was ridiculously long.

Zhang Yang tossed a bottle of potion and a [Bandage] to Felice and she automatically healed herself. The little girl could be said to be a player herself. However, she had no inventory and had to rely on Zhang Yang to physically give her items to heal herself. As for Whitey Jr, Zhang Yang had activated {Wild Recovery}, allowing it to slowly restore its HP, 5% at a time.

"None shall harm me and live to tell the tale! Die! Death be upon you for disobeying my wishes!" Yaniboque shot into the sky and suddenly zoomed in at Zhang Yang at a high speed. Zhang Yang could see her afterimage that was heading towards his head!

{Tackle}!

If the attack lands on him, it would cause double damage!

Zhang Yang raised his shield despite {Block} was still on cooldown. A loud "skrrriiing" was heard and a loud "pak!" came after. Yaniboque's talon had forcefully pierced through the shield and had clawed at Zhang Yang's head.

‘-13,520!’

Unfortunately, the boss' attack had damaged the shield; however, the attack was somewhat weakened, since it had only cause normal damage to Zhang Yang.

D*mn! No wonder they say that the shield was a replica! Although the Titan's Shield was a Violet-Platinum tier equipment, it had failed to block the boss attack without being physically damaged. That attack alone had removed 120 points of Durability! F***CK!

Zhang Yang had started to be mindful of his shield and hesitated using his shield to block any more attacks. Once the Durability of the shield reaches 0, the item attributes will be rendered useless! The shield alone gives 1,344 Vitality points, with both the Vitality Aura and the God of War Transformation skill multiplying its effect, it provided Zhang Yang 666,620 HP. If the shield was broken, he would lose that much maximum HP.

Yaniboque's attacks came one after another without any pauses. Just 10 seconds later, the boss used {Death Shriek} again and dealt damage to everyone. The poor flying serpent had only managed to recover 50% of his HP, hence he was killed instantly. Felice, on the other hand had managed to recover only 20,000 with the potion and [Bandage].

The AoE attack was starting to get annoying.

However so, it was meant to be that way. If it was not annoying, they wouldn't be fighting a high-leveled boss! Faced with such a boss with such a devastating AoE skill, players cannot win the boss by sheer numbers. They would need to send multiple batches of players to swap around.

Zhang Yang frowned a little and cried, "Felice, I need you to withdraw for now!"

"But...Big brother! Felice wants to help!" cried the little girl disgruntledly.

"Do not fret. Big brother can take on the harpies alone!"

"Ok!" cried Felice. She then left the boss' attack range and had accidentally kited one of the elite guards with her. The little girls then sent one {Fire Missile} at the monster, before morphing into her human form to attack with her lance.

The monster, despite being an elite tier, could not handle Felice's powerful attack. In only a few hits, Felice had killed the monster.

"ARGH--!" Yaniboque shrieked once more and blasted out echoes of sound waves.

30 seconds after Felice had withdrawn from battle, Zhang Yang God of War EP had gained 3 points. He then quickly activated {Crushing Strike}, sending beams of light bursting out of the earth and damaging all monsters around. Sadly, the attack will never be stronger than {Horizontal Sweep}. Still, EP was given to him for free, and since the only skill that he could spend them on was {God of War Crushing Strike}, might as well use it rather than leaving it to gather dust.

After a series of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Thunder Strike}, Zhang Yang had successfully killed all the elite monsters, leaving the boss alone with Zhang Yang. During the fight, Zhang Yang was finally done analyzing the boss' {Death Shriek}. At most, the boss would use the skill once every 8 seconds to 15 seconds.

Now able to time the attacks of the boss, Felice was able to join in the battle. Every time the skill was used, she would have to rush to the furthest range possible and fire three counts of {Fire Missile} before

retreating from the battle to heal. Even though it was a waste of time which would diminish her overall DPS, it was better than being dead!

In truth, even though he was rather nervous, the entire boss fight was just a walk in the park. If he had fought the boss head on, he would have taken close to 7 to 8 minutes. His DPS was over 87,000, coupled with Felice's "weakened" DPS of over 12,000, the total DPS would be around 90,000. If he had a few hits that produced a critical or even a Lucky strike, the total time taken would have been shorter!

It was nothing but a cake walk!

All S class, A class, and B class Inheritance had been adjusted in a way where players can only obtain them once they reach Level 120. Hence, truly powerful bosses would only make their appearances after level 150. Right then, when Zhang Yang had not yet even reached Level 120 and had already obtained the God of War inheritance, he was like a US Special Force that had been sent to fight the Hans or the Mongols. No matter how strong the boss is, even if it was trained in the ultimate form of martial arts, it would not be able to stop Zhang Yang's simple Desert Eagle 50 AE bullets from blowing its head up.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel truly lucky. When he had just obtained Felice as his Battle Companion and took on the God of War Inheritance quest, Felice was able to destroy the Black Dragon with ease and had led to the early procurement of the S class Inheritance. Right then, from Zhang Yang's perspective, all bosses around his level were like weeds in a field.

Such a relaxed period should only last until Zhang Yang surpasses Level 150. The bosses in Level 150 maps have had their difficulty adjusted to take on players with at least C class Inheritances. A few of the bosses would even require a team of B class tanks and healer players to fight together. For Zhang Yang, a player with the S class God of War Inheritance, he could easily make an Ethereal tier boss grovel at his feet when he activates the Transformation!

...

Yaniboque shrieked, clawed, zoomed, and tackled Zhang Yang like a deranged woman. Although her attacks were not weak, Zhang Yang's overwhelming Defense had turned them into needle pricks. After damaging Zhang Yang by over 2,000,000 damage, she was defeated and had fallen down to the earth, leaving her blood all over the ground.

Zhang Yang headed over to the boss to quickly collect all the battle loots. The time remaining on the God of War transformation was still plenty enough for him to go for one round of grinding. The boss drops were rather fair; one Mythical tier Heavy Armor Greaves and two Violet-Platinum equipment, a ring and a dagger. There was one more skill book and an iron key which, according to its description, should be able to unlock Yaniboque's chest.

Zhang Yang took all the items and tossed them into his inventory before splitting up with Felice to search the room for a treasure chest.

As he searched around, he reviewed the items that he had just acquired.

[Marronda's Ring] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +212

Intelligence: +137

Sprit: +137

Equip: Increases 270 maximum MP.

Equip: Increases 2.1% damage.

Equip: Increases 0.7 Critical rate.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Note: Marronda was a spirited adventurer Spellcaster. He was famous and renowned for venturing into places of great danger. Looks like his journey has ended. Let's hope that the great Spellcaster had not been tortured too greatly before he died.

Pass...As for the dagger, even though it had a Level 120 Level

Requirement, it would be placed in the Little Merchandise Shop for sale, since it did not have a lowered Level Requirement special effect. That being said, a Level 120 Violet-Platinum would still fetch a few hundred thousand gold coins easily.

Lastly, the greaves. It was the only Mythical item that the boss had dropped. Since it was the boss's first kill, the best equipment should have a lowered Level Requirement special effect!

[Sky Soaring Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +889

Strength: +420

Dexterity: +420

Equip: Increases 1,700 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 3.5 % healing rate and damage output.

Equip: Absorbs 358 damage on attack.

Use: Increases 50% movement speed for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Special: Lowers the Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Hah...Finally! An item that he could use immediately!

Translator Note:

(1) Durability, the maximum durability points of that shield was never mentioned in the novel. It was not known to how much was the maximum durability points does each weapon has.

Chapter 531: The Messenger Man

Last one, the skill book.

[Pet Skill Book: Shatterpoint Weakness]

Use: Teaches you pet the skill {Shatterpoint Weakness}.

Zhang Yang was dumbfounded. Yaniboque was a Level 125 boss, despite not being the strongest entity in the map. Even so, since it was her first kill, the skill should be of some caliber. The problem was, which pet should he put the skill on?

The Mythical Turtle was the highest tier among all, but its movement speed was too slow. The flying serpent on the other hand was a flying mount, and a magic attack type, and under certain conditions, it had more damage output than the white bear. However, since its mass and size were too large, not all maps, or fields could accommodate for it. On the other hand, the white bear was useful in tight spaces. However, the bear was of a physical attack type. Its attacks were greatly behind that of the flying serpent. In cases where the flying serpent could be sortied, Zhang Yang would have never thought of using the bear.

What a drag!

Might as well gets his hands on a Thunderhawk as soon as possible. It is Violet-Platinum, magic attack type flying mount that was much slimmer and smaller than the flying serpent. As it would be easily summoned in constricted spaces, it would solve the problem of who to teach the skill {Shatterpoint Weakness}.

After he had steeled his decision, Zhang Yang kept the skill book instead of using it. He had decided to use it on the Thunderhawk later on to save some Pet Skill Engravement Scroll.

After circling the cave for half an hour, Zhang Yang finally stumbled across the Harpy Queen's chest. He then used the iron key to unlock the hatch and open it. A bright metal that had been carved into a long, baton-like shape lay inside. Zhang Yang picked the baton up and examined the

item description.

[Zinc Alloy] (Quest Item)

Item Description: A mineral alloy found in the Skeletal Spirit Mining Cave. Only one can be found in a thousand years. The Zinc Alloy is a malleable, pliable, and ductile metal. Best for a certain type of product.

Note: Yaniboque's most precious treasure. Especially important whenever she feels lonely. Feels rough, ribbed, thick, long...and slightly bent to perfectly fit in her...

Zhang Yang frowned and twitched a little with disgust as he picked up the "Zinc Alloy" out of the box and in his inventory. He could not help but to feel a little ticked off at Margery when she had asked him to collect the metal, could it be for her own purpose? After all, she was living inside the Pandemonium. Her only neighbor was a stone giant. It could not be helped if she gets lonely sometimes...

Right then, Zhang Yang still had over 1 hour as a God of War. Zhang Yang then proceeded to move on kiting as many monsters as he could. He was still at Level 105, at 47% experience. When he was done killing everyone and the transformation skill had ended, he had gained 6% experience points. If he could maintain God of War transformation, he could level up in one day (real time).

After emptying the entire mining cave, Zhang Yang moved out of the cave and found himself inside a dark cave. He hesitated a little and thought that he might had taken a wrong turn somewhere. Right before he wanted to turn back, he picked up a putrid smell coming from a section of the cave that was devoid of light. He braced himself and move inside, only to find mountains of corpses that had already undergone putrefaction. Some of them still had fresh blood still dripping from the stumps of their headless necks. The cave... was a graveyard.

Zhang Yang ventured around, hoping to find something interesting, besides dead bodies. After digging around for a little, he found out that all of the corpse here was male. It was a little odd to find only human men, due to the fact that there many other races besides humans. There were

dwarfs, centaurs, elephants, and other animals.

"F-Friend..."

An inaudible voice came from a corner, like a whisper of the wind which made Zhang Yang jump a little. He then turned to the source of the voice and found a withered body of a man.

"F-Fret...not...I'm n-not cough d-dead yet!" The man was a human, wearing ragged clothing that resembled a magician robes. Even though he was not rotting, there was practically no flesh in his body. His body was literally skin on bones. Nothing in between. His face was sunk inwards, which made the outline of his skull stood out.

[Marronda] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1 / 12,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Skills: NIL

Marronda? The owner of the ring that Zhang Yang had just obtained? It's a miracle that the man was still alive. Pity that he had only 1 HP left, a state where if Zhang Yang had accidentally stepped on him, he would be delivered to heaven. However, since Marronda was a green-friendly NPC, killing him would not do any good.

Zhang Yang walked over to him and cried, "Hold on my friend. I shall take you to a Priest!"

"Don't waste your time. I have exhausted all of my life energy. I'm afraid that I can only last for a few minutes," said Marronda. His voice was brimming with energy and he could even talk properly without stuttering.

A quest, perhaps?

Zhang Yang pats the man's shoulder and asked, "How did you end up this way?"

"Sigh." Marronda sighed with despair. "I was an adventurer like you. It is

a lifetime career. An endless adventure. My goal, was to enjoy the great land and its beauty. With my great looks, my elegant mannerisms, my noble status, and my adventurous spirit, wherever I went, ladies would be slobbering all over me. Pity that men do not share the joy of my presence. I had to leave a town in less than 2 weeks! There was this one time where I was having a happy conversation with a lady in her bed, when I was ambushed and had to leave the place!"

Zhang Yang cringed. Initially, he was empathetic towards Marronda, but when he had to mention about his unruly "adventure", Zhang Yang felt like stepping on his skull to crush him there and then.

"Sigh... I was doing so well...Until, I was caught by the harpies. It was then when I knew, that my happiness was morphed to my nightmare! Yaniboque, that crazy harpy, was a horny beast! No matter how many time I had laid with her, she was not satisfied! She had even threatened to kill me if I fail to take her to the peak of pleasure. To save my skin, I had to use a forbidden spell. The spell would grant me the power of Length, Girth, and Size, at the cost of my own life energy. In the end, when I finally subdued the female harpy, I was on the brink of death. Hence, here I am."

Forget Yaniboque, the entire mining cave must have been designed by a perverted designer with terrible taste! Zhang Yang nodded his head to his own thoughts.

"My friend, the reaper is but only a few steps away. I beg you, please take this magic letter and give it to Yanny of Galant Town. Tell her, that she is the only woman I love in my life!" The perverted bugger had taken out a white glass orb and shoved it in Zhang Yang's hands.

'Ding! Marronda has a quest for you: Message for Yanny. Will you accept it?'

No matter how lustful a person maybe, there will always be one person that he truly loves! Zhang Yang was not disappointed after all. Zhang Yang accepted the quest and the man's head slump over, breathing his last breath.

Zhang Yang sighed placed his hands over the man's eyes to shut his eyes

lids. However, when he opened his quest log to read the quest description, Marronda had opened his eyes again!

Eh?! Could a person turn into a Spectre at such a speed?

Zhang Yang checked his properties and found that the man still had 1 HP and was a human.

Zhang Yang was furious and nudged the man's head. "You're not dead yet, why bother to close your eyes."

"I'm tired. Can't a man have his sleep?"

Zhang Yang could just slap the man with his metal gauntlet and kill him off instantly.

"Hold on, I have just remembered. I have one more magic letter. Please take this to Julie of Wumin Village. Tell her, I will never forget her beautiful eyes," said Marronda as he shove another magic glass orb to Zhang Yang.

'Ding! Marronda has a quest for you: Message for Julie. Will you accept it?'

...

"And this magic letter is for Milon of Heryu City. Tell her that I will not forget her fair legs!"

"This one is for Tinting of the Balon Island. Tell her I will not forget the taste of our first kiss!"

"This one is for Marianna of the Black Smoke Town. Tell her, I will always miss the feeling of stroking her long hair!"

...

The magic glass orbs in Zhang Yang's hands started to multiply. He had obtained so many more until he had over 20 orbs in his hands, which forced Zhang Yang to place them around him to take more from Marronda. The man was a pervert of mythical proportions. When he started to shove more orbs, he did not stop!

20...30...50...90!?

Thud! It was the 35th or 36th time when Marronda suddenly dozed off.

Zhang Yang shooked his head and said, "Bro, enough with your sleep. Come on, how many more women have you actually pissed off."

Marronda did not respond. Zhang Yang was stuned. He then checked the NPC's properties and found the man was already dead.

Well, sh*t. Even the reaper must be tired of waiting for so long and had just given up on waiting.

Zhang Yang felt like he had just taken a looooooong assignment. He opened his quest log and found there was as many as 90 messenger quests that he had to complete. However, there was one question that lingered in his mind when he had accepted the 30th orb in his hands. Should he just give up the quest? It was clear to anyone that a messenger quest was worth only a tiny speck of experience points and would not reward them with anything valuable.

Furthermore, the 90 messenger quests could never have a follow-up quest after. It would just be a complete waste of time.

Eh...wait a minute. Zhang Yang suddenly recalled in his past life, a player had stumbled upon a main story quest. When he was interviewed about it, the player revealed that the quest had started off with a long and draggy messenger quest.

For such a time-wasting quest, out of 100 players, perhaps 99 of them would automatically give it up. Even if there were players who would be interested in it, they might give up after delivering the 10th or the 20th letter!

The 90 letters were meant to be delivered to all corners of the Chaos Realm! Those that were bad with directions might take close to a month (real time) to complete the entire quest chain! What more, the return value of it was practically worthless! Only the unhinged would carry on through!

In that case, perhaps delivering all 90 letters would be of some worth

since it could be related to a main story quest!

Zhang Yang then tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Morning Town, and then to White Jade Castle to have the [Sky Soaring Greaves] identified. After socketing a few [Gemstones], Zhang Yang returned to Morning Town and headed to a high-level map called Isaac Hills to hunt for a flying mount, the Violet Thunderhawk.

In truth, he had not wished to visit the Isaac Hills too early, since the monsters around there were of Level 150 and above. The highest-leveled monsters around the hills were Level 180. With such huge gap between him and the monsters' levels, it would be extremely tough for Zhang Yang to kill even a single normal tier monster.

When he had just entered the new map, monsters from as far as a hundred meters away had rushed over to him like sharks that had picked up the scent of blood. In a Level 150 map, normal monsters would have the same power of a Level 100 Violet-Platinum boss. Adding that to the immense level gap and monster count, Zhang Yang would be facing a tough challenge.

If the power curve of monsters as they increased in levels weren't steep enough, players would have already swarmed up the high-level maps and get themselves rare tiered battle mounts. If they are lucky, they might even haul in a Mythical or even a Holy tier battle mount which would be extremely powerful once they reach Level 100.

That aside, the map in Chaos Realms was huge. That was already established when Zhang Yang first entered the portal. Without a specific direction and objective, searching for a battle mount in such a place would be like searching for a golden dust on the beach. All the while, Zhang Yang knew that the Isaac Hills has battle mounts of Holy tiers, yet it was just a pipe dream. The safest plan was to just head on, find a Thunderhawk, subdue it and escape with a [Teleportation Scroll].

Chapter 532: Violet Thunderhawk

After the greaves were Identified, the stats had been increased. Vitality, 1,270. Strength and Dexterity 601, and 2,500 max HP bonus. 5% damage boost and 512 damage absorption. However, the Gemstone that Zhang Yang had socketed in were Strength Gemstones to increase his attack instead of defense. Hence, the increment of his HP limit was not as drastic.

As of then, with the bonus of Vitality Aura, Zhang Yang's max HP was 134,520, 3,211 Strength, 24,547 – 28,147 melee attack, 2,480 Defense, and 2,886 damage absorption. Overall, his stats were equally balanced for attack and defense.

Along the route in search of the Violet Thunderhawk, Zhang Yang had been drawing in monsters unintentionally. In Level 130 or Level 140 maps, the monsters he faced pose no imminent threat to Zhang Yang. On the other hand, when Zhang Yang stepped into the Isaac Hills, his Rage gauge had started to charge up. He had been forced into a battle. Immediately, Zhang Yang turned his head around to search and after 2 seconds, he saw a black little dot in the sky that was heading towards him. It was a huge two headed vulture.

[Twin Head Corpse Eater] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 160

HP: 87,040

Defense: 4,260

Attack Power: 16,566 – 20,566

Skills:???

What a ferocious beast! The twin headed vulture was still a few hundred meters away from him, yet Zhang Yang was already in its aggro range. In maps of high-level monsters, lower level players had not hopes of hiding at all!

That aside, the monster's stats were too strong for a normal tier monster. The stats alone could rival that of a player equipped with Violet-

Platinum equipment. That being said, that was also the recommended gear for players to enter this map.

As mentioned before, the monster's difficulty increment was normal. In Level 180 maps, Holy tiered boss were considered to be the strong bosses whereas Ethereal tier boss were only mini-bosses. A small guild with a minimal number of strong players could defeat it. In accordance to that, a Mythical boss would be nothing but scrap then, only if they were of the same Level. Hence, a normal tier monster being as powerful as a player with a full set of Violet-Platinum gears was nothing to be surprised about.

The most important aspect was that Zhang Yang was only Level 105. Half of his gears were Violet-Platinum, and four of them was of Mythical tier. Generally speaking, Zhang Yang was already on par with the normal tier monster of that map. However, since the level gap was too great, Zhang Yang was at great disadvantage.

With a deafening shriek, the vulture zoomed through the air space and bit the flying serpent's neck. In his mounted state, attacking the serpent would mean attacking Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang raised his shield up and blocked an incoming claw attack.

PANG!

The metal plate vibrated violently and forcefully knocked Zhang Yang 7 to 8 meters back. Zhang Yang was fast. As he was reeling back, he hurled his hammer and managed to land a hit before breaking apart from the enemy.

'-12,442!'

Not bad. For such a large level gap, Zhang Yang could still deal more than 10,000 damage. It was due to the bonus 50% damage of the God of War Inheritance. Or else, his attack would have been reduced by 10% or even 30%.

"KAW!" The vulture took the hit and let out a high-pitched screech. In response to the attack, the vulture spewed out a cloud of black, putrid gas that made the flying serpent to feel nauseous. It had even wavered a little in the air, as if it was going to fall down!

‘-39,342’

Zhang Yang took the damage, frowning suspiciously. It was too high to feel right and he quickly checked the battle log. The attack was a skill called [Putrid Breath] that deals 20,000 fixed Shadow damage. However, since the level gap suppression was in effect, the damage that was dealt to Zhang Yang had been tripled, hence, the staggering 40,000 damage.

Zhang Yang had expected the amplified damage, but what he had not expected was the instant cast time of the skill. If a skill could lock onto a target and could be cast instantly, the chance to dodge it is practically zero.

Zhang Yang started to feel a little scared. If a normal monster was already that strong, what of the elites or the boss?

Argh. When that happens, he will find a way to deal with it. Now that the monster is here and ready, might as well just get over with it. Zhang Yang counterattacked and won the fight after using {Shield Wall}. When the vulture died, the loot appeared in midair and plummeted to the ground. Zhang Yang had no intentions of flying down just for a normal monster's drop and had Whitey Jr. fly higher, instead.

Unfortunately, the flying serpent was not able to fly too high. There was a certain limit to it which, highly depended on its tier. If the flying mount was a giant dragon, or a phoenix, it would be a whole new world for his flight experience. Higher tiered flying mounts could fly as long as they wanted to. The flying serpent was only a Yellow-Gold flying mount, hence, the distance of which it could fly, and the duration was greatly affected. As such, Zhang Yang was unable to dodge and avoid fighting all monsters that came after him. Occasionally, Zhang Yang would have to rely on {Shield Wall} to fight one normal tier monster.

{Shield Wall}. To fight a normal monster. Anyone would laugh at that!

Zhang Yang laughed at his own actions. Still, it would be suicidal for lower leveled players to enter this place. Zhang Yang knew the location of the Thunderhawk, that was why he had dared to enter this Level 180 map in the first place!

After killing his way forward, Zhang Yang had finally arrived at the forest that he remembered from his past life and found the sky scraping tree.

Zhang Yang was extremely fond of this place, which explained why he could remember it so clearly. Due to Zhang Yang's late participation in the game, Zhang Yang had only managed to catch himself Green-Copper tier or Gray-Silver tier mounts. It was unavoidable since higher tier mounts were only available in small amounts for players to haul. After mounts were tamed, they would never spawn again. Even if they do, the tiers would drop. It was similar to that of a boss' drop. Killing it multiple times would reduce the drop rate and the item grade.

For example, Zhang Yang's Gold Eared Bear King. When Zhang Yang first caught it, it was a Yellow-Gold tier, if a second Bear King appeared in the map, it would be a Gray-Silver tier. That was why it is hard to obtain a high tier mounts. Besides equipment, the second most important aspect of all online games would be a player's level. When you have the level advantage, you can be a few steps ahead of other players and obtain many perks such as the boss' first kill, or a dungeon's First Clear Achievements, and not to mention, the high tier mounts!

In his previous life, the information about the Thunderhawk mount being in his forest was known by many, besides Zhang Yang. Back then, Zhang Yang had to guard the place for more than a month to make sure he obtains the mount. Even though he had succeeded in obtaining the mount, it was an arduous experience that had left him exhausted. Things were so much easier now that Zhang Yang was alone! There was no one there to fight over the mount! Hence, the only threat that he would need to take care of was the parent of the baby Thunderhawk. King of the forest, the Mythical tier boss, King of the Violet Thunderhawk.

Even though Mythical tier boss was considered to be a scrapper in this map, Zhang Yang was barely on par with it! After setting and planning the battle strategy, Zhang Yang patted Felice's head and asked, "Are you ready, Felice?"

"Leave it to me, big brother! Felice will make sure that she does her job!"

said Felice as she thumped her chest proudly like a knight pledging her loyalty. Zhang Yang was at ease, but he was a little worried that her super strength might ram her chest inwards and ruin her growth.

Zhang Yang's plan was to descend down with Felice and have her to lure the boss away. With her skill {Absolute Defense}, she could at least hold on for 2 minutes which would allow Zhang Yang to tame the baby hawk.

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the flying serpent and shot down towards the sky scraping tree. Zhang Yang had been too high in the sky and could not properly identify the exact location of the nest. As he got closer to the ground, Zhang Yang could see the nest, along with a large, blue color giant hawk that rested in it. The feathers of the bird were radiating with the blue color of electricity!

[Violet Thunderhawk King] (Mythical, Beast)

Level: 170

HP:???

Defense:???

Attack Power:???

Skills:???

Due to the large level gap between them, Zhang Yang could only see the boss' level, whereas the other attributes were hidden away with three question marks. However, that information was not necessary, since he was not there to defeat it!

The boss noticed Zhang Yang's presence the moment when he could see the nest. The aggro range was almost the same as Zhang Yang's line of sight! The hawk spread its wings and shot into the sky. The sheer force of its lift-off tore fresh green leaves off the tree branches around!

Felice shot down in her human form and morphed into her Dragonhawk form while midair. When she was in the attack range, she immediately blasted off a {Fire Missile} and struck the boss with only 2,342 damage.

The girl would then shot down to the ground and morphed back to her human form to activate the skill {Absolute Defense}.

While the boss was preoccupied with Felice, Zhang Yang was completely left at peace. The boss then closed its wings and descended to the ground to chase after Felice. Taking the chance, Zhang Yang flew to the nest and activated {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battle mode. Quickly, he dispelled the invisible effect and landed on the nest with the [Sealing Lease] in his hands. The reason he had entered the {Shadow of the Void} was because a player could not seal a monster during battle!

The tiny little bird, roughly the size of Zhang Yang's palm was just sitting right in the middle of the nest. The cute little bird could barely stand up, and the way it blinked its eyes lid was as cute as he remembered in his previous life. If Wei Yan Er was there, she would surely be competing with Zhang Yang for the bird.

With time quickly running out, Zhang Yang hastily used the lease on the Juvenile Violet Thunderhawk.

1%...2%...3%...45%...Pak! Failed.

One more.

1%...2%...22%...Pak.

ONE MORE!

Fortunately, the little bird was in the nest of a boss. Hence, with the boss' powerful influence around the area, there were no monsters around to disturb Zhang Yang in the middle of his sealing. Furthermore, Thunderhawks or hawks themselves were a species that are proud and non-sociable. Even during mating, they would only come upon each other for a moment, and part on to their own ways.

Hence, even if Zhang Yang was a 10,000 watt super light bulb, no monster would be able to pick up his aggro. As for the Thunderhawk boss itself, it could not even see that Zhang Yang was pillaging its nest and abducting its offspring since Felice was doing a wonderful job of kiting it away.

ONE MORE TIME!

1%...2%...3%...98%...100%!

Done!

Zhang Yang grinned happily. In his previous life, he had owned a Thunderhawk. In this life, he had managed to own one as well! The only difference was the timing of when he got it!

Zhang Yang quickly tore a [Teleportation Scroll] up. During the teleportation process, Zhang Yang unsummoned Felice back into his inventory and disappeared without a trace.

Shush!

Zhang Yang appeared in Morning Town, a big smile plastered on his face.

Chapter 533: Assault of the Japan-Korea Region

Zhang Yang arrived safely at Morning Town with Felice in his inventory Battle Companion's space. Only then, did he summon out the newly obtained mount.

[Juvenile Violet Thunderhawk] (Mythical Flying Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Attack Power: 1 – 3

Skills: NIL

Zhang Yang was stunned. Was it not supposed to be only a Violet-Platinum tier? It took him only 1 second to realize that the same hawk he had obtained back then had probably been respawned many times over. Furthermore, if the parent was a Mythical tier boss, it should not be a mystery on why the offspring would also be a Mythical being!

Hmph. Lucky. A good haul.

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent alongside the hawk and brought it to grind as swiftly as he could to Level 100. The hawk could be as strong as Felice and would be a great help to him.

Even though there were plenty of players already entering Chaos Realm, they were greatly scattered around the place. The land of Chaos Realm was truly huge. Even though there were already more than a thousand players within it, but those numbers meant nothing when compared to the vastness of the land. With haste, Zhang Yang arrived at a safe zone that was completely devoid of people. He began his grinding there. Within an hour, Zhang Yang's super-powered attacks and the immense experience points of the monster in the Chaos Realm were enough to raise the hawk to Level 30. When the hawk reached the Level 30 threshold, the little

hawk grew into a larger, handsome male hawk.

Zhang Yang did not stop there, he dedicated two whole days to get the hawk to level 100 and continued on until the handsome hawk reached Level 105, the limit of its level, since Zhang Yang himself was only Level 105.

Upon reaching Level 105, the hawk had grown even bigger. It was 2 meters tall and had iron-like talons that could break even the strongest of rocks. The feathers were naturally blue, with occasional streams of electrical impulses that flowed along the feather lines. Through the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll], Zhang Yang had "cut and paste" the skill {Icy Built} and {Iron Built} from the bear, {Madness} from the Mythical Turtle, and {Bewitchment} from the flying serpent, all to the Thunderhawk. He had also let the hawk learn the skill {Shatterpoint Weakness} and two other skill books that he had already prepared, {Wild Recovery} and {Haste}. Through leveling, the hawk itself had gained three other skills on its own.

[Violet Thunderhawk] (Mythical Flying Mount)

Level: 105

HP: 177,380 (Vitality Aura in effect)

Defense: 4,480

Magic Attack: 9,629 – 11,629

Skills:

[Shared Life (Passive)]: Combines both HP of the master and the pet.

[Icy Built (Passive)]: Reduce Frost damage by 90%.

[Wild Recovery]: Restores 5% HP by consuming 10 Focus points every second. Last for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

[Iron Built (Passive)]: Increases 30% maximum HP.

[Haste]: Increases movement speed by 100%. Lasts for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Madness]: Increases 50% attack speed. Grants 10% chance to restore 30% HP with every successful attack. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Bewitchment]: Confuses the target, immobilizing it. Lasts for 15 seconds. The state of confusion will be dispelled when the target takes damage. Success rate will be lowered while targeting a boss. Casting time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Cost: 100 Focus points.

[Shatterpoint Weakness]: Attempts to locate the target's weak points and causes all attack in the next 10 seconds to deal 50% additional damage. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Thunder Ball]: Fires a ball of thunder to a target, dealing 200% Natural magic damage. Has 1% chance to paralyze the target, preventing the target from moving for 1 second. Focus: 20 Focus points. Casting time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Violet Thunder Slayer]: Launches a Thunder Storm in an area of 10 x 10 meters. Deals 3,000 Natural damage to all target for 10 seconds. Cost: 100 Focus points. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

As expected of a Mythical tier battle pet. Even though it had only one single target skill, it was more than enough to deal 10,000 damage per second! Perhaps, it was on par with Felice in her Dragonhawk form. Besides that, the hawk had the skills {Madness} and {Shatterpoint Weakness} to start the fight. The Violet Thunderhawk was like a mobile, floating cannon. It was slow in reloading, but could deal powerful blasts that could kill any player in his own level range!

Now that his hawk had reached to the highest possible level, for now, it made things easier for Zhang Yang. He could now start to search the last ingredient, [Light of Miracle] to unlock the second seal. He could also fly to the Malevolent Tower of the Spectre Sacred Land and complete the main story quest that he had accepted when he was only Level 10. That, or the Catarina quest in the Spider Kingdom. Lastly, he would take a look at the 90 Messenger quests...

Just as Zhang Yang was deciding on which quest to complete first,

Hundred Shots called.

"Zhang Yang. I had received grave news. A group of North American players has just found themselves a [Territory Conquest Order]. The Japan-Korea region players have bought it.

"Hm. That's weird. Aren't they hostile? How could they, I mean, players of two great regions be involved in such a transaction?" asked Endless Starlight.

"It's possible." Hundred Shots explained. "Through interbank transfer. After the money is transferred, one player from the North America region would allow players from the Japan-Korea region to kill him. Kill, revive, and repeat until the item is dropped upon death."

Huh! That was possible...

Zhang Yang could not help but to recall something. When players enter the Holy City in the Chaos Realm, there should be an Auction House that would allow transaction of items for a high 20% tax. The method was widely used since the system could prevent cheating in transactions, even though they had put up an expensive taxing system.

"How much did they spend?" Fatty Han asked.

" 5 million USD!"

"WOOOOAH!" cried Fatty Han. "How could a small piece of paper be so expensive."

Zhang Yang shook his head. "Under normal circumstances, the [Territory Conquest Order] could fetch up to 100,000 to 1 million. But since the japs and koks are eager to get back their territory, the North Americans had taken advantage of them!"

"Heh. It's not like the fatsos in America would stop at one. Look at what they did to Japan's Hiroshima and Nagasaki. Hehe! Perhaps even the japs are getting used to being bullied. Talk about S and M. Woooo~" said Lost Dream.

"Heh." Zhang Yang chuckled. "In that case, let's make a show for them to

remember. We will make the japs and koks waste their 5 million dollars!'

"Mm. Let's give them hell."

Fatty Han got excited and roared, rousing up everyone else.

However, just when they thought that the Japan-Korea region player would attack, four days passed and there were still no signs of attack. Zhang Yang and everyone else thought that it was due to the fact that they had yet to decide on a specific guild to launch the attack. It was a national war. They've had their own land taken away by other nation. It made sense if they would prepare the strongest guild to launch a counterattack. Selections of the best guild would take a long time since they would be the guild that carries the flag of the nation. If the said guild emerges victorious, it would gain the highest honor and fame.

Hence, with such benefits at stake, there was surely be a catch to it as well. What if the selected guild loses the war? It was, after all, a matter of national war. If they fail to emerge victoriously, the guild would be deemed the worst of all. A waste of national talent that would be blacklisted! Their own countrymen might hunt them down!

As such, it made sense for the guild selection to take so long. However, it was just a matter of time before they create an ultimate strike force. If the number was small, the defense of the castle would be stronger. 1000 players could be killed with only two to three blasts of the magic cannons. As such, the longer they take to decide, the more players could join the attack since more and more players would be reaching Level 100. Since the guild was created just for the sole purpose of taking down Winst Castle, players who meet the requirement could temporarily join the guild and fight in the war. The selection of players should cover the entirety of Japan and Korea. To put in comparison, the defenders of Winst Castle would only be Lone Desert Smoke's own men. How could a single guild fight against the best players in Japan and Korea?

When they have gathered 10,000 to 20,000 players, Lone Desert Smoke might only have 1,000 or fewer Level 100 players. By then, the attack would be swift and decisive, a one-sided massacre! Again, it was a matter

of time. Too early, and the attacking guild would not be able to gather enough players to attack. Too long, and Lone Desert Smoke would have gathered enough Level 100 players to attack. By then, Japan-Korea region player will lose the advantage of numbers since Lone Desert Smoke was the only Level 4 guild with a higher player capacity!

After a series of serious discussions, Zhang Yang had come up with an estimated timeframe. It was estimated that the Japan-Korea region will attack within the next 3 to 4 days. Since it was just a rough estimation, Zhang Yang had been laying low and did not hunt for bosses. He had purposely retained his God of War Transformation. Instead of grinding, Zhang Yang spent the next few days delivering the magic orbs. After the 23rd letter was sent, the system had sent the notification of the attack.

‘Ding! Player Amaou Kuyoshi has used the Territorial Conquest Order on Winst Castle. The Territorial Conquest War will start tomorrow night at 7.00 PM sharp. The war will last for 3 hours. The war is limited to Lone Desert Smoke, the Defender, and Sakura no Nagare Mae, the attacker. During the war, all teleportation circles will not function. All players who die will be revived at their designated major city and cannot return to the war. Within 3 hours, if any of the Sakura no Nagare Mae guild member successfully attacks the Territorial Hall, victory will be theirs. The owner of Winst Castle will be Amaou Kuyoshi if the attackers win the war!’

Here it comes!

All guild members of Lone Desert Smoke were fired up when the notification had rang in. This was the first, authentic nation vs nation war! The main character of the war was Lone Desert Smoke! How could anyone remain calm!

Lo and behold, come another system notification that had silenced every member of Lone Desert Smoke.

‘Ding! Player Hanguigui Gugwang has used the Territorial Conquest Order on Morning Town. The Territorial Conquest War will start tomorrow night at 7.00 PM sharp. The war will last for 3 hours. The war is limited between Lone Desert Smoke, the Defender, and E.E, the attacker.

During the war, all teleportation circles will not function. All players that who die will be revived at their designated major cities and cannot return to the war. Within 3 hours, if any of the E.E guild members successfully attack the Territorial Hall, victory will be theirs. The owner of Winst Castle will be Hangugui Gugwang if the attackers win the war!

A second Territorial Conquest Order!

"Crap! Those K-pop guys really got themselves a second Territorial Conquest Order!" cried Fatty Han angrily.

"This is a problem..." Hundred Shots sighed heavily. "Right now, we are being cornered. Right now, we only have 1,876 Level 100 players on the guild that could enter Chaos Realm. On the other hand, I had obtained news that the Japan-Korea region have already amassed more than 60,000 members. We are being attacked by 30,000 players on each side!"

"Looks like they are attacking both Winst Castle and Morning Town at the same time! Since we have taken two lands, we'll lose both lands! The Japs and Koks want to take their revenge!"

Right then, the Japan-Korea region players had gained the advantage in numbers. If Lone Desert Smoke wishes to save both territories, they would only lose both.

Zhang Yang laughed. "There's no way we are going to lose Morning Town. For better or for worse, we could always ask for help from Crimson Rage and Sky High. Have them lend us all their Level 100 players. It's a matter of China's pride now. If we lose, the town will be taken by the Japs and Koks. I don't think that anyone from China, friendly or not, would be willing to let that happen."

"Bloody hell, it's infuriating to think that the Winst Castle is going to be taken away by the Japanese!" cried the little girl.

If he manages to borrow manpower from the other guild, it would create a new problem in the future since they would want to piece of the cake. If it was a matter of national protection, it might still be a valid reason to have them lend their powers. But if Zhang Yang were to have them fight for Winst Castle, the borrowed manpower might not be on the same page

with Lone Desert Smoke. After all, the ones guarding the castle would carry the name of Lone Desert Smoke. It would be Zhang Yang and the guild who gets the fame, while others remain completely unknown.

Under such circumstances, Zhang Yang could not even estimate the number of people he could bring to Winst Castle.

Lone Desert Smoke had a 40,000-player limit. If Zhang Yang wants to defend Morning Town, he would need to place 30,000 players in Morning Town. The remaining 10,000 players would be sent to defend the 30,000 men attacking force from the Japanese guild, Sakura no Nagare Mae. The odds are 1:3...no matter how, it would be tough for Zhang Yang to defend the castle...Was it too early to give up on Winst Castle...?

Chapter 534: The Empire Helps Back

Zhang Yang had never planned to own Winst Castle forever, but he had never wanted to lose it so soon either! However still, the end must come. By hook or by crook, Zhang Yang would never allow the China Territory be lost! He would never allow the joke of the Japan-Korea region to be rebounded back at them!

Naturally, the first guildmasters he contacted were Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman, and Greensleeve Prince. In truth, there was no need for him to explain the situation. They had spies planted in Lone Desert Smoke. Luckily, all the guildmasters that he had contacted shared the same view as Zhang Yang. Without asking, they had all agreed to lend their members to Lone Desert Smoke. It was a gesture that any guild, friendly or otherwise would do, since it was a matter of national pride.

Not sooner after, Zhang Yang even received a private message from One Sword Stroke. Once Zhang Yang picked up the message, the first few lines were rather cross accusations on how One Sword Stroke believed that Zhang Yang was looking down on him. One Sword Stroke explained that he was not the kind of man who would still hold grudges and refuse to help his one nemesis to defend the nation. He was no traitor and would never allow the real enemy to strike their land without doing anything. Promptly, One Sword Stroke sent over 1,500 strong members to help Lone Desert Smoke.

The news spread out like wildfire. Forums had posts and topics about the war. Almost all Chinese players were enraged and invigorated. Even so, close to 90% of all players were still under-leveled, and since the manner of the war was between two guilds, even if they wanted to, they could not help out. They could only cheer their compatriots on.

During the preparation phase, Zhang Yang had even received supports from guilds that he had never heard of before. Even though the guilds were not big or strong, each guild would have a fair bit of Level 100 players. The guildmasters had kindly offered their help to Zhang Yang and offered all their eligible members to help out in the upcoming war.

As such, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream were as busy as bees. First, they would need to arrange a large number of under-leveled players to temporarily leave the guild to make space for the incoming reinforcement. This process was exceptionally complicated since it involved more than 20,000 members. Once a member leaves the guild, the amassed guild Contribution points will be reset. Hence, the number must be jotted down in order to reimburse them when they return.

After a short period of time, Lone Desert Smoke was now an army of mercenaries. The guild consisted of 40,000 players from all corners of China. Naturally, there would be enemies among them, and minor arguments broke out. Some had even crossed swords and killed each other. Hundred Shots had treated the conflict as menial matter. Since the players who had entered were only on a temporary basis, Hundred Shots had only given some courteous words. It would be their choice to listen or not.

When it comes to defending Morning Town, everyone was fired up and willing to put their lives on the front lines. However, when it comes to defending Winst Castle, only a tiny fraction of them was willing to fight. A majority of the players had insisted on fighting in Morning Town. Their reason being that with 40,000 players, they could at least guarantee victory on one front.

So far, Lone Desert Smoke was the only Level 4 guild with a maximum capacity of 40,000 players. They would have the upper hand in defensive fights. If they fully focused on defense, it would be a 100% sure win rate. If they were to still lose the war, it would be better for the game if all 40,000 of them just deleted their accounts and went to sleep.

Zhang Yang sighed. The defenders were all volunteers, he had no say in the matter.

In the end, Zhang Yang decided. He would take care of Winst Castle alone!

With the God of War Transformation, Zhang Yang would have 12,400 Defense, 90% magic nullification rate, 20% permanent passive damage

reduction, and 20% active damage reduction. There had to be fewer than 100 players who could hurt him much!

Even so, he still had 2,886 damage absorption skill! The only threat to him were players who had similar Transformation Inheritances. Besides that, his HP would be 5,380,800 and he had a means of restoring his health completely every 30 minutes. Defending for 2 hours would not be a problem, but the war will last for 3 hours. What could he do in the final hours?

Even though the God of War Transformation would give him a massive boost of attack, it was only 500%, not 5000%, and surely not 50000%. Players are not monsters and would not stand closely to each other to take the {Crushing Strike} like idiots. It would be a challenge for him to kill 30,000 players within 2 hours...

Perhaps, it is time to use the Forbidden Scroll?

[Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] (Usable)

Use: Creates a 5km field from the center of the caster and deals 10% of maximum HP as damage to all targets within the field. Maximum damage dealt per target is 100,000. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 100

Zhang Yang could kill 99% of all players with this scroll easily. With God of War Transformation, he could easily kill all players! SOLO!

It was settled then. Might as well be flashy for once and create a legend!

Even though the Forbidden Scroll was a rare item, it would be a worthless scrap of paper if it not used. Right then, Zhang Yang had the confidence of obtaining the second, the third, or even more Forbidden Scrolls! It would not be a waste to use it on the Japs and Koks!

Zhang Yang steeled his decision to defend Winst Castle alone, and surprise the world with his feat!

The first Forbidden Scroll could be said to be the same as a nuke. It's high time to let the world know that in 'God's Miracle', such a weapon of

mass destruction exists! The best part was that no one knew about Zhang Yang having such a weapon. After the war, those who would want to launch an attack on Lone Desert Smoke would have to think thrice before doing so.

Hmm. The Japs had taken a nuke to their nation once before. This time, in the game, Zhang Yang will drop another nuke on them! Let them experience losing one more time!

Thud thud thud...

From afar, the sound of marching footsteps could be heard. An extremely large horse came to Zhang Yang. The rider pulled the reins right in front of Zhang Yang, almost trampling him.

The horse calmed down, and a knight came down. The knight's armor was big and bulky. It gave off a light greenish hue which reflected most of the light, making him look like a beacon of hope. The knight opened raised his helmet's visor and spoke boldly. "My name is Rockovich. I am here in the name of Queen Serena to expand Her Majesty's Empire. In accordance to Her Majesty's will, I am here to lead an expedition to open a pathway to the Chaos Realm!"

[Rockovich, The General of White Jade Empire] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 19,410 – 23,410

Skills: NIL.

After Serena had conquered all eight kingdoms in China's region, she had ascended to be the Queen of the Union, and had White Jade Kingdom become White Jade Empire. Zhang Yang had earlier known that the Queen would invade Chaos Realm, but he had not expected the army to arrive so quickly.

More importantly, why is this Rockovich here in Morning Town? And

that HP. Surely he was not a random Mythical tier boss. Could he be an important character for a quest?

"General, why are you here?" asked Zhang Yang straightforwardly.

"As I said, opening a pathway to the Chaos Realm requires a land. The Queen had spoken highly of you and your deeds to the once King of White Jade. You have put your life on the line on more than one occasion! I will have 200,000 soldiers of the empire to rest and camp here for a few days before the Queen herself sets foot here!" said Rockovich boldly.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes. "You want to have your soldiers camp here?"

"Does it offend you? Would you assist the Empire no more?" said Rockovich, with a penance stare.

Felice was infuriated. The lance in her hand was ready to thrust out anytime to knock the man's helm off. Zhang Yang immediately held her shoulders and pulled her back calmly. He was not afraid of Rockovich. Perhaps...

"General. I am more than willing to help. But Morning Town is operating at peak capacity. I am afraid that I cannot provide enough room for your troops. It would be an inconvenience to the army itself. May I suggest that you occupy my other land? Winst Castle. Both lands have Teleportation Circles that are linked to each other."

Rockovich nodded his head. "Very well. Off to Winst Castle then."

Zhang Yang interjected quickly and said, "I'm glad to be of service. However so, General. Winst Castle has been under constant attack by the savages who live nearby the castle. It might be some danger for---"

"Danger? I am here to lead the army to a greater cause. Be it a berserking demon or the evil Spectre, I shall exterminate them easily. What of savages? They mean nothing to me!" said Rockovich proudly.

Hehehe! That's the right attitude! Just wait and see!

Zhang Yang was beside himself with happiness. Even though the

Territorial Conquest War was between two guilds and other players may not interfere, it was not limited to NPCs! Zhang Yang had taken this chance to make use of the expedition army as his own troops that would not be kicked out of the war zone!

When the guild Sakura no Nagare Mae attacks, they would be surprised to see 200,000 NPC army occupying the castle! Zhang Yang could not wait to see the faces of the Japanese punks when that happens!

Such excitement!

Rockovich stood atop his horse, towering over everyone else, and commanded the army to use the Teleportation Point to travel to Winst Castle. Although the process of it could be seen by the players around, it was rather subtle and did not raise much attention. With haste, all 200,000 soldiers were teleported away. Everyone looked like hungry wolves that were forced to retract their claws and strike at the vital moment.

The news about him obtaining an NPC army was kept a secret among the Lone Desert Smoke higher administrators like Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream. China was a large country, there could be a chance that a traitor was already amongst them. It would be a waste if the enemy obtains news about the NPC army.

One day passed quickly and Lone Desert Smoke had gathered and prepared all of their 40,000 players. More accurately, there were only 39,999 of them in Morning Town. When E.E guild attacks, Zhang Yang would be in Winst Castle alone to welcome the players of Sakura no Nagare Mae!

E.E guild was the Korean's strongest guild while Sakura no Nagare Mae was Japan's. It was not revealed as to how the two nations decided on the attack formation. Zhang Yang only knew that the Korean guild only had professional Korean players while the Japanese guild had theirs.

Chapter 535: 1 vs 30,000 (1)

Naturally, Morning Town was filled with players of the highest capabilities. Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Snow Seeker, and even One Sword Stroke himself was present. Additionally, Zhang Yang had even given Sun Xin Yu the Forbidden Scroll just in case. If they were to lose the Territory, Zhang Yang would be at loss for words.

Hence, there was nothing for him to worry about, while standing alone in the middle of Winst Castle!

7.00pm.

‘Ding! The Territory Conquest War has started!’

As the notification rang, all non-Lone Desert Smoke players were teleported 10km away. On the other hand, players of E.E guild and Sakura no Nagare Mae were lined up neatly, 2km outside their target Territories.

Through the new battle UI, Zhang Yang could check out the forces of both army.

Morning Town: Attacker: E.E. Player Count: 30,000 Defender: Lone Desert Smoke. Player Count 39,999.

The guildmaster of E.E was extremely disappointed when he saw the differences in between the player counts.

Korea and Japan have fought among themselves for the right to choose their attack target. E.E was able to defeat all the other guilds in Korea but had unfortunately lost to Sakura no Nagare Mae. If he had been able to choose, he would want to attack Winst Castle instead of Morning Town, because that Territory was of the Japan-Korea territory. It was their pride. If they could win the war, their guilds would be award with the territory ownership, not to mention the honor and fame that comes from defeating the invaders.

Morning Town, on the other hands, was nothing but a small pile of chocolate sprinkles on top of a chocolate ice-cream. The honor of defeating Morning Town would never be on the same level of the honor of

reclaiming Winst Castle. It could not be helped. Sakura no Nagare Mae was indeed stronger than E.E..

Hence, the only hope left for Hangugui Gugwang was for Zhang Yang to be stupid enough, or rather, greedy enough to protect both sides. He would need to divide 40,000 into two separate forces to defend both sides. In that case, with his 30,000 players in his guild, he could trample over 20,000 players with relative ease. However, the hope was crushed when he saw that the defending number of players was as high as 39,999. Even though he thought that Korean players were superior gamers, and were capable of fighting greater numbers, since the defenders had the terrain advantage, it might be too much to ask for.

"Tsk. Those Japs dogs have beaten us to it!" Hangugui Gugwang clicked his tongue in annoyance. There were 39,999 players here in Morning Town, that meant that there would be only 1 Lone Desert Smoke member there in the Winst Castle. Victory would be theirs even if they were to only bring 300 players!

"What a shameless bunch of Chinese swines!" cried Hangugui Gugwang as he displaced the blame on China. Hangugui Gugwang blamed Lone Desert Smoke for not daring to defend both territory, which had placed Hangugui Gugwang in such a disadvantageous position.

With the war of nations looming, countless of players had already turned on their in-game recordings to record the scenery of the war. Right then, it would be too late for Hangugui Gugwang to retreat. With a gallant roar, Hangugui Gugwang laid down the attack order. Even if they had 39,999 players, what if they were truly cheap Chinese 'products'?

...

On the other side of the war zone, Amaou Kuyoshi was happy as f*ck!

Winst Castle: Attacker, Sakura no Nagare Mae. Player Count, 30,000
Defender: Lone Desert Smoke. Player Count, 1.

1...

Just one.

No one moved from their original spot as they laughed till their stomachs hurt. Just one man, trying to take on 30,000 players! Even when everyone had their guards heighten to its maximum, they could not help but relax instantly. It's 1 vs 30,000! How could they not win?! And why would they need to even put up a fight? If they would still need to take it seriously, it would be useless!

No one in the great empire of Japan is useless!

Amaou Kuyoshi laughed and said, "Fellow mates! The Chines swine have returned to their pig sty and cowered behind it! Hah! Shall we take the offering they have left for us? Hah! Remember to thank the Korean dogs for their unrelenting spirits!"

The mocking laughter continued on amongst the members of Sakura no Nagare Mae.

"Kill! Kill till your heart content!" cried Amaou Kuyoshi. He was a Sniper class player and wielded a longbow. With an intense glare, he cried out, "The NPCs inside the castle were meant to serve us, the citizens of the great empire of Japan, and yet they had betrayed their loyalty and served a Chinese swine! Such an act shan't go unpunished! Kill them all! Kill every NPC in the castle! The great empire of Japan has no need of these spineless weeds!"

"Kill!"

"ARGHH!"

All 30,000 players roared and charged into the castle doors like ants. There was only one defending player in the castle. There was no need to use the Trebuchets to destroy the magic cannons and the castle walls!

It was without a doubt, the easiest war anyone has ever fought. Or so they thought. If they had still lost the fight despite having only one defender, they would have to conduct seppuku to end their shame.

"Hmph. What a noisy bunch," said Zhang Yang as he covered his eyes. The roaring players were indeed greater than the roar of a single dragon. Zhang Yang watched as the attacking army approached the castle wall.

With a sinister smile on his face, Zhang Yang walked to one of the magic cannons and loaded it with an Energy Crystal. Zhang Yang mounted the cannon and fired the first blast on the spot with the highest concentration of players.

WHAM!

A bright ray blasted off and created a large crater in the middle of the battlefield. At least more than 100 players had been vaporized by the attack. The magic cannon could deal a fixed amount of 200,000 Chaos Damage, and at that current stage, no player could take the hit without relying on skills.

Hell yeah!

Since he had the army in the castle as his trump card, he could use the cannons alone and the attackers would be held at bay. However, attacking is always much more enjoyable than defending! Plus, blasting those Japanese buggers up, up, and away is better than going into the field and killing them himself.

One blast costs 100,000 gold coins? So? Money is not a problem bro~

BAM! BAM! BAM! BAM! BAM!

Zhang Yang did not hold back. In just one session of blasting, Zhang Yang had used up the Energy Crystals. Even the magic cannon was rendered useless after 10 shots. Zhang Yang shrugged and move on to the next cannon. After blasting till he was content, Zhang Yang moved on to the second cannon and blasted till it was rendered useless as well. Zhang Yang had a total of three cannons! No problem!

BAM! BAM! BAM!

The magic cannons blasted mercilessly. With each blast covering 30 x 30 meters and causing damage as high as 200,000 Chaos Damage, it was an unrivaled killing machine! After all 30 shots was fired, the Sakura no Nagare Mae guild had lost 1,821 players!

The japs were not stupid monsters. No one would be stupid enough to cluster together and die. After the first few initial shots, many of them had

scattered all over the field. Zhang Yang had only managed to kill close to more than 10 persons per shot.

With a flying mount, 2km was nothing but a short distance that could be reached within the blink of an eye. A few of the players had flying mounts and had made it close to the castle wall! Zhang Yang grunted and mounted on the Thunderhawk. With a flash of blue light, the Thunderhawk soared to the sky at the speed of lightning!

D*mn!

As expected of a high tier flying mount! Not only was its battle prowess commendable, its flying speed was truly something to behold. Zhang Yang had shot to within 30 meters of a Spellcaster and before he could react, Zhang Yang shot a {Spear of Obliteration}.

‘-27,650!’

The player had taken the damage and before he could even gasp, the Thunderhawk had reached within the target’s melee attack range. Zhang Yang raised his Heaven’s Shaker and smashed the Spellcaster’s head.

‘-26,778!’

Two hits were all it took to reduce the Spellcaster’s HP by half. Even though he could not examine the opponent’s stats, he could judge its maximum HP and stats by accounting the damage he received and the percentage of HP its dropped. With quick calculations, Zhang Yang estimated that the Spellcaster’s HP was at least 90,000.

After Zhang Yang had laid down the second hit, the Thunderhawk has activated {Shatterpoint Weakness} and {Madness}. Its original {Thunder Ball} 2 seconds casting time was shortened down to only 1.3 seconds, and its attack power was increased to 50%!

WHAM!

A ball of cracking electricity blasted off the beak of the hawk and hit the Spellcaster.

‘-34,704!’

Just as Spellcaster was about to turn tails and run, Felice's {Fire Missile} appeared behind the {Thunder Ball} and dealt more than 20,000 damage, instantly removing his head from his shoulders.

"Now, that's what I'm talking about!" cried Zhang Yang with satisfaction. He led the hawk and rushed to a group of players. From the attack before, Zhang Yang's Rage gauge was already filled up. All he needs to do now is to vent all the Rage on them!

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}! {Frost Strike}! {Force Strike}

Like a true God of War, Zhang Yang kept on swinging his hammer about, each swing drawing fresh splotches of blood. With the Thunderhawk and Felice together, Zhang Yang's presence was made even more frightening. Players that were on their flying mounts were limited to a few skills and could not simply escape Zhang Yang's death grip.

The players that were flying in the sky were all turned into punching bags and fell down to the ground, their corpses dismembered.

"It's Zhan Yu!"

During the war, Zhang Yang had publicly revealed his name tag. Since it was an all-out war with the Japanese, Zhang Yang wanted them to know the person that they were messing with. Players that were on the ground saw Zhang Yang shooting through the air at breakneck speed and felt a cold shiver through their spines. It was like seeing a reaper coming at you, with no hope of escaping. Even though they were disgruntled, none of them could deny that Zhang Yang was already several tiers ahead of everyone around. He was heads above shoulders when it comes to individual power.

"No fear! We, the citizens of the great empire of Japan, are the best people in the world! He is but nothing but a pig on a bird! Let him enjoy swinging that Inheritance about first, so be it! When we obtain our Inheritances, we shall be better than him!" cried Amaou Kuyoshi. "Thank the gods that he was not cowering behind the walls of Morning Town! Or we would not have had the chance to kill him! Brothers! Kill the man! The pig has come here to offer up his life!"

"Spellcaster! Hunters! Form a team of a hundred men and chase after Zhan Yu! The rest of you! Attack the castle walls! We will feast and bathe in their blood!" cried Amaou Kuyoshi like a demonic killer.

Chapter 536: 1 vs 30,000 (2)

Although regular [Mounts] were not as swift as [Flying Mounts], the gap wasn't much. The ground [Mounts] would arrive 10 seconds after the [Flying Mounts]. The army up ahead had already arrived at the front gates of the castle. They began to launch their assaults aggressively. The City Gate was not particularly tough, having a maximum HP of only 1,000,000! It was like a violent, powerful hurricane, threatening to tear the City Gate off its hinges!

A Territory Conquest is never about the kill count. As long as the attackers take down the City Hall of the Territory, victory would automatically be theirs!

So, it would not be worth their time to engage with Zhang Yang. Moreover, Zhang Yang had a [Flying Mount] that would allow him to move like lightning. It would almost be impossible to land a hit on him when he is buzzing about at that speed! Anyone could see that enemies would automatically achieve victory the moment they reach City Hall of this Territory. By then, Zhang Yang would be forced to surrender!

Zhang Yang had come all the way here, hoping to secure the Territory all on his own. Well, there is a saying about this. Attack the enemy's 'key point,' and they will come to you to defend it! So instead of wasting time trying to strike Zhang Yang down, why not force him to go to them?

Zhang Yang had not put much effort on reinforcing the Defenses of the Territory. The main City Gate is only Level 1, which only had a total of 1,000,000 HP, with 1,000 Defense and 1,000 Magic Defense. With an army full of different Classes, the City Gate would crumble within 20 seconds!

--- even then, 20 seconds is a lot. That was due to the City Gate being protected by a long, narrow arch, that made it possible for only 20 players to attack at the same time. Or else, the 1,000,000 HP would have been emptied out within seconds!

Although the City Gate had been breached, that was the least of Zhang

Yang's worries. He only smiled confidently. Just when the enemies thought they had broken through the City Gate, Rockovich and his army moved out from the shadows and wreck them!

Zhang Yang had no direct control over Rockovich's actions. However, as long as Rockovich and his army are still camping in the Castle, they would treat Winst Castle as their base. Naturally, when a base is attacked, the leader of the army would rally his army around him and defend their base! It's simple common sense.

"Uncivilized savages! How dare you vandalize my base! Are you seeking for death?" As expected, a thunderous, heaven-shaking roar came right out from the entrance of the Territory. The enemy players who were in the first few rows were blasted away by an invisible, powerful concussive force! With that impact wave pushing all the players back from the ruined City Gate, Rockovich took one booming step, and another, until he stopped and stood in the middle of the entrance! Dressed in completely green, ornate armor and a Crimson Golden War Hammer in his hands, Rockovich stood there stoically, right in the middle of the Winst Castle archway!

"Bo... Boss!?"

The Japan Players dropped their jaws, as they were so shocked to see such a powerful being standing before them!

They had taken part in a few Territory Conquests before, but they have never encountered any boss level NPCs before. This was actually their first time seeing a boss level NPC standing right before them. So, why did a boss spawn in a Territory? A Mythical Tier too, at that! What the hell! 100,000,000 HP? Are you kidding me? The enemies felt as if they had fallen completely into Zhang Yang's hands!

They were even more furious that the boss had actually called them 'a bunch of uncivilized savages'?

Uncivilized savages your *ss! They are the great and powerful Empire of Japan, for god's sake! How could Rockovich call them 'Uncivilized'! They definitely have nothing to do with being 'Uncivilized'!

Instead of joining his comrades in their shock, Amaou Kuyoshi widened his eyes, sensing an opportunity. He began to shout into his guild channel, "Very good! Not only are the Chinese pigs giving us back our Territory Gateway, but they have also been generous enough to provide us a Mythical Tier boss! Haha! My little brothers and sisters! Time to slay the boss and get some powerful equipment! A boss with 100,000,000 HP is usually a Super Boss! The drops will be awesome!"

Indeed, Rockovich was only a Mythical Boss. He was not an Ethereal boss that would bring endless despair to all who dared show themselves before it! Furthermore, there was no Level Gap Suppression in effect, as the level of the boss was not too far from the level of the players here. Also, they had 30,000 players at their disposal now! Shouldn't they be more than enough to overwhelm the boss? Taking down a Super boss was all about numbers, right?

So, are they not enough for a super boss?

At his rational, logical words, every single player from Japan charged at Rockovich with renewed vigor! In the setting of 'God's Miracle', under the circumstances that players are not from the same party, any player who lands the last hit on the boss will gain an additional 50% experience points!

Although they are all under the same banner - 'Sakura no Nagare Mae', but they had actually been created from hundreds of different guilds. 'Sakura no Nagare Mae' was just a temporary guild, created solely for this battle. So, how would you expect them to be truly united? Therefore, many of them started to look for the opportunity and time to give the boss a final strike at 1% HP!

That should be about 50,000,000 experience points! Players would be required to kill more than 2,500 normal monsters just to get that amount of experience! If, by estimation, one minute is required to kill 2 regular monsters, they would still need 2,250 minutes, which was a total of 37 hours to get that much experience points. That would be almost two-days of in-game time!

Furthermore, once you leave a party, you would also get the chance to snatch the loot! Drops from a Mythical boss would certainly be impressive enough. However, for a super boss that has over 100,000,000 HP, each 'dropping' had to be a treasure for the ages!

With those thoughts poisoning their minds, every player from Japan had glowing red-eyes, like pent-up, horny old men who were in much need of a release. They all charged at the boss as if they had all turned insane!

"Humph! Mindless, uncivilized savages! How dare you raise a sword at mean! Let me show you despair!" Rockovich let out another thunderous roar as he raised up his left hand, and proclaimed, "Warriors of White Jade Empire! Leave nothing behind! Kill!"

"Rawgh!"

"Rawgh!"

"Rawgh!"

His roar was so much louder and more intimidating than the roars of 30,000 players. The entire Winst Castle trembled beneath the roars of Rockovich and his army. Winst Castle was like a gigantic foul beast, roaring upwards into the sky! The soldiers of the White Jade Kingdom began to march out from the entrance of Winst Castle, one echelon after another. There were Infantries, Knights, Hunters, Spellcasters, and also white-robed Priests! The Army had the perfect spread of various roles!

"Kill! We are more in numbers! Those are just small fries!" Amaou Kuyoshi was still clouded up in his delusional thoughts.

"All uncivilized savages are the same!" Rockovich stared the players down and began to move towards the enemy's front line. With an intimidating aura, he plunged into the enemy ranks and led his army into battle. The army of NPCs started to earning their keep!

However, the narrow entrance of Winst Castle did not do good to the NPC army as well. Because the players from Japan had swarm up on them by the entrance, the White Jade Empire troops could only squeeze themselves out slowly, like toothpaste from a tube! They had slowly force

their way through. However, it was possible, thanks to Rockovich! Swing after swing, the hammer of Rockovich sent shockwaves all over the place, causing massive damage to the players from Japan. At the same time, the impact also sent them flying back, clearing some space, little by little, one wave after another, for the NPC army to emerge from the entrance!

Some of the brighter players began to react and adapt to the situation. A few Tankers took over the front line as they began to kite Rockovich away from the heated spot of the battle. They kited the boss about 1 Kilometer away from the entrance and began their assaults on the boss.

Many players had swarmed up to the boss, as the benefits of killing a boss were so lucrative. No one needed any reminder of that fact! As a result, the number of players attacking the Castle had been halved! Amaou Kuyoshi was furious to see that the players had actually been sidetracked. He berated them endlessly, pointing out their lack of foresight! They could easily hunt after other bosses in the future! It was just a Mythical Tier boss, after all. A few more levels later, and this boss would mean nothing.

Well, the Territory Gateway basically symbolized the dignity of the Japan-Korea Region. So, how long are they going to let the players from China slap their faces?

After hearing what Amaou Kuyoshi had to say, the players from Japan started to agree. After all, those who can join this battle were basically the best of the best among the Japan-Korea Region, and they understood that it was really not too difficult to farm for good equipment. As for their dignity... of course it would come first! They are the Great Empire of Japan after all! Honor and dignity will never be forgotten!

Under the 'teachings' of Amaou Kuyoshi, only about 200 players remained with the boss. A large number of the players had resumed their efforts in pushing against the large army of NPCs who guarded Winst Castle!

Inarguably, the Normal Tier NPC would not be able to do much against an army of well-equipped players! Although there were about 200,000

soldiers, they were just Normal Tier NPCs after all. Only the captains were Elite Tier NPCs.

Furthermore, the players from Japan had the ground advantage over the army. They had scattered into a curved formation that encircled the NPCs, allowing many more players to fight against a single NPC at a time. They managed to increase their efficiency in slaying the NPC one after another in the shortest time, minimizing the damage that they were receiving. The NPC army was truly in trouble!

If this goes on, the 200,000 soldiers would definitely be wiped out! It was only a matter of time!

However, that would only happen if Zhang Yang remained idle!

{God of War Transformation}!

Two large wings that radiated with angelic, bright light sprouted out from his back, and Zhang Yang was rejected off the Snake, as he was no longer permitted to be in a Mounted state. With a flick of his wings, he soared into the sky --- The {God of War Transformation} does not allow the player to be mounted to a pet.

Well, that was too bad. In his previous life, Zhang Yang was still able remain mounted on his pet even after activating his {King Kong Transformation}. Well, the developers were most likely trying to balance out the power of Class-S Inheritance. With 40 times the Maximum HP, a mounted player would be unkillable! After all, mounts added a tremendous amount of HP to players!

Shoof! Zhang Yang glided straight towards Ichiban Sake who was currently tanking against Rockovich!

Zhang Yang had observing from up above since the beginning, and he had noticed that this Ichiban Sake was also a Guardian. He had to be pretty capable, since he had managed to get a solid hold of Rockovich's attention. To gauge the capabilities of a Guardian, one would have to keep count of the rate of successful {Blocks}.

A skilled Guardian would never waste any opportunity of using the Skill

{Block}! Ichiban Sake was one such Guardian. Furthermore, his movements and maneuvers indicated that he was just getting the hang of 'Supporting Attacks'. He seemed to have mastered it, and had the makings of a formidable foe in the future.

As the game aged, along with the Professional League Championships, many skillful players had been polished and born as they began to show some promises in their performance. Like it goes with the mastery of anything, anyone can be a novice, or even an average Joe, but a master would take forever to form. Many would slow down greatly, or even be halted entirely as they approach the more advanced stages of the game. According to Zhang Yang's estimation, this Ichiban Sake should already be 70% as good as he was!

Of course, that 30% of Strength and skills would require about 2 to 3 years of catching up! Without any hardships, he would not be able to catch up to Zhang Yang's progress as well!

Zhang Yang did not turn to aid the NPC army, instead, he charged straight towards Ichiban Sake! The moment Rockovich has nothing kiting him, he would wreak havoc across the bulk of the player army. Additionally, Rockovich had a few AoE attacks up his sleeves, a typical trait of a boss!

Although Ichiban Sake was focused on tanking the boss, he had kept an eye out for surprise attacks! He quickly noticed Zhang Yang approaching him at a high speed! Well, some players had already acquired [Class C Inheritances], and the {Transformation} skill was no longer a stranger to his eyes. Therefore, when Ichiban Sake saw Zhang Yang flying without a mount, he figured it out --- Zhang Yang had activated a {Transformation} Skill!

He went pale white!

An [Inheritance] would really make a huge difference between players. The difference would be like heaven and hell! The power level of the player with an [Inheritance] would increase substantially!

Fortunately, Ichiban Sake did not know that Zhang Yang's [Inheritance]

was a Class S. He would have turned even paler, if it was even possible!

"Musashi Ousama, Shuro Ousama, you guys take a bunch of men and stop Zhan Yu!" Ichiban Sake shouted.

Shoof! Shoof!

Two shadows appeared right in front of Ichiban Sake out of a sudden. One of the shadows was Musashi Ousama who previously engaged with Zhang Yang in the Realm of the Sacred Glory. The other one was Shuro Ousama, a Berserker who wore a black helmet, and held a gigantic axe in his hands.

"Ha!" the two of them let out their battle cries at the same time. A small tornado emerged from thin air right behind one of them, while a skeletal spectre appeared right behind the other. The phenomenon only lasted for about 1 second before the mini tornado and the skeletal Spectre vanished into thin air.

Oh! Those certainly were {Inheritance Transformations}!

However, Zhang Yang was confident that these players did not share his luck. They did not have Battle Companions like Felice who could actually boost her own power and slay a boss by herself! But they did have {Inheritance Transformations}. Zhang Yang took a wild guess and deduced that their [Inheritances] should only be Class C. They couldn't possibly be Class B, for bosses like Vampire Count Ferra were too powerful for them at the moment!

He recognized them as the [Tornado Inheritance] and the [Skeletal Spectre Inheritance]. Both of them should be Class C [Inheritances]. However, Zhang Yang had no idea at all about the details of the two {Inheritance Transformations}! Because the cool down for an {Inheritance Transformation} was 72 hours long, it was really rare to witness an {Inheritance Transformation} in action. Plus, the Professional League Championship prohibited the use of Skills that had cool down periods longer than 30 minutes, so it would be impossible to witness any {Inheritance Transformation} Skills in the arena!

However, sending two allies in an attempt Zhang Yang was futile

gesture. It was like sending a mantis to stop a car!

Zhang Yang let out a cry and raised the [Heaven Shaker] high up, and swung the quarterstaff at Musashi Ousama.

‘-98,226!’

After a solid strike from the [Heaven Shaker] that Zhang Yang wielded, the HP bar of Musashi Ousama was reduced by 10%!

Musashi Ousama was terrified by the amount of damage he received! What in the world is going on? He initially had a total of more than 60,000 HP, and once mounted atop his pet, he had even surpassed 100,000 HP! His Class C {Inheritance Transformation} boosted his HP amount further up to a total of 1,000,000 HP! That was the HP of a boss! But now, that amount of HP had been reduced by 10%, courtesy of a single hit from Zhang Yang! How is that fair?

A normal attack that reaches up to a total of 100,000 damage! What the f*ck! How much Attack does this bastard actually has on him?

Even though Musashi Ousama was wielding a two-handed weapon as well, a Class C [Inheritance] would only increase the Attack of the user by 100%, and the maximum damage caused wouldn't exceed 25,000 damage. So Musashi Ousama would have to hit 4 times in order to cause a total of 100,000 damage! That one hell of a difference truly rendered Musashi Ousama speechless for a moment!

But... Zhang Yang was just one man. He couldn't possibly fight off all these players alone!

Musashi Ousama let out a roar and said, "Heal me now! Heal me!" and with his hammer raised up high, he struck Zhang Yang with all his might.

‘-6,914!’

It was pathetic. Comparing to the normal attack of Zhang Yang, Musashi Ousama's normal attack was a joke! The difference had indirectly humiliated Musashi Ousama!

Are you kidding me?

Although that was just a normal attack, without any power up from any Skill, it was still a normal attack under the power of an active {Inheritance Transformation}! Why was that attack so ridiculously low? Although a total of about 7,000 damage was pretty good under normal circumstances, it was a joke compared to Zhang Yang's 5,000,000 HP. It had merely taken off 0.1% of his health bar!

"Arienai!" Musashi Ousama screamed. Fortunately for him, they had the advantages of numbers over Zhang Yang. Or else, he would have fled the scene, trying not to get himself killed! How could he possibly stand a chance against Zhang Yang!

Shuro Ousama also let out a raging roar of his own as he swung his giant axe at Zhang Yang. However, he only scored about 7,000 damage as well.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he began to retaliate, {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-192,234!’

‘-189,988!’

Two terrifying damage values popped out on top of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama as both of them lost a large chunk of their HP bars! They now truly knew despair! Even with their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills activated, they could not withstand the oppressive assaults of Zhang Yang!

Right behind the two of them were at least 10 healers chanting their Healing Skills as rapidly as possible.

Well, numbers do bring strength! With so many Healers healing their backs without having to worry about the shortage of MP, they actually managed to heal Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama back right up! Meanwhile, Amaou Kuyoshi was aware of the situation over there and had immediately sent more Healers to support Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama! Meanwhile, Spellcasters and Hunters were quickly arriving at the scene!

Chapter 537: 1 vs 30,000 (3)

With the increasing number of Healers arriving at the scene, the health bars of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama were healed back to their full health states.

Musashi Ousama laughed madly as he said, "Zhan Yu, it doesn't matter how powerful you are! You are just one man! So, let us show you just how powerful we, the Great Empire of Japan really are!"

But players would always be players. They would always believe that they are the best!

Zhang Yang would definitely not act like a boss, where it's decision making choices would mainly be restricted by the aggro system of the game. So he would not only focus his attention on Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama! His main target remained. If he takes out that Tanker - Ichiban Sake, then he will be releasing Rockovich from the control of the players around him! Then, the Mythical Tier boss shall be able to unleash hell upon the players from Japan!

With one powerful flap of his wings, Zhang Yang flew into the sky like a dragon and in a flash, his golden wings glittered as he arrived right before Ichiban Sake. Everything happened so quickly, that none of the players could react to him.

"Abunai!" Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama shouted at the same time in fury.

Zhang Yang's normal attacks had reached up to a total of 100,000 damage, and his Skills would reach up to a total of 250,000 damage. No Tanker at the current stage of the game could actually tank against such terrifying damage! Only players with {Inheritance Transformations} would be able to stand up to other {Inheritance Transformations}.

Ichiban Sake reacted with impressive speed, already activating his {Shield Wall} to guard against the attacks of Zhang Yang that appeared to be as powerful as a hurricane!

But what would a {Shield Wall} do? Zhang Yang would still smash him up like a pinata!

Zhang Yang raised up his [Heaven Shaker] as the quarterstaff lit up in flames, {Destructive Smash}!

‘-37,216!’

Bam!

Ichiban Sake lost his professional composure as he took the attack. To think that he would still receive such great damage from the attack, even though he had already activated his {Shield Wall}. Furthermore --- he brought up the battle log to take a look, only to find that it was not even a Critical Attack!

"Hold still! D*mn you, I'm your opponent!" Musashi Ousama pointed his finger at Zhang Yang, and a small scaled whirlwind suddenly formed around Zhang Yang, blowing him off his feet!

Zhang Yang was slightly worried, as the skill had completely immobilized him!

[Whirlwind]: Summons a small scale Whirlwind to detain a target, the target will not be able to move at all. But, the target will not receive any damage or other Status Restriction Skills. Lasts for 10 seconds.

It was one of the ‘Inheritance Skills’ of Musashi Ousama!

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang instantly broke himself out of the Skill Effect and regained his mobility. Half a second before his Global Cool Down period was over, Zhang Yang raised his [Heaven Shaker] up high once again, ready to strike.

The Healers from the Sakura no Nagare Mae quickly threw their Healing Skills at Ichiban Sake as rapidly as they could! Although Ichiban Sake had already been affected by the {Destructive Smash} which reduced 75% healing effects on him, there were so many Healers that they were still able to restore his HP to full capacity in no time at all.

With so many Healers focused on the Tanker, as long as Ichiban Sake is not killed by a single hit, they would still be able to heal him up efficiently. It would just be like tanking against a powerful boss.

Zhang Yang sighed. Although his attack power is insanely powerful, he is still not powerful enough to instantly kill a {Shield Wall} empowered Guardian! Unless Zhang Yang can trigger both a {Lucky Strike} and a Critical Attack at the same time when he strikes, then Zhang Yang should be able to cause at least 200,000 damage to a Guardian with {Shield Wall} by activating powerful Skills such as {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash}! Even if Ichiban Sake is mounted on his Pet to increase his Maximum HP, he would still fall within seconds!

Well, if the players from Japan knew about what he was having in his mind, they would definitely be humiliated! A life saving Skill is precisely called a life saving Skill because the Skill could save a player's life! If a player is instantly killed, even after using a life saving Skill, then what is the point of playing the game, then!

Zhang Yang let out an intimidating roar as he flapped his wings and flew back into the air. Then he faced the Healers and began to fly towards them --- the duration of {Shield Wall} on Ichiban Sake should still last for about 7 to 8 seconds more, so Zhang Yang decided to let him live for a little longer.

Musashi Ousama quickly raised his axe up and pointed at Zhang Yang as well, and he shouted, "Summon!"

Instantly, four white skeletons emerged from the surface of the ground and crawled up to their feet. These skeletons did not look like regular, slow-moving spectres. They were as agile as Spiderman himself! They began to move agilely across the battlefield as they approached Zhang Yang. Suddenly, they leaped towards Zhang Yang, aiming for all four limbs! They wanted to tear Zhang Yang apart, limb from limb!

They leaped into the air towards Zhang Yang at lightning speed! Zhang Yang assumed that the leaping must be these skeletons' Skill. The next split second, all four skeletons had grabbed hold of Zhang Yang, and with

their might, they pulled Zhang Yang straight down to the ground.

Zhang Yang was shocked as he fixed his eyes upon these skeletons. These skeletons were all elite Tier, but each of them only had 200,000 HP! The skeletons had released Zhang Yang for the moment as they began to attack Zhang Yang with their white and bony hands.

Are they trying to get themselves killed?

Zhang Yang swung his [Heaven Shaker] across the four skeletons and caused about 90,000 damage on each of the skeletons. The powerful impact of the strike had knocked the skeletons back by 3 to 4 meters! He got out of the 'dangerous situation' and activated his {Charge} at one of the Priests near him.

{Force Strike}!

‘-99,887!’

"Argh!" the Priest did not even last for one strike of Zhang Yang's [Heaven Shaker], and was turned to mush and jelly!

Zhang Yang humph as he stomped on the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}! As the flashes of electrical damage surged across the Priests, and tens of them took about 20,000 damage, all affected by the 5-second speed reduction effect! They could not even flee from Zhang Yang!

"Kill him! Quickly, kill him!" At the same time, the army of ranged attackers, Spellcasters and Hunters, had finally arrived, though they were really late. More than 200 players were shooting their arrows and magic attacks at Zhang Yang.

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

Without the power up from [Inheritance], how could they possibly even cause any damage to Zhang Yang who had now been endowed with a ridiculously high Defense! Not only that, players without [Inheritances] would face a situation akin to the Level Gap Suppression when they go up

against players with [Inheritances]! Their Status Restriction Skills would not do much to Zhang Yang! Although Zhang Yang was being struck by tons of Movement Speed Reduction effects and Movement Restriction effects, however, only one {Concussion Shot} had managed to affect on him! As soon as Zhang Yang took swig of [Mobility Potion], he regained his movement. He swung on with his weapon and caused massive panic among Healers as he started his version of Armageddon!

His normal attacks could reach up to a total amount of 90,000 damage. Even if players have greatly increased their Maximum HP with their [Mounts], but they would be required to be mounted atop a [Mount] that is at least a Yellow-Gold Tier in order to increase their Maximum HP up to more than 100,000 --- provided that the player is well-equipped in the first place. Well, they should at least have a few Level 100 Violet-Platinum equipment in order to achieve that amount of HP!

Therefore, every single blow coming from Zhang Yang brought instant death! Only a few players were able to withstand 2 hits or more! Even if there were, Felice and Violet Thunderhawk quickly ended them from above in the sky!

Bam! Bam! Bam!

None of the players who got hit by the [Heaven Shaker] still had their heads intact! Their heads had been smashed open, as blood spilled across the air, turning the air sour. It tasted of rust! Such horrible deaths! Zhang Yang was so addicted to killing that he did not even turn back to Ichiban Sake, even though his {Shield Wall} had long faded. He carried on slaughtering the players around him, one smash at a time! No one could match him, they could only delay the inevitable!

Zhang Yang had no qualms about killing these Japan players so indiscriminately. To him, it was like the slaughtering of chickens and dogs, or even pests! With the support of his {God of War Transformation}, other than some players who had [Inheritances] nobody could even cause a single point of damage!

As the God of War EP took some time to accumulate, Zhang Yang did

not use them immediately. He intended to accumulate about 100 God of War EP before spamming his Skills all at once. By doing so, he would cause about 32,000 AoE damage to the players in every wave of his attack, and by activating each skill of his in every second, his enemies would not have the chance to heal back up at all!

{Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}!

These 3 AoE Skills were quickly becoming universal nightmares to the players from Japan, especially {Horizontal Sweep}! Without any Critical Damage, that attack alone could already reach up to about 200,000 damage. Without activating a life saving Skill, anyone within the attack range of that Skill would be dead the moment the Skill is activated!

How long would it take for a life saving Skill to cool down? How long would it take for {Horizontal Sweep} to cool down? Can the cool down period of these Skills really be compared, side-by-side?

In the eyes of the Japan players, Zhang Yang was now basically a boss with an invincibility buff as he was slaughtering them up without any sense of mercy. They could not hurt him at all! They could just run around like wild chickens, being pursued by a farmer's wife armed with a chopper!

Amaou Kuyoshi was so furious at witnessing such an absurd scene, and the only thing he could do was to send more players over to Zhang Yang's location. If all the Tankers die, then the DPS players and the Healers would be instantly wiped out by Rockovich!

"Slay the boss first! Focus on the boss now!" Amaou Kuyoshi shouted! The truth was clear, before his very eyes. No one could even actually break through Zhang Yang's Defense to cause damage to him, let alone empty out Zhang Yang's immense HP bar of 5,000,000 points!

After some quick deduction, it was obvious that they should focus on the boss first!

The Japan players had been separated into two sides. The side with fewer players was focused on bringing down the boss, while the side with the larger number of players was focused on the massive army of NPCs.

Killing Zhang Yang or the boss was no longer their priorities. They had set their minds on taking down the City Hall of the Territory as their priority, it was why they were here in the first place.

Because the entrance of the Winst Castle had been blocked by hundreds of thousands of NPCs, the Japan players would have to kill the NPCs first to clear a path to the City hall. Meanwhile, Japan players with [Flying Mounts] were in the sky attempting, to fly over the entrance itself! It was obvious that they were beginning to aim at the most vulnerable spot of the castle! They were making their way into the City Hall!

Zhang Yang did not pursue them, because he had already arranged a massive NPC army near the City Hall, and he had also placed his 100 [Mechanical Servants] and 200 Castle Guards close by the City Hall. They should buy them enough time till the Territory Conquest ends.

Zhang Yang only sent Felice over to the City Hall to support the army, and as a pair of eyes and ears to keep him updated about the situation within the Castle. He could always fly to any location that needs him at the moment.

Rockovich had a total amount of 100,000,000 HP. Even though he was being heavily assaulted by the players, his HP bar still looked healthy! Furthermore, Zhang Yang had purposely picked on the Healers as his main targets. Because of that, the DPS players from Japan could not get enough support from the Healers as they took heavy damage from the boss' AoE attacks! They could only take their [Potions], or withdraw in order to use their [Bandages].

However, taking [Potions] and using [Bandages] required time and had cool down periods. The area and range attacks of the boss were struck out at them, one wave after another, forcing the DPS players to wait for those cool down periods! They could not even do a thing about their current situation!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he spread his wings and soared around the area. Meanwhile, Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama could only stare at him from the ground, witnessing him slaughtering up their guild

members.

But they could not simply leave Zhang Yang be. The moment when Zhang Yang turns his attention over to Ichiban Sake, the poor tank would surely perish! When that happens, the boss will return to the entrance of the Castle and all hell would break loose! They knew all too well the consequences if a Super boss is left unchecked!

Of course, they could remain in their delusional worlds and fantasize about slaying Zhang Yang!

After slaughtering hundreds of Healers, Zhang Yang finally turned his attention towards Ichiban Sake. After all, Rockovich did not have the ability to heal himself, so he would eventually fall!

Shoof!

He flew towards Ichiban Sake and struck at the Guardian's head with his 'hammer'!

{Block}!

Ichiban Sake reacted like a true professional Tanker as he raised his shield up in between himself and Zhang Yang, just in the nick of time!

However, it would hardly make a difference. It barely even delayed the inevitable

What could one {Block} do? Zhang Yang still had at least 3 Skills lining up at the back of his list, ready to be dispatched, and each Skill would cause about 200,000 damage! How was Ichiban Sake going to survive that?

{Frost Strike}!

Zhang Yang thumped Ichiban Sake on the head again, with his [Heaven Shaker] like a roaring black dragon! The next thing that happened was a bunch of flesh and the splatter of blood oozing out of the stump that was once Ichiban Sake's neck, followed by the numerical value of '-412,246'! That was a Critical Attack! The HP bar of Ichiban Sake was immediately emptied out!

Chapter 538: 1 vs 30,000 (4)

"Yaro!" Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama screaming in rage, as they had believed that they could have stopped Zhang Yang from killing Ichiban Sake. Their confidence level was hammered hard as they were proven wrong! The delay of Ichiban Sake's demise wasn't due to the fact that the two of them posed any threat to Zhang Yang in their transformed states, it was actually because Zhang Yang was not in the mood to kill him yet!

Just look at it. The guardian was wiped out so easily! Just a single strike had already sent him to his demise, without the need to throw another strike at him!

Meanwhile, as these two were doing their best trying to get at Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had lost about 700,000 HP. Their damage output could already be considered to be extremely high, as 700,000 damage was already a decent value. However, that amount of damage meant little to the Maximum HP of Zhang Yang that reached up to 5,000,000 HP! Such a ratio would really push a person to the brink of madness, especially for players who were confident of their own skill and power to begin with!

As Rockovich had suddenly lost his main aggro target, he immediately switched his attention towards the DPS players and the Healers. The General swung his heavy hammer across the players before him and sent a bunch of players flying in the opposite direction as he roared, "You uncivilized savages! Is it really that fun to be hiding behind your Tankers while using your ranged attacks on me? Very well, let me show you what real fun is!"

He slightly bent his knees, and suddenly leaped into the air with his strong and powerful body, followed by a superhero landing among the army of DPS players and the Healers. Next moment, Rockovich was swinging his war hammer about, crushing all the players before him. The army of players descended into chaos, as none of them were able to hold their ground against the powerful boss! Every single blow created a shockwave effect. Therefore, players with insufficient strength could only

be blown away by the shockwaves of Rockovich's hammer.

Furthermore, at the current stage of the game, who would actually have enough attribute points to boost their Strength to the level of a Mythical Tier boss?

Rockovich swung in hammer in a twirling arc, killing a large number of players around him!

--- with their Tankers gone, the boss was no longer being shepherded around like a cow, he was now a hungry wolf that had just been let into a herd of sheep. That's the end of the story. The players were being slaughtered by the boss like a bunch of harmless sheep!

Zhang Yang was laughing out loud as he joined in to support the boss. The two of them worked together, Rockovich and his terrifying hammer, and Zhang Yang with his [Heaven Shaker] that spun like a tornado in the middle of the battlefield! {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}. {Thunder Strike} were struck out repeatedly as Zhang Yang caused massive casualties to the Japan army! Under the support of his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang could already hit so much harder than the boss! His normal attack had already reached up to a total of 100,000 damage, and his Skills could already reach up to at least a total damage to 200,000 damage! Even an Ethereal Tier boss would respect that power.

Rockovich had a surprised look on his face as he said, "No wonder the Queen speaks highly of you! I wouldn't have believed that you are so powerful if I haven't just witnessed it with my own eyes! But from what I've seen, this strength is not your base level. It seems to be some sort of magical power that brings out the inner power within your core, and it's highly unstable!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "It's true, I can't keep this form for long, but it's enough to kill these 'uncivilized savages'!"

"Haha!" Rockovich laughed as well, and his eyes turned sharp and intimidating as he shouted, "You idiotic uncivilized savages! How dare you launch an assault on the great White Jade Empire! How dare you assault the expedition army of Queen Serena! I hereby declare that all you

uncivilized savages must die!"

All Japanese players were so angry to hear Rockovich's words that their veins were beginning to pop! Being called 'uncivilized savages' while being unable to physically refute that statement surely made it seem as if they were admitting to that very fact!

The feeling was just great!

Looking at all the furious, disgusted face, Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh out loud. Then, he flapped his wings and began to swing his weapon around once again. All the non-Tanker Class players were instantly killed. Even if the players are Tanker Class, Zhang Yang would only have to activate his {Horizontal Sweep}, {Destructive Smash}, {Frost Strike}!

With Zhang Yang working together with Rockovich, the number of those Japanese players was reducing steeply! Meanwhile, the seemingly endless NPC army continued gushing out from the entrance of the Castle! What were their chances of breaching the walls now?

The current numbers on both sides --- Attacker: Sakura no Nagare Mae, number of players: 25,239; Defender: Lone Desert Smoke, number of players: 1!

This was just 10 minutes after the Territory Conquest had began, and Sakura no Nagare had already lost about 5,000 players! If they continue to lose their numbers at this rate, they might even be wiped out in an hour! There's no need to even wait until the end of the Territory Conquest! Amaou Kuyoshi was close to blowing up! He quickly sent another fresh party over to keep Rockovich occupied. Well, they could not just let the boss roam freely around their own army and cause havoc!

The fact did remain, however, that they were all helpless against Zhang Yang, the super killer!

Logically speaking, players were not bosses, they would basically get affected by all sorts of Skills! With about 100 players, if each of them takes turns using a Status Restriction Skill on a target, they could keep the target immobilized there, perpetually. The target would be their toy!

Unfortunately for them, players with [Inheritances] were an existence transcends all others, mostly due to their resistances against Status Restriction Skills --- quite a small number of players had managed to acquire an [Inheritance] for themselves in each of the regions. Although there were still no signs of Class S, Class A, and Class B [Inheritance] in other regions, there was already quite a number of players with Class C [Inheritances], which was enough for them to {Transform}. The professional players have encountered some of such players, so normally, players with [Inheritances] would have over 90% rate of resistance towards the Status Restriction Skills of the players without [Inheritances]!

When the players with [Inheritances] activate their {Inheritance Transformations}, they would almost have a 100% rate of resistance against the Status Restriction Skills of players without an [Inheritance]!

The total HP of Zhang Yang after he 'transformed' was just too high for the Japanese players to fathom! Plus, his Defense and Magic Defense were both terrifyingly high. There was no way for the Japanese players to even take him down via focus fire! Now that they realized they could not even use their Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang in an attempt to restrict his movement, they could only let Zhang Yang slay them at will, as Zhang Yang broke their heads open like fresh watermelons!

"Tsukaenai Obakadomo!" Amaou Kuyoshi could not longer keep his vulgar words back, he was really disappointed with Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama as they had failed to stop Zhang Yang. They were basically useless! They had claimed that things would become far easier, upon the activation of their [Inheritances], even going as far as to say that they would triumph over tens of thousands of enemies!

"Musashi Ousama, Shuro Ousama! Forget about Zhan Yu, and focus on making a break for the castle interior!" Amaou Kuyoshi made a crucial decision, based on the most logical sense.

Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama felt ashamed as the two of them had only managed to tail Zhang Yang's ass around like two idiots, even after they had activated their {Inheritance Transformations}. There was no better way to shame them both! The two of them quickly communicated

with their pets and charged towards the entrance of the castle. They began to activate their 'Inheritance Skills' on the army of NPCs to unleash their anger and frustration.

Although the two of them had been led around by Zhang Yang like two idiots, they were still able to demonstrate the power of Class C {Transformations} to their compatriots.

Musashi Ousama activated the greatest skill in his arsenal - courtesy of his [Whirlwind Inheritance]. He transformed into a whirlwind, sending the NPCs around him flying in an insane turbulence! Every single NPC that went flying received about 20,000 damage. Their landings were not soft either. If they did not have any effects on them that slowed down their descents, they would have to receive another damage that could go up to 10,000 damage, from the fall alone!

Normal NPCs would be instantly killed after they get sucked into the {Whirlwind} that Musashi Ousama had just activated. Even the elite Tier NPCs were losing their will to fight after being sucked into the {Whirlwind}!

Meanwhile, Shuro Ousama had turned himself into a white skeleton that was about 7 meters tall. Every single NPCs that he killed while he was in his skeleton form had turned into a skeleton soldier. These skeleton soldiers turned around and supported him in attacking their former comrades! Well, that had the potential of becoming a really broken skill, depending on the duration of those skeletons.

Zhang Yang observed the battle from afar and he could not help but sigh. {Inheritance Transformations} really changes the game. Even C Class {Transformations} turned players into insanely powerful beings!

Of course, those 'forms' of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama did not last long. Every type of {Inheritance Transformation} would gain 1 point of 'Energy Point' in every 10 seconds. The 'transformations' of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama would definitely need 'Energy Points' to support them using their 'Inheritance Skills'. When their 'Energy Points' run out, their Skills would end as well. Furthermore, the cooldown period

for their 'Inheritance Skills' were extremely long.

Those Skills were just like the {Vampiric Blood Drain} of the [Vampire Inheritance].

1 EP would be gained in every 10 seconds. The battle had raged on for tens of minutes, and Zhang Yang had already gained enough EP point to fully fill up his Energy Bar. Without wasting any time, Zhang Yang went out with the 100 EP on hand, ready to unleash hell upon the Japanese players!

With a powerful flap of his wings, Zhang Yang flew straight towards the entrance of Winst Castle and activated his first destructive Skill. Instantly, a stream of golden light surged outwards!

{God of War's Crushing Strike}!

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

Instantly, a tremor spread across the ground, as countless beams of golden light broke out from the surface of the ground. The light formed into the shapes of arrows as they began to hurtle further up the sky! Every single target within the attack range received a damage of '-32,110'!

Zhang Yang huffed coldly as he waited for his 1-second Global Cool Down period to pass. After that, he raised his left hand and activated another {God of War's Crushing Strike}!

Again! And again!

The purpose of waiting for his EP bar to reach 100 EP was to allow him to spam his {God of War's Crushing Strike} 34 times in a row, without giving his targets any chance to recollect themselves! Furthermore, his {God of War's Crushing Strike} inflicts Chaos Damage that doesn't get affected by Defense or Magic Resistance. Any non-Tanker would have to return to their Main Cities after about 3 hits from Zhang Yang!

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Blast Wave}! {Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang did not only use {God of War's Crushing Strike}. He also activated his other Skills. His {Horizontal Sweep} reached up to about

200,000 damage without triggering a Critical Damage. So Zhang Yang did not see the reason why he should waste the availability of his other powerful Skills!

‘-24,278!’

‘22,876!’

‘21,977!’

Under the oppressive assaults of the boss and Zhang Yang, the players from Sakura no Nagare Mae were being slaughtered!

This is really bad!

Quite a number of Japanese players were actually aware of their situation! They started feeling uneasy as they saw the endless swarm of NPCs gushing out from the entrance of the castle. Meanwhile, they had been informed that the Aerial Troops sent into the City Hall earlier on had all been annihilated. According to the rumors they heard, the Aerial Troops had been taken out by a large number of [Mechanical Servants], Castle Guards and a Dragonhawk!

Unable to march forwards as their Assault troop had been wiped out entirely, and having two insanely powerful beings cutting off their escape route, how should they proceed with the Territory Conquest then?

Did they even have the choice of retreating, now?

Even if there was a mountain of swords and a sea of flames before them, the Japanese players had no choice but to close their eyes and jump in! Or else, they would definitely be scolded and cursed upon by many other furious Japanese players, shoving red-hot sticks down their *sses. 30,000 players had failed to take down a Territory that is only defended by one player? That will definitely become the joke of the century!

The Japanese players had no choice but to charge towards their demise!

Bottles of [Potion] were taken, one after another, the moment they could take them. It was as if these Japanese players were on steroids and viagrasm having just gotten rid of their long-standing impotence, charging

forward with their 'second brothers' in high spirits as they attempt to launch a last ditch attack! At such a moment, none of them would still want to save any money, their dignity were much more important! They would definitely be blamed for their defeat when they are back in their own countries!

Although only their spirits were boosted up, with that high spirit, the Japanese players managed to improve their strength and performance in pushing forward! They actually pushed the NPCs back, and were on the verge of breaching the entrance of the castle!

Zhang Yang let out a loud roar as he flew down from the sky. Then, he descended right before the entrance like a god descending from the heavens.

As Zhang Yang had been slaughtering up the Japanese players to such great effect, the Japanese players were intimidated for a moment when they saw Zhang Yang standing in front of the entrance! However, they only halted for a brief moment before they regained their senses and continued to push forward. "Kill!" These players shouted one while charging at Zhang Yang.

Chapter 539: Wrap Up

The battle was totally a one-sided slaughter. Zhang Yang planted his feet in the middle of the castle entrance. Right before the front row of the Japanese players could clash into him, he swung his [Heaven Shaker] like the legendary warrior Zhang Fei,¹ who stood in the middle of the Changban Bridge²! Every roar was lethal, and every strike was destructive! With only one man, Zhang Yang was holding against tens of thousands of Japanese players, leaving no one to pass him!

‘19,820!’

‘17,892!’

‘15,922!’

The number of players from the Sakura no Nagare Mae had been reduced by half and they were only one hour into the battle! The casualty was increasing at an unacceptable rate!

While they were on the brink of despair, the Korean players were actually trying to acquire information concerning the Territory Conquest battle over at Winst Castle. Everyone knew that there were over 39,999 Lone Desert Smoke players at Morning Town. So, if Winst Castle was not an empty castle at the moment when the Territory Conquest occurs, then there should at least be one China player there!

Wouldn’t an army of 30,000 basically walk their way to victory?

Why haven’t the system informed them about the change of Barons for Winst Castle, then?

What have the 30,000 army of Japanese players been doing all this while? How could they be incapable of taking out a lone player in an empty Territory? Quite a number of players who were in between the Level 90 to 100 bracket were beginning to lose their patience and started cursing. They started saying things like - if they were of sufficient levels, they would ride over to the Territory Gateway and take it back themselves! Why would they even need a bunch of losers to help them take back their

Territory Gateway?

Upon all the scoldings from those players, Amaou Kuyoshi could only endure the pain in his crotch silently. He dearly wished that he could simply summon those cynical Japanese players over to his location, so that everyone could witness the insanely powerful 'Transformation' of Zhang Yang!

Oh my god! How could one player be so powerful, to such an extent!

If Zhang Yang only had an extremely long HP bar, then they should still be able to take him. However, his attack power was also extremely high and powerful! Among the Japanese players, they also had players who could 'Transform' as well...but they were nothing compared to this. A 'Transformed' player could also be healed up by a few Healers supporting them from the rear, if and only if they were fighting monsters and bosses!

But this is not a boss, this is a god d*mned player! A player's behavior in the game is not powered by the Aggro system of the game! A player could choose who to kill without being restricted by the aggro system! Worst off, Zhang Yang was basically immune to any sort of Status Restriction Skills! With all these conditions favoring Zhang Yang, it really did bring about a sense of despair upon the Japanese players!

Amaou Kuyoshi made quick calculations in his mind. He believed that they would need about 20, no, 50 players with {Inheritance Transformation} Skills to be able to take Zhang Yang down!

However, they only had Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama, so where would he find so many players with {Inheritance Transformation} Skills? It was not because the Japanese players couldn't get any of the [Inheritance Fragments]. Some of the lucky ones had already obtained the Linking Quest for Class B [Inheritances], and some of them had even got the quests for Class A [Inheritances]. But all of them had been halted by the final bosses of their [Inheritance] quest. It seemed that they would not be able to magically gather 50 players that were capable of {Inheritance Transformation} in the short run.

'14,322!'

'11,092!'

'7,834!'

...

As the battle raged on, the number of players continued to reduced steeply. Meanwhile, the number of players from Lone Desert Smoke continued to remain steadily at the single digit - '1'. All the Japanese players had their eyes glued to that number, as they gnashed their teeth together, and felt the shivers down their spines!

The murderous look on Zhang Yang's face was bound to be a nightmarish scene that would haunt all of the Japanese players for the rest of their days! What a terrifying monster!

After the tormenting battle had reached the 120th minute, the Japanese players suddenly got released from their suffering --- the duration of Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} Skill had finally come to an end!

Zhang Yang, however, did not lose himself in the lust of killing those Japanese players. He already had [Violet Thunderhawk] standing by on his side. The moment his {God of War Transformation} faded, Zhang Yang had hopped onto the [Violet Thunderhawk] immediately. The [Violet Thunderhawk] flapped its frosty-blue wings and rose into the air, 50 meters from the ground! There, Zhang Yang had gotten himself out from the attack range of all the players, regardless of their Classes.

The Japanese players had not be able to recover their senses, as they could not react to Zhang Yang's actions as well. They were still wondering on why Zhang Yang had suddenly stopped killing, as if he had turned soft on them! But the more experienced Japanese players quickly realized the situation, and they started to shout, "His {Inheritance Transformation} has faded!"

"Hahaha! It is time for us to strike back!"

"There's still time. 1 hour for us to take down the Territory's City Hall!"

The Japanese players who had tasted despair for the past 2 hours

suddenly saw a glimpse of hope, a glimpse of light! All of them began to cry in excitement! Before that, Zhang Yang had his stupidly insane {God of War Transformation} activated, so none of them could do anything to him! But even now that the {God of War Transformation} Skill had faded away, nothing much had changed! Just because their equipment were decent, it did not guarantee them victory over the mighty Zhang Yang! Even with those powerful equipment, they could not shorten the power level difference between themselves and Zhang Yang by much!

At that moment, the remnants of their Aerial forces had soared atop their [Flying Mounts], heading towards Zhang Yang. About 9 players with 9 different type of [Flying Mounts] charged towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not falter as he activated his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} at one of the Spellcasters! At the same instant, he activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} on a Hunter. Upon the activation of those two Skills, he flew towards another Priest! With his [Heaven Shaker] raised up high, poised to strike, Zhang Yang merciless tore into the Priest.

The movement speed of the [Violet Thunderhawk] was extremely fast! The Priest did not have any time to react at all. His dilating pupils reflected the looming silhouette of Zhang Yang approaching at lightning speed! The moment he realized Zhang Yang was already in front of him was the moment when the [Heaven Shaker] crunched into his neck.

‘-27,882!’

At the same time, the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} had started to take effect, causing a series of ‘10,000’ damage to the Spellcaster and the Hunter. As they were all 50 meters above from the ground, the Healers on the ground could not reach them, as they were too far away. Also, the only Healer that was capable of flight was currently being given a beating of his life. The Spellcaster and the Hunter struggled to go back down, within the range of the other healers. As Zhang Yang’s Skills were still active, there was no reason for them to stay in the sky, or dream on that the Healers on the ground would grow wings and soar into the sky!

Buzz!

The [Violet-Thunderhawk] spat out a ball of lightning. Bright, white electricity surged through the Priest's body as he was winced and then fell still. That was actually the 'Paralytic' effect of the {Lightning Ball}!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he continued to beat the Priest up with his {Destructive Smash}!

'-54,332!'

After three devastating hits from Zhang Yang, the Priest let out a cry and fell from the sky.

Zhang Yang did not stop there, and turned his attention towards the remaining 6 Japanese players.

Nine elite players without [Inheritances] were absolutely no match to Zhang Yang. Without much of a fuzz, Zhang Yang sent them crashing down to the ground, their voices of misery echoing through the field. Only one Spellcaster had managed to flee back to the ground! However, he did not last long either.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he directed [Violet-Thunderhawk] to circle around the sky like a dragon. He would randomly lunge down to attack some players with one or two hits, and then get back up to the sky to circle around!

Meanwhile, without any firepower left in the sky, the Japan army could only stare at Zhang Yang, while he picked them off one after another like a bird of prey picking on a herd of trapped mice.

Well, if they couldn't do anything against Zhang Yang, then they should just focus on taking down the castle, and take down the City Hall. That was their only chance now! However, the Japanese players finally realized that they had just lost another 4,578 players on their side!

So only about 4,000 players had survived the onslaught of Zhang Yang!

Meanwhile, tens of thousands of NPCs remained at the entrance of the Winst Castle, and Rockovich was still alive and well! Although Rockovich

had already lost two thirds of his HP bar, taking into context his 100,000,000 HP, a third of that amount was still a lot! Rockovich still had over 30,000,000 HP! That amount of HP would definitely be enough to curbstomp the Japanese army!

Looking from another perspective, 4,000 players should still be able to take down the boss. However, even though Zhang Yang could no longer pose a great threat to them, but the NPC army had become their worst problem. They outnumbered them by over 2 to 1!

More and more soldiers of White Jade Kingdom gushed out from the entrance of Winst Castle, pushing the players of Japan army back, one step after another. By the end of it, the NPC army formed a circle formation and completely surrounded the Japanese army before they started getting busy!

NPCs behaved very differently compared to groups of players, they worked together in perfect tandem, focusing on one player at a time. Especially the Ranged soldiers, 10 Hunters and 1 Spellcaster would focus their fire power on the same target. Even a player with extremely good equipment would die in misery!

Meanwhile, the Priests of the NPC army started to shine. Earlier on they had been all trapped within the castle interiors, it was finally their turn to squeeze themselves through the entrance of the castle and start healing up the soldiers on the front lines. Although they could not heal those soldiers who were instantly killed, Rockovich still had an abundance of HP left, so they started healing the boss back up. Hundreds of Priest cast healing Skills on the boss, swiftly healing him up!

What the f*ck! What could the Japan army do with this?

After all, this army of NPCs was no ordinary army, it was the Expedition Army of the White Jade Empire! Of course they would be an extremely powerful force!

The formation of the Japanese army had finally crumbled. Under the suppression of the NPC army, they had finally given up on every last bit of hope. Their remaining numbers continued dropping, from 3,000 to 2,000,

from 2,000 to 1,000... falling from 4 digits to 3 digits, then from 3 digits to 2 digits, then lastly, down to 1 digit!

When the final player, Amaou Kuyoshi was stuck down by the [Violet Thunderhawk] with a

{Thunder Ball}, the system declared that the Territory Conquest had ended in advance. The duration of the Territory Conquest was 2 hours 38 minutes 56 seconds!

‘Ding! Congratulations to Lone Desert Smoke, for having succeeded in annihilating the entirety of Sakura no Nagare Mae. You have claimed victory over the Territory Conquest in advance!’

The members of Lone Desert Smoke received the same notification at the same time.

Huh? What just happened?

The China players who were still engaged with the E.E Guild in guild almost popped their eyes out of their skulls!

After all, there was a total of 39,999 Lone Desert Smoke members stationed in Morning Town. Only Zhang Yang alone was defending Winst Castle. The system made no such mistake!

It only meant that Zhang Yang had annihilated all of Sakura no Nagare Mae and had even claimed victory in the Territory Conquest, in advance!

It did seemed to be a little over exaggerated!

Meanwhile, when the Korean players had also received news about the lost of Sakura no Nagare Mae, instantly, their assaults became even more aggressive and precise! It was now or never! The army that was supposed to take down Winst Castle had failed! That was definitely an impossible outcome! However, a loss is a loss, there’s no denying it!

All the Korean players began to go mad. Although they could not claim back the Territory Gateway that was supposedly theirs, they were very determined to take down the Territory Gateway that belonged to China Region! There was no need to think about the rightful owners of the

Territory Gateways! Just take it down, and think about the rest after!

Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes as she suddenly looked at Sun Xin Yu and said, "Sister Sun, let's just use that [Forbidden Scroll] and get this over with!"

Sun Xin Yu said, "We've won!"

She meant that the Lone Desert Smoke had already secured a sure victory over this battle, so it was not necessary to waste a precious [Forbidden Scroll] over nothing.

The little brat quickly added, "That noob tank single handedly took out the entire army of the 'Shorty Japan' even before the Territory Conquest ended, are we seriously going to battle for 3 hours, with all 40,000 of our men? When we see that noob tank later, he is going to laugh at us with that nasty face of his! More importantly, he's going to make fun of me.. I mean us!"

Sun Xin Yu was also a person who loved winning. As she was listening to Wei Yan Er's reasoning, the look on her face changed a little as her conviction on not using that scroll started wavering. She revealed a murderous look on her face, as her eyes gleamed in uncertainty.

Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue added wood to the fire, "Humph! What a boring person you are! Are you seriously worried that you might get scolded by Zhang Yang after you use it? What a coward!"

"Do you want a punch in the face? You big-titted b*tch!" Sun Xin Yu shot a cold glare as she reached into her inventory and took out the [Forbidden Scroll].

Well, praise the lord, as Zhang Yang had given the [Forbidden Scroll] to Sun Xin Yu, for he knew she was a calculated professional, with a steel, ice heart of precision. She was mature enough to not be controlled by her emotions. But what he had not seen was the chemical reaction between these two ladies. That would really stir up disaster with unimaginably terrible consequences!

Sun Xin Yu had firmly decided to use the [Forbidden Scroll]. Without

any delay, she tore the [Forbidden Scroll] into half, and there goes the first [Forbidden Scroll] of the game, sinking into the depths of past history!

The sky began to rumble!

The [Forbidden Scroll] had been activated! The entire sky instantly began 'boiling' in dark clouds, as the clouds shrouded every inch of the sky within their visible range. Within the fast moving dark clouds, there was also the continuous crackling of blazing white, electrical charges.

'Ding! Player Frost Night has used the [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday]!'

With Sun Xin Yu as the center point, every player within the range of 5 Kilometers from her received the same system notification! As the center point was in the middle of the town entrance, that had covered every single player involved in the Territory Conquest.

A for... forbidden scroll? What the heck is that?

No one had any idea on what a [Forbidden Scroll] was. Naturally, they wouldn't know the power of one either! But, the name spoke wonders for itself. Imaginations began to run wild. After all, the scroll contained word 'Forbidden', so the power of this 'magic' should be terrifying, to say the least. If that was not the case, the system would not have even bothered announcing it!

However, as far as their imaginations went, no one would ever imagine that the range of this 'Scourging Doomsday' would reach out as far as 5 Kilometers! The impact of the strikes from the 'Scourging Doomsday' was even more powerful, to the point that people would piss their pants as they remained within its effective range!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the dark clouds rolled in the sky, massive thunder bolts hurtled straight down from the sky and countless burning meteor rocks came crashing down! It was the apocalypse, Armageddon, Ragnarok, whatever you wish to call it!

All of the Korean players began to receive damage in every passing

second! The 'Scourging Doomsday' would reduce 10% of the target's HP in every second, but the maximum damage would not exceed 100,000 damage! Other than the Korean players who at least had Class B [Inheritances], none of the Korean players would ever have 1,000,000 HP. Therefore, everyone, other than the Class B [Inheritance] holders started to lose 10% of their health in every passing second. Furthermore, 'Scourging Doomsday' is 30 seconds long!

As the Healer Classes still lacked the power to heal 10% of a powerful player's HP, the situation was akin to a huge, leaking vessel!

From the 11th second, many of the Korean players started to die. On the 15th second of the 'Scourging Doomsday', the death toll had reached up to tens of thousands! The current death toll was beginning to catch up with the total death toll from the first two hours of the battle --- at first, when the Korean players saw that there was almost 40,000 players in Morning Town, they already knew that there was no hope in taking over the Territory Gateway. So, they simply decided to aimlessly wave their weapons around to pass time. However, when they received the news that Sakura no Nagare Mae had failed in their conquest, they started to get serious and charged towards the entrance of Morning Town!

On the 20th second, the total death toll for the Korean players had reached up to total of 20,000! On the 25th second, the last bunch of players who had activated their life saving Skills started dying, one after another!

The insane electrical surges continued to strike, and the meteors continued to fall on the ground, however, there were no more players alive to take anymore of that!

The Korean players had been wiped out!

'Ding! Congratulation to Lone Desert Smoke, for succeeded in annihilating the entirety of the E.E Guild. You have claimed victory over the Territory Conquest in advance!'

The second system notification was sounded not long after the first, but the other players that Lone Desert Smoke had 'borrowed' from their ally

guilds dropped their jaws as they stared at the aftershock of the 'Scouring Doomsday'.

Oh my god!

TL Notes:

1. Zhang Fei - a military general who served under the warlord Liu Bei in the late Eastern Han dynasty and early Three Kingdoms period.

2. Changban Bridge - The Battle of Changban was a battle fought between the warlords Cao Cao and Liu Bei in 208 in the late Eastern Han dynasty.

Chapter 540: The War's Post Mortem

The Japan-Korea Region had launched their assaults on the two Territories of Lone Desert Smoke at the same time, however, the two massive armies were soundly annihilated like ants!

The news had spread across the official forums like wildfire. At first, many players could not treat it seriously, believing them to simply be rumors, however, after knowing that the two Territories of the China Region still belonged to Lone Desert Smoke, solid evidence to that fact, they could no longer deny the truth! Therefore, everyone began to wonder how did Lone Desert Smoke pull that off!

After all, guarding the Territory to defend their rights overruling the Territory in a Territory Conquest, and annihilating the enemies to claim victory in a Territory Conquest were two different things!

Furthermore, the news had stated that Lone Desert Smoke had over 39,999 players stationed in Morning Town, so victory via annihilation would be feasible. But the details about the Territory Conquest over the Winst Castle is a little bit absurd! One man against 30,000 and that one man had managed to wipe them out?

Holy mother of the cow as the goosebumps comes! Are you sure you're reading the text right?

Is there anything else that could really be even more absurd than this? One man wiping out an army of 30,000? Did that one player lug a [Magic Cannon], with unlimited ammo?

But after Zhang Yang released the footage of the entire Territory Conquest over Winst Castle, questions and doubts on the forums were cleared out as the players began to shut up!

Everyone could not help but to feel sorry for the players from the Japan-Korea Region as they were really unfortunate to have clashed head-on with the Expedition Army of White Jade Kingdom, along with a very powerful boss!

Of course, the players were even more shocked to see Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation}!

To see Zhang Yang going all out without the need to heal as he toyed with the 30,000 to the point that they could not do a thing! This was no longer insane, this was ludicrous, this was insanity itself going insane!

So proud! So mighty! So dominating!

Who wouldn't want to be so outstanding in a game? Who wouldn't want to be the center of the attention like that?

All of a sudden, the search for the [Inheritance] had become a hot topic for the players. Every one of them started to imagine themselves 'transforming' like how Zhang Yang did. They would imagine slaying all their enemies from all directions like almighty beings! Of course, those who had certain knowledge of the game knew that Zhang Yang had managed to become the center of the attention because he was the first to get a high Class [Inheritance]. So when more and more players acquire [Inheritances], Zhang Yang would no longer be the invincible monsters that everyone had pictured him to be!

However, the players were not willing to open their eyes to common sense. They were only willing to see the mighty and undefeated side of Zhang Yang without thinking logically. In other words, those players who were not interested in getting any [Inheritance] back then were now searching for the [Inheritance Fragments] all over the place, like madmen. They did not even need the Official website to announce anything about [Inheritances]!

Other than that, some players had uploaded the footage showing the power of the [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday], and all players lost their voices again for another 3 minutes!

Annihilated an army of 30,000 players in merely 30 seconds? That was something is even more full of ridiculous bullsh*t than the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill!

In the coming days, two words would be mentioned very frequently. 'Inheritance' and 'Forbidden'.

Of course, the Japan-Korea Region had become the butt of the joke for the other 7 Main Regions in the game. The two armies had suffered devastating defeats, leaving them with broken halberds, buried in the sand. Ever since their defeat, the 60,000 who took part were heavily condemned by their own countrymen! The guildmasters for the E.E Guild and the Sakura no Nagare Mae, the names 'Hangugui Gugwang' and 'Amaou Kuyoshi' had become synonyms for the term, 'disgrace'!

Those players that were 'borrowed' from other guilds had left the two guilds and returned to their initial guilds with shame and anger, while the players who originally belonged to the two guilds went back to their own Region in disdain! Now, these two guilds were facing fates far worse than anyone could anticipate, as these two guilds were actually super powerful guilds in Zhang Yang's previous life! Now, the two guilds might fall apart and get disbanded sooner than anyone could think! Zhang Yang was no longer spreading his butterfly wings like a hurricane, instead, he was spreading them like a storm cloud, a force of nature that cannot be tamed!

After witnessing the powerful aftershock of the [Forbidden Scroll], everyone feared of its existence, an existence that could bring about devastating effects like a nuclear warhead! Not only was the range of this 'bad boy' ridiculously vast, but it could also bring about the substantial amount of damage to enemies within its range. Unless the players had {Inheritance Transformations} that boosted their HP up to the millions, nothing stood a chance.

Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream quickly regrouped their original guild members. Meanwhile, the high Tier players who were 'borrowed' from other guilds saw that the warehouse of Lone Desert Smoke was full of powerful and rare items and equipment! So many of them were not willing to leave the guild --- Zhang Yang had limited the access to the guild's warehouse to only his own guild members, however, only the high-ranking members of the guild could deposit and withdraw items to and from the warehouse. All those Level 110, Level 120 Violet-Platinum equipment that Zhang Yang and his party had acquired from previous battles lay gracefully among the slots of the warehouse. It was an act to

inspire his guild members to work hard and earn them as rewards and prizes.

Zhang Yang attempted to feign ignorance about these additional 'visitors', as high Tier players were a form of 'wealth' that is hard to come by in the game. Meanwhile, the guild had recently been upgraded to level 4 Guild not too long ago, and there was a new wave recruitment going on as well. There was no need to worry about a shortage of space. Of course, Lone Desert Smoke paid more attention to the attitudes of the players when recruiting new members. If the players do not have firm resolutions, it did not matter if they are high leveled or high Tiered, their performances would definitely be below average.

After the battles, Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke had become even more prestigious than before! The players in the China Region were worshiping Zhang Yang, while the players from Japan-Korea Region hated him to their cores. Even players from other Regions now knew that the China Region had a super powerful player and a super powerful guild!

Zhang Yang did not blame Sun Xin Yu for using the [Forbidden Scroll]. He had actually planned to use it as a deliberate show of strength, making a statement to the world that Lone Desert Smoke had a 'Nuclear Warhead' in possession. After all, they did not need the other guilds and players coming at them with trouble in mind, slowing down their progress in the game! With such a 'warning' sign on their doorstep, Lone Desert Smoke could prevent a lot of unnecessary problems from other guilds!

Even though the Lone Desert Smoke was already on track to a decisive victory in Morning Town, they had still used one [Forbidden Scroll] on their enemies. So what did that mean? To be able to use one Scroll so generously, they had to have several more in possession!

Quite a number of players started to come down with paranoia, and that was exactly the effect that Zhang Yang wanted. He's no battle maniac, it would be tiring to battle players day after day.

Of course, Fatty Han felt an ache in his heart as soon as he found out that they had used a [Forbidden Scroll]. After the triggering of [Forbidden

Scroll] over the Territory Conquest on Morning Town, the price of the [Forbidden Scrolls] had rocketed out of orbit! That meant that the convenient use of a [Forbidden Scroll] by Sun Xin Yu had cost them at least tens of millions of dollars, like throwing a chest full of gold bars to the bottom of a river! Of course, that fatty was so greatly disturbed to the point that he could not eat well for the next couple of days! He actually lost a couple of pounds!

There, the Territory Conquests were finally over for now. After all, [Territory Conquest Orders] were not easy to come by. Meanwhile, players from the Japan-Korea Region had also found out that they would have no other way of restricting Zhang Yang at all, when he is in his {God of War Transformation} unless they had an army of Class B [Inheritance] owners! Otherwise, charging into a battle head-on with Zhang Yang would never end well!

Furthermore, they had to find a way to divide the forces of Lone Desert Smoke if they even want to claim victory over any of their Territories. Or else, they shouldn't even attempt any single conquest!

So, the top guilds from all eight Main Regions had turned their attention back on acquiring the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. Ever since Mess Up Your Mama had cleared the Hard Mode of the dungeon, the other top Tier Guilds were beginning to share their progress, joining the 'front line' with the other pioneers!

Currently, Mess Up Your Mama had scored 5/15 bosses, securing the first place in clearing the dungeon. The following guilds had also cleared up to 4/15 or 3/15 bosses at that stage, as well. The first 5 bosses of the Dragon Throat Fortress were easier to slay, but the 6th boss is the line of demarcation for the difficulty of the dungeon. That was the boss that got Mess Up Your Mama stuck, and it was already days after they cleared the 5th boss. There were no signs of the battle log concerning the 6th boss for two months!

Zhang Yang was not worried at all. He knew that the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress was extremely difficult. The following 5 bosses should be able to keep the other guilds from progressing for at least a

month. The last 5 bosses would definitely stop the guilds in their tracks for at least two months!

The priority now was to head out into the open world and slay some open world bosses and gather some powerful equipment to increase the guild's Strength. Only then would the guild be powerful enough to push through the bosses and clear the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress!

Now that Zhang Yang had obtained the [Zinc Alloy] and the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang], he no longer had reason to hold back on locating the final quest item for his quest, the [Light of Miracle]. As it had started off as such a difficult quest, Zhang Yang would definitely stumble across some high Tiered bosses, and he might even get the chance to pick up some fine and powerful booty while he is at it. So basically, Zhang Yang would be killing two birds with one stone again, a situation that he would always welcome at any time of the day!

Zhang Yang hopped onto him [Violet Thunderhawk] as he began to zip across the sky like a lightning bolt. In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang had arrived at the Siccory Mountains, where he began to head on over to the Radiant Canyon in search of the [Light of Miracle].

When comparing the [Violet Thunderhawk] to the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent], this Mythical Tier Thunderhawk could really travel swiftly, and it had far more stamina than Whitey Jr.. It did not show any signs of tiredness or fatigue, even after carrying Zhang Yang across the sky for a long time. If this was Whitey Jr. that was carrying Zhang Yang over such a distance, it would have been using its cute, large glittering eyes to beg for sympathy.

The Radiant Canyon was a magical, fantastic place where the night would never fall upon the canyon. Even after sunset, the rocks and stones in the canyon would release blinding light, as if they had recharged themselves throughout the entire day, unleashing the light that they have 'collected' into the surroundings.

However, Radiant Canyon was steep and treacherous. There were many

spiky rocks across the path and it wasn't easy at all for a [Flying Mount] to roam freely. They could only fly across the canyon from a height, tens of meters off the ground. Flying higher than that would risk crashing into the spiky rocks all around the place! Fortunately for Zhang Yang, there weren't many monsters in the area. So, it wouldn't be an issue to fly low in that area, as Zhang Yang did not have to worry about a bunch of monsters chasing after their tails.

After flying for a distance in the Radiant Canyon, Zhang Yang decided to land by the road that had forked off into three different directions, as he had spotted a Red-Skinned Orc who was struggling to crawl away. That Orc had three arrows buried deep in its back, and he had most probably been crawling in the same direction for quite a while, as there was a long trail of blood behind him.

[Aldo] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 115

HP: 86/17,800

The HP bar of the Orc was slowly depleting. Judging by the rate of the HP reduction, it would probably only take about 1 minute or so before the HP touches zero.

There was a yellow exclamation mark on the top of the Orc. This was a quest-giving NPC. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would not risk missing out a quest in the middle of such a place, as there was a decent chance that this quest might have something to do with the [Light of Miracle] that Zhang Yang is looking for.

"Human ---" Aldo raised his head up when he sensed the presence of Zhang Yang. His dying eyes started to lose focus as he tried his best to speak in a trembling voice, "Help... me... with this! Take this message... to our Red-Skinned Chieftain Roger Kluge. Hellscream!"

'Ding! Aldo has a quest for you: A message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream. Will you accept it?'

Accept!

"Argh!" Aldo let out a long sigh, as if he had been relieved of a heavy burden, and went limp.

[A message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream] (Difficulty: D-rank)

Description: You have stumbled across a dying Red-Skinned Orc. As a compassionate Adventurer, you agreed to aid him in completing his errand, right before he died. You will need to deliver this message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream. It was most likely that the Orc had been crawling in his intended direction.

Completion: Pass the message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream 0/1

Zhang Yang quickly hopped back onto his [Violet Thunderhawk]. Then, he followed the road down the direction where the Orc had been crawling.

After flying for about 20 minutes, Zhang Yang arrived at a large campsite. The design and styling of the buildings within the campsite looked very Orcish. Every single one of the houses had spiky spears on top of them. Those spears would make good self-defense weapons, if the need ever comes.

By the entrance of the campsite, there was a platoon of Level 120 Elite Tier Orc soldiers. The moment they saw Zhang Yang descended from the sky, they charged towards Zhang Yang and surrounded him. Then one Orc came up to him and said, "Human, identify yourself at once!"

Chapter 541: A Conflict of Interests

"I'm an Adventurer from the White Jade Castle, and my name is Zhan Yu!" Zhang Yang hopped off the Thunderhawk and gestured courteously, "I came across an Orc by the name of Aldo. Even at death's door, he was beseeching for me to pass this message to your Orc Chieftain Roger Kluge. Hellscream!"

"Aldo... is dead?"

"Sod this! How dare those bloody goblins to spill the blood of our kin! To arms! Show these litter critters the meaning of death! Kill them all!"

The Red-Skinned Orcs started to roar in rage. The ultimate act of evil had been committed to one of their kind! They would not let this pass!

The leader calmed the Orcs down and said, "Human, follow me!"

Zhang Yang followed the Orc into the campsite. He saw that the Orcs here were all red-skinned. All sorts of Orcs were there, male and female, young and old. They all looked at Zhang Yang, especially the Orcs children as if they were laying eyes upon an alien visitor for the first time. All of them were curious to see Zhang Yang's arrival.

After walking continuously for more than 10 minutes, the Orc finally led Zhang Yang to the front of a large building. After a series of security checks, Zhang Yang finally met the Chieftain of the campsite.

[Roger Kluge. Hellscream] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 37,500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 33,207 - 39,207

Skills:

[Wind Walk]: Enters an invisible state and increases movement speed by 100%. Increases the damage of the next Skill by 200%. The effect would only last for 1 minute, or it would fade if the user does any additional

actions other than moving around.

[Storm Blades]: Swing your weapon around and inflict every single target within your melee attack range with the Attack of your weapon!

[Jumping Slash]: Melee Attack will have a 20% rate of triggering a Critical Attack.

Note: The Chieftain of the Red-Skinned Orcs, he is as wise as he is brave!

As Chieftain of the Red-Skinned Orcs, he was also red in color. The difference was that he was in a much deeper tone, that you would have thought that he had dipped himself in a pool of blood. Although he was middle-aged, this Chieftain did not look like his age. He had an intimidating aura around him, even though he appeared to be calm for the moment. A long sword was slung over his back. Although he was not particularly large, nor did his muscles ripple, but he gave the impression that he could just tug that sword from its scabbard and turn his enemies into mincemeat, all in a single motion!

"Human, the message, please!" Roger Kluge spoke in a deep rumble that was clouded with sorrow.

Zhang Yang took the out 'Message' from his inventory and passed it over to Roger Kluge, then he said, "My respected Chieftain, what sort of enemies are you up against? I have friends that are Orcs as well. Although they are not of your clan, I am willing to provide aid in such regards!"

A hint of surprise and respect came across the noble Orc's face for a brief moment. He nodded at Zhang Yang in acknowledgment and began to read the 'Message' as he unfurled the scroll. The more he read, the more intense his expression grew, and the more his fists clenched and quivered. Zhang Yang could see that the Chieftain was on the verge of popping a vein!

The old Orc sat down in his chair and gathered his thoughts for a moment before he started speaking again, "Close to our territory, there is a mining cave. You can mine for some sort of ore they call the [Light of Miracle]. These ores are extremely fantastic and unique. They contain

powerful magic, and can be used as the power source for magic staffs! This canyon is named The 'Radiant Canyon' because there is no difference here during day and night. Every single rock and stone in this place produces the 'light of miracle'. After all, the normal rocks and stones in the normal mountains and valleys do not have the [Light of Miracle], so they are not suitable for us!"

Therefore, it appeared that this [Light of Miracle] was a type of mining ore. If Zhang Yang had known this before getting himself into all these troubles, he would have gone to mine the item himself!

At least, that was what Zhang Yang told himself. Of course, he also knew that the system would never make things so convenient, or any other player in the entire game would have been able to acquire quest items without the need of going through any quests, or even slaying bosses! Also, only players in the mining profession would be able to mine ores! So, if he doesn't complete this quest, then he will be unable to mine for the [Light of Miracle] even if he really stumbles across it. He could only stare at them.

Roger Kluge continued to talk, "Mining the [Light of Miracle] requires a very specific type of Magic Equipment. We don't have enough finances to go around purchasing those equipment yet. Therefore, we have been sending men to guard the entrance of the mining cave all this while. Also, we've been able to gather some of those loose pieces of [Light of Miracles] lying around the cave"

Then, why was there a dead orc, now?

Roger Kluge did not intend to tantalize Zhang Yang at all. As such he quickly spoke, "However, just beyond the land of Radiant Canyon, there is also another tribe of Orcs. They are the Blue-Skinned Orcs, and they have been ambushing my people at the mining cave, even as we speak! Although they are much larger in number and much stronger than us, they are not capable of wiping us out yet. If we really were to engage them, we would suffer great losses, and so will they! When they are weakened, other Orcs from different tribes will surely try to take their place as the most powerful tribe! It would be all over for them!"

Bam! The old Orc slapped the surface of the table hard, as teapots and cups jumped up for a split second before returning to the surface of the table, and said, "Those Blue-Skinned Orcs know that very well! Therefore, they did not attack us directly. Instead, they decided to coerce a bunch of goblins into snatching the mining cave of the [Light of Miracle] from us! Pui! The campsite of these goblins are very close to the mining cave. However, all Orcs know very well that the mining cave belongs to us, the Red-Skinned Orcs! If those filthy, weak little creatures did not have the support of the Blue-Skinned Orcs, they would not have had the guts to do such a thing!"

Zhang Yang finally got his chance to say something, so he asked, "Why would the Blue-Skinned Orcs be doing this? Aren't they afraid to go head-to-head against your tribe? Although goblins are known to be a filthy greedy tribe, everyone knows that the goblins have almost 0 power in battle. Even if Blue-Skinned Orcs really form an alliance with the Goblins, their battle power will not even change by a bit! The outcome would be the same!"

Roger Kluge shook his head, then he said, "Human, you have no idea how Orc 'Politics' works!" He then let out a breath of sigh as he continued to explain, "The number of Orc tribes that dare to ambush the mining cave is extremely low. Well, most of the Orc tribes come up with excuses so that they do not have to send their troops and join the Blue-Skinned Orcs in their ambush! Meanwhile, although we Red-Skinned Orcs are a little weaker than the Blue-Skinned Orc, but among all the Orcs, we are good enough to rank fifth! No other tribe will have an easy time taking us out! At worst, both sides will suffer heavy losses, and lose their respective standings! However, with the Goblins at the front line, they would have a reason to form an alliance to go up against us!"

The situation was pretty complicated!

Zhang Yang frowned as he had never been good in any form of politics, and he said, "My respected Chieftain, what do you plan to do, then?"

Roger Kluge began to drum his fingers on the surface of the table as he continued to speak, "I have sent a messenger over to the campsite of the

Goblins to express our rage and to once again reiterate, strongly, to everyone else that the Miracle Mining Cave belongs to us, the Red-Skinned Orcs. The goblins should know that if they are playing with fire, they will get burned!"

What a familiar line!

"But Aldo is dead!" Zhang Yang said.

"That's right, Aldo is dead!" Roger Kluge suddenly had a murderous look in his eyes, "So those goblins must believe that the Blue-Skinned Orcs are supporting them now! Do they believe that we will not lay a hand on them? Human, since that you are willing to aid us, then I gratefully accept! I shall give you a quest! Get over to the Miracle Mining Cave and wipe all the goblins trespassing the area. That should teach them a lesson!"

'Ding! Roger Kluge has given you a quest, Teach the Goblins a Lesson, accept or decline?'

Accept.

Zhang Yang walked out of the tent. Then, he summoned the Thunderhawk out. At the speed of light, Zhang Yang lunged into the sky and began his journey over to the quest location. Of course, he had that greedy thought of even getting his hands on a [Light of Miracle] the moment he lands there. If that is the case, he would be able to fly back to hand in the previous quest and get over with it.

Less than ten minutes after soaring through the sky, Zhang Yang arrived at the entrance of the mining cave.

This location could be easily marked and recognized, as there was a large number of goblins all around the entrance of the mining cave. The goblins had no hair at all in the middle of their heads, and they were even shorter than the dwarfs. They were also much smaller in size. These goblins were just a bunch of little creatures, as skinny as twigs. Their arms and legs were so thin that they looked very fragile! Judging from their appearance and the appearance of the Orcs, they were just like a bunch of 'looney-toon' creatures with only 5 Attack power!

At the other side of the mining cave, there were over 100 Red-Skinned Orcs standing off against them. The two sides were staring at each other as if they were about to clash! Although the goblins were not exactly outnumbered, if these two troops really clash into each other, the Orcs would crush those goblins like crispy crackers within 5 minutes!

Well, it seems that this Roger Kluge is really a patient Chieftain!

Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head over and over again. He understood that a Chieftain had many things to take into consideration before making a move. No matter which side he decides to slaughter, there will be consequences. So, he cannot act according to his own will. The quest only required Zhang Yang to slay 24 goblins, however, Roger Kluge did mention that the more goblins Zhang Yang slays, the happier Roger Kluge would be.

Let's make us a happy Chieftan. Zhang Yang decided to wipe out ever goblin in sight!

He patted on Thunderhawk as they charged towards the goblins' side. He picked his first target.

[Philpines Goblin]

Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,623 - 9,623

Skills:

[Goblin Mortar Strike]: Mortars crafted from the technology of the Goblins, inflicts 20,000 Fire damage to targets. Instant activation. Range: 30 meters.

[Goblin Defibrillator]: Attempts to revive one of their fallen comrades.

[Goblin Pulse Rifle]: Launches a shot at the target, inflicting 20,000 Nature Damage, and stuns the target for 10 seconds. Casting time: 1 second. Range: 30 meters.

Note: Philpines Goblins had inherited all attributes of the goblins. They prefer the soft way rather than the hard way. They greed for gold. However, they will not stay and fight to their deaths when they face danger, instead, they will just run away like cowards! Because they are naturally born weak in combat, they have invented a type of 'Supporting Attack' called 'Technology' to support them in battle.

They prefer the soft way rather than the hard way, they say? Hehe, then let's show they how hard this [Heaven Shaker] hits!

Zhang Yang let out a shout as he threw his {Spear of Obliteration} over to one of the Philpines Goblins

'-27,822!'

The shadow of a spear stabbed straight through the body of the goblin and red blood spilled from the greenish body of the monster to all over the place as it shrieked in pain. It jumped 3 meters high, as if something had seared its buttocks. After that, the goblin quickly raised up its spear and charged at Zhang Yang.

"You filthy human! How dare to show your disrespect by attacking a Goblin of the great Philpines!" This goblin was charging towards Zhang Yang. The money-minded Goblin snarled, "You must compensate me for this! Hand over at least 100 gold pieces, and I shall consider not killing you!"

Pak! Pak!

Felice and the Thunderhawk completed their casting almost at the same time as they shot out their attacks.

"Argh! Another two! Human! You are not going to get away with just 100 gold pieces!"

Chapter 542: Slow-acting poison

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, seeing how the Goblin was still rambling on about compensatory fees, even though he was about to die a most gruesome death. He was truly worthy of being a Goblin!

This goblin halted all of a sudden as it took out a mini-sized red mortar and directed it at Zhang Yang. Only god knows how the goblin had produced it out of thin air! The goblin fumbled around with the fuse at the bottom, while covering a ear with its free hand.

A series of sparkles ignited at the bottom of the mortar and boom! The mortar fired a blazing hot missile straight from its muzzle, a stream of burning light trailing behind it like a shooting star!

It may have seemed to be a long, slow process, what it had all unfolded within one-tenth of a second! Judging from the speed and the way it handled the weapon, the goblin had to be extremely proficient at handling that odd-looking weapon!

Zhang Yang only managed to turn his head before the fire missile hit him. The fire missile sent a shower of sparks over his entire body and Zhang Yang received '13,114' damage.

"Hahaha! Human, are you scared? Tremble before the 'Technology' of the goblins!" The little green goblin was pleased with itself. With a wave of its left hand, the red mortar vanished. It raised its spear up and charged towards Zhang Yang. After a few small, pathetic strides with its tiny feet, the goblin finally reached Zhang Yang and stabbed its spear at Zhang Yang's neck.

Chiang!

Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield to block the strike, and a series of sparks flew out between the tip of the spear and the surface of the shield. Zhang Yang blocked the goblin's attack, and then swung his [Heaven Shaker] towards the goblin and started turning it into mincemeat.

Unfortunately, in the game, despite having a battle power of 5 according

to how the Orcs described them, along with their flavor text, when engaged in battle with players, Goblins would just as powerful as Orcs! They would have almost had similar stats, compared to normal Level 115 elite Tier monsters. However, a mere level 115 elite Tier monster cannot do anything much to defend itself against the mighty swings of Zhang Yang.

The goblin launched a few more fire missiles at Zhang Yang, and it also tried to stun Zhang Yang with its {Goblin Pulse Rifle}. However, although the {Goblin Mortar Strike} could not be interrupted as it can be instantly activated, the {Goblin Pulse Rifle} had a 1-second chanting time, so it could be easily interrupted by a professional player in many ways!

{Crash Magic} can be used to instantly cancel the {Goblin Pulse Rifle}. The stun effect of the {Blast Wave}, {Brutal Smash}, and {Heroic Leap} can also interrupt the chanting of a Skill. Unless it is a boss that is naturally designed to be immune to interruptions, it would just be a lame joke for any other normal Tier or elite Tier monsters to try to chant a Skill before Zhang Yang.

When the goblin's HP bar was down to about 10% left, the goblin was no longer showing any signs of arrogance on its face. Instead, it turned tail and fled in the opposite direction like a coward!

However, the 4-second stun effect of the {Blast Wave} was enough for Zhang Yang, Felice and Thunderhawk to deal at least 100,000 damage to the goblin and send it to its afterlife with ease.

Carrying on to the next target.

Zhang Yang threw another {Spear of Obliteration} at a second Goblin. This goblin had a {Goblin Defibrillator}, a Skill that is similar to some Skills of a Priest, or Knights that can actually resurrect a player. Thanks to game logic, even if the dead Goblin has had its heart ripped out or its skull smashed in, a simple shock would get them back to full fighting condition. Literally!

Even more annoying was the fact that killing those resurrected goblins will not reward the players with a single drop of experience points, or a single loot. What kind of logic is that!

Usually, players will suffer the same fate as Zhang Yang did right now because they would have no idea at all that killing the goblins in a group would give the goblins an opportunity to resurrect their fallen fellow goblins. Kill one group of goblins, and another group rises back from the dead. That is truly annoying!

Half an hour later, Zhang Yang had finally taken care of most of the goblins by the entrance of the mining cave. All that remained were the two elite Tier monsters standing by a tent that had been set up temporarily. However, Zhang Yang believed that these two elite monsters were just 'guards'. There should be another powerful goblin inside the tent.

Since these 'guards' are already elite Tier, then the goblin resting inside that tent must be a boss. The only question is, what Tier would this boss be?

If it is a Mythical boss, then Zhang Yang would not be able to slay the boss all by himself. But if it is just a Violet-Platinum Tier boss, then Zhang Yang can still depend on his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle and let Felice tank against the boss while activating her {Absolute Defense}, and he also can depend on using his ultimate god-slaying Skill, {Glare of the Death God}! He would still stand a chance at slaying the boss all by himself!

First, to identify the Tier of the boss. If it is a Mythical Tier boss, Zhang Yang would just hop on the Thunderhawk and fly away as swiftly as possible from the battlefield. He already fulfilled the criteria for completing the quest, there would be no reason for him to risk dying for nothing! But if it is a Violet-Platinum Tier boss, Zhang Yang would just take the boss down. After all, a 'free' boss is not to be missed!

He began by hurling his [Spear of Obliteration] at one of the monsters as usual. The goblin on the left was struck by the {Spear of Obliteration}. The two goblins have shared aggro vision, so both of them began to let out some weird roars and charged towards Zhang Yang.

"You bunch of filthy shorties! Can't you just give me a rest already?"

right after an annoyed grumble, a large and tall Blue-Skinned Orc came out of from the tent. Two large and sharp teeth bulged out from the folds of the Orc's lower lip, making it look very fierce and intimidating.

[Bermuly. Meryl Lynch] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 120

HP: 3,600,000

Defense: 2,120

Melee Attack: 9,222 - 13,222

Skills:

[Wind Walk]: Enters an invisible state. movement speed increased by 100%. Increases the damage of the next Skill by 200%. The effect will only last for 1 minute, or it will fade if the user does any other actions besides moving around.

[Storm Blades]: Swing your weapon around and attacks everything within melee range!

[Jumping Slash]: Melee Attack will have a 20% rate of triggering Critical Attacks.

Note: Blue-Skinned Orcs are one of the largest factions of the Orcs. They have the most influential power in Radiant Canyon. The Blue-Skinned Orcs love to intervene in the affairs of others. But because they have an extremely high battle power, no other Orcs dare to stand up and challenge them.

What the f*ck! That was a Yellow-Gold boss!

Zhang Yang was extremely disappointed. Violet-Platinum equipment currently flood the market. It would already be a miracle for a Yellow-Gold Tier equipment to sell at anything above 1,000 gold! Although the drop rate for Yellow-Gold equipment wasn't really that high, players can basically farm for an endless amount of Yellow-Gold equipment from dungeons!

The Normal Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress would drop Level 100 -

110 Gray-Silver equipment, the Hard Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress would drop Level 100 - 110 Yellow-Gold equipment, and the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress would drop Level 100 - 110 Violet-Platinum equipment! As there are too many bosses in the Dragon Throat Fortress, along with the relatively easy first 5 bosses of the Dungeon in Normal Mode and Hard Mode, it is really so much easier for the players to farm for Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. Therefore, the level 100 Yellow-Gold equipment are definitely becoming the average standard for all players.

Of course, as the Hardcore Mode of that dungeon is insanely difficult for players at the current stage of the game, it would still be impossible for them to clear the Hardcore Mode to farm for Violet-Platinum equipment! Therefore, only the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment can be sold at good prices for now. Unless those Level Yellow-God equipment are extremely rare necklaces, accessories, rings that cannot be found from boss drops, players would just dismantle the Yellow-Gold equipment into a bunch of [Runestones]!

The moment when Bermuly. Meryl Lynch took notice of Zhang Yang, he revealed a tired, bothered face. Bermuly. Meryl Lynch tugged the battle sword that hung over his back out and muttered, "I could have never expected a human to intervene in the affairs of the Orcs. Looks like you've run out of reasons to live!"

Shoof!

He did not even give Zhang Yang the chance to explain himself as he swung his battle sword and charged at Zhang Yang. Of course, it would actually be normal for the boss to charge right at players upon sight. Unless there is a drama mode going on, that's what bosses are for.

A Yellow-Gold boss can only show off their long amount of HP! Other than that, they are basically child's play to high Tiered players! Their normal attacks alone were already half of Zhang Yang's. The gap would only widen when Zhang Yang's Skills are activated. The boss was only called a boss at this point, due to their HP. It was the only thing worth mentioning.

The {Inheritance Transformation} can make a player so powerful as the Skill itself can boost the HP of a player by game-breaking amounts! For instant, a Class S [Inheritance] only boosts a player's Attack by a multiplication of 5, but it can boost a player's Maximum HP up by 40 times! It would turn a player into a boss! That would create a real pain in the *ss for the players who haven't acquired [Inheritances]!

Zhang Yang met the boss without any sense of fear. With the shield in his hand swinging out, Zhang Yang bashed the boss with a solid hit and pushed the boss backward!

Zhang Yang could not help but felt shocked himself. Initially, the Titan Armor Set that he was wearing should logically was not on par with the Strength of a Level 120 Yellow-Gold boss. However, after he rolled in a few pieces of Mythical Tier equipment to replace some of his Titan Armor Set pieces, Zhang Yang's Strength had actually increased up to the point that he could now suppress a Yellow-God boss! He was not even aware of this fact himself!

This would make things really easy now. Having the advantage in his Strength, he could now fully unleash the potential of his 'Supporting Attacks', suppressing the boss to the point that the boss could not do anything at all!

As he was engaging the boss, Zhang Yang did not forget to turn around and smack the two goblins around as well. With his shield in his hand, he kept the boss and the two goblins occupied with bashes, slams, shoves, sweeps of the legs, and kicks. The two goblins could not do a thing, crying out loud miserably while being 'toyed' around by Zhang Yang. Meanwhile, the attack combination of Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk was so powerful that it took them less than a minute to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 50%!

"My lord Bermuly. Meryl Lynch, I think we should scram now!" Although Zhang Yang's assaults were well focused on the boss, the two goblins were also receiving damage from the AoE attack of Zhang Yang. Even though they only lost a small amount of HP, goblins are creatures that feared death. So when they saw the powerful Orc being beaten down, they began

to raise the notion of retreat.

The Blue-Skinned Orc let out a cry of rage as he began to swing his sword more swiftly than ever and hacked at Zhang Yang's shield in vain, "I am an Orc! I am not a filthy little goblin that can't face death in the face! There will always be the Orc who falls in battle, never an Orc who runs from the battle!"

After that, Bermuly. Meryl Lynch became an Orc who fell in battle! Within two minutes, the combination attacks of Zhang Yang, Felice and Thunderhawk had emptied out Bermuly. Meryl Lynch's HP bar. The boss let out a miserable cry and collapsed to the ground. Upon his death, the boss dropped quite a few pieces of equipment that glittered gold. However, Zhang Yang showed no interest at all.

The moment when the boss died, the two goblins quickly turned around and ran away. Zhang Yang hopped onto Thunderhawk and began to pursue one of the goblins. After making quick work of it, Zhang Yang rode Thunderhawk and flew around the map, finding the second Goblin hiding among the trees. He slaughtered it as well. Not a single Goblin was left alive in the cave.

Zhang Yang was not willing to give up on the hope that he still had a chance of stumbling upon the [Light of Miracle] that he needs for his quest. He wandered about the mining cave, trying to see if there were any. But Zhang Yang had no idea at all on how a [Light of Miracle] looks like, so how would he know one if it was dangling right in front of it? So, after he went for a spin in the mining cave, he had no choice but to return to the campsite of the Red-Skinned Orcs, empty-handed to report back to Roger Kluge. Hellscream.

"That's quite a surprise you gave me back there, human!" Roger Kluge looked at Zhang Yang with surprise, then he said, "I have just received news from the guards that I stationed in the mining cave. They informed me that you actually took out every single one of the goblins! Hahaha! Although those are just some weak goblins, you have convinced me of your sincerity!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Teach the Goblins a Lesson, acquired 1,000,000 experience points. You have slain a total of 82 goblins and 1 Orc Captain. Your Relationship with Roger Kluge has grown stronger by an additional 1,020 points!’

So it’s another ‘relationship’! Am I getting into a homosexual one this time?

Zhang Yang laughed a little, then he said, "I believe that the brave Red-Skinned Orcs can also accomplish it without any problem!"

"Hahaha!" Roger Kluge laughed heartily, and continued to speak, "Your bravery reminds me of my younger self! Very well! I was not going to give you another quest if you did a half-*ss job about it. But, you have proved me wrong! So now, I truly believe that you will definitely be able to complete this upcoming quest!"

If players only killed about 20 goblins just to fulfill the criteria of the quest and reported back to Roger Kluge, then they would only be completing the basic criteria of the quest. By then, Roger Kluge would not have even bothered mentioning anything else, other than rewarding the players and sending them on their way. Only by killing more goblins, would Roger Kluge be impressed enough to continue giving them quests.

Zhang yang nodded and asked, "Chieftain, what more good can I do for your fellow Orcs?"

"Hmm... I need you to enter the goblin’s campsite and take out their second-in-command, Guitteny. That is the worm who tipped the balance that the Blue-Skinned Orcs had with us! If he is dead, then the goblins should go silent for a bit!" Roger Kluge raised a hand up to stop Zhang Yang from speaking up, and then he continued to explain, "Rest assured, I’m not going to send you in to die! Take these, I am entrusting you my ultimate Magic Scrolls. They would allow you to use a magic called, ‘Wind Walk’. You can use these to enter into the heart of the goblin campsite without being spotted and plant the poison into Guitteny’s ‘Honey Pot’!"

‘Ding! Roger Kluge. Hellscream has a quest for you: Poison em up! Will you accept it?’

Accept.

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] X 2!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Colorless and odorless Poison] X 1!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Indication Map on Goblins’ Campsite] X 1!’

Zhang Yang realized that a bottle, two [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk], and one Map appeared in his inventory. The bottle would be the poison that he would be using to complete the quest, so there was nothing special about it. Then, he took out the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] to examine them.

[Magic Scroll: Wind Walk]: You will acquire the Wind Walk effect, entering an invisible state. Movement speed increases by 100%. The damage of your next Skill will increase by 200%. The effect will only last for 10 minutes, or it will fade away if the user does any actions other than moving around. Cooldown: 10 minutes

Note: Roger Kluge. Hellscream made this himself.

Zhang Yang could not help but to palpitate with excitement, thinking that if he had unlimited [Magic Scrolls: Wind Walk] for himself, it would be like obtaining a new skill permanently. A new skill that would turn him into an invisible Guardian who holds the destructive power of a Berserker and the elusiveness of a Thief. Unfortunately, the quest only rewarded Zhang Yang with two pieces of [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk]. Zhang Yang surmised that one was for him to infiltrate the goblin’s campsite, and the other is for him to escape from any possible difficult situation.

Under the normal circumstance, players must use up both of the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] in order to successfully ‘plant’ the poison deep in the campsite. However, there are also players with specific Classes that can complete the quest without using the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] that they acquire from the NPC --- for instance, Thieves. They can probably enter their Stealth Mode and infiltrate the enemy’s campsite and ‘plant’ the poison at the right spot, then get out of the campsite without being spotted. By doing so, they will be able to earn two extra [Magic Scroll:

Wind Walk] for their own usage!

Although Zhang Yang did not have the Skill {Stealth}, he had something similar --- {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void}!

Very well, here's a chance to earn two [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] after all. It would be very handy for players to use them and assassinate their enemies! {Invisibility} and {Stealth} are two different things. {Stealth} would only be effective at a certain distance from the enemy. Get close enough, and they would no longer be in {Stealth}. But things are different for {Invisibility}. There is not specific way to reveal the caster as of now. Even if the caster is standing 1 inch right before the player, making funny faces like a mime, nobody will ever know!

Following the directions of the quest, Zhang Yang rode Thunderhawk and traveled over to the campsite of the goblins.

These creatures try really hard to make up for their poor physical traits via the research and usage of 'Technology'. Their buildings clearly showed that. Each of the buildings was built with metallic materials in the shapes of cogs. The cogs are constantly spinning, making some really annoying mechanical sounds that made people wonder, how could the goblins ever get a peaceful night's sleep!

Chapter 543: Heavily Fortified Goblin Campsite

This mechanical city was a little smaller than the campsite of the Orcs, but they made up for that by sheer height. The buildings here are at least five-stories to eight-stories tall, made by layers after layers of gears and cogs. To locate for a specific monster in such a complex place was not exactly like looking for a needle in a haystack, but it would be a tall order, nonetheless!

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he was provided with a map. He quickly took the map out to take a look at it. He saw a skull drawn on the left upper corner of the map. That must be where the target is.

Zhang Yang activated {Burrow} and began to move northeast. As his movement speed is halved when {Burrow} is activated, Zhang Yang made so progress. It took quite a while for him to reach beneath the building where his 'target' was.

It made sense for this quest to provide every player with [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk]. The goblins are afraid to die, and the ones who carry ranks would be even more afraid to die! There were many elite Tier goblin guards in every corner of the building, and Zhang Yang could not simply use his {Burrow} to get to the top floor of the building. He was left with two choices: One, use the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] to get to the top floor; Two, kill everything and charge straight to the top floor.

Zhang Yang was really determined to keep his [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] for his own use in the future, so he had made up his mind to slaughter everything in his way to open up a way to the top floor of the building.

After observing the whereabouts of the goblins in the area, Zhang Yang began to sneak out from his hiding spot towards the entrance of the building. He used the blind spots of the goblins to avoid detection. Then he summoned Felice and Thunderhawk out. However, the size of this building is built according to the size of the goblins. Zhang Yang had to

bend over his back in order to move around in the building, meanwhile, Thunderhawk had to hunker down just to be able to move forward. It was extremely inconvenient for them.

Under such circumstances, it would also be difficult for Zhang Yang to wield his weapon around freely, or even use his 'Supporting Attacks' for the moment.

Therefore, Zhang Yang was being extremely cautious. If he ever encounters 3 of the goblins at the same time, he might not be able to handle the situation, and he might even be forced to activate his {Radiance of the God of War}! Also, the {Radiance of the God of War} was not the same as the {Berserker's Heal} which only had a 2-minute cooldown. The {Radiance of the God of War} can only be used again after 30 minutes, turning it into a very high Tier life saving Skill, instead of a regular Skill that can be used throughout an entire battle!

With his {Spear of Obliteration}, Zhang Yang attracted one goblin over and engaged it in battle. But this goblin is a Hunter type monster. It raised its firearm and aimed the muzzle straight at Zhang Yang. Without even taking a step, it started firing away.

Zhang Yang quickly dodged and hid behind a pillar, forcing the monster to come over to him.

If the enemy was a player, of course, the player would not be 'tricked' so easily. Even if the player would no longer be able to see its target, the player would still go around the pillar, maintaining a large distance. As a Hunter, the most important thing in a battle is maintaining their distance. Instead, this little green goblin let out a weird cry as it charged at Zhang Yang.

"Intruder! There is an intruder in the premises!" battling against an enemy all alone is not the style of the goblin. So the goblin was shouting out loud to alert its other little green friends.

For players, the only way to get the aggro of a monster is to enter the aggro range of the monster. It wouldn't actually matter how loud the player shouts, the monsters will not be able to hear the player and would

completely ignore them. However, monsters shouting at each other was another matter. If anyone of the monsters shouts, the others that are nearby will be able to pick up the 'signal' and get attracted over to the monster that is shouting.

Instantly, 7 other goblins came towards Zhang Yang, brandishing their firearms. Fortunately, these monsters did not shout out, or else, it would start a domino effect of more and more Goblins being alerted! Things would definitely be out of hands for Zhang Yang!

Such cowards!

The first goblin to shout had now earned Zhang Yang's intense ire. But things had already escalated to such an extent, so Zhang Yang could only choose on whether to activate his {Shadow of the Void} to escape, or to stay and fight!

He took up his shield and tightened his grip on the shield strap. The terrain of this area was very suitable for Zhang Yang to block out the monsters with obstacles, causing the Hunter goblins to come near him and engage him in melee combat. Well, the Melee Attack of the Hunter goblins are far weaker than their Ranged Attacks, after all. So Zhang Yang had no reason to worry about getting slaughtered up by these 8 goblins.

Although it was really easy to use the terrain of the area to lure the Hunter type monsters to him, moving around with his back bent over was another problem. Zhang Yang was soon surrounded by the 8 goblins and they began to pummel him. As he sustained the assaults from the goblins, fortunately, Felice and Thunderhawk were there to share his burden. The two of them took on one goblin each, decreasing his workload.

Zhang Yang has {Shield Wall} which can recover 75% HP, Felice has {Absolute Defense}, while Thunderhawk has {Wild Recovery} and {Madness} to heal themselves up. They actually managed to hold their ground against these 8 elite Tier goblins! 6 minutes later, the 8 goblins all lay dead on the ground. Although the goblins have {Goblin Defibrillator} to revive themselves once, the resurrected goblins would only come back with 20% HP. So, it wouldn't be a problem for Zhang Yang to slay them

once again.

After clearing out that wave of goblins, Zhang Yang realized that he had cleared out all the guards of this floor.

Following down the narrow path, Zhang Yang felt like a little doggy crawling through a the flap in doors meant for dogs. That really had Zhang Yang cursing and making himself a promise that he would never set foot in the campsite of the goblins again!

On the second floor, there were another 8 elite Tier goblins scouting around. Zhang Yang repeated what he did on the first floor and he began to use the narrow entrance of the stairwells to get out of their line of fire. The surrounding space was really narrow for Zhang Yang, but was rather large and comfortable for the skinny and short goblins. Four of them could actually attack Zhang Yang at the same time.

Despite that, it was enough for Zhang Yang and Thunderhawk to block the goblins as Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form and attack them behind their safety line. As Felice's {Absolute Defense} had a cooldown period of 12 hours, she was now limited to her flying, mobile cannon form.

They took out the goblins with ease and it was a brief battle. After that, they went on to the third floor, the fourth floor to repeat the same process. Half an hour later, Zhang Yang arrived at the top floor of the building.

Compared to the floors below, the seventh floor was far more spacious and adorned with a grand decor. There are quite an abundance of silk and satin used in decorating the floor. Every single furniture on the floor was highly stylized. However, the clanking between the machines would be the only reason for this place to be unsuitable for a boss Tier monster to live in. Excluding the goblins, of course. This place was more like a factory than a room.

Well, goblins are basically the bumpkins in {{God's Miracle}}, so they would still look like a bunch of side characters even though they were wearing high-class robes.

However, Zhang Yang did not see any signs of a boss on that floor.

He thought about it and it clicked. 'Poison em up!' was basically a quest that requires players to complete it in stealth. Even players are using the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk], would be forced out of stealth when they begin to poison the targeted 'Pot of Honey'. If the boss is there to witness the players doing it, would the boss be stupid enough to still chug the entire thing down to its stomach?

Furthermore, Goblins are infamous for their cowardice. Therefore, the game developer decided to make things simpler by removing the boss from the scene.

Zhang Yang located the 'Pot of Honey' almost immediately. It was a quest objective, anyway. Any player who has accepted the quest will be able to see that 'Pot of Honey' flashing about like a beacon. He took out the bottle of poison from his inventory and poured the liquid in.

The moment Zhang Yang placed the 'Pot of Honey' down, he heard footsteps. Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shadow of the Void} and entered the dimension of the void. Then, he quickly ran downstairs. 20 seconds later, Zhang Yang got out of the void as his {Shadow of the Void} faded away. He revealed himself on the fifth floor. Then he began to walk carefully towards the stairs leading down to the lower floor. Turning his head over to the side, he saw a goblin with the name - 'Guitteny' sitting in a chair like a boss. There were also 12 elite Tier goblins standing behind it. On top of the table right before Guitteny, there was a cup and the 'Pot of Honey'. Zhang Yang recognized that pot immediately. That was the pot that he had just poisoned. Looks like the boss isn't far from death now.

Guitteny is a Level 125 Mythical Tier boss and had a small troop of elite Tier goblins by his side. So Zhang Yang would not be able to solo the boss without his {God of War Transformation}. However, the quest did not need him to kill the boss. All Zhang Yang needed to do was to poison the honey, let the boss take the honey and drop dead!

"Argh! Cough! Cough! Cough!" Guitteny suddenly grabbed its own neck as it began to tense up a little. It's eyes were almost popped as it was pointing its finger at the goblin soldiers. However, Guitteny could not even pronounce a word. After writhing about, Guitteny collapsed onto the

ground and died.

Those goblins were looking at each other as it was happening. The moment they realized that their boss was dead, they suddenly screamed as they made their way out of the door.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang activated his {Rearm} to reset the cooldown period for {Shadow of the Void}, and then he reentered the void again before making his way out of the campsite to make sure that he does not stumble across some goblins! However, after he entered the void, Zhang Yang did not leave the scene immediately. He wanted to check on any loot that the boss might have dropped. But, the game system was not that generous. So, the boss did not drop anything.

Beggars can't be choosers!

After shaking his head, Zhang Yang went down to the ground floor and activated {Burrow}. Then, he made his way out of the goblin's campsite and broke out of the ground once he was outside the campsite. Zhang Yang summoned his Thunderhawk, and they left immediately.

Zhang Yang met up with the Chieftan back at the campsite of the Red-Skinned Orcs.

"Warrior, are you sure that you are a pure-blooded human?" Roger Kluge could no longer conceal his surprise beneath his calm facial expression anymore as he pointed his finger at Zhang Yang and said, "Only the great Orcs of our species can breed out such excellent warriors! Are you sure that your father is not one of the great Orcs like us?"

What the hell, man!

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at the Chieftain, but he knew that this elder Orc was actually praising him in his own Orcish way. Still, those words were a little hard to accept!

Roger Kluge then talked about lots of unrelated things before he finally went to the main point, "So, my brave human. The death of Guitteny should have shaken up the entire tribe of the goblins, serving as a warning to them. They should now be reminded that we are not to be trifled with. I

have just received news from the goblins that they are giving up on taking over the Miracle Mining Cave. They will honor and respect our proprietorship over the Miracle Mining Cave! However, the Blue-Skinned Orcs will not just stand by aside and let us mine as we please. They will never give us any chance to grow stronger than them and take over the top!"

He let out a sigh before he continued, "Those bastards have put a large number of Blood Spider's eggs inside the mining cave, and now the eggs are hatching! They are wreaking havoc in the mining cave as we speak! I have sent warriors over to destroy the Blood Spider's nest. So my brave human, are you willing to aid us any further on this?"

'Ding! Roger Kluge has a quest for you: Exterminate the Blood Spiders. Will you accept it?'

"Very well indeed!" Roger Kluge was nodding with relief, and then he turned his head back to Zhang Yang and said, "Hehe, I am very certain now. Your ancestor must be an Orc!"

Zhang Yang, "..."

[Exterminate the Blood Spider] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Roger Kluge wants you to go over to the Miracle Mining Cave, slay 20 Blood Spiders, and slay the leader of the Blood Spider, the Blood Spider King to eliminate all threats in the cave! Warrior, the Blood Spiders are not to be trifled with! Don't go alone, or else you might just end up as one of their delicious meals!

Completion: Kill Blood Spider King 0/1, Kill Blood Spider 0/20

Quest reward: Heaven Armor Chest Plate, Bone Soul Robe, Fire Leopard Leather Chest Plate, Light of Miracle. Choose one among four.

Crying with tears all over his face, Zhang Yang has finally found what he was looking for after all this time! The [Light of Miracle] had finally revealed itself!

Chapter 544: The Appearance of the First Player with a Class A Inheritance

The objective of the quest would be very obvious. Zhang Yang did not say anything unnecessary. Immediately, he hopped onto the back of Thunderhawk and once again headed over to the Miracle Mining Cave.

After flying about for a brief while, Zhang Yang arrived back at the entrance of the mining cave. The Goblin-Orc standoff was no longer there. Instead, there was a small-scale defense facility built by the entrance of the mining cave. There was a row of Orcs, most probably about 20 elite Tier Orcs, standing behind a wooden wall that had spikes all over it. Meanwhile, there were also giant spiders, with scarlet red linings on their backs, coming straight out from the mining cave, one after another, and they would attack the Orcs right outside the cave.

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. It was just about half a day of in-game time after everything that he has gone through. Well, let's see. First, Zhang Yang wiped out a troop of goblins by the entrance of the mining cave, then he went on over to the goblin campsite to poison their leader, and then he went back to see the Chieftain to accept this quest before getting here. How the hell did it get to this! Didn't the Chieftain told Zhang Yang that those were just freshly hatched eggs? Well, these are no ordinary baby spiders then, these are more like gigantic spider monsters!

Zhang Yang hopped off from the back of Thunderhawk and stopped by the wooden wall. When the Orcs caught sight of Zhang Yang's presence, looks of admiration and respect were expressed on their faces. Everyone was saying, "Hey, human! Great job on the goblin's campsite!"

"That's really brave of you! You're already on par with me!"

"Human, are you sure your father, or your grandfather, or your great grandfather does not have the blood of the great Orcs?"

What the hell! Here it goes again! Zhang Yang could not accept the 'praise' that these Orcs had for him! He quickly said, "So how's the

situation down there in the mines?"

"Worse than the gas that my grandma has!" an Orc spat and said, "The Blue-Skinned Orcs are really bad eggs. They actually planted a massive number of Blood Spider's eggs within the Miracle Mining Cave! The worse part about this is that these Blood Spiders will grow and breed rapidly as long as they consume enough fresh blood. Now, the Miracle Mining cave has become the lair of the Blood Spiders! Talk about taking back the mines, we can barely hold ourselves against the hordes of Blood Spiders from getting out by the entrance of the mining cave!"

"Curse those foul Blue-Skinned Orcs! I say that their ancestors must have been f*cked by some cunning fox! That's why their descendants are so cunning! They are a disgrace to the Orcs!"

No wonder this quest is ranked as an A-rank quest. The Blood Spider King must be located in the deepest part of the mining cave. Players would have to battle against countless waves of Blood Spiders before reaching the boss. Furthermore, the narrow space of the mining cave provided little space for the party members to spread out into formations. At most, only 10 to 30 players may be able to form a front row capable of facing the boss at any single instance. The lack of space for maneuvering and the small numbers would make fighting the boss all the more perilous.

Zhang Yang nodded, then he walked into the mining cave with bold, large steps as the Orcs gazed at his back with admiring looks on their faces. Their sense of recognizing Zhang Yang as one of their own had grown stronger than ever, believing that he has the blood of a noble Orc surging through his veins!

The second Zhang Yang set foot in the mining cave, a spider with the size of a calf lurked out of the corner of the cave and came up to Zhang Yang. The entire body of the spider was black, from the tips of its fangs to the end of its eight legs. Blood red stripes lined its back, similar to how blood vessels run along the skin of a living being. The fearsome combination of red and black was a mixture of disgust and horror.

The legs of the spiders were no less deadly than an actual spears. If their

legs were straightened out, they would be facing the Thunderhawk at eye-level. Such was the magnitude of their height.

[Starving Blood Spider] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Magic Attack: 5,082 - 6,082

Skills:

[Spider Venom Spit]: Spits spider venom at the target, causing 150% Magic Attack of Nature Damage to the target. Instant activation.

Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Web Entanglement]: Entangles the target with sticky spider webs, causing the target to be entangled on the spot, lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: Brutal, bloodthirsty creatures. As long as they feed on enough fresh blood, they can grow swiftly. They are merciless and cold-blooded. They have sworn to purge their enemies and prey.

The moment the Blood Spider detected the presence of Zhang Yang, it began to blink its large eyes and raised its body slightly above the ground. A projectile in the form of greenish venom was fired out from the spot below its belly button at Zhang Yang without any sign of warning.

‘-4,297!’

A red numerical value popped right on top of Zhang Yang. Although the amount of damage he received was not much, however, Zhang Yang found himself completely drenched in the vile liquid, putting him in an awkward predicament. If Fatty Han had ever seen Zhang Yang in such a state, he would definitely be laughing at Zhang Yang for being ‘sprayed’ on!

Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a sigh. It would seem that the monsters in the mining cave are equipped with venomous projectile types of attacks! So, Zhang Yang is destined to be ‘facialised’ until he hits his climax!

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang clashed into the Blood Spider with the impact of a lightning bolt. Raising his [Heaven Shaker] high into the air, Zhang Yang gave a good smash to the spider's head. Felice and Thunderhawk were not just bystanders, they were also casting their own skills.

"Zhang Yang, I've just received news that the Europe Region has slain a Level 150 Ethereal boss!" just when Zhang Yang was sunk in the satisfaction of whacking the Blood Spider up, he received an unexpected message from Hundred Shots in the form of a voice message.

"Hmm?" Zhang Yang could not help but to frown slightly. For players at the current stage of the game, Ethereal Tier bosses are beings that exist on a whole different level. They commanded so much respect and fear, beyond anything else in the realm, that it would be unfathomable to even think about challenging them. Zhang Yang would be able to hold his own against the boss, thanks to his [God of War Transformation], but that would raise the question to another problem. Would his durability be matched by the total DpS of the others? Would there be enough players and enough firepower to slay the boss within the 2 hours that he could buy them?

The other question that must not be ignored lay within the level of the players at the current stage of the game. Level 150 Ethereal Tier bosses are usually located within Level 120 - 150 maps. The players at the current stage of the game were beginning to pop through the level cap of Level 100. If these players travel over to those high-level maps, they will definitely become homing signals that invite monsters from all over the map to come and whack their *sses!

Under such circumstances, it would proved too troublesome to to bring a large number of players over to the location of this boss. It was not impossible, but a great amount of money and time would be burnt over such efforts. Meanwhile, the gateway to the Chaos Realm had just been unlocked not too long ago, and the race to the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress had turned into a raging inferno. So, who would spare their precious time in battling a boss that

had nothing to do with them at the moment?

After all, there wouldn't be the slightest benefit gained from slaying an Ethereal Tier boss at the time like this. Furthermore, even if the reduction of 20 Levels were accounted for, players will also have to wait until they hit Level 130 before they can actually put on the equipment that they acquire from the drops upon killing the Ethereal Tier boss! Such act will not assist in the progression of acquiring the 'First Clear' of a dungeon in any way!

"The Europe Region had mobilized every single player above Level 100 to the boss battle! A total amount of 70,000 players were involved. Rumor has it that they had used two [Forbidden Scrolls] as well! They spent a full day just to get the job done!" Hundred Shots was very eager to report the details he found to Zhang Yang.

Two [Forbidden Scrolls]?

Zhang Yang felt a jolt in his heart. So who exactly was the one who so generously spent two [Forbidden Scrolls] and 'hired' all the Europe players who have exceeded Level 100 to slay a 'valueless' boss! Furthermore, the glory of acquiring the 'First Clear' for an Ethereal boss had been claimed Lone Desert Smoke awhile ago, so why were they still so eager to do it?

"Are they trying to acquire some sort of [Inheritance] Class?" Zhang Yang asked out of his own convenience. There aren't many idiots in this world. So there is but one possibility that lay within that reason.

"Well, rumor also said that they were aiming for a Class A [Inheritance], an [Inheritance] by the name of [Blood Angel Inheritance]!" Hundred Shots sighed as he continued to speak, "Two [Forbidden Scrolls] were used! And they used those scrolls just to take on a boss! Two of them were called the [Forbidden Scroll: Absolute Lethargy]! It can reduce the Attack of the boss by 70%, and the effects last for as long as 10 hours! Without these two scrolls, I believe they wouldn't have stand a chance against the boss, even if they keep on running back to their corpses!"

"That being said, a player with [Blood Angel Inheritance] was born?" Zhang Yang took a deep breath after his mind crossed that thought.

Although he has a Class S [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang would never have dare to underestimate any player who possesses an {Inheritance Transformation} Skill --- the reason is simple, Zhang Yang cannot just 'transform' whenever he wants to. For instance, his {God of War Transformation} was currently under a cooldown period. Even if one player with Class A [Inheritance], or Class B [Inheritance], or even a Class C [Inheritance] pops up, Zhang Yang might be obliterated!

"That's right! Nothing has been calm ever since we entered the Chaos Realm! And now, the tide has changed, players without [Inheritances] wouldn't stand a chance against players with [Inheritances]!" Hundred Shots shook his head as he sighed.

What he didn't know is that he will be the powerful Hunter that would dominate all others thanks to the Red Dragon pet. Any player with a Class A [Inheritance] would have to activate their {Inheritance Transformation} in order to be equal to his Strength. However, heaven's secrets must not be divulged, so Zhang Yang had to keep his mouth shut. Furthermore, the 'destiny' that lay before Hundred Shots might have greatly deviated, thanks to Zhang Yang's intervention. It remains a question if Hundred Shot would still be the one possessing that Red Dragon pet.

Right after passing the message to Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots ended the conversation with him. As a personal request from Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots had also stepped down as the commander on the front lines, especially in clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. He started to avoid training with his regular party - an attempt to allow most of history to repeat its course - the course that he remembered and knew from his past life. This is to prevent Hundred Shots from being taken off track, denying him the opportunity to rise to the Hundred Shots that he remembered. By avoiding contact with him for that period of time, Hundred Shots should be able to take the same path that he had taken from before - without Zhang Yang's intervention getting in the way.

Zhang Yang went back to slaughtering up the Blood Spiders that came at him as he took them out with his [Heaven Shaker], one swing after

another. Of course, Zhang Yang was entirely drenched in the venom liquid from head to toe! If he was a little shorter in height, he wouldn't be needing any makeup to disguise himself as a goblin!

Having smashed spiders mechanically for half a day, Zhang Yang was no longer keeping count. However, judging by the fact that as a level 105 player, his experience bar was now filled up to 86%, so he had to have smashed more than a hundred of them by now. Zhang Yang would probably be crossing on to the starting line of Level 106, in another 3 days of in-game time. Leveling up seems to be so difficult these days!

Just when he was sighing on, Zhang Yang caught a glimpse of an elongated shadow beneath his footsteps. The shadow began to extend into a long shadow on the wall.

He quickly turned his head around, towards the direction where the shadow came from. On both sides of the wall in the mining cave, there was a scourging torch on the walls by each section of the path. These torches were not too far away from each other, and yet not near to each other as well. With the fainting light that came from the torches nearby, Zhang Yang could vaguely see the true form of the 'thing' that lurked behind his back --- it was not a monster, but a foreign babe with blonde hair and a super hot body!

Of course, even an African player can set up their avatar in the game as a Snow White Princess. However, Zhang Yang could recognize her as a player from Europe Region, because she had an obvious annotation saying - 'Europe Region' on the top of her head!

Dusk Phoenix!

It was that little hot 'chilli' again!

Dusk Phoenix was wearing a set of leather armor that wrapped around her body tightly, exposing her sexy hot body figure completely, especially the two round and prideful 'peaks' right on her chest! That curvy body really did a splendid job of demonstrating the unique bodies that European and American women would have. With that kind of waist curvature that boomed out with a set of 'outstanding' buttocks, this

woman really would harden specific parts of men by simply standing before them!

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder. Previously, questions were raised in his mind on how Dusk Phoenix could locate him as he almost got ambushed by her. How did she actually track him down? And now, she had once again tracked him all the way down to a hidden mining cave, and located his exact location! Zhang Yang was very positive that either this woman had a way with the system, or she must have some sort of previous 'treasure' that can reveal the tracks and whereabouts of a specific player!

But one must be wondering, why would this woman reveal herself out in the open, like this? Shouldn't she be covering her tracks a little more vigilantly?

"Zhan Yu ---" the moment Dusk Phoenix laid eyes upon Zhang Yang's face, she flashed her teeth viciously, and her eyes turned murderous all of a sudden.

"Hey!" Zhang Yang waved at her cheerfully as he greeted her. However, his gesture only enraged Dusk Phoenix more than ever, "So you can't get me off your mind? I'm sorry, I already have someone else in my heart! Although I would like to make my country proud by dating a foreign girl, I would like to avoid being cursed upon by the others. All I can say is, it is already too late for us to give it a try!"

Chapter 545: The Return of Dusk Phoenix

After listening to a bunch of crap that he threw at her, Dusk Phoenix's face turned ash-white. As she was overwhelmed with shame and vexation, she shouted out loud at Zhang Yang, "Shut up!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, and suddenly got back to the main topic, "Out of boredom, perhaps you're just here to admire my beauty as I killed monsters?"

"You ---" Dusk Phoenix was on the verge of popping her vein. Ridiculing her and blaming her for being bored right after that? Dusk Phoenix was completely pissed off! This sexy girl could not stand feeling so vulnerable before Zhang Yang. Her image of being noble and elegant would be shattered by Zhang Yang every time they happened to bump into each other! She truly felt like murdering Zhang Yang every time she looked at that goofy smile on Zhang Yang's face!

She took a deep breath in an attempt to cool herself down, and reverted back to her cool, deadly poker face, "Zhan Yu, I am going to make you squeal like a pig today, and make your face end up like one as well!" She smiled confidently as she continued to speak, "I have already switched on the recording function of the game! Your defeat shall be shown to the public, let them gaze upon your pathetic face when I step on your dead body! Let them see that the world's number one Tanker is just a pig who snorts way too much!"

It seemed as if she was extremely sure of her victory!

Zhang Yang suddenly frowned and said, "So, you are the player from Europe Region that did the quest for the Class A [Inheritance]."

Dusk Phoenix was a little shocked, but she did not deny it. "That's right! I have just recently acquired the [Blood Angel Inheritance]! So I can 'transform' myself into a 'Blood Angel'! As for you, correct me if I'm wrong, it hasn't been two days yet ever since that battle at Winst Castle. So I am sure that your {Inheritance Transformation} Skill is still under cooldown! Zhan Yu, you have been bullying me over and over again! Today

will be the day things turn around!"

Oh my... what a violent girl.

Felice came forward and said, "Despicable! If you're really as good as you claim yourself to be, fight my big brother on equal grounds then!"

Dusk Phoenix did not waste her breath further as she immediately activated her {Blood Angel Transformation}. In just an instant, her body began to radiate with the colour of blood as a pair of wings spread open into the surroundings. Each of her wings were about 3 meters long. However, they seemed to be ghostly and intangible as they went right through the walls!

As her wings fluttered, her sexy hot body began to float into the air!

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyebrows a little, sensing danger!

Class C [Inheritances] like the ones that Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama have acquired do not provide players the ability to fly in the air. Even the Class B [Vampire Inheritance] that Fatty Han has acquired does not provide Fatty Han the ability to fly freely when he 'transforms'! In order for Fatty Han to fly, he must first activate his {Bat's Voyage} while he's in his 'transformed' form! Even then, he would only gain the ability to fly for a brief moment!

Furthermore, it drains the Energy Bar for his [Inheritance]! Also, the Skill itself had a very long cooldown!

However, Zhang Yang could fly freely in the air without any restrictions. Although he still has the disadvantage of not being able to mount onto any [Mount], he could fly freely in the air at no cost whatsoever.

Zhang Yang had actually believed that the ability to fly freely in the air was an exclusive function that only players who have Class S [Inheritances] would enjoy. Apparently, his idea was proven wrong by Dusk Phoenix. It seems that there are also some Class A [Inheritance] that provides players the flying ability! Zhang Yang was looking at it with his own eyes. As Dusk Phoenix had just entered her 'transformation' form, she should start with 0 EP value. Since that she can flying around without

the need to consume any EP, it is pretty obvious that this is a special effect that she gets when she activates her {Blood Angel Transformation}!

As they were currently indoors, the outcome of this battle between Zhang Yang and Dusk Phoenix would depend on their speed! However, Dusk Phoenix was now about 10 times faster than Zhang Yang!

Dusk Phoenix would not pass on this opportunity, as she had been defeated and humiliated badly by Zhang Yang in their previous encounter. She would definitely take her sweet revenge on Zhang Yang this time, as she now had the advantage over Zhang Yang! It was going to be sweet, and she wouldn't mind it turning cold. Since the duration of her {Blood Angel Transformation} would last for 2 hours, Dusk Phoenix had plenty of time to play around with Zhang Yang!

"Zhan Yu, look closely at my attributes now!" She did it as a means of intimidating Zhang Yang as she posted her attributes onto the chat without a second thought!

[Player: Dusk Phoenix]

Level: 102

HP: 1,878,920

Defense: 1,008

Attack: Primary: 27,580 - 35,580 (Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds, DPS: 11,280), Secondary: 24,196 - 32,196 (Attack Interval: 2.5 seconds, DPS: 11,280)

Although her Attack was still no match to Zhang Yang when he activates his {God of War Transformation}, that amount of damage would be enough for her get her job done! Furthermore, Thief Class players use one-handed weapons, so it would be very normal for them not to have a high damage output. However, by adding in the damage of her secondary weapon into her total damage output, the DPS of Dusk Phoenix was nearing the amount of DPS that Zhang Yang had when he was in his {God of War Transformation} mode!

However, Zhang Yang was currently equipped with a Level 120 Mythical

Tier weapon. With some quick calculations, Dusk Phoenix should only be holding two Yellow-Gold Tier weapons in each of her hands. That being said, she still had so much room for improvement in terms of her damage output when she gets her hands on higher Tiered weapons and equipment! So this was what the players are fuzzing about, the so-called 'bug' of Thief Classes!

Of course, because the attack speed of one-handed weapons are faster, they would be more easily affected by Defense, causing less effective damage on targets. However, that disadvantage could be made up for if players use Skills like {Eagle Eye}. If this woman is capable of rallying all the high Tiered players from the Europe Region to her cause, and could casually spend two [Forbidden Scrolls] without batting an eye, getting a [Skillbook: Eagle Eye] would be as easy as breathing for her!

But Class A [Inheritances] are one Class lower than Class S [Inheritances,] after all. So it made perfect for a small gap between the functionality and practicality of Class A [Inheritance] and Class S [Inheritance]. Merely a 30 times multiplication for the Maximum HP, without the ability to hold a shield in hand, due to her class limitation really did reduce the intimidation that Dusk Phoenix attempted to wrought upon Zhang Yang. Without a shield that augments her with more vitality points, the total amount of HP that Dusk Phoenix did not really terrify Zhang Yang, not yet!

But the Dusk Phoenix that was standing before Zhang Yang was out of his hands!

However, Zhang Yang did not abandon hope, showing no sign of faltering at all!

--- {Glare of the Death God}!

As long as the Skill is not 'ineffective,' and it's effects begin to take place, the total HP of Dusk Phoenix would be pulled straight down to 1 point even if she has over 10,000,000 HP! In other words, when the effect of this Skill kicks in, all Zhang Yang would need to do is to give her a gentle tap in order to send her straight down to her demise.

The key to winning this battle would lie on whether Zhang Yang is able to land his attack on the agile Thief. And when he does, can he keep it up and survive long enough for him to trigger the effect of the {Glare of the Death God}? After all, there is only a 10% chance of triggering the special effects of the Skill. It would take about 10 hits. Even with Felice and Thunderhawk, and even with the summoning of his [Servant], it would still take about 3 to 4 seconds to land 10 hits on the Thief!

Furthermore, a player is not like a monster in the game. If she realizes that something is up, Dusk Phoenix can just disengage herself from the battle with her {Vanish}. Well, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} would only last for 5 seconds. All she needs to do is to wait it out and re-engage into battle to continue her 'crusade' --- after all, every {Inheritance Transformation} can last for 2 hours!

Hence, Zhang Yang only has one shot at this!

He looked at Dusk Phoenix, grinning sheepishly as he asked, "I have been wondering, how did you find me?"

"You wanna know?" The Phoenix held her hands against her fair chin with pride as she humphed lightly, then she said, "I ain't telling you, go ahead and bask in that frustration of never knowing!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud at her, and suddenly lunged forward and activated {Charge} to engage himself in battle with Dusk Phoenix. He picked a suitable time to activate his {Glare of the Death God,} and it worked wondrously. A smokey shroud of a skull, dark and spooky, seeped into the black Phoenix's body. That skull then came to the top of her head and loomed over her. The scene was a little terrifying.

Zhang Yang then raised his hand and summoned [Devastator]. The servant descended from the sky and filled the entire passage. It even broke the ceiling of the cave and left a hole there! Felice and Thunderhawk went all out with their AoE attacks at the same instant --- what they were attempting to do is to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. So, they only focused on increasing the rate of their assaults, instead of the damage output. Both of them were spamming their skills as soon as

they were able to. The {Pulverizing Flame} and the {Purple Storm Guillotine} were flashing across the battlefield for every single second. Those skills were actually being activated at every second, twice the frequency of a normal attack. Each normal attack took place every two seconds. This meant that the skills were being triggered at every second.

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

Dusk Phoenix had already received numerous attacks before she could even read the 'Negative Effect' that was cast upon her. At first, she simply smiled coldly as if nothing mattered. She was still calm, as the damage to her HP bar was still at minimal, and there was nothing for her to worry about. However, when she read the description of the {Glare of the Death God}, her face changed in an instant!

The moment that she realized she was in great danger was the moment when Felice's {Pulverizing Flame} triggered the special effect of the Skill!

In one split second, that smokey skull on top of Dusk Phoenix began to descend upon her with its dark mouth opened wide. It devoured her through its dark and bottomless mouth! After the stream of dark light flashed through her body, Dusk Phoenix was left with only 1 point of HP!

"Argh ---" the little black Phoenix was mad and terrified at the same time as she had not expected Zhang Yang to have such an ultimate trick hidden up his sleeves!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and swung his [Heaven Shaker] at the black Phoenix's head without any sense of mercy. After all, that was not a time to have a tender heart for the fairer sex!

"You bastard!" Dusk Phoenix let out a scream. With a shoof, her body flashed with the color of blood and her HP bar suddenly recovered back to its full state! However, she was also added with an additional 'Negative Effect' --- Blood Angel's Requiem.

[Blood Angel's Requiem]: Ignites the Strength of the Blood Angel, instantly recover 100% HP. However, the caster will be affected by a weakening effect where Attack is reduced by 30%, and the total amount of HP is reduced by 30%. Lasts for 2 minutes.

Her skill was like of Zhang Yang's {Radiance of the God of War}! However, the difference in between the capability of a Class S [Inheritance] and the capability of a Class A became obvious in that situation! There would be no 2-minute 'Weaken Effects' upon activating the {Radiance of God of War}!

Zhang Yang let out a long sigh.

Although her Attack had been reduced by 30% and her total amount of HP had dropped below the million mark, Dusk Phoenix was still too powerful for Zhang Yang to stand toe-to-toe! Everything that he had managed to do so far has only achieved in diminishing the power of her Classs A [Inheritance] down to the power of a Class B [Inheritance]

A wise man does not fight when the odds are against him. It's time to run!

Zhang Yang activated {Burrow} on the spot, without any hesitation. He burrowed himself straight into the solid ground and disappeared from sight.

"Argh!" Although the black Phoenix went charging towards him, she was still one step late from landing her sword on him. So she could only swing her sword across the thin air as she missed. The black Phoenix roared into the sky with rage! It was supposed to be her day to take her sweet revenge on Zhang Yang! However, she had failed to kill Zhang Yang, even after activating her {Blood Angel Transformation}. To make matters worse, she had this on live recording, and she had actually fallen short of her claim on Zhang Yang's life!

The cunning man had almost defeated her, and got away with it scot-free!

As she was enraged, Dusk Phoenix took a small transparent crystal ball out of her inventory. With a single thought from the black Phoenix, the small crystal ball began to emanate in all directions. A hologram of a map was projected out of crystal ball and displayed two blinking dots on it. One of them was a green blinking dot that stayed stationary, while the other one was a red blinking dot that was moving towards a certain direction.

If Zhang Yang could see what was going on, he would have found out about how Dusk Phoenix had been tracking him down!

"You bastard! You're not getting away!" the black Phoenix tightened her lips as she spoke, "There's still about two hours left, and I'm going to find you, and I'm going to give you a life lesson that you'll never forget!"

...

Zhang Yang was in a total hurry. He only managed to keep Felice back in his Battle Companion Slot. However, it would require a brief period of time to cast a spell in order to summon or unsummon a pet mount. Hence, Zhang Yang had to leave Thunderhawk behind for the lady Phoenix to slaughter up like a fat goose.

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, Thunderhawk was a [pet mount]. So, no matter how many 'torturous ordeals' it gets put through, or how many times it gets abandoned cruelly to a horrifying death, it would never be displeased, unlike a sentient Battle Companion. If Zhang Yang had abandoned a battle companion in such a manner, it might even turn on him in anger!

It seems that the future was full of risks!

His thoughts were still lingering on the risks that he is going to face in the future as he tunneled the ground. After all, the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, when used at an opportune moment, would have a terrorizing effect over the players. It was just like what Zhang Yang had just gone through, without being able to use his {God of War Transformation}. Unless he can reserve his {Inheritance Transformation} Skill for an indefinite time, he would definitely have a really tough time engaging any player with an [Inheritance] that is at least Class B, or above!

Fortunately, there weren't really many players with a Class C [Inheritance] yet so far. Most of those players were using their {Inheritance Transformation} on bosses, instead of killing players like black Phoenix over there. Well, only very few players would actually do this.

After tunneling beneath the ground for about 5 to 6 minutes, Zhang

Yang had finally broke through the layers of rock and arrived at the lowest floor of the mining cave. The place seemed like a typical corner of a cave. However, Zhang Yang was ambushed by one of those Blood Spider the moment he resurfaced from the rocks. He quickly summoned Felice and the two of them combined their strength to take out the spider. They took the spider out in a brief moment, without any unforeseen circumstances.

Zhang Yang did not continue his quest on slaying the Blood Spiders. After all, he was still being 'hunted'. He still had not gotten any idea to how Dusk Phoenix had managed to locate him so easily. If there is a second time around, there will surely be a third time and even a fourth time around!

The {Blood Angel Transformation} would last for 2 hours. Zhang Yang can only try to avoid detection at all costs for now.

Although Zhang Yang was not willing to admit it, the truth is always painful! The current him was no match to Dusk Phoenix at all! Zhang Yang could not help but to sigh at the fact that he had managed to take on tens of thousands of high Tier players while he was in his {God of War Transformation} form, and now, he could not even take on Dusk Phoenix while she is in her {Blood Angel Transformation} form, without his {God of War Transformation} form. That is the way the game should be after all. If one player can defeat another player with Class A [Inheritance] that has already 'transformed', the game would surely be deemed unfair --- of course, that has to exclude the usage of special Skills that depend on luck, such as (Glare of the Death God).

No matter what the circumstances are, Zhang Yang would never flee from a battle willingly. The terrain and design of the mining cave was quite complicated. There was a complex network of roads that connected to each other in the mining cave. Furthermore, Zhang Yang deeply believed that the 'secret item' that black Phoenix had in her possession would run out of juice, sooner or later. In other words, she would not be able to track him so precisely in time to come!

As long as Zhang Yang could keep this up for another 2 hours, he would be able to change the tide of the battle the other way around. By then, it

would be him who would pursue the black phoenix.

So there it began. Zhang Yang and Dusk Phoenix were both tied down in a game of 'Hide and Seek'. Zhang Yang still had the {Shadow of the Void} ready at hand. He could use the Skill twice if he ever activates his {Rearm}. Furthermore, he also had two [Magic Scrolls: Wind Walk] unused. That being said, he still had many means of escape up his sleeves, giving Dusk Phoenix a really hard time in tracking him down!

After half an hour of pursuit, Dusk Phoenix had finally caught up with Zhang Yang's pace. However, her face and the rest of her body was completely drenched in greenish vile liquid, putting her in an awkward predicament, just like it did to Zhang Yang! Evidently, she had been 'sprayed' on quite 'violently' by some Blood Spiders as she was making her way over here. Zhang Yang could not help but laughed out loud as he could already see her 'glorious' appearance from a far distance. After seeing Zhang Yang gloating at what she had been through, the little black Phoenix was so pissed off at him that she was trembling with anger.

The moment she tried to slash at Zhang Yang's throat, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} and sent himself into the void dimension. Then, he took advantage of the complex network of roads in the mining cave and disappeared, beyond her reach.

As expected, the 'Secret Item' that Dusk Phoenix had been using to track Zhang Yang could not be used indefinitely. The moment she lost track of Zhang Yang again, she took out the item again and attempted to activate once more. However, there were no signs of any blinking dots or indicators on the hologram map this time. The black Phoenix got so mad to the point that she screamed and stomped on the ground repeatedly.

Half an hour later... one hour later... one and a half hour later...

Dusk Phoenix was indeed worthy of being a Thief. Her patience was admirable. There were a few times when her blade had almost sliced Zhang Yang's throat open. However, Zhang Yang had painfully forced himself to use one [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] to escape on one occasion!

The moment 2 hours had passed, the two large, blood-red wings faded

and vanished into thin air. That was the moment Zhang Yang had been waiting for. That was the moment the {Blood Angel Transformation} finally expired!

Chapter 546: The Blood Spider Queen

Dusk Phoenix was frustrated beyond words. The moment her {Blood Angel Transformation} faded, she screamed into the sky at a deafening pitch, and then she took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it apart without any hesitation. In just a while, her body radiated in a bright white light as she teleported away from the scene.

Honestly speaking, this black Phoenix walked on the path of an Assassin. She could have stayed and waited for the right moment to ambush Zhang Yang. Even though Zhang Yang was capable of doing so, it would be an extremely difficult task to detect a Thief in 'Stealth Mode'. If she times it right, she could take him out. She could have gotten the job done by using her {Ambush} on him when the right time comes!

However, her previous encounter with Zhang Yang had left her with an irrational, paranoid fear. Without the support of her {Blood Angel Transformation}, she was no longer willing to take on Zhang Yang.

The moment after she left, Zhang Yang popped himself out of a corner. It was such a pity that he did not come out a little earlier. Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head at his own hesitation.

Just a few minutes ago, Zhang Yang was still the mouse that was trying to outrun a furious, flying cat. The moment when her {Blood Angel Transformation} expired, the tables had been turned almost immediately! Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, the black Phoenix was quick to remove herself from the mining cave, leaving no chance for Zhang Yang to retaliate!

All things considered, Zhang Yang had managed to survive the onslaughts of a Class A {Inheritance Transformation} for 2 hours. What's more, the moment the Inheritance wore off, the player had immediately retreated, having depended on its power, wholly. Well, he was lucky enough for the place to be a cave, with many places for him to hide. If they had been battling in an open ground, or a desert, it would have been wiser for Zhang Yang to use {Burrow} to gain distance from Dusk Phoenix and

just escape by using a [Teleportation Scroll]!

Actually, Zhang Yang was not all too bothered about killing her in return. What he wanted to know was, how does she keep finding him!

Without the knowledge of how the black Phoenix had managed to track him again and again, made Zhang Yang slightly paranoid. It was like, someone watching him all the time like a creepy stalker. He had this feeling that if he ever lets his guard down for a split second, he would be taken out in a flash, just like that!

There was indeed a very real threat going on here!

With Dusk Phoenix's Class A {Blood Angel Transformation} possibly looming around at every corner of his journey, Zhang Yang would need to keep his own {God Of War Transformation} in reserve as a countermeasure, should she come at him full-on. If he does not do so, he would be forced to flee for his life every single time! However, saving the {God of War Transformation} solely for her would severely limit his performance in other activities.

If Dusk Phoenix ever chooses not to appear for an entire month, would he have to withhold his own 'Transformation' for the same duration? Was it worth it?

Not knowing when your enemy may strike, while realizing that every step you take is a perilous one, was not a pleasant sensation at all.

Since the situation was not amendable at the moment, Zhang Yang decided to focus on his current quest.

After calming himself down, Zhang Yang continued to move deeper into the mining cave. He slaughtered up hundreds of Blood Spiders along his way before he finally arrived at the deepest area of the mining cave. Finally, he lay his eyes upon the legendary boss!

This Blood Spider was the size of two bungalows. It was gigantic! Its eight, spearlike legs flashed and gleamed in the light. Countless bristles that stood out from its body like sharp blades sent chills down the spines of everyone who gazed upon it.

[Blood Spider Queen]

Level: 125

HP: 37,500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 30,157 - 34,157

Skills:

[Virulent Venom Blood]: Projects venom to all targets within range, causes 30,000 Nature damage to every target and reduces the Movement Speed of the target by 50%. Lasts for 15 seconds. Instant Activation. Range: 40 meters

[Armor Piercing Skewer]: Gives target a fatal strike with it's sharp legs, causing 100% Melee Attack, Piercing Damage. The target will be afflicted with [Bleed] and receive a total of 40% Attack in the form of Bleeding Damage for 15 seconds. This effect can stack by up to 5 layers. Range: Melee range.

[Spawn]: Lays a row of Spider Eggs on the ground. A bunch of little spiders will spawn every 30 seconds. The number of the spiders spawned is equal to the number of players engaged in battle X 2.

[Berserk (Passive)]: Attack will increase by 10% for every 10 minutes in battle.

Note: This is the Blood Spider Queen. It has an unimaginably strong capability to breed. A wise warrior would rather face 100 hungry wolves than being an enemy to a Blood Spider that is undergoing its nesting season.

Upon seeing that this was a Mythical Tier boss, ZHang Yang no longer had the slightest intention of battling the boss solo. This boss seemed to be proficient in both melee and range. It was so massive that kiting seemed completely implausible!

Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] and activated it. He summoned Sun Xi Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest of his party of 10 over to

his current location.

"Little Yang! You're my savior! You really are!" Fatty Han was crying in tears when he arrived, "Xiao Wei did not seem like a clumsy girl at all! But after guiding her for 3 days in the game, I'm going mad! I'm very grateful that you pulled me here! Or my *ss would be 'flowerishly' ravaged by arrows!"

Lost Dream was shocked to hear it as he spoke in a weird pitch, "Did you find yourself a girl, or a dominatrix...for you know...some recreational..hmm?"

"Haiyah!" Fatty Han let out an exasperated sigh again before he continued to speak, "Well, Xiao Wei became a Hunter just like I did. But the tragic thing about it, is that she doesn't even know how to choose a target! She had already penetrated my *ss multiple times, more like a hundred times in just three days! If her level was not that low, I might have been killed many times over already!"

"Noob tank, looks like you have found yourself a big boss!" Wei Yan Er looked at the boss with gleaming eyes. Tightening her grip on the handle of her battle axe, she asked, "You must drop a Mythical Tier Axe for me, or I'm gonna bite you and shred you into pieces!"

There were as many as eight entry-level maps in the Chaos Realm. Although maps like Tibanya Wasteland were the more basic of maps with a level gap ranging from 100 to 130, it was already far larger than anything the players had ever encountered, pre-Chaos Realms! Many high leveled Mythical Tiered bosses roamed all over the maps, but without any lead from any quests whatsoever, it would still be like searching for a needle in a haystack.

Therefore, everyone was excited to see a Mythical Tier boss standing right in front of their eyes!

According to the rules of the Chaos Realms, every epic equipment dropped from a boss would have a Special Effect that reduces the Required levels of equipping by 20 levels. If a boss happens to be level 125 and drops a level 120 equipment, players would already be able to equip them

when they reach level 100. That would grant players an early headstart!

That was also one of the many reasons Zhang Yang had gathered all of his core members of Lone Desert Smoke and set them on the task of clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, as he focused on finding and slaying Open-World bosses at the same time! After equipping a set of Level 120 Mythical Tier equipment, players could really make up for most of the difficulties, oppressing a Level 110 Violet-Platinum boss with high level equipment.

"Everyone! Stay in position! We're about to cut open this boss!" Zhang Yang shouted out loud to his party members.

"There must be an Axe! Give me an Axe!" Wei Yan Er was repeatedly wishing for an axe.

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh at her. Then, he began to charge towards the boss.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-28992!’

With the little brat's {Strength Aura} that added 12% Strength to everyone within its effective range, Zhang Yang had gained quite a boost. His normal attacks could almost cause up to 30,000 damage! His {Spear of Obliteration} went straight through the Defense of the boss and caused a substantial amount of damage to it!

Zhang Yang no longer need to keep count on how much aggro each of his Skills could score for him. His damage output topped over every single one of his party members at the moment. His current damage output was even higher than the sum of both Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu's damage output! He definitely had the aggro that a tank would need!

"I hate you! Noob tank! How could you snatch the Class S [Inheritance] from me! It was supposed to be mine!" Wei Yan Er could not help herself anymore as she began to wail. Every single Class S [Inheritance] was unique, and only one person could have it. So, the little brat no longer stood a chance to acquire the [God of War Inheritance]!

"Haha! Now, now. Calm down. The Class A [Inheritances] are actually more powerful than you think. The power they can give can actually be almost as powerful as the Class S [Inheritance]. You know, almost!" Zhang Yang quickly tried to calm the little brat. Well, you would never know what kind of frightening things Wei Yan Er would actually do when she goes crazy!

"Chi! Ji ji ji!" The Blood Spider Queen stuck up its butt all of a sudden. Then it began to shoot 23 poison projectiles of venom towards the gang. This was a boss after all. The venom spat out was very different from those of the elite Tier Blood Spiders. It wasn't green in color, instead, it was the color of blood! The goo-ish venom was sprayed onto the gang as it caused 30,000 basic damage to each of them. The venom had also reduced the movement speed of the gang, Felice and that annoying whiner of a Battle Companion.

This was the boss's {Virulent Venom Blood}!

The boss was already going all out from the beginning!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly took up their staffs and began getting to work. However, their healing targets were not just the 10 of them, there was also everyone's Battle Companions and the Pets of Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots! So, they had to focus on healing a total of 23 targets! The stress was tremendous!

Fortunately, the Battle Companions of Endless Starlight and Lost Dream belonged to the Healer category. They could heal themselves up and give some healing support to everyone as well. Their support had also lifted some weight off the shoulders of the two Healers. Furthermore, the Healers had decisively given up on some of the not-so-effective Battle Companions in the battle. The Hunters could also heal up their own pets. Therefore, after some adjustment over the chaotic situation, the Healers finally healed up the HP of the entire party.

Just when the two ladies thought they could take a step back and catch their breaths, the boss stuck up its butt again! It's the 23 projectiles of dark-red goo-ish venom, once again! Everyone suffered a high value of

damage, and their HP bars were reduced sharply, again!

Zhang Yang quickly said, "Everyone with ranged attacks, get 40 meters away from the boss! We shall take turns to attack! Into formation!"

It was impossible for the two ladies to be focused on healing Zhang Yang and the rest of the party, Zhang Yang knew that he had to lighten the load for the Healers. Zhang Yang had arranged the party to be split into smaller groups in order for the Healing to be manageable.

The attacks of the Blood Spider Queen were terrifying and violent. Its normal attacks could cause up to 32,000 damage! Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he was no longer the Zhang Yang of old. With his {God of War Shield} adding 20% Passive Damage Immunity, the attack of the boss could only cause about 15,000 damage on Zhang Yang. Practically speaking, the normal attacks of the boss could only cause about 5,000 damage to Zhang Yang per second, thanks to the regular usage of his [Block]!

However, this gigantic spider had a wide array of skills! Its {Virulent Venom Blood} was basically activated once every 10 seconds. Although the boss did not really use its {Armor Piercing Skewer} that often, but the gang could not risk underestimating the amount of damage that particular Skill was capable of! After all, that one Skill could deal about 8,000 damage in every passing second!

If Zhang Yang was the only one that Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart needed to heal, the two ladies would definitely prevail in their role, even after the healing efficiency of Healers had been nerfed by the developers. Their equipment was powerful enough, and their special Skills allowed them to heal more efficiently and effectively. However, the boss did not just focus its attacks on Zhang Yang. The {Virulent Venom Blood} of the boss was an AoE Skill. Every time the boss activates that Skill, everyone within the Skill's effective range would suffer. The two ladies had their heads scourged as they were busy maintaining the HP bars of the party members. They were the most exhausted of all players in the party!

"Wah! I'm going to remove my Class and retrain another one! I don't

want to be a Healer anymore!" Han Ying Xue was flustered.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud at her and said, "It would be such a shame for you to quit as a Healer! Look the 'capacity' of your udders!"

"Bus Tart!" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. She mouthed something in silence, glaring at Zhang Yang. Only Zhang Yang saw what she 'said', "You're not getting any sleep tonight!"

Pak pak pak!

The moment the HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 20%, the Blood Spider Queen turned its back on Zhang Yang and went on to produce a long row of white, egg-like objects across the ground. Each of those objects were about half the size of a regular human! The eggs twitched about, as if they were alive.

Chapter 547: Abominating Guillotine Axe

There were at least a thousand of these white spider eggs being spawned. These eggs had occupied almost half of the cave, leaving almost no room to step on, in that area. The place became disgustingly white, and most people would feel chills up their spines. The scene before Zhang Yang and the gang was really creepy!

As Endless Starlight was not required to channel Damage Output or tank the boss as a secondary Tanker, he was chilling at a spot that was more than 40 meters away from the boss. After seeing so many eggs, he could not help himself but to exclaim in great fear, "What the f*ck! This boss is such a strong breeder!"

"Well, she deserves to be awarded with the title 'Mother Heroine(1)!'" Daffodil Daydream giggled.

Wei Yan Er could not understand the meaning of it, as she began to widen her eyes and blink them for awhile, then she asked, "Why so?"

"Once upon a time in a certain country, too many people died from serving their country against a war. Therefore, the government decided to encourage women to bear more children. If a woman can bear at least 10 children, the government will award the mother with a silver medal and also the title of 'Mother Heroine'!" Daffodil Daydream tried to explain it to the little brat.

"Women are not pigs! It's not right for women to bear so many children in one life!" Fantasy Sweetheart was definitely not on the same page with the term 'Mother Heroine'.

"I would only bear one! At most!" Han Ying Xue showed one of her fingers, "Rumor says that it is extremely painful when women are giving birth to a child. If I have to bear that kind of pain, once is more than enough!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and he said, "If every woman is only willing to give birth to one child, then humans would be extinct sooner than you would know!"

That was the simplest maths of all time. If two becomes one, the numbers would be halved every time.

"But, even if 'Mother Heroine' can give birth to 10 children, she would be just a pile of junk, dealing only 5 damage, when she is compared to this boss!"

"Hehe, this boss is undoubtedly the best breeder in the entire game!"

Just as the gang was happily talking on a ridiculous topic, 20 white spider eggs suddenly burst open! Small little Blood Spiders were crawling out from each of the spider eggs. They were only about the size of a human fist. However, the spiders were still too huge too be considered normal!

[Newborn Blood Spider] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 120

HP: 19,200

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,570 - 6,570

Skills:

[Web Bind]: Traps the legs of the target with extremely sticky spider webs, the target will not be able to move at all. Last for 15 seconds.

Note: They are newborn spiders! They need to feed! "Tasty flesh and blood, where are you!"

The moment when these spiders appeared, they began to scatter into the surroundings, moving around with their eight legs irregularly fast! After a brief moment, they had set their targets upon Han Ying Xue!

When these baby spiders first spawned, they would have no aggro targets. As no one was causing any damage to any of them, these spiders did not have any 'sense' of purpose on whom to attack first. Furthermore, there were no Tankers attempting to get their aggro either. Therefore, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart both became their targets, as the two ladies were very focused in healing. Han Ying Xue became their primary

target, as she was healing at the rate greater than any healer in the battlefield at the moment.

Without the need for Zhang Yang to shout out, Endless Starlight had already stood between Han Ying Xue and the hordes of baby spiders. He quickly cast his {Devotion} right before the spiders could reach him. Upon the activation of the Skill, bright golden light was shed upon the ground 10-meter across the surroundings. The golden light radiated faintly on the ground.

When the baby spiders stepped right into the effective range of the {Devotion}, every single one of them began to receive damage in every passing second. With that happening, their aggro were switched straight onto Endless Starlight. The spiders turned their fangs towards him and began to leap at him.

If normal Tiered monsters had the advantage in their numbers, they could be quite troublesome for DPS players and Healers to deal with. However, if they ever encounter a Tanker with extremely good equipment, then everything would be omitted! These baby spiders could only deal more than a hundred of damage on Endless Starlight. However, as they were small in size, they could all attack Endless Starlight at the same time. Be it small, overtime, it would be of a fatal cause.

The gang members who were taking their turns resting at the sidelines, and the idle Battle Companions immediately came forward and launched their assaults on the 20 baby spiders, They tried to keep the spiders rounded up so that they could exterminate the spiders more efficiently. The boss's Skill description had stated it out clearly, that a new bunch of baby spiders would be spawned every 30 seconds. If they do could not exterminate them as soon as possible, their number would stack up indefinitely! When their number reaches a certain amount, the situation would become uncontrollable, causing the entire party to be wiped up in an instant.

These baby spiders had less than 20,000HP. In under 20 seconds, the baby spiders were wiped out after they were boxed in by the gang. However, the boss was enraged, and it began to stab its sharp legs at

Zhang Yang repeatedly! The stabbings left marks of large holes all over the surface of Zhang Yang's shield, causing the shield to look like a crippled umbrella, riddled with a thousand wounds. The durability of Zhang Yang's shield was reduced steeply right after that series of attacks!

Zhang Yang had no choice but to endure it. He shook his head again and again as he recalled his proud moment of acquiring this [Titan Wall] from the lucky draw, back in Shang Hai. But now, Violet-Platinum Tier equipment were on the brink of being phased out by Mythical Tier equipment. It made perfect sense for this Level 80 Violet-Platinum [Titan Wall] to falter in the face of a Level 120 Mythical Boss!

Zhang Yang was swinging his [Heaven Shaker] at the boss, whacking it as hard as possible while he shouted at his gang, "Everyone, quickly! The boss is gaining an additional 10% boost on it's Attack power once in every 10 minutes! I can still hold the boss here, but the AoE Skill {Virulent Venom Blood} is still an undeniable threat to all of us!"

"Alright!"

Everyone adjusted their tactics a little. Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were in charge of channeling the damage output on the boss, while Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were in charge on wiping out all the baby spiders that spawn throughout the boss battle. It's not because Hunters could not do real damage to the boss, they were arranged in such a formation because the Hunters were ranged attackers. They could just stay 60 meters away from the boss while killing the baby spiders without having to worry about the {Virulent Venom Blood}. That would really lighten the load on the two Healers.

Among all Battle Companions, Zhang Yang's Felice, Sun Xin Yu's Ankh the Assassin, and Wei Yan Er's The Artist, Reina had the most powerful DPS. Therefore, they were assigned to attack the boss. Meanwhile, Messick the whiner was 'coaching' the baby spiders with Endless Starlight.

Well, no doubt that this annoying whiner was really a pain in the *ss. Even the monsters did not seem to like him. All he did was to say something unpleasant at the monsters, and half of the baby spiders would

leap towards him in a frenzy! Messick was more than capable of getting the monsters' aggro over to himself!

At the moment, Zhang Yang and the 4 powerful DPS players were being supported by three powerful Battle Companions and his Thunderhawk. Their total DPS had reached up to 85,000 damage! Even though the Blood Spider King had over 37,500,000 HP, it would only take about 8 minutes for that kind of DPS to empty out that amount of HP.

The party could perform so efficiently, mainly because of Zhang Yang. After all, he was swinging about a Level 120 Mythical Tier weapon, and he also possessed the [God of War Inheritance] that provided him with an additional 50% increment in his Attacks. His DPS alone had already reached up to a total of 27,000 damage!

With about 10,000 damage in each passing second coming from Felice and Thunderhawk, Zhang Yang could channel out about 47,000 damage in every second! His DPS was actually much higher than the DPS of all the others combined!

Fatty Han could not help it but to feel shocked, then he said, "In any case, I'm also a player with a Class B [Inheritance]. Why is the difference between the power level of me and little Yang so much?"

"Well, try switching to a Level 120 Mythical Tier ranged weapon, and switch all your pets and your battle companion to Mythical Tiers as well. By then, you should be able to reach 10% of my full power!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

"F*ck off! I'm a real DPS as well, okay!" Fatty Han was unwilling to admit the fact. If his {Vampire Transformation} was no longer under its cooldown period, Fatty Han would have tried to take on the boss all alone -- of course, even then, against a Mythical Tier boss, a Class B Inheritance might waver. Furthermore, Fatty Han was not a Tanker. Even after activating his {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, his Maximum HP and Defense would not be as ridiculously high as Zhang Yang's {God of War Form}.

The gang was used to working together. Zhang Yang was holding the

boss back while Endless Starlight was holding against the monsters in the surroundings. Two Healers were supporting them as much as they were able to. Meanwhile, the DPS players were not willing to give in to Zhang Yang's damage output, so they were also trying their very best to raise their maximum damage output!

However, upon acquiring the [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang could equip a two-handed weapon. He was now an anomaly. He was basically a Tanker and a DPS player at the same time! Meanwhile, with the additional boost of his Attack power because of the [Inheritance], Zhang Yang was now an ultimate source of DPS!

After bringing down the HP bar of the boss down to 12%, Zhang Yang activated his {Glare of the Death God} on the boss. However, it was a tragic attempt, as it failed to take effect.

Fatty Han was patting his chest in relief, realizing how lucky they had been when they were fighting the Vampire boss back then. If the rate of 'Resist' on that boss was as high as it is on this boss, Fatty Han would have needed to wait until the other gang members reached Level 120 before they could challenge Vampire Count Ferra. He would have to wait until then to get his [Vampire Inheritance].

Or, they could just do what the players from Europe Region did. They could just send tens of thousands of players and use a few [Forbidden Scrolls] to slay the boss.

Well, it did not matter if the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} did not trigger. Activating the {Glare of the Death God} would be like adding icing onto a cake, after all. At their current rate of DPS, they could just take the boss out in within a minute.

"Chi! Ji ji ji ---" When the last drop of the boss's HP bar was taken out, the gigantic Blood Spider King instantly turned upside down, with its belly on the top, facing the sky, its legs curled up. A number of loot dropped beside the dead body of the gigantic spider. Wei Yan Er cheered as she ran straight towards the loot to take a look at them.

The following session was, of course, the happiest moment for them all.

Everyone followed the little brat closer to the loot to take a closer look. Therefore, it did not really matter if the boss resisted the Skill, or not.

The boss dropped a total of 4 pieces of equipment. One was an axe that flashed so brilliantly that it would send chills up people's spines when they laid eyes on it. The other one was a dark piece of leather armor. There was also a gray colored necklace and an old-school shield. Other than that, the boss had also dropped two [Middle-tier Aura Stones]!

"Haha! My prayers have been answered! There really is an axe among the loots!" Wei Yan Er picked up the axe with excitement.

[Abominating Guillotine Axe] (Mythical, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 4,850 -6,100

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 1,572

Equip: Increase 14% damage

Equip: Increase 3.5% Critical Rate

Equip: After hitting the target, there is a certain rate of beheading the target, causing your target to receive additional 10% damage whenever the target is struck by you. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effects cannot stack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduce 20 Levels from the Required Level.

Zhang Yang teased the little brat on purpose as he said, "Yo. This is really not bad at all! I can use two-handed weapons as well now, this weapon really suits me!"

"No way! You cannot go back on your own words! I even let you have the [Heaven Shaker] last time! How can you be so shameless! Snatching a child's toy! You are such a mean, despicable, shameless bastard!" Wei Yan Er grabbed on to the axe as she held it in her arms as tightly as possible. She seemed to be worried that Zhang Yang might take it from her by

force.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to frown. He should have well prepared the moment when he decided to pull the little brat's leg. As the little girl's laughing standard was really low, and she was also extremely naive, this little brat would actually take jokes seriously!

TL Notes:

1. Mother Heroine - an honorary title in the Soviet Union awarded for bearing and raising a large family.

Chapter 548: Breaking the Second Seal

Without a doubt, the axe was Wei Yan Er's. She finally had a weapon befitting of her strength. The axe was just as powerful as Zhang Yang's weapon. When a Warrior equips an axe, the character's class passive skill Axe Mastery would provide an additional 5% Critical rate and damage. Even though it was not as strong as the God of War Inheritance 50% damage boost, Wei Yan Er was now strong enough to act as Lone Desert Smoke's top Berserker, one who would not be dwarfed by Zhang Yang.

The little girl had stopped picking up loot as she was too far gone in her own world with the axe. Han Ying Xue sighed and went over to take over the role. Firstly, she picked up a grayish white necklace. Expecting it to be made of pearl, the witch examined the necklace closer and sulked in disgust after discovering it was made of tiny skulls. The woman did not have such a heavy metal taste.

[Skeletal Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +212

Strength: +137

Dexterity: +137

Equip: Increases healing rate and damage by 2.1%

Equip: Increases 420 Maximum HP.

Use: Induces a crippling fear to a target, causing the target to run amok! Target will be disarmed. Lasts for 8 seconds. Instant cast. Cooldown: 1 Hour.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Note: Made from the bones of an unborn child. A curse necklaces.

"Urgh...This is bad..." said Zhang Yang after he examined the necklace. "Tell you what though, we should put this in the guild storage and let the newbies drool over it."

The flavor text aside, it was a rather strong necklace. The last effect could force an opponent to stop attacking instantly. It would be extremely useful for PvP fights. After the Japan-Korea Region war, a portion of "borrowed" players had quietly remained in the guild.

Besides having friends in the game, players would want to join a strong guild! However, what defines a strong guild? Generally, players would judge a guild by their capabilities in raiding bosses, which in extension, grants them access to strong equipment! Hence, Zhang Yang had placed many of the strong equipment in the guild storage to let the newbies drool over them. In a way, it would encourage the guild members to farm for more contribution points. The points can be used to level up the guild and allow them to exchange points for equipment! No transactions in the guild involved gold coins. The guild members were all accustomed to using guild contribution points in order to obtain equipment and potions. Since there were no gold coin transactions in the guild, most competition between the guild members were of a friendly nature. It would be of great advantage to increase the overall guild morale and the bonds between the members.

Han Ying Xue proceeded to pick up another equipment. She lifted a black shirt and examined it. Zhang Yang sighed and said, "Why could you not pick the shield first? Why must you raise my hopes high and crush them?!"

The witch smirked and dropped the shirt to pick up the shield. "I want to leave the best for last. You know, to give you a sense of excitement! Teehee~"

The shield was a triangular shaped kite shield with an edge as sharp as a blade. It would be a weapon strong enough to rival a hammer! The entire shield had a green surface and had the emblazoned figure of a dwarven warrior wielding a hammer and a shield on it.

[Vera's Edged Shield] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +3,024

Vitality: +2,963

Equip: Absorbs 1,075 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases 6,000 Maximum HP.

Use: Toss the shield at a target to slice it apart. Reduce 1,000 Defense points from a target. Lasts for 1 minute. Instant cast. Range: 30 meters.

Cooldown: 10 minutes.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: Crafted by the great dwarven smith, Vera Copperhammer

By its stats alone, the shield had to be one of the best Level 120 Mythical tier equipment around. The active skill of the skill was rather strong, even though 1,000 Defense was not much. It was almost the same as {Cripple Defense}. Any lower, and it would be useless since it reduced defense by a fixed value.

"Woah," cried Endless Starlight as he drooled over the shield. However, since Zhang Yang was present and had done most of the work, Endless Starlight was smart enough to keep his wants to himself.

Zhang Yang knew that and purposely chose to give the shield to Endless Starlight instead. He then tossed the shield to him and said, "Starlight, I have many Mythical tier equipment for myself. Perhaps it's time for you to get some as well."

"Thank you, sir! Thank you very much!" cried Endless Starlight with tears in his eyes.

The guy was the main tank in the exploration party of the Dragon Throat Fortress. While Zhang Yang could not spend time raiding dungeons, he would need to give a pass on some great loot to ensure that Endless Starlight gets stronger in order to defeat the Hardcore mode of the dungeon. He was already an overwhelmingly powerful tank, but had the usual shortcomings in terms of offense. This shield would help him slightly.

"Hah! Not bad! Boy! Endless Starlight has become a strong tank with the shield!" said Fatty Han.

It was true. Endless Starlight's shield was only a Level 100 Violet-Platinum tier with only 1,680 Vitality points. On the other hand, the new Edged Shield had boosted his Vitality points to over 4,200 points. The shield had given him more than 8,000 over HP, bringing his maximum HP to over 30,000 HP. This would turn him into a more complete tank, increasing all his attributes.

Now, Endless Starlight had joined Wei Yan Er in the corner, indulging in their own world.

Han Ying Xue picked up the last item and examined it.

[Black Bull's Chest Plate] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor, Battle Companion Only)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +1,210

Strength: +346

Dexterity: +783

Level Requirement: 120

It was an equipment specially for Battle Companions. Since Felice's armors were all Mythical tier, Zhang Yang was the first one to select Pass. On the other hand, Messick – Han Ying Xue's Battle Companion had already started off as Violet-Platinum tier. When he reaches Level 120, all his equipment would automatically be upgraded to Level 120 as well. Hence, there was no need for him to take the chest plate. Then again, the big pervert is a tank. Giving him leather armor wouldn't be the wisest of choices.

In the end, the leather armor was taken by Sun Xin Yu. Even though Ankh had an extremely strong Dexterity growth rate, she was a Gray-Silver tier and required the help of stronger tiered equipment. Still, it was a little too early, since the equipment could only be equipped at Level 120. On the

other hand, the officials had released information about the Dragon Throat Fortress.

Starting from the 6th to the 10th boss, there would be Battle Companion equipment drops. Coincidentally, the Hardcore mode of that dungeon would drop Level 100 Violet-Platinum equipment. Hence, it was considered to be a haven for Battle Companion equipment farmers.

After distributing the last two [Amateur Aura Stones,] there was no more loot on the ground. The [Aura Stones] were given to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, and both of them immediately used the stones to upgrade their Aura level to Level 6. Han Ying Xue could provide an 18% extra healing rate, and the other Aura increased the Critical rate of the party by 6%.

Once the quest was dealt with, everyone left the place, leaving Zhang Yang alone to run out of the cave by himself. Zhang Yang leaped on the Thunderhawk and flew out of the Red Skinned Orc Camp and submitted the quest to acquire the Light of Miracle. With the Light of Miracle in hand, Zhang Yang could finally complete the seal breaking quest.

Zhang Yang came to Roger Kluge. Hellscream and confronted the old orc. The orc had once again praised Zhang Yang for having orcs blood flowing in his bloodstream for being strong and brave.

Sadly, the quest's rewards limited him to pick only one out of the four. Naturally, Zhang Yang picked the Light of Miracle instead of the other three rewards. The three rewards were Level 100 Violet-Platinum Cloth, Leather, and Heavy Metal armor. At the current stage of the game, those armors would still fetch up a good price on the market.

Zhang Yang had not yet built a Teleportation point in Morning town, hence, he used the Territory Baron's teleportation skill to return to Tukula Fortress and headed to Pandemonium dungeon.

At his current strength, challenging the Hardcore mode of the Pandemonium was a walk in the park. With haste, Zhang Yang defeated the stone giant and talked to Margery the NPC.

"Young man! You have kept me waiting!" cried Margery with a

disgruntled look. "Hmph. Adventurers in this generations sure take it easy! Adventurers back in my day would have taken 10 days to gather all three materials!"

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Breaking the Second Seal.
Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points!’

After complaining on and on, eventually, Margery took the sword from him with a huff. She then placed the sword on a table and started to chant random gibberish. No sooner later, the sword glowed with an intense radiance which took 4 to 5 minutes to slowly fade away.

[Sword of Purging Devourer, The Ancient Mystery] (Mythical, One-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 4,438 – 5,238

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds.

DPS: 1,728

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases 20% damage.

Equip: Increases 5% Critical rate.

Equip: Grants a 3% chance to repeat the same attack to continue to attack the target.

Special: Consumes another weapon's special effect.

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 levels.

Level Requirement: 120

Note: The second seals has been broken.

Bound

3%? 3% attack echo effect (1)?

Zhang Yang eyes widened with great interest. Before the second seal was undone, the sword had only a 2% chance of repeating the same attack!

Perhaps...could it...after unsealing more seals, the special effect on the weapon will be strengthened!?

Zhang Yang took out a Two-Handed Weapon which he had already prepared for this occasion from a while back. Even though the weapon was a Yellow-Gold tier, it had a special effect of inflicting a stun effect on a target for 10 seconds. The sword's equipment consuming effect targets the equipment's special effect, and not the equipment tier.

'You have activated the Sword of Purging Devourer special effect. Please choose the weapon to be consumed. Be advised, the weapon that will be consumed must belong to you. The weapon will be destroyed.'

Zhang Yang held up the Yellow-Gold Two-Handed Hammer and selected it to be consumed.

'You have chosen Octagonal Stone Hammer as your weapon to be consumed. The Sword of Purging Devourer will obtain the special effect: Grant a chance to stun a target for 10 seconds on attack. Be advised, the Octagonal Stone Hammer will be destroyed in the process. The weapon of choice is a Two-Handed Weapon. During the process of consumption, the Sword of Purging Devourer will have 20% chance of becoming a Two-Handed Sword. Will you proceed?'

Hell yea!

Zhang Yang was happy. Even though 20% was low, there was still a possibility that it could be stronger! Furthermore, even though the sword does not morph into a Two-Handed Sword, he still had the Heaven's Shaker as his backup plan. That was the reason why he had not chosen the Heaven Shaker as a sacrifice for the sword.

Proceed!

Shrring!

A bright light radiated out of the sword. The Octagonal Stone Hammer started to crumble into fine particles, and the Sword of Purging Devourer started growing in length. Eventually, the sword's blade and the hilt had grown to a point where it couldn't possibly be a One-Handed Sword!

[Sword of Purging Devourer] (Mythical, Two-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 7,400 – 9,672

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds.

DPS: 2,246

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases 20% damage.

Equip: Increases 5% Critical rate.

Equip: Grants a 3% chance to repeat the same attack and continue to attack the target.

Equip: Grants a fixed chance to stun a target for 10 seconds on attack. Success rate will be lowered on a boss monster.

Level Requirement: 120

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: Second Seal has been broken.

Bound

Honestly, Zhang Yang thought that using a Two-Handed Hammer and a Two-Handed Sword would not make a difference since both weapon types could not activate the Axe Mastery. However, the Sword of Purging Devourer was much stronger due to its effect. Repeating the same attack over and over in a mass monster killing session would be OP as f*ck! What would it be when Zhang Yang activates his God of War Transformation skill...?

"There's one more seal," said Margery. "The last seal has a strong power embedded in it. I would need stronger materials to unseal it. Warrior, do you want to proceed?"

'Ding! Margery has a quest for you: Breaking the Third Seal. Will you accept it?'

Accept!

Zhang Yang returned to White Jade Castle after the quest and socketed [Level 4 Strength Gemstones] into the sword. He then asked Han Ying Xue for Rune Stones and gave the sword a Vampiric Lifesteal effect. After having his sword upgraded in all possible ways, Zhang Yang left the castle to complete the messenger quest.

He had already sent out 23 letters in total and still have 67 more to go to trigger the Legendary tier Main Story Quest. In his previous life, he had joined the game a little too late. When the Legendary Quest was already in progress, he was still grinding in the Level 20 maps. It's understandable for him to not know anything about it.

In this life, he will be the one triggering the Legendary tier Main Story Quest!

However, every single time when he tries to dive into the 'zone' and focus on something, he was bound to be distracted! This time, Wei Yan Er had returned to his villa and had brought along Zhao Bin, Zhao Yu, and Zhao Xue.

The situation was as follows, the University of Zhou Su had a rule whereby all students must be able to swim within the four years of their tertiary studies. Failure to do so would result in failing the course. It was opposed by many but was eventually accepted. After all, learning to swim was a lifelong skill. Being able to swim was a skill that would save one's own life. It could actually be quite enjoyable! However, when the university made it compulsory for students to do so, it becomes rather unenjoyable.

The Zhao sisters were all rocks who would sink into the water. Wei Yan Er was no better. In fact, she would only dare to enter the pool with a floater nearby. Hence, all four of them had decided to spend the summer learning how to swim! Even though there were many public swimming pools, the girls dared not enter such places there the hygiene was questionable. Especially when new swimmers would surely be gulping more water down than swimming!

Eventually, after some slight persuasion, everyone managed to obtain permission to use the swimming pool in Zhang Yang's villa.

Translator Note:

Echo Effect: The sword's copying the previous attack and casting it again.

Chapter 549: The Bliss in the Pool

The four floating driftwoods had no instructors with them, hence, Zhang Yang was unfortunately dragged to the pool and was forced to teach them how to swim.

The pool was situated indoors. Even though there was air conditioning inside the complex, it would never be the same as breathing the natural air of summer.

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were distracted by the noises that the little girls made and decided to join the fray and have some fun in the water. After everyone had gotten into their swimsuits, Zhang Yang felt a great sense of bliss in the pool.

Han Ying Xue had the most smexy, bootylicious body among all the girls. In fact, she was the only one who could pull off the string bikini look. She came to the pool, wearing only thin, skimpy pieces of latex that revealed close to 95% of her skin. Two tiny patches of material covered her pointy peaks, while the straps that were supposed support the melons had completely failed at their job. When she moved, her redonculous melons jiggled up and down, left and right, making Zhang Yang's blood pump up to a dangerous level. While her top was completely "defenseless", her bottom half was much worse. Her thong was so small that only her important bush was covered, while the rest of her butt was exposed for the world to witness. Gazing at her back alone, Zhang Yang would have thought that she was completely naked, the strings were barely visible. If he wanted to, he could plunge his hands into her cleavage and bury himself in her lushness. She had the longest, fairest pair of legs around, that matched her supple arse. Zhang Yang was not alone, being lost in a dreamy land, in fact, the other five girls present in the pool were unable to avert their admiring gazes away from her body.

In contrast to that, Daffodil Daydream seemed rather ordinary. Even though she had the perfect curves on her body at all the right places, she was overshadowed by the presence of Han Ying Xue. She had C-cup sized busts, which was considered to be rare enough among Asians. While her

front lost greatly to Han Ying Xue, the one factor that made her rather attractive was her arse. She had smooth and bouncy buns that were shaped in the outline of a nice peach. Han Ying Xue loved to teased the girl so much that she would occasionally smack her bum lightly, making them bounce like jello. Zhang Yang could not help but start imagining himself taking her from behind. The sensation and the image of her buns shaking as he penetrates her from behind was extremely lewd.

What a "torture"!

Zhang Yang averted his gaze away from the two matured ladies and landed on the triplets. All of them were too similar to each other. Like carbon copies, it was extremely hard for him to differentiate one from another. Since they had yet to fully mature into full-fledged women, they had bodies that radiated with youth. Still, they were curvy and rather slim. Their lumps were filled with the right amount of joy and had yet to succumb to the harsh effects of gravity. All three of them shared the same look. Thrice the delight!

Five ladies in swimsuits, splashing about in a pool, was truly a scene that every man would want to wake up to.

On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was just sad to even look at. She was completely extinguished by the presence of all the other jewels. Bust? Zero. Buns? Zero. The only redeeming factor she had was her beautiful, young face. Zhang Yang sighed when he noticed that her chest seemed to have a bulge in them, and poked at them with his fingers.

"HEY! WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?" The little girl shouted, covering her chest.

Zhang Yang laughed. "What are you shouting at? Worry not, I will never fall for your skeletal looks. Now, tell me honestly, did you stuff something in that swimsuit? I believed you did because that bulge has never been there before."

Wei Yan Er lowered her head and sulked disgruntledly. She then slipped her hands in and pulled out two pieces of sponge. Immediately after that, her chest flattened and Wei Yan Er returned to being a flat piece of wood.

Han Ying Xue had been holding back for the sake of Wei Yan Er. After watching her remove the makeshift "pads", she laughed on and on. Wei Yan Er was so furious that she lunged at Han Ying Xue grabbing hold of her badonkers, tugging them into the water. She had tugged with such force that the rest of Han Ying Xue followed down, including her head. Han Ying Xue was not a swimmer, and so, when her head was submerged underwater, she struggled frantically while crying for help.

The pool was only 1 meter and 20 centimeters deep. Anyone could stand upright easily. However, if one is a poor swimmer, it would be a natural response for them to panic.

Zhang Yang rushed over quickly. Before he could lift her up, she had already grabbed onto the nearest and most prominent thing to her, which was his dong. The b*tch...could she not grab something that matters so much to him!? At least grab it with more care! You use it too, mind you!

Zhang Yang then wrenched her out of the water and princess-carried her above the water surface.

Huffing and puffing as she tried to catch her breath, the woman then glared angrily at the little girl and screamed at her. "You stupid little girl! You could have drowned me!"

"HAAHAH!" The little girl laughed away as she floated away with the floaters around her arms, and played with the Zhao sisters.

Now that Wei Yan Er had left Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang could help but to feast his eyes upon Han Ying Xue's chest. As the water waves flowed over and off her body, her chest floated about accordingly. The sight of it, and the sensation of Han Ying Xue's graceful hands still gripping onto his flag pole, started sending blood rushing to a certain place!

Han Ying Xue was beginning to relax in his arms, but her expression changed when she felt the thing in her hand getting hard and stiff. At first, when she was drowning, she had genuinely grabbed onto Zhang Yang Jr by accident. She had been in bed, entwined, conjoined with Zhang Yang for many nights now, she would not have made a careless mistake like that intentionally.

The little minx just loved teasing Zhang Yang, and thus, when she realized that she had flipped a switch, she did not let it go but smirked at Zhang Yang. She pulled Zhang Yang closer to her and whispered, "Does it feel good?"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and bashfully nodded.

Han Ying Xue then let his dong go free. Before Zhang Yang was left hanging, she whispered again, "Let's go to the other side!"

It was a good idea since they were only 3 to 4 meters away from Wei Yan Er and the triplets. Since the water was crystal clear, the young girls might catch the couple's funny business.

Zhang Yang cleared his throat and faked a loud cough. "There's too many people here. I'll tell you how to swim underwater!"

When Han Ying Xue heart underwater, she twitched a little and with a gloomy face, she scoffed. "What do you mean by underwater?"

"Ah. Haha. Nothing."

Zhang Yang helped Han Ying Xue doggy paddle over to the other end of the pool. It was a good distance between them, hence Zhang Yang thought that it was safe to do their little thing.

Zhang Yang stood up, covering Han Ying Xue with his back and caressing her breast up and around, sloshing the water around those mountains. His fingers slipped under her swimsuit and started to flick and pinch at her nipples.

Undaunted, Han Ying Xue immediately retaliated, her fingers slipping beneath Zhang Yang's trunks to lightly caressed the gearstick. After a short time, the little rod turned into a long, solid pole, ready to pierce the high heavens.

Zhang Yang then turned Han Ying Xue around and planted a kiss on her lips. That after, he whispered something to her which made Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes and shook her head. Zhang Yang became slightly sadden and made a sulky face. He then tried his best to persuade her again and again, and finally managed to get her to nod her head with glowing red

cheeks.

She then caressed Zhang Yang face and sucked in a deep breath before going underwater.

After a short, awkward moment of waiting, Zhang Yang then felt Han Ying Xue's warm hands pulling down his trunks. His stiff rod was then covered with a warm and moist sensation. The space around his little rod became tighter by the moment and he could feel a powerful suction around his shaft. Zhang Yang thrust his head backward at the surge of pleasure that rushed to his brain. The guilty pleasure of it was multiplied when he could hear the chitter-chatter of Wei Yan Er and the triplets behind him.

Han Ying Xue might have a hidden talent in holding her breath. She was underwater for close to 2 minutes before resurfacing. She was panting heavily, her chest heaving up and down, which made Zhang Yang craved for more. Zhang Yang kissed her again and asked for it one more time. After another session of teasing and persuading, Han Ying Xue let out a loud sigh before she went underwater again. The similar sensation of warmth enveloped him again.

Just when he was about to unload, Zhang Yang heard the sound of water splashing about behind him. Zhang Yang quickly tried his best to conceal his front and craned his neck over his shoulder. He saw Zhao Bin swimming over, with a floater below her chest. Fear basically paralyzed him! They were going to be caught!

Shush Shush! The sound of the water splashes grew louder as Zhao Bin got closer to him.

URGH!

Zhang Yang shot a powerful blast of load in intense pleasure.

"Owph!" Han Ying Xue shot out of the water with a loud splash. Just as she was about to open her mouth, she quickly swallowed a mouthful when she saw that Zhao Bin was just behind Zhang Yang. She glared at him angrily. Her cheeks were raging red with a slight hue of bashful pink.

"Brother Yang, Sister Snow, what are you guys doing?" Zhao Bin hovered over the water with the air of her floating ring. It seemed that Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were safe.

"Oh! I'm teaching the snow witch how to swim underwater!" said Zhang Yang casually.

Han Ying Xue's coincidentally ragged panting what sold off his lie.

"Hm. Okay then," said Zhao Bin as she paddled her way back to rejoin Wei Yan Er. Zhang Yang's eyes were sharp enough to notice a faint line of bashful pink in her cheeks.

Just after Zhao Bin left, a small patch of white foam floated upwards and dispersed.

Zhang Yang then sighed heavily and put up a fake annoyed tone. "Dear sister, you have just conducted an act that has killed many innocent lives!"
(1)

Han Ying Xue was greatly aggravated. She then curled her fist up and punched Zhang Yang's chest as hard as she could. In the end, she retracted her fair, gentle hand in pain. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was not affected by it. "It's your fault! Who in the right mind you want a blow--ARGH! You made me swallow that disgusting sludge!"

Zhang Yang laughed it off but silently, he blamed himself for not able to endure longer. He was with two world-class hotties, but was still unable to last longer than a dynamite bomb! A single touch and kaboom--!

"Noob---tank! Come---and---teach---us---swimming----!" cried the little girl as loudly as she could.

"Scram!" cried Han Ying Xue as she shoved Zhang Yang away. She covered her mouth and ran back into the villa. Perhaps...she was going to wash her mouth.

Zhang Yang laughed and swam back to the chirpy little girls. First, he taught them how to exhale underwater, how to properly thread the water with their hands, and the most important one, how to float on water without the need of a floater. Naturally, all of the teachings required

Zhang Yang's physical touch. Zhang Yang was fine with little girl since she was like a little sister to him. Besides, Wei Yan Er flat board body was extremely hard to appreciate.

On the other hand, the Zhao triplets had given Zhang Yang a hard time. Their youthful, young bodies had the potential to grow to be like Han Ying Xue's. Even though Zhang Yang had just unloaded, he could feel his little Zhang Yang Jr. getting ready for round 2.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He was a good man. He would never touch a woman with any ill intent. Well, in the case of Han Ying Xue, she asked for it. However, when instructing someone to swim, it is inevitable that he would accidentally touch their bodies. Touching their supple butts to correct their position was still somewhat forgivable, but Zhang Yang felt extremely guilty when his hands accidentally grazed their still growing chests. This went both ways, even the three girls would occasionally lose their sight in training and could not help but to fall for Zhang Yang.

...

After spending close to 2 hours in the pool, everyone played a little before getting out of the pool. Everyone was tired and ordered take out to be delivered to Zhang Yang villa. After dinner, the four university students were exhausted and were dragged along by Wei Yan Er to stay for the night. The villa had many rooms anyway, even if Wei Yan Er drags along a few more friends over, it would not be much trouble for the villa. That is, if she manages to give a valid excuse to Zhang Yang.

Translator Note:

(1): If you must know, the white foamy thing is Zhang Yang's sperm.

Chapter 550: A Malicious Invite

After dinner, Han Ying Xue sneaked into Zhang Yang's room and they spent the entire evening banging each other up. At some point, his bed started creaking and loosening up. It had had enough of their madness.

For a few days now, Sun Xin Yu had been extremely busy with a big case at work. She had not been able to come back to the villa and had been resting in the office or in her car. Occasionally, she would log in for a while and disappear without anyone noticing. It was a chance for Han Ying Xue to dominate Zhang Yang alone.

After a good bam-bam in the ham session, both lovers were soaked in each other's sweat. They continued on snuggling and cuddling for a bit. Thanks to the lubricating, lewd, dirty sweat, Han Ying Xue managed to entice Zhang Yang for one last shag by smothering him with her shining, oiled up breasts. After that, they put their gaming helmets on and got to work.

Although the Korean players are said to be extremely good at gaming, the Europeans shared a similar sentiment as well. The guild, Nihilum had been actively training and had managed to take down the 6th boss, making it 6 out of 15 bosses in their progress. The speed was rather fast, which made everyone think that they might gain the chance of taking the boss's First Clear Achievement.

Due to their insane progress, Fatty Han got anxious and had call for a group gathering to enter the dungeon to overthrow the Europeans. Ever since Endless Starlight had obtained the new shield, his survivability had been upgraded. Combined with Fatty Han's Vampire Inheritance, and the experience of them honing their skills at the 5th boss of the dungeon for several days, it was a matter of time before they were able to proceed. Perhaps, the only aspect that they were lacking on would be the hardware.

With Endless Starlight performing his role perfectly as a tank, the party managed to take down the 5th boss of the dungeon after several times being completely wiped. Although the 6th boss was much greater than the

5th boss, the party had managed to rely on Fatty Han Vampire Inheritance Transformation to forcefully make it through the 6th boss. They had managed to pull the gap between China and Europe.

In one day, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to kill two of the Hardcore dungeon bosses and made those commentators that had doubted their skills eat their own words. Still, they had good reason to doubt Lone Desert Smoke, since they had not been performing any better at Normal mode or Hard mode. Even though they had managed to kill two bosses in one day, their ranks were only pushed up from the 20th to the 10th place. Since Lone Desert Smoke had not made much of a show battling the first four bosses of the Hardcore mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, hence, their average rank had been going up and down, highest being at 29th rank and the lowest being at the 84th rank!

That was why there was the saying that had started spreading in the forums. No one was better at killing bosses than European players. Although China players were creative and highly adaptive, they lacked the innovation to create their own battle strategies. Previously, they were able to defeat boss thanks to imitating the Europeans, taking their strategy and making it their own. Now that the game was on a global stage, Chinese players were unable to silently copy their strategy without being noticed.

Being bombarded with such an accusation, players of China were greatly provoked. However, results and actions speak louder than words. All of China's top guilds were performing poorly. Not only was Lone Desert Smoke not performing at their best, other guilds such as Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky, Sunset Amber, and the others were only able to match Lone Desert Smoke.

Due to their unsightly performance, the topic of "Chinese players being weak" got heated up.

Zhang Yang had been through this dungeon before, and he knew the means and methods to get pass through. However, he chose to remain quiet. He wanted to let Hundred Shots and Mountain Mover discover the strategy themselves. After all, Zhang Yang had only experienced the game till level 179. Beyond that, he could not help anyone out anymore. It was

best that he starts letting them be on their own for the time being. Because of that, Lone Desert Smoke exploration party had always been in two phases, a raiding phase, and a conditioning phase.

Zhang Yang had gathered all the main party members like Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue to hunt for their own Inheritance fragments. On the side note, they had been hunting for Open-World bosses to gather strong equipment, in hopes of increasing the exploration party's prowess. Still, it was not progressing as fast as he hoped.

Imperial Sky, and Crimson Rage were doing roughly about the same thing as Lone Desert Smoke. Ever since they had experienced the toughness of the Dragon Throat Fortress Hardcore mode, they had not been able to proceed further if they had only depended on the drops of the first few easier bosses in the dungeon. As a result, the guilds have been hunting for equipment from Open-World bosses.

Faced with such a difficulty, all of China's top guild and players were in a rather stagnant phase.

While Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were progressing rapidly in the aspect of their own character development, they had fought valiantly to refute that statement. In an instant, the forum got heated up and rowdy with commentators as they tried to compare both Lone Desert Smoke's and Nihilum's strength. However, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were not on the same page as the forum commenters. What the commenters were focusing on were the strengths of the guilds in raiding dungeons.

As such, Zhang Yang had no reason to get himself involved. Depending solely on his Inheritance Transformation skill was not the "authentic" way to raid a dungeon, even though it was extremely efficient. If the transformation skill was only activated to kill the final boss, it would be highly useful at obtaining the First Clear Achievement. On the other hand, if the Transformation skill was used to raid the entire dungeon, it would not be enough, unless the guild had many players with Inheritance Transformation skill. There was just not enough time.

Zhang Yang shrugged at the mess around him and proceeded to

complete his messenger quest. The quest itself was a draggy long quest and would definitely waste a player's time. Especially since it was too boring! By the time Zhang Yang had delivered the 54th letter, Zhang Yang felt like he could just smash all the orbs in his inventory. As such, he felt a great admiration for the previous players in his previous life to actually finish the quest since there was no way that that particular player would know that it would trigger the Legendary Main Story quest. Yet, he had done it all, and completed it! Such endurance!

"Hey dummy? The Hell Priest guy just messaged me, inviting us to a battle in the Hovering Amphitheatre. The winner will walk away with all 10 of the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments. Should I accept the challenge?" Han Ying Xue asked Zhang Yang, through the in-game communicator.

All 8 regions of the game were natural enemies. Hence, there was no method for a private message, nor the ability to befriend them. However, it was possible to contact a player of a different region via the standard mail service, in which, gold coins must be used.

"Hovering Amphitheatre?!" cried Zhang Yang in shock. It seems like the Hell family had lost their patience. It was weird that they had not dared to hunt Han Ying Xue for it, but had chosen to deal with her via the Hovering Amphitheatre.

Hovering Amphitheatre is a PvP matching arena where only two players could participate at a time. Hence, it was considered to be safe, since no one could barge in and interrupt the fight. Furthermore, the Hovering Amphitheatre battle had a betting function whereby players can place bets. It was not limited to just equipment, but other items such as potions and equipment. The battle would be fair and just since the system would be sort of a host and would ensure that the winner walks away with the prize without any additional trouble.

However...how could the opponent be that straightforward?

Fights in the Hovering Amphitheatre were not the same as Battle Arenas (Team PvP). All skills and item were not limited, unlike the Battle Arena

where skills and item with 30 minutes or higher cooldown will be greyed out. Lone Desert Smoke had revealed the item [Forbidden Scroll] to the world once, could the Hell family truly believe that they did not have a second piece?

It was unlikely...but how could they ensure victory via a Forbidden Scroll?

If it was Zhang Yang, he would use a [Forbidden Scroll] to counter their [Forbidden Scroll], sending them both to their deaths. Still, it was a huge risk, for even if one side dies a millisecond earlier, they would be the loser. On the other hand, the Inheritance Transformation skill. Even though the [Forbidden Scroll] was overwhelmingly strong, it was not a one-shot skill type but a DoT type skill. The Inheritance Transformation skill was much stronger as one could kill the opponent in a shorter duration than the [Forbidden Scroll]. Once the opponent is killed, the loser would be removed from the Hovering Amphitheatre.

Zhang Yang felt a little guilty, but the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance was an S class Inheritance. There was no way that he would let such a godly haul be snatched away from his hands!

Zhang Yang went into a stupor and thought about it with all his might. He was sure that the opponent had some trick up their sleeves. As such, he should too! They were not stupid, if they suddenly notice the opponent had changed their challenger, they could cancel the fight before it begins...

Perhaps...Hmm...

Zhang Yang widened his eyes at a sudden brilliant idea.

[Guising Potion]: Consume to change your appearance to a being within 10 meters away from the user. Has a 50% chance of failure and morphs the user into a disgusting being. Guising potion lasts for 5 minutes. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang would take the potion and made sure that Han Ying Xue be next to him during the consumption of the potion. If the potion fails, then she should find an excuse to delay for 30 seconds until he gains Han Ying Xue's appearance.

Once the disguise is implanted, Zhang Yang's name tag will change to that of Han Ying Xue's. He would then send out the challenge and enter the battle. Even if the opponent sees through his disguise after the match starts, it would be too late for them to do anything but to die under Zhang Yang's blade. After winning, they should disappear with the haul.

Yeah.

Even though Zhang Yang dislikes cheating, an S class Inheritance was too important to let go of.

Zhang Yang collected his thoughts and nodded his head. "Yea. Tell them we accept."

"Oh. Okay then," said Han Ying Xue as she hung up and went to reply them via the mailing system. After a while, she called Zhang Yang again, "They want us to gather at Anthylor Holy City. The fight will be held there 3 days from now. Hey dummy, where is this Anthylor Holy City?"

"Sigh...It's time for you to stop doing breast exercises. They're huge enough already! It's time for you to read more about the game!" said Zhang Yang casually.

"Dummy! It's all your fault then! You grab and rub them raw all the time! What's going to happen if they start sagging!" Han Ying Xue puffed with anger.

"Hehehe." Zhang Yang laughed. Both of them were lying down on his bed in reality. He then moved his hands up and grabbed her soft, supple tits. His other hand came around and grabbed them both, teasing them relentlessly. "Research states that a woman's breast will only grow bigger when they are touched by a man! Worry not about your jugs, I will personally take care of them!"

The moment Zhang Yang touched Han Ying Xue's perky points, her legs grew weak and she started rubbing her knees against each other. "Stupid! Not now! Stop teasing me, or....I might want to do it again..." Han Ying Xue let out a soft moan before crying out again, "Where is this Anthylor Holy City...Hmmm...."

Zhang Yang froze. Sun Xin Yu the ice queen was not at home, it was a good opportunity to give his magnum a well-deserved rest. It would be troublesome if the witch starts doing it again. Zhang Yang quickly removed his hands from Han Ying Xue's puffy cushions and slightly lowered his hands to her waist.

"The Anthylor Holy City is located in the Chaos Realm. It's situated at the center of the entire map. Like a major city, all PvP in the area is blocked. Players from all over the world could trade and place items in the auction house there. It's like the central hub for all players all over the world."

"But, isn't the Hovering Amphitheater accessible from any city? Why must we go to that bla bla Holy City for?" said Han Ying Xue intrigued.

Zhang Yang had a sudden glint in his eyes. He had only been 80% confident that the opponent would pull a trick, but now that Han Ying Xue had asked about it, he was 100% sure of it!

Chapter 551: Disguise vs Disguise

There is always a draw back for disguising as someone else, that is, the fake can never perform as well as the real deal.

Hence, when a player sends out an invitation for a fight, the system will still reveal the opponent's profile information. However, a player could choose to hide their profile as a choice. It was to protect one's dignity if they happen to be defeated. In this case where both sides had no choice to hide their profile information, who in their right mind would choose to accept a Hovering Amphitheater challenge? The penalty for losing would be the deduction of levels and the Inheritance fragments!

However, when a player walks to you and reveals their profile information and name tag, even if they had registered the invitation with a hidden profile, players would take it for real and accept the fight.

Sigh.. the things people would do to cheat and lie...

Zhang Yang had called for Han Ying Xue and explained the situation to her. The witch started fuming in anger. On one hand, she was cursing the people on the other side, on the other hand, she had also scolded Zhang Yang for catching them for their act. Birds of a feather flocked together. Only a cheater can catch a cheater. That was her reasoning, which left Zhang Yang a little troubled.

"Please, I'm just being observant! Unlike you! All breast and no brain."

Han Ying Xue raised her chest high and grabbed Zhang Yang's ball sack. "Say it again. I dare you. Who's all breast no brain?"

When men have their balls grabbed like that, they would have to surrender. Zhang Yang caved in, while his real hand caressed her fair legs and slid smoothly into her moist nether region. "Alright, you win! You're the most beautiful woman, the smartest, the best woman any man could have!"

"Hmph! Pussy!" Han Ying Xue scoffed. "Well, now that you have explained what they are going to do, how do we deal with them? I can't

fight a player with the Inheritance Transformation skill.

There was no doubt about that. Zhang Yang did not have any more [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] either for Han Ying Xue to carry. She would be killed even if the player has a Class C Inheritance.

Sigh...such a graceful woman... Zhang Yang was truly distracted by the sensation of her thighs and her waistline. While his hands were still caressing her body in real life, Zhang Yang said, "Are you daft? If they could use some trick, we could do the same! Tell you what though, when the time comes, I'll be the one challenging them! So, let them send a player with Inheritance, we will do the same!"

"But, do you know how to make a Guising Potion in the first place?"

"Haha! Well, not yet. There's always the auction house! Even if the auction house does not have the item, we can still buy it. Fret not, these days, as long as we have the money, there's nothing in the world that I cannot buy. It's not like it's a rare equipment."

Zhang Yang spent the rest of his time completing the messenger quest and getting Daffodil Daydream to search for the recipe in the main city. Without taking much time, Daffodil Daydream called back and told Zhang Yang that there was no recipe for the [Guising Potion] in the auction house. However, there was a player that was selling on the streets and had insisted on selling it for 10,000 gold coins.

Zhang Yang did not hesitate to fork out the money since it was crucial for the plan of robbing the S class Inheritance. However, when Daffodil Daydream wanted to pay the money, the player had promptly increased the price to 30,000 gold coins.

Zhang Yang matched his pace and immediately gave Daffodil Daydream the permission to pay 30,000 gold coins. Be it 10,000, 30,000, or even 30,000,000, Zhang Yang would pay the money. However, what of business ethics? How could a seller suddenly increase the price by such an amount? Zhang Yang was not greatly offended by it and had Daffodil Daydream pay the money. When he obtained the recipe, Zhang Yang had a few Assassins follow the seller around for a kill-on-sight order. He would

keep the seller hunted down for a few days, and let the greedy f*cker know that Lone Desert Smoke is not to be messed with.

After 3 days, Zhang Yang managed to send out 72 messages. The day of reckoning arrived, and he brought Han Ying Xue to Anthylor Holy City.

The place was a safe ground. There were no monsters around and no PvP battles. However, even though the city was safe, the route to the city was filled with many monsters with Level as high as Level 190!

Even though they were mostly normal tiered, they were considered to be as strong as an Ethereal tiered monster from Zhang Yang's current perspective. Luckily, Han Ying Xue was around to heal him, enabling him to kill one monster within 10 minutes of struggling. Both of them took close to 10 hours before they finally arrived at the legendary holy city.

Anthylor Holy City is a miracle city that floated 300 meters above the ground. The city was built on a hill with a flat top. Each structure in the city was built with a different sense of architecture. Somewhere big and flat, while the others were narrow and tall. It could be said that it was built to accommodate various races.

The two of them flew to the city and could see many different kinds of beings around. There were centaurs, minotaurs, gnomes, jinn and many more races that were never seen before. Even though the segregation of races in the pre-Chaos Realm lands was prominent, there were none in this holy city. In fact, everyone was having a good time with each other. Even a vicious Alligator Beastman could have fun playing with a little Lamb Beastman. One was drooling, while the other was having a good time being tossed around in the air.

To have such a peace in this land, only a powerful entity could have achieved it. Zhang Yang knew about the place, and naturally, he knew that the owner of the holy city was a powerful Celestial tier boss, the true Spellcaster, named Charles the Sun Chaser.

Charles the Sun Chaser was a powerful entity with a rich background. His father was an Elf Spellcaster while his mother was a Human Priest. The union of races was greatly objected by the Elven race of his father.

Right after Charles was born into the world, a group of Assassins were sent to assassinate his parents. Charles was spared, and had dived into the world of the Arcane and had managed to be the first being in history to use two racial magic powers. After coming of age, he tracked down the group of assassins that had killed his parents. After removing them from the surface of the earth, he had built the Holy City of Anthylor in the Chaos Realms.

Anyone with logical thinking would be able to imagine just how powerful Charles's magic was, to be able to create such a gigantic floating city. With such a powerful Celestial tier boss residing in the center of the city, no one had dared to cause any trouble. Not even Spectres nor Demons dared step into the area. Anthylor quickly became one of the most peaceful and holy places in Chaos Realm.

Zhang Yang had taken his slow sweet time to explain the lore of the city as he walked through the city streets. As per the city law, players were not allowed to travel in the city with a flying mount. Any lawbreakers will be promptly be expelled.

The two of them walked and came to the auction house. The streets were brimming with many NPCs but there were no traces of any players nearby. Han Ying Xue then sent a message to notify their opponent of their arrival. Not long after, the opponent had sent a message back and told Han Ying Xue that they would take another 10 minutes.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue exchanged a look. Both of them knew that the opponent had already arrived, but were trying to buy more time to get the disguise they want via the [Guising Potion].

"Well then, shall we start?" said Han Ying Xue. She then passed all five Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments to Zhang Yang. The two of them then found a quiet corner to start using the [Guising Potion] as well.

Zhang Yang had crafted the [Guising Potion] himself, so he had managed to craft out a Transmuted version of it, lengthening the Disguise duration. Every one tier of Transmutation would provide an extra minute to the Disguise duration. During the three day period, Zhang Yang had

crafted a whole pile of potions and among them, he had many bottles of Transmuted tier 10 potions which would increase the potion's duration to 15 minutes.

Still, Zhang Yang was not as lucky. He had taken a total of three bottles and only then managed to proc the disguise successfully. With a flash of bright light, he turned from an overly large chicken to an old duck and finally turned into a beautiful female priest with a huge rack. His name tag then morphed and turned into Han Ying Xue's.

Zhang Yang then reached out and rubbed his boobs. With a wide smile on his face, he said, "Woah! This is so real. I can assure you that my boobs and yours have no difference."

"..."

Zhang Yang walked over the auction house. He had made sure to sway his hips seductively with each step make a convincing Han Ying Xue. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had hidden her profile information and had changed into a different set of equipment that concealed her identity well.

"Little Snow?"

After waiting for 7 to 8 minutes around the auction house, a man named Hell Priest came forth to Zhang Yang.

Hell Priest, Level 103, Human Male, Priest, Paragon.

Little Snow, Level 101, Human Female, Priest, Lone Desert Smoke.

Zhang Yang flashed "his own" name tag at the man. When both of them were satisfied, the man spoke, "There are no words left to exchange. Let's just get down to it."

The man hid his name tag, and his character was immediately highlighted with an enemy's red outline. He then sent an invite to a Hovering Amphitheater class A challenge. The penalty for losing would be Level -3! At that point in time, it would take roughly 10 days to gain a level. The losing party would have to grind for another long month to regain the lost levels!

Zhang Yang accepted the challenge. He opened the wager window and placed all five of the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments inside. This action can never be faked. After the opponent had placed their items, the system then locked and "confiscated" the items, and waited for both parties to accept the challenge.

Shush! When both of them had confirmed their selection, they were teleported into the battle field with a 5 minute countdown to the fight.

"Hahaha!"

When the battle had been locked in, no one could leave or enter the battlefield. Even if Zhang Yang chooses to leave now, he would be forfeiting the battle and would have to accept defeat and have his level reduce by 3. Since the opponent felt that he had trapped Zhang Yang, he had let out a laugh and had dispelled his [Guising Potion] effect to reveal his true self.

Dusk Phoenix, Level 102, Elf Female, Bandit, Paragon.

Grah! It's Dusk Phoenix again.

It would make sense since the opponent had taken into account the dangers of the [Forbidden Scroll]. Only A class Inheritance transformation skill would give a player a safe range of HP to take the damage, so Dusk Phoenix had been sent to take down Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang smirked to himself and quickly pretended to be surprised. "Y-Y-You cheated!"

"So what?!" Dusk Phoenix snarled through her teeth. "Blame your guild master for this. That perverted, wretched man must pay for it. In fact, all that is dear to him shall pay as well! His guild members included! Haha! I want to see his face the moment he loses an S class Inheritance!"

Sigh...Really...Women can never be offended. Zhang Yang remembered that he had smacked her butt a few times, and even then, he had used his shield, and not his own hands! Was it worth going so far to hurt him?

Zhang Yang remembered when she had hunted him in the cave for almost two hours back then. It was one of the worst experience for him.

This time around, it should be his turn to hunt her down like a dog! He smiled confidently and said, "Are you sure that you can defeat me?"

"Hmph. The only trump card you have should be the [Forbidden Scroll]! I've researched it! [Scourging Doomsday] can only deal 10% worth of HP per second! The upper limit is 100,000! What that you don't know about me is that I have an A class Inheritance! After Transforming, I will have 1,880,000 HP! Even then I have a full recovery HP skill! At most, you can deal 300,000 HP worth of damage, and I will kill you with my remaining HP!" said Dusk Phoenix, proudly and confidently.

"Oh woah. I can never calculate like that. Your calculus must be top of the class!"

"You---" Dusk Phoenix felt that something was off. The graceful woman in front of her certainly did not seem like a rascal. Dusk Phoenix sucked in a deep breath and adjusted her collar. She pulled down her collar that seemed to be too tight that it was strangling her. Her skin was so fair, unlike those of Asian girls.

"Don't provoke me. I will not fall for it!"

Zhang Yang truly believed that the woman had to be of an upper class. The way she moved the tone of her voice all hinted towards that direction. Those of which, Zhang Yang thought to be pretentious and rather snobbish.

5 minutes was about to reach its end, and a large digital clock appeared in the middle of the battlefield.

10 seconds...

Dusk Phoenix immediately activated the Blood Angel Inheritance Transformation skill. A pair of red wings sprouted out of her back, enabling her to hover above the ground with a few flaps of her wings. Her wide wings had eclipsed the sunlight behind her and cast a long dark shadow over the field.

7 seconds...

"Dorky, let me give you a piece of advice. Before you know the

opponent's trump card, do not allow yourself to think that victory is already in your hands." Zhang Yang smiled lightly.

D-D-D-D-Dorky!?

Dusk Phoenix was aggravated. If she could have started the fight then, she would have already zoomed to his neck and sliced Zhang Yang's head off.

4 seconds...3...2...1...!

The horn of war was blown, and Zhang Yang activated his own God of War Transformation. A rainbow, radiant light blasted off everywhere and a pair of magnificent wings burst out from Zhang Yang back. The wings Zhang Yang had were far bigger, wider, and more beautiful than Dusk Phoenix's.

I-im-im-impossible!

Dusk Phoenix was flabbergasted. How could her opponent have a transformation skill as well?! It was impossible! If her opponent had a transformation skill, "she" should have an Inheritance already! Why would "she" fight for more Inheritance Fragments in the first place?! Perhaps, "she" too had taken a bottle of [Guising Potion] and had wanted to fight in the real Little Snow's stead.

It would not make sense then...to make sure that the opponent was the real deal, she had even camped at the rendezvous. For the whole time she had been watching, she had not seen the "woman" taking any potions! If she had, the Disguise effect should have already worn off! The worst part of it all was that Little Snow had been alone for more than 5 minutes! The potion would only work if the person you are imitating is within 10 meters away from you!

Could it be, that Little Snow is fighting for the Inheritance, even though she already possessed an Inheritance, all for the purpose of obtaining an S class Inheritance!?

...

Dusk Phoenix was not an Alchemist, hence, she was not all too familiar

with Transmuted potions. Thus, at that sudden appearance of Zhang Yang wings, she had instantly forgotten about Transmuted potions and thought of another reasoning behind the battle. To be just like her, to be able to fly after activating the Inheritance Transformation skill, "Little Snow" must have an A class Inheritance!

Dusk Phoenix collected her senses and became serious. An A class Inheritance and the possibility of [Forbidden Scroll] being used might be the end of her. However, it would not make sense for "her" to even have a [Forbidden Scroll] in the first place! She could have already used the scroll to win the battle and obtain an S class Inheritance! Why would she choose to obtain an A class Inheritance just to fight Dusk Phoenix!?

Class A Inheritance vs another Class A Inheritance...

Hmmm. It should be a good fight then.

Dusk Phoenix smirked as she thought about it.

Chapter 552: One Sided Victory

Two players, two Transformation. One fight. One winner!

Dusk Phoenix did not dare let her guard down in the face of a player with an Inheritance. She sensed that she would need to fight "her" as if she was fighting a stronger foe. With a cloud of smoke, she disappeared midair.

Zhang Yang's eyes widen when he saw that Dusk Phoenix had entered stealth mode in mid-flight.

Zhang Yang closed his eyes and calmed himself down. By the time a player can see an invisible attack, it would be too late to do anything by then. Instead of the eyes, it would be more efficient to rely on the other senses of touch and hearing. Players can sense and hear the distorted airspace, and could determine the location of the Thief and attack at that very spot to force her out of the stealth mode.

Fu.

Zhang Yang could hear a faint and inaudible sound of breathing coming somewhere from his left. He shut his eyes still and properly pinpointed her position before swinging his sword towards his left.

"Argh—" With a grunt of pain, Dusk Phoenix's character reappeared in the battlefield with a large wound in her chest. The blow had torn through her clothing, but they quickly mended itself back. She gazed back to Zhang Yang with horror and surprised, not believing that "she" could detect her position, even while in stealth mode. The worst part of it all was when she noticed the sword in "her" hands.

Dusk Phoenix frowned and bellowed, "Y-You're not Little Snow! What are you!"

A Priest could only wield a staff. They cannot equip a sword or another weapon. That is, unless the player obtains the Inheritance called the "The Frost Swordsman". Any class would be able to equip a sword as their primary weapons. However, it did not make sense for a Priest, a magic

class to rely on a physical weapon to attack. Without a proper equipment setup, even if one had unlimited Intelligence, the sword would not do any damage at all. Dusk Phoenix knew that Little Snow's character was a Priest, hence, it would not make sense for her to equip a sword.

Furthermore, the damage she had just inflicted on her, had penetrated all her Defense and had dealt 10 damage. It should have been 0!

Zhang Yang smiled widely until his teeth were exposed. "Ducky Phoenix, you have been infatuated with me for so long, yet you could not sense the real me beneath this appearance?"

Zhang Yang then removed the Disguise effect.

"YOU!" Dusk Phoenix cried with the anger and frustration of a thousand men. Old vengeance rose anew and her face was dyed in a vermillion color of carnal shame. She did something with her right hand, and a beautiful female elf appeared by her side. She wore a white ceremonial gown which made her look like a Priestess. She must be Dusk Phoenix's Battle Companion.

"Zhan Yu! I WILL KILL YOU!" cried the deranged woman as she zoomed towards Zhang Yang and planted her swords into Zhang Yang's chest. Zhang Yang laughed at the sight of her coming at him and countered her attack with a flick of his shield. His shield deflected one sword and he used his other hand to parry the other sword with his Sword of Purging Devourer.

Ping ping bang bang!

Two players and one Battle Companion flung at each other in the air. Dusk Phoenix's Battle Companion was a healer type and had started healing Dusk Phoenix since her summoning. Fortunately, Zhang Yang was able to inflict {Destructive Smash} on her and reduced her healing rate. Still, even with her healing going on, she could never nullify the devastating attack power of Zhang Yang's immense God of War Inheritance!

Zhang Yang thought about it and realized that since Dusk Phoenix had used her Battle Companion, Zhang Yang felt that he had no need to hide

Felice anymore. He had his identity exposed already anyway. The little girl might just be a little girl, but her attack power rivals even Zhang Yang!

If Zhang Yang had not been sly enough to debunk the opponent's trickery, Han Ying Xue might have just blindly entered the battle and get herself killed by Dusk Phoenix. Not only would she lose the precious Inheritance, she would have had 3 Levels deducted from and be expelled from the Chaos Realm as a result.

Zhang Yang could not allow that to happen, as the consequences would jeopardize his guild's progress. In fact, Zhang Yang wanted to teach her a lesson. A lesson so hard and brutal that whenever Dusk Phoenix hears his name, she would start having nightmares!

Zhang Yang kept his shield on his back and spread out his wings. He shot to Dusk Phoenix and punched her forcefully in her chest. Right then, his Strength was as high as 3,211. It was more than enough to overpower Dusk Phoenix since she was a class that primarily focused on Dexterity.

WHAM! CRACK!

Dusk Phoenix was sent down to earth like a meteor, leaving behind a small crater. No one, at the current stage of the game, could fight Zhang Yang in aerial combat!

The blonde woman could be said to rival that of Sun Xin Yu's agility. With a quick tumble, she hopped away from Zhang Yang's incoming "meteor punch" and got herself to safety by jumping back 4 to 5 meters.

Zhang Yang had always thought that a woman would always protect her dignity, even in the game. When Dusk Phoenix had managed to evade Zhang Yang super punch, she felt like her dignity had been tarnished. With great anger, the woman let out a battle cry and lunged at Zhang Yang.

She knew that she could not put up a fight with Zhang Yang in the air, hence, she opted for grounded combat. It was, after all, her method of fighting for the past year. She barely had a few days worth of aerial combat experience.

"You swine! You have no honor! Gangster! Hooligan! You are no gentleman! I will kill you for it!" she cried.

Zhang Yang laughed at her pitiful retort and moved to her at an alarming speed. Even though he could not avoid taking a slash or two from Dusk Phoenix, they were merely normal attacks which would not harm him much. With the strength of the world, Zhang Yang directed a straight corkscrew punch directly in Dusk Phoenix's chest.

A loud thump was heard, along with the slow-motion sight where Dusk Phoenix's chest was blown inwards, followed with a quick haymaker, resulting in Dusk Phoenix being blown away, as if she was rammed by a train. That did not matter since it did no "real" damage. However, after the corkscrew punch, the second punch was not necessary. It was landed just to make her boobs bounce around.

Dusk Phoenix realized that and was fuming with steam, coming out from her cheeks.

"S—Shameless bastard!"

Punishing someone would mean nothing if it wasn't harsh enough! Even if losing an A class Hovering Amphitheater challenge ends up with a deduction of 3 Levels, it was just an amount of experience points that can be farmed again. Flesh wounds will heal, but mental scar does not heal as easily. That was what Zhang Yang was aiming for, he wanted to mentally scar her so badly that she would not dare to even mention his name for the rest of his life! Well, nothing that drastic. He only wanted her to leave him alone.

Zhang Yang smirked at Dusk Phoenix and glided through her wide open legs and landed a punch at her butt. The butt of the European woman was so supple and bouncy that his punches did nothing but sent them jiggling like crazy!

Dusk Phoenix was enraged and ashamed. She quickly opened up the system command menu and reported Zhang Yang's misdemeanor. However, the system rejected the report, saying that a battle was still in place and cannot be interfered with. In fact, there was a wager in place,

hence a "harassment report" will not register. If a female player feels like she was being physically harassed, she can forfeit the match and make a report.

Remember that Dusk Phoenix was a prideful woman, just like a certain someone, hence, there was no chance that she would forfeit the battle, just because the player happens to punch her tits and *ss. She gritted her teeth and continued the fight.

Unfortunately for Dusk Phoenix, Zhang Yang was a player who had reached the Grand Master level of Supporting Attacks. She may jump around, turn invisible, and would still take a point blank range of his super punch. Still, she could still turn the tables around, since her attack power was strong enough to drain his HP away.

There were two problems with her attacks. Even though she was powerful, Zhang Yang had over 5,000,000 HP and could restore his HP with {Shield Wall}!

Zhang Yang healing rate was 75% HP, 4,035,600 HP every 150 seconds. Dusk Phoenix must push her DPS to at least 26,904 to properly kill Zhang Yang. But it was impossible! Zhang Yang's own devastating DPS was only over 26,000! Furthermore, Dusk Phoenix's Battle Companion was a Healer-type that could not help increasing her DPS. She could only widen her eyes in despair as Zhang Yang would restore his HP every 2 and a half minutes.

It's a torture! A mental torture that Zhang Yang wanted!

Zhang Yang moved around like the wind and continuously smacked Dusk Phoenix's chest and *ss. Every time he touched them, she would twitch and wince with rage, and would not fail to retaliate with a wild attack. From her perspective, Zhang Yang was worst than any perverted man on earth!

Since both sides had the ability to restore their HP, the battle was dragged on until it was close to 1 hour.

Dusk Phoenix had her chest and *ss "caressed" for an uncountable amount of times. Even though it was still a game, the sensation of his

fingers making contact with her sensitive areas felt like it was real!

In the beginning, she felt ashamed and angry. After that, it was numbing. Finally, after a few rounds of touching, she started to feel a little weird. The kind of sensation that made her body hot, as if something inside her was begging for release. It made her face flush with a red hue that was even deeper than vermilion! She could have just moaned out loud on the spot!

"What is going on with me!" Dusk Phoenix cried to herself. She had never felt such a feeling in her life!

Zhang Yang saw the opponent face was turning red, but he only thought that she was flustered with rage and not...the other thing. He continued on to smack and slam his opponent without giving it a second thought.

"Argh~~" She tried to cover her orgasmic moans with loud cry of angers. Her voice cracked. She was afraid of the feeling. To make thing worse, she had attained that feeling in the hands of a man that she hated!

"My god..." Dusk Phoenix muttered under her breath. For 21 years, she had been brought up, trained and cultivated by the highest of nobility. For 21 years, she had never been touched by a man! For so long, she was proud that she had never been sullied by any man the world and gained the sanctity and pride of purity. Yet, all of that was destroyed, simply by a game battle with a hooligan!

Her pride had refused to let her lose the fight. Therefore, she chose to endure the humiliating shame of punishment, or pleasure or was it both? All she could do was to shove those conflicted emotions down and focus on the shame and revenge. Still, there was an intense conflict in her heart that made her feel like killing herself in shame!

As Dusk Phoenix was battling on with the complex feeling swarming in her heart, Zhang Yang started to grow impatient and resorted to using his sword to strike his foe. With haste, Zhang Yang hacked away at her HP. Dusk Phoenix on the other had lost the will to continue on. She had even forgotten to use the recovery skill "Blood Angel Requiem" and was killed by Zhang Yang.

Shush!

Dusk Phoenix realized that she was defeated and lost the fire in her eyes. With dead, unfocused eyes, her body disappeared from the arena, and out of Chaos Realm. Having lost 3 Levels, her level had been deducted to Level 99. Zhang Yang puffed a relieved sigh. It would be an easy job for her to reach Level 100 with her Class A Inheritance.

‘Ding! You have won the battle!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragment (4)!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragment (6)!’

‘Ding!.....’

Zhang Yang’s inventory had gained 5 pieces of Inheritance Fragment immediately. He then took out all ten pieces of the fragments and they glowed with radiant light. When the light faded, a long mirky white staff appeared in his hands.

[Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Keepsake] (Quest Item)

Use: Initiates the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance quest.

Class Requirement: Priest.

Level Requirement: 100

"Hey dummy! Did you win?" Han Ying Xue bounced on the balls of her feet when she saw Zhang Yang walking towards her. She had been waiting on the streets of Anthylor for more than 1 hour.

"Yeah. Here. This is for you." Zhang Yang dropped the staff in Han Ying Xue’s fair hands that matched the staff’s color.

"Awesome! This maiden—ops. This lady will have an S class Inheritance!" cried Han Ying Xue.

Chapter 553: A Tiny Debt

After initiating the S class Inheritance quest, Han Ying Xue laughed her head off as she went off to complete it. She had the big pervert Battle Companion with her as her tank, and she herself could heal at an outstanding rate. Han Ying Xue now had the ability to fight any boss below Violet-Platinum Tier all by herself, as long as the boss fight does not have a time-based mechanism.

That being said, if she is patient enough, she could fight alone. In fact, she had always been calling for Zhang Yang to help her do the rough work. It was somewhat like working for his wife. According to Han Ying Xue, she would rather do something fun with him instead of wasting time killing monsters alone.

No matter what class of Inheritance quest it may be, the first few initial quests should involve running around to talk to a few NPCs first. Hence, Zhang Yang was free to do his messenger quest while Han Ying Xue did her menial errands.

When it was close to morning, Zhang Yang was awoken by the little girl's rude knocks on his door. She wanted him to drive her and the Zhao triplets back to the campus.

Zhang Yang sighed but eventually agreed. Wei Yan Er was almost his sister-in-law. And according to her own reasoning, a sister-in-law is half of a responsibility that he has to bare. Zhang Yang took a nice, long bath on purpose, making the girl impatient, and drove them back to school with the MPV.

Before they made to leave the villa, all triplets were all addressing Zhang Yang sweetly, calling him, "Brother Zhang". Although Zhang Yang could not recognize it, Zhao Bin had a slight blush as she stared into his eyes with a sort of admiration. She would also slip past him to evade his gaze, which left him a little weirded out.

Zhang Yang drove them all to the university and dropped them off at the university entrance. Since Zhang Yang had not yet had his breakfast,

Zhang Yang parked his car on the side and planned to have a meal in the university's canteen. Along the route, he spotted Yu Li who was carrying a small leather purse, walking towards the same direction.

"Huh? Zhang Yang?" Yu Li was surprised to see him in such a place. She smiled happily when she thought that he had purposely come all the way to the campus just to see her. However, when she noticed that Wei Yan Er and the triplets were with him, she sulked immediately.

"Eh?! Brother Zhang, you know Miss Yu?" asked Zhao Bin. She was a little afraid.

"Well...Yes. I do. She was my homeroom teacher when I was still a student in the campus." Said Zhang Yang as he waved at Yu Li while greeting her with a warm smile. "Good morning Teacher Yu!"

"Teacher? What is she teaching?" said Wei Yan Er with a frown on her forehead. Although she was a busybody in nature, there were a few aspects of life that she was rather sharp at noticing. She had picked up something from the way Yu Li had called out to Zhang Yang and how Zhang Yang had greeted her back.

"Software Engineering," said Zhao Bin. The triplets had chosen different courses to study, and Zhao Bin was the only one who had selected Computer Engineering as her course. Hence, she was the only person there, besides Zhang Yang who knew her.

Yu Li paced quickly and when she saw Zhao Bin, she nodded her head and politely asked, "My, my. Good morning, girl. Little Bin, how did you come to know Zhang Yang?"

"Ehrrm. Well. Brother Yang is our friend. Yes! Just a normal friend!" Zhao Bin explained frantically. Along her sisters, Zhao Bin was the only who was rather innocent. After enrolling for more than a year, she had not engaged in any relationships with any man and was afraid that Yu Li might have misunderstood something.

Zhang Yang patted the little girl's head and said, "Time for class then, little girls. The first period is about to start!"

"Psst!" Wei Yan Er gestured for Zhang Yang to lower himself for her to whisper. "Noobie tank. You better keep yourself clean! You must not betray my cousin sister or Sister Sun!"

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow.

"I noticed that this Teacher Yu has a big bust and a nice butt. Hmph. I'm telling you. She's not a good person!"

Zhang Yang shook his head. How could the little brat judge a person based on the size of their boobs and butts?

Zhang Yang pressed his knuckles against the little girl's head hard and patted her back. "Off you go!"

Although the little girl never enjoyed having anyone rub or do anything to her head, she was extremely comfortable with Zhang Yang doing so. It was like a family thing for her. Wei Yan Er then walked away from Zhang Yang and joined the girls for class.

cough

"I must say. You're doing a splendid job at raising so many little sisters when you're not with me," said Yu Li with a little trace of disdain and sadness.

Zhang Yang burst out with laughter, which made Yu Li slightly annoyed. "What about it? Jealous?"

"Please. I'm not in the place to be jealous of anyone. I have not forgotten my place. I am but your lover. Not your wife, nor your girlfriend. I am someone that you can use anytime you want. It is not of my concern to be bothered with whom you sleep with," said Yu Li with a monotone voice as she turned around with a saddened sulk on her face.

Ever since Zhang Yang had been breaking beds with Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, Zhang Yang had never once been left alone by the two vixens. During the daytime, he was "allowed" to go to the office. Although there were 6 super bootylicious babes in his office, ready to do his bidding, Zhang Yang was not at all affected. Even little Zhang Yang Jr. would refuse to stick its head out for a peek. Clearly, his standards had been

elevated to another level. That, or little Zhang Yang was just too exhausted from pacifying the two-universe classed vixens at home.

With that going on with his life, Zhang Yang had no more energy to meet Yu Li. Still, Yu Li had been left with a dry spell for only a short two weeks!

Zhang Yang felt that a man was rather different compared to a woman in terms of sex. Women would only do it with a partner that they like. On the other hand, there were many men who would willingly have sex with any women. The only question was if the female partner could make them rise to the occasion.

Yu Li had the body of a mature woman, and since Zhang Yang had given her the experience of love not long ago, she had started to feel a little lonely when Zhang Yang had left her "un-entertained" for two whole weeks.

Zhang Yang did no need to ask, as he already knew that she was dying to be filled up by him. Hence, he held her hands and pulled her close to his face. "Get in the car."

Yu Li could feel the heat rising up to her heart, but she refused to make it easy for Zhang Yang. "What for?"

"A man can do many things when he is not hungry. I need to have a meal first before I can repay the debt I owe you!"

"Poppy talk!" said Yu Li as she rolled her eyes. In the end, she sat in the co-driver's seat.

Zhang Yang quickly got to his driver's seat and glanced at Yu Li. She was wearing a short-sleeved blouse that was completely covering her chest. It seemed that she had been reserving herself. However, the one thing that she failed to cover was her long slender legs. Compared to anyone else, Yu Li might be the one woman with the fairest and sexiest legs. Seeing her legs alone was more than enough to satisfy his hunger.

The little girl had made things harder for Zhang Yang. When she was sitting in the co-driver's seat, she had made the seat position so low that

when Yu Li had sat down on the seat, her legs were lifted upwards. Her pencil skirt was pulled backwards. Perhaps a little too far back that Zhang Yang could see the dark, forbidden region between Yu Li's magnificent thighs.

The dragon was awoken and Zhang Yang turned off the car's engine.

Yu Li caught his burning gaze and was happy and frustrated at the same time. Her body craved for the touch of the man that she loved, but to push Percy into the puss in the car would be a little too shameful. Plus, it was morning! There were many people, students, or even her own colleagues who will walk through the parking lot!

"Why did you turn off the engine for? Go on, didn't you say that you were hungry?" said Yu Li.

"That's right. I'm hungry, so I'll devour you." Zhang Yang pulled her head closer to his and planted a hot passionate kiss on her lips. His left hand traced the lining of her neck and shoulders, his right hand crept beneath her skirt, "digging" through the bushes and into her cave.

Yu Li already had an amazing body before Zhang Yang was with her. That was one of the reasons, or rather, the main reason why there were too many horny male students in the university had beat their meat to her pictures. Now that Zhang Yang had plucked her fruit, her body had become more beautiful. Her perky curves had become curvier, not to mention so much bigger that Zhang Yang's wide hands had trouble cupping them whole.

Zhang Yang continued to play wrestling with her tongue until he saw that her twin peaks were standing out for him, reading to be teased.

After a while, Yu Li opened her eyes and came back to her senses, just when Zhang Yang was about to bury his face in between those protected mountains.

"Are you mad!?" said Yu Li as she pulled herself away from Zhang Yang's embrace.

"What?" said Zhang Yang.

"Do you want to be on the 8 o'clock news?"

Yu Li saw the sudden disappointment in Zhang Yang's eyes, as if a little kid had had his favorite toy confiscated. She felt a sharp pain in her chest. Although she could not deny that she wanted him inside her right there and then, it was too much of a risk to bear. She would still, like any other woman, prefer a safer atmosphere to make love in.

Zhang Yang cried out. "It should be fine! My car windows are heavily tinted glass. No one can see through the windows!" said Zhang Yang as he removed his fingers from the system of caverns and bushes. There was a coat of glittering liquid in his fingers. "Teacher. It's not good to lie. You want me to explore your cavern more, don't you!"

"Erhm...Well. I do. But not here."

Yu Li caved in. When she heard Zhang Yang utter the word "Teacher" she felt a sudden rush of carnal need for him. She felt the need of a man, no, not just any man. She wanted Zhang Yang to dominate her. The only thing that mattered was that he was hers.

Zhang Yang retracted his hands and looked as if he was about to cry. Yu Li then grabbed his hands and sucked on his fingers. Her tongue slithered around his thick, rough finger. After she had tasted her own fountain of youth, she removed his fingers from her mouth with a soft pop. "My office. Let's go."

Zhang Yang's eyes widened with a glint of joy. He then started the car and drove like the drivers of Initial D to the I.T department. The two of them entered the faculty and met a number of lecturers along the way. Many of them did not recognize Zhang Yang and some of them had already forgotten that they had once taught him. Some of them had even asked Yu Li if Zhang Yang was her boyfriend. Their voices were clearly disgruntled.

Yu Li was a flower. Perhaps, the most beautiful flower in the entire faculty. She could be one of the top girls in the entire campus! It was not clear as to how many male teachers or students were in love with her. However, Yu Li had been guarding her heart closely. She never again fell

for the temptation of money or promotion. In fact, she had been reserving herself for quite some time after Zhang Yang had rescued her. Hence, none of the male lecturers had a chance to taste her forbidden fruit.

They say that fruits that were not allowed to be plucked, tasted better. In the campus, when Yu Li walked across the pathway, many male lecturers had been giving her flowers and some had even proposed a relationship out of wedlock! They had been barging into her office, even though they had no business with her.

Hence, Yu Li was rather popular among the male lecturers, but was rather scorned by the female community. They had been calling her a sly fox behind her back. When Zhang Yang was still a student, he had been hearing such things. However, he had not dared to do anything about it. But now that he was taking care of Yu Li in this lifetime, Zhang Yang "retaliated". He had publicly "announced" that Yu Li belonged to him by placing his hands over her hips. He even did a princess carry for her, carrying her up in his arms from the stairways to her office door.

"Sigh...What if others had recognized you as one of my students. I can't bear to live with that shame!" said Yu Li as her face was as pink as a ripe peach.

"What's wrong with that? As I recall, teacher-student relationships are all too common!" said Zhang Yang as he gently placed Yu Li on her office chair. He locked the door behind him and planted his face in between her thighs.

Originally, Yu Li was in no position to own an office room. However, due to few malicious acts of a few maverick male officers in the department, and a bunch of support from the male lectures, the department had agreed to assign Yu Li to her own private office instead of a small cubicle, despite many silent protests from the female lecturers.

The surprising feature of the room was that the noise cancellation of the room was too good to be true. When the windows and door was shut, there was absolutely no noise that could leak through, even if there was a gun fight right outside the hallway! The room was set up that way to allow

the maverick male lecturer to have their alone time with Yu Li. However, Yu Li had been reserving herself to a point where no men could even come close to touch her hands! She was one of the prime example of women practicing the older traditional ways. However, Zhang Yang had been able to tear that barrier down and Yu Li had been loyal to only Zhang Yang alone. She would never allow other man besides him to touch her. From her own perspective, it was a professional courtesy. She was, after all, Zhang Yang's "property".

"Hmm~ You bad boy. Are you going to molest a teacher?" said Yu Li as she gazed at Zhang Yang with her seductive eyes. The buttons on her blouse had been unhooked, which made her protected mountains burst out, revealing her sinful, black laced undergarment that was slightly transparent, allowing Zhang Yang to see the different tones of colors at the tips of her mountains.

"Teacher. Do you want me to molest you?" Zhang Yang laughed.

Yu Li groaned with pleasure when Zhang Yang buried his head and used his tongue to roughly caress the bell above the temple. As she moaned and groaned, she held his head up and pulled him closer to her face. "You have been waiting for so long. I think it's time to let the dragon loose."

When she pulled Zhang Yang closer to her, her hands had been rubbing hard against his groins. She could feel the great pressure of it that was pushing against the fabric of his jeans.

She had been waiting for 10 days and had amassed a dry spell so long that Zhang Yang would need to summon the rain from the high heavens to quench her thirst for him.

Without waiting any longer, Zhang Yang unzipped his jeans and introduced the hidden dragon to the crouching tiger. Yu Li gazed at Zhang Yang with unfocused eyes.

Neither of them could wait no longer. Zhang Yang pulled her undergarment aside and Yu Li swallowed the dragon whole.

The echoes of their delightful moans were only limited to inside her office, following close with the start of their journey to pleasure town.

Chapter 554: The Pirate's Treasure Map

They say, that being a firefighter takes a real man to the test of his limits. Only with a steel mind and a strong body could they last against the fiery flames.

Zhang Yang sat in a spare chair in Yu Li's office, tired and panting like a mad dog. His first crush had the face that read fatigue, but she still had some energy left to her. There were sparkles on her face that made her even more attractive than before.

Sigh...both of them were the same breed of human, so why was he the only one panting for air?

Zhang Yang was so tired that he could barely lift his legs, yet Yu Li was still radiating with beauty!

"Hah. Why are you so tired?" asked Yu Li after she came back to her sense after being in trance. She got up to her feet and gently patted Zhang Yang little dragon. "Did you have a little too much nectar?"

"Hehehe!" Zhang Yang pulled Yu Li into his embrace and made her sit on his lap. "You should stay with me!"

Yu Li eyes widened at his proposal. Her breath started to speed up as she stared at Zhang Yang with disbelief. Her clothes were in a mess and her undergarments were somewhere in the corner of her office. As she caressed his face, she asked, "Are you being serious?" Tears started to leak out of her beautiful eyes.

Zhang Yang cocked his head. He felt it funny that Yu Li thought it was weird. Since he was already in a relationship with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, having one more mouth to feed would not be a problem. That aside, he had gotten his relationships straightened up. He would not pretend to like someone, make love to them, and disappear into the night. He will take in Yu Li as well to break even with her.

That being said, Yu Li was the first person that he had fallen for in this lifetime. Even though he was infatuated with her for four years, the

extinguished love for her had been rekindled. No wonder there was an old philosophy stating that feelings develop like tree rings, the longer they have been together, the stronger their relationship would be.

Even though Yu Li had always treated herself as Zhang Yang's lover and not a real girlfriend, Zhang Yang had never shared the same sentiment. She had never been able to find a stance which she could be proud of. However, if Zhang Yang allowed her to move in with him, it meant that he saw her as someone special.

Women always wanted a position or a status to be proud of. Men however, would shed blood for it.

A tree grows with nothing but it's bark to protect it, and asks for nothing more. Anyone can do anything that they like, as long as they wanted. That was why Zhang Yang would not go back on his words, even if he wanted to escape, for he might cause her to feel broken on the inside.

"Of course, I'm being serious." Zhang Yang pulled her closer and gently traced the side of her jaw. Both of them snickered with happiness and Zhang Yang laughed, "Come, give old daddy one more shot!"

"One more? Sure!" Yu Li's voice crack as she was already crying, but her cries turned into tears of joy. She punched Zhang Yang firm chest and gracefully slid her hands onto his crotch. "Let's go. One more!"

Zhang Yang was joking initially and did not know that Yu Li was being serious about putting Percy into the playpen again. If he had known earlier that Yu Li was still in the mood for more, he would rather take a beating to the face than ask for it!

As they were banging each other brains out, he thought of how to deal with Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. Perhaps, Han Ying Xue might verbally allow it, but she might sneak into his room in the middle of the night to snip his junk off and become a modern world's eunuch. As for Sun Xin Yu, she might just come up to him directly and blow his brains out with a shotgun.

Still, even if he had manages to make do with both women's anger, what about bedtime? The next time he does it, he might have to break 3 legs to

entertain them all! 2 females are more than enough to break his spirit, adding one more to that equation might straight up break his spine.

Sigh... Hugh Hefner please help me...

Zhang Yang sighed heavily at the thought of satisfying three ladies in one night. But, no matter what, he would never try to reject any one of them!

Tok Tok Tok.

Just after Zhang Yang unleashed his load into Yu Li, a gentle knock was heard on the door.

Zhang Yang cocked his head and asked Yu Li. "Didn't you say that you're free for the morning?"

"That's right. I don't have any classes or appointment until the evening. Perhaps its something important," said Yu Li as she got off the now limp dragon. She quickly slid back into her laced thongs and tidied herself up. She ignored her bra and buttoned up her blouse. Just then, she noticed love marks all over her breasts. Her nipples perked up again at the thought of him slobbering all over her.

Zhang Yang on the other hand only needed to pull his pants back up, zip it, and he was good to go. Perhaps, he might need to dry his slightly wet pants. Zhang Yang laughed at his own drenched pants while Yu Li started bashfully stared at it. It was her doing when she had squirted all over him when Zhang Yang delivered her to heaven.

"Look here! Haha! There's someone outside waiting for you! Imagine what would they think if they saw me like this! I might be the one getting into trouble! I mean, I peed myself! Haha!"

The two of them quickly tidied the place up and made sure that it does not look like they had just banged each other brains out. On the other hand, Yu Li's radiant complexion was still there, no matter how hard Yu Li tried to hide it. She then waltzed to the door and opened it. It was Zhao Bin, the young, taller little girl who was on the verge of becoming a beautiful maiden. Yu Li was able to recognize her via her clothing since all

triplets wore different sets of clothing.

"Miss Yu. We are about to host a barbeque party in the countryside to celebrate the starting of a new semester. Would you like to join us?" Zhao Bin. "Woah! Miss Yu! Your complexion is radiating with beauty! What kind of makeup did you use? Its effects are most invigorating!"

Zhang Yang chuckled quietly at her comment. "It's called being filled up with love my dear. Love brings life joy and that joy is being expressed out via her complexion!" said Zhang Yang to himself. Luckily, Yu Li office was huge enough to allow Zhang Yang to hide behind a cupboard, and out of the line of sight. After the two of them chatted for a little bit, Zhao Bin left and Zhang Yang came out to give Yu Li one last kiss before he went to the office in Silky Soft Holdings.

After he bade Yu Li goodbye, Zhang Yang left the campus and went to his office after a good shower. There, he joked around with the secretaries, locked the doors, and logged into 'God's Miracle' to continue the messenger quest.

As time passed, more and more players had entered the Chaos Realm. When Zhang Yang logged into the game, he noticed many players in Morning Town. Even the daily Teleportation fees had made Zhang Yang a rich man! Since China only had one territory in the Chaos Realm, Morning Town would be the only place to teleport to from the Ten Barren Sea to the Chaos Realm! It was a never-ending golden goose that would continue to lay many more golden eggs for Zhang Yang!

On the other hand, the Japan-Korea region players were having a tough time, since their own shortcut, Winst Castle had fallen into Zhang Yang's hands. Their own way to travel to the Chaos Realm was the Ten Barren Sea, which would take them close to 7 to 8 hours of swimming. The guild that was responsible to take back the territory, Sakura no Nagare Mae had become the clown of the year. Every day, countless of complaints would be thrown to them. Eventually, the guild members had to hide their name tag when they left town.

Before the war, Sakura no Nagare Mae was once the target for players of

Japan to achieve. The guild was ranked 3rd in the entire country and many of them would be willing to spend their life savings just to enter. After the war, the guild had plummeted in the rankings and had become a laughing stock. Amao Kuyoshi, the guild leader had lowered the requirement of joining the guild, day by day. However, after the week, there were many players leaving and no players entering. Disbandment would only be a matter of time for him.

...

Han Ying Xue had come to a roadblock concerning her Inheritance quest, where she was required to kill a Level 150 Ethereal tier boss. The team was gathered to defeat the boss was but overwhelmed by it. Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had both used their Transformation skills, however, their attack had been suppressed greatly due to the immense level gap. Furthermore, even though Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were present to heal Zhang Yang, even they could not keep up with the overpowering boss. Zhang Yang had even tried to spam {Shield Wall} with every chance that he got, but had still failed to defeat the boss. The team only lasted for 3 to 4 minutes before perishing.

The boss was, after all, an S class Inheritance quest boss. Unless they could use a [Forbidden Scroll] that could greatly reduce the boss' attack, they might have to sortie the entire guild. Even so, it would still be a challenge since the boss' AoE attack was too strong. Hence, Han Ying Xue had to put her quest on hold.

It could not be helped. The S class Inheritances are just too difficult to obtain. Since the Inheritance was strong, the quest set to be completed would be proportionally difficult. It was to give a chance for players to choose lower classed Inheritance instead.

Right then, the most common and popular class of Inheritances was the C class.

Even B class Inheritance quests required players to defeat an Ethereal tier boss. Ethereal tiered bosses were already tough, to begin with and due to the immense level gap between players and the quest, defeating it

required players to be at least 10 to 30 level above the level gap. On the contrary, C class Inheritances only required players to defeat a Level 130 Mythical boss. Since the requirement for players to enter the Chaos Realm was at Level 100, players had already gained enough power and level to defeat the boss with just a small party. That explained the popularity of a C class Inheritance.

On the other hand, C class Inheritances were the lowest of the classes that had the Transformation skill. It allowed players to still enjoy the heroic sensation of being able to take on 10 players or even 100 players at a time. Hence, many players that were too impatient to grind their ways to a higher level, and had focused on obtaining the C class Inheritance instead.

Even though the fragments were unable to be put up on the auction house, players could still sell them off via normal transactions. Right then, one piece of a C class Inheritance was worth roughly a million each. Zhang Yang was astonished at the fact that players were willing to burn a hole in their pockets just for the sake of an Inheritance Fragment.

Zhang Yang had been busy delivering messages and had neglected his grinding session. 10 days after he had procured the Milkmaid Inheritance Keepsake for Han Ying Xue, he had only managed to reach Level 106. Before that, he was at 80% of Level 105. In 10 days, he had only managed to accumulate 20% worth of experience points, which was truly slow.

Wei Yan Er had been taking the triplets to the villa's swimming pool on every alternate day of the week. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang had to become their instructor. There were many weird moments where he had accidentally touched places where he should not be touching, Zhao Bin would be gazing, not glaring, not looking, but gazing into Zhang Yang's eyes with her unfocused eyes.

Yu Li had chosen to postpone moving in with Zhang Yang. She was unable to leave her mother alone. Thus, she had professed to Zhang Yang that his intention alone was more than enough to please her heart for him. However still, she had called Zhang Yang many times in a week to help her ease her itch that only he could scratch.

...

After a few days, Zhang Yang had finally delivered the last magic orb letter. The delivery of the letters required no particular order. Zhang Yang only needed to look at the world map and plot his way into a complete circle to ease his journey. The last letter was addressed to an island called Diggea Island, located among the Islands of Camarro. The island had 3 of Marronda's lovers, which was the lowest number in a map. Hence, Zhang Yang had made it his last stop.

After crossing the ocean and several islands, Zhang Yang descended down to the island, outside a village. The village was located at the edge of the island. The people in the village were mostly fishermen, most of their houses had fishing nets being washed and hung up to dry. Zhang Yang asked around, delivered more letters and finally came to his final stop. The house in front of him was made of clay and there was a 40 year old, beautiful lady who was hanging her laundry outside. Her name was Waniaya, and she was the last NPC Zhang Yang had to deliver Marronda's letter to.

"Excuse me, Miss Waniaya!" cried Zhang Yang.

Waniaya stopped and turned around gracefully, saying, "How may I help you, a man from a distant land?"

Zhang Yang smiled and walked closer to her and passed her the magic orb letter. "Miss. I am here as a request from Marronda."

"Ah! That hooligan. He still remembers me?" Waniaya puffed angrily but there was a trace of jubilation in her eyes. After she held the orb in her hands, tears started to flow and tainted her fair face.

"sob, that idiot. He said that he wanted to travel across the world, to search for treasures and discover the mysteries of the land. sob. In the end, he that dream killed him!" Waniaya cried in sorrow.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Message for Waniaya. Obtained 10,000 Experience Points!'

Ah. What a drag. The experience points for running around, far and

wide was only 10,000 experience points? It was far lesser than the experience points gained from killing a single normal tier monster! The player that had completed the quest in Zhang Yang past life must have been a lunatic!

Zhang Yang consoled the woman and said, "Madam, let those who have passed be free. I'm sure that Marronda would not want to see you like this."

Since the NPC had not promptly given him any subsequent quests, Zhang Yang had to do something to trigger the quest. He had to, or else the 90 letters would be for naught!

Waniaya nodded and wiped away her tears with her sleeves. "Young warrior. I'm sure you've had to travel everywhere to deliver that idiot's letters?"

"Hm? Letters?" asked Zhang Yang. How did the woman know about his quest?

"That pervert idiot must have thought that I was daft. I know that I am not his only "true love", said Waniaya. "No matter. The man is dead now. Makes no sense for me to be angry now."

Zhang Yang laughed at her comment and said, "That's true. He is dead."

Waniaya eyes widened and she turned to Zhang Yang with a glint in her eyes. "Warrior. Do you know what I did for a living when I was younger?"

"Hmm? What is it?"

"When I was twenty years younger, I was a pirate. A captain at that. I had set sail to venture the ocean. Back then, there was none had not heard of the pirate "Poison Widow" and would be trembling with fear! Until one day, I met that idiot and made him my slave. In return, he had enslaved my soul. I had fallen in love with him and we had traveled the seas for a month. However, he had to leave me. Speaking of things like dreams and ambitions. It was painful for me, but I had to let him go."

Waniaya was mournful. Perhaps she had regretted the day she had agreed to let Marronda go. If she had not, perhaps, he would still be alive!

She paused for a while. "To have him back, I sneaked into the strongest pirate crew of my time, into the lair of Ditch, Leader of the Blackbeard Pirates and stole a map that led to his treasure chest. However, I was found. A search and kill order was placed on my head. Eventually, I had to bury the "Poison Widow" and hide here in this village. I wrote a letter to the man and told him about the treasure, hoping that one day he would come back to me to search the treasure together. However, I have been waiting for so long and never saw a trace of his shadow."

Treasure Map!? That is the one! It should be the link to trigger the Legendary Main story quest!

From out of nowhere, Waniaya took out a piece of goatskin paper parchment and said, "Now that he is dead, I have no reason to keep this with me. Warrior. I give this to you. However, I must tell you this. This map is only half of the complete map. Ditch has the other half. Back then, he only had this half of the map. Now, I heard news that he had just found the other half. Warrior. Ditch is currently still searching throughout the world for this other half. If you want to have the complete map, you must go to his lair and steal the other half from him!"

‘Ding! Waniaya has a quest for you: The Pirate’s Treasure Map. Will you accept it?’

Hell yeah! It was a possibility of triggering a Legendary Main Story quest!

Chapter 555: Baroque Island

[The Pirate's Treasure Map] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: You have acquired half of a treasure map. The other half of the map is in the hands of Ditch, Leader of the Blackbeard Pirates. Complete the map and you may have a chance of owning the treasure chest that belonged to the legendary Pirate King Roger. Be advised, Ditch is not an easy foe to deal with. Numerous residents of the Camarro Islands have heard the name and would advise you to leave. Consider your options carefully and react accordingly.

Completion: Obtained the Complete Pirate's Treasure Map 0/1

Zhang Yang frowned at the description of the quest log. They had left out a crucial detail for him to proceed on with the quest. The location of the pirate's lair. Luckily, Zhang Yang had not yet left Waniaya's side. He could simply ask her about it.

"The Blackbeard Pirates lair is located on the Baroque Island. I must warn you. The island is completely surrounded by reefs. You might lose your sheep if you're not too careful there." Waniaya started talking about the location of Ditch's lair. "That's the reason why the Blackbeard Pirates have always been able to conduct their activities without being caught or toppled over. There were many merchants who frequented the pass. Rich ones at that too, and they had hired mercenaries to take down the Blackbeard Pirates, but none had ever succeeded."

Zhang Yang nodded his head. Reefs or cliffs matters not to a player since they had flying mounts to fly directly to the island. Even if they have to rely on boats and ships, they could give it a try. If they fail and die, they could just revive on the spot and will probably appear directly on the island.

Zhang Yang bade farewell to Waniaya and summoned his Thunderhawk. The blue bird zoomed over the beautiful emerald sea and reached its destination. The island was more like a mainland. Zhang Yang was high in the sky and could not see an end to the island. The one thing

that did not seem to match the image of a pirate's island was the beautiful forest that grew wildly, on and on. It was more like a holiday beach where people can put down a long chair and enjoy basking in the sun.

Zhang Yang glanced at his world map to estimate his general location and was surprised to see that the island was not on the map. It was so odd that Zhang Yang could not help but to do a little experiment. He asked Han Ying Xue to put on the Lover's Charm and use it to teleport to him. Right then, Han Ying Xue was unable to see the location of the island where she was teleporting to. After Zhang Yang had Han Ying Xue join his party, the map was revealed to her.

"Like magic!" cried Han Ying Xue.

The island was probably made to only allow players who had accepted the quest to locate. That, or other random players who had no relations to the quest would be seeing the endless sea and not an island.

After having her fun, Han Ying Xue groaned and said that she wanted to grind a little more with Wei Yan Er. She teleported away, leaving Zhang Yang to do his own business. Zhang Yang flew up to the sky, towards the center of the island. Just as he flew over a sea of trees, a cloud of dark bits shot out from the ground, towards him. By the time he noticed that the dark bits were arrows, he had taken several shots and had the Thunderhawk perform a U-turn in the air. Only when he left the forest, did the attacks stop. Each of the arrows had dealt 1,000 damage to him. He found it weird, and circled around for another pass, but when he got closer, the arrow attacks came again.

Zhang Yang took a good look at the arrows and found that they were long, wooden needles that look like the gigantic spikes of a cactus. They were not real arrows. Zhang Yang then descended down on land tried to walk on foot. Weirdly enough, the arrows did not rain down on him.

Zhang Yang then came to realize that it was a system that prevented players from flying in the air. They would have to get to their targets by foot!

Even though each arrow could deal only 1,000 damage, he would still

receive a few million damage if he had stayed airborne for a few more seconds. Zhang Yang would still die within a few seconds, even if he had used the God of War Transformation. He had also tried using {Shield Wall} to block it, but still receive the same amount of damage. It seemed like the "arrows" had completely disregarded all form of defensive skills.

After walking for a few kilometers, Zhang Yang found the source of the projectiles. It came from the sky scrapping trees. Zhang Yang had not seen such species of floras before. They had many stick-like tendrils that were growing in large numbers on the branches. They were a few feet long and were only as thick as chopsticks. It was these trees that had attacked Zhang Yang from before. The problem came next when Zhang Yang found that there was not one, not two, but countless of those trees growing on the entire island itself, turning the entire island into a strictly, no-fly-zone.

If he has to walk on land, he will walk on land.

The no-fly-zone was not really absolute. It had a few blind spots. Zhang Yang could give minute instructions for the Thunderhawk to hover a few meters above the ground. Any higher than the trees themselves, and they would "throw" their chopsticks at him, turning him into a pincushion before Zhang Yang can even use {Shield Wall}.

Those sky-scraping trees were grown to be a form of natural aerial defense. Since the trees were so densely packed, there was no chance for him to dodge and roll in the air. If Zhang Yang chops the trees down first, he could remove them from sight and fly. However, who knows if the giant trees were capable of melee combat as well.

Zhang Yang went around the forest and circled the island by its borders, where the sea met the beach. He found a small, derelict harbor where a small boat was parked in. On the side, there was two unoccupied wooden hut.

There was a small walkway that led towards the forest behind the huts. Just as Zhang Yang had was about to walk down the pathway, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had roared in the chat, asking him to "pull" them over

to his side. Their reason? To help him in his quest.

Verbally, they did say that they were here to help. However, Zhang Yang easily saw through them. These two girls were hot-headed brats who easily get bored. Perhaps, Han Ying Xue had told Wei Yan Er about the magic island and the latter had coaxed her into coming to the island.

Then again, Zhang Yang could use the company of the girls. Especially when these two excelled at making some noise to kill off boredom. He then summoned them over to the island with the [Party Summon Order]. Zhang Yang explained the situation of the island and they rode their mounts and ran or flew close to ground level.

The forest was too quiet to be normal. The trio had traveled for a long time and did not find any monsters. There were no annoying bug noises, or the sound of tree leaves rustling against the wind. They only saw tall trees among more tall trees. The deafening silence had turned the forest extremely eerie.

"Sigh...When am I going to get my S class Inheritance?!" cried Han Ying Xue. She had obtained the Keepsake, done the quest, but was now stuck at a powerful boss. It was so near, yet so far away.

"Sister...are you mocking me?! I had it worse, okay?" Wei Yan Er puffed her cheek. "The S class Inheritance has been stolen by a noobie tank! Now, I can't even get hold of a A class Inheritance!"

Zhang Yang pretended not to hear, but he was listening to their conversation. It was best to keep quiet and lay low. If he agitates Wei Yan Er, the little girl would surely bug him till kingdom comes. If he continues acting dumb, she would forget all about it like a goldfish. However, Zhang Yang replied to Han Ying Xue's worries. "Don't think about taking on the boss before any one of us reaches Level 120. We should at least stand a chance now, if we have a few Forbidden Scrolls that could either reduce the boss' attack, or increase our party damage."

"Level 120?! That's like half a year from now! Ahhhh!" Han Ying Xue let out a frustrated cry, followed by a sulky face.

The trio continued on further, chatting along the way and found

themselves out of the thick greens and into a spacious flatland. The grass that they were stepping on was soft and short. There were herds of wild horses, and cows that were grazing on the grass peacefully. However, there will still a few of the "shooter" trees peppered sparsely around the field. They would still get shot if they were fly in the sky. Even though the trees were far less numerous now, the ammo capacity of each tree exceeded 10,000. A single tree would bring them all down.

The three moved on. Wei Yan Er even purposely rode closer to the herds, scaring them away, causing a mild stampede.

"RAWR!"

From the corner of the field, there was a pride of lionesses coming out of the edge of the forest and growling. All of them charged towards Zhang Yang and the two girls, ready to maul and devour.

[Baroque Lioness] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 122

HP: 1,220,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,364 – 10,064

Skill:

[Maul]: Mauls the target and grants a chance to tear away a part of target's Defense. Deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Suffocate]: Bites a target's throat, suffocating the target. Channeling required for 10 seconds. Immediate death will be inflicted once the channeling is completed. 50,000 damage or higher will enable the caster to be interrupted.

[Cry]: When in danger, the lioness will cry for help and summons a stronger Lion to rescue.

Note: Baroque Grassland's strongest beast. That is...if there were no earth worm dragons, two headed hydra hawks, and the berserking elephant.

Wei Yan Er had acquired a new weapon, she had been unsatisfied about the normal tier monsters who had fallen beneath her overpowered axe. Now that there was a pride of elite tier lionesses waiting for her, the little girl got fired up. She rushed over to the pride and swung her axe to deal over 18,000 damage with just a normal attack. Her Rage gauge was filled up instantly.

{Tornado Cleave}!

Shush! She twisted and turned in the air, swinging her axe around like a mini tornado and dealt more than 30,000 damage to all 10 lionesses.

The little girl got even more excited. She completely ignored Zhang Yang and swung her axe around as if it weighed as much as a wooden stick.

"RAWR!" All the lioness took only Wei Yan Er's damage and focused all their aggro on her. One by one, they did not wait for their turns and leaped at the little girl to maul her.

What a stupid little girl...

Zhang Yang sighed and zoomed towards her, leading his Thunderhawk which was flying only a few feet above the ground. With a quick flap of its wide blue wings, all 10 lionesses had taken 3,000 damage from an electric attack.

Since Zhang Yang was mounting the hawk, all of its attacks would generate aggro on Zhang Yang. However, the little girl attacks were too strong to begin with. Sending out a {Thunder blade} right after her {Tornado Cleave}, dealing a total of over 60,000 damage in the span of 4 seconds. Her aggro generation rate was too fast for even the Thunderhawk's {Violet Thunder Slayer} to keep up with.

Zhang Yang quickly cast {Sacrifice} on the little girl and took all the damage that the lionesses had dealt to her. Thanks to all that damage taken, he had no need to work on filling up his Rage gauge any further.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

'-52,446!'

‘-59,232!’

‘-105,422!’

‘-55,676!’

...

After one blast, came another blast as the sword’s echoing effect was triggered. All the lionesses took over 50,000 damage while some were critical strikes, dealing over 100,000 damage.

After the sword had stopped blasting about, all the lioness had diverted their attack towards Zhang Yang instead.

Shush Shush Shush!

Wei Yan Er was not done. The {Thunder Blade} skill lasts for 6 seconds in total. Each second, the skill would deal one attack equivalent to the weapon’s attack power. When {Thunder Blade} ended, were a few of the lioness turned back to the little girl.

Zhang Yang remained calm. When {Sacrifice} ended, Zhang Yang casually fired out his {Blast Wave} and stunned all the monsters that were targeting Wei Yan Er. The sword’s effect procced again and dealt a total of 6,000 damage.

Zhang Yang did not stop there. He had to keep track of the aggro on all the monsters to make sure that they were attacking him, and not the little girl. He then used all of his and the Thunderhawk’s AoE attack skills to take over the aggro.

"What a party pooper!" When Wei Yan Er had spun around enough, she noticed that she no longer retained any aggro on any of the monsters. She shrugged and sulked at Zhang Yang’s best efforts at trying to protect her.

Chapter 556: Lion's Pride

RAWR!

Three lionesses leaped at Zhang Yang and pinned him down to the ground. The one closer to his face opened its large mouth and sank its fangs into his throat. The pounce attack was fast and strong. Zhang Yang had been too busy dealing with the other lioness and had not paid attention to the ones behind his back.

Those three lionesses were not light, obviously. However, Zhang Yang had remained standing, carrying their weight.

It was the monster's certain kill skill. {Suffocate}!

If he does not do anything, the skill will deal the instant Death effect on after 10 seconds. It cannot be stopped with any Defense, or any amount of HP!

Zhang Yang grunted. He could feel the fangs in his throats digging its way further into his voice box. Zhang Yang bashed his shield against the lioness' head but the lioness would not budge. On the hand, Zhang Yang only made the lioness to sink its fangs deeper into his throat. The skill description had explained that only attacks dealing 50,000 damage or higher could interrupt the skill. Any supporting attacks would not be effective.

50,000 damage? Not a problem. One {Horizontal Sweep} could easily fix the problem. There was still 3 seconds to {Horizontal Sweep's} cooldown, hence, Zhang Yang ran around attacking other lionesses while waiting for the cooldown to finish. Although it was painful for Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could not help but to laugh at his funny appearance.

"Dummy! The lion's coat does suit you! You might even start a trend if you start wearing this in real life!"

"Noob tank! You're looking like you're actually having fun with the lionesses!" cried Wei Yan Er as she rolled on the floor, laughing.

"Witch...I'll smack your butt red when I'm done with this!" said Zhang

Yang. The cooldown was completed just in time and Zhang Yang activated the skill and dealt more than 50,000 to all three lionesses that were "hanging" onto Zhang Yang.

"Auughh!" The lionesses groaned and finally released Zhang Yang. Their golden fur was tainted with splashes of red.

"HMPH!" Zhang Yang grunted as four more lionesses leaped on him. Luckily, only four that could bite his throat at one time. If one more leaped at him, it might have to find some other place to sink its fangs in. There was a limit to how long and thick his neck was anyway.

"Hahahahahaha!" Wei Yan Er dropped to the floor and laughed again.

What a useless team mate!

Zhan Yang sighed. He had just used {Horizontal Sweep} and the cool down was 10 seconds. It was just the same as {Suffocate}'s channeling time.

Fortunately, even without {Horizontal Sweep}, he could still inflict a high damage attack. The little girl may be useless in this instance, but the Thunderhawk and Felice would not stand by and let their master die.

However, as per the rules of the game, his throat had been bitten, hence, he could not even speak. However, it did not matter, since he could mentally command the Thunderhawk to attack the lionesses. On the other hand, Battle Companions would have to listen to a master's verbal command to communicate. Since he could not speak, he could not command Felice to save him.

Unlike the little girl, Felice was more proactive. The 10 seconds of the lionesses' {Suffocate}, was enough for the both the Thunderhawk and Felice to deal more than 200,000 damage. Technically, it should have already breach the threshold of the required damage to break the channeling 4 times. However, their attacks were divided into multiple hits instead of one strong hit. Luckily, Zhang Yang was still able to land a few strong hits himself, killing them off before they could finish their certain kill skill channeling.

"Well, I'll say, this place is not suitable for solo grinding!" Han Ying Xue sighed.

It takes 50,000 damage in an instance, per monster to interrupt the channeling of {Suffocate}. Zhang Yang had the ability to deal that much damage to free himself from the grasp of death, due to this God of War Inheritance, and a Mythical tier battle mount and Battle Companion. On the other hand, the lionesses always came in packs. If a random team of 5 players had encountered a pride of 10 lionesses, there would be 90% chance that they would die. After all, to pull all 10 elite monsters together, and tank powerful barrages of attacks, would require tanks of a certain caliber. Sadly, there were too few of them in the game at the moment.

If the tank is not sufficiently equipped, it would take at least 3 or 4 tanks in a group to tank the lionesses.

Now that they had one problem solved, the battle with the remaining lionesses were much easier. Zhang Yang started to use supporting attacks to smack down the incoming lionesses before they could sink their fangs into his throat. All normal attacks were nullified and only skills struck him, which barely did any damage.

Han Ying Xue was rather relaxed during the fight. She felt that Zhang Yang had finally started to treat her like a real wife and would not want her to be in too much trouble.

The fight continued and when one of the lionesses was damaged till it was left with only 20% HP, it ran a distance away from them and let out a deafening cry that reached the end of the field.

As if it was made of lightning, two, much more imposing, larger lions had dashed out from the forest to rescue their harem. The lions stood in front of the females and growled fiercely at Zhang Yang and the two ladies.

[Baroque Lion King] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 3,750,000

Defense: 2,120

Melee Attack: 9,257 – 13,257

Skills:

[Maul]: Mauls the target and grants a chance to tear away at a target's Defense. Deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Suffocate]: Bites a target's throat, suffocating the target. Channeling required for 10 seconds. Immediate death will be inflicted once the channeling is completed. 100,000 damage or higher interrupt the caster.

Note: Every pride of lions would have 1 to 3 male lions. Even though the Lion King will not join in the hunt, it has the power to protect those to seek to harm the pride.

The male lions were huge; measuring close to 2 meters tall and 6 to 7 meters long. The wild, golden manes caught the wind that blew across the field, waving about.

Wei Yan Er's eyes widened with a certain glint and cried, "Woah! I've always wanted to rear one of them!"

"Little girl, you can't even take care of yourself, yet you wish to take care of a pet? I bet that it will die after one night with you!" Zhang Yang snickered.

"Hmph! Stupid! Idiot! Wei Yan Er stomped her feet, just like a little girl. If only she was 13 or 15 years old, her behavior would be acceptable. But she was 18! 18 years old! A university student at that!

"ahem Am I the only one here that is normal?" Han Ying Xue shouted at the top of her lungs. Zhang Yang was rather shocked at her sudden cry and turned to her. "That's two bosses right there! God! How are we going to beat them where they can just summon out random bosses?!"

Zhang Yang eyes widened and he laughed. "You freaked me out...Don't worry about the boss. It's just a Yellow-Gold boss. Treat it as an elite tier monster!"

"Easier said than done!" Han Ying Xue pouted her lips in protest.

Zhang Yang had reason to say that the Yellow-Gold boss were almost the same as the elite lionesses. The skills they had were about the same, while the Yellow-Gold boss had stronger attacks, higher {Maul} skill damage, and 100,000 damage to interrupt the boss' {Suffocate}.

100,000 damage may be high, but it was proportionate to the Level 100 map Yellow-Gold boss prowess. Any Yellow-Gold boss above Level 60 maps was just a decorative ornament. As for a normal, average team, it may prove to be a challenge, but for Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er, and Han Ying Xue, the bosses were here to give free equipment!

Zhang Yang sudden had a thought. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had never heard of the name Baroque Islands. Technically, if there were random Yellow-Gold boss appearing so frequency, this place would be a treasure cove! There had to be more prides of lionesses in the flatlands. Every pride would have a few Yellow-Gold boss Lion Kings guarding the pride! More prides, more Lion Kings. More Lion Kings, more equipment!

If Yellow-God bosses were spawning like regular monsters, Violet-Platinum bosses should not be too far ahead! Zhang Yang had not yet proven the theory to be true, but if it was the case, the island would be a treasure island! Even though the island was huge, and the number of bosses fitting to complement its vastness, why had no guild ever occupied the island in his previous life? Such a lucrative money-making island should have been famous!

No matter how hard he thought about it, he had never heard of the island name itself!

So be it, once the quest is completed, the truth should be revealed.

"RAAWRRR!" the lions roared and charged at Zhang Yang. It bared its fangs out at Zhang Yang, ready to mangle him from limb to limb. Each of its fangs were so long and sharp that they looked like Sun Xin Yu's daggers.

Zhang Yang planted his feet deep into the ground and forcefully knocked the lions away with his shield, via supporting attacks. His original Strength value could rival that of a Level 125 Yellow-Gold boss. Paired with

Wei Yan Er's Strength Aura, it granted a bonus to Zhang Yang Strength, giving Zhang Yang the ability to bash the beasts away.

"Rawr!" The lions got back to their feet and leaped towards Zhang Yang again. The other remaining lionesses joined in together and attacked Zhang Yang as a pride.

Shush!

Zhang Yang casted {Horizontal Sweep} and dealt a wave of 50,000 damage to every monster there. The sword procced its skill and blasted another wave of {Horizontal Sweep}, almost sending all the lionesses to their last 20% HP.

The little girl cried in excitement and activated her skill {Indiscriminate} and {Tornado Cleave} after. With a swift blow, all monsters that had 20% HP or lower were instantly struck by Wei Yan Er's attack, taking more than 60,000 damage critical hits.

Wan Yan Er sighed disgruntledly and said, "Sigh. My critical hit is still weaker than the noobie tank's {Horizontal Sweep}! How sad!"

Zhang Yang shook his head. "Little girl, {Horizontal Sweep} is a 200% weapon attack skill. A Level 10 {Tornado Cleave} will only deliver 170% weapon attack. Then again, I have 50% extra damage boost from the God of War Inheritance. That is why my {Horizontal Sweep} is much stronger than your {Tornado Cleave}."

"Hmph. I see. In that case, I will get an A class Inheritance for myself, and get a strong skill that would deal AoE by 200% or 300% weapon attack! Haha! I will dominate the field then! Noobie tank! You've had your time, it's my turn!" said Wei Yan Er proudly.

"Haha. It's best for you to keep that in your heart. Aren't you scared of me slacking off? If you hit too hard, I won't be able to hold on to their aggro."

"Haha! You may slack, but my cousin sister has told me. If you dare to bully me, she will turn you into a dried up corpse!"

Zhang Yang frowned. Did that b*tch just teach her little cousin sister

how to threaten him!?

Chapter 557: Mountain Rat

Two Yellow-Gold tier joined the pride but it did not help to ensure their survivability.

After some time, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue completely forgot about their Battle Companions. The little girl had genuinely forgotten about her Battle Companion, while Han Ying Xue was annoyed at the big pervert's dirty talk. That being said, Messick's attack was rather low, and since Zhang Yang was here to tank the monsters, she had no reason to summon Messick out to the field. She would only be giving a chance for the big pervert to make a move on her.

After 4 minutes, the party of three surrounded the dead bodies of the lion and lionesses. It's a shame that beast monsters do not have the tendency of dropping coins. Instead, they had dropped many ETC type items such as their fangs, mane, leather, and other useless items that would end up being sold to an NPC merchant. Still, the money obtained from selling them would be equivalent to that of gold drops.

However, ETC items were not equal to their value in gold. They take up inventory space, and that alone makes them far less desirable. If players were to grind for a long period of time, they might have to eventually pass up on them!

Zhang Yang did not have the slightest interest in picking up items that were worth several silver coins. On the other hand, the two money mongers were furious since there was no "real" money dropping from the lions. Luckily, the two Yellow-Gold bosses were kind enough to not drop any Gray-Silver equipment but 5 Yellow-Gold tier equipment. Selling them for 500 gold coins apiece should not be much problem.

Even though Zhang Yang had surmised that the island could be a potential treasure cove, the money generation rate was still lower than the Little Merchandize Shop and the Mining Cave. Still, free stuff was up for grabs, why would he not take it then!

The party continued to move forwards and came across another pride of

lionesses after just 10 minutes. This time, the pride of lionesses had only summoned one boss. Zhang Yang suddenly thought up of a funny joke and he messaged Han Ying Xue privately. "Hey, the male lion is quite a stud, don't you think? He, alone was able to "handle" so many female lionesses and is still standing strong! I wish I could be like him!"

Han Ying Xue playfully glared at him. "Perhaps you think that two of us are not enough for you. Are you planning to expand your den? Hmph. Those Zhao triplets could work. I'd say, if you just point your fingers at them, they would surely be following you like they're the mice and you're the Pied Piper!"

Zhang Yang merely laughed, but he knew that deep down, the woman was furious. It would be best for him to leave it as a casual joke. He also knew that the woman was jealous of them, since they had been coming to the pool on every alternate day and Zhang Yang would go on serving as their swimming instructor.

The three of them moved up the field, killed many more lions and finally came out of the flatlands. A few hundred meters away were waves of hills and mountains. The mountains were not too high. At most, the tallest one should be around 200 meters tall. The mountains, however, were filled with the "shooter trees", which covered them from base to peak. It was impossible for Zhang Yang and the two ladies to use their flying mounts.

As they walked on, Wei Yan Er turned and look behind. She laughed, "I think we did something good for the horsies and cows. They can now safely graze the field!"

"Heh. Elite monsters will respawn in 5 hours time. I think, we may have only provided them with a short period of peace before they run around again!" said Zhang Yang as a matter-of-factly.

"Nyeh. You don't know how to be romantic, noobie tank!" said Wei Yan Er as she forcefully smacked his back.

The three of them moved up to the first hill. After just the first few steps, they came across an entity that had a grayish appearance. It was surprisingly as large as a fully grown German Shepard. It had a full coat of

short fur, four short limbs, and a long tail that was as thick as its head. From a distance, the critter looked like it was a long black snake.

The critter moved so swiftly that Zhang Yang only managed to catch its shadow. Before he could turn his head and track its movements, Han Ying Xue screamed as the critter had already stabbed her fair legs with its long white teeth.

"F*ck you!" Zhang Yang lunged at the critter and bashed the critter with his shield. He stood to protect Han Ying Xue and said, "F*ck off, you! Don't you know, only I can use my mouth at that region!" Zhang Yang turned back and grinned.

Han Ying Xue was panting and slapped Zhang Yang's shoulder. "Hmph! Pervert!" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes.

"Chi Chi!" The critter squeaked and came back at them. Now, everyone had a clear glimpse of it.

[Baloque Giant Rat] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 105

HP: 1,050,000

Defense: 1,100

Melee Attack: 6,881 – 7,841

Skills:

[Fang Bite]: Bites a target's legs and deals 150% melee physical attack. Target will be immobilized for 10 seconds.

Note: The Baloque Giant Rats are famous for their long sharp teeth. There's nothing that they can't chew off!"

"RAAAA!!!" Han Ying Xue screamed and jumped into Zhang Yang's embrace. Zhang Yang frantically corrected his balance, laughing.

Wei Yan Er was surprisingly calm. Intrigued, the little girl glared at the giant rat and asked, "Hmph...such a big rat. It's quite rare to see one that big. Hey, if we rear one at home, would any cat dare to eat it?"

"Chi!" the giant rat squeaked. Like a giant boar, the rat sprinted towards Zhang Yang and bared its long sharp teeth, preparing to bite Zhang Yang.

From the looks of it, the rat was aiming at his crotch. Zhang Yang frowned at the thought of having his magnum getting bitten. It was different compared when Han Ying Xue did it back then. That was a love bite, a pleasant pain, as if he was between both ecstasy and pain. However, if the rat bites it, he might have to prepare giving up on "Happy Father's Day."

Zhang Yang immediately pulled his leg back and soccer kicked the rat. The poor rodent was sent flying off into the sky.

"Stupid perverted rat! Prepare to meet your maker!" Zhang Yang ran to the area where the rat was projected to fall, and slashed the rat in midair, like a baseball.

Han Ying Xue laughed and teased, "Hey dummy. The rat could be a female! Didn't you want to make a harem? Think about it. You can take the rat home, and teach her how to swim. Perhaps, one day, the rat will bear you many children. Didn't you watch "Journey to the West"? There are so many beautiful Rat Spirits around!"

Zhang Yang was at a loss for words.

After Zhang Yang had attacked the rat, Wei Yan Er leaped in and joined the attack. With the combined forces of two battle mounts and two Battle Companions, the rat was killed quickly. The party moved on and encountered more similar rats. Whenever one appeared, Han Ying Xue will never fail to scream and jump into Zhang Yang's arms.

After crossing the mountains with little to no danger, they reached the peak. The top of the mountain had been flattened. So flat that it seemed like someone or something had chopped the top triangular head of the mountain off. The flat area of the peak was wide and large, and unmistakably white, like a huge stage.

At an edge of the flat peak, there was a rat that was as big as an elephant. Unlike its smaller brethren, this colossus rat was rather grand and beautiful. It's fur was silky smooth and had a little glint of violet

platinum luster. It was not as disgusting like its smaller brethren, but far more ferocious and grand.

[Baloque Giant Rat King] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 109

HP: 10,900,000

Defense: 2,820

Melee Attack: 13,410 – 17,410

Skills:

[Fang Bite]: Bites a target's legs and deals 150% melee physical attack. Target will be immobilized for 10 seconds.

[Hide]: The Giant Rat King will dig underground and hide underground when its HP reached 10%. Will restore HP. Channeling: 1 second. Can be interrupted.

Note: The King of all of Baloque Giant Rats. Its sharp teeth can bite through even the toughest of steel.

Zhang Yang had a happy glint in his eyes and he cried out happily. "Looks like we've hit the jackpot!"

"What are you talking about? It's just a Violet-Platinum boss. It's not a Mythical tier anyway." Wei Yan Er asked.

"Hehehe. Stupid little girl." Zhang Yang pat and rubbed Wei Yan Er head. "Pay attention to the boss' level. It's only Level 109! That means, the equipment it drops will be Level 100. The kind of which we can immediately equip! Don't keep thinking about Mythical bosses. How many Mythical boss can you find nowadays?"

For Zhang Yang and those around his level, Level 100 Mythical tier equipment were far more precious compared to Level 110, or Level 120 Violet-Platinum equipment. Level 100 equipment could be equipped right away and the rest would have to wait until they reach the appropriate level requirement. By the time they reach Level 110, or Level 120, they would already be targeting Mythical tier equipment! Hence, the significant

factor about the giant rat was not its level, but the level of the equipment that it would drop!

"Huh." Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and nodded. "So, what you are saying is that a Mythical tier boss would drop equipment. However, unless the equipment they drop has a special effect that lowers the equipment Level requirement, it would make no sense to fight the boss then. Correct?"

"Haha! That's a way to put it. Since when has the little girl become so smart?"

Wei Yan Er scoffed and spotted something. "Hey! Hey! Hey! Look! Look!" The little girl pointed at something beside of the boss.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue focused their sight at where Wei Yan Er was pointing at and saw a tiny, palm size rat that scampering around. The little rat had a violet-platinum fur coat. From that distance, anyone could mistake it for a violet colored ferret. It was undoubtedly cute.

[Juvenile Gold Biter Rat] (Violet-Platinum Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

"That's a Violet-Platinum mount!" all of them cried out at the same time. Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Hohoho. It's a good mount right there. That's probably the strongest mount so far. Sadly, it's just a regular mount and not a flying mount!"

Han Ying Xue shook her head and said, "I think its strong. Most of our battles are still occurring on the ground. There aren't many aerial battles nowadays. Besides, a flying mount is only good for traveling!"

Technically, almost 99% of all battles took place on the ground. In PvE fights, there would hardly be any difference for flying mount or regular mounts. The importance of a mount was its attack power. During PvP however, a flying mount user would have the aerial dominance over the other user. If they are about to be killed, they could jump on their flying mount to buy some time. In which, in a similar situation, a player with no

flying mount would have to face their defeat.

Zhang Yang laughed and pushed Han Ying Xue lightly. "Go and catch it, then!"

Han Ying Xue squeaked a little and shook her head rapidly. No matter how small or cute the little critter was, Han Ying Xue could never accept it. For her, it would always be an annoying, disgusting rat! That being said, Han Ying Xue was a healer. She had no need to be at the front lines to attack. Having this battle mount would not do any good for her.

However, if the little critter is of a magic attack type, Han Ying Xue might still be able to attack from the rear. However, based on the stats of the giant rat king, the little rat there would probably be a physical attack type.

Wei Yan Er already had a Violet-Platinum Flying Mount, the White Tiger. Zhang Yang had the Mythical tier Thunderhawk. Both of them had no need for the mount. Zhang Yang then called Hundred Shots and the rest of his friends over, "Hey guys, I have here, a Violet-Platinum regular mount. Anyone interested in taking it?"

"WOAH! Boss, I want! I'm interested!"

"Little Yang. Let me have it! Endless, you f*ck off!"

"I'm interested. I want to upgrade my mount!"

Everyone flooded up the party channel and contested for it. Even though there were many mounts in the Chaos Realm, they were mostly Gray-Silver, and Yellow-Gold. Violet-Platinum tier mounts were still a rare hunt.

As the party chat were heading nowhere, Zhang Yang decided to make things easier for them. "The mount is suitable for melee attack types. Hunters should not join in, since it would effect your own character's balance. When you're still fighting, the pet dies, and vice-versa. Let the melee classes have it."

Since Hunters have [Beast Taming] skill, they could use their battle mount as a pet to attack, just like Zhang Yang and his Thunderhawk. On the other hand, it made Hunter's lose their advantage of gaining the HP boost. It was fairly important to have high HP when facing a strong boss

with powerful AoE skills. Besides that, separating both Hunter and their pets will split the target in two, increasing the load for the healers.

Secondly, if a battle mount is used as a pet to attack, the hunter's original pet will be ignored, causing the Hunter to lose its primary attack power.

Hence, Hunters should only aim for ranged attack type battle mounts. In that case, the hunter could mount his battle pet and in the same time, use the class-specific pet to attack. That way, it would fully utilize the Hunter's special class advantage.

Fatty Han obediently listened to Zhang Yang and withdrew from the raffle draw. Hundred Shots was in luck. Just a few days back, he had caught himself a Violet-Platinum Windy Wolf mount. It was a magic attack type and could cast wind blades that strike from a distance. Its attack power was on par with Wei Yan Er's Winged Tiger. Hence, Hundred Shots withdrew from the raffle draw as well.

Eventually, only Endless Starlight, Lost Dream, and Mountain Mover rolled for the mount. The winner was Mountain Mover, but Zhang Yang did not immediately summon him over. After all, Zhang Yang would have to defeat the boss first before capturing the little critter.

"Let's go!" Zhang Yang did not need to make any preparations. It was just a Violet-Platinum boss. If he still had [Berserker's Heal] he would not even need come up with any game plan. The boss had only two skills. The first was an attacking type and the second was a healing skill that could be interrupted! It's nothing but a walk in the park.

"CHI!" The Rat King squeaked so loudly that Zhang Yang's ear drums rang long after.

Despite being as large as an elephant, the rat's movement speed was as fast as lightning. With a quick scurry, the rat had rushed towards Zhang Yang! He did not even have any spare second to activate {Charge}!

Both the rat and the Guardian started duking it out. The little girl waited for a bit and entered the battle with her axe raised high in the air to strike down on the rat from the sky.

Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk produced an explosive DPS that went over 40,000. The little girl had equipped her new axe and had upgraded her DPS limit to over 60,000! Just 3 minutes into the battle, the party had hacked away the Rat King's HP below 10%. With a quick cast of {Crash Magic}, the Rat King's digging animation was interrupted. Zhang Yang delivered a barrage of attacks and finished the poor King off.

Chapter 558: The 12 Chinese Zodiacs

The loot that was dropped by the boss was worth looking forward to. There should be some Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment to pick up. These equipment should be able to provide his party members some quick, short-termed power-ups, as they would be able to instantly equip these equipment without having to wait.

Wei Yan Er was as impatient as ever, as were her hands. Even before the corpse of the boss had touched the ground, she had already picked up every single piece of loot, including the coins of course, from the ground. This little brat then grinned like a money grubber.

The boss dropped a total of 4 equipment. One was a pair of pale-greenish leather pants, another was a pair of gray-silver cloth armor gloves, the other one was a long bow made from animal bones, and the last one was an earthly yellow heavy armor helmet.

Right before Wei Yan Er was about to display the equipment, one piece after another, Zhang Yang, however, said, "Little brat, just ignore those Yellow-Gold equipment already and stop wasting time!"

"Tsk!" Wei Yan Er pursed her lips as she wanted to start by posing the links to the Yellow-Gold equipment just to tantalize Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Since that Zhang Yang had said it out loud to skip the Yellow-Gold equipment, it would have been pointless for her to do that anymore.

So, the leather pants and the cloth armor gloves were shoved straight into Zhang Yang's inventory without being inspected by any of them at all. What a tragic fate these two equipment had.

The three of them began to turn their attention towards the long bow.

[Regrudge, Ancient Skeletal Bow] (Violet-Platinum, Bow) (1)

Ranged Attack: 1,582 - 2,182

Attack Interval: 3.6 seconds

DPS: 672

Equip: Adds 7% damage.

Equip: Adds 0.7% Critical Rate

Equip: When you hit a target, there is a chance of increasing your Attack Speed by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effect cannot stack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Note: According to legend, Regrudge was a strange beast in the ancient time. It was powerful and always thirsty for blood. The beast was then slain by a brave Beastman warrior. A Dwarf craftsman extracted the toughest part, its spine, from the corpse and made it into a long bow.

Zhang Yang kept the bow in his inventory. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han would have to settle it among themselves on who gets to keep it. Then, he turned his attention towards the final piece of equipment on the ground, the dirt-yellowish helmet.

[Cobalt Helmet] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +706

Strength: +202

Agility: +100

Equip: Increases your Maximum HP by 1,400 points.

Equip: Decreases received damage by 196 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

While Mythical Tier equipment added both Offense and Defense, this Violet-Platinum Tier equipment only added Defensive attributes. After all, there would always be a difference between equipment of two different Tiers. So one must not be asking for too much from them!

Zhang Yang took the helmet and shoved it into his inventory, not

bothering to be gentle with it. As the equipment had not been identified yet, its attributes were still no match to the attributes of his [Titan Helmet].

After picking up every single piece of the loot from the ground, Zhang Yang summoned Mountain Mover over to his position. The strategist was already holding his [Sealing Leash] up the moment he arrived. Then, he began the process of capturing the [Mount] for himself.

However, his luck was not that good. It took him nine attempts to capture the baby mouse. He had thought that he was about to fail in capturing that [Mount], which caused him to panic for a little back there.

Mountain Mover knew his own capability. He knew that the elite battle style of this small party did not suit his personal battle style at all. So he went back to Morning Town after he acquired the [Mount]. Then he went off to start training his new [Mount].

The three of them proceeded forward. They went up and down various mountains and hills of various heights.

Zhang Yang and the ladies had been encountering countless mice-like monsters in the previous mountain area. Meanwhile, this new mountain area they just set foot on were full of buffaloes in almost every corner of the place. The buffaloes were dark green in color. Each of them was equipped with only one Skill called {Eyes of the Death God}. Although this name sounded like the name of the Skill {Glare of the Death God}, it could only cause 10,000 Shadow Damage. It was far from the {Glare of the Death God}.

As they killed their way through the mountain area, they finally stumbled across a wild Buffalo King. There was a small calf right beside the Buffalo King. More importantly, it was a Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount].

The three of them exchanged happy, shocked looks.

Although it was really easy to capture [Mount] after entering the Chaos Realm, most of the [Mounts] were limited to the Tier of Yellow-Gold, Gray-Silver or even to Tiers as low as Green-Copper and Black-Steel. But, it was really a shock for them to come across so many Violet-Platinum

Tier [Mounts] in a single day. How amazing is that?

Zhang Yang had come up with a deduction, based on the remaining mountains ahead of them. He said, "There are still 10 more mountains to climb. The first mountain was a mountain littered with mice. The second mountain was crawling with buffaloes. Are you seeing what I'm seeing here? 12 mountains, the first two being mice and buffaloes. Isn't this based on the 12 Chinese Zodiacs? Are we going to see tigers, rabbits, dragons, and snakes, and other members of the 12 zodiacs? I can't help but feel that each mountain would provide us with a Violet-Platinum [Mount], along with their guardian Violet-Platinum Bosses!"

If everything that Zhang Yang said was true, then they had really struck jackpot this time!

Having a possibility to acquire at least 12 pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment and 12 Violet-Platinum Tier {Pet Mounts] was undoubtedly going to be a great 'power-up' to his guild.

"That's great! I'm planning to catch myself a dragon pet! I will be wicked awesome!" Wei Yan Er began to drift in her own imagination.

The only way to find out if Zhang Yang's deduction struck true was to proceed forward.

It only took a few minutes for Zhang Yang and the ladies to take down a Violet-Platinum Tier boss. Unfortunately, the boss did not drop any Heavy Armor this time. It only dropped a piece of Violet-Platinum Tier Cloth Armor that went to Han Ying Xue. The equipment was a pair of boots. Meanwhile, the Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount] on this mountain was captured and brought away by Lost Dream.

The small party went on to the next mountain. The third mountain was full of ferocious tigers. It was as Zhang Yang suspected! There was a Tiger King and a Tiger King Cub right at the top of the mountain! That Tiger King Cub was the [Mount].

Meanwhile, the fourth mountain was full of Mashimaro-like creatures...

However, the 'dragon' mountain that Wei Yan Er had been looking

forward to so earnestly turned out to be a major disappointment. There were no signs of ancient dragons, the kind found in Ancient Chinese folklore and mythology, nor any Western-styled winged lizards. Instead, the mountain was full of Raptors!

Those were dinosaurs! They were not to be trifled with!

Wei Yan Er fell into a bottomless pit of despair. She lumbered about like a zombie for a period of time before she returned to her place among the living. When light returned to her eyes however, the little brat unleashed hellfire and fury upon every Raptor that was in her field of vision.

The next mountain was the snake mountain. As expected, the whole mountain was full of snakes. The following mountains contained horses, goats, monkey, chickens, dog, and pigs.

Zhang Yang had assigned all 10 members of his party to a Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount]. Other core players like Galileo and 10-party-Killer of Lone Desert Smoke also got to step up in the mount upgrade spree. They got to switch their [Mounts] out for better ones!

The only unfortunate thing about this was that all of the [Mounts] they had acquired were all ground-types. None of them were capable of flying in the air. Even though the chickens had wings, they were nevertheless categorized as ground-type [Mounts]. They could only flap their wings about.

Well, one should not be too greedy after being handed such wonderful 'freebies'. By acquiring these Violet-Platinum Tier [Mounts], the overall strength of Lone Desert Smoke had been exponentially increased! Although these [Mounts] were flightless....[Flying Mounts] carried a whole new meaning to the term 'rare'. This was completely acceptable. It would not have made sense if the game handed over 10 powerful [Flying Mounts] to the gang out of the blue.

Furthermore, this was just a Level 100 beginner's map. Most of the Chaos Realm still remained unexplored. So players would still stand a chance of stumbling across some [Flying Mounts] in the future.

Before Zhang Yan and gang had even gotten to the Treasure, they had

already encountered so many other surprises. They were not even at the pirate's lair yet. At this point, the party did not know what to expect from the treasure chest and were painfully curious.

Daffodil Daydream did not leave the scene after acquiring her Flatline 'Chicken'. This 'Chickobo' turned out to be a Magic-type [Mount]. The two of them made a great pair.

As [Pet Mounts] had been extremely rare in the previous stages of the game, players would simply capture any [Mount] they come across, without taking a look at the Tier or Attributes. Having a [Mount] of any kind was already sufficient for players to earn the bragging rights. In a crowded city or Territory, these players would already be the center of attraction. With a slightly flashier Mount, they would even draw the attention of the opposite sex and start new love stories.

Due to the exceeding rarity of [Mounts] back then, Han Ying Xue was already fortunate enough to own a Melee-Type [Red Gold Crab].

Truth to be told, although the Tier of [Red Gold Crab] was not that low, Han Ying Xue rarely sent the crab into battles. The main reason that Han Ying Xue always stayed behind at a safe distance, healing the other party members. So, what good would the Melee-type [Red Gold Crab] do to her, when it won't be approaching any monsters? The only 'function' it did was to raise Han Ying Xue's Maximum HP after she was mounted on it.

Under those kinds of circumstances, many players actually had [Mounts] that were not 'compatible' with their styles in combat. Because of the exceeding rarity of [Mounts] back in the day, the players had no choice but to take whatever they were given.

Han Ying Xue had also switched her ground-type [Mount] to a 'horse'. It was a Magic-type [Mount] named [Flaming Scarlet Tempest].

Currently, the horse was still young and small. Han Ying Xue simply could not see the potential of its growth just yet. But they could get some clues on that aspect by looking at the attack pattern of the boss they had encountered when procuring it.

The two ladies had summoned their new [Mounts] for them to get

experience points. After they cleared out all 12 mountains of the '12 Zodiacs', Han Ying Xue's [Flaming Scarlet Tempest] had reached the level of 78. Meanwhile, Daffodil Daydream's [Chickobo] had also reached the level of 55. Both [Mounts] were capable of 'mounting' already, and they had also acquired some extra Skills while they were leveling up.

Regrettably, for Zhang Yang, his luck was not that good. Upon killing the 12 bosses, they had picked up a total of 17 Violet-Platinum equipment. However, only the first boss dropped a helmet that he could really use. Although there were also 3 other Heavy Armor equipment, the attributes on one of them was more inclined to Offense. So, Wei Yan Er would a more suitable owner. The remaining two Heavy Armor equipment were more onto Defense, however, the attributes were more concentrated on Intelligence. In that case, it would be more suitable for Endless Starlight to have them.

Since Endless Starlight was the main Tanker in clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, Zhang Yang decided to give the two 'defensive' equipment to him. His intention was to increase the efficiency of his guild in clearing the dungeon.

For that, Endless Starlight was touched to the point that he had tears streaming down his face. He had even expressed that he would give his body to Zhang Yang first if he ever loses his mind and changed his sex. That really gave Zhang Yang the creeps as goosebumps began to spread across his skin!

After walking through the mountains of the '12 Zodiacs', Zhang Yang and the three ladies had arrived at a lake. This lake was a great, inland lake. However, it wasn't so vast that Zhang Yang and the ladies could not see the other end of it. They could also see very clearly that there was a fortress built right in the middle of the lake!

This fortress had probably occupied about 10% of the surface area of the entire lake. The fortress was built with woods of great buoyancy. There were iron lock hooks holding the woods all together tightly. It went up and down with the waves.

"Haha! This place looks more like a water-bed!" Wei Yan Er blinked her eyes repeatedly, "Sis, I want a water-bed!"

Zhang Yang suddenly had an idea and he said, "Alright! Let's have one water-bed in each of the rooms back home!"

Well, he was thinking that he might get really 'pumped' if he rams Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu on the water-bed, bouncing them all up and down.

Han Ying Xue glanced at Zhang Yang. Her face was telling Zhang Yang that she too, was looking forward to it. She seemed to have read Zhang Yang's mind correctly.

"Huh? Why would you suddenly be so generous?" Wei Yan Er was suspecting Zhang Yang instead. She thought that Zhang Yang was just messing around with her.

"How could you suspect my sincerity! I've always been generous!" Zhang Yang looked far into the distance as he began to look for a way in, then he said, "This is most probably the lair of that Blackbeard Ditch. He is indeed worthy to be called a pirate. He even built his lair on water!"

"So, how are we going over to the fortress?"

"We shall fly over! It's an entire lake beneath us, so there shouldn't be any more of those monstrous trees we saw before!"

TL Note: No translation error there for that severely underwhelming Level 100 bow. 672 DPS? Fufufu...

Chapter 559: The Pirate's Old Lair

The four of them summoned out their own [Mounts]. However, right before they could fly into the air, they were greeted with countless of arrows from the direction of the fortress. One brief moment later, the four of them were left with hundreds of holes on them. Their HP bars were reducing so rapidly that they were terrified to see it with their own eyes!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} and his [Heart of the Death knight] at the same time as he started to panic, then he quickly said, "Retreat!"

Shoof shoof shoof!

Arrow continued to rain upon them endlessly, one wave after another. There were so many arrows flying through the sky at the same time that they looked like a swam of locusts that blotted out the sun!

Under the supporting protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}, the damage that the 3 ladies received had been reduced by 10%. However, they were still losing their HP at an insanely fast rate. Fortunately for them, they were already ambushed the moment they left the ground. So, it did not take long for them to return back on ground.

It was actually unnecessary for them to get back on the ground. As long as they do not fly too high up in the sky, they would not be shot at. The situation was actually similar to the trees.

"So, those trees grow underwater too?" Wei Yan Er was amazed.

"There should be."

"How can there be such 'trees' under the water?" Wei Yan Er was very eager to dig deeper into the logical explanation on this topic.

Zhang Yang frowned. That was because they were in a game after all. It wouldn't be weird, even if there was a bunch of cabbages growing nicely in the clouds! After deciding to ignore the little brat, Zhang Yang summoned out his [Mythical Turtle]. It had been quite a while since he last brought the Turtle out for fresh air. Water area environments was where the

Mythical Turtle could unleash it's full potential --- most of the [Flying Mounts] were not able to go under water.

Han Ying Xue summoned her [Red Gold Crab] as well. Each of the [Mounts] were assigned to carry two persons as they began to 'sail' across the lake over to the fortress.

It was natural for Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue to be on the same 'boat,' as they were siblings after all. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang took Daffodil Daydream on his 'ride'. The little lady felt safe and sound as she was leaned on the back of Zhang Yang when they were on the way over to the fortress. She blushed all the way through.

Considering that all [Mounts] can only provide their owners the ability to breath underwater, The [Red Gold Crab] and the [Mythical Turtle] had to travel above the surface of the water. That way, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream wouldn't drown.

The four of them were able to see everything that was happening beneath them, as the water of the lake was crystal clear.

As expected, there were countless 'Spiky Treants' all over the lake floor. Their branches were as bristly as ever, and they seemed completely at home in the water.

"I didn't know there is such trees that is amphibious!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes a little as she spoke, "Let's plant some of these trees in our swimming pool!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then, you better watch out! Those spikes will surely poke right through your butt!"

"You jerk..." Wei Yan Er muttered in low voice.

Although the lake was vast, the entire journey across the lake to the fortress was just about 4 to 5 kilometers. It only took a few minutes for them to approach the fortress as [Mythical Turtle] and [Red Gold Crab] were both agile swimmers.

Maybe the pirates had been overconfident about their elusiveness. The base was barely fortified. After looking around carefully, Zhang Yang

could only see a few pirates with dark clothing and wretched faces. They were sitting casually at the high tower. It seemed that they were supposed to watch out for any sign of intruders outside of their fortress.

However, players and monsters would only engage into battles based on the mechanism of the aggro system that the system had provided all along. So, as long as players could stay out of the aggro range of the monsters, they could avoid the battles with the monsters. Therefore, the four of them were basically clueless of their presence as they snuck around the guards stationed on the outpost towers. It was considered as a successful stealthy infiltration.

"The leader of these pirates must be living in the largest house of all. That means..." Zhang Yang hopped over onto the 'deck' and took a look around the surroundings. Then he pointed at a very large wooden house that was not far from them. "That should be the one."

"Let's get moving!" Wei Yan Er was excited as she began to whirl her axe around. Other than those weird and unexplained phenomena, this little brat would only be interested in coins and battles. Since she could fulfill her own lust for battle and also earn some coins along the way, Wei Yan Er would always be very happy slaying monsters to level up.

"Who goes there?" one of the pirates who looked like an Orc suddenly popped out from a wooden house. Well, he was an Orc indeed! Although his mouth had uttered an inquiry, his hands were not as courteous. He swung his black giant axe mercilessly across at Zhang Yang without any signs of warning.

Ding!

The giant axe was deflected away as Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the attack. He could not help but to wonder, why did the monster target him at first sight, even when he was not the closest to it? Was it because his face was so ugly that the monster could not stand the sight of it, and had to attack him to vent out the discomfort?

"It doesn't matter what you do, you're as good as dead!" The Orc revealed a row of filthy yellowish teeth as he smiled. Only god knows how long has

it been since he last brushed his teeth! That foul stench from his mouth could really 'knock' people out!

The monster pointed at Zhang Yang before he diverted his attention over to the 3 ladies. His eyes were rolling around randomly and he said, "What a shame. I have no interest in you ugly people. But you girls should be worth at least a couple hundred coins!"

Ugly?

"You're the one who is ugly! You ugly horse... Orc!" Han Ying Xue and the other two ladies were enraged by his words. They pointed their fingers at the Orc in rage. Their rage were fueled well enough for them to begin the battle.

[Blackbeard's Crew] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Attack: 7,623 - 9,623

Skills:

[A Nibble of Death]: Heavily strikes a target, causing 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Pirate's Madness]: A pirate is filled with the spirit to take on an adventure! A pirate would be willing to burn up his own life span in exchange for incredible power! Upon activation of this Skill, the pirate would lose 10,000 HP in every second. However, all targets within the range of 3-meter radius from the pirate will receive the same amount of Shadow Damage. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: They are the crews of Blackbeard Ditch after all. They fear no death. Every single one of their hands are tainted with blood!

"Just die! Human!" the Orc pirate let out an intimidating shout. Then, he began to raise his large axe up high in the air before he swung it straight at Zhang Yang.

Bam!

Though Zhang Yang's {Block} was still under the cooldown period, that did not stop him from using his 'Supporting Attacks'. With a heavy slam right in the pirate's face, Zhang Yang knocked the Orc off a few steps back. The two fangs that jutted out from his lips broke off from the impact.

"You filthy human! How dare you!" The Orc screamed in rage as his entire body turned bloody red. He was losing 10,000 HP in every passing second. However, every time when he lost his HP, a bright red light would radiate out about 3-meter radius across the surroundings.

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were instantly hit by the radiance as both of them received damage. Zhang Yang received an amount of '-5,114' damage while Wei Yan Er received an amount of '-9,822' damage. The little brat did not receive a full amount of damage from the radiance because she had one Mythical Tier equipment that could absorb damage.

That was the {Pirate's Madness}!

Indeed, that pirate looked like he was tormented in madness. So this was a powerful Skill that would cause destruction to both sides at the cost of sacrificing one's own HP. Furthermore, the HP bar of the monster was long enough for it to use this Skill. A player would not last as long.

The fire power of the small party was already powerful enough as it was. They became even more powerful after Daafodil Daydream joined in. They put down the pirate with ease. The pirate had dropped a few coins and a few [Inscribed Cloths]. Other than that, the dead pirate also dropped a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment.

"Stinky pirate! You must be blind! I'm a pretty lady! Not some ugly human!" Wei Yan Er still wasn't willing to let it go as she continued to mutter at the dead pirate's body. She still wanted to correct the pirate, even though he was dead. She wanted to prove she was a pretty lady who could stun people with her looks.

"Stop wasting your life and keep moving!" Han Ying Xue kicked the little brat in the butt and ran off.

Although the fortress seemed a poorly attended, there were monsters lurking around the houses. They would ambush the players from concealed, hidden corners. Therefore, Zhang Yang and the ladies had no choice but to endure the annoyance of being ambushed by pirate after pirate.

Some wooden houses only had one pirate lurking in them. Well, some had two, or even three filthy pirates in the houses, ready to ambush any players who came by the houses.

The weird part about this was that if the house only had one pirate in it, the pirate would look neat in terms of clothing when he came out to block the players. However, if there were at least 2 to 3 pirates in the house, they would look messy, as if they just got out of their bed. Some of them did not even had clothes on them! They were stark naked, and their butt folds were as visible as day! Fortunately, the game had placed mosaic boxes over the filthy 'vital' parts of the pirates.

Wei Yan Er could not understand this, so she asked, "Do these pirates love to sleep in the buff? They're just like cousin sis!"

Han Ying Xue was instantly enraged at the little brat for mentioning it out, so she humped, "How could you compare these filthy monsters with me, a pretty and elegant lady?"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he spoke suggestively, "Well, we interrupted them at the wrong time. We've committed a crime for intruding upon their 'fun' time!"

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream spat at him for making such a lame joke. Meanwhile, the little brat blinked with her large eyes as adorably as ever in her cluelessness.

After clearing out the path and proceeding forward for another one and a half hour, the four of them finally arrived at the largest wooden house in the entire lair of the pirates. The place really looked like a house that belonged to someone important. There were already 4 elite Tier guards standing at the front of the entrance.

Zhang Yang could already unleash the potential of his 'Supporting

Attacks,' because his equipment had reach the standard. There as no reason at all to be afraid of the 4 elite Tier monsters. So the four of them charged straight up to engage. Zhang Yang's [Sword of Devourer] managed to cause about 30,000 damage to one of the monsters right in front of him. His rage bar went through the roof right after that strike. Without any hesitation, he immediately activated his {Horizontal Sweep}.

Four yellow numerical values popped up on top of the 4 elite Tier monsters. Unfortunately, there were too few targets in range. So, the special effect of the replicated Skill on the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was not triggered.

"Kill him!" the four pirates were struck by surprise. So they were enraged as they began to shout out loud. They swung their swords and axes towards Zhang Yang the moment they detected Zhang Yang's presence.

"In your dreams!" Zhang Yang stomped the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}. Electricity flickered across the 4 pirates as they received Movement Speed reduction effects. Zhang Yang became their primary target as he began to lead them around like a herd of cows.

Wei Yan Er swung her axe towards the monsters as she launched her swift and fierce assaults. After she had switched her old axe with a new one, her damage output had increased drastically. It was almost twice of her previous damage output! After all, weapons brought the most change on players' Attack power.

The 4 pirates were taken out, one after another, neat and quick. Zhang Yang and the ladies gained quite a substantial amount of experience points from killing these monsters. The two [Mounts] that had not yet reached Level 100 were leveling up continuously. One of them had reached level 89 while the other had reached Level 75.

The four of them entered the house. All they saw before them was a grand, ornately furnished living room. The place gave people the feeling that the room was vast and spacious.

The ladies were dismounted automatically at they were in an indoor environment. Only Thunderhawk was still flapping its wings about idly.

The wind the wings stirred up had blown Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream's skirts up, revealing their panties!

"The pet is as perverted as it's owner! You perverted hawk!" Han Ying Xue muttered.

Daffodil Daydream was holding her skirt down with both of her hands as she was blushing in shame.

What the hell! How did that become Zhang Yang's fault, then? That was just wrong!

They had to proceed without the 3 [Mounts] that they had brought along. There were no signs of any monsters in the house. Zhang Yang and the ladies began to split up so that they could cover more ground in searching the house for the other half of the Treasure Map.

However, Zhang Yang was the only one who had accepted the related quest. So, only he would be able to recognize the unique appearance of the other half of the Treasure Map. The other half of the Treasure Map would only look like a normal piece of parchment in the eyes of Han Ying Xue and the other two ladies. They did not accept the quest, after all. However, Zhang Yang would see it as a piece of Treasure Map that glowed dimly.

That was the system's setting. Quest items would all radiate in a dim light so to serve as a beacon so that players would be able to spot them more easily. If players could still miss out on them, then there wouldn't be anything left to say.

After just a brief moment, Zhang Yang found the other half of the Treasure Map in a sealed drawer.

However, this was a S-rank quest. So the question was, will they be able to obtain the other half of the Treasure Map so easily?

Chapter 560: Snowman Snow

However, the two pieces of the Treasure Map were right inside Zhang Yang's inventory.

He took out the two pieces of Treasure Map and pieced them together. They produced a sudden, blinding flash of light, seamlessly forming into one complete Treasure Map without any indication that it was once in pieces.

"Hahaha!" suddenly, the gang heard a long laugh. A shadow appeared out of nowhere and forcefully relieved Zhang Yang of his Treasure Map. Zhang Yang was struck by a fist. He received a blow so great that his HP dropped all the way down to 1!

The shadow vanished and reappeared at a spot 10 meters away from Zhang Yang. It took the form of a tall, imposing hulk of a man. This man was clad in a thick set of clothing. His jacket had been left undone, leaving his large belly exposed. His thickset, beefy face and broad cheeks were half-covered by a thick, long beard. He looked a little like the legendary warrior, Zhang Fei.

That man now held the Treasure Map in his hands!

Looking at the name and title above his head, this was the leader of the pirates, Blackbeard Ditch!

What the hell! This quest was not as simple as expected! The boss had come over to snatch the Treasure Map away from Zhang Yang himself!

"I have waited for more than 10 years, and a new thief finally presents himself!" Ditch was laughing out loud, "I knew it. Since you stole the first half of the Treasure Map, you will surely be back for the other half! So I had been expecting you!"

[Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion] (Summon)

Level: 130

This was actually not the real boss, it was just an illusion of Ditch.

"You thieves! I shall allow you pathetic fools to live a little longer. After I take the ancient Treasure for myself, I shall have my own sweet time with you all!" the illusion of Ditch strode out of the house, calling over his shoulder. Then, the illusion went flying into the sky with a shoof.

"Argh! That fat bastard!" Wei Yan Er was so mad that she began to shout. She was a money grubber, after all. Of course, she would be very fond of treasures and treasure coves. Of course, she would burst into rage knowing that the only lead to her favorite treasures had been taken by the boss, right in front of her eyes!

'Ding! The objective for your quest: The Pirate's Treasure Map has changed! You must reclaim the Treasure Map back from Blackbeard Ditch! Stop him from getting the ancient Treasure and becoming an unstoppable dark force!'

Zhang Yang suddenly received a system notification.

Initially, the quest had required him to steal the map, and now, the quest wanted him to snatch the Treasure Map from the hands of Blackbeard Ditch himself!

Zhang Yang quickly brought up his quest list to take a good look at the quest description. The description had changed slightly. The description of the quest now clearly stated that there was a secret passage in a corner somewhere nearby them. Blackbeard Ditch had been going through the secret passage in and out, to resupply.

Without further ado, Zhang Yang hustled the ladies to move their *sses immediately. They followed the description of the quest and arrived at the west side of the lake. After climbing over some huge rocks, they found themselves standing at where a river branched itself out into two smaller rivers.

Apparently, the rocks were just an illusion. Magic had formed them, capable of deceiving the untrained eye.

A huge pirate ship was parked in the smaller branch of the river. The moment Zhang Yang and the 3 ladies arrived, the pirate ship began to drift slowly along the current. The two water-type [Mounts] had to swim

with all their might just to catch up, where they snuck onboard from the back.

"Intruders!" one elite Tier pirate spotted the four of them sneaking about and immediately attacked. The pirate swung his cutlass about while charging at them. The pirates are a merciless folk. They did not discriminate by gender. The first target this pirate went for was Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang quickly ran between the two of them. He raised his shield and deflected the blow.

After a flurry of attacks, the pirate buckled beneath the heavy firepower of Zhang Yang's small party. The huge amount of experience points gained gave the two new [Mounts] a level each.

Cutting their way through the deck, the four of them eventually found a cabin door. They broke it down and entered the cabin.

However, the interior of the cabin was considered as an indoor environment. So, other than Thunderhawk, all [Mounts] were automatically banished into their respective owners' inventory.

"Hehe, I think I smell the scent of a woman!"

"Me too! I smelled it too!"

Four greenish fireballs hovered around the dark corner of the cabin. There were two skeletal pirates oogling at the 3 ladies. The ignited green flames within their eye sockets flickering with excitement. One of them began to speak, "Ah, I knew it, women! I smell leaking blood, the type of bleeding that only women are capable of!"

Leaking? Woman?

Zhang Yang instantly understood. He could not help but frown. These 'hardcore' game designers sometimes go way overboard.

"You dirty swines!" Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream had also understood what the skeletal pirate talked about. Women would bleed for a few days, every month. The only one who did not understand the

meaning of that was Wei Yan Er. Without wasting any time or breath, she charged up to the two skeletal pirates and swung her axe at them.

Zhang Yang quickly followed, charging over, while swinging his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the two skeletal pirates. After a flurry of attacks, he finally managed to grab hold of their aggro.

"These Spectral monsters really do have sensitive noses! They should just go and play the role of blood-sucking zombies!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Han Ying Xue owned her body as much as he did, of course, Zhang Yang was aware of how it was 'inconvenient' for her at the moment. It was most probably the best time for him to replenish his 'ammunition' in these few days. On the other hand, he would be deprived of her body for the same period of time. He had mixed feelings about the whole situation.

"Fresh blood! Delicious fresh blood!" the two Spectral monsters were screaming as if they were confirming what Zhang Yang had just said. Their screams were accompanied by the clinks and clanks of blade meeting blade. They fought back and forth, up and down the cabin, stirring up a small hurricane within the room. The entire cabin was shaking violently, barely containing the turbulent battle.

After a brief moment, the two Spectral monsters fell to the blades of Zhang Yang's small party. The four of them continued to proceed forward. There were all sorts of pirates who appeared soon after to block their way. The pirate ship was like a hodgepodge of pirates from different races.

About 2 hours later, they finally cleared their path and reached the end of the first floor. It was as they suspected. There was a boss standing guard the entrance to the second floor of the deck.

This boss was a tall, middle-aged man, with a small trilby that seemed to have worn out its use. The man was sloppy and unkempt, not giving a mind about his appearance.

Zhang Yang and the ladies would have thought that this man was a fisherman if they hadn't seen the name and title stated on top of the man's head.

[‘Snowman’ Snow] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 17,739 - 21,739 (Determined as Physical Attack, but causes Frost Damage)

Skills:

[Blizzard Storm]: Summons a storm of blizzard to attack the enemies. Causes 10,000 Frost Damage to all enemies within the effective range of the Skill. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Snowman Transformation]: Transforms into a snowman. Increases 50% Frost Damage dealt. Immune to all Frost Damage and Frost Attacks. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received. However, increases Fire Damage received by an additional 100%.

Note: One of the three generals under Blackbeard Ditch. The user of ‘Snowy Snow’ Devil Fruit. Has the power to control snow and frost.

After reading the description of the Skill {Snowman Transformation}, Zhang Yang could not help but to widen his eyes a little. Then he said, "This boss might drop a Fragment of the [Snowman Inheritance]."

[Inheritance] was the most sought out thing in the entire game, thanks to Zhang Yang’s ‘demonstration’ of it.

Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream instantly perked up, as neither had activated any linking quest for any [Inheritances]. The little brat quickly asked, "What Class?"

"Class B."

"Humph! I don’t want to even consider a low Class [Inheritance]!" Wei Yan Er immediately sighed discontentedly as she shook her head again and again.

"I’m a Pyromancer, after all. I’m afraid that this [Snowman Inheritance]

is not suitable for me, at all." Daffodil Daydream had a more down-to-earth character. Unlike the little brat, she would consider things based on a more practical point of view before making any decisions.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "This [Snowman Inheritance] caters more for Physical-types. When you activate the {Inheritance Transformation} for this [Inheritance], you will basically have the similar ability that the boss has when it activates its {Snowman Transformation}. But, you will have more HP and a higher Attack power after you 'transform'. Honestly speaking, it would really suitable for little brat!"

"No! Don't even think about telling me what to get for my [Inheritance]!" Wei Yan Er shook her head as if it was one of those handheld whirling drums(1), "I'm not such a cheapskate! I won't go for a mere Class B [Inheritance] just because I can't get a Class S [Inheritance]!"

"Our little brat is such an aspiring youngster. Such lofty ideals and dreams! Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed

Wei Yan Er was happy for a brief instant. However, the next things that Zhang Yang brought up immediately angered her again, "Unfortunately, she just can't seem to get the chest she wants, and she also can't seem to get the butt she wants either! Would any man really have an eye for her?"

The little brat was unpredictable. She actually said, "If no one wants me, then I will rely on you!"

Tsk! Is that her way of hitting on someone?!

"Alright, alright, let's go to the boss then!" Han Ying Xue quickly said. Naturally, she wouldn't want the little brat to throw herself onto Zhang Yang. She could still argue or fight with Sun Xin Yu till the bitter end. However, to fight for a man's favor with this little brat wasn't something she was prepared for. Prevention would be better than cure.

"Just like how we always do it, heal me accordingly and we should be fine. There's not much to discuss about. Also, remember to dodge the {Blizzard Storm}. Let's do this!" Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] as he charged at the boss.

"Are you the thieves that Captain was talking about?" Snow swung his fist at Zhang Yang's blade. His fist was beginning to freeze up with frost as he was at it. It was like an armor coating over his entire fist.

Boom!

‘-25399!’

‘-12822!’

The moment the fist clashed with the blade, sparks flew. Zhang Yang and the boss received damage at the same instant. However, the damage that Zhang Yang caused upon the boss was two times higher than the boss's damage value.

"Not bad, I can't believe that you're actually this capable!" Snow retracted his fist. His hand was covered with frosty air. Apparently, he was shocked, "It seems that I should fight you more seriously!"

Chiang chiang chiang!

The boss started to cover his body up with snow. In no time at all, he looked like a walking snowman.

{Snowman Transformation}!

Well, that's really unfair! This was supposed to be the ultimate Skill of the boss. How could the boss use it at such an early stage of the boss battle? Zhang Yang had no idea how long this Skill would last. If this Skill could last for 2 hours, as long as a player's {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, then it would become impossible to defeat the boss!

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er swiftly casted 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss. However, the boss had already obtained a 50% reduction on all Physical Attacks thanks to his {Snowman Transformation}. Even Zhang Yang got far stronger all of a sudden, his normal attacks would only cause 12,000 to 15,000 damage.

When one door shuts, another opens. It was fortunate for Daffodil Daydream to tag along after she had acquired her [Mount]. She was a Pyromancer, after all. Knowing that she could double her damage dealt on

the boss, Daffodil Daydream cast her fire balls over and over again in excitement. Each of her attacks could cause about 28,000 damage!

Daffodil Daydream was not the only one enjoying her double damage. Felice was also experiencing the same thing!

Initially, Felice could already cause up to 20,000 damage with her {Fire Missile}. After her Attack was doubled, she could deal about 40,000 damage. So basically, her DPS had already exceeded 20,000!

Zhang Yang could usually rely on his damage output in getting hold of the aggro of his target. However, he now had to use his {Provoke}-like Skills to prevent the boss from going after Felice instead.

"Ice age!" the boss suddenly let out a thunderous roar. The next moment, the entire cabin had been transformed into a land of ice and snow. The floor was suddenly buried in snow. Countless, sharp, spikes of ice started raining down the entire area. The hail of icicles was intense and unrelenting! One could only escape this only if they knew how to walk through a rain shower without getting hit by a drop.

"Retreat! Retreat at once!" Zhang Yang said in a hurry.

While the boss was under his {Snowman Transformation}, there was a 50% increase on the Critical Rate of every single Frost Skill that he had. So, this {Blizzard Storm} could basically cause about 15,000 damage every time it hits a target. Even though the equipment on the ladies were already considered to be very powerful, they would still have to drop by the Graveyard if they ever get hit by 4 to 5 of those spikes.

Although Zhang Yang had shouted to the ladies to retreat, he did not move a muscle at all. The {Blizzard Storm} would be channeled with the boss as the central anchor. If Zhang Yang retreats with the ladies, the boss would follow, along with the {Blizzard Storm}. That could possibly wipe the party out.

Fortunately this {Blizzard Storm} was only going to last for 10 seconds. After 10 seconds, the phenomenon faded without a trace. Han Ying Xue and the two other ladies rejoined the battle. Meanwhile, Felice had stayed and fought against the boss. She took the full brunt of the impact.

However, thanks to her 5,000 Magic Defense, she only lost about 100,000 HP. That would still leave her with half of her HP bar untouched.

As the battle continued, although Snow was behaving like an authentic Mythical Tier boss while he was in his {Snowman Transformation} form, he could not make up for his disadvantage over his total amount of HP. About 3 minutes later, the boss let out a miserable scream and collapsed onto the ground. The party earned massive amount of experience points and quite the number of loot.

The four of them did not feel excited at all. It was really no big deal for them. Furthermore, the boss was only a Level 130 boss. The equipment that the boss dropped were basically Level 130 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, without the Special that reduces 20 levels from the Requirements. The equipment were like tasteless, bland chicken to them, and they did not even spare anything a glance. Zhang Yang shoved everything into his inventory.

However, the boss had also gave them a pleasant surprise --- a fragment of the [Snowman Inheritance]!

This was one of the Class B [Inheritances]. There were a total of 6 pieces of fragments for this [Inheritance]. In order to activate the linking quest for the [Snowman Inheritance], one would have to gather all 6 pieces of the fragments to form a complete piece. Since that the little brat was not interested with it at all, Zhang Yang had placed the fragment in his inventory. He could just give it out to any of his core members in the guild as a reward for achieving something for the guild.

Any player that had the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill on them would be the most valuable asset to every guild. It did not matter if it was in Zhang Yang's previous life or this current life. Even if players only had Class C [Inheritance] on them, they could still easily get recruited into a guild by simply posting 'Class C [Inheritance] Player in need of a guild'. Some top guilds would even politely request for such players to join them. The richer guilds would even pay the players with fixed salaries!

When a thing is rare, it becomes precious. After all, a player with an

{Inheritance Transformation} were so rare and valuable to a guild!

This piece of [Snowman Inheritance] fragment could not be bought or found in any forms of shops. So Zhang Yang decided to keep it for the elite players as a token of incentive. He wanted to make sure that the person who would be receiving this should be a member that had a strong sense of belonging in the guild. Furthermore, that player should also be quite skillful. After all, Zhang Yang would be giving out a Class B [Inheritance]. He just wanted to make sure he had given it to the correct member. Even in his previous life, a guild could laugh heartily if they could really gather 10 players with a Class B [Inheritance]!

"Haih! If this is a Class A [Inheritance], perhaps I would have forced myself to take it!" Wei Yan Er shrugged as she spoke.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Actually, you still have a chance to get a Class S [Inheritance]!"

"Really? How?"

"Delete your account, restart the game as a Spellcaster, a Knight, a Hunter, or a Thief!"

"..."

Chapter 561: Crimson Flame of the 'Blazing Flame'

After taking out 'Snowman' Snow, the four of them arrived at the second floor of the cabin.

As the special note of the first boss had stated that Snow was just one of the three generals serving under Blackbeard Ditch, Zhang Yang and the ladies knew that they would still have to defeat two more general bosses before they could actually face Blackbeard Ditch himself!

The monsters on the second floor of the cabin were also similar to the monsters on the first floor of the deck. Other than the pirates of different races and species, there was also a new type of monster: Pirate's Parrot.

[Pirate's Parrot] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Attack: 7,381 - 11,381

Skills:

[Dive]: Charges down from the sky, causing 150% Physical Damage to the target. Causes the target to fall. The target will be able to get back to their feet after 1 second.

[Parrot's Infection]: Infects the target with a virus, reduces target's damage dealt by 10%. There is a 10% rate of causing the target to have a fever once every 3 seconds. The target will descend into a chaotic state and cannot attack. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Note: Parrots are the symbol of pirates, how can a pirate ship be a real pirate ship without a parrot on it?

The irritating thing about these parrots was that they would come in a pack of 3 or 4. Because they were small, they could attack one target at the

same time. Furthermore, these parrots certainly belong to the Agility-Type classification. Their movements were extremely agile. Zhang Yang could not keep up with their speed, and was not even able to use his Supporting Attacks.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and the ladies were powerful enough to take it all. Zhang Yang could still endure the assaults from 3 to 4 monsters at the same time. Zhang Yang and the ladies proceeded forward without much of a problem, although the parrots greatly hindered them. It took them more than 3 hours to arrive at the end of the floor. Finally, they came face to face with the second boss, Crimson Flame!

Surprisingly, this pirate looked like well-dressed, muscular, middle-age man with a high collar around his neck. He looked more like a cocky general instead of an atrocious pirate!

[Crimson Flame of the 'Blazing Flame'] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Attack: 17,739 - 21,739 (Determined as Physical Attack, but cause Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Parrot Summoning]: According to rumors, before Crimson Flame was a pirate, he used to be a parrot seller. He has an amazing ability of communicating with parrots. Summons parrots based on the number of players on his aggro list.

[Roaring Flame Transformation]: Transforms into 'Blazing Flame'. Increases 20% Fire Damage dealt. Immune to all Fire Damage and Status Restriction Skills received. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received. However, increases Frost Damage received by an additional 100%.

[Blazing Drift]: When Crimson Flame enters its {Blazing Flame Transformation} form, his body will be flowing with blazing lava. All

enemies that touch him will receive 10,000 Fire Damage.

Note: One of the three generals under Blackbeard Ditch. The user of 'Blazing Flame' Devil Fruit. Has the power to control fire.

Zhang Yang was surprised and happy at the same time, after taking note of the {Roaring Flame Transformation} Skill on the boss description. He knew that there was a very high chance that the boss would drop a fragment of the [Roaring Flame Inheritance] upon defeat!

Did they come across King Solomon's mine or something?

Back in the mountains of '12 Zodiacs', it was still reasonable to get few pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment that were dropped by earlier bosses like the Tiger King. It was simply because there were 12 bosses back there. However, they also got a few pieces of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and one Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount] for every boss they slew! That alone was already more than enough for them to come to the island!

Now, this boss was even more generous. He even dropped a fragment for a Class B [Inheritance].

A Class B [Inheritance]! Any guild would like to have their hands on [Inheritances] of such Class. They had actually stumbled across 2 Class B [Inheritance] in a row, like freebies! What kind of luck would that be?

Well, this was definitely a treasure trove!

Even if the quest actually ends here, Zhang Yang was already contented. After all, he and his little party of ladies had already gained more than enough for the trip.

If the system is so generous, as if the girl that you adored for N years suddenly accepted your 'mating call', would you still pretend to be a decent guy? Of course you would just take the shot!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and charged towards the boss.

"Snow... that imbecile..." the boss humphed coldly as blazing flames started igniting across his entire body. It seemed that he was already transformed into his {Roaring Flame Transformation} form. Just like the

first contact with the previous boss Snow, Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] while Crimson Flame swung his fist. It seemed that this boss was as brave as the last boss, Snow. They were both powerful warriors who did not fear meeting their enemies head-on. Things were a little different for Crimson Flame. Instead of being covered with frost, the blazing flames on his body instantly formed a barrier that looked like a forcefield around his fist.

Boom!

The fist and the blade clashed with each other. Zhang Yang was sent a few steps back by the impact of that punch. Crimson Flame charged in and threw another flaming fist at Zhang Yang, not even giving him a moment to catch his breath!

The great battle started off. Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were already in their positions.

However, Daffodil Daydream felt out of place. She was able to cause double damage to Snow in the previous boss battle. But now, she could only stare at the boss, throwing ineffective fire attacks at Crimson Flame. All she could do in order to help was to summon out her Battle Companion to provide some support on their damage output. Meanwhile, she could only stand at a corner and make sure that she was still alive by the end of the battle.

On the other hand, although all Fire Attacks that Felice had on her were ineffective against the boss, the little lady could still transform into her humanoid form. She could still attack the boss effectively with her normal attacks. Although her damage output had been heavily affected, it was way better than Daffodil Daydream who could not do a single damage to the boss.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The boiling lava on the body of the boss was dripping all over the floor, forming a sea of lava beneath his legs. Those flames that sprouted off the magma could cause 10,000 Nature Damage to whoever who touches them. Although 10,000 damage wasn't that much, receiving 10,000

damage every second could still be terrifying. Even Zhang Yang wouldn't dare to stand still and let the flames burn him for nothing. So he moved around agilely while kiting the boss along.

Fortunately, the lava required some time before it could turn the ground into a sea of blazing flames that started scorching players. Zhang Yang only needed to move to another spot once every 10 seconds. However, they could not afford to prolong the battle. Eventually, the entire floor available to them would be up in flames.

Daffodil Daydream was basically 'riding shotgun' for this battle while Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Felice were all sharing the wheel to poor effect. Nothing was being carried out efficiently in the battle. The only one that could still promise a full effect from its Basic Attack was Thunderhawk.

A brief moment later, the boss suddenly let out a roar, "My little birdies, come and meet your guests!"

Shoof! Four elite Tier Parrots puffed out of thin air. They dive bombed Han Ying Xue.

It could not be helped. After all, the monsters had been spawned right in the middle of the battle, without any sign of warning. Without a Tanker and other DPS players blocking off the parrots, their first target would naturally be the Healer, Han Ying Xue.

However, the words of the boss struck the four of them with the impact of a thunderbolt. So great was the impact that foam started leaking out of their mouths. They almost fell to the ground in epileptic fits, almost drowning in their own foam, right before the boss, there and then.

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Charge} and clashed into one of the Parrots. The moment he came into contact with the Parrot, he stomped his feet heavily onto the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}. That instantly reduced the movement speed of all four Parrots. 3 seconds later, Zhang Yang's {Horizontal Sweep} was ready to be dispatched. He activated {Horizontal Sweep} and swiped his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the four Parrots. Instantly, all of the parrots received more than 50,000

damage and they immediately turned to Zhang Yang.

Daffodil Daydream finally found her use for the battle. Felice had also transformed into her Dragonhawk form and started to attack the parrots with her AoE attacks. Everyone turned to eliminate the parrots. They all understood. If they do not kill the monsters as swiftly as possible, they would only be wasting Han Ying Xue's efforts. The risk of being overwhelmed by a second wave of Parrots also grew, the longer they leave them be. If the second wave of Parrots ever gets summoned and reinforces the first wave, it would be the last straw that breaks the camel's back.

Fortunately, these parrots were not immune to Fire Attacks. They did not have the ability to reduce Physical Attacks by 50% as well. After the four of them focused their full firepower on the Parrots, the Parrots were taken down, leaving nothing but scattered feathers all across the floor.

It was really frustrating to see the boss' Fire Damage Immunity and also the ability to reduce Physical Damage by 50%. It was a huge dampener to the firepower of the entire party. However, as a Violet-Platinum Tier boss, the Attack Power of Crimson Flame was not particularly high. The HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 50% before lava had even covered half of the ground.

But, the {Roaring Flame Transformation} of the boss was truly visually awe-inspiring.

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er could feel that they were plunging their weapons into a pile of lava. It was soft, and there was hardly any sensation of their hard weapons hitting other hard surfaces. It was just like a kid slapping away at a pile of mud! Every time a blade slid across the boss, the body of the boss would break like how a plastic bag would. Lava would ooze out of the cut and drip onto the floor. Every single drop of the lava was boiling hot!

Wei Yan Er seemed to be a little interested in the boss, "Interesting, this boss is like a lava man!"

"The boss would probably be dropping a piece of a fragment for the [Roaring Flame Inheritance]. So you better think it through carefully. Or

else you will regret it after I hand it over to other members of our guild!"

"Tsk! I'm not a child anymore! Why would I be crying over that kind of trivial matter?" Wei Yan Er frowned a little while she looked at Zhang Yang. Still, her expression did betray a hint of uncertainty.

Zhang Yang did not specifically demand for Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the other gang members to get a Class S [Inheritance] or a Class A [Inheritance]. There was only a total of 6 Class S [Inheritance] in the entire server. So it would be wise not to waste time on that. Meanwhile, although Class A [Inheritances] were not as unique as Class S [Inheritances], you would stand a better chance coming across a dancing panda in a bamboo forest.

In his past life, only Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage and The Radiance had players with Class A [Inheritance] in their guilds. Furthermore, Imperial Sky had two players with Class A [Inheritance], making them indisputably the Number One guild in the entire game!

Unfortunately, Sun Xin Yu had always been a loner. Although she was the only Thief with a Class S [Inheritance], she had never joined any guilds. Otherwise, Imperial Sky's position could have been challenged!

All that considered, it would already be enough for Zhang Yang's party members to get at least a Class B [Inheritance]. Getting a Class A [Inheritance] would require luck. Insisting on getting a Class A [Inheritance] would only make one miserable. After all, everyone had witnessed the power that high Class [Inheritances] could offer. No one would be generous enough to sell a fragment of Class A [Inheritance]!

After a flurry of attacks from Zhang Yang and his small party, the boss managed to pave two thirds of the floor in the cabin with lava. That was the moment the last hit struck and the four of them took down Crimson Flame. The boss dropped a few Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and a few Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. The Violet-Platinum Tier equipment did not have any reductions in their Required Levels, as this boss was not a Top Tier boss. Zhang Yang shoved everything into his inventory. As predicted, the fragment for the [Roaring Flame Inheritance] appeared on the ground!

It was a Class B [Inheritance]!

Even Han Ying Xue was a little shocked, then she said, "Well, this place sure is a place full of surprises and treasures! We have gotten two invaluable fragments of [Inheritances]! I wonder what other treasure awaits us further ahead!"

Getting a fragment of an [Inheritance] was as good as getting a full set of it. The fragments would resonate and call out to each other. It would only be a matter of time before players can get the full set. Two fragments of two different [Inheritance]? Zhang Yang still couldn't believe that they were greeted with such generous gifts upon killing the first two bosses.

Zhang Yang nodded absent-mindedly, more confused than ever. He had never heard of an island with such a name in his previous life!

Chapter 562: 'Light-Speed' Light

Only one person would reject such great gifts.

Zhang Yang shoved the [Inheritance] fragment into his inventory with joy. The only disadvantage was that this fragment must be carried along with him. He could not put it in his bank or the warehouse of his guild. That would take up one precious slot in his inventory for a period of time.

If One Sword Stroke and his other fellow 'friends' ever knew about this 'ordeal', they would definitely give Zhang Yang a good beating! Who would be unhappy about having part of their inventory taken up by treasures?

"Sigh... what a stingy boss... just like noob tank over there. He didn't drop anything good for me. No good equipment, and not even a single [Skill Book]. Stingy!" Wei Yan Er was scolding the dead boss and ostensibly criticizing Zhang Yang, with her hands planted on her waist. Zhang Yang was annoyed to hear that coming from the little brat and ground his teeth together.

The four of them then proceeded through stairs as they made their way to the third floor of the cabin. They just had to defeat one more general before facing the final boss - Blackbeard Ditch. Since his generals were all Violet-Platinum Tier, Blackbeard Ditch had to at least be a Mythical Tier boss!

The third floor of the cabin was basically identical to the previous floor. Other than a bunch of filthy pirate monsters, there was still a bunch of Parrots. The four of them slashed their way through the floor. The little brat was getting addicted to slashing up the monsters. She even leaped into the air, her eyes cold and glowing evil red.

Zhang Yang nervously sent a private message to Han Ying Xue. He said, "Little brat is turning into a total maniac. I'm worried for her future husband."

"Hey hey hey! Don't you dare have any ideas!" Han Ying Xue hissed. She was acting like a hen trying to protect its chick. "If you dare to do anything

on Yan Er, I shall 'snip' 'snip' you!"

Zhang Yang could feel a chill running up his spine. He liked the little brat, but as a younger sister figure, not the romantic kind of love! Furthermore, the little brat was a little slow and immature. Only god knows when she would grow up. So, why the rush then?

"Rest assured, even if I become a 100 year-old hoodlum, and even if little brat is the last female on earth, I will never have any ideas on her!" Zhang Yang swore as earnestly as he could, "Happy now?"

"Humph! Only an idiot would really feel more relieved after hearing those cliché lines! I better stop the little brat from coming home so frequently!"

"...why do I have a feeling that you're not telling me everything. It's like you have something else in mind...or someone else? Oh, haha! You must be jealous of the Zhao Sisters! Wait, you don't want the little brat bringing them to our home, right? What the hell! Why take such a roundabout fashion there? You could have just told me straight! You really took me for a ride there!"

As they were having their 'sweet' talk, the party rushed forwards like a hot knife cutting through butter. They had no fears or worries of crossing swords with Elite Tier monsters. Their power turned tons of monsters into tons of experience points. Each of their experience bars were rising up at an unrealistic rate.

More than two hours later, they stood before the third boss.

Unlike the previous two bosses, this boss was called 'Light'. He had a tall and slender body, so slender that he could pass off as a skeleton in the dark. He wore pale-yellowish clothes. More importantly, he stood on the ground like a bamboo pole. He looked like he was in his mid 30s, with two small whiskers above his mouth. Wearing a pair of brown-tint glasses, he looked wretched.

['Light-Speed' Light] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Attack: 31,653 - 37,653 (Determined as Physical Attack, but causes Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Motion of Lightning]: Moves to another place in an extremely short period of time. That is enough for him to avoid most attacks!

[Light and Shadow Transformation]: Transforms into 'Light and Shadow'. Increases 50% Nature Damage dealt. Immune to all Nature Damage and Nature-based Skills received. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received.

[Ray of Fatality]: Fires a deadly beam and causes 40,000 Nature Damage to the target. With the target as the central point, fires countless beams into the surrounding, causing 40,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 20-meter radius.

Note: One of the three generals under Blackbeard Ditch. The user of 'Shadow and Light' Devil Fruit. Has the power to control light.

A Mythical Tier boss!

A Mythical Tier boss before the final boss? Furthermore, this boss would also probably drop a fragment for the [Light and Shadow Inheritance]. However, Zhang Yang could not remember from his previous life on whether this [Inheritance] was Class A or Class B.

But there was one thing he was very sure of. When the core players of the guild get their hands on these high Class [Inheritance], Lone Desert Smoke could really lay the first brick to becoming the real and powerful Number One guild in the China Region, or even Number One in the entire world!

When it really goes down to that, Zhang Yang could launch a direct assault on any large Region that irks him! With a large number of players activating their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills at the same time, they

could really level down an entire empire within days! They could just lay waste to that particular Region and interrupt them in their leveling progress!

"Silly Yu, that's a Mythical boss!" Han Ying Xue prodded Zhang Yang's back with her fingers as she spoke softly.

"Stop acting cute! It doesn't suit your style!" Zhang Yang smiled, "Should we summon Fantasy Sweetheart and the others over, or should I just activate my {God of War Transformation} Skill for this guy?"

"Just activate your {God of War Transformation}. This boss can release AoE attacks like how electricity spreads. If we clump the area up with more people it'll be harder dodging them." Han Ying Xue said.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought. His {God of War Transformation} could last for 2 hours. After killing the boss, they would still have to clear the monsters on the fourth floor. If the number of the monsters are as many as it was on the third floor, then they should be able to push on much quicker under the support of his {God of War Transformation}. The 'Transformation' should still last for another 30 minutes when they reached the final boss - Blackbeard Ditch.

That should suffice!

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey out from his inventory. Although this Yellow-Gold Tier [Mount] could only provide very limited support in contrast to the powerful party, the boss had immunity against all Nature-based damage. Thunderhawk would be helpless against the boss. Zhang Yang would have to use Whitey in that battle. So he nodded and said, "I'm starting the battle."

Upon activating his {God of War Transformation}, streams of light, in 7 different colors began to radiate from the back of Zhang Yang, as a pair of magnificent wings sprouted out of his back. He levitated into the air grandly. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were completely mesmerized by the Zhang Yang's appearance.

Only Wei Yan Er was criticizing Zhang Yang that his wings were not real, as she continued to blame Zhang Yang for betraying her and

snatching away her [Inheritance].

Shoof!

Thanks to his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang's movement speed had exceeded the speed of many [Flying Mounts]. In just a blink of an eye, he had arrived behind the boss. Swinging his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he drew first blood.

"What a daring devil you are. You actually dare to defy me and use your weapon against me!" Light was speaking at such a slow pace that people would feel anxious listening to him. However, his movement speed was actually faster than the movement speed of Zhang Yang. In a flash, he had moved at a spot, 10 meters away from Zhang Yang.

That should be the {Motion of Lightning} of the boss. It did not bring shame to the word - 'Lightning'.

Light raised up his index finger as light started to gather around the tip of his index finger. The light formed into a chicken-egg-sized light ball. With a phew, the ball of light went straight at Zhang Yang!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

Zhang Yang immediately raised his right arm. He then threw out the sword from his hand, which later formed into the shape of a spear and went right through the middle of Light's chest. He did not flinch in the face of the oncoming laser.

Obviously, the {Motion of Lightning} of the boss also had a cooldown period. If that was not the case, no one would stand a chance against this boss. When that strike from the {Spear of Obliteration} landed on the chest of Light, blood oozed out from the stab wound and it caused 108,922 damage to Light. Although Light attempted to dodge the attack, he failed to do so, as he could not use his {Motion of Lightning} at that particular moment.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had already raised his shield and held it up in front of him. With his {Block} activated, 'Clang!', the beam of light was deflected away and pierced a hole the size of a fist in a wall. There, the

beam vanished.

"You imbecile!" Light had taken a hit which he had not expected it. He finally started to turn serious. A beam of light flashed across the eyes behind the pair of brown glasses. A golden light flashed across the body of the boss, and turned the body translucent!

The boss had activated his {Light and Shadow Transformation}!

Every boss in this place was ferocious and deadly! Unlike the bosses they had encountered before in other maps, they would already activate their ultimate Skills the moment the battle begins. The other bosses would only activate their ultimate Skills, such as {Berserk} when their remaining HP drops to 20% or 10%. With these bosses using their powerful Skills the moment the battle begins, players would surely struggle against them!

But, who should be afraid now?

Zhang Yang had a Class S {God of War Transformation} Skill!

With a wave of his hand, he threw the {Glare of the Death God} straight at the boss. This time, the god had eyes for Zhang Yang. The {Glare of the Death God} was finally not resisted by the boss!

"What is this!" Light let out an angry roar as he realized that there was a wretched-looking dark skull forming at the top of his head.

Zhang Yang and the ladies began to unleash hellfire upon the boss. Because the boss was affected by the {Glare of the Death God}, they were only focused on hitting the boss as many times as possible, regardless of the damage.

‘- 390,000!’

‘- 390,000!’

...

The three DPS players, two Battle Companion, and one [Mount] surrounded the boss as they launched their assaults at the boss as aggressively as possible. Although the rate of triggering the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was as low as 10%, they still managed to

trigger it several times in a row! Light was receiving a series of damage that reached up to 390,000 damage! Furthermore, these damage were directly inflicted upon the boss. It would still be futile even if the boss activates his {Light and Shadow Transformation}.

That felt way too good!

"Now this is what we called a 'Boss-Killer' Skill!" Daffodil Daydream praised.

Zhang Yang, sighed, saying, "It would have been great if the rate of resisting the Skill would be more kind."

"When things are already so good, you should stop asking for more! Theoretically speaking, if you can last for 10 hours against the assaults of a boss, even if the boss is a Celestial Tier, they would still be taken out by this {Glare of the Death God}. If their rate of resisting is not high, then what is the point of bosses and tiers, then?" Han Ying Xue was surprisingly rational.

"You bastards!" Light let out a thunderous shout that shook the sky in rage. The battle had just begun not long ago, and the boss had already been dealt heavy damage. He was very mad and pointed at them with his index finger. A blinding beam of light shot from the tip of his finger. It went right through the body of Wen Yan Er.

--- {Ray of Fatality}!

Instantly, the little brat received 40,000 damage from that strike. Then, countless beams of lights shot out from her body.

Even though Zhang Yang could fly, he could not outrun the Skill. He was struck by one of the beams and received 40,000 damage, just like Wei Yan Er. But, with his {God of War Shield} activated, his Passive Damage Immunity had reached 40%. Together with the other of Damage Absorption abilities of his equipment, Zhang Yang only received a total of 21,114 damage.

That 20,000 damage was a mere fraction of his 5,380,000 HP.

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Felice were attacking from the

rear, using most of their ranged attacks. They were not caught up in the spread attack of the {Ray of Fatality}. However, Whitey, Wei Yan Er and the other battle companions could not avoid their fate. Without the {Iron Build} to boost its Maximum HP, Whitey only had over 36,200 HP, even when with the blessing of {Vitality Aura}. It was instantly killed!

The Battle Companion of Wei Yan Er was only a Yellow-Gold Tier. Without having any Violet-Platinum equipment on, Reina's HP was even lesser than the total HP of Whitey. She was also instantly killed.

However, they could not contribute much in providing more damage output to the firepower of the party in the first place. That was not their main purpose anyway. They were there to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. It did not matter if they were sacrificed while trying to accomplish the main goal!

Chapter 563: Blackbeard Ditch

Since Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Transformation} Skill, he basically did not require Han Ying Xue to heal him at all. The 'Transformation' Skill boosted him with an additional 75% HP. He also got to use his {Shield Wall} once, every two and a half minutes. Those circumstances should be enough to keep him alive well enough until they slay the boss!

Unfortunately, the [Titan Chest Plate] was only a Level 80 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. The special effect of the piece had begun to deteriorate after he reached Level 100. When he is able to reach Level 110, the special effect should get deteriorated even more because of its attributes that are based on percentage ratio. After all, this [Titan Chest Plate] was merely a knockoff instead of a Godly equipment.

Still, the boss was not easy to deal with. The {Light and Shadow Transformation} provided the boss the special attributes to reduce any Physical Damage that he receives by 50%. Since Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er mostly relied on Physical attacks, they were having a difficult time in bringing down the HP bar of the boss. The {Motion of Lightning} was even more irritating. This Skill was basically similar to the Skill {Block}. It could allow the boss to dodge against any form of attacks --- other than Skills that state otherwise, for instance, the Skill {Killing Cleave}.

Furthermore, the cooldown period for the {Motion of Lightning} was extremely short. The boss could actually use it once every 10 seconds!

Sometimes, when the boss was lucky enough, he could dodge 3 to 4 attacks at the same time with the {Motion of Lightning}, giving the party a hard time!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang was also insanely powerful in his {God of War Form}. The boss was no threat to him. So it is only a matter of time before they bring down the boss.

"You imbeciles never stand a chance against me!"

"I am invincible!"

"Allow me to crush your skulls with my might!"

The HP bar of the boss reduced rapidly as he constantly roared. In less than 20 minutes, he was close to dying.

"Haha! A super boss should drop something nice!" Wei Yan Er could no longer hold her greed back. She actually went up to the boss and tried to dig around his pockets!

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder, would this little brat still probe her husband's ever single pocket for money, every single day after she gets married?

Zhang Yang's imagination started going wild. He suddenly had an urge to use a time-travelling device to take a peek on how the little brat would do in the future, 10 years from now.

"No! No! This is impossible!" Light was struggling for his life. His rate of activating the {Motion of Lightning} increased by a notch. He could use it once every 5 seconds now! Most of the super Skills that Zhang Yang and his ladies cast missed their target.

Zhang Yang let out an angered cry and activated his {Indiscriminate}. With a full Rage bar ready for use, he activated his {Killing Cleave} in an attempt to end the boss once and for all!

‘-422,986!’

{Killing Cleave} was unblockable and undodgeable! The {Indiscriminate} ensured that every single hit that landed on a target with HP bar lower than 20% would surely be a Critical Strike for 10 seconds!

Unfortunately, the boss had that one special attribute to reduce any Physical Damage received by 50%. Although it was a Critical hit, the {Killing Cleave} only caused half of its potential damage. The Critical Hit was completely nullified!

Still, that damage was no small amount. A damage of 420,000 would be more than 1% of his HP bar! He only had about 2% HP left, and this strike had almost ended him! Now, Light only had about 1% HP left!

{Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

The little brat could not stand letting Zhang Yang triumph over the boss all by himself. So she activated her super Skill to end the battle.

Upon entering the Chaos Realm, there was a tremendous increase in the amount of HP for both players and bosses. An amount of 100,000 damage was once a great deal, but it no longer had such power in the Chaos Realm. The Basic Damage of Zhang Yang's {Indiscriminate} alone could already reach up to 400,000 damage, without it being a Critical Hit!

With a swift {Killing Cleave} from the little brat, the last drop of HP was taken out. He let out a miserable cry and collapsed onto the floor of the cabin. The loot burst out of his body like a ruptured water balloon.

Zhang Yang did not waste any single second. He quickly said, "Little brat will stay behind and pick the stuff up. The rest of us will head on! We can take a look at the loot while on the move!"

He had already set the Item Distribution mode to All-Pick.

Of course, Wei Yan Er had no beef with that, and she made her way to the items and picked them up with joy.

The party then charged on to the fourth floor of the cabin. Since Zhang Yang had already activated his {God of War Transformation}, the party did not have to hold anything back. Instead, they charged forward with everything that they had in attempt to blitz through the floor. Zhang Yang lured a large number of pirates into one spot and activated his Skills repeatedly. Upon activating {God of War's Crushing Strike}, {Horizontal Strike}, {Thunder Strike}, and the triggering of the special effect of his {Sword of the Purging Devourer}, Zhang Yang was hitting the monsters as hard as a tsunami! In just a brief moment, the pirates were all wiped out, and the party gained a substantial amount of experience points.

Wei Yan Er had also begun to post the attributes of the loots one by one. She said, "The boss had dropped a total of 2 Mythical Tier equipment, 3 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, two [Skill Books], and a piece of a fragment for an [Inheritance]. So which one do you guys want to start with?"

Zhang Yang was swinging his sword about as he spoke, "Forget about the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. We cannot afford to wait until we're all Level 130 just to equip them. Let's look at the Mythical Tier equipment first. We will move on to the [Skill Books] after that. Since that the [Inheritance] is just a Class B, I'll assume that none of you would want it. So let's just forget about it too!"

"You really are hard to please!" Wei Yan Er shrugged and said, "Well, I'm an easy going person after all. Fine, fine I'll please you."

She looked into her inventory and moved her hand around. Then, she took out a piece of equipment and posted its attributes. It was a cute pair of pink panties. However, this panties would not be visible if the player equipping it is also equipped with a Chest Plate or a Robe.

[The Flowery Panties of Light's First Love] (Mythical, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +1,926

Intelligence: +905

Spirit: +393

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 3,800 points.

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 1,800 points

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 3.5%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

Note: There's nothing that Light can't steal.

The attributes of this equipment were top Tier. It even had additional Maximum HP, additional Maximum MP, and also large increase in Damage! This equipment also reduced 20 levels from its Required Level. Based on its attributes alone, this panties was almost perfect in all aspects!

However, the name of this equipment was also one strong reason that

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were frowning hard upon seeing it!

"Cousin sis, Daffodil! Which one of you will take this?" Wei Yan Er asked.

The two ladies hesitated for a moment. It was powerful, and based on that alone, there was no reason to decline it. However, the name alone was repulsive enough! Well, this was a second-hand good after all. Furthermore, it had been stolen and stowed away by a wretched middle-aged man for god-knows how long. Only god knows what he would have done with it, or if he had worn it himself!

Zhang Yang laughed at the two ladies and he said, "You two just toss for it. Whoever loses, take the equipment!"

The two ladies nodded. After tossing for it, Daffodil got a smaller roll. She was forced to keep the panties.

If other players were to see how the two ladies were pushing away such a great pair of panties, they would definitely be frowning hard! The name was the only issue there! They could have just ignored that aspect! It was a Level 130 Mythical Tier equipment after all. The best part about it was that players could already equip it when they reach Level 110! It should be one of the most powerful equipment for players around Level 110!

Wei Yan Er moved on to the second equipment and post its attributes up. Then, she suddenly said, "This is mine, noob tank! Don't you dare snatch it from me!"

[Light Beam Protector's Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +2,012

Strength: +931

Agility: +340

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 4,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Absorbs 384 Damage when struck.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduce 20 levels from the Required Level.

A high Tier equipment that boosts Attack and Defense at the same time! Even though one could not see whether this equipment was more to Offense or Defense, it would still be a powerful piece!

The trousers Zhang Yang had was also a Mythical Tier equipment, along with a Level 120 Mythical Tier Greaves. Although the Greaves was 10 levels lower than the [Light Beam Protector's Greaves], the difference between the attributes of these two equipment were not really that much. Therefore, he did not intend to fight the little brat. He only nodded and agreed to let the little brat have it.

Wei Yan Er gave a sweet smile at Zhang Yang and said, "That's more like it! I shall put more good words about you to Cousin sis, so that she will be more gentle with you!"

"Of course, it's necessary!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

Han Ying Xue stared at the little brat incredulously, and she said, "Am I not gentle?"

"We haven't even taken a look at the [Skill Books] yet!" Wei Yan Er switched the topic by waving a book with a red hard cover about. She threw it over to Zhang Yang, "Now this is yours, noob tank!"

[Skill Book: Superior Thunder Strike]

Use: Teaches you the {Strengthened Thunder Strike}.

Required: {Thunder Strike}

Required Level: 100

Thunder Strike was basically an exclusive Skill that only Guardians had. Since Wei Yan Er couldn't learn the Skill for her own usage, she generously gave it to Zhang Yang without hesitation.

Zhang Yang immediately took the [Skill Book] and held it against his body. He had not heard of this Skill before. So, he learned it to find out what the Skill could do.

[Superior Thunder Strike (Passive)]: Strengthens your {Thunder Strike}, increasing your Movement Speed Reduction rate up to 90%. Duration is extended for another 10 seconds. However, the target will regain 10% movement speed every second. Within the period of time, the target has a 1% chance to experience a "Torn Hamstring" effect. When the target does so, the target will not be able to move at all for 5 seconds.

Awesome! This Skill should be useful!

This Skill only acted as a strengthening factor to his {Thunder Strike}. Zhang Yang did not have to spend additional rage points and wait for Global Cooldown among Skills. Upon learning this passive Skill, he would still be using his {Thunder Strike} as per usual, however, it would have more powerful effects on his targets. That would make him even more powerful!

"So what's the other [Skill Book], then?" Han Ying Xue was looking at the little brat, her eyes glittering.

"Hmm... unfortunately, this one is not yours as well... cousin sis." Wei Yan Er shook her head and took the other [Skill Book] out from her inventory. Then she said, "This one is for sister Daffodil!"

After receiving the [Skill Book] from the little brat, Daffodil Daydream tapped it on her and learned the Skill. That was also an 'Enhancement-type' [Skill Book]. After she had learned the Skill, she posted it onto the party channel.

[Superior Explosive Flame]: When your {Explosive Flame} causes damage, you will gain an additional effect. Increases your next chanting speed by 50%. Lasts for 3 seconds.

{Explosive Flame} has a 10-second cooldown period. So, the user could increase their next chanting speed for their next spell by 50%, every 10 seconds. Although it wasn't really some sort of super powerful Skill, Pyromancers and Spellcasters used this Skill quite often. Furthermore, it

was like a free enhancement to a user of {Explosive Flame}. Why would players with the Skill wouldn't want it then?

Although Light was a Mythical Tier boss, the [Inheritance] he dropped upon his death was merely a Class B [Inheritance]. However, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were amazed by it. Only Wei Yan Er was feeling discontented as she continued to complain. She really wanted a Class A [Inheritance], after all.

The moment they were done distributing the loots, the party was almost done clearing up the monsters on the fourth floor. Soon after, the four of them finally arrived right in front of the final boss, Blackbeard Ditch.

This heavily-bearded man was scratching his ears and cheeks in anxiety. At the same time, he was tossing and turning the Treasure Map around, gazing at it intently. He would put it on the table for a while, and then toss it into the air just to see what would happen. It seemed that he had not discovered the secrets that were hidden in the map, as he looked annoyed and anxious at the same time.

[Ditch, Leader of the Blackbeard Pirates] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 130,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Attack: 40,204 - 52,204 (Determined as Physical Attack, but cause Shadow Damage)

Skills:

[Blastoff]: Quakes the ground, causes 50,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 40 meters radius.

[Darkness Transformation]: Transforms into the form of Darkness. Increases 50% Shadow Damage. Immune to all Shadow Damage and Shadow Skills. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received.

[Devouring Darkness]: Devours all targets within the range of 40 meters radius and digests them. Players must kill the Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion

that spawns before then, in 30 seconds. If they succeed, they can escape the Darkness, causing 100,000 Damage to Ditch. If the players fail, they will die immediately, healing Ditch by 1% of his maximum HP.

[Dark Arrow]: Randomly attacks a target in range, causing 40,000 Shadow Damage to the target. Range: 3 - 40 meters.

Note: This is the Captain of the Blackbeard Pirates, the man that sails fearlessly across the boundless seas, unanimously agreed upon the sole holder of the adjective - 'Brutal'! Ditch is the user of the Dark-dark Fruit, he has the special power to control Darkness.

"100 million HP!" The four of them glared intensely.

Because the boss had the Skill {Devouring Darkness}, he had a chance to recover 1% of his HP every time one player falls to his {Devouring Darkness}. It was a total amount of 1,300,000 HP that the boss could heal! So, how difficult would Blackbeard Ditch's Illusions be, then? If the game has made it too powerful, then the boss would be invincible!

At that moment, the {God of War Transformation} of Zhang Yang would expire in 36 minutes.

Thanks to the {God of War Transformation}, the total amount of DPS Zhang Yang could reach was about 100,000 damage. However, because the boss had the ability to reduce 50% on the Physical Damage that he receives when he is in his {Darkness Transformation} form, Zhang Yang could only deal about 50,000 damage in every second. It would still require about 43 minutes to empty out the total amount of 130,000,000 HP that the boss had on him.

But, they still had a shot at killing the boss within 36 minutes. That being said, Zhang Yang's [Glare of the Death God] would have to be successfully activated. Furthermore, upon entering the critical stage of the battle, Zhang Yang's Attack would dramatically increase when the HP of the boss drops below 20%. The rest of it would depend on the other party members. None of them knew exactly how dangerous and powerful the {Devouring Darkness} was!

Furthermore, if the rate of activating {Blastoff} was too high, then Han

Ying Xue would have trouble healing up everyone. Only Zhang Yang would not require her attention. He had his {Shield Wall} to heal himself.

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts about it, then he said, "When you are hit by the boss's {Blastoff}, just retreat immediately. Don't go back to hit the boss before your HP is healed back to full. If the cooldown of this {Blastoff} is brief, just stay away until we figure it out."

{Blastoff} could cause 50,000 Damage. Even though Zhang Yang had an abundance of HP, he could not sustain more than a few strikes from that Skill, if he was not in his {God of War Transformation}.

To kill a super boss, one must summon a large number of players to do it!

Chapter 564: Ferocious Battle with Blackbeard

Furthermore, all players that are joining the boss battle should be up to a certain standard. At the very least, they should be able to kill the illusion of the boss within the 30-second time frame. If they fail to kill the illusion, they would only end up aiding the boss by healing the boss 1% again and again, if they were to die one after another. That being said, 100 players getting killed by {Devouring Darkness} would already heal the boss completely! By then, it would be better to give up on the boss battle rather than torment oneself.

The three ladies seemed to have understood the danger of the Skill. They nodded to express their acknowledgment.

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. With a flap in his wings, he flew up into the air like a god and dove down towards the boss. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Yang had arrived before the boss and started with his assaults. With a shoof, he activated his {Charge} and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the boss.

‘- 98,772!’

Right after the blow, Zhang Yang’s Rage Bar went over its regular capacity!

‘- 222,408!’

Unfortunately, the {Frost Strike} did not cause any Frost Effects on the boss --- If the Skill could cause a Frost Effect on the boss, Zhang Yang could delay the boss from entering his {Darkness Transformation} form for 10 seconds, at the very least. That would have given Zhang Yang more time to cause a great deal of damage to the boss, theoretically.

"Huh?" Ditch was a little astounded. A strange dark light flashed across the eyes of the boss as he threw a powerful punch towards Zhang Yang, pushing Zhang Yang a few steps back. "It's you! If you have made it here, that means, Light and Snow are dead? Humph! What a bunch of useless

imbeciles!"

Suddenly, the entire body of the boss quivered as he set his eyes upon the Treasure Map that he was holding in his hand. He could not help but to shout in shock, "I see! I got it! The Treasures is hidden beneath this island, all along!"

Ditch laughed boisterously as he rolled the Treasure Map up and pushed it into one of his sleeves. He glared at them murderously and said, "You f*cking boy, I'm going to get the Treasure. I have no time to deal with you. Just die and save me the trouble already!"

The air began to rumble.

The boss was suddenly shrouded in a barrier of darkness, as streams of dark energy surged and circled around his body. All of the sudden the dark energy flew up into the sky, piercing through the floors of the previous four levels. If one were to look up, layers after layers of holes could be seen. However, the light would never reach the floor of this battle. The dark energy was a rampaging, violent concentration of abyss incarnate. It was like a black hole, drawing in everything, including light. The sunlight from outside would be completely dissipated before even touching the ground.

Dark shrouds were beginning to gush out into the surroundings, engulfing the entire cabin into darkness. The dark energy filled up the floor of the cabin up to the knee levels of Zhang Yang and the ladies.

{Darkness Transformation}!

Zhang Yang charged up to the boss and activated his {Destructive Smash}. However, his sword felt like it had been stuck into a pile of mud. The cut only managed to cause a small part of the dark shroud to disperse. It seemed like the body of the boss had transformed into a dark shroud. Spooky!

‘-102,242!’

With the boss's ability to reduce 50% of all Physical Damage that he would receive, Zhang Yang could only deal about 100,000 damage to the

boss with his {Destructive Smash}.

{Glare of the Death God}!

With an uneasy sense in his chest, Zhang yang threw his best boss-killer Skill onto Ditch!

A dark skull began to form on top of the boss's head. The skull revealed a wretched smile, looking extremely spooky as well.

"What the hell is this?" Ditch was very surprised by what he saw. His 'instinct' told him that this skull was extremely dangerous!

The super boss on every map would have their own 'Personalities'. It was the developer's idea to implement such a system, to bring the characters of the bosses to life. The way the bosses talk and react should all be compatible to the standard of being a 'person'. Therefore, this boss could also show fear, excitement, anxiousness and other complex 'emotions'. So, it would not be possible for Ditch to act like a player who realized that he was being casted with a Skill. However, the boss would still be capable of receiving 'secret notifications' from the system to know that the {Glare of the Death God} would pose a deadly threat to him!

After witnessing that the {Glare of the Death God} had taken effect, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies cheered. Without wasting any of their precious time, they began to launch their assaults at the boss as rapidly as they could. They were trying to maximizing the chance of triggering the special effect of the Skill before time ran out.

'-1,300,000!'

'-1,300,000!'

Numerous damage values popped up on top of the boss, forcing him to act in a hurry. Ditch swung his fist, shrouded by dark energy, straight towards Zhang Yang.

A Level 130 Mythical Tier boss was so much stronger than Zhang Yang. The impact from every single punch from the boss trembled across Zhang Yang's entire body, making Zhang Yang stagger back each time he was struck by the fist. His left hand that was holding the shield rang with

numbness. He could barely hold the shield up with his arm, right after the series of punches!

Within 7 seconds, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} had already been triggered for as many as 10 times. The HP of the boss had already dropped by 10%! Ditch roared in rage as he crossed his clenched fists together, before spreading his arms wide, double backhanding the areas beside him. His fists collided into the empty spaces to his left and right.

Bam! Bam! Crack!

The very air right in front of Zhang Yang and the ladies suddenly began to crack, like how a mirror would crack. Then, the cracked space shattered into pieces. The pieces shot out at the four of them like sharp blades!

{Blastoff}!

The four of them received a basic damage of 40,000 Physical Damage. Other than Zhang Yang, the 3 ladies only had about 60,000 to 70,000 HP. They were only left with approximately 40% HP remaining. It had put them in perilous positions. The ladies were so shocked that they kept backing up until they were more than 40 meters away from the boss. They could not afford to be struck by the boss's {Blastoff} or {Dark Arrow}. If they did, they would be instantly killed!

Han Ying Xue quickly healed herself up. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were using their own [Bandages] in an attempt to heal themselves up as quickly as possible. They wanted to reengage into battle to channel their damage output on the boss.

However, right after Han Ying Xue healed up the three of them back to their full health, the boss did it again. He spread his arms wide, and once again backhanded the empty spaces to his left and right, just like before! The space within 40-meter range from the boss was shattered completely!

"It was just 11 seconds after he used that Skill!" Zhang Yang said. So that was the time interval when the boss would use his {Blastoff}.

"Hahaha! What a bunch of weaklings! Just for me!" Ditch let out a good

laugh as he revealed his teeth, some of which were blackened. The stench of booze came right out from his mouth. With his fists colliding into the empty spaces around him once more, Ditch had shattered the entire cabin to ruins with his {Blastoff}. He actually turned the 'Indoor Environment' straight into an 'Outdoor Environment'!

As time passed by, he kept repeating what he did to activate his {Blastoff}. The space around him continued to shatter. The scene was grand and spectacular!

After 3 consecutive {Blastoffs}, Felice and Thunderhawk had to retreat. They only had about 180,000 HP on them. Three {Blastoffs} in a row was enough to send them outside Death's doorstep.

"There is no way we can pull this off!" Wei Yan Er was hanging her head dispiritedly. She was a Melee-type player. She would require 4 seconds in order to get in range in order for her to whack the boss. Then she would require 4 seconds to get out of the effective range of the {Blastoff}. Meanwhile, the boss had already activated {Blastoff} for 3 times. First, it took 11 seconds for the boss to strike out with {Blastoff} again, and the second time, it only took the boss 9 seconds before he activated his third {Blastoff}!

Within the shortest period of cooldown, Wei Yan Er was only be able to run up to the boss and hit the boss for 1 second before she needed to start running away from the boss. There was more running than hitting!

"Tremble before me! Tremble before the despair of Darkness that is brought upon you!" The boss continued to laugh. He would just throw his punches at Zhang Yang and activate his {Blasoff} once a short while to cause havoc to the surroundings. The battle was ferocious at that point, that no words could properly describe it.

If Zhang Yang had not activated his {God of War Transformation}, if he did not have the knockoff version of heavenly powerful [Titan Chest Plate] with him, he wouldn't have stood a chance against the continuous assaults from the boss. Unless he calls upon the best Healers from his guild to take turn and heal him, Zhang Yang had to activate his {God of

War Transformation} in order to survive the onslaught of the boss.

Wei Yan Er could almost do nothing to the boss at that stage. Meanwhile, Daffodil Daydream, Felice and Thunderhawk could still continue channeling their damage output on the boss. The furthest range attack for Ranged players and NPCs was 30 meters. If they needed to be 40 meters away from the boss to be safe from the impact of {Blastwave}, all they needed to do was to run 10 meters away in order to get out of the danger zone. Running over the distance of 10 meters would only require 2 seconds. So they would still have enough time for 3 spells before running off to wait out for the {Blastoff} to end.

However, the boss was not consistent. Sometimes, it only took 8 seconds for him to strike again. But sometimes, he would waited up to 15 seconds before activating {Blastoff}. If any of them were careless enough to get hit by a {Blastoff} in the face, followed by a {Dark Arrow}, they would be as good as dead.

As long as they were still alive, they could still deal some serious damage to the boss over time.

"I will eat you all!" Ditch suddenly let out a roar as he began to merge himself into the dark shrouds around him. Then he devoured Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream who had coincidentally went up to the boss to deal some damage.

All Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could see was a pitch black shroud covering the space in the cabin. They could not see Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream, nor could they see any signs of the boss! Felice and Thunderhawk were left idle by the side.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang found a shadow standing in the middle of the sea of darkness. The shadow looked similar to the appearance of the boss.

[Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion] (Summon)

Level: 130

HP: 300,000

Defense: 0

Attack: 10,000 (Determined as Physical Attack, but causes Shadow Damage)

Skills: None

Zhang Yang could not afford to waste any of the 30-second time frame. With a flap of his wings, Zhang Yang charged forward as he began to swing his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the illusion. He gave the illusion a good normal swing from his sword, closely followed by his {Horizontal Sweep}, causing two large numbers of damage to the illusion.

‘-95,221!’

‘-197,234!’

Zhang Yang had almost killed the illusion instantly after the two strikes.

His DPS could theoretically reach up to a total of 96,000 damage upon activating his {God of War Transformation}. It would only take a brief instant for him to slay a monster with only 300,000 HP.

With another strike from his sword, Zhang Yang caused another high value of damage to the monsters. A yellow colour value of ‘-92,243!’ popped right on top of the monster. The monster then opened up his arm and vanished into thin air. Right after that, Zhang Yang was instantly teleported out from the temporary dimension he was in and reappeared at the position where he last stood before being devoured.

There was no sign of the boss.

Zhang Yang understood it. Unless the 30 seconds were up, or all of the illusions were destroyed, the boss would not reappear back in the cabin.

"Haha, noob tank! Why didn't you get digested by the gastric juice of the boss?" Wei Yan Er laughed.

"I'll have you know that my body is superhuman! The boss knew he would suffer indigestion the moment he couldn't chew my hard flesh up, so he made the wise choice! He spat me out right away!" Zhang Yang was laughing while he tried to troll the little brat.

The time frame of 30 seconds was about to come to an end. Daffodil

Daydream had finally reappeared back in the cabin. She had lost about 20,000 HP as she was battling the boss's illusion. It wasn't bad at all for her. It meant that she only got hit twice by the illusion while she was killing it. Judging from her DPS that had was only up to 10,000 damage, her performance was nothing short of a miracle!

She could not kill monsters with one or two hits like how Zhang Yang did. While she was in that solitary space, she could not get any healing support. Daffodil Daydream had to move around agilely while using her Status Restriction Skills to maintain a certain distance between the monster and herself. Under those sort of circumstances, she could still maximize her damage output. That required serious skill. She was indeed worthy of being one of the top 10 Spellcasters in China, during Zhang Yang's previous life!

The moment Daffodil Daydream reappeared, the boss had also reappeared close by her. Because two of his illusions were slain, Ditch had lost over 200,000 HP. However, this amount of HP that he lost was totally insignificant compared to his full bar of 130,000,000 HP!

By the standards of Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream, they were able to kill each of the Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion that was spawn before each of them within 30 seconds. However, if Han Ying Xue were to be devoured by the Skill, she would definitely be dead. As she was also aware of that, she had maintained a gap of more than 40 meters away from the boss throughout the entire battle.

Under the oppressively powerful {God of War Transformation}, the HP bar of the boss was reducing swiftly! Victory was at the tip of their fingers!

Chapter 565: Darkness Inheritance

7 minutes before the {God of War Transformation} duration ran out, the HP bar of the boss had finally been reduced down to 10%!

Although the assaults of Daffodil Daydream, Felice, and Thunderhawk could not stay consistent, as they had to stop their assaults and run away from the boss, the three of them were still able to provide a certain standard of damage output at the boss. Furthermore, they were attacking with their Magic-type attacks, so their damage dealt on the boss were not weakened by the {Darkness Transformation} of the boss. They could still deliver half of their firepower even though they were required to move around constantly.

The DPS of these 3 Magic-type attackers had exceeded 10,000 damage. Even though they could not perform at full capacity, they could still deal a total amount of 15,000 damage in every passing second. That amount of damage should not be underestimated!

"You god damn f*ck! Why aren't you dead yet! Why are you still alive!" Ditch began to lose his patience as he started roaring in rage. After multiple attempts of bringing Zhang Yang to the brink of death, Zhang Yang would still somehow get back to full health! At the same time, Zhang Yang would also use some mysterious sort of method to reduce the boss's attack as well! The boss could not fathom that as he began to question how Zhang Yang could pull off such annoying stunts!

Of course, these were all possible because of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall}! As the special effect of the [Titan Chest Plate] actively kicks up, Zhang Yang could recover 5% of his HP every single second!

"This is the difference between a man and a god! Ditch! You're just a man, and I'm a god! Bow before me and worship me!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. The moment his {Shield Wall} was ready, he immediately activated it without any hesitation. The three transparent shields appeared and went around him, shielding him from all forms of attacks.

"This again!" The boss could only shout in rage helplessly. At first, he

thought that he was way more powerful than Zhang Yang. He thought that he could have taken out Zhang Yang with ease. However, now that Zhang Yang had activated his {Shield Wall} repeatedly, the boss was totally helpless against him. He could only watch Zhang Yang heal himself back to full health each time he was about to die.

"Surrender your will to me, Blackbeard. Be a Battle Companion to one of my followers and I shall let you live!" Zhang Yang struck a price for the boss. The patch for the Battle Companion had stated clearly that any AI type NPCs that has certain intelligence of their own could potentially become a Battle Companion. That also included all powerful bosses in the game.

Ditch was a Mythical Tier boss after all. Even though his HP bar and Attack would not be as powerful as they were when he was still the boss, but a Mythical Tier would always triumph over others who were lower in Tier. Furthermore, the boss also had his powerful Skill - {Darkness Transformation}!

Since Zhang Yang already had Felice as his Battle Companion, he wouldn't have any need of recruiting Blackbeard as his Battle Companion. His other party members, however, might need to switch to a better Tier Battle Companion. The Battle Companions that they had were only Violet-Platinum Tier at best. Some of them even have Battle companions who were just Gray-Silver Tier. Having Ditch as a Battle Companion would definitely boost one's power level!

"Hahaha! You must be joking! I'm the man who is going to become the Pirate King! I shall serve under no one!" Ditch gave out a manic laughter as he smashed both of his fists into the empty spaces beside him. The rate of activating {Blastoff} had just increased again.

Daffodil Daydream and the others could no longer channel their damage output on the boss. Now, Zhang Yang was the only one who could kill the boss!

"Your answer is clear enough. Then, you die!"

Zhang Yang let out a thunderous battle cry as he activated his

{Indiscriminate}. With his Rage Gauge full, he activated his {Killing Cleave}.

‘-563,391!’

A very high value of damage appeared right on top of the boss. Zhang Yang widened his eyes a little, as he was shocked to see that amount of damage he caused on the boss. That was a hit, under the circumstances where all Physical Damage received by the boss had been reduced by 50%! The amount of damage would not be so high even if it was a Critical Hit! He quickly brought up the battle logs to have a look at the records. As expected, his {Killing Cleave} had triggered the Lucky Strike! Furthermore, his {Indiscriminate} had ensured that his {Killing Cleave} would deal a Critical Damage to the boss, causing Zhang Yang to deal 6 times of the initial amount of damage he was supposed to deal!

The sensation could not be described with words anymore!

Reducing over more than 500,000 HP with one hit was a little heavy on the boss, even though Ditch had a very long HP bar. Ditch was struck so hard that he was forced to take a few steps back. His eyes were murderous. He then let out a thunderous roar as he began to direct his fists that were shrouded in dark energy, straight towards Zhang Yang.

It was merely an attempt to delay the inevitable!

Felice had also reacted. She let out a cute roar as she transformed into her Humanoid form. Then, she charged up to boss, stabbing her lance at the boss repeatedly, trying to aid Zhang Yang.

--- she activated her {Absolute Defense} that made her practically invincible for two minutes.

Although the little lady was obedient, however, should Zhang Yang be in any form of danger, she would definitely step out of line to protect him. Zhang Yang could not do anything about it. After all, a Battle Companion had equal rights as a player, having their very own decision-making powers.

It was a fortunate thing that Felice would charge up and aid him in

bringing down the boss. Unlike that super whiner Messick, he would have run away the moment he sensed any danger! He was a totally hopeless, unreliable Battle Companion!

"This... this is just outrageous!" Ditch's eyes were beginning to turn red. Well, he had already gotten his hands on the Treasure Map, and he had also found out the whereabouts of the Treasure. But, here he was being beaten up by a bunch of unknowns to the point that he could not do anything in return!

With Felice joining in, the HP bar of the boss reduced even more rapidly. The {Blazing Dragon's Spear} of that little lady could cause Fire Damage, which dealt a full amount of damage on the boss without being affected by the Physical Damage Reduction attribute. It would be unwise to underestimate the damage she's capable of dealing on the boss!

7%!

5%!

3%!

"No! No!" Blackbeard was finally panicking! He swung his two fists in an even faster manner, as if he was beating a drum. Bam! Bam! Bam! He continued to shatter the air around the area, pummelling Zhang Yang!

It was a futile, last 'ditch'!

2%!

1%!

0%!

"Argh!" Ditch let out his final scream. The dark shrouds flew back into the boss, and the surroundings were restored back to normal. Zhang Yang and the ladies could see the wreckage of the cabin once again. It really made them feel as if they had been marooned on an island for quite some time.

"Time to reveal what's in that pile of loots!" Wei Yan Er went up to the dead boss with joy. She had been bored to death, watching the battle from

the sidelines. She was definitely in a mood to look at the loots now.

"We should get a total of 4 Class B [Inheritances], including the drop from this boss!" Daffodil Daydream spoke excitedly. After all, 4 Class B [Inheritance] would really improve the power level of the core players of Lone Desert Smoke.

"Haha! You were wrong!" Wei Yan Er corrected Daffodil as she picked up the loots.

"Hmm... the boss didn't drop any fragment of a Class B [Inheritance] at all?" Daffodil Daydream was crestfallen.

However, when Zhang Yang looked at the joyful face of the little brat, he knew that something was not quite right. It suddenly clicked to him, and he said, "The boss did drop a fragment for an [Inheritance]! However, it was not a fragment of a Class B [Inheritance]!"

"How can you such a smart monkey, noob tank?" Wei Yan Er curled up her lips into a smile.

"Could it be Class A [Inheritance,] then?" Even Han Ying Xue was shocked to hear it.

Ditch was the final boss after all. It would make perfect sense that he would drop the fragment of a superior Class of [Inheritance].

"You're right! It's a Class A [Inheritance] fragment!" Wei Yan Er began to giggle. She revealed a dark piece of a metal fragment in her palm. It was a head of a sculpture. It seemed that the sculpture had been broken into a few pieces and this was the head of the sculpture.

[[Darkness Inheritance Fragment Piece (1)] (Inheritance Class: A)]

Description: N/A

"It is really a Class A Inheritance!"

Wei Yan Er was so happy that her eyes had been squeezed into a single, horizontal line by her smile, and then she said, "Haha, this [Inheritance] is mine!"

"Alright, alright, it's yours!"

The other three of them were fine with it. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had already gotten their own Class S [Inheritance]. Furthermore, this [Darkness Inheritance] was not suitable for a Spellcaster. So Daffodil Daydream did not dream about having it at all. Also, the Class S [Inheritance] for the Spellcaster Class had yet to be revealed. Daffodil Daydream still stood a chance at acquiring the Class S [Inheritance] for herself.

So currently, Lone Desert Smoke already had 2 players with Class S [Inheritances], 1 player with Class A [Inheritance], and 4 players with Class B [Inheritances]! With more time, Endless Starlight should be able to enter the Level 130+ Map. Then he should be able to activate the linking quest for the Class B [King Kong Inheritance]. Of course, there was also Sun Xin Yu's Class S [Shadow Dancer Inheritance]! When everyone could finally get their hands on their own [Inheritances], Zhang Yang's party would be unstoppable!

Zhang Yang was excited and eagerly looking forward to seeing this dream come to fruition.

Upon knowing that the little brat had acquired a fragment of a Class A [Inheritance], Fatty Han and the others congratulated the little brat. Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and Galileo began to beg Zhang Yang the moment when they discovered that there were still 3 more Class B [Inheritance] on Zhang Yang. They wanted to decide on and acquire an [Inheritance] for themselves as soon as possible.

Recently, Fatty Han had been on a mad rampage. With his powerful Class B [Inheritance], he was more powerful than Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and the others, even if he does not activate his {Vampire Transformation}! He could even tank against a boss when he transforms! Everyone was admiring that fatty. So, they had decided not to wait for Class A [Inheritances] to appear anymore. They believed that the 10% different in the Attack between Class A and Class B [Inheritances] would make little difference.

Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and Galileo were basically the core members of Lone Desert Smoke. So Zhang Yang did not reject their

requests, naturally. He informed them that he would pass the fragments to them once he reaches the Territory.

"Don't get overly excited just yet. We should carry on with the rest of our loot!" Zhang Yang rubbed Wei Yan Er's head as she giggled about the [Inheritance] fragment in her arms. It was actually pretty scary to see the little girl hugging a head in her arms...

Wei Yan Er was not happy with Zhang Yang rubbing her head, so she gave Zhang Yang a fierce stare all of a sudden. She slapped Zhang Yang's hand away and said, "You bus tart! Can't you just let me be happy for a moment? Don't spoil my mood, please!"

The little brat then threw all the loot onto the ground altogether. There was a total of 3 equipment and 1 [Skill Book]. Among the 3 pieces of equipment, one was a dark-green shield. Although the craftsmanship of the shield looked simple and plain, the shield radiated with some sort of powerful aura. The other two equipment was a staff that coral-red in color and a robe that was aqua-blue in color.

Zhang Yang picked up the shield. He was looking forward to see how powerful it was.

[The Guewitt's Shield] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +3,276

Vitality: +3,210

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 6,400 points.

Equip: Absorbs 1,150 damage when being hit.

Equip: When you use {Block} successfully, you will automatically use {Shield Bash} on your target without consuming any Rage Points. It does not trigger the Global Shared Cooldown period.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduces 20 levels on the Required Level.

Note: This is the shield that was once used by the legendary hero, Guewitt. However, tens of years ago, the Nth generation of Guewitt was robbed and killed by Blackbeard Ditch. So this shield had been in the possession of Blackbeard Ditch ever since.

"This shield really boosts a great deal of HP!" Daffodil Daydream praised it profusely, "Furthermore, the special effect seems very promising! It lets you automatically use a free {Shield Bash}!"

Well, that was true!

Ever since the developers had patched the game, players have had trouble in handling the Global Shared Cooldown system. Zhang Yang had to abandon some of his weaker Skills that only could attack a target at a time. With this shield, his {Shield Bash} no longer required him to wait out for any Global Shared Cooldown. That being said, he could now shove in another Skill without having to waste any of his Rage Points while blocking regularly.

With his current Basic Attack, Zhang Yang could already deal approximately 10,000 damage in a single hit, even when he could only cast one layer of {Cripple Defense} on the target. He could even reach up to about 50,000 damage in a single hit when he activates his {God of War Transformation} Skill!

Unfortunately, he would be required to reach Level 110 before he can equip the shield. Zhang Yang was currently at Level 106. He would still need to grind another 4 levels to reach the Required Level!

His focus for the coming days should be on leveling himself up. He shouldn't sway from his conviction on this. He should only think about other matters after he reaches Level 110!

Chapter 566: Ancient Creatures

Along with the [Cobalt Helmet], Zhang Yang had finally gotten two pieces of equipment out of this quest. It was better than nothing.

The next item would be the coral-red staff.

[Coral Staff] (Mythical, Staff)

Magic Attack: 4,711 - 5,511

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 14%.

Equip: When you have succeeded in releasing a spell, there is a certain rate that the target would be stuck by corals. The target will not be able to move at all. Lasts for 5 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduces 20 levels from the Required Level.

Although Daffodil Daydream was amazed to see it, she said, "Sister Snow, I already have the [Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life]. You should have the staff instead!"

Her staff was also a Mythical Tier equipment. Although her staff was only Level 110, it wouldn't be too far behind than the [Coral Staff].

Han Ying Xue did not act like the hypocrite she sometimes was. She simply took the staff and shoved it into her inventory. She couldn't equip it just yet, as she had not met the Required Level to equip it, just like Zhang Yang.

The final piece of the equipment did not have the Special attribute that reduces the Required Level. As it was a Level 130 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, it could only be shelved in The Little Merchandise Shop. They would already be able to equip a Mythical Tier equipment by the time they reach Level 130.

Zhang Yang took up the [Skill Book] as that was one of the items worth looking at.

[Skill Book: Superior Indiscriminate]

Use: Teaches you the Skill: Superior Indiscriminate.

Required: Indiscriminate.

Required Level: 100

"Huh? Another 'Enhancement-type' [Skill Book]?" Zhang Yang spoke out loud in surprise as he patted the little brat who was still floating on cloud nine with her [Inheritance] fragment, "Little brat, come back from your wild dream and look at this. Or else I'm using it for myself!"

Wei Yan Er finally snapped out of her wild dream and snatched the [Skill Book] away! Then, she quickly tapped it against herself and learned the Skill. She did it so swiftly as if she had believed every word Zhang Yang said. After that, only did she take a good look at the description of the Skill.

[Superior Indiscriminate]: Increases the effect's duration of your {Indiscriminate} by 5 seconds.

The initial duration of the {Indiscriminate} was 10 seconds long. That being said, any physical attack from the players would surely be a Critical Strike. After the duration of the Skill becomes 15 seconds long, that would be a 50% enhancement to the Skill, even though it was just merely a 5-second extension!

"Wow, this is really a good place. There were so many [Mounts]. So much equipment, so many [Inheritances], and so many [Skill Books]! This is a land full of treasure!" Han Ying Xue could not hold in her money-grubbing face anymore as she continued to say, "We should just conquer this map and never share it with others!"

Zhang Yang only shook his head and said nothing. He had not heard of this place in his previous life. There had to be a significant change in the storyline of the quest that he had accepted earlier on. Or else, why would such a place be hidden from a bunch of hungry guilds that would devour its 'treasure' for their own benefits? It appeared that Zhang Yang might have picked up a unique quest, after all.

Zhang Yang picked up the Treasure Map from the dead body of the boss. Because he was the only one who had accepted the quest, the little brat and the other two ladies could not pick the quest item up.

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: The Pirate’s Treasure Map!’

‘Ding! You have slain Blackbeard Ditch and reclaimed the Treasure Map!’

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Pirate’s Treasure Map, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have automatically accepted a quest: Access to the Treasure!’

[Access to the Treasure!] (Difficulty: D-rank)

Description: You have reacquired the Treasure map! After a close study on it, you have discovered that the location of the Treasure is located in Baroque Island itself! Warrior, it’s time to harvest the fruits of your victory! Move forward and claim the endless wealth that you have been promised!

Zhang Yang gently touched the Treasure Map. The Treasure Map then emitted out countless beautiful colorful lights and formed a hologram of the entire Baroque Island! Right at a corner of the map, a large red dot was blinking. It had to be indicating the exact location of the treasure!

A curved pathway leading to the treasure appeared on the Treasure Map. The four of them followed the map and arrived at the location in no time at all. Almost immediately, they found an entrance to a secret tunnel beneath a huge rock.

"I wonder what the treasures would be!" Wei Yan Er was pumped up with excitement, "I’m not that greedy, just give me tens of thousands of gold coins! That should be enough!"

"Yan Er, you have a big goal in life..." Han Ying Xue began to ‘educate’ the little brat with a life lesson, "How would tens of thousands of dollars ever be enough! You must at least ask for millions of dollars!"

The eyes of the two money grubbers flashed with gold and money as

they were looking forward to see what the treasures would be.

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. Everything that these two would ever think was just money, and nothing else.

If the difficulty of this quest was D-rank, should they assume that this quest would be extremely easy then? The four of them took their time. About half an hour later, they arrived at the front of a cave after running through a series of twists and turns.

"So, where is the treasure?" Wei Yan Er blinked while staring into the cave. The cave wasn't really that big. A huge, black stone tablet right in the middle of the cave. The black stone tablet was enshrouded with strange dark light. The surroundings were totally empty.

Zhang Yang also felt strange about it, then he said, "Could they be underneath the huge stone tablet?"

"Lift it up, then!" Wei Yan Er was definitely a violent girl. Right after she said that out, she immediately ran up to the stone tablet and put her hands on the solid stone tablet, carrying out her own suggestion.

"Stop!" the illusion of a Stone Giant was suddenly projected out of the stone tablet. It was shouting at Wei Yan Er with a furious face.

"Aiyah! Who are you to tell me what to do? Why would I stop if you say so?" Wei Yan Er frowned, as she could not lift the stone tablet at all. She grabbed her axe and swung it straight at the stone tablet.

Kuang!

A loud crash resounded across the entire area. Although the stone table seemed to have been very solid, it couldn't really take much of a hit, after all! After a series of sparks burst into the surrounding, the stone tablet was cleaved into half by the little brat and her axe.

"You ---" the Stone Giant looked at the little brat. He could not even speak anymore.

"Humph! You stinky stone monster! What can you do to me?" Wei Yan Er pushed up her chest as if she was trying her best to push her pair of

boobs 'higher' up.

Suddenly, the cave began to rumble.

The entire island began to tremble along with it. Countless rocks fell from the ceiling of the cave, crashing down upon Zhang Yang and the 3 ladies.

"Where's the treasure?" Wei Yan Er moved the scattered pieces of the rocks on the ground to look beneath that black stone tablet. She did not find any treasure chest or other loots beneath the piles of broken stone and bricks. Instead, she discovered countless of mystical patterns. Being players who had already played the game for quite a long time, they immediately recognized that those patterns were actually part of a large magic circle. They were standing on top of the magic circle all along, ever since they stepped into the cave!

From above their heads, dust and broken stones began to fall upon them. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were dejected. They had longed for treasure and yet, they did not manage to get what they wanted, at all.

"Sigh..!" the Stone Giant was no longer angry. It sighed in resignation, and said, "It seems that no one will be able to escape what that is to come!"

"Mr. Stone Giant, what is this all about?" Zhang Yang stepped forward and asked the Stone Giant, "Isn't this a sacred place where Pirate King Roger buried his treasures?"

"Pirate King Roger? Buried treasures here?" The Stone Giant stared at him incredulously, then he shook his head and said, "What kind of nonsense is that? How did you even come across such an absurd rumor! My fellow Adventurers, you cannot be more wrong than this. It wasn't a bunch of treasure that was buried beneath that stone tablet. Demons were!"

The Stone Giant continued to explain, "Many years ago, so many years that I have lost count of it! We were following Captain Roger to sail across the seas, across the entire world! We conquered one region after another.

When we came across this region, we also discovered this mysterious island. Captain Roger had also studied the terrain of the island very closely. That was how he stumbled across this hidden place. It was then when we realized that the seal was about to be broken! A large army of Ancient Creatures appeared, and we fought many battles and lost many of our brothers! By the end of it, we managed to annihilate the army of the Ancient Creatures! Captain Roger had given up 30 years of his life to stabilize the seal! Ever since then, the Ancient Creatures had remained in their own realm."

"So what was the deal with that Treasure Map then?" Zhang Yang took out the Treasure Map that led them to this location.

"This map contains the foul scents of those Ancient Creatures!" The Stone Giant was shaken up pretty badly. Then he said, "I finally understand! It must be one of their schemes! The foul Ancient Creatures that were sealed away must have created this map with their dark magic! Although they were sealed, they could still depend on the power that passes through the seal! They used the emotion "greed" in people in order to destroy the magic circle of the seal and release them!

Wei Yan Er quickly turned her head to another direction and she began to whistle and pretend as if nothing had happened.

Boom!

As they were talking, the entire island was shaking more and more violently. It wasn't just the falling dust and rocks anymore. The ground was beginning to crack, and the cracks began to expand further into the surroundings. Dark-red, boiling lava started oozing out of the cracks.

"No time to lose! These Ancient Creatures are about to break the seal! Go, go as quickly as possible! Bring the news to every corner of the earth! These Ancient Creatures cannot be brought down by just a few of you! You will need an army to fight off such foul and evil army of creatures!" The Stone Giant was panicking as he continued to say, "I shall create a temporary portal. Just go!"

The moment it finished talking, the Stone Giant began to chant a spell.

A small portal appeared right before Zhang Yang and the ladies.

"Quickly! Go! Get out of here!" The Stone Giant urged.

Boom!

A loud explosive sound was heard. The next thing that Zhang Yang and the ladies saw was a gigantic cockroach appearing right in front of them all! Followed by a second one, a third one!

[Zergert Cockroach King] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,739 - 21,739

Skills: N/A

If it was just one or two of these Zergert Cockroach Kings, Zhang Yang would have stayed behind to slay them all without any fear. However, more foul cockroaches were sprouting out at every passing second!

Who would dare to stay back and fight?

"Let's get out of here!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted.

The three ladies could not afford to delay any further. They quickly ran towards the portal. After they went through the portal, the ladies arrived at the Teleportation Circle in White Jade Castle.

Zhang Yang looked at the Stone Giant and he said, "Mr. Stone Giant, how about you?"

"I was long dead!" Stone Giant revealed a slight grin as if he was content having a stranger like Zhang Yang actually caring about him. "I'm just a residue of my soul that was bound to the seal. My purpose was to warn anyone who set foot into the cave. But... it doesn't matter anymore. Don't blame the little girl for all this. Even if she did not act recklessly, the seal that Captain Roger put upon the stone tablet was going to fade anyway. It would only hold for another few years. Well, it's not really a bad thing that

the seal has been broken. By breaking the seal, at least you know what's coming now! Warrior, if you have the courage and the power, just get back here and destroy the magic circle on this soil. You can do it after the magic seal has totally faded!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Access to the Treasure! Acquired 100,000 experience points!'

'Ding! The Stone Giant has a quest for you: Preventing Future Trouble, will you accept it?'

Accept!

"Leave at once! My power is fading! I cannot hold the portal for much longer!" The Stone Giant roared.

At the same instant, one of the Zergert Cockroach King had sensed the presence of Zhang Yang. It immediately let out a screech and swung one of its thorny legs towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly went through the portal right before the leg hit him. Right after he went through the portal, he arrived at the White Jade Castle as well. The portal behind him immediately collapsed and disappeared.

'Server Announcement: Large-Scale Legendary Quest: The Invasion of the Ancient Creatures has been activated! Countless Ancient Creatures will appear on Baroque Island, among the Camarro Islands. They will arrive at 7 pm, 3 days from today. These monsters shall depart from the island and launch their assaults on the entire world!'

'Server Announcement: All players can participate in the Legendary Quest, contributed in stopping the invasion of the evil Ancient Creatures. During the battle, players can get [Insect Shell] of the Tiers, Violet-Platinum, Yellow-Gold, and Gray-Silver. Players can exchange these [Insect Shell] over to the Event Merchant in all Main Cities for equipment. The best Tier of the equipment will be Violet-Platinum!'

'Server Announcement: These Ancient Creatures will probably be divided into 8 different forces when they are attacking the Main Cities. They will arrive at the Main Cities of each Region through portals! If the

monsters manage to annihilate 3 or more Main Cities in each large Region, all players from that Region will receive a penalty of -1 level for the next Main City (starting from the 4th Main City) that falls! On the other hand, if the players can defend 3 or more Main Cities in each large Region from falling, all players from that Region will receive a reward of +1 level! Additionally, if players can stop the monsters by the portals in Ten Barren Seas, all players of that Region will receive a reward of +4 level!

At that moment, the server was echoing the announcement repeatedly. It notified everyone about the upcoming Large-Scale Legendary Quest!

"Zhan Yu, was it you who did it?" before Zhang Yang could even catch his own breath, he received a private message from Snow Seeker.

"What do you mean was I the one who did it? I have been a clean and good man! I would never go to the club!" Zhang Yang attempted to make fun of Snow Seeker. Crimson Rage has always been really weird. Snow Seeker's fellow members of her guild were all bad girls. As the leader of the 'bad girls', Snow Seeker was surprisingly decent and upright. Zhang Yang would only fear the seduction that those 'Bad girls' like Perfumed Water, but he was very fond of making fun of Snow Seeker.

Snow Seeker was stunned for a moment, then only she realized that her wordings had a little ambiguity in them. She shrugged off his tease. Then she said, "I meant the Server Announcement about the Legendary Quest! Don't tell me you have nothing to do with it!"

"... It really had nothing to do with me! It was Yan Er that little brat that did something to trigger it!" Zhang Yang laughed. The moment when Zhang Yang and the ladies discovered the location of the 'treasure' had triggered the Legendary Quest. The only thing that would change was how the Legendary Quest would be triggered.

"You guys are real troublemakers!" Snow Seeker let out a sigh, then she said, "Let's discuss on how to stop the invasion of the Ancient Creatures, then!"

Zhang Yang nodded. Of course, he knew that one guild would not be capable of completing such a large-scale quest all alone! The only way of

getting through this would be to combine the power of players from all of China!

So, Zhang Yang said, "Let's join up with Greensleeves Prince, One Sword Stroke, and the other guildmasters. We can't complete this Legendary Quest with only our guilds! We need every possible help that we can get!"

Chapter 567: The Legendary Quest

The Ancient Creatures would drop different Tier of [Insect Shells] upon their deaths. Those [Insect Shells] could be exchanged for equipment of ranging up to the Tier of Violet-Platinum. Although the amount of [Insect Shells] required for a particular equipment from the Event Merchant still remained unknown, it would always be best to collect as many [Insect Shells] as possible. It would be even better if the players could collect better Tiered [Insect Shells]!

The eight armies of the Ancient Creatures had departed from the Baroque Island. They were going to reach the Territories of the eight Main Regions through their portals within the Chaos Realm. That was mainly because the best places to lay siege on were the Territory Gateways of the eight Main Regions in the Chaos Realm!

More importantly, the Territory Gateways were all strategic locations that could really serve as a defensive line between the Chaos Realm and the outside realm of the game. Therefore, the Ancient Creatures would not be able to invade any further, as long as the defensive line of the Territory Gateways were not broken.

Meanwhile, as the Baron of Morning Town, Zhang Yang would have the main control over everything in the Territory on behalf of Lone Desert Smoke. He could just remove anyone or any guild that he was not fond of, from the Territory. After all, players that were incapable of defending against the hordes of Ancient Creature. They would perish instantly if they were to face the large army of the Ancient Creatures head on!

That could really remove a lot of unwanted troublemakers!

Furthermore, if they could fend off the Ancient Creatures by the walls of the Morning Town, all players would be able to receive +4 levels reward when the war is finally over. Although the reward might seem to be a little bit less interesting for the players who were still below Level 50, the reward was really appealing for those high-level players! It was an extremely rare occasion where they had a chance of receiving such great

rewards!

Ever since players had reached Level 80, they would be required to grind for about 10 days before they could level up again. In such circumstances, +4 levels rewards could aid these players by saving up to 40 days of grindings!

On the contrary, if the players could not fend off the invasion of the Ancient Creatures from breaching the walls and lay siege upon the main lands of their respective Main Regions, players would be receiving a penalty of -1 level for every Main City that falls if more than 3 Main Cities in their Main Region lands were to fall. That being said, players would experience a total of -5 levels, if all of their Main Cities in their Region lands were to fall! If one were to look at the difference between the results of being successful in defending the Main Cities and the results of being a failed attempt to defend the Main Cities, it would be a gap of 9-levels!

Furthermore, not only one or two players would be affected. Every single one of the players in the entire Region would be affected!

9 levels would mean 90 days, a total of 3 months of training and grinding! No Region could afford to suffer such a fate, as they were currently locked in a tight competition in claiming the top position in the Chaos Realm. To fall behind by 3 months, the guild would not be able to grab any resources at that point!

Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker invited Greensleeves Prince, Sword of Light, One Sword Stroke and other guildmasters from Top Tier guilds to join into a temporarily created party. Then, they began to discuss on how to handle the large-scale battle that was to come in 3 days.

Apparently, if they could just defend against the Ancient Creatures within the interior of the Territory by using the walls, houses and other buildings as their 'funnels', then they would be able to minimize the number of casualties while maximizing the benefits that they would earn! Therefore, the guildmasters tried their best to play the 'card of friendship' with Zhang Yang, trying to win his trust over, so that they could gain a good position for their own guilds.

Just like the old saying, everyone for himself, and the devil take the hindmost. Of course, Zhang Yang would look out for his own guild first. Currently, the Lone Desert Smoke already had over 3000 members who had managed to reach Level 100. After positioning them at the best strategic spots, Zhang Yang moved his attention towards his most trusted Allied guild, the Crimson Rage. After arranging the members of Crimson Rage into the best positions left for them, Zhang Yang then moved his attention towards the Sky High, Radiance, Sunset Amber and the rest of the guilds.

The other guildmasters could not make any changes to Zhang Yang's arrangement. After all, the Morning Town belonged to Zhang Yang.

Fortunately for them, the number of players who had entered the Chaos Realm was not really that high yet. Although Morning Town was not a big town, the place could still take in about ten or twenty thousand players. That was almost the amount of all the players in China Region who had reached Level 100.

Of course, that number was merely 10% of the number of players in all of China Region! Most of the players could only head for Ten Barren Seas through the portals and prepare for the assault! However, they would not have any form of tenable defensive positions. They were bound to suffer greatly.

Players with even lower levels could only stay at the Main City as the last defensive line of the city. However, players who were Level 70 or below would only be wasting their time by doing so, as the monsters from the Chaos Realm should all be at least Level 100 or above. The Level 70 players would be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game and they should not be able to deal much damage to the monsters of Level 100 and above. They should be working hard on gaining additional levels instead.

Even though Lone Desert Smoke, Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage and other top Tier guilds represented the most powerful forces in the entire China Region, but their numbers were far lesser than the total number of players in the entire China Region. Therefore, after they were done discussing, the

guildmasters went to the forums as one. They posted with the purpose of gathering as many top Tier players by the portal of Ten Barren Seas, so that they could act together as one in defending against the army of Ancient Creatures! They attempted to recruit more muscle to stop any monsters from attacking the Main City. Everyone was striving to get the +4 levels reward.

After all, the outcome of this war would affect every single player in an entire Region! Therefore, the post was being jacked up with tens of thousands of comments. The administrators of the official forum were forced to lock down the original post and repost it as a new post.

It wasn't just the China Region. The other 7 main Regions were also gathering their best players at the same moment!

The outcome of this war would become a decisive factor for every single Region!

It all came down to how they would handle the battle against the hordes of Ancient Creatures. It would determine the very standings of the different Regions.

The most unlucky Region was naturally, the Japan-Korean Region. As their Territory Gateway had already been conquered by Zhang Yang, they had no tenable defensive positions, whatsoever! They could only crouch behind at the portal of Ten Barren Seas. It was a ridiculously sad case for them, as they had already lost their 'first line of defense' even before the hordes had arrived!

Every guild had ceased their attempts at clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, as they were getting ready to face the hordes in a legendary battle that had yet to happen before in history! Players with [Inheritances] had reserved their {Inheritance Transformations} so that they could transform in 3 days time. Meanwhile, the system had given players 3 days to get ready, ensuring players with [Inheritances] could grab the opportunity to go all out and unleash their full potential.

Since Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream, and Galileo had already acquired their very first pieces of their [Inheritance] fragments, the four of

them had begun their search for the remaining pieces of their [Inheritance] fragments elsewhere. However, 3 days did not seem to be enough for them to collect all the fragments of their [Inheritances]. They would also have to complete the quests for the [Inheritances] in order to acquire the [Inheritance].

Therefore, the four of them stood no chance at all at showing off their [Inheritances] in three days.

Zhang Yang took his [Cobalt Helmet] and [The Guewitt's Shield] over to the Identifying Shop to be identified. Even though he could equip the helmet, he had not reach the Required Level for the shield just yet. He must first reach Level 110 in order to equip it. However, it would be impossible for him to reach Level 110 in 3 days.

Zhang Yang had another secret weapon. He still had the expedition army of White Jade Empire that currently stood guard at the Winst Castle. So, he decided to move the troops back to Morning Town. After all, that large army belonged to the China Region. So there was no reason for them to look after the Territory Gateway of the Japan-Korea Region for them.

Rockovich was truly cooperative. After Zhang Yang told him everything that was happening, he immediately mobilized his entire army to Morning Town via the Teleportation Circle. Rockovich had also informed Zhang Yang that he had reported the situation back to Queen Serena. Queen Serena might send more troops over to support the defense at Morning Town!

Anything that should be done or could be done had already been done. All they could do now was to wait!

3 days of the in-game time was just 1 day in real life. Although players could feel that the time was ticking by really slowly, in reality, one day could pass in the blink of an eye.

'Server Announcement: The Ancient Creatures have begun their invasion of the world!'

Right after the Server made the announcement, countless monsters emerged from Baroque Island. The hordes of monsters were divided into

eight different forces as informed earlier on by the System, as they started to advance towards the eight Territory Gateways.

The Camarro Islands were the Territory Gateway of the North America Region. The players of the North America Region were the first to encounter the assaults of the Ancient Creatures Army. However, it did not take long before the other Regions like Europe Region, South America Region, and Australia Region began to face the terrifyingly massive army of the monsters at their own doorsteps.

When it came to Winst Castle, the monsters went straight through it straight without facing any form of resistance, the other seven Territory Gateways were already engaged in a fierce battle with the Ancient Creatures!

Zhang Yang stood on the castle wall of his own Territory while observing the battle. The Defense of Morning Town had been leveled up to Level 4 at the moment. The Defense and the Magic Defense of both the City Gate and the City Walls were as high as 8,000 points. The HP bar for each of them had reached up to 100,000,000 HP! If the opposition side of the siege did not bring along some catapults in their attempt to bring down the Defense of Morning Town, it would be a total nightmare for them. The opposition side would be wasting all 3 hours just bringing down the City Gate!

However, Zhang Yang's confidence was shaken up a little when he saw the massive horde of Ancient Creatures that covered every inch of the entire land, outside the walls of his territory.

Upon entering the 10-kilometer mark from the Territory walls, these Zergert Beasts started to slow down. They began to enter a disciplined formation while marching towards the Morning Town. Looking at the number of the monsters marching towards them, anyone would feel a chill up their spines.

"What a massive horde we are looking at!" Greensleeves Prince said softly as he gazed

at the far side of the battlefield. His eyes were filled with hope and

expectancy instead of fear. After all, this was just a game, not a real scenario. The larger the number of the monsters they face, the more rewarding it would be for them!

Of course, it would also be natural for the battle to be even more difficult!

"We have no room for optimism!" One Sword Stroke was looking worried. The number of the monsters seemed to be a little too much for them to handle. Even if there were over 200,000 NPC army standing by in the Territory waiting to support them in battle, their numbers would still be not enough compared to the massive army of the Ancient Creatures.

"Wu -----" the strange sound of a clarion was projected over a brief moment. The monster hordes began to charge in increasing speed. The appearance of these monsters was beginning to become clear to the players.

These creatures were totally different from those giant cockroaches that Zhang Yang saw three days back in the cave. The massive army of monsters before them were beast monsters, they were humanoid in shape, and were about 2 meters tall. In fact, instead of beasts, they looked more like wild dogs that could stand humans! Their mouths dangled open to reveal their rows of sharp teeth that were as long as half a foot! The sides of their mouths drooled. With their two claws in front of their bodies, everyone could see the reflection of the moonlight on their sharp claws. Anyone would feel a chill up their spines upon taking in the sight of those claws.

[Zergert Beast] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 105

HP: 100,000

Defense: 1,100

Melee Attack: 6,884 - 8,864

Note: The lower ranked members of the Zergert Race. Of course, the low ranking would only be by Zergert Race standards alone. Beware of their

claws. Those claws can easily slice through and crush rocks!

Although these were all Level 105 elite Tier monsters, their HP bars were not as abundant as they had expected. 100,000 HP was no longer a high amount of HP to most of the players at the current stage of the game. After all, the expedition on the Dragon Throat Fortress had been going on for many days. Many guilds had also managed to clear the first 3 to 4 bosses in the Hardcore Mode. Most of them also possessed at least a Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment.

But the number of monsters... was a little daunting!

"It seems like we're going to have a hell of a time ahead of us!" everyone whispered to themselves.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Upon entering the 1-kilometer mark from the Territory walls, the Zergert Beasts started to accelerate! It was like countless kangaroos leaping and charging towards the Territory at an incredibly fast speed! Their ability to leap was astounding! They could leap over a hundred meters! The Zergert Beast Army was so densely packed that the entire land was covered in dark shadows! They instantly touched down directly in front of the Territory walls!

The battle has commenced!

Chapter 568: Sword of Purging Devourer, a Shock to the World

Zhang Yang operated the Magic Cannon himself. Beams of blinding lights blasted from the cannon barrel and smashed in the midst of the clumped up, massive army of the Ancient Creatures. Every single one of the Zergert Beast that stood in the range of the beam were vaporized! There was nothing left of them!

This Magic Cannon is indeed a powerful weapon for sweeping up a large horde of monsters!

Unfortunately, this Magic Cannon could only fire a maximum of 10 shots in a day. It did not matter if they were in a Territory Conquest or otherwise, the limit of shots would still be 10. Upon leveling up the Territory's Defense to Level 4, Zhang Yang could finally place 4 Magic Cannons on the walls of Morning Town. That being said, they only had a total of 40 shots from the Magic Cannons per day.

Although the number of shots was still far from enough to take care of the Zergert Beast army, Zhang Yang consoled himself by saying that if he were to fire off 40 shots a day, he would definitely die of exhausting! So, by comparing himself to the 4 Magic Cannon, they would perform to their utmost best till the end of their days!

"Let me do it! Let me do it!" Wei Yan Er could not resist the urge of playing with the Magic Cannon anymore. She quickly asked Zhang Yang to hand over the controls to her.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "What sort of 'cannon' are you playing with?"

Wei Yan Er did not get the hidden meaning that Zhang Yang tried to imply. She had already taken over the Magic Cannon in excitement. She aimed the muzzle of the cannon at the closely packed monsters and let out a series of blasts! In just an instant, countless Zergert Beasts were taken out by the repeated blasts from the Magic Cannon! They were

basically reduced to dust by a single blow!

The little brat was truly enjoying the moment. She let off the remaining 35 shots from the Magic Cannons out without any consideration. As she couldn't get enough of the fun yet, the little brat complained, "What a useless bunch of Magic Cannons! They could only fire so few shots?"

Han Ying Xue giggled as she gazed at Zhang Yang. She seemed to be thinking of something else.

After being 'tormented' by blasts of magic beams, about tens of thousands of the Zergert Beast were blasted into pieces! Unfortunately, the number of monsters the little brat took out was merely an insignificant number when compared to the total number of monsters that were about to invade their Territory! Other than that, the monsters that were killed by the Magic Cannon blasts did not drop any loots at all. In other words, although it was really fun to kill the monsters with the super powerful blasts of the Magic Cannon, there was nothing to be gained.

"Kill!"

The monsters had reached the walls of the Territory. These creatures that looked like wild dogs had incredible leaping ability! With just a single leap, they could already cover half the height of the wall! If they could assist each other in jumping into higher heights, then they would have jumped over the walls of the Territory!

However, players were already stationed on the walls. They started to fire away the moment the monsters arrived at the wall. There were Tankers stationed right on the front lines of the wall. Just in case any of the monsters really did jump onto the wall, these Tankers would be able to push the monsters back off the wall with their shields. Other than that, there were also other Melee-type Classes like Thief and Berserker supporting them!

Meanwhile, the Range-type Classes were lining up from the rear as they unleashed their AoE attacks upon the monsters right below the walls. They did not have to worry if their attacks would hit or not because the

monsters were so closely packed together! Any AoE attacks that they simply release would hit not only one, but a whole bunch of the monsters!

The battle had temporarily turned into a stalemate. However, these Zergert Beasts were not merely an army or morons who would just attempt making their way through the walls by jumping over them. Many Zergert Beasts had diverted their attention to breaking down the City Walls and the City Gate with their sharp teeth and sharp claws. They were attempting to bite their way through into the Territory Gateway!

Although the Defensive HP and the Magic Defense of a Level 4 Castle Defense were decent, they would not be able to hold long against tens of thousands of crazy 'wild dogs' biting and gnawing at them. The HP bars of the City Gate and the City Walls were reducing so rapidly that it pained Zhang Yang very much!

After all, that gate and walls would require a substantial amount of money to rebuild later! The cost of repairing them would depend on the amount of damage they sustain. The more damage taken, the more money he would have to spend to repair them.

If these walls and the gate were to be completely destroyed, Zhang Yang would need to reconstruct everything from the scratch! Reconstructing and repairing were two very different things. The money involved would be completely different! If repairing a 99% damaged City wall requires 1,000,000 gold coins, reconstructing a new City Wall would require 2,000,000 gold coins!

Furthermore, repairing any Defensive Facilities would be forbidden during a battle. It could only be done after a battle. Even if Zhang Yang was willing to take out a million gold coins at the spot, he would still not be able to repair the damage done to the Defensive Facilities of his Territory. That was just the way the game is designed.

"Sigh! If only that [Forbidden Scroll] had not been used for some meaningless purpose!" Han Ying Xue suddenly brought it up.

Zhang Yang and the others immediately turned their eyes over to Wei Yan Er. They looked at her, until she felt uneasy and a self-conscious.

Then, she acted innocently and said, "Why are you guys looking at me like that? It was Sister Sun who used that [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday]! Not me!"

"Without your 'encouragement', would that icy queen really do it?" Zhang Yang pointed his finger at her.

"How could you make an accusation based on that kind of assumption?!" Wei Yan Er curled her upper lip in a show of skepticism as she continued to say, "If you are out to condemn someone, do your research first! I'm not talking to you anymore!"

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu! The City Wall is about to collapse!" Snow Seeker came up to Zhang Yang from not far away, with a worried face. No one had ever thought that the monsters would be so numerous! They first thought that they had the advantage over the terrain. They had believed that they could have held the monsters outside of the wall for a longer period of time. But, they were wrong! No one had ever thought that the City Walls would be collapsing so soon!

"That's about right! Be prepared to charge with all your might!" Zhang Yang raised the sword in his hand high up in the sky. The only way of securing the chance of picking up the [Insect Shells] that are dropped from the monsters would be by getting within Melee-range as they die. As no one would know how many players would be attacking the same monster at the same time, that would mean that many players would have the chance to pick up the loot dropped by the same monster that they are attacking. It would definitely become a chaotic scene when it comes down to picking up the loots! Therefore, players who were within the melee-range of the monsters that dropped the loots would stand higher chances of picking them up!

80%, 60%, 30%...

The remaining HP bar of the City Wall was reducing with every passing second. However, when the remaining HP of the City Wall was reduced down to 10%, a hole opened up in the walls, enough for the monsters to pass right through!

"Kill! Kill them all! Leave none of them alive!" Players had already rushed up to the hole, their weapons drawn. The moment they saw the monsters charging in through the hole, they leaped into battle and gave their all. The clanging sounds of weapons were filling up the quiet streets of the Territory as swords and claws met. Blood started flooding the ground, and miserable screams were heard over and over again. The sound of them murdering each other quaked across the heavens.

Zhang Yang hopped on Thunderhawk and said, "It's time for us to get going too!"

Among Zhang Yang's party of 10, only Sun Xin Yu was absent. Her place had been taken up by Galileo for the moment. The party went off into the skies as they dived towards the horde of monsters on the ground.

Upon receiving the news that the wall had been breached, Rockovich could no longer sit on his *ss. He commanded the 200,000 White Jade Empire troops to join the chaotic battle by the wall. Although most of the soldiers in the army of NPC were just Normal Tier soldiers, they were doing fine as a backup army. They became the perfect human shields for the players. It was much better than having no backup from the NPCs.

Rockovich was truly a Mythical Tier boss. His attacks could already reach up to half the Attacks of Zhang Yang whenever he activates his {God of War Transformation}. Every single hit from Rockovich produced shockwaves that spread across the area. Every single smash with his hammer would cause massive damage to the monsters and sent the monsters flying tens of meters away.

"Let's go! We shall follow our 'boss' and push forward!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he patted Thunderhawk and flew close to Rockovich. He picked on the monsters that had already been struck by the Shockwave Effects of the boss and killed them all. Feeding off Rockovich's leftovers with one or two hits was enjoyable.

{Horizontal Sweep} may be classified as an AoE-type attack, but it was limited, in the sense that its attacks would only go through one layer of enemies. Even if a large number of enemies was within its range, its

attacks would only strike the ones directly before Zhang Yang, and not go on striking anything else behind them. Be it 10 or 100 monsters within the range, there would hardly be any difference. The attacks would never reach anything beyond the first row. However, {Blast Wave} worked differently. It would strike any and all things within its stipulated range!

With the monsters being very closely packed together at the moment, Zhang Yang struck out with his {Blast Wave} instead of {Horizontal Sweep}. Instantly, a sea of numerical values popped across the heads of the closely packed monsters again and again. The amount of damage dealt on each of the monsters was more than 5,000 damage! Furthermore, the replicated ability of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered without any care in the world. Instantly, a series of damage befell upon the monsters like a 'domino effect,' as the damage values popped above their heads repeatedly.

Although the basic damage of the {Blast Wave} was merely above 5,000 damage, the Special Effect on the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was still kicking in like a boss! The Special Effect was triggered repeatedly without any pause, until all the monsters within the range of {Blast Wave} was cleared out completely!

All members of his party could clearly see the damage dealt on the monsters every time the Special Effect of the sword triggered. They also could see how all the monsters died with their own eyes. Meanwhile, the other players around could only see the HP bars of the monsters being emptied out the moment Zhang Yang swung his sword. From their perspective, Zhang Yang had taken out all the monsters single-handedly in mere seconds, like they were nothing!

What kind of sorcery was that!

Everyone could not help but look over at Zhang Yang. They were looking at him with admiration and dread!

--- this man was a one-man army. He was killing the monsters at a rate that was even more ferocious than the Boss!

Zhang Yang shrugged. It was only the Special Effect of his [Sword of

Purging Devourer]. That Special Effect had once been on a Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon. It wouldn't do much for the other players even if he shared the attributes for the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] to the public. If a Level 100 player went on to equip a Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon, the player would be severely underpowered, and there was no chance of the Special Effect showing up in their hands!

When a player is below Level 80, there would be a 2% rate of triggering the sword's Special Effect. However, when the player exceeds Level 80, the rate of triggering the sword's Special Effect would drop to 1%. When the player reaches Level 90, the rate would go as low as 0.5%! The rate would become 0.25% when the player reaches Level 100!

Furthermore, other players would not have an Ancient weapon like the [Sword of Purging Devourer] to 'devour' the Special Effect of other weapons. The sword could even be upgraded further up in Tier as the seals on the sword are unsealed!

Therefore, other players would only be envious of him.

However... destruction always pursues the great! After today's battle, someone would be complaining to the officials that Zhang Yang was like a Bug in the game, out of spite. If the Special Effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was to be nerfed, then Zhang Yang would suffer a great loss!

"Hahaha! That weapon of noob tank is sure powerful!" Wei Yan Er quickly patted her [Winged Tiger] and flew out to pick up as many [Insect Shells] as she could. Although the elite Tier monsters only dropped Gray-Silver Tier [Insect Shells], they could be exchanged for quite a number of Gray-Silver Tier equipment. They could always sell the equipment for money.

"Such a shame, that the weapon is bound to noob tank. Or else, I would have borrowed it to have fun with the monsters!" Wei Yan Er sighed as she said.

"If I ever lent it to you, it would most probably be like taking advantage of an incident to take Jingzhou, without returning it! I would never get it back, ever!" Zhang Yang blurted out.

"Humph! You better stop discrediting my reputation!" The little brat growled at Zhang Yang. The gang could only chuckle.

Under the violent assaults from Rockovich and Zhang Yang, every single one of the monsters that got through the wall were annihilated. The monsters also dropped numerous loot on the ground, including a countless amount of [Insect Shells]! Everyone enjoyed the substantial amount of experience points as they stared at their rapidly rising experience bars.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. As usual, online games were all about having high levels!

This spot had become a holy land for players to level up. Judging by the rate of monsters coming and dying, most of the players would probably level up once after just one day! However, such excitement and joy of leveling up would only be understood by the high-leveled players. Back in his previous life, Zhang Yang was still at Level 20, wandering about, while the top players activated the first Legendary Quest!

Of course, they did not have an insanely powerful player like Zhang Yang back then. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had activated the first Legendary Quest much earlier compared to the timeline of his previous life, because of his 'foresight'. Therefore, the number of players who had reach Level 100 and above were so much lesser than it was in his previous life!

Although that might make defending the Territory much harder, there would be fewer players to divide the experience points equally. Everyone was hooked on the fact that they were earning more experience points than they ever could in such short amount of time. They were all hoping that this battle would last until they were 20 Levels higher than the monsters. By then, any more than 20 levels, it would be pointless, as they would no longer earn any experience points.

"Boss!" Wei Yan Er's sharp eyes and nose detected the presence of a boss from a distance, like a treasure hunter.

Chapter 569: Frenzied Attacks

It was not just a boss, it was a large group of bosses!

Unless it was a Legendary Quest, it would be very hard to imagine dozens of bosses charging at you in such manner!

There was a total of 13 Zergert Beasts with wings on their backs, hovering in the sky. These Zergert Beasts were a few times larger than the normal sized Zergert Beasts. Their skins were traced with golden, runic lines. Their fangs looked extremely terrifying.

[Zergert Beast King] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 108

HP: 3,240,000

Defense: 1,800

Skills:

[Mangle]: Mauls the target with their sharp teeth, causing 150% Physical Damage to the target.

[Rushing Pounce]: Lunges towards a target from afar and pins the target down to the ground. Stuns the target for 5 seconds. Range: 3 - 20 meters.

"Here comes the Yellow-Gold equipment!" Zhang Yang smiled gently as he hopped on to Thunderhawk and flew towards the bosses.

However, Zhang Yang was not the only one who had such thoughts. Mellow Venom from Crimson Rage, One Sword Stroke from Imperial Sky, Sword of Light from Radiance and other top Tier Tankers of China had flown into the sky to engage the bosses on their [Flying Mounts]. They were merely Yellow-Gold Tier bosses after all. It was a free gift given by the system! Anyone would want to fight for it!

Zhang Yang struck one of the Zergert Beast King with his {Spear of Obliteration} while his Thunderhawk shot a blast of {Thunder Ball} at another Zegert Beast King. Felice, on the other hand, threw her {Fire Missile} straight at the third Zergert Beast King!

The Attack of Zhang Yang, Felice and Thunderhawk altogether were extremely powerful. The three bosses immediately followed Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, please spare a monster for us!" Mellow Venom had a wide grin on her pretty face. Other than Zhang Yang, everyone was only able to get one boss to follow them. Some even came back with nothing! Although they were envious of Zhang Yang for getting three bosses to follow him, this was Zhang Yang's Territory, literally! Who would dare to defy him?

However, the bad girls from Crimson Rage had been a bad influence on Mellow Venom ever since Zhang Yang last saw her. She was used to be honest and decent, but now she was just as rotten as them! Mellow Venom threw a {Provoke} on one of the bosses as she attempted to snatch that boss from Zhang Yang.

Unexpectedly, the boss actually fell for that woman's {Provoke}! It immediately turned its *ss around and charged towards Mellow Venom!

What the hell! A sexy wink can actually secure the aggro of a Yellow-Gold boss?

Zhang Yang reacted promptly as he countered Mellow Venom's attempt at stealing his boss by throwing his own {Provoke} at it. Immediately, the boss turned back to him!

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu! How can you hog it all!" Mellow Venom bit her sexy lip as she spoke. She sounded a little grumpy. Because the cooldown for {Provoke} was 10 seconds long, she couldn't do anything within that period of time. She could only bring back the boss that she lured earlier on back to the large Crimson Rage unit that awaited her.

Zhang Yang did not bother about the piteous eyes that Mellow Venom threw at him at all. He knew that she was trying to make him feel guilty for trying to snatch the boss back from her. She hoped that if any new bosses appeared again, he would be too embarrassed to snatch the bosses from her again. However, Zhang Yang was a totally different type of man compared Fatty Han and Endless Starlight. He was basically immune to

any form of seduction from a woman!

Endless Starlight had also managed to get a boss to follow him back. Along with that boss, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to secure the aggro of 4 bosses in total! It was like smacking the other players from other guilds right in their faces, saying that they were noobs! However, they couldn't say anything about it, because Zhang Yang was the owner of the Territory. Zhang Yang had absolute control over everyone in the Territory. Anyone who gets on Zhang Yang's nerves would risk being listed as a blacklisted person, never to use the Teleportation Circle of Morning Town ever again! That would be extremely troublesome for any player, losing access to the only Teleportation Circle in the Chaos Realm!

Witnessing Zhang Yang and his guild taking on the 4 bosses, other than Crimson Rage trying to steal a boss from Zhang Yang once, no one would dare pluck at the whiskers of a sleeping tiger.

The four Yellow-Gold bosses were considered a bonus for Lone Desert Smoke. With ease, the bosses were brought down, one after another. However, the bosses did not drop any loot, other than a few pieces of golden [Insect Shell]!

"Wu wu wu... why didn't these bosses drop anything valuable for us! These bastards! They're actually stingier than the noob tank!" Wei Yan Er complained grumpily.

Although they took out the bosses with ease, there were still some casualties. After all, the monsters were like a suffocating tidal wave. Fortunately, the dead players could just run all the way back here to resurrect themselves. As long as they did not die more than 10 times, the durability of their equipment should not hit 0 just yet. They should be able to fight the battle that is yet to come.

However, the City Wall of the Territory was soon completely destroyed by the horde of monsters as they began to gush into the interior area of the Territory! There was no way of repairing the destroyed City Wall. So Zhang Yang would have to reconstruct the facility from scratch all over again.

The number of player casualties began to rise tremendously as they were starting to lose their ground. There is an old saying, a large number of ants could kill an elephant! Furthermore, these were not ants! These were a large horde of elite Tier monsters! Their attributes were not far behind the regular players' attributes! Fortunately, the players still had their backs covered by the large army of NPCs, providing them some time to regain their breaths before reengaging into battle. Rockovich was really ferocious and violent. He went all out with his hammer as he continuously smashed it against the ground, creating endless shockwaves across the horde of monsters charging at him. The monsters were pushed back by the shockwaves, unable to even get close to Rockovich!

More and more freeloaders positioned themselves beside him, finishing off the monsters gleefully. It was their chance to earn even more experience points.

Players would need to hunt all over the lands and mountains for the monsters in order to grind their levels. In other words, they would be wasting half of the time just running around, looking for monsters and bosses. However, in this battle, they only had to sit back and wait, while monsters came up to them! Furthermore, the amount of experience points earned from killing an elite Tier monster was so much more than the amount of experience points earned from killing a normal Tier monster. That was why this battle was the best possible moment for the players to grind their levels.

The monsters had the edge in numbers. The players had the luxury of resurrecting themselves an unlimited number of times.

Once every three hours, there would be a new wave of Yellow-Gold bosses spawning among the horde of the monsters. The number of bosses in each spawn differed. The numbers ranged from 10 to 20. Every time they appeared, a contest of snatching the bosses would occur among the players. Whoever who acts fast would have the loot from killing the bosses.

Although Morning Town stood right in the middle of the path which led to the portal of the China Region, there were simply too many monsters to

handle. The moment the City Wall collapsed, the monsters gushed in continuously, like huge tidal waves. The defenders were unable to grab hold of each monster's aggro. A number of monsters managed to pass through as if the players never even existed in the first place. The leaks were sporadic and inconsistent. At times, only 3 to 4 monsters got past the defensive line of the players.

After all, the system had programmed the monsters to go through the portal that connects the Chaos Realm and the China Region so that they could conquer the eight Main Cities of the eight main Regions. Therefore, the monsters would go straight through the portal if their aggro is not attracted by any of the players on the battlefield.

Zhang Yang and the others could not possibly stop every single monster from getting past their defense line. It was humanly impossible for them to achieve that.

On the other side of the portal, there was a massive amount of players standing by at the Ten Barren Seas. Although those players were only Level 80 to Level 99, they definitely had the advantage in numbers. Furthermore, the Level Gap Suppression Gap function of the game would not be in effect. In other words, tens of millions of players could actually drown the monsters if each of them spat once on the monster!

One day had passed. Everyone was hungry and tired. They had lost count of the number of monsters that they have slain. However, these so-called Ancient Creatures have been in the dark, sealed up for eons. They have spent the entire time in a massive orgy, reproducing their kind and stacking up their numbers. Although millions of them had already fallen, the waves kept coming relentlessly. It was as if they came from an unlimited supply!

Zhang Yang let the Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er take turns in going offline for their break and having some food. No one could predict how long the battle would last. It would definitely affect the performance of the players in battle if one was to starve.

‘Server Announcement: The first wave of the Ancient Creatures Invasion

is about to come to an end. However, their leaders are greatly displeased. They have decided to send a stronger and vengeful wave of Ancient Creatures in the next wave!

Upon the announcement, the monsters stopped coming. Half an hour later, only piles of dead monsters were seen all over the Morning Town. The dead bodies were so closely packed that the entire land had turned dark! The Skin Flayers were very happy during the entire time of that moment. As they were too stressful in fighting off the monsters, they could not find any chance of cutting the skins from the dead monsters. So now, they took their sweet time as they harvested their goods from the ancient corpses with their little knives.

"That was just the first wave? Are you kidding me?" Zhang Yang tensed up, his face dead serious. Although players could repeatedly move back to their dead bodies and resurrect themselves as many times as they wanted to, players would only start off with 20% HP and 20% MP. They would be very vulnerable.

That was merely the first wave of the monsters. If they did not have Rockovich as the center pillar of their defensive line which held off most of the monsters, the players would have drowned in the massive wave of monsters!

Meanwhile, the system had stated clearly that the second wave of the monsters would be even more powerful! Inversely, the army of NPCs had sustained great losses, so they wouldn't be able to provide any effective support for the players in the upcoming wave.

It was fortunate enough that Rockovich was still mighty and powerful. Although he had taken up so much damage that he had only 24% HP left when the first wave ended, he was different compared to normal NPCs. The moment he disengaged from battle, his HP began to recover on its own rapidly. In just a minute, Rockovich had recovered back to his full health state.

Buzz, buzz, buzz!

Suddenly, everyone could hear the deafening sound of wings, buzzing at

a high frequency, coming from the sky. Every single player in Morning Town raised their heads up as they gazed into the distant sky, where the sound was coming from.

What they saw were dark clouds moving towards Morning Town.

About 10 Kilometers away from where the players were standing, there were countless Insect-type monsters buzzing their wings, flying towards Morning Town! These monsters were deep-red in color, with six legs and a pair of wings on their backs. They looked similar to cockroaches, but their heads were many times larger than the heads of a cockroach! Each of them was about 4 to 5 meters long!

As the monsters were about to descend from the sky into Morning Town, the entire sky was blacked out by their shadow. Darkness fell upon the players!

[Zergert Cockroach] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 115

HP: 300,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,623 - 9,623

Skills:

[Earth Dig]: When the Zergert Cockroaches are heavily wounded, they will burrow into the ground and cause their enemies to lose track of them. They can recover their HP during battle.

Note: Zergert Cockroaches are the soldiers of the Zergert Race. They are ferocious and brutal. They love to kill but also know how to protect themselves.

"What the hell! These monsters can fly in the sky, fight on the ground, and they can even go underground and hide! These monsters are more like some sort of flying amphibian that can survive in the sky, on the ground and even underground!" Fatty Han wheezed.

However, other than the aerial army, there was also a massive army of

the same Zergert Beasts from wave one on the ground. Their number was so massive that they looked like a land of darkness! In other words, players would be facing the army on the ground like how they did in the first wave of the monsters, along with a sky-full of other enemies!

This was not a one-plus-one situation we are talking about here! For example, during a battle between two players slaughtering each other up, player A could just slaughter up player B when the HP bar of player B is left with 20%. However, if player B suddenly had help from player C, and the two of them are equally strong, then player A would never be able to take out player B, even if player A went all out, trying to take their enemy down together with them!

That is the how the change in quantity affects the quality of the troops!

"Gururu...!" the Ancient Creatures were making some strange sounds. Instantly, the massive aerial army in the sky began to dive towards Morning Town, as they began to launch a uniformed assault towards the players on the ground.

"Kill one, you earn back the cost! Kill two, you earn more!" Fatty Han shouted out like a hoodlum as he drew the string on his bow, aiming at the Zergert Cockroach horde in the sky. He repeatedly released his arrows towards the horde in an attempt to get the aggro of the monsters. The Zergert Cockroaches came at Fatty Han the moment they made contact with his arrows.

Endless Starlight quickly went in between Fatty Han and the horde and kited the monsters that were coming for Fatty Han. Then he said, "Brother fatty, please cut down on the number of monsters you shoot! My tiny little limbs cannot kite too many monsters!"

"Haiyah! Monsters of this standard, little Yang could tank against hundreds of them! How can you be such trash!" Fatty Han waved his hand flippantly.

Not only was Endless Starlight silent upon hearing it, even Zhang Yang frowned hard when he overheard it. He could kite a few dozen elite Tier monsters, but hundreds of elite Tier monsters? Hmm... Zhang Yang might

have to activate his {God of War Transformation} in order to do so!

The battle raged on.

Because there were forces coming from the sky, the defense line of the players began to collapse. They were divided into many 'fragments', surrounded by the Zergert Beasts. Furthermore, the cockroaches were also bombarding them from the sky. Several players were sent to the graveyard with each volley.

The massive army of the monsters began to cover both the land and the sky. They were basically unstoppable! No player could hold their ground against the horde any much longer!

"This is outrageous! It's just too difficult!"

Everyone sighed as they could no longer see any hope of winning the battle.

Yes, why would the battle be so difficult? Zhang Yang thought about it. After pondering over it, he finally understood!

When the first Legendary Quest was triggered back in his previous life, it would be 10 more months from now! By then, there would be many more capable players. The players should also have acquired better Tier equipment by then!

Upon activating the Legendary Quest by 10 months earlier, the number of players eligible for entering Chaos Realm was minimal. There were only about 100,000 players from China Region who were capable of entering the Chaos Realm at this point. Furthermore, the equipment levels and Tiers of several players had yet to be updated to the standards of the map. Only a few players had managed to acquire some Violet-Platinum Tier equipment which they had earned by taking down the first five bosses in the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress.

Under those circumstances, it would be natural for the monsters to triumph over the players. Zhang Yang and all other players had managed to pull through because they had Rockovich and his army of 200,000. Without that additional support, the players might have already been

overwhelmed.

"Little Yang, should we be using our {Inheritance Transformations} now?" Fatty Han asked Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang thought about it, then he shook his head, "The duration of our {Inheritance Transformation} Skills is only 2 hours, no more, no less! That wouldn't be enough for us at all! Furthermore, even if we transform, that would only increase our individual power levels. It would still not be enough to take on so many monsters..."

"Then what should we do?"

"There are too few of us! Everyone, fall back to the castle for now! We shall take the terrain and buildings to our advantage to avoid the assaults of the monsters in the sky. We shall focus only on the monsters on the ground. Let's leave the monsters in the sky to the players guarding back at the Ten Barren Seas!" Zhang Yang informed.

Hundred Shots gave a command and all members of Lone Desert Smoke began to move into the buildings all across Morning Town to avoid the cockroaches in the sky, preventing their backs from being scratched by the monsters. The players from other guilds had also realized that and they began to follow suit as well.

The cockroaches in the sky did not dive down to stop the players. Instead, they continued to fly for the portal that led to the Ten Barren Seas. Their numbers were so abundant that they looked like dark clouds blotting out the sun. However, there would be tens of millions of players waiting for their arrival!

As the total number of monsters was still the same as the total number of monsters in the first wave, half of the army was basically flying over the Morning Town, leaving the other half down on the ground. In other words, the number of monsters Zhang Yang and all players had to face was only half of the number of monsters that they had to battle in the first wave of the horde. Therefore, the pressure on Morning Town was reduced tremendously, and the players were able to fend the army off without much trouble!

Chapter 570: All Out Attack

Some 10 hours later, Sun Xin Yu finally joined in. When she had logged off at the Territorial Hall Teleportation Points. It was the place that Zhang Yang and the guild had been protecting with their lives. So, when she logged into the game, she was not attacked by any monsters. She would have been shredded into pieces if she were to appear on the streets!

'Server Announcement: Edo Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!'

The server announcement popped out, 38 hours into the battle.

The first major city had fallen.

Zhang Yang and his teammates shared a look and smirked.

The main reason why the main city of the Japan-Korea Region had fallen was due to their lack of, or rather the total absence of their primary defense line, Winst Castle. Due to the fact, there were no fortified defenses whatsoever in the Japan-Korea region, the cockroaches were able to waltz into the mainland. The first wave was still bearable, as only foot soldiers marched in the first wave. However, the second waves had those flying cockroaches joining in. Due to the enemy dominating both the sky and the land, the perfectly guarded Ten Barren Sea was breached. The Ancient Creatures were able to directly swarm their City.

"Hehe, Zhang Yang. I think the Japan-Korea players are cursing your name to the high heavens by now," said Lost Dream happily.

"Noob tank. People say, "When all fingers are pointed at you, even if it is for nothing, you are a dead man." I think you should go to the temple and get yourself a lucky charm from the head monk!" said the little girl. Zhang Yang had expected it since the little girl had never been "nice" to him.

"We might need to try harder on our end too. The creatures are too strong," said Zhang Yang as he activated a {Blast Wave} and stunned more than 10 creatures. The sword procced its effect and struck them again.

"Sigh...When will this battle end?!"

"Hey. Think about it this way. The longer we fight, the more experience points we get. We won't have to look for EXP, EXP comes to you!"

"Plus! There's a ton of Gray-Silver Insect Shells!"

The experience points gained from this battle were tremendous. After one whole day and night of fighting, Zhang Yang had gained enough experience points to reach Level 107, while the others had already gain whole new levels. The main reason that Zhang Yang was able to gain such an amount of experience points was due to his sword. The sword's passive effect was so strong that it could clear waves of monsters with a {Horizontal Sweep}!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. "You know, I have a bad premonition that the Sword of Purging Devourer will be nerfed after this battle!"

"It should have been nerfed much earlier!" the little girl snorted. "All you have to do is to cast {Horizontal Sweep} and you could kill a wave of monsters in a few seconds. I would have taken several minutes to do the same! It's too unfair! Hmph!"

Zhang Yang grinned sheepishly. He realized that his sword had indeed given him a massive advantage compared to anyone else in the game. The Echo effect of the Sword of Purging Devourer would produce a power that rivals that of a nuke when paired with the {Blast Wave} AoE attack.

"Hehe. Might as well use it till I'm satisfied before the system nerfs it."

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were in charge of kiting the monsters around. Their job was to lure monsters to the entrance of the hall to allow Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, the two door guardians to block them, while the attackers kill them all with AoE skills. The strategy was by far the best and most effective method to ensure minimal death and a high kill rate.

'Server Announcement: Andong Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!'

...

'Server Announcement: Gelma Castle (India Region) has been

overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!’

...

As the battle went on, many other major cities of other region were overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures. While Japan-Korea region had lost two of their major cities, other regions had only lost, at most, one. On the other hand, Europe, North America, and China had not lost any cities for now.

At China’s end, Lone Desert Smoke had stationed many of their own members in the Ten Barren Sea to help Zhang Yang relay news about the situation back there. So far, players had the advantage in numbers. Since they were not being held back by their Levels, the troops were able to defeat them without a hitch. That being said, players dying was a hindrance as well. The graveyard was located rather far away, hence, the time taken to run back to their bodies took a while, allowing the monsters to gain a temporary advantage. If prolonged, or if the number of monsters rose, both the player’s side and the monster’s side would be evenly matched. The moment the players fail to stem the flow of monsters, they would be overwhelmed.

‘Server Announcement: Takeshi Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!’

The little kid Galileo started cracking up, "Japan-Korea have just lost another major city! Right now, they should be struggling to keep the last one up. If they lose another one, all of them will lose a level as well! Imagine the pressure and stress! Even I would pull all my hair off my head!"

Everyone humored him and laughed along.

The main purpose of a Territory or a major city was not to reduce the forces of the Ancient Creature. It was to divide the incoming force into several smaller groups to share the burden and reduce the total attack force. When a force of several 100,000 is divided equally, the resulting smaller groups would be easier to defeat. As they say, United we stand, divided we fall. Divide and Conquer. That’s what this battle was all about.

Even though the system had not made it a contest, region players competed against each other in an unspoken manner. The first one to crumble would be the one to face the greatest shame.

The fire of war was lit up, and like wildfire, it continued on raging. After 10 hours, the number of monsters that were invading had started to show signs of letting up. It was the ending of the second wave. However, right then, a loud battle cry was heard coming from the front line. It was the final burst of battle cry, which led to the fall of Rockovich, the great general. Unfortunately, he had fallen to the monsters.

The general had a simple principle. Defending Morning Town was as good as defending White Jade Empire itself. Even with his last breath, the NPC had taken a step back. He had shown the utmost bravery any soldier could ever have. However, despite having 100,000,000 HP, the poor general was unable to face the attack from both the air and the ground.

The brave general's death was not in vain. He had tanked several of the monsters for innumerable players to finish off. Without him, the DPSers would have already been overwhelmed, and their death rate would have been much higher!

"Your death shall be remembered, and your deeds shall be passed on. Rest in peace. General Rockovich, for you, are the bravest general of the White Jade Empire." Fatty Han saluted the man as he gazed into the distance.

Roughly half an hour later, the second wave of monsters was wiped out. Several minutes later, reports came in from Ten Barren Sea stating that all of the monsters had been successfully killed.

And so, the damage suffered by all regions were as such: Japan-Korea Region: 3, India Region: 2, Africa Region: 2, Australia Region: 1, South America Region: 1, North America Region: 0, Europe Region: 0, China Region: 0.

'Server Announcement: The Ancient Creatures will start their final attack!'

After the system notification had ranged for several minutes, the earth

rumbled as tiny pebbles on the ground started to dance around. The sound of a stampede could be heard from afar. As the creatures got closer, the earth trembled wildly like an earthquake.

Here it comes...

Players with flying mounts had jumped on their mounts to zoom into the sky. Their jaws dropped at the sight that greeted them.

800 huge elephants, as measuring roughly the size of a mountain were making their way to the fortress. Imagine an entity the size of a mountain, galloping on their megatonne feet towards you. Multiply that by 800. That was the fear the players were experiencing. Several seconds later, all the players, even the ones on the ground could see the incoming giants as clear as day.

A single of them would already be a huge problem to deal with. However, 800 though...

Each of them was at least 1km tall. That sort of size would hardly require any explanation as to how powerful they might be. With 800 of them were stampeding towards you, earthquakes would be the least of your problems.

[Zergert Mammoth] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 15,246 – 21,236

Skills:

[Earthquake]: Shakes the ground and deals 30,000 physical damage to all targets within 40 meters. Causes the targets to fall and unable to engage in any action for 5 seconds.

[Stomp]: Tramples a target, deals 150% melee physical attack to the target and all nearby targets.

[Thick Hide]: Increases 100% Defense for 30 seconds.

Note: The mammoth is the strongest infantry of the Zergert. Massive power and brute force are enough to trample their enemies.

800 Violet-Platinum boss... The players were either lucky or extremely unlucky...

Without a doubt, even Zhang Yang would be killed, even with the God of War Transformation.

The boss was not alone. Being shadowed by the massive mammoth, there were countless of leaping Zergert Beasts on the ground and swarms of Zergert Cockroach in the sky. If Rockovich was revived back to full health, he wouldn't be able to stand for any longer either...

The earth rumbled as the sky was blown away by the cries of the creatures. The sky was completely separated into two sides; the light of players, and the darkness of the Zergert. No wonder the battle had been classified as a Legendary Quest.

As the mammoths approached, a new boss appeared behind them.

The best way to describe them would be: octopuses. Giant, slimy, octopuses. They were walking on eight-tentacle like legs, each of them measuring close to a few hundred meters in diameter! Their appearances were outstanding enough, but since they had been eclipsed by the giant mammoths, players could only see them once they got much closer to the base. The number of those monsters was much lesser than the mammoths, roughly 80 of them. They were much stronger, however.

[Zergert Cthulhu] (Mythical, Beast)

Level: 130

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 30,653 – 38,654

Skills:

[Mind Control]: Forces all beings within 40 meters of the caster to attack each other.

[Sunder]: Severs the lifeforce of a Zergert creature, killing the target to restore 20% HP of another Zergert Creature.

Note: Cthulhu are the brains of the Zergerts. All of the Zergerts are controlled by the Cthulhu.

...

Oh lord. 800 Violet-Platinum tier bosses and 80 Mythical tier bosses. The stress and pressure was enough to send weaker soldiers frothing in their mouths.

How would they fight?

Zhang Yang almost folded his face into two with a frown. For the lack of a better plan, Zhang Yang had no choice to give up Morning town.

"Everyone! We are retreating! Retreat to Ten Barren Seas! Move! Now!" Zhang Yang cried. He had switched his chat mode to "Shout" mode to relay the message to everyone around him.

"Aye aye."

The little girl had quickly acknowledged the threat and followed Zhang Yang's command.

Every player rode their mounts and flew to the teleportation point. Those without flying mounts had used their scrolls to teleport to White Jade Castle. It would be useless for them to run on their regular mounts. By the time they were only 30% to the teleportation point, the monsters would have caught up to them and turned them into mincemeat.

...

Everyone had evacuated the town and within a few minutes, the stampede arrived. Within seconds, the town was completely flattened to the ground, with no buildings left standing. Luckily, the town was already damaged, to begin with. It matters not if the town was destroyed or not.

The problem now was, how does Zhang Yang plan to fight such a

massive force?

Chapter 571: Fallback

Albeit having died countless of times, players in the Ten Barren Sea had obtained a luxurious amount of experience points and a number of Insect Shells. Some of them who were luckier had managed to haul in a good number of Yellow-Gold Insect Shells. As a result, they had only died and lost 10% of their equipment durability.

It was a worthwhile trade. Hence, everyone was prepared to face the monsters. They had set camp outside the portal and were attacking all the monsters that came out of the portal.

Just when the atmosphere was reaching its boiling point, dark rays blasted out of the portal. Players who were camping all around the portal were startled and attacked the spot without giving any second thoughts.

There were more than 100,000 players camped outside the portal. Behind the front lines were more than a million of them. Since the monster's pathway was only limited to the portal, they were bottlenecked into it. When a monster pops its head out, it would be killed, instantly. Even though it would still be dangerous to loot the item drops, players were still getting experience points. The loots were on a first come first serve basis. Hence, when anyone attempts to loot, they would be struck by players as well.

"D*mn! Which stupid idiot is attacking me!"

"F*ck me. I was killed by players instead of monsters. Sigh. Luckily, I had just leveled up. I only lost 4% of my experience points!"

"Bastard"

Humans were amazing sheep. When they see the front liners attacking, the players behind them would jump on the bandwagon and attack the black light coming out of the portal. Even though a majority of players were still under Level 100, anyone without strong equipment would surely be killed by several hundred simultaneous attacks.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

More than ten dark lights that had managed to escape to the sky were shot down. Just when the players had come closer to loot the items, they were surprised to see that the dark lights were none other than players themselves! In a fit of haste, they had turned around to pretend they had seen nothing. If the dead player was someone prominent in the game, they might have incurred their wrath and would be a whole lot of trouble. However, even if the player would want to have his revenge, how could he search for the one guy who killed him? It was a sea of players, there was close to a million of them!

Once the news spread out that the dark lights were players, players from outside the portal stopped attacking blindly. In truth, Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky, and other guilds who were still in the portal had spread the news of the oncoming third wave of monsters. However, since the start of the game, there were a total of 2,000,000,000 players worldwide. China alone had taken up to 200,000,000 players!

Even though half of that of that colossal number were players lower than Level 50 and were ineligible to participate in the Legendary Quest, there were still close to 80,000,000 players in Ten Barren Sea. With such a large number of players, it would take a super-charged megaphone to deliver a single message. While many pairs of eyes were locked onto the portal, the public channel was filled with constant scolding and chitter-chatters. It was as noisy as a night market.

As a result, the first batch of players who had tried to escape was unfortunately killed.

When Zhang Yang's crew had arrived at the portal door, the sea of mega monsters was only less than 1 kilometer away from them. Zhang Yang tried his luck. He jumped onto the Thunderhawk, turned on his name tag and all the titles and switched to the public channel and shouted. "Brothers and sisters of China! The monsters are coming now! This wave of monsters is extremely strong! Please work together! We must stop the monsters here and now! We will take the Level +4 reward as well as be the greatest nation amongst all others! Let the bastards of Europes, North America, and India eat our dust!"

In the beginning, his voice was completely overwhelmed by the noisy environment. However, when players had spotted Zhang Yang's name was coming up in the public channel, they kept quiet, stopped their argument, and listened. Within half a minute, the entire area around the portal, as well as the islands around fell silent. It was so quiet that you could hear the sound of everyone's beating pulse, not to mention their ragged breathing!

Zhang Yang repeated his words over and over until all players were responding with a burning vigor.

One Sword Stroke, Greensleeve Prince, Snow Seeker, and the rest of the guildmasters nodded their heads as they acknowledged Zhang Yang's position. If someone else were to speak, people would not even care about you. Zhang Yang was someone. He was the idol of everyone in China and the level of admiration towards him was unrivaled.

RAAWWWR!

1 kilometer might seem far for a normal person. However, for mountain-sized monsters that could cover 100 meters with each step, it was merely a few strides away. A gigantic head emerged out of the portal. The portal adjusted its size to match the entity that was moving through it. Judging from the size to which the portal had enlarged, the monster that was passing through it was frightening.

"My lord...just how big is this monster! The portal just keeps on growing!"

"F*ck! It's a Violet-Platinum boss!"

"Crap! What level is it? I can't see it!"

When the creature appeared in Ten Barren Sea, everyone started throwing their opinions into the public channel. There was even someone who was standing on the other half of the island could spot the monsters.

"Arghh!" The Zergert Mammoth growled deafeningly and stomped its gigantic furry legs to the ground.

WHAM!

A massive quake struck the land and a sea of players was dealt with 30,000 damage. The ground cracked and many players fell to the ground. After only 1 second, there were countless of white lights floated away. Those were players that had been instantly killed by the boss' stomp attack.

30,000 damage was nothing but a scratch for Zhang Yang. However, Level 70, 80 players that had equipped themselves with top-tiered Violet-Platinum or Yellow-Gold equipment had trouble pushing their maximum HP to 30,000.

"KILL!" Still, death was nothing to them. All they had to do was to revive, repair their broken equipment and, come back to the spot again and again.

After the first attack from the Ancient Creature had ended, countless of wooden arrows, Frost Arrow, Fire Missiles burst into the air and shot down towards the boss. Berserkers and Thief class players had no choice but to charge into the wave of monsters bravely. As long as they land a single hit, they were eligible to claim the loot. If they were lucky enough to land the killing blow, it would be 50% experience points for them alone.

It was, after all, a Violet-Platinum boss.

For players under Level 100 who had not even managed to enter the Dragon Throat Fortress, fighting a Violet-Platinum boss was a rare attempt. Hence, when a sea of Violet-Platinum boss appeared to them, everyone got hyped up and fight on like a mad dog.

There was a saying, an elephant can squash an ant effortlessly, but falls to a sea of ants. Even though the mammoth boss was as large as a mountain, the number of players that could attack it in close range was close to a thousand. In the same time, the players that could attack it afar could reach 100,000 and more.

Even if 99% of all the players there could only deal 1 damage, one wave of attack would be close to 100,000 damage! The amount of accumulated damage was not to be looked down upon.

Sadly, even though there were many players around, as many as a

thousand players had perished with one boss attack.

Zhang Yang locked its gaze to the mammoth and commanded Endless Starlight. "Go and kite that boss. Do not let it roam around freely! Fantasy, take care of Endless."

Endless Starlight had a flying mount. Kiting the boss from the sky could help reduce the death rate by a large number if he could control its aggro properly.

"Boss, that's just one boss. There're still hundreds of them still inside the portal!" cried Endless Starlight as he rode his giant hornet towards the boss.

"It won't matter. If it's too much for you to handle, run. You'll be fine even if you're killed. As long as the killing blow is not from a player. Come on, the repairing fee is nothing but a few gold coins!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Dummy, could our people hold the line?" asked Han Ying Xue after Endless Starlight has left with Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Obvious not." Zhang Yang said with a straight face. "800 Platinum-Gold boss and 80 Mythical boss is something that we are not capable of stopping."

"Then, why did you ask Endless Starlight to go on like that! I thought we actually have a shot at winning!"

"Hahaha. It's called strategy and morale. If the lord of a city professes his weakness at the beginning of the siege, how would his army fight with their lives on the line? Right now, we should try to reduce the enemies' number as much as we could. After the front line is breached, we can still rely on defensive strategies to wipe them all!"

"As I recall, isn't there a celestial boss in the main city? Let them reach there, and the boss will kill them all with a swift ulti attack!"

Zhang Yang shook his head. "In this kind of story-based quest, NPCs will provide help but we cannot rely on them as the main force. Back then, when Princess Serena dominated all seven kingdoms, why didn't the so-called celestial bosses come out to defend their cities? I strongly feel that

the battle has been left to the players. Only when victory is at hand, the NPC will come out to clear the dust for us."

"...That...doesn't make any sense," said Daffodil Daydream.

"Sigh...If you want a more logical explanation...gimme a sec. If there are too many monsters, the strong would not want to waste their soldiers. They would try to do something sneaky like assassination or poison-work to reduce the enemy forces. All in all, this is just a game. Let's just strap in and survive this." Zhang Yang shrugged and everyone else had no choice but to accept his reasoning.

Undoubtedly, there were many players attacking the boss. Even though the boss had a staggering HP of 50,000,000, players were still able to inflict a significant amount of damage even if they only dealt 1 damage each.

Just when players had hopes of killing the first boss, echoes of "arugh" were heard from the portal. Seven mammoths had just made their way through the portal, followed by the battalion of creatures behind.

Just when they thought the seven was more than enough, the same growl was heard again and more than 10 mammoths had emerged out of the portal, followed by the Zergert Cthulhu behind.

"It's a hit! A hit each, I'm telling you! No need to fight for the boss. There's one for everyone!"

"Hit? There's so many bosses, one of them is enough to knock your head off your neck. How do we fight?!"

"I think I need to wear glasses in the game, for I am seeing several hundreds of Violet-Platinum boss!"

"Relax, you're vision is fine. I'm seeing a few Mythical bosses here!"

Right then, players finally understood why Zhang Yang had warned them earlier. This wave of monsters is indeed strong. In fact, they were strong as f*ck!

Chapter 572: The Melancholic of Sword of Light

Well, with many bosses, come many drops. Investors would even walk through the valley of shadows just to earn 100% or 200% profit deals. In comparison, equipment damage that players had to pay on death was nothing compared to the chance of obtaining a boss' loot!

Hence, after a short session of panic and confusion, players made a huge come back when they realized the benefits of rushing up to the bosses.

Such a scene had made even the calm Zhang Yang shocked. It was something he had never had expected. Zhang Yang could not help but shake his head in disappointment. A fool would always commit a fool's deed. They knew nothing about the danger of the boss, hence the absence of fear. The space in their hearts had been completely filled by greed. F*ck logic!

However! It was good!

Is it not greed that causes most wars? Greed and the will to live are yin and yang. Both emotions could instill a zealous fervor that would drive a man to fight.

The burst damage inflicted by hundreds of bosses at the same time was of nuke-level. After each wave of attack, players would die at the rate of a few 100,000s at a time. It could not be helped. The Zergert Mammoth AoE attacks were too strong. One stomp could kill as many as a thousand players. Note that there 800 of them were spread across the islands, enhancing their overall killing power.

"Dive! Dive into the sea! Fan out! Try not to group together! The damage dealt by the mammoth would be reduced by half in the water." Zhang Yang soared into the sky and bellowed to everyone around him.

One man's voice is nothing but as tiny pop in the midst of an explosion. However, when 40,000 players scream their lungs out, it was an explosion above another explosion. Their voices could even dampen the noisy cries

of the monsters.

During times of war, soldiers would be extremely receptive to one man's voice, their commander. Instantly, players around ran into the water and forced the attacking monsters to split up.

Zhang Yang smirked and switched to the party channel. "Follow me. We're going to kill a straggler."

His party members nodded. Zhang Yang had taken this time, while many players were still alive and kicking to sneak away to kill some bosses. It was to pick off the strong ones to lighten the load. In a way, it was doing the other players a favor. Zhang Yang original plan was to hunt the boss himself so that other would be able to snatch his loot! The few bosses that had died previously had only dropped Silver-Gray, Yellow-Gold, and Violet-Platinum Insect Shells. Since the officials had revealed that the highest tier equipment available for trade was the Violet-Platinum, a Mythical boss would drop a Mythical Insect Shell. In that case, those higher tiered bosses would be dropping Mythical equipment!

Zhang Yang did not want to hunt for Insect Shells, so, he had led his team of 27 Lone Desert Smoke members with flying mounts to search for stragglers.

"There!" cried Sun Xin Yu as she raised a jade-white hand towards the corner of an island. There was a Zergert Cthulhu that had wandered far off from its original position. Zhang Yang had guessed that a party of players must have thought that they could kill it once they had successfully lured it away from the bulk of the swarm. So much for their smart idea.

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang shot down to the boss as quickly as he could. The Cthulhu boss was already on its way back to the swarm. If it makes it back, it would extremely difficult to draw it out again.

Pew!

The Violet Thunderhawk zoomed across the sky, leaving a trace of blue

light trails and brought Zhang Yang to the boss. Once he was in range, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, successfully inflicting it with a wound that it spewed grayish brown blood out. The spear had dealt close to 26,000 damage to it.

A split second later, an axe flew past Zhang Yang and struck the boss. Even though Zhang Yang had not observed the resulting damage value, he knew that it was lower than Zhang Yang's since the boss was not provoked by it and charged towards Zhang Yang instead.

Zhang Yang turned his head and glared at the axe-thrower. It was Sword of Light, the guild master of Radiance. Others had already spotted this fat piece of cake.

With the overall success of the war, one must have no civil war in one's nation. Zhang Yang stopped his attack and said, "Sword dude. I propose that we fight the boss together. As for the loot, let us compete with our total damage dealt. The winner shall have the first pick. If it's an even number, we shall divide it equally. If it's an odd number, the one with the higher number shall have one equipment extra!

"I agree." Sword of Light was not stupid, he too shared the same view and neither of them should be fighting each other for a boss loot. He had a team of around 30 members, hence, he should have the upper hand.

The two guilds parted ways. Each heading to either end of the boss and started their attack.

Even though only their guild masters had spoken, there was a burning sense of competition brewing in the atmosphere. Neither of them wanted to lose to the other guild! Especially the guild Radiance. They had always been eclipsed by Lone Desert Smoke and had never gotten the chance to stand out. Even if they win the boss fight, it wouldn't prove anything. Still, at the very least, they would not want to lose to Lone Desert Smoke in DPS fight.

Both guilds divided their own members into different positions. Naturally, the tanks stood in the front and the healers heal from behind, while the attackers attack from the sidelines.

After fighting for a short period, Sword of Light felt that something was off. His Rage was not adding up normally! It was something that had never occurred to him before!

He realized the reason behind the odd situation. He had not been attacked by the boss.

A Warrior has 3 ways to regenerate Rage points. The first being time. Rage will regenerate slowly over time. If that was too slow, a Warrior could also inflict damage via their normal attack. The stronger the damage inflicted, the more Rage points he will recover. Lastly, a warrior has to receive damage to restore their Rage points. The higher the damage inflicted on them, the higher the Rage point regained. A successful {Block} could also restore Rage points, but it required a Warrior to be targeted in the first place. The active skill {Blood Rage} can also restore Rage points, however, it had a one minute cooldown period, hence one shouldn't rely on the skill to restore Rage points.

Tanks can only use a one-handed weapon, and their armor was mostly defense oriented. They would have 30% or even 50% less attack power when it comes to a Spellcaster and Berserker with equipment of equal tier. A tank will mainly rely on attack to restore Rage points, as they had 30% extra regeneration via attack.

However, the God of War Inheritance belonged to Zhang Yang alone, only he would have the ability to equip a two-handed equipment.

Since Sword of Light had never been struck by the boss, so he could only rely on his normal attacks to regenerate his Rage. Sword of Life's weapon was strong. It was a Level 100 Violet-Platinum axe. One axe attack would score 30 to 40 Rage points. However, his axe had a 2.8-second attack interval. During that time, he could have already unleashed 3 skills. However, {Destructive Smash} costs 45 Rage points! {Thunder Strike} and {Cripple Defense} could be cast but only the two of them could be cast. He would not have any more Rage points to cast the third skill.

It was a waste of global cooldown time, which led to lesser aggro gain, and the boss would never attack him. With such a derailed cycle, the aggro

value would only drop lower and lower which would lead to the boss completely ignoring him. The gap would only widen.

Sword of Light started to panic. When the attacking class is competing with the opponent, he too was competing! However, what could a tank compete with? Obviously, the aggro generation rate! Sword of Light immediately cast the costless {Provoke}. Technically, {Provoke} should not work on a Mythical tier boss, but surprisingly, the Zergert Cthulhu had taken the skill and turned towards him to attack.

With a single attack, it attacked Sword of Light by over 23,000 damage, causing Sword of Light to recharge all of his Rage points! With moments to spare, Sword of light quickly sent out all the skills that could generate the most aggro and take his place at the top of the aggro list.

{Provoke} worked by inflicting 99% of the aggro inflicted from a previous attack and forcing the monster to attack the caster for 2 seconds. If Sword of Light wants to maintain his position at the top of the aggro list, he has to generate adequate aggro value to compensate for the 1% aggro. If he not, once {Provoke} ends, the boss will turn back to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang noticed how Sword of Light was struggling and had decided to unequip his shield. At most, he will compete as an attacker instead of a tank! Who has set the rule that a tank cannot be an attacker? No one. However, Zhang Yang never had the chance to do so. Luckily for him, he had a free punching bag to fully let loose.

Zhang Yang had never wanted compete for China's best tank. Even if he had not wanted to, he was sitting on the King of Tanks throne. Even if he had not realized it, he was looking down on the others. Sword of Light had always wanted to compete with Zhang Yang, but Zhang Yang had never had the thought of it.

The weak will only seek to compete with others to prove that he is better than others, while the strong will only seek to be stronger than his own past self.

Sword of Light heart tightened the moment when his {Provoke} ended. The boss had not turned his back and had continued to attack Sword of

Light instead of Zhang Yang. Sword of Light relaxed a little, but when he spotted that Zhang Yang was nowhere far from him in the aggro list, his heart sank a little. Zhang Yang could overtake him at any moment! Sword of Light could never let his guard down, even for a fraction of a second.

Sword of Light sighed in disbelief. It was the first time in his gaming life that he had ever performed well for a tank.

TPS or Threat Per Second and DPS, Damage Per Second are different mechanics. DPS is used to measure an attacker's prowess and TPS is used to judge a tank's. A tank's TPS may be high but he might be performing poorly as an overall combatant. Surely, a good tank would have high TPS.

Sword of Light had discovered that his TPS was at most 18,000, which was an extremely high for a tank. It was similar to that of a DPS that exceeds 18,000! His TPS would not be something that any player could reach easily.

Sword of Light was overjoyed. His normal TPS achieved was usually 12,000. However, the pressure of Zhang Yang's presence in the field had increased his TPS generation by 50%. As expected, motivation derived from pressure.

However, Zhang Yang is no ordinary player!

Sword of Light checked the aggro list and bit his lips in anger. Zhang Yang was only behind him by about 1,000! Zhang Yang was in the same situation that he had been earlier on, the boss was not damaging him, so Zhang Yang should not have enough Rage to attack! However, Zhang Yang was still able to tailgate Sword of Light closely. If it was Sword of Light who was in that position, he would surely fall back!

As expected China's number one tank!

"But, I will defeat you!" Sword of Light muttered verbally. He glared at Zhang Yang not with hatred, but with a competitive mindset. His eyes froze at the sight of a shieldless Zhang Yang.

Not wearing his shield? What's going on!?

If a tank wears the exact same equipment with an attack, the tank could

deal only 50% to 70% of the damage of an attacker. A tank can only inflict high TPS value by relying on aggro generating skills. A shield is a tank's trademark!

All skills and attack can only inflict increased aggro value when equipping the shield! A tank without his shield would be nothing but a severely underpowered attacker!

However, Zhang Yang could still generate enough aggro by inflicting damage as an attacker! It only meant one thing, Zhang Yang could have easily defeated him if he had his shield on!

Sword of Light had been blowing his own hot bubble, while Zhang Yang had no intention of fighting him on even grounds! He was in his own world!

With that, Sword of Light was distracted and had slowed down by half a beat in attacking.

Even though Zhang Yang had been attacking the boss, he felt bored, since he could not use {Shield Bash} to increase his attack. His DPS was around 25,000, while Sword of Light had been fighting with 100% concentration but only could cough out 18,000 TPS.

It was not that Sword of Light was weak, on the contrary, his aggro controlling skill was so strong that he could be one of the top 10 tanks in China. However, the person he was competing with was Zhang Yang, the man with the God of War Inheritance! He had a 50% attack boost passive skill and the little girl's {Strength Aura} which was a 12% Strength bonus. His weapon was a Level 120 Mythical tier Two-Handed Axe. His DPS was so strong that even the little girl would have to bow her head to him! As such, no other tanks without powerful Inheritances could compete with his TPS power.

Zhang Yang had been pulling his punches. If he had gone all out with the boss, Sword of Light would have been facing the boss' arse all day long!

Since Sword of Light had missed an attack chance, Zhang Yang had managed to surpass Sword of Light's skill cast by 1. The poor Sword of

Light who had been struggling to remain a hair-breadth ahead of a shieldless Zhang Yang immediately fell apart and lost his lead.

The boss immediately turned around to Zhang Yang and hurled its thick foot at Zhang Yang.

"What!?"

Zhang Yang was surprised to encounter the boss attack. His hands flipped to his back in a flash and he equipped his shield. With extreme reflex, Zhang Yang raised his shield and protected himself.

{Block}!

Sword of Light had finally awoken from his distraction and gave Zhang Yang a weak smile. Inside, his heart was crumbling. Lord have mercy. How could a tank have such brute attack power!? Sword of Light should not have been worried about aggro if it was against the DPS of a half-*ssed attacker!

Just when Sword of Light decided to give up his own competition, his eyes locked onto Zhang Yang's hands.

"Y-You're using a Two-handed weapon!" cried Sword of Light as he had only then discovered the oddity. However, Sword of Light saw the bigger picture. How could a tank use a two-handed weapon? He had always thought that Zhang Yang's sword was a little too big. However, he had realized that if it was a one-handed sword, it should have a lower attack power! Zhang Yang should not be able to have such a high attack!

"Well, yeah!" said Zhang Yang as he blocked the boss attack. In his "shielded" status, he had the attack from {Block's} reflect damage, and {Shield Bash} which could increase his attack power. Furthermore, he could fully focus on the boss and had nothing need to be distraught about.

Sword of Light lost his mind. All this time he had been fighting beyond his limits, and Zhang Yang was not even trying. Just when, he had thought of something and asked Zhang Yang, "Did your Inheritance give you the ability to use a two-handed weapon, and increase your damage? If so, how much bonus damage does it give?"

"Both. I have a passive skill that adds 50% attack damage!" Zhang Yang had no intention of hiding his secrets. All kinds of Inheritance will be explored thoroughly, sooner or later. Zhang Yang was not afraid of his secrets being leaked out. It was not something to be so secretive about, to begin with.

Chapter 573: Sharing the Loots

"S class inheritance!" Sword of Light cried out loud as he sucked in a deep breath.

Sword of Light would not have much trouble obtaining a C class Inheritance. He had done his research all about Inheritance. Although the information he obtained from the official site was not adequate, the official had released a few notices about the bonus attack that each Inheritance would provide. For example, the bonus attack passive that Zhang Yang had just revealed. According to official database, only an S class Inheritance could provide such a staggering amount of attack boost. An A class Inheritance would only provide a 45% attack boost, B class 40%, C class 35%. Deduct 5% for each descending tier and Z class Inheritance would only have 5% attack boost. Hence, the lowest Inheritance Sword of Light had allowed himself to obtain was a B class Inheritance.

Sword of Light was pretty lucky himself. He had managed to obtain pieces of the "Gaia's Warrior" Inheritance Fragment which was a Class B. However, his fragments had been sitting in his inventory since Sword of Light had failed to defeat the last boss to obtain the last piece.

He wanted to finish the quest and proceed on with the Inheritance quest as soon as possible to obtain the Inheritance upgrade and further strengthen himself. However, there were only around 2,500 Level 100 players in Radiance. Even though he had sortied a large group of Level 100 players, he had never once succeeded in killing the boss.

It could not be helped, the level difference between the boss and his guild members was too great. Like Zhang Yang's case, without a [Forbidden Scroll] to reduce the boss attack, or to increase the defense of the party, it would be impossible for Sword of Light and his guild to defeat the boss.

If they had problems with a B class Inheritance, what about an S class Inheritance? As such a thought suddenly crossed over his mind, Sword of

Light had great admiration for Lone Desert Smoke. Someone had already defeated the boss for an S class Inheritance while they had trouble even defeating a B class Inheritance boss. That was the difference of strength between the two guilds.

There was no way he could have figured out that it was all thanks to Felice's berserk spree during the battle of the black dragon. Due to that misunderstanding of him defeating the dragon all by himself, a boss of an S class Inheritance quest, which had led to Sword of Light's misconceived grasp of Lone Desert Smoke strength, the shame of it was so great that he could just find a wall and bang his head until he passes out.

If Zhang Yang could read his mind, he would have been snickering, or perhaps shaking his head in disappointment.

Sword of Light felt a chilling fear down his spine as his guild members were all frowning at how crazy Lone Desert Smoke members were!

In the total damage output list, Lone Desert Smoke had dominated the board by having 66% of the total DPS while Radiance had only 34%. If was more than half! Lone Desert Smoke only had 28 members. Three of them were tanks, 3 healers, and 22 attackers. Radiance, on the other hand, had 2 tanks, 4 healers, and 23 attackers.

Although they had more players on their side, one or two non-attacker class should not have made much difference whereas Radiance should have the upper hand by having one more attacker! How could Lone Desert Smoke manage to create such a big difference in DPS when they had one less attacker!

What's the point of continuing the fight? They would be only creating shame for themselves.

In the DPS list ranking, Zhang Yang ranked absolute first. Coming up next in descending order was Fatty Han, Daffodil Daydream, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Ghostly Leaf, Hundred Shots, Galileo, Dominance Unparalleled, and the 10th place, was Tang Dynasty Reverie.

What a shame. The strongest, most admired attacker in Radiance, Ghostly Leaf had been pushed down to 6th place. What a shame...

"Chicaculala!"

As the players pushed each other strike harder and faster, the Zergert Cthulhu had made a piercing noise that threatened to turn everyone's brain into jelly. All of the sudden, everyone lost control of their characters and started to attack one another.

It was the boss's mind control skill. Luckily, the skill required the boss constant channeling to induce the effect successfully and continuously. As such, many low-players, attackers and healers alike started turning against each other.

{Warrior's Will}!

Both Zhang Yang and Sword of Light simultaneously activated the skill and headed to the boss to interrupt the boss' channeling. Since the two of them were the closest to the boss, they had started attacking each other. However, since their status removal skills were activated almost instantly, they had managed to escape the skill, holding back their weapons from each other's throats and diverting its trajectory to the boss instead.

Unlike the guild masters, the other members had dispelled their debuffs a few milliseconds after. They were all players around Level 100, all classes by then should have status removal skills.

Once everyone had dispelled the skill, the boss stopped its channeling and hurled its hairy legs at Zhang Yang. The legs were hard and long, like a carapace of a spider. The legs had long spikes that were sharp and deadly.

The boss had {Sunder} that could restore a Zergert Creature by 25% of its HP at the cost of sacrificing another Zergert creature. It was an extremely convenient skill. The boss could basically restore all of his HP by sacrificing five monsters.

Zhang Yang had already kited the boss further away from the portal. However, the number of monsters on the island were overflowing. There would be strays that had made their way to where they were. Hence, Zhang Yang had dispatched several teams, each complete with a tank and a healer to hunt and kill the strays. It was imperative to prevent strays

from getting too close to the boss and becoming his "food".

The boss had a staggering 100,000,000 HP. In spite of that, 50 over players were able to hack away his HP like a hot knife through butter. The boss' most annoying skill was {Mind Control}. Luckily, the skill had a 2-minute cooldown which was only double that of Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will}, allowing him to easily counter the boss.

However, Sword of Light was unlike Zhang Yang. For his level, Zhang Yang had already obtained more skill points than he should actually have. It was all thanks to many First Clear Achievements and other feats that he had accomplished. Sword of Light's SPs were all gained via normal means, hence, his skill {Warrior's Will} was not yet maxed out. Other players, either in Radiance, or Lone Desert Smoke were unlucky to have lower SP. Hence, their status removal skills could not be maxed out to lower the cooldown time. At most, they could only dispel one of three occurrences. When they could not dispel the skill, all they could do was to let their characters roam around, killing their own friends.

However, players were not as dumb as monsters. Once they had understood the boss's mechanics, it was easier to judge the boss' movement and skill activation timing to preemptively leave the skill radius. Sadly, it took them several tries to get a hold of the boss' timing.

As such, the boss' strongest skill was easily countered by Zhang Yang. At most, the boss had only delayed the player's DPS timing by diverting their attacks momentarily.

70%...40%...10%...

After what that seemed to be a draggy, time consuming, barrage of attacks, the boss was finally killed. Its mountain-sized body hardened into brittle stone before turning into dust. However, no matter how well animated its death scene is, the players' sight were all fixed on the boss loot.

"Guild master Zhan Yu. After you," said Sword of Light calmly. As a guild master, he must maintain his posture and mannerism. His short, momentarily lapse of control was but a spark of something greater. It

created a burning determination in his heart to surpass Lone Desert Smoke. To surpass Zhan Yu!

The boss had dropped a total of five equipment. Two among them were Mythical tier, and the rest were Violet-Platinum equipment. Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed. If only there were three Mythical loot, Zhang Yang could have gained two Mythical equipment. An extra Violet-Platinum equipment would not do much for him since Level 130 was still a long journey ahead.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Sword of Light, why don't I take two items and you have the rest?"

Sword of Light rolled his eyes. Without thinking, he had already known that Zhang Yang would take the only two Mythical tier equipment. Only an idiot would trade two Violet-Platinum equipment for a Mythical tier. Sword of Light shook his head and said, "Stick to the agreement earlier. As guild masters ourselves, we must show an example to our members!"

Zhang Yang sighed and picked up one of the Mythical tier equipment, while Sword of Light picked the other. As for the Violet-Platinum equipment, Zhang Yang did not need even to examine the equipment to pick them. On the other hand, Sword of Light had thoroughly checked the equipment before taking one of them. The last Violet-Platinum equipment belonged to Zhang Yang by default.

"Noob tank! Did we get anything good?" When it comes to their own gang, the little girl would shamelessly claim dips on anything that applied to her. On the other hand, when there were other players around, the little girl was proactive enough to act befittingly to her lower position to make sure that Zhang Yang gets the respect he deserves.

Zhang Yang smiled and shared the equipment's properties.

[Zergert Cthulhu's Fang] (Mythical, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 1,927 – 2,527

Attack Interval: 1.7 seconds.

DPS: 1,310

Equip: Increases damage by 14%.

Equip: Grants a chance to inflict {Confusion} on a target with every successful attack. Target will be unable to control its movement for 5 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Reduces the Level Requirement by 20 levels.

Zhang Yang added, "The other Mythical tier equipment was a Cloth Armor glove."

Everyone else immediately understood his actions. No matter what type of class a player is, a weapon held the most influence in a player's prowess. Hence, in a situation where Zhang Yang could only pick one item out of the haul, Zhang Yang had picked the weapon instead of armor.

The dagger was a Thief's weapon. After both Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream rolled for it, the item was won over by Lost Dream.

"Feeling down?" asked Han Ying Xue in a private message to Zhang Yang.

"Why should I be?"

"Because your mistress' gift has fallen into someone else's hands!"

Zhang Yang snorted. "Since when were you the legit wife and she was the mistress?"

There was a loud crowd cheering from the side of Radiance. It was most probably Sword of Light sharing the equipment properties to all his members see the first Mythical tier equipment they had ever laid eyes upon.

"Tsk. What a bunch of loser...Why are they getting all excited about a Mythical tier equipment!" said Fatty Han pretending to be someone who had already seen it all.

"Haha! Fatty bro! You did drool and pop your eyes out when you first saw

a Mythical tier equipment, didn't you?"

"Huh!? I'm just a cool and calm guy. Would I be that outrageous?"

"Hehehe. I did record your reaction then though. How about I post it on the forums? That said, Fatty bro is a popular guy. Perhaps there would be a line of chicks waiting to express their admiration towards you!"

"Endless Starlight. Have you been constipating recently?" Fatty Han asked with an evil grin.

"Huh? Yeah. I actually am. But, why'd you ask?" Endless Starlight cocked his head.

"Because when I'm through with you, you won't be getting any constipation for the rest of your life!"

Chapter 574: Reinforcement

Even though they had successfully killed a boss, the number of monsters flowing out of the portal door did not ebb. Sadly, the players' killing speed was not as fast as the monster spawn rate. Hence, players had beginning to lose their advantage even though the monsters were bottleneck through the portal. Slowly, yet surely, the monster had gained the battle superiority and had pressured the players to the edge of retreat.

For better or worse, the monsters had made their way to the mountains and deeper into the lands. The player's death rate had far exceeded the revival rate. Players who had just revived themselves were immediately torn to shreds.

The problem was the mammoths. Its powerful stomps were killing players who had just revived themselves. It was a complete bloodbath. Whenever a player revives, they would only start with 20% HP. It was not a mystery that they were instantly killed by the stomps of the mammoths.

They were losing.

"What should we do now?"

Everyone could see the sea of monsters that was coming from the horizon. The darkened sky that signified their doom was made worse when hundreds of giant figures emerged out of the horizon.

"Fall back. We kill them as we retreat," said Zhang Yang. "There's nothing that we can do but buy some extra time with our lives. We should at least slow them down until they stop spawning. When that happens, it's our time to strike hard."

"Easier said than done!"

Monsters were an issue. Several players could still manage to hold it up by a thin line. Even if the players were killed, at the very least, they could bring down many monsters with them. The bosses would be another issue.

A strong boss would be a stronger killing machine compared to a magic cannon. Even though the Zergert Cthulhu were Mythical tier bosses, they

were positioning themselves behind the mammoths as their supporters. Every minute, they would take one small monster and tear out their souls to heal the mammoth. It was {Sunder} and it could grant the mammoths an ever-regenerating body!

The previous Cthulhu that Zhang Yang had managed to kill earlier was only by luck. No way that they could kill the Cthulhu if it was "paired" up with a mammoth.

In a strategic formation, the Zergert army had crossed the Ten Barren Sea and left behind a mass of dead bodies of both monsters and players.

Right after the border of Ten Barren Sea, the monster army split into eight smaller battalions and made their way to eight different directions. Each battalion of monsters still contained many monsters and bosses with them, but they were far more manageable now.

"Each major city will face an attack of 100 Violet-Platinum bosses and 10 Mythical tier bosses. That's their plan!"

"What a scary formation!"

"D*mn that Cthulhu thing! It could heal the mammoths! A perfect tank and a healer formation! How are we supposed to defeat them?"

"It's impossible. There's no way we could get close to that thing! We'll be dead when the elephant thing takes a single step!"

Everyone started exchanging ideas. However, even though the monster army had indeed been split apart, each of the mammoths was a problem to deal with. No matter what strategies players came up with, there would always be a flaw.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he gazed the battlefield from the skies. "It's a pity. We might not get that Level +4 reward."

Based on the current strength of the players, Zhang Yang had foreseen that the monsters would inevitably reach the city gates. It was impossible for them to hold the defensive line in Ten Barren Sea, hence losing the best result and reward. The next tier of rewards that they could aim for would be the Level +3 reward."

"Are you seriously still thinking about rewards now?" Han Ying Xue crossed her arms under her breasts. Unsupported, they would completely envelop her arms, but that was another story..."Hello?" She snapped her fingers, annoying Zhang Yang. "Wake up! It's not the time to dream about palaces, gardens, and the 72 concubines. Be satisfied with your own temple!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her joke. "No matter. The monsters dividing up is a good thing. For better or worse, it is still far manageable than having one massive army."

When the mammoths were in a line formation, their destructive power was unparalleled. It was not the mammoth and Cthulhu formation but only mammoths. Back at Ten Barren Sea, when all 800 mammoths grouped up, it was as if the pantheon of gods had descended to lay waste on the earth.

However, when the monsters were divided into eight different battalions, even though their attack power was still unbelievably strong, it was possible for players to fight with hope.

The monster came to a flat road and players had retreated down further to set up their absolute defense line. There, players would use the same bottleneck strategy to hold the line. However, even when their total attack power was reduced down to only 1/8, the battalion of monsters was still able to trample their way through the line and move on into the city. The players had failed to take into account that by allowing the monsters to clog up, their stomps would stack, causing even more devastation.

Several hours later, the monster army arrived at the city gates. Players then split up to defend their own cities of origin. Since there were free Teleportation points in between cities, players were able to maneuver in between cities with great speed to replenish defenses in different cities.

There were NPC there who joined in the battle. However, according to the NPC themselves, the Empire's army had left the city to suppress an uprising. They had left a few days ago, and would take a few days to return! Well, obviously that was a scripted. The system clearly wanted

players to rely on themselves to win the war. If they cannot do that, they would have to wait for the reinforcements to arrive. While players were forced to wait, the monsters were already knocking on the main gates.

Players immediately burned their pockets to set up the portable magic canons. A city was not the same as a Territory. A city could have unlimited numbers of cannons. Hence, when the number of cannons had reached over a hundred, the damage inflicted with a simultaneous attack would be as equally devastating to the monsters. Unfortunately, when the cannons were fired, it had drawn the attention of the flying cockroaches in the sky.

As such, groups of valiant players had put all their efforts in hopes to protect the one thing that could aid them.

‘Server Announcement: Bahamas Castle (Africa Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creature!’

...

‘Server Announcement: Hangul Castle (Africa Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creature!’

...

As long as the war was still going on, the server channel would announce castles being torn apart by monsters. As such, Japan-Korea Region had suffered the highest damage, with FIVE major cities lost. On the other hand, North America had finally popped its cherry by losing one city. The only two great regions that had not lost a single city were China and Europe.

‘Server Announcement: All Ancient Beings have initiated their final charge. Heroes, press on, and victory shall be in hand!’

Zhang Yang sighed in relief. Finally, after a continuous chain of bad news, something good has come. From here on out, the monsters will cease spawning. Killing them now would drastically reduce their overall strength!

With such news in hand, players cheered on and started their final sprint. Though the monsters no longer had reinforcements, a great

number of them were already clogged up outside the city gates.

‘Server Announcement: Elrond Castle (Europe) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Beings!’

Unfortunately for Europe, they had just lost their first city, making China the only region that was still unblemished!

Now that the war had almost come to a climax, Zhang Yang did not hesitate to unleash his powers. Zhang Yang leaped down from the castle wall and activated his God of War Transformation in midair. Then, he flew into the swarm of monsters and laid down his attacks. He had even risked his life to draw the attention of a few mammoths and Cthulhus to draw them from the cities.

After he had dealt with a portion of the enemy, Zhang Yang headed for the portal and teleported to the city that was most vulnerable or in need of an immediate assistance. Right then, all of China’s players shared the same view on war. All eight cities represent eight levels. The first three were bonuses and the last five was a loss but could still be saved.

Fatty Han led the charge, persuading all of the players in China to use their Inheritance Transformation skills to lay waste to the monsters. Sadly, there were no guilds that could expend [Forbidden Scrolls]. As only a handful of players had surpassed the Level 100 threshold, they were unable to farm the scroll. They were not just rare, but diverse in variety. A [Forbidden Scroll] came in single attack types, supportive types, AoE damage types like [Scourging Doomsday]. Not every [Forbidden Scroll] could be used this situation.

‘Server Announcement: Ono Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by Ancient Beings!’

That announcement should bring joy to China players. However, since the monsters were coming in at great speed, none of them paid much attention to it, as they were too busy saving their own cities!

The number of monsters that had entered the city premises did not mean that the city had been overwhelmed. Instead, the entire city could be flattened to the ground and remain alive, as long as the main palace still

stands. Before the dominance of Queen Serena, each major city was a Kingdom on its own and had a King or a ruler residing in the main palace. Although there were no kings or queen in other city's palaces besides White Jade Castle, the palaces still signified the life of the cities.

The monsters pushed on, finally crushing the walls and spilling into the city.

Every 1 to 2 hours, the system would notify the fall of a city. The region that had suffered the worst damage was Japan-Korea. They were left with only one city. All players, including the ones who had just reached Level 50 had made their final stand there. It was their last city. The last piece of fabric to protect their dignity.

The best region that had all cities still standing was China. However, out of 8, 6 of them had already lost their city gates. Europe region players were doing a good job at maintaining their position ever since they lost one city.

'Server Announcement: White Jade Empire Army is on their way back to the city. They will arrive to provide reinforcements in 3 hours.'

...

'Server Announcement: Hangul Kingdom Army is on their way back to the city. They will arrive to provide reinforcements in 3 hours.'

...

Players' eyes glinted with hope as the system notification rang in their ears. It was a certain victory if they could last for another 3 hours! The empire's or kingdom's army was as strong as a Celestial boss. Since almost all major city's Kingdom rulers were Holy tier, it was enough to completely suppress the incoming monsters' attack!

1 hour...

2 hours...

3 hours!

When one of China's city was on the brink of falling, one player on his flying mount cried out jubilantly. "They're here! Help has arrived! We're

saved!"

Zhang Yang got hold of the news and quickly made his way back to White Jade Castle. He soared to the sky on Thunderhawk and gazed upon the earth. There were rolling clouds, followed by tiny dots, coming at great speed from the horizons. They were soldiers riding towards the castle, with a huge flag behind them. The emblem of a soaring griffin was imprinted on the flag. It was the emblem of White Jade Empire, and they were coming to help Zhang Yang.

Chapter 575: Preventing Future Trouble

Amongst the crowd of soldiers, a single figure zoomed into the sky. It was the beautiful heroine, Queen Serena. The Meteor Sword in her hands gleamed with an intense brightness. The glow spread across her entire character. Flying through the air, she glowed like a fireball. Following closely behind her were the dragon knights. With her leading the charge and a total of 10 ferocious, mighty dragons behind her, it was the perfect wallpaper for anyone's desktop.

"Pray that you live long enough to regret the day you decided to raise arms against my kingdom!" Serena gathered her strength and swung her sword with the might of an Ascended boss. The sword sent out a ray of light and morphed into a large green dragon. The green dragon crashed into the battlefield and flew through the ranks of the enemy. All that the dragon touched instantly turned into dust, even the strong mammoths!

As expected of Queen Serena! She was someone who Zhang Yang could rely on whenever things get a little out of hand.

The moment Queen Serena made her appearance, players who were attacked by the monsters cheered out loud, celebrating their savior. Even though Emerald Kingdom and Black Dragon Kingdom had no rulers, White Jade Empire itself as a whole had a god-like boss taking care of them. With the Empire's army coming in from behind, the fall of the Zergerts was only a matter of time.

Zhang Yang stepped back and called out to his party. "I'll take my leave now. I'll be heading to the Chaos Realms."

"Why?"

Everyone cocked their head. Now that Queen Serena has made her appearance on the battlefield, was it not the time to pounce on the stray bosses and obtain loot?

Zhang Yang simply shook his head as they pebbled him with questions. He had no time to explain and hurriedly tore a [Teleportation Scroll]. "I have a quest. It has something to do with destroying or sealing the

Ancient Creature Lair Portal."

"Couldn't that wait until the war is over?"

"Sure, it can. By the time the war finishes, the system would announce the same quest to everyone else in the world. However, we have the advantage of knowing this. I will head to the Baroque Islands first. Since the end of the battle is almost near, I won't make much of a difference in the outcome. Hunt and kill as much as you want for now, when I get there, I will summon you guys over." Zhang Yang explained.

Zhang Yang knew that time was short as it was already proven in his past life. The player who had delivered 90 messages all around the Chaos Realm was the player who had initiated the quest. However, he was not the player who had obtained the final reward. Hence, in the forum where Zhang Yang had read about it, he had posted his frustration. In truth, the system had given the quest initiator a head start. However, the ability to seize the chance would depend on the player himself. When the third wave starts, it would not be wise for an attacker like Zhang Yang to leave the battlefield. On the other hand, when the situation is under control, and everyone else is busy indulging themselves on rampaging bosses, Zhang Yang decided to take the chance to leave the place and get a head start.

Zhang Yang confidently believed that he was better than all players in the world, in terms of battle prowess. However, the main character in the battle was Queen Serena, the god-like boss. Everyone else, with or without Inheritance Transformation skill would only be tiny specks of dust. The only thing that they can do would be attempt landing the killing strike in order to obtain the boss' loot.

In such a situation, it all depends on luck. If Queen Serena's attack lands and kills a boss that was next to you, you'll strike the jackpot. Otherwise, good luck, bro.

Zhang Yang had concluded that even if he remains on the battlefield, he would not be able to get a single item. Why not save his time and proceed on to Baroque Island, first? To put in comparison, the system had allocated 100 Violet-Platinum bosses and 10 Mythical tier bosses to each

major city in the White Jade Empire. With such a "nice gesture" the end reward for the Legendary Quest should be even better! Zhang Yang had no idea what the quest would end up giving him, but the Treasure Chest? He would surely obtain it!

Just as he was waiting for the system to teleport him away after tearing the [Teleportation Scroll], the magic circle did not appear and Zhang Yang was greeted by the system notification,

"The Teleportation point of Morning Town had already been destroyed." When the monsters had attacked, Morning Town was the first "city" to fall. Hence, Zhang Yang's Territory was gone. The destruction of the Teleportation point should have been known to him, but it had only crossed his mind when he tore the scroll.

Zhang Yang sighed in disappointment and shot to the sky on the Thunderhawk. Currently, it was still the swiftest mount in the entire game. That is, if nobody were to activate their class A Inheritance Transformation skills. Their movement speed would be much faster than a Mythical tier battle mount. However...who would do that? Probably someone with their head between their groin.

Two hours later, Zhang Yang arrived at Ten Barren Sea. Without slowing down, Zhang Yang zoomed through the portal and entered the Chaos Realm.

'Server Announcement: The Ancient Being's Invasion has been stopped. The system will now hand out the rewards and penalties to players based on the number of lost cities.'

'Server Announcement: Japan-Korea Region has lost all main cities. All player will have 5 Level Deduction! India Region has lost seven main cities. All players will have 4 Level Deduction. Australia Region and Africa Region have lost 5 main cities. All players will have 2 Level Deduction. South America Region has lost 3 main cities. No rewards nor penalties shall be invoked. North America Region has lost 2 main cities. All players will have 1 Level Reward. Europe Region has lost 1 main city. All players will have 2 Level Reward. China Region has not lost any main city. All

player will have 3 Level Reward!

‘Server Announcement: Special Quest: Preventing Future Trouble, has been activated. All players that had participated in the war of Ancient Creature are eligible to take the quest and obtain luxurious rewards!’

At the same time, all players that had fought during the battle had received the quest, "Preventing Future Trouble".

[Preventing Future Trouble] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Even though the Ancient Beings have been annihilated, the origin of the threat remains. The leader of the creatures, Queen of Blades, Quesara is still alive. She currently resides on Baroque Island, planning to recreate the land of the Zergerts. She will close the portal and restore her powers in order to launch an attack in the far future. Adventures, steel yourselves and defeat the demonized Queen of Blades. Destroy the portal that connects both worlds and save the land! Good luck.

Completion: Destroy the Portal 0/1

Quest Reward: Skill Point +3, Luck Point +3, [Rising Dragon Strike], [Medal of Bravery]

[Rising Dragon Strike (Passive)]: All magic or normal attacks will grant a chance of unleashing a dragon to deal 10 times the damage of the attack that had triggered the skill. Deals 10 times the damage to all targets in a large area.

[Medal of Bravery] (Mythical, Accessory)

Equip: Increases 1000 Relationship points with all allied NPC.

Equip: Increases all damage and healing rate by 5%

Use: Grants you Invincibility from all attacks and effects for 10 seconds.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Reduced Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Note: The medal that signifies the bravest among all braves.

The rewards alone, made all players drool a river.

SP and Luck points were good, but the skill - {Rising Dragon Strike} was strong! It was a passive skill at that, too! Not only could it deal 10 times the damage, it was also an AoE skill!

What an OP skill!

Like automated robots, all players had taken out [Teleportation Scrolls] and tore them up. However, they were all greeted by the system notification that informed them of the destruction of the Teleportation point in Morning Town. After a short moment of panic, everyone summoned their mounts and charged towards Ten Barren Sea. Those who had flying mounts were grinning from ear to ear as they naturally had the advantage of speed.

"As expected of the big boss who could foresee the future! He has given us 2 hours of a head start!" cried Endless Starlight.

"Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed as he rode the Thunderhawk. "It's not going to be that simple. The quest is an S class difficulty. We have all used our Inheritance Transformation skills. It would be the ultimate challenge for us to kill the boss within 2 hours!"

"Well said! There's even a chance that we will get ourselves killed when the boss reaches 1% HP. Fresh arrivals might even end up stealing the last hit!" said Fatty Han.

"Enough with your crap. You just had to jinx it!"

Be it by luck or pure effort, Zhang Yang had bought 2 hours for Lone Desert Smoke to obtain fame and fortune!

There was one more advantage that Zhang Yang had earned from the system. Baroque Island was not visible on the map. The quest had not provided the exact location of Baroque Island either. Hence, players would have to spend some time searching for the location of the place!

As Zhang Yang flew towards the island, Zhang Yang took out The Guewitt's Shield.

After three days (in-game time) of constant fighting and killing, Zhang Yang had reached Level 108. With the levels gained from the battle

rewards, he had reached Level 111 and is now able to equip The Guewitt's Shield.

[The Guewitt's Shield] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +4,680

Vitality: +4,564

Equip: Increases 9,360 maximum HP.

Equip: Absorbs 1,644 damage on attack.

Equip: Automatically activates {Shield Bash} with every successful {Block} instance. This {Shield Bash} will not cost Rage points. Is not affected by Global Cooldown.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Reduces Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Note: A legendary shield that once belonged to the Guewitt family. However, the shield had fallen into the hands of Ditch, the Blackbeard Pirate when one of Guewitt's descendent was traveling in the sea.

Zhang Yang equipped the shield, gaining a massive boost to his HP and Defense.

HP: 186,760, Defense: 5,240, Damage Absorption: 3,882!

Powerful! Tanky!

Take 10,000 physical damage and hurl it at Zhang Yang. First, the damage would go through his Defense, deducting 5,240 damage. Reduce another 20% of the resulting damage and you will have 3,808 damage. Lastly, the damage will have 3,882 damage absorb, resulting in NO DAMAGE! In the end, no damage under 10,000 can get past Zhang Yang's thick skin!

Zhang Yang had loved the shield and caressed it, as he had just obtained a new toy to play with. Compared to the strongest shield that he had obtained in his past life, the Guewitt's Shield was just one tier below it!

With this new powerful shield in hand, the Queen of Blades should be

easier to defeat!

Zhang Yang zoomed through the skyline like a railgun projectile, leaving a trail of blue light in his wake. A flying mount would not be affected by the terrain effect, hence, even though the geography of the land was treacherous and difficult to trek through, Zhang Yang had arrived at the outskirts of Baroque Island without much delay.

When Zhang Yang had left the place a few days ago, the green island was still brimming with life. Now, it had been turned into a brown colored wasteland. There was a crater at the center of the island. It looked like the island had been ripped apart from the inside and something come bursting out from it, like a huge, ugly, popped zit. All the plants were dead and rotten. There were no animals, no plants, no grassy plains, but only a huge, violet colored, pulsating portal.

On the rim of the portal, Zhang Yang could see traces of lines that resembled a huge circle of magic runes. It was the circle that Zhang Yang was supposed to destroy. However, Zhang Yang did not zoom in immediately, as there was something huge standing next to the portal. It was several hundred meters tall. The "thing" had a female humanoid face and a woman's upper body and a serpent's lower half. Its hands were not hands, but long mantis-like blades that were sharp enough to gleam in the air. Although no clothing covered her upper body, her carapace-like skin was enough to "censor" her well-developed chest.

[Queen of Blades, Quesara the Queen of Zergert] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 40,204 – 52,204

Skills:

[Queen's Roar]: Stuns all target within 40 meters and causes 10% HP loss every second (not exceeding 20,000 damage each tick) for 5 seconds.

[Omnislash]: Continuously slashes at a target, dealing 100% melee physical attack for 10 continuous attacks. Can be interrupted.

Note: The queen of Zergert. A leader with a true sense of leadership and justice. Has the ability create Zergert lifeforms.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Half a billion HP would be a drag. Furthermore, her attack was just too strong!

The skill {Queen's Roar} was a skill specially created to counter a sea of players while the skill {Omnislash} was meant to instantly kill a single tank. Zhang Yang had equipped a new shield and gained massive Defense capabilities. However, since he had surpassed Level 110, the effect of the Titan's Chest Plate had been weakened.

Enroute to the island, Zhang Yang had run some tests and found that the {Shield Wall's} recovery rate was only 2% HP per tick. He had also removed the Titan Wall shield. {Shield Wall's} extended duration was reduced down to only 10 seconds. As a conclusion, {Shield Wall} would only last for 10 seconds and only restore a total of 20% of his HP, which was a total of 72, 828 HP if he was mounted with a battle mount. Naturally, he could opt to use the Titan's Wall to extend {Shield Wall's} duration in exchange for lower maximum HP. Even though that would result in a total of 30% healing rate, the actual HP healed would be the same as Gue Witt's Shield.

A tough choice...

Zhang Yang thought about it as he flew to the island. Now that the islands'"shooting trees" were all gone, he could fly around the island without being bombarded by pricks. He then put on the [Party Summon Order] and summoned Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and the rest of his core party member.

He had made some rearrangements to the party. He had Endless Starlight sit this one out, bringing in Galileo to replace him. This boss did not need two tanks, but more attackers to bring the battle to a quick end.

Even though he felt a little left out, Endless Starlight was an understanding man and accepted the change without voicing out any

complaint.

When everyone gathered together and saw the boss' properties, they could not help but draw a collective breath. The boss was really strong. Luckily, none of them were under-leveled and they would be able to deal proper damage without being suppressed. If not, it would just be as bad as Fatty Han's Inheritance boss.

"Let's get started. There's not much time left, and I don't know how long it will take for other players to get here. We have to kill the boss first before we can destroy the portal," said Zhang Yang.

Even though destroying the portal was the only way to complete the quest, everyone believed that it was impossible to skip killing the boss. Zhang Yang had explained that it was likely, that only a particular item drop from the boss could destroy the portal.

"Let's go then!" Han Ying Xue patted Zhang Yang's back and smirked.

Zhang Yang shook his head and collected his composure. With dilated pupils, Zhang Yang zoomed to the boss.

Chapter 576: Queen of Blades

"No! Leave! Wretched beings! You don't belong in this world!" cried Quesara as spotted Zhang Yang approaching her. She brandished her blade arms and slithered towards Zhang Yang.

Even though the boss was classified as a melee attacker, her blades were several meters long. Zhang Yang was not sure of it, but he was certain that her attack range would be far greater than any ranged attacker!

BUMG!

Zhang Yang first raised his shield to block the incoming blade. With a long bang, the Thunderhawk and him were sent flying several meters away. If the Thunderhawk had not been a Violet-Platinum tier mount, Zhang Yang would most likely have been sent flying even further away.

The Thunderhawk flapped his wings vigorously and shot towards the Queen of Blades. Zhang Yang brandished his sword and dealt a strong blow that caused the creature to wail in pain. With a quick thought, Zhang Yang activated {Glare of the Death God}.

"Come on...please work!" Zhang Yang muttered as a shroud taking the form of a black skull appeared on the boss' head. The skull grinned and seeped into the boss' character.

F*ck yea! No resistance!

Everyone cheered and started to attack vigorously.

‘-5,000,000!’

‘-5,000,000!’

...

The skill – {Glare of the Death God} was a skill that would only work on a percentage basis. 10% of the boss' 500,000,000 HP would be 50,000,000! The best part of it was that the skill is triggered by every hit!

"Such a powerful boss-killer skill!"

It was a skill that had come with the S class Inheritance!

Zhang Yang felt extremely grateful since he had obtained the skill while completing the Inheritance. If he had killed the Black Dragon without undergoing the Inheritance quest, the skill book might not have dropped! It was a miracle for such a powerful anti-boss skill to exist. Such a miracle would not happen twice! The skill had to be a Unique skill. Like an S-class Inheritance, it would never appear again, ever!

Then again, since there were five more S class Inheritances, that probably meant 5 more ridiculous Skills!

"Puny bugs! I will squash you!" cried the boss.

The Queen of Blades was surrounded from all angles. It had taken only 3 seconds to proc all 10 hits of the {Glare of the Death God}! For a normal Mythical boss, 5 million was more than their usual maximum HP. With 500 million HP, the boss would most certainly be enraged if 10% of her HP is hacked away within 10 seconds!

"WIIIIIIII—" The boss closed her mouth and sucked in a deep breath. She then let out a loud screech that shook the air around her. The resulting sound wave that spread out was so powerful that the waves were visible to the naked eye.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Everyone was immediately stunned by the attack and stars circled above their characters. Each of them had taken different amounts of damage, but it was equivalent to 10% of their own HP.

{Queen's Roar}! A stunning skill that deals 10% HP as damage every second, for 5 seconds!

The damage was calculated by percentages, and cannot be deducted by Defense nor damage absorption! It was almost equal to an AoE version of {Glare of the Death God}! It even had a stunning effect!

What a pity, a player's skill will never be as strong as a boss.

Zhang Yang activated {Warrior's Will} and managed to dispel the debuff on him by the second tick. Luckily, the skill had a maximum limit of 20,000 damage per tick. The amount of damage was not too high, both of

which Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could heal without a problem.

Everyone else moved on just as quickly and dispelled the debuff. Now, another problem awaited them. If the skill {Queen's Roar} had a short cooldown, their ability to dispel debuffs would be all for moot.

"Weaklings. I own the world! Sooner or later, I shall rise again and will bury all living beings beneath the very land you walk on!" The Queen of Blades hurled herself towards Zhang Yang and activated a skill.

{Omnislash}!

‘-22,504!’

‘-22,504!’

...

The boss moved around, swinging her blades around as if there was a high-speed V12 engine in her body. In less than half a second, she had already landed two hits on Zhang Yang. There was a progress bar on the boss' character, and it had only made a 20% progress. It was obvious that she still had 8 more strikes to go!

Zhang Yang immediately retaliated with {Crash Magic}. He dug his sword into the boss' side and planted it deep. The damage inflicted on him was less than 30,000. It was due to the 20% damage reduction of the God of War Inheritance.

The sword attack landed and the skill {Crash Magic} was cast, but the boss merely grunted a little and continued to slash Zhang Yang.

"F*ck!" Zhang Yang instinctively activated {Shield Wall} to protect himself. Even though {Crash Magic} had a 10 seconds cooldown, it could not keep up with the boss' ridiculous speed!

"BREAK!" Sun Xin Yu ran towards the boss and gave a {Low Kick}. The boss' {Omnislash} was interrupted but after 3 to 4 seconds later, the boss blades glowed up and another {Omnislash} was cast. Lost Dream swooped in and broke the skill channeling.

The skill was repeated for the fourth time when Zhang Yang himself could interrupt the boss.

He quickly formulated a plan and said, "Both the little girl and I will interrupt the first boss skill. Ice cube, Daffy, both of you will handle the third. Lost Dream, Galileo, both of you stop the third. Make sure to time your hits!"

"Got it."

Everyone nodded their heads without any objection.

"Little Yang! Why didn't you assign any tasks for me?!" said Fatty Han as he felt a little offended.

"You're in charge of attacking since your attack is strong. Whether or not we manage to kill the boss in time, depends on you!" said Zhang Yang as he came up with the best thing that Fatty Han loved hearing, compliments.

In truth, Zhang Yang had not assigned Fatty Han any other task due to the speed of the {Omnislash}. It was so fast that Zhang Yang had counted 4 slashes in one second. Judging by Fatty Han's standards, sending out a {Silencing Shot} within 1.5 seconds would be a miracle. Zhang Yang would sacrifice a goat to the gods as thanks. The problem was that in 1.5 seconds, the boss could have and would have dealt 6 slashes, dealing more than 100,000 damage to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not possibly explain it to him since Fatty Han was a prideful man at times, and has his priorities in the wrong places. Like a woman during her monthly "visit", but Fatty Han annoying behavior was eternal.

Zhang Yang has known Fatty Han his whole life. He knew how to pacify the fatty easily. Fatty Han bought Zhang Yang's sweet talk and smiled all the way as he drew his bow and attacked the boss with everything he had to impress the people around and not let down his brother.

Fatty Han had a B class Inheritance. Even if he did not rely on the Vampire Transformation skill, he still has a 40% damage increase passive

skill which was only 10% weaker than Zhang Yang's. As such, B class Inheritances were rather impressive too.

Not long after, the boss roared again, releasing a powerful sound wave that stunned everyone. As such, Zhang Yang took 20,000 damage head on because {Warrior's Will} was still on cooldown. The boss then landed blade after blade as she attacked Zhang Yang.

During the effect of {Queen's Roar} when everyone was stunned for 5 seconds, the boss would not use {Omnislash}. If she had, the boss would have been incredibly difficult to kill. Players might have to rely on [Forbidden Scrolls] or to use sheer numbers and defeat her. Naturally, with the Transformation skill, the boss would be a cakewalk.

The problem was that neither Zhang Yang nor Fatty Han were ready to use their Transformation skills. They had used it to defend their cities back then. If they had not, China might have already lost one or even two major cities!

After the 5 second stun, Zhang Yang HP had speedily dropped below 200,000 HP. Both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were startled by it and had immediately prioritized on healing him instead of others.

Han Ying Xue had a Level 6 {Life Aura} which increased everyone's recovery rate by 18%. Daffodil Daydream had her {Recovery Aura} to heal both the HP and MP of everyone in the party. With countless of HP recovery bottles and [Bandages], the team's healing power was strong and could keep the party alive for some time.

The battle continued on sluggishly for another 10 minutes when Zhang Yang's skill, {God of War's Shield} that provides 20% damage reduction ended. The amount of damage he took increased from over 20,000 to as high as 29,000. The increase of damage taken had Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart crying for help. Luckily, the two of them were the guild's top healers. They had equipment that had been fully catered to increasing their healing powers, and a skill tree-full of powerful healing skills. Zhang Yang had to activate {Shield Wall} at every possible moment to allow the healers to catch their breaths.

After a brutal one hour, the boss' HP had finally dropped below the 50% threshold.

Zhang Yang prayed hard as he cast {Glare of the Death God}.

FUUSH!

A black light zoomed towards the boss character but it bounced off the boss' character. The light turned into a cloud of black smoke and dispersed.

Resist!

"CRAP!"

This boss had been designed to take on the efforts of entire regions. Even though she only had two skills, they were strong enough to keep herself alive while killing everyone in sight! The problematic {Queen's Roar} can only be countered by players' own status removing skills, but if those skills were left on cooldown, there was nothing else that they could do but to take it head-on.

On the other hand, while {Omnislash} was a skill powerful enough to instant-kill a tank, it could be interrupted with sharp reflexes. If Zhang Yang misses his timing, the skill might end up killing him before Zhang Yang could even cry for help. The situation had never been so intense before that it was mentally taxing. If either one of them accidentally messes up the interruption cycle, the whole team will inevitably be killed.

In one hour, even though the team had managed to hack away 52% of the boss HP, 10% HP had been removed by the OP skill {Glare of the Death God}. This meant that, if they continued on with their pace, they would only be dealing damage that is equivalent to 42% of the boss' HP!

Naturally, when the boss enters the 20% HP threshold, the damage caused by players around will increase greatly. {Killing Cleave} can only be used during that period, which would grant a massive boost in DPS. However, it would only last for 10 seconds, with a 30-second cooldown duration. Players will still have to put their backs into it.

They would have to wait for another hour to use the {Glare of the Death

God} again! Naturally, by then, even if the skill fails, the boss would not have much HP left.

The atmosphere of the entire party was intense. Paint a mental picture where you can see everyone walking on a thin wire across a valley. The chances of them failing their own duties were so high that it would most definitely cause the entire team's death! To last for another hour would put such a heavy mental burden that they would need counseling after finishing the battle!

"Come on guys! Fight hard! Focus! Think about the reward! The reward!" cried Zhang Yang as he tried to lighten the atmosphere.

Chapter 577: To Whom It Belongs

"We will win!"

"Yes, we will. We have killed an Ethereal boss before. Why are we shaking our butts for a Level 130 Mythical boss?"

"Hehe! Good one!"

Everyone encouraged each other and occasionally joked around. Being exposed to a long duration of mental stress could put a toll on a person's psyche. Jokes and occasional teasing would help a lot in lightening the atmosphere.

Zhang Yang was fully focused all the time. {Block} was never on cooldown as it was one of the skills that he would use the moment it became available. At least, {Block} has a 100% success rate. It was a pity that his current level of Strength was pretty much useless. The boss was far stronger than he is. Supporting Attacks could not be applied to a stronger enemy. {Block} was the only other defensive move he had to nullify an incoming attack.

"Die! Die! Die!" The Queen of Blade screamed. Her bladed hands gleamed with intense killing aura and grazed Zhang Yang shield. The intense crumpled up emotion of frustration of not being able to kill a single player had left the Queen of Blade flustered with anger.

"We were gods in ancient times! You are nothing but food to us! You are nothing but weaklings that will be our slaves!"

"I shall burn your pathetic souls with my fiery rage!"

"The strongest of mortals poses no threat to me! I am a god! The world's strongest human poses no more threat to me than its strongest bug!"

The boss screamed and threw insults at the party as she kept her blade busy.

"Dummy! I'm running out of Transmuted MP pots!" cried Han Ying Xue.

"What!?" Zhang Yang frowned. The party had only been able to last this

long, all thanks to Han Ying Xue's mighty healing power. Han Ying Xue had a 75% reduced mana consumption to all skills and a HP to MP conversion skill to support her MP usage. Be it MP potions, or {Recovery Aura}, she would run through them all like water, or else she would lose track of her healing tempo. MP potions were not the best method of recovering MP, but she had been left with no choice. As the Transmuted MP potions were running out, she might fail to heal during critical moments, leading to a catastrophic failure of the entire party.

The boss still had 12% HP remaining. With victory so close that you could almost taste it, Han Ying Xue's bad news was truly devastating to the entire party.

"Huh?"

Zhang Yang heard a sound coming from the sky. He gazed up and saw a group of players flying in on their mounts.

He zoned in one of the players and discovered the identity of the entire group of players.

Hell's Knight, Level 105, Male Human, Sacred Knight, Paragon, Europe Region.

The Hell's family.

Technically, even though all Level 100 players can roam around the Chaos Realm to search for Baroque's Island to destroy the portal and end the war, the system had not provided the location of the island, and they would have to scour for it the old-fashioned way. It had only been two hours since the end of the battle of the Ancient Creatures, yet the European players have managed to find such an obscure place! Zhang Yang had taken the same amount of time to reach the island because he already had the location in mind! How did they track down the location of Baroque Island that quickly!? The answer was Dusk Phoenix.

Dusk Phoenix had a tool to track down specific players. She had a hunch that it was Zhang Yang who had initiated the Legendary quest and by tracking him down, she would be able to catch up to him!

Zhang Yang scanned over all the players in the area and did not find Dusk Phoenix among them. Was she truly that traumatized when it comes to him, or was she sneaking about?

The situation had taken a turn for the worst the group of European players arrived at the scene.

"Haha! I remember a certain phrase, ask for Cao Cao and he shall arrive on time! What a coincidence!" cried Hell's Spellcaster, sitting atop on a giant snow condor. There was a trace of hatred embedded in his voice.

The group had lost the S class Inheritance Milkmaid Deity to Zhang Yang, and now truly hated Lone Desert Smoke. Now that they were in a huge pinch, it would be the best time to strike them!

There were over 30 of them there. It should be all available members of Paragon who possessed flying mounts. Lone Desert Smoke had a similar amount of flight-capable players in his guild, but since the [Party Summon Order] could only bring in 9 players at a time, it was all he had with him at the moment.

Radiance, Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky, and other strong guilds had their eyes on Lone Desert Smoke. Hence, if Zhang Yang had led all the players of Lone Desert Smoke to Baroque Island altogether, he would be leading them to the treasure trove! Zhang Yang had purposefully brought in the team, silently, and discreetly to make sure that the strong guilds could not track them.

However, he had carelessly forgotten about the European woman – Dusk Phoenix. She could track him down!

10 from Lone Desert Smoke, against 30 from Paragon. There was a boss then as well! How does Zhang Yang plan to solve the mess?

Zhang Yang was thinking furiously in his mind and came up with a plan. The opponent must be thinking that Zhang Yang's party was having a tough time, which was true enough, and had plans to seize the opportunity to kill them and snatch the fame, fortune, glory from them!

Zhang Yang grinned to himself and calculated the timing of the boss'

attack. In one fluid motion, he leaped on to the Thunderhawk and zoomed towards Paragon's party. The boss' aggro was locked to Zhang Yang. Hence, when he flew up into the sky, the boss had followed with a speed that rivaled that of the Thunderhawk!

At the speed of light, Zhang Yang zoomed through the sky, leaving a trail of blue light. The Violet Thunderhawk was, by far, the only Mythical tier mount. Within seconds, Zhang Yang arrived at the group of players and activated {Blast Wave}. He had only managed to stun 5 of the enemy.

The sword had unfortunately remained "silent" and did not trigger its echo effect. However, it did not matter. Zhang Yang was not here to take them on!

Hell's Priest eyes narrowed and widened immediately when he understood what was going on. "STOP! DO NOT DISPELL THE STUN!"

He was too late. Three out of them had already instinctively dispelled the skill and had swung their weapons, chanted their spells, moving around Zhang Yang. Only two of them had obeyed Hell's Priest and had remained motionless in their original positions.

By that time, the Queen of Blade had already arrived at their position. After a swift attack, the creature shrieked.

{Queen's Roar!}

A blast of intense sound wave spread all around, stunning everyone including Zhang Yang, for 5 seconds, while reducing their HP by 10% a second.

Those of them who still had available status removal skills had quickly removed the debuff right after the first tick. However, those who have used their skill to dispel Zhang Yang's stun would have to "eat" the skill head-on, losing 50% of their HP as a result.

The three Paragon member who had acted on instinct quickly regretted their decisions as they finally understood why Hell's Priest had asked them not to dispel the stun.

Zhang Yang grunted as he swung his sword with the might of his ire!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-59,332!’

‘-54,228!’

’53,900!’

‘-56,772!’

...

Even though all players around there had boosted their HP through {Shared Life} with their flying mounts, all non-tank players had a maximum HP of only 80,000 to 90,000, at most. Zhang Yang’s powerful {Horizontal Sweep} had dealt enough damage to cleave half of that amount!

The three who had freed themselves from the {Blast Wave} were stunned once again, immobilized for good this time. After taking in Zhang Yang’s {Horizontal Sweep}, all three of them were left with only less than 30,000 HP. They died before the Queen of Blade’s {Queen’s Roar} could finish its skill effect.

While stunned, players cannot engage in any actions such as taking in a bottle of potion. The players could only watch as Zhang Yang approached them at a high speed, the blade of his large sword coming for their throats.

The Violet Thunderhawk speed through the airspace and targeted the enemy’s healers. He swung his shield left and right, bashing their heads to interrupt their chanting. The only skills they could cast were the instant cast skills like {Regeneration} and {Holy Shield}.

Unfortunately for them, the Queen of Blades’s {Queen’s Roar} were damage incarnate. The damage could not be reduced by any defensive means. {Regeneration} could buy some time. Unfortunately, {Queen’s Roar} procced once a second, while {Regeneration} heals once every 4 seconds.

They were not heading for hell’s door. The door was heading for them

like a truck.

Zhang Yang had planned everything from the moment he cast {Blast Wave}. As long as they use their status removal skills, they would fall for his trap and die.

"Bastard! Kill him!" One man in Paragon cried and led the other players behind him to charge towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was not frightened, instead, he played along and shot through their ranks, ending up behind them. Gutsy moves like these only came from people who felt no fear, only the confidence of killing each and every enemy player. Only Zhang Yang could perform in such a manner, inflicting great pain and humiliation on his victims.

Even though the original plan had deviated, the boss had only less than 12% left. Zhang Yang could leave his party to handle the remaining battle on their own.

‘-1,203!’

‘-803!’

‘-0!’

Arrows ‘thonked’ off Zhang Yang’s chest, doing little to no damage. The highest damage that was dealt by the ranged attackers was only 1,000 and above. Zhang Yang’s all-round Defense prowess had prevented any damage below 10,000 to cause any damage to him!

"F*ck. His’s too tough!" There were a few Thief class players who had approached Zhang Yang from behind. However, the boss already took up that space. It would be suicidal to stand between Zhang Yang and the boss.

Dual wielding Thieves would not be able to scratch Zhang Yang by normal attacks alone. Unless they activate their skills, their normal attacks would only be toothpicks trying to penetrate a Kevlar vest. Zhang Yang grinned and whacked the f*ckers away. One by one the Thieves were sent flying away, leaving one or two broken teeth behind at where they stood.

Shush!

Zhang Yang instinct tingled violently and Zhang Yang quickly took his shield and held it over his back, even though he could not see what was coming at him. The boss had attempted to stab him but Zhang Yang managed to block the attack. Zhang Yang was sent flying forwards. Somehow, by knocking him forwards, he was taken out of the path of several magic missiles from the enemy.

Technically, attack skills cannot be dodged, or at least, it was humanly impossible. It's like trying to dodge an arrow in real life. However, Zhang Yang had been propelled by the boss. It was lightning fast. It allowed him to 'dodge' the attacks!

Everyone was shocked and thought that Zhang Yang had done it himself, until someone cried out.

"It was only luck! Kill him! Do not stop!" cried Hell's Warrior.

Chapter 578: Certain Defeat

A coincidence? Did they think that it was really a coincidence that he dodged the attacks because he had timed {Block} perfectly?

Zhang Yang smirked. Although he could not deny that the 'dodge' was completely unintentional, the fact that he could sense danger without even looking behind should be proof that he was not an ordinary player.

Another blade came and he borrowed the boss' knockback effect to flee from two Berserker and one Thief. This time, he did not use {Block} and took the damage directly.

"..." Was it another coincidence?

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attacking team did not wait for verbal orders from Zhang Yang and proceeded to counterattack. Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Wei Yan Er, and Galileo made up the melee team. Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Daffodil Daydream formed the ranged team. Both teams targeted one player at a time and started wiping them out with deadly efficiency.

Even though the ranged team had one member less than the melee attacker, their damage was still overwhelming since Fatty Han had a B class Inheritance. Fatty Han took the lead while Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream followed closely. Their combined damage was strong enough to kill anyone off unless they activate their emergency skills.

Thud.

The three players from before who were tricked to use their status removal skills had died and fallen from the sky. Both the melee and the ranged team had managed to kill one player at the same time. Lone Desert Smoke's side had taken only 5 seconds to kill 5 members of Paragon.

"Ignore Zhan Yu! Kill the weak ones!" cried Hell's Knight.

When a player dies in the hands of another player, they will lose all experience points gained at their current level. Amongst the five players that were killed 5 seconds ago, one of them was at 92%, on the verge of

leveling up. His death would throw his progress back by 9 days (real time)!

Hell's Knight decided that it was stupid to fight a tank first, so when the other members of Lone Desert Smoke joined in the fray, he decided to target them instead.

It was the three-sided chaotic battle. Zhang Yang had unleashed his full potential. He was monitoring several things at once. He had to use {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue, to inflict Supporting Attacks to disrupt the enemy's spellcasting, while swinging his sword around to deal damage to both the boss and the European players, as well as making sure to use {Block} to counter the boss' attack. His mental capacity was at 99% during then.

He had to do so, or else, he might lose his team players! Death in a chaotic battle is a fickle thing. There is a saying in olden schools of martial arts. A grandmaster may die in the hands of a petty quarrel of greenhorns. Even though Zhang Yang may have the strongest Defensive armor around, and possessed the highest HP amongst many others, he would still die if he were to take the attack of a few players simultaneously! Anyone present in Baroque Island should either be extremely strong or on par with Zhang Yang's equipment! Additionally, there was still one more variable to account for, the boss, Queen of Blades.

She was a rather helpful presence. Her {Queen's Roar} could deal, at the very least, 10% HP to all players, even if they were to activate their status removal skill. On the other hand, if players had used their status removal skill to save themselves from Zhang Yang's constant use of {Blast Wave}, they would take 50% HP as damage and be killed by Lone Desert Smoke's focused fire.

At the second wave of {Queen's Roar}, 20 players had died at her hands. Amongst the 20 who had fallen were Wei Yan Er, Galileo, Fantasy Sweetheart, Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and Lost Dream. The rest were casualties of Paragon. The unluckiest player was Lost Dream. He had already left the battlefield with {Vanish} but was 0.0001 second too late to move out of the {Queen's Roar} skill range.

The few people that were still standing on the battlefield were Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue. Paragon still had the six Hell's Family members and one extra side player. The boss still had 11% HP remaining.

"Zhan Yu! I call for a truce!" cried Hell's Warrior. "If we continue this squabble, neither of us is going to kill the boss! We should kill the boss first and decide on the rewards later!"

"Haha! I don't think so! I think the best way is to end this petty "squabble" is by ending you all!" Zhang Yang zoomed in without hesitation. Even though Zhang Yang had lost a lot of members, they were still evenly matched. He still had Felice with him! On the other hand, the boss' HP was almost reaching 10%. His {Glare of the Death God} was almost ready to be used. If the skill is not resisted, killing the boss would be as simple as nailing a nail down her head!

"Hmph! Cocky bastard!" Hell's Knight scoffed. "So be it. If you want to die together, I shall deliver your wish! It'll be my pleasure!"

Hell's Knight zoomed towards Zhang Yang and immediately banked hard to target Han Ying Xue. His plan was the most orthodox method of PvP. Target the enemies' healer first. In this situation, after losing Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang would have no means of restoring his own HP and will be taken down, either by the boss or by Paragon.

All surviving Paragon member swarmed in and surrounded Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang bumped into the boss and "forced" her to follow him like a dog on a lease. With rocked speed, Zhang Yang then shot towards Han Ying Xue and cried, "Woman, it's time for our show!"

"Alright!"

They reached out to grab hold of each other's hands.

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

Shring!

The entire battlefield was instantly covered with a thick layer of snow. A big moon emerged behind Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, illuminating the area, around 30 meters from where they stood!

Immune! Immune! Immune!

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had gained 30 seconds of invincibility and would not take any form of damage from either the boss or Paragon. {Blizzard Sky, Lunar's Dew} could only deal 5,000 Chaos damage per tick. It was barely a tickle to post Chaos Realm players. However, it totaled up to 150,000 damage, which was still something that no one could ignore.

All seven Paragon members quickly ran out of the skills' radius, however, before they could, the boss had used {Queen's Roar}. Everyone, besides Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue was stunned for 5 seconds.

If they had only taken the boss' skill, they would only lose 50% of their HP. Fortunately for Zhang Yang, they were stunned within the range of {Blizzard Sky and Lunar's Dew}. After taking 5 seconds of the paired skill damage and the boss' {Queen's Roar} damage, the total attack that they had received per person was around 70,000 to 80,000.

Right then, as Paragon was about to leave the paired skill attack radius, Sun Xin Yu swooped in and carved them up.

Lone Desert Smoke had been fighting the boss for more than 2 hours. It was not a mystery if they had a better understanding of the boss' mechanics than Paragon. Sun Xin Yu had only appeared after all Paragon had been stunned and proceeded to kill them. As such, they were all sitting ducks, waiting for their deaths.

After spamming her blade, there were still 2 survivors remaining. The two of them quickly retreated. Sun Xin Yu quickly gave chase and Zhang Yang stopped the paired skill immediately to attack the other player with a {Spear of Obliteration}.

"URGH!"

"ARGHH!"

Two loud grunts were heard, followed by the two of them falling off their

mounts.

"Such a waste of life. Humans will always be despicable!" the Queen of Blades scoffed.

"Dummy! Use the glare thing!" cried Han Ying Xue. She had just only consumed a bottle of MP potion. Without Fantasy Sweetheart to help with the healing, Han Ying Xue would only last for half a minute before her MP is drained.

"Alright then." Zhang Yang flung out his arms and cast {Glare of the Death God}.

A cloud of black smoke floated above the boss' character and morphed into a grinning skull!

Success!

"Hell yeah!" Everyone cheered. The boss still had 11% HP left. Without the help from {Glare of the Death God}, they would not be able to kill the boss in time. The success of the skill was truly a lifesaver. Even the ice queen, Sun Xin Yu could not contain her happiness and she smiled a little.

"Kill it, quick!" cried Zhang Yang frantically.

Three players, with their own Battle Companion, and battle mount attacked with everything they had. Han Ying Xue was well within the danger zone, healing Zhang Yang with all her might, praying hard that the boss would not use {Queen's Roar} during this intense moment. Since the boss had just only used it, it would be another 10 seconds or so before she uses it again.

‘-5,000,000!’

‘-5,000,000!’

Lines and lines of powerful damage texts ticked up on the boss' character, greatly pleasing Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu.

"Little Yang. Hold on for a little longer! We're coming back!" Fatty Han shouted at the top of his lungs in the party channel.

Zhang Yang frowned. "Fatty Han is coming back now. The Paragon

members should be coming back at the same time! We have to be faster! We cannot allow them to take advantage of the situation!"

Zhang Yang kited the boss as far away as he could from the dead bodies of the Paragon members. It would be most unfortunate if the boss death happened at the same time as their revival. They might have the opportunity to snatch the loots! They had the "qualifications" to loot since they had attacked the boss.

"No! No!" cried the Queen of Blade as she knew death was approaching. Still, her cries and constant mockery would do nothing to stall her death!

Seven seconds later, all of the {Glare of the Death God} trigger hits were used and the boss still had over 1,300,000 HP left.

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu bit down their frustration and went crazy.

They were able to kill all 30 members of Paragon because of their carelessness and the boss' assistance. If all of the enemies returns, the same method would not work again. The chances of Lone Desert Smoke winning a 10 v 30 PvP match would be extremely slim!

After all, Paragon was the top guild in Europe! Their prowess was not something that Lone Desert Smoke could shrug off lightly. However, it would not be the same if Sun Xin Yu or Wei Yan Er had Inheritances!

1,100,000!

800,000!

500,000!

200,000!

When the boss' HP has reached below 200,000, the first 5 players of Paragon had just revived in time. With haste, they took a bottle of Healing Potion and quickly made their way towards the boss.

100,000!

30,000!

0!

"ARGH!" the Queen of Blades wailed as she fell to the ground, creating a powerful tremor and dropping a heap of loot next to her dead body.

"Ice cube! Take! Take! Pick! Quick!" Zhang Yang was so nervous that he could not even finish his sentence properly. His hands were busy sweeping up the loot as well. Not a single item must fall into their hands!

By the time the 5 players of Paragon had arrived, Zhang Yang stopped looting and quickly cast {Heroic Leap}. Unfortunately, he only managed to stun 3 of them. At the same time, he quickly cast {Brutal Smash} to stun the fourth player. Felice quickly morphed into her human form and stunned the last stray player with {Dragon Spear Barrage}.

"Haha! Good job, Felice!" cried Zhang Yang. Sun Xin Yu seized the opportunity to loot all of the drops and left nothing but the dead body of the boss for Paragon.

By then, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and the rest of Lone Desert Smoke had revived themselves and joined the team.

"Zhan Yu---!" Hell's Warrior snarled angrily and bellowed. "HAND OVER THE LOOT!"

"Please, don't be childish. You're not a 3-year-old little kid. If our positions are reversed, would you hand over the loot if I ask nicely?" Zhang Yang scoffed and shrugged.

"Bastard!"

"Kill him! Spare no one! We will kill them until they drop all their equipment!"

"Kill them!"

Everyone gripped their weapon tighter. The boss Zhang Yang had just killed was a Legendary quest type boss! The item drops from the boss had to be powerful!

Now that the boss was gone and all the loot was secured, Zhang Yang could relax a little. However, when he heard that all Paragon members wanted to kill him. He directed all his frustration that had been built up

since the beginning of the Ancient Creature war, all the rage and wrath towards the Paragon.

"If you plan to attack, you should have said so earlier. Now...I'm afraid you have absolutely no chance to win."

"Boss! We're back!" cried Endless Starlight. As if fate had dictated his destiny, just when Zhang Yang needed help, the entire battalion of Lone Desert Smoke had arrived from all corners atop their flying mounts. Back when Hell's family had arrived at the island and started threatening Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had Endless Starlight to gather all Lone Desert Smoke members to come to his rescue. At the same time, Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, and other guild master had noticed the guild's sudden sortie and had followed them as well. Right then, the entire island Baroque was filled with top players of China.

"R-Run! Run now!" All the European members' faces turned white at the scene. They had all been killed once and had lost all of their hard earned experience points. If they were to be killed again, they might drop their equipment, which will be of an even greater loss.

However, it was futile to escape now.

Endless Starlight, Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke, and other powerful players had rushed into the battle and turned all members of Paragon into burger patties.

"The portal!"

Since the battle loot had all been taken, the body of the Queen of Blade had disappeared away. There was no evidence of a boss battle ever happening here. The other guild members knew nothing. All they could see was the bright, pulsating portal.

Shush! Pew! Bam!

All newcomers launched their attack on and on, however...

Immune! Immune! Immune!

All attacks dealt on the portal had not made a tiny scratch!

Zhang Yang grinned.

Chapter 579: Shadow Dancer Inheritance

Snow Seeker frowned in annoyance and stopped attacking. "The only way to break this is to use a special tool, am I right? Mr. guild master Zhan Yu?" said Snow Seeker with a forced smile.

Zhang Yang shrugged and looked the other way. "Beats me. I just got here not too long ago and was fighting the European bastards!"

No one, not Snow Seeker, not One Sword Stroke could have bought his lie. Especially when he had pointedly looked away like that! However, with no around to say otherwise, there's no other way but to accept his lie. Even though guild masters had smuggled spies into guilds of others, they were not able to smuggle secrets to all corners of the world.

"Find the clue! The quest had mentioned something about Quesara the Queen of Blades. Find her and we'll find the way to destroy the portal!" said One Sword Stroke, cool-headed as always – unless it was Zhang Yang or Liu Wei dealing with him. With a swift snap of his fingers, several members of Imperial Sky had soared to the sky and spread out across the entire island.

The other guild masters had also made the same decision.

The island area was too huge. It may be time-consuming to search the entire island for a single boss with only around 10 people. They did not know what the boss looked like in the first place. In their minds, it was something huge, while others thought that she was a human queen. The search would take up more time if they stumble upon another boss and not the Queen of Blade. Still, that was what Zhang Yang wanted them to do!

To prevent a scenario of other guilds getting the jump on them, each guild had left 5 players behind. Additionally, they had made an agreement to stay away from the portal gates. If either one side breaks the agreement, that guild would face the wrath of 55 players of 11 different guilds.

Zhang Yang pretended to search and led his team to a quiet corner. With a huge smile on his face, "Let them be. Let's take a look at our haul!"

Zhang Yang took out several items from his inventory and showed it to everyone.

"I have here, 2 items. One is a ring, and the other is the portal-destroying item."

[Mercury Star Ring] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +482

Strength: +226

Dexterity: +226

Equip: Increases attack and healing rate by 3.5%

Equip: Increases 450 maximum HP.

Equip: Absorbs 192 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases 50% Frost damage dealt by your weapon

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: Made from the fragments of an asteroid. An indestructible ring brimming with the brightness of a star.

"Noob tank, I think this ring should be yours, as you have the skill - {Frost Strike}." Wei Yan Er was the first to voice out.

Based on the ring's properties, the ring would suit a Knight, a Warrior, a Thief, or a Hunter. The ring's effect was good since it increases attack and Vitality. Any class would benefit from the ring, but not as much as Zhang Yang, since he had the skill {Frost Strike}.

Although Zhang Yang could benefit from the ring's effect, {Frost Strike} had a 60 seconds cooldown rate. Although raising the attack by 50% would increase the average DPS by a significant amount, it was only good for PvP. In a battle with players, {Frost Strike} could then be used as a nuke attack to deal heavy damage in a short amount of time.

Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and other members who suited the ring nodded to agree with Wei Yan Er.

"I'd say, only guild master has reached Level 110. You're the only person in the guild who can immediately equip the ring! We would have to grind for a long time before we can reach your current level!" said Daffodil Daydream. Zhang Yang was Level 111, the highest leveled player in Lone Desert Smoke and in the world, while the second would be Level 107. However, to gain 3 levels and reach Level 110 would take as long as 1 whole month! (real-time).

That would take 90 days in the game and if an equipment takes that long to equip, it would be a waste, as it would be gathering dust in the inventory!

Zhang Yang smiled and took the ring for himself. He would only equip it after Identifying it in the city.

The second item that he had found was the most important item. A small, palm-sized, black colored bomb.

[Goblin H.E Bomb Mark III] (Quest Item)

Use: Destroys the portal and perhaps maybe, the entire island itself? The bomb was made to be extremely powerful but was accidentally created to be slightly stronger than it should have. If calculations are correct, the bomb would turn everything within a 10km range into a pile ash. You are strongly advised to run away as far as possible during the activation of the bomb. Tick tock goes the bomb, you should run or lose your dome!

Note: Product of the Globin Tech Engineering (™)! Quality that you can trust!

Bound.

Huh?! Bound?

Zhang Yang was left speechless. He had not paid attention back then when he picked the item! However, if he had not picked the item, the European players might have picked it up instead, and all of Zhang Yang's efforts would be for naught.

"Hmm...Now that we are in the same party as Little Yang, would the system count us in the completion of the quest if Little Yang is the one setting the bomb up?" said Fatty Han.

No one could have predicted that the bomb will be bound. Now that it has come to this, Zhang Yang had no choice but to be the bomber man. As it seems, no one in the party had any objections to it. After all, Zhang Yang was the person in charge and the leader of their party. Without his guidance, none of them would have had a chance to stand here. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had nothing to say, since Zhang Yang was their man. Anything that is his, would be theirs as well!

"I don't think so. The skill {Rising Dragon Strike} is too strong to be made available for everyone. I think that is why the bomb has been made to be bound to only one person." Said Zhang Yang dejectedly.

"What a shame..."

Zhang Yang had taken out the items he had looted, and the next few items were all in Sun Xin Yu's inventory.

Sun Xin Yu casually took out three items and showed them to everyone. They were a white, silvery gown, a grayish white glove, a necklace with an emerald stone, and a fragment of what seemed to be part of a weapon.

"Is that an Assembled Weapon Fragment, or an Inheritance Fragment?" Zhang Yang had not paid any attention anything else except for the broken metal piece.

The cold ice queen suddenly broke into a dazzling, warm smile. She had such a broad grin that Zhang Yang immediately knew that the item had to be something. She then posted the item's properties on the party channel.

[Shadow Dancer Inheritance Fragment] (Inheritance Class: S)

Description: NIL

Class Restriction: Thief.

Oh d*mn! Everyone gasped at the sight of it. They have managed to find another S class Inheritance!

In the party of 10, Lost Dream and Sun Xin Yu were the only two Thief class players. However, Lost Dream had already started off with the Snowman Inheritance, and although he had only collected four pieces of the Inheritance fragment, he was almost done with it.

If he had not chosen to undergo the Snowman Inheritance, he could still voice out and roll the dice against Sun Xin Yu for the S class Inheritance. However, things were difficult, now!

"Let Frost Night have it," said Lost Dream as he swallowed his pride hard. He consoled himself that a B class Inheritance was only 10% weaker than the S class Inheritance. As for the Transformation skill, it would be the same 3-day cooldown duration for both B and S class. If that was not the case, he couldn't have held it in!

Sun Xin Yu nodded politely and took the Inheritance fragment for herself.

Zhang Yang never knew much about the Shadow Dancer Inheritance and had only just found out that it was dropped by the Queen of Blades. Sun Xin Yu must have had hidden close by the battle back then. When the boss was killed, she must have instantly swooped in and picked all the drops, including the S class Inheritance, thus becoming the only player in China to obtain an S class Inheritance!

In this lifetime, as destiny would have it, Sun Xin Yu would still be the same player obtaining the S class Inheritance!

Lone Desert Smoke has now amassed a total of 3 players with S class Inheritance. Even though the two of them had not yet completed their quests, the team could be strong enough when all three of them reaches Level 120. Bosses would crumble beneath their feet when that time comes!

A guild with 3 S class Inheritance holders! If it was in Zhang Yang past lifetime, people all over the world would be laughing their butts off at that very idea! To have more than 1 S class Inheritance player in a single region was already a ridiculous idea, lest even mention about having 3! Now, what if all of them happened to be in the same guild?! Imagine BMW making 6 super limited-edition cars, and half of them ends up being

owned by the same family...

Zhang Yang was so happy that he could fly. Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were his women. Even though both of them still had their internal strife as they were still fighting over him, Zhang Yang strongly believed that even the toughest walls can be brought down with time, as long as that wall doesn't fall when all three of them are in bed! The two female monkeys would rip his 'banana' to shreds, in that case!

Sun Xin Yu did not stop posting more descriptions on the party channel.

[Queen's Attire] (Mythical, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +1,926

Intelligence: +905

Spirit: +393

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 1,810.

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 3,850.

Equip: Increases all damage and healing rate by 3.5%.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: An attire befitting that of only a Queen! A dress brimming with the aura of a royalty!

Without rolling for the item, the dress was taken by Han Ying Xue. It could not be helped, she considered herself Queen and found no reason to give the equipment away to anyone else. However, as a compensation, the next Mythical tier equipment that the party found would be given to Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart.

The last two equipment were Violet-Platinum, battle companion specific only. The items were rolled for and distributed accordingly.

After all drops were distributed, it was time to end the quest.

Everyone rode their flying mounts and left the area. Zhang Yang alone had returned to the portal and made his presence on the public voice channel.

"ahem I have some bad news for everyone around here. The tool to destroy the portal is in my hands. I have but only one advice to give you all. Run."

After that, Zhang Yang promptly pulled the trigger bar on the bomb and tossed the ticking explosive towards the magic circle.

‘Ding! The Goblin H.E Bomb Mark III has been rigged to explode in 60 seconds. Based on the calculation of the Globins, the blast radius will reach an area of 60km. Please get to a safe place to avoid being vaporized!’

‘Ding! Time left to detonation: 59 seconds!’

‘Ding! Time left to detonation: 58 seconds!’

...

Chapter 580: The Devastating Assault of the God of War

The moment Zhang Yang flung the bomb, every single player on Baroque Island received the same System Notification. Everyone hopped onto their [Flying Mounts] and ascended into the sky as possible as they could and flew towards the direction away from the island while cursing Zhang Yang --- because Morning Town had not been reconstructed yet, everyone still did not have access to the Teleportation Circle of the Territory.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he hopped on his Thunderhawk and fled like the others.

What the f*ck! These goblins had such shoddy handiwork! With 11 seconds still remaining on the counter, a sudden loud bang that shook the heavens went out far into the surroundings. The next thing happening was a gigantic mushroom cloud, rising from the center of Baroque Island, blooming straight up towards heaven!

Then, a powerful shockwave, as strong as a Level 13 hurricane spread out from its central point. The powerful impact shot right through every single player who was still in the blast radius, reducing everyone's HP bar down to 1 HP!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Radiance of the God of War} to recover his HP bar back to full. If anyone were to jab at him with a needle at that moment, Zhang Yang would be dead, and that would be a devastating blow to his progress.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Preventing Future Trouble. Acquired 10,000,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have received a reward: Lucky Attribute +3, Skill Point +3!'

'Ding! You have learned a New Skill: Rising Dragon Strike!'

'Ding! You have received an item: Warrior's Honor (Medal)!'

After a series of sweet system notifications rolling across Zhang Yang's ears, he became the person to have benefited the most in the Legendary Quest!

He acquired 1 Skill Point upon reaching Level 110. Furthermore, he was rewarded with 3 additional Skill Points! Zhang Yang added all of the Skill Points that he had just earned into his {Eagle Eye}, raising the level of the Skill up to level 8. Now, Zhang Yang could ignore 85% Defense of his targets! He also equipped the [Warrior's Honor (Medal)] up the moment he got it. The item gave him a boost of 5% to his Attack.

[Heart of the Death Knight] could only provide 3 seconds of invincibility after the player holding it reaches Level 110. However, the player could clear out any Negative Effects upon activating the [Heart of the Death Knight]. The 3-second invincibility was more like a bonus power up to the player. The effect of this item was basically the enhanced version of (Warrior's Will).

With the [Warrior's Honor (Medal)] included, Zhang Yang had over 3 anti-Status Restriction Skills at the moment.

A Guardian with high Attack, that happened to be immune to Status Restriction Effects. How oppressive was that?

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile like an idiot as he was very content with his current achievement. Then he said, "You guys go ahead, I need to meet the God of War to learn a new Skill!"

--- It wasn't the special Skill for Guardians, instead, it was a New Skill for his [God of War Inheritance]!

After parting ways with his party members, Zhang Yang went straight to Ares, The God of War.

"Mortal, your improvement has been very slow and disappointing!" after being awakened by Zhang Yang once again, Ares began to express his disappointment. "When I was your age, I was slaughtering hundreds or maybe thousands of Low-Tier gods from hell!"

What the f*ck! If your dad was not the God Zolanor, would you still be

all-powerful as you were back then before you died? F*ck you and your dad!

Zhang Yang tried to smile meekly as he said, "My great God of War, now that my Strength has increased a little more, does that mean that you can teach me a new Skill now?"

"Alright, since you aren't really as stupid as a pig, I shall put aside my pride and guide you in your request!" Ares gave a gentle touch on the forehead of Zhang Yang with one of his fingers. A stream of light with seven colors emanated from Zhang Yang's forehead and flashed down across his entire body.

Zhang Yang felt a dull pain in his head. Then he found another new Skill on his Skill list.

[God of War Devastation]: Delivers a devastating blow to the target, causing 300% Melee Physical Damage. When you are in your {God of War Transformation} form, 1 EP can allow you to attack one additional target. However, it will consume 1 EP for doing so. Required: Melee Weapon. Consumes: 45 Rage Points. Cool Down: 1 minute.

... 300% Melee Attack of Physical Damage was most probably the best additional Damage attribute for a weapon to have at the current stage of the game! It would become an absolute advantage over opponents in a PvP battle. The only unfortunate factor was that the cooldown of the Skill was a little longer than expected. So it might not be a Skill that he would commonly use in a boss battle!

However, whenever Zhang Yang was in his {God of War Transformation} form, this Skill could potentially become an AoE attack as well! Using 1 EP would let Zhang Yang attack an additional target. That being said, Zhang Yang could attack up to 100 targets at the same instant, as he has over 100 EP when his EP bar was full!

After all, Zhang Yang could deal over 500% additional Damage when he activates his {God of War Transformation}. If he could deal another additional 300% damage with that Skill while having the ability to increase the number of his targets by spending more EP, his attack would

be as powerful as the blast from a Magic Cannon! This Skill could officially be deemed as an AoE Skill!

That was awesome!

It was definitely worthy to be called one of the Skills of a Class S [Inheritance]! There were only 6 Class S [Inheritance] in the entire world. If the Skills of a Class S [Inheritance] were not powerful enough, it would be another overrated piece of crap!

After teaching Zhang Yang the New Skill, Ares went back into the cave and continued to drift in his own sweet dream. Once again, he did not give Zhang Yang any information about the Goddess of War. Zhang Yang could only summon his Thunderhawk and make his way back to Morning Town.

Reconstructing the Territory would require the owner to be there in order for the reconstruction process to be carried out.

Zhang Yang had to take out a total of 20,000,000 gold coins in order to reconstruct the Territory back to its former glory. In just a blink of an eye, Morning Town had been completely rebuilt. On the other hand, Zhang Yang only had to spend 2,000,000 gold coins to rebuild the Winst Castle which only had a Level 1 Defense.

After the incident of the Ancient Creatures' Invasion, the players from Japan-Korea Region now hated Zhang Yang to their cores! A few high Tier guilds from Japan-Korea Region had provided the best Thieves they had to offer to form a special party called the 'Onikiri'. The purpose of this party was to assassinate Zhang Yang at any possible, appropriate time.

Well, if they were going to assassinate him, why would they be advertising their goal of assassinating someone, then? They even posted a challenge on the forums, saying that they would kill Zhang Yang over and over again!

Zhang Yang could not help but frown at their stupidity. All they wanted to do was to cover up their incompetency! Now that all cross hairs of the Japan-Korea players were aiming at Zhang Yang, the incompetency of their own players would be overshadowed by the current happenings, and

they would not feel too embarrassed at the very least.

So that concluded the Legendary Quest. The main focus of the eight main Regions had been diverted back to clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. This time, Crimson Rage accumulated all their best forces and took down another 6 bosses in a row, scoring themselves a 10/15 on the progress of clearing the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon. They overtook the sub-guild of Lone Desert Smoke by 3 places as the top 10 achievers on the dungeon progression!

Zhang Yang only found out about it later. It seemed that the main Tanker, Mellow Venom of the Crimson Rage had completed the quests for her Class B [Inheritance]. She had acquired the [Petrification Inheritance]!

The strength of an [Inheritance] could not be judged by its Class. It could only be judged based on how compatible it was with a player! If a Spellcaster went on to get a Class B Physical-Type [Inheritance], it would become worthless to the player. It would be even better if that player had a Class D Magic-Type [Inheritance]

Although this [Petrification Inheritance] was just a Class B [Inheritance], after considering the power-up that this [Inheritance] could provide to a Tanker, it could even be worthy of a Class A [Inheritance]!

Without the 'transformation', there would already be a passive Skill that increases the Defense of the player by 100%!

For the DpS type players, even if a Berserker is equipped with a full set of Heavy Armor, a Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment would only provide about 420 Basic Defense. It would only provide 840 Basic Damage, even if the Defense was doubled. It wouldn't affect the player much at all! However, for a Tanker, because Tanker could hold a shield, a Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment could provide 2,820 Defense. With the [Inheritance] doubling her Defense, she would gain over 5,640 Defense. That amount of Defense would be even higher than that Zhang Yang had when he is equipped with a Level 130 Mythical Tier Shield!

More importantly, this would be a passive Skill that could maintain its effect all the time, unlike the {God of War Shield} which would only last

for 10 minutes! She could just use the passive Skill without even having to transform!

Therefore, the Crimson Rage had no trouble in clearing 6 stages of the dungeon in a row!

If they had to rely on the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, they would have only cleared out the monsters and one boss in the period of 2 hours. They would be lacking endurance.

"Crimson Rage have done a very good job of hiding their 'secret'! They actually completed the quests for the [Petrification Inheritance] underground. Now, they have managed to strike an impression!" Zhang Yang smiled vaguely.

Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang. She complained, "As the number one Tanker, you haven't even joined the Dungeon Clearing! Not even once! If you did join back then, we might have taken out at least 10 bosses by now!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I don't want everyone to rely on me all the time! A powerful guild requires everyone to work together, not relying on one or two powerful 'superhumans'!"

"However, the Crimson Rage must have given up a lot just to take down the final boss of the Class B [Inheritance]!"

"That may be true. Since they do not have Class S [Inheritance] in their guild like us, they must have used some powerful items like a [Forbidden Scroll]!" Zhang Yang gave some thought on it, then he smiled and said, "Sigh... If I have known better, I should have gone over there and helped Crimson Rage out myself! Then, I should be able to claim the [Forbidden Scroll] as my reward for helping them!"

"Yea, right! Dream on!"

...

After that, Zhang Yang did not join his party in Clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. Other guilds have only managed to clear out the first 10 bosses at the moment. The last 5 bosses were the real

pain in the *ss. Zhang Yang did not see any urgency in going all out to clear the dungeon just yet.

On the second day, the special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was nerfed, as expected! Zhang Yang had actually foreseen it, as he had overdid it with the sword during the battle with the Ancient Creatures. The official only added one restriction on his sword: The replicated attacks will not trigger further replicated attacks. In other words, the special effect of the sword would not be triggered two times anymore and so forth. Zhang Yang could only cause two times of damage on his targets, at most.

Well, he really did overdo it during the battle with the Ancient Creatures. There were many players who were so envious of him that they had flooded the officials with complaints.

Zhang Yang was on his way to the The Plagued Land.

The Plagued Land was basically the source point of where the Spectre was created. Although the level gap of the map was only Level 150 to Level 18, deep within the map, there was a sacred lair for the Spectre --- Malevolent Tower. It was the sacred lair where the 'Wraith King of Death, Madravich - Leader of the Seven Wraiths' rested. It was a Celestial Tier boss!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, 7 Top Tier guilds had joined hands in attempting to bring down this boss. By the end of it, they could not even enter the Malevolent Tower! None of them survived the slaughter of the Skeleton army right before the entrance of the tower!

Of course, Zhang Yang was not there to challenge the Celestial Tier boss. He was there for the one particular item, the [Book of the Damned] (1).

Initially, he would have waited until he reaches Level 150 before he was worthy of challenging the monsters across the map. However, ever since he had acquired the [Friendship Jade], getting the [Book of the Damned] had become the easiest quest item for him to acquire --- provided the monsters do not tear him to pieces first!

Zhang Yang ran along towards his destination as he tried to fend off the

monsters that attempted to take his life. He only used his Status Restriction Skills as frequently as possible to get away from the monsters. Finally, after 7 to 8 hours of running and avoiding monsters, Zhang Yang finally entered The Plagued Land that was filled with Spectres.

After equipping his [Friendship Jade], Zhang Yang immediately turned into a white boned skeleton. When he lifted his head and looked across the land, he realized that all Spectres had turned into green-name monsters. It meant that he had become one of those skeletons!

The experience was as if he had just walked into his own garden. Zhang Yang then summoned his Thunderhawk and flew straight towards the Malevolent Tower. Because it was the motherland of the Spectres, there were no signs of any living beings at all. Only a few variations of Spectres roamed about. Zhang Yang could now roam in peace. If there were any living monsters about, he would still be under attack, and the [Friendship Jade] would not have worked its wonder.

Zhang Yang made his way to a valley full of skeletons and bones without any obstacles in his path. He kept Thunderhawk back into his inventory first. Then, he pretended to be a Spectre, acting like one, shambling like one as he made his way to the large tower right in the middle of the valley. The tower was so tall that it shot through the sky! Zhang Yang could not even see the top of the tower from where he was!

That was the Malevolent Tower, the lair where the Celestial Tier boss 'Wraith King of Death, Madravich' rested in! That was also the place where the Spectre kept the [Book of the Damned]!

TL Note:

1. Klaatu Barada Nikto, anyone? Not the one from The Day the Earth Stood Still, the one from The Army of Darkness, heh.

Chapter 581: Shadow Clone

The external walls of the tall tower were dark green in color. Each of the floors was 100 meters tall, and the friezes jutted out under the cornices so immensely that they looked like giant umbrellas that were overlapped with each other.

Right outside the high tower, countless Spectres wandered around the area. Their Tiers and Levels were randomized. Some were just Skeleton Soldiers, the lowest Tier of all, and some were Necromancers of extremely high Tier. There were also a few Skeleton Dragons among the monsters roaming around! The number of monsters in the area was similar to the number of Ancient Creatures that Zhang Yang had faced a few days back. Furthermore, these foul monsters were literally rotten to their core. It would really send a good chill up the spine by just looking at them!

Zhang Yang entered the Malevolent Tower cautiously. Because he had the [Friendship Jade] to disguise himself as one of the Spectre monsters, Zhang Yang was just a weak Skeleton Soldier in the monsters' eyes. None of the Spectre looked at him for any longer than 1 second as they passed by him as if he was one of their own. So, Zhang Yang snuck his way through the horde of closely packed monsters in the area and entered the tower like it was nobody's business.

As he turned around to have a look at the monsters, what he saw was an army of Spectre closely packed together roaming around. He could not help but to wonder, how many monsters were there to slay in order to get here if he had come here without his [Friendship Jade]. He would definitely need to reach Level 150 first before he could slay all these monsters. Or else, the Level Gap Suppression function of the game would kick in to slap him in the face. By then, it wouldn't do him much good, even if he activates his {God of War Transformation}.

The stairs in the towers were made of skulls. The weak-hearted ones might find them terrifying. They might not even want to set foot on the steps!

Zhang Yang was not born to be bloodthirsty. He could not help but frown intensely. Then, he took a deep breath as he gathered his courage and went up the first step of the stairs. Zhang Yang then began to make his way up to the highest floor of the Malevolent Tower. Along the way up, what he saw could be described as a living hell.

The lowest floors such as the first floor and the second floor were 'producing' the lowest Tier of the Spectre --- the Skeleton Soldiers. Countless of white boned corpses were dropped into a pond filled with dirty water. In the meantime, there were also countless of 'newborn' or rather, 'newboned' Skeleton Soldiers crawling out from the pond!

However, not every corpse could become a Spectre.

One must be filled with hatred and grief in order to become a Spectre. That way, the hatred and grievances would only manage to latch onto the corpses and get molded into a new form of 'life'. Some of the Spectre was born with only grievances without any sense of emotion and intellect. That would only turn them into the lowest Tiers among the Spectre.

For instance, ghouls are born with only the resentment and would only attack to 'feed', while the Skeleton Soldiers would be born with only the will to 'massacre'.

However, some of the Spectre may be born with some intellect remaining from their previous life. Some might even have the memories of their previous life intact with them. Those would be Spectres belonging to the middle Tier and high Tier. For example, a Wraith, a Wraith King or even the leader of the Wraith King with the highest Tier!

Unlike the Skeleton Soldiers that were 'cheap', the chance of coming across a high Tier Spectre was as rare as the chance of coming across the hair of a phoenix and the horns of a giraffe. Therefore, the Spectres decided to build a 'man-made' factory that was filled with hatreds and grievances --- the Malevolent Tower.

Upon stepping onto the fifth floor of the tower, Zhang Yang could witness the Spectres tormenting humans, orcs, and even elves! They were torturing them without giving them any moment of relief! The hatred, the

rage right before death! Those were the biggest source of grievances! Upon death, they would be turned into Spectres. Most of them had a better chance of becoming high Tier Spectres!

Even though Zhang Yang had a mind that was as strong as steel, he could not help but feel the chill up his spine. He was also cursing the designers of the game who had actually thought these scenes up. Those designers must be more hardcore than the hardcore. It was like a hellish nightmare that would haunt a person for quite some time!

After walking through the nightmarish stairs for about half an hour, Zhang Yang finally found himself on the highest floor of the tower. The floor was spooky as hell. However, there were no longer any signs of those torture equipment and facilities. Instead, the place was like the compound of a palace!

More precisely to say, the place looked more like a huge library. There were rows of bookshelves across the space of the floor. There were all sorts of books on the shelves. Zhang Yang believed that a number of books in the library of White Jade Empire might not even get close to the number of books in here.

Zhang Yang snuck in cautiously as he looked around for the [Book of the Damned]. Although he had no idea what the book looked like, there should be an indication or hint if it is a quest item.

The Malevolent Tower was really spacious. The diameter of the tower was about 1 kilometer wide. Because the stairs were designed at the center of the tower like how humans had their spines right in the middle of their body, Zhang Yang found himself at the other end of the tower after he walked along the wall of the tower for half a circle.

There, he found the large shadow of a man sitting on a throne. The man looked intimidating enough, as he was, seated upon his throne. Zhang Yang could also see that the man was so much larger than the size of regular men. He would tower over them even while seated.

This man wore a long robe that had the color of the moon. He had a violet-red staff in his right hand. There was also a towering, tall hat on top

of his head. From a certain point of view, this man looked like some sort of high priest!

[Wraith King of Death, Madravich - Leader of the Seven Wraith]
(Celestial, Spectre)

Level:???

HP:???

Defense:???

Attack:???

Skills:???

Suddenly, Madravich turned his eyes and glared at Zhang Yang without any warning. However, what he saw before him was merely a small, weak skeleton soldier. So Madravich did not care about his existence at all. He moved his eyes away from Zhang Yang after a brief moment of glaring.

Zhang Yang could feel an intense chill straight up his spine. He even took a step back in fear. Fortunately, the boss did not see right through his disguise.

Zhang Yang continued to look around for clues. He discovered that there was an exquisite desk about 30 to 40 meters away from the boss. There was also a thick book placed neatly on top of that desk. Zhang Yang could see the book was flashing over and over again as if it was taunting him to go over and take it.

That must be the item he had been looking for --- [Book of the Damned]!

Zhang Yang made his way quietly over to the desk. He took a peek at the boss. Seeing that the boss had not realized his presence, Zhang Yang reached over to the book in an attempt to take it.

However, the [Book of the Damned] could not be kept in the inventory immediately. Instead, a progress bar appeared on top of the book. It was like opening a chest! It would take 12 seconds for the progress bar to fill up!

"Huh?" Madravich set his eyes upon Zhang Yang once again. His eyes

turned murderous in an instant as he began to let out an intimidating roar, "You are just a pitiful human, and yet you dare dream to lay your hands on the treasure of the Spectres!" he raised the staff in his hand and aimed it at Zhang Yang. A dark ghastly gas spewed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang's disguise had been seen through!

‘-1,982,375!’

A large damage value appeared on top of Zhang Yang's head.

‘Ding! You died! The durability of your equipment has dropped by 10%!’

Holy god!

After releasing his soul, Zhang Yang quickly made his way back to his dead body from the Graveyard.

Haih... it seemed that the quest item was not easy to acquire, even with the help of the [Friendship Jade]. Zhang Yang started coming up with a plan.

Looks like the boss would not attack if he does not touch the [Book of the Damned]. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would not have to take out this Celestial Tier boss in order to get the item. As long as he stays alive for 12 seconds, Zhang Yang would be considered to have completed his quest even if he dies after getting the [Book of the Damned].

Theoretically, both [Warrior's Honor] and [Heart of the Death Knight] could provide Zhang Yang with 13 seconds of invincibility. However, the two items could not be used at the same time. So Zhang Yang would have to choose [Warrior's Honor] over the other one. So, how about the two seconds that is not covered by the invincibility?

Should Zhang Yang let Felice activate her {Absolute Defense} and tank against the boss?

The boss could deal almost 2,000,000 damage in a normal hit! Although that had something to do with the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, that function would also apply to Felice. That 1% of the damage that Felice would receive might reach up to 20,000 Damage!

Furthermore, that was just a normal attack of the boss. There was no way knowing if the boss had other Skills that would inflict more damage than that! If the boss really did have some deadly, powerful Skill that could instantly kill Felice, Zhang Yang would not last for 12 seconds!

The cooldown period of {Absolute Defense} was 12 hours long as well. Zhang Yang did not want to wait for another 12 hours before he could try again if he fails. So he tried to think of another way.

After reaching his dead body and resurrecting himself, Zhang Yang did not use any [Bandages] or [Snacks]. The reason was simple. He couldn't even survive one normal hit from the boss. There was no point of healing himself at all if he ever gets touched by the boss.

Upon activating the [Warrior's Honor], Zhang Yang had become invincible for the next 10 seconds. Without wasting any precious time, he reached his hand over to the [Book of the Damned] once again.

"Persistent. Do you seek death? Because that is what you're going to get!" Madravich humphed coldly as he pointed his staff at Zhang Yang again. The dark gas flew at him again.

'Immune!'

Even if the boss is a Celestial Tier and all-powerful, he could not hurt a player who has an Invincibility Effect on him. That strike did not do anything to Zhang Yang!

"Stubborn!" the boss was furious, he began to gather countless beams of dark light by the tip of the staff. There was a 3-second progress bar appearing right below his head. It seemed that the boss was chanting for a spell! The damage of this Skill should be immensely high!

3 seconds later, the boss had finally unleashed the spell upon Zhang Yang. The dark light shot out from the tip of the staff like a laserbeam! That beam then dispersed into hundreds of dark arrows and landed straight upon Zhang Yang.

'Immune!'

'Immune!'

‘Immune!’

However, that would not do a thing. If players could be hurt when they were invincible, they wouldn’t be called invincible anymore!

5 seconds, 6 seconds!

The duration of Zhang Yang’s ‘Invincibility’ was ticking off as every second passed. 2 seconds before the ‘Invincibility effect’ of the [Warrior’s Honor] expired, Felice flew straight up to the boss in her Humanoid Form. She then activated her {Absolute Defense}, followed by her {Dragon's Spear Barrage}!

"Argh ---" Madravich turned to Felice the moment he received Felice’s attack. More furious than ever, the boss pointed his staff at Felice and shot out another dark shroud from his staff. The dark shroud surrounded the little lady and caused a value of damage.

‘-10,244!’

Fortunately, the damage was not too much for Felice to bear. Felice had over 180,000 HP. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang only needed to hang on for another 3 seconds!

Madravich seemed displeased to have been prodded by Felice. He raised his staff again as the dark light began to charge up around the tip of his staff again. The 3-second progress bar appeared once again right above his head.

3, 2, 1!

‘Ding! You have acquired an Item: Book of the Damned X1!’

Zhang Yang could feel the joy rushing up his head. He quickly tore off a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] as he was ready to get the hell out of that spooky place with Felice! As long as the magic circle could form completely, they should be able to escape without a problem.

At the same time, the progress bar below the boss’s head had also filled up. The boss shot out a dark light from the tip of the staff again. The attack then dispersed into hundreds of dark arrows just like the first time

and rained upon Zhang Yang and Felice like a storm!

‘-10,334!’

‘-22,102!’

‘-11,034!’

...

Each of the arrows could cause about 10,000 damage on Felice. Some of the arrows caused up to 20,000 damage on her --- the effect of Level Gap Suppression worked randomly (200%, 300%, 400%). It almost killed Felice on the spot!

Zhang Yang was shocked. He quickly waved his hand and kept Felice back to the Battle Companion Slot.

"How dare you! Thief! Die!" as Felice was no longer there for the boss to target, he turned around and shot a dark shroud at Zhang Yang.

Upon tearing the [Teleportation Scroll], the magic circle for the teleportation would take up 10 seconds to activate. Felice was taken out of the picture when there was still 9 seconds left. There was no way for Zhang Yang to get away anymore.

‘-1,023,873!’

A damage value of over one million popped up on top of Zhang Yang's head. Zhang Yang was instantly killed. He was sent to report himself back at the Graveyard again.

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang looked at the [Book of Damned] in his inventory as he grinned --- getting a quest item at the cost of 20% durability of all his equipment wasn't really that bad at all! Especially when the quest reward would benefit him greatly!

Zhang Yang resurrected himself at the Graveyard before he tore another piece of [Teleportation Scroll]. In another 10 seconds, he had teleported back to Morning Town. Then, he used the Teleportation Circle in the Territory to get back to White Jade Castle. He summoned his Thunderhawk and flew straight towards the tower of Skill Mastery. He

looked up for Grand Magus Anthony Faylon, who was studying Spells at the top of the tower.

"Hmm, have you gathered all three of the items?" Anthony seemed surprised. Then he said, "It surely had to have been difficult for you to have accomplished this at your current level of Strength!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Materials for the Instrument, received 10,000,000 experience points. Quest Assessment: Perfect!’

Huh? Just like that?

Zhang Yang quickly asked, "Sir Anthony, shall we move on to the next step?"

Anthony nodded and said, "I will create an instrument, a vessel! We shall attempt to cleanse Calina’s soul of her resentment! However, I have no confidence that this would work..."

"As long as there’s a glimpse of hope, there is a way!" Zhang Yang said.

Anthony nodded as he was persuaded by Zhang Yang’s words. Then he began to move his hands around the three items. Countless rays of light began to gather around the items. In just a brief moment, a staff that was Milky-White in color was formed in the air. Looking at the shape of that staff, Zhang Yang could not help but have some dirty thoughts in his mind. A ‘vibrator’!

"Hold this ---" Anthony was speaking in a weak voice as he seemed to have strained himself a little in making the staff, "Find a way to infiltrate and get close to Calina. Use this on her and try to rid her of the anger that rages within her heart!"

‘Ding! Grand Magus Anthony Faylon has a quest for you: Calm the Rage! Do you accept? This quest is linked to a huge arc of the Main Story Quest. Complete the main story linking quest to obtain a luxurious reward!’

Zhang Yang took the ‘vibrator’ from Anthony and said, "I shall try my best! However, Calina is so powerful. It would be very difficult for me to get near her!"

"Then I shall teach you a Spell. When you have mastered it, this Spell shall increase your survivability!" Anthony touched Zhang Yang on the forehead as he spoke. The scene was just like how Ares had touched Zhang Yang's forehead.

'Ding! You have learned a New Skill: Shadow Clone (Level 1)!'

Well, this was more like it! So, this was supposed to be the actual reward of the quest that had put him through so much hardship!

Zhang Yang quickly brought up his Skill list to take a look at the Skill description.

[Shadow Clone] (Level 1): Summon an illusion of your exact copy. The illusion will support you in attacking your enemies and repeat every movement of yours. The illusion will have the same amount of HP as you. However, it can only deal 10% of your initial amount of damage that you can deal. Upon each level up of this Skill, the number of illusions that you can summon will increase by 1. The illusion can last for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 2 hours.

What an incredible Skill!

If any opponent ever sees 11 Zhang Yangs in a PvP battle, the opponent would surely be pissing in their pants!

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile in joy. Unfortunately, he had already spent all his newly acquired Skill Points on {Eagle Eye}. So he had no Skill Points left to level up his {Shadow Clone} for the moment.

Hence, it did not really matter that much, as long as his guild could take the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress. They would be able to get one additional Skill Point upon achieving that. Furthermore, there were numerous Main Story Quests and Hidden Side Quests all over the game. Some high Tiered bosses might also drop rewards that would give Skill Points as well. So high Tiered players should not have to worry about not having enough Skill Points to spend, at all.

Chapter 582: Warlord Hachir

In this quest of delivering the 'vibrator' to Calina, Zhang Yang's [Friendship Jade] would not be able to work its wonder. This would be due to the fact that this fallen wind ranger was a Demonic Baron. Zhang Yang could only put the quest aside for now. On the other hand, Zhang Yang was also unable to complete the other quest where he would have to send a letter to the Spider Kingdom. Both quests involved traveling into maps that would be too highly leveled for him to set foot in.

Therefore, Zhang Yang's focus should only be on leveling himself up, nothing more.

During the day, he would just grind for higher levels. During nights, he would join his guild in clearing the Dragon Throat Fortress.

For most of the players, the time between 10 pm to 7 am was the best time for playing. After all, most of the players were social workers with normal jobs. Not many of them earned their income through playing the game all day, like Zhang Yang and his gang.

They were unable to do that because it would be very difficult and inopportune for players to pick up gold coins in the game. If players ever wanted to earn extra money, they would have to slay some monsters and earn some equipment. However, they wouldn't be able to get high Tiered equipment without a high enough level!

Of course, it would benefit them a lot if they ever want to be crooked businessmen. Even then, they would require a good IQ and mind to be able to swindle money. Not everyone is born to be a trickster.

Fortunately, because the in-game time and the real time has a ratio of 3:1, one night in real time was equivalent to one full day in the game. That amount of time was enough for players to clear dungeons for quite a while.

Zhang Yang trained Felice and Thunderhawk to Level 111 during his daytime. [Pet Mounts] and Battle Companions would basically increase in Tier once in every 10 levels. So, when the both of them had leveled up to

Level 110, these two had gone through a process akin to switching their Level 100 Mythical equipment with Level 110 Mythical equipment. Their attributes had shot up by a notch.

Currently, the total HP of Felice was 237,590 (With Vitality Aura) when she is in her Humanoid form. Her Defense had reached up to 4,840, and her Attack had a range of 30,531 - 36,531. When she is in her Dragonhawk form, her total HP would be 179,830 (With Vitality Aura), her Defense would reach up to 4,840, and her Attack would range from 17,777 - 21,777.

In her Humanoid form, she had far more HP than Zhang Yang, even when he's mounted!

It could not be helped. Felice's strength, in her human form, was all due to her complete set of Mythical tier equipment along with the addition of a shield. Zhang Yang, yet to have found himself a complete set of Mythical tier equipment, was far weaker than Felice. However, thanks to the Identified and equipped [Mercury Star Ring], he had pushed his maximum HP to 194,150, allowing his HP to be almost, but not too close to Felice's.

After all, there was only one advantage that players had over their battle companions. Players could put on equipment that had Special attributes which lowered the Required Level by 20 levels.

The attributes of the [Violet Thunderhawk] were rather high as well. With {Iron Build,} which increases its Maximum HP by 30% and the boost from Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}, the HP of Thunderhawk was a total of 233,780 HP. The only reason for it not being able to exceed Felice's HP was merely because Felice had an extra Shield equipped.

Judging from that point of view, Felice was basically like Zhang Yang! She could also be considered as another holder of [God of War Inheritance]! Not only could she equip a two-handed weapon, she could also wield a shield! Her apparent relationship with the Goddess of War included, it wouldn't be any surprise if she could do all that.

Agitated by the previous performance of Crimson Rage, Fatty Han and the other guild members went all out, with their explosive potentials and took out the 8th boss of the dungeon. After being stranded there for a few

days, they finally broke through the boss' blockade and was 8/15 to completing the dungeon!

However, they were still 2 bosses behind the Crimson Rage. That was the first time Lone Desert Smoke had been ditched so far behind by other guilds in a contest of killing bosses!

Therefore, the forum went into chaos as many people discussed the matter. There were topics like 'The new tide is rising, the new dynasty is coming!', 'Crimson Rage! Cheers for the Strong Roses!' and 'Lone Desert Smoke, are you guys no longer the best?' all over the forum. The arguments were rampaging across the forum pages!

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at their antics.

After all, most of them were not even regular players, they were just there to put a comment in. The contest on clearing the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress was not just merely based on the number of bosses one guild could slay. As the Chaos Realm had just recently opened up to the players, it would be the best opportunity to obtain [Inheritances]. Those who understood the flow of the game would know, the Classes of [Inheritance] that a guild has would define their strength! The more powerful [Inheritances] they had in their guild, the more powerful the guild would become!

Well, when Mess Up Your Mama was leading on the progress of clearing the dungeon at the beginning, they only had 2 players with Class C [Inheritances]. With the {Inheritance Transformation} Skills supporting them in battle, they managed to obtain the 'First Clear' of Hard Mode for the dungeon. Furthermore, they were able to stay ahead of others during the early stages of the Hardcore Mode contest. They had stayed as the lead until Fatty Han managed to get his Class B [Vampire Inheritance]. Together with the rest of the guild members of Lone Desert Smoke who were eager to clear the dungeon, they finally overtook Mess Up Your Mama's progress!

Meanwhile, Crimson Rage was experiencing a similar situation. They relied on the Class B [Petrification Inheritance] of Mellow Venom to clear

out 10 bosses in total. With that, they were now the leading pioneers!

From that point of view, Tankers would be the most important role in clearing dungeons.

Although both of the [Inheritances] were Class B, Fatty Han's [Vampire Inheritance] would only be strong enough to tank against a boss head-on. However, Mellow Venom could rely on the passive Skill that came together with her [Petrification Inheritance] while tanking against a boss. That was how the Crimson Rage managed to take down 6 bosses in a row!

Therefore, most people believed that Crimson Rage would be the victor and would acquire the 'First Clear' of the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress by the end of all this. Their supporters were massive in number! Because everyone believed that Crimson Rage would be unshakable, with Mellow Venom leading the way! However, Sword of Light would have 'Pui'ed at them saying that, "What's so powerful with a Class B [Inheritance]? That Zhan Yu has a Class S [Inheritance]! That is an exclusive [Inheritance] for the Warrior Class. If that [Inheritance] cannot match the power of the [Petrification Inheritance], that's what I call a joke!"

Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and the others were still searching for the missing pieces of their [Inheritances]. Therefore, although Zhang Yang had joined up with the Exploration Group of his guild, the Lone Desert Smoke still could not unleash their full potential. Without Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Galileo, the DPS force of the Lone Desert Smoke did not really strike much of an impression to the public.

"Don't worry! I'm here! One against 3 is not a problem to me!" Fatty Han thumped his chest proudly while saying it. The girls at the sidelines were screaming like a bunch of crazed girls.

After everyone had gathered around, the party of 50 players went forward into the dungeon with vigor.

Upon seeing Mountain Mover speaking and swallowing back the words on the tip of his tongue from time to time, Zhang Yang could not help but

laugh at him. Then he said, "Mountain, I think it's best for you to command us. It doesn't matter if we're in a dungeon or on a battlefield. I'm just one of your humble Tankers. My hands, your will!"

After hearing what Zhang Yang had to say, Mountain Mover began to smile with confidence. Like one of the old sayings, two tigers cannot live on the same mountain. If Mountain Mover was to be the commander of the party in the dungeon, he would need absolute power over the party. Zhang Yang knew that. That was why he had said it out loud in front of everyone.

The Refresh period of the dungeon would commence in 3 days time. The party managed to clear out the first 8 bosses. So currently, they were stuck with the 9th boss.

[Warlord Hachir] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 105

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 2,820

Attack: 30,126 - 36,126

Skills:

[Poisonous Blood Infection]: Randomly infects 3 targets with infected poisonous blood, causing 10,000 Nature Damage once in every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. When the targets are infected, the poisonous blood will continue to infect all targets within the range of 10 meters with the infected target. However, all infected targets will not be able to infect each other any further.

[Infectious Wound]: Weakens the target, increases 50% damage that the targets take. Lasts for 10 seconds. Will only apply to the target with the boss' highest aggro. Cannot be undone.

[Warlord's Wrath]: Sends a conical blast out, causing 200,000 Damage to all targets within the effective range. The Damage will be shared among the number of targets struck.

[Hysterical Drive]: When the HP of the boss is reduced down to 10%, Hachir will enter his Hysterical Drive mode. His Damage will increase by 50%. His Movement Speed will increase by 100%.

[Madness]: When the battle exceeds 10 minutes, Hachir will enter his Madness form. Both his Damage and Movement Speed will increase by 10 times.

Note: Hachir is the Infamous Executioner of the Dragon Throat Fortress. He kills without mercy, without sparing a single blink.

It was a Red-bodied Orc. The Orc was humongous. It towered over the party of 50 like a giant. The Orc had an axe in both of his hands. Its eyes were completely red as well! By the looks of it, this Orc had obviously been corrupted by the Demons and was now a loyal 'dog'. That was the backstory of the Dragon Throat Fortress. Every single Orc in the fortress had been infected by the Demon's blood and they were now loyal servants of the Demons. That would be more than enough reason for players to slaughter them!

"We have encountered the boss once yesterday. I believe that everyone is aware of the difficulty of this battle." Mountain Mover started talking. "I shall say this once again. All Melee players stay on one side while all Ranged players stay on the other side. Anyone who gets infected by the {Poisonous Blood Infection} needs to get away from your party members as far as possible the moment you realize it. There will be a 3-second gap for you to move. If you can't run away in time, just ask yourself if you're a pig! After the effect of {Poisonous Blood Infection} is over, you will return to the formation from the right. When you're infected, run left! Don't forget! I want this in a single flow, or not people running into each other from opposite directions! Secondly, everyone needs to stay together as closely as possible when the boss uses this Skill. No one can survive the {Warlord's Wrath} alone ---"

"Guildmaster would survive~!" someone suddenly shouted, causing everyone to laugh.

Mountain Mover was shocked to see that the amount of HP that Zhang

Yang had on him was a total of 190,000 HP! He could only quietly scold Zhang Yang for being insane. Although the Attack of the boss had reached up to 200,000 damage, a normal Tanker with 20% Passive Damage Immunity could reduce the damage received down to only 160,000 damage. So it was possible for him to take that hit alone.

Mountain Mover was used to seeing Endless Starlight's HP which only reached up to 90,000 HP. Now that a 'beast' had joined his ranks, Mountain Mover could not help but feel isolated from the world. He felt that Zhang Yang was no longer human!

He smiled and said, "Alright, other than guild master, no one else can take this hit alone! Players with the lowest HP amount would only have about 35,000 HP... hmm? It's 43,000 HP! What the..."

--- Zhang Yang also had Level 6 {Vitality Aura} with him. That had enhanced the Vitality of his entire party by 24%. Mountain Mover was 'moved' once again as he could not get used to it.

"Hmm, so the player with the lowest HP would have 43,000 HP. That means, we need 5 players to share the damage of the {Warlord's Wrath} in order to prevent anyone from dying. Therefore, everyone, especially those who are infected by the {Poisonous Blood Infection} should maintain appropriate distance with each other from the boss and the party teams. Make sure you don't take the hit from the {Warlord's Wrath} all alone!"

"Roger!"

Everyone replied in unison.

"Lastly, this is my request to the Tankers!" Mountain Mover turned his attention towards Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. Then he said, "Which one of you will be kiting the boss?"

"Boss is here! Of course, it will be him! I shall cheer for him from the sidelines!" Endless Starlight quickly pushed the responsibility away. It would really be a joke if he did not do so. Just look at Zhang Yang's equipment. They were in another realm compared to Endless Starlight! Furthermore, Zhang Yang was well equipped with tons of insanely powerful Skills. He not only excelled in his Defense but also in his Attack.

His Attack might even embarrass the other DPS players around him! Therefore, other than Zhang Yang, who else was more suitable at kiting the boss?

Endless Starlight was not the kind that would wear himself out unproductively!

Zhang Yang laughed and he said, "Alright, I'll be the one who tanks and kites!"

"Good. Guildmaster will be our main tank!" Mountain Mover continued to talk, "After about 3 hours of experimenting, we all know that the {Infectious Wound} will only be activated once every 30 seconds. The boss will be granted a 50% increase in its damage output. Tankers might be in trouble at that point. But uhm ---"

He took a second glance at Zhang Yang's HP. Once again, that amount simply broke all logic.

Chapter 583: Two in a Row!

Before players manage to acquire equipment that would meet the minimum requirement for these bosses, any boss battle would become even harder than flying into the sky with bare hands! No matter how hard you try, you would not be able to kill the boss at all. However, of course, when the level and Tier of the equipment are way "overspecced", the battle would be child's play. The bosses would be crushed within minutes! The players had the 'software' of skills and willpower but lacked the 'hardware'. Hardware can never be completely solved by good gaming skills or the strong will to win.

Crimson Rage managed to announce their might to the world all because of Mellow Venom. Her {Petrification Transformation} Skill indeed came handy whenever they engage a boss. Her transformation Skill was basically like a Mythical Tier equipment that would support her with a high value of Defense. Furthermore, there were also some hidden Inheritance Skills which still remained unknown to the others. She could use her Skills to boost the attributes of her equipment to a whole new level of power.

There were a total of 7 Mythical Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had on him. [Sword of Purging Devourer] and [Warrior's Honor] were not Defense-type equipment. They did not contribute anything to Zhang Yang's Defense, whatsoever. However, a shield would be an essential equipment that all Tankers should have. Zhang Yang had a Level 130 Mythical Tier Shield. That one shield alone had boosted most of his Defensive attributes! His other equipment had also contributed in bringing up his Defense.

Compared to the power-up that Mellow Venom gets from her [Inheritance], Zhang Yang would surpass even that!

Mountain Move could not help but smile bitterly. If Zhang Yang had joined them earlier, he would not have had to suffer and wrack his brain trying to get the party to work together.

However, he thought of it from another perspective. If Zhang Yang had joined them earlier on instead of running around in the open world, completing Main Story Quests, he would not be this powerful. If not for that, what chance did they have against this boss?

"Alright, everyone. Time to get in position! We shall take out a boss today!" Mountain Mover said.

Everyone scattered out like a spider web. Zhang Yang raised up his shield and sword, and then he said, "I shall count from three to one, and then we shall charge!"

Three, two, one!

Zhang Yang took the first step and charged towards the boss with large steps, followed by Felice and Thunderhawk. Unfortunately, he could not mount Thunderhawk, even if he wanted to. Players could not be [Mounted] in a dungeon. Or else, his Maximum HP would have reached up to 350,000 HP! The boss would be toyed around by him!

Business as usual, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss and caused 29,802 damage to the boss. He now had a solid hold of the boss' aggro.

"You rats! Can't get enough and back for more?" The boss let out an intimidating roar as he charged at Zhang Yang. With the axe in hand, the boss aimed at Zhang Yang's neck and attempted to hew it off.

'-14,113!'

Zhang Yang did not use {Block} in order to see how much damage he takes. It would give him a good estimation.

"Just about 14,000 damage?"

"Are you kidding me? The boss caused about 20,000 damage to Starlight!"

"This is our guild master we are talking about! He's all-powerful and mighty!"

Everyone went on about it while Endless Starlight slumped over. Then he

said weakly, "I'm also quite powerful, alright?"

The battle has begun. Everyone went to their own position as they started carving up the boss.

Zhang Yang did not have to care so much about holding back anymore, as he needed to lock the aggro of the boss to himself. All he needed to do was to steadily attack the boss and maintain the boss's aggro. After looking at the Top DPS list, Fatty Han would need to double the damage he was dealing with the boss in order to catch up with the damage Zhang Yang did!

"What the hell! How can guild master deal so much damage to the boss? That's terrifying!"

"That's right! Brother Han used to say that if anyone exceeds the damage he deals on monsters or bosses, he would pay 10,000 gold coin to the person. Now, guild master left him in the dust!"

"Yea! His face is pale, alright!"

Fatty Han could no longer take it all in silence. He attempted to defend his dignity, as he said, "Little Yang is my brother! I'm just letting him! If I activate my {Vampire Transformation}, no one will ever match me! I shall be able to kill anything that stands in my way! Repressing little Yang would be a walk in the park!"

Everyone laughed.

After a brief moment, Hachir began to activate his Skills. He threw out his {Poisonous Blood Infection} and {Warlord's Wrath} at the party. Fortunately, although it caused them to panic momentarily, they all had experience in handling such situations. They moved around, as briefed by Mountain Mover.

The worst threat came from the {Infectious Wound} of the boss. The Skill would increase his attacks by 50% additional damage on the Tankers. As players that were afflicted by the side effect of the {Infectious Wound} would keep bleeding, they would require a Healer to take care of them.

They also had taken out the boss within 10 minutes. Or else, if the boss

ever gets the chance to activate {Hysterical Drive}, even Zhang Yang would be instantly killed by the boss! It made perfect sense that not everyone could deal high damage like Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er! Therefore, taking out the boss within 10 minutes proved to be a little more challenging than expected.

Under those circumstances, the party had to focus more on dealing damage to the boss rather than healing themselves. It heavily depended on the part of the tanker, if the tanker is tough enough, they would be able to lash out without much worry.

If they were more focused on healing, the Tanker would have no pressure at all. However, if the DPS of the party was not strong enough, it would be impossible for the party to take out the boss within 10 minutes. By then, the party would be wiped out by the boss upon activating its {Hysterical Drive}! Meanwhile, if they did not focus on healing, the Tanker would be having a hard time kiting the boss. Either way, would lead them to perish by the end of the battle!

Now that they had a super Tanker Zhang Yang, the problem has been solved! With his Defense, even if Zhang Yang was affected by {Infectious Wound}, the boss could only deal about 25,000 damage to him. Zhang Yang would only receive a total of 130,000 damage without using {Block}. After all, he had over 190,000 HP...

Upon solving the worst problem in battling this boss, everyone only needed to focus on dealing as much damage as possible to the boss, according to plan.

The DPS of the party was not weak at all. With Zhang Yang joining in, the boss lasted about 8 minutes before it let out a miserable roar, collapsed onto the ground and stay dead. Of course, upon the death of the boss, tons of loot dropped from the dead body of the boss. Lone Desert Smoke had progressed to 9/15!

"Just that simple, huh?" after clearing the 9th boss, everyone was having a hard time believing it. They had been busting their butts, trying to bring down that boss. Past attempts had ended up with wipeouts after 10

minutes, or before the boss even activates {Hysterical Drive} or {Madness}. Why were things so different now? The boss went down like there was no difficulty at all!

Some of them even suspected that they had selected the wrong mode of the dungeon! Was it Hard Mode?

The boss dropped a total of 3 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. One of them was an exclusive equipment only for the Battle Companions. Zhang Yang did not try to fight his party members over the equipment. The equipment he had was already more than enough to clear out all of Dragon Throat Fortress. It would be wiser to let others upgrade themselves so that they would become more powerful in order to support the guild.

After all, one could not just rely on himself to make a guild powerful. He should look at the bigger picture and take the path that leads to the guild getting powerful as a whole, rather than himself. That being said, the guild members were the key to making the entire guild strong and powerful!

Therefore, increasing the standard of the overall guild members would be the best method!

After distributing the loots among themselves, the party continued to push on. They killed every single monster that got in their way as they made their way to challenge the 10th boss.

Zhang Yang was not interested in tanking against weak monsters. He left them to Endless Starlight. After all, this second-in-command Tanker would want to shine once in a while. He would not be willing to sit on the bench like a backup!

The monsters were not as numerous as there were in the open world. However, each of the monsters was extremely powerful. They must be the elites of the elite Tier! They were basically as powerful as mini-bosses. It took about one to two minutes for the entire party to take down one of them.

Zhang Yang was slicing and dicing the monsters in front of him when he struck out with his {Destructive Smash}, he suddenly felt his right arm

getting a little hot. A strange feeling shot straight up his chest right after that!

"Ang ---" a large figure of an eastern-styled dragon burst right out from Zhang Yang's sword and attacked two of the elite Tier monsters right before him!

‘-289,930!’

‘-317,820!’

Two extremely high damage values popped right on top of the two monsters. Everyone stared wordlessly at them!

That was... the {Rising Dragon Strike}!

Although the damage of the Skill was quite terrifying and it could deal 10 times of the player's normal damage within a long range, the rate of it activating was extremely small! It only got triggered once after Zhang Yang entered the dungeon and went through many battles!

The most tragic part of it was that Zhang Yang had no control over when to trigger it!

Sigh, it was such a waste for the Skill to trigger on weaker monsters.

After a small, intriguing incident, the party continued to push on. They took about another two hours to cross over some twists and turns before they finally arrived at the boss stage for the 10th boss.

Although they had defeated the boss in Normal Mode and Hard Mode before, the boss in Hardcore Mode could not possibly be as simple. Not only would the boss have enhanced Skills, the boss would also have one or two additional New Skills. It would not be wise at all to bring forth the tactics that were used to defeat the boss before in Hard Mode, even though it was the same boss with similar behaviors.

Zhang Yang did not say a word as he followed every instruction and command from Mountain Mover. He allowed the commander of this party to work at his full potential. The party was going through a process of trial and error.

Dungeon exploration could be an extremely boring thing, as players would have to face the same boss over and over again. If they ever encounter some bosses that were too powerful for them to handle, they would be forced to repeat battling the same boss over and over again until they manage to clear it. Well, it would be frustrating for most of the people to repeat the same thing over again and again.

The party was wiped up by the boss several times. As everyone began to feel exhausted, they sat down and took a break by a safe spot. They cracked some jokes and laughed to ease some tension. A few of the girls on the party came up with songs and dances to cheer the boys up a little bit. After just a while, everyone was refreshed.

After a few more attempts, the party had a clearer picture of the boss.

With Zhang Yang as the main Tanker in suppressing the assaults from the boss, the party had nothing much to worry about except getting the right tactics for bringing down the boss. As long as they applied the appropriate tactics and methods, bringing down the boss would not be an issue at all. It would just be a matter of time.

One night had passed. The party managed to slay the 10th boss right before it was time for most of the party members to log out of the game and get to work. By killing the boss, Lone Desert Smoke had caught up to Crimson Rage's progress. That had put a huge question of doubt on whether Crimson Rage would still triumph in the contest of securing the 'First Clear' title of the dungeon.

Zhang Yang did not stay in the dungeon for the following days. Instead, he went on to help the little brat in completing the quests for her [Darkness Inheritance]. They spent hours taking down some mini-bosses. Even though the little brat and Han Ying Xue could have completed the quests all by their own, but Zhang Yang wanted her to get her [Darkness Inheritance] as soon as possible to boost the Strength of his guild. With his aid, the progress of completing the quests became much quicker than expected!

With how Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke were rampaging across

the dungeon stages, other guilds were not willing to be left behind. They started to send their own members with [Inheritances] to the front lines. It did not matter if it was Nihilum (Mess Up Your Mama) and Paragon from Europe Region, or Blood Legion and Exodus from the North America Region, these top Tier guilds had caught up with the China Region's progress.

As the contest in clearing the dungeon drags on, more players would acquire [Inheritance]. Even though anything lower than Class C [Inheritances] did not provide players with {Inheritance Transformation} Skills, but they still gained a certain amount of power-up. Furthermore, they would also acquire some New Skills from their newly acquired [Inheritances,] as well. Surely, they would become significantly more powerful.

With the addition of players with [Inheritances], every guild that took part in the contest in clearing the Hardcore mode of the dungeon had managed to progress up to 10/15 in no time at all.

However, the difficulty of the boss battles in Dragon Throat Fortress would become entirely different after 5 bosses. That being said, the difficulty of killing the last 5 bosses would increase drastically, compared to the previous boss battles! After breaking through an extremely difficult situation, they were forced to face another even more difficult situation where they had no way of breaking through just yet. The 11th boss had become their new obstacle in clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress.

Since many players had used their {Inheritance Transformations} during the battle with the Ancient Creatures, when the cooldown for their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills are over, the contest would take place on a whole new level.

Chapter 584: Frost Lord Maron Curse

After accompanying the little brat in slaying a few mini-bosses, the three of them had to stop at the quest where they were required to slay the Lord of Darkness 'Mordock' --- The final boss for the Class A [Inheritance] quest was much more powerful than Vampire Count Ferra. They could not take on the boss just yet!

Over the next few days, Hundred Shots, Galileo and Sun Xin Yu had already completed the preliminary quests before the final quest for their [Inheritances]. Now, each of them only had to kill the final boss of their own [Inheritance] questlines before they could acquire their [Inheritances].

Zhang Yang could only choose to leave Sun Xin Yu in the basket as the boss she needed to kill was a Class S [Inheritance] boss. Unless Felice goes wild again like she did before, the boss would not be going down anytime soon. That dragonhawk lady was really a nightmare when she went berserk!

Since they were still incapable of slaying the final bosses for Class S and Class A [Inheritance] quests just yet, but they would still have a glimpse of hope in taking down the final boss for Class B [Inheritance] quests. As long as Zhang Yang has his {God of War Transformation} ready at hand, and some luck in triggering the special effect of {Glare of the Death God}, everything should work accordingly like how it did during their battle with Vampire Count Ferra. They would really stand a high chance of taking down the boss and completing the quest.

Though Vampire Count Ferra was a little subpar as final boss for Class B [Inheritance] quest, Zhang Yang now had quite a number of upgrades on his equipment. With his {God of War Transformation} activated, the total amount of his HP would reach up to 7,650,000 HP! That would be almost double the amount of HP he had back when they were taking on Vampire Count Ferra!

After some considerations here and there, Zhang Yang decided to help

Lost Dream and the other 2 members get their Class B {Inheritances} first. When they have 4 Class B {Inheritance Transformations} and 1 Class S {Inheritance Transformation} ready, the Lone Desert Smoke should be able to take down the last 5 bosses of Dragon Throat Fortress in a row!

Zhang Yang brought Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream and the other party members along as they departed for the quest. They endured much pain and suffering while battling against the high leveled monsters. After struggling for half a day, the party finally arrived at their destination. The Frost Lord Maron Curse was standing in the middle of the marshland of Haccerlant's Basin.

It was a large creature formed from frost and ice. It had a humanoid appearance that was hundreds of meters tall. The angular, clear, glass-like frost on the surface of the body threw off star-shaped reflections of iridescent light as the beast moved about, stoically shaking the loose snow off itself. It was such a sight to behold!

Frost Lord Maron Curse (Ethereal, Elemental)

Level: 150

HP: 150,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Attack: 75,409 - 95,409 (Determined as a Physical Attack, but deals Frost Damage)

Skills:

[Frost Aura]: Reduces 50% Movement Speed of all targets within effective range. There is a 1% chance of freezing the target. Freeze effect lasts for 5 seconds. When frozen Targets are struck by Maron Curse, the Critical Rate on the targets is increased by 50%.

[Frosty Edge]: Summons frosty pikes from above, raining down upon all targets within the area of 10 X 10 meters. Causes 50,000 Frost Damage to all targets once every second. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Ice Ring]: Unleashes a ring of frost, causing 30,000 Frost Damage to all

targets within the range of 20 meters. Targets will be afflicted with a freezing effect which will last for 5 seconds. When frozen Targets are struck by Maron Curse, the Critical Rate on the targets is increased by 50%.

[Frost Spawn]: The boss vanishes and summons the same number of Frost Spawns as the number of players on his aggro list. These Frost Spawns are meant to annihilate all enemies within the site. After 3 minutes, Maron Curse will reappear. Each Frost Spawn that is left alive will heal Maron Curse by 1% of his HP bar.

[Frost Build]: Immune to all Frost-type attacks and Frost-type Status Restriction Skills. However, Fire Damage will increase the damage received by the boss by an additional 50%.

Note: According to legend, Maron Curse was born from a broken toe of the God of Frost. Therefore, do not underestimate him!

"Count Ferra was rubbish compared to this boss!" After reading the attributes of Maron Curse, everyone sighed.

Wei Yan Er suddenly looked at Fatty Han and compared their current situation with the situation when they were battling Count Ferra. That little brat said, "As expected from the fatty, wretched ones will only get a half-baked [Vampire Inheritance]!"

Fatty Han filled his eyes with tears and said, "Come on... my [Inheritance] is also Class B, alright..."

"Brother fatty, don't you know that there are B+ and B-in the Classes as well?" Endless Starlight patted Fatty Han on his shoulder and said, "It's not that I want to look down on you, but the boss that we slew back in the final quest for your [Inheritance] was just weak! Of course, this boss would not be nearly as powerful as my 'King Kong'!"

"Little Yang... are there such different classes like B+ and B-for the [Inheritance,] even though they are both Class B?" As Fatty Han saw that Endless Starlight was being so serious, he could not help but feel a little depressed. So he quickly asked Zhang Yang to find out.

Zhang Yang shook his head as he smiled, then he said, "I have never heard of it before!"

"You pr*ck! How dare you make fun of me!" Fatty Han got angry immediately as he saw Starlight laughing.

Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] and summoned other 9 healers from Morning Town over to their location. Then, he rearranged the structure of the party.

Previously, they had managed to hold off the assaults of the Vampire Count Ferra, because Zhang Yang had support from the special effect of [Titan Chest Plate]. That equipment provided a recovery of 75% HP to him. However, the amount of HP recovery had been reduced to 20%. On the other hand, this boss had a much higher damage output compared to the previous one. Judging by numbers alone, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart would never be able to heal him up quickly enough.

Therefore, Zhang Yang brought along some members who already had [Flying Mounts]. Then, he also summoned some Healers with very good equipment, however, without [Flying Mounts] to support them in battle.

Currently, the party had a total of 42 players. 2 of them were Tankers, 13 of them were Healers, and 27 of them were DPS players.

"This should do the trick. We should be able to heal Zhang Yang up with so many Healers." Fatty Han did not have much confidence.

"We won't know till we try!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and then said, "The challenging part of this boss battle will be the boss's {Frosty Edge}. We will be staying within the effective range of the {Frost Aura} all the while, during the battle. Our Movement Speed will surely be reduced. Most of us will surely be frozen as well. We wouldn't be able to dodge that, and we will be exposed to a high chance of receiving Critical Damage! Therefore, everyone, get your own Anti Status Restriction Skills ready. Only use them to unfreeze yourself when you're struck by the {Frosty Edge}!"

"Ranged players, maintain a distance of about 10 meters, between each

of you. That can prevent the {Frosty Edge} from hitting multiple targets in one shot. As for the Melee players, we have no choice but to go head on. You know what to do!"

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, "Now, move out!"

He activated his {God of War Transformation}. His wings spread out, as usual, looking like a god with all the seven-colors of the rainbow emanating from him.

However, Fatty Han did not activate his {Vampire Transformation}.

It was an insurance for them. Just in case the party fails to kill the boss in 2 hours, Fatty Han could still transform and take over as a tank in Zhang Yang's place. Although he was a Hunter, with his {Vampire Transformation}, Fatty Han should be able to take more hits than anyone else. As long as he could buy enough time for the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} to kick in, it would become possible for the party to kill the boss!

"This is not a place for mortals like you to be! Get lost!" Maron Curse let out a thunderous voice that rocked the entire place. Every breath he released turned into ice and frost. Grains of ice particles formed above the players and rained down upon them like a rain of hail.

The boss swung his hand and palmed at Zhang Yang like a martial artist.

Although Zhang Yang could move swiftly in {God of War Form}, his Movement Speed had been reduced by 50% the moment he enters the effective range of the {Frost Aura}. So, he had to take the hit. It would not have been possible for him to dodge the attack, even if he was not affected by the Movement Speed Reduction effect.

Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all as he took that opportunity to throw the {Glare of the Death God} at the boss. Even though the Level Gap Suppression was punishing them now, {Glare of the Death God} would still ignore Defense and Damage Immunity effects! This Skill could really be deemed as the best 'boss-killer' in the entire game!

A dark skull formed on the head of the boss... the Skill was a success!

Everyone was crying in tears of joy as they were worried about it being resisted. It was a nerve-wracking moment for them to wait and see if the Skill would be resisted or not! The party quickly got into the positions that they were meant to be as they unleashed their assaults on the boss. Waves of fierce assaults rained upon the boss without any moment of pause.

The only thing that mattered in order to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was the rate of attacks. The damage did not apply anymore when it all comes down to that! With more players attacking the boss, the {Glare of the Death God} would be triggered more frequently. The HP of the boss was reduced by 10% in just 5 seconds! It was a good start for Zhang Yang and his party.

"You have angered me, mortals!" Maron Curse let out a raging roar and pointed one of his fingers at Wei Yan Er. A cloud of ice suddenly appeared, on top of the little brat. The next thing that happened was ice arrows raining down upon the little brat!

The little brat was shocked, but she managed to react just in time as she urged on her [Winged Tiger] to run. Although her Movement Speed had been reduced by 50%, the Movement Speed of her [Flying Mount] was much faster than the Movement Speed of a player. Furthermore, the ice arrows only covered 10 square meters of space. Wei Yan Er was only struck once before she got out from the effective range of the ice arrows.

As the Melee-type players were more concentrated in one spot, Wei Yan Er was not the only one who got struck by the ice arrows. Sun Xin Yu was standing within the range of the assault as well. Fortunately, the central point of the attack was the little brat, so Sun Xin Yu managed to get out of the range right before the ice arrows hit her.

The battle had just begun. Although the equipment on everyone had improved significantly ever since they took on Vampire Count Ferra, the total amount of damage they could deal to the boss after each passing second was still far from enough. It could be described as pitifully low! This was all thanks to the Level Gap Suppression function of the game!

On the other hand, the boss could deal about 110,000 damage to Zhang Yang with just a normal slam! If the Level Gap Suppression function would trigger 5 times of damage, the damage that the boss could deal on Zhang Yang would reach up to 300,000 damage!

That was not a Critical Hit! It would become even worse than that if the boss strikes Zhang Yang with a Critical Hit!

The boss also had {Frost Ring} which could freeze all targets within the effective range of the Skill. If Zhang Yang could not unfreeze himself in time, the worst case scenario was that he would be receiving a total of 600,000 damage in a single hit from the boss! Without the support of an {Inheritance Transformation}, any Tanker would be instantly killed!

Of course, that was possible, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. Furthermore, that amount of damage would only be possible if the Level Gap Suppression function of the game had triggered 5 times the regular damage. It would not be possible for the boss to deal such high damage under normal circumstances!

The 13 Healers were healing Zhang Yang with their might. After all, Zhang Yang had over 7,000,000 HP. They did not have to worry about over healing Zhang Yang at all. All they were required to do was to heal until they ran out of MP. When that happens, they would just rest while waiting for their MP to recover, as they would fully utilize the rule of the 5-second gap to recover their MP bars.

That was possible because Zhang Yang had a long HP bar. He would be able to last for 30 seconds against the boss, even if there was no one there to heal him. In other words, the healers could take half a minute break whenever they had healed Zhang Yang back to his full health state. That gave the healers a greater margin of error as they heal Zhang Yang.

Even though Zhang Yang was supported with so many Healers from the rear, this boss was a real tough son of the b*tch to kill! The boss was constantly activating {Frosty Edge}, giving the party a hard time. Everyone was forced to move around dodging deadly ice spikes that were showering down on them while they were within the effective range of the Skill.

Healers were required to stay still when they were casting their spells --- if they were mounted on a [Mount], their [Mounts] would have to stay still as well. Therefore, when everyone was forced to move around a lot, none of the Healers could heal Zhang Yang efficiently! It was already hard enough to heal Zhang Yang without any interruptions!

The special effect of [Titan Chest plate] had also been nerfed a lot. However, it could still recover 20% of Zhang Yang's HP. That would be about 1,500,000 HP out of his total 7,000,000 HP. Although he could only heal himself once every two-and-a-half minutes, he could heal himself by 10,000HP per second. That amount of healing was equally powerful as Fantasy Sweetheart's healing! However, it would still be a little weaker compared to the healing capabilities of Han Ying Xue.

In a nutshell, the situation was under control at the moment.

"My people, reveal yourselves, and fight for me!" 3 minutes into the battle, Maron Curse roared into the sky. In an instant, the boss shattered into countless pieces of ice and scattered across the ground. Then, mini versions of Maron Curse spawned right from the shattered ice, one after another.

--- that must be the {Frost Spawn}!

[Frost Spawn] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 145

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 0

Attack: 20,415 - 28,415 (Determined as Physical Attack, but deal Frost Damage)

Skills: None

"Regroup! Regroup!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted out to all of his party members. The boss had vanished from the battlefield for the moment. The party did not have to worry about the threat posed by the {Frost Edge} anymore for now. They could gather in one spot and focus on their

assaults on the Frost Spawns.

Upon activation of {Vanguard's Aggression}, Zhang Yang sent out a blue barrier out into his surroundings and shielded everyone within the barrier.

Currently, he had 18 EP ready to be dispatched. If he wanted to use {God of War Devastation}, he could cause 300% Melee Attack of Physical Damage upon the 19 monsters at the same instant. That would be about 300,000 damage on each of the monsters if none of his hits was a Critical Hit.

However, Zhang Yang was considering the limitation caused by the Level Gap Suppression function as well. With a Strength Attribute of 4,030, he could cause about 40,000 Chaos Damage to the targets as well. There would not be any limitation on that at all. On the other hand, he could dish out 6 blows of {God of War's Crushing Strike} with 18 EP. He would be causing a total of 240,000 damage to the targets!

After weighing the effectiveness of the two Skills, Zhang Yang decided to use {God of War's Crushing Strike} as it could deal much more damage than the other option. The basic attack of the {God of War Devastation} was around 300,000 damage. After being nerfed by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, the Skill would only deal around 150,000 damage.

Furthermore, the {God of War Devastation} could only hit 19 targets at the same time. There was a total of 42 monsters in the area. It was still far from enough.

In the end, Zhang Yang chose to use his {God of War's Crushing Strike}.

He raised the shield in his left hand up and smashed it hard on the ground. A beam of golden light poured into the ground and began to spread swiftly across the surrounding ground for a hundred meters. Boom! As the golden beam emerged through the surface of the ground, all targets within the hundred-meter range received 403,000 Chaos Damage!

Right after that, the aggro of the monsters went over to Zhang Yang in an instance. All 43 Frost Spawns were moving towards Zhang Yang.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang struck out a conical-shaped blastwave towards the monsters and stunned every one of them. The replicated special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered without surprise. However, the effect only popped once. Sigh... if only the replicated special effect of this sword had not been nerfed by the official, this {Blast Wave} would have triggered the special effect multiple times. He would have been able to take out at least half of the HP of these monsters!

After giving some thought about it, it was true that the replicated special effect of his sword was too powerful, and was a legitimate bug!

Everyone did not wait for Zhang Yang's signal. They were launching their assaults as aggressively as they could at the monsters. Although everyone was also affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, the monsters had 0 Defense. So, the damage everyone dealt with the monsters was a little higher compared to the amount of damage they were dealing with the boss. Furthermore, the Chaos Damage of the {God of War's Crushing Strike} could ignore the effect of Level Gap Suppression. With Zhang Yang as the main attacker, these elite Tier monsters were taken out with ease.

Chapter 585: A Chopped-off

The next minute gave the party a moment to take a deep breath and rally up. They took the opportunity to use some [Bandages] and wait for their Skills to cooldown. The Magic-type players recovered quite an amount of MP during that period of time.

The third minute had passed. The corpses of Frost Spawns melted into puddles of water. Then, the water gathered around together and reformed the massive body of Maron Curse.

Everything went back to normal. Everyone was attacking the boss in their previous places.

"One Sword Stroke is about to get married!" Fatty Han suddenly said it out loud, "According to some rumors I just heard, the Imperial Sky had purchased tons of [Fire Crackers]. They are using the [Fire Crackers] in Greenfield City!"

One Sword Stroke was about to get married? With Luo Xin Yan?

Zhang Yang could not help himself, thinking that it was odd. It was not because he could not let go of Luo Xin Yan. After everything she did to him in his previous life, there was nothing left between them anymore. Zhang Yang could not fathom the decision that One Sword Stroke had just made. One Sword Stroke would still marry Luo Xin Yan even after finding out that she was a mistress of Liu Wei --- in truth, the two of them met when Liu Wei introduced the girl to everyone, including One Sword Stroke. That was how everything started. That was why One Sword Stroke turned against Liu Wei. He even intended to marry the girl now? Could he already be doomed by love?

"Who's his wife then?" Everyone was a little curious. After all, One Sword Stroke was considered one of the celebrities in China Region. He was officially known as the second-most powerful Tanker in the entire game. The best Tanker was, of course, Zhang Yang.

"She's my wife's classmate!" When Fatty Han mentioned the words 'My wife', his eyes were glittering. He seemed to take great comfort in that.

"However, can Liu Wei accept such humiliation, then?" Well, the incident between One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei had been quite a hit on the forums. Most of the players who visited the forum would know the squabble between those two.

"What can he do if he cannot accept it? Can he bite?" Endless Starlight squinted with his mouth twitched.

Because of Zhang Yang, everyone was hostile towards Liu Wei. Most of them even hated him very much.

Lost Dream smiled coldly and said, "Obviously. You have not seen what powerful men can do when they are provoked!"

"Will it be very bad?" Daffodil Daydream was hoping that she could see the happy ending, no matter the person.

"That's really hard to say, for now!" Lost Dream shook his head, "When the strength of a family has reached a certain level, they will have many enemies. Their capabilities will be beyond your imagination! Furthermore, the worst, intolerable thing for men is having your girl cheat on you behind your back! I guess Liu Wei will never be able to let go!"

"Anyway, it has nothing to do with us! Let's focus on slaying the boss, then!" Hundred Shots put the topic to rest.

"Ha! It's boring if we only keep fighting the boss, you know!"

Under the large influence of the Level Gap Suppression effect, the damage that the entire party could deal on the boss was unacceptably low. Fortunately, the AoE attacks of Zhang Yang was powerful enough to take out all of the Frost Spawns. So, no one in the party had to suffer any damage at all. Or else, the party would have been wiped out by the elite Tier monsters.

One hour later, the boss only lost 42% of its HP. Zhang Yang and his party were still far away from victory.

Unfortunately for them, the second attempt of {Glare of the Death God} was resisted by the boss.

Truth to be told, this Skill had an extremely high chance of being resisted by higher Tiered bosses. However, everyone could not help sighing and sobbing constantly, because this was an extremely important battle for them. It would affect the movement of their guild in the upcoming days! Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were working together in teasing Zhang Yang, as they kept saying that Zhang Yang should not leave his hands unwashed after taking a poop. That would leave a big mark on his own character. They even reminded Zhang Yang to help the elderly in crossing the roads whenever he could.

Fortunately, the party had come up with a Plan B before the battle. They would have Fatty Han activate his {Vampire Transformation} if they still could not take out the boss when Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} ends. They did not fall into despair. Everyone was focused on dealing damage to the boss.

Another hour had passed, only 25% HP remained on the boss. However, that was also the moment when the duration of the {God of War Transformation} was expiring!

"Fatty! Transform!" Zhang Yang shouted at Fatty Han, 10 seconds before his {God of War Transformation} faded.

"Roger!" Fatty Han quickly activated his {Vampire Transformation}. In an instant, a pair of gray bat wings spread out from his back. Two long fangs came right out from his mouth and his skin turned pale all of a sudden. Fatty Han looked like a dried-up corpse.

"Wow! Fatty Han looks really abnormal now!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud.

"It's transformed! Transformed!" Fatty Han did not mind if people call him fat. However, he could not accept people for making fun of him like that. So he was trying to argue with the little brat while releasing arrows towards the boss.

3, 2, 1!

That was the moment when {God of War Transformation} finally faded. Zhang Yang immediately activated {Shadow of the Void} and escaped into

a void dimension. After he had removed himself from the aggro of the boss, Zhang Yang reappeared and joined the battle.

Other than Zhang Yang, Fatty Han was dealing the highest damage to the boss currently. So, the moment Zhang Yang disengaged from the battle, Fatty Han became first on the aggro list of the boss.

"Damn mortals! I'm going to crush you! Destroy you!" The Frost Lord turned to Fatty Han and gave fatty a good slam with his hand.

‘-161,080!’

An extremely high damage value popped up on top of Fatty Han. He was so shocked that he began to panic and scream, "What the f*ck! How is it possible that this boss is so much more ferocious than the boss that we encountered back in the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress!?"

"You idiot! That was just a Level 110 Violet-Platinum Tier boss and this is a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss! What? Do you think you can compare that two side by side?"

"Hahaha! What a weak bunch of mortals!" The boss raised his palm again and smashed it straight onto Fatty Han.

‘-405,659!’

An even higher damage value was struck upon Fatty Han!

"You f*cking fatty... are you made out of water, or what? How can the boss cause so much damage to you?!"

Fatty Han felt like weeping. Although his Defense was now several times higher after he activated his {Vampire Transformation}, he was only equipped with Leather-Armor. He only had 420 Defense, initially. Upon the 3 times boost on his Defense, he would only have over 1,260 Defense. That amount of Defense was not able to match the Defense that a Yellow-Gold Tier Shield could provide!

Meanwhile, Fatty Han only had 5% Passive Damage Immunity. His defense capability was not really different from his Defense before he activated his {Inheritance Transformation} Skill. The only thing that he

could rely on was the boost on his HP. Upon that HP boost from his 'transformation Skill' and the boost from {Vitality Aura}, Fatty Han had over 1,736,000 HP.

He could only take on all the punishment from the boss head-on by relying on his long HP bar. As long as he is not taken out by the boss in one or two hits, then the Healers from the rear could still heal him up! Fatty Han did not have any Skill that was similar to {Block} which could protect him from damage for a short period of time. Therefore, the healing capacity of the Healers became the main key to his survival in tanking against the boss.

Just because of that, the pressure on the Healers became unimaginably high. They had never thought that it was possible for the act of healing a Tanker to become so stressful! The 13 Healers busted their asses trying to heal up that fatty's ass. However, they could not keep up with the pace of the boss. So, the HP bar of Fatty Han was constantly reducing from 1,700,000 to 1,500,000, then from 1,500,000 down to 1,300,000...

If his HP bar ever falls lower than 400,000 HP, Fatty Han would risk being instantly killed by the boss with only one hit!

Just when things seemed to have become hopeless, the cooldown for {Glare of the Death God} was finally over! Zhang Yang prayed to his ancestors that the Skill would not be resisted by the boss before he threw it onto the boss.

Right after he cast the Skill onto the boss, a dark skull began to form on top of the boss!

The Skill was not resisted! Praise the lord!

Everyone was cheering, for victory was now possible!

'-1,500,000!'

'-1,500,000!'

High damage values began to pop right on top of the boss as the HP bar of the boss was reducing steeply!

"Holy molly! Every time when I look at this scenario, it always gets me pumped with hot blood!" Fatty Han was shooting with joy and excitement. Upon the activation of his {Vampire Transformation}, he had acquired a boost of 300% on his Attack. Every arrow he shot at the boss could cause about 70,000 damage! The amount of damage he could deal was so much higher than the amount of damage that Wei Yan Er could cause on the boss.

4 seconds later, the effect of {Glare of the Death God} had finally faded. The boss was only left with only 14% HP!

Now that the problem had been simplified, everyone only had to count on how long could Fatty Han last against the boss now!

Zhang Yang activated his {Indiscriminate} and gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. Then, he struck out at the boss with his {Killing Cleave}!

‘-23,311!’

It was an unlucky attempt. Zhang Yang had only caused about 20% of his initial damage.

"Haih... there is not a sense of accomplishment at all from battling a boss which has a Level Gap Suppression over us. What can that little amount of damage really do to the boss?" He shook his head while giving out a heavy sigh.

"That's true! That few thousand points of damage.. no... only a few hundred sometimes! Those numbers are why I'm depressed!" Lost Dream shook his head as well.

"However, this boss is not that powerful. At least his AoE attacks are not intimidating, or whatsoever!" Zhang Yang concluded.

Endless Starlight rolled his eyes at Zhang Yang said, "Boss, how can you say that! Even with you and Fatty Han transformed, we are still getting our butts kicked by the boss! What are you thinking?!"

Zhang Yang continued to shake his head, then he said, "If the boss has an even more powerful AoE attack, we would not have survived it just

now. We would have to rely on healing to stay alive. Or worse, we would have to depend on our numbers and switch between batches of parties! It wouldn't have been possible for a party with less than 50 players to take down the boss if that's the case!"

"Haha! Judging from what you just said, this [Inheritance] of Lost Dream should be just like mine! It should also be a 'shrunk' one, eh?" Fatty Han could not help but feel happy, as he finally found someone to 'go along' with him.

"Urgh... the boss of this quest is still much harder to take on than the boss of your [Inheritance] quest." Zhang Yang said.

Even though their equipment had improved tremendously and they had two players with [Inheritances] to support them in battle, it was still much more difficult for them to kill this boss. Judging by the looks of it, this [Inheritance] should be more powerful than the [Vampire Inheritance].

Lost Dream could not help himself but sigh heavily. After all the trouble that he put himself through, he could only get a Class B [Inheritance] that would be slightly more powerful than the [Vampire Inheritance] that Fatty Han had. What a sad case!

As the HP amount of the boss had dropped below 20%, everyone had entered their own 'Slaughter Mode' as they unleashed their 'killing-skills' on the boss. Although the Level Gap Suppression still existed throughout the entire boss battle, the HP bar of Maron Curse was reduced rapidly at a constant pace! It was only a brief moment later when the boss was only left with 10% of its HP.

However, the circumstances were unfavorable for Fatty Han. His HP had dropped down to about 600,000 HP. The worst part was that the Healers could not heal him back up at all!

"F*cking fatty! Use your {Bat Form}! Now!)" Zhang Yang said.

Fatty Han would risk himself to be killed instantly by one single hit from the boss the moment his total amount of HP is lower than 400,000 HP.

"Roger!" Fatty Han replied. After that, his big fat body began to split into

10 little bats and charged towards the boss. Those little bats began to suck the HP off the boss to recover Fatty Han's HP!

"What black sorcery is this?!" Maron Curse roared in rage as it began to slam its body with its own hands. It smacked the bats one at a time, trying to get rid of the bats.

However, the boss could only smack one bat every two seconds. So, it took the boss 20 seconds to smack all 10 bats from his body. By then, the bats had more than enough time to retrieve quite a substantial amount of HP for the fatty. After all the bats were taken out, Fatty Han reappeared on the battlefield out of thin air. His HP had recovered back to 100%!

After all, {Bat Form} was the ultimate Skill for Vampires to recover their health! Fatty Han could only use it once in every 30 minutes. Of course, it would be powerful!

8%, 6%, 4%!

Now, victory was imminent. Tens of minutes later, the Frost Lord collapsed onto the ground and dropped tons of loots across the ground.

Chapter 586: Lost of Control over the Progress of the Dungeon

After the boss died, Lost Dream was the only one who was excited. Others were just calm.

Well, the boss was Level 150. So basically, even if the equipment the boss dropped had the special attribute that reduces 20 levels on the Required Level, it would require players to be Level 130 to be able to equip them. Although the equipment was all good and powerful, none of them were up to that level yet. So, none of them would be able to equip any of the equipment just yet. It would only be an eyesore in the inventory.

On the other hand, Lost Dream had found and picked up the 'Frost Essence' that his [Inheritance] required. With that quest item, Lost Dream was just a few minor steps away from getting his [Snowman Inheritance]. He would only be required to run some errands and slay some mini-bosses for the remaining quests.

However, the equipment that was dropped by a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss would really make players drool. These were some powerful and unique equipment! Although they could not equip them so soon, they would be able to feast upon the powerful equipment with their eyes for the moment.

The boss had dropped a total of 4 equipment. Two were Mythical Tier while the other two were Ethereal Tier! The gang naturally ignored the Mythical Tier equipment, as the Required Level to equip them was Level 130! By then, this equipment would be less powerful than they should be when compared to other Ethereal Tier Level 150 equipment. They were more eager to see what the two Ethereal Tier equipment had to offer.

Everyone moved their heads over a little to take a closer look at the two Ethereal Tier equipment. Of course, they were going to look at the 'products' after struggling for half a day, trying to bring down a boss.

One of the two equipment was a silver-gray shortsword while the other

one was a necklace on fire. Would the necklace set the player on fire when the player equips it?

Wei Yan Er picked up the short sword and pasted the attributes onto the party channel.

[Half Moon Frosty Axe] (Ethereal, One-Handed)

Attack: 5,350 - 7,350

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 2,268

Equip: When the target is struck, there is a certain rate that the target will be heavily damaged, reducing its attack by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effect can also be applied to Boss-type monsters. However, the effects cannot stack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces 20 levels on the Required Level.

Note: This is a Weapon of God that was forged by the ancients. Even if you are far away from it, you can still feel the amazing power that is embedded within this weapon!

"This is obviously a Long Sword! Why is it called as an Axe? Isn't this like saying that a deer is a horse?" Wei Yan Er squinted.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I can equip two-handed weapons. So I won't be needing this axe. Endless Starlight, or whoever who is a Thief, who wants it?"

"I want it!"

"Me too!"

This time around, it wasn't just the regular party members. Zhang Yang had also brought along the other members of his guild. Some even had [Flying Mounts], while some of them were Thief Class players. Since everyone had contributed to killing the boss, everyone had the right to

claim any of the loots. Therefore, they had to compare their accumulated guild points in order to decide who could get the weapon.

When it all came down to comparing accumulated guild points, Endless Starlight would have the upper hand as he had accumulated quite some guild points back there. Without Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream fighting for the weapon, he managed to triumph over the others and kept the weapon for himself. The Special Effect of this weapon could reduce the damage of bosses by 10%. That was way better than increasing 10% Passive Damage Immunity of a Tanker. After all, bosses usually had AoE attacks.

The next item was the necklace.

[Wild-Fiery Necklace] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,167

Strength: +396

Agility: +396

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 790 points.

Equip: Increases both damage dealt and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increases Damage Absorption by 340 points.

Use: Afflict Burning Effect to oneself and all targets within the range of 10 meters, causing 20,000 damage to everyone, including oneself in each second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 2 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

Note: [Wild-Fiery Necklace] was once the treasure of the Fiery Flame Demon King, Shakla. Ever since his defeat at the hands of Maron Curse, the [Wild-Fiery Necklace] has been in the possession of Maron Curse as one of its victory loots! Now, it shall belong to you!

All Physical Class players were very attracted to the accessory the moment they saw its attributes.

This necklace could trigger a deadly AoE attack to targets if supported by Healers. Whoever who equips it could unleash the deadly effect onto the enemies whenever the player is surrounded by many enemies.

Lost Dream made it clear that he was not going to fight for that equipment from the beginning. As he was content with acquiring the quest item for his [Inheritance] quest, he would like to let others have the joy of getting that equipment. After a session of auctioning, the necklace was taken by the little brat. She put it on immediately, but there was no effect at all, because she had not reached the Required Level yet.

"Do I look pretty with this on?" Wei Yan Er began to show off her new 'jewelry'. The little brat had a pair of clear eyes and white teeth. She looked elegant and pleasant enough as she was. Upon putting the shiny red necklace on, the little brat looked even fairer and prettier. However, it would be a bad idea to praise the little brat. She would fly to the moon! Zhang Yang replied her coldly, "Hmm, not that bad at least."

"Your taste is awful!" Wei Yan Er humphed.

The other two Mythical Tier equipment had also found their owners. However, their owners had to reach Level 150 in order to equip them. That would mean that they would have to wait for a long time more.

Upon completion of the quest, everyone began to tear their [Teleportation Scrolls] and left. Meanwhile, Lost Dream persistently went on with his remaining quests to get his Class B [Inheritance]. After all, he was just a few steps away from getting the [Snowman Inheritance]. So he would like to get it done as soon as possible. By then, there would be 3 players with [Inheritances] in Lone Desert Smoke. That should give them enough Strength to take down the remaining bosses back in the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress.

Because the {Inheritance Transformation} Skills of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were under cooldown at the moment, the party could not continue on slaying the final bosses for the Inheritance quests of Hundred Shots and Galileo. So, they had to wait for another 3 days before they could carry on with the task. They needed their {Inheritance

Transformation} Skills to support them in order to kill those extremely powerful bosses.

Lost Dream completed the remaining of his Inheritance quests swiftly. It only took him two days to clear out the remaining quests and to become the third player in the Lone Desert Smoke with an [Inheritance]!

[Frost Armor (Passive)]: Reduce received damage by 5%. When struck by Melee attacks, can reduce the Movement Speed of the target by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Frost Strength (Passive)]: Increases your damage by 40%, permanently.

[Frost Transformation]: Transforms into a snowman. Maximum HP increased by 20 times. Defense increased by 3 times. There is a 70% chance of being immune against Magic Attacks. Attack increased by 3 times. During your transformation period, you earn 1 Energy Point (EP) every second. You need EP in order to activate some of your special Skills. {Frost Transformation} can only last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Frostbite]: Add the power of {Frost Strength} to your weapon. Upon hitting your target, you can cause additional 100% Frost Damage to the target. {Frostbite} will consume 1 EP in each second. The Skill will last until you deactivate it or your EP bar is depleted. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

After reading the Inheritance Skills of Lost Dream, everyone was thrilled.

[Vampire Inheritance] and [Snowman Inheritance] were both Class B [Inheritances]. Therefore, the normal enhancement that these [Inheritances] could provide to players were basically similar. Both of them could increase 40% damage and 5% of Passive Damage Immunity. However, [Snowman Inheritance] had an additional attribute that would reduce the Movement Speed of Melee attackers. Although it was not a ridiculously powerful Skill, one additional special effect is always better than having none at all. After all, the Skill was passive and it was 'free' to use!

More importantly, upon activating the {Inheritance Transformation}, the [Vampire Inheritance] focused on HP recovery while the [Snowman Inheritance] focused on boosting Attack. {Frostbite} could provide an

additional 100 seconds of damage enhancement if the Skill is to be activated while the EP bar is full. So players would have to be wise in determining whichever was more important based on the situation in a battle.

Upon using two {Inheritance Transformation} on other quests, Lone Desert Smoke was now far behind in clearing the dungeon.

Crimson Rage, Nihilim, Imperial Sky and the other top Tier guilds had pushed down another boss on their own. They ended the week with the score of 11/15. Judging by the looks of this, the 'First Clear' of the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress would be claimed before the next dungeon reset or the following one.

Zhang Yang could not fathom it at first. Why were all of the top Tier guilds in this life so ferocious and efficient?

After giving it some thoughts, he finally understood why --- Battle Companions!

The biggest difference between his past life and this life of his was the Battle Companion System that he had brought out from the deepest part of the game. Underestimating the Battle Companion system was an error for him. Although a large number of players could only get themselves a Gray-Silver Tier Battle Companion, the bosses in Dragon Throat Fortress was capable of dropping exclusive equipment for the Battle Companions.

The Hard Mode and the Hardcore Mode of a dungeon did not share the same dungeon reset time. Players could have cleared the Hard Mode of the dungeon repeatedly to farm for some fine equipment for their battle companions before they went on to the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon. Just look at the Lone Desert Smoke alone. After a certain amount of time, the Battle Companions of every single member had managed to equip Yellow-Gold Tier and Violet-Platinum Tier items.

The dungeon was basically similar to the arena. Players could not mount their [Mounts]. However, the system did not forbid them from bringing their Battle Companion along to the dungeons! Dragon Throat Fortress was a 50-player dungeon. With 50 players bringing 50 Battle Companions

along into the dungeon, the capability of the players in healing, attacking, tanking was almost doubled.

The players had also lost count on the number of times their party had been wiped out by the boss, when the HP bars of the boss was down to 4% to 5%. They were this close to bringing down the boss. With Battle Companions joining into battle, many impossible circumstances had turned possible!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. He realized that the Battle Companion System had undoubtedly increased the rate of conquering dungeons. The existence of Battle Companions in a battle might even change the method and ways of killing the boss! That being said, his experience from his previous life might no longer be feasible in this life!

The ironic part of this incident was, Zhang Yang brought it all upon himself!

However, Zhang Yang had confidence that he would overcome any obstacles set in his way. It did not really matter much.

After carrying out a deep discussion among themselves, the Lone Desert Smoke finally decided to focus on clearing the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress.

This dungeon could be considered as the first important dungeon in the Chaos Realms. This was also the first time when all players from all eight different regions were fighting for the 'First Clear' title of a dungeon. Everyone would hope that their guild is the one that claims the title! Rewards like Skill Points no longer matter much. This had become a contest of dignity and honor!

It was similar to watching the Olympic games. Although you may not have heard of the contestant's name before, it would get you high, hoping that the contestant would win by the end of the battle, hoisting up China's National flag! After all, everyone was from the same country. Of course, they would cheer for their compatriots.

Such was the power of patriotism.

Upon the dungeon's reset, Zhang Yang gathered his best members. Lone Desert Smoke was finally going all out with the best party formation possible, in order to clear the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress. After all, that fortress had been blocking all players from progressing further for more than 2 months!

The party was very familiar with the first 10 bosses, as they had encountered them more than just several times. Even without Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and the other core members of the guild, the party would have slain them with ease. Now that the strongest lineup for Lone Desert Smoke had been assembled, they were clearing their way through the stages like a hot knife cutting through a butter! It did not take them long to reach the 11th boss of the dungeon.

Chapter 587: Final Assault

Without having to activate any of their {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, the party managed to progress without much problem. The strength and toughness of a boss were not measured proportionately to the number of {Inheritance Transformation} Skills required in order for players to defeat the boss. Most of the time, players were required to implement tactics that were more complex. Players would need to move around frequently while maintaining high damage to the boss. If players could not take out the boss within 10 minutes, the boss would enter its 'Hysterical Drive' state and wipe out the entire party.

However, with Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream and other core members of the guild joining in, the party no longer had to worry about their firepower. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang could be deemed as the most capable Tanker in the entire game. Even though his {God of War Shield} had over 1 hour of cooldown, he could still use the Skill for 10 minutes. That would be enough for him to hold the boss while the others reduce the boss to dust.

Having been wiped out a couple of times, everyone on the party became familiar with the behavior of the bosses. In this attempt, they used that to their advantage as they moved around to dodge the attacks from the boss. By the end of it, they succeeded slaying the boss and caught up to the progress of other guilds.

However, the party did not stop there. Instead of resting, they continued to push on. Upon clearing the monsters, they arrived before the 12th boss as they brought the fight to the boss.

The Lone Desert Smoke was unstoppable. They took down the 12th boss and the 13th boss in a row, over the course of one night! Furthermore, right before Zhang Yang disbanded the party in the morning, Zhang Yang asked Lost Dream to activate his {Snowman Inheritance} to tank against the 14th boss head-on. With fortune favoring their side, they took out the boss without much of a problem and put a stop on their progress with a score of 14/15. They were only one boss away from securing the 'First

Clear' of the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress!

Crimson Rage and the other guilds broke out in cold sweat, thinking that Lone Desert Smoke would take down the entire dungeon without stopping! Other guilds were only at ease after knowing that Zhang Yang had disbanded his party members for a break. So, they continued to push on with their own progress on the dungeon.

Not wanting to be left out, some guilds broke through their own limits in a desperate outburst of superhuman effort and succeeded in catching up to where Lone Desert Smoke was at in the dungeon. On the other hand, other guilds were totally broken. They could not even clear the 11th boss. Many of them had laid down their arms in hopelessness.

However, the final boss of the dungeon 'Argent. Hammer of Battle Hymn' had put a complete stop to the dungeon progress of every single guild.

During their attempt to take down the boss, many players had activated their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills, but yet, they cried in defeat under the aggressive assaults of the boss. Well, the boss made a clear point that {Inheritance Transformations} was not a solution for everything. Even though [Inheritances] could greatly enhance the ability of a player, but one player could only do so much when confronting a boss. It would not be easy to carry the burden of an entire team! Furthermore, Dragon Throat Fortress was a 50-player scale dungeon. The boss was designed to withstand the assaults of 50 players at the same time without any problem at all. It would be naive to think that soloing the boss is possible!

Of course, if it was a boss from a 5-player scale dungeon, then a player with Class B {Inheritance Transformation} would be powerful enough to solo the boss.

The day passed. All office workers returned home and had their dinner. After resting for a while and loitering about, they logged into the game again.

Zhang Yang gathered his party members up once again and continued to

clear the dungeon. They were ready to face the final boss of the dungeon.

Currently, there were at least 20 guilds challenging the boss. Everyone tried their best to slay the boss, and tension was building up in every passing second. There was no telling which guild would be the one who would come up top in this contest and claim the 'First Clear' title for this dungeon. The system could make the announcement any minute now!

However, Argent was very powerful indeed. He was worthy of being the final boss of the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon. Even after players had activated their {Inheritance Transformation}, they had yet to find a way to take down the boss. The fact that the boss was still standing firmly on his post had proven that this boss was extremely difficult to kill.

After spending more than an hour clearing out the monsters, Zhang Yang and his party arrived before the great Orc President, Argent for the first time.

It was a Red-Skinned Orc as tall as 4 meters. His body was gigantic and his muscles bulged out. He held a halberd that was much longer than he was, in his right hand. The boss looked incredibly intimidating as he sat on a throne with pride.

[President Argent. Hammer of Battle Hymn] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 300,000,000

Defense: 3,060

Attack: 30,286 - 42,286

Skills:

[Wind Walk]: enters a state of invisibility and clears out everything from the aggro list. Increases Movement Speed by 100%, increasing the next damage dealt by 100%. The effect can only last for 1 minute, or until the user performs an action other than moving around.

[Storm Blades]: Swings the weapon in hand and causes damage to all

targets within the range of Melee Attack in every second. The damage dealt will be based on the Attack of the weapon held. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Berserker's Strike]: Unleashes a raging strike upon the target and cause a damage of 200% Melee Damage to the target. Will be used right after {Wind Walk}.

[Hysterical Drive]: When the battle exceeds 10 minutes, Argent will enter into a state of {Hysterical Drive}. Increases Attack by 10 times. Increases Movement Speed by 10 times.

[Demonic Decay Aura]: Causes 10,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the radius of 40 meters once every 3 seconds.

Note: This is the President of the Dragon Throat Fortress. He is the conqueror of both blood and fire!

As the boss would enter his {Hysterical Drive} mode after 10 minutes, the party must take out the boss within 10 minutes or so. Meanwhile, the boss had over 300,000,000 HP. According to a party with 40 DPS players, each of the DPS players would need to deal up to 12,500 damage every second in order to kill the boss within the time frame.

Theoretically speaking, that amount of damage was not really that difficult. Players would have their Battle Companions to aid them in dealing more damage than they could do alone. However, the aggro list of the boss would be emptied out the moment he activates {Wind Walk}. Upon activating {Wind Walk}, the boss would pick a target randomly and strike the target with {Berserker's Strike} right after revealing himself. That strike could deal up to a total of 170,000 damage theoretically.

Other than Tankers, players of other Classes would be instantly killed!

In other words, whenever the boss activates {Wind Walk}, someone would definitely die! The longer the battle is prolonged, more players would die. By the end of that, there might not be enough DPS players left to deal enough damage to the boss! When 10 minutes pass, the boss would have entered his {Hysterical Drive}! By then, the boss could take out 90% of the players with the first hit from his {Demonic Decay Aura}!

Therefore, the main problem in this boss battle was the {Wind Walk}. Once the boss has killed too many DPS players, it would become impossible for Zhang Yang and his party to take him out within 10 minutes. Even then, players with {Inheritance Transformations} would not be capable of handling a boss that was 10 times stronger than before!

All {Inheritance Transformations} had over 72 hours of cooldown period. In other words, Zhang Yang and his party would have to try again 3 days later if they ever fail this time. Without any doubt, they stood no chance against the boss without their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills.

Mountain Mover preferred to play safe, so he suggested, "The {Frost Transformation} will only be completely cooled down in another half a day. Should we wait first? I mean, if we can combine the power of all 3 {Inheritance Transformations} altogether, we should stand a better chance of taking down the boss!"

If Mountain Mover had said that a few days ago, Zhang Yang would have agreed with him. He would still believe that the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress would be too tough for others to handle for the moment. However, there was a new, uncertain variable in the game, in this life. The game had Battle Companions now. Initially, only 50 players could challenge the dungeon. However, Battle Companions were not counted as players. They were simply a form of support to the players. Therefore, when 50 players charge into a dungeon with their Battle Companions by their sides, it would be as good as 100 players charging into the dungeon at the same time. It would be much easier for others to clear the dungeon than it was in Zhang Yang's previous life!

Initially, players had to forego the dungeon and farm better equipment with better Tiers before they could turn back to face the boss. They would need at least Mythical Tier equipment in order to clear the dungeon entirely. However, things became different when Zhang Yang unlocked the Battle Companion System to the game. They would only need to get a set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and a Battle Companion before they could clear the dungeon.

In these few days, the large-scale guilds were able to prove that point by

progressing swiftly on clearing the dungeon.

Zhang Yang shook his head slowly and said, "At a time like this, any guild could just take down the 'First Clear' of the dungeon. We mustn't take that risk! Although this boss is really a tough one to kill, we do not have to move around all the time. All we need to do is to focus on dealing damage to him. So, let's settle the boss once and for all! "

Upon activating his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang's Attack would be boosted up to 100,000 points! That amount of Attack was able to cover the Attack power of 7 DPS players! Meanwhile, the Attack power of Fatty Han should still be able to cover the Attack Power of 4 to 5 DPS players with ease, even though he was not as powerful as Zhang Yang. Furthermore, the total amount of HP on Zhang Yang would reach up to more than 7,000,000 HP after he activated his {God of War Transformation}. Even if the boss enters his 'berserk' mode, Zhang Yang should still be able to hold the boss off for quite some time. As long as the remaining HP of the boss is not too much when the boss goes berserk, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han should still be able to take out the boss without much of a problem.

"Make sure you guys maintain a distance between yourselves. All Melee combatants, take note of this. The moment you see the boss using {Storm Blades}, don't hesitate! Just run!" Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Transformation,} as they must kill the boss in about 10 minutes or hell would break loose. Unfortunately, the God of War EP could not boost the amount of damage he could deal to his targets. Things would have been a lot easier if his {God of War Devastation} could generate more hits for every additional EP he had on him.

"I've transformed!"

With a flutter in his pair of wings, Zhang Yang threw his first attack at the boss as usual. {Spear of Obliteration}! A shadow of a blade landed right on the boss. Blood was spilled from the Red-Skinned Orc.

"Intruders!" Argent let out a raging roar as he bent his knees. Then, the boss charged over to Zhang Yang like an arrow that pierced through the

sky. The moment he arrived in front of Zhang Yang, Argent raised up his giant axe and smashed it straight down on Zhang Yang. The blade of the giant axe was actually blazing up, due to the powerful friction! The sound of it was astounding!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised up his shield to engage. 'Tang!' A loud clash was heard as Zhang Yang landed on the ground, falling to one knee with his shield raised up above him! Fortunately for him, this was a Mythical Tier shield. Although the shield took a solid strike from the boss, it only got one white scratch on the surface of it. On the other hand, the sharp blade of the axe was a little rolled up.

'-28,807!'

Now that Zhang Yang got a boost of 590% on his damage, the reflective damage of his {Block} could deal up to 30,000 damage! Initially, he could only deal 4,030 reflective damage.

Zhang Yang was smiling, satisfied with it. Then, he began to fight back with five layers of {Cripple Defense}.

With the effect of Level 8 {Eagle Eye}, Zhang Yang could ignore 85% Defense of the boss. Even he does not use {Cripple Defense} on the boss, his damage on the boss would still be unaffected by it. However, the others would not be able to penetrate the Defense of the boss. Therefore, Zhang Yang threw the five layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss in order to increase the amount of damage dealt on the boss by his entire party.

After all, this was a dungeon designed for 50 players. If it was a 5-player scale dungeon, Zhang Yang would be able to solo the boss after activating his {God of War Transformation}.

All other DPS players had charged forward and unleashed their worst on the boss. After all, the party only had 10 minutes to take down the boss. Either they would be wiped out by the boss for prolonging the battle longer than 10 minutes, or slay the boss and claim victory for killing the boss within 10 minutes!

Though the boss could deal an average of 36,000 damage in every hit, Zhang Yang had achieved 26,200 Defense at the moment. Normal attacks could only deal about 4,000 damage on average. Therefore, there was no need for the Healers to pay attention to him. They were only required to heal up the other party members.

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang could have taken down the boss all by himself if it was not because of that 10-minute time frame. Without the boss turning 'berserk', it would be easy for him to take the boss on without any problem at all. It would only be a matter of time.

"My god... Isn't our guild master a little too oppressive? The boss could only deal about 3,000 damage on him!"

"I've heard rumors. They say that the main Tanker of Sunset Amber was almost killed instantly after receiving one of those {Berserker's Strike} hit!"

"Haha! Are you serious? Their Tanker can't be that noob, right?"

While everyone was praising and surprised, the boss battle had finally commenced for real. Everyone went into their positions and gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion]. After that, they gave everything they had in dealing the highest damage possible on the boss.

Without the Level Gap Suppression function in the picture, the party was performing a terrifying amount of damage. Zhang Yang had also thrown {Glare of the Death God} over onto the boss --- Resisted!

What a sad case...

However, the Skill itself was a cheat. It was understandable for it to be frequently resisted. Furthermore, with the current Strength of his party, it was not entirely impossible for them to take down the boss within 10 minutes.

The moment the boss battle had begun, the effect of {Demonic Decay Aura} kicked in. The Skill inflicted everyone with Shadow Damage once in every 3 seconds. The Healers had their hands full.

After all, the pressure on the Healers was tremendously heavy in such battles. However, because Zhang Yang did not require any healing

attention, the Healers had one player less to worry about. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was a Tanker, the player that needed healing the most. That had lifted a lot of stress off the Healers. Therefore, having 7 Healers on the party seemed to become more than enough. However, the battle had just begun not long ago. It would be better to have more reinforcements than not enough reinforcements.

20 seconds later, Zhang Yang swung his sword at the boss as usual. However, the boss suddenly vanished and Zhang Yang only struck air! The boss seemed to have vanished like how Thieves usually do! However, players could still strike at Thieves in Stealth Mode. The boss seemed to have entered into another dimension. Nobody was able to hit it.

{Wind Walk}!

Zhang Yang got anxious. He kept turning around, observing every inch of his surroundings. Just half a second later, the boss suddenly reappeared right behind one of the Spellcasters. With a leaping slash, he plunged that gigantic axe of his right onto that Spellcaster.

Daffodil Daydream would have reacted in time. She could have activated her {Ice Barrier} to nullify the attack. However, not everyone had the reflexes of a Top 10 Spellcaster. As the Spellcaster had hesitated for that one moment, the axe crunched straight into the Spellcaster's head.

‘-143,576!’

The Spellcaster was instantly killed!

Zhang Yang threw another {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss and got the aggro of the boss back onto him. He flapped his wings and charged straight at the boss.

Truth to be told, for that one moment when the boss reappeared, Zhang Yang could have used his {Sacrifice} on that poor Spellcaster. He could have saved the Spellcaster in time if he had not wanted the Spellcaster to save himself by using his {Ice Barrier}.

Furthermore, {Sacrifice} had 1-minute cooldown. Zhang Yang hoped that he could use {Sacrifice} on classes who did not have their own life-saving

skills. For instance, Wei Yan Er. Although the little brat could deal a substantial amount of damage to her targets, but if she ever gets targeted by the boss, she would definitely be as good as dead without Zhang Yang's {Sacrifice}.

Another 20 seconds had passed. The boss had vanished once again with his {Wind Walk} and reappeared right behind Sun Xin Yu. However, before the blade of the axe could reach her, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Vanish}.

That was some top class skill!

Spellcaster only had to activate their {Ice Barrier} and stand still to stay alive. However, a Thief like Sun Xin Yu would need to grasp the moment down to a window of 0.01 seconds in order to activate the I-frame of her skill!

The battle continued on. The boss was activating {Wind Walk} at a constant pace. He would use it once in every 20 seconds and instantly kill one player at a time.

Against such a powerful Skill, Zhang Yang seemed to be helpless against it.

The boss only required 0.1 seconds to vanish and reappear with a fatal blow! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had no idea on where the boss would reappear. He would need to turn around frantically to look for the boss. If the boss happened to appear right within his sight, then Zhang Yang would have been able to activate {Sacrifice} on the boss's target. If that wasn't the case, then Zhang Yang would be powerless against the boss.

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes... the amount of HP remained on the boss was reducing constantly. However, the number of party members was plummeting as well. The boss could take out one player each time he activated his {Berserker's Strike}. On the other hand, the {Storm Blades} of the boss was extremely deadly as well! Any Melee combatants who were a little too slow in running away would die after receiving 2 to 3 hits from the {Storm Blades}.

9 minutes, 9 minutes 50 seconds!

Only 8 members remained on the part, and the boss still had over 7% HP left!

Chapter 588: Victory!

"Give it all you got! Don't hold back!"

Both the dead and the living were screaming and yelling like madmen.

10 minutes passed!

"You imbeciles! Feel my wrath!" Argent let out a raging roar. Green veins began to pop up on the surface of Agent's red skin thorough his entire body. The green veins spread across his skin like spider webs. It made the boss looked hideous and ferocious at the same time. Anyone would have a chill up their spines when they look at the boss!

Boom!

The boss clashed his axe against the [Sword of Purging Devourer] and sent Zhang Yang flying. At the same time, his {Demonic Decay Aura} was causing 100,000 Shadow Damage to the eight players who were all still alive. However, that first tick of Shadow Damage had taken out 5 players at once, leaving only Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight alive.

"Guild master! Brother fatty! We're counting on you guys!" Everyone was cheering for the two.

After all, only players who have activated their {Inheritance Transformation} would be able to survive the damage of the {Demonic Decay Aura}.

Endless Starlight felt gutted, and protested, "I'm still alive too!"

"So what if you're alive! You can't hurt him either way!"

Endless Starlight filled his eyes and cheeks with tears. When the second tick of the {Demonic Decay Aura} struck, Endless Starlight could only face the truth and collapse on the ground. Without anyone healing him, he was already as good as dead. So, he joined the dead and cheered for the remaining two.

‘-293,402!’

The boss swung hard at Zhang Yang and caused about 300,000 damage!

Even though Zhang Yang had a very long HP bar, that was an amount of damage that took away approximately 5% of his entire HP bar!

Just when the situation seemed bad enough, the boss activated {Wind Walk} and disappeared! The next split-second, the boss reappeared right behind Fatty Han! With a leaping smash, he smashed the giant axe at Fatty Han.

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang did not have time to use his {Sacrifice} again. So he could only watch Fatty Han being struck by that heavy smash helplessly.

‘-1,402,086!’

Fatty Han received a substantial amount of damage and he was almost killed instantly. He panicked and activated his {Bat Form} immediately right after. Upon splitting into 10 small bats, the bats flew over to the boss with the attempted to recover some HP for Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang was standing right next to the Fatty Han when that happened. In an instant, he activated his {Killing Cleave} and gave the boss a good, solid hit!

‘-399,922!’

A shockingly high damage value popped right on top of the boss! That powerful hit had managed to grab hold of the aggro once again. With that, Zhang Yang managed to buy Fatty Han sometime for him to suck some blood from the boss.

However, 2 seconds later, the damage wave from the {Demonic Decay Aura} was triggered again, causing a damage of ‘-100,000!’ on the 10 bats, killing all of them in an instant. The {Bat Form} was interrupted and Fatty Han had to reappear.

However, things did not go as badly as expected. Each of the bats managed to suck off 2% HP for Fatty Han. So, Fatty Han had recovered 20% of his HP, leaving him with about 500,000 HP at the moment. Although that amount of HP would not be enough to take one hit from the {Berserker’s Strike}, it would be sufficient for Fatty Han to survive a few

more seconds of the {Demonic Decay Aura}.

Another 20 seconds had passed, Argent vanished, thanks to his {Wind Walk} and reappeared right behind Fatty Han once again. With a powerful leaping smash, the boss swung his giant axe at the neck of Fatty Han!

{Sacrifice}!

Just in the nick of time, Zhang Yang threw his {Sacrifice} on Fatty Han right before the sharp edge of the axe could decapitate him. He had protected Fatty Han from death!

Switch!

‘-936,668!’

Zhang Yang had over 26,200 Defense attribute. However, that amount of Defense was far from enough to sustain the basic Attack of the boss that had already exceeded 1,000,000 damage! Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang had reserved his {God of War Shield} for the boss’ ‘berserk’ stage. Upon activating it, Zhang Yang gained an addition of 20% Passive Damage Immunity. That was how he had managed to reduce the damage received to below 1,000,000 damage!

"Little Yang, you’ve done it again! You saved my *ss! Unfortunately, my heart belongs to someone else already. We can’t be together anymore!" Fatty Han just had to open his big mouth.

"So tell me, brother fatty. Are you saying that your heart belongs to me now? Unfortunately for you, I only love you like my own brother! So, I can’t accept your love!" Endless Starlight was no much better than the wretched fatty. The moment he heard Fatty Han spouting nonsense, he joined in.

"Guildmaster! Do your best!" the other party members decided to ignore those two wretched men as they continued to cheer for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang resolutely activated his {God of War Devastation}. A value of 300,000 damage popped right on top of the boss. That amount of damage was almost as much as the damage dealt by his {Killing Cleave}! The boss roared in pain as he swung his giant axe around, attempting to

land a hit on Zhang Yang.

The wretched fatty continued to fire his arrows at the boss. Unfortunately for them, the {Demonic Decay Aura} was too much for them. Their Battle Companions had been sent back into the Battle Companion Slots due to that reason. Their [Mounts] had long succumbed to the merciless assault. The only ones left were the two of them, and Zhang Yang's {Shadow Clones}. They were still hanging on, trying to deal as much damage as they could on the boss.

Unfortunately, the boss would only target players upon using his {Wind Walk}. Zhang Yang could not activate his {Sacrifice} or {Vanguard's Aggression}. He could only pray that the boss would pick him over that wretched fatty.

Half a second later, the boss reappeared! However, the boss reappeared behind --- Fatty Han!

Poor fatty.

Argent took his head off with a mighty swing.

‘-1,389,022!’

"Ugh ---" Fatty Han's body went limp. Even though he had transformed, but no one, not even him, would be able to survive the powerful strike from the boss that was already berserk!

"We are so close! We are about to clear this!"

"Victory is just in front of us!"

"We are number one in the entire world!"

"Lone Desert Smoke is the best!"

"Guildmaster! Just one more! One more hit!"

Nobody bothered consoling Fatty Han. Not when the boss was left with only 1% HP at the moment!

Zhang Yang let out an intimidating battle cry. The attacks from the boss, fuelled by his {Hysterical Drive} were too much for Zhang Yang to handle.

Zhang Yang was forced to activate his {Shield Wall} and {Radiance of the God of War}! He had no time to hesitate at all. Currently, the boss was only left with 1% HP, which was only about 2,000,000 HP!

No time to lose! Going all out with no regrets!

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}! {Frost Strike}!

Zhang Yang had unleashed all of his Skills at a high damage output. All of his 'Shadow Clones' were also repeating his attacks, using all of the Skills he activated as well! Even though the 'Shadow Clones' could only deal 10% of the damage that Zhang Yang could deal, every little bit counted at this stage of the battle! After all, that 10% damage of his {God of War Transformation} was no small matter!

Suddenly, Zhang Yang could feel a heat starting up in his right hand. That strange feeling rushed straight up to his chest again. A golden dragon emerged from his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and charged straight at the boss! Everything happened so quickly that Zhang Yang could not react at all!

{Rising Dragon Strike}!

‘-1,024,444!’

It felt so awesome!

"Argh!" The boss let out a miserable roar as his last chunk of HP was emptied out by the {Rising Dragon Strike}. The boss was thrown to the sky, 3 feet high and collapsed straight on the ground heavily. The crimson-red eyes started reverting to their original color --- only death could reverse the corruption of the demons.

‘Ding! You and your team have acquired the Dragon Throat Fortress (Hardcore Mode) First Clear Title! As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your name will be published in the list of the First Clear title, allowing the world to praise you!’

That moment onwards, the Server notification began to boom across Zhang Yang's ears. The key-in interface appeared right in front of him. After putting the obligatory advertisement slogan, the news was

announced repeatedly on the server.

‘Server Announcement: Lone Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring the Dragon Throat Fortress (Hardcore Mode) First Clear Title, their great deeds will be published on the list of the Hardcore Mode First Clear title. Please cheer for them!’

This time, the list of Hardcore Mode First Clear title did not have a remark that specifically mentioned ‘China Region’. That could only mean, it was the only ‘First Clear’ title of all eight Regions! This was the first ‘First Clear’ that involved the entire Server!

"YEAH!" the party cheered.

"We won!" every member of the Lone Desert Smoke was cheering in unison.

Yes, that’s right. Lone Desert Smoke has won the title on behalf of the entire China Region!

As the announcements rang out, all China players were feeling proud. They could push their chests up while walking on the streets, especially when they see players from other Regions. The first ‘First Clear’ title of a ‘Hardcore Mode’ in the entire world had been claimed by China Region! How cool is that?

Those who were killed during the boss battle began to run back to their dead bodies. After everyone was resurrected, they gathered around to look at the loots. Zhang Yang put Mountain Mover in-charge of distributing the loot among the party members. Meanwhile, he dug his own pockets out and gave all guild members that took part in clearing the dungeon a bonus of 100,000 dollars each. He even clarified that he would have given the money out, even if they did not get the ‘First Clear’ title.

It took them approximately two months to clear the dungeon, from the first boss to the final boss. There were more than 100 guild members of Lone Desert Smoke involved in clearing the dungeon. Although he only gave each of them 100,000 dollars as a reward, it totaled up to 10,000,000 dollars!

However, that amount of money was just an insignificant amount to him. With his current wealth, he could just easily give that amount of money out like it was nothing. Furthermore, this was the first 'First Clear' title involving all 8 Regions. That title meant something special! So it would not be a waste for him to spend such money. After all, they had struck an impression upon the entire world! Lone Desert Smoke was even more famous now. Naturally, the brand of 'Silky Soft' would become even more renowned!

That aside, it seemed that the overseas expansion plan of Silky Soft Holdings was going proceed without a hitch, after all!

Zhang Yang added the Skill Point that he acquired from the system reward to his {Shadow Clone}. He could summon two Shadow Clones at the same time, now. That would mean his damage efficiency could be increased by 20% for two minutes. It was a notable rise in power!

However, each map in the Chaos Realm spanned over a large gap. The next minimum level upon entering the next dungeon would be higher than before. Now that they had already cleared the map with a level gap of between Level 100 and Level 120, it would mean that the players would need to grind up to level 120 before they could enter the next dungeon. Of course, they would only need to do that if they want to challenge the map without any restrictions by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. The next dungeon would be a Level 120 dungeon. Furthermore, that dungeon would be another large-scaled 50-man dungeon. Therefore, Zhang Yang would have to wait for quite some time before he could acquire Skill Points by clearing a dungeon.

Acquiring the First Clear for Dragon Throat Fortress was something special. Even the officials were trying to make a big deal out of it. They specially made an exclusive documentary out of it! They listed out the names of those who acquired the 'First Clear' title for the dungeon from Normal Mode to the Hard Mode, and from the Hard Mode to the Hardcore Mode. They even listed out the names of guilds and the bosses killed by them. Nihilum and Crimson Rage were able to get much attention from the public.

Of course, by the end of the day, the Lone Desert Smoke was the center of the topic. The officials had even sent their own reporters to interview all the core players of Lone Desert Smoke! They even made the interviews live on their own channel for others to watch.

Fatty Han was 'tuned' up the moment he saw the reporter was a bombshell with two big and round honkas right on her chest. His eyes glittered all the way as he spoke. Instead of answering the questions, he became the one asking the questions! The wretched fatty had even asked about measurements of the reporter's chest, waist, and hips. Well, the bombshell was giggling all the way, only arching her back, pushing her boobies further out at him.

The consequences for doing that in a live stream was very clear to Fatty Han. He had to face the 'female tiger' back at home. As for his 'argument'... well... everything was crystal clear on the live stream. No matter what he said, he could not be saved.

Truth to be told, although this wretched fatty is easily attracted to beautiful women, he would not dare to do it. He would just wag his tongue about, without truly taking it all the way. Therefore, the 'drama' between that wretched fatty and the 'female tiger' was only full of sound and fury but had little action. The two of them went back to being happily ever after in no time at all. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er who were expecting a 'spectacular' drama that would find its place in soap opera, were very disappointed to see it end so uneventfully.

The contest of acquiring the 'First Clear' of the dungeon was put to rest. All guilds began to turn their attention towards grinding their levels again while trying to snatch some boss kills and acquiring high Tier [Inheritances] to build their Strength. They were getting ready to strike for the second world-level 'First Clear' of a dungeon.

Chapter 589: Crown of the Living Frost

Lone Desert Smoke included, every guild in the entire game was busy grinding their levels. Most of them had entered the Chaos Realm in search of the [Inheritance]. Those who were still below Level 100 were trying even harder to get their levels up in an attempt to reach the required level to enter the Chaos Realm. They had yet to feast their eyes on the vast and new world. Furthermore, most of them wanted to join in their own forces against other forces from other Regions.

As each Region had their very own 'Proprietary Map', it should be enough for players from each Region to grind their levels without much problem. Unless they were required to run an errand in order to complete a quest, players had no reason to set foot on the map of others. Therefore, the quarrels and wars between players of different Regions were not very intense as of now. A few small-scale party battles broke around the borders, but nothing big had taken place yet.

In a nutshell, everyone from all eight different regions was very focused on grinding their levels. The situation would only change when the players are ready to enter a new map. By then, war would become inevitable as players from different regions would want to secure new territories, leveling areas and resource points for their own regions.

Over the next month, Zhang Yang aided Hundred Shots, Galileo and Endless Starlight in acquiring their Class B [Inheritances].

Zhang Yang and his party members were forced to rely on the success rate of the {Glare of the Death God}. The Level Gap Suppression function of the game had surely increased the difficulty of slaying these high-level bosses. Furthermore, these three bosses were much tougher and much more powerful than the Vampire Count Ferra and Frost Lord Maron Curse. To depend on such an unpredictable factor like the {Glard of the Death God} was not a very reliable option. The party was wiped out several times in each of the boss battles before they could finally slay the bosses!

Other than that, the party had to wait for 3 days after each failed attempt, due to the cooldown of their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills. They could only transform once again, 3 days after their previous activation of their {Inheritance Transformation}. Therefore, it took the party about one month before they could finally slay all three bosses and get the tasks done.

They could still rely on luck when taking on the final bosses of Class B [Inheritance] quests. However, luck would do them no good at all if they were to confront the final boss of a Class A [Inheritance] quest. Without any [Forbidden Scrolls] on hand, even after Zhang Yang, Lost Dream, Endless Starlight and Fatty Han activate their {Inheritance Transformations}, they could not even see a glimmer of hope at slaying the boss.

It would be a waste of time to even consider challenging the final boss of a Class S [Inheritance] quest. So, everyone in the party could only focus on getting themselves up to Level 120 before thinking about that.

In just a blink of an eye, it was already the end of November. The League Championship was coming to a beautiful end as the official finalized the final scores. Most of the parties had put their very best for the final sprint. The situation was extremely intense.

The current scores for the S Class League Championship were as follow:

1. Silky Soft Battle Team (Lone Desert Smoke): 65 Points.
2. Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team (Imperial Sky): 58 Points.
3. Crimson Rage Battle Team (Crimson Rage): 57 Points.
4. Hundred Towers Battle Team (Sunset Amber): 55 Points.
5. Shun Feng Battle Team (Breaking Dawn): 45 Points

There were still 7 rounds of Championship battles that yet to be carried out. The Silky Soft Battle Team had basically secured the Number One in the League Championship. However, the competition between the second, third and fourth places were very intense. Nobody would be able to tell who the first runner-up would be.

After all, the first in place and the second in place for the S Class League Championship would be competing against each other for the title as the 'Number One in the entire World' during the finale of the World League Championship!

Number one in the entire world!

The prize of 5,000,000 dollars reward was not the only tempting reward that drove these players to strive for the 'Number One in the entire world' title. There was also the honor and glory! Every Region had sent two Battle Teams to join the World League Championship in hopes of acquiring such honor. Every player was hoping that their own regions would be the one to obtain this highest form of honor.

Zhang Yang had reached Level 117. He planned to reach Level 120 before the World League Championship begins. By then, he should be able to help Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er acquire their [Inheritances].

Although players were not allowed to use their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills, they still had the major passive boosts that came with [Inheritances]. Players without [Inheritances] would still suffer disadvantages far beyond what they could imagine if they were to engage players with [Inheritance]. Players with [Inheritances] also had a high resistance to 'Status Restriction Skills'!

Status Restriction Skills were essential during a one-on-one battle. Meanwhile, there was a total of 7 one-on-one battles each player was required to participate in. Battling opponents without being able to use Status Restriction Skills effectively on them would prove to be fatal!

Therefore, Zhang Yang was focusing on grinding his own level up, while urging all his guild members not to let up for a second. Everyone should grind for Level 120 to eliminate that annoying Level Gap Suppression function of the game. Without that annoying function, Zhang Yang would be able to bring along his party members and possibly earn two more players with Class S [Inheritances] and one more player with a Class A [Inheritance] for Lone Desert Smoke.

Atop Thunderhawk, Zhang Yang now hovered above a land of ruins. He had focused on grinding his level up and sending his [Herb Foraging Familiar] to pick some high quality [Herbs] for him. By doing so, he could balance out his heavy consumption of ingredients. Well, Zhang Yang had lost count on how many [Potions] Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had taken from him. If this goes on without having his [Herb Foraging Familiar] helping him to restock so efficiently, Zhang Yang would have to pick up [Herbs] all day long, without having any time to grind his own level!

Camping at one site to grind would be a little more efficient than taking quests, running around to complete them. However, slaying the same types of monsters in the same area repeatedly would both be physically and mentally tiring. Completing a quest would be much more interesting and fun.

Originally, this was an elegant palace where civilization flourished at its prime. Unfortunately, the palace was now left in ruins. There were innumerable broken beams among the ruins and there was not a single room left intact. Zhang Yang could see the partitions made by the walls clearly as he flew around in the sky. This place had become inhabited by the Spectres. There were Spectral monsters dressed like maidservants of the palace wandering about in the entire area.

Zhang Yang had received a quest that required him to collect 10 pieces of [Flawless Gemstones] from the monsters in this area. After seeing the monsters, Zhang Yang descended down to the ground in excitement. Felice had also transformed into her Thunderhawk form, as she seemed to share his eagerness, "Big brother, should Felice charge in and begin the battle?"

This little girl was in fact, rather brutal. Whenever they engaged in a battle, she would terrify Zhang Yang with her violence and ferocity. In fact, she was actually quite similar to Wei Yan Er! Felice was truly related to the Goddess of War. Anyone could see that she was hooked on battles!

"Alright, go ahead!"

Zhang Yang nodded and gave his permission to Felice. With such an aggressive Battle Companion, he would really earn a substantial amount of experience points within a short period of time! Compared to that Messick who always fled when his life is at stake, Felice was so much better!

‘-39,502!’

Felice launched a {Fire Missile} at one of the Spectre maidservants and caused a nice amount of damage to the monster. That hit took out 3% of the monster’s HP bar.

[Wandering Maidservant] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Magic Attack: 6,478 - 7,478

Skills:

[Shadow Strike]: Strikes the target with Shadow Energy, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Chanting time: 2 seconds.

[Screech of Death]: Terrifies a target and causes the target to flinch in terror, causing the target to scurry away like a rat to its hole. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: These Spectral maidservants have been wandering around for decades, or even centuries. They are loyal to their masters. They will strike down any unwanted guests down with no mercy. Protecting the princess has always been their single, indomitable goal! That was also the main reason why they have become Spectres.

"Intruders of the Princess’s imperial burial site shall be eliminated at once!" the Spectral maidservant let out a screeching roar as she turned the ignited flames in her empty sockets towards Felice. At the same time, the monster had already activated her {Screech of Death}!

Right after that, Felice began to fly around as if she had lost control of

herself. A terrifying skull appeared right on top of her head. She had been afflicted with the Terror Effect.

The Spectral maidservant began to chant her {Shadow Strike} right after that. It seemed that this monster was good at chaining her Skills. Restricting the target followed by the chanting of a longer, more lethal spell was surely an effective way of battle. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was not a bystander. He patted Thunderhawk and charged towards the maidservant. With a powerful swing of his shield, the monster struck in the face so heavily that it took a few steps back.

If the chanting progress could be interrupted, the monster was better off not chanting anything in front of Zhang Yang. After all, Zhang Yang could easily interrupt the chanting progress with one 'Supporting Attack'.

After a series of bashing and smashing, the Spectral Maidservant collapsed onto the ground and dropped a few [Inscribed Clothes] and a few Silver Coins. There was no sign of any quest items that Zhang Yang needed.

Zhang Yang did pay it much heed. He did not expect any monster to just drop a quest item. Since the Palace Ruins was rather vast and the number of monsters was as many as the hairs on an ox, Zhang Yang decided to take his time collecting quest items. Killing the monsters would bring him a lot of experience points. So, he carried on at leisure.

Only one [Flawless Gemstone] would drop upon killing about 5 monsters. Zhang Yang would need to kill approximately 100 Wandering Maidservants in order to acquire 20 pieces of [Flawless Gemstones]. It took him a while before he collected enough [Flawless Gemstones]. Zhang Yang patted Thunderhawk and both of them made their way back over the indented path of the valley to hand in the quest items to the NPC.

It was a goblin that given Zhang Yang the quest. His name was Lincols. The moment when he saw Zhang Yang coming back to him with those gemstones for the quest, he immediately revealed a greedy expression as he quickly shoved all gemstones into his backpack. Then he said, "Hehe! For an ugly human, you did pretty well back there! My friend, are you

interested in having a big go with me?"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Flawless Gemstones. You received a reward: 3,000,000 experience points.’

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "A big go? Tell me about it, how big exactly?"

Lincols hopped onto a large rock and patted Zhang Yang's shoulder, then he said, "Have you ever heard of the Princess Helena?"

"Nope!"

"What a sad case... she was deemed as the greatest beauty that had ever walked beneath the sun, among you mortals! According to rumors, her smile could make the great eagles forget that they ever had wings! Even the crabs will forget how to breathe under the water! Unfortunately, a plague came over the land and robbed that beautiful woman of her life!" Lincols said it with a regretful face.

"Hey, goblin! Drop the act! You only feel pity for the treasure that was buried together with her!" Zhang Yang immediately saw through the real desires of that greedy little goblin.

"Ugly human! You have humiliated the pride of us goblins! I want a duel with you!" Lincols jumped 3 feet up and leaped around like a monkey in front of Zhang Yang.

"Fine... fine... however, I'm just one man. I cannot possibly take so many things from there!" Zhang Yang raised his hands up in a 'you-got-me, do-as-you-wish' gesture.

Lincols calmed down almost immediately. He obviously chose the gold coins over his pride! After all, what Zhang Yang was about to bring him could be everything that a goblin could dream of! He rubbed his bald dome and said, "Human, I need you to take Helena's [Crown of the Living Frost]. That is the truly valuable thing that is worth a few cities!"

‘Ding! Lincols has a quest for you: Crown of the Living Frost. Would you accept it?’

Accept!

"Hey, human! Why are you still staring at the sky? Get going already! Time is gold, you dumb *ss!" Lincols snapped all of a sudden.

That f*cking goblin!

Zhang Yang quickly pulled Felice away from a potential act of murder and the two of them went up the back of Thunderhawk. The little lady was that close to waging war between the humans and the goblins.

[Crown of the Living Frost] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: Lincols wants you to enter the Palace Ruins and locate the whereabouts of Helena's mausoleum. When you do, find a way in the place and find the [Crown of the Living Frost]! According to the great goblin Lincols, the location of the royal mausoleum should be in the northwest corner of the palace. "Hey, human! It's very simple, isn't it? Quickly! Time is gold! You dumb *ss!"

Completion: Acquired [Crown of the Living Frost] 0/1

Chapter 590: Princess Helena

The moment he returned to the Palace Ruins, Zhang Yang went straight up to the northwest corner of the palace and scouted about. He tried to pinpoint the exact location of the royal mausoleum.

It was not difficult at all. Zhang Yang had already located the mausoleum by a garden full of flowers and trees. He landed in the garden and saw that the tombstone built by the mausoleum clearly had Helena's name right on it. It was truly the resting ground of Princess Helena.

However, the moment Zhang Yang landed, he was 'welcomed' by 10 Maidservants. They broke out of the ground all of a sudden and surrounded Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk.

"Argh ---" Upon hearing a deafening screech, Zhang Yang immediately lost control of his own body and began to run around, trying to escape.

--- he was afflicted by the negative effect of {Screech of Death}!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} to break free of the control. With a swing of his sword, he caused approximately 30,000 damage to the Maidservant that had tried to make a clown out of him. When that hit landed solidly on the monster, his Rage Bar was filled to the brim. With a {Horizontal Sweep}, he caused another two sets of damage to each of the monsters. '-50,000!', '60,000!'. He was lucky to have triggered the special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], causing massive damage to the 10 monsters.

"Argh!" another {Screech of Death} was directed at Zhang Yang. He could not help but run around in terror.

Holly molly! If these 10 monsters were intelligent enough to repeat their {Screech of Deaths} into a series of chained attacks, Zhang Yang would have to suffer in terror for 100 seconds without pause! Furthermore, if the cooldown of this Skill was frequent enough, Zhang Yang would really be in serious trouble. He might end up being deafened to death!

Without any other means of countering, Zhang Yang activated his

[Heart of the Death Knight] to cancel out the Terror Effect. At the same instant, he activated his {Shadow Clone}. With that Skill activated, there were three 'Zhang Yangs', one Felice and one Thunderhawk battling 10 Maidservants. He quickly activated his {Shadow of the Void} to clear out all aggro and the Skill effect.

When the {Shadow Clone} was activated, two Shadow Clones were summoned out. They would replicate everything, including Zhang Yang's status. That included the aggro values on him as well. However, even though his Shadow Clones would cause damage to the monsters, their Skills would not carry out their special effects. Therefore, when Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} to clear the aggro on himself, the two Shadow Clone could not follow Zhang Yang into the void dimension. They retained their aggro values.

Therefore, these two Shadow Clones were now the primary targets of the monsters!

"Argh!" "Argh!" the two Shadow Clones began to run around like idiots, upon being afflicted by the negative effect of {Screech of Death}.

Zhang Yang finally found a gap to catch his breath. He pointed the tip of his sword towards one of the Maidservants as Felice and Thunderhawk rallied to him. The three of them focused their attacks on one monster at a time. Monsters with Status Restriction Skill were truly annoying. They would get even more annoying as their numbers grow. When there are too many of them, even the strongest players would succumb to blows that they are restricted from answering! In this case, it would be the Terror Effect of their {Screeching of Death}.

In order to break the continuous chain of Terror Effects, Zhang Yang should take out a few of the monsters first, and the chained series of the Status Restriction Effect should be broken. Or else, he would never be able to break himself free again.

The remaining 9 monsters were focusing their attacks on the two Shadow Clones. Due to the stunt that Zhang Yang pulled with his {Shadow of the Void} earlier on, the aggro of the monsters were still fixed

on the two Shadow Clones of Zhang Yang. The monsters were so focused on spamming their {Shadow Strike} and {Screech of Death} on the Shadow Clones, in an attempt to afflict them with the Status Restriction Effects.

However, even though the Attack power of these Shadow Clones were only 10% of Zhang Yang's initial Attack power, they were just as durable as the real thing. Their HP bars were equal to Zhang Yang's. Therefore, the monsters could not take out the two Shadow Clones immediately. Furthermore, the two Shadow Clones were sharing the load. On other words, half number of the monsters were attacking one Shadow Clone while the remaining monsters were attacking the other Shadow Clone. So the monsters were no longer be able to chain up the Status Restriction Effect of their {Screech of Death}. Furthermore, the two Shadow Clones were able to cause quite some damage to the monsters. Although they could not cause as much damage as Zhang Yang and Felice, it should not be underestimated!

The firepower of Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk altogether was extremely powerful. After approximately half a minute, the first Spectral maidservant had let out a miserable cry and had turned into a stream of white light. Zhang Yang lured and kited the second monster over before the three of them focused on attacking the monster. In just another brief moment, they had taken out the second and the third monster.

Two minutes later, the duration of the two Shadow Clones was over. The clones then dispersed into wisps of black smoke and dissipated into thin air. However, there were still 6 maidservants remaining. Furthermore, the monsters had just activated their {Screech of Death} on the Shadow Clones. They were without those skills for a time being.

Another minute passed, and the monsters were once again able to use their Skills with the Terror Effect. However, there were only four of them left. Zhang Yang shrugged the effects off with his {Warrior's Will} and [Warrior's Honor]. All 10 of them were soon killed.

Phew!

He let out a breath of relief. If it weren't for his newly acquired Skill

{Shadow Clone}, Zhang Yang might have been in serious trouble back there! Unless he sends Felice over to get the attention of the monsters, Zhang Yang might have been forced to activate his {God of War Transformation} against these measly 10 monsters just to survive!

That was the difference between having a party and going in alone during a tough battle!

Zhang Yang would not have minded going up against 10 monsters all by himself if the monsters did not have Skills that could tie him down with Status Restriction Effects. However, with Skills that could hinder him like this, the monsters suddenly had an absolute advantage over him as they could just repeatedly restrict him until he was dead, even with his power!

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. He had almost suffered a major setback due to his own carelessness!

After reflecting upon his own mistake, Zhang Yang walked up to the entrance of the mausoleum. He targeted the metal lock and started attacking as aggressively as he could. After a flurry of attacks, the metal lock was broken.

Zhang Yang pushed the stone door of the mausoleum open. The door squeaked open, and a spooky pathway lay before him.

The torches on two walls by the sides burst into flames. The entire tunnel was lit up. Zhang Yang could see that the path before him was paved with white jade, and the walls were made of granite. Everything seemed really grand.

Zhang Yang took a step. Felice and Thunderhawk followed him closely. They were very careful with every step that they took.

However, there was no sign of any deadly trap or switches. Zhang Yang went through the path and found himself before a translucent, jade coffin where a woman was lying in the middle of it. Surprisingly, the body was not rotten at all. Instead, the woman looked as if she was still alive. She looked like she merely got the daylights knocked out of her!

Around the jade coffin, there were many chests that had been wide

opened. They were all filled to the brim with jewelry! Unfortunately, this jewelry would be worth nothing in the game.

Zhang Yang glanced across the entire room. His eyes were magnetized to a glittering crown that was radiated with the light of seven colors! It was right on top of the woman's head.

With no other method of doing it in the politer manner, Zhang Yang decided to pop open the jade coffin to get the item.

Zhang Yang put both of his hands right on top of the coffin. Unexpectedly, he did not have to exert any strength in order to open the cover of the coffin. It was just like opening a chest. A progress bar appeared right on top of the coffin.

30 seconds later, the progress bar was completely filled. The cover of the coffin was automatically opened up. Zhang Yang quickly reached his hands to the crown around the head of the woman's corpse.

With care and patience, he placed his hands on the crown. Just as he was about to lift the crown up from the head, suddenly, the eyes of the dead woman opened up wide and she suddenly grabbed Zhang Yang's wrist with one of her hands!

"Son of the ---!"

It was not really a rare thing to see reanimated corpses and zombies in the game. However, having a corpse move and grab hold of you like that was another matter entirely! Zhang Yang was so frightened that his heart almost popped out! His wrist felt icy cold and numb. Felice was also shocked by his reaction, as she stared at him with her eyes wide open. Thunderhawk was so frightened to the point that its feathers stood up on ends!

A true horror movie experience!

The lady corpse swung her arm and Zhang Yang was thrown across the room like a rag doll. Then, he crashed into the wall of the room and stars began to spin around his head. He lay on the ground dizzily.

After struggling to get up for a brief moment. Zhang Yang saw that the

lady corpse had sat up and was looking around to the left and right in confusion. She seemed to have been displaced in time and space.

[Helena, Princess of Garano Kingdom] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 71,546 - 85,546

Skills:

[Royalty's Supremity Aura]: Being oppressed by royalty, targets within the area of 40 X 40 meters will suffer a reduction of attack by 50%.

[Chaos Strike]: Attacks the target continuously. Each hit causes 100% Physical Damage to the target. The user can attack from 2 times up to 10 times. The number of hits will occur randomly.

[Thousand Shadow Slash]: Strikes out with shadows of blade in all eight directions. Each shadow of blade causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage and pushes the target 3 meters backward. Range: 50 meters.

[Spectre Regeneration]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. Can be activated during a battle.

Note: Helena was the Princess of the Garano Kingdom in life. She was a rare beauty. She had a long line of suitors. According to rumors, the line was so long that it could have spanned the Chaos Realm thrice! Even the beautiful female elves would be ashamed of themselves when they lay eyes on her.

Now, this are the Skills that a powerful boss should have! Nobody could dodge these AoE attacks. Furthermore, her Attack value was really high. She could even kill a Tanker instantly! Therefore, the only way of standing against her would be to sacrifice as many players as possible until the boss was defeated!

Zhang Yang started thinking about it. The only weakness that Helena had was her slightly low HP value! He could just activate his {God of War

Transformation} and stand a chance at killing the boss now. However, this was only a B-rank quest. An easy quest would not send players up against the most powerful boss in the entire map.

Furthermore, Helena did not seem to be attacking. Something was up.

Zhang Yang signaled at Felice not to do anything stupid with a half-raised arm. Then he called out to Helena with a respectful voice, "Your Highness ---"

"Who are you? Why am I here? What is this place?" Helena was very confused as she went on asking all her questions at once. Her charming face was twisted with confusion.

"Your Highness, please take a deep breath and calm yourself first. We can take it slow and talk about it."

Helena took a deep breath. Her face became calm in just a second. It proved that she was an experienced lady of the court. The moment she calmed down, her intellects were restored. After taking a quick look around, she said softly, "From what I see here, this is a tomb! Just now, I was crawling out from a jade coffin... I remember... I was infected with a deadly plague. The doctor said those who are infected would be as good as dead! If that was true, it means that I... I'm already dead!"

Very good, it seemed that Zhang Yang did not have to waste his breath trying to explain everything to her.

This is an intelligent being. She could already accept her death and her Spectral nature within 3 seconds! However, her eyes suddenly turned angry as she looked at Zhang Yang and asked, "Are you a tomb raider?"

It was definitely a logical assumption. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang had almost become one himself, thanks to the stupid Goblin. However, he was not stupid enough to admit that.

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head. He spoke in a just manner, "Your Highness, please don't get me wrong. I'm an Adventurer from White Jade Castle. It would be impossible for me to be a filthy tomb raider! Truth be told, I was sent here by Queen Serena herself to investigate the cause of

the plague!"

"Queen Serena? Queen?" Helena tensed up a little upon hearing the word queen, "When did a Queen appear on these lands? What year is it now?"

"It's the year 10,086!"

"WHAT?!" Helena was shocked, "So it has been so long since I died! 21 years! It's been 21 years!"

Looks like this princess is quite 'young'.

Zhang Yang did not say anything after she stopped talking. He did not want to do anything to aggravate the matter. After all, she might just lose herself and vent it all out on him! Zhang Yang would not want to waste his {God of War Transformation} for a stupid reason.

Fortunately, Princess Helena was a calm and wise lady. She managed to calm herself down very quickly each time. She walked quickly towards the door, as she wanted to take a look outside the mausoleum. Zhang Yang followed her closely. The Crown of the Living Frost was still on top of her head, so there was no point for Zhang Yang to remain in the room.

After walking out from the mausoleum, Helena raised her head and looked into the sky. Then, she let out a roar that shook the air. Her voice was heard across the distant land as well.

From afar, countless Spectral Maidservants came towards her. The number of the monsters was so abundant that Zhang Yang felt a chill going up his spine. He would definitely be as good as dead if he ever gets targeted by so many monsters. The only solution on his mind now was to hop onto Thunderhawk and fly as far away as possible!

"Your Highness!"

"Princess Helena!"

Even though these Spectral Maidservants were just low Tier monsters like the skeleton soldiers, they were approaching Princess Helena. After all, it was their loyalty to her that had made them this way.

"Everyone ---" When Princess Helena saw that her maidservants had been turned into Spectres and were walking towards her like an army of the walking dead, she was instantly struck by grief and rage. She took a deep breath again and turned to Zhang Yang. Then she said, "Adventurer, I should have sentenced you to death the moment you trespassed my tomb! But now, I will give you a chance to redeem yourself! Go forth and inquire about a certain person's whereabouts for me! His name is Banct Roland! Find out where he is and get as much information as you can for me!"

'Ding! Princess Helena has a quest for you: Search for News. Do you accept?'

Since he had nothing in his hand at the moment, Zhang Yang nodded and accepted the quest. Then he said, "Your Highness, Zhan Yu is willing to serve you!"

However, it would not be easy at all to search for someone's whereabouts in the entire Chaos Realm. It might be even worse than finding a needle in a haystack! So Zhang Yang quickly asked, "Your Highness, who is this Banct Roland? It would be very hard to find a person just by name."

Helena hesitated for a moment, and said tentatively, "He is my lover... back then... he made a promise to me. I have been waiting for his return here ever since! Even after the plague, I did not ever leave! But he never returned to me! I need to know... did something happen to him or did he abandoned me? Did he disappoint me? Our love? I need to know! Truth be told, I can leave this place to search for him myself, but.... look at them... I must find a way out for them! They are my people!"

Zhang Yang could not help but admire the princess. She would put her people before herself! He saluted her and said, "Your Highness! Rest assured that I shall locate Banct Roland for you! I shall not fail!"

Spectres only come to being if they had strong emotions or attachments to something. It would cause their soul unrest. What Helena could not let go was her love for this man. It was really hard to imagine what would happen if this Banct Roland betrayed her. This princess would surely

unleash all her resentment, and the only God knows how many people would die just to calm her wrath!

"He used to live in Castle Anjar, located in the Juval Mountains of Grandu Ice Ridge. You can start by taking a look there."

"Yes, Your Highness."

Zhang Yang hopped onto his Thunderhawk. With a flash of deep blue lightning, Zhang Yang blasted off to the skies.

Chapter 591: Castle Anjar

Grandu Ice Ridge was originally the territory of Japan-Korea Region. However, ever since Winst Castle had fallen into the hands of Zhang Yang, those maps had been under his 'control'. So, Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to Morning Town. Then he used the Teleportation Circle of Morning Town to reach Winst Castle within seconds. It saved a lot of time traveling. Well, he was very happy about that. The Teleportation Circle of the Territory came handy after all.

If the players of Japan-Korea Region were to know that Zhang Yang was using their Territory Gateway only for his own convenience, they would be punching their own teeth out --- you son of the b*tch! Using it to your own convenience, while disposing the convenience of hundred millions of players from Japan-Korea Region? Humiliating them completely? They would want to bite this China pig to death, literally!

Once he was at Winst Castle, Zhang Yang flew into the sky once again. The speed of Thunderhawk was surely one of the best among all [Flying Mounts] at the current stage of the game. With just a lightning-blue flash, it could disappear from one's sight.

Zhang Yang did not try to put up a pageantry. After all, the place was the territory of the Japan-Korea Region. He was there only to complete his quest, not to look for trouble this time. If he is to be discovered by the players from that region, then he would not be able to avoid a fierce battle. Although Zhang Yang did not mind killing those players to earn some points, he would not want to risk compromising his quest.

So, that was that. Zhang Yang decided to focus on his current quest.

After a smooth and windy ride, he arrived at the Juval Mountains. After scouting the place a few times over, he discovered a tall and rugged castle among the mountains.

It seemed that the castle was already there for some time. The walls were dilapidated and thick with moss. Zhang Yang could not help but wonder if these walls were to face an oppressive army, how long would the

walls last under the bombardment of the catapults? However, it was a huge castle. It was the total size of several small towns combined. It was rare to see such a large castle these days.

Zhang Yang did not land in the castle compound straight away. Instead, he chose to land by the entrance of the castle. He would like to go in like a guest instead of an intruder. So he paid the entrance fee upon entering the castle --- entering the territory by intrusion would only be provocative. If he was to do that in White Jade Castle, the Dragon Knights of the White Jade Empire would have pursued him to the ends of the earth!

Although there was no sign of any Dragon Knight in this castle, Zhang Yang did not intend to take an unnecessary risk. He came here for his quest, not to look for trouble. Furthermore, this was another stronghold of the Japan-Korea Region. It would be better for him to stay as low profile as possible.

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey out from his inventory. This big, adorable, silly bear had not breathed fresh air for quite a while. So it kept nuzzling Zhang Yang's leg with its head, trying to act in a pettishly charming manner. Zhang Yang could not help but chuckle.

The castle was merrier than expected. The place was crowded with people. There were merchants and sellers shouting on the two sides of the streets trying to get people to look at their goods. Zhang Yang was walking on the street with Whitey. They went up to a cloth merchant in an attempt to get some information. Firstly, he spent two gold coins for a few pieces of cloth and silk. After that, only did Zhang Yang dare to ask, "Boss, do you know anyone by the name of Banct Roland?"

"Count Roland The Third? Of course! Of course! He was the Baron of our Castle Anjar! Of course, I would know that!"

"Was?"

"Yes! How could you not know that Count Roland the Third had been dead for a decade now? Ever since he passed away, his son Tinct Roland had inherited his legacy as the new Baron. Now, the castle is under the supervision of the Countess Amansari, the wife of Tinct Roland!"

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. Banct Roland did not just abandon Helena's love, but he also had a wife and child? The question was, did he already have a wife and a child before Helena was infected by the plague or after Helena was infected by the plague?

If it was the former, this Banct must have been a selfish and heartless son of the b*tch! He was toying with Helena's feelings all this while! If that Spectral princess ever finds out about this, the world would burn. She would definitely lead a massive army to burn and slaughter the people of this castle!

Actually... that was not such a bad thing, after all!

Zhang Yang could not help but widen his eyes in joy at the thought of it. It would not matter even if the drama ended in bloodshed and misery across the place. Everything in the game was virtual, after all! Furthermore, if the massive army of the Spectres were to cross the border, the players of Japan-Korea Region would be having a 'great' time.

Although Helena was just an Ethereal Tier boss, her Skills were powerful! Just like Queen Serena, even though her {Sword of Life and Death} was weaker by a few notches than expected, her AoE still had a huge range! Players would be wiped out before they can reach her!

With her {Thousand Shadow Slash}, Princess Helena could strike out with shadows of blades in all eight directions. Each shadow of the blade could cause up to 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage and pushes the target 3 meters backward. More importantly, her Skill could reach all targets within a 50-meter range from her! By activating her {Thousand Shadow Slash} once, she could take out 80% of the players at the current stage of the game! Even if everyone happened to be mounted, 90% players would still die if she struck out twice with her {Thousand Shadow Slash}!

That would be great. These days, the Japan-Korea players have been destroying the Winst Castle more frequently than ever. Zhang Yang had to spend a large sum of money to repair the Territory repeatedly. Each repair would cost him about hundreds of thousands of dollars, sometimes, it even went up to millions! It was costing him a fortune!

Well, it's about time to teach them some manners!

However, when Zhang Yang brought up his quest list, he realized that the quest 'Search for News' was not completed yet. In other words, the information that he had acquired up to this point was not enough. There might still be some clues at Banct Roland's grave --- Zhang Yang hoped that the man had not turned into a Spectre and frighten him like how the princess did back there!

Zhang Yang continued to ask, "Boss, do you happen to know where Banct Roland's grave is? I would like to pay my respects to him."

"It should be in the ancestral hall of the Rolands. It's located in the middle of the castle, alright. But that is a restricted area. You can't go there! Oh, right! What's your relationship with our late Count? Could you be one of his illegitimate children as well?" Tsk tsk tsk! Our late Count Roland just loved sprinkling his 'seeds' all over the 'place'! Hehehe!" the cloth merchant let out a sinister laugh.

Zhang Yang put the clothes that he bought into his inventory and went off towards the deeper part of the castle with Whitey.

Although he could not vanish or use stealth like how Thieves usually do, he did have {Burrow}. Zhang Yang could just sneak through the guards and all other defenses.

"China pig!"

Just when Zhang yang was ready to move forward with Whitey, he suddenly spotted two players with red-labeled names. The kind of red that almost seemed to be black. It was not the color that players would have after killing other players. If they did kill some players, their names would be bright red. However, this dark red color indicated that these players were from an opposing region.

One of the players had hidden their personal information while the other did not --- The Chaos Realm did not belong to any of the Regions. Although there were eight different Territory Gateways across the entire realm, those gateways were just a spot for players to take a break in. Basically, the gateways did not permanently belong to any one region.

Therefore, the information of players would not be forcefully revealed to others. However, enemy players could still see which region the players were from.

"Kill him!" One of them was a Thief, while the other was a Berserker. After exchanging affirmations, the two of them charged at Zhang Yang.

The moment weapons were unsheathed, the merchants at the roadsides began to scream and run in terror. The situation erupted.

Zhang Yang hopped off Whitey's back and charged at the Berserker. He stunned the Berserker with his {Charge} before the Berserker could activate his. Then he slashed at the Berserker and laughed out loud. Blood splattered across the ground and the Berserker received a damage of '-29,873!'. That was one-third of the Berserker's HP bar!

On the next moment. Zhang Yang swung him [Sword of Purging Devourer] through the air as he spun on his heels. More blood was spilled! He had struck the invisible Thief and had knocked the Thief right out from his Stealth Mode. '-88,974!' That swing was no ordinary attack. Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Devastation} which caused 3 times the damage of his initial Melee damage. The Thief who did not reveal his player information was instantly killed by that hit!

"Nanda Kore!"

The Berserker with the name 'Tienwu Ichiro' turned ghastly pale. He took in a cold breath and shouted in a shaky voice, "You're Zhan Yu!"

'A Shield-wielder with incredibly high damage!' That was the impression of players from Japan-Korea Region on Zhang Yang. Because Zhang Yang was wearing a helmet which covered most of his face, it would be very difficult to recognize a player without the player's information revealed. So, the only way of guessing was by the way the player acted.

Huh? How could he have guessed that so accurately?

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Ding ding! Correct! Sadly, no rewards for you!"

The one-second global shared cooldown passed, Zhang Yang activated

his {Horizontal Sweep} and caused '-61,229!' damage to Tienwu Ichiro, sending him straight to the Graveyard.

Without wasting any more time, Zhang Yang quickly fled the scene.

Zhang Yang knew that the players of Japan-Korea region wanted him dead, to eat his flesh and drink his blood! If they find out that he was all alone in their territory, they would definitely gather their men and attempt to surround him. Unless Zhang Yang activates his {God of War Transformation}, he would not stand a chance against hundreds or thousands of players at the same time.

Furthermore, judging from the hate that these players had for him, they would come in numbers of up to tens of thousands!

Without any hesitation at all, he quickly rode Whitey and charged towards the deeper site of the castle. In just a brief moment, he arrived at the front of an imposing manor. There were 10 fully armored guards guarding by the entrance of the manor. Right on top of the manor, there was a label. 'The Count's Manor'. The words were crystal clear as f*ck!

So, Zhang Yang quickly kept Whitey back to his inventory and activated {Burrow} to begin his infiltration. He dug into the solid-jade ground. Then he made his way into the manor like a fish in water.

The manor was like a country among countries. It was huge! It took quite a while before Zhang Yang could finally locate the whereabouts of the ancestral hall.

The Chinese people call it an Ancestral hall. The place was an underground tomb site. Zhang Yang went straight through a metal door and entered the mausoleum of Roland. Fortunately, the place was not too vast. The room was only hundreds of meter-square wide. There were tomb slots on all four walls of the room. Each of the tomb 'shelves' contained a coffin. There was also a plate that displayed the name of the coffin's occupant.

Zhang Yang looked around for a bit. After just a while, he found the label of 'Banct Roland'. He pulled the coffin out effortlessly. Screech!

Zhang Yang prayed hard that this corpse would not suddenly come back to life like the last one.

He reached out for the cover of the coffin and a progress bar appeared right on top of the coffin. 30 seconds later, the cover of the coffin automatically opened by itself. Creak --- the atmosphere in the room was creepy and spooky at the same time, thanks to the dim light and the sound the echoed throughout the large hall.

"Urgh ---"

The moment the lid of the coffin slid open, a dried up corpse sat up! His face was emaciated, and he was making some strange, spooky sounds like a zombie.

Pak!

Zhang Yang immediately smacked the man in the face with his shield! F*ck you! Stop scaring people already!

The dried body was immediately smacked back into the coffin.

[Banct Roland] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 100/20,800

Note: Third In Line, Count Roland. He was once a great Spellcaster. But now, he is a barely living husk of a man.

He was not yet dead!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel shocked. How could a living man be in a coffin in such a manner?

He helped Banct out of the coffin and said, "Hey, give me a cough if you're not yet dead!"

"Who... are you..." Banct tried to speak.

"I'm an Adventurer. I'm here by the orders of Princess Helena. I was tasked to look for a man named Banct Roland!"

"Helena!" the lifeless eyes of Banct suddenly flashed, as if he had

regained some vigor. It was as if the light of life had been shone upon him for a moment. "Isn't... isn't she dead already?"

Chapter 592: The Reason for His Past

"She could never let go of the feelings of the past. That was why, even after death, she had returned in the form of a spectre." Zhang Yang sat down next to the coffins and said, "Tell me your story, Count Roland. Why are you not dead but hiding in the coffin?"

Banct Roland started to shed tears. The man should be only around 40 years of age. Yet, his complexion and appearance made him look like an 80-year-old. Surprisingly, the man still carried a little of that gentleman's aura. Banct kept quiet for a moment. After sobbing for a bit, he muttered, "I was engaged before I knew Helena."

Zhang Yang listened to his story and found that it was rather a dull plotline. Banct had met Helena even though he was already engaged to someone else. When he saw her beauty, he fell for her and tried his best to court her. Back then, the man was in his prime. A man of youth that could entice even the coldest of hearts such as Helena. Banct was not engaged with the woman because he loved her. Hence, on the pretense of going off to solve a family matter, Banct left Helena. He promised Helena that when he returns, he will ask for her hand in marriage. Banct lied to Helena because he was afraid that she might accept the truth. As such, Banct left Helena and promised to return in three months' time.

Banct sought to cancel his engagement with Amansari. However, in a fit of rage, Amansari had poisoned him and had him locked up. Back then, Both Banct's parents had passed away due to illness. Hence, the Baron of the castle had fallen to his ownership. However, the real power lay in the hands of Amansari's family. The main purpose of Amansari poisoning Banct was to have her family to fully take in the Roland's family's fortune.

Amansari had made a public announcement about Banct. In the announcement, she claimed that Banct had been inflicted with a disease that had caused him to be paralyzed from head to toe. She had proclaimed her marriage to Banct as an act of true love and decided to take over the inheritance of the Roland family. In the end, Banct was kept in the coffin and pronounced dead.

On the other hand, Helena, who was still waiting for her love to come back to her side had been inflicted with a deadly disease which ended up killing her as she stood by her promise and waited for Banct's arrival even when the disease spread to her land.

Zhang Yang scratched his head and pondered. "There's another Roland out there who is still alive. If he your son?"

"....Yes." said Banct. "She forced herself on me!"

Is that even possible!? Oh, wait...perhaps it is. With women like Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue on the loose, so why would not there be someone like Amansari?

Banct explained further. "For the past several years, I have been tortured by her. She even blackmailed me with the life of my son! If I am to take my own life, she would send him to my side after my death! The child is innocent! I could not bear the responsibility of another person's life, much less my own son!"

The way he spoke, as if he was a saint!

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Search for News!'

Zhang Yang had completed the quest and could now return to Helena's side.

"Young man, return to Helena. Tell her that I am sorry. I have failed her." Banct closed his eyes and cried a river.

"Hmph! Are you sorry for me then?" The voice of a woman was heard and a beautiful woman, endowed with grandeur and royalty stepped out of the shadows. Her hair was golden blonde, and her skin was as fair as the color of milk. The highest of standards of a western woman.

[Countess Amansari] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Magic Attack: 41,464 – 51,464

Skills:

[Flare]: Blasts flames in all directions, dealing 50,000 Fire damage to all targets within 40 meters.

[Explosive Flame]: Deals 200% magic Fire damage to a target. Range: 40 meters. Channeling: 2 seconds.

[Flame Shield]: Creates a shield made of fire. Protects the caster for 1 minute or after absorbing 1,000,000 damage. Attackers will receive 10,000 Fire damage on every attack received.

Note: Anjar Castle's puppet master.

The NPC Count Amansari had a green name tag; so killing her would do Zhang Yang no good.

Banct widened his eyes and cried, "You swine! You have imprisoned me for 20 years! You have taken the castle! What else do you want to take from me!?"

"Everything. You're the man who abandoned the engagement and sought for a new woman!" Amansari glared at Banct.

Banct quickly acted before Amansari could do anything to Zhang Yang. He drew a circle in the air with his scrawny fingers and created a white portal. With an invisible force, Banct shoved Zhang Yang into the portal. "Young man! You have to escape! You must tell Helena that she is the only woman that I will ever love!"

Zhang Yang was suddenly thrown into a cutscene. He could not control his character and fell into the portal. With a bright flash, Zhang Yang reappeared outside the castle. He could still hear the ringing bellows of Amansari in his ear.

"There! The China pig is there! Get him!"

Zhang Yang turned his head to the side and saw nine players rushing to his direction on mounts. The news of Zhang Yang wandering in the Japan-Korea region had spread like mushrooms sprouting after a rain. Zhang

Yang was still a little dizzy after going through the portal. However, he quickly jumped on his mount and made his way back to the mainland. The nine players who were rushing over and calling Zhang Yang with profanities had only just spotted him then. Things changed when Zhang Yang stood still and waited for them to get closer to him instead. A stance where only the strong could do. Right then, the nine players had noticed it and exchanged a worried look before running away in the opposite direction.

Zhang Yang laughed out of habit. Although he knew that his name had already spread across the land and along with it, the sense of alert and fear came with his character itself. It was proven when they turned tail and ran, even when there were nine of them and only one Zhang Yang.

Finally, the days when he can be left alone has arrived!

If Zhang Yang wanted to chase them, he could. Violet Thunderbird's tier was Mythical. It could easily chase down Violet-Platinum, and Yellow-Gold flying mounts. Among all nine of them, only one player had a flying mount while the rest only had the normal type. None of them could escape the grasp of death if Zhang Yang wanted them dead!

But then again, why should he let them get away? He could kill them and let them spread his murderous power after they revive themselves.

Zhang Yang leaped onto the Thunderhawk and shot towards a Spellcaster. Zhang Yang grabbed his sword and was ready to pull it out, however, before he could draw his blade, the opponent had activated {Ice Barrier} and gained 10 seconds of invincibility.

What a letdown. Never mind, next target. Zhang Yang banked sharply in the air and zoomed towards a Hunter. He sliced downward and dealt over 28,000 damage to the Hunter. The first attack had already removed 1/3 of his HP. Zhang Yang lifted his sword up high and struck the Hunter's chest with {Destructive Smash}, piercing the Hunter's chest, all the way through. Felice dropped down to the ground and thrust her spear into the same man.

The poor hunter only had over 100,000 HP, even when he was mounted

on his battle mount. It had only taken 2 attacks from Zhang Yang and Felice to die instantly.

Zhang Yang flung his sword forcefully and sliced the Hunter's body in half. The force of it sent the mangled body into the air and splattered onto the ground. The scene of which horrified the other players to such an extent that they picked up the pace even further.

Zhang Yang did not even need to push the Thunderhawk. Like a wraith, Zhang Yang appeared behind the fleeing players and beheaded one of them effortlessly. At his current strength, unless his opponent was Sun Xin Yu or One Sword Stroke, no one could be on par with him!

Zhang Yang proceeded to kill a total of 5 players before he stopped. Zhang Yang turned tail and fled! There was a large army of players coming from the castle's direction towards him!

He would not need to flee if he uses the Transformation skill of the God of War. With the number of player exceeding by the thousands, he might get his own head beheaded!

If Zhang Yang wanted the player dead, no one could escape the reaper of death. That has been established. On the other way around, if he wanted to run, no one could chase after him! As his character gradually became smaller and smaller, the players that were chasing after him had no choice but to scream his name out in agony.

Zhang Yang flew further and made sure the players could not be seen before landing on the ground. He then tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and appeared in Morning Town. The next thing he should do is to visit Princess Helena to finish the quest. Based on the quest lore and the relationship between Princess Helena and Banct, the quest might end up having Princess Helena to rescue her lover from the castle itself! Perhaps, she could be a handy assistant!

It would be good to borrow her strength to kill as many Japan-Korea region players before they disperse!

Zhang Yang flew out of Morning Town and made it to the rundown palace ruins after 3 hours.

"Little Yang! Did you impregnate a girl in the Japan-Korea region? I just picked up a kill-on-sight order on the forums!" Fatty Han started rumbling.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Nay. I was over there to do a quest and some of them tried to kill me. If they had not disturbed me, I would have left them alone!"

"Haha! Good one bro! But, you could have been a better bro if you have called me over! How could not you invite me for a fight?! Especially when the opponents are the Japanese and Koreans!"

"F*ck you! Grandu Ice Ridge is so close to you! You could visit the place anytime you want to!"

As they were happily chatting, Endless Starlight suddenly cried out in the conversation room. "Something's happened! Something's happened!"

"What? Is the sky falling down? Even if the sky falls down, I'll be there to catch it!" said Fatty Han proudly.

"Haha! That would really be a sight to see, then!" said Endless Starlight anxiously.

"What's really happening?" asked Zhang Yang.

"Everyone knows that One Sword Stroke got married yesterday, yes? But when the newlyweds left the church, both of them were abducted by a group of thugs! One Sword Stroke was tied up and castrated! His new wife was gang-raped by more than 10 men! The video has even been uploaded to the internet! It's even in the 7 pm news!"

Zhang Yang did not need to even think twice to know that it was all Liu Wei's bidding.

In his previous life, he had even dared to fire a gun in the middle of a famous hotel room. Hiring thugs to do his bidding was but an everyday thing to him! Since it was a crime that did not involve killing, naturally Liu Wei had many means and methods of making things happen without sullyng his own hands!

Zhang Yang knew that Liu Wei would not sit back and do nothing when

One Sword Stroke had stolen his "property", but he had never expected that Liu Wei would be brutal to that extent. Castrating One Sword Stroke was a public warning to everyone that some women were just not up for grabs! As for Luo Xin Yang's naked public disgrace, it was a warning that no woman can shame him publicly. If anyone were to repeat the same mistake, the same treatment will befall them as well.

"That bastard, Liu Wei!" Fatty Han spat a mouthful. Even though they had no evidence to tie the crime to Liu Wei, everyone could have guessed it.

"How is that Liu Wei is still breathing right now!?" said Daffodil Daydream.

"What is the current situation?"

"What else is there? Everything is still under investigation!" Endless Starlight shrugged. "My guess, this whole mess would blow off with the wind eventually."

Lost Dream shook his head. "I'm sure that the investigation would never find a direct link to Liu Wei. At most, the police will find a few small fries. Unless the investigative power goes all out, the only evidence they'll find would be Liu Wei's sh*t!"

Chapter 593: Saving Banct

The only response to Liu Wei's cruel act was to just insult and curse behind his back. There was literally nothing that anyone could do. If scolding could solve most problems, having a debate would solve any world's problem.

Zhang Yang had other things to do at the moment and put the thought about Liu Wei behind his head. Zhang Yang was riding to the castle and by the time he arrived, the ruins were not as bad when he left the place. Even though it was not fully rebuilt, the roof of the palace had been remade.

Zhang Yang wandered around the palace and found the princess standing on a broken balcony. The sun was setting then and the sky was dyed in red. The princess was gazing into the horizon. She looked like her thoughts were somewhere as far as the bird in the sky. The soft wind blew, gently caressing her hair and dress.

She turned to Zhang Yang and walked back into the room. "Do you have news for me, adventurer?" she asked anxiously.

"Yes." Zhang Yang walked closer and told everything that had happened to Banct Roland.

Helena took the news about Banct poisoning and imprisonment rather calmly. In the end, she walked back to the balcony to ponder a while. There was a conflict in her mind which was obviously betrayed by her facial expressions. Right then, when Zhang Yang was about to approach her to ask of her next move, she turned to Zhang Yang and looked him in the eye. There was a heroic aura that rose from her eyes. The aura grew stronger and when she got closer to Zhang Yang, the bricks around immediately turned into fine grains. Excited, anxious, and agitated, Helena roared. "I understand! I understand everything now! I will save him!"

Thank god that was her response.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Searching for News. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!'

"My princess. Please allow this lowly adventurer to join you in your rescue mission!" Zhang Yang lowered his head and kneeled.

"I allow it!" Princess Helena stood stoically and roared.

'Ding! Princess Helena has a quest for you: Saving Banct Roland. Will you accept it?'

Accept!

[Saving Banct Roland] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: You have decided to join hands with Princess Helena to charge into Anjar Castle to rescue Banct Roland. Warrior, you must keep both eyes open at all time. Countess Amansari had control over the entire castle. The hostiles you are about to face will be a devastating army!

Completion: Secured Banct Roland 0/1

Princess Helena did not own a flying mount. Back then, Zhang Yang had Serena when she was still a princess, riding along with him. Now, he had Princess Helena sit behind him! Perhaps it was fortunate that the Thunderhawk was a Mythical tier mount. If it was any lower tiered, the princess might have just trampled over the poor bird! They had to resort using a mount to travel since the [Teleportation Scroll] would not work on an NPC. It would have been much faster to travel from Morning Town to Anjar than where they were.

The two of them flew quickly and arrived at the Grandu Ice Ridge. Since the place was at the borders of Japan-Korea region, many players from that region were wandering around the map. Even though Zhang Yang's appearance was not recognizable from that distance, Princess Helena was standing out a little too much. Plus, the word "Mythical" was hanging on her name tag like a beacon on a starless night.

It did not take long before groups of players chased after Zhang Yang like sharks. All of them were staring at them with the eyes of a hungry ghost. It was difficult enough to find a Mythical boss anywhere around the world. How could anyone let go of an opportunity when a boss is miraculously flying over their territory?

Still, it was impossible for anyone to chase after Zhang Yang since his flying mount was zooming across the sky like an F22 jet. Half an hour later, the Thunderhawk arrived at the top of Anjar Castle. This time, Zhang Yang ignored the no flight rule and descended down straight towards the tombs.

"Insolent fool!" Four castle guards armed themselves and chased after Zhang Yang.

"Hmph!" Helena scoffed with disdain and glared at the guards with such a strong killing intent that even Zhang Yang could feel it. A bright phantom sword formed around the guards and started cutting them up.

Helena's attack was not strong enough to instantly kill the guards. The damage dealt to them was only around 80,000 which only sent them staggering back momentarily.

"Kill!" With a strong sense of duty, the guards rallied themselves and came back at them.

This time, Helena had focused her thoughts on killing the guards and demonstrated the power of a Mythical boss. Her feat was not that of a second-rate boss like the Vampire King. The princess cast another phantom sword and dealt more than 80,000 AoE damage. The sword she cast could attack targets as far as 50 meters away, and also possess a strong knockback property. Zhang Yang was glad that he did not have to fight her. Any class fighting this boss would surely be frustrated!

Though they received some damage from the guards from time to time, the damage dealt to her was so low that it was merely an ant's bite, since she had a HP as long as 40,000,000. On the other hand, she did have the skill {Spectre Regeneration} which could restore 1% of her HP every 30 seconds. A measly attack from the guards required only 1 second to allow her to recover completely.

'Intruder!'

"There's a killer on the loose!"

Cries and roars of guards and soldiers echoed throughout the castle.

Zhang Yang thought of an idea and decided to linger a little longer around. He wanted to lure more Japan-Korea Region players around and kill them with Princess Helena's super skill! Even though her HP was not particularly long, Zhang Yang was sure that he could at least create some trouble for the players while Helena slaughters them all.

Lo and behold, players from Japan and Korea arrived on their flying mounts. When they saw Helena battling with the elite guards of the castle, their hopes rose and they cheered. "The NPCs are fighting the boss! It's time for us, the real fighters to show them a good battle!"

The player approached closer and immediately unsummoned their mounts. They were obedient players who were scared of being killed for breaking the rules of the castle!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

Helena thrust her sword into the sky and created a phantom sword. With a swift swing of her own physical blade, the ethereal phantom sword cut through the field horizontally, damaging many players and pushing them back by 3 meters.

As expected for a powerful Mythical tier boss. They were, after all, the dominant entities in the Level 100 – Level 130 maps!

Helena jumped off the Thunderhawk and swiftly dashed towards a guard. Zhang Yang could not believe his eyes when he saw the princess executing her skill, {Chaos Strike}. The movements of the sword were so quick that she had left afterimages of herself slicing about!

‘-78,642!’

‘-82,442!’

‘-83,445!’

...

The damage chained on and on by more than 80,000 per strike and killed the guard instantly.

The scene of the princess dancing around and killing the guards almost

in a split second had left the players shivering in fear. If the princess could deal such high damage to an elite guard, it would be much higher to them! Without an Inheritance Transformation skill, nobody would be able to stand against her.

"Stubborn fools!" cried Helena. From her perspective, all who had attacked her were those who had been sent to stop her from saving Banct. The sole reason for Helena to rise again as a Spectre was the purity of her love for Banct. Those who place themselves between Helena and her goals will be executed without a second thought!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

...

What that makes a boss so strong would be the ridiculous cooldown rate of their super skills. Their skill could be used at will without the need of obeying the rules of the game system! Helena danced around, slashing her blade about, on and on. The skill {Thousand Shadow Slash} was used every 2 seconds on average. The powerful damage output was so strong and fast that even Zhang Yang would think twice before having her as an enemy.

"Eh!? Isn't that Zhan Yu!?" Finally, someone recognized Zhang Yang.

"You're right! It's really him! F*ck that guy! He thinks that he can hide behind a boss! I can smell him even from a mile away!"

"Kill the bastard!"

Zhang Yang stopped trying to avoid eye contact any longer. He was now public enemy number 1 in the eyes of the Japanese and Korean players. The hatred directed to him was as if he had just killed the prime minister of their country.

There were some players that got hot-headed and charged at him. However, their actions had only caused them to be the next target for Helena. With only one use of {Thousand Shadow Slash}, the player's HP

was reduced by half.

Zhang Yang laughed at their pathetic attempt to attack him. He then unequipped the shield and raised a middle finger up high in the sky to allow all players see his gesture.

When the hatred towards him was already boiling up like a kettle, the middle finger gesture had turned them into steam. Like a kettle, the players started cursing and insulting Zhang Yang. No matter what flowery language they used, based on the intonation and pitch, Zhang Yang could have guessed that they were synonyms for "screw you!".

"Don't think too highly of yourself!" A player stood out. Zhang Yang turned over to the source of the voice and noticed that the person was expanding in size. The muscle around his body began to turn into stone. Gradually, his entire character had turned into a moving stone sculpture! With a loud deafening voice, the player cried out, "I will kite the boss away. You guys take down that Zhan Yu!"

"It's Ganwu Martial's main tank! Uldaht!" Someone else recognized the player and cheered happily. "The man has a C class Inheritance, the Rocky Stone Inheritance! It is the best counter for all physical attack bosses!"

BUMP! BUMP!

Each step he took after he had activated the Transformation skill made the earth rumble.

As compared to the A class and S class Inheritances, Zhang Yang had a better understanding of B class and C class Inheritances. In his past life, he had never once able to get along with players of higher tiers. As a result, the company he mingled around were most players with only B class and C class Inheritances. The Rocky Stone Inheritance was almost similar to that of the Petrification Inheritance. The only difference was the Rocky Stone Inheritance would receive 50% extra damage from taking a magic attack. Hence, it was marked as a faulty Inheritance and thus ranked at C class.

Princess Helena unleashed a flurry of attack using {Thousand Shadow Slash} and only managed to force Uldaht to move a few steps back unlike

other players. Furthermore, the damage he had received was only over 40,000! After using the Transformation skill, his HP had been boosted up to 900,000!

"Hahahah!" Uldaht laughed and pounded his chest like a gorilla. Sparks could be seen flying about as he did it. The tank then stomped the ground and hurled a {Spear of Obliteration} at Helena. Sadly, his skill was for naught. The battle had been going on for a while and the princess's aggro was fixed mainly on the NPC guards.

Zhang Yang smirked and called for Felice. "Felice! Could you do me a favor and attack that stone man?"

"Yes! Big brother! Felice will do her best!" Although Felice was no longer a little girl, she was still as spirited when it comes to battle, just like the Wei Yan Er. She quickly morphed into her Dragonhawk form and blasted Uldaht with a {Fire Missile}.

With Zhang Yang's micromanagement, he had led the Thunderhawk to send a blast of {Thunder Ball} towards Uldaht.

When Uldaht had activated his Transformation skill, Zhang Yang would find some trouble dealing damage to the tank. Hence, he had exploited the weakness of the Inheritance and attacked with both Felice and the Thunderhawk magic attack! His weakness had only turned them both extremely strong! No healers would dare to go near to heal Uldaht when the princess' {Thousand Shadow Slash} could reach as far as 50 meters! No Spellcaster or other paper-soft class would survive her attack!

Now that both Felice and the Thunderhawk had attacked Uldaht vigourously, he would not stand for long.

"Allow me to help you!" cried another player. It was a player donning a white robe. He too activated his Transformation skill and created a doppelganger behind him. The player then rushed over to Uldaht. When the player raised his staff, his doppelganger mirrored his actions and chanted a spell together.

That was the Doppelganger Inheritance! An Inheritance that could create a mirror image, 10 times the HP bonus, double the Defense, and a

10% chance to nullify a magic attack! However, the Inheritance did not provide any damage boost since the doppelganger was already a damage boost. Although the Inheritance had not provided any permanent damage or healing rate bonus, a C class Inheritance as such would always provide a 35% reduced damage or a 35% increased healing rate. It was like 2.7 healers healing Uldaht at the same time. At the current stage of the game, it would take an immense effort of a guild to obtain one C class Inheritance! Naturally, the player's equipment would not be weak! The healer who had just jumped into the fight was able to delay Uldaht HP from dropping like an open faucet, even when Felice and the Thunderhawk were attacking him rapidly! However, it was only a delay, his HP was still dropping down, but at a slower rate, allowing him to last slightly longer.

After a few skills, Uldaht was finally able to gain the aggro of Helena. He then quickly kited the boss away and created more distance between her and Zhang Yang. Since the boss would be affected by the aggro system and Zhang Yang could not, Zhang Yang only needed to follow the boss, leaving the tank's effect for naught!

Zhang Yang set his eyes on Uldaht and was surprised to see that the man's Defensive ability was indeed strong. However, he could change the tide of the fight, simply by attacking him with a {Destructive Smash} to reduce his healing rate by 75%!

Now that Uldaht had been inflicted with the debuff of {Destructive Smash}, Uldaht had no way of preserving his HP. He was only able to hold on for now because of the new healer. As such, his HP started plummeting.

More healers came to his rescue. However, with Helena's merciless {Thousand Shadow Slash} attacks, no healer was able to last longer than 5 seconds after taking 2 skills from the attack.

To properly fight the boss, they would have to form a perfect healer formation where a bunch of healers stand 30 meters away from the boss and another party of healers stand 60 meters away to heal the healers. However, since everyone here practiced the "every man for himself

strategy", no one could form a proper party and was killed by the boss.

Uldaht may have activated the Transformation skill, and a C class Inheritance had increased his HP by 10 fold, and he may have over 900,000 HP, but it was not able to endure the continuous attacks from Zhang Yang, the boss, Felice, and the Thunderhawk. With the {Destructive Smash} debuff on him, the poor tank turned into a pile of stones in less than a minute.

Technically, Zhang Yang had predicted that even with or without a player with Uldaht coming in to tank the boss, killing everyone in the castle would be a matter of time! Especially when she was spamming her OP skill - the {Thousand Shadow Slash}! All players from Japan and Korea had to turn tail and run back to their mama!

It was extremely frustrating!

How could one fight a fair match when a player would receive 80,000 AoE damage just by standing there!? They could not even put up a fight! However, if they do not, they would have to allow the bastard, Zhang Yang, to enter their own territory!

Chapter 594: Standing Guard

How could the Japanese and Korean players stand aside and allow the invader to waltz in at will!? That man was the player who snatched their Territory! The same man who had caused them huge shame! Look at him! The man had even shoved his finger up and showed the world a middle finger! How could one remain calm when 1,000 players are being overwhelmed by one man and a boss?!

Eventually, rage had clouded their judgment, making them jump into the fight. Sadly, their rage was immediately repaid with Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}, turning them into a pile of diced meat. Furthermore, the players who receive a single attack, either from Zhang Yang, the Thunderhawk, or Felice, will suffer the experience point loss penalty and the chance to lose equipment and items in their inventory.

"Stop rushing in, morons! He's provoking us!"

Atop on the castle walls, there was a group of players who had remained where they were. Instead, they were simply observing how Zhang Yang killed everyone without putting much effort.

Zhang Yang had purposefully entered the Japan-Korea territory and provoked the players there to kill, and not that many have turned up when scaled to the magnitude of an entire Region. No one would be willing to engage in an all-out war against a single player. Right then, the current priority was to grind their levels. All of the players of Japan-Korea region had 5 levels reduced since they had lost all their main cities during the Ancient Creature war. Many of players who had managed to get into the Chaos Realm had been immediately kicked out. No one would be willing to fall for Zhang Yang's trickery in delaying their grinding. Hence, with that sentiment in mind, the players who had gathered in Anjar Castle barely amounted to one thousand.

Technically, 1,000 men would be more than to kill Zhang Yang over and over, since some of them possessed Inheritances. The problem then was that no one had expected Zhang Yang to call in a boss to do the killing. A

Mythical tier boss with the power to spam instant-kill skills would be an impossible target without the help of a [Forbidden Scroll]. Either that or a sea of 10,000 players!

After all the players in Anjar Castle were killed at least once, they felt the sense of defeat and called for reinforcements all over the nation. As such, the entire region was provoked and started expressing their disdain all over their own channels. No sooner later, the disdain, the disgruntlement, morphed itself into an intense rage. Insults and scolding gradually turned into threats. If he was to continue his foolish and selfish acts, he will be hunted down!

Zhang Yang merely shrugged. All of the threats were nothing but keyboard warriors.

On the other hand, it was not like Zhang Yang was the aggressor in here. He was doing his own business! It was the boss, the Mythical tier boss that had "enticed" them! The players that were attacking him must be thinking of killing it to obtain her precious drops. Helena was, after all, a Level 130 Mythical who could drop equipment with lowered Level Requirements! Skill books! Inheritance Fragments! There's just so much temptation that no one could let it go!

The princess was a walking treasure chest!

"Hmm." The same group of players who were standing far from the fight scoffed as they saw many more ignorant players arriving at Anjar Castle.

"We gotta thank that China dude for bringing us a boss," cried the newcomers.

The initial players who had been fighting since the beginning had to withdraw from the fight and flee as far as they could. Before reinforcements arrive, they would have to stay alive. It was not possible to get even close to the boss with just a thousand players. Something like her would take as much as 10,000 players!

Helena sheathed her sword. There was nothing but dead bodies around her. Her aggro list was now empty. She brushed off a speck of dirt that was on her dress. It was impressive, that with all the slashing about, there

was not even a single drop of blood on her dress!

She stood there, with a pair of beautiful, dazed eyes, as if she was in a trance. The dress flapped gently in the quiet battlefield. The fabric of her royal dress was plastered against her skin, emphasizing her slender body. It was truly a sight to behold that could bewitch any living man.

Zhang Yang was not there to witness that pretty portrait, he was busy searching for the entrance to the tomb. When he found it, he cried out, "Princess. Over here!"

As Zhang Yang voice rang loudly, Helena's eyes regained focus. She turned her head around only to turn away coldly. She scoffed at the bodies of both players and NPCs and moved towards the tomb.

With haste, the two of them hurried through the staircase towards the interior of the tomb. There, Zhang Yang pulled a wall off and exhumed Banct Roland. Right then, Banct had already passed on. Helena wanted to cry, but there were no tears for her to shed. As a spectre, she could not shed tears.

"He's dead..." Helena's voice cracked as she could not hold in her pain. "If not for those people out there...I-could've—I should've—ARGH! I HATE THIS! WHY!?" She buried her face in the chest of Banct. No matter how much pain she felt, she could not shed a single tear. "I WILL KILL THEM ALL!"

Looks like, thanks to their doing, Princess Helena had declared all Japanese and Korean players as her enemies.

Zhang Yang gave her some time to mourn the death of Banct. When her cries soothed down a little, Zhang Yang pats her shoulder and said, "My princess, Mr. Roland had been suffering in a state of being poisoned. Perhaps, death was a good thing for him. He is no longer in pain."

Helena adjusted her hair and stared down at Banct's still face. Right then, there was a conflict in her eyes which Zhang Yang knew very well.

Without looking at Zhang Yang, she spoke softly. "Warrior. I will now turn this man into a Spectre. Warrior, I have but one request for you.

Please guard me. The process is extremely delicate. I cannot be disturbed, or both Banct and I will be trapped in the limbo of darkness!"

Zhang Yang saluted the princess and said, "Princess. Zhan Yu is here to serve. I will protect you and the one you love!"

"I leave my life to you."

Helena smiled as she gently caressed Banct's wrinkled face. "Wait for me, my love."

Helena lay her hands on Banct's chest. She focused her thoughts and a green, emerald light started radiating out of her chest. The aura grew bigger and connected both Helena's chest to Banct's at where their hearts were. Helena grunted in pain as both of them hovered above the ground. The green light grew bigger into a large orb and encased the two of them.

Zhang Yang eyes were locked on them for the entire time. When both of them were engulfed by the light, Helena's character disappeared. The ball of light replaced their bodies.

[Defensive Barrier] (Summoned)

Level: 130

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 0

Note; A weak barrier created at the very last minute. The barrier must not fall, or both Helena and Banct will be trapped in the void.

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath and braced himself for what that is to come next. The quest had been set to an S level difficulty. Hence, a Mythical tier boss might even make its appearance. There was a high possibility that the boss would be the Countess Amansari. Zhang Yang guessed that he would have to kill the countess to proceed with the quest. That is, if the barrier does not fall first.

Right then, Zhang Yang was faced with another huge problem. A boss would be rather easy to handle due to their robotic manner of movement. The real threat to Zhang Yang would be the players of Japan-Korean

region. They had been held back by Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}. However, Zhang Yang was sure that some smart players would have noticed Princess Helena disappearance and would act accordingly. When they attack, they attack Zhang Yang and bring down the barrier!

Zhang Yang feared to bring in Han Ying Xue. It would be too dangerous. Alone, Zhang Yang could escape any time he wants with {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void}. If he had a party with him, he couldn't simply leave them behind to fend for themselves.

Zhang Yang thought about it for a bit. He had his last trump card, the God of War Transformation skill that would give him 2 hours of valuable time.

"Kill the intruders!" The voice of Amansari rang, and a portal appeared in midair. A group of 10 elite tier guards stepped out of it. 7 of them attacked Zhang Yang and the rest moved towards the barrier.

Zhang Yang rushed over to the three guards that were approaching the barrier and stunned one of them with {Charge}. He then cleaved another guard for over 28,000 damage and struck the ground with {Thunder Strike} to slow all three of them down.

Zhang Yang's {Thunder Strike} skill had been enhanced to reduce movement speeds by 90%! Previously, before Zhang Yang had obtained the {Superior Thunder Strike}, his enemies that are struck would already be moving like snails. Now, after the skill upgrade, the guards were moving so slowly that even a caterpillar could edge out ahead of them!

Zhang Yang smirked. He turned behind and blasted the other seven guards with {Horizontal Sweep}.

Zhang Yang relaxed when the guards reacted accordingly to the aggro system. After attacking, the monsters will not attack the barrier until Zhang Yang, their aggro target is killed. Felice and Thunderhawk joined the fight promptly, unleashing both AoE skills and single target skills. Flashes of the blue lightning and red flames illuminated the entire tomb.

Zhang Yang adjusted himself and controlled the position of the guards, stunning all 10 guards with {Blast Waves}. After that, he waited for

{Thunder Strike} to be ready and struck the ground at the moment the guards regained their control. All them of them were slowed down again, and Zhang Yang kited them away from the barrier.

Right then, {Thunder Strike} could inflict a 90% reduced movement speed debuff. Even though the target would regenerate 10% movement speed every second after being struck, {Thunder Strike} only had a 5-second cooldown, allowing the user to strike again, when they have only recovered 60% of their original movement speed.

It took around 2 minutes for Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Thunderhawk to kill all 10 guards.

"Useless buggers! Can't even kill a single man! Do not force me to do this myself!" the voice of Amansari ranged again and out came 20 heavily armored guards.

Clang! Each step the guards moved made their heavy armor plating clank together. The uniformed movements of all the guards were extremely organized. All at the same time, they unsheathed their swords and prepared for a battle.

Zhang Yang frowned but relaxed immediately when he realized that all the guards were melee attackers.

Zhang Yang slid across the ground with {Charge} and crashed into the organized formation of the guards. With a quick stomp, Zhang Yang inflicted all the guards with {Thunder Strike} and slowed everyone down.

Like any AoE skill, the more enemies, the better the effects!

If Zhang Yang only used {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}, and {Horizontal Sweep}, and take 2 minutes to kill a 1,000,000 HP monster, he still only take 2 minutes to kill 5, 10, or even 20 of them! Such is the power of AoE skills. This is why many players preferred to kite monsters and kill them in groups instead of one by one.

However, {Horizontal Sweep} was not a penetrative type attack. Depending on the size of the monsters, there will always be a limit to the number of monsters that would be inflicted by the attack. Even if the

number of monsters increases, the skill would only strike a few monsters at a time. Hence, instead of 2 minutes, Zhang Yang might take 3 minutes to kill 20 guards!

"A bunch of useless, good-for-nothing scums! Kill the man already!" out came the voice of Amansari from the portal.

"Yes! Countess Amansari!" The voices that replied her was a group of cheerful females. As such, 20 female wearing white robes waltzed out of the portal. The women were roughly the age of 20 and wore long white dresses that revealed parts of their thighs and waists! If they wanted to, the whole world would be able to see their huhas if they took larger strides!

The dresses they wore had deep V cuttings that covered part of their hooters! Their entire abdomens and bellybuttons were completely exposed!

Zhang Yang's eyes automatically started drifting, but he frowned a little, as he could not take the battle seriously. This is a fight, goddamit! Not a fashion show!

[Personal Attendant] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Magic Attack: 6,478 – 7,478

Skills:

[Frost Arrow]: Conjures an icy shard to pierce a target, dealing 200% magic Frost damage to a target. Reduce the target's movement speed by 50%. Last for 5 seconds. Channeling: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

Note: Countess Amansari's personal attendees. Loyal to her and only her. No man would even try to talk to them!

Chapter 595: A Fierce Fight with the Japanese and Koreans

20 magic attackers!

Zhang Yang caved in and resorted to using the God of War Transformation. A bright radiant light blasted out as a pair of light wings protruded out of Zhang Yang's back. With a light flap, Zhang Yang zoomed towards the ladies.

"Kill the intruder!" cried the spellcasters. The women quickly sidestepped to dodge the attack and quickly cast {Frost Arrows}.

{Blast Wave}!

WHAM!

Zhang Yang leaped backward and swung his sword hard, creating a powerful blast of air that stunned all 20 enemies. Felice and the Thunderhawk had not needed to withdraw, so they simply continued attacking the monsters.

Unlike melee attackers, ranged attackers would always try to remain a distance from their attackers. Hence, after they recovered from the stun, each woman ran in a different direction. Some of them were still fixed at their positions and could only attack from where they stood.

‘-7,080!’

Resist!

Resist!

‘-7,562!’

...

A sky full of {Frost Arrows} landed on Zhang Yang but only some of them had dealt damage, the rest of the arrows disintegrated immediately when it touched Zhang Yang's character. In the Transformation status, Zhang Yang had a 40% chance to nullify magic attacks, hence with his

boosted long HP, 7,000 magic damage was nothing but an ant's bite for him.

(Author's Note: The previous setting of 90% chance to nullify magic attacks for S class Inheritance was too OP. Hence, all magic nullifications will be reduced to balance it out. S classes will have 40% chance magic nullification, A classes 30%, B classes 20%, and C classes 10%)

Once the monsters had spread all over the place, Zhang Yang killing efficiency had dropped dramatically. However, note that he had already activated the God of War Inheritance. With 5 times the attack power and {God of War Crushing Strike}, it was a massacre! Zhang Yang had taken less than a minute to kill all 20 "hostess".

Zhang Yang killing power during then could be on par with Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}.

"Useless! Utter garbage!" cried Countess Amansari's voice from the portal. "Must I do everything on my own!?"

As such, the glamorous countess came out of the portal. Upon her arrival at the tomb, the portal pulsed violently and shattered apart like a mirror being struck by a stone.

Zhang Yang quickly examined the boss' properties again to recall her skills.

[Flare]: Blast flames in all directions, dealing 50,000 Fire damage to all targets within 40 meters.

[Explosive Flame]: Deals 200% magic Fire damage to a target. Range: 40 meters. Channeling: 2 seconds.

[Flame Shield]: Creates a shield made of fire. Protects the caster for 1 minute or after absorbing 1,000,000 damage. Attackers will receive 10,000 Fire damage for every attack received.

Zhang Yang summed it up quickly and concluded that he cannot allow the boss to remain in the vicinity of the barrier.

Although {Explosive Flame} was a single target skill, it was something he

could take head-on. {Flame Shield} is a spiky defensive skill. It was not a problem. However, the skill {Flare} was the problem. It was an AoE skill that could deal 50,000 damage in all directions, 40 meters from her. If the battle is to be held in the tomb, the skill would directly damage the barrier. It would take only 20 hits for the barrier to be destroyed!

Zhang Yang spread his wings far and wide and zoomed towards the boss. With a quick turn, Zhang Yang tossed a {Spear of Obliteration}.

"Pathetic!" cried the boss as she gave chase.

Zhang Yang moved towards the entrance of the tomb and kited the boss to the exit of the tomb. Once there, he zoomed towards her and gave a slash. He positioned himself between Amansari and the entrance of the tomb.

Amansari charged towards Zhang Yang. In retaliation, Zhang Yang had not flown upwards, instead, he brandished his sword and blasted out waves of attack.

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}! {Frost Strike}!

Leaving only afterimages, the sword flew around as Zhang Yang controlled the movement of the sword in his hands masterfully. He wanted to try and mimic the speed of Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}. However, there was still a limit to his own Dexterity and the speed of which he could it move around. Even so, splashes of blood poured out of the boss and tainted the sky.

"D*mn you! D*mn you!" The countess was enraged. She then cast a {Flame Shield} and chanted {Explosive Flame}. Since the boss' skill cannot be interrupted, the boss did not need to keep a distance from Zhang Yang like a player does. The only thing that was probably going on in her mind was to kill Zhang Yang as fast as she could.

"Is Zhan Yu alone?!"

From the corner of the buildings, a few Japan-Korea region players were lurking about. They gathered their courage and moved closer to spectate the battle. After they ensured that Helena was no longer in the fight,

everyone cheered and entered the battle to attack Zhang Yang.

All ranged attackers stood at 30 meters away from Zhang Yang and attacked. As for the melee attackers, they shot to the sky and formed a formation to attack Zhang Yang in a group.

"We will let this f*cker has a taste of his own medicine!"

"Someone! Go and guard the graveyard! Don't let him revive there and get away!"

"That's right! Even if his level remains, we can still get all his equipment and item!"

Zhang Yang could not believe what he just heard. Did they really think that they could fight him, let alone kill him when he is in his God of War "mode"?

Zhang Yang waited until the melee attackers got closer to him and activated {Shadow Clone}! At the same time, he cast {Crushing Strike}!

By then, his God of War EP was at 12 points. Zhang Yang had only attacked the boss with his normal attack. He had, instead, used the 12 EP on the players. On average, his attack power was already beyond 100,000. The end result of the {Crushing Strike} would be 300%! A total of 300,000 damage!

By then, if no one had their own Transformation skills activated, everyone would be instantly killed! When the bright light flashed by, 12 players who were the closest to Zhang Yang were killed instantly. They had no idea what even happened!

Sadly, the clones produced by the skill could not carry the equipment special effect. Hence, the attacks dealt to the boss was exactly 10% of Zhang Yang's original damage.

Take note that the damage dealt by Zhang Yang could only be seen by him! There were three Zhang Yangs on the field, now. Players around started to feel a sudden fear creeping into their souls! One Zhang Yang was already a problem, but there were three now!

"It's fake! It's a mirror image!" someone cried. "The fake ones shouldn't be as durable! Kill them!"

All ranged attackers then adjusted their crosshairs and aimed at all three Zhang Yangs. However, all three Zhang Yangs had the same 7,000,000 HP!

How do you explain that!?

During the God of War Transformation effect, Zhang Yang would have 40% magic attack nullification chance. His physical attack Defense would be extremely high, even when compared to his usual standards. With the extra 20% damage reduction skill, the damage reduction was far greater than the Level Suppression of a boss!

How does one kill God of War Zhang Yang when regular Zhang Yang is already freaking hard to kill!? There's three of them, for God's sake!

"What is that Inheritance?! The Doppelganger Inheritance?"

"No way! It's even stronger than the Mirror Image Inheritance! He has made 2 copies of himself!"

Not many knew of the {Shadow Clone} skill and had wrongly guessed Zhang Yang's Inheritance. The truth was that the skill {Shadow Clone} was a reward gained from the main story quest that Zhang Yang had accepted when he was only Level 10! Perhaps, it was yet another one-of-a-kind skill!

Zhang Yang scoffed and left them to their misguided assumptions. The battle continued on with a strong fervor. On one hand, Zhang Yang was fighting the boss, on the other, he had hurled {Spear of Obliterations} with every chance he got. Now that he had gained a power boost, every hit of his {Spear of Obliteration} was 98,311 – 113,988. Unless Zhang Yang's target was mounted on a Yellow-Gold tier mount or higher, they would be killed instantly.

Felice and the Thunderhawk remained in the tomb with the barrier on Zhang Yang's command. They had been asked to stand guard over the barrier to alert Zhang Yang if any intruders manage to infiltrate the

entrance. That, or the possibility of a player having a skill similar to {Burrow}.

BOOM!

Amansari cast {Flare} continuously onto Zhang Yang. The damage dealt to him was roughly around 36,000 damage. However, there was still a 40% chance of her attacks being nullified! Every time her flames were extinguished by Zhang Yang, she would shriek out in frustration and cast another {Flare} at an increased power and size.

Zhang Yang could not be bothered by it. Or rather, he could not find a single f*ck to give. Zhang Yang only needed to make sure that he remains between the boss and the entrance. As such, the space given to the other players to attack him was extremely limited. With both a high magical attack nullification chance and extremely powerful Defensive abilities, it would be extremely difficult to hurt him.

"Wretched one! I curse you! Curse you to hell!" Amansari bellowed like a deranged woman. Although she had the {Flame Shield} to provide herself a temporary HP extension, the skill had a long 1-minute cooldown. Under Zhang Yang's heavy barrage, the shield could only last as long as 10 seconds before it is removed.

While the battle between the boss and Zhang Yang was going on strongly, players of Japan-Korea regions were so embarrassed and frustrated that they could have just raged quit the game! Zhang Yang was practically surrounded by a thousand players, yet they could do no damage to him! It's a shame that no man could bear if word spreads out!

Right then, the reinforcements had arrived. From 1,000 players, their numbers rose up to 2,000. Slowly and steadily, the numbers had even increased to 7,000! Amongst the 7,000 players, many of them possessed Inheritance. They had immediately activated their Transformation skills and charged towards Zhang Yang at great speed.

"Zhan Yu! Today is the day you will die!"

"I'll tear you up! Limb from limb!"

The fuss and panic one man could bring to an entire server already brought them great shame. It was a shame that would not be redeemed, even with Zhang Yang's death! However, if they could not kill him, the shame of it would be so bad that it would even affect their name in real life! It was a national pride!

Zhang Yang merely scoffed at the sight of the players. {Shadow Clone} would only last for another 10 seconds. Right then, players had not even managed to detect the real Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang focused on the task of killing Amansari first. The reason was to allow Helena to rejoin him in battle to kill all the players who had butted into his quest!

The poor Amansari was a Mythical tier boss, and her skill {Flare} was as strong as {Thousand Shadow Slash}. Since Zhang Yang just alone, the skill was completely wasted on him! On the other hand, {Explosive Flame} could deal as much as 80,000 damage to Zhang Yang, but it could not be compared to Helena's {Chaos Strike}!

Even though the boss had 39,000,000 HP and the one-minute long cooldown {Flame Shield}, Zhang Yang's super-powered DPS of over 100,000 was bringing down Amansari's HP like an unstoppable avalanche!

"Zhan Yu! It seems that you're bullying your way around as usual. I shall have you taste your own medicine!" A familiar male voice roared from the side. Zhang Yang glared from the corner of his eyes and saw the source of the voice. It was Musashi Ousama.

"Don't think that we are pushovers!" cried Shuro Ousama, who was standing not far away from Musashi Ousama. One by one, more and more players arrived by their side and unleashed their Transformation skills.

All of the players of the Japan-Korea region had suffered the Level -5 penalty from the Ancient Creature war. It was a huge, negative impact on them all! The reduction of levels have delayed the players in finding Inheritances! Even though it had been a month, most of them had not yet still regained their levels from the penalty! Inheritances were still very scarce in this region!

Only 7 players in the entire crowd possessed Inheritances!

Chapter 596: A Change of Stream

Seven Inheritance players, one boss against one Zhang Yang, and not a single d*mn was given. He merely threw a disdainful glare at them and focused on the boss. The boss cannot be underestimated. Even though Zhang Yang was in his super-powered mode, he had to end the fight as soon as possible.

"Zhan Yu! Enough with your insolence!" Musashi Ousama screamed angrily. He raised a palm up and twisted his arm in dramatic fashion, conjuring a tornado which zoomed towards Zhang Yang.

The tornado skill was Musashi Ousama's Inheritance skill. It could deal massive damage, and spins the target in the air before disappearing, which will cause the target to fall and receive heavy fall damage. Although Zhang Yang could avoid the fall damage since he could fly, the tornado would still send him spinning in the air uncontrollably. Technically, the tornado skill's movement speed was slow and was much more suited for large crowds. Musashi Ousama used the skill because he had assumed that Zhang Yang would not move away from the entrance of the tomb and would take the skill head on.

Zhang Yang noticed the incoming tornado and raised an eyebrow. He was disappointed that Musashi Ousama would even think of using a skill like that against him. Zhang Yang calculated the trajectory of the tornado and the E.T.A of it. When the tornado was about to touch him, Zhang Yang simply moved around, circling the boss, and came back to his original position without a scratch.

Shuro Ousama did not stop there. When Zhang Yang was about to return to his position, he sneaked behind the tornado, planning to strike Zhang Yang without him noticing. However, Zhang Yang was circling around the boss, so, when he made a 360 degrees turn, he coincidentally ended up behind Shuro Ousama. Zhang Yang cranked up his muscles and put his entire weight behind the shield and slammed Shuro Ousama in his face. The shield bash was so powerful that even though it did not inflict any HP damage, it still caused Shuro Ousama's neck to snap backward.

Like a gymnast performing a backflip, Shuro Ousama was sent flying, some of his teeth crushed into pieces. Half of his face was bulging out like a fat pig.

Zhang Yang snickered and returned to his original position to continue his fight with the boss.

"ARGH! I will kill you!" cried Shuro Ousasma. The player was a Berserker class. He should have more strength than a Guardian, but his equipment was simply not up to par with Zhang Yang's. Thus, he was forcefully "knocked back" by Zhang Yang's Supporting Attack.

Shuro Ousama got to his feet and roared to the high heavens. The ground cracked opened and out came a large, 3-meter tall white skeletal soldier. The skeletal soldier did not approach Zhang Yang, rather, it moved towards the dead bodies of the players around.

[Skeletal Infector] (Summoned)

Level: 103

HP: 200,000

Defense: 1,100

Attack Power: 6,853 – 8,853

Skills:

[Corpse Infection]: Infects a corpse and bring it back to life. Limited to Humanoid corpses 10 meters around the caster. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

In the beginning, there was only one. The summoned unit was not a threat, especially when it only had 200,000 HP. However, the unit was extremely useful in a full-scale war when there are plenty of bodies lying around! Although the summoned unit had a low time duration, it would form a large army of skeletons. When the death toll increases, so would the number of skeletons.

Zhang Yang was bound to the entrance of the tomb. Even a monkey would know that he was defending something inside. Hence, all of them changed their strategy, their new aim was to infiltrate the tomb!

Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards the Skeletal Infector and had dealt damage equivalent to slightly over half of his HP, failing to kill it. The Infector moved to the dead body of a player and spat a black cloud at it. The darkness entered the body which made it expand, eventually blowing up in a bloody scene of exploding guts and innards. A new Skeletal Infector was born and joined the fight.

Shuro Ousama laughed evilly and even licked his lips. "Yes...That's right. More skeletons! Make more skeletons for me!"

The numbers shot up exponentially from 3 to 8, to 27 monsters. Due to the sheer number of dead players around, an army of Skeletal Infectors was born easily.

"Have no fear! Just charge in and kill! I will turn you into attackers even after you die!" cried Shuro Ousama proudly as he omitted the crucial word, "Undead" attacker.

It was extremely easy to counter such a pushing strategy. All he had to do was to rush over to Shuro Ousama and kill him! With the summoner, all the summoned unit will perish along with him. The problem then, was that Zhang Yang could not move away from the spot! He could only watch the skeletal monsters rise in numbers! Still, even if there were a million of them there, Zhang Yang's immense defensive power, even in his normal mode, would reduce their attack down to 1. How could they attack him when his Defense is so much stronger than their attack power!?

Zhang Yang was obviously calm, while Shuro Ousama was cheering and jumping with joy. Zhang Yang chuckled at his monkey-like behavior and turned back to the boss.

50%...40%...30%...

As Zhang Yang was hacking away Amansari's HP down, the players around could not do anything since they were an ally of Amansari. They could not even heal her, as she was a green-tag NPC! The system only allowed players to heal NPC from their own major cities. For example, players from all over China could heal NPCs of White Jade Castle but could not heal NPCs from Morning Town. It was beyond their jurisdiction.

Hence, players around could only stare in dismay as their territory boss crept closer to death. They could not even butt in to attack her! Killing a friendly NPC would not provide any experience points or loot.

When Shuro Ousama was satisfied with the number of Infectors that he had "made", he ordered all of them to attack Zhang Yang. A sea of skeletons rushed over and got between the boss and him. As many thin, brittle skeletal arms smacked him, the only sensation Zhang Yang felt was a tiny bump. As if someone was using a cotton bud to gently prod him. When Shuro Ousama saw this, he stopped cheering. It was already too late for him to realize that Zhang Yang was completely out of his league. Zhang Yang's level was not something that a normal monster could harm!

Zhang Yang's skills {Shield Wall}, {God of War Radiance}, and {Rearm} were all used to initiate the counterattack.

20%...12%...10%...

Zhang Yang thrust his hands out and cast {Glare of the Death God}. A black smoke appeared on Amansari's character and formed into a grinning skull.

Success!

Zhang Yang then summoned Devastator. He went all out; throwing {Horizontal Sweep}, {Frost Strike}, {Destructive Smash}, {Force Strike}, and a few strikes of {Cripple Defense} to fill up the time. Since all skills shared a global cooldown, he had made sure to deal a normal attack in the gaps. Hence, in 10 seconds, he had only managed to deal 13 attacks. Devastator had also contributed 10 hits, which totaled up to 23 hits. Among the 23 hits, only 4 hits had triggered the {Glare of the Death God} effect. It was rather unfortunate, but he had wasted 6 strikes.

Although the Devastator was destroyed by the players in a matter of minutes, Zhang Yang was not bothered by it. All he needed Devastator to do was to increase the attack count for the skill {Glare of the Death God} to proc.

7%...5%...3%...

Death was certain for Amansari, and players of Japan-Korea region were going crazy. Their numbers had shot up to tens of thousands by then, but all they could do was to stare blindly and awkwardly at Zhang Yang killing the boss. Even though he had positioned himself well, it was still something no single man could pull off!

It was a huge shame to them! Zhang Yang had not even taken note of the players around and entered their territory boldly, taken their boss, and battled on their grounds! Whoever who could handle the shame and disgrace can become a god!

"Kill!"

The players made a last-ditch attempt and charged towards Zhang Yang.
3%...2%...1%...

"I-I grah! No!" Amansari was killed by Zhang Yang and exploded with loot. Those were Mythical equipment! Players who had charged in were instantly distracted by the drops and stared at them. Amansari was a friendly NPC to him, so, even if they had struck her, the loot that dropped from her cannot be picked up by them. Zhang Yang blasted few players aside and proceeded to pick up all the loots.

It was a tough battle for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was not afraid of physical attacks, come one or a million of monsters, he would take them and return their attack ten fold. However, magic attacks such as {Fire Missile} and {Frost Arrow} were threats to him. Even though their individual damage was not particularly high, one hundred of them would kill him nonetheless! Hence, after he had picked all the loots, Zhang Yang rushed into the tomb.

"Chase him!"

Players noticed his immediate withdrawal from the battle and followed in as if they had just gained the advantage. Only Dusk Phoenix had ever forced him to flee before, and that was already an achievement. Even though they did not know why he fled, they claimed the credit and chased after him.

"You've done well. Zhan Yu. I was right to put my trust in you!" Zhang Yang could hear the voice of Helena echoing in his ears when he was close enough.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Saving Banct Roland. Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points! Defensive Barrier HP: 1,000,000. Score: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have obtained a reward: Helena's Charm!'

[Helena's Charm] (Mythical, Accessory)

Equip: Increases your attack and healing rate by 5%.

Equip: Grants a 1% chance to create a Life Orb upon receiving an attack. A maximum of 10 Life Orbs can be created. In non-combat status, all Life Orbs will disappear after 30 seconds.

Use: Consumes all Life Orbs and heals you by 30,000 HP per Life Orb.
Cooldown: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: The charm was made with the power of an ancient magician. You can sense a powerful magic just by holding it in your hands.

Zhang Yang nodded his head, pleased.

Zhang Yang replaced the accessory [Heart of the Death Knight] with [Helena's Charm]. The accessory [Heart of the Death Knight] had been nerfed greatly and would only give Zhang Yang a split-second Invincibility, and nothing more. It was time to replace it.

Thud. Thud.

Two footsteps were heard. Helena tenderly supported the handsome, restored Banct Roland out of the barrier and the two shared an intimate moment.

[Banct Roland] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Magic Attack: 41,464 – 51,464

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Launches arrows with the power of corruption in all direction 40 meters from the caster to deal 50,000 Shadow Damage.

[Crippling Pain]: Tortures a target, dealing 200% magical attack, Shadow damage and reduces the target's attack power by 20%. Channeling: 3 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Soul Offering]: Burns own soul and sacrifice the caster's 10% HP to restore 30% of Helena's HP. Grants Helena "Berserk" and increases all her attacks by 100%.

Note: Once a famous and powerful magician in the land. Although he was turned into a Spectre, his knowledge and power remain. His mortal body may have perished, but his love for Helena burns brightly with an undying will.

Another Mythical tier boss!

Zhang Yang was delighted. With two Mythical tier bosses and him, and his S class Inheritance, he could wipe out all the players in the map till they cry back to their mummy's arms.

"Congratulations to Princess Helena and Mr. Roland. May the fire of your love burn for all eternity!" Zhang Yang wished them from the bottom of his heart.

"You have my most sincere gratitude, warrior!" Banct lowered his head to thank him.

"Come, my love. We must leave this place!" said Helena.

Banct nodded and said, "People think that I have been long dead. I plan to keep it that way."

"Kill!!!" Echoes of players' roar come into the tombs and a few had even

shown up.

"Hm? More Insolent fools." Helena glared and unsheathed her sword. Banct gently held her face before letting go. The woman exchanged a loving stare before her eyes were filled with intense killing intent. She rushed over to the players and unleashed a barrage of {Thousand Shadow Slash}. All of the players who entered the tombs were instantly killed by her.

"WHAT!?" None of them had expected Helena to still be alive. Before they could run out of the tombs, they were killed by Helena. Silence crept back into the tomb when all players were killed mercilessly.

Helena took the lead while Zhang Yang and Banct followed behind, unobstructed. With haste, all of them made it out of the underground tomb.

The moment Zhang Yang stepped out, players saw him. However, before they rushed in, they noticed both Helena and Banct. The new boss' skill was strong. Any smart person could see that they should not attack Helena first since the skill would heal and provide a 100% attack boost. The correct strategy to kill both bosses would be to separate them both. One tank would need to kite Helena away while all other DPSers would have to kill Banct as quickly as they can.

The problem was that Zhang Yang was protecting them! What kind of strategy could help them then!?

"Two bosses!? Haha! Awesome!"

"Kill them both! Get their loot!"

"Hah! Zhan Yu as well! Kill them all!"

The players who were late to the scene had not seen Helena's prowess in battle. Hence, they rushed in without thinking much and attacked.

"Hmph." Helena scoffed and brandished her sword. With lightning speed that surpassed anyone in the world, she unleashed her {Thousand Shadow Slash} continuously, killing all who dared attack her.

The Spectre Princess was just like Queen Serena. When they wished someone to die, not even fate could prevent that. Her attacks were quick and ruthless. She could instantly turn a player who was standing still into perfectly diced cubes of human flesh with {Chaos Strike}.

"Swarm them!" cried Shuro Ousama. Many players had fallen to Helena, and the number of Skeletal Infectors had increased exponentially. With such numbers, even ants could take down an elephant. Using that strategy, Shuro Ousama was hoping that his army of the undead would kill both bosses by slowly hacking away at their HP.

Clak Clak Clak Clak...

All the Skeletal Infector marched towards Helena and Banct. However, when Helena noticed their arrival, she lowered her sword and glared at the army. A sudden bright light flashed across her eyes. At the same time, her mouth muttered something in an inaudible and foreign language. It was subtle but the effect was obvious. All of the Skeletal Infectors stopped their movements and bowed down to Princess Helena as if they were her own soldiers and Princess Helena was their true ruler. None of them even stopped to listen to Shuro Ousama's command!

The day of revolution has arrived!

Shuro Ousama's jaw touched the ground.

Chapter 597: Scared

Shuro Ousama had spent the whole time creating an army of Infectors but all of a sudden, all of them had turned against him. He quickly turned tail and ran. All of the Skeletal Infector had turned around to attack him.

He had never expected his own ultimate skill to be used against him. The first slap in his face was that all the Skeletal Infectors could not do any damage to Zhang Yang. The second slap, and the hardest one, was that he had just given the boss an army of Skeletal Infectors for free! By the looks of how the Infectors had bowed respectfully to the boss, they would most likely be used against him!

Princess Helena made another inaudible and incomprehensible muttering, causing all the Skeletal Infectors to turn around and glare at the Japan-Korea region players. Their original hollow eye sockets burned brightly with the green-emerald flames of the Spectre!

Thousands of Skeletal Infectors marched outside the tomb and laid waste to all the players.

"Oi! What are you doing Shuro Ousama!"

"Wrong side! Wrong side! Friendly fire!"

"F*ck you! You're worse than a stupid pig!"

Even though the numbers of Skeletal Infector were only by the thousands, the few tens of thousands of players in the castle were getting the goosebumps. Abyssal Skeletal Inheritance was the Inheritance that Shuro Ousama had. Even though it was only a C class Inheritance, given enough time, the cumulative damage of the entire army of Skeletons would be extremely powerful. Hence, when the Skeletal Infector was turned to Princess Helena's side, it was terrifying.

Shuro Ousama had to keep his mouth shut, even though he was enraged and ashamed. How could he have predicted that Helena would have the power to subdue his own army of skeletal soldiers!? Still, if you were part of these attacking players, you would surely be cursing him as his army

washes you away!

Technically, the skeletal soldiers were not that hard to deal with. Zhang Yang could easily deal 70 to 80% damage with a single strike of {God of War Crushing Strike}. However, unlike Zhang Yang, players with no Inheritance Transformation skills would find them troublesome. The main problem was their numbers, not their attack. Together, they stood strong, like an army of ants gobbling up an elephant. Plus, they looked extremely disgusting, with innards dangling out of their rotten jaws.

After all the Skeletal Infectors had marched out of the tombs, it was Princess Helena's turn to shine. She walked out of the archway and revealed herself to the world. Her blades were unsheathed and {Thousand Shadow Slash} was unleashed onto the players. Banct followed closely to her and fired {Corruption Arrows}. Even though Banct's power was not as devastating as Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}, it definitely helped finish off any player who somehow survives. Both of their aligned attacks can instantly kill all non-tank players effortlessly.

Zhang Yang was still in the archway, leaning against the pillar and laughed at the scene of pathetic players attempting to land a hit on Princess Helena. After a good laugh, Zhang Yang showed his presence in the battlefield by striking the floor with {Crushing Strike}, dealing blasts of light from the earth to deal more than 30,000 damage to everyone. Sadly, without the little annoying brat's {Strength Aura} 12% Strength bonus, his damage would not reach above 40,000. No matter, his attack was extremely useful, since the AoE was 100 meters wide! As long as he lands a hit on everyone, it would work wonders!

With haste, the two bosses and Zhang Yang had immediately gained the upper hand in the battle. Plus, with the thousands of Skeletal Infectors "assisting" the fight, the Japan-Korea region players stood no chance!

Naturally, being the easiest to kill, many Skeletal Infectors were destroyed. However, now that Princess Helena had taken over the controls of the Infectors, the dead players were being converted to more Skeletal Infectors to replenish the army! In the end, the players came to a final decision.

"FALL BACK! FALL BACK!"

The active time limit of the Skeletal Infectors was 2 minutes. Many of them knew about it. However, due to the unfavorable conditions of the battle, the players decided to fall back and leave the field to prevent further deaths until the time limit. After that, all of the Skeletal Infectors should fall apart, and players would have it slightly easier. It was not worth dying to those pathetic Skeletal Infectors and wasting their money on repair fees.

After several hundred more players died during the retreat, the battlefield was now barren. From afar, all the Japanese and Korean players recuperated. The number of Skeletal Infectors had returned to Princess Helena's side and had organized themselves in a neat formation. With Princess Serena, Banct, and Zhang Yang as the central point, the Skeletal Infector formed a defensive formation, positioning themselves to protect the central point from all attacks from all directions.

No one could expect someone like Zhang Yang to bring out a boss like that into the castle and wreak havoc.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud at the useless attempt of the Japanese and Korean's provocations to challenge him to a one on one duel. He flew upwards and hovered slightly above the castle's peak and bellowed in the public channel.

"Fellow players of the Japan-Korea region, if you do not wish to continue our friendly match, I will now humbly take my leave!"

"F*CK OFF THEN!"

"Give us back our territory!"

"One day, we will have our revenge! We will dominate all of China's major cities!"

"Kill all the Chinese dogs!"

Knowing that they could not hurt him, they could only shout empty threats to him, hoping to scare him away.

Zhang Yang spotted the group of players who were screaming the loudest and decided to teach them a lesson. He spread his wings out and zoomed towards them. With a quick slash of his blade, he dealt more than 200,000 damage in one hit and instantly emptied out the field of noisemakers.

There was another group of players behind the first that he had obliterated. They had intended to help, but seeing how the others had been instantly killed by Zhang Yang, they had no choice but to run away. Zhang Yang flew to them and activated "Crushing Strike" to deal 30,000 damage with 20 bright blasts of lights. All that was left behind were the dead bodies of players, and three surviving players with little to no HP left. Zhang Yang shot to them and landed a series of skills to end their lives.

Initially, the noisy chattering went on and on. However, after Zhang Yang terminated a group of players, the ranting stopped immediately.

Anyone could be a legendary killer if they get their hands on a strong Inheritance. However, getting their hands on one would be another matter. Only strong players like Zhang Yang, an entity of a Death God could obtain such an Inheritance and become something even stronger. He was not some random strong player that could be killed with numbers. The group of players that Zhang Yang had just killed was the noisiest bunch. Zhang Yang was weeding out the noisy chickens. It caused a domino effect that had sent a message to all players around. Everyone was silenced immediately. Someone as powerful as Zhang Yang could immediately snipe the general of a million soldiers by flying straight into the formation without the need to fight.

The group that Zhang Yang had just killed had dropped a few Yellow-Gold equipment and one Violet-Platinum equipment. While everyone was watching, Zhang Yang flew down to the ground and picked the equipment casually. Everyone was furious, however, there was nothing that they could do. They did not even dare make a squeak, fearing that they might be his next targets.

"Zhan Yu! We must make haste!" cried Helena.

"Yes. My princess!" Zhang Yang smirked to the other players who had retreated and flew back to the bosses.

Before leaving, Banct turned back to the castle and stared at a particular window on the far side of the castle. There was a glint of longing and regret. Zhang Yang patted his shoulder and gave him a smile. Banct recollected his composure and nodded to Zhang Yang before taking hold of Helena's hands. Banct then conjured a shadowy portal.

"Let's go." Princess Helena voice tone was extremely soft and soothing when she spoke to Banct. Banct nodded and smiled at her as the two undead lovers crossed the portal, leaving Zhang Yang still on the other side.

Before he left, Zhang Yang turned back only to find the Japanese and Korean players about to jump at him. Zhang Yang smiled, said nothing, and went into the portal.

If he were to say anything at all, the public channel would be flooded with more insults and curses. However, his gesture, his actions had spoken of his intentions. He was completely looking down at them! When a victor had won a meaningless battle, he would be so disappointed that he would not even give a demeaning speech. That was a psychological attack that would break anyone!

When Banct Roland was a dying, he could still conjure a portal that led Zhang Yang out of Anjar Castle. Now that he had been reborn and gained the status of a Mythical tier boss, his powers had been upgraded. The portal that he conjured had led all of them straight to Tibanya Wasteland's, right at the palace ruins.

"Adventurer. I can't thank you enough for what you have done for us," said Banct as he held Princess Helena's hands. Princess Helena smiled as she stared at Banct lovingly. Zhang Yang felt a strong sense of dismay. Now that he had worked so hard with these two Spectre bosses, it would not be right to bring a team to kill them!

Zhang Yang felt the need to leave them alone.

"I bid you farewell Mr. Banct. Princess Helena." Zhang Yang bowed and

left the two long lost lovers alone. Zhang Yang's God of War Transformation was still active and there was still time before it ends. Zhang Yang took this opportunity to hunt for monsters to grind some levels.

As he killed a few strong monsters, Zhang Yang took the time to review some of the items that he had collected from Amansari. She was a Level 130 Mythical tier boss. Her loot should be of some standard.

The boss had dropped a total of two Mythical tier equipment and two Violet-Platinum equipment. There was also one skill book and one Amateur tier Aura Stone. Zhang Yang had not bothered to look at the Violet-Platinum tier equipment. Before he examined the other items, Zhang Yang used the Aura Stone and leveled his {Vitality Aura} to Level 7. At Level 7, the {Vitality Aura} would provide a staggering 28% Vitality boost. His maximum HP was now 7,996,800. His normal HP should be 199,920!

Fortunately, the skill book he found was a Warrior class!

[Superior Cripple Defense (Passive)]: Reduces 5 seconds from the cooldown time of {Killing Cleave} with every successful hit of {Cripple Defense}.

The skill {Killing Cleave} can only be used when a target's HP is below 20%. After the patch, the skill's Rage cost had been readjusted to make it even easily accessible. Not only could it be used to deal an explosive amount damage, it would help a player fully utilize the Rage points efficiently.

Since {Killing Cleave} had a 30 seconds cooldown time, it would be extremely difficult to be used in PvP battles or boss fights. Hence, with the skill {Superior Cripple Defense} upgrade, granting a 5 seconds reduction in cooldown time with every hit of {Cripple Defense}, {Killing Cleave} could immediately be used when Zhang Yang lands 5 strikes of {Cripple Defense}. Take note that there will be a 5 seconds global cooldown duration. Still, even though Zhang Yang had gained this upgrade to {Cripple Defense} it did not mean that he should be prioritizing {Cripple

Defense} instead of other skills like {Horizontal Sweep}, or {Destructive Smash}.

{Cripple Defense} could be used to compensate an attack when {Horizontal Sweep} or {Destructive Smash} was in cooldown. Since the skill was, technically free for him, be it a 5 second or 10-second reduction in cooldown, it was a buff that should be utilized.

Among the two Mythical tier equipment, one was a Sacred Knight class, but the other was applicable to him.

Zhang Yang trained a little more and when the Transformation skill ended, Zhang Yang went to White Jade Castle and had the two items Identified.

[Silent Destroyer Glove] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +1,376

Strength: +646

Dexterity: +281

{Level 4 Socket}

Equip: Increases 2,750 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 5% attack and healing rate.

Equip: Absorbs 545 damage when attacked.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

After the glove was Identified, Zhang Yang went ahead and socketed a [Level 4 Strength Gem Stone]. All in all, the Attack Boost Zhang Yang had gained from all his equipment was 100%. It was another huge jump in power!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 117

HP: 215,120 (Vitality Aura)

Defense: 5,320

Attack: 30,512 – 35,056 (15,256 – 17,528 X 200%)

Damage Absorption: 4,472

Zhang Yang smiled at the thought of posting those stats to all his friends. They would surely be jealous!

Chapter 598: Helping Out

The news of Zhang Yang "invasion" of Grandu Ice Ridge spread all around, which led to the retaliation of the Japanese and Korean players where they infiltrated Tibanya Wastelands to have their revenge. They only sent five players, however, all of them possess Inheritances. Although all of them were only C class Inheritance holders, all five of them had activated their Transformation skills. Their combined power was strong. An average C class Inheritance player could easily fight 10 players with no Inheritance. With five of them grouped together, that power would be multiplied. One of them was a healer, hence, their fighting endurance was made stronger and could take on a hundred non-inheritance players at a time.

This only happened due to the high resistance rate of status affecting skills. That, and the ridiculously high HP and Attack power of the Inheritance players, granting them an absolute advantage in the battle.

The small team of players had returned to their own region after killing a few hundred China players. They had to turn back as their Transformation time limit had ended and the numbers of Chinese players were who were gathering up were already getting out of hand. After they had safely returned to their own bases, they had sent a warning to all of China, saying that if Zhang Yang were to return to the Japan-Korea region to mess around, they would repeat their attack again.

Zhang Yang had no intention to reveal what he did in Anjar Castle. However, Chinese players could not stop wondering about it. Like a prick in his head, they kept bugging Zhang Yang about it. Eventually, Zhang Yang got so annoyed that he had released the recordings of him taking down a thousand players in Anjar Castle, along with Princess Helena and Banct. After the recordings threatened to crash the forum servers, Japan and Korea were once again the laughing stock.

The scene where players had to run away from Zhang Yang was so embarrassing that players who were featured in the video had to hide their faces.

Due to the selfish acts of the small party, they had caused entire Japan and Korea to face much scorn. Now, they had been marked as the "villains". In a fit of rage, all the players in Japan and Korea vowed to have their revenge. A few days later, they had launched an attack and triggered a regional war.

The two neighboring regions had always been at each other throats. Even a tiny cinder could easily turn into a glowing amber which would grow into a raging fire. Now, their conflict was brewing wildly and had escalated to another level. From small parties, it grew larger into a town of players. It did not stop there, in the end, guilds after guilds had contacted each other to form a temporary alliance in order to fight a regional war.

...

The incident of Once Sword Stroke being castrated had proved to be non-fiction, as the man himself had come out to reveal the truth. Several days after the incident, members of Imperial Sky had posted their support and testimony of One Sword Stroke desire to continue playing. Instead, he vowed to stand strong and refused to bow to the threat of others.

As such, Fatty One made a joke about it. Now that One Sword Stroke had lost his manhood, he had no means of "standing". Instead of laughs, his joke had earned the ire of about everyone on the forums and they accused him of being a "rude mother*cker".

The act of One Sword Stroke revealing the truth had gained many positive comments and support from the crowd. It could be seen, when Imperial Sky had received many guild applications in the forums itself. The guild and One Sword Stroke had gained massive popularity over a short period of time which boosted Imperial Sky's name all over China.

As for the real perpetrator of the incident that had befallen on One Sword Stroke, many players had indulged themselves in solving the crime. When it comes to keyboard warriors, their research power, and social connections can never be underestimated. Within a few days, many had already solved the "accident" that occurred between One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, and Luo Xin Yan. Due to the standard stigma of rich people and the

poor victimized players, the crowd had laid down their biased judgment which resulted in One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan being the victims, and the perpetrator being none other than rich Liu Wei.

The actual truth of One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yu having an affair had turned into a myth. While the myth where One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan were old loving couple had turned into the truth. Liu Wei on the other hand, was marked to be the villain in their romantic yet tragic love story. Both men had to fight for love and above all the conformity, One Sword Stroke rose victorious, however, little did he know that Liu Wei would resort to such actions.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly at the twisted story. Still, he was greatly impressed by the power of the masses. When one speaks a myth, it will be a myth. When a thousand voices repeat a myth, it would be the truth. That is the danger of the ignorant herd.

All in all, Imperial Sky remained strong, One Sword Stroke did not falter. They had, on the other hand, used the heat of the crowd to raise up to Lone Desert Smoke's level of popularity. Their feat was something Zhang Yang would clap his hands for, as encouragement instead of inciting disdain.

Zhang Yang spent his free time shopping for random stuff. One fine day, he received Snow Seeker's private message.

"Guild master Zhan Yu! I could use a hand!"

The two guilds were on friendly terms with each other, due to the close cooperation between Silky Soft Holdings and Crimson Cosmetics Holdings. Due to their close relationship with each other, the guilds had worked together on more than one major occasion.

Crimson Rage was a guild that consisted of only female players. On the other hand, Lone Desert Smoke had a large majority of male players. When the ladies needed a hand, the boys in Lone Desert Smoke would stick their tongues out and wag their tails obediently to help them. Hundred Shots was greatly disgruntled. He had once said that Lone Desert Smoke was becoming Crimson Rage's sub-guild!

"What could I do you for?" said Zhang Yang casually.

"Oh, just fighting a boss. Nothing much, " said Snow Seeker in the same manner.

Nothing much? If it was "nothing much" she would not have called him, then!

Zhang Yang chuckled and replied, "I'm kinda busy right now. Why don't I send over Endless Starlight and Fatty Han to help you out? Both of them have Inheritances. Any boss fight should be made easy then. Chow~"

The two buggers would jump at the opportunity of being knights when a maiden is in distress. If any fair maiden called out their names, adding the prefix "brother", along with a bit of flirting, the two world-class, open-closeted perverts would waggle their tails and help them. Zhang Yang would not need to even call them to begin with! Those two perverts could sniff out a damsel in distress!

Snow Seeker coughed pointedly and said, "Well, I suppose that guild master Zhan Yu is a true gentleman. Could you perhaps, lend me your personal assistance?"

Zhang Yang sighed. "Speak, what boss is it?"

"Hm. It's a Level 150 Mythical tier boss." Snow Seeker finally revealed her hand.

Zhang Yang was a little surprised. "Did you guys get yourselves a B class Inheritance? Or, could it perhaps be an A class?"

Zhang Yang knew that they would not kill a Level 150 Mythical tier boss for its drops. The equipment dropped by a Level 150 Mythical tier boss cannot be worn by players yet! Hence, it should be an Inheritance quest.

"It's a B class Inheritance. It's called the Demon Summoner Inheritance." Snow Seeker hid nothing from him.

"Woah! You've hit the jackpot there!" Zhang Yang exclaimed.

In his previous life, he had clashed with a player that had the Demon Summoner Inheritance. The Inheritance was limited to only the Priest

class and Spellcaster class. The Inheritance could provide a strong offensive support to any Cloth Armor class wearer, making it a powerful B class Inheritance.

Not too long from now, the S class Professional League competition would be held fairly soon. China's first team would inevitably be Silky Soft Battle Team, while the second battle team had not yet been decided. Two days ago, Crimson Rage Battle Team had managed to hold the second place battle team position for China, since One Sword Stroke was still absent from the game. However, knowing that One Sword Stroke had voiced out his resolve, Crimson Rage Battle Team position as China's second team was now threatened.

However, their positions would be stabilized if they add in a player with a B class Inheritance. Even though the usage of Inheritance Transformation skills is not permitted in the Professional League, a player with an Inheritance would still hold the upper hand in PvP combat. The passive permanent attack boost will be active, skills obtained from the Inheritance could be used to counter the status effecting skills of the non-Inheritance players!

The Inheritance Demon Summoner provides the caster with a strong Demon bodyguard. It could be brought into battle, even in the Professional League. Zhang Yang had never once fought the player in a Professional League and felt fortunate for it.

"So...Will you lend a hand?" asked Snow Seeker sweetly.

Zhang Yang laughed at her attempt to coax him and asked, "Well...I don't know...But! If guild master Snow offers me a [Forbidden Scroll], I could still consider it.'

Snow Seeker scoffed loudly. The communicator that they were using had a video projection of each other, hence, Zhang Yang could see her expression when she sulked and shook her head. "Guild master Zhan Yu! If I had a [Forbidden Scroll], I wouldn't have asked for your help!"

Zhang Yang was merely playing with her. Both guilds were strong allies and since Snow Seeker had purposely voiced out her request for

assistance, Zhang Yang had no particular reason to say no. Zhang Yang merely teased her for a bit more and finally agreed to help out unconditionally. He had promised to assemble a few strong members of the guild to help out Crimson Rage in dispatching the boss.

Zhang Yang recruited Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and five other players who had Inheritances. Along with Crimson Rage's team, they traveled to a volcano. Since Snow Seeker had requested for players with Inheritance, Zhang Yang had not recruited Sun Xin Yu, and the other girls of his core party since they wouldn't be able to do much, thanks to the level gap.

On the other hand, Crimson Rage had gone all out. They had sortied close to 5,000 players who were above Level 100. The team of babes chattered along happily, causing both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight to sway with the flow. However, when the two perverts tried to flirt with the gang of girls, they got in for the shock of their lives. The girls of Crimson Rage were not ordinary bashful girls who would shy away when a man gets close to them. No, they were very different, they would be the ones harassing the man. In the end, they were so frightened of their unusual behavior that they hid behind Zhang Yang, fearing that the girls might jump on them and eat them up! Zhang Yang merely laughed at their comical act.

The place they were traveling to was called Molten Earth Peak, a Level 120 to Level 150 map. Once the massive army entered the map, players who were just over Level 100 became huge monster magnets. It could not be helped. Crimson Rage had only requested Zhang Yang to help them with the boss, mostly due to {Glare of the Death God}, but Snow Seeker knew it had a low success rate. Hence, Crimson Rage had sortied their entire guild's attack force to increase their chances of defeating the boss.

Even though she knew that Zhang Yang would not mind repeating the boss fight if they happen to fail, Snow Seeker would not want to trouble him unnecessarily.

Now that they had so many players around, the level suppression system would not matter. With thousands of them attacking at once, normal monsters would surely be killed in a matter of seconds. An elite tier

monster would last slightly longer.

Three hours of killing their way to the top, the army of female soldiers reached the peak of the huge volcanic mountain. There, they met their objective. An exile Demon General!

It looked just like a Western Demon. It was 6 meters tall, with a body dyed in blood, twin bullhorns that protruded out of its forehead, a pair of bat wings, the legs of a goat, and a huge scythe in its strong muscular hands. From afar, it sat on the ground cross-legged, thinking.

[Hachilles, The Banished Demon General] (Mythical, Demon)

Level: 150

HP: 300,000,000

Defense: 8,87—

Melee Attack: $1266 + 9,356 = 169,367$

Skill:

[Mana Burn]: Randomly chooses a target to inflict 150,000 Shadow Damage. If the target possesses Mana Points, the target takes MP damage by a maximum of 70,000 MP. For each Mana points burned, the target will receive an extra 2 Shadow Damage. Range: 40 meters.

[Shadow Cleave]: Casts a cone-shaped blast in front of him and deals 100% melee physical damage. Stuns all targets for 5 seconds. Ignores targets that are stunned. The effect can be dispelled.

[Meteor Reign]: Summons a meteor from the sky and strikes three locations, dealing 50,000 Fire Damage each. Lasts for 5 seconds. Range: 50 meters.

[Devilish Tenacity]: Restores 1% of his HP every 30 seconds. Restoration amount will not be affected by any status effects.

Note: Hachilles was once a famous figure in the demon army. However, he had an affair with the Demon Leader Karxerxex and was caught red-handed. Hence, he was exiled to the mortal realm.

Chapter 599: The Myth Assaults

This entity...should be the character of an important story. Or was...

The strongest ranked characters among the demons would be the Demon Leaders like Rougelier, or the Fallen Wind Ranger Calina, who were all Celestial tier bosses. Any bosses lower than the Demon Leader's position would be the Demon Brigadier Generals followed by Demon Generals.

Hachilles was only banished, exiled after he had made a move on the wife of his higher-ups. From a certain perspective, this character should be extremely tough, since he had not be subjected to execution! Either Hachilles himself was too strong to be killed, or the higher-ups had been lenient enough to spare his life. Either way around, the Demons are not to be messed with.

Still, speculations would not help in games. There was no way to judge a character's strength until one fights him. However, in a situation where you are playing an ultra reality MMORPG, you could judge a person's strength just by looking at his or her status profile or flavor text. The demon's AoE attack power was already insanely strong. Or better yet, his normal single target skill would kill a player in a matter of a second! If he kills one player every 2 seconds, he could possibly kill 1,800 players in just an hour. That would only be his single target skill alone! Such a boss would definitely possess a strong AoE killing skill! Queen Serena has her Meteor Sword, Princess Helena has her {Thousand Shadow Slash}, what would stop this demon general from having a skill of mass destruction!?

A proper analysis would show you that Hachilles has two AoE skills, the {Meteor Reign} and the {Shadow Cleave}. {Shadow Cleave} is a skill that could be easily avoided by standing away from his front. On the other hand, to compensate for that limited AoE, Hachilles possess the {Meteor Reign} which randomly strikes a large area! The problem was that the true area and timing of the attack would not be known.

The icing on the cake would be the boss' {Devilish Tenacity}. With

300,000,000 HP, the demon could heal 1% or 100,000 HP every 30 seconds. To put it in simpler words, if the entire army of players could not fork out more than 100,000 damage every 30 seconds, defeating the boss would be an impossible task. You can stand there and swing away for an entire year, and the boss would still be doing his own thing without even noticing your presence!

Zhang Yang frowned. This calls for extreme improvisations. The boss' skill had rendered his usual "grinding" strategy useless. That, and the skill - {Glare of the Death God}. He would barely manage it if the entire team devotes their resources only on staying alive!

Even if they could somehow stay alive and deal as much damage as they could, the boss' Level was still much higher than theirs. With the level suppression gap system in place, both the players' output damage and damage taken will be affected greatly. Paired with the boss' ability to restore his own HP, it would take a miracle to kill him.

That was the reason why Zhang Yang and his merry friends had not managed to take down any S class and A class Inheritance bosses. All of them had HP recovery skills which would grind the players down instead of the other way round.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He had not expected Hachilles to own such a bothersome skill.

Snow Seeker walked over to Zhang Yang and pats his shoulder. "It's up to you now, guild master Zhan Yu. We'll be counting on you."

Snow Seeker's sudden intimate mannerism greatly emphasized her mature-lady beauty. The way she winked her eyes at Zhang Yang made Endless Starlight and Fatty Han drool all over the floor.

"Ayy boi, bring it out then yeah! Stick em hard! Stick em rough!" Perfume Water teased them with her boisterous, tomboyish attitude. She had even winked playfully and glanced at Zhang Yang's crotch. The other girl players around giggled as she did.

Zhang Yang continued to sigh heavily. Fatty Han got agitated and spoke out, "Perfumed Water, little Yang's is only medium sized! Would you dare

feast your eyes on my cannons?!"

White Orchid immediately scoffed. "Actions speak louder than words. I dare you to strip down right now and show it to us!"

"Yeah! Show it! Show it!"

"Strip! Strip! Strip!"

Right then, the girl squad cheered on and moved closer to Fatty Han menacingly.

Fatty Han's attempt to incite shame on the girls had backfired in his own face. Feeling overwhelmed, Fatty Han hid his crotch with his hands and hid behind Zhang Yang. Fatty Han was terrified of them. It was as if they would pounce on him and tear his clothes to pieces. Endless Starlight, who was quiet the whole time, patted himself on the back. Fortunately, he had held his silence, or he would be harassed by the girls, again!

Just as the party was making preparations to fight the boss. Zhang Yang shouted at the top of his lungs. "STOP! WE HAVE COMPANY!"

"Who is it?" Snow Seeker rushed to his side and asked.

"The Myth. Liu, mother*cking, Wei," said Zhang Yang slowly, word by word.

From a great distance that was barely visible to the naked eye, a cloud of dust moved closer to their general direction. Countless mounts were galloping towards them, leaving a trail of dust clouds so big and wide that it resembled a small army. In the sky, there were also players flying in the sky thanks to their mounts, leading the army towards the not-so-tall-mountain.

Within a few minutes, the dust settled and the army stood before them. With a loud deafening shriek, a large bug with a sharp prickly body landed in front of the group of players. The large bug was a housefly. A 4 meter tall, disgusting, putrid housefly.

Sitting on the repulsive fly was the same disgusting player. Not that his appearance was disgusting, but the man that was sitting on it himself,

everything from his voice, his eyes, his thoughts, were disgusting on a whole other level. It was Liu Wei, or Heaven's Pride.

"Look what the cat dragged in. It's Snow Seeker guild master!" Liu Wei looked down at her with eyes that spoke of indecency at the utmost level. Like a spider with only two eyes, the man laid his sight on the woman's curves and traced every bend and arch that was on her body.

"What a coincidence! The gods must have a liking for me, for I must thank them for allowing me to meet you here, guild master Snow. Perhaps, we should talk to each other more often, face to face," said Liu Wei with a sinister grin.

Snow Seeker smiled coldly and replied him with professional courtesy. "I have to apologize for not being too familiar with Heaven's Pride. I beg your pardon, however, we, Crimson Rage are currently in the progress of an activity. If you may excuse us, we shall be on our way.

"In that case, I will take that offer and allow you to be on your way. We, The Myth are here to defeat the boss right there." Liu Wei had failed notice it initially, but he had spotted Zhang Yang who was only standing next to Snow Seeker. Zhang Yang met his glare with his own and saw a glint of deep hatred in his eyes. Despite having vengeance towards the man, he had kept his mouth quiet and kept his composure. The case in Shanghai where he was thrown in prison for three days had made Liu Wei realize that Zhang Yang was a man with dangerous connections. He was not a man to be trifled with.

Snow Seeker immediately frowned when Liu Wei revealed his intentions. Anger burst out but was quickly hidden away with a poker face. "Guild master Heaven's Pride. We, Crimson Rage were the first to be here. The boss is a target for elimination for a certain quest that we have. I urge you to maintain a certain level of courtesy and allow us, Crimson Rage to have this kill."

"Now that is what I call an interesting offer. As long as guild master Snow agrees to answer to only Heaven's Pride, putting Crimson Rage to be under the command of The Myth. Get a room, lock the doors, and we will

talk business." A shield bearing Knight rode out to the front and stood beside Liu Wei, spouting those words.

When the Knight spoke, players around Liu Wei had started to chuckle as they laid their lustful eyes on all the female players of Crimson Rage. It does not take a master in rocket science to know that they were having indecent thoughts.

Perfumed Water and the other female players fumed. Their faces burnt with fiery rage. They may tease and play with the Crimson Rage members, but no one will disgrace their Snow Seeker like that in public.

"I'd say, someone, is too lonely and dry! I urge you to run back home and jerk off to your own mom's photo!"

"What a shame! Your father should have ejaculated to the floor when he prodded your mom! That's where all the good ones went, you're a leftover!"

"I have not lain with a man in half a year, and I would not even think of getting it on with 2 inch long dudes like you!"

All sorts of insults and dirty jokes were bombarded at the guys of The Myth. These women were not to be messed with, especially when even open closet perverts like Fatty Han and Endless Starlight would be terrified of them!

Liu Wei kept his composure like a professional. However, no matter how much he tried to hide it, Zhang Yang could still see the twitches of anger in his poker face. The girls of Crimson Rage had insulted him and his forefathers before him, his mother and her mother before her to the point where his entire family line had been shot down to the bottom of the society.

"Snow Seeker guild master!" Liu Wei suppressed his urge to strike as he raised his voice. "I'll be frank here. I need an item from the boss to complete an Inheritance quest. Might I suggest a perfect solution to this mayhem? Perhaps we could cooperate with each other. The Myth demands nothing but the quest item only. As compensation, we will hand over all the other drops to Crimson Rage."

Zhang Yang widened his eyes in shock. Could it be that Liu Wei was also after the Demon Summoner Inheritance Keepsake? Zhang Yang could not help but worry. He was sure that the Inheritance Liu Wei possessed in his past life was the B class Inheritance Fiery Phoenix Inheritance.

Snow Seeker had grown tired of his false pretense and waved him off. "Coincidentally, we are also after the boss for an Inheritance quest. I have nothing to offer but apologies. I insist that Heaven's Pride guild master allow us Crimson Rage to have the first kill. The Myth should wait for the next boss spawn to complete your quest."

"Hmph! Why should we wait! You're the ones who should wait since you brought the idea up!" cried another player who had jumped to the front. He noticed that Liu Wei was in a pinch. He knew that Liu Wei wanted to get to Snow Seeker's good side, yet could not bear to let the boss go. As a good underling, the player must step up to defend their boss when he is backed to a corner.

As such, Liu Wei raised an eyebrow and gave him an approving look.

"Nonsense! An open-world boss is there for all to kill! If there's no agreement here, let's kill for it! The winners take all!" Mellow Venom rudely interject and glared at the men of The Myth with killing intention.

"You wanna go!?"

"Bring it on, woman! Like I care about you!"

Both sides started trading insults and provocations. By the looks of it, a war was unavoidable. Both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight, who have been silently watching since the beginning were feeling a little left out.

Snow Seeker, on the other hand, sighed heavily at the behavior of her own members. If asked, she would confess that it was her fault for not taking care of them "properly". After all, they were a guild of 100% female members. Any form of maiden-demeanor had been dropped. No need to be "lady-like", faking their behavior for the likes of men. They were in a virtual reality after all. No one will know their real identities. Those that had expressed the most barbaric, savage attitudes were the white collar workers who were stressed out at work. It would be impossible to pinpoint

the same person based on their appearance and behavior in the game.

Liu Wei dropped a cold stare. "Snow Seeker guild master. Do you want to have a war?"

Fatty Han finally gathered his courage and voiced out his opinion. "Liu Wei. You're such a pussy, you know that? The ladies here are ready to strike on call and you're standing, there asking for permission to even take a piss! Could it be, that you too, have been castrated? Don't you have the balls to start a war on your own?!"

"Aww Yeah! Good one! Fatty bro!"

"Woohoo! I never knew that Fatty Bro is so manly! I'll even consider having you in bed with me!"

"Fatty bro! Let's do it after the boss fight!"

All the female players cheered for Fatty Han, which left Liu Wei in an even worse situation. With a solemn expression, Liu Wei turned to Zhang Yang, "Are you going to fight me again?!"

Zhang Yang shrugged and replied without looking him in the eye. "That, I say, would be an interesting event, wouldn't it?"

Liu Wei scoffed and waved his hands. The army of players behind him fell back to create distance between the two guilds. A war was going to happen, no matter what.

Zhang Yang quickly switched to his party channel. "Do no use your Inheritance Transformation skills! We still have a boss to fight later! Spread it out!"

"Understood!"

"Time to kill some boys for dinner, babes!" cried the girls of Crimson Rage.

They say there is a calm before a storm, a moment of peace before war. Whoever said that had never been in a female army! The atmosphere was so noisy that Zhang Yang had trouble paying attention to the actions of Liu Wei in the distance.

Liu Wei retreated to a safe distance and prepared himself. While Crimson Rage was still noisily raging on, The Myth was completely quiet. With a wave of his hands, Liu Wei signaled the advancement and thousands of players rushed onwards.

The Myth was a guild of elite players who had broken off from Imperial Sky. Using his semi-perpetual source of money, Liu Wei had bought a majority of professional players from Imperial Sky, forming The Myth with strong players. Crimson Rage was a famous top guild in the whole of China, so The Myth could be on the same level as them, only in terms of strength but not popularity.

The two sides clashed with each other, turning the quiet field into a sea of blood and bodies.

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, Lost Dream, and the other Lone Desert Smoke Inheritance holders joined the fight. Even though they had not activated their Transformation skills, their overall power and defense were above what normal players could take on. A small party of six Inheritance holders would be like a spearhead piercing through the thick mass of bodies, leaving nothing but dead players in their wake.

Under Snow Seeker's personal orders, a group of healers, consisting of 20 Priests and Sacred Knights tailed behind Zhang Yang's party to keep them healed at all times. Zhang Yang was sure that his party would do just fine, however, from Snow Seeker's perspective, they were her precious guests and must be kept alive at all times. If they were to be killed and lose their experience points as a result, or worse, drop an equipment, Snow Seeker would never again request for Zhang Yang's help!

Zhang Yang's current move was to aim at their leader. To kill a nest of bandits, kill their ringleader first. Zhang Yang aimed to take down Liu Wei before all others. Hence, with him taking the lead, Zhang Yang leaped into the air and zoomed towards Liu Wei on his Thunderhawk. "Don't follow me. Stay on the ground and kill them!"

With {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void}, Zhang Yang would never die even, if he was surrounded. He had made sure that no one would follow

him in his crazy suicidal act since they did not possess any means of escape. Not even Lost Dream, who had {Vanish}.

"Zhang Yang. Are you here to kill yourself?" Liu Wei cried out when he saw Zhang Yang coming for him. Raising his voice, he cried to his army of players, "KILL THE MAN!"

Even though he had made sure that his voice could reach the sky, no one moved a muscle. Naturally, the man was infuriated. "Are you planning to betray me?" He snarled.

"Master Heaven's Pride. It's not that!" someone came to the front and explained promptly.

Zhan Yu is too high in the sky! He's out of range!"

Liu Wei scoffed and stretched his neck to observe Zhang Yang' position in the sky. He did not dare to lower his guard even though Zhang Yang was alone. After all, Zhang Yang was famous in China and even in Japan and Korea! From the commotions back in the Anjar Castle, Liu Wei knew that Zhang Yang was someone strong, even though he despised the man.

High in the sky, Zhang Yang was lost in his own thoughts. How is he going to reach that man? He then summoned Felice out and patted her head before asking her to kill Liu Wei. "Felice, could you be a dear and help big brother kill that bad guy there?" said Zhang Yang as he pointed at Liu Wei.

"Yes!" Felice squeaked in delight. "Felice would be happy to kill that bad guy!"

Liu Wei nearly spazzed out. How was that proper treatment to a child!? However, before he could react, Zhang Yang had shot down like a thunderbolt and appeared 2 inches from his face before burying his sword in his chest.

‘-34,792!’

The attack had dealt an overwhelming damage that cost him more than one-third of his HP.

Liu Wei jumped backward and instantly activated {Ice Barrier}. Even though Liu Wei was fully equipped with Violet-Platinum equipment, his maximum HP was only over 60,000, and barely grazing 100,000 HP, even though he was on his battle mount. A few strikes more and Zhang Yang would have killed him.

Zhang Yang laughed and soared back to the airspace, 40 meters above Liu Wei. There, he circled around for a few moments to allow Liu Wei's {Ice Barrier} to expire. 10 seconds was all Liu Wei had, after that, nothing is going save him from death.

"Those with flying mounts, get up to the sky and f*ck him up now!" cried Liu Wei as he started running to his bodyguards. "Anyone who can kill Zhan Yu will receive 100,000 dollars as a reward!"

They say that money can buy anything. In this case, a lot of money can buy a man's courage. More than 20 players got on their flying mount and chased after Zhang Yang.

Chapter 600: Chokehold

Zhang Yang smirked at their weak attempts of attacking him. Hence, to give them their fill of bloodthirst, Zhang Yang moved towards the incoming attack group and cut down the first player closest to him. Fresh blood splattered across the airspace.

"Use {Breaking Shot}!"

One of the Hunters fired an arrow which struck Zhang Yang on his head, successfully stunning him.

It was an extremely lucky shot. For a non-Inheritance player, it would be extremely tough to land a status effect skill on a player with Inheritance, due to their high resistance to status effects skills. If Zhang Yang were to activate his Transformation skill, the chances would be even lower.

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang forcefully dispelled the stun effect on him and plunged his sword at the hunter with the skill {God of War Devastation}. The skill immediately killed the Hunter. Instead of waiting to be revived, the Hunter had immediately released his soul from his body and chose to revive at the graveyard. The now lifeless body slid off Zhang Yang's sword and fell off its mount to the ground. The body struck the ground hard and became a human pancake.

Many other players behind the Hunter stopped and turned around as quickly as they came. Even though they had the advantage of numbers, Zhang Yang's brutality left a frightening impression of Zhang Yang. No one would want to be each other's cannon fodder just to kill him! Why would they put their lives on the front line and be killed when other players behind would only benefit from their death!

With such a thought in mind, the melee fighters decided to fall back, allowing the ranged attackers to attack from afar.

Liu Wei saw the retreating players and bellowed angrily, "What are you scums doing!? Kill the f*cker! What am I paying you for? Hiding behind

your mothers' skirts?!"

Zhang Yang laughed and rode the Thunderhawk towards a Thief class player who was clearly running away from him. With quick, agile movements, Zhang Yang slashed the player on his right and maneuvered to his left and laid down another sword attack.

Naturally, the player was shocked to see him appearing on his right and left. There was nothing the Thief player could do because of the battle mount restriction! Mounting a battle mount had its advantages. One of the most profound benefits would be to increase the HP limit of a player. They would also gain a fair bit of DPS. However, during mounting, there exist restrictions on certain skills. For example, Zhang Yang was unable to use the skill {Thunder Strike} since it required him to stomp the ground and allow the electricity to travel through the ground!

As for the restrictions for Thieves, they would be unable to use the skill {Vanish}!

The main threat of a Thief to other players was their hidden presence on the battlefield, striking down foes without them realizing it. However, what do you call a Thief without the ability to remove his presence from the battlefield?

The skill {Vanish} could not be used during a player was mounted on a battle mount. However, if a player does use it forcefully, he will be forced off the mount. He would vanish instantly like normal, along with the mount. However, the Thief player that Zhang Yang was attacking was currently airborne! If he forced his mount back into his inventory, he would plummet straight down to the ground! If the fall damage does not kill him first, he would be rendered visible by taking damage all the same. It would only make him an easy target to kill.

Hence, Zhang Yang had prioritized Hunter and Thief classes first. At the very least, the skill {Blur} could still be used during mounting. The Thief that Zhang Yang was attacking had swift reactions. Just as Zhang Yang was about to land a third strike, he activated {Blur} and gained an enhanced evasion rate. His skill had been level up to Level 10, granting

him 95% evasion rate, which was almost the same as gaining a 95% damage reduction ability.

Zhang Yang scoffed and left him alone. Naturally, he would not waste any skill on a Thief player who has activated {Blur}. The only thing that would strike him would be the unblockable, undodgeable -{Killing Cleave}.

Turning away from the Thief the Thief, Zhang Yang rode the Thunderhawk and zoomed in and out around the fleeting players of The Myth. Felice kept herself preoccupied. Since Liu Wei had gained invincibility from his {Ice Barrier}, she left Liu Wei alone for the moment and targeted the players in the sky. The little girl's attack was strong enough to kill non-tank players in three to four hits, as each of her {Fire Missile} could deal close 40,000 damage.

"Kill that firebird!" cried one of the random players on the ground.

"F*ck! What is going on?! Doesn't Zhang Yang own a blue bird pet? How is there another flaming bird in the sky?!"

Zhang Yang's weaving around them had truly made them annoyed. Since they could not target Zhang Yang, they turned to Felice instead. Since they were afraid of Zhang Yang, they headed towards Felice, since her attacks were not as crazy and unpredictable as Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang sighed at their behavior. Targeting the weak first, typical.

Little did they know that Felice has over 170,000 HP. Even though her Defense in her Dragonhawk form was not high, her magic defense was at 4,830. Sacrificing her physical defense, she had gained strong magic defense. Naturally, it still placed Felice in a dangerous position. As such, Zhang Yang did not ignore the danger she was in. With a quick dive attack, Zhang Yang shot down to an area with the highest concentration of players and blasted {Horizontal Sweep} to attack 3 players at the same time. One of them was even a Critical hit which dealt over 130,000 damage, instantly killing the fellow.

"Someone get over here and hold off Zhang Yang! The f*cker's attack is too strong!"

"F*cking ignore the pet! Come and gank Zhan Yu! Kill him and the pet

will disappear! Don't be a f*cking pussy and get your *ss over here! He is alone! We can kill him with just 20 of us!"

"Kill him! Don't be scared!"

Since the beginning of the so-called war, the players had finally realized the true method of defeating Zhang Yang. However, their reaction rate was so slow that it made Liu Wei felt like Stephen Hawking. Does it really take a genius to understand that with numbers, they could take on a single player?!

Zhang Yang braced for the oncoming players head on. With his current devastating attack power, and his Strength value was far higher than any players then, Zhang Yang trampled over player after player like a tank! He wasted no time and struck players with his shield at every global cooldown second! Most of them had greatly swollen faces, while the magic class players could barely cast anything at all!

"Uphm!""ARGH!""Owgh!"

Cries of pains and grunting could be heard from all over the battlefield as Zhang Yang attacked like a raging tank that was on blast of NO2! Leaving behind a trail of dead bodies, Zhang Yang had made great progress in weeding out the players from behind enemy lines. However, there was a drawback, Zhang Yang had taken many attacks and had his HP was down to less than 50%!

Thanks to his powerful equipment, Zhang Yang had been able to withstand for so long being attacked by more than 20 players at the same time! If someone else had taken his place, he or she would have been killed for god knows how many times!

Even though Zhang Yang was still taking damage, it was now far lesser. The number of players in the sky had dropped exponentially. Zhang Yang continued hacking away, until there was only three of them left in the airspace, not including Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Thunderhawk. The three The Myth players looked at each other, exchanged worried looks, and fled as fast as they could to the ground.

Zhang Yang laughed and did not chase after them. It was not wise to

chase a few stray dogs into a pound of hundreds of players who were ready to strike him down. Zhang Yang noticed that the {Ice Barrier} on Liu Wei had expired and he bellowed at him. "Oh Master Liu, it will be your turn next to visit the afterlife. Please wait patiently for your turn!"

With intense madness and rage, Liu Wei narrowed his eyebrows. However, there was an odd aura emanating from his character. Liu Wei's principle was that he may lose to a person, but never the war itself. He smiled coldly and refuted Zhang Yang. "I can wait for my death. The question is, could you?"

Less than two minutes ago, Zhang Yang's sudden charge towards the enemy line had thrown Liu Wei off his guard. However, even though it was only brief, he had made preparations for a counterattack! There was no reason to be afraid of him!

Liu Wei clapped his hands once and 12 Guardian players emerged behind him and formed a perfect line. Each of them had equipment that gave off a Violet, metallic muster. Without a doubt, they were all wearing a full set of Violet-Platinum armor, even though they were not particularly high level.

What was he planning?

Zhang Yang squeezed his brains and finally found the reason behind the odd formation.

Guardians have a skill called {Sacrifice} which could be used to divert all incoming damage on someone else to oneself for 5 seconds. To put oneself on the front line and protect the teammates is the job of a Guardian, as the name itself suggests.

Liu Wei probably wanted all 12 Guardians to create a 60 seconds {Sacrifice} chain cast. Since each skill could only last for 5 seconds, 12 of them could create a perfect 60-second protection without breaking the chain!

It would be troublesome for as long as the Guardians remain alive, so would Liu Wei! This tactic was not of Liu Wei's original creation. Zhang Yang recalled that in his past life, a guild had used this formation to kill a

boss, using a number of Guardians to spam {Sacrifice} to protect the main tank. However, that was an event in his past life. Chronologically, it would only happen in about half a year from now!

Perhaps, Liu Wei was the mastermind behind it!

"Hahaha! Come and get me! If you dare!" Liu Wei laughed maniacally! All 12 Guardians then spread out while keeping Liu Wei in range. They were all spread out to make sure that Zhang Yang would not strike them all at the same time. All of their attention was focused on Liu Wei alone. It seems like that they had practiced this formation countless of times. At most, they could cast {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei at the very last second before an attack would land on Liu Wei. Back then, when Zhang Yang had managed to land a hit on him, the Guardians were not present, since no one would expect a player to charge behind enemy lines to attack their leader.

To place one's attention solely on protecting a person was extremely taxing. It was something that would not last perpetually.

When Liu Wei noticed Zhang Yang wavering reaction, he laughed and provoked him to come down to challenge him. At the same time, the players behind the Guardians prepared to attack him the moment he gets within range.

"Hmph." Zhang Yang scoffed. "I must say, don't make me force you to beg me to kill you!"

"Zhan Yu! Even if you're China's number 1 tank, you couldn't possibly take on us all!"

"What are you playing at? Faltering in the face of Heaven's Pride?"

"Zhan Yu! Come down and bow to Heaven's Pride! Beg for his mercy and he might give you a bone to gnaw on!"

More and more players started throwing all sort of insults, provocations, and even false accusations!

Liu Wei laughed, seeing that Zhang Yang was still in the air. "What can you possibly do now!?"

Zhang Yang focused his thought and immediately came up with a plan. With quick reflexes, Zhang Yang dived down towards Liu Wei.

"F*cking prick!"

"Kill him!"

Everyone roared and charged towards him. Spellcasters still needed to channel their magic while Hunters had already released a volley of arrows at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang flipped a medal on his chest and activated the {Medal of Bravery} effect!

DING! DING! DING!

A glowing metallic barrier appeared in front of him and reflected all arrows that struck it, and they fell to the ground in pieces.

Liu Wei was startled. The first {Sacrifice} had already been cast on Liu Wei. With a confident stare, Liu Wei chuckled. "Zhang Yang, don't think that you will walk away from this. Not even you would have an unlimited Invincibility effect skill!"

"Haha! I don't need such a thing! All I need is 10 seconds.!" Zhang Yang slid across the ground and rushed over to Liu Wei. With a quick thrust of his right arm, Zhang Yang grabbed hold of Liu Wei's neck and pulled him up. Spellcaster had little to no Strength value since they were, after all, a class that prioritized in Intelligence!

Zhang Yang jumped up and on his Thunderhawk. Carrying one extra player on its back was not a problem for a Mythical tier mount! As such, with his arms around Liu Wei's neck, they rose as high as 40 meters in the air.

Everyone on the ground stared in disbelief. Did Zhang Yang just kidnap Liu Wei? Is that even possible!?

Chapter 601: Liu Wei's Torture

Zhang Yang spun around the players of The Myth, all the while grabbing Liu Wei's neck, wringing him like a goose. After he was satisfied dragging Liu Wei around, he zoomed towards Crimson Rage and released his grip.

"ARRRGHHH!"

Zhang Yang was 10 meters above the ground. At that height, any normal players would surely receive a tiny amount of fall damage. Hence, when Liu Wei struck the ground, he took a small amount of damage. However, he had landed on his head and started to bleed. Naturally, the rich boy started squeaking like a madman.

"There's no need to be such a pussy about a little pain! Get up!" Zhang Yang landed by his side and grabbed him by the throat. With only one hand, Zhang Yang lifted him off his feet and grinned evilly. "I told you this. You'll beg me to kill you!"

Liu Wei froze. He had never expected that all his hard work of crafting the perfect {Sacrifice} strategy would be for naught. It was the first time he had implemented the strategy in battle. Even though he had made sure that there were no flaws in his plan, Zhang Yang came in like an eagle and took off, something no one could have thought off.

Now that Zhang Yang clearly had the upper hand, he smiled like the devil himself! Liu Wei could not help but feel scared!

"I'm warning you. Don't overstep your boundary, Zhang Yang. You know who I am. If you wrong me even more, I'll make sure that you'll never see the light of day!" Liu Wei resorted to threatening Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang scoffed and whacked the snob with his shield in his face.

"BARGH!" Liu Wei grunted in pain and stared into Zhang Yang's eyes. Zhang Yang cocked his head and make sure he had not smashed his throat, he still needed him to throw more insults.

"You know, Liu Wei? The debt in Shanghai...I've yet to repay you!"

Liu Wei spat a mouthful of blood on the floor and glared helplessly.

"You did. You had me locked up in a rotten cell for 3 whole days! Wasn't that enough!?"

"Please..." Zhang Yang lowered him down to his feet but did not release the death grip on Liu Wei's neck. "That, was my second wife's doing. Not me." Based on their ages, Han Ying Xue was older than Sun Xin Yu. Hence, Zhang Yang had placed Han Ying Xue as the older wife, while Sun Xin Yu was the younger one.

Zhang Yang grabbed his shield with both hands like an oversized plate. "Look here. This is my doing. My revenge."

WHAM!

Zhang Yang smacked the man's face with his metal shield.

Liu Wei's head snapped to the right immediately. A fresh stream of blood, along with three broken teeth, flew into the air. The left side of his face was swollen so badly that the bulges had forced Liu Wei's left eye shut.

"Zhang Yang! You're going too far! Do you want to sign a death deal!?" Liu Wei burst out with anger. He did not care about what Zhang Yang was going to do to him. Even though the shield attack could not deal any HP damage, it did manage to disfigure his face! The humiliation of being beaten to a pulp, in the midst of a crowd of women at that too, was something no one had even dared to do, all of his life!

The death deal had already been signed in his previous life. Zhang Yang swore that he will not rest until Liu Wei sleeps in the gutters of the slums!

He lifted Liu Wei up again and slammed his shield against his putrid face over and over until all his teeth were out of his gums until the floor was painted with his blood! He was beyond recognition! Still, all his punches and facial reconstruction will be for naught when Liu Wei relog or respawn.

As the one-sided beatdown continued, the girls of Crimson Rage spotted Liu Wei and started to talk amongst themselves.

"Isn't that the man the one responsible for One Sword Stroke's

incident?"

"I heard something else as well. I heard that he had One Sword Stroke's wife raped! What a pig!"

"A pig?! No! He's worse than a pig! I'll smash his one-inch long tool!"

As their conversation heated up, the girls of Crimson Rage who were recuperating after taking too much damage had surrounded Liu Wei after getting a thumb's up from Zhang Yang himself. With a barrage of kicks of slender legs, the girls stomped with all their might on Liu Wei's already deformed face.

Plenty of players had heard of the tragedy that had befallen on One Sword Stroke and his wife, Lou Xin Yan, and felt disgruntled. The girls of Crimson Rage felt the need to enact justice on their own and would not turn away from this opportunity to smash this bastard.

"I'll remember this! Zhang Yang! Mark my words! You and your whores! I will get people to f*ck them all to kingdom come!" Liu Wei knew that Zhang Yang would not leave him be. Hence, with the humiliation he was receiving, he decided to throw some threats out. Whether or not he would enact his revenge at a later time. After all, the physical pain he felt then, was all digitalized.

"Come and f*ck me then! The useless d*ck at home is not enough for me! Send me some muscular ones!" cried out a slightly masculine female player as she stomped on Liu Wei's crotch.

"Hell yea. Anyone of us is enough to handle a few men. Bring more!"

The female hooligans started to wreak havoc.

Zhang Yang laughed with a strong satisfaction. In his past life, he was never able to have his revenge on Liu Wei due to his financial ability and his status in society. However, in this life, he had everything. With Silky Soft Holdings earning profits that reached up to 600,000,000 dollars, Zhang Yang could not help but feel invigorated. A few months back then, when Silky Soft Holdings was about to close down due to bankruptcy, despite a 600 million-dollar profit still being less than what Silky Soft

Holdings used to earn in the past, it was still a considerable overturn!

Furthermore, the profits of Silky Soft Holdings had not shown signs of slowing down! Zhang Yang predicted that in just two more years, Silky Soft Holdings will return to its full productions speed!

On one hand, Zhang Yang had Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream, and Mountain Mover to help further improve the status of Lone Desert Smoke. One day, for sure, Zhang Yang will make Lone Desert Smoke stand on the podium, becoming the number 1 guild in China and the world!

Right then, Zhang Yang personal accounts had amassed to several hundreds of millions. With Silky Soft Holdings in his back, he could stand on equal grounds to fight with Liu Wei. Even though Zhang Yang's fortune was not as grand of the Liu family, Liu Wei himself was not the man in charge of all of the fortune of Liu family! The power and resources that he could manipulate were extremely limited.

"Zhang Yang! Mark my words! I will not let you go! I will ---GRAH!" The man was being pummeled by a group of berserking female players. There was no escape for him. Unless he could die and be revived at the graveyard!

"Hmph. The feelings mutual, my friend." Zhang Yang had stopped his attacks on Liu Wei since the female players were more aggressive then he could ever be. All he had to do was to stand aside, cross his arms, and enjoy the show.

"Just you wait! GRAH! I will be back for your heads! I will be back!" Liu Wei could no longer stand the humiliation. His character disappeared into nothing as he forcefully logged out.

The Myth guild had never been on par with Crimson Rage. At the start of the war, Crimson Rage had already managed to push The Myth back. Now that they had lost their leader, everyone had lost their will to continue on. The battle had now turned into a one-sided massacre which led to players of The Myth to retreat. Some had even used their [Teleportation Scrolls] to escape.

As such, the war ended quickly and concluded with bodies of players of

The Myth. Both guilds had come here to fight the boss, however, the field was already drenched in blood even before the fight had begun!

Everyone took the opportunity to rest and recuperate, healing all their HP and MP while at the same time, camping on the battlefield. Everyone stood guard until all members of The Myth had left the place. Zhang Yang took command when all the dead bodies of The Myth members had disappeared and prepared for the boss fight. To come back to where Zhang Yang was, from the nearest graveyard would take a very long time. Hence, it will be safe to fight the boss without anyone trying to bother them.

Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker grouped up and discussed the strategy. Since the boss' overall stats could be examined, all they had to do was to aim at the right places and dodge at the right timing. However, it was merely speculation, that the boss skill's activation rate or area of effect range would not be revealed. Most importantly, the skills spamming rate!

For example, Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash} had a 2-second spamming rate. If the skill had been unleashed one minute at a time, Princess Helena would be 4 to 5 times easier to kill! Each boss will have a strong skill. The main point would be to discover the frequency of its usage. Depending on the skill usage, it could either be a normal boss, or a world boss!

Zhang Yang examined the Demon General and explained, "The boss should not be a normal boss that we fight every now and then. I fear that the skill {Meteor Reign} will be the most problematic skill."

"It can't be helped then! Even if its problematic, we still have to fight it." Snow Seeker patted Zhang Yang shoulder confidently. "After you, guild master Zhan Yu."

"Yeah! Go Zhan Yu! Go! We'd be rooting for you! Whip it out! I don't care whether it's twirly or as straight as a horse d*ck! Just give it to the boss!" Such an inappropriate phrase coming from the mouth of Thorny Rose was rather normal, Zhang Yang had been on her hate list for quite some time now. However, when her lustful eyes were glaring at Zhang

Yang's groin, it was extremely weird.

In the end, Zhang Yang ignored everything and everyone around him and focus on the thought of killing the boss. With a quick flash of light, Zhang Yang activated the God of War Transformation skill.

"My god. He's so cool and handsome..."

"I wish my boyfriend is as cool as him..."

The girls that were gazing longingly at Zhang Yang, not just Thorny Rose alone. Zhang Yang was China's number 1 tank. The popularity of it had fans building up a fan base just to admire him.

"What is that? Is it an S class Warrior Inheritance?" Mellow Poison asked with admiration. However, even if S class Inheritance was not a unique type Inheritance, Mellow Poison already acquired the Petrification Inheritance. There was no other way she could change her Inheritance unless she deletes her character and starts from scratch.

Zhang Yang zoomed towards the boss and tossed his first attack, a {Spear of Obliteration} and dealt 23,139 damage. In return, the boss growled and spread out his bat-like wings and hurtled towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was extremely disgruntled that he had only managed to deal 23,000 damage to the boss. The level suppression damage reduction was too much. Zhang Yang had more than 100,000 basic attack, yet he could only deal 20% of his original attack to the boss.

Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and the rest of the Inheritance holders activated their own Inheritance Transformation skills to join the fight. All of Crimson Rage Inheritance holders joined in and activated their Transformation skills as well. There was a total of seven of them. In fact, all Inheritance holder present in the field had activated their Transformation skills, besides Endless Starlight and Mellow Poison.

They were tankers. In a situation where they could not defeat the boss in two hours, both Endless Starlight and Mellow Poison could utilize their Transformations to stay in the fight.

‘-602,176!’

Zhang Yang took a great deal of damage from a single normal attack by the boss. Everyone quickly sucked in a deep breath, seeing the damage that Zhang Yang just took could have wiped them off from the face of the earth.

Zhang Yang felt annoyed at the luck he was having. The reason why the damage dealt by the boss was so high was due to the 500% level suppression system had granted to the boss. It was but a 10% chance to deal such a damage yet it had immediately occurred on the first strike. When the damage far exceeds the Defense value, it would be useless then, not to even mention the Damage Absorption he had. The best skill he had, for now, was the skill he obtained at Level 10, the 20% damage reduction passive.

"What a powerful boss!"

"Teehee, guild master Zhan Yu is so soft, just like a flaccid d*ck head! A little touch and he would be crying in pain!"

"Sigh...he is too weak!"

Snow Seeker immediately went up to the girls and gave them a good lecture. She did not want to anger Zhang Yang in the middle of an intense battle.

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to any of them. He maneuvered around the boss and cast {Glare of the Death God}. A black smoke formed on top of the boss character but was immediately repelled.

Zhang Yang had failed to cast the {Glare of the Death God}.

"Hmm...Humans, Beastmans, Elves, Dwarves...You are nothing but insects to me. You wish to fight me?" Hachilles mused and unsheathed a large blade from his back and struck a large boulder in front of him to display his powers. The rock was completely smashed into tiny pieces, and even the air around him was being blasted away.

"Come and fight me then. It's been a while since I last tasted the meat of humans and elves."

Chapter 602: Hachilles

Hachilles waved his left hand up at the sky. Countless meteor rocks suddenly appeared out of nowhere and rained terror upon the players on the ground!

‘-50000!’

‘-50000!’

As the meteor rocks came crashing down, everyone received massive damage. Furthermore, the meteor rain did not stop after one wave of attack, it continued to spread terror upon the ground! It was as wide as 10 X 10 meters. That surface area was rather vast, even for an AoE attack!

Such was the boss’s {Meteor Reign}. The Skill would aim at three different spots at a time and cause 50,000 Fire Damage per second. Targets within the effective range of the meteor attacks would receive five strikes. Most of the normal players would be dead the moment they receive the third strike.

Crimson Rage was worthy to called one of the top Tier guilds in the entire China Region. However, not all players from the guild were top Tier players. Although everyone was familiar with the boss’s Skill, with the meteor rocks were raining upon them, some of them froze for a split second and could not get clear of the danger zone. Some of them were still be chanting their spells or firing their arrows at the boss! Those who had lesser HPs were killed after receiving two rounds of damage from the attacks. Those who had more HP would only last for an additional one or two hits before they too fall dead.

The players had started the battle on a bad note. The first wave from the boss had already taken out tens of players. The players who got killed immediately released their souls and began running back to their dead bodies to resurrect.

However, that did not matter much. It was not as if they were going to rely on their numbers to oppress the boss. When some players were killed, the players from the rear would fill in their place to battle against the

boss. Due to the limited range of the players, the 30-meter radius around the boss could only be occupied by as much as thousands of players. So there could only be so many players launching their assaults on the boss at the same time.

However, the boss was starting to use {Meteor Reign} at an increasing frequency. The first wave of {Meteor Reign} was followed closely by the second wave of {Meteor Reign}. The Skill picked another 3 spots at random. The ladies ran around dodging the attacks like chicken flying across the skies and dogs dancing around in a rain shower!

It was really annoying!

Bosses that could deal damage to one target at a time were not really scary. They could only kill one player at a time with their powerful Skills. However, bosses with extremely powerful AoE could spam their AoE attacks, killing many players in a shot! These are the truly troublesome bosses! Take too long to react, and you would be dead.

Although Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura} could increase everyone's Vitality attribute by 28%, the aura only covered a 30-meter radius. Those who were not within the effective area of the {Vitality Aura} would not be able to enjoy its effects. However, even if the {Vitality Aura} could cover the entire battlefield, it was only like the cherry on top of a pudding. It would not do much help for everyone. Death was guaranteed.

Even though Hachilles did not have any Skill that could deal a substantial amount of damage to one single target, his basic damage was monstrously high. Furthermore, the level of the boss was too high, causing the Level Gap Suppression function of the game to kick in. Therefore, the boss could deal 180,000 damage to Zhang Yang at best, and almost 650,000 damage at worst. Zhang Yang would never be able to sustain that amount of damage. So he had to rely on the dozens of Healers to remain alive. Furthermore, he also needed his {Shield Wall} to heal himself up. With those two conditions, Zhang Yang was safe from death.

"Only Zhan Yu can tank against such an amount of damage!" Mellow Venom muttered.

Endless Starlight stared at the pair of boobies that jiggled proudly atop her chest and drooled. He did not want to appear inferior in front of her and quickly spoke up, "With the high damage value that the boss deals to us, our equipment would only give us more HP. The equipment will not be able to provide any edge defense-wise. Even if it was us tanking against the boss, the amount damage we receive would be the same as the amount of damage my boss is receiving!"

Mellow Venom humphed and said, "It is obvious that HP is the key to tanking against this boss! So, how much HP would you have after you activate your {Inheritance Transformation}?"

"... I would only have about 80,000 HP without boss's {Vitality Aura}. If I get on my [Pet], I should have about 130,000 HP. If I activate my {King Kong Transformation}, I can boost my HP up by 20 times. By then, I should have about 2,600,000 HP!" Endless Starlight stated proudly.

Mellow Venom stared at Endless Starlight with scorn and said, "With the Level Gap Suppression function boosting the boss's damage by 5, you can only take 4 hits from the boss. Without any healing Skill that can heal your HP by its percentage, can you really heal yourself up quickly enough to stay alive?"

Well, everything she said was right. It would not be possible for Endless Starlight to heal himself up under those circumstances! However, when in danger, Starlight could let other Guardians use {Sacrifice} on him. Although those who use {Sacrifice} on him would definitely be sacrificed, literally, that would buy enough time for the healers to heal Starlight back up.

Everyone was able to know about the special tactic for tanking a boss because Zhang Yang had told them about the cowardly Liu Wei. As long as they had enough Guardians around, the Guardian who is tanking against the boss would be completely protected from one solid hit, even if the sacrificial Guardian's equipment is not that great! Furthermore, Guardians could also activate their {Shield Wall} and their {Sacrifice} at the same instant. They might just earn enough time for the Guardian on the front line to be invincible for 5 seconds!

A dungeon would have a limit on the number of players that could enter. So, it was not possible for a party to bring in so many Guardians into the dungeon. However, the circumstances were a lot more different when challenging a boss in an Open World Map! There was no limitation on the number of players that could join the battle. As long as players could reach out, it would not matter if there were 100,000 or 200,000 players joining the boss battle. Even if the number of players got up to 2,000,000 or 20,000,000, nothing would stop them from attacking!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, the Japan-Korea Region had sent over 1,000,000 players to challenge a Level 190 Ascended Tier boss named 'The Lich King Auwheila'. They had etched themselves on the world records for having the most players joined a boss battle in all of history! Unfortunately, even though they had the numbers, the entire army was taken out in no time.

That boss had a Skill that could turn every single one of the players that he killed into an elite Tier Skeleton Soldier monster! Furthermore, the AoE skill of the boss was extremely powerful and deadly! As the battle went on, more Skeleton Soldiers sprouted up. In just a short moment, the players were 'drowned' by the massive army of Skeleton Soldiers!

The more interesting thing about that boss battle was that there were a few players from China Region who had been lying in wait. When the players of Japan-Korea Region were wiped out, they revealed themselves and kited the boss over to the nearby Territory of the Japan-Korea Region! By the end of it, Auwheila led her army of Skeleton Soldiers over to the Territory and leveled down the Territory of the Japan-Korea Region in an instant! The boss was performing like a Celestial Tier boss! Upon the annihilation of the Territory and its people, the boss had remained in the vicinity, wandering about with no intentions of leaving!

In the end, the Territory was seized by the boss for over half a month. The players of Japan-Korea Region could only ask for help from the Officials. However, there were no GMs in the 'God's Miracle'. The Officials could only take the server offline to send the boss back to where it came from. Well, that had also created another record in the history of

the game.

That was way too outrageous!

However, the difficulty of facing a boss in an Open World Map did not depend on whether the Tankers could survive. That difficulty would actually be based on how powerful the boss's AoE attack be, and how the players would nullify that threat!

Truth to be told, even if Hachilles had no tank distracting him, he only had one other AoE Skill, the {Shadow Cleave}. He would still hit several players at once. However, the boss' {Meteor Reign} could not be tanked by anyone. The meteor rain attacks would just rain hell upon the players, no matter what. Tactics worked on Dungeon bosses, but not Open world bosses.

Endless Starlight realized that if a woman was interested in you, she would accept and even agree on every word that you spout. However, if a woman hates you, she would only feel irritated, even if you try to praise her with all the sweet words that heaven could offer.

Therefore, he knew it was time to back off. He ended the argument by saying, "As long as the death rate can be reined in, we should stand a chance taking this boss down!"

However, the boss also had {Devilish Tenacity} to recover 100,000 HP every second. Furthermore, the boss would not be affected by {Destructive Smash} when the effect of {Devilish Tenacity} is activated. Although the boss was losing more HP than he could recover, it was only because of Zhang Yang, Lost Dream, Galileo and other players of Crimson Rage being in their {Inheritance Transformation} forms. They were on steroids for the moment. Once the two hours pass, everyone would turn back to mere mortals. Their damage output would plummet.

By then, the boss would be regaining his HP. Zhang Yang and the ladies would have to spend 5 hours, 10 hours, or even a day or two before they can empty out the HP of the boss! Meanwhile, the bodies of the players were not made of steel. A long battle could exhaust a player's mind, causing them to lose focus. They also needed sustenance like water and

food.

Only those players who were used to 'soaking' themselves in the game server would be able to endure such a long battle. As for other players, they would need to take turns resting. They might simply snap or drop dead if they do not so.

The Crimson Rage only had over 5,000 players in this boss battle. The {Meteor Reign} of the boss could really kill a lot of players each time it struck! There were about 10 casualties every second! That meant about 600 players dying in each passing minute! Furthermore, the dead players would need 9 minutes to run all the way back to their own dead bodies to resurrect. Then, they would need about another minute to take [Snacks] and recover their HP. Therefore, it would take about 10 minutes for them to get back into the boss battle at the moment of death.

If they really want to kill the boss, they would need to maintain their deaths per minute down to 500 players in order to form an effective attack cycle. Otherwise, the party would only have one choice left, to be destroyed and try again. Other than that, among the 500 players that took part in the boss battle, many of them were Healers. It would be great if each of the DPS players could deal about 400 damage per second!

Suppressed by the Level Gap Suppression of the boss, the total damage that the entire party could deal on the boss was only about 100,000+ damage per second. With the boss being able to recover 100,000 HP each second, the damage that got past that superpowered regeneration was about 10,000+. When the 2-hour duration of the {Inheritance Transformation} expires, the total damage that the players could deal to the boss would become even lower!

"Hahaha! You imbeciles! Eat my blade!"

"You bunch of girly imbeciles! Just die already!"

"You flimsy imbeciles! Tremble before the great demon!"

Hachilles continued taunting them. He whirled, whipping the blade out of his back like a lively dragon. He would strike with the shadows of blade from time to time. Upon successful stunning Zhang Yang occasionally, the

boss would turn around and attack the other players, including those who had activated their {Inheritance Transformations}.

Fortunately, the {Shadow Cleave} could only be activated once every 30 seconds. Zhang Yang could immunize himself from the attacks of {Shadow Cleave} by activating his {Warrior's Will}. The boss would only turn around once in every 60 seconds. Players with their {Inheritance Transformations} activated had no problem at all in taking the Skill head on. As long as Priests and the Holy Knights could activate their {Dispel}, the boss would turn his attention back to Zhang Yang. So the players did not have any big problems in handling the boss.

In just a blink of an eye, an hour had passed. The HP of the boss had dropped down to 68%. Zhang Yang attempted to cast the {Glare of the Death God} for the second time --- and it was resisted as well!

How unfortunate that was!

"Little Yang, I've told you this many times over! You must wash your hands after you're done with the big ones in the toilet! Why have you not listened to me? Not even once!" Fatty Han was very distressed about it, blaming Zhang Yang for not washing his hands right after going to the toilet.

"Ayyyyy!" the pretty ladies who overheard what Fatty Han said were disgusted and glared at him altogether.

"You f*cking fatso! Can't you just keep your mouth shut once in a while?" Zhang Yang grit his teeth. Everyone could not avoid having one or two of such friends, after all.

"Hahaha! Let me tell you about something that I encountered yesterday!" Fatty han was well known for his 'bragging' attitude. He would become merrier when there are more people around him. He said, "Yesterday when I and Xiao Wei went out to buy some groceries, our car tyre got punctured because some idiot decided to put nails on the road! So we had to call for the tow-truck. After putting the car at the workshop for repair, we had to take the bus back to our place. There were no seats available for us. So I had to let Xiao Wei lean on my meaty body!"

"You wretched fatso! Are you really so bored that you would even talk about this?"

"What the f*ck! No! That's not my main point yet! Patience! So I was being really patient and aware of the surroundings as I was listening to the people all around to see if we could get a seat for ourselves. There was a family of three on the bus. They were seated nicely. But their child couldn't wait to get off. So, his mother told him that they would get down at the next stop! I was happy to hear it. So we squeezed our way through to the end of the bus. We thought that we could finally get ourselves a seat! But who would have guessed it... that mother kept repeating the same answer every time the child made some noise about getting off the bus! We went through 7 stops and the mother was still saying the same thing to her child! They were still on the bus when both of us got down! Parents really do love to trick their children... and they've tricked me as well!"

Everyone laughed after hearing what he had to say. This wretched fatty was actually pretty good at making people laugh.

Another hour had passed, and the duration of Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} was finally over. So he quickly said, "It's time for you to take over, Mellow Venom!"

"Roger!"

The aggro value on Mellow Venom was slightly higher than the aggro value on Endless Starlight. It was natural that she would be next in line as tank. Endless Starlight would have to wait for her transformation to end before he steps up.

Upon activating her {Petrification Transformation} almost immediately, Mellow Venom was instantly covered in an extremely thick layer of white rocks. It looked like she had a second layer of armor that covered her entire body!

3, 2, 1!

The moment his {God of War Transformation} ended, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage.

The amount of aggro on Lost Dream and Hundred Shots were much higher than the amount of aggro that Mellow Venom had, as they had activated their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills. The moment Zhang Yang disengaged from the battle, Hachilles did not attack Mellow Venom. The boss turned his attention over to Galileo instead --- Thieves could use {Vanish} while Hunters could fake their deaths to clear out the amount of aggro on them. However, Berserkers could only stay there and accept their doom.

Fortunately, their {Inheritance Transformations} had expired. So, it did not matter if they die. They could just release their souls and come back to their dead bodies to resurrect themselves. Then, they could simply resume battle.

When the boss had killed all three players with {Inheritance Transformation}, the boss finally turned over to Mellow Venom. The transitioning of the next tank had finally taken place.

Zhang Yang came out from the void dimension and threw the third {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss.

A dark skull began to form right on top of the boss. It was a terrifying grin!

Finally! It was a successful one!

400 players striking a boss at the same time was no joke! The moment the Special Effect of the {Glare of the Death God} kicked in, the boss began to receive '-3,000,000!' damage repeatedly within a very short period of time! In less than 2 seconds, all 10 available strikes of the special effect had been used up completely.

The total amount of Hachilles's HP had dropped down to 28%!

"Huh? What happened? How did the boss lose so much HP all of a sudden?!"

"What just happened?"

"I saw that many of us caused about 350,000 damage to the boss in one split second!"

"It wasn't 350,000 damage, it was 3,500,000 damage!"

The ladies from Crimson Rage were not aware of the Special Effect that {Glare of the Death God} could provide. They were very shocked.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, what Skill was that?" Snow Seeker was a professional player who possessed heavenly skills. She truly had sharp senses. She had noticed Zhang Yang's minute movements the moment that 'miracle' occurred.

Zhang Yang nodded, and showed the description of the {Glare of the Death God} to Snow Seeker.

"Szz---" Snow Seeker took in a breath of air after seeing the description of the Skill. So that was the ultimate Skill that Zhang Yang has been using to slay bosses! She immediately said, "Is this the Skill that was dropped by the final boss you slew back then to complete your Class S [Inheritance] quest?"

The officials had stated it with crystal clarity. The final boss for the Class S [Inheritance] quest would drop a [Skill Book] upon being slain. If players were to slay the boss without accepting that particular Inheritance quest, the boss would not drop that sort of additional reward. Even then, such rewards only occur once when they do.

"Guild master Snow is indeed wise. You got it right on your first guess!" Zhang Yang laughed.

Chapter 603: A Close Call

Even though Mellow Venom managed to take over as the tank against the boss, but the rate of reduction on the HP of the boss got even slower than before, without the support of the {Inheritance Transformations} of Zhang Yang and his gang of bros. Well, without the support of {Inheritance Transformations}, the total damage that they could deal on the boss reduced steeply.

Although the boss had taken all 10 of the {Glare of the Death God}'s Special Effects, the amount of HP the boss was still hanging around at 28%. The worst part of it was that no matter how hard they tried, the HP level of the boss was not moving at all. Everyone was feeling fatigued.

"I'm definitely not going to fight a boss with a Level Gap Suppression ever again!" Fatty Han had been repeating his words so many times that people have lost count of it.

"Then, just grind your level up as quickly as you can!" Zhang Yang told Fatty Han. He even hoped that Fatty Han would quickly get the Class quest and get a Phoenix Pet as soon as possible. However, Fatty Han must be Level 120 before he could do that.

"Sigh! Now that I have a home and a wife to take care of, I can't just play the game the entire day! I need to accompany my wife! More importantly, I need to spare some effort on my waist to create my next generation and serve my country! Where can I get so much time to grind my level, then?" Fatty Han was being exaggerated.

"Then, just delete your account!"

"Hehe! I was just being emotional for one moment back there. Why are you reacting so much?"

The Defense of Mellow Venom had been boosted up by 10 times upon activating her {Pertrification Transformation}. That amount of Defense was 5 times higher than the Defense of Zhang Yang while he was in his {God of War Transformation} mode. However, the Attack of Mellow Venom was increased by 100% while she was in her {Pertrification

Transformation} form. It was a measure of balancing the oppressiveness of the {Petrification Inheritance}. The increment was not the same as the players with Class B [Inheritance] where they would get a 200% boost on their attributes.

Unfortunately, Mellow Venom only had one Mythical Tier equipment currently, other than an entire set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. She did not have a shield which appeared to boost most of the Defense attribute of a player. So her basic Defense attribute was only 2,900. Upon boosting it up by 10 %, she would only have as much as 29,000 Defense. Although that amount of Defense was a little higher than the Defense of Zhang Yang in his {God of War Transformation} form, but she would still be helpless when she is up against the oppressive power of the boss that had over millions of Damage attribute. The only attribute that would really minimize the damage she received would be the 20% Passive Damage Immunity that she had as a Guardian.

Furthermore, Class B {Inheritance Transformation} could only boost the Maximum HP of the player by 20 times. She could only increase her total amount of HP up to about 2,000,000 HP. Even though that amount of HP seemed to be abundant, that amount of HP would not hold for long if the boss keeps attacking her with 5-time Level Gap Suppression effects. The margin of error and the margin of safety that she had was far lower, compared to Zhang Yang.

Every single one of the Healer on the party was haunted by fear as they were fully focused on maintaining the HP level of Mellow Venom. A few Guardians were standing by to throw their {Sacrifice} on her in order to reduce as much stress on her as possible.

It was a necessary means because Mellow Venom could not heal like Zhang Yang always dose. The amount of HP she could recover upon activating her {Petrification Transformation} was not enough to cover for the amount of HP she was losing. Briefly after engaging with the boss, her Hp had dropped below 20%. That was the moment she urgently needed {Sacrifice} from the Guardians. Meanwhile, she had also activated her {Shield Wall} to slow down the rate of reduction on her HP. If she was

lucky enough not to receive a damage that had 5-time Level Gap Suppression effect, the Tanker who uses {Sacrifice} on her, right after the 5-second gap would still be alive!

The battle proceeded on rough waters. Although the firepower of the party was quite limited and their number was decreasing constantly, they were not wiped out. They were still hanging on while working their *sses off to reduce the boss's HP. Though the rate of HP reduced on the boss was excruciatingly slow, but they were making progress, at least.

Another hour had passed, the amount of the boss's HP had finally dropped down to 20%!

Zhang Yang quickly threw another {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss --- resisted!

Everyone was hoping that Zhang Yang would pull out some sort of miracle. However, they were very disappointed when they saw the word 'Resisted' popping out on top of the boss. Fatty Han sneered at Zhang Yang as he said some nonsense, trying to ridicule Zhang Yang for his failed attempt. Zhang Yang could not help himself but think about sewing that fatso's mouth up to shut him up for good.

Although the {Glare of the Death God} had been resisted, the remaining HP of the boss was below 20% at the moment. It was time to activate their 'Killing Cleave' Skills!

Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Indiscriminate}, closely followed by his {Killing Cleave} on the boss. He caused about 60,000 damage on the boss. That amount of damage hyped up the others the moment when they saw the damage value that popped out on top of the boss.

Without any pause in between, he continued to activate his {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash}. When he ran out of Skills to use, Zhang Yang threw {Cripple Defense} onto the boss. With him being able to use a two-handed weapon, {Cripple Defense} could boost Zhang Yang's basic damage up to a range of 15,256 - 17,528. That amount of damage had exceeded the damage that 99% of the normal Tankers could deal!

Upon using his {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang was able to use his

{Killing Cleave} 5 seconds earlier than before, Normally, Zhang Yang could only activate his {Killing Cleave} once every 20 seconds. Warrior Class players like Galileo and Mellow Venom could not help themselves but feel amazed when they realized that.

"Guildmaster, how can the cooldown for your {Killing Cleave} be only 20 seconds long?" the young Galileo could no longer resist as he asked.

"That's because I acquired a Skill that enhances my {Cripple Defense}!" Zhang Yang posted the description for {Superior Cripple Defense} on the party chat for everyone to see.

"How strange. It's called {Superior Cripple Defense} and yet it shortens the cooldown duration of {Killing Cleave}?" Fatty Han was shaking his head while he sighed.

Everyone was determined to ignore that wretched fatso as everyone knew that the fatso was the type of guy who would stir up trouble out of nothing. Trying to 'entertain' him would be like smashing your own head against the door until your skull breaks.

After a series of explosive attacks, the HP of the boss was beginning to reduce a little faster than before. However, that was only for a short moment. After all, there was a cooldown on each of the 'Killing Cleave' Skills. It would be impossible for them to use their Skills repeatedly without any pause.

Another one hour had passed, the {Pertrification Transformation} of Mellow Venom had expired. Endless Starlight immediately activated his {King Kong Transformation} as he transformed himself into a gigantic King Kong. He roared in anger like a King Kong, tapped his chest repeatedly like a King Kong, and charged towards the boss like a raging King Kong!

Upon seeing the appearance and behavior of Endless Starlight, the ladies were shocked and stunned at first. Then, they began to giggle as they could no longer hold their laughter in.

Endless Starlight could not help but feel conflicted with rage and sorrow at the same time. He tapped his chest repeatedly with his hands and

roared like a King Kong again. Everyone laughed even harder.

Zhang Yang felt a twitch on his face. He recalled back in his previous life that many around him laughed as well upon seeing him turning into a King Kong. After all, this {King Kong Transformation} was a little f*cked up. It could actually turn a player into a real King Kong! If this King Kong was to try hooking up with a female King Kong in the jungle, surely it would be a successful one!

Mellow Venom had no {Shadow of the Void} to remove herself from the aggro of boss. So the moment when her {Petrification Transformation} was over, she was smashed to jelly and turned into a stream of white light traveling back to the Graveyard. However, it did not bother her at all, since she had done her job. It would not mean much, as her {Inheritance Transformation} was over.

The {King Kong Transformation} was quite a powerful force. The hammer on his right hand and the shield on his left hand were fused into his body. Endless Starlight was having a good time throwing punches and kicks at the boss. He could even block the attacks of the boss with his left hand like he was wielding a shield. The melee battle between the boss and the King Kong Starlight looked very wild indeed. The frequent bloodshed had made the scene seem unusually brutal and bloody.

"King Kong Ohn Nom Nom!" Endless Starlight suddenly let out a roar as he suddenly leaped on the boss. While he was in midair, Starlight locked the throat of Hachilles with his legs and hugged the head of the boss with his two arms. The next thing he did was to open his mouth wide open and mounded the head of the boss.

"That brat!" Zhang Yang could no longer hold his urge to laugh as he burst into laughter and shook his head. That was the ultimate Skill that only the [King Kong Inheritance] could provide. It was called {Blood Feed}. It could suck 1% of the target's HP in every second and recover the HP of the user by 5 the amount of HP being sucked. However, the amount of damage dealt to the target would not exceed 20,000 points. The Skill would only last for 10 seconds without any interruption.

That was the ultimate life-saving of the [King Kong Inheritance]. However, the fact that Starlight had named the Skill {King Kong Om Nom Nom} instead had caused Zhang Yang to become speechless over it.

However, the Skill was very effective! The HP bar of Endless Starlight was recovering at a rapid rate, while the boss had lost over 200,000 HP.

Though the [King Kong Inheritance] could not be compared to the [Petrification Inheritance] in term of Defense, it triumphed over the [Petrification Inheritance] in terms of Attack. Furthermore, the [Inheritance] itself also provided its owner a convenient life-saving Skill that made it a good Class B [Inheritance].

However, a Defender only had 15% Physical Damage Immunity. Bosses with Level Gap Suppression effect such as Hachilles would have an extremely high amount of HP. So 5% difference in the Physical Damage Immune would be around 50,000HP. Therefore, the Healers were very stressed up. Snow Seeker had to send a few Guardians to the front line to stand by with their {Sacrifice} in order to stabilize the situation of the battle.

The cooldown of the {Glare of the Death God} was over once again. However, it was another failed attempt that let everyone down. The Skill was resisted by the boss once again!

"The boss still has 11% HP left. Judging from the total damage that we all can deal on the boss, we only managed to reduce about 8% to 9% HP of the boss. In an hour, we won't have any players with {Inheritance Transformations} left to support us!" Snow Seeker was extremely concerned.

The Warriors could chain up their {Sacrifice} to form a continuous link life-saving Skill. However, it would require 12 Warriors that could 'synchronize' themselves in their performance on that task. Under the flurry of attacks by the boss, one split moment of delay between the activation of the Skills that would break the Skill link and cause the Tanker to be instantly killed. It was just too risky to rely on that strategy!

Zhang Yang nodded to express his agreement, then he said, "Let's hope

that the next {Glare of the Death God} will not be resisted!"

"Let's!"

9%, 8%, 7%...

The HP of the boss was getting lesser in every passing second. However, the {King Kong Transformation} of Endless Starlight was nearing its end!

When the boss had only 3% HP left, Endless Starlight suddenly quivered, as his gigantic body began to shrink back to his humanoid form --- the duration of his {King Kong Transformation} was over!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

Instantly, three {Sacrifice} were thrown onto Endless Starlight. However, only one of it was effective on him while the other 2 {Sacrifice} faded away with waste.

"You weaklings! Filthy humans! I will end you!" the eyes of Hachilles turned red as he was on the verge of being killed. The boss was so infuriated he had lost all of his senses as he roared thunderously while whirling his weapon around.

"Little Yang! Remember to wash your hands!" Fatty Han suddenly shouted and said something that annoyed everyone.

"F*ck off!" Zhang Yang took in a deep breath and threw the {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss.

Just when everyone was praying hard that the Skill would not be resisted, a dark skull which had a terrifying smile formed right on top of the boss.

It was a successful attempt!

The party was cheering in joy as they launched their final wave of assaults onto the boss. In only 1 second, they had triggered the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} 10 times! The boss could not even say anything before he was killed. He just collapsed onto the ground with a groan and died.

"Finally! We made it!"

The lady army was cheering in tears of joy as they hugged each other. Some of them even started kissing in excitement!

Fatty Han was feeling envious of what he saw before him. There was no one beside him at all for him to take advantage of. The ladies were hugging and cheering around in either pairs or groups. Only Endless Starlight was smiling at him like an idiot. A man smiling at you like an idiot? Fatty Han could not help but feel his anus tensing up. He quickly turned around and looked at other direction.

"Guild mater Zhan Yu ---" Perfumed Water pulled White Orchid, Mellow Venom and Thorny Rose along with her. They charged towards Zhang Yang and grabbed hold of Zhang Yang as each of them gave Zhang Yang a sweet kiss.

"Wu wu wu --- We're all men and the way that we are being treated is so different!" Fatty Han filled his eyes and cheeks with tears as he squatted at a corner, drawing circles with his finger.

"Brother fatty, just remember that you still have me!" Endless Starlight was staring at Fatty Han with 'love'.

"F*ck off!"

Chapter 604: Armor Piercing Potion

Perfumed Water, White Orchid and the other ladies around Zhang Yang were renowned models under the employment of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. All of them had pretty faces and hot, voluptuous bodies. Most men would fall under the spell of their pretty faces and their hot, spicy bodies while being smothered by these bombshells. But not Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang humphed and said, "It's futile to use seduction on me! I'm still getting my part of the loot!"

"Tsk!"

Thorny Rose, White Orchid and the ladies immediately let go of him. However, Perfumed Water was still touching Zhang Yang from head to toe. Zhang Yang was annoyed. So he picked Perfumed Water up by the scruff of her collar like a lost cat and brought her to Snow Seeker. Then, he shoved Perfumed Water right into the arms of Snow Seeker.

Perfumed Water was an 'omnivore'. She immediately hugged Snow Seeker with all four limbs the moment she was in Snow Seeker's arms. She reached out her demonic hands for a quick grope and started molding the pair of mountains underneath Snow Seeker's white robe. She squeezed so hard that the shape of her boobies were shifting randomly. Zhang Yang felt a heat rushing up to his head as he witnessed it.

"Perfumed Water! How could you take advantage of Sister Snow all by yourself! You were supposed to seduce Zhan Yu!" Thorny Rose quickly removed Perfumed Water from the body of Snow Seeker.

"That's right! How dare you throw yourself onto Sister Snow!"

The ladies expressed their fury at Perfumed Water for taking advantage of grabbing the boobies of Snow Seeker.

Zhang Yang quickly cut in and said, "Guildmaster Snow, it's about time to look over the loot!"

Snow Seeker let out a sigh. As a guildmaster, she should place the members of her guild before others. She did not mind her ladies seducing

Zhang Yang as long as they stood a chance at influencing Zhang Yang to give up on taking a piece of the loots.

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang did not fall for their seduction, at all.

So she walked up to the dead boss and set out the loots that were dropped by the boss in order.

Hachilles dropped two Ethereal Tier equipment. One of the equipment was a hat while the other one was a Physical-type ring. Both types of equipment were Level 150. This equipment could be equipped by the players upon reaching Level 130. The other 3 Mythical Tier equipment were also Level 150 equipment. However, players would only be able to equip them upon reaching Level 150.

Other than that, there was also one [Skill Point Crystal], one [Pet Skill Book] and one [Alchemist's Recipe].

"Wow! What a jackpot!" Zhang Yang said.

The Skill Point Crystal could give the player who swallows it one additional Skill Point. Zhang Yang did not expect it to be dropped by a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss.

Snow Seeker smiled at Zhang Yang and said, "Let's see. Guildmaster Zhan Yu can have the three Mythical Tier equipment. You will earn a fortune with them!"

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at Snow Seeker. The three Mythical equipment could only be equipped upon reaching Level 150. It would be a crime to accept that offer because the loss would be disastrous! When players reach Level 150, they would already be looking at Ethereal Tier equipment. The value of Mythical Tier equipment would be 'degraded' to the current value of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment by then. Who would be stupid enough to accept that offer?

Zhang Yang only laughed over it. He did not look at the two Ethereal Tier equipment either. He only had eyes for the [Pet Skill Book] and the [Alchemist's Recipe].

--- equipment could be acquired by challenging more bosses in the

future. However, [Pet Skill Books] and [Alchemist's Recipes] were extremely hard to come by. Once you miss it, there might not be another chance to get the same ones again. If either [Pet Skill Book] or the [Alchemist's Recipe] is a Special item that would only drop once in the entire game, Zhang Yang would pick one out of the two. Otherwise, he would be picking the [Skill Point Crystal] instead. The equipment would be his last choice.

In a nutshell, the best loot that a super boss could drop would be a [Skill Book], an [Alchemist's Recipe] or something along those lines.

The name of the [Pet Skill Book] was 'Self Sacrifice'. Everyone should be able to guess what the Skill could do by looking at the name: This was a type of Skill similar to {Sacrifice}. All damage received by the owner within 5 seconds would be transferred to the pet.

The Skill would prove to be very useful in the arena and the Open World Map while battling other players. Players could save their own lives with this Skill.

On the other hand, the [Alchemist's Recipe] was the 'Armor Piercing Potion'. Zhang Yang could remember clearly that the effect of this potion allowed players who used it to ignore 10% Defense of their target for a certain duration of time.

"I shall take the [Alchemist's Recipe] then!" Zhang Yang pointed at the recipe.

The effects of the potion could be stacked together with the effect of {Cripple Defense}. Although that did not really aid Zhang Yang as he already had {Eagle Eye}, it would certainly help his party members increase their Physical Damage output! Furthermore, the amount of Defense that is being ignored was based on percentage ratio. The higher the Defense of the monster or the boss they encounter, the higher the Defense they could ignore upon consuming the potion. That 10% of Defense could mean 1,000 Defense, 2,000 Defense, or it could even mean up to tens of thousands of Defense points!

Each attack of the players could be increased by 1,000 to 2,000 damage

upon using the potion. Furthermore, the effects of the potion would depend on the amount of the target's Defense. That alone was already much more practical than having some powerful equipment.

Other than that, Zhang Yang had the {Alchemist's Intuition}. He might be able to increase the percentage of Defense ignored up to 20%, 30%. It would be great if that was possible.

In Zhang Yang's previous life, this potion was deemed to be one of the Special items that could determine victory or defeat against powerful bosses. The cost of making one [Armor Piercing Potion] was only one gold coin. However, because of its practicality and rarity, one [Armor Piercing Potion] could be sold at the price of 100 gold coins at the very least! This recipe would really become a gold mine for Zhang Yang.

As the effects of the 'Armor Piercing Potion' was not mentioned in its description, Snow Seeker did not understand why Zhang Yang would be so persistent in getting that recipe. However, she understood enough to know that the recipe had to be extremely rare and valuable. That was why Zhang Yang would even pass up on a Skill Point!

However, she still gave the recipe up to Zhang Yang. The reason was simple. Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage had a good relationship that is never seen in any other two guilds. If Zhang Yang gets to making the potions, he would definitely share the potion with them. Even if Zhang Yang might not do it for free, but he could still be persuaded to do it if he was provided the materials.

Therefore, Snow Seeker had also hoped that Zhang Yang would take the recipe instead of taking other loots. It would still be like giving the recipe to one of their own Alchemist players.

According to their previous arrangement, Zhang Yang could only choose one among the loots without any conditions. The rest of the loot would be taken by Crimson Rage. In a very brief moment, the loot were distributed among the members of Crimson Rage. Meanwhile, the player who acquired the [Demon Summoner Inheritance] was White Orchid, one of Crimson Rage's best Priests.

This Priest would be an absolute monster in combat.

"Little Yang, why didn't you take the [Skill Point Crystal] instead? You could have gotten another Skill Point for free!" Fatty Han spoke in a sad tone.

Lost Dreams and the others did not say a word about it. They believed that Zhang Yang had his own reasons for doing so.

Zhang Yang laughed. Then he quickly tapped the recipe on himself and learned the recipe without any hesitation. Then he said, "The [Skill Point Crystal] can only benefit one person while the potions that I can make out of the recipe I just learned can benefit everyone just by taking the potions!"

"That's really awesome!" Lost Dream immediately cheered and said, "Zhan Yu has {Alchemist's Intuition} as well. So he can make high grade transmuted potions. That should give us better effects in ignoring Defense of our target!"

"Yes! Now, this is what I call a good fortune!" Hundred Shots nodded as well.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "We did earn a fortune for ourselves, but the Crimson Rage did not lose anything as well. If they bring us the materials for making the potion, I would have to fulfill their request as well, right?"

"Hehe! You can make the potion for them, but we can keep the potions with higher transmutation grade!"

"That's right! {Alchemist's Intuition} is your specialty, boss! No matter how much materials they are giving us, we shall only give them potions without any transmuted effects! We shall keep all transmuted potions for ourselves!"

Zhang Yang and his gang had begun discussing on how to get 'profit' by exploiting Crimson Rage. Fatty Han became impatient over it. He went on and posted the link to the description of the [Armor Penetrating Potion] over to Snow Seeker and her ladies. He was trying to get them to gather

materials for making the potions.

As expected, Snow Seeker was very eager to gather the materials the moment she saw the description of the [Armor Piercing Potion]. However, she was well aware that it would be almost impossible to buy such a rare and valuable potion. Therefore, she quickly made an arrangement with Zhang Yang as she promised to bring Zhang Yang the required materials before Zhang Yang would make the potions for Crimson Rage. Zhang Yang accepted the offer, of course. He could let Crimson Rage owe him a favor while taking advantage of them.

After done distributing the remaining loots, everyone left the place by using their [Teleportation Scrolls]. Zhang Yang went straight to the bank. He took out all of the [Herbs] from his warehouse according to the recipe for the [Armor Piercing Potion]. Then, he went over to the Alchemist Shop to purchase some potion bottles in order to begin making the potions.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had help from his Herb Foraging Familiar in gathering [Herbs]. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had been to Level 150 maps several times over without having to worry about his Herb Foraging Familiar being attacked by monsters. The Herb Foraging Familiar could even gather [Herbs] across Level 300 maps like the place was its own --- of course, Zhang Yang had to bring his Herb Foraging Familiar to those locations first in order for it to do its job.

There were many high grade [Herbs] in Zhang Yang's warehouse. Normally, he would just make some rare potions whenever he was free. Then, he would sell the potions to earn some quick money. Truth be told, the amount of money he could earn by selling potions was astoundingly high. He was able to become rich all because of his potion sales ever since the start of the game.

'Ding! You have made [Armor Piercing Potion] x10!'

'Ding! You have made [Armor Piercing Potion] x10!'

With the support of his Herb Foraging Familiar, the Alchemist profession of Zhang Yang had attained the highest grade, Grandmaster. So he could make 10 potions at a time, making him even more efficient than

he already was.

‘Ding! You have made [Armor Piercing Potion] x10! Due to Alchemist's Intuition, [Armor Piercing Potion] has been transmuted!’

The rate of [Armor Piercing Potion] of undergoing Transmutation was extremely low. The first transmutation only occurred after the 7th attempt.

[Armor Piercing Potion (Grade 4 Transmutation)] (Consumable)

Use: Your Physical Attack can ignore 14% Defense of the target. Can be stacked together with {Cripple Defense}. Lasts for 1 hour.

Required Level: 100

Based on this perspective, the [Armor Piercing Potion] with the highest Transmutation Grade could provide the user the ability to ignore 20% Defense of the target. The potion would really increase the damage output efficiency of the Physical-type players.

Zhang Yang was satisfied with the outcome of it as he continued to make more potions. One hour later, he used up warehouse's supply of materials that would be needed for making the [Armor Piercing Potion]. However, Snow Seeker came tripping down on him with 5,000 sets of materials just when he was about to call it a day.

Zhang Yang could make 10 bottles of [Armor Piercing Potions] at a time. 5,000 materials would take him 500 seconds to run through. It only took him roughly 8 minutes before he cleared out the materials from Snow Seeker. After some pestering and coaxing from Snow Seeker, Zhang Yang finally agreed to part with 5,100 [Armor Piercing Potions]. Zhang Yang had over 26 points of Luck. The Luck Attribute would grant players a certain chance of getting more than the initially projected amount of products. With 26 Luck, he had a 2.6% chance of producing additional potions. He should be able to turn 5,000 sets of materials into 5,130 bottles of [Armor Piercing Potions].

Therefore, Zhang Yang should be able to keep the remaining 30 bottles as his own reward for making the potions for Snow Seeker.

However, the rate of 2.6% was just in theory. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang only managed to make 93 extra bottles. So he had to give away 7 bottles of his own to Snow Seeker.

Fortunately, there was only about 20% of the 5,093 bottles of [Armor Piercing Potion] that had undergone transmutation. Of course, Zhang Yang would not reveal the truth to Snow Seeker that he had replaced all of the transmuted potions with those that had not been transmuted before handing them over to her. Snow Seeker thought she had taken advantage of Zhang Yang. She did not know that Zhang Yang had concealed his 'evil' scheme right behind that bitter smile of his.

An unpleasant part of a pleasant thing was that the materials deposited in the warehouse of Crimson Rage were too little for him to take advantage of them. 5,000 sets of materials was only a small number, as compared to Zhang Yang's 40,000 sets of materials that he gathered all by himself.

It would make perfect sense, when Zhang Yang had a god-like Herb Foraging Familiar. His Herb Foraging Familiar could just ignore the level of the maps as it goes out gathering the herbs. Therefore, the good little helper had no problem at all in gathering herbs and materials from high-level maps. On the other hand, the players from Crimson Rage had gone through heaven and hell just to gather half the number of the 5,000 sets of materials. Meanwhile, the other remaining half of the 5,000 sets of materials were most probably obtained from the Auction House via auctions.

From that point of view, it was too good to be true for Zhang Yang to have a Herb Foraging Familiar.

Chapter 605: Finding Alice

Zhang Yang divided the total number of [Armor Piercing Potion] that he made into two equal portions. Naturally, he kept all the [Armor Piercing Potion] that had gone through Transmutation for his own use. Then, he equally split the number of [Armor Piercing Potion] without going through Transmutation into two portions. Half of it was reserved for his own normal guild members. Whoever wanted to use the potions should accumulate guild points in exchange for the potions. The other half of the [Armor Piercing Potions] were placed on the shelves at his Little Merchandize Shop, ready for sale.

Not long after he placed the potions on the shelves, Zhang Yang received private messages from Amber Sunset, Sky High, Radiance and other guilds. They were all requesting for Zhang Yang to sell the potions to them. Some of them even wanted to make an arrangement with Zhang Yang saying that they were willing to provide materials for making the potions. In return, Zhang Yang would have to make the potions for them.

The opportunities for Zhang Yang to take advantage of them over the 'deal' had presented themselves. However, Zhang Yang did not reply them immediately. Instead, he tried to find some excuses to reject them, because he wanted to grind his level as quickly as possible. He would not have any time to spare at all if he wanted to focus on grinding up his level. However, these guildmasters decided to give Zhang Yang an even more appealing offer at the end of it. They were willing to give Zhang Yang 10 gold piece for each bottle he makes for them as a compensation for his trouble.

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang would not really mind about such little small amount of money. However, how would one reject a free gift when it is already being placed right in their hands? Furthermore, the main purpose would be swiping the transmuted [Armor Piercing Potions] into his own pockets, upon making the potions for the other guilds. So all he did was to pretend to reluctantly accept their offers.

Because Crimson Rage had purchased every single material for making

the [Armor Piercing Potions] in the market, Greensleeves Prince and the other guildmasters could no longer get the materials from the market. Although there were still some left in the warehouse, the amount was not enough at all.

They quickly sent their guild members with Herb Picking professions out to gather as much required materials as possible. They were only gathering the materials across the Level 120-150 map. Most of them were just walking by the outskirts of the map. If normal players were to encounter monsters that were Level 140 or Level 150, they would be as good as dead.

For the following days, Zhang Yang continued to grind his level and make some potions. He was living a good and relaxing life in the game. On the outside of the game, he could hug Han Ying Xue on his left and hug Sun Xin Yu on the right. Although the two ladies were still quarreling, Zhang Yang was considered a lucky bastard that could live a happy life with more than 1 sexual partner in his life! Well, the downside of it was that he would feel his 'little brother' being overly exhausted every time he was done with the two of them.

Word about the [Armor Piercing Potion] got out with a bang. The potion would serve as a powerful 'tool' to slay a boss. Many guildmasters went up to Zhang Yang with tons of materials and gold. They begged by any necessary means just to get Zhang Yang into making the potions for them. They even wanted to pay him a substantial amount of fortune just to get Zhang Yang to do it for them. Fatty Han could not help but laugh at them quietly, saying that these people were 'whoring' around with Zhang Yang with money.

By the end of it, it only took about 7 to 8 days for Zhang Yang to earn over hundreds of millions of dollars just by making potions for the other guilds. Furthermore, he managed to secretly keep thousands of [Armor Piercing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] for himself. Zhang Yang and his gang were very happy with the outcome.

Zhang Yang had not wasted much time in making the potion as well. Because he had attained Grandmaster for his Alchemist profession. Zhang

Yang could make 10 potions in a row, making it possible for him to make 36,000 bottles of potion over an hour of time. Therefore, making millions of bottles would only take about 30 hours or more for him. It was only approximately half a day in the real time.

Currently, Zhang Yang was at Level 118. He was only two levels away from reaching Level 120. For normal players, it would take about 10 days to grind one level. However, with Zhang Yang's capability, he would only need about 7 to 8 days to grind for a level.

On one particular day, Zhang Yang had just set foot into his office and signed into the game before he was added to Han Ying Xue's party. Wei Yan Er was also in the same party.

"Yo! Why are you up so early today?" Zhang Yang could not accept the fact that the little brat woke up this early in the morning. Actually, ever since Wei Yan Er had gone to university, she had not been skipping classes. She would wake up early to join the classes early in the morning on Fridays. Therefore, she would usually sleep through the weekends.

Zhang Yang turned his head over and said, "Please don't tell me that the little brat did not brush her teeth again..."

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er gave him an honest smile without being courteous at all.

"Go brush your teeth now! Your breath smells!" Zhang Yang teased her on purpose.

"You bus tart! Stop bullying me whenever you see me! You better watch out, I might just go crazy on you!" Wei Yan Er flipped her eyes backward at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he was teasing the little brat. For him, teasing the little brat was a happy thing to do in his life. Then he said, "So why did you add me to your party?"

"To complete a quest together, of course, you dumb *ss! What other use do you have for us other than being a meatshield for the monsters?" Wei Yan Er shrugged on purpose.

"Hey witch! Tell the little brat what else I am useful for!" Zhang Yang smiled viciously at Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue could not help but recall what happened three hours back. Zhang Yang had taken liberty of her and Sun Xin Yu while they were still in a deep sleep. Her face turned red as she was overwhelmed with shame. She spat at Zhang Yang, trying to cover her shame as that the memory of that morning could shame her and Sun Xin Yu for quite awhile.

"What kind of quest are we talking about then?" Zhang Yang asked.

"Sister Snow triggered a hidden quest while she was hunting for the Cooking Materials. Didn't she do great back there?" Wei Yan Er was the type who could not keep her mouth shut. She blurted it out to Zhang Yang immediately.

Zhang Yang looked at Han Ying Xue for one brief moment before he said, "I'm guessing you must have lost your way before you stumbled upon this quest. Am I right?"

"Bingo!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. So this witch was lucky enough to locate a quest by getting lost. She must have all the luck in the world!

"What's the reward then?"

"We have no idea at the moment! Aiyo! Why are you being so long-winded! Just get over here and do it!" Wei Yan Er could no longer wait as she glared, "Come on! Let's go!"

"Let's contact Ice Queen and the others as well!"

"The quest said that only 3 members can participate!" Han Ying Xue shook her head.

"See? We always treat you very well! We reserved the last spot for you!" Wei Yan Er blinked her large eyes at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and pulled Han Ying Xue into his arms. Then he said, "You've got it all wrong! Your sister cousin is now my

girlfriend. So it should be us who left the last spot for you, little brat! You must feel grateful for that!"

"You bus tart!" Wei Yan Er was boiling with rage towards Han Ying Xue who gave in to her own lust for Zhang Yang instead of defending her.

Han Ying Xue shared the quest out to the other two. Upon accepting the quest, the three of them departed for the location of the quest.

[Finding Alice] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: That playful Alice is once again lost! Please, my fellow Adventurer. Please bring her back for me! She used to wander in the woods nearby, having fun all by herself. You should start by looking there.

Completion: Find Alice 0/1

Limitation: 3 Players Only

It would be impossible for Han Ying Xue to locate a specific location... definitely not possible at all! She was so terrible in directions that she would even walk a little off a straight line after walking straight for 100 meters. The route to that location had twists and turns, and one must be clear about the correct roads and intersections to take. Furthermore, they were required to mount on [Flying Mounts] in order to travel across the mountains. Han Ying Xue has always been practically blind whenever she travels. Whenever she gets lost, she would simply use her [Teleportation Scroll] to travel back to the Territory.

Therefore, not a single route would be committed to her memory. Even if she manages to arrive at her destination, it would be impossible for her to do it again! However, this woman knew her own flaws. She marked the exact location of the quest location in the party minimap. Therefore, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er would still be able to find the location, even if she does not find it.

The three left Tibanya Wasteland and travelled across mountains and rivers before they arrived at Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster.

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder, so he asked, "Witch, where did you intend to find the cooking ingredients at first?"

"Apen Mountains!" Han Ying Xue answered.

Zhang Yang was speechless upon hearing it. The Apen Mountains was located at the Tibanya Wasteland map. However, she led them straight to the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. She had strayed too far from her original course! Furthermore, she did not encounter any enemy players along the way. It was considered as a miracle!

The Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster was initially the 'Exclusive Map' of the India Region. It was natural that there would be Indian players all around the area. Furthermore, the Indians were known to be a nation of the 'almighty' in the real world. The same applied to them in the game as well. Up to seven or eight players could be found mounted on one mount. 4 would be sitting together in a row on top of the mount, while the other three or four of them would be hanging by the sides of the mount. That scene would always amaze people who saw it!

Zhang Yang and the ladies did not want any trouble. So they adjusted their mounts to fly at a higher altitude. However, 3 red-name players flying across the sky would still be very obvious. Fortunately, as the Indian players were all 'overloaded' on their mounts, none of them could catch up to them. Without any problem at all, Zhang Yang and ladies had left them far behind and went on with their journey.

After flying for more than 2 hours, they finally arrived at their destination. It was a manor that seemed to be cut off from the outside world. There was a thick jungle right behind the manor. The jungle seemed very spooky and anyone would feel anxious upon seeing it.

As all three of them had accepted the quest, they no longer needed to waste their breath with the NPC all over again. They jumped right into the quest and entered the jungle. The three of them split up to search for clues. After half an hour of finding, the little brat discovered a strange tree stump under the shade of a large tree. So she quickly called the other two over to take a look at it.

There was a flashing large hole beneath the tree stump. It seemed like an entrance to another dungeon. Theoretically speaking, only players who

have accepted the quest earlier on could see the entrance. Zhang Yang even experimented by deleting the quest on purpose before entering the hole. The hole no longer flashed and he could not find anything inside the hole, except that it was dark and empty!

He got Han Ying Xue to share the quest with him again. The hole flashed constantly once again. The three of them looked at each other and nodded. Then, Zhang Yang led the ladies into the hole. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er followed closely behind him.

After passing through the hole, they got a completely different view right in front of their eyes. The three of them arrived at a strange and unusual place filled with all sorts of colors. It was a colorful jungle with colorful plants all over the place. There were coffee-brown, pinkish, milk-white flowers in the surroundings. The clouds in the sky had different sort of shapes, some of them even looked like monsters. The place was interesting.

Wei Yan Er suddenly squatted down and tugged some grasses out by their roots. Then she began to munch on them.

Zhang Yang felt disgusted, frowning intensely. Although they were now in the game, their 5 senses were all real. They would smell the scent of blood as they killed monsters. They would feel pain when they are punched. Men would feel 'alive' when they are seduced by women. Only the intensity of the senses could be adjusted accordingly to the players' liking.

"What kind of show did you watch recently? You would actually behave like a cow or a horse instead of behaving like a human?"

"You dumb *ss! These are chocolate! They're extremely tasty!" Wei Yan Er was already chewing up all the 'grass' in her mouth until the sides of her mouth were stained. She rubbed her mouth with her sleeves, not giving him a f*ck.

"What a strange place!" Zhang Yang wandered around nearby and realized that the trees and the flowers were all made of food and candy! There were bite marks left on some of the places. They could only deduce

that those bite marks had been left behind by Alice.

"Let's follow the trail!"

The three of them followed the tracks. Wei Yan Er was complaining that Alice was a gluttonous girl, judging from the number of bitemarks they found. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could not help but laugh at her.

After just a brief moment of following the trails, the three of them had arrived at a small river.

The water flowing in the river looked more like milk as it was gliding smoothly according to the current flow. Wei Yan Er felt awfully thirsty after eating so much candy and chocolate. So, she immediately went up to the milk river and drank the milk as much as she could.

No far from them, there was a bridge. The three of them went over and began to cross the bridge. While they were at it, they saw that there were also small bite marks across the bridge railings. Wei Yan Er just could not help herself but repeat what she said earlier on. She squinted and complained, "This little girl is really greedy! She basically ate everything she saw!"

Then she broke a brick on the bridge and put it into her mouth, then she said, "Hmm, this tastes good! It's strawberry flavored!"

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could only remain speechless after seeing how she acted.

"Aiyo!" Right after they crossed the bridge, Wei Yan Er suddenly pressed her hands on her stomach and squatted down, "I'm having a stomachache!"

That was not it. Red damage values began to pop out constantly right on top of her head. It began by reducing the little brat's HP by 10%, constantly.

Han Ying Xue quickly tried to heal her up. However, the HP bar of the little brat continued to drop by 10% at a constant rate. A short while later, the amount of reduction on her HP began to increase up to 20%. As time passed, the amount continued to increase up to 30%, then to 40%, and to

50%!

Han Ying Xue was still able to keep up with the 20% HP reduction. However, she began to panic when the little brat started losing 30% of her HP at that constant rate. She could no longer keep up with the HP reduction when it struck 40%. When Wei Yan Er was losing 50% of her HP at a constant rate, Han Ying Xue only managed to keep that little brat alive for 3 to 4 seconds before she collapsed onto the ground and died.

After getting the little brat back on her feet, the three of them were puzzled. It was really strange that the little brat would die all of a sudden! Without any reason at all, the HP bar of the little brat had been reduced to zero just like that. Wei Yan Er even brought up her battle log to check what was going on. However, nothing was recorded there.

"What is going on?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "It is most probably because the little brat ate too much... stuff... She was the only one who was eating all the way. There is no other explanation!"

Wei Yan Er felt angry as she said, "Bastard! Who would dare try to poison me! If I ever find out, that fellow will receive three chops from my axe!"

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Oh, right! Alice must have been eating along the way. Even though characters from Story Mode might not die easily, but she must be in some sort of danger as well!"

"Let's move then!"

After crossing the bridge, they realized that the bite marks stopped there. So the three of them continued down the path before they arrived at a small village. There were only about ten houses made of woods and dried grasses. An old man who looked like he was in his 60s was sitting by a small cottage located nearest to the three of them. He had his back hunched over while smoking a long-stemmed pipe.

The three of them approached the old man, and Zhang Yang said, "Granpa, have you seen a girl called Alice passing by a few days ago?"

"Alice?" The old man was named 'Charlie Moto'. He was a normal Tiered Level 110 NPC. Upon hearing the name, he put down his pipe and said, "Two days ago, I picked up an unconscious girl by the bridge. However, I'm not sure if she is the Alice you are looking for or not."

Wei Yan Er quickly asked, "Granpa, is the girl in your house now?"

"Well, yes. But the girl has been poisoned. She had been having a fever ever since I found her. It seems that her situation is not good." Charlie Moto waved his tobacco pouch as he made a gesture, suggesting that the three of them should go into the house.

After entering the house, the three of them saw that there was a girl lying on a bed. She seemed like she was about 15 to 16 years old. Her hair was black and her lips were red. She had fair skin. Upon looking at her features, she would be a fine and beautiful woman in the future.

[Alice] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 105

HP: 5,000/ 16,200

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Finding Alice. You have received a reward: 200,000 experience points!'

'Ding! Although you have found Alive, that naughty little lady is on the brink of death. You wouldn't want to bring her dead body over to her parents, would you? Find a way to save her as quickly as possible!'

'Ding! Will you accept a new quest: The Way of Healing?'

Upon seeing Alice, the three of them received a system notification at the same instant.

Since that they had traveled from a long distance all the way here, there was no reason to stop here. So, the three of them accepted the new quest without any hesitation.

'Ding! You have accepted a quest: The Way of Healing. You must find a solution to saving the little girl within 10 hours. Or Alice will die!'

Zhang Yang told Charlie Moto, "Granpa, thank you so much! She's Alice

alright. We received a request from her parents to bring her home safely! However, she's really in a bad shape now. Do you have any idea what's wrong with her?"

"She ate too many poisonous stuff!" Charlie Moto tapped his tobacco pipe and sat down. Then he said, "The milk in the river has Melamine in it. The jellies in the jungle have poisonous Shadow Glue in them. And the chicken chops... were fried with gutter oil! Argh!"

Zhang Yang and his two party member were 'amazed'.

Chapter 606: The Black-Hearted Goblin

"Grandpa, who would put so much poison in the food?" Zhang Yang asked

Charlie Moto let out a series of sighs and said, "This is a land of divinity given by the gods. It has the power to provide us with an endless supply of food. No one will have to starve here! However... a bunch of crazies lost their minds, trying to mine the possessions of the gods. Rumor has it that the possessions of the gods can give one tremendous power! However, why would any of us offend the gods in order to help them when we're all living peacefully in the land?"

The old man shook his head staring at them darkly. He continued to talk, "Therefore, they came up with numerous dirty tricks. Like how they poisoned our God-given food! So they came up with the idea of poisoning our food with Melamine, poisonous Shadow Glue, Gutter oil... I've mentioned all of them earlier on! They're trying to force us into submission, to help they mine for the ore, or they will not give us the antidote!"

"Granpa, do you have any antidote left to save the poor little girl? Please help her!" Zhang Yang quickly said.

"This little girl was too greedy. She ate too much poison. Normal antidotes would no longer work on her. You must get an Enhanced Antidote to save her! But, you will need to exchange some of the finest [Divinity Ores] that are being guarded by tons of ferocious monsters in the mountains for the Antidote! Or else, those lunatics won't be willing to give them to you!"

Now that the objective had become crystal clear, Zhang Yang weighed between the two solutions that lay before them. They could just mine for the [Divinity Ores] and exchange them for the Enhanced Antidote, or they could just get it the Enhanced Antidote by killing the lunatics.

The second method seemed to be more direct and simple. However, would the system really let them off easily if they really did that?

Zhang Yang and the ladies asked Charlie Moto about the whereabouts of the 'lunatics'. After parting with the old man, the three of them left the village and headed towards the location provided. Players were not allowed to fly on their pets in this strange and colorful land. All pets, including Violet Thunderhawk and Winged Tiger, could only run on land. Wei Yan Er was laughing all the way through as she was observing how their butts wriggled about as they ran.

After running forwards for about half an hour, the three of them arrived at the weird house that had been mentioned by Charlie Moto.

It was a gigantic mechanical house built with cogs and gears. The cogs spun constantly as they screeched horrendously all over the place. There were a few greenish goblins standing guard at the entrance of the building. They held some simple and crude weapons in their hands.

[Black Heart Goblin] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 9,742 - 11,742

Skill:

[Melamine]: Smears some poisonous Melamine on the weapon, 50% rate to afflict the target with a Poison Effect. Causes 10,000 Nature Damage to the target.

Note: Black Heart Goblins are the greediest race in the entire Secret Wonderland. They are delusional to get their hand on the possessions of gods. They always want to become the richest in the entire world.

Zhang Yang and the ladies could not help but to be disappointed. These Black Heart Goblins were all green-named monsters. In other words, killing them would not help them get the Enhanced Antidote to save Alice.

"Hey, you lazy humans! Go mine us some ores now if you want to get the antidotes and live!" a Black Heart Goblin detected the presence of Zhang

Yang and leaped over to them. The goblin was trying to lift its head as high up as possible.

Zhang Yang stopped Wei Yan Er who was on the verge of punching the goblin and said, "We need Enhanced Antidote. So what is the price for that?"

"Enhanced Antidote? Hey, that can only be exchanged with some [Divinity Ores]!" the few Black Heart Goblins laughed out loud, "Which one of you actually ate so much of the poison? Hahaha! Humans are stupid indeed!"

"Hey, hustle up! The one who needs the Enhanced Antidote cannot afford to wait long. Or else, you better dig up a good grave for him!"

"Time is gold, human!"

"10 pieces of [Divinity Ores] for one bottle of Enhanced Antidote! No discount at all! Not even one!"

With the laughter of those goblins echoing after them, the three of them left the cog building and headed towards the mountain far ahead of them.

"Those stinky goblins! When I'm back, I'm going to crush their bones and heads! How dare they poison me!" Wei Yan Er was swung her fists around while saying that.

After entering the mountains, Zhang Yang and the ladies ran across every corner of the mountains. As Charlie Motto had mentioned earlier on, the [Divinity Ores] would be guarded by ferocious monsters. Therefore, locating the monsters would lead them straight to the whereabouts of the [Divinity Ores]. The task was as simple as that.

"Rawgh!" a roar was heard and a gigantic monster appeared right before Zhang Yang and the two ladies. The monster was black and it looked like a ferocious tiger. However, the monster had a tail that looked like the tail of a scorpion. The end of the tail was as sharp as the tip of a blade. It was so sharp that anyone would feel a chill up their spine when they see it.

[Scorpion-Tiger Chimera] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 112

HP: 1,120,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 9,756 - 11,756

Skills:

[Pounce]: Pounces on a target and knocks the target off balance. Can interrupt a chanting process. Also, stuns the target for 3 seconds.

[Scorpion Sting]: Attacks the target with the scorpion tail and afflicts the target with a Poison Effect. Causes 15,000 Nature Damage to the target.

Note: One of the most ferocious monsters in the Secret Wonderland. After the Black heart Goblins poisoned the land, these creatures survived and underwent mutation. They have extremely strong toxicity.

The monsters charged at Wei Yan Er the moment it appeared. With a powerful bite, it caused about 10,000 damage to the little brat. On the other hand, the rage bar of Wei Yan Er was increased by more than 50 points.

"You stinky noob tank! Get it off me!" Wei Yan Er immediately screamed for help.

Zhang Yang laughed at her and said, "It's a good thing that the monster hit you! You won't have to worry about having not enough Rage Points to spend!"

"You bus tart noob tank! I curse you! Stomachache for the rest of your days!"

Zhang Yang was only teasing the little brat. Because Han Ying Xue was supporting them from the rear, the elite monster could barely do any long-term damage to the little brat. Zhang Yang summoned Felice and threw a {Provoke} to lure the monster over to him. After getting the aggro of the monster over onto him, he threw a few more Skills and firmly got the monster's full attention.

The Scorpion-Tiger Chimera kept biting Zhang Yang with its big mouth.

However, it could only cause about 676 damage to Zhang Yang. Some of its attacks could not even deal 1 damage to Zhang Yang. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er could cause about 10,000 damage to the monster with 1 hit. The difference between the attacks of both sides was vastly different!

"Hey, noob tank! Your skin is really thick! You can't even feel pain after being bitten by the monster!" Wei Yan Er was unwilling to admit, "Your defense is high, and your damage is also high! How is that fair!"

"Haha! Just wait until you get your Darkness Inheritance. By then, you wouldn't be too bad compared to me!" Zhang Yang said.

"God damn it! So how long will that be? We can't even take down the final boss for the Inheritance quest yet!" Wei Yan Er sighed.

Han Ying Xue was feeling depressed as well. Getting a high-Class Inheritance was not easy at all. The difficulty of getting the Inheritance would be too great, especially when the final boss of its quest was too powerful for players to take on at their current levels. Therefore, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu had been stuck with the final bosses of their Inheritance quests for quite some time already.

Although the Defense of Wei Yan Er was a lot lower than the Defense of Zhang Yang, her Attack power was extremely powerful. Furthermore, they were supported by Battle Companions and Pets. In just a brief moment, they took care of the Scorpion-Tiger Chimera and picked up a few strands of [Tiger Fur]. Wei Yan Er was dissatisfied with the loot and made a huge fuss out of it.

After killing the monster, the three of them discovered a piece of golden stone that was flashing in golden complexion right beside a large piece of rock. This might be the [Divinity Ore] that they were searching for.

[Divinity Ore]

Description: This is a fantastic specimen. Weapons forged with it will have abnormally destructive power.

Very good. The first piece [Divinity Ore] has been collected.

The three of them continued to push forward. They encountered many

other Chimeraeic beings such as Thunderous Light Leopards, Bat-Pythons, Wolf-Apes and many more. They were all mutated because they had eaten the poisoned food. Each of the monsters had extreme toxicity. However, among many monsters that they encountered, only a few of them were guarding a [Divinity Stone]. The remaining monsters were spawned to give players some challenge while attempting to complete the quest. Furthermore, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were able to earn quite a substantial amount of experience points.

Two hours had passed in just a blink of an eye. The three of them had finally collected 10 pieces of [Divinity Ore]. So they made their way back to the 'house of cogs' and attempted to exchange them for the Enhanced Antidote.

"Hey, you three humans are more durable than we expected! You could actually gather so many [Divinity Ores]!" One of the Black Heart Goblin received the [Divinity Ores] from Zhang Yang. Then the goblin passed a glass bottle half-filled with dark liquid in it. "Haha! We just need a few more of these before Master Sosh's Light Beam Gun can be completed!"

Zhang Yang and the ladies quickly rushed back to the village. The quest had a limited time frame. The duration they take to complete the quest would affect the final reward that they could claim from the quest.

After reaching the house of Charlie Moto, Zhang Yang took out the Enhanced Antidote and fed it to Alice. Pink life returned to her pale and lifeless face in just a moment. After about 10 seconds, she opened her eyes and looked around in confusion.

"Alice, we are here to get you back to your parents because your parents asked us to find you. They are worried sick at home!" Zhang Yang quickly explained to Alice.

After Alice got down from the bed, she bowed to Zhang Yang and the two ladies and said, "Big brother, big sister, little sister, thank you for saving me!"

"Little sister?" Wei Yan Er was very sensitive to the word 'little' or 'small' at the moment. She immediately looked down at her own boobies that

have not undergone any change for the past 6 months. Then, she looked at Alice's pair of boobies that were still small but seemed to have great potential. She could not help but to grind her teeth together in anger.

"Alice, let's go home!"

"Alright, big brother, big sister, and little sister!" Alice said in a very soft and polite tone. At that last bit, Wei Yan Er almost crushed her teeth against each other into bits and pieces.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Way of Healing, you received a reward: 20,000,000 experience points!'

"Wow! That's a lot of experience points!" Han Ying Xue felt almost breathless. The Main Story Quests that they completed together before had never rewarded them with such amount of experience points. It seemed that the system was very generous this time.

"That's why they're called 'Hidden Quest'! Of course, the rewards will be much better than those normal quests!" Zhang Yang nodded. He was very satisfied with the reward as well. Currently, his main priority was to reach beyond Level 120. Therefore, every bit of experience point that came his way now would be more than welcome. As long as all of his party members, including himself, could reach beyond Level 120, they could get rid of any Level Gap Suppression function from all bosses and all monsters that were Level 150. The chance for them to take down a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss should increase twofold. When that becomes possible, they should be able to acquire the two Class S Inheritances and one Class A Inheritance. With those Inheritances, Lone Desert Smoke should be able to acquire a solid victory in the World League Championship!

"Grandpa, thank you for taking care of me for the past few days as well!" Alice bowed to Charlie Moto as well.

"You must not be so greedy and eat so much again!" Charlie Moto laughed as he told the girl.

"Yes! I'll keep that in mind, grandpa!"

Zhang Yang could not help but look at Wei Yan Er with a sarcastic smile, "Same goes to you as well!"

Wei Yan Er scoffed and said, "I'm not a child anymore! How was I greedy?" She was still looking at her own pair of boobies, or lack thereof, constantly from time to time. It was a real thorn in her heart.

"Adventurers from the outside world, can I ask of you for one more matter?" Just when the four of them were about to walk out of the little cottage, Charlie Moto suddenly opened his mouth and made a request.

Chapter 607: Saving the Villagers

Zhang Yang and the girls turned their heads around. Wei Yan Er beat the others to it and said, "Grandpa, you want us to help you beat up those goblins right? No problem! You can count on us!" She hated those Black Heart Goblins very much. Even if Charlie Moto did not ask for their help, she would still want to unleash hell upon those monsters.

Charlie Moto was surprised by her enthusiasm. He froze for a second before he said, "Err...that's right. I really wanted to ask for your help in taking out the goblins! Not long ago, those goblins charged into our village and took away all the grown-up villagers. They took them over to their campsite and forced them to mine for every single day! I see that you guys got the Enhanced Antidote within such a short period of time. So I could tell, that you must be very capable and powerful. You should have what it takes to help us!"

'Ding! Charlie Moto has given you a new quest: Saving the Villagers who were taken away, will you accept?'

Accept.

Zhang Yang and his two ladies accepted the quest at the same time. That was a Rank-A Hidden Quest. Zhang Yang suspected that the quest was not supposed to be as easy as slaying a few elite monsters. If that is the case, the final reward of this quest would not be worth the while.

It would only make sense if Charlie Moto gives them another new quest! It was as expected by Zhang Yang.

"Grandpa, rest assured that we shall bring the villagers back, safe and sound!"

"Thank you! I can't thank you enough!" Charlie Moto was tearing up as he thanked the gang.

After placing the little girl with the old man, Zhang Yang and the ladies departed for the goblin campsite once again. Wei Yan Er was extremely agitated, as she could finally start slaughtering those goblins that had

insulted her earlier on.

[Saving the Villagers who were taken away] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: The grown-ups in the village have all been taken away by the Black Heart Goblins. Charlie Moto requested of you to save the villagers and bring them back as soon as possible! Warrior, do not underestimate these short and weak-looking creatures. Although these goblins do not have earth-shaking power, their technology is really something to be terrified of. That alone makes up for their physical deficiencies! Their leader Sosh, has a knack for inventing new stuff. He will invent some powerful weapons from time to time!

Completion: Save the villagers 0/1

Limit: 3 Players only.

Upon reading the description of the quest, the three of them understood that the final boss of this quest would mostly be the goblin that goes by the name of Sosh.

"Can three of us take care of the boss?" Han Ying Xue was a little worried.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "The quest is only a Rank-A difficulty. Furthermore, the quest limited the participants to only 3 players. No matter how powerful the boss is going to be, it has to be within a reasonable degree of difficulty. Furthermore, if the three of us cannot handle this, then other parties would never stand a chance!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were nodding their heads to express their agreements.

That was a boast. By public opinion, Zhang Yang was undeniably the best Tanker in the entire world. Han Ying Xue was also one of the top Healers in the entire world. Wei Yan Er could do more damage than most of the top DPS players could in the entire world! With three of these powerful freaks joining up in a party, they could become one of the most powerful parties in the world! If they could not handle the boss, then no other party could!

The only thing missing for the three of them was that Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had not acquired their Inheritance. However, this quest was in the map that ranged from levels 100 - 130. Furthermore, dungeons and quests were not designed, based on the power level of players with Inheritance. It did not mean that players would not be able to complete the quests without having an Inheritance!

The three of them arrived at the goblin campsite after a short journey. This time, what they saw before their eyes was a bunch of red-named goblins at the entrance.

Wei Yan Er screamed in excitement as she hopped onto her Winged Tiger and charged over to the goblins. With her axe swung towards the monsters, one of the goblins was launched into the air.

‘-27,084!’

The Attack of the little brat was extremely high. Her axe had instantly caused a great deal of damage to that goblin. There were 4 goblins guarding by the entrance of the building at the moment. They were sharing the same aggro sight view. So when one of them was struck, the other three of them immediately went running towards Wei Yan Er while shouting "Time is gold!"

Han Ying Xue quickly threw a Healing Spell onto Wei Yan Er and took over the aggro of the other three monsters. The monsters had to turn around to look for her.

{Tornado Cleave}!

The little brat went out with a quick whirl as she struck out with her {Tornado Cleave}. In just an instant, she caused 50,000 damage to each of the four monsters and succeeded in getting all four of their aggro back onto her.

However, although the little brat could deal a lot of damage with each of her attacks, the four goblins were not willing to give in. They could deal about 10,000 damage with their normal attacks. If any of their attacks could trigger the Poison Effect of {Melamine}, their attack would cause an additional 10,000 damage. Wei Yan Er was in danger of falling before they

do.

With her current equipment, she would have no problem at all if she only takes on one elite Tier monster. With a Healer supporting her from the rear, she could handle two with ease. However, she would feel a little pressure if she was to battle against three. It would be impossible for her to battle four elite Tier monsters at once!

"Oy, if you can't stand the heat, get out of the kitchen! Tanking against monsters requires specific skill!" Zhang Yang sighed pointedly he hopped off the back of his [Violet Thunderhawk]. Then, he activated his {Charge} and stunned one of the monsters. He even threw his {Provoke} onto a second monster, luring the monster over to him. With his {Horizontal Sweep}, Zhang Yang got into the thick of it!

Upon causing 60,000 damage over the monsters within his attack range, Zhang Yang failed to get the aggro of the other two monsters over to him. The little brat was chopping and slicing the monsters like a b*tch in heat!

However, because the two monsters had turned their attention towards Zhang Yang, the little brat was on much safer ground.

"Noob tank! You're good, because your skin is thick enough! If I can also wield a shield, then I wouldn't be scared of these little green shorties!" Wei Yan Er was not willing to submit.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then, open your eyes and feast upon my greatness!"

He slung his shield over his back and struck one of the goblins that was attacking Wei Yan Er with his left hand. The powerful impact of his attack knocked the goblin off balance. With the monster being hit off balance, the goblin could no longer attack the little brat.

'Supporting Attacks' had no attack intervals. It all depended on the fast-twitch muscles of a person. The faster you react, the faster you can swing your fist at your enemy. After a series of random knocking and pushing, the four goblins could not regain their ground as they spent more time staggering and stumbling about instead of actually fighting. If they could

land a punch out of 10 attempts, it would be considered lucky.

"Do you get it now?" Zhang Yang asked the little brat after demonstrating it.

It has already been over half a year since he showed the little brat 'Supporting Attacks' for the first time. However, the little brat would still cling back to her own style where she would use her weapon to attack her targets. It was more exciting and interesting for her to do so. It would not affect her much when she is in a dungeon, slaying monsters or bosses. However, she would not be able to fully unleash her potential in a Player-vs-Player match!

Wei Yan Er was the type who would act based on her emotions. If she was interested in something, she would be more keen to learn or know more about it. The more you try to stop her, the more she would want to find out. On the other hand, if she was not interested, even if you whip her, she would just ignore it. Now that she seemed to be very interested in learning how to use 'Supporting Attacks', Wei Yan Er began to imitate Zhang Yang. She also threw some punches at the monsters as she smacked the monsters with her left hand like how Zhang Yang did.

However, although it seemed really easy to do it, it required the precise timing of the movement tracking of the monsters. Furthermore, it would also require outstanding brainpower. The monsters would not stand there like dummies waiting for players to hit them in the face. They would be dodging attacks coming from the players as well. So, players would need to react accordingly to the situation. Although it seemed easy watching Zhang Yang throwing his punches at the monsters, it had taken him about half a year to master it.

Wei Yan Er was not willing to admit it when Zhang Yang was looking down at her with a disdainful look on his face. The little brat felt challenged, so she picked it up and took it as practice on the spot. She was naturally born to be active. She had a talent in athletics. After a few tries, she managed to pick up a thing or two about it. She could already land a third of her punches with success!

The little brat was very happy and satisfied with what she just learned to do. She was not having enough of it yet, even after the four monsters were killed, one after another. She kept complaining that Zhang Yang should not have punched the monsters so hard. She blamed Zhang Yang for not letting her have enough fun. If these four monsters could come back to life, they would definitely be cursing the little brat for punching them harder than anyone else!

They were never short on monsters. The moment when the three of them entered the 'house of cogs', they engaged in battle with a group of three. The three goblins charged straight at them. It was a good thing, because the little brat got to practice a little more of her 'Supporting Attacks'.

After some more slaughtering along the way, the three of them made their way to the second floor of the building.

Wei Yan Er was really talented in such regards. She had already mastered the technical knack of it. The way she was performing her 'Supporting Attacks' was very similar to the way Zhang Yang would do it! Zhang Yang could not help but feel very surprised. If he and the little brat had started playing the game at the same time, he would definitely not have been able to catch up the progress of the little brat!

However, Zhang Yang did not have anyone to guide him in his previous life. He could only rely on himself by observing the footage of top Tier players battling against each other. Currently, Wei Yan Er had him to guide her wholeheartedly. So it would still make some sense even if she was progressing much faster than anyone could.

The monsters on the second floor were a little more powerful than the monsters on the first floor.

[Black Heart Goblin (Highly Configured)] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Range Attack: 9,779 - 11,779

Skill:

[Shadow Glue Bomb]: Throw a bomb towards the target and detonate in an area of 3 X 3-meter square. All targets within the effective area will be afflicted with the Shadow Glue Venom, causing 15,000 Nature Damage to all targets. All targets will be disgusted and vomit for a period of time. Lasts for 3 seconds

Note: Black Heart Goblins are the greediest race in the entire Secret Wonderland. They are delusional enough to want to get their hands on the possessions of gods. They have always wanted to become the richest in the entire world.

The moment Zhang Yang and the ladies revealed themselves in the sight of the monsters, they were greeted by 4 goblins with their mechanical guns. The metallic bullets were fired at them rapidly. The sounds of bullets clashing onto the armor of Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were like raindrops falling on metallic rooftop. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue was rained upon with the bullets as well. However, her white dress was tainted in red by her own blood that was spilled by the bullet hits.

Zhang Yang quickly dashed forward as he was approaching the monsters in just an instant. With a swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang caused a damage onto all four monsters and took their aggro over to himself.

Although these monsters were much more powerful than the previous monsters they had encountered, they would not be able to match the threat that Zhang Yang and the ladies could pose to them. The one Skill that they had was rather disgusting. Every time the three of them could not stay clear of the effective area of the detonation, they would receive some damage and also vomit overtime. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were crying bitterly every time they were afflicted by the effect of that Skill.

"Wu wu wu --- What a bunch of disgusting monsters! I hate them!" Wei Yan Er could not help but to stick out her tongue as she vomited.

Because the {Shadow Glue Bomb} was considered as a Skill, the Accuracy of the monsters could not be affected or interrupted by neither Skills nor 'Supporting Attacks'. Therefore, they had to take the damage of the {Shadow Glue Bomb}, head on every single time. That helpless kind of feeling was not good at all.

The monsters on this floor were disgusting and abundant in numbers. It took about an hour for the three of them to clear the entire floor. The two ladies were disturbed and annoyed at the same time as they mechanically went on their way with stiff faces. They vowed that they were never going to repeat doing this ever again.

The last stage was a vast hall. There were many cages right beneath the hall. Humans were caged in those cages. There were messages right on top of each human in the cages. Those were the targets that Zhang Yang and the ladies were required to rescue. However, there was another goblin lying in a pile of cogs and metallic wires --- the leader of the Black Heart Goblins, Sosh!

[The Inventor Sosh] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 36,000,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 31,397 - 41,397

Skills:

[Melamine]: Upon hitting the target, there is a 50% chance to infect the target with Melamine, causing 50,000 Nature Damage to the target.

[Shadow Glue Bomb]: Throws a bomb towards the target that detonates in an area of 3 X 3-meter square. All targets within the effective area will be afflicted with the Shadow Glue Venom, causing 15,000 Nature Damage to all targets. All targets will be disgusted and vomit overtime. Last for 3 seconds

[Gutter Oil]: Pave the area of a 30-meter radius in the surrounding,

causing 10,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the effective area once in every 3 seconds. All targets will also be afflicted with 50% chance to slip and fall.

[Berserk]: When Sosh's HP is below 10%, he will enter a state of Berserk! Attack will be increased by 50%. Movement Speed will be increased by 50%.

Note: This is the leader of the Black Heart Goblins! He's a genius in inventing stuff. The Melamine, Shadow Glue, Gutter Oils and other poisons are part of his inventions!

Chapter 608: Sosh

"A poison master!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh.

"Silly Yu, can you do it without your {God of War Transformation}?" Han Ying Xue was worried once again.

Yesterday, they went to challenge the final boss of Wei Yan Er's Inheritance quest. By the end of it, they were crushed into meat pies. Therefore, Zhang Yang could not activate his {God of War Transformation} as it was still under cooldown.

"Can't I or can I?" Zhang Yang wagged his finger at Han Ying Xue, then he said, "Never say that to a man!"

"Then let's do it! This is a Level 120 Mythical Tier boss. We should be able to equip his loot!"

The big bosses on every map in the Chaos Realm would drop equipment with Special attributes that would remove 20 levels from the Required Level. Judging from that angle, this goblin boss should drop equipment that players can already equip upon reaching Level 100. Now that most of the mainstream players had reached Level 110, they would be looking for Level 130 Mythical Tier equipment instead.

However, the number of Mythical Tier bosses was very limited in the entire game. It would be a very fortunate thing if the players could even encounter a Level 120 Mythical boss.

Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer] around to loosen up his shoulders. Then he said, "Alright, let's move! Hopefully, we can make it for lunch!"

He charged towards Sosh with large paces. However, the aggro range of a Mythical Tier boss was extremely vast. Zhang Yang only took a few steps forward before the boss detected his presence. Sosh stopped with what he was doing immediately and turned his head towards Zhang Yang. He stared at Zhang Yang in surprise and screamed for aid, "Guards --- Guards ---"

After shouting for the guards a couple of times, he realized that no one was coming. The boss could not help but roar out in anger. He knew that he would have to battle Zhang Yang all alone. So, he charged at Zhang Yang with his two short and skinny legs. The boss then threw a {Shadow Glue Bomb} at Zhang Yang while he was still far away. Sosh managed to cause '-35,528!' damage to Zhang Yang and made Zhang Yang vomit for a period of time.

"Hahaha! Become my mining slaves and I shall spare your lives!" the boss continued to charge towards Zhang Yang with large steps. Suddenly, a huge long wrench appeared right in Sosh's hand and he swung the wrench at Zhang Yang with no hesitation at all.

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} to get rid of the Vomit Effect. He raised his shield high up and activated his {Block}. Upon blocking the attack, he also swung his sword and caused about 30,000 damage to the boss at the same instant. Without wasting any time, he quickly threw {Cripple Defense} on the boss in an attempt to reduce the Defense of the boss.

Wei Yan Er activated her {Charge} and clashed head-on with the boss. Then, she began to whirl her axe, causing pain and misery to the boss. She also prioritized on throwing 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} on the boss in order to cooperate with Zhang Yang in attempt to bring down the Defense of the boss by 50%.

After that, Wei Yan Er gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] and stacked up 20% of the {Cripple Defense} effect. She could ignore up to 70% of the boss's Defense!

Normal Tier monsters and elite Tier monsters only had about 1,000 Defense. Zhang Yang would not waste his {Cripple Defense} on those monsters. Wei Yan Er was not dumb enough to waste her [Power Potion] on those monsters either. However, this was a boss battle. So, she had no reason to be stingy about using her potions anymore. The first bottle of potion she took was a potion that had the highest grade of Transmutation!

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh, then he said, "You little brat!

You didn't care to save up the potion for me? You just took a bottle of potion with a Grade 10 Transmutation!"

Wei Yan Er was laughing back at Zhang Yang pleasantly, then she said, "I just wanted you to have more 'passion' in making the potions!"

"Mining slaves! All of you! Become my mining slaves!" The boss swung his wrench at Zhang Yang and hammered him over and over again as he screamed and roared aggressively.

Zhang Yang could not longer hold it any longer. He turned towards Han Ying Xue and said, "It should be alright for the little brat to become a mining slave. But you'll have to undergo some breast reduction surgeries. Or else, you might not even be able to bend your body over!"

"F*ck you! I'm not a monster!" Han Ying Xue cupped her hands over her pair of round and prideful boobies. She stared down, "How can my body figure be so perfect!"

"Sis! Stop admiring yourself! You're called a 'milk cow' for a reason! That pair of boobies is going to become saggy! That's called mastoptosis! You better listen to noob tank and go shrink them!" Wei Yan Er said with bad intentions.

"Haha!" Han Ying Xue laughed out loud and said, "If I really want to shrink them, would someone over there agree to it?"

Of course not!

Zhang Yang was telling himself 'No,' deep in his heart, quietly as he launched his assaults on the boss. Which man would prefer girls or women with small boobies? Can't you see that most of the female stars were so famous just because they reveal a small part of the 'career line' between their badonkers? A few of them were famous even though their acting was terrible! It seemed that men would prefer larger boobies in the current world.

"Human! Now taste my great invention! It's called {Gutter Oil}!" the boss suddenly roared. His body was like a water pump pumping out streams of dark liquids out as he sprayed them onto the area of 30-meter radius. The

area became oily right after that.

‘-3528!’

‘-10000!’

‘-10000!’

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were receiving damage from the {Gutter Oil} once every 3 seconds. However, because Felice and Thunderhawk were hovering in the air, they were not affected by the Skill at all.

"Hey! Where're your Battle Companions? Quickly summon them out and get this over with!" Zhang Yang quickly said.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were both ‘enlightened,’ finally. So they summoned out their own Battle Companions and sent them to battle. The Battle Companion of Wei Yan Er, Maroqueta was devoted and brace. The moment she saw the little brat battling with the boss, she immediately loaded her bow and began to shoot at the boss as well. On the other hand, Messick that whiner ran up to Han Ying Xue and said, "My queen, I’ve missed you so much!"

"Get lost! Go get the enemy for me now!"

"My queen! Please punish me now!" Messick had developed a masochistic heart thanks to how often the woman smacked him around. He went straight down by the side of Han Ying Xue’s legs and hugged both her legs while pasting his face against the smooth and fair skin of the witch.

"You bastard! Let go of me!" Han Ying Xue started to step on Messick’s face and tried to push him away. However, the whiner seemed to be enjoying the moment. Everyone could not help but feel a chill up their spines.

"What the f*ck!" Zhang Yang needed to keep the boss in place, so he could not move at all. So he quickly commanded Felice and said, "Felice, give that wretched man a {Fire Missile}! He needs a reminder!"

"Yes, big brother!" Felice nodded and switched her target to the whiner. Without any warning, she launched a {Fire Missile} at the whiner.

"Aiyok!" the whiner's butts were on fire as black smoke started to come out from it. He was in much pain that he jumped off the ground. Just before he could land back to the ground, Han Ying Xue gave a spinning side kick and kicked Messick straight into the boss battle area.

Unfortunately, this whiner would repeat the same thing over and over again whenever he is released from his Battle Companion Slot. Because of that, Han Ying Xue had never wished to let him out unless necessary.

The boss's Skills were extremely disgusting. The {Shadow Glue Bomb} would make people vomit while the {Gutter Oil} would make people oily. Furthermore, upon getting afflicted with the {Gutter Oil}, they would receive damage once every 3 seconds and risk falling down at a 50% chance.

Every time the boss activates his {Gutter Oil}, Zhang Yang would kite the boss over to a 'cleaner' environment before continuing to attack him. His main aim was to reduce the healing pressure on Han Ying Xue. However, the process of doing so would cause him to keep falling. That really had him annoyed to the maximum!

"Hahaha! Just give up on struggling already! You're not going to stand a chance against the great goblin!" Sosh was laughing out loud. He was wearing a pair of specially-made slippers that could prevent him from slipping and falling. So he would not be affected by the negative effects of his own {Gutter Oil}, "Just accept your fates and become my mining slaves!"

"I'll mine your chicken *ss!" Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the boss repeatedly in a very aggressive manner.

Fortunately, the boss only had two AoE attack Skills, which were {Shadow Glue Bomb} and {Gutter Oil}. It would be easy to handle the {Gutter Oil} as long as Zhang Yang kites the boss out of the oily and slippery area caused by the {Gutter Oil}. On the other hand, the {Shadow Glue Bomb} was a little disgusting. Once targeted by the boss, there would

be no way of dodging the attack.

However, there were only a total of 7 targets for the boss to pick. 3 players, 3 Battle Companions and 1 pet. Only Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Messick were Melee combatants. So they were able to keep a certain distance between themselves to avoid being bombarded by the boss's bombing attacks. At least they would not be 'bombed' by the boss altogether.

The healing capability of Han Ying Xue was definitely one of the top in the entire world. With her high Tier equipment and her outstanding reaction in combat, she had no problems at all supporting the HP bars of the entire party, including the Battle Companions and the pet.

As they were not restricted by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game this time round, the total damage that the party could deal to the boss would no longer be nerfed or weakened. As they now had [Armor Piercing Potions] at their disposal, the firepower of the party was almost double! They had already reduced the HP bar of the boss down to 10% in less than 7 minutes!

"You filthy mining slaves! You've provoked me! I'm angry!" Sosh began to roar in rage as the visible veins on his green skin all over his body began to emerge on the surface of his skin. His eyes turned completely red, and that made Sosh look terrifying!

The boss had entered his {Berserk} mode!

In just an instant, the boss received a tremendous boost to his Attack power. Sosh began to whirl his wrench about as if he had lost his mind! He kept smashing his wrench without holding back. Zhang Yang could only endure the pain that he was suffering under the smacking of the wrench.

"God damn you!" Zhang Yang waved his hand as he made a throwing gesture. He threw his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss with the attempt to trigger the special effect of the Skill.

Puff! A dark skull began to form on top of the boss. The skull opened up its jaws as it was smiling wretchedly without making any sound.

"What the hell is this?" Sosh could feel that something was not right at the moment. He could feel a great danger ascending upon him!

However, it was too late for him to realize it. Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and the others quickly grabbed the opportunity as they struck as many times as possible. The special effect of {Glare of the Death God} was triggered over and over again as the boss received a series of high damage values. '-360,000!' damage values kept popping up on top of the boss!

{Killing Cleave}!

'-443352!'

Zhang Yang went out with a {Killing Cleave} as his Rage Bar was full. He caused a damage much higher than what the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} could deal to the boss!

"Wow! Noob tank! Did you just hit the jackpot or something?" Wei Yan Er was alarmed about it.

Zhang Yang took a look at his battle log and smiled, "That was my Lucky Strike!"

Lucky Strike could deal 3 times the initial damage that one player could deal. Unfortunately, the Lucky Strike was not triggered when {Indiscriminate} was activated. Or else, Zhang Yang could have scored a Critical Hit and deal a damage that would be 6 times higher than his initial damage. That amount of damage could potentially reach up to a million!

During the effective time frame of the {Glare of the Death God}, Han Ying Xue had also picked a suitable moment and threw her {Putrefying Poison} onto the boss. Therefore, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} could only trigger for 9 times before the boss let out a miserable cry and died --- the main reason was because Zhang Yang scored a Lucky Strike and caused a massive amount of damage to the boss in one go. The boss only had 10% HP left by that time, so it would naturally be impossible for the special effect of the Skill to trigger 10 times.

"Wakaka! This Blackheart campsite is now ours!" Wei Yan Er was

content after killing all of the goblins on site. She was still stepping and kicking the dead body of Sosh. She seemed to still hate them, even though the goblins were all dead, "This is what you get for poisoning me! Take this! And this!"

Zhang Yang found a key among the loot that were dropped from the boss. Then he walked up to the cages and unlocked them. By doing so, he freed the villagers and let them be on their way back to their village.

"Little brat. Time to open up the dead body of the boss. Or else I'm going to take away your right on this! Stop wasting time already!"

Wei Yan Er finally came up to check on the loots in anger. In just a brief moment, she listed out the loot: a dark-blue cape, a pair of pinkish cloth boots, a dark-green helmet, and a Middle-tier Skill Stone.

The three of them were surprised by the fact that there were three pieces of Mythical Tier equipment!

They looked at the cape as a start.

[Destroyer's Madness] (Mythical, Cape)

Vitality: +445

Strength: +210

Agility: +91

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 890 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Increases damage absorption by 179 points.

Equip: When you activate {Cripple Defense}, you can afflict the target with 2-layer effect.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Required Level reduced by 20 levels.

Wei Yan Er shook her head and said, "Noob tank, the cape I'm currently

wearing is already a Mythical Tier equipment. So you can have the good stuff for yourself this time!"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and shoved the cape straight into his inventory. He would need to identify the equipment before he can equip it. Currently, his cape, chest plate, and necklace were still the Titan Armor Set equipment. He still had the Special Effect of the 3-piece Armor Set. He received 10,000 HP for that. However, if he wanted to switch the cape with this new one, then he would be losing the Special Effect of the 3-piece Armor Set. By then, he would need to switch away from his current necklace as soon as possible.

However, the [Titan Chest Plate] was still very 'durable'. The {Titan's Shield} effect could absorb up to 300,000 damage, without any reduction. It was still a powerful effect at the current stage of the game! The only unfortunate thing was that the HP recovery effect of his {Shield Wall} would be reduced to 'rubbish' when he reaches Level 120.

The next equipment was a pair of soft pinkish cloth boots.

[Exquisite Soft Boots] (Mythical, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +889

Intelligence: +181

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 840 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Increases damage absorption by 358 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Required Level reduced by 20 levels.

Among the three of them, Han Ying Xue was the only one who would need a Cloth Armor. So, she took it, naturally. However, the next thing the witch did was to shove the equipment at Zhang Yang without saying a

word. Well, her meaning was clear: help her identify her [Exquisite Soft Boots].

Well... she's already his woman... so Zhang Yang had to bear the cost, of course.

The last piece of equipment appeared to be an exclusive equipment for the Battle Companions. It was a Leather Armor, so Wei Yan Er took it for her Battle Companion Maroqueta. However, this equipment did not have a reduction in the Required Level, so Wei Yan Er would only be able to let Maroqueta equip it after Maroqueta reaches Level 120. In other words, the little brat would need to level herself up to Level 120 in order for her Battle Companion to reach Level 120 as well.

Zhang Yang had upgraded his {Vitality Aura} up to Level 7. If he wishes to continue upgrading his {Vitality Aura}, he would have to acquire [High-tier Aura Stones] first. Therefore, this piece of [Middle-Tier Aura Stone] was given to Wei Yan Er. With that, her {Strength Aura} had been upgraded up to Level 7. Now, she could increase the Strength of all party members on her party by 14%. It was considered a good power up.

Upon completing the quest, the three of them hustled back to the village to turn in the quest. The moment they stepped into the village, they were greeted by the villagers with great gratitude. Hundreds of villagers took up their positions in two rows on either side of the road and to welcome Zhang Yang and the ladies with open hands. They swarmed up to them to express their gratitude for saving their village. Some of the villagers were not originally from this village. They were captured and forced to work for the goblins long ago. Now, they have been freed from the mines.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Saving the Villagers that were taken away. You have received a reward: 20,000,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have completed the Linking Quest for Secret Wonderland. You have received a reward: 2 Lucky Points!'

'Ding! Because Alice has 3,198 HP remaining on her when you saved her, you can continue to stay in the Secret Wonderland for another 6 hours 23 minutes 48 seconds!'

A series of system notifications were heard again and again. However, they could not help but wonder, is staying here for a longer period of time considered as a reward as well?

"Heroes, you have annihilated the lunatics that have been causing trouble to the village. The food is clean again! So please, help yourselves! Enjoy all the food and gifts that the Gods have given us!" The villagers were busy getting the rocks and the leaves from trees. They also brought along the 'water' from the river and placed everything in front of Zhang Yang and the ladies.

These were edible food. There were deserts and meat all over the place. However, Wei Yan Er had suffered being poisoned after eating the food, and she did not dare to do it again. So she took a step back.

Zhang Yang was tempted. He picked up a piece of 'tree leaf' and chewed on it. Then he swallowed it down.

'Ding! You have received 10,000 experience points!'

Chapter 609: Eat Your Way to Level Up!

"Haha, noob tank! You're a greedy eater as well! How dare you point at me, saying that I'm a greedy eater!" Wei Yan Er grabbed the opportunity to shoot Zhang Yang off with a few words. Of course, she was not going to let it slide.

Zhang Yang smiled quietly as he continued to take as much 'leaves' as possible into his hands and ate them. He also picked up 'rocks' to eat and 'river water' to drink! He kept eating as every second passed. By doing so, he would earn 10,000 experience points with each passing second! That was quite a substantial amount of experience points he could get, considering that he was getting the same amount of experience points for killing a Normal Tier monster every 2 seconds! His experience bar was shooting up!

Han Ying Xue realized that there was something off about it. So she picked up the 'leaves' as well and put one into her mouth. Right after her first chew, her eyes were widened up and she also took up as much stuff as she could and put it into her mouth like how Zhang Yang was doing. Both of them were basically gorging down everything that was placed right in front of them.

"Oi... what are you two doing? Are you possessed or what?" Wei Yan Er could not fathom why would they go all 'berserk' on eating.

However, the little brat was not stupid as well. After seeing Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue ignoring her and gobbling on, she knew that something was off as well. So she picked up one of the 'leaves' and gave it a tentative chew ---

"Wah! Stinky noob tank! Stinky cousin sis! Both of you are really mean! How can you hide such a good thing from me! I despise you two!" Wei Yan Er immediately complained in her annoying voice. After that, she joined them both in the feast.

No wonder one of the quest rewards was simply letting them stay a little longer in the Secret Wonderland. Everything made sense now! Zhang Yang

had finally uncovered the amazing truth behind the reward. Any hesitation would have cost him more than a few fortunes! Wasting one second would mean losing 10,000 experience points!

Wei Yan Er was naturally a greedy eater. At first, she acted all nice and gentle because she had experienced the poison after eating the poisoned food. Now that she knew that there was no longer any threat, the little brat began to shove everything down without any table manners. She looked like a little girl that was eating in joy.

Zhang Yang intended to take away the 'food' while he was eating. However, the 'food' here would vanish upon be picked up. The 'food' would only exist for 5 seconds. In other words, players could only eat here. They could not take anything away from here! He also attempted to summon the other 9 of his party members to enjoy the 'food'. However, he received a system notification saying that he was forbidden to use the item at the moment. It seemed that the developer had left no loopholes for him to drill through.

All he could do now was to focus on eating as much 'food' as he can before the time ran out!

"Haha! Cousin sis! Your stomach is so round already! Do you still want to eat?"

"Noob tank, why are you taking off your helmet? Are you pregnant? Haha!"

The little brat was indeed talented in eating. She could still talk while chewing on the 'food'! More importantly, her words were crystal clear! Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could not help but admire the 'gift' that the little brat had.

'Ding! Congratulations! You have leveled up to level 119. You received a reward: 5 Attribute Points!'

...

'Ding! Congratulations! You have leveled up to level 115. You received a reward: 5 Attribute Points!'

...

‘Ding! Congratulations! You have leveled up to level 116. You received a reward: 5 Attribute Points!’

...

Two hours later, Zhang Yang and the ladies managed to level up once. However, the three of them were even fatter than the world’s fattest human alive on earth! Even if Zhang Yang wanted to do a french kiss with Han Ying Xue at that moment, the two of them would be having trouble locking each other’s lips while having their big round stomachs in-between them!

3 hours, 4 hours... 6 hours...

When they finally used up all the time allocated by the system, they were forcibly teleported to the entrance by the hole in the tree. It was the same hole that they had gone through when they first arrived at Secret Wonderland. The little girl Alice was also with them.

By that time, Zhang Yang had reached Level 122. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had reached Level 118 and Wei Yan Er had reached Level 119. The three of them suddenly became the world top three on the Global Level Ranking List. The fourth in place was a player named ‘Ghostly Buckingham’, who was only at level 115. That was 3 levels behind the level of Han Ying Xue!

It seemed that Zhang Yang and the two ladies have struck the jackpot with this quest!

Upon seeing the three of them rocket up their levels in such short period of time, many players began to make some noise on the forum about it. The Japan-Korea Region players were sworn enemies to Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke. Many of the players began to question the officials about it. How could a player... no... three players manage to level up so fast in such a short period of time? Could the three of them be cheating?

Although players could not use cheat engines in the game, they could

still take advantages of BUGs to grind their levels. Just like Zhang Yang back then. He used the Spider boss to grind his level by letting the boss lay eggs repeatedly so that he could slay the baby spiders repeatedly to spam for experience points. If the official ever finds out anything like that, they would take back the Levels that players 'stole' by taking advantages of the BUGs.

However, the complaints were informed to be invalid by the officials: Everything was under the surveillance of the system. No unfair means had been used.

So, the players from Japan-Korea Region could only lower their banners and muffle their drums regarding that issue. There were also other players who were curious about how did they level up so rapidly. What method did they use to be able to grind so quickly within half a day? They did not suspect it was part of the system reward because if it was, their levels would have been elevated up instantly. However, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were leveling up over the past 6 hours! So, what was really going on there?

If this continues to happen, a player could potentially reach Level 300 within days!

On the other hand, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were being very secretive about it. The other curious players could only feel the itch to know without being given an answer. Fortunately for them, Zhang Yang and the ladies did not level up any further after that. The anxiety and the tension among the servers was finally put to rest. If they could just simply level up like that, other players would definitely be frustrated over it.

Many players have guessed that Zhang Yang and the two ladies had completed some sort of hidden quest that rewarded them with such means of leveling up. However, none of them could understand the details of it. No matter how smart they were, no one would have thought that the levels were earned by 'eating'!

Before this, Zhang Yang aimed to reach Level 120 as soon as he could. Now that he had accomplished it, he could finally relax. So he was very

focused on gathering Herbs by sending out his [Herb Foraging Familiar]. Upon gathering enough materials, Zhang Yang began to make more [Armor Piercing Potions]. Now that the potions were out of stock on the market, Zhang Yang could make more, and sell more to earn another set of fortune!

Sadly, his other party members had not reached Level 120, other than himself. Powerful DPS players like Hundred Shots and Lost Dream should grind their levels up to Level 120 as soon as possible. By then, they would be able to remove the Level Gap Suppression function of the game when they battle Level 150 bosses. Although they might be a little short on numbers, everyone could simply activate their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills when the Level Gap Suppression function no longer affects. When another two players with Class S Inheritances and one player with Class A Inheritance joins in, then Lone Desert Smoke would be invincible in the World League Championships!

Dream Technology announced that the first World League Championships would be held in Los Angeles, America. All parties that were qualified to enter the competition would get free tickets, back and forth. Their lodgings during the competition period would be covered by the Organizing Committees.

The competition would be held on the 15th of January next year. The competition would go on for 4 days straight. As a safety measure, Zhang Yang and his party members would definitely travel over to the competition venue on the 14th. They would want to avoid any possible flight cancellation due to reasons such as a storm or other unforeseen circumstances. If that could happen, they might risk missing out the competition.

Silky Soft Battle Team had won the first place in the China Region S Class League Championship. However, the competition of acquiring the second place was extremely intense. The results would remain unknown until the very last second of the competition.

"Noob tank! Come back here! Quickly!"

Zhang Yang was currently grinding his level in the Hidayat Wilderness, a Level 120 - 150 map. It was not because the environment was suitable for ground level. Zhang Yang was there because he could allow his [Herb Foraging Familiar] to gather high Tier materials for him. The materials that his [Herb Foraging Familiar] could gather would allow Zhang Yang to earn even more!

Just as he was grinding his level halfway, he suddenly received Wei Yan Er's call.

--- a player can receive a call from the real world even as they are logged in the game. It was really convenient.

Zhang Yang was shocked, so he asked, "What's wrong?"

"Oh my god! Oh my god! You've got to come back now, noob tank! Wu wu wu!" The voice of Wei Yan Er was trembling in fear.

"Silly Yu, just come back quickly!" Zhang Yang could also hear Han Ying Xue's voice. Her voice was also trembling with fear as well!

Could it be Liu Wei? Did he finally come to take his revenge?

Zhang Yang jumped out of his chair and threw the game helmet aside. With a few heavy steps, he charged out of his office with a loud bang through his office door. His secretaries were shocked.

"That bastard! Liu Wei, if you dare lay any of your fingers on any of my girls, I will not mind to die with you one more time!" Zhang Yang's eyes were fueled with murderous intend. Han Ying Xue was his beloved woman, while Wei Yan Er was his girl he loved dearly as well. If anything were to happen to any one of them, or worse, two of them! Zhang Yang would definitely go berserk and do something crazy!

So why... why would Liu Wei make a move now! Even if he does not know Sun Xin Yu's background, but he had tasted the consequences of trying something funny with Zhang Yang. So he, of everyone, should know that things would not end well if he planned to mess with Zhang Yang! Everyone should just compete against each other in the light. If anyone would try something insidious and caustic under the table, the

consequences should be unbearable for anyone!

God damn it! Zhang Yang was on the verge of breaking!

He sped his sports car up as he was on his way back to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. He raced through several red lights to get there! It only took him about 12 minutes to get back to the house. Normally, it would take him about 20 minutes to do so!

"Witch! Little brat!" After getting into the house, Zhang Yang quickly shouted out their names. His voice was trembling with fear. He even felt that his own voice was unfamiliar to himself!

"--- noob tank?" weak voice of Wei Yan Er came from a corner of the house.

Zhang Yang immediately regained his conscious and reacted to the voice. He turned his head to the direction of Wei Yan Er's room. Her voice came from the room. Zhang Yang quickly took a few steps forward and kicked the door open with a powerful kick. Bang! What he saw before him was Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er holding each other tightly as they were trembling with fear. The two ladies were pale. It was obvious that they were terrified and scared of something! Something must have happened!

Fortunately, none of them were hurt.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. He could feel that his body had been drained of his energy the moment he knew that the two ladies were fine and safe. His legs were suddenly so weak that he fell and sat on the floor.

"Noob tank... quickly... help us change the disc!" Wei Yan Er pointed at the TV right in front of their beds and said.

Zhang Yang was stunned for one brief moment, then he said, "What disc?"

"I rented a vintage horror movie from the university. Now that we've finished watching the A-side of the disk, we are both terrified. Both of us dare not step off the bed. So we had to call you here to help us!" Wei Yan Er was acting innocent all over again. Then she continued to say, "We're at

a cliffhanger now. So quickly! Change the disk now!"

Zhang Yang could only frown intensely as he tried to get his anger back in place, "So, you called me back here just to ask me to change the disk...for you?"

"That's right! What else could it be!" Wei Yan Er was still talking, unaware of the 'danger' that she was about to face.

"I'm going to teach you a good lesson today, or you're going to turn the sky upside down! You little brat!" Zhang Yang walked up to the side of the bed swiftly and tugged the little brat out of her blanket! Then he pushed her down to the floor, facefirst. With his hand lifted high up, Zhang Yang smacked the palm of his hand straight on the little brat's buttocks! He did not hold his strength back at all!

"Argh ---" Wei Yan Er was afraid of pain. She immediately attempted to struggle and tried to get up from the floor. However, Zhang Yang was very strong! How would she beat Zhang Yang in term of strength then? She could only wriggle like a fish out water.

Piak! Piak! Piak!

Zhang Yang did not hold back at all as he continued to smack the little brat's buttocks. Wei Yan Er was smacked to the point that her pretty little face had turned pale. She began to sob and cry.

"You bastard! I'll never forgive you! I hate you! Wu wu wu... ouch! Wu wu wu.... I'm sorry! I was wrong! Please! Stop hitting me!" The little brat could no longer endure the pain and she began to beg for mercy from Zhang Yang.

Chapter 610: Level 120

Zhang Yang continued to smack the little brat without any restraint whatsoever. Then, he stopped and said, "Now do you know what would happen if you ever do this again? I care about you. I came all the way back here like a crazy person just to find out that you were just fooling around with me? One time, two times, three times! When you're really in great danger and you're in need of desperate help, would anyone still believe you and come for you?"

"Yan Er, ever heard of the boy who cried wolf!' huuu..." Han Ying Xue snickered.

Wei Yan Er looked more like a panda more than anything now. Her eyes were teary, while her expression was pitiful and yet funny. Furthermore, she kept blinking her huge eyes as she said, "Wu wu wu... noob tank... I was wrong! I'm sorry! Please don't hit me anymore... my buttocks are going to be split into four if you keep hitting them!"

Look at her pitiful face, Zhang Yang almost lost his composure to start laughing! However, he did not laugh. He fought the urge, as he needed to show the little brat some seriousness in this. He was trying to get rid of those weird immature things that were kept in that little brain of hers all day long.

On the other hand, Han Ying Xue was giggling while watching the drama between Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. She even reached out and pinched Wei yan Er's cheek, saying, "Yan Er, you're so cute! Quickly, pass me my phone! I need to take a photo of you like this!"

"Wu wu wu... Han Ying Xue you big 'milk cow'! I hate you! I curse you to drop your boobies into the wok when you're cooking!" Wei Yan Er tightened her teeth as she spoke.

"You too! Have some self-reflection and carefully think about your own behavior!" Zhang Yang also gave Han Ying Xue a glare. This woman had actually allowed that little brat to act so recklessly. Zhang Yang thought of teaching her a lesson as well!

Han Ying Xue looked at Zhang Yang with her sexy eyes and giggled, "Silly Yu... do you intend to beat up the elder sister as well?"

"You will not remember if I don't!" Zhang Yang pulled the blanket away and he exposed Han Ying Xue's body in the open. He was shocked. The little brat was wearing a body-warming-type of pajamas which had long trousers and long sleeves, an appropriate set of standard sleeping attire. On the other hand, this witch was wearing some sort of two-piece negligee!

On her upper body, she was wearing something that barely passed as a laced bra. The bra was pushing up her round and massive 'peaks' so tightly together that a long, deep line of cleavage was seen between the two boobies. Her lower portion was barely covered in a string. They had really saved the fabric materials on manufacturing this set of bikini-like network of strings! Right at her 'triangular zone', Zhang Yang's sharp and observant pair of eyes could make out the lovely mound. Some of her bush had even slipped out the skimpy sides!

Holy molly! Zhang Yang was rendered totally speechless at the fair and smooth-skinned body of the witch. The parts that were supposed to be small would comfortably fit in the palm of a hand. Meanwhile, the parts that were supposed to be large threatened to spill out even if two hands were used! Her legs were long and slender, just the type of legs that a top Tier model would have! Her white legs were fair and alluring!

Zhang Yang stared at it, frozen in wonder. Then, he pulled her onto himself, facefirst, so that he had access to her rear, and smacked that booty with all his might!

Piak!

His palm landed solidly on her buttocks as the sound of a loud slap was heard across the entire room. The surface of Han Ying Xue's meaty buttocks took such great impact that ripples went across the surface. It was hypnotic! Therapeutic! A new religion, perhaps?

What the hell! If her front was barely covered by a tiny piece of triangle, nothing covered her rear whatsoever! A string ran between her butt

cheeks. Her round and fair buttocks were completely exposed to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could feel a heatwave rushing to his chest as he stared long and hard at her buttocks. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue could not stand pain. She was letting out something between a moan and a cry. It triggered him, alright! She was still lying against him, her puffy marshmallows against his nether regions. Something hard started rising up, threatening to tear through his trousers, wanting nothing more than to nestle itself between the grand canyon!

He raised his hand up once again. The sound was loud but the slap was not. It was just like giving the buttocks a gentle tap! His palm slipped this time as he involuntarily gave a stroke on her soft and extremely elastic buttocks.

Han Ying Xue propped herself up and looked at Zhang Yang. She gave him a lewd, dreamy gaze as she licked her lips. Although they did not exchange words, they understood each other very well.

Zhang Yang said, "You disobedient woman! Get back to your own room! Now! I must teach you a lesson today!"

That was for Wei Yan Er to hear.

The little brat had no sympathy for the witch at all. She wanted the witch to suffer as quickly as possible! So she said, "That's right! It was cousin sis who persuaded me to call you, noob tank! I'm innocent!"

"You little brat --- argh!" Han Ying Xue could only make a scream before she was pulled into Zhang Yang's arms. Then, the two of them attempted to stumble out of the room without tripping each other over.

"Noob tank ---" right before Zhang Yang could set his foot out of the room, he heard the croaky voice of Wei Yan Er summoning him. He stopped, and the next thing he heard was Wei Yan Er saying, "Since you're back already, help me change the disc!"

Zhang Yang almost popped. This little brat had not reflected on her own actions at all! He had smacked her buttocks for nothing!

"You! Continue with your self-reflection! Now!"

With large, haphazard steps, the two of them found their way to Zhang Yang's room. The moment the door was shut, he lifted her up by her buttocks, sandwiching her between the door and himself. He kissed the red, seductive lips of Han Ying Xue with passion and fire.

When their lips parted and their tongues met, sparks coursed throughout their entire bodies. After kissing aggressively for 3 to 4 minutes, Han Ying Xue was already in the mood. She tugged down Zhang Yang's zip and said, "It's time for the main course after the appetizers."

Upon unleashing the Zhang Yang 'cannon', he no longer bothered to 'disarm' Han Ying Xue. He pulled off what little cloth that stood in the way and ventured straight into the flooded swamp. He did not hold back at all, offering no quarter as he began his conquest. It was a brutal, violent, jackhammering!

The witch's eyes rolled into her skull as she could only hold on to Zhang Yang's neck and shoulders for the ride that shifted the tectonic plates. She was worried that her heart would pound out from her chest as the sensations overwhelmed her body.

...

Tens of minutes later, the storm came to an end. Zhang Yang now had his back against the door, using the contact point where his shoulders and the surface of the door met as a fulcrum for his shoveling, while Han Ying Xue leaned on him, her feet not touching the ground once. Although the 'battle' had only gone on for tens of minutes, the two of them had never had such an intense session. The two of them were extremely exhausted to the point that they stood in silence for a time, doing nothing but to pant together.

"It felt different today!" Han Ying Xue drew circles with her finger on Zhang Yang's chest. With the touch of her gentle and soft hand, Zhang Yang felt like he was being a little reignited even after he had already let his cannon loose.

Zhang Yang did not say anything.

He had many thoughts in his mind as he was rushing back to the house,

He could not imagine how a day would go by without Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. His life would become empty and lifeless! Although it was just the little brat's false alarm, Zhang Yang had clearly seen how much the two of them meant to him!

"But, I like it! This time, I could really feel that thing there really, really loving me!" Han Ying Xue directed her seductive gaze into Zhang Yang's eyes. Her eyes narrowed with clear intent as she bent over so that her massive chest flooded over Zhang Yang's rock-hard pectorals. Her perfectly shaped torso came to rest upon his body. It was like how a female knight would lean on the back of her horse as she gallops through a battlefield, lance lowered and ready. Such an aggressive stance!

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. Men and women were not the same at all when it came down to having sex. He was exhausted after having to 'feed' two ladies last night. He had just fired another shot a moment ago. So it would take a miracle for his 'cannon' to operate again anytime soon!

"Aiyo... you were so fierce just now... now you're making a pitiful face to get my sympathy?" The witch began to toy with Zhang Yang's 'cannon' again as she revealed a sense of on her face, "In the name of the moon... I'll punish you!"

"Witchy Snow! Let's get married!"

"Oh! You have finally become determined to take me as your lawful wife?" Han Ying Xie was feeling surprised.

"No! We can find a country that allows a man to have many wives. We can go there, get married and come back here!"

The expression on Han Ying Xue's face instantly changed from sunny to rainy. Her soft carress turned into a violent, twisting grip. Zhang Yang felt an excruciating pain and he jumped up to the air!

"You witch! Stop! Let go!"

"Pui! You're such a horny big bastard! Are you still thinking of having women on your left and right? Humph! There's no way for me to be on equal footing with that cold and ruthless b*tch! No way at all!" Han Ying

Xue snarled as if the Ice queen and her were sworn enemies.

"Argh --- you're killing your husband!"

...

These two women were very odd creatures. They did not mind having a 3P sec together. So why would they still fight over for a 'status' like their lives depended on it?

Zhang Yang did not go back to the company. He was persuaded by Han Ying Xue to stay. After changing the disc for the two ladies, he accompanied them to watch the horror movie. He could not help but laugh at the two ladies' various reactions.

After logging into the game, Zhang Yang only focused on two main tasks. The first was to make tons of potions for selling. The next task was to focus on aiding Fatty Han and the others in grinding their levels and help them achieve Level 120. Although the special effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] had been greatly nerfed, Zhang Yang could still deal deadly AoE attacks to all his targets. His {Thunder Strike} and {Blast Wave} had become even more powerful thanks to the boost that his attributes had.

Meanwhile his {Horizontal Sweep} was even more terrifying! He could activate his {God of War Transformation} once every three days. It would let him slaughter with even more joy when he does so. Furthermore, his most powerful monster-slaughtering Skill was actually his {Dragon Rising Strike}, which he had no control over. It could allow Zhang Yang to deal a damage 10 times higher than his initial damage. His {Horizontal Sweep} could cover up to an area of 100-meter radius. If the effects of {Dragon Rising Strike} kicked during a {Horizontal Strike}, even elite Tier monsters would lose approximately 25% to 35% of their HP in one hit!

Zhang Yang had spent all his energy and mind in aiding the others to level up. He would not party with anyone, simply tagging along. He would allow the others to have the final strike on the monsters before they die. By doing so, the players who gave the last hit to the monsters would earn 50% of the total experience that the monsters would give!

Under his strong support, Wei Yan Er was the first to reach Level 120. Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Daffodil Daydream were the next to follow. In just a short while, the rest of the party members had also reached Level 120. By the end of December, all members of Zhang Yang's regular party, except for Endless Starlight had reached Level 120.

Zhang Yang had only leveled up by 2 levels. It was slow progress, as he had spent more time helping his party members instead of focusing on his own levels.

Upon reaching Level 120, the most significant change was actually done to everyone's Battle Companions and their Pets. The initial equipment on Pets and Battle Companions would level up automatically as they level up. That alone had made them so much better than the players in terms of leveling up.

Currently, Felice had over 267,480 HP (With Vitality Aura) while she is in her humanoid form. Her Attack ranged from 31,397 to 41,397 while her Defense was 5,200! When she transforms into her Dragonhawk form, her HP would reach up to 168,740 HP (With Vitality Aura). her Magic Attack would range from 19,502 to 23,502 while her Defense is merely 880. However, she had over 5,200 Magic Resistance!

On the other hand, Thunderhawk's statistics were as below:

HP: 219,310

Magic Attack: 19,502 - 23,502

Defense: 880

The Attack power of Magic-type Battle Companions and Pets were the easiest ones to count. Because they only had one single-target Skill which required only a 2-second chanting period of time. They would be able to deal 200% additional Magic damage on their targets. So, their Magic Attack would just be equal to their DPS. Felice and Thunderhawk could deal approximately 21,000 damage in every second. As long as they do not encounter a boss with high Magic-Resistance, they should be able to deal terrifying damage!

Now, they were finally ready. They can finally go on to challenge the final bosses of the quests for Class A, Class S Inheritances.

After the gang prepared all sorts of potions, they hopped onto their [Flying Mounts] and departed towards the Kandiya Grasslands. The main purpose of this expedition would be to slay the final boss of Wei Yan Er's Darkness Inheritance quest, Zhamido. As for Endless Starlight and the others, they were 'heartlessly' left behind in the dungeon. They had to lead their brothers and sisters of Lone Desert Smoke to repeat the Dragon Throat Fortress again and again for equipment and items.

--- the person that replaced him was Galileo. That boy with a pretty face had already acquired his Light and Shadow Inheritance. Furthermore, he had recently reached Level 120. He was now the big gun of the main party!

Do not underestimate the small difference between Level 120 and Level 110+. The idea of 'difference' is an understatement. Now that they had entered the Kandiya Grasslands, they would not be simply attacked by monsters unless they deliberately went around hunting for them.

Well, they were already extremely familiar with the whereabouts of Zhamido --- after being wiped out by the boss for over dozens of times, they could even find the boss with their eyes closed. After flying through the sky for more than 3 hours, they arrived at a small valley enshrouded in dark mist all over the place.

Chapter 611: The Dark Knight

This is the old lair of The Dark Knight Zhamido, the Silent Death Valley!

Large powerful bosses would have a marked advantage. They would usually have a large number of monsters around them. There would also be bosses that were located in vast, however, having no other monsters at all around them. Players could just engage in battle with the boss without the trouble of fighting other monsters --- Of course, there were also some exemptions such as the Wraith King and the Demon Lord. There would be millions of monsters surrounding them!

However, The Dark Knight Zhamido was alone in the boss stage. He was the only one 'alive' in the entire valley... oh, his War Horse too!

[The Dark Night Zhamido, The Mouth of Death] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 150

HP: 450,000,000

Melee Attack: 75,409 - 95,409

Defense: 9.950

Skills:

[War Horse's Trample]: Zhamido commands his War Horse to shock the ground, causing 80,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the area of a 40-meter radius.

[Fatal Strike]: Strikes the hammer on a target, causing 100% Melee Attack

[Darkness Aura]: Darkness will shroud up everyone within the effective area of the Aura. Targets will be afflicted with 10% rate to become blind once in every 3 seconds. Last for 5 seconds. Aura Range: With Dark Knight Zhamido as the center point, by an area of 40-meter radius.

[Death Entanglement]: Causes 100,000 Shadow Damage to the target. At the same time, recovers Zhamido's HP by 200,000 points.

[Immortality Build]: Recover 2% HP once in every 30 seconds. The

amount of HP recovery will not be affected by any other Effects.

Note: The Dark Knight Zhamido was once a Sacred Knight that believed in the Light. However, he was unable to resist the temptation of the Darkness as he fell to the Dark side. No one in the world would deny the talent and strength that he had! He once single-handedly destroyed the notorious Bayari Bandits!

The Dark Knight wore a set of armor that was completely pitch black. Even the metallic armors that his War Horse wore were all black in color. The only part that was not entirely black was the two ignited flames of Spectre. They were green in color.

Zhamido could be deemed to be much more powerful than Hachilles, even without his {Immortality Build} which allowed him to recover 2% of his HP once every 30 seconds. That Hachilles could only recover 1% HP once every 30 seconds while Zhamido could recover 2% HP! That made him worthy to be the final boss for the quest of a Class A Inheritance!

Zhamido had over 450,000,000 HP and he could recover 2% of that amount of HP once every 30 seconds. In other words, he could recover up to 9,000,000 HP once, every 30 seconds! That would mean that he could recover over 300,000 HP in one second!

Hence, the party should deal more than 300,000 damage within 30 seconds in order to deal effective damage to Zhamido! Furthermore, Zhamido could also activate his {Death Entanglement} to deal damage to his enemies while healing himself! If the boss can frequently activate his {Death Entanglement}, it would become extremely difficult for the party to bring down the boss's HP!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath in and said, "We shall activate our Inheritance Transformation Skills together and settle this within 2 hours! If we can't, the boss will settle us instead!"

"Alright!"

Casting aside the issue about the total damage that they could deal to the boss, Zhang Yang and his party would still be facing a great chance of failing again if they did not have Inheritance Transformation Skills with

them. Even if the Level Gap Suppression function could no longer affect them, the healing capability of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart still had not caught up to the damage that the boss could deal on the party. Therefore, they must kill the boss within 2 hours in order to solve that problem.

"Take your potions and move out!" Zhang Yang took a bottle of Level 4 Power Potion. At the same time, he activated his {God of War Transformation} and his radiating wings sprouted out of his back, illuminating the surroundings. Zhang Yang fluttered his wings and flew straight into the sky. In a flash, he appeared right in front of the boss! He swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at the neck of the boss and triggered the boss battle!

‘-125,922!’

It felt great, without the limitation that the Level Gap Suppression function! Zhang Yang could finally strike with the power that is rightfully his! The damage that he could deal to this boss no longer sucked!

Hundred Shots, Lost Dreams and the rest activated their Inheritance Transformations as well. Then, the party began to launch their assaults on the boss as aggressively as they could.

"Who dares interrupt me while I was in deep thought!" Zhamido let out a screeching voice. His voice was like a supersonic, literally! The rocks and stones in the surroundings were trembling as the voice of the boss echoed through the entire area. Some of the rocks even cracked, as fragments of rocks crumbled down!

The spectral flames that were burning dimly in within the two eye-sockets of the boss suddenly burst to life as they locked on Zhang Yang. He reached out and grabbed hold of a large hammer with runes all over it. The next thing the boss did was to swing the hammer straight towards Zhang Yang!

Just before the hammer could land on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang raised his shield up and protected himself from the powerful strike of the boss. A loud sound when the hammer and the surface of the shield clashed

against each other echoed across the surroundings. The hammer clashed solidly into the shield and Zhang Yang was sent flying back by the powerful impact of the strike! In terms of strength, players would never be able to match with the high Tier bosses.

"Hahaha! I shall make drinking cups out of your skulls!" Zhamido let out a sharp voice once again. It was extremely unpleasant to the ears of others.

"The description forgot to mention the boss has another Skill called 'Brain-Piercing Demonic Voice'! It's so annoying!" Lost Dream could not help but ridicule the boss.

"That's right! It's like using a sharp stone to scratch the surface of glass! That screeching sound is deafening!" Fantasy Sweetheart nodded to express her agreement.

"Open up your settings menu and lower down the fx!" Zhang Yang said. At the same time, he threw his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss.

Resisted!

Well, everyone was getting used to it already. The rate of being resisted was much higher than the rate of success, after all.

However, it would not matter much anymore, as the Level Gap Suppression function of the game had finally been 'nullified'. Everyone could finally perform at their regular standard. The players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills were performing even better than expected as their firepower combined into something amazing!

'-262,289!' {Horizontal Strike}!

'-369,332!' {God of War Devastation}!

'-62,932!' {Cripple Defense Add-on}!

The Attack power of Zhang Yang could shame 99% of the players in the game! Furthermore, the special effect of the {Cripple Defense} which could provide an additional 50% damage to the weapon was triggered! It

caused approximately 60,000 damage to the boss! Well, the {Cripple Defense} of 90% Tankers in the game could only reduce the Defense of bosses. Without any reduction in the boss's Defense, the attacks from other players would only be able to forcefully cause 1 point of damage. They would not be able to penetrate through the high Defense of the boss!

In Zhang Yang's case, he was able to equip a two-handed weapon. Furthermore, he could increase his Attack by 5 times upon activating his {God of War Transformation}. Therefore, Zhang Yang could manage to amplify the damage dealt on the boss by up to 60,000 damage!

"Darkness shall devour you all!" Zhamido let out a thunderous roar as the War Horse reared on its hind legs all of a sudden. Then, the horse began to stomp the ground repeatedly. A rumbling sound began to echo across the surroundings and the surface of the ground began to crack. Fragments of broken rocks began to shoot out randomly and caused approximately 80,000 basic damage to everyone in the surroundings.

Players who activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills, like Hundred Shots and Lost Dream now had 20 times their HP. Therefore, that amount of damage was still bearable for them. On the other hand, although the ladies had not acquired their Inheritances yet, they had powerful Mythical Tier equipment. The total amount of HP on each of them had exceeded 100,000 HP! Furthermore, their mounts provided them with even more HP! That total amount exceeded 150,000 HP! After receiving a hit from the boss, they would still have almost half of their HP left. So the attack did not pose any lethal threat to any of them!

This is the advantage of having an elite party!

If it was the Crimson Rage division that had been sent to fight Hachilles going up against this boss, that wave of damage from the boss's {War Horse's Trample} would have killed a few dozen players back there!

However, the large-scale AoE Skills of big bosses would usually have a much shorter cooldown period. In just approximate 10 seconds, the boss had activated his {War Horse's Trample} once again as he commanded his war horse to stomp on the ground as heavily as possible.

With the Skill being activated once again so soon, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies were forced to retreat.

Although Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were healing the others at their very best, it would not be possible for them to heal everyone up within approximately 10 seconds. Upon receiving another wave of damage from {War Horse's Trample}, they quickly withdrew from the front line and got out of the effective range of the {War Horse's Trample}. They could not afford to get another hit from the same attack again. It was wiser to retreat first.

Players who already had their own Inheritances had no reason to fear. Normally, Inheritances that are Class C and above would provide a life-saving Skill. Even without any support from the Healers, they could still activate their life-saving Skills and survive for another few minutes --- provided that they are not the main targets of the boss!

Upon reaching beyond Level 120, the special effect of [Titan Chest Plate] that could allow players to recover HP had dropped even further. Zhang Yang could only recover 1% of his HP every second when the special effect is triggered. Therefore, he could only recover 10% HP with each activation of his {Shield Wall}. However, Zhang Yang had over 211,580 HP at the moment. His HP could reach up to 8,500,000 HP when he activates his {God of War Transformation}. That being said, he could still recover 850,000 HP by activating his {Shield Wall}. Furthermore, he would be able to activate his {Shield Wall} once every 150 seconds. He would be recovering more than 5,000 HP each second! It was a significant amount!

Other than that, Zhang Yang had over 26,600 Defense and 4,612 Damage Absorption effect. Each normal attack of the boss could averagely cause about 40,000 damage to him. He could also activate his {Block} once every 6 seconds, reducing the amount of damage that he would receive each second down to 14,000 damage!

The Skills of the boss that annoyed him the most were the {Death Entanglement}, the {War Horse's Trample} and the {Fatal Strike}.

{War Horse's Trample} would be activated once every 12 seconds. {Death

Entanglement} would be activated once every 30 seconds. {Fatal Strike} would be activated once every 20 seconds. With these attacks accounted for, the boss should be able to increase his DPS up to 30,000 damage.

The boss would cause AoE attacks to all targets with his {War Horse's Trample} while he could recover some HP with his {Death Entanglement}. Meanwhile, the boss could also slightly reduce the healing efficiency of Zhang Yang with his {Fatal Strike}. Every single Skill that the boss made the fight all the more challenging.

Well, only Lone Desert Smoke has the capability of sending in one player with Class S Inheritance and four players with Class B Inheritance. That was how they managed to create a possibility for themselves to take down a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss with a small party!

The Battle Companions seemed to be much weaker in such battles. Only Healing-type Battle Companions could contribute to the battle by supporting the players with their healing abilities. The Assault-type Battle Companions were not able to reach their full potential in dealing damage to the boss, as they could not find much of a chance to touch the boss, to begin with. Since the party members were in desperate need of healing, the Healers did not heal the Battle Companions at all!

Fortunate for them, the rate of activation for {War Horse's Trample} was constant and thus, predictable. The Battle Companions could run up to the boss and launch their attacks for 3 seconds before they would have to withdraw. By doing so, they could at least support the party by dealing some damage to the boss without adding pressure to the Healers.

In contrast to the Battle Companions, the Pet Mounts greatly aided the players. When the players were mounted on their Pet Mounts, the Pet Mounts would not receive any damage at all. As long as the players are still alive, the Pet Mounts would be able to dish out all their damage to the enemy. However, Zhang Yang could no longer mount his Pet Mount upon activating his {God of War Transformation}. So Thunderhawk could only join the Battle Companions as they supported the players from the rear.

"Let the darkness devour you!" Zhamido continued to screech in a sharp

voice that pierced through everyone's ears. His voice could also be considered as an 'effect' that affected the battle a little. It was extremely annoying even though it could not cause any damage to everyone!

As the party was struggling through the battle under the influence of the boss's voice, the boss activated his {Darkness Aura}. This Skill was the only Skill that would not cause any damage to the players. However, the Skill was as annoying as the other Skills that the boss would use. It caused the players to lose sight of the battle every once in a while. They would not be able to attack or to do anything at all, whenever that happens. It could almost halt the DPS of the party completely!

90%, 80%, 70%... The Inheritance Transformation Skills were really packing a punch on the boss. Without the effect of Level Gap Suppression function, the HP bar of the boss was decreasing rapidly!

In just 40 minutes, the HP bar of Zhamido had entered below 20%. That was the time when the party had finally entered the 'killing cleave' stage.

Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow Clones} to increase the rate of his attacks. Upon reaching beyond Level 120, he had acquired an additional Skill Point. So he added the Skill Point to his {Shadow Clone} skill, upgrading it up to Level 3. Now, he could summon 3 Shadow Clones at the same time. Although each of his Shadow Clones could only deal 10% of the damage that he could deal to the enemy, 3 Shadow Clones would mean that he has acquired 30% additional damage.

Upon activating {Indiscriminate} and gulping down a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], Zhang Yang struck the boss with his {Killing Cleave}!

'- 2,937,948!'

'- 293,794!'

'- 293,795!'

'- 293,794!'

Thanks to {Indiscriminate}, everything was a guaranteed critical hit! Furthermore, the {Lucky Strike} was triggered at the same time, causing an

extremely high damage value that reached up to 3,000,000 damage! Furthermore, the 3 Shadow Clones provided additional toppings to the cream. So Zhang Yang and the Shadow Clones had managed to cause approximately 4,000,000 damage to the boss in that instant. They had struck away almost 1% of the boss's HP in one go!

"What the f*ck! That strike was insane! Zhan Yu!" Lost Dream was breathless after seeing Zhang Yang taking out about 1% HP of the boss with only one strike. Even though the boss had a long HP bar, that 1% reduction was significant. Everyone was shocked by that.

Wei Yan Er felt envious, then she said, "Haha! Just wait till I get my hands on my Darkness Inheritance! Then, I shall be able to do that as well!"

"You bastards! You're merely puny mortals! It's impossible for your power to match mine! I'm the god of Darkness! I'm invincible! I'm undefeated!" Zhamido let out a roar. Well, it was more of a screech than a roar! The War Horse was stomping the ground more frequently than ever, and the effect of {War Horse's Trample} spread across the ground endlessly!

Under such a heavy onslaught, any player without an Inheritance would not be able to withstand the waves of damage at all. Han Ying Xue and the other ladies had to flee altogether. Hundred Shots and the other DPS players had to withdraw as well, after hitting the boss for a little while. They had to withdraw from the front line to the rear to get healed up by Han Ying Xue and the other Healers. The Healer-type Battle Companions also aided in healing up the rest of the party members.

15%, 12%, 9%!

Zhang Yang's courage was mounting as the battle continued to progress. On the other side of things, the boss was backed against the ropes. He was on the brink of his death!

However, Zhang Yang was forced to use all his life-saving Skills as well, while holding out against the waves of bombardments from the boss. In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang had already burned up all of his life-

saving Skills and attack Skills. If they still could not kill the boss as soon as possible, Zhang Yang would have to give in and die as well.

Hundred Shots and the others were aware of the situation. After getting healed up a little, they charged back into the battle to ease Zhang Yang's stress. The Skills of Hunters and Thieves had cooldown periods as well. They also required Focus Points and Energy Points to activate their Skills. By withdrawing and getting back to the front line, they managed to wait out for the cooldown period and their FP and EP had enough time to recover, just enough for them to activate their Skills again! Although they might have lost a little DPS efficiency by doing so, the effects were not fatal.

8%, 5%, 2%!

"You damned pests! There's no way that you can defeat me! No way!" Zhamido became hysterical as he began to make his final attempt to struggle against the inevitable!

"We're almost there! I smell victory!" Wei Yan Er was overwhelmed by joy as she began to jump around in excitement. Previously, they had failed to kill the boss so many times. Now that the boss was on the brink of his own demise, the little brat was super happy. She finally let go of her grudge that she had left brewing for a very long time.

"No! No! No!" Zhamido screamed in misery as his last drop by HP was emptied out. The Dark Knight fell from the back of his War Horse and collapsed heavily on the ground. The War Horse neighed violently as it stomped its hoofs on the ground repeatedly. Then, the horse ran off into the wild and disappeared from everyone's view.

"Haih! Husband and wife are birds of the same forest. But when disaster strikes, they fly off in different directions for safety! So now that the husband is no longer 'reliable', the horse ran away! Haha!"

Chapter 612: The First Step to Acquiring Phoenix Pet

The moment when the boss was dead, Wei Yan Er rushed up to the boss and picked up all of the loot on the ground. She was giggling with joy after seeing the amount of coins she got.

"Wa --- Yan Er is going to get her Class A Inheritance!" Lost Dream and the others were envious. They were not patient enough to wait for the appearance of other Class A Inheritance previously, they had made a 'fatal' decision to take a Class B Inheritance for themselves. Now, they could only look at other with regret.

"Haha! From now on, you guys should just call me Wonder Girl Little Yan Er!"

Everyone laughed. Zhang Yang bent down and picked up all the loot from the ground.

The boss was not generous at all. He had only dropped 4 pieces of equipment upon his death. However, items and equipment dropped by Open World bosses were usually unique. Unique items and equipment were usually impossible to be found among loot that have been dropped by bosses from common dungeons! Among the 4, there were two Ethereal Tier equipment. These two were the best equipment at the current stage of the game. Theoretically speaking, players would need to clear Level 170 dungeons in order to acquire Ethereal Tier equipment. Furthermore, the Ethereal Tier equipment would not have the Special that could reduce the Required Level by 20 levels.

It made sense after all. Players could repeat a dungeon as many times as they like. The refresh rate of a dungeon would usually be short as well. If the items and equipment that drop upon clearing a dungeon are not adjusted appropriately, many players would be able to acquire unique equipment just by farming in dungeons. By then, would those so-called 'unique' items and equipment still be unique?

The two pieces of Mythical Tier equipment were ignored by the gang. Everyone had their eyes on the two pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment,

"It's so much better for us to kill a boss on our own! Everything dropped would be ours to take!" Fatty Han sighed as he recalled back to the memory where they were aiding Crimson Rage in slaying Hachilles. By the end of it, they had only acquired a piece of Alchemist Recipe --- although that piece of recipe did bring endless fortune upon them.

Zhang Yang laughed and pasted the link to the attributes of the first Ethereal Tier equipment on the party chat.

It was a dark-blue amulet that could cover one's entire neck just by wearing it.

[Amoss's Nose Hoop] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,167

Strength: +396

Agility: +396

Equip: Increase Maximum HP by 2,330 points.

Equip: Increase both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increase 340 Damage Absorption when being hit.

Equip: Your normal attack will have 7% rate to increase 20% additional damage to your next Skill attack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduce 20 levels of the Required Level

Note: Amoss was a Minotaur Warrior. His legendary tales were so abundant that they could be compiled into a thick book!

... a nose hoop. Everyone was disgusted upon hearing the name of it. However, the attributes of the nose hoop were very appealing. Everyone was tempted to take it. After all, this was an authentic Ethereal Tier equipment. Furthermore, they could already equip it the moment they get

to Level 130! It would not be long before they would reach Level 130 anyway!

"Roll for it then." Zhang Yang nodded. Without wasting any more breath over it, everyone rolled to see where their luck would lead them.

The nose hoop was a unique Physical-type equipment. Any other equipment of the same type with the same level would never match this unique equipment. Warriors, Thieves, Hunters or Knights, all of them did not wait for the opportunity to slip away as they rolled and let the system decide on who should have it.

By the end of it, Zhang Yang triumphed over Wei Yan Er. He got 97 points while Wei Yan Er only got 96 points! There he went, shoving the necklace into his inventory with joy.

"Humph! I don't feel like having a stinky nose hoop that was worn by a Minotaur anyway! Pui!" Wei Yan Er lost only by one point, so she could only comfort herself with that little mouth of hers.

The party chuckled lightly at that statement. Then, they turned their attention towards the second Ethereal Tier equipment.

It was a refined leather armor made with master craftsmanship. The leather armor had all sorts of runes that formed multiple mysterious magic circles all over the surface of the equipment. The equipment was glittering with the radiance of morning light. It was mesmerizing to look upon it.

[Hell Lord Rune Chest Plate] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +192

Magic Defense: +192

Vitality: +4,668

Strength: +680

Agility: +1586

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 9,330 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increases 679 Damage Absorption when being hit.

Use: Forms a Magic-Reflector Shield. Can reflect all Magic-type attacks (Including Healing Spells). Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 4 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level

"Wow! This is an item that could turn a player into the public nemesis of all Spellcasters in the entire game!" Daffodil Daydream screamed. Players who equip it would not only have Magic Resistance, but also the ability to form a Magic-Reflector! It was obvious that the purpose of designing such equipment would be to put down Spellcasters and Witch Doctors!

"Hmm... that's right! Once the Magic-Reflector is on, Spell-type players will only be able to stare at their opponent!"

Unfortunately, as the equipment could disrupt the balance of a 1-VS-1 match, this equipment would not be allowed to be equipped during any League Championship. It was an adjustment made by the system: You seldom see players fighting one on one in Open World Player VS Player matches. Players would usually battle in numbers. Although this equipment would be powerful, others would still be able to work around the specialized defense.

Hundred Shots, Sun Xin Yu and the others that required Leather Armor participated in rolling for the equipment, and even Wei Yan Er felt like joining into the bet as well! Although the equipment was just a piece of Leather Armor, the Defense attributes of it were much higher than the Defense attributes of a Mythical Tier Heavy Armor. It was more of a metallic hide than a piece of leather! Furthermore, it would also greatly boost the Vitality, the Agility of the players who wear it. The only thing that was lacking was the Strength attribute boost.

Finally, the equipment was claimed by Lost Dream, He could not help but smile in joy.

Other than the four equipment, the boss also dropped other additional loot: A [Skill Book], a piece of [Skill Point Crystal] and three [Middle-tier Chaos Gems].

One [Middle-tier Chaos Gem] could expand the inventory of a player by 20 slots!

No one would ever complain about having additional slots in the inventory. Therefore, everyone began to roll for the three [Middle-tier Chaos Gem]. Zhang Yang was lucky enough to get one of the three. With that, his inventory was expanded to 210 slots.

Naturally, the [Skill Point Crystal] was even more precious than the three Chaos Gems. After rolling for it, Sun Xin Yu won the bet and kept the item in her inventory.

The last item was a [Skill Book] named after the name 'Angel's Compassion'. The Classes were limited to Priests and Holy Knights only. Obviously, it had to be some sort of healing or buffing ability.

Since that there was no Holy Knights among their party members, only Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart qualified for it. So the two of them began to roll for it. By the end of the 'contest', Witch Snow was the one who rolled out her best luck and claimed the [Skill Book]. Upon learning the Skill, she posted the description of the Skill on the party chat.

[Angel's Compassion (Level 1)]: Casts a shield to everyone in the same party (Maximum 10 players). Lasts for 30 seconds or after absorbing damage equivalent to 500% of the amount of your Magic Attack value. When the shield is effective, the targets can recover 1% HP every second. On every additional level up, you can cast the shields on two additional targets. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

The gang was amazed by the description of the Skill --- it was very impressive!

That was right! This could be one of the best healing Skills at the current stage of the game! The Skill did not just allow the players with the shield to absorb a substantial amount of damage but also allowed the players to recover 1% HP in each second! Although 1% HP seemed a little low, it

would really add up if players activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills! Furthermore, the Shield would support multiple party members at the same time, 10 players to be exact! When the Skill is upgraded up to Level 10, the user could support up to 28 players in the same party with this Skill! The possibilities are mind-boggling!

The party almost broke into a cheer. With Han Ying Xue learning the Skill, the survival capability of the entire party would definitely increase by a lot. There should be nothing better than this, for now.

After killing the boss, the party dispersed, as everyone had something of their own to settle at the moment,

Wei Yan Er went on to complete the final steps of getting her Inheritance. It would only take a day or two for her. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang brought Fatty Han along and headed over to the Aomori Moss Land. That would be the location where Hunters could trigger the Hidden Quest for the Phoenix Pet.

Because there were only 10 of them in the party, without the support of their Inheritance Transformation Skills, Zhang Yang and his party would stand no chance at all in bringing down the final boss of a Class S Inheritance quest. Therefore, they were forced to wait for three days until the cooldown period for their Inheritance Transformation Skills were all over. By then, the party should be able to take down the final bosses of Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu's Class S Inheritance quests. Lone Desert Smoke would have 3 players with Class S Inheritances, by then!

"Little Yang, why are you being so secretive while dragging me across half the planet over here?" Fatty Han could not stand being dragged around by Zhang Yang anymore. So he began to ask Zhang Yang for some explanations.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I've seen the information on the official website. There should be an NPC who will give a Hunter's only Hidden Quest. The rewards should be extremely good! Since we're both waiting for our Inheritance Transformation Skills to cool off, why not make use of our time and earn some good stuff!"

"You could have simply said so earlier! Haha!" Fatty Han nudged Zhang Yang with his elbow, gently, of course. The two of them walked into a small village together.

It was an ancient village that seemed to have existed since the time of the ancients. The villagers were all human. There was a big difference between the way the villagers dressed the way people from other places dressed. It was most probably because they had been isolated from the outside world for far too long.

"Haih! When can I taste the barbecued meat of a Mello Ram again..." there was an old man standing by a little cottage not far from where they stood. The old man was mumbling audibly. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han could catch on to every word he said, if they paid attention.

"Old man! Stop dreaming about it already! Mello Rams can only be located in the deepest parts of the forest. Even the best Hunters do not dare to step foot into that part of the forest! Just eat what you have now!" An old lady came out of the little cottage and shoved two white buns into the old man's mouth. Then she went back into the cottage.

[Old Hunter Karnoss] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 36,400

Note: Karnoss was an outstanding Hunter when he was young. Although he is old now, his knowledge and experience would always remain with him!

Zhang Yang smiled politely, and said, "Old man, we're on our way to hunt. So where's the Mello Ram that you mentioned a moment ago? If we get to hunt it down, we shall cut you a deal and give you some of the rewards!"

"Haha! Mello Ram is so much more than you've heard! It's not just a simple and tamed ram! Although they don't eat meat, they are far more ferocious than any beast I've ever known! Even tigers tend to stay away from them! Young man, please do me a favor and stop thinking about

dying for nothing!" Karnoss told Zhang Yang and Fatty Han with a serious face.

"If we succeed, what's in for us then?" Zhang Yang smiled.

"Hehe, then I shall give my previous bow that I've kept for tens of years!" Karnoss replied.

'Ding! Karnoss has given you a quest: Hunt for the Mello Ram. Do you accept?'

Of course! That was the first step to activating the hidden quest that both of them had been looking for!

[Hunt for the Mello Ram] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: You've made a bet with Karnoss. You bet that you can hunt down one of the most notorious beasts in the mountains --- The Mello Ram! Warrior, you better be prepared. Not everyone is capable of handling the Mello Ram! Don't get yourself killed just because you thought you could one-up an old Hunter!

Completion: Kill Mello Ram 0/1

Quest reward: Karnoss's Ancient Bow

[Karnoss's Ancient Bow] (Violet-Platinum, Bow)

Attack: 3,618 - 4,618

Attack Interval: 3.3 seconds

DPS: 1,248

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases your damage by 5%.

Required Level: 130

Chapter 613: Hunt for the Mello Ram

"Wow! This quest is giving me a Violet-Platinum bow! Wow! Woohoo!" Fatty Han immediately shouted out with sarcasm like an ungrateful son of a b*tch. He tried to act as if he had never seen a good equipment before.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Fatty... we are now capable of taking on Ethereal Tier bosses like a normal routine. Why can't you just be better than this? You should wet your pants over Holy Tier equipment, not this!"

"Haha!" Fatty Han did not feel any shame as he laughed it off, "This equipment is not bound upon pickup. I shall sell it when I get it!"

Zhang Yang frowned, When did this wretched fatty learn how to act like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er? All he could think about was money? Why would he need so much money then?

Zhang Yang did not pry further as he knew that the fatty would say that he would use the money to get married and to get the financial support for the baby powder to be used by his future son. He would crap tons of endless sh*t from his mouth, all day long. Zhang Yang wanted to avoid that. So he urged the fatty to move his *ss.

After leaving the village, both of them summoned their Pets and headed towards the deep part of the jungle. At first, they encountered quite a number of normal Tier monsters such as wolves and leopards. It only took one hit from Felice to kill them all. Fatty Han could not help but feel envious of her. After all, his big boobie Battle Companion Napolita had initially started off as Yellow-Gold Tier. Although he had given a number of Violet-Platinum equipment to Napolita, it would still be much weaker than Felice who already has an entire set of Mythical Tier equipment on her!

However, the main reason why Fatty Han chose Napolita as his Battle Companion was not based on her capability in dealing a large amount of damage. It was simply because of one 'boring' reason. The wretched fatty said, "Little Yang, take a good look at that ---"

Every time Napolita swung her weapon, that pair of juicy boobies would shake and jiggle violently!

"Isn't it marvelous?" the wretched fatty began to reveal a perverted smile on his face.

Zhang Yang cupped his hands upon his own forehead, then he said, "If I did not know better that you already have a girlfriend, I would have thought that you would even drool upon seeing a female pig! You look like you just came out of jail after decades without seeing a woman!"

"Haha! This is called 'Discover the sexy stuff'! How was it? Are you contented to see that?" The fatty was beyond redemption!

Zhang Yang did not want to waste his breath at Fatty Han, so he patted Thunderhawk and charged forward. The jungle was thick. They would not be able to see what was on the ground clearly if they were to fly too high up. Therefore, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han commanded their Flying Mounts to go on foot.

It seemed that it was part of the system's purpose.

Players could simply fly across the jungle if they were only passing through in a hurry. On the contrary, if the players are here to complete a quest, they would have to be obedient and stay on the ground. Players should follow the intended design of the system and clear out monsters that were designed to become the obstacles while completing the quests. Unless the players already know the exact location of the Mello Ram, players would need to clear out the monsters in their path in order to locate the boss. It would be silly to think that they could escape battles with the monsters if they had Flying Mounts.

With both of their strength combined, Fatty Han and Zhang Yang were unstoppable, in this jungle at least. They basically killed the monsters that came in their way in almost an instant. They did not slow down their pace at all while searching for the Mello Ram. In just half an hour, they were in the thick of the mountains. The monsters that came out of hiding to attack them were all Elite Tier monsters.

Unfortunately, they could not even locate a single goat or ram after

slaying a few dozens of monsters.

Both of them proceeded deeper into the jungle. Tens of minutes passed, and they finally located their target. It was a gigantic ram with a pair of large and sharp horns on top of its head. The size of this ram was as large as the size of an elephant! Violet fur grew all over its body. The ram looked intimidating, even though it was just standing there, tugging at the grass on the ground.

[Mello Ram] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 135

HP: 6,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 19,298 - 23,298

Skills:

[Angular Thrust]: Uses its sharp horns to attack a target, causing 150% Melee Attack in the form of Physical Damage to the target.

[Trample of War]: Stomps on the ground and causes 5,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the area of 10 X 10 meters. Reduces the movement speed of the targets. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Speed of a Ram]: Immune to all damage, lasts for 5 seconds. Movement speed will increase by 100%. Lasts for 5 minutes.

Note: Mello Ram is one of the best materials to make the finest meals in the entire world! Unfortunately, the number of this species has is extremely low. Secondly, the species is extremely powerful! Therefore, only so few have had the pleasure of tasting the meat of a Mello Ram!

"Haha! So let me bring back enough meat to serve everyone with the meat of Mello Ram!" Fatty Han immediately smacked the rump of his Spitfire Piglet and went up to a spot where he was approximately 30 meters from the Mello Ram. Then he began to let his arrows fly. His Spitfire Piglet was also spitting arrows of fire at the target.

This Spitfire Piglet was one of the Violet-Platinum Tier Pets that was

acquired while they were on the 12 zodiac mountains right before Baroque Island. As Fatty Han only had a Yellow-Gold Flying Mount, so of course he would choose a Violet-Platinum Tier Pet to engage in battle rather than a Yellow-Gold Tier Pet.

At the same time, Fatty Han's turtle pet also charged at the boss. The speed of his turtle was so much swifter than the movement speed of Zhang Yang's Mythical Turtle!

--- that was the advantage that a Hunter had over the other Classes. They could have a Pet Mount and a Pet at the same time.

Zhang Yang patted his Thunderhawk and joined the battle as well. He swung his {Sword of Purging Devourer} as he began to accumulate Rage Points for later use. Upon accumulating enough Rage points, Zhang Yang struck out with his {God of War Devastation} and caused massive damage to the boss. With that hit, he managed to get the aggro of the boss over to him. The boss stopped charging towards Fatty Han as it turned around and charged towards Zhang Yang with its sharp and deadly horns.

Although there were no Healers in the vicinity to aid them, the boss could only deal so much damage to Zhang Yang. As Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Shield}, its normal attacks would only deal about 5,000 damage. Furthermore, Zhang Yang could also activate his {Block} to reduce one-third of the total damage taken. The total DPS of the boss had been reduced down to merely 1,600 damage!

On the contrary, both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had Inheritances to boost their stats up. Other than that, Felice was a Mythical Tier Battle Companion at the moment. Thunderhawk was a Mythical Tier Flying Mount as well. Only the Pet Mount of Fatty Han was a little below grade.

The only 'shortage' here was that both Fatty Han's Battle Companion and Pet Mount were not up to standard. However, that did not affect their performance at all. Besides, they were here to fix that.

After just half a minute, the HP bar of the boss had dropped below 10%. The gigantic ram suddenly stomped the ground heavily and caused the ground to tremble. Zhang Yang and Napolita's movement speed were

reduced. With their movement speed reduced, the Mellow Ram took the opportunity to escape! Upon activating its {Speed of a Ram}, the boss disappeared into the jungle without a trace!

Although the flying speed of Thunderhawk was extremely swift, no thanks to the movement speed reduction and the dense environment of the jungle, it could not glide freely through the air. Meanwhile, if they went too high above the ground, they would have lost the trail that the boss left for them to follow. Zhang Yang could only command Thunderhawk to crawl forward on foot as they witnessed the Mello Ram running into the wild and disappearing without a trace.

Felice attempted to follow the boss as well. However, she kept running into trees and bushes. So she had also lost track of the boss.

As for Fatty Han, he did not even react to the situation. After the boss had disappeared for quite some time, he opened his big mouth and asked, "Huh? Did the boss run away?"

Zhang Yang finally understood why the quest was ranked as a Rank-B quest. Normally, a quest with only a Violet-Platinum Tier boss would only be ranked as a Rank-C quest. This boss could attempt to escape whenever its life is in jeopardy. Furthermore, the boss was f*cking fast! It made sense that the quest was deemed as a Rank-B quest.

The two of them had to search for the boss. About two hours later, they finally found a Mello Ram. Was it the same one as the one they attacked? They had no freaking idea at all! However, although Violet-Platinum Tier bosses were no longer valuable, it would be illogical for the entire zone of a Level 120 - 150 map to be filled with numerous Violet-Platinum Tier bosses. It had to be the same boss.

As the boss could recover its HP swiftly after it has disengaged from battle, of course, the Mello Ram would have a full HP bar. It was more than 2 hours ago since they had last engaged with the ram!

Zhang Yang immediately charged up to the boss with Thunderhawk. Fatty Han began to launch his assaults on the boss as aggressively as possible. After just a brief moment, they managed to reduce the HP of the

boss down to 10%! History repeated itself, as the boss did the same thing again. It activated {Trample of War} to reduce the movement speed of all enemies around it before it began to run on its {Speed of a Ram}!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} in an attempt to remove the movement speed reduction on him. However, he had never thought this to be possible! The movement speed reduction effect on him could not be lifted!

Although Fatty Han was prepared for the situation this time, he did not have enough firepower to take out the boss before it could escape. The boss still had over 10% of HP. Furthermore, the boss was in a 5-second 'invincibility' mode as it was running away! The two of them could only stare at the boss's *ss while letting it slip through their fingers again!

"I finally understand why the fastest runners on earth are rams! Haih! Pity those leopards. They would have to run so fast just to get some food!" Fatty Han sighed.

Zhang Yang could only smile bitterly. This ram was so precise in its calculation! Once its HP bar got below 10%, the boss would begin to run. Furthermore, it would have 5 seconds of 'invincibility' while it was running! That had just made it very hard to kill!

To kill the boss, there were only two options. One was to kill the boss in one hit when the HP bar of the boss was at 11%. By doing so, the boss should not have the chance to activate its {Speed of a Ram} and get away again. Another option was to mobilize a troop of players to surround the boss. After all, the boss could only be invincible for 5 seconds. If they had enough players in the vicinity, they could surround the boss and empty out the remaining 600,000 HP of the boss!

However, the reward for this quest was only one Violet-Platinum Tier Bow. Furthermore, only Hunters could use bows. Which party would be so free to aid them in such a meaningless quest?

Therefore, no one had ever managed to complete this Hidden Quest up to this point. In Zhang Yang's previous life, two Korean players who seemed to be too bored at that moment came back to complete this quest

when they reached Level 150. They came all the way back to kill this running champion with higher Tier equipment. Then they also completed a dozen of quests that were given by Karnoss. Fortunately for them, one of them was a Hunter. They managed to trigger the Hidden Quest for Hunter. That was how the two players managed to acquire a Phoenix pet.

So, luck was also a part of one's strength!

It was a headache for Zhang Yang. If he forcefully summoned Sun Xin Yu and the others over, they would definitely be willing to help. However, the problem would be, how much ground could the 10 of them cover? Once the boss activates its {Speed of a Ram}, it would run faster than a Thief. How could 10 players possibly keep the boss around when that happens!

If he were to summon the forces of Line Desert Smoke over... this was a Level 120 - 150 map after all. They would be very far from 'home'. Other than that, the level of the guild members would be too low to handle themselves on this map. Many would perish upon reaching this map. By the end of it, it would only be an act of exhausting his own guild members while he hoarded the benefits of the outcome! Zhang Yang had gotten used to solving problems all by his own. He would not risk others just to get what he wants, unless the situation forces his hands.

Now that both of them could not use their Inheritance Transformation Skills, they could not possibly wait until the cooldowns to be over. Furthermore, they should prioritize on clearing out the final bosses for Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu's Class S Inheritance quests. So they should not waste it on such a weak boss! Without the support of their Inheritance Transformation Skills, it seemed to be impossible for them to kill the boss instantly when the HP of the boss is below 10%!

The two of them made some adjustments to their strategy of taking down the boss. On their third attempt when the boss's HP was below 10%, the two of them took a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. Then, they activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} at the same time!

Unfortunately, although one {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} could cause a total of 100,000 damage, it would have to channel for 10 seconds to reach that amount. Upon encountering a target with the ability to become immune to attacks, they could not do any damage to the Mello Ram for 5 seconds. Although they could still cause damage to the boss with their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} after the 5 seconds of 'invincibility' of the Mello Ram has passed, they only managed to cause about 140,000 damage to the boss. That was far from enough if they want to kill the boss!

"Why don't we just let this go, little Yang? It's just a crappy bow!"

Chapter 614: Metamorphosis

Fatty Han was turning into a miser like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. He had started to love money more than ever since he was getting married. Despite that, he had wasted enough time for Zhang Yang to craft tens of thousands of [Armor Piercing Potion]! If he had realized that, he could have already skipped the quest and beg Zhang Yang to keep on crafting!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That bow is only a preliminary reward. Just you wait until the end of the quest! I'm sure there's something far precious for you!"

"What precious item?! Is it even worth the time we're spending here!?" Fatty Han roared.

Zhang Yang shook his head, "That...well...I'm not too sure. But one thing I do know is it will definitely be worth it! Come on, why are you even asking me that! You don't believe your bro?"

Zhang Yang knew the reward but he wanted to avoid revealing too much information, even though a great deal of players knew that Zhang Yang was a "beta-player". It was only natural for him to know few things about the game before others would.

"Hey hey hey. Right back at you bro. Who would believe you if not I?"

"Fine. Fine. Let's just get on with the search for the boss. Remember to reserve all your skills until the last 11% HP, yeah?"

Although the Mello Ram was extremely hard to kill, the system had not made any other efforts to further trouble the players in searching for it. Therefore, in about 30 minutes or so, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had managed to find the ram. The ram had a shining, violet coat of fur. Unexpectedly, instead of grazing the grass like any other herbivore would, the ram was copulating intensely with a female sheep.

"Haha. The ram sure does know how to live its life to its fullest! I for one am greatly impressed at its courage to mate even while it's on the run!"

Fatty Han laughed.

It's a shame that the female sheep was just an elite tier monster. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han jumped out of hiding and interrupted the intimate session of the two sheep. The poor horny ram was greatly disgruntled and charged at Zhang Yang with its horns.

"Haha! Little Yang, be careful there! Don't let the ram actually ram you from behind! Not even I can accept bestiality acts!" Fatty Han laughed again.

Zhang Yang dodged the initial boss' attack and focused first on killing the female sheep. After that, Zhang Yang took the lead and stood guard while Fatty Han stood behind him to attack. Even though neither of them used their special skills to kill the female sheep, they still managed to kill it in a matter of minutes.

Perhaps, due to the death of its mate, the ram was greatly infuriated. Hence, as Zhang Yang was attacking the female, the ram was charging in and out, trying to kill Zhang Yang for attacking its mate! Its attack grew even stronger after the female sheep was killed. However, try as it might, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han did not need to put much effort into killing the boss.

Before either of them knew it, the boss had already dropped below 30% HP.

"Fatty Han! Pay attention!"

"I got it!"

20%...15%...11%...10%!

Zhang Yang swiftly activated {Indiscriminate} and struck out with {Killing Cleave} with full Rage points. At the same time, he had laid down a normal attack. He had saved up all his Rage for this one big hit!

The Sword of Purging Devourer glowed for a brief moment and Zhang Yang could feel an intense heat from his right palm. The sensation of the heat was so mysterious that it sends a chill through his spine.

Without a doubt, it was {Rising Dragon Strike}!

A dragon burst out of the sword and roared valiantly as it charged and smashed against the tiny little ram!

‘-264,393!’ Killing Cleave Critical Strike.

‘-70322!’ Normal Attack Critical Strike.

‘-703,220!’ Rising Dragon Strike.

"Mekk—" The ram wailed out a deafening cry before falling to the ground.

"Good job, that." said Fatty Han while panting for breath. "Little Yang, I must say that your {Rising Dragon Strike} was triggered at the right moment! Though I wish it could proc more often now and then."

Zhang Yang nodded. He had originally hoped to trigger a Lucky Strike since he had a 100% chance to proc a Critical Strike with {Indiscriminate}. If his calculations were correct, his attack could have reach up to 800,000 in total. Out of his expectation, even though he had not triggered a Lucky Strike, he was able to proc a {Rising Dragon Strike}, dealing 1000% normal attack damage which had killed the boss instantly.

The two of them went ahead and looted the drops. Since the boss was merely a Violet-Platinum boss, its item drop value was not worth being kept and used. Zhang Yang did not need to examine the item value and stored them all in his inventory. The only valuable item found was the quest item.

[Mello Ram's Rear Shank] (Quest Item)

Description: The most succulent and tender meat of a Mellow Ram. It's taste and texture is something out of this world! No words could describe the taste of it! You must try it yourself! Recommended cooking style: Roast at 270 degree Celsius for 45 minutes. WHERE'S THE LAMB SAUCE!?

Both of them flew away from the highlands and made their way back to the Old Hunter Karnoss place.

Karnoss was busying skinning a deer when Fatty Han barged into his

house and slammed the slab of meat on the table that he was working on. "Check it out! Is this the meat that you have been craving for?" Fatty Han sneered.

"This...This is...This is it!" Karnoss widened his eyes astonished. "Young Hunter, I must confess that I have underestimated you. Hmm. You have opened my eyes. I must say, you will definitely be a strong hunter!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Hunt for the Mello Ram. Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Karnoss's Ancient Bow!'

"Haha! That's a lot of experience points!"

"Duh! We have spent more than 6 hours on this quest! The amount of experience points is barely justifiable!"

"Urgh...you're right. D*mn! We're at a loss here!"

"Dear! Take this meat and roast it to perfection! Tonight! We feast like kings!" Karnoss casually took the meat and passed it to his wife in the kitchen. He then turned back to Zhang Yang and Fatty Han and said, "I might add that you're rather clever to hunt the ram. It takes more than courage and bravery to do so. A Hunter must have other traits. You need patience as well. You think you have what it takes to be a vigilant hunter?"

All the while Karnoss was talking, he had not even glanced at Zhang Yang. It's not like Zhang Yang had a choice. The quest was a class-specific hidden quest for Hunters only. It was lucky enough for him to tag along for the ride when the main character for the quest was Fatty Han.

"Of course. Without a doubt!" Fatty Han pounded his chest proudly. It was the same type of reaction that would have occurred if the NPC was asking Fatty Han's little tool's ability in bed.

"In that case, I'll have you hunt the Golden Vermillion Burning Python as your test!"

'Ding! Karnoss has a quest for you: The Hunt for the Golden Vermillion Burning Python! Will you accept it?'

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han received the system notification and accepted it.

[The Hunt for the Golden Vermillion Burning Python] (Difficulty Level: B)

Description: The Old Hunter Karnoss has entrusted you the task to hunt and kill a Golden Vermillion Burning Python as a test to prove yourself. Be advised, the Golden Vermillion Burning Python is a powerful entity in the Madalors Mountains. You cannot be too reckless! You can find the powerful beast in the Sinlogar Valley.

Completion: Kill the Golden Vermillion Burning Python

Participation Limit: 5 players.

"Hey! Little Yang! The quest will reward us with a skill!" cried Fatty Han happily.

"Oh really!?" Zhang Yang humored him. It was extremely normal for a hidden quest to reward a player with a skill. The best reward was still none other than the Phoenix pet itself!

Fatty Han shared the quest reward to Zhang Yang.

[Bursting Courage (Passive)]: When you or your pet deals a Critical strike, you or your pet will gain a 10% increase in attack for 10 seconds. Effects cannot be stacked.

For noob players like Fatty Han, the best skills for him were not active skills, but passive skills that do not require Fatty Han manually activating them.

The 10% attack boost was as similar a 10% permanent attack boost. It will only activate by chance. Unlike the other skills that require manual activations, that skill will provide a 20% increase in attack power. However, it still depends on the player's own activation timing. Some would get 20% increase, while the others may get 15%, and there even a chance of only 10%.

"Not bad! I like! Let's go!" said Zhang Yang as he felt it was a good skill

to anyone. Sadly, it was a skill that only a Hunter could obtain.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily when he thought of hidden quest. He knew about the hidden quest was all because of two Koreans that had obtained the Phoenix pets. In his previous life, those two players had revealed all about the method to obtain the Phoenix through an interview. Sadly, even if there were other class-specific hidden quest that might have the same reward, no news were leaked out. Otherwise, players would have known about it and share it with the whole world. As such, Zhang Yang had no other means but to rely on luck alone to trigger another hidden quest.

The two returned to the mountain and flew towards Sinlogar Valley. However, the monsters that were in the valley had the ability to attack airborne targets, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had no choice but to lower their altitude to almost ground level to venture through the valley. The valley had extremely few fauna and flora due to the lack of sunlight. The lack of living being in the valley had rendered the entire place devoid of sound. The weird part was that when Zhang Yang and Fatty Han was in the sky, there were attacks that were coming from the valley, however, now that they were almost ground level, there was not a single monster. However, they were able to venture into the valley quickly and found the target.

The Golden Vermillion Burning Python was curled up around a large rock. Since it was all coiled up, they could not really judge its length. However, just by examine the thickness of its body, they knew that the Python will be huge and heavy. As the name of the beast implied, the Python was covered in golden scale with red linings that swirled around the body. There was even two bun-shaped budes on its head! However, according to the lives of ancient China mythical beings, the two budes that appears on a python is an indication of it becoming a dragon.

[Golden Vermillion Burning Python] (Mythical, Beast)

Level: 135

HP:40,500,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 36,323 – 42323

Skills:

[Coil]: Coils around a chosen targets and deal 30,000 physical damage every second for 5 seconds.

[Tail Whip]: Sweeps the ground with its massive tail, deals 150% physical attack to all targets within its melee attack range.

[Metamorphosis]: Unleashes the power of the Python and evolves into a Golden Vermillion Burning Dragon. Gains 50% attack boost.

Note: This Python is evolving into a dragon. If you're smart, you will not even try to disturb the grumpy beast.

"Little Yang. I don't think we could handle a Mythical tier boss on our own," said Fatty Han after he examined the Python stats.

Zhang Yang nodded his head. If both him and Fatty Han had Transformation skills that were ready to use, then the boss would not be too much of a problem. Right then, it would be impossible for them to fight the boss. They did not even have a healer with them! Unless...if the {Berserker's Heal} and the Titan's Chest Plate health restoration was at 10% HP per seconds, he might stand a chance to whack the bastard!

Now, the only HP recovery skill he had was the 30 minutes long cooldown {God of War Radiance} and the 10% HP heal of {Shield Wall}. He should be able to put on a fight with a Violet-Platinum boss. However, it would impossible on so many levels with a Mythical tier boss.

Zhang Yang recruited Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Daffodil Daydream to participate the quest. Wei Yan Er was busy with her Darkness Inheritance quest. There was no way she would have missed her chance to cause a ruckus if she was not busy. Nevertheless, the quest had only limited to 5 players to participate in the quest. Still, with Han Ying Xue alone, Zhang Yang could defeat the boss with no problem! Now that he had gained 3 extra DPS with him, everything else would be a cakewalk.

Zhang Yang took the lead with Felice behind him and charged towards the boss.

"ZEEERAAH!" The Python roared benevolently as if it was a god-like beast. As expected of a beast from the legends! The beast that would become a Dragon!

Even though the Python was still a Python or even a Dragon, its tier would still be Mythical tier. There was not much worry about the damage it could deal. There was no fate of it surviving with Zhang Yang and his party coming at it! The poor Python wriggled in pain as Zhang Yang, Felice, and his party unleashed a barrage of attacks. The rock, which the Python was coiling on broke into tiny bits when the Python tensed up from receiving a powerful blow from Zhang Yang.

The party continued on with the attacks and smoothly drained away the boss HP till he had less than 10% HP. After the 10% HP threshold, the Python finally showed its true colors as it started to shed away its snake scales and reveal golden, large scales of a dragon.

Four dragon claw pierced out of its belly and a pair of magnificent horns burst out of the bun-shaped budes on its head.

As such, the dragon had gained the ability to hover without the need of wings. It rose to the sky and displayed a grand entrance of a mythical dragon.

"ZERAAAH!" The dragon roared. Its eyes glowed with an intense radiant. Before Zhang Yang could look away from the blinding light, the dragon had rushed towards him and clawed Zhang Yang heavily and strongly.

Zhang Yang took the hit. Just as he planned to land a counterattack, he felt a strong burning sensation on his right arm. He knew what was happening and finished the attack, blasting out a larger dragon than the boss, attacking it by slamming into the enemy.

‘-70,440!’

-704,440!’

The dragon which Zhang Yang had blasted out was not a half-baked dragon like the boss. On the contrary, the {Rising Dragon Strike} was far

larger and far benevolent than the enemy itself. With the attack, Zhang Yang's 700,000 and more damage had dealt equivalent to 2% of the boss' HP!

Zhang Yang thrust his hands out and cast {Glare of the Death God}!

Success!

In just a few seconds, the overall DPS dealt by the entire party had multiplied intensely!

Zhang Yang felt extremely lucky that he was able to proc a {Rising Dragon Strike} and a successful {Glare of the Death God} consecutively! He could just buy a scratch card and strike the jackpot!

‘-350,000!’

‘-350,000!’

...

Even after the boss had used {Metamorphosis} to become a real dragon, its HP remained the same albeit having increased attack. With less than 8,100,000 HP or 7% HP left, the boss was literally at knocking on death's door!

"ZERAAHH!" The dragon roared painfully. Although the skill had given it the appearance of a dragon, it was just a temporary state. If it does mature with time, it would become a full-fledged dragon. By then, its tier would be at least an Ethereal tier or even higher! Sadly, its current form was just borrowing the skill to give it the attack power of an Ethereal tier! Perhaps, if it does evolve into a real dragon in its current state, it might become a Holy tier or an Ascended tier!

However, that was nothing but speculation. Right then, the dragon, or rather the enraged Python was nothing but scrap for Zhang Yang and his party.

After a good deal of attacks, the boss fell from the sky and crashed in front of the party. The horns and claws had retracted back into its body. The golden scale of the dragon was quickly hidden away as the snake

scales reformed.

Hmph. Fake.

Chapter 615: Darkness Inheritance

Violet-Platinum boss drops were nothing but scraps to sell. However, drops of a Mythical tier boss were very different! The Golden Vermillion Burning Python was Level 135, hence, the equipment dropped by the boss should be Level 130! Even though the equipment drops do not have the special lowered level requirement, it was worth keeping since Level 130 was just above the horizon. If they could not get their hands on an Ethereal tier equipment, a Mythical tier would be the second choice.

The boss had only dropped a sad number of loots. There were only two Mythical tier equipment and three Violet-Platinum equipment. There were no skill books... Only an open-world boss of a map would drop luxurious items such as skill books or skill points. Mythical tier bosses were nothing but side bosses that would never drop anything precious.

The obtained loot was a Heavy Armor Helmet and a Leather armor Chest Plate. Since Zhang Yang was only wearing a Violet-Platinum tier helmet, he took the Mythical tier helmet. If he is unable to get his hands on an Ethereal tier equipment, the helmet would be his backup.

[Python Helmet] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +1,926

Strength: +905

Dexterity: +393

Equip: Increases 3,850 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 3.5% damage and healing rate.

Equip: Absorbs 384 damage on attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Starting from Mythical tier onwards, equipment tended to prioritized on attack and defense value. Hence, the helmet was extremely ambiguous in

a way that it could be of offensive and defensive at the same time. Normally, defensive type equipment will be prioritized for tanks. Only with a strong tank present in a party, the party could move forward without any problem.

Since the little girl was not around, Zhang Yang took the item, since he was the only person there could equip Heavy Armor.

The Leather Armor was given to Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu had given it up for him. Perhaps, it was a favor for Zhang Yang. Fatty Han was so touched that he had grovelled at her feet whilst crying about brotherhood or sisterhood. Sun Xin Yu was agitated that she had even threatened to have the item back if he does not stop his nonsense.

After the boss was killed, the three women went back to town. Fatty Han took the quest item [Gold Vermillion Burning Python's Gall].

"You're something I have never see before!" Kronoss took the gall that was almost the size of a human brain. He turned to the kitchen and yelled, "Dearest, get me the mead flask, we can make some snake gall mead!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Hunt for the Golden Vermillion Burning Python. Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!'

Compared with Fatty Han, Zhang Yang had obtained much more experience points as compensation for Fatty Han obtaining a skill. The quest had awarded Zhang Yang with 50,000,000 experience points!

"Hunter, you have proven your bravery and Intelligence. Now, to further prove yourself as a true hunter..." Kronoss hold his hand up and sank his teeth into a large piece of meat. After taking his slow sweet time enjoying the piece of the shank, Kronoss spoke with his mouth still chewing. "A Hunter munch you must have munch munch swallow. You must have patience! Patience comes first above all else! For a true hunter would wait for days to hunt their prey!"

Kronoss looked into the distance and said, "I was wild back then. I remembered a few days ago, I was hunting for a Fox Snow Spirit. I had covered myself in the snow for seven days and seven night, surviving only on dried food and melted snow water to keep myself going. It was painful.

The frostbites...However, my effort paid off when the Fox had lowered his guard and came out of its nest to hunt for good. Right then, I waited until the last moment and capture the critter with my bare hands! Look at this! The coat I'm wearing right now is made from the fur of the Fox Snow Spit! This is something not even the king could buy!"

Seven days and seven nights? Fatty Han cocked his head and raised a suspicious eyebrow at the man. Frostbite? The man should have been frozen solid!

"Hunter. You will do as I do and hunt a Fox Snow Spirit! You must capture it alive and well! Not a single wound on the critter! Do that and I'll tell you a big secret!" said Kronoss as he whispered.

'Ding! Kronoss has a quest for you: Hunt the Fox Snow Spirit. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han took the quest without hesitation.

[Hunt the Fox Snow Spirit] (Difficulty Level: NIL)

Description: Kronoss had entrusted the task of hunting a Fox Snow Spirit to you. Complete the challenge to prove that you have the quality of patience of a true hunter. Be advised, the Fox Snow Spirit you are asked to hunt for must be at full health. A single bit of damage on it will cause the quest to fail. You can try your luck at the Snow Spirit Canyon. Remember hunter, the key to success is patience. Hint: Fox Snow Spirits loves to eat Pale Stripe Weed.

Completion: Capture a Fox Snow Spirit: 0/1

The reason for the quest not being graded with a difficulty level was due to the fact it was not going to be a contest of power. A battle was not necessary, however, the process of capturing an unharmed Fox Snow Spirit could be difficult. For players such as Sun Xin Yu, who would go as far as starving for days to kill a certain target, the quest would be a piece of cake. However, for players as rash as Wei Yan Er, the quest would be close to SSS difficulty, if such a level exists in the first place.

The two of them went on with their journey and arrived towards the

Snow Spirit Canyon. The trip was extremely fast and quick since the quest had given them a specific location. The place was extremely cold. Aside from the monotone color of the place, there was nothing else but snow and the sky.

Based on the quest guide, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han split up and found three places that spawned the Pale Stripe Weeds. Based on Zhang Yang's understanding of the quest, a Hunter could plant a trap around the weeds and capture the Fox Snow Spirit, alive and unharmed. All Fatty Han needed to do then was to set a trap, let the fox spring the trap and the quest will be completed.

There was a huge problem with his plan. A Hunter's trap skill could only last for 1 minute while the spawn points of the Pale Stripe Weeds were at least 5 minutes apart from each other. Hence, they would have to choose one out of the three and plant their trap there. If they are unlucky, and the fox chooses to pick a different spot to feed, Fatty Han would be waiting for a very long time.

As such, like the quest had indicated, patience is the key to victory!

Both of them draw lots and headed to their own designated weeds spawning location to set up a trap. After that, there was nothing much to do but wait. Patiently.

1 hour had passed painfully and comes the 2 hours. By then, the two had waited for more than 3 hours continuously placing traps here and there. Since Zhang Yang was only assigned to watch as he did not own any trap skills, he decided to not waste his time there and left. Before he did, he gave Fatty Han the [Party Summon Order]. When Fatty Han finally captures a Fox Snow Spirit, he can call him over. Zhang Yang went back to White Jade Castle and did his usual business, from grinding levels to crafting potions and etc.

The poor Fatty Han was left alone in the Snow Spirit Canyon for god knows how long. Zhang Yang did not care about the number of hours he had spent over there and laid down the ultimatum order, never to leave the place until he captures a Fox Snow Spirit. Kronoss had mentioned

something about camping for seven days and seven nights, perhaps the challenge would be far longer for Fatty Han!

...

After working hard for two whole days, Wei Yan Er had finally managed to obtain the Darkness Inheritance. The little girl then shared with everyone the skills she had obtained and had caused several players like Hundred Shots who had only managed to obtain a B class Inheritance to feel extremely envious.

[Shadow Wound (Passive)]: Permanently increases your damage by 45% and decreases incoming physical attack by 10%.

[Darkness Transformation]: Be one with the Darkness, increases 400% damage dealt, 3000% HP increment, and gains a 30% chance to nullify incoming magic attacks. During the Transformation skill, you will gain 1 Darkness Energy Point. There will be skills that require the use of Darkness Energy Point to activate. Darkness Transformation will last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Shadow Orb]: Creates a shadow orb to follow you or a target ally player. Under the protection of the Shadow Orb, the target will receive 50% less physical attack damage and will gain immunity to all Shadow Damage. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cost: 10 Darkness Energy Points. Every additional 1 Energy Point consumed to cast this skill will increase the duration of the Shadow Orb by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Dark Vengeance]: Strikes a target with the power of Darkness. Deals 250% melee Shadow Damage and corrupts the target with the power of shadow. Decreases all damage and healing rate by 10%. Cost: 50 Rage. Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Darkness Corruption]: Temporarily controls a target as your pawn. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cost: 3 Darkness Energy Points. Each additional Energy Points consumed will increase the duration of the control by 2 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Shadow Curtain]: Creates a 50 meters x 50 meters field of shadow, dealing Shadow Damage, 8x the value of your Strength value. Cost: 3

Darkness Energy Points.

[Enemy of the Light (Passive)]: During the Darkness Transformation skill, deals 50% extra damage to a Holy attribute target. Receive 50% extra damage from Holy attribute damage.

The little girl had acquired her Inheritance when she was Level 120, hence she had lots of skills to claim from her benefactor. Indirectly, Zhang Yang had just remembered to visit Ares the God of War to claim his Level 120 skill.

"NYAHAHAHAH!" The little girl was so proud of herself and praised the A class Darkness Inheritance as the best Inheritance there was. Even though the damage boost was 5% lower than the God of War Inheritance, the skills it had were truly devastating!

For example, the skill {Shadow Orb} could be used to reduce all physical attacks by 50%. Not only that it could be used on oneself, it could also be used to save others! Sadly, the skill was flawed in two ways. It had too long a cooldown time and also a maximum of 100 seconds of active duration. It was nothing more than a last measure to defend someone in need.

"Haha! Good job little brat! You're actually growing now! Stronger but not any higher! HAHAHA!"

Everyone praised whilst teasing her at the same time and enjoyed her comical reaction of defending her height. Truly, an A class Inheritance was much stronger than a B class Inheritance.

As Wei Yan Er was celebrating with everyone else happily, the poor Fatty Han was left alone in a pile of snow. Perhaps, he might come back to the guild in a year or two.

Zhang Yang took his leave and visited Ares for his Level 120 skills. It was crucial, since he was about to fight Han Ying Xue's Inheritance quest boss.

[God of War Heavy Axe]: Instantly cleaves a target. Deals 100% melee physical damage if the target has higher HP % than you. Deals 300% melee physical damage if the target has lower HP % than you. Required: Melee Weapon. Cost: 50 Rage. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

Chapter 616: High Priestess Chiffony

As expected of an S class Inheritance skill. As the level grows higher, the stronger the skills will be. Luckily that skill effect had taken percentage into account, or else the skill could be extremely useless against highly-leveled bosses with more than millions of HP! Zhang Yang would have to grind his way slowly and only use the skill when the boss drops below his own HP! By then, the boss would already be dead.

As a tank, especially during a boss fight, Zhang Yang's HP will fluctuate up and down between 50% to 80% depending on the healer present. It will be a rare case where he would be at full health. As such, the skill {God of War Heavy Axe} would need to be timed precisely in order to deliver 300% damage. A careless miss and he would be dealing normal damage to the boss.

After Zhang Yang picked up the skill from Area, he left the place and proceed to grind his level. Right then, he had two Level 130 equipment that were just sitting in his personal storage, waiting to be equipped! With determination and the temptation of the potential reward, Zhang Yang fought hard and fast to push his Level higher. Also, he was still wearing a Level 80 Titan's Necklace, which was in need of being replaced as soon as possible.

Zhang Yang was alone when he searched for the perfect spot to grind his level. Alone, his efficiency was far greater than when he was with anyone else. The map he found had a high spawn rate of normal tier monsters. As such, the monsters were unable to deal any speck of damage to him. Hence, he was able to kite a large number of monsters and kill them with a few blows. Sometimes, when he was extremely lucky, the {Rising Dragon Strike} would proc and kill all monsters in a single blow.

In one day, he had gained no less than 6% experience points. If he could maintain such speed, he would take at least in-game 17 days to gain a level, which was equivalent to 6 real-time days. He was only able to achieve such a high grinding speed due to his powerful equipment and overwhelming skills.

Zhang Yang continued his grinding until everyone's Transformation skill had finished their cooldown. Zhang Yang then recruited everyone and briefly explained about the boss that they were about to kill. Han Ying Xue's S class Inheritance quest boss, the High Priestess Chiffony was located at the Xixiluca Sea.

Unfortunately, Fatty Han was not invited as he was still camping in the Snow Spirit Canyon, trying to catch a fox. Even though Zhang Yang's "kill squad" was short of one Inheritance DPS player, the little girl with her newly acquire Darkness Inheritance was good enough to replace his spot! In fact, the little girl might be a better replacement and bring a higher DPS rate to the party. The little girl was a battle maniac. All the while she had better battle prowess than Fatty Han. Now, she would be extremely powerful in battle, since her Inheritance was one tier higher than Fatty Han's.

Additionally, Zhang Yang had also recruited guild players with D class and E class Inheritance. Even though they do not possess the Transformation skill, their attacks were still boosted since they were, after all, Inheritance holders. At the very least, their attacks were higher than normal players. Even if they died in battle, they could just revive on the spot and fight the boss again!

The entire squad traveled high and low and ventured through thousands of kilometers before reaching their destination, The Xixiluca Sea of the Holy Island.

The Holy Islands were completely different from the other palaces that Zhang Yang had traveled to before. It was like Eden itself. There was flora that he had never seen before. The animals spotted the squad and showed no sign of aggression nor fear of humans. They had only raised their heads to look at the party and went back to do what they loved to do, feeding on grass and fruits. The little girl was greatly excited and tried to capture the rabbits and doe as pets. Naturally, her barbaric behavior had sent all the little critters running away. Zhang Yang teased Wei Yan Er and coaxed the girl by lying about getting her a pet at home. Only then would she obediently rejoin the group and venture deeper into the island.

The party arrived at the center of the island and found a building which was as large as a basketball court. It was an open-air altar, prepped with chairs and ceremonials tables that resembled a church. At the center of the altar stood a woman in a white priestess gown who was fully focused on praying to the sky. Her back faced them, so the party could not fully examine her appearance. However, judging by the soft fabric of her uniform, she was, undoubtedly a woman with an hourglass body figure. Her golden hair was long and soft that even though it grew to her hips, the hair could sway with the wind.

[High Priestess Chiffony] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 150

HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Magic Attack: 45,314 – 55,314

Skills:

[Blazing Holy Light]: Casts a powerful light that would burn everyone who is within 40 meters from the caster. Deals 40,000 Holy Damage to all targets every 2 seconds for 30 seconds.

[Higher Healing]: Heals oneself, restoring HP equivalent to 200% magic attack. Channel: 2 seconds.

[Endurance]: Restores 3% HP every 30 seconds. Healing rate would not be affected by any status effects.

Note; Chiffony holds the title of the High Priestess. She believes that the god will only descend to the mortal realms by purifying all negative humans. Her beliefs had led her to be excommunicated by the Creed since her views of the gods were too extreme. However, no one would deny that her power and affiliation with the Holy element is strong.

Zhang Yang had tried to fight the boss once before but was completely wiped out. The boss' skill {Blazing Radiant Light} was her one and only skill, it possessed little to no threat to the party. However, since it was her

only skill, she would cast {Higher Healing} after {Blazing Radiant Light}. Coupled with her own passive regeneration skill, the Priestess was as tough as Zhang Yang, being incredibly hard to kill! It was the reason why Zhang Yang had failed the boss fight even though he had brought many players. The main reason being, not enough DPS to counter her healing rate.

"...Could we really do this?" said Han Ying Xue, as she doubted the DPS power of the party then. Everyone was traumatized before and was scared, even now.

"Yes. We can. I'm sure of it!" said Zhang Yang with forceful confidence. Previously, their DPS was greatly affected by the annoying Level Suppression system. However, things had changed now, since the main attack force had reached Level 120. Even though many were still under-leveled, they were mainly the healing squad and would not be affected by the Level Suppression system.

"Alright. Get your Transformation skills ready now. We're attacking now!"

Zhang Yang activated his Transformation skill and consumed a bottle of [Strength Potion] before charging to the boss.

"Impure beings! You will be cleansed!" Chiffony turned around to face them. She had crystal-clear eyes that sparkled with an aquamarine blue. Her face and skin were as fair as snow, a little soft and silky at the same time. However, looks do not matter. In the game, if a boss is extremely beautiful, she would be extremely powerful! The boss created a magic staff in her hand and struck the ground hard, creating a golden hue blast wave that spreaded out in all directions.

{Blazing Radiant Light}!

Right after the skill was unleashed, Chiffony started to heal herself.

{Destructive Smash}!

Zhang Yang leaped towards the boss and vertically slammed his sword to hack at her. Although Zhang Yang could feel his sword attack

connecting with her body, the Priestess cloths remained intact as if it was made of the greatest Kevlar armor. Still, it was just aesthetics purposes, the damage had still landed without any reduction.

'24,932!'

Chiffony finished her channeling and healed only a quarter of her original amount of 100,000 HP. Even though the {Destructive Smash} could not affect the healing rate of her passive skill, Zhang Yang had still prioritized attacking her with {Destructive Smash} to disrupt her {Higher Healing}.

The rest of the party were not far behind. Right after Zhang Yang had landed {Destructive Smash}, the rest of the party member had activated their Transformation skill and attacked. Amongst the party members, the most excited one was Wei Yan Er.

The little girl had always been a curious cat. After obtaining the Darkness Inheritance, she had been itching to test out its prowess. Since Zhang Yang had told her about the High Priestess long before anyone else, she had kept her skills and only wanted to unleash it on the boss. Hence, when it comes to attacking, no one could be as excited as her.

{Darkness Transformation}!

Shuuuuu...

Clouds as black as calligraphy ink formed around her feet and engulfed her entire character. The clouds formed an opaque layer which grew darker and blacker. Eventually, her entire character was completely dyed in black. Her eyes, however, remained the same with white sclera and dark pupils. The little girl jumped vertically and could fly without the use of mounts.

Flight ability was granted only to S class and A class Inheritance. However, as a compensation or rather, a limitation, S class and A class Inheritance Transformation were forbidden to mount anything. However, it did not matter since the Inheritance Transformation skill had increased the player HP and Attack by several folds, overtaking the HP and Attack bonuses provided by the mount. On the contrary, while B class

Inheritances or lower could mount a battle mount, the HP and Attack bonus provided would not be included in the attack multiplication. For example, if a B class Inheritance player activates their Transformation skill, provided that their original HP was 150,000 and their battle mount has 100,000, the end result would be as such: $(150,000 \times 20) + 100,000 = 3,100,000$ HP. It would not be $(150,000 + 100,000) \times 20 = 5,000,000$ HP.

The little girl laughed manically as she rushed behind the boss and swung her huge battle axe at her target. However, before she could land an attack, she had taken the {Blazing Radiant Light} damage and took more than 60,000 damage.

Due to her passive skill {Enemy of the Light}, Wei Yan Er would receive an additional 50% damage from Holy damage in her Transformed form. At the same time, she would deal 50% extra damage to a target that has Holy elemental attribute.

The little girl grunted a little and continued her attempt at striking the boss.

WHAM!

‘-312,187!’

The first attack Wei Yan Er landed was a maximum charged {Shadow Vengeance}. With 250% melee damage, adding with 50% additional Shadow amplification, her attack had dealt more than 300,000 damage.

"Holy crap! Little Yan Er's a true berserker now!" Lost Dream gasped at her power. Before that, Lost Dream was able to stand closely behind Zhang Yang as the second highest DPS dealer, being above Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream, and Wei Yan Er herself before she had acquired an Inheritance. However, it was merely temporary since Wei Yan Er had demonstrated a destructive power that had clearly exceeded his. 300,000 damage in a single hit was something Lost Dream could never achieve.

"Impure being shall be cleansed! Only then the gods shall descend to the earth!" Chiffony bellowed as she struck the ground again with her staff, releasing a massive shockwave that had sent her own hairs swaying with the impact.

"Tch! Stupid boss! You're the one that needs to be cleansed! Such big breasts...stinky boss...hmph!" Wei Yan Er struck the boss again and was greatly disgruntled when she noticed the boss' breasts jiggling about.

The girl herself had a chest as flat as an ironing board. Hence, her ire was for those who had bigger breasts than her. Aside from men, her enemy was practically all other women!

Zhang Yang casually cast a {Glare of the Death God} and by chance, the boss did not resist it. The black cloud formed into a grinning skull.

"Evil! Impure! Sinful humans! You must be cleansed!" cried the boss. Even though she did not possessed a single attack skill, between her castings of {Higher Healing} she would occasionally strike Zhang Yang with her magic staff. However, the physical attack was easily negated with {Block} which only provided Zhang Yang with an additional attack and a free {Shield Bash}!

Upon the successful casting of {Glare of the Death God}, everyone attacked as fast as they could. One by one, the increased attacks proceeded continuously and quickly hacked away t10% of the boss' HP. The battle had taken off with a good, smooth start.

Chapter 617: Possession

In reality, Chiffony's attacks were not that strong. However, that depends on who she's striking. Players like Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu who had not acquired their Inheritance could not cope with the boss' attack even when they have increased their maximum HP with their battle mount.

The skill {Blazing Radiant Light} could deal 40,000 Holy damage to all players every 2 seconds over a wide area. The damage dealt was rapid and strong, perhaps only a healer with a suitable Inheritance and equipped with an array of strong equipment could heal. As of now, the world greatest healer would not even cope with the powerful damage.

Thankfully, the party consisted of many players with Inheritance Transformation skill that had increased their maximum HP by a large jump. Even players like Hundred Shots and Galileo who had only obtained a B class Inheritance had reached a maximum HP of over 2,500,000 HP. The HP boost provided by their mounts was only under 100,000 HP, as good as adding salt to the sea. Additionally, Transformed players had also gained a chance to nullify magic attacks! S class Inheritance player such as Zhang Yang had 40% chance of negating magic attacks, hence, increasing their survivability and providing breathing space for Han Ying Xue and other healers to buffer their heals.

Everyone attacked and did what they could until their HP was drained down to a dangerous level. When their HP had dropped down, they would only need to escape the boss range distance, allowing more than 10 healers in the party to heal them without taking further damage. At most, they would only need 20 seconds to heal over 2 million HP, allowing them to return to the battle just as quickly.

Even though Zhang Yang had come up with a good strategy, Chiffony was not as easy as she seemed to be. On average, the boss would heal over 500,000 HP every second. The number was so high that most players would just give up trying to kill it. Additionally, with the skill {Blazing Radiant Light}, no players besides Inheritance holders could properly deal

damage!

The battle itself was extremely draggy. If the combined DPS of the party was any lower than 500,000 damage, the boss would not die. With the skill - {Blazing Radiant Light} alone, she could play a slow game of chess with the players and still win in the end in a battle of attrition.

While others were struggling with their DPS, Wei Yan Er was able to deal powerful blast of attacks, thanks to her passive skills. She was almost as strong as Zhang Yang!

An S class Inheritance and A class Inheritance only had a 5% difference in their attack boosts. However, that was only one skill. Their Transformation skills, however, differed by 500% and 400%! There would be a 25% attack difference between the two class. However, Wei Yan Er was able to compensate that difference of strength with the skill - {Enemy of the Light} which had granted her an additional 50% attack against Holy attribute enemies, allowing her to deal devastating damage to that particular enemy.

Han Ying Xue's skill, the {Angel's Compassion} was brought to light. Since the skill heals player's HP by percentages, Zhang Yang HP was healed by a massive 85,000 HP. That was 1% of his total HP, which had exceeded 8,500,000!

Sadly, as the skill {Blazing Radiant Light} was an AoE skill, unless everyone runs out of the attack range, the skill's protection would be drained away quickly. At most, the shield that is cast on them would only last 3 attacks, healing players by 6% HP before it is destroyed.

As such, with all the problems around, the HP of Chiffony was dropping extremely slowly. There were no perfect strategies for fighting Chiffony besides having higher DPS than the boss' healing rate. In fact, that was the only way to defeat the boss.

After struggling for 1 hour, the boss was left with only 33% HP. Sadly, the second {Glare of the Death God} had failed.

Zhang Yang was greatly disgruntled. However, since they had already dealt 57% HP worth of damage in one hour, Zhang Yang would not have to

cast a third {Glare of the Death God}.

"Hmph. Perhaps, this could be the easiest boss we have ever encountered!" said Hundred Shots.

"Hey. We do have many Inheritance players here!" said Lost Dreams.

Normal players disadvantage was their low HP limit. If they were to fight the boss, they might have to run in and out of the attack range to heal themselves repeatedly until the boss is killed. If they were unluckily enough to be killed, they could just get their souls back to the body, temporarily letting other teammates cover their mistake. Any method they use to fight the boss would be time-consuming.

On the other hand, while players with Inheritance Transformation skill had greater HP limits, the time taken to heal that player would be extremely long! However, the time they could last in a fight was far longer than normal players since Inheritance players had many other passives to support them in battle. Hence, the time wasted for normal players was 3 to 4 times more than players with Inheritances.

Additionally, players with Inheritance Transformation skill could deal much higher damage that they alone could compensate for 4 to 5 normal players. A player with Inheritance Transformation skills fighting a special boss such as Chiffony could provide as much as 15 to 20 times the normal attack.

Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Wei Yan Er possessed special equipment and skills that had provided them with attacks that could surpass normal player by 5 to 6 times. Putting everything into account, each of them could replace 100 normal players!

All and all, even with the lack of members of their party, they still have the capabilities to fight an Ethereal tier boss. If any of them, especially Wei Yan Er was absent from the party, Zhang Yang might have to rely on numbers alone to keep on dying and reviving to fight the boss.

With all the annoying troubles of the boss, Zhang Yang particularly loved this boss fight. The reason was that Chiffony had few skills to attack her enemies with. Close to 99% of the time, Chiffony was only healing

herself! The other 1% of the time was her casting {Blazing Radiant Light}. Basically, as a tank, Zhang Yang had no other duty other than to make sure that the aggro was firmly locked on him. He had no need of babysitting the entire party!

28%...17%...9%...

Half an hour later, the boss' HP had dropped below 10%. With skills that required specific HP %, the entire party had gained a boost in attack and was able to drain the boss HP down to the last 1%. However, something happened. When Zhang Yang had struck a {Killing Cleave}, dealing more than 260,000 damage, the boss had only taken 234,983 damage and was left with only 1 HP. A shield had formed around the boss and negated all other damage that the party had landed.

"ALL DEFILER SHALL BE CLEANSED! I WILL SACRIFICE MY LIFE TO SUMMON THE GODS! LET THEM CLEANSE THE WORLD FOR MY SAKE!"

Chiffony's character sudden caught fire. In pain, she screamed at the top of her lungs. A large tornado formed around her which soared to the sky which pushed away most of the cloud. The sky was completely illuminated by the lack of shade.

"Mortal. I hear thy call and thou prayer shall be answered. The gods shall grant thou wish and cleanse the world of all impurities!" A husky voice echoed from the high heavens. A bright column of light blasted down the sky and onto Chiffony. The boss' almost emptied HP gauge was being healed.

2%...4%....10%!

Luckily, the healing had stopped exactly at 10% which was as high as 50,000,000 HP.

Slowly, the fire extinguished from Chiffony's body and she opened her eyes. She was different. Her eyes were no longer focused on anyone.

[Possessed Chiffony. Blood Angel's Requiem] (Mythical, Unidentified Being)

Level: 150

HP: 50,000,000 / 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Ranged Attack: 75,409 – 85,409

Skills:

[Cleansing]: Strikes a target with godly power, kills a target after 60 seconds. Range: 100 meters.

Note: The gods have answered Chiffony's prayers and have granted her the ability to cleanse everything in the world!

"Repent mortal, in the face of a god." Chiffony voice was greatly distorted as if someone had badly auto-tuned her voice. She pointed her index finger at Zhang Yang and blasted a red light which seeped into his body instantly. A debuff icon {Spirit Cleansing} appeared on Zhang Yang's character and a 60 second countdown started ticking.

"CRAP! Kill the boss! FAST!" Zhang Yang screamed at the top of his lungs. The boss was "behaving" back then but now, she had decided that she had enough. No matter what you do to stop the skill, death would be certain in 60 seconds! There's no room for any negotiations!

"You...You...and You. You shall be cleansed." With unfocused eyes, the possessed Chiffony raised her hands and points her index finger to her targets. In just a few seconds, flashes of red light blast off and seeped into her targets.

60 seconds...deal 50,000,000 damage...That was asking the entire party's DPS to be at least 830,000! It was an impossible feat, because the real DPS that Zhang Yang and the party could deal was only over 600,000!

There was one opening. That was the current boss had no attacking skills at all! With no reason to run around anymore, all the party member could focus on doing one thing only. Attack.

Before the boss was possessed, Zhang Yang had missed out many

chances to deal his skills. Right now, after Zhang Yang had recollected his thoughts, he consumed a bottle of [Power Potion], activated {Shadow Clone} and attack the boss!

Likewise, others had done the same and cast all their skill to maximize their attack. Han Ying Xue had even stopped healing and joined in the attacking fest. Zhang Yang's HP right then was at 100%. Taking a few magic staff thwacks was not a problem, since he would die anyway after 60 seconds. There was no need to heal anymore!

9%...8%...7%...

The boss' HP starts to drop rapidly, however, time was running out as well. Not long after, Zhang Yang was the first to be "cleansed".

"ARGH!" Zhang Yang grunted with pain.

However, with a quick flash of light around Zhang Yang's body, he miraculously came back to life. Han Ying Xue had cast {Rise Anew} before Zhang Yang had perished.

"ARGH!"

"UGGH!"

"Ouphff!"

Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Lost Dream fell. The skill {Cleanse} was just too OP and unreasonable. No matter how high your HP was, death was certain after 60 seconds. There's literally nothing you can do to stop death from knocking on your door.

Luckily, besides Zhang Yang, everyone else who had died come back to life again with the help of the [Zombie Potion]! However, even though the Inheritance Transformation duration had not ended before they died, death for a player would purge all active buffs and debuffs on them. Although the Inheritance Transformation was not considered a buff, it was a change of their original status. Similar to a full reset, after death, the effect will be gone. Hence, when the player comes back from death, they were reverted to their original statuses and attacked normally. As a conclusion, the overall DPS of the party dropped drastically.

The boss still had 2% HP left, while the [Zombie Potion] effect would only last for 30 seconds!

With Transformation skills active, it was an easy task to deal enough damage to kill the boss in 30 seconds. However, with the sudden change of events, it had become an extremely difficult feat!

"You can do it, boss!"

"Fight harder!"

Everyone cheered with powerful vigor. Time waits for no men. Be it the boss or Zhang Yang's party, either one had to win.

1%!

4,000,000!

3,000,000!

2,000,000!

Thud...thud...thud...

More players fell to the skill's instant death effect. They quickly released their soul and ran as fast as they could from the nearby graveyard. If they are quick enough, they could still rejoin the fight as long as someone is still in the battle!

All healers, including Han Ying Xue, had died. Even though Zhang Yang still had over 210,000 HP, he could not endure the constant attack of the boss! He would be killed even before the second {Cleanse} strikes him!

Pak!

Zhang Yang was killed! However, he rose back up instantly! At the very last minute, he had swiftly consumed a bottle of [Zombie Potion]!

1,500,000!

1,000,000!

Zhang Yang had only 3 seconds left to attack, and the boss still has over 480,000 HP left. The players that were running back to their body in their soul form were only halfway through the map. Zhang Yang was panicking.

The face of failure drew closer as each microsecond passed. Could it be, that they were destined to lose this match!?

When Zhang Yang was almost giving up, he felt a hot, gushing sensation growing in his right hand.

This is...{Rising Dragon Strike}!

F*CK YEAH!

Invigorated. Zhang Yang slammed his sword into the boss' shoulder.

‘-34,872!’

‘-347,720!’

After the dragon crashed onto the boss, she still had over 98,000 HP left!

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath quickly and struck {Killing Cleave}.

‘-139,872!’

"Argh! Mortals....You have defiled even the gods! We shall return! We shall cleanse the world!" With a golden radiant, Chiffony's character glowed brightly and released a bright pillar of light into the sky. After the light pillar faded and the "unidentified being" that was possessing Chiffony had returned to whence they came from, Chiffony closed her eyes and fell to the ground.

Zhang Yang's [Zombie Potion] effect had ended at the same time. He too, fell to the ground. Instead of reviving, he waited at the spot, for Han Ying Xue was already on her way back to the battlefield.

Zhang Yang snickered. "Who said that this was the easiest boss fight?"

Everyone guffawed. It was their victory and they were extremely glad that they could kill the boss. Who could have expected the boss to power up and gain such a "broken" skill? However, they would not have faced such a problem if they had more players in their "kill squad". They could let one batch attack, and if the first batch of players dies, the second batch would fill in their spot and hold the boss back until the first batch of player returns. Like an endless cycle, the loop will continue until the boss

dies, since the boss did not have any recovery skills. It was a good strategy but it was not recommended since their individual skill will be neglected.

Still, even though the strategy was good, who could guarantee that the boss would not evolve into something greater?

Han Ying Xue returned to the battlefield and revived Zhang Yang. They chatted and laughed as they healed themselves with snacks and items. Naturally, the little Wei Yan Er was the first on scene to pick the loots.

Chiffony had dropped a total of five equipment, a skill book, and a Skill Point Crystal. Although it was not much, it was still a good haul!

Two of the five equipment were Ethereal tier and three others were Mythical tier. Unlike the Mythical tier, the Ethereal tier equipment gave off a glowing and swirly light. One of them was a long, golden silk robe. The other was a Heavy Armor, golden metallic chest plate.

"Which one do you wanna see first?" Wei Yan Er snickered.

"Erhm...the dress." Zhang Yang said casually.

[Radiant Priestess Robe] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +64

Vitality: +4668

Intelligence: +1586

Spirit: +680

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 3,100.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 5.6%

Equip: Absorbs 679 damage upon attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: Only the purest of hearts could garb the Holy Robe.

Since the number of players that had participated in this boss fight was

far larger than before, Zhang Yang could not rely on rolling dices to distribute the loot. Hence, based on the usual dungeon distribution method, they would rely on using the guild contribution points to "buy" the loot. However, that was just for show, who else could pit their guild contribution points against Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart?

Han Ying Xue had promised Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart that she would let them have the next equipment. Hence, she did not participate in the draw. Her own equipment, the [Queen's Attire] was a Level 130 Mythical tier equipment. Even though the tier was lower than the [Radiant Priestess Robe], she chose to keep the equipment since it had the word "Queen" on it.

The powerful robe ended up in Daffodil Daydream's hands. By Level 130, she would equip the robe and gain a large boost in power.

After the [Radiant Priestess Robe] was given away, Wei Yan Er posted the next item.

[Cuirass of the Knight's Glory] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3209

Vitality: +1672

Dexterity: +612

Equip: Increases 9,990 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 679 damage upon attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Chapter 618: Milkmaid Deity

Although the equipment contained the word "Knight", its properties did not seem to share the similar implications. It did not even have a single Intelligence Point. Zhang Yang's Titan Chest Plate would be nerfed considerably when he reaches Level 130. He decided to swap it out and threw a large sum of guild contribution points on the table to claim the Heavy Armor.

"Dear brothers and sister, mister and missus, could I have this please?" The little brat carried the [Skill Point Crystal] in her palms and pleaded to the entire party, complete with puppy eyes and a cute smile. Zhang Yang frowned immediately. He knew the little brat wanted the best thing for herself!

Zhang Yang would not have minded giving Wei Yan Er the item if they were in their own regular party. He would even tease the little girl until he is satisfied. However, things were different now, since the party then was filled with other guild members who mostly knew her in passing or by name. He might even call it a guild activity, there should not be any favoritism, or in this case, nepotism. Zhang Yang tugged on the little girl's earlobes and made her apologize for her selfishness and resumed the regular bidding for the item via contribution points.

However, since Wei Yan Er had voiced out her childish wants, Hundred Shots and the other core members had already intended to give it to her. Hence, with only 400 guild contribution points, the little girl had managed to haul the item for herself.

Zhang Yang and his core party members were the ones in the guild who possessed the highest contribution points. It was something that Zhang Yang had no power over. The contribution points of Lone Desert Smoke followed a proper in-game system which gives points to those players who contributed to the guild. Zhang Yang had even established a point exchange system to allow players to obtain items, equipment, ETC items via collecting guild contribution points.

The system would generate contribution points depending on the activity the player is involved in, such as group dungeon raiding, defending a territory, guild vs guild PvP, and other activities that Zhang Yang organizes. Points will be given depending on the difficulty of the task from 1 point in dungeon raid, to 2 points in winning a PvP match. Everyone in the guild will receive the same amount of point and would not be amplified or reduced by ranks of the player in the guild. Zhang Yang will still earn 1 point from raiding a dungeon as would a random player in the guild.

Naturally, ranking officers such as Hundred Shots or Zhang Yang had the authority to deduct and reward points to members. If someone were to violate the guild rules, Hundred Shots would deduct their points. If someone had joined the raid in saving Princess Serena back then, Zhang Yang would have rewarded them with a massive sum of contribution points. Everything was done with the highest transparency. Hence everyone could find out from where and how the contribution points are earned. Cases, where players are rewarded with contribution points, were as rare as events in the game.

The method of distribution was even and fair, hence no one had any objection to Wei Yan Er placing a large sum of contribution points to obtain the [Skill Point Crystal]. The points were earned, fair and square by the little brat's own hands.

After Zhang Yang distributed the crystal to the little girl, he messaged her privately and said, "Why are you hoarding up so many points?! They were meant to be used! Don't use your cheap tactics to get items!"

"Pff. Points are like money! Saving is key to spending in the future!" Wei Yan Er sulked as she blew raspberries at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang chuckled. As expected of the family, the little girl was exactly like Han Ying Xue in terms of hoarding. Zhang Yang knew the reason behind it. When they were much younger, the amount of pocket money they received was extremely limited. While the two sisters might leech from Zhang Yang for the simplest things like toilet paper, they would splurge their money when it comes to cosmetic products.

Wei Yan Er then posted a skill book. All skill books will only display the name of the skill and not its description. However, when everyone saw the name of the skill, everyone immediately knew the properties of it. It was {Soul Cleansing}. The exact same skill that Chiffony had gained when she was possessed by the "unidentified being".

When the boss was using the skill, she could just kill someone off literally by pointing her finger at them! If players could own the skill, they would definitely be a PvP king!

As such, everyone unloaded their contribution points on the table to bid for the skill.

Zhang Yang had a feeling that the skill would not be as strong as it was when the boss was using it. If the skill works just like it did for the boss, where one could point and kill anyone at will, there would be no reason to hunt for equipment anymore! Even so, the boss had strict conditions for "activating" the skill, for she must "die" once and could only use the skill with less than 10% HP!

However, since the skill was dropped by an S class Inheritance quest boss, so it had to be a game-changer. It should be weaker than the boss but stronger than normal skill. Zhang Yang purposefully dropped out of the bidding session since he already had an array of powerful unique skills.

Sun Xin Yu placed almost all her contribution points to get the skill book! Her points were almost the same as Zhang Yang.

After learning the skill, she posted the skill description for everyone to see.

[Soul Cleansing]: Attempts to cleanse the target's soul. If your target is a player character or a non-boss monster, the skill will kill the target after 3 minutes, as long as the caster remains alive during the skill effect duration. Skill cannot be used on boss monsters. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

As compared to Zhang Yang's S class Inheritance quest boss drop, the {Glare of the Death God}, {Soul Cleansing} can be cast and left be until the time ticks away. All Sun Xin Yu has to go is to stay alive for 3 minutes,

unlike {Glare of the Death God} where Zhang Yang would have to constantly attack his target to proc the skill's effect. On the other hand, the skill had only a short 10 minute cooldown time! It was extremely useful in a PvP battle arena!

The only shortcoming of the skill was the caster would have to stay alive until the target dies. Considering the fact the skill could not be used against bosses, it had a 100% kill rate of any other target! While killing an elite tier monster would not require 3 minutes, the skill is probably only useful in PvP. The skill would be particularly useful since the owner is Sun Xin Yu. In a 1v1 PvP battle, she could use the skill and run away with stealth. She would only need to stay low for 3 minutes to win the battle.

Everyone walked away, satisfied with the distribution of the haul. Han Ying Xue came in and picked up her quest item. While everyone else returned to town to do their own thing, Zhang Yang stayed behind to grind his levels. He had three equipment that were waiting for him to reach Level 130. As such, the motivation of equipping the equipment, as well as trying to achieve Level 130 before the world Professional League competition pushed him to another level. If he succeeds in achieving Level 130 before the match begins, he would be the only one in the battle arena wearing strong Ethereal equipment!

When everything was over, the poor Fatty Han was left alone, still camping in the Snow Spirit Canyon. He had been camping there for no less than 24 hours. Fatty Han had revealed that since he could not log out of the game, his girlfriend, Xiao Wei had to feed him his meals. He might have exaggerated the part where he could not even do it with her! All the romantic feeling would be lost if he could not give her the daily dose of the D! The poor woman who was left with a long dry spell had called Zhang Yang a few times to complain about the quest! Even a prisoner would have occasional, conjugation visitation.

Somehow, Zhang Yang had a premonition that the cucumber stalls around Fatty Han's house would have some good business.

Two days after the fight with Chiffony, Han Ying Xue had completed all her quests and obtained the S class Inheritance, the Milkmaid Deity. As an

S class Inheritance that was sided towards Priest, the skills and effect of the Inheritance had granted Han Ying Xue a massive power boost to her heals. Some of them were better than Wei Yan Er's Darkness Inheritance.

[Milkmaid Deity's Purity]: Permanently increases the damage and healing rate by 50%.

[Milkmaid Deity Transformation]: Transforms into the appearance of the Deity herself. 4000% increase in HP, 500% Defense increase. Gains 40% chance to nullify magical attacks. Further increases your damage and healing rate by 500%. You will gain 1 Milkmaid Deity Energy Point per second in this form. Milkmaid Deity Energy Points can be used to cast a few skills. Last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Milkmaid Deity's Ripple]: Heals all allies within a 100 meters x 100 meters area. Heals 10% HP every second. Costs 10 Milkmaid Deity Energy Points to cast. Lasts for 1 second. Every additional 10 Energy Points will extend the active duration by 1 second. Requires channeling. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Milkmaid Deity's Protection]: Casts a protective barrier on a target, increasing the target's healing rate by 20%. You may only cast one barrier at a time. Last for 1 minute. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Cost: 5,000 MP. Range: 30 meters

[Emergency Portal]: Creates a pathway to escape. The portals should be no further away by 40 meters from each other. Players can enter through any side of the portal. Each usage of the portal will prevent the player from reusing the portal for 30 seconds. Portal will last for 5 minutes or until it is destroyed. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Chain Healing]: Heals multiple targets. The first target will restore 300% magic attack as HP. The skill will jump onto a nearby target which will restore 200% magic attack as HP. The skill will jump onto the third and last target which will restore 100% magic attack as HP. Cooldown: 1 minute. Casting time: 2 seconds.

Han Ying Xue was already a super healer since the beginning of the game. After acquiring so many skills, she had practically become the

embodiment of healing itself!

"The skill {Emergency Portal} is very useful for evading a boss skill." A few of the guild member had beginning to formulate a battle plan using all of Han Ying Xue skill and offered their insights to Zhang Yang.

"I still think that the [Milkmaid Deity's Ripple] was the strongest skill. With 100 EP, she could heal all players within 100-meter square to full HP. The AoE is just too big! How many players would fit in a 100x100 area?!"

Zhang Yang agreed. The skill was indeed powerful. First, its healing amount. Second, the AoE size was so large, it could be compared with a [Forbidden Scroll]! Naturally, the skill had restrictions for being so strong. The skill can only be used during the Transformation skill.

With such a powerful healer in hand, the later Inheritance quest boss for Sun Xin Yu would be extremely easy! In truth, even if the boss has a massive AoE attack skill, Han Ying Xue could counter the skill by activating her Inheritance Transformation. With an array of skills to preserve the life of the players, all they had to do was to attack!

Even though it was slightly troublesome, the party gathered again and managed to take down the Inheritance quest boss within 2 hours! Sun Xin Yu's Inheritance quest boss was defeated within 2 hours! Not long after that, Sun Xin Yu acquired her own S class Inheritance!

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased. So happy, that he had been smiling all day! How could he not be? There were only six S class Inheritance in the entire game and Lone Desert Smoke alone had three of them. Furthermore, all three of them shared the same bed, bathing in each other's sweat, entwined with each other intimately and intensely.

As Zhang Yang was celebrating, the poor Fatty Han was still shivering in the pile of snow in the Snow Spirit Canyon, still waiting for the wretched Fox Snow Spirt!

Chapter 619: The Secret

Fatty Han was still camping under a pile of snow even after Sun Xin Yu obtained her Inheritance. Since no one really knows when the Fox Snow Spirt will appear, Fatty Han could end up camping for weeks! Luckily, Fatty Han was commanded by Zhang Yang himself, if someone else were to instruct Fatty Han to camp that long, Fatty Han would have stuffed that person into an oven and had him camp inside there for as long as Fatty Han liked.

Someone in the cold, lonely and dark forest, Fatty Han screamed into the snow, muffling his voice as he was yelled, "F****CK THIS SH****T!"

Back to Sun Xin Yu, her Shadow Dancer Inheritance was particularly famous in her past life and had earned its fame by one skill, the {Dance and Slash}.

[Dance and Slash]: Master the arts of the true stealth. Attacks will not forcefully displace the caster's invisibility, enabling the caster to use all skills that could only be used during stealth. The skills require 10 Shadow Dancer Energy Points to activate. Lasts for 10 seconds. Every additional 1 Energy Point will increase the duration of the skill by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

The skill does provide an almost permanent invisibility. Even players like Zhang Yang who could track and trace invisible players, would not properly land a hit against players who have such a skill! The best part of it all was that the player could use skills like {Ambush} which are restricted to {Stealth}-only states.

[Ambush]: Attacks the target with the primary weapon, deals 300% physical damage. Ignores all Defense and has a 60% chance of landing a Critical hit. Skill can only be activated in stealth mode. Required: Dagger. Cost: 60 Stamina.

{Ambush} is a Thief's strongest skill in terms of damage. Sadly, it could only be used during invisibility. Under normal circumstances, that is. For Sun Xin Yu's case, {Dance and Slash} allows Sun Xin Yu to use {Ambush}

unconditionally. Now, the only constraint Sun Xin Yu would face is the cost of the skill. Since the skill had no cooldown period, Thief class players were limited to their Stamina count. Since each skill will consume 60 Stamina, it was equivalent to 6 seconds of cooldown.

By then, most of the players who found their initial Inheritance fragments had already completed their quests and acquired their Inheritance. Among Zhang Yang's core party members, only Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart had not yet acquired Inheritances.

Essentially, it was not that hard to acquire an Inheritance. It's just that higher class Inheritance will indefinitely be difficult to acquire. The lowest Class Inheritance in Zhang Yang core party was a B class. Hence, Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart had set their goals higher. C class was never good but A class was too hard for them to undergo the entire quest ordeal. By the very least, they wanted to obtain a B class. Of course, A class would be their first choice.

After waiting for a painful 11 days, Fatty Han finally called Zhang Yang. With tears rolling down his cheeks, the man cried out loud as if he has found his long-lost wife. "I'VE FINALLY CAPTURED THE BLOODY FOX!"

However, right after he had captured the fox and informed Zhang Yang of the good news, the man logged out immediately and went to the toilet to settle, in real-time, 4 days' worth of bath-debt. Within the four days, even when going to answer nature's call, Fatty Han had refused to take off his gaming helmet and would have Xiao Wei led him to the toilet. Xiao Wei had even complained that since the man had not taken a proper bath for 4-f*cking-days, the man stank like a rotten fish!

The in-game time was tweaked to be 300% faster than real time. Even though Zhang Yang had spent a great deal of time in the game, grinding was still extremely time-consuming. 4 days' worth of real time had only earned Zhang Yang 2% experience points.

Fatty Han took a great, relaxing bath and came back to the game.

When Zhang Yang appeared beside Fatty Han after using the [Party Summon Order], Zhang Yang grinned and teased, "Huhu. I see that you're

still alive and well. I expected you to lose some weight!"

"Hahaha! Right you are my friend. Right you are. Just so you know, it's been 4 days since I ate that meat! Just now, when Xiao Wei and I was taking a bath together, I gave her my fishing rod for her and she took like a champ! After one session of tug and pull, I gave her another sea cucumber—"

"AHH YES! Enough. I don't need to hear about your adventures in the bathroom. Let's move on with the quest," said Zhang Yang quickly as he interjected Fatty Han.

Along the way, Fatty Han showed the little Fox Snow Spirit to Zhang Yang and complained.

"What a troublesome quest!"

Fatty Han had never been a man of patience. In fact, he was the opposite of that, just like the little girl. 11 days of camping in the snow was just too long. "Little Yang, I swear to god, if the quest reward is not as promising as you said it is, I'm going to take Xiao Wei to your house and bang her with my room door open! I'll see how patient you'll be! I'll make sure Xiao Wei gets the best orgasm there! Her moans will pierce all your walls! Even at night, when you're asleep, I'll be f*cking her till kingdom come! I'll---"

"Please.." Zhang Yang chuckled. "Relax my friend. The quest reward will definitely be awesome. You'll kneel down to thank me later!"

"Poppycock! Are you only saying that to scare me off?!"

"What?! Hmph. Suit yourself. Just don't come over to my house."

The two of them tracked through the snow and flew across lands, arriving at Kronoss' house fairly quickly. Fatty Han hand over a small cage with the snow white fox.

"I would never have thought that a person as barbaric as you could actually capture a Fox Snow Spirt." Kronoss could barely contain his surprise. "Hunter, I must say, you may not have the proper appearance of a hunter, but you have the ability and capability of one. Now, I have truly seen the world."

Fatty Han rolled his eyes as he could not believe the man had just commented on his body size. It was, after all, a taboo.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Hunt the Fox Snow Spirit. Obtained 500,000,000 Experience Points!’

SHRING!

With the 500 million experience points, Zhang Yang had immediately shot up by a level. Zhang Yang had accumulated to 78%, and so, with the system award, Zhang Yang gained a level instantly. On the other hand, Fatty Han had only just reached Level 120. His experience point gauge was practically at 0%. The amount of experience points reward had only pushed it up to 34%. That amount of experience points was worth 10 days of continuous grinding! As such, the number of days, he had spent camping had awarded him rather fairly.

"F*ck! Little Yang! You f*cking leecher! You've done nothing at all and you got the same quest reward! I'm so jealous..." Fatty Han could have cried then.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted his back. "Don't you know that guidance requires some fees?"

"Oh really now...?"

Kronoss was not too smart of an A.I. Hence, even when Zhang Yang and Fatty Han was talking, he had started his own conversation with Fatty Han.

"Hunter, I had promised you that I will reveal a secret in exchange for the capture of the Fox Snow Spirit." Kronoss sat down and poured himself a cup of wine. "Back then, when I was much younger. I was hunting for a white grizzly bear in the mountains. Incidentally, when I got lost, I stumbled upon a cave which led me to the discovery of a huge secret."

"What secret?" Fatty Han asked. His curiosity was the same as a 5-year-old girl.

Kronoss laughed at his reaction. He did not directly answer Fatty Han but started a new question instead. "Do you know about the 10 Legendary

Beasts?"

Fatty Han widened his eyes but ended up squinting them as he had no clue about the man was talking. He was another meat-headed fighter. He had little to no care about the game's lore. To him, all of the lore and setting were just works of fiction. However, the bloody bugger did not even know when and where the first and second World War had taken place. How would someone as ignorant and oblivious as him dive into the details of the game?

Zhang Yang himself was not too sure, however, he tried his luck. "Are you talking about dragons and phoenixes?"

Kronoss nodded his head. "Correct. Dragon and Phoenix are considered to be among the 10 Legendary Beast. There are others such as the Sky Devourer, The Golden Beast, Ten-Tailed Fox, The Hundred Headed Being, and many more. Those Legendary Beast possess powers that rival the god! Since there were only ten of them in the world, only a few fortunate people have seen their appearance. It has been a few thousands of years since their last appearance hence, their presence in the world had turned into myth and folklore."

As such, Zhang Yang understood that Kronoss had indeed laid eyes on one. It should be the last quest reward. The Phoenix!

Fatty Han was proactive in a way and quickly asked the old man the real question. "Old fart. You're saying, when you were younger, the secret that you had stumbled upon was related to the 10 Legendary Beasts?"

"That's right! You're sharp there, young Hunter!" Kronoss snapped his fingers.

"You'd bet I am! I am the kind of person who does not show off his knowledge! I'm a genius who acts like an idiot!" said Fatty Han with a proud face.

Zhang Yang dropped cold sweat. He could have just punched the fatso in his face. Kronoss would not have praised Fatty Han if he was not a Hunter. No matter how well did Fatty Han perform, Kronoss would not overly praise him. It was only done so because of the quest dictated it. Like

the Battle Companion's damage, everything will be counted as the owner's DPS!

Kronoss returned to the main topic and said, "Back then, what I saw was a burning phoenix. Based on the ancient legend, when a Phoenix burns itself, it will be reborn again! Although the Phoenix could emerge back to life, the poor beast will lose all its memories, like a newborn baby! If the Phoenix has taken a fatal blow, it will still undergo the rebirth process since dying and killing oneself makes no difference to it. However, after being reborn, the Phoenix will be exposed to great danger. Since the newborn baby Phoenix must learn from its environment, it could be picked up by a human to train as a pet! How shameful would that be for the other Legendary Beast!"

Fatty Han smiled from ear to ear and asked, "Old fart, did you or did you not capture the Phoenix?"

"Ahh. I wanted to. But the Phoenix had made preparations. The Phoenix had set the entire place on fire. It was too hot then, I could not enter the cave!" Kronoss shook his head. "After 30 years, I have been thinking of a way capture the Legendary beast. However, no matter how many devices I have crafted, there was no way for me to enter the fiery pit!"

Kronoss took a sip and sighed heavily. "I'm old. My bones are cracking and I can no longer draw a bow like before. Rather than throwing away my life to hunt the Phoenix and soar to the sky on its back, I'd rather enjoy my life here, sipping wine and smoking cigars."

Fatty Han was holding in his frustration. "It has been 30 years? In that case, the Phoenix should have finished its rebirthing process!"

"Nah..." the old man shook his hands. "Based on the lore, when a Phoenix rebirths, it will take a very long time. In fact, when the rebirthing was complete, the baby phoenix will consume the fire around it as nourishment. I had only just been there a few days ago, the fire was still burning strong. The Phoenix had not yet completed its rebirthing phase."

"Old man. Where is it?" Zhang Yang could not take it any longer. Fatty Han had been asking irrelevant questions.

"Hmm." Kronoss grinned. He took out a long cigar and lit it up. After he took a deep puff, the old man raised an eyebrow. "What's the matter? Intrigued?"

"Of course! As a Hunter, there no way I would let such a beast to roam free!" Fatty Han was excited yet he knew the exact words to say to Kronoss.

"Well said! Well said!" Kronoss placed his cigar down. He held out his old wrinkled hands and took hold of Fatty Han's flabby shoulders. "I've given you the secret. However, there's nothing more I can do to help. It depends on your luck now!"

"Old fart! Leave it to me."

"It's in a cave, located at the western side of the Londulr Hill. The cave is extremely small and the entrance is nothing but a tiny creek. You would have to keep both eyes open at all time!"

Kronoss gave Fatty Han a good slap on his shoulders and said, "Young man, may Artemis, the Goddess of the Hunt be with you!"

"I will give it my best!"

Zhang Yang was excited. Now that he had the location of the Phoenix, he hoped that the system would not design any more f*cking troublesome quests for them.

Chapter 620: Blazing Fire Phoenix

Zhang Yang was excited, but he was not as excited as Fatty Han. In fact, when the two of them left the straw house, Fatty Han was practically dragging Zhang Yang out. The two of them flew towards Longulr Hills with their flying mount. With the exact location marked on the world map, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had taken roughly 20 minutes to land.

The hill was completely devoid of trees. There was a good reason for it as well. Before Zhang Yang had landed, he could feel that the air around him was hot. It was a complete opposite of where he had come from. The air was so hot it felt like Zhang Yang was hovering over hot steam.

Before landing, Zhang Yang had advised Fatty Han to lower his Sensitivity setting to the minimum. The two circled around the hill and could not find any creeks or caves. Kronoss had mentioned that it was going to be hard to locate the entrance to the cave. Hence, with great reluctance, the both of them got off their mount and traveled on foot.

The hill was not small. Additionally, their search was narrowed down to the west side of the hill. However, in less than 10 minutes, Zhang Yang found the narrow entrance in between two suspiciously placed, large rocks. Fatty Han came over and laughed when he noticed the entrance was about his size. "Please, don't tell me that the Phoenix is the size of a chicken. I mean, how else could it enter that cave in the first place!?"

"Please. If you can walk through the entrance, so can the Phoenix."

"What are you trying to say? Am I as cool as the Phoenix?"

"Please bro. You're not cool. You're hot!"

"Hahahaha!"

The two of them laughed and chat as they proceed into the cave. However, before the darkness engulfed them, both of them had started taking damage.

It was an attack that could not be blocked nor reduced. Initially, the damage were dropping "-1" and "-1". However, they stepped further into the

cave the numbers shot up higher and higher. Eventually, in just 40 meters into the cave, the damage they received per second had jumped as high as 500!

Neither of them knew how deep does the cave goes. If they were to recklessly walk deeper inside, the damage may reach as high as 10,000 damage per second!

"What do we do, Little Yang?!" Fatty Han started to be nervous.

Zhang Yang's body started to sweat. He wiped away the dripping sweat on his face and tried consuming a bottle of [Fire Resistance Potion]. However, after taking a bottle, the damage remained the same. As time was of the essence, Zhang Yang had no other choice but to rely on his Inheritance Transformation.

"Go back. Out of the cave now. After we heal ourselves back to 100%, we will use our Transformation skills to rush in."

Zhang Yang felt that if the two Korean players could do it, so can they. He could not believe that they had more HP than Zhang Yang and Fatty Han after activating their Inheritance Transformations. Back then, the two Koreans had acquired the Phoenix pet when they were Level 150. At most, they should have 800,000 HP with a full set of Holy tier equipment. Naturally, they would have higher maximum HP if they had a strong Inheritance classes. Zhang Yang remembered that the two of them were just normal players with C or D class Inheritances. Or else, they would already be strong without the Phoenix pet.

Fatty Han was stunned at his sudden outrageous proposal. "Are you sure you wanna use the Transformation here? Who knows, we might run into a boss later?"

"We'll cross that bridge if we come to it. For now, do you want a Legendary Beast as your pet?"

"Tch! Who knows whether the old fart was telling the truth!? We are only Level 120. How is it possible to obtain the Phoenix Celestial tier pet? At most, I think the Phoenix would be an Ethereal tier!"

Zhang Yang blinked repeatedly. He could not believe that the man had said something that made sense! Still, his prediction and assumption was true to a certain extent. Even though the old man Kronoss sounded as if he was exaggerating the prowess of the Phoenix, the system would never just release a Celestial tier pet at the current stage of the game. It would break the game's balance!

Having a powerful Inheritance Transformation comes with a price. It has 72 hours long cooldown! However, a Celestial pet will always be a Celestial pet!

Zhang Yang snickered awkwardly. "It's fine. At the most, the cooldown is 3 days. There aren't really any bosses to fight these days, anyway. Might as well use it now!"

Fatty Han crossed his arms as his mount was gnawing on recovery snacks. He nodded eventually after Zhang Yang had explained the risk of not activating Transformations. Although he agreed, Fatty Han felt that it was a wasted usage of Transformations.

They were still in the cave, since Zhang Yang had realized that they were able to consume recovery snacks despite taking damage. As they HP reached the high point, both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han activated their Transformation skills and flew deeper into the cave. While Zhang Yang wings were wide and radiant, Fatty Han's were dull, dark and spiky. Zhang Yang's character was glowing brightly like the sun while Fatty Han's character had turned pale white. He had even fangs growing in his mouth! Side by side, Zhang Yang was more on the cool side, while Fatty Han was more towards evil.

Fatty Han sulked and said, "Next time, don't Transform next to me. You'll complete overshadow me with your handsomeness!"

"Ah huh. Right. Don't waste time. 2 hours is not much time to waste." Zhang Yang did not fly. Instead, he accompanied Fatty Han on the ground. The useless Fatty Han does not have flight ability even after activating his Transformation skill. He could gain a temporary flight ability by using {Bat Form}. However, the EP required to activate would it meant it would last

for only 30 seconds and have 30 minutes long cooldown. It was a skill to restore HP instead of flying.

The two of them sprinted. As they did, the temperature in the cave started to grow higher. The damage they received from the burn had increased drastically from 500 to 700, and even reached as high as 5,000! By then, the cave walls were glowing red-hot. Even the ground felt soft and squishy! The rocks below the ground that had melted!

"Holy %@\$#%^@\$! This is @#%^&@\$% hot! F*ck me!" cried Fatty Han.

"I'm almost out of HP!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "Use {Bat Form} to suck my HP!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "Genius!"

At that moment, both Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had reached their maximum EP. He then split apart into 10 individual bats and latched themselves onto Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang spread out his wings and shot like a missile as quickly as possible.

"Fatty! Don't revert back to your human form even when your HP is fully recovered! I can still take us further!"

"Okay!"

The bats that had latched on to Zhang Yang were immune to the fire damage around, allowing Fatty Han to gain a temporary form of invincibility. After 30 seconds, Fatty Han had reverted back to his normal form and had regained full HP. The damage around had reached a staggering 10,000 damage. Fatty Han could last for 5 minutes with his 3,000,000 HP.

Shush!

Zhang Yang managed to zoom out a tiny hole and came to a large chamber. Fatty Han's {Bat Form} ended just in time and he landed on the floor.

The chamber was well lit and it was as large as a basketball stadium.

The walls, ground, and even the ceiling were glowing ominously. There were sparks of fire that burst out of the walls. Sitting quietly in the deepest corner of the cave were two red eggs. The eggs were as large as a American football. Since it was large and possess a deeper red hue, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were able to spot it immediately.

"Little Yang!" Fatty Han widened his eyes in delight. "There are two eggs!"

In the beginning, Fatty Han was extremely frustrated. He had thought that there would only be one Phoenix and had kept on debating with himself. Being a brother, he should let Zhang Yang take it since he was the superstar. However...deep down, he too wanted the Phoenix! When Fatty Han saw that there was one for each of them, he was extremely grateful!

Was this the bug in the game that the two Koreans had mentioned about? There should be only one Phoenix but now, there are two eggs!

So be it, take the egg first!

"Go!" Zhang Yang yelled.

Fatty Han sprinted with all his might. Zhang Yang flew closely behind him and the two of them swiped one egg each.

[Blazing Fire Phoenix: Incubation Phase] (Hunter's Pet)

Use: Drip blood over the shell to form a pact and obtain a Blazing Fire Phoenix as your pet.

Binds upon pick-up.

Hm. Bound. It was expected.

The two of them quickly tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] but was quickly interrupted by the damage tick. Teleporting requires uninterrupted channeling!

Zhang Yang quickly equipped the [Lover's Charm: Yang] and had quickly asked Han Ying Xue to put on hers. After a few seconds, Zhang Yang disappeared with a quick blink. As he arrived at Han Ying Xue's side, Zhang Yang put on the [Party Summon Order] and pulled Fatty Han out of

the sea of fire.

"FUAH~ Cool air!! I'm alive! I'm alive!" Fatty Han dropped to the ground and sighed heavily. He spread his legs and hands all over the floor, not realizing Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had left him alone.

"Hey! Wait!" Fatty Han got up and chased after Zhang Yang.

"Let's crack the eggs!"

"Eggs?" Han Ying Xue turned around quicker than Zhang Yang. She was practicing cookery at that moment. She had learned that through food and cooking, a woman could reach a man's heart! She had learned it through woman's magazines and other female friends like Daffodil Daydream. If she were to ask Fatty Han, the open closet pervert would say something like, to earn a man's love, the woman must be able to pleasure his dingdong at all times. After that, she would hold on to it and never let go!

"Little Yang and I had just obtained a Phoenix's egg!" cried Fatty Han.

"I see. Well, hand it over. I can try and make Phoenix's egg omelet!"

Zhang Yang laughed and took out his egg and gave it to Han Ying Xue. "You can try!"

Han Ying Xue cocked her head and raise her eyebrow. When she took the egg, it immediately disappeared from her hands. It reappeared inside Zhang Yang inventory. It was the "bound" effect. Once an item is bound to a player, it cannot be taken away forcefully.

With shaky hands, Fatty Han took out his egg. With another hand, he used one of his arrowheads and prick the tip of his finger and drip the flowing blood onto the Phoenix egg.

Once the blood touched the surface of the shell, the egg made a cracking sound, followed by the appearance of a big crack on the shell. The cracking continued and eventually, the small fiery bird was nestled on his palm. There was still a tiny hat-like shell that was stuck on its fluffy little head which Fatty Han helped to remove. The chick was completely dyed in a deep red color. The newly formed feathers on its body had a flowing, swirly effect which made it extremely beautiful.

"Woah!" Han Ying Xue cried. "It's so beautiful!"

She turned to Zhang Yang swiftly and said, "Get me one!"

Zhang Yang shrunk away from her and sulked. It was a Unique beast. One of a kind. Or rather, two of a kind!

"Why? What's mine is yours! What's yours is mine!" Zhang Yang laughed awkwardly.

He too, took out his egg and dripped his blood on it.

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Black-Steel Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Attack: 3 – 5 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Green-Copper. Level Requirement: 10.

Since Zhang Yang was not a Hunter and the Phoenix pet was a battle pet specifically made for Hunter, the Phoenix pet had become a mount in his hands. The difference between the norm was normal mounts will be in the state of a pet before it reached Level 30. On the other hand, the Phoenix pet was already summoned out as a Battle Mount!

However, at Level 0, the Phoenix could not be mounted. How could he? One single step and the pretty bird will be squashed. Hence, the Phoenix pet then could not be mounted.

"Oh no. Oh no. Oh no. Don't tell me I've wasted 11 days camping in the snow just to get a Black-Steel tier pet!? WTF!? COME ON! WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS TO ME!" Fatty Han screamed to the high heavens which immediately drew the attention of a few players around for a brief second.

"...Stupid fool!" Zhang Yang slapped Fatty Han in the face.

"Look at the skill! Don't you see that it could evolve to gain tier?!"

"So what?! The next tier is only going to be a Green-Copper!" Fatty Han retaliated and cried like a kid that had lost his toy.

"Oh my god! May the great Buddha have mercy on your soul! Stupid f*ck! Who told you that the highest tier it can reach is Green-Copper?! There's still Gray-Silver, Yellow-Gold, and many more tiers!" Zhang Yang snarled.

"...Oh!" Fatty Han stopped sulking and smiled innocently. "How come I never thought about it! Haha! My bad!"

"F*ck off, you! Go and train or something." Zhang Yang slapped Fatty Han in the back.

"Owwie!" Fatty Han grunted and left. "Thanks for everything, Little Yang. I'll go and grind the little chicken's Level for now!"

Han Ying Xue insisted on continuing to practice her cooking Profession, so, Zhang Yang was left alone to do his own thing. Zhang Yang bade Han Ying Xue farewell and went off to a field packed with monsters. Right there, Zhang Yang summoned the little fiery bird and let it roam around for a while. The little feather ball had imprinted Zhang Yang as its mother and stayed around Zhang Yang. Every time Zhang Yang moved a step, the little chick would have chirped a little and followed Zhang Yang closely. The little chick would occasionally burn a few grass around it with its tiny flamethrower.

If Wei Yan Er was there, she would definitely be pestering Zhang Yang to hold on to the chick. He could not deny that he too was dazzled by its cuteness. Its big eyes were almost half of its head!

"Big brother! Felice could feel a tremendous amount of energy from within the little bird!" said Felice after Zhang Yang summoned her to start killing monsters. Previously, when Zhang Yang and Fatty Han was in the oven, he could not have summoned her, for she might be burnt to death!

"Ji! Ji! Ji ji!" The little Phoenix chirped happily as it saw the big sister standing next to Zhang Yang.

"Hm. Little Felice, this bird is a Legendary Beast! Probably the last of its kind!" said Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang kited a few hundred of monsters with a single trail and wallop them all with a single {God of War Crushing Strike}. The counter for the God of War Transformation skill had not yet ended ever since they obtained the egg from the cave.

‘-370,777!’

‘-362,023!’

...

More than 100 damage texts jumped out, covering and overlapping each other after Zhang Yang struck the ground. The monsters around were elite tiers. The strike dealt more than 30% of their HP in an instant. Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and shot out to the field to finish them off.

Even though the little Phoenix was still in its juvenile stage, it did not stand helplessly. Instead, the chick ran up to several monsters and spat some fire. Although the little chick could not deal much damage, Zhang Yang was extremely surprised to see that its flamethrower attack could hit three targets at the same time!

Was that its normal attack? It was the same when Zhang Yang had fought the dragon. Its dragon breath skill could deal AoE attack damage even though it was not an active skill. In fact, it was also a magic attack which could ignore Defense!

Woah...As expected of a Celestial tier pet. Even though it was still a baby, it was already frighteningly powerful!

With a few more attacks from Zhang Yang in his Transformation skill, all the monsters that he had kited around were killed in a matter of minutes. As such, the little chick gained so many levels that the pillar of light did not seem to dissipate, like it was permanently there!

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Green Copper Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 10

HP: 1,200

Defense: 100

Attack: 183 – 243 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Fire Build (Passive)]: Gains immunity against Fire attack. Able to consume Fire-based attacks and restore the same amount of HP based on the attack. Receives 50% increased Frost Damage.

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Gray-Silver. Level Requirement: 20.

...

A short while later, Zhang Yang train killed more monsters.

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Gray-Silver Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 20

HP: 4,000

Defense: 300

Attack: 1,017 – 1,217 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Fire Build (Passive)]: Gains immunity against Fire attack. Able to consume Fire-based attacks and restore the same amount of HP based on the attack. Receives 50% increase Frost Damage.

[Reborn from the Ashes (Passive)]: Revives from the flames upon death. Restores 100% HP and resets all skills that has less than a 24 hours cooldown. Cooldown: 24 hours.

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Yellow-Gold. Level Requirement: 50

...

After a whole day of grinding, Zhang Yang was able to push the

Phoenix's Level to Level 124 which was the current limit since Zhang Yang was also Level 124. As such, the final result for the Phoenix was simply horrifying!

[Blazing Fire Phoenix] (Mythical Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 124

HP: 267,720 (Vitality Aura)

Defense: 5,200

Attack: 31,436 – 41,436 (Melee Attack, Fire Damage) (Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Skills:

[Fire Build (Passive)]: Gains immunity against Fire attacks. Able to consume Fire-based attack and restore the same amount of HP based on the attack. Receives 50% increased Frost Damage.

[Reborn from the Ashes (Passive)]: Revive from the flames upon death. Restores 100% HP and resets all skills that has less than 24 hours cooldown. Cooldown: 24 hours.

[Phoenix Transformation]: Gains 2000% HP, 300% Attack, 300% Defense. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Forbidden Firefall]: Summons a rain of fire, deals damage equivalent to the current melee Fire attack every second to all targets within 100 meters x 100 meters area. Lasts for 30 seconds. Can only be used in {Phoenix Transformation}. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Adaptability]: Can shrink itself to fit in smaller environments.

[Evolve]: Can evolve to gain a tier. Next tier: Ethereal. Level Requirement: 140

[Shared Life (Passive)]: Combines the HP of both the pet and the master.

Chapter 621: Death Arbiter

"It keeps getting stronger!" Every time Fatty Han's Phoenix pet evolved into the next tier, Fatty Han would never fail to report it to Zhang Yang until the pet reached Level 120. By then, Fatty Han's voice was already cracking with joy.

Zhang Yang could understand why Fatty Han was so excited about the Phoenix, as well as why Hundred Shots would be able to stand over A class Inheritance players despite only having a C class Inheritance... or was it B class? Zhang Yang could not remember it clearly. The reason was due to the skill [Phoenix Transformation]. If Zhang Yang's Phoenix had such a skill, the Red Dragon pet that Hundred Shot would definitely possess a similar skill. The skill had to have similar effects as well.

When a player activates the Inheritance Transformation, the mount would not obtain the Transformation boost effect. Even though B class Inheritance and lower could be mounted after Transforming, the added bonus of the battle mount would be too small. However, the Phoenix pet's Transformation skill was like a pet's version of an Inheritance Transformation skill. The power when the master and the beast unleashes their Transformation skills would be ridiculous!

The pet phoenix will become stronger as time goes, which allows growth, just like a player gaining more power via equipment. Let's do a mental comparison between the strength of a regular battle mount and the Phoenix pet.

Player X is an A class Inheritance player with 150,000 HP, (The highest non-tank player), with an average attack damage of 35,000 (based on Zhang Yang own's attack), and owns a Violet-Platinum pet (normal) with 35,000 attack damage.

Player Z is a B class Inheritance player that has all the same stats and equipment of Player X. Player Z's pet will be the Phoenix pet with 150,000 HP and 35,000 attack damage.

The only difference between Player X and Z would be their Inheritances.

After activating their Inheritance Transformation skill, Player X would have 4,500,000 HP and 175,000 attack damage (along with the damage of the pet).

Player Z would have over 6,000,000 HP. (Shared Life + Transformation bonus of both pet and the player). Attack damage of 210,000!

Hence, the player with the Phoenix pet will overwhelm the other player despite having lower class Inheritance. It was better and more flexible since the pet and the player would activate their Transformation skills at different times.

The strongest skill of the Phoenix pet was the skill {Forbidden Firefall} that can only be used in the Transformation form. It was a full-screen Tornado Cleave! A super-enhanced AoE attack skill! Plus, it was also 30 seconds of DoT! A miniature version of a {Forbidden Scroll}!

No wonder the skill could have the name tag "Forbidden"!

Thought the Phoenix pet does not have many attacking skills in its normal form, its attack would already be enough to cause havoc! When the Blazing Fire Phoenix reaches Level 100, its normal attack, the flamethrower attack would reach as far as 10 meters. Even though it was not very wide, it was similar to an AoE attack! All targets in the line of attack will receive damage! Furthermore, it had only a 2-second attack interval! The damage was either equivalent, or stronger than the Thunderhawk!

The only drawback of the Phoenix pet was that it could not learn additional skills from skill books. Instead, it will gain skills as it evolves.

As a conclusion, the pet truly deserved to be called a Legendary Beast!

"Guild master. I have urgent news for you. The Myth is issuing us a challenge to duel!" Just when Zhang Yang was about to test out the Phoenix's attack capability in further maps, he received a message from a random guild member.

Zhang Yang was surprised but he remained calm. "The Myth? Hmph. What does Liu Wei want now. Does he not know when to stop?"

The guild The Myth was a "rejected" customer of Morning Town. Like the poor, unfortunate players of Japan and Korea, they would have to travel a long distance through the Ten Barren Sea to reach the Chaos Realm. As such, it was extremely inconvenient, not to mention the time wasted. Hence, the trouble that was self-imposed on them had made them rather grumpy.

"They have a Berserker! He is very strong! Right now, he is waiting in Morning Town! He has challenged only Lone Desert Smoke and had already defeated most of us!"

Zhang Yang snickered. "Alright. Sent Galileo in. Let the two Berserkers have a go!"

Zhang Yang had not cared about the menial dispute and continued on to the outskirts of Morning Town to kill. Compared to Zhang Yang himself, the Blazing Fire Phoenix's AoE attack were much stronger! One single blast of fire could cover an area so long that it could rival {Blast Wave}! Though the Phoenix's fire attacks were extremely potent and fatal!

At such rate of killing, Zhang Yang had the confidence to gain a Level in just 5 days! That is, if they had enough monsters to kill in the first place. He wanted to reach Level 130 before he departs for Los Angeles for the World Championship. If he could, he would be able to equip a few new equipment! Felice and Phoenix would also gain a new tier upgrade!

"Guild master. I've lost."

Roughly half an hour later, the little boy had reported his loss with a solemn voice.

Zhang Yang was thrown. "How could it be?"

The little boy was a skilled player who learned at an extremely fast pace. His PvP skills were also above average! He also had the B class Light and Shadow Inheritance and an array of strong equipment. Yet, he lost the fight? Zhang Yang was greatly intrigued. "Who is the enemy?"

"A player named Death Arbiter. Level 120. His equipment was better than mine. He too, had a B class Inheritance. I was completely outmatched

by his skill! I lost the match badly!" said Galileo.

Death Arbiter.

For someone to defeat Galileo in a fair fight, the player must be someone strong and not some random player who had come out of nowhere. Death Arbiter was a famous player in Zhang Yang's previous lifetime. In fact, the person could be one of the top 3 Berserkers in the whole world. The problem was, he had recalled that Death Arbiter was a core member of Rolling Rocks guild. Perhaps, due to Zhang Yang interference, something had changed the outcome, causing Death Arbiter to move to The Myth instead.

"There's no shame in losing. Just don't give up. Improve. Overcome. Improvise. Train harder so you could fight back next time!"

Zhang Yang sighed. He knew it was going to be messy if he goes to the scene. However, as a guild master, he had the obligation to retaliate. Zhang Yang unsummoned both Felice and Phoenix before teleporting back to Morning Town.

In town, Felice would not draw much attention other than regular perverts. On the other way, it's the Phoenix that he was worried about. The bird was huge and not to mention, fiery. If he had flown in with the bird, its wide 10 meters long wings and 30 meters long fiery tail would surely be the center of attention. Unlike other people, Zhang Yang does not like to attract random eyeballs to glare at him.

Zhang Yang walked casually towards the center plaza and saw Death Arbiter standing at the center of it taking all the limelight. There were buildings around the plaza which was filled with players. Players were completely jammed pack together like sardines in a can. Zhang Yang could not even move closer to the make-shift arena and could only stand behind the massive crowd. Zhang Yang wished he could join the players that were in the sky, riding on their flying mounts, rather than standing among the noisy crowd on the ground. However, thanks to the noise, Zhang Yang could pick up a few chatters regarding about the fight.

"That dude is strong! He had defeated Galileo!"

"Why? Was Galileo strong to begin with?"

"Yeah! He is the main attacker for Lone Desert Smoke secondary raid team!"

"Death Arbiter...The guy is indeed strong. Why haven't we heard of his name before?"

"You're the only one that had never heard of his name. The guy is famous. Before he joined The Myth, Death Arbiter was the main attacker for the guild Goldilocks. However, since the guild was only a small guild. The equipment that the guild could provide was not on par. Even the guild's own Battle Team were not as strong as they could only fight in the C class Professional League. Hence, the man decided to leave the guild to join The Myth. I heard that the guild master had a high expectation of him and spent a fortune to buy him the equipment he needed. The guild master had also used all his members just to help the man to level up!"

"Holy cow! If only someone treated me the same way! I'd sell my soul to him!"

"Probably no one would."

"What does that mean?"

"I don't have to explain."

"Grrr..."

While everyone was busy chatting, Zhang Yang tried to recall the past history of Death Arbiter. He was an Orc Warrior and had a set of armor that gave off a particular metallic luster. Based on the appearance, Zhang Yang deduced that the man was wearing a full set of Mythical tier equipment. Perhaps, only the ring and necklace were Violet-Platinum tier.

Hm...That's a lot of money spent... By then, Mythical tier equipment were extremely expensive and rare. Some of them even could not be bought with money alone. If Liu Wei had sorted out the equipment for Death Arbiter, he must have done something else than just throw out cash.

"Good job!" Liu Wei clapped his hands when Dearth Arbiter had taken down two to three more Lone Desert Smoke members that had confronted the man.

With his arms crossed, the man looked down to all the spectators and bellowed, "Is there no more strong players in Lone Desert Smoke? Is that what you have to offer? How dare you call yourself China's number one guild! You cannot even defeat a nameless player of a small guild! It's a shame that the world is looking up at a disgraceful guild!"

"Did he just insult us?"

"WTF did he just say?"

"Ayy! You wanna fight!?"

"I'll fight you here and now!"

...

Many players were stupid enough to fall for Liu Wei petty provocations and started to push forward into the plaza.

Liu Wei stood still and glared at the players with condescending eyes. "Look at you all. None of you could stand alone and fight and have to rely on numbers to defeat a single person. Such a shame. So be it. Come! Come at me with all your wrath! I shall stream this live, for the entire nation to see! See what their representative guild had fallen!"

"Pfft! Well said guild master! Lone Desert Smoke might have the numbers, but where are the strong ones!"

"Hmph! None could defeat our Death bro here!"

The players of The Myth had naturally stood with Liu Wei. In fact, there were a few other guilds members had voiced out their disdain towards Lone Desert Smoke. As such, there was nothing Lone Desert Smoke could do at the moment. All they could do was to clench their fist and swallow their pride. Streaming? There's no need to do that. The crowd around them was enough to put shame on the guild since they could not put up a solo 1v1 fight with Death Arbiter.

Death Arbiter laughed. "I do not mind a group fight. You...you...Let's see. 1,2,3,4...Hm...All 13 of you, come at me! None of you could even put a dent on me!"

"F*CKING PRICK!"

Even fuming with rage, all the Lone Desert Smoke had not rushed in.

"Come on! Why are you not attacking?" Death Arbiter struck his axe to the ground and said, "Do you want me to replace my axe with a Level 10 White-Wood tier axe? Guild master, have someone deliver a White-Wood axe here, please. I'm afraid they would not dare to attack me if I am not using a noob axe!"

"HAHAHAHA!" Laughter blasted in the town as players from The Myth laughed with disdain. Even players that had no business in the fight had laughed as well. Naturally, the spectators were there to watch the fight. They had no inclination to support either side. However, even though most of them had a negative perception toward Liu Wei, Death Arbiter however, was able to win the support of the crowd fair and square.

In the end, a strong player will always win the support of mass.

Chapter 622: One Sword Stroke Versus Death Arbiter

"You wanna go!? Let's have a go!"

Unable to resist the provocation of Death Arbiter, all 13 members of Lone Desert Smoke present there had jumped at him altogether.

"Wah! 1 v 13?!"

"Death by a player's hands would result in all experience points lost!"

"That man is bold! He could lose any one of his equipment!"

"That is what I call, balls of steel!"

The spectating players started to chat. The cheers and claps were directed towards the brave. Naturally, in that sort of situation, the audience was cheering for Death Arbiter. Liu Wei and his guild members enjoyed the show.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly. Even though it was 13 players fighting against Death Arbiter, all 13 players were at a huge disadvantage. The highest leveled player then was only Level 110, the lowest being Level 102. At most, the strongest player there would be wearing Violet-Platinum armor and some Yellow-Gold. A guild can be strong, but only the strongest player in a guild would have the strongest armor. Take Zhang Yang for example, even if he was the strongest player in all of China, and perhaps even the world, he had a mixture of Mythical tier equipment, 3 Violet-Platinum, and 2 Level 80 equipment that was in dire need of being swapped out!

However, the most important aspect of an equipment was the tier! Not the level but the tier! A normal player with a full set of level 110 Violet-Platinum equipment would have over 70,000 HP and around 18,000 weapon attack. (Two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds attack interval).

On the other hand, a player with a full set of Level 110 Mythical tier equipment would have HP as high as 150,000 to 160,000, and an average

weapon attack of 36,000! (Two-handed weapon with 3.8 seconds attack interval).

Furthermore, Death Arbiter had a B class Inheritance in hand. Even if he does not use his Transformation skill, he would have a higher advantage over normal players! By then, even though Inheritance players were sprouting out like mushrooms after the rain, the number was still extremely scarce. In reality, out of 10 players who were mingling in the Chaos Realm, only 1 of them would have an Inheritance. In other news, players with high-class Inheritance such as Wei Yan Er or Zhang Yang would be like searching for a four-leaf clover in a football field!

Still, Zhang Yang silently praised Death Arbiter for challenging 13 players at one go. The man showed potential, there was no doubt about it.

The battle started when Zhang Yang was still in his sea of thoughts.

It was not a battle. It was an ambush. If this was a battle, the system would have set up a 5-minute timer to allow some preparatory time. In reality, it was like a random sudden encounter in the field. You would not expect a player to pop out suddenly and say, "Hey! I'm going to attack! Have you made adequate preparations?"

However, Death Arbiter was not the everyday jack you see in the streets. Zhang Yang judged from the sidelines. With a strong swing of his axe, Death Arbiter's attack was strong enough to kill a player off with three simple swings. However, just raw power alone would not do you much in a fight. When 13 players jumped at him, he would have to take at least 50% HP as damage. However, the man was powerful. With coordinated Supporting Attacks, he had managed to avoid many attacks that could not be evaded. He had performed many moves which required one to be as quick and agile as Zhang Yang. Haymakers, uppercuts, lowkicks, clotheslines, knees, left, right hooks, the man was practically a powerful MMA fighter! More than 10 of the players who were attacking him could not connect their attacks! Death Arbiter had even used the enemy as a human shield to nullify damage!

"How strong...He had killed 3 players in just 30 seconds..."

"D*mn. Not even Zhan Yu could be that strong..."

"Please. Didn't you hear about Zhan Yu taking on 30,000 Japan-Korea region players at the same time? He had also dealt with a bunch of Japanese and Korean players in Anjar Castle!"

"It wasn't the same. Both attempts, he had help from NPC bosses! In fact, Zhan Yu used his Inheritance Transformation skill! Death Arbiter did not use anything!"

"Nonsense! If Zhan Yu had used his Transformation skill, don't you think that the Japanese and Korean players would not do the same?"

"I think Death Arbiter is stronger!"

"No. Zhan Yu is the best!"

As the heated discussion went on among random players, Zhang Yang paid attention to the fight instead of the random useless chattering. Amongst the audiences, there were in fact, more players supporting Zhang Yang. However, after the first few moments, Death Arbiter's popularity had risen up. As such, his name would definitely be jotted down in the list of professional players in China!

8...6...3 left.

As the number of players started to reduce, Death Arbiter's started adopting a more fleet-footed style. In the end, he had only casually used {Cripple Defense} to kill the remaining three players. Even though it was rather bold, the audience around cheered for him, for that was the kind of battle they preferred – a one-sided massacre.

Even though PvP does not dictate a 100% chance of dropping equipment, out of the 13 players, 5 of them had unfortunately, dropped their equipment. Liu Wei had his crooks to pick them all up and arranged them nicely in a row. There were a total of 27 equipment.

They were placed blatantly in public as a public humiliation to Lone Desert Smoke.

Zhang Yang sight turned cold. His killing aura grew stronger. Just as he

took the first step towards the plaza, a shadow flashed by. A large, golden-winged condor flew over the crowd and towards the plaza. Riding on the condor was a player equipped in Heavy Armor. There was a one-handed axe hanging from his waist and a large shield slung over his back. The name tag that was hanging on top of his character was none other than China's second strongest tank – One Sword Stroke.

"Liu...Wei...!" The man dropped from the air and landed with a powerful slam to the ground, creating a small crater as he did. His glare locked on Liu Wei. He pulled out his axe and pointed it boldly at Liu Wei. "It's time to settle our grudges."

"Pfft." Liu Wei cracked a smile which immediately burst into a laughter. "Hahahaha! Look who's here! It's the eunuch!" Liu Wei did not spare any second to humiliate him.

"I heard that someone chopped off your manhood! If you felt no shame of it, I could understand that, you didn't lose much anyway. But I also heard that your wife was raped over a hundred times! It's weird seeing you still alive. I wonder where did you get the courage to look at your wife without imagining a hundred d*cks inside her! How does it feel being a husband to a whore?"

One Sword Stroke snapped. Zhang Yang had even noticed when Liu Wei was talking, One Sword Stroke's grip on his axe was so strong, it had bent the metal handle of the axe. Just when he raised his head back to eye level, One Sword Stroke had jumped towards Liu Wei with his axe, ready to cleave Liu Wei in half.,

DANG!!!!!!!!!!!!

A large two-handed axe appeared in between the two players with Death Arbiter standing on his left, holding the axe with just one hand. With quick reflexes, Death Arbiter shoved One Sword Stroke's axe upwards and pushed him backward with his palm.

"Please...if you want to kill me, do it properly." Liu Wei snickered. "Ah! I've forgotten to tell you. When your wife was in bed, she was practically as horny as a bitch in heat. Every time I stuck it inside, she would squeeze me

dry! My advice to you? Please pleasure her like how the hundred men did. Or else she might just run into the streets and whore herself out for more cocks. Oh...Perhaps, it is already too late for you. HAHAAHA!"

One Sword Stroke had enough. However, he was not alone. Liu Wei's poisonous words had angered so many spectators around, resulting in a change from cheering to massive disdain.

One Sword Stroke drew in a deep breath and changed his target towards Death Arbiter. One Sword Stroke had just arrived at the scene. He had no idea on how Death Arbiter fought.

However, from the man's masterful defense of his strike, One Sword Stroke had already concluded that the man was not to be underestimated. In fact, he might as well be as strong as Zhang Yang! There was no room for him to make a single mistake.

"I heard that you're only second to Zhan Yu, the second strongest Warrior in China. Hmm...To tell you the truth, I'm not interested in your tank ranking, but I will take away the title as Warrior! Now that Zhan Yu is hiding like a coward, I shall be taking your position for now. When the time comes, I shall destroy Zhan Yu and stand tall as the strongest warrior!" Death Arbiter laughed proudly, filled with confidence.

One Sword Stroke scoffed and chuckled.

"What's so funny?"

"Nothing. It's just...For a second there, I had actually thought that you might be stronger than Zhan Yu. But now I see...You're nowhere close to him. He might be an *sshole. But even I would recognize the man as the strongest tank and warrior in China! No! The whole world!"

Death Arbiter gritted his teeth and snarled. "I will defeat the both of you and claim the title!"

"You can try."

"And I will. When I do, I will dance on your corpse."

One Sword Stroke was not an ordinary man. He was, after all, the guild

master of Imperial Sky. Even though his wrath was so strong that it could poison a man, he was still able to control his rage and focus on the real threat. A guild's strength is decided by the strength of all the members in it. However, it requires guidance. Guidance that would never falter in the face of despair.

Lone Desert Smoke was under the care of Zhang Yang. Crimson Rage had Snow Seeker. Radiance had Sword of Light. Imperial Sky? One Sword Stroke, of course.

The man with the entire guild on his shoulder shan't be shaken by mere provocations! For he holds the pillar that supports the entire guild. If he falls, so does the guild.

One Sword Stroke equipped his shield and his axe.

"Let me give you an advice. There is a fine line between courage and recklessness. Know the difference now before you ending up on the wrong side."

"Hahaha! Who you think you are? Trying to lecture me when you should take a good look at yourself!"

"I don't need to. I know where I stand. Do you?"

Death Arbiter summoned his mount, a Mechanical Quad-Winged Tiger. "Enough! Time to end this!"

Zhang Yang could not hear their conversation. When he saw Death Arbiter summoning his mount, he could not help but feel a little jealous. The Mechanical Quad-Wing Tiger was a product of the Engineering Profession. The recipe to craft the item was extremely rare! Furthermore, when the mount is crafted it will be bound to the crafter. Hence, only a player with the Engineering Profession could craft and use it for themselves. It was a flying mount, a Mythical tier at that! At the stage where only a handful of players had reached Level 120, that mount was strong!

On the other side, One Sword Stroke's mount, the Golden-Winged Condor was just a Violet-Platinum tier. One tier lower than Death

Arbiter's. That was not an issue. The main problem was that, One Sword Stroke was Level 118!

Even though the gap between them were only 2 Levels, the power that Death Arbiter held was stronger by 10 levels! Death Arbiter could equip Level 120 equipment while One Sword Stroke could only equip Level 110 equipment! Death Arbiter also had one extra Inheritance skill, and his mount would be on another level!

To put things in comparison, One Sword Stroke was out-classed in terms of attributes.

"One Sword Stroke! This is a fight of honor! Come at me with everything you got!" said Death Arbiter as he zoomed towards One Sword Stroke with his axe, ready to cleave.

"HMPH!"

One Sword Stroke raised his shield and blocked the attack. A blast of spark was unleashed and One Sword Stroke staggered back. He was clearly overpowered in terms of Strength value.

"Hmph. You're nothing but words." Death Arbiter rushed onwards and cleaved One Sword Stoke.

"Don't be too sure of yourself." One Sword Stroke scoffed. With a quick leap, One Sword Stroke dodged the attack and flew behind Death Arbiter, throwing out a counterattack.

After the attack landed, Death Arbiter turned around and punched the condor with his full might. The punch packed so much power that the condor was sent flying, pushing One Sword Stroke away with ease.

"Hahahaha! I'm invincible! This game...This game was designed especially for me to conquer!" Death Arbiter laughed manically. "I am China's national Wushu Champion, many times over the course of several years! Even though my attacks could not cause any damage, it was strong enough to be a great support in battle! One on one fight? No one can defeat me!"

As he taunted One Sword Stroke, the man flew towards him and landed

a barrage of attacks.

Even though One Sword Stroke had no talents in martial arts, there was a reason why the man was publicly recognized as China's second strongest tank. His capabilities were not just for show! In fact, in terms of class prowess, a Guardian was designed to specially counter a Berserker! At the rate of their fight, the two of them might not share the same stats, the two of them were indeed standing on the same level!

"Use your Transformation skill! Or else, you're not my opponent." Death Arbiter grinned evilly. "I'm not going to pull my punches."

"You don't deserve to fight me in my Transformation mode." One Sword Stroke had collected his composure and replied coldly with no emotion.

Both fighters were pressuring each other to use their trump card, despite silently feeling out the other's strengths.

Chapter 623: Fight with Everything You Have!

Despite One Sword Stroke's demeaning words. His true intention to not use his Transformation skill was because it was his trump card. In fact, Transformation skill is every player's trump card. Only a few players would release information regarding about their Inheritance. The smart ones would not, tell everyone about your strengths, giving everyone a chance to exploit your weaknesses

A good example was Wei Yan Er's Darkness Inheritance. Her Transformation skill maybe strong but she was extremely vulnerable to Holy elemental damage during the activation duration. If her weakness was discovered by outsiders, anyone could counter her with a bunch of Priests and Knights. On the other hand, if the Fire Immunity of the Phoenix is kept a secret, all dispatched Pyromancer will be completely be wasted.

It couldn't be helped; class skills were exposed completely to everyone in the world. However, Inheritances, especially higher-class Inheritances are being guarded like a national treasure. It was rather simple, since the number of high-class Inheritances like Class A and Class S were extremely scarce. Hence, in normal circumstances, some even had refused to use their Transformation skills to prevent anyone from researching their weakness.

However, S class Inheritances were different from the norm. Even if the information about the Inheritance is leaked out, no one could really craft out a proper countermeasure!

Neither One Sword Stroke nor Death Arbiter would want to leak their own Inheritance Transformations to the world. Hence, the best scenario was for none of them to use their Transformation skills to fight. If either one of them used it, the other would be forced to use his as well to balance the power difference.

However, the two enemies were constantly provoking the other to use

their own Transformations.

Sounds of heavy metal clashing with each other continued on. The two players' movements and attack patterns had enthralled the audience.

'God's Miracle' had been online for more than 1 year and a half. The Professional League had been going on for half a year. There would be more and more talented players emerging out of the crowd of greenhorns. Zhang Yang felt like everyone's PvP skill had increased greatly. It was time for him to train, or else he might be left out as well.

One Sword Stroke and Death Arbiter were the best among the best. Just by watching the two titans clash with each other was enough to send shivers down one's spine. Just like a sports player who enjoys watching other players fight, it was a way of improving oneself. Taking the best from their performance and applying to oneself. Like the display of supporting attacks by the two players.

Death Arbiter was a fighter in real life. He was trained to look for the opponent's opening to strike an attack. His martial art skills were extremely useful in the battle. On the other hand, One Sword Stroke might not have been trained in martial arts, he had the reflexes that could rival Zhang Yang. His responses were lightning quick and fast that he could compensate his sluggish movement by dodging attacks and even counterattacks. To put it mildly, the two of them were almost at the same level. Even their HP drop rate was the same!

Amongst the audience, there were many Imperial Sky and The Myth members. Healers were standing out, but everyone had kept their hands in their pocket. If any side supports the battle, they would be forfeiting the match. There were eyes and ears watching from all corners. Any mistakes could not be forgiven! It was a matter of guild honor where only One Sword Stroke and Death Arbiter could settle the core.

Since Berserker's Heal was removed from the game, warriors had been nerfed in long combat. However, that would not mean that the fight between the two would end quickly. Both players had been finding the chance to land a stun skill in order to provide time to use [Bandage] or

[Healing Potion] whenever they can. Additionally, supporting attacks were used to break the combo of the opponent attacks, causing the entire battle to last as long as 7 minutes. At that moment, both sides only had 20% HP left.

Two players, two sides, two cheers. All sort of skills and moves were unleashed to kill but neither of them were actually landing a solid blow. Clearly, both of them were professionals, that even skills that were supposed to be used normally had been twisted and bent in a way that no one would believe without actually seeing with their own two eyes!

Both sides were far from each other. The atmosphere between the two was as tense as a steel thread holding a building together. Both of them were at the HP threshold where both of them could use {Killing Cleave}. One single mistake would spell doom for either party.

{Killing Cleave} ignores Defense, cannot be blocked, nor evaded. Hence, if the opponent mistakenly enters the range, it would be a sure-hit.

The two of them roughly had the same HP %. However, One Sword Stroke was a tank, therefore, even by percentages, this HP was much higher than Death Arbiter's. However, Death Arbiter had the advantage of attack, for he wields a two-handed weapon. Even of the two of them launched {Killing Cleave} at each other, the damage dealt would be different, but the HP % deducted would be the same.

As such, if neither of them did something out of the norm, both of them would die together.

Liu Wei snickered. Without making a move, he nodded lightly to a person who was standing in the opposite crowd where he stood.

The players nodded back to acknowledge the command and quietly sneaked into the crowd whilst hiding his profile information. The player sneaked amongst the player of Imperial Sky and healed One Sword Stroke.

Shring!

‘+8,821!’

A large green color text floated up on One Sword Stroke character and

everyone at present gasped.

It was a clash of titans, yet someone had purposefully sabotaged the fight. The entire match was suddenly brought down to a screaming match.

One Sword Stroke stopped attacking immediately and threw away his axe, refusing to continue. "WHO DID IT!" He screamed at the top of his lungs.

Players of Imperial Sky turned to each other. "Not us!"

Death Arbiter lifted his axe and placed it on his shoulder. With a smug look on his face, he scoffed. "So, this is the way Imperial Sky fights. You can't rely on your own strength and had your healer sneak in a heal for you in the middle of battle. Did you think that the thousands of pairs of eyes around would miss such a cheat?"

The audience around who had nothing to do with Lone Desert Smoke, Imperial Sky, and The Myth booed loudly. Insults and demeaning words were thrown all around. Any healing skills would have a direction pointer and everyone had spotted the green stream of magic coming from the crowd of Imperial Sky.

One Sword Stroke opened his battle log to find the culprit. However, the name of the player who had healed him was concealed. Immediately, he knew that the culprit was sent by Liu Wei. He had been working with Liu Wei for quite some time before he had separated with him. He knew clearly that such a deceitful method was Liu Wei's doing!

However, no matter how One Sword Stroke tried to explain himself, the power of ignorant players had laid down the final judgment. Everyone had already marked Imperial Sky as a guild of cowards and cheaters.

As such, One Sword Stroke picked up his axe and roared at Liu Wei for a final time before leaving the arena.

Liu Wei was disappointed at his reaction. He had thought that One Sword Stroke might still stick around a little longer to fall into more of his traps.

Zhang Yang kept his mouth shut. Unlike the other players, Zhang

Yang's eyes were as sharp as an eagle. He had spotted the sneaky players walking from The Myth and towards Imperial Sky. However, he had not done anything to defend One Sword Stroke. He was close enough to One Sword Stroke to defend the man in trouble. Secondly, if he had tried to clear his name, it might cause him to be dragged into the mud pit. Even though Zhang Yang was someone who could reason with the crowd, he was dealing with players of The Myth as well. Who knows what kind of trickery that man might pull off to cause him to be labeled as another cheater.

"One Sword Stroke...Just the name, and no honor." Death Arbiter turned away from the arena and stood beside Liu Wei.

The man had demonstrated his prowess to the crowd. Hence, his popularity had reached a point where he now stood on the same stage with Zhang Yang himself. No one, including Zhang Yang had thought that the man was a man of his words. He might occasionally be boastful of himself, but he played his game right.

Liu Wei was delighted. He had even thought of uploading the recording of the battle to the internet. It might increase the influx of strong players into his guild! The amount of money spent on Death Arbiter was worthwhile, after all! He had not even spent that much money on himself!

"Where is Zhan Yu! Bring the man here! One Sword Stroke has been defeated! Does he plan to hide his face forever! Is China's number one fighter a coward!?" Death Arbiter roared.

"Zhan Yu! Call him! Call the coward out!"

"Tch..." Players of Lone Desert Smoke scoffed.

"Our big boss could defeat him with one hand behind his back."

"Hmph. I dare say that he could even win him with all his equipment off!"

Someone from The Myth had heard the conversation and started to lunge at Lone Desert Smoke. A screaming match started between guild, causing the mass to split itself apart. On the sidelines, audiences who

were not affiliated to either of the guild were starting to gossip. As the gossip turned into greater insult, a hot-headed player had tried to settle the score himself by entering the arena to fight Death Arbiter. He was immediately stopped by his friends.

"LET ME GO! I'LL FIGHT THAT DOUCHE! ZHAN YU IS OUR GUILD MASTER! I SHALL DEFEND HIS HONOR!"

Zhang Yang reached out and held his shoulder firmly.

"That's what I wanted to hear," said Zhang Yang with a smile. Zhang Yang moved forward and revealed his name tag and a string of title. "Allow me to prove what Lone Desert Smoke could do."

"Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of Snow Sprite City, Warrior of Centaur, Hero of White Jade Castle, Warrior of Sacred Glory, The Challenger, Level 124, Male Human, Guardian, {Lone Desert Smoke}."

The crowd was stunned. No one made a squeak when the man, the legendary fighter, the person who Death Arbiter had been eager to fight, made his appearance.

The string of titles was not a feat that anyone could accomplish. Even if they did, the title was nothing of value. Zhang Yang's title was obtained by completing the hardest challenges, proving himself as both a player and a guild master, to be the best in China. The best tank! The pinnacle of 'God's Miracle'!

Everyone shrunk away from the frontlines. Zhang Yang had nothing to say. In fact, he does not need to do anything. Players themselves know who Zhang Yang is and what he was capable.

"You're finally here!" Death Arbiter cried. He had never fought Zhang Yang before and did not know what he was capable of. With the momentarily bolstered confidence after dueling with One Sword Stroke, the man brandished his axe and pointed it at Zhang Yang with utmost confidence. "Come! Let's fight!"

Zhang Yang tapped the tip of the axe and sent it flying with just a flick

of his index finger. "You..."

Zhang Yang gave the man a condescending glare and said, "You're not worthy. In fact, none of you all are. Sigh...I'm disappointed." He shrugged.

"You. You. You with the stupid outfit. You. And You. Join Death Arbiter and fight me."

All of the players that he had pointed were all members of The Myth.

Such a bold statement...exactly the same words that Death Arbiter had spoken earlier. Zhang Yang took the liberty to have Death Arbiter eat his own words. All the previously defeated 13 players of Lone Desert Smoke teared up at his challenge, while others were started to get excited. Such a man!

Death Arbiter was enraged. "Zhan Yu. What are you playing at? Ahhh...I see what you're doing. You trying to make an excuse when you're defeated. Isn't it! Haha! I might be wrong about One Sword Stroke. He might not have a d*ck anymore, but he had balls bigger than yours!"

"That's true. Now that we're done comparing d*cks. Shall we fight?"

Zhang summoned out his Blazing Fire Phoenix and mount on it. "I'm challenging all of you together to show a little handicap. Since you're still complaining, shall I give you a hand and a leg?"

"What is that mount.."

"It's...so cool!"

"It's on fire!"

With the appearance of the Phoenix, the crowd's attention was diverted towards it instead.

"Enough!" Death Arbiter bellowed. "I alone shall be your opponent."

He had been healed by the healers around and most of his skills were already ready to be used. With an angry roar, he hopped on his Mechanical Quad-Winged Tiger and flew towards Zhang Yang.

There were no reins on the Phoenix. Instead, Zhang Yang had only

mentally commanded the Phoenix to move. With a flash, the mythical bird zoomed towards the guild, leaving a trail of flames behind as it did. With a blast of fire and a swing of a sword, Zhang Yang and the Phoenix massacred the players of The Myth. There was no mercy left to spare for him. They had intruded upon his peace and brought shame and humiliation to everyone around him. Blood must be shed!

‘-35,929!’

‘-38,092!’

‘-37,092!’

‘-31,889!’

...

Both Zhang Yang’s and the Phoenix’s attack had dealt roughly the same amount of damage to all the players of The Myth.

{Horizontal Cleave}!

‘-67,880!’

‘-72,982!’

‘-79,336!’

Three players took the damage and were killed instantly. All three of them had only over 70,000 HP. Even though they had over 120,000 HP while mounted, their remaining HP after the initial attack had only left them with half of their HP. There were still two players around him that had over 20,000 HP left.

"ZHAN YU!" Death Arbiter roared and chased after Zhang Yang. The Phoenix was a Celestial tier beast, though it had not yet achieved that rank, its speed was not something a Mechanical mount could match. Before, when Death Arbiter flew towards him, Zhang Yang ignored him and attacked the players on the ground instead. Death Arbiter felt the utmost humiliation when Zhang Yang refused to fight him!

The two players with a tiny bit of HP left had tried to run away. Zhang Yang immediately summoned Felice out and have her kill one player with

a normal lance attack and the other player with a {Fire Missile}.

The first two deaths had been confirmed.

"Stay in formation! Do not break your formation!" Liu Wei quickly took command and spread the players out to prevent multiple kills from Zhang Yang. The audience around the battle had retreated to a great distance to allow adequate fighting space for the two foes.

Zhang Yang laughed and sped through the air, breaking the sound barrier and blasted towards Death Arbiter.

PANG!

Two blades clashed against each other, the muscles on the arms of both Death Arbiter and Zhang Yang tensed up.

"Zhan Yu. Today, I shall take your title of China's number 1 player!" Death Arbiter gritted his teeth and knocked Zhang Yang sword upwards. With a quick duck, Death Arbiter swung his axe and aimed at Zhang Yang abdomen. Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield and blocked the predictable attack.

What that was shocking was not the fact that Zhang Yang could block the attack. Death Arbiter was extremely shocked at Zhang Yang remaining stationary! He was supposed to be knocked back! Zhang Yang's array of equipment, followed by the immense Strength bonus and Defensive builds, Zhang Yang would not be weaker than any Berserker! Perhaps, only Wei Yan Er with her {Strength Aura} activated could surpass him.

Zhang Yang pulled his sword back and stabbed Death Arbiter in the chest. At the same time, he casted {God of War Devastation}!

‘-34,780!’

‘-110,961!’

Two damage texts popped up! But it was not done! Felice could not wait to cast an attack, hence, she morphed into her human form and stabbed the man with her lance for over 30,000 damage. At then, the Phoenix attack blasted him for over 40,000 Fire damage, dealing a total of 210,000

damage in a flash.

He had only over 250,000 HP when he was mounting! The combined attacks had nearly caused his death! Zhang Yang was a little disappointed that none of his attack had proc'd a critical strike, nor the effect of the Sword of Purging Devourer.

"HOLY SHIIIEET!"

The audience gasped in horror. They were still admiring the beauty of the Phoenix and were stunned when they saw Death Arbiter's HP dropping down so rapidly! The amount of damage had taken One Sword Stroke at least 8 minutes to deal!

As expected of China's number 1 tank! NO! Perhaps even the number 1 attacker! How could someone deal so much damage without even using their Transformation skill!?

Chapter 624: Phoenix Transformation

Death Arbiter was shocked, and he let out a breath of surprise. He quickly hopped onto his Pet Mount and did a tactical retreat. Who would want to get caught in the swing of a {Killing Cleave} from Zhang Yang!

However, Zhang Yang did not intend to activate his {Killing Cleave}. As the guild master of the Lone Desert Smoke, Zhang Yang wanted to get even for his guild members. He wanted to show that Death Arbiter had made a grave mistake by shaming them with his foul words!

So, Death Arbiter wanted to retreat, huh?

Could he be faster than the speed of a Phoenix Pet? Is that a joke? The Phoenix was a legendary beast. It would be the best among all Pet Mounts in the current stage of the game. It would remain as number one until the first appearance of a Dragon pet.

Like a flaming ball of fire, Zhang Yang arrived right in front of Death Arbiter. While the opponent was still glaring at Zhang Yang with his frightened eyes, Zhang Yang bashed his shield right onto Death Arbiter's face!

Bam!

3 teeth flew right out from Death Arbiter's mouth, followed by small splashes of blood. Half of his face started swelling up. The HP bar of Death Arbiter remained untouched.

However, Death Arbiter felt worse than being dead!

All he did was to underestimate his enemy, and next thing he knew, he almost got killed by a series of attacks from Zhang Yang! He would rather be dead than be smacked in the face by Zhang Yang. It felt like a part of his reputation had been smacked off of his face!

Zhang Yang did not continue to launch his assaults on Death Arbiter. He commanded his Phoenix Pet back to the enemy crowd. With a swing of his sword, he began to slaughter the members of the Myth like a farmer with his scythe!

Zhang Yang had over 5,230 Defense. Upon the activation of his {God of War Transformation}, he had over 40% of Damage Immunity and 4,612 points of Damage Absorption! In other words, if his enemies wanted to deal a Physical Damage that could penetrate his Defense to cause effective damage to him, they should be able to deal 13,000 damage at the very least! Even with their magic attacks, they must also deal at least 7,500 in order to cause effective damage to Zhang Yang!

Meanwhile, normal players would only have Level 110 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment on them. Even if they were to hold a weapon with 3.8-second Attack Interval, they would only deal approximately 18,000 damage to their target. So, how much damage could they really deal to Zhang Yang, then?

On the other hand, how powerful could Zhang Yang's attack be?

With Zhang Yang, the Phoenix Pet and Felice combining their assaults together, their enemies were on the verge of being annihilated! Wherever they passed by, they leave tons of bodies behind them!

"Heal! Heal Death Arbiter now! Heal him like there is no tomorrow!" Liu Wei screamed as loudly as he could. No matter how many men he had with him, they would still be unmatched to the oppressiveness of Zhang Yang --- tens of players had not been able to accumulate enough firepower to turn the tide of the battle. They were there just to let Zhang Yang slash them up. The only player who could withstand the power of Zhang Yang was Death Arbiter.

When Death Arbiter had finally succeeded gotten Zhang Yang's full attention fixed on him, the other members of the Myth were only able to launch their assaults on Zhang Yang without that much pressure.

The other players in the surroundings were shocked to see everything that was happening. Death Arbiter had taken on numerous members of Lone desert Smoke at the same time earlier on, slaughtering them up. He seemed so powerful back there. Who would have thought that Death Arbiter would be forced to retreat just because of one person! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was slaughtering up the players in front of him! That was

just...

Zhang Yang was to answering Death Arbiter's slaughtering of the members of Lone Desert Smoke in kind! He went up against numerous players of The Myth like how Death Arbiter did!

What the hell! Zhang Yang was showing his oppressive power off to his enemies! He was braver than a man!

"Zhan Yu!" Death Arbiter let out an angered roar. He had never felt so puny ever since he joined the game. Although he had encountered some high Tier players, he would never lose a single match, unless his equipment are too far off compared to the equipment of his opponent! Ever since he joined The Myth, Liu Wei had been very focused on building him up. The standard of his equipment would surely be among the top players --- his equipment standard would not be far off, at least!

Death Arbiter thought he could win all battles that came at him. Apparently, he was proven wrong by Zhang Yang. Of course, he could not accept the reality!

Roaring in rage, he activated his Inheritance Transformation Skill without any hesitation!

A pair of dark sharp horns appeared right above his head. A pair of black wings taking the shape of the bat's wings came out of his back. His eyes turned red as his body mass began to increase drastically. The armor on his entire body began to sink into that large body mass of his. By the end of it, Death Arbiter had transformed into a large muscular being that only wore a pair of long trousers.

The naked upper body of his was covered with dark green, mythical runes that were radiating with ghastly flames!

Although he had two wings behind his back, Death Arbiter did not seem to have the ability to fly. With a deafening roar, he charged towards Zhang Yang while riding on his mechanical tiger.

That was the Class B Demon Hunter Inheritance!

Although the information about high-Class Inheritances were very hard

to obtain, Zhang Yang had over 3 years in his previous life to gather enough information about them. Anyone would have been able to retrieve a certain amount of information in that amount of time.

Upon activating the Inheritance Transformation Skill of the Demon Hunter Inheritance, the player would have all the basic attributes of a Class B Inheritance: Increases Maximum HP by 20 times, Increases Attack by 300%, Increases Defense by 3 times, and increases the rate of Magic Immunity by 20%. Upon activating the Transformation Skill, players would also be able to deal 50% additional damage to demons. However, the user would also be afraid of Sacred Spells and Holy Spells as the user would receive additional damage.

However, even though Zhang Yang was not equipped with any sorts of Holy attack, he would not be affected by the 50% additional damage that Death Arbiter could deal. The same goes for Felice and Phoenix Pet. None of them were demons! Therefore, Death Arbiter had no chance at all but to unleash his full potential.

Zhang Yang was confident enough to engage in battle with a player with Class C Inheritance without activating his {God of War Transformation}. But a Class B Inheritance... Furthermore, Death Arbiter was a high Tier player. Zhang Yang would be digging his own grave if he ever thinks of holding back against Death Arbiter by not activating his {God of War Transformation}!

{Phoenix Transformation} activated!

The Blazing Fire Phoenix immediately let out a long roar as it began to light up with blazing flames. The heat waves were overflowing into the surroundings, as everyone around it was forced to retreat tens of meters back in order to flee from the scorching heat from the Phoenix!

In the midst of the blazing flames, the feathers of the Phoenix Pet had turned from crimson red to Violet-Golden color. Its body mass had also increased tremendously while its attributes were insanely boosted up!

[Royal Blood Phoenix] (Mythical Tier Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 124

HP: 5,454,400

Defense: 15,600

Attack: 94,308 - 124,308

Upon the power-up of the Phoenix Pet, the Maximum HP of Zhang Yang had reached up to 5,600,000 HP! Although that was still a little far from the power he could obtain by activating his God of War Transformation Skill, it was enough for Zhang Yang to go up against Death Arbiter. Unfortunately, after Zhang Yang had mounted onto the Phoenix Pet, his Defense would still be based on his initial amount of Defense. Therefore, the 15,600 Defense of the Phoenix Pet would not be accounted for as long as Zhang Yang is on its back.

As the attributes of the Pets were only accessible by their own owners, Death Arbiter could not have known the Blazing Fire Phoenix was, in fact, a legendary Tier. He activated his Demon Hunter Transformation, and his confidence came flooding over him. He swore to humiliate Zhang Yang as hard as he could and get back his 'face'.

"Zhan Yu! I shall make you regret everything you've done all along!" Death Arbiter raised up his battle axe and swung it straight towards Zhang Yang. Under the influence of his Demon Hunter Transformation, his axe was flashing with ghastly green flames.

Zhang Yang smiled coldly as he raised his weapon to engage Death Arbiter.

'-87210!'

The {Tornado Cleave} that was struck upon Zhang Yang by Death Arbiter had finally dealt an unexpectedly high damage on Zhang Yang. Even though Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Shield}, he still received about 90,000 damage! However, Zhang Yang was currently mounted on his Phoenix Pet. The amount of his Maximum HP had reached over 5,600,000 HP. 90,000 damage would mean nothing compared to that amount of HP he had!

At the same time, Zhang Yang returned Death Arbiter's favor by swing

his sword back at Death Arbiter. His Phoenix Pet spat out a blazing fire 20 meters across the distance! Not only were the flames torching up Death Arbiter, the Healers right behind Death Arbiter were also lit up!

‘-72,226!’ {Frost Strike} by Zhang Yang!

‘-95,320!’ {Flamethrower} by Phoenix Pet!

‘-118,033!’ {Flamethrower} by Phoenix Pet!

Three extremely high damage values popped out at the same instant. Although Zhang Yang was not powered up by his Transformation Skill, the Phoenix Pet was already extremely powerful at that moment. Its Attack power could match the Attack power of Death Arbiter! Furthermore, its attacks were basically AoE attacks. Not only it dealt approximately 100,000 damage to Death Arbiter, the Phoenix Pet also almost took out the Healer instantly!

The Healer tried to escape after being left barely alive. However, he failed.

Felice charged up to that Healer with her lance pointed straight at him! With a basic strike, Felice killed the Healer instantly.

"Felice, go get the others! Little Fiery and I shall take care of these nincompoops!" Zhang Yang told Felice. Obviously, Zhang Yang was referring to the Phoenix Pet as Little Fiery.

"Roger, big brother!"

Felice transformed herself into her Dragonhawk Form and began her reign of chaos upon the formation of The Myth, as she tore them apart!

"Impossible!" Death Arbiter was horrified at seeing Zhang Yang having with such abundant amount of HP without his {God of War Transformation}. Other's might not have known how much damage Death Arbiter could cause in a single hit, but he himself knew about it too well!

That was approximately 90,000 damage he had dealt on Zhang Yang. That one hit should have taken out a player with high Tier equipment! It

could even reduce half of the HP bar of a player mounted on a pet! Therefore, he was terrified to find out that the 90,000 damage was merely 2% of Zhang Yang's HP!

Furthermore, a blazing bird that could cause a damage over 100,000? What the f*ck!? Was there anything worse than this?

What the f*ck was going on?!

Death Arbiter could not begin wrapping his mind around anything as he began to break down from the inside!

Even Zhang Yang would go crazy with the thought of not having his Phoenix Pet. He would not have known that a Legendary beast would have the ability to activate a 'Transformation Skill'!

What's done is done. Death Arbiter knew that he had to continue the battle no matter the consequences. Furthermore, he would not be willing to admit defeat just like that! He was not the type that could afford defeat!

Everyone had seen how powerful Zhang Yang could become once he activates his {God of War Transformation}. Now that Death Arbiter had activated his Transformation Skill, if everyone sees him getting defeated even before Zhang Yang activates his Transformation Skill, how would he be able to hold his head high after all these? Would he still have the face to look at others? Would he even have what it takes to look himself in the mirror?

With a very violent Felice swinging her lance about, the members of The Myth were no longer capable of launching their assaults on Zhang Yang. They were too preoccupied with saving their own *sses from being skewered or burned up by the little dragon lady!

Although Felice did not have any sort of Transformation Skills, once she activates her {Absolute Defense}, she would instantly become the most ferocious Tanker in the entire 'God's Miracle'! Some would call her invincible!

Cling! Clang! Cling! Clang!

Zhang Yang and Death Arbiter were exchanging hits. Both of them were

aggressive as hell! This time, Death Arbiter did not dare to underestimate Zhang Yang anymore. He could not even afford the slightest mistake. He went all out on Zhang Yang with every possible skill that he could use. He had an advantage, that was being real-life experience in the field of martial arts. From the perspective of 'skill', Death Arbiter could be on a whole new level, compared to the normal players. Therefore, his 'Supporting Attacks' were a little hard to handle, even for Zhang Yang!

However, Zhang Yang has lived two lives. So he was basically trained in Martial Arts for approximately 7 to 8 years! He would not be far off from the standard of Death Arbiter if he were to be a little weaker.

More importantly, Zhang Yang had the advantage of having better reflexes than Death Arbiter!

In the previous battle, One Sword Stroke had managed to match the 'Supporting Attacks' of Death Arbiter with his all, because of his outstanding reflexes. Zhang Yang's reflexes in battles were definitely on par with One Sword Stroke's. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's martial art standards were not lower than Death Arbiter. Combining the two forms of art into one, it was enough for Zhang Yang to dominate Death Arbiter!

Bam! Bam! Slam!

Zhang Yang would usually hit his target in the face. It was just his habit. Bashing his shield over and over again on the face of Death Arbiter, he had knocked all teeth off Death Arbiter's mouth early in the battle. The face of Death Arbiter was so swollen that he looked exactly like a pig at the moment! It was the most miserable moment in his entire life!

The players from Lone Desert Smoke were very contented to see that son of the b*tch suffering for his deeds!

Hit them in the face! Burn their *sses! Hit them hard so that they would remember this for all eternity! Who told them to be so full of themselves to launch a full-scale assault on other's Territory! Didn't they just shove their own faces over just to get smacked?

"Guildmaster is fearsome!"

"Guildmaster is almighty!"

"Guildmaster is fearsome and almighty altogether! No debate needed!"

Chapter 625: A Torturous Torture

Liu Wei could not help but feel a chill up his spine as he saw how swollen Death Arbiter's face was.

Liu Wei had the same experience back then when he was trying to snatch a boss from Crimson Rage. It was one of the worst ways to be humiliated! If even Death Arbiter could not defeat Zhang Yang, would there still be someone who could? Would there still be anyone left to defeat Zhang Yang in a One-on-one battle?

The question could only be answered by Zhang Yang himself. He had someone in mind: Sun Xin Yu!

Only that Queen of shadows could pose a threat to Zhang Yang. As a Thief, she could just enter her Stealth Mode and stay quiet while approaching Zhang Yang. Upon the activation of her {Dance and Slash}, she could ambush Zhang Yang in silence and take him out instantly! Zhang Yang would not even have the chance to activate his {God of War Transformation}!

But, how about facing each other fair and square? A fair Player-vs-Player match?

To hell with that! Asking a Thief to battle players of other Classes would be an unfair act in itself! The developer had given the Thieves the ability to do stealth to allow Thieves to act in the shadows as assassins. Thieves would do no any good at all charging into battles like warriors.

In this battle, Zhang Yang was not the one causing high damage to the enemy. It was the Phoenix Pet right beneath his buttocks!

Death Arbiter could not understand it. How could a Pet Mount deal so much damage? The damage it could deal was enough to match with the damage a Transformed player could deal! There was nothing more absurd than this!

Surrounding players were stunned to see that!

Previously, they were not aware of the power this Phoenix Pet could

wield. However, their intelligence should not be underestimated as well. Although they could not see how much damage the Phoenix Pet and Death Arbiter could cause, they could tell by the reactions of the combatants.

Death Arbiter is capable of activating an Inheritance Transformation Skill. He should have at least a Class C Inheritance. Furthermore, he had those shiny equipment strapped on, which appeared to be similar to the equipment that One Sword Stroke himself has. So, they could deduce that the standard of his equipment should be top tier as well!

Even if Death Arbiter could only deal a basic damage of approximately 10,000 damage, a Class C Inheritance could increase his basic attacks by 200%, which would allow him to deal approximately 30,000 damage.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang had not activated his Transformation Skill. His initial HP should be around 200,000 HP. After approximately 10 hits from Death Arbiter, Zhang Yang still had over 20% of HP on him. That could explain that the Maximum HP of Zhang Yang could have reached over 1,500,000 HP after being mounted.

It would not be possible that a player could have so much HP all by themselves. The only way of increasing the amount of HP to that extent would be by mounting on a pet! It was common sense!

Holy molly! So, what type of 'creature' could this be? How on earth could one pet provide over 1,000,000 HP to a player who mounts onto it?

This could be a unique, ultimate pet!

Players who saw through that began to discuss about it. They were debating on what Tier this Phoenix Pet had to be. How could it be so powerful?

Naturally, Zhang Yang did not waste his breath explaining all that to them. It was the {Phoenix Transformation}! It was a Pet Skill that was equal to an Inheritance Transformation Skill! Zhang Yang gave Death Arbiter a good bash on his face with his shield. Blood was spilled across the ground as Death Arbiter's face looked so sh*tty, that words were not fit to describe it anymore.

Who told him to go way over his own stinky head in the first place then? Who told him to scream by saying he would defeat One Sword Stroke and Zhang Yang? Now that One Sword Stroke has been defeated, he turned his attention over to Zhang Yang, who was oppressively powerful. The situation was like a perverted man encountering an ugly woman! Of course, his 'little brother' would not stand still!

"Immolation Aura!" Death Arbiter roared in anger. He had been keeping his anger in for half a day. Now that he finally accumulated enough EP, he activated that one ultimate Skill that could only be used when he is in his Transformed form.

[Immolation Aura]: Expands an aura filled with torching flames, causing 6 times the Fire Damage that the user could deal to all target within the effective area of the aura, each second. {Immolation Aura} requires 3 EP of Demon Hunter Inheritance to be activated. Lasts for 1 second. Every 3 EP can extend the duration of {Immolation Aura} by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Zhang Yang did not know the attribute of this Skill at first. However, after he realized that the Skill could cause Fire Damage, he smiled. He found out by looking at his Battle Log. Upon the first tick of {Immolation Aura}, he hopped off the back of his Phoenix Pet.

'18,485!'

'+38,496!'

Zhang Yang received a tick of damage from the {Immolation Aura}. However, not only was the Phoenix Pet immune to Fire Damage, it could also recover HP by absorbing fire attacks. Immediately, a green value popped right on top of the Phoenix's head.

While a player is mounted on a pet, attributes such as Defense, Damage Immunity, and other special attributes would be based on the player's. Therefore, the {Blazing Build} would not kick in. In order for the effect to kick in, Zhang Yang had to dismount and allow the Phoenix to be an independent unit.

After that wave of attack, Zhang Yang hopped back onto the Phoenix

Pet. Instead of a reduction of their total HP, he gained almost 20,000 HP, due to the fire attack from the {Immolation Aura}.

Well... Death Arbiter did not know how to react to that situation!

He was on the verge of popping his veins. Even his ultimate Skill which should be causing grief to Zhang Yang, had ended up healing the man instead. What a tragic experience for him.

"Thank you!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he charged towards the Liu Wei and his men. He took the advantage of using the {Immolation Aura} to recover his own HP while ridiculing Death Arbiter without the need to say anything!

"Stop him!" Liu Wei screamed like a sissy as he gasped in astonishment.

"Just with these men of yours?" Zhang Yang gave him a disdainful look as he looked at Liu Wei's men. Those men were beaten straight up in their *sses by Felice. However, he also realized that the number of Liu Wei's men were increasing by the second! There were now hundreds of them! He also saw that Liu Wei's 'Suicide-Squad' of 12 was lined up nicely by his side.

He commanded everyone to stop moving and said, "You guys, just stay and watch!"

"Zhan Yu! Are you still thinking of going against 100 men all by yourself?" Liu Wei had tasted defeat before, so he was extremely afraid of Zhang Yang, as he knew how powerful Zhang Yang could be. He had 'fortified' himself among his own men and had made it difficult for Zhang Yang to repeat history. Meanwhile, Liu Wei also had someone cast a {Sacrifice} on him. Furthermore, there were also 11 others lining up to give him {Sacrifice}.

"What's so difficult about it?" Zhang Yang laughed as he commanded the Phoenix pet to activate its {Forbidden Firefall}.

Immediately, countless flames descended upon the ground from the sky as the flames spread across the area of 100 X 100 meters. The entire effective area became a land of living hell engulfed by flames. The flames

were so blazing hot as no living thing was seen within the effective area.

‘-38992!’

‘-40877!’

‘-32483!’

...

At every passing second, players who were within the effective area of the Skill received approximately 30,000 to 40,000 damage! It was fatal to the players! Those players who did not have Inheritances to boost their HP were all burnt to crisps after seconds!

Even more unfortunate was the Guardian who had cast his {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei. He had to suffer two times the damage! Therefore, he was forced to activate his {Shield Wall} just to stay alive!

However, the range of the attack was terrifyingly vast! All 12 members of Liu Wei’s ‘Suicide Squad’ were forced to do the same to stay alive. They activated their {Shield Walls} to cover their own *sses. Because the {Shield Wall} could last for 10 seconds, upon the end of the first {Sacrifice}, Liu Wei could still enjoy a second {Sacrifice} from one of his Guardians.

However, no one was that stupid to stand still in the effective range of the {Forbidden Firefall}. As they started scattering like wild chicken, Zhang Yang came at them with a {Blast Wave}, stunning Liu Wei and three members of his ‘Suicide Squad’.

Could they attempt to lift the stun effects on them by activating their Skills?

Zhang Yang activated his {Heroic Leap} and stunned the four of them once again!

Liu Wei could not make it out. That being said, the other 12 members of his ‘Suicide Squad’ could not leave as well! Or else, they would be charged of ‘treason’ as they would be abandoning their ‘master’! Their ‘purpose’ was to protect Liu Wei, no matter the cost!

The miserable screaming continued to echo across the battlefield!

The {Forbidden Firefall} was basically like a mini-version of the effect of a [Forbidden Scroll]! See the resemblance? The word 'Forbidden' on the names of the two? In just 5 to 6 seconds, players with shorter HP bars began to collapse and die. The effect of the Skill was devastating!

Liu Wei was a real lucky son of the b*tch. He survived for 13 seconds long by depending on the {Sacrifices} that were being wasted on him. After that, he survived for another 10 seconds by activating his {Ice Barrier} as he entered a 10-second state of invincibility. Furthermore, he was the guildmaster of The Myth. Of course he would have an item or an equipment that would grant him another 5 seconds of invincibility.

After all, the {Forbidden Firefall} was not the real [Forbidden Scroll]. The flames blazed on for only 30 seconds before they faded away. Liu Wei only took two rounds of damage from the {Forbidden Firefall}. Apparently, he was still able to sustain so much damage and still be alive!

However, right after the {Forbidden Firefall}, the entire army of The Myth was annihilated. Only Liu Wei and Death Arbiter were left alive on the battlefield!

It seemed that the power of this Phoenix Pet could be seen in the destruction it left behind!

"Wow! When did you get a powerful birdie, noob tank? It's pretty and I like it! I want it as well! Get me one as well!" Wei Yan Er heard the news as she rushed all the way over to the battlefield. She was just in time to witness the powerful Phoenix Pet sending hell down on The Myth. Her eyes were glittering as she stared at the flaming bird.

"Haha! Unfortunately for you, you have no chance of getting it anymore! Just feast your eyes upon it!" Zhang Yang laughed. The Phoenix Pet lunged over and pinned the ugly mount of Liu Wei firmly to the ground. With its sharp claws, Little Fiery began to tear that ugly fly creature into pieces! That ugly beast could not help but roar in misery as it was torn into pieces!

"Zhan Yu ---" Death Arbiter was charging straight at Zhang Yang from a great distance. He had fled to remove himself from the effective range of

the {Forbidden Firefall}. Even the great Death Arbiter was forced to avoid remaining in contact with the flames of the Skill.

"Oh! You're late!"

Zhang Yang revealed a cruel smile on his face as he sliced his sword across Liu Wei's throat. With a powerful backswing of his sword, Zhang Yang cleaved Liu Wei's head clean off his neck, and the head rolled across the ground like a football. Blood was oozing out from the stumps as the headless body collapsed onto the ground, making a great mess of its surroundings. The scene was spectacularly bloody.

"I will never forgive you!" Death Arbiter let out a desperate roar.

Everyone had witnessed what happened with their jaws dropped wide open. Although it was the Skill of Phoenix Pet, those who did not know the truth would believe that it was all Zhang Yang's doing!

Words could no longer describe the oppressiveness of it!

So that was the power of the Number One Tank in the China Region! Worthy of it all!

"Oh! It's your turn now!" Zhang Yang rode Little Fiery and charged forward. He swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] as swift as lightning. At the same time, Little Fiery was discharging its {Flamethrower}. Felice had also transformed into her Dragonhawk Form as she began to spit {Fire Missiles} repeatedly at the target.

"Mana Incineration!"

"Thorn of the Devil!"

"Crescent Moon Slash!"

Death Arbiter went berserk on Zhang Yang with the best Skills he had. The Inheritance Skills of his Demon Hunter Inheritance were being activated, one after another. There was no reason for him to hold back anymore. If he fails to kill Zhang Yang now, he would be shamed by his own deeds!

However, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear at all! Upon activating the

{Phoenix Transformation}, the Maximum HP and Attack power of Zhang Yang were able to match Death Arbiter's!

Zhang Yang continued to bash Death Arbiter up!

With a series of attacks, he began to overwhelm Death Arbiter with his mighty bashes and smashes. Death Arbiter was struck so hard in his vital parts that he could no longer differentiate the direction he was facing.

At the same time, Liu Wei and his men had run all the way back to their dead bodies as they began to resurrect among themselves.

"Kill them! Kill them all!" Zhang Yang commanded his guild members in a cold tone.

"Yes, guildmaster! Our swords belong to you!"

The fellow members of the Lone desert Smoke had been keeping their head down long enough. Upon hearing Zhang Yang's command, they charged into the battlefield and launched their most brutal form of attacks on Liu Wei and his men.

Now that these scums were defeated by Zhang Yang all by himself once, no one would complain even if Zhang Yang would send 10,000 members of Lone Desert Smoke to slaughter them up. Even if it was true that Lone Desert Smoke was using numbers to overwhelm their enemy forces, no one would say a word anymore.

Liu Wei and his fellow guild members were aware of their situation at least. After a few attempt of charging at the Lone Desert Smoke army, they ceased fire. Upon resurrecting at the graveyard, they began to run off. However, Death Arbiter was continuously tortured by Zhang Yang for two hours long, literally! Everything was only over for him after his Transformation expired. Who knows if that experience would leave a deep mark that would haunt him for the rest of his life.

Chapter 626: World League Championship

Despite the fact that Death Arbiter was suffering at the hands of Zhang Yang, his outstanding battle performance stood out while he was battling One Sword Stroke. Many players praised and recognized him as one of the best players in the entire game. It could be said that he would be famous, a new rising star in the China Region over night after that battle. A large number of players believed that Death Arbiter deserved to be ranked as one of the top Tier player with a special title!

Little did they know that they had been underestimating Zhang Yang all the while.

Zhang Yang was indeed worthy to be the Number One in the entire China Region. It seemed that he was so powerful than those beneath his 'throne', that the gap of strength between Zhang Yang and the rest were blurred greatly. No one could seem to shake his title up to this point!

However, the players were debating intensely to whom shall hold the title of being the Number Two player in the entire China Region. Since there were true individual ranking competition held in China to determine the player's rank, everyone could only rely on debates to determine the ranking position. The name One Sword Stroke had struck out prominently while some had suggested Sword of Light. There was even a few who suggested that Snow Seeker was the one that should be ranked second.

Furthermore, some players even tried to urge the official to organize a yearly ranking contest to satisfy the players' curiosity.

Dream Technology had addressed the issue and responded. They had announced that a consideration to organize a qualifying contest in every Region after the World League Championship had ended. A list would be made to rank the professional players according to their performances. The lists would be classified according to each Class as each list would list out the Top 100 players of each Class in each individual Region. In other words, there would be Top 100 for each of the available Classes in the

entire game.

After being reminded by the official, many had only come to realize that the finale for the World League Championship was just around the corner!

The World League Championship in each of the main Region was held in a full swing. Other than the Class S matches, the Class A matches were being monitored closely by many as well. Even the Class B matches were attended with large crowds. In the upcoming finale of the World League Championship matches, each main Region would send their best and second best Battle Teams to join the fight against the best and second best Battle Teams from other main Regions! The matches should be interesting to see. So more people were paying attention towards the event!

Players from all 8 main Regions were hoping that they would be the ones who could acquire the Champion Trophy for their own Regions.

As everyone had turned their attention towards the finale of the World League Championship, only a small number of attentions had been put on the progress of the new Level 120 dungeon called the 'Red Garnet Palace'. There was a reason why players had picked to focus more on the World League Championship instead of focusing more on the progress of a new dungeon. Firstly, only a small number of players were able to reach beyond Level 120 at the moment. Secondly, this would be the second world-class dungeon. The definition of first and the definition of second would differ largely. Therefore, no guild would actually put so much effort as they did with the progress on the Dragon Throat Fortress.

Zhang Yang was currently grinding his level as hard as he could. It was only approximately 10 days before he would depart for America. He was only 4 levels from reaching Level 130. Hence, there was still hope in attaining that target.

Wei Yan Er had been complaining and blaming Zhang Yang for not taking her with him while he was acquiring the Phoenix Pet. By the end of it, Zhang Yang bought a puppy and gave the little canine as her pet. Only then, the little brat was calmed. Unfortunately, that little brat only had a

brief period of enthusiasm towards that puppy. When Zhang Yang brought he puppy back to her, she swore to take care of the puppy for better or worse till death do them apart. Like Sakura trees, the enthusiasm to take care of the puppy died down after three days. The little poor canine was left to starve to death on its own in the corner of the house.

Sun Xin Yu hugged the puppy into her room without make a sound about it. At the very least, the puppy did not die of starvation.

However, Zhang Yang had a new problem. The pug had acquired a habit to stash food. It was most probably because Wei Yan Er starved it for a while hence this little fellow learned to reserve food in the case of emergency. Zhang Yang could find tons of bones and meat underneath his couch...

Even though Sun Xin Yu looked all cool and 'icy', but her heart was filled with compassion and love. The pug had gotten a fat and round stomach after a few days being pampered by Sun Xin Yu. The way it walked looked absolutely adorable! When the little brat came back one week later to stay for a night, she could not recognize that it was the same pug that she had almost starved to death.

Time passed without mercy. In a blink of an eye, it was already the day that Zhang Yang and his gang depart for America. However, the game company suddenly sent them a message saying that the venue of the contest had been changed to the city of Luxembourg in the Grand-Duché de Luxembourg (Grand Duchy of Luxembourg). As visa had become a major problem for most of the contestants, the date of the contest was delayed by a week.

It was actually a fortunate thing for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was currently at Level 128. His experience bar had filled up to 89% at the moment. One week of extra time could provide him buffer period to reach Level 130.

Upon acquiring their visa passes, Zhang Yang led his party of seven and departed for the contest. Meanwhile, Crimson Rage had won the contest that was held back in the China Region and became the second qualified

guild to enter the finale of the World League Championship. However, Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker were living too far away from each other. They did not depart together. They only met up when they arrived at the hotel that was arranged by the organizer of the event.

The Grand Duchy of Luxembourg was a country that was known to have the best living conditions among many European countries. The country had many mansions and castles of all sizes. The country was well known to be the country with a thousand castles. The venue of the contest was being held in one of the large castle. The exotic style of foreign countries was always so amazing.

It was quite a rare occasion to travel across another country. Therefore, they did not spend all their time on the game. Instead, the seven of them went out to feast their eyes upon the historical culture of the Europe countries. The only time they were playing the game was when they were all sleeping,

Finally, Zhang Yang had succeeded in reaching Level 130 before the opening ceremony of the competition. He could finally take out the {Python's Helmet}, {Amoss's Nose Hoop} and {Knight's Glory Chest Plate}. Upon switching the three equipment on, his attributes increased by a notch.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 130

HP: 346,550 (With Vitality Aura)

Defence: 5,640

Strength: 8,306

Attack: 52,416 - 57,551 ((23,193 - 25,465) *226%)

Damage Absorption: 5,987

Luck Attribute: 28 (Lucky Strike rate: 2.8%)

Critical Rate: 15%

The two Level 150 Ethereal equipment had really boosted Zhang Yang

up to a whole new level. Compared to his previous attributes, his Attack and HP had been increased 2 times over! It was surprisingly terrifying! That was also why Zhang Yang had pressured himself to reach Level 130 before the competition.

As the day of the competition was approaching, Zhang Yang could also see other contestants in the game. Members of top Tier guilds such as Land of Savages and Paragon were wondering about in the palace.

"Zhan Yu?" a beauty with the look of a foreigner came right up to Zhang Yang. This beauty had an extremely 'intoxicating' hot body figure. She was really tall. Although it was the middle of the winter, but the woman took off her coat as soon as she entered the castle. Upon taking off her coat, she revealed her extremely hot body figure to everyone in the castle. Her waist was extremely slim. She was a true marvel sight for sore eyes.

She appeared Indian. However, her skin was very fair. She had blonde hair and her eyes seemed to whisper in mystery. They were really electrifying to look at! She had to be of mixed-descent.

She was quite tall among her own people. There were many men following her from behind. By the looks of it, they were her bodyguards. Other than that, there were also some admirers laying their eyes upon her. When she walked up to Zhang Yang, the bodyguards went into alert mode, and the admirers revealed a sense of hostility towards Zhang Yang.

"You are ---" Zhang Yang could not remember the last time meeting such a beauty that could be seen as the same level of Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er in term of their looks.

"In 'God's Miracle', my name is 'Hourglass Figure'!" The beautiful woman laughed, "Amisa Tarta. That's my real name."

The woman was speaking fluent, Oxford English.

Zhang Yang had encountered a world-class apocalyptic problem. All the while, Zhang Yang had been relying on the in-game automatic translator to communicate with players of different languages. However, now that he was in the real world, he could no longer rely on the Translator. With the little English that he knew, Zhang Yang could still manage to understand a

word or two of what she was trying to say. After all, introducing themselves to each other was a rather simple step.

However, this Hourglass Figure was worthy to be the Number One beauty in the entire India Region. Furthermore, she was the successor of the Steely Dangs Holdings. Who would know how much assets she had in those pretty hands of hers? No wonder there were so many admirers trying to pursue her. No wonder those admirers would look at him with such hostility!

Zhang Yang had only crossed path with this beautiful creature once. Why would they be so envious? Why did they look at him as if he had tainted their goddess? If they can not get the woman, why would they blame their own failure on others, then?

Zhang Yang sighed quietly, deep in his heart. Then, he attempted to speak to Amisa with his half-baked English. However, the conversation was basically like a duck trying to quack at a clucking chicken. None of them were able to fully understand each other.

In the end, Han Ying Xue had to step up as the interpreter. She had learned English when she was studying back in London a few years ago. Her English was rusty, but still fluent. Although the two of them seemed to be smiling and giggling as they spoke, Zhang Yang could see sparks flying from one side.

That's right. Han Ying Xue was defending her 'sovereign property'. However, Amisa did not express anything but friendship towards Zhang Yang. She only wanted Zhang Yang to join her ranks. That sort of hostility between the two of them was just odd. There was no other way to describe the situation.

Zhang Yang was very familiar with the Battle Teams from the Chinese Region. However, he was not familiar with the Battle Teams from other Regions. Other than players who had acquired a Class S Inheritance like Amisa herself, Zhang Yang would not waste his effort and time, digging deep for the information about someone. After all, he had only been struggling about in the Class A League Championship matches in his

previous life. He was not even qualified to represent China Region when competing for the crown in the World League Championship.

For the next two days, Amisa kept coming over to visit Zhang Yang and his Battle Team members at their hotel rooms. She kept trying to invite Zhang Yang... not just Zhang Yang, she even tried to invite Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and the others to join her! Zhang Yang could not help but frown. This woman was actually attempting to poach his members right in front of him!

However, none of Zhang Yang's gang had shown the slightest interest in joining her --- although Amisa did try to pique their interest by offering a great deal of conditions!

However, all of them felt that as long as they had enough money to spend, that would be sufficient. There were no greedy persons in Zhang Yang's gang. They were quite content with their current life.

"Pui! 30,000,000 dollars a year to get me over to your side? Are you underestimating me?" Wei Yan Er was angered, then she said, "Noob tank could give me a hundred millions in a year! If you want to recruit me, at least offer me 200 million to 300 million dollars!"

Erm... well, there was still someone acting greedy, after all...

On the 22nd of January, the World League Championship Finale had finally raised its curtains! It was 7 p.m, the 16 Battle Teams arrived and lined up by the hall. After a short and brief opening ceremony, the organizer announced that the matchings of each Battle Team would be decided by lucky draw.

Although the opening ceremony was short, the 'God's Miracle' was, after all, the most popular game in the entire world. Naturally, many celebrities and VIPs attended the event. That included some of the top influential people and some of the finest actors and actresses in the entire world! The opening ceremony was so grand that it felt like a Winter Carnival!

It was finally the moment that the players had been waiting for. The Lucky draw session.

To prevent any possibility of cheating, the two Battle Teams from the same Regions would be arranged to compete in two different sections separately. In other words, the 16 Battle Teams would be separated into two sections, with 8 Battle Teams competing against each other in each section. Of course, the Battle Teams from the same Region would not be arranged into the same section. Therefore, it was not possible for two Battle Teams from the same Region to run into each other before the Finals. The schedule of the contest would be as follows:

22nd, Quarterfinals (Top 8); 23rd,

Top 4 on each different section; 24th,

Semifinals (Top 4); 25th,

Finals (Champion, Runner-Up, Third-in-place, Forth-in-place).

The final rewards for the winners of the competition were finally announced: Champion Team will acquire 5,000,000 USD and one Class A Inheritance Fragment. Runner-Up Team will acquire 3,000,000 USD and one Class B Inheritance Fragment. Second Runner-Up will acquire 1,000,000 USD and one Class C Inheritance Fragment.

Money aside, the main attraction would naturally be the fragments of Inheritance!

As long as one obtains a single piece of an Inheritance Fragment, the person would be able to gather the other missing pieces and activate the Inheritance Quest. It would just be a matter of time before that happens.

Although there were quite a number of players in the game who had already acquired an Inheritance for themselves, it did not mean that the value of the Inheritance would drop.

Lone Desert Smoke was already packed with 3 players carrying Class S Inheritances, 1 player with Class A Inheritance, and 5 players with Class B Inheritance at the moment. Even so, they were still hoping more of their members would obtain Inheritances to make their guild even stronger!

In another aspect, if the contestants were not interested in acquiring the Inheritance Fragment, they could still sell it after they manage to acquire

it. There would be countless of guilds willing to offer their higher tier equipment, and some would even fork out large sums of gold coins for the Inheritance Fragment!

"It's a Class A Inheritance! If it's a Spell-type Inheritance, then sister Daffodil will finally have her own Inheritance!" Wei Yan Er clapped with joy as she said. Among the seven of them, only Daffodil Daydream had not yet acquired an Inheritance.

"Alright! Let's do our best and help Daffodil get that reward!"

As captain of the battle team for Lone Desert Smoke, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party captains went up to the stage. The matches they were going to go up against would all be decided by lucky draws.

The organizer had applied the best 2 out of 3 method to determine the winner of the match. Every match would be following the same protocols of the previous League Championship. Firstly, they would set up 7 matches in the form of 1 VS 1. If none of the two sides could score 5 wins for their side by the end of the 7 matches, the competition would switch things up a little. It would become a 5 VS 5 party battle. Every team that is going to participate must acquire two victories in order to proceed into the Quarterfinals, to become one of the Top 8.

Zhang Yang managed to draw a number that set his team up against 'Moiria Battle Team' from the Europe Region. Their match would be the fourth match of the day.

Upon the completion of the lucky draws, all battle teams went to the rest area and got ready for the competition. Currently, everyone had the information about all 15 battle teams, which including all players' levels and their Classes. However, their Skills, especially their Inheritance Skills were not listed on the sheets. Of course, it would be better to keep those a secret to make the competition interesting. Right before the competition starts, the two battle teams must confirm their members who would be participating in the matches. Upon confirmation, they could no longer make any changes afterward. Or else, the entire battle team would be forfeited!

The Moira Battle Team came in full force. All 10 slots were filled, and the contestants were all ready to roll. The player with the highest level among their members was a Level 122 Spellcaster named 'Light of Hope'. Meanwhile, the player with the lowest level among their members was a Level 117 Priest named 'King of the Jungle'.

After reading the sheet lists of the other Battle Teams, Zhang Yang had to decide on which member of his team would take part in this competition.

"A team of high Tier horses versus a team of middle Tier horses, and then a team of middle Tier horses versus a team of low Tier horses. Then the winner shall be revealed by the end of all these matches!" Wei Yan Er wrinkled her nose as she spoke.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hmm, are you a high Tier horse, a middle Tier horse, or a low Tier horse then?"

"Pui! You're the horse! Not me!" Wei Yan Er did not fall into Zhang Yang's trap, not admitting herself as a horse. She rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang made a final headcount, then he said, "We don't know them well, and we don't know who's strong and who's not. However, we shall remain the best, always! We don't need to think about cheating or anything else! We just have to prove ourselves by doing our best and taking out anyone that stands in our way! Well, the first one to go up stage will be Ice queen. The second one will be Witchy Snow. I'll be the third. We shall use three Class S Inheritances to show them who's the boss and destroy their confidence. Little brat, you're the 4th one going out. If you still can't win with your Class A Inheritance, we're going to punish you by forcing you to stand outside of the door for the entire night! After that, Lost Dream and Hundred Shots, you guys just have to win once each. By then, we can end the battle earlier without getting ourselves into a Party Battle!

Chapter 627: Quarterfinals

At 8 p.m, the first match of the World League Championship Finale finally kicked off! Players from all around the world put everything aside and tuned in to watch the matches.

Battles between top Tier players would either last 10 seconds or drag on for hours. Truth be told, unless it is a battle between Thief Class players, the matches would typically last for tens of minutes before it ends with victor up top. After all, players who have made it this far must have been one of the top players in their own Regions.

The first match was won by the 'Real Battle Team' from South America. They won by scoring 5:1 as they defeated the 'Azuma no Netsu Battle Team' from Japan-Korea Region. They were now leading with a final score of 1:0 at the moment. One of many reasons they could triumph over the players from Japan-Korea Region was because they were in luck. Every player from their side happened to face an opponent that had a disadvantage in terms of their Classes. Secondly, none of the players from Azuma no Netsu Battle Team had reached up to Level 120 yet. With a detrimental combination of inferior equipment and ill-matched classes, their loss came as no surprise.

However, the second match was intense. This time, both sides had made some adjustments on the sequence of players who would go in first. Real Battle Team was not as lucky as they were in the first match. They no longer had the advantage in Classes. The battles were fierce and close. The round was concluded with the score of 4:3 after 7 matches. Therefore, the two Battle Teams had to participate in the 5 VS 5 Team Battle.

By the end of it, the Azuma no Netsu Battle Team lost because of their inferior equipment. They lost with the score of 3:6 in the second round. With the final score settling at 0:2, the Azuma no Netsu Battle Team was eliminated from the Championship.

The next rounds were the matches between the 'Hell Battle Team' from Europe Region and the 'Holden Battle Team' from Australia Region. After

struggling through 3 difficult rounds, the Hell Battle Team won by scoring 2:1 in the final score and progressed into the Quarterfinals.

Zhang Yang felt that something was a little off. Dusk Phoenix who had been constantly hunting after him was supposedly on Hell Battle Team. However, there was no sign of her at all, in both the 1 VS 1 matches and the 5 VS 5 team battles!

She had a Class A Inheritance and had to be one of the most powerful members of the team. So, why would she not be battling in any of the matches so far? If she would just join in any of the battles, there would be 90% certainty that the Hell Battle Team would score 1 victory for themselves. They would not have to go through so much hardship. They even might have won their previous match by scoring 2:0!

It was indeed very strange. What could that woman be up to, then?

After that, the Philosopher's Stone Battle Team from North America Region was defeated by the Steely Dangs Battle Team from India Region by the score of 1:2. They were the third to be eliminated from the Championship.

The following match was Zhang Yang's battle team going up against the Moira Battle Team.

Because they were not familiar with the members of their opponents, they could not arrange the appropriate players to go up against their opponents based on their weaknesses and strengths. However, Zhang Yang and the rest of his members were very confident. After all, all of them had already acquired an Inheritance that was higher than Class B, at the least for themselves, other than Daffodil Daydream. This poor little lady still could not get her own Inheritance, as she had not come across any suitable ones so far. Hence, every single one of them should not have any trouble if they go up against their opponents in 1 VS 1 matches, regardless of who they were dealing with.

After the sexy host finished with her introductions, Sun Xin Yu was the first member of the team to step foot onto the battle stage. Meanwhile, her opponent - 'The Reaper' was a guardian who had only reached Level

120 recently. Judging from the looks of it, this Guardian was well equipped, with high Tier equipment. He seemed very different from the others.

It was an unfortunate turn of events for a Thief to go up against a Guardian. Tanker Classes had a natural advantage over Thieves!

When they saw Sun Xin Yu walking up the stage, the members of the Moira Battle Teams broke in smiles of joy. Victory was theirs, even before the match has begun. How wrong would they be to think like that?

To them, it was simple math. Players would not be able to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills in this competition. Although Sun Xin Yu was currently Level 126, her attributes would only be as good as a Level 120 can get, even with all the high Tier equipment she was equipped with. It seemed that The Reaper had the absolute advantage over Sun Xin Yu in the aspect of Classes.

As the night was packed with several matches in its schedule, the 5-minute preparation provided to all contestants was shortened to 1 minute. In just a brief moment, the system had announced the commencement of the first match.

Without wasting any time, Sun Xin Yu went into Stealth Mode. No words, no taunts, no flourishing of her weapons. She just vanished into thin air! Meanwhile, The Reaper walked towards where Sun Xin Yu had disappeared with extreme caution. He held a shield in his left hand, and a battle hammer in his right hand. He was moving around as carefully as possible. If he could just force Sun Xin Yu out of her Stealth Mode, victory would already be his!

"Noob tank, do you think that sister Sun can win?" Wei Yan Er was very nervous.

Zhang Yang laughed with ease and said, "Even I would have a 50% chance of being killed by her if she ever comes for me in the Open World map. So, what do you think?"

His gang members were very well aware of how powerful Zhang Yang was. Everyone became very confident that Sun Xin Yu would win the

battle, upon hearing what Zhang Yang had to say. Most Warrior Classes could only be as powerful as 10% of Zhang Yang's strength. If Sun Xin Yu could really fight Zhang Yang and stand a 50% chance of winning, then she would definitely stand over any other warrior, regardless of class.

Pak!

A shadow appeared all of a sudden, right behind The Reaper. It was Sun Xin Yu! With {Ambush}, she stunned The Reaper for 4 seconds. The moment The Reaper was stunned, Sun Xin Yu began to whirl her weapons in both hands, and the HP bar of The Reaper began to drop.

The Reaper did not activate any Skills to dispel the effects of {Ambush}. Instead, he intended to keep his {Warrior's Will} for the more dangerous {Kidney Shot} that had yet to be used on him. The duration of the status restriction from {Kidney Shot} could last for 6 seconds.

As for his accessory that could provide him with an invincibility effect, he decided to only use it after the second round of the {Vanish}.

However, even though he could not move at the moment, but his Battle Companion did not stay idle. The Battle Companion of The Reaper was a middle-aged human. There was no way of determining the initial Tier of the Battle Companion at the moment. However, his entire body was radiating in violet equipment. It was obvious that the Battle Companion was equipped with Violet-Platinum Tier!

However, this middle-age man was not a DPS Battle Companion. He was a Healer-type Battle Companion. He would remain behind to heal his master.

Just hit it, girl! Just hit it! The Reaper thought to himself as he had a thick layer of armor protecting him. Furthermore, he also had the Class B Aethereal Turtle Inheritance. Without the need of activating his Inheritance Transformation, he still had 10% additional Damage Immunity and 50% additional Defense increment. Therefore, his Defense should be as hard as a turtle shell! He was not worried about how much damage Sun Xin Yu could deal to him. Furthermore, he even had a Healer-type Battle Companion healing him up! After that 4-second of stunning, he would be

the one torturing Sun Xin Yu!

The Reaper had a cold smile on his face. However, he realized that something was off after being hit for 2 seconds. How could his HP be reducing at such a rapid speed?

In merely 4 seconds, his HP bar had been reduced by 40%! Holy molly! He could swear that he had the Defense of a turtle! How did this Thief make it seem as if he was made of paper!

The brief 4-second stun effect was like four hours to him. He was anxious. After waiting out for the effect, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Kidney Shot,} as expected. He quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} to cancel the negative effect on him and turned around swiftly to face Sun Xin Yu. The moment he faced her, he finally realized that Sun Xin Yu was not holding two daggers, instead, they were two swords!

The Reaper was astounded to see that. Did he not receive a {Backstab}? Well, {Backstab} was a Skill that can only be activated when the user has daggers in her hands. How could Sun Xin Yu be using the Skill with swords? What the hell?

Sun Xin Yu did not waste her breath explaining how she made it possible. It was the passive Skill that was provided by her Shadow Dancer Inheritance!

[Weapon Mastery (Passive)]: You can use a one-handed sword to replace your dagger and activate all Skills that require a dagger.

It was just like how Zhang Yang's God of War Inheritance allowed him to equip two-handed weapons in his left hand while holding a shield in his right hand. It was a special perk that only the wielder of a Class S Inheritance could have!

In terms of DPS, the same level and same Tier of a one-handed sword and a dagger did not differ much. However. The speed of the weapons differed. The slowest attack interval for a one-handed sword was 2.8 seconds, while the slowest attack interval for a dagger was only 1.8 seconds. If both weapons end up with the same amount of DPS, it would only mean that the sword should have a significantly higher attack

attribute to make up for its sluggishness. However, this DPS only took into account the normal strikes of a weapon. The DPS would greatly differ if the player activates the same Skills with two different types of weapons!

{Backstab} was a Skill that would cause 200% of the Attack that the main Weapon could deal. Upon a complete upgrade of the Skill, the player would deal up to 250% of the Attack that the main Weapon could deal! It could be considered as the main damage dealing Skill of Thieves. A player should be able to deal 45,000 damage to the target by using a dagger. On the other hand, the player should be able to deal up to 70,000 damage to the target, by using a sword!

That was a lot of difference!

Even though The Reaper had a thick Defense, it would still not be enough for him to tank against a {Backstab} that is fuelled by a sword. Fortunately, one {Backstab} would require 50 MP. Furthermore, Sun Xin Yu must be standing behind her target in order to activate her {Backstab}. Furthermore, a professional player like himself would definitely not give his back to his opponents!

However, The Reaper felt that his entire body was numb once again before he could begin his assault on Sun Xin Yu. He was stunned, again! A second Assassin had appeared behind his back!

Sun Xin Yu dashed over to The Reaper's back to get ready for her next assault. She only needed 10 MP before she can activate her second {Backstab}!

With nothing left to back him up, The Reaper was forced to remove the restriction status on him by activating the Invincibility Effect of his accessory.

He attempted to fight back the moment he removed the status restriction effect on him. However, Sun Xin Yu was an extremely agile Thief. Her steps were as light as a feather as she retreated from The Reaper. She was stalling The Reaper until his Invincibility Effect fades.

The moment the Invincible Effect faded, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Vanish} and disappeared into the surroundings. Then she smacked an

{Ambush} right on her opponent once again!

This time, however, The Reaper had nothing left to rid the Restriction Status effect on him. He could only activate his {Shield Wall} in an attempt to stay alive.

{Shield Wall} could last for 10 seconds. It was just enough for him to shield himself from the 4-second stun effect of the {Kidney Shot} and the 6-second Restriction Status Effect!

With that, Sun Xin Yu had succeeded in getting rid of all The Reaper's life-saving Skills that he could spare!

Sun Xin Yu did not waste her Skills and MP on the {Shield Wall} of The Reaper. Instead, she turned her attention towards his Battle Companion as she began to launch her assaults towards the poor middle-age man. 4 seconds later, she turned her attention back to The Reaper as she activated her {Kidney Shot} and put another Restriction Status Effect on him!

10 seconds was more than enough for Sun Xin Yu and Ankh the Assassin to kill that Battle Companion several times over!

The moment the {Shield Wall} faded, The Reaper recovered from the stun effect. He immediately charged at Sun Xin Yu, roaring in anger. Ever since the beginning of the match, he had not been able to move at all. Also, his Battle Companion had been slaughtered, and he could not do anything about it! He felt extremely embarrassed!

{Blast Wave}! {Heroic Leap}! {Brutal Smash}!

He was not willing to show any sign of weakness as he kept spamming his Skills on Sun Xin Yu.

However, Sun Xin Yu dodged every single attack that The Reaper could throw at her. The Reaper could not do anything about it as Sun Xin Yu started beating him up.

Upon acquiring the {Weapon Mastery}, Sun Xin Yu no longer feared going head-on with other players in battles. Not only did she have the agility of a Thief, but her durability and stamina were that of an Assassin.

It was just like the God of War Inheritance, her Shadow Dancer Inheritance had allowed her to have both advantages of the two Thief Classes!

Furthermore, Class S Inheritances could provide players with an additional 50% damage output. It had made her so powerful that she was now capable of facing a Tanker head on! She also had her Battle Companion - Ankh the Assassin to support her in dealing damage to her enemy!

The match ended with an unexpected outcome! A guardian with a Defensive-type Inheritance had been whittled to death by a Thief!

It was the uttermost humiliation that one could ever experience!

Chapter 628: A 'Different' Tactic

Silky Soft Battle Team obtained their first victory and they scored 1:0 against their opposition team. The next to go up the stage was Han Ying Xue.

The witchy Snow planted a kiss on Zhang Yang's lips and said, "I'll be right back, sweetheart!"

What the f*ck! This witch had turned him into the involuntary half of a couple displaying their affection in public!

Coincidentally, her opponent was a Level 118 Spellcaster with the name 'Elemental Mistress'. She was a female Elf. She seemed to be well-equipped. Her Battle Companion was a female Hunter. It seemed that this player would be attacking the target together with her Battle Companion. They would attempt to go on an all-out assault.

Han Ying Xue summoned the whiner out. Before Messick could even begin with his perverted acts, she had already sent him flying with a kick to the face. Then she said, "Go, defeat the two enemies over there! Make them your girl slaves!"

"My queen, I'm always loyal to you! Other women are just sh*t in my eyes!" Messick spoke with passion and sincerity. However, his eyes were already set upon Elemental Mistress and her Battle Companion as he 'scanned' their body figures. He suddenly pulled out his long spear and charged towards the two women. He screamed, "The mighty Messick is here! Me! No one can hurt my queen! You two witches! Lay down on the bed... I mean kneel down on the ground and die!"

The whiner charged out with admirable courage. He would only be so courageous in such a situation. Well... a pervert for life... who is to judge them?

Elemental Mistress did not even spare the Battle Companion a glance. Her primary target was the player. She gave her Battle Companion a command and both of them charged towards Han Ying Xue. Upon locking onto Han Ying Xue, they held nothing back and launched their assaults on

Han Ying Xue.

On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had already activated {Milkmaid Deity's Protection} at the start of the battle. She threw her {Putrefying Poison} onto Elemental Mistress and began to heal herself. She stood there like a pillar, as the enemy bombarded her to no end.

Elemental Mistress grinned. This was a free win for her.

Before the Healers had been nerfed by the system, they could easily nullify the attacks that a single player could deliver. As long as their equipment were of the same standards, they should be able to maintain their HP and survive. As long as their MP bars were not emptied out, their HP bars would not be emptied out either! However, since the system had nerfed the Healers by one-third of their initial capabilities, their healing speed would no longer keep up with the speed of their enemies dealing damage on them.

Furthermore, she also had a Battle Companion to support her in dealing even more damage. Although this Battle Companion started out as a Gray-Silver Tier, her agility growth rate was a whopping 11 stars! Now her Battle Companion was mainly wearing Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and a few pieces of Mythical Tier equipment, the damage-dealing capability of this Battle Companion was as good as 40% of her own!

Under that sort of bombardment, how long could the opponent possibly remain alive?

98%, 96%, 94%, 92%, 90%, 88%...

87%, 100%, 86%, 100%, 83%, 100%...

After some time battling, Elemental Mistress realized that something was off! What was going on, exactly? How was her HP reducing steadily under the influence of Han Ying Xue's {Putrefying Poison,} even though she was busy healing herself most of the time? Although the rate of reduction was extremely low, her HP bar was indeed decreasing in every passing second! How could Han Yin Xue's healing capability be so powerful!? Elemental Mistress only managed to hit Han Ying Xue once before Han Ying Xue healed herself back to her full HP! She was basically

unkillable!

Wei Yan Er laughed herself silly, then she said, "Haha! Trying to kill my cousin sis? Dream on! Haha! Even after I use {Destructive Smash} to reduce her Healing efficiency by 50%, she could still heal herself back up! This one here is just a Spellcaster! Cousin sis has a Class S Inheritance now! She's the cow of immortal udders and endless milk! Haha!"

Healers would have an absolute disadvantage against Berserkers who can reduce their healing efficiency. Once they use their {Destructive Smash} on the Healer, they could kill the Healers with just a few attacks, even if their equipment was inferior to the Healer's.

If the little brat could not kill Han Ying Xue, no one but Zhang Yang could possibly kill her. After all, Zhang Yang had an insanely high Attack and he was capable of reducing more than just 50% of a Healer's healing efficiency! Therefore, Han Ying Xue could heal herself and outlast any opponent in any 1 VS 1 match!

Elemental Mistress was so overwhelmed by her own emotions that she began to panic. She was on the verge of crying! No matter how hard she and her Battle Companion tried, they could not even reduce Han Ying Xue's HP down to below 70% before she heals herself back up --- actually, she managed to reduce Han Ying Xue's HP bar below 70%. That was because she had activated a counter Skill on Han Ying Xue, causing her to not be able to use her Skills for a brief moment.

However, counter Skills had cooldown periods as well. The moment the effect was over, Elemental Mistress could only stare at Han Ying Xue helplessly as the super 'cow' milked herself back up to health.

Battling Han Ying Xue in a Player VS Player match was definitely a torture for most of the players!

Her complete lack of tactical knowledge further adds to the insult. She could not perform 'Supporting Attacks', and neither would she move around the arena! She would not even attempt to exhaust other players into using their Skills ineffectively! She only uses that one offensive skill on the opponent. The {Putrefying Poison} and healing herself combo...

until her opponent dies of DOT effect!

Theoretically speaking, a player like her who would not even run around the arena would easily get overpowered by Berserkers with higher attributes. It would be even worse if those Berserkers would even know how to use 'Supporting Attacks' efficiently. They could just interrupt her chanting with their 'Supporting Attacks' and rid her of her healing capability in a battle. However, that annoying Messick would be guarding her, acting as her human shield when she goes up against a Berserker.

Furthermore, she still had her {Holy Shield} to protect herself. As long as her shield is not broken, her chanting would not be interrupted and she would never be pushed back. She could effectively counter the 'Supporting Attacks' from her opponents with her shield.

Hence, the current situation was totally one-sided.

Han Ying Xue did not possess any useful PvP skills. However, she managed to oppress Elemental Mistress by using many of her Healing Skills and the high Healing Efficiency gifted by her Inheritance!

2:0!

After losing two matches in a row, the morale of the Moira Battle Team plummeted. It would require one great victory to reignite their fiery will!

Unfortunately, the opponent that they were going to face was the Strongest player in the Silky Soft Battle Team --- Zhang Yang!

The Moira Battle Team had sent yet another lady as the third contestant. She was a Level 118 Hunter who had a Wind Fox pet and a Healing-type Battle Companion with her.

This Hunter was called 'Seductive Wild Pussy', an elf. She was rather tall. The appearance and height of a player in the game would not necessarily reflect their real-life appearance. However, the attitude and behavior of the character would be the mirror-image. When the battle started, she began to launch her assaults on Zhang Yang, attempting to sway Zhang Yang's 'will' by saying, "Hey handsome! Can you really prove yourself as a real man here? Why don't you come over to my room later so that we can

have a good 'battle' there! Hmm... you look 'strong'... I'm thinking of filling up my void down here with that stick of yours over there!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely as he never thought that a woman would seduce him during a battle! He continued to push the woman to the corner with all his assaults, pretending that he did not hear a single word she said.

The movement of Seductive Wild Pussy around the arena was smooth. She used her pet as an obstacle between herself and Zhang Yang to slow him down a little. She continued to tease Zhang Yang as the words she said never left the topic of 'come between my legs'. Well, everything she said to Zhang Yang so far was more than enough to turn into an erotica masterpiece.

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had encountered various players who loved to use foul language to tease and provoke other people. However, he had never encountered a player who would use the sexual approach on him during a battle! This woman had no sense of shame in her at all! She was using every possible word that would turn a man on. She would even take the opportunity to shake her boobies and her butt between her attack intervals. Zhang Yang believed that she would have stripped completely naked if the equipment did not give any boosts to her attributes. Because that would definitely be more effective to seduce a man.

"Hey, we could have a threesome as well! I don't mind you bringing another woman over to my place. Or you can even bring another man to f*ck me! Hmm --- to be honest, I prefer 3 or 4 men to f*ck me up at the same time! The pleasure is just heavenly when you're being filled up and down!"

This b*tch is really gifted in such a way that she could bombard Zhang Yang with all her horny words as her arms spoke a completely different language. Her arrows flew at him relentlessly. He could help but to feel impressed by this b*tch.

Every match of the Championship was being broadcast live. Everyone could observe their battles from all 360 degrees of angle and hear every

single word they say during the battle. With the string of vulgar moans and garbage coming from Seductive Wild Pussy, some of the players were agitated, while some of them were turned on instead. These perverts were hoping to switch places with Zhang Yang right away so that they could have a great time with that little b*tch.

The arena was not particularly large. If she was battling some other player, Seductive Wild Pussy could still agilely dodge all assaults from her opponent by moving all over the place. However, her opponent was Zhang Yang, the best player in the entire China Region! Therefore, her only way was to retreat until her back was against the wall of the arena.

Truth be told, even if Zhang Yang did not approach that little b*tch, Felice alone was enough to torture Seductive Wild Pussy with her assaults in her Dragonhawk form. Currently, the {Fire Missile} of Felice could deal up to 46,000 damage to her target. Even if that little b*tch had a Healing-type Battle Companion to heal her from time to time, she would instantly burn up.

However, knowing that her words should have won over more than one fan, Zhang Yang had to hold back to prevent making enemies out of those horny fans!

Seductive Wild Pussy was not able to deal much damage to Zhang Yang for the moment, because she had been forced to move around frequently. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had insanely high Defense! Gradually, slowly, she was still losing more HP than him!

"Armor-Piercing Arrow!" Seductive Wild Pussy knew very well that she would get killed by the Dragonhawk lady in the sky before she could even seduce Zhang Yang into wanting her! She fixed her eyes on her target as she began to load an arrow onto her bow. She pulled the string back and released the arrow straight towards Zhang Yang. The arrow was radiating in dark energy as it flew towards Zhang Yang.

‘-2,812!’

The arrow went straight onto Zhang Yang’s neck. Blood was spilled across the ground violently and Zhang Yang realized that he had acquired

a new Negative Effect.

[Armor-Piercing Arrow]: All Defense provided by Defense-type equipment will temporarily lose their effect. Lasts for 10 seconds.

What an insanely powerful Skill!

Although it could last for a good period 10 seconds, it would not do much good in a boss battle. However, it could become an extremely useful Skill in a Player VS Player match! Temporarily losing one's Defense provided by Defense-type equipment would mean total vulnerability! Be it Defense attribute or Passive Immune Damage, everything would become nullified for 10 seconds!

This would finish off any Tanker in the game!

Seductive Wild Pussy took the opportunity to strike out with her ultimate Skill! She stood still and released a powerful arrow at Zhang Yang!

‘-40,341!’

Zhang Yang only had his 20% damage reduction passive Skill left. That one strike of the arrow had struck Zhang Yang with over 40,000 damage! Of course, that was all thanks to Seductive Wild Pussy's ultimate Skill effect!

‘-26,894!’

Another arrow was released from her bow and struck Zhang Yang. This time, it was a normal attack. It was much lower than the previous hit.

If anyone would ever underestimate this woman, thinking that she only knew how to talk dirty, they could be taken out by her {Armor-Piercing Arrow} without even knowing what had struck them!

Zhang Yang managed to close in on her. With a {Charge}, he dashed up to Seductive Wild Pussy and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at her.

Zhang Yang had been receiving damage from the woman throughout the entire battle. Meanwhile, he could acquire 2 Rage Points in every

second when he is in battle mode. He had accumulated over 120 points of Rage Points. Zhang Yang had finally let out the tiger in the cage! He began by activating his {Destructive Smash}, followed by a series of normal slashes in order to maintain his Rage Bar at maximum --- if he just kept using his normal attacks, he would have been wasting the opportunity to collect more Rage Points, as his Rage Bar was already full. Therefore, he used his Skill first before using his normal attack on the opponent. If he had used his normal attack first before using his {Destructive Smash}, Zhang Yang would only have 75 Rage Points left.

Sometimes, small details do matter. It sets apart the professional and the regular.

Switch!

Switch!

‘-105293!’

‘-54332!’

However, two ‘Switch!’ words popped up on top of Seductive Wild Pussy. She did not receive damage from the 2 hits that landed on her. Instead, her Wind Fox pet was the one that received a large amount of damage. That two damage values instantly killed the pet, even though it had full health!

Chapter 629: A Wild Pussy has appear!

It was a Pet Skill, similar to the Player's Skill - {Sacrifice}. The damage that the owner of the Pet receives will be switched over to the Pet instead!

Unfortunately, Wind Fox was a Spell-type Pet, so it did not possess a high amount of HP and Defense. Upon receiving two extremely high damage values dealt by Zhang Yang, the Wind Fox was instantly killed.

However, the sacrifice of this little Pet had granted Seductive Wild Pussy an opportunity to survive! The moment she recovered from the stun effect, she activated {Ice Trap} and she leaped back at high speed. She leaped over 10 meters back --- that was the Hunter's {Tumble}.

Zhang Yang reacted very quickly as well. He activated his {Heroic Leap} and got away before the {Ice Trap} could trigger its effect. He went flying straight towards Seductive Wild Pussy like a fearsome speedster.

{Fake Death}!

Seductive Wild Pussy suddenly let out a miserable scream and she collapsed onto the ground. Not a second later, she had already leaped back up to her feet.

It was definitely not just a useless act!

Every Skill would lock on to a target upon activation. However, if the target dies halfway through, the Skill would stop --- although {Fake Death} does not really kill a player, the system would consider the target to be lost!

Zhang Yang fell to the ground halfway through his leap. His {Heroic Leap} was forcefully halted, as his target was 'lost' all of a sudden!

That was a true demonstration of a skill! She actually managed to pull it off!

Zhang Yang was astounded by her performance. Though using a {Fake Death} to avoid being hit by another Skill sounded easy, but it would require absolute precision in doing so. The activation of {Heroic Leap} only took a split second. That being said, the reflexes of Seductive Wild

Pussy had to be very swift and sensitive for her to react in such a short period of time!

Although this woman seemed to be all about sex and lust, she is one hell of a marvelous player. She should not be underestimated! Furthermore, it confirmed Zhang Yang's suspicion. She was hiding her true strength with all the dirty language. It seemed that she wanted people to believe that they have lost thanks to her endless distraction, rather than actual skill!

Seductive Wild Pussy had her back against the wall as she leaped forward. The wall actually served as a trampoline, allowing her to leap to the other far end of the arena!

She giggled like a little girl as she moved around in the arena. As she ran around the arena, she would leap and turn 360 degrees in the air while shooting out her arrows one after another. Each of the arrows landed on Zhang Yang precisely. She did not lose any speed after landing either, every time she did that!

It was a demonstration of her true professional skill!

Zhang Yang could not help but admire her even more!

That sort of leap and turn 360 degree in midair is called {Leap Shot}. It would not affect the movement speed of a player when using the Skill. At the current build of the game, Hunters could deal a substantial amount of damage as the cooldown periods for their Skills were much shorter, after the developers made some adjustments. They were now the best DPS Class in Party Battles or Boss Battles! However, the disadvantages that Hunters had in PvP matches were glaringly obvious. Once their opponents get closer than 3 meters, they would be helpless.

Though Hunters had {Tumble} and {Breaking Shot} to make distance between themselves and their opponents, but there were ways for players of other Classes to counter these Skills as well. Their opponents of other Classes could ignore the stun effect of the {Breaking Shot} by taking a [Mobility Potion]. As for {Tumble}, Warriors could activate their {Charge}, Thieves could activate their {Sprint} while Spellcasters could use their {Apparate}. Each of the Classes would have their own Skills that could be

used to approach the Hunters!

Therefore, a Hunter's attack would be like shooting arrows at the target from a range. When the target is approaching, Hunters could activate {Tumble}, {Breaking Shot} or {Ice Trap} to pull some distance between themselves and their target before they continue to shoot their arrows at the target. If the Hunters still could not take out their target upon repeating the pattern of attacks, they would be as good as dead.

However, the appearance of the {Leap Shot} was a game-changing Skill for the Hunters in PvP matches!

Because Hunters could now run and shoot at the same time while maintaining a certain distance between themselves and their targets. There was no longer a blind area for them to worry about.

However, normal attacks were not the same as Skill attacks. Players were required to stand still and aim precisely. Meanwhile, leaping and turning 360 degrees over in the midair put a player in full motion across the air. It would be extremely difficult for a player to aim, pull the string on the bow and release the arrow at the target!

Furthermore, the most important thing was precision!

Normally, there would be at least 30% rate of landing an arrow on the target while a Hunter is leaping across the air. So, if a Hunter Class player could increase the hit rate up to 60%, that player could be deemed as an expert. When a Hunter Class player could increase the hit rate up to 90%, that player could be deemed as the master of experts in the Hunter Class!

Seductive Wild Pussy was that kind of a master among experts!

Up to this point, her hit rate was maintained at 100%! That was a full mark of perfection in hitting every single arrow on her target!

Zhang Yang recalled back from his past life that this {Leap Shot} was only widely known among the players of this game, three years from today. As he recalled, only a few Hunter players were using that Skill in battle when he first joined the 'God's Miracle'.

"Holy god! It's my first time I've seen a Hunter being so agile! A hunter

can do all that?"

"Shooting while running? I have not thought of this!"

"That's only 0.1 second for her to aim! That woman could still hit her target so precisely! This little pussy is really great!"

Everyone was astonished by her performance as they were watching the match through the 'god's view' function of the game. It seemed that the big change in the way Hunters are playing would be happening much sooner than anyone could think of.

"Felice!" Zhang Yang called out to Felice. Felice knew exactly what Zhang Yang had in mind. So she went straight down from the air and transformed into her human form. Then she put herself in between Zhang Yang and Seductive Wild Pussy.

The movement speed of a player could not be compared to the movement speed of a flying unit. So Seductive Wild Pussy could not stop herself in time and she collided into Felice.

Bam!

Upon the collision, the person who would be bumped back would depend on their Strength values. Meanwhile, a Hunter always relied on Agility to perform. It would be a lost cause if a Hunter were to try to compare Strength attributes with the humanoid Felice. Seductive Wild Pussy was sent staggering back.

She had been maintaining a distance of about 10 meters between herself and Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang would eventually catch up to her if she takes one step slower. When she was knocked off her momentum, Zhang Yang had enough time to make a dash up to her.

"You want to have a hot sex with me?" Seductive Wild Pussy winked at him as she made a throwing gesture at Zhang Yang. Countless strings of spider webs poured out from her hand and tangled Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang instantly lost his mobility!

[Web Entanglement]: Locks a target and disables the target's mobility for 10 seconds. The target will not be able to move or attack at all.

However, any attack the target receives will cancel the effect.

It would really be a grave mistake to underestimate this little b*tch! She really had countless unpredictable tricks up her sleeves!

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately activated his Skill to break himself out of the effect. With a swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he gave the little b*tch two slashes straight on her chest.

‘-155,323!’

‘-54,389!’

Two splashes of blood were spilled across the ground as Zhang Yang landed the highest attack of his {God of War Devastation} on Seductive Wild Pussy, followed by a normal slash. The two attacks caused 210,000 damage to the woman!

That was series of destructive attacks! The woman let out a miserable scream as she collapsed on the ground.

Zhang Yang fixed his eyes on her body as he realized that the battle was not over yet. The system had made no announcements! Neither has he been teleported out of the arena!

Shoof!

A dark arrow came flying from afar! Seductive Wild Pussy had appeared 30 meters from Zhang Yang. She seemed to be walking out of a void. Meanwhile, she had already loaded her second arrow and she was ready to send it flying at Zhang Yang!

Was that a Skill similar to {Rise Anew}?

Zhang Yang did not ask because he knew he had forced that little b*tch to use her trump card! He could only be scolded and cursed at, as that Wild Pussy had to be extremely mad right now!

"Felice!"

Zhang Yang called out to Felice again. The two of them had a very deep

mutual understanding as they had been working together for so long. Felice nodded and transformed into her Dragonhawk form. Then she flew into the air and began her chanting for {Fire Missile}. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang took a few steps back as swiftly as he could.

"God damn!" Seductive Wild Pussy realized that Zhang Yang had already gone out of her attack range before she could launch her second arrow.

The key for a Ranged Combatant to defeat a Melee Combatant in a battle would be the ability to maintain a distance between themselves and their opponents. If the Melee Combatant could not get near enough to attack, the Range Combatant would certainly win the match. As Seductive Wild Pussy was used to staying 30 meters away from her opponent, she had never thought expected Zhang Yang to step back instead!

She was forced to Zhang Yang by herself. However, Zhang Yang turned tail and started running in the other direction. Even she was a little faster than Zhang Yang, it would take more than a few seconds for her to catch up with him!

Meanwhile, Felice took the opportunity to bombard Seductive Wild Pussy with her fireball attacks from midair. Every single hit the little dragon lady threw at Wild Pussy dealt up to 45,000 damage. That amount of damage was not an amount that the Battle Companion of Wild Pussy could heal back. Therefore, her HP bar began to drop steeply.

Seductive Wild Pussy let out a raging roar as she began to shoot some arrows at Felice. They were both 30 meters away from each other. If Felice could hit her from where she was, then Wild Pussy could also hit back on her from where she stood!

After throwing arrows and fireballs at each other, Felice flapped her wings and began to withdraw from the fierce exchange of fire.

At the same instance, Zhang Yang came back swiftly at the little b*tch with his {Charge}!

Seductive Wild Pussy was knocked into a stun!

Although it was just 1 second, it was enough for Zhang Yang to finish

the job! After all, his Attack was terrifying!

‘-108,908!’

‘-52,723!’

A {Frost Strike} followed by a normal strike took out the remainder of Wild Pussy’s HP bar. This time, she could no longer get back to her feet, because she was dead!

The match had finally ended. Zhang Yang was teleported out of the arena immediately. Coincidentally, that sexy Wild Pussy was walking towards Zhang Yang while shaking her sexy *ss. Her face was lit up, and she did not seem to be disappointed. She seemed very interested in Zhang Yang as she looked at him with her eyes. Then she said, "You’re the first man to beat me in a 1VS1 match!"

"Should I be flattered then?"

"Hehehe! I’m interested in you... a man from the east. If you’re ‘interested’, just come by to my room after the competition later. L1209, remember my room number. I’m looking forward to conquering you!" Seductive Wild Pussy gave Zhang Yang a flirtatious wink as she walked away with her two round buttcheeks.

"You prolonged a 10-second battle to a 2-minute battle?!" As Zhang Yang walked back to his own teammates, Han Ying Xue gave him an angry face as she was envious. "Why didn’t you prolong the battle for the entire night then?!"

Zhang Yang decided to ignore that witch as it would only be a waste of his time. When he saw that Wei Yan Er was biting her lips as she could barely contain her excitement towards the match, he smacked the little brat on her head and said, "Stop dreaming and get ready! You’re up next!"

"Woi! Stop hitting me in the head, noob tank! What if I get dumber if you keep hitting me in the head!?" The little brat jumped in surprise and rage.

"Don’t worry. You’re already stupid to the point of no turning back. Who knows, if I keep on knocking, something might fall into place, and you

might get clever one day!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"You bus tart!" Wei Yan Er pouted as she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. As the fourth match was about to begin, the little brat was teleported into the arena.

Her opponent was a Thief. After playing hide and seek for half a day, she finally forced the Thief out of his hiding! After all, she had been taught by master Sun Xin Yu. Learning from the best of the best!

The moment when the Thief got caught, there was nothing left to describe. Wei Yan Er swung her giant axe at her opponent and turned the Thief into pile of bloody meat. She claimed the match with ease!

4:0! Silky Soft Battle Team had acquired the absolute lead. As long as they could score one more match, they would not have to participate in the Team Battle.

Moira Battle Team was forced into a difficult position. However, they had sent their best player, Seductive Wild Pussy. There was no one with the same standard with Wild Pussy left on their team. They could only wish that the remaining 3 of their contestants would be lucky and acquire all three wins. By then, they would still stand a chance by participating in the Team Battle.

It was great to have wishful thoughts. However, the reality was cruel. Lost Dream had shattered their 'wishful thoughts' by winning the next match.

By scoring another point, Silky Soft won the round by scoring 5:0. They led the round by having a final score of 1:0.

The second round began right after that.

Now that their opponent knew more about Zhang Yang's members, they might arrange the sequence of their members going into the arena appropriately, based on the sequence of Zhang Yang's team. To prevent that, Zhang Yang decided to let everyone on his Battle Team roll to decide who would go up first. By using such random numbers in it, he managed to confuse his opponents.

On the second round, Silky Soft lost one point to their opponent --- Hundred Shots was only considered as a professional player, not a Master player, not until he gets his Red Dragon Pet!

However, it did not matter at all, as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Lost Dream won. They scored 5:1 and eliminated Moira Battle Team out of the Championship with their final score of 2:0. They managed to push themselves into the quarterfinal.

Zhang Yang and his team members left the hall as they made their way back to their own rooms to rest for the night. Although they did not have to battle for the day, they logged into the game to watch the battles between other contestants. They planned to observe and analyze their potential opponents in the upcoming quarterfinals.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

Suddenly, someone was banging the door loudly. Zhang Yang was wondering who could it be. Could it be Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu trying to sneak into his room to have some 'alone time with him?

--- the Organizer was being very generous. Everyone got their own personal rooms.

Zhang Yang walked up to the door and opened the door. What he saw was an old man in his fifties standing right in front of his door. He had golden hair, and was dressed in a neat tuxedo. This man looked like an old butler that Zhang Yang kept seeing in the Hollywood Movies. Out of his habit, Zhang Yang looked up at the top of the man's head. He did not see an exclamation mark that would indicate an available quest just like in the game. After doing that, only did he realize that he was currently not in the game! This was a man standing right before him in the real world! He was not an NPC!

Right beside the old man was a girl that seemed to hail from the east. She seemed to be in her 20s, with an averagely good-looking face. She wore a pair of glasses rimmed with golden sides, like an educated girl.

That old man began to talk in his own tongue. Zhang Yang could not help but frown as he could not understand a single word coming out from

that old man's mouth.

"Mr.Zhang, this is Taj Rosh, the butler of the castle. I'm his translator." The lady from the east explained. Zhang Yang felt more comfortable upon hearing the Chinese language that she spoke, "Mr. Taj Rosh would like to inform you that he is here to invite you over to see the owner of this castle. Such were his orders."

After Taj Rosh and the lady were done talking, both of them bowed and made a gesture of 'This way please'.

The owner of the castle was inviting him?

Zhang Yang was flattered as he was very confused. As he recalled, he did not even know who the owner was. So, why would the owner invite him over?

After giving it some thought, he said, "Your owner has spoken! I do not dare to defy his good will! Let's go!"

Chapter 630: How to Treat Your guest

As for how the lady did the translation, Zhang Yang had no idea about it. After all the talk, it only meant one thing: Let's go!

The three of them walked out of the room. Zhang Yang followed the two of them through a few twists and turns. There were really many buildings, halls, and chambers within the vicinity of the castle. The three of them walked all the way from the east side of the castle to its west side. Then, they entered a small building that reminded him of ancient palaces.

There were 4 bodyguards standing by the entrance of the building. They wore black suits with earphones over their ears. They looked like those FBI and CIA officers in the movies. After walking through the entrance, Zhang Yang could also see several other large men wearing black suits lined up by the walls. It seemed that the place was heavily guarded.

So, who could this owner be? Why would he need so many bodyguards then?

Zhang Yang was haunted by questions as he followed the old butler and the lady through the corridor. He went up to the fourth floor. The old butler escorted him to the front of a room. Then, he knocked on the door gently. After 3 to 4 seconds, he opened up the door and let Zhang Yang in.

Finally! Zhang Yang was about to meet the mysterious owner of this castle!

The old butler made a gesture, beckoning Zhang Yang into the room. Zhang Yang walked right in without any hesitation.

Bam!

A powerful blow landed on the back of his head all of a sudden. Zhang Yang could not react in time. He let his guard down just for one second, and he got a knock right on the back of his skull! Even though he tried to react, it seemed that the person who sneaked an attack on him was a professional! One hit was all it took to send Zhang Yang into unconsciousness! Zhang Yang could only feel his vision blurring as he

began to lose consciousness.

He did not know how long he was knocked out. The moment Zhang Yang regained his consciousness, he realized that he was tied up to a wooden chair! Holy sh*t! Did he just get kidnapped!? He struggled in the chair and attempted to get free, and the chair was shaken about by him pretty violently.

"Stop struggling! It's futile!" A woman's voice was heard in his ear. It was Chinese, but layered with a thick accent. He knew that it was a foreign woman speaking.

Zhang Yang looked towards where the voice came from. However, there was only a small lamp in the entire room. The room was dim. A faint, single source of light was all that barely lit the place up. Most of the room was dark, so Zhang Yang could not see the face of the woman standing in the dark corner.

"So, is this how you treat your guest?" Zhang Yang smiled weakly, as he was not expecting the owner to be a woman. Furthermore, the voice sounded vibrant and youthful!

"Humph!"

The woman began to walk up to him. Slowly, her features started showing themselves in the dim light. Although her face still remained hidden in the shadows, Zhang Yang could already vaguely make out the perfect curves of the woman's body that were tightly wrapped in that tight dress! That body figure was heavenly!

The black dress was short. Her fair and long legs stood bare in front of Zhang Yang. Her skin was so fair that the color resembled the color of snow! The thin cloth material was wrapped tightly around her small little buttocks. They stood out like the rear end of a peach, able to get men to drool all day long!

"Zhan Yu, Zhang Yang. I told you before that I will never forgive you, and that I'll get you someday!" The woman continued speaking in that weird accent through gritted teeth.

So, who could this be?

Although Zhang Yang was not considered to be a morally abiding player, he had never toyed with a woman before in the game. So how could he suddenly get a woman to hate him so much? Furthermore, this was a foreign girl!

Wait a minute... speaking of foreign girls... he did make one of them extremely angry! Besides, it was not just a one-time thing!

--- Dusk Phoenix!

It would not be a surprise at all if it was her! She did ask all players that reached beyond Level 100 from the Europe Region to aid her in completing her Class A Inheritance quest. Then, she also used up two [Forbidden Scrolls] without any hesitation. That was not something that one could do just by using a lot of money. She must have come from a very impressive background.

So it would not be a surprise at all if she is the owner of this castle.

"Dusk Phoenix?" Zhang Yang guessed.

"Yes! It's me! Dusk Phoenix!" the woman in the shadow was trying to act mysterious at first. However, her anger took over her the moment she heard Zhang Yang saying out her in-game name. She stomped up, revealing herself under the light. There she is! She finally revealed her face to Zhang Yang.

It was an elegant beautiful lady that seemed to hail from a western country. She had perfectly proportioned facial features which made her look naturally elegant in her own way. That elegance on her could really bring people down to their knees to worship her. Her beauty resembled a different kind of beauty compared to eastern beauties. However, her beautiful appearance was just as breath-taking as any other beautiful angel in the entire world. Her appearance was definitely on the same standards with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Well, she was one hell of a kind in her own way.

"Hey!" Zhang Yang smiled.

Hey your head!

Dusk Phoenix was on the verge of losing her own temper. Even now, he's still as aloof as ever. Was he trying to treat her like a friend? Had it not been the palace aristocracy which had brought her up to be elegant and polite, she would have been cursing at Zhang Yang in a foul language!

She continued to stare at Zhang Yang, still fuming. She recalled suffering so many times at the hands of this man. She had dream many times that she would torture this man to retaliate.

Even now with this man in her hands, she had almost fainted in rage, because this man was still trying to ridicule her!

"Zhang Yang, today is the day I return all the humiliation that you put me through in the past!" Dusk Phoenix could not help but slap her own butt as she recalled all those angry moments with Zhang Yang. It was quite a 'unique' way of expressing her anger... She revealed a pinkish blush on her face as she reached for something behind her. Zhang Yang was wondering what she was up to. The next moment was the moment when he realized that he was truly in danger! She unfurled a long whip right in front of Zhang Yang!

Holy mother of god! This b*tch was serious!

A wise man does not fight when the odds are against him! Zhang Yang quickly laughed and said, "You don't have to get so serious over it! It's just a game! Just forget about it!"

Just forget about it? Did he just said 'just forget about it'?

Dusk Phoenix tightened her teeth as she proceeded. The game has been made too realistic! Although everything in there was virtual, the characters, the buildings, the trees and many more, but the sensations were as real as they could be! Every single morning when she wakes up, she would remember how Zhang Yang had spanked her butt in front of everyone! The worse part of it was that every time she dreams about it, she would wet herself!

Zhang Yang was now her inner demon! If she did not purge all these

negative thoughts from her mind, she would have lost her mind, sooner or later!

Piak!

The whip stretched across the room like a dragon, and she began to whip Zhang Yang up! The first stroke went across his body. Zhang Yang could not take the pain of the first stroke, and he bit down intensely. After all, he was just a mortal of flesh and blood!

"You crazy b*tch! Have you forgotten the human rights bestowed upon mankind!?" Zhang Yang struggled even harder to get free as he started running his mouth at her.

"Haha! Don't you even think about using that mouth of yours to distract! I'll never forgive you!" Dusk Phoenix continue to stroke the whip on Zhang Yang repeatedly like a maniac. "I have used up all my connections for this moment! It was me who suggested that they switch the venue of the Championships all the way here!"

No wonder the venue of the World League Championship was suddenly changed from Los Angeles to Luxembourg! So it was her who did all that! So, who was her true identity? She's even capable of deciding the location of organizing the Championship! That's some serious influence!

"So you are one of those spoiled rich whelps!" Zhang Yang bit the pain down by thinking about something else.

Dusk Phoenix stopped her labors for a brief moment and spoke up haughtily, "I am Luisa.Bavaria.Doqminderh, the daughter of the Grand Duke Henri, the future Grand Duchess of the Grand Luxembourg! You should call me 'My princess'!"

Oh sh*t! Zhang Yang felt his breath escaping his body! He had actually provoked a real life princess!

"You jerk! You jerk! Jerk!" Dusk Phoenix began to blush again as her cheeks were becoming redder at every passing second. Why exactly was she getting red? Was she tired after whipping Zhang Yang? Or was she just excited at the prospect of revenge? Her eyes were glaring at Zhang

Yang as if there was a fire ignited in her pupils! It was like she was on drugs, or something! She was obviously overjoyed.

"Help! Someone! Help me!" Zhang Yang suddenly screamed for help as he began to lose himself in panic.

"Haha! Scream all you want! No one is going to hear you!" Dusk Phoenix was obviously satisfied with how things were going according to plan, and she said, "I've sent all the men away! Even if you scream through the rooftops, no one will come and rescue you! Just give up and stay down! Don't worry! As long as your brain functions, you can still join the Championship later!"

As she watched Zhang Yang writhing about in pain, Dusk Phoenix could not help but to stick her tongue out from her mouth and swept it across her lips. She could no longer hold the heat that was rushing up to her chest!

"Beg me, and I might give you some mercy!" she said proudly.

"Haha! Are you trying to tickle me or what? That's all you got?" Zhang Yang did not plan to give in to her at all, as he continued to agitate Dusk Phoenix with his mouth. He continued working to free himself. He could feel that there was a slight chance for him to set himself loose if he could just keep struggling. He could also deduce that although the person who had knocked him out cold was a professional, the person who tied him to the chair was not.

"Let's see how long can you keep that mouth of yours open!"

Piak! Piak! Piak!

Dusk Phoenix continued to whip Zhang Yang. His shirt started to get shredded up by the whip. Torn fabric was beginning to fall off his body. Lo and behold, the firm and muscular upper body of Zhang Yang was revealed. His eight-packs stood out, proud and noble! The blood stains and the traces of the whip made him looked even more masculine!

She started to get attracted by the appealing sight, but did not show any sign of slowing down with her whipping on Zhang Yang at all. The unruly

appearance of this man gradually coincided with that of the mighty and domineering figure in her dreams. However, Zhang Yang did not show any sign that he was willing to give in, like an untamed beast. Dusk Phoenix could not help but recall the mighty shadow of the Zhang Yang who had kept tormenting her in her dreams.

In her dreams, Dusk Phoenix had given in to that mighty shadow of Zhang Yang countless of times. The scene of her being spanked in the *ss had been repeated over and over again in her dream. Every time when she woke up from those dreams, she would find herself wet between her legs. She would feel the unexplained void inside her heart. She would feel ashamed of herself every time she looked at the wet bed sheets!

Suddenly, Zhang Yang got his right hand free! He continued to move his left hand around in an attempt to loosen his left hand as well. After just a brief moment, he freed his left hand as well. At that very moment, Dusk Phoenix was in the middle of lashing the whip at him once again! As the whip came flying towards him, Zhang Yang reacted swiftly and caught its end! Before Dusk Phoenix could even react to the situation, he quickly tugged on the whip with all his might. With his mighty strength, he pulled Dusk Phoenix straight into his arms!

Zhang Yang wrapped his left arm around Dusk Phoenix's neck while trying to loosen up the ropes around his legs with his right hand. He managed to get himself out of the chair in just a brief moment.

"Wu ---" Dusk Phoenix swung her hands around as she was attempting to break loose from Zhang Yang's chokehold. However, how would she be able to overcome Zhang Yang's mighty strength? She could only widen her eyes as she let Zhang Yang took control of the situation.

Zhang Yang stood up, wincing. Although he was acting all tough back there, he was also overwhelmed by the excruciating pain caused by the whippings.

As Dusk Phoenix wriggled in his chokehold, Zhang Yang felt the fury burning up in his heart. He heaved her over to the sofa and pressed her down there, on her face. With a big swing, he lay the smackdown on that

piece of royal *ss. Thus, commenced the royal spanking session.

Since she had taken things this far, it would take more than simple begging to convince Zhang Yang to let her off the hook. She had awoken "Dark Zhang Yang", and dark indeed was his power! She now had to experience the power of the dark force!

Piak! Piak! Piak!

Such is the quality of a royal pair of *ss. They were so bouncy that Zhang Yang's very palms resonated with the harmony of her plushness! He started to get lost in a whole new world of royalty! Some dark thoughts started rising up in his mind.

"Argh! Argh!" the miserable screams of Dusk Phoenix continued on as she was spanked into submission and despair. As she had sent all of her bodyguards away, no one would hear her screams, and no one would definitely be coming to rescue her!

"You b*tch! Apologize! Now!" As he gazed upon all the whip marks on his chest and his waist, Zhang Yang went deeper into the dark force as he lost himself over in spanking Dusk Phoenix!

"You jerk! You want me, a princess to give to you? Impossible!" Dusk Phoenix was acting tough on the outside, even though she was in an unfavorable position at the moment!

Chapter 631: Reverse Play

So, she's not willing to give in...? Then, I shall bring you round a tour in smacktown!

Spanking a pair of jelly mountains would not cause lasting injury to a person, so Zhang Yang gathered his might and continued directing his spans on her pom poms with all his might.

"Mmmmh ---" As the spankings got harder and harder, Dusk Phoenix suddenly let out a strange utterance, as if she had given in to her fate. This scene that she was in had happened before, in her dreams, countless times over countless nights. This man who was spanking her royal *ss hard had inadvertently turned into her inner demon long ago, even without his own knowledge!

If such is her fate, so be it! It was not their 'first time' doing it, anyway, not in real-life at least...she was ready to give in --- as long as Zhang Yang does not start bashing her face in!

Dusk Phoenix had completely surrendered herself to despair. The same situation had visited her dreams every night, again and again, until she no longer could feel anything about it. Now that these 'prophetic visions' have come true, she was far more relieved. It brought a closure to those fantasies --- it's really happening now!

However, another 'terrifying' sensation started creeping up her body!

Dusk Phoenix could feel a mysterious heat spreading across her body, coming from the core of something very tender and sensitive. The pain in her buttocks wasn't the only sensation bombarding her at the moment. Things were getting heated up, and her shame was being engulfed in waves of excitement!

"Please stop! No! Stop!"

Dusk Phoenix tried to hold it in, as she whimpered for him to stop. However, her will had long been lost to her body, as her dreams had left her sopping wet and heated up, night after night. This session was no

different. The heat burst out through the most forbidden crevice between her legs as something gushed straight out, squirting through her dress and down on the sofa!

This mysterious pleasure was beginning to zap through every single branch of her nerves like an unstoppable tidal wave. Dusk Phoenix could not hold it in anymore and she screamed out in excitement. Fortunately for her, Zhang Yang mistook the scream of ecstasy as a scream of pain. Nobody would have imagined that this royal, dignified woman was actually getting off, being spanked like that!

In the beginning, Dusk Phoenix was still able to hold in her moans. However, as Zhang Yang continued to spank her harder and harder, the sensations got too intense and started taking over her body. It was an unmistakable, distinct cry, very different from what Zhang Yang recognized as a scream of pain. It seemed to turn the very air around them pink and blurry....

Zhang Yang got a shock upon hearing such an erotic melody! He turned his eyes upon her face as he saw that her face was as red as a rose. Her eyes were glazed over, and lost in ecstasy. It was the expression of a girl shrouded with lust as if she was on fire.

Holy sh*t!

Zhang Yang had spanked a woman into falling for him!

He had a great shock as he slowly put his hand down.

As she no longer felt the sensation from being spanked in her royal *ss, Dusk Phoenix regained her consciousness. When she realized that Zhang Yang was extremely shocked, she was overwhelmed with shame! She could swear that she wanted to bang her head against the wall at that moment. However, her shame over the matter had been obliterated by the repeated dreams that she had. The lust of her body went beyond her pride. She looked at Zhang Yang with her misty eyes as she began to speak in a weak voice, "Zhang... Zhang Yang... I surrender..."

Zhang Yang stood up and said, "Call for your men and get me out of here!"

Before he could walk away from the sofa, Zhang Yang could feel a pair of arms wrapping around his legs. Something had anchored him to the ground! At first, he thought that Dusk Phoenix was just attempting to fight back. However, when he looked down, he saw that the royal lady was hugging his legs as tightly as she could. She was obviously deeply obsessed with Zhang Yang, as her face revealed her true emotions. Her eyes were peachy as she left her sexy tongue lolling out of her half-opened mouth. She began to lick his leg with her small, fragrant tongue like a little horny slut.

"Mein God you horny thing! Get off me!?" Zhang Yang felt a chill up his spine. It was not because Dusk Phoenix was not pretty or sexy enough. It was because he already had two super tigresses by his sides. He did not intend to lure more women to his side. Furthermore, this woman was the type who would not budge once he sticks his d*ck up her!

Although Luxembourg is operated based on constitutional monarchy, the so-called Grand Duke or Princess were basically placeholder names. But, only God knows how influential and wealthy they had to be! So, this woman was not a woman that he could just toy with and toss aside.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang had lovers. He could even have multiple wives if he wanted to. There was no need for him to 'restock' on his Harem Palace. After all, Zhang Yang only had one d*ck.

"Zhang Yang! Conquer me please! Let me be your woman! I want you! I want to give birth to your child! Children! I will make you the future King!" Dusk Phoenix was caught up in her lost thoughts as she wrapped herself around Zhang Yang's leg without any intentions of letting go. She looked at Zhang Yang with her watery eyes, filled with passion.

What the f*ck! Are you kidding me!? If he had only known that this would happen, he would not have spanked her *ss at all!

Zhang Yang quickly pushed the royal woman away, as the woman had reached her evil claws around his pants, trying to take his pants off!

"I have wife! Stop this, you black bird!"

"So what? Divorce her and come be with me! I don't care!" Dusk Phoenix

had once again grabbed on to his legs.

"Stop being so full of yourself! When did I ever say that I wanted you! Besides, you're far behind, compared to my two wives!" Zhang Yang attempted to break her interest by purpose.

"Then... I shall be your secret mistress!" Dusk Phoenix narrowed her eyes as she spoke. She had been completely 'conquered' in both her body and her will. In the past, she had been bestowed with the highest education that she could get in her country. Furthermore, her identity was royal. Therefore, it would make sense that she would turn out to be such a girl with such a twisted personality. In her eyes, she only had Zhang Yang as the only man who could conquer her!

"You must be joking, right? Wait... you're not joking?"

"My king! Conquer me now!" Dusk Phoenix moaned erotically.

"Stop stop stop! I hate slutty women the most! Stop with all this nonsense!" Zhang Yang was forced to simply throw a reason at the royal woman to stop her from scratching at his pants.

Dusk Phoenix quickly pulled herself together. Zhang Yang was impressed by her sudden change of attitude. She got rid of the sluttiness in an instant and behaved like an elegant lady, as if nothing had ever happened. She just sat gracefully in front of Zhang Yang. Without looking her in her misty eyes and her beautiful cheeks, Zhang Yang would have thought her as a completely different person!

This royal woman could potentially be the finest specimen of an elegant wife and a slutty partner in bed! Unfortunately, Zhang Yang had no intentions of hunting for more women for his own pleasure.

"If you allow me to be your mistress, you shall have the wealth, the resources, and the connections that far beyond your imagination!" Dusk Phoenix looked at Zhang Yang sincerely, as if she was trying to market herself to him, "Our children will become the new Duke and Dutchess! All I want in return is to have you conquer me as hard as you can, as rough, as brutal as you possibly can!"

Zhang Yang had never been so frozen in fear before. He knew that this woman was not joking with him at all. She was dead serious!

This woman must have gone mad!

He should have just accepted the 'offer,' as the conditions that she laid out were extremely appealing. Such women do not exist in every dynasty! But why did he not feel anything for her?

"Wait wait wait... you're a princess... and you're just going to make yourself...this easy?"

"When one has found true love, wouldn't it makes perfect sense to see money, fame, status as nothing less but a passing cloud?" Dusk Phoenix shot back a question of her own.

Zhang Yang thought of rejecting her directly again. However, he realized that it was not nice to hurt her just like that. So he said, "Stop joking around! You've just met me in person for the first time today! It would not be real love if you can just say you love me after meeting me like this, with a f*cking whip!"

The woman only blushed deeper. Although she had never once met Zhang Yang in the real world, she had been 'conquered' many times over by the shadow of this man in all the dreams that she had all this while. She had already raised her little white flag high up to show that she was willing to submit to him. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had brought up her desire to become his 'personal slut' by spanking her so hard in her peachy butts. It was the act of stirring her memories from her dreams which had gotten her so wet.

However, it would not be wise for her to tell Zhang Yang about all her wet dreams involving Zhang Yang! How would a man react if a woman tells him that she had been having wet dreams about him?

"I want to be your woman no matter the cost!" Dusk Phoenix hardened her tone.

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at her and said, "Alright. Only if! If you can convince my two girlfriends, I won't mind having you as well!"

"Okay!" Dusk Phoenix thumped her chest apparently very confident that she could seal the deal.

After hearing that conditional agreement from Zhang Yang, this black Phoenix was finally willing to let Zhang Yang go.

What the hell just happened back there?!

A woman from a royal family was willing to give him so much just to be with him! It was not like the other women who only looked at his money! This was a real princess in real life, a true descendant of a royal family! Zhang Yang could not help but wonder, was his appearance so charming that he could get a woman's heart just by spanking her *ss?

His thoughts were scrambled as he made his way back to his own hotel room. That night, he did not even log into the game. He just went straight to bed and slept it off.

On the next morning, everyone was asking him about why he suddenly went offline. Zhang Yang did not waste his breath in front of everyone to spare himself the trouble. He only mumbled some vague excuses. Later on, he called Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue aside and told both of them about the incident.

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were both shocked to hear about it. Han Ying Xue even placed her hands on Zhang Yang's forehead and said, "Huh? Do you have a fever or what? What kind of nonsense are you talking about?"

Zhang Yang could only smile bitterly and said, "Just stick to the gang and try not to get yourself alone from the gang. We will never know what that crazy b*tch would do to the two of you if she ever finds the opportunity! I bet that she would not dare to do anything in the crowd. After all, these Duke and Princess thingies are only being supported by their names!"

"Alright, cut it out. You can stop garbling about. Why would a real Princess in real life want to be your third woman then? My Silly Yu, are you becoming silly for real?" Han Ying Xue shook her head again and again.

Although Sun Xin Yu did not say a single word about it, her eyes spoke out everything that was on her mind. She doubted his words as much as the other woman.

Zhang Yang was actually amazed as the two ladies were. However, he was completely sure that he was not being delusional about last night. He had proof all over his body! The whip marks! He brought his two ladies over to his room and he started undressing.

"You horny dog! You were just talking about a Princess was trying to become your mistress and now wanna go, right now?!" Although Han Ying Xue was complaining, she had automatically lain on her back opening her legs up.

So who's horny now?! Zhang Yang shook his head and took off his shirt completely. Then he pointed at the whip marks on his body and said, "Do these look delusional to you?"

Han Ying Xue instantly stared at Zhang Yang with her eyebrows raised and eyes distended with fury. Then she said, "You! Which b*tch did you sleep with, last night!?"

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "What kind of woman do you think could have done such a splendid job on my body? Look at the wounds! Even nails would not be able to do all these!"

"That being said... the incident with that Luisa Princess was for real?" Sun Xin Yu frowned as she asked.

"I rather believe that Silly Yu met an insane one! Pui!" Han Ying Xue put her hands on the wound on Zhang Yang's chest. Then she whispered gently, "These should hurt a lot..."

Her soft and gentle hands were touching his soul. Zhang Yang could not help but flirt with her, then he said, "It won't be if you rub them for me with your gentle hands!"

"... Silly Yu, I can rub them for you... but why are you pushing my hands down into your pants?"

...

The Top 8 had been decided through the matches on the night before. However, the Battle Teams that were eliminated last night were invited back to have a rematch among themselves as a token of goodwill from the organizer. In other words, these matches would be one of the entertainments before the finals.

It was 7 p.m and it was time for the semifinals of the Championship.

Even though everyone had made it this far to prove that they were very capable in the game, there were still differences in their capabilities and levels. After yesterday night's elimination rounds, the eight Battle Teams were even more capable in terms of their gaming skills. Therefore, Classes became one of the most important deciding factors on the winners.

After a series of fierce battles, the final 4 Battle Teams that made it into the semifinals were: Silky Soft Battle Team, Crimson Rage Battle Team, Hell Battle Team and Steely Dangs Battle Team.

Chapter 632: Semifinal

For the semifinals, Silky Soft Battle Team would be going up against the Hell Battle Team. Meanwhile, Crimson Rage Battle Team would be going up against the Steely Dangs Battle Team.

The Battle Teams from China Region were performing at an outstanding level as two of their Battle Teams had managed to proceed into the semifinals. Everyone was impressed and shocked at the same time.

It was not a surprise to Zhang Yang at all. The Crimson Rage Battle Team was the Runner-up for the World League Championships in Zhang Yang's previous life. Meanwhile, Silky Soft Battle Team had Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. The three of them had acquired their very own Class S Inheritances. Of course, they stood heads and shoulders above other players, for now.

Every single player from China Region were lifting their heads up expectantly. They hoped to see the two Battle Teams from China Region meet up at the finals and provide the world a spectacular battle of the century! Of course, there were numerous players from other Regions wishing for the two Battle Teams to fail in such regards. China Battle Teams should just kneel before the semifinals and get themselves eliminated from the competition.

The Hell Battle Team that Zhang Yang and his gang were going up against for that night was Dusk Phoenix's Battle Team. That woman had participated in the quarterfinal in the previous night. She relied on the power-up from her Class A Inheritance to oppress her opponents, scoring two critical points for her own Battle Team. The Hell Battle Team scored 2:4 on the first round and 3:4 on the second round. Therefore, they succeeded in proceeding into the Team Battle. That was where Dusk Phoenix managed to team up with her teammates and turn the table around!

Before semifinals, Dusk Phoenix came up quietly to the room of Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. She asked the two of them out and had a small

‘chat’ with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue.

When the two ladies confirmed that she was indeed the Princess, the future Dutchess of Luxembourg, their faces were filled with silly looks as they were in shock. Who would have thought that everything that Zhang Yang had told them panned out to be true! Who would have thought that this Princess was not only into BDSM, but was also willing to make sacrifices just to be with Zhang Yang?! The fabric of reality itself must be collapsing!

The three women had their ‘chat’ for over an hour. Finally, black Phoenix left with a satisfied smile on her face. Zhang Yang could sense something sinister in that smile, something bad must have come out of this. So he went into the room and asked, "Did you two saved me or did you sell me over to that crazy woman?"

"Haha! The Princess must be blind to actually fall for you! It’s such a rare case, you know. You’re not that handsome yourself, and yet, you are capable of hooking the Princess’s heart by just standing there like an idiot!" Han Ying Xue pinched Zhang Yang’s cheek as she spoke.

"Hey! Watch your mouth! I will replace you with the Princess! I dare do it!"

"Ha! Let us tell you one piece of good news! Me and this cold-blooded woman have recruited you a Princess as your mistress!"

Zhang Yang stared at the two ladies with his eyes wide open, and then he said, "I told her to talk to you two because I was hoping that you two would reject her for me! What the hell! You two actually turned around and sold me out!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang and said, "We made her a promise. She can only come to China once a year. The promise will be effective starting from next year! When she comes, you’ll be hers alone! Other than that, you’re still ours! Isn’t that great?"

Zhang Yang spun his eyes around. He pointed his finger at the two ladies as he was shivering out of anger, "You two are really evil!"

That black Phoenix was no ordinary woman. She was the heir to the throne of the Duke. She would really stand out when traveling across countries. After all, she represented her entire nation!

Under those circumstances, her actions would be under strict limitations. She would be escorted by members of the Parliament, her bodyguards, mostly! She would have a difficult time just traveling over to China!

Even if she could travel over to China as a representative of Luxembourg, there would be a bunch of people tagging along. Furthermore, the press, the reporters would be swarming around her. So how would she be able to have some 'alone' time to have a date with Zhang Yang, then?

Well, maybe this ridiculous 'storm' would blow pass after two to three years. Sooner or later, this Princess would need to marry someone.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he knew that women are much better at handling this kind of crap.

That royal woman was obviously unshakable in her own determination that carried the weight of a steelyard. Since there was no way of getting through to her, so the two ladies decided to agree to her terms. However, they did not lose anything in the process of negotiating with her.

"Oh, right! Before I forget, the Princess wanted us to pass her words to you. Even though she is already 'yours', she will not be holding back at all for the match tonight!" Han Ying Xue laughed her butt off.

With or without her holding back, it made no difference at all. With the current strength of his team, no opponent should really pose a great threat to them, not yet. However, his worst problem had been solved. Zhang Yang felt a lot more relieved as for now. So, he pulled each of the ladies into each of his arm and grinned lavishly. Then, he hugged the two ladies as the three of them made their way to the bed.

"That black Phoenix came at the wrong time... let's carry on then! Oh, right! Who was on the bottom and who was on top?"

...

Time waits for no man. It was already 7 p.m. The first round of the semifinals had begun. It was the Crimson Rage Battle Team versus the Steely Dangs Battle Team.

It was beyond Zhang Yang's expectation that the Steely Dangs Battle Team could be this strong!

Hourglass Figure had acquired the Hunter's Class S Inheritance --- Shadow Striker Inheritance! Zhang Yang had no prior knowledge of what kind of Skills the Inheritance provides to the player who owns it. However, Hourglass Figure had revealed some information about the attributes of her Inheritance while battling the Crimson Rage Battle Team during her two matches.

Firstly, a much longer range of attack --- she could begin to launch her attack 40 meters away from her target! In her first match, she kited Snow Seeker around the arena and took her own sweet time at ending her!

Secondly, she had no blind spots!

As mentioned in earlier chapters, Hunters feared being approached by their opponents most of all. Letting their enemies approach them would cause them to lose 99% of their attacks! However, Hourglass Figure performed the unexpected in her second match. Even though Thorny Rose managed to approach her, whenever she did, Hourglass Figure would fire into the sky. Those arrows would just turn back towards Thorny Rose and make a hedgehog out of her!

Furthermore, Class S Inheritance increases a player's damage by 50%. The attack power of Hourglass Figure was terrifyingly high. It did not take long before she killed her opponent and claimed victory over the match.

In the first round of their matches, Crimson Rage Battle Team were quite lucky. They had the advantage in Classes over a few of their opponents. Therefore, they managed to score 3:4 in the first round. Even though they were losing, but they managed to prolong the round by participating in the team battle. However, the team battle ended with the score of 3:5 with Crimson Rage Battle Team narrowly losing the battle.

However, the lady army were not as lucky in their second round of the match. This time, their opponents were lucky enough to send their players in the sequence where their players had the advantage in Classes over the players of Crimson Rage Battle Team. So, Crimson Rage Battle Team lost with the score of 2:5. They did not even manage to participate in a team battle.

By the end of it, Steely Dangs Battle Team had eliminated Crimson Rage Battle Team with a final score of 2:0. They became the first team that would be proceeding to the finals.

Zhang Yang and his team members did not even have the time to feel impressed over the performance of the Steely Dang Battle Team as it was their turn to go into the arena. They were going up against the Hell Battle Team to earn their ticket to the finals!

Hell Battle Team had been holding a grudge over Zhang Yang and his team for quite a long time. If they did not exist, Han Ying Xue's Class S could have been theirs to claim! Ironically, the first match was Han Ying Xue versus Hell Priest!

When enemies come face to face their eyes blaze with hatred. The moment the match begun, Hell Priest launched a series of aggressive assaults toward Han Ying Xue. She attacked like a pro, moved around like a pro, maintained a distance from her opponent like a pro. Everything she did on the arena exhibited her sharp and precise PvP skills. However, Han Ying Xue just ignored her. She only threw her {Putrefying Poison} onto Hell Priest as she began to heal herself. Her HP bar never got below 90%. She would activate her {Punishment Ray} once in a while when the time was right to attack her opponent.

The battle between the super Healers was obviously going to be long-lasting. No matter how interesting a battle starts out to be, it would eventually get boring. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue was showing no signs of effort in attempting to fight like a professional player. The only thing she did was to keep healing herself until her DOT Skill Effect eventually kills her opponent.

Moreover, Fell Priest was deemed to be one of the Top players in the entire Europe Region. She managed to complete a Rank-S Profession Quest all by herself when she was Level 30. Upon that, she acquired the {Divine Soul} that reduced 75% of her MP consumption when using her healing Skills. Thus, she was also capable of fighting a long battle.

Even though the in-game time was going much faster than the real-time, the battle between the two of them took up approximately 4 hours of real-time. It took Han Ying Xue that long to completely deplete the MP bar of Hell Priest and end the tormentingly long battle.

There was statistic chat to show how 'tormenting' a battle was to the players: When the battle began, there were 1.1 billion players watching the match. However, when the match was over, the number of players watching the match had dropped down to only 12,000,000!

The spectators were exhausted watching the match. Zhang Yang and his team members almost ran out of their patience, watching how that witch prolonged the battle unnecessarily. Even the commentators had run out of things to say and let the battle play along. All Han Ying Xue did was to heal herself. There was nothing much to talk about either.

Well, at least there was one person of all people was extremely happy after the match had ended. Han Ying Xue had tortured her opponent for over 12 in-game hours. Of course, she would be happy about it.

Fortunately for the spectacles and the other contestants, there was only one Healer on Zhang Yang's team, Han Ying Xue. Hence, the remaining battles were smooth and brief. Zhang Yang encountered Hell Knight in his first match. It did not take much of his effort to defeat Hell knight. He was lucky that he did not have to face Dusk Phoenix in the arena. He was worried that if they did encounter each other in the arena, that woman might put up her *ss and beg Zhang Yang to spank her in front of the public.

The Silky Soft Battle Team had scored 5:2, getting their first point for the final score of the round.

After Zhang Yang had submitted to the line-up of his team, the

organizer invited him over as they requested him and the captain of Hell Team to reorganize the line-ups of their team. The reason was due to the fact that Han Ying Xue was going up against Hell Priest once again...

Obviously, the Organizers were not looking forward for another long and tormenting battle in the upcoming round.

After changing the order of line-ups of their respective teams 4 times, Han Ying Xue was finally no longer going up against Hell Priest. The second round of the matches had finally commenced!

This time, the line-up of Zhang Yang's team had put them into an unfavorable situation. Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream were going up against players who had an absolute advantage over their Classes. Furthermore, their opponents were all the same standard as Dusk Phoenix. Therefore, the three of them lost by the end of their own matches. So the result of the 1VS1 became 4:3. Zhang Yang's team had to join the team battle because they scored lower.

Truth to be told, it would not matter if the score was 4:3 or the other way around. As long as Zhang Yang and his team could score 2 more points, they would win the round.

However, players would still focus on only one opponent in 1VS1 matches. However, during the team battle, there were 3 players with Class S Inheritance, 1 player with Class A Inheritance and 1 player with Class B Inheritance. Even though Lost Dream was a little weaker compared to the other 4 members of his team, his Inheritance was still Class B nonetheless!

On the other side, Hell Battle Team only had 2 players with Class A Inheritance, being Hell Priest and Dusk Phoenix. Meanwhile, the other 3 of their members only had Class B Inheritance. The level power of two battle teams differed too much. It was like an elephant and a tiger in an arm-wrestling contest. Although a tiger is also extremely ferocious, how could a tiger beat an elephant in strength?

By the end of it, Silky Soft Battle Team scored a final score of 2:0 and eliminated Hell Battle Team with ease. So, they would be facing Steely

Dang Battle Team in the final for the 'Crown' of the Champion.

"Our opponents are not weak at all! Look at them!" Before the final battle, Zhang Yang and all his team members were discussing the strengths and weaknesses of their opponents as they were attempting to exploit their weaknesses. They looked at the name list of the Steely Dang Battle Team as they dug further for more information about them. Although it was not possible for them to investigate so deep to know every one of their Inheritances, they could still know the names of their Inheritance.

There were 2 players with Class A Inheritance, 4 players with Class B Inheritance, 3 players without any Inheritance and 1 player with Class S Inheritance. That player with the Class S Inheritance was Hourglass Figure of course.

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, "Hourglass Figure is a Top tier Hunter who has the Class S Inheritance --- Shadow Striker Inheritance! I have no idea what kind of Inheritance Skills she might have, but we do know that she has no blind spots or minimal range of any kind while we were watching her match. Furthermore, her range of attack is beyond 30 meters! Take note of that!"

"We cannot assume that we can get 3 points to get ourselves into the team battle match even during the 1VS1 matches!" Hundred Shots made the worst case scenario, "We do have the advantage if we look at all of our levels combined. However, if two of us with Class S Inheritances ever encounter their players with Class B Inheritance, and one of us with a Class S Inheritance loses to Hourglass Figure, we might not even win the other four 1VS1 matches!"

Everyone who had made it this far into the finals must be very skillful and capable. Even if there was an obvious gap between the power level of two players, the battle between them would not become one-sided. The outcome of the battles between these capable players would be unpredictable. Those who had lower Class Inheritances would still stand a chance at defeating those who had higher Class Inheritances. Things would rather get more interesting during the matches for the

Championship and the Runner-up.

However, if the Inheritance Classes of the players are far lower than the Inheritance Classes of the other player, then the player with the advantage over the Class of other player would become far more advantageous than before. If Zhang Yang and his team would be so unlucky to face players who would have an advantage over their Classes, Zhang Yang and his team might even lose all matches! Even if they have 3 players with Class S Inheritance on their team, there would not be a guarantee for all 3 of them to win.

However, everything that was being discussed mostly applied to the 1VS1 battles. It would become a different story when it all comes down to Team Battles. Having 3 players with Class S Inheritances on the same team would make the team undoubtedly invincible. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his team just had to make sure they make it into the Team Battles if they could not wrap it up before that.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Let's hope that Witchy Snow doesn't have to go up against Hourglass Figure!"

As the line-up order was being randomly picked and submitted before the matches were even started, there was no way for anyone to arrange their line-up order accordingly. This was all pure luck. If one encounters an opponent that has a Class inherently weak against his or her Class, then it would be like hitting a jackpot!

"Don't worry, I've never lost before!" Wei Yan Er tapped her flat chest and said, "Just count on me! I'll give anyone 3 continuous slashes regardless of whether they are Class S, Class A! Pui!"

"So the best case scenario is having sister Sun encounter Hourglass Figure. Just give her a {Soul Cleansing} and go into stealth. It can be a guaranteed win in 3 minutes!" Daffodil Daydream said.

The threat that a player with Class S Inheritance could pose was just too great to most of the players. Excluding Han Ying Xue, who is a Healer with a Class S healing Inheritance, just look at the attack power of Zhang Yang and Sun Xing Yu. They had become so much more powerful after

acquiring their own Class S Inheritances. Therefore, it would be wise to assume that this Hunter... a Hunter without a blind spot or a minimum range... her DPS must be insane! Therefore, only Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu could go up against a powerful Hunter like Hourglass Figure, no one else!

More importantly, Hourglass Figure could now attack 40 meters away from her target. Therefore, most of the Melee combatants would have no way of approaching her without having only 50% of their HP left.

"Hmm... so, other than Hourglass Figure, there are still two players with Class S Inheritances. Everyone needs to be extra careful about this! Beware of them!" Zhang Yang tried his best to recall his past life memories. Although he was not really familiar with the two Inheritances, he knew more about them at least, compared to the others.

"Savage Lord, Class A 'Twin Blade Inheritance'. He can wield two swords at the same time, thus the name 'Twin Blade'. He can just switch his secondary weapon slot to a shield whenever he needs to block attacks. He also can just switch his secondary weapon slot to equipping a one-handed sword whenever he decides to go all out on causing pain to his enemies. He should be fighting like a battle-type Assassin. However, the amount of Rage Points and Mp he can earn during a battle should differ a lot. In other words, he will become more powerful as he receives more damage!"

Zhang Yang pointed at a player named Savage Lord as he said.

"Judging merely by the Skills of a Guardian, Savage Lord should not have must boost on his Attack even after he equips a secondary-weapon. The main thing here is that he will definitely have some Skills up his sleeves that would involve him using his secondary weapon in his hand. After all, things are always aren't they seem. His 'Twin Blade Inheritance' must be capable of more than just allowing him to carry a secondary weapon. Just keep that in mind!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, then he cautiously said, "Other than little brat and myself, anyone who encounters him later should keep a distance between him and yourselves. He is potentially a nuclear-level

threat thanks to his Class A Inheritance. His power level should be terrifying! Do not underestimate him!"

Chapter 633: Let the Finals begin!

"Other than that, Bloodbath Apocalypse, the other player with a Class A Inheritance known as the 'Swampy Inheritance'. I only know one of the Inheritance Skill called 'Swamp'. The Skill could turn a radius of 30-meter into a swamp. It will reduce 50% Movement Speed of all non-flying units."

Zhang Yang moved his finger and pointed at the other name on the list.

"That sounds troublesome!" Lost Dream frowned.

Bloodbath Apocalypse was a Spellcaster. Although a Spellcaster would not have a blind spot or a minimum range, they were disliked being approached by their opponents. Because their opponents could interrupt their spells or stun them. They basically worked like how a Hunter would. They would need space and time before they can launch an assault. If they get interrupted while chanting their spells, they would not be able to attack or heal their comrades.

Now that Bloodbath Apocalypse had acquired a Skill which could slow down all his enemies within the effective range of his Skill, he could toy around with Melee combatants in the game.

Fortunately, Sun Xin Yu had an Ultimate Skill called {Soul Cleansing}. It would not matter what type of enemy she goes up against. As long she wished to win, it would not be hard at all for her to play hide and seek with her opponent for 3 minutes until the effect of {Soul Cleansing} kicks in. After all, she was the Number One in stealth.

The bigger question is, would this pride woman win a battle with such a 'shabby' tactic?

As he did not know much about the Skills of the other four Inheritances, Zhang Yang only roughly briefed his team members about them. However, he was very impressed with the standard of the opponents. Lone Desert Smoke could become so great and powerful, mostly because Zhang Yang had lived 2 lives.

However, the Steely Dang Holdings could build up such a powerful

battle team mainly because they were quite rich. They must have invested quite a large sum of money in order to prepare for the Championship.

Just look at the amount that Hourglass Figure tried to offer Zhang Yang and his gang. She could flippantly promise Zhang Yang and his gang a yearly salary of 30,000,000 dollars, 50,000,000 dollars, and even 100,000,000 dollars! How many people in the world could resist the temptation of such amount of money if they were ever offered with this sum of money?

So, what they say about money is true. Money is the root of all evil.

"It's alright to be careful about them, but remember, don't fear them! We're stronger than them! We're better than them! I believe that they are having a bigger problem in figuring out the order of their line-up! They must be dying to know about the order of our line-up as well!"

Zhang Yang concluded their tense discussion and made everyone smile.

He guessed it right though. The Steely Dang Battle Team were indeed squeezing their brains out trying to figure out how Zhang Yang would arrange the line-up order for his team. Although they were really strong and powerful, the players from Silky Soft Battle Team seemed to be more well-equipped than them. Three players with Class S Inheritance, one player with Class A Inheritance and two players with Class B Inheritance were really a little too much for them to take in.

After all, the skills that a player had on them mattered the most. A player with Class D Inheritance would not necessarily be able to defeat a player with Class E Inheritance. As mentioned earlier on, players who have made it this far into the finals would definitely be very skillful and powerful! Even if there is only a 5% difference in the Attack of a player between a Class S Inheritance and a player with Class A Inheritance, anything could happen by the end of the battle. Even a 1% difference in the Attack power on both sides could be a deadly number!

As the two sides were preparing for their final clash for the crown of the World League Championship, the 2 battle teams that were eliminated earlier on in the semifinals were ready to battle for the title of being the

3rd place and the 4th place in the competition. Crimson Rage Battle Team managed to break out of their shell as they struggled on to survive. They managed to score 5:2 on the first round and 5:4 in the second round of the matches. They turned the table over and claimed the third place in the competition.

In that sense, even if Silky Soft Battle Team could only claim the runner-up, it would already prove that the power of the China Region is outstanding. Of course, every player from the China Region would want to see their favourite Silky Soft Battle Team claim the crown and be the champions of this competition! That would be the only ideal ending everyone is hoping to see!

It was almost 9 p.m. The final round of the matches were about to begin.

On the list of Silky Soft Battle Team's line-up list, Zhang Yang had put Daffodil Daydream as the last on the list. Meanwhile, the others were told to roll in order to decide who goes first. Zhang Yang would be speechless if the Steely Dang Battle Team could still predict the line-up order of his team and act accordingly.

The first round was Wei Yan Er versus King King Arcane.

Well, King King Arcane was the battle-type Thief of the Steely Dang Battle Team. He had a Class B Inheritance called 'Blood Wolf Inheritance'. Although it was not a Class A Inheritance or a Class S Inheritance, the power it provided to the player must not be underestimated! After all, the difference between the Attack of each class of the Inheritance would only be 5%. Of course, the Inheritance Skills had their own differences as well.

The Blood Wolf Inheritance was a very flashy package. Every time when King King Arcane launched his attacks, there was a certain rate of triggering a Blood Wolf Shadow that would snap at the target and cause quite a certain amount of damage to the target. Furthermore, the Blood Wolf Shadow would appear to be much larger than its usual size. Not only could it deal a lot more damage than it could when it is smaller, the Blood Wolf Shadow could even stun the target.

Fortunately, the rate of Blood Wolf Shadow triggering the Stun Effect

was extremely low. Furthermore, the control style for a battle-type Thief was not the same as the control style of an agility-type Thief. Battle-type Thieves worked dealing more damage and killing their enemies before their enemies kill them! Their style is all about DPS! On the other hand, Berserkers lacked Status Restriction Skills. They would also try to kill their enemies before getting killed. They are a Class born to bring destruction to their enemies!

Therefore, these two would have to compete and see who deals more damage in the end!

In term of normal attacks, King King Arcane had the upper hand as he was equipped with two one-handed swords. However, in term of the Skill attacks, the Attack of a two-handed weapon would be much higher compared to the Attacks of a one-handed weapon.

The little brat seemed to have finally used 'Supporting Attacks' in the battle. As she was swinging her large battle axe around, trying to slash her opponent up, she would also throw a punch or two at King King Arcane whenever she saw an opening. On the other hand, King King Arcane had super high agility. Since it was not possible for him to go head-to-head against a Berserker without getting himself crushed to death, he attempted to dodge the attacks coming from the little brat as swiftly as he could. He was reacting really fast. The little brat could not land her quite a number of her attacks!

However, that was also when a Class A Inheritance started to shine.

The Darkness Inheritance had a passive damage increment of 45%. On the other hand, the Wold Blood Inheritance only had 40% passive damage increase. Furthermore, the Darkness Inheritance provided the little brat a 10% passive damage immunity while the Blood Wolf Inheritance did not provide any to King King Arcane.

As the little advantage accumulated its value over time, it became the one factor that would decide who wins by the end of the battle. By the end of the battle, Wei Yan Er still had over 17% HP while King King Arcane collapsed onto the ground with an empty HP bar and died. The little brat

had earned the team a good start by scoring the first point for the team.

"Wahaha!" upon claiming victory over her first match, Wei Yan Er came back with an exaggerated laugh. She put her hands on her waist as she raised her nose up high towards the sky with pride.

"Sigh... no matter what happens, you'll still be a flat-chest little girl..." Han Ying Xue sighed as she gave a spank on the little brat's bum, "But the sensation of giving your *ss a slap is really addictive!"

"Argh! You're so mean!" Wei Yan Er pressed her hands on her butt as she tried to avoid being spanked in the *ss again.

The second round of the match would be Zhang Yang versus Savage Lord!

The battle was a showdown between two Guardians. It would also be a good comparison between the 'God of War Inheritance' and the 'Twin Blade Inheritance'!

The moment each of them set foot onto the arena, Savage Lord glared at Zhang Yang with his angry eyes and said, "Zhan Yu, you have defeated the four of us with the aid of the Class S Inheritance that you acquired! Now, I have an Inheritance as well! It's time for me to get my revenge!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Well, many have claimed that they would beat me. But unfortunately, not a single one has managed it! You will be no exception to that claim!"

"Just wait and see!"

1 minute had passed and the two of them were ready to engage! Let the match begin!

Savage Lord had a healer-type Battle Companion to back him up. The Battle Companion had thick metal plates covered him up from head to toe. He seemed more like a Knight than a Priest. As the battle had begun, Savage Lord charged out at Zhang Yang swiftly while his Battle Companion stayed behind to support him. The two of them maintained a distance of 30 meters, the furthest healing range of a Healer.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and commanded Felice to act, "Felice, go get that Knight. I'll handle this Indian boy! Let's see which one of us takes out our enemy first!"

"Alright, big brother!"

After accepting Zhang Yang's challenge, Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk form and glided straight towards Savage Lord's Battle Companion.

{Charge}! {Charge}!

Zhang Yang and Savage Lord activated their {Charge} almost at the same instant as they clashed into each other like two trucks clashing head on! Both of them were stunned for one second!

However, Savage Lord had a look of dismay on his face because Zhang Yang had activated his {Charge} a little later than him!

It was not because Zhang Yang had reacted slower. On the contrary, it was because Zhang Yang knew the game too well. He performed like an outstanding player by showing Savage Lord his excellent in-game coordination!

The player who activates {Charge} slightly slower than the others would recover from the Stun Effect quicker than the others. Even though it was just a difference of 0.01 second, that little amount of time would be sufficient for an excellent player like Zhang Yang to activate another Status Restriction Skill on Savage Lord to be in control of the battle. It was proven by so many other players that such a stunt is extremely difficult to be executed.

The range distance of {Charge} was only 10 meters far. The moment the Skill is activated, the player would charge towards the target at high speed. That entire process would only require 0.1 seconds. Even the top Tier players would find it hard to create the opportunity to activate their {Charge} so precisely! One brief moment of delay would result in being knocked into Stun Effect by the opponent instead.

Once players with excellent skill sets approach each other, it would

become extremely hard for any of them to get away from each other. So, any of them would have an extremely rare second chance to activate their {Charge} again!

Savage Lord knew that he suffered a tremendous setback the moment he realized that he had activated {Charge} slightly earlier Zhang Yang. He did it because he was too worried that he might lose the gap to activate his {Charge} on Zhang Yang! Though Savage Lord was speaking confidently, he was in fact overwhelmed by the fear of being defeated by Zhang Yang again. He had seen Zhang Yang's excellent performance previously, after all.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely as he swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at Savage Lord right after he recovered from being stunned.

‘-34,332!’

His Rage Bar got filled up straight away in that instant. Meanwhile, Savage Lord had also recovered from being stunned as well!

{Blast Wave}!

‘-9,204!’

Just as Savage Lord was beginning to swing his sword at Zhang Yang, he was knocked into another Stun Effect which would last for 4 seconds long!

Without wanting to suffer the disadvantage of being stunned for 4 seconds, Savage Lord activated his {Warrior's Will} to lift off the effect. He would probably lose half of his HP if he does not do that.

{Brutal Smash}!

By the time when he activated his {Warrior's Will}, Zhang Yang had moved to the back of Savage Lord as he launched another Skill to stun Savage Lord for another 4 seconds! Savage Lord could not react in time at all as he had to accept the fate of being stunned again. The hand with his sword that was lifted up was once again laid down --- basically, Warrior's Skills would require the player to face their target before the Skills can be activated. Therefore, Savage Lord would need to face Zhang Yang first before he can activate all his Status Restriction Skills such as {Brutal

Smash} and {Blast Wave}.

"Damn!" He cursed right before he activated his accessory which would give him a brief period of invincibility.

--- in a PvP match, the most important thing would actually be the ability to get rid of the Status Restriction Effect on oneself. The ability to restrict your opponent's movement with your Status Restriction Skills or your ability to deal damage would not matter as much. Once a player is afflicted with Status Restriction Effects of any kind, the player would not be able to attack or even move! By then, everything would become futile even if the player had tons of Status Restriction Skills on him or her. Therefore, top Tier players would always equip one or two accessories that could provide them invincibility over a brief period of time. That is also one of many reasons that Zhang Yang encouraged all his team members to acquire that Gray-Silver Tier accessory back in the days.

However, it would not do good for the players if they were to equip too many accessories at the same time. While a player is in battle mode, the player could just switch their equipment or accessory with a click in their mind. However, it would also mean that they would be required to unequip the current equipment or accessories that they are equipped with, before equipping their desired item. That was a full 2-step procedure which would require some time. During a battle, it could be a fatal mistake if a player wastes that one or two seconds on switching their equipment or accessories. The players could have been killed several times over in that period of time.

On the other hand, switching weapons during a battle would be more convenient in such regard.

A golden light surged across the entire body of Savage Lord as he began to radiate in light. He had waited so long for this moment!

He turned around swiftly as he faced himself at Zhang Yang. Then he swung his weapon as hard as he could towards Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang engaged by raising up his shield. He activated {Block} to shield himself from the first attack by Savage Lord. Then, he activated his

{Shield Wall} without any hesitation --- well, it would be a waste to not use it since he was still pretty 'free' at the moment!

‘-O!’

Savage Lord swung another attack at Zhang Yang. However, the attack was so pathetic that it did not even penetrate through Zhang Yang's Defense. It did not even deal any damage to Zhang Yang! It was actually a natural occurrence. Zhang Yang had a 20% damage immunity passive ability. However, the 75% damage immunity that his {Shield Wall} provided does not stack with the 20%. The percentages do not stack up by method of addition. Instead, it was a percentage over a percentage. The end result would be $0.25\% * 0.8\% = 20.2\%$

Even if Savage Lord's basic Attack reaches up to 30,000, but it would still be extremely difficult for him to deal damage to Zhang Yang!

Chapter 634: Full Recovery Potion

{Destructive Smash}!

Savage Lord did not slow down at all. He swung another Skill attack that could potentially damage Zhang Yang. {Destructive Smash} only has 8 seconds of cooldown. On the other hand, {Shield Wall} could last for 10 seconds. Therefore, his {Destructive Smash} would be ready for dispatching again when Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} fades.

‘-3,167!’

That attack of his had finally dealt some damage to Zhang Yang! However, Zhang Yang had over 350,000 HP. It was like a mosquito bite!

Truth be told, Savage Lord still had a Skill called {Double Slash} which could potential deal much higher damage than any attack he launched at Zhang Yang up to this point. Upon equipping his secondary weapon with a similarly powerful weapon as his primary weapon, he could deal an additional 200% of his initial damage with each of his weapons in each of his hands. Furthermore, the Skill would ignore all Defense as well! It would totally pack a punch in the gut! However, the cooldown of this Skill was 1 minute long. It would be a waste if he uses it on Zhang Yang while his {Shield Wall} is active.

Savage Lord was still in a state of invincibility. So, he switched his shield off from his secondary slot and equipped it with another battle sword. Then he began to launch a flurry of attacks on Zhang Yang.

Slash! Cut!

Savage Lord threw {Cripple Defense} on Zhang Yang like any Guardian would. It would not be a waste when he is encountering a Tanker with super high Defense. Also, because Savage Lord was using one-handed swords to attack, the Defense of his target affected him significantly in this battle. It was actually a wise move to reduce the Defense of his target before attacking.

Upon throwing 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} onto Zhang Yang, he

managed to reduce Zhang Yang's Defense down to 2,820. That brought down the minimum amount of damage he needed to deal before he could begin causing effective damage to his target. It was quite a remarkable achievement for him.

The powerful Skill {Twin Blade Devastation} could last for 8 seconds. Right before the flashing strikes came to an end, Savage Lord struck out with his {Blast Wave} and stunned Zhang Yang!

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang immediately broke out of the Stun Effect and took down a [Beginner Mobility Potion] almost at the same instant.

{Brutal Smash}!

Immune!

Savage Lord repeated what Zhang Yang did to him earlier on. However, he did not expect Zhang Yang to be so swift in taking out a potion from his inventory and gulping it down! Therefore, every strike that could potentially cause a Status Restriction Effect on Zhang Yang went to waste just like that!

He could still hit Zhang Yang with his {Heroic Leap} in an attempt of stunning Zhang Yang. However, he knew that it would go to waste as well, as the effect of the potion was still alive and kicking!

"Big brother! Felice has reduced half of his HP bar! You're falling far behind! Haha!" Felice spoke from the other side of the arena.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't worry! I'll be able to end the battle very soon!"

"Zhan Yu! You little shit!" Savage Lord let out a raging roar. Of course he would get mad! Zhang Yang was actually treating him as a means of winning a wager that Zhang Yang had with his Battle Companion! Was he treating him as an entertainment instead of an opponent? Does Zhang Yang think that Savage Lord is that easy to defeat? Did he not take him seriously? Who could have endured such an insult!

Zhang Yang swung his sword swiftly as he continued to deal damage on Savage Lord while Savage Lord did the same. After all, he was competing with Felice! He had no intention of using any of his Status Restriction Skills as using them would slow his assaults down. He only wanted to take out his target as soon as he is able to.

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-156,314!’

A terrifyingly high damage was dealt upon Savage Lord and that hit almost took him out! He only had approximately 3,000 HP left on him!

Savage Lord frowned intensely. After throwing two quick slashes at Zhang Yang, he quickly switched back to his shield and gulped down a bottle of Potion. His HP bar was miraculously restored back to full!

‘-45,234!’

‘-13,815!’

That two consecutive slashes were actually the Ultimate Skill of the Twin Blade Inheritance. It was known as {Double Slash}. The damage this Skill could deal supreme damage to the target. That two slashes had taken out more than 60,000 HP of Zhang Yang!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang realized that Savage Lord had used a potion called [Full Recovery Potion]!

He frowned.

A [Full Recovery Potion] could restore a player’s HP (Health Point), MP (Mana Point), RP (Rage Point), EP (Energy Point) and FP (Focus Point). All of it! Thus the name of it! This should be the most powerful potion there is in the entire game. However, this potion could not be made or crafted by Alchemists.

There was a rate of this Potion dropping from a super boss on an Open World Map. Other than that, the bosses from Hardcore Modes of dungeons would also potentially drop the potion as part of the rewards for clearing the bosses. However, that rate would be extremely low. After all,

the effects of this potion were a little too powerful.

If Savage Lord could have this sort of potion, how about his other teammates, then?

These opponents were really keeping their cards well hidden up in their sleeves. They did not even use this sort of potion during their previous matches even when they were losing! Of course, there were not much of a challenge for them in the previous matches, to begin with. So, they reserved this sort of potion for the finals to create an element of surprise for their opponents!

However, it would be illogical for them to reserve the potions so badly if they had plenty of it. King King Arcane would have used it right before he was defeated by Wei Yan Er. After all, a normal [Level 5 Healing Potion] could only recover 30,000 HP. The effect of a [Full Recovery Potion] was far more advanced than the effect of a [Level 5 Healing Potion]. If King King Arcane had this sort of potion and he did use it back then, Wei Yan Er would have been the one losing the match.

Well, the Steely Dang Battle Team was really unlucky this time around. No matter what potions Savage Lord takes, he would still be defeated by Zhang Yang by the end of this match. His fate has been locked in! It would just be a matter of time. It would only be a waste, taking a [Full Recovery Potion] while engaging Zhang Yang.

However, no one would have known who they would be going up against in the arena. All could only blame Savage Lord for being reckless. He could have kept the potion and let his other team members have it. After all, the potions were not bound upon picking up.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel pity for Savage Lord for being so unlucky.

If the standard between the two opponents were almost on the same par, this potion would have worked marvelously in affecting the outcome of the match. Furthermore, the better the equipment on the players are, the more the potion could heal.

Although Zhang Yang had the {Alchemist's Intuition} and he already

made quite a number of [Level 5 Healing Potions (Grade 10 Transmutation)], but one [Level 10 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] could only heal as much as 60,000 HP. It would not even be nearly enough if this potion was used to heal a player who has over 150,000 HP!

"Haha! I bet you have never expected this!" Savage Lord laughed out loud. As he was not afflicted with the effect of {Destructive Smash} at the moment, he had managed to fully heal from it. He let out a roar and continued to launch his assaults on Zhang Yang. However, the effect of [Mobility Potion] on Zhang Yang had not faded just yet. So any Status Restriction Effect that Savage Lord attempted to put on him would not be effective.

"Stop struggling! It's futile to attempt avoiding the inevitable!" Zhang Yang smiled down at Savage Lord. He still had over 300,000 HP while Savage Lord only had about 220,000 HP on him. Comparing the weapons they wielded, Savage Lord was using two one-handed weapons while Zhang Yang was using a two-handed weapon. It was obvious that who would come out on top in terms of Attack. If they were to compare their Defense attributes, both of them were holding shields. However, Zhang Yang's was much higher, because he had two pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment on him to boost his Defense up by a notch!

Zhang Yang did not push his opponent too hard. He commanded Felice to slow down her attack speed a little. He allowed Savage Lord to hold on for a little while longer --- he was thinking of forcing Savage Lord to use another [Full Recovery Potion] - if he still had more with him!

As Savage Lord realized that Zhang Yang had tuned down his attack a little, he switched his shield out and his Defense was increased greatly. He laughed with pride and began to go all out on Zhang Yang.

However, generally, for matters under heaven, those closely involved cannot see as clearly as those outside. Hourglass Figure immediately saw Zhang Yang's intention. However, she could only stare at the match from aside. When a match begins, no outsider would be able to interrupt the match. Public channels, private channels, and even phone calls would be

completely blocked off from the players inside the arena.

Hourglass Figure could only stare at the match as she was overwhelmed by anxiety. Well, Savage Lord did still have one more [Full Recovery Potion] with him. Honestly speaking, Hourglass Figure, Savage Lord, and Bloodbath Apocalypse had two bottles of [Full Recovery Potions] each. They meant to win two matches out of three. Even if they were falling behind in the 1VS1 matches, they could still continue on in the Team Battle and turn the tables over on their opposing Battle Team.

However, Zhang Yang was evil. He could have won the match easily. But he was trying to prolong the match. It was obvious that he was trying to dig deep into the sleeves of Savage Lord, trying to find out what else he had up his sleeves.

After giving it some thought, Hourglass Figure started to smile faintly. There were two sides on doing this. Because Zhang Yang had no idea how many bottles of [Full Recovery Potion] Savage Lord had on him. If Savage Lord were to really take another bottle of potion, Zhang Yang would definitely drag the match on for another minute to see if Savage Lord has a third bottle of [Full Recovery Potion]!

If Savage Lord still could not take out Zhang Yang in two minutes time, that would only prove him to be weak.

"Why isn't noob tank defeating that dark charcoal? Shouldn't he be winning the match by now?" Wei Yan Er could not understand why Zhang Yang was trying to drag the match. As long as Savage Lord does not activate {Shield Wall} or any kind of Accessory that may grant him invincibility, Zhang Yang could have taken him out cold within 10 seconds!

"That's really strange... I wonder what is going on with Zhang Yang right now?" Lost Dream and the others were expressing their concerns as well.

"Potion!" Sun Xin Yu was being as concise and comprehensive on her choice of words as always.

Lost Dreams and the others were looking at each other as they did not get what Sun Xin Yu was trying to tell them. However, the person who

would understand you most would actually be your enemy. Han Ying Xue immediately got it, then she said, "You're saying that Indian guy took a potion? Hmm... he did take a bottle of potion and his HP bar went back to full."

There were too many life-saving Skills in the game. It was as if everyone already had their own life-saving Skills on them. Therefore, when the HP bar of Savage Lord miraculously recovered back to full state, no one was paying attention to how he did it or what Skill did he use. Now that Han Ying Xue had pointed it out loud and clear, everyone had finally realized the secret behind it.

"So that potion can what? Heal you back to your full HP?"

"That potion is much more powerful than Zhang Yang's [Level 5 Healing Potion {Grade 10 Transmutation)]!"

"However, such powerful potions are usually extremely rare!"

"Silly Yu is trying to drag the match so that he can trick that Indian guy into using all his potions up!"

Lost Dream and the others were not stupid either. They understood the real intention of Zhang Yang in just a brief moment.

Now, the only one who had not realize the scheme behind Zhang Yang's mind was Savage Lord. 1 minute later, his HP had dropped below 20%. The match had entered a 'killing cleave' stage. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang still had over 40% HP on him. Savage Lord suddenly activated his {Warrior's Will} to remove the negative effect that he had from Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash}. Then he also took another [Full Recovery Potion] to restore his HP bar.

"Zhan Yu! Your time has come!" Savage Lord laughed. He activated a {Brutal Smash} and stunned Zhang Yang. Then he took some time to switch his sword out onto his secondary weapon slot. He slid over to the rear of Zhang Yang before he launched his assaults. He did that to avoid Zhang Yang's shield from getting in the way.

As expected, there was a second bottle of [Full Recovery Potion]!

However, would there be a third bottle then?

Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile that no one would spot easily. Then, he activated his {Warrior's Will} and rid himself of the Stun Effect. Then he stomped his legs on the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}. With that strike, he afflicted Savage Lord with a negative effect that reduced 90% of his movement speed. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang took the opportunity to run from Savage Lord.

--- Zhang Yang intended to delay this match for another minute to see if Savage Lord had a third bottle of the potion.

"Damn!" Savage Lord had just taken the [Full Recovery Potion]. So all his other potions were on Global Shared Cooldown for the moment. So he was forced to walk very slowly!

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to recover as he began to patch himself up with [Bandages].

‘+10000!’

‘+10000!’

...

During the 10-second patching session, Zhang Yang recovered over 100,000 HP all thanks to the double healing effect that was bestowed on him by his title of ‘Physician’s Friend’. That being said, Zhang Yang now had approximately 230,000 HP on him at the moment. He managed to heal back almost the same amount of HP that Savage Lord did.

Savage Lord was so anxious that he was on the brink of crying! He was capable of restoring his HP back to full because he had taken a [Full Recovery Potion] which appeared to be an extremely rare item! Hourglass Figure had put up the ‘honor’ of India and a substantial sum of money in order to get only 4 bottles of [Full Recovery Potions]. With the two [Full Recovery Potions] that they managed to keep in their guild’s warehouse, they only had a total of 6 [Full Recovery Potions]!

However, knowing that the amount of HP he recovered by using one super rare [Full Recovery Potion] was as much as the amount of HP Zhang

Yang recovered by using one [Bandage], of course, he would feel like crying out loud.

Chapter 635: Absolute Slaughter!

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang could have just taken another bottle of [Level 5 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] after that. He could still recover another 60,000 HP if he does that.

However, he would have recovered too much amount HP that he would have pushed Savage Lord into despair. When that happens, Savage Lord would have just given up hope and he might not use his third [Full Recovery Potion] if he really had one with him. Therefore, Zhang Yang had to maintain his HP bar at a certain amount to encourage Savage Lord that the match was not over yet. He could coax the other Guardian into giving his best and pulling out every other trump card.

Haih... more effort is required in order for one to be the villain these days.

Zhang Yang had to keep Savage Lord occupied while making sure that he could still make Savage Lord believe that he still stood a chance at winning the match. It was much more difficult than taking out Savage Lord just like that. After all, Zhang Yang must not let Savage Lord know that he was holding back. At least he managed to maintain the pace of the battle with his high standard of skill by utilizing his 'Supporting Attacks' and his facial expressions. He could really need to prolong the battle as long as possible in order to lure Savage Lord into revealing his remaining 'tricks'. It was wise of him to use his 'Supporting Attacks' which would not cause a point of damage from time to time to create the illusion that he was trying his best to bring Savage Lord down to his knees.

Well, not everyone was born with the gift to act!

"Zhan Yu! You're destined to fall before me!" Savage Lord began to laugh out loud as he was very content with his current performance. In his own eyes, he believed that he could equally match himself with the opponent that had kicked his *ss earlier on in the battle --- although he relied on some [Full Recovery Potions] while he was doing it, his opponent was a player with a Class S Inheritance after all. So it was understandable that

he would become a little arrogant over it.

Zhang Yang was being extremely cooperative with Savage Lord. He humphed in annoyance and faked out a few fumbles and mistakes. He even purposely missed some of his attacks on Savage Lord. Furthermore, Savage Lord was also equipped with {Block}! Therefore, Savage Lord managed to hang on for more than 50 seconds before his HP bar dropped below 20%.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang maintained his own HP at approximately 25%. He kept his HP bar slightly higher than Savage Lord in order to pressurize Savage Lord without causing despair to him. In the meanwhile, Savage Lord still believed that there was still hope for him to defeat Zhang Yang as he saw that Zhang Yang's remaining HP was barely higher than his.

As expected! The moment the Global Cooldown for potions was over, Savage Lord immediately took out a bottle of [Level 5 Healing Potion] and gulped it down. As the effect of the {Destructive Smash} was over at the moment, he managed to recover 30,000 HP.

Zhang Yang let out a breath of relief. At the same time, he was a little disappointed as well.

So, he now knew that Savage Lord had no [Full Recovery Potions] left on him. However, there should be more of this sort of potion with the other members of the Steely Dang Battle Team! It was really unfortunate for Zhang Yang. If every single one of the [Full Recovery Potion] was with Savage Lord, Zhang Yang could have lured Savage Lord into finishing up all his potions and bring Silky Soft Battle Team one step closer to victory.

"Hey, have you finished up all your Full Recovery Potions already?" Zhang Yang asked Savage Lord out of a sudden.

"How did you --- bastard!" Savage Lord was not that dumb as well. He immediately understood the situation after he heard Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. If that is the case, Zhang Yang had no reason to hold back anymore.

{Destructive Smash}!

{Block}!

Normal attack!

{Rising Dragon Strike}!

Zhang Yang felt a heat rush in his right hand. A 'Dragon of the East' suddenly emerged from his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. The dragon lashed out with its outstretched fangs! Zhang Yang intended to activate his {Killing Cleave} as he saw that the remaining HP bar of Savage Lord was lower than 20%. However, since that the {Rising Dragon Strike} was triggered, it could finish the job as well.

'-459,802!'

Savage Lord received an unbelievably high damage and lay dead. The dragon slammed its claw straight on Savage Lord's head and clawed his head opened! Savage Lord let out a miserable scream towards the sky before he died.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel lucky. If his {Rising Dragon Strike} had triggered a little earlier when he was battling Savage Lord, he might not have made Savage Lord use up two of his [Full Recovery Potions].

Meanwhile, the players who saw the {Rising Dragon Strike} dropped their jaws in shock. The situation was different compared to arena battles and the Open World battles. The system would ensure that everyone in the game could see the numerical damage values that pop out on top of players whenever they receive damage. The battle logs would even specify the amount of damage reduced based on the Defense, Damage Absorption and Damage Immunity.

This {Rising Dragon Strike} could actually cause up to 560,000 damage! More importantly, it was not a Critical Hit!

Holy god! Would anyone be able to withstand such a powerful hit from Zhang Yang and live after that? Engaging Zhang Yang in a 1VS1 match would definitely be a waste of time! He could just score an instant win by triggering {Rising Dragon Strike}!

However, that was merely wishful thinking. Zhang Yang had only managed to trigger the {Rising Dragon Strike} once, throughout the entire time. The rate of triggering the effect was so low that Zhang Yang would just ignore the existence of it! Or else, he would have timed it right and swept out every single enemy that he goes up against! He could have easily scored 2 points for the round!

Savage Lord finally made his way back to his teammates. He could not avoid being lectured by Hourglass Figure for the dumb things he did back in the arena. Now that he had the time and space to recall, he only realized that Zhang Yang was just having a good time toying with him. He could not help but feel shame as his anger towards Zhang Yang ignited brighter than ever.

The competition continued on with the third match of the round. This match was like a comet crashing into earth! It was Sun Xin Yu VS Hourglass Figure!

It was going to be a spectacular match between two players with Class S Inheritance!

Truth to be told, Sun Xin Yu could win the match easily if she is willing to throw a {Soul Cleansing } onto the Hourglass and stealth kill her to claim victory over the match. With her current skills in the art of stealth, Sun Xin Yu could sneak up on top Tier players like Hourglass Figure herself. Even a Hunter who excels in the arts of forcing out the stealthy ones would not be able to force Sin Xin Yu out from the shadows.

However, the Ice queen was too proud to win a match with such a 'despicable' method. She would prefer to win the match by showing off her skill sets.

Shoof!

Hourglass Figure threw out a {Flare} at the direction she was facing at and illuminated the surroundings. That was a Hunter's Skill for revealing all units that are hidden from plain sight in the game. The Skill could reach out to a radius of 10 meters. Any Thief or other hidden units within the effective range of it would be revealed straight away!

Shoof!

Upon the 15-second cooldown of the Skill, Hourglass Figure threw another {Flare} to the opposite direction of the first {Flare}. The moment when she threw it out, she felt a sense of danger, however, she only smiled coldly and did nothing.

A blade emerged from the air and struck Hourglass Figure into a stunned state. A shadow faded right after the strike. However, right before the shadow could launch the next assault, she was frozen up in a box of ice, immediately.

--- that was the Hunter's {Frost Trap}! The Skill could freeze any non-boss type targets (including players) for 10 seconds. The target would not be able to move or do anything during the effective period of the Skill. However, the effect would break if the target receives any attack or damage during the effective period of the Skill.

{Stealth} could stun the target for 4 seconds while {Frost Trap} could freeze the target for 10 seconds! Therefore, the Thief would be the one who suffers! 6 seconds was more than enough for a Hunter to keep a distance of 30 meters between themselves and their enemies. Meanwhile, Thieves who are already forced out of their 'Stealth Mode' would become very vulnerable as they could not withstand many hits.

Huh?

The joy that Hourglass Figure felt did not last more than half a second. Another shadow emerged out of the air and two blades slid across her back! The HP bar of Hourglass Figure was reduced steeply after that! At the same time, she received a negative effect of {Soul Cleansing}: If Hourglass Figure could not kill her enemy within 3 minutes, she would die, literally!

Zhang Yang could not help but clap and praise his girl for what just happened. The first shadow that struck Hourglass Figure appeared to be Sun Xin Yu's Battle Companion, Ankh the Assassin! As Ankh had stepped up to take the {Frost Trap}, she allowed Sun Xin Yu to go all out, launching her assault on Hourglass Figure!

This Ice queen really had her own personality going! She still wanted to attack her opponent head-on even after she had cast the negative effect of {Soul Cleansing}. It was obvious that... she did not want to win the match by taking the 'shortcut'. She wanted to give Hourglass Figure a fair chance to strike back at her!

{Compel}!

Hourglass Figure's pet came out of the shadow as well. It was a Wind Shadow Leopard that activated {Stealth} which knocked Sun Xin Yu into a Stun state.

Huh?

Zhang Yang widened his eyes and stared at Hourglass Figure. She was a ranged-type Hunter. {Compel} could only be learned by the 'babies' of Beastmasters!

Obviously, it was the special 'gift' that only the Hunter's Class S Inheritance could provide. That would really give Hourglass Figure the advantage of learning two different types of Skills.

The effects of {Compel} were similar to the effect of {Stealth}. However, the Stun effect duration of {Compel} was 1 second longer than the Stun effect duration of {Stealth}. A 5-second Stun effect would be far more practical than a 4-second Stun effect.

In other words, Hourglass Figure would be recovering from the Stun effect 1 second earlier than Sun Xin Yu. That would provide her enough time to get a distance away from Sun Xin Yu unruffled. That would prove to be unfavorable for Sun Xin Yu.

Sun Xin Yu activated her accessory and triggered the Invincibility effect. On the other hand, Hourglass Figure did the exact same thing and leaped 10 meters away from Sun Xin Yu. Both of them activated their accessories at the same instant. Therefore, Hourglass Figure did not launch her assaults towards Sun Xin Yu. Instead, she chose to get as far from Sun Xin Yu as possible.

Although Hourglass Figure no longer had any blind spots, a Thief would

triumph over her in melee combat. By creating a certain distance between herself and Sun Xin Yu, Sun Xin Yu would not be able to deal damage to her from a distance. Meanwhile, the Skills that a Thief could have were too unpredictable and various. The situation would become unfavorable for anyone who thinks about going head-on with a Thief in a melee combat! Furthermore, Hourglass had just used one of two Accessories that could grant her the ability to become Invincible for a brief period of time. Although she could still activate another of her Accessory pieces to grant her another brief moment of invincibility, it would not be a wise move as there would be too much of a risk for her to do so. After all, she had no idea how many more 'tricks' were reserved under the sleeves of Sun Xin Yu!

A moment before the effect of invincibility ended, Sun Xin Yu immediately activated her {Shadow Step} and appeared right behind Hourglass Figure. With her two blades whirling across the air, she unleashed a series of flurry attacks on Hourglass Figure. Blood was spilled across the arena as she started slicing Hourglass Figure up!

{Breaking Shot}!

Hourglass Figure suddenly shot Sun Xin Yu into a 4-second stun as she took the opportunity to pull herself away. She ran 30 meters across the arena before she began to shoot her arrows at Sun Xin Yu.

{Sprint}!

As she was running towards Hourglass Figure. Sun Xin Yu accelerated, all of a sudden! She ran straight up to Hourglass Figure as swiftly as the wind and continued to launch her assaults as aggressively as she could.

The two ladies were exhibiting their best skills to everyone watching their match. The way they move, the way they used their Status Restriction Skills, the way they removed the Status Restriction Effects on themselves. Everything they did on the arena was immensely satisfying for the people to enjoy. It was a marvelous performance that the two ladies were putting up in the arena! Many Hunters and Thieves were astonished and ashamed of themselves. They had no idea that they could actually play the game in

so many other ways!

The battle was at the peak of its climax. The two ladies would also use any opportunity that they could grab to patch themselves up with [Bandages], especially when they were throwing their Status Restricting Skills at each other. They were basically spamming the potions the moment the global cooldown for their potion was over.

They kept throwing their Status Restriction Skills at each other while dodging attacks from each other. However, the amount of HP that they could recover by taking [Potions] and [Bandages] could not make up for the damage they received from each other. In about two and a half minutes later, both of their HP bars were reduced down to approximately 10%.

The potions' global cooldown for both ladies were over at the same instant. However, Hourglass took a bottle of [Full Recovery Potion] instead of a [Level 5 Healing Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]!

Her HP was restored back to full in just a brief moment! Her Focus Points were restored back to 100 points as well!

{Vanish}!

Upon taking her potion, Sun Xin Yu vanished into thin air with her Skill, without any hesitation. Then... there was no then anymore. She went completely silent!

Zhang Yang was shocked, then he laughed out loud.

Although Sun Xin Yu was proud and competitive, she was not a fool!

If Hourglass Figure wanted to compete with her fair and square, she would not have taken a bottle of [Full Recovery Potion] which broke the status quo of the match. Without that, Sun Xin Yu would not have hidden and let her {Soul Cleansing} to finish the job! However, since that Hourglass Figure had decided not to duel with Sun Xin Yu in a fair manner, there was no reason for Sun Xin Yu to go head on with her like a fool!

It was just matter of seconds before 3 minutes comes to pass. There was

no sign of Sun Xin Yu at all. Hourglass Figure was so badly infuriated that her eyes almost popped out from her eye sockets!

After all, she had just taken a bottle of [Full Recovery Potion], an extremely expensive and rare potion that they had spent a fortune on in order to get a few bottles. However, the effect of {Soul Cleansing} would not be affected by the amount of HP on the target. It would not matter if the target has only 1% or 100% HP. The target would have to die when the time is up! Therefore, it became a total waste for Hourglass Figure when Sun Xin Yu decided to vanish into thin air and wait out for the effect of {Soul Cleansing} to kick in.

Are you kidding me? What the f*ck!

Hourglass Figure was on the verge of losing her sanity! If Sun Xin Yu had just thrown the {Soul Cleansing} onto her and stayed quiet for the rest of the match, she would have given up and played along with it. She could have reserved the potion so that her other teammates could use it in the upcoming matches. However, Sun Xin Yu had given her some false hope! That had really tricked her into using one of her [Full Recovery Potion], that was really...

Were all the members of Lone Desert Smoke so cunning?!

Three minutes had passed. Hourglass Figure collapsed onto the ground with great grievance and died instantly.

The Steely Dang Battle Team had been 'tricked' into using 3 bottles of [Full Recovery Potions] in two battles. That was a great win for Zhang Yang and his team!

Furthermore, Silky Soft Battle Team was leading the matches with the score of 3:0. They could win the first round by winning another two of the 1VS1 matches.

The 4th match was Han Ying Xue's turn. She took down Galavan with ease, just like how she did with her previous opponents. By doing so, the Silky Soft Battle Team scored 4:0.

However, Hundred Shots lost the 5th match to Almodo. Therefore, the

Steely Dang Battle Team managed to score 1 victory for themselves. On the following match, Lost Dream won the 6th match with an outstanding performance as he scored the last point for his team to claim victory over the first round with a score of 5:1.

After a short break, the organizers carried on with the second round of the matches without any delay.

This round, Zhang Yang and his team were not that lucky. Although Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang won with ease, both of them managed to do that because their opponents were only players with Class B Inheritance. Meanwhile, Han Yin Xue was so unlucky that she actually had to battle against Hourglass Figure. Hourglass Figure won the match at the cost of one bottle of [Full Recovery Potion].

Lost Dream and Hundred Shots had to go up against players with Class A Inheritance. They waged an arduous struggle before they lost. As for Daffodil Daydream who was the weakest among the entire team, even though she outdid herself this time, she had not yet acquired her Inheritance. It was logical that she would lose to another player who already had an Inheritance.

Fortunately, Wei Yan Er performed superbly for her match. She won by whirling her huge battle axe around without giving space for her opponent to even flinch, securing the crucial point for Silky Soft Battle Team to stay in the game. Although Zhang Yang and his team were falling behind by scoring only 3:4, they managed to participate in the team battle.

Everyone, including the members from two teams that were competing against each other, the players that were watching the competition and the commentator were extremely nervous about the outcome of the team battle. After all, it would be the final match of the World League Championship!

Ding! The Team Battle had begun!

Zhang Yang charged at the front as he led his teammates into battle. He activated his {Charge} towards King Kong Wrath, followed by sweep with his [Sword of Purging Devourer] without any hesitation. After causing a

damage of 58,000 on King Kong Wrath, Zhang Yang suddenly felt a heat rush throughout his right arm. A 'Dragon of the East' emerged out from the sword and struck out towards his enemies!

It was unbelievably lucky that Zhang Yang could trigger his {Rising Dragon Strike} with one single hit! Not to mention that it was only his first solid hit on his target!

In just one instant, Zhang Yang caused a damage of 580,000 to every single member of the Steely Dang Battle Teams, every single Battle Companion, and every single pet of the opposition team!

It was an instant kill for everyone on the Steely Dang Battle Team!

The world became calm in an instant!

Everyone had their jaws dropped in silence. That included the commentators as well! Even Zhang Yang and his team members, and every member of the Steely Dang Battle Team were stunned over what had just happened!

Did the match just end?

It was! The match was ended in just an instant!

Chapter 636: Gurant's Thumb Ring

Perhaps, there was no way that anyone could beat the record set by Zhang Yang and his battle team.

The entire arena remained quiet for a long time before the usual rowdiness returned. It took several players quite some time for them to accept the fact that Zhang Yang had single-handedly eliminated all 5 enemies with a single strike. Steely Dangs Battle Team did not even have time to react.

It could not be helped, {Rising Dragon Strike} was only activated by luck and luck alone. It was not something that Zhang Yang could control. It would be extremely nice to have the skill proc at the crucial moment...

In the end, despite the audience still left dumbfounded, the champion of the World Championship Professional League was Silky Soft Battle Team! Zhang Yang and his band of merry friends had become the first World Champions ever! They held the pride and honor of China! While everyone was happy that China was able to hold the first place in the championship, Humbly Gentleman, Liu Wei, and other players that had a grudge on him were pissed off albeit still happy for their nation.

After everyone was sent out of the arena, the two Battle Teams were teleported away. China had produced two teams that had obtained the champion and the second runner-up. That alone had proved that China was a force to be reckoned with.

The prize money was sent out almost immediately after the results were out. Even though Zhang Yang was smiling from ear to ear as he holds the large cheque made out of a large cardboard with several zeros on it, the prize money was already in his saving account. As to how the division of the prize money goes, the organizers of the event would not bother to interfere. It was up to the leader of the battle team to decide.

The second prize was the Inheritance Fragments. All three battle team leaders were sent up a stage to draw from loot box. Snow Seeker obtained a C class Mammoth Inheritance, Hourglass Figure obtained a B class

Silverwing Angel Inheritance, and Zhang Yang obtained an A class Soul Breaker Inheritance.

Due to the lack of information about the Inheritances, no one had any clue on their details. It could be a physical attack type, or a magic type, it could be a melee type, or a ranged type. All of the questions will be answered only when the players themselves obtain the Inheritance Keepsakes.

Even so, if Daffodil Daydream accepted the Darkness Inheritance back then, she would still benefit from several of its buffs. Sadly, it would still be wastage, such as the 250% attack boost {Dark Vengeance}, for it requires a melee weapon. Hence, some Inheritances were meant for specific wielders. It could be so precise to the class type down to its branch job, such as a Beastmaster or a Sniper, a Pyromancer or a Cryomancer.

Zhang Yang passed the Soul Breaker Inheritance Fragment to Daffodil Daydream and had her search for all 6 remaining Fragments. If the Keepsake's description reveals the Inheritance to be directed towards magic, Zhang Yang would have her take on the Inheritance quest. If it is the other way around, she will be greatly compensated for her futile effort. Zhang Yang would never send someone on a random goose chase without a proper reward in hand.

After the event ended, the organizers of the event threw a grand closing ceremony and invited all participant to visit Luxembourg for a holiday. Naturally, all expenses would be covered.

Sadly, China's Lunar Year celebration was about to arrive. Hence, Zhang Yang and the rest of the China players had chosen to fly back to China to resume their activity there. Once the teams arrived back at the mainland, Daffodil Daydream started her adventure to search for the Inheritance Fragments. Like other Inheritances, collecting all the pieces of the fragment was not a difficult task. It was just time-consuming. After 5 to 6 days, she found the second piece. The journey of collecting all seven pieces of Fragment would definitely be a far road ahead.

With the emergence of players that had surpassed the Level 120

threshold, Zhang Yang felt that it was time to move forward with his plans. He had Mountain Mover and Endless Starlight to take charge of exploring the Red Garnet Palace Dungeon. The second dungeon was the target of all players in the world. Even though the importance of obtaining the First Clear Achievement of the second world-class dungeon could not be compared to the Dragon Throat Fortress, it was still a priority to everyone since it had skill points as a reward! On the side note, the haul from a dungeon was constant, even though the equipment farmed there are not as strong as an open-world boss, the dungeon does have tons of bosses to kill and equipment for Battle Companion to loot! All and all, it was still worth raiding.

Since the progress of players in the game was so rapid (due to Zhang Yang interfering with the timeline), and the existence of Battle Companion (also Zhang Yang's fault), the difficulty of the Red Garnet Palace was not too difficult for players to raid. Both the Normal and Hard modes of the dungeon were conquered in just half a day's time. All big guilds from around the world had funded their Exploration parties and had started the raid on the Hardcore Mode.

Similar to the Dragon Throat Palace, the Red Garnet Palace had many bosses. Up to 13 of them! Compared to the previous dungeon, the first five bosses were conquered in just 3 days. The middle 5 bosses were slightly stronger and lasted for a while. Most of the super-guilds Exploration team only took close to 7 days to clear the middle stage. Zhang Yang believed that the last 3 bosses would end up being cleared in no time at all.

After working for half a month, Daffodil Daydream had managed to find all the Inheritance Fragments of the Soul Breaker Inheritance and had formed the Keepsake. Turns out, it was an Inheritance that can be acquired only by Priests, Spellcasters, and Knights. It was a class-specific Inheritance! A good red envelope for the new year! [1]

With the new year coming closer and closer, every family in China was busy getting ready to celebrate the festive holiday. Many needed to travel far to visit their family from all corners of China. There were many things that needed to be done, hence, the time spent on playing games was

greatly reduced. Some days, a member would be asking for a 3 days leave, the next day, another would want a 4-day leave. One by one, members of the Exploration team had requested for leaves, leaving the party incomplete.

Eventually, after a serious discussion between Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, and Mountain Mover, the guild decided to hold off the Exploration of the dungeon and allow everyone to do as they please till the 15th of the month.

With Lone Desert Smoke out of the picture, the fight for the First Clear Achievement was going on strongly. In just a few days' time, the guild Paragon had managed to kill their way to the 11th boss. Nihilum was following closely behind and defeated the 12th boss, surpassing Paragon. However, the one who had the last laugh was Hourglass Figure, as she had led a team of elite players from her guild, the Land of Savages and killed the last boss. The First Clear Achievement had fallen into the hands of the India Region. For the first time ever, Zhang Yang had missed out on obtaining a First Clear Achievement.

It was all due to the special occasion of China, Korean, and even Japan celebrating the new year. Due to the celebration, almost all guilds had stopped their pursuits of the dungeon raid. Perhaps it was greed, or pride, when Land of Savages obtained the First Clear Achievement, they used the momentary attention to voice out their dismay of their losses during the World Championship. Still, a win was a win, at the very least, they still managed to obtain the world's second world-class dungeon First Clear Achievement. However, the shame of losing to Lone Desert Smoke still lingered around. Hence, Land of Savages had accused Lone Desert Smoke of only depending on luck to win the championship. If it was not for Zhang Yang's weird skill, they would have won the group 5v5 fight! Land of Savages was, in truth, stronger than Lone Desert Smoke in every way! Or so they claimed.

In response to their sudden accusations, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, and many other hot-headed players of Lone Desert Smoke were enraged. Han Ying Xue had even suggested starting a national war to show the Indians

their rightful place amongst the trash of the world!

It was merely a suggestion. Whether or not Zhang Yang takes action is another thing. As such, after the short period of time since the Red Garnet Palace's First Clear Achievement was taken, players had yet again indulged themselves in a race of grinding Levels. There was a large gap till the next dungeon, hence, everyone placed their attention on getting their level as high as possible. After all, Levels dictates the character's strength in all MMORPG!

In the middle of the second month of the year, the Professional League had started a new seasonal championship. In the previous seasonal Professional League, the last two Battle Team in the S class Professional League had to fight the Champion and the Runner-Up Battle Team of the A class Professional League. In the end, the S class Battle Teams lost Title Defense match, allowing the A class Battle Teams to enter the S class Professional League fight ring.

The two new fresh blood were strong. In the first match, they defeated Sunset Amber guild and Rolling Stones with a massive gap, giving them a promising prospect. The next few matches they were assigned to were easily won. However, when everyone was about to cheer for the greenhorns, the two Battle Teams had cold water poured over their head by Lone Desert Smoke and Imperial Sky. As such, the new Battle Teams had learned their lesson after finally tasting what real pros were like. In other news, the so-called "undefeatable" guild, The Myth was defeated.

...

After a series of pre-requisite quests were completed by Daffodil Daydream, Zhang Yang had assembled a small team to help Daffodil Daydream kill the Soul Breaker Inheritance quest boss. Right then, the team consists of three S class Inheritance holders, one A class Inheritance holder, and four B class Inheritance holders. The formation was extremely strong and could easily topple any boss at their level. If that was not impressive enough, the players had also reached Level 120 and equipped an array of equipment to further increase their overall DPS. Zhang Yang even had Level 150 Ethereal equipment! (Lowered to Level 130 due to the

special skill). Attack, Defense, Skills, Power, all of those requirements were fulfilled by Zhang Yang little battle team.

To save time and effort, everyone activated their Inheritance Transformation skill and only took less than 1 hour to kill the boss! The boss dropped two Ethereal tier equipment. One of them was a shield which was immediately given to Endless Starlight to increase his Defensive power for a change. On the other hand, Zhang Yang had taken the liberty of hauling the other Ethereal equipment for himself.

[Gurant's Thumb Ring] (Ethereal, Ring)

Vitality: +1667

Strength: +566

Dexterity: +556

Equip: Increases 3,330 Maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 8% damage dealt and healing rate.

Equip: Absorbs 485 damage when attacked.

Equip: Increases Frost Damage dealt with a weapon by 50%

Level Requirement: 150

The good news did not last long. Right after Daffodil Daydream defeated the Inheritance quest boss, the Japan-Korea region players had issued a war, a Territorial Conquest War!

Like the previous attempt, the enemy had used two [Territorial Conquest Order] to strike both Winst Castle and Morning Town at the same time. With the [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] available then, Zhang Yang, or rather China, was facing 80,000 strongest players of Japan-Korea Region.

The situation was rather disadvantageous for China since the Empire Expedition Army had left a long time ago. The castle was practically defenseless! Even the Mechanical Servants placed in the castle were no match to them as they were now far behind on levels.

Worst of all, Zhang Yang and his team had just used their

Transformation skill. He had no [Forbidden Scrolls] in hand to counter the enemy powerful attacking force! If Zhang Yang still decides to fight them, it would be a suicide mission! And they are the suicide squad!

Then again, it has been 6 months since Zhang Yang had conquered the territory. 6 month of constantly traveling was enough to make anyone as grumpy as a mad pig. It would not hurt much for Zhang Yang to allow Winst Castle to be taken over. After all, Zhang Yang had not planned to occupy the territory for long.

As such, Zhang Yang had mobilized all his forces to protect Morning Town, leaving Winst Castle in the hands of the NPCs inside to put up a little resistance.

The two wars started with a bang. Without a doubt, even without his Transformation skill, Zhang Yang as still able to lead Lone Desert Smoke to stampede over the invading players. However, Winst Castle was successfully taken over by the enemy.

As such, after taking back their land that had been occupied by the enemy for 6 months, Japan and Korea cheered happily. However, they might have won the war, but they still lost one of the fights. The shame for having the enemy occupying their land for 6 months was not something anyone could wash off with just one war.

Translator Note:

[1]: Red Envelope: It's Chinese culture to present a red envelope packed with money inside to someone else as a means to pass on the prosperity. It was a practice that existed in most Asian countries with Chinese population. Japan and Korea have similar practices but the envelope do not necessarily have to be red in color.

Chapter 637: The Soul Breaker

After a few days of boredom, Daffodil Daydream had managed to obtain the Soul Breaker Inheritance that she had been eagerly waiting for.

Despite being an A class Inheritance, the Inheritance was Lone Desert Smoke's one and only magic class specific type A class Inheritance. Hence, Daffodil Daydream became the center of attention for a short period of time, and everyone was interested to know of her abilities. The young woman happily obliged.

[Understanding of the Soul]: Permanently increases your damage by 45%.

[Soul Pierce]: Directly attacks the soul of the target. Deals 300% Magic Shadow Attack. Stuns the target for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Soul Breaker Transformation]: Transforms into the Breaker of Souls. Increases HP by 3000%, Attack by 400%, Defense by 400%. Gains a chance to nullify magic attack by 30%. Gains 1 Soul Breaker Energy Point every second. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Soul Rupture]: Ruptures the souls of all target within an area of 100 meters x 100 meters. Deals Shadow damage based on the value of Intelligence of the caster, multiplied by 8. Costs 3 Energy Point.

[Souls Substitute]: Creates a Soul Substitute that shares the same appearance of the caster. The Substitute would not deal any damage. When the Substitute receives damage, the damage will be converted into HP and heals the caster. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

[Soul Manipulation]: Takes control of the soul of a target. The inflicted target cannot control its character. Requires 10 Energy Points to activate. Lasts for 5 seconds. Every 2 additional Energy Points will increase the skill duration by 1 second. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

With Daffodil Daydream obtaining her Inheritance, all his core members of the party, except for Fantasy Sweetheart, had obtained their Inheritances, with none of them being lower than B class! If Zhang Yang is

to lead the team to another nation to start a war, they would be capable of inciting massive chaos! That would be even without the use of Transformation skill! If they did, their attack would be depicted as the Valkyries of the heavens!

...

A few days later, Dream Tech "loyally obeyed" their customers. They went ahead and created the Individual ranking system. Unlike the other PvP system, the Individual ranking systems do not include any rewards but the title itself. Still, having the title of being the best player will definitely be cool! The patch was extremely well-accepted by the mass and induced a momentarily heated fever.

The rules of a 1v1 Individual match was, that there are no rules. Besides the limitation of only two players in the arena, all players could use anything and everything to defeat their enemy. All skills, all potion, all scrolls, all tools of any cooldown will be refreshed immediately upon entering the arena! The winner of the match will be awarded a few points while the loser will have their points deducted. As such, for balancing, all competitor will only be fighting players who have roughly the same points. It is to prevent cases where strong players will only target weak ones.

Despite being an Individual competition, the match had three different categories. The Regional All Rounder Rank. The Regional Class Rank. The Regional Sub-Class Rank.

The All Rounder ranking system judged players by their strength from all regions of all classes.

The Class Ranking system had 6 different ranking boards based on the player's class type. There were a total of 6 boards, that is the Warrior, Knight, Hunter, Thief, Spellcaster, and Priest.

Lastly, the Sub-Class ranking board was a more specific ranking system. It would be divided into Guardian, Berserker, Sacred Knight, Templar, Beastmaster, Sniper, Pyromancer, Cryomancer, Priest, Assassin, and Bandit.

The rules of being listed on the board were simple. Every 10 alternate days, players who have participated in 10 matches will have their scores calculated and ranked. If players have joined less than 10 matches, the score they had collected would be voided. The ranking system refreshes every 10 days; hence, players would have to repeatedly battle to maintain their rank. If players do not continue their streak, they would have all their points reset to zero.

All players can check their own ranking on all the boards. However, each board public display would only display the top 100 players while players below rank 100 would be omitted. Naturally, players that would be enlisted in the ranking boards would be the regional pros! If any of the players that were enlisted on the board were not in a guild or perhaps not in a strong guild, they would automatically be a large bait for hungry sharks, big guilds like Imperial Sky or The Myth.

Right then, the system had brought a massive positive change to the gaming community. Instead of asking for their equipment, they would ask for your ranking. Players would not care about equipment since they could be bought or farmed easily. The real deal was the ranking system, since it all depended on your own capabilities. As such, guilds started using this method to set a minimum requirement for recruitment.

Besides the Regional Ranking boards, there was another ranking system. It was called the World Ranking board. In this golden board, only the top 20 regional players could register themselves to fight. The world ranking system shared the same rule and regulation as any other ranking system. Again, they would have to fight 10 matches in 10 days to have their name enlisted on the Global Ranking Board.

Since there were 8 Regions in the entire world, only 160 players could participate in the Global ranking board. There are limited by how many players from a single region could be enlisted in the Global ranking. Hence, there would be cases such as the top 40 ranks being dominated by only one region. If that is to happen, it would bring glory and pride to the nation! Hence, countless players would be willing to walk through the valley of shadow and death just to be enlisted in the Global ranking board.

It was the ultimate certification a man can accept!

Zhang Yang had no intention of joining the ranking board since he felt like it was fictitious. Even if he takes the number 1 position in the Global Ranking system, what good would it be for him? Right then, he was the guild master of the world's strongest guild, while also being the leader of the world's strongest Battle Team. He owns two Territories! Money, Fame, Equipment, even babes, all that he could ask for are already his. So why bother with the trouble?

After 10 days, all ranking boards would be refreshed to display the first few pioneers. However, most of the "real" players shared the same view with Zhang Yang and did not participate in the fight. Hence, when the first Ranking Board was put up, there were plenty of random players. All of them were still familiar names and had appeared once or twice in the forums. Still, the top ten players in the list were still the usual strong such as One Sword Stroke, Sword of Light, Death Arbiter, and even the little brat!

Wei Yan Er did well. She had fought hard and was enlisted in the China's Regional Sub-Class Berserker Ranking list as Rank 1. She was also ranked 1 in the Regional Warrior Ranking list, and China's All Rounder rank 1.

The only reason she could be in the first place was because players like Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had not participated in the ranking competition. Another reason was that there were no restrictions to skills. She had literally used her Transformation skill at the beginning of every fight!

Every battle started with all skills, item cooldown reset to zero. Everyone would have the same equal chance to fight with all their skills ready to be used. However, when the player ends the fight, the skills' original cooldown will be set back to before they had entered the arena. The complete skill cooldown reset was made purposely by the officials to allow players to be at their best to fight for the best!

10 days after the regional ranking board had been up, all top 20 players

from each region had joined the fight in the Global ranking board. As such, after 10 days, the first ranking list was published. The result was unexpected but not shocking. A large portion of the ranking board was dominated by the European players. Not only they had claimed the top 19 positions in all ranks, they had taken the top 4 positions. Unexpectedly, Sexy Wild Pussy had claimed the number 1 All Rounder Rank. As such, it could be said that the European has the upper hand in the world while the Indian (Region) had the best raiding team.

On the far end of the scale, The Japan-Korea region had performed the poorest. Amongst the top 100 ranks, they had only managed to secure the last 5 positions. Their poor performance was understandable, since Zhang Yang had taken their Territory for as long as 6 months. With the further Level deduction penalty during the Ancient Creature war, all the players in the Japan-Korea region were on average, 10 levels behind other players from all other regions.

When the new Global ranking list was published, the entire globe was shaken. Players of Europe and India were celebrating with their great achievements and had been posting slanderous, and provoking posts in the forum to incite disdain. As the war of words went on between regional players, the ranking system which was used to judge the level of a player had become a marker of regional strength.

Since the situation had morphed into a global problem, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and the other true professionals had to enter the ranking competition or they might be deemed as traitors of the nation. With great power comes great responsibility.

Hence, almost all strong players from all region who did not wish to enter the useless squabble were forced to join in. As such, the previous ranking list was refreshed, removing all the "normies" from the list and replacing them with the real deal.

The 10 matches required was just the lowest requirement. Stronger players could keep on going if they wanted to. Since consecutive wins will accumulate more points and as the points accumulate, the challengers will be harder and harder.

As such, the more points the opponent has, the more points you will obtain when you win the match. However, there is a limit to it. 3000 points would be the limit. After a player has obtained points surpassing the 3,000 threshold, they will not obtain any bonus points even if the opponent has more points than you. All in all, the beginning journey will be slow, while the speed will increase in the middle ranks, and will be slowed down immensely when you reach the top ranks.

Everyone will have 1,000 points at the start. Wei Yan Er, who was ranked at the first place in China had accumulated a total of 4,208 points. At that point, if she fights and wins a round against China's second-best player, she will only gain 4 or 5 points. On the other hand, if she loses the match, she will lose more than 20 points!

That was why Wei Yan Er had only insisted on playing 10 matches in 10 days.

Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue had spent a day to fight a total of 13 rounds. They had accumulated more than 2,500 points in one shot. It was rather fast and easy for them. Each time they entered the arena, they would nonchalantly use their Transformation skill and kill the opponent with relative ease. If the player is a C class Inheritance holder, defeating them would be a matter of seconds.

After 2 days, everyone had accumulated more than 3,000 points. From there on, the points accumulation speed had started to grow slower.

However, Zhang Yang had no intention of snagging the first position. Let the little brat have the glory. Zhang Yang only wanted to obtain the top 20 rankings to allow himself to enter the Global ranking board.

After the 30th days, all ranking boards were refreshed and Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and other S class Inheritance players had easily positioned themselves in the China Regional All Rounder top 20 positions. Zhang Yang was ranked 18th, Sun Xin Yu was ranked 11th, and Han Ying Xue was ranked 15th. All three of them had gained the qualifications to enter the Global Ranking All Rounder competition.

Chapter 638: War of Nations

There were many strong players who had participated in the Global Ranking competition. However, strong or weak, was an abstract value. Even during the first ladder climbing phase, the enemies that Zhang Yang faced were B class Inheritance players. When a B class Inheritance player meets an S class player, the result would be likely one-sided. An intense battle is unavoidable when two sides use their Transformation skills. However, Zhang Yang stood undefeated.

After several more fights, Zhang Yang collected enough points and met Sun Xin Yu in the random roll player assignment. It was inevitable since she too was climbing up the ladder.

Sun Xin Yu smirked when she saw that Zhang Yang was her opponent. Being a hard-headed woman, she would not let Zhang Yang defeat her easily. The two burst out with their Transformation skills and eloped to another world in an intense fight. Unlike normal PvP arenas where players could join the room to spectate the fight, ranking battles are held in private arenas. The most intense battle between the two strongest players in the world could not be seen. In the end, Zhang Yang won the battle, even though there were several times when he almost got his head lopped off.

Sun Xin Yu took the defeat proudly and bade Zhang Yang farewell. Zhang Yang had admitted to himself that perhaps the only player that could defeat him was Sun Xin Yu. That would place Sun Xin Yu as the second-best player in the world. Thus, Sun Xin Yu's true rival was only Zhang Yang and Zhang Yang alone. The other players around were nothing but scrap that sullied the ground before her. After several more rounds, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were matched with each other again. Zhang Yang nodded his head with satisfaction. Only by improving herself intensely would she be gaining ranks to fight him again.

There were only 160 players that could fight in the Global Ranking battle. With that number, it was hard to fight a matched rank. There were times that Zhang Yang would have to wait for more than 30 minutes just

to be matched with someone. As the rank goes higher, it would take a longer time to find a match. Hence, the speed of Zhang Yang collecting more points had become extremely slow.

However, unlike many other match-making games, 'God's Miracle' allows players to roam around the world to fight monsters while waiting for the system to find a match. When the system finds an opponent, the system will teleport both players to the battle arena. Once the match ends, the player will be sent back to where they were before. Hence, it was a good time to train. Naturally, no one in their right mind would apply for a match and fight a boss. When the system forcefully teleports the player away in the middle of a boss fight, it would be extremely inconvenient for the player's teammates. However, after several match-making sessions, players themselves would get the hang of it. They would know how long would the system take to find a match. By then, if a player knows that they have enough time, they would go ahead and fight a boss, depending on the situation.

5 days after Zhang Yang joined the Global ranking battle, he had reached the top 20 ranks. From there on, the players he was matched with were all A class Inheritance holders. Naturally, the fights intensity was tweaked up by a notch. However, it was not much trouble for Zhang Yang. If he felt a possibility of him losing, he would just activate the Phoenix's Transformation skill and own the player! The combination of both Zhang Yang and the Phoenix was the firepower of an S class and B class Inheritance in a single character! In a lvl fight, perhaps no one could fight him.

A few more days later, Zhang Yang's undefeated killing streak had players dubbed him as the "Inhuman", or even "Devil's Incarnate". On the other hand, Fatty Han had been relying on the Phoenix's strength to defeat his foes. However, the Phoenix itself was not overtly strong. Its strength could only be used to a certain extent when Fatty Han has no PvP skills. As a result, Fatty Han had only managed to hug the Phoenix's legs up till the top 60 ranks. Any higher and Fatty Han would face a little too much trouble. He might have the firepower of a cannon when he and the

Phoenix use their Transformation skills, but his skills were so bad that even though he was steering the cannons, the man could not aim properly to save his own life!

Although the system had written the words "fair" and "equal" in the patch notes when the officials launch the individual ranking system, it was, in fact, unfair and broken in many ways. The most prominent fact was the cooldown reset for all skills. Players could buy themselves a ton of powerful skills and used them in the fight since cooldown was not a concern for them. It was not fair in a way that poor player or players without proper support could not properly gauge their skills. It was not a good way of gauging a player's ability. Despite the bold fact, many players did not care about it. In their own opinion, it would be a thrilling fight when all skills could be used immediately!

10 days after the first rank match, Zhang Yang had successfully planted his feet in the first place in the Global All Rounder ranking board. Almost everyone, especially those who were not from China, felt it extremely odd when the Global All Rounder Champion is ranked 17th in China's All Rounder Rank, 6th in the China Warrior Rank, and 3rd in the China Guardian Rank.

Usually, when a player is a Global Champion, he should be the champion for all the other ranks, including his own Region. However, Zhang Yang had purposely kept himself lower in all of the Regional ranks. If others wanted to challenge him, they would have to start from the 18th rank! Everyone in China understood that Zhang Yang does not want to fight for fame in his own nation. However, understanding and looking at the results are two different things. How could a person be a Global Champion when he is only ranked 17th in his own nation?!

Once the ranking board was released to the public, nobody could say a word...

When the ranking boards were refreshed, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue – the real professional players had been enlisted, replacing all the previous winners. This time, it was China who dominated the Global Ranking list. The first and second places were taken by Zhang

Yang and Sun Xin Yu respectively. All in all, there were a total of 18 players from China who had been enlisted in the top 100 global players. The previous dominators, the Europeans had been pushed down to only 15 players. On the other hand, the boastful India Region was being pushed to the third. Their pride was completely extinguished. Hourglass Figure was pushed down to the third place, lacking only 14 points to the second place. Perhaps, even Han Ying Xue, who was ranked 4th could defeat her in the next Global Ranking list.

Naturally, the Japan-Korea region was still the weakest amongst all other regions. Previous, they had 5 players in the Global Ranking list. After the second refresh, they were shortened down by 4 players. Out of the 4, their best player was ranked at 46th!

With Zhang Yang emerging in the Global Ranks, the Japanese and Korean player had reminisced about the cruel past and were enraged. Just like that, they started a Nation War, with the intention of sacking Morning Town and entering China Region via the Ten Barren Sea portal and kill their way in.

The officials had revamped the Nation War system and added a reward and penalty. The attacker can issue a declaration of war and attack any major city. As such, the attacker's victory will be rewarded with all players Level +1 while the loser will receive a Level -1 penalty. The penalty for destroying one city will be the same as destroying all eight cities. However, the more cities destroyed, the more Honor points will be awarded to the attackers. Honor points can be used to exchange non-tradable equipment and items. It was not a good way to earn a fortune via Honor points.

A Nation War can be declared once every 30 real-time days. During the cooldown period, any city raiding would not be registered as a Nation War; no rewards will be given even if the attackers manage to kill all eight major cities in the entire Region.

The Nation War system was a little rigged. The defender would not receive any rewards for a successful defense. On the other hand, the attacker's side – the one that calls for the Nation War, will not receive any penalty for losing. The system was made that way to encourage players to

start a world war as frequent as possible. Staying passive in the shadow would do no good.

Ever since Japan-Korea Region players had successfully retaken their own Territory in the Chaos Realm, they were at great enmity between the China players. One thinks that the world belongs to them, while the other thinks that the universe belongs to everyone. It could be said that players were extremely emotional and they were not thinking straight when they started the war.

There were conflicts between China and Japan-Korea region before, but the intensity of those wars was not too great. The most intense war that ever occurred was when Japan-Korea region players had charged into the China's Ten Barren Sea. It was not considered to be an all-out war since the number of participating players were less than Level 100 and were not up to the required number. However, the most recent Nation War had more than 50 million Level 100+ players! It was more than enough to meet the requirements of a Nation-wide War.

On the 10th day of Spring of the month of March, Japan-Korea region player had initiated 'God's Miracle's' first ever Nation War. With 40 million players, they took down Morning Town easily, destroying the town's portal with ease which caused many players to be unable to teleport to the place.

After Morning Town was destroyed, Japan-Korea had positioned 10 million players to block the entrance to the Ten Barren Sea, in case reinforcements from Chaos Realm came to help. The remaining 30 million players then rushed into the China region in formation to destroy cities to wipe their slate clean of shame.

The news of the war spread like wildfire to all China's player's ears. No matter what they were doing, be it training, raiding a dungeon, or banging someone's brain out in bed, all players took the news to heart and vowed for revenge.

Zhang Yang, Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke, and other guild masters that were on amicable terms with each other sat down to have a serious

discussion. After a quick meeting, everyone decided to dispatch a large portion of their guild member to attack Morning Town and retake the Territory. All players with Flying Mounts were summoned back, not to provide reinforcements, but to attack Winst Castle and attack Japan-Korea region directly at their major city.

By then, even though Japan-Korea region had more than 40 million players attacking China, only 1% of them had flying mounts. Their progress was slow. On the hand, they had also sortied their higher-Level players to attack as well, leaving most of their major cities empty and exposed to invaders. Even though there were many players lingering around the place, they were all but lower level players who were crushed instantly.

Zhang Yang assembled his troops, taking all players with flying mounts with him and left the remaining forces on the ground to meet the oncoming players. By the looks of it, before the Japan-Korea could reach their major city, Zhang Yang would have reached their major city first.

10 of China's elites of the elites guilds had grouped up together in a hidden valley between mountains, 30 kilometers outside of Winst Castle. All of them had Flying Mounts, hence, the defenses of Winst Castle had little to no effect on them. On the other hand, they were all flying at the highest altitude possible for them where not a single player in Japan-Korea region could spot them. It was possible to spot them in the sky, but that requires a player to look into the sky with clear intent and squint their eyes hard. The other way of spotting them was if other flying players happened to bump into them. However, literally, all players with flying mounts were sortied to attack China.

Since the Nation War was started without warning, there was no strategy to properly counter their attack. There were only around 3,500 players, although they were the strongest of the strongest around China, and as many as 1,500 C class Inheritance holders, not everyone had their Transformation ready to be used.

"How do we fight when there are only so few of us?" asked many guild masters.

Zhang Yang took the commander position and explained, "There's no need to kill players to win a city raid. As long as we can kill the high ruler of the city, it's our victory. During a city raid, the ruler's level is not fixed at a certain level. The Level of the ruler will be the average level of all players within the city, +30 Levels. From my calculations, I think the boss should be Level 145. It should be a Mythical tier with around 500 million HP. We'll gather 20 players with the strongest class Inheritances and attack the main target. On average, each of our DPS should be 100,000, 20 of us should be 2 million DPS."

Everyone listened with their full concentration while Zhang Yang continued. "It's really that simple. All we have to do is to attack the palace. 20 of us will take 5 minutes to fight the boss while the rest of us will guard the entrance. After the boss is dead, we will retreat. Any questions?"

Everyone could not believe what Zhang Yang had just explained. It was too simple!

The truth? They were more than capable to complete the task. Flying mounts granted them the ability to skip most of the defensive formation and directly attack the palace. However, there was one more threat. The Dragon Riders in the major cities. They would require luck to ambush the palace from the sky. After all, the Elite tier Dragon Riders do not behave like their level. In fact, their difficulty could be greater than the ruler in the palace! If everyone is preoccupied by the Dragon Riders, it would be a complete waste of time that might lead to failure.

"There's only over 3,000 of us. There's no way in but to ambush." Sword of Light agreed with Zhang Yang. "Time waits for no man. Let's get going."

All guild masters nodded and informed their own guilds about the strategy. With Zhang Yang taking the lead, all players soared to the sky and hastily went over Winst Castle, undetected and entered the portal that led to the Japan-Korea region.

"GO GO GO! DON'T STOP!" Zhang Yang cried. With great speed and silence, everyone made sure their mounts made no noise as they entered the first major city of the Japan-Korea region, Hansung Castle.

On the other side of the world, news was relayed to Zhang Yang about the enemy who were making their way towards the Level 80 maps. Their target was Emerald City. In truth, they wanted to target White Jade Castle because of their hatred for Lone Desert Smoke and Zhang Yang. White Jade Castle was the main city of Lone Desert Smoke. However, they had changed their target because they knew about Queen Serena, the god-like entity resides within the castle. It would be suicidal to launch an attack.

Unlike the incoming enemies, Zhang Yang assault party had flying mounts. They were much faster than the enemy. In just 4 hours, they had entered the airspace of Hansung Castle and dived straight into the castle. One by one, the assault party dove past the magic cannons attack range and entered the interior sector, and into the royal palace.

Right then, the defensive squadron of the Hansung Castle started to retaliate against Zhang Yang. As Zhang Yang feared, the defensive force were the powerful 3,000 Dragon Riders!

Zhang Yang no choice but to implement their last resort plan. With 1,000 players deducted from the assault party, the remaining 2,000 players swept past Dragon Riders and headed straight into the royal chamber.

In reality, a ruler would be hidden from sight. However, in the game, unless there are specific events that require the king to be at some places, the ruler of the will definitely be in the royal chamber, waiting to be killed! While the Dragon Riders were preoccupied, the ground forces were left to deal with Zhang Yang's assault team. However, no one could match the speed of the flying mounts. With little trouble, Zhang Yang's assault party managed to make their way into the royal chamber. 20 strongest players activated their Transformation skills and entered the chamber while the remaining forces stayed behind to prevent anyone, players or NPCs to intrude upon the battle.

"Assassin!"

"Protect the King!"

Behind the 24 giant pillars, a total of 48 fully armored Elite tier soldiers,

with ridiculously high levels, came out and attacked Zhang Yang's party.

"Take down the guards first!"

A small part of the 20-man party split off and drew the attention of the guards, allowing the remaining players to directly attack the king.

Even though they were China's strongest attacking squad, the number of players were just too little. 3,500 players were not enough to fight against an army of NPC soldiers of a major city. However, all players had placed their unrelenting faith in Zhang Yang's plan. Rush in, attack, and run! With no seconds to spare!

Mounts were disabled in an interior environment; hence all flying mounts were forcefully disembarked from their masters. Players like Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er still possessed flight capabilities for their Inheritance Transformations granted them wings.

Shush! Shush!

All unoccupied players rushed towards the boss and attacked with all their might. 20 players are not exactly a crowd, but they were still the best among the best. Besides Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue, the rest of the 10 players were all A class Inheritance holders, and 7 players were B class Inheritance holders. Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had the Phoenix pets, dealing particular high damage.

Chapter 639: Game of Thrones

[McLaren Artilos, the King of Hansung Kingdom] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 144

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 70, 092 – 90,092

Skills:

[Great Destructor]: Lays down a powerful strike to destroy the land. Deals 100% melee attack to all targets attacking the caster.

[Heavy Bash]: Bashes a target and deals 150% melee physical attack. Knocks a target back and reduces the aggro value held by the target.

[Constitution]: Restore 2% HP every 30 seconds. Cannot be affected by any effect.

[Wrath of a King]: If the battle was prolonged to 10 minutes. McLaren will be enraged and summons all his guards to destroy all enemies.

Note: The ruler of Hansung Kingdom. Despite his age, the man is powerful. He was a war general when he was younger and carried the skills of war to his old age.

"Zhan Yu! WTF dude! You said 400,000,000! The boss has 1,000,000,000 HP!" Sword of Light gasped.

Zhang Yang merely laughed. "In that case, let's just try to make it within 10 minutes!"

Zhang Yang had already activated both his and the Phoenix's Transformation skill. The combination of the two god-like entity was not something a regular player could comprehend!

Zhang Yang led the assault party towards the King. As they approached the royal highness, the older man merely raised his head and glared at Zhang Yang. When he noticed the White Jade Empire emblem on their

character's uniform, the King bellowed.

"White Jade Empire? Which backwater country did you come from! How dare you call yourself an empire!?"

Zhang Yang could not care less about the boss for time was not a luxury he possessed. He jumped towards the boss and threw out the first attack.

"Pesky rodent! You dare lay a hand on me!?" McLaren roared. Being as old as rock, the King moved as fast as an athlete on steroids! With quick movements of his hand, the King grabbed hold of the blade between his fingers. Although he had still taken the damage from the sword, he now prevented Zhang Yang from moving.

Zhang Yang grunted in annoyance. With the weight of the world, Zhang Yang tugged his sword out and managed to pull his sword out. However, it was not because of Zhang Yang's own strength, the King had purposely loosened his grip on the blade. With a free hand, the King hurled a large battle hammer towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang saw the attack coming instinctively and raised his shield up.

WHAM!

With a powerful clank, Zhang Yang was able to negate the damage. However, the attack did not stop there. Instead, Zhang Yang was sent flying like a cannonball. His entire character flew into a wall, making a large hole in it.

It was not a normal attack. It was {Heavy Bash}.

"Puny warrior! Hmph!" The King scorned and turned to his next target, Sun Xin Yu. Unfortunately for her, Sun Xin Yu did not possess any damage blocking skills. With another quick swing of the hammer, Sun Xin Yu was sent flying and landed next to Zhang Yang on the same wall. However, unlike Zhang Yang who stood back up more or less unscathed, Sun Xin Yu coughed out a pool of blood.

Zhang Yang helped Sun Xin Yu back to her feet and quickly made his way towards the boss.

From the previous attack, Zhang Yang understood that the skill only has a cooldown of 5 seconds. Its effect is to prevent a tank from maintaining a solid aggro on the boss, allowing him to deal equal, devastating damage to all players around! If Zhang Yang had not requested for everyone to activate their Transformation skills, one normal attack and one {Heavy Bash} would be enough to kill any player. At then, among the 20 players, the lowest HP among them was already at 4,000,000! In such circumstances, it was almost impossible for the boss to instant-kill a player that easily.

The battle continued on and Zhang Yang had been paying attention to the boss' skill cycle. By the time the boss lost more than 8,000,000 HP, Zhang Yang's assault party have begun to show casualties. However, the boss had only managed to kill someone when Han Ying Xue was not healing.

At that rate, the boss' DPS would be at most, 80,000. In 10 minutes he could only deal half of the party's overall HP before he falls. In theory, it sounds simple. However, the skill {Constitution} and the {Great Destructor} would be a hassle to deal with.

"Die! Outlander!" McLaren roared and lifted his hammer up high. A glimmer of dark aura gathered at the tip of the hammer. After half a second, McLaren struck the ground hard with the hammer and created a blast wave that spread all around. Marble tiles were peeled off the ground and the shockwave continued on, unhindered. All players who were within 100 meters around the boss had taken close to 70,000 to 90,000 damage.

Luckily, the palace was huge! Most of the players who were guarding the entrance were not affected by it. Only the 20 strongest players in China had taken the skill damage.

"Die in the ashes of despair, regret the day you were born!" McLaren laughed maniacally and stuck another {Great Destructor}.

The blast wave spread further outward and broke the pillar that was supporting the royal chambers. The grand chamber of the King was destroyed and turned into rubble. Several broken water pipes started

gushing, causing a minor flooding in the chamber.

As everyone took a great deal of damage constantly, Han Ying Xue's superior healing powers were greatly brought to light. After activating the Milkmaid Deity's Transformation skill, she was now the epitome of healing! Even though 20 players were taking some serious damage, Han Ying Xue had no problem squirting all her "milk," restoring everyone's HP back up to the green zone.

Everyone had more than 4,000,000 HP. It was a level where the boss could not cause serious harm. It was also a good buffer for Han Ying Xue to heal everyone overtime with just the percentage-based {Regeneration}.

In a situation where the boss is an AoE attack berserker type, players with low HP would only be committing suicide. Hence, not a single Battle Companion had been summoned, fearing that they will immediately die after being summoned. Only Zhang Yang and Fatty Han could summon their pets to do individual damage. With 22 attackers, the overall DPS was extremely powerful. Zhang Yang was far stronger than anyone else in the party. After gaining more than 200,000 DPS in his God of War Transformation, Zhang Yang attacks had generated a massive amount of aggro on the boss. Even after taking several hits of {Heavy Bash} which was supposed to have "deleted" all of Zhang Yang's aggro, the boss would still aim his attacks at Zhang Yang.

"We have to be quicker now! More NPCs and Japanese and Korean players are coming at us. We have already lost many players and if the situation gets any worse, we might lose this war!" Snow Seeker shouted in the public channel. Due to the limitations of the party size, guild master who leads a large party had to rely on the public channel to communicate with their members.

"No problem! 5 more minutes, and we'll be done with the boss!" Zhang Yang replied.

"Heh. What makes you think you could kill the boss in 5 minutes?"

Zhang Yang pretended to not hear her reply. Instead, he cast a {God of War Devastation} and dealt "-603,922!". That was his reply.

"I will crush you to smithereens!" Just as Zhang Yang was about to lose the aggro hold on the boss, the powerful 600,000 damage had forced the boss to turn back towards Zhang Yang in the nick of time. Zhang Yang continued his normal attacks on the boss and felt a sudden glowing heat in his right palm.

{Rising Dragon Strike}!

‘-2,028,970!’

"GRAAH!"

It was the only attack that was able to make the boss groan in pain. The skill was powerful and vast enough that even several surviving Elite tier soldiers in the chamber had taken the same amount of damage. However, because the Elite tier guards had Levels that were too high for Zhang Yang to even see, the damage they took was slightly affected.

"D*mn you all!" McLaren bellowed. He used {Heavy Bash} on Zhang Yang again. Even after he was sent flying away, the boss still chased after him instead of changing targets! The skill was supposed to prevent that very thing from happening. Under normal circumstances, the boss would automatically switch to a new target in the aggro list after using the skill. Zhang Yang had generated so much aggro that even after the skill is used, Zhang Yang still remained first on the boss' aggro list.

"Strong..." Snow Seeker muttered.

No one in the field then was a greenhorn in battle. Even though they could not observe the damage Zhang Yang dealt on the boss, they could gauge out the total damage dealt by him was far superior to anyone present in the battle.

Everyone knew about Zhang Yang owning an S class Inheritance. However, the fact that the Phoenix could transform was supposedly still a secret. Since Zhang Yang had been fighting in the ranking battles for quite some time, many would have already found out about the Phoenix's ability. Although the information about the Phoenix was not spread, there was still the loudmouth Fatty Han who would boast his skills and the Phoenix pet to the world.

Still, even if they knew about the Phoenix's power, what could they do surpass Zhang Yang?

One Sword Stroke, Greensleeves Prince, and many other guild masters felt immense grievance, for it was almost impossible for them to compete with Zhang Yang.

The battle continued on. Even though the boss had a powerful HP regeneration skill, the boss could not recover as much HP as it lost. In no time at all, the boss was left with 20% HP.

It was time for {Killing Cleave}. Every warrior present in the field activated their attack boosting skills and laid down the final waves of attack. Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had activated {Indiscriminate} and struck the boss using {Killing Cleave} at full Rage!

‘-1,668,840!’

Although the damage dealt was not as powerful as {Rising Dragon Strike}, it was still powerful enough, as all attacks during the activation of {Indiscriminate} will be a Critical hit. If a {Rising Dragon Strike} was proc'd then, the damage dealt would reach as high as 4,000,000!

"Lowly peasants! Die!" McLaren was losing his Kingly composure.

Zhang Yang laughed. "If a King wants his legions dead, his legions would have to comply. But you are not my king! Haha! If you call for my death, I'll have your head instead!"

With a quick flick of his fingers, Zhang Yang cast {Glare of the Death God}. Dark clouds formed on the boss' character and assembled into a large grinning skull!

‘-10,000,000!’

‘-10,000,000!’

‘-10,000,000!’

...

1% of the boss's 1,000,000,000 HP was 10,000,000! All hits that were required to proc the damage was quickly triggered, with all 22 attackers

present!

"NO! NO! THIS CANNOT BE!" The King screamed and shouted disgruntledly.

It only took 4 seconds to proc all hits of the {Glare of the Death God}. As such, the boss had less than 4% HP left!

Everyone's eyes glinted with intense focus. They knew that it was almost time to loot the rewards. A Mythical tier boss such as McLaren would surely drop a few Mythical tier equipment! That's not all, this boss was considered as an open-world boss! They would only respawn once every month! Hence, the number of Mythical tier equipment circling around the market was extremely scarce!

3%...2%...1%...

Everyone made preparation and slowed down on their attacks. Right then, everyone had their own parties even though they were all under the command of Zhang Yang. Each of them had already laid an attack on the boss, hence, everyone had the "right" to loot!

0%!

McLaren groaned in great pain before dropping to the ground, dead.

Chapter 640: The Curtains Fall Perfectly

The moment the boss fell, all China players received a system notification. The King of Hansung Kingdom has been killed and everyone has gained a Level for free. On the other hand, the players of Japan-Korea region too had received a notification, for their King has been slain, everyone would have one Level deducted!

Zhang Yang snickered. "WTF!?" was probably the phrase that every player in Japan-Korea region had blasted out in unison.

They had been planning this for a few days and had even sortied all the strongest players of guilds, big and small from all over Japan and Korea. Only then were they capable of sending more than 40,000,000 players to conquer all major cities in China!

How could they have known that the Chinese players would send only 3,000 players to take down a kingdom before they could! Right then, the only thing they could do to makes things even would be to take down a Kingdom.

Things have taken a turn for the worse, yet the army of Japan-Korea players was still unable to see the silhouette of Emerald Kingdom! It was the worst situation they had been in since the Ancient Creature invasion.

When the sudden negativity struck everyone, their morale started to waver. It was not clear to what extent would the players work together.

...

When McLaren fell, Zhang Yang, Greensleeve Prince, One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker, and many other pairs of hands had swooped in to grab whatever there is to grab. McLaren would have an array of luxurious drops such as skill books, Mythical or even Ethereal tier equipment! Even though the number of drops would definitely be plenty for a party, it was not enough to share amongst a party of 20 players! Within a microsecond, all of the loot was gone.

Zhang Yang checked his inventory and found out that he had only

picked up a skill book. The man giggled awkwardly as he was impressed by the speed of the other guild masters. Little did he know that the other guild masters were thinking the same thing. After all, the item he obtained was a skill book! Even the best equipment then would eventually be discarded soon after, but a skill will be carried until the end of the game!

Now that the boss was killed and the loot was distributed. Everyone turned to Zhang Yang.

"Well, time to skip town, then!" said Zhang Yang with a grin.

If they had continued to stay there, the angry NPC and players of Japan and Korea would swarm them by the 100 of millions!

Everyone laughed at his nonchalant joke and flew towards the exit of the palace. All of the player's Transformation skills were still active, hence, after they exited the royal chamber, they killed a good number of players along the way. With Zhang Yang spearheading the exodus route, 19 players followed him behind, leaving a stretch of dead bodies in their wake. Although everyone had flying mounts, it was not as mobile as flying with their own two wings.

After 10 minutes of running, Zhang Yang and his assault party managed to escape the place with NPCs turning around to return to their original posts. The remaining players could not do anything without the NPC's help and turned tail and run as well. A large portion of the high leveled players had been sortied to attack Emerald Kingdom, hence, the number of strong players remaining in their own region were too scarce to fight Zhang Yang assault party. They could at least put up a resistance against the incoming China players with the help of the Dragon Knights. However, when the NPCs returned to their original posts, the players themselves would not stand a chance.

Even though Zhang Yang and the main attack force had left the region, there were still more than a thousand players remaining in the region. They were stuck there since they had not means of reviving themselves. The graveyard was guarded closely and their bodies in the main cities were guarded by players. They had no choice but to wait until the heat dies

down when people start to lose their interest in guarding and the coast is clear.

Still, Zhang Yang needed to fix Morning Town up.

Because none of them had bound their [Teleportation Scrolls] to any town or city, they had traveled on their own. As they flew through the airspace, players had taken the chance to review the items they had looted. Previously, all they cared about was to get their hands on any item there is and escape as soon as possible.

Zhang Yang himself included, 5 Lone Desert Smoke members had participated in the boss fight. However, only Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had managed to haul an item each. Still, right then, gaining a Level was more important than anything else. To be able to gain a Level as a reward is worth all the hassle. However, the Level rewards was still pending. If they fail to guard Emerald Kingdom from being taken over, it would be for naught.

Sun Xin Yu had obtained a shield that was as black as charcoal. Its shape was triangular with pointy edges. Zhang Yang was overjoyed. It was made clear that the current hottest item on sale in the market were tank items! As long as a party's tank is strong, the party would not have much trouble in hunting strong bosses! A shield was, after all, a tank's most powerful and core equipment!

[Dragon Scale Refined Iron Shield] (Ethereal, Shield)

Defense: +7560

Vitality: +7260

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 14,520.

Equip: Absorbs 1,923 damage on attack.

Equip: With every successful {Block}, deals Holy damage to the target equivalent to 70% of the user's Defense value.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: A mighty shield that was made with the Black Dragon's Scale. Its integrity is nothing like you have ever seen! The most sought-after Shield for Guardian and Defender!

The shield had not yet been Identified, yet the stats were already stronger than the one that Zhang Yang was wearing! As expected of an Ethereal Level 140 Shield!

Without saying anything, Sun Xin Yu tossed the shield to Zhang Yang to get some "love-dovey" points. Zhang Yang did not even care to Identify the shield and quickly equipped it. Naturally, the little brat was there to witness that "unfairness". Hence, after being teased by the little girl, Zhang Yang took out the skill book that he had looted and showed it to her.

[Skill Book: Summon Phantasm]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Summon Phantasm}

Class Requirement: Priest, Knight, Spellcaster.

Level Requirement: 100

No one, not even Zhang Yang had heard of the skill before. To play it fair as the little girl demanded, Zhang Yang decided to give the skill book out via the Roll the Dice method.

In the end, the skill book was won over by a Spellcaster from the secondary raiding party called "Ghost Knows". Right after he obtained the skill book, the player immediately learned it and posted the skill with a grin on his face.

[Summon Phantasm]: Forms a binding covenant with the devils and summons a Phantasm to aid you in battle. The summoned Phantasm is immune to all attacks and will survive for only 30 seconds per instance. After returning to the underworld, the Phantasm will convert his power and restore your MP based on the total damage it had dealt. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

With roughly a full set of Level 120 Ethereal tier equipment, a Spellcaster

should have more than 70,000 MP. In 30 seconds, 70,000 damage is something that a novice could do. The skill was practically a full MP restoration skill! It was an OP skill!

If the Phantasm could not deal higher damage in return, it could at least help increase the caster's DPS for a short time! Since the cooldown was only 30 minutes, the skill could be used in all boss fight! If the fight is dragged on any longer, it would be an extremely powerful support skill! It could be used in the Battle Team Professional League fights as well!

When they came, they came with the sound of the shadow. But when they left, they left with the vigor of a riot! Over 2,000 players, including Zhang Yang had flown gallantly towards the Winst Castle and destroyed the castle's Teleportation Point to disrupt the travel of the Japan-Korea region players.

Since they had already reduced Morning Town into ashes, Zhang Yang did not reserve his anger and unleashed might and fury upon Winst Castle. After destroying the Castle, the assault party only returned to Morning Town, or what it once was. The battle was still going on at its peak. Even though the defending army, the China players had the advantage of numbers, they had been dragging the battle for quite some time due to the strategic location of Morning Town. Right then, the China players were attacking to reclaim their territory while the Japan-Korea region players were defending the place. In such situation, the defending party would have the territorial advantage. Hence, the drag.

Zhang Yang and his merry assault party had already timed out of their Transformation skill. Even though they were top tiered players from China, having 3,000 players against millions of players was not something that Zhang Yang would go for. If their Transformation skills were still active, they could easily take down millions of players with no problem. Right then, they could only form a pincer attack and target the little guys and slowly work their way up to the stronger ones. Although it was safe, it was not very effective.

On the enemy's side, they had received words of Zhang Yang attacking strategy. As a result, they had split themselves apart from the war and

gathered many players who possessed flying mounts. They had tried to mimic Zhang Yang strategy and directly assault Emerald Kingdom's ruler.

Since all eight kingdoms were unified under the rule of Queen Serena, all castle in all major cities were occupied by a Steward.

The task at hand was to take back Morning Town from the defenders before they can reach Emerald Kingdom. If they succeed, they could transport a large number of players instantly via the Teleportation Point and defend against the enemy in Emerald Kingdom.

Although Zhang Yang had already considered the party of 3,000 players that he was leading not all too overwhelming, they still managed to push forward the progress of taking back Morning Town. At most, in 20 minutes time, Zhang Yang would have fully retaken Morning Town.

By then, the assault party of Japan-Korea region player had just arrived at the castle of Emerald Kingdom and had started their assault on the Steward in the castle.

The assault party thought that they were one step ahead of China players, but in truth, China players were seven steps ahead of them. Before the Japan-Korea players had even reached the outskirts of the castle walls, a large number of players had already positioned themselves in a defensive formation around the castle entrance. Even though there were large portions of players who could not care less about the war, some of them had returned to the castle to provide reinforcements.

Right then, it's all about a contest of speed.

The Japanese and Korean players who were still defending Morning Town had gone mental. With every bit of HP left, they stood resilient to the attacks of Zhang Yang and his party. Zhang Yang knew that they were buying time for their comrades in Emerald Kingdom and will do anything to extend their stay there. Zhang Yang had no choice but to switch his attack pattern to a full on suicide squad style to forcefully take back the territory in order to reset the Teleportation point and provide reinforcements to Emerald Kingdom!

"Guild master, the Steward has 89% HP left!"

...

"Guild master, the Steward has 72% HP!"

...

As the players in Emerald Kingdom kept him updated, Zhang Yang and the assault party were getting agitated. They knew they have to pick up the speed if they wanted to defend Emerald Kingdom! At last, after several more minutes, all the players inside Morning Town were killed. The first thing Zhang Yang did was restore the fallen Teleportation Points without wasting any second. Right, the portal is set. Zhang Yang was the first to enter the magical transport and appear in Emerald Kingdom. With haste, all players around Morning Town started to teleport to Emerald Kingdom when the boss still had over 11% HP left.

After a brief fight, all Japan-Korea region players in Emerald Kingdom were killed, thus ending the Nation War with them successfully defending against the assault.

Chapter 641: Gagaro's Mist

The Japanese and Koreans were not thinking straight when they declared a Nation War. In the end, they had it coming. Instead of toppling another kingdom, they had their own kingdom toppled first. Worst yet, not only have they failed to kill the Steward, their entire fleet of players were completely wiped out as well. Everything that happened was witnessed by the entire world.

Though China may have won both Defensive and Offensive wars, the sudden attack of Japan and Korea was a good wake up call for all the players. To prevent future attacks, they would have to increase their alertness in every Territory. Truth be told, China was lucky. However, they might not be this lucky in the next attack.

After the war ended and everyone had a good night sleep, guilds from all over China proactively donated materials to Lone Desert Smoke to rebuild Morning Town. Zhang Yang gladly accepted the materials because he knew that the players were genuinely helpful in order to protect their own Territory. Although the war was over, the enemy could still strike at any moment. Zhang Yang immediately restored Morning Town to the best that he could at that moment.

At the same time, Lone Desert Smoke had initiated a patrol programme. The patrol squads would consist of several players from different guilds from all over China. The squads were extremely large and were split into several teams, set to be stationed all over Tibanya Wasteland's main pathway. It was possible to miss out several scouts high in the sky but at the very least, the patrol team could easily detect a large army of players coming towards their direction. Morning Town could prepare their defenses before any army arrives.

Once the defenses around Morning Town was fortified, the Teleportation Point was now the main defense point. If the Teleportation Point is destroyed, all [Teleportation Scrolls] bound to the place would be ineffective. Players looking to travel to Morning Town would be greatly hindered. In the recent war, the enemy had destroyed the Teleportation

Point, causing many players who were still training in the Chaos Realm to be unable to return to Morning Town. Their travel time would be lengthened greatly as they would have to travel back to the major city and use the long pathway in the Ten Barren Sea from Morning Town.

After the world's first Nation War, China players discovered many problems and loopholes that could be exploited by the enemy. Hence, each region had taken advantage of this knowledge and learned from their neighbor in order to strengthen their own regions.

...

Zhang Yang went back to town and Identified the newly acquired shield.

[Dragon Scale Refine Iron Shield] (Ethereal, Shield)

Defense: +7560

Vitality: +10372

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 20,740!

Equip: Absorbs 2,748 damage on attack.

Equip: With every successful {Block}, deals Holy damage to the target equivalent to 100% of the user's Defense value.

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: A mighty shield that was made with the Black Dragon's Scale. Its integrity is nothing like you have ever seen! The most sought-after Shield for Guardian and Defender!

After Identifying the shield, the shield stats had increased to the point where Zhang Yang was sure that it was among the top five shields in the game at the time. With the shield identified and equipped, Zhang Yang stats rose to 448,140HP with the Vitality Aura boost, 8,520 Defense, and 7,338 damage absorption. Any physical attack would have to be at least 20,000 to breach his Defenses. Magic attacks would have to be at least 17,000 to cause him damage! A true "Turtle" shell indeed! However, his sheer attack power should disqualify him from the turtle qualification,

since his basic attack had reached as high as 56,268 – 61,504!

Absolute defense or absolute offence are powerful traits. If either one of those traits exist in a player, he or she might be a little problem for the enemy. There will always be methods to countering those players. However, Zhang Yang was different. He had the best of both worlds! How could someone craft up a strategy to defeat him! Unless it was an unfair fight where he would have to face thousand of players at the same time...

Zhang Yang continued his best to be the best. There was no reason for him to stop his progress! Even though he was the best in terms of level, Equipment, Skills, and other aspects of the game, other players would surpass him if he were to slack.

It was a game after all. Losers have only one choice; to surpass the strong. The strong would have to constantly be on the edge, fearing that the weak would eventually surpass them at any moment.

A short period of time after the first Nation War, the developers had launched a patch to introduce a new map. The name of the map was called Gagaro's Mist. On the map, monsters will provide 50% additional experience points. Boss monsters were spawning like mushrooms after a rain shower on the map. However, as a preemptive warning, developers had already warned players that the monsters in the map will be aggressive. Even the normal tier monsters will be difficult to kill. Hence, players with lower tier equipment were advised to not try the map.

The important catch of the new map was that its location was kept hidden. The directional map can be found by killing Level 120 monsters or higher to obtain pieces of the map. Assemble enough pieces to form a complete map to lead the player to the new map.

Naturally, when the news was released, players were all hyped up to the search of the map. 50% experience points boost? That alone was enough to reduce 10 days of leveling duration to only 6 days! There were even high-level bosses!

A boss was extremely difficult to hunt in the explored maps. Even then, guild's would be occupying their spawn points. Those that are un-

occupied will be dead after 5 minutes of spawning. For example, the stone golem boss that Zhang Yang had made use of in the past in Morning Town was now "food" for random players. Since the spawn point was so close to Morning Town, players could easily find themselves a party and defeat it in just 2 to 3 minutes.

Besides the bosses found in dungeons, open-world bosses will be extremely tough to find. The main draws of an open-world boss were the luxurious drops! Hardcore Mode dungeon bosses would never drop an equipment imbued with the Level reduction special effect! A Level 90 player may only raid a Level 90 dungeon at best, but wearing Level 110 equipment acquired from an open-world boss would make a whole difference.

Normal players were not the only ones that were agitated by the map release, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, and many others were rushing Zhang Yang to start searching for the map!

"Little Yang! I'm only wearing two pieces of Ethereal tier equipment. It's so annoying to not have a set! I don't even have the nerve to set foot outside the city! Do me a favor and search for the Gagalo's Mist map thingy! I want to get more Ethereal tier equips!" cried Fatty Han as he wiped his snort off Zhang Yang's shirt.

Zhang Yang winced and slapped Fatty Han in his face. "F*ck off! Could you at least wipe your goo off with your own shirt! As for your Ethereal equipment. I'll give you one hour. Stand by the door and snap a picture of anyone else wearing an Ethereal equipment. If you can find one player in Ethereal equipment, I'll hunt a full set of Hunter's Ethereal equipment in three days!" Zhang Yang gave his rump a good kick.

"Hehehehe." Fatty Han rolled off and Wei Yan Er replaced his spot. At first, Zhang Yang was about to continue crafting potions when Wei Yan Er stood in front of him with a smile on her face. "You know, somehow, you look exceptionally handsome today!"

"Huh? What are you talking about? I'm exceptionally handsome any day!" Zhang Yang rapped her skull. "Go and do some work if you're that

free! Those who don't work, don't eat!"

"Nyehehehe. Work? Look at my equipment! I've been wearing this for years now! It's time to replace them, yes? Let's hunt for the map pieces!" said Wei Yan Er as she hugged Zhang Yang's arm, trying to play it cute.

Zhang Yang stopped in his tracks and smiled at the little girl. "If your armor is old, 99% of the world would have gladly accepted your equipment! Why don't you trade your old ones out?"

Wei Yan Er let go of his arms and sulked. Before she could pretend to do anything else, Zhang Yang closed his potion making U.I and said, "Fine. Stop sulking about. Sigh...when will you learn to be independent? Let's go!"

The map pieces were not that simple to hunt. Although Tibanya Wasteland was huge, the number of monsters spawning was not enough to handle that many players who shared the same goal. Once a monster appears in the field, countless of attacks would land on it instantly. Zhang Yang felt a little nostalgic. The scene of which monsters would be instantly killed was exactly like the scene in the beginner's village.

Zhang Yang brought his regular team to the Land of the Flaming Rocks. It was a level 120+ map where the lowest leveled monsters were Level 120. In fact, most of the monsters here were mostly Level 130 and above. Hence, due to numerous threats around, no players under Level 120 would choose to grind there.

The difference between a Level 100 and Level 120 map were the monsters. Even though they shared the same levels, their attacks were different. In Level 100 maps, the highest-level boss would be a Mythical tier, so, the normal monsters attack would be around a Gray-Silver tier. In Level 120 maps, the highest boss tier would be an Ethereal tier, so, the normal monsters around would have attacks that are equivalent to Yellow-Gold tier.

That was one of the general knowledge among players around. That was why normal players would not want to risk their lives venturing into a Level 120+ map.

Zhang Yang spread the team out far and wide and killed as many monsters as they could. However, after a long day of killing, the party had only managed to find 2 pieces of the map. The system had demanded for a total of 10 map pieces to form a complete map. If that was not enough to piss off players, the map pieces had numberings on them! They had to collect the first piece to the 10th piece! In three days, Zhang Yang and his merry little band had collected 17 map pieces but many of them were repetitive. They were only lacking the second piece and the 7th piece to complete the map.

Zhang Yang then contacted Snow Seeker to trade off several map pieces. In the end, Zhang Yang managed to obtain the second piece from her and the 7th piece from Sky Shaman.

[Navigation Map: Gagaro's Mist] (Usable)

Use: Opens a dimensional portal and transports you and your fellow teammates to Gagaro's Mist. The portal can only open for 5 minutes and transports a total of 10 players.

Level: 100

"Tch! What a cheapo crap! We farmed this thingy for 3 days and but it can only be used once!" said Fatty Han disgruntled.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Everyone, get your equipment all fixed up before we go. We must not let anything to hinder us from staying any longer!

"Understood."

Everyone went back to town and had their equipment fixed to its full Durability and stocked up on potions. After a few minutes, everyone gathered together. Zhang Yang then used the map and casted a black swirly portal. Their party entered the portal one by one and after all 10 of them pass through it, the portal disperses into countless fragments.

'Ding! You have entered Gagaro's Mist! You have 24 hours to stay in this map before you will be teleported out.'

'Ding! You have received the effect: Clouded Mist! Unable to return

Gagaro's Mist within 30 days.

'Ding! All monsters besides the boss shall have a 1 hour respawn duration!'

Everyone received the system notification right after they emerged out of the portal.

"What!? Only 24 hours!? This is absurd!" cried Endless Starlight with dismay.

"What the hell!? 30 days once? That's like 10 days in real life!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Well, nothing to argue there. Let's not waste any more time and start killing."

"Roger!"

Everyone followed Zhang Yang and ventured through the mysterious place. The entire space they were in was a large internal crater. From where they stood, the only visible object that they could see from afar was a large clock structure. There were long stone pathways on their left and right that all leads directly towards the central clock tower. The little girl went to the edge of the stone pathway and quickly stopped when she saw what was there. The stone pathway that the party was standing on was actually a bridge. There were a total of 12 bridges that led to the center and boiling red hot lava was right underneath them. They were quite well elevated from the lava, however, the party could still feel the intense heat radiating from below. Each bridge was at least 10km long and 20 meters wide. A few meters ahead of the party were all Spectres roaming along. The entire bridge was completely filled with them!

It was not clear where they were at, but the environment was extremely moist and steamy. The steam formed a thick smog that had blocked the sun's ray from penetrating the smog. The only light source was coming from beneath the bridge, where the glowing red lava flows.

Zhang Yang could summon the Phoenix pet out, but it could not fly. At most, the fiery bird would glide a few meters before descending downward. There was no way for either of them to travel to the other

stone bridges.

Based on the direction of the clock tower. The party was in the 8 o'clock direction. The neighboring bridge were at least 5 km apart, hence, it was not reachable.

In the world map U.I, there were four blinking dots at different positions. All of them were at least 10% away from the clock tower and Zhang Yang's party was at 0%.

"What are---" Han Ying Xue noticed the oddity and immediately realized what they were. "There are three other parties in this place!"

"There's 12 pathways but only one end...That means--!"

"The treasure lies at the end of the road! And only one party can get it!"

Everyone braced themselves for a tough battle.

The other three parties were located at the 1 o'clock, 5 o'clock, and the 11 o'clock direction. They were extremely far away and could not even be seen with the naked eye. There was no telling who they were!

Zhang Yang nodded and quickly took charge. "Don't waste any more time!"

They sprinted towards the bridge. Not far from where they appeared stood two extremely big-sized Abomination monsters. Their stomachs were ruptured and putrid-smelling green liquid was oozing out from their torn abdomens.

[Mist Abomination] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 100,000

Defense: 2,280

Attack: 25,342 – 30,242

Skills:

[Decay Aura]: Deals 30,000 Natural damage to all non-Spectre beings every 3 seconds.

[Dismember]: Slices off a target's limbs and deals 150% melee physical attack. Target will be disarmed for 5 seconds.

Note: The lowest and weakest monster in Gagarō's Mist. If you cannot fight them, you best turn back and leave!

Wei Yan Er was a little too hot-headed. When she saw that the monster was only a normal tier monster, she had skimmed over the rest of the monster's stats and rushed over to attack one of them.

‘-22,334!’

The two of them shared the same aggro radius, hence, when one of them was attacked, the other Abomination turned to the little brat and cleaved her with the butcher knives in its hands, dealing high damage.

"OWWIIEE!" The little brat screamed. "Are these really normal tier monsters?! Cousin sis! Heal me!"

Zhang Yang sighed and felt that the little girl will never learn her lesson...

Zhang Yang rushed ahead and cast {Charge} on one of the monsters. He then added a {Provoke} and landed one normal attack to grab all the aggro of the other.

"Little brat! Can you at least read their properties before charging into battle!?" Zhang Yang knocked her head with the shield.

"Nishishishi!" The little girl said nothing but grinned with an innocent face.

Chapter 642: Contest on the Bridge

"Well d*mn! The monsters here are strong!" cried Lost Dream as he laid down a powerful barrage of damage on the Abomination monster.

Lost Dream was referring to its attack instead of its overall constitution. Despite having powerful skills and attack, the normal tier monster had only over 100,000 HP. It did not take long for the party to kill one and the other.

Zhang Yang nodded. "You have to be careful. The monsters are powerful inside here. I suspect that the attack power of the monsters inside will be several times more than the regular monsters you fight in the normal map. Let me tank the monsters, you guys should be able to finish their low HP in no time."

The two monsters had fallen and provided a total of 300,000 experience. It was 50% more than the monsters outside the Gagaro's Mist.

"There's nothing to fear. I'll stand at the frontier and you guys form a line behind me. Together we can push these normal tier monsters at a higher efficiency!" Zhang Yang steered the party into formation and allowed them to strike simultaneously, reaching more than 100,000 damage in one volley of attack. It would be a waste if they were all to target one monster at a time.

Zhang Yang wanted the party to increase their killing speed for there was a time limit in the place. Besides that, there were three other parties that were technically competing with them! Even if the last prize in the clock tower was unknown to him, there was no way he would give it up to other players!

Besides Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart, the rest of the player were lined up in a straight line. Even though the monster's attacks were indeed stronger than the normal monsters, the party members were all mounted. With the increased HP limit, the two healers and three healer type Battle Companions, there was no need for them to withdraw or fall back! The only direction was forward, without stopping!

Zhang Yang took the lead and fully displayed the prowess of his thick "skin". When a monster laid down their attack, all they could deal was less than 10,000 damage to his 700,000 HP! The party did not need to worry about being attacked at all!

The party moved 300 meters forward and had already accumulated enough experience points for them to smile like they were winning a jackpot. At that moment, at the 7 o'clock bridge, a blimp appeared, indicating that a new party had entered the field.

Hundred Shots was an Engineer and had crafted binoculars for himself. The device worked just like the real thing in reality which allows players to extend their sight. Hundred Shots started surverying the new party. "It's the Land of Savages guild. I can see Hourglass Figure and a few other familiar faces."

"Hmph." Zhang Yang scoffed. "They are a little too late! Let's pick up the pace, guys. We must be the first to reach the end!"

"Hehe! That's right! That's because we are?" asked Endless Starlight hoping for a roar. However...

"Huh? What?"

"Awesome?"

"The weirdest?"

"The fattest?"

There were many replies but neither one was the answer that Endless Starlight was looking for.

The 10 men team of Land of Savages did not idle for long before they too started their raid to push forward. It seems that they too had found out the nature of the place.

In general, since there were 12 bridges in this map, a total of 12 parties could enter at a time to compete with the others. With the help of the world map, it was possible to view the progress of the other parties. Since the instance was not created as a dungeon, there were no limits as to how

many parties could join. As such, there were no rules to restrict only 12 parties in the map. By which, when the 13th party joins the map, there will be a bridge carrying two parties. As such, the parties that share that share the same bridge would have to come to an agreement. They could share the loot, or they would have to fight for it. It would be likely that the parties would have to kill one another for the right to obtain the loot. Since the bridge was small, there is not enough space to form a proper lineup formation. If two parties were to fight together, it would be extremely crowded, which will definitely slow down the pushing speed. Although it would still be faster than a party, it would never achieve the full potential of two parties.

As a conclusion, if the two parties cooperated with each other, the pushing speed would be slightly faster than the others. However, due to their cooperation with each other, the party will have lesser experience points!

There's always a trade-off!

Since the monsters in the map were all normal tier, coupled with the map's special conditions, monsters that were killed will respawn after only one hour! If the entire party is killed in the middle of pushing through, they would have to restart from the beginning!

Although the route was only 10km, the number of monsters on the bridge were uncountable. Since mounts were unable to fly in this map, the progression speed was extremely slow! Using 24 hours to make their way towards the clock tower would not be an easy task!

"Little Yang, I think we should use our Transformation skill to push forward." Fatty Han suggested. Even though their progress speed was not as slow as a turtle, it was not fast enough to look promising.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "Not yet. I know it might be awesome to kill our way in with our Transformation skill, but can you guarantee that we can push all the way to the end within the Transformation duration? What happens if the last boss at the end requires all of us to use our Transformation skills to defeat?"

"That's right. I can see that the other party did not use their Transformation skill to push, either. They should share similar thoughts," Said Hundred Shots.

"But, what if there are just endless monsters on this bridge and no bosses?" said Wei Yan Er playfully.

"Well. In that case, reserve the Transformation skill until the last 22 hours. No matter where we are on the bridge, we will use our Transformation skills. It would still be worth using our Transformation skill to spam skill normal monsters." Zhang Yang rubbed his knuckles on the girl's head. In retaliation, the little girl jumped around and snarled at Zhang Yang like an enraged kitten.

After a short period of time, a new party had appeared on the bridge at the 3 o'clock direction. Since the distance was too far for Hundred Shots to scout, they had no idea who they were. Furthermore, the communication means in the map was limited to the party only. Even if Zhang Yang posts something in the guild channel, only his party could see it.

No sooner after, more and more parties had joined in the map in the 2 o'clock and the 12 o'clock bridge. After they had pushed to the 1km mark, a new team had joined in the map and appeared right at the opposite bridge. It was a team of North America region players. The Blood Alliance guild.

Zhang Yang was not familiar with the guild but he saw one particularly familiar name. It was Captain America.

The man had possessed the God of War Inheritance in Zhang Yang's previous life. Luckily, unlike Zhang Yang, Captain America did not know anything about that. If he does, he might summon some Norse mythology demigod to kill Zhang Yang for the thievery he had committed!

In less than one hour, all stone bridge was occupied by parties. From there on out, any more parties joining the map would occupy a bridge that already has a party. Be it cooperation or competition, the parties would have to come up with a solution fast or they will lose the race.

After Zhang Yang's party had reached the second-kilometer mark, the

monsters were upgraded from normal tier to elite tier.

Instead of large, oversized Abominations, the monsters were white skeletal soldiers that were roaming around. Due to the limited space and flooding of monsters, the skeletal soldiers would bump into each other which gives out a loud, hollow sound of "Tuk".

If it was just one "tuk" sound, the party would be fine. However, the "tuk tuk" sounds were extremely frequent and rattling. It was not something that the lighthearted could take in.

[Mist Blood Thirsty Skeleton] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 2,600,000

Defense: 2,280

Melee Attack: 50,274 – 54,274

Skills:

[Death Control]: Targets that have fallen to the monster will suffer from being controlled by the skeleton. Last for 5 minutes.

[Brutal Smash]: 30% chance to strike an additional attack after a successful attack.

Note: From here on out, you're facing actual threat. Although skeletal soldiers are the weakest soldier in the Spectre ranks, their attacks will take your breath away. Literally.

"ARUGH!"

A total of seven monsters rushed over to Zhang Yang and raised their swords to attack. Zhang Yang immediately ordered the team to fall back a little. Each of these skeletal soldiers possessed attack power that could rival a Mythical boss. Even with the boosted HP via the mount, players could still be killed when they are surrounded by the monsters!

Zhang Yang took charge and took all the damage dealt by the monsters. Endless Starlight followed closely behind and rode his Black Rhino mount.

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight tanked all seven monsters to prevent any of them from attacking the DPSers.

Despite being a tank class, Endless Starlight's HP dropped ever so rapidly that Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to immediately heal him. Zhang Yang was tanking 4 of the skeletal soldier and had a better situation than him. Worried for the poor fellow, Zhang Yang used {Provoke} and took one monster away from him and tanked a total of 5 skeletal soldiers. Zhang Yang leaped off the Phoenix and struck the ground with {Thunder Strike}. After slowing the monsters down a notch, Zhang Yang leaped on the Phoenix and kited them away. With his kiting ability, he was able to deal damage, move around, and last longer.

"Nyehehe! Pervert Starlight could not be hoped after all!" cried Wei Yan Er as she laughed.

"Wuuu! Cut me some slack. I'm a Defender. I'm stronger against magic attacks! This not my show!" said Endless Starlight as he tried to justify himself.

Everyone laughed at his retort and continued to attack. In truth, to be able to tank even two of the monsters was quite a feat in itself! The monster did have the attack power of a Mythical tier boss! Even Zhang Yang would not dare to directly take the monster's attack!

The proper strategy would be, Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight tanked two monsters each while the rest of the monster should be handled by the players. Skills like {Frost Trap}, {Ambush}, pets skills or other immobilizing skills would come in handy at times like this.

Similar to the previous Abomination monsters, the skeletal soldiers may have strong attack, but they had little HP. After several volleys of concentrated attack, the soldier would die in no time at all. As the number of monsters decreases, the time taken to kill each monster will be greatly shortened. In the end, the party had only took 1 minute to kill all seven skeletal soldiers.

Endless Starlight breath a long sigh of relief and said, "Oh man...these few monsters were strong! I don't think 24 hours is enough to kill our way

till the end!"

"Relax. If our party does not have enough firepower, no other party could do the same!" Zhang Yang laughed. He was not bragging, but merely stating the truth. There were three S class Inheritance player in their party! If they could not do it, no one could. Besides, they had half of the world's S class players!

Technically, if you take the strongest players in the game and form a 10-man party, they would share roughly the same firepower as Zhang Yang's party!

"That...may be true...But what if other teams have their own secondary parties joining in?" said Daffodil Daydream worriedly.

"You're right. Their combined forces would definitely have better results. However, there is still a possibility that the new party would be an enemy! If that happened, it would be a chaotic session!"

It was but the obvious fact. If a party of Japan-Korea players joined their bridge, it would be chaos! There will no chance for them to talk it out!

Chapter 643: Mist Skeleton King

"Woohoo! I'm getting excited by the minute! I wonder what will we get in the end!" said Fatty Han as he drooled all over the place. With the Phoenix pet in hand, Fatty Han's DPS had finally received an upgrade, allowing him to rise from the bottom to the middle tier.

"Anything is fine as long as there some Ethereal equipment for me! I only have two here!"]

"Hey! I only have one!"

Everyone started to be chatty when it comes about Ethereal tier equipment. Zhang Yang could not deny that fact that he too wanted more Ethereal equipment although he already possessed four of them!

"Heeheeheehee! Look at you guys squeaking about equipment!" Fatty Han points his fingers here and there as he making fun of the party member.

"You pig! You too, want the Ethereal equipment, don't you! If you deny it! Give us all the equipment you have and switch them with a White-Wood tier!"

"Yeah! I'd say, I've been eyeing at your Ethereal pants you have. Come on! Give it to me as a bro's gift!"

"...You...have some really weird taste...Why would you even eyeing my crotch!"

"WHAT!? THAT'S NOT—I mean--!"

"ENOUGH!" Zhang Yang roared. "We're not done yet! Fight now, talk later!"

The party continued pushing as far as they could and after 10 minutes or so, they had finally spotted the 13th party joining the map. The newly joined party appeared at the 3 o'clock bridge. Since all party marked with a blinking dot, the two dots on the bridge began to approach each other. The one in the front started to withdraw while the newly joined party beginning to push on.

However, little did Zhang Yang had expected, the two dots did not reduce in size! That only means that the two parties did not fight each other but chose to go with the cooperation route!

Their sudden unexpected reaction had the other 11 parties startled. Right then, they knew that experience points do not really matter anymore but reaching the final goal was. All 13 parties, including Zhang Yang, felt the stress building up on them. However, Han Ying Xue's sudden report had eased the tension by a huge mile.

"We are only 300 meters away from the first party!" Han Ying Xue had her world map U.I out since the beginning of the raid. She had been keeping track of each party's progress.

Zhang Yang's party was the fourth party that had entered the map. When they had just set foot on the map, the fastest party was already 1 kilometer ahead of them. Right then, Zhang Yang had already managed to catch up! They had shortened their distance by a whole 700 meters despite starting out late!

"Don't stop now! Fight on!"

...

"200 meters!"

...

"100 meters!"

...

"30 meters..."

"Wait. Something's not right there. We're not catching up! They've completely stopped in their tracks! Ack-!" Han Ying Xue eyes were glued to the world map U.I and did not see where she was going. She had walked into Zhang Yang and bumped her head against his metal armor.

"Life...the scent of life...Meat...FRESH MEAT!" A deep, distorted voice could be heard emerging from afar. The bridge tremored as a large skeletal soldier walked towards them. It wore a full set of heavy silver,

metallic armor and carried a long, rusted cleaver that was dripping with blood. Unlike the other skeleton monster, this one was overly large and had three long spikes protruding out of his spine.

Han Ying Xue then realized why the other party had stopped moving forward.

[Mist Skeleton King] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 140

HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Melee Attack: 80,289 – 90,289

Skills:

[Constitution of the Afterlife]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Restoration amount cannot be affected any skills.

[Boney Pierce]: Fires a bone spike and deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Sanrenzan]: Unleashes a barrage of sword attacks, dealing 100% melee physical damage with each strike.

[Decay Aura]: Deals 80,000 Shadow damage to all targets every 5 seconds within a certain area.

[Summoned Skeletal]: Summons 100 Skeletal Soldier to aid the King in battle. 5 seconds casting time.

Note: The Mist Skeleton King was a mighty warrior who was famous for his brute strength. No one had heard of him after he had set foot in a mysterious land. No one knew about him but the man who had sworn to protect the living and exterminate all Spectre had become the very entity that he had sworn to kill.

"Aw yiss! An Ethereal boss! JACK POT GUYS!" Fatty Han laughed happily. Although they had fought Ethereal bosses during a few Inheritance quest lines, the bosses require a month (real time) to respawn. None of them could wait that long! If it had not been that way, everyone

would already be having Ethereal tier equipment on hand!

Endless Starlight approached Zhang Yang and asked, "Boss, I think I should use my Transformation skill first."

Both of them were tanks, hence, it would be sensible for one of them to use their Transformation skill at a time.

Zhang Yang nodded. "We have no choice here. We'll be in your care then."

Endless Starlight smirked and activated his King Kong Inheritance Transformation skill. His character grew in size. Golden fur started to grow all over his body as his armor seeped underneath the coat of golden fur. His arms grew in length as well as the muscle mass around his chest and biceps.

"UU UUU OH OH!" Endless Starlight beat his chest and roared like a true King Kong!

Fatty Han laughed. "Starlight boy. You may be big, but I bet that your little junk is still the size of a tiny worm!"

"Fatty bro. No offense. You can take my junk and cut it into 10 pieces and I would still have a cock 3 times larger than yours!" When it comes to a man's honor, no man, not even Endless Starlight would allow himself to lose.

Endless Starlight, in his gorilla form, stomped over to the boss, leaving a cloud of dust and tremor in his wake.

"Death...Darkness...Freezing Void..." The Skeleton King muttered something inaudible as he hacked at Endless Light.

Endless Starlight raised his arms and block the incoming blade. Although in appearance, Endless Starlight was using his forearm to block the butcher knife, he was, in fact using his shield to block. It was just invisible to the public.

The two large characters crashed into each other and created tremors that sent pieces of the stone bridge to chip off. Zhang Yang leaped off the

Phoenix pet, unequipped the shield and used {Charge} to glide towards the boss at light speed.

{Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}!

Right then, Zhang Yang was not playing the tank role. If he continues to attack while mounted on the Phoenix, the damage the Phoenix causes will generate aggro value on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was not like others, even if he dismounts, the Phoenix would not disappear, for he had the skill {Beast Taming} like a Hunter. The reason Zhang Yang had unequipped his shield was to disable the skill {Shield Oath} from generating too much aggro.

Endless Starlight did not have the skill {Cripple Defense}. Hence, he waited until Zhang Yang attack before he did. Wei Yan Er went up with Zhang Yang and landed one or two {Cripple Defense} to maximize the effect before attacking.

Zhang Yang had not have much opportunity of being an attacker. Hence, now that he was playing an attacker role, he moved behind the boss awkwardly and attacked from behind.

Fatty Han laughed at Zhang Yang sluggish movements and teased, "Little Yang! I think you have found a new fetish now! Do you really enjoy poking the boss's butt?"

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. "Fatty, if you could just keep quiet for a day, the world would thank you for it!"

"Please. I'm me for my random utterance! If you ask me to keep quiet, it would be when I bite the dust," said Fatty Han as he shot an arrow that was imbued with fire. It was a newly acquired skill called {Incendiary Arrow}, which deals 150% ranged damage as Fire damage. Its power was strong for it cost him more than 20,000 gold coins.

Even Zhang Yang felt that 20,000 gold coins for the skill book was a complete bargain since the real value of the skill was more than 200,000 gold coins! Nonetheless, Fatty Han was being Fatty Han. He felt that spending that amount of money was extremely costly for him. Hence, whenever the skill was ready to use, he would not spare any idle second

and use the skill whenever he could! He will make sure the skill will always be on cooldown to make full use of the 20,000 gold coins he spent!

"Ayy! Little Yang. You best not poke the boss too hard. Or else the boss might lose control of his bowel movement and sh*t all over you!"

"Urgh---" Everyone, including Zhang Yang, sulked.

"Die...Pathetic beings...." The boss gritted its teeth snarled with a heavy metal grinding noise. He rushed to Endless Starlight and jumped into a sword drawing stance. Before Endless Starlight could react in time, the Skeleton King performed three quick consecutive slashes without moving in inch and dealt three strikes dealing over 60,000 damage each. If Endless Starlight had not used his Transformation skill, he would have lost 50% of his HP! Right then, Endless Starlight had more than 6,000,000 HP. 200,000 damage was nothing but a tiny itch that could be ignored.

"Wake up my slaves! Serve me, your lord!" The Skeleton King lowered his cleaver and stabbed his boney fingers into the ground. A black aura seeped out from his character and entered the ground. Countless of boney skeleton soldiers started to burst out of the stone bridge and filled the entire bridge. A progression bar appeared on top of the boss' character! Zhang Yang realized that it was the skill to summon soldiers out, which required 5 seconds!

Even though a great deal of skeletons were summoned, they were all but normal tier monsters. It was not a problem for Zhang Yang's party to eliminate!

Zhang Yang instinctively re-equipped his shield and cast {Thunder Strike} in the middle of the swarm. That single attack had helped him capture more than 20 monsters at a time. Zhang Yang mentally controlled the Phoenix to fire its flamethrower attack to "gather" more monsters to his side. Fatty Han controlled his Phoenix as well to aid Zhang Yang.

While Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had already witnessed the power of the Phoenix, the party member around were witnessing the prowess of the fiery Legendary Beast's power for the first time. With Zhang Yang taking the lead to attack the monster and Endless Starlight holding on the boss,

the party had no trouble in eliminating all the summoned soldiers.

In less than 3 minutes, the party had all killed more than 500 skeleton monsters. 1 million HP might be a little too hard for some player but it was nothing but scrap for Zhang Yang's party.

While they were busy fighting the mob, Han Ying Xue was paying attention to the other side of the bridge. "The other party lost 3 players during the boss fight!" Han Ying Xue reported. She was only able to divide her attention on the battlefield because Endless Starlight had used his Transformation skill, allowing him to practically survive the entire ordeal with little to no healing.

Zhang Yang concluded that the summoned monsters were rather strong to be able to wipe out the players. "Be careful. Do not let the summoned skeleton minions get close to you!"

Chapter 644: Resurrection Monolith

The strongest aspect of the monster in the Gagaro's Mist was their attack. The normal tier monsters there would have attack values several times stronger than an elite tier monster in the outside world. Who could tank 500 elite monsters in one go without dying?! It was possible, since the monster's HP were low to start with. They could not even survive after moving a few meters! Zhang Yang easily defeated them even without the help of his Transformation skill.

It was easy dealing with the summoned soldiers. It was as simple as keeping them in place and not allowing any single monster to roam around and flank the party. 100,000 HP could be easily killed with two volleys of AoE attacks.

Fatty Han laughed manically as he boasted. "Hehehe! Screw them! They had Transformation skills but refused to use them! Who do they think they are?!"

It was inevitable. Fatty Han could say such things and nobody could say anything else. For he had obtained the powerful Legendary Beast, Phoenix pet! Its normal attack was already considered to be a powerful AoE attack!

"Please. Pervy bro, you are nothing without your Phoenix! Besides, you could only acquire the pet with noobie tank's help! You're lucky to be a Hunter or Uncle Hundred Shots would have been the master of that fire birdie!" Wei Yan Er muttered disgruntledly. If Fatty Han's daily task is to spout some random pervert jokes, teasing Fatty Han was Wei Yan Er's daily task.

Fatty Han puffed out a confident snort and said, "What are you saying? Zhang Yang is my bro! Everything he owns is mine! Everything I own is his! His wives are my wives! My wife is his wife! Both of us are practically brothers---OWIEE!"

Before he could finish his sentence, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu had already stomped over to him and smacked his butt hard.

"Then again, the two Phoenix pets are truly spectacular." Hundred Shots

could not hide his admiration for the pets. He was a Hunter and a Beastmaster specialized class. His specialized class prioritized pets. Hence, it was not odd for him to crave for strong pets. If Zhang Yang were to have his Phoenix fight with Fatty Han's, Fatty Han's Phoenix would win with all the buffs provided by the player's class specialization.

Zhang Yang smiled. Based on the real timeline, it was almost high time for Hundred Shots to obtain his Red Dragon pet soon. When he does, he will shake the world. He will indefinitely be the world's only Dragon Pet owner! All Zhang Yang could hope for was that he had not knocked Hundred Shots off the path to his destiny.

"Hundred Shots, you need not worry! I'm sure that you will get yourself an even stronger pet! No! I guarantee it!"

"cough Haha!" Hundred Shots was not the kind of person who would hold a grudge against someone who was luckier than he. He held no sort of negativity towards Zhang Yang and Fatty Han for acquiring the Phoenix pet. He merely smiled back and said, "Now that you had said it that way, I might actually take it for real!"

"Believe! My word is gold!"

"Puny...beings...live...die..." The Skeleton King roared. While they were fighting for their lives, its opponents were merely chatting nonchalantly and paid no attention to the fight! For a King of the Skeleton Soldiers, it was an offense that had hurt his own dignity!

The only AoE attack skill that the boss had was the {Decay Aura}. It was a permanent DoT skill that did not require any activation. Hence, all it could do was to hack at Endless Starlight as much as it could.

"Hey hey hey! Da*mn! The boss is fighting like its on steroids! Come on bro! I'm not the one who is poking your buttohole! Fight Zhang Yang! Not me! I'm not at fault here!" cried Endless Starlight. The guy was just like Fatty Han; if he had to keep quiet for a day, he would probably drop dead!

"Death...eternal death..." The green flare in the boss eyes burst violently as he struck his blade into the ground once more. "Wake up, my servants. Heed my call and destroy my enemies!"

The blade created a huge crater and from the abyss of the void, out came 500 skeletal soldiers!

Zhang Yang called for Fatty Han and organized their Phoenix pets to gather and killed all the skeleton soldiers.

"Hm...That's weird. After the first wave of skeletal soldiers, the other party had not lost any more members..." Han Ying Xue pointed out. She had been paying attention to the actions of the other party and had calculated the time taken. Now that Zhang Yang's party was already facing the second wave of skeletal soldiers, the other party should roughly be at the same stage. Theoretically, the other party had lost 3 member when the boss had summoned the first wave of skeletal soldiers. Yet, with fewer members of the party, they had not lose any more players. It should not have been that way.

Wei Yan Er shouted. "Hey Hey! I know why! Hee hee! Someone in their party had used their Transformation skill!"

Everyone nodded and laughed awkwardly. It was too obvious.

Zhang Yang had only stated that if they activate their Inheritance Transformation skills too soon, they would not be able to rely on the power up to push all the way to the end. Everyone had no idea of what that awaited them at the end of the bridge. However, through experience, everyone in the map knew how to push forward while saving their trump cards for the last.

The party lost 3 players during the first wave of summoned soldiers, they would have been completed wiped out if no one used their Transformation skills. On the other hand, if they were to be wiped out, they would have to start from the beginning again. Right then, the monsters behind would already respawn.

Still, even though fighting normal monster were fast and easy, in addition to the boosted experience points, there were bosses waiting for them in the end, who would want to spend their effort killing monsters?! Then again, though the map had not provided any descriptions, it was clearly a race. The first to reach the end will attain something! Be it a

treasure or a boss, no one would allow themselves to fail in the middle!

They knew that it was wrong to use their Inheritance Transformation skill, but it was the only current solution that they had.

"We better hurry. There're three more parties starting their boss fights." Han Ying Xue reported. The King of Skeletons had allowed everyone to catch up, even though they had started at different times. Additionally, the boss is able to heal itself. Having only 10 players fighting it, the firepower was not sufficient enough to bring it down quickly. As such, the boss battle was dragged long and every party on the bridge was held back at that point.

Han Ying Xue continued her report and stated that all parties in all bridges were stuck at the same position. That alone determined the strength of the boss.

With the Blood Alliance and the Land of Savages competing in the same race, the distance between the bridges was shortened as the party moved closer towards the center. By then, the distance should be at least 4 kilometers apart, yet players seemed to have gained a huge boost to their sight. Zhang Yang could somewhat make out the silhouette of the regular players on the other bridge. On the other hand, Zhang Yang could clearly see two players who have activated their Transformation skills. Like Endless Starlight, the players towered over everything else. It was so big that Zhang Yang could spot them at a glance.

Since they encountered the boss at approximately 20% of the journey, there should be 4 to 5 more bosses appearing before they reach the final point. To put it mildly, it was best to have two players activate their Transformations skill at every boss fight to survive until the end.

Zhang Yang's party had no need to activate anyone's Transformation skill, or their original attack power was already top tiered. B class Inheritance Transformation skill will only provide 300% attack boost and HP boost. They just intended to play it safe.

Among the 12 parties in the map, the two parties were making extremely quick progress. In the beginning, they had started out at the 9th place.

After joining hands and pushing forward, they had made it to the 4th rank in no time at all. The advantage of numbers were particularly handy during the boss fight.

"Faster!"

Everyone present was racing to be the first to end the boss fight to proceed. Zhang Yang's party had strong attack power, with the additional top class potions that Zhang Yang provided them, their total cumulative attack power could rival a party of 100 players!

TAK TAK CUK CUK!

Arrows, blades, spells, and other attack landed on the boney character of the boss. Although it did not bleed, the attack had still managed to create visible cracks in the bones of the boss. Enraged from the violent attacks it received, the boss roared wildly and shot out the spikes that grew on its back. It was no problem for him to do so since the spikes will regrow almost instantly.

It was a little problem to Zhang Yang party since the player with the lowest HP was Fantasy Sweetheart who had just slightly over 250,000 HP (mounted). It was impossible to kill the healer in a single strike. Hence, the problem was so little that it could not be considered to be a problem at all. It was merely an annoyance.

As time passed on quickly, the team managed to bring down the HP of the boss to 20%.

"Starlight boy, get ready. I'm going to go all out. Make sure you have enough aggro on you!" said Zhang Yang. Endless Starlight nodded. Zhang Yang immediately consumed a bottle of Tier 10 Power Potion and activated {Indiscriminate}. All the skills that he had reserved for this moment were unleashed.

'-519,870!' Killing Cleave, Critical

'-379,536!' God of War Crushing Devastation, Critical

'-257,890!' Destructive Smash, Critical

...

Endless Starlight had been wondering why did Zhang Yang unequip his shield. His intrigue was answered when Zhang Yang's deadly combo attack had not made the boss turn its head to him. Even though Endless Starlight had gained an enormous damage boost after transforming, the damage he dealt was through a one-handed weapon. Hence, it was not all that high. There was no way that his damage would compete with Zhang Yang!

Even without his Transformation skill activated, Zhang Yang's DPS power was higher than Endless Starlight's. Luckily, tank class character had skills to generation extra aggro value when they attack. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had removed his shield. That, or the boss would have targeted Zhang Yang the moment he attacked! Naturally, there was still a possibility that he will OT the tank. Hence, he had the skill {Shadow of the Void} ready to prevent that.

10 seconds of the {Indiscriminate} skill duration, Zhang Yang's non-stop critical damage had nearly caused his aggro value to exceed Endless Starlight. Endless Starlight was so terrified of that happening that he placed his utmost focus on to attacking the boss with all skills he had, to prevent anyone from taking the spotlight. At the same time, he had been calling Zhang Yang a godlike being for able to take away the aggro-control despite not being in his Transformation form! Then again, the big boss does own one of the only six S class Inheritance in the world!

On the other hand, Sun Xin Yu's attack was almost the same level as Zhang Yang. However, unlike Zhang Yang, she would not allow her aggro gain to reach a dangerous level to scare Endless Starlight. When her aggro value reaches a certain point, she would use {Vanish} to clear all her aggro and start from the bottom once again. That alone had earned a praise from Endless Starlight. Sin Xin Yu did not exactly appreciate Endless Starlight calling her elder sister.

After the team's combined attack, paired with Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er {Killing Cleave} and {Indiscriminate}, the party had managed to take down 2% HP in just 10 seconds. If they could just maintain the entire

battle at such a pace, they would have cleared the boss fight in just 10 minutes and not 50 minutes!

Zhang Yang flicked his finger and sent out a cloud of smoke.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Technically, the cooldown of the skill had allowed the skill to be used only once or twice in a boss fight. Zhang Yang had calculated the time taken to kill the boss had decided to use the skill at the very last minute. Even though this particular boss does not have a "Berserk" state, it does repeatedly use its skills.

Hence, if he were to use {Glare of the Death God}, he would choose to use it when the boss has 10% HP left. If the boss does use some super power up skill, it could be killed easily with the skill.

A large skull formed on the boss character. The bosses quickly gazed upward and stared at the skull. The scene was rather funny, as the skulls were grinning at each other.

"What is this!?" The skull dispersed and the boss suddenly cried out in anger as he sensed something amiss.

"Hehe! Time for you to turn into dust! Rest in pieces while we turn you into pieces!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

The skill triggered and the party attack rapidly to proc the damage. As such, each proc had taken away more than 5,000,000 HP at an instance. Such an amazing skill! Truly a hack!

15%...12%...7%...5%...!

After all 10 procs were triggered, the boss' HP dropped to only 5%. The party would only require 2 minutes or less to win the battle!

"All who live...must die!" As the boss started to lose more and more HP, its skill usage frequency increased dramatically. However, as predicted, the party had taken less than 2 minutes to end the boss. The massive boney character of the boss fell into countless pieces and dropped a few shiny equipment.

"Little brat, loot all the drops. We must keep going. Endless Starlight still has his Inheritance Transformation going, we will go ahead first."

"Alrighty!"

Endless Starlight mounted on his Black Rhino and rushed forward. Although the Rhino was as large as an elephant, how could it ever carry something as large as a 12 storey tall King Kong! It was like a grown-up adult riding on a tiny little pussycat!

"BUAHAHAHAHAHA!" Fatty Han laughed. It was extremely hilarious to see how Endless Starlight flattening the poor critter. Even the Ice Queen had smiled a little.

With the boosted HP and attack, Endless Starlight rushed forward and kited close to 10 elite monsters in one shot. After the first boss fight, the monsters deeper were stronger and fiercer. One volley of attack was enough to take away more than 100,000 HP. With a stomp of his feet, Endless Starlight activated an AoE skill that was similar to {Thunder Strike}. The stomping attack slowed down all enemies around him, enabling Endless Starlight to create breathing space for him to attack safely.

Even though the little girl had finished picking all the loots, everyone resisted the urge to review items since they knew every second in this place counted. With Endless Starlight leading the way, the party had not need to do anything else but to spam all their AoE skills while keeping the monsters from splitting up too far apart. As long as the skill does not require too long of a casting time, they could continue spamming it and all would be fine.

Wei Yan Er attacked while reviewing the items in her inventory U.I. Feeling a little discontented, the little girl complained, "The stinky skeleton boss had only dropped two Ethereal, and three Mythical. There's one Skill Point Crystal and one more...Hmm. Resurrection Monolith? Noobie tank! What is a Resurrection Monolith?"

Zhang Yang turned around and rolled his eyes at her. "Are you daft? The item is in your hands. Read the description as tell me!"

"Hmph! If you're going to call me stupid, say it to my face directly! I'll show you my wrath!" The poor little girl does not have a wide range of vocabulary and had only puffed her cheeks at Zhang Yang. She then posted the item description on the party chat.

[Resurrection Monolith] (Special Item)

Description: Allows your soul to remain by the side of your body after death, saving you the travel. After the first usage of the Resurrection Monolith, the Monolith will have a 30 minute cooldown. Any death during the cooldown period will result in your soul appearing in the nearest graveyard. Ineffective in dungeons.

Level Requirement: 100

Chapter 645: The Mist Blood Zombie

"Wow! This item is good!" cried the little girl. Everyone else agreed.

This item was extremely useful in the map. If the item was used on the healer, even if they were unfortunate enough to be party wiped, the healer could resurrect immediately on the spot and revive the rest of the party with ease. It was not just specifically for the healer, in fact, anyone could benefit from the Monolith. However, at that time and place, the party decided to just entrust the Monolith to Han Ying Xue.

"It's sure nice if the next few bosses drop a few more Monoliths as well."

Besides the [Resurrection Monolith], the other rare item dropped was the [Skill Point Crystal]. After a session of rolling, Lost Dream won the item and used it for himself. The poor fellow smiled like he had just touched a pair of boobs for the first time in his life.

Wei Yan Er had skipped over the Mythical items since neither one of them could be equipped at the moment. She moved on directly to the Ethereal items, which was a hat and a pair of boots.

[Crown of Seeping Death]

Defense: +64

Vitality: +4356

Intelligence: +1490

Spirit: +635

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,980.

Equip: Increases 5.6% damage.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage on attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

"Well. I can't say anything else. Praise the Ethereal equipment, for their

stats are so high even before even being Identified." Hundred Shots coughed. Even though the party had seen many Ethereal tier equipment, new equipment would always be a surprise!

There were three players in the party who could use the hat. Han Ying Xue lived up to her promise and let the other Ethereal tier equipment go. After two players rolled for the item, Daffodil Daydream won it fair and square.

"Little Yan Er! Come one! Show me them boots!" cried Fatty Han impatiently. He then removed his boots and showed it to everyone. "See this? This is a Level 120 Violet-Platinum boots! I need to change it, quick!"

"Awwww shucks! Put away those boots! It stinks! It's worse than Stinky Tofu!" said Wei Yan Er as she pressed her nose.

"Is it? Hm...Let me see...*sniff* ahhh, sweet scent of lavender!" Fatty Han then shoved his nose into the boot and took a deep breath. That action alone was enough to send a few girls in the party squealing.

"Hahaha! Come on. I'm joking! It doesn't smell like lavender! It doesn't smell at all! Come on guys!" cried Fatty Han as he tried to talk it off.

Wei Yan Er retreated to a corner, away from Fatty Han and posted the boots properties.

[Golden Scale Thick Boots] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +192

Vitality: +2178

Strength: +318

Dexterity: +745

Equip: Increases your Maximum HP by 4,350.

Equip: Increases 5.6% damage dealt.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage on attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

The boots were catered for Thief and Hunter class players. Fatty Han was the first to roll and obtained a high score of 98 points. The man snorted proudly and unequipped his boots, getting ready to equip the new one with extreme confidence. However, lady luck was a little unfair that day, Sun Xin Yu rolled and scored 99 points. The poor fellow rolled on the floor crying like a little baby, while the party laughed at him.

"A pity that the equipment has only 70% of the original power..."
Hundred Shots sighed.

"I agree. It's like buying takeout! You have to wait until you get home to unwrap it!" Fantasy Sweetheart puffed her cheeks.

"Haha. No use in complaining now. Let's hurry up." Zhang Yang reminded them.

Not long after, the skeletal soldier dwindled, while the enemies that replaced it were the undead zombies. All of them were still undergoing putrefaction and remnants of their rotten flesh dangled down, swaying left and right as they walked. Some had even had their eyeballs dangling out of their sockets. The scene was extremely vile and gory.

[Mist Blood Zombie] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 135

HP: 2,700,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 55,789 – 65,334

Skills:

[Infected Blood]: Throws a piece of rotten flesh towards a target and infects the target with the Zombie Virus. Deals 10,000 Shadow Damage to the target every 3 seconds. If the infected target dies during the duration of the skill, the player will turn into a zombie.

[Consume]: Devours a nearby corpse, restoring 5% HP per second for 10 seconds.

Note: A powerful being that reeks of hatred and vengeance towards all that bear life.

"Wuuu. That's one ugly bad guy!" said Wei Yan Er as she cringed in disgust. She then turned to Fatty Han and gave him a good look.

"Huh? What? Did you just only realize that Fatty bro is handsome?" said Fatty Han as he put up a macho man pose while flexing his flabby arms.

Wei Yan Er narrowed her eyebrows and said, "If you're the definition of handsome, the zombies there would be normal, then."

Fatty Han had always been the class clown his life. Sometimes, his irritable face had provoked many others to just make fun of him. However, the man did not take offense from any of the insults thrown at him. The guy would shrug, laugh, and walk it off like it was nothing. The little girl failed to pissed the guy off and resorted to simply sticking her tongue out at the man.

Right then, with Endless Starlight's Transformation still active, the party was able to make faster progress by kiting a large number of monster and killing them in one go. However, as they proceed further on, the attack of the monster underwent further upgrades. No sooner later, the attack had gone beyond that of a Mythical tier boss and had reached to the point of an Ethereal tier boss!

Constantly killing and running on was tiring, however, the experience reward gained from the kill was enough to motivate the party to go on. The thought of training there for long was running in everyone minds since grinding levels in this place was far more efficient!

The important reason behind the high-speed killing was due to the number of monsters and their positions. All the party needed to do is to move forward! Unlike monsters spawning in fields, the monsters on the bridge were all in a straight line. Even though the monsters in the place had only provided 50% extra experience points, the experience points gained was at least twice normal since the monsters were all crowded together!

"24 hours...is really not enough..." While Endless Starlight sighed,

everyone agreed with his resentment. After this trial, the next entry would be 30 days later!

The party continued on further with vigor and slowed down after Endless Starlight's Transformation skill ended. By then, the party had progressed as far as 30% of the entire journey. Including Zhang Yang's party, there were a total of seven other parties had already cleared their first boss fight. The fastest party to progress was definitely Zhang Yang's party. Coming close to the second place were the two parties sharing the same bridge. With their combined players, their pushing speed was roughly the same!

At this rate, the two parties would definitely catch up to them and be the first party to reach the end goal!

"Sigh...Dragon O dragon. Why are you are not coming out to ravage the monsters now?" said Zhang Yang as he felt a little annoyed for the {Rising Dragon Strike} had not procced a single strike!

"Eh?!" Han Ying Xue exclaimed suddenly.

"What's wrong?" asked Zhang Yang. He knew Han Ying Xue would not shout at anything random. Something bad must have happened.

"The party of Land of Savages is rocketing through their bridge!"

There was no need to use any special tools to see their progression speed. They had players with Transformation skills to push faster. A few other parties had noticed the sudden increase in speed of Land of Savages and were pressured to activated their own Transformation skills to maintain the gap between them.

By a rough estimate, all parties in the map were reaching the 40% mark, technically, they could use their third or fourth Transformations to continue their progress without stopping.

"Zhan Yu...Should we use one of our Transformation skills as well?" Hundred Shots asked with concern. The party had a total of 10 player Transformation skills and they had already used one. It should be alright to use another!

The main point of using Transformation skill when they are not battling a boss is the AoE skill. All Transformation skills would have a flashy, powerful AoE skill such as Zhang Yang's God of War {Crushing Strike}, or the little brat's Darkness Inheritance {Shadow Curtain}. Hence, the Transformation skill provides more of an AoE attack boost, stronger than their single target attacks. Hence, using the Transformation skill right there and then would be extremely beneficial!

Zhang Yang went silent for a brief moment before answering Hundred Shots. "You said that we have 9 more Transformations left, correct? Well, technically, we still have 11 left! The two Phoenixes each have their Transformation skills as well! I think, we have more than enough Transformations to spare for the last boss. Hmm, Lost Dream. Go for it!"

"Really?! Hell yeah!" Lost Dream nodded his head happily and transformed himself into a character made of ice. As he walked, a frosty mist started forming up, filling the air with frigid coldness and condensed the moisture in the air into countless ice droplets.

Now that Lost Dream had used his Transformation skill, the party progression speed had increased dramatically. Lost Dream used his special skill which was only available during Transformation and cast a long river of ice to deal heavy damage to all enemies as far as 50 meters away.

The skill was a monster magnet! Countless of monsters from afar rushed towards the party and were blocked efficiently by Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, and the two Phoenixes. Coupled with a few more strong Battle Companion in the field, the monsters would have to circle around the front line before they could find their way to attack Lost Dream.

Zhang Yang and the two Phoenixes attacks were not too strong, but neither were they weak. Although the two Phoenixes did not own any AoE skills, their normal attacks were wide and far enough to deal damage to all enemies that were within 10 meters of their flamethrower attack. With ease, the two Legendary Beast scorched the floor clean!

Still, with attack alone, the party would not have able to last that long without Han Ying Xue's turbo-charged healing powers. It was all thanks to

her Milkmaid Deity's power, or she would not have been able to handle such a massive workload.

The party was able to hold on as the first party with Lost Dream's super-far, super-strong AoE attack skill. Although their progress toward the end goal was not too obvious since the other party had already used the fourth or the fifth Transformation skill to catch with Zhang Yang's party. Little did they know that Zhang Yang's gang had only activated their second Transformation skill!

In the end, no one can be sure about who will be the winner! They would have to fight until the end to find out.

Chapter 646: The Zombie Lord

Every time an Inheritance is activated, the progress of each party would receive a boost. 5 hours later, all 13 parties arrived at the second boss. Although they arrived at different times, none of them were falling behind.

However, it remained unknown whether all parties could still maintain the speed of their progress. No one had any idea how many players from the other parties had already activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. It could only be assumed that weaker parties would already be urging their party members to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills.

The second boss was a gigantic Blood Mist Zombie. It was a male that was approximately 15 meters tall. His flesh all around his body was rotten and stinky! More surprisingly, that rotten man was wearing a nose hoop on his nose. He also wore many other golden rings on his utterly decomposed body. The golden rings were clanking into each other as he moved.

[Blood Mist Zombie Lord] (Ethereal, Zombie)

Level: 143

HP: 600,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 70,102 - 90,102

Skills:

[Poisonous Blood]: Infects the target with poisonous blood. The target will suffer additional 10% damage when being hit. The effect cannot stack.

[Decay Aura]: Causes 80,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the effective range once in every 5 seconds.

[Paralytic Pierce]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target, causes the target to become paralyzed for 10 seconds.

[Zombie Build]: Recovers 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. The recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: The Zombie Lord. According to legend, he was a famous pretty boy. However, he had never thought that it was possible for him to turn into such ugly being!

"Boss, all yours!" Endless Starlight backed off, knowing that without his Inheritance Transformation, he was out of his league.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I believe that everyone can see the description of the boss's Skills. There shouldn't be any difficulties in this boss battle. Just deal as much damage as you can and heal as much HP as you can! No time to lose! Chop chop! Let's move out!"

He patted his Phoenix pet as gave a command for it to charge towards the boss without any delay. Now that he was the main Tanker of this battle, he would need to get as much aggro as possible so that the attention of the boss would be firm and focused on him. Although it was almost impossible for his other party members to snatch the aggro of the boss away, even without the help of Phoenix pet, the boss's {Paralytic Pierce} would stun Zhang Yang for 10 seconds. If that Skill would be activated frequently by the boss, Zhang Yang's DPS efficiency would definitely be affected. That would come back to bite him when it comes to maintaining the boss's aggro. Therefore, he decided to play safe. He mounted onto his pet to try bringing more of the boss's aggro on him.

"Living being?" Zombie Lord let out a thunderous laugh as he lifted his leg up. Then he said, "So tell me, human! Am I the most handsome man in the entire world?"

Zhang Yang and the gang frowned so hard that their eyebrows were going to fall off from their faces.

Zhang Yang threw his {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss and said, "As a zombie, you are considered as one of the top models that everyone would remember for eternity! Yuck! Haha!"

"Bastard! I'm the number 1's most handsome human being!" The Zombie Lord let out a raging roar, as he was already swinging his gigantic hand

towards Zhang Yang and slammed it on him. While he was swinging his hand, rotten juice flew off his hands and body parts! The stench was so strong that Han Ying Xue and the ladies were frowning even harder than ever!

"Hey, zombie! You're so rotten that even your penis is rotten to the core! Can you still be considered as a man? You will be better off if you just choose a pretty zombie and marry her!" Fatty Han had not forgotten about teasing the boss with that foul mouth of his. Well, having a foul mouth was part of his trait after all.

"..." The Zombie Lord gave another slam. The powerful impact of his slam pushed Zhang Yang a few steps back. At the same time, he actually put his other hand into his pants to have a quick check on his 'brother' underneath!

Everyone frowned again.

"Wu ---" Suddenly, the Zombie Lord let out a screeching and miserable scream. Everyone could actually see the sad and yet angry face of the boss crystal clear. Apparently, his hand could not 'find' what he was looking for!

--- high Tier and high-leveled bosses tend to have more intelligent AIs which would react to the movements and words of the players. Because of that wretched fatty's foul mouth, the boss lost himself to his anger and went berserk.

"Just get over it and everything will be fine!" Zhang Yang gave a pat on Phoenix pet and charged back up to the boss. He began his assaults by putting his {Cripple Defense} onto the boss. Then, he whirled his [Sword of Purging Devourer] across the air as aggressively as he could in an attempt to reduce the HP bar of the boss.

"I am the most handsome man! I am the most handsome man! Number one handsome man!" The Zombie Lord continued to roar in anger as he was swinging his hands across the area so hard, that the air was swept up by the force of the swings, "You all know my secret now! You all must die! Die!"

"Pui! Everyone in the world knows that you have no d*ck! So why still call it a secret?" Fatty Han got hooked on teasing the boss, as he found it fun to do so.

"Bastards! I will kill you all! I will kill every one of you who knows about my secret!" Zombie Lord went completely berserk. He was screeching like a real devil as he continued to swing his hands towards Zhang Yang.

"What the f*ck, fatty! Your mouth is foul indeed! Even bosses get angry at you!" Zhang Yang said.

The amount of damage that the boss deals would not change, regardless of whether he is agitated or not. Even though that was the case, the scene of the boss going berserk, smashing up the ground and the walls was really a spectacular scene to gaze upon.

"Haha! Of course!" Fatty Han tapped on his chest as he showed pride in his 'skills'.

The Inheritance Transformation of Lost Dream was still not over yet. He became one of the main DPS in the entire party. There was a risk of him snatching the aggro of the boss from Zhang Yang, but Zhang Yang could still manage to maintain their positions. He did it by using all sorts of Skills that would generate a large amount of aggro and the additional 20% aggro that he would get by holding a shield.

Although Zombie Lord was the second boss, he was slightly easier than the first boss. The only key point was that his amount of HP was 100,000,000 points higher. That was all.

However, it was not as simple as dealing additional 100,000,000 damage to the boss. Because the boss could recover his HP with his {Zombie Build}, the boss could heal over 1,000,000 HP once in every 30 seconds. That would require the entire party to deal as much damage as 33,000! After all, there were only 10 players in one party. With two of them being Healers and two of them being Tankers, there were only 6 DPS players in the party. That being said, each of the DPS players would need to deal an additional 5,000 DPS in order to deal effective damage to the boss. It was quite a demanding amount of damage required.

The Zombie Lord had over 600,000,000 HP, and he could recover 1% of that amount of HP once every 30 seconds. That 1% amount of HP would be 6,000,000 HP. In other words, the boss could heal over 200,000 HP in every passing second. To deal effective damage on the boss, Zhang Yang's party should deal a minimum of 200,000 damage to the boss every passing second before they can begin reducing the boss's HP bar. That was not a small number. The number of parties that could pull that off without having to activate any of their Inheritance Transformation Skills would not exceed 100 at the current stage of the game.

Averagely speaking, only ten guilds in each region would be capable of pulling such a party together.

However, there were also some differences between the strengths of all top Tier parties. The DPS of Zhang Yang's party had reached up to 400,000 damage! They managed to deal an additional 100% damage to the boss, compared to the minimal amount of damage they were required to deal to the boss. Of course, one of the main reasons was that Lost Dream had activated his Inheritance Transformation Skill. Even if he did not activate it, the party would still be able to deal approximately 350,000 damage in each passing second. After all, the party was receiving support from two Celestial Tier Phoenix pets and a Felice! The damage output of these pets and Battle Companion could match the amount of damage that Hundred Shots and the others could deal to the boss!

Theoretically, Zhang Yang and his party could take out this boss in 50 minutes. The boss did not have any special Skills that could potentially reduce the number of players in the surroundings in an instant. He only had his {Decay Aura} that was a DoT style AoE. As long as Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could maintain the HP bars of everyone on the party, they would not have much of a problem in taking down the boss.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang also had his ultimate boss-killer Skill {Glare of the Death God}. If this Skill is not resisted by the boss, the boss would basically have 90% HP since the start of the battle.

When the HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 23%, the Inheritance Transformation of Lost Dream finally came to an end. The damage output

of the party was slightly reduced. However, it did not matter much anymore. They were just 3% away from entering the 'killing cleave mode'!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "Fatty, activate your Inheritance Transformation now. But don't use your inheritance Skills just yet, unless your EP is full!"

"Roger!" Fatty Han had absolute trust in Zhang Yang. Although he did not understand why Zhang Yang wanted him to do that, he just did it without any hesitation. Instantly, he transformed himself into a vampire with fangs and bat wings on his back. His Attack power was insanely boosted in an instant.

Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, Fatty Han managed to gain 1 EP every 10 seconds. He would be required to wait 1,000 seconds in order to accumulate 100 EP. That was equivalent to 16 minutes. Zhang Yang asked Fatty Han to activate his Inheritance Transformation early to start accumulating his EP while battling the boss. After they defeat the boss, they could rely on Fatty Han to unleash all his Inheritance Skills on the monsters along their way. He would not be required to wait for 30 seconds before activating his Inheritance Skill.

After a brief moment, the HP bar of the boss dropped below 20%! Everyone began to activate their own 'Killing Cleave' Skills. After a series of aggressive assaults on the boss, the HP bar of the boss had been reduced down to 12%! Zhang Yang did not hesitate anymore as he threw his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss --- Resist!

Well, they were getting used to the disappointment already.

After all, the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} could only speed things up when the party is encountering bosses that they could otherwise triumph over without help. It was not some major, emergency measure. If the boss resists it, let it be! The party would only have to battle for 5 to 6 minutes longer.

After some messy beating, the narcissistic Zombie Lord finally let out a miserable scream as his miserable life was ended once again. He dropped quite a number of loot upon his demise.

"Huh? There are three parties that are ahead of us!" Han Ying Xue shouted out in shock.

Everyone brought up their map to take a look. It was true! The parties that were progressing towards the middle from 3 o'clock, 5 o'clock and 12 o'clock had already made it past the boss! The party from 3 o'clock had 20 players on their side. It was understandable that they could progress a little faster than expected. However, it was really a shock to see that the two parties from 5 o'clock and 12 o'clock could beat Zhang Yang and his party!

They had either used a [Forbidden Scroll] or more of their members had activated their Inheritance Transformation!

The possibility of them using a [Forbidden Scroll] was not high. After all, the bosses in this area were not those World Tier super bosses. It would really be unwise to waste a [Forbidden Scroll] on any of these bosses!

So that would only leave one other possibility on the other end. They must have activated more of their Inheritance Transformation Skills in order to progress faster. However, if they have used up all most of their Inheritance Transformation Skills at such an earlier stage of the map, how would they be able to progress on when they were nearing the end of the progress? Surely the difficulty of progressing forward would increase as they progress further towards their destination!

Zhang Yang could not afford to waste time on thinking for the other parties that were competing with them to get to the 'finishing line' on the map. All he intended to do was to make sure that his party was progressing at the most efficient rate.

The rules remained the same. Wei Yan Er was the one who picked everything up while the remaining party members continued on cleaning up the monsters that were blocking their way forward. Fatty Han struck out with his immense AoE attacks with his full EP. So he became one of the best DPS sources of the party at the moment. The party managed to push forward swiftly all thanks to him.

"Little brat, what did that stinky Zombie Lord left us? Show it to us,

quickly!" Zhang Yang looked at Wei Yan Er as he cleared out the monsters in front of them.

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er revealed the two rolls of her white teeth at Zhang Yang as she began to dig into her inventory, "Just like what the first boss left for us. We have two Ethereal Tier equipment, 3 Mythical Tier equipment and one [Skill Book]! However, there's no sign of any [Skill Point Crystals] this time around!"

"I see. Take out the [Skill Book] and let's have a look at it!"

"Haih... why are you so picky... It's always so hard to fulfill your request!" Wei Yan Er shrugged as she pretended to be annoyed.

"Fine... stop acting like it's a fuss... just take out the Skill Book and show it to us now, will you? Or else you're going to become enemy number one of the public!"

"If you insist!" Wei Yan Er finally took out the blue-covered Skill Book out of her inventory and said, "Look, it's called 'Armor-Piercing Arrow'!"

Chapter 647: Necromancer

Huh? This Skill had the exact same name as the Skill that Seductive Wild Pussy was using during the World League Championship!

[Skill Book: Armor-Piercing Arrow]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Armor-Piercing Arrow}.

Required Class: Hunter

Required Level: 100

Fatty Han and Hundred Shots were in immediate agreement. After all, Fatty Han was not suited to using such Skills that would require precision upon activation. Therefore, he gave the [Skill Book] to Hundred Shots without the slightest hesitation.

[Armor-Piercing Arrow]: Crushes the target's Defense, causing all Defensive-type equipment and accessories to malfunction. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

This Skill did not seem to be useful in a boss battle. That was because the duration of the Skill was too brief. However, this Skill could be really effective in a PvP match, especially when going up against a Tanker with super high Defense.

Hundred Shots was beaming with joy as he was smiling like a little kid who just got some sweets. Everyone could not help but laugh upon seeing such a side of him. After all, he was a middle-aged man who always had that serious, stern expression. It was truly a rare thing to see him would actually reveal such a side.

"So how about the Ethereal Tier equipment then?" Han Ying Xue had nothing on her hands for the moment. So she reached out and gave a gentle pat on the little brat's cheek. She also took the liberty to pinch the little brat's cheek out of fun. Han Ying Xue laughed and said afterwards, "Yan Er! Your skin is getting better and better, to pinch of course!"

Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes backward at Han Ying Xue and muttered, "You deserve to be bullied by noob tank! You hoodlum!"

The little brat then reached into her inventory and took out the other two pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment. One of it was a gray armor plate while the other was a light blue cape.

"So which comes first?" The little brat moved her head around and fixed her eyes on Zhang Yang.

"Let's have a look at the armor plate then."

[Ghoul's Armor Plate] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +4356

Strength: +1490

Agility: +635

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,710.

Equip: Increases Damage by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I already have my [Knight's Glory Chest Plate]. So I've no need for this. Little brat and Endless Starlight should roll and see who gets it."

"Oh right!" Endless Starlight was excited over it. After all, that piece of equipment was an authentic Ethereal Tier piece. It would definitely boost one's attribute up by a lot! He put his palms together as he made a praying gesture. Then he revealed a sincere look on his face and said, "I believe in Brother Chun! Give me 100 points on every roll!"

He threw the dice out as the dice spun one round in midair. As the dice landed, the number '0' came out!

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er laughed to the point that she doubled over. Then

she said, "Wretched Starlight, are you one of those people from the circus? Haha! I shall show you how to roll out a 100 points, then! Abracadabra, may the high lord of the gods bless me! 100 points! 100 points! 100 points!"

Wei Yan Er threw her dice out. She managed to roll out a number that was 'slightly' above 0 points. The dice stopped at '1' point!

"You two are really... Hahaha! This is what I call a pot calling back the kettle! Hahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he also shook his head around. Then he turned to Endless Starlight and said, "You're so outdated! The time is so modern now! You should find your way out of the ancient ages! You're really something to be able to roll out a 0 point!"

Endless Starlight filled his eyes and cheeks with his tears as Wei Yan Er was laughing out loud by his side. She took up the [Ghoul's Armor Plate] and equipped it straight away. Although the equipment had not been identified yet, it already boosted the little brat's attributes significantly.

However, the appearance of this piece of equipment was a little too horrific for many people's eyes. The piece was covered with skulls all over it. It would definitely not be the first choice for ladies. However, the little brat was different from normal ladies. She believed that those skulls that were decorating the equipment could bring out her 'personality'. She appeared to be very content upon acquiring it.

Even so, she did not forget to show the other Ethereal Tier equipment to her party members.

[Underworld's Blue Cape] (Ethereal, Cape)

Vitality: +1,089

Strength: +373

Agility: +373

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,170.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 321 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduce Required Level by 20 levels.

That cape was one hell of a powerful equipment under the category of Physical-type equipment. Even Zhang Yang felt an itch in his heart as he wanted it for himself. Well, the [Destroyer's Madness] on him right now was just a Mythical Tier equipment after all. It was much more inferior than this cape that just came out right in front of him. However, among all party members that were of Physical-class, he already possessed the most number of Ethereal Tier equipment.

Although packing and gearing up a Tanker on a party was priority number one, the Defenses of Zhang Yang were more than enough for him to tank against any Ethereal Tier bosses without much of a problem. Therefore, he decided to stand back from the rolling session and let others have the chance at obtaining the equipment.

After an intense session of rolling, the luck of Endless Starlight suddenly turned as he rolled out 100 points that beat up the others. So this cape became his to claim. The little brat was not happy with the outcome at all and said, "Wretched Starlight! You only get 50 points on average! So you're not fit to get it!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "So you only get 49 points averagely in your two rolls! You're still worse than him! Haha!"

Wei Yan Er immediately rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang as she began to curse Zhang Yang instead of Endless Starlight.

The progress of the party did not get dragged out as they were distributing the equipment among themselves. That was because they were clearing out the monsters and pushing forward as they were distributing the equipment at the same time. However, the party suddenly realized that they had dropped behind to number 4! It was obvious that the party that just overtook them had activated multiple Inheritances. It was true that they were progressing at a much faster rate than Zhang Yang and his party, but can they keep up that pace till end of it?

However, it was a completely different thing to know that they lagged behind. Wei Yan Er has always been brash and impatient. She began to reveal her worried look on her face as she was very tempted to activate her Inheritance Transformation right away! She believed that she could just push her party straight to the finishing line.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't get all nervous now. We shall activate all of our remaining Inheritance Transformation Skills at 70%. By then, we should be able to surpass every other party! So, be patient now."

Wei Yan Er could not calm her anxiety just yet. So, she unleashed her frustration onto the monsters that got in her way. She whirled her battle axe and chopped the zombies into pieces like nobody's business. All she did was pure violence!

After a brief moment, the number of monsters in the area dwindled. What replaced them was a bunch of Necromancers!

[Mist Necromancer] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 140

HP: 2,800,000

Defense: 3,780

Magic Attack: 16,457 - 20,457

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Strikes the target with the power of Shadow, causing 200% Magic Attack in the form of Shadow Damage to the target. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Strong Will]: Chanting cannot be interrupted.

Note: These foul necromancers were once very gifted Spellcasters. Even though they are already dead for a long time, they must not be underestimated. Or else, you will have to pay the price with your life!

Fatty Han was in high spirits as he threw a {Bloody Feast} towards the monsters. However, things did not go well for him. With that Skill of his

throwing out without thinking about the consequences that might be wrought upon him, he lured over hundreds of dead Necromancers over to him. As the Necromancers attacked him all at the same instant, Fatty Han was almost killed instantly. His 6,000,000 HP was reduced down to a critical level. He was so terrified that he had to transform himself into small bats to suck some blood from the Necromancers closest to him.

"Little brat! It's time! Activate your Inheritance Transformation now!" Zhang Yang quickly gave the command to the little brat. The advantage that Spell-type monsters had was that they would not be affected by the terrain across the ground. If they were encountering 100 Melee-type monsters, they could just let them pile up, out of reach. Only the monsters on the front would be able to attack them. However, Spell-type monsters could just cast their spells even if there are monsters right in front of them. It would proven to be a fatal mistake to lure so many Spell-type monsters to attack oneself at the same instant. Even Fatty Han who had activated his Inheritance Transformation was almost killed in an instant!

"Roger!" Wei Yan Er immediately showed her acknowledgement and activated her Transformation Skill. Her body instantly turned into a grayish black shroud. Now that she could change into whatever form of shape she liked, she began to swing her huge axe at the monsters as she charged forward.

Upon acquiring her Darkness Inheritance, Wei Yan Er became immune to Shadow Damage. If she would activate her Inheritance Skill {Shadow Orb}, she could turn herself into a shroud that no one could touch. As long as there are no airtight surfaces, Wei Yan Er could just go through any wall like how air travels through the holes and cracks on the walls. It was fantastic at the least!

Unfortunately, flying was currently forbidden by the system. Agile as she was, she was unable to perform at her best.

Because she could only accumulate 1 EP every 30 seconds, Wen Yan Er could not activate her {Shadow Curtain} just yet. Therefore, she could only snatch the aggro of about 60 monsters over onto her. The remaining 30 Necromancers were still focusing their assaults on Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} as light blue translucent barrier expanded across an area of the ground. Everyone stood within the effective area of the Skill. Instantly, their HP bars were reducing much slower.

10 seconds later, Endless Starlight had also activated his {Vanguard's Aggression}. After two {Vanguard's Aggression} were over, Wei Yan Er had also managed to get most of the Necromancers' Aggro in the surroundings fixed on her. Then, the entire party began to launch their full assault on the monsters.

Wei Yan Er had over 30% Magic Resistance upon activating her Transformation Skill. Her Darkness Inheritance could even cancel out most of the Shadow Damage. However, her HP bar was reducing at a very fast rate, while she was the main target of most of the necromancers. While the 100 Elite Tier monsters was launching their assaults on Wei Yan Er, even Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and other 3 Healing-type Battle Companions could not maintain Wei Yan Er's HP bar from dropping down swiftly.

Fortunately, two players in their party had activated their Inheritance Transformations. The damage they could deal to the monsters were not to be trifled with. Furthermore, Zhang Yang and the two Phoenix Pet could deal quite a substantial amount of damage as well. The three of them did not even activate their Transformation Skills yet! By the end of it, the party annihilated the monster army in the surrounding without much trouble, though the situation got them worried sick.

However, the moment when they were done, the party sat down on the ground with cold sweat dripping across their faces. The situation had been intense. Zhang Yang even activated {Rearm} so that he could use his {Vanguard's Aggression} once more. He also activated {Sacrifice} on the little brat twice and activated his {Shield Wall} twice to forcefully get through the battle. With all the effort he had put out, only did the party manage to stabilize the f*cked up situation they were in.

Only Wei Yan Er who had little regard for niceties and Han Ying Xue were energetic at picking up the loots across the ground. The others were

so exhausted, sitting on the ground catching their breaths. The eyes of the two ladies were glittering as they could only see money and gold in their eyes at that moment. They had totally forgotten about the dangerous situation that they just went through.

"Haha! The parties coming from 1 o'clock, 5 o'clock and 11 o'clock are out of the picture now!" Fatty Han was taking pleasure in others' misfortune.

It was understandable though. Zhang Yang and his party were almost wiped out. If the other parties had also lured that many monsters to them at the same time, even players with their Transformation Skills activated would still have to be torn into shreds by the assaults of so many monsters!

However, Zhang Yang and his party also realized that two of the three parties that were wiped out still remained at the same spot on the map. Only one party was sent back to the beginning point. It could be said that the party had dropped out from the competition in reaching the finishing point on this map in getting the 'treasures'.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "These two parties must either have the Skill {Rise Anew}, or they also obtained [Resurrection Monolith] the same way we did by defeating the first boss."

However, even if the players could get back on their feet after they heal themselves up with Skills and items, but the cooldown of {Redemption} was 5 minutes long. Therefore, it would take some time to get the remaining 9 players on the same party to get back on their feet.

Zhang Yang and his party members continued to move forward after they were done healing themselves up. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er managed to pick up almost everything on the ground. Their faces were filled with content as they grinned from ear to ear.

This time, the party did not dare to lure so many monsters like they did in their previous encounter. With their current capabilities, they could only handle as many as 50 Elite Tier monsters at a time without much of a problem. After all, Zhang Yang's life-saving Skills also had cooldown

periods to consider.

Because Wei Yan Er's Class had an advantage towards the Spell-type monsters, the little brat managed to unleash hell upon the monsters. She was basically the nemesis of these Spell-type monsters the moment she has enough EP. The party managed to progress at an accelerated speed. After just a brief while, the party became number one!

The situation was not simple at all. It could not be solved by activating a few Inheritance Transformations. Of course, upon activating the Inheritance Transformation Skills, the players would become very powerful as their attack range would be expanded many times over. Meanwhile, players would have 20 times to 30 times the boost of their Maximum HP. With that much HP, they should not be taken out so easily by the monsters. However, the key point of surviving the battle against a horde of Elite Tier monsters would still be the ability to heal. Without the capability to kill the monsters instantly, the players would have to slowly reduce the monsters' HP bars. If their Healers on the party could not keep up with the rate of the party members losing their HP, the party would be wiped out sooner or later. Everything would just be a matter of time.

Therefore, every party that was headed towards the finishing point reduced the number of monsters they would lure towards them. After all, the capability of each party differed from the others. Wei Yan Er was 'compatible' with Shadow Attacks. Furthermore, she had a Class A Inheritance. Therefore, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party members could lure up to 50 monsters at a time. On the other hand, the other parties could only lure as many as 20 to 30 monsters at a time. That gap was the reason why Zhang Yang and his party members had managed to leap ahead of other parties.

Zhang Yang and his party members were leading way ahead of the other parties as they gained an absolute advantage over the others. Meanwhile, their progress speed could not be replicated by the other parties as well. Unless they were willing to use a mass destructive item [Forbidden Scroll], they could just stare at the map, witnessing Zhang Yang's party progressing swiftly across the map.

Meanwhile, using a [Forbidden Scroll] to clear up monsters in an area would not grant a single digit of experience point to the players. The monsters would not even drop anything.

Witnessing Land of Savages and Blood Alliance falling further behind, the party could also vaguely see the scornful faces on their opponents. The gang was laughing out loud as they were even more motivated to press forward.

Another hour had passed. The Transformation Skill of Fatty Han was over. Meanwhile, the gang were now meeting the third boss.

It was a bewitching woman with a long and slender body figure. She was wearing a red robe with a high neckline. Her skin was so fair that it could enrapture a lot of eyes just by a fleeting gaze. She had blonde hair and a pair of blue eyes. Her body figure definitely fell under the category of 'hot'! Her two peaks were pushing her robe high up. Her round butt was wrapped around tightly in a thin cloth. The cloth was so tight that it totally revealed the boss's two round and sexy buttcheeks.

[Blood Necromancer Garces: The Nauseous] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 146

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Magic Attack: 42,128 - 52,128

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Corrupts the target, causes 200% Magic Attack in the form of Shadow Damage to the target. Casting Time: 2 seconds.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

[Undead Regeneration]: Resurrects from death and evolves into Blood Necromancer Garces: The Disoriented.

Note: Garces was once a gifted Spellcaster. Unfortunately, she has fallen into the arms of Darkness.

Chapter 648: The Necromancer Garces

After seeing that the boss only had 100,000,000 HP on her, everyone was happy. However, when their eyes came across the Skill descriptions of the boss, that happiness was snuffed out.

"What the f*ck! It's not like the boss is launching a rocket into space! She has a stage one and two? Are you kidding me?" Fatty Han was infuriated because he knew that they would go through hell, battling this boss.

Such bosses that could turn into something more powerful would definitely be annoying as f*ck! It would definitely be narrowing the potential effect of {Glare of the Death God}. Of course, the rate of success for using {Glare of the Death God} is extremely low, to begin with. So there was nothing to be upset about.

"Well, at least there are not many things to look out for in her first stage. Let's move out!" Zhang Yang led his party into the battle as he charged up ahead while his other members followed him from the rear. Everyone was charging as quickly as possible as time was of the essence. After all, the boss only had an Attack Skill in her first stage form. There was nothing difficult about it at all. All they have to do to defeat the boss is to focus their assaults on the boss as hard as they could.

"Filthy men!" Garces detected that Zhang Yang and his gang were approaching. She immediately frowned as she revealed a disgusted expression on her face. She raised her staff and pointed it straight at Zhang Yang who was at the forefront of the party. A dark shroud gathered at the tip of the staff swiftly as it began to form up into a wretched looking skull.

The skull left the tip of the staff and went straight for Zhang Yang at an incredibly fast speed.

There was no way of dodging the boss's Skill, not at all. So, Zhang Yang took the first hit head-on without showing any signs of flinching. He threw his {Spear of Obliteration} back at the boss.

"Argh ---" the boss let out an intimidating roar, "Filthy men! I will kill you all! I will crush your bones into pieces!"

The moment he was 10 meters within range of the boss, Zhang Yang activated his {Charge} and clashed into the boss, followed by a swing with his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. He began to get a solid hold of the aggro of the boss.

Meanwhile, the other members were getting into position as they got ready to launch their assaults on the boss.

As the little brat was still in her Transformed state, Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless at all. He rode on his Phoenix pet and attempted to get as much aggro as possible. Every single Skill that he activated managed to deal high damage and created high aggro values. He even activated his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} without any hesitation.

He had to go all out the DPS of Wei Yan Er was a little too much for him to handle. After all, that little brat had a Class A Inheritance backing her power up. Even Zhang Yang might not be able to fully maintain the aggro value that she would get from the boss when she launches her full assaults on the boss.

Whenever Zhang Yang had used up all his Skills that could create a large amount of aggro, Wei Yan Er would catch up with him and even go beyond that! Naturally, the boss turned her attention over to the little brat and launched her assaults on her.

Fortunately, even though Wei Yan Er was not a Tanker, she could resist most of the Shadow Damage that was dealt by the boss. It was all thanks to the attributes that her Darkness Inheritance bestowed upon her. Furthermore, she also had help from Han Ying Xue. With some healing support from a super Healer, Wei Yan Er managed to tank against the boss! She actually did it!

"Hahaha! It seems that you're not that big a deal, noob tank! I can also tank against the boss even though I'm not a Tanker! Are you so ashamed of yourself that you're thinking of banging yourself to death with a bean curd?" Wei Yan Er was very cocky. Her tail perked up high into the air.

After activating her Class A Inheritance, she would actually be capable of going up solo against a boss of the same level and same Tier as her and her equipment.

However, Zhang Yang decided not to bother himself with her. He just smiled vaguely and swung harder at the boss. Since that he was no longer the Tanker at the moment, why not deal more damage to the boss while he was at it?

The boss had a ridiculously long HP bar. However, the party could deal 400,000 damage in every passing second. If nothing goes south, they could take down the boss in approximately 4 minutes. Once the amount of HP on the boss is reduced to a certain amount, the effect of {Spectre Build} would be weakened. The boss could only heal 1,000,000 HP every 30 seconds now. The recovery rate has been reduced down to 33,000 damage per second. The boss was so much weaker now!

After just 5 minutes, the boss let out a miserable scream and fell before the blades of Zhang Yang and his gang. She also dropped quite a number of loots upon her demise. However, a blood-red mist started rising around the boss, all of a sudden. The blood mist began to hiss out of the boss' body, and she started rising back to her feet again.

The darkness in her eye sockets flickered, followed by two greenish flames bursting to life, right in the middle of each eyes sockets. Although her eye sockets were now hollow, something that appeared to be smoky red sclera settled down around the flames.

[Blood Necromancer Garces: The Disorientated] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 146

HP: 200,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Magic Attack: 42,128 - 52,128

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Corrupts the target, causing 200% Magic Attack of

Shadow Damage to the target. Casting Time: 2 seconds.

[Spectre Build]: Recover 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

[Blood Shadow Arrow]: Fires out countless blood arrows in all directions that disorients the targets, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to each of the targets. Targets will enter a state of confusion for 3 seconds.

[Undead Regeneration]: Resurrects from death and evolves into Blood Necromancer Garces: The Annihilator.

The boss actually dropped an equipment! Wei Yan Er picked it up with her fast hands. However, she pouted after having a look at the equipment, then she said, "God damn it! It's just a Mythical Tier equipment!"

"Haha! Not bad at all! So the boss can drop some equipment every time she dies, I assume. This is the first time we have actually encountered such a boss! It will get even better if we can kill the boss a few more couple of times!"

"However, the boss becomes two times stronger after she resurrects herself! That's horse sheet!"

After the boss had resurrected herself, her HP bar was restored back to full. Furthermore, all negative effects on her before that were all gone. Her aggro list was reset. It was like a new boss battle for Zhang Yang and the gang.

Zhang Yang threw his Skills at the boss consecutively to regain the boss's aggro. However, what he did there was just temporary. The amount of damage that Wei Yan Er could deal to the boss while she was in her Transformation state was far too great. She would just end up diverting the aggro of the boss over onto her.

As expected, in just tens of seconds, the aggro of the boss flew over to her. However, the situation was only temporary. The little brat became so full of herself that she began to taunt Zhang Yang. Even Endless Starlight could not escape the little brat's taunting even though he did not say a word. Every word stabbed into his collateral heart, wounding the tank's

pride.

In this second form, the boss had gained another new Skill. Healers now had a tougher time. Furthermore, her HP had been doubled. {Spectre Build} now gave her, even more, HP recovery. The boss battle just became much harder than before!

"You weak living beings are not worthy of even existing in this world!" the eyes of Garces gave out a cold, murderous chill as she let out a thunderous roar. Countless blood red arrows flew out right from her body towards all directions into her surroundings.

{Blood Shadow Arrow}!

This was a troublesome Skill for every player in the boss battle. Not only it could strike out as an AoE attack that could deal an immense amount of damage, but it could also afflict the players within the effective range of the Skill with Confusion Effect. They would be turning around in confusion upon getting hit by the Skill.

"Chaos... blood... suffering..." Garces sang out in the soprano voice of a lady as she waved her staff and shot out a buckshot of {Corruption Arrow} at Wei Yan Er. Wei Yan Er managed to snap out of her Confusion Effect a little sooner than the others.

"Stinky boss! Don't be cocky now! Let me teach you a lesson that you will never forget!" Wei Yan Er was infuriated. She was an extremely emotional person. Game or no game, NPC or no NPC, she would not tolerate any loss on her end.

Everyone gradually recovered from the Confusion at their own paces. Then, everyone focused back on launching their assaults on the boss. Spellcasters had the disadvantage of being interrupted as they chant their spells. If they get interrupted 0.1 seconds before they can finish chanting their spells, they would be forced to chant all over again.

The amount of 200,000,000 HP was not an issue at all for Zhang Yang's party. Under the oppressive assaults of the party, the HP bar of the boss reduced at an extremely fast rate. In just about 10 minutes, the HP bar of the boss had dropped below 20%. It was once again the 'killing cleave'

stage of the boss battle.

The {Glare of the Death God} that Zhang Yang threw on the boss was resisted, once again. Because the boss would be resurrecting herself one more time, the amount of HP that the boss would have when she comes back again would be much higher, theoretically speaking. Meanwhile, the {Glare of the Death God} would reduce the HP bar based on percentages. Obviously, the higher the amount of HP the boss would have, the more damage the {Glare of the Death God} could cause on the boss.

"This world is bound to be doomed! You all are going to die!" Garces screeched out as she realized that her HP bar was getting lower and lower. The rate of her activating her {Blood Shadow Arrow} was getting higher and higher. The players spent half the time fighting off the Confusion effect, more than anything. They could not even launch their assaults properly as their HP bars reduced steeply at every passing second.

"Hit harder!"

Even though the party was supported by two powerful Healers, the HP level of every member of the party was making its way down to the critical level. The {Blood Shadow Arrow} was activated on the basis of once every 6 seconds. Without the support of the Inheritance Transformation Skill, any player would be in grave danger of being killed any time soon.

Daffodil Daydream had removed herself from the front line. Under the frequent bombardment of {Blood Shadow Arrow}, she could only launch a spell attack at the boss once every 6 seconds. Not only was her damage output poor, she also required the healing attention from the Healers which would reduce their healing efficiency. Instead, she decided to remove herself from the effective range of the {Blood Shadow Arrow} and stay idle for the moment. By doing that, she could at least reduce the pressure that is placed upon Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart.

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight took turns in activating their {Vanguard's Aggression}. By doing so, they managed to maintain the rate of HP reduction of each of the party members. Everyone grit their teeth as the heat of the battle was getting worse and worse by the second.

However, they managed to empty out the HP bar of the boss by the end of it.

Garces let out another miserable scream as she collapsed to the ground. This time, she dropped two pieces of equipment. Once again, the dead body of the boss began to get shrouded in blood mist. As expected, the boss got back to her feet again.

[Blood Necromancer Garces: The Annihilator] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 146

HP: 400,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Magic Attack: 42128-52128

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Corrupts the target, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Casting Time: 2 seconds.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any other effects.

[Blood Shadow Arrow]: Fires out countless blood arrows in all directions that can disorient the targets, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to each of the targets. Targets will enter a state of confusion for 3 seconds.

[Woeful Wound]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Spell Damage to the target. The target will suffer a reduction of 10% on the amount of damage they can deal. Lasts for 15 seconds. The effects will not stack.

"What the f*ck! Her HP has been upgraded again! It was not stages 1 and 2, what's this a cancer? Stage 1, 2, 3?! F*ck my life!" Endless Starlight let out a roar of disdain.

Well, taking on a boss with 400,000,000 HP instead of 300,000,000 HP would mean that the party would have to deal 33,000 damage more than what they previously attained. In other words, the amount of damage the party could deal on the boss every second had been reduced by a total

of 33,000 damage. That was approximately 10% of the party's firepower.

Zhang Yang went straight up to tank the boss as per usual while Wei Yan Er got to picking.

"Wow! The boss was so generous this time! Other than a useless Mythical equipment, there is an Ethereal Tier equipment!" Wei Yan Er was surprised as she shared its attributes.

[Blood Necromancer's Casual Boots] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +64

Vitality: +2,178

Intelligence: +745

Spirit: +318

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 1,490 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

This equipment was already better than three pieces of Cloth Armor even before it has been identified. Therefore, Han Ying Xue and the other two ladies rolled to decide on who would get it. By the end of it, Fantasy Sweetheart got lucky and won the bet. She put the equipment on the moment she got it. Switching an equipment while the player is in battle state would be much slower than switching equipment during a casual time. Although Fantasy Sweetheart momentarily lost some healing per second rate, it was a loss worth taking. With her attributes boosted further, her healing efficiency became much higher than ever.

"Damn you!" When the boss saw that Fantasy Sweetheart equipped the pair of boots, she suddenly got infuriated as if she was stabbed in her 'pressure point'.

Fatty Han immediately pointed at the boss's feet and said, "Haha! So the equipment that she dropped earlier on were her own equipment! Look at her bare feet now! Haha!"

Everyone glanced down and they saw that what Fatty Han said was true! The boss was now barefooted. In fact, the boss had also dropped a ring and a pair of gloves. However, no one had noticed that at all. If Fantasy Sweetheart did not wear the equipment that she just acquired, who would have noticed the small details of it?

Chapter 649: Mist Death Knight

Fatty Han suddenly revealed a dreadful expression on his face, and he said, "What a pity that the boss did not drop her clothes and her pants!"

The mind of a wretched one would of course be... wretched. If the boss had really dropped her clothes and pants, she would be battling Zhang Yang and his party with her jiggle tatas and her big badaboos exposed!

Everyone shook their heads at what Fatty Han had to say. Only Endless Starlight sighed along with Fatty Han. After all, he was a feather from the same flock as Fatty Han. During the battle with the boss, Endless Starlight was swinging his hammer so much harder than before, as if he was wishing that his hammer would knock off the clothes and pants of the boss!

Although the boss had gained another new Skill upon her most recent resurrection, the rate of activating her {Blood Shadow Arrow} was now much lower. The threat that she posed to the party had diminished. Zhang Yang and all his party members split out into formation as they continued to launch their assaults on the boss as aggressively as they could.

Zhang Yang managed to secure first place on the boss's aggro list. However, Wei Yan Er came up with her immense damage and snatched the aggro of the boss over to her. One of the reasons being Zhang Yang was afflicted by the {Woeful Wound} which caused his attacks to be weakened a lot. The little brat got another opportunity to taunt Zhang Yang.

However, the boss had also activated her {Woeful Wound} on Wei Yan Er. The little brat's attack was instantly reduced by 10%! 15 seconds later, the effect of {Woeful Wound} on Zhang Yang had faded. Therefore, he slowly made his way back up to the little brat as he began to gain more aggro.

When the HP bar of the boss dropped below 80%, Zhang Yang succeeded in getting the aggro of the boss fixed on him.

However, the moment the effect of {Woeful Wound} on the little brat

had faded, her attack power was restored again! It was Zhang Yang's turn to be afflicted by the negative effect of the {Woeful Wound} this time. Before Zhang Yang could even take a clear look at the boss's face, Wei Yan Er came back with her immense power and snatched the boss's aggro back.

It was actually good for the two of them to exchange aggro. By doing so, the Healers could heal them in turn, at leisure.

As the amount of HP the boss is now boosted up to a total of 400,000,000 HP, the amount of HP that she can recover every second had reached up to a total of 130,000 HP. In other words, the intensity of the party dealing damage to the boss had been greatly affected. The speed of reduction of the HP bar of the boss had been slowed down a lot.

"Aiya! The parties that we left behind have caught up!" Han Ying Xue let out a dismayed scream.

Everyone in Zhang Yang's party could not help but stare at each other. At that instant, they were at 60% of the overall progression. The distances between the Stone Bridges are now down to 2 kilometers. Although 2 kilometers is still quite a distance in the real world, players could already see each other clearly on each side of the Stone Bridge in the game.

The progression of the Land of Savages and Blood Alliance were considered to be average. They were beginning to take on the second boss in her first stage.

"Worry not, we're far ahead of them!" Zhang Yang laughed as he said. Although the other parties seemed to have caught up with Zhang Yang and his party by the looks of it, Zhang Yang's party still have 5 players who had not yet activated their Inheritance Transformations. They also had two oppressively powerful Phoenix pets which could also transform into even more powerful states.

At their current stage, they could clearly see their advantage over the other parties that had just arrived. Some of the parties were still engaged with the Necromancers and the other monsters. They had not even met the boss yet. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his party were almost done with

the third boss.

Compared to the boss' second stage, Garces only had one more additional Skill which only could deal damage to one target at a time. She was not that powerful. The HP bar of the boss was reducing at a good speed. However, Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless. Once the boss's HP drops down to 20%, the boss would activate her {Blood Shadow Arrow} more frequently. That would definitely slow his party down in killing the boss.

If the party could not deal damage half the time while battling the boss, the DPS of the entire party would drop down to 200,000 damage only. In the meantime, the boss would recover 130,000 HP every second. It would become even harder for the party to bring down the HP bar of the boss. Meanwhile, the damage that the {Blood Shadow Arrow} could deal to the party was immensely high. Zhang Yang and his gang would have to take out the boss as soon as possible if they do not want to be wiped out by the boss.

To solve the problem, everyone could only reserve their hard-hitting Skills for the 'Killing Cleave' stage of the boss battle. Of course, if the {Glare of the Death God} is not resisted again, they should be doing fine in killing the boss.

20 minutes later, Garces's HP bar had finally dropped down to 20%. The eyes of the boss turned bloody red all of a sudden as she started hissing and screeching all the way throughout the battle. Although her Attack was not increased, the rate of the boss activating her {Blood Shadow Arrow} became more frequent than before. When her HP bar was dropped down to 10%, she would activate her {Blood Shadow Arrow} even more frequently! That would be pure madness!

18%, 16%, 14%!

Because Zhang Yang and his gang kept getting afflicted by the effect of {Blood Shadow Arrow}, they could not channel their damage output at the boss properly. The reduction of the boss's HP bar began to slow down.

It was about time.

Zhang Yang raised up his hand and threw his {Glare of the Death God} to try out his luck once again.

Phew! A wretched skull began to form on top of the boss!

It was not resisted! Praise the lord!

Everyone cheered, as that had marked the boss's death!

"You stinky boss! Let's see how you crawl back up this time!" Wei Yan Er laughed like a mad lady as she began to feel the rush of slashing the boss up.

‘-4,000,000!’

‘-4,000,000!’

Under the affliction of the {Glare of the Death God}, the boss lost 4,000,000 HP each time the special effect kicked in. With her HP bar getting lower and lower every passing second, she also brought the rate of activating {Blood Shadow Arrow} up to a whole new level! Because of the Confusion Effect left everyone unable to attack, the party only managed to trigger the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} 7 times. They were forced to look at the remaining 3 chances go to waste.

It was very unfortunate.

However, the outcome of the battle had been fixed! Nothing would matter anymore at this stage!

4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

The boss screamed out miserably and collapsed onto the ground for the third time. This time, she did not get back up on her feet. Not anymore.

"Wahaha! I have to admit that you're a strong opponent! Unfortunately, you met me!" Wei Yan Er was spouting out some lines from a movie she saw. No one knew which.

"Alright... stop fooling around and get on with the loots. We need to move!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er quickly went up and picked every single loot on the

ground. Then, the gang continued forward.

Because the Inheritance Transformation of the little brat was coming to an end, Hundred Shots had to activate his {Fire Transformation} to maintain their momentum of progressing forward. By doing so, he turned himself into a man on fire.

However, his Inheritance was only Class B Inheritance after all. Furthermore, he did not have any additional Shadow Damage resistance on him at all. Hence, Hundred Shots could not handle the monsters like how little brat did. He could only handle as many as 15 Elite Tier monsters at the same time.

Well, it did not matter much either. Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight could also tank against a couple of monsters. The party could still maintain the rate of their progress at taking on approximately 25 Necromancers at the same time.

"Haih... the boss was so stingy... she only dropped one or two equipment every time she died." Wei Yan Er sighed in disappointment.

"Haha. Well, even if what you say is true, she did drop her equipment three times. So, if we look at the sum of equipment by the end of the boss battle, we still gained a lot!"

"Bingo!" Wei Yan Er bounced up and down as she ran up to the rest of the party members. "This time, the boss dropped a piece of Ethereal Tier equipment, a piece of Mythical Tier equipment which is pretty useless to us, and a piece of [Skill Point Crystal]!"

[Banshee's Howl](Ethereal, Accessory)

Equip: Increases Damage by 8%.

Use: Transforms into a Screeching Banshee. When struck, the target that hits you will be afflicted with Terror Effect and will run around. Terror Effect will last for 3 seconds. Transformation will last for 15 seconds.
Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Wow! This piece of accessory can really be useful in a PvP match!"

"It's suitable for those who are ugly and always targeted by the enemies!"

Everyone turned around and fixed their eyes on Han Ying Xue at the same time. Because her healing ability was so ridiculously powerful, she would become the primary focus of the enemy during any Team Battle in a League Championship competition. With this piece of accessory, her survival capability would increase without any doubt.

"... is my face... that ugly...?" Han Ying Xue cried in misery.

"Enough of this nonsense! We're giving this to you for free! You should be happy!"

After shoving the accessory piece over to Han Ying Xue, everyone turned their attention over to the [Skill Point Crystal]. Everyone argued that they should be the one who gets the item. So by the end of it, everyone rolled and Wei Yan Er won the bet. She shoved the crystal into her inventory with that cocky face of hers.

After pushing forward for another 20 minutes, they were very close to engaging the third boss. On the other side, although the first stage of Garces was very simple, the second stage and the third stage of the boss made the boss battle extremely difficult. It was all because of one additional Skill called {Blood Shadow Arrow}. Even Zhang Yang and his party had trouble dealing with the waves of attacks from that particular Skill. It would be perfectly understandable for the other parties to struggle against the boss.

It was clear in the map that 7 parties were being sent back to their beginning points. In other words, they would need to go through everything from the start all over again. Now that they had been in the mist for almost 8 hours, and most of them had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills, so it would not be possible for the parties to start all over and catch up with the parties who were still in lead. They were all as good as being eliminated from the 'contest'.

There were only 5 parties remaining in the lead. Meanwhile, only three parties could pose a threat to Zhang Yang's party. The parties would be the party of 20 coming from 3 o'clock, Land of Savages coming from 7 o'clock and an unknown party coming from 10 o'clock.

The number of Necromancers began to decrease as Zhang Yang and his party proceeded on. Instead, more and more Death Knights appeared in the surroundings. They were all riding on their battle horses of death. They were wearing metal plates and pitch black armor. They were holding long swords as well, ready to engage in any battle with anyone who comes for them.

[Mist Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 145

HP: 2,900,000

Defense: 3,780

Melee Attack: 52,980 - 62,890

Skills:

[Death Strike]: 10% rate of the Death Knight dealing double damage.

[Death Blow]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. 100% of the damage will be converted to HP and heals the caster.

Note: Death Knights are the most dreadful monsters on this land. You're as good as dead when they shine the reflection of their swords upon you!

Looking at those monsters, Zhang Yang and his party did not dare to lure too many of them over. Zhang Yang only lured 7 Death Knights over to him. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight only lured 4. On the other hand, Hundred Shots could only lure 7 to 8 Death Knights, even with his boosted amount of HP. Any more than that, he might not survive.

It was a thrilling experience to battle against the Death Knights. It could cost a life if players are not careful when Death Knights started directing the reflections of the swords upon them. However, despite the fact that these Death Knights were a nightmare to deal with, their drops were not

bad at all. Violet-Platinum Tier equipment dropped, one after another. Some of them were even Set pieces. They could be sold at hundreds of gold coins in the market, each. Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were very joyful as they continued slaughtering. After all, these three could only see money in their eyes.

Zhang Yang and his party pushed on forwards for tens of minutes before they received news that the party of 20 coming from the 3 o'clock direction had finally taken down the third boss in her third stage. They began to move forward in an attempt to catch up with Zhang Yang and his party. Not long after that, the Land of Savages party coming from 7 o'clock and the unknown party coming from 5 o'clock also managed to kill the boss and continued forward with their progress. Meanwhile. Captain America and his party was wiped out by the boss.

And then, there were four...

"They really are persistent!" Zhang Yang brought up the map and glanced at it. Then he said, "Brothers and sisters, pick up the pace!"

"Noob tank, should we activate another Transformation Skills to speed things up?" Wei Yan Er was a little worried.

"No need for that, yet. We shall wait until Hundred Shot's Transformation Skill is over before letting Daffodil Daydream activate hers. After that, we shall take out the 4th boss. When that boss goes down, we shall open the floodgates and activate all available Inheritance Transformation Skills. By then, the other 3 parties will only be able to stare at their maps as we vanish from their sights! It's pointless to move fast now, we should give the other parties some hope first!"

"Sigh... you're so evil, noob tank!"

Chapter 650: Death Knight, Ishildur

It took Zhang Yang and his party approximately 2 hours to clear out every single Death Knights in the surroundings before they finally stood before the 4th boss. The Transformation Skill of Hundred Shots had expired for some time by now. However, Daffodil Daydream had activated her {Soul Breaker Transformation} right after that. She made sure that their party would always have at least one player with a Transformation Skill active.

The 4th boss was a Death Knight riding on a 3-meter tall and 5-meter long battle horse. That battle horse was gigantic! It was covered in metallic armor all over. The boss was larger than any ordinary player in the game. He looked intimidatingly large as he rode on the back of his battle horse. This was clearly two bosses in one battle. There was also a blade that went as long as 7 meters slung across the back of the boss. There were many words that could be used to describe the boss and his battle horse, but 'domineering' was definitely among those lines.

The attack range of Melee combatants had varying reach. For instance, two-handed weapons were basically one and a half meters longer than one-handed weapons. It meant that players with two-handed weapons would be able to attack one and a half meter further than those who wielded one-handed weapons. However, this Death Knight's weapon seemed to be 7 meters long! His attack range could be considered as vast the attack range of a ranged Class!

[Death Knight, Ishildur] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 148

HP: 800,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 60,138 - 70,138

Skills:

[Death Strike]: There is a 33% chance to deal double damage to the

target.

[Death Plague]: Unleashes a plague into the surroundings and cause 60,000 Shadow Damage to all non-Spectre beings.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. Recovery amount will not be affected by any other effect.

[Blood of Madness]: Every time when Ishildur loses 10% HP, his damage dealt will be increased by 10%.

Note: Ishildur is the synonym of 'Death'. When he pulls out his sword, there will be bloodshed and slaughter.

"Oh my god... I was so happy to see that the Attack of the boss was similar to the Attack of an Elite Tier Death Knight... apparently, the boss would get more agitated as he loses his HP... god damn it!" Everyone began to frown and curse the moment they came across the description for the {Blood of Madness}.

"It's still alright. At least the boss does not have any automated Skills other than normal attacks." Zhang Yang nodded. "{Death Strike} has a rate of 33%. That would mean it might be triggered once in every 3 attacks. The damage is still within acceptable parameters."

"We're only 20% away from completion now. Should we activate all our Inheritance Transformation Skills then?"

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts on it and said, "Then Ice queen should activate her Transformation Skill. Phoenix pets are more suitable for area battles that involve large numbers of monsters. Witchy Snow only excels in her Healing Capability, nothing else!"

"Hahaha! Are you asking sister Sun to work overtime to the point that her mother might not recognize her?" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud.

Zhang Yang flicked his finger against Wei Yan Er's forehead with a thwack and said, "Don't be delusional. Ice queen is not like you! You cannot differentiate what's important and what's not!"

"You stinky noob tank! Stop hitting my forehead! It's swelling up like a

bun now!" Wei Yan Er snarled at Zhang Yang, baring her teeth.

"Let's move out!"

Zhang Yang took the lead and led his party members into battle. Everyone took their positions as they already knew where they should be and what they should do.

"Death is just the beginning of all things!" Ishildur uttered his 'slogan' as he rode out on his battle horse towards Zhang Yang and his gang. Swinging his long-*ss sword across the battlefield, the boss could reach Zhang Yang from afar. The cartoonish longsword as unexpectedly swift. Zhang Yang could only see a flash of light as if the sword was moving at lightning speed!

However, Zhang Yang was not slow to react either. He raised his shield up right before the blade could touch him. Instantly, Zhang Yang blocked the blade with his {Block}. However, the boss was extremely strong and powerful. The impact of that powerful strike had almost pushed Phoenix pet down to the ground. Well, it pissed off the Phoenix pet, alright. It flapped its wings and glided over towards the boss in fury. It opened up its mouth and spat out a crimson blazing fire towards the boss.

"Annoying light!" Ishildur felt disturbed by the assault and he swung his hand across the air and said, "Get lost!"

The blazing flames that were spat out by the Phoenix pet were extinguished all in an instant. Still, the boss took the full damage of it. It was just some cinematic visual effect that they could ignore.

Sun Xin Yu activated her {Shadow Dancer Transformation} on the spot as a pair of mysterious-black translucent wings spread out from her back. Upon entering her 'Stealth mode', she fluttered her wings a little and activated her {Leap Dodge}. By doing so, she arrived at the rear of the boss in a flash. With her dual swords ready in both of her hands, she activated {Ambush} as two flashes of lights were seen cutting across the boss! The boss took a great amount of damage.

'-311,947!'

‘-155,973!’

Two extremely high damage values popped right up on top of the boss. Her aggro values instantly exceeded the amount of aggro Zhang Yang had. The boss turned around immediately and launched his assaults on her.

--- It made perfect sense. Without her transformation, she could already deal as much damage as Zhang Yang. Upon activating her Transformation Skill, she acquired an increment of 500% on her damage. So it was natural to see Sun Xin Yu at the top of the boss’s aggro list. Although Tankers could create additional aggro values with their attacks and Skills, nothing would top that sheer amount of damage gap.

However, Sun Xin Yu initially had over 200,000 HP. That amount of HP was boosted up by 40 times the moment when she activated her Transformation Skill. Hence, her Maximum HP had reached up to 8,000,000 HP. Though the boss was hitting hard, her HP bar stood strong.

However, a DPS player is not a Tanker, after all. There is a huge difference between the Defense of a Thief and the Defense of a Tanker. She could still get into trouble if left untended to. Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and the other three Battle Companions also had to heal the others other than Sun Xin Yu, in order to counteract the boss’s {Death Plague} at the same time. Hence, they were not able to fully focus on healing Sun Xin Yu’s HP back up.

In other words, Sun Xin Yu was relying on her 8,000,000 HP to tank against the boss. The moment her HP level was decreased down to a critical level, she would have to activate her {Vanish} to withdraw from the boss’s aggro. Or, she could activate her life-saving Skill --- for instance, Zhang Yang had his {Radiance of the God of War} and Sun Xin Yu had her {Slaughtering Feast}. Upon the activation of {Slaughtering Feast}, Sun Xin Yu could recover her HP back to full within 10 seconds while causing immense damage to her enemy.

Based on Zhang Yang’s understanding of this woman, Sun Xin Yu would definitely hold up until her HP bar is almost at the bottom. Upon that, only she would activate her {Slaughtering Feast} to recover her HP back to

full. She would continue battling the boss until she is one again in the red. Only then would she use her {Vanish} to get clear of the boss's aggro.

As expected of her, Sun Xin Yu's HP bar almost hit the bottom 5 minutes later. A bright red mark flashed across her body as she began to spin rapidly like a spinning top. Her sharp blades turned the boss into mincemeat!

[Slaughtering Feast]: Causes damage based on the Attack of both Primary Weapon and Secondary Weapon once every second. At the same time, recover 10% of HP each second. Lasts for 10 seconds.

When the bladed 'top' stopped spinning, she had almost fully recovered. The boss was infuriated for receiving heavy damage from her. He began to swing his blade at Sun Xin Yu so strongly that the air was swept up by the force of the swing. It seemed like the boss was attempting to vent out his anger towards Sun Xin Yu.

"Sister Sun looks to bad*ss when she was using that Skill!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes. She looked like a fangirl admiring Sun Xin Yu, "That's so much stronger than noob tank's {Radiance of the God of War}! Not only can she recover her HP, she can also cause a lot of damage to the boss!"

Zhang Yang silently smiled. Although {Slaughtering Feast} could recover HP and deal damage at the same time, life-saving Skills were meant to keep users alive. Furthermore, healing in one shot is always much better than healing over time. Well, healing over time would take time in order to fully heal a player. For instance, Sun Xin Yu required 10 seconds to fully heal herself. The healing effect would only kick in once in every second. Just imagine a player being shot by hundreds of arrows after one click of the regeneration, wouldn't the player be dead, still?

"Rest in peace for all eternity!" the boss roared out loud. His ignited Spectral eyes danced about violently.

Because the boss had an extremely long HP bar, and the boss had {Spectre Build} to recover some amount of HP over time, so this boss battle would definitely exceed an hour. Zhang Yang attempted to use {Glare of the Death God} at the beginning of the boss battle. However, the

Skill was resisted by the boss.

"Haha!" Ishildur revealed a disdainful look on his face, "I'm the embodiment of Death itself! How dare you try such parlor tricks on me! How dare you try to use a curse on me!"

"What a clever boss! He actually knows how to curse with idioms!"

"Let's give him a small red rose as a reward!"

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight immediately 'joined forces' in taunting the boss. Ishildur was provoked to the point that he almost wanted to jump off his battle horse and charge after them.

Sun Xin Yu managed to last for another 5 minutes. Her HP bar was once again going to hit the bottom. So, she quickly activated her {Vanish} and got herself clear of the boss's aggro. She handed the responsibility of tanking the boss back to Zhang Yang. Given tens of minutes to get himself replenished, Zhang Yang was certain that he had built enough aggro value on himself, giving Sun Xin Yu the gap of 5 minutes to channel all her damage onto the boss without going OT1.

Meanwhile, {Vanish} only had a 5-minute cooldown period. As long as she does not put herself at the risk of going OT, then she would never be attacked by the boss throughout the entire battle --- unless Zhang Yang falls or activates his {Shadow of the Void} to clear the aggro values on him.

Although Zhang Yang could not beat Sun Xin Yu without his Transformation, he still had over 720,000 HP while mounted in his pet. So he need not worry about being taken out by the boss in an instant. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang also had extremely high Defense, extremely high Damage Immunity. These attributes had greatly reduced the pressure on Han Ying Xue and the other Healers.

80%, 70%, 60%. The HP of the boss was slowly decreasing. However, on the contrary, the Attack power of Ishildur was slowly increasing because of his {Blood of Madness}. He could deal approximately 100,000 damage with only one normal hit.

However, the biggest threat came from the {Death Plague}. The Skill would cause DOT effect to all players within the effective range. Every single member of the gang was suffering damages of 100,000 consecutively. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were having a very hard time healing the party up.

At the same time, Battle Companions with weaker Attacks had all but left the frontlines to prevent adding pressure on the Healers at the rear. The boss battle was getting harder and harder by the second as the HP bar of the boss got lower and lower. The battle was going to get even tougher soon.

By the time when the battle entered the 'killing cleave' stage, the boss's Attack would have been boosted up by 80%! The rate of activating his Skills would become even higher than before. That would prove to be a great threat to Zhang Yang and his party.

It was ironic. To kill the boss, they must bring down the HP bar of the boss as quickly as possible. On the contrary, the Attack of the boss would increase and cause the battle to become tougher the more damage the boss takes. When that happens, the entire party might be wiped out!

While everyone was trying to wrap their heads around this self-contradiction, the HP bar of the boss was reducing at a constant rate. In more than an hour, the HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 20%. The battle had entered its 'killing cleave' stage!

Ishildur was acting like a roided up undead. He activated his {Death Plague} more frequently than ever, causing havoc to the party's HP bars!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had {Vitality Aura} with him. Everyone's Maximum HP was boosted up by a notch. Furthermore, the {Life Aura} that Han Ying Xue was carrying had increased the healing efficiency of any sorts of healing effects. The party was not wiped out, even if they were that close to death.

"Silly Yu! We can't keep up anymore! I'm activating my Transformation Skill now!" Han Ying Xue said.

"No! Stop!" Zhang Yang shook his head decisively, "There's still one

more boss up ahead! That boss should be much harder to take down than this one! It's best to reserve your Transformation Skill until then!"

"Just hang in there!"

"That's right! Zhang Yang could just throw {Glare of the Death God} when the HP of the boss drops down to 12% or 13%! Then, the boss should be as good as dead!"

"But what if the boss resists that again?" Wei Yan Er slipped her tongue and said it out loud. She immediately became the focal point of everyone's eyes! The little brat blushed in shame as she knew she said something wrong, so she said, "Why are you guys looking at me like that? I'm feeling uncomfortable now!"

Oh my god... that little brat had managed to divert the others' attention away by acting cute. Well, she succeeded at least.

"I will eviscerate you!" Ishildur let out a raging roar. He was known to be the great Death Knight. Not only could he not take out a single one of these 'noobs', they had managed to deal quite a number on him. Of course, he would feel infuriated. Although the boss did not have the idea of HP bar and damage values, he knew that he would be eventually taken out by these insignificant living beings that he despised!

"Stinky boss! Just play nice and give us all the equipment you have on you!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud while whirling about with her huge battle axe.

"Damn you puny living beings! How can you puny creatures have such immense power?!" As his HP bar was reduced even further, Ishildur was getting more surprised.

"Just hang on a little while more! We'll try our best to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 11%! Then, I shall throw the {Glare of the Death God} at him! We cannot afford to have the boss get 90% additional damage! We'll be wiped out!" Zhang Yang shouted out loud.

80% was their maximum limit if Han Ying Xue is to hold off on her transformation. If the boss could get 90% additional boost on his damage

output, he could just wipe out the entire party by activating his {Death Plague} even more frequently. Wiping out the entire party could be done in just an instance!

14%, 13%, 12%, 11%!

The time where fate deals its hand has come!

Zhang Yang raised up his hand and threw out his {Glare of the Death God}.

Please do not resist! Please do not resist! Please do not resist!

Everyone was praying hard that the Skill would not be resisted. If the boss does resist the Skill, the party would need to activate the Phoenix pets' Transformation Skills just to hang on.

So did the Skill got resisted by the boss?

A dark skull emerged and formed right on top of the boss! It smiled wretchedly in complete silence!

It was a success!

"Hahaha! Stinky boss! Your doom is nigh!" Wei Yan Er attempted to act cute as she laughed.

‘-8,000,000!’

‘-8,000,000!’

The higher the amount of HP the boss had, the higher the damage that the {Glare of the Death God} could cause to the boss. Each trigger caused a total of 8,000,000 damage to Ishildur! Ishildur was furious. He roared continuously and said, "You damned living beings! I'm the great Death Knight Ishildur! I'll not be taken down by a bunch of weak, insignificant low-living beings!"

The HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 10%. Hence, his Attack power had received an additional 90% boost. Furthermore, the rate of Ishildur activating his {Death Plague} had been shortened down to once in every 5 seconds! It was as terrifying as it sounded!

Although the boss was near his own end, he was also at his most destructive. Any oversight or careless mistakes could lead to fatalities!

9%, 8%, 7%... the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was triggered consecutively under the heavy assaults of the gang. In just 7 seconds, the gang had managed to trigger the special effect 10 times. The HP bar of the boss was down to 1%!

Zhang Yang was forced to activate his {Vanguard's Aggression} in order to maintain the HP of all his party members. He even activated his {Rearm} so that he could use his {Vanguard's Aggression} two times in a row. Endless Starlight had also activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} right after Zhang Yang's second {Vanguard's Aggression} expired. By activating 3 {Vanguard's Aggression} consecutively, the two Tankers managed to buy a 30-second precious time frame for the other party members to launch their assaults on the boss.

However, after three effects of {Vanguard's Aggression} faded away, the gang started to get into trouble. Even their mounts will not keep them alive for long!

7,000,000! 5,000,000! 3,000,000! 1,000,000!

Hundred Shots, Daffodil Daydream, Fantasy Sweetheart and the others screamed miserably as they collapsed to the ground, one after another. However, the [Zombie Potion] kicked in and extended the boss' nightmare!

"%^&!*\$#!" The boss let out a series of undefined language. He was probably cursing something like 'son of the b*tch'.

500,000! 200,000! 70,000!

"Argh ---" Ishildur let out a thunderous cry. He fell off the back of his battle horse, headfirst to the ground. Meanwhile, a magic circle with six-corner star appeared right beneath that battle horse. The next thing that happened was the horse disappearing into thin air. Wei Yan Er was not able to grab the horse before it disappeared. All she managed was to plant her face into the ground like the boss and gain a mouthful of sand.

TL Note:

1. Off Tank (OT) - a mistake by the tank which occurs when the aggro shifts from the Main Tank to a non-Tank and often results in the death of the non-Tank.

Chapter 651: Blood Driven Madness

It was the most troubling boss battle for them so far. Of course, the battle was only so troublesome and risky because everyone had to reserve some of their life-saving Skills and power for the battles that yet to come. If they ever come across any super bosses in the Open World Map, they could have easily bested the boss when every one of them activates their Inheritance Transformation Skills. They could just beat the boss into submission even if the boss goes berserk.

However, there were quite a number of bosses on this special map. This special map was designed to be like a dungeon. Therefore, the party must ration and distribute the Inheritance Transformation Skills wisely. As everyone could not simply activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills at the same time, it made things much harder in this map. The battles here were tougher as well.

Wei Yan Er went up and picked up the loots while Han Ying Xue was busy saving and resurrecting the other party members. Because {Redemption} had 5 minutes of cooldown period, Han Ying Xue decided to get Fantasy Sweetheart back on her feet first. By doing so, she increased the efficiency of saving the other party members.

Since everyone was waiting for everyone to be resurrected, it would be best to take a look at the loot first.

Wei Yan Er looked at the loot for quite a while before she said something. "Cutey Drizzler reporting here, the stinky boss has dropped two Ethereal Tier equipment, two Mythical Tier equipment, one [Skill Book] and one Inheritance Fragment."

"Inheritance Fragment?! Of what class?"

The mention of Inheritance Fragment had perked everyone's ears up. Although 9 of them already acquired their very own Inheritances, they were very interested to see if the Inheritance would be compatible with Fantasy Sweetheart. Even if it was not compatible, they could also give it to someone in their own guild. Who would complain if they could have

more players with Inheritances in their guild?

However, when Wei Yan Er posted out the description of the Inheritance, everyone was disappointed by it.

[Toxicant Zombie Inheritance Fragment] (Inheritance Class: D)

Description: - Irrelevant to the plot

It was just a Class D Inheritance which did not even have a Transformation Skill. Everyone was not happy with what they saw at all.

However, Zhang Yang revealed a smile on his face, then he said, "You guys should just stop thinking about Transformation Skills. If a guild can get 100 players with Class C Inheritances, that guild could be deemed as the number one guild without a doubt. Classes won't matter that much anymore when numbers overtake everything else! Players with Class D and Class E Inheritances are the backbone of a guild!"

He shoved the fragment into his inventory with the intention to auction it in his guild. Any member of the Lone Desert Smoke would be able to obtain the fragment by exchanging it with some guild points. Although his party members did not show any sign of interest in this Inheritance Fragment, many members of his guild would be pretty interested in getting it! After all, there was not more than 12 players with Class C Inheritance in Lone Desert Smoke. Such Inheritance fragments could potentially be a unique existence for everyone in Lone Desert Smoke.

Fantasy Sweetheart was the most disappointed person among all. She was the only one who had not yet acquired an Inheritance up to this point. She felt left behind by the other party members as much as she felt that she was just holding the party back.

Wei Yan Er took out another crimson red necklace. Then she said, "Coming up next! A necklace!"

[Heart of Fire] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,089

Intelligence: +373

Spirit: +373

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 740 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 321 damage when being hit.

Equip: Upon successful spell casting, there is a certain rate that you can shorten the casting time for your next spell by 50%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Wow...is today a special day for Spellcaster? Why are all the equipment today Spell-types!?" Lost Dream laughed cynically.

"That's right! No fair! There are so many of us in need of Physical-type equipment here! The system keeps on giving us Spell-type equipment! How fair is that!?" Wei Yan Er nodded repeatedly.

"Alright, that's enough... it doesn't matter what type of equipment. Our party has grown much stronger now! That's what that matters most!"

Han Ying Xue did not back off from rolling for the equipment. By the end of it, this lucky woman is indeed very lucky. She won by scoring 99 points and 'eliminated' the two ladies. Hence, she claimed the powerful necklace as her own.

Another Ethereal Tier equipment was a misty gray pair of gauntlets. The surface of the gauntlets had the crafting of a dragon with its wings spread wide open ready to fly. The crafting was so real that the dragon seemed like it could just fly out of the gauntlets.

[Flying Dragon Gaunlets] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +2,178

Strength: +7,45

Agility: +318

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,350 points.

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when struck.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"My precious! My precious!" Endless Starlight was staring at the gauntlets with his glittering eyes. He could not move his eyes away from the gauntlets at all. At the same time, he was licking his lips as well! He did not care to maintain his image anymore. Everyone was laughing at him at the bottom of their hearts.

Zhang Yang could not bear to burst his bubble. So, he nodded at Wei Yan Er and Wei Yan Er spouted at him. Then the little brat raised up her hand and showed Zhang Yang one finger. Worry not, it was not her middle finger. She wanted to imply that Zhang Yang owed her one for this. The two of them gave up on rolling for the equipment. Hence, this powerful equipment had dropped into the possession of Endless Starlight. He became so joyful that he kept bowing at Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er for letting him have it.

"So what's the Skill of the Skill Book?" Everyone turned their attention over to the final Skill Book.

[Skill Book: Blood of Madness]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Blood of Madness}.

Required Class: none.

Required Level: 100

Although the specific description about the Skill was not revealed just yet, everyone could guess what could the Skill do by observing the boss. Well, this Skill should be similar to the Skill that the boss had. After all,

the two Skills were of the same name.

Zhang Yang already had a Skill called {God of War Heavy Axe}. He would be required to maintain his HP at maximum in order for him to deal a damage that was 3 times higher than his initial damage. On the other hand, {Blood of Madness} would only work better when the HP amount of the user was getting lower. Theoretically speaking, {Blood of Madness} could boost all attacks. It would be much more powerful than Zhang Yang's {God of War Heavy Axe}. However, having a low HP bar was a risk that any Tanker should not take. So Zhang Yang decided to give this Skill to others.

However, it could be concluded that {Blood of Madness} was most suited for Tankers. Because Tankers were always on the role of being beaten up. Even though the HP bars of Tankers rarely went down to 20% or 30% low, but it was normal for them to keep their HP bars up at the level of 50% or 60%. Therefore, this Skill could at least provide approximately 40% boost on the Tankers' damage that was equipped with this Skill. It would be a great power-up --- of course, only if the effect of this Skill would be the same as it was on the boss.

After rolling to decide who gets the Skill Book, Wei Yan Er won by scoring the highest roll among all. She claimed the Skill Book and learned the Skill on the spot with joy flowing over her face. However, the moment after she learned the Skill, that joyful smile on her face froze.

[Blood of Madness (Passive)]: Whenever your total amount of HP is reduced by 10%, your total amount of damage dealt will be increased by 1%.

What the hell! The boss got a 10% increase in damage dealt and players only get 1% increase in damage dealt?! Even if the HP bar of the player drops down to below 10%, the player could only get 9% boost on damage dealt. No wonder the little brat was frowning so intensely just now.

"Don't be sad. These damage-boosts are like free bonuses. Don't tell me that you plan to solely rely on this Skill to boost your damage by reducing your HP. It's risky as hell! Furthermore, this is not an Inheritance Skill. So, stop dreaming and accept it! It'll be useful in the future!" Zhang Yang

patted the little brat's head as he tried to comfort her.

"God damn it! God damn this!" Wei Yan Er was very, very unhappy about it.

The two Healers were busting their *sses saving everyone back on their feet. 10 minutes later, they had finally saved all 5 members who got themselves killed during the boss battle. After distributing the items and equipment among themselves, the gang continued to push on forward. Well, the last part of an endeavor is the hardest to accomplish, a thing is not over until it is completed. Now that their progress was only at 80%, they could not afford to let their guard down at all.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han activated the Transformation Skills of their Phoenix Pet. The two royal blood Phoenixes emerged out of the blazing flames. The two Phoenixes looked stunning and intimidating! Unfortunately, that wretched fatty was only at Level 127. He had prevented his Phoenix pet from being able to reach Level 130. Therefore, the attributes of his Phoenix was much weaker than then attributes of Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet.

However, Fatty Han was a Beastman Hunter. So he could provide some boost on the attributes of his pet. Therefore the attributes of the two Phoenix pets were on the same level.

The moment the Transformation Skills of the two Phoenixes were activated, their AoE Attacks were now incredibly powerful.

Fatty Han did not mount himself onto his Phoenix. As he was a Hunter, he could use a Phoenix pet as his pet to battle alongside with him. At the same time, he could also summon his Pet Mount. He had multiple advantageous over the other Classes in such regards. Meanwhile, the pet that the player mounts on would not retain their own Defense attributes. The Defense attribute would be based on the Defense of the player who is mounted on the pet mount. The Phoenix pet had over 16,680 Defense. If Fatty Han had mounted on it, then the Phoenix's high Defense would have gone to waste.

Zhang Yang was a Tanker. So his Defense was actually much higher

than the Defense of his Phoenix pet. Therefore, it would be wiser for him to mount himself onto his Phoenix in order to boost up its Defense. At the same time, mounting onto a pet could provide an abundant boost to the amount of their shared Maximum HP as well --- well, Zhang Yang initially had over 450,000 HP prior to the Transformation.

The two Phoenix pets flapped their majestic wings as they continued to spread hellfire across the hordes of their enemies. Upon their transformation, the ranged attack of the Phoenix pets could reach up to 20 meters far. The two of them were spreading their fire forward in a conical shape, torching up the entire section of the Stone Bridge. It was a spectacular scenery to gaze upon!

Although the attack range of the Phoenix pets was much shorter than the attack range of a player after they activate their Transformation Skills, the Phoenix pets could attack once every 2 seconds while using AoE attacks as their normal attacks. Only Phoenix and Dragon-type pets of Celestial Tier and above were capable of doing this!

Comparing one's capability in dealing AoE attack with a Phoenix's was only an act of depressing oneself.

Who would be able to compete with them?

The speed of the party's progression suddenly accelerated.

In a normal situation, a party's progression would only get slower and slower as they progress because they might be running short on playable cards, or simply running out of steam. However, Zhang Yang and his party were performing otherwise. They are incredibly powerful. Their courage would only mount as the battle progresses! Furthermore, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had not yet activated their Class S Inheritance Transformation Skills!

"Hahaha! That party of 20 had been wiped out!" Lost Dream suddenly burst into laughter. Now that only 4 parties remained in getting to the finishing line, everyone was very concerned about the progress of the other parties.

The gang was confident enough to believe that they would triumph over

the other parties if they were competing against each other under regular circumstances. Therefore, they were not fond of the 'Cheating Party' which had over 20 players. Unfortunately for them, the 4th boss was overwhelmingly powerful when his HP bar was low. When Ishildur only had 10% HP left, he went on a rampage with his highly boosted Attack power. A few measly Healers would not be able to catch up with the tremendous damage that the boss could deal.

Meanwhile, the total HP of Ishildur was extremely abundant. Even though there were 20 of them trying to bring down the 10% HP of the boss, it was not possible for it to be done within 1 or 2 minutes. Unless they had more players who could activate their Transformation Skills, they would only have one option left --- to wait and die!

However, how many more 'backup' players would still be able to activate their Transformation Skills, if any?

Numbers would mean nothing when they are standing before Inshildur. The party of 20 was so badly pummeled. However, they also acquired some [Resurrection Monoliths] earlier in their progress. Many blinking dots suddenly appeared on the map. It was obvious that they had resurrected their Healers. That was how they managed to resurrect 4 players in such a brief period of time.

However, the fact that they could not take down the boss in their first attempt had led them down to a path where they no longer had a chance of defeating the boss --- the number of Transformation Skills would only decrease instead of otherwise as the progress goes on.

Zhang Yang and his party continued forward without thinking much about them. The number of Death Knights got lower and lower as they progressed onwards. A new type of monster is going to appear soon.

[Mist Death Raptor] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 148

HP: 2,960,000

Defense: 3,780

Melee Attack: 61,781 - 71,781

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters from the caster. Targets will be stunned. Lasts for 3 seconds.

[Pounce]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: Raptors were ferocious beasts before they were dead. They became even more powerful after they had been turned into Spectre.

Chapter 652: Ghastly Frost Dragon

"More fake, shoddy goods again! Pui!" Wei Yan Er was infuriated immediately. While they were back on the mountains of '12 Zodiacs', she had been very eager to get a dragon as her pet. However, after exploring for half a day, she only came to realize that the so-called dragon mountain was inhabited by countless, flightless raptors. She was so disappointed and furious that she had committed it deep into memory. She had brought that grudge along with her ever since.

The two Phoenix pets were performing with great exemplary. The damage they dealt with the monsters were tremendous. These 10-meter tall raptors were considered to be the final line of Defense for the final boss. They were 'trampled' over by the two Phoenix pets with ease. Well, at least the monsters died trying to stop Zhang Yang and his party from progressing forward. Even though they failed, they went down honorably!

Upon activating the Phoenix Transformation Skills, the two Phoenix pets had attained powerful Attacks ranging from 72,882 damage to 82,876 damage. With each fire breath they spat across the hordes, they dealt so much damage on more than 10 monsters at a time. Furthermore, they could attack every 2 seconds. The waves of flames that blanketed the monsters were consecutive and deadly! All that the two Phoenix needed was 1 minute to clean out every single monster in the area.

It was an astonishing sight! They had never thought that these two Phoenix pets could perform so much better than a player with a Class B Inheritance Transformation!

After approximately half an hour of pushing forward, Zhang Yang and his party finally received news that Land of Savages and another unknown party from the direction of 10 o'clock had defeated the 4th boss. The two parties had finally made progress up to 80%, leaving only 20% left before completion. So now, only three parties remained in the contest of becoming the first in getting to the finishing point on the map. Although Zhang Yang and his party were leading on top, they did not dare let up or to make any careless mistakes. Because no one would know what the

others had up in their sleeves that might turn the tables around. They could just use their triumph card at the final moment and wrap up the dungeon.

"They're approaching us at a very high speed!" Daffodil Daydream looked at the map. The two parties were progressing at a faster rate than Zhang Yang and his party. It seemed that they might stand a chance of overtaking Zhang Yang and his party, at this rate!

"They should have already activated all of their available Inheritance Skills!" Han Ying Xue made a guess.

"That's right! It's about time for the final showdown!" Zhang Yang nodded. Then he said, "However, we still have 20% to go. Judging from the difficulty of taking down the previous boss, I believe that the next boss will be even harder! They can catch up with us, or even overtake us now. But, how about the boss? When they reach the boss, they will not have any other Inheritance Transformations to use anymore. By then, do you think that they will last?"

"However, if they get left behind, they will not stand a chance to even catch up with us!" Daffodil Daydream said, "They must be wagering on the fact that there is no fifth boss!"

"If that's the case, they would really stand a great chance to beat us to the finishing point." Zhang Yang nodded. Then he continued, "But I think that possibility is unlikely to happen. If there's really no boss number 5, that would really make the contest look lame."

"Haha! Then let them come! We shall make a fair contest out of it with them!" Hundred Shots and the others were looking very sure of themselves.

If they really could not win such a fair contest with an equal number of players, they should only accept defeat gracefully.

The other two parties must have used all of their available Inheritance Transformation Skills in order to keep up with the pace of the contest. Perhaps they were progressing even faster than Zhang Yang and his party now. If that is the case, then Zhang Yang and his party would have a lot of

trouble staying ahead of the other parties.

Every single party on the map were basically exhibiting their capabilities to the fullest as they were making their way towards the finishing point. Normal players would have their eyes popping out if they could just look at how swiftly these 3 parties are progressing forward. Their efficiency in slaying those high-level monsters was astoundingly high!

As they were taking out any means that were left up in their sleeves in order to push forward, the three parties were getting closer and closer to the finishing point. Every one of the parties was progressing faster and faster. As they approached the finishing line, the distance between the Stone Bridges was getting narrower and narrower as well. Everyone on the bridge could see everything that was happening on the other bridges. Only the party at 6 o'clock could not see the party from 12 o'clock, and vice versa.

The mysterious party that was coming from the direction of 10 o'clock finally revealed themselves. It appeared that they were from the Hell family in the Europe Region. Of course, one of the members of the party was that royal princess --- Dusk Phoenix. At the same time, that black Phoenix had also noticed Zhang Yang's presence on the other Stone Bridge. She began to wave at Zhang Yang in excitement. The other 9 members of her party revealed a sense of scorn on their faces. It seemed that they were rather envious or jealous of Zhang Yang.

Dusk Phoenix was true royalty. Her appearance was divinely beautiful, just like an angel that came down from the sky. Whoever gets to marry her would be showered with luxury beyond one's wildest dreams --- Well, that man would become the 'future' king of Luxembourg. Although it was just a title by the name without any real power, how many people in the world would have the luxury to enjoy having that title?

Therefore, upon seeing her wink at Zhang Yang ever so seductively, these men could not help but feel envious of Zhang Yang. They were on the verge of losing themselves. The idea of jumping over to the next bridge to duel with Zhang Yang definitely crossed their minds. Well, no one could blame them for having such thoughts on Dusk Phoenix.

"That horny Phoenix! Pui!" Han Ying Xue spoke coldly.

Now that the three parties were able to see each other clearly, that meant that each of the Stone Bridges were reaching its end.

A gigantic creature was seen blocking in the middle of the Stone Bridge. Although the creature was nothing but bones, it was simply gigantic! It was astounding!

It was a gigantic, Frosty Ghost Dragon!

Gigantic dragons are considered to be the most powerful beings on earth, known to mankind. Meanwhile, even though this creature no longer lived, it would still be extremely powerful. The eternal resentment had turned this Celestial beast into a Ghost Dragon! There were 3 types of different attributes among the species of such dragons before they died. They were known to be Frost, Flame, and Shadow. The attributes of Natural-types and the Celestial-types were like fire and water. Even if the dragon had turned into Ghost Dragon, it would only possess only one attribute. It would either be Frost, Flame or Shadow.

[Misty Frosty Ghost Dragon] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 150

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Melee Attack: 75,409 - 95,409

Skills:

[Frost Breath]: Spits out a breath of the dragon in a conical area, causing 80,000 Frost Damage to all targets within the effective area of the Skill.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP once every 30 seconds. The recovery rate and amount will not be affected by any other effects.

[Dragon Wing Strike]: Flaps both wings and causes 100,000 Physical Damage to all targets within effective range. The targets will be blown away by a certain distance.

Note: The Frosty Ghost Dragon is guarding the final stage in the mist. However, throughout the countless ages, no warrior or adventurer had ever gone past it. They descended as Spectres upon their failures.

On every Stone Bridge, there was a wall made of air that looked a lot like a door in a dungeon. It was just right behind the Frosty Ghost Dragons on every Stone Bridge. Everyone could see the finishing point right behind that transparent air wall. The finishing point was the one point that connected all 12 Stone Bridges right in the middle. That finishing point was a round stage, as large as a basket ball court. There was an ancient-looking chest placed right in the middle of that stage.

Everything was so clear now. No doubt, the parties had to kill the Frosty Ghost Dragon first before they could walk through the invisible air wall and see what's being kept within the ancient-looking chest.

So whoever who could slay the Frosty Ghost Dragon right in front of them would get that treasure chest! However, if two or more parties got to slay the dragons at the same time, an all-out chaotic PvP would occur. Only one winner would emerge from that!

If the treasure chest is not there for the claiming, everyone would have chilled down a little. It would be the same if you are the first party or the last party because there would not be any special rewards. However, the situation is different when there is a final reward placed right in the middle of everything! The map had arranged 5 Ethereal bosses to guard that chest --- of course, it would not be easy at all because a party must take out all 5 Ethereal Tier bosses before reaching the chest. No ordinary party could accomplish such a thing in the game --- the one and only final reward would definitely be unique and super rare!

Zhang Yang and his party swore that they would get the rewards, no matter the costs!

"That HP... is too much!" Lost Dream squeaked.

They had encountered a boss with 1,000,000,000 HP before. However, they had managed it with over 50 players in one party! Furthermore, the most resentful fact was that the boss has {Spectre Build} which would

allow the boss to recover its HP! With an amount of 1,000,000,000 HP, the boss would be able to recover 330,000 HP in each second!

The current formation of Zhang Yang party was considered grand and powerful. The entire party could deal a DPS of 350,000 damage even without a single Inheritance Transformation active. With the {Spectre Build} on the boss screwing things around, the party's effective DPS had been brought down to only approximately 20,000 damage. So, in order for the party to clear out the entire HP bar of the boss, it would require... 14 hours at the very least!

The boss would have a terrifying array of AoE assaults. Could Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and the Healing-type Battle Companions maintain their healing efficiency all the way for 14 hours?

This was a final boss worthy of being the final 'obstacle' on the map. Its might wrought nothing but despair!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had not activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills yet. Zhang Yang would greatly boost the firepower and survivability of the party while Han Ying Xue would keep the party practically immortal. Therefore, the two large problems for this boss battle had been solved!

At that instant, the Transformation of the two Phoenix pets were about to come to an end. Zhang Yang was the only hope that could boost the damage output of the party.

Before Zhang Yang activates his Inheritance Transformation, he could deal approximately 60,000 damage in each passing second. When he activates his Inheritance Transformation, he could actually deal up to a total of 200,000 damage in each second! An increment of 140,000 damage on Zhang Yang's initial DPS could increase the total damage output of the party from dealing 20,000 damage to dealing a total of 160,000 damage in each second!

Based on this, the party would actually take out the boss in approximately 104 minutes! An Inheritance Transformation would last for that duration.

However, the party could only take out the boss within that amount of time if they performed at their very best. It would be far easier said than done. The boss had a Skill that could blast players backward and stagger them for a brief moment. As players stumble about and struggle to regain their balance, DPS would almost halt completely. Other than just dealing damage to the boss, the players would have to deal with the shockwaves that would push them back once in a while. The amount of damage the party could deal within a set period of time would surely be reduced!

Meanwhile, if the party could not take out the boss within 2 hours, they would have to suffer the fate with a DPS of 20,000 damage. When that happens, the {Dragon Wing Strike} of the boss, would completely halt the party in its tracks!

Therefore, the party must take out the boss within 2 hours!

However, Zhang Yang still had his {Glare of the Death God} ready. Therefore, as long as one out of three throws could trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}, Zhang Yang and his party would be able to kill the boss.

Zhang Yang and his gang exchanged looks. Then they nodded at each other together. "Alright, let's move out! Chop chop!"

The Transformation Skill of the two Phoenix Pets would last for another 10 minutes. They could still provide some additional damage.

It was time. Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Transformation} without any hesitation. The colorful radiance streamed across the surrounding and caught many people's attention. He flapped his wings and flew towards the boss at a high speed. Then he crashed into the boss. Han Ying Xue had also activated her {Milkmaid Deity Transformation} at the same instant. Her pair of round and full breasts swelled out even more as the Transformation Skill activated. Apparently, the person who designed the visuals of this Inheritance must be a wretched, horny man!

Everyone got into position. Zhang Yang threw the first {Glare of the Death God} at the boss. The sooner he throws it out, the sooner it would become available again. By doing so, it would be possible for him attempt

the skill three times.

Resisted!

Everyone cursed deeply in their hearts They got over it pretty quickly because they were used to such disappointment. They could only pray that the other two times would not be resisted as well.

"Kill!"

The party began to launch their aggressive assaults onto the boss. They even began drinking potions just to get their Attacks up! Well, it was now or never!

Having similar thoughts in their mind, Land of Savages and Hell Family were also starting to launch their assaults as madly as they could. The decisive battle was just beginning!

Chapter 653: A Decisive Battle with the Ghost Dragon

"You insolent insignificant beings! Get lost!" The Frosty Ghost Dragon let out a series of roars that trembled across the entire surroundings. Gigantic dragons could take the shape of a human. So it would only be natural if they could speak the tongue of men. Although the Ghost Dragon had lost its ability to shift into a humanoid form, it was not hard for it to speak human's language.

The boney dragon stood up abruptly on its hind legs and reached out with one of its claws. Each of its claws was approximately 10 meters long. The claws reached out for Zhang Yang. The air was swept up by the force of the swing. It made contact. Luckily for him, he raised his shield just in time to shield himself from that blow. At the same instant, the boss released its frosty dragon breath across the surroundings. Zhang Yang's body was covered in fragments of frost.

Zhang Yang was instantly blasted back by that strike. However, he fluttered his wings and reengaged the boss. Without any hesitation, he swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at the soft spots of the boss! His normal attacks could deal up to 200,000 damage. That amount of damage was actually much higher than the damage that the boss could deal to him! Zhang Yang was showing the boss who was the real boss there!

At that moment, the two Phoenix pets could still maintain their Transformed Forms for another 10 minutes. Therefore, everyone on the scene got the chance to see the two Phoenixes battling a dragon! The scene was most spectacular! Everyone was very content with being able to view such a rare scene!

The Strength of these legendary beasts was usually determined from their sizes.

Initially, dragons and Phoenixes were of the same Tier. However, the Frosty Ghost Dragon was an Ethereal Tier boss. Therefore, it was so much

larger in size compared to a Phoenix pet! Unless the two Phoenix pets are able to elevate up to Ethereal Tier, they would not be able to best a Frosty Ghost Dragon.

However, it would not be long before that happens. Phoenix pets could evolve into Ethereal Tiers when they reach Level 140. When they do, they would become almost as large as the boney dragons after they activate their Transformation Skills.

There were 4 players who had Inheritance Transformation Skills in the party. However, even though Han Ying Xue's Inheritance Transformation was Class S, she could only provide Healing support for the party. Because of her, Fantasy Sweetheart was delegated as a side character. She only needed to activate her {Regeneration} and {Holy Shield} from time to time. Other than that, she could contribute to the DPS. Although the amount of damage she could deal was not high, a mosquito could also cause an itch to a human even if it does not hurt.

Having 4 Inheritance Transformation activated at the same time was quite a scene to marvel at. The 4 of them were bombarding the boss with everything they had. The HP bar of the boss was dropping at a constant rate, though it was extremely slow. The boss had over 1,000,000,000 HP on it!

The other two parties were doing quite well. They were not really much far behind, compared to Zhang Yang's party. They were truly persistent!

However, what does it mean by having 'an arrow at the end of its flight,' then?

10 minutes later, the HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 92%. At the same time, the two Phoenix pets started shrinking. They shrunk from mountains down to the size of cabs --- the Phoenix Transformations had expired!

Well, Zhang Yang and his party were not the only ones who were facing that sort of trouble. The Hell Family and Land of Savages were also facing the same situation, or maybe worse. They have run out of Inheritance Transformation Skills to use!

Anyone could have made that calculation. Without Inheritance Transformation Skills at their disposal, they would need at least tens of hours in order to take down the boss! If the firepower of the party is just a little bit higher than the boss' regeneration, it could even take days to take down the boss --- if they could even last that long, and if the map had no such limits.

Without any Inheritance Transformations, the firepower of the other two parties were like ticks nibbling away at an elephant. The HP bar of the boss did not even seem to move! Even snails could move faster than that! What that was even worse was whenever the boss activates its {Dragon Wing Strike}, bodies would go flying. The party would helplessly watch the boss recovery what little damage they have done. Of course, the players would cry in misery. After spending so much effort in dealing damage to the boss, they were blasted away, crawling back just to find out that all their efforts have gone to waste.

However, that pretty ancient-looking chest was just right in front of their eyes. Who would be willing to give up when the trophy is nicely placed in front of them?

Between the Stone Bridges, there was no land at all. If players were to fall in between the space of the bridges, only death would greet them. Fortunately, there were two air walls blocking the two sides of the Stone Bridges. Therefore, players would not be blasted off the bridges into the abyss when the boss uses {Dragon Wing Strike}. Because the entire area forbade anyone from flying, it would mean that players would still fall to death even if they are mounted on their flying mounts. That would be very unfair for all players when the monsters and bosses were so powerful in the first place. Therefore, designing two air walls to prevent something like that from happening was one clever move for the game developers.

While the other two parties had suddenly lost their 'main' source of firepower, the Lone Desert Smoke still had Zhang Yang and his {God of War Inheritance} to support on dealing damage to the boss! Although they also lost a powerful source of firepower when the two Phoenix ran out of juice, they were still able to maintain approximately 140,000 DPS. As long

as they hold out long enough, they would be able to kill the boss, eventually.

"Everyone, get over and stand beside Zhang Yang now!" Han Ying Xue suddenly shouted, "I can heal you all up!"

Zhang Yang was the only one who was standing right in front of the boss while the others were rounding up the boss from the sides and its rear. Why would the others still stand by the two sides of the boss and its rear even after knowing that the boss could use {Dragon Wing Strike}? The reason was simple. The rate of the boss activating its {Dragon Wing Strike} was much lower than the rate of the boss activating its {Frost Breath}. The boss would only activate its {Dragon Wing Strike} once every 45 seconds while it would activate {Frost Breath} once every 10 seconds! There was a large difference between the rates.

However, Han Ying Xue informed everyone that she could handle the heat in healing everyone up. After being on the same party as she was for so long, everyone would naturally entrust their lives to her. They ran straight over to the front of the boss without hesitation.

"Huh? Are those people trying to get themselves killed?!" When the players of Land of Savages and Hell Family saw what the players of Lone Desert Smoke were doing, they were shocked. Standing before the mouth of that powerful dragon could really avoid the impactful strike from the {Dragon Wing Strike}. Theoretically speaking, players would be able to be more focus on dealing damage to the boss without much interruption like they had while attacking the boss from the sides and its rear. However, the boss's {Frost Breath} would deal a great deal of damage to the players if they stand right in front of the boss! It was a suicidal act!

"Haha! They are the fastest team and yet they are still trying to speed things up! If they are so eager to die, good for us!"

"They are trying to kill themselves so that we can have our chance to win? How noble of them!"

"Brothers, let's hustle up and get going! We still stand a chance to win! There's still hope!"

Phew! The Frosty Ghost Dragon opened its large mouth and spat out a frosty breath towards the front. Everyone including all Battle Companions, the two Phoenix pets and every single player in the party received a basic damage of 80,000 damage. The AoE attack of the boss was extremely terrifying!

Han Ying Xue humphed lightly and raised up her hand. In just 5 seconds, she miraculously healed up everyone's HP bars back to full!

That was just amazing!

That is what the Class S Inheritances are all about! That is why Class S Inheritances are so rare in the entire game! It was just marvelous!

The players from the Land of Savages almost popped their eyes out staring at Zhang Yang and his party. What just happened? Was that Healer really a Healer? Even the powerful Healers would not have so much juice in them to heal so much in such a brief period of time! So this is the true power of a 'Milkmaid Deity'!

Meanwhile, the Hell Family almost ground their teeth to ashes! That Inheritance would have been theirs to claim if it weren't for Zhang Yang and his guild. They still could not get over the fact that Zhang Yang 'cheated' and got the Inheritance for his own guild member! They were disgusted by the thought of it! Of all members of the Hell Family, Hell Priest was the one person that resented at it the most. He would have jumped over to the other bridge in an attempt to choke Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang to death, if there were no air walls blocking the sides of the Stone Bridges --- of course, without the air walls by the sides of the bridges, he would have fallen to his own death first.

The 'Milkmaid Deity' had made her move! No one would be able to top her healing ability!

Now that the {Dragon Wing Strike} was out of the picture, the gang was able to focus on dealing damage to the boss efficiently. The DPS of the entire party had been restored to the highest theoretical damage output --- 160,000 damage per second! Their morale was boosted up and everyone was performing beyond their regular standards! They managed to raise the

maximum amount of DPS from 160,000 damage to 180,000 damage!

"It doesn't matter if you're human, orc, elf, dwarf, goblin or whatever you are. You are just insignificant pests right in front of the great Giant Dragon!" the devilish spectral flames lighted up within the eye sockets of the Frosty Ghost Dragon. The two blue-green flames were moving around in the eye sockets like two huge lanterns while the boss spat out its {Frosty Breath}. It attempted to wipe out any existence of living beings right in front of it. However, these insignificant beings were like cockroaches! They were really difficult to kill!

No! They were even harder to kill than cockroaches! If they were like cockroaches, they would all have been killed by the powerful blast of the {Frost Breath}.

"Haha! Stinky boss! Just give yourself in and drop all the money you have on you! Come on!" Wei Yan Er sounded like a robber as she swung her huge axe at the boss like a mad lady. Only God would know where she learned to talk like that.

Zhang Yang could not help but smile, and then he said, "Little brat, if you can OT now, I shall sponsor you a trip over to France! You can also have all the perfume and handbags that you want!"

"Stinky boss! You've activated your Inheritance Transformation! It's obvious that you're bullying me!" Wei Yan Er snapped. She was not an idiot, after all. Then she said, "Let's compare our damage output then! If I can deal 1/10 of your damage, then I win!"

"... why did you set such a low target?"

"1/10 is a lot, you know! After all, you've activated your Inheritance Transformation!"

"You damn pests! Just die!" Frosty Ghost Dragon let out a raging roar and said, "We're the first beings ever created by the gods! We are the Giant Dragons! We have the greatest power in the entire world! We are the representatives of the gods! We are immortals! With the falling of the gods, we are the new gods!"

"Disrespecting me means disrespecting the gods! You shall all be executed and your souls shall be imprisoned in hell, for eternity!"

"Stinky dragon! You're dead! You're just a stinky ghost! What's there to be proud about? Pui!" Wei Yan Er was most impolite, "You should look into a mirror and look at yourself! Just have a good look at the kind of sh*t you've become! You're just a bunch of bones cobbled up together! Who would actually respect a bunch of bones that talks sh*t! How dare you call us pests! You're the pest! You, a giant boney four-legged reptile who only knows how to crawl on your hollow belly like a piece of sh*t!"

"Rawgh!" The Frosty Ghost Giant almost lost itself and went berserk after being taunted by the little brat. It kept roaring in anger. If there was no such thing as an aggro system, the boss would have taken out the little brat first. After all, this boss seemed to be an intelligent AI.

"Hahaha!" everyone was laughing. The little brat could always create such amusement for the people around her.

Another half an hour had passed, the three parties were now worlds apart.

The boss in front of Zhang Yang and his party only had over 60% HP left while the bosses on the side of Hell Family and the Land of Savages still had over 89% and 88% HP left. Such a difference shouldn't be dismissed as menial, or negligible. In fact, it had the potential of covering the distance between heaven and earth!

Judging from the progression speed of the Hell Family and the Land of Savages, even if Zhang Yang and his party were being wiped out all of a sudden, even if there wasn't anyone to compete with them, they would still be having trouble taking down the boss. With their current firepower, they would need at least 12 hours to completely empty out the HP bar of the boss!

However, would they be willing to give up now?

Before true despair, they would still believe that miracles could happen anytime! The two parties were really starting to believe in miracles --- they still had a glimpse of hope that when Zhang Yang and his party takes out

the boss, the air walls would vanish! Maybe they could take that opportunity to rush in and snatch the chest!

In terms of HP amount, Zhang Yang would definitely not be able to top the boss. However, Zhang Yang could have over 17,920,000 HP the moment he activated his {God of War Inheritance}. With the boss's 'insignificant' Attack power, it would not be possible for the boss to deal much damage to Zhang Yang at all. From that point of view, Zhang Yang was the boss, and this dragon was the player!

Therefore, the {God of War Heavy Axe} could work its best under that sort of circumstances! After all, this Skill could deal over 300% melee physical damage if the target has lower HP % than him. On the contrary, this Skill would only deal 100% melee physical damage if the target has higher HP % than him. That amount of damage would be like the amount of damage that a normal attack could deal.

While he was in his {God of War Transformation} mode, each normal attack that Zhang Yang struck out could deal damage ranging from 193,607 to 210,284. The {God of War Heavy Axe} could deal up to 600,000 damage in one single hit! On top of those damage values, those were not Critical Hits and the {Lucky Strike} had not been triggered just yet. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang now had over a 15% Critical Rate and an 8% rate to trigger {Lucky Strike}. Those were not exactly low chances!

Unfortunately, the rate of triggering his most powerful Skill {Rising Dragon Strike} was far too insignificant. Zhang Yang could have dealt 2,000,000 damage with one hit! The boss could be pushed into deep sh*t if that effect is triggered by a couple of times more!

‘-1,812,321!’

Although the {Rising Dragon Strike} did not trigger, Zhang Yang managed to trigger the effect of {Lucky Strike} with his {God of War Heavy Axe}! The 1,800,000 damage had the boss roaring in excruciating pain and suffering. Its entire body trembled violently. The two devilish spectral pair of flames in the middle of the boss's eye sockets dimmed for one brief moment!

One hour later.

It was time to throw another {Glare of the Death God} at the boss.

Phew! A dark skull began to form on top of the boss's head. The skull began to smile wretchedly without making any sound.

Yes! Zhang Yang had finally succeeded!

"Kill! Kill! Kill! No time to lose!" Everyone was so joyful! With that effect in play, the boss was as good as dead!

‘-10,000,000!’

‘-10,000,000!’

Though the amount of HP the boss had was too much, it had turned around to bite it. The special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was now amazingly effective because it worked based on the HP percentage of the boss! Every single trigger took out 10,000,000 HP of the boss! None of the players in the entire game could deal that amount of damage at the current stage of the game --- unless Zhang Yang could trigger {Rising Dragon Strike} while in his God of War Transformation mode.

Furthermore, that strike would also be a Critical Strike, stacked with the effects of {Lucky Strike}. By then, Zhang Yang should be able to deal over 12,000,000 damage!

However, it would be almost impossible for so many coincidences to happen at the same time!

Under the bombardment from Zhang Yang and his gang, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} had been triggered 10 times. By the time when they were done, the Frosty Ghost Giant only had 35% HP left. Meanwhile, the other two parties were still struggling with the bosses as the bosses on their sides still had approximately 85% HP left. Zhang Yang and his party were way ahead of the other two parties! From the looks of it, they had secured the winning position in this contest.

After all, the two other parties did a grave mistake of using up all available Inheritance Transformations. They should have reserved some as they cleared up the previous monsters and bosses. Now they could only

stare at Zhang Yang and his party from afar.

"The great Giant Dragons will not be defeated by you pathetic worms! Begone!"

The boss on the same Stone Bridge as Zhang Yang and his party had a really bleak future. It was only capable of screaming some slogans and dialogues without posing any solid threat to the gang at all. On the contrary, the two bosses on the other two Stone Bridges with the other two parties were exhibiting their might as how Ethereal Tier bosses should be!

30%, 25%, 20%!

Another tens of minutes had gone by, the HP bar of the boss had dropped down to 20%. The battle had entered the 'Killing Cleave' stage!

Everyone timed it right, this time. They had been reserving all potions that could provide explosive effects on them, and also their Skills that could deal a tremendous amount of damage. The moment the battle entered the 'Killing Cleave' stage, everyone unleashed everything that they had been reserving throughout the entire battle!

Zhang Yang activated {Indiscriminate} and gulped down a bottle of [Beginner Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)], followed closely by a strike of {Killing Cleave}!

Let the {Lucky Strike} trigger once this time!

'-4,336,796'

{Indiscriminate} ensured that {Killing Cleave} would become a Critical Hit right after Zhang Yang activated {Indiscriminate}. Furthermore, Zhang Yang took down a [Beginner Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)] which boosted his Attack power by 40%! His Rage Bar was full at the moment as well. So when he struck out with his {Killing Cleave}, the damage that he dealt broke through the damage cap of 4,000,000 damage!

"What the f*ck! That amount of damage is a little bit too much! I can't believe my own eyes, man! I would be instantly killed even if I activate my Inheritance Transformation Skill!" Fatty Han squeaked.

"You're thinking way too much! {Killing Cleave} can only be used when the HP bar of the boss is below 20%. Furthermore, it would require a Critical Hit in order to pull off that amount of damage! It's not like I can just do it anytime I want!"

"But that amount of damage was really awesome!"

"Haha! So, you can die in peace now, my Boss!"

Chapter 654: Dragon Slayer Battle Axe

When they saw that the HP bar of the boss on Zhang Yang's side was dropping down below 20%, the players on the two other parties started to discuss among themselves. They were trying to come up with a solution on getting the chest lying quietly on the stage.

"They've got the boss fight wrapped up. There's no doubt about it!"

"Let's try out our luck. I'm willing to make a wager. When the boss on their side dies, all air walls on all bridges would all disappear at the same time!"

"By then, we shall heal ourselves up first. Then we will kite the boss towards the Lone Desert Smoke and drag them into battle as well!"

"Most importantly, we need to get our hands on that chest!"

"That's right!"

Zhang Yang would never believe that the system would be so idiotic to take away all the air walls on all 12 Stone Bridges the moment he and his party kills the Frosty Ghost Dragon. If that's how it's going to be, there would be no point in them competing against each other in the first place.

He was pretty sure that whoever kills the Frosty Ghost Dragon right in front first, the air walls on the bridge they are on would disappear first. Everything that was going on on that Stone Bridge he and his party were standing on would have nothing to do with the other 11 Stone Bridges at all.

Although he was thinking that way, Zhang Yang could not take any risks and had also made the arrangement that everyone on his gang would charge straight in to snatch the chest the moment they kill the boss. As for the loots that drop from the boss, the little brat would handle it all by herself.

"I'm the great Giant Dragon! My dignity and my strength shall not be bested by a bunch of mortals!" Frosty Ghost Dragon began to roar to the sky in rage. It could not accept the fact that its life was about to come to

an end. However, it also began to activate its {Frosty Breath} and {Dragon Wing Strike} even more frequently than before.

Fantasy Sweetheart had to fall back from the front line. She went to the rear and joined Han Ying Xue in supporting the rest of the party by healing them!

17%, 14%, 10%!

When the boss's HP bar finally dropped to 10%, the rate of the boss activating its Skills got even faster. The party faced even more challenges and threats because of that! Now, the battle had entered its most dangerous stage.

"If we would have known this earlier, little Yang should have kept the {Glare of the Death God} and used it now, not then!"

"But we have no way of knowing if the Skill would be resisted by the boss! Surely it's wiser to use it once the cooldown is over! Then we should still stand a chance to use it again!"

"F*cking fatty just loves to beat his own sh*t and let everyone smells it! He only knows how to talk useless sh*t! Let's ignore that f*cker and stop wasting our time. Let's focus on taking down the boss as soon as possible!"

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight had also activated their {Vanguard's Aggression} to make things easier for Han Ying Xue. Even so, Han Ying Xue had not yet used her most powerful Skill --- the {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}. It was obvious that she still had some reserves for emergency purposes.

9%! 8%! 7%!

It took them approximately 1 minute to take down 1% of the boss's HP bar. That amount of time could put a lot of strain on the Healers over time!

4%! 3%! 2%!

Buzz! Countless milk deities appeared right in midair and they started to pour gallons of milky white liquid across an area of 50-meter radius.

Everyone within that effective range received a great deal of health. Their HP bars were recovering at the rate of 10% per second!

--- the {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} had finally been blessed upon Zhang Yang and the party!

"Keep it up! Hit harder!" Zhang Yang began to roar!

"Harder... hit harder... don't stop!" Fatty Han was imitating the screaming of those girls in the Adult Videos that he would watch every night while his 'wife' slept.

"... you f*cking fatty... are you so itchy that you're so eager to get a beatdown from us?!"

1%!

9,000,000! 7,000,000! 5,000,000!

"Ready yourselves! Get in position! We're about to charge!" players from the other 2 parties had diverted their attention away from the boss. They only tried to heal as much as possible so that none of the party members are killed while waiting for the 'precise moment'. They were fully focused on staring at the remaining HP bar of the boss in front of Zhang Yang and his party. They were ready to charge in and snatch the chest!

3,000,000! 2,000,000! 1,000,000!

"Mortals, you have... defeated... me..." it began with the two devilish flames within the eye sockets of the Frosty Ghost Dragon dimming down. The gigantic body of the boss then collapsed heavily onto the ground. Most of the bones of the boss had been crushed into countless broken pieces as the impact of collapsing was too great for the bones to sustain.

"Charge! Now!"

The three parties charged towards the direction of the chest at the same instant.

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

Players from Land of Savages and Hell Family smacked facefirst into the invisible air walls right in front of them. All they could do was to fall on

their *sses on the ground, staring at Zhang Yang and his party running towards the chest. They felt even more heart ache when Zhang Yang and his party jumped around the chest with joy.

"Argh---" they were pissed off. They were not willing to accept their defeat. But they could not do anything about it. They simply were not as powerful as Zhang Yang and his party. It would be best for them to admit defeat and do it better next time.

"Stopped in their tracks! Don't you dare open the chest without me! Don't you dare! I want to be the one who opens it! Let me!" Wei Yan Er was picking up the loot dropped by the boss as she screamed out loud at Zhang Yang and the rest of the party. Then she jumped over to the chest.

Everyone laughed seeing Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue attaining a new level of obsession over the treasure chest. That witchy Snow had a pair of glittering eyes as she wrapped her arms around the chest. Her face looked almost just like the face that she would make before she spreads her legs and waits for Zhang Yang to stick his 'cannon' in! Zhang Yang felt a little troubled. Was he just like a treasure chest to that witch?

Seeing that the air walls on the other 11 Stone Bridges were not going to disappear anytime soon, everyone had no reason to rush anymore. It would take tens of hours before the Hell Family and the Land of Savages takes out the bosses right in front of them.

Fatty Han walked up to the edge of the Stone Bridge. Then he took down half of his pants and mooned the Hell Family and the Land of Savages. He even started twerking at them, his fat bum rippling along while revealing a wretched smile on his face! The two parties were infuriated to the point that they could have killed that fatty f*ck in real life!

Wei Yan Er was done picking up the loot dropped by the boss. She smiled and said, "This time, the boss is very generous. It dropped three pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment and two Mythical Tier equipment!"

The number of equipment dropped from this boss was no different from the number of equipment dropped by the previous bosses. However, one piece of Ethereal Tier equipment could cost 10 times the cost of one

Mythical Tier equipment. So the boss was indeed generous to them.

"Time to distribute!" Everyone was happy. After all the trouble they had been through, it was finally the time to get their rewards.

Wei Yan Er placed the three Ethereal Tier equipment on the ground. One of it was a pitch black axe that looked extremely sharp. The other one was a scarlet red Heavy Armor pair of pants. The third one was a bow made of bones. That bow was as tall as a regular person!

"Two-handed weapon! Little Yan Er is really hot and lucky! Come, let me give you a kiss!" Fatty Han put his lips up and he gave a gentle kiss on the smooth and small hand of Wei Yan Er. The next thing that happened was a large battle axe smashing straight into the wretched fatty's face, sending that fatty flying away from the little brat. Well, at least he deserved that, and no one would feel any pity for him.

"That's really a good touch, Yan Er! A two-handed weapon!" Everyone did not even blink after what happened to that f*cking fatty. They just ignored him and carried on with their own business with the loot. Other than Tankers, a weapon would be the most important piece equipment. A weapon could bring about either a tremendous amount of damage or a substantial amount of healing points. Meanwhile, even though Tankers needed shields more to survive, a good weapon could largely increase a Tanker's ability to get more aggro value in a battle. It was the key for a Tanker to lure and fix the aggro of monsters and bosses before the Tanker can tank or kite.

"Let's have a good look at the axe first, then. Based on the length, this should be a two-handed weapon. Endless Starlight has no part in this anymore. But he can stare as long as he wants! Haha!"

[Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] (Ethereal, Two-handed axe)

Attack: 9,204 - 13,204

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 2,948

Equip: Increases damage by 21%

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Note: This axe once belonged to a Blacksmith that kept dreaming about slaying a dragon. You've come across this battle axe among the loots of slaying the Giant Dragon. So you can guess the fate of that Blacksmith with your common sense. So stay silent and pray for the unlucky Blacksmith. Well, one must know your own boundary!

"This is just awesome, you know!" Zhang Yang praised, "My [Sword of Purging Devourer] only has an attack ranging from 7,400 to 9,672 even after I identified it. It's like comparing a blade of grass with a steel sword here!"

Only Wei Yan Er and Zhang Yang could handle two-handed weapons. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had reached the level requirement for him to take on the quest that could unseal the third seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Therefore, he decided to let Wei Yan Er have the weapon. This little brat was acting surprisingly generous today. She actually passed the axe over to Zhang Yang saying that she was just lending it to Zhang Yang for a couple of days.

--- Wei Yan Er had reached Level 128 at the moment. She would still need a few days before she reaches Level 130 and equips this axe. So, Zhang Yang gets to play with it for a couple of days before then. Truth be told, she passed the axe to Zhang Yang because she wanted him to identify the weapon for her. Even though she did not state her intention, Zhang Yang knew her very well. So, he had no choice but to do it. Well, he treated it as the fee for borrowing the weapon for a couple of days. By thinking it that way, he did not have much to lose either.

Wei Yan Er felt highly flattered by her own high intellect.

Zhang Yang shoved the [Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] into his backpack without any sense of care. Ever since the special effect of his [Sword of

Purging Devourer] had been nerfed by the officials, the weapon was no longer the godly AoE weapon. However, he recently obtained a Phoenix pet which could deal extremely powerful AoE attacks on his enemies. It would not matter much at all.

Wei Yan Er posted the attributes for the Heavy Armor pants up on the party channel so that everyone could see it.

[Frost Giant Dragon's Greaves] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Frost Resistance: +320

Vitality: +4,668

Strength: +1,586

Agility: +680

Equip: Increases both damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 9,330 points.

Equip: Absorbs 679 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Give it to noob tank. He has not taken anything yet!" It was indeed a rare occasion for Wei Yan Er to act so generously.

Endless Starlight nodded as well. Previously, he got a pair of Ethereal Tier gauntlets because Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er did not roll for it at all. They just gave it to him for free. Furthermore, Endless Starlight and Wei Yan Er had not reached Level 130 just yet. So both of them could not equip the equipment yet. They thought that it was wiser to let Zhang Yang have it. By doing so, Zhang Yang could boost his attributes a little higher.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Thank you! I shall not hold back on this one!"

He was currently wearing Level 120 Mythical Tier greaves. Compared to that piece of Mythical Tier equipment, the [Frost Giant Dragon's Greaves] was an equipment of another Tier. Much higher, of course.

"Alright! Settle down! Now, for the final piece of the equipment! Let's give some applause to it! Come on! Bring up the heat!" Wei Yan Er was waving her hands around while she posted out the attributes for that bow made of bones.

[Giant Dragon's Strike] (Ethereal, Bow)

Range Attack: 7,618 - 9,618

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 2,268

Equip: Increases damage by 21%

Equip: Your ranged attack will gain a certain rate to trigger Critical Hit for your next 3 attacks.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

The Attack Interval of this weapon was similar to the one before it. The DPS of this bow was a little lower than that of a two-handed weapon's. This is due to the range of the weapon. Judging from that perspective, the DPS of the bow was considered to be similar to the DPS of a two-handed weapon.

The wretched fatty already had a Phoenix pet. So his capability of dealing damage was much higher than Hundred Shots. As a brother to him, that fatty decided to let Hundred Shots take the bow without any hesitation at all. Endless Starlight sighed heavily and cried in misery. He cried claiming that Fatty Han had forgotten his love for him as Fatty Han had already found a new love. The way he cried had given the ladies a chill up their spines. The gayness was overloading the scene!

Other than the three equipment, Frosty Ghost Dragon had also dropped

a piece if [Skill Point Crystal]. Everyone rolled for it because no one would complain about having an extra Skill Point.

Although the Frosty Ghost Dragon did not drop much good stuff for the party, they had not looked into the treasure chest yet! Everyone was not disappointed at all. They were hustling the little brat to come over and open the chest. Even though they were eager to look into the chest to see what's in it, but they did not dare to open it up. They knew the little brat would be twisting and turning on the ground like a crybaby if any one of them opened the chest before her.

Chapter 655: Identifying Scroll

This treasure chest could not be put into the inventory. It could only be opened up on the spot. No takeouts! Wei Yan Er leaped over to the chest and grabbed Han Ying Xue like how an octopus would do to its prey. Then she pulled Han Ying Xue away from the chest and smiled like a little b*tch. Well, she would always be the one opening the chest, anytime, anywhere.

The progress of opening the chest required 30 seconds. Not only were Zhang Yang and his party were staring at the progress bar filling up with their eyes widened, the players on the other two parties were also staring at the chest without blinking even once! They were curious to find out what Wei Yan Er would take out from the treasure chest.

"Aiyo... what a disappointment! Everything here is crappy!" Wei Yan Er screamed in misery after she opened the chest. She took out a total of 5 items: One piece of broken staff fragment, one Scroll, and three books with different colors.

Zhang Yang was not disappointed at all. Although these items were not unique or rare, he could always earn a lot of money by selling them! Remember the recipe for [Armor-Piercing Potion]? That was a really practical tool for Zhang Yang to make a fortune!

Everyone started off by putting their attention on the fragment of a broken staff.

[Succubus Inheritance Fragment] (Class: B)

Description: -

"Just a Class B? After all the trouble we've gone through, they gave us a Class B Inheritance as the final reward?" Fatty Han immediately complained. He believed that it was not worth it, after everything they have gone through.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, players can come into this mist once every 30 days. The bosses and the chest will be refreshed in 30

days as well. I think the game developer is very generous to give a free Class B Inheritance once every 10 days in real life!"

It made sense. Yes. The difficulty of clearing the monsters and bosses was extremely difficult at the current stage of the game. However, if players used and rationed their Inheritance Transformations wisely, a strong party could have been able to take out the final boss Frosty Ghost Dragon. They would only need enough Inheritance Transformations to spare for the final boss battle in order for them to win.

Furthermore, when normal players reach beyond Level 150, a normal party would have been able to clear the entire area without much of a problem.

By then, the chest would become something like a free gift. If the system had placed a Class A Inheritance fragment in there, then the value of having a Class A Inheritance would deteriorate.

"This is the first time this chest has ever been opened up. Yes, they only gave us a Class B Inheritance. But how about the second time, the third time and so forth? I believe others will only get Class C Inheritances!" Zhang Yang continued to say.

"Even if a Class C Inheritance came out just now, it would still be an Inheritance! It's still something powerful!" Hundred Shots added on.

"Well, this chest is valuable in its own right. Furthermore, we still haven't checked on the others yet."

"Fantasy, this fragment seems to be part of a broken staff. It looks like a Spell-type Inheritance. Do you want it?" Zhang Yang asked Fantasy Sweetheart.

She gave some thoughts about it and nodded. Although she would prefer more to get a Class A Inheritance for herself, the rarity of stumbling across one would almost be as rare as finding a Class S Inheritance. Up to this point, only Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had managed to get Class A Inheritances. Somehow it made people feel that it was much more difficult to find a Class A Inheritance than it is to find a Class S Inheritance!

It is true that Class B Inheritance was a little less proficient, everyone in the party was more or less equal in power. So if she takes it now, she would no longer be the one holding back the party.

"Let us turn out attention over here, the scroll!" Wei Yan Er laid out the second piece of the lot. It was a Magic Scroll.

[Forbidden Scroll: Absolute Binding] (Consumable)

Use: Binds a target, causing the target to have a 10% rate of being afflicted with Stun Effect for 10 seconds once every 3 seconds. Lasts for 6 hours. Absolute Binding will be effective on any target that is under Level 180.

Required Level: 100

It appeared to be a [Forbidden Scroll]!

"Yes! We hit the jackpot! Yeah!" everyone was cheering in tears of joy! At last, something worth fighting for!

Previously, Zhang Yang came across a Forbidden Scroll that could deal a tremendous amount of AoE damage to all targets within a vast area. However, this Forbidden Scroll could potentially be one of the best [Forbidden Scrolls] that could use to kill a boss! When being applied, the target would have a 10% rate of getting stunned. This effect would have a chance of kicking in once every 3 seconds. The boss might spend a third of the time immobilized, which would also reduce its DPS by that relative proportion!

On the other hand, such a wonderful effect could last for 6 hours long on the target! Imagine what this Forbidden Scroll would do to a World Class Super boss! It could definitely provide one hell of a benefit to such a boss battle.

Zhang Yang and his party have slain quite a number of bosses in the past. They even killed a few big bosses in the Main Story Quests. However, they only came across 2 Forbidden Scroll so far. It could be deemed that Forbidden Scrolls are extremely rare in the game.

Naturally, Zhang Yang was the one who kept the scroll. There was no

need for it if they were not going up against a World Class Super boss. However, they would really need what this scroll could offer them if they were going to battle against a super boss with extremely powerful AoE Skills, like Queen Serena herself.

"This should be the unique one-off item from the chest. The next person that opens this chest will not be able to get this anymore. Hehe." Zhang Yang smiled in joy.

"Indeed! Something we all agree on! It's extremely difficult to get one!"

Players from the other two parties did not know what Zhang Yang and his party got from the chest. Judging from the joyful looks on Zhang Yang and his gang's faces, they could deduce that the items they got from the chest must be something really good. They were so tempted to reach out and snatch everything from the chest over to themselves.

"So, what about the other three books?" Everyone looked at Wei Yan Er curiously. The books could be Skill Books, or they could be Recipes for a specific Profession. Well, their looks were basically all the same. The only thing that varied was their colors. They would need to look into them to know which specification they belonged to.

"Alright! The first book!" Wei Yan Er shouted out loud as he put up the description of the first book.

[Engineering Recipe: Repairing Machine]

Use: Teaches you {Repairing Machine}.

Required: Master Grade Engineering

Anyone could just guess what the Recipe was about by looking at its name. Meanwhile, there was only one person in the entire party with the Engineering Profession, Hundred Shots. So the Recipe went to him without any debate. Hundred Shots learned the Skill on the Recipe and posted out the description for the Repairing Machine.

[Repairing Machine] (Consumable)

Use: Place a Repairing Machine beside you. The Repairing Machine can

repair equipment for you and your friendlies. At the same time, the Repairing Machine will gather back some of the items that you don't need. However, the Repairing Machine consumes energy. The energy on the Repairing Machine is limited. Hence, you can only activate it for 5 minutes. Only the Engineers who are good in Engineering will be able to sue this sophisticated high technology machine.

Required: Master Grade Engineering

"Nice! A machine that repairs your equipment for free! That's really neat!" Wei Yan Er was the first one who reacted to the description. It was not because she could not afford the cost of repairing her equipment. It was her miserly wretched self. Forcing her to spend her own money from her pocket would be like killing her slowly!

"Who says that it's free?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Didn't the description say the machine will repair your and your friendlies' equipment?" Wei Yan Er began to get nervous.

"But it never stated that it's free! On the contrary, you need to pay for it! It's going to be very expensive as well!" Zhang Yang patted the little brat and gave a gentle punch to her face. Then he said, "You can still get discounts on the cost of repairing your equipment when you're in the Main City. However, you will need to pay the full amount of the cost of repairing your equipment. After all, the machine does not belong to any side."

"So does that mean that uncle Hundred Shots is going to be rich?!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes, "He can just make one and place it anywhere he wants. Others will have to pay him every time they want to repair their equipment. Wouldn't he be earning a fortune?"

"Hahaha! You stupid little girl! Didn't I just explain it to you? The Repairing Machine does not belong to anyone or any side. So the cost that you pay for the repair will go to the system and only the system!"

"Then who would be so stupid to make such a thing?!" Wei Yan Er felt annoyed.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "For example, when you're challenging a dungeon, you need not go back to the Main City to repair your equipment anymore if Hundred Shots put a Repairing Machine in the dungeon. When you're out in the Open World Map grinding your levels, you no longer need to travel all the way back to the Main City just because your inventory is full or your equipment is busted. You can save a lot of time, you know?"

"... well... it's not that bad after all."

"Of course! Can't you see that this Recipe only came out of a rare and unique treasure chest like this one?"

Well, though the little brat understood, she was not happy with it. As long as anything that involves her spending her own money, anything or anyone would become her mortal enemy! The little brat muttered on in dissatisfaction before she took out the second book.

[Skill Book: Lure]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Lure}.

Required Class: None

Required Level: 100

"Oh ho! I probably know what this Skill does!" Zhang Yang was feeling proud of himself. "When you use it on a target, there will be two different outcomes under two different circumstances. One, if your Strength is more superior than your target, you will be able to pull the target to you. Or, if your Strength is lower than the Strength of your target, then you shall be drawn to the target instead!"

"If that's the case, wouldn't it be only available to Warriors and Knights?" Fantasy Sweetheart asked out of her own curiosity.

"It all depends on how you will use it!" Zhang Yang smiled and said. "If you're not a Strength-type Class player, you can use the Skill on your friendlies and get away from the battle. It could get you out of a mess like an {Apparate}!"

"However, if you're a Strength-type Class player, you can save your friendlies from a serious mess or you can pull a target over to you while your friendlies could focus fire on that one target. The effect would be greater in that sense!" Lost Dream thought it through and spoke out his mind.

Zhang Yang nodded happily and said, "That's right!"

Everyone was looking at Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. By the end of it, everyone decided that Zhang Yang should have this Skill Book. Whenever Wei Yan Er engages in a battle, she would go all out crazy without a thought. She would not use the Skill for the sake of her other party members. So giving her the Skill Book would be a total waste.

Zhang Yang learned the Skill and pasted the description of that Skill. As expected, the description matched everything that he said earlier on.

[Lure]: Attempts to lure a target over to you. If your Strength is more superior than your target, you shall be able to pull the target to you. On the contrary, if your Strength is lower than the Strength of your target, then you shall be drawn to the target instead. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 5 minutes

Well, what can you say? That Skill was given to the right person after all. Zhang Yang had never lack Attack power up to this point. However, a Melee Combatant would always have trouble battling against a Range Combatant. Well, they would be short on legs because they would only be able to cause damage to their enemies when they were near enough. Range Combatant like a Hunter would usually use tactics such as kiting. For instance, in the open world, highly skilled Professional players like Seductive Wild Pussy could whittle away at Zhang Yang's HP as she flits about and kites him to his death. Hence, Zhang Yang would not have to fear something like that ever happening in the future ever again. This Skill could make him fearless against Range Combatants because he could use this Skill on any target within the range of 30 meters! So he would be having the absolute advantage in a battle against any player.

"This is the last book!" Wei Yan Er sounded a little dissatisfied.

[Alchemist Recipe: Create Identify Scroll]

Use: Teaches you the way to make Identifying Scrolls.

Required: Master Grade Alchemist

"Wow! It's an Identifying Scroll!" Zhang Yang was surprised and overjoyed at the same time.

"What does this Identifying thing do? Why are you so excited?" Han Ying Xue was curious. Why would he get so excited over a small piece of Recipe?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud before he explained, "You guys were complaining about having new equipment that only functions at 70% of their full attributes right? This so-called [Identifying Scroll] is like an Identifying master. As long as you have enough scrolls, you can identify any equipment or any weapon you like! That includes legendary weapons and equipment as well!"

"That's good stuff!" Everyone's eyes were glittering.

Every single equipment or weapon would require identification before they function at full capacity. For instance, Zhang Yang and his party members were currently wearing a few pieces of equipment that had not been identified yet. If they could use these [Identifying Scrolls] on their equipment and weapons before they engage with the monsters and bosses, they could perform even better!

"Haha! Now this is what I call to return from a heist fully loaded!"

Chapter 656: Light of the Rainbow

After distributing everything, the chest slowly vanished. The other two parties were finally willing to give up on their thoughts. It had proved to be impossible to slay the Frosty Ghost Dragon under 24 hours. Hence, the two parties decided to give up on the boss battle. Upon releasing their souls after their deaths, everyone was sent back to the other end of the Stone Bridge they were on.

Since they had no hope of taking down the boss, it would be better if they focus on killing the monsters to earn some experience points while they could still remain in the mist. After all, it was not easy at all to get their *sses over here. They had lost their chances of getting the treasure chest. If they also lose the opportunity to earn some experience points, they would have come here for nothing.

Zhang Yang and his party members did not leave the place immediately. They could still stay there for another 7 hours, more or less. Without wasting the opportunity to scoop up some experience points that lay before them, the gang started getting back from where they came in. On the way, they started slaying as many monsters as they could as they moved on. Everyone was violently collecting as much experience points as possible. After all, killing the monsters in this area would give them much more experience points.

However, the Inheritance Transformation forms of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had both come to an end. Hence, their pace of moving forward began to slow down a little. They played safe by taking on lesser monsters in each attempt. After all, they had claimed the treasure chest. They no longer required slaying bosses anymore. All they needed to do for the next 7 hours was to collect as much experience point as possible by using the safest method.

In the meantime, there were a few more parties entering the map as well. They were randomly assigned to each of the empty Stone Bridges on the map. However, these new parties were late for the 'party'. There weren't many bosses left for them to slay anymore.

The time was up. Zhang Yang and his gang were teleported out of the map. They reappeared at their initial spots.

Everyone set their priority to get back to the Main City at once. They wanted to identify their equipment and weapon as swiftly as they could. Meanwhile, Hundred Shots and Zhang Yang were also busy making their [Repairing Machines] and [Identifying Scrolls] other than identifying their equipment. They had acquired quite a number of high Tier equipment from their expedition in the mist. They had also received an abundant amount of experience points.

Even though they did not really earn a lot of experience point, those who had their experience bars over half managed to level up after they cleared the map. Zhang Yang had reached Level 133. It seemed that he would be staying on the top of the level ranking list.

Zhang Yang went over to the Identifying Shop first. He was very eager to see the attributes of Wei Yan Er's [Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] after it is identified. Well, after he manages to make his own [Identifying Scrolls], he would not be coming here to waste his money on this crooked Identifier anymore!

[Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] (Ethereal, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 13,006 - 19,006

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 4,212

{Level 5 Socket 1}

{Level 5 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 21%

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Note: This axe once belonged to a Blacksmith who kept dreaming about slaying a dragon. You've come across this battle axe among the loot of slaying the Giant Dragon. So you can guess the fate of that Blacksmith with your common sense. So stay silent and pray for the unlucky Blacksmith. Well, one must know your own boundaries!

The [Sword of Purging Devourer] had the same Attack Interval as this weapon. However, its Attack only ranged from 7,400 to 9,672. The difference between these two weapons was huge!

Zhang Yang inserted all the sockets on the two equipment with [Level 5 Power Stones]. Upon all the power-ups, Zhang Yang's Maximum HP had reached up to 509,390 (With Vitality Aura). Meanwhile, his Defense had reached over 8,680 and his Damage Absorption had reached up to 7,796 points. The most significant boost was his Attack. Now, his Attack ranged from 81,018 damage to 96,138 damage $((32,150 - 38,150) * 2.52)$.

Unfortunately, he would have to return this weapon to Wei Yan Er when she manages to reach Level 130.

Hence, Zhang Yang decided to put his priority on unsealing the third seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Currently, his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was just a Mythical Tier equipment. So, he could guess that it would turn into an Ethereal Tier equipment at the least after he unseals the third seal of the sword. It was most probably not possible for the sword to turn into a Holy Tier equipment just yet. The reason was simple. The lowest Required Level for equipping a Holy Tier equipment would be Level 170. Meanwhile, the quest to unseal the third seal of the sword was located within a Level 120-150 map. It would be absurd if Zhang Yang gets a Holy Tier equipment by completing a quest in a Level 120-150 map.

The materials for making an [Identifying Scroll] were not hard to gather at all. No herbs were required. They could all be found in the Shop. Materials like Mythical Gold Wires and Ancient Gear Shafts were also available in the Identifying Shop. However, their prices were not cheap at all. The cost for each set of the materials to make one [Identifying Scroll] was 100 gold coins.

Zhang Yang attempted to compare the cost of letting the Identifier identify an equipment and the cost of using [Identifying Scrolls] to identify an equipment. He passed the Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment over to the Identifier to check on the price. Apparently, it required 500 gold coins in order to identify the equipment. On the other hand, it would require 10 [Identifying Scrolls] in order to identify the equipment. That was a total cost of 1,000 gold coins there.

Well, he had the title 'Hero of White Jade Castle'. So he just had to pay half of the cost for every equipment identification and equipment repair. From that perspective, the cost of using [Identification Scrolls] to identify an equipment was the same as the cost of letting a [Repairing Machine] to repair an equipment. No more, no less. In other words, one must be willing to spend some money to get convenient.

However, Zhang Yang was currently rich enough to ignore such significant amount of money. So it was convenience that came first, before money.

Zhang Yang could keep 200 pieces of [Identifying Scrolls] in one slot of his inventory. Therefore, Zhang Yang only had to take two slots of [Identifying Scrolls] to have enough for everyone in his party to use.

After making the [Identifying Scrolls], Zhang Yang traveled over to the Kandiya Grasslands on his Phoenix pet. The three quest items required to unseal the third seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] were located around that area. Well, Zhang Yang was required to find one [Rainbow Light], one [Mythical Dense Water], and one [Scepter of Fate].

Following the indication of the quest, he first arrived at the Rainbow Village to locate the whereabouts of the first quest item, [Rainbow Light].

It was a soothing and pleasant little village. Flowers were blooming everywhere. Green moss was spread across the land. The place looked like a fictional land of peace where anyone could retreat from the turmoil of the world. It was peaceful here. However, the villagers were not human. They were all Wild Boarmen!

These creatures had the bodies of humans. They were all muscular and

strong. Meanwhile, they had the heads of ugly pigs with two long tusks coming out from beneath their lower lips. Their appearances looked wretchedly scary.

However, when Zhang Yang gazed from a high place down to the village, he realized that those Wild Boarmen were all green-named NPCs. So, it would be unwise to attempt murdering the entire village to get to the quest item.

Zhang Yang set his Phoenix pet down right by the entrance of the village. As the blazing bird approached the ground, the Wild Boarmen were startled by the appearance of a blazing giant bird. They thought that they were being invaded! So the Boarmen took out their weapons and pointed them at Zhang Yang and the Phoenix pet! They seemed very ready to engage in battle.

"Hey! I mean you no harm! Calm down!" Zhang Yang jumped down from the back of the big bird and unsummoned it. "Well, that big bird is always on fire. You'll have indigestion if you try to eat it!"

The Boarmen heard Zhang Yang and they looked at each other. Suddenly, they laughed out loud. Some of them were even rolling on the ground with their hands pressing against their stomachs while they were laughing hard.

Zhang Yang could not do anything other than frowning intensely. Did he say something that was really that funny?

"Human! Hahaha! You... haha... you're so funny.. hahaha! Are you a comedian that wanders around the world? Hahaha!" one of the Boarmen stood up to Zhang Yang and asked.

"My name is Zhan Yu. I'm a fellow Adventurer, a Mercenary. I'm here to see if I can get a job done for you!" Zhang Yang made a polite salute.

"You want to work for the great Wild Boarmen, us?" The same Boarman was talking, "Alright, then you should go have a chat with our chief. He's just living by the farthest house in the west side of the village. Maybe, you can really do something for us after all! However, are you sure that you're not one of those comedians?"

"No!" Zhang Yang summoned his Whitey and rode over to the house he was told about. The house was in the middle of the village actually. If he goes into the village with his Phoenix pet, the blazing flames on the big bird might have set every corner of the village on fire! After all, the houses and the facilities were all made of wood and dried grass. If that happens, these Boarmen would no longer act like the audience of a stand-up routine. Instead, they would be acting like beasts!

In a brief moment, Zhang Yang had arrived at the house by the far end of the west. He could only see that there was one Boarman sharpening his tusks. As for his appearance... well... all the Boarmen looked the same to Zhang Yang. He had no way of telling the difference between them.

[Shabu Canaans, Chief of the Rainbow Village] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 135

HP: 36,600

Note: The Wild Boarmen believed in the God of Lightning Canaans. They also believed that they were the sons and daughters, the descendants of Canaans! However, no one could have believed that a great and powerful, dignified god would actually impregnate a female piglet even if he accidentally takes a few hundred pounds of aphrodisiac!

"My respected chief!" Zhang Yang walked up to the chief and made a respectful gesture to show his respect. Then he got straight to the point, "I'm Zhan Yu, an Adventurer from White Jade Castle. I hope to earn some pocket money. So, I wonder if your village requires my service in any way."

"Zhan Yu from White Jade Castle? A human?" Shabu suddenly burst into intense laughter. He even flopped on the ground as he laughed. After laughing for what seemed to be half a day, he finally got back on his feet. "We are the great Wild Boarmen, the descendants of the God of Lightning Canaans himself! If we cannot solve the problem by our own, how would you, a human be able to solve our problems, then?"

Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile on his face. Then he said, "I can try! There's nothing to lose! If I can't get the job done, I shall not take a cent from you!"

"Humph! It's not that simple!" Shabu shook his head. Looking at the two tusks sticking out from his lower lips, he looked extremely ferocious. Then he said, "I can give you a chance, however! If you cannot get the job done, I will tear you into shreds and use your meat for our barbeque materials! The precious time of the great Wild Boarmen shall not be wasted by an insignificant human!"

F*ck you! That wretched f*cker was so free that he was sharpening up his tusks! What was so precious about his time?

Zhang Yang faked a laugh and said, "Fine!"

"Alright then! Since you have such confidence in getting the job done, I'll give you a job! Venture into the jungle and hunt 100 Jalhodi Tiger and bring 100 of their hearts to me!"

'Ding! Shabu Canaans has a quest for you: Hunt for the Jalhodi Tiger. Will you accept? '

Accept!

After giving Zhang Yang the quest, Shabu Canaans continued to sharpen his tusks. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang patted Whitey as he rode out from the village. Then, he summoned his Phoenix pet, lunged into the sky and made his way into the deep mountains.

[Hunt for the Jalhodi Tiger] (Difficulty: Rank-D)

Description: The hearts of the Jalhodi Tiger can be used to make some booze for the Wild Boarmen to drink. Drinking booze can increase their productivity by at least 3 times! Each Boarman will have to slay a Jalhodi Tiger in order to prove themselves in their Adulthood Ritual. They will have to take out the hearts of the Jalhodi Tiger and take them back to make booze. They will be drinking the booze on their wedding night! Warrior, if you want to work for the great Wild Boarmen, hahaha, then prove yourself worthy of being deemed as an adult first!"

Completion: Collect the hearts of the Jalhodi Tigers 0/100

It was merely a Rank-D quest. Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He made haste into the jungle. He could hear the roaring of beasts all around him.

The Phoenix landed on the ground and opened up its beak. Then it began to spread hellfire across the surroundings. A yellowish beast that looked like a wolf but also looked a little like a leopard was caught up in the blazing sea of flames. Its HP bar was reduced down to 50% in just an instant. Before the beast could even react to what just happened, Felice struck out with her lance and took out the beast immediately.

[Jalhodi Tiger] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 128

HP: 33,920

Defense: 2,120

Melee Attack: 9,748 - 13,748

Skills:

[Pounce]: Pounces on a target and cause 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. The target will fall to the ground and the target will be interrupted in the progress of chanting.

Note: Jalhodi Tigers are not real tigers. They are actually the descendants of the mixture of two species, the Coyote and the Leopard. Their weak bodies allow them to defeat even the jackals and the wild dogs!

...so these were the beasts that the 'great' Boarmen needed to kill to prove themselves in their Adulthood Ritual?

Zhang Yang could not hold his laughter anymore. This tribe was really good at making people laugh! They were definitely one of the best!

Upon its death, that Jalhodi Tiger dropped a few pieces of [Tiger Fur]. However, there were no signs of any sort of hearts. Well, it seemed obvious that the drop rate of the quest item was random. If Wei Yan Er was there, she would definitely be scratching her head, wondering how could the monster have lived without a heart.

The Phoenix pet carried Zhang Yang on its back and flew forward. Zhang Yang's current Attack was high enough for him to kill a Jalhodi Tiger two times over with only one hit from his {Spear of Obliteration}. He

had no problem at all in collecting the quest items. Although the drop rate was random, Zhang Yang had collected about 80 hearts after going around the jungle once.

Because of his divinely powerful equipment, pet and Battle Companion, Zhang Yang had no issues at gathering the quest items. Well, normal players would not have such powerful equipment. Zhang Yang only took approximately 15 seconds to slay one Jalhodi Tiger! How the hell can normal players do that?

In less than 20 minutes, Zhang Yang managed to collect a total of 100 Jalhodi Tiger's Hearts. So he headed back to the Rainbow Village to claim his prize.

When ZhangYang handed over the 100 hearts to Shabu Canaans, he was extremely shocked to see that Zhang Yang was actually capable of completing the job. His face was filled with astonishment and he said, "Human, I can't believe that you have actually such great capability in you. I've underestimated you! Could it be that you're actually one of us, the great Wild Boarmen?"

What a narcissistic f*cker! He was behaving just like the Red-skinned Orc!

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Hunt for the Jalhodi Tigers. You have received a reward: 500,000 experience points!'

As expected. The quest was simple, so the reward was simple as well.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "My respected chief, now that I've proven myself, can I be of service for the great Wild Boarmen now?"

"Yes! Yes, you can!" Shabu Canaans nodded immediately. He looked at Zhang Yang from head to toe, as if that he was trying to look for any sign of proof that Zhang Yang might be one of his 'pig'-kind. After putting in all his effort on trying to make a connection between Zhang Yang and the Boarmen for a moment, he suddenly widened his eyes and pointed his finger at Zhang Yang's eyes! "Your eyes! This must be it! You have the eyes of a Wild Boarmen! I've been wondering the moment I saw you! How could a warrior like you be one of those pathetic humans! Just think about

it! The blood of the Wild Boarmen is flowing strong beneath your veins! There's no doubt about it! You're so strong because you're one of the Wild Boarmen!"

You are the boar! F*ck! Zhang Yang launched out his fist straight into the face of that wild boarman with all his might. The boarman was sent flying into the wall of the room by the impact of Zhang Yang's punch.

Shabu Canaans rolled around the ground in pain for a while before he got back on his feet. However, he was not mad at all. Instead, he was smiling with joy! Then he said, "Zhan Yu! Your strength is really admirable! That's great! You shall be the pride of the Wild Boarmen! Maybe one day you might even get the praise from our ancestor himself! You might even get an audience with the great Canaans himself!"

"My beloved chieftain! Can we just get straight to the point now?"

"Alright! We shall do that! Listen carefully, Zhan Yu. I have a very important yet dangerous quest for you. The outcome of the quest shall bear the fate of the entire Rainbow Village!" Shabu suddenly changed the expression on his face. He became surprisingly serious all of a sudden. "I need you to gather some feathers of the Crimson Fire Harpies!"

'Ding! Shabu Canaans has given you a quest: Gather the Feathers. Will you accept?'

Zhang Yang accepted the quest without any hesitation.

"Zhan Yu, please be extra careful on this. Those Harpies are extremely ferocious and deadly! Those Jalhodi Tigers are merely little kittens when you compare them to the Harpies!" Shabu Canaans told Zhang Yang with caution and care. It was probably because he did not want to see this 'piglet' of his kind face any unfortunate fate.

"Rest assured, I will get the job done!" Zhang Yang felt a chill up his spine while Shabu Canaans was staring compassionately at him. He quickly rode on Whitey and left the place as swiftly as he could. Upon reaching the entrance of the village, he summoned his Phoenix pet out and made his way to the Scorching Amber Canyon.

Chapter 657: Gathering the Feathers

The Scorching Amber Canyon was located by the north side of the Rainbow Village. While Zhang Yang was flying towards the canyon from afar, he could see Harpies gliding around the sky above the canyon. Their numbers was so shockingly high that they blotted out the sun! It looked like they were building an army or something.

These Harpies had bodies and faces of normal humans. However, their feet were the claws of the birds. The tips of their claws were so sharp that they could easily crush rocks! Their arms were actually their large wings which kept them in the air.

These Harpies were all female. They were basically naked. Some feathers covered up the vital parts of their chest and the part in between their legs. Well, it was an enchanting scene to gaze upon, for men! Well, their waistlines were perfect. Their boobies were simply glorious! Their hips were so desirable! The perfect curves were definitely present on every single one of them. If you omit the fact that they had those claws and wings, every single one of them could potentially be hot and beautiful women!

These Harpies were called after the name of 'Crimson Fire Harpy' for one simple reason. Their wings were so red that they looked like they were on fire, fire that was blazing hot that anything close to them might get scorched immediately. It was really a marvelous vision to gaze upon. However, they did not seem to be marvelous anymore when they are compared to Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet.

[Crimson Fire Harpy] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 135

HP: 2,700,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 19,298 - 23,298

Skills:

[Wail]: Causes the target to run blindly in terror. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Scorching Burns]: Scorches the target and afflicts the target with Burn Effect. Causes 30,000 Fire Damage to the target.

Upon reading the description of the Skills, Zhang Yang could only frown intensely. Those Skills had effects that could potentially give him a hard time if he lures too many monsters over to him. If the monsters could chain up a consecutive Status Restriction Effect on him, he would be as good as dead, even if he has over 1,000,000,000 HP!

From that perspective, the most difficult part about battling a boss was the fact that the boss would mostly not be affected by Status Restriction Skills.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

Zhang Yang struck one of the Harpies that was wandering by the bottom of the mountain. The Harpy was annoyed for being struck straight in the face. It immediately let out a screech and charged towards Zhang Yang, reaching out with its sharp claws.

Felice had already transformed into her Dragonhawk Form before Zhang Yang had launched his assaults on the monster. She launched her {Fire Missile} at the Harpy. The Phoenix pet did not stay idly by the corner. It also spat out flames straight on the Harpy and caused a tremendous amount of damage to it. With these two crazily powerful attackers, the Harpy lost approximately 90,000 HP in an instant!

"Argh!" The strike from the Harpy's claws was blocked by Zhang Yang with his shield. Well, he did activate {Block}. In the meantime, Zhang Yang swung his axe and caused nearly 84,000 damage to the Harpy the moment its claws made contact with Zhang Yang's shield. The Harpy was in so much pain that it screamed and trembled. Feathers were falling off its wings as the thunderous blow rolled past it.

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-258,902!’

The Rage Bar had hit its ceiling cap at the moment. Zhang Yang had no

reason to hold back at all. He struck the Harpy with his {God of War Devastation} and caused a damage that was nearly 3 times of his Melee Attack. That was quite some damage he did there!

Even though the Harpy had over 2,700,000 HP, it could not sustain so much damage like how it did back there! It let out a deafening screech and a visible supersonic wave forced its way into Zhang Yang's brain. Zhang Yang felt a sting in his head. Immediately, he lost control over his own body and ran around while he was riding on the back of his Phoenix pet.

{Warrior's Will}!

Without a doubt, he activated his Skill to break himself free from the Terror Effect. Then, he carried on dealing damage to the Harpy that had gone berserk.

"Phew!" The Harpy did not cease its assaults on Zhang Yang. It immediately spat out endless flames. Unfortunately, it could cause merely 16,204 damage on Zhang Yang even though it had over 30,000 basic damage. Zhang Yang had over 800,000 HP after mounting onto the Phoenix pet. So, 16,204 damage was just a piece of cake for him.

Zhang Yang was launching his assaults on the Harpy like he was chopping vegetables. He was also supported by Felice and his Phoenix pet as well. With the three of them dealing a substantial amount of damage to the Harpy, the Harpy was losing its HP faster than it could breathe!

The cooldown of {Wail} was 1 minute. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang only required lesser time than that in order for him to remove a total amount of 2,700,000 HP. Furthermore, he had help from Felice and the Phoenix pet. The Harpy was taken down to the ground by the three of them in less than half a minute. Zhang Yang earned quite a substantial amount of Experience Points after slaying the Harpy.

As the game progresses on, the difference between the performance of a normal player and the performance of a high Tier player would differ more and more. Usually, it would take about a party of 5 normal players to take on this kind of monster. It would be essential for the party to have a Tanker, A Healer and two DPS players in order to slowly deplete the HP of

this monster. However, higher Tiered players do not need to worry about their own HP bars at all. They only needed to make sure they could deal as much damage as possible to the monster before their own HP bars go empty.

Under the current circumstance, Zhang Yang only lost approximately 110,000 HP. He only lost 14% HP as he was mounted on his pet. With that much HP, Zhang Yang could take on 7 of these Harpies before being forced to take some [Snacks] or [Bandages] to recover his HP.

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: Crimson Fire Harpy’s Feather X 3!’

The first few monsters he slew had dropped the very quest item he was searching for. However, the quest required Zhang Yang to collect 1,000 feathers. It seemed that this quest would get Zhang Yang going about in the jungle for quite a while.

Zhang Yang had also wondered if there was a possibility of a boss existing among these massive flock of Harpies. Zhang Yang went on to lure a second Harpy over to him as he had such thoughts on his mind. However, he soon realized that it was unlikely that a boss would exist among a massive horde of monsters.

If he takes on one monster at a time, it would not even be a challenge for Zhang Yang to take down that one monster. However, if Zhang Yang lures too many monsters over to him at the same time, he would be in deep trouble if the monsters chain up their Status Restriction Skills on him perpetually. {Wail} could last for 10 seconds, and it had a cooldown period of 1 minute. Hence, having 6 of these Harpies chaining up their Status Restriction Skills consecutively on him would be enough to lock Zhang Yang in until he is tortured to death!

No one could afford to challenge a bunch of monsters with Status Restriction Skills!

Zhang Yang shook his head and continued on gathering the feathers.

The quest did not request that Zhang Yang slays any specific monsters in order to get the feathers. Therefore, he did not go deeper into the canyon. He only wandered around by the outer skirt of the canyon. Well,

as long as he slays a Harpy, there will be a possibility of the quest item dropping. He had no reason to risk his own life venturing deeper into the canyon all by himself.

More than three hours later, Zhang Yang finally gathered 1,000 Harpy's feathers. He headed straight to Rainbow Village to hand in the feathers.

"You indeed have the blood of the great Wild Boarman flowing in your veins!" Shabu tapped on Zhang Yang's shoulder and praised, "May the great Canaans bless you always!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Gather the Feathers. You have received a reward: 5,000,000 Experience Points!'

Although it was not much of a reward to receive, Experience Points were hard to come by these days. It would be better than getting nothing at all.

"Zhan Yu, we can't just stop here. Not yet! We must hustle up and do our best! I need you to collect 20 Complete Snake Bones of the Onibi Coastal Taipan. Well, they're snakes. By having their bones, I think we can finally get that Sacred Keepsake!" Shabu was filled with a sense of joy.

'Ding! Shabu Canaans has a quest for you: Collect the Snake Bones. Will you accept?'

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "My respected Chief, just sit tight and wait for my return with good news!"

"You're the warrior of the Wild Boarmen, the pride of our Rainbow Village! I believe that you will prevail!" Shabu Canaans raised his piglet nose while talking with pride. It seemed that he actually believed deeply in everything he just said!

Zhang Yang left in begrudgingly as there was no way for him to get through to that wild boarman. He made haste out of the village and went straight for the Blue Water Pond located by the east side of the village.

It was a vast water pond. The water of the pond was aquamarine in color and there was no telling how deep the pond would be, because the water was not crystal clear. The surface of the pond looked frosty, though. Cold vapor was rising from the surface of the water, freezing the air above the

pool. The process formed a mist above the surface of the pool. The scene was spectacular to gaze upon. However, that spectacular scene was ruined a little by the 'infestation' of countless python-like creatures. The smallest of them all were at least tens of meters long. Their bodies were as thick as the mouth of a large bowl. Meanwhile, the large ones were about 40 to 50 meters long. Their bodies were as thick as the waist of a grownup man! They looked like small mountains when they curled themselves and rested by the water pond!

[Onibi Coastal Taipan] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 140

HP: 2,800,000

Defense: 3,780

Melee Attack: 20,834 - 24,834

Skills:

[Tail Whip]: Whips the target with its powerful tail of steel, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Bind]: Binds the target with its snaky body. If the target cannot deal 300,000 damage to the Onibi Coastal Taipan, the target will die of suffocation. On the contrary, if the target could deal 300,000 damage to the Onibi Coastal Taipan in time, the monster will unbind from the target.

These monsters actually had an Ultimate Skill?! What the hell!

If a player gets themselves tangled up by one of the snakes, they would have to deal 300,000 damage to the Onibi Coastal Taipan or they'd be dead! That would require a DPS of 30,000 damage! It would not be a problem if there is a party around. However, if there are only one or two players in that situation, it would be extremely difficult to deal so much damage over the span of 10 seconds.

However, Zhang Yang was deemed to be one of the top Tier players in the world. A DPS of 30,000 damage was just a walk in the park for him! Phoenix and Felice could already deal 20,000 damage in one second. Even

if he stays idle and does nothing at all, the two of them could get Zhang Yang out in no time!

Against such monsters, Zhang Yang was not stupid enough to lure too many monsters over to him. It was not a big deal if one Coastal Taipan came and binds him up. He could easily break himself free from the Coastal Taipan and slay it. However, if a few Coastal Taipans comes over and bind him up, the situation would be very different.

As usual, Zhang Yang started up by throwing his {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Coastal Taipans and engaged in battle.

The Coastal Taipan was moving very agilely towards Zhang Yang. Its two aquamarine-color eyes were filled with murderous intent.

That Coastal Taipan was at least 30 meters long. Long before it could reach Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang could smell the foul breath of the snake. When the snake opened its mouth wide, two huge fangs emerged, and it was terrifying to look at!

For normal players, battling an Elite Tier monster is almost as hard as battling a boss. Just look at this Onibi Coastal Taipan. It had its very own Ultimate Skill that could potentially kill a player in an instant. The player would be required to deal 300,000 damage to the snake within 10 seconds in order to prevent the snake from killing anymore with that Skill. Well, 5 players were required at the very least to be able to deal such an amount of damage.

The moment when Onibi Coastal Taipan arrived in front of Zhang Yang, it activated its {Bind} straight away. The thick body of the snake curled around Zhang Yang and wrapped him up tightly.

Slash! Slice! Slash!

Zhang Yang swung the battle axe repeatedly at the body of the snake as hard as he could. The damage values popped out one after another, as Zhang Yang slashed the snake up. Meanwhile, Felice and Phoenix pet did not just remain idle. They also fired away.

In just 5 seconds, Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet managed to deal

300,000 damage to the snake. The Coastal Taipan loosened up its body and activated its {Tail Whip} straight away on Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the whip attack from the snake's tail. His Strength attribute was way beyond the Strength of the Coastal Taipan. Even though the Coastal Taipan came at Zhang Yang with an imposing figure, Zhang Yang did not flinch at all. He stood his ground firmly while battling against the monster.

"Stinky snake! Just die!" Felice imitated Wei Yan Er and scolded the snake as she was launching her assaults at the snake. She did not forget to add in some phrases and words in-between her attacks.

"Hiss!" The Coastal Taipan hissed out its tongue and launched its assaults on Zhang Yang once again.

As long as Zhang Yang is able to break free of the {Bind}, a Coastal Taipan appeared to be easier to kill than a Harpy. One main reason was that when the Coastal Taipan activated its {Bind}, it would not be able to launch any other assaults. It would be standing still for others to hit it for free. Therefore, the Coastal Taipan could deal much lesser damage to Zhang Yang than a Harpy could!

Back then when he was battling against the Harpies, he would need to take his [Snacks] to recover his HP after taking down 7 of them. However, he could take down more than 10 Coastal Taipans before he is required to take his [Snacks]. His efficiency had increased by 50%!

However, even though every Coastal Taipan would drop a Snake Bone upon their deaths, not every snake would drop a Complete Snake Bone. Some were either broken or damaged. Although the quest only required Zhang Yang to collect 20 Complete Snake Bones, it still kept him going for more than 3 hours in order to collect enough number of the quest items. The quest was not much simpler compared to the previous one.

Chapter 658: Hartens

Zhang Yang returned to Rainbow Village and submitted the quest, obtaining 5,000,000 experience points as a reward. Even though 5 million experience points was not a small amount, Zhang Yang EXP bar had merely budged by a tiny tick. Zhang Yang could not really do anything about it when it comes to leveling. It was really getting tougher and harder to gain levels.

"HAHAHAHA. snort You have to be a pig! A pig, I'd say!" Shabu was extremely delighted as he held Zhang Yang's tiny hands in his massive hooves – hand hybrid limbs.

Being called a pig by a pig...how does someone react to such a... comment? Should Zhang Yang be happy? Or angry...? With all the right mind, Zhang Yang would not want to be a pig...he quickly addressed another issue to change the topic. "Chief, I heard about something concerning a Sacred Keepsake?"

"Hahaha. That, my little piglet, is the secret of Rainbow Village! No one can know about! However, I'll willing to tell you, for you have the blood of the boar in your veins. As far as I can tell, you're one of us!" Shabu snorted happily.

"It was thanks to the Sacred Keepsake that the village was named Rainbow Village. It was a Violet-Platinum Pillar, inherited since the ancient beings roamed the earth. Placed in the Seven Color Pool, the Sacred Keepsake will radiate the colors of the rainbow!"

"After refining, the Rainbow Light can be made into Rainbow Crystals. We sell the crystals to merchants to provide daily necessities for the village. To put it mildly, it's our only source of income!"

"Something must have happened then. Was the keepsake stolen?" Zhang Yang asked blatantly.

"That's right." Shabu sighed. "A few months ago. A Mountain Giant raided our village and took the Violet-Platinum Pillar! Without the pillar or the pool, there are no other means of producing the Rainbow Crystal!"

As of now, we have only enough crystals left for 3 days! After that, we will be out of resources!"

"We may be the proud sons of the god, but the Mountain Giant is just too strong for us to handle. We have carried out many raiding attempts, but we were never been able to defeat the d*mn stone golem! HOWEVER!" Shabu suddenly exclaimed.

"We have found a way to turn the tables around! Instead of defeating the stone golem, we only need to lure him out of the cave where he had stashed the keepsake!"

"However...sigh...That lazy *ss stone golem is as lazy as us boars! He loves to laze around in his cave and he would never leave the place! Moreover, every time he leaves the cave, the golem would close the cave with a giant stone! We have no power or means of moving the door away!"

"After sometime, I have crafted a strategy. Since the stone golem loves weird, flashy things, we can make that sort of thing easily, to lure him out of the cave. We can put the bait somewhere close to the cave, and he would not cover the cave, then!"

"We have never had warriors would could defeat the harpies nor the snake. Thus, we have never been able to craft the bait for the strategy! Until you came! Zhan Yu! The true warrior of the boars! In the name of Canaans and the savior who he had sent us! My plans to retrieve the keepsake shall be a success!"

While Shabu was happily indulging in his pseudo-victory, Zhang Yang was frowning madly. Since they had been battling for many rounds, could they not create a sneaky squad to steal the keepsake while the battle team keeps the golem occupied?

"Zhan Yu, Warrior of the Wild Boarmen, would you steal the Keepsake for us?" Shabu asked Zhang Yang with hopes in his eyes. Could he not? Sigh...

'Ding! Shabu Canaans has a quest for you: Steal the Sacred Keepsake. Would you accept it?'

"I will do my best."

Shabu smiled with his tusks sticking out from his upper lips. "I like your response. Take this. Use it timely and lure the stone golem out of his cave! Zhan Yu, this mission requires speed like never before. I wish for your safe return."

‘Ding! You have obtained: Sparkling Bait!’

[Sparkling Bait] (Quest Item, Usable)

Use: Place it on the ground to lure the Mountain Giant out of its cave. The bait will create a loud noise to attract the golem out. You will then infiltrate the cave while it is occupied by the bait. Speed is the essence of victory. Slow, and you all be caught and killed by the golem.

All and all, Zhang Yang had no need to fight, but to steal and run!

Zhang Yang left the village and flew towards the mountain region with his Phoenix pet. Zhang Yang flew west and after two large and long mountain regions, he descended downward until he could already see the mountain giant's character.

Weirdly, the giant was not hiding in its cave hiding nor sleeping as what Shabu had told him. The golem was in the middle of a fierce battle.

[Hartens] (Ethereal, Elemental Being)

Level: 140

HP: 240,000,000 / 300,000,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 70,044 – 90,004

Skills:

[War Stomp]: Sends a violet quake, deals 80,000 physical attack to all targets within 50 meters.

[Maiming Maul]: Deals 150% melee physical attack, causes the target to receive 20% additional damage for the next 10 seconds. Effects cannot stack.

[Elemental Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds, recovery rate cannot be affected by any skill.

Note: Hartens is an extremely lazy Mountain Giant. The only thing that could entice it to move are shiny objects.

How was there a war in the middle of nowhere...Could it be a guild attacking the boss?

Zhang Yang unsummoned the Phoenix pet and peeked carefully without exposing his position. The boss was fighting on flatlands and there were three squads fighting around the boss and three squads fighting elsewhere. The weird part was the fact that the players surrounding the boss were not just fighting the boss, they were also fighting amongst themselves!

Zhang Yang took a closer look and understood the reason. There were two guilds, The Myth, and Sengoku Daimyo.

The Myth was formed by Zhang Yang all-time enemy, while Sengoku Daimyo was a guild that had 99% Japanese players. Each player that belonged to Sengoku Daimyo had the tag "Japan-Korea Region", highlighted with a deep reddish outline.

If Zhang Yang were to guess correctly, the two guilds should be there for an Inheritance quest kill. Supposedly, the stone golem, Hartens was the Inheritance final boss, and they were there, coincidentally for the quest item. Zhang Yang understood the need for war. A quest boss cannot be allowed to be killed by another guild! Especially when the boss was one of the few bosses in a high leveled map! That sort of boss will only respawn after a month (real time). Who could wait that long! Furthermore, the Ethereal tier drops were so valuable right now! Since both guilds would not allow the other to have the boss, they had decided to have a fight till one emerges victorious.

The fight was between the boss, The Myth, and Sengoku Daimyo, with none of them, including the boss choosing either side. Every sides were attacking each other while they were constantly changing their formation to make sure they would have minimal casualties.

Zhang Yang stayed to watch and noticed that The Myth were not attacking as aggressively as their opponents. Even though he was unable to directly observe the damage dealt to each other, he could conclude that the boss was somewhat "sided" with the Myth. The boss was mostly attacking Sengoku Daimyo.

That sort of "cooperation" was intentional. Rather, the boss was affected by the aggro system and had been attacking those with the higher aggro values. Despite that, Hartens had powerful AoE skills which caused damage to The Myth as well. In the beginning, or rather, when Zhang Yang had started to observe, the two guilds were roughly on the same level. With a little time, and the boss' help, The Myth started to gain advantage over the war.

It did not take long for Sengoku Daimyo to notice the oddity in the battle and immediately stopped their attacks towards the boss. Instead, they switch their attack target towards The Myth. The reason they had stopped attacking was to allow all the players that the boss was attacking to die, and after that, the boss would resort to attacking randomly!

The boss' {War Stomp} was an AoE skill that could deal a powerful 80,000 damage to all enemies. Right then, even a Level 120 with a full set of Violet-Platinum armor would have at most, 80,000 HP. At the very least, they would have 120,000 HP when mounting on a Yellow-Gold battle mount. That was the strength of an average guild. If the player wanted a full set of Mythical tier equipment...or rather...a team of 50 men with full set of Mythical tier equipment...that would be an impossible dream. Perhaps, not for someone like Liu Wei.

If the boss were to go on a rampage, both guilds would inevitably suffer! Zhang Yang did not agree with the actions of the guild. As he continued to observe from the top of the mountain, he noticed something amiss. A group of tanks and healers had peeled off the battle and moved towards toward the boss. They then kited the boss away, far from the war. It seemed that someone had noticed the downside of allowing the boss to rampage and decided to act. However, there was still one aspect that they had missed out on. If the total DPS does not exceed the boss' regeneration,

it would be a complete waste.

The correct method of solving the problem was to eliminate one problem at a time. However, the problem that was present at that time was the enemy of both guilds were a guild and a boss!

Zhang Yang shook his head disapprovingly at their decision. However, it was by far, the best situation for Zhang Yang! He could nonchalantly enter the cave and take the quest item with no trouble at all! Instead of the Phoenix, Zhang Yang chose to use the Violet Thunderhawk to travel. The Phoenix was just too grand and conspicuous. The Violet-Thunderhawk was different. Zhang Yang shot through the air like a missile across the sky and zoomed into the cave. With the great, intense battle going on, no one would notice Zhang Yang's sudden intrusion. If he were to ride on the Phoenix, the long trail of flame would be a beacon of light in the vast void, anyone would notice him immediately!

The cave was large, but not too deep. Zhang Yang only flew for a few hundred meters and had reached its end. There, he found the item he was seeking for. It was a long, shiny pole with a little sharp end.

[Violet-Platinum Pillar] (Quest Item)

Description: The best toothpick ever!

WHAT?

Zhang Yang did not bother to examine the item, for when he thought of how the giant was using it as a toothpick ultimately disgusted him. Now that the item was in hand, it was time to leave. However, Zhang Yang grinned like a madman when he observes the still ongoing battle.

When wars are fought, the vultures shall be fed.

It was impossible for Zhang Yang to kill Harthens alone, even if he uses the God of War Inheritance. He could, if the skill {Berserker's Heal} had not been erased from the game. But then again, one does not need to work hard, if he works smart! If he sneaks into the battlefield and reaches out to the boss at the very last minute, he could practically loot all the drops without them noticing! It wouldn't even be a difficult task, to begin with!

Zhang Yang had no reason to let them have the better end, for neither Liu Wei nor the Japanese were on his good side.

Chapter 659: A Vulture

"This is boring..." said Zhang Yang as he yawned. He had been waiting for more than 20 minutes and the boss still had 82% HP left on its extremely long HP bar.

Luckily for the players down there, there were all above than Level 110. Or else, they would have been affected by the annoying Level Suppression system. Not that it mattered, since they were fighting the boss in such a chaotic situation! Either side would have to deal with the destructive attack of the boss.

On one side, Zhang Yang had forced himself to be awake, on the other, the players were having one of the most intense moment in their lifetime. As the battle continued to drag on, the two guilds had not wait for long to reveal their trump card. Many of them had used their Inheritance Transformation skills to speed things up a notch.

There were a total of seven players in The Myth who had used their Transformation while Sengoku Daimyo had only six. As such, the tide of war changed dramatically.

Inheritance players possessed the ultimate power to take down normal players and had high resistance towards non-Inheritance players' status effect skills. Plus, with their elongated HP and Defense, they would be invincible if they had a powerful team of healers to back him or her up. Furthermore, Inheritance players may have only 500% boosted single attack power, their card in the sleeves was their ability to attack in an extremely large area of 100 meters x 100 meters! Some may be only 50 meters, but it is still overwhelming when compared to a regular non-Inheritance player.

After a few minutes of EP charging, players started to unleash their accumulated power and started casting powerful and rather beautiful AoE skill all over the battlefield. The death toll of both sides of the war had shot up so high that it could break the graph!

The best performing players all time was Death Arbiter. He was one of

the few who had manage to gather a huge amount of popularity over an extremely short amount of time. His display of prowess was made even grander with the activation of his Demon Hunter Inheritance Transformation skill, along with the Mechanical Quad-Wing Tiger mount!

However, despite the flashy moves and bright skill animation, the one that had attracted Zhang Yang most was none other than Liu Wei.

The bastard had acquired the Demon Summoner Inheritance and was able to permanently have a Demon Lord by his side as a pet. Those who had been killed by Demon Lord will revive as a small devil to aid in him in battle. If he wanted to, the man could assemble an army of demon to do his bidding.

However so, he was just one man and one Demon Lord, the number of players that could fall in his hands were limited to a certain amount. Additionally, the man had assembled the same 12 Guardians by his side to chain cast the skill {Sacrifice}. The sort of stance, the posture he had right then, was enough to urge anyone in sight to kill him. The proud smug on that bastard had even Zhang Yang's blood boiling. In fact, it was not just Zhang Yang! His posture and all was a public provocation! As such, a large army of players had rushed over to him with a strong killing aura! Sadly, the man had an army of Guardians to protect him with their {Sacrifice}. If that was not hard enough, there were still B class Inheritance players standing in front of him as the absolute defense line. With their superior HP and Defense, not many normal players would breach the line that easily.

Zhang Yang had to hold his anger back and praised the man for his ability to craft up such a cowardly strategy.

The heat of battle had risen again. This time, it was almost reaching its climax. Both guilds were losing more players that they could replenish them. At most, Zhang Yang predicted that the battle with last only for another 5 minutes before a winner emerges. As such, the losing side could never turn the tables around anymore. Those that revived had only 20% HP. Those who had their dead bodies guarded will inevitably be killed with a single strike.

In a battle between two sides, whenever one has more death counts than the other, the losing side would never have the ability to recover anymore.

From the top of the mountain, Zhang Yang could clearly see that The Myth had the upper hand in the war. One of the main reasons was due to Death Arbiter amazing performance. That, and the party that he had brought along with him. Alone, he was not able to do as much. However, with a team of cooperative players by his side, he was able to perform more extraordinarily than the Japanese players. With intense vigor on his side, players of Sengoku Daimyo had lost their morale. Slowly, but surely, the players of Sengoku Daimyo had turned passive.

Liu Wei had predicted this and changed the battle strategy once the enemy had lost the will to fight. He then commanded the guild to focus their main attack target towards the boss instead of the players. Even so, he had still left a few strong players to hold back the line to prevent players of Sengoku Daimyo from reaching the boss. The man was greedy. With one hand on the boss, and another on the enemy, he was not willing to allow neither of them to get away from him. At least, until he was sure that he could get the loot of the boss; there could be a possibility that the boss will be killed before Sengoku Daimyo falls back. If that happens, he would have to make sure the players that are surrounding the boss were all his and none of the enemy's.

However impregnable Liu Wei strategy was, he had seriously underestimated the boss' prowess. Harten's single stomp could deal 80,000 damage to all. 80,000 damage may seem low for Zhang Yang, but it was extremely painful for the rest of the world. Neither The Myth, nor Sengoku Daimyo was as strong as Lone Desert Smoke, for they had players with strong equipment that could tank the hits like it was a mosquito bite.

If neither side had chosen to start the war whilst attacking the boss, one of them would have already taken down the boss. But then again, both sides shared the same strong headed attitude. Hence, the outcome.

With the boss' wild attacks, both sides had already suffered from massive casualties. Right then, most of the players from both guilds were attacking the boss instead of each other. White pillars of lights could be

seen as the battle continued. Those light pillars were signals that indicated players were falling and had their souls sent to the graveyard.

70%...50%... 30%...

With haste, the boss HP dropped quickly, as well as the number of players surrounding the boss. The main reason why Sengoku Daimyo was unable to replenish their forces was due to the vast distance from the graveyard to the battlefield. Most players had chosen to sacrifice their dignity and chose to revive directly at the graveyard. That way, they could travel via their mounts instead of running back to their dead bodies in their soul mode. It would take close to an hour if they had chosen to run.

However the situation develops, it was hard to tell whether the players would succeed in killing the boss.

Zhang Yang waited impatiently. There were many times where he almost dozed off, and was lucky to be awake when the boss' HP dropped to 10%!

Zhang Yang made his move and hopped onto the Thunderhawk. Right outside the line of sight, Zhang Yang unsummoned the bird and entered the ground via {Burrow}. He then made his way towards the boss and waited underneath its stone giant feet.

As the boss started to reach its deathbed, the player counts of both The Myth and Sengoku Daimyo was reduced down to only tens of players. The battle was headed towards a Pyrrhic victory. If either side wins, they would have done so at great cost. By then, Zhang Yang was deep within the earth. He was at least 20 meters beneath the boss. If he was any higher, he would be within the range of {War Stomp} and take damage from it.

9%...7%...3%...

Zhang Yang started moving upwards. Although he had already taken one instance of damage from {War Stomp}, it was a damage that he was willing to take voluntarily, in order to get close to be the first to grab all the loot when the boss is defeated! When the number of players started to drop even lower than before, Zhang Yang would emerge out the ground and deal a few hits to the boss.

8,000,000...

5,000,000...

2,000,000...

700,000...

Zhang Yang resurfaced and activated {Indiscriminate}. In a flash, he used {Blood Rage} gaining a large sum of Rage points. With the damage he had taken earlier from {War Stomp}, coupled with one more when he resurfaced, Zhang Yang's Rage gauge was full!

{Killing Cleave}!

‘-742,234!’

"AOUUURGHH!" The stone giant roared deafeningly and fell to the ground, dropping a mountain of loot.

In an instance, Zhang Yang experience bar expanded by a large bump. In a non-party battle condition, he had gained 50% of the total experience reward from killing the boss, since he was the player that had dealt the final killing blow.

Since the boss was too large, no one had witnessed Zhang Yang attacking. Since they were all in parties, the reduced experience points gain had led them to believe that someone from the other side had managed to land the killing blow.

"GRAB THE LOOT!" Liu Wei bellowed. "STOP THE JAPANESE!"

Both sides wanted to land a hand on the loots, hence, in a split second, the airspace was filled with flying arrows and magical arcane sparks that were meant to disable the opponent.

Zhang Yang was thrilled. He turned around to search for the loot pile and gobbled everything up.

In less than a few seconds, the place was swept clean, leaving nothing but dust and dirt for both guilds to cry about. However, even though both sides were blasting spells and skill to each other, not everyone would take the hit. When Zhang Yang was reaching his hands out to grab the last pair

of boots, another player's hands were in his way.

"HM!? You are...ZHAN YU!?" A startled voice was heard from the mouth of the player and it belonged to none other than the bastard Liu Wei!

"Ding ding! Correct, but no cigar for you!" said Zhang Yang with a grin and he slammed the 'Dragon Slayer' Battle Axe at Liu Wei.

‘-87,332!’

A powerful damage landed on Liu Wei, however, since the bastard was in his Transformation skill, the attack had made no significant damage to him. However, it was not meant to be. When he had used {Killing Cleave} earlier, he had used up all his Rage points to do so. Hence, with no Rage left, he had to start building up his Rage points again.

{Brutal Smash}!

Zhang Yang laid down a stunning skill and successfully stunned Liu Wei. The bastard had already used up all his status effect skills and status effect removing skills a few seconds back when the boss had fallen. Hence, with nothing left in his sleeves, Liu Wei the bastard had inevitably taken the hit. He could only stare in disbelief when he saw Zhang Yang picking up the last of the loot and waltzing away.

If Zhang Yang happened to have the sought-after Inheritance Fragment in his inventory, even the Inheritance quest item would have been snagged away!

"KILL ZHAN YU! KILL THAT MOTHERF*CKER!" Liu Wei bellowed at the top of his lungs and almost destroyed his voice box.

Zhang Yang bit down the urge to continue the fight. If the bastard had not used his Transformation skill, Zhang Yang could have easily killed the bastard without breaking a sweat. Right then, although he was a little bit discontented, he laughed with the satisfaction of taking all the loot and disappeared in the middle of the war with {Shadow of the Void}.

A few seconds later, the greatly disgruntled players could only stare in disbelief as Zhang Yang soared away in the sky, riding on his fiery Phoenix pet.

The two guilds were left with nothing else but the Inheritance Fragment. Hence, the battle to kill for the trophy continued raging. When there was nothing else left, at the very least, they would not allow the enemy to take away the one and only drop left, and that was the Inheritance quest item!

Zhang Yang smiled from ear to ear as he rode the Phoenix, back to Rainbow Village. Without a doubt, when two guilds were at each other throats, the vulture, that is Zhang Yang, had won it all!

"Nishishishi." Zhang Yang snickered at his own devilish act.

Zhang Yang opened his inventory U.I and checked his loot.

For an Ethereal map boss, Hartens had only dropped two Ethereal tier and two Mythical tier equipment. There were also one [Skill Point Crystal] and one skill book.

Zhang Yang had no need to review the Mythical tier and examined the two Ethereal tier equipment instead. It was a Leather Armor glove, and a beautiful radiant cape.

With the [Identifying Scroll] in hand, Zhang Yang immediately used the scroll on the cape. Since it was a cape for physical attack types, Zhang Yang casually took it for himself and swapped it off for the old cape.

[Rocky Cape] (Ethereal, Cape)

Vitality: +1556

Strength: +532

Dexterity: +532

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 3,110.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%.

Equip: Absorbs 458 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 2%

Level Requirement: 140

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Argh shuck...

Even though he was able to Identify the item right on the spot, he still needed to return to town to have the cape socketed with Gemstones.

Chapter 660: Phony Crap

Quicker than Death Arbiter, Zhang Yang had gained instant popularity in just 5 minutes. Both guilds, The Myth and Sengoku Daimyo had resorted to vent their anger on the international forums. Naturally, the contents of their post were ill-voiced. Most of it was simple insults for stealing their loot, and running away without a fight. All in all, the sort of actions that does not befit a guild master!

The Myth had even hired a few members of Rogue Family to stand at the entrance of Morning Town to insult Zhang Yang. Naturally, without Zhang Yang's master approval, a few members had launched an attack to get rid of the hooligans. However, before they could even start gathering, someone had stood out amongst the crowd stating that Zhang Yang had successfully stolen the boss loot despite having more than 20,000 players from each guild. With so many eyeballs around, how could they not be on the alert? What was there to blame, anymore?

The situation would be different if the thief were out stealing the loot from a boss that was defeated by a team of 5 players. That sort of movement shall be condemned by all players! However, if someone were to have the balls to steal a boss that was being attacked by two guilds with a total player count of 40,000, it was no longer considered to be thievery, but rather a feat that was worth praising for. Which guild would not set up perimeters to prevent any Thieves from infiltrating their formations? If anyone is still able to infiltrate the perimeters, break past several blockades, and steal the loot right under their nose, it would be a feat that is worthy enough of being praised.

Hence, when the two guilds had blatantly "broadcasted" Zhang Yang's evil "feat", they were merely helping him to advertise his achievement! Zhang Yang had chosen to lay low until they realized what they have done and ceased their futile actions. That turn, it was really a fold.

...

By then, Phoenix was the one out of the only two Legendary Beasts that

was turned into a pet. The other being, Fatty Han's pet. It may share the same tier as other Mythical tier mounts but this burning fiery bird was far superior in every way. One of which, its movement speed was the fastest by far. Like meteor in the sky, Zhang Yang zoomed through the skyline, leaving a trail of fiery trails that burned beautifully amongst the clouds. In a blink of an eye, Zhang Yang had returned to Rainbow Village.

After he had turned over the Violet-Platinum Pillar to Shabu, the older, fat Wild Boarman hugged the pole with a lover-like caress. While Shabu was having the time of his life, Zhang Yang cringed hard. The pig was rubbing his face on a monster's toothpick...

"snort sniff Hm? How is there some weird smell on the Sacred Keepsake? Perhaps the cave of the stone giant was extremely dirty!"

Whatever rolls your ball dude...

"Zhan Yu, Warrior of the Wild Boarmen, you have single-handedly saved the entire village. I, Shabu Cananns, hereby represent the entire village to express our appreciation." Shabu bowed.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Steal the Scared Keepsake. Obtained 5,000,000 experience points!'

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Pillar of the Soul!'

Hoho. An item?

[Pillar of the Soul] (Accessory, Violet-Platinum)

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 3%.

Use: Purges all status effect debuff. Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Level Requirement: 130

Hmph. Not bad. It was a common anti-skill accessory, though the [Pillar of the Soul] had an extra 3% damage and healing increment. Sadly, it was merely a Violet-Platinum equipment. Most importantly, it was an accessory of which a dungeon boss would never drop. Right then, there perhaps were countless of level 100 players that were still using level 50 or 60 accessories.

Sadly, [Pillar of the Soul] could only purge debuffs, but not grant Invincibility. At least a second would have been great. Then again, the item was just a Violet-Platinum tier, to have such stats would be considered good.

Zhang Yang bowed in return and asked, "Chief, now that the Sacred Keepsake is back in place, can it make the Rainbow Light?"

"Of course!" Shabu smiled. He then gestured for Zhang Yang to follow him towards the center plaza of the village. There, the chief called for the rest of the villagers to gather as he happily announced the return of the Sacred Keepsake. Everyone came closer and bowed towards Zhang Yang to express their thanks.

In the center of the plaza, there was a large water fountain that was spraying out water all over a pool. The light ray shone on it, emitting a beautiful rainbow. Shabu then placed the Violet-Platinum Pillar in the center of the fountain. With a little tremble of power, the rainbow that refracted out of the fountain grew brighter and wider. After the first wave of power trembled, a small piece of Rainbow Crystal dropped out of the air and fell into the pool. Shabu went ahead and picked up the thumb-sized crystal.

Zhang Yang interrupted Shabu and asked, "Excuse me Chief, could I have one Rainbow Light?"

It's called manners. If they would not give it to him, he could just snatch it and run.

"By all means. Now that the Keepsake is back, we can easily produce more than 10 Rainbow Light a day! You are the village savior! One? I'll give you 10!" said Shabu with delight. However, when Zhang Yang reached out his hand to retrieve the item, Shabu had only given him a single piece. Shabu then turned away with no intention to give Zhang Yang anymore.

Zhang Yang was extremely disappointed. He should have known not to trust a pig, for their words mean nothing! He had genuinely believed that the pig would give him 10 pieces! Luckily no one was around. It would be extremely embarrassing to let anyone know that Zhang Yang was tricked

by a pig.

After Zhang Yang had obtained the quest item, he left the village that was filled with pigs and boards (not literally), and headed to the next town called, Eskbeak Town. There, the item that he sought for was called the Mythical Dense Water.

Even though Eskbeak Town was located in the same map as Rainbow Village, the vastness of Chaos Realm had the two locations placed extremely far apart. Even with the super speedy Phoenix, Zhang Yang traveled for 4 hours before he reached the far, secluded town.

There, the town was filled with only humans. Occasionally, there were one of two dwarven explorers with a few more gnomes around. Zhang Yang paid attention to the dwarf that he was looking for, since the quest had indicated for him to search for a dwarf named Felma – Iron Hammer.

Zhang Yang switched to the Gold Eared Bear King to travel in town and asked for news of Felma. He then made his way to the west of the town and found Felma in a hardware store. The man was a red beard dwarf. Even his skin carried a certain reddish hue. Naturally, the man had a long bushy beard that was braided into several locks. He wore a pair of round glasses that is usually worn by engineers. His style was completely self-contradictory. He looked like the kind of person who would not dwell much into studies, yet the ashen hands indicated that he had been tinkering on some mechanical contraption. On the other hand, the glasses and his tidy beard indicated that he was a meticulous man.

[Felma – Iron Hammer] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 130

Note: Felma Hardware Store! There's nothing that he doesn't sell!

"Welcome. Young human. What can I do for you?" Felma nodded as Zhang Yang came into his store. He then opened one of the display cupboards and started to promote his products. "Would you fancy a Snow Lotus Core? Or perhaps this Frost Heart. How about a roll of Silk spun from the Golden Silkworm?"

Zhang Yang shook his head as he examined the store. There were many weirdly shaped items placed on display.

"Perhaps...are you interested in the Miracle Root that could increase your ahem by 5 inches?"

Zhang Yang frowned and immediately found a seat and sat down. Even so, he was still taller by two heads!

"I'm looking for the Mythical Dense Water."

"MYTHICAL WHAT?" Felma exclaimed.

"Mythical Dense Water. You don't have it? Oh well. I'll look for it at the other store."

Felma coughed and stood up. "What joke is that? There's nothing that I don't sell in my store! Human! Are you humiliating me?!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Ah. In that case, can I have a bottle?"

"I have them. But they don't come cheap." Felma did not move. He glared into Zhang Yang eyes and hurled out his hands, demanding money.

"How much?" said Zhang Yang impatiently.

"Three...Wait. No. 500 gold coins." Felma twitched a little, and Zhang Yang immediately spotted it.

"Deal." Zhang Yang handed over 500 gold coins to the dwarf. He then went to the back of his store and came back out with a bottle of pale looking water.

Zhang Yang took the bottle into his hand and felt that something was extremely off. The quest should not have been that easy!

[Mythical Dense Water]

Description: A valuable and rare item.

Something was indeed amiss. Even though he had obtained the item, the [Mythical Dense Water] that he had obtained from Felma did not contain the item tag {Quest Item}! In his quest log, the quest had indicated Rainbow Light as 1/1 yet the Mythical Dense Water was still 0/1! It was a

fake!

F*ck the dwarf! Greedy bastards!

Zhang Yang slammed the table and yelled, "Dwarf! What is this crap! You dare to cheat me with forgery?!"

"Fake?!" Falma yelled back. "Don't you dare try to spoil my reputation by imposing false accusations! I'll have you pay me 1,000 gold coins as compensation!" Felma jumped off the stool he was sitting on to stand toe to toe with the human. It only made him look even shorter in comparison.

Zhang Yang reached out and grabbed Felma's neck with one hand and grinned. "1,000 gold coins yeah? Here, have it in your face!"

WHAM! WHAM!

Zhang Yang slapped the cheater in his face so hard that it caused a powerful concussion to the dwarf. The dwarf was spinning around, disoriented!

"Hey! Is it enough? I have millions of gold coins here ready to be delivered to your face again!" said Zhang Yang.

The dwarf got a hold of himself and cried to stop. "No! Stop! Please!"

"Than, give me the real Mythical Dense Water!"

"URGH!" Felma cringed as he still trying to resist. However, when he saw Zhang Yang's face tense up and his right arm was ready to deliver his "money", Felma jumped and gave in. "I don't have the Mythical Dense Water! However, I do know where to get the real one!"

Zhang Yang waited for him finish his sentence, but he stopped talking and was rubbing his swollen cheek. "Well!? Continue then! Sit down! Tell me where is the Mythical Dense Water!"

"It's...somewhere far..."

"..."

Zhang Yang grew weary of his trickery and slammed the table. "I think you could still use a few more gold coins in the face to wake up."

"Wait! Wait! It's really in a place far away from here. In the Xixiluca Sea, west of the deep oceans lie ruins that was once called the Karxilor Palace. There were many merfolk living there but they were mostly evil pirates! Roughly four years ago, I have managed to find a bottle of Mythical Dense Water there. However, when I was on my way back to land, I was attacked by the wretched beings! If you are lucky, you can still find the Mythical Dense Water in their leaders' hand. His name is Dormian." Felma gritted his teeth as he spoke.

Zhang Yang stood up with such speed that he had scared the little, red bearded dwarf. Zhang Yang turned around and left the store without saying another word.

"Hey! Human! Wait. When I was attacked back then, I was carrying many other precious items with me. If you do plan to attack their lair, could you..."

Zhang Yang interrupted him and said, "1,000 gold coins for each item I find!"

"...You robbing me!"

"What are you talking about?! I'm robbing them!"

Zhang Yang didn't wait for long and left the town with the fiery bird.

Felma was right about one thing. Karxilor Sea was really far away. From the town, Zhang Yang would have to cross a Level 120 – Level 150 map called Gilstein. The total time taken would be close to 10 hours! However, Zhang Yang was not worried about it. The Phoenix will never get tired and could fly forever if it had to. Two hours later, Zhang Yang arrived at a place called the Cindia Flatlands, which was within the Gilstein region.

"Big brother..." Zhang Yang turned around when he heard Felice muttering something. The little girl was sitting behind Zhang Yang.

"What's wrong?"

"Felice can feel something down there. Someone...is calling to Felice!"

Chapter 661: Deep Sleep

It has been a while since he last talked to Felice. Right then, when Felice had suddenly said something that was completely out of the norm, Zhang Yang could not help but to think about her past. He had no idea of Felice's background.

She was a Battle Companion. Despite hatching out of an egg, the little powerful girl had a connection with the goddess of war! Whenever she goes berserks, she could even solo kill an S class Inheritance quest boss! If that is not weird enough, she also had the ability to morph into a Dragonhawk! What sort of being was Felice, really?!

Zhang Yang stopped the Phoenix and said, "Follow the voice that calls to you. I shall follow you from behind in case anything goes wrong."

"However, Felice thinks that Big Brother should go to Xixiluca Sea! Felice does not want to waste Big Brother's time." Felice shrunk in guilt.

Zhang Yang could have hug the little girl with love. The girl was so thoughtful! If Felice is an angel, the little Wei Yan Er would be the devil!

Zhang Yang smiled and pats her head gently. "Do not worry about Big Brother. Time is nothing for me."

"Okay!" Felice squeaked with delight.

She then morphed into her Dragonhawk form and shot downward to the land. Zhang Yang followed her closely from behind. As they reached a lower altitude, Zhang Yang noticed that he was approaching a sea of forest that spanned out as far as the horizons. The trees that grew in the forest were extremely tall; measuring up to at least 200 to 300 meters high! Aside from the color green, there was nothing else that Zhang Yang could see.

Felice flew freely and quickly, as if she knew where she was going. As Felice flew towards a fixed direction, her speed gradually increased to a point where Zhang Yang was unable to keep up. At a certain distance, Zhang Yang could have sworn that Felice's wings were emitting bright

radiant colors of the rainbow.

What was going on?

Out of the sudden, Felice dived downwards and submerged into the thick forest, disappearing completely from Zhang Yang's line of sight. Luckily, she was not really gone. Felice's icon was still visible in the mini-map. Zhang Yang was still able to chase after her.

After 3 to 4 minutes later, Felice stopped at a position. Zhang Yang went through several thick trees and came to her position easily as the trees were gradually growing sparsely around her position. Felice was standing close to a statue. There were no trees around the statue for several meters, making it a light beacon in the dark thick forest.

The stone statue was at least a hundred meters tall. If the tree were not taller, the statue would be extremely easy to spot from the sky. If Felice had not sense it, no one could possibly notice its presence.

Zhang Yang got down and walked towards the stone statue. After close examination, Zhang Yang was thrown away. Although there were green moss growing at most of the status, Zhang Yang could still recognize the face. The statue was craft in the image of the Goddess of War!

Felice was already in her human form. She stood silently and stared at the statue with eyes that speaks of longingness.

"Felice..." Zhang Yang called out to her, worried that she might be sadden.

"...could feel....energy inside...power. Its calling for Felice..." In trance, Felice did not respond to Zhang Yang call. She then slowly reached out her pearl white arms to touch the statue.

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to Felice. By then, when he had, he was already too late. Felice had already had her hands placed on the statue. Right then, both Felice and the statue glowed with a bright radiant light, forcing Zhang Yang to shut his eyes.

When he come to, Felice had disappeared. The statue however had somewhat renewed itself into a marbled, polished appearance.

Zhang Yang panicked.

"FELICE! WHERE ARE YOU! FELICE!" Zhang Yang shouted manically. Felice's dot in the mini-map had disappeared. She was also not in her Battle Companion U.I. She was gone.

"Big Brother..."

Zhang Yang turned his head violently towards the direction of Felice's soft voice.

"I am here." Her voice echoed in his head.

"Felice?! Are you trapped in the statue?! Don't worry. Big Brother will get you out!"

"Do not fear. Felice is in a safe place. There is a feeling of happiness and sincerity from within. Felice is not in harm's way..."

"What are you saying...?" Zhang Yang could not help but to feel worried.

"Big Brother...Felice will go to sleep now...Fear not Big Brother. For when Felice wakes up. Felice will be stronger. Felice could not explain why... Please leave Felice alone for a while...Felice will search for Big Brother when the time is ripe..."

The soft, sweet voice of Felice died down and she stopped talking.

With the intimate connection between the Goddess of War and Felice, Zhang Yang took Felice's word for it. He believed that the goddess would do no harm to her. Zhang Yang was at a loss. Such an event had never occurred in his life nor his previous life. Perhaps, Felice was the one and only battle companion in the entire game with such a lore hidden.

Zhang Yang lingered for a bit and tried calling out to Felice. However, after several futile attempts, Zhang Yang brushed off some dried leaves that had settled on the statue and said, "You best take care of my little Felice."

Zhang Yang trusted that Felice will be true to her word and search for him when she was done with whatever that was going on within the statue. He summoned the Phoenix pet and shot to the skies, leaving the

statue alone.

With Felice out of the picture temporarily, Zhang Yang was left alone in deafening silence. He then called the little brat out and teased her a little as a means of killing time. A was...rather fun to occasionally make fun of the little brat until she does her usual threat of unfriending you... biting your head off...or that sort.

After flying for close to seven to eight hours, Zhang Yang reached the borders of Xixiluca Sea. He continued towards the west to search for the palace under the water.

By the time Zhang Yang had reached where he was, Zhang Yang was only a dive and swim away from the Karxilor Palace, however, he chose to log out and wake up, for the time was already almost dawn. He had personally set a timer to wake him up at 6am, sharp. Zhang Yang got up, changed into his jogging attire and ran out of the mansion. He jogged to the nearest food stall and bought large bags of breakfast for the girls in his house. After breakfast, Sun Xin Yu went to work in her office and Zhang Yang went to his.

When he arrived to the office, he wanted to hide in his office to play some games after he was done signing a bunch of documents. However, when he came to the office, his secretary approached him and informed him of some matters. "Mr. Zhang. You have a visitor today. It's Mr. Lin. The Deputy Section Chief of the City Municipal Council."

Zhang Yang frowned. Although it was unavoidable for him to mingle with a few government officials since he was involved in a multi-million dollar business, most of the matters that involved higher ups did not usually require his individual presence. Why would someone from the Municipal Council would want to talk to him? For worse, the Municipal Council was remotely related to the business world!

No matter how much he sighed, the person was already there waiting for him. There was no way that he could sent him away. Even though he had Sun Xin Yu supporting him, he could not afford to make new enemies when a few lesser devils were still haunting him!

Zhang Yang came into the lobby and into the guest room. There, sitting on the grand sofa, was a thin, scrawny middle-aged man who was puffing on a cigar. Sitting by his side was a man with glasses. He was carrying a suitcase and was extremely well-mannered. Zhang Yang could tell since the man's sitting posture was stoic and bore no resemblance to that of a ruffian. The man was probably a secretary.

"Mr. Lin. Happy to meet your acquaintance." said Zhang Yang as he tried his best to be friendly.

The middle-aged man smiled and stood up from the sofa and held his hand out to shake Zhang Yang's. However, before he could speak, the man with glasses raised his voice. "Mr. Zhang, how dare you allow Mr. Lin to wait for you! Do you know how busy Mr. Lin?!"

Did the man just scold him when he was the one who came unannounced?

Zhang Yang was not famous for being patient. In fact, since he had been playing too much games lately, when he feels a conflict that could not be solved by talking arise, he would use his sword to do the follow-up "talk". Zhang Yang's eye widened with rage and he threw a killing glare towards the man who had just scolded him. Although he was not the kind of person that would pick a fight with random strangers, he would be the first to step on his head when he reaches his limit. Then again, as long as he is not the first person to throw the punch, Sun Xin Yu, the ultimate backup, would cover his sorry butt.

"Zhou!" Mr. Lin turned his head and silently muttered something towards him. The secretary immediately retreated to his back and kept quiet despite remaining visibly furious.

"Mr. Zhang. I am truly sorry for that. My visitation today was actually in a favor of another person. I'm inviting you to a tea party," said Mr. Lin.

Someone had sent a Deputy Section Chief from the City Municipal Council to send an invitation to a tea party to Zhang Yang. Whoever that person was, he was big time. It was a gesture to display his power.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Mr. Lin. You could have just make a simple phone

call or let this Zhou guy to send me a message? I'm honored that you would willing to make some time just to visit me."

The man in glasses was still fuming with rage, and when he heard what Zhang Yang had just said, he was even furious! Mr. Lin was a man who was extremely powerful in the city! Him, being the secretary to such a man shared a portion of that power! Zhang Yang had purposely been provocative to shame him!

"Haha! Nonsense. The honor of serving the citizens, that is the greatest aim for me. Isn't that what a public official is supposed to do?" Mr. Lin laughed.

Zhang Yang was thrown, the man could perhaps be a genuinely nice guy. If he stills reject his invitation, it would be an obvious act of hostility.

The three men left the building. Zhang Yang personally led Mr. Lin and Zhou the secretary out to their own private car. It was a black colored limousine and the car brought all of them around the city and arrived at a small upscale, uptown, grand, little tea shop. Although the little tea shop could seat not more than 10 people at a time, the place was heavily guarded with security. Zhang Yang knew about the place. It was only when he became the C.E.O of Silky Soft Holdings. Only those that are invited could visit the shop, and most of them were billionaire! Normal people like Fatty Han would not even have a chance to glance into the shop!

Inside the shop were hostess that beauty could rival Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue! They wore short little Qi Baos, fully emphasizing their voluptuous breasts and filled buns! Anyone could have mistaken this little shop for a 5 star grand hotel!

The beautiful hostess walked towards the car and opened the door. "Sir." The girl addressed with the utmost politeness. She then led all three of them towards the inside of the shop and towards the innermost part. Surprisingly, there was a room inside the shop which the lady gently knocked.

A manly voice roared from the inside saying, "Come in!"

Zhang Yang and the two other men entered the room and the hostess close the door behind.

The room was not big, but it was grand and was brimming with elegance. At the center of the room, there was a small tea table that Zhang Yang recognized that something that was handcrafted. Surrounding all corners of the room were four different types of sofa that spelled the word EXPENSIVE!

There were two young man sitting at the polar opposite of the room. In their embrace were hostess. They were indeed beautiful. Zhang Yang could not deny that perhaps his little john would love to have a little dig in their caves! One of them had even misbuttoned her clothing, allowing the fairness of her skin to expose to the men. If Zhang Yang were to guess, that particular girl just had her cavern system explored by the men in the room.

Sitting at the north of the room was a man that was roughly 26 to 27 years old. He had a handsome face. If he wanted he could have been a supermodel. When Zhang Yang came in, the man was still nonchalantly rubbing his hands underneath the girls' dress, which made them moan and twitched.

Sitting at the south of the room was the man that Zhang Yang could have killed not too long ago.

"My. My. What a crowd!" Mr. Lin laughed. "Allow me to introduce everyone here. This man here is Young Master Ma Zhi Hua from the Ma Family from Beijing. That man is Liu."

"LIU (motherf*cking) WEI." Zhang Yang muttered his name. Zhang Yang clenched his fist. He interrupted Mr. Lin and raised his voice.

"I don't know why you have to put up with such a dramatic action just to have me invited here. Perhaps you want me to see how pathetic you can be?"

"HAHAHAHA!" Ma Zhi Hua laughed as if Zhang Yang's angry utterance was a joke. At that, his actions alone was a declaration that he was much powerful than Liu Wei. Liu Wei said nothing. He merely smiled

awkwardly.

"Hm...Let's see. If we were to talk about age, I guess...you should be calling me your cousin brother!" said Ma Zhi Hua, as he laughed again hysterically.

Zhang Yang bit down his anger. "F*CK YOU. If you're my cousin brother, I'd rather be the father of a donkey!" Zhang Yang mentally scolded.

Chapter 662: Brain Dead

"I don't recall there being a branch family." Zhang Yang commented coldly.

"I don't see the reason that why she would tell you about it! After all, our family is the main branch!" Ma Zhi Hua denoted his statement with a stoic stance. "When I say "she", I meant my cousin sister. Sun Xin Yu."

Did he just claim to be Sun Xin Yu's elder cousin?

Zhang Yang examined his behavior and believed his words. Such a statement could either be true, or he had the balls to proclaim something as absurd as him being the ruler of China. However, even if he were to marry Sun Xin Yu, there was some sort of feeling that he was unable to shake off. Now that this self-righteous bastard was there talking bullc*ck, Zhang Yang felt that he was no one being married into a royal family. Everyone will be looking and judging him.

"Zhang Yang...I...I'm asking for peace between us. Let us shake it off and forget whatever that had happened past." Liu Wei stood up and solemnly held out his hands. The look of regret and fear in his eyes were genuine.

Perhaps only then he had realized who Sun Xin Yu was and what she was capable of. Perhaps that was the reason he would voluntarily offer his "non-conditional surrender". Furthermore, would not be for the best of he make peace with his rival. Even though he did not seem to have any sort of enmity towards Ma Zhi Hua. If he had not made peace with Zhang Yang, it will be Liu Wei himself be digging his own grave.

Even if he wanted to, he could not forgive what Liu Wei had done to him in his previous life. He would rather die than allowing Liu Wei to get the better of him! So far, he had even hired private investigators to dig out every past crime that Liu Wei had committed. As long as the investigators find the evidence, Sun Xin Yu could act and catch the bastard, red-handed.

Zhang Yang ignored Liu Wei's handshake and sat on an empty sofa. It was a deliberate move to declare that the war was not over.

Liu Wei sulked even harder and sat down to his seat with a long puff of angry breath. The girls that were his side attempted to console him but was awarded with a good slap to the face. Her fair white skin gained a red glowing palm mark.

"Fuh! Young Master Liu's quite the man, isn't he?" Zhang Yang scorned. He then lifted his index finger and gestured. "Come here, lady," said Zhang Yang with a soft, inviting voice. "Sit with me."

"You dare!" Liu Wei turned to the girl and snarled at her. He only dared to do so because the Liu Family was the dominant driving force in the region. Even if Sun Xin Yu was politically powerful, she had no power in the region. Her "reign" lay from afar and the Liu Family was the local dictator! With vast resources and fortune at hand, Liu Wei could do whatever he wanted there.

Liu Wei respected Sun Xin Yu even though she was generations after the real powerful members of the family. However, respect does not mean that he would surrender willingly and wait for his demise. Even the fish would struggle to break the net when it is caught.

The beautiful little hostess was conflicted. She knows that anyone who sets foot in the establishment was someone of power. Anyone of them would write her destiny. If she offends the wrong person, its either death or torture, figuratively and literally at the same time. Zhang Yang could see the look in her eyes that she had lost the will to stand on her own ground. She had become the toy that Liu Wei wanted, being thrown around like a valueless toy.

Zhang Yang felt the need to do something and he stood up immediately. Since Liu Wei had ordered the poor girl to sit by his side, she could not move without his permission. Hence, Zhang Yang waltzed over to the girl, dragged her by her hands, and brought her to his side without saying anything. He crossed his legs and threw a challenging stare at Liu Wei. If it was a fight of fists, no one in the room could take him, even if they were to jump at him at the same time.

Liu Wei was pissed. However, he knew when not to act. He too, had

investigated about Zhang Yang and found out the man had been growing up with fist fights and street brawls. His martial arts was not something a man born with silver spoon sticking out of his butt could compete with. If he still insists on fighting, there will be a 90% chance that Zhang Yang would beat the living crap out of him, till his mother could not even recognize his face!

Furthermore, he had Sun Xin Yu supporting him! Even if Liu Wei is beaten senselessly, nothing would happen. He might only be the laughing stock among his peers! But back then, when he was in Shanghai, he was imprisoned for nothing! The memories of being in the cold dark cell still haunt him till this day. However, if he were to allow Zhang Yang to continue his insolent actions, he would lose his dignity!

As such, Liu Wei was thrown in between two difficult situations.

"HAHAHA! I like this man! As expected of the lover of my cousin!" Ma Zhi Hua laughed loudly. Ma Zhu Hua broke the tense up atmosphere by clapping happily. Liu Wei took the chance to back away from the "fight", allowing him to end his "move" with a mere scoff.

"Old Lin! Sit! Please sit down! Why are you still standing for?" Ma Zhi Hua was surprisingly proactive in reading the atmosphere of the room. He noticed that Mr. Lin and his secretary was shrinking away to a corner as Zhang Yang and Liu Wei were silently having their intense fight. Ma Zhi Hua was less than 30 years of age, yet he addressed Mr. Lin with such casualness that it expressed Ma Zhi Hua's higher position.

Mr. Lin was an old veteran. He knew clearly when to keep his mouth shut to avoid unnecessary attention. He smiled and sat down on the last empty sofa.

Right then, when everyone was at the very least comfortable with their own skin, the door was opened and three hostesses came into the room. However, out of the three hostesses, only two had chosen to stay. Two of them sat at Mr. Lin and Liu Wei's seat. Because the man with the glasses was a nobody, the girl had left the room, leaving the poor soul crying in his heart.

The two fresh blood hostesses came and one of them sat beside Liu Wei and the other sat beside Mr. Lin. Both of them immediately embraced the two men. Mr. Lin played it cool and played with the girl. Zhang Yang read his movements and could tell that Mr. Lin had been here before.

Liu Wei was still angry at Zhang Yang then. He dove his hands into the hostess' dress and forcefully ripped the buttons of the Qi Bao. Her black laced undergarment was revealed to the world. Before she could do anything to fix her clothing, Liu Wei had brutally torn off her bra as well.

"Don't you dare resist." Said Liu Wei coldly. The poor hostess was so frightened till her cheeks were drain of blood. She sat still like a doll, allowing the bastard to play with her exposed breasts.

Zhang Yang knows that what Liu Wei was doing. He knew that Liu Wei was trying to force Zhang Yang to throw the first punch. However, Zhang Yang could not act. The women who decided to get a job here know very welllll what they were getting themselves into. Before, if Liu Wei had thrown the first punch, Zhang Yang could still retaliate. But now...the degrading acts...wasn't that what the girls have signed up for? Zhang Yang gritted his teeth in anger.

"HAHAHA! GOOD ONE!" Ma Zhi Hua laughed as he stared lustfully at the girl beside Liu Wei. He then turned to the girl by his own side and smile innocently. "Strip."

The hostess flinched. She must have been hoping that Ma Zhi Hua would not do the same thing. Without resisting, she started to reach for the buttons on her clothes and pulled her Qi Bao off.

Zhang Yang grew tired of the disrespectful acts and roared. "Young Master Ma. If you have something to say, say it now. I'm extremely busy with other matters."

"Hahaha!" It seems that laughing before saying anything is Ma Zhi Hua's annoying habit. He did not turn to look at Zhang Yang, instead, he continued his demeaning plays with the girl beside him. "Recently, I joined the popular game 'God's Miracle'. And I've heard that you own a guild! A pretty powerful one at that!"

"That's true. His guild is China's strongest guild now," said Liu Wei.

Zhang Yang immediately raise an eyebrow. Was he expressing his wants to be invited to the guild? Zhang Yang mentally declined. Even if he had a full set of Celestial tier equipment, he would not allow such a troublesome fellow to be in the guild.

"Since you're my cousin sister's...consort? I'll assume you're one of the Ma Family. I'll be frank. I'm interested in expanding my business into the game. When you get back, I want you to hand over the guild master position to me. Ah right, those two territories you own, I'll take it as well." Ma Zhi Hua spoke his demands nonchalantly as if Zhang Yang's fortune was nothing but worthless gifts.

Zhang Yang could have sworn that he had just popped a vein in his forehead. Was this man out of his mind? Was he brain dead? Doesn't he know that Lone Desert Smoke was the world's strongest guild? With the name itself, Zhang Yang could have gained countless of sponsorship requests! Doesn't he know that the territory is as valuable as an oil rig!?

There were approximately 70 million players who have already set foot into the Chaos Realms. If every player had used the portal once a day, he would have earned 70 million gold coins daily! The cost price of the Energy Crystal to power the portals were so low that it was negligible to the profit earned! 70 million gold coins is as much as 25,500,000,000 dollars!

It was inevitable that there would be new Territory in the Chaos Realm itself, players moving between the two realms will reduce. However, there will always be new players coming into the game! Although there are only 70 million players in the Chaos Realm, there was a total of 300 million players in China! At most, in the next year, the profit that Zhang Yang would be earning will only increase!

Just who was the bastard that could casually ask someone to gift them 300 million dollars worth assets?!

Zhang Yang smiled through his suppressed anger. "Young Master Ma. I think you have too much melamine in your blood stream. Did you eat too

much deep fried food that have been fried with recycled oil? How else would you speak out of your *sshole? No wait. You're a young master that feeds off your parent's hard work. All the food that you eat should be those greens or organic hipster stuff! Oh I see. Perhaps you had your head kicked by a donkey on your way here. In that case, why didn't you go to the white house and asked to be a president for a few days?"

Everyone in the room froze. The secretary dude was sweating crazily. From his point of view, Zhang Yang must be someone out of a forest! Even he had to smile at every stupid comments and cold jokes of Mr. Lin. Even Mr. Lin would have to do the same to Ma Zhi Hua! Out of the blue, came a man named Zhang Yang that had insulted Ma Zhi Hua as if he knew no repercussion. Compared to that, the previous demeaning comments made by Zhang Yang back at Silky Soft Holdings were nothing!

"Acting tough now, eh?" Ma Zhi Hua uncrossed his legs and slammed the table hand. "Zhang Yang. I have you understand that Sun Xin Yu's mother is my aunt. I am her favorite nephew. I can squash your dreams to marry Sun Xin Yu easily by saying a few words to her mother. Remember this, you're nothing but a tiny weed. Without Sun Xin Yu's help, you're nothing!"

Zhang Yang scoffed. As expected a man who was born into a family of riches. The man was thinking with his groins! Since when did Sun Xin Yu marriage had anything to do with a mere cousin? This man's self-righteousness is over the roof! Did he really think that he could control everything?

Without having a proper discussion about it, the man had blatantly expressed his intention to take away his family! Zhang Yang was done. He could not even find the urge to have a rational debate with the retarded, brain-dead, son of the beach. Zhang Yang stood up. Right before he was about to leave, he stopped his track and dragged the poor hostess out of the room with him.

Ma Zhi Hua crossed his leg and raised his voice one last time. "Zhang Yang. Don't think that you can walk away from this. I'll make sure that you'll regret it."

"You might want to check your privilege there. I pray that you're the one who will regret it." Zhang Yang walked out of the room and slammed the door.

Ma Zhi Hua slammed the table disgruntledly. Discontentment was written all over his face.

Liu Wei quickly consoled the man. There was a hint of a grin in the corner of his mouth. Liu Wei had paid the price, but he finally understood Sun Xin Yu's background. The name of Sun Xin Yu's real family was something that could shake the world of China's politic. Even Liu Wei himself found it hard to believe.

If Zhang Yang was serious in taking him down, she could have just use Sun Xin Yu's name and pressure the Liu Family easily despite having hundreds of millions of fortune in their hands.

Right then, he was extremely lucky to befriend Ma Zhi Hua, the branch family of the Sun Family.

Although the Ma Family shared a portion of the Sun Family fame, they were but Beijing's lower tier. Their name and fortune were not something that would rival that of the Sun Family. However, due to someone in the Ma Family being married into the Sun Family, they had gained a boost in fame and power. Especially the new generations of the Ma Family, for they had used the Sun Family's name to do what they want! The overly self-righteous Ma Zhu Hua was one of them.

In fact, Ma Zhi Hua was the idiot. A man that who no will of his own and acts with his instinct. He thought he was the smart one but it was Liu Wei who had planted words into his mind to take what Zhang Yang owned in the game. He had also used Sun Xin Yu's name to trick Ma Zhi Hua to demand the things that he wanted from Zhang Yang. Liu Wei had made Ma Zhi Hua think that the things that he demanded were nothing but gifts. After all, aren't they all virtual pixels?

Zhang Yang's instant rejection was also part of his plans, but he had not expected Zhang Yang to bare his fangs at Ma Zhi Hua with such ferocity. However, Zhang Yang's actions had saved him some time, for it was also

part of his plan to have the two men ready to tear each other apart. By then, there will be an internal conflict between the Sun Family and the Ma Family. As such, although Liu Wei was just someone doing errands for Ma Zhi Hua, he was the real mastermind.

Internal conflicts would have to be settled quietly and discreetly, hence, no matter how bad it gets, it would not affect the Liu Family's business.

In the end, Liu Wei was the smart person in the room. Or rather, the cunning snake.

Chapter 663: Death Moon Pirates

Zhang Yang dragged the hostess out of the room and gave her a name card. He had even pulled out his own name card and wrote a short message on it. "Take this, and if you want to find another job that pays well, try it. Someone will find and take care of you."

She had been unfortunately caught in the crossfire when Zhang Yang and Liu Wei was going on. Liu Wei had slapped her in the face just because he could not hold his anger in.

Zhang Yang patted the hostess' bare shoulders and bade her good luck before storming out of the establishment with rage. The girl teared up a little and followed him closely.

Although the tea shop was not established on the premise of prostitution, it was extremely hard for the hostesses to reject despicable customers when they are up to no good. Once, a hostess retaliated by running out of the room, only to be eventually caught by a few men and gang-raped for the entire night. The next day, the girl was found floating on the rivers, killed and thrown away after they were done having their fun.

It was customers like Ma Zhi Hua and Liu Wei who were the hooligans of the establishment. They were the kind that would act on a whim. Killing and raping were things they were not afraid of committing, since someone will always clean it up for them. The girl followed Zhang Yang out of the establishment and did not even bother to collect her belongings. She met Zhang Yang back in the streets and bade him farewell before running away towards the sidewalks. Perhaps she had thrown in her resignation letter on the spot and planned to pay a visit to Zhang Yang's company for a change. She was familiar with Silky Soft Holdings' product because she was using them herself. She believed that if someone like Zhang Yang, who stood up to protect her when she was in need of help, would not betray her expectations.

...

Zhang Yang nodded at the hostess and after she ran off somewhere, he called Sun Xin Yu. Although he did not plan to put much attention on that incident, it was still best to have Sun Xin Yu know about Ma Zhi Yu. The woman was smart. When Zhang Yang had merely asked about who Ma Zhi Yu was, Sun Xin Yu quickly instigated a Q&A session with Zhang Yang.

After everything had been told about the incident, Sun Xin Yu fumed with rage and asked Zhang Yang not to get involved with the bastard. She would handle everything easily. Zhang Yang blew a kiss to her, only to have her hang up on him.

Zhang Yang was picked up by Mr. Lin's car, so he had to hail a cab when he returns. During the trip back home, Zhang Yang received a stranger's phone call. When he picked it up, it was Mr. Lin. He begs for forgiveness from Zhang Yang for he had not known of the context of the meeting, nor how would the man would behave. Although he did not directly ask for it, Mr. Lin subtly wanted to be on Zhang Yang's good side. Naturally, Zhang Yang did not blame the man for his invitation to the f*cked up tea party. He told Mr. Lin that he was fine and he bore no enmity towards him.

From Mr. Lin perspectives, Ma Zhi Hua was just a branch family of the Sun family. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was the future of the Sun family. Such an important role was crucial to determine in order to recognize the real potential. Perhaps, Ma Zhi Hua was the only imbecile who did not know the polarity in his position.

Zhang Yang would not want to stir up problems from thin air. After conversing with Mr. Lin for a brief moment, he hung up the call after Mr. Lin was satisfied with Zhang Yang's reaction.

Zhang Yang returned to the office. Although he was a little restless, Zhang Yang decided to log into the game and do a little quests.

When Zhang Yang appeared in the game, he was flying in midair above the waters. The place he needed to go was underwater and since the Phoenix was a fire elemental bird, it could not dive underwater. Zhang Yang switched to the Mythical Turtle and dove. Zhang Yang had no

choice. The Mythical Turtle was the only underwater mount he had at the moment. It was weaker, now since Zhang Yang had removed most of the skills on it and applied it to the Thunderhawk. However, at that level, a Mythical tier mount could not do much damage, even if he had more or less skills on hand.

Zhang Yang dove deeper and deeper until the light above the surface slowly faded away. Deep under the sea, there was absolutely no light around, the only light source that could illuminate nearby environment was coming from Zhang Yang's own armor. It was cold and terrifying, for no one knows when will something pop out in the dark.

Half an hour later, Zhang Yang saw a bright area, in an area far ahead. As Zhang Yang swam further, the light grew wider and large. The illuminated area were the ruins of an enormous palace. Each of the fallen pillars was glowing with a soft warm light. From afar, the light emitted from the pillars around the palace made it look like a beacon in the dark night.

There were only a few of the pillars that were still in good shape. The rest were in pieces, albeit still glowing with the white light. Almost the rest of the palace was in ruins. Not a single construction was left in good shape. Cracks and holes were everywhere.

According to the quest's lore, the palace was originally from above land. Back then, the King of the palace had wronged a powerful magician. As retribution, the magician uprooted the entire palace and tossed it into the oceans. While the humans that once lived in the palace were all dead, the palace was now occupied by merfolk and they treated it as their paradise. There were countless numbers of merfolk that were roaming around the palace as they kept on making weird "gua gua gua" noises.

Zhang Yang frowned. Where was Dolmian? Zhang Yang looked everywhere and could not find an NPC that looked like a boss. He swam closer towards the palace and arrived at a large hall. In a normal situation, the boss should be in the biggest, brightest structure. It was expected. For the boss was the leader.

Zhang Yang approached the hall and angered two merfolk who were clad in armor and clutching pitchforks.

[Death Moon Merfolk] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 135

HP: 2,700,000

Melee Attack: 19,298 – 23,298

Skills:

[Heavy Pierce]: Pierces the target, ignores all Defense and deals 100% melee physical attack.

[Call]: When in danger, the merfolk will call for nearby allies to aid it in battle.

Note: Death Moon Pirates are the most brutal and cunning pirates in the Xixiluca Sea. Each of their members are fierce and strong for the blood of greed and grandiose flows within their veins.

"Hehehehe! We have fresh meat to feast on, today!" cried one of the merfolk there and he hurled his pitchfork towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang lifted his shield and parried the attack. Two elite tier monsters were nothing to Zhang Yang. However, the skill {Heavy Pierce} was a little troublesome, for it is able to even ignore the godly defenses of his armor. Perhaps, there is a possibility of the attack being a Piercing type, which means that players standing behind the target would still receive the same amount of damage.

Still, they were nothing more than just elite tier. Zhang Yang had only lost a little over than 200,000 HP after killing them both. Since the environment does not allow for consumption of snacks, Zhang Yang only means of healing was potions and items. However, potions have cooldowns. Zhang Yang could only consume one bottle every minute. Luckily, the potions were handcrafted by Zhang Yang. Hence, all of the potions that Zhang Yang carries with him all the time were top tier Transmuted grades. If the potions are not enough, Zhang Yang could

easily use the [Bandages] to heal himself quickly and easily.

After several more kills, one of the merfolk had even miraculously dropped an equipment for him.

[Merfolk's Armor] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +917

Strength: +262

Dexterity: +591

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 1,830.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 2.1%

Equip: Increases movement speed underwater by 7%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Merfolk Wonderer Set Effect: Merfolk Helm, Merfolk Armor, Merfolk Pants

Three Set Equipped: Increases movement speed underwater by 30%.

Increased underwater movement speed? Funny. However useful it may be, it was only temporary. Players usually avoid underwater battle hence the set equipment was not worth much. Zhang Yang tossed it aside in the corner of his inventory. If its value is too low, he would then give it to Han Ying Xue to break down into Rune Stones.

Zhang Yang proceeded towards the palace entrance and spotted four merfolk standing guard at the gates. To enter the palace, he must first defeat the four of them.

"Hey! Stinky piece of rotten fish! Come and get some!" Zhang Yang tossed a {Spear of Obliteration} and hit one of them, successfully provoking all four of them.

With Felice and the Phoenix out of the battle, Zhang Yang's killing speed

was greatly delayed. Although the Mythical Turtle was the best mount when it first debuted, but right now, it was nothing but a little speck of dust that could provide little to no help at all. Especially, when the enemies were high level monsters in high quantities. Killing and tanking are different cases. In his case, Zhang Yang was tanking and killing at the same time. It was extremely hard to move around, since his movement speed was restricted underwater. Supporting Attacks were also pretty useless, due to the dense water around them. Hence, at Zhang Yang was losing more HP than the monsters were.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang was able to defeat all four of them after losing close to 70% of his HP. As he progressed on, the number of monsters in one pack had increased. Since Zhang Yang could not rely on snacks to recover his HP, Zhang Yang would have to stop after each battle to restore his health. It was an extremely inefficient process. When he finally lost patience, Zhang Yang decided to summon Han Ying Xue over and have her help with his quest.

"Hm? Where is your little lover?"

"Huh?!" Zhang Yang was extremely surprised at her random jab.

"Felice. The little Felice!"

Zhang Yang sighed. The woman was even jealous of a fictional character. "Well... I can't really explain what happened to her, but I can't call her out for a few days."

"Haha! Finally, we can have some alone time without that little duck following you around!"

With Han Ying Xue supporting Zhang Yang, he was able to take on 20 to 30 monsters at the same time, without breaking a sweat. Not only had she increased his durability on the battle field – or battle waters in this case, she had also helped save a lot of time for Zhang Yang.

4 to 5 hours later, the two of them made it to the center of the palace. Sitting on the huge throne, was the boss that Zhang Yang had to kill.

[Dolmian, Death Moon Pirate Captain] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 140

HP: 42,000,000

Defense: 5,920

Melee Attack: 37,150 – 47,150

Skills:

[Heavy Pierce]: Thrusts the spear with penetrative power. Ignores all defense and deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Spearing Barrage]: Hurls countless of spears to all directions within 20 meters of the caster. Deals 100% melee physical attack to all targets within the skill range.

Note: The Captain of the Death Moon Pirates. The source of evil in all of Xixiluca Sea.

"Hah. It's just a Mythical tier boss. Both of us can take it easily!" Zhang Yang gently tapped the head of the Mythical tier Turtle and swam towards the boss. Right then, a Mythical tier boss' attack will be diminished to a safe point by his powerful defense. Though they may need to hold on for a long time, they could easily kill the boss, as long as it did not have any healing skills.

"Intruders..." Dolmian rose from his seat and thrust his right arm out. A long, Golden Platinum Trident materialized in his hands. With a powerful growl, Dolmian create a forceful wave that slightly pushed Zhang Yang away. He brandished his trident and created a whirlpool that charged towards Zhang Yang.

With a wide grin, Zhang Yang bellowed, "Time for a pirate to have a taste of their own medicine, eh?! I've come to rob you!"

Chapter 664: Mythical Dense Water

Water – the habitat of the merfolk. Dolmian's speed underwater was much faster in comparison to Zhang Yang's when they were on land. In the blink of an eye, Dolmian lunged at Zhang Yang, with his trident aimed at Zhang Yang's chest.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang blocked the attack with sparks flashing out from the waters. Water bubbles sparkled on him, causing him to be knocked a few meters behind. Despite Dolmian's strength and power underwater, Zhang Yang was barely fazed. In a split second, Zhang Yang took the inertia of the blast and torqued it into a quick 360-degree pivot to hit the boss with his axe and dealt more than 80,000 damage.

"Weakling. The ocean is not for the likes of you! You land beings are so pathetic here! Beings that would succumb to mere water! You dare attack my lair? I will grant you your death wish here!" The Boss chased after Zhang Yang and thrust his trident at him.

"Heavy Pierce!" roared Dolmian as he pierced Zhang Yang's chest with his trident. As the skill suggested, the attack penetrated through Zhang Yang's armor, and the trident had literally broken through Zhang Yang's thick metal cuirass and plunged directly into his chest. The blue sea water was clouded red with the overflowing blood that was gushing out of Zhang Yang's wounds.

"Dummy!" shrieked Han Ying Xue in horror from afar. Although it was just a game, sometimes the human mind will shape it as reality. Especially with the current scene of Zhang Yang's armor being skewered like a wiener by a fork-like weapon. It felt so real for Han Ying Xue who was watching from the sidelines.

"D*mn you, fish-*ss!" Zhang Yang grabbed the trident and forcefully pushed himself off the forks of the trident. Whether it was real or not, the game developers had done well in programming the sensory system. Zhang Yang could feel the edges of the fork moving through his lungs and

windpipe as he pulled out the metal edges.

His Rage gauge was filled instantly and was ready to be used. Zhang Yang landed one clean strike of {Cripple Defense}.

At his current level, {Eagle Eye} was already at the level that grants Zhang Yang a permanent 85% Defense ignore effect. Alone, Zhang Yang would not have to even inflict five counts of {Cripple Defense}. Two of those were more than enough to have all 100% of the boss' defense ignored.

After 1 second of global cooldown, Han Ying Xue casted a healing spell on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang resumed the fight promptly after his HP was out of the red zone, i.e having enough HP that could prevent a one-hit-kill situation. Zhang Yang struck the boss with the skill - {God of War Heavy Axe} and dealt 254,340 damage. The damage was so strong that it was nearly close to 1% of the boss' total HP.

Well, no reason to stop there.

{God of War Devastation}!

{Frost Strike}!

{Horizontal Swipe}!

All skills from the 300% melee attacks, to the 200% AoE attacks were thrown at the boss, dealing powerful damage that sent the boss reeling with pain. When all the skills had been expanded, Zhang Yang used {Cripple Defense} to fill in the empty gap in between normal attacks and the cooldown of the other skills.

Event though {Cripple Defense} could only deal 50% melee physical attack, it was close to 40,000 damage. Secondly, the effect of {Eagle Eye} could only be applied to Zhang Yang's own attacks. Using {Cripple Defense} was to increase the outclassed Mythical Turtle's attack. Be it insignificant, it was still an attack! Stack them up altogether as a whole and you'll get a mountain!

"Bastard! I'll cut you up and eat you raw! You'll taste fine with blood, what do you landwalkers call it again...steak?!" Dolmian bellowed as he

flailed about.

Zhang Yang responded with laughter. "Hmm. I've never eaten raw fish before. Then again, I don't think your flesh would taste good. I'd save time rather than waste time gurgling my mouth later!"

"Spearing Barrage!" the Boss roared. The trident within the grip of his slimy hands glowed with an intense radiance as it hovers off his hands and multiplied itself in multiple directions. The Boss twirled out the multiplied spears into a fan-like trajectory.

‘-14,329!’

One of the projected spears hit Zheng Yang, causing Zhang Yang received a little tick on his chest. The damage was not deemed powerful as Zhang Yang had been 20 meters away from the Boss. Hence, Zhang Yang had only felt a tiny prick. The "Spearing Barrage" skill had only traveled as far as 20 meters away from him before dissolving in the water. Han Ying Xue, who was standing 30 meters away had not received any damage at all.

"Did you just attack? Hah! I could not feel anything! As expected of a fish, you can't do sh*t!" Zhang Yang mocked. He laughed at the Boss, provoking the character to shreds.

"I am the Death Moon Pirates Captain! To mock me is to seek death! I shall grant your deathwish!" The boss started to ramble on about how he would kill and torture Zhang Yang if he refuses to die. It was paradoxical, but Zhang Yang did not care about it. The bosses in the game would say the exact same thing over and over again. Although the words quipped were different, the meaning in their utterances would carry the same semantics.

The battle dragged on. No sooner, neither of them verbally spoke anymore but just concentrated on throwing blows at each other. Zhang Yang had lost the powerful DPS of Felice and the Phoenix pet, yet his DPS alone had reached close to 90,000. It would take roughly 8 minutes for Zhang Yang to kill the boss. It was not a tough battle, since Han Ying Xue was there to support him. In fact, if he uses all his ultimate skills, he could

still fight the boss alone, even without using his Inheritance Transformation skill.

Dolmian's HP was whacked down by Zhang Yang like a poor dog. The match was completely leaning toward Zhang Yang.

"Impossible...A mere human... how could I lose to a mere human?!" When the boss' HP approached the 20% threshold, the boss speech had changed from threatening to self-doubting, though yet he remained as vigorous in his attacks.

In the map, a mere Mythical tier boss would not be difficult to defeat, since the real deals were the Ethereal tier bosses. Dolmain had no powerful killing skills nor healing capabilities. It was unfortunate for him to be Zhang Yang's target for he could not put up a real against with him.

Dolmain was so weak that Zhang Yang had not needed to use {Glare of the Death God}. The {Glare of the Death God} was a circumstantial skill. Even if the skill is not resisted by the boss, it would be fortunate if Zhang Yang is able to proc 3 to 4 hits to trigger the damage tick. Then again, 1% is nothing, since the boss' total HP was low, to begin with. Zhang Yang activated {Indiscriminate} and struck the boss with a full Rage of {Killing Cleave}.

‘-745,680!’

With a clean drop of his axe, Zhang Yang dealt enough damage to take away 2% of the boss' HP. The boss squirmed around, wailing as he bled out profusely, clouding the ocean waters with red blood.

"No! It can never be! A strong merfolk will not fall to a mere human!" cried Dolmain again. His attack speed gained a frenzied buff and the skill - {Spearing Barrage} was used more frequently.

15%...10%...5%...

Not long later, the boss was killed and his body was left alone to float upwards.

"Huh. Not bad. 20 million experience points for an 8 minute boss fight! I'll do this any day!" said Han Ying Xue happily as she skipped her way to

pick up the boss loot.

Sadly, the loot obtained from the Mythical tier boss was scrap if compared to the drops of the Mythical tier boss in the Tibanya Wasteland! Still, the equipment found then were not powerful as they do not have the special effect to reduce the Level Requirement! Furthermore, its statistics were either leaning toward offense or defense. Neither one of them had both! Han Ying Xue was extremely disgruntled and almost had broken down if Zhang Yang had not stopped her by stating their value in gold coins.

Any quest item can only be interacted with the quest holder. While Han Ying Xue was picking up the equipment, Zhang Yang went ahead and picked up a bottle of water, and the quest helper had indicated that it was the "authentic" Mythical Dense Water. What was left was the [Specter of Fate].

After picking up the required items, Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang. The two of them swam up to shore and flew their way towards the next destination - The Maanya Castle. When Zhang Yang flew across the land, he made a detour on purpose to stop by the Forest of Gilstein. Zhang Yang descended downward and landed next to the statue of the Goddess of War. Zhang Yang sat down beside the statue and "talked" to Felice. While the statue continued to radiate with beautiful rays of light, Felice's voice was nowhere to be heard. Zhang Yang left after a little while.

Ten hours later, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue arrived at Kandiya Grasslands, where he continued his journey towards the east. Along the way, Han Ying Xue, being a pesky little minx, had continuously tingled and jiggled his little dong, teasing him as she pleased. Zhang Yang was not enjoying it one bit, and he had threatened her by saying if she continued teasing him unreasonably like that, he might get in the mood for some secretary office action on the table.

Maanya Castle was situated right at the edge of a cliff and was surrounded by strong walls. The only entrance to the castle was the gates. Even that was protected by a man-made trench and could only be crossed over if the castle guards lowered the drawbridge.

This strong defense also implicated a huge drawback. Neither could the enemies enter, nor could the defenders attack. If they are surrounded, the only means of attacking, other than siege engines, would be coming out from the only way that they could come in. It would be bottle-necking both sides.

Then again, such a defense could easily be infiltrated by flying mounts. Since most cities banned the usage of flying mounts, Zhang Yang came down to the earth and requested to enter to the castle via the traditional means. Zhang Yang paid the 30 gold coins entrance fee and gained access to the castle.

The interior of the castle behind the huge monstrous walls was surprisingly medieval. At the center of the entire place was a beautiful castle that stood tall as it watched over the entire castle compound. The castle was situated on a higher ground, while the other clay houses and stone buildings were built on lower grounds, closer to the gates. Like any other castle, the region was filled with many civilians, peasants, merchants, and even NPC adventurers.

Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang entered the area and came to the central plaza. There, they found a public bulletin board and with a large poster and they were both attracted to read it.

The poster contained news about Sheeny who had been plunged into a deep sleep by an evil magician named Brosh using dark magic. Sheeny is the daughter of the castle baron, Count Ropolly, Unless the count agrees to let the evil magician marry his only daughter, the magician will continue to use his magic to prevent anyone from waking the little girl up.

With such a threat looming over him, Count Ropolly had offered a large sum of reward to those who could kill Brosh and remove the magic on Sheeny. He would even allow the Hero to enter his treasure vault to choose to his liking.

Zhang Yang took down the poster with his hands and flashed a smile, saying, "Let's kill the horny magician."

"Please..... You are not much different from that villain." Han Ying Xue

said, rolling her eyes.

"Hey! You there!" A voice called out to them. It was a middle-aged man.

"Are you planning to take the quest to kill the evil magician?" the man said.

Zhang Yang nodded.

"I urge you to think twice, young man. Do not think over your head. Justice, honor, bravery. All those virtues mean nothing in the face of the evil Brosh! Don't you know how powerful he is? He could easily decimate an entire army with the flick of his staff! How else would even the count himself not kill the perpetrator when he owns an army of soldiers, himself?"

Another character appeared out of nowhere and interjected their conversation.

"I remember a while back when the magician appeared in the castle. He was riding a Ghastly Dragon! Oh my god. May the Lord have mercy upon us all. The count should have let the magician to his daughter! The magician could use the evil dragon and kill us all off if he wanted to!"

According to the western legends, dragons were the source of evil. Hence, Dragon Knights or Dragon Slayers were those who were worshipped as saviors. However, in the game, it would depend on the lore of the location. For example, White Jade Empire uses Dragon Riders as guardians of the castle. As for Maanya Castle, dragons were evil.

At that moment, a group of guards came in and expressed that the count himself had requested for their presence in the castle itself.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue followed the group and went into the castle to meet the baron. He was a man roughly at the age of 30. He was handsome but was only a normal tier entity. His battle strength was only 5! Then again, it was for the lore's purpose, if he was someone like Queen Serena, the baron would have walked to the magician's lair and kicked his *ss.

Zhang Yang frowned intensely when he noticed the baron's age. If he

had a daughter that was kidnapped to be married, that would put her in the age of between 15 to 20. In that case, the baron must have bore the child at the age of 15 or 16!?

Chapter 665: The Dark Magician Brosh

"Heroes, I appreciate that you have taken the job. But, I have to ask. Do you really have what it takes to defeat the Dark Magician?" Ropolly was sitting on a magnificent throne and asked Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue worriedly. Sitting beside him was a noble woman, dressed in the grandest lady with her thick dress and fur coat. She was slightly younger than the baron himself. The lady was probably his wife.

Zhang Yang nodded. "I may not be strong, but I do have a band of friends. Together, we have killed countless evil and strong demons. Count. Rest assured that we will kill this Dark Magician that you speak off."

"Very well." Count Ropolly smiled with relief. "In that case, allow me to ask of you, my selfish request. Please make haste, for my 7-year-old daughter's life rests in your hands."

'Ding! Count Ropolly has a quest for you: Kill the Dark Magician. Will you accept it?'

Both Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue exchanged a look.

7 years old? What?!

Was the Dark Magician Brosh a lolicon? If he was, its really high time to kill his head, for the man's brain is defunct!

The couple left the palace and Han Ying Xue asked. "Hmm...If you do put it in a different perspective, it's like those 50 to 60 years old sugar daddies sleeping with those young 16-year-old sluts!"

Zhang Yang cringed a little at her example. Though it was roughly correct, it was still morally bad. Zhang Yang could not even imagine how would a rich, old, fat f*ck would manage to get a young girl to ... and she would even take his old, rotten, limpy...into her...

Zhang Yang felt a cold shiver down his spine and sighed heavily. "I guessed the world has changed...Many would rather choose to cry in a Bugatti than laughing happily, sitting behind a bicycle. Humans had changed their concept of love from soul, spirit, to materialistic love."

Han Ying Xue understood what he was trying to say but she could not refute his words for she too was a little materialistic at times. "What are you sighing about!" Han Ying Xue tried to change the mood. "With your money, you can buy 365 Bugatti cars and have 365 girls warming up your driver's seat. One car a day, 365 girls a year!" She slapped his back hard, although instantly regretting it since he was wearing a full metal plate cuirass.

They left the palace and rode towards the forest, west of the palace with the Phoenix. According to the quest guide, the supposed evil Dark Magician Brosh had set up his lair there.

"There's one thing that I could not understand!" said Zhang Yang randomly. "Prostitution is illegal, right? And those who are caught will be prosecuted. However, how is that someone taking in a lover not a crime, but a mere morality problem? Could it be? After doing the big bam boom many times, it is no longer a crime?"

"...Hm..." Han Ying Xue went into deep thought.

"Perhaps...Ah. I got it. Having an affair does not involve monetary transactions! It is not a business!" said Zhang Yang as he had an epiphany.

"Dummy...! Are you thinking of having a lover?!"

"What are you talking about? I'm having two right now, aren't I?"

"Stupid fool! I'll bite you off next time!"

The two of them made dirty jokes at each other as they journeyed towards the forest. Following the quest indicator, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue arrived at a small wooden hut, deep in the middle of the forest. Unlike most evil villain's lair, the Dark Magician's "lair" was rather... profoundly beautiful and peaceful. There was even a small garden of beautiful flowers planting outside his hut. However, there will always be something that can easily pinpoint a person's true nature. In this case, there was a pair of bloodied hands sticking out of the earth, in the middle of the flower garden!

"Burn them all!" Zhang Yang patted the fiery bird's forehead and

commands it to torch the entire garden, along with the wooden hut.

As the flowers caught fire, the flames spread all over the garden instantly.

"KIYAAAAA—" Weirdly enough, the flowers started to shriek out loud as they wiggled around, trying to uproot themselves to run away. However, before it could even move, the flames of the Phoenix were so hot that the plants were all turned into ashes.

"Wha—What have you done!?" A middle-aged man, dressed in a black magician's robe, with a dark purple-red magic staff in his hand, barged out of the house and roared at Zhang Yang in midair.

[Dark Magician Brosh] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 150

HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Magic Attack: 45,314 – 55,314

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% magic Shadow damage to a target. Instant cast. Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 40 meters.

[Dark Magician's Curse]: Unleashes a condemning spell to inflict all targets within 40 meters. Has a chance to cause all target's HP to fall to 30% in 10 seconds. Will not affect targets with 30% HP or less. Last for 1 minute.

[Abyssal Blast]: Deals 10,000 Shadow damage to all target within 40 meters of the caster.

[Magician's Constitution]: Restore 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any effect.

Note: A prodigy in magic. Excommunicated by the Arch Mages in the Magic Academy for dwelling too deep into the Dark Arts.

"Eat this! Shadow Arrow!" Brosh spun his staff around and blasted out a

black skull that shot through the air and hit the Phoenix.

Zhang Yang was amazed. He had never seen a magic attack that could be cast at such a high speed. Zhang Yang did not even have enough time to dodge the attack and took 69,271 damage.

"Retreat!" Zhang Yang pulled back to create a large gap between him and the boss.

"Bastard! I will kill you all!" Brosh chased after Zhang Yang for some time before automatically turning back to the wooden hut as if nothing had happened.

After successfully escaping the battle, Zhang Yang returned to the wooden hut and equipped the [Party Summon Order] to bring in Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and the others.

Even when others might think he could, it was quite an impossible task for Zhang Yang to kill an Ethereal tier boss with Han Ying Xue alone. When the party was gathered, he explained the boss' skills and shared the quest to kill the Dark Magician to everyone.

"Listen. When the boss uses the curse skill, he will also use the blast skill to instantly kill everyone around." Zhang Yang explained the crucial point to roughly pinpoint the boss' killing skill.

"It will be tough. Unless we use our Transformation skills, we would only have 200,000 HP or so. 30% of that would only be around 70,000 to 80,000 HP. One single {Shadow Arrow} could kill us."

Zhang Yang shook his head. "An open-world boss is designed to handle a sea of players. However, I trust that with the battle mount and my [Vitality Aura], everyone should have just enough HP to take one damage tick before dying for real."

Zhang Yang added, "Keep the potions on hold. Only use it when the boss uses his curse skill or when your HP is less than 100,000. In this battle, survivability is key. We are trading firepower for HP now. Do not use the [Power Potion]."

"Understood."

Zhang Yang soared to the sky and commanded the Phoenix to torch the house again.

"D*mn you!" Brosh barged out of the house again and blasted a ball of black, arcane power. Miraculously, the fire was all sucked into the orb, immediately extinguishing all the flames and the amber that was on the wood. With malice, the boss glared at Zhang Yang and roared. "You won't be getting away this time!"

The boss whistled loud and long into the sky. A dark cloud gathered in the high skies and a large skeletal dragon came bursting out of the clouds and descended down to the party. The dragon landed gracefully beside Brosh and treated him like its true master. The Ghastly Dragon was slightly smaller in size compared to the Ghastly Frost Dragon they had fought a while back. Still, it was several hundreds of meters long as it laid down like a mountain.

Brosh leaped upwards and rode the dragon. The dragon flapped its massive boney wings upward. Luckily, the boss may have flight capabilities, but it did not gain the buffs like players do. Looks likes the dragon was there, merely to provide flight power to the boss and not to increase the boss' power and HP.

Zhang Yang rose to the sky and charged towards the boss. Almost everyone's Inheritance Transformation skill was on cooldown. With that in mind, the only hopes to win the battle was through brute force and strong endurance.

Then again, the boss had only 500 million HP. The amount of HP recovered per second would be less than 170,000. Right then, Zhang Yang's party combined DPS was at least 370,000. Technically, they would have to last for 40 minutes to kill the boss. Again, that was theoretical. If any of the party members are killed by the boss during the fight, the battle will be dragged longer.

If the battle does get dragged longer, the number of factors that could effect the battle will increase. If the boss chains his skills on and on, the chances of the party being killed completely will be absolute.

Pew!

The boss soared to the sky and blasted a black ray, damaging Zhang Yang first.

"I'll turn you all into fertilizers for my precious flowers!" Brosh yelled with anger. He then spun his staff in midair again and cast a black skill on every player. Everyone was afflicted by the boss' curse.

"You pervy uncle! You wouldn't even spare a young 7 year old girl! I'll never forgive you! You son of a b*tch!" Wei Yan Er brandished her axe and roared at the boss.

"Son of a what...? Where did you learn that word from?!" Zhang Yang frowned.

"Hahaha! What do you know, young girl!?" Brosh laughed manically. He then did the same thing that every villain does when they thought they had the upper hand, and that is to reveal their secret plan. "Sheeny...that young maiden is a rare specimen! A rare kind of human! If I can make her my bride, I can sacrifice her soul to the Dark Lord! He shall grant me the power of the abyss!"

So...it was made clear that the villain still had some dignity to him. He was not a perverted lolicon, but a man who was obsessed with power.

Wei Yan Er pouted her lips and said, "My dorm mates! She told me that a son of a b*tch is a bad guy! Noob tank! I think you may have the potential to be a son of a b*tch as well!"

Zhang Yang was a little pissed off at the little brat. However, he was more worried about the little girl's future. If she continues hanging out with the wrong crowd, she would be corrupted! Perhaps, its time to have her stay at home instead of the university dorm!

"Succumb to the power of the abyss!" Brosh raised his magic staff up high and blasted a dark shockwave towards all directions. Everyone was instantly hit by the skill and received 100,000 damage, dropping all their HP bellow the red line.

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart got to work and quickly cast all

their AoE healing skills. With three healer type Battle Companions participating in the battle, the party's HP was slowly raised back up.

"Aiyayaya!" Just when Wei Yan Er wanted to swing her axe, her HP suddenly dropped down by a large amount. The HP that Han Ying Xue had just restored was all reduced down to 30%. Luckily, the boss had only just used {Abyssal Blast}, hence the little brat would not need to waste her health potion.

The curse's triggering rate was random, yet high. It was infrequent but players will have their HP suddenly dropped down to 30%. With the curse still in its active duration, both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to work extra hard.

"Don't bother to heal us to full! Just keep us all at 100,000 HP and above! Enough for one shot of {Abyssal Blast}!" Zhang Yang cried.

It was a good strategy since after the curse was inflicted, having 100% or 31% does not matter for the curse effect will reduce the affected players HP to a fixed 30% flat line. It would be a waste to have their HP fully restored. Hence, Zhang Yang had ordered Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to keep an eye on everyone's HP and heal them up to at least 100,000 HP.

Chapter 666: Abyssal Blast

The red zone of the HP will always be different in different battles. However, there is 99% chance that the higher HP you have, the safer it will be for a player to fight a boss. The remaining 1% chance was that of a fight with a boss such as this Dark Magician who could cast skills to reduce a player's HP by a fixed percentage. Having a full HP all the time would only be a complete waste of mana for healing.

In that battle with the Dark Magician, it will be efficient to have the HP at 100,000 and above. Not much higher, but never lower. If the healers can do that, the threat of the Dark Magician's curse would be nullified. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart's burden would be slightly easier.

However, it was merely a little. With only 100,000 HP on reserve, the boss' skill, {Abyssal Blast} was not to be underestimated. Each blast could deal at least 100,000 damage. Hence, with all the Battle Companion and two pets participating in the fight, that totals up to 21 healing targets. Unless they had a Battle Companion with a full set of Mythical tier equip like Felice, those that were unable to deal too much damage would be better off kept in their owner's inventory than remain on the battlefield, taking too much damage and adding weight to the healers' burdens.

Hence, with a quick acknowledgment and command, the party kept away many of their Battle Companions. The only ones left were three healer types Battle Companions and Sun Xin Yu's strong DPS. Even Hundred Shots had removed his pet from the battlefield. Compared to the ones that he was using now, the future Red Dragon would be a god among all Hunters' pets!

With lesser characters that required constant healing, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart's burden were lightened even further.

However! They would still have to be extremely perceptive to immediate healing whenever someone's HP drops below 100,000. If they were to be late by 1 second, they might be attacked by a single blast of {Abyssal Blast} and will inevitably be killed.

Luckily, the boss' skill cycle was rhythmic. {Abyssal Blast} will be used once every 30 seconds. As long as the healer calculates the timing correctly, they would not waste time channeling healing spell, instead, they could just instantly cast a {Holy Shield} to absorb the damage.

Han Ying Xue had been a super healer since the beginning of the game. Fantasy Sweetheart had been joining the party in boss fights for many times now and had picked up several of Han Ying Xue's latent skills. Be it intuition or controls, she was able to "level up" her own capabilities. She was no longer the girl in the party that was harassed by Endless Starlight and Fatty Han by calling her "The badahonka without brains". Right then, she was already at the level of "badahongkerdongs with real brains!"

With the combined power of the healers in the party, they remained strong, without showing any signs of slowing down.

Zhang Yang was able to mount the Phoenix while fighting the boss, boosting his HP to at least 800,000. To save the burden on the healers, he had made sure to maintain his HP from getting below 200,000. Fortunately, he was not affected by the curse of the Dark Magician. However, it was extremely dangerous for him when he takes the boss' {Abyssal Blast} and the {Shadow Arrow} at the same time. Two hits from the skills will be catastrophic.

It all depended on the capabilities of the healers. Although {Abyssal Blast} may have a long cooldown time, the {Shadow Arrow} did not. For the boss could spam the skill every 2 seconds. Hence, at every 2 seconds, the healers would have to keep their eyes on Zhang Yang's HP to prevent an accidental {Shadow Arrow} from killing Zhang Yang.

If he falls, so does the party.

To heal Zhang Yang HP from the absolute extreme back to the green zone of 200,000 HP, the healers would take at least 20 seconds. From that perspective, it was extremely dangerous for the skill {Abyssal Blast} that takes only 30 seconds to attack once. It is known that whenever a boss had their HP dropped below the 20% threshold, the boss skill usage will be frequent. By then, if the cooldown of {Abyssal Blast} reaches 20 seconds at

a time, it would be the very limit of the two healers.

It was inevitable. The curse was there to limit the players' HP to be at 30% at all times. It will be useless to have a mass party of healers to heal everyone to 100%. Now that it has come to this, the skill {God of War Heavy Axe} was rendered powerless. The requirement of the skill to be OP, depending on the HP % of both the caster and the target. Now that Zhang Yang was locked at 30% HP at all times, he would have to wait until the boss had a lower HP than he did to have the skill deal 300% melee attack instead of 100%.

...Annoying boss...

Zhang Yang had reserved all the life-preserving skills such as {Shield Wall}, {Last Vigor}, {God of War Radiance}, and the accessory effect of the [Medal of Bravery], and [Helena's Charm]. Now that he counted them all, Zhang Yang realized he had many healing and immunity skills! Even though [Helena's Charm] could only heal a maximum of 300,000 HP, he only needed 200,000 HP to be saved. Any extra would be a waste, since the Dark Magician's Curse would "eat" the extra HP away. Since the battle had been going on for such a long duration, Zhang Yang had already conjured 10 Life Orbs and could use them at any time he wanted to.

"I am the great Dark Magician! The world is mine to rule! All who oppose me that crumble in the power of the Abyss!" Brosh roared. "I shall have you all sacrificed to the Dark Lord as tributes!"

"Huh...seems like every villain we have fought wants to rule the world!" Lost Dream chuckled.

"Well...There have to be villains. How else could Ultraman be the good guy if there aren't any monsters out there?"

"Hahaha!" Everyone laughed at Fatty Han's retort which made the boss infuriated. His rage burned bright dark flames from his eyes, for he wished at that moment that he had a strong instant kill skill to kill all these insolent fools!

With a flawless cooperation between the tank, the healer, and the attacker, the coordination of attack was continuous. The boss was losing

his HP quickly. Even if he had 500 million HP, it would be of no use to him, for the party was progressing slowly, but surely!

Zhang Yang still had the trump card, {Glare of the Death God} in his hands!

Half an hour later, the boss had finally entered the 20% HP threshold. Everyone activated their skills and rampaged on. However, even if they had skills that could increase their damage when the boss has less than 20% HP, prioritizing their survivability was still the first commandment in that battle. Besides Wei Yan Er, none of the party members had consumed any [Power Potions]! They knew, that by being alive, only can they deal damage! However, the little brat had always been a competitive child. She consumed a bottle of [Power Potion], activated the {Indiscriminate} and struck the boss with {Killing Cleave} at full Rage.

‘-498,552!’

Dealing close to 500,000 damage in a single strike, the little brat was satisfied and grinned like a spoiled brat. However, her luck might not be on her side that day, for when she struck the boss, the curse was triggered on her and instantly pushed her HP down to 90,000 HP.

Since the boss had entered the 20% HP threshold, the boss skill usage will be increased. At then, Brosh was already brandishing his staff in midair, seconds away from activating {Abyssal Blast}.

.

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart was still adjusting to the new boss' rhythm and the little brat potion's cooldown was still ongoing. Fearing for her death, the little brat shouted. "Save me! Sister!"

Zhang Yang stopped his attack instantly and cast {Sacrifice} and {Shield Wall} one after the other.

BOOM!

The blast boomed out and the little brat was unscathed. Zhang Yang took the damage, but since he had {Shield Wall} activated, the damage he received was reduced greatly. However, the little brat selfish act had cost

him two life-preserving and life-saving skills!

"Sigh...Why couldn't you just behave?" Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"Nishishishi!" Wei Yan Er grinned stupidly and nodded her head. She knew that she had done wrong.

"As a lesson, I'll punish you. For the next 10 days, you are not allowed to loot the boss drops!"

"MYAA?!" The little girl squeaked and sulked solemnly. "Stinky noobie tank! I curse you! Your son will be a lazy bum!"

"Little brat!? Are you asking for a beating?" Han Ying Xue cringed.

"Ah."

Wei Yan Er had just remembered that her cousin sister was with Zhang Yang. If she were to curse his child, it would be the same as cursing Han Ying Xue! Just then, she realized that the child would be her own nephew, as well! She put up a cute face and said, "Ah heh~ My bad~!"

As the boss' HP dropped down, Zhang Yang could finally use his skill, the {God of War Heavy Axe}. With the enhanced damage dealt during the "Killing" stage (below 20%), the damage dealt by the skill skyrocketed!

"Could you not be that OP, little Yang?!" Fatty Han jumped when he saw how powerful Zhang Yang was, then. He could not even match up to his damage when he had the combined attack of his pet, the battle mount, and the Battle Companion!

"Heh. As expected of the big boss. Fatty Han, give up trying to be like him. There's no one like him!" Endless Starlight patted Fatty Han's shoulder.

"D*m you all! I will end your life!" Brosh started to panic. Not only the skill {Abyssal Blast} was used repeatedly, even the curse damage was triggered rapidly as well. It was almost impossible to anyone in the party to have more than 30% HP!

The battle had then entered the climax stage where anyone could get killed by the boss if they are careless.

17%...13%...11%...

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

It was a shame that the skill could not properly land. Everyone had their hearts skipping a beat when Zhang Yang cast the skill, but raged when it failed to be inflicted on the boss. How could the skill have such high failure rate!? Now that the skill could not be inflicted, everyone was left with one means to kill the boss, that is to fight like madmen!

"Hmm hmm...ha..haha...HAHA...HAHAHA! YOU ALL SHALL FALL!" The boss grew stronger and faster with every HP he lost. With every pain he suffered, the vengeance grew tenfold and was unleashed back towards those who opposed him.

10%...

{Abyssal Blast}!

The skill had indeed been shortened to only 15 seconds cooldown. After a brief while, the skill {Shadow Arrow} had been upgraded into a volley of arrows came raining down from the sky. Everyone was inflicted by the damage. Both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were forced to unleash {Vanguard Agression} to protect the entire party and gain a little breathing space.

8%...5%...3%...

Everyone in the party was forced to use their life preserving skills. Even all accessory skills were not spared. Right then, survivability first, attacking comes second! Its either do or die!

That was one of the reason why most open-world bosses required a sea of players to defeat. Either they had AoE killing skills, or the means to instantly disrupt the players attack! In such a situation, players would have to own an Inheritance or the battle tide would lean towards the boss. The only means of fighting such a boss without Inheritance players would be to fill in the extreme gaps with more players! And if the players die, more players shall be dispatched to fill in the gaps!

While Brosh could not be considered a final boss(1), spamming their AoE skills once every 15 seconds was considered to be only average difficulty. The most annoying and troublesome aspect was the curse.

Unlike most parties, who would instantly fail at killing, Zhang Yang's party consisted of elites amongst the elites. If it was them, perhaps they could do it without even dying!

2%...1%...

"Remember this day! For you have defeated me! I shall be back once more!" Brosh's eyes glowed with an intense crimson red. "The power of the Abyss is infinite! I shall be revived once more! I shall return to this earth and lay waste to you all!"

"Yea...yea...remember to bring some gifts back from the underworld, yeah?"

0%

The boss cracked something and fell off the Ghastly Dragon. He shot down like a meteor and landed with a great crash. The dragon flapped its wings and soared to the sky, disappearing from sight after Brosh was defeated.

"Sigh...I do wish that we could catch that dragon!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Little Yan Er. It's no good sitting on a boney dragon. You will hurt your little flat bum bum!" said Fatty Han purposely, to tease the little brat. To have him keep his mouth shut for 10 minutes would either require him to eat a 50-inch sized pizza or a massive 10-foot-long German sausage.

"Shut up pervy bro! I have no time to deal with you!" Wei Yan Er hurriedly ran towards the boss and picked up the loot. She had already forgotten that she was being punished. When the battle was still ongoing, Zhang Yang was paying full attention to fight the boss. He had no time to modify the looting arrangement setting and ended up allowing the little brat to loot all the drops.

"Nyahahahaha!" The little girl laughed as she collected all the drop in her inventory.

Zhang Yang shook his head and facepalmed himself. "Looks like you've cheated..."

"Nishishishi." Wei Yan Er counted the gold coins and after she was satisfied with it, she posted all the equipment out to the party chat.

There was a silvery gray heavy armor helmet, a blue colored ring, a red leather-bound skill book, and a piece of [Skill Point Crystal].

Chapter 667: Breaking the Third Seal

The main item that was up for grabs was the [Skill Point Crystal]. It was rather valuable after all. Hence, using the rolling method was not too practical. Lucky players like the little brat or even Han Ying Xue could easily get them. Players like Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream had never been very lucky in that sort of thing.

Hence, items with high value were distributed via turns instead. This time, the crystals fell to Endless Starlight. Since there were only 10 of them, farming the next one should not be too difficult.

Zhang Yang had the [Identifying Scroll] in hand and he had the two Ethereal tier equipment identified. The heavy armor equipment was given to the little brat.

[Anti-Shadow Helmet] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +6668

Strength: +2265

Intelligence: +972

{Level 5 Socket 1}

{Level 5 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases your maximum HP by 13,330

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 940 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases Shadow Magic resistant by 10%

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Lower Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Anti-Shadow Set: Anti-Shadow Helmet, {Anti-Shadow Chest Plate}, {Anti-Shadow Greaves}

3 Equip set: Increases Shadow Magic resistant by 20%..

Note: Once belonged to a warrior who tried to defeat Brosh. Sadly, he failed to do so. He had spent a fortune to craft a set of heavy armor with strong Shadow Magic resistance. However, it was obviously not strong enough.

"Set equipment?!" Everyone had their eyes wide with delight. After Level 80, the number of set equipment appearing was extremely low. However, even if they had managed to find the set equipment, it was a set equipment that was designed to counter a specific type of magic attack. It was too specific and not versatile enough to wear it all the time.

However, if every equipment set does come with a 10% Shadow resistant, three equipment, and the equipment set effect would total up to 50% Shadow resistance. It was good enough to counter a Shadow elemental magic monster such as Brosh.

Although the equipment stats were rather plain and average, it was still an Ethereal tier item at that. The stats were disappointing. In fact, the only benefit a player would get from equipping such equipment would be the high Shadow resistance. However, it was still a rather strong Guardian equipment!

"NUUUUUU! Why! Why! Why must it have Intelligence stats!?" Wei Yan Er wailed sadly as she tossed the helmet to Endless Starlight.

"Pervy boy! Here's to you. May it give you a little more Intelligence in your empty brain!"

Endless Starlight laughed and said, "Little Yan Er, I have over 4,000 Intelligence points. How much do you have?"

Naturally, all Warrior, Hunter and Thief class players have zero!

The little brat rolled her eyes and said, "So? 4,000 Intelligence, yet you still have the brains of a pig! You've got some nerves to show it off like that huh!"

Instead of being angry, everyone laughed at the little girl's petty attempt to pick a fight. She was, after all, a little girl at heart despite being 18 years

old.

"Endless Starlight. I will take your tanking skill seriously from now on. You have the equipment now. I expect better performance," said Zhang Yang with a nod.

Wei Yan Er took out the blue colored ring and held it up high to the sky. Under the bright light, the ring gave off a bright, yet calming blue radiant. It was as if the ring was made from the ocean's water.

[Brosh Engagement Ring] (Ethereal, Ring)

Vitality: +1667

Intelligence: +566

Spirit: +566

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 1,130

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 485 damage on attack.

Use: Turns a target that is facing you into your lover. Target that is inflicted will not attack you. You will lose the ability to attack the target as well. Effect lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 4 hours.

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: After the kidnapping of Brosh's fiancé, the young man dwelled into the Dark Arts in order to search a means to have his revenge.

Seems like the item does have some flavor text concerning the boss.

Since the item was meant for magic classes, Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart rolled for it. Daffodil Daydream won the item after rolling 87 points. She then equipped the ring and smiled as if it was her own engagement ring. Items such as rings, shield, and necklace do not have any sockets. Hence, after Identifying the equipment, the item will unlock its full potential. Weapons and Armor still have to be socketed before a player could use it for a real battle.

All equipment had been distributed, leaving the skill book last to be reviewed.

[Skill Book: Eagle Eye]

Use: Teaches you {Eagle Eye}

Class Requirement: Warrior, Knight, Thief, Hunter

Level Requirement: 20

After playing for so long, they had finally obtained the second skill book for {Eagle Eye}. For more than 2 years since the game had been launch, everyone in Zhang Yang circle knew about the skill and had kept on checking on the auction house for the book. However, for so long, they had never found a single book.

"WAHAHAH! The first {Eagle Eye} was stolen by the noob tank! Now I can have the skill as well!" Wei Yan Er jumped around happily.

"Hey...Since when I steal it?"

"Yeah! You did!" Wei Yan Er exclaimed and pouted. "Not only had you stolen the book, you have also stolen my cousin sister's heart! You evil man!" Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and gave Zhang Yang an evil glare. "Son of a b*tch!"

Zhang Yang popped a vein in his forehead.

"What did you just call me?" Zhang Yang cracked his knuckle to show his dominance to Wei Yan Er.

"Son of a--- AWWW!"

Zhang Yang grabbed her and pressed his knuckles against the top of her head.

"You use that word again and I'll put on my metal gauntlet next time."

Everyone laughed.

Still, the book was extremely precious. Even though they had a potion to grant them a 20% Defense ignore effect, it was not that they could 100% ignore all the Defense of the enemy! However, with the skill {Eagle Eye} at

Level 1, they could pair with Zhang Yang or Wei Yan Er's {Cripple Defense} to completely ignore all the enemy's armor! It was exceptionally strong against high Defense enemy.

All physical attack class players then were getting their hopes up. Let the system decide for the roll!

After an intense session of rolling, Sun Xin Yu was the final winner. With everyone admiring her luck, they could do nothing but clap their hands as Sun Xin Yu patted the book against her mighty chest and learned the skill.

"Imagine that...Sister Sun's attack have always been high. Now that she has the skill, her attacks would be even higher!" Daffodil Daydream smiled and praised. Even if the skill could ignore 100% Defense, it would do no good for her since her magic attack would already ignore all defense!

"Nyehahaha! Noobie tank has a proper rival now! Sister Sun will definitely kick your *ss!" cried Wei Yan Er happily.

Zhang Yang smirked. "Perhaps she would. Perhaps she won't. However, I'm sure of one thing. You can never defeat me!"

"Grrr...It's your fault...for taking my S class Inheritance..." Wei Yan Er muttered disgruntledly and sulked at a corner.

As the quest was completed, everyone flew back to Maanya Castle and reported the successful mission to Count Ropolly.

As they approached the gates, Count Ropolly himself was there to welcome Zhang Yang and the party. Since everyone had accepted the quest from Zhang Yang himself, they obtained 10,000,000 experience points. However, the only person who could enter the vault was Zhang Yang alone. With the count walking by his side, Zhang Yang was escorted to the castle's treasure vault. The vault was extremely huge and was filled with chests. Zhang Yang walked casually and opened random chests. Most of them were just gold coins. Hanging on the walls on all corners were weapon and equipment. Even though the count had given Zhang Yang the freedom to choose, most of the equipment available there were junks that were so useless that Zhang Yang would not even consider putting them in

the Little Merchandize Shop. Zhang Yang continued to walk deeper into the vault and found four equipment that were radiating with a metallic luster. Zhang Yang sighed. Now those are the 'real' treasures. They were mostly boots of Leather, Heavy Armor, and Silk types. Hanging in the last compartment was a red colored magic staff which was the item that he needed. The Specter of Fate.

Since the rule only allowed an item, Zhang Yang had no choice but to pick the Scepter of Fate. However, at then, Zhang Yang had no interest in anything below the Ethereal tier.

After completing and accepted the quest reward, Zhang Yang disbanded the party and returned to Morning Town. He then went to the Ten Barren Seas, headed to the dungeon and had Margery break the third seal of the Sword of Purging Devourer.

[Sword of Purging Devourer] (Ethereal, Two-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 12,006 – 20,006

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds.

DPS: 4,212

{Level 5 Socket 1}

{Level 5 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 30%

Equip: Increases Critical chance rate by 5%

Equip: Grants a 4% chance to replicate a previous attack after a successful attack on a target

Equip: Grants a 15% chance to stun a target after a successful attack on a target.

Special: Consumes a weapon and absorbs the weapon special effect. Can only be use once.

Level Requirement: 150

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Bound.

Zhang Yang would not dare to use one-handed weapon as a sacrificial tool for the sword to prevent a chance for the sword to turn back into a one-handed sword. This time, the last of the seals was broken and there cannot be a second chance.

Since the consumed weapon only needed to have a strong special skill, the tier of the weapon was not need to be considered. Zhang Yang went to the auction house and search for any weapon with a better effect and tossed it to the sword to "eat" it.

The last sword special effect gained was: "Grants a 2% chance to receive a 10% damage buff for 10 seconds after a successful attack on a target. Effect cannot stack.

Even though the Sword of Purging Devourer had the same DPS as the Dragon Slayer Axe, Warrior had the passive skill to gain an additional 5% Critical rate and damage boost. Even with the sword, Zhang Yang could not gain the tiny boost of damage, his basic attack was already as high as 78,978 – 98,978. A single sword attack could reach as high as 100,000!

Zhang Yang had the two new equipment that he obtained from a while back socketed with a Level 5 Strength Gemstone and after enhancing the Gemstone, Zhang Yang was free. He had nothing to do, then. The only thing that he could find to fill up the time was to help Fantasy Sweetheart kill her Inheritance quest boss. However, the quest boss was so easy that even Endless Starlight could tank it with ease.

Zhang Yang then decided to fight in the Battle Team Professional League and the Individual Ranking Competition after that. When he was bored that those, he took of with the Phoenix to grind some monsters. He then came back to town and crafted some potions. When he was bored with even that, he logged out of the game to do some adult-leisure-romance-action activity with Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. With the entire day well spent, Zhang Yang felt that it was one of those days that he truly was living the life. The next big thing that he should pay attention to was the Level 140 dungeon, the Death Abyss Grouped Dungeon.

Chapter 668: Another Serious Blood Loss

There were a total of 6 sub-dungeons in the Death Abyss Dungeon. Two of the sub-dungeons were 10-player scaled dungeons while the other four sub-dungeons were 5-player dungeons. Each dungeon was similar to the previous dungeons that they had cleared before. There would be Normal Modes, Hard Modes and Hardcore Modes. Players would be required to unlock the next Mode by clearing the previous Mode.

However, one thing different in this dungeon compared to the others. This Death Abyss is located in the War Canyon. Meanwhile, players would have to go through so many battles in order to be deemed worthy to enter the War Canyon.

The details were as follow:

When the number of Level 140 players reaches up to 1,000 in the game server, the Region War in the War Canyon will be unlocked for players to take part in it. A great battle will be held once every 7 in-game days. 5 minutes before the war begins, all players that have reached Level 140 or beyond can sign up for the war. The system will then choose 100 players with the best equipment to enter the Region War zone.

The rules of the battle - there are no rules! There will only be 100 players from each Region joining the Region War, no more, no less. It is a measure taken to give everyone a fair chance in the war. Players will be allowed to use any items, including their Inheritance Transformation Skills during the great Region War! The main aim of the battle is to kill as many opponents as you can! The duration of the battle is 2 hours.

What that breaks the rules, even more, was this. When players are dead, their Skills will all be resetted! Players will be able to return back to the battlefield at full power! They can return to the battlefield at their best state!

2 hours later, the party that manages to kill the most number of enemies shall claim victory over the battle as the Number One winner. When that happens, all players from the winner's Region will be able to enter the

War Canyon to grind their levels. Furthermore, the players from the winner's Region will also receive an additional of 15% Experience Points. Players who have reached beyond Level 140 will be able to challenge the 6 sub-dungeons of the Death Abyss. They can choose whichever Mode they like --- under the circumstances that the Modes are all unlocked.

Meanwhile, parties in the second place and third place also have almost similar perks. All players from Regions where the two parties belong to will be able to enter the War Canyon to grind their levels as well. However, these players would only be able to get additional 10% and 5% Experience Points, respectively. Meanwhile, players from the Region of the second place winner will only be able to challenge the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode of the new dungeons. Players from the Region that the party who wins the third place have it a little worse. They could only challenge the Normal Mode of the new dungeons.

So, how about the rest of the players? Sorry, they will not even be able to even enter the War Canyon at all. They will have to do better next time!

The new dungeons would all be reset once every 7 days. Therefore, players from every Region would only get one chance at clearing the dungeons before the next Region War!

Although they were sub-dungeons, every sub dungeon was independent on its own. There were no requirements whatsoever for which sub dungeon to be cleared first before the next. Players could just dive into any one of the sub-dungeons based on their liking. As for the equipment drops, Normal Mode would definitely drop only Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. The Hard Mode would only drop Violet-Platinum Tier equipment while the Hardcore Mode would only drop Mythical Tier equipment!

For normal players, Yellow-Gold Tier equipment was enough to support them in grinding their levels. Meanwhile, the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment was considered as the standard issue of the equipment the in the current stage of the game. As for the Mythical Tier equipment... well, Zhang Yang and his a gang are now wearing part Ethereal Tier part Mythical Tier equipment, aren't they?

Therefore, the dungeon of Death Abyss was something significant to any players from all Regions. Hence, every party in every Region would have to give their best shot in the Region War. Parties that can only get fourth place and so forth would only be watching the others farming good equipment, unable to enter the War Canyon.

After all, a dungeon could be repeatedly cleared as long as there were players who were willing to do it. One reset would provide players plenty of opportunities for obtaining high Tier equipment in high-leveled dungeons. Whoever who can grab the opportunity would certainly become much more powerful upon obtaining new powerful equipment.

At the beginning stage of the current situation, only a few players managed to attain Level 140. So there was not much of an effect on the Regions yet. The main contest was in getting the First Clear title for the dungeon's Death Mode after all. Those sub-dungeons were just 5-player and 10-player scale dungeons. So, the difficulty of the sub-dungeons should not be too difficult for the players. Bringing along players with Inheritance Transformations would really be a game-changing move! They would definitely bring about an absolute effect on their dungeon progression!

After all, it was true that this dungeon was indeed designed, based on the power level of players with Inheritances. However, players with Inheritances were not the same as players with Inheritance Transformation Skills.

Truth to be told, the difficulties in each of these sub-dungeons were designed based on the power level of a Class D Inheritance. Meanwhile, a Class D Inheritance could only boost 30% on the Attack of a player. Hence, the difficulty of clearing these sub-dungeons would only be increased by 30%. Although 30% is not a low number, the monsters and bosses in those dungeons would still be bested by players who activate their Inheritance Transformations.

Therefore, whichever Region that could secure the position of being Champions in the first Region War would definitely be getting the First Clear title for the new dungeon's Hardcore Mode. So naturally, everyone in

the China Region hoped that they would be the one who wins the first Region War! They could not afford to have any margin of error at all!

Zhang Yang passed the relevant information about the Region War to Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang. Everyone was very eager to take part in the war, apparently. It had been quite a while since they last battled with players from other Regions.

However, the War Canyon would only be opened to all servers when there are more than 1,000 Level 140 players in the game. Averagely speaking, every Region should have at least 125 players at Level 140. Although the requirement did not sound high at all, that number would require a certain amount of time to be assembled. As the Number One in the entire China Region, Zhang Yang was only at Level 133, currently. It would require at least two months to attain Level 140, even if he busts his *ss, trying to grind his level up over the period of two months.

Zhang Yang was not anxious about it at all. Well, things would still be pointless if he is the only one who reaches Level 140 first. Furthermore, the higher his levels go, the farther he'll drift apart from reality. It was a rational fear that tugged at his heart, one that he could not put in words. Well, deep down inside, he was extremely worried that when he reaches Level 179, he would suddenly wake up and realize that he is lying on a bed in a hospital all the while. Would he really end up realizing that his 'current life' is all nothing but a fantastical dream?

Without Felice tagging along by his side while grinding his level, Zhang Yang felt much more bored than usual. However, Zhang Yang has not heard anything from that little lady. Zhang Yang have already visited Gilstein twice. However, the statue was still radiating in a soothing light. There was still no sign of Felice's voice at all.

Holding his urge to strike the statue down by force, Zhang Yang decided to wait in patience. Meanwhile, he also decided to camp by the site to grind his level, while waiting for something to happen. Grinding his level anywhere else would still be the same for him anyway.

About 7 or 8 days later, Zhang Yang suddenly received a call from his

secretary. He was lying on his office couch while playing the game. His secretary told him that someone on the line would like to speak to him. After picking up the call, he heard a young voice filled with hatred and resentment, "Zhang Yang... you're ruthless! You're really a ruthless son of the b*tch! I'm not going to let this slide, just like that!"

The moment the voice stopped, the person hung up.

Zhang Yang was unable to make head or tail of the situation. He shrugged and continued on with his game. However, he suddenly recognized the voice over the phone earlier on --- Ma Zhi Hua.

Zhang Yang did not even want to care about what that was all about. This guy was simply idiotic. Since Sun Xin Yu told Zhang Yang to let her handle it, Zhang Yang would, of course, entrust her with it to the fullest. It seemed that Sun Xin Yu got the issue handled. However, he had no idea what Sun Xin Yu did to rattle the guy so hard that Ma Zhi Hua got so unhinged.

Truth be told, men were also very curious creatures. At night when they were busy in bed, Zhang Yang could no longer hold his curiosity. So he asked her about it, "What did you do to your cousin Ma? He seems like he just stepped on a landmine or something. He actually called over to tell me that he will not let this slide. Fill me in a little, will you?"

Sun Xin Yu humphed lightly and said, "I just gathered some intel about his former crimes and passed it to my superior. He got into the jail cell in the police station for a few days because of that! If it wasn't because of my uncle, I would have cut my ties with him and left him to be destroyed!"

Unfortunately, even though Sun Xin Yu was 'icy cold', she still felt for her relative. After all, they were kin. If they weren't from the same family tree, she might have done something far worse than that, based on her temper.

Han Ying Xue snorted and said, "You really are ruthless, ice queen. You didn't even let your own family go! You're just a witch as much as the wicked ones!"

Piak! Piak!

Suddenly, two smooth hands roughly reached out and clapped over the two busty boobies of Han Ying Xue. Sun Xin Yu smile coldly and said, "Milk cow, do you believe that I'll crush them to bits?"

Speaking of 'battles', even if there were 10 Han Ying Xues, there was no way that they would be able to defeat Sun Xin Yu. She turned her head around and looked at Zhang Yang pitifully.

"Ice queen, these two are my private properties! You shall not bully them!" Zhang Yang pushed Sun Xin Yu down and put himself on top of Sun Xin Yu, "Not to mention that these two precious babes of yours are mine as well!"

The wonderful night was still young. The erotic utterances played together like a symphony throughout the night.

Zhang Yang waited for another 7 to 8 days. He managed to reach Level 135. However, he had not heard nor seen Felice yet! He began to feel anxious. So, he decided not to wait any longer.

Wait, a second! Just hold that thought!

Well, it certainly took a lot of his blood away when Felice was born from the egg.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes and finished off the monster that was bothering him. Then, he went back to the side of the statue with his Phoenix pet.

"It seems that I have to do it once again! This is going to be another serious blood loss!" Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Then, he took out some [Snack] and placed them on the ground. At the same time, he pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and slit his left wrist. Blood oozed out from the cut. Zhang Yang quickly put his left hand over by the side of the statue and let his blood flow upon the statue.

A miracle happened. The statue began to absorb Zhang Yang's blood like a sponge!

It was working! It was definitely working!

Zhang Yang quickly took up a [Snack] and ate it. After all, he was losing his HP as fast as he was losing his blood!

In tens of seconds, his wound stopped bleeding and the cut recovered. However, the only change on the statue was that it was glowing a little brighter than before.

This statue surely had a large appetite!

Recalling back at the older days, it almost sucked him dry, trying to feed his blood to the egg when Felice was still Level 0. Now that she had reached Level 130... well...

Zhang Yang slit his wrist again with his sword and continued to 'feed' his blood to the statue. He could not help but think, if someone sees him doing this, would that someone freak out, seeing the Number One player in the China Region cutting himself in apparent pleasure?

First bar of HP, second bar of HP, third bar of HP... Zhang Yang was thankful that he only needed to do this in the game. He could just recover his HP bar by taking some [Snacks] repeatedly. Or else, Zhang Yang would have died countless time by now.

"Difficult labor! Definitely a difficult labor! Should have used the cesarean section!" Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Even though his HP bar could be regained by eating a lot of [Snacks], he also took quite a toll for losing so much blood continuously for so long. His face was so pale that it had turned completely white! He was so dazed that he could even see stars and flowers flying around him.

The statue glowed brighter and brighter as he fed his blood to it. The light became so strong that Zhang Yang could no longer shield his eyes from the light even after he closed his eyelids. As it grew brighter and brighter, even the trees were not able to block the light from scattering out far into the surroundings. Others could see the bright radiating light from tens of kilometers away!

Currently, most players have reached Level 120. So they were eligible to be on the same map as Zhang Yang, many players nearby were attracted by the light source. So they came over, on their pets and mounts to take a

look at what was going on. One, two, three... more and more players were gathering around. Even though Zhang Yang had hidden his character information, the Phoenix pet by his side had betrayed his identity to everyone in the surroundings --- there were only two Phoenix pets in the entire server. One was owned by some half-baked fat Hunter that was constantly asking to be beaten up. The other one was owned by the Number One player recognized by the entire world, Zhan Yu!

So that was Zhan Yu?

What the f*ck was he up to, cutting himself and splashing his blood on a statue? What did it even mean? Why would he make such a big fuss out of it? Did he overdose on an aphrodisiac and was now trying to make out with a statue? Did he find masturbating no longer fun and he wanted to try releasing the other kind of liquid from his body?

Even though more and more players were gathering around him, none of them launched any sort of assaults on Zhang Yang. Other than the players from Japan-Korea Region, Zhang Yang had no beef with normal players. Furthermore, the Number One player in the entire world was standing there, doing some weird stuff now! So no one was daring enough to try something on him.

Just when the situation could not get any weirder, Zhang Yang suddenly felt the statue vibrating with a gentle hum.

Chapter 669: Felice's Advancement

Zhang Yang felt a rush of joy up his chest. He continued to let his blood flow on the statue while eating [Snacks] like a joyful madman. He also took a glance at his surroundings once in a while. He did not seem to care about how people looked at him at all.

If such a facial expression was seen on a normal player, that player would have been surrounded and beaten up for good!

However, the circumstances were different for Zhang Yang. He was the Number One player in the entire game. He had all right to do that! Those who crossed eyes with Zhang Yang could not even look him straight in his eyes. They either looked at another direction or looked down to their own feet. Well, Zhang Yang looked intimidating just by standing there. So there was nothing to be said about it.

"Little Yang, rumors say that you're masturbating to a statue! You masturbated so much that blood came out instead?" the voice of Fatty Han squeaked in his ear.

Zhang Yang frowned intensely after hearing Fatty Han's stupid words, as usual. Then he asked, "Who said that?"

"The rumors are all over the place! Some people even opened up a post and discussed it on the forum page! They are discussing about what you're really up to!"

... what are rumors? Any information or news that are added in with some 'spices' of their own would definitely be twisted into something it was not meant to be, especially when the rumors had gone through tens of people's mouths! The 'taste' of it would change significantly!

Oh, my poor reputation!

Zhang Yang could only mourn for his reputation by shaking his head over and over again. As he continued on with what he was doing, the statue continued to get brighter and brighter. He could vaguely feel that he was almost at the most vital moment. There was no way that he would

back down from what he was trying to achieve now! Well, he would not want all his blood to go to waste after all. If he is ever going to be forced to 'masturbate' again, surely he would be suffocated to death by the people surrounding him.

"Haha! It really is Zhang Yang!"

An arrogant voice came by his ear. It was the voice of Liu Wei! Liu Wei came with Death Arbiter and his 12 'Suicide Squad' members. Of course, he wouldn't have forgotten to bring along his army of Healers as well. He at least brought along 40 to 50 players with him this time.

They had been occupied with grinding their levels nearby when they heard about Zhang Yang's 'masturbation'. So they came over to take a look at what was really going on here. Although there were some discrepancies between the rumors and the real situation, Liu Wei was overwhelmed with joy --- first of all, Zhang Yang was alone here all by himself; secondly, Zhang Yang was obviously doing something he could not afford to stop at that moment!

Wrecking Zhang Yang's business was everything that Liu Wei ever wished to do! Now, he was presented with the greatest opportunity of all time. How would he let the chance slip away, then? Without any hesitation, he commanded his men to launch their assaults on Zhang Yang. He wanted to take this super rare opportunity to take out Zhang Yang.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was on the verge of success!

He did not intend give up on it. He continued to release his blood onto the statue. He commanded his Phoenix pet to activate its Transformation Skill just in case. The big bird instantly turned into a 30-meter tall creature with a long tail that turned it into a hundred-meter long blazing bird. The Phoenix pet dove at Death Arbiter and spat a blast of blazing flame straight upon him.

Although the Phoenix pet was the only one who was engaged in battle, some of the 'stray bullets' from the battle still found their way to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was forced to engage in battle after he received the

damage. The moment when he was engaged in battle, he no longer had the chance to take his [Snacks]. Without getting the support to recover back his HP, Zhang Yang's HP bar began to drop steeply.

Liu Wei instantly laughed with joy when he saw that. Then he said, "Zhang Yang! Does it feel good knowing that you're going to die and there's nothing you can do about it?"

He led his 12 'Suicide Squad' members and charged at Zhang Yang.

Just when things got a little messier than expected, the statue suddenly started to tremble more violently with each passing second. A flash of blinding light surged through the entire statue. Right in the middle of the statue's chest, a white radiating barrier appeared. There was the vague shadow of a girl curled up in the middle of that white radiating barrier.

Boom!

The radiating barrier suddenly trembled and exploded violently, sending shards of light to the surroundings. Everyone could not help but shield their eyes from the light.

When everyone opened their eyes again, they only saw a humanoid lady levitating in midair with her valiant appearance. She was holding a long lance while her black silky hair was floating about naturally even though the air was still --- It was Felice!

"Big brother!" The little lady turned her angry eyes over to Liu Wei. Then she transformed into her Dragonhawk Form and descended down from the air. Not long after she transformed into her Dragonhawk Form, she transformed again into a new form --- the Spectral Tiger Form!

Upon her transformation, the little lady used some other unknown Skill. Its size changed tremendously! Initially, the Spectral Tiger was only about seven to eight meters long. After breathing in some air, the Spectral Tiger spread out into 30 meters tall and hundreds of meters long! It was almost as large as the transformed Phoenix pet!

'-181,478!'

Felice struck with her claws out and instantly caused over a terrifying

damage of 180,000 damage to Liu Wei. She took out about 70% HP of that guy with just one hit! The attack did not end there. Felice struck out again at high speed.

Switch!

‘-214,322!’

In the nick of time, one of the bodyguards that came along with Liu Wei finally did his job. He threw a {Sacrifice} onto Liu Wei and saved Liu Wei at the last moment!

Although he did a great job on that, the Attack power of Felice was just too terrifying!

Everyone in the surrounding dropped their jaws when they saw the damage values that popped out on top of Liu Wei and his bodyguard. Even though they were not clear about how powerful was Felice’s Attack power, they could still see how much damage Felice could deal to her foes by looking at the damage values that popped out on top of Liu Wei and his man. Well, the Attack power of Felice was definitely on the same standard as the Attack power of a boss!

They had no idea that Felice was initially Zhang Yang’s Battle Companion. They only thought that Felice was just a powerful being that just got ‘hatched’ from the statue! Well, it was normal to have that kind of thoughts. Logically speaking, why would a top Tier player like Zhang Yang be bleeding himself out miserably to ‘feed’ a statue then? There must be something worthwhile in doing it!

Apparently, one could also obtain a powerful Battle Companion by doing such an absurd thing!

Everyone in the surroundings was beginning to feel an itch in their hearts. After witnessing the might that Felice exhibited, would anyone still be content with their current Battle Companion?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. He commanded his Phoenix pet to flap its wings and get going into the sky. Then he leaped onto the back of the Phoenix pet. The moment he mounted himself onto the Phoenix pet, his

Maximum HP shot past 6,000,000 HP. Right before he mounted onto his pet, Zhang Yang had only approximately 70,000 HP left because of what he did for the statue back there. However, he got a huge boost in his Maximum HP after mounting himself onto his pet. So all the HP he lost back there became an insignificant factor.

"Felice! Let's work together and take out these bastards!"

"Yes, big brother!"

Zhang Yang had a Phoenix pet at his side. Who would dare to stand up against him? The royal-blooded Phoenix fluttered its wings and lunged into the sky. It went straight towards Liu Wei! Upon reaching Liu Wei, the Phoenix pet began to spit fire upon him without any signs of mercy! The flames danced about and caused tens of thousands of damage upon Liu Wei and at least 7 others of his men!

After all, they were engaged in battle with a fully transformed Phoenix!

Coincidentally, Liu Wei and his goons had activated their Transformation Skill as they were grinding their levels and taking down bosses not long before they came here. Hence, their Transformation Skills were still under cooldown period. They were all in grave danger right now!

Felice assessed the situation and transformed into her Humanoid Form. By doing so, her Attack was similarly powerful as the Attack of the Transformed Phoenix. No... her Attack was actually much more powerful than the Attack of the Phoenix! The two of them joined forces and caused a tremendous mess to Liu Wei and his men. With their AoE attacks bombarding Liu Wei and his men, the tactic that Liu Wei loved to implement had lost its effect. His goons could not even save themselves from the blazing attacks thrown at them. How would they still be able to throw {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei to keep him alive, then? In the beginning, they were barely holding on. After a brief moment, his men began to die one after another.

Players with an Inheritance Transformation had an absolute advantage over players without an Inheritance Transformation. Now, the Phoenix pet and Felice were both transformed. Zhang Yang was a skillful and powerful

player all by himself! The three of them brought hell upon Liu Wei and his men.

As expected, the Number One player in the entire world is not to be trifled with!

Everyone was amazed to see how Zhang Yang was preying on Liu Wei and his men like how an eagle was picking up little chicks one after another. It did not take long before Zhang Yang took out the entire 50-player scale party of The Myth. Well, now they had really faded into 'myth'! A large scale party was taken out single-handedly by one player!

A number of other players went up to the statue and bled themselves as well. They were fantasizing that they could also get a powerful Battle Companion as well by doing what Zhang Yang did awhile before that.

"Zhang Yang! You better not be so cocky about this! You're not going to be so lucky every time!" Liu Wei left his final soaring words before he was slammed to his death by Felice. He only got to survive so long because he had been so well protected.

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang could not get a grip on any evidence about Liu Wei's crime in real life just yet. Even though Liu Wei had done quite a number of terrible things back then, it was almost impossible to get a hold over any solid evidence about all his crimes. Back in the day, he actually attempted to get a beautiful girl in his secondary school. After he was rejected by the girl, he raped the girl. However, he was from a very rich family. Everything was 'settled' with money. The girl and her family left the city and disappeared into the wind. It would require time to locate their whereabouts. Furthermore, it would also be another big question if the victim would be willing to step up and testify against Liu Wei.

Back in his University days, Liu Wei was not behaving well at all. Rumors had that he killed a few people back then and got everything 'settled' with money as well. The family members of the victims were compensated with a substantial amount of money. They also left their initial places and vanished into the wind. So, it would be extremely difficult to look them up one by one.

Therefore, it would still be impossible for Zhang Yang to checkmate Liu Wei with one solid move. However, Zhang Yang had hired several extra private investigators to dig deeper into the matter. He would not be worrying about money anymore because he got rich good time! Furthermore, getting rid of Liu Wei with hard solid evidence would be the best thing he needed to make his life complete.

Felice had returned to him. There was no reason left for Zhang Yang to stay at the site. So, he hopped onto the back of his Phoenix pet and left the place, leaving behind tons of players who just witnessed his battle with The Myth. Those players were idiotically trying to do what he did, cutting their wrist and trying to 'feed' the statue with their blood. Thousands of players cutting themselves in the public... was a spectacular scene to gaze upon...

Zhang Yang turned his attention towards Felice. He was extremely surprised to see that Felice went through a Level Advancement!

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 133

HP: 599,920 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 8,870

Melee Attack: 64,714 - 84,714 (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear], [Dragon's Spear Barrage], [Dragonhawk Form]

[Spectral Tiger Form]: Transforms into a Spectral Tiger. While in the form of the Spectral Tiger, Felice can use a new set of Skills of the Spectral Tiger. However, she will not be able to use the Skills that she can use in her Humanoid form.

Special: {Seal 2}{Seal 3}{Seal 4}

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

[Felice] (Spectral Tiger Form)

Level: 133

HP: 451,980 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 1,850

Magic Resistance: 8,870

Melee Attack: 64,714 - 84,714 (Based on Physical Attack, however, deal Nature Damage) (Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds)

Skills:

[Claw Attack]: Attacks the target with a beastly claw. Deals 150% Melee Attack of Nature Damage. Consume: 50 Focus Points.

[Spectral Tiger Berserk]: Enters into a berserk state. The body will expand in size. Maximum HP will increase by 20 times. Attack will increase by 300%. Defense will increase by 300%. Magic Resistance will increase by 300%. While in the berserk state, Felice will gain 1 Berserk Energy Point in every 10 seconds. Duration: 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Note: Upon activating the {Spectral Tiger Berserk}, the {Dragonhawk Berserk} will also enter the same cooldown state.

[Frenzy Talon Strike]: Reach out her claws and attack the target with a series of flurry attacks, causing 100% Melee Attack of Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 50 meters. Consume: 3 Berserk Energy Point.

[Berserk Recovery]: Immediately recovers HP. Requires 10 Berserk Energy Points to activate. Basic amount of HP recovery is set as 50% HP. Each additional Berserk Energy Point can increase additional 5% HP. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

So that was the reason why that little ladies could perform with such ferocity. Zhang Yang had suspected it to be something similar to a Transformation Skill. He was right after all!

However, what was {Dragonhawk Berserk}?

Zhang Yang looked further down on Felice's attributes.

[Felice] (Dragonhawk Form)

Level: 133

HP: 376,650 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 1,850

Magic Resistance: 8,870

Magic Attack: 38,884 - 48,884

Skills:

[Pulverizing Flame]: Spit blazing flames from the sky upon an area of 30 X 30 circular area, causing 50% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to all targets within the effective area of the Skill in every second. Last for 10 seconds. Require aiming. Cooldown: 30 seconds. Consume: 100 Focus Points.

[Fire Missile]: launch a Fire Missile at a target, causing 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target. Chanting time: 2 seconds. Consume 20 Focus Points.

[Dragonhawk Berserk]: Enters into a berserk state. The body will expand in size. Maximum HP will increase by 20 times. Attack will increase by 300%. Defense will increase by 300%. Magic Resistance will increase by 300%. While in the berserk state, Felice will gain 1 Berserk Energy Point in every 10 seconds. Duration: 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Note: Upon activating the {Spectral Tiger Berserk}, the {Dragonhawk Berserk} will also enter the same cooldown state.

[Berserk Recovery]: Immediately recovers HP. Requires 10 Berserk Energy Points to activate. Basic amount of HP recovery is set as 50% HP. Each additional Berserk Energy Point can increase an additional 5% HP. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Addition: Have the ability to fly.

Chapter 670: Charge Up Strike

Upon visiting Gilstein, Felice had advanced up to the level of an Ethereal Tier. She looked almighty from all sides. The scene of her wiping out a large number of players from The Myth mesmerized the players who witnessed her actions in the surroundings. They truly believed that Zhang Yang had acquired this powerful Battle Companion by giving his blood to a statue.

The rumors spread on. Countless players went to the Goddess of War's Statue and cut their wrists as well. They even needed to fight their way through in order to get close to the statue!

Some players who knew about the lore of 'God's Miracle' immediately pointed out that the statue was actually the statue of the Goddess of War who had fallen during ancient times. After confirming the fact, the players became even more obsessed than they ever could. Was this the reason why Felice was so powerful? Was it because she had a direct connection to the gods in the ancient times?

Most players actually believed that there was a chance to get a similarly powerful Battle Companion and become all powerful like Zhang Yang!

For the next few days, countless players died from blood loss. White lights were seen flashing one after another because players were sent to the Graveyard upon their deaths for being total idiots.

As time passed, most of the players finally recovered from their insanity and obsession towards the idea, because no one ever succeeded in summoning a second 'Felice'. However, there was still a small number of players insisting that the method they used might not be correct. Or maybe they were not giving enough blood to the statue. Rumors about using different methods spread across the server like cancer. A few days later, so many versions of methods had been told across the server: For instance, a player must give blood to the statue while masturbating. Well, this was thought true because Zhang Yang was rumored to be masturbating at the statue while he was giving his blood to it at the same

time...

The ridiculous farce went so far that the official was forced to step up and make a statement. The official had to post an official announcement on the forum just to end the farce.

...

Not only Zhang Yang could transform himself into his {God of War Transformation}, his Battle Companion and his pet could also transform themselves! Would there still be someone on equal ground with Zhang Yang when he is so much more powerful than he already was?

The slight kink of the current situation was that the two Transformation Skills on Felice shared the same cooldown period. In other words, she could not activate both of her Transformation Skills consecutively right after her first activation. Because the cooldown for each Transformation Skills was 72 hours, Felice would have to wait for that long before she could activate another Transformation Skill on her. Well, if she could just activate one Transformation Skill and activate another one after the first one ended, Felice would be too broken for the game! She would become too much to handle for anyone, including Zhang Yang! Anyway, if the three of them activated their Transformations at the same instance, would anyone still be able to handle them?

On the ranking board, Zhang Yang had become absolutely invincible. When he activates his Transformation Skill at the same time as his Phoenix, no one could defeat him. With an additional Felice who could also activate a Transformation Skill? Her presence had just secured Zhang Yang's Number One more firm than ever! Of course, only Zhang Yang and Fatty Han could attain a double activation of Transformation Skills in one battle. In the not so far future, maybe Hundred Shots would join under their ranks. Although players with Transformation Skill were powerful, they would still be taken out cold if they were to battle an army of hundreds of thousands.

Felice managed to unseal another one of her seals after she came out from the Goddess of War's Statue. Her Tier had advanced up to the Tier of

Ethereal while her Attribute Growth Star points had increased from 10 stars to 11 stars! In other words, Felice would receive an additional 10% effect on the attributes that any Battle Companion equipment had to offer. The perks she now had were so many times better than before when she only had 5 stars or 6 stars!

With Felice joining his team again, Zhang Yang managed to grind his level at an even faster rate. However, those lazy bumps like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were beginning to rely on him after seeing Felice's performance. They kept requesting Zhang Yang to join their party in grinding their levels. Even though their Attack powers were not weak, who could compete with Zhang Yang in term of Attack power! So instantly, these b*tches held Zhang Yang back and reduced his efficiency in grinding his level.

Even so, Zhang Yang did not mind it at all. If he is the only one who reaches Level 140 first, he would have to wait for the others to reach Level 140 as well. There would be no fun in that at all. Regardless of whether it was the big battle coming up in the War Canyon or the dungeons, everything involved team effort.

Under the supervision of Zhang Yang, his gang was improving at a monstrous rate. Their levels were increasing rapidly over a short period of time! Well, it would not be a surprise actually, because they were pretty actually pretty good players, to begin with. In the meantime, Fantasy Sweetheart finally acquired her Succubus Inheritance. The party became complete with everyone having their very own Inheritances! Moreover, the lowest Class among their Inheritance were Class B! The lineup of the party had now become formidably strong and powerful!

Time passed quickly. They did not even realize that it was already the beginning of May. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang became the very first who reached beyond Level 140. His Strength alone did not improve much. After all, he had not been able to get higher Tier equipment for himself to equip. However, his Phoenix pet had reached Level 140 and its power level had advanced up to the Tier of Ethereal. That was some quality change happening there!

Currently, the DPS of Phoenix pet had reached up to 40,000 damage. Its Maximum HP under the influence of the {Vitality Aura} had reached up to 645,870 HP! On the other hand, the highest HP and Defense of Felice in her Humanoid Form could reach up to 710,450 HP and 9,419 Defense. When she is in her Dragonhawk Form and her Spectral Tiger Form, her Maximum HP could reach up to 446,010 HP and 535,200 HP respectively. Her DPS while in both forms was approximately 50,000 damage. The difference was not that big.

When Felice is in her Dragonhawk Form, she could be treated as an individual existence of a Spellcaster. Her Maximum HP would become the lowest among her attributes while her Damage output would become the highest among all her attributes. While she is in her Spectral Tiger Form, she could be treated as a Berserker on the battlefield. Her Maximum HP could become higher than the Maximum HP that she would have when she is in her Dragonhawk Form. At the same time, her Attack power would be a little lower than her Attack power while she is in her Dragonhawk Form as well.

Most importantly, these two Transformation Forms could solve the issue for Felice while she battles Natural-type and Fire-type bosses. With her weakness out of the way, she could unleash her potential to the fullest! Zhang Yang also believed that Felice would be getting more Transformation Forms when her third Seal is unsealed!

Currently, the Attack power of Felice had exceeded the Attack power of the Phoenix pet by a large gap. However, Phoenix pet excelled in normal Attack, Defense, and higher HP. If the two of them clashed in battle, there was no telling who would come up top just yet!

When Zhang Yang reached Level 140, the Officials immediately introduced the topic of the War Canyon. They introduced the details and entry requirements of the War Canyon to everyone on the public forums. Therefore, everyone understood that they must acquire Number One in the Region War in order to get a chance of acquiring the First Clear of the Death Abyss's Hardcore Mode!

None of the players were slacking off after knowing about the criteria to

enter the War Canyon. They were grinding their levels harder than they could. The War Canyon would be unlocked once the number of Level 140 players hit 1,000. It did not state that each state must contribute in such regard. However, if one Region could become significantly powerful that they could gather 1,000 Level 140 players before the other Regions, then all they needed to do was to allocate 1,000 players into the War Canyon and stand there for 2 hours long. They could just easily claim victory over the Region War staying idle in the War Canyon!

Of course, that scenario was too unreal to even think about it. Well, whichever Region with the most players reaching Level 140 would stand a higher chance of winning the Region War. Players from all around the world were trying to reach Level 140 to unlock the War Canyon. It did not matter how many Level 140 players each Region could contribute. As long as the number of Level 140 players in the entire game hits 1,000, the War Canyon would be unlocked. When that happens, only be 1,000 players from all Regions could join the Region War in the War Canyon. Hence, the Region with the most Level 140 players could join the Region War with more players. Because if they could allocate more Level 140 players into the War Canyon for the Region War, they could easily triumph over the other Regions. Meanwhile, the other Regions would be facing a deficit in the number of Level 140 players on their sides. Maybe they could only allocate 80, 70 or even 40 players in the Region War. They would not even stand a chance if that is really the case!

No one would want their Region to face that sort of crisis. Therefore, every available Top Tier player on each Region worked extra hard. They tried their best to reach Level 140 for their Region. After all, one man's loss is another's gain. It would not matter the number of Level 140 players from which Region surpass the requirement by the end of the contest, the War Canyon would be unlocked when there are 1,000 Level players in the entire server.

Upon reaching Level 140, Zhang Yang went to see God of War Ares to learn new Skill. Ever since he reached Level 120, Zhang Yang could only learn one new Skill every time his level increases by 20 levels. It was so

long ago since he last visited Ares. He almost forgot the exact location of the cave!

The new Skill that Ares was going to teach Zhang Yang was called 'Charge Up Strike'. However, the name did not suggest what the Skill had to offer.

[Charge Up Strike]: Feints a blow on the target. Target will receive no damage at all. Charges Strength. Gets prepared for the next attack. The next attack will certainly be a Critical Hit. Increases additional 50% to Damage Dealt as well. Effect lasts for 2 seconds at most. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Although this Skill also shared the same cooldown as the other Skills, the next hit would be guaranteed a Critical hit. It could really give Zhang Yang some benefit in some sense. Moreover, the Skill could also increase an additional 50% damage!

...

As each day passed, there would be more notifications about new players achieving Level 140. Without anyone noticing, the number of Level 140 players soon reached 1,000!

May 26th, 8:45 p.m, the server began to post the notification saying that there were now 1,000 Level 140 players in the entire server. The great Region War in the War Canyon would be held at 9 p.m on the next day. Players who intend to join the Region War must sign up, 10 minutes before the event.

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, One Sword Stroke and the other guildmasters of the Top Tier Guild went to see Zhang Yang. They had a meeting to discuss about strategy and tactics to use for the Region War and to find out the benefits of cooperating with each other --- with the current number of players with Inheritance in each guild, they could easily conquer a Hardcore Mode of a dungeon. If they could determine the benefits they were signing up for, they believed it would be wiser of them to cooperate. Each of the guilds was one of the best in the entire China Region. If they organized and delegated on the clearing up the sub-

dungeons, they could acquire the First Clear of the dungeon in no time. However, if they competed against each other to clear one dungeon, they would waste too much time on slaughtering their own while the other weaker guilds might snatch the First Clear of the dungeon under their noses.

Zhang Yang did not have much experience on managing strategies for large-scale battles. Fortunately for him, he had Mountain Mover on his guild. Moreover, Mountain Mover had also reached Level 140 under the guidance of Zhang Yang. Although he was not particularly skilled in single combat, Mountain Mover was extremely good at arranging strategies and commanding troops. Because of him, Zhang Yang did not have to torture his brain to think something up.

He pushed Mountain Mover out to the front as he sat back with his arms folded around himself. Well, all he needed to do was to be the best fighter on the battlefield, nothing more!

The Battle Royale in the War Canyon would just be like the Individual Ranking Competition. Upon entering the battle, the cooldown of all Skills would all be reset. Moreover, the cooldown of Skills would not be brought out of the battle as well. In simpler words, after a player activates a Skill, the Skill would be under cooldown. However, if the player gets out from the Region War, the cooldown of the Skill would be reset. Or else, the situation among the guilds would be filled with doubt. Because if that wasn't the case, everyone who takes part in the war would not be able to use their Transformation Skills after using them for the Battle Royale.

"I want a fight, right now!"

"Why is it not beginning yet?"

"Hmm, you look like an ugly horse, noob tank!"

The grand battle was about to begin. Wei Yan Er could no longer hold herself back. She ran out of patience and muttered on and on. She even tried to ridicule Zhang Yang with her immature words. Zhang Yang had returned the [Dragon Slayer Battle Axe] back to the little brat some time ago. However, the party only managed to slay a small number of high Tier

bosses. Even though their equipment had improved, but the improvement was not much to tell.

‘Ding! You can now enter the War Canyon to join the battle!’

Zhang Yang’s vision blurred for a second. Instantly, he found himself in the middle of an unfamiliar canyon. He brought up his map to take a look. The interior of the canyon was actually similar to the design of the Gagarov's Mist map. However, there were only 8 paths instead of 12.

Every path led to the central point. There, players would find some defensive facilities such as mini Magic Cannons. Each blow could deal 100,000 Chaos Damage to anyone who gets caught in the middle of the blast. The blast from the cannon could spread out to an area of 10 meters squared. The cooldown of these Magic Cannons was only 30 seconds. The best thing about the cannons was that they had unlimited ammo!

Whoever who conquers the central point of the map could secure those defensive facilities for their own usage. They would be able to deal even more damage to their opponents. The winning party would be determined based on the number of players they kill. The party that could kill the most would be deemed as the winner. Therefore, these defensive facilities would play a significant role in aiding the players in claiming victory over the war.

Moreover, Graveyards were located on either end of the pathways. Whenever a player from any Region is killed, they would be sent back to their respective Region's Graveyard. They would need to run all the way to central point all over again just to kill or be killed once again.

There was also a special Graveyard located right in the middle of the center point on the map. Whichever party that conquers the central point would be able to use the special Graveyard to resurrect. By doing so, they would no longer have to run all the way back from the start when they die.

Therefore, the key to winning this war would lie in whether a party conquers the central point of the map, or not.

Chapter 671: Exposing the Atrocious Side

Of course, it would not mean that victory is claimed after a party managed to secure the center point. They would still have many other problems to worry about.

Yes, they would take control of the defensive facilities and the special Graveyard which would enable them to jump straight back into the battle without having to run through the entire pathway. However, the Region who gets hold of the center point would have to face the assaults from the other 7 Regions! The players able to stand on this map were all players that had been filtered out by the system, based on their equipment Tier. The system would only deem those who had higher Tier equipment on them to be eligible to enter the War Canyon. Therefore, the standard of the players from all Regions should not differ greatly among themselves.

By taking the advantage of the defensive facilities and the special Graveyard at the central point, one Region could possibly perform a 1 vs 2, or even 1 vs 3. But 1 vs 7? That would be...

The situation of this battle would be similar to playing a game of chess. One would need to adopt and discard a pawn with a critical eye. Even though one Region might take down the center point, it would not mean they would have to defend the spot to their very end. After all, the criteria of winning the first place in the contest was to kill as many enemies as they could.

Slaughter, that was the main theme of this war, after all!

Furthermore, defending the central point would not be the only way to win. They could also send a small strike team and ambush players at their Graveyards. The weakened players will surely be massacred before they can fully recover! Unless the numbers of players resurrecting far outnumbered the strike force, the strike team would be able to camp at the spot, leisurely killing off everything that spawned there!

Moreover, it would be extremely difficult to snitch out a few Thieves in their Stealth Mode in a canyon that was at least 50-meters wide!

In a nutshell, there were multiple means of claiming victory in the battle.

This would be the first grand battle in the War Canyon. Although there were actually more than 1,000 players beyond Level 140, it would not mean that each Region would be able to allocate 100 players to join the war. Powerful Regions such as China Region, Europe Region, North America Region and India Region would allocate about 120 or even 130 players to join the war. From that excessive number, the system would pick the 100 players with the best equipment.

However, Regions that were 'wretched' such as Japan-Korea Region could only afford to send 76 players. They had no choice at all but to send as many good players as they could. That number was the best that they could do for the moment.

It was only 5 minutes before the beginning of the battle. The 100 players from China Region were listening to every command of Mountain Mover. Everyone could only stay by their respective Graveyards before the battle begins. There was no way that they could head for the center point now.

Mountain Mover had checked on the information that the Officials provided. Hence, he had a deep understanding on the terrain of the area and the competition rules. With sufficient information, he could work his brain to his fullest potential.

However, the 100 players from the China Region might not be on the same page. After all, they were cobbled together from many top Tier guild in China Region. There were also 7 to 8 players who did not belong to any guild. They were feeling superior of themselves. They actually believed that they could take down the world on behalf of China Region all by themselves. Even though they could not leave the beginning point just yet, they were already staring far into the sky. They were not listening to everything that Mountain Mover was saying.

A tough rival beats you and a piggish teammate f*cks you up!

Zhang Yang did not expect anything from these piggish people. If each of them could just contribute by killing a few players, that would be more

than sufficient.

After preparing for the battle, the grand battle finally began! Upon the system notification 'Ding!' -- the air walls right before everyone vanished. Everyone could now move around at will.

The map restricted players from flying. However, they could still get on their Flying Mounts and perform a close-to-land glide. It would not break the rule as long as they keep themselves at a low level. However, it would be impossible for players to fly over to another pathway where the other Regions were on.

The only way to get over to the other pathways was by going through the center point of the map.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were leading the others in the front. They were on their Phoenix pets, so they were able to glide forward at a super high speed! Currently, no other players had an Ethereal Tier pet mount. Mythical Tier pet mounts were extremely hard to come by. In the meantime, the Phoenix pets were actually much faster than the other pets of the same Tier. Now that their Tier had been advanced up to the Tier of Ethereal, their speed had increased even further. Though the increase was not significant, it was enough to showcase the advantage that the Phoenix pets had over the other pets.

On the large map, players from each Region were represented by flash dots of different colors. China Region players had their names in red, Europe Region players were yellow, North America Region were blue, Japan-Korea Region were orange, Australia Region were green, South America Region were purple, Africa Region were black, and India Region were white.

Everyone who was looking at the map could see clearly that two red dots approaching the center point at a speed so fast, that everyone was shocked!

According to information that the Official provided, the method of securing the center point was to plant a flag in the middle of the Graveyard. The players should protect the flag for two minutes without

having the flag removed from its position. Any intrusion on the process would cause the progress to reset. The players would have to do the whole thing all over again when that happens. Furthermore, only one flag could be planted in the middle of the Graveyard at a time. If other players wished to plant their flags in the middle of the graveyard in the center point, they would be required to destroy the first flag before you could do that.

The process of planting a flag would require 10 seconds. If the player who is planting the flag ever receives any damage while he is in the middle of doing it, the process would be interrupted immediately.

However, even though Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were able to be the first to plant their flag, they were still not up to the standard that they could go 2 minutes ahead of everyone. After planting their flag on the center point, they would not be able to use all the defensive facilities and the neutral Graveyard just yet. At the same time, they would have to face the full assaults from the other 7 Regions!

That was one big issue that everyone attempting to secure the center points for their own use would have to face. After all, the center point was the one neutral point that everyone would want to secure for themselves.

Fortune favors the bold. Even though the process of acquiring the central point was extremely challenging, whichever Region that could get the central point would acquire a large advantage over the other Regions. That was a reason that was worth risking for!

Nevertheless, Mountain Mover did not put all his hope on securing the center point. In the meantime, he arranged a small and agile task force to infiltrate the Graveyard on the pathway of Japan-Korea Region. Well, the task force would be able to stay hidden the moment they entered the center point. Moreover, 19 players standing by at the Graveyard of the Japan-Korea Region was enough to wreck havoc on the players of Japan-Korea Region.

The moment Zhang Yang and Fatty Han entered the central point of the map, they quickly took out their flags that were given by the system earlier

on and planted it right in the middle of the neutral Graveyard.

‘Ding! China Region is taking over the neutral Center Point. If their flag is not destroyed within 2 minutes, the neutral Center point will be secured by the China Region!’

The 10-second process of planting the flag was over. The system immediately notified every single player on the War Canyon map with a notification.

Zhang Yang let out a roar and activated his {God of War Transformation}. His also had his Phoenix pet activate its {Phoenix Transformation} while Felice activated her own {Dragonhawk Berserk}. On the other hand, Fatty Han also activated his {Vampire Transformation} and his Phoenix pet activated its {Phoenix Transformation}. By doing so, they had increased their forces from having 2 Inheritance Transformations activated to having 5 Inheritance Transformations activated. Nevertheless, the lineup was 1 Class S and 4 Class B super powerful Inheritance Transformations!

It would take quite a toll before anyone takes down such a powerful lineup!

Other players did not have a Phoenix pet of their own, but they were not too far behind. About 40 seconds after Zhang Yang and Fatty Han planted their flags, players from other Regions were already within the visible range of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han.

"Fatty, our priority will be guarding this flag! Not killing our enemies!" Zhang Yang did not charge towards the enemies. Instead, he was levitating 2 meters high up from the ground, fluttering his wings. He stayed low above the ground so that he won't be too far from the flag.

"You still cannot trust me? I'm your brother-in-arms!"

"That's right! I can't!"

"F*ck you! You're a bad friend, you know!"

While the two of them were teasing and laughing at each other, the first wave of the enemy assault reached them! The players charging from other

7 pathways were not of the same Region. However, they were very united in doing one thing right now, to lay waste on Zhang Yang and Fatty Han only! They did not slaughter each other, for now.

Everyone began to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills. There was no reason to hold back anymore! The battle would only last for 2 hours. The duration of Inheritance Transformation Skills were 2 hours as well. Moreover, players who are killed will have the cooldowns of all their Skills reset upon their resurrection on the Graveyards. Therefore, everyone sent their most powerful Skills they could use at their enemies. Everyone would definitely have enough time to perform to their fullest potential with their Inheritance Transformation Skills activated!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and charged towards an unwitting Spellcaster. With his wings spread open, he moved extremely swift. In just a blink of an eye, he already arrived before the Spellcaster was ready to strike! He thrust his sword straight at the Spellcaster, leaving no quarter for the Spellcaster to dodge. As the momentum of his sword struck the Spellcaster in his face, and he received approximately 260,000 damage.

The Rage Bar was filled up instantly. Zhang Yang struck out again with another swing of his sword upon activating his {Charge Up Strike}!

The sword swung by without hitting anything. No damage was caused upon the Spellcaster. Of course, the Spellcaster was extremely shocked, followed by a sense of joy. He thought that Zhang Yang had missed! The Spellcaster was a Pyromancer. He immediately began chanting his spell, trying to activate his {Heart of Flame}.

{God of War Heavy Axe}!

Right after the 1-second shared cooldown, Zhang Yang thrust his weapon again at the Spellcaster. With his most powerful Skill which could let him deal the most damage, he caused an immense damage to the poor guy.

‘-2,393,055!’

What the hell was that? The Spellcaster had a Class B Inheritance that

could increase his Maximum HP by 20 times, but his Base HP was approximately 170,000 HP. Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, he could boost his HP up to 3,400,000 HP. With the additional boost of his mount, he could get another boost which could provide him an additional 80,000 HP at most, leaving him with a total of approximately 3,500,000 HP.

However, Zhang Yang took out 76% of his total HP with merely two strikes! That two strikes almost got the Spellcaster into the 'Killing Cleave' stage! The Spellcaster was terrified of what just happened to him. He had no choice but to stop his chanting and activate his {Ice Barrier} instead. Powering himself up with a 10-second invincible effect, he managed to keep himself alive for now.

Other players in the surroundings had no way of seeing the Spellcaster's HP bar and the damage that Zhang Yang dealt on the poor Spellcaster. They thought that the Spellcaster was just a half-baked player that did not activate his Inheritance Transformation Skill. They looked at the Spellcaster with scorn: Inheritance Transformation Skills would require no money to activate, why would this imbecile be trying to save it then?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and fluttered his colorful wings again. He made his way to another Berserker. That Berserker was attempting to reach the China Flag that was planted in the middle of the center point.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang clashed into the Berserker and stunned him. With his [Sword of Purging Devourer] swinging again, he was ready to strike down his enemy. Right before the sword could reach the Berserker, Wei Yan Er arrived at the center point in her 'dark mist' form. With her {Strength Aura} kicking in at the perfect moment, Zhang Yang's Strength received a boost of 14%! Immediately, the Berserker received a damage of 290,000 damage.

{God of War Devastation}!

'860,961!'

Unfortunately, it was not a Critical Strike. There was no additional 50%

damage on that strike as well. It was just normal Skill attack with additional 300% damage. That strike only managed to deal approximately 860,000 damage to Zhang Yang's target. It was 3 times weaker than the initial amount of damage Zhang Yang could have dealt.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head and sigh. In the meantime, the Berserker from Europe Region was cursing the 'f' word repeatedly in terror. Well, he also had a Class B Inheritance like the Spellcaster. Although the HP of a Berserker was a little higher than the HP of a Spellcaster, this Berserker only had approximately 4,100,000 HP. One simple strike from Zhang Yang had managed to take out 25% of his entire HP bar! One word... ouch!

He quickly reacted and began to strike back. Swinging his battle axe straight towards Zhang Yang at his full strength, he managed to land his axe on Zhang Yang's body. However, he only had a Class B Inheritance and his equipment were basically Mythical Tier. Let's give him some credit and say he has one or two pieces of Ethereal equipment on him, his Basic Attack could only reach up to 130,000 damage at its best. On the other hand, Zhang Yang already had over 43,400 Defense! That strike from his axe only caused about 60,000 damage to Zhang Yang. The HP bar of Zhang Yang did not even move a little! Well, how significant could a 60,000 damage be for a 20,000,000 HP? Insignificant!

What the hell... that is really insane!

This was a battlefield. Zhang Yang would not play some 1 VS 1 match with his opponents. He commanded Phoenix pet and Felice to join in the battle as well. The three of them pummeled the Berserker.

The poor Berserker was now in a 3-on-1 fight against 3 transformed entities! The worst part of it was that one of it was a Class S Inheritance while the firepower of the other two were as powerful as a Class B Inheritance! Truth be told, Felice and the Phoenix pet were both as powerful as the Tier of Ethereal. They could have completely oppressed 99% of the players in the entire game in terms of 'equipment Tier'. Only a small number of players who had obtained Ethereal Tier equipment could stand against the two of them in terms of DPS.

Under the insane bombardment of the assaults from three powerful beings, the Berserker got beaten up to death within tens of seconds even though he had over 4,000,000 HP! Well, he did activate his Healing Skill. However, his Healing Skill was more of a heal-over-time effect than a huge lump sum. Hence, his HP bar was emptied out after the Healing Effect only got to tick once!

Atrocity! It was necessary to reveal the atrocious side!

Everyone in the surroundings immediately felt a chill up their spines for good!

Chapter 672: One Trouble after Another

Zhang Yang single-handedly took out a player with a Class B Inheritance who already activated his Transformation Skill in merely tens of seconds! Judging by the looks of it, Zhang Yang could do the same to 90% of the players his the surroundings in a brief period of time! After all, the number of players with Class A Inheritance and Class S Inheritance was extremely low. The majority of the players who made it into the War Canyon were basically players with Class B Inheritances.

"Take out Zhan Yu first!" Players from all other Regions immediately agreed on one thing.

It was futile for Zhang Yang to hide his character information at that point. Every single top Tier player already knew that there was only one player in the entire world who could raise a shield while holding a two-handed weapon in the other hand. Furthermore, his Phoenix pet had given up his identity to whoever was in the surroundings.

Zhang Yang had no fear at all. He activated his {God of War Shield} immediately. By doing so, his Damage Immune had reached up to 40% while his Defense acquired another additional 40,000 Defense. Meanwhile, he also acquired additional 40% Resistance. Upon getting boosted up by all those effects, Zhang Yang became the very existence of a Human Weapon! There were only 6 Class S Inheritances in the entire world. Not to mention that each of those Inheritances could be obtained by only one player. Once the specific player has obtained the specific Class S Inheritance, there would not be a same second specific Class S Inheritance for others to grab. Based on its uniqueness, the power of the Class S Inheritance was of course not a joke at all. The power level of a player with a Class S Inheritance would be significantly higher than those who wield Inheritances of lower Classes.

The full force of the China Region had caught up at the center point. Zhang Yang could finally release himself from the duty of guarding the flag. It would be a squander of talent if Zhang Yang remained alone to defend the flag. Just take a good look at his lethality!

Zhang Yang charged into the crowd of his enemies like a tiger lunging into a herd of sheep. The moment he landed among them, he unleashed every possible assault that he could do to them. A normal attack from the swing of his sword could cause at least 250,000 damage! Furthermore, Felice and Phoenix pet were not standing idle at the side. They were also supporting Zhang Yang in causing havoc to the enemy players! The assault from the three of them was so aggressive and deadly that even players with their Inheritance Transformations activated could not hold themselves up against them.

Regardless of how high Zhang Yang's Damage Immune was, he could not hold long against the bombardment of assaults from so many players at the same time. Not to mention that these players have already activated their Inheritance Transformations! Though players were not allowed to fly in the War Canyon, the players could still keep their heads low and glide across the area on their Flying Mounts. They could still float themselves in midair while launching their assaults at Zhang Yang. With appropriate formations, they could utilize the space and launched their assaults at Zhang Yang at the same time without any other players blocking them. Therefore, even though he only received approximately 20,000 to 30,000 damage in each hit he took, he would not be able to take hundreds of hits from hundreds of players at the same time and feel nothing!

It was possible for Zhang Yang to tank against so many players with their Inheritance Transformation Skills activated because he had over 20,000,000 HP. Even if someone else were to have a Defense as high as Zhang Yang's, they would only be able to last for two to three rounds of assaults from so many players at the same time before they go down dead.

Suddenly, streams of white milky light flashed across the entire body of Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang's HP was struggling to recover. Although that did not stop his HP bar from reducing any further, at least the rate of Zhang Yang losing HP was under control. His HP bar was reducing at an extremely slow rate at the moment.

The sexy body figure of Han Ying Xue appeared right behind Zhang Yang. The appearance of her face may seemed to be very normal in the

game setting. However, she looked elegantly differently from her initial appearance when the holy light from the heaven chiming down on her constantly after she activates her Inheritance Transformation. Appearing elegantly and compassionately, she looked glamorous in her own fine way.

Well, that was the appearance of a Healer who has already activated her Class S {Milkmaid Deity Transformation}. Upon casting her {Milkmaid Deity's Protection} on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang receive a boost of 20% on his Healing Efficiency. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue had upgraded her {Healing Aura} up to Level 7. The effect of the aura could now increase a 21% of Healing Efficiency on every friendly unit within the effective range of the aura. Her Healing Capability was already impressive enough as it was. With the support of her Skills, her Healing Capability had just been powered up even further now!

Zhang Yang was acting very carefully to avoid Warriors as he was slaughtering his way across his enemy crowd. He had never been touched by any {Destructive Smashes} up to this point. Without the effect of the {Destructive Smash} in the way, Han Ying Xue managed to heal him at full capacity. Zhang Yang had his own radiating wings. He could move and fly around freely, giving no quarter to his foes. Moreover, he also had a sharp awareness of his surroundings. Not to mention that he had his 'Supporting Attack' trained to the grade of Master now. Whatever he was doing right now, it was like a walk in the park for him.

Under the crazy bombardment of assaults from the enemies for almost a minute, Zhang Yang Maximum HP had dropped from 20,000,000 HP down to 9,000,000 HP. Though it seemed that the circumstances showed a possibility that Zhang Yang could be killed, every Inheritance would definitely have life-saving Skills of their own. Normally, Class S Inheritance could allow the player who wields it recover a few full bars of HP! So, what good would it bring for others to be able to take out one bar of Zhang Yang's HP then?

Players who made it in here were all professional players after all. Even though they were making a grave mistake at first by focusing their assaults on Zhang Yang, some of them eventually realized that they would

have to take out Han Ying Xue first before they could take out Zhang Yang. So they were beginning to shout at each other, "Hit that Priest! Hit her first while some of you go get the flag!"

When the number of players are this abundant, it would be natural to see AoE attacks raining across the battlefield.

On the other hand, however, although the players from other 7 Regions were on the same page to focus their assaults on the China Region, the system would not allow different Regions to form Alliance among themselves. Therefore, the impacts of all AoE attacks would hit any player regardless of the Regions they were from, as long as they were not on the same Region as players who activated the AoE Skills.

Any super AoE skill that becomes available when the Transformation of an Inheritance is activated, would cover a radius of 30 meters, 40 meters, sometimes even 50 meters. Those super AoE skills would always cover extremely vast areas. Every single activation of such Skill would definitely hurt their 'allies' from all other Regions. Such a situation had caused the players from 7 other Regions to feel depressed about it. If they decide not to use their AoE skills, they would lose out on opportunities of dealing tremendous damage to their enemies. On the contrary, if they decided to use their AoE Skills, they would be dealing damage to players from other Regions as well. It would also be like aiding the China Region in dealing damage to their newly formed 'alliance'. So now everyone, except the players from China Region was caught up in the knot of whether they should use their AoE Skills or not.

On the other hand, the situation did not affect the players from China Region at all. For them, all other 7 Regions were their foes. They would need as much AoE Skills as possible for them to deal immense damage to all of their enemies. Therefore, the more clumped up their enemies were, the more suitable it was for them to activate their AoE attacks. They could really spread as much hell as they could unto their enemies!

Even though Han Ying Xue became the primary target of the enemies, she was a Ranged Combatant. As she could heal the others and support her own people from a distance, Han Ying Xue hid among the crowd of

the players from China Region. In other words, she was well protected by her own people. Meanwhile, the Melee Combatants from other 7 Regions were not daring enough to charge and attempt to bring her down. After all, they did not possess insanely high Defense like Zhang Yang did. They would be wasted right away if they try to squeeze themselves into the crowd of the China Region players, trying to make their way to Han Ying Xue. Hence, they could only launch their assaults on Han Ying Xue by launching their ranged attacks.

Because of that, their tactic created a significant flaw for all of them. None of them would be able to cast {Destructive Smash} on Han Ying Xue. Because of that, none of them could restrict the powerful Healing Capability of Han Ying Xue.

Although Han Ying Xue did not have super high Defense or super high Damage Immunity, she still made it through the difficult times that lay upon her with the help of Mountain Mover's wise strategies! Mountain Mover allocated 3 Guardians to stay by her side. Whenever she got in danger, the Guardians would take their turns to activate their {Sacrifice} on her, followed by their {Vanguard's Aggression} to help Han Ying Xue get through her difficult times.

Moreover, she also had [Banshee's Howl]. Upon activating that accessory, everyone who launched an attack on her would be afflicted with Terror Effects and they would run around without having control over their own body for a period of time.

Two minutes had passed without anyone's knowledge. The system notification came in with the news that the neutral center point had been secured by China Region. The 16 Magic Cannons immediately let loose their cannonballs at the enemy units, showing no mercy at all!

"Hundred Shots, Hannibal, Jurassic Lover, Martin and West Snow! Remember the plan! Stick to the plan! Guard the flag no matter what, and let no one touch the flag! The others, head to the blasting range of the Magic Cannons and begin your slaughtering! Show no mercy!" Mountain Mover gave the command to charge.

"Forget about Zhan Yu and that Priest! Nothing good comes from killing them now! They've already taken down the neutral Graveyard. Killing them would only help them more than harming them now! Focus on the ones with lower HP now! The condition of winning the war is not taking down the neutral point but killing as many enemies as possible! Kill as much as you can, you idiots!"

It seemed that there was at least one commander-like player from each Region was screaming in the battlefield. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could feel that the boulders on their shoulders suddenly lifted the moment when they realized that they were no longer the main targets of their enemies. Scattered attacks such as arrows and fireballs would sometimes come at them from here and there, though they were not frequent at all.

The Magic Cannons were extremely powerful. However, they were not as powerful as the strength of approximately 700 players combined together. In just a brief moment, the death count for players from other Regions hit the number of 84 while the death count for China Region had reached 197!

Judging from the statistics, China Region was suffering a tremendous loss which shamed them pretty deeply. However, first of all, players who die during the battle would not receive any form of punishment. They would not lose any Experience Points nor drop any equipment upon their deaths. Even the durability of their equipment would not drop. Whoever who dies during the battle would be automatically resurrected by the Graveyard once every 30 seconds. Their stats would all be replenished while the cooldown of all their Skills would be reset. They would rejoin the battle in their best forms.

Second of all, the headcount of 80 deaths on the 7 Regions' side was counted as the score of China Region --- the other 4 got killed because they got caught up in the middle of the powerful bombardment of AoE attacks activated by players that were not from China Region. On the other hand, the headcounts of 197 deaths of the China Region would be divided down by 7 because there were 7 Regions. That being said, each Region only scored approximately 20 headcounts, on average. From that

sense, the score of China Region was still much higher than the scores of the other Regions.

Moreover, Sun Xin Yu and her 'Stealthy Strike Force' had begun their killing spree at the Graveyard of the Japan-Korea Region. 19 Thieves forming a chain of consecutive Status Restriction Effect on the players could torture any player slowly to their deaths with ease!

"This is really fun! I'm so contented!" Wei Yan Er's face was filled with joy and content. She continued to wield her battle axe as she charged into the enemy crowd slashing up people like an intimidating general on the battlefield. Her Class A Darkness Inheritance provided her quite some immunity against Physical Damage and Shadow Damage. Although she was not as tough as Zhang Yang, at least her HP was abundant enough to keep her alive for a long time.

On the other hand, the Attack of the little brat was almost as strong as the Attack of Zhang Yang --- of course, it would only be similar if her Attack is compared only to Zhang Yang's individual Attack. If the Attack of his Phoenix pet and Felice are included, the total Attack of the three combined would be so powerful that no one in the game could match their standard just yet. Even Sun Xin Yu would have to admit defeat in such regard!

As Wei Yan Er's performance was atrociously outstanding, of course she would become the next main target of their enemies. Everyone was focusing their attacks on her.

However, she did not have a tough Defense like Zhang Yang did. Furthermore, she did not put any effort in avoiding the Warriors on the enemy side at all. By carrying the effect of {Destructive Smash} which reduced her healing efficiency, even Han Ying Xue could not maintain her HP bar. The little brat was taken out after going wild for a brief moment.

Upon her resurrection, the little brat was infuriated. She once again swung her battle axe around like an insane lady and charged straight back into the fight. The agitated face of hers got 'amplified'!

For 99% players in the game, they battled in order to win. They battle in

order to acquire the First Clear of a dungeon. However, the situation was different for Wei Yan Er. She only strove to get the drive and rush that she could get from killing players and monsters in the game. Those were the things that cannot be acquired in the real life.

Taking advantage of the Graveyard at the central point, Zhang Yang and his fellow China players barely secured the center point. However, it did not mean that they were so powerful that they could carry out a 1 VS 7 battle. They managed to do it because the other 7 Regions were lacking communication and mutual understanding. They only killed for their own Regions by the end of it. When most of them died and they were required to start all over again, their pace of launching their attacks at the China Region was out of sync.

Small waves could not possibly punch down a large dam. However, if the small waves were combined into a huge tidal wave, would it be able to destroy the dam then?

The current situation for the 7 other Regions was similar to the metaphor described. The players were battling only for their own Regions. Instead of pressuring Zhang Yang and his fellow China players, they actually gave them plenty of room and opportunity to breathe and kill players to increase their score. Well, the situation was unavoidable, anyway. The only way for players from different Regions to communicate with each other is to shout as loudly as they could at each other. There was no other way for them to communicate from a far distance. Meanwhile, who would stop and listen to other people's shouting when the heat of the battle only got worse in every passing moment?

100, 200, 300!

The number of kills the China Region scored was increasing rapidly. On the other hand, the number of kills the 7 other Regions could get was not that great. The strongest, Europe Region only managed to score 145 kills while the weakest of all, the Japan-Korea Region scored as low as 23 kills. The main reason was because the number of players from the Japan-Korea Region had been reduced by one third the moment they were spawned at their Graveyard. Some of them already got killed even before they could

get their chance to activate their Inheritance Transformation!

Chapter 673: A Bottled Up Battle

Sun Xin Yu and her 'Stealthy Strike Force' was rather crafty. When the number of Japan-Korea players that got resurrected was too great, they immediately went into Stealth Mode and fled the scene. They only needed to activate their {Vanish} to get away for the worst-case scenario. On the contrary, if the number of Japan-Korea players was small, then the Graveyard would become their 'Slaughtering Feast'!

Many of them were only able to open their eyes after they were resurrected before they are killed again. Those poor souls would have to repeatedly wait for the 30-second countdown to end before they could get resurrected by the Graveyard again.

Players from Japan-Korea Region hated the 'Stealthy Strike Force' to the point that they could tighten their teeth so hard that their teeth might fall off eventually. Despite that, they were also inspired by it. They also sent a small 'Stealthy Strike Force' over to the China Region's Graveyard! What a bunch of smarty-pants! However, what they tried to do was pointless. The China Region's Graveyard was basically abandoned at the moment. It was a futile act to go all the way there, trying to set up an ambush. In the meantime, the neutral Graveyard by the center point was too near to the chaotic battle that was occurring at the moment. Furthermore, it was within the blast range of the Magic Cannons! So, the notion of going over there to set up an ambush would be suicidal!

Without having any other resolution for it, the Japan-Korea players were forced to put their worst enemy aside. Instead, they sent their 'Stealthy Strike Force' into the Graveyard of the Australia Region to set up their ambush. Currently, the Australia Region was ranked at the second last in their kill counts. Well, stealthy assassinating was far more efficient than they had expected it to be. In just tens of minutes, the kill counts of the Japan-Korea Region had actually exceeded the kill counts of the Australia Region! They managed to prevent themselves from becoming the last in place...

"Zhan Yu!" Suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a squeamish voice calling out to

him, followed by an arrow hitting straight on his chest. He instantly received a damage of '-468,802!' without any sign of warning! That was also the most painful hit Zhang Yang had ever received throughout the entire battle up to this point.

His eyes were frozen for a moment before he turned his attention towards the direction where the arrow came from --- it was a beautiful lady elf with mesmerizing features, it was Hourglass Figure!

Indeed, only another player with Class S Inheritance like herself could deal such immense damage to Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang did not 'entertain' her. He continued to pick on players with only Class B Inheritances with the intention of wrecking them up. After all, they were here not to compete against each other to see who was the bravest or strongest of all. They were here because they had a war to win, a war that would affect the future of the entire Region! Therefore, killing more players was the only important thing throughout the entire war. There was no other way of winning the war!

Being one of the most significant players in the entire China Region, Zhang Yang had to make sure that he does his part in setting an example for the others to follow. If he ignores the arrangement of Mountain Mover and goes on to do whatever he liked, would the others still be listening to the commander then?

Seeing that Zhang Yang took no notice of her, Hourglass Figure was infuriated. She humphed with her soft voice and continued to shoot arrows at Zhang Yang. Well, her attacks did bring quite a handful of problems to Zhang Yang, especially her {Concussive Shot} and {Breaking Shot} which had the annoying Status Restriction Effects. Those Skills did some great job in holding Zhang Yang off from going about with his killing spree. It held him back to the point that he no longer looked intimidating! That was really some achievement over there! After all, Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will} could only be activated once per minute.

"You really are persistent!" Just when Zhang Yang was having a headache trying to battle against Hourglass Figure, Seductive Wild Pussy

suddenly appeared out of nowhere and joined into the battle as well! The two of them joined forces together to take Zhang Yang on. Now that the two Top Tier players in the entire world had joined forces to spam their Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang, they were able to distract him, even though they could not kill him. Well, one of the reasons they could not kill Zhang Yang was that Han Ying Xue was supporting Zhang Yang with her super healing capability.

Without the most powerful 'cannon' supporting the China Region, the firepower of China was reduced steeply. After all, one of the China players with Class S Inheritance was busy reaping souls at the Japan-Korea Region's Graveyard while the other China player with Class S Inheritance was a Healer who could not do much of a damage in a battle. Therefore, the China Region only had players with Class A Inheritance such as Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream and Snow Seeker to contribute to the number of China's kill counts.

Obviously, there was no one else who could replace Zhang Yang!

First of all, Zhang Yang's focus attack was so powerful that they did not seem to be humanly possible! Secondly, he was good in both Offense and Defense! He could just charge into the formation of the enemy and destroy their Defensive line like a monster tearing up a piece of paper! Now that Zhang Yang was completely occupied with two strong and dangerous ladies at the moment, the death rate of China Region had increased tremendously. Without Zhang Yang charging at the front, the formation of the China Region began to scatter. Even the 30-second cooldown of the resurrection period at the Graveyard could not keep up with the death rate of the players from China Region!

"Damn it!"

Zhang Yang cursed and raced straight towards Seductive Wild Pussy. If he doesn't take out one of these ladies first, he would eventually be locked dead in the corner!

"Darling --- are you finally thinking about f*cking me? But you look fierce and terrifying now! I'm a little scared!" Seductive Wild Pussy had not

changed her habit yet. She still attempted to tease Zhang Yang with her dirty words while giggling all the way throughout the battle. Her hands remained busy, firing arrows at the same pace.

Zhang Yang had encountered her several times in the Individual Ranking Competitions. So he had a glimpse of understanding towards her Inheritance. This woman acquired a Class A Inheritance called the 'Arachnid Inheritance'. Other than the trap Skill that she initially has when she signed up as a Hunter, she could also litter her webs anywhere she went. More annoyingly, those sticky webs could slow down a player's movement speed upon touching them!

Speaking of Attack power, the power-up that the Class A Arachnid Inheritance could offer would definitely not as good as the power-up that the Class S Shadow Striker Inheritance could offer to a player. However, the Arachnid Inheritance could offer much more Status Restriction capabilities than the Shadow Striker Inheritance could ever offer! In other words, a Class S Inheritance might sometimes not be as good as a Class A Inheritance. A Class S Inheritance could provide an overall power up on a player, where the player would get a tremendous boost on both Offense and Defense. On the other hand, a Class A Inheritance could only provide a support more suited for Player vs Player matches.

So did she really believe that Zhang Yang was a mud figure who does not know how to get angry?

"Little Wild Pussy, you're running around so far away from me. How am I going to show you my love!" Zhang Yang laughed gently and activated his {Lure}. Instantly, that wild little pussy was pulled straight over to Zhang Yang's side!

Initially, Seductive Wild Pussy wanted to tease Zhang Yang with a few more of her foul words. She had never thought possible that she would be pulled over to Zhang Yang's side all of a sudden! Her reflexes were extremely fast as well. Just when she was attempting to leap away from Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang smacked her head with his {Brutal Smash} and stunned her for 4 seconds.

She knew that she could not afford to let Zhang Yang unleash his damage unto her. Well, the Attack power of that insanely powerful being could no longer be deemed as a being on earth. Hence, Seductive Wild Pussy activated her accessory to become invincible over a brief period of time without any hesitation. Then she threw an {Frost Trap} right beside herself. Would Zhang Yang be avoiding this? Or would he step onto it straight away?

If Zhang Yang decides to dodge, she could take advantage of that one brief moment to get away from Zhang Yang. By doing so, she could shake Zhang Yang off her tail.

At the same time, Hourglass Figure was also launching her attacks at Zhang Yang as aggressively as she could. Unfortunately, her Status Restriction Skills also had cooldown periods. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had been waiting for that moment ever since they began battling each other!

Zhang Yang had made up his mind to gut up and send the little wild pussy to the Graveyard. He went around the {Frost Trap} and continued to stick himself on the back of Seductive Wild Pussy.

As he was going around the {Frost Trap}, Seductive Wild Pussy was given a brief moment to pull herself away from him. Without wasting any of the precious time the god had provided her, she quickly ran towards the opposite direction from Zhang Yang. However, she could not do a {Leap Shot} because she could not pull herself 3 meters away from Zhang Yang, yet!

Zhang Yang flapped his wings and pursued on. The greatness of a Class S Inheritance player was instantly exhibited to whoever that was watching the battle in their surroundings. His speed was so fast that Seductive Wild Pussy could not even react to it. His speed had also exceeded the speed of a Hunter and even a Thief! Those two Classes were deemed to be two of the fastest Classes in the entire game!

8 seconds of invincibility was over in just a blink of an eye. Upon seeing the golden light on Seductive Wild Pussy vanishing, Zhang Yang swung his sword straight towards her. However, the blade missed her and went

through the air --- {Charge Up Strike}!

Seductive Wild Pussy froze for a brief moment before she began to regain control of her body. It was extremely rare to see a top Tier player miss an attack. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was the top of the top sort of players in the entire game! She could feel that something was extremely off. So, she immediately activated her {Leap} and flipped 10 meters away from Zhang Yang.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang did not give any quarter to Seductive Wild Pussy as he had already reacted to the situation. He clashed into the wild pussy hard. Followed closely with a swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he gave the wild pussy a normal slash and a powerful {God of War Devastation}.

‘-278,320!’

‘-2,393,073!’

Poor little Seductive Wild Pussy. Even though she had over 9,000,000 HP, she still lost approximately 30% of her total HP after taking two solid hits from Zhang Yang. She freaked out after seeing the damage values she received! Fortunately for her, she had Healers backing her up. They quickly attempted to heal her up with their best Healing Skills they had. However, Zhang Yang had afflicted her with the 75% reduction of Healing Efficiency with his {Destructive Smash} earlier on. Hence, she could not heal efficiently at all!

Felice and the Phoenix pet had approached Seductive Wild Pussy at a most opportune time. They joined up with Zhang Yang to lay waste on the wild pussy. That moment was the moment Seductive Wild Pussy realized that Zhang Yang had made a firm decision to kill her.

The three of them were not joking around as they were attacking their target at the same time. The damage that the three of them could deal to their target was substantial! Furthermore, the 75% reduction of the Healing Efficiency of Seductive Wild Pussy had put her HP recovery to work rather poorly. Because of that, the rate of her HP recovery could no longer catch up with the rate of her losing her HP. She activated all of her

ultimate Skills and life-saving Skills. She even transformed herself into a giant female arachnid and drained Zhang Yang's blood to recover her HP. However, everything that she did was futile. She was no longer in control of her own fate!

With the three of them transformed, no one would stand a chance to best the combined force of Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet in any 1 VS 1 battle!

Other than that, Seductive Wild Pussy did not have any space or chance to escape because she was closely surrounded by Zhang Yang, Felice and the Phoenix pet. She was pinned down like a helpless doll.

{God of War Battle Axe}! {Horizontal Sweep}! {Frost Strike}!

Zhang Yang consecutively activated all his deadly Skills and sunk the HP level of Seductive Wild Pussy down to 20%, forcing her to enter the most dangerous 'Killing Cleave' state.

"Big brother Zhan Yu! How can you be so cruel to me!" The little pussy revealed a pitiful expression, trying to soften Zhang Yang up.

"Save it and get going! The Graveyard is waiting for you!" Zhang Yang was not swayed by her pitiful appearance at all. He activated his {Indiscriminate} followed closely by his {Killing Cleave}!

'-2,441,298!'

"Argh!" Seductive Wild Pussy let out a miserable cry while her remaining 20% HP was taken away by Zhang Yang's 1 hit!

After he was done with that little pussy, Zhang Yang fixed his eyes upon Hourglass Figure all of a sudden. That Indian girl felt a chill up her spine the moment she realize Zhang Yang had diverted his attention towards her. She quickly kept her fear in check and continued with her role in restricting Zhang Yang's movement. Because the other 7 Regions had obtained an absolute advantage over the China Region, they managed to suppress the defensive line of China Region down to the neutral Graveyard!

When they could finally breach the defensive line of China and set foot

onto the ground of the neutral Graveyard, it would become much easier for them to remove the China's flag and rid the control of China off the neutral center point! By then, there would be another chaotic battle among the Regions to reclaim control over the center point again.

No one could afford to have Zhang Yang step in to ruin their efforts at that crucial moment. After all, that crazy son of the b*tch could ruin any favorable circumstance for anyone with his oppressive firepower! Zhang Yang was more than just intimidating by just standing there. His very existence was purely frightening! So far, not many had seen him battling at his full power just yet!

It had been more than 20 minutes since the battle began. The battle had hit it's hottest point that it was currently. The defensive line of China was on the brink of being breached. It would only be a matter of time before the defensive line falls. Everyone went on securing the center point, knowing that would happen eventually. However, the main point was, how long could they hold on to the center point while scoring as many kill counts as they could for their own Region?

On the other hand, the other 7 Region had suffered quite significant losses in order to take down the defensive line of China Region. Players from China Region got the opportunity to blast their enemies with the defensive facilities. By doing so, their kill count was increasing so rapidly that it kept them on top of other Regions!

Although Zhang Yang had taken care of the little pussy problem, he was still under the suppression of Hourglass Figure. He only managed to work under 50% of his initial efficiency in supporting his fellow China players. He could no longer stand firm as a rock in mid-stream for the moment. Finally, 25 minutes had passed. The China flag had been removed from the middle of the center point. With their flag gone, China no longer had control over the center point. Every single one of the Magic Cannons was no longer under the control of the China Region as well. Any China players who died afterward were resurrected at their regional Graveyard. They would have to run over a long distance before they could engage back in the battle.

However, the moment when the center point had no ownership once again, the 7 other Regions who once joined forces to take on the China Region turned against each other immediately! It was a battle of chaos! Everyone was attempting to plant their Region's flag right in the middle of the center point --- whichever Region that got to secure the center point would become the public enemy number of the other Regions. However, the priority would be killing as many players as possible. The China Region had proved that securing the center point could really boost their kill counts!

Under the command of Mountain Mover, everyone from the China Region did not rush into the chaotic area of the battle to attempt planting their China flag. Instead, they took advantage of the chaotic situation. They went on to pick on those players who were on the brink of death and ended them to increase China Region's kill counts. If the situation gets even messier, it would definitely give China Region an advantage. It would be even better if there aren't any Regions securing the center point. With the current advantage they had over the others, they could easily claim victory over the war!

The fact that Zhang Yang and his fellow China players no longer required to defend their flag meant that they could finally focus fully on launching their attacks onto their enemies with nothing to worry about. All they needed to do is to attack whoever that was holding the center point, regardless of their Region. No one should be able to secure the center point! No one!

Chapter 674: Strike Back on the Japan-Korea Region

Speaking of tactics, the China Region was undoubtedly the most successful among them all. It only took approximately half an hour for them to collect a large amount of kill count to gain an advantageous head start over the others. As long as they maintain their pace until the battle ends, they should be the one claiming victory over the war.

As mentioned previously, taking control over the center point was merely one of many ways of attaining victory over the war. It was not necessary to take down the central point in order for the Region to win. However, everyone was blinded by the killing and slaughtering right before their eyes, that they lost track of the main objective. They were so eager to take control over the center point, that they lost track of everything. Even though there were a few who were clear-minded enough to stop and inform the rest by shouting and screaming, no one seemed to care about it at all.

Just kill them! Just slaughter them all!

Players of China Region no longer went to compete with the others at planting their flags on the center point. They were no longer the public enemies who had to take all attacks from all directions. The battle situation was a total chaos for the other 7 Regions in the middle of the center point. Everyone was killing each other in such a frenzy just to plant their flags in the middle of the place to claim control. Those who die had to run all the way back from their regional Graveyard to the center point just to get back into the battle. They were suffering major losses in their numbers as the battle progressed on.

Zhang Yang and his fellow China players continued to increase their kill counts at a constant rate keeping themselves ahead of the other Regions. At the central point, they also had more players remaining in the center of the battle. They managed to retain approximately 40 players at the center point over time. Meanwhile, the other Regions could only retain

approximately 20 players of their own from time to time. The other players were seen running down the pathways.

There were still 19 Thieves lurking in the shadows by the Japan-Korea Region's Graveyard. If they were included in the headcount, the China Region should have an even greater advantage over the other Regions in terms of numbers.

The fierce battle continued on. There was nothing to lose in death. Instead, players who died would get all their Skills reset back. Hence, everyone had nothing to worry about at all. They could just go all out without any need of holding back. They would just spam any ultimate Skills they had. If they die without doing that, they would have died for nothing.

Zhang Yang took advantage of such battle with his AoE attacks. His AoE Skills could reach out within a radius of 50 meters. He could easily take people's heads off from afar. Basically, he was far sharper and more efficient than most of the Hunters and the Spellcasters. Compared to the range that his assaults could reach, the AoE attacks of Class A Inheritance could only reach 40-meter radius out. The AoE attacks of a Class B Inheritance could only reach out to 30-meter radius while AoE attacks of a Class C Inheritance could only reach out to a 20-meter radius. How about Class D Inheritances then? Well, Class D Inheritances had no Transformation Skills for them to amplify their power levels.

Of course, Hourglass Figure was also one of the best 'head collectors' in the war. After all, she had a Class S Inheritance. Her AoE attacks could reach out to as far as 50-meters. Furthermore, she is a Hunter, well-versed and a veteran at fighting from afar. Her ranged attacks had reached up to 40 meters thanks to her Inheritance. She could actually kill more players with extremely low HP, faster than Zhang Yang could!

Now, they were all competing to see which Region could score the highest kill counts, not the amount of damage they could deal. Therefore, the kill count that Hourglass Figure scored slowly caught up to Zhang Yang's progress, even though his Attack power was number 1 in the entire game. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had Phoenix pet and Felice to back his

firepower up. With the two of them spitting fire across his enemies, Zhang Yang still managed to stay number two on the Kill Count Ranking list.

--- the first on the ranking list was Sun Xin Yu! She was born a Thief. Hence, she was earning kill counts as easily as breathing!

However, individual efforts would not change the outcome of the strategy. Players of China Region followed the tactics that were initially laid out by Mountain Mover. No one took out the China flags. No one even attempted planting their flags on the center point. They were just sniping and picking off players from other Regions. By doing so, not only could they increase the kill counts for their own Region, they could also reduce the rate of casualties of their Region.

They could only deal more damage efficiently if they stay alive all the time. The same theory applied to their current situation. They could only kill more players if they keep themselves alive all the while.

However, 60 minutes into the battle, the situation of the battle suddenly changed. One of the China player suddenly went up and planted a China flag right in the middle of the center point. Instantly, Zhang Yang and his fellow China players once again became the primary targets of all other Regions. Other than Zhang Yang and his gang, a large number of players instantly being sent back to their regional Graveyard.

Meanwhile, that player who planted the flag was one of those arrogant, yet idiotic players who thought they were the best. Although he overheard complaints and cursing upon him, he acted like he did not care about them at all. He did not even realize that he did something wrong there. He also attempted to debate with the others, saying that taking down the center point was the only key to winning the war because they could have used the Magic Cannons to boost their kill count number up! His filled his face with disdain while thinking 'You bunch of idiots, can't you see that that's the only way?' sort of idea.

The China Region had put themselves way ahead of the other Regions by getting a very high kill count for themselves initially. As long as they take control of the neutral center point and let no one else take over it,

then their victory should become certain! However, the kill count of China Region had not been increasing significantly after that idiot planted the flag. Ever since the China Region was almost wiped out earlier on in the battle, they had not been able to progress smoothly. On the other side of things, other Regions, especially Europe were increasing their kill counts rapidly. They took that opportunity that the idiotic China guy provided them to catch up.

As expected! It's true when they say that a tough rival beats you; a piggish teammate f*ck you in the *ss!

It would still be alright if that idiotic son of the b*tch did only once. It would still not be able to shake the fact that the China Region was ahead of everyone on the Kill Count Ranking list. However, things would become different for them if there are more of those idiotic people. They might be the key to crippling every effort that Zhang Yang and his fellow China Players had produced all the while, throughout the war! What concerned Zhang Yang and the others, even more, was that son of the b*tch did not even reflect on his own mistake made! If he gets another chance, he might just repeat the same mistake all over again!

The worse part of this was there were more than just one like of him!

The most hateful thing in the entire world of gaming were these sorts of people who always feel that they are much more superior than the others. They would always believe that they were the correct ones. They would never listen to others and do whatever they wanted. This was a real live example of one rotten spoils the whole barrel! Furthermore, there were more than just one rotten one!

"When a China man is alone, he could perform like a dragon! But when a bunch of China fellows are together in a team, they will only perform like a bunch of lazy worms! These are the kind of people that would cause the entire team to lose!" Lost Dream sighed in anger.

"If Brother Fatty finds him in real life, his *ss would be prodded over a thousand times!"

Nothing much could be done to these idiotic people who will never

listen to anybody. Zhang Yang could only request the Healers to stop healing them. Let them rot fast and resurrect fast, then let the cycle go on! At least they would not be able to accomplish anything if they die a quick death! The China Region would be better off without them around.

Everyone raced towards the front line and continued on with the battle. While everyone was working their *sses off trying to earn as many kill count as possible, the Europe Region and the North America Region actually joined forces. The system would not recognize their 'Alliance'. Their AoE attacks would still spread across anyone who was within the effective range of the attacks. However, these two Regions no longer battled against each other. When the Europe Region planted their flag in the middle of the neutral center point of the map, the North America Region did not try to destroy their flag. Instead, they were aiding them in guarding their flag!

The two Regions were very powerful, to begin with. Upon joining their forces into one, they managed to defend Europe's flag for 2 minutes!

Instantly, the neutral center point fell into the hands of the Europe Region. Their firepower became tremendously insane. Not only did they gain support from the Magic Cannons, they were also able to substitute the number of players who died on the battlefield much faster than they could anticipate!

Zhang Yang had to guess that the Europe Region had laid out the conditions with the North America Region for helping them. They must have agreed to certain terms such as the two Regions taking turns of taking control of the neutral point for 30 minutes. They were willing to put aside their pride just to squeeze China Region down from being number one on the ranking! And now, other Regions would stand a fair chance to work for number one and number two!

Taking part in a battle royale was basically like playing a game of chess.

Unfortunately, China Region had taken over the neutral center point for over 30 minutes in the early game. So they would not be worried even if the center point was taken over by other Regions. They became concerned

because of that idiotic son of the b*tch who went in and planted the China flag previously. That had really delivered a blow into the face of China Region, because they had lost quite a lot of numbers back there, thanks to that moron. It was now possible that the Europe Region might be able to catch up with the China Region now!

Well, shit happens. No point lingering over it for so long. It would be dumb to actually start a war among themselves, right?

Upon gaining control over the neutral center point, the Europe Region had naturally become the public enemy number one of all Regions, except the North America Region. After all, they made a deal under the table with each another. The two main Regions joined hands in defending the flag on the center point. With the advantages of having Magic Cannons at their disposal and having a Graveyard extremely close to the center of the battlefield, the Europe Region managed to increase their kill counts rapidly.

It was a totally different situation where 1 Region had to defend themselves against other 7 Regions. It became 2 Regions versus 6 other Regions which was equal to 1 versus 3. The pressure on them had been reduced by god-knows how many times! Since Europe Region had managed to stabilize their control over the center point, they began to focus on killing as many players as they could.

Without any hesitation at all, Zhang Yang made a crucial decision. He said, "Everyone, charge over to the Japan-Korea Region's pathway!"

Killing anyone could contribute to the kill count of their own Regions as long as the players they kill are not of their own Region. If 6 Regions could combine their forces in taking on the Europe Region and the North America Region, they might be usurped.

However, the Japan-Korea Region would never cooperate with China Region. Never! Well, after every humiliation that Zhang Yang did to them, it would need more than just a miracle for them to join forces with China. Without the chance of them working as one, charging towards the center point would only be giving free kill counts to the Europe Region!

Since that is the case, why not put their focus on slaughtering the Japan Korea Region instead? After all, they were one of the main reasons why it was impossible for the other 6 Regions to join forces in the first place! By doing so, they could also stem the flow of forces charging at the Europe Region and reduce the kill counts that the Europe Region could score. Though it would reduce even more pressure on the Europe Region, Europe Region would not be able to collect as many kill counts as they initially can!

Zhang Yang took the lead and charged straight towards the base of the Japan-Korea Region. Upon charging forward for a brief moment, he could see a bunch of Japan-Korea players, approximately 30 players, heading towards the center point. --- their number were that low because Sun Xin Yu and her Stealthy Strike Force were doing a hell of a job. They could not even step out of their own Graveyard before they die again! Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and flapped his wings. He charged towards the enemy base like a flying general.

{Charge Up Strike}!

Zhang Yang engaged in battle with those Japan-Korea players. They were already rounding up on Zhang Yang. They planned to instantly kill Zhang Yang while the Healers from his rear were still too far away from Zhang Yang to provide any support. Well, their hatred for Zhang Yang boiled the moment they saw his face. Everyone was dreaming off becoming the person who 'slays' Zhang Yang. They even came up with a title called 'The Slayer of Zhan Yu'. Whoever who does that would definitely be sculptured and praised as the hero or idol of Japan-Korea Region!

{God of War Devastation}!

Zhang Yang had over 100 EP at the moment. Instantly, 37 strikes flurried out and caused a basic damage of approximately 2,600,000 damage to those players!

That was insane! What the f*ck!

Combining the attack of {Charge Up Strike} with {God of War

Devastation}could allow Zhang Yang to deal up to 101 hits with an amount of damage that was 9 times higher than his initial normal attack! Furthermore, that was not the end yet. The special effect of Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered, causing another wave of approximately 2,600,000 Basic Damage to the players of Japan-Korea once more!

"Argh! Argh! Argh!"

The total amount of damage dealt to them exceeded 5,200,000 damage! Even players with Class B Inheritance would be instantly killed by the two strikes if they were not well-equipped! As Zhang Yang's sword flashed across the battlefield, the Japan-Korea players screamed in misery. More than 10 of them were instantly killed!

Zhang Yang could instantly kill players who have already activated their Inheritance Transformations? What the hell was that?

The Japan-Korea players were staring at Zhang Yang as if they just saw a monster. Even Han Ying Xue, Snow Seeker and his other fellow China players were so badly shocked as if they had just seen a ghost! What the hell! That was just purely terrifying!

Zhang Yang was a player from another dimension! He was just too powerful!

Although more than half of them had survived the two strikes, their HP bars were now extremely low. Just as they were attempting to fall back, the China forces had arrived at the front line. They easily took out the remaining players and sent them all back to their Graveyard!

Push on!

Even though the pathway was long, it only took them about 5 minutes to clash into another two batches of Japan-Korea players. The Japan-Korea players had stopped charging forward. They were waiting for everyone to get resurrected at the Graveyard first before making any move. They have decided to go head-on with Zhang Yang and his fellow China players!

After all, their regional Graveyard was extremely close to them. They

could rely on that to cover up their forces. They would not need to worry that they would run out of men to fight against the China Region.

However, it did not matter which Region claims victory over the other. The most important thing would still be the kill counts that each Region gets.

Well, Zhang Yang and his gang were here to kill, after all!

When Zhang Yang and the China forces pushed the Japan-Korea players back to their Graveyard, Sun Xin Yu and her Stealthy Strike Force no longer need to stay in the shadows. They revealed themselves and joined the great battle.

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, One Sword Stroke, Sword of Light and the other Tankers held their shields up, tanking against their enemy on the front line. They were driving through the Japan-Korea players' defense line back, like a huge powerful tidal wave. The two sides met and the battle devolved into an all-out melee.

Chapter 675: The True Pushing Technique

Mountain Mover did not join the battle. He remained on a Flying Mount. He was levitating 3 meters above from the ground while observing the situation of the battle and giving commands to the other players.

In any 1 VS 1 match, the important thing was a player's strength and skills. In any 2 VS 2 match, collaboration becomes crucial and important if you wanted to win the match. When the number of players in a match reaches a certain height, collaboration would become so significant that strengths, equipment no longer matter much.

In terms of Strength, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and his other gang were way much more powerful than the players from Japan-Korea Region. For instance, the standard of the Japan-Korea players' equipment were the worst among all thanks to the China Region. They had been cornered and bullied by Zhang Yang while the others had snatched the good equipment out there. They only left the weak and lousy equipment for the Japan-Korea players to salvage. How about collaboration?

Under the command of Mountain Mover, the 100 China players were collaborating in a perfect sense that they were able to outdo the effect of 1 plus 1 equals to two. The complex combination of tactics and collaboration that the China players were implementing left the Japan-Korea players confused. They did not even know how to react to the situation. They did not even know where to start!

The Japan-Korea players would need to send out 10 players on their side just to kill one China Region player. Even though they had the advantage of having their Graveyard close to them, it did not seem to be enough for them to hold themselves up against Zhang Yang and his fellow China players. They were basically being cornered up and slaughtered now!

Meanwhile, their Stealthy Strike Force had also been wiped out. Japan-Korea Region had a total of 76 players. All of them were now being cornered up by their own doorstep! Once they are killed, they would be resurrected once in every 30 seconds, only to be killed again. The cycle

went on. Well, they were contributing to the kill count of the China Region in a way. Meanwhile, the China Region was not backing up as well. They were performing outstandingly at increasing their kill counts. Their momentum could almost match the momentum of the Europe Region at that rate!

As long as they keep their current pace up, they should be the ones claiming victory over the war!

The players from Japan-Korea Region were beginning to cry their eyes red. What the actual f*ck! The China Region did not just push them back, but also cut off their escape routes! Why don't they just attack the other Regions? Why must they come at them? Kill, kill, kill! Killing one China player is better than killing none!

Some say that a cornered foe would be at its most dangerous state. However, desperate courage is not always enough win the battle! These Japan-Korea Region players had outdated equipment and low levels. Furthermore, they were not organized at all. They intended to fight the battle with only courage alone. Such a mentality would just place them in an even more difficult situation than they already were in! Furthermore, the resurrection system on this map was automated. In other words, players would automatically release their souls 30 seconds after they died. Furthermore, they would be set to be resurrected on the Graveyard of their own Region. They could not stop themselves from resurrecting even if they wanted to.

Moreover, although players would regain full HP status upon their resurrection, they would still need to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills manually. If they react just a little slower right after they are resurrected, they would be instantly killed by the bombardment of AoE attacks in the area.

One time, ten times, thirty times! The rage of those Japan-Korea players were starting to lose its heat after countless times of being killed. Instead of being angry, they felt more desperate as they hoped that the battle would just end right away. They had suffered enough and they were now hoping that their suffering would end as soon as possible.

The only thing that would be fortunate for them was that there was no live broadcast of the situation in the War Canyon. So no one would be able to see their miserable faces as they are being slaughtered up like pigs. However, if any of those god damn China players decided to record the entire situation down with their 'record' function on the game, then...

The battle had entered its 90th minute. Zhang Yang had received a system notification saying that the neutral center point had been taken over by the North America Region! Obviously, they were right about their guesses back then. The Europe Region and the North America Region really did strike a deal under the table. Unfortunately, the China Region could maintain their pace of staying ahead of every other Region by slaughtering up the Japan-Korea players as many times as they like. They need not even care about who was controlling the center point.

However, the Europe Region was not stupid at all. They took advantage of the North Americans by wanting to be the first to take over the center point. Now that the center point was passed on to the North America Region, they could finally focus their assaults on the China Region.

The Europe Region sent out a team of Assassins over to the Graveyard of China Region. They intended to kill any China players who were newly resurrected from death.

The situation had definitely become unfavorable to Zhang Yang and his fellow China players. Because not only they would lose some manpower, they would also be pushed back by the Japan-Korea players once their numbers drop to a certain level.

All they could do was to hold on for as long as they could. They only needed to last for another 30 minutes before they could finally claim victory over the war!

Healers that were stationed on the front line were being extra cautious. The Tankers had their eyes peeled on their own UI and healthbars, more so than the fight before them. They were not stingy at all in activating their Skills on their comrades who were in grave danger. They were focused completely on minimizing death counts.

Fortunately, the spirit of the players from Japan-Korea Region had been extinguished awhile ago. They were just trying to get by without putting up much of a fight. That was probably why they had not noticed the number of players from the China Region decreasing steeply.

100 minutes! 110 minutes!

The China Region still remained number one on the Kill Count Ranking list. They scored 120 more kill counts than the Europe Region. Well, they scored 287 more kill counts than the North America Region who was ranked number three on the list.

If that pace goes on, China Region would definitely be getting number one by the end of the battle!

The Europe Region decided to take a risk. Other than putting a stealthy team by China's Graveyard, they also sent out their remaining forces into the Japan-Korea Region pathway. They intended to sandwich the China Region in between themselves and the players of Japan-Korea Region. They intended to trap the forces of China Region, leaving no place for them to escape!

By doing so, they should be able to score another 50 kill counts to surpass the kill counts of China Region. After becoming the number one on the Kill Count Ranking List, they could move on to ravage the players of Japan-Korea Region to earn even more kill counts. After killing Zhang Yang and the other China players, Zhang Yang and the other China players would have to run all the way back before they could reengage in battle. It would be another 10 minutes later when they get back into the fight. The battle would have ended by then!

Theoretically speaking, the tactic should work splendidly.

After a brief moment, the main force of Europe Region began to march forth on the pathway of Japan-Korea Region. They came at Zhang Yang and the other China players like they had nothing else to lose.

Mountain Mover immediately made some arrangements to counter the tactic that the Europeans were implementing at the moment. His tactical commands had finally been brought into play in the crucial moment of

the battle. The 100 players were utilized by Mountain Mover so brilliantly that they were performing at 200%, maybe even at 300 % effectiveness!

The Japan-Korea Region did not strike back with much vigor. They were all acting like men who just got their *sses poked multiple times over. Although a stronger party had come to push the bullies on them away, they were so broken by then that they only knew how to cry.

Without the cooperation of the Japan-Korea Region, the Europe Region did not gain any advantage. They were only sent back to their own Graveyards. Well, speaking from the perspective of time, they did not have enough time to walk all the way back to get back into the fight.

The numbers on both sides were decreasing steeply. Their combat capabilities were almost similar. Hence, the advantage of having a good commander was beginning to reveal. The China Region had crushed the delusional dream of the Europe Region and took out the entire force of the Europe Region! Of course, the China Region had also sacrificed almost two-thirds of their forces just to eliminate the threat posed by the Europe Region!

"Retreat!" Zhang Yang did not hesitate to call off their attacks. Their number had been reduced so significantly that they did not have enough men to push back the Japan-Korea Region to their starting point. They were beginning to feel the pressure from the Japan-Korea Region. Therefore, it would be wise to retreat at the moment. Truth be told, the outcome of the war had been decided. After getting a beat down from the China Region, there was no way that the Europe Region would get back on their feet and catch up with the progress of the China Region. Meanwhile, the kill count for the next runner-ups, the North America Region, was too far off from the kill count of the China Region. Hence, they could only strive for number two on the Kill Count Ranking List.

Seeing Zhang Yang and his monstrous China players retreating, the Japan-Korea players staggered for a moment before they realized what was really going on. They quickly pursued the China players in an attempt to kill them.

Unfortunately, everyone from China Region were on their Flying Mounts. The Japan-Korea players were left behind without much of a problem. Unless they had a super speed Flying Mount like Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet, it was not possible for them to catch up with players on their Flying Mounts.

116 minutes, 118 minutes, 120 minutes!

The battle was over!

On the Kill Count Ranking List, China Region had scored over 1,278 kill counts to be ranked Number One. Europe Region scored over 1,144 kill counts to be ranked as Number Two while North America scored over 1,097 kill counts to be ranked as Number Three on the Kill Count Ranking List. As expected, Japan-Korea Region was the last on the list. Being the bottom feeder on the ranking, the Japan-Korea Region could only score over 345 kill counts. This time, they were truly shamed for good!

The moment when the battle was over, the system unlocked the War Canyon. The three Regions who earned their tickets into the 'promised land' could now enter the map through the new portal. However, the portal would stay open for only 7 days. After 7 days, the portal would be closed and no longer be available to the three Regions. Players would have to join another battle royale and decide which three Regions would be able to enter the War Canyon.

Monsters in the War Canyon were ranging from Level 120 to Level 150. There was no quest available on this map. However, because players could enjoy 15% additional Experience Points, their leveling up efficiency was way better than they were when they were on other maps!

Of course, the main thing a large-scale guild would focus on would be clearing the six new sub-dungeons!

Keeping the promises they made earlier on, Lone Desert Smoke would be taking the 10-player scale Death Swamp. Crimson Rage would be taking the 10-player scale Death Jungle. Meanwhile, the guilds of Imperial Sky, The Radiance, Sunset Amber and Rolling Rocks would take the remaining 4 5-player dungeons. These 6 guilds were the most powerful guilds in the

entire China Region for the moment. Each of these guilds at least had Class A Inheritances to back their power level!

Of course, guilds like Floating Clouds and Brilliant Star were also very powerful. But they would be a little off compared to the 6 most powerful guilds in the entire China Region. They had allocated the dungeons much earlier on to prevent any unnecessary competitions among their own Region. Well, conflict is always inevitable.

For instance, Zhang Yang had clearly stated that he and his guild would be clearing the Death Swamp. Therefore, when the other guilds heard him loud and clear, they would avoid going over to that dungeon to compete with them. Lone Desert Smoke's Dungeon Exploration Party contained 3 players with Class S Inheritance, two players with Class A Inheritance and 5 players with Class B Inheritance! Furthermore, they also had two Phoenix pets and a Battle Companion which could also activate Transformation Skills! Who would want to go up against a party with such an intimidating lineup?!

It would be suicidal to even think about going up against them!

Therefore, Imperial Sky and the other powerful guilds had to endure the pain of not being able to take down the First Clear for the 10-player scale dungeons, even though the First Clear for those 10-player dungeons were extremely beneficial (Each First Clear could give each player 1 Skill Points! 10 players would be able to benefit from it at the same time!). Whoever who tries to clear the same dungeon with Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage would not only lose the chance to get 10 Skill Points, but also lose the 5-player scale dungeon to someone else as they would be too busy fighting either one of the two powerful guilds. After all, there were already a large number of guilds, powerful enough to clear a new dungeon, these days.

After the system had teleported everyone out of the War Canyon, Zhang Yang quickly assembled his party of 10. Then they reentered the War Canyon through the temporal portal. This time, the 8 pathways in the dungeon were no longer empty. There were hordes of monsters swarming up the pathways! It seemed that players could enjoy the perks to grind

their levels by killing these monsters now!

Of course, the dungeon no longer restricted players from flying. They could just ride on their Flying Mounts and fly to the center point of the dungeon. That was where the entrance to Death Abyss was located at.

Because the modes of the dungeon were locked, players would need to unlock the modes consecutively from Normal Mode to Hard Mode before unlocking the Hardcore Mode. So they had to start with Normal Mode. Zhang Yang had the two Phoenix pets activate their Transformation Skills. They lured all monsters in the surroundings towards the first boss and took out everything, including the first boss! Then they used the same tactic on the second boss, third boss, forth boss, and the fifth boss! Zhang Yang and his party cleared the Normal Mode of the dungeon in under 17 minutes!

Well, the difficulty of the dungeon was too easy, to begin with!

Upon entering the Hard Mode of the dungeon, Endless Starlight, Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Fantasy Sweetheart activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. Then they also used the same tactic to clear the entire dungeon. The better part of it was they managed to shorten the time required to clear the dungeon down to 16 minutes 34 seconds! They took even less time than they took to clear out the Normal Mode of the dungeon!

Lastly, it was time for them to clear the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon and seize the 'First Clear' title of the Death Abyss! Everyone activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills at the same instant. Zhang Yang made a mad decision. The moment they step foot into the dungeons, they lured everything including the first boss, second boss, third boss, forth boss, and the fifth boss all together in one spot. Then, they unleashed hell upon them with everything they got! Everything was done in one single motion! It was an absolute massacre!

11 minutes 34 seconds!

The Hardcore Mode of the dungeon had been cleared by Zhang Yang and his party! The moment when the server announced the result, the

20,000,000,000 players from all around the world had to recheck their bearings with reality!

Chapter 676: Eternal Flame

Too fast!

That happened too fast!

Was it because there were no monsters at all throughout the entire dungeon? Could it be that there was just one boss in the entire dungeon? Normal players were having similar thoughts on what just happened. Meanwhile, One Sword Stroke and the other Dungeon Exploration Parties had a chill up their spines after hearing about it. They quickly hustled up and killed the monsters as soon as they were able to. They were pretty worried that Lone Desert Smoke might just enter the other dungeons as well to get the First Clear of the other sub-dungeons! They might just rush in to snatch for the second, maybe even the third 'First Clear' for the sub-dungeons on the map!

--- well, they did not say that any guild that already cleared their own dungeon could not continue on with the other dungeons.

Truth be told, Zhang Yang had already on the move. He divided his party into two. Him alone, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were on the same party while the others were grouped as the second half of the party. Each party went on to clear two of the 5-player scale dungeons. Zhang Yang did not intend to gather his party to take on the other 10-player scale dungeon because the relationship of Crimson Rage with Lone Desert Smoke was very good. First of all, they felt awkward to even think about competing with Crimson Rage especially after they had agreed to let them take one of the dungeons. Second of all, Crimson Rage was extremely capable and powerful on their own. If Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke started out on the dungeon at the same time, Zhang Yang and his party would still be able to win. However, now that the party of Crimson Rage was already halfway through the dungeon, there was no way that Zhang Yang and his party could catch up with their progress. Needless to say, they would never get to overtake their progress!

Although the Lone Desert Smoke had split up, the difficulty of the

dungeons that they were in had dropped from 10-player scale to 5-player scale. Furthermore, the party Zhang Yang was on had a total of 3 players with Class S Inheritance and two players with Class A Inheritance. There was no other party in the entire world that could have such a powerful lineup.

They cleared the Normal Mode of the dungeon in about 11 minutes. Then, they cleared the Hard Mode of the dungeon in approximately 13 minutes. Finally, they cleared the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon under 15 minutes!

Unfortunately, while they were battling against the final boss of the Hardcore Mode for the dungeon, the Rolling Rocks had coincidentally taken out the boss before them and the system began to make the announcement. It was extremely close! However, after one minute had passed, the system began to refresh again --- Zhang Yang and his party had earned the qualifications required for them to clear the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon!

The Rolling Rock's party of 5 were left in cold sweat. If Zhang Yang and his party had managed to clear the dungeon just a little faster, then they would have to give up on the dungeon. They were extremely lucky this time!

What an unfortunate thing for Zhang Yang and his party!

After about 1 hour, all the Hardcore Modes for all 6 dungeons had been cleared. However, there was an unexpected twist of events! The Sunset Amber did not get the 'First Clear' of the dungeon they were promised to take on. Instead, a guild called 'Eternal Flame' took down the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon!

The China Region had taken down the 'First Clear' of all six dungeons in a row. It was natural that everyone was pumped up! The Eternal Flame had also become famous over one night because of what they achieved. Everyone was wondering. Where have they been all the while? They were actually capable of overtaking one of the top Tier guilds!

Truth to be told, that was not the real strength of the entire Eternal

Flame. Well, their best players may have the capability to pick a fight with the Sunset Amber. However, if they were to compare their core players, the newly risen guild would not be able to match a well-established guild that had been there over the years!

Looking back at the history, the Lone Desert Smoke was not powerful at all in the beginning. They were not worthy of being compared with Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky and other Top Tier guilds. They could not even match The Dominators! However, after building up their names upon clearing dungeons after dungeons, the Lone Desert Smoke became more powerful than they ever could imagine. They had also recruited many top Tier players before they became the world leading guild. Now, they were at the top of the top in the entire world!

For a newly risen guild, taking down the 'First Clear' of dungeons would be the best way to build their names.

Undoubtedly, the Eternal Flames had succeeded in doing so. They would soon become a large-scale guild if they keep their good work up. However, it remained unknown if they could become one of the top Tier guilds. It would depend on whether they could actually keep their good work up, or not.

Zhang Yang and his party had taken down the 'First Clear' of a dungeon. So, every one of them acquired 1 Skill Point for themselves. Although breaking two records of Hardcore Mode for two dungeons did not give them extra Skill Points, the system had rewarded them with some Level 5 Gemstones. The Gemstones that each of them acquired were all compatible with each of their Class.

However, Zhang Yang was dissatisfied. Now, he was beginning to go down on the path of Strength. He would be needing as many Strength Gemstones as possible. The system gave him a Vitality Gemstone. He could not do anything with it unless he intends to focus back on powering up his Vitality attribute. So, he could only pass the Gemstone to Endless Starlight. That wretched guy was screaming in joy while praising Zhang Yang. He even suggested that Zhang Yang give him the [Sword of Purging Devourer] as well. Instead of getting the sword, he got a kick in the face

for demanding the impossible. What a greedy f*ck!

Although Zhang Yang did not mind about having more competitors, he still sent a spy over to have a check on the Eternal Flame's background. The spy was really good at getting information without people noticing. He came back with some news very quickly --- actually, the Eternal Flame had nothing to hide as well. They publicly announced that anyone who had the skills and strength could join their guild. Players who decided to join their guild would also get quite a sum of money as their allowance. The stronger the player, the more allowance the player would get for joining the guild.

They classified players into 5 rankings: Top class players, high-class players, middle-class players, Collector class players and Production class players.

Collector class player and Production class player had it much easier. As long as the Collector class player could provide the guild a fixed amount of Ores, Herbs and other necessary items, they would be rewarded. They would reward the Collector class players based on the grade of the items they bring in. They classified the items in three different grades. The High-tier, Middle-tier, and the Normal-tier. The rewards based on the tiers would be 5,000 gold, 3,000 gold, and 2,000 gold respectively. On the other hand, the Production class players would need to produce a fixed amount of items for the guild as well. The rewards for the items they made would be based on the grade of the blueprints they had. They also categorized the grade of blueprints into three different grades. The rewards would also be 5,000 gold, 3,000 gold and 2,000 gold respectively based on their grade.

This mechanism was not that bad at all. Normal players could go to work in real life during the day and earn some pocket money in the game during the night. However, Production class players would have much lesser things to worry about once they have their hands on a certain number of blueprints. On the other hand, Collector class players would have to work their *sses off to gather items and herbs. After all, the guild is not stupid enough to give you free money. Even though they could get

2,000 gold for Normal Tier items or Herbs, they would need to provide a fixed amount of the items and Herbs. It would be extremely difficult for them to do so. Upon spending time on gathering items and herbs, these players would not have time at all to grind their levels up.

As for the top class players, high-class players and middle-class players, the Eternal Flame guild had implemented a very simple test to determine the class of the players joining them. They allocated their core players of 6 different Classes as the Examiners. Those who wishes to join the guild would need to battle against these Examiners. Those who can defeat the Examiners would be deemed as top class players. Those who could get a tie with the Examiners would be deemed as high-class players. Meanwhile, those who could last over a certain time frame of the battle with these Examiners would be deemed as middle-class players.

The guild would still give 3,000 gold to the players every month even if they were just middle-class players. High-class players would get 10,000 gold per month. As for the top class players, they would be signing contracts with the guild and their allowances would differ based on the strength and performance of the individuals.

If the calculations are based on the Level 4 Guild of 40,000 players, the guild would have to throw a total of 1,200,000,000 gold coins into the guild expense each month, even if each of the members only get 3,000 gold coins! About the production part, the guild would only be able to earn through their collection and production class players. At the same time, they could not afford to have too many players become those classes of players. Because if they do, it would definitely affect the strength of their guild. Most of their players would be too busy collecting and producing instead of grinding their levels!

Holy god! Which man or woman would be so rich to burn their money like that?

However, if they do gather enough men with that standard of recruitment, the Eternal Flame would definitely be capable of becoming one of the top Tier guilds in the entire world, eventually. After all, the strength and capability of Eternal Flame seemed to be able to rival the

strength and capabilities of top Tier guilds like Imperial Sky and Rolling Rocks, sooner or later. The most important thing in getting the guild up to standard would be to gather as many top Tier players into one's guild as possible.

The core players of the Lone Desert Smoke's core players were actually on the same standard of the core players on the other large-scale guilds. However, Lone Desert Smoke had quite a number of top Tier players on their side. For instance, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream and his other gang members were absolutely powerful!

Just look at the Leaderboard of China Region. Lone Desert Smoke had occupied 12 names on the list! They had 5 or 6 names more than Crimson Rage and Imperial Sky which were known to be number two and number three! On the Leaderboard of Classes, Lone Desert Smoke had also occupied 10% of the total players on those lists. They had the most number of top Tier players in the guild, after all.

Eternal Flame had just been founded 7 days ago. The Death Abyss dungeon was their first 'First Clear' ever acquired! They had never thought possible that their guild would 'bloom' overnight! They had never thought possible that they would step on Sunset Amber and reveal themselves into the public eyes of the China Region. Currently, the Eternal Flame was highly prolific. Many high Tier players from their guild were beginning to appear on the Leaderboards of China Regions.

Well, it seemed that a guild could really dig out powerful players from the abyss as long as the guild is willing to throw in a substantial amount of money!

There were numerous high Tier players in the China Region. However, many of them were still hiding in the shadows because of various reasons. Zhang Yang was also a powerful player in his previous life. However, because his level was not up to the standard of the majority and he was without any support from any powerful guild, he never got the chance to get good equipment. All he could do was to perform regularly as a high Tier player. He could not unleash his full potential under his previous circumstances.

However, the guildmaster of the Eternal Flame was a mystery. No one had ever met him, up till this point. Everyone knew his name by looking at the guild member list. His name was called 'Dragon Marquis'.

Upon acquiring their first 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the Death Abyss, the Eternal Flame began to recruit new members for their guild, riding on the elevated profile of their victory. They were recruiting at the arena in Crimson Sky City. Players could sign themselves up for the test provided by 13 Examiners of each type to determine whether they were worthy of joining the guild or not.

"Noob tank! I'm a top Tier player, wait, no! I'm a top top top tier player! How come you've never pay me any salary then?" Wei Yan Er was forcing Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the gang to check out on the battles in Crimson Sky City. She then raised her cute little face and put her hands up on her waist as she questioned Zhang Yang.

"Oi, little brat! You should talk without fooling yourself! You must stay clear, for the sake of your conscience, you know? Touch your heart and tell me! Didn't I already give you 5% of my entire earnings from my Little Merchandize Shop every month? Just count and see! It's way more than that! Or do you prefer to get the same amount of money a month as they do?"

Wei Yan Er was very obedient this time. She actually put her right hand on her left chest. Her face suddenly frowned. She was obviously annoyed. Then she complained, "You noob tank! How can you be so bad!"

Zhang Yang was muddled. What happened to the little brat? Why did she sulk?

Han Ying Xue laughed out loud and put her hand on her huge boobies, then she said, "Yan Er can only touch her 'airport'! That must have triggered her pain in her heart! Hahaha!"

... Zhang Yang instantly understood! Well, he did mentioned 'touch your heart' back then.

"Han Ying Xue! If you even dare to say the word 'airport' again, I'm going to cut my ties with you!"

The big screen in the arena would show the situation of every battle. Meanwhile, a large number of players found it very interesting to see how the Eternal Flame was recruiting members for their guild. Therefore, they stopped everything that they were doing --- truth be told, ever since the developer had begun implementing the frequent Individual Ranking Competitions, the arena had been so quiet ever since.

Therefore, whoever win or lose was clearly announced on the big screen of the arena. However, there were not many high Tier players out there. Half an hour had passed, and no one that could beat any of the 13 Examiners. Only a small number of players managed to join the ranks of Eternal Flame as 'middle class' members. They had to accept that they would be treated as middle-class players then.

Among the 13 Examiners, some were very well-mannered, while some were not at all. Those who were ill-mannered were beginning to curse and scold. They were really demeaning those players who had failed with rude words. They even told them to stop wasting their time and go home, cry in their mothers' arms and so forth. Although they were indeed professional players, their attitudes were... at least Zhang Yang would never want these sort of scumbags in his guild.

As he was tired of watching all the boring drama and sh*ts, he said, "Little brat... you asked us to waste our time watching some rude monkeys trying to show off? We're better off grinding our levels you know?"

"Hehe... don't you think those bastards are trying to pick a fight with us?" Wei Yan Er waved her battle axe around, "What kind of stupid guild is this? They even claimed that they will defeat the Lone Desert Smoke! Humph! I'm here to destroy them today!"

Well, it would be normal for any guild to shout out their slogan. Furthermore, there were numerous guilds who had claimed that they would defeat Lone Desert Smoke, so that they could become Number One in the entire China Region. Zhang Yang would never go and bully them just to scare them off. It would be immature to do so. If they want to come, let them come! However, this would be the first time that a guild would recruit members with the intention to defeat Lone Desert Smoke! This

Eternal Flame was the only guild that was daring enough to do this sort of things.

Chapter 677: Mar Gaia Forest

If they really had that kind of capability on them, why don't they just take out Zhang Yang or Sun Xin Yu, or any other core players of Lone Desert Smoke from the Individual Ranking Competition list then? They could just prove by doing so, right? However, even though they were afraid to lose, they were actually making themselves loud and clear as they were recruiting. The little brat was infuriated immediately upon hearing it.

The little brat had always been clear about her preferences. She would never let a thorn stay in her eye. So, she decided to stir up some trouble.

"Humph! Humph! Let me go and tell them what a high Tier player is!" Wei Yan Er leaped down to the side of the arena and challenged the Berserker from Eternal Flame.

"I'll go too!" Sun Xin Yu said coldly. Then, she vanished into thin air. She went into her Stealth Mode immediately.

Zhang Yang frowned intensely when he saw Sun Xin Yu going straight into her Stealth Mode. There was no point for her to go into Stealth Mode in the middle of a main city, because PvP was not allowed in the first place! It seemed that she did it out of her professional habit.

"I'll go as well!" Han Ying Xue also went into the arena without as hesitation.

The three ladies selected an Examiner and signed themselves up. After a brief moment, six players entered the arena. Upon the end of the 5-minute preparation time, the battle had finally begun!

Wei Yan Er clashed into her opponent with her {Charge} while Sun Xin Yu activated her {Shadow Step} and slid herself over to the rear of her opponent. The two ladies were beginning to attack their opponents as aggressively as they could.

The battles ended much faster than anyone had anticipated. Well, first of all, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er had powerful equipment. Furthermore, their Skills were much more powerful than the Examiners. They only took

approximately 10 seconds to defeat their opponents. Their opponents were kneeling on the ground begging for mercy not because they were scared or useless, it was because of the arena's design! Whoever loses would kneel and beg for mercy, automatically.

Han Ying Xue did not drag the battle too long as well. With her {Putrefying Poison} and her {Punishment Ray}, her high Spell-damage and her additional Damage would tear through the thickest defenses. She took out her opponent like he was nothing!

Eternal Flame, 3 battles, 3 losses.

Some bystanders who could not stand the arrogant tone from the few 'Examiners' immediately opened their mouths and ridiculed them. Didn't they say that they wanted professional high Tier players? Now they've got it! So why are they performing worse than a rookie? Was that the best they could do? If they're just so noobish, why don't they just bang their heads into the wall and die?

Those arrogant Examiners were not willing to give in just yet. They challenged Sun Xin Yu and the other two ladies to another round of battles. The three ladies were not going to back down on them of course, so they accepted their challenges one after another. They basically tortured them round after round! With everything that was happening around, the remaining 'Examiners' had to step in to uphold their dignity for their guild. So they also went up to challenge Sun Xin Yu and the other two ladies in an attempt to save their guild's good name. By the end of it, they were all beaten up so badly that their mother could not recognize them anymore!

The most infuriating part of the incident was that the three ladies rejected their invitation to become one of their guild members!

What the f*ck! If you're not going to join, why would you challenge the Examiners in the first place? Well, they were not aware of the ladies' real intention at first.

At first, they were trying to take advantage of the momentum they gained by getting the 'First Clear' of the dungeon to recruit new members

into their ranks. However, they went too far and got their faces kicked in instead. Therefore, the Eternal Flame was too embarrassed to carry on with their recruitment at the arena of the main city. They only decided on whether a player was worthy to join them or not by looking at their rankings on the Individual Ranking Competition Leaderboard.

Just like an old saying, generous rewards rouses one to heroism! Even though the Eternal Flame tripped themselves over Sun Xin Yu and the other 2 ladies and fell over while they were on the peak of their momentum, they were still known to be a new rising star in the China Region. Furthermore, they had a wealthy foundation to support them with endless gold and money. Hence, they were able to expand their power and influence wide over a brief period of time. In just a short while, they had become a newly emerging force in China Region. A strong one too, at that!

Zhang Yang and his gang went on to clear the 6 new dungeons once. Their equipment were not at the standard of Ethereal Tier just yet. They still managed to replace some of their older equipment on with some new Mythical Tier equipment they got from clearing the Hardcore Mode of the dungeons.

Well, even though the War Canyon would only provide 15% additional Experience Points to the players from the one Region that won Number One back in the war, but the map would require over 2,000,000,000 Level 120 players from across 3 main Regions! After all, Level 120 players were the majority of the population in the entire server. So how could this little War Canyon fit so many people in then?

Just like what Fatty Han would say, this is what they say about having a female's three holes occupied from the top to bottom! It would be almost impossible to even move!

Grinding levels in that map would mean more Player VS Player battles for everyone from different Regions. Well, players from different Regions would forever stay as foes. They would try to kill each other, the moment they see each other out there. There was a saying, hit him until he does not know what got him! In a nutshell, the War Canyon would be packed with players from all different Regions, and everyone would be out for

blood, killing each other from time to time. In a harsh environment like that, grinding levels in the War Canyon would not be a wise move, after all.

"Everything would have been perfect if, only the players from the Region that got Number One can come in here to grind our levels!" Han Ying Xue and the others were 'hurt,' seeing that they could not take advantage of the additional 15% Experience Points that the system provided in the War Canyon.

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, "Even if only China Region players are allowed to enter this map, there would still be over 60,000,000 or 70,000,000 players. There would be more players than the monsters as well. Things would not become much easier, though. Now that we have foreign players invading our space, there are no battles among our own people. If there aren't any foreign enemies, I believe conflicts would still arise among the guilds in China Region."

Everyone gave some thoughts on what Zhang Yang said. Then they nodded to agree. Well, if they ever encounter The Myth or The Dominators, they would charge at them and start a battle with them without a second thought.

The War Canyon was currently full of people. There were too many people squeezing into the Level 120-150 map. The good spots for grinding levels had been occupied by others. Hence, Zhang Yang assembled his party of 10 and headed straight to a new map --- Mar Gaia Forest.

The Mar Gaia Forest was a Level 150 - 180 Map. A new boss with a next-level Tier would emerge, a Holy Tier!

Because the monsters would have a minimum Level of Level 159, many Level 120 players would not be able to come to this map. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his party had surpassed Level 140 at the moment. Unless they would be so unlucky to encounter a monster that is beyond Level 170, they should not have to face the annoying Level Gap Suppression function of the game. They should be able to kill most monsters on the map.

The place was sparsely populated with players. Compared to the

previous maps, a player would have met another player upon walking a hundred meters. While Zhang Yang and his party were entering the map, it was like they were entering a primitive forest that no one had set foot on before.

Avoiding the crowd of troublesome players was one thing. Another more important reason why Zhang Yang picked this map was because, there was a new Territory in this map!

The time required to travel from Morning Town to a Level 120 - 150 map would still be reasonable. However, it would be too far for any players to travel from Morning Town all the way to a Level 150 - 180 map. There must be a new checkpoint for players to actually teleport themselves to the map! More importantly, this kind of Territory is most unlike the Territory Gateway where each Region could claim one for themselves. There was only a total of 4 of these Territories!

That being said, 4 Regions would not have access to the checkpoints. They would need to travel all the way across half the earth from their Territorial Gateways to the maps of Level 150 - 180. That would definitely cost them a lot of time that could otherwise be spent grinding their levels. In Zhang Yang's previous life, the owners of these 4 new Territories were constantly changing. Well, all Regions needed the Territories for their own convenience. Therefore, they would have to launch a war over to snatch the Territory for their own benefits, from time to time.

Meanwhile, the Sauron's Castle in the Mar Gaia Forest was actually the Territory that was taken over by the China Region in Zhang Yang's previous life. Although the Territory was snatched and taken over by other Regions before, the Territory was under the control of the China Region, most of the time. Therefore, Zhang Yang brought his party over to the place without realizing it was his subconscious calling out to them. Well, he felt a deep connection with the place, after all.

This time, the circumstances were not like how it was when the Chaos Realm was first unlocked. During that period of time, only Zhang Yang alone could enter the new maps. He could just conquer as many Territories as he wanted to! Well, Zhang Yang was not the only clever man

on earth. Many players had expected the possibility of new Territories spawning across the maps of Level 150 -180. They could also form a link between the new Territories with their Territory Gateways. Some players might already be on their way to the other new Territories at that instant!

Well, the early bird catches the worm! Everyone would stand an equal chance of getting a Territory. If the opportunity presents itself, grab it or lose it!

With the guide of a veteran like Zhang Yang, the gang did not get lost in the process of getting to the Territory. They went over the mountains and arrived nearby a small river. However, because there were too many high Tier players in Zhang Yang's previous life, Zhang Yang would only leave a map after he reaches the level cap of the map. Therefore, this Level 150 -180 map was the last map that Zhang Yang had experienced before he came over to this new life.

That being said, Zhang Yang no longer had any knowledge of the maps beyond this map. Maybe the names of the maps would ring a bell to him in the future, but nothing more. Well, he had never gone beyond the map of Mar Gaia Forest.

So Zhang Yang would no longer have the advantage of knowing ahead over everyone else, soon! However, Zhang Yang had no fear towards the future at all. His strength alone and his guild was already number one in the entire server! So he was confident at accepting any challenges that come at him in the future!

Upon seeing the river right in front of them, Zhang Yang descended from the sky. He split the party into two teams. Then he told one of the teams to follow the current of the river as he leads the other team to go against the current of the river. They went on according to Zhang Yang's plan in order to know more about the place.

After a brief moment, the team that went against the current of the river reported back to Zhang Yang with some news. They discovered a human on the verge of dying. When Zhang Yang heard the news, he led Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies to meet up with the rest of the

party.

When they arrived, all they saw was a middle-aged man lying on his stomach, with blood all over the ground. His face was so pale that he looked like a corpse himself! It was obvious that he had been poisoned.

[Col Garson] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 151

HP: 1/97,960

Note: One of the members of the fellowship that opposes Sauron. Col Garson is well known at covering his tracks and getting the information he needs.

"Please... you... must get this letter... to... General Turkin Han!" Col Garson handed out a small piece of paper over with his shaky hands before he exhaled his final breath and died.

'Ding! Col Garson has given you a quest: A Super Urgent Message. Will you accept it?'

Accept.

Upon Zhang Yang nodding at the NPC, everyone received the same quest at the same time.

[A Super Urgent Message] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: You have accepted a request from Col Garson right before he died. You have decided to go to the Hannier Valley and deliver this message which had been stained with blood to the hands of General Turkin Han. You have tracked the direction of where you should head. The Hannier Valley is confirmed to be located at the far Northwest from where you stand right now.

Completion: Hand over the message to General Turkin Han 0/1

This quest was merely the first and simple quest that would trigger a wondrous series of quests. It should be a walk in the park for Zhang Yang and his gang. The quest was ranked as Rank-C, instead of a Rank-D because Zhang Yang and his gang had not reach Level 150 just yet. The

monsters ahead of them were a technically overleveled.

"Super urgent... Speaking of which---" Han Ying Xue brought up her quest list and had a look, "Silly Yu, when are we going to complete this 'A Super Urgent News' quest of ours then?"

'A Super Urgent News' was a quest given to them by the soul of Spider Queen Catarina when they were in their Level 60s. The Spider Queen had urged them to travel over to the Spider Kingdom and report the urgent news to the Spider God. However, because the Spider Kingdom was located in the Chaos Realm, they had not touched the quest ever since. Well, they could not have entered the Chaos Realm when they were still around their Level 60s.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "The Spider Kingdom is also located on the Level 150 - 180 map. Let's finish up with the linking quests here and solve that 'forgotten' quest! Haha!"

Everyone hopped onto their Flying Mounts and headed towards Northwest. After traveling for over half an hour, they arrived at the Hannier Valley.

The entrance to the valley was well hidden. If it weren't for the few NPCs who were standing guard at their outpost, Zhang Yang and his gang could have missed the spot. Of course, these NPCs were stationed there on purpose by the developers to make things easier for the players. They did not do it because they thought players were stupid.

Chapter 678: Getting Back The One Ring

Zhang Yang and his party descended to the ground. The NPCs were startled. They thought that they were ambushed by enemy forces! So, they quickly raised their weapons up, ready to engage in battle. After seeing the faces of Zhang Yang and his party members, they put down their weapons and put themselves at ease. Then, one of them asked, "Who are you?"

"We're Adventurers who have traveled from a faraway land called the White Jade Castle!" Zhang Yang made a salutative gesture of an Adventurer and showed the NPCs the badge on his chest.

"White Jade Castle?" Those outpost guards were confused. But it did not take long before they recovered and asked, "What do you intend to trouble us with?"

"While we were traveling across the land, we came across a man called Col Garson. He requested us to deliver a letter to General Turkin Han with his dying breath!" Zhang Yang answered politely. Should he be angry at an NPC? Wouldn't that make a fool out of him to get angry at an unreal NPC?

Well, fools exist though. Wei Yan Er bared her teeth as she already lost her patience awhile ago. She would not be able to differentiate between reality and game when she began to play the game. She would only act based on her instincts. She would just fight if he wanted to, and just say whatever she wanted to say. If Han Ying Xue had not been holding her off, she would have jumped before everyone and began to scold the NPC with her finger pointed at him.

"Garson!" The guards by the guard post were shocked to hear Garson's name. Their attitude immediately changed and one of them said, "Fellow Adventurers, please forgive us for being extra-cautious. However, we can only be as careful as possible as the land is under the abusive influence of the Shadow Demon Sauron!"

"We express our gratitude to all of you for completing Garson's final wish. Please follow us!"

Two guards stood up to them and saluted at Zhang Yang and his gang. Then, they led the gang into the valley.

Because the terrain of the valley was deep, the valley seemed to be extra dark and gloomy, even though it was daytime. Wei Yan Er would have said that only bad guys would live in the valley. This place was ghastly!

There was a military camp in the middle of the valley. No wonder the guards at the outpost had been so nervous. If their hidden mother base was found by their enemies, they would all become an easy prey for their enemies! As they passed by the base camp, Zhang Yang and his gang could see that there were soldiers of different races. There were humans, dwarfs, Centaurs and at least a dozen other races.

Finally, the two outpost guards had led them to the front of a tent. After reporting to a few guards, Zhang Yang and his party were invited into the tent. The tent was huge. There was a war table right in the middle of the tent, a large, strategic map laid over it. A middle-aged man in a full-set armor was pinning military flags all across the surface of the strategic map. He was frowning. His face was filled with anxiety and worry.

[General Turkin Han] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 155

HP: 5,000,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Attack: 75,468 - 95,468

Note: The Commander that leads the force against Sauron. He is heroic and fierce, a very prestigious individual.

"I would like to express my gratitude for fulfilling Garson's dying request!" General Turkin Han turned around and looked at Zhang Yang and his gang. Then, he bowed to them.

"It's not a big deal at all. Don't worry about it!" Zhang Yang smiled and said. Then he took out the letter that Garson had passed to him right before he died. Then he passed it on to General Turkin Han, "This is the

letter that Garson handed over to us!"

"Hmm!" Turkin Han accepted the letter. Then he immediately opened up the envelope and read the contents of the letter.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: A Super Urgent Message. You received a reward: 500,000 Experience Points!’

After reading the letter, General Turkin Han was agitated. Instantly, he slammed his fist onto the table and scattered everything that had been arranged on the strategic map. The sand on the surface of the strategic map was swept up by the force of the impact from his fist.

Sometimes, players must take the initiative to trigger a quest instead of waiting for the quest to trigger itself.

Zhang Yang immediately asked, "What's the matter, general?"

If it was one of the general's guards or soldiers, Turkin Han would have denounced them without a doubt for speaking out of turn. However, Zhang Yang and his gang were special. Therefore, Turkin Han only hesitated for one brief moment before he replied Zhang Yang. "Malindor betrayed us! He's carrying The One Ring, and heading towards the Sunfall Volcano as we speak!"

Zhang Yang and his gang were confused. Han Ying Xue quickly said, "General, we hail from a land far from here. We're here to seek for some job opportunities. Can you enlighten us on the current situation?"

"Seeking for job opportunities?!" Turkin Han immediately shook his head and said, "You shouldn't have come here! The Shadow Demon Sauron is on the brink of returning the darkness to the entire land! The entire land shall tremble before his shadow! You should leave this place at once and find your job opportunities somewhere else!"

"We're the bringers of justice! We shall take out any pests in our way!" Wei Yan Er could not hold her tongue anymore. Finally, she opened her mouth and said, "General, we shall take out whatever shadow monster lord for you! You can count on us!"

Turkin Han had no idea what they meant by the bringer of justice.

However, he roughly understood the meaning of what Wei Yan Er tried to tell him. He laughed out loud and said, "Little girl, did you read too many fairy tales before bedtime! It's not that easy to be a shadow demon slayer! You better go home now!"

"General, please tell us the situation about this Shadow Demon king! We would like to know!" Everyone had joined in to convince the general.

"Alright!" Turkin Han nodded and said, "It's too dangerous to travel across this land now. I should the situation to you to prevent you guys from throwing your lives away!"

He closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He seemed to be recollecting his thoughts. Then he said, "The Shadow Demon Lord is the embodiment of evil. He is terrifyingly powerful. 70,000 years ago, he built an invincible army and wiped out the world!"

"By the end of it, a Wizard wearing a white robe called Saruman sacrificed himself and forged The One Ring from the lava of the Sunfall Volcano! That ring could greatly weaken the power of the Shadow Demon Lord. Finally, the ancient ones were able to slay the Shadow Demon Lord with the aid of the ring and bury the entire army of the Shadow Demon Lord underneath the ground so deep, that no one could ever find it anymore!"

"However, Sauron is the embodiment of evil, afterall. As long as there is evil in the world, he can resurrect repeatedly, as many times as he wants to! After 10,000 years of resting in the dark, he would bring forth his large army and march across the land once again. Well, he would be slain every time he comes back! Now, Sauron is about to be resurrected for the 7th time. His army of darkness has emerged from the darkness. They are ready to serve their master and destroy their master's enemies! The only way of subduing the Shadow Demon Lord is to use The One Ring! The One Ring is supposed to be under the possession of Rogue, the White Wizard. However, his apprentice Malindor has joined the dark force! He stole The One Ring and he is on his way to the Sunset Volcano as we speak!"

"The One Ring is forged from the lava of the Sunset Volcano. The only

way of destroying the ring is to use the lava of the same volcano! When the only weapon that can subdue the power of the Shadow Demon Lord has been destroyed, there will be no one left, able to stand up against Sauron! The entire world will tremble under his shadow!"

Wei Yan Er immediately jumped up and said, "Just let us handle this Shadow Demon Lord for you!"

Turkin Han shook his head and smiled bitterly, then he said, "Little girl, the Shadow Demon Lord is much more terrifying than you can ever imagine! However, if you really want to do something about it, you should just kill Malindor the traitor and bring The One Ring back!"

'Ding!, General Turkin Han has given you a quest: Getting Back The One Ring! Will you accept it?'

After wasting so much saliva, they had finally received the continuation of their previous quest!

Everyone accepted the quest. Since that Turkin Han had no interest in 'entertaining' them anymore, Zhang Yang and his gang left the valley. They summoned their Flying Mount and flew back into the sky.

[Getting Back The One Ring] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: Malindor is taking The One Ring to the Sunset Volcano. If you cannot kill him and take back The One Ring before he arrives at the Sunset Volcano, you will fail the quest. Please be aware that the army of darkness that Sauron commands will not stand by and let you take The One Ring back just like that! This is a quest that has to be completed within a limited time frame. You can check the location of Malindor by looking at the large map.

Completion: Get back The One Ring and hand it back to General Turkin Han 0/1

Upon bringing up the map, everyone could see a small red dot on each of their own map. The red dot was located right in the middle of their location and the location of the Sunset Volcano. It seemed that Malindor was already halfway to the Sunset Volcano!

"Let's hustle up, then!"

Everyone rushed on, atop their Flying Mounts. Fortunately, even though they had not reached the Level Requirement of the map, they were at least Level 140. Zhang Yang was already Level 144. Furthermore, they were flying across the sky. It would be unlikely for them to run into monsters.

They only ran into some Level 170 flying monsters once in every blue moon. However, those Normal Tier monsters were taken out by Zhang Yang and his gang without much of a problem. Upon flying on at an insane speed for over 30 minutes, they finally managed to cut off Malindor on a pathway by one of the mountains.

However, Malindor was not alone out there. He was protected and escorted by a bunch of guards, riding on wolves. Though there were only about 10 of them, every one of them was an Elite Tier monster!

[Malindor's Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 155

HP: 4,650,000

Defense: 6,200

Melee Attack: 40,070 - 50,070

Skills:

[Net]: Throws a metallic net to trap the target, immobilizing the target for 10 seconds. If the target is a flying unit, the target will descent onto the ground. Range: 30 meters.

[Strong Penetration]: Heavily impales the target and cause 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. If the target receives this attack when the target is stunned, the damage caused by this Skill will increase by another 100%.

[Charge]: Charges into the target at an extremely high speed, stunning the target for 1 second. Aggro value will be reduced to zero. Range: 3 - 10 meters.

Note: A member of the army of darkness that Sauron commands. They

are now escorting Malindor to destroy The One Ring.

"Protect Mr. Malindor!" These guards were not acting like regular monsters that would get triggered by the aggro. Instead of charging at Zhang Yang and his gang, they pulled out their weapons while surrounding a young man clad in a grey robe. They seemed to be trying to protect him.

[Malindor, Magic Apprentice] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 153

HP: 81,720

Defense: 4,020

Magic Attack: 11,545 – 17,545

Skills:

[Fire Ball]: Throws a fire ball at the target and cause 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target.

Note: Malindor was born in a poor family. His parents had passed away since he was small. He was raised by his sister alone. However, when he was 12 years old, his sister was abducted by a rich old man and she was forced to be his slave. Malindor almost died because he was beaten up trying to resist. Fortunately, he survived because Rogue saved his life. Malindor had planned to become a Grand Magus so that he could go back and rescue his sister. However, he was lack of the gift to master magic. Hence, under the seduction of the dark force, he chose to stand on the side of Sauron.

"... this is what we call, 'misgovernment makes the people rebel', right? Haih..." everyone sighed heavily when they found out what happened to Malindor.

However, a virtual story would always be fake. Although there might be a similar tragedy happening somewhere on earth, completing the quest would be their uttermost important task right now!

"Kill!"

Zhang Yang and his gang descended to the ground, and a chaotic melee ensued.

Chapter 679: The Dark Rider

As usual, Zhang Yang was at the head of his gang. Right before he stepped foot onto the ground, his Phoenix pet had already opened up its mouth, spitting out a stream of blazing flames! The flames caused impressive damage values to the monsters.

However, these wolf guards had the ability to throw nets at players. They were throwing nets at Zhang Yang and his gang without stopping. The Flying Mounts were falling onto the ground one after another after being entangled in the nets. Even the legendary beast Phoenix pet could not escape such fate! Fortunately, they were just trapped. The nets did not affect their assaults at all.

However, it was not a pleasant experience to be trapped! Zhang Yang immediately leaped down from the back of Phoenix pet. Well, he had the Skill called 'Beast Taming' after all. His pet mount would not disappear even after he is separated from his pet mount.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang clashed straight into the center of the horde and whirled his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Even without his Transformation Skill activated, his Attack power was still as deadly as hell! Furthermore, Zhang Yang was well known to infuse his 'Supporting Attack' into his attacks while he was battling against his enemies. He broke the monsters, one after another like they were made of thin paper!

After he managed to lure the monsters' attention to him, the rest of his gang began to unleash everything they had. AoE Skills were spammed over and over again by each of them. The HP bars of the monsters were reducing steeply. That really showed them how powerful the entire party was.

However, the Elite Tier monsters on this map were not comparable to those Elite Tier monsters in the previous maps that they had encountered before. The Attack power of these monsters were as powerful as the Attack power of a Mythical Tier boss! Even Zhang Yang would frown in

misery as tens of these monsters could round up on him and beat him up.

Fortunately, these monsters were not on the same level as a boss after all. Any Status Restriction Skills were still effective. Zhang Yang only had to use his {Thunder Strike} in order to slow down the monsters' Movement Speed and restrict their movements. However, these wolf guards were not easy to take on either. Their [Net] could also restrict the players' movement. It would basically stop players from moving at all! Zhang Yang had to take his [Mobility Potion] to regain his movement again before he could make another move on the monsters.

However, the wolf guards also had {Charge}. They would randomly seek for one of the targets within range, and charge at the target. By doing so, their aggro values would be cleared out, completely. In other words, Zhang Yang would have to lure the monsters over to him again. Meanwhile, right after the aggro list of the monsters was cleared out completely, the monsters would immediately activate their {Strong Penetration,} causing a damage that would be 2 times higher than the damage they could cause with their normal attacks. Their Basic Attacks had reached up to 90,000 damage. They could still cause approximately 60,000 damage to Zhang Yang, even though Zhang Yang had Damage Immunity and other attributes!

If tens of these wolf guards could activate their {Strong Penetration} on Zhang Yang at the same time, Zhang Yang's *ss would definitely be penetrated if he was not mounted on his pet mount!

The cooldown for {Charge} was the same as the cooldown for {Strong Penetration}. The monsters would use their {Strong Penetration} right after they used their {Charge}. Furthermore, the cooldowns for the two Skills were only 30 seconds. It could prove be fatal to take the explosive attack that could happen once in every half a minute head on!

Even Zhang Yang could not afford to be careless at that point. He had all his life-saving Skills on standby. He wanted to avoid any of his party members from being killed.

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang pulled Fantasy Sweetheart over to his side. That pretty little lady with two huge tits was almost hit by 5 monsters with their {Charge} at the same time. If Zhang Yang was just one split-second later, Fantasy Sweetheart's tits would have been crushed to jelly.

"Thank you, guildmaster!" Fantasy Sweetheart was speaking rather shyly. Well, that was her personality after all.

Zhang Yang replied her with a simple 'Hmm' and he continued to swing his [Sword of Purging Devourer] around. He activated his {Blast Wave} and stunned most of the monsters in front of them. He was working on luring the monsters over to him once more.

These monsters were really causing them a great deal of trouble. No wonder the quest was ranked as a Rank-A quest!

Well, Elite Tier monsters were merely Elite Tier after all. They only had a limited amount of HP. Furthermore, they did not receive any HP recovery support. Hence, the monsters began to die, one after another under the oppressive attacks of the gang. The guards that were protecting Malindor was getting lesser by the second! After killing the last guard by his side, Malindor became the last man standing in front of Zhang Yang and his gang.

Compared to his guards, Malindor was so much weaker than them. He was only a Normal Tier monster. Normal attacks would be more than enough to take him out.

"Master Sauron's plan must not be ruined by anyone! Especially by the likes of you!" A low pitch voice rumbled across the surroundings. When Zhang Yang and his gang turned around to look, all they could see was a skeletal horse racing towards them. There was a warrior wearing a full black set of battle armor sitting right on top of the horse. There was no way to differentiate which race the warrior belonged to. His body looked like he was in his prime.

[The Dark Rider, Sauron's Servant] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 160

HP: 10,000,000,000

Defense: 1,000,000

Magic Defense: 1,000,000

Melee Attack: 42,892 – 52,898

Skills:

[The Dark Rider's Kiss] Gives the target a fatal blow. If the target is hit, the target will die immediately, allowing The Dark Rider to recover 10% of his HP. If the Skill misses, The Dark Rider will be devoured by the force of darkness instead and lose 1% of his HP. Chanting time: 1 second. Range: 5 meters.

Note: The Dark Rider is one of the bodyguards of Sauron himself. There were nine of them in total. Every time Sauron is resurrected, they will rise from the depth of the death abyss and resurface to serve their master.

"F*ck this sh*t! Is this still considered an Elite Tier monster? That's 10,000,000,000 HP! Are you kidding me?!" Fatty Han screamed like a sissy girl.

"If the monster only has 10,000,000,000 HP, we can still take it down without much of a problem. Look at his Defence! That's a total of 1,000,000 Defence, 1,000,000 Magic Defence! Is this some kind of sick joke? How are we going to defeat that thing!?"

"Only noob tank and sister Sun can hurt that monster, because only both of them have {Eagle Eye}!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "We don't have to slay the monster! We just have to slowly make the monster kill himself! Look at his Skill. When any one of you gets locked on with {The Dark Rider's Kiss}, just immediately run 5 meters away from the monster. The monster will cause damage to himself and lose 1% of his HP! We just have to repeat the process for 100 times before he dies!"

"However, it's not easy at all to run 5 meters away from the monsters in 1 second!"

"Yes, that's why the quest is a Rank-A quest!"

Zhang Yang glanced at Malindor and said, "Daffodil, just kill Malindor instantly and get our quest done!"

"Roger!"

While they were talking to each other, The Dark Rider had arrived before them. Because the monster had overly high Defence and Magic Defence, the gang had no other way but to make the monster kill himself slowly. The monster came to Han Ying Xue and marked her as his first target. With the long sword of his arm raised high in the air, A chilly radiance flashed across the monster and a progress bar suddenly appeared right beneath the head of The Dark Rider! The progress bar was filling up fast!

{The Dark Rider's Kill}!

As everyone had no idea how the sign would look like right before the Skill is activated, and the witchy Snow could not react in time. When she began to move away on her mount, the progress bar on The Dark Rider had filled up by 70%! Although the movement speed of a Flying Mount was extremely quick, it would only require one brief moment for the Flying Mount to get a starting step before it gains speed on moving around. Hence, the movement speed of the Flying Mount was not fast to begin with! So it was impossible for anyone to avoid the monster's strike!

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang quickly pulled Han Ying Xue to her side. By doing so, he managed to get Han Ying Xue out of the way of the attack! Coincidentally, the cooldown for Zhang Yang's {Lure} was over.

‘-10,000,0000!’

With The Dark Rider hitting nothing but air, a huge damage value popped up right on top of his head! The monster started to do a number to itself!

Daffodil Daydream began to pursue Malindor closely to prevent him from getting away. She was a ranged player. She threw out a {Fire Ball}

swiftly at Malindor, without any hesitation. With her current Attack power, she only needed to strike Malindor twice with her attacks.

The moment the {Fire Ball} hit Malindor, the attack was nullified by a transparent barrier that shielded him. Instead of torching him, the fireball spread across the barrier and into the surroundings without touching Malindor at all!

Ineffective! It was as if Malindor had just activated an Invincibility Effect on himself!

Malindor only had one Skill on him, {Fire Ball}. He did not have any Skills that could grant him Invincibility Effect. So, he must have activated some sort of item or accessory.

--- The One Ring!

The entire body of Malindor was beginning to fade, as if he was activating a Skill similar to the Thief's Skill {Stealth}! Then, he vanished without a trace!

It was the ability of The One Ring, again!

"You shall not hurt My Lord's guest!" The Dark Rider let out an intimidating roar and charged towards Daffodil Daydream. The horse was moving eerily fast! In one split second, the horse had arrived right behind Daffodil Daydream! The blade struck out again as The Dark Rider was activating his {The Dark Rider's Kiss}.

{Apparate}!

Daffodil Daydream instantly moved away from where she stood. She activated the one special Skill that Spellcasters could use. She moved 10 meters forward and got herself out of the effective range of the monster's attack range.

‘-10,000,0000!’

The monster had once again hurt himself and caused an immense damage to himself. The Dark Rider roared again and pulled his horse up. The horse also neighed clearly. Then it began to charge towards Zhang

Yang. The monster once again struck out his blade!

It was another {The Dark Rider's Kiss}!

Zhang Yang patted his Phoenix pet immediately, the Phoenix pet fluttered its wings and began to move. Although they only had 1 second to get away, as long as the reaction is fast enough, anyone could get out of the effective range of The Dark Rider's attacks without using Skills like {Apparate} or {Tumble}.

'-10,000,0000!'

"The Dark Lord shall rise again! The living shall tremble before the dominion of the Dark Lord! Do not resist! Rest for eternity, in the arms of death!" The Dark Rider continued to shake the air and the surroundings with his voice, while he was whirling his blades aggressively. Although his normal attacks could not instantly kill anyone, players would still feel the pain after being attacked for multiple times. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to activate their Healing Skills whenever they were able to trying to maintain everyone's HP bar at maximum.

Malindor had vanished without a trace. So, everyone focused their attention towards the monster.

All 10 of them were high Tier players. Everyone was acting carefully to avoid the assaults from The Dark Rider. None of the {The Dark Rider's Kiss} had succeeded in landing on any of them. The long HP bar reduced steeply every time The Dark Rider missed. The rate of The Dark Rider activating his Ultimate Skill was not fixed, at all. Sometime, the monster would have activated it after 5 seconds. However, sometimes, the monster would only use his Ultimate Skill after waiting for over 20 seconds.

So, the monster would on average, activate his {The Dark Rider's Kiss} once every 10 seconds. 16 minutes later, the monsters only had over 3% HP left. Victory was within grasp!

Everyone did not lower down their guards at all. Upon activating 3 more {The Dark Rider's Kiss}, The Dark Rider with enormously long HP bar finally collapsed heavily onto the ground and died. Unfortunately, the Experience Points they earned by killing the monster was not

1,000,000,000 Experience Points. Instead, they only acquired 400,000 Experience Points!

Well, that should make sense at least. After all, they did not really kill the monster all by themselves. They were only making the monster kill himself without expending much effort, to be honest. So they should not have too much expectations towards the reward, from the beginning.

Upon bringing up the map, they saw that the red dot that represented Malindor had traveled quite some distance away. The gang quickly hopped onto their Flying Mounts and flew towards the direction of Malindor.

Half an hour later, they caught up to Malindor. When the Magic Apprentice saw Zhang Yang and his gang, he was shocked and angry at the same time. Then, he hustled himself forward without having the intention of stopping.

"You shall not hurt our Dark Lord's guest!" Another Dark Rider appeared from afar, charging straight towards Zhang Yang and his gang. With a swing of his hand, Zhang Yang and his gang were pulled down to the ground. Then the monster began to attack them aggressively.

Meanwhile, Malindor had vanished without a trace once again!

"What the f*ck! Not again!" Fatty Han sighed heavily. "My hunch is telling me that the same thing would repeat itself the next time we catch up again!"

"There are a total of 9 Dark Riders. So there's no surprise that we need to take them all out before we can get The One Ring!"

"This is outrageous! F*ck!"

Everyone sighed miserably as they got themselves ready for another 'hide and seek' battle.

Fortunately, everyone had enough experience of dealing with this kind of crap after their first encounter with a Dark Rider. They could survive the onslaught of the monster at the least, now. After the repetitive 'hide and seek' game over 17 minutes, the second Dark Rider had also died of 'suicide'.

They went on to pursue Malindor, based on the map. As expected. Whenever they caught up with Malindor, there would be a new Dark Rider cutting in between the gang and Malindor. Upon repeating the same process over approximately 6 hours, Zhang Yang and his gang finally took out the ninth Dark Rider. They finally caught up to Malindor for the tenth time!

Chapter 680: The One Ring

"Malindor!" Zhang Yang roared and dove downward. He jumped off the fiery bird before the Phoenix could reach ground level. He sustained a little fall damage but got up and immediately grab Malindo's shoulder. "You were once a human like us all! Do you wish for the fall of the earth?! Do you wish for all that is living to fall to evil!?"

"What do you know!? I'm doing this for my sister!" Malindor snarled at Zhang Yang. The ring in his finger gleam with a bright radiance.

The ring was so weak in battle, yet it possessed powerful protection powers. The attack that should have killed Malindor had failed to do so, for he had used The One Ring. Even if the Dark Riders does not make an appearance, it would be hard to even kill Malindor alone.

"You would allow the Darkness to swallow earth. This is the price you would willing to pay? Just to save your sister?! If you have even the slightest decency in your soul, you would know that it is wrong! Your sister would be greatly disappointed in you!" Zhang Yang continued trying to wake him up. "The needs of the many is far greater than the needs of you! Do you wish to let your sister see her one brother becoming a demon!?"

"Woah. Zhang Yang might have the potential for Hollywood. He's got them gifts, yo!" cried Fatty Han.

Malindo staggered a little. The ring in his fingers started to dim down a little.

Zhang Yang took this chance to attack. He commanded the Phoenix to attack and dealt 92,122 damage to Malindor, instantly killing him.

Everyone sighed with intense relief. Malindor was extremely difficult to defeat. If Zhang Yang had not tried to use words to sway him, Malindor might have just used The One Ring and escaped!

"URGH! ARGH! ARRRRGHHH!" When Zhang Yang thought it was over, Malindor's body jerked. Whether he was dead or not, his eyes flung open and glowed. Dark light blasted out of his eye sockets as he screamed in

horror. Dark smoke gushed out of his mouth and solidified into a humanoid outline. It shared the same appearance as Malindor and was equipped with razor sharp nails.

[Malindor's Vengeful Spirit] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 155

HP: 4,650,000

Defense: 6,280

Melee Attack: 40,070 – 50,070

Skills:

[Echo Scream]: Howls and deals 100% melee physical damage to all targets within an area in front of the caster.

Note: Malindor was unable to rest in peace, as he was unable to let go of her sister.

Once the Vengeful Spirit formed, it lunged itself at Zhang Yang at a sonic speed.

"Malindor! I'd promise you! I will save your sister! In the name of Queen Serena, I will make sure that she will live a happy life!" Zhang Yang roared as he lifted his shield to block his attack.

"Lies...You...lie...Cannot believe...Empty...promise..." Malindor's mouth was not moving, yet his demonic voice could be heard echoing through the place.

"Little Yang, waste no time. Kill him again." Fatty Han drew his arrow back and shot the spirit, dealing powerful damage despite having high Defense. Everyone else joined in the attack and quickly attacked the spirit until it was almost dying.

"STOP!" Zhang Yang shouted and stopped everyone else from attacking the near-dead Vengeful Spirit.

"Look at this! If we want to kill you, we can do it easily! I understand you. Trust me. I do. We understand your pain. We can kill you and end this

fight right here, right now! But we choose to understand, to empathize you! I-No! We give you our word. We will save your sister!"

Malindor's Vengeful Spirit staggered. Right then, he knew that the party had the ability to finish him off easily and erase his existence. He could no longer lie to himself and chose to surrender. "Believe...you. Sister...love...so much..."

"Rest in peace. Your sister will be saved. I promise."

"Promise..."

'Ding! Malindor' Vengeful Spirit has a quest for you: Save my sister! Will you accept it?'

Everyone accepted the quest and nodded at Malindor.

The black clouds on Malindor's Vengeful Spirit started to glow brightly with a warm yellow light. The malicious spirit in his soul was cleansed and turned the adult, hostile being into a young boy. Malindor smiled innocently in his white spirit form and slowly floated to the sky before scattering into particles.

Malindor turned into a Spectre for he was unable to let go of the will to save his sister. Now that he was able to entrust the mission to Zhang Yang, Malindor had set himself free and was able to release himself and depart for the afterlife.

"The RING! THE RING! I bet it's a Celestial tier!" Wei Yan Er jumped at Malindor's dead body once the spirit had disappeared. Malindor's defeat had given the party only one drop, which was a deep crimson ring that ended up in Wei Yan Er's possession.

[The One Ring] (Quest Item)

Description: Forged in the fires of Sunfall Volcano. Possesses absolute power over evil.

The little girl was astonished. The ring was not an equipment!

'Ding! The Shadow Demon Sauron has found the ring in your possession. He has dispatched a large force to reclaim the ring! Make your

way back to General Turkin Han with haste, for the war will soon erupt!

Everyone in the party received the system notification.

"Well. Let's go, then." Zhang Yang jumped on his Phoenix pet and soared to the sky with haste. Everyone else followed speedily and followed Zhang Yang back to Hannier Valley. In just 2 hours, Zhang Yang and the party had arrived and they spoke to General Turkin Han.

"I had doubts that you cannot make it back alive! Hah! You have proven me wrong! Well done, brave ones!" General Turkin Han was surprised when Wei Yan Er handed over the ring to him and praised the entire party.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Fight for The One Ring! Obtained 20,000,000 experience points!'

Even though the quest nor the boss fight had any equipment rewards, 20 million experience points made it all rather worthwhile.

"The Shadow Demon Sauron will send a large army to have this ring back," said Turkin Han. "Hm. In that case, the defenses of Sauron's lair will be left bare! Brave adventurers, I plead to you all. For all the beings that live and breathe, please take the ring with you and defeat the Shadow Demon at his own lair! Defeat him and cast all of his evil followers into the abyss!"

'Ding! General Turkin Han has a quest for you: Strike the Heart. Will you accept it?'

Accept!

'Ding! You have received an item: The One Ring!'

After everyone accepted the quest, Zhang Yang, as the party leader took the ring from General Turkin Han. At then, The One Ring's true powers was revealed to the world.

[The One Ring] (Celestial, Ring)

Vitality: +30876

Strength: +3889

Dexterity: +3889

Intelligence: +3889

Spirit: +3889

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 3,374 damage on attack.

Use: Nullifies certain power of the Shadow Demon Sauron. Cooldown: 60 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

Level Requirement: 300

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 300 Levels.

Note: The One Ring will only be active in the Castle of Sauron. It will disappear from the world after the Shadow Demon is defeated.

A real Celestial tier equipment!

Even Zhang Yang, a man that came from the future, had never laid eyes on a real Celestial tier equipment!

The ring was extremely beautiful for its glow radiant with everchanging colors of the rainbow.

"Argh! Too bad the ring can only be used in Sauron's Castle!"

"And it will be deleted after the quest ends!"

Everyone was saddened by the fact. As a result, they took turns equipping the ring just to get a chance of it.

"Hehe! Noob tank! This ring belongs to me now!" Once Wei Yan Er got hold of the ring, she ran away and put up a defensive guard.

Fatty Han laughed manically for a while and said, "Little Yan Er, the ring cannot simply be taken like that? Are you trying to upgrade yourself from an aunt to a wife?"

"Pfft! Eat dirt!" Han Ying Xue stabbed Fatty Han with her blunt staff.

Zhang Yang was fine with Wei Yan Er holding the ring. Since the ring was just a tool, it would not have a long-lasting effect. In fact, based on the

ring's description, the strongest aspect of the ring was the HP boost. Without {Vitality Aura} Zhang Yang would have 35,498 Vitality point. The ring's Vitality boost was extremely high! However, the Strength value was not as strong as everyone thinks it would be. Without {Strength Aura}, Zhang Yang would only have 10,319. It is true that the ring could boost Zhang Yang's damage by a notch. but not to an overwhelming extent. Whoever holding the ring would only contribute to the overall party DPS. He would only need to control the aggro, and he was good at it.

Hence, after equipping the ring, the little brat had gained a massive boost to her HP. Her attack was raised up to be on par with Zhang Yang. However, despite both of them dealing the same amount of damage, Zhang Yang had the tanker additional aggro generation skill, hence, he was not afraid of the little girl going OT on him during a boss fight.

While others would also have liked have to have the "feel" of using a Celestial tier equipment during a boss fight, they had failed to win over little Yan Er's heart.

"Little brat, I'm fine with you taking the ring SELFISHLY, but don't forget to use the ring's special effect. Even though it is unknown, based on the lore and the description, it will be important to decide our victory during the boss fight!" said Zhang Yang. He was really afraid that the little brat might get over her head during the battle and forget to use the ring's effect.

"Relax...Chill!" said Wei Yan Er as she patted her chest with confidence. Han Ying Xue had taken the chance and startled the little girl by rubbing her chest and said, "Tch...I thought I saw some curves there. My mistake, it's still as flat as an ironing board."

The little girl was infuriated and started twisting and kneading at Han Ying Xue's chest forcefully. Naturally, while Han Ying Xue was fighting off the little girl, Fatty Han, Lost Dream, and Endless Starlight were rooting for Wei Yan Er.

General Turkin Han gave Zhang Yang a piece of leather skin map which displayed a long pathway that was a detour that had lengthened the

journey to Sauron's Castle. However, as he had mentioned earlier, the pathway was meant to be longer for it was an alternate pathway that could help the party to completely avoid the army of Sauron.

"Brave ones, I wish you good luck! May the Goddess of War favor you all! With our current battle strength, we are completely outmatched by 1000 to 1. However, that doesn't mean that we would not fight. We will stand ground and fight to buy you some time. Once the Shadow Demon is killed, all of his followers will be sent back to the abyss. The world will be saved only if you can kill the heart of evil!" General Turkin Han saluted.

Zhang Yang saluted back. The party then took off to the sky with their mount and continued their journey to kill the demon.

According to General Turkin Han's explanation, the army of Sauron would have flying units patrolling in the sky, including Wyverns. Hence, Zhang Yang and his party would have to avoid using the main pathway of the castle to avoid being detected. If they are found, they would be forced to fight on land by the dragons and would be killed by the overwhelming numbers of soldiers.

"Say...even monsters would have flying mounts. Why didn't Malindor just get himself straight to Sunfall Volcano by flying straight there? Wouldn't it be easier and fast!?" said Endless Starlight as he discovered the massive plot hole.

"...Well, there had to be some stories and dramas...opportunities for us to get quests..."

"Yeah! If the enemy is so smart, all the main characters in the story would not even survive for a single day!"

"Then again, since The One Ring have such a powerful anti-evil energy thingy, the Wyvern might have reacted badly when the ring is close to him!"

"...In that case, he could have just rented the Griffon taxi service!"

"..."

"Are you done talking c*ck?"

Chapter 681: Sauron's Castle

Sauron's castle was located at the center of Mar Gaia Forest. Be it from any direction, it was the same distance from any direction in the thick forest. It was both easy to move around, and hence was one of the major factors of any Territory which made it easier to defend. (1)

The little party flew for 2 hours before they approached the castle. From afar, they could already see the silhouette of the castle. Zhang Yang could roughly guess from the sheer size of it, that it was at least 10 times the size of Morning Town. The castle walls were thick and tall. There were many magic cannons situated on top and around the castle. Inside the castle compound were tall buildings that were built extremely close to each other. However, despite the congested towering structure, there one tower that stood tall, overshadowing all other structures. Located dead center was a towering structure that had to be at least 300 meters tall. On the top of the tower, the single shaft of the tower split into two like a fork, and there was a large magical black orb that hovered between the forks.

Zhang Yang scoffed. That would obviously be the Shadow Demon Sauron.

Sauron had only managed to resurrect his one eye. However, according to General Turkin Han's explanation, the Shadow Demon will have the rest of his anatomy follow, soon after. If that is to happen, darkness shall envelop the earth. Rains of blood and fire shall befall and all that live and breathe shall cease to be.

Zhang Yang led the entire party and tried to infiltrate the fortress through the airspace. However, once they were close to the castle wall, the giant orb opened its eye lid and revealed its burning fiery red pupil to the world. With one quick beam of light, the entire party, including Zhang Yang was killed.

[Eye of Absolute Obliteration]: Blasts a death ray and deals 200,000 damage to all targets within 30 meters around. If the target is far away, damage will be increased by 100% every 10 meters. Longest Range: 10

kilometers. Unable to attack targets at ground level.

The eye of Sauron had 10 kilometers range of attack, that would mean that its aggro range was also 10 kilometers long. The airspace was completely sealed off as a death zone. If either one of them tries to fly, it would be an instant death. The only way to enter the castle was to knock on the doors!

Everyone revived and got on their battle mounts. However, instead of flying, they rode the mount and galloped across the ground. Even though they were now free from that laser beam of death, the magic cannons on the castle would still be able to bombard them.

Pew!

A bright beam blasted off the cannons and created a small crater at the point of attack. Lost Dream and Hundred Shots had taken exactly 200,000 damage. When the attack struck, the party happened to be spread out. Hence, the cannons' small radius of attack had only managed to hit two of them. Fantasy Sweetheart and Han Ying Xue quickly got to work and healed the two of them back.

Pew! Pew!

Two more cannons blasted and attacked the party once more. Small craters started to form all around the battlefield, and Fatty Han nearly fell into one of them.

Zhang Yang immediately activated {Vanguard's Aggression} to protect everyone and headed towards the castle wall. When {Vanguard's Aggression} ended, Endless Starlight cast the same spell and protected everyone. Two skills, 20 seconds, should be enough for their mounts to travel as far as 1 kilometer, however, since they were not flying but galloping, their speed was not too fast. Hence, they merely traveled close to 500 meters.

Since the magic cannons had a range of 300 meters, by the time Endless Starlight's {Vanguard's Aggression} ended, everyone had managed to get cover behind the blind spot of the cannons.

Now that they had arrived at the enemy's front line, the defenders started to retaliate. The large stone slabs opened up and a sea of monsters rushed out. Amongst the monsters, there were orcs. However, unlike the Red-Skinned orcs and the Green-Skinned orcs, the orcs inside Sauron's Castle were deep, mud-like green.

[Demonic Orcs] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 160

HP: 104,440

Defense: 4,260

Melee: 20,992 – 30,992

Skills:

[Instant Rage]: Increases attack power by 20% for 15 seconds.

Note: Created by merging the life of orcs and treants. By trading off their Intelligence, they possess powerful fighting capabilities.

Fatty Han raised an eyebrow and asked, "How did an orc and a treant merge?"

"...Do you really want to know?"

"Urr...Perhaps not. Not even if you pay me."

"Kill!" The Demonic Orcs wielded many different types of weapon. They had long swords, clubs, pike, spear, and even something as oddly shaped as a broken limb of another orc! However, they seemed not to care of their weapons as the red glow in their eyes burnt with a berserked rage and a lust for battle!

"Fufu! What maniac!" cried Zhang Yang as he swung his sword vertically and dealt over 80,000 damage. With a little Rage points gained, Zhang Yang cast {Blast Wave}.

WHAM! WHAM!

'-29,410!'

One cone shaped wave of compressed air blasted out and dealt damage

to more than 10 monsters. The sword procced and repeated the attack once more. Seeing that only one additional blast was created, Zhang Yang sighed heavily. If the sword's Echo effect had not been nerfed so greatly, Zhang Yang's single blast of {Blast Wave} could have procced over and over again until 30% of the monster's HP are gone before stopping.

But then again...It was for the best. Zhang Yang could not bear to think that if a similar weapon with a similar effect existed somewhere else in the world. It would be extremely broken!

However! A stronger "broken" killer machine had just arrived! The Phoenix drew in a deep breath and blasted out a 20 meters long flame that dealt more than 80,000 damage to all monsters that was in front of it. In that situation, the Phoenix was definitely much stronger than anyone around!

Die! Die! Die!

The Demonic Orcs only had 100,000 HP. With the combined power of Zhang Yang AoE attacks and the Phoenix's normal attacks, the monsters were killed almost instantly! Hmph, as expected of normal tier monsters, they did not stand a chance against the Phoenix! Come one come one million, they would all face the same fate!

And that was just one! Fatty Han's Phoenix was much stronger! Fatty Han had positioned his Phoenix right next to Zhang Yang's, allowing the two birds to cover most of the frontal attack position. With both Phoenixes attack simultaneously, no monster could get close to them without dying. While the rest could only land one to two hits, more than a hundred orcs would have already died.

"Nice! Farming experience points had never been so easy!" said Fatty Han happily.

"Fatty bro is so strong~ I'll leave myself in your care~~" Endless Starlight posed as a girl and tried to catwalk towards Fatty Han.

After acquiring the Phoenix, Fatty Han's leveling speed had skyrocketed to a point where he could be faster than Sun Xin Yu if he does not slack off like a pig! Zhang Yang had always lectured him about it, yet Fatty Han

felt no need of being the highest level. As long as he is the same as the average level of players in the core party member, he would not spend extra time to grind.

"F*ck off! If I were to take care of someone, I would have asked for Little Sweetheart there!"

When Fantasy Sweetheart heard Fatty Han's sudden confession, she blushed madly and said, "I'm so sorry Fatty bro. I...I...I've already have someone I like."

While they were joking around nonchalantly, the party had made their way into the castle walls and proceeded to kill their way towards the tower. Out of the corner, a mysterious figure flashed across the street. Zhang Yang reaction was fast. Much faster than average humans around. With quick reflexes, the shadowy figure glided through the floor and struck Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang already had his shield ready and the sudden attack struck his shield.

PANG!

Based on the sound of the metal, Zhang Yang felt it was something light and flat, yet possessed such a powerful force that he was pushed a few steps back. He lowered his shield and saw the weapon that had attacked him was a long swirly whip.

The whip flashed around in the air before returning to the hands of the owner. The figure walked out of the shadows and revealed itself to be a slender woman tightly wrapped in leopard-skinned tights. She was a beautiful elf with skin as fair as snow. Her eyes were radiating with life and her long, emerald green hair swayed like the whip itself. The tight leopard skin tights were so tight that it squeezed her chest upward. Every step she took sent the upper portions of it jiggling!

[Anita – The Light of Stars] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 160

HP: 160,000,000

Defense: 10,490

Melee Attack: 80,772 – 100,772

Skills:

[Iron Whip]: Strike hard and fast, dealing 150% melee physical attack to a target.

[Shadow Whip]: Flash the whip at super-sonic speed, dealing 100% melee physical attack to all targets within 30 meters. Knockback.

Note: Once a brave fighter of the Elves. Possessed and subdued by the power of Sauron and became a faithful follower.

"Phew~" Fatty Han whistled. "That's one smexy elven chick right there! How could I lay a hand on her!" said Fatty Han as he stared at the boss' perky bouncing while drooling like a deranged dog.

"Fatty bro...When you say you can't lay on her. Could it be that your little wee wee has failed you!?" Endless Starlight pretended to gasp.

"...Ask Xiao Wei about it then. Or better yet, ask your mom!"

By then, everyone level and equipment tier were not the same when they initially fought the first Inheritance quest boss. They were, in fact, far stronger than before. Plus, even Mythical tier bosses were nothing but scraps for the party! Though Anita may have strong attacks, she lacked the one skill that made any boss a tough fight. That is, the HP recovery skill.

Since the aggro was already on him, Zhang Yang picked up his sword and charged towards the boss on the back of the Phoenix. The first attack that landed on the boss was the {Spear of Obliteration}. It was to build more damage based aggro.

"Little Yang, do we need to activate any Transformations?" said Fatty Han.

"Nope. Not needed really. This boss is not that strong anyway. We can still kill it easily. Reserve the Transformation skill for the final boss. Who knows how strong would he be!"

"There's no need to think about the future, for all of you will die here!" Anita voice rang like a train horn. True to her race and appearance, she

moved at such speed that perhaps, only Zhang Yang could follow. She jumped into the air and lash out her whip, binding Zhang Yang's throat tight like a viper's talon.

"URGH!"

Zhang Yang had used {Block} earlier from the first attack and could not block the incoming attack. The whip wrapped around his neck so tightly that he could not breathe for a second. Luckily, when she attempted to choke Zhang Yang, he was smart enough to rush over to her side to loosen the tension of the whip. When the whip was loosened off, a deep red mark was imprinted on his neckline. Such an attack had caused Zhang Yang difficulty in breathing! Not to mention the loss of the ability to consume potions.

Although the attack was not a skill, it does carry an additional effect. For example, attacks that hit a player's eyes could cause temporary blindness and the inability to lock on to a target. Asphyxiation would cause temporary immobility. There were various effects that would not cause damage but would greatly inconvenience players.

Luckily for Zhang Yang, he does not need to consume any potion! For he has the great Milkmaid Deity around to heal him with her "milk"! All he had to do in the fight was to maintain his attacks and keep the boss to himself.

Everyone else surrounded the boss in all directions and landed earth, fire, and storm-like attacks.

Anita remained unfazed and smirked coldly. With a quick swing of her whip, her hands made movements that was unlike what anyone had seen before. Everyone was instantly blown away.

Zhang Yang held his shield up high despite {Block} still being on cooldown. He knew that the attack was the {Shadow Whip} that deals AoE attacks and knockback effects.

Zhang Yang jumped off the Phoenix and activated {Charge} right at the moment when his foot touched the ground. With incredible speed, Zhang Yang glided across the floor and struck the boss.

"Your fight will be for naught! Master shall return to walk on this world soon. Everything that exists shall be his to rule!" Anita's eyes turned cold. Her face stiffens as it slowly became devoid of emotions. Her whip lashed out again. This time, it was targeted directly at Zhang Yang and had a slight metallic luster!

Pishh!

The whipped had dealt more than 70,000 damage on Zhang Yang, even when he was already activated {God of War's Shield} that granted him 20% additional damage reduction. D*mn...Never should have underestimated the boss. Even though Anita was just a side character in the entire map, her damage power was still deadly.

In that case...

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

'-869,283!'

Zhang Yang dished the same pain that Anita had served him. In fact, by multiple folds! The instant of damage that reached as high as 800,000 damage sent fear returning to her facial expression.

"Nyehehe! Watch me, noobie tank!" Wei Yan Er ran up to the boss and wanted to show off as well. They were already within the region of Souron's dominion, hence, The One Ring had its stats and effect active. The little brat struck out a normal attack and dealt 127,400 damage. Zhang Yang smiled as her normal attack had already exceeded Zhang Yang's.

"YEAH!" Wei Yan Er cried happily and lunged at the boss.

{Dark Vengeance}!

'-318,500!'

Sadly, the little brat did not have the skill {Charge Up Strike}. Even though her normal attack may have surpassed Zhang Yang, her attack burst via skills was still far from Zhang Yang.

Translator Note:

(1) Territory Defense: In my not so humble opinion, I don't think a Territory is easier to defend if there is a massive land surrounding it. In fact, it would be difficult to defend since enemies could attack from any direction.

(2) Editor's opinion: Well, thick forests and whatnot imply that the defenders could send out small scouting parties on a regular basis and intercept would-be attackers using guerilla tactics. Think LOTR (Lord of the Rings) where the elven defenders of Lothlorien long heard the approach of the company before they even got close, etc.

Chapter 682: Orc Leader Grandlar

By having higher upper damage limit, does not mean the Zhang Yang would have higher DPS than Wei Yan Er. After all, Zhang Yang's {Charge Up Strike}'s cooldown time was 60 seconds. He could not confirm that all of his skills would deal Critical strikes!

Then again, as expected of a Celestial tier equipment, even though the stat boost was just from a single ring, it had nearly increased Wei Yan Er's overall performance by 30%!

Anita was greatly pushed back. Despite having strong AoE skills that could deal high damage and possessing knockback effects, the skill was suppressed by having a long 30 seconds cooldown. Under heavy fire, the boss could not even retaliate in a proper manner.

When it comes to this, the boss was still in fact, a main character from the villain's perspective. Now that the boss had taken a toll, many orcs came out rushing from nowhere and attacked the party. Although the orcs did not have strong attacks nor HPs, the monsters do have the numbers. With sheer volume alone, they could even kill a tank as strong as Zhang Yang!

Finally feeling frustrated with the sudden appearance of the orcs, Zhang Yang cried, "Starlight! Take the monsters!"

"Roger that!"

Endless Starlight rode off with his mount and activated {Devotion}. Once the monsters were all effected by the Aura damage, Endless Starlight triggered {Saint Storm} to deal massive AoE damage and aggro to all monsters.

Once the monsters were all drawn to Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang changed the Phoenix's attack targeting to assist Endless Starlight. Since the Phoenix's normal attack were AoE types, it would be extremely efficient at killing normal monsters in a large amount! Fatty Han joined the fray and sent in his Phoenix as well. With two Legendary Beast and one strong tank in play, no menial monster could survive to tell the tale!

Once all the random orcs were taken care of, the boss had nowhere else to run nor rely on. She had to take all the damage like a good punching bag from the party.

Although 160,000,000 HP seemed a lot, the boss was not a match with the massive DPS rainfall of the party. They merely took 5 minutes to kill the boss! It was all due to the newly obtained weapons and armor, not to mention the new Celestial tier ring that Wei Yan Er had!

Once Anita fell, Wei Yan Er was the first to jump to the dead boss' body and loot the items as fast as she could. She feared that Zhang Yang might remember about the punishment that he had imposed on her earlier on.

"Woohoo! We've hit the jackpot! Three Ethereal tier equipment, yo!" Wei Yan Er screamed. With the three equipment in her embrace, she rubbed her face all over them like they were her precious babies.

Zhang Yang did not spare any time to entertain her but yelled sternly, "Time to make a move on!"

"Hey hey hey! Noobie tank! Isn't it time for us to check out the goods for a moment, at least?" cried Wei Yan Er as she was still slobbering all over the equipment.

"Check out what? You think we're still in Kandiya Grassland or Gilstein?! The bosses here are not even the strong ones yet! All the drops would not be special! Just take a look at them! I'm 100% sure that they would have no reduced level special effect!" Zhang Yang snapped.

"Ah--" Wei Yan Er stuttered and took a look at the acquired equipment. As Zhang Yang had mentioned, all the equipment were Level 160 and did not possess any reduced level special effect.

"Tch!" Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue. With a greatly disgruntled facial expression, she kicked a tiny fallen helmet to the side and scorned. "What a useless boss! Making me all hyped up and all! Tch!"

Everyone could not spare any tiny attention to Wei Yan Er's acts and pressed on.

The number of monsters appearing on were continuous, without

stopping. Eventually, they had reached to a point where the monster's tier was upgraded from normal tier to elite tier. Instead of orcs, they were wolf riding soldiers.

The wolf riders were a little troublesome due to their skills. They had a skill that could throw a net to immobilize a person. They could also rush over and stun someone like Zhang Yang's {Charge} skill. After stunning, they could follow up with a powerful blow which was the real threat to the party. As they proceeded onwards, Zhang Yang was careful not to draw in too many monsters at one go. They would all have to be careful since if they are all killed in this part of the quest, they might as well give up fighting the boss.

However, despite the increasing difficulty, the monsters provided the party with luxurious experience points which everyone enjoyed greatly. They were even wishing for the route to be endless so that they could all grinding effortlessly without running around too much, until they reach Level 160!

However, wishes were wishes after all, for the reality was shortly revealed. After the long pathway onward, the party reached a large plaza and found the second boss.

It was a similarly dark-green skinned orc but instead of standing on its own, the orc was seated atop an abnormally large wolf! He was scouting around casually, with a shield in his left arm and long spear in his right.

[Orc Leader Grandlar] (Ethereal, Humanoid)

Level: 160

HP: 160,000,000

Defense: 10,490

Melee Attack: 80,594 – 100,594

Skills:

[Net]: Tosses nets at all directions, 30 meters around the caster. Traps and immobilizes all targets for 10 seconds.

[Sloth's Punishment]: While moving, targets will be inflicted with 20,000 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds. However, every second the target stops moving, the damage inflicted will increase by 100%.

[Bone to Dust]: Ignores all Defense value and deals 150% melee physical damage. If the target is stationary, damage inflicted will be increased by 100%.

Note: During his birth, Grandlar had bitten down and mauled his own biological mother to death. The creature was born vile and vicious to the core. The lust of war and battle was born in his soul!

"Noobie tank! Look! Look! Even the ugly butt orc could equip a shield on one hand and a two-handed weapon on his other! Looks like the so-called God of War Inheritance is not something so rare after all! Nishishishi!" Wei Yan Er casually gave Zhang Yang a backhanded slap.

Zhang Yang shrugged and laughed. "Yeah. It might be. However, I seem to recall that a certain little flattest girl would die to have the Inheritance!"

"Ouuuu! Burn!"

Hundred Shots interjected in as he was trapped by the net. "What a troublesome skill! Paired with that DoT effect, the overall damage is extremely painful!"

Hundred Shots was right. Since the first tick of the DoT skill was 20,000 damage for the first instance. Once the net has successfully trapped someone, they would be considered to be stationary even though it is involuntary. Once they are rendered motionless, the 100% increase effect will kick in, hence, increasing the DoT damage to 40,000 damage. At the 10 seconds, the damage will be increased to 100,000 damage! It was indeed powerful for a DoT effect. If the skill {Net} is casted more frequently, the party would sustain a lot of damage.

"Don't be stingy on the Mobility Potion! Use them immediately if you are trapped! Do not let the skill kill you!"

Zhang Yang hurled himself towards the boss while spamming {Blast

Wave} on the boss while mounted on the Phoenix.

"Here it comes!"

The boss snarled, exposing his massive fangs and growled. "Hahaha! Free food for me! How long has it been since I last craved for the flesh of Human and Elf!" Grandlar brandished his spear like the blades of a helicopter and lunged at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang anticipated the attack and raised his shield, facing directly at the boss. However, he had made a grave mistake, for the boss did not use the spear as a thrusting attack, instead, the boss used the spear like a huge pole and smacked Zhang Yang from the top and hit his head. Zhang Yang had a split-second movement to shift his shield upward and managed to block the damage successfully. However, he had also seriously underestimated the boss' strength. The attack had created a massive impact and vibrated the shield like a cymbal in a music band. Zhang Yang could have sworn that his fingers had almost given up! Even the Phoenix pet was slammed downward.

Infuriated, the Legendary Beast squawked with rage and made a quick turn and blasted the orc with a strong flamethrower attack.

"ARGH! I hate fire!"

At then, the boss was enraged and retaliated by thrusting, piercing, bashing, and many more unorthodox methods of using the spear.

Zhang Yang returned every attack he received to the boss with additional fury! His attacks were brought up at the battle, especially since the skill {Charge Up Strike} is paired with {God of War Devastation} could deal at least 9 times the normal attack damage. His attacks were so powerful that no one else but Zhang Yang could make the boss squeal in pain! Felice and the Phoenix were also Ethereal tiered hence, their attacks were no weaker than the boss himself, albeit having much lesser HP.

"I will kill! I WILL KILL ALL UNTIL THERE IS NONE LEFT!" The boss bellowed with might and fury. He flicks his hands and sends rays of blood-red light to the party members. It was the skill {Sloth's Punishment}!

"Stand still!" Just a few seconds later, the boss bellowed again and unleashed a fan of nets to all directions, entrapping everyone, including their Battle Companions.

Spellcaster and Hunters had skills to "teleport" away to safety. {Apparate} and {Tumble} both had only 30 seconds cooldown, hence it would be the first skill to use during scenarios like that. On the other hand, Warrior and the other class' status removing skill had a long, 1-minute cooldown. (Note: Warrior's Will cooldown will be 1 minute only if it is maxed out). Hence, when everyone was trapped by the nets, Zhang Yang and the others had immediately used their Mobility Potions to free themselves immediately.

It was the first {Net} skill. Besides the Battle Companions, the skill was not a threat to anyone else. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were able to focus their healing power on the Battle Companions, hence their load was eased off greatly. Even though the Battle Companions DPS were so insignificant, every bit of help counts during a crucial fight, hence it was practical to rescue them.

'-160,654!'

Zhang Yang was a little slow. Right after the boss tossed out his nets, he made a preemptive strike on Zhang Yang and used {Bone to Dust} on him. The damage dealt to him was extremely powerful, and everyone had to gasp in horror. Even the wielder of the God of War Inheritance had taken more than 160,000 damage! Imagine if it were someone else...

It was inevitable. Consuming potions brought out the slow process of taking out the bottle and gulping down the magical liquid down a person's throat. It was a process unlike skills that could be activated with a single thought.

After a series of rounds, Zhang Yang had calculated the frequency of the skill {Sloth's Punishment}. It will be used once every 15 seconds. It was as if the skill had a permanent Aura DoT effect. On the hand, {Net} will be cast once every 20 seconds which had surpassed the limit of all players around. At that moment, the overall party's HP was being hacked off

speedily. Right then, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to make a choice. They could either sacrifice the Battle Companion, or to bet on it all and heal everyone...Felice and Ankh were the only two Battle Companion that had the strongest DPS...

The boss was extremely troublesome and had so much HP that the entire battle was rather annoying. If Grandlar had 100 million HP, and had recovery skills, the battle will inescapably be dragged to more than an hour. If either Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart is unable to keep up with the healing, either of them would have to activate their Transformation skill!

However, the battle had only been 5 minutes, with no choice in hand, the party would have to bite down their frustration and consume potions for the moment.

Even though it was troublesome, the boss was not exactly tough. For Ethereal bosses were not the strongest bosses then!

Under the massive attack of fire and fury, the boss was killed in the end, leaving the entire party panting raggedly like a mad dog.

Although the experience points and loot were aplenty, Wei Yan Er solemnly picked up the loot as if she wanted to cry. Everyone had to laugh at her comical act.

After a good tease and rest, Zhang Yang pushed on and pressed forward.

After they proceeded, the number monsters appearing to obstruct their way increased in number. However, that was not enough to stop the demolition party from making their way to the tower! After a tiresome 3 hours of killing, the party had all arrived at the tower's basement in one piece.

rumble

"Did anyone felt that?"

"Yeah. It's a microquake."

rumble

"It's getting stronger now..."

"Ok. It's a proper earthquake!"

Right when Zhang Yang and the party had stepped on the floor of the tower, the entire castle quaked, like a massive earthquake was about to hit. Cracks formed in the ground and light burst out from them. The light all shot up and bent miraculously into the tower. The quake continued to rumble on violently, as if something was about to burst out from the ground like a monster from an eggshell!

Chapter 683: The Dark One, Sauron

CRACK!

The earth split apart violently and out came a massive humanoid creature from within the creases. The monster crawled out and stood at nearly 30 meters tall. Fully clad in armor-like scales, the beast had a long, spiky tail, and a horn as long as its head, that stuck out of its forehead. The beast had only one eye which had taken almost half of its face's surface area. The dark, orange and black stripes pupil glared at the party with a killing aura so strong that it made a little visible crack on the rusted helmet on the ground.

[Shadow Demon Sauron, The Dark One] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 170

HP: 1,700,000,000

Defense: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,086 – 200,086

Skills:

[Death Glare]: Blasts a powerful death ray towards a target within 30 meters. Deals 200,000 damage. Damage will be increased by 100% for every 10 meters a target is away from the caster. Maximum Range: 10,000 meters.

[Rotting Strike]: Wastes away a target's defenses and deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Shadow's Touch]: Deals True Strike damage to all targets within 50 meters. Deals 100% Shadow melee damage.

[Demon's Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery amount would not be affected by any effect.

[Demon Unleash]: Becoming the demon that all fears. Increases damage by 1000%, movement speed by 1000%. Note: A certain item could dispel the effect.

Note: The embodiment of evil, shadow, and destruction. The Shadow Demon was born from the left eye of the Shadow God. Possess part of the Death God's power.

Holy tier!?

"Don't waste time! Use your Inheritance Transformation now!" Zhang Yang screamed at the top of his lungs. Zhang Yang was the first to transform and he unmounted the Phoenix to allow the beast to fly freely. Now that Sauron had entered the battle field, the Eye in the sky had changed, instead of only attacking units in the sky, it now attacked units that were also on the ground. Hence, there was no sense in anchoring oneself to the ground. Zhang Yang instructed everyone to move around and not leave the boss' range. As long as they are within 30 meters, they would only receive 200,000 basic damage.

Zhang Yang sighed painfully. The boss had over 1 billion HP and could restore 1% or close to 570,000 HP every second! If everyone does not rely on their Inheritance, the total DPS of the party would not be able to even match the heals per second! The few methods of defeating this boss were the same as it was with any other open-world boss. You could either gather a small team of powerful DPS and healers, or two, to have a sea of players attack the boss in waves.

All sorts of Inheritance was used. Shadow Dancer...Milkmaid Deity... Darkness...Frost...

Everyone, including the two Phoenixes and Felice had used their Inheritances at once. It was one of the first few times the entire party, including the Battle Companion and the Pets, had used their Transformation skills altogether. It was, after all, their first battle with the game's first Holy tier boss!

Fortunately, the boss was only Level 170. If it were slightly higher, all of them would have suffered from the Level Suppression System!

"The world...is mine." Sauron raised his right hand to the sky with his palm opened wide. Storm clouds form at the top of the sky at the direction of his palm. With a powerful clench of his fist, the storm clouds crack a

thunderbolt to the ground everywhere! It was merely a display of power. The sort of power that could change the world at his will! The power of the Death God!

"Alright, guys. No time to admire his fancy tricks. It's time for us to kick his butt!" Zhang Yang soared towards the boss and launched his first barrage of attack.

'-278,383!'

Reserved Swing! {Charge Up Strike}!

'-2,687,166!' God of War Devastation!

Although the attack is good enough to kill anyone over and over again, the boss felt nothing but a tiny tick on his HP bar. It is expected, since the boss had over a billion HP. 1 million attack damage was nothing but a tiny prick. However, Sauron was still mad and glared at Zhang Yang with fury. His eyes glowed with an intense red hue and Zhang Yang knew it was time to dodge. However, the attack was instant and could not be evaded. A long beam of black ray blasted Zhang Yang, dealing 152,002 damage.

Zhang Yang took a direct hit but it was only a tiny bit of damage since he had over 20,000,000 HP. 100,000 damage was nothing but 1% of his total HP.

"Looking at the boss and our boss. I feel like big boss is the monster! Phew..." Endless Starlight cried.

"Yeah...Zhang Yang has always been a monster!"

"Noobie tank is not a monster! He is a meanie!"

Zhang Yang frowned and yelled. "What are you doing!? Stop talking and start fighting for god's sake!"

Everyone gulped down a mouthful of saliva and charged towards the boss with everything they had. At such a battle, those who had no Inheritance Transformation skill could only fill in the odd numbers up for their damage was too low. Players like Lost Dream and Hundred Shot had their mounts active since they could at least help their master deal a

menial amount of damage. On the other hand, players like Sun Xin Yu or Daffodil Daydream had to unsummon their mounts since their Inheritances did not allow mounting. It's either keep or be killed by the boss in one hit.

{Shadow's Touch}!

Sauron used his first AoE attack skill and unleashed countless waves of black, floating skulls around. The attack was of Indiscriminate attack type, which means, the attack will also deal damage to Sauron's own lackeys, if they are within the area!

170,000 basic damage is strong enough for a hit. Even though everyone had already activated their Transformation skills and had their HPs boosted, the damage received was significant enough to put a toll on the healers. If Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had not obtained strong Inheritances, regular healing powers would not be enough.

After the first round of {Shadow's Touch}, everyone prepared themselves. However, just after 10 seconds of breathing room, the boss used {Shadow's Touch} again.

The prowess of a boss depends on its AoE skill prowess. Other factors, including the AoE skill was the most prominent. Sauron's 10 second {Shadow's Touch} frequency rate was not as powerful as Princess Serena with her rampaging. However, it is still strong enough to cause all 13 members of the party to take more than 220,000 damage a second. The amount of healing required to make sure everyone continue breathing would be extremely taxing.

The main point of the battle was that the boss does not have one skill. Sauron had been keeping Zhang Yang extremely busy by continuously bombarding Zhang Yang with attacks. Occasionally, he will also use {Death Glare} to harass other players around which causes a small disruption to the healers. If they were to lose just one member, the tide of the battle might shift dramatically towards the boss' side. The battle could be ended in a flash!

"Zhang Yang! Use the Forbidden Scroll!" Lost Dream panted tiredly.

The entire party had only possessed one [Forbidden Scroll] and it was the Absolute Bind. It would be effective to any targets under Level 180. The effect of the scroll is to bind a target at a certain chance every 3 seconds for 10 minutes! Zhang Yang contemplated for a while and decided to use the scroll since the scroll had an "expiry date" at Level 180.

"Alright. Get ready!"

Zhang Yang flipped open his Inventory UI and used the scroll to the boss.

CRACK! BOOM!

Not too long ago, when Sauron conjured the dark storm clouds out of nowhere, it was only within the vicinity of the tower while the rest of the skyline was still bright. However, when Zhang Yang used the [Forbidden Scroll], the entire skyline from horizon to the other horizon darkened immediately. Dark clouds swarmed in from all directions and crack a thunderbolt that was far larger and louder than Sauron's. The thunderbolt blasted down at Sauron and formed pillars of black pillars that were taller than Sauron! The pillars formed in a circular manner surrounding Sauron like a cage.

"What is the meaning of this!" Sauron growled. He then ignored the pillar, since it did not deal any damage to him, instead, he focused his attention on Zhang Yang and landed a {Rotting Strike}.

'-209,431!'

The skill was the boss strongest and most annoying single target skill. With almost 250,000 basic damage, it could kill 99% of all tanks in the world! However! It depends on the player's status, if they had a Transformation skill activate, it would be a whole different story.

Sauron pulled back his arms and crossed them boldly.

"Hmph. Such a pitiful being. The battle should have ended a long time ago!" Despite his demeaning speech, the boss was clearly disgruntled for dealing too weak of a damage on Zhang Yang. After a loud roar, Sauron's mono-eye glowed with an intense blood red hue. As he roared to the

heavens, the horn on his forehead grew longer and larger.

"HMM!" With glowing red eyes, Sauron hurled his fist at Zhang Yang.

'-1,517,264!'

Zhang Yang lifted his shield, but it was useless. The attack crushed his legs into the earth.

Groaning with pain, Zhang Yang yelled. "Little brat!"

"Huh? Oh yeah! The ring!" Wei Yan Er aimed her ring at the boss and mentally activated its effect.

SHRING!

The ring glowed with an intense golden luster and blast out a golden ray. The light bent in midair and blasted Sauron's eyes.

"GRAH!" Sauron retreated as he covered his eyes. The horn on his forehead shrunk back to its normal size as he retreated.

The skill {Demon Unleashed} was casted by the boss. That was the reason why he could deal more than a million damage in a single strike.

"THE ONE RING!" Sauron snarled through his teeth. "How do you possess The One Ring!? D*mn! D*mn it all! So be it! The One Ring is just a ring! A tiny piece of metal from the gods! I am the King of the Shadows! I am the Dark One! I am Invincible!"

{Glare of the Death God}!

Zhang Yang jumped in heroically and casted the skill. However, the skill immediately bounced off the boss and rewarded Zhang Yang with one sad word. "Resist!"

"Feeble mortal! Weep in despair as you succumb to my powers!" Sauron roared and clawed Zhang Yang in midair as he fell back to the ground. However, just as he was about to touch Zhang Yang, black chains formed from nowhere and bound his movements, pulling Sauron back and locking him from moving!

The [Forbidden Scroll] effect had kicked in!

"Hmm...No matter from what angle I see it from. I just couldn't shake the feeling that the skill looks a lot like the fifty shades of BDSM," said Fatty Han as he smiled with a perverted expression.

Everyone took the chance to attack while the boss was immobilized. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had even tried to make use of the 10 seconds binding effect to recharge their MP and to heal everyone back to their full health.

Zhang Yang smirked. As expected of a [Forbidden Scroll]. Its effect was truly something powerful!

"D*mn it all! I will kill you! I will consume your souls!" After 10 seconds, the chains broke off the boss and released the boss from the binding shackles. He then chased after Zhang Yang to attack. The boss was mad. How could he not be? He had been sleeping and accumulating his powers for ages. And when the time was ripe and it was his time to wreak havoc, he is being toyed with by a bunch of insects!

{Demon Unleashed}!

In less than a minute, to be precise, in just 50 seconds, the boss had used his ultimate power again. His eyes glowed with rage, his horn grew with power, his attack, speed, grew exponentially! Unfortunately, The One Ring effect had only a 1 minute cooldown! The boss had gained 10 seconds of advantage over the party!

In that 10 seconds, the boss could wipe the entire party clean! Hence, all they could do before the ring was ready to purge the boss' berserk state was to hold on as long as they can.

Just when the boss was about to land his attack after gaining a huge buff, the dark chains materialized again, binding the boss in place. Not even the boss could do anything about it by having godlike powers! It was unfortunate for the boss. When the shackles were off and the boss was freed, Wei Yan Er blasted the boss with the ring's golden light.

"GRAH!" the boss cowered again. Blinded temporarily, the boss lunged himself blindly at Zhang Yang. He was the embodiment of Evil and Destruction! Even though he was not formed perfectly, he still a powerful

entity! To be ridiculed by mere mortals with power of a piece of paper...

"Aiyayaya! What a poor boss." Fatty Han winced as he attacked from the side.

The skill {Demon Unleashed}'s cooldown countdown started counting down the moment the boss was "out" of the effect. Hence, The One Ring's cooldown will always be 10 seconds slower than {Demon Unleashed}. However, 10 seconds buffer period would not always be danger-free, since the chains from the [Forbidden Scroll: Absolute Bind] could not always proc at the right time. Hence, Zhang Yang had to use skills like {Shield Wall} to buy some time for the ring. If {Shield Wall} is on cooldown, there was nothing Zhang Yang could do then but to take the hit like a champ.

Luckily, his HP was that of a real champ. {Shield Wall} had only 2 minutes and 30 seconds cooldown. So, tanking 10 seconds of brutal punches from the boss was nothing to be worried about.

Chapter 684: Dark Star Shield

The match goes on strong. As long as Zhang Yang could hold on for as long as he could, the healers stop death in its tracks, and members of the party do not get killed by {Death's Touch}, and nothing else could factor the fall of the party, in the end, the boss fight would only be a manner of time.

However, even if after activating Inheritance Transformation and gain 300% or 500% attack boss, it does not mean that their DPS would increase by 3 times or 5 times. It was a matter of calculation.

Take Zhang Yang for example, before any buff, Zhang Yang's raw attack power was 31,612 – 39,612. After adding up the equipment damage buff and the God of War Inheritance of 100% and 50%, the basic attack was increased to 79,030 – 99,303. After activating the God of War Transformation, the damage calculation would take the raw attack power into account. Which was $(31,612 - 39,612) \times (250\% + 500\%) = 237,090 - 297,090$. If he consumes a bottle of [Power Potion], the calculation would take the resulted attack power and multiply it by 140%.

Hence, technically, after activating the Transformation skill, Zhang Yang had only gained 3 times the attack power instead of 5. In his case, the stronger the equipment buff, the less percentage of the Transformation buff would add, since Zhang Yang himself was already at his peak. Taking into account the DPS of the other members, the ETA for the boss' defeat would be 53 minutes.

53 minutes would allow the boss to enrage 53 times. That leaves the party members 53 times of heart-stopping moments. The boss would not only target Zhang Yang alone, but also deal AoE damage to everyone with the skill {Shadow's Touch}. Wei Yan Er was the only one in the party who had an extremely high Shadow resistance, allowing her to negate a large sum of damage. Other party members would also have a certain increased elemental resistance, however, there were players like Lost Dream, with only B class Inheritance who would take so much damage in a single hit that would deduct 25% of their total HP. Luckily for them, there were not

many B class Inheritance players around, or else Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart would be having a tough time handling them.

The boss was just merely a Holy tier boss and not a world class open-world boss. Still, Sauron was still tough to defeat. In fact, everyone present there had equipment slightly lower than the "recommended" equipment tier. They were only able to hold on for so long, due to three S class Inheritance players and many A and B class Inheritance as well. Although B class was the lowest tier in their party, it was still strong enough to hold off the boss' attack. C class or lower Inheritance players would probably have fallen in the first two minutes. Han Ying Xue, being the one and only S class Healer Inheritance was able to heal everyone as if she was the Goddess of Healing. Thanks to her powerful healings and Fantasy Sweetheart helping out, the battle was made much easier.

They had also used the [Forbidden Scroll] to further ease off the difficulty of the battle. To put crudely, the boss will be stunned for 10 seconds every 30 seconds. 10 seconds was more than enough to provide breathing room for players to rest and recuperate. They could either take the chance to readjust their skill cycles, or to allow their skill to finish its cooldown.

80%...50%...20%...

A good amount of time was spent fighting the boss and everyone had burst into a killing frenzy when the boss' HP was left with 20%. Especially the little brat. She had the Darkness Inheritance and gained a natural high resistance to Shadow attacks, hence, she had not needed to waste her potion cooldown time on consuming health potions. Instead, she took a bottle of [Power Potion] and charged at the boss with all she had.

The little girl's normal attack had far surpassed Zhang Yang's due to The One Ring in her hands. However, skill wise, she was not able to keep up with Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had various skills, passive and active alike, that could increase his overall DPS! However, the little girl's DPS had gained a massive boost after taking the [Power Potion].

Sun Xin Yu's attack was on a whole other level. After acquiring the skill

{Eagle Eye}, she was able to narrow the gap between Zhang Yang and her. In fact, she was winning by a tiny nudge. She was equipping two types of weapons to be exact, after all. Just one of the weapons was an Ethereal tier which had granted Sun Xin Yu a massive 30% increase in attack, allowing her attacks to be 4% higher than Zhang Yang!

However, that was comparing a player's attack. Zhang Yang still had the Phoenix pet and Felice! The two god-like entities even possessed Transformation skill! It was like having Lost Dream and Hundred Shots linking their attacks to Zhang Yang! How could anyone compare their total DPS with Zhang Yang!? The man is a beast!

Hence, to compare normal attacks alone, Zhang Yang would rank at the third place. However, to put it in all, Zhang Yang's DPS would rank out of the entire chart!

"Meanie tank! I challenge you to a proper fight! Unsummon the fire bird and Felice and fight fair and square!" said Wei Yan Er, dissatisfied. It was a rare chance for her to be able to "defeat" Zhang Yang in a DPS match, but she was "interrupted" by Felice and the Phoenix.

Zhang Yang laughed, "Aww. Don't be too salty. This is my fate! And yours? You'd just continue being the little brat that we all know you are!"

"WHAT!? Noob tank! I'll bite you!" Wei Yan Er snarled like a palm-top tiger; fierce, but harmless.

"Mortal...mortal power...are you really just mortals?!" Souron finally accepted the truth. After his long HP was drained down to 15%, Souron movement and speech changed from demeaning to frightened. Although 15% or 200 million HP was considered to be quite long, the party's anxious and restless fighting prowess had treated the 200 million HP as nothing.

"There's nothing to hide! We are mortals! You may be a god or demon, but you're nothing but an enemy that we will destroy! You have but one eye. Though you can see and destroy humans as far as 10,000 km away, what you did was nothing out of the ordinary! You could at least use your incredible foresight to peek at girls!" said Endless Starlight nonchalantly.

It was not clear to whether Souron understood Endless Starlight

provocation. However, the boss was a demon. Even though it may have been born from a single eye of the real God, he was still of a god's essence! Would a god peek at girls? Perhaps Zeus would. Sauron roared in anger and increased the casting of {Shadow's Touch}, sending out countless of black skulls to fly around and attack everyone.

Luckily, it was not the skill - {Demon Unleashed} that was used rapidly. Or else, the team might be knocking on death's door!

"How could a few pesky rats have infiltrated my army! Cunning souls! You have lured my army to fight a meaningless war elsewhere!" Sauron roared to the sky; and even the dark clouds started to lose their color.

"Haha! You couldn't even defeat a few of us rats! What makes you then? A large cockroach!?" Fatty Han laughed manically.

"You think you could last this long without The One Ring in your hand!?" Sauron roared back.

"Fight us without your eyeball then!"

"Enough with the boss! Stop talking!" Zhang Yang finally snapped.

13%...11%...9%...

Every time the boss fell below the 10% HP threshold, the usage rate of {Shadow's Touch} would be increased. As long as the skill is not used during his {Demon Unleashed} state, everyone should be fine. Furthermore, the effect of the [Forbidden Scroll] was still in effect. The boss will be chained at every crucial moment for him to attack, rendering him useless at times.

3%...2%...1%...The boss was about to be defeated.

"Hm...hm...you may have won this round, but I am eternal. As long as there are the living amongst the land, I shall return! You have defeated me today, but I am only going to sleep for another 10,000 years. I shall be back, and when I do, the earth shall scream in terror! The sky shall rain blood! The world shall be mine!" Sauron gave his last speech before falling back into the earth. His massive body crashed and turned into dust. What that was left was only an overly large eyeball, which exploded into a pile of

loot.

'Ding! Congratulations on killing the first open-world Holy tier boss. Your glorious deeds will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! As the Party Leader, please state your party designations to be recorded!'

A system notification rang and Zhang Yang received an additional command box. Zhang Yang keyed in the usual advertising slogan and the server channel was flooded with the red colored text. Additionally, everyone in the party received 1 Luck attribute, Reputation points, and gold coins.

The standard procedure next was Zhang Yang to received many other guild master's congratulations. While others send them their regards and warm praise, Snow Seeker had moved beyond that, she had even asked Zhang Yang for a few good Holy tier equipment to buy! Naturally, the buying price should be lowered to a point where no one would believe their eyes!

Zhang Yang had not much time to handle the other replies. After some quick appreciation messages, Zhang Yang went on to the little brat and slapped his back hard to give her a chance to loot the drops. It was the server's first ever Holy tier boss. If the boss had not dropped any good items, Zhang Yang might as well abandon the quest line, right there and then.

Wei Yan Er roughed Zhang Yang up a little before rubbing her back to pick up all the loot. While everyone else was anxiously waiting for the loot, the little girl took her slow sweet time to pick them up as a means to show her retaliation for Zhang Yang slapping her back. She organized the loots by rarity and displayed them all.

The boss had dropped three counts of Holy tier equipment. A dark golden magic staff, a shining metallic triangular shield, and one silvery swirly dagger. There was also a [Skill Point Crystal], three counts of books, a black color command order, and a bunch of Level 6 Gemstones.

Zhang Yang took out the [Identifying Scroll] and went through all the Holy tier equipment before distributing them. The first was the magic

staff.

[Dark Lord's Wand] (Holy, Magic Staff)

Magic Attack: 18,481 – 24,481

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 40%

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 8%

Equip: Chance to generate a Shadow Barrier after every successful cast. The barrier will nullify all types of attack.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

The magic staff was rolled by Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart, and Daffodil Daydream. As a result, Daffodil Daydream trumped over Han Ying Xue - the lucky queen and claimed the staff. However, Daffodil Daydream would have to wait for a least 9 more levels to equip the Level 150 staff. It was not too long, nor too short either. She would have to put her back into grinding for the next coming days.

The next item was the triangular shield. Since the only players around that could use the shield was Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, Endless Starlight quickly muttered, "INT! INT! INT!"

If the shield has Intelligence attribute, it will automatically belong to him.

Wei Yan Er snickered and waved her hands, gesturing a demeaning move. "Tch tch tch. Are you lacking Intelligence that much that you're asking for a little brain for your empty skull?"

[Dark Star Shield] (Holy, Shield)

Defense: +13770

Vitality: +26449

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 52,890

Equip: Absorbs 5,091 damage on attack.

Equip: Grants the ability to inflict reduced 10% Magic Resistant for {Cripple Defense}.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Endless Starlight shed manly tears as he turned his back and sobbed quietly. The shield was incredibly strong. However, since Endless Starlight did not have the skill {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang had gained the right to take the shield. The man had even wiped away a tear as he watched Zhang Yang inserting the shield into his inventory U.I.

Chapter 685: Legendary Tier

The shield alone had provided a total of 26,000 HP. With the {Vitality Aura} stacked with the shield's HP bonus, the total HP it provided was 36,000! Right then, Zhang Yang had over 510,000 HP, giving him a significant boost of HP!

What a loot! Sadly, Zhang Yang would have to wait until he reached Level 150 before he could equip it. Right then, he was Level 144, with a little push, Zhang Yang could reach Level 150 in just one month's time!

"Little Yan Er's hands are really lucky! Two weapons and a shield? That's better than striking the lottery!" Fatty Han gave her two thumbs up. "It's a shame that there's no Hunter's EQ though."

Zhang Yang pretended a cough. "Giving you a weapon would be a major waste."

"Hey! I heard that! How could you say this to a bro!" Fatty Han puffed.

Everyone ignored the fatso and paid their attention to the last dagger.

[Shadow Totem's Dagger] (Holy, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 8,465 – 12,465

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds.

DPS: 5,508

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 40%

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 8%

Equip: Grants a chance to reduce a target's movement speed by 50% after a successful strike. Last for 8 seconds.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Ever since Sin Xin Yu had acquired the Shadow Dancer S class Inheritance, she had changed her weapon of choice to swords. Hence, with no competitor around, the dagger fell into Lost Dream's hands easily.

"It's sad that the dagger normal attack would be affected by strong Defenses. If only Lost Dream could learn the skill {Eagle Eye} as well...." said Zhang Yang.

"Ooi! I want that as well!" Wei Yan Er jumped up like a bunny. She was afraid that Zhang Yang might steel his decision to let Lost Dream have the next {Eagle Eye}.

Everyone finally laughed as there were no more equipment for them to feel anxious about. Still, excitement remained in the air. Weapons would be the greatest buff to any players, while Shields would be the greatest asset to a tank! Sauron might be an enemy, but he had been generous enough to reward his killers with awesome equipment!

The next person to receive the [Skill Point Crystal] according to the cycle, was Hundred Shots. There was no rolling needed, for there was a 100% chance for all of them to receive it in the end. It was not that difficult for them to find and kill an open-world boss! Especially when Zhang Yang is known to be a boss fight magnet!

Amongst the books found, one of them was a recipe. Wei Yan Er straight away threw the book at Zhang Yang for him to learn. It was an Alchemy recipe. Even though many players in the party had learned Alchemy as well, they did not possess the Alchemist Intuition. For them to learn new recipes would be a waste since Zhang Yang could concoct potions with Transmuted grades!

Zhang Yang took the recipe and learned it immediately.

[Temporary Invincibility Potion] (Usable)

Use: Gains Invincibility to all attacks, skills, and disabling effect. Last for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 5 minutes. Using this potion will place all other potions into the same cooldown time.

Level Requirement: 120

Invincibility Potion!

Everyone widened their eyes with delight. If it is a Transmuted grade, it would increase the duration length! Even though it was just a second long, it would be the thin line between winning and losing! Furthermore, this potion is incredibly useful in boss fights! For example, if they had already possessed this potion during the fight with Sauron, they would not have needed to fear him in his {Demon Unleashed} status.

"Jackpot!" Everyone screamed in delight. Zhang Yang had the [Herb Foraging Familiar,] he would never be short on materials, ever!

"Hehe, I'm going to show this to Snow Seeker! We'll sell her all the normal potions and keep all the Transmuted grade for ourselves!" Zhang Yang snickered evilly. Others joined in on the evil masterplan!

As expected, Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and other guild masters quickly begged Zhang Yang for all his supplies of the potions! With a large demand and low supply, Zhang Yang could be monopolizing the potion, for good!

Wei Yan Er took out the second book and displayed it. It was not a recipe, but a skill book.

[Indistinct Skill Book: Fake Death]

Use: Teaches you {Fake Death}

Class Requirement: Unrestricted

Level Requirement: 30

Bound on Obtained.

Everyone gasped with both surprise and joy. Since the start of the game, up until that point, the only Indistinct Skill Book they knew was the Beast Taming skill of Zhang Yang. It allowed Zhang Yang to use his battle mount as a Hunter's pet, giving him the upper hand in battles, dungeons, and PvP Arenas!

"Tch! I already have the skill!" Fatty Han puffed disgruntledly.

"Indistinct...That means that skills from other job could be learned by

other class without any restrictions! It would be incredibly game-breaking if the skill is OP!" Zhang Yang smiled with satisfaction. "Little brat. You take it. Everyone here has skills to clear their aggro easily. You would benefit best from it!"

Hunters had {Fake Death}. Thieves had {Vanish}. Although Spellcaster had no skills of that sort, they could at least use {Ice Barrier} to gain 10 seconds of Invincibility to allow tanks to grab the aggro back to them. Berserkers were different, if they are not careful enough, the boss would come after them whenever they go OT, with no way of rectifying the situation themselves. When that happens, strong bosses could easily wipe them out with a single puff.

Now that Wei Yan Er has the skill, she can kiss goodbye to the fear of OT'ing Zhang Yang!

The little girl patted the skill book on her pitiful chest and jumped around joyfully. The next second, she screamed "Ack!" and fell to the ground lifelessly.

{Fake Death} allows the caster to mimic a real death animation to allow monsters to ignore your presence and to break free of the battle.

Everyone waited for the little girl to get back up, but she continued to lie there.

WHAM!

Han Ying Xue walked over to Wei Yan Er and gave her a tight slap on her butt. "Enough! Get up you stupid, flat chested girl! People are still waiting for you to show them the loots!"

"ARGH!" Wei Yan Er finally got up to her feet and screamed at Han Ying Xue for calling her a flat chested girl. They fought for a little while and Zhang Yang had to separate the two females.

The third book was weird. It was neither a recipe nor a skill book. It was a whole new item that no one, even Zhang Yang, had ever seen.

[The Book of Revelation: Third Chapter] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: The holder of the book shall grant a 100 meters range 5% damage buff to all players. Similar effects do not stack. If the holder of the book is killed, he or she can choose revive at the same place with 10% HP and MP. The effect can only be used once every 10 hours. Similar effects do not stack. If the holder of the book is killed during the revival cooldown duration, the book will drop with a 100% rate. This item can only held in the holder's inventory. Cannot be destroyed.

Use: Combines this Chapter with [The Book of Revelations: Chapter 2] or [The Book of Revelations: Chapter 4].

"Legendary tier? What is that?" Everyone started to asked question and directed their quirk looks towards Zhang Yang. Were not there only 10 tier? Black-Steel, Green-Copper, Gray-Silver, Yellow-Gold, Violet-Platinum, Mythical, Ethereal, Holy, Ascended, and Celestial! When was there a Legendary tier!?

Plus, the thing could not be equipped. Like an Inheritance Fragment, the item could only be stored in the inventory.

However, the item tier aside, the item effect was truly strong, it could provide 5% attack boost to all players around. It was almost similar to that of a damage buff aura effect. Furthermore, the item could grant the holder the ability to revive at the same spot after death! It could be extremely useful in a boss fight when it comes to landing the killing blow!

On the other hand, it could be extremely dangerous to use it during a PvP session. If the holder is killed once during the PvP fight, the next imminent death could result in the loss of the item. If the player is truly killed twice in a PvP Arena, it might be a center of attention. A laughing stock!

The item had an additional tag. A Chapter to be precise. Based on the item description, there could be more than three chapters left to be found! Even though it was not stated that the effect of the Chapters could be stacked, that glimpse of oppression still lay at the end of this path!

If the complete book is assembled together, what would the effects be!?

"Don't look at me. I have no idea what is this!" said Zhang Yang when he

noticed that everyone was waiting for him for a response.

Truth be told, all of Zhang Yang's experience that had been brought forth to this lifetime had almost been used. That aside, the item was extremely useful, for it could be used as a secret trump card! Secondly, the item had never been announced to the whole world! Who would want to let anyone know about the item - they might be hunted and killed for it!

That was probably the main reason why Zhang Yang had never heard of the item before, in his previous life! Then again, he had never been able to "mingle" around with pro players, back then...

"If the effect could stack on each other after combining...this item might be able to live up to its Legendary name!"

Still, just having one Chapter was not truly a whole 'Revelation'. It was still a helpful hand. A 5% attack boost might be tiny, but it was still an aura effect; everyone could gain from it. In the end, the book was thrown to Zhang Yang for safe keeping. The man was a walking boulder! No one could kill him!

With {Burrow}, {Shadow of the Void}, the man was practically unkillable! If someone is still able to track him down, Zhang Yang's Turtle shell defense could defend him, and paired with his world destroyer-like attack, he would kill anyone before he is killed!

The last item was the black command order.

[Territory Command Order: Sauron's Castle]

Use: Incites a Territory Conquest War on Sauron's Castle.

Level Requirement: 100

Zhang Yang panicked for a moment there when he saw the Territory Command Order. He thought that the bastard system will announce it to the world again! However, after what seemed to be the longest one second ever, the channels were still empty. The system did not announce anything. Perhaps, the developers had already patched it to help players. To be able to hunt this Command Order, players would most likely have used their Transformation skills to defeat the boss. Hence, considering the

fact that many players had already obtained their Inheritance, the developers decided to provide players a breathing room to allow players to make preparations for the war. Since it has come to that change, the Command Order was changed from interact to activate, to manual activation. Zhang Yang could now make proper preparations! Since the Command Order was found by Zhang Yang party, it would be fair for them to have the upper hand as a reward!

Zhang Yang then switched to the guild channel and commanded all players with Inheritance Transformation skills to not use their Transformation skill for the next three days. He announced that there would be a special guild-wide event where he would require the support of all players with Inheritance. He had not announced that it was a Territorial Conquest War since he was afraid of spies. Instead, he had fed them hints of fighting something else. If the real news about the new Territory is leaked, other players from other Regions might rush in to start another Nation War!

Alone, Lone Desert Smoke could never handle the simultaneous attacks from all Regions! Luckily, the number of players that could set foot in Mar Gaia Forest was not many. Hence, the estimated number of participants in the upcoming war should be not more than the war in the canyon some days back.

After careful consideration, Zhang Yang decided to ask for Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, and other local guild masters for their help. Although Lone Desert Smoke would be the guild and Zhang Yang would be the owner collecting the transport fees, the ones that would also gain from it would be the players of China! It was a matter of Regional pride and glory. He believed that the fellow guild masters he trusted would not let this chance slide.

Chapter 686: The Fight for Sauron's Castle

All Level 6 Gemstones were instantly kept in the guild warehouse, since only Level 170 equipment would have Level 6 Sockets. Whoever who gets their Level raised to that level may take the Gems for themselves.

After all the items were distributed, the party returned to Hannier Valley to submit their quest to General Turkin Han. Back at the valley, the party was warmly welcome not just by the general, but almost by everyone present. The party was surrounded by NPCs congratulating them for their deeds. Naturally, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were at each other throats, trying to grab the limelight!

After obtaining 20,000,000 experience points as their reward, they also obtained an equipment.

[Mark of the Demon Slayer] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +1889

Strength: +635

Dexterity: +635

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 3,770.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 539 damage when attacked.

Use: Deals additional 20% attack on Demon type targets. Lasts for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 3 minutes.

Level Requirement: 170

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: A token of appreciation for defeating the Shadow Demon Sauron!

The reward ring given differed from class to class. However, all of them had the similar special effects of reducing level requirement. The ring was both defensive and offensive, which was awfully rare and sought-after.

Sadly, the ring had to wait as well. Until the party reaches Level 150, it would have to wait in the warehouse.

Zhang Yang and the party left the valley to complete the promise they had made to Malindor. They headed straight towards Nordinja Town and demanded that the old nobles release the poor girl. By then, the party was wearing the hero's halo over their heads, making the quest easier to complete. Even though it pained them to do so, the nobles had no choice but to comply to Zhang Yang's demands.

Zhang Yang left Vinitha at the town's inn until they are able to take down Sauron's Castle and have her to set up a new home there. Before leaving town, the grumpy little Wei Yan Er had swung her axe and beheaded the pompous old fart for keeping Vinitha against her own will.

The next thing to do for the party was to make preparations for the upcoming war. Everyone was both anxious and excited for the war. By normal means, when the declaration of the Territorial War is announced, the battle will only start on the next day, at 7pm. However, since it was a crucial matter, he would not allow anyone to make any mistakes. Hence, he waited for everyone's Inheritance to be ready and only then, did he announce the war.

The server channel flashed with red text and everyone was notified about a new Territory appearing in the Mar Gaia Forest and the battle to claim the land will be held the next day at 7pm.

Everyone around the world was notified and got to work almost instantly. A territory that has appeared in a Level 150 – 180 map is new and unguarded. However, being a Territory, it still held great value to its lands. Even though not a single player in the entire game had reached Level 150, it was just a matter of time before the Territory would have visitors from all over the world. When that time comes, the Teleportation fees would be the one that earns the big bucks.

Zhang Yang contacted all guild masters that he was close to, Snow Seeker, Sword of Light, and even One Sword Stroke to call for their aid. As a means to reason with them, Zhang Yang got them to fight for him in

order to bring glory to the nation of China. However, while his voice might be inspiring to others, the guild masters were not stupid enough to fall for something as lofty as that. Everyone was smart enough to ask for something in return for them to provide aid.

As such, Zhang Yang and the other guild masters sat together and discussed their demands. It was an unavoidable move. Mar Gaia Forest was a Level 150 – 180 map. Players who dared to set foot in this map must be at least Level 130. Any lower, the monsters in the map could crush them with a single finger.

As per calculation, the number of players in China that reached Level 130 were about 3,000. The globe, however, had amassed as much as 20,000 players. Not many of them may have Inheritance Transformation skills, but surely, each of them possessed Inheritances of their own. Lone Desert Smoke had only over 100 members that were over Level 130. How could 100 players fend off over 20,000 players?

Even though the main goal was to protect the player carrying the Territory Command Order, the chances of survival were extremely low! How could 100 players endure constant bombardment of 20,000 players? Hence, Zhang Yang had called for all China players to unite. Naturally, since the order was found by Zhang Yang, he would not allow any of the helping players gain any advantage over the Territory! It would not make sense! However, despite the unbalanced discussion, everyone was not too greedy. Everyone reached to settlement and left with extreme satisfaction. The one-person left being greatly annoyed was none other than Zhang Yang.

"What greedy bastards! How could they make me concoct such a large amount of potions! Don't they know I need to eat and sleep as well!? For god sake, I only have a pair of hands! Sheesh!" Zhang Yang blew off some steam.

"Hahaha! Little Yang! I shall help you get that billionaire chick Snow Seeker as your consort! Might as well add her into your harem!" said Fatty Han with great determination.

"Yea Yea! That chick called Frost Sparks is not bad as well! I see that she's got some real hongkadongs!"

Frost Sparks is the new guild master of the guild Rolling Rocks. She is beautiful and well-endowed. Her poise was that of a noblewoman. An ever-stoic stance. It was unknown as to how she had managed to step up as the new guild master. Everyone knew that the previous guild master had left her with the post and disappeared elsewhere.

"Are you guys nothing but boobs, jugs, and honkers?" Lost Dream laughed manically.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Please get yourself ready for the war. Anything from bandages to potions. Get more than enough for the sake of it!"

For the next three days, Zhang Yang was in town, crafting potions endlessly. As a result, he was able to concoct a large batch of potions and even Transmuted potions, as well. Each ascending grade of Transmuted [Temporary Invincibility Potion] will provide an additional 0.5 seconds extended duration. The strongest, Grade 10 Transmuted potion would provide a total of 10 seconds of Invincibility to the user!

Sadly, despite having only 10 seconds of Invincibility, the cooldown time was just too long. They would have to count the cooldown time for that! If they are debuffed by status effects, they could use Mobility Potions to overcome the maim. If they are surrounded from all corners, they would have to use the Invincibility Potion to survive long enough to kill a few players before running away to safety.

As a wage for requesting help from other guildmasters, Zhang Yang had personally forked out 20 million gold coins and a bunch of potions to each guild participating in the war. Snow Seeker was kind enough to reject the offer, however, she came up with an even outrageous demand, that was to ask for a 20% profit claim from the new Territory Teleportation fee. Zhang Yang said no almost immediately to her and had even smacked her on the head for asking it.

20 million gold coins might be a large sum of money, however, anyone

smart enough would know that it is a one-time payment. Snow Seeker had asked for 20% profit as a life-long agreement! She knew that when the game matures a little, Level 150 maps would gain a large influx of players! Zhang Yang knew that the woman was the most difficult person to deal with, despite being surrounded by female hooligans! However, he knew her weakness. Simply by playing as a pervert man around her, he could baffle and embarrass the eyebrows out of her! It was extremely effective when Zhang Yang jokingly said that he would even date her! With that, she stopped demanding for much and settled her agreement with the 20 million gold coins and potions.

Naturally, not all members of the guild will receive many gold coins. But that was not a priority. The main aspect was to get as many strong members that could contribute to the war.

Zhang Yang could have sworn that if Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu were present then, he would have lost his life...

With one more day left to prepare, Zhang Yang spent an entire day to craft as many potions as he could. It was crazy enough that he had managed to craft enough potions for every single member in his guild to have an endless supply of potion until the war ends.

The dawn of a new day broke into the skyline and everyone who was ready to fight entered the Mar Gaia Forest to await the horns of war to be blown. The location of the territory was not known to all. However, according to several experiences, a Territory would normally be situated in the center of a map. That narrows it down to three places, Souron's Castle, Baya Town, and Castle Shandar. The furthest one would be only 20 minutes flight away. Naturally, Zhang Yang and his guildmates were all standing by inside Souron's Castle. At 7pm sharp, when the horns of war were blown, all non-Lone Desert Smoke players were teleported out of the Territory. It was a little service advantage to the guild of the player that holds the Command Order.

The battle started, but Zhang Yang and his lot had not used their Transformation skill immediately. The battle will last as long as 3 hours. Hence, it would not be wise to use it at the start. Within the castle, there

was a large church that could fit in a large number of players. Zhang Yang led his guild towards there.

Those that could participate in his war were all strong players. At least 90% of them possessed flying mounts by then. Since the Territory was owner-less, the castle defenses were left empty. Hence, anyone could fly around without any difficulty. Those who dare to have their battle in the castle gates would face attacks from both the ground and the sky!

Zhang Yang had formulated a plan and moved the battle towards the church instead. By bottlenecking the enemies to only a small entrance of the church, where airborne players had no means of attacking. Zhang Yang could survive by fighting and defending from inside the church!

The plan had been formulated long before the war was announced. Hence, when the signal was fired, not only Lone Desert Smoke, but Crimson Rage, Rolling Rocks, Radiance, and other guilds had complied to Zhang Yang's advice and followed him inside the church.

"D*mn, it would be nice we could use a [Forbidden Scroll] now," said Fatty Han. It was true. Since all of the China forces had already set the church as their stage and the battleground was just the size of a regular 10-meter wide gate. Most of the attackers would have to cram their way in to attack them. Imagine having over 20,000 players squeezing their way into the gates...

Overall, the entire Castle was rather huge. However, it was not too huge. A single piece of [Forbidden Scroll], like Scrounging Doomsday would hit all within the confines of the castle! There is an 80% chance that players without Transforming could die within 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "It won't be that effective. For example, Scrounging Doomsday's effect was 10% HP DoT. However, there was a maximum damage that could be dealt, which was 100,000 HP. At most, the [Forbidden Scroll] could deal over 3 million HP. Right now, most of the players with B class Inheritance would have over 3 million HP. That scroll best not be our best bet."

"You're right. But...what if we use the scroll after...say...2 hours or 2 and

a half? If there are survivors still fighting in the castle, the [Forbidden Scroll] could surely kill them all, right?"

"True. But do we have a [Forbidden Scroll]? No. That is why we are betting on our Inheritance Transformations. At least, we should try and survive for as long as 1 hour before using them!"

In a few minutes, all players from the other 7 regions of the world server had gathered around the church. As predicted, due to the narrow pathway of the entrance to the church, all incoming players were bombarded with powerful AoE skill from all players inside the church. After a few sacrificial lambs, no one else was brave enough to charge in blindly. Those who were killed can never get back there within 3 hours to re-group with their comrades. It was literally a sudden death stage. Those who die can never come back.

Zhang Yang wanted that sort of outcome. If they were to continue coming in without plans, the main attack party would not have to go out of the church until the war ends! However, unlike Wei Yan Er, the little impatient girl who was held back by Zhang Yang, the rest of the players were not holding back. After a few silent moments, one player started activating his Transformation skill and changed into a large humanoid tiger. With nothing but flowery pants left covering his groins, the human-tiger charged into the church.

It was B class Inheritance, the Mythical Tiger Inheritance. Besides gaining a boost of HP and Defense value, it had gained just one AoE skill. The {Feral Roar}. It was an AoE skill that could inflict the status {Fear} on players which would cause them to run away from the caster.

Chapter 687: Spamming the Forbidden Scroll

Now that someone had taken the lead to charge into the church, the others followed closely behind. Other players had also followed his footsteps and activated their own Inheritance Transformation skills. While the commotion was happening, many other stronger, famous guilds stood aside and watched the action from the sidelines.

It was not a war that sought to destroy the Territory's main hall. It was a war to kill the player carrying the Command Order and to hold on to the item until 3 hours end. Even if someone is able to hold onto the Command Order until the very last minute, someone else might sneak up on him, kill the player, and claim the Command Order!

Even though Hourglass Waistline was not the guild master of Land of Savages, however, the power she held due to her background had given her the authority, instead of the real guild master which was Savage Lord. She stood on the sidelines, smiling as if she was watching her plans being carried out. Her plan was, to have all other players beside her own guild use their Transformation as soon as possible and fight the meaningless battle. She would then, use a [Forbidden Scroll] after 2 hours to kill 80% of all players around to eliminate her competitors. Even if players with active Transformations survive the attack, they would definitely be left with little to no HP left. And her own team of elite players would easily take them out and claim the Command Order for herself!

Little did she know, others were thinking the same thing!

Seductive Wild Pussy of Judgement guild, Dusk Phoenix of Hell's Family, Captain America of the Justice League, and many other foreign guilds were not moving an inch! However, if each of the guild master has a piece of [Forbidden Scroll] in hand, the situation might be chaotic when all of them use it later!

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, One Sword Stroke, Sword of Light, and other strong tanks were in charge of holding players behind the entrance.

When they saw the large human-tiger character charging into the church, Zhang Yang was the first to rush up to him and attack. He was extremely familiar with the Inheritance, since he had fought many other players of such Inheritance in his past life.

When the human-tiger player came into the vicinity of the church interior, Zhang Yang used {Charge} to stun him for a second. After gaining enough Rage points, he then waited until the first stun ended and landed a {Brutal Smash} to further stun him for another 4 seconds.

During that time, all the DPS behind had frantically blasted the player with attacks and skills. Facing with such a concentrated attack, even if he was in his Transformation status, the player had lost 30% of his HP in a blink of an eye! He would have lost even more HP if the Inheritance had not provided him with magic resistance! The player was still shocked and had immediately used his accessory skill to dispel the stun.

However, not all dispelling spells carried an Invincible effect as well. As such, Zhang Yang smirked and blasted the player with a {Blast Wave} to stun him for another 4 seconds.

The poor player could literally cry right there and then. Just how many stunning skill did Zhang Yang have!? He had literally zero seconds to react!

WHAM BAM BOOM!

Another barrage of skills and attacks landed on the player, causing him to lose another large portion of his HP. Even though there were some fearless healers who had used their Transformation skill to rush to the front to heal, they too were forced to suffer a heavy rain of attacks! On the China side, many players had also activated their Transformation skill!

The human-tiger player was a Guardian, hence, after panicking for a second there, he quickly activated {Shield Wall} and used {Warrior's Will} to break free of the third stunning skill. Little did he know that Zhang Yang had leaped in grandly with {Heroic Leap} and stunned him for another 4 seconds!

Mama mia!

Zhang Yang had already used all his stunning skills for now. Since the player had used {Shield Wall} to gain an impregnable defense, he quickly summoned Endless Starlight over to have him continue the chain-stunning. A Defender has {Sanction} and {Hammer Drop} that could also stun. With two more skills coming at him, the player would surely be dead in a few moments.

The chaos had started when players of Crimson Rage had used their Inheritance Transformations skill one after the other. Even though most of them were C class Inheritance, they were at least in their Transformation states which could increase their maximum HP and attack. It was rather crucial then, during the intense initial defending stage.

AoE spells and skills filled the airspace. Those that survived could attack, and when there's an attack coming, the ones who fall were those who could not endure the massive barrage!

The entire church had turned from a holy ground to a blood fest. Every moment of every second, there would be pillars of light that blasted into the sky, indicating that players had already died and chose to revive somewhere else. Mountain Mover was not in the battle, instead, he was sitting back behind in the center plaza, far from the fight. There, he had several U.I opened as he constantly monitored players' formation, line-ups, party formations, and many other aspects that he could control to maximize survivability and attack.

Zhang Yang could hear his voice ringing in the chat page as he commandeered the flow of the battle. That was the sort of strategist that he should be. Zhang Yang could never be any prouder to have such an asset.

His prowess was emphasized during the battle at the War Canyon and back then. As such, his deeds had spread throughout China which led to many guild masters offering up a high price to have him on their side. Fortunately, Mountain Mover was a man who does not care about money.

He was having a great time in Lone Desert Smoke and everyone had even appreciated him for his work! Unlike the other guilds that would interfere with his judgment, Zhang Yang had given him full authority over the guild during a war. Hence, he showed no signs of ever jumping ship. That left Sword of Light and One Sword Stroke stumped at their own persistent offers.

Since it happened right under Zhang Yang nose, he quickly butted in and said, "Hey hey! You guys might want to have a step back there. You've already accepted the wages I've offered. Why are you still trying to steal my own asset there, huh?" Although his tone was that of joking, the other guild masters that were trying to recruit Mountain Mover felt guilty and quickly retreated.

The bloodbath continued on chaotically. More and more players were forced to use their Inheritance Transformation skills under such pressure. All but Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, One Sword Stroke, and other stronger tanks had remained adamant about not resorting to their Transformations. Unlike them, the other tanks who were not as strong had to use their Transformations to survive under heavy fire.

Although they may have the geographical advantage, China had killed the most players, yet they had suffered the most casualties as well. Initially, they started off with over 3,000 players. Slowly over time, they had lost more and more players. After just 1 hour, they had lost so many players that their numbers were left less than 500!

Luckily, it was already 1 hour past the start. When the timer ticked into the second hour, almost all players who had not activated their Inheritances flashed out their skills and Transformed! If they had chosen to remain in their original state, it would be a complete waste!

Zhang Yang gained a pair of radiant wings and soared into the sky as soon as he did. He already had Felice and the Phoenix use their Transformation skill earlier. Right then, with three super charged characters in the battle ground, a random B class Inheritance player in his Transformation form would surely die within a few exchange of blows with Zhang Yang!

With nothing held back, Zhang Yang unleashed all his warrior skills. {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}, and other AoE skill were blasted out. Not a single God of War Skill was used then. He wanted to built up his EP as much as he could.

Right then, Han Ying Xue had also activated her Milkmaid Deity Transformation skill and healed all the players around with her "milk", Zhang Yang had no worries of charging into the front lines. His sword danced around like a dragon in the sky and slaughtered players as if they were made of soft tofu! Since the church was considered to be an Interior environment, mounts were not permitted inside. Besides S class and A class Inheritances players who had flight capabilities, other Inheritance players could only be the fight on ground level, since their Transformations did not grant them wings. Zhang Yang flew around the ceiling of the church, landing as many attacks and skills as he could. As such, he had been spamming the {Temporary Invincibility Potion}, {Mobility Potion}, accessory, and the skill {Warrior's Will} to keep himself mobile at all times.

Naturally, by flying around amongst the players with his glowing, radiant wings on his back, he had become a strawmen's target for all enemies. He had to fly back to Han Ying Xue and have her and other healers heal him urgently. He was the main attacker then, hence, he had gained the utmost healing priority there. Despite having a crazy long HP, with more than 10 healers focusing their heals on him, his HP bar was filled back instantly without much delay!

Finally, after a painful 1000 seconds later, Zhang Yang had amassed a full bar of 100 EP. He then targeted a random European player and used {Charge Up Strike.}

Charging!

The priest was stunned at his damage-less swing and jumped.

{God of War Devastation}!

SHRING!

A total of 101 swords appeared in the air around him and flew towards

101 targets, dealing 2,200,000 damage to 101 targets!

SHRING!

The Sword of Purging Devourer procced its effect and 101 swords appeared again!

Zhang Yang had earlier set his attack mode to Regional Targets only. All of his attacks would not hits players from China, hence, there was no need to hesitate at the moment of attack! Paired with Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and other A and B Inheritance players, their combined attacks had instantly killed 89 players! 12 of them were fast enough to escape the grim reaper's grasp at the very last second by activating their life preserving skills.

Zhang Yang's feat was instantly noticed by all. What sort of power does he have to kill close to 100 players in their Transformation mode?

The attackers started to fall, not physically, but mentally. Even though they had once witnessed Zhang Yang godly powers in the War Canyon, it was only players of Japan and Korea. At then, Zhang Yang had displayed his powers to all top tier players from all 8 regions of the game server! Let none remain oblivious to his name!

In truth, some had over speculated Zhang Yang's prowess. To be able to deal such immense power, Zhang Yang would have to accumulate 100 EP! It was 1,000 seconds! Others might had a different perception. The only thing they could think off was that Zhang Yang could easily whip out 202 swords in the air and kill 101 players without a problem!

It was truly a magnificent sight to behold. When Zhang Yang activated {God of War Devastation} the invading 7 regions players were all held back. China was able to grasp the opportunity to push back and gain control of the church slowly.

90 minutes...100 minutes...120 minutes...Slowly, yet unconsciously, 2 hours had passed in a flash. From over 20,000 attacks, China was able to hack away their numbers down to only 2,500 and below. However, China had lost a great deal of fighters as well. The odds were 100 against 2,500!

120 minutes...130 minutes...150 minutes...

"It's about time." Hourglass Figure opened her inventory U.I and took out a scroll. She tore the scroll in half and tossed both parts into the sky.

[Forbidden Scroll: Ice Age] (Usable)

Use: Relives the past of the Ice Age! Deals Ice based attack to all targets within 5 kilometers of the caster. Deals 10% HP as damage per second. Damage dealt cannot exceed over 100,000 damage per instance. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 100

The entire castle, in fact, the entire forest of Mar Gaia was blanketed in thick snow. Ice covered the ground they stood upon and countless ice swords formed in the ground to stab players around. As long as the players are not of the Land of Savage, everyone and everything within the area will receive damage. Even if they were players from India as well!

It was not something out of her character. She was merely being selfish as usual. In fact, within a region itself, guild wars were a common scenario. She wanted to eliminate all her competitors, both foreign and domestic!

Right then, the sky was scorched with a bright amber hue. White clouds were quickly replaced with red crimson clouds that rained down fireballs! Buildings, houses, huts, and even trees were destroyed! It was as if judgment day had come and there was nowhere safe for you!

It was another [Forbidden Scroll]. The Falling Starfire, cast by Seductive Wild Pussy of the European region!

Now that it has come to that, Captain America whipped out his own scroll and cast it out.

It was [Forbidden Scroll: Earth Shaker]!

Three [Forbidden Scrolls], three catastrophes, one chaotic battleground.

Chapter 688: Backstabbing

Three [Forbidden Scrolls] were used simultaneously. Zhang Yang could only assume that they had meant to target anyone that did not belong to their own respective guilds. As such, players with at least 1 million HP would lose 300,000 HP per second. That means that, it would take only 4 seconds to be killed! As for players with more than 1 million HP, they would also experience 300,000 damage per second. What more, the damage inflicted from the [Forbidden Scroll] would not be affected any defensive means!

Even though the names of the scrolls, and the attacks differed from each other, wotj each producing different destructive animations, however, all three scrolls dealt the same amount of damage! The total damage a player receive would be 9 million damage! However, that would only apply to players who were not from Land of Savage, Judgement, and Justice League. Since each of the guild will take one less scroll-worth of damage, the total damage they would receive would be 6 million.

Even well-equipped B class Inheritance players would find themselves having only over 5,000,000 HP, at best. Tank class player would have more. Sadly, tank or not, most of the players had already been enduring the brutal battle for more than half the time. Naturally, most of the skills were used to protect themselves, even though having a healer with an Inheritance could bolster their survival rate. However, equipment aside, having even S class Transformation would boost the DPS by only 3 times. Healing would be the same. B class Inheritance players would, at most, have 2 times the healing rate. With that little of a boost, they could barely survive on their own, so how would they heal others?

As the countless of icy spikes, fireballs, and the earth shaking blows came raining, the number of survivor remaining on the field started to reduce sharply. If only one [Forbidden Scroll] was used that time, C class Inheritance players would survive at the tipping point. However, when three [Forbidden Scrolls] were used simultaneously, the destruction power could wipe out 95% of all players in the battlefield.

As for Zhang Yang, he had over 20,000,000 HP. With that vast amount of HP, he could take 6 [Forbidden Scroll]s worth of attacks and still walk it off. In fact, he had been waiting for such an attack and had all members of Lone Desert Smoke stand close to him. When he saw the drastic change in the environment, a signal or a hint that a strong attack was coming, Zhang Yang did not hesitate to use {Vanguard's Aggression} to save everyone.

The blue barrier burst out of Zhang Yang and enveloped all members nearby. Sadly, the damage from the [Forbidden Scroll] was a direct HP deduction, not an attack, rendering Zhang Yang's efforts of protecting the guild useless. It was not only {Vanguard's Aggression}, even the skill {Shield Wall}, {Ice Barrier}, accessory skills, or any Invincibility effects were useless against the power of the [Forbidden Scroll]!

That is the power of a rare [Forbidden Scroll]!

Many had died even after they had spammed all their survival skills. This was the second occasion when multiple [Forbidden Scrolls] were used.

"F*ck!" Zhang Yang started to be wary. Zhang Yang gathered his senses close and charged up front. With his 20 million HP still standing strong against three simultaneous use of [Forbidden Scroll], Zhang yang took the initiative to kill the surviving players around!

Typically, those players were not soldiers. Under heavy pressure and the change of the battlefield, most of them would have already lost the will to fight. They came to fight for the Command Order, not to slaughter each other!

Many of healers had already given up on healing for their MP well had run dry. Many had chosen to use their potions and bandages instead. However, using bandages in the middle of an attack be of no use to them. Then again, even if they could heal over 50,000 HP, it would do no good to them! However, when it comes to the end of the world, a tiny drop of hope was worth grabbing on to!

Zhang Yang swiftly commanded Felice to return to the Battle Companion U.I, which allowed the little girl to dodge the attack.

Unfortunately, the Phoenix would have to stay active in the field. At the very least, Zhang Yang had placed the healing responsibility to Han Ying Xue. Whenever she could, she would use her spare seconds to heal the Phoenix pet and keep it alive for as long as possible.

The only current player that dared to roam around the battlefield was Zhang Yang alone. Even Sun Xin Yu or Han Ying Xue would not dare to do the same even when they had the same S class Inheritances. The main reason was due to their class. They were considered to be "tofu

classes with inherently low HP. With Zhang Yang leaving their vicinity, they lost a total of 28% Vitality bonus from his aura. With less than 1.2 million HP, they had no choice but to remain on the defensive.

Zhang Yang slaughtered anyone he saw on the battle field. He wanted to kill all the Inheritance players. However, that required his attack power to be extremely strong. With {Charge Up Strike}, he could pull it off. However, the skill required a 1 minute cooldown time. Hence, even though right then, his original attack power was strong, the number of players who were killed by him were just a handful. That was before the coming of the [Forbidden Scroll]. Zhang Yang borrowed the damage inflicted on players by the scrolls and could now kill the players easily!

With the God of War Transformation active, Zhang Yang was the embodiment of calamity. A natural calamity that befalls upon all players! All sort of skills were unleashed, especially {Horizontal Sweep}. The sword's effect would proc out and deal repeated blasts of deadly attacks. The sort of attack coming from Zhang Yang was like pouring oil to a bon fire! Or rather, cutting the rope of the straw bridge when someone is struggling to cross over!

It was a pity, to others, 30 seconds might be an eternity, but for Zhang Yang, 30 seconds was not long enough for him to kill more players. 30 seconds was just enough for him to cast a {God of War Crushing Strike}, enough to deal 100,000 Chaos damage to only frighten some players.

30 seconds later, the world returned to normal. The skies cleared up, the ice melted, and the earth returned to its slumbering state. However, the

aftermath of the [Forbidden Scroll] was that of a nuclear fallout. Buildings and houses were completely flattened to the ground. The surviving players were reduced from 2,500 players, to only over 100!

Naturally, China had the greatest number of survivors based on percentage. That was all due to Han Ying Xue's super healing capabilities. Her skill {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} had restored 100% HP of all surviving players who were almost dying. Technically, players with more than 4,500,000 HP would have all their HP hacked away by the [Forbidden Scrolls]. A single use of {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} was enough to negate the usage of the scroll!

As expected of the S class Inheritance! No! It was all thanks to Han Ying Xue, the true Milkmaid Deity!

Zhang Yang managed to survive due to his tank constitution while some others relied on Han Ying Xue's super healing to survive. Unfortunately, many C class Inheritance players had died, even with her 100% healing rate. After all, there were three [Forbidden Scroll] used on them!

So far, the remaining survivors of China were 33 players, and 19 of them were of Lone Desert Smoke members. As for the other three guilds that used their [Forbidden Scroll], they had lost approximately 80% of their own members. As such, their healers had got to work at speed in order to revigorate all the half-dead members. As for the random players, all of them were only at 50%, at most!

Zhang Yang laughed and attacked his way out of the church. With a loud, cheerful voice, Zhang Yang shouted, "Thanks for the help!"

What in tarnation?

Hourglass Figure, Seductive Wild Pussy, and Captain America were infuriated. Based on their initial plan, the use of [Forbidden Scroll] was to reduce the number of competitors, however, their main objective was to kill the most annoying person! Zhang Yang!

Little did they know that the guilds had not formed a pact to use the [Forbidden Scrolls]. In fact, it was mere coincidence that they had brought along and used the [Forbidden Scrolls]. They were all forced into a

defensive stance and had pushed everything they had on healing to survive. Their uncoordinated actions had not only caused them their demise, but also helped Zhang Yang clear off random players!

Right then, although most of the players were killed, they were but scraps. The real threat were the three guilds that used their [Forbidden Scroll]. They were the only ones capable of standing with Lone Desert Smoke on equal grounds.

In short, they formed a quick alliance and shared a common goal. To kill the strongest player in Lone Desert Smoke and settle the rest for last.

If they had a thousand players, even Zhang Yang, the famous Iron wall of China would collapse, under concentrated fire. However, the number of players surviving on the battlefield could pose no threat to Zhang Yang. With utmost confidence, Zhang Yang welcomed them with opened arms and a wide grin on his face.

As long as Zhang Yang defeats the three remaining guilds, the battle would finally have its curtains fall.

However, the most undesirable event had occurred. A group of surviving players behind Lone Desert Smoke had launched their attack on Lost Dream, Wei Yan Er, and the rest of the guild members.

"WHAT THE F*CK ARE YOU GUYS DOING?!" Fatty Han was greatly infuriated. To protect himself, Fatty Han had dismounted his Hunter's pet and mounted on the Phoenix! With two B class Inheritance characters combining their HP, Fatty Han had gained a strong 10 million HP limit. He was almost like Zhang Yang, an un-killable cockroach. He drew his bow and opened fire the traitors. Unfortunately, the players had their information hidden.

It was not clear to whom where the traitors but the morale of the players were dropping greatly. Wei Yan Er and the rest of Lone Desert Smoke could only roar with agony as they changed their targets from the foreigners to their own men. The other enemies saw the commotion and charged abruptly at the church. It was a matter of luck. Whether or not they could kill the person that holds the Command Order, and endure for

another 30 minute to be the new owner.

Luckily, Snow Seeker and the other guild master were loyal to Zhang Yang. Instead of turning their backs, they protected Lone Desert Smoke and stopped the attack from the traitors. However, their numbers were only down to the last 5. Even though they were strong, they were still helpless.

Zhang Yang avoided fighting with Hourglass Figure for the moment, because he wanted to kill the weakened players. There was high chance that besides the guild master, other players would have little to no HP left after being bombarded by the [Forbidden Scroll]. Despite having elongated HP, healers could not heal the great HP lost in time! It is extremely hard to heal someone when their HP is at least 3 times longer than normal! It was possible, but that required more than 10 healers to heal just a single player. There were surely had to be more attackers than healers around at then! Surely, healers will find it harder to survive in the commotion earlier!

Zhang Yang charged into the mass and targeted players with less than 20% HP. He activated {Indiscriminate} and laid down the killing blows.

{Killing Cleave}! {God of War Devastation}! {God of War Heavy Axe}!

Each of his attacks were over a million damage. There were not simply attacks that could harm. No. They were meant to kill!

"Zhan Yu! You shall die right here!" Hourglass Figure finally chased after Zhang Yang and shot him with an arrow.

The current battle greatly differs from the war in War Canyon. This time, they would have to kill Zhang Yang since the Command Order was in his possession.

Zhang Yang grinned, "Do you really think that I can't kill you now?"

Zhang Yang flapped his wings and soared to her side. With a clean swing of his sword, Zhang Yang landed a cleave on her back.

Instead of playing chase with Zhang Yang, she stood there and fought him head on. She possessed the passive skills that removed the blind spot

of a Hunter. (A Hunter cannot attack a target within 3 meters.). Her attacks were some sort of homing missiles. She shot arrows into the sky that could fly down and backward and struck Zhang Yang in his back. The attack had successfully dealt full damage, since they ignored the Defense value of the shield.

Chapter 689: The New Territory

Zhang Yang was left with over 9 million HP left. Hourglass Figure planned to have Zhang Yang attack her, so that others might have the chance to attack him instead!

Zhang Yang applauded her strategy. By having an S class Inheritance, she was more than qualified to have him, another S class Inheritance holder to fight her. As for the attacks, she was more than capable of being on par with him, and with coordinated attacks, Zhang Yang could be killed.

Zhang Yang grinned and cast {Glare of the Death God}! Success!

A dark cloud formed on top of Hourglass Figure's character and crystallized into a grinning skull! Although the skill rarely ever worked on a boss, whenever it is used on a player or a monster, it would be a sure hit!

Zhang Yang snapped his fingers and called out Felice. Together, they attacked Hourglass Figure as rapidly as they could. Since {Glare of the Death God} deals damage by attack counts instead of attack damage, you might as well call out for more pairs of hands!

Devastator!

WHAM!

A large gigantic mechanical servant was summoned out and joined the battle. Every second counted for the skill's required attacks to proc its damage. With three entities attacking Hourglass Figure, it's a 30% chance of triggering the effects!

Perhaps she was unlucky that day. After just one second, the {Glare of the Death God} was triggered, the black skull grinned and opened its jaws wide to bite down on Hourglass Figure from above, leaving her with only 1 HP left. She had nothing left to defend with. All her defensive, evasive, and invincibility skill were used up trying to survive, during judgment day. There were a few healers who rushed into the fight and healed her. However, no matter how strong their heals were, if they could not heal

20% of her total HP in that instant, it would be doom for her. As such, Zhang Yang laid down a {Killing Cleave} and ended her life.

"AH!" With her cries, Hourglass Figure was now the first S class Inheritance player to fall.

Zhang Yang flew upwards into the sky and back to Han Ying Xue's side. She healed him immediately and scolded him for coming back with only so little HP left. Zhang Yang had paid a rather steep price to have Hourglass Figure killed. His 20 million HP was hacked down to left with only 3 million HP. Han Ying Xue scolded him again and again to remind him that the Command Order was in his possession. He cannot afford to be killed, now that the countdown was almost over!

However, while Zhang Yang had retreated back to his "headquarters", it did not mean that he could not attack. {God of War Crushing Strike} could reach out by as far as 50 meters radius around him. Even though it might take some time to charge up his EP up, each strike could deal as much as 120,000 Chaos damage. The battleground was not as large, now that many players had already perished. The best part, was that the players who still survived were all left with little HP. Taking 120,000 Chaos damage was something that they could not afford!

100...80...40...and the number still dropped. Even though Lone Desert Smoke had accepted the help from Snow Seeker, their surviving players were not doing too well. Mountain Mover does not put much time in battle and grinding. Hence, it was not strange for someone like him to not own an Inheritance. He had already been a target for assassination before the [Forbidden Scroll] was used. Since there were not much strategy to fight with left, and none was needed as well, the battleground was left with few players, but with strong killing intent.

Despite being left with only a few players, they were but the strongest players. Hence, with no time at all, Snow Seeker and the other guild masters were killed, leaving only Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, and Fatty Han left on China's side. Fatty Han was able to hold out longer than he had expected since he was able to mount on the Phoenix during its Transformation status. The rest of the

team were at least A class Inheritances with a strong boost of HP. On the other hand, the enemy's side still had over 30 players standing. Right then, their current alliance still holds until Zhang Yang's death. After the Command Order was dropped, the battleground will return to be a chaotic mess.

The time on the countdown timer was ticking with 18 minutes on the clock...

"KILL ZHAN YU! AIM FOR ZHAN YU ALONE!" People started to panic as the time was cutting short. Since there were little to 30 players left on the battlefield, they gathered together, banded up and aimed for Zhang Yang alone. At that point, Zhang Yang had over 7 million HP. Han Ying Xue's MP was finally drained clean after healing him with everything she had and would require some time to recharge. It was the best opportunity to kill Zhang Yang right there and then!

"Haha! Things have gotten pretty interesting, I reckon. Which one would you want to fight?" said Zhang Yang as he unleashed his last trump card. Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow Clone} technique and created 5 copies of himself! All of them shared the same image as him and 7 million HP!

Zhang Yang had already pumped {Shadow Clone} to Level 5, which allowed him to summon a total of 5 shadow clones. Accounting himself into the fray, there was a total of 6 Zhang Yangs on the field!

Which one?! All 30 pairs of eyes were instantly dazed.

Confused, baffled, or rather bamboozled! Although they knew that their AoE attacks could hit them all, targeting even a single one of them would take a lot of time! 7 million HP is not a small amount! If they are extremely unlucky, they would have to kill deal 42 million damage to determine the real one!

"HAHAHAHA!" All 6 Zhang Yang laughed with the same manner and charged at the enemies. Although the information was only known to Zhang Yang and his friends, the enemies did not know that the shadow clones could only last for 120 seconds! There was no time to lose!

Each of the shadow clones could only deal 10% of Zhang Yang's original

attack, hence, 5 shadow clones would increase Zhang Yang's overall DPS to 50%! The key point of Zhang Yang using the skill was not for its attack but for its psychological attack! The enemies did not know that the shadow clone could only deal 10% of Zhang Yang original attack. Hence, when they saw 6 Zhang Yangs coming right at them, what could they think of!? Just one of him could cause enough trouble to the heavens! Right then, there were 6 of him! How would one react to that?

Fortunately, the players there were left on the battlegrounds were veterans. They knew how to calm themselves and to formulate a plan at the very last second. If they were just amateurs or beginners, they would have sh*t themselves when they saw 6 Zhang Yang coming at them!

Even so, their morale suffered a great fall. Wavering, the enemies could not come up with any countermeasures of dealing with the shadow clones. Wei Yan Er took the chance and struck at them! Sun Xin Yu dashed in as well. She cast {Soul Cleansing} and could kill anyone within 5 minutes! No one could run away from death's grasp then!

2 minutes' up, and four shadow clones disappeared. One of them was killed, leaving the real Zhang Yang laughing at them. Lone Desert Smoke still stood strong with no casualties, while the enemy was left with 24 players.

It was a 6 vs 24 player battle. However, albeit the disadvantage in numbers, Lone Desert Smoke stills hold the upper hand of the battle. It was due to three S class Inheritance holders! Their combined power and endurance had turned Lone Desert Smoke as solid as an impregnable iron fortress!

The main reason why they were still at a disadvantage, even though they had 24 surviving players, was due to their allegiance. They were not all from a single guild and did not share a common goal. They could kill Zhang Yang with their numbers, but at what cost? It would not make sense if they have to offer their lives for someone else's region to win the war! In the end, they were all there for a single purpose, to kill and claim the Command Order and own the new Territory!

As the number of players dropped, the doubt in their heart increased exponentially. Each player did not want to go all out and wanted to keep their trump card until they could get a hold of the Command Order. That is, if only Zhang Yang was killed. When one stops to think, they had unconsciously provided Zhang Yang and his team breathing room to counterattack. 5 ultra-strong DPS and one super-charged healer, it was a battle where Zhang Yang could not lose.

In the end, the enemy's side was left with lesser and lesser players. Captain America roared, "You all are a bunch of selfish pricks! Why are you still holding back! That's Lone Desert Smoke's 5 strongest players, right there! If we can't kill Zhan Yu, no one gets the Command Order! Use all your ultimate skills and wipe them all clean! Only after Lone Desert Smoke is defeated, we can settle the score between ourselves, afterwards! You want to lose it all now!?"

His words made sense then. Or rather, the players on the battlefield were started to get weary of the fight. Any command they receive would be complied instantly. Hence, in an instant, all 18 players left on the battlefield had unleashed their hidden skill. Han Ying Xue's MP was already drained to the last drop. With no resources left to support her team, she could only stand at the corner of the church and watch teammates' HP bars being whacked down.

Zhang Yang reacted quickly. He gulped down a bottle of [Temporary Invincibility Potion] and cast {Vanguard's Aggression} to protect all 6 of them.

"Kill!"

Zhang Yang had managed to create a short 10-second window to attack and command his team to lay it all out. Instead of targeting anyone, Zhang Yang took charge and marked one player at a time to maximized the killing rate. By then, none of the players on the field had a full HP bar. In fact, most of them had only half HP at most. Hence, Zhang Yang started weeding out the lowest HP player first and killed him within two volleys of attack.

15...13...11...

By the time the enemies had been cut down to 10, Zhang Yang was the only person amongst all six of them who had been taking damage. However, he was still holding strong. His iron-clad defense was so strong that no one was able to hurt him when he had been killing them continuously! Having 1% HP or 99% HP does not affect a player's attack power, unlike the real world where the more damage you sustain, the less damage you could deal. Zhang Yang's character was able to take all the damage, and he forced himself to take them all for the team! With Han Ying Xue healing everyone with every drop of MP she regained, the team's destructive power had not dropped a single bit!

The end of the war was in sight. In truth, if none of the guild masters had used their [Forbidden Scrolls], it would have been extremely hard to predict how would the battle unfolds. After all, with numbers, even ants could take down an elephant. In fact, Lone Desert Smoke's powers versus the combined forces of the other region's guilds would be a landslide.

Thanks to the usage of the [Forbidden Scroll] and Han Ying Xue's super milk, the number of hostiles on the battlefield was reduced dramatically and the survivability of Lone Desert Smoke, or rather, China's defenders were extremely high! It was an unexpected turn of events. The enemies, plural, had mistakenly helped Zhang Yang to ease his burden!

A [Forbidden Scroll] is valuable but not as valuable as a Territory. However, the enemy was left burning in the war and Zhang Yang had poured petrol over them! All three players, Hourglass Figure, Seductive Wild Pussy, and Captain America had regretted their action so much that they now wished that they had sat down to discuss the attack plan!

Zhang Yang and his party had killed every single surviving member of the enemy. Even though the countdown had not ended yet, the battle was already over. The winner only had yet to step up to the podium.

While sitting and resting, Han Ying Xue suddenly asked, "Back then, when we were left with around 20 players, who were the bastards that backstabbed us?"

She had almost lost her life if she had not forgotten about activating an accessory skill. Without Han Ying Xue in the field, Lone Desert Smoke could have lost everything in the war.

Zhang Yang scoffed coldly. "The only people I could think of are The Dominators and The Myth. However, judging by the capabilities, the only guild that was capable of pulling such a feat would be Eternal Flame!"

The guild, Eternal Flame had been extremely active for the past few months. They had been actively recruiting strong players and even hosted strong class Inheritance holders in the guild. Zhang Yang did not cough out the name so casually. He had thought about it since the guild did have potential. Members of the guild Eternal Flame had been on passive mode ever since the start of the battle. They had chosen to hide in the corner of the church and pretended to fight. Instead of taking hits, they had chosen to lay low and reserve all their HP restoration skills at bay. That was the reason why many were able to survive the attack of three simultaneous {Forbidden Scroll} activation.

"Those bastards! They had hidden away their profile info! We have no proof!" said Wei Yan E.

"Are we officers of the law?" Zhang Yang turned to Sun Xin Yu and placed his fingers on supple lips. "Are we cops? Do we need proof? This is not China. This is a game! There are no rules! If we can pinpoint the real culprit, we will wage war with them. It's that simple," said Zhang Yang as he lowered his fingers.

"That's awesome!" Wei Yan Er cried. "So, when are we gonna start a war?"

There was no one else that was as battle lusted as the little girl. Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he felt that it was fortunate for him to take over the position of guild master from her.

5 minutes later, the countdown timer disappeared and Zhang Yang was now the owner of Sauron's Castle. Zhang Yang immediately walked over to several spots to examine its compound. He then chose two areas in the castle and set up two Teleportation Points. One leads to White Jade Castle,

and the other leads to Morning Town. Both Teleportation points were One-Way transports, if he had not set up the same manner of Teleportation Point in Morning Town, Zhang Yang would have to fork out a large sum of money for the Energy Crystals. These were incredibly expensive! When there's a chance for him to save some gold, Zhang Yang would go to all ends for it. He would rather spend some gold coins to reward the players who had participated in the war rather than spend them for the game developers to exploit.

Chapter 690: Background of the Eternal Flame

In a Territory Conquest, everyone was logically eligible to snatch the Territory Order for themselves. The system did not say that the other China Region players could not snatch the Territory Order from Zhang Yang. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang had paid quite a substantial amount of 'price' before he got Snow Seeker and her guild to 'work' for Lone Desert Smoke.

From that point of view, Zhang Yang did not mind having Eternal Flame snatch the Territory Order from him.

However, the fact that irked Zhang Yang so much that he was infuriated was that Eternal Flame was reserving their strength while they were using other guilds as their 'shield' to protect themselves. They had waited for the Lone Desert Smoke to face the worst situation before they charged in and gave Lone Desert Smoke a stab in the back. It was infuriating, even for the others! It was not acceptable at all!

Therefore, the moment when the Territory Conquest was over, Zhang Yang gave the order to his guild to declare war over the Eternal Flame. Including the Alliances of Lone Desert Smoke, over 80,000 high Tier players were involved in hunting down the Eternal Flame.

The guildmaster of the Eternal Flame was very generous at throwing his money into the guild. The strength of the guild had grown incredibly fast because of that. However, they were not able to outgrow the strength of Lone Desert Smoke in just a few days. Under the heavy assaults, infused with the wrath of Lone Desert Smoke, the Eternal Flame was suffering heavy casualties.

The slaughtering went on for 7 days straight!

Some would say that Lone Desert Smoke was showing everyone who was the boss. They had not attained enough evidence yet before they launched their attacks on the Eternal Flame. They suspected that Lone Desert

Smoke was taking advantage over a guild that was growing stronger. Some would support the Lone Desert Smoke. They would say that the Eternal Flame was using money to buy high Tier players. The first impression that they gave was that the guild was like a marketplace. Their actions would only shame the China Region! Hence, they deemed that it was necessary for Lone Desert Smoke to hit them hard in the face.

However, there were also others that were 'passionate; watching the drama from aside. The outcome of this madness would not concern them at all after all. They were also bored at having nothing to do at the moment. So they could just enjoy a good show of a war between two powerful guilds. They could also make topics out of the battle on the forums so that they could have something interesting to discuss there.

However, the war only lasted for 7 days. Zhang Yang had ceased the assaults on the Eternal Flame after that. Everything went calm once again. However, the war ended, not because Zhang Yang wanted to. Zhang Yang put an end to the war because many guildmasters had advised him to.

Even Snow Seeker had to be frank with Zhang Yang. She told Zhang Yang that she received a certain amount of stress from someone powerful, on the higher levels of management of the city. That someone wanted her to persuade Zhang Yang to stop the war. That someone even threatened Snow Seeker that if Zhang Yang would not stop right away, Crimson Rage would be forced to declare war on Lone Desert Smoke. Well, she was threatened with the leverage of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings's market. That someone would pull a couple of strings to cripple the market of Crimson Cosmetic Holdings.

Although Crimson Cosmetic Holdings was indeed a large-scale company that was very influential in the market, they would not have the capability to go against the power of Politics. If the officials denounce Crimson Cosmetic Holdings by reporting negative news and information about them in public, the related departments would have the tendency to launch a full investigation on Crimson Cosmetic Holdings. If that happens, any company would have huge issues later on!

Therefore, Snow Seeker had to be totally honest with Zhang Yang, that

she had to follow the order for the sake of all her employees under her company.

Other than Snow Seeker, other guildmasters, such as Greensleeves Prince and Sword of Light were also expressing their stand, where they were pressurized to persuade Zhang Yang to stop oppressing the Eternal Flame. Or else, every guild would be standing against Lone Desert Smoke!

It would still be acceptable if only a few guildmasters were saying the same thing at the same time. However, Zhang Yang had over hundreds of guildmasters saying the same thing! He could not help but feel shocked!

How powerful exactly is the person behind the Eternal Flame? Who could the mysterious Dragon Marquis really be?

Although Lone Desert Smoke was still the Number One guild in the entire China Region, Zhang Yang was not so arrogant that he would believe he could take on all guilds in the entire China Region! Therefore, he had to cease his assaults on the Eternal Flame and end the war at once. Afterwards, he sent the guild back to grinding their levels.

At least the storm had calmed down for the moment. Those who did not know about the truth would think that Lone Desert Smoke had enough of slaughtering. However, Zhang Yang had a glimpse of worry towards the Eternal Flame. Well, this guild had never appeared in his previous life before. So, which butterfly in the butterfly effect had fluttered its wings so much that the situation had changed so much?

Zhang Yang passed the responsibility of investigating the background of 'Dragon Marquis' to Sun Xin Yu. After all, she is a good detective. She also has one hell of a background. So, what kind of information couldn't she find out, then? If Sun Xin Yu is unable find out anything about this 'Dragon Marquis', then no one else should be able to do it as well!

For the next few days, Zhang Yang led his party at grinding their levels with a heavy heart. They were trying to attain Level 150 as soon as possible, so that they would not have to suffer the effects of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game on the Level 150 – 180 maps. Previously, their top priority was to take down the Territory. They were not in a

favorable position to afford any delays for that. However, it was a little different this time around. They were going over to the Spider Kingdom just to complete their quest. That quest had been left on their quest list for over a year, now. So, it would not affect them much if they waited for another few more days first before departing for the location.

Zhang Yang made some [Invincible Potions] whenever he had the time. He only placed a small number of this potion to sell at his Little Merchandize Shop. Each bottle was tagged at 200 gold pieces. That amount of value would be 50 times higher than its initial cost! It was sold as a luxurious good in the game! Apparently, this sort of potion was designed for buyers who are filthy rich and love to show off during PvP matches.

However, Zhang Yang needed the fame that the [Invincible Potion] could bring to his shop. He needed that fame to boost the sales of all the Mythical Tier equipment in his shop. As expected, the gross sales for this Little Merchandize Shop increased tremendously because of the [Invincible Potion]. Fatty Han, Hundred Shots and the rest of his gang were constantly cheering, because they would be taking a share out of the profit, after all.

The [Book of Revelation] was the one thing that Zhang Yang could not fathom.

He checked the official website and he still could not find anything about it. Furthermore, it was nothing similar to an [Inheritance Fragment] at all. If you bring the item into a new map, this part of the [Book of Revelation] would not have an automated function where the quest notification would inform you whenever you are near to another part of the item. Of course, there was also a possibility that the maps that Zhang Yang had visited did not have any of the parts of the item. Hence, there was no notification, whatsoever.

According to Zhang Yang's understanding, if one collects all Chapters of this [Book of Revelation] and put them together according to their chapter sequence, the additional damage effect would definitely be increased. The resurrection time or the amount of HP would also receive improvements

as well. However, it remained to be known if there would be any other additional effects.

The party headed over to the Mar Gaia Forest to grind their levels. There was no one else there to snatch their monsters. They could just find a spot most saturated with monsters. Then, they could just lure as many monsters as they could handle and slaughter the monsters. That could really boost their grinding efficiency to the point that others would drop their jaws if they could see what they were doing.

Practically speaking, the most important thing in grinding levels would be to pick a spot where players could farm as long as they like. Or else, it would be pointless, even if you have a one-hit-kill kind of Skill!

When 'God's Miracle' was having its two-year anniversary, Zhang Yang was the first player to hit Level 150. He remained the number one, top leading player on the leaderboard of the server. Currently, the first 15 players according to their levels were as below:

1. Zhan Yu, Class S God of War Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 150
2. Frost Night, Class S Shadow Dancer Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 148
3. Heart of Destruction, Class S God or Arcane Magic Inheritance, Dark Palace, North America Region, Level 147
4. Hourglass Figure, Class S Shadow Striker Inheritance, Land of Savages, India Region, Level 147
5. God's Left Hand, Class S Apocalyptic Knight Inheritance, Paragon, Europe Region, level 147
6. Drizzler, Class A Darkness Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 147
7. Little Snow, Class S Milkmaid Deity Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 147
8. Daffodil Daydream, Class A Soul Breaker Inheritance, Lone desert

Smoke, China Region, Level 146

9. Lost Dream, Class B Snowman Inheritance, Lone Desert Smoke, China Region, Level 146

10. Dusk Phoenix, Class A Blood Angel Inheritance, Paragon, Europe Region, Level 146

11. Captain America, Class A Titan Inheritance, Justice League, North America Region, Level 145

12. Snow Seeker, Class A Frost Phoenix Inheritance, Crimson Rage, China Region, Level 145

13. Seductive Wild Pussy, Class A Arachnid Inheritance, Judgement, Europe Region, Level 145

14. Scholar Musou, Class A Lord of Flame Inheritance, Eternal Flame, China Region, Level 145

15. Longrich, Class A Death Swamp Inheritance, Eternal Flame, China Region, Level 145

The entire list of the Leaderboard had been occupied with the names of players with high-Class Inheritances. The first 5 names on the top of the list were the names of 5 players with Class S Inheritance. If Han Ying Xue was not a Healer, she could have taken over the 6th place. When that happens, the top 6 players on the list would all be players with Class S Inheritances.

Lost Dream was the only player with Class B Inheritance to force himself into the Top 15 positions on the Leaderboard. Part of the main reason, being he always tagged along Zhang Yang and the gang while grinding his level up. Secondly, he had also spent quite a large sum of money on purchasing [Experience Books] to feed his own Experience Point Bar. Furthermore, he was also a skillful, high Tiered player himself! That is why he had been able to become the only player with a Class B Inheritance on the Leaderboard list.

However, Zhang Yang was irked by the Leaderboard this time around. First of all, he could no longer choose to stay unranked. He could no

longer keep an element of surprise to show himself off, even if he wanted to. Of course, with his current fame, he couldn't stay low, even if he wants to.

Most importantly, the Leaderboards had blatantly revealed everyone's Inheritance to the public! Although the names of the Inheritance would not reveal much information about the Inheritances, it was just annoying to see your Inheritance being listed out into the public. It felt like one's privacy and hidden triumph card is being invaded.

Zhang Yang could clearly remember that the Leaderboard in his previous life was very different from this one. Meanwhile, everyone could choose not to appear on the Leaderboards, if they choose not to be. Furthermore, the Leaderboard did not reveal everyone's secrets, such as Inheritance Names and Levels.

In other words, the details in this life compared to his previous life had changed much.

However, the fact that China Region dominated the Leaderboard was a fact that the China Region should be proud of. 9 of them had made it onto the Leaderboard. That being said, they had dominated over 60% of the list. Their claim was much larger than the sum of other Regions combined! Meanwhile, among the 9 players, most of them were from Lone Desert Smoke! 6 of them had made it to the Leaderboard!

Nevertheless, Zhang Yang felt a little pressurized at seeing the two names that belonged to the Eternal Flame.

Scholar Musou was quite a renowned player in Zhang Yang's previous life. However, he was the ace for a guild by the name Breaking Dawn. So Zhang Yang had not expected to see that this player in Eternal Flame instead. Zhang Yang had never encountered that fellow, because he was not that powerful in his previous life. He had no chance at all of encountering that person. All he knew was that Scholar Musou was a Berserker and he became famous because of his detailed and precise controls.

On the other hand, Longrich was a name completely unfamiliar to

Zhang Yang!

Well, the game was not short of skillful and powerful players, after all. Because of some unforeseen circumstances, they had remained in the shadows for the moment without having the chance to show their faces to the public. For instance, in his previous life, if Zhang Yang could have gotten some support and care from any large-scale guild in boosting his level and providing him some high Tier equipment, he could have become one of the most fearsome players in the history of the game!

Therefore, Zhang Yang was being extra careful, even though he had not heard such a name in his previous life. Who knows, how well a player could perform with a great deal of money supporting him from behind.

Chapter 691: Spider Kingdom

However, it would be pointless to be in fear all the time. Zhang Yang had never underestimated his opponents. He would not fear them either just because they were powerful as well. On the contrary, Zhang Yang had enough confidence that he would be able to triumph over his opponents, as long as his opponents were of equal level and equipment.

Furthermore, his current level and equipment Tier were the best in the entire world now. He also had an extremely powerful Battle Companion, Felice, and a Legendary Tier pet mount! Who could best his current attributes now?

Upon reaching Level 150, Zhang Yang had another new Skill Point to add to his {Shadow Clone}. With the new upgrade, he could now summon up to 6 Shadow Clones at the same time. Once he activates his {Shadow Clone}, 7 Zhang Yang would become a threatening existence that would send anyone trembling in fear!

After switching to his Demon Slayer's Ring and Dark Star Shield, Zhang Yang's Attack power did not increase much. However, his HP and Defence had increased immensely!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 150

HP: 779,420 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 14,890

Attack: 81,479 – 101,719 ((32205-40205) *253%)

Damage Absorption: 10,606

Critical Rate: 21%

Lucky Strike Rate: 2.9%

Currently, the Physical Attack on a player or a monster must reach over 28,147 in order to penetrate that thick Defence of Zhang Yang. On the other hand, the Magic Attack of a player or a monster must reach at least

13,257 in order to cause effective damage. These attributes did not even include his {God of War Transformation} yet. If he had another 20% damage immunity, his attributes would be even more terrifying.

Felice and Phoenix pet had also hit Level 150 and had their 'equipment' upgraded automatically. However, because it was just like upgrading a Level 140 Ethereal equipment to a Level 150 Ethereal equipment, his improvement did not even exceed 10%. Hence, it was much more normal in that sense.

After farming monsters for another couple of days, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er finally hit the level cap of Level 150. The party no longer had any reason to stay in the Mar Gaia Forest. Instead, they made way to Spider kingdom to finally complete the quest that had been sitting in their quest list for over a year.

The Spider Kingdom was just as its name sounded like. Not long after they set foot on the map, they could see spider webs blanketing every corner of the mountains. There were black, grey, flowery, big, small, gigantic spiders all over the place. Wei Yan Er and the ladies were very disgusted by the scenery.

Though the map's main theme centered around 'Spider', there were also other sorts of beings in the surroundings. There was also a substantial amount of wild boars and gigantic bats roaming in the forest. These monsters were acting as the predators hunting on the little spiders. However, if they ever meet giant spiders that were much larger than them, they would become the prey instead, being hunted by the gigantic spiders.

These spiders did not just weave their webs across the ground, in between the forest and in between the valleys. They were also all over the sky! Furthermore, the webs in the sky were actually more than the webs in the surroundings on the ground. The moment when a pet mount touches these webs, they would be paralyzed for over half a minute.

Therefore, the party decided to take the route on the ground. Though they had encountered a large number of spiders, it only took them approximately 1 second to kill each of the spiders. Hence, the spiders did

not slow them down at all.

After progressing onwards for about half an hour, the party had entered a thick forest. There, they finally managed to see humanoid beings in the area.

The place could still be considered as a village, albeit an unconvincing one. However, the design of the buildings did not belong to humans, elves or orcs, or even dwarfs. The buildings were actually formed from layers of spider webs. Many Spider Men were crawling on the spider webs on their eight legs. Their butts were attached to strings of spider web thread. Some of the spider web threads were ended with a beast tied up, while some ended up with just items and belongings. The scenery looked amazing.

Spider Man!

[Burrow Forest Spider Man] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level 155

HP: 98,160

The unique thing about this was that these spiders with human faces were all green-named monsters. They did not automatically attack players who approached them. Instead, they would provide the players quests and some of them would even sell something special.

Zhang Yang and his gang kept their mount into their inventory and they walked on foot towards the 'village'. Instantly, their arrival attracted the attention of many Spider Men. A crowd of onlookers formed around Zhang Yang and his gang. as if they had never seen men before. Their facial expressions on their face were surprisingly humane. They were most probably wondering why the appearance of Zhang Yang and his gang looked so bizarre to them.

"Hahaha! So ugly!"

"My lord, what kind of mutation is this? I wonder what is the origin of their species!"

"They look like freaks! They actually only have 4 limbs!"

"How unfortunate that some of the females actually have cute and pretty faces. But their butts are so small! They do not look like they are good at producing offspring!"

The Spider Men were discussing about the appearance of Zhang Yang and his gang. They were criticizing Zhang Yang and his gang from head to feet, literally.

Han Ying Xue and the other ladies frowned intensely. These Spider Men were actually comparing their fine hot bodies to the body figures of a female spider with the face of a human! If they really had such body figures that would include a butt of the size of a bathtub, these ladies would rather die!

"Outsiders!" A male Spider man crawled out from the crowd with his eight legs. He had white hair and he had a thick beard too. Zhang Yang and his gang could not help but wonder how many years have this Spider Man lived. It appeared that this Spider Man had quite the reputation among the community of Spider Man. The others were clearing up a path so that he could walk up to Zhang Yang and his gang.

This human-faced spider was called Sandria The Wise. Although he was just a Normal Tier monster, he had a specific name on top of his head. It seemed that he was most likely the one who would give quests to the players.

Zhang Yang bowed and made a polite salute of an Adventurer, then he said, "My respected elder, we are Adventurers who hail from a faraway land called the White Jade Castle. We are in urgent of meeting the Spider God!"

Everyone in the surroundings looked at each other and burst into laughter. Sandria raised one of his legs up to calm the crowd. Then he said, "Humans, do you have any idea who are you meeting with? He is our god, the greatest among our gods! Even the true believers are not necessarily able to see him!"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "My respected elder, you can just tell us where to find the Spider God! As for whether he would like to see

us or not, we'll let Spider God himself decide!"

"I'm afraid that you are going to be disappointed in such regard." Sandria shook his head and said, "We can't allow you to interrupt our fatherly god even if you're here to worship him!"

Bastard! Wei Yan Er began to grind her teeth. She moved her battle axe around, facing Sandria's eight legs as if she was deciding which leg should she chop first.

"Argh ---"

Just when things were getting nowhere, a miserable scream was heard coming from afar followed by a loud rumble that shook the ground. The rumble was so loud that it could be described as deafening.

"It's Daday!" The facial expression of a face of a human-faced spider suddenly changed. Then he quickly raced towards the direction where the scream came from. However, after a brief moment, that same Spider Man turned back and screamed, "It's the Iron Back Rhinoceroses! Quickly go --- argh!"

Before he could finish his words, he also let out a miserable scream and that was it. He never got any chance to scream ever again.

"Iron Back Rhinoceros!" Everyone began to panic. They were like ants on a hot pot, beginning to scatter into the surroundings. Sandria was the only one who remained calm. Then he said, "Get onto the trees! Weave your webs as high as you can!"

"But The Wise One, how about our eggs?" one of the spiders was pointing his leg towards rows of white eggs beneath a tree.

Sandria's face became gloomy, instantly. Then he said, "There's nothing we can do about it..."

"Maybe we can do something about it!" Zhang Yang quickly cut in and said, "We shall drive away the Iron Back Rhinoceroses for you!"

The spiders revealed a sense of disdain on their faces. However, none of them were in the mood to ridicule Zhang Yang, as the situation was very

critical at the moment. They quickly shot their web strings to the top of the trees and pulled themselves up from the ground. After just awhile, they had climbed up to the trees staying at a safe distance from the ground. At the same time, the rumbling of the ground was getting louder and louder. Everyone knew that the Iron Back Rhinoceroses were approaching closer by the second.

Suddenly, a row of gigantic Iron Back Rhinoceroses charged out from the forest. They were charging forward like a row of bulldozers running down everything in front of them. The trees were ran down like nothing! Those Spider Men who were on the trees that got ran over quickly escaped to other trees that were closest to them.

[Iron Back Rhinoceros] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 160

HP: 104,448

Defence: 4,260

Melee-Attack: 20,992 – 30,992

Skills:

[Battering Horn]: Uses a sharp horn to flip the target in the air, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. If the target is stunned, this Skill will cause 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage.

[Brutal Trampling]: Tramples the ground and blasts all enemy targets that are within the range of 3-meter radius. Stuns all targets within the effective area for 5 seconds.

Note: The Iron Back Rhinoceroses are famous for having high Defence. However, that did not stop the Spider Man from making them into their favorite food. Hence, these Iron Back Rhinoceroses would sometimes gather together to get their revenge on the Spider Men.

"It's time to work!" Zhang Yang laughed. He did not summon out his Phoenix pet, this time. Instead, he just charged towards the monsters. With the first swing of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Zhang Yang

activated his {Blast Wave} and caused immense damage to the Iron Back Rhinoceroses. With that strike, he also stunned the monsters for 4 seconds.

The others began to round up on the Iron Back Rhinoceroses and unleashed their attacks on the monsters. The attacks of fire, magic, and swords were raining down upon the Iron Back Rhinoceroses. Those Normal Tier monsters did not even last any longer than 3 seconds before they collapsed onto the ground and died!

The spiders hiding on the trees dropped their jaws, as they stared straight at what was happening down there. They unintentionally lower down their web strings down while they were so focused on staring at Zhang Yang and his gang slaughtering the Rhinos up. They looked just like normal humans drooling. Strings of spider threads were dangling down from the trees, looking like white hairs hanging down from the trees. The scene was oddly spectacular.

Under the heavy assaults of the party, hundreds of Iron Back Rhinoceroses did not last any longer than a few minutes. It did not take long before Zhang Yang and his gang wiped out most of the monsters. The remaining monsters realized that they were out of their league. So they quickly turned their butts around and escaped. After the Rhinos rumbled their way out of the forest, the forest returned calm and peaceful once again.

However, the peace was broken by cheers of joy after a short while. The Spider Men were sliding down to the ground from the top of the tress. Then they began to dance with their 'traditional' dance moves. Their eight legs were moving oddly smooth and their dancing was oddly satisfying to look at. Well, Zhang Yang and his gang got a chance to feast their eyes upon something today.

"Human warriors that hail from afar, I must show our gratitude for fending off those foul beasts from our village and saving our next generation!" Sandria walked up to Zhang Yang and the rest of the gang with his eight legs. Then he made a gesture that suggested he was grateful for their help.

Well, if you spiders weren't so into the meat of those Iron Back Rhinoceroses, would you all be attacked, then?

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "No problem at all!"

"About the... erm..." Sandria revealed an embarrassed expression on his face and said, "I know that you wanted to meet our father of god. However, telling outsiders about the whereabouts of our Spider God would be blasphemous in our religion. I still cannot tell you about the whereabouts of our Spider God. However, you can head over to the Temple of Andros to seek out some quests. Upon completing some quests, you will be accepted as one of the believers of our religion. By then, you will be able to know the whereabouts of our great Spider God!"

Phew... at least they did not pointlessly kill the monsters this time!

Zhang Yang and his gang nodded and left the odd 'village'. Then, they followed the instructions given by Sandrio and made their way over to the Temple of Andros, located by the west.

Chapter 692: Red Dragon Pet

Apparently, Andros was not a location's name. It was actually the name of the Spider God. According to legend, the ancestors of this Spider Men had followed the God of Light long during the ancient times. Because the ancestor managed to perform exceptionally meritorious services for the God of Light, he was gifted with a part of the Divinity of the Gods.

When the great war among gods had ended, the gods had fallen one after another. Andros hid himself in the Spider Kingdom and lived a quiet life ever since. Of course, this location was not named as the Spider Kingdom when he first arrived. Well, this Spider 'Brother' could not stand the loneliness for long. So he 'shot' his 'junk' into a few female spiders.

Well, one female spider could lay many eggs at a time. Not long after that, a large army of spiders spawned into being, to conquer this land. They worshipped Andros like a god ever since. They even built many temples to enshrine him.

The number of temples built was so abundant that every 'village' that had Spider Men in it would come to know the existence of the Temple of Andros. The only difference between these temples were their sizes.

Zhang Yang and his gang understood that even though this land belonged to the spiders, but there were also factions among themselves. For instance, the spiders with human faces were the existence of the highest class among all of their kind. They had evolved so much that they attained intelligence just like humans. On the other hand, gigantic spiders and other kind of spiders only had the instincts of beasts. They were just like gorillas and monkeys.

Therefore, gigantic spiders and the other type of spiders did not just attack the beasts, they also treated the Spider Men the same, hunting them down as food!

Upon leaving the forest the sky was still covered with spider webs. Zhang Yang and his gang could only travel on foot like how they came into the map. After traveling on foot for over half an hour, they saw a

white temple within their sights.

That was the Temple of Andros.

After talking a bunch of crap with the Priests of the temple, Zhang Yang and his gang activated a new Reputation Meter --- Spider Kingdom. They were all deemed as Neutral for the moment. However, Zhang Yang and his gang were slightly disappointed after they took a look at the items being sold at the Reputation Shop by the temple.

It was not because everything was useless. It was because the items being sold were not as valuable as they thought they would be. For instance, the Recipe of [Level 6 Healing Potion] that Zhang Yang had an eye for requires his Reputation to be 'Admired' before he could buy the recipe. However, Zhang Yang remembered that this was not the only way of getting this recipe. He remembered seeing someone selling the potions in the Auction House in his previous life.

Polishing up 'Reputation' for a recipe that is not even 'exclusive' would not be worth the trouble and time. Everyone knew that building up Reputations would really be tiring and boring. No one would have done it if the Reputation Meter could not allow players to purchase certain rare and special items only.

Most importantly, Zhang Yang and his gang had no idea what kind of 'sequel' would they be triggering, upon completing the quest - 'Super Urgent News'. Would it even be worth their time and effort? The Priest at the temple had said it himself. They would send a few believers who were deemed to be the most sincere among them all over to the sacred location.

In this game, the most sincere hearts means the highest Reputation. Meanwhile, that sacred location should be the place where Andros was currently residing. Of course, the believers could only worship Andros from afar. However, Zhang Yang only needed to know exactly where Andros would be in order to complete the quest.

Unfortunately, only Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had the quest 'Super Urgent News'. This quest was not sharable to the others. Fatty Han and the rest of the party who did not

have the quest decided to grind their levels somewhere else.

In such circumstances, Fatty Han would say Zhang Yang and the 4 ladies were having a 5P while everyone else is gone. Of course, he had to say that in front of the ladies. Well, he paid the price of being beaten up by the ladies for saying such demeaning words. By the time the ladies were done with him, his face was so swollen that he looked like a pig.

Since that there were no dungeons or bosses to slay, grinding anywhere else would be the same. Furthermore, this map was very suitable for players to grind their levels, mainly because there were only a few people on this map. So, they would not have to compete against each other in killing monsters.

Zhang Yang and the 4 ladies began to camp on the map and ran errands to boost their Reputations. The quests for boosting Reputation were quite simple and straightforward. For example, they only had to kill tens of specific beasts.

While the quests were easy, naturally, the Reputation Points rewarded were not abundant either. In two days, the 5 of them only managed to elevate their Reputation up to 'Friendly'. They still had a long way ahead, before they even get themselves eligible to purchase the Recipe. So, it would take even more effort before they become 'the most sincere believers'.

Zhang Yang did not mind actually. He could have 4 pretty ladies to keep him accompanied. So it would not be boring for him at all, even if he is doing the same thing repeatedly. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue kept pulling Wei Yan Er's leg from time to time. Sometimes, the little brat was so annoyed that she began to scream and shout like a little b*tch. The atmosphere was never dull.

"Zhang Yang, I, I... I... I.... I ---" Just when they five of them were slaying monsters, Hundred Shots's voice suddenly came across the party channel. His voice was filled with joy and excitement.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. Then he asked, "Uncle Hundred Shots, are you going to become a dad for the second time?"

"Yea... no! Argh! I've got a new baby!" Hundred Shots began to lose his words, or perhaps, his mind as well!

"Huh? Uncle Hundred Shots, didn't your wife just give birth to a baby last November? So how ---"

"Wah! Uncle Hundred Shots! You're so bad! How could you secretly keep a mistress from your wife!?"

"Looks are deceiving! Look at him! Uncle Hundred Shots looks so honest and decent! I can't believe he would actually keep a secret mistress!"

"Haih... men will go bad when they're rich... The truth is always that painful!"

"Pui! I was wrong about you, uncle Hundred Shots!"

"No! No!" Hundred Shots quickly explained himself, "I'm not having a baby girl or baby boy in real life! I'm having a baby pet for Hunters!"

"Cheh!"

Everyone sighed. Should he be so happy and excited over a new baby pet?

Zhang Yang suddenly felt a rush in his chest. Could it be, that Hundred Shot had just acquired a Red Dragon Pet like he did in his previous life? He could not hold his smile in anymore. He joked and said, "Uncle Hundred Shots, don't tell me you got a Dragon pet! That would be even luckier than having a bird sh*t on you!"

"Huh? How did you ... You got it right!" Hundred Shot staggered for a while before he continued to talk, "I passed by a godforsaken jungle. Then I saw two monsters battling against each other. The mountains and the ground shook so heavily that I was sent flying and I fell into a cave! When I tried to get up on my feet, I saw a Dragon egg right beside me. After I took it up, it hatched and a red baby dragon came out of it!"

"A Dragon pet!"

Everyone was surprised. An accidental fall that could lead a person to a Red Dragon Pet? That is even better than a beginner's luck if you ask me!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. No wonder Hundred Shots did not reveal any details on how he got his Red Dragon Pet in Zhang Yang's previous life. It seemed that his luck was too good to be true when he got his Red Dragon Pet. Maybe, people would laugh so hard that they might lose some teeth if they ever knew about the truth behind it.

However, it was very fortunate for Zhang Yang as well. Although he had stirred up the butterfly effect a little, things that were not supposed to happen did not happen at all. For instance, Sun Xin Yu did get her Shadow Striker Inheritance and Hundred Shots had also acquired his Red Dragon pet. Zhang Yang had finally feel relieved after all this while.

The Red Dragon pet and the Phoenix pet were basically the same. Their Tiers would automatically improve as their levels increase. However, now the Red Dragon pet was only Level 0. No one could see the Skill Descriptions for the Red Dragon just yet. Therefore, Hundred Shots immediately took his Red Dragon pet out and went to grind its level up. In a few days time, Lone Desert Smoke would get another super powerful Hunter!

The amount of Experience Point that a pet needed to level up was far lesser than the amount of Experience Point that players required to level up. So, Hundred Shots managed to level up his Red Dragon pet up to Level 146. The power of the Red Dragon pet was beginning to show its form. It was amazing!

The Red Dragon pet was also similar to the Phoenix pet in the regard of their attacks and Skills. The Red Dragon pet only had {Dragon Breath} that could only attack one target at a time. However, the attack could also be spread out widely. This Red Dragon pet was a godlike pet that could do rare 'Normal Attacks' which could bring out the effect of AoE attack! The most impressive part of this pet was that its {Dragon Breath} could cause Chaos Damage to the targets. It was slightly more powerful than the Phoenix pet, in this sense.

The Fire Damage of the Phoenix pet could be reduced with a Fire Resistance attribute. However, there was no way that the Chaos Damage would be reduced in anyway or form.

If they are going to challenge bosses that are more than 20 levels higher than them, the existence of this Red Dragon pet could be one of the most powerful supporters that they could ever have!

Furthermore, upon reaching Level 100, the Red Dragon pet had also acquired the {Godly Dragon Transformation} which was as powerful as a Class B Inheritance Transformation Skill. That Skill could boost its Maximum HP, Attack and Defence as well. Although the Phoenix pet also had a Transformation Skill that was as powerful as a Class B Inheritance Transformation Skill, the Phoenix pet would lose out because of its Fire Attack attribute. Therefore, it would be slightly weaker compared to the Red Dragon pet.

Although the Phoenix pet had {Reborn from the Ashes}, it could no longer activate its Transformation Skill upon its resurrection through the activation {Reborn from the Ashes}. Well, no matter how powerful a pet without a Transformation Skill gets, there would still be a limit there.

Initially, Hundred Shots already had a Class B Inheritance. Now that he had acquired a Red Dragon pet which also has the capability of activating a Transformation Skill that is as powerful as a Class B Inheritance Transformation Skill, Hundred Shot basically got a super boost to his strength and attributes. When he and his pet activate their Transformation Skills at the same instant, their power level should be able to triumph over the power level of a player with Class A Inheritance while having his or her Transformation Skill activated. Hundred Shots and his Red Dragon pet might even be able to match the power level of a player with Class S Inheritance while having his or her Transformation Skill activated!

Fatty Han might not be able to match Hourglass Figure. However, when two legendary Hunters join hands together in a battle, they should become the best line-up of Hunters in the entire 'God's Miracle'! Sun Xin Yu had dominated the title of number one Thief all by herself. Han Ying Xue had also dominated the number one Priest title with her Milkmaid Deity Inheritance. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was undoubtedly the champion among all Warriors. The top players of Lone Desert Smoke were basically

so powerful that most of the players might lose their minds if they ever encounter them!

Meanwhile, during the next few days, someone in the guild had finally met that mysterious guildmaster of the Eternal Flame, Dragon Marquis.

That guild member of Lone Desert Smoke ran into Dragon Marquis while he was grinding his level. Of course, he was not alone. There were at least hundreds of players escorting him while aiding him in grinding his levels up. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had finally knew the reason why Dragon Marquis was acting secretly. It was not because he wanted to stay low profile, it was because his level was too low! Currently, he was just Level 78!

However, if a person is influential enough, he could form a large group of players to aid him in grinding his level up. They could just lure and weaken the monsters for that person. When the monsters are almost dead, the person would just have to give the monsters a final strike to earn 50% of the total Experience Points as the one who finished the monsters. Such tactic could also be applied to Level 140 players who would want to grind their levels as well. They could also let a bunch of Level 120 players do it for them. The efficiency would not be great in such a way. However, that efficiency would still be much better than the grinding efficiency of a player who would sacrifice all his time - including his sleeping time to grind his level!

So, when a bunch of Level 130 and Level 140 players are aiding a Level 80 player, his grinding efficiency would rocket through the roof!

According to the guild member, Dragon Marquis could actually level up once every two hours. That grinding efficiency was a little too scary to be true.

Actually, if Zhang Yang was willing to do it, he could have all of his high Tier guild members aiding him in grinding his levels. Furthermore, the current strength of the Lone Desert Smoke would definitely be able to boost the grinding efficiency to a level that no other guild could attain! However, it was not necessary to waste time doing that. He was currently

the Number One on the World Leaderboard. Even if he hits the Level Cap of Level 300, what would be the point then? Looking down at the other players from the top, all alone would be extremely boring!

It was also fortunate that Dragon Marquis could not enter the Chaos Realm yet, because he had not reached level 100 just yet. Or else, he would be leveling up at an even more insane rate. That is possible, because the monsters in Chaos Realm were much higher in levels, so he could obtain even more Experience Points with the aid of his guild members.

Well, it would just be a matter of time, before that guildmaster of Eternal Flame would also make it into the Chaos Realm. He might even make it up to the world ranking leaderboard, soon enough! However, it would become even harder to climb on the leaderboard when your level gets higher. Well, you would get lesser help from the other players when your level becomes much higher than theirs.

Furthermore, the players that made it up on the world ranking leaderboard were all experts at grinding their levels up. So their grinding efficiency would surely be much more efficient than all average players in the entire world. It would basically be impossible to rely on the help of many other players to grind with the aim of becoming number one on the world ranking leaderboard.

Chapter 693: Dragon Marquis

Sun Xin Yu pulled some strings and discovered the real identity of Dragon Marquis from the databank of Dream Technology. It was a surprise to see Sun Xin Yu so shocked at her own discovery. Her face turned gloomy for quite some time after that.

So, this Dragon Marquis had the surname 'Zhong'. His full name was Zhong Xiu Hua. He was in fact Sun Xin Yu's playmates in her childhood --- when Sun Xin Yu was still small, she had stayed in Beijing for quite some time. This Zhong Xiu Hua was her neighbor right beside her house.

According to Sun Xin Yu, Zhong Xiu Hua had liked her ever since they first met. Meanwhile, she hated the personality of Zhong Xiu Hua. She felt that this man was a little too devious. Sometimes, even though he is angry, he would still put a smile on his face. That personality trait of his made quite a hypocrite out of him.

Later on, Sun Xin Yu and her family moved out from Beijing. However, Zhong Xiu Hua did not stop contacting her. He would call her every single day just to stay in contact with his beloved girl. Until two years ago, things began to change after Sun Xin Yu left her house and worked at the police station. Then, she had also moved into Zhang Yang's big bungalow. Ever since then, Zhong Xiu Hua no longer phoned her up on a everyday basis.

However, that did not mean that Zhong Xiu Hua had given up on hope.

Truth to be told, ever since Zhong Xiu Hua set foot in 'God's Miracle', he had been doing everything just to get close to Sun Xin Yu. According to Sun Xin Yu, Zhong Xiu Hua was a very prideful person. He could be stubborn as hell, defeating his enemies in their own turfs. He wanted his enemies to lose their balls and will to fight.

When he was recruiting players into Eternal Flame, his slogan was to 'Defeat Lone Desert Smoke'. Obviously, it was not merely a slogan for Zhong Xiu Hua. It was his actual goal! He wanted to defeat Zhang Yang and Lone Desert Smoke to prove himself as the strongest in the game.

He knew that Sun Xin Yu loved this type of game very much. So, he

followed her interest and joined 'God's Miracle'. Of course, Zhong Xiu Hua had not yet found out that Sun Xin Yu was currently madly in love with Zhang Yang, that they would basically 'heat up the bed' together every night. He just thought that Sun Xin Yu liked strong people in the game. So he had set his goal to defeat Zhang Yang and become the strongest player in the entire game. He believed that by doing so, he would win Sun Xin Yu's heart over.

After listening to Sun Xin Yu's 'story', Zhang Yang could not help but frown bitterly. Then he said, "If that's the case, this Zhong Xiu Hua really is a faithful son of the beach! He still loved you after all these years!"

"Are you jealous?" Sun Xin Yu said without any expression on her face.

"Ha! Who would want to get jealous because of a piece of ice?" Zhang Yang pinched Sun Xin Yu's cheeks and squeezed a smile out of her face. Then he said, "This is really bizarre! How would a man for you, a piece of frosty ice?"

"Then, why are you still filling this piece of ice up every night?" Sun Xin Yu forced Zhang Yang's hands away from squeezing her face and rolled her eyes at him. Well, when a cold frosty girl begins to flirt, men might get 'shocked' straight down to the bone marrow, and they would feel numb from head to toe. Zhang Yang fell for her, mostly because of that. That was why he always raised his 'gun' and 'saluted' her well every night.

Zhang Yang laughed 'evilly'. Well, there was nothing to feel embarrassed about between 'husband' and 'wife'. So he said, "So after all the storytelling session, you haven't told me who Zhong Xiu Hua really is yet!"

Sun Xin Yu knitted her pretty eyebrows for a little while before she said something again, "His father is Zhong Jin Shan. So after the election, he would probably take over his father's place."

"Take over? What kind of takeover are we talking about? Is he going to become the President, then? Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

However, Sun Xin Yu did not laugh at all. She only stared calmly at Zhang Yang as he continued laughing it off.

"What the f*ck! For real!?" Zhang Yang realized something was off. He immediately understood and lost his voice.

"You scared?" Sun Xin Yu's large pretty eyes became teary all of a sudden. She turned around and leaned against Zhang Yang's body, "Then, why aren't you afraid of me?"

"Hehe... that was because you forced yourself on me! I'm innocent!" Zhang Yang raised both of his hands high in the air to express that he was innocent. "So that's why when we were pressuring Eternal Flames, so many guildmasters came up to me. Now I've finally understand the reason behind all that mess!"

Knowing that Zhong Xiu Hua had such a powerful background backing him up, everything made sense now. No wonder he could pressurize so many guildmasters in the game.

However, Sun Xin Yu smiled with a disdainful expression on her face, then she said, "This Zhong Xiu Hua thinks too highly of himself. If you haven't forced his hands so tight, he would not have used his background to influence the entire network to solve his own sh*t! Humph! His father did lay quite a bright path before him with all the political strings he had in hand. Plus, his grandfather was the previous Prime Minister of the country, and his mother is currently the President of the board for the Business Investment Fund Corporation. If it weren't because of all that, how could he have everything going his way, then! Such hypocrite is just as disgusting as the worms in the drain!"

"You seem to understand him quite well!"

"Humph! He's nothing but a spoiled brat in his family tree. He's just squandering off his parent's money just to show off!"

Zhang Yang could on shake his head and said, "He doesn't seem to be as shallow as you say he is. I think you're underestimating him a little too much! That Zhong Xiu Hua must have some complicated agenda up his sleeves. Currently, the 'God's Miracle' is becoming the largest marketplace in the world. Everyone would like to be part of the 'new market'. For instance, just look at our Territory. Ever since we entered the Chaos

Realm, the Teleportation Circle has grossed over 20,000,000,000 dollars profit per month for us! Even after deducting the cost of funding our guild members and all other costs of maintaining our guild, that remaining amount of profit is all to us and only us! So, how many large-scaled companies could earn that much in the real life?"

Sun Xin Yu nodded to express that she agreed with Zhang Yang.

"Other than the Territory, there are also other kinds of tradings happening around the game. Look at the number of materials and items that are being traded on daily basis. That amount is so huge that even astronomical values cannot be used to measure them! If anyone can just profit from a small tiny part of that value, that person will be as rich as f*ck! Other than that, there's also the advertising effect! Look at our company. The sales for our company when it comes to selling undies and panties are extremely good. All thanks to our party building up our name in the first place!"

"Humph! That company belongs to that foxy b*tch! It has nothing to do with me!"

"Can't you two just get along already?" Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"It's just shameful to know that you're talking bad behind others, you know?" Han Ying Xue came right up from the other side of the bed as she revealed that mesmerizing naked upper body of hers.

"Please wear a bra, b*tch! That two chunk of your fats are dangling so low that they're about to cover your belly button!"

"You're jealous of me, aren't you Ice queen?"

...

Now that a rival of his love interest came out of nowhere, it's normal that Zhang Yang felt like having a small piece of thorn buried underneath his flesh. However, Sun Xin Yu convinced Zhang Yang that Zhong Xiu Hua would only duel him and Lone Desert Smoke in the game. Zhang Yang felt a little relieved upon hearing that. However, he would not let his guard down so easily.

Even if Zhong Xiu Hua really had a darker side hidden from Sun Xin Yu, Zhang Yang would have to be careful a little to avoid any surprise attack from him. Fortunately, he was just alone without any relatives. Even if he had relatives, he would not have to worry that his relatives would be targeted by his enemies. They were not close to each other in the first place. Meanwhile, Silky Soft Holdings had become a company that could sustain itself. Upon eliminating Wei Yan Er's relatives from the company and reorganizing of the company, the company was transparent and clear on their finance. They had nothing to worry about, even if their company goes under investigation.

For now, Zhang Yang believed that Zhong Xiu Hua would only compete with him in the game fair and square. However, that guy is destined to lose! Well, would a spoilt brat that thinks so highly of himself willing to admit defeat after he is defeated? Especially when the reason he was fighting for involves a factor called 'woman'!

When he loses, he would be using all sorts of dirty tricks to defeat his enemy. If he cannot defeat Zhang Yang in the game, he surely will try to push Zhang Yang to his demise in real life! After all, Zhong Xiu Hua did not only aim to get Sun Xin Yu, he also saw the great business opportunities that lay in the game. So he would not just give up, even after he is defeated. Furthermore, he had invested so much money in the game ever since he joined the game. He would not let go so easily now.

However, Zhang Yang had no reason to worry about it too much for now. Although Zhong Xiu Hua had not made any big moves yet, the Sun family was also a vital influence in the realm of politics. Even if Zhong Xiu Hua really gets the chance to take over his father's place, he could not do much harm to the Sun family. After all, the two families were deeply rooted in the realm of politics. If the two families clash into each other, the end result would be disastrous! No one could afford such a catastrophe to happen!

As he hacked wild boars apart, Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. In his previous life, although he was considered poor and insignificant, he was so insignificant that no one would even pay attention to him. In this life, he is

so significant that he was going to have a 'duel' with a future 'President'! Not to mention that he also had a royal lady, a Princess grade woman on his bed's 'collection'! He even had another future Duchess in Luxembourg waiting to 'devour' him as her own. Zhang Yang's luck with women in this life was a little too flared up, don't you think?

Upon farming to increase their Reputation for over 10 days, Zhang Yang and the ladies had finally attained 'Revered'. They had finally earned enough Reputation points to get set on a journey to worship the Andros the Spider God.

Because Hundred Shots and the others did not have the quest on their quest list, they did not come back to join up with Zhang Yang and the ladies. After all, they would never know what sort of rewards would be waiting for them upon completing the quest. It would be pointless for them to join up with Zhang Yang and the ladies for now. Furthermore, even if Zhang Yang suddenly needs their aid, he could just conveniently use his [Party Summon Order] to summon the rest of the party.

Zhang Yang had finally obtained the Recipe for making [Level 6 Healing Potion]. The ingredients required to make the potion was not a problem at all. Zhang Yang could let his Herb Foraging Familiar collect them in no time. Zhang Yang had nothing to worry about at all. All he needed were the recipes. If he has the recipes, he could make anything up.

As he did not bring along many empty bottles on him, Zhang Yang had to travel all the way back to the main city to make the potions. Since he had the [Lover's Charm], he could just get back to the ladies in no time.

The [Level 6 Healing Potion] could instantly heal up to a total of 60,000 HP. If Zhang Yang could transmute the potions up to Grade 10, each bottle of the potion could heal up to 120,000 HP! Currently, Zhang Yang has already increased his Lucky attribute up to 29 points. So there would be a rate of 2.9% of a Transmutation occurring in every potion made. If Zhang Yang makes more potions, more potions would undergo a Transmutation.

Sun Xin Yu and the ladies were almost Level 150 now. Zhang Yang distributed the [Level 6 Healing Potions] among his party for free. With

the current fortune in his possession, he could easily afford to give those Healing Potions that were at least Grade 5 Transmutation or better. Endless Starlight and the others were surprised and overjoyed for that reason.

Although these Healing Potions were insignificant to players who have already activated their Transformation Skills. These Healing Potions would still be very practical when they are not transformed. Furthermore, players with Inheritance could only transform once in every 3 days. Most players would not activate their Transformation Skills right after the cooldown was over. They would only transform during a large battle or during a battle against an extremely powerful boss. Hence, the time that players stayed transformed wouldn't be long.

After preparing all the necessary support items, Zhang Yang traveled back to the Spider Kingdom once again and rendezvoused with the ladies. Then, the five of them made their way to Andros's 'palace'.

Upon a few hours of rushing, they finally arrived at the entrance of a large forest. They saw that the sky was full of spiraling spider webs that hung a large palace in the middle of the sky. The scene was oddly spectacular.

However, Zhang Yang felt like an idiot all of a sudden. He regretted that they had wasted so much time to raise their Reputation. This place was huge and conspicuous. It should have been very easy to spot if they had gone around the map in the first place. There was no need for them to waste their time and effort to increase their Reputation at all. Now, Zhang Yang could only use the [Level 6 Healing Potion] Recipe to comfort himself for doing all those pointless things back then.

The entire forest was covered in spider webs. There was no way of entering the forest at all. However, the palace that Zhang Yang and the ladies wanted to go was hanging in midair. So, they hopped onto their Flying Mounts and flew straight towards the palace without wasting any more time.

"Who goes there? How dare you trespass the palace of the great Andros!"

A string of spider web shot across the air at lightning speed. Zhang Yang and the ladies found themselves wound up in web. Their mounts were also tied up along with them. With another pull, they were all covered up in spider webs like a bunch of candied haws dangling around the sky before they were all spread-eagled on a large spider web.

A human-faced spider, as large as a mini mountain crawled up to the spider web from one of its sides. The eight legs were extremely black. There were countless barbs on the surface of the legs. They looked so sharp that it gave a chill up the spines of whoever saw them with their own eyes. The spider's round butt looked exactly like a gigantic concrete mixer behind a large truck! The spider's human face was full of wrinkles.

[Ganross, the Protector of the Palace] (Holy, Humanoid)

Level: 175

HP: 17,000,000,000

Note: The bloodline of Ganross is very close to the bloodline of Andros. He is extremely powerful.

Chapter 694: Andros's Wrath

"Wah! You stinky eight-legged freak! Let go of me, now!" Wei Yan Er began to scream like a little b*tch. She repeatedly tried to break the spider strings with her battle axe. However, Conross was a green named monster. Zhang Yang and the ladies had obviously triggered some sort of drama mode. No matter how hard Wei Yan Er tried, she could not do anything about the webs wrapping around her.

"You're the believers of the temple?" Canross found a piece of green marking on Zhang Yang. He took it down to have a closer look. Those were the markings that were given to Zhang Yang and the ladies by the Priest of their Temple when Zhang Yang and the ladies had worked their Reputation up to 'Revered'. Canross threw the marking back to Zhang Yang and wiggled his butt a little. The webs wrapping around them loosened up and they were able to move freely again. Wei Yan Er immediately stopped cursing like a little b*tch. Now, she stared forward with her eyes wide open as if she had just seen some treasure.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "We have an urgent matter that needs Andros's attention!"

"Human, not anyone can meet our fatherly god, not even our own kind. So what makes you think you have what it takes to meet our father of god?" Canross backed away to a large spider web and sat on it. However, his eyes were fixed on Zhang Yang and the ladies. It was obvious that he was not willing to let them enter the palace.

Zhang Yang revealed a serious look and said, "We received a command from Catarina to pass on her last words to Andros!"

"Catarina? The banished Princess?" Canross widened his eyes. He seemed shocked. "She... she died?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Unfortunately, yes. She has some important words that needs to be passed to Andros. And she insisted that we must be the one who speak to him. So we must personally meet Andros to do so!"

Canross began to go into deep thoughts. After quite some time, he finally returned from his drifting thoughts and said, "Catarina... Although she was fatherly god's daughter, she was born late. I was the one who watched her grow! She used to be a naive and good-hearted little girl. But I have no idea when or why. She suddenly changed! She changed so much that she seemed to turn into another person! And now... I can't believe that she passed away!"

Canross walked around the spider web for a while before he said, "Alright, follow me!"

This gigantic human-faced spider began to lead Zhang Yang and the ladies into the palace. Though the palace in the sky was large and vast, there were very few 'residents' in the palace. There were also no signs of any maids in the surroundings. Only a few human-faced spiders were scattered around in the corners of the palace with the titles 'Sons of Andros' right on top of their heads.

This father of god had been really good at producing his offspring. He had a large number of sons and daughters.

Obviously, Canross had quite a reputable status in the palace. As he was passing by the hall of the palace, the sons and daughters of Andros were nodding at him, expressing their respects towards him. They were also looking at Zhang Yang and the ladies with curiosity filling up their eyes.

After walking through the halls for quite some time, they finally arrived before a large palace. However, even though the building was magically hanging in the middle of the sky, but the designs on the walls and the ceilings were simple and there was nothing fancy about them at all. Instead of looking like a palace, the entire place looked more like a larger than average temple.

Upon stepping foot into the palace, Zhang Yang and the ladies saw a gigantic human-faced spider resting right in the middle of the hall. If Canross is described as the size of a small mountain, then this spider could be described as a gigantic spider of the size of a middle-sized mountain! He was extremely huge!

[Andros, Spider God] (Celestial, Humanoid)

Level:???

HP:???

Note: The ancestor of the Spider Men! He served the God of Light before time. He has the divine power of a god!

"What a huge spider!" Wei Yan Er began to mutter on her own. Then she whispered, "It'll definitely be awesome if I can make this spider my pet."

This little brat would usually come up with some weird notions, as usual.

"My great father of god, these humans claimed that they have Catarina's last words for you!" Canross lowered down his frontmost four legs to bow at Andros. Then he spoke politely to Andros about the situation.

"Catarina... had passed away!?" A fierce sense of fury flashed across Andros's indecipherable eyes like a lightning flashing across the sky. It gave Zhang Yang and the ladies a chill up their spines. This Celestial Tier boss fixed his eyes upon Zhang Yang and the ladies. Then he asked, "Outsiders, my daughter... did she... pass away?"

"Unfortunately, yes. My great Spider God." Zhang Yang stayed silenced a while. Then he made a polite gesture of an Adventurer and passed the dying words of Catarina over to Andros.

"What!?" Andris was infuriated that he stood up straight away, "That god damn demon! How dare he manipulate my Catarina! My poor daughter... May the God of Light shine on us all... What have I done... When Catarina needed me the most, I thought ... I banished her with my own bare hands! I thought she changed! She was possessed!?"

Unfortunately, this Celestial Tier boss only had the capability of a Celestial Tier boss should have. He was not a real God who would be all-knowing.

"Thank you, young Adventurers, hailing from a distant land!" After all, Andros had lived so long that maybe he himself had lost track of it. He calmed himself down right after he took his own brief moment to grief.

Then he said, "Thank you for traveling across the distant land to pass me the news. You have enlightened me. I now realize my own fault as a father. I have doomed my own daughter!"

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Super Urgent News! You have received a reward: 5,000,000 Experience Points!'

Though the amount of Experience Points rewarded was not bad, it was not enough to cover the time and effort that they had spent to raise their Reputation!

Andros reached out with one of his long legs and touched the air right in front of him. Then he muttered vaguely in his mouth as if he was casting some spell. Countless white lights were projected out from the tip of his leg and formed a light screen in front of him. The light screen revealed a dark red demon with two horns on his head and a pair of bat-wings right behind its back, sitting on an altar, roaring into the sky.

"Pauillac The Manipulator!" Andros suddenly roared out into the sky in rage. The light screen trembled and shattered into pieces.

"My father of god, please stay calm!" Canross immediately bowed down and said.

Phew! Phew!

Andros began to gasp for air as if he was out of breath. It seemed that he was too old to even get angry! Then he looked at Zhang Yang and the ladies, "Adventurers, I've expended some of my divine power and I have identified the murderer that took my Catarina's life! However, I must stay here to keep my kingdom safe. So I cannot leave. I beg of you. Please, slay this demon for me!"

'Ding! Andros has given you a quest: Andros's Wrath. Do you accept?'

The 5 of them looked at each other and quickly accepted the quest.

"Take this with you ---" Andros gave Zhang Yang a jade order, "This Jade pendant has a part of my power sealed inside. Use it when you are confronting Pauillac The Manipulator! Even though I can't go, I will never let this demon go!"

'Ding! You have received an item: Andros's Jade Pendant.'

[Andros's Jade Pendant] (Consumable)

Use: Summon a shadow clone of Andros. It will help you attack Pauillac The Manipulator! You can only use it when you're within the distance of 50 meters away from Pauillac The Manipulator.

Afterwards, Andros rested his face behind two sorrowful talons and asked Zhang Yang and the ladies to leave the palace at once. The word 'asked' was to show his courtesy, he basically 'chased' Zhang Yang and the ladies away from his palace. However, it was understandable. The man had just lost his precious daughter. How would he be happy after everything that he had been through?

Zhang Yang brought up the quest list and took a good look at the quest description.

[Andros's Wrath] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: Andros wants you to eliminate Pauillac The Manipulator to avenge his daughter. You can find Pauillac The Manipulator at the Dark Mist Canyon, within the map - Forest of Clouds. Take note, the demon will not go down easily. You better bring more friends before you go!

Completion: Slay Pauillac The Manipulator 0/1

"Silly Yu, this quest is only ranked as Rank-A. Could the boss only be an Ethereal Tier?" Han Ying Xue asked. If that is the case, then they would have no reason to travel so far just to get the quest done!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, this quest is ranked as Rank-A instead of Rank-S, because we got this quest item!" He took out [Andros's Jade Pendant] and showed it to the ladies, This piece of jade could summon the shadow clone of that Celestial Tier boss! The boss would not be that weak. With the power of a Celestial Tier boss on their side, the difficulty of the quest would definitely plummet.

The five of them teleported back to Sauron's Castle with their scrolls. Then, they traveled from Sauron's Castle over to the Forest of Clouds. The main reason that they did not fly to their destination was because the map

of Spider Kingdom was just plain f*cking annoying. The sky was filled with spider webs that would slow them down so much that they would be able to walk faster than to fly in the sky! Furthermore, getting entangled in the spider webs was not a pleasant experience at all!

Level 150 maps were just large. It took Zhang Yang and the ladies approximately 3 hours to fly out of the Mar Gaia Forest. After that, they needed to pass through The Plagued Land as well. That took them another 7 hours before they finally entered the Forest of Clouds.

The Forest of Clouds was as its name suggested. Every part of the forest was green and lush. Meanwhile, right above the forest, mist clouded the sky. The mists looked like countless clouds shielding the forest from above. Travelling in the forest would cause poor visibility. Basically, players could not see anything that is further than 10 meters from them.

Meanwhile, the movement speed of the Flying Mounts was extremely fast. When you realize that you are about to crash into something, it would have been too late. No brakes are that good.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and the ladies had guidance from their small maps. So they were not worried about going towards the wrong direction. However, they would have to encounter some monsters along their journey. Sometimes, they would even run into a flock of bird monsters and start a huge battle. However, most of the monsters in each large map were only Normal Tier monsters. The monsters were destined to be slain the moment they ran into Zhang Yang and the ladies. It did not take long before Zhang Yang and the ladies wiped out the entire flock of bird monsters.

Because they had a specific destination, Zhang Yang and the ladies did not stop until they arrived at the Dark Mist Canyon.

However, the canyon seemed even more f*cked up. The dark mist was so thick that the entire canyon looked like it was flooded with black ink! The moment when they stepped into the black mist, they could not even see their own fingers! Even the small maps were blacked out. There was no way that they could proceed forward like that. The only visible area of the

canyon was the area 3 meters from the ground. Flying higher than 3 meters would mean zero visibility for them. To avoid crashing into walls, Zhang Yang and the ladies descended to the ground and went on foot.

From that point of view, the reason why the system gave players Flying Mounts was because players could travel faster that way. They did not provide players with Flying Mounts so that they could avoid battling monsters, just because they are lazy.

"I can smell the delicious blood flowing in your body!" A huge shadow emerged from the dark mist. Because the body parts above the shoulders were covered in the dark mists, Zhang Yang and the ladies had no idea how tall the monster was. They could not see what the monster looked like as well. However, they could clearly see that there were large fish-scales covering the monster's entire body. The muscles on the monster's body were bulgy as f*ck. They looked like freaking metal rocks! There were also 7 sharp barbs right on its back. The demon also had a long tail that looked like the tail of a scorpion. It was moving around as if it was a snake.

[Dark Mist Divine Punisher] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 164

HP: 4,920,000

Defence: 6,640

Melee Attack: 42,966 – 52,966

Skills:

[Tail Sting]: Uses a tail filled with poison to sting a target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. The target's Attack will be reduced by 10%. Last for 15 seconds.

[Flying Bone Puncture]: Uses the bones in the back to shoot the target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. If the target is hit while poisoned, the target will receive another additional 50% damage.

[Dragon's Flame]: Spits a blast of flames forward, causing 20,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the effective range of the Skill once in every 3 seconds.

The monster reached out at Wei Yan Er and began attacking her with its claws, right after it appeared. With one aggressive slash straight across the body of the little brat, she received a total damage of 40,000 in an instant. The little brat was shocked, and she began to jump around in panic. Then she screamed at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank! Lure the monster to you! Now!"

Currently, Elite Tier monsters were getting outrageously powerful. Their basic attacks had reached up to 40,000 damage! Normal players could be instantly killed with one or two hits from them!

Chapter 695: Dark Mist Canyon

As the levels of the players keep rising and improving, more and more equipment with higher Tiers will appear. The difference between the normal players and the top Tier players was getting wider and wider as time passed by. However, top Tier players were only one small cluster of the entire population in the game. Furthermore, they were so busy grinding their levels and killing bosses to farm for better equipment. Even if there is a PvP battle, it would only happen between players who are about the same level and Tier. Therefore, the normal players would not really be affected much.

It would be just like normal people watching two rich people fighting against each other. No matter how much money those two rich people had, it would not affect the plebians.

Wei Yan Er let out a raging roar and swung her battle axe straight at the monsters. Well, her Attacks were not weak at all. She could cause more than 70,000 with her basic attack, which was way more powerful than the Elite Tier monsters. With just one chop, the Dark Mist Divine Punisher had its chest cleaved right open. Green blood oozed right out from the cut wound like a fountain.

"You ugly piece of monster! You think I'm an easy target? You think you can bully me and walk away like nothing happened?!" Wei Yan Er continued to mutter on as she was attacking the monsters aggressively. Well, her personality and mentally was basically still that of a child. She actually believed that the monster had picked her as its first target because it thought that she was a much easier target compared to the others. Could it be because the monster saw that her breasts were small, so she was supposed to be an easy target to pick on?

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then, he commanded his Phoenix pet and charged at the Dark Mist Divine Punisher. First, he activated his {Lure} to get the monster's attention over to him. Then he threw a few more Skills on the monster to maintain the aggro.

Sun Xin Yu clanked her two swords lightly against each other. Then she went straight for the back of the monster immediately. She stabbed and slashed the monster's back causing immense damage values to the monster. Ever since she had attained {Eagle Eye}, her Attack, especially her secondary weapon's attack had been boosted insanely. Due to that reason, her DPS has increased tremendously.

Although there were only 5 of them on the party currently, the damage output of the 4 of them, with the aid of Felice, Phoenix pet and Ankh the Assassin managed to empty out a total of 5,000,000 HP with ease. Why 4? Because Han Ying Xue was a Healer who needed to keep the HP bars of the other 4 party members 'well fed'. She would not be free enough to deal damage to the monster while she is busy healing the others after all.

Even though Ankh the Assassin's initial Tier was only Gray-Silver Tier, her Attribute Growth Star points are one hell of a kind if compared to the others. Now this Battle Companion has an entire set of Mythical Tier equipment, exclusive for Battle Companions only. She is currently much more powerful than Felice when she was Level 130. Unfortunately, Ankh did not have a Transformation Skill. Well, if she did, that would be a nightmare!

Felice should be the only Battle Companion with a Transformation Skill in the entire game.

After the Dark Mist Divine Punisher died, the monster unexpectedly dropped a piece of equipment! The equipment was picked up by the little brat with her fast-scanning eyes and agile hands.

[Demonic Warrior's Hood] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +1,129

Strength: +323

Agility: +718

{Unidentified}

Equip: Increases both Damage and healing Efficiency by 2.1%

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,250.

Equip: Increases the Shadow Damage of your weapon by 30%.

Required Level: 160

Demonic Warrior's Armor Set (1/5): Demonic Warrior's Hood, {Demonic Warrior's Chest Plate}, {Demonic Warrior's Gloves}, {Demonic Warrior's Leather Greaves}, {Demonic Warrior's Boots}.

3-Piece Set: Increases the Shadow Damage of your weapon by 50%.

5-Piece Set: When hitting a target, there is a rate that a {Shadow Ball} might be triggered to cause 50,000 Shadow Damage to the target.

"Huh? This equipment is quite awesome in its own way!" Zhang Yang could not keep his joy from overflowing. Even though Hunters and Thieves basically relied on dealing Physical Damage to their targets, they would also acquire some Skills that deal Shadow Damage. It was similar to having a Frost Damage and that sort. Meanwhile, after the Inheritances were introduced to the game, Physical-type players would sometimes acquire Skills that could deal Magical damage to their targets as well. For instance, let's take a good look at Wei Yan Er. A lot of her high Attack Skills could deal Shadow Damage to her targets. Therefore, this sort of equipment was becoming more popular currently.

Wei Yan Er pouted and said, "What a waste... this is not a Heavy Armor type of equipment, and it's just a Mythical Tier!"

She had the Darkness Inheritance. Such an equipment with additional Shadow Damage would be extremely suitable for her to have. Well, this sort of equipment would increase an additional 30% to 50% of Shadow Damage to players who equip them. If the little brat gets a few pieces of this set, her single attack could match the Attack power of Zhang Yang, or maybe she could even surpass his Attack power!

If that was true, she could show off in front of Zhang Yang like a little b*tch! That would be a fun thing for her to do.

"You better be grateful for what you can get these days. This type of equipment can really increase your damage. I don't even have the opportunity to get this kind of equipment!" Zhang Yang laughed and said. With his current God of War Inheritance, his Skills could only either cause Physical Damage or Chaos Damage to his enemies. The game did not seem to have any equipment that would add Chaos Attack to the players.

"Cheh!" Wei Yan Er continued to look at him in ire, because Zhang Yang sounded like he was complaining and showing off at the same time.

The party was progressing forward at quite a high pace. They slew quite a number of Dark Mist Divine Punishers along the way. Although the rate of these monsters dropping any of the Demonic Warrior's Armor Set was extremely low, the number of Dark Mist Divine Punishers they encountered was quite high. When they were almost halfway through the canyon, they actually managed to collect two sets of Demonic Warrior's Armor Set. They even got two pairs of extra hoods and boots.

At that time, the monsters that they were encountering had changed. Now, they began to encounter countless green slimy monsters --- Slimes.

[Dark Mist Slime] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 168

HP: 5,040,000

Defence: 6,640

Magic Attack: 23,461 – 33,461

Skills:

[Putrefying Acidic Bubbles]: Spits out bubbles that dissolves everything that gets in touch with them, causing 200% Magic Attack of Nature Damage to the target. Also cause 50% reduction to target's Attack. Last for 15 seconds. The effect cannot stack. Instant activation. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

"Wah! What kind of interesting sheets are these?" Wei Yan Er instantly widened her eyes and pointed her finger at the slime that was wiggling

towards her, "Noob tank! Don't kill it! I want to keep one for myself!"

"Keep your sister!" Zhang Yang humphed coldly and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] to purge this slimy thing of this world.

"Are you keeping my sister, now?" Han Ying Xue giggled.

Zhang Yang instantly frowned. Daffodil Daydream cut in to save his day, "We can get quite a large sum of money by selling these two sets of Demonic Warrior's Armor Sets, right?"

"That's for sure!" Zhang Yang regained his mood instantly and said, "Each piece of the set can be sold at the price of hundreds of gold pieces. Well, since players can acquire set effects by collecting enough pieces of the Armor Set, players would still purchase them, even if we sell each of the equipment pieces at the price of 10,000 gold pieces... or maybe, we can sell them in sets at 100,000 gold pieces!"

"Just look at your moneybag face! Disgusting!" Wei Yan Er immediately revealed a disdainful expression on her face. She was backed up by the other ladies as well.

"Then, I should just keep all profits to myself!" Zhang Yang purposely sighed as he was slaughtering the poor little slime up.

"No! How can you say that?!" Wei Yan Er did not want to play along anymore, "I need you to pay me my next month's salary in advance! I want to buy a new purse!"

"In advance again?" Zhang Yang turned around and gave a good rap on the little brat's skull, "The money that I paid you in advance is more than enough to cover 3 years from now! And don't you think that I don't know about it! You even took Sun Xin Yu's share!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er turned her large eyes around, pretending to be innocent. Then she began to laugh out loud and continued to smash her battle axe into the slime. She tried to act as if she had never brought anything up at all.

Zhang Yang and the other 3 ladies laughed it off.

Whenever they talked about 'shares' or 'profits', they were usually referring to the profit that they earned from Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. Each member of Zhang Yang's party of 10 could receive 5% share of its profit. However, Zhang Yang only gave the little brat 100,000 dollars as her pocket money to prevent her from spending like a little b*tch.

Though the little brat was very stingy, most of the time, she would not hesitate to spend all her money on luxurious items such as purses and bags. Because of her recklessness, she had overspent so much that her 'debt' to Zhang Yang could only be repaid back if she does not get a dime from Zhang Yang for one whole year.

"Pfff!" The slime had no face, nor arms or legs. Therefore, there was no telling what kind of emotion the slime had because, it could not express its emotion on a face! However, its wrath for being underestimated was clearly displayed. The slime began to spit bubbles at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was instantly covered in green sticky liquid. Hmm... this seemed familiar...

"Aiyo! You look disgusting, noob tank!"

"What the hell! I'm trying to protect you ladies, you know? Why don't I switch places with you? Witchy Snow can surely heal you up for good! So little brat or not, anyone of you should be able to do good in my position!" Zhang Yang planned to push the responsibility of tanking the monster to the ladies.

However, the 4 ladies shook their heads at the same time. Well, if they ever get sprayed with such gross sticky substances all over them, especially their faces... there would be nothing they could do to remove the stigma off their names.

The further they walked into the canyon, the more slimes they encountered. Zhang Yang was sprayed with the green goo so often that he was completely covered in it. The four ladies were laughing and giggling all the way. Zhang Yang could not stand those ladies anymore. So when there were 4 slimes coming at them, Zhang Yang only lured 3 of them

over to him and left the last one to the ladies. The slime, of course, began to spray at the ladies as aggressively as possible.

"Noob tank! You're doing this on purpose!" Upon slaying the slimes, the four ladies began to complain. A 'war' was about to be waged.

"I can't do anything about it! These monsters can reduce 50% of our Attack. The best I can do was to take three of them! Four would have been dangerous, even for me!" Zhang Yang pushed the blames away, nice and clean.

The monsters here were indeed powerful. Reducing 50% Attack of a Tanker would have easily make a Tanker looser most of the aggro value on him. Once a normal party is OT by an Elite monster, that could end up in a disaster. The party might even get wiped out instantly! Only Zhang Yang and his powerful party would have the capability to challenge an Elite Tier monster alone.

Another 1 hour had passed, Zhang Yang and the ladies arrived at the bottom of the canyon. The dark mist was getting thinner in that area. They could finally things further ahead. All they could see was a large altar, right in front of them. The altar was approximately 50 meters high. It took the shape of a cylinder. The altar was approximately 50-meters wide.

Because of its elevated position, Zhang Yang and the ladies were not able to see what was on the altar. However, they were very sure that this altar was the same one that they saw in the light screen of Andros. Pauillac The Manipulator must be sitting on top of that altar at that instant.

Well, it was not a problem at all for Zhang Yang and the ladies to get onto the altar. They summoned their Flying Mounts and flew straight up.

However, when Zhang Yang and the ladies made it up to the top of the altar, they could not help but feel an intense chill up their spines! There was really a boss right in the middle of the altar. However, there were also at least hundreds of Elite Tier Dark Mist Divine Punishers closely knitted around boss's surroundings. With the monsters and the boss so packed up in one spot, there was no way that players could hit the boss without

getting swarmed up.

Furthermore, there was also a boss there. Any reckless move would cause certain death.

[Pauillac The Manipulator] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 175

HP: 17,000,000,000

Defence: 17,760

Magic Attack: 89,694 – 100,694

Skills:

[Mind Control]: Temporarily controls an enemy target, making the target serve Pauillac. Lasts 30 seconds. Pauillac won't use this Skill on the player with the highest aggro value.

[Shadow Decay Aura]: Cause 50,000 Shadow Damage once in every 5 seconds to all targets within the effective range.

[Shadow Arrow]: Fires a Shadow Arrow at the target causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage. If the target is in a stunned state, the damage dealt on the target will be increased by another 50%. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Shadow Blast]: Radiate out a blast of Shadow Attack into the surroundings, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 50-meter radius. Targets will be stunned for 5 seconds.

[Demonic Build]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: Pauillac The Manipulator is infamous for befogging the minds of the people. He is also renowned to be a badass existence among the demon armies.

TL Note:

1. Raise your sister (养你妹): A phrase used to scold people in a joking

manner

Chapter 696: Andros's Shadow Clone

The boss had a Skill that could recover his own HP. Well, that had been a trend for every powerful boss that they had encountered so far, and it's quickly getting old.

"Time to get wretched fatty and the rest over here!" Han Ying Xue suggested. Well, the five of them could not do anything about the boss's {Demonic Build}. They might as well stare at the boss until the boss kills them all. Furthermore, there was also quite a large number of Elite Tier monsters guarding the boss. The situation was pretty f*cked up.

Zhang Yang took out [Andros's Jade Pendant] and said, "Let's try out the power of this little pendant! If we can't get this done even after we use this, then we shall summon fatty and the rest over to finish the job! Let's activate our Inheritance Transformations and kick the boss's *ss!"

"Alright!"

Zhang Yang crushed the jade pendant immediately. A radiating door of light appeared right out of nowhere, followed by the appearance of a large human-faced spider crawling out from the light door. However, the situation became awkward a little right after the spider came out. Well, Zhang Yang broke the pendant and summoned the shadow clone of Andros while they were still in the sky. So the giant human-faced spider fell straight onto the altar and crashed.

The impact of the crash was so powerful that its tremble shocked Pauillac and his army of Dark Mist Divine Punishers. Pauillac let out a raging roar immediately and his army of monsters roared after him. Then, they charged at the human-faced spider without fear nor hesitation.

"Pauillac! I will tear you into pieces!" The human-faced spider was blazing with rage. A visible shockwave was radiated out from the spider's body into the surrounding. The Elite Tier monsters were rocked so hard that they fell with their faces on the ground.

[Andros's Shadow Clone] (Holy, Summon)

Level: 180

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defense: 18,470

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398

Skills:

[Web Entanglement]: Entangles all targets in the surroundings and stop them from moving. Lasts for 5 seconds. The targets will receive 50,000 damage every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds.

[Purify]: Nullifies the {Mind Control} of Pauillac.

Although 'brother' Andros was a Celestial Tier boss himself, his Shadow Clone did not seem to inherit all his power. Well, having a Holy Tier boss at their side was considered fair for Zhang Yang and the ladies to battle against Pauillac. The only thing that was not satisfying was that the Skills of this Shadow Clone were a little disappointing. The only Skill that could attack was the {Web Entanglement}. That was a little humiliating for a boss. Fortunately for them, the {Purify} would prove to be extremely useful in battling against Pauillac. As long as this Shadow Clone of Andros's does not die, Zhang Yang and the ladies should be safe from the {Mind Control} of Pauillac.

Furthermore, the body mass of Andros was initially larger than the altar itself! This Shadow Clone of Andros's is only approximately 30 meters high. It was totally not the size of its original form.

After all, the shockwave that was radiated out by Andros's Shadow Clone was merely a dramatic effect. It was not a Skill nor an attack. So the horde of Elite Tier monsters crawled back on their feet shortly after they fell. Then they continued to charge towards the Shadow Clone of the human-faced spider.

In an instance, countless spider strings shot out right from the body of Andros's Shadow Clone. The monsters were entangled and wrapped around by spider webs immediately, upon being touched by the spider strings. The effect was similar to the effect of a [Forbidden Scroll].

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, a shadow clone is merely a shadow clone after all. The HP amount it has is far lower than the HP amount of the boss. Its DPS can only reach up to 80,000 damage. This shadow clone will not do much good if we don't step in soon with a full party!"

Zhang Yang quickly invited Fatty Han and the rest of his party of 10. After he landed on the altar, he immediately summoned the rest of his party members over to his location with the use of his [Party Summon Order]. If he did so before he lands, the rest of the party members that get summoned to his location would fall to their 'demise' if they were not mounted on their Flying Mounts.

"Just ignore the horde. The Shadow Clone will be able to tank them. Furthermore, it has a Skill that can hold the monsters down. All we need to do is to focus our attention on the boss!" Zhang Yang was telling his party members what to do when the boss battle began. At the same time, he activated his {God of War Transformation} getting himself ready for the boss battle. The boss that they were going up against was a Holy Tier boss. The kink in the situation that they were in right now was that they only had a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment equipped. Furthermore, there were only 10 of them in total. Without the support of an Inheritance Transformation, the DPS of the entire party could not even keep up with the boss' HP recovery rate.

Andros's Shadow Clone was filled with anger towards Pauillac. After he trapped the monsters in the surroundings, he did not attack the monsters. Instead, he moved his eight legs and charged straight at Pauillac. Andros's Shadow Clone stabbed the sharp tips of his front legs repeatedly at the boss as aggressively as he could. Even though the boss had such a tremendous amount of HP that he hardly felt anything after being poked around multiple times, but those stabbings had left quite a number of bloody holes on the body of the boss. Green blood was spilled repeatedly every time the boss was stabbed.

"Spider God?" Pauillac was stunned for one brief moment before he could say anything. Then he said, "Are you suggesting that you're going to

wage war over us, the great Demonic Army of Darkness?"

"You slew my daughter! So, you can drop the act like nothing happened!" Andros's Shadow Clone roared in rage.

Pauillac was stunned by what he heard once again. Then he suddenly burst into laughter, "So you found out about it!" This demonic boss fixed his eyes on Zhang Yang and his party with a murderous sense flash across his eyes. Then he said, "So it was you who told the Spider God about it! It's really not a coincidence that you have brought yourselves to me. I will not have to send my army to search for you! Today is the day you all die here!"

"You're the one who is going to die here today!" Andros's Shadow Clone shot out countless spider strings once again into the surroundings and trapped the monster horde. Although the damage that this {Web Entanglement} deals could not match the damage that the {Sword of Life and Death} could deal, at least it could still deal 50,000 damage to the monsters once every 3 seconds. That amount of damage dealt was considered quite bad*ss itself! Each Elite Tier monster would only have approximately 5,000,000 HP. After receiving over 100 times that amount of damage, the monsters should all be dead in about 5 minutes.

Unfortunately, Andros's Shadow Clone could not receive any healing from Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart. Even though he had over 1,000,000,000 HP, he would not be able to sustain the damage dealt by so many monsters at the same time.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and his party were able to use their powerful AoE Skills on the boss and the monster horde at the same time whenever they manage to accumulate enough EP. Firstly, they could reduce the time needed to clear out the monsters in the surroundings so that Andros's Shadow Clone could do more in the battle. Secondly, the party would only receive Experience Point if they contributed in slaying the monsters. If the monsters are slain by the Shadow Clone alone, none of them would be able to receive any Experience Point nor loot.

There were over hundreds of Elite Tier monsters in the surroundings. The Experience Points and the loot must be extremely valuable!

Although Zhang Yang's Attack was slightly above the Attack of Andros's Shadow Clone, Pauillac was fixed on attacking the Shadow Clone. He did not even look at Zhang Yang while he was at it. Apparently, the boss would not be affected by the Aggro system of the game before Andros's Shadow Clone goes down and die.

That was actually great news. With a 'punching bag' distracting the boss, none of them had to face the wrathful attacks of the boss for the moment.

However, Zhang Yang did not switch his shield away because he had no idea of knowing whether Andros's Shadow Clone would hold on until the battle ends or not. So as a safety measure, it would be better for Zhang Yang to remain the number one on the aggro list of the boss. By doing so, he could prevent the boss from charging straight at Sun Xin Yu or Wei Yan Er right after Andros's Shadow Clone dies.

{God of War's Crushing Strike }! {Shadow Curtain }! {Thunder blade}!

Every 30 seconds, everyone would get 3 EP. They would pour their AoE Skills out without holding back to increase the efficiency in clearing out the monsters in the surroundings! Meanwhile, the Elite Tier monsters were trapped without being able to move at all for one-third of the time. Because they were all Melee combatants, they could only stare from one side, immobilized. Or else, Andros's Shadow Clone would succumb to a barrage or ranged attacks rather swiftly.

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had Class S Inheritances. Each of their AoE Skills could deal at least 100,000 damage to the monsters within the effective range of the Skill. Meanwhile, players with Class A Inheritances such as Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream would perform slightly subpar. However, they could still deal at least 80,000 damage to the monsters that were within the effective range of their Skills. Well, that amount of damage was enough to take out a quarter of the monsters' HP bars!

On the other hand, two Phoenix pets and a Red Dragon pet had joined the battle on clearing out the monster horde as well. Well, their normal attacks could deal area effect type damage. So when the three of them

came into the battle, the situation became much easier for the entire party. Especially when Andros's Shadow Clone firmly had the main aggro of the boss fixed on him. So everyone could lose themselves in causing as much damage as they could to the boss.

In just one minute, the hundreds of Elite Tier monsters were blown to bits. Zhang Yang and his party received an immense amount of Experience Points! Each monster rewarded them with a total of 5,000,000 Experience Points. Each of them could get 500,000 Experience Point for each monster slain. There were hundreds of them, right? Each of them received at least 2,000,000,000 or 3,000,000,000 Experience Points! Their Experience Bar had increased by a large chunk just by slaying these monsters!

"This is great! If they can just send a few more waves of these monsters over, I might be able to level up by the end of this battle!" Fatty Han was so joyful that he talked with drool coming out of a crooked corner of his mouth.

"Fatty, why are you leveling up that slowly? You have a Phoenix pet, a pet that is way more powerful than any pet out there! So, why are you still at Level 148? What a disgrace!"

"Little Sweetheart, you know nothing about life! Life is short and miserable. I can't put all my time in the game. I need to put myself into other things that would keep my body and my mind healthy!"

"Brother fatty, could you be the renowned 'Mr. Whirlwind' on bed that 'shoots' in less than a minute?"

"F*ck you!"

"Andros! If the real you is here today, I profess that I would have fallen. However, you dare to send a Shadow Clone to fight me? This is not even enough to knock my teeth out! I shall control a few more of your sons and daughters and form an army of Spiders to serve our Demonic Army!" Pauillac was battling against Andros's Shadow Clone as he was teasing Andros with his poisonous tongue.

"Demon! You're not worthy of me to take you down myself!" Andros's

Shadow Clone did not falter. Instead, he fought back with his tongue as well as he stabbed Pauillac repeatedly with his sharp legs. After the monsters were all out of the way, the drop rate on the HP bar of Andros's Shadow Clone was beginning to get under control. He still had over 30,000,000 HP left, which was enough for him to stay in the battle for a little longer.

--- the biggest threat posed by the boss were still his AoE Skills. Even though His single-target Skills were extremely powerful, they were not powerful enough to kill a Top Tier Tanker so easily. Or else, why would they need a Tanker in a party? Therefore, the horde of Elite Tier monsters actually posed a larger threat to Andros's Shadow Clone.

"Hahaha! Drizzler! Become my servant and serve me!" The boss suddenly roared out loud and pointed his finger at Wei Yan Er. A dark light shot right from the finger tip of the boss and entered the thick skull of the little brat. She immediately turned to attack Zhang Yang and the rest of the party members.

--- {Mind Control}!

"The divinity of light shall give without asking for any return!" Andros's Shadow Clone also roared out loudly at that instant. He reached out with one of his long legs and shot out a stream of golden light straight out from the tip of that sharp leg. The golden light sunk into the body of Wei Yan Er and nullified the {Mind Control} on her.

"Wah! Stinky boss! How dare you try to control me! I'll chop off your nose...no! Your head! Off with your head!" Wei Yan Er had once again screamed in anger, like a little b*tch. She began to swing her battle axe at the boss, and air was swept up by the force of the swing! Every single hit landed on the boss, causing devastating damage.

"Damn you, Andros! Just wait until I wipe out these pests! I will go to your Spider Kingdom and turn every subject in your Kingdom into my slaves!"

"You shall not get the chance to do that! Today is the day you die! Right here!" Andros's Shadow Clone shot out countless spider strings towards

the boss. Even though the status restriction effect of the {Wen Entanglement} was not effective on Pauillac, 50,000 damage in every 30 seconds was still considerably deadly.

"Then, I shall kill you first!" Pauillac roared out in anger as if he was in desperation. He continued to shoot his {Shadow Arrow} at Andros's Shadow Clone. Each of the arrows could deal up to 200,000 Shadow Damage on Andros. Meanwhile, even though Andros's Shadow Clone had over 30,000,000 HP left, but he only took 150 shots of {Shadow Arrows} before he collapsed onto the ground and died. Well, one of the bigger reasons of him dying so quickly was because he could not receive any healing support from the players. So, he only held up for about 5 minutes before he had to die.

"What the f*ck... How can that Shadow Clone be so noob? I thought he might be tougher than this?!"

Chapter 697: Real Demonic Battle Boots

The most important thing about Andros's Shadow Clone was not its Attack power. It was not his Defence that allowed him to tank against the boss. It was his {Purify} that could nullify the annoying effect of {Mind Control} of Pauillac that mattered the most!

However, the system deemed that the monster horde would be more annoying than the {Mind Control} by the boss. Hence, the system provided players with a huge advantage at the start of the boss battle. Andros's Shadow Clone was meant to be there to wipe out the entire horde of Elite Tier monsters. Truth to be told, normal players would definitely find it more difficult to deal with so many Elite Tier monsters at the same time. If these monsters got the chance to swarm up on normal players, they would be as good as dead. They might even get wiped out in an instant --- not every player had an Inheritance Transformation Skill, after all.

Of course, if the number of players joining into this boss battle increased to a certain extent, they might stand a chance to push the monster horde back with numbers and slay them all. That is also one of the most used tactics in challenging a super boss in an Open World Map. The more, the merrier!

The moment when Andros's Shadow Clone dies, Zhang Yang became the one who took over the job of tanking against the boss, of course. The moment he took over the responsibility, the boss came up with a {Shadow Blast} as a greeting and stunned everyone for 5 seconds, closely followed by a series of {Shadow Arrows}!

Those who were stunned would receive an additional 50% damage from each {Shadow Arrow}! Zhang Yang did not intend to use his {Warrior's Will} to break free from the Stun Effect on him. After activating his {Charge Up Strike}, he activated his {God of War Devastation} and caused more than 2,000,000 damage to the boss! It was a massive blow to the boss!

Even though the rest of his party members also had Skills that could

break themselves free of the 'Stun Effect', none of them actually attempted to use those Skills at all. They waited out for the 5-second Stun Effect to fade. Unfortunately, now that they have lost Andros's {Purify} to counter the {Mind Control} of the boss, everyone would have to make use of their own ways of surviving. Their best way to counter Pauillac's {Mind Control} was to use their Status Restriction Skills that they could spare. Therefore, they had to be extra cautious in using their Status Restriction Skills.

As expected, in less than a couple of seconds, the boss shot out a dark light right from the tip of his finger at Han Ying Xue. That dark light had turned Han Ying Xue against her own party members, and she began to heal the boss up! Unfortunately for that, Priests did not have any Status Restriction Skills on them. All they could do was to activate the 'Invincibility Effect' of their accessories to break themselves free of the boss' {Mind Control}.

However, accessories had a cooldown period of 10 minutes. If the boss decides to pick Han Ying Xue as his next victim again, that would be the end for the party.

Now that everyone had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills, their Maximum HP had been boosted up so much that their amount of HPs looked unrealistically high! Even if their Healers are controlled for a period of time, they would still be able to survive for quite a while. The boss would not be able to cause any fatal blows to any one of them within such a brief moment.

Hundred Shots had finally decided to show off a little bit. He commanded his Red Dragon Pet to activate its Transformation Skill. The dragon instantly became hundreds of meters long! The dragon scales that spread over its entire body was astonishingly beautiful! The Red Dragon did not only look good on the outside, its power level was beyond imagination! Blasts of {Dragon Breaths} were flung at the boss repeatedly, ignoring any Defence, Magic Defence, and even the level of the boss! That Chaos Damage that could ignore basically anything was extremely terrifying!

Hundred Shots used to be the last one on the list of DPS ranking. Now

that he had help from his Red Dragon pet, his DPS shot up to another whole new level and he became one of the top DPS players in the party now. Currently, he was ranked 3, which was just below Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu.

"Wah! Uncle Hundred Shots! How can you do this!" Wei Yan Er cried in tears. Well, this little brat has always been very competitive. Knowing that she had been beaten up by someone else and her name became number fourth on the ranking list, of course, she would not be happy about it.

Hundred Shots smiled in joy. Of course he would not argue with a little girl in the middle of a battle.

"Noob tank! I want a Phoenix pet! I want a Red Dragon pet as well! Wah!" Wei Yan Er began to act in a spoiled manner like a little b*tch.

"You're strong enough! It's true, you know! You don't even need a Red Dragon or a Phoenix at all! You have your huge *ss battle axe to conquer the world!" Zhang Yang attempted to trick this little brat to calm her non-existent tits.

"Really?"

"Really!"

Wei Yan Er was tricked into smiling again. She became happy again.

"You imbecilic humans, elves, orcs, or whatever you are! It's your turn to die!" The eyes of the boss began to flash with murderous intent. He continued to make the {Shadow Arrows} by running his two hands through the air. Then he threw quite a number of {Shadow Arrows} towards Zhang Yang! Each attack dealt approximately 200,000 damage to him. That amount of damage was rather deadly.

However, Zhang Yang had activated his God of War Transformation. He now had over a 40% rate of resisting a Spell-type attack. Furthermore, he had also taken quite an amount of Damage Absorption on his own. Averagely, he only received 80,000 damage from each of the {Shadow Arrows}. With the currently amount of HP he had, it was just a piece of cake for him to take the damage head-on.

Without his Transformation Skill, Zhang Yang would have to fear Spell attacks the most. However, after he activates his Transformation Skill, he would have over 60% Damage Immunity. That had instantly made him a nemesis to Spell-type players and monsters!

It has been awhile since the boss last activated his {Mind Control}. Since he could not take down Zhang Yang and his party by merely shooting his {Shadow Arrows}, he decided to activate his {Mind Control} once again. This Skill of his had a 1 minute cooldown period. However, this Skill would pick a different person every time it is activated. That 1-minute gap had given Zhang Yang and his party members enough time to get ready for it. They would be ready to counter that Skill with their own methods by the end of the 1-minute gap. On the contrary, the boss' {Shadow Blast} - which could stun anyone within its effective range was much more annoying than {Mind Control}!

Because boss could recover its HP bar with his Skill, the party had to constantly deal damage to the boss. It would be healing approximately 3,000,000 HP for free if they ever left the boss alone for 5 seconds! That would definitely increase the time required to kill the boss.

However, the boss was activating his Skills in a fixed pattern. At first, everyone did not realize it because Pauillac seemed to act randomly, at first. Well, Zhang Yang and his party members had a lot of experience in taking down bosses all over the place in the game. As the battle continued on, all they needed to do was to pay more attention to the behavior of the boss and made some deductions to check their suspicions out. After confirming of their suspicions, they could clearly see how the boss would behave and his pattern of attacks, of course. For instance, they found out that the boss would only use {Mind Control} once every 1 minute. Meanwhile, the boss would only use {Shadow Blast} once every 30 seconds!

Therefore, as long as they could time it right and gulp down their [Mobility Potions] at the right moment, they would only have to suffer the impact of {Shadow Blast} once every minute. By succeeding in doing so, they should be able to increase their efficiency in dealing damage to the

boss.

Even though Zhang Yang no longer had the ability to 'cheat' by recalling back his past life, his other party members had been training and experiencing for over two years. They had encountered countless powerful monsters and bosses over the time. So they had formed a great understanding of each other. They also understood the art of battle in this game to a certain extent. They had no fear of new challenges now!

Upon solving the problems that were brought in by {Shadow Blast} and {Mind Control}, everyone would only need to mindlessly attack the boss whenever they can. After one hour of mindless slashing and chopping with their weapons, the boss's HP bar had dropped to 20%. As the boss began to activate his Skills more frequently than he did before, the battle became harder and harder to handle. However, the boss was quite an unlucky bastard. He kept picking Wei Yan Er as his target, for some reason.

The little brat had already upgraded her {Warrior's Will} up to level 10 earlier on. She could activate her {Warrior's Will} to break herself free from the {Mind Control} every minute. Furthermore, she also had two pieces of accessories that could grant her the 'Invincibility Effect'. Hence, Wei Yan Er was the one person who would be least afraid of becoming the target of Pauillac's {Mind Control}.

With the addition of the Red Dragon pet, the firepower of the party had increased to another whole new level. After tightening their teeth and held on for another few minutes, Zhang Yang sent out his {Glare of the Death God} to try out their luck. The Skill was not resisted! It was like putting icing on a cake! With that Skill's special effect kicking in real hard, the boss finally met his end!

After screaming a few 'All Hail the Demonic Army!' and 'The Demonic Army is invincible!', the boss collapsed onto the ground and dropped a lot of loot.

"Wahahaha! Stinky boss! Who told you to keep picking on me! Now, it's already too late for you to know that you've been wrong all the time!" Wei

Yan Er put her hands on her waist as she was scolding the boss. She looked so cocky as if she had just taken down the boss all by herself.

"Tsk! Little Yan Er, you've been called on the point! Come, whistle a song for me!"

The wretched fatty was instantly beaten up by the ladies without mercy at all. Well, even though the little brat was basically a little b*tch to begin with, but she was very close to everyone else! Everyone treated her like their own little sister. So, no one would let that wretched fatty get away from ridiculing that little brat with his foul mouth! They beat him up for good and his face was turned into the face of a pig.

"Little Yang, come be a pig with me!" The wretched fatty was talking with his tears and mucus overflowing his face. His voice was muffled.

"Open up the loot! Check the dead body of the boss!" Before Zhang Yang could open his mouth to talk, he received 'warnings' from the ladies. He was clever enough not to open his mouth because he knew. If he ever opens his mouth to support that wretched fatty, he would become the next target they were going to beat up for good.

"Oh! Nice! Woohoo!" Wei Yan Er scuttled over to the loots with her eyes so wide that they were glowing!

After picking the loot and reorganizing them a little, the little brat laid out the valuable loots that the boss dropped right in front of everyone. The valuable equipment were two Holy Tier equipment: The first one was a pair of aquamarine colored heavy armor boosts. The second piece was a white hat that was very tall and pointy. Whoever who wears it will look like a white gargoye.

Other than the equipment, there was also one Skill Book, one Skill Point Crystal and eight pieces of Level 6 Gemstones.

Because the party had 'established' a rule previously, the Skill Point Crystal was the first thing to be given out among the loots. Sun Xin Yu was the one who acquired it. Then everyone turned their attention towards the two pieces of Holy Tier equipment --- as usual, Zhang Yang would use his [Identifying Scrolls] to identify the equipment first.

"Haih... that Sauron dropped three pieces of Holy Tier equipment... you stinky piece of rubbish only dropped two pieces, even though you have a much higher level than Sauron? Pui!" Wei Yan Er kicked the dead body of the boss and shrugged in frustration. She seemed to be extremely dissatisfied with what she found.

"Alright. That's because Sauron was the first Holy Tier boss to be killed. So it makes sense that we would get an extra piece of equipment from that boss. Normally, a powerful boss dropping two top Tier equipment is the standard issue in this game, you know?" Zhang Yang explained. "So, hustle up! Or else we're going to open up the body of the boss for you!"

"Stinky noob tank! You always scare me with that! Pui!" Wei Yan Er began to humph like a little b*tch again... However, she still snatched the pair of boots up and posted the attributes of it onto the party channel.

[Real Demonic Battle Boots] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +640

Vitality: +7,935

Strength: +1,957

Agility: +826

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 15,870 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 Damage when being hit.

Require Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Hahaha! Don't I have a pair of lucky hands?" Wei Yan Er put up the boots and rubbed on it. However, she did not act cute, trying to claim the boots this time. Instead, she passed it over to Zhang Yang and said, "Noob tank, you're still wearing Mythical Tier boots right? What a disgrace! Take this! Just take it!"

Although Endless Starlight was 'craving' for it, both of them, Wei Yan Er and himself of course, were wearing Ethereal Tier boots at the moment. Their equipment were much more powerful than Zhang Yang's. Of course he was not so thick-faced that he would take off his boots and give them to Zhang Yang in order to get the new one! So, he only sat quietly at the side as he drooled.

Zhang Yang accepted the equipment like a boss. Without counting in his accessories, he still had 3 pieces of Mythical Tier equipment on him. Well, he was a little 'outdated' because of that.

After wearing the boots, his Maximum HP had reached 870,000 HP! Even without activating his God Of War Transformation, he was nearly breaking through the HP cap of 1 million HP!

"When did Yan Er become so mature?"

"Hehe, I did accidentally scratch your car... hehehe..."

"WHAT ---" Zhang Yang almost jumped off the roof. "You little brat! No wonder you're so obedient today! So you've done something wrong, as usual! I'm going to smack your butt until flowers bloom on them!"

Everyone laughed out loud. This little brat would always find way to get herself into trouble. It would be extremely rare to see her stay obedient for a while.

After that, Wei Yan Er pushed out another hat made of cloth.

[Marro's Sorcerer Hat] (Holy, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +128

Vitality: +15,870

Intelligence: +3,915

Spirit: +1,652

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 7,830 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 Damage when being hit.

Require Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Note: Marro is an extremely powerful human mage. There is a town named after his own name.

Well, everyone dared not sing the praises of an understatement for condemning the design of this hat. However, it was fortunate that players could choose whether to show the appearance of their hats and capes in the game. If worse comes to worst, whoever who gets the hat could just hide its appearance. However, who would want to pass the chance of getting this equipment after seeing the attributes that this hat could provide?

In terms of Vitality alone, a player could get an additional 160,000 HP just by wearing this hat!

Chapter 698: Cheng Xue Yao

The three Cloth-Armor oriented Class players rolled for the equipment. The first equipment was claimed by Han Ying Xue. The moment she took it up, she immediately equipped it to try it out. However, her previous hat was much more attractive than this piece of a hat. Therefore, she had chosen to show the appearance of her previous hat. However, when she switched the new hat onto her head, she forgot to disable the function that would show the appearance of the hat she was wearing. Instantly, a weird lady, looking like a while gargoyle stood right in front of everyone. Everyone burst into laughter upon seeing a ridiculous hat on her head.

"Sis, let's make some more of this kind of hats and go back to your old apartment to scare some people during the night!" Wei Yan Er's eyes began to glow again. Whenever she had some weird evil plans in her mind, her eyes would glow that way. After all, she had always been into such weird things.

"What the hell is in that brain of yours!? Are you out of your mind?" Zhang Yang sighed again and again, "Post the last Skill Book now! Quickly!"

"Okay!" Although Wei Yan Er nodded, her eyes were still spinning around. It was obvious that she was still thinking about the 'sinister' plan that she mentioned, just now.

[Skill Book: Riposte]

Use: Teaches you the Skill {Riposte}.

Required Class: Warrior, Knight, Thief, Hunter

Required Level: 100

Everyone fixed their eyes on Zhang Yang after reading the name of the Skill. They were looking forward to Zhang Yang's explanation on the Skill.

Zhang Yang shook his head and told the 'truth', "I've only played the beta server this far. So I no longer have any idea about anything else in the future. Stop asking me questions already!"

Everyone said 'Oh' at the same time to express that they understood.

Without knowing the contents of the Skill, everyone rolled to see who would get it. By the end of it, Lost Dream claimed the Skill and learned it. Then he posted the Skill's description on the party chat for everyone to see.

[Riposte]: Cause 200% of both damage of the Primary Weapon and damage of Secondary Weapon combined to the target. Only can be activated when the target is blocking or dodging your attack. The effect can only last for 4 seconds or will fade upon fighting back.

"This is a very suitable Skill for taking on Tankers!" Lost Dream was filled with joy. Guardians had their {Block} while Knights had their {Holy Shield}. Both Skills were able to create a blocking effect. Now that Lost Dream had {Riposte}, he could give a big surprise to any Tanker that he might encounter during PvP matches in the future.

"Lost Dream, do you want to try out your Skill on me then? It'll be just like exercising!" Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer] around and smiled.

Lost Dream was in a dilemma to whether he should accept the challenge of Zhang Yang or not.

"I won't use Felice and the Phoenix! It'll be a fair fight!" Zhang Yang attempted to tease him a little more.

"Alright!" Lost Dream had finally tightened his teeth and agreed to accept the challenge. As a top Tier player, he also had a personal degree of achievement he would like to attain. No one would be happy to always stay under the shadow of someone greater after all. Even though Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang slept on the same bed every night, she would not hesitate to do what's necessary to win when it is time to compete. So what about the others, then?

By the end of it... Lost Dream became a tragic story.

Although the {Riposte} was really powerful and practical in many aspects, Lost Dream had only acquired one additional Skill after all.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang's super fortified Defense was not weakened at all! It was true that both of them were in their Transformation mode, the amount of HP they had on them was extremely abundant. Also, there was no sign of which one of them was capable of finishing the other. However, Lost Dream was still tortured by Zhang Yang pretty badly. He only had approximately a thousand points of HP when the battle ended. Zhang Yang stopped because if he continued, Lost Dream would have been killed by him. By doing that, Lost Dream would lose Experience Points for a stupid reason.

Well, one player had a Class S Inheritance while the other only had a Class B Inheritance. It was true that there only was a 5% difference between the Attack powers of both sides, before both of them activate their Inheritance Transformations. Practically speaking, the DPS of Lost Dream was just 5% weaker than the DPS of Zhang Yang in that sense. However, when both of them activated their Inheritance Transformations, the difference between the additional boost on their Attack powers became 500% and 300%. The difference was so much bigger, that it became a significant factor that led Lost Dream to his 'demise' for accepting the challenge.

"What the f*ck! Let's battle again after our Inheritance Transformations end!" Lost Dream was irritated.

"Fine!"

The party continued on to lure the monsters and slay them to prevent any 'wastage'. After all, their Inheritance Transformations could still last for approximately 30 minutes. After their Inheritance Transformations were over, Zhang Yang and Lost Dream came together and brought on the second round of their match. However, Lost Dream had lost again. He was so ashamed of himself to the point that he did not even dare to look at the others. After clearing up the area, everyone went back to the main city.

After disbanding the party, Zhang Yang took the 4 ladies back to the Spider Kingdom to complete their quest.

It seemed that Andros was still in great sorrow. After throwing a helmet

over to them, he no longer spoke to them at all.

The attributes of this helmet would differ according the Class of the player who wears it. If Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er are the ones who pick it up, it would become a Heavy Armor. If Sun Xin Yu picks it up, it would become a Leather Armor. If Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream pick it up, it would become Cloth Armor. However, the equipment would stay as an Ethereal Tier equipment.

[Demon Slaughterer's Helmet] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +320

Vitality: +7,557

Strength: +2,539

Agility: +1,102

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 15,110 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 8%

Equip: Absorbs 1,078 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Why did the system give us another hat?" Han Ying Xue was dissatisfied with what she got as the reward of the quest. She had just acquired a Holy Tier hat, after all. So this hat would not catch her attention at all. Instead, Daffodil Daydream was very interested in acquiring it. Although her current helmet was also an Ethereal Tier equipment, the equipment was only Level 140. Her current helmet was slightly weaker than this new helmet.

After completing the quest, the five of them went back to Sauron's castle. Then, they made their way back to the main city so that they could socket in the Level 6 Gemstones they had acquired earlier on into their

equipment sockets.

The attribute boosts that a Level 6 Gemstone could provide to a player was astonishing! Other than the cheap 400 points of Vitality, players would get additional 200 points for other attributes such as Strength, Agility, Intelligence, and Spirit. Zhang Yang had inserted a total of 3 Level 6 Strength Gemstones and increased his Strength by an additional 50%! With just Level 5 and Level 6 Strength Gemstones, his Strength had reached up to 2,100 points!

Currently, his lowest Attack would also exceed 100,000 damage. Upon activating his {Vitality Aura}, his Maximum HP had reached up to approximately 950,000 HP. He could be deemed as a humanoid monster now! If he ever wants to show off his attributes in the public channel, 99% of the players would definitely rub their eyes in disbelief.

In the eyes of the public, a top Tier player would only have a set of Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment. They would be so shocked that they would drop their jaws even if they only see a player with a total amount of 200,000 HP. If the high Tier player was holding a two-handed weapon, that player should be able to deal approximately 40,000 to 50,000 damage. There was no doubt that others would not be able to match such a high amount of damage.

That was the advantage that high-Level players would have over the other players who were lower in levels. They could wear equipment of higher level and insert gemstones that were higher in grade in their equipment as well. They could also learn Skills of higher level and drink potions of higher grades! These advantages could be combined together to create an improvement in the quality of a player.

For instance, even if Zhang Yang had a Class C Inheritance, he would have over 10,000,000 HP after activating his Transformation Skill. His Attack power would still exceed a basic damage of 200,000 because he was currently beyond Level 150. On the contrary, as the player mentioned above, even if the Level 140 player activates a Class A Inheritance Transformation Skill, the player's total amount of HP would only hit the cap of 6,000,000 HP. The player would only have over 130,000 basic

damage!

In that sense, the power level of a Class C Inheritance Transformation would actually be enough to defeat a Class A Inheritance Transformation.

Therefore, the most important aspect of online games was still 'Levels'! Players could only battle on the same ground, only if their levels were on similar par. Then only, could they compete against each other in terms of Skills and equipment.

Zhang Yang was content with his current attributes. After all, he only managed to attain such powerful attributes back in his previous life when he was at level 179. Back then, he did not have any equipment with the Special attribute that allowed him to equip the equipment 20 levels before he reached the Required Level for those equipment. Currently, he had a full set of Level 170 equipment. Two of the equipment were Holy Tier equipment, while the rest of the equipment were all Ethereal Tier.

However, because Zhang Yang only had a Class B Inheritance and a one-handed weapon in his previous life, his Attack power was far lower than the Attack power he had in this life currently. Speaking of his HP, he already had equipped himself with defensive equipment that were most important to Tankers. Furthermore, his shield was a Holy Tier equipment. In a nutshell, he is now far more powerful than he was in his previous life!

Haih... the old days were not meant to be brought up ever again!

Zhang Yang did not go lenient on himself when it came to grinding his level. One of the main reasons was that those few maniacs from the Eternal Flame were getting much more efficient in grinding their levels up for some reason. They were expressing their intentions clearly enough for everyone to know that they wanted to become Number One on the Leaderboard! Meanwhile, the other players from other Regions did not slack off either. If anyone would allow themselves to have any self-satisfaction upon their current achievement, it would only lead them down to a path that they could just stare at others overtaking them.

It was already July before anyone of them knew it. The summer in Zhou Su City has always been humid. Zhang Yang woke up early in the

morning. He was already sweaty the moment he stepped foot out of his house. Upon completing his morning training, his sweat was pouring down his six-packs, making them glisten in the sunlight like shining jewels. After he took a bath and had his breakfast, Zhang Yang went to work as usual.

He walked into the company and went into the elevator. Then he took a turn towards his office as usual. However, Zhang Yang had a weird feeling today. It felt like everyone was looking at him with weird eyes today.

Did the little brat stick another note on his back again?

Zhang Yang reached out his hand to touch his back. Well, he did not find any notes. Could it be that the little brat had put something on his handkerchief so that when he uses it, his face became 'flowery' and all? That was not possible! The little brat was not at home yesterday. She was at university all the while!

Pressing on with his suspicion, Zhang Yang walked right into his office. A few minutes later, he heard some gentle knocking on his office door. The door was pushed opened and a tall girl walked right into the office with a cup of hot coffee in her hands.

Zhang Yang's sixth sense was incredible!

This tall girl had the appearance on the same level as Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. She was definitely a 'disaster level' beauty. Sun Xin Yu was a cool beauty. Han Ying Xue was just plain freaking sexy. This girl looked like a juicy honeydew. Any man would feel an itch in their hearts and they would desire to rip off her clothes from head to toe to conquer her sexy hot body.

This girl was in her Office Lady uniform. Right between the opening of her collar, her fair skin, with a perfect complexion was revealed. Her bust was so compressed that her buttons were about to blow! It obviously exhibited her prideful assets. Any men in the room would have fallen into the honey pot trap!

Even though Zhang Yang's pair of eyes that had been fed with a lifetime of beautiful 'sights', he was still distracted for one brief moment by her

appearance.

"Mr. Zhang, I'm a new secretary. My name is Cheng Xue Yao" This 'disastrous level' elf was putting the cup of coffee onto Zhang Yang's table. Her eyes were so mesmerizing as they revealed a diverse and complex mental apparatus.

Zhang Yang had a total of 6 'daily' secretaries. They were all basically flower vases in the office. He could still recall that there was indeed a secretary with the surname 'Lee' coming into his office to resign. She informed him that she was going to marry someone. She even dared to ask Zhang Yang if he wanted to have a 'friendly match' with her to make her last day in the office memorable.

Zhang Yang did not fire these flower vases, mainly because he was not a cold-blooded son of a b*tch. Secondly, it was because he could use some eye candies in the office. After all, they were all considered as beauties in the office. He could feel satisfied even though he does not 'eat' them. Well, he also did not plan to hire another secretary to fill in her place so soon. He did not expect the people below him to be so persistent in filling up the empty slot in the office. It only took them two days to find a suitable candidate.

So now, Zhang Yang had finally solved the mystery. No wonder people were staring at him throughout the entire morning. Apparently, it was all because of the new girl Cheng Xue Yao. Yes, it would be true that such an angelic girl would become the center attention of many people. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had been well known to a collector of pretty women in his 'Doll House'. Hence, it made perfect sense that everyone was staring at him with strange looks.

"Mr. Zhang, I heard that you're playing 'God's Miracle' too!" Cheng Xue Yao was quite passionate in trying to make a conversation with Zhang Yang. She was giggling softly while talking to Zhang Yang. Her mesmerizing eyes were as if they were able to whisper. It was seductive.

How electrifying!

Zhang Yang was mesmerized by her watery eyes so badly as if there

were countless ants crawling in his heart. The ants were really biting through his heart from inside out right now! However, this girl seemed to know how to protect herself even though she seemed so effortlessly seductive.

For example, when she was leaning over to put coffee on the table, her other hand was placed cleverly to shield Zhang Yang's eyesight from staring straight at her busts and cleavage. She did maintain a subtle distance between herself and Zhang Yang as well. The distance was just perfect, that both of them did not feel awkward at all.

Chapter 699: Newbie

"Yea, I'm just messing around in the game, just for fun!" Zhang Yang said. Right after he came into his office, he had taken out his game helmet straightaway, ready to plug into the game. Before he could do that, this mesmerizingly disastrous new girl had walked right into his office.

"Mr Zhang should have reached quite a high level in the game, I assume." Chen Xue Yao was a little surprised to see that Zhang Yang was also a player for the game, "I just started playing the game a few days ago! I'm just Level 9. Please teach me how to be a good player!"

Looking at her eyes filled with excitement and expectancy, Zhang Yang was moved. So he nodded. However, she would surely become another popular female player among the men in the game. They would surely fall for her, even if she was just walking around in the game. Only if she used her real-life appearance in the game, of course. Well, she could just ask those men to help her. So why would she still need Zhang Yang's help then?

Could it be, that she knew Zhang Yang was Zhan Yu in the game?

Unlikely! Only a minority knew his true identity in real life. Well, only those who went to join the Soaring Swords competition in Shang Hai would have seen his face in person anyway. As he recalled back throughout his entire life, he did not get so bored that he would go to tell anyone about his life and his game life, at all. Wait a minute... Could this be a scheme from Liu Wei or Zhong Xiu Hua?

It was unlikely that Liu Wei would do such a thing. The reason was simple. Look at her appearance! Even Zhang Yang felt 'heaty' upon taking a look at her! Not to mention that Zhang Yang himself felt the urge to loosen his 'brother' from his pants! Well, he almost did! Would Liu Wei be able to resist at all? Liu Wei would have 'collected' this girl as his own, instead of sending her out to be a spy.

On the other hand, things would be a little bit different for Zhong Xiu Hua. His capability was far beyond Zhang Yang's imagination. He might

be determined to destroy the relationship Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu had now. And the easiest way to do it was to make known to the girl that his man cheated!

Not many men could have resisted the 'temptation' that Chen Xue Yao wrought onto them. If he really did get touchy with her and she happened to have a camera somewhere to record everything, then Zhang Yang would be done for!

So could it be real, then?

Zhang Yang fell silent for a brief moment as he went into deep thought about the situation. Well, he had been through a lot just to get together with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. They had also been through so much together that he no longer craved just for their bodies. Even though this Chen Xue Yao looked honeyed and ready for him to 'taste', but Zhang Yang believed that he could get himself in line to not turn himself into a horny beast.

If Chen Xue Yao was really sent here by Zhong Xiu Hua, then he should be able to use her to get back at Zhong Xiu Hua! Furthermore, that accusation was just in his head alone. Maybe this girl was innocent, after all? We shall see about that.

Well, coming from another perspective, even though Zhang Yang did not have any thoughts of getting in bed with Chen Xue Yao, but the love for appealing aesthetics is native to humans, afterall. There was no denying in that. Zhang Yang could have an extra eye candy to himself by keeping her around the office. Other than that, if Zhang Yang decides to fire her right away, her next boss might not be a decent boss. Her future boss might use all sorts of methods of getting her to submit to him. It was infuriating even to think about that!

A while later, Chen Xue Yao brought in another brand new game helmet with her when she walked back into the office. Her round, peachy buttocks rested on the sofa and she crossed her long fair legs, sitting down on the sofa elegantly. That sexy hot movement could really get a thirsty man to drool!

"Mr. Zhang, just add me as your Friend after you log into the game!" Chen Xue Yao said.

Zhang Yang nodded and put on his game helmet. He signed in and arrived at the Sauron's Castle.

"Mr. Zhang, my in-game name is just 'Xue Yao'. Remember to add me!"

Zhang Yang brought up his Friend-list. Then he entered the name 'Xue Yao' into the system to search for her. A Friend Request was sent to her and in just a blink of an eye, she accepted his Friend Request.

He looked at the Friend-list to have a look at her avatar information: Xue Yao, Level 9, Female Elf, Cryomancer.

She really did tell him the truth. She was currently Level 9! That meant that she really did join the game very recently! The game rule have stated everyone could only have one account, one character in the game. Well, there was also a possibility to ignore a dummy account sometimes. Of course, it might be because she deleted her old account and started a new one. However, Zhang Yang could not understand her true intentions just yet.

"Huh? Mr. Zhang! You're at Level 153 now?! You're awesome!" Chen Xue Yao spoke in surprise. That really stroked his ego for a bit. However, the fact that she did not know the renowned 'Zhan Yu' had proven that she was really a rookie, a newbie!

"Just call me Zhan Yu in the game. It's a little awkward to hear someone calling me Mr. Zhang!"

"Roger, Mr, Zhang... Zhan Yu!"

Chen Xue Yao did not request for Zhang Yang to aid her in grinding her level. Instead, Zhang Yang was the one who insisted on lending her a hand. He explained to her on how to play as a Spellcaster. Then, the two of them went off separately to grind their levels.

However, Chen Xue Yao would report her progress to Zhang Yang in excitement, every time she reached another new level. It was most probably because she did not know anyone in the game yet. However, her

grinding efficiency was not really ideal, to begin with. When Zhang Yang was still at her level, he could have grind 3 levels up with the same amount of time it takes for her to gain 1 level.

Currently, the 4 ladies had become one gang. They basically did everything together. Zhang Yang could not help but wonder, weren't that witchy snow and that ice queen sworn enemies? So, how could they suddenly be able to get along in harmony all of a sudden? They're in the same party in grinding their levels? How odd!

Women's minds are indeed fascinating!

A while ago, he was requested by the four ladies to grind with them. Apparently, they had found a new spot which would spawn a large number of Elite Tier monsters. However, they could not slay the monsters without Zhang Yang shielding them from getting slaughtered by the large horde of monsters. Furthermore, their Inheritance Transformation Skills were still under cooldown period. So, they had to ask Zhang Yang for a favor.

However, Wei Yan Er kept saying that they asked him to come because they wanted to share good 'fortune' with him. They would not have shared such a good spot otherwise.

In other words, the little brat... no, the 4 ladies wanted him to feel grateful for becoming their 'errand boy'!

In that monster area, there was a narrow pathway by the side of it. Zhang Yang and his Phoenix pet could block the entire pathway if they could just stand side by side in the middle of the pathway. Sun Xin Yu and the other ladies were positioned right behind Zhang Yang and the Phoenix pet. They were the DPS players in this battle. In approximately 30 minutes, the five of them had wiped out every existence of monsters in that area. Their Experience Bars grew substantially from that.

If only there were such great number of Elite Tier monsters for them to farm for Experience Points anywhere else on the map. They would have reached a whole new level by the end of the day! Unfortunately, their 'if only' was just a distant dream that could never become true. It would not

be possible to do so unless they mobilize the entire army of Lone Desert Smoke out, scouring every inch of the maps in the entire game for similar spots with large number of monsters. Then, they could just travel from one spot to another in order to claim their 'prizes'.

However, it would take quite some time for players to travel around on a large map. Though they would not suffer any loss by the end of it, it would take them approximately 4 to 5 days to grind a level. That should be the maximum speed of current stage players in grinding their level up. However, Zhang Yang and the ladies would be wasting the time of their guild members. It would be a huge loss for Lone Desert Smoke as a whole, because they would be too busy to aid Zhang Yang and the ladies to level up, instead of grinding their own levels up efficiently.

"Master Zhan Yu, can you come over and tank for us in a dungeon?" Not long after Zhang Yang parted ways with the ladies, he received a voice message from Chen Xue Yao. He was shopping at the Auction House.

Tank for them? In which dungeon?

Zhang Yang frowned a little. This girl had just reached Level 12. She could only enter some low-level dungeon at the moment! Meanwhile, even if she is going to challenge the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon, she would only need a Level 50 player with average equipment to clear it without a single problem. Even if it is a Priest or a Holy Knight, she could have cleared the dungeon with only one Level 50 player's help.

Now that she requested Zhang Yang to aid her in clearing low-level dungeons, well... Zhang Yang did not know whether he should just laugh it off or cry it off loud.

Newbie! She's just a newbie!

Furthermore, she is actually the type of newbie that knew a little about the game. She knew that she needed a tanker to tank against monsters in the dungeon. So if Zhang Yang ever tries to show off his 'knowledge' about the game, he might make a fool out of himself without even knowing if he ever misinforms her about something.

So, Zhang Yang smiled it off and decided to help out. He thought to

himself, that he had not been showing off for quite a while. If he goes to 'tank' the dungeon for Chen Xue Yao as the Number One Tanker in the entire world, she should get a shock, right?

Another reason was because he had been farming for quite a while now. Trying to do something different was what he needed. So, he accepted Chen Xue Yao's request. Upon finding out which main city to go, Zhang Yang teleported over to the main city and summoned out his Phoenix pet. Then, he flew right away to the location where Chen Xue Yao was. However, his Phoenix pet would give up his identity. It would be impossible to keep his identity as a secret if Chen Xue Yao ever sees his Phoenix pet. So, he went to the ground and switched out Whitey, long before he reached her. Then he hopped onto Whitey and the two of them raced their butts over to the girl.

"Here! Over here!" right by the entrance of the dungeon, Chen Xue Yao was waving her staff, trying to get Zhang Yang to see her. She was wearing a set of shabby equipment from head to toe. Zhang Yang felt sad for her. Other than the cape and the staff, everything was just White-Wood Tier.

Small maps would clearly show the positions of every player within a certain distance from the player in the map as long as they are not too far from each other. She was obviously a newbie, because she actually did not know about that function of the game. Instead, she was yelling and waving at Zhang Yang from afar. Obviously, she had never played 'God's Miracle' or other games that are similar to this game in her entire life.

Because of that, she did not even try to change some settings on her appearance at all. Her face was the exact copy of her real face in real life. It was enchanting to look at. Zhang Yang could not even look at her in disdain because of her face. He only knew how to stare at her without a blink of his eyes.

"Ms. Xue Yao, is this the tanker that you summoned?" There were more than just Zhang Yang and Xue Yao on the party. There were other three male players. However, the player with the highest level was at Level 27. The other two players were only Level 22 and Level 16. Well, at least they met the requirement to challenge the dungeon that they were going into.

The player who spoke was 'Unkillable Cockroach'. He was the player who had reached Level 27. At first, he was farming equipment and Experience Points together with his colleagues in Marzerway's Lair. After hearing about a pretty low-level lady player wanting to go into the Banka Underground Tunnel, he quit Marzerway's Lair and joined Chen Xue Yao's party.

After seeing Chen Xue Yao with his own eyes, he instantly got electrocuted. Why would he want any equipment when a mesmerizing existence like Chen Xue Yao is standing right in front of him? If the system did not have the Anti-harassment System, he would have satisfied his itch by pushing himself onto her, even though they were in the game.

To get the attention of Chen Xue Yao, he even purposely brought along another low-level player with him. However, it was really hard to get a high-leveled player, these days. Same goes for locating low-level players. It was not because the number of low-level players was too small. It was because normal guilds normally do not recruit low-level players. That was because the player's standard could not be determined when their levels are too low. Furthermore, it would be uncourteous to kick people out of the guild once they had joined.

Even though the three of them were also newbies in 'God's Miracle', but they seemed to have played other similar games, just that their levels were a little low for now. They were not really newbies to begin with. They had never expected Chen Xue Yao to find a super high-level Tanker to join them.

Players could only get a pet mount once they attain Level 30. None of them believed that Zhang Yang was just Level 30, even though he had hidden his character information. Well, they could tell that Zhang Yang could crush everything in the dungeon all alone. There would not be any 'tanking' or whatsoever!

Newbies!

However, the three male players were much happier when Chen Xue Yao was much more noob. That being said, they could show off quite a

number of things in front of her. Unfortunately, they were irked by this 'newcomer' that Chen Xue Yao summoned over. He actually hid his character information from them! Pui! Was he trying to act like he was some sort of professional player? Not to mention that Level 100 players were all over the place now. So, what was his true intention in trying to hide his information from the others, then? Beware getting struck by lightning for trying to act cool! Those were the thoughts that ran through the minds of three jealous male players.

At the earlier stage of the game, players would be able to see character information of other players when they were joined into the same party. Their Names, Races, levels, and Classes were all visible to their own party members. However, ever since the Chaos Realm had been unlocked, the game had changed some of its functionalities. Now, the character information of a player would only become visible when he or she enters the land of their enemy Regions. Or else, the character information of a player would stay hidden even after they were join the same party. Only friends on the Friend List could see the character information of the player or the other way around.

Therefore, Zhang Yang's character information remained hidden, even after Chen Xue Yao added him into her party.

Chapter 700: Snowbark

If they had known that Chen Xue Yao would summon a high-level Tanker to aid them, they would have suggested looking for a Tanker themselves. If Unkillable Cockroach's colleague could bring him to farm the Level 20 dungeon, then they would not have problems clearing this dungeon at all.

At first, the three male players were competing against each other to see who could win the girl over. They were trying to show off their strong suites one after another. A fight almost exploded among them, even. However, when Zhang Yang showed himself, the three of them agreed on to stand on the same line to repel their 'strongest competitor'.

"This is the CEO of the company where I work at!" Chen Xue Yao smiled sweetly at them.

Is this some sort of joke? A hidden story between the boss and his secretary? Damn!

The three of them revealed a strong sense of jealousy on their faces. A thousand thoughts were racing through their minds at the same instant. Like a knave who uses his own yardstick to measure the motive of an upright man, some filthy people might have imagined others to be just like themselves.

Although Whitey could not match Phoenix pet at all, it did not take long before it reached the entrance of the dungeon. After seeing that the place was empty, Zhang Yang sighed with all sorts of feelings welling up in his mind. Two years ago when the Banka Underground Tunnel was first unlocked, this place used to be so crowded that it looked like a bank or an Auction house. There was no need to worry that one could not find a party to enter the dungeon.

Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 153, and he was leading the Number One guild in the entire game server. Furthermore, he had conquered a total of 3 Territories. Not to mention, he was no longer the newbie who freshly joined. He had become one of the best players, no...

the best player in the entire game server! Now that he changed so much, he could not help but to feel emotional when he saw that everything here still remained the same, except there was no crowd here.

"Banka Underground Tunnel is a 10-player scale dungeon. Why don't we look for another high Level player first before we start?" Unkillable Cockroach gave Zhang Yang an unfriendly stare. Then, he suddenly stopped moving. It was most probably that he was sending private messages to look for players.

Zhang Yang was shocked for a brief moment. Then he understood --- over the greatest beauty hangs the greatest ruin! Some girls were just too pretty to be true. As long as you stay by her side, you would catch some fire unintentionally and you might even get yourself burned! Zhang Yang did not mind and he smiled it off. Well, he was here to show off, anyway. So he just had to continue what he was trying to do.

Unkillable Cockroach asked Chen Xue Yao to add another player called 'SuikaTaro' into their party. That guy was complaining about them asking him to come. Well, he was about to hit Level 100 and he was just one step before entering Chaos Realm. If he was not Unkillable Cockroach's colleague, he would not have come here, even though they paid him 1,000 gold pieces.

Unkillable Cockroach instantly taunted Zhang Yang by staring at him. Can you hear him? Our friend is about to hit Level 100! So don't you think that you're the only one with high level now!

Zhang Yang was bored. So he took out all sorts of materials and began to make potions. When Unkillable Cockroache and his friends saw Zhang Yang making potions such as [Armor Piercing Potions], [Invincibility Potion] and [Level 6 Healing Potions], they began to drool. Although they had not reached the Required Level to consume those potions just yet, they knew enough to know that these potions were extremely valuable!

--- Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop had turned into a second Auction House in the server. Countless players would visit his shop to make purchase of things they required on a daily basis. Whatever valuable

and good, anyone who had set foot into his Little Merchandize Shop would know. The items that were demanded the most would surely be [Armor Piercing Potions] and [Temporary Invincibility Potions].

Zhang Yang was also a Grandmaster grade Alchemist. He could make 10 Potions in one single process. If he could perform the process once in every second, he could have made 600 potions in just one minute!

The three of them were drooling because they knew that one bottle of that [Temporary Invincibility Potion] could cost up to 500 gold pieces. With that price tag, the items was still out of stock very often! If they could just get the potions that Zhang Yang made to the market and sell them, how much money could they make out of them?

Hundreds of thousands gold pieces? Or maybe Millions?

How can this fellow be so rich!

Zhang Yang had never been short on ingredients required to make potions. He would constantly let his Herb Foraging Familiar out to gather the ingredients. Of course, he did not do that in this dungeon. The reason was simple. The Herb Foraging Familiar was paid, according to time. The herbs and other ingredients that could be found on this map were definitely of low Tier. Zhang Yang would not be able to even cover the cost of summoning the Herb Foraging Familiar in that case.

Since making potions required time and patience, Zhang Yang was willing to wait for that 'VIP' SuikaTaro to come over. After waiting for approximately 25 minutes, SuikoTaro finally came together with his white ram pet mount. The moment when he saw Chen Xue Yao, his arrogant face instantly vanished. Instead, his eyes was glowing violently, as he was staring at Chen Xue Yao with a sense of horniness on his face.

"Haha! So you guys want to repeat clearing this dungeon, right? No problem! Even though the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon would only refresh once in every 3 days, we can still enter the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode repeatedly without any restrictions, whatsoever!" Although SuikoTaro was talking, his eyes were fixed on Chen Xue Yao.

Chen Xue Yao had a glimpse of doubt on her face. Well, she was indeed

a true newbie here. She only knew that Tankers were meant to tank the monsters out front, and the Healers would be healing from the rear. The DPS players would be dealing damage from whichever angle, suitable according to the situation of the battle. However, she basically had zero knowledge of levels and equipment. Hence, she felt strange upon hearing SuikoTaro, a Thief, saying that out loud.

They began their farming with the Normal Mode. Zhang Yang did not try to snatch SuikoTaro's opportunity of showing himself off. He only let Whitey handle the monsters while he was making potions at the rear. Time was precious. There was no way that he would waste his time killing low-level monsters.

With a Level 99 Thief and Whitey's support attacks, their progress was so efficient that they could not believe it themselves. Well, Whitey was basically abandoned in Zhang Yang's inventory. It was only Level 124 currently. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had ripped off most of its Skills. So, Whitey could only deal a limited amount of damage.

--- Because Whitey did not have any AoE Skill, SuikoTaro could lure a bunch of monsters and wiped them out with his {Blades of Fan}. So, Whitey's damage was just simply not enough when it was compared to SuikoTaro's.

SuikoTaro felt like a boss because he was clearing the entire dungeon like a boss, literally! Meanwhile, he continued to brag about himself while he was clearing out the monsters. Well, he was trying to butter himself nicely so that Chen Xue Yao could have a good impression about him. As he talked nonstop in front of the girl, the other 3 male players were beginning to feel irritated.

"Brother Liu, the new manager of that department is a rich and handsome man! Many girls have fallen for him, you know? You better make sure your wife doesn't get hooked away!" Unkillable Cockroach said. Firstly, he said it out loud was to stop SuikoTaro from bragging on about himself. Secondly, he wanted to inform Chen Xue Yao that this man already had a wife.

SuikoTaro was very unhappy about it. So he said, "Pui! Even though he's tall and rich and handsome, but what else can he do? My wife had told me once before! That man is just looking good on the outside! That little brother of his beneath his pants is just 2 inches long!"

"Haha!" The men were laughing together.

However, they stopped all of a sudden. The situation became awkward all of a sudden.

How would his wife know how long is the other man's 'little brother'? Obviously, SuikoTaro had been put on a green cap. In other words, his wife cheated on him with that man that they were talking about.

For the next few minutes, everyone stayed quiet while clearing up the monsters in the surroundings.

Because only Chen Xue Yao and another Thief called 'DodoRyu' had a need to farm the dungeon, everything that was dropped from the monsters were given to either of them only. So, there was no snatching or quarreling among them, because they tend to resolve that matter in a civilized manner. Well, Chen Xue Yao had no idea whether an item or an equipment was good or bad. The others had to explain things one by one so that she could understand things bit by bit. Through that, she finally understood that Intelligence Attribute could boost one's Spell attack power, and Spirit Attribute could increase the rate of MP recovery.

After clearing up the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon, the four men that were basically drugged by the mesmerizing appearance of Chen Xue Yao were tapping on their chests suggesting that they would be more than willing to aid her in grinding her level. They even tried to boast that they could help her level up another 20 levels more. Upon doing so, they would then take her to the Marzerway's Lair for another farming session. Zhang Yang rubbed his nose a little bit. Well, he was almost done with making potions. There was no point that he should stay behind for all this.

Unfortunately for him, he did not have a chance to show off in front of Chen Xue Yao.

After Zhang Yang made up his mind to leave, they walked out of the

dungeon. Suddenly, Zhang Yang noticed that there was another bunch of players arrived at the entrance of the dungeon. They were carrying the title of 'The Myth! Their leader was a Spellcaster wearing fancy clothes named 'Snowbark'. He was currently at Level 142. He was the most powerful one among that bunch of players.

Zhang Yang instantly felt a rage blazing right in his heart. This Snowbark, was one of the two second graded generals that served under Liu Wei in his previous life. During his previous life when he was leading Clear Water, this Snowbark and the other second graded general called 'All Beetles' would always lead their own party to slaughter the members of Clear Water who were trying to grind their levels. They worked together, trying to bully Zhang Yang's guild members by using the advantages of having high levels.

During that period of time, Clear Water hated Liu Wei, Snowbark and All Beetles the most for that reason. Some had even made puppets with their names on them, trying to curse them.

"The Myth is grinding here! Anyone who is not one of us should get lost now!" One of them spoke arrogantly.

What a bunch of arrogant sons of b*tches! Everyone could make their room for the dungeon. It would not bother them at all if there were others there to clear the dungeon as well. These people were actually trying to clear everyone out of the dungeon for their own joy? That was not a normal kind of arrogance anymore!

However, Zhang Yang had never really cared about the people from The Myth. Meanwhile, SuikaTaro and the others had no balls at all to be so cocky in front of those people. Although The Myth was not considered as one of the top Tier guild, under the showering of Liu Wei's money, the guild still managed to grow into one of the large-scale guild. Well, they were still too powerful for SuikaTaro and his friends to take these people on/

Furthermore, casting aside the name of the guild, that Snowbark was Level 142, currently If he wanted to, he could have instantly taken out

SuikaTaro and his friends by just moving his fingers. So SuikaTaro and his friends were not daring enough to 'bark' back at them even if they wanted to.

"Hold on!" A Berserker fixed his eyes on Chen Xue Yao and widened his eyes. Then he said, "Brother Snow, look at that chick!"

"What a decent, fine looking chick!"

"What the f*ck! That *ss and those tits! Her top is going to rip at any moment! Look at that!"

"If I can rub my d*ck in between her two tits, that would be heaven!"

Foul and indecent words were heard talking right out of those idiots' mouths. People of The Myth were fixing their perverted eyes on Xue Yao. They looked like hungry wolves which were staring at a harmless lamb!

"Leave the girl behind and you guys, get lost!" Snowbark spoke in disdain.

"Quickly! Into the dungeon!" SuikaTaro was not an idiot. He knew that as long as they get back into the dungeon, they would be safe from these group of goons. No matter how powerful they were, there would be no way for them to pursue them.

They quickly went back into the dungeon one after another. When they were in the dungeon, all they needed to do was to take out their [Teleportation Scrolls], and they could just go back to the main city or Territory.

"Huh? Where's Zhan Yu?" Xue Yao was doing a headcount. She was surprised when she realized that Zhang Yang was not with them. Then she said, "Oh no! Zhan Yu hasn't come through yet! He must have been cut off by those hoodlums! We must get back and help him!"

"Zhan Yu?" the other 4 players began to laugh, "Sister Xue Yao, you're cheated! Zhan Yu is known as the Number One player in the entire server, the best player in the entire world! How can that fool be really him?!"

"That's right! He thought he can hide his character information so that

he can disguise himself as Zhan Yu? What a naive man he is!"

"No wonder he did not even try to do anything while we were busting our *sses, trying to clear the dungeon! So, he was actually scared that we might see through him!"

"Sister Xue Yao, this cheater deserves to be killed! We don't have to care about him at all. Since we've completed the dungeon, we can go back to the main city to hand in the quest. We can take you to another place to grind your level!"

"Furthermore, if he is the real Zhan Yu, he could have taken out them all without a problem at all! He won't need our help at all!"

The four of them were trying to talk Chen Xue Yao out of helping Zhang Yang. From their point of view, Zhang Yang was just like them. The reason he approached Chen Xue Yao was to get her to sleep with him in bed.

Chapter 701: Book of Revelations - The Eighth Chapter

Even though Snowbark was already a Level 142 high level player, he would not be fast enough to stop SuikoTaro and his party members from getting away through the entrance of the dungeon. For that, they could only sigh heavily, to express how unfortunate it was for them. After all, it was really a rare opportunity for them to gaze their eyes upon a rare specimen of beauty like Chen Xue Yao.

However, there was one person who stayed behind instead of running into the dungeon like the other 5 of his party members. Snowbark burst into laughter when he saw that. Since that the pretty lady had escaped, they decided to have some 'fun' with the idiot who stayed.

"You swine! You're quite daring yourself, aren't you?" Three of The Myth players blocked off Zhang Yang's escape route so that he could not escape later. The remaining players in front of Zhang Yang were staring at Zhang Yang with their arms folded. They looked like they were waiting for something 'interesting' to happen.

"Alright, take off all your equipment and bark like a dog, now!" Snowbark laughed continuously.

"Take them off now! Take them off!" the others were beginning to hustle Zhang Yang up.

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and smiled vaguely. Then he said, "I'm not like you. You guys rather act like animals while you can act like human beings!"

"F*ck you! How dare you scold us!" one of them who was only Level 10 pulled out his blade and pointed at Zhang Yang. Well, he tried to act tough because Snowbark was there.

Pff!

Zhang Yang was not in the mood to play around. He stabbed his sword hard into the chest of that player. His sword went through the chest of the

player clean and caused 100,000 damage to the arrogant player. It was just a regular attack which caused an immensely terrifying amount of damage! That attack had completely killed off that player. With a powerful swing of his word, the dead body of that player spun midair and dropped heavily onto the ground.

Most of the players had experienced a PvP match. However, not all of them would have the opportunity to see such a bloody scene. In an instant, other than Snowbark himself, the others were terrified to the point that they froze. They were all just Level 10+. It was a coincidence that Snowbark brought his little brother along to grind their levels. So, they came here together to farm for Experience Points and Equipment.

Well, the player that got slaughtered by Zhang Yang was in fact Snowbark's little brother. He just joined 'God's Miracle' a couple of days ago. Because he had an elder brother who had reached Level 142, he thought that he could act like a boss in the game. Even though he saw that the equipment on Zhang Yang and flashy as f*ck, he still taunted Zhang Yang. Judging by the appearance of Zhang Yang's shiny equipment, anyone should know that Zhang Yang was definitely not a low level player.

Of course, Snowbark could not bear to see his little brother killed right in front of him. So he raised his staff and shot out a blast of flame towards Zhang Yang.

'-8,763!'

An insignificant amount of damage was dealt on Zhang Yang. That only moved about 1% of his HP bar. After all, Zhang Yang's Maximum HP had increased up to 950,000 HP.

Including Snowbark himself, everyone dropped their jaws, staring at Zhang Yang! They were all on the same party as Snowbark. So they could clearly see the amount of damage Snowbark caused on Zhang Yang. He had only dealt approximately 9,000 damage to a player they had thought weak. Judging by that, they could deduce that Zhang Yang had over 1,000,000 HP!

He must have activated his Transformation Skill!

Snowbark had more experience and knowledge than everyone in his party. He immediately made an assumption based on his own logic. He quickly took a few steps backward so that he could defend himself against any surprise attack from Zhang Yang. At the same instant, he also activated his own Transformation Skill --- Class C Infernal Wolf Inheritance!

Zhang Yang staggered for one brief moment upon seeing that. What the hell is wrong with this guy? Zhang Yang had not revealed his true identity yet, and this guy was already acting extra cautious. He even activated his final triumph card! However, Zhang Yang would never waste his {God of War Transformation} on a small fry, like Snowbark. So he charged towards Snowbark without activating his Inheritance Transformation.

"You prick! How dare you kill my little brother! I shall tear you into pieces!" Snowbark became more confident than before after he activated his Inheritance Transformation. He raised his staff and pointed its tip at Zhang Yang. Then he began to chant a spell.

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang waved his hand and activated his Skill. Snowbark could feel that he was being pulled by an irresistible force towards Zhang Yang. The force was so strong that Snowbark almost kissed Zhang Yang's face after he was pulled to Zhang Yang's front, and stopped there all of a sudden. Of course, his chanting had been interrupted, completely.

'-112,349!'

With a swing across his throat, Snowbark received a tremendous amount of damage. He initially had over 180,000 HP. Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, he boosted his Maximum HP up to a total of 1,800,000 HP. Of course, he could not afford to receive such a high amount of damage! Furthermore, that was not the only attack Zhang Yang launched. Upon his regular strike which filled up his Rage Bar, he activated his {God of War Battle Axe} closely with his previous attack and dealt '-328,733!' to Snowbark! Zhang Yang had begun revealing his

wretched claws at his 'victims'.

Let's just say if Snowbark takes the first hit without dying, the second hit that yet to land on him would be a fatal blow to his guts!

He quickly activated his {Apparate} and got himself out of the danger with the attempt to pull some distance between himself and Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang pursued on with his {Charge}. It was impossible to chant a spell in peace when you're confronting Zhang Yang!

"God damn it!" Snowbark began to panic. He gulped down a bottle of [Temporary Invincibility Potion] and a golden light flashed through his entire body. A glittering barrier covered him entirely, keeping him safe from Zhang Yang's attacks. So he no longer feared Zhang Yang anymore. He used the little time he bought for himself to chant his spell.

It was really ironic that this guy was using a [Temporary Invincibility Potion] that Zhang Yang mass-produced in the market. It was like crushing a rock on one's feet. Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at himself. However, the effect of the potion would wear off after 5 seconds. So, Zhang Yang allowed Snowbark to do what he wanted to do.

Snowbark threw out two spells at Zhang Yang consecutively. Each blow caused about 75,000 damage to Zhang Yang. With his Inheritance Transformation activated, Snowbark had acquired a boost of additional 200% damage that almost doubled the initial amount of damage he could deal on Zhang Yang. That had made his attack quite effective on Zhang Yang!

If another regular player without activating his or her Inheritance Transformation was standing there, these two hits would have taken at least half of his or her HP bar! Zhang Yang lost over 20% of his HP. Because of that, Zhang Yang's remaining HP was almost similar to Snowbark's HP now.

After seeing Snowbark performing outstandingly, his 'underlings' were screaming and shouting in excitement. They even tried to butter Snowbark up by saying some nice hearing words. However, good things will never last forever. 5 seconds later, the golden barrier faded. The effect of the

[Temporary Invincibility Potion] was over.

1 second before the effect of [Temporary Invincibility Potion] was over, Zhang Yang had activated his {Charge Up Strike}. The moment Snowbark came out of that protective 'egg shell', Zhang Yang's 1-second global cooldown for his Skills was over as well. He struck his {God of War Devastation} right in the face of Snowbark!

'-1,010,658!'

Before Snowbark could even react, his HP bar was struck down to approximately 300,000 HP! Meanwhile, he had not realized that his HP bar had reduced so much. He continued to chant his spell in comfort.

On the other hand, his 'underlings' could see everything, crystal clear from the side. They were so shocked that their eyes were wide open, and their jaws were dropped.

One single attack that could cause 1,000,000 damage? What sorcery was that?! In their puny hearts, 1,000,000 damage was so terrifying that even a Celestial Tier boss would be instantly killed!

Snowbark finally threw another {Fire Ball} at Zhang Yang and caused about 82,000 damage to him. Just as he was about to taunt Zhang Yang, he finally realized that his HP bar was about to hit the bottom. His face instantly turned pale.

{Killing Cleave}!

'-472,212!'

"Argh!" Snowbark did not even get his chance to activate his life-saving Skill or any other accessories that could have saved his life --- only if he ever had an Accessory that could grant him a brief moment of invincibility to begin with, which he did not. Or else, he would not have taken a bottle of [Temporary Invincibility Potion]. One bottle of that thing cost 500 gold pieces! It was extremely expensive! After screaming miserably like a little b*tch, he collapsed onto the ground and dead.

However, after one brief moment, he stood back up on his feet and both of his HP bar and MP bar went back up to 10%! He did not even look back

at Zhang Yang as he began to race towards the dungeon's entrance.

Huh?

Zhang Yang was shocked to see that. Could Snowbark be carrying a [Resurrection Monolith] with him all the while? That was some great stuff! Zhang Yang was determined to snatch that item from Snowbark.

He immediately activated his {Spear of Obliteration} and threw the energy surging spear straight towards Snowbark! However, Snowbark was agile. He ran so fast that he was already reaching the dungeon entrance. Well, it remained a big question on whether Zhang Yang's {Spear of Obliteration} hits Snowbark or not!

On that critical moment, 4 players charged out of the entrance! It was Chen Xue Yao and the other male players, except SuikoTaro.

Snowbark revealed a relief facial expression when he was just a few steps from entering the dungeon entrance. However, he froze immediately when the 4 shadows emerged from the entrance. Before he could even react, his body had smacked straight into Unkillable Cockroach! That stopped him from entering the dungeon in time. Meanwhile, the {Spear of Obliteration} arrived!

'-118,893!'

The Inheritance Transformation would be considered over once the player died. Snowbark only had 10% of HP and MP on him when he was resurrected. That being said, he only had approximately 18,000 HP left on him. There was no way that he could have survived that attack. He immediately let out a miserable scream once again and stayed dead on the ground this time! Well, he even dropped a blue covered book on the ground upon his death.

"Get that book! Quickly! Get it back for me!" Snowbark screamed like a little b*tch in his party chat. It sounded like he was terrified.

Huh?

Zhang Yang widened his eyes as he saw that those underlings of Snowbarks charging towards the book. So he immediately activated his

{Horizontal Sweep} and wiped them out like he was cleaning dust off the floor.

Meanwhile, Unkillable Cockroach and the others were staring at Zhang Yang like they had just met a god. Those players that they thought they could never defeat were all lying dead on the ground before them! They had remembered clearly how regretful those dead players looked like.

Could it be really him? After being with him all the while, was he not tricking them from the start? Could he be the real Zhan Yu?

Phew! If he really is, then they would have something to show off to their friends!

Zhang Yang picked up the book and took a closer look at it. He was surprised to have picked up such a unique piece of item! His face was filled with joy, immediately!

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 8] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: All party member within the range of 100 meters from the holder will receive an increment of 5% damage dealt. Similar effects will not stack. If the holder is killed, he or she can resurrect immediately on the spot and have 10% HP and MP. This effect can only be triggered once every 10 hours. Similar effects will not stack. If the holder is killed by other players while the resurrection is under a cooldown period, then this item will surely be dropped from the holder. The item can only be brought along by the player. Cannot be destroyed.

Use: Combine with the item [Book of Revelation: Chapter 7] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 9] together.

However, it was really shocking to see that these goons were actually capable of getting a Legendary Item!

Furthermore, how would such an item be in the hands of Snowbark? Would Liu Wei really be that generous to let his subordinates keep hold of such a rare and valuable item? Snowbark was not a Tanker like Zhang Yang. Letting him hold on to such item would be disastrous and risky. It would be much safer if Liu Wei holds on to it himself. Well, he had over 12

Tankers on his 'Suicide Squad,' lining up to use their {Sacrifice} on him. Surely the chances of his survival would be much higher than Snowbark!

Then, this item must have been secretly kept by Snowbark himself. Liu Wei must have not known about this at all!

So, this explained why he was so afraid to die. He had immediately activated his Inheritance Transformation was because he was so worried that he might drop the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 8] if he ever dies. Unfortunate, he did die in the end. It gave not only pleasure to Zhang Yang but also a great 'gift'.

Well, Zhang Yang had really earned something really valuable, this time around!

Chapter 702: Identity

With Cheng Xue Yao's help, the Unkillable Cockroach trio was able to waltz out of the dungeon with their chests held out proudly. They had said it then, it would not matter for them to lose their experience points since it was only worth a day's work. In fact, they were only saying that to get to Cheng Xue Yao's good side.

On the other hand, SuikaToro was greatly dismayed. He was Level 99 and was about to reach Level 100. He was that close to entering the Chaos Realm! A further chapter of the game! Hence, he bit down his pride, thought over it thoroughly and realized that he did not have the urge to gamble. If he is able to win the lovely lady's heart with the bet, he would be all in for it. However, at that point, it was already too late for him. Eventually, SuikaTaro had decided to give up all up and used a [Teleportation Scroll] to leave the dungeon.

With the dead bodies on the floor, the trio walked over to Zhang Yang. With excitement and admiration, they asked, "Are you really Zhan Yu?"

"The one and only." Said Zhang Yang with a smile. After he claimed the [Book of Revelation], he was rather in a good mood!

The trio jumped with joy and cheer happily. They opened the in-game screenshot function and played it cool with Zhang Yang, as if he was part of their crew! They were so happy that they could take a picture with the strongest player in China and possibly the whole world! Imagine the glory they could fish out with the picture with the tagline saying: Lookie here! World's Strongest is our bro~!

Zhang Yang smiled awkwardly and turned to Cheng Xue Yao. "The dungeon has been raided, and you've got the good friends here. I'll be leaving then."

"No. You did nothing there! You have been making those potions for more than an hour!" Cheng Xue Yao puffed her cheeks out angrily. She knows that Leveling was important and Levels determined the strength of a character. She had realized that when she saw the Level 99 SuikaTaro

slicing the monsters up like tomatoes! If he was that strong, how would Zhang Yang be when he is already Level 153?!

Even though she was indeed a beginner, she was still good at basic mathematics!

Zhang Yang laughed at her petty comments and bade her farewell, either way. He took out and equipped the [Lover's Charm] and teleported to Han Ying Xue.

The four girls were still clearing quests all over the place and were gathered together to fight a bunch of Spectres. Zhang Yang joined the party and helped clear a few monsters. In the meantime, Zhang Yang nudged Sun Xin Yu's slender waist and caught her attention. "Here. Have this. It's an extra life!"

Sun Xin Yu took the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 8] and kept it in her inventory. Zhang Yang had no problem handing over the book to Sun Xin Yu since she was a Thief class that would excel at keeping itself alive. Since Zhang Yang already possessed another book in his possession, the effects would not stack together. Might as well diversify the effect so that Sun Xin Yu could gain the extra damage buff when he is not around. The only person that Zhang Yang could not trust the book with was Wei Yan Er. The grumpy, reckless little girl was the worst candidate to have the book. When she gets into battle, she only cares about killing and not guarding herself. If she insists on having the book, Zhang Yang would rather have Han Ying Xue give her the [Resurrection Monolith] instead, since it possessed the same instant revival effect.

The party continued playing until it was nightfall in the real world. Cheng Xue Yao made Zhang Yang come to her for just a simple goodbye greeting before leaving the game. Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao logged out and bade each other goodbye before she left the office. Zhang Yang could not read her like how he would read other females easily. The woman swayed her hips and catwalked out of the office with such a seductive aura around her. Her thin fabrics ironed themselves out on her butt, and Zhang Yang could make out the outline of her *ss perfectly. Uff... That shape was just too good to be true!

...

Later that night, Cheng Xue Yao held a cup of red wine and sat down in front of her computer. She had just come out from her bath and was dressed in a loose and comfortable nightgown. Her supple breasts were plastered beneath her thin clothes as her long, dark hair sways in her back. She flung out her hair to sent a few water droplets off her wet hair.

"Meow~" A white Persian cat come out of a corner and leaped onto its master's lap. The woman gently caressed the feline and continued using her computer. She typed something on the keyboard and the image of Zhang Yang appeared on her screen. She read each article slowly and finally sighed. "I see that you're that famous, huh. But..why would you hire private investigators to dig out the past? What does Liu Wei have to do with you? Are you two more than just game rivals?"

"Meow!" The white Persian cat brushed her head on Xue Yao's chin, inviting her to play. The feline creature reached out with its claws and tried to clamber up. However, with little effort, the cat had only managed to pull down her nightgown and her clothes fell down her shoulders, revealing her supple breasts and pink nipples to the poor mammal. Sadly, she was alone in her room, then. Such an erotic scene could only be enjoyed by the cat alone. Her breasts were on par with Han Ying Xue's herself!

"Whitey? Where did you learn to undress a woman? Haha! Did you learn that from a bastard?" Cheng Xue Yao gently caressed the cat's head and placed the feline on the floor. She could not even bothered to adjust her gown and let it slide off her silky smooth skin. Naked, she waltzed to the window of her room and stared down at the street beneath her. There was a smile on her face. A genuine smile.

"Mr. Zhang...Can I really trust you...?"

...

In a poorly lit room, somewhere at the corner of the city.

A beautiful woman was sitting in front of her computer talking with a rather good-looking man through the computer screen. The woman was

tall and had a perfect complexion. Her body figure was good and slender. She even a tiny mole on the corner of her lips that only enhanced her seductive aura.

"...Why...How could you fail!?" said the young man on the screen. There was an intense dissatisfaction in his voice as he grunted as he kept his composure stoic and cool. His complexion did not give off the kind of impression that an angry person would portray.

The woman wiped away her cold sweat. She had been following the man for more than 2 years now, she had seen the man with a face that speaks of peace and harmony, yet she knew that he was capable of making people disappear. Permanently.

She quickly explained her situation. "During the interview session, there was another woman there...She was chosen instead..."

"Oh. Is that so..." the man stoic expression changed. Although it was extremely subtle, the woman was able to pick up hints of him being intrigued. "How could you, a woman like yourself lose to any other?"

"I'm sorry." The woman apologized while bowing her head in front of the computer screen.

"Hmm. In that case, I would really love to have a look at the woman who defeated your beauty," said the young man. Perhaps it's was an unconscious move, but the man soon reverted back to his stoic expression after smiling slightly. "Find another angle of attack. I have only 6 months left to get what I want!"

"Understood, sir," The woman bowed down. The connection ended.

The woman raised her head only to realize that the man had finally hung up. Her breathing was hastened and ragged. She pulled the drawer under the desk and took out a picture of Zhang Yang coming out from a limousine. The woman played with the piece of polyester plastic and grinned. "Sigh...You may be good looking, but who asked you to pick a fight with Young master Hua over a woman. Then again, perhaps you're in luck. At the very least. You could have me in your bed." She got off her seat and tossed the picture on the desk. She picked up her phone and

fiddled with it for a moment before sighing heavily. "Why are the women in this country so oppressed! After this, I should go off to a place where no one knows me. Starting from scratch does not seem that bad..." The women lay on the bed and snuggled with her pillow.

...

Zhang Yang could not help but notice that something was extremely odd. It was a sixth sense of his. Right when he had just received a new bootylicious boom secretary the other day, a few days later, another one comes in. Out of the original six secretaries he had, one of them had left the job for marriage, and the other left the country. In just five short days, he had lost two "obedient" secretaries! Was it all just coincidence?

Zhang Yang praised the organization's efficiency at picking secretaries for him, as the new one was also a beauty to behold. Although she was not on the same level as Cheng Xue Yao, she was at the very least better than the old one. There was something special about her. For others, some might pay attention to a girl's hairstyle, the smile, or other specific feature that made her easy to remember. As for the new secretary, it was her mole on the corner of her lips. There was a certain seductive aura that was only emphasized when she smiled.

Zhang Yang could not put down the feeling on uneasiness about the latest girl. He decided to find someone to investigate her origins. It could be something bad. Perhaps, Liu Wei, or even the annoying Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang got into the game and was greeted immediately by Cheng Xue Yao. In the office, she was well-mannered, and even behaved like a real secretary! However, in the game, she was different. She addressed Zhang Yang rather intimately, as if both of them were close friends, not that it bothered Zhang Yang at all.

The woman's leveling speed was rather fast. In just a few days, she had managed to push herself to Level 30 and forced Zhang Yang to teach her the ways of a Spellcaster. Hence, the two of them developed a rather close friendship. Not as close as his real friends, though.

The other secretaries in his office were all using nicknames. Zhang Yang

knew that Xiao Yue, Xiao Fan, or Xiao Min were pseudonyms. The latest girl was named Liu Xin Min, and she was an exceptional vixen. Whenever she has the chance, she would bring Zhang Yang files, coffee, or anything at all just to lower her chest and let Zhang Yang enjoy the full view of her deep cleavage. It was an act that Zhang Yang did not dislike much.

...

Playing games are the same as drawing, singing, or dancing. It's a matter of inert talent, that not all humans have. To play such a high-levelled realism game such as 'God's Miracle,' one would need to have the highest of reaction speeds. It was something that could be trained but required a long time to do so. We are not talking about a year or so. It has to start since birth.

Cheng Xue Yao does possess such a talent, and Zhang Yang felt that with a little cultivation, she could become one of the top 10 Spellcasters of the world! Hence, at the moment, Zhang Yang placed Xue Yao in the secondary guild with Fatty Han.

Although he was greatly intrigued by the sudden recruit, he was unable to resist the lady's charm. With just a simple feminine greeting, Fatty Han had succumbed to anything she asked for. For the next few days, Fatty Han had brought Xue Yao across numerous dungeons. In truth, she needn't even ask, Fatty Han was just a wolf and would wag his tail obediently to do anything that she asks.

Zhang Yang had two chapters of the [Book of Revelation], naturally, he was fascinated by the entire book. He went asking around for the book and if he is to find someone with the book, he would have to apologize for it. To complete the Legendary tier item, he would willing to go all ends, including, killing the player for it.

However, he bore little to no expectation of finding the rest of the chapters in time. Zhang Yang and Snowbark both had the chapters in hand, and the system had not indicated any information about it. It was unlike Inheritance Fragments. Even though someone might have the chapters in their inventory right beside him, he would not know about it!

Hence, it would be extremely tough to find the rest of the chapters for the [Book of Revelation].

Zhang Yang got back home from the office and had dinner with the girls in his mansion. Later that day, he logged back into the game and was immediately recruited by the four girls to their party. They had found a good training ground which required him to be the tank. The five of them went to town and had their equipment fixed, items resupplied, and set off for Sauron's Castle to head towards their destination.

"Hey, dummy. I heard that you have a new friend," said Han Ying Xue with a smile on her face. Despite that, the tone of her voice carried a sharp intonation, as if her words could turn into blades that would slice off Zhang Yang's neck.

That little brat!

Zhang Yang glared at Wei Yan Er angrily. Yesterday, Fatty Han had to go off to help Xiao Wei buy some grocery. He then begged Zhang Yang to babysit Cheng Xue Yao. Thus, he agreed and brought the girl to Poison Fireland dungeon. Unfortunately, the little girl found out about it and decided to pay them a visit. She had come all the way from Chaos Realm and found Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao walking into the dungeon. Zhang Yang caught the little brat and persuaded her to keep her mouth shut about it by bribing her with a brand new LV bag. Sadly, even that branded handbag was not enough for the little girl to keep her mouth shut.

Wait a minute...Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue both knew about it, and there was nothing that he could do about it. However, why was Daffodil Daydream being conscience about it...

The little brat... When Zhang Yang glared at her, she turned her head quickly to avert his gaze and whistled nonchalantly as if she had done nothing.

Chapter 703: Mythical Dragon Realm

"What are you talking about? A new friend?" Zhang Yang shook his head vigorously. "Ahh. I know what you mean. It's a new recruit with potential! Fatty Han said that he had something to do. I simply brought the new recruit for a dungeon raid the other day. Is that what you mean by new friend?"

"Noob tank, I have you know that our policy of truth is as simple as lowering your head humbly. Deny your claim, and we will forcefully dig it out." Wei Yan Er poked Zhang Yang.

"Those who lower their heads humbly, can even escape the wrath of a God. Those who deny their claims, could even go back home safely. So, little brat, what are you planning to claim from me? I have always been a straightforward man." Zhang Yang was nearly cornered by Wei Yan Er.

"I heard that new friend of yours is a super beauty. Is that correct?" said Han Ying Xue, again with the smile of hers.

"Yeah...well...She might be. But compared to you and the Ice Queen, she's miles away. I don't think that anyone could be a match for the both of you." Zhang Yang tried to divert the heat away to cool down the raging beast.

Even though they knew that Zhang Yang was just trying to get away by saying sweet things, but words of praise coming from the one they love, was still something worth being happy about. Their stoic expression somewhat softened a little. Wei Yan Er, on the other hand, shrugged and sang a song, "Liar liar pants on fire, teabagging in the face of hell,~~"

"Little brat!" Zhang Yang snarled. "It's all because of you and your big mouth!" Zhang Yang clenched his fist. The little rascal was such a tough nut to crack that they had been receiving calls from the university, concerning Wei Yan Er's notorious activities. She was once caught setting fire in the campus' football field, and even punctured a lecturer's car!

"Where are you taking me to? A gigolo shop?" said Zhang Yang as he realized that they had spent some time traveling.

"With that face of yours? I don't think anyone would want to have that."

"Hoho. You might be thinking too little of me. I certainly recall that a certain princess from a certain country has a certain interest to a certain someone here. Hm?"

"Please. Don't flatter yourself." Han Ying Xue waved him off and said, "We are going to a place called the Mythical Dragon Realm."

"What is that?" Zhang Yang heard of the name before, but could not remember from where.

"What? Even the official website released the advertisement for some time now! What are you doing on your computer all day? Surfing a certain web page for lonely dudes at night?"

"Hmm...I see that the foxy vixen has spent some time with you now, hasn't she?" said Han Ying Xue. By vixen, she meant Cheng Xue Yao.

"Come on! There's only a certain level of jealousy a woman can have!" Zhang Yang snarled back.

"The Mythical Dragon Realm is a map that spawns randomly. It's a little like a dungeon but there's no fixed spawn point. Furthermore, the monsters inside the Mythical Dragon Realm will not spawn again after being killed. Once all the bosses on the map are killed, the map will despawn." Daffodil Daydream explained it to Zhang Yang, based on the information she obtained.

After her explanation, Zhang Yang listened and remembered something similar that he had encountered in his past life. One thing was for sure, that the spawn point was never the same. Back then, the spawn points he encountered were beneath a willow tree. Other times, they were at the bottom of the ocean! Searching for the entrance of the map is like searching hay in a stack of needles! Although difficult to find, the map does provide a lot of benefits. Sadly, even though he found the entrance, he did not have the chance to enter the map himself.

"We found the entrance to the Mythical Dragon Realm yesterday. It's called something-something Spectre Kingdom. The monsters inside were

so strong that we cannot continue on without a tank!" said Han Ying Xue.

"Fufu. Looks like I'm useful, after all!" said Zhang Yang nonchalantly as he gave a sweet glare to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. However, the two ladies rolled their eyes at him, leaving Zhang Yang a little letdown.

The team had spent over two hours traveling across Mar Gaia Forest and finally reached the destination. The entrance was a glowing portal that was hidden between two large boulders. Despite its glowing appearance, the entrance was so well hidden that it was hard to see.

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow. He turned to Han Ying Xue and stared at her suspiciously. This sort of place could not be found that easily... Perhaps, Han Ying Xue had gotten lost and stumble upon the entrance by sheer luck... As expected of the broken compass...

"Why don't you bring in Fatty Han or Lost Dream?" said Zhang Yang.

Wei Yan Er gesticulated 'no' with her hands and said, "There's an entry limit. Only five could enter at a time."

"Huh. No wonder you picked me."

The Mythical Dragon Realms had four different modes. Small, Medium, Large, and Extra Large. 5 players would trigger the Small map, 25 players for the Medium map, 500 players for the Large map, and 10,000 players for the Extra-Large. As the map grows bigger, so does the number of monsters and bosses inside. Naturally, the difficulty would be harder as well.

Wei Yan Er walked towards the entrance. However, when half of her body entered the portal, she was thrown outward.

"Eh? Could it be...? There's someone inside!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Hehehe. This place is way off the city. How could someone find this place? Looks like b*tchy snow is not the only one who's a broken compass!"

"Please. I'm...I'm just bad with directions! That's all!" Han Ying Xue defended herself. She does not like it when someone points out her one

weakness.

"Which bastards dared to take our map!" cried Wei Yan Er, on the verge of crying. She tried again and again to enter the portal but was kicked out each time.

"GRAH! We shouldn't have left the map, then this wouldn't happen!"

"It's not like we wanted to. Our equipment were in need of repairing."

The four ladies sighed. If the map was occupied when they had discovered it, it would not matter. They felt a little disgruntled since they were the first to enter the map, and had even killed a few of the monsters inside! How would they expect someone else to enter the map after just one night! The place was in the middle of nowhere!

"There is a chance we can enter. I think, if someone is killed inside the map, they would have to leave the map in order to revive. If they have no healers in their party, that is. Well, I'm going to sit down here for a while. If you guys insist on going in, let's wait here then. When one of them gets out, we can go in and kick them out!" said Zhang Yang.

Open-world events were meant to be fought over for. You may be the first to discover them, but it does not mean that they would belong to you. How else would guilds wage wars against each other for random bosses or Territories!?

"Of course we will wait! The Map belongs to us! I will not let anyone else take it away from me!" said Wei Yan Er proudly.

"Well then. I shall lie down here and wait." Zhang Yang found himself a nice flat rock and lay down flat. He then gestured to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue and said, "Come, my fair ladies. Lay with me and talk about us!"

As Zhang Yang finished his sentence, he spotted a player that was riding on a mount that looked like a giant bug flying towards him. When he was closer, Zhang Yang could see the man's surprised reaction on his face when he spotted the party.

Zhang Yang smiled and rose back to his feet. "Looks like someone did die inside. That means, one of us may go in and kick four players' sorry

butts. Who wants to do the honor?"

"ME! ME! OH! ME!" Wei Yan Er screamed with joy. She did not wait for Zhang Yang to give her the green light and leaped into the portal. As predicted, the player that had just arrived was a player that had died inside the map and was forced to revive outside the map.

"You..." The player was called "Eastern Lee". He was a Sacred Knight and perhaps was the only player in the party that could revive and heal. That was the reason why he had to get out and return to the map.

"Move aside! And, call out that girl who just went in! Don't make us kill you!" said Eastern Lee bravely. Even though he was facing four opponents, he stood tall and stoic with no signs of faltering. He then pointed his name tag and said, "Look here. I'm a member of the guild Eternal Flame! I'm not someone you can easily cross with!"

The only reason that Eastern Lee could be so boastful was due to Zhang Yang and the rest of the party had hidden their profile information. Even if Eastern Lee had one hundred players behind him, the man's balls will shrink back into his pelvis when he knows that he was threatening the strongest players in the world!

"Would Yan Er be okay inside?" said Han Ying Xue worriedly. Eastern Lee was Level 146 and was supposedly part of the main raiding party of the guild. If that is the case, the other four party members inside would be the same level as him. There was a chance that Scholar Musou and Longrich, the two strongest players of Eternal Flame would be inside the map! Both of them had A class Inheritances and would be on par with Wei Yan Er. It would be a rather dangerous situation for the little girl.

Zhang Yang proceeded to speak in the party channel, "Little brat! Come out now. I'll go in to wipe them all for you!"

"WHYYYY! Are you looking down at this little lady!?" said Wei Yan Er protesting his command. However, as hot-headed as she was, the little girl was not stupid. She knows that when Zhang Yang says something in this manner, it was for her own good. She then obeyed and came out of the portal, no sooner later.

They were having their conversation in the party channel, hence Eastern Lee could not hear their voice. From his perspective, he thought that Zhang Yang was calling out his party member inside out of fear. The man smiled smugly and scoffed. He then moved towards the entrance of the door blatantly and sighed. He saw Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu and was captivated by their beauty. If the Mythical Dragon Realm was not at stake there, he could have recruited them into the party and bragged of his position in the guild. Perhaps, with a few Mythical tier equipment and some gold, he felt confident that he could entice the two ladies over to his side.

"Excuses me. Since when did we allow you walk inside?" Zhang Yang roared and attacked the man. Zhang Yang sheer force had knocked Eastern Lee back a few steps and took more than 100,000 damage. The attack alone had drained away more than 50% of his HP.

Wei Yan Er popped out of the portal and jumped at the player.

"Hmph. Prudent." Sun Xin Yu dashed with lightning speed and stabbed Eastern Lee behind his back. Her two swords danced around and dealt three instances of damage.

Eastern Lee falls immediately to the ground dead. With three ultra-strong DPS concentrated their attacks on a single player, no player could survive unless they are in their Transformation state. Still, if he at least knew the identity of his killers, he would be less confused and bewildered!

As such, Eastern Lee was enraged. He passed the information of what that had just happened outside the portal to the players inside. He had asked them to prepare for an assault. If they cannot deal with the players standing guard outside the portal, there was no way for him to go in the map to support them.

Fortunately, the players inside had not ventured deep. With haste, the four players inside rushed to the exit. However, at that moment, they did not think of a proper plan. What if it was just a strategy to lure them out? If the four of them exits the map, the enemy could go in easily! Since the map only allowed 5 players at a time, they cannot do anything until Zhang

Yang clears the map or dies halfway through! It was a gamble that they could not afford to bet!

As they were hesitating, Zhang Yang entered the map and found himself surrounded by four players.

Scholar Musou, Sniper, Level 148!

Longrich, Cryomancer, Level 149!

Zhang Yang locked his targets on the two generals of Eternal Flame.

Chapter 704: The Four Man Team

The enemies were all mounted on their mounts, however, mounts were prohibited from flying in the map, hence, the players were not airborne, but merely riding their mounts like a horse. Besides Scholar Musou and Longrich, the other player present was Ink Wave, a Level 146 Guardian and Wind Chime, a Level 145 Bandit. Obviously, all of them were of the guild Eternal Flame.

"Hey! Don't you know who we are?" said Wind Chime as he brandished his swords out, grinning with smugness on his face as he threatened Zhang Yang.

"Before you get your sad face off this map, pay us 100,000 gold coins as a compensation for wasting our time. Mind you, don't even try thinking of running away. Pay up or I will find you and kill you every single day. The only way you'll reach Level 150 is in your dreams!"

"Stupid. That's just being too nice to them." Ink Wave snorted.

Wind Chime laughed, "It's fine. Rather than wasting more time debating here. I'd rather kill him right now. We still have a boss to kill. I've read about it, there will be a strong boss in every Mythical Dragon Realm! Hehe. We might even get ourselves some nice Holy tier equipment!"

Longrich did not participate in the mocking spree. Instead, the man rode his mount closer to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang stood still motionless. When Longrich got close enough, he widened his eyes and said, "You're...Zhan Yu!"

"What..?"

Everyone stopped talking and paid attention to Longrich. Was that really Zhan Yu? The man who's the top in the game!?

Zhang Yang laughed hysterically and said, "Well...I guess I can't help it when I'm just handsome!"

Zhang Yang then summoned the Phoenix and Felice out to the open.

When the fiery bird emerged out, everyone's doubts were immediately

cleared. It was his trademark. As for Fatty Han, no one would even care.

There's no doubt about it then, a man with a shield, a fiery bird, a young female Battle Companion, the one and only legendary Guardian, Zhan Yu!

Wind Chime sucked in a deep breath. It was at that moment when he knew he f*cked up big time. If he knew earlier that the man was Zhan Yu of Lone Desert Smoke, he would rather quit Eternal Flame and not offend the strongest player in the entire world! The traumatizing event that had happened three to four days ago, the period when Lone Desert Smoke was still hunting every member of Eternal Flame flashed through his mind. He does not want to be the reason Lone Desert Smoke resumes the hunt!

Longrich remained cool as a cucumber and said, "Zhan Yu. You're strong. I have to admit that I can never defeat you in a fair fight. Yet, I'm sure that you cannot defeat the four of us at the same time. I'll have you understand that both Lone Desert Smoke and Eternal Flame are guilds that make China stand strong. Our petty quarrel will bring nothing but defamation and discord between each other. Now, let's talk about fair play. We were the ones who found this place before you did. By all means, make yourself presentable and allow us to continue, while guild master Zhan Yu retreats."

Zhang Yang was impressed by his logic. However, he could not allow them to proceed, for it will only force him to get out of the realm!

Zhang Yang laughed when he noticed Longrich said something about him losing a 4v1 match. He was even impressed that a person of great combat skill could also have great negotiation technique.

"Yes. You are correct. However, you have made a mistake there. It's not just me alone here. It's three versus four! Even so, I can easily take care of all of you easily."

Longrich knew that. Zhang Yang was right there. Felice and the Phoenix pet both had Transformation skills. Their transformation skills was so strong that it made them as strong as a B class Inheritance players after Transforming, and with super strong equipment at that! They were the perfect killing machines! Longrich froze in place when Zhang Yang called

his bluff. Longrich wanted to talk their way out instead of fighting. The fact that he knew Zhang Yang's pet and battle companion could Transform was not that big an issue. The main issue there and then was that the four of them might lose to Zhang Yang!

Out of the four of them, there were two A class Inheritances, one B class, and one C class. The most important issue was that they had no healer on the field. If Zhang Yang targets Wind Chime, the weakest of the four, the enemy might come in to reinforce Zhang Yang. If it happens to be a healer, Longrich and the rest would be killed without a doubt.

That was the reason why Longrich wanted to talk instead of letting his fists do the talking.

Scared as if he was being pushed to a corner, Wind Chime roared.

"You think I'm scared? We too have Battle Companions and battle mounts!" Perhaps it was the feeling of helplessness, or the fight or flight nature of humans, Wind Chime presented himself to be intimidating when compared to the rest, who were still hesitating to make the first move. Wind Chime drew his swords out and got ready to fight.

Zhang Yang smirked. He knew that man had no choice but to fight. So what, if they had battle companions and battle mount? Can they Transform like Felice and Phoenix could?

The enemies began to mutter amongst themselves. It does not seem like they were debating, but were planning on how to tackle Zhang Yang. In the midst of discussing, Scholar Musou chuckled a little and turned to Zhang Yang, "Guild master Zhan Yu, are you determined to fight and be our enemy?"

"Without a doubt!"

Zhang Yang puffed and made the first move. Before the enemies could form a formation, Zhang Yang rode in with Phoenix and targeted Longrich first. A player's magic resistant is at its weakest before he could transform. However, since S class Inheritance Transformation could provide 40% magic nullification chance, magic attacks would be a lesser threat compared to physical attacks.

The reason he had chosen to attack Longrich first was due to the abnormal glare of the man. It felt like a viper hiding somewhere he could no see, waiting to strike at a given time.

The Phoenix bird swiftly glided through the ground and arrived beside Longrich in a split second. Without wasting time, Zhang Yang gracefully sliced across Longrich's side and dealt 118,932 damage. Zhang Yang damage had instantly hacked away 1/3 of the enemy's HP.

With that single attack, Zhang Yang's Rage bar was filled instantly. Zhang Yang locked on and landed a {God of War Devastation}.

{Apparate}!

Longrich's reaction was as quick as Zhang Yang himself. Before the attack could land on his character, Longrich blinked away like a flash of lightning, leaving Zhang Yang to cleave nothing but the air where he once stood.

Zhang Yang could not help but praise the man for his lightning fast reflexes. However, Zhang Yang's reaction speed was much faster than he. After all, he was the number one player in the whole world. He activated various of skills and made himself appear right in front of Longrich, no matter how hard he tried to escape Zhang Yang's death grasp. Felice and Phoenix moved in to attack.

Wham! Bam!

Two tongues of flamethrowers were spat out, landing directly on Longrich's character and engulfing the man in a sea of flames. However, two words popped out.

Immune! Immune!

Longrich had activated {Ice Barrier}. Both of them might seem to have done a lot so far, but in reality, everything had only happened in less than 2 seconds! Just then, Scholar Musou and the other two side characters arrived within Zhang Yang's area of attack.

Zhang Yang smirked, it saved him time anyway. Zhang Yang immediately changed his target to Wind Chime. Both Zhang Yang and

Wind Chime were melee classes, hence, for Wind Chime to attack him, he must expose himself to the danger of being attacked himself.

The attacks that landed on Zhang Yang first was of Scholar Musou's arrow. He landed three attacks, with each supposed to deal 80,000 basic attack. However, Zhang Yang had only taken less than 40,000 damage. Zhang Yang was not as surprised as Scholaar Musou. He was so shocked at Zhang Yang's strong defene. Just how tough could the Guardian be!?

Just then, Wind Chime and Ink Wave arrived and landed their attacks on Zhang Yang. Both Ink Wave and Wind Chime did not use {Charge} nor {Vanish,} since the skill will force the player to dismount. Just the mount alone could provide a huge boost of over 100,000 HP! Neither of them were willing to let that go to waste. Unlike Zhang Yang who had the skill {Beast Taming}, the enemies could not dismount and still have their pets active in the field. Once they dismount, the pet will disappear from the field in 2 seconds.

Zhang Yang welcomed the enemies with a quick {Horizontal Sweep}, dealing powerful 200,000 damage. The Phoenix spewed out a long trail of fire that dealt close to 80,000 fire damage to the opponent.

The combined attack had nearly killed the two of them. Panicked, Longrich quickly roared.

"Use our Inheritance Transformation skills now. Don't wait for the boss! If we can't even kill Zhan Yu now, we would not even have the chance to see the boss' shadow!"

Longrich disabled his {Ice Barrier} and quickly put on a [Bandage] to heal himself. However, he did not activate his Transformation skill immediately just yet. Although Transforming provided a massive boost to one's HP limit, it will not restore a player's HP. If the player had 50% before Transforming, he would have the same 50% HP after Transforming. By numbers, it will be a huge waste if they do not restore their HP back to 100% before Transforming.

Longrich was attacked by Zhang Yang earlier, if he uses his Inheritance Transformation right now, he would have only have 1,500,000 HP, which

was far from his maximum HP of 9,000,000 HP!

Right then, if he could only restore 10,000 HP, he could gain over 300,000 HP after Transforming!

Zhang Yang saw Longrich's reaction and what he was about to do. Without hesitation, he activated the Phoenix Transformation skill and turned towards Longrich to attack. He would not allow Longrich to restore any HP. Zhang Yang had only managed to disrupt one out of the four enemies there. If all four of them were to activate their Inheritance Transformations, he would have to do the same if he wants to stay alive.

Zhang Yang shot towards Longrich at intense speed. Pushed to his limits, Longrich did not care about restoring his HP anymore and activated his Transformation skill immediately. His Inheritance was the Death Swamp Inheritance. His Transformation had turned his entire character into a humanoid shaped pile of dark, gooey, viscous liquid. The same liquid flowed from his character to 40 meters around him, creating a swamp-like environment. Since the Phoenix was not flying, its movement speed was affected greatly when it tried to move in the thick liquid.

It was Longrich's Inheritance special effect, to reduce all target's movement speed by 50%! A damage-less {Thunder Strike}! The thing that made it strong was the slow effect did not have a fixed duration, but was a permanent aura effect!

Longrich took aim and shot a Frost arrow at Zhang Yang right after he became a swamp man. His Inheritance had granted him 400% damage boost! Zhang Yang had taken close to 160,000 damage from the Frost arrow.

The Phoenix pet had originally 700,000 HP at most. After Transforming, its HP would reach as high as 14,000,000 million. Combined with Zhang Yang's own close to 1 million HP, both Zhang Yang and the Phoenix's shared HP bar was as high as 15 million. Even though his own HP was not full when he activated the Phoenix's Transformation skill, it was still as high as 13 million HP!

Wind Chime and Ink Wave had consumed a bottle of potion and

activated their Transformation skills. One grew twin horns from the forehead and gain a tail and an ox's lower half. Wind Chime had turned into a minotaur. On the other hand, Ink Wave had turned into a human shaped pile of mud.

C class Inheritance, Minotaur Inheritance and the B class Inheritance, the Mud Cloud Inheritance.

However, even though they may have taken a bottle of healing potion earlier, they had suffered a great deal of damage from earlier attacks and had only managed recover 50% HP, despite activating their Inheritance Transformation. Each Inheritance Transformation will grant the player a healing skill. Right then, it will only a matter of time for them to use it to save themselves.

Scholar Musou was the only player around that has a full health at then. He hesitated a little but activated his own Transformation skill, after the others did. His Inheritance was the A class Lord of Flame Inheritance, granting him the appearance of a burning stone golem.

Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Mobility Potion] and regained his original movement speed. The effect of the potion was shared with the Phoenix, since Zhang Yang was currently mounted on the Phoenix. Hence, with his original speed restored, Zhang Yang zoomed in and reached Longrich's face.

Shush!

He swung his sword, but it dealt no damage to Longrich as the swords cleaved the air beside him.

Longrich's face lost all its blood, turning him pale white. He knew the skill. He had seen it once before with his own eyes. It was a skill that would allow Zhang Yang to deal a super-charged up attack after missing a target at the first strike!

Panicked, Longrich calmed himself down and activated his accessory's Invincibility effect.

As the game number one player, Zhang Yang's entire character was

often analyzed from top to bottom. Everyone knew about him and his skills, as if he was a major world-level boss. Hence, almost all professional players knew about Zhang Yang's {Charge Up Strike} and the devastating power that it held!

Longrich's reaction to activate his Invincibility skill was indeed a wise move.

Chapter 705: Dominance

There is a saying in olden China warfare, that one should not use dirty tricks to win a war. But that was in the olden days, and the future is now!

Zhang Yang smirked evilly and turned around to attack Wind Chime.

Shush!

Another sword miss!

Huh? Aik?

It was not just Wind Chime. He was about to lose his mind when Zhang Yang changed his target abruptly. In fact, Ink Wave, Longrich, and Scholar Musou was stunned, What was happening? Could {Charge Up Strike} be used without a cooldown? Could the effect of {Charge Up Strike} be stacked? Or was it something else...?

Longrich widened his eyes as he realized the truth, they had been duped. It was not a skill, but a simple basic attack that was meant to miss! When Longrich realized that, it was too late for him. He had wasted a precious skill!

Right then, Zhang Yang was already in Wind Chime's face. For him, it was an incredibly difficult decision on whether to use his long cooldown skill to protect himself. It would be a trick again! He only had a C class Inheritance then, he would only have 700,000 HP after Transforming. If Zhang Yang's attack is the real deal, Wind Chime would be killed if he does not use his protective skill! But what if, Zhang Yang was faking it?

Safety first. Might as well use it since there were four of them there. As long as none of them die in battle, they could slowly grind away Zhang Yang's HP!

After debating with himself for a second, Wind Chime activated {Blur}. Wind Chime's {Blur} was at Level 10, granting him the ability to dodge an attack at a 95% rate. If he were to still take an attack instance during the skill active duration, it would be black luck for him to step out of the house.

RAWR!

The Phoenix closed in and spew a long trail of fire at Wind Chime's direction. As the flame engulfed the enemy, the word "Missed!" popped out. It was as expected. Even though the Phoenix was dealing Fire damage, its attack was still a physical attack, hence, it would be affected by {Blur}. However, Felice was still in her Dragonhawk form, her attacks would be of a true Spellcaster. With a quick blast of flame, her attacks had landed on Wind Chime's character and dealt 80,323 Fire damage. Sadly, even though the attack had landed, Felice was not in her Transformation state; the damage she could deal was only but an ant's bite.

Still, Wind Chime's HP was left with only over 700,000 HP. If Felice attacks continuously, she could kill Win Chime in less than 10 hits! Wind Chime's HP recovery skill would require EP. The more EP he holds, the better he could heal when he activates the skill. At that moment, due to the skill - {Blur's} activation, Wind Chime had gained a momentary short duration where he could put the matter of life and death aside whilst he attacks Zhang Yang.

Ink Wave and Wind Chime had moved in at the same time. To make sure that they would not take the attack from the Phoenix together, Ink Wave had moved towards Zhang Yang's left side and was slower than Wind Chime, and arrived by half a second later. He was a Guardian, hence, his attack was naturally low. Vv activating his Transformation skill, he had gained a massive 300% boost in attack power, his DPS was still as weak as a C class Inheritance player.

However, as a tank, his duty lay at protecting instead of attacking. He was supposed to be taking hits instead of his party members. When both Ink Wave and Wind Chime were attacked earlier, he was a little unnerved and was unable to perform as well. Right then, he could and was ready to unleash an array of protective skills.

Since Zhang Yang was able to move freely due to the [Mobility Potion], Ink Wave did not waste any of his EP to restrain him. Instead, he chased after him and attacked with him normal attacks to built up more EP and Rage.

Zhang Yang had forced his opponents to waste one accessory skill and one Thief powerful skill in exchange for a bluff! Even so, he was unable to attack anyone at the moment. Right then, Ink Wave was still attacking Zhang Yang, hence, instead of chasing anyone else, he turned around to attack Ink Wave instead.

Shush! BANG!

Zhang Yang's sword was parried away by Ink Wave's shield, even though Zhang Yang's movement was fast. Still, Zhang Yang Strength attribute point was so much higher than his simple sword attack had sent him staggering back. As a result, Ink Wave was unable to use {Shield Bash,} for he had been pushed out of its range.

Zhang Yang smirked. Unlike the typical Japanese anime, attacking does not require one to shout out their own skill names. Even though Zhang Yang had only used a normal attack, the opponent does not know that. He had made the opponent waste a {Block}! However, it would be a waste if Zhang Yang remains passive, since {Block} had only over 6 seconds of cooldown.

Phoenix had only 2 seconds of attack interval rate. It then flapped its massive fiery wings and spewed out a long trail of fire and dealt 168,933 damage to Ink Wave. Compared to Ink Wave's long 8,000,000 maximum HP, the Phoenix's attack was not at all strong. Even though he was left with only 5,000,000 HP, it was a tall mountain to bring down.

There were four of them, excluding their battle companions and battle mounts, for they were too weak to even considered to be an adversary. Their attacks were too weak and their grades were too low. Dealing damage to Zhang Yang was a problem. It all came down to the players themselves. Both Scholar Musou and Longrich were A class Inheritance players with basic attacks reaching as high as 200,000 damage. Ink Wave and Wind Chime were weaker by a certain degree but their basic attacks could still deal more than 120,000 damage. One wave of attack could deal roughly 500,000 damage to Zhang Yang, which was extremely problematic for him.

After calculating all the possibilities, Zhang Yang had determined his next target. He had decided to first terminate Ink Wave before anyone else. Ink Wave may be a tank class player with superior defensive and weak offense, and he would be extremely hard to kill. However, it was a necessary effort that he must put out. A Guardian is meant to protect the teammates and could dish out a large number of skills to control the opponent. Zhang Yang would know that best, because he was a Guardian! For two lifetimes!

{Charge Up Strike}!

Zhang Yang's attack hit the air and Ink Wave knows that Zhang Yang was aiming him. He felt confident of his HP and could take the hit. Who knows, Zhang Yang might even fake it again!

{God of War Heavy Axe}!

'-877,173!'

Ink Wave was obviously wrong about Zhang Yang's massive power output. However, he was lucky that he had over 5,000,000 HP to begin with. He would still have 4,000,000 HP left if Zhang Yang were to attack with the Phoenix earlier. He was not going down just yet!

Ink Wave could not be more than happy when Zhang Yang had chosen him to be a target instead of the others. Zhang Yang might have a better set of equipment, an array of skills, yet he had chosen to fight the tank! Could he be as dumb as a boss?!

What a hoot! An undeserved reputation!

Ink Wave activated {Shield Wall} and kited Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Phoenix away from his teammates. By the time {Shield Wall} ends, he would have already accumulated enough EP to use his HP recovery skill. He could activate {Last Vigor} to increase 30% HP and restore almost close to 3,000,000 HP!

As time passed on, Ink Wave was brought to believe that Zhang Yang could be defeated by the four of them!

However...

{Glare of the Death God}!

Zhang Yang had finally unleashed his ultimate skill and cast a cloud of shadowy cloud over Ink Wave's character.

Zhang Yang rarely uses this skill in public. He had never used it once in the Individual Ranking Competition either. Hence, even when the shadowy cloud formed a grinning skull, Ink Wave had not taken it seriously then, for he had thought that {Shield Wall} was strong enough to hold the attack at bay.

"KILL!" Zhang Yang roared.

With Zhang Yang taking the lead, the Phoenix and Felice zoomed in to attack as fast and as frequently as they could. {Glare of the Death God} works differently when used on bosses, compared to players and monsters. Unlike boss fights, the trigger rate will only deal 1% of the total HP of the boss. While used on players, the skill will directly drain away 99.99% of the HP, leaving the player with only 1HP left.

As such, the poor Guardian was so unlucky, that after just four attack counts, the skull grinned and bit down on his character, leaving him with only 1 HP.

Felice's fiery attacks landed and could only deal over 4,000 damage to Ink Wave, for the {Shield Wall} was still active. Still, even though her attack was reduced from 80,000 to 4,000, it was more than enough to end ink Wave's life!

Ink Wave died without using his HP recovery skill!

All three remaining players were baffled. What just happened? Ink Wave still had over 4 million HP and he had {Shield Wall} protecting him! How could he be instantly killed with just a fire attack?

At then, Zhang Yang's [Mobility Potion] ended and the glowing effect beneath his feet faded.

In just 10 seconds, Zhang Yang had already killed a player, and a tank at that too! How would normal people react to that!?

Zhang Yang turned to the rest of the Eternal Flame member and smiled innocently. "It's 3v3 now!"

Scholar Musou and the rest were left bewildered. What a powerful and bold statement! They had 4 of them in the beginning, and was reduced to 3 in just 10 seconds!

"It's fine! 3 of us will be enough!" They could lose the fight, but not lose any more members. Three of them roared and charged altogether at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang dismounted and activated his {Shadow Clone} skill. Instantly, the field had 7 Zhang Yangs laughing maniacally.

Which one was the real Zhang Yang?!

The opponent was left dumbfounded again. It would be impossible to find out the real one with just AoE skills. Zhang Yang had over 950,000 HP and would have only around 800,000 HP at that moment. It was not a number that could be killed with a few hits!

If they were to fight one by one, all of them would totalled up their HP to a staggering 5,000,000 HP! Furthermore, even if he is left with 1 HP, he could easily mount on the Pheonix again and gain a huge HP boost! The main problem was Zhang Yang's impregnable defense! To actually deal 1,000,000 damage on him, would mean dealing 2,000,000 damage to other normal players!

How do they solve the problem with the clones?

After a split second, Scholar Musou roared. "Retreat!"

He knew that the clones had a time limit. In the most recent Territorial war for Sauron's Castle, he saw the recordings of Zhang Yang's fight. Professional analysis had deconstructed Zhang Yang's technique and skills in order to search his strengths and weaknesses, providing vital information for others to use against him.

The one method they had found to be useful to counter the shadow clone was to create enough distance amongst themselves. Drag the time long enough and the clones will disappear after two minutes.

It was a good call. Out of the two hour Inheritance Transformation duration, two minutes of running around was nothing but a walk in the park.

All three of them started to split up and run in different directions. Both Scholar Musou and Longrich had flight capabilities. Since they were not allowed to fly in the map, gliding in the air for a few seconds was still allowed.

After running for a bit, they had realized that Zhang Yang had not even activated his Transformation skill! What a disgrace! Two A class Inheritance players, and a C class Inheritance player have been sent off running by a normal player!

It was dominance! The level of power where one could inflict fear in another's soul!

Zhang Yang kept his cool and proceeded to chase after the three of them. However, instead of overextending himself, he "glided" towards the closest one, which was Wind Chime. The player had used {Blur} not too long ago and if he is allowed to run away, he could easily regain {Blur} after 5 minutes. It would be a waste to let that happen, since it would be harder to trick him into using the skill again.

"Crap!" Wind Chime cried, and quickly jumped off his mount and used {Vanish}!

Chapter 706: Victory

Zhang Yang turned his head immediately to an empty patch of land and commanded the Phoenix to attack that area. As the trail of fire blasted the area, Wind Chime was forced out of the shadows.

That was an intense shocking revelation for Wind Chime.

"How could you detect me!?" said Wind Chime as he panicked. "I was using {Sprint}!"

"Haha! I knew that you were going to use {Sprint,} and that's exactly why I could predict your location. If you hadn't, I would probably have lost you!" All seven Zhang Yangs laughed and used {Charge} at Wind Chime, stunning him all at the same time.

Aggravated. Wind Chime could do nothing but to accept the fact that Zhang Yang was strong. He had already activated {Sprint} at the instant he entered Stealth. It was a complex command that only a proficient Thief player could execute. Little did he know that Zhang Yang had anticipated his move and predicted where he would be!

Putting aside that he was caught red-handed, Wind Chime had other serious problems to worry about. Zhang Yang's attacks were like the claws of a bear. His sword sliced and diced, hacking away Wind Chime's HP bar to the bottom!

Scholar Musou bit his lips and turned to Longrich. "Should we go back?"

"...Go back? Which out of the seven Zhan Yus would you want to take?" Longrich almost laughed cynically.

"...D*mn!" Scholar Musou fell silent.

After Transforming, each of them had strong AoE skills. However, the cost of activating the skill will usually be 3 EP. The entire battle had only taken less than 20 seconds. In just that short amount of time, they had only gained 1 EP each. What could they do with it?

What a confounding situation. If they had 100 EP, they could at least do some serious damage to all Zhang Yang, including the original one. One of

them could deal close to 80,000 damage. If all three of them ganged up together, they could easily destroy all Zhang Yangs and even force the original Zhang Yang to get back on his Phoenix.

As they spoke, everyone in the party could see the chat. Wind Chime had concluded that the other two had no intention to come back for him anymore. Hence, with all that was left with him, he had steeled himself to gain at least 3 EP to activate his recovery skill and deal a little more damage to Zhang Yang before he is killed.

He had no clue as to which one was the real Zhang Yang, hence, he shifted his target to the Phoenix, since he knew that Zhang Yang will eventually get on it. Might as well reduce the Phoenix's HP to reduce Zhang Yang's odds.

It was actually an obvious and straightforward strategy. Out of the hundreds of millions of players worldwide, perhaps, Zhang Yang was the only weird mutant that was a Warrior and could have a pet, like a Hunter. Furthermore, the pet he owned was a Phoenix! A Legendary Beast that had the ability to Transform like an Inheritance player! Hence, in normal circumstances, no one in their right mind would target an adversary's battle mount. It was a common mistake, since normally, battle mount would disappear after a normal Warrior dismounts. In fact, a Hunter's pet would be too weak to deal any threatening damage, hence, under normal circumstances, no one would kill the pet.

Both Scholar Musou and Longrich saw what Wind Chime was doing and had an epiphany. Both were a little mad and ashamed of themselves. It was inevitable. Again, Zhang Yang was the only oddball that they had seen so far in the game that could own a pet like Hunter. In fact, at that point in time, it was known that there was a total of three players who owned a Legendary Beast as their pet or battle mount. Then again, perhaps the number could increase someday.

Now that they had a plan, the two players turned back to the battle and began to attack the Phoenix at their longest, 30 meters range.

If you can't defeat an adversary's sword's play, it would be better to aim

at their fingers!

Zhang Yang did not react to their sudden change of plans and only aimed at Wind Chime. As long as he kills Wind Chime in 30 seconds, he would die before he has the chance to use his recovery skill.

It was a certainty that every Inheritance Transformation player would have a recovery skill. Unlike the S class Inheritance, other classes would require 3 EP to be used. For example, Wei Yan Er's {Ripple of the Shadow} would require 3 EP to activate to restore 50% HP. With every additional 1 EP, the skill will restore 10% HP in the next second.

B class Inheritance skills were weaker. For example, Fatty Han's {Bat Form} will require the same 3 EP, and every additional 1 EP will only extend the skill's duration by 1 second. Technically, Fatty Han would require 10 EP to restore full health. An A class Inheritance player would need to spend an extra 2 EP.

C class Inheritance recovery skills are basically 3 EP for 30% HP restoration. Every 2 additional EP will restore 10% HP in the next second.

Wind Chime had over 3 million HP then and he would restore at least 900,000 HP with a single trigger of his recovery skill. It's not that Zhang Yang was afraid of him, he just wanted to save more time and squeeze out less effort while doing so.

Zhang Yang {Shadow Clone} skill had only 10% attack power of the original caster. However, six clones would grant Zhang Yang an additional 60% attack power. Paired with the Phoenix and Felice's attack, Wind Chime was just a strawman waiting to be hacked away by a sickle.

Why didn't he use any accessory to grant him Invincibility? That was due to the fact that accessories itself were rare. Players who are able to fill in the empty accessory slots are lucky! To have an accessory that also possesses an additional active effect would be extremely rare! Perhaps, in the entirety of the Eternal Flame guild, only Scholar Musou, Longrich, and Ink Wave possessed such luxurious items!

As Zhang Yang was beating down Wind Chime, Scholar Musou and Longrich were attacking the Phoenix. The problem was, Phoenix was in its

Transformed state. With more than 30,000 Defense value and 20 % Magic attack nullification rate, the both of them were using forks to scrape the steel plates off the Empire State Building!

The best thing was that, Longrich's attacks were not Ice based! They were Fire based magic attacks! All attacks that lands on the bird will only heal it! By the time he realizes it, it would be so late!

Wind Chime was still attacking without stopping. The worst part for him was the fact that he did not know which one was the real Zhang Yang. He wanted to throw a few skills to debuff him, but it was only a one time thing. If he misses the skill, it would be extremely wasteful! In the end, right at his last drop of HP, Wind Chime cast {Blind} on a random "Zhang Yang". Sadly, the skill landed on the wrong person.

"Argh!" With a swift stroke, Zhang Yang ended the player's life.

He then brandished his sword and flicked the blood off the blade. He turned to Longrich and Scholar Musou and grinned, "It's 3 versus 2 now!"

With an intense malicious aura, Zhang Yang had successfully inflicted fear into the hearts of the enemy! However, despite the danger, the two survivors were professional players. They kept calm and cast aside all negative thoughts, solely focused only on attacking the Phoenix.

Then again, it was bad for Zhang Yang to kill these two at this point of the melee. They had A class Inheritances with 30% Magic nullification rates. With their flight capability, they could dodge Zhang Yang's attacks easily. Their only threats were Felice and Phoenix's attacks.

However, Zhang Yang could fly as well!

Zhang Yang jumped back onto the bird. Since attacking the Phoenix was the same as attacking Zhang Yang, he felt no need to hide his true identity any longer.

"Zhan Yu! Prepare to die!" Scholar Musou roared at an intense volume and clapped his hands. A magic circle appeared around him as his eyes glowed with an intense, fiery trail. A ball of flame came shooting down from the sky and slammed down on Zhang Yang brutally. The ball of

flame bounced off Zhang Yang and landed on the ground, creating a massive crater. In an instance, the flames died down a little, and concentrated itself around a stone golem which emerged out of the crater.

[Fire Demon Lord] (Elite, Summoned)

Level: 148

HP: 1,480,000

Defense: 5,920

Magic attack: 21,002 – 29,002

Skills:

[Growth]: Gains 1% HP, Defense and Magic Attack for every kill.

[Flame Rock]: Hurls a burning rock towards a target and deals 200% Magic Fire attack. Instant. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

The summoned unit was the ultimate skill of the Lord of Flame Inheritance. It requires 10 EP to activate and summons out a Fire Demon Lord. The summoned unit will last for 10 minutes. For every EP used during the cast, it will extend the active duration of the summoned unit for 10 seconds. The summoned unit was strong. If protected, it could grow with the skill and become extremely strong after every successful kill. As expected of the A class Inheritance's Ultimate skill.

At the same time, Longrich activated his own ultimate skill and created a black whirlpool in the "swamp" environment. As long as any target steps into this range, they will take 100,000 of Shadow Damage!

Similarly, it has a short active duration and required EP to last longer. Although they were only A class ultimate skills, they were still strong enough to deal large damage, pushing Zhang Yang to the verge of death! His HP had dropped below 20%!

The two surviving players then activated their skills similar to that of {Killing Cleave} (skills that can only be activated when a target's HP is less than 20%). In an instance, the overall damage done to Zhang Yang was increased dramatically.

Zhang Yang kept his cool. He still had the {God of War Radiance} to instantly restore 100% HP. There was no reason to be afraid!

{Charge Up Strike}!

Zhang Yang swung his sword and dealt 0 damage. Right then, Longrich's face was drained of color. His skill {Apparate}, and {Ice Barrier} was still in cooldown. He had no choice but to take the incoming devastating hit.

{God of War Devastation}!

'-992,832!'

Longrich has taken some damage from the battle earlier. Even though Zhang Yang may have been damaged, Longrich suffered a great deal of damage from the combined attack of Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Phoenix. Before he knew it, he too had entered the danger zone.

He knew of the power of a Warrior's combined {Indiscriminate} and {Killing Cleave}. If he takes the attack, his head would roll. Hence, in a state of panic, Longrich decided to heal himself. Sadly, with {Destructive Smash}'s effect still on him, he had only managed to heal at a 25% efficiency, boosting his 5% HP to 30% HP.

After Longrich healed himself, Zhang Yang followed and healed himself back to 100% HP. That's a whopping 14,793,620 HP in total!

It was the main reason why Zhang Yang wanted to kill Ink Wave first in the first place. Without his {Destructive Smash}, Zhang Yang would not have to fear the reduced healing effect. If the tank is left alive till the end, Zhang Yang might haveee only healed 50% of the intended amount!

"F*CK!" Both Longrich and Scholar Musou yelled with agony. Just when they had tried their best to kill Zhang Yang, he had simply turned the tables around by healing himself back to full HP!

Zhang Yang continued his barrage of attacks on Longrich unrelentingly. He had forced the opponent to use their ultimate skills and also their healing skill! Right then, they had no cards left on the table.

"Musou! We're leaving!" said Longrich halfway through as he jumped to

safety and rushed over the exit. If Zhang Yang has only 4 or 5 million HP, they could still put up a fight. However, 14 million was a ridiculous amount of HP! The main issue there was that the Phoenix was too strong. It was merely comparable to a B class Inheritance player yet it possessed HP much higher than an A class Inheritance!

Such a Legendary Beast!

Zhang Yang patted the Phoenix, feeling grateful for Fatty Han's efforts in making this possible.

Since the beginning of the battle, Zhang Yang had never attacked Scholar Musou. Somewhat, he felt like he was being ignored. It was the sort of feeling that he was not worthy to be even seen as an opponent!

The two of them left the map safely. As expected, players with flying capabilities were hard to stop. By the time Zhang Yang left the portal to chase them, the two players were already 50 to 60 meters away!

"Woah there! Did you seriously just win a match against four players?!" Wei Yan Er gasped.

"Yeah."

Zhang Yang stood by the party, instead of chasing after the players. Although the Phoenix movement speed was fast, it was roughly the same speed or slower than an A class Inheritance Transformation flying speed. He could give chase if he uses his own S class Transformation.

Then again, it would be a waste. After all, the main objective was to take over the Mythical Dragon Realm in a hostile fashion. Now that they had forcefully made them leave the map, and even had the opponents wasting their Inheritance Transformation skills, they would be able to proceed uninterrupted for some time, unless the enemy would actually swallow their pride inform their guild of this most embarrassing series of events and rope them in.

Chapter 707: Blood Thirsty Skeletal Soldier

"Hahaha! You should have seen their faces when they jumped out of the portal! Hahaha! They looked like clowns!" Little Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang scoffed and replied. "You're right. They are nothing but clowns! The fight was rather enjoyable, though!"

If Longrich and Scholar Musou could hear their conversation, they would perhaps, turn around and fight Zhang Yang to the death. They were, at the very least, players who had entered the top 15th Individual rankings. Anyone within the top 100, while possessing A class Inheritances were strong. If Zhang Yang were to call them clowns, where else could he find a true rival?

Even if someone were to complain about Zhang Yang's bad gaming etiquette, he had the right to say such things. Technically, he had faced 4 players alone, excluding the fact that Felice and the Phoenix were not players themselves. Out of the three Transformation skills, he had merely used the Phoenix's skill to defeat all four of them.

The party spoke about Zhang Yang's feat. Especially, the little girl who was clearly out of her mind when she said that she too could do the same if she had been allowed to enter the map instead of letting Zhang Yang.

The party entered the portal and ventured deeper into the map. Unlike the outside world, the place differed greatly. Like the Sahara Desert, the Spectre Kingdom was devoid of life. There was nothing but dirt and sand all over the bare valley. The sky and earth was dyed in an eerie reddish hue that extended to the horizon.

As far as they walked, there were no signs of any monsters. Perhaps, they had been cleared earlier by the Eternal Flame members.

As they walked, only the sound of the Phoenix wings could be heard. After Transforming, the bird had gained a massive constitution and was flapping its wings like a whale. Luckily, it had the skill to freely change its body size. Zhang Yang then controlled the bird and shrunk it down to the size of a horse.

The party of five continued on and came to an entrance of a huge valley. After crossing the threshold of the converging hills, the scenery changed immediately. The red hue was still there, but the field was suddenly teeming with countless Skeletal Soldiers.

[Blood Thirsty Skeletal Soldier] (Spectre, Normal)

Level: 160

HP: 104,448

Defense: 4,360

Melee Attack: 21,992 – 29,992

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% physical melee attacks. 10% chance to inflict one additional attack.

[Leap]: Leaps across obstacles towards the target.

Note: Only the strongest warriors may leave the valley to face the trial to become one of the close guards of the Necromancer Lodac.

The soldiers in the field were attacking each other. Swords clashed on as bone fragments were sent flying everywhere. Even though there was no blood to be shed, the battle field was still vicious and filled with intense malice.

"Woah woah! Don't go about fighting like that. If you want to fight, fight us! Don't waste the hard-earn experience points!" cried Wei Yan Er as she saw countless of monsters being cleaved down by their own.

"Calm yourself. Look at the spawning rate," said Zhang Yang as he pointed at the spot where the monsters were killed. The moment a Skeletal Soldier falls, a new one would rise up from the earth to replace it. The number of monsters in the field was constantly being replenished.

"Wow! Look at that speed! If we could just camp here for good, we could gain a Level a day!" cried Wei Yan Er joyfully. By then, with their attack power and their monster killing rate, they could easily match with the monster's spawning rate. In a normal scenario, a player's killing rate

would be much faster than the monster's respawn rate. Hence, much of the time spent on grinding was running around to search for more monsters in a new map. Training here would cut down their traveling time down to zero! They could, practically spend just one day to gain a level!

Zhang Yang laughed and shook his head, "It does not work that way I'm afraid. These monsters were fighting each other for a reason. Perhaps, when we enter the field and start killing, they would not be spawning so rapidly."

"What? That's just...It doesn't make sense!" Wei Yan Er pouted disgruntledly.

"Nothing has to. Even if they do not respawn after we kill them, the number of monsters available right now would be plenty enough! Don't be too greedy, little brat!" said Zhang Yang as he maneuvered the Phoenix to kite all the monsters there. The Legendary Beast's defense was so strong that normal monsters could not deal any damage to it.

"Yeah. You mustn't be greedy like a certain someone. He likes to take more than he can hold!" Han Ying Xue muttered angrily.

Zhang Yang signed and frowned. The woman was such a jealous sour patch. So what, if Cheng Xue Yao was beautiful? Zhang Yang only had one overworked cock that had to satisfy two pussies at home! Every single time they jumped on him, they would demand for every single drop of his precious semen. Zhang Yang could swear that one day his balls will shrink back into his pelvis! Even Yu Li, his first love had to wait for more than 10 days to a month to get a chance to be with Zhang Yang! If someone wants to complain, Yu Li should be the first!

To kite all the monsters in the valley in one go, the Phoenix had taken close to 6 minutes to travel back and forth. Any longer than that, and the monster's aggro will drop back to zero.

Keep in mind that the monsters in the valley were all normal tiered. Thousands of them coming in a large swarm would still be lethal. A sea of white skeletal with their eyes glowing bright emerald green flames was not a normal thing to deal with.

"Get behind me!" Zhang Yang cried. Even though there were thousands of enemies, they were all weak. Their attacks were so low that they could not deal any damage to Zhang Yang. For him to tank all the monsters, would be fine but the four other ladies behind him did not have equally high defense. They would die easily if Zhang Yang could not hold the defense line. It was most certainly dangerous, since the Sacred Knight of the Eternal Flame had died in battle.

It was close to impossible to control the aggro of more than thousands of monsters at that moment, without the aid of the Inheritance Transformation. At most, he could control a few nearby monsters around him and let them form a natural barricade to block the monsters behind. However, he would need to look out for monsters that could leap from the back.

When the Phoenix returned, it brought back a party of skeletal soldiers along with him. Zhang Yang consumed a bottle of [Power Potion] and braced for the moment of impact. When the Phoenix returned to his side, Zhang Yang swung the sword horizontally and casted {Horizontal Sweep}.

At then, Zhang Yang's normal attack could instantly kill a normal tier monster with ease. What more of a 200% AoE skill! In an instance, Zhang Yang had instantly crushed more than 10 monsters around him. The skeletal soldiers fell to the ground and were turned into bone powder by the stampede of monsters that moved to the front.

Sadly, even though {Horizontal Sweep} was strong, it was not a penetrative attack type. It had a rather limited strike zone and would not hit an enemy behind it, unlike {Blast Wave} which had a fixed AoE, which was 3 meters in front of Zhang Yang, shaped like a cone. {Blast Wave's} attack was penetrative. That means that all monsters standing in the 3 meter cone shaped AoE will receive damage.

Unfortunately, neither did the {Horizontal Sweep} nor did the {Blast Wave} triggered the sword's echo effect.

"Sigh...Noob tank. Looks like your sword is living up to your name. A noob sword indeed." Wei Yan Er teased Zhang Yang and threw a small

handmade bomb that was created by Hundred Shots. The bomb exploded from within the crowd of monsters and dealt 2,000 Fire damage in a 3 x3 meters AoE.

The bomb was a product of the Engineer profession. It cost a rather high amount of money, yet it did come in handy when blasting monsters. Wei Yan Er was a natural born bombardier, hence, her inventory was stuffed full with explosives.

Even though the damage caused by the bomb was low, it did have high attack interval of only 1 second. Basically, a player can keep on bombing the monsters endlessly and cause high cumulative damage. It was especially useful for melee players who could not attack monsters that were out of their range. Might as well use the bomb to attack, since there was nothing that Wei Yan Er could do then.

Everyone was standing with their backs leaning against a side of the mountain. Technically, they were all safe and had only needed to worry about the monsters 180 degrees of their frontal direction. Zhang Yang blasted the monsters with {Blast Wave} and dealt 40,000 over damage, stunning them for 4 seconds.

After being stunned, the monsters behind the stunned monsters leap across them and landed close to Zhang Yang.

The Phoenix opened its fiery beak and blasted a long trail of flame that reached out as far as 30 meters. As the flames surged on, the monsters were burned with 200,000 fire damage and were instantly killed. The moving skeletal soldiers were immediately turned into a pile of scorched bones and gave the party valuable experience points.

"WAHHH! MONEY!" Wei Yan Er cried with pain when she saw the pile of coins kicked around everywhere by the incoming skeletal soldiers. She was infuriated and drew out her axe. She leaped out behind Zhang Yang and kept on throwing bombs as she picked up the coins.

Zhang Yang laughed hysterically and said, "Little brat. Perhaps you could try and join the ISIS for proper bombing lessons!"

"Hehehehe. After that, I will bomb your dog house!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Now that you mention it, how long has it been since you last took care of the dog?!" Zhang Yang sternly scolded.

"Ah...Hmph! Stupid monsters! Kick my coins!? I'll bomb your bones!" Wei Yan Er quickly changed the topic elsewhere and ran away from Zhang Yang. The dog was finally bought by Zhang Yang after being pestered by Wei Yan Er. However, after only three days of playing, the little girls had thrown the dog aside and had refused to take care of the poor canine. If Sun Xin Yu had not been a dear and took good care of the pup, the dog would have long left the house to search for a better owner.

The Phoenix was performing rather strongly at then! Since the Phoenix had activated its Transformation skill, its normal attack had received an extended range boost that increased its attack range to 30 meters. All it took was two seconds, and the entire wave of monsters would be killed instantly. Within a few minutes, all of the monsters that were kited back to Zhang Yang were killed, leaving a pile of shiny equipment and glittering coins.

Normally, the normal tier monster would not drop much equipment, to begin with. Perhaps, out of 100 units, only 1 of them would drop one piece of equipment. However, the number of monsters right then exceeded the thousands!

Sadly, the equipment was left there to collect dust. None of them could spare any time to pick them up. Especially Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, they kept on urging Zhang Yang to quickly kill the monsters to allow them to pick the equipment! If they take too long to kill the monsters, the equipment will eventually disappear!

Hence, after a quick discussion between the two sisters, Han Ying Xue took a large bundle of bombs from Wei Yan Er and participated in the bombing!

"Sigh! Hundred Shots could not be that weak. The bombs he created can only deal 2,000 damage! If only they could deal 20,000 damage, that could be swell!" said Wei Yan Er while sighing.

"Think carefully of what you just said. Making a 2,000 damage bomb

would have already burn a hole in his pocket. If he makes a bomb that deals 20,000 damage, that would have cost Hundred Shots' entire fortune!" Zhang Yang laughed.

The bombs can be used to damage targets and had its own independent cooldown system. While using it against multiple targets, it could provide a significant damage. It may be only 2,000 damage, and it was an extremely small number compared to Zhang Yang normal attacks, but for normal players, it was still a number that would make a difference!

Hence, the bombs cost and materials were extremely high, preventing large-scale production.

Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue at Zhang Yang and said, "Hmph! Uncle Hundred Shots is not like you! A stingy old man!"

"Old man...?" Zhang Yang chuckled awkwardly.

Although the number of monsters was high, their HP were too low, to begin with. Hence, the party split up a little to attack from multiple angles to increase the AoE. By the time the monsters could reach them, they would already be half dead.

After 10 minutes or so, all thousands of monsters in the field were killed, providing a massive boost of experience points to the party. Daffodil Daydream was close to leveling before she had entered the map and after defeating the sea of skeletal soldiers, she had reached Level 150!

Chapter 708: Violet Scale Spiked-Back Creeper

After reaching Level 150, the best thing that they could do then was to equip their Level 170 Holy tier weapons!

Daffodil Daydream was the first to equip hers. She swapped out her old staff for the new [Shadow Lord's Staff] and gained a massive boost to her attack stats. For any class, or any player at all, the best way to gain higher damage was to equip a stronger weapon!

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er continued to clear the loots on the ground. However, there were drops of more than thousands of monsters. How long would they take to pick them all? In the end, Zhang Yang had only permitted them to loot all the equipment and item. As for the coins, it would be a waste of time, since the total coins they could loot would only sum up to several thousand gold coins. It was a number which was valuable to noob players, but worthless to Zhang Yang and his party.

Although they were greatly disgruntled, it was something that they would have to give up on. The team moved on and left the valley, and proceeded to a lake that was filled with dark water.

The lake was surrounded by high cliffs on both sides. There was no clear land route that circled around it. Furthermore, the map had restricted flight. Flying mounts could only soar to a certain height and glide for a short distance. The only way to cross the lake then, was to swim across.

Zhang Yang summoned the Mythical Turtle. Han Ying Xue had her Crimson Gold Crab, while the others had to rely on [Underwater Breathing Potions] and hitch a ride on both Zhang Yang's and Han Ying Xue's mounts.

After the pets moved into the water, they shot across the water like torpedoes, towards the other end. The problem was that, on land, the lake was so huge that they could not see the other end. Underwater, the vision was shrouded in such darkness that they could not even determine the

right direction without resurfacing every once in a while.

Out of the sudden, a shady entity appeared in their line of sight. A long trail of bubbles followed the entity as it broke the water in half, as it traveled like a speeding missile. As it approached the party, the surface of the water burst open like an explosion. A huge four-legged creature revealed itself to stop the party. The creature has a violet scale body and had spikey bones protruding out of its back. The head of the creature was shaped like a duck, and had a flat beak like a platypus. Its long neck was as long as its entire body!

[Violet Scale Spiked-Back Creeper] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 165

HP: 4,950,000

Defense: 6,640

Melee Attack: 43,947 – 52,947

Skills:

[Water Impact]: Strikes the water around it and knocks every target within 30 meters of its character for 20 meters back. Deals 40,000 melee attack.

[Spike Pierce]: Fires of the spikes on its back. Randomly targets a single target to deal 150% melee physical attack.

Note: The Creeper was once the Lord of the Lake. However, after the essence of the Spectres corrupted the lake, the beings that live in the lake have turned into fellow Spectres. Losing all sense of pain, the Lord of the Lake only became even stronger and vicious.

When the monster appeared, the first target it attacked was Wei Yan Er. Its massive beak was spread wide open, revealing six eerie rows of sharp teeth, as it sank them into Wei Yan Er's petite body.

"Aiyayaya! Stupid monster! Why are you attacking me first!?" cried Wei Yan Er. She unlatched her axe from behind her back and gave the monster a good swing. As expected of a Berserker. The little girl's strength was a

complete mismatch to her timid body. With a powerful swing, she managed to strike the monster back!

Han Ying Xue laughed hysterically and said, "Yan Er, did you know, the only way to get bigger is to have more fat in your body! How are you going to grow cup sizes when you are burning all your fats away?"

"HAN YING XUE! ENOUGH WITH MY FLAT CHEST! I WILL BREAK UP WITH YOU!" The little girl shouted at the top of her lungs. Perhaps it was not just Han Ying Xue, Teasing the little girl about her flat, small, undeveloped chest was also other players hobby.

When the little girl was raging on like a mad king kong, the Creeper grew angrier as well. It was the Lord of the Lake! Its strength and superiority were unmatched to any being that lingered in the lake! To think that it could be slammed back by a timid creature, its anger grew exponentially, as it shrieked in a high pitch cry that was so deafening, even underwater. The Creeper zoomed forward and attacked Wei Yan Er again.

This time, Zhang Yang reacted quickly. With a quick push, the Mythical Turtle shot in front of Wei Yan Er and charged at the monster, stunning him. Zhang Yang hurled his sword downward and cleaved the monster's back.

The Creeper recovered quickly from the stun and charged towards Zhang Yang. Out of the blue, the Creeper rose vertically and slammed downward with such force that Zhang Yang and everyone else was pushed away. They had also taken 40,000 damage.

Even though the battle log had indicated that Zhang Yang had received 40,000 damage, the amount of HP that he lost was only 7,255, due to his overwhelming defense and damage absorption. Swiftly, Zhang Yang used {Charge Up Strike} and landed a {God of War Heavy Axe}!

'-1,133,883!'

An impressive damage text floated upwards the monster, which was equivalent to almost 20% of its HP. Even though the monster's description had mentioned that the monster would not feel pain, the essence of life that was hacked away from it was enough to cause it to rage on furiously.

"Woohoo! Dummy is getting stronger!"

"Wow. If guild master could equip the Ascended tier weapon, would the damage go up as high as 2 million, with {Charge Up Strike}?"

Back then, during the war in Emerald Kingdom, Zhang Yang had taken the chance to land the killing blow towards the King and managed to collect an Ascended tier two-handed axe. Sadly, the axe would have to wait until Zhang Yang reaches Level 180 before he can equip it.

"Oh yeah! Noobie tank is hiding that Ascended axe! Come on! Give it up!" Wei Yan Er eyes glinted with joy and greed. The little troublemaker was almost craving for a stronger weapon in order to have a stronger attack power than Zhang Yang.

"Don't even think about it!" said Zhang Yang almost immediately before Wei Yan Er could reach out. It was one of his goals to equip a Level 180 Ascended tier weapon in order to surpass his former self when he was only Level 179 before he "died". To pass the threshold was to enter a new realm, a checkpoint of strength!

"Hmph! Stingy!" Wei Yan Er muttered. However, when she turned back her head to Zhang Yang, the next utterance was simply too shocking to believe. "How bout a kiss to change your mind?" Wei Yan Er even attempted a seductive wink. There was some kind of expression on her that was rather enticing.

Zhang Yang nearly choked on his own breath. He quickly turned around and saw that Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Daffodil Daydream had the same darkened expression. All of them had assumed that he was some kind of lolicon pervert, tricking Wei Yan Er! As quickly as his reaction speed could be, Zhang Yang quickly turned to the little girl and said, "Little brat! I'm warning you! Watch what you're saying there! I'm the one that will be in trouble!"

Han Ying Xue ignored Zhang Yang and grabbed Wei Yan Er. "Yan Er, did that dummy do anything to you? Anything at all!?"

A little surprised, Wei Yan Er shook her head and explained, "No. But he has always been bullying me. Calling me names like, brat and little girl. He

even said that I was a naughty girl! He cursed me, saying that I will never be able to grow my chest! What a bastard! Punish him!"

Zhang Yang nearly cracked out a laugh, but resisted it, as the tension of the atmosphere was truly a bad timing to do so.

"Well then, where did you learn how to kiss?"

"Huh? Kiss? I've never kiss before. At most, I'll kiss you on the cheek. That's all. It was just a method I learned from the girls back in the university dorm. They said it was a good way to make guys bow down to their wishes! Sigh...Looks like Noobie Tank was too good...that or...noobie tank is a girl!?"

Zhang Yang frowned furiously and ignored the monster for a moment to give the little girl a good rap on her head.

"Wei Yan Er! You're coming back to the house! You are not allowed to stay in the university dormitory! Bloody hell! What on earth are you learning there!? Everyone agrees?" said Zhang Yang.

"Yes." Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and even Daffodil Daydream nodded their head in unison.

The battle did not take too long, and before they knew it, Zhang Yang had landed the killing blow. The Creeper turned belly up, floating to the surface for a while before sinking back deep into the lake. Wei Yan Er rubbed her head in pain as she quickly swam to the dead body to loot all the items before they sunk in along with the body.

Not too far from the first fight with the Creeper, another similar Creeper emerged out of the depths and attacked the party. The battle continued on but had only dragged the time Zhang Yang and the party to move forward.

The map was too large, to begin with. Half a day later, they could not even see the end of the lake, for the hue of the water was too dark! Zhang Yang grunted with annoyance and checked the world map. Lo and behold, they were only a little more than a quarter of the distance from the end! Since it will be a while before they could finish the map, they logged off together and Zhang Yang went for a quick exercise. Sun Xin Yu and Han

Ying Xue both were awake at the moment and followed him to the gym to workout. The difference between them however was, one was training to maintain an optimal fighting condition, while the other two were just stretching out to maintain a slim waist and ample breast to butt ratio.

After the workout session, Zhang Yang left to the office to sign a bunch of papers. After a quick swish and flick of his magnificent ball pen, Zhang Yang logged into the game. The four ladies had already started off without him. When Zhang Yang logged in, Han Ying Xue had quickly cried out for him to hurry over. Since Zhang Yang was not present then, Han Ying Xue had used Messick as a replacement for the tank. The pervert scoundrel had been going on with his foul mouth, which was surprisingly effective at making the monsters attacking him alone. Too bad, even the ladies that he was supposed to protect were disgusted at his foul mouth!

When Zhang Yang arrived, Han Ying Xue immediately unsummoned Messick. Only then, the ladies in the party could calm down.

The party continued on forward and only managed to clear half of the massive lake by noon! They had to log out to continue later after lunch. Naturally, Zhang Yang had to have his lunch in the company's cafeteria with the 6 super beautiful secretaries. One would feed him while the other would ask to be fed. It was like a plaything for a King! Sadly, Zhang Yang was not enjoying the blissful moment that 99% of the men in the world would enjoy. Zhang Yang could not help but suspect that every rich man in the world would face similar treatment. Who on earth would want that!?

After lunch, Zhang Yang returned to his office for some real work. As usual, he was handed over a bunch of papers to sign. Zhang Yang had ordered important documents to be handed to him as a priority to allow him to finish his work as soon as possible, to not interrupt his gaming time!

Just the black water lake alone had taken the party close to one whole day and one whole night in real time. Only 24 hours later, the party had managed to cross the lake and walked on the land at the other side. Thankfully, the abundance of monsters and their incredible amount of

experience had allowed Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to gain a level. Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were still at the same level, but gained so much experience points that they could gain a Level in just a half a day's time.

At the other end of the lake, there was a triangular, steep cliff. In its side was the entrance of a cave.

The party did not hesitate to move on. With Zhang Yang taking the lead, the party entered the cave, one after another. Since the cave was considered an indoor environment, everyone's pet, except for Zhang Yang's Phoenix was automatically unsummoned. At that moment, Zhang Yang's skill {Beast Taming} was greatly admired by everyone.

As he recalled, there were only 20 or more [Indistinct Skill Books] in his previous life. Moreover, the skill {Beast Taming} had appeared more often than the rest. However, the chance of getting the skill book was almost the same as striking a 5 million dollar lottery ticket!

The cave led them downward. As they ventured deeper, the walls of the cave started to turn to dirt to hot molten lava. The entire cavern system was brightly lit up by the intense, red-hot glow of the molten rocks. As the temperature grew higher, everyone started to sweat like pigs, their faces glistening with sweat!

"If only Sister Daffy is a Cryomancer! She could conjure some ice to reduce the heat around here!" said Wei Yan Er.

"It's better to just get on with the place!"

Everyone sped up and heard a bird's cawing sound. Seven oddly large crimson birds emerged from the flowing lava and charged towards the party.

[Adult Crimson Fire Crow] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Magic Attack: 25,048 – 35,048

Skills:

[Fire Breath]: Spews a trail of fire, dealing 200% Magic Fire Attack to a target. If the target carries the effect of {Flare}, damage is increased by 50%.

[Flare]: Blasts a wave of flame, 30 meters around the caster. Stuns all target for 3 seconds and deals additional 50,000 Fire damage within 15 seconds.

Note: Born of hot molten lava, the Crimson Fire Crows are vicious and wild beasts. They attack in groups and could even defeat large monsters, such as the Violet Scale Spiked-Back Creeper!

Chapter 709: Crimson Fire Crow

"That's...That's a Crimson Fire Crow!" cried Zhang Yang happily.

"What about it?"

"That monster will drop something called the Crimson Fire Essence! Its one of the materials for crafting the [Amateur Power Potion]!" said Zhang Yang as he rushed over to the monster in delight.

"[Amateur Power Potion]?!" Everyone was shocked.

"How much does it boost?"

"30% attack power!" said Zhang Yang. "Advance tier will give 40% boost! If it's the same as the [Beginner Power Potion], a Transmuted grade 10 could increase the effect by 100%! That [Amateur Power Potion] could provide a massive boost of 60% damage for a short amount of time!"

60% attack boost was not a small number. Naturally, the attack boost would not stack with the bonus effect of strong equipment. Players with strong equipment effects would not gain much benefits from [Power Potion]. It was estimated that the true bonus attack they gain from a 60% attack boss [Power Potion] would only grant them a 20% increase in overall DPS.

"It would not be much, since you don't have the recipe to craft [Amateur Power Potions]!"

Zhang Yang smiled and continued his attacks. "These Crimson Fire Crow will drop the recipe. Though the chance is extremely low, it will be worth it! It's luck now!"

"Well then. It's time to wipe the floor clean of the monsters, then!" said Daffodil Daydream, with an innocent smile.

"Wee! I smell money!" cried the little girl with joy.

"ARKK ARKK!" The crow cawed loudly and blasted out a wave of fire that stunned everyone and inflicted the debuff {Flare} on them.

Wave after wave was unleashed by the rest of the 6 Crimson Fire Crows,

inflicting a total of 7 stacks of {Flare} on the party.

Zhang Yang immediately purged the debuff with {Warrior's Will} and struck one of the crows with a sure Critical strike {Destructive Smash}, dealing 480,000 damage.

Han Ying Xue and the rest had purged their own debuffs with skills or accessory effects. One stack of DoT effect would not harm them much, since its just 10,000 damage every 3 seconds. Seven stacks however, could deal 70,000 damage, and that would hurt. Even if just a bit.

The Phoenix excelled best. Not only did it have immunity to Fire damage, it could also absorb all incoming fire based attacks and restore its HP with it! It's the best anti-fire, anti-burn monster! The true Lord of Flames!

As the flames kept on pouring down on the party, the Phoenix single-handedly took care of all the Fire Crows and turned them into fried meat, extra crispy. Even though they were elite tier and had higher HP than normal, one wave of monster would only have 7 counts of monsters. Zhang Yang and the party had no problems at all in dealing with such measly numbers. Ignoring the speed of killing, the Phoenix alone could take care of all the monsters with no healers!

Hmph! As expected of the best Phoenix!

Some time later, all seven Fire Crows dropped down from the sky and vomited out a pile of loot, including two thumb sized, fiery red crystals. It was as red as a ruby that glimmered with an intense vermillion hue.

"Only two? We killed seven of them and only two [Crimson Fire Essence]? What a stingy monster! There's no recipe around, either! Pfft!" Wei Yan Er grunted.

"Sigh...Do you know not patience in your book of virtue? If we can farm one [Crimson Fire Essence] from 10 crows, you can kneel down do your ancestors' altar and burn joss sticks to thank them! Don't mind the recipe. You can start complaining when we don't gain a single one of it after wiping out all the monsters here!" said Zhang Yang as he taps Wei Yan Er's head.

The party continued on further and met more waves of Crimson Fire Crows. They were all in groups, with numbers ranging from 3 to 9. Technically, the Crimson Fire Crows were strong, due to the skill {Flare}. However, it was useless in the face of the Legendary Beast Phoenix! The best way to fight was to allow the Phoenix to fly into the fight, generating that little aggro, so that the party could wipe them all clean without sustaining any damage.

As the party ventured further and deeper, Zhang Yang's inventory slots had started to gather more [Crimson Fire Essence] yet there were still no signs of any recipes. Initially, Zhang Yang was assured that it would be found eventually, however, as they killed more and more crows, he started losing hope. The best way to describe their situation was that they had a lot of meat to be grilled, but no griller nor coal around to start the fire pit!

Thankfully, the lava cave had a rather huge system of caverns inside. On one hand, there was still hope of finding more crows, on the other hand, it was getting hotter and hotter! Even though the cavern was splitting up here and there, it was fairly easy to explore. Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu both gained a level by noon. However, by then, they had only managed to explore roughly 15% of the entire place. Zhang Yang predicted that they may need to spend close to 2 to 3 days' worth of time to completely explore the cave.

On one hand, they had the time of the world to spare. Might as well spend some time grinding their levels there, for the killing rate and experience points was more than the outside world. With a blink of an eye, two days had passed and everyone had filled up more than 50% of their experience bars. If they could spend another two more days, they could gain a Level that easily. Normally, the same level would have consumed (in-game time) a whole month! The reason they could do it was, one, they had no need to run around the map to hunt hot spots for monsters. Secondly, the monster count inside the map was too abundant. Those two reasons alone, had increased the grinding rate by a notch, allowing Zhang Yang and the party to gain a level in just 12 to 13 days of in-game time.

The party walked to the end of the cave and entered a new brightly illuminated cave. The cave was at least three times bigger than the space they were in before, as large as a football stadium.

The cave was made out of hot, molten lava. Sitting in the middle of the cave was a huge Crimson Fire Crow that was clearly different compared to the ones that they had defeated a while back. This Crimson Fire Crow was bigger, and had feathers that glowed with molten lava. Compared to the rest of the crows, the big one was far vicious. Its face and body was scarred, yet the feathers that grew on top of its head were magnificent, like a crown.

[Crimson Fire Crow King] (Rare Mythical, Beast)

Level: 170

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 7,000

Magic Attack: 25,150 – 35,150

Skills:

[Fire Breath]: Spews a trail of fire, dealing 200% Magic Fire Attack to a target. If the target carries the effect of {Flare}, damage is increased by 50%.

[Flare]: Blasts a wave of flame 30 meters around the caster. Stuns all target for 3 seconds and deals additional 50,000 Fire damage within 15 seconds.

The big crow was obviously the boss of the Crimson Fire Crows. However, its stats were not too strong, compared to the other crows. The only thing it had, was more HP and slightly more attack. However, the one thing that had Zhang Yang intrigued was the word "Rare". Somehow, he knew that the recipe for the [Amateur Power Potion] will be on it.

"Oh ho...A rare boss!" cried Wei Yan Er. "Hey hey hey hey! Look! Look! At the boss' feet there! There's a tiny bird!"

Playing around the boss' feet was a palm-sized tiny Crimson Fire Crow.

Its body was like a regular crow. Somehow, it looked like a bootleg version of the Phoenix. Perhaps, it would be several times weaker than the real Phoenix!

[Juvenile Crimson Fire Crow] (Mythical tier Flying Mount)

Level: 0

Note: Can be tamed.

"A mythical tier mount!"

Everyone had their hair standing on edge. Taking aside the fact that Zhang Yang's mount was an Ethereal tier, which was able to gain tiers automatically. The other party members' mounts were merely Violet-Platinum tier and Yellow-Gold tier. Wei Yan Er had the Violet-Platinum Winged-Tiger mount. While Daffodil Daydream's flying mount was only a Yellow-Gold tier, which was only used for travel. Her battle mount, however, was the mount she had obtained from the twelve-horoscope mountain. At least, it was a Violet-Platinum tier.

Even the stone cold Sun Xin Yu was surprised to see such a rare mount!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Kill the boss first and roll for your luck!"

"Noobie tank! You're so cruel! How could you kill a chick's mother right in front of it?!"

"Oh! Is that so? Well then, let's skip this boss then!"

"NOOOO!!"

"In that case, shut your whining! I'll deduct your pocket money the next time you try to act smart!"

Even though the Crimson Fire Crow King might have the title of a boss, it was no different from a higher leveled Elite tier monster. Zhang Yang took the liberty to handle it alone and killed it soon after. The four ladies then rolled for the mount as Zhang Yang went for the loot. Happy and satisfied, Zhang Yang found an Alchemy recipe which was none other than the one that he had been looking for, while hunting in the cave for 2 days. Zhang Yang learned the recipe and found out, that besides the

[Crimson Fire Essence], the other material he required to craft the [Amateur Power Potion] was an herb called [Blazing Mushroom].

Zhang Yang had an abundance of high leveled herbs collecting dust in his own personal warehouse. After he returns to town, Zhang Yang could start mass producing the potions. Sadly, the [Herb Foraging Familiar] could never collect the [Crimson Fire Essence]. This little crystal can only be farmed from monsters or bought from players. Since most players were oblivious to its use, and the essence crystal can only be used to craft the [Power Potion], so might as well sell them to Zhang Yang since he would be buying them for 50% extra coins than selling them to NPC! NPC are none other than the system, the company itself. The NPC would only offer the players 2 silver coins at most, for the essence! The completed [Amateur Power Potion] could fetch up to 5 gold coins each! When a guild wants to be the first to explore a dungeon, they would have to mass purchase the potions. Zhang Yang could sell them for a higher price of 20 to 30 gold coins each! They would still buy them!

The selling price for each potion would be roughly 5 gold coins in long term. Now that Zhang Yang was going to buy the ingredients for only 5 silver coins each, the profit he would be earning are 10000% Investor would die to invest in a venture for as low of 100% or 200% profit comeback! What would anyone be silly enough to stop earning for the 10000% profit margin!?

A long time ago, Zhang Yang had Yu Li to learn Alchemy profession to have her produce potion in his stead. However, when Zhang Yang acquired the skill {Alchemist's Intuition}, he learned the recipes of all the rare potions himself and concocted them himself. Sadly, he would have to set aside some time to grind and concoct potions as well! It would be a rather hectic time for him!

Other than the recipe, the boss had also dropped a Level 170 Mythical tier Leather armor boots. Zhang Yang kept the boots. Perhaps, he could sell it for only 10 to 20 gold coins.

On the other hand, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the girls had rolled for the mount. Sun Xin Yu was the first to roll but failed at only 28%. The little

brat and next, followed by Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream was the last. However, after one round, all of them had failed to seal the mount and would need to start again.

In the second round, the little girl was lucky. She sealed the crow and obtained the Mythical tier Flying Mount. Contrary to popular belief, a flying mount was mainly for traveling, however, the most important factor of all mounts was their tier and strength. The higher the tier, the more it could improve their owner's survivability in battle.

Wei Yan Er summoned the little red crow out and prepared to train it. She then turned to the magnificent Phoenix and said, "Look at the little cutey pie~~~ Awww~~~ It's so cute I'm gonna die!!! Hahaha! Noobie tank! Don't think that I'll trade it with you! This is mine!"

Chapter 710: Darok

After the party was finished with the Crimson Fire Crow King, there was nothing left but to go out of the steamy hot cave. The party circled around the walls of the cave and managed to find a small opening that led to the outside of the cave. After squeezing through the pathway, they were led to another large cave, with a gigantic palace situated in it. The structure of the castle was built in accordance to the shape of the cave itself. There was no other way but to go into the castle.

The castle itself was extremely old. Cracks were here and there, showing signs of severe deterioration. The first chamber of the castle was opened wide, since there were no doors to enclose it. From outside, the party could see countless of Spectre infested monsters that were patrolling around aimlessly. The sounds of their eerie cries, coupled with their extreme numbers was only an early indication that their journey forward will be tough.

Zhang Yang opened the map and examined the size of the palace. It was expectedly huge. Zhang Yang tried to scroll to the far end but was blocked from doing so. Looks like that was the end of the Mythical Dragon Realm. The last boss should be inside.

"Let's go. We're about to clear the map!"

The five-man party went into the castle with Zhang Yang taking the lead. According to the official guideline, every Mythical Dragon Realm will have one final boss. Since the realm had spawned in a Level 150 – 180 map, the final boss should be a Holy tier boss. Right then, all Holy tier equipment, weak or not, were extremely rare and precious. Even Zhang Yang himself had two Holy tier equipment, hence, most of his equipment were Ethereal tier.

As they approached the swarm of monsters, the little girl cried with excitement. "Ooooo! I can't wait to get my hands on a Holy tier two-handed axe!"

"Hm. If there is one, it will be yours, then. I'll be nice enough to lend it to

you!" said Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had no need for a Holy tier equipment since he had an Ascended tier two-handed axe waiting in his personal warehouse! All he had to do now was to grind his level up to Level 180 to equip it! Naturally, he did not need to fight over the axe.

The party entered the first hall and encountered their first wave of monsters.

[Shrieking Witch] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 5,250,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,833 – 60,822 (Physical Shadow Attack)

Skills:

[Terror Shriek]: Let out a terrifying shriek, inflicting {Fear} on a target for 5 seconds.

[Possession]: Possesses a target and controls it. The effect lasts indefinitely until the target's HP drops below 10%.

Note: The Shrieking Witch is one of the many loyal servants of Darok. She has the ability to inflict fear into the hearts of the enemy. Using that fear, she could use them as their plaything. Many of adventures that had tried to subdue Darok has fallen into the hands of the witches.

"Crap! What a troublesome skill!" Daffodil Daydream grunted. "The shrieking skill is inevitable, but the controlling skill will be a pain in the butt!"

"It would be best to dispel the skill the moment the monster controls you. That, or we might have to fight amongst ourselves."

"Sigh...If only I have the chance to whack the noobie tank."

"What?"

"What?"

However they may complain, they had already reached the bridge and

had to cross over it. Zhang Yang took the initiative and started first with a {Spear of Obliteration}. Naturally, since the number of monsters was overwhelming, he had to be careful not to lure too many of them at a time. He tried to clear the monsters one at a time, due to the mind-controlling skill. If he had drawn in three monsters, he might cause the entire team to be killed!

"All that lives shall be ours!" cried the witch as she turned to Zhang Yang. The witch was considered a higher leveled Spectre since she was able to maintain her original human appearance without any signs of decay. Her entire body was cloaked in a thin white fabric that was plastered against her skin. Unlike the other women and female bosses that Zhang Yang have met, the witches were plain normal girls. Average Janes, at that.

The witch attacked Zhang Yang by clawing him with her hands. That was nothing to be afraid of, since her attacks were like using a pair of wooden chopstick to whack a titanium steel wall. However, that was not the main attack pattern. In just a few normal hits, the witch will shriek, causing Zhang Yang to run amok for 5 seconds.

Even though he had {Warrior's Will} ready to be used, Zhang Yang had chosen to reserve the skill for {Possession} instead. Although he had not the faintest idea of whether the skill could be dispelled, it was still worth a try.

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the team started their attack on the witch once Zhang Yang gave them the green light. Although the other members of the party might occasionally OT Zhang Yang, it was not a problem since the witch's attack was too low to be threatening, even without Han Ying Xue healing them.

When {Fear} on Zhang Yang wore off, the witch then proceeded to cast the most troublesome skill, that was {Possession}.

A large white cross made of skeletal formed behind Daffodil Daydream. Her eyes were shrouded in a thick white layer of cloud and her hands were stretched to be crucified. After one second, her expression turned blank

and emotionless while she pointed her staff at Han Ying Xue and blasted off a fire missile towards her, dealing over 60,000 damage.

"I cannot dispel the skill! I cannot even use any items or accessories! I'm completely locked out!" said Daffodil Daydream in the party channel.

"Time to kill sister Daffy!" Wei Yan Er was the first to jump in action and hurled her gigantic axe at Daffodil Daydream.

Sun Xin Yu blinked step behind Daffodil Daydream and started her attack combo.

"Careful! Be careful! Look at the HP bar! Stop at 10%!" said Zhang Yang. Although Sun Xin Yu had higher attack damage than Wei Yan Er, Zhang Yang was extremely worried for Wei Yan Er instead, since the girl was a maniac with the axe. She might accidentally slip up and kill Daffodil Daydream!. That was the main reason why the skill {Possession} was the most troublesome skill ever. It required one to attack one's own teammate in order to save them!

Within a few seconds, Daffodil Daydream was freed of the curse at 8% HP. Sun Xin Yu had sharp eyes. Her final attack had dealt enough damage to knock down 11% HP to 8% at the right amount. Right then, her blade stopped and she withdrew from her. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was a ruffian. Before she could see Daffodil Daydream was already freed of the skill, she was already too late.

{Apparate}!

Daffodil Daydream had anticipated Wei Yan Er's carelessness and teleported her way out of danger the moment she regained control.

"Stupid! Are you really trying to kill Daffy?!" Zhang Yang scolded.

"Sorry! My bad! My hand slipped! Nishishishi!"

Han Ying Xue had immediately healed Daffodil Daydream the instant she was within range. Thankfully, the skill {Possession} had an extremely long cooldown time. Before the witch could use the skill again, the party had already ended her 5 million HP.

After the first battle, even Wei Yan Er had insisted that Zhang Yang be careful with kiting the monsters. One was enough to send them into a huge disarray. If Zhang Yang accidentally lures in a huge swarm, they might be seriously looking at death's door.

Fortunately, the monsters present in the first hall was mostly skeletal soldiers. The ratio of the witch and the skeletal soldiers were almost 1:9. Even though it was extremely dangerous, where Wei Yan Er had even nearly killed Han Ying Xue that one time, the team was able to thread through the needle hole.

Three hours of fighting later, they had cleared the entire palace of monsters and confronted the final boss.

The final boss was a Spectre wizard with a typical black magician robe and a long crimson-violet staff. Molded on top of the staff was a white human skull that was glowing in an emerald-green hue. Although the robes covered his entire body, the hands that held the staff were visible. It was dried up, shriveled, like a corpse. Shrouded in darkness, only the glow of the Spectre's green fire was visible underneath the robes.

[Spectre Evil Wizard, Dorak] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 180

HP: 1,800,000,000

Defense: 18,470

Magic Attack: 85,228 – 125,228

Skills:

[Possession]: Possesses a target and controls it. Effect lasts indefinitely until the target's HP drops below 10%.

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% magic Shadow attack on a target.
Channeling: 2 seconds.

[Shadow Trap]: Randomly casts 40 Shadow Traps around the field. Triggers when players step into the trap, dealing 400,000 Shadow damage.

[Ring of Shadow]: Summons 9 gigantic rings of shadow. The Rings will roll around the battlefield and deals 300,000 Shadow damage on impact.

Note: The King, the Rule, The Lord of the Spectre Kingdom! Dorak was born with an innate talent for the Dark Side. His ambition was to rule over the powers of Shadow, and he had completely abandoned his human self and became a Spectre Wizard. Now, his mastery of the powers over Shadow had even received recognition from the Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich.

"Hey, dummy! Look, there's no Constitution skill! The boss does not have any recovery skills!"

"Hm. That's good then. Since the entry limit was only 5 men. The system has designed this boss fight to be that of a dungeon. Do not underestimate the boss, for each of its move is designed to fight 5 players. He would never be as stupid as the other bosses we fought before. Look at the boss' skills. All of them requires us to be on our toes at all times."

"But, don't we have Inheritance Transformations? Since the boss does not have a recovery skill, this should be a cakewalk!"

"Please. It's not like the developers had anticipated that players would be as strong as us. Do you think the developers would have the time to design the map solely for our level?"

"Enough of your explanation! I'm sick of it, noob tank! Let's get this over with and get my axe!"

Zhang Yang pinched his brow and shook his head. "It's not like you could equip it as soon as it drops! The boss is Level 180. This means that the equipment he drops would be Level 180 as well! The only thing you could do if you pick up a two-handed axe is to place it in your inventory to gather dust!"

"Hmph! Level...Level...Level!" Wei Yan Er mumbled. "Everything is about levels, isn't it! Fine! I'll work hard! It's not like Level 180 is going to run away or anything! Equipment is more important!" Wei Yan Er snorted.

Zhang Yang laughed at her and rapped the top of her head hard.

"Alright. If everyone's ready to fight, follow me and attack after I have pricked the boss! Use your Transformations, now. Together. The faster we fight, the quicker we can leave this God-forsaken place! I'm starting to get bored of this wretched place, anyway!"

Daffodil Daydream raised her timid little hand, asking for permission to say something. "Erhm...wouldn't it be extremely dangerous if one of us is controlled while transformed? 10% would be a tough target to reach."

Han Ying Xue butted in. "If I may, our HP would be greatly increased after Transformation, who on earth has the time to fight you if you are controlled?"

Zhang Yang thought about it for a while and said, "I think it would be fine. Since we would be attacking at our strongest during our Transformation states." Zhang Yang explained it carefully. He wanted Han Ying Xue to maintain everyone's HP at around 10% and above. It would be easier to counter the mind controlling skill. It may seem dangerous, however, even the weakest one, Daffodil Daydream would have 12,000,000 HP, with Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}. 10% of that would be 1,200,000! It had exceeded her own basic HP of only 320,000 HP. Even if they were to accidentally take a hit from the boss, their HP would not be in real danger.

"True..."

"But, we still have to be careful!"

Everyone nodded and Zhang Yang gave the signal. Everyone activated their Transformation skill, including Felice and the Phoenix as well. A total of 7 Transformed characters the battle. At that moment, their party consisted of three S class Inheritance and two A class Inheritance players. With the Transformed battle mount and Battle Companion, the entire server could not possibly replicate such a party!

Zhang Yang soared to the sky and shot down at the boss. With the standard {Spear of Obliteration} hitting the boss, the battle was started.

"Ho ho...It's been a while since living beings have walked into this realm!" Dorak took the attack and floated towards Zhang Yang slowly.

"Perhaps I should welcome you with open arms, especially when you are here to be my slaves!"

Zhang Yang chained his attack with several skills, followed by the attacks of the entire team behind him. Since Zhang Yang had already decreed that everyone only retain 10% of their HP, Han Ying Xue did not heal, but switched to offensive spells. Having more HP would only be troublesome for the party when the boss uses {Possession}.

Without recovery skills, the party did not face any trouble. Hence, even if they had extremely low DPS, the main issue in defeating the boss would be time! At that moment, Zhang Yang's party cumulative DPS was around 1,450,000! Technically, if everything goes smoothly as planned, they would only need 20 minutes to kill the boss! That is, if they are able to successfully endure the shadow traps, and the Ring of Shadow!

Chapter 711: The Way to Fight is to Lose?

"I applaud your efforts of entering my realm with only the five of you!" Dorak laughed with a deep, husky voice that was both eerie and bold. He then lifted his staff and fired {Shadow Arrows} again and again, dealing 200,000 damage to Zhang Yang.

However, despite being powerful, the attack was like a mosquito bite when Zhang Yang is in his Transformation state. He had 40% magic nullification chance. Hence, technically, he would only take on average of 50,000 to 60,000 shadow damage and lose around 30,000 HP per second. It was too low!

"Come on! Pump it up! Give me more pain!" Zhang Yang provoked him. If he is possessed then, it would be extremely difficult to push Zhang Yang's HP down to 10%. Perhaps, he would even kill everyone, before then!

Then again, it was supposed to be a good thing, yet the boss' low damage hitting was proving to be a little troublesome. At the rate of 30,000 damage per second, the boss would need to take 19 minutes to damage Zhang Yang down to 10%. By then, he would have been controlled countless of times.

"Pest should do nothing but be squashed! Save your tongue, after I kill you, I shall turn you into a headless knight! Perhaps, you can find solace in knowing that you will never speak again!" Aggravated, the boss fired all his {Shadow Arrows} at Zhang Yang. After several blast, he grabbed his staff with both of his wrinkled hands and stabbed into the ground. "Ring of Shadows! Fatten these intruders!"

Gulong! Gulong!

Nine rings of shadow appeared, lining up in a straight line on both left and right of Darok. Like a Ferris wheel that had gone out of control, the rings started rolling towards the party. Since the place was designed like a dungeon fight, all skills were evadable. At every gap between each ring, there will be a meter wide gap that player could stand in to evade the attack.

While that was supposed to be the case, Zhang Yang and the party was not moving away from the rings. Instead, they took the hit deliberately. Each of them took a hit and suffered 300,000 shadow damage. While Zhang Yang and his party were "eating" the attack, Felice and the other battle mount and battle companion were dodging the rings to avoid the damage. Since they were not considered as player characters, they could not be controlled. Dodging the attacks would be the only be the natural thing to do. 300,000 damage was more than enough to kill them in one attack.

The rings rolled from the boss, towards the back of the palace, and back again towards him, hitting everyone once more.

"Haha! Is that chaotic enough for you?! Let's make it better!" the boss laughed hysterically and stabbed the ground with his staff again. Surrounding him, shadow pits were forming. The size of the traps were roughly 2 meters wide and was forming, only 50 meters around the boss. The traps placements were extremely random and the traps were overlapping each other.

"Oh! Nice!" cried Wei Yan Er happily as she charged towards the traps to spring it.

Again, normally, players would dodge the traps, and for good reason as well. Each of the traps could deal as much as 400,000 shadow damage and could kill non-Transformed, non-tank players. However, even though the traps were overlapping over each other, there will always be a way to dodge all skills of the boss. The gap between each trap was wide enough to allow players to dodge them and evade the rolling rings of shadows.

After being sprung, the traps will automatically be removed from the battlefield, Zhang Yang and everyone deliberately moved around the field, stepping on each trap to take the damage. Amongst them, Wei Yan Er was fastest and sprung the most traps. It was deliberate, since the little girl had the Darkness Inheritance with a natural high tolerance to shadow attack. Even though she had stepped on 14 {Shadow Traps}, the damage she had taken was only around 1,680,000. The little girl went on complaining that the boss was just too weak!

"What mad fools!" even the boss was astonished at the party's extremely unorthodox method of fighting! However, as the system dictates, after all the traps are sprung, the boss will automatically replenish them again.

"Sigh...we should have taken some damage before Transforming earlier! It's so hard to lose HP now!"

In the most common situation, players would want to have the highest HP possible during a boss fight. There are even times when the healer had to burn all their MP just to keep the players alive! However, right then, who would have thought that a party would want to have their HP lowered as fast as possible!? Who in the right mind would do that!?

After a few more rounds of {Shadow Traps}, the boss grinned eerily and turned towards Wei Yan Er. With a quick blink, his entire character had turned into a puff of smoke that zoomed through the battlefield to seep into her body.

A familiar skeletal cross appeared behind Wei Yan Er and her hands were swung open as if she was being crucified. Her eyes turned white and she had lost control of her body.

"Haha! It has always been my favorite form of entertainment to see friends killing each other!" The boss had controlled Wei Yan Er character and spoke through her mouth. The little girl then turned towards Sun Xin Yu and charged towards Sun Xin Yu.

At the very moment when the boss had turned into a puff of smoke, Zhang Yang trailed it immediately and waited beside Wei Yan Er ready to react. With a quick smash, Zhang Yang stunned Wei Yan Er with {Blast Wave}. Everyone, including the battle mounts and battle companions had attacked the little girl!

Fortunately for the party, when Wei Yan Er "betrayed" them, she had lost the right to gain the benefit from Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}. Similarly, the party had lost the right to gain the benefit from Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura}, causing the team to lose a little of their damaging power.

However, the little girl's attack power was extremely high. Since she had already Transformed, she could kill two to three players in their team!

However, her current opponent was primarily Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. In less than half a minute, both of them managed to dispel the control of the boss by hitting the little girl down to her last 9% HP.

PUFF!

"GURAAHHHH" Wei Yan Er arched her head back and screamed at the top of her lungs, and the same dark smoke burst out of her mouth as she expelled the boss from inside her body.

"Waaa! That was scary! I almost died!" cried Wei Yan Er.

The battle resumed back to the "normal" pace when the boss reformed back at his original spawn point.

Although Wei Yan Er had managed to get herself to 10%, before she was freed from the control of the boss, she had managed to deal enough damage to the party. Zhang Yang was still left with 59% HP, Sun Xin Yu had 48%, Han Ying Xue had 45% HP, and Daffodil Daydream had over 43% HP.

The boss continued his pace and set up more traps and casted {Shadow Arrow} on Zhang Yang.

Now that Wei Yan Er had left with 10%, she had stopped taking more hits and switched to the normal evasive style. Perhaps she was getting better after playing the game, after so long. Occasionally, she could stand at a spot and take no damage at all. At time, she soared around the field, dodging all the traps and the Ring of Shadow, laughing hysterically while she was at it.

Without the healer doing her job, the HP of the entire party dropped faster than usual. By the time the boss used the second {Possession}, everyone, but Zhang Yang was left with 10%. Only Zhang Yang had trouble getting his HP down to 10% in time. He still had over 19% HP left!

It was inevitable, since his damage reduction and absorption were too high and efficient. At one point, he had even removed his shield to reduce the absorption level. Only then, he was able to reduce his HP down to 19%. That or it may have ended up even higher!

Since Zhang Yang was the only person in the party who had over 10% HP, the second {Possession} struck him.

"Everyone, be careful when you're attacking Zhang Yang. His attacks are too strong!" said Han Ying Xue as she cast {Regeneration} on everyone and prepared {Holy Shield}.

It was extremely dangerous indeed to fight Zhang Yang. Note that when the boss controls a player, the controlled player will use all its active skills. Zhang Yang's skill {Destructive Smash} was so powerful that it could reduce Han Ying Xue's healing rate by 75%. It was extremely dangerous, since she could not heal the others in time.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang had only over 19% HP left. It was easy to free him from the boss' control.

"Hahaha! You don't know how long have I waited for this moment, noob tank!" Wei Yan Er glided across the floor and stunned Zhang Yang. She then brought down her axe and cleaved Zhang Yang with high damage. Since Zhang Yang had already removed his shield, everyone had a better time attacking Zhang Yang.

"What have I done to wrong you?" said Zhang Yang through the party channel. Even though he was not able to control his own character, he could still send messages through the party channel.

"Evil henchman! I shall punish you in the name of the moon!" said Wei Yan Er while she posed like the character in Sailor Moon.

Sun Xin Yu used {Shadow Step} to disappear from the battle for a brief second before entering stealth with {Vanish}. She then moved behind Zhang Yang and stunned him before attacking. All of the party members, besides Zhang Yang had less than 10% HP. Hence, they could not afford to trade blows with Zhang Yang. In the worst-case scenario, they might actually be overwhelmed by Zhang Yang!

Fortunately, even though the players could still use their skill, the boss would not use them too often. On the other hand, since he knew that he would be the one that would be controlled, Zhang Yang had preemptively used all his status-removing skills beforehand, rendering him being

stunned by Sun Xin Yu without resistance.

After {Ambush}, Sun Xin Yu extended the stun with {Kidney Shot}, extending the stun time by 10 seconds to allow the party to deal enough damage. Right at the last moment of the stun, Zhang Yang's HP dropped below 10% and he was freed from the boss' control.

As the boss laughed at the "wounded" players, he laughed maniacally and attacked Zhang Yang, while scorning them. "Your doom is close!"

Zhang Yang took a hit from the {Shadow Arrow} and awoke from the stun. He then immediately reequipped the shield and continued his attack on the boss.

From the party's perspective, the real battle had just begun then!

Since they would no need to heal, and could not lose any more HP than they had then, everyone was extremely careful while moving around the battlefield. They had to avoid all the traps and the rings of shadows. In such a scenario, when a party is forced to survive with less than 10% HP while attacking the boss, it would be a difficulty that even Zhang Yang's party would find hard to continue.

Those with lower control skill would surely be dead then, as they were too busy avoiding the traps and rings, forgetting to prioritize their matters.

Perhaps it was one of the main factors when designing the boss. To allow players a chance to survive in the battle, the designer of the boss had not bestowed any recovery skills to the boss. It would be a hopeless battle of the boss could regenerate HP while the entire party is too busy avoiding the skills!

Han Ying Xue was at her best. She would not dare lower her guard, even for a second, since they were all at the 10% HP threshold! Despite the fact that all their HP bars were at the very least, at 1,200,000 HP since all their Transformation skill were active. At most, they could take one trap and one attack from the Ring of Shadow.

Zhang Yang was on a whole other level. At 10%, his HP was at 4,000,000 HP! It was almost the same as a B class Inheritance

Transformed players!

Since none of the party members then had over 10% HP, the skill {Possession} was completely taken off the floor! The only things that the boss was firing constantly were the {Shadow Traps} and {Ring of Shadows}.

Chapter 712: Savage Bone Crushing Hammer

The most dangerous part of {Possess} was its ability to control players. Players who are controlled by the boss would be more dangerous than the boss. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his gang rather kept their HP down to danger level of 10% remaining rather than become possessed by the boss.

For normal players, even if the boss did not have {Possess}, the {Shadow Trap} and {Shadow Roller} were already extremely difficult to deal with. While they are dodging either one of those attacks, they might get hit by the other. Each attack could deal up to 300,000 damage to 400,000 damage! So, how many players in the game could afford to sustain so much damage over time, then?

However, for high Tier players, the boss would be easy to slay, if the boss did not have the Skill {Possess}.

All they needed to do would be dodge, hit, and dodge and hit again!

Upon getting used to the pace of the battle, the boss would no longer be a threat to them

Without the interruption of {Possess}, the party began to unleash their full potential, dealing damage to the boss as aggressively as they could. It did not take long before they crushed the boss's HP bar from 70% to 40%, then from 40% to 20%!

"No--- No! You imbeciles! You pests! How is it possible that you bunch of useless beings could deal so much damage to me!" Darok had received quite a number of blows to his face. He was heavily wounded as he appeared pathetic now. However, that was just the visual effect in the game. The boss's strength was not affected at all. He became even more hysterical and violent than before after his HP bar dropped below 20%.

Right after the HP bar had dropped below 20%, the {Shadow Roller} that the boss activated became much faster. Zhang Yang and his gang had even lesser time to adjust their positions on the battlefield now.

"Stinky boss! Don't you know you're not the only one who can go crazy!?" Wei Yan Er gulped down a bottle of [Beginner's Power Potion] to boost her Attack power. Then she activated her {Indiscriminate}, closely followed by her {Killing Cleave} to greet the boss!

'-1,604,698!'

An immense damage value popped out right on top of the boss. Wei Yan Er was very satisfied with the amount of damage she dealt with that strike of hers. It was impossible to see a 7-digit damage value in the early stage of the game after all!

"Argh ---" Darok was infuriated. He let out a raging roar and waved his staff around. However, he could only shoot his {Shadow Arrow} at Zhang Yang all thanks to the Aggro System of the game. So the boss could only throw his Skills on the player who had the most aggro value.

"I'll punish you on behalf of the moon! I'm Sailormoon!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud as she swung her battle axe around like a mad lady.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. Then he said, "Sailormoon? You're still not there yet! But you're most suited to be called 'Psycholoon'! That name should live up to your reputation!"

"Wah! You stinky noob tank! How dare you underestimate me!" Humph! Humph! I should have sliced you into pieces when you were possessed just now!" Wei Yan Er unleashed all her super powerful Skills onto the boss while her {Indiscriminate} was still in effect. Well, part of her was venting out her anger, because Zhang Yang did really provoke her.

17%, 14%, 11%!

Without a Skill that could recover his HP, the boss was like being made of water. His HP bar was dropping so steeply that it went down to 10% in just a brief moment!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Shoof! A dark skull began to form right on top of the boss! Very good! It was like putting icing on a cake that looked pretty in the first place!

Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Shadow Clone,} right after throwing his {Glare of the Death God}. At the same instant, 7 'Zhang Yangs' appeared and all of them began to slaughter the boss aggressively. That really boosted the efficiency of their assaults on the boss.

Although these Shadow Clones could not really deal high damage, their attack rates was similar to Zhang Yang's. In other words, if Zhang Yang could hit 3 times in a second, every single one of the Shadow Clones would be able to do that as well. The only difference was the amount of damage that they could deal was much lesser than Zhang Yang's. Other than that, there was also the gang, Battle Companions and the Phoenix pets! Their attacks were insanely packed up together! If there was anyone witnessing this battle, all they could see were the afterimages of blades and Skills raining down upon the boss.

"What is this!?" Darok let out a terrified scream. Looks like he saw his own death coming.

"We're killing you!" Zhang Yang replied as he was laughing out loud! Meanwhile, everyone did not stop. Instead, they were getting pumped to finish the battle once and for all. So their attacks were getting even more aggressive than ever!

'-18,000,000!'

'-18,000,000!'

The boss received a damage of approximately 20,000,000 damage consecutively. His HP bar continued to drop like hell. In under 6 seconds, the effect of {Glare of the Death God} had been triggered 10 times over! After the bombardment of attacks from Zhang Yang and his gang, Darok had only less than 1% HP remaining. That was only 5,890,000 HP left now!

"God damn pests!" Darok began with his final struggle. However, an amount of HP that was lower than 6,000,000 HP was not enough to hold up against the insane party. Instantly, the boss was slain with little effort. Darok collapsed onto the ground heavily and died. 5 streams of white lights merged into their bodies. Each of them received a total of 36,000,000,000 Experience Points, They could see that their Experience

Bars jumping up with their own eyes.

The moment after the boss was slain, the {Shadow Traps} and the {Shadow Rollers} that were planted all across the ground vanished without a trace. The entire palace had returned to its original state. Peaceful and quiet.

"Wahaha! The boss dropped a Two-Handed Weapon!" Wei Yan Er was agile as f*ck when it was time to pick up the loots. She already picked up a hammer, twice the size of a regular human. She was rubbing her face against the hammer as we speak.

"Unfortunately, this is a hammer!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

"You're the hammer!" Wei Yan Er understood what Zhang Yang was trying to imply. She shot back.

The boss dropped a total of two pieces of Holy Tier equipment. One of them was the Two-handed hammer that Wei Yan Er was hugging. The other one was a pair of pale-gray gloves. There was also a vague crimson radiance radiating across the surface of the gloves. Because of that, the gloves looked mysteriously fascinating.

Other than that, the boss had also dropped two books, one [Skill Point Crystal], and last but not least, a dark-colored order pendant that was the size of a palm.

Zhang Yang immediately picked up the order and took a closer look. Holy god! That was actually a [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order]!

The Lone Desert Smoke had remained a Level 4 Guild for quite a long time. Their Experience value had been full for quite a while now. They had been waiting to get a [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order] to finally level up their Guild.

"Tsk! If we sell this to Snow Seeker, I wonder, how much would she be willing to pay us, then?" Wei Yan Er's eyes were beginning to glitter once again. The little brat told Zhang Yang that her classmates were organizing a Summer Camp soon. Meanwhile, she had already spent all of her salary, up to next year's. So, she was super poor right now. Of course, it would be

natural that she would try anything possible to get some money now.

The first piece of [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order] that had ever appeared in the entire game was not to be given to anyone else, of course. No matter how much money others were willing to pay, there was no way Zhang Yang would be stupid enough to sell it! So, he immediately used the [Level 5 Guild Upgrade Order] without even look at that little brat's f*cking face. Instantly, the server began to announce and congratulate Lone Desert Smoke on being the first to ever become a Level 5 Guild. As usual, the entire guild received an additional reward. Each member of Lone Desert Smoke could enjoy earning an additional of 100% Experience Points for the next 3 days.

Zhang Yang was clever this time around, He quickly switched off his private message channel so that other guildmasters like Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and the others could not 'interrogate' him about the Guild Upgrade Order. Well, he was genuinely terrified of them now, especially Snow Seeker. She was born to be smart and cunning in the art of entrepreneurship and business. She could wrap you around her finger and confuse you just by spinning some words. You would not even know if you've stepped into her trap or not! Well, by the time you realize it, everything would have been too late.

Of course, it was very easy for Zhang Yang to 'handle' Snow Seeker. All he needed to do was to act all 'hoodlum' on her. This pretty woman would definitely blush and retreat after that.

"Alright, enough with the fuzz. Just place the equipment down, will you?" Upon seeing the little brat hugging tightly onto the hammer, Zhang Yang hustled her to hand out the equipment so that everyone could see. He smacked the little brat's forehead with his finger.

"You hoodlum! I'll sue you for harassment!" Wei Yan Er tightened her teeth and waved her fists around at Zhang Yang, growling.

Zhang Yang laughed even harder and said, "Come one, who would want to believe that I would harass a boy with tits! Wait. A boy without tits! Wait, that's just a boy. Whatever. Hahaha!"

"Humph! I hate you!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyeballs back intensely. However, after she looked at the attributes of the hammer, she immediately smiled again. She then posted the attributes of the hammer, even though she was already treating it as her own. Well, she had always been the little brat that loved to show off.

[Savage Bone Crushing Hammer] (Holy, Two-Handed Hammer)

Attack: 23,810 – 33,810

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 7,582

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Damage by 40%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 10%.

Equip: When hitting a target, there is a chance that you might crush the skull of your target, causing the target to not be able to move at all for 3 seconds.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

The Attack power of this weapon was almost twice the Attack power of Zhang Yang's [Sword of Purging Devourer]! However, it made perfect sense, because this weapon was a Level 180 Holy Tier weapon. It would be a disgrace to be a Holy Tier weapon if its attributes were not so powerful!

"You jealous?" Wei Yan Er kept the hammer in her inventory while bragging how lucky she was, like a little b*tch. Well, she had only reached Level 150 not long ago. She would still need to grind another 10 levels before she could equip that weapon.

Zhang Yang did not intend to indulge her at all. He just pointed his finger at the other Holy Tier equipment, those pair of gloves.

[Crimson Goblin Gaunlets] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +640

Vitality: +8,402

Strength: +2,060

Agility: +875

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 16,800 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

"Haih... who told me to choose the hammer first..." Wei Yan Er shrugged a little and said, "Noob tank, it's all yours! Be grateful!"

Zhang Yang laughed and kept the gloves in his inventory. He was currently equipped with Level 130 Mythical Tier gloves called [Silent Destroyer Glove]. It had been obsolete for quite some time now. However, other than his Accessories, every equipment on Zhang Yang would be at least Ethereal Tier.

As for his Accessories, well... Accessories were just hideous, these days. Most of the players were still clinging on to their level 60 Accessories until today.

"This is weird... this boss is a Spell-type boss right? Why is it dropping Physical-type equipment then?" Han Ying Xue was annoyed, "This is not fair to some people!"

"Stop complaining already... let's have a look at the two Books first, shall we?"

In the end, the first book they looked upon was actually a Blueprint for Leather Work profession players. So, Sun Xin Yu took it. The blueprint allowed the player to craft or make Ethereal equipment! However, even though Ethereal equipment could be sold at high prices, Sun Xin Yu would

most probably not get into making them. Meanwhile, the second book was a Skill Book for Spellcasters. So they threw it over to Daffodil Daydream without any hesitation.

[Blizzard]: Causes 300% Magic Attack of Frost Attack to the target. If the target is in a Frozen state, then the attack will surely be a Critical Hit. Cast time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Even without the Critical Hit effect, causing 300% spell damage in every 2 seconds was good enough for Daffodil Daydream. She could now use a Skill with higher damage now. However, it was unfortunate that she was not a Cryomancer. Without the Skill [Ice Ring] to freeze her target, she could not fully utilize this Skill.

However, if this Skill could be used together with the Hunters' {Frost Trap}, then Daffodil Daydream should be able to use the Skill at its fullest potential. Other than that, Zhang Yang's {Frost Strike} might also trigger a Freeze Effect on his targets. So Daffodil Daydream should have quite a lot of chances of using this Skill at its fullest.

The last piece of [Skill Point Crsytal] was taken by Zhang Yang. Upon swallowing it, he acquired another additional Skill Point. His first choice was to upgrade his {Shadow Clone} to its highest grade. When his {Shadow Clone} is upgraded up to Grade 7, he could summon 7 Shadow Clones at the same time to aid him in battle. Putting aside the fact that he could gain an additional 70% of his output, having 8 Zhang Yangs on the battlefield would be terrifying!

Chapter 713: Probing into the truth

After distributing everything, everyone took out their scrolls and left the Mythical Dragon Realm. Well, this realm was going to collapse automatically, soon. It remained unknown how long would it take for this realm to spawn again. Also, there was no telling where the realm would spawn either. Players would have to look it up from scratch.

After arriving at the main city, Zhang Yang quickly inserted a Level 6 Strength Gemstone into the socket of his [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets]. Until he reaches Level 160, he would not be able to equip it. Zhang Yang was currently at Level 154. He only needed 50% more to reach Level 155. From that perspective, it would not take long before he reaches Level 160.

Also, another happy thought crossed his mind. When he reaches Level 160, he also gets to borrow the little brat's hammer for a spin.

Among the ingredients required to make [Amateur's Power Potion], Zhang Yang had kept a substantial amount of [Blazing Mushrooms] in the warehouse. Furthermore, he could also command his [Herb Foraging Familiar] to gather them for him. On the other hand, the [Crimson Blazing Essence] could only be used to make [Amateur's Power Potion]. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was the only one who had the recipe to make that. There was no way that players could get it from the Auction House or other shops. Some players even sold them to NPCs for some money after they inadvertently coming across them.

Zhang Yang made a deal that he would pay anyone 8 gold pieces for every piece of [Crimson Blazing Essence] that they could bring him. That amount of reward was slightly better than the 4 gold pieces that the NPCs would offer. Zhang Yang believed that the players would not mind walking a few steps further just to earn some extra gold pieces. Well, he did not dare to mark the price up anymore to prevent any crooked businessman from taking advantage of the situation. They might even try to snatch Zhang Yang's business by offering higher rewards to get them.

From that point of view, we know that The Little Merchandize had

grown famous. Every small detail that was happening in the shop was being 'monitored' by everyone in the game. Some businessmen knew that Zhang Yang was purchasing [Crimson Blazing Essence] from the players with higher prices. So they also purchased quite a number of the item and kept it to themselves. They did not purchase too much because they were concerned that it might be a tactic Zhang Yang used to trick them into wasting their money.

After all, there was no true or false when it comes to business. Some people would make or buy a certain number of items that are less valuable first. Then they would purposely blow up the value of those items so that their values might increase. When the price of those items rocket up, they would sell those items that they kept secretly, long before the prices had gone up to earn a fortune! With that sort of tactic, they could easily cripple their competitors in the same field.

Zhang Yang withdrew a large number of [Blazing Mushrooms] from his bank. Then he put them according to the ratio of 3:1 with the [Crimson Flame Essences] into his inventory. Afterwards, he put the remaining of the [Blazing Mushrooms] back to the bank. He would only take them out again after he manages to purchase more [Crimson Flame Essences].

Zhang Yang arrived at the Alchemist Shop and bought some empty bottles. Just when he was ready to make some potions, he received a sudden message from Chen Xue Yao. She requested for help in clearing her next dungeon.

Since he could still sit back and make his potion, Zhang Yang did not reject her request. So he hopped onto his Phoenix pet and flew over to where Chen Xue Yao was. The two of them entered the dungeon. Zhang Yang was making his potions at the rear while his Phoenix pet and Felice took care of the monsters.

The two of them were attempting to clear the Level 70 Vestibule of Stones. Therefore, the Phoenix pet and Felice were more than enough to wipe out the monsters and bosses in the dungeon oppressively. Zhang Yang did not feel any stress at all while he was making his potions at the rear of the battlefield. He did not waste any second of his time.

"You're so famous now, so you must have a lot of enemies, right?" Chen Xue Yao asked Zhang Yang out of her curiosity.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "That's right! Anyone would suddenly appear on my back trying to stab me! I can't even rest without the need to worry about people trying to kill me!"

"Hmm... some people are really born to be bad! To me, games are just games. Why would they bring the grudge into real life!? Humph!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Are you talking about that Heaven's Pride?" Then he shook his head and said, "That prick is just the type of people who would seek revenge for the smallest grievance! He's very used to be arrogant! So don't mind him!"

"So, how did he made enemies with you?" Chen Xue Yao asked.

"Well, during the Soaring Sword Competition in Shang Hai, he used some dirty tricks trying to frame me!" Zhang Yang told Chen Xue Yao about the 'prostitution incident' that happened long ago in Shang Hai. Of course, everytime he mentioned Liu Wei's name, he was practically spitting it out.

"Oh... so that's how it happened." Chen Xue Yao nodded. "You must hate him very much now!"

Zhang Yang smiled. Well, the grudge that he held against Liu Wei would never be understood by any other person in the entire world other than him. Even if he was willing to honestly tell others about how Liu Wei forced him to perish together, others would only think that he might have hit his head a little too hard.

Chen Xue Yao stayed quiet while she was picking up the loot that had been dropped by the boss upon its death. She seemed to be troubled by something.

"This man is not simple at all. He must have something more than just grudges against Liu Wei! Damn it! How can he be so stubborn! Can't he just tell me something I want to know? Must I use my final triumph card as well to get him talking?"

"Or should I just come clean and tell him everything from scratch? If only I can get him to help me, it might be much easier to cripple the Liu family?"

"No! Mum and dad were killed because they were too trusting! If I accidentally pass the information to Liu Wei's lackeys without knowing it, I will be the next to go! I must not repeat their mistakes! Or else mum and dad would have died for nothing! Their sacrifices would have been for nothing!"

"So, he hired Private Investigators to find me... what is his true agenda then? Is he working for Liu Wei too, or is he really trying to get rid of him? Although they are enemies on the outside, sometimes, that might not be true. Business partners are always enemies on the outside but secretly, they are close friends... Only god knows if he would betray me for money! Come on, Chen Xue Yao! Just sacrifice your body, and you can get to know about the true relationship between him and Liu Wei!"

Zhang Yang had no idea at all what was going through that little head of his pretty secretary. When he turned all the ingredients he took along into a bunch of [Amateur Power Potions], they had already cleared the entire dungeon once --- the Vestibule of Stones was only a 5-player scale dungeon. It was a rather simple dungeon. Furthermore, Phoenix pet and Felice were extraordinarily powerful! They were basically clearing the dungeon, like cutting through butter with a hot knife!

After clearing up the dungeons a couple of times, Zhang Yang teleported himself back to Sauron's castle. One of the reasons why he was willing to help Chen Xue Yao was because low-level players would definitely not be capable of clearing a dungeon all on her own. Furthermore, now that the central point of the game was more focused in the Chaos Realm, it was extremely hard for her to form a descent party as well. Most of the low-level players would have their friends who were higher leveled guiding them through a dungeon. Furthermore, only those who did not belong to any guild would be forced to clear out a dungeon all by themselves. That was one of the main reasons why they could not gather too many powerful equipment. Other than that, they also lacked cooperation skills. So, they

could only clear out dungeons in Normal Mode. Well, a party usually would be disbanded after they were wiped out several times in Hard Mode of the dungeon.

Not to mention, Chen Xue Yao was gifted in the art of gaming. That was also one of the most important reason Zhang Yang was willing to help her. Of course, there was also that reason where she looked gorgeous. After all, Zhang Yang could have some eye candy for his eyes just by staring at her. If she was an ugly horse, Zhang Yang would not have agreed to meet her at all.

Those [Amateur Power Potions] that underwent Transmutation could increase an additional 60% damage to players at the most. It was a great effect that would really make a difference in a battle. The effect of the potions could last for 10 seconds, after all. Plus they only needed 60 seconds to cooldown before players could use again. The average of the additional DPS increment could reach up to 10%! For Zhang Yang who had not activated his Inheritance Transformation, that additional 10% damage could increase approximately 3.75% of his DPS performance. It was just astonishing!

However, when Zhang Yang activates his Inheritance Transformation, the additional increase in his Attack power would drop from 3.75% to only 1.3%. By then, the change would not be as significant.

Of course, Zhang Yang would keep the Transmuted [Amateur Power Potions] only for his own people. He put the others for sale at his Little Merchandize Shop. However, players would need to reach Level 150 before they could consume those [Amateur Power Potions]. Therefore, the number of players who could take an [Amateur Power Potion] was so low that even a person could finish counting the number in two hands.

Potions such as [Mobility Potions] and [Invincibility Potions] would find more usage in PvP matches. Meanwhile, [Power Potions] were more sought after when players are up against monsters or bosses. It would not matter if the bosses were from Open World Maps or Dungeons. Sometimes, players would get so close to killing the boss before they fail. With the power-up of [Power Potions], they could get the job done easier.

These [Amateur Power Potions] would become popular when players are beginning to reach Level 150.

Right before they left, Zhang Yang added Chen Xue Yao to the main guild of Lone Desert Smoke. He had clearly seen how capable she was in the game. He could also see her potential of becoming one of the best players in the world, as well. Other guilds would be looking for talented players like Chen Xue Yao. Other than that, since the guild had just been upgraded to a Level 5 Guild, Zhang Yang would need to recruit another 10,000 members into his guild. Of course, he must recruit those who are really going to contribute to Lone Desert Smoke to fill in the slots.

"Silly Yu! Come and accompany me! I'm going to gather some cooking ingredients!" Without giving Zhang Yang a chance to reject, Han Ying Xue pulled Zhang Yang deep into the forest.

Han Ying Xue had already upgraded her 'Cooking' to the highest level. However, to make sure that she can handle everyone's HP bars which were getting longer and longer when their levels were getting higher, she would need to cook up some snacks that could increase her healing efficiency. The best [Snacks] that could be found in the Bakery shop was the Level 120 [XXL Jumbo Cheese]. When Zhang Yang and his party equip their Level 150 Holy Tier equipment, each of them would have to take at least two [Snacks] before their HP bars are fully filled. That would be wasting some of their precious time.

Han Ying Xue bought a Cooking Recipe. The Recipe was called 'Diced-Chicken Burger'. However, the ingredients needed to make a [Diced-Chicken Burger] were extremely rare. They could only be gathered from Level 150 maps. Furthermore, the Auction House at the current stage of the game did not sell this item yet. So, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had to go out hunting for the ingredients all by themselves.

[Diced-Chicken Burger] (Consumable)

Use: Recovers 500,000 HP and 200,000 MP over 15 seconds. Can only be used when player is not in combat mode. If you eat the entire snack, you'll also acquire an additional 200 Strength Attribute, 200 Agility

Attribute, 200 Intelligence Attribute or 200 Spirit Attribute. The Attribute that you will acquire depends on your highest Attribute. Effects will last for 15 minutes.

Required Level: 150

The main ingredient for making a [Diced-Chicken Burger] was [Chicken Meat] that could be acquired by slaying Arrow-Tailed Chicken. Of course, the other ingredients were [Chilli] and [Flour]. [Flour] could be purchased from shops in the main cities. However, players had to hunt down the Arrow-Tailed Chickens to get their meat. [Chilli] could be gathered from low-level maps and areas. Therefore, the only problem the players had was collecting the [Chicken Meat].

Hang Ying Xue hopped onto Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet. The two of them flew straight into a forest and walked around in the forest. They were trying to find some Arrow-Tailed Chickens to kill.

Although these chicken monsters were rather common in this forest, they were scattered. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had to search around in order to find one. Therefore, the two of them did not get many of them, even after wandering around, killing Arrow-Tailed Chickens for about two to three hours. However, Zhang Yang was not bored at all, because he had the lady that he loved at his side, keeping him accompanied.

After walking for a while, the two of them heard the clashing sound of metallic weapons. They looked at each other for a brief moment. Then, they slowed down their Flying Mounts down and sneaked up towards the direction where the sounds came from. All they saw were two different groups of players battling against each other.

Zhang Yang was bored with what he saw. Such clashes were far too common in game. So, he had no reason at all to waste his attention on other people's affairs. He may try to get himself involved if he ever sees people battling against a boss. But PvP matches? Well, he is not that free to do something so pointless.

However, Zhang Yang tilted his mouth a little after observing for a little while. There was a group of 13 players, trying to kill another group of only

2 players. What caught his attention was that the two players were not faltering or losing the battle. Instead, they were holding up pretty good! One of them was a Guardian while the other was a Holy Knight. Both of them were holding shields.

These two players were both Thick-Armored type players. While the Holy Knight could heal better and protect their allies better than a normal Healer could, the Guardian also had an abundance of methods to defend himself. The two of them seemed to be working together like they had been doing this for a long time. It would take a lot more than just 13 players to kill them! This is what people would call a 'Dual-shield Team'.

Of course, having very powerful Defence would mean that the player had to forego on increasing their Attack power. That is the cost that one must pay to obtain a Turtle-shell level kind of Defence power! It was just how things work in an online game. Therefore, the advantage of these two Classes working together would be acquiring super high Defence while their disadvantage was that they would not have the firepower to finish their opponents off fast.

Ten Dusk, Guardian, Level 144.

Female Raid Covent, Holy Knight, Level 143.

These two Tankers did not belong to any guild currently. It was actually quite impressive that they could manage so well and they could still get equipment that were above average! Of course, their equipment seemed to have been obtained from dungeons. Therefore, they were just Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment. It was not considered as top Tier equipment yet. However, these equipment were already considered as some of the top mainstream equipment.

Most importantly, there were no high Tier player in the group of 13. Their equipment seemed to be much lower in Tier than the equipment of Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent. Therefore, they still could not kill Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent even though there were just two of them.

Chapter 714: Information For Sale

The 13 players were all from a guild called 'Contra'. It should be a small guild. Zhang Yang had never heard of it in both of his lives. He had practically committed every noteworthy guild to memory. If this guild was not in his memory banks, it had to be rather insignificant.

Although it would be best to come to this map after players have attained Level 150, the other Level 120 – 150 maps were crowded with players from all around the world. It would be almost impossible to find a peaceful spot to farm. Therefore, many players have begun running over to this map the moment they hit Level 140. As long as they do not encounter any Level 170 monsters, none of them would have to suffer at the hands of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game.

However, players must be of certain standard before they can survive in the new map. Monsters in the Level 150 – 180 maps were basically one Tier higher than the monsters in lower level maps such as Kandiya Grasslands and Aomori Moss Land. A Level 150 - 180 map was not the place for all Level 140 players to come and crash.

"Let's leave!" The two of them lost interest after they observed the battle for a short while. Zhang Yang waved a little and the two of them turned around and was ready to leave.

However, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent suddenly raced towards Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, without any warning! Meanwhile, the 13 players from Contra had arrived at their spot and rounded them up. That included Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, of course!

Female Raid Covent reacted extremely quickly and said "Haha! Now that my brother and sister are here, let's see, who's going to take care of who now!"

"There's just the four of you! We're still going to beat you up like pigs!" one of them who seemed to be the leader of the party said, "You bastards! How dare you humiliate my girl! There's no way that you're getting out of here alive!"

"Pui! Your wife's the one who grew an ugly face! Look at her! Her face looks just like the face of a monkey's butt! And look lower a bit! There's no chest! Look even lower now! She doesn't even have curvy butts! She looks like a prepubescent! You're telling me that you're still going to treasure her!? You pedobear!" With his foul mouth, Female Raid Covert had really made them angry enough to shoot themselves in the heads.

"Boss! Boss! Don't do anything rash just yet! He, he, he's Zhan Yu!" Well, the Phoenix pet had given it away. One of them could recognize Zhang Yang by looking at his appearance as well. He could not even finish his words properly.

"Zhan, Zhan Yu!" The leader's name was 'Boasting Swordsman'. After looking at Zhang Yang atop his Phoenix pet, he took in a deep cold breath and fell silent.

"Haha! Be afraid! This is our boss!" Female Raid Covert did not seem to know when to stop talking, "Just listen to me. Your girl over there loves to wink her sexy eyes at anyone she sees. Just look at her again! I can tell that she's not the type who would settle down quietly! You better find a new one!"

"Darling! I'm not that type of girl! He's humiliating me! You must get him to apologize to me! Or else you're never going to 'hmm hmm' with me!" Among the 13 players from Contra, there was one female elf that looked like a Spellcaster. She was acting all spoiled up on Boasting Swordsman.

"You shut up!" Boasting Swordsman immediately shouted angrily at the girl and said, "It's all because of you acting lewd all the time! Look at the mess you got us into! They were just passing by peacefully at first. Then you insisted on wanting them party up with them! Did you just have an eye for the both of them? You planned to have a 3P session behind my back, didn't you?!"

"What are you talking about!? I'm very loyal to you, okay?!"

At first, Zhang Yang did not intend to be a human shield for Ten Dusk and his friend. However, after hearing what Boasting Swordsman had to

say, he was infuriated. His face turned dark and he said, "Just leave... before I change my mind."

Boasting Swordsman felt awkward after that. Even if he had over 100 guts in his stomach, he would never dare provoke Zhang Yang. However, he did not feel so good after being chased away by the other people like a pest. So he forced a smile and led his party to retreat at once.

"Haha! Thank you so much, my brother!" Female Raid Covent was acting as if he had been friends with Zhang Yang for many years, though the fact was that he just met Zhang Yang a few minutes ago. Then, he scanned his eyes across the body of Han Ying Xue and said, "Yo, brother! Your girl is too damn fine! The front and the back are all there! The only imperfection is her face! But no one can see when the lights are out! The sensation of the touching and grabbing are the things that matter the most! Cover the face, bang the base!"

What the f*ck! What kind of thick-faced prick is this?

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Did anyone ever tell you that your mouth stinks?"

"A lot of them! But sometimes I just don't care! Hehehehehe!" Female Raid Covent spoke like a man of marked individuality. Then he rested his arm over Zhang Yang's shoulders as if nothing had happened back there. His 'wretchedness' was even higher than Fatty Han's!

"Zhan Yu?" On the other hand, Ten Dusk was acting much more matured and poised. His face seemed serious all the time. It was truly a wonder that he would end up with a wretched friend like Female Raid Covent.

Since his Phoenix pet had given his identity up to the others, Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Yes."

"This is weird! You're not as handsome as I am! How are you so famous then?" Female Raid Covent fixed his eyes on Zhang Yang's face. Then his eyes scanned Zhang Yang from head to toe. Then he continued to say, "But nevermind, I'm going to surpass you and become Number One in the entire game!"

What a thick-faced son of the b*tch!

Zhang Yang did not even have the intention to ask what happened between these two with those players from Contra. Well, he was 90% sure that it must have been because of that loud mouth of Female Raid Covent. He did provide them a great 'sample' right here, right now. So Zhang Yang smiled and said, "So let's part ways now!"

"Aiyoyo... don't be so hasty!" Female Raid Covent quickly stopped Zhang Yang and said, "We're here because of fate. Can't you feel my passion? I want to know more about you!"

"NO!"

"Come one! Don't be so cold to me!" Female Raid Covent was acting like a piece of chewing gum and glued himself on Zhang Yang. It was really hard to get rid of him now. "You even brought a girl with you to grind! You have my style! Unfortunately, that boring man over there is not interested in ladies. He even chased away all of my girl fans. Or else with my charm leaking about, girls would scream and shout in excitement while following me around!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely at what Female Raid Covent had to say. This fellow is really too good at acting friendly with strangers! He looked at Ten Dusk realized that he was frowning too. It seemed that this Female Raid Covent was really a wretched package of 'trouble' to begin with.

"Oh, right! Are you interested in taking on a boss with us?" Female Raid Covent suddenly changed a new topic, "It's a Holy Tier super boss! So, what do you say we try it out together? We'll split the loots fifty-fifty!"

This man did not sound trustworthy, though. Zhang Yang looked over towards Ten Dusk. Ten Dusk looked back at Zhang Yang and he said, "It's a Level 175 Holy Tier boss. He's called Ghostface Monkey King. Unfortunately, we can't beat that boss."

It made perfect sense. A super boss on an Open World Map would have a HP Recovery Skill. Furthermore, these two only had powerful Defences. They did not have much of an Offence to begin with. Even if Zhang Yang goes up against the boss with his {God of War Transformation} activated,

he might not even be able to beat the boss.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, "However, we only have two Healers and two Tankers. How much DPS do you expect us to muster? We won't even get past his HP regeneration!"

"Well, you can call your other friends along. But we're still splitting the loots fifty-fifty!" Female Raid Covent spoke like he was fooling around, "Only we know where the boss is. So, what do you say about this? If you go, at least you're going to get something. But if you don't, you'll get nothing at all!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "A Level 175 boss would drop Level 170 equipment. Even if those equipment have the Special attribute that reduces Required Level by 20 levels, you still need to be Level 150 to equip them. Let's make another deal. After we split the loot fifty-fifty, I will use two of my Level 140 Ethereal Tier equipment to exchange one of your Level 150 Holy Tier equipment. Think about it! You get 2 in return while I only got one. It's a fair trade!"

Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk looked at each other and nodded at the same time. "Deal!"

Yes, Holy Tier equipment are extremely valuable and rare at the current stage of the game. However, players could only wear them when they reach the Required Level to be eligible to wear them. It was not like everyone need to show themselves off in a Fashion Exhibition or what. Currently, Ten Dusk was Level 144. It would still take about two and a half months for him to get up to Level 150. Meanwhile, exchanging 1 Holy Tier with 2 Ethereal Tier equipment sounds much better than holding onto the equipment that they could not wear yet for so long. Other than that, having two Ethereal Tier equipment on them would definitely not be weaker than having one Holy Tier equipment on them. More importantly, they could equip the Ethereal Tier the moment they get it. After weighing the pros and cons, they decided to take the deal.

After they had struck the deal, Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk began to lead Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue to the location of the boss.

"So I see that you guys have not joined any guild yet. I'm just wondering, how did you guys manage to get good equipment like these Mythical Tier equipment?" Han Ying Xue was asking out of her curiosity. Of course, she was asking Ten Dusk. Well, Mythical Tier equipment can only be found in the Hardcore Mode of a dungeon. Meanwhile, the game developer decided to spice up the game for players to be more active in clearing dungeons. They made every equipment that players find in the Death Swamp to be 'bound upon pick up'. Players would not be able to sell the equipment they farm from that dungeon anymore.

If players would like to get their hands on Mythical Tier equipment which was deemed to be the most popular and powerful equipment in the current stage of the game, they would have to work their *sses off to get them on their own.

"Well, there are many Gold Parties out there. As long as they're willing to pay up, we will join in and help them clear dungeons like Death Swamp. Well, sometimes they even pay hundreds of thousands to us by the end of it. So after earning a few rounds, we have enough money to keep ourselves up to date!" Female Raid Covert cut in before Ten Dusk could say anything.

Well, a Gold Party is a party where some players with good equipment bring some players with weak equipment into clearing some dungeons. The price of having these powerful players running errands for the weaker players would be based on the number of equipment they could get. This is one of the tactics that the players came up with to defy the 'bound upon pick up' feature for the new dungeon Death Swamp. However, the equipment of players who hired others would not have equipment that were up to the standard. Well, in a 5-player scale dungeon, lacking one powerful DPS could make the whole situation very difficult to deal with. Therefore, there were only a few powerful guilds that were capable of forming Gold Parties.

Lone Desert Smoke also had Gold Parties. However, Zhang Yang and his gang would never waste their time on running errands like that. Well, they could handle everything by themselves anyway. So, Han Ying Xue had no

knowledge at all about what a Gold Party is.

The four of them went through a series of twist and turns across the mountains. After traveling for over 3 to 4 hours, they finally arrived at the entrance of a small valley. Flowers and other green plants were flourishing across the entire valley. The place seemed magically peaceful and green. By the west side of the valley, there was a lake of the size of almost one-third the entire valley.

The entrance of the valley was very hard to spot. Well, it was hidden in plain sight. Of course players would miss it if they were just flying by the place.

Therefore, the most difficult part about such bosses would be finding them in the first place. Otherwise, there was no boss in the game that players could not take down, not yet.

As they proceeded forward, they went along the side of the lake. After a moment of walking, the four of them arrived at a sandy white beach. There was a large ape, covered in coal-black fur, sleeping by the beach. It was spouting out flames from its nose. The blazing air current was so strong that the sands were swept up from the sandy ground as if there was a fan blowing the sand away, one wave after another.

This ape was at least 10 meters high. If it stands up straight, this ape should be as tall as a 3 story house. Its eyes were sunken deep into its face. Its fangs protuded from its mouth, making it look extremely ferocious. Well, that was most probably why it was called a Ghostface Monkey King, then.

[Ghostface Ape King]

Level: 175

HP: 17,000,000,000

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,154 - 200,154

Skills:

[Ground Hammer]: Shakes the ground with pure power and causes the ground within the area of 50 meters to crack and break. All targets within the effective range will receive 200,000 Physical Damage. All targets will be stunned for 3 seconds.

[Slam]: Slam onto a target causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. The Healing Efficiency of the target will be reduced by 50%.

[Beast Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

[Summon]: Summons the same number of Elite Tier Ghostface Monkeys, based on the number of players on the boss's Aggro list.

Note: Ghostface Monkeys were born to be ferocious, and they love to kill. They can get even more ferocious than you can possibly imagine to those who trespass their territory.

Chapter 715: The Ghostface Monkey King

"See? Isn't the boss looks powerful? Me and my depressed man here could not even defeat it even activating our Transformation Skills!" Female Raid Covent noticed that Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue was frowning intensely upon seeing the boss. So he spoke proudly.

What the hell is wrong with this guy? He was showing off about how he and his friend got defeated by the boss!

Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] first. Then he informed Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shots and the others about the situation. After using his [Party Summon Order], everyone was teleported to Zhang Yang's location. After seeing two strangers standing right beside him, everyone was curious.

However, Female Raid Covent widened his eyes at Wei Yan Er. Then he said, "What a cute loli! Come, I will bring you to see some goldfish!"

Wei Yan Er felt a cold shiver up her spine after realizing how Female Raid Covent was staring at her. She quickly hid herself behind Zhang Yang and said, "Hamsap1 uncle! My brother-in-law is here with me! You better don't try anything funny!"

Hamsap uncle? This little brat has been corrupted for real! She even knew the correct term to use, now!

Zhang Yang shook his head and pointed his finger at the boss. "Starlight, you'll be the tanking the boss when the battle begins. Is your Transformation Skill still available now?"

Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream had activated their Transformation Skills when they were clearing the Mythical Dragon Realm. They had not expected to encounter another Holy Tier boss so soon after their previous encounter. Truth be told, Zhang Yang could still handle the boss's attacks. Each of the normal attacks from the boss would only cause approximately 200,000 damage. However, it would be much easier to let Endless Starlight take the lead with his Inheritance Transformation activated.

"Roger, boss! And yes! Mine is still available!" Endless Starlight quickly nodded.

"How about you guys?" Zhang Yang looked at Hundred Shots, Lost Dream, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Still here!"

"Still available!"

They nodded as well.

"Very good! Then our DPS should probably reach up to 1,000,000. The boss has a total of 17,000,000,000 HP and it's capable of recovering 1% of its total HP once in every 30 seconds. That would mean the boss can recover 570,000 HP per second. Our effective DPS would be about 430,000 damage. Theoretically speaking... we should be able to take out the boss in about 70 minutes, give or take!" Zhang Yang said.

"Oi! Brother-in-law! Aren't you forgetting about us two?" Female Raid Covent suddenly protested.

"You Hamsap uncle! How dare you take advantage of me!" Wei Yan Er was not stupid. She immediately laid her protest on Female Raid Covent as well!

Zhang Yang laughed it off and said, "So, how much Damage Output can you provide, then?"

"... basically none." Female Raid Covent instantly squatted down and started to draw circles with his finger. However, he jumped back up and said, "But, my walking kill-joy over there packs quite a punch!" He ran over and locked his arm with Ten Dusk's arm. That intimate gesture could really give others a great chill up their spines.

Zhang Yang ignored that hamsap uncle and continued to speak, "There are two things that we need to be aware of, here. One, his [Ground Hammer] is an AoE attack. The impact will spread and stun anyone who can't get away in time. If the rate of the boss activating this Skill is frequent, it could become a threat that we cannot ignore. Furthermore, it will also decrease our efficiency of dealing damage to the boss. So no

doubt that the boss battle will be prolonged a little. Other than that, we must be careful about the Elite monsters that the boss can summon. There are 12 of us here. The boss will summon 12 Elite Ghostface Monkeys. I will, erm, Me and Ten Dusk will lure the monsters when they appear. Everyone will have to focus on clearing out the monsters first before we focus back on the boss!"

If there were only 12 Elite monsters in the entire boss battle, Zhang Yang could slowly kite the monsters around until they're dead. However, the boss would not just activate his [Summon] once throughout the entire boss battle. Each [Summon] would bring out 12 Elite Tier monsters. If the number of the monsters adds on by 12 every time the boss activates its [Summon], the situation could get out of hand, and the entire party would get wiped out!

"Hamsap uncle! You can actually contribute by killing yourself now! Then, we will only have to battle against 11 monsters!" Wei Yan Er shrugged and said, "For the sake of our party, you should sacrifice yourself for the greater good!" before Female Raid Covent could even stand back on his feet, he squatted back down and continued to draw circles with his finger. Then he said, "How can you underestimate me! I'm also a powerful Healer you know! I can even heal your breasts so that they would become F-Cup!"

F-Cup! Wei Yan Er raised her eyebrows a little. Currently, her boobs were borderline A-cup. After hearing what that hamsap uncle had to say, she was infuriated. She was on the verge of smashing that hamsap uncle with her battle axe.

"Alright! Starlight, be ready to move!" Zhang Yang quickly said. He wanted to prevent the little brat from killing Female Raid Covent before the boss battle even starts.

Endless Starlight just nodded. Then, he immediately activated his King Long Transformation. Instantly, he transformed into a gigantic King Kong. After thumping his chest, he rode his poor little wild boar and charged towards the boss.

"Hahaha!" Female Raid Covent instantly burst into laughter after seeing that scenario. "A King Kong of that size riding a wild boar! You're too much, man! Are you some sort of comedian in real life?"

Endless Starlight was also dissatisfied with his own appearance. Also, there was barely any hair on his entire body. Some strands were just long enough to 'protect' some parts of his body. As he charged forward, those strands would float in the air along the wind. After hearing what Female Raid Covent had to say, he felt depressed.

"Ooh! Ooh! Ooh!" Speaking of which, the boss was also an ape. After noticing that a King Kong was charging towards it, the boss did not falter. Instead, it stood up on its hind legs. Its eyes glowed as it thumped its own chest. Then, the boss charged towards Endless Starlight.

A loud bang was heard when Endless Starlight and the boss clashed into each other. The boss was extremely strong. It managed to ram Endless Starlight so hard that he was pushed a few steps back. However, the boss played a dirty trick on Endless Starlight. He took hold of Starlight's hairy crotch, grabbed, and twisted it!

"Haha! Starlight! Aren't you supposed to tank with the boss, not make out?"

"Hmm, the two of you are made by the gods to be a perfect match! Just get together already!"

"It's a wonderful year for gay couples, didn't you know!"

Fatty Han and Lost Dream were laughing out loud at him. Furthermore, Female Raid Covent was also making fun of him. Endless Starlight was filled with grievance and anger at the same time because of that. Why must this f*cking boss be so f*cking wretched!?

This Ghostface Monkey King must be horny now. Every single hit from the boss was aiming straight for the crotch of Endless Starlight. The worse part about it was that the boss seemed particularly excited while drooling. Its eyes were glowing intensely, as it was making the 'Ooh Ooh' sound repeatedly.

"Starlight, why don't you just satisfy the boss then?" Fatty Han was about to crack his own pot. "Maybe you'll have a bunch of Ghostface little monkeys by the end of next year! You can go out bringing them with you by then! You can defeat anyone or any god you like! No one will stand in your way!"

However, Fatty Han and Lost Dream were the only ones who were making fun of Starlight. The others were standing by at the side. The moment Endless Starlight had the boss locked on him, they charged out and launch their assaults on the boss. They went and surrounded the boss in their tactical formation. Those who could still activate their Transformation Skills began to activate theirs without hesitation. The moment the Red Dragon pet and Phoenix pets activated their Transformation Skills, the scene became glorious!

To reduce the Healers' pressure, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han rode their own pet mounts. They did not summon out their other pets as well. Meanwhile, the others also did not summon their Battle Companions that would only become a hindrance.

Meanwhile, Female Raid Covert and Ten Dusk were clever enough to understand the situation, They did not summon their Battle Companions as well. One of them was riding on a Black Leopard, charging towards the boss, while the other one was riding on a large Scorpion, joining up with the Healers in the rear.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Because the party would take more than just an hour to defeat the boss, theoretically speaking, Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all in throwing out his strongest Ultimate Skill. However, it was an unfortunate attempt. Before the dark mist could form into a dark skull on top of the boss, the Skill was resisted.

Everyone sighed heavily. However, none of them took it to heart. After all, everyone knew how low the success rate of this Skill was.

"Ooh!" Upon being surrounded by Zhang Yang and the party. The boss was receiving high values of damage. It instantly roared out in anger and

tapped its chest for a few rounds. Then, the boss slammed its hands onto the ground and created a very powerful impact of shockwave! It was like smashing a gigantic sledgehammer onto the ground!

Instantly, the shockwave swept the dust and sand on the ground along with it, as it spread out into the surroundings. The ground was cracked and countless of spiky rocks emerged from beneath the surface of the ground, causing a basic damage of 200,000 damage to everyone.

Although top Tier equipment had the ability to absorb a certain amount of damage, the Holy Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had on him could only absorb as much as 10,000 to 20,000 damage. Meanwhile, the others only managed to absorb about 8,000 damage, at most. Such a small amount of damage absorption attribute could do next to nothing for Zhang Yang's gang. Other than the Tankers who had Damage Immunity attributes, the others were basically sustaining a full 200,000 damage from the impact of the boss's {Ground Hammer}.

Those who had activated their Transformation Skills could still afford a damage of 200,000. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had boosted their total HP up to at least 20,000,000 HP. They would not feel much pain from that attack. Meanwhile, Although Sun Xin Yu and the ladies could not activate their Transformation Skills, they still had over a total HP of 300,000. As long as they did not die from that wave of attack, the Healers would be able to fill their HP bars back.

After the 3-second Stun Effect, Han Ying Xue quickly waved her staff around and made it her priority to throw her healing Skills on the players who had not activated their Transformation Skills. By doing so, she managed to prevent the boss from killing those players instantly with another wave of {Ground Hammer}. After activating her Inheritance Transformation, Fantasy Sweetheart's healing capability had increased tremendously. She was almost as powerful as Han Ying Xue in such regard now. The two of them combined their strength to heal the rest of the party.

Although Female Raid Covert did not seem to be reliable at the start, his awareness on which player to heal first was quite astonishing, actually. He

was trying to heal up those whose HP bars were still very low. Streams of holy lights were flashing across the wounded, raising their HP bars back to their full states.

Even though Holy Knights did not have the ability to heal many players at the same time like Priests do, but they excelled in single target healing. Each of them had their own share of advantages and flaws. The Priests would heal the entire party, while the Holy Knights would heal those who were in a more critical state.

After tens of seconds of healing, everyone's HP bar was back to their full health states, except for Endless Starlight.

It seemed that the tens of seconds of healing was the best that the Healers could do. In other words, the party would only be able to sustain the impact of the boss's {Ground Hammer} once every ten seconds. That was the rate of {Ground Hammer} that they could take on without being taken down. If the boss were to activate its {Ground Hammer} a little more frequently, then the entire party might get wiped out.

Fortunately, the boss only activated its {Ground Hammer} after every 10 seconds. The second wave of impact caused a heavy damage to everyone just like the first time. After some mental calculations, everyone knew that the {Ground Hammer} had 30 seconds of cooldown period. However, when the boss only had 20% HP left, the rate of the boss activating its {Ground Hammer} would be shortened down to 20 seconds, or 15 seconds short, or it may even be 10 seconds!

They could only focus their firepower for now. Even though the boss had a Skill that could recover its HP, but having the boss lose a total of 430,000 HP per second was a good progress, so to speak. Everyone could witness that the boss's HP bar was visibly dropping.

"Ooh! Ooh!" The Ghostface Monkey King was beginning to roar in rage. It smacked its own chest raw and screamed to the sky.

Instantly, 12 mini-sized Ghostface Monkeys appeared from all directions of the battle ground. They were charging towards Zhang Yang and the party while making the sound of 'Ooh Ooh Ooh'. They were extremely

agile. They would have no problem keeping up with mounts.

[Ghostface Monkey] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Stomps the ground and causes 50,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 3-meters from the monster. All targets will be afflicted with Stun Effects for 1 second.

Zhang Yang immediately commanded his Phoenix pet and charged towards the Ghostface Monkey. At the same time, he also said, "Ten Dusk! Get those monsters away from our ranged-combatants!" Zhang Yang was not very confident with Ten Dusk because he was an outsider after all. So he also commanded, "Hundred Shots! Support Ten Dusk and lure the monsters away!"

TL Note:

1. Hamsap (literally means Salty-wet) – means horny or perverted.

Chapter 716: Empowered Damage Output

After activating their Transformation Skills, the Red Dragon pet and the Phoenix pet had a 30-meter long flaming tongue. Although the amount of damage from their attacks were based on their Melee Attack power, their melee attacks were basically far enough to be considered range attacks. Therefore, Hundred Shots was standing together with the range-combatants as he was launching his attacks at the boss. After hearing Zhang Yang's command, he immediately nodded and turned his Red Dragon around. Then he commanded his Red Dragon to spit out a blast of {Dragon Breath} at the monsters.

With the advantage of having a 30-meter attack range, Hundred Shots was able to lure the monsters over to him. Meanwhile, he had over 20,000,000 HP upon riding on his Red Dragon. So he had no reason to fear, even if he is surrounded by a bunch of Elite Tier monkeys.

Ten Dusk had revealed his true power in being an outstanding Tanker. With a blast of his {Blast Wave}, he stunned all 12 monsters at the same time and began the process to get the aggro values from the monsters. 4 seconds after the monsters were stunned, the Ghostface Monkeys began to recover. Before the monsters could even do anything, Ten Dusk struck out a blast of {Thunder Strike} reducing the movement speed of 6 Ghostface Monkeys.

Because he had not yet created enough aggro values to surpass the aggro values that Hundred Shots had on him, the 6 monsters charged at Hundred Shots without even looking at Ten Dusk. However, that was good enough for them. The monsters could not deal any damage to them, yet.

Naturally, Zhang Yang had lured the other 6 Ghostface Monkeys on his side. He immediately kited the monsters towards the other 6 monsters on the other side. Well, he wanted to gather all 12 monsters in one spot first before he could begin to slaughter them up.

The movement speed of the Phoenix pet was extremely agile. It did not take long before Zhang Yang managed to gather all 12 monsters in one

spot. Right after the monsters were lured into place, Zhang Yang hopped down from the Phoenix pet and activated his {Thunder Strike} upon them. Well, his {Thunder Strike} is already enhanced. Not only could it slow the monsters down over a longer period of time, its effects were also much stronger!

However, even Zhang Yang was not capable of getting enough aggro values over a short period of time to pull the other 6 monsters that were pursuing Hundred Shots over to him. Fortunately for him, players and monsters were completely different in term of 'improvising' according to the situation. Even though the 6 monsters were currently fixed on pursuing Hundred Shots, Zhang Yang could kite the monsters towards Hundred Shots and gather all 12 monsters in the same spot.

As long as the monsters are all gathered in the same spot, then Zhang Yang and the others would be able to unleash hell upon them. Since both Zhang Yang and Ten Dusk had {Thunder Strike} to slow the movement speed of the monsters, there was no need for anyone to worry about going OT.

"There's no need for everyone to focus on the Elite monsters. Fatty Han alone is more than enough!" Zhang Yang said. Two Phoenix pets and one Red Dragon pet were the most powerful AoE attackers in the area currently. No one in the party could match their AoE attacks. Well, if that is the case, the others would be better off focusing their attacks on the boss. They should just let the 'professionals' handle the AoE attacks on the 12 Elite Tier monsters.

Legendary grade pets like the Phoenixes and Red Dragon had very strong AoE attack capabilities. After activating their Transformation Skills, they could become even more powerful than before! Each {Dragon Breath} could cause up to 200,000 damage to all targets within range. Not to mention, {Dragon Breath} could be used once every 2 seconds! Theoretically speaking, 25 shots of {Dragon Breath} would be able to empty out a total of 5,000,000 HP. With two of these pets coming together, 25 seconds was the time needed for them to wipe out every Ghostface Monkey within range.

As for Ten Dusk, he basically did not have to do anything.

"That's awesome!" Female Raid Covert immediately gave two thumbs up at the Phoenixes and the Red Dragon. Well, he had never seen anything like this before.

After wiping out the monsters, Zhang Yang and the others switched their priority back onto the boss and continued to launch their attacks.

"Ooh!" The Ghostface Monkey King roared out loud furiously. Those Ghostface Monkeys were probably its sons and daughters. Seeing them being wiped out right in front of its eyes, the boss was so infuriated that it activated {Ground Hammer} straight away. The impact of the Skill did quite a number on everyone.

For most of the parties in the current stage of the game, {Ground Hammer} was definitely a fatal threat to them. A normal player with a full set of Level 140 Mythical Tier equipment would only have a Maximum HP of 180,000, give or take. Even on a mount, they would only have 250,000 HP at the most. Meanwhile, normal Healers would not have the capability to heal as much as 300,000 HP over 30 seconds. The normal players would have died upon receiving the third {Ground Hammer}.

However, Zhang Yang had two top Tier Healers, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart. Furthermore, Female Raid Covert was deadly serious in combat, even though he was a little bad mannered. His performance in battle had revealed his literacy and awareness towards his surroundings. If he does not speak without his brain, Zhang Yang might have considered recruiting him into Lone Desert Smoke.

{Summon}, {Ground Hammer}! Holding on against waves of attacks from the boss, the party began to get comfortable and familiar with the attack pattern of the boss. The situation was no longer intense as before.

When players were battling against a boss in a dungeon, they had to make sure that they were always on point. They must know when to hit, when to retreat, and where to retreat to. Their movements in the battle would be strictly limited as well because of all that. Even if they manage to reduce 90% HP of the boss, they would get wiped out instantly if any one

of them get careless or act recklessly.

However, a battle against an Open World boss would be very different from battling against a dungeon boss. There were not many tactics involved in a battle like that. In other words --- numbers! Therefore, judging by the complexity of a boss's Skills, an Open World boss is not as powerful as a dungeon boss. Even if someone on the party screws up, it would only cost the individual player's life. That player's mistake would not drag the entire party down with him or her.

Players who die in such a large scale battle could be replaced by other players, against an Open World boss. If one player's death could cause the entire party to be wiped out, then it would become impossible for players to take down an Open World boss. That is just how the game developers have designed the game to be.

"You two seem to get the hang of it! You're both skilled and powerful! Why don't you guys join a guild?" Fatty Han asked out of his own curiosity.

Ten Dusk did not say a word as usual while Female Raid Covent answered straight away, "Both of us have work in real life. We only have a little time to jump in the game. Well, in a few more months, we're getting sent out. So, you get the idea. That means we will only be able to play this game while we're sleeping."

Sent out? That should be a term used by officials of the government department. Sent out could mean they are going to be sent over to certain states across the country to be local officials! Usually, people who get 'sent out' would mean that they have quit their jobs. If they quit their jobs, they would have more time to play. Now that they were saying that they would become even busier ... could they be working for the government as government servants then?

Looking at that goofy face of Female Raid Covent, everyone sighed. If this fellow is really going to become a local official of a state, there would be no telling what kind of trouble he would get himself into.

"Oi! What kind of faces are you showing me now!" Female Raid Covent shouted in a strange voice as he was preparing to launch his {Holy Light}.

The sacred scene did not suit his personality at all.

"Oh, right! My man, have you gotten the tickets I told you to get?" He suddenly tapped his forehead and asked Ten Dusk.

"Got them already. No worries." Ten Dusk answered coldly.

"Haha! This time, I'm going to confess to my goddess Luo Xin Ran. With my handsome look and my elegant way of speaking, she will definitely fall for me the moment she lays her eyes on me!" Female Raid Covent laughed like a pervert.

"Elegant way of speaking? That's more like an elegant way of spitting! Pui!" Endless Starlight was basically the same as Female Raid Covent was. His mouth was foul as f*ck as well! He immediately cracked a joke at Female Raid Covent.

"Luo Xin Ran? That Super Star celebrity Luo Xin Ran?" Fantasy Sweetheart stared at him with her eyes wide. She spoke softly, "Female, female something something, don't you think you're setting your standards a little too high?"

She was being courteous by not telling him in the face that he was being 'a toad lusting after a swan's flesh'.

"Who's Luo Xin Ran?" Wei Yan Er rubbed her nose a bit and asked. She seemed puzzled.

"Argh! Yan Er, have you not heard or seen Luo Xin Ran before?" Fantasy Sweetheart had been following the celeb gossip. So she revealed a face that suggested 'how could you not know about my idol?'

Wei Yan Er was being honest. She just shook her head.

"Luo Xin Ran is a singer who got famous about 4 or 5 years ago. When I was still studying in my university, my roommate was very obsessed with her. He even had posters of her stuck on his bed and his side of the walls." Zhang Yang said.

"Now, the entertainment industry is moving towards the direction of gaming. So, be it filming a movie, a series or making a music album, the

entertainment industry tend to select the environment in a game as their background sceneries more often now. Luo Xi Ran is currently doing her final tour for her concert. She will be hitting the game market soon after that!" Female Raid Covert continued to explain like a professional.

Since the first movie 'The Heart of the Knight' that used the background sceneries in 'God's Miracle' had been a success about a year ago, more and more movie companies were trying to get their shots in the game as well. The main reason was due to the fact that they could save a lot of energy and minimize environmental risks if they just take the background and sceneries from the game. Furthermore, the visual effects and special effects were much better than what they could do in real life. They could also perform a series of life-threatening stunts without having to worry at all. Everything in the game was virtual, after all. Other than that, celebrities no longer needed high-cost cosmetics to make them look good. They could just use the interface of the game to design whatever outlook they wanted. Therefore, the traditional film industry took a fatal blow to their gut. If they do not wish to move their *sses towards 'God's Miracle', the super high cost of making a film would be the very reason their companies would go bankrupt!

Those traditional celebrities were also starting to join the fame. However, the appearance of a person could be adjusted according to one's free will. As long as you can design it, you can appear with that appearance in the game. Therefore, basically, everyone in the game looked handsome and pretty. Therefore, being a traditional celebrity was not an easy path. Time no longer favored them. Only the celebrities with true talent in acting and singing could continue to make a profit like kings and queens.

After all, this is a new era where anyone can potentially become a celebrity.

Zhang Yang suddenly remembered. His company happened to have signed a contract with Luo Xin Ran. One of her concert tours would be staged in Zhou Shu. However, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu Wei Yan Er and the rest of the ladies that he lived with were not into celebrities. So they

did not remember much about it. Now that someone had mentioned it, they remembered.

The battle went on for an hour without everyone noticing. Because the boss only uses its {Ground Hammer} and {Summon} repeatedly, the party could not deal the amount of damage that they theoretically spoke about earlier before the battle. However, they still managed to reduce the boss's HP bar down to 20% entering the stage of 'Killing Cleave'.

In an instant, everyone took out their [Amateur Power Potion] and gulp it down. Then, it was time to unleash their madness upon the boss. Everyone was slicing and dicing like there was no tomorrow.

The Ghostface Monkey King was beaten up so badly that it was screaming in its own ape language. The boss also increased the rate of activating its {Ground Hammer} to once in every 20 seconds!

Because of that, the Healers were forced to carry a massive burden. However, that was not the limit of the boss yet! When the boss's HP bar drops down to 10%, the rate of the boss activating its {Ground Hammer} would become even faster than before. When that happens, the three Healers would have to puke their guts out if they want to keep up with the boss.

The {Glare of the Death God} had finally cooled down. However, Zhang Yang did not use it immediately. He wanted to wait until the boss's HP bar reaches 10%. The reason was simple. If the Skill could work, they would be able to kill the boss faster in its most dangerous state!

15%, 12%, 10%!

Throwing out {Glare of the Death God}!

Phew! A dark skull appeared right on top of the boss!

The Skill was not resisted! Wicked sick!

Because they had the advantage in numbers, Zhang Yang did not have to activate his {Shadow Clone}. With their current rate of attacks landing on the boss, it would be enough for them to fully trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} over 10 times.

"What the f*ck! What kind of Skill is this!?" Female Raid Covent screamed like a little girl after he saw the series of damage values popping up on top of the boss. He was so shocked that he could not even close his jaws! Each damage value was not merely tens of thousands or hundreds of thousands. They were tens of millions instead!

Under that kind of bombardment, it did not take long at all before the boss let out a miserable roar and died. Its gigantic body collapsed down onto the body of Endless Starlight, pressing him down, as if the boss was forcing itself onto him! The gayness of that scene was imprinted into the back of everyone's skulls!

Chapter 717: High Tier Territory

The loot that the boss dropped were quite satisfying. There were two Holy Tier equipment and four Ethereal Tier equipment. All of them were Level 170 equipment. Meanwhile, there was also one Skill Book and one Skill Point Crystal.

Because they had two outsiders this time round, Zhang Yang could not give the Skill Point Crystal to his party members based on their turns anymore. At first, Zhang Yang tried to get the Skill Point Crystal by offering equipment, gold pieces or some high Tier potions to the two of them. However, they seemed to know how valuable that Skill Point Crystal was. They did not intend to give it to Zhang Yang at all.

Hence, Zhang Yang let them have it, and he picked the Skill Book instead.

--- for Zhang Yang's party, they could still get plenty of Skill Point Crystals by challenging new bosses in the future. However, if the Skill Book contains some powerful Skill, then it could become far more valuable than just one Skill Point Crystal. So, Zhang Yang decided to take his chance on that.

The Skill Book was named 'Superior Force Strike'. The Skill could only be obtained by Warrior Class players. Because Wei Yan Er had never liked this Skill in the first place, she directly passed the Skill Book to Zhang Yang without showing any interest in it.

However, when Zhang Yang posted the description for the Skill, the little brat began to cry like a little bitch. She even cried and choked Zhang Yang, asking him to spit the Skill Book out and return it back to her. See? That's what we literally call a little b*tch!

[Superior Force Strike]: Improves the rate of triggering the next additional attack after you have used your {Force Strike} 2 times every time you upgrade your {Force Strike} by 1 level. Furthermore, the additional attack will be a Critical Hit.

Initially, this {Force Strike} was a rather lackluster Skill. At its level 1, this

Skill could perform a powerful strike on the target immediately, dealing 100% of melee damage with a 5% chance to trigger an additional attack. With each level upgrade, the rate of triggering the additional attack would increase by additional 5%.

Upon adding that up, even if the Skill reaches Level 10, there would only be a total 50% chance to trigger the additional attack. In other words, the Skill could only deal 150% additional attack to the target. Compared to the other Skills that could deal an additional 200%, 250% or even 300% melee attack, this {Force Strike} did not seem to be powerful at all.

Furthermore, no Warrior would add their precious Skill Points on {Force Strike}. It would be like having a donkey kicking your brain!

However, the outcome becomes different if a player gets this {Superior Force Strike}. Upon getting the Skill up to Level 10, the player would have over 100% chance of triggering an additional attack. More importantly, the additional attack was guaranteed to be a Critical Hit! Based on that alone, the player could achieve additional an 300% attack of the Skill's initial attack. The damage dealt would be instantly amplified!

Of course, the player would have to make sure that the Skill is fully upgraded. In other words, 9 Skill Points would be spent in order to do so. Or else, having only a 10% rate to trigger the additional attack would be pathetic.

Getting so many Skill Points would be a difficult thing for other players to do. However, Zhang Yang did not find it hard at all. All he needs to do is to kill a few more bosses and get a few more 'First Clear' of dungeons. By then, he should be able to collect enough Skill Points for that purpose.

"Wu wu wu... Stinky noob tank! Give me back my Skill Book!" Wei Yan Er filled her cheeks with tears as she clung on to Zhang Yang's back. Meanwhile, she was also weighing her battle axe in her hands, as if she was considering whether to use it or to use another powerful weapon to attack Zhang Yang.

Female Raid Covert felt an itch in his heart. He immediately spoke, "Little loli! Let go of that animal and come cling on me!"

"Little brat, time to look at the equipment. I can give you the equipment if they are Heavy Armor type." Zhang Yang patted the little brat's head. Finally, the little brat stopped mourning. She lifted her butt and went over to the loots. Because Zhang Yang had made a promise to Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent earlier on, he had Hundred Shots bring two Level 140 Ethereal Tier equipment from the warehouse along. Then, he traded 2 Ethereal Tier equipment for 1 Holy Tier equipment agreed on. By the end of it, Zhang Yang had succeeded in getting the two Holy Tier equipment into his possession.

Meanwhile, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent were content with the deal as well. After all, having two Ethereal Tier equipment currently could give them more benefits than having only one Holy Tier equipment. It was a win-win situation for both sides. As for the remaining Level 170 Ethereal Tier equipment, Zhang Yang did not care too much about them. He took two of them and left the other 2 to Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent.

Upon settling the deal, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent did not leave immediately. They stayed to look the attributes of the two Holy Tier equipment that they had given to Zhang Yang. Well, they did work their *sses off, taking down the boss. They wanted to see what kind of equipment the boss had dropped upon its death.

Wei Yan Er picked up a small and thin necklace made out of small white bones with her left hand while picking up another leather jacket with spots and stripes all around it in her right. Then she asked, "So which one do we look at first?"

"Necklace!"

"Clothes!"

"I want to see little Yan Er's pretty face!"

Female Raid Covent was instantly beaten up by everyone around him. After that, he went aside, squatted down and began to draw circles with his finger again, squinting through his banged-up face.

Wei Yan Er smiled and used the [Identifying Scrolls] that Zhang Yang had given her to identify the two equipment. Then she posted the attribute

of the necklace, first.

[Holy Bone Necklace] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +3,967

Strength: +979

Agility: +919

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 7,930 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 848 damage when being hit.

Equip: When being hit, there is a certain chance that the 'Holy Bone Defence' will be triggered. Reflects 20% damage received back at the attacker.

Required Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

This equipment was suitable to all Classes. Everyone was cracking their knuckles. They were eager to snatch the piece for themselves. Without wasting any more precious time, they rolled to see who could claim it. By the end of it, Wei Yan Er rolled out with a 94 points and claimed the prize.

"Hmm... my power to Curse has improved a lot!" The little brat nodded and she quickly put the necklace on. Although the appearance of a necklace that is made of bones was a little disturbing to look at, this little brat had a totally different taste. She found it nice to look at.

The powerful attributes of the necklace had left Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covert speechless. They had not even tasted the sensation of having an Ethereal Tier equipment yet. It was natural for them to be astounded by the attributes of a Holy Tier equipment.

Wei Yan Er then posted the attributes of that leather jacket as well.

[Shadow Killer Rhodine's Jacket] (Holy, Leather Armor)

Defense: +384

Vitality: +15,870

Strength: +1,652

Agility: +3,915

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 31,740 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 damage when being hit.

Equip: Shortens the cooldown for your {Vanish} down by 30 seconds.

Required Level: 170

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Leather Armor are best suited for Thieves and Hunters. However, because this equipment had the special attribute that could improve the efficiency of {Vanish}, it became obvious that this equipment would best suit Thieves.

After Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream rolled, the leather jacket was claimed by Sun Xin Yu. That leather jacket had really boosted her attributes a lot. Especially her HP amount, it was basically double the HP amount she had when she was wearing an Ethereal Tier equipment, which only provided her about 7,000 additional HP.

After they were done with the loots, everyone went back to what they were doing. Female Raid Covert was still trying to follow Wei Yan Er around. However, he was dragged away by Ten Dusk and the two of them left.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue continued on to search for cooking ingredients. A few hours later, Han Ying Xue had finally gathered enough [Chicken Meat]. However, she continued to bug Zhang Yang in order to accompany her while she cooks. After that, she had made quite a number of tasty spicy [Diced-Chicken Burgers].

The good thing about player-made [Snacks] is that they provide an additional boost. For instance, Zhang Yang could acquire a 400 Strength attribute by ingesting a snack made by a player. Well, having an increase of 200 damage in his DPS would be very useful for him.

Zhang Yang went back to his Little Merchandize Shop. Currently, he managed to gather a large number of [Crimson Blazing Essence]. However, it was still far away from being enough. Unfortunately, most of the players would just throw them away even after they get it from slaying monsters and bosses. They were just a burden for them because they had absolutely no use for them. After all, a player's inventory slots were limited.

Unless Zhang Yang largely increased the price of each [Crimson Blazing Essence] that he was willing to pay, or else the situation would stay the same. 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] for 8 gold pieces? Most of the players would not want to go through so much trouble just to earn such a small amount of gold. The time that they could use to collect 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] would allow them to collect more Herbs and Mines. They could have collected double, or even triple the amount of herbs and mines in the same amount of time. Furthermore, they could earn an amount of gold that would be ten times higher the amount of gold they could get with 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences].

However, the question was still the same. Once Zhang Yang increases the price that he is willing to pay for the [Crimson Blazing Essences], many crooked sellers would sense it. They would be able to realize the true value of these [Crimson Blazing Essences]. Then, they would take advantage of the situation and start buying them as well. It would be pretty annoying to compete with these crooked f*ckers.

Well, looking from a long-term perspective, when the second and the third recipe for making [Amateur's Power Potions] appear, the value of these [Crimson Blazing Essences] would increase tremendously. So, let the price be raised, then! Since the cost of buying these [Crimson Blazing Essences] would not be higher than the amount of profit he makes from selling the [Amateur's Power Potions], he could afford to raise it.

Zhang Yang increased the price he was willing to pay for every 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] to 10 gold pieces. Many players were motivated to gather the [Crimson Blazing Essences] now. However, other crooked sellers had sensed it as well. Some of them even tried to compete with Zhang Yang by saying that they would buy 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences] with 11 gold pieces! They were trying to mark the value of these [Crimson Blazing Essences] higher because it seemed to be a perfect time to do so.

However, Zhang Yang was not moved by their actions at all. Even if they were shouting out to the market saying they would pay 11 gold pieces or even 20 gold pieces for 200 [Crimson Blazing Essences], the price that Zhang Yang was willing to pay was still fixed at 10 gold pieces per set. Zhang Yang knew better than anyone, he was the only one who could make [Amateur's Power Potions] in the current stage of the game. Those crooked sellers would be just wasting their efforts, trying to spend more of their fortune over something that they could not use.

Of course, if they are patient enough to wait until the second and the third recipes for [Amateur's Power Potion] appear, then the value of [Crimson Blazing Essences] would increase even further. By then, they might get richer by selling them out.

2 days later, Zhang Yang had bought a substantial amount of [Crimson Blazing Essences]. However, a large number of [Crimson Blazing Essences] were sold to the other crooked sellers. Well, Zhang Yang was the only one who could 'process' these things. Those crooked sellers were just trying to buy as much [Crimson Blazing Essences] in hopes that they would earn something out of it in the future. However, when they were beginning to run out of capital and all that, they would be forced to sell those [Crimson Blazing Essences] to the Little Merchandize Shop. Only a few of them could really hang on until the very end.

After all, profit that can be touched and used is the thing that mattered the most for most of the crooked sellers. Only a few of them fools would actually want to try out some long-term investment.

Zhang Yang took out every single [Crimson Blazing Essence] that he got

from his Little Merchandize Shop and began his 'mission' to make them all into [Amateur's Power Potions]. However, when he was almost halfway making all of the ingredients he had into the [Amateur's Power Potions], he received a public notice announced by the system.

'Server Announcement: A new Territory has been spawned in The Plagued Land. The Territory Conquest will start officially at 7 p.m tomorrow. The location of the Territory will be announced 30 minutes before the Territory Conquest takes place.'

The second High Tier Territory had revealed itself! The only thing that remained a question was, which Region would be the one who claim this Territory to themselves then?

"Little Yang, are we going to join in?" Fatty Han immediately contacted Zhang Yang through their own chat.

"Of course we are! We're going to kill some players!" Wei Yan Er was excited about it.

Zhang Yang was a little conflicted. From the perspective of business, having one or two of these high Tier Territories would only give a player the same benefit. The player would not be getting more profit for getting two high Tier Territories. Zhang Yang was the only one who had claimed a high Tier Territory in the entire China Region. So everyone from China Region would have to use the Teleportation Circle in his new high Tier Territory.

Therefore, if he takes another Territory now, not only would he not be increasing the number of his 'customers', he would also need to pay a substantial amount of money to maintain the second high Tier Territory he gets. That would include the Teleportation Circle of the new Territory. That would be a disastrous loss of money for him to bear.

--- Of course, if the second high Tier Territory is claimed by another guild from China Region, then they would be affecting Zhang Yang's current business.

Chapter 718: Forrest Gump's Fortress

There were only a total of 4 high Tier Territories in the entire server. If Zhang Yang decides to take another one for himself, then the other Regions would definitely get offended. They would start stirring up trouble and messing things up for him. Zhang Yang would not be worried if only one Region does that. However, getting challenged by 2, or 3 Regions and having them work together? That would be a disastrous situation for even him, wouldn't it?

From that point of perspective, Zhang Yang had no reason to join the Territory Conquest. Furthermore, if he ever gets himself killed in the Territory Conquest, he would lose a large amount of Experience Points. Well, what's even worse was that if either of him or Sun Xin Yu dies, they would even drop the pieces of [Book of Revelation] that they were currently carrying!

After giving it some thought, Zhang Yang made his decision and said, "Yes! Of course we're joining! However, we're not there to claim the Territory. We're joining with two main purposes! Number one, we'll stop those Japan-Korea Region from taking over the Territory! Number two, we'll look for the other chapters for the [Book of Revelation]!"

Those who have acquired a broken chapter of [Book of Revelation] would definitely want to collect the remaining broken chapters of it. So, how would they be able to do so then? The best way for them to get it was to join some public war event, such as a Territory Conquest! All they needed to do was to look out for any players who resurrect immediately after they die. Those players would either be holding a piece of [Resurrection Monolith] or holding a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation]!

It could be risky, but it could be the greatest opportunity as well. So, why not take a bet and try their luck out there, then?

Fortunately for all of them, it would only take another 10 to 12 hours before all of their Inheritance Transformations Skills are ready again.

After all, they did activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills about two days ago. When the clock strikes 7 p.m tomorrow, they would be ready to join the Territory Conquest at their full strength!

Because joining the battle of Territory Conquest would not bring them any direct benefit, Zhang Yang and his party were taking things super easy. They also did not send any of their guild members over to join the Territory Conquest. If they do, the Lone Desert Smoke would be suffering an unimaginable number of casualties. There was no reason to sacrifice their own guild members, because their main aim was not to claim the Territory.

On the next day, everyone had rested well enough. They gathered at a spot in The Plagued Land. Meanwhile, it had been quite a while since the last Territory Conquest happened at Souron's Castle. There were many more Level 130 players currently. Although The Plagued Land was designed to be inhibited by the undead and Spectres, there were more living beings moving around on that map now.

Many players could roughly guess the location of the Territory. Most players were gathering at the center point of the map. They were just waiting for the clock to strike 6:30 p.m, so that the system announcement would announce the exact location where the Territory Conquest would take place.

Zhang Yang and his gang were still taking things casually around, At 6:30 p.m, the system announcement informed everyone about the name and position of the location.

--- Forrest Gump's Fortress.

Compared to the Territory Gateways, a high Tier Territory was much larger. Looking from afar, the fortress was full of steel barricades that made the castle walls look thick and impenetrable! The castle walls were at least fifty or sixty meters tall. The black and dark appearance of the fortress looked like a foul beast that could crawl out of the walls and roar ragingly into the sky at anytime.

Zhang Yang and his party did not go in at all. When the Territory

Conquest begins, everyone that is still standing within the area of the Territory Conquest would be teleported out of the vicinity. It was 7 p.m now. The server once again put another announcement to mark the beginning of the Territory Conquest.

'Server Announcement: Currently, the Territory Order is being held by the player: Savage Lord! There will be a special marking on the player who is holding the Territory Order. The player will not be allowed to leave the area of the Territory Conquest!'

'Server Announcement: The Territory Conquest has begun! Commencing the Count Down!'

Savage Lord? Was this Territory unlocked by the India Region, then? So, how did the Territory Order end up on the hands of that single minded man instead of the hands of Hourglass Figure? The reason was simple. She was a Hunter after all. Even though she was holding a Class S Inheritance, she would not be half as tough as Savage Lord who was a Guardian.

In an instant, the players were gushing into the Forrest Gump's Fortress like a tidal wave. Judging by how packed they were squeezing together, there were at least a million of them!

That's right. Less than 30,000 players took part in the Territory Conquest over the Sauron's Castle. Well, most of the mainstream players had reached up to Level 130 within just a month. It would not be a surprise at all to see more than a million players battling over a Territory.

Well, it was still early, though. If the players were given another half a month or one month, there would be more than tens of millions taking part in this battle!

After all, there were over 20,000,000,000 players from all around the world playing 'God's Miracle' as of today. Meanwhile, Level 130 was not that high of a level cap for the players to achieve. Look at Zhang Yang. He was about to break through the level cap of Level 160!

Han Ying Xue could not help but reveal a pale face. Then she said, "If there were so many of them when we were trying to claim Sauron's Castle,

we would not have made it, right?"

"Hmm... that's why having the Territory Order is not a good thing. Well, there is a saying... hmmm.... Yea, right! When the eel and the clam grapples, it is the fisherman who profits! It's hard to snatch the Territory order in the crowd and stay safe, as well." Zhang Yang looked at the arrow-indicator that beamed down, deep in the middle of the fortress. That arrow-indicator was the indicator that clearly showed the location of the player who was holding the Territory Order. There was nowhere for the person to hide at all!

Zhang Yang and his gang did not set foot into the Territory at all. Judging from the crowd that was gushing into the fortress, even if a player holding a broken chapter of [Book of Revelation] is killed and the broken chapter of the book was dropped, there would be no way that Zhang Yang and his gang could sneak in and get the item without dying. Meanwhile, the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] was 'bound upon pickup'. Whoever holding it would definitely drop it when the player is killed. As long as those players do not go back to their main cities, they would definitely drop the item at some point.

"However, that Savage Lord must have come up with some sort of plan before he is so bold to trigger a Territory Conquest. At least the players from India Region must have been persuaded to help him!" Lost Dream laughed and said.

"Little loli ---" a passionate and yet irritating voice was heard across everyone's ear. Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk appeared in front of everyone all of a sudden.

"You two again!?" Fantasy Sweetheart did not say it out loud. Ten Dusk was cool. However, everyone could not stand Female Raid Covent because of his mouth.

Instead, Endless Starlight and Fatty Han were welcoming Female Raid Covent with open arms. They even wrapped their arms around like brothers. Well, feathers of the same bird flock together after all.

"So, are you guys here to snatch the Territory Order?" Zhang Yang

laughed.

"Hehe, my luck has been great throughout my entire life! Maybe, by the end of all this, I'll be the only one standing. When that happens, all I need to do is to bend down and pick up the Territory Order! Then the Territory will be mine!" Female Raid Covert spoke without any sense of shame.

Everyone laughed it off. Well, they were currently free. So they did have spare time to chat a while.

However, just when everyone was laughing, the sky suddenly darkened and the dark clouds were beginning to move irregularly fast. There were also flashing of flames and rumbling of thunders in the sky. Instantly, the entire place looked like a doomsday scenario!

"Oh no! This must be the effect of a [Forbidden Scroll]!" Zhang Yang cried. Then he calmly said, "Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Fantasy, you three activate your Inheritance Transformation Skills right now and start healing! The rest of us, other than Witchy Snow, we take off our equipment!"

Zhang Yang immediately summoned his Phoenix pet as well and commanded the Phoenix pet to activate its Transformation Skill. Instantly, Zhang Yang boosted his Maximum HP up to a total of 20,000,000 HP! That buffed him up good enough to survive a direct hit of 3,000,000 damage from the [Forbidden Scroll]! He asked Hundred Shots and Fatty Han to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills because both of them still had their Phoenix pet and Red Dragon. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han could still command their pets to activate their Transformation Skills after that. They would have Transformation Skill-level power for over 3 hours!

Meanwhile, Fantasy Sweetheart and Han Ying Xue must not activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills at the same time. In other words, Han Ying Xue should only activate hers after Fantasy Sweetheart's Inheritance Transformation is over. They had to keep a Healing Inheritance Transformation Skill activated throughout the entire battle. Therefore, Zhang Yang made a crucial decision.

Why did he asked everyone else to take off their equipment? That was because the [Forbidden Scroll] deals damage by percentages. Although the effect of the scroll had a limit of dealing a maximum of 100,000 damage, it did not set a minimum damage to the targets. Even if a player only has 10 HP left, the Forbidden Scroll could only deal 1 Damage per second to that player.

Meanwhile, if a player's HP is low, it would be easier for that player to be healed. Of course, Healers could never take off their equipment. Without a high amount of MP in hand, they would not be able to heal up their party members even if their party members have a low HP amount.

Everyone had been through a lot together. So they were working together in perfect sync. They did what Zhang Yang asked them to without any hesitation. Now, Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart would be able to survive a solid hit from the [Forbidden Scroll]. They would only have to make sure the other six members of the party are healed properly, so that they could survive as well.

--- as for Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covert, they were totally ignored by Zhang Yang and his party members! Now that they barely made it out alive themselves, how would they have time to save others?

Boom!

The entire sky was scorched in a sea of flames. Countless meteors rained down from the sky. The entire scenario looked like a high budget Doomsday movie. It was definitely a spectacular scene to behold! Whether or not if the players are struck by the meteors, everyone was losing 10% HP in each passing second. Meanwhile, those who had more than 1,000,000 HP were losing 10,000 HP in each second. The damage dealt on them was not being reduced or weakened by any Skills or effects!

Fantasy Sweetheart and Han Ying Xue were busting their *sses trying to heal. Meanwhile, the others had taken off their equipment and were on standby mode to gulp down their potions. However, the moment when the [Forbidden Scroll] was triggered, everyone entered combat mode. When everyone is in combat mode, it became much more complicated for them

to take off their equipment. It would take about 10 seconds to take off each piece of their equipment!

However, it could make a huge difference if they could just take one of their equipment off before the [Forbidden Scroll] begins to rain hell upon them. One equipment would really make a large difference especially when their equipment are very high Tiered! Taking one equipment off could reduce tens of thousands or even hundreds of thousands HP off their total Maximum HP. In other words, it could literally mean that they could reduce the DPS that the Forbidden Scroll could deal on them by thousands or even tens of thousands of damage points!

The bombardment of meteors continued on for over 30 seconds. After the meteors were done showering, the entire fortress was left devastated! The initially fortified walls were broken down into pieces of rubbles. The entire place no longer looked grand and magnificent. Meanwhile, the players from all Regions were suffering heavy casualties. At least 90% of them were killed by that wave of attack from the [Forbidden Scroll].

Most importantly, among the 10% of the survivors, 90% of them had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills!

Truth be told, the Territory Conquest would last for 3 hours long. Those who already activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills would not last until the end of the battle. Unless, they take out all of their competitors while their Inheritance Transformations are still in effect. Without the support of their Inheritance Transformations, they would most likely lose.

After all, not everyone could perform as outstandingly as Zhang Yang who could take out a player who has activated a Class C Inheritance Transformation without activating his own Inheritance Transformation! Well, that was only limited to the circumstance where the player only activates a Class C Inheritance Transformation. Even Zhang Yang would be forced to kneel if he had to battle a player who activates a Class B Inheritance Transformation without his Inheritance Transformation.

"I wonder, who is the bastard who activated the [Forbidden Scroll]!"

Daffodil Daydream said out of her curiosity. Well, Zhang Yang made the right decisions and gave the right command to his party members. Furthermore, there were two very powerful Healers supporting everyone in their full strength. So, no one on the party was killed.

"Outstanding! Cunning but admirable!" Zhang Yang nodded and praised, "The player who used the Forbidden Scroll knew! If he or she ever used the Forbidden Scroll at such an early stage of the battle, that player could force most of the players here to activate their Inheritance Transformation! Meanwhile, using the Forbidden Scroll could filter and eliminate most of the lower level players to reduce the burden everyone has to bear on the battlefield when there are too many players! Meanwhile, two hours later, the Inheritance Transformations would all be over by then. From there, many more players will be eliminated because they no longer are powerful enough to hold on until the end. By then, if Savage Lord or any of his party members activates another [Forbidden Scroll], it would be perfect for them! They would definitely be able to secure their victory over this Territory Conquest!"

"Why can't we get more of those [Forbidden Scrolls] already?" Endless Starlight ranted.

"Well, there are already two [Forbidden Scrolls] under our possession for now. That's already a good achievement, you know?" Zhang Yang shook his head. Then he said, "Well, looks like this is a good time for us to head down there to check on the battlefield. So many have died. We might be able to get something real nice among their dead bodies!"

When players are killed in action in the game, they would drop 20% of their items. Well, look at the number of players who got killed during the meteor rain! When Zhang Yang and his gang looked upon the battlefield, all they saw were countless glowing things glittering all over the place. What's more were all sorts of potions lying quietly on the ground waiting for someone to pick them up. There were also quite a number of survivors picking things up from the ground. They did not even bother to attack the others around them at all.

However, players who got wiped out by the wave attacks from the

[Forbidden Scroll] were not that strong themselves. The items and equipment they dropped were not as good as everyone expected them to be.

Chapter 719: A Second Forbidden Magic

More surprisingly, Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent were both still alive!

Ten Dusk survived, because he had followed Zhang Yang's instructions and took off a few pieces of his best equipment. That included his shield which added the most Vitality attribute onto him. Meanwhile, Female Raid Covent put up an outstanding performance on utilizing his healing capability. Even though he could be annoying at times, well, most of the times, but he managed to heal up himself and his best pal Ten Dusk as they were showered by the meteors!

Zhang Yang was very curious about it. Ten Dusk did had removed a few pieces of his best equipment on him to reduce his own Maximum HP so that he could reduce the pressure on his Healer partner. However, he seemed to still have over 200,000 HP on him after that. He would require a healing amount of 20,000 HP in each passing second in order to stay alive.

As Holy Knights could focus on healing one target better than a Priest could, a Priest with the same Tier equipment as Female Raid Covent might not be capable of healing 20,000 HP per second. On the other hand, a Holy Knight with the same Tier equipment as Female Raid Covent could definite heal that much per second. However, not only did Female Raid Covent need to heal himself, he also needed to make sure that he could heal his best pal Ten Dusk! How did he manage it, then?

Did he have a Holy Knight's capability to focus heal one target at a time, while also healing multiple targets like a Priest?

This is quite a broken character!

Zhang Yang continued to ask more questions. After a series of questioning, Female Raid Covent finally gave up on hiding his 'secrets'. He posted a link to one of his Skills.

[Holy Blessing]: Blesses a target with holy blessing. When you are healing any other target in your party, the Holy Blessing will also heal the

target you marked earlier with the same amount of HP that you can heal on your other target. The effect will last for 1 minute. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

So that was it!

So, all Female Raid Covent needed to do was to cast a {Holy Blessing} on Ten Dusk before he focuses on healing himself up. One healing Skill healing two targets at the same time? That was just awesome!

This Skill was a perfect addition to a Holy Knight's Skill List! It could really make up for the disadvantage of a Holy Knight of not being able to heal many targets efficiently at the same time! However, the 30-minute cooldown was a real bummer. It defined the Skill as a life-saving Skill. Well, if this Skill is learned by a Priest, there would not be much of an improvement for the Priest in any way. Well, Priests were designed to be very powerful at healing multiple targets in the first place. Furthermore, their healing capability on a single target was not that bad as well.

Zhang Yang extended his sights further out on the battlefield. All he saw was that the battle was beginning to reach its climax. Many players began to hop onto their Flying Mounts and charged towards the fortress. They were headed towards the direction of that gigantic virtual arrow indicator! In a Territory Conquest, nothing mattered at all. The only thing that mattered was to snatch the Territory Order. That would be the only thing that kept the players from leaving the battlefield there and then.

"Darling ---" A cheerful voice rang out at them. It was Dusk Phoenix! She was riding on a snow-white eagle, flying towards Zhang Yang from afar. After landing on the ground, she hopped down and tried to throw herself into Zhang Yang's arms.

Female Raid Covent widened his eyes and muttered to himself, "What a pretty little lady!"

"Humph!" Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue shoved themselves between Zhang Yang and Dusk Phoenix. Both of them glared at her, expressing their seniority.

Dusk Phoenix quickly pulled over and stopped right in front of the two

angry ladies. Then, she began to speak with them in a low voice. Only god would know what they were talking about.

At the same time, the Hell Family were arriving one after another. After seeing Dusk Phoenix getting so close with Zhang Yang and his two ladies, they could not help but to feel depressed and angry at the same instant. Every one of them were glancing at Zhang Yang with murderous intent. If a stare could kill, Zhang Yang would have died over a thousand times or maybe, a million times! His 'little brother' was in most danger. That part of him would have definitely been sliced into too many pieces to count!

However, who wouldn't know how to glance? Zhang Yang patted the little brat's shoulder. The little brat was playing nice with Zhang Yang this time. She shoved her hands on both sides of her waist and stared right back at the players of Hell Family like she was going to swallow them up whole! Well, that was her favorite 'game' anyway.

Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Dusk Phoenix were talking among themselves. Zhang Yang had no idea what they were talking about at all. After talking on for quite some time, Dusk Phoenix turned towards Zhang Yang and said, "Darling, you have to help me! Help me get that Territory Order!"

"I'm not free!" Zhang Yang rejected her offer outrightly. His main purpose was to try out his luck at the opening stages of the battle to see if he could pick up the other broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]. Previously, the Lone Desert Smoke had the advantage over the entire Territory Conquest. However, the guild still suffered some heavy casualties. There were only a few of them left by the end of the previous Territory Conquest. Zhang Yang would not want any of his guild members to die for no reason.

It was getting harder and harder to earn Experience Points, nowadays!

"Dar---ling---" Dusk Phoenix began to sidle up to his body. Her actions sent everyone from Hell Family bursting in tears. The only thing they had not done were to bang their heads against a wall.

"Silly Yu, since we're going to kill some players, let's help her!" Han Ying

Xue pulled Zhang Yang's arm a little.

Sun Xin Yu did not say anything. She just nodded.

Fine! These two had become the Samaritans of the day now! Now he was the bad-mannered one! What bad luck! Zhang Yang sighed and nodded as well. However, he decided to kill every single one of the Hell Family players other than Dusk Phoenix. Well, his main purpose is to check to see if any of them could be carrying one of the broken chapters of [Book of Revelation].

--- even if they did not carry one with them, they should die as well! Who told them to stare at him like that? Furthermore, killing them would be a contribution to the China Region. It could also weaken one of the other Regions' strength. It could be deemed as a noble gesture to China Region!

The battle was getting intense. Players were battling against each other at every corner of the battlefield. However, those battles were completely unnecessary. Well, Zhang Yang saw a player from North America Region battling against a player from Africa Region. They had started battling each other simply because the player from North America Region was acting racist. He had actually called the guy from Africa Region 'Captain blackie'!

Zhang Yang and his gang were waiting out for the perfect moment. They were waiting patiently like fishermen. They took their sweet time, because there was no need for them to rush. The battle would go on for quite a while before things would start to settle down a little bit. Meanwhile, Dusk Phoenix was doing the same thing as well. She knew that there would not be a difference between obtaining the Territory Order 1 minute before the Territory Conquest ends, or getting the Territory Order right now. As long as she holds the Territory Order by the end of the Territory Conquest, she would be claim the Territory as her own. Furthermore, she would become the primary target of everyone the moment she gets her hands on the Territory Order. So, why put herself in so much danger when she could just sit back and let the others kill themselves first?

The intense battle went on. Countless players were killed, and they were

sent back to their main cities. The pace of the battle began to slow down as time went on. 10 minutes into the battle, 40 minutes into the battle, 60 minutes into the battle!

Players would just activate their Inheritance Transformation 60 minutes into the battle. If they do so, their Inheritance Transformations would definitely last long enough until the Territory Conquest ends. Furthermore, the players could accumulate EP, even if they activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills a little earlier. After all, EP is the essential energy that players needed to activate their Inheritance Skills. Without enough EP, it would be pointless even if they had their Ultimate Skills ready.

Therefore, after battling for over 60 minutes, most of the players in the battlefield activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. At first, Zhang Yang and his gang were just sitting at once corner, watching the battle quietly. However, they could no longer do that anymore as the heat of the battle had spread too far out. So they began to make their move.

"Noob tank, we should get into the battle now!"

"Cousin sis, let's go now! Kill them all!"

"Sister Sun, let's go out and play!"

Wei Yan Er could no longer sit quietly. She began to move and spin around, making noises like a little b*tch.

Female Raid Covent quickly came up trying to play along, "Cute little loli, come! I'll take you over to the battle now!"

Wei Yan Er quickly shook her head like there was no tomorrow. Then she said, "Cousin sis taught me before! You're the type of hamsap uncle that loves to trick little girls! You must be thinking of tricking me so that you can sell me away into the mountains! I'm so clever! How would I ever fall for that!"

"It's brother! Not uncle!" Female Raid Covent immediately tried to correct the little brat. He tried to tell her that he was still young.

However, Wei Yan Er backed off and hid behind Zhang Yang once again.

Then she pointed her finger at that hamsap uncle and said, "Brother-in-law! Beat him up!"

Everyone could not help but to hold their laughs. With this little brat around, no one would get bored at all.

90 minutes into the battle! 120 minutes into the battle!

About 130 minutes into the battle, the sky started to get blotted out by storm clouds, and the entire area became dark all of a sudden. Wind began to whistle and the ground was instantly covered in frost and snow!

"What the f*ck! It's another [Forbidden Scroll]!" Lost Dream screamed like a little b*tch.

Countless frost spikes emerged from beneath the surface of the ground and caused immense damage to everyone in the surroundings! Under the catastrophic rumbling, the entire fortress started crumbling apart. It was already a fortress with broken walls. With this wave of snow and frost attacks, the fortress had totally lost its form. It no longer looked anything like a fortress!

"This should be all the money spent by Hourglass Figure, I assume!" Zhang Yang praised. "The first [Forbidden Scroll] was to forced most of the players to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills. The second one was to ask everyone who had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills earlier on to leave the battlefield immediately! Good thinking! Really! Unfortunately, they'll need more scrolls to do that!"

Everyone rolled their eyes at Zhang Yang. Was he trying to talk nonsense or was he trying to be sarcastic? If they really had 10 [Forbidden Scrolls] in their possession, would there still be a point of them trying their luck here? They could just spam their [Forbidden Scrolls] without any hesitation. Other than Zhang Yang who could boost his Maximum HP up to 40,000,000 HP by activating his Inheritance Transformation Skill, no one could have survived.

Meanwhile, if Hourglass Figure finds out about that, she would definitely be popping her veins so badly that she might just die of heart attack. Well, in her previous attempt, she had spent a fortune and a lot more effort just

to get one [Forbidden Scroll]. This time, she actually managed to get two of them! So Zhang Yang was wondering, how much effort and money did she spend to get so many guilds in her Region to bring her these two [Forbidden Scroll] then?

After the second wave of 'Forbidden Magic Attack', players who survived the first wave of the attack by activating their Inheritance Transformation Skills were killed. The number of players on the battlefield had been largely reduced once again. There were not more than 3,000 players left!

Meanwhile, those who survived were basically the best among best, the elites among the elites!

Zhang Yang and his gang did not make their moves just yet. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were healing everyone back up. Currently, everyone had activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. That included Zhang Yang, of course. Now that each of them had lost at least 3,000,000 HP, even Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had to take quite some time to heal back so much amount of HP. Furthermore, Fantasy Sweetheart's Inheritance Transformation had already expired.

Female Raid Covert and Ten Dusk had also activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. One of them transformed into a void demon, while the other transformed into a creature full of spikes all over his body. He looked just like a hedgehog!

Void Walker Transformation! Steely Spike Transformation!

Unfortunately, those two were just Class B Inheritances! However, it must have been quite difficult for these two guildless players to get a Class B Inheritance for themselves. Well, a player with an Inheritance Transformation Skill would always be welcomed by any guild in the entire server. Not to mention, these two had Class B Inheritances which were extremely powerful as they were. Well, Class S Inheritances and Class A Inheritances were extremely rare after all.

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Fatty Han and said, "Fatty, try to get these two into our Sub-guild!"

Although there were still available slots in the main guild, Female Raid

Covent was really unreliable at this point, even though his skills in battle were pretty dope. If they straight away put him into the main guild, he might scare many girls and ladies in the main guild away! He might even do something horrible to them, so to speak. Meanwhile, most of the players on the sub-guild were elder players. They should be able to tolerate his perverted attitude, just a little.

Fatty Han and Female Raid Covent were both flocking under the same roof. The two of them should share the same 'interest' after all. These two might have become best buddies in the Sub-guild, one day in the future. By then, there should be two powerful players with Class B Inheritances in the Sub-guild.

"Alright, it's about time we show the crowd some nightmares!" Zhang Yang and his gang were almost done with their healing. Their HP bars were back to their full states once again. Zhang Yang pulled out his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and raised it straight up into the sky.

"Oh yea! Finally we're going to kill someone!" Wei Yan Er cried out loud like a crazy b*tch. She was the first one to charge into the battle.

She was holding a Class A Inheritance. Upon activating her Inheritance Transformation, she could fly in the sky. Rolling across the sky like a shroud of dark black smoke, the little brat had flown straight into the fortress. Her huge battle axe was floating along with the dark black smoke. It looked oddly spooky in a sense. Unfortunately, the little brat could only equip her powerful hammer when she is Level 160.

Chapter 720: A Chaotic Battle

Zhang Yang and his gang were putting up an excellent performance on the battlefield. They were like a hot knife cutting through butter. No one on the battlefield was able to stop them. They were basically being rolled over by a gigantic tank! They were screaming in misery begging for mercy while turning into white light and streaming back to their graveyards!

Because Fantasy Sweetheart's Inheritance Transformation had expired a little while ago, Zhang Yang had asked her to teleport back to the main city. If she ever gets killed in the battle, she would lose a lot of Experience Points. Most importantly, they were just there to kill players. They would not be surrounded by too many enemies at the same time. Han Ying Xue alone was more than enough to support the rest of the party.

Dusk Phoenix and her 'guards' had also followed Zhang Yang and his gang from behind. They took advantage of the situation and charged towards the direction of the Territory Order with ease.

It did not take long before they arrived at a tall building. This tall building looked very sturdy and strong. Although it had sustained over two waves of Forbidden Magic attack, the building was only half destroyed. It seemed that Savage Lord was using this towering building as his safe house to fend off attacks from his enemies.

However, those were just weak attempts from the other players. The parties that represented the top of the top had just entered the battlefield -- Lone Desert Smoke, Hell Family, Justice League, Crimson Rage and many more!

Well, those who survived this long had their Inheritance Transformation Skills activated. Furthermore, their Inheritance must be at least be Class B Inheritances. Those who held Class C Inheritances should have fallen by now.

"Zhan Yu! You've got your own Territory now. Why are you here trying to snatch it from us!" Hourglass Figure knew very well that she could not afford to battle against all these powerful parties. She had to see if there

were other alternatives to resolve the situation. Well, one of the main reasons was because Zhang Yang and his party was the strongest party in the entire China Region!

Other than that, Zhang Yang and his party should be the easiest party that can be convinced to leave. The reason was simple. Zhang Yang already has Sauron's Castle. It would make no sense at all if he tries to take another Territory for himself. Furthermore, it would be better that the second high Tier Territory does not fall into the hands of any other party from China Region. That way, only would Zhang Yang enjoy the profit all to himself.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "We're here just to join in the fun! Don't mind us, my pretty Hourglass Figure!"

Hourglass Figure almost popped her veins after hearing what Zhang Yang had to say. Well, who would not mind about the existence of a super strong party standing in the middle of the battlefield? Joining in for fun? Was that an understatement or a joke?!

Although she already spent a large sum of money to use two [Forbidden Scrolls], those scrolls could really bring some catastrophic damage to the normal players alright. However, it would take more than just a few [Forbidden Scrolls] activated together at the same time to kill players who have already activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. Even if she activates many [Forbidden Scrolls] at the same instant, those players might still survive!

For instance, Zhang Yang had boosted his Maximum HP up to over 20,000,000 Hp. Well... if Zhang Yang even activates his {Radiance of the God of War}, anyone would have to throw 26 [Forbidden Scrolls] at the same time to kill him! Or else, he could still survive like a cockroach! How insane was that!?

Hourglass Figure gave some thoughts about the situation and commanded Savage Lord, "Give me the Territory Order, now!"

Savage Lord did not dare to defy her, of course. He passed the Territory Order to Hourglass Figure and the large arrow indicator immediately

switched onto her. At the same time, everyone received a system notification about it. Hourglass Figure was now the holder of the Territory Order.

Hourglass Figure smiled vaguely and took a closer look at the Territory Order. Then, she suddenly threw the Order out into the opening. The Territory Order landed on open ground.

"Miss ---" Savage Lord and the others were begin to panic. Did she just throw away the Territory Order that they worked so hard to obtain in the first place? Not only had they busted their *sses to clear and unlock the Territory, the two [Forbidden Scrolls] that they used earlier on would have been for nothing now! They had almost spent every single dime in their guild account, after all!

However, Zhang Yang could not help but to praise her quietly. This b*tch was one cunning creature!

To hold the Territory Order now would be like holding a piece of gold while standing in the middle of a bunch of bandits and thieves. She would definitely be the primary target of everyone else! However, if she gives out the Territory Order now, she would lead the bandits and thieves into killing each other. When everyone is bleeding and wounded, she could just lead her party out and snatch the Territory Order back at the last possible minute of the Territory Conquest.

During the Territory Conquest on Sauron's Castle, if the three [Forbidden Scrolls] had not made the situation much better for the China Region, Zhang Yang could have done the same thing as Hourglass Figure just did. He would have made the same decision as well.

The black Territory Order was just lying on the ground quietly, there. The furthest player away from the Territory Order was just 40 meters away from it. Anyone who was on a mount or in their Class A or Class S Inheritance Transformation forms could have snatched the Territory Order from the ground within seconds.

However, no one dared to move a step now. Everyone knew, the first to move would be the first to go. Everyone would be aiming their 'guns' at

that idiot! Who would survive the bombardment from so many players?

Well, maybe Zhang Yang or God's Left Hand could after all!

Both of them were holding Class S Inheritances, and the both of them were able to hold a shield in their hands. Therefore, their Defences should be incredibly tough. Upon activating their Inheritance Transformation, the two of them would acquire a 40-time increment to their Maximum HPs. However, Zhang Yang was well equipped with both Offence and Defence. Meanwhile, God's Left Han was well equipped with Defence and Healing-Type attributes. Therefore, he was a little tougher than Zhang Yang. However, his Attack power was a little underwhelming when compared to Zhang Yang's Attack power. Well, at least his Attack power was a little stronger than Endless Starlight's.

Whoever who goes forward would die a horrific death!

From that moment on, the surroundings became dead silent. No one dared to take the first step to move towards the Territory. Everyone was staring their eyes out. They were hoping that some idiot would charge in and break the silence of the battlefield.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely. Suddenly, he made a move. However, he did not move towards the Territory Order. Instead, he charged straight at a party of 7 called the 'Undying Souls'. It was a party from the Japan-Korea Region. Anyone would know they were Japanese by looking at the names on top of their heads. Instantly, they became Zhang Yang's primary targets!

The 7 of them were terrified the moment they saw the 'monster' charging right at them. They could not even lift a finger --- what the f*ck is wrong with him? We did not even move for the Territory Order! Why are you charging at us? Did your brain just get flooded?

Other than them, the other parties were shocked as well. They had no clue at all as to why Zhang Yang would do that! However, it did not matter them at all. Just kill them! The more he kills, the better it would be for the other parties! As long as Zhang Yang does not attack them, nothing would matter at all!

The moment Zhang Yang acted, Han Ying Xue and the others followed without hesitation. Every one of them began to launch their attacks at the 7 players from the Japan-Korea Region, like throwing a wave of tsunami at them.

Judging from the looks of it, the seven players had quite unique and powerful equipment on them. They were either holding Class B Inheritances or Class A Inheritances. Or else, they would have been long dead by now. However, now that they had encountered a super powerful party containing three players with Class S Inheritances leading the front, they were forced to accept the fate that they were all going to be tortured badly to their deaths.

6... 4... 2... 0!

About 3 to 4 minutes later, the seven Japanese players were killed. However, only two of them dropped their equipment. Wei Yan Er picked them up immediately right after that.

--- there were no signs of any broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] or [Resurrection Monolith].

Zhang Yang waved his [Sword of Purging Devourer] that was dripping blood around as he gazed at the other parties around him.

Everyone single one of them felt a chill up their spines when their eyes met Zhang Yang's. They could not help but lower their heads. They were comforting themselves, saying that they were not scared of him. They just did not want to battle that insane maniac, because others would take advantage of them if both sides are heavily wounded.

However, it was really a sight to behold! Zhang Yang could spread fear into the hearts of everyone just by looking at them.

"My next target should be you!" Zhang Yang raised up his sword and pointed it at Longrich, Scholar Musou and their gang.

"Why us?" Ink Wave screamed like a little b*tch.

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "I just can't stand the sight of you!"

He fluttered his radiating wings and flew straight towards Eternal Flame's party of six. Swinging his blade straight at them, Zhang Yang looked like a dragon flying in the sky.

Longrich and the others quickly struck back at them. They felt so insulted in front of everyone! What the f*ck! They did not even get their hands on the Territory Order yet! Why would he target them at all? This Zhang Yang came all the way to a Territory Conquest to kill people just because he could not stand the sight of seeing them? He did not even intend to get the Territory Order in the middle of a Territory Conquest! That was just unacceptably outrageous!

Even though Longrich and his gang were quite skillful, they were completely worthless before Zhang Yang and his powerful party. It did not take long before they were all killed and sent back to their main city.

Right after that, finally, a party could no longer resist the temptation of the Territory Order lying, there waiting for them to grab. They charged in and snatched the Territory Order from the ground. There it went, the triggering of a chaotic battle!

"Kill them!" Wei Yan Er lost herself to her own excitement now. After killing Scholar Musou and the others, she had not have enough yet. So, she charged towards Captain America and the other members of the Justice League and launched her attacks at them.

Captain America and his gang had really came across an unexpected calamity now! As they battled against the Africa Region party, they had not expected this little brat to charge in and interrupt them like a hurricane. They could still survive if Wei Yan Er was the only one cutting in. Unfortunately, she was leading Zhang Yang and his entirely insanely powerful party members towards them as well!

Well, there was no way that Zhang Yang and the gang would let the little brat charge into battle without any backup. So, every single one of them followed her closely and charged at Captain America and the Justice League.

"Heart of Destruction, we'll help you get the Territory Order. First, help

us take out Zhan Yu and his gang!" Captain America made a crucial decision. If they have to battle against the strongest party from Lone Desert Smoke, they would definitely go down in no time. Furthermore, they were currently battling against the other party from Africa Region at the same time! They would never survive that!

"Haha! I'll hold your words to it!"

Instantly, a blonde man wearing a purplish robe began to wave the staff in his hand. A frost dragon appeared and charged at Zhang Yang and his gang.

Heart of Destruction, Level 152, Cryromancer, Male Human, {Dark Palace}!

So he is the one Spellcaster with the Spellcaster's Class S Inheritance!

"Let me handle him!" Sun Xin Yu cut in and said. She slid herself over to Heart of Destruction's rear in one split second. The two players with Class S Inheritance clashed head-on. One of them must fall, that is the only way the battle could end.

Zhang Yang wrenched his focus back on Captain America. Although he was eager to try out his skills with Heart of Destruction, Sun Xin Yu had demanded that she would be the one who takes the enemy down. Well, she was Zhang Yang's wife after all. Zhang Yang had no choice but to let her have at it.

Zhang Yang diverted his attention over to Captain America.

"Zhan Yu! You're a lunatic!" Captain America was also feeling humiliated like how the players from Eternal Flame and Undying Souls felt. What the hell! He did not even have the Territory Order on him! Why is Zhang Yang aiming at him!?

"Haha! Unfortunately for you! You're destined to die by the hands of this lunatic!" Zhang Yang laughed like a madman and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at Captain America.

"You bastard! Just wait till the end of this Territory Conquest! I'm going to command everyone from North America Region to launch a full-scale

war against China Region!" Captain America was screaming in rage. To prevent being wiped out by Lone Desert Smoke, he was forced to work together with Heart of Destruction and withdraw himself from the competition of getting the Territory Order. Not only was it humiliating for him, it was also so infuriating that his rage was enough to burn the entire heaven to kingdom come!

"I'm just worried that you guys might not come by the end of it!" Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Devastation} and caused approximately 1,000,000 damage on Captain America, "And if you're daring enough to come, I will make sure you and your people get no opportunity to retreat!"

Even though Captain America had over 10,000,000 HP, but he was unable to withstand such a powerful damage from a single hit for too many times! However, he immediately returned Zhang Yang his medicine. He raised his right arm up and threw a spear straight at Zhang Yang!

'-702,783!'

That was not a {Spear of Obliteration}! That was an Inheritance Skill of the Titan Inheritance called {Titan's Grip}!

[Titan's Grip]: Causes 250% Melee Attack of Chaos Damage to the target. If this Skill is activated when you're in your Titan Transformation, your Attack will increase by 10% for every 2 Titan EP you have on your EP bar. Can stack up to a total of 50%. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Chapter 721: Book of Revelation - Chapter 4

{Titan's Grip} was indeed powerful, but Zhang Yang's Defence was insanely powerful! Even though Chaos Damage could ignore Defence, the attributes of 'Damage Immunity' and 'Damage Absorption' could still reduce the damage dealt on Zhang Yang. The amount of damage that Zhang Yang received from Captain America had been reduced down to only approximately 700,000 damage.

Yes, the amount of damage dealt on Zhang Yang was not weak at all. However, if both of their amount of Maximum HP bars were compared side by side, Captain America would be the one losing out by a gap.

Furthermore, that amount of damage was not the highest damage that Zhang Yang could deal!

{Brutal Smash}!

Zhang Yang stunned Captain America and activated his {Charge Up Strike} straight away. With a swing that missed, he swung another stronger strike right into the face of Captain America.

Although Captain America already knew that Zhang Yang had such a Skill, he had already activated his Skills and Accessories a while back then to break himself free from Zhang Yang's {Blast Wave} and {Heroic Leap}. So he had to endure the 4-second Stun Effect and Zhang Yang's merciless strike right in his face!

'-2,942,073!'

Zhang Yang continued on with his {God of War Heavy Axe} and caused an immense damage on Captain America. It was an explosive damage that could be fatal to anyone during a PvP match!

"Bastard!" Captain America let out a long, raging roar. Then he began to whirl his heavy axe around and engaged in a fierce battle with Zhang Yang. Both of them had support from their own healers. However, {Destructive Smash} could cause a reduction of 75% on both of their

Healing Efficiencies. Because of that, the Healers no longer be able to catch up with the pace of the battle.

Captain America was holding a [Titan's Ripple] in his hand. As long as he accumulates 8 EP, he could fully recover his HP bar. Therefore, he was not too worried about the situation he was currently in. Although {Destructive Smash} had reduced 75% of his Healing Efficiency, his {Warrior's Will} was about to be done with its cooldown. As long as he can use his {Warrior's Will} to remove all the negative effects on him, Captain America could immediately recover his HP back to its full state.

However, Zhang Yang was not the only one that Captain America had to face. Felice had also activated her Transformation Skill! Felice was ferocious and deadly enough when she was in her Dragonhawk form. Endless waves of {Fire Missiles} rained upon Captain America as the battle went on. Although there was a 30% chance of the attacks being resisted, her attacks when she goes berserk were astounding!

Fierce battles were happening at every corner of the battlefield. That black Territory Order was either kicked or smacked about by a swinging weapon. It was flying around across the battlefield without anyone being able to get a grip on it.

Captain America was on the brink of collapse. His HP bar had dropped below 20% after Zhang Yang and Felice had bombarded him like hell with their attacks. The situation was extremely dangerous for him. If Zhang Yang could just activate his {Indiscriminate} and goes on with another powerful attack, he might be instantly killed with one single hit from Zhang Yang!

Among Warriors, especially Berserkers, when their HP bars are below 20%, 99% of them would be as good as dead!

He quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} and cleared out every single negative effect on him. At the same time, he activated the special effect of his [Titan's Ripple]. A golden circle appeared and flashed across from his head to his toe. His HP bar was fully recovered all in an instant! He cried in rage and said, "Zhan Yu! Do not be mistaken and think that you can do

whatever you like! Even if you can kill me, I'll still make you pay!"

"You're overestimating yourself a little too much! Don't you think?" Zhang Yang let out a battle cry. Then he steadily raised up his left hand and activated his {Glare of the Death God}.

Well, during a boss battle, this Skill had extremely high rate of being resisted by bosses. However, it was a different story in PvP! Every single activation of the Skill would become effective! A dark skull immediately formed right on top of Captain America's head.

"OH SHIT ---!" Captain America quickly flapped his wings, trying to escape after he read the description of the {Glare of the Death God}. He struggled like that was no tomorrow, attempting to survive for the next 5 seconds!

However, Zhang Yang swatted at the retreating buttcheeks of the flying American. Well, Captain America was not really lucky at all. Zhang Yang triggered the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} with his third hit on Captain America. That wretched dark skull right on top of him immediately, opening up its jaws and swallowing him whole. After that, he was left with only 1 HP!

The Phoenix pet quickly spat out its flaming tongue, giving the final blow to Captain America and ending his life!

Captain America's body began to collapse right after he died. However, right before he touched the ground, he suddenly got back on his feet with 10% HP left! He ran like hell, trying to escape.

Oh! There must be something on him!

Zhang Yang fluttered his radiating wings again and flew towards Captain America. Well, since Captain America's Inheritance Transformation was now inactive, there was no way for him to escape from Zhang Yang. Within one split second, Zhang Yang arrived at the rear of Captain America and he gave Captain America a good slice on his back.

Argh!

Captain America let out a miserable scream and collapsed straight onto

the ground. However, Zhang Yang was really surprised to see that this fellow actually came back to life for a second time! He came back with 10% HP left, just like he did when he came back during the first time! However, he dropped a piece of small monolith upon his second death.

That... that was a [Resurrection Monolith]!

However, this fellow could still stand up after he died! This must be because he was currently holding one of the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]!

Zhang Yang picked up the [Resurrection Monolith] and threw out his {Spear of Obliteration} at Captain America. The poor Captain America once again let out a miserable scream and smacked the ground with his corpse. This time, he no longer got back on his feet again. Instead, he turned into a stream of white light and got teleported back to his main city.

"Zhan Yu! I'll never let ---" His raging scream was cut off one moment right before he died.

A book was dropped from his dead body. Zhang Yang did not hesitate to pick it up immediately, the moment he saw it.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: -

Use: Combine this chapter with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5].

Such a pleasant gift! He dropped one [Resurrection Monolith] and a broken page of the [Book of Revelation]! Well, he was too generous!

Zhang Yang was filled with joy. He was currently holding [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3]. He could now combine it with the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] that he just acquired. He immediately put the two [Book of Revelation] chapters together. He saw a 10-second progress bar appearing right on top of the two chapters. A stream of holy light flashed across them and the two chapters were perfectly combined together into one.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 3 and Chapter 4] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: Everyone on the same party of the holder that stands 100 meters from the holder will acquire an additional 10% increase to their damage dealt. Same effects will not stack. If the holder is killed, the holder can choose to resurrect on the spot where he or she dies with 20% HP and 20% MP. This effect can only be triggered once in every 9 hours. Same effect cannot stack. If the holder is killed by other players during the resurrection cooldown period, the holder will definitely drop this item. This item can only be brought along by players, and cannot be destroyed.

Use: Combine this chapter with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5].

The effects had been enhanced! The amount of damage increased had raised from 5% to 10%! Meanwhile, the amount of HP and MP upon resurrection had been increased from 10% to 20%! Meanwhile, the cooldown period for the effect of this item had been reduced from 10 hours down to 9 hours! Sun Xin Yu was currently holding the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 8]. That being said, there should be a total of 8 chapters of [[Book of Revelation]]. Judging from the enhancement from combining two chapters, Zhang Yang could deduce that when they manage to collect all 8 chapters of the [Book of Revelation] and combine them all together, the final item should be able to give them an 80% damage bonus, and 80% HP and MP upon resurrection and 3 hours of cooldown period.

Zhang Yang had also deduced that the complete [Book of Revelation] should provide one extra special effect for whoever who is holding it. It should not just provide additional attributes. Things would never be so simple when it comes to items with the label 'Legendary'!

Hmm... killing players in order to search for 'treasures'. Zhang Yang and the gang had acquired a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] with ease. It was much easier than killing a boss! Zhang Yang was determined that when he ever see Captain America again, he should thank him and kill him a couple more times just to be sure that he no longer had any gifts hidden from them!

Well, there was no telling what Captain America would have in mind if he ever knew that Zhang Yang and his gang were treating him like a 'lucky charm' that would drop items for them! However, he did lose both the [Resurrection Monolith] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4]. He must be squatting at a corner, drawing circles in the ground with his finger.

So how had things gone between Sun Xin Yu and Heart of Destruction then?

Zhang Yang turned his head around and take a peek at the battle. What he saw was that Sun Xin Yu and Heart of Destruction were engaged in a very fierce battle. The two of them were exhibiting the skills and agility of Top Tier players. They were moving around, adjusting their positions while throwing blows of attacks at each other. Both of them managed to maintain the rate of HP reduction at minimum. Currently, both of them had approximately 60% HP left on each of them. There was no telling if any of them had activated their HP Recovery Skills or not!

Huh?

Zhang Yang was stunned by what he saw. Within his sight, there was a milky white orb of light shining on Sun Xin Yu, right above her head. It was shiny and highly noticeable! Zhang Yang could still see it even if he is hundreds of kilometres away from her! Did she activate some sort of new Skill?

He looked around and saw that there was also another source of milky white light shining down upon another player. That player was actually a member of Paragon from Europe Region. His name was God's Left Hand and he was the one who obtained the Class S Apocalyptic Knight Inheritance!

Could Zhang Yang now detect a holder of a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation,] now that he had combined two chapters of it into one?

If that's the case, all he needed to do is to defeat God's Left Hand, before he could get another one broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] then?

After he made up his mind, Zhang Yang flapped his wings and flew straight at God's Left Hand.

"Hmm!" God's Left Hand was a strong and masculine man in his 30s. He had blue eyes and blonde hair. Every equipment on him shone in the light. It was obvious that he was not wearing anything normal at all. He had a shield in his left hand and a hammer in his right hand. Unfortunately, the hammer was not a two-handed weapon. That had caused his Attack power to be much weaker --- of course, it was only much weaker when he was compared to Zhang Yang.

However, the attributes of God's Left Hand were more biased towards Tanking and Healing. Theoretically speaking, this player could have the most powerful Defence and sustainability. As long as a boss does not have a HP Recovery Skill, God's Left Hand could have soloed the boss without a problem. From this point of view, he could be much more awesome than Zhang Yang!

--- now, this is what a real cockroach look like!

From another perspective, if Ten Dusk and Female Raid Covent were to merge into one player, that would be the God's Left Hand! Well, of course, God's Left Hand would have much higher HP and Defence. Also, he would have a much more powerful Healing Ability!

It would be extremely difficult to find anyone on the entire server who could defeat God's Left Hand, especially when he has already activated his Inheritance Transformation Skill!

However, Zhang Yang did not falter. He had his most trusted {Destructive Smash} to weaken the Healing Ability of the God's Left Hand. Furthermore, he possessed an Attack power that was far beyond the Attack power of God's Left Hand! Even if God's Left Hand goes all out on him, he would still be able to deal more damage to God's Left Hand.

"Zhan Yu!" God's Left Hand rose up in the sky and left his opponent on the ground. He went up to face Zhang Yang head on. He said, "I don't even have the Territory Order now, so what can you gain by battling me?"

"I have no interest in the Territory Order at all. However, that broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that you brought with you, is something that I'm really interested in! I'll claim it for sure!"

"Hmm!" God's Left Arm was shocked. His face darkened a little and he admitted, "How did you know I have a piece of the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation]?"

Zhang Yang was not so sure at first. He had just wanted to trick him for a bit. However, God's Left Hand had unintentionally admitted that he had one on him. That confirmed Zhang Yang's suspicion --- chapters that are combined into one provided the ability for the player to locate the other missing chapters of the [Book of Revelation].

He laughed out loud and said, "I just guessed!"

"YOU ---" God's Left Hand was infuriated after knowing that he had been fooled. However, he did not charge at Zhang Yang like an idiot. Instead, he calmed himself and took a deep breath. Then he did not say a word. Well, starting a battle with Zhang Yang would only do more harm instead of any good to him. He was here to obtain the Territory Order, not to kill anyone!

Meanwhile, he also knew well about the reputation of Zhang Yang. If he really tries to kill Zhang Yang with his current Attack power... well, the Territory Conquest could have ended by then!

Initially, God's Left hand wanted to wait for the number of players in the battlefield to be reduced by a certain number before he could reach out to snatch the Territory Order. With his Defence and Healing Ability, he could definitely hold his ground until the Territory Conquest ends. Well, if Zhang Yang has come up to interrupt him, he would have no chance at all to snatch the Territory Order for himself. So how should he proceed then?

Chapter 722: A Fierce Battle with God's Left Hand

God's Left Hand was conflicted with the choices that lay in front of him. However, Zhang Yang had come up to him with a clear aim. He just wanted the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that God's Left Hand had on him!

In a blink of an eye, Zhang Yang flew up to God's Left Hand and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] straight at God's Left Hand with full force!

Clang!

The swing was greeted by God's Left Hand with his shield. He blocked Zhang Yang's powerful strike down and roared in rage, "Zhan Yu! Do not think that I'm afraid of you!"

"Chi chi cha cha... you really are a man of many words!" Zhang Yang was calm. He told his party members not to dwell on random players anymore, through the party channel. Instead, he told them to focus on finishing off the other 7 members of Paragon!

Well, Zhang Yang had absolute confidence that he could defeat God's Left Hand. However, God's Left Hand was not stupid. His main objective was to secure the Territory Order. He would break off and escape the moment he sees his opportunity. No one would want to die for nothing! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was determined to snatch the broken chapter of [Book of Revelation] that God's Left Hand was holding. Therefore, the best way to do it would be to cut off any possible routes that his target could use to escape. He asked his party members to defeat the other 7 members of Paragon to ensure that they would not be able to help God's Left Hand escape when the time comes.

Unfortunately, Sun Xin Yu was still engaged in a battle that she could not walk away from, with Heart of Destruction. Otherwise, Zhang Yang and his gang could have taken out their enemies in a much easier and

faster manner! After all, God's Left Hand was not made of paper. He was definitely not a normal character.

"Zhan Yu! You'll definitely regret this!" Having known that he and his entire party had been targeted by the Lone Desert Smoke, God's Left Hand decided not to dwell on his conflicts to get what he wanted. He decided to go all out on Zhang Yang and his gang.

"Haha! Then let's battle! You should stop talking!" Zhang Yang began to whirl his sword around, causing damage to God's Left Hand. His attacks were aggressive and precise!

On the other hand, God's Left Hand had activated some sort of Skills that was similar to Zhang Yang's {God of War Shield}. His Damage Immunity had greatly increased. Initially, Zhang Yang's {God of War Battle Axe} and {God of War Devastation} could deal a basic damage of approximately 1,000,000 damage. However, when his Skills landed on the heavily armored body of God's Left Hand, each of those Skills were only managed to deal approximately 600,000 damage! The damage dealt by Zhang Yang had been greatly reduced!

However, the attacks of God's Left Hand were even more pathetic. Even though he was also equipped with a Skill that increased 300% of his Attack, he was only holding a one-handed weapon after all. So he could only deal as much basic damage as 600,000 damage to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang did not have to activate his {God of War Shield} and he could already reduce the damage received from God's Left Hand down to about 480,000 damage just by relying on his 20% Damage Immunity attribute. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's Defence and Damage Absorption could further reduce that itch. So, each of the attacks from God's Left Hand that landed on Zhang Yang could only deal as much as 400,000 damage, tops. With all that, Zhang Yang only had to sustain one-third of the God's Left Hand's total damage he could deal on Zhang Yang.

However, that did not mean that he would lose for sure. He still had a legendary Tier Skill up his sleeves that he had yet revealed!

[Holy Knight's Tolerance (Passive)]: Every time struck, there is a rate

that your {Grace of Divinity } can become an instantly activated Skill. This effect will not be triggered within the next 10 seconds.

[Grace of Divinity]: Heals a target. The amount of HP healed will be 300% of your Magic Attack. Casting time: 2 seconds.

In a PvP match, having a Skill that would take a progress bar to chant and having a Skill that could be instantly casted could make a huge difference in battle. The chanting of a Skill could be interrupted as long as the enemies are given even 0.1 second to act on it. Therefore, a Skill or a Spell that could be chanted instantly would be the best and the safest of all. As long as the players are not impeded by any Status Restriction Skills, they would be able to use their instant Skills without a problem!

Although both of them were affected by the effect of the {Destructive Smash}, the basic amount of HP that {Grace of Divinity} could recover was 210,000 HP. Even though God's Left Hand only had 25% Healing Efficiency for the moment, he could still recover approximately 50,000 HP every time he activates his {Grace of Divinity}. Things were still looking good for him!

Of course, he would not be able to turn the tide of the battle for himself and his party members just by relying on that. Knights still had a Skill that could bestow upon them a short moment of Invincibility. When his HP bar is reduced to a certain level, he could just activate that Skill to clear out any negative effects on him. Then, all he needed to do was to heal himself as much as he could. Even though his Healing Efficiency had been steeply reduced during that 8 seconds of Invincibility, he would not be using his {Grace of Divinity} now, wouldn't he? Instead, he would be using a more powerful healing Skill called the {Divine Prayers}. He could heal up to 400% of his Magic Attack value with that! With half of the effect, he could heal up to 140,000 HP every time he uses it. So, God's Left Hand could basically heal at over 560,000 HP over the 8-second timeframe of Invincibility!

Not to mention that he was also equipped with other Accessories that could grant him more Invincibility timeframes. Upon stunning his opponents, he could take his sweet time chanting his Spells. God's Left

Hand was obviously plotting something wretched behind Zhang Yang. He planned to torture Zhang Yang to his demise by relying on his super powerful Recovery Ability!

Even Sun Xin Yu might be slowly tortured to her death eventually if she comes across such enemies! However, Zhang Yang's HP bar was way too long. So there was no telling that who would be the one who dies by the end of this battle.

"Zhan Yu! I've warned you! You're going to regret this!" God's Left Hand laughed out loud as if he already won the battle.

Unfortunately, {Glare of the Death God} had been used on Captain America earlier on. If it wasn't for that, Zhang Yang could have used that Skill to cripple this super tough turtle shell Defence. However, Zhang Yang did not regret using that Skill on Captain America at all. If he did not kill Captain America, he would not have gotten [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] and a [Resurrection Monolith] in the first place.

Zhang Yang had no interest to waste his breath on his opponent. So he charged out together with Felice and Phoenix pet. The three of them maximized their damage output and brought hell upon God's Left Hand. Although Phoenix pet was no longer in its transformed form, Felice's Berserk form was still in effect. The damage output of the three of them combined had exceeded that HP Recovery Rate of God's Left Hand!

"F*CK!" God's Left Hand's arrogance was wiped away coldly in an instant. Even though his Attacks had managed to reduce Zhang Yang's HP bar at quite a remarkable rate, but the two of them were losing HP at a very different rate. If the situation goes on like this, he would be the first to go.

Meanwhile, the number of his party members was slowly decreasing. They were being slaughtered up by Wei Yan Er and the rest of Zhang Yang's gang, like animals. So it was not possible at all for him to get support from his own party members.

"Zhan Yu! There is no beef between us. Why are we slaughtering each other? You'll need to use your Ultimate Skills to kill me or the other

players. We'll be giving exactly what Hourglass Figure wants!" God's Left Hand attempted to beg again. "So how about I owe you one right now if you're willing to stop this battle at once?"

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "Alright, just hand me the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] on you. Then we can shake our hands and make peace!"

"... Zhan Yu! You're taking it too far!"

"You're from Europe Region, and I'm from China Region. Isn't it the 'natural order' of this game for players from different Regions to kill each other, then? So just shut up and fight!" Zhang Yang began hitting in an even more aggressive manner. Upon activating his {Charge Up Strike}, he immediately unleashed his {God of War Devastation} causing a total of 2,000,000 damage on God's Left Hand. Even with all his super tough Defence, God's Left Hand was not able to hold up against such a hit for too many times!

After all, the equipment on him was not as good as the equipment on Zhang Yang. His initial HP was only approximately 500,000 HP. After boosting it up by 40 times, he would only have over 20,000,000 HP. In that sense, he was not on the same par as Zhang Yang!

After a fierce struggle, God's Left Hand suddenly made up his mind about something. He struck Zhang Yang with his {Sanction} and stunned him for good. After that, he did not escape. Instead, he flew towards the fortress as quickly as he could right after that!

Zhang Yang was not equipped with many Status Removal Skills. He would have to wait for 4 seconds before he could recover from the Stun Effect. Well, he would never let his 'target' get away. So with a light roar, he fluttered his wings and pursued God's Left Hand. Of course, he also brought along Felice and his Phoenix pet.

However, the movement speed of a Class S Inheritance upon activating the Inheritance Transformation was too fast for Felice and Phoenix pet to follow. So, Zhang Yang kept Felice back into the Battle Companion Slot. However, he did not have time to unsummon Phoenix pet. Well, pets

would be kept back to the inventory once they get too far from their owners.

The pursuit went on intensely.

God's Left Hand was filled with humiliation. With his Class and Inheritance, he was supposed to be powerful enough to stand up against Zhang Yang! However, his equipment was not as good as Zhang Yang's. He only had one piece of Holy Tier equipment on him right now. Furthermore, his Holy Tier equipment was just a cape which did not provide him much of a boost on his attributes. So now, he only had one option left, to run as fast as he could. It was a fatal blow to both his pride and his confidence!

It was really unfortunate for him, because he could not afford to die he was holding a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation,] after all. Now his plan was to gain a certain distance between himself and Zhang Yang. Then he would use his Teleportation Scroll to flee to his main city. The progress bar of the Teleportation Scroll would need 10 seconds to fill up. One hit between that 10-second timeframe would interrupt the progress of activating the Teleportation Scroll.

10 seconds! That was the timeframe that he strived to acquire!

However, Zhang Yang was only 4 seconds behind of him even though he started pursuing God's Left Hand a little later. He would never give up on God's Left Hand, now!

God's Left Hand was filled with rage because he had to run. Ever since he acquired his Apocalyptic Knight Inheritance, he had been acting as if he was invincible. How would he be able to stomach this? Getting his *ss whooped to the point that he has to run from his enemy! If this ever gets out to public, he would lose his dignity!

He kept looking back to check on Zhang Yang. Well, of course, Zhang Yang would be there tailing him! Both of them were holding Class S Inheritance, so their movement speeds were basically the same. The distance between them was maintained at a distance of 200 meters.

Because the person behind could adjust himself towards the target to go

for the shortest route, God's Left Hand did not dare to even take a turn while he was flying full speed ahead. He just continued flying forward in a straight line.

As expected, the situation went on for quite a while. It would continue on until one of their Inheritance Transformation fades. Therefore, the only problem was, whose Inheritance Transformation was going to end first. Well, if any of them fell from the sky, they would not be able to summon their pet mounts at all.

God's Left Hand flew higher and higher and shouted, "Zhan Yu! How long more can your Inheritance Transformation last? Be careful that you do not fall to your own death!"

"Haha! Mine will surely last longer than yours!" Zhang Yang did not falter. Instead, he challenged God's Left Hand with his words.

They two of them began playing a psychological game on each other. Well, whoever's Inheritance Transformation ends later, that would be the winner of this battle!

Flying higher and higher into the sky, they did not intend to stop at all!

The two of them had left the vicinity of the fortress. Looking from afar, both of them looked like two human figures flying higher and higher into the sky. Even if there were players down on the ground, they would not be able to see what was flying up there. The two of them were just moving too fast for any human eye to catch them!

'Server Announcement: The Territory Conquest has ended. The final holder of the Territory Order is --- Player Dusk Phoenix! Forrest Gump's Fortress is now officially a Private Territory. All players within the vicinity will be teleported back to their main cities immediately!'

The pursuit went on until the Territory Conquest was over!

Although Zhang Yang had left the fortress, Hundred Shots and his other gang would constantly update him with the outcome on the battlefield. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue must have made a sweet deal with Dusk Phoenix. They actually agreed to help that Phoenix achieve what she

wanted. By the end of it, she got the Territory Order and kicked Hourglass Figure right in between her crotch! Everything she had done up to this point had been for nothing! Well, at least she indirectly aided Dusk Phoenix in cleaning up the mess for a bit in the early stage of the Territory Conquest!

As long as India Region does not claim a high Tier Territory, Hourglass Figure would never suffer any loss in her income from the Territory Gateway that she was holding. Therefore, even though she was extremely unwilling to accept the fact that she had lost the high Tier Territory, she was not overly disappointed with the outcome. The only thing that she really lost miserably were the two [Forbidden Scrolls] that she used during the Territory Conquest. After all, she had spent a fortune just to get them.

Zhang Yang's Inheritance Transformation could last for another 5 minutes. He must be ready to descend onto the ground 30 seconds before his Inheritance Transformation would come to an end. Or else, he would become a meat pie on the ground upon falling!

He believed that God's Left Hand would also attempt to descend to the ground about 30 seconds before his Inheritance Transformation ends. No one would be stupid enough to let themselves fall to their own deaths and lose a substantial amount of Experience Points! However, if God's Left Hand's Inheritance Transformation would really end a minute after Zhang Yang's, that would give him enough time to leave Zhang Yang behind! Furthermore, if God's Left Hand is daring enough, he could even turn around and try to kill Zhang Yang!

The outcome of the battle would be decided in one split moment!

Chapter 723: Book of Revelation - Chapter 10

God's Left Hand was getting anxious. His Inheritance Transformation could only last for another 3 minutes. If he does not land in time, he would be falling to his own demise!

Of course, it had been a while since he had not engaged in battle with Zhang Yang. So he was no longer in his Battle Mode. Even if he really falls to his own death, he would be deemed as dying of 'Natural Cause'. It would not affect him at all. He would not lose any Experience Point or drop any equipment after he dies.

However, he would be resurrected on the spot where he dies, all thanks to the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that he was holding. Furthermore, the situation would be far more dangerous than he could ever imagine when he would only be resurrected with only 10% HP on him. A single hit from Zhang Yang might kill him again on the spot! When that happens, he would not only lose Experience Points, he would also be losing the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] that he was holding!

Damn it! Sometimes the items were little too good to be true. Well, if the broken chapter does not resurrect him on the spot, he could have released his soul to the Graveyard and choose to get resurrected there. 10 minutes would be required for a player to be resurrected at a graveyard. He could go to the Action House to deplete that amount of time.

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes!

God's Left Hand could no longer risk it anymore. He had to descend to the ground now. He could only hope that he could use the trees of the forest to cover his tracks. His best bet was to attempt to vanish from Zhang Yang's sight. After flying low in the forest for a few seconds, his Inheritance Transformation had finally ended. He instantly transformed from being a 'god' back to a human.

God's Left Hand quickly took out his Teleportation Scroll and hid

himself in the surroundings. A small teleportation circle was formed right underneath his feet. He could get himself out of the god-forsaken place after 10 seconds of activation. Meanwhile, he sworn that he would gather the best men in his organization and hunt every single member of the Lone Desert Smoke whenever they are alone. He wanted Zhang Yang to pay for what he did to him!

9, 8, 7... 3!

"Were you waiting for me?"

Just when God's Left Hand was beginning to feel relieved, he heard the annoying and familiar voice across his ears. At the same time, a blade came down on his neck.

God damn it!

God's Left Hand could only activate his {Sacred Block} to block Zhang Yang's attack. He had to interrupt the teleportation circle that was almost formed. Or else, with Zhang Yang's current Attack power, especially when he is still in his transformed form, he could have instantly taken God's Left Hand out with one single swing of his sword! Furthermore, once a player is attacked while the teleportation circle was forming, the process would be interrupted.

However, this {Sacred Block} was a little different than expected!

{Block} allowed players to have 100% of blocking Physical Damage from the enemies. Meanwhile, {Sacred Block} only provide players 50% chance to block both Physical Damage and Magic Damage from enemies. It all depended one's luck of activating this Skill successfully. Obviously, he might have done something bad in his life to deserve such an unlucky fate!

'249,830!'

As the blade slit through his body armor, God's Left Hand was heavily wounded again and his HP bar had dropped down to 20% left, putting him into his 'Killing Cleave' stage.

"Zhan Yu! I swear I will come back and kill you! Just wait and see!" God's

Left Hand knew that he had no chance at all to run away now. So he sulked and let out a raging roar.

"I'll be waiting for you!" Zhang Yang said. Meanwhile, his Rage Bar had hit its maximum cap and Zhang Yang activated his {Killing Cleave} without any hesitation at all.

'-1,161,022!'

God's Life Hand instantly received a total of damage that exceeded a million! He let out an 'Argh!' and collapsed onto the ground. However, he came back to life with 10% HP bar, immediately right after that. Zhang Yang was well prepared for that. Upon the 1-second global cooldown of all his Skills, he struck out with his {God of War Devastation} to end the battle at that instant. Well, the impact of his {God of War Devastation} was so oppressive that he left a large hole right in the middle of God's Left Hand's chest. Blood was oozing out madly right from his chest wound. Once again, God's Left Hand collapsed on the ground and stayed dead. After dropping the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation], he no longer came back to life.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 10] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: -

Use: Combine this item with the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 9].

Chapter 10? Furthermore, it did not mention anything about a chapter 11. That being said, it was now confirmed that there would only be 10 chapters of [Book of Revelation].

Very well! With Sun Xin Yu holding one broken chapter of the book, Zhang Yang now had over 4 chapters of the [Book of Revelation] in his possession. More importantly, he had acquired two consecutive chapters that he could combine them into one. He had obtained the ability to locate the other missing chapters of the [Book of Revelation]. That has made it much easier for him to collect the remaining ones!

God's Left Hand, Captain America. Both of them had been really good people today. Zhang Yang would never forget about their 'goodwill'.

That gratitude echoed through deeply into Zhang Yang's heart.

If God's Left Hand and Captain America could only knew what he was thinking now, they could have gone mad to point that their noses would become crooked! They would and hunt Zhang Yang down and eat his heart out.

Now that the Territory Conquest was over, Zhang Yang used his teleportation scroll to get back to Sauron's Castle. While Han Ying Xue and the others were chatting casually, they saw Zhang Yang returning. So, they began to ask Zhang Yang if he came back with any prizes worth checking out.

Zhang Yang revealed the description for the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3 and Chapter 4] so that everyone on his party could see and admire them.

"So when you get all 10 chapters of it, you can resurrect yourself with full HP bar once every hour, I assume? Little Yang, did you just believe in Brother Chun1 again?"

"Well, if boss really believes in Brother Chun again, he should be able to resurrect himself with full HP whenever he wants! Since boss needs to wait for a cooldown period before he can resurrect himself again, I'm going to say that boss is only believing in Brother Ceng2!"

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight partnered up to tease Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang only smiled at them. However, he also saw that Female Raid Covent and Ten Dusk were also there, trying to blend in with them. He turned to stare at them.

"Hehe!" Female Raid Covent came up to Zhang Yang and started acting like his best pal again. Then he said, "I've decided to get myself to know more about the little loli and be friends with her! So, I joined your guild! So are you touched to hear my decision? Did you feel so excited that you're about to cry? With me joining your guild, the entire world will tremble in fear!"

"Hmm! Yes! It's the fear of disgust!"

Wei Yan Er was spitting and sticking out her tongue at Female Raid Covent. Then she said, "I'm never going to befriend you, hamsap uncle! My brother-in-law! Beat him up!"

Everyone was laughing the two of them. With this 'weird and hamsap uncle' in their club, their party became merrier than before now.

Captain America and God's Left Hand had also began launching their attacks on the Lone Desert Smoke. However, they were only capable of attacking the guild's members. Zhang Yang was undaunted by their pathetic attempts. If they would like a fight, he would always be ready for them. So, who should be the ones scared now? For the next few days, the two sides had suffered heavy casualties. It affected them all so badly that they could not progress with their level grinding at all. It did not take long before they came to an agreement to cease fire on each other.

As more players were reaching Level 150, more players became capable of venturing into the Level 150 – 180 maps. In just a short period of time, another two high Tier Territories were unlocked. Therefore, another two Territory Conquests happened right after that.

Zhang Yang and his gang went to join in the fun as usual. However, Zhang Yang did not notice any milky light shining upon anyone across the battlefield. Zhang Yang and his party members simply left then, since there was no reason for them to stay. Well, they had no desire to snatch the Territory Order after all. So when they knew that there were no broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] found in the vicinity, they had no reason to stay at all. If they ever get themselves killed, they would only lose a substantial amount of Experience Points.

Furthermore, using that 3 hours to kill some monsters would earn themselves quite a tremendous amount of Experience Points. So, why should they waste their time in a Territory Conquest that does nothing beneficial for them, then?

By the end of it, the two high Tier Territories had been claimed. Each of them was claimed by Savage Lord from the India Region and Dark Palace from the America Region. That Hourglass figure was really a rich b*tch.

While they were claiming Cynthia's Town, she actually used another two [Forbidden Scrolls]!

Well, one of the main reasons was because the Lone Desert Smoke and the Hell Family did not join any of the two Territory Conquests. In the most crucial moment of that Territory Conquest, Hourglass Figure did not hold back at all. She even threw out the two [Forbidden Scrolls] without any hesitation, even though she failed previously. By doing so, they managed to secure the Territory Order and claim victory over the Territory Conquest in Cynthia's Town. Meanwhile, Dark Palace had also used the same tactic. He also used [Forbidden Scrolls] and secured the Territory Order in the other Territory Conquest.

After that, all four high Tier Territories had been revealed to the public. They were known as Sauron's Castle, Forrest Gump's Fortress, Cynthia's Town and White Horse Bay. So, the next big event that was going to happen in the game would be marching into the 'Anthylor The Holy City'. Well, no one would be able to conquer that place. Meanwhile, players would be able to bind themselves to the Teleportation Circle on that site. Therefore, even though there were four Regions who did not get to conquer any high Tier Territory, they need not have to worry at all. They could still bind themselves to the Teleportation Circle in the Holy City when they manage to reach Level 180.

Zhang Yang and his gang were busting their *sses, trying to get their levels up as quickly as they could. Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were trying extra hard. The two of them could only equip the equipment that they obtained earlier on when they reach Level 160. Therefore, they were very motivated to grind their levels. However, it was really difficult to find a good spot to farm. Well, not all monsters would give players a substantial amount of Experience Points after they are slain.

After more than a month of hardship on grinding their levels, Zhang Yang finally became the first to reach Level 160 in the entire server.

After switching to his [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets], Zhang Yang's HP had finally exceeded 1,000,000, under the boost of his {Vitality Aura}. Now, he had over 1,050,000 HP! It was a terrifying amount of HP for a player to

have. If he changes his name, other players might mistake him as a boss in the Open World Map!

Other than that, his attack had reached up to the range of 115,409 - 137,489 damage. With each attack reaching over 100,000 damage, Zhang Yang would be capable of killing a full HP player of the same level as him who is wearing a set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, with a single swing of his sword.

Upon reaching Level 160, Zhang Yang had also acquired an additional Skill Point. So, he added the Skill Point to his {Shadow Clone}. After adding the Skill up to Level 10, he would focus on adding his Skill Points to his {Force Strike}. Well, that Skill had become worthy of his investment after it was enhanced into {Superior Force Strike}.

Zhang Yang went to see Ares The God of War to learn another new Skill. Well, he could not escape being lectured on why he had been improving his Strength so slowly. After that, he had finally acquired a new God of War Inheritance Skill for reaching Level 160.

[Tribulation]: When struck, reflects the same amount of damage you receive back to the attacker. Last for 10 minutes. Cooldown: 2 hours. Required: 10 God of War Energy Points.

Although the cooldown period of the Skill was stated as 2 hours, the Inheritance Transformation Skill could only last for 2 hours as well. In other words, he could only use this Skill once, after activating his Inheritance Transformation. However, this Skill could make his immensely powerful, even though it could only last for 10 minutes. Just imagine this. When he is surrounded by his enemies, the amount of damage he receives from his enemies would be reflected back right at his enemies! Furthermore, he could also strike his enemies with {God of War's Crushing Strike}. His Phoenix pet and Felice would be there to spam their AoE attacks on his enemies as well. By the end of it, it would be difficult to say who would be the one cornered!

Meanwhile, on the second day after Zhang Yang reached Level 160, the officials made an announcement that the 'Spectre Invasion' arc had been

activated. A whole new historic chapter was waiting for the players to explore.

The background theme of 'God's Miracle' had always been about Spectre and Demons invading the world. All races must rise together to go up against the invasion. At the current stage of the game, the Spectre had created a new secret weapon and they were just one step closer to launching the most violent attacks on the alliances that were formed to protect the world.

After the 'Spectre Invasion' patch was released, there were countless signs of Spectre activities all around the main cities, and also the villages, small towns and fortresses. However, those were just signs that came before a large-scale Spectre Invasion. They were designed and placed across the entire server just to set up the mood for the players.

TL Note:

1. Brother Chun: A term derived to refer to some figure that you could trust to ensure that your 'dream' will come true.
2. Bother Ceng: A term used to make fun of other people on the internet after the term 'Brother Chun' was created.

Chapter 724: The Spectres Invade

As for what had happened in his past life, Zhang Yang recalled that when the Specter Invasion started, he was only Level 50 or so. He could only be a side-character, killing random small minions at the side of the map, while the other "heroes" charged into the real fight with Angus, Lord of the Seven Spectre King. While others had face trouble fighting him when they were already higher levels than he was, Zhang Yang could not even set foot in the fight! It might be a surreal fantasy, but the truth was factual, a Celestial tier boss, Angus had descended down to the human realm and brought the doomsday with him!

Even though each major city should have their own Celestial tier boss, due to several story plot devices, they were untouchable. Even the bosses in neutral grounds could not be touched as they were all friendlies. Players would not even give it a try since firstly, it would be extremely difficult, and secondly, there was no reason to.

As for the Ten Evil Demon Lords, and the Seven Spectre Kings, they were all considered to be open-world bosses. Under normal conditions, they were considered to be undefeatable targets. Their powers were so strong that they could snuff out all players with just a simple blow of their noses. Hence, theoretically, even if all players from all corners of the world were to join forces, they would be completely wiped out as well. 100% clean.

To defeat a Celestial tier boss, one must have a Celestial tier equipment set. However, Celestial tier equipment would only drop from a Celestial tier boss! It's a complete loop. Hence, without special conditions, a Celestial tier boss could never be killed.

At that moment, the game version was still held during their Spectre Invasion patch. It was made to be a small introduction to the real threat that will come eventually. As such, if players can find, trigger, and complete a few crucial quests, they can fulfill a certain condition where players could bring in the King or the Baron of the Kingdom to participate in the war against the Celestial tier boss!

However, mind that the NPCs were only mostly Ascended tiers. Unless they have an army of Ascended tier bosses lining up, tanking the Celestial tier boss with only a few Ascended tier NPC would go poorly. Technically, the odds were still in favor of the Celestial tier boss, however, with help from players, they might still have a chance of defeating him. At that point, the Celestial tier boss will drop the Celestial tier equipment.

Zhang Yang may have more than several tens of millions of HP, but in the face of a Celestial tier boss, it would simply take a normal attack to kill him. Even if he uses his Inheritance Transformation, the boss would still be several Levels ahead of him. With the Level Suppression system still in effect, no one, including Zhang Yang could deal more than 1 pitiful damage!

All who were in the face of the overwhelming Celestial boss were nothing but tiny ants!

Zhang Yang could recall the memories of his past life when the Spectre Invasion event was still ongoing. It was the first time in history that all players in the battlefield were wiped clean, and all major cities were overrun by Spectre except one that stood strong, because all of the lower level players were hiding behind the walls. That was how powerful Angus was.

Naturally, the system had not made it impossible for players. After every short period of time, the Spectre army will withdraw on their own and the NPC army will form a counterattack force to try and defeat Angus. Every time the raid fails, the NPC army's strength will be slowly increased until Angus is defeated.

However, there will be a drawback. Every time the NPC army and players are defeated by Angus, the number of drops from Angus will be reduced. According to the data released by the officials, if Angus is killed in only the first try, he will drop one of the 6 major classes' - 13 pieces set equipment! All the Celestial tier equipment were Unique. Even if any one person is able to get their hands on one of the 13 set equipment, they would be greeted with immeasurable fame and glory!

If the first attempt fails, the second attempt will drop only 10 set equipment. The third will only drop 7, and 4 for the fourth time. After the fifth time, the boss will only drop one of the set equipment. If players are still unable to defeat the boss, there will be no more set equipment, only regular equipment without set effects. After more failures, the number of possible Celestial tier equipment drop will be reduced even further.

Eventually, if players are still unable to defeat Angus, the NPCs will be stronger than Angus, and the boss will only drop one regular Celestial tier equipment. Although it may sound weak, it was still a Celestial tier.

Naturally, having a full set of regular Celestial tier equipment will be far weaker than having a full set of Celestial tier set equipment!

In his previous life, Angus was defeated only after the seventh trial, and all set-equipment was removed from the drop list. The boss was killed and only dropped four regular Celestial tier equipment. Even so, due to the extremely limited drops, a massive war had erupted among all players.

However, even if they won the war and claimed the Celestial equipment, they would have to train for more than a year in order to reach the Level Requirement which was Level 230, Level 200 if they had a special Level reduction effect.

The main point was not the Celestial equipment, but the Celestial boss! That was how strong it was.

Zhang Yang clearly recalled that all four equipment were claimed by four different individuals, which was One Sword Stroke, Hourglass Figure, Captain America, and God's Left Hand. That time, Captain America had, of course, possessed the God of War Inheritance.

Zhang Yang felt a shiver down his spine thinking about. Who knows how many time would they need to try this time...

It was a Celestial tier set equipment hanging right there just for him. Even Zhang Yang could not resist the temptation, and started to fantasize.

As long as a town is occupied by Humans, Orcs, Elves, and Dwarves, they will be attacked by Spectres. As such, they were named as the Attacked

Villages. Different level of maps will be invaded with the appropriate level of monsters. Even the beginner's village will be swarmed with Level 10 monsters.

The Spectres will attack the cities every one hour, and will have one boss leading the charge. The boss' level will be adjusted according to the map's Level as well. If the Spectre were to attack Sauron's Castle, the boss' Level will be Level 170, similar to the monsters of which the boss was leading.

However, since the boss was not the final boss of the corresponding map, the equipment dropped from it would not have the special Level reduction effect. Hence, it was not as valuable to others. However, it was still in demand, since Mythical tier equipment that are farmed from dungeons were bound on loot. It cannot be traded nor sold. Hence, there was still a certain value to the equipment obtained from open-world bosses. Especially, when the most wanted equipment were Level 140. Better than nothing, right?

The only new dungeons available then were the Level 170 dungeons. Right then, there was a Level 160 dungeon that could be raided. However, Zhang Yang did not want to raid, rather, he did not know how to do it. Going in alone would be suicidal and stupid. Also, if he does manage to obtain the First Clear Reward, it would be a waste, since the other members would not be able to obtain the perks.

It was still better to set his priorities somewhere else. Zhang Yang went to White Jade Castle and headed to the Explorer's Guild, an establishment that would post the main quests for the Spectre Invasion event.

The NPC that gives out the quest was a greenish little gnome. No one knows, but the little NPC had randomly just appeared out of nowhere and stood there as if he had been waiting for Zhang Yang for a long time. Zhang Yang came to him and the little gnome gestured Zhang Yang to bend over lower. "Hmph! Rude! Bend over a little, my neck is hurting, just looking at your stupid face!"

Zhang Yang popped a vein in his forehead and he did just that. Zhang Yang found himself a chair and sat down.

"I've come to accept a request, Guraj, not to listen to your complaints!"

Gnomes are the kind of species that are afraid of fights. Hence, the system had implemented a kind of system where if the player offends the NPC, the quest that the player receives will be of no use to them. Zhang Yang had learned that the hard way in his previous life.

"Fine." said the Gnome as Zhang Yang would not allow the Gnome to leave his sight. "What kind of quest would you like to accept here? I have a few lying around, errands of running here and there. I also have some that require stealth and strength to infiltrate the enemy's base to retrieve top-secret military intelligence."

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he was not too rude with the Gnome. The quests he offered to Zhang Yang were plenty in variety! In his previous life, Zhang Yang was only offered random running errands!

"Give me the hardest you've got!"

"Ho ho ho, if you think that you're that invincible, I have one that might snap you back to reality! Head over to Spectre Outpost located in the Forest of Clouds. Find out the reason behind the rising activity of the Spectres," said Gulaj.

'Ding! Gulaj has a quest for you: The Spectre's Secret. Will you accept it?'

[Spectre's Secret] (Difficulty Level: B)

Description: Gulaj wants you to head over to the Spectre Outpost located in the Forest of Clouds. Find out the reason why the Spectre have begun to move about. After your investigation, report back to Gulaj.

Progress: Understand the Spectre's Secret 0/1

Quest Reward: Experience Points: +5,000,000 Military Points: +100

Military Points!

Zhang Yang smiled with such satisfaction. The reason why he was happy to be able to retrieve better quests was because of the Military Points. Military Points are useful only during the Spectre Invasion event. The more you have, the more soldiers you could hire. Correspondingly, the

larger your army, the higher the chance of you defeating Argus.

100 Military Points might be an insignificant amount, but it was far better than the 1 or 2 Military Points reward for completing random errands.

Zhang Yang had not shared the news about the quest with anyone else, since Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were lower than Level 160. Most of the quests that were related to the Spectre Invasion event were Level 160 and above. Plus, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were extremely busy leveling in order to reach Level 160 as soon as possible to join Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang teleported to Sauron's Castle and rode the Phoenix towards the Forest of Clouds. After three to four hours of bored flying, he came to a place that looked like a mass grave, situated nearby a number of towers. Countless of towers were built there with numerous Spectre monsters going in and out of it. Just the numbers alone would be like fighting the entire of China!

Zhang Yang flew downward and landed. Since there were no clues as to where he should start searching for clues, Zhang Yang decided to check out the towers one by one in order to fulfill the quest requirement. Zhang Yang scouted the area and soared to the skies soon after. He made his way swiftly and made the Phoenix a smaller size before summoning Felice out and wreaked havoc to the entire place.

Zhang Yang made his way into the tower entrance and killed his way through. The interior of the tower was like the famous Catacombs underneath Paris. There were bones embedded in the walls of the tower! The worst part of it all was that, it seemed like the tower was only built in a few days' time, for there was still fresh blood oozing out of some of the bones. Maggots coupled with rotten flesh kept falling down from above, as Zhang Yang made his way upwards the tower.

There was a group small skeletal soldiers, grouped in 12, that were patrolling around. They were only normal tiers and as they spotted Zhang Yang, their first instinct was to charge in blindly. However, no matter how

many monsters there were then, they were nothing but normal tiers. With several quick swings, Zhang Yang killed them all. As a reward, the skeletal soldiers dropped many [Frosty Inscribed Cloth].

Those [Frosty Inscribed Cloth] could be used to craft [Level 7 Frosty Inscribed Bandages] which could heal over 100,000 HP in 10 seconds. Since Zhang Yang had the title to increase the [Bandage] effect, he could heal over 200,000 HP. However, his HP limit was so high that 200,000 HP was just about 20% of his entire HP bar. It was neither too little nor too much. Yet, it was somewhat still insignificant.

After collecting all the loot, Zhang Yang followed the flight of stairs upwards. Occasionally, Zhang Yang's heavy character made stepping on the boney staircase a difficult process, since he appeared to be cracking them. Though it was just a sound effect and not a real physical event, it was made purely as a scary ambience.

Zhang Yang moved up to the second floor and found a change in the monster type. On the ground floor, the monsters were nothing but normal tier skeletal soldiers that posed no threat to him. On the second floor however, there were many scrawny, meatless, muscles-less elite tier Spectre Wizards.

[Warfront Spectre Wizard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 165

HP: 4,950,000

Defense: 6,640

Magic Attack: 24,446 – 32,446

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% Magic Shadow attack to a target. Range: 30 meters. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Death Waves]: Blasts a deadly wave that is meant to corrupt the living and mend the dead. Deals 40,000 Shadow damage to all non-Spectre based target and heals all Spectres type targets by 20,000 HP.

Chapter 725: Tower Clearing

Although the skill {Death Wave} would not heal the caster himself, it could be used to heal others. Hence, if two Spectre Wizard were to stand side by side, they could technically heal each other endlessly, making the battle much harder. If he kites too many of them at the same time, it would be really difficult. Stack them up to a certain amount, all the monsters could basically heal themselves back to full health if Zhang Yang is unable to kill them all in a blast!

What a sad case indeed. Zhang Yang had initially thought that he could at least perform a fast mass-kill since the tower floor was crowded and small. Sadly, due to the AoE healing {Death Wave}, Zhang Yang had to change his killing style to one at a time! The slowest, boring-est, lamest style ever!

If {Destructive Smash} was an AoE attack, he could have just kited of the monsters in together and wiped them all without having to worry about their healings! At most, if he is unable to handle the damage, he could just rely on {Shadow of the Void} to escape!

Zhang Yang carefully aimed {Spear of Obliteration} at the monsters at the edge of the crowd and kited him towards himself. The monster was drawn away from the bunch of monsters, allowing Zhang Yang to fight the monster alone.

After a certain distance, Zhang Yang moved towards it and attacked. After a normal attack, Zhang Yang's Rage gauge was filled. He used {Charge Up Strike} and landed one {God of War Devastation} dealing more than a million damage to the monster.

'-29,373!'

A powerful attack landed on Zhang Yang which made Zhang Yang winched a little. 30,000 damage was not a small amount. As such, facing a magic type monster, a Guardian loses his tankiness. All his thick armor is ineffective. With his HP, he could at least take 35 hits of the {Shadow Arrow}. Technically, if the monster wants to kill Zhang Yang, he would

need to last for 70 seconds.

"Shi shi shi shi!" The Wizard laughed in a weird manner and blasted out a dark wave. The wave dealt close to 18,000 damage to Zhang Yang. That was the skill {Death Wave}. Fortunately, Zhang Yang had only drawn in one monster, hence, the skill was only an AoE attack instead of a healing skill.

"Laughing? Really?" Zhang Yang sliced the monster on and on before striking the monster with a {God of War Heavy Axe}, dealing more than 300,000 damage with a single blow.

Another {Shadow Arrow} was being casted by the Spectre Wizard. However, before the spell could finish, Zhang Yang landed a {Crash Magic} on the monster and disrupted the spell cast. For the next 3 seconds, the monster was silent and could only deal physical attacks on Zhang Yang by knocking on him with his wooden staff.

Since magic type monsters would have low physical attack, the attack was not only unable to deal any single damage to him, but also triggered Zhang Yang's {Block}. As such, Zhang Yang was able to use {Shield Bash} to forcefully bash the wizard's boney face in.

"Aurgh!" The wizard cried with rage. Elite or not, Zhang Yang was unrivaled in strength. In just half a minute, Zhang Yang with the combine attack of the Phoenix and Felice, was able to defeat it. The monster had rewarded Zhang Yang with a large sum of 5,000,000 experience points. Still, it was not a surprise. An elite was an elite monster, even though the monster had only attacked Zhang Yang roughly around 10 times, with both {Shadow Arrow} and {Death Wave}, the monster was able to deal a total of 400,000 HP, which was 40% of Zhang Yang's HP!

To be safe, Zhang Yang did not proceed to kite the second monster. Instead, he sat down and bit down a [Chicken Burger] to restore his HP back to 100% before engaging again.

One by one, Zhang Yang killed all of the monsters on the second floor. Sadly, he had taken more than half an hour to do so. After finishing up the boring floor, Zhang Yang made his way up the staircase. Before he could

reach the third floor, he came across a large monster that was standing guard at the entrance.

[Warfront Spectre Wizard Captain] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 10,490

Magic Attack: 43,569 – 63,569

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Deals 200% Magic Shadow damage to a target. Range: 30 meters. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Death Wave]: Blasts a deadly wave that is meant to corrupt the living and mend the dead. Deals 80,000 Shadow damage to all non-Spectre based target and heals all Spectres type targets for 40,000 HP.

[Spectre Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate would not be affected by skills.

A mini-boss?

Even though it was merely a Mythical tier boss, it would be a worthwhile fight. Why reject something when it's given to you for free?

After restoring all his HP, Zhang Yang took charge, followed by the Phoenix and Felice behind. Even though the boss may have the annoying HP recovery skill, it was still limited by the maximum HP. So, the boss might have a maximum HP of 8,500,000 HP, which means, that every 30 seconds, it could heal 85,000 HP. That's only 3,000 HP per second. Zhang Yang's DPS was far stronger than that puny number.

"Hmph. Humans. Your days on this land are numbered!" said the boss as Zhang Yang approached him. With a bold expression, he lifted his staff and blasted Zhang Yang with {Shadow Arrow}.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang glided through the floor and attacked the boss. Once Zhang

Yang had landed his attack, both the Phoenix and Felice started their attack. Both of the Battle Companion and the Battle Mount had reached Level 160. Their combined DPS had reached as high as 50,000, which was almost as high as Zhang Yang's DPS. The Phoenix will continue to upgrade its tier, turning into a Holy tier battle mount after Level 170. Sadly, if Felice's seal is not broken by then, perhaps both her Level and tier would not increase any further.

Technically, Zhang Yang would only need 40 seconds to kill the boss. On the other hand, the boss would only need half of that time to kill Zhang Yang. With brute force alone, Zhang Yang will die. Hence, Zhang Yang had to use a variety of skills to survive the battle and kill the boss. With {Shield Wall} lasting for 10 seconds, and the use of {Shadow of the Void} to allow Felice to take charge of the aggro control, he could easily outplay the boss' DPS. It was easy enough for Felice to tank the boss in her {Spectral Tiger Form} since she would have 610,000 HP.

The boss' recovery skill was nothing much to be concerned about, for it only heals 85,000 HP once. At most, each healing instance could blot out one instance of attack. Hence, in just 40 seconds, the boss died and rewarded Zhang Yang with a pile of random items.

Zhang Yang picked up all the items and found some rather valuable loot. There was one Mythical tier equipment, three Violet-Platinum tier equipment, and the rest was considered to be junk.

[Blouse of the Shadow Death] (Mythical, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +2371

Intelligence: +1096

Spirit: +484

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,190.

Equip: Increases your damage and healing rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 160

Shadow Death Set Equipment (1/5): {Hat of the Shadow Death}, Blouse of the Shadow Death, {Glove of the Shadow Death}, {Boots of the Shadow Death}, {Tights of the Shadow Death}.

Three Equipment Set Effect: Increases magic damage and healing rate by 20%

Five Equipment Set Effect: Upon receiving an attack, there will be a 1% chance to send yourself into the Nether Realm for 3 seconds. You cannot be targeted by both enemies and allies alike.

Set equipment! Not bad!

What a rare encounter, considering that fact that it had been a while since Zhang Yang last saw a set equipment. Though the Three Equipment Set Effect could add 20% damage, it was not enough to compensate for the difference of tiers between higher tiers. Still, it was valuable to other players who could never get their hands on Ethereal tier!

Perhaps, there was a chance that each of the towers in the vicinity would have a mini boss inside. If Zhang Yang is to clear all the towers, he could farm all the required set equipment and sell them as a complete set in town for several hundreds of thousands gold coins.

Zhang Yang took out two [Chicken Burger]. As his HP was too long, eating just one [Chicken Burger] could only heal him by 500,000 HP. It was not enough.

As mentioned before, Battle Companions were like players. They could use [Bandages] and consume items to restore their HP. For Felice, one [Chicken Burger] was more than enough to restore all her HP. As for battle mounts, their HP would automatically regenerate once they leave the combat mode. Their HP regeneration rate was so strong that they could completely heal themselves back to full health in only 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang proceeded on to the third floor and the monsters had changed again. From skeletal soldiers, to Spectre Wizards, the third floor monsters were all rotten, zombie-like monkeys. A single jump of them

could send them coming from as far as several meters away. It was completely unlike those Spectre monsters!

[Warfront Death Leaper] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 165

Defense: 6,640

Melee Attack: 37,947 – 57,947

Skills:

[Leap]: Leaps towards the target. Can leap over obstacles.

[Death Blade]: Deals 150% melee physical attack. Cannot be evaded. Cannot be blocked. Reduces the target's healing rate by 50%. Last for 10 seconds.

Compared to the magic type monsters back, Zhang Yang was completely unfazed by the strength of the monkeys. With his super-powered defense, he would normally take only 13,000 damage from a monster with 50,000 attack power. However, the skill [Leap] might prove to be a little troublesome. Hence, Zhang Yang played it safe and only drew in two at a time. Luckily, he had a lot of [Chicken Burger] courtesy of Han Ying Xue, allowing him to survive many battles!

A typical Level 120 recovery snacks cost 2 gold coins each, whereas the Level 150 [Chicken Burger] were even more expensive. On the other hand, the [Chicken Burgers] can never be found elsewhere. It can only be crafted. The only method of obtaining it is to buy it from players or make it themselves by hunting chickens, pluck peppers, and buy flour from shops. It will be expensive.

Suffice to say, 5 gold coins each was a good deal. At most, it could cost the exact same price as a real-life chicken burger! However, in reality, how many burgers could you eat? Only Zhang Yang could spend a fortune and eat all those burgers in the game. Typical players would rather pair up with a Priest or a Sacred Knight to save up unnecessary spending.

That was one of the main reason why healers were weak in attack, yet

were extremely welcome in an outdoor party.

There was a total of 30 Leapers on the third floor. As Zhang Yang kills two monsters at a time, he took close to 39 minutes to clear the entire floor. Similarly, there was a mini boss standing guard at the entrance of the fourth floor.

[Warfront Death Leaper Captain] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 8,500,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Leap]: Leaps towards the target. Can leap over obstacles and stuns the target on impact for 2 seconds.

[Death Blade]: Deals 200% melee physical attack. Cannot be evaded. Cannot be blocked. Reduces the target's healing rate by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds

Despite having the same skills as the elite version of the Leapers. The boss' skill had an extra stunning effect and an extra 50% added damage. The difficulty had only been increased by a tiny notch.

Chapter 726: More Set Equipment

After restoring his HP, Zhang Yang brought Felice and Phoenix up front to attack. He still insisted on attacking alone instead of calling his friends.

"Fresh FREEEESH FREEEESH MEAT!" cried the Leaper Captain as he leaped towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang had earlier sent away Felice and Phoenix, hence, he was the only one who suffered from the stunning effect.

While the stun effect was still ongoing, Felice and the Phoenix attacked the boss without waiting. Felice's DPS was perhaps one tier higher than the Phoenix, hence, the aggro value generated on her was double that of the Phoenix. Hence, the boss had chosen Felice as his attack target. Sharp claws flung around, slicing and dicing Felice. Although she was wearing metal armor, it did not stop the claws from cutting through. Blood was spilt everywhere.

Zhang Yang recovered immediately and use {Charge} to instant close the gap between him and the boss.

Zhang Yang's DPS was twice as much as Felice's. With {Shield Oath} in effect, he could generate more aggro. After only 3 seconds of attacking, Zhang Yang had taken control over the boss and managed to save Felice.

With the godly skill {Block}, all physical attack type targets were in a shorter hand of the battle. Coupled with Zhang Yang steroid-pumped defense, the boss' normal attacks could only deal as much damage as 4,500 DPS.

On the other hand, while the skill {Death Blade} could only be activated once every 10 seconds, dealing as high as 100,000 per strike on average. The damage dealt on Zhang Yang was only as much as 53,000 damage which was around 5,300 DPS. Hence, his skill damage was higher than his normal attack.

Combined, the boss true DPS was at least 10,000. He would take at least 100 seconds to kill Zhang Yang. Compared to the previous wizard boss, this leaper boss was much weaker.

Zhang Yang did not need to even use {Shadow of the Void} to escape the battlefield, for he could tank safely until the boss was killed.

Similar to the previous boss, this leaper boss had dropped one Mythical, and three Violet-Platinum tier equipment. The Mythical tier item was a set equipment at that!

[Soul Reaper Arm Guard] (Mythical, Leather Armor)

Defense: +96

Vitality: +1259

Strength: +247

Dexterity: +580

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 2,510.

Equip: Increases damage and healing rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 170

Soul Reaper set equipment: {Soul Reaper Mask}, {Soul Reaper Chest Plate}, Soul Reaper Arm Guard, {Soul Reaper Pants}, {Soul Reaper Boots}.

Three Set Effect: Increases damage and healing rate by 20%.

Five Set Effect: On every successful attack, grants a chance to increase Dexterity by 10% for 10 seconds. Effect cannot stack.

What a loot! The previous set equipment was a Cloth armor, and the next was a Leather armor! Perhaps, the last floor, Zhang Yang could find a Heavy Armor equipment!

There were a total of 15 towers in the vicinity and if he is lucky, he could farm two pieces of all the classes' equipment sets. Zhang Yang slobbered a little as he thought of the money that he could earn from gathering all the equipment!

Zhang Yang proceeded into the fourth floor and reached the end of the tower.

On the fourth floor, the monsters were different. That time, they were all knights riding on hell horses, clad in heavy armor. Their swords were slung behind their back and were scrapping the floor as they were as long as 3 meters.

[Warfront Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Death Strike]: Deals a powerful strike on a target. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Has a 50% chance to deal 200% damage.

[War Stomp]: Leads the horse and charge towards a target. Closes the gap between the target instantly and stuns the target for 1 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

Zhang Yang sighed with relief. Finally, the monster was not the kind that could cast any major debuffs on him. Sadly, as a compensation, the Death Knight were the kind that deals more damage than the rest of the monsters. Double damage was not something to be underestimated. If Zhang Yang is stupid enough to engage 10 Death Knights at once, he could be in deep trouble. If 10 of them activate their skills, 5 of them would have the chance to deal double damage. Even with Zhang Yang's steroid-pumped defense, he would take 250,000 damage all at once. That's 25% of his total HP.

It's too powerful to even be normal.

Alone, it would be impossible. Perhaps, if someone like God's Left Hand came up, paired with a healer behind, he would have the potential to survive. Sadly, even if he survives, he might not be able defeat the monsters. Surviving and defeating were two whole different things. To put it bluntly, God's Left Hand could not possibly produce damage that is as

high as Zhang Yang. Even at his best, he would be much weaker than Zhang Yang.

With Felice and Phoenix supporting him, it looks like it would be a while before someone else could even match with Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang started the battle with {Spear of Obliteration} and fought one monster to gauge its strength.

The Death Knight took the hit and charged towards Zhang Yang, stunning him for 1 seconds.

SHRING!

With lightning speed, the long blade behind his back was swung downward, cleaving Zhang Yang's neck, dealing 53,000 damage. That was the {Death Strike,} and it had managed to land a double damage!

Pfft! What luck...

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. After recovering from the stun, Zhang Yang laid down a barrage of attacks and took down the Death Knight in only half a minute. Similar to the previous monsters downstairs, the Death Knight had a handful of [Frost Inscribed Cloths].

Zhang Yang took a break to restore his HP after fighting three Death Knights. Zhang Yang was dissatisfied with the killing speed. If only Felice could obtain a healer form after the next seal is broken...Zhang Yang was not greedy. He would not ask something like Han Ying Xue's healing capability. In fact, if Felice could heal like any other common healers, Zhang Yang could then be a perpetual killing machine that does not need to reload nor refuel!

But, right now, Zhang Yang would have to play nice with the elite tiers.

While Zhang Yang was complaining he was too slow, the rest of the player could never reach his level of efficiency. In fact, the level of difficulty was so high that normal players would have to assemble a full team of DPS, tanks, and healers to engage the monster. Zhang Yang alone could kill three Death Knights before having to rest!

Fortunately, the number of Death Knights on the floor was not too much. In fact, Zhang Yang had taken close to 30 minutes to clear the entire floor. At the end of the floor, there was a mini-boss as well. Like the others, the floor boss was a captain of the monster. However, unlike the other floors, the boss was not guarding any entrances. He was sitting down behind a desk, writing on some sort of parchment.

If the annoying Wei Yan Er was there, she could have asked why and how could a Death Knight ride a horse inside a tower, and why would there be a captain writing something down? Zhang Yang could have answered with a simple reply. Shut your mouth and kill the boss. That's all there is to it!

[Warfront Death Knight Captain] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 8,750,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Death Strike]: Deals a powerful strike on a target. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Has a 40% chance to deal 200% damage, and a 10% chance to deal 300% damage.

[War Stomp]: Leads the horse and charges towards a target. Closes the gap between the target instantly and stuns the target for 1 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

Although the boss' {Death Strike} was slightly upgraded, its normal attack was all too similar to that of the elite monsters. Even though the skill had a 10% chance to deal triple damage, it was only 10%! Perhaps the boss was fated to be a mediocre character in this map. At least, he had close to 9,000,000 HP, which suits a boss well.

Naturally, faced with a physical attack target, Zhang Yang had not need to hesitate to attack. Even though the boss had dealt triple damage attack

several times, 100,000 damage was easily "dodge-able" with {Shield Wall}. With a quick {Shadow of the Void}, Zhang Yang had Felice replace him as the tank and killed the boss easily.

As expected, the boss dropped a set equipment that was of the Heavy Armor type.

[Death Conqueror Chest Plate] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +170

Vitality: +2519

Intelligence: +1160

Spirit: +514

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 2,320

Equip: Increases damage and healing rate by 3.5%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 170

Death Conqueror Set Equipment: {Death Conqueror Helmet}, Death Conqueror Chest Plate, {Death Conqueror Armlet}, {Death Conqueror Greaves}.

Three Set Effect: Increases damage and healing rate by 20%.

Five Set Effect: After every successful casting, restore 10% MP of the spell's MP cost.

The chest plate was meant for a Sacred Knight. Perhaps, there should be one for a physical attack type like Zhang Yang. However, since the boss had only dropped one Mythical tier equipment, there were no more left to be found in the tower. However, there was still hope, perhaps he could find one that is suitable for him in the other tower.

Once the boss was killed, the parchment that he was writing on glowed. It was the system notifying the player, that the item as interactable.

'Ding! You have acquired a [Command Order]. Sadly, due to your rusty Spectre Language mastery, you cannot decipher any of the words written

on the parchment. You should collect more [Command Orders] and report back to Gulaj. The Gnome has been in contact with the Spectre, since he had been doing business with them!'

Zhang Yang received the system notification when he picked up the parchment. As such, to finish the quest, Zhang Yang would have to go through all 15 towers, and 15 final floor bosses in order to collect all [Command Order]. It might be bothersome, but it was something Zhang Yang did not mind doing, since he could obtain a massive amount of experience points and equipment! On the other hand, it was not bothersome at all!

Zhang Yang went down to the ground floor and exited the first tower. He then headed to the second tower closest to him, and killed his way in.

The tower was compromised of basically the same kind of monster. The ground floor would have normal tiers, the second floor would be magic types, and the third floor would be the Leapers, and the fourth floor had the Death Knights. In summary, Zhang Yang would take close to 2 hours or more to clear one tower. 15 towers would take him 30 hours in total. Convert that to real time, and it would be a span of 8 hours.

Zhang Yang killed his way through all the tower and by the time he was done with the 11th tower, he stopped for a while and logged out to go back home. In his inventory, there was a Cloth Armor set equipment, Leather Armor set equipment, Heavy Armor set equipment, which was divided into three more types. Overall, the separated equipment was too cluttered in his inventory. It was messy. Zhang Yang had four defensive equipment and had two healing types, and two DPS types. There were even some that were the same kind, making it extremely difficult to farm a complete set by the time he was done with all the towers.

Chapter 727: The Proof is Here

Liu Xin Mei was flustered. Her eyes were glued to the computer screen yet her attention was elsewhere.

She had been Zhang Yang's secretary for more than a month now, yet she failed to seduce the man himself. She failed to capture the moment when Zhang Yang tried to take advantage of her. After so long of letting herself go, Zhang Yang had never once even tried to make a move on her. As such, she was beginning to think that the man might be a eunuch! How else could she explain it when Zhang Yang was not even remotely interested in touching six super-hot, super sexy, super model secretaries! Could there be such a modest man in this century?!

It would not be true. Perhaps, was he trying to over compensate himself for not being able to pitch a tent, by hiring six hot boodilicious babes to follow him? What was going on!?

Liu Xin Mei sighed. She was not concerned about Zhang Yang's well-being but rather her own mission. She could not get what she wanted. Young Master Hua had already given her a deadline, which was half a month. However, Liu Xin Mei had been "working" for Zhang Yang for more than a month! She had been in contact with Zhong Xiu Hua a few days back and the man had already expressed his displeasure with her work. If she stalls her mission any longer, she might be replaced by someone else who could get a man to work up a sweat!

Liu Xin Mei finally averted her gaze from the computer screen. Frustrated at her own failure. It was rather dull, Zhong Xiu Hua's plan, that is. However, blackmailing was supposed to be direct and simple. Convolutated plans will only be messy and might not be as effective. The oldest method of blackmailing was always the best at doing their job. It's because it was the best at it, hence, that was why many had ended up using them. It does not matter what Zhong Xiu Hua wants with it, as long as she gets her hands on it.

It was a recording, a piece of evidence that Liu Xin Mei could use against

Zhang Yang. A scene where Zhang Yang is trying to or is actually doing a girl other than his girl. Zhong Xiu Hua would then release the recording the day Eternal Flame finally defeats Lone Desert Smoke. One was to obtain all the fortunes of Lone Desert Smoke, and the second was to obtain Sun Xin Yu's heart. He would be the one that wins it all.

Liu Xin Mei pushed her chair back and scooted over to peek at Zhang Yang's office. She grinned. She had found a way around the mission. It would be to record Zhang Yang cheating on someone. It does not need to be specifically her. Hence, she had no need to sacrifice her own chastity in order to do so!

Over the past month, she had made full use of her own overtime duration. When Zhang Yang leaves the office, she would stay back with the excuse of work and planted hidden cameras all around Zhang Yang office. The cameras were in place so well that she could capture every angle from above. She had even invested in the best miniature cameras. The camera can capture video in UMHDR mode. The recordings would be so clear that you could practically zoom in to check the person's nostrils hair!

Yesterday, she had even placed a bottle of red wine in his office wine cabinet that was laced with drugs. Not typical drugs, but a high concentration aphrodisiac! The concoction she had picked was better than the rest. It does not induce a sudden unexplainable rush of horny-ness. Instead, it builds up over time and will push the individual into a beast with a raging sex drive!

The dosage she had laced the wine with was enough to make an impotent man poke his pole to the heavens. Liu Xin Mei was sure that Zhang Yang would not be able to sit still after drinking a single cup! Especially, when six bootylicious babes where always trying their best to have Zhang Yang take a peek at their overly exposed meat!

Liu Xin Mei had even prayed that the role would not be her, since the dosage she had mixed into the wine was so strong that Zhang Yang would be able to ram a sow till its pregnant! If she is the one getting humped, she might not be able to walk for several days! Heck, she might even take up

the bed for the entire week!

That sort of treatment should only befall to those sly minxes!

Liu Xin Mei grinned. They say that a woman's jealousy could start a world war. Especially if the reason was another woman being better than her! She was, naturally, referring to Cheng Xue Yao. Cheng Xue Yao had indirectly become the office's goddess. Her presence alone was enough to make all men's eyes glued to her. She would receive a crap ton of love letters to make a book! The flowers she received on her desk every morning was enough for her to open a flower shop!

Hence, the sense of jealousy that had built up over the month had Liu Xin Mei wishing that Cheng Xue Yao would be the one getting f*cked silly.

...

"Beep!"

The fax machine came alive and started to print out several documents. Zhang Yang was still in his office, packing his stuff and was ready to leave when he noticed the documents. He picked them up and glance at them. Immediately, he smiled.

The documents were from Zhang Yang's private investigator. The reports were all about the backgrounds of Cheng Xue Yao and Liu Xin Mei. After a thorough investigation, Liu Xin Mei's background was extremely plain. She had been through junior school, all the way to university and graduated with flying colors. All work posts she had been in was too plain to even noticed. In short, all she had was her looks and her brains.

On the other hand, Cheng Xue Yao's background was extremely interesting. Her father was Jing State's police officer while her mother was working in Liu Industry's as an accountant. It was the same company that that bastard Liu Wei owned. Four years ago, Liu Wei was charged with rape. However, the victim was unable to hire a private lawyer hence, she had resorted to the public prosecutor instead. The case was handled by Cheng Xue Yao's father personally. Mr. Cheng was a man of justice. Even though Mr. Cheng was known to the Liu family and many other higher

officers, he had placed impartial judgment on Liu Wei and investigated the case thoroughly. Eventually, he had succeeded in uncovering many of Liu Wei's hidden crimes and managed to collect a whole load of evidence to use against him. At the same time, Mrs. Cheng, Cheng Xue Yao mother's had audited the accounts Liu Wei's company and found many mistakes in the accounting. She too, had collected evidence that could be used to charge Liu Wei.

However, the Liu Industry was Jing State's powerhouse. They were not someone like the Chengs who would topple over easily. Facing with such a disadvantage, Mr. Cheng had resorted to contacting his superior officer. During then, the Deputy Major of Jing State was Luo Xi Yuan.

Sadly, unknown to Mr. Cheng, Luo Xi Yuan was already in Liu Wei's payroll. He was already convoluting with the Liu family since the beginning. On the surface, he had convinced Mr. Cheng that they will bring down the Liu family with the hammer of justice. However, under the table, he had already contacted the Liu family about the evidence. Eventually, when both Mr. and Mrs. Cheng had submitted all the evidence to Luo Xi Yuan, they were both involved in a fatal "accident" on their way back home.

When the incident occurred, Cheng Xue Yao was still studying overseas. When she returned to the mainland, she disappeared without a trace. The private investigator that Zhang Yang hired had deduced that Mr. and Mrs. Cheng had contingency plans. They wanted their daughter to be kept out of reach from the poisonous fangs of the Liu family. He also guessed that they had kept the original evidence somewhere safe. Hence, he had tried to search for Cheng Xue Yao himself, but failed to do so. He added that Cheng Xue Yao and he had made contact before Zhang Yang had requested the investigation. He was genuinely surprised when Zhang Yang sent her photo!

Zhang Yang read the report thoroughly and made his own conclusion. Perhaps Cheng Xue Yao had managed to trace the investigate backward and found Zhang Yang himself. As a result, she had thought to investigate the person holding Zhang Yang's lease and have herself to "infiltrate"

behind the enemy's line. That was probably the reason why she had turned up to become Zhang Yang's secretary.

They say, that the best hiding spot was where your enemy would never expect it! Who would have thought they the person they seek was merely disguised in plain sight!

"Hoho. Now I understand. It looks like she has a grudge against the Liu family. No wonder she is always trying to get on my nerves and ask me about Liu Wei! She might reveal her true self to me if I could prove that my vengeance with Liu Wei runs deep as well! Maybe, she could join forces with me to fight Liu Wei...Could it be...that she has the evidence to all of Liu family's crime?"

Zhang Yang widened his eyes with delight. The Liu family had barricaded themselves well by being the powerhouse of Jing State. To dig out the past without consequences would be hard without Liu Wei finding out. As such, although both of Cheng Xue Yao's parents had succeeded, it had been at the cost of their own lives.

"It's time for you to die." Zhang Yang grinned.

"Kok kok kok!"

Someone was knocking on the door and after two seconds, the door was opened gently. Cheng Xue Yao walked in slowly with elegance and the utmost lustful stature. She smiled and addressed Zhang Yang. "Mr. Zhang Yang. I'm moving to a new place today. I would like to invite you to my house-warming party!"

Zhang Yang clenched his fist tightly to resist her charm. That woman was so elusive yet alluring! No wonder she could become someone of importance. If Liu Wei finds her, she might only end up being his plaything!

If Zhang Yang had not received the investigation report, he might have even considered planning his life with her in the equation. This precious creature's magnetism was just too strong! Even Zhang Yang himself could not be certain that he would not do something to her!

However, now that he had the new-found knowledge about Cheng Xue Yao, he felt some sort of connection with her. A different kind. He could even have her working side by side together to topple the Liu family! However, in order to do so, he must get his hands on the evidence that she had, hence, he must play well with her.

Zhang Yang smiled back. "Sure thing! I must say, this is a little too last minute. I have no time to even get you a present!"

"I have no need of such things. It would be the best present if Mr. Zhang could be there!" said Cheng Xue Yao happily.

Zhang Yang snapped his fingers and recalled something. He walked to the wine cabinet and took out a bottle of wine. "I cannot have you leave empty-handed. Perhaps this bottle of wine should suffice?"

"1982 Chateau Lafite Rothschild! I cannot possibly accept that! It costs more than my yearly salary!"

"Please. It's pocket change to me. Take it and let's go!"

The two left the office. Liu Xin Mei had left the office earlier than them. If she had not, she would be terribly upset seeing that Zhang Yang had taken away the bottle that she had "implanted" in his office with every tool and gadget in his office! Even if Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao banged each other brains out to the roof, there will be no proof!

Cheng Xue Yao had her own car, so did Zhang Yang. With her taking the lead, she drove forward with Zhang Yang following closely behind. She drove around Zhou Su City and reached to her own place within a few minutes.

Her place was not of the ordinary. It was a hotel styled apartment. She lived on the 24th floor. Both of them took the lift quietly and arrive at her doorsteps. Her apartment was not too big, yet it was furnished grandly. The best thing about her apartment which Zhang Yang liked and hated the most was the scenery of the entire Zhou Su City.

Zhang Yang had not invited anyone else, hence, when Zhang Yang had asked, she merely gave vague answers. Cheng Xue Yao excused herself to

the kitchen to pour the wine into proper cups.

From the corner of the kitchen, Cheng Xue Yao peeked into the living room, watching on Zhang Yang as he watched the scenery with a complicated expression on his face. At that moment, without Zhang Yang noticing, Cheng Xue Yao took out a pack of white powder and poured it into one of the wine cups.

"You may be secretive Mr. Zhang, but this Truth Serum will have you reveal everything you have! Hmph! You cannot hide everything there Mr. Zhang. Hm...hm...hm..." Cheng Xue Yao poured the wine and mixed it thoroughly. "Drinking this would not cause any harm, but you will feel intense headache for a few days. That's for being so secretive with me!"

Poor Zhang Yang had no idea what was coming at him. The same cup of wine was laced with extreme aphrodisiac and now Cheng Xue Yao had even added in the Truth Serum! It was unclear whether the two chemicals would react with each other to produce something that could make Zhang Yang a complete idiot or the embodiment of lust itself!

Cheng Xue Yao herself was oblivious to the fact that Liu Xin Mei had purposely added a concentrated dosage to make Zhang Yang as powerful as a bull, since she suspected that Zhang Yang had a problem with his junior!

With the two glasses of wine in her hand, she waltzed gracefully to the window and offered Zhang Yang the one that was laced with the Truth Serum. She then cheered and said, "To your health Mr. Zhang."

"To your happiness. Miss Cheng."

Surely enough, something big was going to happen that night. Real big.

Chapter 728: Everything Out

Cheng Xue Yao took the chance to toast Zhang Yang and both of them gulped down the entire content of the cup in a single gulp. If any bartender sees the two gulped down the exquisite wine like cheap booze, he would have flipped out and taken the bottle of wine for himself.

"Mr. Zhang...Can I ask you a question?" asked Cheng Xue Yao with a grin. The alcohol had started to work up all the way to her cheeks. In fact, both Zhang Yang and Cheng Xue Yao were dyed in red.

"Ask away!" said Zhang Yang. He was beginning to feel the effect of the wine in him and felt wavey and tipsy. It got so hard to concentrate on anything at all, that any word that came out of his own mouth was forgotten immediately.

"What is your name?"

"hick My name? Hehe. Zhang...wait for it...Yang! Zhang Yang."

"Who are your parents?"

"My parents? Lets...see...they are nobody. Their names are Zhang Xian Yu, and Fang Li!"

"Who do you love most?"

"Ho ho...I would have to say...The witchy snow, and the ice cube!"

Two of them? What a pervert! Cheng Xue Yao clicked her tongue with disgust. Still, she was happy enough to know that the drug was working. Zhang Yang will then reveal any secret that he had inside and will not even remember what happened in between it! She had used it once when she had met with the private investigator Zhang Yang had hired. The poor man had drunk a cup of coffee laced with the Truth Serum and told everything about his client!

"What grudge do you have with Liu Wei!? Are you playing? Are you just putting an act of hostility but are merely following his orders?"

"Liu Wei...? The son of a b*tch? I want to collect any kind of evidence

that can be used against that f*cker! And I could do it by having Cheng Xue Yao handing me the evidence! After that, I will send him and his entire nest of vipers down the drains!"

Cheng Xue Yao was stunned. "How did you know that Cheng Xue Yao had any evidence?"

"Hehe. It's just a guess. I'm not sure either!"

Cheng Xue Yao frowned. She knew that Zhang Yang was not telling a lie, but the answer he gave had only made her suspicions of Zhang Yang being not sure himself. She continued to ask more question until she had finally dug out the truth. Zhang Yang was not a puppet of Liu Wei! He in fact, bore a deep grudge with the man and wished nothing but destruction upon him!

She asked more specific questions about the names of Liu Wei's associate but gained no sort of information about them. She had even asked more and more questions until she was sure that Zhang Yang and Liu Wei was like water and oil. However, there was a part which she could never understood properly. She asked about details of Liu Wei and how he had wronged Zhang Yang. She understood the part where a certain name named Lin Yu was forcefully taken away from her and had his guild disbanded. However, the odd question was about the time and place. He said he had once played 'God's Miracle' in his past life. He had even said something about Liu Wei and him dying together by jumping off a building!

That fact was rather intriguing but not of importance. Cheng Xue Yao only wanted to know that Liu Wei was his enemy and not an ally!

She continued to pour more of the expensive liquid into their cups and made Zhang Yang drink the entire bottle to reduce the suspicious. She sat down by his side and tried to sober up herself. Although she had only drunk one cup of wine, the alcohol in it was strong enough to intoxicate her to a certain degree. The effect of the Truth Serum will fade quickly. In fact, it would only last for roughly an hour after consumption. The headache and dizziness will soon come after.

She sat down, staring at the scenery of Zhou Su City, when she felt a heat wave rising from beneath her womb. It was unexplainable. Something was happening in her, which felt all too familiar. Her lady part was drenched! Both man and woman were the same. Don't let any member of the opposite gender tell you otherwise. When they have the sudden urge to do it, they will solve it with each other or alone nonetheless. She had only lived to bring down the Liu family and had even needed to keep herself off the grid. She had no time to spare for a love life. Hence, when the urge comes to her, she will either use a flexible cucumber, or solve it herself with her own fingers.

At that moment, she felt the same urge, but it was several times more intense! It was so strong that she would not mind having any man scratch the itch! When the indecent thought popped out in her mind, she felt an intense embarrassment. However, that had only enhanced the need in her! She had to do something to get rid of it!

"What is going on!?" Cheng Xue Yao had merely touched her expanding clit and felt a surge of pleasure that sent her back arching up!

At then, Zhang Yang woke up. It felt like a truck had rammed his head. The intense pain and the sensation of memory loss was not a pleasant wake-up call. However, there was a consolation prize for him. Lying down beside him was the girl who had invited him over to his house. She was moaning intensely with both her hands sneakily caressing her chest and hooahaah. Her lips and cheek were moist, covered with both drooling saliva and glistening sweat that seemed to drench her clothes.

He was not in control of his actions. It felt like his body was being steered by pure instinct alone and his consciousness was being pushed to the backseat of a car! However, after much effort, he managed to take control of his own actions. His thoughts came back and managed to talk some sense into him. The aphrodisiac is not a drug that will affect a person's psyche. It will only amplify a person's want for sex by 10 to 100 fold, depending on the person's will. Even if it was just a glass of wine, Cheng Xue Yao had taken enough dosage herself to make her incredibly horny! In fact, both of them were!

Zhang Yang steeled his mind and reasoned with himself to not just tackle the woman and devour her like how he devoured Yu Li!

However, just because he was able to control himself now, does not mean that he could keep the angelic side of him victorious. The effect of the drug had only just kicked in, after 30 minutes or 1 hour, the effect will reach its peak performance, turning any man into a crazy bull on steroids. Like a certain advertisement, the bulls with wings!

The two of them realized what they were careening into just then, and tried their best to be in control. As such, Zhang Yang started to engage in boring conversation to "break" the mood. However so, their eyes were constantly glued to the other's sensitive parts. As much they could deny it, they were so enthralled!

"Argh...It's it just me? Or is it getting kinda hot in here?" said Cheng Xue Yap as she wiped away her sweat and fanned herself with her hands. However, only one would know what was going on with oneself. She tried to leave, wanting to get away from her potential victim. She stood up but her legs failed her completely. With a gentle thud, she fell down on the carpet floor.

Zhang Yang instantly moved towards her and tried to lift her up. However, the moment when the two of them touched each other, an intense spark of heat burst out. The two of them glued their eyes together and kissed each other.

At first, it was merely a light touch of the lips. However, Cheng Xue Yao could no longer contain herself. She moans at the sudden warmth that attacked her lips and she craved for more. After one simple kiss, she planted her tongue in his mouth. Her constant moan of pleasure intoxicated Zhang Yang. His hands moved on their own and slithered underneath her blouse and played with her breasts. Lo and behold, she did not resist it. No. In fact, she welcomed Zhang Yang's rough hands. She had even guided his hands to her peaks and cupped her hands on his.

Cheng Xue Yao's assets were as good as Han Ying Xue. In fact, hers might be even better. The softness of them was so pleasurable that Zhang

Yang could not remove his hands from Cheng Xue Yao's chest! Which one of his hands were busy with her chest, his other hand acted on its own as well. Swiftly, he unlatched her lower skirt and pulled down her thongs. With experience, Zhang Yang knew where to slide his hands in. He did not need to even look as he traced his hands from her hips down to her buttocks and slowly made his way to the frontal forest of pleasure that had been flooded for god knows how long! With a gentle, fluid motion, Zhang Yang slid one of his fingers into her cave.

"AHHHH~ I'M-I'M---I'M COMING!" Cheng Xue Yao moaned like a lioness and hugged Zhang Yang tightly.

"Woman. I need your help as well...Please...help me solve this..." said Zhang Yang as he removed Cheng Xue Yao's fair hands off his shoulders and have them greet with Zhang Yang Jr.

"Will it be enough with just my hands?" Cheng Xue Yao asked yet she acted on her own without even waiting for a response. The two of them stopped talking and started to allow their actions to do the talking.

Cheng Xue Yao wrapped her soft hands gently around the stiff rod and stroke it with the right amount of pressure.

Once....twice...trice...and Zhang Yang had unloaded his cream on Cheng Xue Yao's face. Unlike the witchy snow and the ice cube, Cheng Xue Yao did not even react in disgust. In fact, she licked the droplets off her hand with her tongue. The lustful expression on her face only amplified Zhang Yang power. Just as junior there was about to have his rest, Zhang Yang himself had sent a powerful wave to it and make it stand strong again!

As the moon hung high in the night sky, the two of them were entwined together in opposite directions. Zhang Yang's head was buried in between Cheng Xue Yao's thighs, while Cheng Xue Yao was busy with Zhang Yang's groin. After Zhang Yang had lost count the times Cheng Xue Yao swallowed his load, the atmosphere in her house finally calmed down. The two of them took turns to wash themselves and dress up. It was extremely awkwardly for the two of them afterwards.

It was, after all, a sudden, mysterious call for lust. Although Zhang Yang

had not pounded the punnani pumps, what they did was, at an extremely grey area which was almost touching the black part.

By the end of route 69, both of them had concluded that something in the wine had made them that way. However, it would not matter if they find out what was it. What matters most then would be how they are going to solve that awkward tension.

"I'm guessing that you have something with you. Some sort of evidence that can be used to bring down Liu Wei and his nest of vipers?" Zhang Yang decided to drop the act and started to engage with the serious topic.

Cheng Xue Yao had understood that Zhang Yang was not Liu Wei's accomplice, hence, there was no reason to continue her act. She nodded. "You must have investigated who I am? No? You've guessed right. A few years ago, when both my parents had submitted the evidence, they kept the original copy somewhere safe. When I came back from my overseas studies, I was handed a will. However, the will that the lawyers gave me was strange. Eventually, I found the real will. Before my parents had passed away, they left me a message, revealing what they did."

"I understand that. However, I need you to listen to me now. Please give me the evidence, so that I can be the one dropping the hammer of justice."

"I understand. I'm not someone who can simply lift the hammer of justice without any consequences. Very well. I shall hand over the evidence to you. It's currently kept safe in the bank's vault. I'll deliver them to you tomorrow."

Now that the two of them had confirmed each other's identities and affiliation, they had no need to beat around the bush any longer. However, after they ended their serious conversation, the awkwardness in the air returned.

"...Erhm...It's getting late now. I better get back home," said Zhang Yang as he grew uneasy.

"Ah. Yes. There's the door."

After taking off, Cheng Xue Yao's calm composure broke down. She sat

at the sofa where they had just sucked each other off and hugged herself, crying. "What a bastard! He almost had me! How could he just leave me hanging like this! Pervert! Fool! Useless scum! He has two women at home and so many secretaries at work! Why would he pick me for!"

With rage, she stomped on the floor with all her might but ended up hurting herself.

"Just you wait. After we have dealt with the Liu family, I shall have your head as well!"

...

When Zhang Yang came back home, it was already 2 past midnight. Even though he had called them to inform about his lateness, his time of arrival was too late that both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were both suspicious of him. Furthermore, there was the lingering scent of Cheng Xue Yao's womanly scent latching on his entire body. Hence, without any effort to hide it, Zhang Yang told the truth of what had happened to him.

Luckily, the two women were rather understanding. He was drugged and had no power to resist the unknown urge.

After being scolded by the two babes, they punished him in bed and gave him a warning to leave Cheng Xue Yao alone. Never again should he ever get too close to that woman.

Naturally, he knew that Cheng Xue Yao had no reason to drug him. That leaves the other five secretaries as possible suspects. But then again, when all five of them were suspicious, four of the senior secretaries were loyal to him, since they were there even when old man Wei was still alive and kicking. That shortens the number down to one. Liu Xin Min. Even though her background was clean, it could be manufactured easily with the right people. As such, the arrowhead now points to Zhong Xiu Hua alone. With his connection and circle of powerful people, that sort of task would be nothing but a walk in the park. He had the objective and the motive to do so. When a man would do something as extreme as to break the law just to get the love of his life, it would be unacceptable. Sun Xin Yu would never forgive such a man!

Right then, without proof, there was nothing that he could do. But then again, Zhang Yang was not an officer of the law, suspicions alone was more than enough to make a person to act. He shall let someone check his office at work for anything suspicious and have Liu Xin Min be kidnapped somewhere until he finds out the real truth about her. If nothing turns up, he would let her go. If something is found, he would then try to use her against Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang took off his clothe and laid down on his bed. He took the gaming helmet, put it on, and sleep. The sucky sucky session with Cheng Xue Yao had placed a toll on him, that he was sore all over. Most importantly, the massive headache was still assaulting him!

Chapter 729: Destruction of the Mithril Refinery

After logging into the game, Zhang Yang continued to raid the four remaining towers. After spending close to 10 hours or so, Zhang Yang cleared all the tower and headed back to White Jade Castle to report to Gulaj.

Although the quest had taken close to 30 hours, the rewards that he reaped were rather worth their while. Equipment alone was already worth a crap ton of coins. There were 3 complete sets of Cloth Armor type, 2 complete sets of Leather armor type, and 1 complete set of a Heavy Armor type. There were still 15 random equipment that could make up 3 sets which will end up leaving 6 pieces of equipment to spare.

Even though they were only Mythical tier, having a set equipment was still worth a lot of gold coins, even though they were not the strongest equipment around these days. It would be worth a lot more to those set equipment hoarders! If the equipment is the right one, the price of it could reach as high as a few hundreds of thousands.

Zhang Yang waltzed his way casually, instead of rushing his way towards the Explorer's Hall to submit his quest to Gulaj.

"I see...Ho...Very interesting indeed!" said Gulaj as he examined the reports from Zhang Yang. After he had read all the reports that Zhang Yang had given him, Gulaj crossed his arms and calmly addressed the matter to Zhang Yang. "It would seem that the Spectres have obtained an ancient magic created by the God of Darkness himself. It has something to do with producing a secret weapon called the Darkness Falls.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: The Spectre's Secret. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points, 100 Military Points!'

Zhang Yang asked, "Gulaj, could you give a little more information about Darkness Fall?"

The greenish little Goblin raised his head and turned around. "It is

common knowledge that all Spectre are afraid of the light. The fire in the sky. Or as they called it, the Right Eye of the Benevolent God. As all Spectre are an atrocity to the gods, in daylight, their powers would plummet. In fact, they could only cough out 60% to 80% of their true strength."

Gulaj took a chair, sat on it and lit up a smoking pipe before continuing. "Understanding their weakness is part of my job. And so are their strengths. When the sun sets and the moon rises, the Spectre can fight at their full power. Darkness Fall is their ultimate weapon for a good reason. It is not something that will directly destroy the world. No it's far worse than that. It a magic barrier that will encase the all land, preventing the sun from casting its rays onto the earth. The land will lose all its warmth. Darkness Fall, is what the name literally meant. Darkness shall befall the earth for all eternity, stripping away all warmth and light. The earth shall decay and the Spectre shall prosper with all their might."

Gulaj sucked in a puff of smoke and finished the pipe in a single suck. "There's something else. Darkness Fall has the ability to turn soulless corpse as their own. Use your bucket head and think carefully about what I just said. If Darkness Fall gets activated, all who have perished in the world will rise. Think of all the past heroes and legendary warrior rising up, only joining the Spectres! Could you imagine Ares the God of War raising his sword against all of life?"

Clearly, Darkness Fall was not some menial quest.

"Hm. I understand the depths of the situation. Tell me, has Darkness Fall been successfully built?"

"Sigh...You're the same as those powerful warriors that are all muscle and no brain! If the Spectres have managed to build the Darkness Fall, would I be here still talking to you?" said Gulaj with an annoyed expression.

"A simple no would suffice," said Zhang Yang with a straight face. "So, it is not completed yet. Either that or it is not activated just yet. If I could destroy that thing. I would still save the land."

"Hahaha! Destroy it? Boy, are you far too ambitious for your age. Still, I applaud your bravery and kindness. If you want to destroy it, you best make haste now. I have scouted the Spectres and they are doing some shady activities lately. I suspect that the construction of Darkness Fall has almost reached its completion stage. That is probably the main reason behind the recent Spectre attacks."

Gulaj hops off the chair and crossed his arms again. "Warrior. You have my trust. I hereby bestow on you a crucial mission for the sake of all beings that lives and breathes. Head over to Ryu Ayer Castle and strike them at their source. Hidden behind the stone walls is a large Mithril Refinery. It takes a large quantity of Mithril to construct Darkness Fall. If you could disrupt their resource production, they could never even finish the construction! Imagine having a massive sailing ship without its deck!"

'Ding! Gulaj has a quest for you: Destroy the Mithril Refinery. Will you accept it?'

[Destroy the Mithril Refinery] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Gulaj has entrusted the task of destroying the refinery in Ryu Ayer Castle to place a halt to the production of Mithril which was crucial to the construction of Darkness Fall. Warrior, Ryu Ayer Castle is heavily fortified by Spectre. To protect the refinery the Spectre had increased defense in and out of the castle. You cannot do this alone.

Progress: Destroy the Mithril Refinery

Participant Limit: 10

Reward: Experience Points +10,000,000 Military Points: +500

'Ding! You have received a quest item: Goblin's High Explosive Bomb – 3rd Gen. Prototype x 1!'

500 Military Points?! That much?! What more, the quest could be shared with 9 more players! However, those who had not yet reached Level 160 could not initiate the Spectre Invasion quest. Even if Zhang Yang is to recruit Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, they could only help out but not receive any quest rewards, even after completion.

No! This cannot be allowed. 500 Military Points was a large number that could not be ignored. 5 Military Points could hire one normal tier soldier. Elite tier soldiers would cost 100 Military points. 500 Military points could be exchanged for 100 normal tier soldiers or 5 elite tier soldiers! It's so precious that Zhang Yang could not ignore it!

Zhang Yang was stunned. He stopped his tracks and went into deep thought. Since the quest does not have a limited time, and the reward is already fixed to begin with, Zhang Yang decided to postpone the quest until his core members had reached Level 160. Until then, he will be doing side quests and earning menial amounts of Military Points.

Hundred Shot's Red Dragon and Fatty Han's Phoenix were godly grinding aides. However, their prowess can only be emphasized when there is a sea of monsters. Although they could still kill individual monsters at a faster rate than normal players, it was not much to be accounted more. After all, multi-target killing is their specialty.

The problem then, was most of the hunting grounds were occupied with many players. If Zhang Yang was to forcefully conquer a zone for himself, he would have to sortie his guild to do so. Even though Lone Desert Smoke was capable of such a feat, it would not be worth the time and effort of doing so. What more, it would only be an act of self-sabotage.

In the end, it will always come down to the same problem in any MMORPG game. The more the players are, the lesser monsters there will be for everyone.

There was another way to gain levels fast. That is, to fight in dungeons, over and over again. However, at their average level then, a Level 140 dungeon's monsters would have Level 155 monsters as the highest. Players who have reached a higher level will only receive reduced monster experience points. However so, the rate will definitely be higher than chasing after monsters in an open-field.

If Zhang Yang is to take the First Clear Achievement of the Death Abyss Grouped Dungeon, he would not fight in the War Canyon, anymore. However, it was still an undecided choice. War Canyons do have their fun.

Players could use their Transformation there to fight a large number of strong players. Even though China can never place their footing on the first place, they were always moving up and down at the second and third place. At the very least, they could try the normal mode.

As for grinding, there was no need to go for the Hardcore mode since the entry limit was once every seven days. It would be good to farm some strong equipment there. As for experience points, normal mode would suffice, since the monsters were easier than normal and secondly, they could repeat the dungeon as many times as they want.

As such, Han Ying Xue and everyone else formed a party and raided the normal mode of the Death Swamp dungeon to quickly reach Level 160. All the effort invested into grinding was just to reach Level 160 to qualify for the Spectre Invasion quest.

After sleeping soundly for one night, Zhang Yang came to the office the next day with a heavy heart. Cheng Xue Yao was not present. She had only left him a message saying that she will leave to An Jing City to retrieve the evidence. It would take close to a week to travel back and forth.

Zhang Yang took the message and placed it aside for now. The bridge is closing in, and it was almost time for him to cross it to meet his foe. As much as Cheng Xue Yao's dignity, if something were to turn up wrongly, he will take her in as his women. As much as scoldings from the two lionesses at home, he will take it willingly and earnestly. At that moment, he was greatly torn. In one hand, he had a chance to have the exquisite woman, on the other hand, he already had two lionesses at home who loved him dearly. The conflict in him only made him guilty.

Again, he will cross that bridge when he gets to it. For now, he would need to solve some other stuff. Zhang Yang sent a professional to check the office. Lo and behold, they found a total of 27 hidden cameras. According to the professionals, those were extremely expensive, and top-quality cameras that spy agencies would use! When Zhang Yang knew about, an unknown rage boiled up in his stomach. It was extremely fortunate that he had been a good boy in the office and had never even touched them once! What could happen if he is caught during the act!?

As such, Zhang Yang called Fatty Han to the office and planned an abduction. After working hours, Zhang Yang had Fatty Han sabotage Liu Xin Min's car and abducted her after. They brought her to a hidden, soundproof room. Zhang Yang blindfolded her, muffled her hearings, and even used voice changing tools to change his own voice to hide his identity. The interrogation starts and ended rather quicker than expected.

The fear of the unknown is humanity greatest threat. Not knowing what that is going to happen will send a person into mental stress. Liu Xin Min was unable to see, hear, nor make any noise as the time slowly passed by. She was not someone trained to overcome the stress. Heck, if she is Charlie's Angel, she would have escaped the room in a heartbeat. In fact, Zhang Yang did not need to do anything at all. All he did was left her there for one night and she had caved in immediately.

Liu Xin Min had revealed everything that she knew about her employer to Zhang Yang. After confirming about the true enemy, Zhang Yang removed the blindfold and revealed himself to her. Naturally, she was both angry and shocked. However, when Zhang Yang had released her restraints and allowed her to leave, the women refused to leave his side. She spouted something about Zhong Xiu Hua being a man that would never allow loose ends to roam free. Especially after being caught. As she is to go back home and act as if nothing has happened, she will be "taken care" of.

Zhang Yang remained unfazed and unmoved. However, Fatty Han always had a soft spot for a woman begging for help. As such, Liu Xin Min's sharp eyes had brought her to Fatty Han's legs and pleaded him instead. Failing to resist her charms, Fatty Han had agreed to lend a hand whilst posing like a hero to save the damsel in distress.

Zhang Yang was fine with it. He had no objection to whatever that Fatty Han does. On the other hand, with Sun Xin Yu on the line, Zhang Yang could never end the hostility towards Zhong Xiu Hua. Since the man had taken his first step, Zhang Yang shall do the same. If not, he will only be treated as a fool. It is all a game of chess, then. Like Chess, if someone has moved their Bishop to a position to kill his King, he must do something to

block it. As such, he allowed Fatty Han, his "Knight" to distract the opponent by taking out the pawn. Although that would not do much damage to Zhong Xiu Hua, it does help divert his attention.

Fatty Han had arranged a hidden place to live in Zhou Su City and had Liu Xin Min to live there for some time. It was a good plan to have her at his side, since there was still valuable information that he could get out of her. The woman had been tangled with Zhong Xiu Hua for so years, so there would definitely be something that would be useful to him.

There was just one thing that bugged Zhang Yang, Zhong Xiu Hua was not Liu Wei. If Zhang Yang does manage to collect evidence to use against Zhong Xiu Hua, they could only solve this quietly. It was all the same for him as well. If Zhong Xiu Hua wants to strike Zhang Yang, he would have to do it covertly to avoid Sun Xin Yu. If the two great political families clashed, it would be something far worse than an all-out war in 'God's Miracle'.

As events reached to a certain point where Zhang Yang could not extract any more useful information from Liu Xin Min, Zhang Yang then placed his focus on the game to collect more Military Points, whilst waiting patiently for Cheng Xue Yao to return from An Jing City.

In a few days later, Zhang Yang was doing his work in his office when he received a video call. The man in the screen was slightly older than Zhang Yang had anticipated and was rather handsome. The man had a cold yet mature aura around him. When Zhang Yang picked up the call, the other side did not speak. He merely stared at Zhang Yang and hung up after a quiet scoff.

Without a doubt, the man was Zhong Xiu Hua!

The man knew something was odd when Liu Xin Min had not contacted him for a while and decided to reveal his face to Zhang Yang. It was a message. A message to tell Zhang Yang that he was unfazed and unscathed at what Zhang Yang had managed to do. The man was too self-centered and was ridiculously confident. That was what Zhang Yang saw in the man. With Sun Xin Yu as his ultimate Aegis, if the two of them were

to have a war with each other, it would only be limited to the game. Zhang Yang smiled. He may not be a genius in politics and business, but he could at least handle three Zhong Xiu Huas at the same time in the game!

Chapter 730: Skeletal Smith

One week later, Cheng Xue Yao returned to Zhou Su City. However, after delivering the documents to Zhang Yang, she disappeared immediately without giving Zhang Yang a chance to redeem himself. Zhang Yang only managed to catch a glimpse of her back as she left the building in a hurry. If there was something he could do, he would. But then again, he had already obtained the major piece that he required to complete his next task.

After that, he only passed the documents to Sun Xin Yu and let her work her magic on it.

Liu family had established themselves for a long time had amassed more than hundreds of millions of fortune. They had connected themselves to the network of officials in Jing State. It would not be easy to topple over the Liu family, especially since their fate was connected to the Jing State. It was not just the economy, but the magistrate itself, since corrupted politicians like Luo Xi Yuan will be brought down to their knees.

Hence, even with Sun Xin Yu's background, there was no way that such a feat could be completed within a few days. It would, in fact, required tremendous planning and execution which would consume more than two to three months! At most, the entire Liu family would be gone from the map in half a year's time. That, and a proper aftermath clean up. Sun Xin Yu had to be prepared for the worse or Jing State will plummet into a massive state of chaos.

Anything related to politics was not Zhang Yang's forte. Hence, he had Sun Xin Yu handle the mess and waited patiently.

When he was thinking about Liu Wei, naturally, the subject of Lin Yu came up as well. Zhang Yang foresaw that right then, she had probably just entered the game. Should he pursue the girl that he loved in his past life? He had two women that he truly loved dearly then. Again, there was a conflict stirring up in his mind. In the end, Zhang Yang had steeled his decision not to interfere with her life. Since Lin Yu would not remember

anything, he best leave her alone. Forget the past and forge a new future. Perhaps...it would be for the best for the two of them.

It was already the middle of November when Endless Starlight, the last member in the party reached Level 160. Zhang Yang gave everyone a good day off to prep themselves for the Spectre Invasion quest.

It has been three months since Zhang Yang had reached Level 160, and the system had launched the Spectre Invasion event. It was rather slow then, and Zhang Yang wanted to speed things up a notch. Similar to the case of Liu family. He kept on asking Sun Xin Yu about the progress of it and she would only reply with one same answer. "Patience."

Though it was rather annoying, Zhang Yang had no reason to doubt Sun Xin Yu. Zhang Yang had been waiting for years to burn Liu Wei down to ash, might as well add a few days to that timer.

The party then followed Zhang Yang across the Isaac Mountains and came across Ryu Ayer Castle. The true location was located towards the North West of the map. After several hours of flying in the sky, they had finally arrived at the Refinery. As mentioned by Gulaj, there were too many Spectres of all shapes and sizes coming in and out of the mine. There was a huge refinery station close to the mine with several hot machines working restlessly.

The mission was easy and straightforward. Zhang Yang would only need to plant the [Goblin's High Explosive Bomb – 3rd Gen. Prototype] and bomb the entire place down to smithereens. The problem was, after circling around the entire refinery, there was no indication as to where he should place it.

"Looks like the quest would not allow us to slack. I'm guessing that we should clear all the Spectres to proceed with the quest!"

Everyone descended down to the ground and split apart. Everyone moved individually and killed their way slowly. No sooner after the weak ones were defeated, a large skeletal monster, wielding a large hammer rushed towards the party.

[Skeletal Smith] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defense: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Heat on Heat]: Deals 100% melee physical attack on a target. Inflicts [Heat on Heat] debuff dealing additional 100% attack on the next attack. Lasts for 10 seconds. Can be stacked.

Note: A master of the art of Smithing before they passed on and revived as a Spectre.

Zhang Yang stopped his tracks immediately when he noticed the monster's skill. As such, Endless Starlight was the first person to charge into the fight and became the punching bag for the Smithers. The poor idiot was being led to slaughter by Zhang Yang and he had not even realized it. He smiled proudly and said, "Boss, are you sick today? How am I able to tank all the monsters?"

'-23,739!'

'-69,533!'

'-103,343!'

'-152,909!'

"WHAT!!!"

There were four monsters attacking Endless Starlight at the same time. The first attack was normal, but the three other attacks were so strong that Endless Starlight was greatly startled by it.

Tanking just one monster would not be hard. It would be long before the tank would not be able to handle the stacked damage amplification. However, having four attacking at the same time would be suicidal. That was merely the first trigger of {Heat on Heat}, if the second trigger comes in, the damage will start with 200,000 as the lowest!

Not even Zhang Yang could handle such intense barrage, so how could Endless Starlight?

As such, Endless Starlight had lost 30% of his HP and finally figured out why would Zhang Yang had allowed him to take the first hit!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Hold up! I having a stomach ache! Hold on first without me!"

"WAAAA! Boss! Don't do this to me! I'll die!" cried Endless Starlight as he activated {Sacred Protection} to gain 10 seconds of invulnerability and dispel the debuffs on him. It was an act of desperation, since he would not know when the monster would use the skill again!

"Little Yang! How could be so cruel to little Starlight? Not even an animal would be that evil! Nishishishi," said Fatty Han.

It was merely a joke. Zhang Yang would never allow anyone in his party to die without reason. He then jumped to the front and attacked one of the monsters with {God of War Devastation} to draw the attention of one monster, and used {Provoke} to pull one more. He had removed two threats on Endless Starlight and eased his load.

Fight just one Smither would not be a problem since the skill cooldown and effects were the same. It would be impossible to stack the effect up. On the other hand, when two or more Smithers are there, it would be dangerous, since one of them would use the skill before or after the other. 10 seconds later, all four Smithers raised their hammer and struck Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight with {Heat on Heat}. Even if the effect was 0.1 second from expiring, a new skill landing on it will ultimately stack the effect, refreshing the debuff back to 10 seconds.

Initially, Zhang Yang was not sure of the specifics of the skill. However, when two of the monster struck Zhang Yang, he had taken one hit after the other and received a total damage of over 60,000.

After another 10 seconds, when the monsters were about to strike Zhang Yang again, he threw out {Thunder Strike} first and delayed their movement speed and the timing of the skill strike. Although it was merely a split second, it was good enough to remove the debuff on him. When the

new {Heat on Heat} landed on Zhang Yang, he had merely taken 200% damage, instead.

Endless Starlight did not have any active slow skill. However, roughly a month ago, he had managed to obtain the skillbook {Superior Devotion} which added a 50% movement speed debuff on top of the DoT aura effect. His skill was strengthened, allowing him to slow down enemies just by being close to them.

Now that both tanks had managed to solve the problem with {Heat on Heat} the Skeletal Smithers were nothing but monsters with HP to hack away. 5 million HP? It's nothing but soft tofu waiting to be crushed by Zhang Yang's party.

As they got accustomed to the skills, they started increasing the pace. From 4 monsters at a time, they were able to increase the numbers to 6. It was made possible due to the powerful DPS of the party. Even though they could not kite any more than 6, the progress was still faster than normal. Still, after one whole night, the party had only managed to clear less than 30% of the entire refinery. Everyone else logged out when dawn arrived. One hour after breakfast, they continued on with their progress.

Zhang Yang the other hand, was busy with his daily routine. He left the party to Endless Starlight and logged out to have his exercise and work at Silky Soft Holdings. Although he would be missing out on a lot of experience, it was a number which he did not mind losing. He was far higher than anyone of them. By the time he logged back into the game, everyone else had already pushed a good distance from where he had stopped.

Eventually, Zhang Yang's party had taken two real-time days to finish clearing the entire refinery. The party would have never done something that like that, however, after they had listened to Zhang Yang's advice about the importance of Military Points, they had caved in and proceed to wipe the map of all Spectres. All their actions were for the later glory. The more Military Points they collect, the easier it would be to defeat Angus later on.

The best of all, was the fact that Angus would drop Celestial tier equipment!

With the Celestial tier equipment hanging out there like a piece of carrot for a donkey, the party had gain the inspiration and vigor to complete the quest. It was merely a grinding session that was extreme boring. That was all!

Alas, after fighting for long, the party had reached the center of the refinery. It was an empty tiled place with at least 40 meters of clean tiles laid out. As the party was killing their way on, they felt a tremendous shaking wave. A large skeletal monster came crawling out of the land. With a long blade resting on its back, the green-emerald flame flickered in its eye sockets as it stared at the party.

The massive skeletal monster was seven meters tall. It had the appearance of a human skeleton, yet it possessed a long bone tail! It seemed like the tail had grown with the man! On the other hand, there was another odd feature about the monster. It had a unicorn-like horn that was growing out of its forehead, glowing with a faint abyssal like darkness.

[Longador - The Dragon Race] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 180

HP: 1,800,000,000

Defense: 18,470

Melee Attack: 139,398 – 213,398

Skills:

[Tail Whip]: Strikes all targets within 40 meters. Deals 100% melee physical attack. Deals double damage to targets which are moving. Casting: 0.5 seconds.

[Death Blade]: Deals 150% melee physical attack to a target. Deals double damage to targets that are moving. Casting: 0.5 seconds.

[Sloth Aura]: Sends out a disturbing aura to 40 meters around the caster.

Attaches a bomb to any targets every 2 seconds that will explode in 2 seconds, dealing 200,000 Fire damage to all targets within 10 meters. The bomb will diffuse immediately if the target moves constantly for 1 second.

Note: The Dragon race was a myth. No one in history had ever laid eye upon a real humanoid Dragon race and lived to tell the tale. The problem was that no one in history had ever claimed to impregnate a female dragon. Similarly, no female human has ever claimed to be impregnated by a male dragon.

Chapter 731: The Dragon Race – Longador

Everyone including Zhang Yang himself, gasped at the array of skills that the boss had.

With the {Sloth Aura} in effect, players will be forced to move around every 4 seconds, or they will deal 200,000 AoE damage! Worse of all, if they are moving, they will receive double damage from both {Tail Whip} and {Death Blade}. The situation was so bad that the party was caught between getting killed by sharks in the ocean, or tigers on land.

Fortunately, the {Sloth Aura} bomb effect will only detonate after 4 seconds. All they had to do to remove the debuff was to move within 1 second after obtaining it. On the other hand, both {Tail Whip} and {Death Blade} had casting times, which allowed players to decide whether to take it or to avoid it. Naturally, taking the hit was far better than allowing the bomb to detonate! Anyone would rather take the double damage rather than inflict damage to anyone around them!

The match would be a messy one. When a character moves, they cannot attack. Hence, the entire party will be producing crippled DPS. Still, it was extremely fortunate that the boss did not have any HP recovery skills.

Since the quest was limited to only 10 participants, Zhang Yang believed that the final boss would not spawn if he had brought more players over the limit. Now that the final boss had appeared, all they had to do was to kill it to complete the mission!

"Alright. Time to shine guys!" said Zhang Yang as he activated his Transformation skill. Everyone else followed immediately after. They had all been reserving their skills for several days. All for the sake of defeating the final boss for the S class quest!

One by one, everyone shone brightly as their character glowed with a beautiful radiant light. All except Wei Yan Er and Fatty Han. Wei Yan Er was engulfed in a dark cloud, turning her entire character into a pitch-black entity. Fatty Han himself had grown fangs and had a black mental cloak that turned him into a vampire. Just like the boss, those two were

like monsters!

"Go!" said Zhang Yang as he took the lead and charged towards the boss.

Zhang Yang did not bother explaining the strategy since the boss' skill was there for everyone to read. Everyone knew what they should and should not do, for they have been fighting for more than two years side by side! Repetition is the progress to mastery. Even Fatty Han had gotten used to controls and even the battle flow.

Was it you lot that tried to destroy my refinery!?" Longador pulled out his blade and swung it hard at Zhang Yang. "Lord Angus' plans shall never be foil by the likes of you. Leave! Or suffer a painful death by my blade!"

Longador's force was so strong that Zhang Yang was sent flying away. Even though he had managed to block the attack with his shield, he was unable to withstand the boss' sheer power. With a quick flap of his wings, Zhang Yang shot himself towards the boss and sliced the boss' chest open.

"URGH!" The boss grunted. Even though the boss was in a fit of rage, he was unable to attack for his attack intervals was determined by the 2 second attack interval. However, instead of attacking with his sword, Longador hurled his fist to strike Zhang Yang. The oncoming attack was so fast and unpredictable that Zhang Yang was unable to guard it.

With a loud thud, Zhang Yang was sent flying again.

"Aw!" Zhang Yang tried to move but it felt like every rib cage had been broken by the attack. His breathing was ragged. After merely 1 second, Zhang Yang managed to get back to his feet and rushed towards the boss and landed {Cripple Defense}. Wei Yan Er followed up and smacked out {Cripple Defense} to stack it up to 5 counts. Only after that, the party started to attack.

"Woah. I've never seen a boss could also use supporting attacks!" said Endless Starlight.

Zhang Yang was not the only person who had taken a fist attack. Everyone else was randomly targeted and will be disrupted for a brief moment. Although it was not considered as a real damaging attack, it

would still affect the DPS of the player. What's more, the attack was completely random! If the boss hates your face, then prepare to take a fist to your face!

The situation had turned a little worse. Since everyone will be rendered motionless for a second after being struck by the fist, the bomb that sets in might go off! It would be a disaster if that happens. On the other hand, the attack will also directly affect the party's attacking ability. Magic attack classes will be the ones that suffer the most. When a player is casting a spell, be it healing or attacking, the fist attack will ultimately disrupt the spellcasting, forcing the player to recast the skill all over again.

It was unfortunate that the boss had long arms. In just a few steps, the boss could punch the range attackers who were standing at the maximum range. Hence, it would be impossible to escape the range of the boss' serious series punch!

Physical attack class player would be luckier if the fist landed on them for their attacks do not require any casting animation. They could still move around only after 1 second of recovering. The worst would always be the Spellcasters since they had to keep on monitoring the bomb on their character. They could not just ignore them to heal or attack.

"Haha! Little bugs! I'll smash you to bits!" Longador stopped moving and a progress bar appeared on his head, that sped up in the blink of an eye.

Everyone stopped moving instantly and was ready to take the hit.

The boss turned around and unleashed his tail to strike everyone. Everyone took the hit, taking the damage head-on. 140,000 was the lowest value and 220,000 was the highest. Even though they were all in their Transformed state, if the healer does not keep up the healing, the entire party will eventually plunge into a dangerous state. The party had not reached the level where they could easily be killed by boss with their HP.

"Weakling! You are nothing!" Longador grunted boldly. Another progress bar appeared and disappeared in a flash. The boss took out his sword and prepared for a swing.

It was the {Death Blade} and Zhang Yang was not afraid of it. With his

legs carrying his character, he held his shield up high, ready to block the attack.

PANG!

The boss swung his massive blade and struck Zhang Yang's shield. The powerful strike was rendered powerless in the face of a Guardian.

"Stupid boss! Taste my axe!" Wei Yan Er hovered over to the boss in her smoke form and cleaved the boss at his neck.

Even though both Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu each had the [Book of Revelation,] the damage aura could not stack on each other. Only the stronger one, Zhang Yang's 10% damage increase was applied to everyone. Hence, even though the little brat had lost its {Axe Mastery} 5% damage increasing buff, she still gained a boost of power from Zhang Yang's aura. Furthermore, a Holy tier weapon was far stronger than an Ethereal tier could be.

Even though the little girl only a class A Inheritance, she was able to rely on her two-handed weapon to deal the strongest attack! Even Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang could not deal that much damage in a single strike! However, to compare a character as a whole, Zhang Yang had Felice and the Phoenix to add up to with his own devastating attacks. As such, Zhang Yang was still the highest DPS in the party, followed by Wei Yan Er as the second, and Sun Xin Yu as the third. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were far behind them.

The most pitiful one was Lost Dream. Alone, he could take on two Hunters at the same time. However, now that both Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had Legendary Beast as their pets, their damage was too much for Lost Dream to compare. Daffodil Daydream, on one hand, had the A class Inheritance. Before Transformation, her damage would be on par with Lost Dream. However, after Transforming, the power boost she gains will overwhelm even Lost Dream.

Hence, Lost Dream was rank at the lowest in the damaging ranking board. To be fair, he was still higher than Endless Starlight, Han Ying Xue, and Fantasy Sweetheart because they were tanks and healers.

After some time, the battle had started to heat up. The boss' attacks had started to pick up the pace as it used its {Tail Whip} attacks rather frequently and dealt a great deal of cumulative damage. Right then, the battle had progressed for some time and everyone's attention was starting to wane. From time to time, they would take a blast from the bomb and even take double damage from the skills.

"Hahaha! Run like the insects you are!" The boss laughed after he sent Zhang Yang flying off his feet, showing off his grand stature as a Holy tier boss.

While Zhang Yang was busy trying to strike with {God of War Devastation} and {Heavy Axe} as frequently as he could, the battle was still progressing slowly. As for the newly obtained skill {Tribulation}, he wanted to keep it quiet and not use it for the moment.

Since the boss did not possess any HP recovery skill, the party's overall DPS was not being suppressed or rather "absorbed". However, the biggest problem with the fight was the fact that Longador could use supporting attacks which will give pause to the party's killing speed. That, and the occasional running around to dispel the bomb's effects on them greatly slowed their speed. At that point, their highest DPS rating was only around 1,000,000.

Then again, it was only 30 minutes of fighting before the boss will be killed!

80%...60%...40%...

When the boss' HP had dropped down to 30%, Zhang Yang activated {Tribulation}.

For the next 10 minutes, any damage that Zhang Yang receives from the boss, would simply be reflected back at him! The best part of the skill was that the damage value that is "reflected" was not calculated by the damage that Zhang Yang receives. The skill accounted the boss' basic attack or rather, the unsuppressed damage! For example, if the boss' attack is meant to deal 200,000 damage, Zhang Yang would naturally take only around 80,000 damage after going through his Defense and damage absorption

passives. {Tribulation} will not cause the 80,000 damage, but instead, it will cause the full 200,000 damage.

The reflected damage that hits back will go through the Defense of the boss and only strike him for 181,530 if the boss' defense value is 18,470.

Zhang Yang defense was far greater than the boss. Even moreso when Zhang Yang is in his Transformed state. His Defense had reached as high as 80,050. The number was so high that any player with a one-hand weapon would not deal any significant damage to Zhang Yang! Hence, Zhang Yang was not worried about the boss going berserk. In fact, he welcomed it. The more damage the boss could deal, the better the damage that Zhang Yang could reflect back to his face!

{Tribulation} would work best when the boss' HP reaches under 20% and 10%, since the boss will go berserk, increasing his attack and skill rate. Technically speaking, if Zhang Yang has a higher HP than the boss, the overall reflected damage would be so great that Zhang Yang would not need to attack to kill the boss!

Sadly, to keep the skill secret, Zhang Yang had never once used the skill in PvP battle nor the Individual Ranking battles. If his secret was known to the world, none will even come to his challenge! That, and players will device a plan to counter his skill. It was his powerful, deadly secret.

The boss raged on as his HP dropped lower and lower. Although the boss still has over 500,000,000 HP, it was not showing signs that it was aware of the damage that was being reflected back at it. How could it be?

"Wow...noobie tank. I feel bad for calling you a noob tank. Your skill is clearly out of this world!" said Wei Yan Er with admiration and a little hint of envy.

Although having {Tribulation} could reflect damage, the caster would still have to sustain damage as well. Then again, it was like having an extra hand to attack!

Chapter 732: Two-Handed Weapon

Although the boss was clearing attacking with all it has, it would never stop the party from attacking him on and on until it reaches 20%.

It was time for the killing strike!

As mentioned before, like Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er who possess {Killing Cleave}, other classes had the skill that could increase damage, once the target has lower or equal to 20% HP. When the conditions are met, the skill can be activated to increase one's power. As such, the party had activated their "killing" skills. Wei Yan Er took a bottle of [Amateur Power Potion Transmuted Grade 10] and unleashed {Indiscriminate}. She rushed over to the boss and consumed all her Rage to cast {Killing Cleave} on the boss.

'-3,226,163!'

The damage that she had dealt that instant was so powerful that even Zhang Yang had to stop and praised the girl.

"Good job!"

"Wahahaha! This but expected of me! Haha! Now I don't feel bad for calling you noob tank! I am the wonder girl who has learned the sacred arts of the Nine Suns! I am invincible! Call me the Invincible Wonder Girl!" Wei Yan Er proudly praised herself. The smug grin on her face was then immediately wiped out by a fist from the raging boss, causing her to spin around in the air.

Luckily, she was in her Darkness Transformation state, physically, she sustained no damage. However, the fist was so powerful that the cloud of smoke that was surrounding her was blown away! It took only an instant for the smoke to return to her, though.

"Haha! Serves you right for looking down at someone!" said Fatty Han.

"Hmph! Stupid boss! You may be strong, but I am stronger! Go ahead and curse the gods for making me your opponent today!" said Wei Yan Er as she collected her composure and proudly hovered in the air. She then

swooped down to the boss and kept her attacking rhythm at the highest.

That was why no one in their right mind would call Wei Yan Er a woman, even though she was already reaching 20 years old. The girl was practically a little girl on the inside! How could someone like her find a matching partner? Then again, the fact that she was extremely popular in campus, begged to differ. In campus, many young men had fallen for her charming young looks and did not care to see what her family background was. She had even managed to be elected at one of the Zhou Su University idols! Based on what Han Ying Xue had said, she was, in history, the "flattest" girl idol ever worshipped by fans! Sadly, the little girl was like a cow listening to Bach or Beethoven. Zhang Yang was initially afraid, but relaxed that the girl would never fall for the man trying to pick her up. All their efforts will only go in the right ear and exit from the left without being processed.

Romance and love would be determined by fate. When the gods have decided a partner for the little girl, she would fall for one who will accept the person she was. Right now, she is still young. There was no reason to worry for her future. Yet.

"Die! Die! Die!" the boss screamed out loud as the killing aura started to grow stronger. The flame in its eye sockets burnt brighter than before. The boss was raging since he was being defeated by a bunch of running ants! What sort of shame would a person feel!? Be it {Tail Whip} or {Death Blade}, all skills were unleashed repeatedly at an alarming rate.

Yet, the more damage it ditched out, the more it will receive from Zhang Yang. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had retained {Tribulation} until then. It was the best time and place to use it.

"Hell yeah!"

"Awesome!"

"Good job Little Yang!"

Everyone praised Zhang Yang for his skill and laughed as the boss was getting angrier.

Despite their sudden burst of jolly, their HP bars were still limited. Even though the entire party had unleashed their Transformation skills, they could not tank the rapid use of {Tail Whip}. However, it was not much trouble. If things get too dangerous for them, Han Ying Xue could simple restore everyone HP with {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} and let the boss enjoy fighting them again from the start!

15%...10%...

When the boss' HP dropped below 10%, its attack rate was increased by one fold. Naturally, the damage reflected back on it increased as well.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

Ah...what a waste. But then again, it was not much trouble. The party's DPS power was so strong. It would not be a problem for them to kill the boss in a matter of minutes.

"Ants! Pest! I will kill you all! I will bury your bones and crush them all into sand that will build my new towers!"

"Bla bla bla! Enough with your grumbling. Don't you see that Death is coming to you soon! I want you to remember the name of your killer, that is Wei Yan Er! When you go down to hell and greet Yan Lou Wang (1), don't forget to report the manner of your death!" said Wei Yan Er while she dusted off her shoulders. It was a gesture of smugness that she had learned from watching Hollywood movies.

Daffodil Daydream giggled and said, "Yan Er dear, the boss is a western character. When he dies, he will meet Lucifer. Not Yan Lou Wang!"

"What? Oh! Meh..."

"Curse you!" cried the boss as it hurled fist after fist at the little girl. Even though the fists were as annoying as such, it was merely an act of desperation.

It was horribly easy for the party to quickly end his life.

The massive boney structure crumbled apart and fell to the ground in

pieces. Longador's voice echoed through the land when he died. "The God of Death shall revive me...You will see me...again...Kill...death..."

A bright light glowed around his body before dimming down and dropping the loot and experience points to the party.

"Stupid boss. If you do come back, I'll kick your boney butt with my Celestial tier axe! Haha!" Wei Yan Er kicked the now lifeless skull of the boss with her might, to release her pent-up rage.

"Hey! Enough wasting time. Little girl, go and do what you love most."

"Heeheehee~" As expected of a little girl, when asked to do something she likes, she would do it with a flash.

Unexpectedly, the boss had dropped two Holy tier equipment, four Ethereal tier equipment, one [Skill Point Crystal], three High grade [Aura Stone], and one skill book. It was the [Aura Stone] that no one had expected to see from the boss drop.

The [Skill Point Crystal] was distributed accordingly and after major discussion, and it was decided that Zhang Yang will take all the [Aura Stones] to upgrade [Vitality Aura]. As such, the entire party could enjoy having an additional 40% Vitality boost. It was extremely useful for both boss fight and PvP battles. Although Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} and Han Ying Xue's {Life Aura} were equally important, those will come later.

The two Holy tier equipment were weapons. One of them was a black long blade which was the same as the boss. The other had a one-handed sword which had a half-opaque, blue colored blade.

Wei Yan Er first posted the long blade to the party.

[Deleia, Death Scythe] (Holy, Two-Handed Axe)

Weapon Attack: 23,810 - 33,810

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 7,582

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 40%.

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 10%

Equip: On a successful attack, grants a chance to direct reap the soul of the target, dealing 30,000 Chaos Damage.

Level Requirement: 180

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

"Wuuu~~~" Wei Yan Er wept as she looked at the weapon in her hand and the axe on the floor. "Why must it be this way! Why must you make me choose?! I want both!"

"Nah ah! Only one."

"Grr... Fine! Noobie tank can have the new weapon. I am but a kind hearted girl. Plus, I've developed some feelings for this one right here."

Everyone laughed when she said she was kind-hearted, for everyone knew that she was the exact opposite. If you hang out with her long enough, even a monkey could read her face and know what she'll do next. The reason why she would not want the new weapon is because she did not want to spend more money socketing her equipment!

It's the characteristically stingy little girl!

Since only Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were the only players in the party who could use two-handed weapons, Zhang Yang took it after Wei Yan Er gave it up. Sadly, the Sword of Purging Devourer was unable to transfer its powerful effect to another weapon. Zhang Yang had outgrown the almighty weapon.

It was really hard to believe that the weapon had been stuck with him for more than two years. In all MMORPGs, players swap weapons all the time. To be honest, there would definitely be more than one weapon used for two years. Then again, two years was really the upper limit. If the game developers had not released any new expansions of the game and increased the Level Cap, the strongest equipment will remain until the

end of time. For example, the forgotten new class called the Shaman.

Naturally, the Sword of Purging Devourer was extremely rare for it had seals that can be broken to allow the weapon to grow stronger. That or the weapon would have been discarded long before the dinner of the same day.

"D*mn son. New weapon huh! The boss is gonna be OP af!" said Endless Starlight with admiration. Since he did not have special Inheritance effect which allowed him to equip two-handed weapons, he could only settle for the designated weapon for his class. Still, even though his equipment was good, his DPS contribution to the party overall DPS was extremely low.

"Imagine that. OP HP and OP DPS. What makes the guild master then? A god? Hahahaha!"

"Contain your excitement there, boy! There's one more sword for you!" said Wei Yan Er.

[Frost Bane] (Holy, One-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 12,330 – 20,330

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 5,832

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 40%

Equip: Increases Critical strike rate by 10%

Equip: Grants a chance to freeze a target for 3 seconds on every attack.

Level Requirement: 180

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

The sword was strong and powerful if it is used by a quick sword user like Bandit. Even though the weapon attack of a one-handed weapon and a two-handed weapon differs greatly, the effect the weapon has does not. For example, the additional equipment effect for both Frost Bane and the

Scythe was the same.

Bandits have quick attack interval speed, hence, they could gain an additional effect compared to the other classes. Both Endless Starlight and Sun Xin Yu could use one-handed swords but since Sun Xin Yu had the S class Inheritance, which grants her the bonus 5% Critical chance and damage, the priority was then given to her. Endless Starlight's class job only applied to Hammer.

As such, clenching his broken soul with pain, Endless Starlight gave up the sword to Sun Xin Yu. Wei Yan Er walked to Endless Starlight and pats his back to cheer him up. "Don't be sad for this. Next time, I'll find one one-handed hammer for you!"

The last item was the skill book, which was given to Daffodil Daydream. It was [Superior Inferno,] which was her skill.

[Superior Inferno]: Increases Inferno damage by 30% and grants a stunning effect. Lasts for 3 seconds.

Inferno is a skill that is only available to Pyromancers. With the caster as the center point, a wave of flame is shot out to 15 meters around the caster, dealing 100% magic fire attack. Now that she had obtained the upgrade, she could deal an additional 30% damage and a 3 seconds stun!

After distributing all the items, the boss' corpse disappeared as well. Like any other boss, if players do not loot all the item, the dead body of the boss would not disappear. They would not be able to continue with the quest, then!

[Goblin's High Explosive Bomb – 3rd Gen. Prototype] (Quest Item, Usable)

Use: Place the bomb and skedaddle guys! Technically, the bomb should explode after 10 seconds. But the bomb was contracted by the infamous Goblins. Their productions have always been notorious for being "overly" powerful. Perhaps you should be extra cautious of the bomb!

Note: Tick Tock Tick Tock. KABOOM? Explosion that you can trust! Goblin Tech Incorporation. The explosive that you can trust.

Chapter 733: Ancient Spiritual Beast King

Zhang Yang planted the bomb and quickly signaled the retreat. However, only after 2 seconds, the bomb exploded prematurely. The explosion was so strong that everyone, including the heavily armored Zhang Yang was blasted away like paper planes in a storm. Worst of all, the explosion almost took off all their HP.

What a useless Goblin tech...

Everyone stopped their tracks to rest and recover their HP. Fatty Han had panicked at the last second and quickly morphed into his bat form to suck on Endless Starlight's HP.

The quest had ended, yet their Transformations had over 1 hour of active duration remaining. Since it would be waste to let it expire, the party decided to go their own way to grind. After the Transformations ended, they regrouped back at Sauron's Castle and teleported back to White Jade Castle to submit the quest.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Destroy the Mithril Refinery. Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points, 500 Military Points!'

Everyone got their reward successfully and was not impressed by the experience points. It was rather bad since 10 million experience points was only the same as two elite tier monsters. Still, they were all satisfied with the 500 Military points given.

"Haha! Not bad for some scrawny humans," said Gulaj. He then stood on a chair and said, "I have some bad news. Even though the Spectre have lost their main production of Mithril, they were still able to buy from...*ahem*. They were still able to obtain their Mithril from my brethren. The production of Darkness Fall is still going on!"

"Heroes. Do not fret. There is still hope for the land. Right now, you can still put a stop to Darkness Fall by destroying their Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory! Without enough Energy Crystals, they will be unable to continue their research for Darkness Falls!"

'Ding! Gulaj has a quest for you: Destroy the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory. Will you accept it?'

What treachery! How could the goblins be selling their Mithril to the enemy!? What a money-minded bastard! Their greed for gold was far worse than the Dwarves!

Everyone nodded their heads to accept the quest.

[Destroying the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Gulaj wants you to destroy the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory of the Spectre. By destroying their base, they were unable to continue their research to finish Darkness Falls. According to Gulaj, the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory is located in the Antijar Basin of the Volcanic Dragon Mountain. Be warned, the Spectres have reinforced their defenses. You must bring a team of strong adventures to survive.

Participant Limit: 10

Progress: Destroy the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory

Quest Reward: +20,000,000 Experience Points, +500 Military Points

"Here. Take his. I have made some modifications to it myself. I can assure you that it will not be like the last time," said Gulaj as he dropped a stack of rolled explosive that looks exactly like the one you can see in Looney Tunes. Acme, to be exact.

Everyone rolled their eyes. So what if Gulaj has personally modified it? It would just be the same! The only difference it had was the name!

Just when the party was about to leave for the quest, a group of women players came to the NPC. They were the elites of Crimson Rage, including Snow Seeker. It would seem that she, Mellow Venom, and Thorny Rose were the main attacking force for Crimson Rage. At that moment, they had just reached Level 160 and probably was rushing over to start the Spectre Invasion quest line.

"Hello, guild master Zhan Yu. What kind of quest did you receive?"

Would it coincide with ours?" said Snow Seeker with such elegance that she was Zhang Yang elder sister. It was extremely polite and sweet yet Zhang Yang knew better. She was merely acting that way. If anyone falls for her sweet talks, they would be completely swallowed by her!

Wei Yan Er was the fastest then and had already shared the quest description to her. After a long, hard look, Snow Seeker laughed bitterly and said, "Ah. It seems that there will be a problem. It's the same as ours."

Everyone was puzzled. They knew that they had only just killed the boss for the previous quest. It was impossible that the system would refresh the quest when some else receives the same quest. Hence, Zhang Yang reached a conclusion. The previous quest will only unlock the subsequent quests which could then be taken by anyone. There will never be a case where one side will be the best. That will eliminate all contenders. It would be fair since if a party is unable to complete the quest, they could never proceed any further. To be fair, if the party fails to destroy the Mithril Refinery, the Spectre would have won, then, wouldn't they?

Hence, the last battle with Angus required players to complete all the quests until Angus himself is forced to show up on the battlefield. That, or the minions of Spectre will keep spawning in towns to disrupt peace. Nothing too damaging, but just enough of a bother for players to get off their *sses and solve.

Using the quest unlocking system, every player will have a chance to try out the quest even if they could never succeed in beating it. Hence, they will gain familiarity with either the monsters or the final boss fights until they could actually complete it. That is, if they were strong enough to endure the repetition.

Yet, the main story quest for the Spectre Invasion was available for all, but could only be completed by one party, and that party will be the only party receiving the reward. Technically, there was no limit as to how many parties could try to defeat the boss.

Two parties stood still, 20 pairs of eyeballs glared at each other awkwardly. When Wei Yan Er made a sudden jerk, the Crimson Rage

party responded by quickly taking out their [Teleportation Scrolls] to leave the place immediately. Lone Desert Smoke followed later, a split second slower. Only one party could receive the reward. That would only mean that the quest completion will be a race! A race of countless parties around the world that had reached Level 160! The competition is hot and running.

Zhang Yang was the only one amongst them who chose to stay at White Jade Castle to socket his new equipment. After enhancing them, he would then teleport to Han Ying Xue using the [Lover's Charm]. A Level 6 Strength Gemstone could provide 200 Strength. Same goes for Dexterity. By enhancing the Gemstone, Zhang Yang could increase the value by 50%. Since the equipment could socket two Gemstone at a time, that would be 600 attribute points. Be it Strength or Dexterity, both were fairly important for Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu!

After equipping his new weapon, Zhang Yang's attack power was at 154,194 – 182,194 after calculations. Since {Vitality Aura} had reached its max level, the bonus it provided was now up to 40% Vitality. Even though weapons will not provide Vitality points, his HP was already boosted to 1,140,490. And that was only in his normal state!

Zhang Yang was quick with his hands during socketing and quickly teleported back to the party and found Crimson Rage's party was slower. They were frantically chasing them.

Snow Seeker was determined to stick to Zhang Yang's party - no matter what. Since the quest had a participant limit of only 10 players, if the quest is similar to the previous quest, Snow Seeker would still have a chance to plant the bomb first after Zhang Yang defeats the boss.

Main story quests had a Unique attribute to them. Once they have been completed by a party, the quest will automatically be deleted from all players who have accepted the quest.

The problem lay with both Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker, or rather Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage. During the fierce battle in Sauron's Castle, Crimson Rage was the one guild that stood by Lone Desert Smoke

till the end. They were a great help to Lone Desert Smoke. That goes without saying. Hence, Lone Desert Smoke would never turn their backs to them or play them out!

Snow Seeker had anticipated that, and pressed on the chance that they could still obtain the quest reward. Even though technically both guilds had a 50% chance to complete the mission, in reality, Crimson Rage only had a small 10% chance to overthrow Lone Desert Smoke.

Naturally, Snow Seeker was no god. She could not have known the difficulty of the boss and that Zhang Yang's party had already used their Transformation skill. Toe to toe, Snow Seeker's party would have the upper hand since all of their party members had their Transformation skill ready for the final boss. However, based on the conditions of the battlefield, they might need a few days to clear all the monsters, just like the Refinery. That time alone was enough for Zhang Yang and his party to finish their Transformation cooldown. Hence, Snow Seeker's plan will still go on.

After flying for 10+ hours, the party had finally left Mar Gaia Forest, through the Forest of Clouds and entered the Antijar Basin. The party took 3 to 4 hours more to reach their final destination, the Volcanic Dragon Mountain.

"Pfft. How does the mountain look like a dragon?" said Endless Starlight, unimpressed when he saw the scenery. The mountains were covered with red maple trees that dyed the entire landscape with a deep crimson red. However, only the color matched its name, not the shape or size. There was nothing of the mountains that depicted a dragon.

"Don't mind that. Find the factory!"

At that moment, Lone Desert Smoke was still leading, with the girls of Crimson Rage far behind. Zhang Yang reached the peak of the mountain and spotted many elemental beings. There were stone, fire, water, and air elemental beings all busy roaming around on a mushroom-like structure.

Zhang Yang selected the structure and was shocked to see that the structure was a living being!

[Spiritual Beast] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 175

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 10,000

Magic Attack: 60,175 – 90,175

Skills:

[Light Energy Ray]: Blasts out a destructive ray and deals 200% magic Natural damage to a target. Range: 50 meters. Instant. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Exploding Energy Crystal]: Hurls Energy Crystals from its body to all targets within 50 meters. Deals 100% magic Natural damage. Stuns the targets for 3 seconds.

Note: The Spiritual Beast can naturally produce Energy Crystals via combining the light of the sun and Carbon Dioxide. Only Elemental Beings and the Spiritual Beast are close. Any other beings that attempts to get close will lead to his self-induce explosion. Permanently stationary.

"Oh! So the Energy Crystal that we have been using to power the Teleportation points comes from this big *ss dickhead!" Fatty Han exclaimed.

The man was never one to sugarcoat his words. Hence, the women around him were greatly offended. Of which, he did not give a single f*ck.

Zhang Yang scouted the area and could not find a boss or a point of indication of where to plant the bomb. Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he realized that this mission will be the same as the previous one. Only by killing monsters, will the quest proceed.

"So, where do we start?" asked Hundred Shots.

There were four large areas, separated by elemental beings.

"Let's start with the Air elementals first." Said Zhang Yang. Fire and Water Elemental being will surely be magic attack type. Earth elementals

will have superior defense, hence, the most logical and easiest target to start with would be the Air elementals.

Now, Crimson Rage was separated from Zhang Yang. The girls chose to attack the water elementals first, but will immediately change their position if the boss does appear.

Sadly, unknown to Zhang Yang, Fatty Han had betrayed Lone Desert Smoke by succumbing to the draws of the lustful woman of Crimson Rage. He had offered up the information of the quest of the Mithril Refinery to them, allowing the girls to understand everything they needed to know about the mission.

Chapter 734: A 'Fun' Situation to All Parties Indeed

After getting down from his pet mount, Zhang Yang went up to the head of his party. He threw his {Spear of Obliteration} as the signal to charge.

"Mourd'za leidenla!" the aggro of the two spirits were locked to each other. When one of them was lured over, the other one would follow. They were speaking in a strange and unexplainable language while they were charging towards Zhang Yang. These spirit beings were probably as tall as 5 meters. Their entire bodies were formed from a mixture of different gases. Some of the gases were gray, while some of them were white. These spiritual beings had two hands but no legs. They were levitating around mid-air.

[Volcanic Dragon Mountain Air Spirit] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Jetstream]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage on a target and blasts the target 10 meters backward.

[Self-destruct]: Detonates upon death. Causes 50,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 100 meters.

[Recuperate]: If there happens to be a Spiritual Beast in the vicinity of 50 meters from the monster, it can flee into the Spiritual Beast to recuperate its own HP.

Because the monsters had the capability to blow themselves up, the party could not afford to lure too many of them at the same time. Well, the players could time the intervals between each of the monster's death. However, the purpose of luring a bunch of monsters over would be to kill

them all as quickly as possible. If players want to plan out the interval between the deaths of each monster that they encounter, they would not be able to lure many monsters and kill them all at once. In simpler words, killing monsters all at once with AoE attacks would not let players control which monsters to kill first because AoE attacks would just bombard whichever monsters that were within the effective range of the Skills. With every monster detonating themselves after they die, it would make the entire situation to go out of hand if they ever try to kill so many of them at the same time.

Hence, it would be better to lure a little lesser of them monsters before letting themselves all out on the monsters. Zhang Yang had to be aware that Wei Yan Er would lose herself, once her excitement on killing monsters takes over her sanity. She might just go on and kill everything, causing everything to explode at the same time. Her action would surely lead to everyone's death.

Elite Tier monsters could be extremely dangerous for normal players. However, they could never post any threat to Zhang Yang and his gang. It did not take long at all for Zhang Yang and his party to take out these monsters. However, their {Self-destruct} were really powerful. Each explosion would cause 50,000 Nature damage to each of Zhang Yang's party members. There were a total of 22 targets if the Battle Companions and Pets were included. So each explosion managed to deal as much damage as 1,100,000 damage!

"What the hell! Terrorist! Bombers!" Everyone began to laugh.

After clearing a few more waves of these monsters, the party arrived before a Spiritual Beast's giant mushroom cap. They lured 3 Volcanic Dragon Air Spirits at the same time. However, right before monsters were about to die, they turned around and hid in the 'rod' of the mushroom cap.

Instantly, the Spiritual Beast that seemed to be dead was suddenly activated. It shot a beam of ray towards the entire gang.

Everyone could see the process with their own eyes. The three Volcanic Dragon Air Spirits were inside the 'rod' of the mushroom cap. They looked

like three extra moles that suddenly appeared in the 'rod'! Meanwhile, the HP bars of the three monsters were recovering at a rapid pace.

"What the... so this is like a healing rod for them?"

Well, this 'rod' packed more of just a punch in the art of healing! Not only could it heal many targets at the same time, it also had very strong attacks!

However, even though this mushroom cap 'rod' had a very high amount of HP, it had a fatal weakness. It cannot move around like normal monsters do! It was just planted firmly on the ground! If players could not defeat it, they could just retreat by backing off. Players would not need to worry that this powerful Spiritual Beast would pursue and kill them.

Although this Spiritual Beast was labeled as an Elite Tier, its HP and Attack were much more powerful than a Mythical Tier boss. It was not easy for the players to take it head-on. However, even though this monster had over 50,000,000 HP, Zhang Yang and his gang could deal over 900,000 DPS even without activating their Inheritance Transformation. It would only take about a minute to kill this monster.

However, it seemed that things were not as simple as they thought. The 3 Volcanic Dragon Air Spirits came out of the 'rod' with their HP bar full again!

Before they could take out the Spiritual Beast, it would be futile even if they try to take out the three monsters first. These monsters could just jump back into the 'rod' to fully recover their HP bars again, every time they are about to die. Therefore, everyone aimed their attacks at the Spiritual Beast first.

The Spiritual Beast did not just sit on its *ss, waiting to meet its own demise, of course. It began to throw out some crystalized Spiritual Energy into its surroundings. Those crystalized Spiritual Energy immediately exploded right after they landed. Instantly, the attacks caused quite a number of damage to the gang! Han Ying Xue and Sweetheart Fantasy began to heal everyone as quickly as they could. Well, the three monsters would be detonating themselves when their HP bars are emptied. There

would definitely be casualties if their HP bars are not healed back up.

After running around in the surroundings like cats and dogs, they finally took care of the giant fellow and the three little monsters. Everyone was exhausted after the busy session. Truth to be told, the correct way of taking care of that situation was to lure the three little monsters 50 meters away from the Spiritual Beast. By doing so, the three monsters would not have the opportunity to heal themselves at all.

As for the Spiritual Beast, it would depend on whether the players want to take it out or not. Well, the system designed the monsters to stay in one spot. Maybe the players could just plant a bomb on the monster and blow it to kingdom come. There was actually no need to engage the monster at all.

However, Zhang Yang and his party have been known to be extremely powerful. Even though it was quite troublesome to take on the Spiritual Beast, they would have to take the long way around if they don't kill it. That would cost them a lot more time than just killing it. As long as they stay cautious while dealing with the Spiritual Beast, nothing should go wrong.

Zhang Yang and his gang wiped out any monsters that got in their way. However, the monsters were too numerous. Zhang Yang and his gang took one day to clean up a quarter of the entire Air Spirit Region. On the second day and the third day, the two parties of Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage had been camping at the site. The number of monsters in that area was just too abundant. Furthermore, there were no other players interrupting them to take their share. Therefore, the two parties managed to enjoy the abundant Experience Points from killing hordes of monsters!

--- the area had implemented a mirroring technology. Those players who had not reached Level 160 and had not received the quest would not be able to see nor enter this battle area.

However, on the fourth day, a third party had entered the area --- Land of Savages from the India Region!

They did not try to pick a fight with the other two parties. They chose to

clear out the monsters in the Fire Spirit Region. It did not take long before a fourth party entered the vicinity. It was the Hell Family from Europe Region. They chose to clear the Rock Spirit Region. Right after that, the fifth and the sixth parties had also entered the 'arena'. They were the Justice League from the America Region and the Wolf Warrior from the Africa Region.

As the entire region was too big to begin with, the Air Spirit Region itself was enough to have 10 parties killing monsters in the vicinity, without having to compete with each other. Therefore, none of the parties provoked any other party into a fight. Everything was peaceful among the parties so far. They were just minding their own businesses --- no one would want to engage in a battle that would not benefit them at all. Well, high Tier players rarely engaged in battle with each other. Meanwhile, normal players would have raised their weapons and charged at the other players from their enemy Region without any hesitation.

However, when a boss or a location of a countdown bombing is spawned, the peacefulness between these high Tier players would be broken right away. When that happens, everyone would not be able to avoid a fierce battle among themselves. After all, only one party could complete the main story quest.

On the fifth day and the sixth day, more and more parties entered the Spiritual Region. Currently, only the top Tier players managed to reach Level 160 and enter this region. If there are any conflicts happening between them, the battle would become as fierce as it would be whenever there is a Territory Conquest!

Meanwhile, the current situation did not have a 3-hour timeframe, like Territory Conquests did. There was no time limit at all in such a battle in this region. Furthermore, it still remained unknown whether there would be a boss in the region or not. Even if the players are a little bit weaker than the others, they could just lay low until a boss is spawned. When the others are busy battling the boss, they could just interrupt the battle and kill those players. With the boss's 'help', they should be able to take out their opponents without much of a problem.

Even though none of them had provoked any battle among themselves, everyone knew that a high degree storm was about to explode soon. The moment when a boss is spawned, everyone would start killing each other.

As expected, more and more parties were entering the region on the seventh and the eighth day. They were all top Tier players from different Regions as well.

'Ang!' In the morning of the ninth day, a long and muffled roar echoed throughout the entire region. It was ear-piercingly loud! Right in the middle on top of the Volcanic Dragon Mountain, a gigantic Spiritual Beast was suddenly spawned. Compared to those Spiritual Beast that were only 50 meters tall, this mushroom capped Spiritual Beast was approximately thousands of meters tall! It looked like a gigantic mushroom had grown on top of the Volcanic Dragon Mountain. The mushroom cap had reached out to a radius of 500 meters wide. The size of that cap had completely covered the entire mountain.

[Ancient Spiritual Beast King] (Holy, Elemental)

Level: 180

HP: 18,000,000,000

Defence: 18,470

Magic Attack: 85,228 – 125,228

[Skills]:

[Light Energy Ray]: Shoots out a beam of destructive ray towards the target, causing 200% Magic Attack of Nature Damage to the target. Range: 1,000 meters. Instant chanting. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Timed Energy Charge]: Throws out its spiritual energy into its surrounding, causing 200,000 Nature Damage to all targets in 1,000 meters. All targets will be stunned for 3 seconds.

[Energy Mine]: Plants a spiritual energy on the ground. When a player gets too near to the spiritual energy, the spiritual energy will explode and causes 150,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 30-meter

radius of the blast.

[Elemental Constitution]: Recovers 1% once in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovery will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: As the only remaining ancient Spiritual Beast, this Spiritual Beast has a gigantic body mass that would send fear into the hearts of men. Its only weakness is that it could only move in and out from the hole it dug itself out of.

The moment when the boss was spawned, all parties immediately stopped what they were doing. However, none of them went up to battle the boss.

A Holy Tier boss was a disastrous threat to any of the parties at the current stage of the game. Meanwhile, the first party that engages themselves in battle with the boss would immediately become the primary target of the other parties as well. The other parties would take advantage to take out their competitors, without a doubt in their minds. So whoever who goes up first would be wiped up in a matter of seconds!

From that moment on, none of the parties moved out. All of them were waiting for someone to make their first move. However, the boss would not stay idle either, even though no one was attacking it. After all, this mushroom capped Spiritual Beast had over 1,000 meters of attack range. That would also mean that its aggro range would reach out by 1,000 meters!

Instead of the players making their first move on the boss, the boss launched its first attack out. It shot out a beam of ray towards a Priest from a party that hailed from the Europe Region. A damage of 220,000 instantly took away half of the Priest's HP bar! Shoof! Another beam of ray was shot out right after that. Well, because none of the players were attacking the boss, the mushroom head did not have a specific target to focus on. So it was randomly shooting its attacks out at anyone who was on its aggro list.

So now, the real question had changed. Should they fight or should they escape!?

Without a further moment of hesitation, most of the parties had made up their mind. They began to fly away from the boss on their Flying Mounts. Well, who would be stupid enough to charge in and die?

However, everyone who tried to flee had discovered a very awkward situation. The area of 1,000-meter radius around the boss had been cut off by a layer of invisible air wall! In other words, whoever who was within the aggro range of the boss had been trapped! There was no way that they could escape from the boss now! Players who were outside the vicinity could not get in while the players within the vicinity could not get out!

Obviously, this was the battle stage. Without taking out the boss or the boss taking out all the players, the air wall would stay!

Well, that was awkward as f*ck. It would not even matter whether you hit the boss or not. The boss would just come over and hit you! Furthermore, the boss had its trustworthy {Light Energy Ray} that could allow the boss to focus its attack on one target. Then the boss also had its {Energy Mine} and {Timed Energy Charge} to deal AoE attacks to the players in its surroundings. As long as you're engaged in the battle with the boss, you'd be the one suffering!

Chapter 735: A Seize

The boss did not give everyone within its attack range a moment to hesitate. It began to throw countless of small pinkish crystalized square boxes to its surroundings. It did not take long before the entire space of the area was filled with these small pinkish crystalized square boxes. Suddenly, every single one of those crystals exploded. It was the boss' {Timed Energy Charge}!

Boom!

Violent currents of energy whirled across the entire area. Everyone could see that space itself was being torn apart by the whirling force of the energy flow with their own eyes. A crack that looked like a black hole appeared right in the middle of the air. Everyone in the vicinity sustained over 200,000 basic damage! That wave of attack was fatal to most players in the surroundings. Well, a DPS player that is well equipped with a full set of Level 150 Ethereal Tier equipment could only have over 400,000 HP. Meanwhile, Spellcasters like Priests would have even lower amount of HP, even if they have a full set of Level 150 Ethereal Tier equipment on them! They would most likely have about 340,000 HP, give or take!

Although everyone in the vicinity had mounted on their Mounts to boost their Maximum HP, how many of them would be able to have a full set of Ethereal Tier equipment? It would have been very fortunate if they even have a Mythical Tier Pet Mount. Furthermore, mounting on a Mythical Tier pet could boost one's Maximum HP up by 200,000 HP, at best. A player would only have at most, 600,000 HP after that.

Even if that is the case, the players would still be suffering a great deal of damage after sustaining a total of 200,000 damage.

Everyone was an easy prey to the boss now. If they do not fight back now, they would be as good as dead! Furthermore, they would not be able to rejoin the boss battle if they ever get killed. The main reason being, that there was an invisible air wall surrounding the entire area now. If any of the party manages to hold their ground until the very end, they might even

get to kill the boss and claim everything for themselves!

Therefore, all parties within the vicinity decided to strike back at the boss. They began to bombard the boss with everything they had.

The body mass of the boss was just too big for anyone to comprehend. Its mushroom head had already occupied an area over 500-meter radius wide. Therefore, there was no way that anyone would have missed the target. The entire target was even bigger than what everyone could see!

"We'll be attacking from the top!" Zhang Yang shouted. Then, he led his party and flew towards the top of the mushroom cap. A large number of players began to launch their attacks around the bottom of the mushroom cap as aggressively as they could.

Zhang Yang did not intend to fix the aggro of the boss onto him. However, his damage output was just too powerful. Furthermore, his passive Skill {Shield Oath} even provided him a 20% additional aggro value. Therefore, it did not take long before he became the primary target of the boss. The boss began to spam its {Light Energy Ray} on Zhang Yang!

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, his Defence was high enough for him to hang on. Each {Light Energy Ray} could only deal approximately 140,000 damage to him. Furthermore, he had Han Ying Xue supporting him from his rear. She managed to heal him up good, all by herself. Other than that, Fantasy Sweetheart and a few other Healing-type Battle Companions were also supporting Zhang Yang from the rear as well.

None of them had activated their Inheritance Transformation just yet. That was mainly because, no one understood how powerful the other parties are, and how long would the boss battle take. If the boss battle takes longer than 2 hours, then their effort would become pointless if they activate their Inheritance Transformations a little too early. They would end up doing the heavy work for the other parties instead!

Everyone was on the same page, hitting hard. However, everyone understood as well that when the HP bar of the boss is reduced to a certain level, this fragile 'bond' between them would be broken in an

instant. Everyone would be competing against each other to be the one slaying the boss. After all, everyone was striving to be the ones who complete the main story quest of the game!

Fortunately, even though the Ancient Spiritual Beast King was a Holy Tier boss, it was not deemed as one of those super powerful World Tier bosses! World Tier bosses would definitely have the capability of bombarding everyone with countless waves of AoE attacks! They would not have any AoE Skill that have a long cooldown of 30 seconds!

Long before this, Zhang Yang had encountered a boss named 'Martyr Unduin'. Although Martyr Unduin was just a Gray-Silver Tier boss, it was a World Tier boss. With only one of its {Shin Fire Ball}, the boss managed to torch the entire ground up without even have to wait for the Skill to cooldown!

If this boss could also spam its {Timed Energy Charge} without the need to wait for any cooldown period, everyone in the vicinity would be wiped up, in a matter of minutes if they do not activate their Inheritance Transformations.

Upon battling on for 5 to 6 minutes, the boss's HP bar had been reduced by 10%. Judging from that pace, the boss would be taken out in about an hour! Furthermore, no one had activated their Inheritance Transformations just yet. If everyone activates their Inheritance Transformation in the first place, they could have taken down the boss twice as fast as they could now!

However, everyone knew how to do the math. Therefore, players began to activate their Inheritance Transformation the moment their HP bars were healed back to their full state!

Suddenly, there were at least 20 players hopping off from the back of their Flying Mounts. They were flying with their own powers. Those players were either holding a Class A Inheritance or a Class S Inheritance.

The HP bar of the boss was reducing at an insanely fast pace. However, instead of calling the boss a beast, the boss looked more like a plant. The boss only struck out its {Light Energy Ray} and {Timed Energy Charge}

even though it was whacked up badly by the players. Sometimes, it would also activate its {Energy Mine,} trying to get players to step on them.

At the beginning of the boss battle, the boss was a threat that everyone could not ignore. However, now that everyone had cast aside their prejudices for the moment to focus their attacks on the boss, the boss was now facing a large bunch of top Tier players all around the world! It was a combination of powerful formation that no Region could form. Every single high Tier player from all around the world were together in this! After everyone activates their Inheritance Transformations, they obtained a large amount of boost on their amount of HP. Because of that, the threat that the boss posed in the beginning of the boss battle had been minimized.

The higher the HP amount, the higher the Margin of Error that players would have. They could also give their Healers more time to heal, if they had more HP. Because of that, it would become harder for the boss to decrease the number of players in the boss battle.

In the blink of an eye, the mushroom head boss had become so pathetic to look at. Its mushroom head was bombarded with players' attacks so badly that it looked like the surface of the moon! There were countless holes all over it!

80%, 70%, 60%!

The HP bar of the boss was decreasing even faster now! The boss could not help it, because most of the high Tier players had activated their Inheritance Transformations now. Even though the boss had insanely powerful attacks, it had an AoE Skill that could not be triggered frequently. Just imagine it. If the boss could activate its {Light Energy Ray} once every two seconds, the situation would have become very different now. The players would still be struggling, even if they activate their Inheritance Transformations!

40%, 30%, 20%!

When the boss's HP had entered its 'Killing Cleave' stage, finally, there were a small number of parties who could no longer hold their heads low.

They broke the fragile 'bond' of alliance among the players and started slicing up their 'teammates'!

The first party that went rogue was a party from the Africa Region. They launched their ferocious attacks on another party from Australia Region that was positioned closest to them. Because of that, the PvP matches began to bloom across the battlefield. Things became messy in no time at all! Well, it was actually an expected outcome. The boss would only drop a few powerful pieces of equipment. Even one party would complain that the loots were far from enough for a single party! Furthermore, there could only be one party that completes the main story quest. The only way to 100% secure that was to eliminate all opponents in the vicinity.

Someone had started the war. So, the others followed. More and more parties began to attack the other parties around them. As long as they were not from the same party, just kill them!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his party did not make any move on the other players. They were very focused on bringing the boss down, Because the boss had {Elemental Constitution} that could let the boss recover a certain amount of HP over the time, they could not afford to let the boss stay idle and heal itself back up! However, everyone was reserving their powerful Skills that had a longer cooldown period for the moment. They planned to use them only at the last possible moment right before the boss dies.

As the battlefield was getting more intense in every passing second, everyone began to get serious. They no longer held back their powerful Skills. They began to activate their super Skills and Spells on their opponents. The visual effects of the Skills bombarding out was just stunning! If anyone is just there to enjoy the view of it, that person would be able to enjoy a spectacular view!

The party battles had begun. The rate of the boss losing its HP began to slow down. If the AoE Skill of the boss could be described as a drizzle before that, then the boss's AoE attacks had suddenly become extremely threatening! Players were slaughtering among themselves while their HP bars were dropping like hell. Even Healers could no longer keep their HP

bars up anymore. If they are not careful, they could be taken out by the boss's AoE attacks all of a sudden!

"Zhan Yu!"

Suddenly, a loud roar was heard. 3 parties flew up to Zhang Yang all of a sudden. They were parties from the Justice League, the Dark Palace and the Undying Souls. Every one of them was glaring at Zhang Yang with murderous intent. Obviously, they had come up with a deal that they would be sticking up together until they have taken down Lone Desert Smoke.

"Zhan Yu, you really have a lot of enemies, huh? Haha!" Another party had appeared. They came up to the Lone Desert Smoke --- it was the party from Paragon that was led by God's Left Hand!

Among these 4 parties, there were two players with Class S Inheritance and at least 3 players with Class A Inheritance! Their combined strength had definitely exceeded the strength of Zhang Yang's party! If they really go head-on with the four parties, Zhang Yang and his party would definitely lose without a doubt!

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu! Need a hand?" Snow Seeker suddenly appeared and smiled. She had led her army of ladies over and stood side by side with the Lone Desert Smoke.

Real friends would not only add icing on the cake. They would offer timely help or support!

Fatty Han immediately screamed, "Ladies from Crimson Rage! You're the best! I'm willing to shoot for you until I die!"

Piak!

Everyone began to whack him up for good. They were aiming their fists and palms at his face. Instantly, Fatty Han was struck to the point that he spun in the air over and over again.

"4 VS 2! Zhan Yu, you still have a small chance of winning, don't you think?" God's Left Hand said coldly. He had been pursued by Zhang Yang before. He even got killed by Zhang Yang and dropped his previous broken

chapter of the [Book of Revelation]. So, of course he had a score to settle with Zhang Yang.

"Then count us in!" Suddenly, Dusk Phoenix waved her hand and all of her members of the Hell Family went up and stood side by side with the Lone Desert Smoke as well. Although everyone from Hell Family was not willing to do it, who would dare to defy the order of a real-life princess then?

"Dusk Phoenix!" God's Left Hand was infuriated. Then he roared in rage and said, "Don't forget! You're also one of the parties from Europe Region!"

"Cut that crap of yours! So you're saying that you can join forces with the North America Region and the Japan-Korea Region, but I can't join forces with China Region? Oh my pathetic, little God's Left Hand, do you have a stroke or something?" Dusk Phoenix glared at God's Left Hand with rage and said. God's Left Hand was so infuriated that he was trembling in rage.

Fatty Han just got up from being whacked. He immediately scratched his head and said, "God's Left hand? Hehe, from what I can see, you're jerking off so often that you're godly indeed! We should just call you God's Masturbating Left Hand! Because it's very obvious that you've been jerking off too much that your IQ has decreased, no, deceased, sorry!"

Upon hearing what Fatty Han had to say, everyone laughed out loud. Even the people from Undying Souls, Justice League and Dark Palace were trying to hold back their own laughs.

"You bastard!" God's Left Hand was no longer calm. He fluttered his wings and charged straight at Fatty Han with murderous intent. Right after he made the first move, his party members followed him into battle. Meanwhile, Captain America and his goons did not stand idly. They would not allow Zhang Yang and friends to slaughter God's Left Hand and his party up. So they also charged into battle.

"Oi! Yellow hair guy! I'm not going to get gay with you! You've picked the wrong guy! Starlight! He's all yours! You don't have to hold back for me!

Wreck his *sshole!" Even though the big battle had begun, Fatty Han was still fooling around with his words. He turned and aimed his arrow at a Thief while he screamed in a strange voice.

"Brother Fatty! I don't do gay as well!" Endless Starlight replied in a weak voice.

"Starlight! Keep God's Left Hand busy!" Zhang Yang began to assign combat roles to his party members. God's Left Hand had an extremely tough Defence. However, his Attack power was not too powerful. Endless Starlight would be able to keep him occupied for a long period of time. If Zhang Yang went straight up to God's Left Hand, it would be a waste of Zhang Yang's high damage output! He should be focusing on other matters first.

Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu had locked her attention onto Heart of Destruction. Ever since their encounter back in the Forest Gump's Fortress, Sun Xin Yu was pissed because the battle between the two of them was interrupted before they could finish it off. Well, Heart of Destruction had retreated after he found out that there was no way he and his party could claim victory over the Territory Conquest. Therefore, this would be the continuation of their previous battle. No one should interfere this time!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had turned themselves into killers. They joined hands and charged into the alliance of the four 'countries' and begin to slaughter anyone within their cross-sights.

Chapter 736: Apocalyptic Bondage

God's Left Hand was occupied. Heart of Destruction was engaged in a fierce battle. So who was left to stop the greatest threat of all time, Zhang Yang?

No one!

Hourglass Figure and the members of the Land of Savages were engaged in a fierce battle with two parties that held quite some grudges against them. So there was no way that they would cut in to stop Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er, Felice and the Phoenix pet formed together to become a force so powerful that no one could reckon with them anymore! Furthermore, Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} could cause all his enemies to suffer a 75% reduction in their Healing Efficiency. Whoever who gets targeted by them, would be as good as dead, even if that player activates a Class B Inheritance Transformation!

Unfortunately, no one on the battlefield had a milky-light shining down on their heads. Obviously, none of them had come across any broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] recently. Zhang Yang could only sigh and rant. Captain America and God's Left Hand must have slacked off too much because they had yet to locate the other chapters yet even after they had so much time after their last encounter.

So, how would Captain America and God's Left Hand feel if they ever find out about Zhang Yang's rant concerning them?

Even though everyone had basically moved their focus onto the PvP matches, they could still deal quite a remarkable amount of damage to the boss whenever they used their AoE Skills --- the body mass of the boss was just too large! Everyone was basically battling on top of the mushroom head of the boss! Well, there was no doubt that the splash attacks of their AoE attacks would burn the boss as well!

However, the HP bar of the boss was reducing at a much slower pace, because the boss was only suffering damage from players' AoE Skills. Everyone had the same mentality this time. Clear out every single enemy

in the vicinity before focusing back to the boss. Well, it was true that the players could take their own sweet time to kill the boss when there are no enemies left around them. Upon killing the boss, they could also claim the loot all to themselves!

Quite a number of weaker parties began to form alliances among themselves. They intended to work together to take down the parties that were stronger than them. After they could finally take out the stronger parties, they would dissolve their Alliance and battle against each other. Well, survival of the fittest! Therefore, there was no guarantee that the strongest party would be able to last till the end, because of that. After all, everyone here should at least have a certain level of skill to make it into this map. Other than players who held a Class S Inheritance or a Class A Inheritance such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Hourglass Figure, the other players would almost be at the same standard in terms of their skills and experiences.

For instance, Lone Desert Smoke was deemed to have the strongest party of 10 in the entire server. However even they could not take it all if 4 parties formed an Alliance to take them on! If it wasn't for Crimson Rage and Hell Family, the entire party might get wiped out eventually. Or maybe, Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue who had a Class S Inheritance might survive the onslaught.

"Take out Zhan Yu first!" Everyone from any of the four parties were screaming and shouting the same thing. That 'godly' existence must be eliminated first if they ever want to win the battle. Everyone already knew about Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} and {Charge Up Strike}. If he ever managed to accumulate 39 EP over a battle, Zhang Yang would pump up his Attack by using {Charge Up Strike} before giving a full powered blow on his opponent with his {God of War Devastation}. That one single strike after the {Charge Up Strike} could cause devastating damage to 40 players at the same time!

With Zhang Yang's current Attack power, that single attack from his {God of War Devastation} after activating his {Charge Up Strike} could reach up to 4,500,000 damage! That strike could deal that high damage to

every one of them within the effective range of the Skill! That was the terrifying part of it! However, even though Zhang Yang's party had formed an Alliance with the Hell Family, the system would not recognize that. Zhang Yang's attack would still spread and hit the members of the Hell Family like they were also the enemies --- well, who would still have the time to think about all that? Even if Zhang Yang really collaterally hit the members of the Hell Family, only the 10 members of Hell Family would become the collateral damage of the battle. As long as Zhang Yang could accumulate another 10 EP, he would be able to get things done!

Accumulating 50 EP would require 500 seconds. If Zhang Yang goes out explosively like that once in every 500 seconds, combined with the attacks from the others around him, God's Left Hand and his goons would definitely be wiped out eventually! Maybe God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction could use their fast movement speed they obtained by having a Class S Inheritance, but the other members of their party would definitely be splattered! So what would be the point of only the two of them surviving by the end of that?

Therefore, their first target must be Zhang Yang, the biggest threat of all time!

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. He noticed that everyone was aiming their guns at him. However, he did not show any signs of retreating. Instead, he went all out on them. The Reaper charged up to Zhang Yang and began to whirl his weapon like a hurricane.

"Are you in a hurry to die?"

"You arrogant f*ck!"

"Just f*ck him up!"

The players from the Alliance of the four parties were infuriated by the arrogant attitude on Zhang Yang's face. They began to launch their most powerful attacks on him. They were venting their rage onto Zhang Yang.

{Tribulation} activated! {Shield Wall} activated! {God of War Shield} activated!

Bring it on! The harder they hit the better!

Countless attacks landed on Zhang Yang. However, at the same time, countless attacks were reflected back at those who were attacking Zhang Yang! High values of damage were dealt right back at the attackers!

Zhang Yang looked literally like a hedgehog. The attackers could still deal damage to him. Well, at least their attacks were reflected back at them. Meanwhile, with Zhang Yang's current Defence, the attackers could only deal about 100,000 damage to him, with each of their attacks. However, Zhang Yang could reflect about 200,000 damage back at the attackers. What's the point of even fighting?

Especially after Zhang Yang had activated his {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang would have over 80,000 Defence upon activating his Inheritance Transformation. There would not be any Physical attack that could penetrate that amount of Defence within these 10 seconds. Even if any Spell attacks could land on Zhang Yang, they would not be able to deal much of a damage to him. However, some of the attacks from his enemies were even resisted!

So no matter what, every single attack that landed on Zhang Yang would be reflected back to the players who attacked him! No one in the current stage of the game could have such an ability to reflect attacks! Hitting on Zhang Yang was like hitting yourself with all you got!

Furthermore, Daffodil Daydream, Snow Seeker and the others would not just stay idle. They were also dealing damage from aside. Receiving attacks from both sides, these players who were surrounding Zhang Yang instantly suffered a tremendous reduction in their HP!

Dumbfounded!

They just stood there dumbfounded!

They were really dumbfounded!

What the hell! How could there be such an insane Skill in the game? How could anyone have survived that!

"Stop attacking Zhan Yu now!"

"F*ck your mother! I almost got killed because my attacks were reflected back at me!"

The best way to handle the {Tribulation} would be to let one person kite Zhang Yang around for over 10 minutes. After all, the {Tribulation} can basically reflect everything back at any attackers that attempt to attack Zhang Yang. As long as no one tries to deal any damage or a very low amount of damage on Zhang Yang, {Tribulation} would basically become useless.

However, the most important thing was that even if Zhang Yang did not have his {Tribulation}, he would still be as powerful as a god-slayer! They ganged up on him because they were afraid of his terrifying attacks. The situation became awkward for Zhang Yang's enemies because whoever tried to attack him, they would be receiving back a damage value that was higher than the damage they dealt on him. Well, hitting him was like hitting themselves even harder! So they stopped their assaults on Zhang Yang for the moment.

There was only one word to describe their situation right now. Pathetic!

How about trying to use Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang? Well, Zhang Yang could just use his [Mobility Potion], {Warrior's Will}, or his other Accessories to break free from the Status Restriction Effects! Furthermore, it was not like all 40 of them were battling against one Zhang Yang. Some of them were preoccupied with their own opponents at the moment. They did not get much chance to really focus their firepower on Zhang Yang. If only they could focus all of their attacks on Zhang Yang all the time, they might have a slight chance of taking out Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and whirled his 'death scythe' at his enemies. His God of War EP was slowly accumulating!

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

Shoof! A shadow of an axe flashed across the battlefield. 36 players received a damage of 4,500,000. Because Zhang Yang had activated an AoE Skill that spread out wide into the surrounding, not only God's Left

Hand and Alliance members were inflicted with damage, even the boss and a few unfortunate members of the Hell Family were caught in the blast!

His attack was totally dope! Players who activate their Class B Inheritance Transformation lost over half of their total HP! Meanwhile, judging from the intensified situation of the battle, Healers were not able to do a thing to support them. Most of them lost more than 50% of their total amount of HP! It would already be a fortunate thing if their HP did not go down below 20%!

Right after that strike, about 20 players were instantly killed! They turned into streams of white light and reported themselves at the Graveyard!

"Wah! Noon tank, that Skill is too awesome!" Wei Yan Er's eyes were widened and glittering. Even though she also had her own powerful AoE Skill, that was only 8 times stronger than her Strength attribute. She could only deal approximately 140,000 damage to each of her enemies within her attack range. The damage that Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} could deal would be far more than that!

However, both {God of War Devastation} and {Charge Up Strike} had over 1 minute of cooldown period. Furthermore, Zhang Yang needed to accumulate a certain amount of EP before he could deal that much of a damage to all his foes. It was not like he could just use it anytime and anywhere he wanted.

Facing such an insane attack from Zhang Yang, the Alliance of the four parties were began to falter. Having a god slayer as their opponent, they had no idea how to win the battle.

"Zhan Yu! I'm your opponent!" God's Left Hand managed to tear himself off Endless Starlight. He fluttered his wings and flew up to Zhang Yang. Well, he was probably the only one who had enough Defence and Healing power to make up with the reflective ability of Zhang Yang's {Tribulation}. He is probably the only one who could hold Zhang Yang off from unleashing hell upon his newly formed Alliance!

"I'm not going to waste my time on you! Pui!" Well, there was nothing beneficial getting himself engaged with a player that has a high Defence and a high Healing ability after all. Zhang Yang did not even look at God's Left Hand. He continued to whirl about his weapon at the other members of the Alliance in an attempt to kill as many of them as possible.

"Argh ---" God's Left Hand felt so humiliated that he let out a raging roar. He swung his left hand and threw a beam of white light onto Zhang Yang. The white light sank into Zhang Yang's body immediately.

[Apocalyptic Bondage]: Makes the target focus only on you. Lasts for 10 minutes.

This was a new Skill that God's Left Hand had learned when he reached Level 160. It was a Skill on the same level as the {Tribulation}. However, this Skill could forcefully acquire aggro from the target!

Instantly, Zhang Yang was like entered a state of 'void'. Other than God's Left Hand, everyone had vanished without a trace! In other words, other than God's Left hand, he could not battle anyone else!

What an impervious Skill! What the f*ck!? That had really 'disabled' Zhang Yang from the battlefield for good!

{Warrior's Will}? Ineffective!

Invincibility Effect from his other Accessories? Ineffective as well!

The feeling was akin to how Captain America and the others felt with his {Tribulation}. Zhang Yang was annoyed and irritated by this {Apocalyptic Bondage} as much as that!

"God's Masturbating Left Hand! If you really wanted me to kill you so badly, I'll satisfy you! I'm a simple man!" Zhang Yang slit over to God's Left Hand in lightning speed and swung his 'death scythe' straight at his neck. However, Zhang Yang was reserving all of his AoE Skills for the moment.

Although he could not see the others in his surroundings, that did not necessarily mean that he had vanished from the battlefield and ended up somewhere else. Well, a single unit attack could not land on anyone when

the player is unable not lock on onto the target. However, an AoE attack did not require the player to lock on their targets in order to hit their foes. As long as their targets are standing within the effective range of the AoE attack, they would surely be hit by the impact of the Skill!

As expected, Hundred Shots and the others immediately reported back to Zhang Yang after Zhang Yang struck out with his {God of War Crushing Strike} --- effective! Their enemies had been hit by the impact of Zhang Yang's devastating Skill!

However, Zhang Yang was still better at focusing his attack on one single target. Although the impact of his {God of War Crushing Strike} could spread out quite a distance, each strike could only deal an AoE attack of 180,000 Damage. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would need 30 seconds just to accumulate 3 EP. Actually, that was quite similar to the boss's {Timed Energy Charge}. It would not cause much harm to players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation. Well, at least the threat he posed was not fatal.

Zhang Yang's Inheritance had really showed the others how a high Attack power looked like! The name of the God of War prevails. Meanwhile, God's Left Hand was more focused on protecting his party members. The {Apocalyptic Bondage} that was cast on Zhang Yang had crippled his Attack power. Zhang Yang had been restrained so badly that he could only move around like a blind man. If it weren't for the {Tribulation} that he activated on himself, Zhang Yang would have been struck down by the attacks from all of his enemies in his surroundings!

Never underestimate a Class S Inheritance Transformation! Not even a little! Every single one of the Inheritance Transformation in the game had their own unique traits. After all, Class S Inheritances were unique in their own way, in which only one person would have one Class S Inheritance!

Zhang Yang began to unleash his attacks on God's Left Hand like a crazy person. Meanwhile, God's Left Hand was attempting to delay the inevitable. He was defending himself against Zhang Yang's assaults while trying to heal his party members. He did a remarkable job in both defending and healing.

Chapter 737: Fall between Two Stools

However, when it comes down to Healing Ability, no one in the entire server would match the Healing Ability of Han Ying Xue!

Although God's Left Hand's Healing Capability could really pack a punch, he was also half-oriented on his Defence as well. Unlike Han Ying Xue, he did not lose himself fully in the art of healing. Under the circumstance of having a Class S Inheritance, how could a player who cultivates both Defence and healing match the ability of a player who fully cultivates only in healing? Of course, there would be a difference between them!

As long as Han Ying Xue does not die on the battlefield, she could basically assure that everyone in her party could stay alive, at least! Of course, she could only do it under the circumstance that she was not affected by any Status Restriction Skill. She had to be able to healing her party members without any restriction.

The party was holding up solid. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang could only threaten God's Left Hand, because he was being whammied by God's Left Hand's {Apocalyptic Bondage}. So he decided to fully focus on taking God's Left Hand out first. Zhang Yang no longer afford to hold back on him anymore as he began to bombard God's Left Hand with everything he had.

Back in the day at Souron's castle, Zhang Yang had pressured God's Left Hand so much that he could only cry in misery while trying to run away from Zhang Yang. Now that he had some Holy Tier equipment on, his Attack power had increased even further. With him attacking at full strength, God's Left Hand felt a pressure that he had never felt before in his entire life, playing this game!

Fortunately for him, God's Left Hand had also switched a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment before this. Although his shield was still an Ethereal Tier equipment, his total amount of HP had been boosted up to over 700,000 HP. Upon activating his Inheritance Transformation, God's Left

Hand now had over 28,000,000 HP!

With a higher amount of HP, it gave more room for God's Left Hand to maximize the potential of his Healing Ability. If he has too little amount of HP and he gets killed in an instant, there would be no healing to begin with, would there? If he has an average amount of HP, he might get interrupted while he chanting his Spells. When that happens, he might get killed by Zhang Yang with a series of combination attacks!

With a total amount of 28,000,000 HP, even if Zhang Yang charged up with his {Charge Up Strike} before activating his {God of War Devastation} or other high damage Skills like {God of War Battle Axe}, Zhang Yang could only deal a basic damage of approximately 4,500,000 to God's Left Hand --- that being said, Zhang Yang could deal that much damage only if God's Left Hand did not have any Damage Immunity or Damage Absorption!

Therefore, even if God's Left Hand is interrupted while he is chanting, he would not be taken out immediately, even if Zhang Yang chains a combination. On the other hand, as long as he survives Zhang Yang's attacks, he could just constantly healing himself up so that he could drag the battle on for as long as he desired. His main objective was to distract Zhang Yang long enough for his Alliance 'friends' to kill Zhang Yang's party and friends.

At first, the battle began with 40 players VS 30 players. Obviously, God's Left Hand and his newly formed Alliance had the upper hand in the battle. However, thanks to Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} that was charged up by his {Charge Up Strike}, half of his people were killed instantly. Truth to be told, he and his newly formed Alliance were destined to lose even after he managed to isolate Zhang Yang from the others.

Tragically, God's Left Hand noticed that his newly formed Alliance was losing badly. His own party members were barely hanging on because they still had God's Left Hand to heal them. There was no way that they could annihilate their enemies at this rate. However, the party members of the other parties in the newly formed Alliance could not heal each other. As God's Left Hand could not heal all of them, and they could only wait for

their miserable death to come.

The effect of the {Destructive Smash} was definitely a crippling factor to 'healing'. Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} could reduce up to 75% of the enemies' Healing Efficiency. Even though God's Left Hand was holding on for the moment, it seemed that he was just prolonging the inevitable. His HP bar was reducing constantly, even though he was healing himself at his full capacity.

God's Left Hand sighed in his heart. If he had made up his mind to use {Apocalyptic Bondage} at the beginning of the battle, the current situation of this battle might be totally the opposite of the current situation! Well, firstly, he had gotten tangled up with Endless Starlight at the start. Secondly, he did not make his decision quick enough because of Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash}. He did not have the confidence to ensure that his Alliance would hold up long enough before they annihilate their enemies!

Meanwhile, if he dies while doing so, his party would have zero chance of securing the quest to themselves. Well, without a leader with Class S Inheritance, the outcome would surely be very different. Although he really wanted to kill Zhang Yang to show his retaliation, deep down in his heart, he knew. It was quite common for players to slaughter each other up. People would say 'Just Business'. They were just following the game's rules after all.

Therefore, he decided to focus their priority on completing the quest. That was the moment when he put down the resolution to have a death battle with Zhang Yang. However, he had never thought possible that Zhang Yang would come out so aggressively, beyond everything that he had imagined. Zhang Yang actually took the opportunity of a gap and ended 20 of his men! The battle was basically lost!

If he had known that it would come to this, he would have acted differently!

So God's Left Hand immediately made a crucial decision. He began to take a few steps back. With the agile movement speed of his Class S

Inheritance, he could seize the chance and start retreating immediately. By then, even Zhang Yang would not be able to catch him. However, because the boss was not yet dead, he could not escape from the vicinity of the boss battle. He could only run around in a limited area.

Heart of Destruction had also made the same decision that God's Left Hand did. After all, when a player with a Class S Inheritance has activated an Inheritance Transformation, it would be really hard for anyone to catch up with their speed.

With the two top Tier players running away, the entire Alliance was wiped out clean in an instant. However, that was not the end of the battle just yet! The three parties immediately turned off to kill the other parties. There were still some cleaning up to do in the area!

When Zhang Yang got out from the {Apocalyptic Bondage}, the boss battle was about to reach its end. Not only did players have to deal with other players in battle, they also had to face the wrath of the boss and its wide AoE attacks. Anyone would have died in that kind of circumstances! Other than Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage and Hell Family, only the Land of Savages still had their heads intact! Meanwhile, the other parties only had their best players left on their parties. For instance, God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction.

When the final HP of the boss was struck out, the 'rod' of the Spiritual Beast King began to break into seven or eight pieces. Then everything began to collapse towards the ground.

--- even though the players were battling against each other, their AoE attacks had been splashing onto the boss. As the battle had gone on for quite a while, those attacks had slowly tortured the boss to its demise!

Instantly, every player right on top of the 'Mushroom Head' began to fall. Fortunately for them, they were securely saddled up on their Flying Mounts. Players with Class S and Class A Inheritance could fly with their own flying abilities. Immediately, everyone levitated in the middle of the air. However, the next moment was the moment of chaos! Everyone began to descend down towards the spot where the boss was spawned!

It was the moment where everyone needs to snatch the loots dropped by the boss and dismantle the bomb to complete the quest!

"Ice queen, Witchy Snow! You two get really to pick up the loot! I'll throw the bomb! The rest of you, just focus on stopping anyone who tries to get close to us!" Zhang Yang immediately said.

Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were currently in their Inheritance Transformation forms. So, they could fly at their top speed, making them the most suitable candidates to snatch the loots.

Almost at the same time, Crimson Rage, Hell Family and Land of Savages had also made the same decision, assigning the fastest players of their parties to snatch the loots and dismantle the bomb! The rest of their members would be stopping whoever tried to get near!

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang turned around in the air and struck out a conical area of impact wave towards his front. He managed to stun a few players right in front of them while he made his way to the ground.

The situation had become critical. It was like immortals attempting to cross the sea, each of them showing their special prowess! While some of them were showing off their skills and tactics, the others were blocking each other from getting near to the ground. Some of them even tried to avoid being afflicted by any Status Restriction Skills. The entire battlefield was spectacular.

All of the players with Class S Inheritance had the advantage of super-agile movement speed over the others. So, they were able to fully utilize this advantage of theirs in such a situation. Although the 6 players with Class S Inheritance were coming from different directions, the distance between them and their destination was almost the same. The winner of this race remained unclear.

Because Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had Zhang Yang throwing the bomb, they could fully focus on charging straight at the loot that was dropped by the boss. Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the other three players with Class S Inheritance were taking out their bombs and had

thrown them at the spot where the boss died. That was the spot where players could throw the bombs and dismantle the bomb!

As they were descending at high speed, Zhang Yang, Hourglass Figure, God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction were obviously charging towards the direction of the bombs while Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were charging towards the loot! The two spots were just approximately 50 meters away from each other. Well, they did not seem to be two different spot when everyone was still pretty far away from them. However, they began to see that they were actually attt two different spots as they were getting nearer to the ground.

100 meters, 50 meters, 20 meters!

Hourglass Figure and the other 2 threw their bombs towards the ground at the same instant! Right after that, they immediately turned towards the direction of the loots to see if they could still snatch something for themselves.

Zhang Yang grinned while he was descending. 20 meters was merely a distance that he could pass by in only 0.1 second or 0.2 second! After all, he was at his top speed right now! He suddenly swung his scythe and slashed one of the bombs out of its flying course. Meanwhile, he kicked the other two bombs out of their flying courses as well right before they could land.

At the same time, Zhang Yang took out the bomb in his inventory. After he activated the bomb, he threw it straight into the spot.

--- the untrustworthy bomb made by the goblins would not explode immediately after you throw it out. You'll need to activate it first before you throw it out!

After all, God's Left Hand and the others had started to move for the loots slower than Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. So they could only stare at the two ladies sweeping the loots clean into their own pockets. However, they did not mind that so much because their real focus was on the final reward of the quest, if they could ever complete it, of course! Equipment would always be 'eliminated' when newer Tiers of equipment

begin to appear at the later stages of the game.

However, when they turned their heads around, they coincidentally saw Zhang Yang 'cleaning' their bombs away from the spot! They were infuriated so much that their nose became crooked!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The three bombs exploded one after another. However, the flashing beam underneath the boss's dead body was still there. That being said, the three bombs did not hit the right spot, and the quest was not completed by any three of them!

Although God's Left Hand and the other two attempted to salvage the situation by attempting to destroy Zhang Yang's bomb, they were not fast enough.

Boom!

A large explosive sound echoed across the entire boss battle area. The explosion was far louder than the previous three bombs when they first exploded by the hands of Zhang Yang. Everyone could feel the impact of the bomb that they were almost blown away by the air! More importantly, the HP of everyone was reduced to 1 point!

Zhang Yang and his gang had experienced the same thing before this. So, they quickly activated their life-saving Skills and took down a bottle of Healing Potion just in case. It would always better to be safe than sorry. Having only 1 HP would make the player extremely vulnerable, one small tap could have killed the player, after all!

After the dust had begun to settle down, the blinking beam underneath the boss had vanished. The phenomenon indicated that the quest had been completed! The others would have to wait for Zhang Yang and his gang to hand in the quest first before they could repeat the quest again.

Well, that was not going to happen anyway!

Hourglass Figure and the others were crying their faces off. If they had known better, they should have charge for the loots instead. Now, it became a fall between two stools for them. They got nothing at all by the

end of it.

A tragedy indeed!

Well, there was no point for the players to continue killing each other now. Everyone took out their teleportation scrolls and left the area with regret.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, we've helped you so much! Are you going to cast us aside and pretend that nothing ever happened?" upon returning to Sauron's Castle, Snow Seeker immediately looked Zhang Yang up and smiled at him.

Indeed, without the support of the Crimson Rage, Zhang Yang and his gang would have been wiped out entirely. Even if Dusk Phoenix came to the rescue, the battle would also be 20 VS 40. Zhang Yang and his friends would still stand no chance of winning at all.

Zhang Yang winked at Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, then he said, "Give me the loot that the boss dropped. All of them!"

The two ladies cooperated well with Zhang Yang and threw only the Ethereal Tier equipment over to him. Without saying another word, Zhang Yang shoved them over to Snow Seeker and generously said, "Here you go!"

Snow Seeker rolled her eyes incredulously.

Chapter 738: Protect the Giant Dragon!

Of course, Zhang Yang would not take advantage of the Crimson Rage to such an extent. Even though Crimson Rage was helping themselves by helping the Lone Desert Smoke, they also had the notion to snatch the equipment and complete the quest.

Well, what's done was done. They had extended their help to the Lone Desert Smoke. Without Crimson Rage's support, maybe Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would not die, but Zhang Yang's other party members would have suffered a great loss.

After teasing Snow Seeker for a little while, even though Zhang Yang did not pass the Holy Tier equipment that they got from the boss's loots, he still gave Snow Seeker quite a substantial amount of [Armor Piercing Potions], [Amateur Power Potions] and [Temporary Invincibility Potions], for free, of course. Snow Seeker knew that she would never be able to sweep fortune from Zhang Yang anymore, so she was content with what she got from him.

Everyone went back to White Jade Castle. Zhang Yang and his gang did not rush back to hand in their quest. Because, once they hand in the quest, it would trigger the next phase of the quest! Everyone would be receiving the next quest as well! Meanwhile, now that Zhang Yang and his gang were holding the 'trigger' of the next quest, they could pick any other time to trigger the next quest in the coming days. Well, as long as the Ancient Spiritual Beast King is not respawned just yet, Zhang Yang and his gang could take their own sweet time for the moment.

They gathered by the Identifying Shop in the main city. Since they had returned back to the castle, there was no need for them to waste Zhang Yang's [Identifying Scrolls]. After all, they would not get any discount or benefits if they just use the scrolls to identify their equipment.

The boss had dropped a few equipment that were slightly above average. There were two Holy Tier equipment and four Ethereal Tier equipment --- Snow Seeker went all seductive on Zhang Yang, trying to strike a good deal

with him. Well, she did not return the four Ethereal Tier equipment to Zhang Yang. After all, she knew that Zhang Yang must have kept some good stuff to himself. Everyone knew that the Holy Tier equipment was still considered as the Top Tier equipment at the current stage of the game.

Other than that, there were also one [Skill Point Crystal], one [Engineering Recipe], and two [Top Tier Aura Stones].

After some consideration, Zhang Yang passed the two [Top Tier Aura Stones] over to Han Ying Xue, allowing her to enhance her {Life Aura} up to level 9. Having a 27% increase in her healing ability would definitely be helpful to the entire party. Even though {Strength Aura} was also a good choice, limiting a Spellcaster's ability to merely strength would do no good to the Spellcaster or his or her party members. Meanwhile, Hunters and Thieves would require a better touch on their Agility attribute.

The two Holy Tier equipment were a Heavy Armor helmet and a cloth-made boots. Fatty Han was extremely disappointed this time around. Well, he only got one piece of Holy Tier equipment, after so long.

[Rock Guardian's Helmet]

Defence: +640

Vitality: +16,803

Strength: +4,120

Intelligence: +1,750

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 33,600 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When being hit, absorbs 1,778 Damage.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Because of the additional Intelligence Attribute, it would be better for Endless Starlight to have it. That fellow was smiling so joyfully that his eyes were almost closed. Well, he did look like a pervert after all.

"If that God's Masturbating Left Hand could just look at this piece of equipment, he would definitely be drooling, or maybe stare his eyes out!" Fatty Han laughed. Of course, that curious brat Wei Yan Er kept asking about the meaning behind 'God's Masturbating Left Hand'.

Indeed, that helmet could really boost God's Left Hand up for good. Not only could the equipment provide an increase on Vitality, it could also increase quite an amount of Defence, Attack, and even Intelligence Attributes! There was nothing missing from this equipment at all! It really maximized its function by increasing the attributes of whoever wearing it!

"Let him burn! If we show him this one day, let him burn his eyes out!" Everyone was laughing out loud. If Zhang Yang did not take the initiative to go all out on them while getting blinded by God's Left Hand's {Apocalyptic Bondage} just a little sooner, Zhang Yang and his gang could have lost the battle badly. Naturally, they were irked by the presence of God's Left Hand.

The next equipment was the boots. It had quite a decent appearance and was white in color.

[Lunar's Casual Boots]

Defence: +128

Vitality: +8,402

Intelligence: +2,060

Spirit: +875

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,120 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When being hit, absorb 1,778 Damage.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

After a round of rolling their dices, the exquisite boots was claimed by Fantasy Sweetheart. That had really increased her healing capacity by a notch! The Chinese perverts would say, that could really increase her Cup Size by a notch!

It was natural that Hundred Shots was the one who took the [Engineering Recipe]. However, after he learned it, he smiled bitterly. So it seemed that the recipe taught him how to make [Elemental Bombs]. Before he could even start making them, Wei Yan Er had booked 10 sets of it!

[Elemental Bomb]: (Consumable)

Use: Causes 5,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 3X3 meters where the bomb detonates. Cooldown: 1 second. Range: 30 meters.

Required Level: 150

If it wasn't for the Required Level restriction, those players who were lower in levels could have used these bombs to blow all monsters in the low-level dungeons or low-level regions to kingdom come!

However, the impact of the bomb had improved. Therefore, the cost of making one would definitely increase a lot. Each [Elemental Bomb] would take up a cost of 10 gold pieces to make. So, each set would require 2,000 gold pieces to make. That made 10 sets cost 20,000 gold pieces! No wonder Hundred Shots smiled bitterly when the little brat asked him to make them for her!

However, everyone was earning quite a tremendous amount of income from the profit coming from Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. Hundred Shots would definitely be able to spend that little bit of money to make them for the little brat. After all, everyone was treating the little brat like their own younger sister. That was the weird part of it. Even though she was literally a little b*tch, everyone still loved her.

A while ago, they had soaked themselves in the Volcanic Dragon

Mountain for over 9 days. Everyone was tired of slaying monsters. So, they decided to give themselves a few days of rest. They wanted to accompany their family for a little bit. It would be wrong to keep soaking oneself in the game. Although 'God's Miracle' looked real inside, everything was still virtual. They do not exist in real life, after all.

Meanwhile, there was some movement in the Beijing region. The organization of Sun had launched a full investigation on the Liu family. The inspection team of Sun family had launched a raid and countless inner circle members of Liu Wei had been greeted with disciplinary measure outside the regular legal system under which they were all detained and interrogated. At the same time, the Liu family business executives were also arrested in full swing. This family was once the 'ruler' of the city. But now, the hammer of justice had been dropped right on their faces! Although the official results had not been declared just yet, everyone knew that they were done for, this time around. Well, their 'reign' had finally been put to rest. So that's how karma works.

After Chen Xue Yao found out about the news, she began to cry in joy. She even hugged Zhang Yang and kissed him violently. However, when Zhang Yang began to feel a little heated up, she withdrew rapidly, leaving Zhang Yang a great memory, the shadow of her back leaving the office door --- so this was her revenge for grabbing her a few rounds, that night, huh? Should she really try to torture him so much?

Arresting was easy, however, it would really take a long time to slowly find evidence to back up every crime that these officers and Liu family had done in the past. Meanwhile, they would have to consider the influence on the society before they wanted to do something. Well, from the looks of it, it could take up to half a year or even 1 full year. When the incident had begun to fade into the memories of the society, the officials could just sentence Liu Wei and his associates in low profile.

However, good things never last. The words were true. A few days later, something that Zhang Yang find it hard to accept happened --- Liu Wei was released from the prison!

Even though the Liu family was destined to be crippled in the end,

letting Liu Wei out of the cage was like giving a psycho a knife and let him out into the street full of people! Sun Xin Yu came back with the news shortly after it happened. Apparently, it was Chong Xiu Hua who bailed Liu Wei out of the cage!

Well, even though Chong Xiu Hua had a very influential and powerful background supporting him, he could not have saved all of Liu Wei's family and his associates. However, things would be different if he just attempts to save one unimportant man! Obviously, Chong Xiu Hua had found out about the relationship between Zhang Yang and Liu Wei. It seemed like he wanted to use that factor to get rid of Zhang Yang!

Well, Chong Xiu Hua did not even have to feed Liu Wei any poisonous words in order to get him moving. All he would need to do was to tell Liu Wei that Zhang Yang was the one who was responsible for the downfall of his entire empire and his family! Liu Wei would make his move on Zhang Yang all by himself! Meanwhile, Chong Xiu Hua need not have to care if things work out or not. He did not even spend much to set everything up. He just had to sit back and watch a good drama unveil before his eyes.

That was really something to worry about!

Liu Wei had been an arrogant f*ck who had always used extreme measures on his enemies. When he finds out that Zhang Yang was the one behind the downfall of his family, he would definitely come after Zhang Yang, without a doubt. He would only wish Zhang Yang to be dead. So, only god knows what he would really do to Zhang Yang and his loved ones!

Zhang Yang felt that there was a need to intensify the security measures around them. He wanted to make sure the ladies are safe from Liu Wei. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had nothing to worry about Sun Xin Yu. Firstly, she had all it takes to take care of herself. Secondly, her family background would be a determining factor that ensures Liu Wei would never make a move on her --- unless he no longer wanted to live!

Well, judging from Liu Wei's personality, he would not have put himself in any harm's way even if he wanted to retaliate so badly. Therefore,

Zhang Yang only had to worry about Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream. Of course, he needed to worry about Chen Xue Yao as well!

Chen Xue Yao was also one of Liu Wei's most hated person other than Zhang Yang. Other than that, she was living alone out there. Even if something bad happens to her, it would take days to discover if anything bad happens to her.

Zhang Yang had thought about it thoroughly. He spent a lot of money hiring bodyguards from the Security Firm. Well, he was not short on money at all. He could afford it all without a problem now. If anything happens to any of his ladies, he would definitely regret it for the rest of his life! Not only did he hire some extra muscles to guard by his house, he also installed security systems and security cameras all over the place. The ladies would also have bodyguards protecting them from the dark whenever they went out. That included Chen Xue Yao as well. However, Zhang Yang did not inform her about it though.

From another perspective, Zhang Yang was hoping that Liu Wei would become reckless and come after him. By then, Zhang Yang could have the rights for justified 'self-defense' and take him out of the picture for good! However, Liu Wei would never be so reckless that he would go on and take risks. Instead, he would just hire people to do his dirty job.

Putting everything in his mind aside, Zhang Yang logged into the game again. Upon gathering all members of his party of 10, they went on to hand in the quest.

'Ding! You've completed a quest: Destroying the Energy Crystal Processing Base Factory! You have received a reward: 20,000,000 Experience Point, 100 Military Points.'

Guraj was looking at everyone with a content face. Then he said, "Warriors, you've once again defeated the fiery spirit of the Spectre! However, a few of my associates have stolen some of the Energy Crystals and sold them to the god damn Spectres! They value money more than the world! Those nincompoops!"

"This ain't over yet!" Guraj screamed in a strange voice pitch. Then he continued to say, "The Spectre have not halted their development of the 'Darkness Falls'! You must try harder!"

"Creating the 'Darkness Falls' will require an important kind of crystal, that's the Giant Dragon's heart! Those undead Spectres will send an army so huge that the ground will tremble before their marching! They will be launching their assaults on The Green Dragon Elphenise on the Mount Apaqa! So fellow Warriors, you must cut off the head of the Spectre Mathuven and show those undead Spectres that we're not to be trifled with!"

'Ding! You've automatically accepted a Main Story Quest: Protect the Giant Dragon!'

[Protect the Giant Dragon] (Difficulty: S-Rank)

Description: The Spectres are still developing their 'Darkness Falls'. Their next target will be The Green Dragon Elphenise's Heart! Warrior, you must put a stop to these Spectres' plan. You must not let them get what they want!

Number of players: 10 (Maximum)

Completion: Bring back the sword hilt of the Skeleton General Mathuven 0/1

Reward: Sacred Badge, + 50,000,000 Experience Points, + 1,000 Military Points

[Sacred Badge] (Accessory)

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Use: Immunes you from any Damage or Status Restriction Effect. Increases your Critical Rate by 20%. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Bound upon pick up.

Chapter 739: World Boss

This quest was automatically assigned to the player. As long as players have reached Level 160, it would not matter where you are, the system will shove this quest onto your quest list by force. Other than that, the Quest Assistant had also given a clear description of the boss of that quest.

Skeleton Admiral Mathuven, a Level 185 Holy Tier boss, a World Tier boss!

As a World Tier boss, this Mathuven should be extremely powerful and difficult to take on! Currently, Zhang Yang had only encountered a Level 20+ World Tier boss called 'Martyr Unduin', Queen Serena, and the 'good' spectre princess. Well, she was faithful to her love, at least.

Mathuven would lead an army of Spectre to launch a full-scale attack on The Green Dragon Alphonse at 7 p.m, 3 days from now. The location of the battle would be Mount ApaQ which was located on the map of Rock Flatland.

Well, the Holy Tier equipment listed in the reward description of the quest was extremely appealing. They were more than enough to send countless players charging into the boss battle. Furthermore, everyone knew how hard it was to even get one piece of Accessory in this game. Most of the Level 100 players were still wearing their Level 50 Accessories until now. Therefore, the appearance of one Level 180 top Tier Accessory as one of the rewards for killing this boss could really get the mainstream players crazy!

Other than that, the notion of battling a World boss would really get people rolling! The boss would definitely drop a powerful Skill Book or a [Forbidden Scroll], or any other extremely powerful item! Well, people would not be focusing their attention on the Holy Tier equipment if they ever knew about this.

Not to mention that the boss would be coming in with a large army. When there were a large number of monsters, players could slay the monsters and earn some Glory Points to be exchanged for some powerful

equipment! Even though the top Tier players would not be interested in those equipment, normal players would be. Other than clearing a high-level dungeon, this would be an alternative method for the players to get 'top Tier' equipment for themselves!

Other than that, if the players could slay the boss by the end of the boss battle, every single player who takes part in the boss battle would acquire a level +2 reward! However, if the players ever fail to slay the boss, players from the entire server would receive a penalty of level -3! In other words, no one could afford to lose the boss battle. No one would choose to stay out of this boss battle!

Immediately, the guilds mobilized their entire force onto the task. All Level 130 players would be summoned to enter the Rock Flatland after 3 days. Telling players who had not reached Level 155 to battle a Level 185 boss would cause them to suffer the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. However, gathering hundreds of thousands, or millions, or even hundreds of millions of players together to attack a boss would definitely be effective. With everyone combining their power together, the power level of the players would become tremendous!

Of course, the body mass of the boss would be large enough for millions of players to lay waste to it. Well, there was also a possibility that the body mass of the boss would be much larger than the Ancient Spiritual Beast King. The first benefit of having a large number of players in a boss battle was that players would be able to contribute an abundant amount of damage to the boss. Secondly, with so many players bombarding their attacks on the boss, the boss would not be able to escape or dodge so many attacks at the same time. That would keep the boss in its battle mode!

After all, the boss would only use passive Skills like {Spectre Constitution} to recover its HP bar. If the boss could recover 1% HP every 30 seconds, it would take 50 minutes for the boss to fully recover one full bar of its HP bar. However, things would work differently if the boss ever gets out of its battle mode. The boss could recover over 10% HP every second! 10 seconds would be all the time the boss needs to fully recover its

HP bar!

Just imagine this. The players have managed to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 5% after giving their best efforts. However, they get wiped out all of a sudden. When they run all the way back to the boss, they tragically realize that the boss has fully recovered its HP bar. The players would be crying in misery, and some of them might even wish to die after all the trouble they put themselves through! However, if the number of players is high enough, they could arrange players in formations. Waves of players could be assigned to attack the boss at a different time to keep the flow of the battle smooth. Even if the players could only deal a small amount of damage to the boss, at least the boss would not leave from its battle mode. Then, the players would stand a chance to kill the boss, eventually.

Lone Desert Smoke had done the same thing as well. They also assembled their players who had reached Level 130 or beyond Level 130 to participate in the boss battle. The number of members from the main guild had reached more than 80,000 players!

Everyone was cracking their knuckles, waiting for the 3 days to pass. Mathuven would be the first World boss for most of the players. However, when events such as Spectres invading the main cities happen, the Celestial Tier boss called Angus would naturally be the Super World boss!

The Leader of the Seven Wraith and the leader of the Nine Demons were all Super World bosses. It should be extremely hard to battle against them all! In Zhang Yang's previous life, the players had been able to take down Angus because they received powerful support from a bunch of powerful NPCs. However, there were still other 15 Celestial Tier bosses staying 'peacefully' in the game.

Even Celestial Tier bosses had their own different grades. For instance, Angus was considered one of the lowest among the other Celestial Tier bosses. Therefore, Angus was only Level 230. However, Madravich was a Level 300 Celestial Tier boss. The difference of levels between each of the Celestials was meant to distinguish the difference between the skills and power level of the bosses. Meanwhile, the last on the grade list was the

Demon Lord Kenzack who was also Level 230. During that time, the players had already exceeded Level 200. Well, they were supposed to be capable of slaying Kenzack, because they would no longer be affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game.

However, even after players from all 8 Regions had put aside their prejudices and enmities to take down Kenzack, they were no match for the boss at all. They had attempted to slay Kenzack twice. The players were wiped out by Kenzack with ease!

That should show how powerful a World boss could be!

Zhang Yang let his imagination run wild for a bit. He was imagining the blood-boiling moments when he battled the Celestial Tier boss in his previous life. He could not help but feel pumped and all. He hoped that he could just lure Angus out of hiding and start a war with the boss, right away! However, that would not be possible, if the Main Story Quests are completed yet. Therefore, everyone would only be stuck with continuous events, where the disturbance of the Spectre were ever-present.

However, even though the Spectres that appeared in front of the players seemed weak, as time passes, these Spectres that keep causing disturbance to the cities and towns in the game would become much stronger. Furthermore, they would stop dropping equipment and items soon.

When the disturbance of the Spectre reaches a certain critical level, the Spectres would acquire the ability to launch their attacks on main cities and Territories to force players into completing the Main Story Quests. By doing so, the development of the drama in the game would continue on.

While Zhang Yang was drifting away into his fantasy world, he suddenly heard loud knocks on his door. Chen Xue Yao came into his room like a snake. She brought a cup of coffee with her as usual --- well, she would come to Zhang Yang trying to understand the development of Liu Wei's cases on a daily basis.

Actually, she only needed to ask once a week. After all, the investigations were pretty time-consuming. However, Zhang Yang suspected that this woman was trying to 'retaliate'. She would always sit on his lap while

asking the questions. Did she really need to do that? Furthermore, she had also buttoned up her clothes so tightly that her body shape was obviously shown. She even lowered down the front of her collar so low that her two boobies were half exposed!

That was not all. Why was she wearing suspender straps with fasteners attached to a girdle belt to hold up her sexy stockings? Why would she even wear stockings with laces?! It was in the middle of the day now! Sometimes, she would even purposely 'expose' her underwear to Zhang Yang! Although Zhang Yang could only see it vaguely, Zhang Yang's rich imagination would instantly get his 'brother' rock hard!

"Mr.Zhang, so how have things going with the investigations on Liu Wei's case?" This b*tch was asking him nonchalantly, like nothing was happening. She placed the coffee on the table right beside them and leaned over towards Zhang Yang's body. Her body scent was tantalizing!

Zhang Yang turned his head over and saw that she was still wearing her light brown OL (Office Lady) uniform. She was wearing a white blouse underneath her uniform. However, her collar was purposely left unbuttoned. From Zhang Yang's angle, he could clearly see two fair half rounded boobies. Zhang Yang could also vaguely see the side of the light purplish bra that she was wearing.

Witch! Fox! Whatever you can call her! Zhang Yang could not get her off his head anymore after the night where both of them were hugging, touching each other for the whole night. They even kissed! Why is she always trying to seduce him then? Was she really trying to retaliate? This woman most probably thought that Zhang Yang had seen enough of her pretty face and her sexy body. She must have thought that Zhang Yang had enough touching her body as well! And now, she was willing to expose more of her 'wild' parts to him. She was trying to get into Zhang Yang's head so that she could toy with his mind! Every time when Zhang Yang was starting to feel 'heaty', this woman would suddenly withdraw herself from teasing Zhang Yang any further. Everything would just stop there. Zhang Yang would most certainly almost begin to jack himself off!

"Still, it's still under progress! Just wait!" Zhang Yang had no idea how

many times has he said that.

"So slow! What's taking them so long to investigate those scumbags! Just drag them out and shoot them in the head, on the piers!" Chen Xue Yao was infuriated. Well, no one could blame her. Her family was killed by these scumbags, after all. She was very eager to see that those scumbags are dragged up to the guillotine and be the one shouting 'off with their heads'!

Well, no one could really blame her for being so vicious. After looking through the evidence that she collected firsthand, even Zhang Yang felt a little disturbed. Making a murder looking like an accident was just child's play. When the Liu Family was starting up their business, they even did something like slaughtering the entire family of their business competitors. While their businesses were getting bigger and bigger, those people did even more crimes just to make themselves comfortable! They even built an entire secondary school so that they could recruit virgins to have fun with.

After Zhang Yang gave it some thought, he decided not to tell Chen Xue Yao about Liu Wei being released into the 'wild' again. Well, he had thought it through, thoroughly this time. To catch that bastard, Zhang Yang could not really go on killing people. However, it would be possible if Zhang Yang could just disable '5' of his limbs! That would not become any problem at all!

When the Liu Wei problem had been resolved, then only Zhang Yang would tell Chen Xue Yao about it. Now that Zhang Yang had hired some bodyguards to protect her from the dark, telling her now would just make her worry even more.

"... you're here to ask me about Liu Wei, right? Why are your hands touching my thighs then?" Zhang Yang asked her with a straight face.

"Hehe!" Chen Xue Yao smiled and blushed. Her cheeks turned so red and her charm was mesmerizing. She went closer and gave a gentle nibble on Zhang Yang's ear. Then she said, "Do you want me to help you out with my hands again?"

Zhang Yang's heart began to pound instantly. That night, he was 'handled' by her soft and slender hands. Although her hands had not passed through the hall and into the inner chamber, Zhang Yang could already feel a sensation of joy rushing up his head. Instantly, he glared at the beautiful creature's udders. Then he calmly said, "Are you trying to trick me again?"

Chen Xue Yao pulled down her collar even lower and let her two boobies jiggle a little bit. The ripple on her skins of her boobies was just breathtaking to look at. Zhang Yang's pupils went blank. She giggled and leaned her chest against Zhang Yang's back. Then she reached out to Zhang Yang's ear and let out a gentle breath, "Mr. Zhang, you seem to be quite 'heaty' every single day. Didn't the two in your house feed you well?"

"You w*tch! How do you even dare to say that!?"

Chen Xue Yao could remember very clearly that she was touched by Zhang Yang for good that day. So there was nothing more shameful than that! 'You pervert! I'm going to toy with you so badly that you'll never forget! I'm going to send you into dire suffering! I'm definitely giving that bad breath right back at you!' She never said that out loud, of course. She looked down and saw that Zhang Yang's 'tent' had been set up completely. She knew that she was done toying with him for today. So she quickly stood up and giggled at Zhang Yang. Then, she left Zhang Yang's office in haste.

Zhang Yang was conflicted on whether to cry or to laugh after what happened. This had become something that must happen every single day. However, deep down his heart, he was furious. "Do not mistake me as a paper tiger! If you ever cross a line, I'll not hesitate to devour you and your body entirely!"

Zhang Yang already had Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. He had never intended to screw another woman anymore. However, the thing that happened between him and Chen Xue Yao was considered to be a forbidden affair. After all, no one could have changed the fact that the two of them had intimately touched each other. even though it was not their intention.

Zhang Yang admitted that he had a strong impulse to possess a woman that he loves. If that night had not happened, then Zhang Yang would not have minded her at all. Even if she marries someone, Zhang Yang would not have felt a thing at all. He would just curse whichever bastard who could have her as his wife.

However, these two had seen each other in the nude. They even fondled with every part of their bodies. That had really changed the way Zhang Yang felt for her.

--- you witch! If you dare to do that again tomorrow, I'm going to force myself on you, and you're going to regret that!

Zhang Yang hardened his soul and said quietly.

...

3 days had passed in a blink of an eye. Every top Tier guild had already formed their own parties to enter Mount Apaqa. Even though Mathuven had not been spawned yet, there were multiple sightings of The Green Dragon Elphenise. This Green Dragon would sometimes fly in the sky in its dragon form. Sometimes, it would transform into a cute green elven lady, walking around in the woods.

This Giant Dragon lady was also labelled as a Holy Tier boss. Her power level should not be weak. However, she only had over 1,000,000,000 HP, which was clearly not the HP amount that a Holy Tier boss should have! She deserved to have more HP on her! However, in order for the drama mode to work its course, the developer had designed her to have lesser HP. Players from all eight Regions could heal her with their healing Skills. That 1,000,000,000 HP would make her quite powerful in a sense.

Not only some top Tier guilds, but several smaller guilds did not even have one Level 160 player in their guild. Although it was not possible for them to complete the quest, they could still count on their luck to see if they are able to snatch something useful when the boss dies!

After all, this is a World boss! Only god knows how many good stuff would pour out from the dead body of the boss!

Chapter 740: Skeleton Admiral Mathuven

The Top Tier guilds did not make clear of the vicinity even though the normal players had swarmed into the place. They knew it better than anyone that these low level players were just food powder on the battlefield. They would be wiped out when the boss starts sneezing!

Well, no one would ever have enough of food in powder form anyway. So let them come.

Countless players were waiting and expecting the Spectre Army to arrive.

However, when the players finally saw the scale of the Spectre Army, they almost wet their pants. So, that was why the quest was listed as one of the Main Story Quest. So that was why only players who managed to attain the required level of the quest managed to receive the new quest!

So how large was the scale of the army then? Was it millions? Or was it hundreds of millions then?

Countless Skeleton Soldiers were swarming over the entire mountain. They did not look anything like those Skeleton monsters that were roaming around the cemetery areas in the Open World at all. These Skeleton Soldiers were well equipped with a full set of armor on each of them. Their armor was pitch black, which was a complete contrast to their white bones.

[Skeleton Assaulter] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 180

HP: 117,504

Defence: 4,740

Melee Attack: 24,147 – 34,147

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to a target. There is a 10% chance to acquire an additional attack.

Note: The Skeleton Assaulters are the true and official members of the Spectre Army. Even though they are just the lowest kind of their army, they can still pose a fatal threat to anyone who underestimate them! More importantly, these soldiers know no fear of death. They know no pain! They can give any commander in a battlefield a chill up their spines!

The length of that sword might have reached beyond 200 meters long! This monster should have a very wide attack range, or so it seemed.

[Skeleton Admiral Mathuven] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 185

HP: 50,000,000,000

Defence: 50,000

Magi Resistance: 50,000

Melee Attack: 149,465 – 209,465

Skills:

[Storm Blades]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the effective range of the Skill once in each second. Last for 30 seconds.

[Destructive Smash]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to a target, afflicting the target with 50% Reduction in the target's Healing Efficiency.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP healed will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: Mathuven is well known as a General with extraordinary capabilities serving under the ranks of Angus. His loyalty lies in executing every single order given by Angus.

A total of 50,000,000,000 HP?!

Players who could see the HP amount of the boss frowned intensely. If the boss does not have the HP recovery Skill {Spectre Build}, it would be possible for the players to take the boss down, even if the boss had more

HP than that. However, everything changed when the boss has that Skill along with him.

With a total HP of 50,000,000,000, the boss could recover over 1,670,000 HP in each passing second, so to speak. If the damage dealt by the players could not get up to that amount of damage, the boss would basically lose nothing at all. His HP bar would not even move if that was the case! Well, it was not really that difficult for the players to deal so much damage to the boss. However, players would have to bear in mind that the boss could attack them, as well! The boss could deal AoE attacks to all players within the attack range with its {Storm Blades}.

Putting aside the rate of the boss activating its {Storm Blades}, each activation of the Skill could potentially cause over 5,000,000 damage to each player that is standing within its attack range. Even though the Skill is deemed to be a Melee Skill, the strike could spread out for over 200-meter radius wide. Because the boss had a long-*ss blade, he could wipe out the players more efficiently, even though the boss was just a melee-type boss.

Because of that, the players could deal less effective damage to the boss over a limited timeframe. If the rate of the boss activating his {Storm Blades} is a little bit higher, even the players with Inheritance Transformation would not survive long while standing near the boss! Just imagine it! An approximate 200,000 damage per second is really deadly! It would only take approximately 200 seconds to empty out an entire HP bar of 40,000,000 HP!

Han Ying Xue might be able to hold up against that amount of damage, if she is in her Inheritance Transformation form. However, even though she was a Healer more focused on her ability to heal multiple targets around her, she should only be capable of making sure 3 other players around her remain alive under that sort of circumstances. It would be out of her league if she is asked to heal more than 3 players around her. That should prove how difficult it was for players to hold out against the firepower of the boss!

Of course, the situation was not as f*cked up as things have been

forecasted. They would be having an extremely powerful NPC to support them.

[The Green Dragon Elphenise] (Holy, Dragon)

Level: 180

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defence: 18,470

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398 (Depends on Physical Attack, however, deals Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Light of Life]: Recovers 1% HP in every 5 seconds. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Note: The Green Dragon is a giant dragon species that are close to mother nature. They are extremely close to the Elves. They even became the protector of the Elves.

Elphenise is a very powerful tanker to tank against Mathuven. Furthermore, she could also recover her own HP. Her HP recover per second could reach up to 200,000 HP! She could still recover over 100,000 HP even if she gets afflicted by the effect of {Destructive Smash}. As long as the Skeleton Soldiers are not in the way interrupting her, Elphenise would still be capable of healing herself without the help of the players. She could really last for quite a long period of time under the bombardment of Mathuven's attacks.

"Spectre! Why are you invading my territory!?" Elphenise had transformed into the appearance of a female elf. She was levitating while she asked Mathuven about it.

"Humph, humph, humph! By the order of my master, Angus, I'm here to claim your heart!" Mathuven laughed in a strange voice.

"How dare you!" Elphenise let out an angry roar and transformed into her dragon form immediately. She transformed into a green dragon that was approximately 300 meters long. Her appearance was actually more intimidating than the appearance of that skeletal Mathuven! The moment

she opened up her mouth, Elphenise spat out a stream of {Dragon Breath} and torched every single Skeleton Soldier in the area of 200-meter radius around her with green flames. Those Skeleton Soldiers were burned to crisps within seconds!

Even if Phoenix pet and Red Dragon pet had activated their Transformation Skill, they would only be able to spread their AoE attacks as far as 30 meters out. The attack range of the Green Dragon was definitely on a whole new level! Well, it was actually normal. Just think about it, would a player with a full set of Ethereal Tier armor be as powerful as an Ethereal Tier boss?

"Hehehe! Charge! Kill them all!" Mathuven gave his order for his army to charge forward. Countless Skeleton Soldiers charged towards the Green Dragon at full speed. They were so closely-knit that they looked like a tidal wave gushing towards Elphenise! Even though these monsters were just food for powder, they were just like the players. Even if one monster could only deal 10,000 damage, the total damage that the entire horde of the army monsters could deal would be terrifying as well!

From that perspective, the boss's single attack would be very limited when it comes to battling a large number of players. So, the boss would be relying on his 'underlings' to channel their damage output on the players as well! However, the boss could really deal a number to the players with his AoE attacks! With just one simple whirl of his {Storm Blades}, players who were low on HP were instantly wiped out!

Of course, the players would not just stand there and let the Skeleton Soldiers slaughter them up. Firstly, when the Green Dragon that was acting as their 'Natural Shield' is gone, the boss battle would become even worse than it is now! Since players would only lose some durability of their equipment, everyone from all 8 Regions joined forces to fight against the Spectre Army. They did not fight amongst themselves at all.

The current situation was on accord with the background themes of this game. It was true that things were not always peaceful and harmonious among these guilds in the newly formed 'Alliance'. There would always be battles or wars happening among themselves. However, these guilds had

banded together like a family when they battled against the Spectre Army. They would never turn against each other at a time like this!

These Normal Tier Skeleton Soldiers would crumple with a bang before Top Tier players like Zhang Yang himself. However, they were extremely daunting to the average players. Especially for those who had not reached Level 150, the players would have to band into parties before they could take out one single Skeleton Soldier!

Zhang Yang sent his Phoenix pet forward. Meanwhile, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were leading up front as they charged into the horde of monsters. With two Phoenixes and a Red Dragon slaying monsters at the frontline, the players had no need to activate their Inheritance Transformation just yet. It did not matter how many monsters were charging towards them, those monsters had to die the moment they entered the range of the pets' attack range.

"Remove yourself from my Territory, Spectre!" Even though Elphenise was a female dragon, her temper was not to be trifled with. She took the initiative to launch her attacks towards Mathuven.

"Hehehe! Are you so eager to die?" Mathuven raised his sword and swung it towards Elphenise at full strength. Just right before the shiny blade could cut her neck, Elphenise raised her gigantic claws to deflect Mathuven's attack. The impact between the sharp claws and the blade sparked intensely.

"Such a pitiful strength you have!" Mathuven said with disdain. He grabbed the giant sword with both of his arms. Then, his body began to spin at high speed. As he accelerated further with his spin, he looked like a silver gyro top.

{Storm Blade}!

Players who were within the attack range of the boss were receiving a high damage value at every passing second! That 200,000 damage could instantly kill any players with armor set that was lower than Ethereal Tier! Even players with a full set of Holy Tier equipment would not be capable of receiving the full damage from the boss's {Storm Blade}. A few rounds

of the attack sent the players to their own demise!

30 seconds later, there were no players within the area of 200-meter radius from the boss that survived the attack of the boss. The only one that was standing beside the boss was Elphenise!

Zhang Yang and his gang had not activated their Inheritance Transformations yet. That was because they had no idea how long the boss battle would be! All players from 8 Regions seemed to have joined their forces together for the moment. Well, the main reason was, because killing monsters and launching attacks on the boss would earn the players some 'Glory Points'. However, everything would change the moment the boss collapses and dies. Everyone would be pouring onto the loot that the boss would be dropping, because the loot would be on a 'first come first serve' basis.

The players in the vicinity were being extra careful to not get caught up in the attacks of the boss. At the same time, they were trying to slaughter as many monsters around the boss as possible. Even though 'Glory Points' are actually useless to the Top Tier players, if they could just kill the monsters around the boss faster, the Green Dragon would be in a safer state. After all, the Green Dragon was the players' super gigantic 'Meat Shield'!

Meanwhile, as long as the Green Dragon does not die, the boss would not leave his Battle mode. Because of that, the players would stand a chance at taking down the boss! Or else, the boss would straight away be swayed from his Battle Mode and there would not be any players left on his Aggro List right after he uses his {Storm Blades}. When that does happen, the boss would be able to recover his HP bar very quickly! By then, how should the players proceed on slaying the boss?

Although Zhang Yang did not activate his Inheritance Transformation yet, his Phoenix pet was a fearsome weapon at causing AoE destruction to the monsters. The two Phoenixes and a Red Dragon were unleashing their worst on the monster hordes. These three legendary creatures had taken out at least hundreds of monsters alone! Unfortunately, the sea of Experience Points they earned by killing the monsters were being shared

among others like Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang, even though they were putting in very little effort in supporting them.

Wei Yan Er was acting like a terrorist. She took out the [Elemental Bombs] made by Hundred Shots and threw them into her surrounding randomly. Not only the monsters in her surroundings were bombarded to hell, players from other 7 Regions were also blown to kingdom come, even though they were innocent!

Unfortunately for them, even after the 8 Regions had joined forces to form a temporary 'Alliance', the system would still consider them as enemies in the game. Any AoE attacks would splash on the players from other 7 Regions as well.

The battle had begun to hit its climax. The flashes of beautiful and colorful Skills were astonishing to behold!

The monsters were restricted by the Aggro system of the game. However, players could move freely according to their own free will. Therefore, they were much more flexible and agile than the monsters on the battlefield. The Tankers were lining up on the front while the Healers were healing them up from the rear. Meanwhile, DPS players were focusing their attacks on the boss and the monsters. They were very well organized. Only some of the smaller guilds were unable to survive the hordes of monsters that were charging at them. They had no choice but to drown in the monster hordes.

However, the number of players was no lesser than the number of the monsters. It was just that, there were not many Level 150 players on the battlefield. Therefore, most of them were suffering the effect of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. They could not deal as much damage as they should be doing, in the first place! However, after half an hour of intense battle, the army of Skeleton Soldiers was almost wiped out!

Chapter 741: Siege

Meanwhile, the players had also suffered quite a number of casualties. Those who still had their Flying Mounts with them were still doing fine. They could just fly into the air whenever they ran low on HP. However, those who did not possess Flying Mounts had nowhere to run when their HP bars go low! Well, players who had not even reach Level 150 suffered the most. Because of the Level Gap Suppression of the game, they had to receive two times, three times, or even five times the damage they usually did. That was outrageous for them!

However, there was nothing to do for the players who died. They could only run all the way back to their dead bodies to resurrect themselves. It would only take about half an hour to get back, all the way from the Graveyard. In a way of saying in Chinese, one will become a heroic man 18 years later. This was much faster than that. Players could already come back heroically to the battlefield, half an hour later.

Because no one had really launched their attacks on the boss yet, the boss had not lost a single drop of his HP. It was not enough to move the HP bar of the boss when only the Green Dragon is battling the boss. The boss's {Spectre Build} could just fully recover Mathuven's HP bar whenever it kicked in. In the meantime, Elphenise had lost over 10% of her HP bar.

Theoretically speaking, it would take up to 5 hours for the boss to kill the Green Dragon, even if there was no interruption at all, from any players, or any sort of monsters in the vicinity.

"Heal the Green Dragon, now!" Upon clearing out the monsters around them, the players began to shift their attention to the boss. Parties from different Regions stood together to protect the Green Dragon lady. Each of them was sending their best troops of Healers over to the Green Dragon. The Healers then lined up by the rear of the Green Dragon and started healing her.

Because the body mass of the Green Dragon was gigantic, standing 30

meters behind her would also be standing approximately 300 meters away from Mathuven. Theoretically speaking, the Healers should be in a safe distance from the attack range of the boss's {Storm Blades}. However, that was just a theoretical assumption. It was not like the boss would just spin like a gyro top from where he was standing. If the boss decides to take a spin around the Green Dragon, the Healers at the rear would be instantly killed!

However, that would not affect the boss battle too much. If one dies, there would be a dozen more to fill in! The players had arranged the second batch, the third batch, or maybe even the tenth batch or the twentieth batch of Healers standing by. They were all prepared to fill in the places when the first batch of the Healers die. Well, the DPS of the boss's single unit attack could deal up to 150,000 damage. So 20 Level 130 Healers should be able to heal that much amount of HP back. After all, the ability to heal the Green Dragon would not be affected by the Level Gap Suppression at all!

Furthermore, the Green Dragon had her own way to heal herself. Therefore, the HP bar of Elphenise was beginning to recover bit by bit, even though she was receiving a tremendous amount of damage from Mathuven. Currently, the HP bars of the two bosses were at their full state. Both of their HP bars did not sway far from being full, despite raising up hell on earth!

So now, it was time for the players to launch their attacks on the boss. That should cover up the shortage of firepower of bringing the boss down to his knees. Well, that would also mean that the death counts of the players are about to start as well!

"Charge!"

Countless players were charging towards the boss like a tsunami wave. Although 99.99999999% of the players were destined to get nothing from the boss' loot later on, the players could still earn some 'Glory Points' after the boss dies. Well, as long as they contribute, they would get some 'Glory Points,' as promised. Furthermore, those who contributed in bringing down the boss would receive +2 levels as part of the reward as well!

Therefore, everyone was giving their very best at throwing their attacks onto the boss.

Zhang Yang and his core party members did not make any move for the moment. Even though the goal of all 8 Regions was the same at the moment, players from different Regions were not really 'Allies,' all thanks to the system of the game. Their AoE attacks would still spread to players from different Regions as well. Meanwhile, the only thing that was waiting for the players without Inheritance Transformation Skills was death! If they are caught in the AoE splash attack of the players from their enemy Regions and die, they would not only lose a large amount of Experience Points, they would also lose their precious equipment and potions.

The higher the level, the harder it gets for a player to elevate their level. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his core party decided not to make any move, until deemed necessary. However, they were trying to estimate the rate of the boss losing his HP so that they could gauge when to activate their Inheritance Transformation Skills. It was only possible for players to hold their ground against a freaking boss and survive the boss's attacks head on when they have activated their Inheritance Transformation Skills. Well, they would still need to search for Healers to heal them up.

Meanwhile, Mathuven was extremely good at spraying his AoE Skills into the surrounding, of course. He was a World Boss, after all. The cooldown for the boss's {Storm Blades} was only 1 minute long! Furthermore, the boss had not increased the rate of activating his {Storm Blades} just yet. Once the boss's HP bar has been reduced to 20%, it would be possible that the boss would not stop once he starts spinning!

20% HP sounded like a small number. However, 20% of 50,000,000,000 HP would be a total of 10,000,000,000 HP! So, how could the players be able to deplete that amount of HP in a short period of time then?

Under the merciless bombardment from the boss, the number of casualties was rising relentlessly. However, at the same time, the players were charging into the boss like madmen. Thanks to them, they managed to contribute little by little before they died one after another. The amount of the accumulated damage dealt on the boss was quite astonishing. The

HP bar of Mathuven had finally begun to fall!

Some players even learned from the mistakes of others. Since they could only forcefully deal 1 damage to the boss, they might as well take off every single equipment off and use their White-Wood Tier weapon to hit the boss. It could also forcefully deal 1 damage to the boss, after all. By doing so, the players would not have to suffer losing 10% of their equipment's durability.

--- there was one thing that even Celestial Tier equipment could not match with the White-Wood Tier equipment. The White-Wood equipment had no durability at all. They could be used for all eternity and they would never be broken! From that perspective, the White-Wood equipment could be the true Legendary equipment!

Zhang Yang did not dare to approach the boss as well. Well, he had the [Resurrection Monolith] and the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation] with him. If he ever goes into battle and gets killed by other players, he would definitely be resurrected on the spot. If he gets killed again after that, he would definitely drop the [Resurrection Monolith]. Another death would cause him to drop the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]! That would be a tragedy far worse than dying for all eternity!

Furthermore, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were also holding a Legendary item each. One was holding another broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation,] while the other was holding the [Resurrection Monolith]. Well, having more than one player holding a Legendary item in the same party would allow the party to defeat a boss in a dungeon easily. However, the party would have their hands tied in many ways when it comes to a battle royale! Any reckless actions would lead them to their doom.

However, even if they did not have the [Resurrection Monolith] and the broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation], any Top Tier player would not have charged in recklessly as well. After all, none of the Top Tier players could afford to lose a large amount of Experience Points. Top Tier players would have to basically go through heaven and hell just to collect

enough Experience Points to level up. Furthermore, 'Glory Points' was not their priority. So there was no reason worthy enough for them to risk getting killed in the boss battle.

No player was capable of tanking against the onslaught of the boss for long without activating their Inheritance Transformation. Because of that, the HP bar of the boss was reducing so slowly that everyone was frowning! The players could not even reduce 0.1% of the boss's HP bar, even after tens of minutes of bombardment. If this goes on, they would not even be able to defeat the boss, even after days!

Zhang Yang could not help but recall his past life. While he was doing the 'King Kong Inheritance' quest, the situation was similar. The final boss of the Inheritance quest was as oppressive as this Mathuven. Zhang Yang and his guild had spent over 3 days defeating the boss!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. Then he spoke into his own party chat, "Guys, don't come with me."

He rode out with his Phoenix and arrived at a spot, 30 meters from the boss.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resisted!

What the f*ck! Zhang Yang cursed quietly deep down his heart. Then, he flew back to his party members in silence. He went in while the boss's {Storm Blade} was cooling down. Therefore, he did not sustain any damage at all.

"Haha! I've told you many times over, little Yang! You must wash your hands after using the toilet! You see! It affects your luck a lot when you're using those hands of yours to throw it!" Fatty Han immediately laughed out loud.

Endless Starlight went with the flow and started teasing as well. However, Female Raid Covert, one of the three wretched f*ckers did not join in. Instead, he was teasing Wei Yan Er. He had no time nor interest in teasing Zhang Yang at all. The little brat tightened her teeth, as she was

swinging her fists round and round, trying to fend off Female Raid Covert.

Well, Wei Yan Er was not a patient person to begin with. It did not take long before she lost it and started throwing her attacks at the boss. She patted her 'Crimson Red Crow' and commanded it to attack the boss. She had no concern at all if she dies and loses Experience Points. She just wanted to have fun!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought, and he did not stop her from going all out. First of all, she had just levelled up yesterday. She would not lose much of her Experience Points even if she really dies. The only thing that she needed to worry about was that she might drop her equipment upon her death. After all, her hammer was a Holy Tier weapon.

It was a fortunate thing that Zhang Yang and his gang did not join into the boss battle for the moment. However, the 80,000 Lone Desert Smoke army had been divided into 100 platoons in order to take on the boss. Of course, they were taking turns at engaging the boss. As long as the little brat is attacking the boss within their own 'turf', she would not be caught up in the attack of other players from other Regions. So even if she really dies, all she needs to do is to run all the way back to her dead body from the Graveyard.

At a time like this, no players or no guild would have the time or the effort to spare, killing players who were running all the way back to their dead bodies. If anyone does that, that player would become public enemy number one in an instant! That player would have to bear the consequence of being hunted and killed over and over again by all players from all 8 Regions!

Meanwhile, the little brat was smart as well. After she attacked the boss for 15 seconds, she would retreat a little so that her Mythical Tier pet Crimson Red Crow would have enough time to get her out of the area of 200-meters. That would keep her in a safe distance from the attacks of the boss. As time passes, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and the others joined the boss battle, one after another.

As more and more players were joining the boss battle, the HP bar of the

boss was beginning to reduce at a faster pace. However, the players had to relentlessly dodge the {Storm Blades} of the boss. Because of that, the players could only reduce approximately 3% HP of the boss in an hour. Judging from that, they would need at least 30 hours to empty out the boss's HP!

Zhang Yang had also joined the boss battle, like everybody else. They were using the 'hit and run' tactic. Zhang Yang had not yet activated his Inheritance Transformation, though. Since he could only deal damage to the boss for a quarter of the entire time, he could only deal a very limited amount of damage to the boss.

One hour later, Zhang Yang made his second attempt at throwing his {Glare of the Death God} on the boss --- Resisted once again!

2 hours, 3 hours, 4 hours... the time was passing without much of a notice. The HP bar of the boss was still reducing at a very slow pace. Some players had died 10 times over! These 'food for powder' were spending most of their time, running back to their own dead bodies. After they resurrect themselves, they would just charge in like martyrs. Hmm... there was no regret in life anymore. So, let's just run back to the dead bodies and do it all over again!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Huh? It was not resisted this time!

Finally, on the 11th hour, Zhang Yang got lucky and he succeeded in casting the {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss! At that instant, countless players were hitting the boss at the same time! In less than 0.1 second, the boss began to receive a large value of damage!

'50,000,000!'

"What the f*ck! My arrow caused 50,000,000 damage to the boss! Holy sh*t! I'm awesome!"

"Roll on your eggs and dream on! If you can really cause 50,000,000 damage with only one single hit, why are you still here then? If that's true, you could have instantly killed Zhan Yu! You should have become number

one by now!"

"F*ck you, man! I didn't lie! I really did cause 50,000,000 damage to the boss just now!"

The special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} had been triggered 10 times over. A large number of players were astounded by the 'might' of the special effect. A few of them actually rose up arrogantly and claimed that they might have discovered their 'Hidden' Skills. They even claimed that they were capable of becoming Number One on the entire server!

Well, one single hit that could cause 50,000,000 damage really sounded bad *ss, though. If a player could do such a thing, they would not need any equipment or weapon anymore! They could have conquered the entire server just by attacking their enemies with normal attacks!

Those few players immediately turned around and started attacking other players who had a beef with them. Of course, they were instantly whacked to death by everyone around them --- F*ck these b*tches! It was definitely not the time for players to battle against each other, now! Finish them off and let them cool their heads at the Graveyard, then!

Well, those were just insignificant events happening around the battlefield. Zhang Yang did not think much about it at all. Instead of standing idly, he continued to hit and run. Even though he could only deal a little amount of damage to the boss, at least he was contributing.

24 hours of the in-game time had passed. In real life, a night had passed. Many players had to go to work, or go to school. Some of them applied for leave to stay in the game, though. However, because of the time zone, a number of players were logging off the game. As quickly as they went, others were logging in.

Chapter 742: The Fall of Mathuven

The HP bar of the boss had been reduced to 36%. In between that, 10% of the boss's HP bar was reduced by the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. Judging by that alone, the total firepower of the players was looking weak! Meanwhile, the players could only survive for so long because they had the Green Dragon to keep the boss occupied. If the boss could run around as he liked, this battle could have ended far earlier, with all the players being wiped out.

Zhang Yang's luck was not really that great that day. Or should we say, that the boss had a high resistance against the {Glare of the Death God}? Look at Zhang Yang. After so many attempts, only one was not resisted. However, because of that one trigger, the boss battle had been shortened by 3 hours! That was quite a marvelous outcome!

If each of the tens of thousands of players' 3 hours are added up together, how many hours would that be?

It was obvious that the boss could not be taken out in a short amount of time. Although player 'God's Miracle' was equal to sleep and rest, it would be extremely exhausting for the brain cells and neurons to get the game working. As night fell, the players began to feel hungry and tired. Therefore, Zhang Yang told everyone to take an hour rest and get their empty stomachs filled.

--- it would definitely take more than just 3 hours of in-game time to empty out the remaining 36% HP bar of the boss. There was no need to worry about the other players taking out the boss all of a sudden!

However, they were not able to take their break in peace. They were still worried that the impossible might suddenly become possible. So those who took their meal had logged back into the game after 7 or 8 minutes. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were putting on their make up. Zhang Yang rolled his eyes to the back of his skull at the two ladies after he saw them putting on makeup. Well, they're not going out to meet any guests. So, why the hell are they grooming themselves up

nicely? It's not like anyone other than Zhang Yang would see their faces!

However, after Han Ying Xue threw a smile at him as she glanced out of the corner of her mirror, he could not help but to feel swayed a little. Instantly, he was thinking of how to let Han Ying Xue 'welcome' him as a big guest. Today was Saturday. Zhang Yang did not have to go to the office. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu had taken a shift to rest. The little brat had moved back to Zhang Yang's house for quite a while now. So she did what the other ladies were doing and put the blusher on her face. Well, of course, she turned her own pretty little face into a monkey *ss by the end of it.

After toying with the cosmetics for some time, she felt bored. So, she went to the side to toy with the little doggie. The doggie was initially hers. However, she left the doggie to starve when it was still a little puppy. It had learned a hard lesson and knew better than to trust the brat. The doggie would not let the little brat hug it at all. It just ran and hid on the lap of Sun Xin Yu. As expected, that little b*tch felt offended without even knowing that she had tortured that poor little soul before. She kept yelling at the doggie with anger. She even pointed fingers at the doggie saying that the doggie was devoid of gratitude after all the time she spent 'taking care' of it. Well, everyone knew that this little b*tch was a real b*tch after all.

After fooling around for a bit, everyone began to log back into the game. No one could really take it easy just yet. After all, the World Boss was not yet being taken care of!

When they logged back into the game, the HP bar of the boss had dropped to 29%. Well, it seemed that the players would be taking a lot more time in order to kill the boss.

"When the HP bar of the boss drops to 20%, the boss is going to spam his {Storm Blades} without stopping at all. By that time, everything will have to depend on players who have Inheritance Transformations, us!" Zhang Yang assembled the guildmasters of the top Tier guilds. Then he tried to propose a deal with them.

Indeed, normal players could still be the 'food for powder' at this moment. They could still take advantage of the cooldown period of the boss's {Storm Blades} and contribute a little on dealing damage to the boss. However, when the boss began to activate his {Storm Blades} more frequently than before, normal players would not even be able to get near the boss! Well, even Zhang Yang would fall if he got too close to the boss when the boss was using his {Storm Blades} at a more frequent rate!

Logically speaking, anyone would take some time to charge over 200 meters just to get to the boss. Even the Phoenix pet needed approximately 4 seconds to fly across that distance. If anyone charges into the effective range of the boss's {Storm Blades}, that person would have to sustain approximately 700,000 basic damage. Even if Zhang Yang activates his {Vitality Aura}, he would only have over 1,140,000 HP on him. So how many hits could he take with that amount of HP, then? Anyone could do the math.

Only the players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation were worthy of staying around the boss when the boss enters his 'Killing Cleave' stage. Meanwhile, they would have to apply the 'hit and run' tactic as well in order to stay alive long enough to kill the boss! Inheritances like Class C Inheritance could boost the player's HP by 10 times higher. A non-Tanker player with an entire set of Level 150 Ethereal Tier armor set would only have a basic 400,000 HP. The amount of HP the player has could be boosted up to 4,000,000 HP upon activating the Inheritance Transformation. Therefore, the players would have to retreat back to a safe distance in order to replenish their HP bar after hitting the boss for a while. If they do not do that, they would die very quickly.

However, the players also had the advantage in number. There were a lot of Healers parking themselves just right outside the area of a 200-meter radius around the boss. As long as a friendly unit comes up to them, they would just throw their Healing Skills on the player regardless of which guild the player was from. By doing so, the players would be able to re-engage into battle a little quicker.

Up until this point, all Regions had formed an unspoken rule. For

example, the China Region had taken over the direction of eight and nine o'clock around the boss. The Europe Region had taken over the direction of four and five o'clock around the boss. The Regions had split the boss's surrounding area into different 'territories'. Players would not run into the 'territories' of their enemy Region at the least.

24%, 23%, 22%, 21%, 20%!

When the HP bar of the boss dropped to 20%, Mathuven began to go insane. He could chain his {Storm Blades} with a {Destructive Smash}. After that, he would immediately use his {Storm Blades} again. The flashing of Mathuven's blade was so frequent that normal players no longer had the chance to get near to the boss. They were no longer capable of contributing in bringing down the boss.

The sole firepower of the Green Dragon lady was not enough to even make up with the boss's {Spectre Build}'s HP recovery. 30 seconds later, the HP of the boss was recovered back to 21%. The pace of the boss battle was restored to the initial pace. Once again, the boss would only use his {Storm Blades} once every 60 seconds.

If there were no players with Inheritance Transformation in the vicinity, the HP bar of the boss would be forever stuck at 20%. Then the boss would become 'immortal' in a way!

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang took the initiative to activate his Inheritance Transformation. There was no reason for him to be selfish anymore. If he acts selfishly and reserved his Inheritance Transformation at this point, they will not be able to take down the boss. When that happens, everyone in the server will receive a penalty of -3 levels! No one could afford to receive such penalty!

Meanwhile, players from all other Regions were beginning to activate their Inheritance Transformations as well. Every top Tier player in every Region no longer held themselves back. Obviously, they were thinking of a bigger picture. There was no reason for anyone to hold back now!

Zhang Yang was the first one to charge at the boss. Upon activating his

Inheritance Transformation, he had over a maximum of 45,000,000 HP on him. With his super thick Defence, Zhang Yang should be able to last quite a long time under the bombardment of the boss!

Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu immediately followed Zhang Yang closely behind. As discussed earlier on, Han Ying Xue would only heal the three of them. By doing so, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu would be able to stay within the attack range of the boss's {Storm Blades} without retreating at all. At the same time, they could unleash their attacks on the boss without worrying that they might die. The three of them were unleashing the full potential of a player with a Class S Inheritance!

On the other side, God's Left Hand, Heart of Destruction, Hourglass Figure and the others were beginning to charge at the boss as well. God's Left hand and Heart of Destruction glared at Zhang Yang with rage for a moment. However, they did not stir up any unnecessary battles. Instead, they vented their anger towards the boss.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely after realized that the two did not come for him. Well, these two were still considerate enough to look at the bigger picture. They had really proved to be very reliable because they were acting maturely. That's most probably why they could become Top Tier players.

A few seconds later, players with Class A Inheritances had arrived. Well, they had a slightly slower flying speed compared to the players with Class S Inheritances. The next batch that arrived were the players with Class B and Class C Inheritances. They arrived on their flying pets. At that moment, the players did not use any other ground pets that were high Tier than their flying pets, even though they had more powerful ground pets.

Why? Because ground pets were moving very slow compared to the flying pets. Players would need to retreat when their HP bars are halfway down. They would need to move fast in order to move away from the effective range of the boss's {Storm Blades} in one piece. Without the support of the flying pets' fast movement speed. The players would only be able to hit the boss for 5 seconds before retreating. With a flying mount, the players would be able to hit the boss for 10 seconds before

having the need to retreat!

Although the difference was only 5 seconds, the efficiency of the players' damage output would be improved twofold!

After all, these players were all transformed. First of all, their Attack power had been increased multiple times over. Furthermore, those who had Inheritances of Class C above were basically Level 150 by now. So only a few of them were affected by the Level gap Suppression function of the game. They could all deal full damage to the boss.

Under those circumstances, although the number of players with Inheritance Transformation was smaller, however, they were able to deal much more efficient damage to the boss than the players without Inheritance Transformations did. Ideally speaking, if they do not need to retreat after hitting the boss for awhile, they could deal even more damage to the boss within the same timeframe!

After all, the normal players were able to deal only 1 damage to the boss with a single hit. On the other hand, these players could deal tens of thousands of damage to the boss with a single hit! In other words, one player with Inheritance Transformation could replace tens of thousands of normal players in the boss battle!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resisted!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. However, he should be satisfied with the current situation as it was now. The {Glare of the Death God} was successfully casted on the boss once throughout the entire boss battle. However, it could be said that he had single-handedly reduced over 10% of the boss's HP bar! So what else would he want, then?

"Pest! Insolence countless pest!" Mathuven was infuriated by the attacks. He began to roar in anger, "I'm going to kill you all! Kill you all!"

The boss roared in rage. However, he could not change the fact that his HP bar was reducing slowly. 19%, 18%, 17%... if the pace of the battle could just continue on, the players would be able to empty out the boss's HP by

within one and a half hour!

Without even a single doubt, the next {Glare of the Death God} was stubbornly resisted by the boss as well. However, the HP bar of the boss had dropped to 11%!

Victory was just within everyone's grasp!

However, the players were also quite exhausted and suffered quite a number of casualties as well. A small number of them attempted to stay and hit a few more times before retreating. Because of their 'greed', they were forced to activate their life-saving Skills to survive the boss's {Storm Blades}. Still, some of them did not make it and they were slaughtered for good! Meanwhile, once the players were killed, they would not be able to rejoin the battle anymore. The reason was not because they could not resurrect themselves to join back into the battle. It was because their Inheritance Transformations would no longer be available after they die. There was no way that those players would be able to get close to the boss without the support of their Inheritance Transformation which boosted their Maximum HP several times higher. They would only be sending themselves to their own demises once again if they even try to get near to the boss.

9%... 7%... 4%... 2%!

As the HP bar of the boss was reducing, the players that were dealing damage to the boss began to have devious thoughts. Well, this was a World Boss after all. So the loots that the boss would drop upon his death must be extremely valuable. Before that, the boss still had quite a substantial amount of HP left. So no one had thoughts about snatching the loots. However, now the boss was about to die, the initially formed 'Alliance' was beginning to crumble. Everyone was thinking for themselves now. The moment when the boss dies, how should they proceed on snatching the loots? That was everything on the minds of every single player who was around the boss. Well, who wouldn't want to get more good stuff for themselves?

Without any discussion, everyone descended to the ground from the sky.

They wanted to get in range when the snatching starts. Meanwhile, those who were low on HP were not willing to retreat at a crucial moment like this. They could not risk that one moment when the boss dies, they might be far away from the boss. So they stayed to lower down the risk of the other players snatching the loots first.

However, that 1% or 2% HP of the boss would require the players to hit on for another tens of minutes. So it would take a while more before the boss would finally die. Well of course, those greedy bastards were naturally slain by the powerful impact of the boss's {Storm Blades}. Without their Inheritance Transformation, they had lost their capability to snatch the loots.

1%! 30,000,000! 20,000,000! 10,000,000!

Everyone began to raise their spirit because the boss was about to die!

5,000,000! 2,000,000! 1,000,000!

"NO---" Mathuven let out a miserable scream and collapsed heavily onto the ground. His gigantic sword was shattered into pieces. Among the shattered pieces of the sword, the hilt of the sword was flashing frequently. So that must be the quest item!

Almost everyone was charging towards that flashing hilt at the same instant!

"What an imbecile! Can't even get the thing done! I'll do it myself!"

Suddenly, a cold and deep voice echoed through the entire area. Every single player in the vicinity was suddenly 'imprisoned' somehow. A dark shadow sudden broke out of a void space in the middle of the air. The entire area was overwhelmed with the terrifying aura in an instant. Dark clouds began to cloud the entire sky. The atmosphere was astoundingly terrifying!

The moment that dark shadow appeared, the dark shadow lashed out at at the Green Dragon! The jab was so unexpected and fast that no one could react until it happened!

"ARGH ---" Elphenise cried miserably after the prodding. This powerful

Holy Tier boss was being killed instantly by one single jab?! That was insane! Upon her death, her gigantic heart glowing in green radiance was grabbed by the hand of the dark shadow!

"Enjoy your remaining lives while you still can! Not long after, the entire land will be devoured by darkness! Everyone on this land will become one of my slaves!" The dark shadow tore the void space open and went away.

Chapter 743: A Sight to Behold: The Lord of the Seven Spectre King

Although the dark shadow appeared incredibly sudden, it also left the vicinity incredibly fast as well. However, everyone was able to have a good look at the information of the dark shadow!

[Angus, The Lord of the Seven Spectre King] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level:???

HP:???

Defence:???

Melee Attack:???

Skills:???

Note: Angus was once a human warrior who was kind and brave. However, because his great merits made the King uneasy. So, the King framed him and exiled him to the land of the orcs. He succumbed after cutting through hordes of orcs. His undying vengeance had resurrected him from his death. From that day on, he became a Spectre! His strength is undoubtedly powerful. It did not take long for him to become the Lord of the Seven Spectre King, the highest of the higher in the realm of Spectre. He is the one Spectre that will send tremors across the entire land!

Although there were a lot of question marks, everyone was taking in cold breaths by just looking at the NPC's name and his Tier.

A Celestial Tier boss!

The power of a Celestial Tier boss would surely be unique and powerful. This Angus took out the Holy Tier Green Dragon lady with one punch! Of course, that was definitely a part of the drama of this game. Even a Celestial Tier boss would not have dealt 1,000,000,000 damage in a single hit! If that is possible, the players would never stand a chance at defeating that boss!

The moment Angus left, the terrifying aura instantly disappeared. Everyone regained control of their own movements again!

Snatch!

The once 'imprisoned' players continued to fly towards the loot. They instantly activated their Invincibility Effect --- if they had any on them at the moment. It would not be ideal to attempt killing the other players at that instant. It would be more important if the players throw their Status Restriction Skills on their opponents while making themselves invulnerable to all Status Restriction Skills. By doing so, they would still stand a chance to snatch the loots from the ground!

The bunch of players landed on the ground. They looked like a swarm of grasshoppers stomping into the yard. The boss had initially dropped at least 20 pieces of equipment and items. However, they were all swept cleaned from the ground in one short instance!

The players were mercilessly ferocious when it came down to snatching loots!

Everyone was looking at each other after that. They were judging the others for being so mindless. However, they had not thought that they had actually acted the same way. At that time, it did not matter if they manage to snatch any loots or not, everyone was frowning. They were expressing that they did not manage to get anything good up from the ground!

Well, it made perfect sense why everyone was acting in such a way. First of all, there were countless players in the vicinity. Whoever tried to show off what good stuff he or she gets would definitely become the primary target of everyone who had not acquired anything out of the snatching session.

Even though Mathuven was a World boss and he did drop quite a number of loots, but those 20+ pieces of equipment and items would be far from enough to be distributed among so many players. Even if they equally divide the loots among the guilds, only 20+ guilds would be satisfied with the outcome of it! After all, the entire China Region had more than just 20 guilds. Surely not every Top Tier guild would be able to

get any benefits from the snatching. If the guilds were to battle against each other to spark a wave of new guild wars, even Lone Desert Smoke would be overwhelmed!

Zhang Yang swept through the crowd with his eyes. His main purpose was to spot if anyone had a 'holy' light shining down on their heads. The player with the light shining down on them would be the person who was holding a broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation]! However, other than Sun Xin Yu, everyone seemed 'clean'. Therefore, he had no intention to provoke anyone this time around.

Truth to be told, he really wanted to kill as many players as he wanted so that the players would drop the items and equipment they picked up from among the loots. However, Zhang Yang had no idea who picked up the loots. Attacking players without any clue might spark a guild war between his guild and the other guilds!

So, it would be wise to stand down this time. Therefore, Zhang Yang decided to retreat a little and have a look at Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and the others. He wanted to check on them to see if any of them had managed to pick up anything good.

Well, hehe! The quest time had been obtained by him!

After killing the boss and looting the loot on the ground, there was no reason for any one of them to stay. Everyone began to tear their Teleportation Scrolls and left the area. They were teleported back to their own Territories. Even though most of the players did not get anything from the loots, they were not disappointed at all. After all, as long as someone manages to pick up the Hilt of Mathuven and hand it in, everyone who takes part in the boss battle would be rewarded with +2 levels!

Other than that, everyone managed to earn quite a number of 'Glory Points'. Those lower level players were already on their way to see the Officer NPCs that were located at every main city. Well, the 'Glory Points' could be used to exchange for some good equipment after all. Although the military equipment that they could exchange from the Officers were a

little bit weaker than the dungeon equipment of the same level, these military equipment were still the best choice for players that were not capable of clearing Hardcore Mode of a dungeon by themselves.

Zhang Yang and his party members gathered by Sauron's Castle. Then, they began to look at the 'fruits' that they harvested from the boss battle!

Zhang Yang did not even aim to get any of the equipment for himself. Even though a Holy Tier equipment was extremely valuable and rare, he would only be able to use the equipment for another half a year even if he could get a Level 160 – 180 Ascended Tier equipment for himself. However, if he could get some unique items such as a Skill Book, he could use the Skill or other useful items efficiently until he reaches Level 300!

For instance, look at Zhang Yang's {Charge Up Strike}! For another instance, look at Zhang Yang's {Glare of the Death God}! These Skills are something that can not be compared to any equipment available out there. These Skills could be described as one of those legendary 'equipment'!

Therefore, Zhang Yang only aimed to acquire the quest item --- Mathuven's Hilt! Furthermore, he could complete the quest by handling the quest item to the NPC. Not only could he earn Experience Points and 'Military Points', he could also acquire a piece of Holy Tier Accessory for every member in his party!

One small quest item in exchange for 10 pieces of Holy Tier Accessories sounded to be too good a deal right?

When Zhang Yang showed his party members the Mathuven's Hilt, everyone began to put a smile on their faces. Then everyone laughed. Even though not all of them managed to secure anything from the loots when the boss died, they could still get one precious piece of Holy Tier Accessory just because had Zhang Yang acquired the Mathuven's Hilt! That really made every single one of them the final winner of the entire boss battle!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang did not just snatch one item. He also managed to secure two pieces of [Top Tier Aura Stones]!

The moment he revealed the two pieces of [Top Tier Aura Stones], Han

Ying Xue immediately snatched one of them and put it to use. She finally enhanced her {Life Aura} to its max level! The other [Top Tier Aura Stone] was given to Sun Xin Yu. Zhang Yang's main intention was to let her enhance her {Critical Aura} as much as possible. Because Fatty Han and Hundred Shots had {Companion Aura} that would only work on pets. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} could only boost the party's Strength. It would definitely be more efficient if they enhance a Skill that could boost the Critical Rate of the entire party!

After that, Wei Yan Er also revealed one piece of loot that she managed to snatch. It was a heavy armor that radiated in a dark silver light!

[Skeleton King's Chest Plate] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +16,803

Strength: +4,120

Agility: 1,750

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 33,600 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level 20.

The moment the attributes of the armor were revealed, the three party members that needed Heavy Armor became really interested in getting it. After rolling for it, Zhang Yang managed to triumph over that little brat and Endless Starlight with 76 points. He secured that armor and put it on immediately.

"God damn it! I'm the one who snatched it in the first place! How did it end up in the hands of noob tank!?" Wei Yan Er pouted as she complained

with absolute prejudice.

Han Ying Xue threw a sexy smile at Zhang Yang. Well, she did not acquire any good equipment. Instead, she got a precious [Forbidden Scroll]!

[Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] (Consumable)

Use: Activates an Eclipse. Causes tremendous amount of damage to all enemy targets within the range of 10-kilometer radius. All targets lose 10% of their HP. If the target has less than 50,000 HP, that player will suffer a minimum deduction of 50,000 HP; if the target has more than 200,000 HP, then the target will suffer a deduction of 200,000 HP maximum. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 150

"This... this is an enhanced version of a Forbidden Scroll!" Everyone took a cold deep breath.

It works just like the apocalyptic special. This scroll would reduce 10% of all targets' HP in each passing second. However, this scroll did not have the limitation of a minimum deduction of 50,000 HP and a maximum deduction of 100,000 HP. Furthermore, the effective range of this scroll could reach out to 10 kilometers!

In other words, this [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] could deduct a maximum of 6,000,000 HP of a target within its effective range! Well, it would still be fair because players' equipment would be getting better and better as the game advances. The limitation on a Forbidden Scroll in deducting a maximum of 100,000 HP no longer threatened players with Class C Inheritance Transformations. Meanwhile, if that deduction is increased up to a maximum of 200,000 HP, that could even pose quite a threat to players with Class B Inheritance Transformations.

Other than that, the limitation on the minimum HP deduction of the Forbidden Scroll had created the tactic of talking off equipment to minimize the damage received. However, the effect had been largely nerfed. After all, players who were losing 50,000 HP in every second would require a very powerful Healer in order to stay alive!

"This is good stuff!" Zhang Yang quickly put the Forbidden Scroll into his inventory. Because the 'destructive' little brat's eyes were glittering with 'grave danger', Zhang Yang had to act fast and keep the Forbidden Scroll away from her to prevent her from snatching the scroll. Well, if she ever gets the scroll, she would definitely 'test' it out for fun and waste it away!

"Having this 'toy' in our possession is like having another nuke at disposal!" Zhang Yang laughed. Then he decided to put the Forbidden Scroll on sale after he went back to the main city. However, he would put the minimal bidding for the scroll as 99,999,999,999,999 gold pieces. That was one amount that even if someone manages to sell the entire earth, would still have not enough gold pieces to buy that scroll! Well, his initial intention was not to sell that scroll. Zhang Yang just wanted the news to spread out. He just wanted to send a message to all his enemies to f*ck off, or else he would slam them to death with the scroll!

--- There were only 4 high Tier Territories in the entire server. So it was natural that the other 4 Regions who did not possess any of the 4 high Tier Territories would launch a Territory Conquest on the Territories. Now that Zhang Yang had the words running through everyone's ears that he had a new Forbidden Scroll, at least, Sauron's Castle would receive lesser challenges from the other Regions.

Other members of the gang had nothing to offer as they couldn't move as fast as others. Meanwhile, even though Daffodil Daydream had activated her Class A Inheritance Transformation, she had run out of Status Removal Skills when they began to snatch the loots. As she was flying in the sky, she was stunned for a few seconds. Therefore, she could not get anything out of the loots. And now, everyone turned their eyes over at Sun Xin Yu.

Sun Xin Yu's face was covered with a black cloth as usual, making it impossible to read her expression. She took out a book from her inventory and threw it over to Zhang Yang.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 1] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: -

Use: Combine this item with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2].

"Haha! Another broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] has shown itself!" Everyone was pleasantly surprised.

Sun Xin Yu looked at Han Ying Xue with her very mysterious, provocative eyes. Her intention was clear. She wanted to indicate that she found something much more useful than Han Ying Xue.

Although the effect of the [Forbidden Scroll] was extremely powerful, it was a one-time item, after all. Meanwhile, the broken chapter of the [Book of Revelation] could be combined with the other broken chapters to become a Legendary item. The benevolent see benevolence and the wise see wisdom. Whichever works better depends on the person and how the person defines them. Well, even though the [Forbidden Scroll] could only be used once, it was so powerful that it could be used to threaten other players or even guilds in the game. So, if Zhang Yang decides not to use it, he could just store it nicely to use it as a 'nuke'.

Han Ying Xue was not willing to give in to that ice queen, as usual. She gave a vague humph back at Sun Xin Yu. After that, the two ladies turned and looked at Zhang Yang at the same instant. It seemed that they wanted the man to decide who did better, this time around.

This... this is like telling a man to step either on a Lego block or a coral. Picking either side would not end well at all! Therefore, Zhang Yang acted like he did not notice it at all and said, "Let's go back to hand in the quest!"

Well, the reward of this quest was a piece of Holy Tier Accessory, after all!.

Everyone was filled with joy and excitement. Even Zhang Yang only had two pieces of Mythical Tier Accessories. Now might be his best chance to switch one of his lousy Accessory for a better one!

Zhang Yang and his gang went back to the main city through the Teleportation Circle, one after another. They went back to look for the green little goblin Guraj so that they could hand over the quest for the rewards.

Chapter 744: Dark Source Stone

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Protect the Giant Dragon! You have received the rewards: 50,000,000 Experience Points, 1,000 Military Points.’

‘Ding! You have acquired an Item: Sacred Badge.’

‘Ding! You have acquired the additional reward: +2 Levels!’

Well, it was unfortunate that the appearance of Angus had led to the demise of the great Green Dragon lady. She got killed by a single blow from Angus! However, the entire event was just an ‘accidental event’. As a quest, the players did their best at making sure that Mathuven does not kill the Green Dragon. Angus appearing out of nowhere was just part of the ‘necessary’ drama.

It was a predetermined event. The script had already been set down that the Spectre would succeed on acquiring the heart of the Green Dragon, creating ‘Darkness Falls’ to terrorize the world. Therefore, it would not matter even if the players fail to protect the Green Dragon in the quest. The outcome of the quest would remain the same.

The reward of increasing by two levels was certainly a good consolation for every player in the game. Zhang Yang had shot up to Level 167, instantly. Comparing to his previous life, he would be half a year ahead of his own progress in his past life now! In his previous life, Zhang Yang had the advantage of having high Tier players babysitting him through the dungeons. Well, part of it was because he was quite a lucky bastard to be able to meet high Tier players whenever he waited the entrance of dungeons. Meanwhile, there were no players snatching or competing against him in the low-level regions of the maps. So, Zhang Yang managed to level up very quickly before he reached Level 100.

"Heroes and heroines, even though the heart of the giant dragon has been acquired by the Spectre, but you have slain that *sshole Mathuven! That should give quite a blow to the morale of the Spectres!" Guraj praised Zhang Yang and his gang. Then he said, "However, the fact that the

Spectre have acquired the Heart of the dragon cannot be undone anymore! They can now finish developing their 'Darkness Falls'! Therefore, you must work harder at stopping them! Go! Blow up their warehouse! They are storing a large number of [Dark Source Stones] in their warehouse! Those stones are the last items they need to complete building their weapon of mass destruction! Blow them up to kingdom come!"

'Ding! Guraj has given you a quest: Dark Source Stone. Will you accept it?'

Everyone selected 'Accept,' of course. There was no reason for them to decline at all.

'Ding! You have acquired an item: Goblin's High Explosive Bomb – Enhanced Destroyer IV.'

"Hey! What are you guys staring at? Go now! Did you really think I was going to treat you to a dinner!?" Guraj immediately hustled Zhang Yang and the gang out from the Adventurer's Society.

The location of the 'Dark Source Stone' quest was located back at the lair of the Spectre, The Plagued Land. However, it was not the Malevolent Tower where Wraith King of Death - Madravich lay. After all, who would be foolish enough to provoke the Celestial Tier boss, the Leader of the Seven Wraith! According to the official information of the game, Angus is just a Level 230 boss while Madravich is a Level 300 boss! The difference between the strengths of the two boss is huge!

The moment Zhang Yang and his gang received the quest, every other player who was Level 160 and beyond received the quest as well. Furthermore, because players who participated in the boss battle to slay Mathuven had acquired the reward of +2 levels, many players who were stuck at Level 158 suddenly shot up to Level 160. Because of that, the number of Level 160 players had increased drastically.

For instance, Female Raid Covert, that *ss-face, was also one of them! Well, he and his best pal Ten Dusk had formed a new party with Galileo and the other powerful players in Lone Desert Smoke's sub-guild. They ventured over to the location of the quest with great spirits. They even

claimed that they would overtake Zhang Yang's progress and complete the quest before Zhang Yang and his gang even gets close!

Well, an utter ss would remain an ss for all eternity!

After a few similar quests, they knew that they needed to slay many monsters for many days in order to let the system spawn out the location where they could throw the bomb. Well, when the number of monsters slain reaches a certain number, only would the boss for the quest be spawned. Furthermore, the boss must be taken care of before the players can throw the bomb and complete the quest.

Therefore, Zhang Yang's party of ten did not rush at all. They were going around doing random stuffs while getting themselves prepared for the quest. After all, they had been battling Mathuven for over 30 hours. The last thing they needed now was more fighting.

Lying on the bed with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were having the 'fun' of their lives, like a dragon dominating two phoenixes! Zhang Yang did a splendid job of pleasing the two ladies, to the point that they were totally dominated by him. After they were done, they got close together and whispered into each other's ears. After feeding each other some sweet words only meant for husbands and wives, the three of them logged back into the game. When they arrived, they realized that they were the only ones who had not arrived at the gathering. Everyone was guessing what took them so long.

Daffodil Daydream could still keep the secret to herself. However, Wei Yan Er could not resist the temptation at all. Without much of an effort, the other gang managed to tease the little brat into telling the truth saying that Zhang Yang and the two ladies were in the same room all the while! Everyone let out a surprised 'Oh!' and fixed their eyes on the three of them.

That little brat!

Zhang Yang quickly picked up Wei Yan Er like picking up a cat and threw her over to Han Ying Xue. Well, he intended to prevent that little brat from exposing more and more 'private' saucy tales of his and the two

ladies. Well, if that does happen, Zhang Yang's prestige as a leader would drop like hell.

Zhang Yang and the gang made their way to The Plagued Land. The moment they crossed the border, they saw that the entire motherland of the Spectre was grey. The entire land was basically a wasteland. There were countless of skeletal corpses roaming around the mountains and the wilderness of the entire land.

However, they also noticed that many guilds had already entered The Plagued Land. There was quite a number of parties in the area at the moment. Some were flying in the sky, while the others were on foot, slaying monsters. Further away, there were also other parties arriving from all directions at the same time. They were all going to the same place, after all.

This Main Story Quest was open to all. As long as the players reach the Required Level of the quest, they would be able to take part. Therefore, no one could keep the boss all to themselves. They would have to compete against each other in order to kill the boss and claim the loot to themselves. Well, that was most probably the main reason why the competition among the parties was getting more intense at every passing second! Zhang Yang and the gang were extremely annoyed. They had been busting their *sses to snatch the quests to themselves. However, they would have to repeatedly charge back into the crowd when the next quest is issued. It was really tiring!

Well, if the system did not set the quest to be open to all, taking down Mathuven would be almost impossible! Lone Desert Smoke would not be capable of taking down Mathuven all by themselves, after all. Mathuven was labeled as a World Boss for a reason. Players from all around the world should join forces in order to take down w World Boss. Other than that, they would have to trigger the drama mode to see if they get a powerful NPC to support them in battle!

The warehouse where the Spectre stored their [Dark Source Stones] was located in the Rokuta Castle. That place was a fully fortified fortress. The fortress was built on a cliff. The only way in and out was the front of the

fortress. There were countless Magic Cannons around the castle walls as the Defensive placements of the castle. If the players really want to march into the castle through the front, they would only do so at a heavy cost.

However, players with flying mounts would not be facing that much of a problem getting into the castle. They could just fly straight towards the entrance at full speed. Well, they would only have to suffer one or two blasts from the Magic Cannons. At the current stage of the game, the HP amount that the players had would be sufficient enough to survive one or two blasts from the Magic Cannons. Well, each blast of the Magic Cannons could cause only 150,000 damage. That amount of damage was far from enough to instantly kill a player with better Tier equipment.

Without wasting any breath, Zhang Yang and the gang split out and entered the castle through the front entrance. Although they were greeted with a few blasts from the Magic Cannons, they were able to withstand the amount of damage that the Magic Cannons could cause on them without the help of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart.

Upon landing into the castle, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly healed everyone back up. When everyone was back at their full health states, the party began to slaughter any monsters in the vicinity.

"Rawgh ---" Suddenly, a gigantic, white-boned, corroded beast appeared before the gang. It was about ten meters tall and 30 meters long. This creature looked like it had been patched up with some glue and some broken bones. Its rotten meat had some bone spikes growing out of it. There was also greenish and greyish liquid flowing out from the beast's body. The beast was gross and hideous to look at!

[Concentrated Acidic Corrosive Beast] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 5,250,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Strong Hydrochloric Acid]: Causes 3,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 20 meters radius once every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. Stacks up to 3 layers maximum.

[Strong Nitric Acid]: Causes 10,000 Nature damage to all targets within the range of 20 meters once every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. Cannot be stacked.

[Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction]: If the target is afflicted with 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} and {Strong Nitric Acid effects}, the target will receive additional 100% damage.

"What the f*ck! This monster is a little bit more powerful than I thought!" Everyone was surprised to see the description of the monster.

"Hehe! Nitric Acid Hydrochloric!" Fatty Han suddenly began to imagine some f*cked up thing in his mind. Well, everyone knew better that it had to mean more than that. The 'Nitric Acid Hydrochloric' in his mind must be something crooked.

"Come on, fatty! Nitric Acid Hydrochloric is science! So stop thinking weird things in that dirty head of yours!"

"Boo --- you burst my steam!"

Well, since that the monster had presented itself nicely in front of them, they just charged in and slaughtered the monster. Zhang Yang was the vanguard, as always. He began by throwing a {Spear of Obliteration} at the monster. '-193,892!' a high damage value popped out on top of the monster, Zhang Yang's current Attack power had increased so much that it was about to be as much as his Attack power when he activates his God of War Transformation!

"Owh!" The corroded beast groaned in pain. It let out a raging roar and quivered. Suddenly, countless greyish, green liquid spewed out from its body into the surroundings. However, there was no one standing within the range of 20 meters from the beast. The liquid was spraying onto the ground without touching anyone, or anything.

However, when Zhang Yang and his gang went up to the beast and

started their attacks on the beast, the beast began to quiver again and sprayed the gooish liquid from its body. This time, everyone had no way of dodging the liquid because they were very close up to the beast. They were afflicted by the corrosive effect of the acidic liquid. Those liquid were so gross that the ladies were screaming like little b*tches! However, the firepower of the party was extremely powerful. They took less than 10 seconds to slay the beast. The beast did not even get its chance to spray the gooish liquid for the third time.

The gang proceeded forwards after that. The entire castle was flooded with these corroded beasts. Because of the {Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction}, Zhang Yang and the gang did not dare lure too many monsters at once. Or else the DOT that 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} and {Strong Nitric Acid effects} could cause on them would be disastrous! Well, they would be receiving an additional 100% damage from the monster's attack when that happens.

"Hey, little lolly! Where are you guys now?" Female Raid Covert barged into Zhang Yang and his gang's party chat all of a sudden. He was not willing to give up on trying to tackle the little brat, after all.

After Zhang Yang and his gang revealed their location, the two parties gathered quickly in the castle. The 20 of them joined forces to clear out the monsters. Of course, they were able to clear out the monsters in the area more efficiently by doing so. Well, comparisons are odious. Even though Ten Dusk and his party also had handsome, skilled players like Galileo, they were no match at all to Zhang Yang and his gang when it comes to comparing!

When Zhang Yang and his gang kill two to three corroded beasts, Galileo and his other party members had only managed to kill one corroded beast. The difference between the capabilities of the two parties was striking!

Unfortunately for them, the core party of the Lone Desert Smoke had 3 players with Class S Inheritance, 2 players with Class A Inheritance, and 5 players with Class B Inheritance! Furthermore, the players also had 3 Legendary Tier pets and one Battle Companion capable of activating a

Transformation Skill to support them in battle! There was no other party in the entire server that would have such a powerful lineup!

The interior of the castle was open on all sides. Everyone could see different parties battling corroded beasts at every passage in the castle. However, the players deduced that they would need to kill the monsters for days before the boss shows its face!

The number of monsters in the castle was abundant. Although the number of players in the vicinity was high, they had no need to worry that they might run out of monsters to kill. They had no need to snatch other players' monsters as well. This area was a rare area for the players to grind for Experience Points!

Well, the players were not really riled up yet at the moment, It was most probably because they had been through a long boss battle not long ago. They were certainly bored out of their brains by now. Well, a repetitive thing would definitely get the players bored, just like having them go to the office and work every day.

Because of that, Zhang Yang disbanded the party and commanded them to take a day off. He wanted everyone to breathe some fresh air out in the real world for a bit. However, they should keep their phone switched on. If the boss suddenly spawns, Zhang Yang could still reach them, and they could still log into the game in time. Since they logged out of the game in the castle, it should be much easier for them to gather again when they log back into the game.

Chapter 745: Newly Researched and Developed Corrosive Beast

Coincidentally, there was a Christmas party at the Zhou Shu University at night. Zhang Yang brought the ladies over to the university to visit Wei Yan Er. The more the merrier, right? With Zhang Yang's current achievement, he could be considered as an honored Alumni of the university. Whenever there was a tenth anniversary or a fifth-anniversary celebration going on in the university, Zhang Yang would definitely be invited over to attend.

It has been more than two years since he graduated. Zhang Yang walked down memory lane. He remembered that he was all alone when he was walking on the roads in the university. Now, he had so many ladies around him. Furthermore, these ladies were just beautiful! His life had changed so much ever since he left the university. He could not even believe the contrast between his past and his current situation! The difference was like heaven and earth!

Since Zhang Yang had arrived, he decided to take a short moment to reconnect with Yu Li. Well, because of that, he disappeared from the sights of Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue for more than an hour. The two ladies kept trying to interrogate him about his whereabouts for the past hour --- does he need an hour to go to the washroom?

At night, it was natural that there were quite a number of pretty ladies around the vicinity of the vent. Each age bring forth new beauties on this noble land. Even though he had not yet seen someone as beautiful as Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu, the ladies that he saw could still score a 7, or even 8 out of 10. Well, Zhang Yang did get a good wash of his eyes that night.

Han Ying Xue pouted gracefully and gave a nice pinch on Zhang Yang's waist. The pain spread out throughout his entire body as he cried in misery. Well, that witch did not really know that Zhang Yang had no bad thoughts on his mind at all. He was purely admiring the beautiful 'sights'

that lay before his eyes. If he really wanted to be a playboy, there were tons of pretty ladies in his office, waiting to welcome him with their two legs wide open!

That night, none of them logged into the game. They had a good rest throughout the entire night.

On the second day, everyone logged into the game after they woke up. Then they continued to venture deeper into Rokuta Castle. After a good rest, everyone seemed to be more energetic and refreshed. Unlike yesterday where they were moving like zombies, they were more fired up as they slew the monsters in the surroundings today.

Well, thanks to the +2 levels reward, more players have managed to enter the Rokuta Castle. Well, quite a number of them had almost reached Level 160. The reward had brought them up to Level 160 and beyond. Some players knew that it would be extremely hard to snatch the boss for their own benefits or to complete the quest. However, they still came along because they wanted to see if they would be lucky enough to take advantage of others and get some Holy Tier equipment.

Well, Holy Tier equipment was still rare among the players. Even Lone Desert Smoke had less than 40 pieces of Holy Tier equipment in their possession. Normal players would have no other chance of acquiring one at the moment.

One day, two days, three days... time lapsed slowly. Most of the monsters in the castle had been slaughtered. Well, this region had been temporarily added to fulfill the conditions of the quest. So, the monsters in this region would not respawn once every 5 hours, like the other Elite Tier monsters out in the other areas. Well, as long as players could clear out the monsters in this vicinity, the boss would be spawned.

When a party manages to complete the quest and hand in the quest, this region would automatically vanish. As described in the quest description, this area would be 'leveled down to the ground by a bomb'. However, if no one could complete the quest and hand in the quest in one month, the monsters in this region would respawn. That would give the other parties

a second chance to complete the quest.

Because the number of parties that entered the region was more than enough, there was basically no monsters left in the vicinity on the fifth day. The moment the last monster was slain, everyone in the region heard a thunderous roar echoing through the entire region. Right in the middle of the square of the castle, a gigantic corroded beast spawned. This beast was about hundreds of meters tall. It was about hundreds of meters long as well. Its body mass was about the size of a small mountain. The body mass of the monster was far larger than any other building in the vicinity of the entire castle.

[Newly Researched and Developed Corrosive Beast]

Level: 180

HP: 18,000,000,000

Defence: 18,470

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398

Skills:

[Strong Hydrochloric Acid]: Shoots concentrated corrosive Hydrochloric Acid to all targets within the range of 50-meter radius. Targets will be afflicted with 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} effects. Each layer of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} effect will cause 20,000 Nature Damage to each target once in every 3 seconds. One layer will be removed once in every 15 seconds.

[Strong Nitric Acid]: Causes 10,000 Nature damage to all targets within the range of 50 meters once in every 3 seconds. Last for 15 seconds. If the target has 3 layers of {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} effects, the effects will turn into the effect of {Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction} and cause 300,000 Damage to the target.

[Bone Spikes]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Spectre Build]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP

recovery will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: This is a weapon of war that has been newly developed by the Spectres. Because the number of this monster is extremely rare, this weapon cannot be duplicated to form a massive army.

The moment when the boss was spawned. The entire castle was immediately sealed by an air wall! The players who were outside the vicinity could no longer go in! That was actually a safety measure made by the developers of the game. They wanted to prevent any players from taking advantage of the other players who had worked hard to bring down the boss. Some players would take advantage of other players by waiting for other players to bring down the HP bar of the boss. When the boss is about to die, these players would rush in to snatch the outcome of the battle for themselves.

However, the intelligence of the players was not to be underestimated. In the previous boss battle when players were battling against the Spiritual Beast King, some players attempted to use 'player planting' tactic, and they worked. The so-called 'player planting' tactic was to let most of the party's players go offline first. Only a few of them stayed to observe the battle. When the battle reaches its crucial moment, those players would inform their party members to come back online. By doing so, they could reserve their strength until they were required to engage in battle.

However, it seemed that they had also underestimated the intelligence of the game designers. Those who attempted to use the 'player planting' tactic had soon found out that they would appear by the Teleportation Circle that they tied their Teleportation Scroll on! What a tragic situation!

Well, they only can blame themselves for that. If 'player planting' could be used anywhere players wanted, too many players would abuse the tactic. If 'player planting' could be used anywhere and anytime, then players would be able to form a 1,000-player party to enter a 50-player scale dungeon! They could just allow 950 players to go offline first. When one player in the dungeon dies, they could just ask a new substitute to log back into the game and continue in the dead player's place! It would become outrageous, because players would be able to challenge dungeon

boss with numbers!

This corroded beast boss was not that hard to kill for a top Tier party. Unlike Mathuven who was a World Boss which required players to swarm up in order to kill him, this corroded beast boss could be taken down by 10 powerful players who have activated their Inheritance Transformation.

Therefore, killing the boss was not the top priority for the top Tier parties. Their top priority was to clear out their opponents while the air wall is still around!

Instantly, a chaotic battle royale began! In just an instant, hundreds of players were mercilessly terminated. They were forcefully turned into streams of white light before they were forcefully sent back to the Graveyard! Furthermore, because of the air wall, the players who got killed could only choose to resurrect themselves in their weakened forms. Or else, they would have to wait until the boss battle is over before they could run back to their dead bodies in the castle.

Zhang Yang combined two of his parties into one. So, he and his newly merged party of 20 began to take out their opponents as well. Well, whoever had come for the boss should realize that they would have to go through a lot of players before they could get to the boss! No one on the battlefield would go easy on anyone. Only idiots would roll dices to see who gets to the boss first. Furthermore, those who could not afford to 'play' could just leave with their Teleportation Scrolls!

Some parties tried and died. Some parties were acting carefully. So they gathered back to the main cities. Meanwhile, there were also some parties hiding into buildings around the castle. They were hoping that they could charge out and take advantage of the others who were battling out there at the crucial moment of the boss battle.

Of course, the boss was not weak at all. Because no one had the boss's aggro fixed on anyone, the boss began to unleash its deadly attacks at the players in its surrounding randomly! The boss would activate its {Strong Hydrochloric Acid} once almost every minute. Meanwhile, it would also activate its {Strong Nitric Acid} once every 15 seconds. Theoretically

speaking, players would have to suffer the boss's {Nitric Acid Hydrochloric Reaction} effect once in every passing minute. Not everyone could sustain 300,000 damage and still stand still like nothing has happened!

The players on the battlefield had to handle the PvP matches that came straight up at them while sustaining damage from the boss's attacks head-on. The stress level was enormous. The players were activating their Inheritance Transformation one after another, as the battles went on. It would be a stupid attempt to try reserving their best Skills at a time like this. If they did, they would definitely be wiped out by other players.

Under the bombardment from two sides, the number of casualties was rising tremendously. Players were getting killed at every passing moment, every passing second. They were turned into white lights and went back to the Graveyard. It did not take long before the top Tier players were the only ones who remained on the battlefield. For instance, Lone Desert Smoke, Hell Family and Land of Savages were still battling fiercely on the battlefield,

Most of the parties had merged their forces together to form an Alliance with the intention to take out the parties that were much more powerful than them. When their worst enemies were all dead, the Alliances would dissolve and they would turn against each other to see who would last till the end.

Fierce battles were happening on every corner of the battlefield. The weaker parties were being eliminated one after another. Well, among the strong there is always a stronger. Even top Tier parties from top Tier guilds like Dark Palace and Paragon had been eliminated, one after another as well! Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage managed to hold until the very last by the end of the battle royale. For that, Zhang Yang had paid a heavy price as well. He even gave up the chance of completing the quest over to the Crimson Rage. However, the Lone Desert Smoke would still get to keep the loot other than the equipment.

Truth be told, this quest would only reward each player with 500 Military Points. Although Zhang Yang felt a heartache while giving away the 'ticket' to completing this quest, he would be able to earn even more if

the boss would just drop a Forbidden Scroll or a powerful Skill book.

Actually, Crimson Rage could have taken out the boss all by themselves with ease. As two extremely powerful parties joined their forces together on this, they took less than an hour to slay the boss.

However, this boss was not as generous as Mathuven. It only dropped 2 pieces of Holy Tier equipment and 5 pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment. However, no one would really care about those equipment if they knew how the game worked. Each party took one piece of the Holy Tier equipment. Other than that, a Skill Book and piece of Skill Point Crystal were dropped as well. So Zhang Yang picked them up, as he was promised that he could. Meanwhile, the bomb was thrown by Snow Seeker, because Zhang Yang had agreed to let them have the quest.

Upon completing the quest, everyone went back to their respective main cities. Along the way back, they distributed the equipment among themselves. The only Holy Tier equipment was a pair of leather boots. Hundred Shots got lucky that day. He won the equipment over by rolling out the highest score. Meanwhile, the Skill Book was obtained by Ten Dusk.

[Radiance of the Brave]: When hit, there is a 1% rate that you can recover your HP by 3 times of the damage value you receive.

The Skill seemed to promise a very efficient effect. However, the rate of triggering it was too damn low. It would be like recovering your HP by 3% the amount of all damage taken. In other words, the players would have a 3% Damage Immunity to himself or herself. Meanwhile, the player would still be vulnerable to the effect of {Destructive Smash}.

The moment the main quest was handed in by the Crimson Rage, Guraj no longer had any Main Story Quests left to offer. However, naturally, some greedy goblin had sold some more [Dark Source Stones] to the Spectre again. Because of that, the Spectre were able to continue on with the development of their 'Darkness Falls'.

Judging from a certain perspective, the 'Spectre Invasion' should be called 'Goblin Invasion'. Why? Because the completion of 'Darkness Falls'

was basically made possible, all thanks to the goblins.

The remaining quests just had players running errands. Players were required to pass messages around from this spot to another spot, quite apart from each other. Everything seemed so simple. Well, it seemed that the story has progressed, nevertheless. There was no way to prevent the 'Darkness Falls' from being built. Therefore, all races in the entire region would be required to band together in order to fight against the Spectre, Or else, the entire land would be devoured by darkness itself!

According to the Official's message, after one month of the in-game time, 'Darkness Falls' would be completed. Meanwhile, Angus will sooner or later be leading the Spectre Army to invade the four high Tier Territories. Once they have conquered all four of the high Tier Territories, the Spectres would be using the four Territories as their bases of operation to invade the 8 Territory Gateways. After they manage to conquer the Territory Gateways, they would pass through the Teleportation Door at the Ten Barren Seas to enter the main cities. From there onwards, the Spectres would start slaughtering all players from all Regions on their own soils.

When the four high Tier Territories are under siege, there would be no telling which Territory will Angus go for first. Whichever Territory he goes to will be the one Territory that will suffer the worst fate among all four Territories.

Well, the Spectre Army would only have the advantage in numbers without Angus's presence. Players would still be able to fend off the Spectre Army with ease, by relying on the Graveyard of their Territories. However, if a Celestial Tier boss joins into the battle, the boss could easily wipe out the players by just raising his fingers around. There will be no chance at all for the players to fight back!

Meanwhile, the massive NPC Army would only gather at the Territory Gateways. Therefore, the four high Tier Territories were destined to fall momentarily.

Chapter 746: Darkness Falls

30 days' time was not long enough, especially when it was the altered in-game time. Everyone took that chance to raid bosses to raise their Levels and strength. However, little did they know that it would be a complete waste of time. Their opponent was a Celestial tier boss where 99% of all players around can only deal a pathetic 1 damage. They could only make a difference if they could reach Level 200 by the end of the given time.

Zhang Yang had managed to reached Level 169 by the end and was incredibly saddened that he was unable to reach Level 170 before the great war. Then again, even if he is able to reach Level 170, it would not allow Zhang Yang to equip the Ascended tier weapon in his storage, since that equipment required Zhang Yang to be Level 180.

Besides the players, the NPC army was making preparations themselves. All soldiers were gathered together at the frontlines to form a strong and solid formation. Such an army would help against the monsters. Sadly, they would not be of much use when Angus himself comes forth to the front lines.

Zhang Yang pestered his party to keep on completing quests that could earn them Military points. Even though it would be a waste of time, Zhang Yang still pushed them to do it. In his previous life, Zhang Yang's Level was too low to even participate in the great war. All he could do was to clean up random, low-level monsters. During then, he had heard of the importance of Military points, and it was not just to hire soldiers. Details about the importance of it was unclear to Zhang Yang. He could only guess that it was somewhat important to the boss.

As time goes went on by, the decisive battle arrived. Zhang Yang was so happy that Queen Serene herself had stepped out to his aid and defended Souron's Castle! None of the other Territories had such privilege to be paid such a visit from an Empire's queen! It was most probably due to the fact that Zhang Yang had a "good" relationship with Queen Serena.

At that moment, with the powerful Ascended tier boss at their side,

everyone but Zhang Yang had the utmost confidence to defeat the boss. They had placed their hopes in Serena to fight the boss while the players swarm the boss and lay down any damage they could dish out.

All but Zhang Yang was happy about it. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had witnessed the downfall of all the players seven times before they were able to defeat Angus in the eighth attempt. By then, all eight major regions, all 64 Ascended bosses were sortied to fight the boss but were unable to defeat the boss until then. That was how powerful Angus, a Celestial boss could be.

Even though Serena had the Meteor Sword, making her stronger than the average Ascended tier boss, she alone was not as strong as the combined number of 64 Ascended tier bosses! Furthermore, they had received a total of 7 buffs while Angus was weakened by 7 times before they could win!

Despite the hardship, players could still fight in the war, not against Angus, but to farm experience points from the monsters in the war itself. Although Angus was practically invincible, the monsters were spawning endlessly. As long as Angus remains alive, so would the monsters' spawn rate. It was a chance that cannot be ignored! For once it slips away, there is no chasing it.

There was no doubt that the first attack attempt will result in an inevitable failure. It would be nice if they could defeat Angus on their first try and obtain all 13 Celestial tier set-equipment. It was nice to hope, but it would be an impossible task to accomplish. Zhang Yang had estimated that they would only win the war on either the third or fourth attempt. It would still be nice for the equipment drop to be set equipment.

On the first day of New Year, the war started. The war that everyone had anticipated and prepared for has arrived. The system had automatically sent out quests to all players above Level 160. Parties that were able to defeat Angus will receive 2 Skill Points as a reward, limited to only 10 players! Furthermore, if Angus was killed then, all players that had participated in the war will receive a Level +2 reward. Similar to Skeleton Admiral Mathuven.

The calm before a storm was the similar sensation Zhang Yang felt in the silence of the battlefield. As his suspicion rose, the bright daylight was eclipsed by a sudden intrusion of dark clouds. Within an instance, the sun, the blue skies, was covered over with darkness, as if the night had fallen. Cold winds blew by, along with the cries of sorrow and dismay across the horizon.

Darkness Falls has been activated!

The echoes of soldiers marching could be heard right after the sun was blotted out.

"Enemy sighted, commander!" cried the Elven scouts, who had superior vision. Zhang Yang did not need superior elven eyes to know that. With his normal vision, he could already spot the oncoming enemies from the horizon. They were like a pitch black wave that came swarming in like black tar. Over the hills, mountain, and field, the number of incoming Spectre monsters were uncountable. It was going to be a tough fight, since there was more than one type of monster. Skeletal soldiers were the easiest to deal with, while the others were zombies, Abomination, Necromancer, Death Knight, and even a siege tank!

The siege tank was unlike any Zhang Yang had ever seen. The tank was made from the combination of the bones of their enemies merged together with eerie, disgusting, exposed muscle and tendons. The problem with the "tank" was that the corpses that were used to build the tank was enchanted with some sort of powerful spell. When an attack lands, the eerie structure will burst, emitting out poison gas that will temporarily convert NPC soldiers into Spectres.

What an ingenious method to start a war. Normally, siege tanks would be used to break down thick castle walls, yet the Spectres have used them to change the tide of war by converting the enemies to their allies!

"Ready the troops!" Among the army of the Empire, came a loud bellow from a man fully clad in shiny golden armor. He raised his sword high and with his horse standing on its rear legs.

With the horse stomping down, he cried, "ATTACK!"

PEW PEW PEW!

The army that Serena had brought to the base fired countless of lit oil barrels towards the enemy. The barrels exploded on the ground and caused high AoE damage.

The Spectre retaliated by bringing out their catapults that were armed with rotting corpses. The corpses landed behind the castle walls and spread green, toxic gas that immediately converted all soldiers into zombies. As such, the enemy had managed to attack both in and out of the castle.

The exchange of catapults lasted for several tens of minutes before both sides ran out of munitions. Shortly after, the Spectres were the first to blow their horn to signal the attack. The entire swarm of Spectres came swarming towards the castle, like rodents.

"Knights! Press on!" cried the same general. Before he could complete his order, Queen Serena stood tall at the edge of the watchtower at the top of the castle and cried out, "ATTACK! FOR THE GLORY OF MANKIND!"

Her soldiers roared with vigor and fervor as they charged out of the castle walls and attacked the Spectre. Sadly, the number of human soldiers were only by the tens of thousands. Compared to the Spectre, they were only a small island, versus the entire ocean!

Queen Serena took charge of the command and cried, "Sentries march on! ARCHERS ATTACK THE REAR! SPELLCASTERS! PREPARE YOUR ARCANE BLASTS!"

More and more commands were shouted out and the NPC army obeyed her commands. As such, even though the NPC army were greatly overwhelmed, they held their ground well. In fact, through Serena's strategical command, the NPC army had not suffered any losses. For the moment. Then, players from China started to pour out from behind the NPC army and flanked the Spectres from the left and right.

Zhang Yang was standing next to Serena at that moment, and he wanted to go down to the battlefield to gain some experience points. However, Serena had mistaken his actions for battlelust and stopped him.

"Hold on for now. Let the troops handle the weak ones first. The strong like you will only be needed in the battle field when more powerful enemies appear. It will be a boost of morale if you appear later in the battle."

"Yes. I hear and obey, your highness."

Although Zhang Yang had knelt down and expressed his desire to acknowledge the queen's order, he was greatly disgruntled. He had wanted to go down to reap some precious experience points! However, Queen Serena had only come to his aid due to the Relationship. No other territory had such service from their own castle Baron. Even though Zhang Yang was eager to go down to lay down some kills, he had pushed his desire away and listened to the queen. It would be for the wiser, since the queen might be angered. Who knows what she might do to him! As such, Zhang Yang remained on the watchtower.

Even though the Spectre forces were swarming in like locusts, under the command of Queen Serena, the NPC army, paired with players, were able to strike down the incoming Spectres like the locust that they were. Right then, the number of Level 100 players in China had reached over 100 million. Most of them had decided to camp at Sauron's Castle. Even though most of them were unable to get inside the castle, as more and more players had exited the castle to enter the battlefield, most players were able to teleport in and join the fight.

The exchange of attacks continued on and many players fell in the fight. However, the flow of the battle remained unshaken as the graveyard was near. The time taken to revive again was extremely quick and easy. As such, players were able to rejoin the fight while the Spectre soldiers were suffering great losses until their reinforcements arrives.

It was estimated there were around 1 to 2 billion Spectres, then. Since players were able to keep on reviving, Sauron's Castle will not fall since players were able to keep on reviving, as if they had endless reinforcements!

Right then, it was only matter of time for the Spectre soldiers to be

wiped out. The only thing to worry about then, was when the final boss appears. When Angus arrives, that will be the final decisive battle since the winner will be decided in merely a short time.

Eventually, 3 hours had passed and the Spectre soldiers suffered the most losses. Initially, they came in like a tsunami, but players were able to stop that rushing wave by hacking away at the front ones first and slowly chasing after the soldiers behind!

"Useless scum..."

A cold, deep voice was heard and amidst the gory battlefield, a black portal appeared. Out came a large character that floated midair. Abyssal darkness seeped out from his entire character and formed an absolute void around him.

The darkness around him was so dark that everything around him was rendered 2D. Even though Darkness Falls had merely turned day to night, light could still exist somewhere in the field. Angus was different. He seemed to be carrying a blackhole around him! An existence that could swallow light, even!

[Angus, The Lord of the Seven Spectre King] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 23,000,000,000

Defense: 100,000

Magic Defense: 100,000

Melee Attack: 633,914 – 833,914

Skills:

[Blade of Obliteration]: Deals 100% melee Chaos damage to all targets within 500 meters.

[Death Cleave]: Deals 150% melee Chaos damage to a target. Cannot evade. Cannot block.

[Despair Aura]: Creates a Cage of Despair around a target every 3

seconds. Targets will be immobilized. Aura Range: 200 meters.

[Death Feeds]: Each target that Angus kills will restore 1% HP. Recovery rate cannot be affected by any skills.

Since the battle was part of the story plot, even though Angus Level had exceeded the players' ability to check his stats, players were still able to observe and examine him. It was then, when everyone gasped in unison. 23 billion HP is not a number to joke about.

Truthfully speaking, the boss' HP was not an exaggeration. Even though players could only deal 1 damage at a time, there were 100 million players then, and if everyone hits the boss 230 times, they could kill the boss with ease! The problem lay with the boss HP recovery skill. One death will restore 1% HP? That's just OP beyond reason!

The boss' attack was more than 100,000. At that point, no one could heal that much in an instance! It would be useless to rely on numbers alone to defeat the boss. Strategy? What is that? The players were all so grossly underequipped! Defeating the boss will only be a pipedream!

"From this day forth, the world shall be mine! Let Darkness engulf the land and the Spectre shall take it all! Death shall come to those who live!"

Chapter 747: A Losing War

The key to defeating Angus is to not die by his hands. A single death will only restore 1% of his health. That number would be as high as 230,000,000!

No wonder none had managed to kill Angus at the first try! Using massive numbers to defeat the boss was not only inefficient, but would also give free health to the boss! However, the current player's Levels were so low, no one would be on par with the boss! The only way of surviving the war and defeating the boss was to rely on the NPC!

The problem was that the system had not made things that simple. In his previous life, the NPCs had gone through seven attempts and was only able to defeat the boss on the eighth attempt, only when the NPCs had been greatly strengthened. Sadly, due to their failure, Angus' death had only dropped four random Celestial non-set equipment.

As the battle started, some lazy players skipped over the examining the boss' skills and charged into the frontline and died blindly. Hence, if no one takes the helm in leading the mass players, the boss will be completely immortal. No one can defeat the boss, even if players have Celestial bosses at their aid!

"Impudent Spectres! You dare invade the White Jade Empire?! I shall have your head on a stake! Let that be a lesson to all Spectres! No! Perhaps I shall wipe all Spectres off the face of the world!" Serena leapt off the watch tower and flew, without wings, towards the center of the battlefield. With quick reflex, her royal gown was immediately transformed into a grand combat gear. She pulled out her sword and was ready to charge.

"Such a bold human female...Now your place. It is I who shall wipe all humans! Heed my words and surrender to darkness!" Angus laughed and threw out a long, thin blade out of the air and used it to charge towards Serena.

"Sword of Life and Death!" Serena cried out and unleashed her ultimate skill to face the strong Angus. Sadly, even though she could inflict as

much as 600,000 damage, it was merely a tiny itch for the Celestial tier boss!

"HMPH!"

With a quick swing of his sword, Angus struck Serena. Although Serena had managed to parry the sword swing, she was blown away as if she was weightless.

"Weak..."

The Queen emerged out of the crater that she was blast into and forcefully tore off her right shoulder plating. "Curse you Spectres!" She concentrated her powers into the Meteor Sword. The blade glowed with an intense white radiance.

"Holy Light, Cross Soul Slash!"

"OOFH!" Angus grunted with pain. Serena's attack was of Holy attribute, which was extremely powerful against the Spectres. With the godly power of the Meteor Sword, she was able to deal more than millions of damage.

"Seems like you're all but talk. Come at me, evil being. I shall purify you!"

"Watch your words, little girl. I am the Lord of the Seven Kings."

"Lord or not. You're nothing but a monster that I will destroy."

Serena stomped her feet into the ground and kicked herself off at supersonic speed to clash against Angus. As such, the two bosses started exchanging blows. Even though Serena had the advantage of her Holy attribute and was using it to overwhelm the boss, Zhang Yang had no confidence in her. The boss had that OP healing ability. A single use of {Blade of Obliteration} could kill many players around 500 meters from where he stood. At the rate of things, Angus will never have his HP lowered!

Ever since the start of the battle, Angus had been an indestructible boss! However, Serena was no ordinary Ascended tier boss. She wields the Meteor Sword, hence, even though she will have trouble killing Angus,

she, herself had proved to be extremely tough to kill as well!

"Feel despair!" Angus bellowed and swung his sword hard, downwards to cleave Serena. With great power, she held her stance even as her feet slid back and block the downward slash with all her might. The resulting impact was so powerful that the impact had blasted off a wave that sent the earth around her cracking and scattering into sand. Serena borrowed the momentum of the boss' swing and spun around the air to slice at the boss from the sky. The sword landed cleanly on the boss and had ever more destructive power that a power compressed air blasted the sky, sending the dark clouds to scatter away. For a glimpse, the sun's rays were able to shine upon the land of darkness.

Players had not surrounded Angus for they realized their own strength was lacking. The only choice they had was to fight the smaller ones to earn a few experience points.

Now that Queen Serena was in the battle herself, Zhang Yang had no reason not to attack. He called forth his Phoenix and rode the bright burning bird downward. Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, when Angus had made his appearance, the Spectre forces were already on the verge of being wiped out. Hence, after only 30 minutes or so, Zhang Yang had cleaned the entire battlefield up. Angus was the only Spectre left standing.

Without players coming forth to attack him, Angus had long since cut down a player. Hence, uninterrupted, Queen Serena had hacked his HP down to the last bit.

As expected of the Queen of the White Jade Empire, a character who never even came to being in his previous life and joined the battle of Angus. In fact, she might even be stronger than Angus himself!

If only there were more strong NPCs like Serena aiding the fight, the boss fight would probably have ended long ago. That is, if stupid players would stop rushing in to die for Angus.

Zhang Yang hesitated for a moment. There was one question that was circulating in his mind for some time. Should he use his Transformation skill then?

Besides Zhang Yang, no one else could fight toe to toe with the boss even if they have used their Transformation skill. Angus was a world boss, and his skill {Blade of Obliteration} rage and cooldown were not something to be taken lightly. He could wipe out many players by simply swinging his sword and the occasional use of {Death Cleave}.

On the other hand, the boss had an average basic attack of 730,000. Under the power of the Level Suppression system, the boss will deal close to double the damage. That means, the destructive power of {Blade of Obliteration} could reach as high as 1,460,000. By average, the boss will use his {Blade of Obliteration} once every 2 seconds. Hence, his DPS would be as high as 730,000. It would take only 14 seconds for the boss to kill someone with 10,000,000 HP.

Zhang Yang defenses and HP were not strong enough to withstand that amount of damage and survive. Plus, the boss attack attribute was Chaos type; they would never be affected or reduced by Defense or Magic resistances. Even if Zhang Yang was to Transform, he would not last longer than 100 seconds with his 52,000,000 HP!

That would only mean that S class players like Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and himself could only survive damaging the boss for a hit or two before running to safety and to restore their HP. The situation could never be so dire. Just when the boss was overleveled, now, the players would be forced to run out of the attacking range of 500 meters!? What sort of battle is that?

It could not be helped then. The current players then, could not even defeat a regular Ascended tier boss, what more a Celestial tier!?

Right then, a group of players, riding on their flying mounts were flying through the sky to attack the boss. There were not many of them, but merely in groups of a thousand or more. Zhang Yang did not even need to squint his eyes, for their speed was extremely fast. They were all players from the European server.

"Take the boss! Get the loot!" Someone from the group had yelled out and the entire group roared with fervor. They charged into the boss range

as if the boss was about to be taken away by someone else.

"Stupid fools!" Players who were standing on top of the watch tower behind the castle wall cursed. A tragic event was about to unfold.

"Blade of Obliteration!" Angus grunted and unleashed his sword swing. Almost half of the players that charged towards the boss died. The other half that survived the swing managed to survive, only because they had already activated their Transformation skill. On the other hand, due to the death of many, many players, the boss had restored his HP back to 100%!

"Ignorant fools!" cried Serena and she pointed her sword up high. Again, she concentrated her powers into the sword and cried, "Sword of Life and Death!"

Shush shush shush!

Not only was Serena attacking the boss, her targets included the players from other regions, other than China! Since they were not of the same allegiance, the players from Europe were all Serena's enemies, and her attacks had landed on them as well.

With two bosses attacking together, players were still being killed, even though they had used their Transformation skills. In less than a few swings, all the C class Inheritance players fell, followed closely by the B class players, and A class players.

Fortunately, the only S class Inheritance holder, God's Left Hand was not so stupid to charge at the boss like idiots. Or else, he would be the first S class Inheritance player that would be killed by the boss!

"Hahahaha! All who live shall be food for my soul! Come to me and die by my blade! I shall reap your lifeforce!" said Angus as he restored his HP back to 100% and smiled with such satisfaction.

"Insolent fool. Life is not something that belongs to you! Heed my words, O evil lord, I shall cut you down!" Queen Serena stood strong, even though the situation was extremely dire. It was that stoic stance of a Queen, the utmost confidence in her own power.

"Know your place! Fool!" Angus grunted with anger. The two bosses then

continued their swordplay.

When there's one idiot, there will be the next, and the next as well. The next group of greedy players that soared towards the boss were the players of India. When they saw how the boss had cut down the players from Europe. They decided to take note of the boss' skill and carefully examined his attack pattern. As such, there were no second group of idiots that charged into the boss to die.

No sooner after, players from North America, Australia, and South America had gathered. Obviously, they had obtained the news about Angus and had come over to get the loots. However, the boss was so strong that none of them was able to formulate a battle plan to fight the boss.

Still, they were players with diehard stubbornness, trying to fight and only managed to deal that 1 pathetic damage. It was a bet, to see if they could deal enough damage to be able to grab the loot later when the boss is defeated. The main problem was that their greed was Angus's nourishment. Every player that was stupid enough to get close to the boss was killed and was converted to be his HP. As such, Angus HP had never dropped below 95%.

Even though Serena had devastating powers, her DPS was not as strong as Angus's HP restoration. As the battle dragged on longer, Serena started to grow weary. The winner of the fight was most definitely getting obvious.

"Protect the Queen!"

"Defend her highness!"

Soldiers of the Empire rushed over to surround Serena and group peeled off to attack Angus. Sadly, like players, they were not able to even deal any significant damage. Like players, they were only "nourishment" for the boss. As time goes, the boss had only become stronger while Serena had only become weaker.

At one point, Serena's HP had dropped so low that all the army had rushed into the battle to fight.

5%...3%...1%...

When Angus was about to strike the killing blow, Serena's Meteor Sword glowed with an intense radiance and engulfed Serena, rendering her invulnerable. With a saddened voice, Serena cried, "Withdraw! All troops, withdraw!"

"Don't think you can escape the reaper's grasp!" Angus moved forward closer to Serena.

With a quick roar, Serena cleaved the space in front of her and created a break in the spatial dimension. The crack opened wider and became a portal for her to escape. In an instance, the portal closes, leaving the anguished and enraged Angus roaring to the sky.

As per shown by Queen Serena, all 64 bosses from all regions of the world cannot die. They can only be defeated. How else could they become stronger, then! If they die, they would only become Spectres that would be added to the enemy's forces!

Chapter 748: The Search for Reinforcement

When the main pillar of hope was broken, players had no other place to rely on and was turned into mincemeat by the boss. Right then, no player was capable of standing toe to toe with the Celestial tier boss. Hence, the only sensible route left for them was to run away.

The boss did not allow anyone on the battlefield to escape. He truly intended to kill every single player there were then. He then pulled out his sword and sliced a dimensional doorway. At then, the dimensional doorway expanded fully and out came a swarm of monsters. With Angus leading the command, the swarm of newly spawned monsters attacked the players like locust swarms.

Now that Angus was the only superpower left on the battlefield, players were completely outmatched and overwhelmed. A single swing of his {Blade of Obliteration} was able to wipe out the weak players within 500 meters! With such powerful killing skill, Sauron's Castle was overrun easily.

Fortunately, before Sauron's Castle was overrun, Zhang Yang and his party were able to charge towards the Teleportation Circle and left to Morning Town. There, he stood by and commanded what's left of the players around to make their defensive stance. Serena had temporarily returned to White Jade Castle to recuperate from the battle. Hence, half of the Empire's soldiers were sent back to protect the defenseless queen. As such, the chance of Morning Town being overrun by Spectres was 99.99%

It was what the plot had laid out for players to realize the truth of Spectre Invasion. If they could not even invade past the borders of Chaos Realms, what would Spectre Invasion really mean, then?

After Sauron's Castle was overrun, the next territory to be conquered by the Spectres were Forrest Gump's Fortress, Cynthia's Town, and White Horse Bay. They were all turned from player's resting spots to Spectre base camps. As such, after all territories deep in the Chaos Realm were taken

over, they had proceeded to march forth to enter the eight major regions. There was no one who could put stop to their march. Angus was too powerful, then. His army had easily trampled over towns like they were weeds in the field.

With the players falling back to their own major cities, Angus' forces continued to press their attack and infiltrated the pre-Chaos Realm regions. As such, the invasion continued on further. Without anyone able to put a stop to the Spectre invasion, Angus' forces had managed to take control 56 out of the 64 major cities of the entire world. He had only allowed one major city to survive for every region. As such, the Spectre Invasion event had reached its climatic point. It was up to players to decide on how to fight the boss. By then, Angus himself had not settled down anywhere permanently. He kept on switching in between the four territories in Chaos Realms. Unless players kill their way back, Chaos Realm will be done for.

When all territories and access to the Chaos Realm are taken away, the entire game seemed to have fallen back to the beginner's stage. It was still possible for players to make their way to the Chaos Realm. They would need to be strong enough to attack their way through the Ten Barren Seas and through the portal to Chaos Realm. It would be easier for Level 100 players since they would not have to travel far beyond the gates of Chaos Realm to reach their respective training grounds. Level 150 players were faced with a tough scenario. They needed to travel extremely far into the Chaos Realm to reach their respective training grounds.

Naturally, the system would not make something like grinding levels an impossible task. They had allocated monsters to spawn between Level 100 to Level 180 around each city and territory to allow higher level players to gain some levels. Imagine all players from 8 major cities gathered in one major city, the monsters spawning in the area alone was not enough to satisfy all players at once. Hence, chaotic battles erupted between guilds just to occupy the training grounds for their own use.

As such, the game had plunged into the dark ages. Players all around the world wanted to open up the path to Chaos Realm and to reclaim their

land back from Angus. With both lands and the Celestial equipment hanging right there for them to take, the only method for them to grab the prize was to grind their way up higher and higher.

The system had given players 1 months' time of preparation whereby the NPC of major cities will "respawn" and assume their counterattack. The timing for all regions to start their own counterattack was not the same date. It was designed based on which region is the first to get attacked. Each region will have 3 days to attack and defeat Angus. If Angus is not defeated within the given period of time, all players will be removed from the battlefield, and so is Angus. The battle will then be declared as a loss for the players. By the looks of it, the first region to start their counterattack was South America. Australia will be the next in line, followed by Europe, North America, Africa, Japan-Korea, India, and finally China. Based on the recent battle of the other region, they would not be able to defeat Angus even when their NPC boss receives a 10% strength buff. Amongst all, Queen Serena will have the highest chance to defeat Angus for she was far stronger than any other Ascended tier boss. She was the only one capable of defeating Angus. That was the reason was Angus was only defeated after seventh attempts. That is how strong was a Celestial tier boss. There was no way the system would allow players to get their hands on the Celestial tier equipment. Furthermore, after defeating the boss, players who have had participated in the war shall receive Level +2 reward and obtained the title, "Savior of the Land". All of the given rewards are only limited to only players of a single region that had defeated Angus.

Since Zhang Yang was sure that the first attempt will end with a failure, he had not wasted a single Military Point. As such, within the one-month preparation of time given, Zhang Yang had continued to amass more Military Points by completing quests offered by the NPC. After the first war attempt, everyone had then realized the importance of Military Points.

NPCs that were hired through spending Military points were not just to put up more fight with Angus. If that is the case, Military Points would be worthless, since Angus's sword strike would kill them all and heal himself.

Those soldiers that were hired could be used as a means to share the damage received. It was by a percentage, and 1% at most. However, players can use that to their advantage. When NPC soldier hired by a player exceed 99, the player himself would only receive 1% of the incoming damage. The rest of the 99% damage will be distributed evenly to the rest of the 99 soldiers. The problem was that, normal soldiers will not have such skill. Only elite soldiers could be so useful in battle.

Elite tier soldiers will cost 100 Military Points each. Technically, to have the maximum damage distribution, one must have 9,900 Military Points! Zhang Yang had only amassed 3,890 Military Points then, and could only hire 38 elite tier NPC soldiers. At most, the soldiers will be able to tank the 38% of damage received, whereas the remaining 62% will kill Zhang Yang in no time at all!

The elite NPC soldier were like mobile HP potions. When fighting Angus himself, the NPC soldiers can be placed far behind the frontlines, since the "Shared Life" skill works within a 1-kilometer distance. The soldier could be placed far behind the attack range of the boss and remain alive. If one could find 99 Level 100 healers, they could help to heal the NPC soldiers behind, while the attacker (the player) can tank Angus and continue the fight longer than usual.

The qualification of looting the boss drop does not work the same way as it would be when fighting normal boss. In summary, players must be able to deal more damage than the NPC to be able to gain the authority to loot the drops.

Hence, to make things easy, players would have to make sure they could survive long enough in the battle to deal enough damage. Not to mention, they would have to remain alive till the end to prevent their effort from being wasted. That was the importance of the Military Points.

Zhang Yang had advised all his party members to not waste any of their Military Points earlier on. Hence, together with Zhang Yang, they too had run around the castle, completing missions given by the NPC in town for Military Points. Even though most of the quest were only worth 1 or 2 Military Points. They had to be satisfied with it.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Search and Sanction. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points, 5 Military Points!’

Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he acquired the quest reward. He then hunkered down and raised his voice to Gulaj. "Goblin, do you have any harder quests for me? All the quest that I have done so far were so easy. Are you taking me for some spineless bastard?"

"Hmph! Don't get too cocky, Human!" The Goblin crossed his arms. "Fine. If you want something challenging. I have an urgent mission that might be difficult, even for you. It's not about strength this time. Finish it, and I'll give you a handsome reward."

‘Ding! Gulaj has a Hidden Quest for you: Search for Reinforcements. Will you accept it?’

Haha! You could trigger a hidden quest that way too!

Zhang Yang accepted the quest immediately and checked its description.

[Search for Reinforcement] (Difficulty Level: Unspecified)

Description: Listen close the wind blows. Can't you hear the sorrows and despair in the air? The Spectres have proven themselves to be a formidable foe. All those that live and breathe in the Union will face an unstoppable, destructive force. At times like this, we must combine our forces to combat the evil. Go out to the wild and search for helping hands!

Progress: Undesignated

Participant Limit: 1

Reward: Military Points based on the number of reinforcements recruited.

The reason why the quest difficulty was not set was due to the freedom of the player. They could simply find random NPCs, or recruit a Holy tier boss. It all depends on the level of the NPC and, the reward will correspond to that.

To search for a helping hand...Zhang Yang immediately thought of thousands of names. One of which stood out better than the other.

Merlinda – Song of the Forest! The kidnapped princess, the new Priestess of the Moon for the Elven race. She had reached the highest position amongst the elven race, she should be far stronger than before! She was at the very least leader of Elves, being an Ascended tier was the very least tier that she should be.

She has the skill - {Higher Regeneration} which could restore 5% HP every second. Logically, Zhang Yang could heal himself back to 100% HP in only 20 seconds. With Merlinda helping Zhang Yang, he could activate his Transformation skill and survive the boss fight without even relying on the NPC soldiers! It may sound nice, but it was not realistic. A transformation state will only last for 2 hours. Defeating the Angus within 2 hours was not logical nor sensible! Hence, Military Points would still come in handy.

Zhang Yang had rescued Merlinda three times. Hence, there will be higher chance that he could recruit her to join the fight against the Spectre. Some might even wonder why could Zhang Yang need to personally recruit the Elves when they were part of the four major races in the Union aside from Humans, Orcs, and Dwarves. The reason was simple, like Humans in the Chaos Realm, the Elves were not an ally to the Union. They were part of the races that lived in the Union but had not pledge their allegiance to the Union. Only some of the Elves were part of the Union and not all.

On the other hand, there was one more name that could be of help. Smaug The King of the Forgotten One. He belonged to a separate Spectre group that had alienated themselves from the rest of the world. The best part was, he was a Celestial tier boss! In the past, Zhang Yang and Smaug had gone on an adventure together to save his wife. As a sign of friendship, Smaug had given him the [Friendship Jade]. He could try his luck to recruit the Forgotten King. If he manages to, he could perhaps defeat Angus at the first counterattack!

If all goes well, Angus will be the only Spectre boss to be feared of. On the other hand, the human side would have eight Holy tier boss and one Celestial boss to fight. The chances of victory was extremely high!

Perhaps, there would be a chance for him to get all 10 Celestial tier set equipment!

How exciting!

Zhang Yang stopped for a moment and thought it through. Smaug could be harder to recruit, since he was a Spectre as well. Even though he bears the name "Forgotten King" and alienated himself from the other hostile Spectres, they were still Spectres, to begin with. In fact, there was no reason for him to fight for the humans either!

Tch!

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue. It will be hard, but even so, Zhang Yang will try his best.

Zhang Yang planned his route and soared to the sky with the Phoenix. He had no choice but to fly, since Tukula Fortress had been overrun by the Spectres as well. In fact, only White Jade Castle stood strong from the invasion, as well as the other major cities around the world. Perhaps, it was because Queen Serena was resting there.

Zhang Yang flew quickly and swiftly through the land and entered the Chaos Realm through the portal in the Ten Barren Sea. His first stop was the Elf's Sacred Ground.

Chapter 749: Unauthorized Entry

Holy Land of the Elves Athuran, was a Level 180 – Level 210 map. The map had probably not been visited yet since the creation of the game and Zhang Yang could be the first player to set foot into the map. Trees were growing ever so tall, that were several hundreds of meters tall. The entire map was practically filled with the sky-scraping trees! As far as the trees grew, there was a bigger one that had planted itself in the center of the map. The tree was far older, taller, and bigger than the rest of the trees. The crown of trees was growing so vast and wide that it spanned nearly over several tens of kilometers. That was as wide as the entire map itself.

That was the Sacred Tree of the Elven race, known as the Gustrea tree, also known as the Tree of Life, and the Source of Life. Legend has it that the Elven race was birthed from the tree itself. It was said that the Moon God had chosen this particular tree and find it capable of producing life itself. That was the description given from the official guide. What the Moon God did to the tree remained completely unknown. Probably someone as perverted as Fatty Han could find an answer to that mystery.

The map was too strong for Zhang Yang. At then, he was only Level 169 and could not afford to even fight the monsters. He could, but it would not be his norm. Anyone in their right mind would not just simply waltz into a dangerous area and fight the monsters there, which were clearly far stronger than them! Zhang Yang then made his way carefully through the thick forest, careful as he flitted through the trees, so that he would not accidentally lure in monsters of which he knows that he could never defeat via normal means. He did not have that much time to spare.

Out of the blue, Zhang Yang heard a loud cry of a hawk. He turned his head back and saw a large shadow zooming towards him at great speed. The incoming beast was huge and clawed at Zhang Yang, leaving a long gash on his metal armor.

‘-67,720!’

Zhang Yang sustained a strong attack and saw clearly of his attacker. It

was a huge, Horned Hawk. Its wings were as long as 7 meters wide when spread open and had an iron-like claw that was strong enough to leave a scraping line on his armor.

[Wild Horned Hawk] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 205

HP: 263,850

Defense: 8,080

Melee Attack: 49,447 – 69,447

Skills:???

Zhang Yang was unable to view the beast's skill, since the level gap between him and the hawk was 36 Levels. Still, it was not something that he would worry about, since normal tier monsters would not have many strong skills. If the monster is several more Levels higher than Zhang Yang, he would not even be able to view its attack, HP, and even Defense.

The damage that Zhang Yang had just received was a rather unlucky shot, since it was doubled due to the Level Suppression System.

Zhang Yang pulled out the Reaper's Scythe from his back and attacked.

‘-87,333!’

Hmph. Not too bad. At the very least, Zhang Yang could deal higher damage than what the beast could do to him. At that moment, Zhang Yang was rather lucky enough to have his damage reduced down by 50%.

Sadly, the damage was not enough for Zhang Yang to generate many Rage points. The damage and attack he dealt was enough to generate only 62 Rage points which only allowed Zhang Yang to cast one skill.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-456.205!’

Although the strike was able to kill the beast instantly, it was already being reduced by 30%! If he had not been suppressed by the system, he

could have dealt even higher damage!

What a useful skill, {Charge Up Strike} was paired together with {God of War Devastation} or {God of War Heavy Axe}, Zhang Yang could deal 9 times the value of his normal attack! Even though there was the Level Suppression reducing his damage, it was still an OP attack! Still, it was just a normal tier monster, if the monster that had attacked Zhang Yang was an elite tier, he would have turned tail and run away.

Due to the Level of the map, the normal monsters there would have the attack power of a Mythical tier boss! Paired with the Level Suppression system, monsters there would have been a higher threat than an Ethereal tier boss is to Zhang Yang. That was just a normal tier monster. If Zhang Yang is unlucky enough to stumble upon an elite tier monster, its threat level would be as high as an Ethereal tier boss! With the Level Suppression system working on him, it would be his loss if Zhang Yang tries to fight!

Zhang Yang concluded that he would have to spend some time there, hence, he had decided that he would fight normal tier monsters and escape if he stumbles upon an elite tier monster.

"Big Brother!" cried Felice as she appeared from her Battle Companion U.I after Zhang Yang had defeated the hawk and flew for some time. She stood on the back of the Phoenix and stared at the distance with a nostalgic expression hanging on her face.

Even though players and the Battle Companion had the contract that binds them together, battle companions could still choose to break the contract and discard their owner anytime they want to. However, that would be extremely rare. Commonly, even high tiered battle companions were just strong servants who would not put up a fight with their owner. The act of Felice coming out of her Battle Companion U.I by herself was extremely rare!

Zhang Yang was shocked and instantly replied, "What's wrong?"

"There---" Felice raised her slender hands and pointed at the direction of the Tree of Life. "I sense something there. Its...Its...calling for me..." Gradually, Felice eye's lost their focus, as if she was being possessed by

something.

Hmph? Could it be that Felice had found another spot to gain yet another tier?

Zhang Yang smiled and complied. "Let's go there then!"

Felice quickly shook her head and regained her composure. She nodded. "Alright." She morphed into her Dragonhawk form and flew towards the Tree of Life. Zhang Yang followed closely from behind.

"Halt!" cried two female Elven archers who were riding Horned Hawks, and stopped Zhang Yang and Felice. They were only dressed in tight leather armor which only emphasized their slender bodies.

It was inevitable that all female character designed in the game would be beautiful. In fact, 99% of all female NPC characters in the game had voluptuous boobies and slender waist. Zhang Yang and Felice descended and landed on the ground. The female Elves followed and got down from their mounts. As they did, their jiggly-jugs were jiggling around as they jumped down from their mounts. What a sight to behold!

Zhang Yang could not resist and had to stare at them for a good second before responding to them. "My name is Zhan Yu and I am an adventurer from White Jade Castle. I am here with an urgent request for Merlinda – Song of the Forest."

"The great priestess of the moon is not someone whom you could visit anytime you want!" said the female bowmen. "Please leave this sacred ground of the Elves. No good shall befall you if you try to linger."

"Big brother..." Felice muffled her voice with her hands as she turned to Zhang Yang with her big, unblinking eyes. They craved for love and attention.

Sigh...

Zhang Yang could not resist. At then, be it asking Merlinda to fight by his side, Zhang Yang had a better reason to go into the land of the Elf for Felice's sake! Zhang Yang smiled innocently and said, "Please talk to Merlinda and let her know that it is Zhan Yu who wishes to speak with

her. I'm sure that the great Priestess of the Moon will know how to decide my fate."

"Insolent fool! Did you not heed my words?! I shall have you heed my arrows, then!" cried the Elven archer as she and her comrade drew their bows, prepared to fight.

Zhang Yang laughed at their speedy reactions and quickly stunned them with {Blast Wave}. "Let's go! Felice!"

Zhang Yang and Felice quickly deserted the two archers and rushed towards the Tree of Life. After being stunned for 4 seconds, the two female Elves leaped on their Horned Hawks and chased after Zhang Yang with haste. Sadly, they were no match for the Phoenix's flying speed and was left behind further.

Before Zhang Yang had realized it, the closer he got to the Tree of Life, more Elven warriors had chased after Zhang Yang on their mounts. The problem was that the warriors were Elite tier! It would be extremely difficult for him to lose them!

Zhang Yang grunted disgruntledly and activated the Phoenix's Transformation skill. The Phoenix grew, in size as well as in flying speed. With the boost of HP, Zhang Yang tanked all the damage and flew past the defenders' barrage.

Arrows landed more and more and dealt a considerable amount of damage to Zhang Yang. Even though the Phoenix had a long HP bar, Zhang Yang feared that he might not be able to last too long. Fortunately, the Phoenix's amazing flying speed was fast enough to dodge some of the incoming arrows. If he had not used the Phoenix's Transformation skill, he might have sustained more damage and had his HP reduced down to below 50%!

It was not the time to fight! He had to get to the Tree of Life! He had a hunch that Merlinda would be somewhere close to the Tree of Life, since it was an entity that was extremely precious to the Elven race! Perhaps if he could meet her, she could stop the incoming forces from attacking him! If he does not stir up a chaotic storm, Merlinda would not even know that

Zhang Yang was there to visit her! Those selfish female Elves would not have delivered his message to her in the first place!

He would have to do it himself!

Untransformed, Felice's moving speed will not be as fast as the Phoenix, hence, Zhang Yang had called for her to sit behind him as they sped towards the tree.

As they zoomed forward, the tree did not even seem to get any closer to them! Just how big was the tree?! From where they were, the tree itself was so large that they could fit a city inside! From where he was, Zhang Yang could finally catch a glimpse of the entrance where several juvenile Elves were playing on one of the branches of the tree barefooted. From where he was, the branch looked like a regular tree branch and the children were only the size of ants. Its branches, however, were actually a tens of meters wide. There was no reason to be afraid of falling over either, since there was great number of leaves the size of footballs field. Falling down on them would greatly reduce the fall damage. Perhaps, it would be fun, even!

Eventually, Zhang Yang was free from harm as the Elven corps were far away from them. Zhang Yang then made his way towards the tree top and found a pool. It looked like someone had chopped off the top of the tree and hollowed it out like a canoe, and filled water in it.

Felice shouted with passion, "There!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head and flew closer to the pool, all the way listening to the angry cries of the Elven corp behind them. Although he could not hear what they were saying, he could have guessed that they were warning them to stay away from the tree top.

Zhang Yang ignored their calls and hovered above the pool of greenish water. Felice jumped off the Phoenix and morphed into her Dragonhawk form. With a loud splash, Felice dove into the water and instantly vanished from his sight. It was not clear to how deep was the water was, since it was quite clear.

"Intruder! You had sullied the Spring of Life! Only death may wash away

your grave sins!" cried the Elven warriors as they surrounded Zhang Yang from all directions. Zhang Yang had single-handedly angered the entire Elven race.

They had not immediately attack. In fact, they were holding back their rage to attack. It was probably because they were extremely close to the so-called Spring of Life. If a battle is to erupt on top of the water surface, his blood would spill into the pool. Perhaps, that would be a greater offense.

"Catch him!" cried the Elves.

It was a problem, and while they were hesitating, more Elven warriors coming from behind them! If there were to fight, Zhang Yang would surely be the first to go down.

Zhang Yang started to feel fear creeping up his spine. Was Merlinda even present here?

Out of the noisy crowd, two large beasts burst out. Riding on top of the magnificent beast was a female priestess dressed in a white priestess uniform. The other one was wearing the same uniform, except she was much taller and the other, her mount was exceptionally grand, as it was pure white. It was rather familiar to be fair. It was a unicorn. She looked like a goddess of the moon, was how one would surmise her appearance, even without knowing what a goddess of the moon should actually look like.

Hold on...That's Merlinda! The Priestess of the Moon!

As Zhang Yang had expected, she had gained another tier!

[Priestess of the Moon, Merlinda – The Moon Whisperer] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level: 200

HP: 2,000,000,000

Defense: 32,470

Magic Attack: 162,165 – 242,165

Skills:???

Note: The Prophet of the Moon God. The Leader of the Elven Race.

What? When did the professional prisoner change her name? The Moon Whisperer was the title only a Priestess of the Moon could inherit. Zhang Yang could not remember what the previous Priestess of the Moon was called, but if Merlinda could inherit the name, she must be the real deal!

Chapter 750: A Stronger Felice

"Hello there!" said Zhang Yang as he casually waved his hand to Merlinda. That disrespectful act had only triggered the Elven warriors around him to curse him even more. The man had not only defiled the sacred waters, and had shown his disrespects to the one above all of them.

When Merlinda removed her hood, her expression was stoic and furious. However, when she saw Zhang Yang was waving at her, she smiled jubilantly and waved back at him happily. "It's been a while!" said Merlinda. The unicorn that she was riding noticed Zhang Yang and puffed angrily while stomping his hooves in midair.

When everyone saw the reaction of their Priestess of the Moon waving nonchalantly back at Zhang Yang, they dropped their weapons and stared at her as if Merlinda was not the same person that they been worshiping all this time.

"Explain the ruckus," said Thea – Moon Glory. She was also a priestess of the moon, but was not at the same rank as Merlinda. In the past, Zhang Yang had meddled with her before.

"This human male breached our defenses and sullied the Spring of Life. His companion is still within the waters." One of the female warrior came up to Thea and reported the situation.

Thea sighed heavily and turned to Zhang Yang with regret in her eyes, "Zhan Yu. You have come from a faraway and had been a savior for all us Elves. You should have been treated as an honored guest. Now that you have trespass our Holy Ground and sullied our Spring of Life, I, for one cannot allow this to slip by. Please leave this place. We owe you our lives for saving the Priestess of the Moon in the past, hence, we shall do the same for you. You shall leave this place unscathed."

"The man has sullied our holy grounds! He must be executed!"

"Priestess! You cannot be serious!"

The other female Elves were greatly unsatisfied with the final verdict

and had tried to refute Thea.

"Silence, my sisters. This man—" Merlinda tried to calm everyone.

"But, Priestess!"

"SILENCE!" Merlinda roared with such fury that her powers seeped out of her character. There was sudden burst of energy that made the surface of the water tremble with resonance of her powers. Everyone was completely silent and lowered their heads to show their obedience.

She then rode the unicorn towards Zhang Yang and held his hands. With a gentle smile on her face, she said, "Zhan Yu. Please make yourself at home!"

The other female Elves raised their head with shock at her response when she had invited him into their holy ground, when he was supposed to be executed! Thea turned to Merlinda and gave her a look which practically said, "Are you sure?" and Merlinda gave her a soothing glare that said, "It's going to be fine."

Zhang Yang had basically committed the gravest of crimes amongst the Elven culture. The Spring of Life was said to be the bathing place of the Moon God himself. Only newly born Elven babies were allow to wash themselves in the waters, once in their lifetime. However, Merlinda was the Priestess of the Moon, the prophet of the Moon God. With her holding the position, her words was the law. To defy her commands was to defy the Moon God!

Although the rest of the Elves were pressingly objecting Merlinda's action, they could do nothing but to obey Merlinda.

Before Zhang Yang was about to follow Merlinda back to her chambers, the Spring of Life glowed brightly. An orb floated upwards and out of the water like the sun that was rising up from the ocean. It was so bright that everyone had to shut their eyes for a moment. Zhang Yang squinted his eyes and he tried to keep his eyes open while trying to identify what was the object was. The light dimmed down but was still glowing, but too shining, but softly and easy to look at, just like the glow of the moon in the night sky.

"It's the Moon God!"

"The Moon God descends!"

"Praise the Moon God!"

The mounted elves descended to the nearest three branches and kneel at the light. Their mouths moved continuously as they prayed hard in the direction of the glowing orb.

Felice could really make a scene! Now that it has come to this, perhaps the Elves would not blame the little girl for sullyng the Spring of Life, they would even have her worship the Moon Goddess, or something as grand as that! Zhang Yang snickered at the thought of it. All he cared was not how the Elves treated her, but Felice breaks the second seal!

Slowly, the light coming from the orb dimmed down darker until one point it looked like an embryo. The outer shell of the orb glowed and everyone could see the insides of the shell. There was a humanoid shape that was curled up in a fetal position. The light glowed brighter all the sudden. The tree briefly trembled as the light grew stronger by seconds. The chants of the Elven warriors around grew stronger and faster.

Crack—

The orb made a loud, cracking sound, followed closely by a loud explosion that broke the shell apart. Felice burst out of the orb of light, like an angel descending down to earth, and landed in front of Zhang Yang. Her armor and appearance was somewhat similar, yet different. Her hair was longer, her armor was grander and heavier, not to mention, she 'grew' too! Those mature features!

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 169

HP: 2,021,040 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 16,850

Melee Attack: 153,077 – 233.077

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear], [Dragon's Spear Barrage], [Absolute Defense], [Dragonhawk Form], [Spectral Tiger Form], [Tree of Life Form].

[Tree of Life Form]: Morphes into the Tree of Life. Able to use all skills available during the Tree of Life form. Unable to use skills during Human form.

Special: {Third Seal}, {Fourth Seal}

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

Zhang Yang smiled and greeted Felice. He was actually holding back from screaming with joy when he saw Felice's new stats. It was already at the level of a Holy tier boss! From then on, Felice was stronger than the Phoenix pet. The Phoenix could only reach the level of Holy tier after reaching Level 170, as for Felice, she was already at that level at Level 169!

Furthermore, Felice's growth rate has reached 12 Stars for all Attribute growth after breaking the second seal! That means one equipment that could add 100 Strength points would grant Felice the ability to gain 120 Strength instead! That includes Vitality, Intelligence, Spirit, and Dexterity! It was the same as carrying a Vitality Aura, Strength Aura, Dexterity Aura, Spirit Aura, Intelligence Aura, all stacking with each other with the player's own aura as well!

Just how powerful could the little girl get!?

When Felice's new appearance was showed to the Elves, they had forgotten the sins that Zhang Yang had committed and proceeded to bow down to Felice. Zhang Yang scoffed at their reaction. The little girl has merely taken a simple bath and she was able to shock the entire Elven race. Perhaps Felice had some connections to the Moon God and was able to receive his blessing. Which Elf in the world could trigger such a reaction just by dipping their head in the water?

Hence, the noisy, hostile commotion ended peacefully and Zhang Yang followed Merlinda to her Moon Shrine. Without further due, Zhang Yang quickly reported the events that had occurred in the land and had asked for Merlinda for her aid to tackle the problem of the Spectre Invasion.

With a worried expression, Zhang Yang started his speech, "I'm sure that the brutality of the Spectre is known to all. Their goal is to eradicate all life on the surface of the earth. The Elves may have the protection of the Tree of Life. Know this, after all Humans, Orcs, Dwarves are removed, they would turn to the Elves next. I understand well that the Elven warriors are fearless and strong. If all Humans, Orcs, and Dwarves could not stop them, how could you? How could you stop someone as strong as the Lord of the Seven Spectre Kings?"

Zhang Yang continued to report on his encounter with Angus and had successfully instilled fear into the hearts of those who were listening. Even though there were the elders of the Elves who clearly preferred to stay clear of the war, Merlinda chose to follow Zhang Yang into battle. With a decisive handshake, Merlinda agreed to set foot into the battlefield. There were those that opposed her decision, but Merlinda used her position as the Priestess of the Moon to reject the teachings of their religion.

However, the battle of Angus would not matter even if Merlinda dispatches a million Elves. Besides Merlinda herself, the strongest ones there were only Holy tier entities. Their presence in the battlefield will be short and brief. Hence, with Zhang Yang's arrangement and Merlinda's agreement, Merlinda only brought along two other Priestesses along with her.

Zhang Yang lingered for a while in the land of the Elves and went off to Kanjar Fields to look for Smaug. Sadly, he had never set foot into the map before, not even in his past life. Furthermore, the map was not the same as Athuran that had the large, overly obvious Tree of Life. Secondly, the map that Smaug was situated in was much higher Level than the Elves. When Zhang Yang entered the map, monsters from a thousand meters away started to chase after him. He could not even see them coming! Hence, after trying several times but failing to sneak around, Zhang Yang had dropped the idea to search for Smaug and ask for his help. There were too many monsters and Zhang Yang could not even tank the normal tier monster. He was killed twice for lingering too long in the map. After dropping the idea, Zhang Yang turned tail and returned to White Jade

Castle.

Merlinda was still in her land and will only come to Zhang Yang aid three days before the day of the counterattack. Hence, Zhang Yang will only be able to submit the quest when she arrives. By the looks of it, Merlinda was an Ascended tier boss, the Military Points given as the reward should be plenty!

Even though Zhang Yang was unable to search for Smaug, he was rather satisfied with his current force. Merlinda has agreed to lend a hand and Felice had even managed to break the second seal to gain a tier, skills, and a new form!

[Felice] (Tree of Life Form)

Level: 169

HP: 1,265,980 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 3,890

Magic Resistance: 16,850

Magic Attack: 82,941 – 142,941

Skills:

[Bloom of Life]: Heals an ally and nine more targets closest to the ally. Heals 100% Magic Attack worth of HP for 15 seconds. Instant cast.

[Praise of Life]: Powerfully heals a target for 300% Magic Attack for HP and continuous to heal the target in the next 10 seconds for 100% Magic Attack for HP. Instant. Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Song of Life]: Heals a target for 150% Magic Attack for HP. Channeling: 2 seconds. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

[Ancient Tree of Life]: Morphs into the Ancient Tree of Life. Increases HP by 2000% and healing rate by 300%. Magic Resistance and Defense increased by 300%. Last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 3 days. Entering either Transformation skill will set all Transformation skill (Dragonhawk Berserk, Spectre Tiger Berserk) into the same cooldown time.

[Redemption]: Instantly heals to full health. Cooldown: 30 minutes.
Required: Ancient Tree of Life Transformation.

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

Zhang Yang was given what he asked for. Felice's third Transformation skill was a healer type! Now, Zhang Yang could continue fighting endlessly. Felice could heal Zhang Yang whenever he needs her to!

The time was not yet ripe for the counterattack to start and Zhang Yang wanted to take the opportunity to reach Level 170. He could gain a skill point, which was not all that useful to him. Most importantly, both Felice and the Phoenix could gain an upgrade!

As mentioned before, mounts and battle companions will only receive an upgrade at every 10 Level threshold. By reaching Level 170, the Phoenix could reach Holy tier and Felice would still receive a boost in strength, even though she had already broken her second seal!

Racing against time, Zhang Yang had pumped all his attention into grinding alone and had neglected even having some shakalaka boom boom session with Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. In one day and one night whole (real world), Zhang Yang did not pause for one moment and successfully reached Level 170 before the day of the counterattack.

As a repercussion of his actions, Han Yin Xue and Sun Xin Yu had rolled their eyes at Zhang Yang numerous times when they "poked" Zhang Yang junior but was chased away by Zhang Yang. Sun Xin Yu understood his feelings and was merely teasing him. Han Ying Xue however was being a b*tch she was, had even whispered into his ears saying something like having other men to scratch the itch in her hooaaa. As a response, Zhang Yang got up from his bed, removed his gaming helmet and gave Han Ying Xue a good "spanking" session for teasing him so.

Chapter 751: The First Attempt to Counterattack

Merlinda had arrived two days ago, when Zhang Yang had just reached Level 170. He returned to the city and rendezvous with Merlinda to meet Gulaj together.

"Oh, my heavens. Her Chakra Level is over 10,000!" cried Gulaj with both fear and anxiety as he examined Merlinda through a weird, giant monocle.

Zhang Yang had no idea why he would mention something like Chakra when none of them were even using that system. Still, 10,000 seems to be a high enough number to shock the greedy little goblin. "Goblin, how does it look like? Is my ally strong enough for you?"

"Warrior. Do yourself a favor and sit back and relax. You have done a good job," said Gulaj as he nodded.

'Ding! You have completed a quest: Search for Reinforcement. Obtained 5,000 Military Points!'

Holy f*ck! No wonder the goblin would jumped up to his feet. Zhang Yang would do the same when he saw the reward given to him. It was 5,000 Military Points! Just so you know, Zhang Yang had been working from day to night and had only managed to earn up to 4,256 Military Points! And that was by repeating most of the same missions countless of times! Clearly, the mission reward of 5,000 Military Points was much!

Even though he was just so close to 9,900 Military Points, Zhang Yang did not necessarily required a 99% damage reduction. In truth, 90% was more than enough for someone as tanky as Zhang Yang to survive.

The two accompanied Elven warriors were Thea herself, and Aweena. Neither of them were happily following Zhang Yang voluntarily. They were there only because they had an obligation to protect Merlinda. As a result, their slight hatred for him was mainly because of his actions of bringing the secretive Elven leader, the prophet of the Moon God out in

the open, completely exposed! Merlinda was a little unsatisfied as well. Not because of Zhang Yang taking her out to the open world, but was Gulaj offering Zhang Yang only 5,000 something something. To her, 5,000 was a number that did not suit her! She was someone that was worth at least 100,000!

Since Merlinda and her two escorts were not officialy introduce to the outside world yet, they were registered into the battle as normal adventurers, not as part of the Empire army, but as adventurers' reinforcements.

The seven other regions war against Angus had ended and none of them had any chance to defeat Angus. The previous wars had all been witnessed by the other region players. They could only see, but not participate in the war. The game system had locked down the region that was having the war, preventing players from other regions from coming in to disrupt the fair fight.

Everyone who fought in the first attack now knew Angus's special skill, that is to restore his HP endlessly as he kills. Hence, the war could be easily sabotaged by a small rat. Even though players had the rule-breaking skill to revive after death to rejoin the fight again and again, the boss was still unapproachable. The more players who die under his hands, the stronger he gets. Technically, all the boss would have to do is to spam his skill, and he would get an indestructible body.

If players had not stop being an idiot to rush and attack the boss, Angus will remain as the only entity that could not be kill even though all the Celestial boss in the entire server gathered together to fight him.

With the war coming closer, everyone gathered to discuss about the battle plans with Zhang Yang.

"Little Yang. How are we gonna do this? Should be put all our force into the fight tomorrow, or gather more Military Points and let the NPCs gain strength the next round?" Fatty Han was the first one to voice out his question.

Zhang Yang could not give an immediate answer then, as he was not

sure if Merlinda still had the godly healing skill {Higher Regeneration}. If she does, then Zhang Yang would assume a fighting stance against Angus to fight till the end. It was hard to land a final decision since Merlinda's Level was too high for Zhang Yang to examine her skills. There will always be a limit cap for something as powerful as Merlinda's {Higher Regeneration}. For example, the [Forbidden Scroll]. When something that takes HP % into account has a limit as to how much could one lose or gain through a skill or item. If Merlinda's {Higher Regeneration} does not have any limits to her healing and 5% remains true to the number, Zhang Yang would be seriously unkillable. Imagine if Merlinda were to cast the skill on Queen Serena...

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and finally answered, "Full throttle. We go all out with this. Do not hold back."

The biggest difference of the war between this lifetime and Zhang Yang's previous lifetime was that in this lifetime, there is Queen Serena. With her ruling over all 8 major cities in the continent, and the Meteor Sword in her hands, she was much stronger than any of the bosses in his previous life. Just by observing Queen Serena herself during the recent war with Angus, she was able to inflict 10% HP as damage, all by herself! Secondly, Zhang Yang had Merlinda participating in the war. The Ascended tier healer was the leader of an entire race! She would also be stronger than an average Ascended tier boss! Perhaps, there could be some positive reaction when the two powerful women work together on the battlefield! There was also the seven other Barons that ruled the seven other castles in the continent, all serving Queen Serena! They were also of Ascended tier! Combining all their strength and a few good players in battle, the chances to defeat Angus in this first attempt was rather high!

Zhang Yang laid down his decree firmly and everyone listened and obeyed. Everyone left the meeting and went on to make their preparation. Sun Xin Yu had her weapons and armor repaired, Wei Yan Er finally caved in and socketed gemstones into some of her equipment's empty sockets. Fatty Han and the rest of the party went off to prepare themselves as well. All preparation such as restocking potions, equipment fixing, and etc was

done before the day ended.

All other region that had have their attempt at Angus ended the battle in just 5 to 6 hours. The battle was completely sided towards Angus with him killing everyone relentlessly. It was a complete waste of the three days given. That alone had everyone who had participated in the fight to widened their eyes and see how strong was Angus was. They now know that it was important to gather more Military Points and required the NPC bosses to gain several more defeat in order to be stronger to fight Angus.

By the time it was China's turn to have their attempt at fighting Angus, no other players from other region even cared to even watch. Since they were not allowed to participate, why not save that time to grind their levels, and do quests to earn more Military Points instead?

Truthfully speaking, almost all of China players had zero confidence in defeating Angus then. All but players from Lone Desert Smoke had the confidence to end the event at the next war. While Lone Desert Smoke made preparations to fight, the rest of the guilds on China, including the top guilds like Crimson Rage had placed their bets on the second or third attempt instead of going all out with Zhang Yang. Even though it was made clear that the drops from Angus will decrease after several attempts, they had no choice but to place their faith there, since it was, in their opinion, impossible to defeat Angus in the first attempt.

Zhang Yang and his party members had spent all their Military Points to hire elite tier NPC soldiers to be sortied in battle. Amongst them, it was obvious that Zhang Yang had the most NPC soldiers. He had a total of 92 elite tier soldiers ready to put their lives on the front line for him. Han Ying Xue and the others had at most, 50 which allowed them to reduce 50% of the incoming damage. Even so, Angus' attacks that could reach as high as a million damage made it rather dangerous for them to actually stand with Zhang Yang.

It was unfortunate that Military Points could not be transferred to another player. If they could do that, everyone would invest all their Military Points in just one player and have that player stand and fight Angus, in a one-man solo style.

From that point of view, it was reasonable as to why the other guild had not even tried to fight in the next war since none of them have enough Military Points to hire enough elite tier soldiers. With only 8 Ascended tier bosses, it was not enough to bring a smile on the Goddess of Victory.

To have 9,000 Military Points or more, one must continuously accept and complete various quests. By the time they had amassed 9,000 Military Points, the battle would have already ended on the fourth or fifth attempt.

The NPC Spellcasters of White Jade Castle gathered together at the entrance of the castle and worked together to conjure a large portal. It was to save both players and NPC soldier's time from traveling too far. In truth, that was the only way to participate in the war against Angus since he would be randomly placed in a different territory.

When Zhang Yang and his party got through the portal, he was surprised to see that the chosen battle ground was the outskirts of Sauron's castle. Could it be coincidence that the system had allowed players to enact revenge for trampling over their Territory?

Behind Zhang Yang was 92 elite soldiers clad in strong and heavy armor. All of them were lined up neatly, with 2 soldiers standing out of line at the end of the formation. All the NPCs had 5,000,000 HP. Although they may have strong attacking power, Zhang Yang did not plan to have them to fight. Instead, he was only going to use them as 'remote' meat shields, far behind the front lines.

Even though the odds were against them, basically all players who had reached Level 100 were present on the field then. The reason was actually pretty straightforward. Even though they were practically food for the boss, they were there only for one sole reason. That is to kill the monsters before the boss appears. The number of monsters and the rate of their spawn was just too good to be left out.

The war in China was different compared to the other regions. Unlike the other region which had different rulers for each of their major cities, China was unified under the rule of Queen Serena and her seven Barons. It was an Empire with its own Queen Serena to decide on everything, from

attacking, defending, or to withdraw.

As such, standing stoically in the front lines, Queen Serena pulled out her sword and point it to the sky as she roared grandly. "Attack!"

OUUUUUUUU!

The sound of war horn was blown from the end of the soldiers and countless Empire soldiers rushed forward, leaving a trail of dust behind. Adding both the number of players and the NPC soldiers, over 100 million pairs of feet had sent the earth to tremble in a massive quake.

THUD! RAWR!

The castle doors of Sauron's Castle fell down, and out came the Spectre monsters, pouring out from the castle, like ants.

The battle started swiftly and players had rushed into the front lines to have their first kill. It was a good chance to farm experience points instead of letting the NPC soldiers killing them. Everyone had turned on their attack mode to monster only and had not need to fear their skills landing and damaging nearby players. It was common courtesy. In fact, whoever stupid enough to land a hit on player will surely be killed almost instantly. Still, everything could be settled by talking like a gentleman. There was no need for a civil war in the middle of a f*cking war!

Fortunately no one was that stupid enough to incite a war then. Everyone was only paying attention to kill as many monsters as they can. Players with flying mounts had the advantage of flying over the crowd of players and could attack from the air instead of squeezing themselves like sardines.

Zhang Yang had placed the elite NPC soldier far behind the front lines. He left them there to stand as he and his party rode their mounts to the front to start killing. Even though they were only 10 players amongst the sea of hundreds of millions of players, their killing speed was unrivaled. They were so powerful that their movement speed was only halt for a brief second to allow Han Ying Xue to heal, leaving a huge empty plot of land at their wake.

1 hours...2 hours...3 hours...

As the battle reached the 5 hours time, the Spectre monsters stopped spawning from the castle. Even though there were still more than a million of monster remaining in the battle field, it was a number that could be cleared within a few minutes. Though players themselves had suffered major damage, they could easily revive back to rejoin the battle.

As the last monster was killed, the clouds in the dark sky started to roll in and formed thunderclouds. A bright lightning struck the earth as a humanoid shadow figure emerged from the castle and stood where the lightning has struck. The humanoid figure then floated in midair, releasing a powerful aura as he floats. There was a huge black hole that was emitting darkness that was so black that it could practically suck in all light that even shone on it.

It was none other than Angus.

"All hands, retreat!" cried Queen Serena. Even though she could not observe Angus properly, she knew that Angus was an adversary that only she could fight toe to toe with. It was time for the Queen to fight the King, alone!

"Retreat? Not so fast, ants!" Angus scoffed and pulled out a thin dark blade. He then swung his sword so fast that it sent out a shockwave that immediately disintegrated a large number of the Empire soldiers, leaving the patch of ground of which the soldier was standing on, empty at the next second.

"Insolent fools. Know your places and die!"

Chapter 752: The Light of Victory

That single swift stroke of the boss had not only cleared a large number of NPC soldiers, but also unfortunate players who had miscalculated the trajectory of the attack. What's more, after they revived at the nearest graveyard, they were not allowed to reenter the castle region! They were blocked by a familiar wall of air.

Some things are best experienced yourself. During the counterattack attempts of the other nations, almost all the audience had not noticed the tiny details. Obviously, the system had already predicted a scenario where players will try to sabotage their own nation. They had indirectly made it easier to surviving players to fight Angus. In a sense, weaker players who allow themselves killed by Angus will be permanently removed from the battle. It was a good way to help stronger players who were actually trying and succeeding in killing the boss. Weaker players would only be "food" for the boss.

Hence, once all the Spectre monsters were killed, players had lost the ability to revive continuously and rejoin the fight. It was a fair way of things. During the fight with the Spectre monsters, players can have their fair share of experience points and during the boss fight, weaker players will be kicked out, preventing stupid people from doing stupid things to jeopardize the entire battle.

Serena was stood in front of the entire army. Next to her were all the other seven Barons. Zhang Yang stood beside them. He only dared to fight Angus because he had already prepared his hired elite NPC soldiers, along with 100 healers to heal the elite NPC soldiers behind. Since each of the elite NPC soldiers will help Zhang Yang take 1% of the incoming damage, Zhang Yang could last longer in the fight against Angus. At most, Zhang Yang would take 5 times the damage from Angus due to his level while each of his soldiers would take at most, 40,000 damage each! With Zhang Yang's meticulous arrangement of healers, they will be able to heal with one hand behind their back!

"Stay back. You guys cannot survive tanking the boss even if you have a

50% damage reduction. Save your Transformation skills first." Zhang Yang spoke out in the party channel. Besides Zhang Yang alone, the rest of the party had only 50 or so elite NPC soldiers. They would still take a heavy attack. Without Transforming, they would not survive a single hit! Everyone nodded and obeyed. Even the battle crazed little Wei Yan Er understood the gravity of the situation and nodded her head without showing any signs of being disgruntled.

"Merlinda. It's our time!" said Zhang Yang.

"I hear you." Merlinda nodded and smiled at her savior. At Zhang Yang's command, he had Merlinda command Thea and Aweena to stand with the elite NPC soldiers behind to be redundant healers. At the very least, they were extremely strong healers.

The Phoenix roared with all its might and flew towards Angus. The Unicorn followed along and shed its disguise, the horn on its forehead grew longer, and wings burst out of its body as Merlinda soared to the sky.

The sight of fiery trail in the sky, left behind by the Phoenix was a sight that everyone had already gotten used to. However, the unicorn was different. At then, everyone was stunned at the sight of Merlinda soaring through the high sky as she followed Zhang Yang.

That was a Legendary Beast! The Unicorn! It was the same as the Phoenix and the Red Dragon! Could it be, that Lone Desert Smoke was holding all the Legendary Beast in their ranks?! Who was that player riding the Unicorn? Why would she hide her profile? Was she afraid of people chasing after her?!

"They may have Legendary Beast mounts and what not, the boss is still too strong for them!"

"Yes. It's a suicidal run for them."

"Heh. So much for China's number 1 player. He can't even tank for more than a minute!"

Despite their scorns coming out from their mouth, it was obvious that jealousy and envy were building up in their hearts.

"Blade of Obliteration!" Angus roared and swung his sword, releasing thousand of swords in the air, attacking Serena, the seven castle Barons, Merlinda, and Zhang Yang, causing high damage. The NPC were still doing good since they were all at the right level to only take normal damage. Unlike then, Zhang Yang was rather unlucky to receive 5 times the intended damage! At then, Defense, Armor, damage absorption was all useless. Amongst all the defensive passive skills, only the 20% damage reduction skill was useful. From 3,829,935 damage, only 3,036,553 was taken, after 92% damage shared with all the 92 elite NPC soldiers, the final damage that landed on Zhang Yang was only 306,494.

Despite being reduced by a large amount, it was still high for Zhang Yang. At that point, with the Phoenix giving Zhang Yang close to 1.8 million HP boost, 300,000 damage was almost 10% of his entire HP. That was the reason why Zhang Yang had not allowed the rest of his party to join the battle. He had 92 elite soldiers and he had still taken a large damage, what more of 50 soldiers?

Still, he was pretty unlucky to receive the quintuple damage. Under normal circumstances, he should only receive double to triple damage.

With quick reflex, Merlinda clapped her palms together and cried, "Higher Regeneration!" She had cast {Higher Regeneration} not only on Zhang Yang, but also on herself, Serena, and the rest of the Barons!

[Higher Regeneration]: Restores 5% HP every second. Maximum restoration cannot exceed 200,000 HP. Lasts for 20 seconds.

As expected, {Higher Regeneration} had a limit cap to its healing. Even so, 200,000 HP per tick was still high. In fact, Angus' {Blade of Obliteration} could only be cast every 2 seconds. Even though it hit Zhang Yang for quintuple its damage, Zhang Yang would take only 150,000 damage per second. At that point, Zhang Yang had over 3 million HP. 5% of that would roughly be 150,000. Since each healing tick would restore 150,000 HP, his HP would hold out indefinitely! If the healers behind the NPC soldiers do their job without a problem, and Merlinda herself remains alive throughout the entire ordeal, Zhang Yang would be the same as the boss, an unkillable entity!

At then, when something drastic had happened, no eyeballs were averted then. When players from all around noticed Zhang Yang had received the {Higher Regeneration} skill, they could not help but to feel both shock and envy.

What was that powerful healing skill!?

The strongest in-game skills would either damage or heal by percentage! Since the skill was not affected by a player's own attack power, there was no reason for them to get stronger damage stats. If a healer could have that {High Regeneration} skill, he or she would not need to pump Spirit or Intelligence! Even with a full set of Level 1 White-Wood equipment, they could still technically, fully restore a player with 4 million HP within 20 seconds. There was no need for anyone to hunt for strong equipment, then!

Then again, not all players were stupid. One look, and they would know that Merlinda was not a player, but an NPC. They knew that the system would not simply put out skills that would simply break the game. The skill {Higher Regeneration} as shown by Merlinda was not a single target, but a multi-target skill. That was not OP. That's Deadpool's level of game-breaking skill.

With the skill healing Zhang Yang like never before, Zhang Yang finally dared to rush into the boss fight and have him taste his Reaper's Scythe. Merlinda was the same as she was when he rescued her from the depth of the dungeon. She would keep on repeating the same healing skill over and over again. On the side note, Merlinda had gained a new weapon, a new magic staff that she could use to attack as well! She was not like before where she would just heal, heal, and just heal. That time, Merlinda could cast {Punishment Ray} to attack.

Queen Serena was astonished by the healing skill she had received. She turned to examine Merlinda and turned to Zhang Yang. "Is she your ally?"

"Yes, my queen."

"Wonderful. Perhaps she could remain by my side to strengthen the Empire's forces." Said Serena with a strong sense of ambition.

...

Zhang Yang had a complicated feeling about her wants. If Merlinda remains in the Empire, the entire race of Elves would be brought to light. Zhang Yang had merely pretended to be busy as he continued to attack Angus.

Zhang Yang's {Eagle Eye} could passively ignore 85% of the target's Defense permanently. Hence, Zhang Yang would only need to land one single strike of {Cripple Defense} to ignore all Defenses.

'-82,302!'

Zhang Yang basic attack lower limit was supposed to be around 160,000. However, despite having the ability to ignore all Defense, his damage was severely reduced. 80,000 damage was something that Zhang Yang found to be low, while the other players of the world would have already dropped their jaws to the ground.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

'-456,229!'

Sadly, the combined skill had suffered a 30% reduced damage. If it had not, the stacked skill damage could reach at least over a million damage! Still, the damage was enough to have Queen Serena praise Zhang Yang for his strength. That was because besides herself, even the rest of the Ascended tier Barons could deal only a fraction of what Zhang Yang had just dealt.

Zhang Yang only nodded his head to acknowledge Queen Serena's praise. In reality, he was rather happy. Such a powerful blast of power can only come from combining {Charge Up Strike} and {God of War Devastation}. Despite being able to deal 900% normal damage in a single hit, it had a 1 minute cooldown. It was not long, nor too short to be used as a chaining skill.

Other than the players in his party, all other players around could not observe the damage number inflicted on Zhang Yang, nor his overall HP in

general. They could only see the long red bar on his head and a slight drop of it. Weirdly enough, the 10% emptied HP bar was refilled immediately in a blink of an eye. Could it be, that the boss' attack was getting weaker?

At then, a few players that had noticed Zhang Yang's endurance in the battle had rushed into the fight, thinking that if Zhang Yang could, they could as well. In the end, they were instantly obliterated by Angus in a single swing of his sword. Zhang Yang was frustrated by the stupidity of the players. They had wasted all his efforts by "healing" Angus HP from 99% to 100%.

If there are more imbeciles, might as well have them all come at once to let the boss end their lives, there and then. It would be better to have them die earlier than when the boss is at his last 10% HP.

When so many players had died, all the other hot-headed players stopped their tracks. Only then, they knew the real reason why Zhang Yang could endure long enough. The boss' attack was not getting weaker, it was Zhang Yang who was getting stronger! Just how many Military Points did Zhang Yang own!? How many elite NPC soldiers did he manage to hire, to allow the damage to be negated to such an extent?

1,000 Military Points was only enough for 10 elite NPC soldiers, which was only enough to reduce 10% of the oncoming damage and distribute them to all the 10 soldiers. 10% damage was nothing! NOTHING! When the players had finally accepted the truth of how strong Zhang Yang was, it was already too late for them.

Zhang Yang was not bothered by the players. He was busy calculating and averaging out the damage per second of the boss to find out the rough estimated time needed to kill Angus. When he was finished, he needed to calculate the right time for his party member to use their Transformation skills and enter the fight.

Amongst all the NPC present there, Queen Serena was obviously the one dealing the most damage. With Merlinda healing everyone, Serena and her seven Barons were able to hang on far longer. Although they would still receive damage faster than they could heal, it would be much better than

just taking damage! As such, Zhang Yang roughly estimated that the fight can be dragged as long as 20 hours, or more! That is, if there are no more bird-brained players rushing into the fight to "heal" Angus, prolonging the entire fight. If that happens, Zhang Yang feared that not even two Merlinda (s) could save them.

The light of victory was just right there! There is hope!

Chapter 753: Adequate Preparation

Players like Snow Seeker and the guilds she was leading were all good at calculating the odds. They had all seen the wars of the other region and had speculated that China will face the same fate as them. Hence, they had not tried to fight in the first counterattack. Instead, they had placed their faith in the third or fourth attempt.

Even though the number of Celestial tier set equipment will drop to 4 and 1 respectively, the time taken for them to reach the Level Requirement of the equipment would be a year. Hence, even though they could get 4 or 1 Celestial tier equipment, it would not much for them at the moment. It would not be possible for the developers not to host any more events in the coming times that would drop Celestial tier equipment as well. Hence, Snow Seeker and her followers had not spent a single Military Point that day. Mainly, they had not gathered enough Military Points to hire enough elite tier soldiers. Secondly, the odds of the battle were unfavorable for China. Hired elite tier soldiers would not last long. In fact, after the war ends, successful or not, the soldiers will disappear.

The one thing that slipped past everyone expectation of the war, was Merlinda's participation. She alone could change the tide of the battle. Based on the damage dealt and HP healing, the NPC forces could last more than 20 hours fighting Angus. When they finally realized it, regret was the very thing lingering in their mind.

To loot the boss' drop after his death, one must deal enough damage and not simply land a hit. Without Inheritance Transformation skills, no one could approach the boss without dying. His attack range was 500 meters! Then again, what use if a player has Transformation skill? Which healer could heal on par with the damage caused by {Blade of Obliteration}?

The worst part of all was that they could teleport back to White Jade Castle right then to hire soldiers, but would be unable to return to the battlefield! They would have to run back because the portal created was close and there was the invisible wall that was preventing them from returning to the field. That leaves them one option. That is to stare blindly

at Zhang Yang beating the living hell out of Angus.

However, when one is pushed to a corner, players would start to feel intense jealousy towards Zhang Yang. They would try to rush to the boss when he is almost dying and "feed" him back to full health! Merlinda's presence in the battlefield could not retain all the NPC for long, and it was impossible to restore their NPC back to full health. If the battle lasts longer than 30 hours, surely Angus would be the last man standing.

At that moment, Zhang Yang was not focusing on the other player's feelings. All he cared was to attack the boss as fast as he could. Since the Phoenix attacks would be included to his character, his overall damage dealt to the boss was almost second to Queen Serena. Sadly, Felice was unable to gain the damage distribution from the elite soldiers. Even though her HP was slightly higher than Zhang Yang's, 2 million HP was not enough to last longer than 3 seconds when it comes to the boss' attack. At most, she could last for 6 seconds, thanks to the {Higher Regeneration} and that was it.

Although Zhang Yang wanted her to come out to attack, she could only stay in her Battle Companion U.I until Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party use their Transformation skill together. At that point, she could join the fight by activating her {Ancient Tree of Life} Transformation. At that point, her healing capability would exceed the likes of a B class Inheritance healer. Not to mention, her 12 Star Growth rate would further increase her potency, allow the girl to rival that of an A class Inheritance healer!

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

Meh. Zhang Yang was not disappointed. He had not expected the skill to land since the opponent was a Celestial tier boss. He only had a few Holy tier equipment on him. If he, a level 170 player with a few Holy tier equipment could take out 10% of the HP of a Level 230 Celestial tier boss, that would be unfair.

As Angus gradually lost his HP bit by bit, he had only lost a total of 4%

HP in one hour. Technically, they would need 25 hours to kill the boss. However, there was still the unaccounted factor of players who had not used their Transformation skill then. In the worst case scenario where Zhang Yang is forced to run in and out of the field to heal himself, his God of War Transformation would shorten the fight as well.

That was only one of the unaccounted factors that could affect the boss fight. If death of a player was inevitable, 4 deaths would extend the battle by 1 hour. 20 deaths would result in total restoration which would end up with Angus being the victor of the war. Even though a small portion of players had died in the battle with the Spectre monsters, another small portion of players had already left the battle when Angus had appeared. In the end, there were still more than 40 million players in the battlefield then, could Zhang Yang be sure that none of the 40 million players would not jump into the boss fight and "feed" him?

There is a saying, when the poor hungers so, the rich shall be their meal. Lone Desert Smoke had been hoarding all the riches of the land and Zhang Yang was the main culprit. To think that everyone would cower behind his back and allow him to take all the Celestial equipment when none of them could?

Hence, instead of waiting till the boss had lower HP, those nonsensical players with brains the size of a lizard's sh*t rushed past the NPC soldiers and into the range of the boss, all the while shouting phrases like "We can do it" and "For China". How could one stop them moving on when they were so insistent on dying?

At that point, Angus had lost 7% of his HP. If they die, the boss will restore all his HP. All the effort in the past hour will be wasted. Zhang Yang sighed with heavy heart and commanded all players in Lone Desert Smoke to stop or attack players who refuse to back down from the fight. He even had several of his members activate their Transformation skills to kill the players. Naturally, when Transformation skills are unleashed, no normal players would be their opponents.

After a few of the players were killed, they voiced out their complaints, accusing Lone Desert Smoke of occupying the battle with the intention to

kill the boss alone. Those players were as expectedly from The Dominators, Eternal Flame, and The Myth. They were only doing so under the order of their guild masters to tarnish the reputation of Zhang Yang and his guild.

When things got heated up, players around joined the fray and cried foul at Lone Desert Smoke. Without much time at all, Zhang Yang's guild had become public enemy number 1. The one thing that Zhang Yang could not do right then was to retaliate there and then. Unexpectedly, as if Serena senses Zhang Yang was in trouble, she had turned her anger towards players that were not in his party and cried out to her soldiers. "Soldiers of the Empire. Keep all adventurers away from me! Chase them away until they are at least 1 kilometers away! Kill anyone who refuses to obey!"

Instantly, all the Empire soldiers pointed their swords away from Angus and turned around to attack the players behind them. They were all roughly 500 meters away from the boss and started to push all the players until they were 1000 meters away. The number of players exceeded the number of NPC soldiers. However, all the players were separated by guilds and parties. The top guilds were only Level 5 guilds. Even if they were to sortie 75% of their total members, 200,000 players versus a unified army will only result in the players' loss.

At then, all players started to withdraw from the front line when all the soldiers were pointing their swords, aiming their bows, channeling their spells, all with the intention to harm the players if they refuse to back down.

The battle continued on and Angus was being butchered alive by nine Ascended tier boss! His HP had dropped below 60%!

When players from other region had received the news of the unorthodox method and the conditions of the battle, they had rushed over to witness the war with their own eyes. How could China put a fight with Angus when the rest of the world could not!? They had the same number of Ascended tier bosses, yet why did their power gap differ so? All the other regions had lost the war in merely 5 to 6 hours, yet China was able to continue the fight and was actually showing signs of winning!

They knew Zhang Yang. They knew the pet Phoenix that he had. They knew that Zhang Yang was strong. No one could deny that fact. However, with the Level Suppression system affecting his damage output, how could the man fight Angus toe to toe? Zhang Yang may be strong, but there will always be a limit to it! Could it be, the female on the Unicorn...NPC?! Their eyes bulged out when they saw the prowess of {Higher Regeneration} on all NPCs, including Zhang Yang and his party members! No wonder the NPC could tank so long against the attacks of Angus! Was there such a powerful healing skill? But why didn't they receive such a buff? Why did the NPC not come to their aid when they were fighting Angus then? Could the system be biased to China? It could not be...

Players rode their mounts and tried to get a closer look at the battle between Zhang Yang and the boss, but they were blocked by the invisible wall. Disgruntled, but helpless, all they could do then was to watch how Zhang Yang defeats the final boss.

Zhang Yang noticed that the other players had moved back from the front lines. He then called his party members to ignore the soldiers and joined him in the boss fight. Since they had used their Transformation skills, might as well use them to the fullest. When all his party members came to his side, Zhang Yang called out Felice and have her morph into her Tree of Life form to assist Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart in healing the entire team. As for the rest of the battle companions of the other players, they were all kept in their respected U.I.s since they were too weak to begin with. Without Transformation skills, they could not possibly survive the crazy bombardment of the boss.

Merlinda had then demonstrated the prowess of her skill and cast {Higher Regeneration} on all his allies within 50 meters from her. It was extremely useful, since Zhang Yang had his {Vitality Aura} maxed out. Even the player with the lowest HP, that was Fantasy Sweetheart, had over 10 million HP! With {Higher Regeneration}, Felice, Han Ying Xue, and Fantasy Sweetheart's supercharged healing, everyone was able to last for as long as 2 minutes before they would need to pull back from the fight to fully restore their HP.

Even though all of them were suffering damage reductions from the Level Suppression system, they were able to compensate that with the damage gained from Transformation forms. Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were able to ditch out strong damage values. Sadly, Hundred Shot and Fatty Han were a little useless then. They were both Level 165 and both their Hunter's pets were only Mythical tiers. Despite being the same Legendary Beast as the Phoenix, the Red Dragon and Fatty Han's Phoenix could only deal damage half of what Zhang Yang's Phoenix could.

With the party all attacking alongside Zhang Yang, the overall DPS was increased slightly. Although it was not too obvious, the numbers will show later on after accumulation. Although everyone could not possibly deal enough damage to be able to loot the drops, they were fine by it, since Zhang Yang was there to swoop all the items later!

On the other hand, other guilds that were unable to sortie to fight the boss could only stare at Lone Desert Smoke with utter disdain! However, even though they had players with Transformation skills, they could not survive battling the boss, due to the lack of elite tier NPC soldiers! If they even try to do so, they feared that they will be a target of Lone Desert Smoke. Right then, how many guilds had the ability to attack Lone Desert Smoke? Zhang Yang alone had fought 30,000 players alone!

Then again, even though they could not have the equipment then, they were still in for a treat themselves if Lone Desert Smoke wins the battle. The reward for killing Angus was Level +2 and the recipient would be the entire of China! China was the last in the line. If they are unable to defeat Angus then, they would have to wait for a whole cycle. Other regions would have the chance to defeat Angus then! Although the chances of other region defeating Angus was extremely slim, it was not a bet that anyone would be willing to take.

Rather than going home empty-handed, might as well take home a Level +2 reward!

Chapter 754: Ending the Boss Fight

More and more players from all over the world gathered at the outskirts of Sauron's Castle to witness how China was going to perform, or rather, how the stars of Lone Desert Smoke performed. Guilds like Crimson Rage who had a good relationship with Lone Desert Smoke bore no resentment to them and they cheered their allies on wholeheartedly. On the other end of the spectrum, guilds that would curse and resent Zhang Yang would be none other than The Myth, Eternal Flame, and The Dominators.

Amongst the crowded audiences, Liu Wei's cold stare was filled with the utmost killing intent that was capable of making any ferocious wolf cry in fear. The man's entire family had fallen, thanks to Zhang Yang. Although Zhong Xiu Hua came to their rescue, even he could only "save" Liu Wei alone. Before, he could admit that his resentment towards Zhang Yang was not only limited to only in the game. After the incident that befell the Liu Family, Liu Wei now bore so much hatred for Zhang Yang.

The Liu Industry was vast and wide. Apart from the company treasury, they had a few hidden offshore accounts that could not be traced. As Liu Wei was the future leader of the Liu Family, he had knowledge of a few accounts and was able to get the ownership transferred to him before they were all charged and prosecuted.

Hence, even though he had lost support from the Liu Industry, the amassed money was much more than he had once owned, legally. Sadly, even though he owned more than he could imagined, the source of money was not perpetual. Once the money is spent, there was no way for Liu Wei to replenish them. He had lost all his business.

Although Liu Wei was still able to push the guild on until the day he uses up all his remaining cheques. Hence, it would not be long before the guild that was built on money crumbles.

Unable to grasp the reality of his surrounding, Liu Wei was not able to reason well. Hence, not long after Zhang Yang and his party had managed to hack away 30 to 40% of the boss HP, he cried, "It's our turn!"

Be it Zhang Yang or the boss, it did not matter anymore. Even if he knows that he might die and restore the boss' HP, the thought of China winning the boss fight was no longer in his mindset. He was, literally blinded by anger.

Still, he had the perfect defensive formation of 12 Guardians around him. Naturally, even though he and the suicide squad he was leading was able to penetrate the defending Empire soldiers, he still suffered a little damage. The Empire soldiers were under direct orders from Queen Serena herself. Note that NPC's loyalty was absolute. Hence, when Liu Wei tried to burst through the defense line, thousands of attacks landed on Liu Wei. Even with {Sacrifice} on him, the attacks were so strong that the first Guardian was killed instantly. The result was the same, even when the second Guardian had spontaneously cast {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei. Same went for the third, the fourth, until the twelfth. In less than 10 seconds, all 12 Guardians were killed.

However, their deaths was not in vain as Liu Wei had managed to get through the defensive line, flew through the Dragon riders of White Jade Castle, and arrived behind Zhang Yang in a battered condition.

"Zhang Yang! Don't think I'll let you have it your way!" Cried Liu Wei with rage.

Almost instantly, Queen Serena turned around. Like a titan smiting down a tiny rat, her shadow eclipsed the sunlight as she approached Liu Wei.

"I warned you."

She lifted her sword and brandished several swings at super sonic speed, mincing Liu Wei's character into countless of meat cubes, splattering his blood all around.

Liu Wei's death was instant and swift. The poor bastard had forgotten that Queen Serena was no ordinary NPC. She was a boss capable of inflicting AoE attacks like Angus! Liu Wei's death should serve as a reminder to all players that she was capable of killing anyone! Back then, when she rode back to reclaimed her throne, all players were slaughtered

mercilessly.

Fortunately, Angus' {Blade of Obliteration} was slightly slower than Queen Serena's attack. He was unable to kill Liu Wei to restore his HP!

"Trash." Another player from within the crowded audience muttered. He was called Dragon Marquis, or as also known as Zhong Xiu Hua. He had fished Liu Wei out from the public prosecutor's hand just to have him cause Zhang Yang some trouble. However, Liu Wei was not only able to touch him, he was killed almost instantly, by acting rashly, his sanity notwithstanding.

Back to Angus, he was being butchered alive. When he saw Liu Wei approaching him with little to no HP left, he was delighted and wanted to kill him to restore any bit of HP as he could. Unfortunately, he had just attacked and could not attack again 2 seconds later. Queen Serena had cut in, and literally cut the man into thousands of cubes before Angus could.

"Spectre scum. Know that this is the day that Humanity stood against the likes of you and prevailed!" She bore great hatred for the Spectre, due her past. If Zhang Yang had not come to her rescue, she would have continued being a prisoner in the tomb and might even end up joining their ranks!

"Nothing! Nothing can defeat me!" Angus scoffed with confidence, despite having his HP dropping to its end. Angus swung his sword far and wide to demonstrate his powers as a Celestial tier Level 230 boss! However, even though his face was stoic and calm, Zhang Yang knew that the end was coming, and he was frantically defending himself.

With so many pair of hands attacking the boss from all directions, Angus' death was sealed. The winner of the battle was made clearer as the battle goes on.

Even though his HP was approaching zero, his sword swings was still all-time powerful. However, as long as he could not kill anyone, any stronger attack would not do much for him. Thankfully that the boss had followed the aggro system and attack accordingly. If he had skills that could target at random, he could kill players from across the battlefield. That would

truly be the end of the world. Why fight when there's literally no way to defeat such a boss. Zhang Yang gritted his teeth hard. Even though they could win the fight, he would still have to endure as long as 20 hours.

10 hours...15 hours...20 hours...

At that point, Zhang Yang was already tired beyond reason. However, his efforts did not go unrewarded. The boss already had less than 20% HP! It was the time for {Killing Cleave}! At that point, other bosses would have a higher attack rate. However, since Angus' {Blade of Obliteration} had an attacking rate of 2 seconds, it can no longer go any faster. Hence, the DPS of the boss was not raised. As for Zhang Yang, it was showtime.

Zhang Yang unsummoned the Phoenix and leaped into the air, transforming into his God of War form, and attacked the boss. Without the 92% damage redistribution, the Phoenix will be instantly killed! Han Ying Xue and everyone else in the party had long ran out of their Transformation forms. They cannot rely on {Higher Regeneration} to endure the boss' attack.

With {Indiscriminate} active, Zhang Yang went ahead and attacked.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

Zhang Yang sighed. Since the beginning of the fight, Glare of the Death God had never once landed a hit on Angus. Then again, Angus will be killed, no matter how. Hence, it did not matter, unless a gang of players come up beyond the defensive line of the Empire soldiers and offers themselves to the boss as tributes.

As Zhang Yang activated his Transformation skill, his basic attack was raised up to 455,563 – 534,863. If it was not for the Level Suppression system acting on him, his damage would have been higher than the seven Barons, and would be on par with Serena! As for Merlinda, her task was only to heal Zhang Yang and every NPC present. That was her one role. Do not look down on the healer. If it was not for her healing, Zhang Yang nor Serena could defeat Angus.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Heavy Axe}!

‘-2,305,642!’

Even though Zhang Yang was suffering from the 50% damage reduction of the Level Suppression system, Zhang Yang could still deal such a powerful slam. Sadly, even though his attack was strong, it was merely 0.001% of the boss’ entire HP.

"ENOUGH! YOU ALL ARE BENEATH ME! I AM A GOD! YOU'RE NOTHING BUT ANTs!" Angus bellowed angrily. Even when he has more than 4.6 billion HP, it was a number that was considered to be unsafe for Angus, since 80% of his HP bar was depleted!

"Even an ant will have the chance to rule over the world. I am but the one chosen and beloved by the heavens! I will rule over the lands and bring back the once fallen Empire to its former glory!" Serena jumped forward and cleaved Angus.

"HAHAHAHA! Such an ambitious woman! I shall have your dead body and revive you as a Spectre! The day shall come when you join our ranks! You will have what you wish, and more, after you die! You can rule the land, the earth, the sky, and even the entire universe!"

"Rest in peace, for that would never be my agenda!"

"Heed my words, human! I will rule over this land! The Spectre shall prevail!"

"Then, I shall dance on your grave!"

Serena charged her sword with holy power and swung her sword. Angus lifted his sword with great speed and blocked the attack. Sparks flew as the two blades clashed. Zhang Yang was blown away by the resulting force. How powerful could they be...

18%...16%...15%...

After several hours, after Zhang Yang’s Transformation skill ended long ago, the boss’ HP had finally dropped down to 1%! Almost everyone was

unable to resist the temptation to land the killing blow. Some of them who had not used their Transformation skills activated them and launched themselves towards the boss in a wild attempt.

Even though the boss' attack range was as far as 500 meters, it would take players on flying mounts 10 seconds to cover. Hence, those with more than 5 million HP would actually reach the end and might, just might land a hit.

100,000,000...

50,000,000...

20,000,000...

As the number dropped exponentially, the players had managed to breach the Empire soldiers defensive line and reached Angus.

10,000,000...

5,000,000...

300,000...

"Rest in peace. And never come back!" Serena sliced off Angus' head and ended the battle.

"Gah..." Angus could not even speak. His spectral body dispersed into the void behind him, along with the rest of the dead bodies of the fallen Spectre monsters. The ball of void expanded as it sucked in more and more bodies. Until one point, the ball of darkness exploded, sending a strong shockwave that sent the stationary Serena's hair backward wildly. As expected of a Celestial boss, starting off incredibly strong when alive, even during death, he would go with a flash!

Serena sighed with exhaustion and dropped the Meteor Sword to the ground. She dropped down to her knees and raised her head to the sky.

"Are you alright? My Queen?" Zhang Yang descended downward and placed a hand on her shoulder.

"I'm fine. I'm just extremely tired."

‘Ding! Server Announcement: Lord of the Seven Spectre King, Angus has been slain! Rejoice, fellow adventurers! The time has come to celebrate!’

‘Ding! You have received a reward: Level +2!’

Instantly, the entire land of China was illuminated with pillars of light. Those who had participated in the battle, alive or not, had gained 2 Levels, instantly.

"Celestial equipment!"

Some of them had not forgotten about their true aim of fighting the boss. When Angus had perished into nothingness, there were many radiant metallic items that were giving off colorful light on the ground! Those were Celestial tier equipment! The strongest armor and weapons that anyone could have in the game! However, not everyone within the vicinity could loot, they would have to deal a certain amount of damage to have the qualification to do so.

As such, when they had rushed over to the pile of treasure, their hands merely phased through the pile of items. They could not pick them up! Zhang Yang ran as fast as he could, swooping all the items with both his hands with crazy speed. Everyone, literally everyone around Zhang Yang grew angry and picked up their weapons.

"KILL ZHAN YU!" With the temptation of the Celestial equipment hanging in the balance, no one was thinking straight. They had not care even if Zhang Yang was the number 1 player in the entire of the game. He had taken ALL OF THE ITEMS! ALL! How would anyone think straight then?!

"Impudent fools! Begone!" Serena picked up her sword off the ground and lazily swiped her sword through the air. Almost instantly, a bright crescent beam blasted out and vaporized all the players around. Some of them were still in their Transformed states and managed to survive the attack. As such, everyone retreated immediately. None of them had anticipated Serena, a god-killer NPC, would protect Zhang Yang!

She was, after all, the ruler of the Empire. Technically, all players were her citizens. If they were to try and attack the Queen, they will be branded

as traitors of the Empire. They would have their privilege to auction, storage, repairs, socketing, Profession, and many other facilities in the Empire revoked!

With that sort of threat at hand, she was protecting Zhang Yang! No one even dared look him in the eye!

Chapter 755: Magnificent Treasure

Zhang Yang found the whole situation extremely funny. Still, it was still dangerous for him to linger there any longer. Serena was about to return to White Jade Castle as well. It would be best for Zhang Yang to go back to town, where PvP was forbidden. Even though he was able to tank Angus, a Celestial tier boss, he will never be able to tank all of China's raging players.

Queen Serena was still in an attack stance when she escorted Zhang Yang to the far end of the now quiet battlefield. No one dared to approach him when superwoman was right beside him. The Empire's Spellcasters opened up a portal from White Jade Castle and allowed the entire army to return home. Players in the battlefield could use the portal as well.

Zhang Yang thanked Serena for her efforts in the war and quickly bade her farewell. He rushed back and brought Merlinda, and his party members back safely to White Jade Castle.

There was only one way for anyone to kill Zhang Yang to get his Celestial tier drops, and that was to have all other players from other regions to issue a region vs region war and conquer White Jade Castle. As for players from China, they had absolutely nothing else to do but stare blindly at Zhang Yang.

"Little Yang! Come on! SHOW IT! SHOW ME THE TREASURE!" cried Fatty Han frantically, like a hungry monkey.

Zhang Yang snickered, but when he turned to meet the party, everyone was practically behaving like a hungry wolf, silent and ready to pounce on him.

"You guys...calm down, yeah? Why are all of you looking at me like hungry wolves?! I'm not a piece a meat. I'm not tasty!" cried Zhang Yang as he laughed and teased the party further. After a good laugh and teasing, Zhang Yang finally opened up his inventory and showed everyone the haul.

As they weren't able to defeat Angus in the first attack, the drop was

reduced from 13 to 10 Celestial tier set equipment and 3 Celestial tier normal equipment. There were even more random items as well, including 7 skill books, 3 [Skill Point Crystals], 9 [Advance Aura Stones], 2 [Forbidden Scrolls], and the Second Chapter of the [Book of Revelation]!

All the Celestial tier set equipment obtained were boots. Besides Templar, Witch Doctor, and Sniper, there were set equipment for the other subclasses. After gaining the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang was able to equip both Berserker and Guardian type armors. However, since Wei Yan Er was there, he would have to resort to taking only the Guardian type armor.

Even though the set effect of the two equipment were different, the basic properties boost was the same.

[God Killer War Greaves] (Celestial, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2560

Vitality: +47343

Strength: +6163

Dexterity: +2515

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 94,680.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%.

Equip: Absorbs 5,472 damage on attack.

Use: Drops a powerful kick on the target and stuns the target for 10 seconds. Effect can be inflicted on targets below Level 230. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 230

Class Requirement: Guardian

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 30 Levels.

God Killer Set Effect: {God Killer Helmet}, {God Killer Necklace}, {God Killer Cape}, {God Killer Chest Plate}, {God Killer Gauntlet}, {God Killer

Sheen Guard}, God Killer War Greaves, {God Killer Ring}.

Two Equipped Set Effect: Increases damage reduction rate by 20%

Four Equipped Set Effect: Reduces 10% damage on all allies within 40 meters around the wearer.

Six Equipped Set Effect: Grants a fixed chance to activate {Shield Wall} upon attack. Triggered {Shield Wall} will not affect the player's {Shield Wall} cooldown.

Eight Equipped Set Effect: Automatically triggers {Shield Bash} after a successful {Block}. {Shield Bash} trigger would not cost any Rage points and will not affect the player's {Shield Bash} cooldown. 100% Critical rate. After striking a target with the triggered {Shield Bash}, grant a chance to stun the target for 3 seconds. Stun effect will affect all targets regardless of Level.

Note: There was a legend. A Legend about the God Killer Ash Crux. Ash had slain 8 Gods and used their blood to forge each of the equipment. All the equipment forged with the god's ichor will beseech the wearer with such strength that even the God of Death will shiver with fear.

Since the set equipment was specially "forged" for Guardians, the set effect will be mostly defensive. After collecting all 8 equipment, the set effect granted then will provide a certain degree of damage boost. It was a 100% Critical hit, a zero cost {Shield Bash} that could not only deal massive damage due to Zhang Yang absurd Strength value, it would also stun the target for 3 seconds.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes when he read the description of the equipment: "Stun effect will affect all targets, regardless of Level." That would mean that all bosses, even the Celestial tier bosses could be stunned! WOAHH! As expected of a God Killer armor!

The excitement and happiness, knowing that soon, he would be this strong! However, Zhang Yang immediately realized that he was thinking too far into the future and had forgotten to take account the process. Collecting all eight parts of the set equipment would require Zhang Yang killing eight Celestial tier bosses. Once he collects all the parts...he would

definitely be able to defeat the ninth, the tenth, and so on without a problem! In that case, the free {Shield Bash} and stun skill will only be adding salt to the ocean!

Still, by having the eighth set effect would undoubtedly strengthen his overall battle prowess. {Block} has a 6 seconds cooldown period, hence, even though the chance to trigger the {Shield Bash} stunning effect, it would greatly increase its proc rate. During PvP battles, if Zhang Yang is lucky enough to proc the stun effect, the player can kiss goodbye to winning the battle.

Those who are able to get their hands on the Celestial tier equipment would be happy. Since there was more than one player of the same class, there will be tears and sadness in the party. For example, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart lost to Hundred Shots and Han Ying Xue during the rolling for their items. Be it anger or sadness, they could do nothing but to congratulate their partner.

The luckiest one there, besides Zhang Yang, would be Lost Dream. Sun Xin Yu had the S class Inheritance, like Zhang Yang, she would be able to equip both subclasses of equipment. She then chose the Bandit type boots, leaving the Assassin type boots to Lost Dream. There was no need for a roll!

Although some of them were unable to get themselves equipment, it was still fine since Level 200 was still pretty much at the horizon. They had more than enough time to hunt for another Celestial tier boss, sometime later in the future.

When all the set equipment were distributed, the remaining three Celestial tier equipment were put on display. All three of them were not subclass specific.

[Muckra's Mjolnir] (Celestial, One-Handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 36,948 – 56,948

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 16,767

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 70%.

Equip: Increases Critical chance rate by 20%.

Equip: Grants a chance to inflict 10 times normal damage on the next attack to a target after attacking.

Equip: Grants a chance increase attack speed by 20% after attacking.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Note: Muckra was a warrior who used magic as his main offense. Although his magic could not defeat a Spellcaster, and his strength could not defeat a Warrior, he was able to defeat them both with a little adjustments to his hammer.

Everyone examined the weapon and were shocked beyond words. Be it the high damage weapon attack, or special weapon effect, both were extremely strong! Perhaps, it was even stronger than a set-equipment!

Both Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight were suited to using the one-handed weapon, however, Endless Starlight had the priority since he was a Defender with the skill {Hammer Mastery}. The man cried his eyes out and thanked his mother for being born, and thanked Sun Xin Yu for allowing his lowly self to accept the weapon and even thanked Zhang Yang for finding him after being kicked down from the cliff with Daffodil Daydream!

The next item was a Cloth Armor type. Since Fantasy Sweetheart had lost the roll to get the set equipment boots, the Celestial tier dress was given to her.

The last item was neither an equipment nor a weapon, but an accessory. A beautiful metallic ring, designed to curl around the finger of the wearer.

[Unfaltering Faith] (Celestial, Ring)

Vitality: +23671

Strength: +3081

Dexterity: +3081

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 47,340.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%.

Equip: Absorbs 2,735 damage upon attack.

Use: Resets all cooldown to 0 for all skills with less than 30 minutes of cooldown time. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: Level 230

Special: Reduces Level Requirement by 30 Levels.

"Dear ladies and gentleman, since all of you have obtained a Celestial item. May I humbly ask for this ring since this Fatty bro had not able to receive anything?" said Fatty Han, wearing the expression Zhang Yang had seen many a times on greedy Goblins and Dwarves.

Everyone laughed and agreed to let Fatty Han have the ring.

All three [Skill Point Crystals] were distributed accordingly to turns. As for the [Advance Aura Stones], two were given to Sun Xin Yu to increase her {Critical Aura} to Level 10, three were given to Wei Yan Er, three were given to Hundred Shots, and the last one was given to Daffodil Daydream.

As a result, the cumulative aura had increase the entire party stats as such: Vitality +40%, Healing Rate: +30%, Critical chance rate: +10%, Strength: +20%, Pet Damage Increase: +30%.

The two [Forbidden Scrolls] were named [Reaper's Descent], and [Stuttering Focus].

[Reaper's Descent] was an AoE attack skill that had the same effect as other AoE attack [Forbidden Scrolls]. (Deals 10% HP as damage for 30 seconds). The only difference that [Reaper's Descent] had was the upper and lower limit cap at 250,000 and 100,000 damage.

[Stuttering Focus] was a single target debuff that will cause the effect

called {Stuttering}. Every 3 seconds, the inflicted target will have a 10% chance to stop moving, attacking, or do any other action. It was similar to [Absolute Binding,] but the effect was effective against targets until Level 230.

If a boss similar to Angus ever appears again, Zhang Yang could use the [Forbidden Scroll: Stuttering Focus] to control him!

Sadly, all Celestial boss were considered Unique. Angus' death is permanent and there would never be a boss named Angus anymore. However, the Spectre system will elect a being that will take over as Lord of the Seven Spectre Kings. Hence, the number of Celestial tier bosses will remain the same, even if they are being killed like ants.

Naturally, all the skill books were distributed according to their class requirement. If there are skill books that could be learned by multiple classes, the distribution method will then be changed to Roll The Dice.

Zhang Yang had obtained skill called [Surrogacy]

[Surrogacy]: Connects with an ally at the spiritual level. When you or the chosen ally receives an attack, the attack damage will be reduced, based on the value of the higher Defense, amongst the two. [Surrogacy] can only be cast on one target at a time. The Level Gap between the caster and the chosen target must be lower or equal to 30.

Although the skill was pretty confusing and sounded rather useless, it was in fact extremely useful. It could be used on either the DPSer or the healer. In simple words, Zhang Yang can instantly have someone like Han Ying Xue gain the same Defense as Zhang Yang! Furthermore, the skill can also be used on a tank! Zhang Yang could turn a "tofu" tank into a super-powered tank!

On the other hand, if Endless Starlight activates his King Kong Transformation skill, Zhang Yang could use the skill on him, and Zhang Yang could gain Endless Starlight's boosted Defense value! It would be the same for Zhang Yang if he uses his Transformation skill. That would be the best way to use the skill. A free tank! Naturally, the HP value of both the caster and the receiver would remain the same.

The happiest person was Wei Yan Er, not Zhang Yang. The little girl had called shotgun for the skill. As long as she is in the party with Zhang Yang, he would have to use the skill on her so that she could attack till her heart's content.

Chapter 756: The Additional Effect of the Book of Revelation

Truth be told, other than the Celestial Tier Armor set, the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2] was the one item that made Zhang Yang the happiest man on earth.

Zhang Yang had the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 1] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 3 - 4] in his possession. By acquiring the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 2], he could finally combine all four broken chapters of the book into one!

With all four broken chapters combining together into one, a stream of blinding light flashed across the items. Then, the four items became one.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 1 - 4] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: Increases 20% Damage dealt to all party members of the holder within the range of 100-meter radius from the holder. The same effects cannot stack. If the holder is killed, the holder can choose to resurrect at the same spot where he or she died. The holder will have 40% HP and 40% MP upon resurrection. This effect can only be triggered once in every 7 hours. Similar type of effects cannot stack as well. If the holder is killed by other players when the effect is under cooldown, the item will be dropped. This item can only be brought along, and cannot be destroyed.

Effect: Binds to a Skill and enhances that Skill (Skills that have been enhanced before cannot be enhanced again). Unbinding the enhance effect causes a 24-hour cooldown to the binding feature.

Use: Combines this item with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5].

Huh? Other than the additional damage and the additional Resurrection effect, there was another additional special effect that would allow the holder to enhance Skills?

Zhang Yang quickly brought up his Skill List and selected his {Block}. Then he proceeded on to select the [Book of Revelation]. Instantly, a stream of dazzling golden light flashed across his entire body. The next

thing Zhang Yang noticed was the description of his {Block} had changed.

[Block (Enhanced)] (Level 10): Raises your shield up high, blocks an attack from the enemy head-on. Lasts for 1 second. Upon a successful block, causes 200% Strength points of damage to the target and creates a large amount of aggro. You will acquire 30 Rage Points as well. Cooldown: 5 seconds. Require: Shield.

The cooldown had been reduced from 6 seconds to 5 seconds! Furthermore, the strike back damage had been increased from 100% Strength points of damage to 200%!

Even though the cooldown period had only be shortened by 1 second, it was a 17% improvement in efficiency of the Skill! Initially, Zhang Yang could only activate his {Block} 5 times within a timeframe of 30 seconds. Now, he could activate his {Block} up to six times within the same timeframe. This could really invoke a game-changing effect when taking on certain bosses!

Other than that, this effect could also be unbounded! This effect could enhance any Skills! Of course, Zhang Yang's Skills which are already enhanced, such as {Force Strike}, {Cripple Defence} and {Thunder Strike} could no longer be enhanced any further. Otherwise, those Skills would become too powerful for the game.

This book would basically be as powerful as a Skill Book that contains all the powerful Skills, such as {Superior Force Strike} and {Superior Thunder Strike} for other players if they had this. They could switch between Skills of their choice to bind the book with, once every 24 hours! It would really be a very practical and versatile asset.

Furthermore, these were just additional effects, provided by the combination of 4 broken chapters of the [Book of Revelation]. If the remaining chapters of the book were to be collected and combined together to form the complete [Book of Revelation], there should be more additional effects that the book could offer, right? It would be ideal if the holder gets one additional effect for every chapter combined!

Zhang Yang was grinning in joy. At the same time, he was slightly

agitated, because the chapters of the book had to be in sequence in order to be combined into one. So, he could not just take the Chapter 10 from Sun Xin Yu and combine it with the Chapter 8 that he had. Why couldn't these two chapters just function as Chapter 5 and Chapter 6?!

To have such a thought in his mind, Zhang Yang's greed and desired must have overtaken him a little while there.

Other than that, Zhang Yang was not granted with the 'First Clear' of a Celestial boss upon Angus's defeat, after all. It was quite obvious that the battle was already won, because the NPCs did most of the heavy work. That was most probably why the system did not recognize Zhang Yang as the slayer of the boss.

Firstly, Zhang Yang went up to thank Merlinda. He managed to get her to stay in the White Jade Castle for the next few days. Queen Serena had sent forth her men to escort Merlinda to the palace. However, the queen's 'summon' was declined by Merlinda with regret. Two days later, Thea and Aweena pulled Merlinda out of the city quietly, as if they were afraid that Merlinda would be 'corrupted' after staying too long with Zhang Yang.

The moment the quest of slaying 'Angus' was handed in, Zhang Yang and everyone in his party of ten received two Skill Points. Unfortunately, they did not acquire any addition to their levels as rewards. However, from another point of view, the +2 levels that they acquired the moment when the boss was slain was considered as that reward already, wasn't it? The only thing that left Zhang Yang dissatisfied was that everyone who joined the boss battle had acquired the same +2 levels as well.

Zhang Yang added one of the Skill Points on his {Shadow Clone}. After fully upgrading that Skill, he added the other Skill Point to his {Force Strike}. Well, he chose to add the Skill Point to his {Force Strike} because that Skill could have an additional damage of 300%, just like his {God of War Devastation} and his {God of War Battle Axe}, when that Skill hits level 10.

Upon Angus's death, the players naturally had to recover the Territories they lost. Meanwhile, after the death of a super boss, the remaining

monsters had nothing left to stand against the players. In just two days, the 7 main cities had been declared to be returned under the ruling of the White Jade Empire. Meanwhile, all Territories had been rebuilt.

Unfortunately, the invasion was not triggered by activating a [Monster Attack Order]. Therefore, it did not matter whether it was Thunderstorm Castle, Morning Town or Sauron's Castle, they all belonged to Zhang Yang. As long as he could secure the main halls of the Territories and clear out all monsters that were still in Battle Mode, Zhang Yang could regain control of the Territories once again. By then, Zhang Yang should be able to rebuild the Territories after he regains his status as the Baron of the Territories.

Of course, he had to spend a fortune to rebuild all that. However, he actually lost way more than that, just because he could not get a dime from the Teleportation Circles for over 1 month. That amount that he could not earn was far more than the millions of dollars he spent to repair his Territories.

After they've destroyed all four 'Darkness Falls' devices in the hearts of the four high Tier Territories, the players claimed total victory over the Spectre Invasion battle! However, it was obvious that the event was far from over. The system notified the players that the Spectres would not admit their defeat just because they failed in their invasion plan. They were hiding somewhere secretive, rebuilding their 'Darkness Falls' so that they could return once again to lay waste to the land one day!

That would be the theme for the Level 170 Dungeon's 'Spectre's Secret Lair'. Players could form a 50-player scale party to enter and destroy the Spectre's ambition and scheme, once and for all.

When the Teleportation Circles of the Territories resumed their functionality, many players cheered and ran around like joyful children, racing towards a new playground. Some things are not appreciated until they are gone. Therefore, the players were forced to travel around on their Flying Mounts for over a month when the Territories were 'out of order' momentarily. Because of that, they realized the importance of Territories and their Teleportation Circles. Most of the players were depending on the

Teleportation Circles to travel back to their main cities from the Territories. Some were traveling across the main cities and the territories just for fun. Zhang Yang felt extremely happy, because of that.

Normal players could continue enjoying the joy and entertainment that the game could offer at the moment. However, the top Tier players had no luxury at all to relax. The next phase of the story was about to begin! They had to get ready for the upcoming competition in acquiring the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of 'Spectre's Secret Lair'! It's going to be way more intense than they could ever anticipate!

The 'Spectre's Secret Lair' was a 50-player scale dungeon, and only players who had attained Level 170 could enter the dungeon. Currently, even Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er were still dangling around Level 167, Level 168!

The fact that the China Region was the one who took the credit for slaying Angus had led them to earn a lot of benefits! Players in the entire China Region had acquired a reward of +2 levels. It was particularly effective for the high Tier players.

Not having enough members at the required levels, Zhang Yang could not begin 'snatching' the 'First Clear' of the dungeon's Hardcore Mode. So, he could only hustle his party members to grind their levels a little faster. All he needed was to have 30 Level 170 players challenge the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode of the dungeon. By then, he should be able to get familiarized with the dungeon boss's behavior.

For the next few days, Zhang Yang took it easy as he grinded his levels. While he was at it, he was experimenting the additional enhancement effect of the [Book of Revelation] that he had acquired a while ago. He switched the effect onto his Skills, one after another to see which Skill had the most to gain.

Some Skills actually became so oppressive after the enhance effect was applied on them. For instance, the cooldown of the {God of War Transformation} had been shortened by 2 hours! The effect sounded too great to be true! Two hours is as long as the duration of the

Transformation Skills can last!

However, if the 72-hour cooldown is taken into consideration, the shortening of 2-hour of the cooldown period would not make much of a difference. Furthermore, no one would actually activate their Inheritance Transformation immediately after the cooldown. Everyone would only use their Inheritance Transformation in crucial moments. Normally, players would only use their Inheritance Transformations once in every 4 to 5 days. Therefore, the enhance effect would become pointless for that Skill.

Well, instead of having a 2-hour shortening on the cooldown of his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang would prefer more to have a 2-hour increment on the duration of his Transformation!

Of course, there were also other Skills that become much more powerful after applying the Enhance Effect. For instance, the duration of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall} had increased by 2 times longer! Other than that, Skills such as {God of War Devastation} and {God of War Battle Axe} had their cooldown periods shortened a little. For example, if the Skill's cooldown was 1 minute, then the cooldown period would be shortened down to 50 seconds, 30 seconds or even 25 seconds. However, boosting Zhang Yang's Offensive Skills was not as ideal as boosting Zhang Yang's Defensive Skills.

Well, Zhang Yang also had another oppressive Skill called the {Rising Dragon Strike}. Upon applying the Enhance Effect on it, the Skill only received a 'slightly higher chance' of being triggered. However, after Zhang Yang gave it a try, he noticed that there were still less than 0.001% chance for the Skill to trigger! Well, judging from the Skill's damage output and that it was also an AoE Skill, it would be outrageous for the other players and monsters if the rate of triggering this Skill was high.

Finally, Zhang Yang decided to apply the enhancement effect of the [Book of Revelation] to his {Block}. That was Zhang Yang's most frequently used Skill after all. So there was a high value for him to apply the enhancement effect on that Skill.

Zhang Yang arrived at the Rock Flatlands. It was a Level 150 – 180 map

that was the standard for players to grind for their levels. He had chosen to come because there were much fewer players here. Furthermore, he might even get a chance of encountering a Holy Tier boss!

Having Felice tagging along with him, Felice would also transform into her Dragonhawk form while she battles the monsters. After clearing out the monsters, Felice would transform into her Tree of Life form and heal Zhang Yang. Therefore, Zhang Yang did not have to take Snacks like crazy after encountering a few Elite Tier monsters.

Zhang Yang did not have a clear direction at the moment. So, after letting his Herb Foraging Familiar out into the wild, he just casually walked around and slew monsters in his surroundings. Well, as long as he earns Experience Points, his destination would be of no consequence at all.

After grinding for an entire day, he arrived at a settlement of men. It was a village built along the side of a large lake. There should be about thousands of families settling down, over the village. Well, the village was rather large, and could be considered a rural town, if such a thing even existed.

Right in the middle of the village, there was a noticeboard. There were two wanted posters pinned right on the board. One of the wanted posters was flashing vaguely. It was the telltale sign of a quest.

Zhang Yang touched the wanted poster with his hand. He immediately received a new quest.

[Loch Ness Monster in Guura Lake] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: The legendary Loch Ness Monster has been resurrected! A few villagers claimed to have sighted the shadow of the Loch Ness Monster by the northwest of the lake during midnight! Quickly, can someone go and find out what is really going on? After obtaining the truth, please report the news to Sandrake the Chief of the village.

Completion: The secret of Loch Ness Monster of the Guura Lake 0/1

After reading the description of the quest, Zhang Yang confirmed that the Loch Ness Monster would only reveal itself by nightfall. It was still

broad daylight, now. Therefore, Zhang Yang had no need to rush. So, he went to have a stroll around the village, taking out some monsters nearby the village and earning some Experience Points. He would only get back to the Northwest of the lake by nightfall.

"Shakaka!" The moment he landed on the ground nearby the lake, a fishmen rushed out at him from the water.

[Guura Lake Fish-Man] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 170

HP: 5,100,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,774 – 60,774

Skills:

[Fishbone Piercing Shot]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target and the other targets behind the first target. Will cause the targets to bleed continuously. When the targets are bleeding, they will receive an additional 20% damage. Lasts for 10 seconds. Effects cannot stack.

[Flee]: When a Guura Lake Fish-Man's HP bar reaches 20% left, it will begin seeking help from its friends.

Chapter 757: Loch Ness Monster

With the intention of showing the Fish-Man how powerful his {Block} has become after the enhancement, Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield to engage in battle with the monster.

{Block}!

‘-107,298!’ Damage Deflection.

‘-107,298!’ {Shield Bash}!

Because of the 200% additional boost on the Strength attribute, the Damage Deflection of the {Block} was now the same as the damage dealt from Zhang Yang’s {Shield Bash}!

The Fish-Man instantly let out a series of miserable cries. Then it raised up its metallic trident and threw it straight at Zhang Yang. The trident smacked right in the middle of Zhang Yang’s chest and left a large hole right in the middle of his armor and chest. ‘-18,123!’ A damage value popped right on top of Zhang Yang’s head and Zhang Yang was instantly afflicted by a negative effect that caused him to receive an additional 20% damage if he ever gets hit by the monster again.

Piercing type attacks were really intimidating!

Right after the trident was removed from Zhang Yang’s chest, blood began to ooze out right from the wound. It seemed that Zhang Yang would have to look like a bloody walking fountain until the negative effect on him wears off.

Although the damage Zhang Yang received was not high, he visually looked as if he just got hit by a train. The scene was gory. Zhang Yang felt agitated about it. He commanded Felice and Phoenix pet and the three of them began to launch their attacks on the monster. The monster was greeted with intense series of attacks and its HP bar was reducing steeply.

Without activating his Inheritance Transformation, Zhang Yang could still deal over 450,000 damage per second with the support of the Felice and the Phoenix pet. It would only take approximately 10 seconds for the

three of them to take out a total of 5,000,000 HP. However, right before the Fish-Man could be killed, it turned around and began to flee. The Fish-Man was crying out loud in misery, while running away from Zhang Yang. In just a blink of an eye, the monster had ran far from Zhang Yang!

However, it returned shortly after fleeing. Well, it came back with two more Fish-Men, this time!

When Felice had not acquired her Tree of Life form, Zhang Yang would have to be extra cautious when battling Elite Tier monsters. He would need to use his Skills that could stun the monsters that are trying to flee and kill them immediately. If he does not do that, he would not be able to disengage from his battle mode to take his Snacks.

Well, now that Felice had acquired her Tree of Life form, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear anymore. Felice went into her Tree of Life form and healed herself and Zhang Yang with her {Bloom of Life}. After she was done with that, she straightaway transformed into her Spectre Tiger form and attacked the monsters with her sharp and deadly claws. Well, she was dealing quite a number of damage to the monsters all by herself. If the number of monsters increases, Felice would just stop attacking and start healing instead. With her current full set of Holy Tier equipment and her 12 star rating, as long as no {Life Aura} is involved, Felice would have a more powerful Healing Capability than Han Ying Xue already!

No matter how many monsters appear, they would have to die!

Zhang Yang had no way of preventing the monsters from fleeing away. Furthermore, he would need to kite the monsters along with him if he ever wants to pursue a fleeing monster. Well, since the fleeing monsters would just drag more and more monsters back to Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang did not need to lure monsters over to him. All he needed to do was to keep on slaughtering the monsters that got in his face.

Monsters that would fleeing could really cause a headache of trouble to the players. Players would need to be extra cautious with their controls and the use of their Status Restriction Skills. If they fail to do so, they would end up being swarmed up by the monsters and die!

With Felice aiding him along his side, Zhang Yang would have the capability of enduring so many monsters' attacks at the same time. Furthermore, his own Defence was quite terrifyingly high, to begin with. So he had no fear even if he gets swarmed up by the monsters, all he had to do was to give it his all at slaughtering the monsters that he sees.

10 minutes later, the final Fish-Man fled away to summon its other comrades in the surroundings. However, the other Fish-Men had already been wiped out, so the Fish-Man came back to Zhang Yang all by its lonesome. Zhang Yang slaughtered the monster without putting in much effort.

After clearing out the Fish-Men in the entire area, Zhang Yang continued to explore the surroundings. He wandered around the area for quite a while when something happened. Just when the moonlight beamed down, the surface of the lake was disturbed by some force from beneath the surface of the lake. The ripples of the water spread across the surface of the water that had been still a moment ago. A gigantic shadow emerged on the surface of the water! The moonlight was a little dim at the moment. Zhang Yang could not see the appearance of the monster clearly. The scene was a bit terrifying. Zhang Yang could actually feel an intense chill right up his spine!

Could this be the Loch Ness Monster that the villagers were talking about?

Zhang Yang quickly hopped on the Phoenix pet and flew nearer to the monster with a pat on the Phoenix. He telepathically commanded the Phoenix pet to spit a breath of fire at the dark shadow.

Boom!

The shadow immediately got caught on fire. It did not take long before the entire shadow was burned down to the ground. The next thing that followed was an 'Aiyak!' across Zhang Yang's ears. The next thing after that 'Aiyak!' was the sound of something heavy falling straight into the water. Splash! It was a shadow of a human being that fell into the lake! Phoenix pet flew up close and salvage the human figure with its claws, like

picking up a fish from the water before they went for the shore.

While they were by the shore, Phoenix pet loosened up its claws and dropped the human onto the sandy beach, not too softly. The human figure was crying in pain, due to the not so gentle landing.

[Alex, Blacksmith's Apprentice] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 165

HP: 104,680

Note: Although Alex is still an Apprentice, his talent in inventing is so astonishing that many experienced Blacksmiths are constantly amazed by his work. Some even felt ashamed of themselves!

This was a young man that seemed to be at the age of either 17 or 18. He was neither tall, nor short. He had black hair and a pair of quick eyes.

"So it was you who did all that! Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed. Then he continued to talk, "Let's go! Follow me back to the village and explain it to the chief!"

"Please don't do that!" Alex immediately begged Zhang Yang not to take him in, "I have my reasons for doing such a thing. Please don't let anyone else know about this! Please!"

'Ding! Alex has given you a quest. You can:

1. Decline and bring him back to the chief in the village by force.
2. Give up the initial quest and listen to Alex's explanation of why he has been doing this.'

Zhang Yang decisively gave up the initial quest. That quest would only reward him with a measly amount of Experience Points. He could just earn that amount of Experience Points back by slaying a few Elite Tier monsters. Although he might not get anything valuable from completing the new quest, at least he could still try out his luck.

"Alright then. Tell me the reason why you're doing this! If your reason is valid, then I shall accept your request!"

"Well, this is what it really is about!" Alex began to explain his reason for doing so. "I'm a person that loves to do some weird stuff! Not long before this, I made a submarine and went underneath the bottom of the lake. There, I entered the deepest part of the Guura Lake to investigate. By the end of it --- I encountered a terrifying, gigantic Loch Ness Monster!"

The young man revealed a shocked expression and stammered, "That, that, that monst... monster had eight chains locked on it. But when I saw, saw it, 5 of the chains were broken! When, when I went to look at it for the, the second time, the monster broke its 6th chain already!"

"Long ago, there was a legend in our village. A ferocious beast attacked the villages near our village. By the end of it, tens of warriors had joined hands in order to take down the beast. Well, they did manage to take down the beast in the end! However, that beast's skin is as tough as gold. There was no way that they could have slain the beast! So, the warriors chained the beast and sunk it down to the bottom of the Guura Lake!"

"I have always believed that it was just a legend. However, when I saw the beast with my own eyes, I realized that everything about the legend is true! Furthermore, the giant beast is about to break itself free from the chains! I knew that I needed to inform the villagers about the news. However, everyone thought I was pranking them! They even said that I was exaggerating things just to scare them!"

This young man was really a genius! He even made his own submarine! Zhang Yang quickly said, "Then why don't you just take the others to the beast you told me about with your submarine? Just show them where the trapped beast is, and they'll surely believe you after they see it with their own eyes, don't you think?"

"The submarine that I built is meant for only one person... furthermore, others will not know how to operate it! Well, they will never find the place as well! I'm the only one who knows where the beast is!" the young man mumbled.

If that beast is really half as powerful as this young man described it to be, that might be a Holy Tier boss!

Zhang Yang widened his eyes immediately and said, "Bring me to the beast!"

Before he could even finish his own words, he had already pulled Alex onto the back of Phoenix pet.

"No! It's not possible! That place can only be located with my submarine! I've put a mark on the radar of my submarine! If we're going by air, I cannot recognize where exactly the beast is!" Alex immediately shook his head.

"Then, go ahead with your submarine, and I'll follow! That should do the trick!" Zhang Yang took one look at the vast Guura lake and gave up on the notion to search for the monster all by himself.

"Oh!" Alex nodded. Then, he began to lead Zhang Yang to a place where rocks and corals were piling up high. Among the pile of rocks, there was bizarre-looking boat located in between them. Alex squeezed himself right into the bizarre-looking boat and closed the hatch over the boat. Then, bubbles began to foam up the water around the boat. The next thing happening was the boat beginning to submerge into the water of the lake.

Zhang Yang summoned his Mythical Turtle and hopped right onto its back. Then he also went underwater to follow Alex's bizarre-looking submarine.

Alex's 'Submarine' was actually not bad at all. There was a glass window right on top of the hatch, over the front! However, Zhang Yang could not help himself from look down on the mechanism of this 'toy' --- Alex needed to paddle in order for the entire submarine to work!

Alex was using all his force to step on the paddles, pushing the paddles to move the propellers on the back of the submarine to spin. By doing so, the submarine was able to get some propulsion. It did not take much to make the young man sweat like a pig!

Well, how long would he need to paddle then?!

Zhang Yang used his weapon to hook the submarine along with them. Then he let Mythical Turtle steer the direction of the submarine.

Meanwhile, Alex only had to point Zhang Yang towards the correct direction with his finger through the glass window.

Even though they were moving much faster after that, they took more than an hour to reach some sort of a region underneath the bottom of the lake. Zhang Yang could see that there were eight gigantic pillars circling around an empty space down there. Each of the pillars was chained to a thick chain. However, 6 of them were broken. Only two remained intact, locked on a gigantic beast which was located right in the middle of the eight pillars!

It was a beast that looked like a turtle. However, there were seven solid pillars right on top of the surface of its back. Its neck was long with a monkey head on the end of it. The two ears looked like the ears of a pig! The ears were so large that they could cover the entire head of the beast like a plastic bag!

The beast had four legs. Its claws looked like the claws of a tiger. Furthermore, the tail of the beast looked like the tail of a scorpion. It was really tricky to tell what kind of beast was this!

[Aqua Monkey Moonkin] (Ethereal, Beast)

Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 11,030

Melee Attack: 76,201 – 116,201

Skills:

[Razor Tear]: Gnaws into the target and causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Venom Tail Paralysis]: Uses its venomous tail to pierce into the skin of its target and inject the venom into its target. Causes 20,000 Nature Damage to the target once in every 3 seconds.

Note: The Aqua Monkey Moonkin is an ancient creature that escaped from the Island in the Center of the Earth. You might stand a chance to

acquire some clue about the whereabouts of the legendary Island in the Center of the Earth. The island is rumoured to have gold on every corner of it.

Ah well... so it was just an Ethereal Tier boss.

Zhang Yang sighed in grief. Well, Holy Tier bosses were the most common boss at the current stage of the game. The game even spawned a Celestial boss once to make the game more intense. So, what good could it bring, for Zhang Yang to encounter an Ethereal Tier boss.

He summoned Felice out, to get ready for battle. Unfortunately, Phoenix pet could not be summoned because they were in an underwater environment. Well, with Zhang Yang and Felice working as a team... it would be more than enough to take down the boss.

--- The normal attacks of the boss could deal an average damage of approximately 50,000 damage to Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang's enhanced {Block} could be activated once every 5 seconds to immunize himself from any sort of damage. Then, he should only be receiving about 15,000 damage from the boss. On the other hand, the Poison Effect could be omitted because it would not be able to be of much of an effect to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang's Defence was just too damn high, judging from a certain perspective. Therefore, the boss could only deal effective damage to Zhang Yang with its {Razor Tear}. The rate of the boss activating its {Razor Tear} would be the only unknown factor to Zhang Yang.

Under the circumstance that the boss would activate its {Razor Tear} once every 10 seconds, the boss would be able to deal additional 9,000 DPS to Zhang Yang. Therefore, the boss could deal a total of 25,000 DPS to Zhang Yang.

On the other hand, Felice could heal over 10,000 HP per second. That should be able to cripple the boss's damage output on Zhang Yang. Because of that, Zhang Yang could simply f*ck the boss up, even if he closes his eyes and goes straight into battle!

Chapter 758: Island in the Center of the Earth

There was no need to even summon Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang to aid in the battle at all. With Felice going all out on the boss, Zhang Yang could oppress the Ethereal Tier boss without even having to activate his God of War Inheritance Transformation!

Let's just f*ck that thing up without wasting another breath!

"Chi chi chi!" after being stabbed by Zhang Yang's {Spear of Obliteration} coming from afar, the Aqua Monkey let out a deafening screech. Then, it raised its claws and swung them at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield up high and began to hack and slash at the boss as intensely as he could.

With Felice's current Healing Capability, Zhang Yang could stay at the frontlines, while attacking the boss for quite a while. Whenever Zhang Yang's HP bar reached a dangerous level, Felice could just transform into her Tree of Life form and heal Zhang Yang back up. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's total amount of HP had reached up to 1,300,000 HP. Therefore, Felice would also have many opportunities to focus her attacks on the boss.

However, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow Clone} to shorten the time required to slay the boss. Furthermore, he also took down a bottle of [Amateur Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. Therefore, Zhang Yang's damage output for the next two minutes was terrifying!

He could deal so much damage with his Skills especially his {Charge Up Strike} and his {God of War Devastation}! Those Skills would be really explosive when they were being used by Zhang Yang in a correct sequence! He could deal up to 1,600,000 damage with the Skills! Meanwhile, his 10 Shadow Clones could provide an additional 100% damage! That had really boosted Zhang Yang's high damage Skills up to

the max! His damage output was just terrifying!

In just merely 10 minutes, the boss sunk lifelessly and died. The impact shoved the water into the surroundings, sending a watery shockwave out from the spot where the boss died. A few dazzling pieces of loot dropped right beside the corpse of the boss.

Alex was staring at Zhang Yang from the sidelines with his jaw dropped. That was supposed to be a legendary boss that could not be killed after many others had attempted. Those warriors in the past had all failed to kill it, after all. That was why they imprisoned the boss here until today! Just when the boss almost escaped to continue its onslaught on the villages around, it got killed by a stranger that came from nowhere?!

Could it be, that those warriors in the past were weak?

Although that Aqua Monkey was not a Holy Tier boss and did not drop any Holy Tier equipment, everyone on Zhang Yang's gang did not have many pieces of Holy Tier equipment at the moment. Therefore, a Level 170 Ethereal Tier equipment could still be very useful for any one of them.

Zhang Yang picked up the loots that the boss dropped and shoved them into his inventory.

There were two Ethereal Tier equipment, four Mythical Tier equipment and another piece of Map!

The Mythical Tier equipment was naturally ignored by Zhang Yang. However, the Ethereal Tier equipment was still worthwhile for Zhang Yang to have a look at them. If the equipment are Heavy Armor, then Zhang Yang could still switch them up with the non-Holy Tier equipment on him at the moment. Unfortunately, both of the Ethereal Tier equipment were not. One of them was a Leather Armor while the other was a Cloth Armor. So, he was forced to keep the equipment for Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang.

After that, he turned his attention towards the Map.

[Treasure Map: Island in the Center of the Earth]

Description: Leads you to the Island in the Center of the Earth.

Note: According to legend, the Island in the Center of the Earth was once a land inhabited by the Dwarfs. The island is rumored to be filled with the wealth of the Dwarfs for over a few generations. However, the island sunk all of a sudden. The whereabouts of the island have remained a legend filled with secrets ever since. As long as you find the mysterious island, you shall be able to find the endless wealth that the Dwarfs left behind! So, what are you waiting for!

This Map could be minimized and maximized at will. When it is enlarged to a certain point, there a crescent-shaped island would appear on the map. The island was separated into three parts. Each part was marked with a skull icon. The three skull icons had different names. They were labeled as 'Stone Giant Rokuta', 'Frosty Chimera Marow', and 'Servant Guardian Tatashu'.

Zhang Yang could only presume that these were the names of the bosses on each of the marked island. However, the map did not show any indication about the Tier and the level of the bosses. Therefore, Zhang Yang had no way of knowing if the bosses were either Mythical Tier or Ethereal Tier, which were just lousy bosses, or the powerful Holy Tier bosses.

Judging by the Tier of the Aqua Monkey boss, these three bosses should at least be Ethereal Tier bosses! Furthermore, it would make no sense if every one of them were just Ethereal Tier. Because bosses that were guarding their respective regions would definitely be more powerful than that. They should be Holy Tier bosses, then!

Zhang Yang quickly contacted Han Ying Xue and the rest of his gang. He wanted them to get ready, so that the party could explore the Island in the Center of the Earth by tomorrow. Well, they might be able to farm something precious for the keeping.

It was about time to get off work. However, Zhang Yang suddenly received news from one of his private investigators. Liu Wei had disappeared!

Ever since Liu Wei was bailed out from the jail by Chong Xiu Hua, he

had kept himself well-hidden. Even though people could still see him in the game, his real location remained unknown to everyone. Well, he also knew that Zhang Yang was never going to let him walk away intact, especially since now it was a good time for Zhang Yang to take him out. Liu Wei had no power nor money, currently. He could get toyed to death by his enemies anytime, anywhere! So he had to stay low and stay extra cautious!

Zhang Yang did have the notion of crippling him once and for all occur to him on more than one occasion. After all, Zhang Yang would never be at peace, knowing that his 'nemesis' is still at large. Therefore, he sent his private investigators to seek out Liu Wei's hideout. Currently, Liu Wei has done a very good job at covering his tracks. So, they could not get any information about his whereabouts at all.

Yesterday night, that investigator that Zhang Yang hired had finally found Liu Wei's hideout. However, he noticed that the place was empty on the next day. Judging from the mess in the surroundings of the place, Liu Wei seemed to have been taken away by force. There were signs and marks of a struggle all around the place.

Well, the Chinese had a saying. The greatest hermit will retreat into the noisiest fair. This Liu Wei had been staying secretly in a small bungalow by the urban area of Zhou Shu city.

According to the private investigator, Liu Wei was abducted in the middle of the night! However, who would do such a thing? Liu Wei did countless crimes back then. So it would be logical if he had countless enemies that wanted him dead. Furthermore, he used to have his Liu Family supporting his back, so no one had the balls to touch him at that time. Well, things were different for him now... so...

The first suspect that came into Zhang Yang's mind was One Sword Stroke.

Well, his wife was gang-raped by Liu Wei's hired muscles. Meanwhile, he was also 'castrated' by the hands of Liu Wei himself. That hatred was enough for him to murder Liu Wei over a thousand times. So, how would

One Sword Stroke be able to sit his ss off, while knowing Liu Wei had finally become vulnerable? The moment Liu Wei is dipped into sht, he would be the first to take note of that. He might even pay off the guards in jail to give Liu Wei a good rub in his anus!

However, he would not have thought that Liu Wei would be bailed out from jail by Chong Xiu Hua. That would definitely drive One Sword Stroke mad! Therefore, Zhang Yang would not feel it odd at all if One Sword Stroke is the one who abducted Liu Wei.

Well, nothing said could ease him under such circumstances now. So, Zhang Yang could only sit tight and wait for any updates on the news from his private investigator.

After a night's rest, Zhang Yang assembled his party members and head over to the Island in the Center of the Earth. Upon searching through the Rock Flatland for a while, they had finally arrived before a chilly pool. According to the Map that Zhang Yang acquired a while ago, that is the entrance to the Island in the Center of the Earth!

The ten of the looked at each other for a bit, then they dived into the pool.

After diving down for approximately 30 meters below the water surface, a large whirlpool suddenly appeared in the pool. Everyone was helpless against the suction as they were pulled into the whirlpool, one after another. In just a blink of an eye, they were forced down, hundreds of meters down beneath the surface of the water!

The strong current of force had even taken Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue off the backs of their pet mounts! All 10 of them were stirred around like wet cement in a mixer. They were all so sick that their dinners last night were about to reemerge!

Just as they were about to suffocate, they were pulled right into a cavern. However, their bodies were beginning to float towards the surface of the water. After everything before their eyes became bright, they emerged at the surface of the water like cannonballs!

Splash! Splash! Splash!

The ten of them were shot out of the bottom of the lake into the air above it, 10 meters from the surface. Then they fell back down, one after another.

At the same instant, they found themselves on an island. The sky was crimson red in colour. The smoke and dust in the surrounding were of the same colour as the sky. Meanwhile, they were falling into the lake that was not really big. However, the water of the lake was extremely hot. It was so hot that Zhang Yang and the gang felt as if they were about to be cooked!

Everyone quickly swam towards the shore. After getting out of the water, they felt much more relieved than they were in the now boiling water. However, the temperature and humidity of the surroundings was extremely high. They were sweating like pigs and it made them terribly uncomfortable.

Zhang Yang brought up the Map to check the direction that they needed to go. Then, he led the gang towards the location of the first boss, the Stone Giant Rokuta.

Even though this was an island, but technically speaking, this place looked more like a gigantic cavern. There was a live volcano spitting out flaming red lava. The red dust that filmed the entire sky and the surroundings was actually the volcanic ash.

Therefore, the place forbade players from flying. They could only glide over a short distance below a certain level. Of course, players with Class S and Class A Inheritance could still fly around freely after they activate their Inheritance Transformations. Well, they could still fly in any kind of environment.

"Rawgh!" A beast's intimidating roar echoed across the surroundings. Suddenly, a crimson red monster leapt over a pile of rocks and landed in front of Zhang Yang and the gang. The monster had the appearance of a wolf. Countless whiskers covered the beast's entire neck. Each of the whiskers was as long as 3 to 4 meters! They were like tentacles, wriggling about like they were alive!

[Tendrill Crimson Wolf] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 175

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defence: 7,000

Melee Attack: 40,822 – 60,822

Skills:

[Soul Leash]: Uses its tentacles on the targets. Tentacles will drill themselves into the body of the target. If the HP bar of the target is not at its full state within the next 3 seconds, the target will be controlled by the Tendril Crimson Wolf.

[Burning Aura]: Causes 30,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the area of 40-meter radius once in every 3 seconds.

[Bite]: Uses its sharp teeth to bite the target, causing 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

The moment after the wolf revealed itself, it charged at Daffodil Daydream who happened to be closest to it. However, Daffodil reacted at a god-like speed. Immediately, she activated her {Apparate} and appeared beside Zhang Yang. At the same time, she threw a {Fire Blast} right at the Tendril Crimson Wolf. By doing so, she managed to lure the monster over to Zhang Yang.

"What the f*ck!? How can this be an Elite Tier monster!? Look at its HP bar!" Fatty Han was in shock.

"The high the HP amount the better! Remember, we can get more Experience Points after killing it!" Endless Starlight widened his eyes and swung his hammer straight at the monster while charging at it.

The gang began to round up on the monster. Even though the attack of the monster was not really a threat to them, the monster's {Soul Leash} was just purely disgusting! Using its {Soul Leash} in conjunction with its {Burning Aura}, the gang needed Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to constantly heal them in order to keep their HP bars full. Otherwise, people

would begin to die eventually.

However, even if a player has a long *ss HP bar, he or she would still get killed, if he or she does not get support from the Healers in a battle. It took the gang less than 2 minutes before they brought the Tendril Crimson Wolf down to the ground. The monsters collapsed to the ground and died, of course. It was obvious that the Attack power of the entire party was oppressive.

Although this wolf did not drop any equipment upon its death, it still dropped an item.

[Soul Whisker] (Consumable)

Use: Attempts to gain control of your target. If the target cannot cancel or disperse this effect within 3 seconds, the target will be controlled for over 10 minutes. Meanwhile, there is no way that the target can break free from the control. If the target is Level 180 or higher, the target will have quite a high rate of resisting the control effect.

Uses remaining: 3/3

Required Level: 150

Well, this was a surprise. This item is actually quite handy, especially during a Team Battle. It could be used on someone very crucial on the enemy. Well, since everyone would be so busy dealing damage to their enemies, they might just fall for it. If this item is successfully used on someone, that someone would only stand there and let his or her enemies torture him or her!

"Haha! It's so fun! Hell yeah!" Wei Yan Er immediately felt excited. Then, she quickly shoved the [Soul Whisker] into her inventory. Then she began to gaze at Zhang Yang from head to toe.

"Little brat... if you ever dare to use that on me, I'll chase you out of my house!"

Chapter 759: Frosty Chimera Cub

Wei Yan Er's 'evil plot' was seen through by Zhang Yang. So, she could only growl at Zhang Yang and show her teeth at Zhang Yang, as if she wanted to bite him.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, you don't have to be so fierce. Are you looking for a fight? Do you believe that I can defeat you without using my weapon? I can beat you with my shield!"

"I don't believe it!" Wei Yan Er immediately shook her head like she was hitting her head on a drum. Without wasting any more breath, she brought her hammer up in an instant.

Zhang Yang smiled and raised his shield up to block the little brat's attack. Then he said, "Starlight, you lead the party and carry on!"

"Roger!"

The other eight party members went ahead of them. They gave Zhang Yang and the Wei Yan Er their personal space to settle their 'score'.

"Oh yeah! You can't use your Phoenix pet! You also can't let Felice help you!" Wei Yan Er was not an idiot after all. She immediately shouted, "I won't take advantage of you either, don't worry! I'm not going to use my mount and my battle companion as well!"

This little brat was quite smart actually. It seems fair when both sides are not using their mounts and their battle companions. However, her Crimson Red Crow and her battle companion were totally out of their league if they were to battle with Phoenix and Felice head-on. If both of them do not use their mounts and battle companions, Zhang Yang would be the one who was having a disadvantage in the battle.

Zhang Yang did not take it seriously. So he said, "Alright!"

Boom!

The hammer landed solidly on the surface of Zhang Yang's shield. Sparks were pouring across the ground after the surfaces of the hammer and the shield clashed into each other. Instantly, the little brat received a

damage of '-95,798!'. After that, Zhang Yang conveniently struck his shield back at Wei Yan Er and activated his {Shield Bash}. Another damage of '-95,798!' popped right on top of the little brat once again.

Zhang Yang's {Block} could be activated once every 5 seconds now. Meanwhile, each of his {Block} could trigger a Damage Deflection effect and present a {Shield Bash} as a free gift to his opponent who hits him. With Zhang Yang's current terrifying Strength attribute and Additional Damage, his basic attack had exceeded 100,000 damage! However, because the little brat also had a high Defence and Damage Absorption, Zhang Yang could only deal 95,000 effective damage to Wei Yan Er.

However, if that kind of damage is dealt on the little brat once in every 5 seconds, Zhang Yang's DPS would reach up to 38,000 damage! Even though that little brat's initial HP had reached over 520,000 HP, she could only take as much as 14 rounds of Damage Reflect and 14 {Shield Bashes} before she would be smashed to her death!

However, the fact that Zhang Yang said he would not use his weapon did not affect his Defence at all. So Zhang Yang would definitely not have any problem tanking against the little brat's attack for 70 seconds!

Therefore, Tanker would always be the worst enemy of the Physical-type players!

If Zhang Yang takes off his Shield before engaging into a battle with the little brat, then that little brat should still have little chance to win against Zhang Yang.

After the battle went on for half a minute, Wei Yan Er's HP bar had been reduced by 50%. The little brat suddenly lit a light bulb above her head. Even though she raised her hammer up high, she did not smash the hammer down at Zhang Yang.

"Hehe, noob tank. I'm not going to hit you. So let's see how you deflect damage back at me!" Wei Yan Er was filled with joy all of a sudden. "Your {Shield Bash} can only be activated if your {Block} is successful. So you're running out of options, right? Wahaha! I'm so brilliant!"

"You won't win either!"

"Humph! You said it yourself! 'Do you believe I can defeat you without using my weapon? I can beat you with my shield!'. So you said you wanted to defeat me! Not get into a tie with me! Noob tank! Come and hit me now! Haha!" Wei Yan Er laughed evilly.

This little brat!

Zhang Yang flicked a finger against the little brat's forehead and said, "Come on! Let's move!"

The two of them caught up with the rest of the gang. Wei Yan Er claimed that she managed to beat Zhang Yang's *ss up. She was grinning in pride when she was telling the others.

The gang did not encounter many monsters as they proceeded forth. However, each of the monsters were Elite Tier monsters that had over 1,000,000,000 HP. So the party had to put in quite some effort before they could slay one. Meanwhile, the monsters were basically chimeras. Either they had lion heads and bodies of wild boars, or they would just be a leopard with a snake tail. They looked so bizarre.

The size of the Island in the Center of the Earth did not look that big. However, the place was not as small as it looked, after walking across the island. Zhang Yang and his party spent 3 days on foot before they finally arrived at the resting ground of the first Stone Giant boss.

It was a 50-meter tall Stone Giant. Its entire body was covered in whips and vines that were red. It was lying on the ground having a good sleep. The breaths coming out from the nose was so strong that the sand and dust on the ground were stirred up, forming gentle vortexes as they spread out.

[Stone Giant Rokuta] (Ethereal, Elemental)

Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 20,000

Melee Attack: 75,903 – 115,903

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Tramples the ground and causes 90,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 40-meter radius.

[Thump]: Strikes the target and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10-meter radius from the boss.

[Blow Away]: Spits out a strong current of breath and blows the targets into the air.

Note: Rokuta has inherited the tradition of the Stone Giant's Glory. It won't wake up from its sleep if it doesn't get a 25-hour sleep.

"Boss! Allow me to do this!" Endless Starlight shouted in excitement. Then he charged towards the boss as the lead.

Well, this boss was merely an Ethereal Tier boss. Zhang Yang could have single-handedly taken care of the boss. Well, it would not actually matter who tank against the boss. So, Zhang Yang had no reason to fight over who should be the Tanker with Endless Starlight.

However, the DPS players were very excited about it. They were dealing damage to the boss like they were on steroids! Actually, every DPS players would love to OT once in a while. Only then they would actually prove their power as DPS players!

However, Zhang Yang was a violent DPS player himself. Furthermore, he could acquire additional Aggro as well. So, no one would be able to cause OT! Well, things would be different for Endless Starlight. Seriously speaking, he should be the real definition of a 'Tank'!

Therefore, everyone was attempting to find their confidence to causing OT. They were hitting the boss as hard as they could.

"What the f*ck! You guys are mean! Ease up... ahhhh... it's about to OT! Wu wu wu! NO! You're all really mean!" Endless Starlight began to complain. Everyone heard it and laughed out loud.

Actually, the boss was still quite ferocious in a sense. If the boss really switches its focus to players who were not a Tanker, the boss could deal an

average of 96,000 damage to the players with one single attack. It would only take about 5 to 6 blows in order for the boss to take out a non-Tanker player. Furthermore, the boss's {Blow Away} could blow players up high into the sky and let the players enjoy the excitement of 'free fall'!

Even though the Skill itself could not deal any damage to the players, however, falling down to the ground from a very high place would definitely shatter a player's body to pieces if the player did not have a Flying Mount to glide and slow the fall.

Furthermore, the {Trample of War} is an AoE Skill. The boss could deal quite a number of damage to Zhang Yang and his party each time it activated its {Trample of War}. The Skill could pose quite a threat to the party.

However, the HP bar of the boss was a little too low to have survived the attacks of Zhang Yang and his party. The gang only took 3 minutes to crush the Stone Giant and forced the Stone Giant to collapse onto the ground and shatter into small pieces of rubbles across the ground. Upon its death, the boss dropped a few pieces of loot.

Although they were just some Ethereal Tier equipment, they were still Level 170 equipment. After all, Holy Tier equipment which were known to be the highest Tier in the current stage of the game. Meanwhile, how many players would have the luxury to have Holy Tier equipment on them, then? Zhang Yang only had 6 pieces of Holy Tier equipment with him. He would need a lot more pieces of Holy Tier equipment before he could acquire a full set of it.

Everyone quickly focused on distributing the equipment among the loots. After using the [Identifying Scrolls] to identify the equipment, they were able to equip the equipment straight away. It was extremely convenient for them.

After distributing the loots, the gang proceeded forward. They had encountered a lot more rare and bizarre-looking monsters, and earned a substantial amount of Experience Points upon slaying them all! The gang said that even if there was no boss in this area, the Experience Points that

they could earn from slaying all those monsters would make the trip totally worthwhile.

Indeed, everyone in the current stage of the game was having a difficult time grinding. Well, it was not because the monsters were difficult to slay. It was because the players could not find a peaceful grinding spot where there would be no one to snatch monsters in the area from them! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his gang were the only ones grinding at the Island in the Center of the Earth. All monsters in their surroundings were for them alone to slay. Of course, they would be filled with joy and excitement knowing that all the Experience Points would go to them alone.

Furthermore, the scenery on the island was bizarrely unique. The monsters had rare and bizarre appearances. Zhang Yang and the gang felt like they were venturing into another planet. Even when they were repeatedly slaying monsters, they were not bored at all. The trees and the flowers were really unique. Everyone could not get their minds back together while staring at those surroundings. They even switched on their video recording function of the game to record everything they saw. They intended to watch the footages back when they were old in the future.

The second boss was the 'Frosty Chimera Marow' which was located right on top of a high mountain. The path to the top of the mountain was a little rugged. However, there was no way that the gang could take another way around to reach the top. Apparently, this entire island had a 'one-way lane' pathway. The players could not travel in any way other than moving forward along the path.

After another 3 days of proceeding forward, the party had finally arrived before the boss. It was also an Ethereal Tier boss. Therefore, it could not pose much of a threat to Zhang Yang and his gang. However, the small little Frost Chimera that was sighted by the side of the boss had Zhang Yang and his gang widened their eyes a little.

[Frosty Chimera Cub] (Ethereal Tier Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 0

Note: Can be tamed.

An Ethereal Tier mount!

Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had already possessed a Legendary Tier pet. So naturally, they no longer had the desire to obtain any other pet mount, including the Ethereal Tier pet, of course. However, the remaining 7 members of the gang were staring at the little Frost Chimera while their eyes were all glittering with hope. Well, other than Wei Yan Er who had a Mythical Tier Crimson Red Crow, the rest of the gang only had Flying Mounts that were just Violet-Platinum Tier, Yellow-Gold Tier, or even Gray-Silver Tier!

Unfortunately for them, a Mount could be easily spotted. However, a Flying Mount would be extremely hard to spot. Those who could get a Flying Mount to fly in the sky should be very grateful!

Because Wei Yan Er already had a Crimson Red Crow, she wet her eyes and withdrew herself from the competition to see who gets the Ethereal Tier Flying Mount. Well, although a Mythical Tier Flying Mount could really enhance her abilities in the game, the others who only had Gray-Silver Tier and Yellow-Gold Tier Flying Mount were in greater need of upgrading their mounts. Therefore, the little brat could only squat on the ground and draw circles with her finger.

After killing the boss, this Ethereal Tier Flying Mount was obtained by Fantasy Sweetheart. This pretty face girl with a pair of huge boobs was bowing at the others, sending them quivering violently. Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were staring at her boobs as they drooled.

The pet leveled up pretty quickly. The main reason being that the monsters on the island gave more Experience Points after they die. Zhang Yang and his gang slew the monsters around the island for another two days. Then, they finally arrived at a castle that seemed to be built by the Dwarfs, judging from its design. This Frost Chimera had leveled up to Level 130. So, Fantasy Sweetheart could ride on it already.

This castle was the end of the entire Island in the Center of the Earth. The final boss - 'Servant Guardian Tatashu' and the Dwarfs' Treasures were located just in the castle.

Outwardly, the castle didn't seem much. It was only 3 floors tall. It was barely larger than a basketball court. However, everyone knew that the Dwarfs loved to dig deep and stay deep. Beneath all that, it had to be far larger.

The gang entered the castle, one after another. The interior of the castle was dark. Because the interior was an indoor environment, everyone was forcefully pushed down from their 'rides'. Other than Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han, the others had hopped down from their mounts automatically.

Mythical Tier equipment already had extremely glittering Appearance Effect. Therefore, even though the surroundings were dim and dark, the 10 of them and their respective Battle Companions were like 20 super-sized walking candles. They could illuminate half a meter out around them.

Meanwhile, the Appearance Effect of Felice's equipment were the strongest!

--- the little lady currently had a full set of Level 170 Holy Tier equipment on her. So, it made perfect sense that no one among them could best her!

Chapter 760: Servant Guardian

The two Phoenixes were not willing to stay idle either. Normally, they were just two giant birds radiating in a crimson red light. However, they were now two gigantic birds that were blazing hot. The two of them were like two great bonfires illuminating the surroundings of the entire area.

Initially, players who wanted to enter the castle had to purchase some [Torches] before they set foot on the place. However, the two blazing birds were illuminating the surroundings much better than having 100 [Torches] around!

Everyone laughed. With the two blazing phoenixes leading the way, the two giant birds were like two giant searchlights, shedding light into the surroundings. The gang need not worry about falling into a hole out of nowhere.

Although the Dwarfs loved to keep their secrets beneath the surface of the ground, Zhang Yang and his gang took a quick sweep across the 3 floors just to be safe. Well, the 3 floors were not that big. It would not take too much of their time for them to check on the 3 floors.

However, there was no sign of any treasure at all. There was not even a single monster in the vicinity. The only things they could find were dried corpses lying quietly around. Obviously, when the Island in the Center of the Earth sunk, the Dwarves were killed by the sudden deterioration of the environment. They did not even get the chance to react to the change before they died!

After inspecting the 3 floors, Zhang Yang and the gang decided to go further down to the floors beneath to explore.

The moment when they set foot on the first floor beneath the surface of the ground, they realized that the space of the floor was 100 times larger than the space of the floors above the ground! It looked as if there was an entirely secret tower beneath the surface of the ground, while the three floors on the surface of the ground were just decoratives on the tip of the entire tower!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Everyone was walking on top of the surface of the black rocks that pave the ground. Their boots and greaves knocked hard on the surface of the ground. The sounds of heavy footsteps echoed across the entire floor as they proceeded forward. It was a little strange and bizarre to be walking in the vast and yet quiet place. Everyone could feel the hairs on the back of their neck standing up. Boots that were made of clothes and leathers would not have made such a loud sound. Only the metallic greaves would cause such a loud sound while the players wearing them walked.

"Walk lightly! Come on!" Everyone turned their eyes towards Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Endless Starlight. Their voices echoed into the surroundings and made the three of them feel a little nervous.

"Hehe!" Well Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight attempted to walk lighter. However, Wei Yan Er had always been acting like a gremlin. She continued on to stomp heavily onto the ground every time she put a step forward. Everyone was staring at her with annoyed faces.

Well, it is difficult to go against the anger of all. After noticing that everyone was looking at her in annoyance, she just stuck out her tongue and stopped what she was doing.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

"Yan Er!"

"Little brat!"

Everyone turned their heads over to Wei Yan Er and snapped at her in unison.

Wei Yan Er poured out her grievances through her pretty little face. She raised both of her hands up high and said, "It wasn't me!"

"If it's not you, then who is it?"

Everyone continued to press forward. Thud! Thud! Thud! The heavy footsteps were heard again.

"Yan Er ---"

"Little brat, are you feeling itchy again? Do you want us to beat you up?"

"It really isn't me!" Wei Yan Er cried miserably, expressing that she was innocent. Furthermore, there were 3 of them wearing Heavy Armor. So why would everyone looked at her instead of the other two then?

"It's not Yan Er indeed. She's right beside me. The sound did not come from her!" Han Ying Xue tried to redress an injustice on the little brat. The little brat was baffled with gratitude. She rubbed her hands on Han Ying Xue's boobs, claiming that she's the best human in the entire world.

"Did you guys notice? There are 11 of us here, right now!" Daffodil Daydream suddenly spoke out with a shaky voice.

"Haha! How is that possible! You must be dizzy right now!" Endless Starlight laughed out loud, "Let's count and see! 1, 2, 3... 9, 10, 11! What the ---"

Everyone got an intense chill up their spines. However, because the surroundings were too dark, the Appearance Effect of their equipment could only illuminate half a meter into the surroundings. They could not clearly see anything that was further than half a meter from them.

"I'll count one two three. Then everyone, take a step back at the same time!" Zhang Yang said in the party chat.

"One!"

"Two!"

"Three!"

Everyone took a step backward at the same time. They saw a dark shadow standing at its same spot without taking a step back like they did. After about 1 or 2 seconds later, the dark shadow followed and took a step back as well. 'Thud!'. The heavy footstep was heard once again.

Well, the little brat was clean, after all. However, everyone was so terrified that their heads were numb. Could this be a ghost!?

Zhang Yang quickly summoned his Phoenix pet back to his side. The blazing flames of the Phoenix illuminated the entire place around the

gang and the mysterious shadow had finally revealed its true identity.

The skin of that person was white, and the eyes of the person were white as well! When that person realized that Zhang Yang and his gang were staring straight at him, that person had also revealed two rows of white teeth. Because the eyes did not have pupils, everyone felt another intense chill straight up their spines.

"GHOST!" Wei Yan Er screamed in excitement. She immediately pulled her hammer out and smashed it straight into that person.

"Anglo' Basida!" that thing let out a strange voice. Suddenly, its both eyes shot out a beam of crimson red laser and hit the little brat.

‘-56,892!’

Wei Yan Er immediately received a damage value.

After witnessing that solid hit on the little brat, everyone let out a breath and felt relieved immediately. Compared to a ghost, they were not afraid of a monster at all!

[Mechanical Servant] (Elite, Servant)

Level: 180

HP: 2,000,000,000

Defence: 20,000

Melee Attack: 43,649 – 63,649

Skills:

[Death Ray]: Causes 60,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 30 meters.

[Mechanical Bomb]: Throws bombs into the surrounding and detonate them immediately, causing 50,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters.

Note: Mechanical Servants are built by the genius Dwarfs. Many years have come to pass and these Mechanical Servants have many parts broken in them. Even though they no longer perform like how they used to be,

they are still very powerful in their own right.

After launching its first attack, the Mechanical Servant immediately fought back and threw bombs at Zhang Yang and the gang. The explosions of the bomb were flashy, and everyone received quite a lot of damage.

"Stinky metal monster! You've made my friends accuse me of doing something I didn't do! You're not the only one who knows how to throw bombs!" The little brat growled. Then, she also took out the Elemental Bombs from her inventory and threw them at the Mechanical Servant

Hundred Shots could not help to feel heartbroken. Well, each Elemental Bomb cost 10 gold pieces. Furthermore, Elemental Bombs were supposed to be used on multiple targets. It would only be a big waste to use one on a single monster.

"This Mechanical Servant has more HP than the other monsters out there!"

"Yea! Its skin is extra thick as well! Look at that amount of Defence!"

Everyone was hacking and slashing their weapons onto the monster as they complained. Indeed, an amount of 2,000,000,000 HP was actually more than the amount of HP of the two previous Ethereal Tier bosses! If it wasn't because of the Mechanical Servant's attack being rather lackluster, this fellow could be a boss by now! Well, it was exactly what the note said. Because many years had passed and too many parts in the Mechanical Servant are now broken, its attack power was nowhere near its prime. However, its Defence had remained stellar after all these years.

However, it was futile for the monster to have over 20,000 Defence as well. By using {Cripple Defence} and [Armor Piercing Potion], players could ignore over 70% of the monsters' Defence. Therefore, Zhang Yang and the gang only had to deal with the remaining 6,000 Defence of the Mechanical Servant. So, all they needed to do was to hit the monster with their basic attacks, and the monsters would be as good as dead, eventually.

The gang only took a few minutes to take down the Mechanical Servant. Upon its death, the Mechanical Servant dropped some loot onto the

ground.

Wei Yan Er acted swiftly as usual. She picked up everything from the ground and went up to the gang with a small sized ball in her hand, "Look at what I found!"

[Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] (Consumable)

Use: Summons a Mechanical Servant to aid you in getting rid of your enemies! However, because the Core Manipulator is a little ancient, the Mechanical Servant can only be manipulated by you for over 10 minutes. After that, the Mechanical Servant will enter 'Free Mode' and attack any target that tries to get near it. You can only summon one Mechanical Servant at a time.

Require Level: 150

"This is interesting. We can use it to scare people during PvP!"

Wei Yan Er has always been a destructive little brat. So after hearing what Zhang Yang said, she quickly kept the [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] as if she was afraid that the others would snatch it from her.

Not long after, another Mechanical Servant revealed itself from a dark corner of the floor and blended into Zhang Yang's gang. However, it failed to blend in because one Phoenix was tagging along the gang. Under the illumination of the giant blazing bird, the Mechanical Servant had nowhere to hide. So it could only accept the fate of being beaten up by Zhang Yang and gang.

However, not every Mechanical Servant would drop a [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] upon their death. After clearing out the entire floor, the gang managed to salvage 7 of the [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators]! If each of the Mechanical Servant that is summoned with a [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulator] could be as powerful as the Mechanical Servants they encountered, it could be said that Zhang Yang and his gang have earned a fortune!

Well, since there were 7 [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators], everyone felt the urge to 'spend' one to look at its effect. So they activated

one of the 7 [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators]. However, after commanding the Mechanical Servant that they summoned to battle another ancient Mechanical Servant monster, it did not take long before it was smashed into pieces of junks. Everyone was extremely disappointed, to the point that they almost popped a vein.

The Attack power of the Mechanical Servant they summoned was similar to the Attack power of the Mechanical Servant monsters. However, the HP amount that it had was far too little. How could a Mechanical Servant be able to battle against players with merely 200,000 HP, then?

Alright. Since these [Mechanical Servant's Core Manipulators] had been given to them for free, Zhang Yang and his gang should not ask too much of it.

First floor, second floor, third floor... the gang continued to press forward, as they made their way deeper into the tower. Because the underground tower was truly vast and huge, Zhang Yang and the gang took almost half a day to clear one floor. Therefore, they finally arrived at the final floor of the castle on the sixth day.

That floor was totally different compared to the tens of floors above them. There was no sign of any monsters on that floor. Zhang Yang and his gang were not greeted by any monsters after walking around for over ten of minutes. It seemed that one boss would be more than enough for the gang to take on.

After some more walking, the gang had arrived at the end of the floor. They finally saw the final boss 'Servant Guardian Tatashu'.

This servant boss was so much larger than the rest of the Mechanical Servants that Zhang Yang and his gang encountered earlier. Furthermore, the boss was not humanoid. It was a gigantic three-headed Cerberus. The body mass of this boss was as tall as a two-floor building. The three dog heads of the boss were salivating profusely with lubricant and hydraulic fluids.

[Servant Guardian Tatashu] (Holy, Servant)

Level: 185

HP: 19,000,000,000

Defence: 30,000

Melee Attack: 149,398 – 209,398

Skills:

[Death Ray]: Causes 180,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 50 meters.

[Mechanical Bomb]: Throws bombs into the surroundings and detonates them immediately, causing 150,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 50 meters.

[Servant Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. The amount of HP Recovery will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: This is the King of Mechanical Servant. No matter how many years have passed, it was still loyally guarding the Treasure of the Dwarf.

Everyone did not charge into battle recklessly. Because everyone noticed that there were 20 Elite Tier Mechanical Servants standing right beside the boss! If there were only a few Mechanical Servants, Zhang Yang would not mind them at all. However, the combined power of 20 Mechanical Servants would be a little too overwhelming for Zhang Yang and his gang to take it head-on.

"Let's activate our Inheritance Transformations, then!" Zhang Yang said. Everything had gone down to the last step, that is to take down the boss and obtain the Treasure of the Dwarfs!

"Alright!"

Without wasting more time, everyone activated their Inheritance Transformations and entered their most powerful states.

Chapter 761: Book of Revelation - Chapter 5

"Boss! I'll lure the monsters!" Endless Starlight was giving a pass on luring the boss this time.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "If you can lure the aggro of the monsters around, try it and you'll know it!"

"Pui! Boss! How can you underestimate me that much!?" Endless Starlight was not willing to concede defeat.

However, as they were still having this conversation, Zhang Yang was already making his move. He charged towards the boss like a fearless general and attacked the boss with his scythe.

Servant Guardian Tatashu let out a bored cry. It was very hard to tell whether the boss was feeling bored or painful by just listening to its cry. Then, the boss swung its metallic claws straight at Zhang Yang. It shot out a beam of ray through all six of its eyes. The beam landed on Zhang Yang. Then the 20 Elite Tier monsters began to launch their attacks on Zhang Yang as well. They surrounded Zhang Yang the moment they moved near enough to Zhang Yang.

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang stomped both of his legs on the ground and instantly caused a heavy damage of 150,000 damage to each of the monsters within the effective range of his attack.

"What the hell, boss! You're cheating!" Endless Starlight screamed in a weird tone. Because they could not hop onto the back of their mounts in an indoor environment, Endless Starlight could not outrun the flying speed of Zhang Yang after Zhang Yang transformed. When he finally arrived by the side of the boss, Zhang Yang already gained approximately 7 to 8 seconds of headstart.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then he began to raise his shield as he activated his {Block}. Even though some of the 20 Elite Tier monsters

reached Zhang Yang first and some of them were just beginning to react to Zhang Yang, there were at least 3 to 4 of them already afflicted by Zhang Yang's Damage Deflection. The Damage Deflection caused more than 300,000 damage to each of the monsters!

Poor Endless Starlight. Because he was a Tanker as well, he also had the ability to acquire additional aggro by dealing damage to the monsters. Therefore, in order for him to catch up with Zhang Yang's aggro, Endless Starlight would have to deal more damage than Zhang Yang did! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had managed to strike out with such a high damage output within such a short period of time. It would be extremely difficult for him to deal more damage than Zhang Yang could!

Furthermore, Zhang Yang would be activating his {Tribulation} the moment he has accumulated enough EP. By then, it would not be possible for Endless Starlight to pull the aggro of the monsters over to him anymore!

Fortunately, 100 seconds would be required to accumulate 10 EP. Therefore, Endless Starlight quickly took the opportunity to create aggro on the monsters and deal as much damage as he could on the monsters. He was attempting to lure a few monsters over to him at least, because he did not want to be laughed at again.

Upon activating the Inheritance Transformation, Zhang Yang's Defence power had increased up to 97,980 points. He could just simply ignore the attacks from the Elite Tier monsters without any Passive Damage Immunity and Damage Absorption! Meanwhile, he had also activated his {Surrogacy} on Endless Starlight. So the two of them had an equal amount of Defence as of now. With the both of them having a Defence of 97,980 points on each of them, they would be capable of tanking against so many monsters at the same time now!

Therefore, Zhang Yang said, "Focus on the boss! Endless Starlight and I will take care of the monsters! We'll lure them aside!"

Everyone nodded and turned their attention towards the boss. They began to deal as much damage as they could.

{Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}!

Even though Zhang Yang had not accumulated enough EP to activate his God of War Inheritance AoE Skill, Zhang Yang still had the AoE Skills of a Guardian to use on the monsters and the boss. He could still deal quite an amount of damage to the monsters around him every time he struck out. However, Zhang Yang threw all his single attacks on the boss only. By doing so, he managed to firmly fix the aggro of both the monsters and the boss on him.

Since the both of them were competing to snatch the aggro of the monsters and the boss, Endless Starlight did not use his {Provoke}. Instead, he was spamming his attacks and Skills to gain as much Aggro as possible from the monsters.

He was smart though. He was not blinded by his 'greed' to get the Aggro from all monsters. Instead, he was focusing on the few monsters that had weaker Aggro fixed on Zhang Yang. Because {Horizontal Sweep} was not a penetrative attack, it would be impossible for Zhang Yang to attack all 20 monsters at the same time. Because of that, not every monster would be afflicted by the Damage Deflection of Zhang Yang's {Block}. Therefore, the aggro values on the 20 monsters had their differences.

The intelligence of Endless Starlight paid him off well. Other than that, he was also a player with a Class B Inheritance. 30 seconds after the battle, he accumulated 30 EP. So, he immediately activated his {King Kong Claw} and dealt a damage amount 6 times of his Strength attribute to all monsters within the range of 30 meters. Upon 3 successful activations of the Skill, he finally managed to get the aggro of 7 monsters.

"Hahaha!" Endless Starlight was filled with joy and excitement. While he was laughing in joy, he blinked his eyes at Zhang Yang and said, "Boss! I got 7! 7! You see that!?"

Zhang Yang smiled. Currently, he only had 9 EP on him. Well, let's give that fellow a brief moment to show off.

100 seconds, 200 seconds, 300 seconds!

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

Bam! 21 damage values of '4,830,000' popped up right on top of the boss and the 20 Elite Tier monsters. Instantly, Zhang Yang had snatched the Aggro of the monsters that Endless Starlight had lured back! Furthermore, {God of War Devastation} only consumed 20 EP. So Zhang Yang had 10 EP left to activate his {Tribulation}!

Instantly, the attacks of all monsters including the boss were deflected back at them!

Unfortunately for them, these monsters' attacks were only able to deal 1 Damage to Zhang Yang. Then their attacks were deflected back at them as well. What a tragedy.

However, Endless Starlight was suffering a more unfortunate fate than the monsters and the boss. He put so much effort in getting the Aggro of 7 Elite Tier monsters. However, his efforts were all for naught. Zhang Yang managed to snatch the Aggro of the 7 monsters back in an instance. Well, only god knows how long Endless Starlight would take to deal a 4,000,000 damage to catch up to Zhang Yang. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was also dealing damage to the monsters at the same time. Furthermore, Zhang Yang also had the {Tribulation}'s ability to deflect damage back to the monsters that attacked him. The difference between Zhang Yang's Aggro and Endless Starlight's would only get bigger and bigger.

Well, the fiercest AoE attack was not Zhang Yang. In fact, it was Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet!

Even though the Phoenix's {Phoenix Transformation} was used during the process of clearing out the monsters, the Phoenix pet had improved up to Holy Tier at the moment. Each of the Phoenix's attacks could deal a basic damage of 170,000. Furthermore, that was an AoE attack! Whoever who tries to compete with the Phoenix pet in dealing AoE attacks should just sigh hard and forget about winning.

Meanwhile, even though both Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had a Legendary Tier pet of their own, the levels of their pets were restricted by their owner's level cap restrictions. Both of them were still stuck at Level

169 at the moment. They were still struggling hard to hit Level 170. Even though it was just one level away, Level 170 was when Legendary pet could ascend into a Holy Tier pet. After all, the attributes of the Legendary pets would increase by almost twofold when they could finally level up from Level 169 to level 170.

Therefore, the total damage dealt by the two pets was only a little higher than the damage dealt by Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet. That obviously showed how much difference 1 level could bring!

In just a brief moment, the few monsters with weaker Aggro turned their attention towards the Phoenix. Endless Starlight filled his cheeks with his tears as he activated his {Provoke} on the monsters, attempting to pull them back at him --- what the hell! Did he really perform that badly that he could not even match a bird?!

Without the Level Gap Suppression in the way and everyone basically having half a set of Holy Tier equipment, this Holy Tier boss was totally out of its league. It did not take long before the boss was slain and dropped tons of loot on the ground.

Upon the boss's death, a chest appeared right beside the dead body of the boss. Everyone turned around and cleared the remaining monsters which did not have much HP left on them as well. It did not take long before the gang slaughtered the monsters up. After everything was out of the way, the gang went back to look at the loot.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were money-grubbers. So, it was natural that they would be the first to go up to the chest first and pile drive on the chest like two damn octopuses. So, Zhang Yang had to distribute the loot to the rest of his gang.

As a Holy Tier boss, Tatashu dropped some Holy Tier equipment alright. However, there was only two Holy Tier equipment. Because the gang managed to get a lot more when they took care of Angus, they complained for a bit. Well, after noticing that there was another chest by the dead body of the boss, the gang felt joyful once more.

Among the two Holy Tier equipment, one was a Heavy Armor Helmet

and the other was a pair of Cloth Armor Boots. Other than that, the heavy armor was not one of the powerful Healing Armor Set for Holy Knights. So everyone was relieved.

[Ancient Mechanical Helmet] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +16,803

Strength: +4,120

Agility: +1,750

{Level 6 Socket 1}

{Level 6 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 33,600 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When being hit, absorb 1,778 Damage.

Required Level: 180

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

This helmet was taken by Zhang Yang naturally. Now, his Basic Attack ranged from 203,741 – 234,241 damage. Zhang Yang had finally broke through the damage cap of 200,000 damage. He became bullsh*tly powerful now!

On the other hand, the Cloth boots were claimed by Fantasy Sweetheart. Because of that, her attributes had increased by a few notches!

Other than that, the boss also dropped two pieces of Skill Point Crystals. Unfortunately, there was no sign of any Skill Book. However, regular Holy Tier bosses would only drop one Skill Point Crystal. Now that this boss dropped two pieces if it, everyone could accept that extra piece of Skill Point Crystal to be a substitute of another item that the boss should have dropped.

After distributing the loot, it was time to take a look at the chest.

Zhang Yang swung his leg at Han Ying Xue who was sticking herself on the chest. With a powerful swing of his leg, he forcefully kicked her off the chest. Then he said, "Time to open the chest, little brat!"

"Let me hug it for a while more!" Wei Yan Er's eyes were glittering with joy.

"If you're not opening it, I'm going to open it, now!"

"Wu wu wu!" Wei Yan Er pouted. She was expressing her dissatisfaction on the fact that she could no longer hug the chest. She tapped on the chest and said, "Don't blame me. It's noob tank who forced me to do this to you!"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. It was just opening up a chest, not a dead body in real life. So should the little brat behave as if she was parting with someone forever?

However, the little brat turned around and she was all smiling again. After chanting for a moment, the chest was opened.

"Wa, noob tank! You've just hit the jackpot!" Wei Yan Er took out a book out of the chest and threw it over to Zhang Yang.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 5] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: -

Use: Combines this item with [Book of Revelation: Chapter 4] and [Book of Revelation: Chapter 6] together.

Zhang Yang had already possessed the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 1-4]. With this [Book of Revelation: Chapter 5], he would be able to combine the first half of the entire [Book of Revelation] all together now. He also had Sun Xin Yu holding the book's Chapter 8 while he was holding the book's Chapter 10 with him at the moment. Therefore, he only needed to find and obtain the Chapter 6, Chapter 7 and Chapter 9 before he could collect all the Chapters to combine them into the one and only complete [Book of Revelation]!

"Quickly! See if there's still an additional effect after you combine them

together!" Everyone was hustling Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang nodded. Then he combined the Chapter 5 with the Chapter 1-4. Unfortunately, the additional effect only increased the additional damage up to 25%. Other than that, the HP amount remained upon resurrection had been increased up to 50%. The cooldown for the book had been reduced to 6 hours as well. However, there were no signs of any new additional special effects.

However, that 5% increase in the additional damage dealt had really boosted the gang up. Even though Zhang Yang's gang only had 10 members, it would still be as if everyone taking a bottle of potion to increase their damage dealt by 50%. Furthermore, the effect stays forever.

"How can there be no equipment this time!?" Wei Yan Er took a deeper look in the chest and told the others. She was feeling disappointed. However, when her hands left the chest, she was holding a scroll and another metallic doll that was the size of her palm.

"Little brat, we have a Forbidden Scroll right here. So, what are you babbling about then?" Zhang Yang laughed.

[Forbidden Scroll: Thunderstorm] (Consumable)

Use: Activates a Thunderstorm upon all targets within the range of 10 Kilometers and causes immense damage to them. Reduces 10% HP of all targets in each second. If HP is less than 50,000, there would be a minimum deduction of 50,000 HP. If the HP is more than 200,000, then the deduction will reach up to 200,000 HP. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 150

Chapter 762: Gold Tier Servant

Because of that, the Lone Desert Smoke now had over 3 pieces of powerful AoE Forbidden Scrolls. Furthermore, they also had one Forbidden Scroll that could be used to restrict a single target. That being said, the Lone Desert Smoke now had over 4 pieces of Forbidden Scroll in total. Well, who in the world could have 4 Forbidden Scrolls in hand at the same time? That number would scare the daylights out of the other guilds. Some guilds might not even have gotten one Forbidden Scroll after joining the 'God's Miracle,' ever since it started!

Finally, it was time to turn their attention to the metallic doll.

[Servant: Guardian of the Earth] (Gold Tier)

Use: Summons a giant Guardian to fight for you. Lasts for 5 minutes. You can only summon one servant at a time. Summon any of the servants in your possession will cause this doll to enter a state of global cooldown. Cooldown: 15 minutes.

Required Level: 150

Bound upon pickup.

A Gold Tier Servant!

Compared to the Silver Tier Servant which had a cooldown of 30 minutes, players who have a Gold Tier Servant would be able to summon their servant once every 15 minutes. That would cover over 33% of the summon rate. It would be a good improvement for players. Unfortunately, the Attack power of the servant could not be improved, nor leveled up!

However, about 10 days in real time would be required to level up to 1 level. So as long as this Gold Tier Servant reaches Level 170, it could be used practically until it becomes Level 190 or Level 200 before players needed to discard it. So that should be half a year after today.

Because the item was bounded upon pickup, this servant could not be passed around for the other players to have fun with it. So after arguing for a while, this Gold Tier Servant had fallen into the hands of that

destructive little brat Wei Yan Er. In other words, that servant had become the little brat's new toy.

She immediately summoned the Guardian of the Earth out in attempt to show off in front of the gang. However, when this servant was summoned out, it appeared as a mini version of the Servant Guardian Tatashu. The size of that Guardian of the Earth was just about the size of a pug, instead of a Cerberus. The little 'pug' would shake its three heads once in a while. Sometimes, it even tried to lower down its heads on the ground and yawn. The little thing looked absolutely adorable! It was totally different from its 'big brother' that was ferocious and terrifying to look at.

[Guardian of the Earth] (Gold Tier Servant)

Level: 180

HP: 648,760

Defence: 11,570

Melee Attack: 81,508 – 121,508

Skills:

[Triple Bites]: Tears at the target continuously and causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Protect Master]: Protects the master and absorb all damage the master receives over the next 10 seconds upon activating this Skill. The master will be immune from all sorts of Status Restriction Skills.

Bound.

Judging from the aspect of Attack, this Guardian of the Earth would be a little better than the Phoenix pet and the Red Dragon that Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had. However, if they judged it based on the fact that the Legendary Tier pets would automatically improve up to a whole new level when they hit Level 170, then this Gold Tier Servant would be way out of its league.

The Skill {Protect Master} was still considered very practical. It could be deemed as one of those Skills that granted players Invincibility. However,

the HP amount of the Guardian of the Earth was quite limited. If the enemy target could deal more than 650,000 damage, the servant would die. By then, the 'Invincibility effect' would automatically disappear.

Furthermore, the Guardian of the Earth would not be affected by any Aura Skills. It could only keep its Attacks and HP amount at their initial basic amount. Well, that was awkward somehow.

However, Wei Yan Er was still very happy about getting a new Servant. She kept toying with the Servant and treated the Servant like her pet dog.

The boss had been defeated, and the chest had been looted clean. The gang tore their own Teleportation Scrolls and traveled back to the main city. Well, it had been more than 10 days ever since they set foot on the Island in the Center of the Earth. So, it was time for them to take a break from the hectic hack and slash sessions. Furthermore, it was almost the end of the year now. So, they would have many more things to handle.

Other than that, the second World Professional League Championship was just around the corner. This time, the location of the Championship would be at the sacred holiday location, Hawaii. The parties that would be eligible to take part in the Championship would be decided after the final two rounds of the Class S Professional League Championship.

Among the parties in the China Region, Lone Desert Smoke remained as the indisputable top party. Meanwhile, the second to fifth place would not be decided until the very end of the championship. The points of each party were so close. For instance, Crimson Rage and Imperial Sky had the same amount of points. Imperial Sky won the second place by the end of it because they managed to earn a hair-breadth of points from other methods.

Obviously, the results would always remain unknown until the very end of the competition.

Meanwhile, the Eternal Flame was performing outstandingly in the Class A Professional League Championship. They had become the unshakable champion in the Class A championship now. Therefore, they were definitely eligible to join the Class S Professional League

Championship soon. Scholar Musou and Longrich teamed up together and performed astonishingly during the competition.

Zhang Yang put down the game helmet and he was ready to go home. Suddenly, he received an email. It was an email from the private investigator he hired. However, the email did not have any other news or information other than a link to a news website.

Upon clicking the link, the news webpage popped up. Zhang Yang had a quick read on the news and his face immediately turned white. Well, that was strange.

‘... Two days ago, a male corpse was found by the canal of the city side. The police had identified the male victim as Liu Wei, age 27. He was known to be the first successor to the Liu Enterprise. During the ‘Jian Zhou incident’, Liu Wei was the only one who was not dragged down to the bottom of the ocean by the fall of his empire. According to a person related to the case, Liu Wei had vanished about ten days ago. When he was found, he was already a dead corpse. According to the police investigation information, Liu Wei had suffered a lot of torturing before he breathed out his last breath. The tremendous tortures could be deemed as the main reason he died. However, the reason for the murder remains unclear. The police will conduct further investigation on it.”

Liu Wei, the big bastard that could potentially ruin Zhang Yang’s life and legacy are dead?

Zhang Yang sunk into deep thoughts. Although the website posted a photo of the dead body, there was a white cloth covering that face. So there was no way of telling if this news was true, or if it was just a ruse to mislead Zhang Yang. However, the news also stated that Liu Wei had suffered a great deal of ordeal before he died. It would definitely be more than just a robbing or kidnaping for ransom. It was actually pretty obvious that the incident happened because of some hatred towards him.

Well, a lot of people wanted Liu Wei dead, after all. This bastard had done countless forms of crimes that even he lost count himself when his ‘Empire’ was still powerful and influential. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang only

knew one person who would kidnap Liu Wei in the middle of the night and torture him over many nights. The only suspect would be One Sword Stroke.

Phew... that should be a good thing as well. Although Liu Wei was not dealt with by Zhang Yang's own hands, at least Liu Wei remains in history now. Even though it was safe to hire muscles and eyes to keep the ladies safe, it greatly inconvenienced them. From now on, no one has to worry about Liu Wei anymore!

Ring! The phone rang. Zhang Yang rejected the call. However, he heard one of his secretaries say, "Mr. Chong, two police officers want to see you now!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "Alright, let them in!"

In just a while, the door was opened. A beautiful and tightly dressed secretary was escorting two police officers into his office. The policeman was probably in his 30s by the looks of it. His body was sturdy and muscular. He had a dark skin tone though. On the other hand, the other police officer was younger. She looked not bad herself. Her waist was quite small. Zhang Yang swept his eyes across and noticed that the girl also wore a thick make up on her face. She seemed arrogant. Well, she would unintentionally reveal her glamorous face from time to time.

"Mr. Chang, we're from the public security sub-bureau in Xiang Cheng District. My name is Zhao Zong Ping. And this is my partner, Zheng Li Yuan." The dark-face policeman introduced themselves to Zhang Yang. Then they flashed their IDs at Zhang Yang. However, that Zheng Li Yuan had no respect for Zhang Yang at all. Her nostrils were raised so high that Zhang Yang could see the nose sh*t in them. It was as if her status would fall for talking to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang forced and smile and said, "Come, have a seat."

The three of them sat down and Zhao Zong Ping went straight to the point, "Mr.Zhang, we're here to invite you over to the bureau in order to help us in a murder case. Please cooperate with us and our work!"

Murder case? Could it be Liu Wei's murder case then?

Zhang Yang frowned a little and said, "Well, you can just shoot the questions here, I'll answer them all!"

Slam! Zheng Li Yuan slammed the table and said, "We're telling you to go to the bureau! So just obey! You think this is some sort of market? Did you really think you have the right to negotiate?!"

Zhang Yang suddenly revealed a cold face at them and talked to Zhao Zhong Ping, "Excuse me, may I know I'm actually helping the case or if I am the suspect of the murder case, then?"

"Did you really think we don't know that you and Liu Wei had a history?" Zheng Li Yuan looked at Zhang Yang with disdain, "You must have underestimated our capability to investigate! So, just spit it out! Where did you keep Liu Wei imprisoned for the past 10 days and when did you murder him!?"

How did this b*tch even become eligible to become a policeman in the first place?

Zhang Yang glanced at the b*tch's butt and her round boobs. Well, he actually got some idea on how she could have succeeded in becoming a policeman by doing that. So Zhang Yang remained calm and said, "Based on this Officer Zheng's manner, I would have to decline to walk with you. If you do not have a warrant, please leave."

Zheng Li Yuan could not stand the sight of Zhang Yang's eyes and how he looked at her. Indeed, she could be where she is right now was all because of her body and her skills in bed. So what made her so qualified to look down upon other people then?

Well, she was also considered to be a 'luckless person' after all. She was able to pass the test to enter the public security system. Because she appeared pretty and her pants were loose, she managed to become a mistress of the previous Deputy Director of the bureau. She thought she could get promotions all the way to the top at first. However, that Deputy Director of the bureau appeared to have 'financial problems'. So, he ran away with his tails between his legs by the end of it.

However, even though the 'soldiers' would leave their barrack after a

while, the barrack was built by steel and indestructible will. So as long as she stays, she would still stand a chance to become others' mistress and get her promotions. After that, she also seduced quite a number of leaders in the bureau. Well, she really had eyes for those who were 'special'. Or should we say that she was purely unlucky then? Whoever she goes in bed with would face a big problem, not long after. They were either detained, interrogated for committing something illegal, or they were transferred to another post. The worst one was one of them had a heart attack all of a sudden while racing cars!

She even did over 7 to eight times of abortions over the years. Even the doctors tried to talk her out of doing it again! However, she had no choice at all. The leadership of the bureau was changing a little too constantly. She had no choice but to do what she did best or she would not have survived in there.

This time around, however, the man that she was currently in bed with actually managed to become the Director of the Bureau! That was the main reason why she could behave so cockily. She could just show her arrogance to anyone she meets. Well, she thought she was above everybody else, now in such regards. Maybe she was just trying to vent out her dissatisfaction over the years.

Therefore, she only dared to look down upon Zhang Yang even though she knew that Zhang Yang was a CEO of a large public company. Deep in her heart, she believed that the rich would never be able to match the officers by the end of the day. So she could just let her 'man' pull some strings to make Zhang Yang dead if she wanted to.

She really could not stand how Zhang Yang was looking at her. So she instantly said, "What are you so cocky about! We're trying to be nice to you now! You better take the easy way out now, or we'll be forced to hurt you!"

"Officer Zheng!" Zhao Zhong Ping immediately stopped the b*tch from doing something really stupid. Everyone knew that the Silky Soft Holdings had great network connections with government officers. Anyone that Zhang Yang knew should be much more powerful than the 'dirty husband' of that b*tch. It would be wiser to stay away from trouble instead

of stirring one up.

Well, that Deputy Zhou must be blind in this. This woman only had a pretty face. Other than that, she only had two chunks of meats and one hole for men to f*ck. He should just have some fun with this kind of brainless b*tch and throw her aside. Why would he spend so much effort in promoting her, then? This Deputy would definitely in deep sh*t one day for having this trouble-stirring b*tch by his side!

What the f*ck!

However, this b*tch really had quite an 'outstanding' ss. It should be extremely satisfying to stick a dck into the hole! Zhao Zhong Ping immediately waved his eyes across the round butts of the b*tch. He could not help to have some thoughts in his head. Then he immediately kept his eyes away from the butts and turned to Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Mr. Zhang, I would like to apologize on behalf of Officer Zheng. Please do cooperate with us! With policemen and civilians cooperating with each other, we can create a harmonious society!"

As he was talking, he winked at Zheng Li Yuan, who was still blazing with rage.

Zheng Li Yuan was not really that stupid after all. She immediately got the message. Well, as long as they could get Zhang Yang to the police station, they would be able to do whatever they want to him. Well, this b*tch was the current 'Empress' in the entire bureau after all!

Chapter 763: Drop it with Money!

Back in his school days, Zhang Yang was basically involved in fighting and brawling cases every single day. Therefore, Fatty Han and Zhang Yang had become regulars at the local police station. Therefore, he was very familiar with the half-white and half-black kind of daces. Noticing the two of them were trying to communicate through their eyes, he could not help to smile quietly in his heart.

There are good and bad cops anywhere in the world. He recalled, back when he was still in his first grade of junior high school, he would fight with some hoodlums in the neighborhood and get arrested by the cops. An old cop tried to talk him out of becoming a hoodlum in the underworld. Sometimes, Zhang Yang would be locked up until midnight. The old cop would even buy him something to eat.

However, there were also bad cops. Sometimes, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han would be treated as thieves in the police station. Sometimes they even forced the two of them to admit to being something that they were not part of. Those bad cops would just cage them into a dark room and beat the crap out of them.

Therefore, Zhang Yang was very familiar with what the two had in mind at the moment. So he shook his head and said, "If you have any questions, just ask me now. I'll definitely be a good citizen and do my duty. Or else, please don't delay my time to go home and rest."

Zhao Zong Ping was troubled at the moment. Zhang Yang did not take the easy way nor the hard way. So, he was troubled as to how he should proceed with it. He did not dare to try it the hard way because he had no warrant in his hand. If these two cops really try to take Zhang Yang away by force, Zhang Yang could have easily 'remove' him of his rank. Well, with Zhang Yang's current status in the society, he would really have no problem at all in removing any officer from the force if he wanted to.

Zhao Zong Ping was indeed in dire need of flattering the Deputy's *ss. However, if that means losing his current job, then there was no point he

should do it at all.

After giving it some thoughts, he finally decided to take the gentle way. So he asked, "Mr. Zhang, do you know Liu Wei personally?"

At first, he began to question Zhang Yang with simple questions. Of course, Zhang Yang was answering all the questions Zhao Zong Ping was throwing at him. Well, even if Zhang Yang did not answer, he could have easily investigated and get all the answers to the questions he asks Zhang Yang.

Slam! Zheng Li Yuan sudden slammed the table again. Then she spoke with her eyebrows raised, "Did you murder Liu Wei?!"

"No!"

"Did you really think you can say no and pretend that you did not?" Zheng Li Yuan spoke in disdain again, "You said that you have a beef with Liu Wei in the game. However, why are there so much evidences provided by you then? Those evidence could really cripple the Liu Enterprise! You two are obviously holding great grudges against each other! So it makes perfect sense that you would kidnap him and torture him to death while he was trying to escape!"

This b*tch then took out a bunch of photos and slammed them on the table. The photos scattered across the table. The photos showed the same person. However, every piece of the photo was showing that the man was basically 'dissected' into pieces. Well, that corpse could not be identified as a 'man' anymore in some point. Even though Zhang Yang had seen quite a lot of gory stuffs in his life, he could barely stomach it down after seeing such gruesome photos.

So that... was really Liu Wei?

Zhang Yang thought quietly to himself that One Sword Stroke must have lost his mind to be able to do such gruesome thing to Liu Wei. However, thinking about how Liu Wei cut off One Sword Stroke's d*ck and raped his wife in front of him, anyone would have gone mad and become capable of doing something so insane and gruesome.

Wait a minute!

Zhang Yang suddenly had an idea in his mind. Well, he had passed the evidence provided by Chen Xue Yao to Sun Xin Yu in the first place. Then, the evidence was passed to the authorities by Sun Family. So no one should have known it was him who provided the 'firepower' to take down the entire Liu Family!

So how did this b*tch knew about it then?

Huh? Apparently, things were not as simple as it looked! That's right. He was no longer the hoodlum who would pick up a fight with other hoodlums on the streets. He had obtained a significant status in the society. He even had great relationships with many high-class leaders in the industries of business and politics as well. He is Mr. Zhang, CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings! So who does this Zheng Li Yuan think she is, flaunting him like this!?

Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang suddenly thought of someone! Well, he already knew about the investigation on the Liu Family in the first place. He was also the one that bailed Liu Wei out of the prison with the intention to screw with Zhang Yang! However, it seemed that Zhong Xiu Hua did not only intend to screw with Zhang Yang. It seemed that he wanted to force Zhang Yang to make a move!

This Zhong Xiu Hua must have been monitoring Liu Wei all the while. If Zhang Yang had attempted something on Liu Wei, he would have fallen into Zhong Xiu Hua's trap and let Zhong Xiu Hua have a grip over him. If that ever happens, Zhang Yang would only be able to fight Zhong Xiu Hua passively in the shadows.

Unfortunately, Zhong Xiu Hua must have not predicted that someone would have hated Liu Wei more than Zhang Yang did. That person had snatched Liu Wei away before Zhang Yang could do a thing. That person even tortured Liu Wei for several days before he ended his life! That should be it. Zhong Xiu Hua's miscalculation! However, it was not like he gained nothing at all, from that incident. He was clever. He actually tried

to pin the case on Zhang Yang!

With Sun Xin Yu working in the shadows, no harm would come to Zhang Yang. However, it really did provoked Zhang Yang a little bit. Other than that, if Zhang Yang always relies on a woman to settle things for him, Sun Xin Yu might look down on him as well.

Liu Wei was dead. So Zhong Xiu Hua decided to salvage and make good use of waste material. Well, he would just try because he would lose nothing at all. Even if he only manages to put a small crack on the relationship between Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu, he would be considered as the winner by the end of it.

After making some logic assumptions in his own head, Zhang Yang smiled vaguely. Then he said, "If you really think I'm the suspect or the murderer, then you should just come with a warrant and arrest me. Well, look at your manners! From now on, I refuse to answer any more of your questions.

"If you're not cooperating, you're going to get the trouble! All of it!" Zheng Li Yuan slammed the table again and shouted like a little b*tch.

"300,000!"

"What 300,000?" Zheng Li Yuan was stunned to hear it. She wondered why Zhang Yang would say the number out of the blue.

"300,000! You take off your clothes and walk out of here naked!" Zhang Yang calmly said.

"Are you out of your mind!?" Zheng Li Yuan immediately blushed and shouted in rage back at Zhang Yang. However, she sighed regretfully in her own heart. If Zhang Yang was only asking her to sleep with him, she would have pushed Zhao Zong Ping out of the room and accepted the offer. It would be as simple as opening up her legs and letting Zhang Yang come at her. It would only be like an enjoyment for her.

"3,000,000!" Zhang Yang took out her checkbook and wrote the number on the column. Then he threw the cheque onto the table and said, "You can call the bank to verify the cheque!"

Zheng Li Yuan and Zhao Zong Ping took in a cold breath upon hearing what Zhang Yang had to offer. 3,000,000 dollars was a number that would make two of them regret if they really walk away from the offer. Well, that was probably because their salaries were just so little that they would need to work for their entire life just to get that amount of money. Zhao Zong Ping did not blame Zhang Yang for trying to bribe them. He did not even mind the fact that Zhang Yang was humiliating the two of them with money. All he thought of, was why must he be a man, instead of a woman at that situation!

Zheng Li Yuan tightened her teeth. Well, 3,000,000 dollars was indeed not a small figure at all. She had been sleeping with so many men out there just because she wanted promotions. Now the opportunity awaits... she could earn 3,000,000 dollars just by taking her clothes off and walking out of that building. That... had really got her heart pounding!

However, if she really does it, she would definitely become the 'great insult' to the bureau. She would definitely lose her job! So would it be worth it to risk everything for this one-time opportunity?

Her hands were raised up to the first button of her uniform. Then she put her hands down. Then she put her hands back up again. She was obviously struggling to decide whether she should do it or not!

"10,000,000!" Zhang Yang took up another cheque, wrote the number down on it. After signing it, he threw the cheque onto the table and stared at Zheng Li Yuan with cold eyes.

Truth to be told, even if he was rich in his previous life, Zhang Yang would not have showed off how rich he is. Well, the main reason was probably because he grew up in a poor environment. He was never fond of such actions. However, looking at these two fellow officers, he had the urge to drop his money on them.

Currently, money was just a figure to him. The Territories he had could earn over hundreds of millions for him in each passing day! 10,000,000 dollars was just a small number to him. With his current income, Zhang Yang would be capable of spending as much as 1,000,000,000 dollars or

even 10,000,000,000 dollars with a snap of his fingers!

Zheng Li Yuan was totally crippled by the 10,000,000-dollar offer. So she quickly snatched the cheques over and took off her uniform.

Zhao Zong Ping was enraged. So he immediately shouted, "Zheng Li Yuan! What do you think you're doing!? Please remember that you're a cop!"

"Horse sh*t! You're just jealous because you can't earn 10,000,000 dollars like how I just did!" Zheng Li Yuan was able to see through the true intentions of Zhao Zong Ping, "I quit being a cop! Woohoo!"

The b*tch took off her clothes in a very brief period of time. She revealed her set of slightly saggy badonkers. The two nipples were so purplish that they looked black instead! Well, from the looks of it, only god knows how many men have sucked on them. The jungle bush in between her legs was so thick that it had the effect of covering up her crotch! Eww!

She smiled at Zhang Yang and changed her attitude 180 degree towards him and said, "Mr. Zhang, do you want me to accompany you tonight? I'm very good at treating men like you! I only take 1,000,000 dollars for each session!"

What the f*ck! Did she really take him as an idiot?

Zhang Yang revealed a cold look on his face and shouted, "Get lost!"

Zheng Li Yuan was not ashamed at all for trying. She took her uniform and also the two cheques that Zhang Yang threw on the table before the left Zhang Yang's office. What a greedy b*tch! When she walked out of the office naked, everyone was shocked. It was like throwing a 'Surprise, mother*cker' to anyone that saw her walking naked across the building.

Zhao Zong Ping did not even know how to react. What the f*ck just happened!? Not only has he failed to bring the 'target' back to the police office, he also lost the Deputy's 'wife' in the process of it! His ears were about to be lectured for a long time.

He knew that people like Zhang Yang were not people to be trifled with. Well, all he could do was to blame himself for trying to lick the shoes of

his superior. Now, he has really gotten himself into a mess!

Zhang Yang picked up the phone and called the bank. Then he forfeited the two cheques that he had issued to Zheng Li Yuan without having a single doubt in his mind. A b*tch like Zheng Li Yuan should be taught a lesson! Letting a b*tch like her be a cop would only be feeding the flames of evil in society and harming the good people! The earlier she's gone the better!

Zhang Yang made the call right in front of Zhao Zong Ping. Upon witnessing what Zhang Yang just did, Zhao Zong Ping could feel the fear tensing up on his chest. That Zheng Li Yuan had been fooled! She must have really believed that she had just earned a fortune! Meanwhile, Zhao Zong Ping knew that if he does not act cleverly, he would suffer similar fate as Zheng Li Yuan.

So he quickly stood up and fled building. Although he managed to catch up with Zheng Li Yuan, he did not even try to inform the b*tch about what just happened. Instead, he was figuring out how to face the wrath of his superior later when he got back to the police station.

Well, this greedy stupid b*tch had really got her karma after all! She's as good as dead!

...

Zhang Yang asked Sun Xin Yu for help. He wanted her to make an appointment with Zhong Xiu Hua so that he could see that son of the b*tch face to face when they talk.

Zhang Yang was extremely uncomfortable after being shot at coldly in the dark. Well, it was about time he stands out and let his opponent knows that he was not made of mud or paper! He wanted to show Zhong Xiu Hua that he would get mad if this continues on..

Sun Xin Yu acted swiftly. Two days later, she informed Zhang Yang that the son of the b*tch agreed to have a meal with the two of them at the Hawkwood Palace Restaurant.

Two days later, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu arrived at the Hawkwood

Palace Restaurant. It was a historical restaurant that existed over many years. It was also a iconic spot in the Zhou Shu city.

The Hawkwood Palace Restaurant was not really big. After the two of them entered the restaurant, they were greeted by a waiter and escorted into a quiet and cosy VIP room. There were two huge bodyguards standing right outside the entrance of the room. They looked like two iron generals standing sturdily at the entrance.

"Let them in!" The two bodyguards were blocking the entrance. After a while, a man's voice was heard from within the room. The two bodyguard stood aside and give way to Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu after that. There were only two men in the room. One of them was a young man Zhang Yang once saw on the video call --- Zhong Xiu Hua. He was sitting calmly while sipping on his hot tea. The other man was a skinny and thorough man standing right behind Zhong Xiu Hua. His face was basically emotionless. He did not even move a muscle while standing over there just like a statue.

Chapter 764: A Solid Hit in the Face

However, Zhang Yang could strongly sense that the man had an unexplainable murderous aura blazing deep in him. His presence had really given Zhang Yang a tremendous amount of stress!

"Please, sit!" Zhong Xiu Hua was acting like a civilized gentleman in front of Sun Xin Yu. He looked like an easy going person at the moment. He did not look intimidating at all.

Zhang Yang was tired of keeping up with all these false pretenses. So he sat down with a plonk and pulled his chair a little closer over to Sun Xin Yu. Initially, the table only had three chairs around. The distances between the 3 chairs were the same. Well, it would not matter where Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang sit, the three of them should look like three enemy generals from three different kingdoms. However, because Zhang Yang moved his chair like that, he instantly made Zhong Xiu Hua feel like he was isolated by the two of them sitting nearer together.

Well, this fellow really knows how to do unexpected things!

Zhong Xiu Hua took a closer look at Zhang Yang. Even though the two of them had crossed paths many times in the dark, they had never seen each other in person, in real life. This should be the first time that they are meeting face to face. However, he did not waste much time on Zhang Yang. Instead, he quickly turned towards Sun Xin Yu and said, "Little Yu, you've not gone back to Beijing for quite some time ever since. My mother, my grandpa and my grandma always talk about you! They miss you a lot!"

"Oi! Stop calling my wife like you're very close to her!" Zhang Yang immediately cut in and said. He also rested his arms over Sun Xin Yu's shoulders. He was declaring to Zhong Xiu Hua that he had the indisputable 'sovereignty' over the frosty and yet mesmerizing Sun Xin Yu.

Witnessing Zhang Yang landing his 'porky hand' on Sun Xin Yu, Zhong Xiu Hua revealed a sense of murderous intent in his eyes. What he could not understand was that Sun Xin Yu did not push Zhang Yang's hand away. Instead, she revealed a sense of comfort and joy on her face. The

sides of her lips were slightly raised. That was a smile filled with love and happiness! That was her happy expression!

God damn it! What was so good about this man, then? Did he really have anything that could match Zhong Xiu Hua? Why? Why would Sun Xin Yu abandon him to be with Zhang Yang?!

The reason Zhong Xiu Hua attempted to pursue Sun Xin Yu was more of a political factor. He wanted to form an 'alliance' between the two political families to gain much more benefits. Of course, the beauty of Sun Xin Yu would also match his status. Her appearance would not make him look bad in public either. After all, couples with handsome men and ugly wives or pretty wives with ugly husbands can be found everywhere in the political circle.

And now, Sun Xin Yu actually decided to 'abandon' him. Zhong Xiu Hua felt more humiliated by her decision more than ever. The feeling was like knowing that his wife was having an affair outside! He quietly swore that he would marry Sun Xin Yu in the future. By then, he would punish her and make her understand the cost of not behaving decently as his wife!

However, now that Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu were showing off their love in front of him, Zhong Xiu Hua was so infuriated that his grip almost broke the teacup in his hand.

Well, thank god he still managed to bury his tantrum deep inside. He forcefully endured the pain and calmed himself down. Meanwhile, a waiter came up to serve them dishes. That did ease the situation up a little bit.

While they were having their meal, Zhong Xiu Hua kept bringing up the memories about Sun Xin Yu back in the years when he and Sun Xin Yu were still young. He ignored Zhang Yang as much as possible. However, Sun Xin Yu was not the type that talks a lot. Well, she would not even talk much while looking at a man she hates so much. As Zhong Xiu Hua knew no boundary on when to stop talking, she felt uncomfortable listening to that pr*ck babble on.

"I'm going to the washroom for a bit!" Sun Xin Yu could no longer

tolerate Zhong Xiu Hua's crap. So, she pushed the chair back and walked out of the room.

"Zhang Yang ---" The moment when Sun Xin Yu left the room, Zhong Xiu Hua's face changed instantly. That prideful and cold expression was revealed all over his face. His eyes were filled with disdain. So, that was his true colour beneath that hippy mask! His impression about Zhang Yang was that Zhang Yang was just merely 'New Money1'. He would not have what it takes to match himself with the born-to-be 'Prince' Zhong Xiu Hua!

He coldly glared at Zhang Yang and said, "You're digging your own grave, do you know that? When little Yu is tired of toying you around, you'll be a worthless piece of sh*t! I'll tear down your Silky Soft Holdings bit by bit. Then, I'll take everything you have in the 'God's Miracle' from you!"

"Aihh... other than using your father's name or your grandpa's influence, can you actually do something that is worth my time?" Zhang Yang did not even bat an eyelid.

"Humph! In life, there is always a difference between every individual! There are the noble ones, and there are the cheap ones! Everything is written in the genes!" Zhong Xiu Hua spoke proudly.

"Cut the crap! Was your ancestor born with a golden diaper on him?" Zhang Yang conveniently threw a chicken bone over before Zhong Xiu Hua's plate and said, "100 years ago, your grandpa's grandpa might be one of those coal miners! Is that written in your genes as well? If that's true, why don't you hustle up and go mining now? Why are you still here wasting time?"

Zhong Xiu Hua's face instantly turned red!

Well, before his family miraculously became influential and powerful, his ancestor was indeed a miner back in the ancient times. Everything changed when his great grandpa married an officer's daughter. He suddenly rose to a position of great importance in the society. When he retired, he had become an important person with a ministerial position in

society. After that, it was his grandpa and his father's turn to shine even better. They became even more influential in the society than their ancestor. If nothing goes wrong, Zhong Xiu Hua's father would be climbing up to the top of the power ladder. If that ever happens, the Zhong Family would be at the peak of their life's achievement, a height they had never reached before!

Because of that, Zhong Xiu Hua could not stand people speaking on his past the most. The pride and arrogant expression on his face vanished without a trace after hearing what Zhang Yang had to say. Then, he ground his teeth together, as if he wanted to swallow Zhang Yang alive!

"You're digging your own grave!" Zhong Xiu Hua's eyes were blazing with murderous intent!

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "You've tried to provoke me three times. So, do you think everyone is some sort of toy or a puppet for you to meddle with? You know, when a man is really angry, he can spill the blood of his enemy 5 feet across the floor. So, you better watch out when you step out of your house!"

"You ---" Zhong Xiu Hua was infuriated to the point that he lost his voice. This fellow actually threatened him!? Does he not know about his status? Zhong Xiu Hua would be like a crown prince in the ancient times. How dare Zhang Yang threatens him like that?

"Oh? Are you mad now?" Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "If you can become mad just because you're teased with a few words, should I be exploding in anger? You've got to be kidding me! You've tried to spy on me by placing people around me. Then you tried to frame me for murder! I should be planting nukes in your yard and blow you to kingdom come!"

"Zhang Yang!" Zhong Xiu Hua slammed the table with both of his hands. Then he pushed himself a little forward towards Zhang Yang and said, "The day that Sun Xin Yu abandons you is the day you die!"

"Then you should just go to hell before me!" Zhang Yang roared out like a spartan. He suddenly swung out his fist and gave a solid uppercut straight up at Zhong Xiu Hua's chin! Zhong Xiu Hua did not expect that to

happen at all. He did not even react at all as he was punched so hard that the punch threw him off balance. He spat out a few teeth and some blood from his mouth as he fell! His fall caused his body to knock the chair over and he fell straight to the ground.

Everything happened so fast that even the bodyguard standing behind Zhong Xiu Hua could not react! Well, Zhang Yang's reflexes were extremely good. Or else, he would not have become number one in the entire server of 'God's Miracle'!

However, that bodyguard still managed to shove himself between Zhang Yang and Zhong Xiu Hua to protect his master on the next moment. At the same time, the two bodyguards who heard something that was happening in the room charged into the room as well. The three bodyguards were charging at Zhang Yang with the intention of killing him!

Well, Zhang Yang did not falter at all. Although these three bodyguards looked like they were well trained and all, however, they were just some muscles hired from the Security Firms. They were not as good as the bodyguards who stayed by the sides of Sun Xin Yu's old man. Those bodyguards were definitely iron-blood military soldiers trained in the Zhongnanhai!

After all, even though Zhong Xiu Hua had a very special and precious identity, he would only be a second-rate fellow carrying a second-rate title walking around. So it would not be possible that the Zhongnanhai would actually send bodyguards to guard by Zhong Xiu Hua's side. Furthermore, his father was a man who does great things. So he would definitely pay attention to small details such as these!

Bam!

The door was kicked open. Sun Xin Yu walked into the room filled with murderous intent. The moment she entered, she glared at the three huge bodyguards coldly.

If it was one against three, Zhang Yang would stand a lower chance of winning the fight. However, with Sun Xin Yu joining his side, he was very

confident that the two of them could take out the three bodyguards.

"Zhang Yang!" Zhong Xiu Hua crawled back up on his feet with blood all over his face. The rage was ablaze in both of his eyes. He was so angry that his face became crooked, "You... are... digging... your... own grave!" He attempted to speak the sentence word by word.

Sun Xin Yu humphed coldly and said, "If you dare to touch even one hair of him, I'll crush every single bone in you and rip your bones out one by one until you are the spineless, boneless coward that you are!"

Even though she spoke calmly, but Zhong Xiu Hua could feel the intense murderous aura hidden in her tone. Based on his understanding on Sun Xin Yu, he knew that she would never have talk crap about anything! She would only say it when she was capable of doing it! If she mentioned that she would crush every single bones in Zhong Xiu Hua, she meant it with all her heart! There would be no bone in him if things continue to escalate.

No one would be capable of provoking a crazy woman! Especially a crazy woman who has the same level of influence and background as him!

Zhong Xiu Hua quickly calmed himself down. Then, he pointed at his mouth and said, "Are you saying that I was punched over nothing?"

"Yes, you're punched over nothing! So what?" Sun Xin Yu said indifferently.

Zhong Xiu Hua almost popped a vein after hearing what she said. Who is he to get punched in the face? However, he was a little terrified while he was confronting the mad woman. He remembered very clearly that something gruesome happened back then when they were still very young. A huge boy once attempted to bully Sun Xin Yu. However, he ended up with a fractured skull, and one foot in the grave!

That was one of the main reasons why Sun Xin Yu left Beijing long ago. The witch of Sun, the crazy b*tch Sun Xin Yu! Those were the nicknames she was called by the rich kids back in the days. Those rich kids would still be terrified the moment when they talk about her!

"Are you done talking to him?" Sun Xin Yu turned her eyes over on Zhang Yang. Then, she spoke gently to Zhang Yang. Zhong Xiu Hua felt extremely jealous because of that.

"We're done. Let's go home!" Zhang Yang tidied up his clothes a little before walking out of the room with Sun Xin Yu.

Zhong Xiu Hua was overwhelmed by the mixed feelings on his chest at the moment. However, after hesitating for quite some time, he did not order the three bodyguards to make their moves on Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. He was not worried if his bodyguards would lose. He was worried that Sun Xin Yu would do something that would cause him to tremble in fear. After all, Sun Xin Yu was an existence that he could not handle. If she really gets mad at him, she might even use a gun on him!

His thoughts rested the moment he thought of how crazy Sun Xin Yu could get. He could not help to feel a chill up his spine. However, that punch would not go unanswered! He touched his swollen face as he was staring at the view of Zhang Yang's back as Zhang Yang was leaving with murderous intent. Well, he decided to start on Silky Soft Holdings, then. Furthermore, it was about time that he summons all his troops in the 'God's Miracle' and lays siege on Lone Desert Smoke.

...

After walking out of the restaurant, Sun Xin Yu looked at Zhang Yang. Then, she asked with care, "Did you get hurt?"

"No. There were only that few of them. I could have taken them all out with only one hand!" Zhang Yang exaggerated with the intent of comforting Sun Xin Yu. The two of them went to the car. Then, Zhang Yang smiled, "I never thought that you'd be so fierce and fearsome back there! That Zhong Xiu Hua could not even talk or even fart!"

"You can't underestimate him. He's just being considerate because I was there! Furthermore, you're too reckless to have landed a punch on him! Far too reckless!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "He got used to being high up all the while. So, he thought he could just bully anyone he sees. If I only strike

back at him at the wrong moment, he would only act even cockier! Now, he wanted to take you away from me, and he wanted to destroy Silky Soft Holdings. He even wanted to take everything that I have in the 'God's Miracle' away from me! So, should I hold back on this kind of opponent?"

Sun Xin Yu remained silent for a moment, then she said, "As long as no one dies, I will allow you to do anything you want."

Zhang Yang instantly got touched. It would take a lot more love than anyone could imagine for her to say such words. Zhang Yang felt the heat building up his chest. It was joy. It was excitement out of affection. He turned around and hugged Sun Xin Yu. Then he began to passionately touch and kiss Sun Xin Yu's body parts.

"Are you crazy? This is a parking lot. Someone might see us!"

"There's no one here at this hour! Also, we've not tried it in a car before!"

"Hmm ---"

TL Notes:

1. New Money - a term that is usually derogatory, to describe those whose wealth has been acquired within their own generation, rather than by familial inheritance.

2. Zhongnanhai - A complex of buildings in Beijing, China, adjacent to Tiananmen Square, which serves as the central headquarters for the Communist Party of China and the government of the People's Republic of China

Chapter 765: The Second World League Championship

Zhong Xiu Hua's retaliation came fast. Quite a number of related departments came over to Zhang Yang's company to look for trouble. Because of that, the morale of the staffs was seriously affected. Well, these so-called related departments did bring some of Zhang Yang's designers back to the bureau for further investigation. Some anonymous sources claimed that the designers were abusing their positions to take advantage of the models. Various media were also involved in attempting to 'expose' the scandals. That had really affected the Silky Soft Holdings in a negative manner.

Fortunately, the Silky Soft Holdings had recovered back its former glory. Currently, the advertisements propelled by Lone Desert Smoke had drilled its way into the market of Europe, America, Japan-Korea and other foreign countries. With merely a small setback in the market of Zhou Shu, the sales of Silky Soft Holdings was still going extremely well.

Other than that, an 'Anti Lone Desert Smoke Alliance' had been formed in the game. They claimed that they would slaughter the Lone Desert Smoke until the guild gets disbanded. The core members of the alliance were naturally the players from the Eternal Flame. Other than them, they were joined by The Myth, The Dominators, Axe Gang and other guilds who had a beef with Lone Desert Smoke.

With Liu Wei dead, Death Arbiter took over as the guildmaster for The Myth. However, Death Arbiter was not as rich as Liu Wei. Therefore, many top Tier players that came for the money decided to leave The Myth. Because of that, The Myth had become a second-rate guild.

By the end of it, Death Arbiter decided to side with Zhong Xiu Hua. With his outstanding capabilities, he managed to get himself into the Class A Battle Team of Eternal Flame. If nothing goes wrong, Zhang Yang would be encountering him in the new season's Class S Professional League Championship.

The Anti Lone Desert Smoke Alliance had declared war several times over. Their main targets were Zhang Yang's three Territories. They did not care at all. They slaughtered every single player from other guilds as well, as long as they came out of any of the Territories.

Zhang Yang's highest input of his income in 'God's Miracle' came from the Teleportation Circles of the Territories. Zhong Xiu Hua was attempting to disrupt most of Zhang Yang's income. However, his action had wrought unforeseen circumstances on him. He had underestimated the wrath of the players in the game. Well, it was true that players were not able to fight the Anti Lone Desert Smoke when they were low in numbers. However, how many players were there in the entire China Region then?

2,000,000,000!

Other than those players who were Level 50 and below, the rest of the players, especially those who had reached beyond Level 100 in China Region would need to access the Teleportation Circle of the three Territories. Because they could only use the Teleportation Circles in Souron's Castle and Morning Town, they could only travel to those two places before venturing to other places.

Well, they did not mind much after they are killed once or twice. However, it became personal after the players are killed over 4 to 5 times. That had really ignited the fury of the players. So, they joined forces and struck back at the Anti Lone Desert Smoke Alliance and kicked their *sses bad! The players won because they had numbers. Millions of them would swarm up the Anti Lone Desert Smoke at the same time! On the other hand, the Anti Lone Desert Smoke only had hundreds of thousands of players. So, how would they be able to hold their ground against the wrath of so many players?

Well, Zhang Yang did not even pay attention to those small issues. The second World League Championship was just around the corner. He needed to travel over to Hawaii together with Sun Xin Yu and the others to join the competition. So, he was busy preparing, instead of wasting his time on the Anti Lone Desert Smoke coalition.

By the end of January, Zhou Shu was still being bombarded by severe winter. However, Hawaii was warm most of the time. The scenery would be mesmerizing all the time. The place was full of foreign beauties in bikinis. Zhang Yang could not help to praise the place. When Fatty Han knew the 'truth', he felt an itch deep down in his heart. So, he also brought his wife-to-be along and traveled over to Hawaii with his own money. He claimed that he wanted to support Zhang Yang personally. However, the intention of a drunkard lies not on the wine, but on other purposes. Men would know.

Other than Lone Desert Smoke, the other parties from China Region which managed to get into the championship were naturally, Crimson Rage. Initially, Crimson rage and Imperial Sky had the same score in the previous competition. Crimson Rage managed to edge out in the end. So, they managed to enter the finals. Meanwhile, the contestants from other Regions were basically the same, back in the first World League Championship. Well, the only change was that the party of the Japan-Korea Region had been switched over with a new batch of players.

Zhang Yang did not pay much attention to it. With Lone Desert Smoke's current achievement, they should be able to sweep the ground clean and claim victory over anyone.

As usual, after the brief opening ceremony, the team leader from each party stood up to draw a number. They drew numbers to see who their opponents would be.

Zhang Yang and his party members were not concerned at all about which opponents they would have to encounter. Instead, they were looking at the final rewards of the competition. After all, that was the only thing they cared about the most, in the first place.

The reward for this season's championship was a little different from the previous season: The champion's party would acquire +3 levels, +3 Skill points and a total of 5,000,000 American Dollars. The runner-up party would acquire +2 levels, +2 Skill points and a total of 3,000,000 American Dollars. The party who wins the third place would acquire +1 levels, +1 Skill points and a total of 1,000,000 American Dollars.

Other than that, parties with 4-8 players would acquire one free Skill Point. Meanwhile parties with 9-16 players would acquire a +1 level reward.

In other words, the players could get free rewards just by joining the competition! That should be an encouragement given by the developers for those who managed to make it into the World League Championship.

Finally, one MVP player would be selected from the finals. That MVP would get a chance to draw lots for one extra reward. The rewards among the lots would include equipment, Skill Book, Magic Scrolls, Skill Point Crystals and many other valuable items!

After looking through the rewards, Zhang Yang and his gang tapped their chests to express their resolution to win. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er commanded Zhang Yang not intervene during the finals. She wanted to win the MVP title for herself!

From that night onwards, the opening match blew up.

Unlike the first World League Championship, Daffodil Daydream had acquired her Class A Soul Breaker Inheritance. By having it so, she finally removed the fact that she was the only one without an Inheritance on the party. Among the 7 of them, 3 of them had Class S Inheritance, two of them had Class A Inheritance, and last but not least, two of them with Class B Inheritance. Therefore, Zhang Yang's party had an absolute advantage over the other parties in the championship.

However, because the championship forbids players to activate Skills that have a cooldown longer than half an hour, the power level of Felice, Phoenix pet and Red Dragon pet were nerfed by a notch. Furthermore, none of them could activate their Inheritance Transformation as well. Even though the additional damage of players with Class S Inheritance was just 10% more than the additional damage of players with Class A Inheritance, the players with Class S Inheritance would only be like having an additional Holy Tier equipment on them. Practically speaking, the difference might only be 5% or even 3% to 4%.

The important thing was that the difference between the HP amounts of the players was not that obvious. Everyone seemed to be using their

equipment to boost their HP. So, there would not be a player with tens of millions of HP while the others only have about a million.

As the Champion of the first World League Championship, the Silky Soft Battle Team was the 'can opener' for the competition. Their first opponent was the Japan-Korea's Undying Souls. By the end of it, they managed to defeat the Undying Souls with the score of 5:0. It was an easy win. Zhang Yang and his party had exhibited their absolute power over the Undying Souls!

On the second day during the quarterfinals, Zhang Yang and his gang went up against the Saint Louise Battle Team from South America Region. They had once again triumphed over their opponents with the score of 5:0! Furthermore, Zhang Yang did not even take part in the match this time! The spectators were cheering and praising that the Silk Soft Battle Team was a little overly powerful! They were still so capable and powerful even though they put the most powerful player on their party on the bench!

During the semifinals, Zhang Yang and his gang went up against the Steely Dang Battle Team from the India Region!

5:2! 6:3!

The Silky Soft Battle Team claimed another victory with a score of 2:0. Well, Hourglass Figure was equipped with a Class S Inheritance, after all. Meanwhile, there were another few players with Class A Inheritances on her battle team. So, they were able to perform very well in the one on one matches on the first round. They were able to win two matches in the first round. In the second round, they got the upper hand in their line-up. So, they managed to win 3 matches and prolonged the match to a team battle. However, they failed to defeat the Silky Soft Battle Team by the end as well.

In the finals, the Lone Desert Smoke went up against 'Philosopher Stone Battle Team' that had been 'reorganized'.

Well, this 'Philosopher Stone Battle Team' was actually a new team that the Justice League put up together. Now, they were using some new

players on the team. The team included Heart of Destruction who had a Class S Inheritance.

That's right! The Dark Palace was only formed last year by March. Therefore, they could only survive in the Class B League Championship. They would need to participate in the qualification contest in order to see if they could make it into the Class A League Championship. However, the rules and restrictions of the World League Championship had a flaw that many would use to their own advantage. Players were free to change their team members before the match. Therefore, two teams decided to reform their teams as one. They arranged their roster accordingly so that they could assemble a new team filled with top Tier players. The better team would be taking part in the Class S League Championship while the weaker team would take part in the Class B League Championship.

The two guilds did not merge together. They were just forming an alliance to join the World League Championship. After all, the system did not restrict nor set a limitation that the members of a party had to be from the same guild.

Both of the guilds involved were top Tier guilds from the North America Region. After forming up a strong battle team, they had over 6 players with Class A Inheritances, other than one player with a Class S Inheritance!

Actually, there were only 6 players with Class S Inheritance in the entire world. Furthermore, the Lone Desert Smoke had 3 on their side! Meanwhile, having 6 players with Class A Inheritance on their side made them much more powerful than Lone Desert Smoke in a sense --- Zhang Yang only knew about it later on. It seemed that this battle team did not only get powerful players to their side from Dark Palace, they had also acquired powerful players from some top Tier guilds from the North America Region. Their intention was very obvious, though. They wanted to join the forces of all guild in their own Region in order to claim victory over the World League Championship as one team!

Meanwhile, they had accumulated enough strength to do it. In the semifinals, they managed to eliminate Crimson Rage Battle Team with

ease by scoring a final score of 2:1. They scored 5:1 in the first round and 5:2 in the second round. By doing so, the lady army of the Crimson Rage had once again lost before they could get into the finals.

On January 22, 7 p.m, the finals for the second World League Championship was about to begin. The third in place and the fourth in place competed against each other for the consolation prizes. The lady army of the Crimson Rage Battle Team had given them their best. However, they were no match for the Steely Dang Battle Team. So, they had to accept the fact that they had lost and endure the pain of being ranked as number four in the second World League Championship.

At 9 p.m, the final battle between the Silky Soft Battle Team and the Philosopher Stone Battle Team.

With the anchor of the night cried out the signal, the first round of the match had finally begun. The first match was Hundred Shots vs Captain America!

"Noob tank, will uncle Hundred Shots win?" Wei Yan Er blinked her large eyes and said. She hoped that the first round would end with a score of 5:0. If that could happen, Zhang Yang would not need to join the battle. Then, she would still stand a chance to win the MVP title to herself.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "By the aspect of skills and power level, I would say Hundred Shots is at a disadvantage there. Take a look. He only has a Class B Inheritance. He would fall back when going up against a player with a Class A Inheritance. However, Hundred Shots is Level 170 now. His Red Dragon has just been improved to Holy Tier pet! Hehe, I would say that it's going to be tough for the opponent to battle a Red Dragon in the arena!"

"Then, it is possible that uncle Hundred Shots can win?" Wei Yan Er was filled with joy.

"Well, he should at least have a 70% chance!" Zhang Yang nodded and said.

As the preparation period has ended, the match between Hundred Shots and Captain America had finally begun!

While standing in the middle of the arena, everyone was forbidden from sitting on their mounts. However, Hundred Shots was a Hunter. So he had the natural ability to let his pet tag along his side. The Red Dragon could be used as a pet and also as a mount. The appearance of this red 'gem' had really got a lot of attention in the arena. Many people were staring at the dragon with envious intent. Some of them simply admired it wordlessly.

[Red Dragon] (Holy Tier Flying Battle Mount)

Level: 170

HP: 1,277,730

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,086 – 200,086 (Based on Physical Attack, however, causes Chaos Damage. Attack Interval: 2 seconds)

Judging from the aspect of DPS normal attack, the Red Dragon was much more powerful than Zhang Yang! However, because the Red Dragon did not have any offensive Skills that could deal immense damage to the target, it could only deal a total DPS of 850,000!

Captain America was currently in deep sh*t now!

Chapter 766: Retaining the title as the Champions

As the captain of the Philosopher Stone Battle Team, Captain America was very eager to win the first match in an attempt to raise the morale of his newly formed battle team. Furthermore, he would be able to solidify his position as the captain of the battle team!

Because their Battle Team was sponsored by the Philosopher Stone Holdings, he still had a certain level of authority when it came to the setting up of the battle team. However, if his performance was not as good as Heart of Destruction, then he might get replaced by Heart of Destruction at some point!

After all, a captain with a Class S Inheritance would be more capable of encouraging the party members or team members!

However, he had a great problem to solve right before him if he ever wants to win. The Red Dragon pet!

Captain America was screaming and cursing deep in his heart. How could he be so unlucky to have encountered a Holy Tier pet! What the f*ck! Fortunately for him, his main target was not the Red Dragon Pet. He only needed to make sure the player is dead in order to win. If he is able to kill the player, it would no longer matter if the pet was Holy Tier or even Celestial Tier!

The moment the battle began, Captain America charged towards Hundred Shots with large steps. His objective was clear as crystal. If he could just stick himself by the side of Hundred Shots throughout the battle, he would be able to unleash his full power on Hundred Shots. Well, all he needed to do was to kill Hundred Shots before the Red Dragon kills him!

However, ever since Hundred Shots got his Red Dragon pet, he had been training with Fatty Han to acquire a special tactic that only the both of them could use. He would rely on his pet to deal damage to his opponent

while he kites his opponent around! Furthermore, it had been quite a long time since he first got his Red Dragon pet. He was extremely familiar with the tactic by now!

{Concussive Shots}!

Hundred Shots immediately used a Skill to reduce Captain America's movement speed. Meanwhile, his Red Dragon pet took a few steps towards Captain America and spat out a stream of Dragon Breath at him. The flames reached out to 15 meters further into the surroundings. At the same time, Hundreds Shot began to run away from Captain America as swiftly as he could.

Meanwhile, Captain America was standing at a distance that was just enough to use {Charge} on the Red Dragon pet. After giving it some thought, Captain America immediately activated his {Charge} and clashed into the Red Dragon. He managed to stun the Red Dragon, so now he could pursue Hundred Shots uninterrupted. Without wasting any of the time he bought for himself, Captain America activated his {Heroic Leap} and leaped straight over to Hundred Shots. Hundred Shots was stomped and stunned for 3 seconds!

Raising up his axe, Captain America began to attack Hundred Shots as intensely as he could.

1 second later, the Red Dragon pet had recovered from the Stun Effect. It immediately turned towards Captain America and spat its Dragon Breath at him without holding back at all.

Hundred Shots did not falter. He activated his Accessory to acquire the Invincibility effect and canceled the Stun Effect on him. Then, he continued to run away. Meanwhile, Captain America followed him closely from behind. He did not want to give Hundred Shots any chance of getting away. Under the bombardment of the Red Dragon, his Rage bar was full. The moment the Invincibility effect on Hundred Shots faded, he would be able to afflict Hundred Shots with his {Thunder Strike}.

{Breaking Shot}!

Hundred Shots sent Captain America into a state of confusion. As long

as he does not cause any damage to Captain America, Captain America would have to stay still for 4 seconds! It was a great opportunity for Hundred Shots to gain some distance between the two of them.

Captain America quickly activated his Accessory as well. He also entered a state of Invincibility. However, his reason of doing so was totally different from Hundred shots'. He wanted to get as close to Hundred Shots as possible!

At the same time, the Red Dragon had stopped its assaults on Captain America. It stopped to prevent itself from dealing ineffective attacks on the opponent while he was still invincible. It would be a waste if the Red Dragon attacks Captain America before the Invincibility Effect fades.

One of them was pursing, while the other was escaping!

10 seconds later, the Invincibility effect on Hundred Shots had vanished. However, he leaped into the air and jumped away from Captain America all of a sudden. At the same instant, Captain America's {Charge} was still under cooldown. So he could only run like hell with his feet in attempt to push Hundred Shots into a corner.

Another 2 seconds later, the invincibility effect on Captain America had vanished as well. Not only he had to endure the Dragon Breath of the Red Dragon, he would need to take on the {Leap Shot} that Hundred Shots shoot at him from time to time. So the rate of reduction on his HP bar was extremely fast.

Captain America quickly took out his potions and gulped it down. Then he proceeded on to push Hundred Shots to a corner.

It was the most popular tactic that a hunter would use in hunting down a prey. As long as he could force the target to a dead corner, Captain America could activate his {Charge} to counter Hundred Shots's {Leap Shot}. At the same time, he could reserve his {Warrior's Will} to rid of any status restriction effect on him just in case. As long as he could perform a series of explosive attacks on Hundred Shots, he should be able to kill Hundred Shots in no time.

However, Hundred Shots was no ordinary Hunter as well. The main

reason was because he had a Legendary pet with him! The damage dealt by the Red Dragon was just too damn high! Even though Captain America had over 650,000 HP, he would only be able to endure 4 attacks from the Red Dragon without dying after that. He would not be able to hold on longer than a few seconds even after he used potions or any Recovery Skills!

His only chance was to instantly kill Hundred Shots. If he couldn't do that, he would have to accept the fate that the Red Dragon was going to f*ck him up for good!

However, anything would be too late by now. His Charge would need 30 seconds to cool down. That amount of time was enough for him to pay with his life!

1:0 Silky Soft Battle Team won the first match of the finals!

The second match would have Daffodil Daydream versus Wonder Woman! It was a battle between two Spellcasters!

Both of them were Pyromancers. So, the both of them began to deal as much damage as they could to each other. However, they were also using ranged attacks, Frost defensive and Frost offensive Skills on each other. They were also be comparing their skills and control of their Status Restriction Skills in the battle! So it was really very difficult to tell whether which one of them had the advantage over the other. However, Daffodil Daydream managed to rely on the advantage she had on her equipment and defeated her opponent by the end of the battle!

2:0 Silky Soft Battle Team continued to show the advantage they had over their opponent battle team.

The third match would have Sun Xin Yu versus Holy Zealots.

This Holy Zealots was a Guardian who had a Class A Inheritance. Theoretically speaking, his Class should be oppressive over Sun Xin Yu's Class, Thief. However, Sun Xin Yu had reached the pinnacle in the art of assassination. Her {Eagle Eye} had made her even more powerful than ever! She only activated her {Ambush} twice before taking out her opponent with ease!

3:0 Silky Soft Battle Team was unstoppable!

However, the fourth match was Lost Dream versus Heart of Destruction who was one of the top Tier players!

Even though the first {Ambush} that Lost Dream activated managed to reduce a quarter of Heart of Destruction's HP bar, but Heart of Destruction did not give Lost Dream a second chance to do it again! He unleashed the full potential of his Class S Inheritance and ended Lost Dream's life shortly after that!

3:1 Philosopher Stone Battle Team managed to win back a match for themselves. Poor Lost Dream was the first to taste defeat among Zhang Yang's gang. He knelt on the ground to reflect on the mistakes he did during the battle.

Truth to be told, the two of them had almost the same capability in the aspect of skills and controls. However, when a player with Class B Inheritance battles another player with a Class S Inheritance, the difference would become very obvious. The additional damage that a player with a Class S Inheritance had would be much greater. For instant, Zhang Yang's {God of War Devastation} could provide Zhang Yang an additional 300% Melee Attack. Meanwhile the {Dark Vengeance} could only provide 250% additional attack. So when it came down to a Class B Inheritance, Lost Dream only received 200% additional attack on his Inheritance Skills.

These Skills had over 1 minute of cooldown. It would not affect much if the players were dealing damage to their target over a long period of time. However, the difference between the Attack power of the Skills would become very obvious when players needed to nuke a target over a brief period of time!

So Lost Dream did not lose because he did some sort of mistake.

The fifth match was Han Ying Xue versus Saint's Descendent. With her super healing capabilities, she managed to torture the Hunter to death!

4:1 Silky Soft Battle Team had done it again!

On the sixth match, it was finally Wei Yan Er's turn. Her opponent was Duke Marlogia, a Holy Knight.

Well, {Destructive Smash} naturally weakens the effect of Healing Efficiency. Furthermore, the little brat was insane. She could deal a tremendous amount of damage to her opponent over a brief period of time. Plus, she also had her Gold Tier Servant aiding her in battle. She acted like a tornado and took out her opponent like it was nothing.

5:1, The first round of the match was firmly won by the Silky Soft Battle Team. Zhang Yang did not even get the chance to show off his skills in the arena yet!

The two sides handed in the line-up list to the organizer. The second round of the match would begin after a 10-minute break.

However, although the Philosopher Stone Battle Team had done a lot of changes to their line up, they were not able to change the fact that the Silky Soft Battle Team had the uttermost advantage over them. The Philosopher Stone Battle Team managed to score 2:4 where they were still losing. On the 7th match, no one even think that the Philosopher Stone Battle Team would stand any chance at all at prolonging the match to the 8th match, the Team Battle. The reason was simple. Their opponent for the 7th match was Zhang Yang!

It was a total oppression on the Philosopher Stone Battle Team. The battle ended within 10 seconds. Silky Soft Battle Team was able to win the second round of the match by scoring 5:2. With a final score of 2:0. Silky Soft Battle Team had become the Champion of the World League Championship once again!

Naturally, the money was wired into Zhang Yang's account first. As for the reward of +level and +Skill Points, they would be automatically received by the players when they sign into the game after the competition. After a long debate and voting, the MVP in the finals was --- Han Ying Xue!

The committees stated their reasons well. Han Ying Xue was a Healer. However, she managed to win two crucial matches. Furthermore, she had shown everyone her extraordinary skills in healing. 55% of the committee

and the audiences supported Han Ying Xue as the new MVP. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu got 42% support from the others. As for Zhang Yang, it was unfortunate that he was totally ignored by everyone. Well, he only get to battle for one match after all.

After declaring who was the new MVP, Wei Yan Er was deeply hurt. She squatted down and began to draw circles with her finger in resentment. She cursed the committees for being blinded by Han Ying Xue's huge pair of titties.

Han Ying Xue went up to stage to receive the special reward for winning the MVP title. The digital screen began to flash on. After a brief moment the screen stopped on an item --- [Book of Revelation: Chapter 6]!

Zhang Yang screamed in joy. He waited Han Ying Xue to come back before he gave Han Ying Xue and passionate kiss as her reward for bringing back such a reward for him. Sun Xin Yu was so envious that she was cracking her knuckles while humphing on.

Although the competition was over, Zhang Yang and his gang did not go back to their country immediately. Instead, they decided to stay back to have a few days rest in Hawaii. Since no one was in the mansion now, there was no reason for them to rush back home. As for Hundred Shots, he also brought his family over after the competition. Then he introduced his wife and two children to the gang. Well, he had a son and a daughter.

Until the third day of the new year, everyone had finally packed up their things and ended their vacation in Hawaii. Then, they went back to Zhou Shu together.

To make sure that they really had a good vacation, none of them logged into the game during their vacation. Therefore, when Zhang Yang logged back into the game, he immediately received system notification. A golden light flashed across his entire body and he became Level 177! Furthermore, he received 3 additional Skill Points.

Zhang Yang added all 3 additional Skill Points onto his {Force Strike}. Currently, his {Force Strike} was Level 5. So, he could have a 50% rate of activating an additional attack.

It would only be 3 levels before Zhang Yang reaches Level 180. By then, he should be the first player who equips the first Ascended Tier equipment in the entire game. That would be awesome, don't you think? However, he would need to cross over the threshold of Level 179 before that happens. Well, Level 179 was like a curse to Zhang Yang. He was really worried that everything would be reset back to square one again after he reaches that level.

Zhang Yang tapped his cheeks for a little bit and cheered back up. Then, he entered a whole new map called the Marlin's Land of Salt.

This was a map that he never step foot onto before in his previous life. The entire land was white and sandy. There was no sign of any green. The ground was made of layers of crystals that looked like ice blocks. Zhang Yang had to walk carefully on them. Or else, he would fall his face to the ground.

However, there were also some plants in the surroundings. The plants in the area were frosty white. They looked extremely bizarre. They blended into the land of salt very well. It was really hard for one to see them clearly. Well, Zhang Yang was not worried at all. He could just let his Herb Foraging Familiar out into the wild to do its job, collecting the herbs. As long as Zhang Yang is willing to pay the summoning fee, he would be able to collect herbs from this map.

Zhang Yang was flying through the sky while observing the situation down on the ground of the map. He could not find any signs of life all. He did not see anything moving down there!

Zhang Yang descended closer to the ground and glided on the back of his Flying Mount. Just when everything was peaceful, suddenly, Zhang Yang heard a loud rumbling sound echoing across his ears. A gigantic, sharp leg broke through the surface of the salt crystals and struck straight towards Zhang Yang's chest like a spear!

In a flash, Zhang Yang's body reacted to the danger before him. He raised his shield up immediately to block the attack! A loud bang was heard. That gigantic sharp leg was deflected back.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The salt crystals in the surroundings were beginning to crack and creak. A gigantic monster drilled itself straight out of the surface of the ground. It was a gigantic scorpion! This frosty white scorpion was just gigantic! There were no other words to describe it! Its long and gigantic scorpion tail was so white that it looked transparent! The tip of the tail was so sharp that anyone who sees it would feel an intense chill up their spines!

Something crawled out of the cracks on the salt crystals. Zhang Yang took a closer look at the little things that were crawling out of the cracks. There were countless baby scorpions gushing out from the cracks all around! They were so abundant that they looked like trails of liquid flowing out, covering the ground in the surroundings!

People would usually say that someone has stirred the hornet's nest. Well, Zhang Yang had definitely stirred the Scorpion's nest!

Chapter 767: Marlin's Land of Salt

[Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 190

HP: 9,500,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,871 – 126,871

Skills:

[Pincer]: Uses its gigantic pincers to clamp target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Tail Sting]: Uses its sharp, venomous tail to attack the target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. The target will suffer 60,000 Nature Damage for the next 6 seconds.

Note: Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion is the dominators of the land around here. Because their food source is extremely limited, they will usually hibernate beneath the surface of the ground and wait for the right moment to ambush their preys.

Other than that Elite Tier giant scorpion, the other smaller scorpions were just Normal Tier. However, each of those little tiny scorpions could actually deal damage, ranging from 46,523 to 66,523 damage! They were capable of penetrating Zhang Yang's Defence with that kind of Attack power. So, Zhang Yang had no intention of letting the little ones get near him!

However, if he could take care of the entire 'nest' of scorpions that erupted from beneath the ground, he would be able to earn tremendous amount of Experience Points. So should he do it?

Zhang Yang commanded Phoenix pet to make their first move. The Phoenix pet began to spit flames, torching up the little scorpions and the giant scorpion in the surroundings. Damage values of approximately '180,000' consecutively popped right on top of the closely packed little

scorpions and the big one. After all, the little ones only had 250,000 HP on each of them. So, they were all burnt to the point that they were all screeching in misery.

Meanwhile, Felice was not standing idly by the side. She was also showing off her strength alongside the Phoenix pet as well. Upon transforming into her Dragonhawk form, she was spreading Fire Damage across the monsters in an attempt to aid the Phoenix pet. After the Phoenix pet's attacks, the little ones were only left with 70,000 HP. Coming into contact with Felice's explosively deadly attacks, the little ones were wiped out clean.

After the two waves of attacks that killed tens of scorpions in the surroundings, the female giant scorpion was infuriated. It reached out with its gigantic pincers and got a hold of the Phoenix pet. Then, it pulled the blazing bird down with its might strength and slammed the phoenix pet onto the ground heavily! Bam! The salt rocks were smashed into pieces. White, powdery salt pebbles were flying everywhere due to the incredible impact of the slam. Zhang Yang could feel that pain when the pebbles struck his face.

Zhang Yang quickly hopped off the back of Phoenix pet. Then, he whirled his scythe around and accumulated enough rage points to unleash hell on the monsters. He stomped both of his legs steadily on the ground. A visible shockwave immediately spread out from his body in all directions. All salt rocks that was within the area of 3-meter radius were reduced to dust. Meanwhile, the little scorpions that got too near to Zhang Yang were afflicted with a damage of '-58,841!'. Every single one of them was also afflicted by movement speed reduction effect.

The Phoenix pet spat out another stream of flame across the scorpions and caused another wave of immense damage to the little crawlers again. Zhang Yang gave no quarter to them at all. He activated his {Blast Wave} closely after the Phoenix's attack and wiped them out.

However, there were still more than 200 little crawlers remaining. They were gushing towards Zhang Yang like a fierce tidal wave. Meanwhile, the gigantic mother scorpion was continuously spamming its {Pincer} and

{Tail Sting} on Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet. However, even though the Attack power of the mother scorpion was much higher than the Attack power of each little scorpion, the number of the baby scorpions was too damn many! The threat that they posed to Zhang Yang when they came at him at the same time would be much worse than the threat that the single mother could pose to him!

{Shield Wall}!

Zhang Yang activated his life-saving Skills immediately. Well, he could actually use this Skill once every 2 and a half minutes. So, there was no reason for him to hold back on using that Skill. He hopped back onto the Phoenix pet and shared the perk of activating his {Shield Wall} with Phoenix pet. He carried forward his plan to annihilate the scorpion's nest. He swung his scythe in the battlefield valiantly. Meanwhile, Phoenix pet and Felice were aiding him in his cause, killing the scorpions one after another, cleansing the surroundings with their insane waves of attacks.

The Phoenix's single attack could averagely deal 180,000 damage to the little ones. It only took a brief moment for the Phoenix to empty out the HP bars of the little scorpions! Furthermore, its flaming tongue could reach out to 15 meters in range. Because of that, the Phoenix could cover quite a lot of ground with its attacks. So, that was the power of a Legendary Tier pet when it came to dealing AoE attacks!

When the 10-second {Shield Wall} vanished, the little ones were completely wiped out. The only monster that remained was the gigantic mother scorpion. She was so infuriated that she began to charge at Zhang Yang with all her might. Her attacks were so intense that the salt rocks in the entire area were smashed into bits and the pebbles of the salt rocks were flying all over the place. The surroundings seemed to have been assaulted by a tornado thunderstorm!

Well, a general without an army would basically be useless. Under the bombardment of Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet, the gigantic scorpion had to admit defeat eventually. She collapsed onto the ground heavily and stay dead. The impact of her collapsed had swept up the dust and pebbles of the salt rocks in the surroundings.

The Elite Tier monster did not drop anything too valuable. However, she did drop a bunch of [Scorpion Tails] and [Scorpion Pincers]. These items could only be sold to the NPCs in the shops for 1 to 2 silver pieces each. So, Zhang Yang did not want to waste his time picking them up. He continued to move forward.

Zhang Yang would encounter another gigantic Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion every time he proceeds forward for approximately 1,000 meters. However, not every Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion had baby scorpions. Some of them were just alone waiting for Zhang Yang to slay them. There was no telling which of the Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpions was a male or a female. There was no telling if these Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpions had the ability of giving birth to new baby scorpions as well. However, Zhang Yang was really happy whenever he encounters a Crystallized Frost Rock Dragon Scorpion with many baby scorpions around. Well, it was because he could earn a tremendous amount of Experience Points by merely slaying the baby scorpions.

If this goes on without any unforeseen circumstances for another 3 days, Zhang Yang believed that he could reach Level 178 by then.

Unfortunately, dreams would always be great while reality is cruel as f*ck!

After moving on for about 20 minutes, Frost Wolves began to reveal themselves across the salt land one after another. Their bodies were totally white to the point that they looked transparent. The only visible part on their bodies were their pair of red eyes which seemed to be filled with the thirst for blood.

Zhang Yang came here for one simple reason, to earn Experience Points. So he did not go on to slaying the Frost Wolves. He turned back and headed east-west. Well, he was initially heading towards the direction of North-South. Well, he wanted to poke every single scorpion nest that he could find on the map!

Half a day had passed, Zhang Yang's Experience Bar had increased by a

few blocks. Unfortunately, there were no longer any scorpion nests for him to poke. There was no telling when the scorpion nests would respawn.

So after knowing that, he was no longer picky. He would just slay anything that came in his way. He ventured across the white and endless land without an actual aim of where he wanted to go. After he started to lose track of time, Zhang Yang found himself arriving before a derelict palace.

This wreckage of a palace seemed to be abandoned long time ago. There was no one, no humans, no Spectres in the vicinity. The palace was basically empty. Other than a few dried corpses and remaining bones, there was nothing else. Obviously, the residents of the palace had left the palace on their own will. There was no bloodshed or whatsoever in the palace at all.

Zhang Yang had not found anything shiny in the vicinity of the palace. Well, it was obvious that there were no quests to be triggered here. Upon scanning the area for a little bit, he carried on with his grinding. A few hours had passed, Zhang Yang continued on slaying monsters without any rest. However, when he looked forward, he saw a bunch of greens far before him. As he got closer to the spot, he realized that he was approaching a forest!

The scenery of spotting a forest in the middle of a salt rock land was just magnificent! The feeling was like spotting a greenland in the middle of a desert! Zhang Yang was a little excited over what he found. So, he quickly patted his pet and flew straight towards the forest. However, before he could descend down to the ground, he was greeted with a large number of arrows from the direction of the forest.

Although Zhang Yang attempted to block the arrows by raising his shield up, he was still shot by the arrows. Well, with the arrows stuck firmly on him, he looked like a hedgehog. Not only was his {Block} ineffective against the arrow attacks, he had also lost tens of thousands of his HP. Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang would never be bothered by that at all. After all, he already had over a million HP at the current stage of the

game.

"Hey!" a voice was heard from the forest, "Why didn't you signal us earlier? I could have accidentally shoot you dead!"

After a brief moment, a young man, a human, walked right out of the forest and waved at Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Alright! I've disabled the defence mechanism of the place! You can come in now!"

[Joseph] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 185

HP: 237,730

Zhang Yang attempted to land again, As expected! This time, he was able to land without being greeted with a large number of arrows. He hopped off the back of phoenix pet and said, "So, you don't like guests, I assume?"

"We don't like those uninvited guests!" Joseph smiled. Then, he continued to speak, "For instance, did you see the Frost Wolves, Salt Tigers and the Curly Monsters while you were on your way here? Those beasts would have destroyed our home if we ever let them in! So, we decided to set up a defensive mechanism by the outskirts of the region. Well, to stop them from invading our home of course!"

Joseph looked at the Phoenix pet. He was mesmerized by the appearance of the phoenix. Then he said, "Outsider, is this mount for sale? I can give you ... two bottles of water!"

Two bottles of water to buy a Legendary pet? Zhang Yang felt the need to beat some senses into this idiot! However, seeing how the entire was covered with salt rocks without any sign of river or water, maybe a drop of water would even be much more valuable than a ton of diamonds!

"Of course not! It's not up for sale!" Zhang Yang shook his head and kept Phoenix pet back in his inventory. The forest was quite thick, actually. It would not be appropriate for the big blazing bird to glide into the forest. Meanwhile, it would also be unwise to fly across the sky. Zhang Yang would never know what hit him if there were more traps or defensive

mechanisms around the forest.

Joseph was very disappointed. The disappointment was written all over his face. However, he was quite an optimistic person. He became cheerful again after a brief moment. Then he said, "Outsider, what's your name? Where do you hail from?"

"Zhan Yu, from White Jade Castle!"

"White Jade what? Castle?" Joseph began muttering to himself. He was confused to hear what Zhang Yang just told him. Obviously, he had not heard of the place before. He scratched his head and said, "The Chief is out of the village, trying to understand the situation outside. He would be very pleased to see you! Zhan Yu, please follow me!"

'Ding! Joseph has given you a quest: Referral! Will you accept?'

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and followed Joseph into the forest. Meanwhile, the young man noticed the existence of Felice. He was mesmerized by the appearance of Felice as well. He expressed that he was willing to give 10 bottles of water as a gift of proposing to Felice. By the end of it, Zhang Yang gave him a solid slap on his face and he fell facedown.

The village that Joseph came from was not far. Well, the forest was not really huge, to begin with. Joseph, Zhang Yang, and Felice had arrived at a small village after a brief while of walking. The village was filled with women and children. There was no sign of any men in the village. According to Joseph, the men had gone out to hunt. Meanwhile, he was still one month away from becoming a real man. So he was only posted to guard the outpost by the outskirts of the forest.

The buildings and facilities in the village were built with woods and sticks. It almost felt like the place was a primitive tribe's village. Well, if it wasn't because of the outside world being in total chaos, this place would be a very good place for a vacation.

The three of them arrived before a small wooden cottage. After Joseph knocked the door a few times over, he opened the door and invited Zhang Yang to enter as well.

There was an old man inside the cottage. The old man was carrying the name 'Chief Hushma'. He was holding a walking stick. He appeared to be very old and clumsy.

After Joseph had introduced Zhang Yang to the Chief, Hushma began to speak, "Outsider, how did you manage to come in here? According to my knowledge, the beasts out there are ferocious!"

"My respected Chief, he has a big bird! A very very very big big bird!" Joseph immediately spoke in excitement, trying to explain to the Chief.

"Huh?" Hushma widened his eyes and said, "So outsider, does that mean you can fly in the sky?"

"Yes, I can!" Zhang Yang nodded.

"That's great!" Hushma knocked his walking stick against the ground as he spoke in excitement. Then he said, "Outsider, we are in dire need of water. Water is the one thing that we need the most now! However, our water supplies are extremely limited! Well, there isn't much rain here. Furthermore, the nearby lakes have been turned into salt! So, we can't use the water anymore. We can only rely on morning dew to preserve our lives here. Although we know that there is a lake that has not been contaminated located by the west side of our village, there are countless deadly monsters roaming in between our village and the lake. So all we can do is to stare at the lake from afar!"

He looked at Zhang Yang with his eyes filled of hope, "Please bring us some clean water! We shall pay you a handsome reward... erm... erk ---" After seeing how the village was doing, Zhang Yang could deduce that clean water was the most valuable thing they could offer. There was simply nothing of the same value that could replace the clean water. So, the Chief immediately started faltering.

The Chief gave it some thought and said, "I can give you the one sword that has been passed down for generations, the 'Kingcross's Sword,' as the reward!"

Chapter 768: Searching for Water

"But chief!" Joseph reacted almost immediately. "The Kingcross's Sword is a holy sword handed down to us by our forefathers. How can we simply gift it to an outsider?"

"Desperate times call for desperate measures! This draught is getting worse with each passing day, do you wish to see our villagers die of thirst?" Hushma spoke with such anger that his whiskers shook. He then calmed himself down and said in a softer tone, "And besides, the holy sword is incomplete. Holding on to only a piece of it is of no use to us!"

"A wise decision, chief!" Joseph instantly buttered up to Hushma instead.

Zhang Yang who watched the conversation taking place in front of him was speechless. If this was an anime, he would have streaks of black lines going down his head.

Hushma then turned and faced Zhang Yang. "So, how about it, stranger? If you bring us enough water to survive this draught, I'll give you the Kingcross Holy Sword that our village has kept for generations!"

"Ding! Chief Hushma has a quest for you: Searching for Water. Will you accept it?"

To be honest, even if the quest did not give him any sort of reward, Zhang Yang would have still taken it nonetheless. After all, having an active quest will make hunting mobs a lot easier. But most of all, it is a sure way of encountering a BOSS monster instead of having to run around, waiting for random encounters.

ACCEPT!

"Ding! You have obtained: Flask x 100."

[Searching for Water] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Village Chief Hushma has requested that you search for freshwater to help the village survive the dreadful draught! However, this task will not be easy, and you will be facing a lot of dangers on your journey. Please be careful! According to Hushma, there is a freshwater

lake located at the peak of Spirit Stone Mountain, to the west of the village.

Progress: Freshwater accuired 0/100

Quest Reward: Kingcross' Sword Piece

[Kingcross' Sword Fragment] (Special Item)

Item Description: Combine seven Kingcross' Sword Pieces with Heavy Smithing to complete the Kingcross' Sword.

The quest did not introduce or explain what the Kingcross' Sword is capable of, and it was obviously not another assembled equipment since it has already been stated that it was a "special item".

Well, whatever. Let's first get this quest over with!

Zhang Yang stepped out of the wooden hut and summoned his pet Phoenix, and under the envious and awe-struck gazes of Joseph and Hushma, he mounted and took off through the skies at blinding speeds.

Riding on the back of his pet Phoenix, Zhang Yang flew west. Although it was stated that Spirit Stone Mountain was not far away from the village, the fact that he took almost two hours of continuous flight before finally having the mountain in his sights proved otherwise! However, this was to be expected. If the water source was close to the village, the villagers would not have needed his help and could have acquired water easily themselves.

The mountain itself was not huge, but had a lake some ten metres wide at the top of it. The water was crystal clear, and occasionally, its surface rippled, caused by billowing mountain winds.

Zhang Yang dismounted from his phoenix and walked up to the lake. But before he can retrieve the flasks from his inventory, a horde of black bulls with green symbols on their backs appeared out of nowhere and charged at him! The bulls moved to surround him while they and stamped and clomped their hooves on the ground, kicking up grass and dirt. The horde closed in on him in a menacing manner, with black flames flaring from their snouts whenever they snorted!

[Wild Bull of Death] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 185

HP: 9,250,000

Defense: 11570

Melee Damage: 81,566-121,566

Skills:

[Wild Charge]: Rushes towards an enemy target at great speed and stuns the target for 3 seconds as well as dealing 50,000 physical damage.
Effective Distance: 3 – 10 meters.

[Flames of Death]: Spits the black flames of death which reduces the enemy target's HP by 10%, but not more than 100,000 each attack.
Effective range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 30 seconds. If the enemy target is out of range, Flames of Death has no cooldown.

Note: Although not the strongest beasts of Marlin's Land of Salt, these Wild Bulls of Death come in great numbers together, enough to frighten off any other monster that approaches them! Be advised, do not ever taunt or challenge a group of these bulls, unless you are looking for death!

"MOO!" One of the bulls signaled to attack, and some ten or so other bulls aimed their horns at Zhang Yang and charged.

So many of them!

Zhang Yang could not fly off at this point, because he would have to deal with their Flames of Death if he did! With this many of them attacking him at once, the damage he will have to take will be in the millions! And even with his shield wall up, that's still not enough!

Having decided to take up this quest to retrieve water for the village, Zhang Yang realized that he would have to deal with these bulls either way, and thus there was no point in running. He has to fight them!

Having decided on that, he activated his phoenix's skills!

The Phoenix screeled, and its whole body grew in size. Its purple and red

feathers glistened with a captivating glow, making it appear strong and majestic!

At level 177, his pet phoenix had a base health of 1,278,060 points. But with the boosts from his {Vitality Aura} and Phoenix's Transformation it now has a max health of over 36,000,000! This number is already on par with Han Ying Xue after he transforms! And that's also because Han Ying Xue has an S class inheritance! This demonstrates just how important having good items is!

BAM! BAM! BAM!

The bulls used their {Wild Charge} and attacked Zhang Yang, taking a huge chunk off his health bar and stunning him for 3 seconds! But despite being stunned, Zhang Yang did not debuff himself with {Warriors Will} just yet. He wanted to wait for the whole mob to step into his melee range first, instead of getting repetitively stunned again and again.

{Flames of Death}!

The bulls then unleashed their fiery attack unto Zhang Yang, each one attack taking off 100,000 points from his health! Health reduction attacks like these are similar to Forbidden Scrolls, they are not subject to armor or damage reductions, and even ignores invincibility!

As soon as the last of the bulls finished its charge and entered melee range, Zhang Yang finally activated the {Warriors Will} and dispelled the stun, and with a quick Sweep from his Scythe, the weapon collected blood off the first bull it struck, and he quickly activated {Horizontal Sweep} to cleave at the mob! Due to the expanded size of the Phoenix Transformation, the Wild Bulls of Death could easily attack Zhang Yang, but were also easily in the range of his attack.

-389,923!

-402,344!

-873,322!

...

Rows and rows of numbers kept popping up, informing him of the damage being dealt. Each attack alone dealt up to 380,000 points of damage, but when there is a critical strike, the damage output jumps up to 900,000! And even though {Horizontal Sweeps} does not have any armor piercing properties, in a group of mobs like this, the damage potential is still very huge!

Swiping once every ten seconds, as long as uninterrupted, was currently his best AOE damage ability. Especially due to its low cooldown!

With this kind of damage, even the bulls and their 9,000,000 plus health points could not last for long. Angry MOOs echoed through the air, and they charged again at the Phoenix.

Zhang Yang dared not dismount from his pet. He was relying on the health buffs it gave to survive. And so, he limited his attacks to only {Blast Wave} and {Horizontal Sweep}. {Thunder Strike} required that he dismount to use, and that was too risky for him.

As it is, his single target attack damage may be very high, but it is still not as much as the cumulative damage from one {Horizontal Strike}! After all, the {Horizontal Strike} was originally a strong single target attack skill itself.

9 seconds later, Zhang Yang used {Charge Up Strike}.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

-1150928!

-1352928!

-1286720!

...

This time, the {Horizontal Sweep} was much more devastating. After being boosted by {Charge Up Strike}, not only were his attacks all critical, the damage had also been increased by 50%!

If any other player were to see Zhang Yang's attack damage right now, they would definitely wrap their hands around their faces and scream in

disbelief! More than 1,000,000 damage per hit from an AOE skill! Not even a player with a 99% completed Inheritance Transformation could pull that off!

But in all actuality, not all AOE skills are boosted by the player's Inheritance Transformations. In Zhang Yang's God of War Transformation, for example, {God of War's Crushing Strike} could be considered as a pure and as his best AOE skill, but the damage potential that it has is only as much as 10 times of his strength, and without the buffs from {Strength Aura}, it could only deal as much as 19,000 damage per target, half of what {Horizontal Sweep} can do!

But considering the fact that {God of War's Crushing Blow} has an AOE of up to 50 meters, and cannot be canceled or evaded, it could potentially deal more damage in total than {Horizontal Sweep} if there were a lot more mobs in the area!

Due to the significant increase in size of the Phoenix, the bulls that were surrounding him became more well-spaced apart. The flames coming from the Phoenix's attacks are in a cone, it is also dealing additional damage, but only in the direction that it is facing. Thus, only a sixth of the bulls are affected by the phoenix's flame attacks.

But after activating the {Phoenix Transformation}, its damage had also increased by many folds. Each simple attack it does is already at 300,000 damage, already at the same level of {Horizontal Sweeps}! Coupled with Felice's flame, the health bars of the entire horde of Wild Bulls of Death keep dropping so fast, and very soon, they started dying to the damage.

That was somewhat to be expected. Zhang Yang had already activated the {Phoenix Transformation}. If Zhang Yang could still not demolish this mob, that would have been weird!

POW!

Finally, the last remaining bull fell, the battle is finally over! It was a shame that Zhang Yang was not a Skin Flayer, or the leather of these bulls would have brought him a small fortune!

What an utter waste!

Zhang Yang shook his head. He then retrieved the flasks from his inventory and started to fill them with water from the lake.

With each flask filled, the progress bar of his quest slowly rose. And as soon as he finished filling all the 100 flasks, he had completed the quest.

The Phoenix transformation could still last for a while more, and Zhang Yang did not want that to go to waste. He started roaming the area and cleared the remaining mobs before returning to the village and reporting to Village Chief Hushma.

Seeing Zhang Yang bringing out flasks and more flasks filled with freshwater made the whole village exclaim in excitement, they all now idolized Zhang Yang as their hero. Their hunting expedition had also just returned, and thus, a bonfire was lit up in the village with a Trunk Boar being roasted on it. The fragrant aroma of roasted meat flowed through the whole forest.

Zhang Yang took out the Kingcross' Sword Piece that he had just received from completing the quest. It is only a small blade fragment of the actual sword, and until he finds and combines them all, this item had no use whatsoever to him. Since it was not a weapon or a quest item, it was absolute junk to him right now!

Well. Whatever. Just put it aside for now.

Zhang Yang sat next to Hushma and was enjoying a nice piece of roasted meat. "Living out here is not easy, why haven't you all thought about moving away?"

"That's easier said than done!" Hushma shook his head as he replied. "For one, the village has been here for many generations, not many of them are willing to move. Secondly, the salt plain is filled with various dangers! Twenty years ago, we tried moving the village once. But just one third into our migration, and we have already lost one-quarter of the villagers, and all of those who died were men! If we had continued moving that time, we would have all succumbed to the wilderness. And so, we came back!"

Chapter 769: Exterminating the Z'orlak Orcs

Zhang Yang did not stay long in the village, there were already no more quests left for him here. But he did ask Hushma more about the Kingcross' Sword before he left. He wanted to know about the sword's history, as well as the whereabouts of the other pieces.

However, Hushma was not able to answer his questions about the sword as it has been handed down in the village for generations, its lore already lost to time. But he did, however, imparted a very interesting piece of information to him: This land was not always this filled with salt crystals! It was once a blushful and green land, filled with life!

But for reasons no longer known to men, the land became dried up with salt. Most of the people who once lived here have sought to move away from the salt and towards places with freshwater, deep inside the forests. However, that decision has made them a prisoner of sorts, for when wild beasts started to adapt to the new environment as well, the human's area of activity became severely limited, restraining their growth as a race.

The ruins which Zhang Yang saw on the salted plains on his way here, were proof of Hushma's tale. It is such a shame, that they were unable to restore themselves to the glory they once had.

Hushma also revealed that the village's history can be traced all the way back in history as being descendants of royalty! When their ancestors left the palace generations ago, they each had a piece of the Kingcross' Sword with them. But they all scattered all across the land after the great migration, and with that, the sword fragments as well.

Following the clues given by the village chief, Zhang Yang headed in the Northwest direction. And after several hours of traveling, he finally arrived at the ruins of a stone palace. The corrosion caused by the salt here was terrible, and there were not much of the ruins left as well. Most of the stone walls have been terribly corroded by the wind, leaving scars on them, telling of their ever-losing battle with time.

However, there were still people here! Unlike Hushma's tribe who ventured deep into the forest generations ago, these people stayed on simply because there was a small freshwater lake in the middle of the ruins, untainted by the salt.

Before Zhang Yang could even dismount, he saw a long line of darkness on the horizon. The line gradually grew bigger and closer, and he could finally see that they were a large number of orcs riders on frost wolves. The orcs bared their sharp fangs and waved their battle axes, while they howled battle cries and charged at the ruined city.

"ENEMY INCOMING!" Scouts rang through the ancient city as hundreds of defenders with various kinds of weapons and armor appeared on the what's left of the city walls. But this was to be a losing battle for them, as the only ranged attack they could muster was from a few bowmen, they lacked the firepower of magic canons, and in terms of numbers, the orcs outnumber them 3 to 1!

Zhang Yang easily picked his side: The humans in the old palace had a green-friendly status on their names, while the orcs were red, signifying that they were the obvious enemy.

WHOOSH WHOOSH WHOOSH!

As soon as the orcs came into range, the defenders on the walls started firing arrows from their high ground. But against the naturally thick and hardened skin of the orcs, there was a very narrow limit to just how much damage they could do, and the orc invaders easily withstood their attacks.

Zhang Yang swept in between the two colliding forces on the battlefield, the brilliance of his Phoenix mount catching the attention of both the invaders and the defenders alike. Seeing that he was also human, the defenders on the walls all looked expectantly at him. This man came riding on a Phoenix, he must be strong! From the orcs, however, came a chain of battle cries, as they momentarily stopped in their tracks before switching to attack Zhang Yang instead.

These orcs were merely normal monsters and number less than a thousand, thus they were of no threat to Zhang Yang. With the Scythe in

his hand, coupled with his Phoenix's Flamethrower as well as Felice's flame, he made short work of the whole mob and gained a decent number of EXP in the process.

When the orcs have been thinned down to half their initial numbers, the defenders in the ruins charged out as well, but before they could even make it to the front lines, the battle has already ended! That was just how strong Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Phoenix were!

The human soldiers cheered and ushered their new hero into the city with the warmest and most sincere welcome they could give.

That night, the hosts lit a bonfire in the palace square and roasted good meat, and they also brought out their finest wine. Many young men and women danced to music around the fire, celebrating the glorious battle they witnessed during the day, and their new lease on life.

Zhang Yang sat right next to the castle lord, Lord Marvinus, during the banquet, signifying his standing with the city.

"Warrior, we are in your debt! Those wretched orcs have been constantly trying to seize control of this palace for the freshwater it holds inside. If it wasn't for your help today, I fear that we may have already perished to their brutality! Bwahahaha, we will definitely repay you for your act of kindness!" Marvinus said as he laughed heartily.

Zhang Yang merely smiled and retrieved the Kingcross' Sword piece he carried in his backpack. "My lord, it is very simple if you wish to return my favor: Just give me an item of similar value to this!"

"Hmmm?" Marvinus eyes lit up when he saw the sword piece. "The Kingcross' Sword!"

"That's right!"

Marvinus looked very serious as he went into deep thought. A short while later, he replied, "The Kingcross' Sword is an heirloom that has been handed down to us from our ancestors for many generations! However, it does nothing more than simply gather dust in the treasury. Since we can neither eat it nor use it... Very well then! Warrior, if you can exterminate

the hoard of Z'orlak Orcs that have been plaguing us for good, I will reward you with the Kingcross' Sword!"

"DING! Marvinus has issued you a quest: Exterminate the Z'orlak Orcs. Will you accept it?"

Zhang Yang immediately accepted the quest. And despite Lord Marvinus asking him to stay on for the celebration, he still summoned his pet Phoenix and took off.

As he was flying, he opened the quest menu to check the quest info and was slightly surprised that the quest was at rank B difficulty!

If a rank C difficulty quest would already give him a whole mob of elites to deal with, doesn't that mean that a B rank would have a BOSS?

The phoenix flew across the sky, casting a beautiful red glow upon the night. After about half an hour of flying, he arrived at a secluded valley where the Z'orlak orc tribe dwelled. The entrance into the valley had only simple fortifications that consisted of a couple of rows of spiked wooden boards as barricades which protects the pathway leading inwards, and was guarded by eight orc grunts guarding at the front.

Zhang Yang made the Phoenix swoop down and head directly into the valley. Even though he was still flying high above the guards, the game works out such that as long as a player enters a monsters aggro range, he will still draw aggro from the monsters even though he may have approached them from behind. So, when Zhang Yang was at 20 meters above, the eight orcs all looked up and drew their weapons in rage.

The measly eight orcs were no trouble at all to Zhang Yang as he simply just whipped out the Scythe and cut through them like a hot knife through butter, converting them into EXP for himself. He then made sure to pick up the [Ashen Cloth] pieces that were dropped. These were materials dropped by monsters with levels above 180 and can be collected and made into high-grade cloth for equipment making, as well as [Ashen Bandages], a first aid healing item than heals 200,000 HP in 10 seconds.

Ever since Felice has acquired the Tree of Life transformation, Zhang Yang had no need for health potions or bandages, but it is never a bad

thing to be prepared. After all, 200 of these bandages only take up one item slot in his inventory space.

Continuing onward, Zhang Yang noticed that this was more of an orc barracks than the orcish outposts he came across previously, and that the buildings were all made from salt! But considering the geography of the area, it was not exactly a surprise: There were almost no trees to build with.

The quest objective was simply for him to slay the Z'arlok Orcs leader, Tartarsia. But since he's already here, might as well grind some more EXP points! Zhang Yang immediately went to work.

And as he slowly cleared the mobs and made his way towards the deeper parts of the valley, he reached an enormous salt crystal building at the end of the barracks. Eight orc monsters spawned from the building, but this time, they were not the ordinary ones he faced before... They were all elites! It seems that Zhang Yang was getting closer to fighting the BOSS!

[Tartarsia's Guards] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 186

HP: 9,250,000

Defense: 11570

Melee Damage: 81566-121566

Skills:

[Blood Thirst]: Increase damage dealt by 20%, also increases damage received by 10%. Lasts 1 minute.

[Tornado Cleave]: Deal 150% physical damage to all enemy targets in melee range.

The elite monsters on this map are really something. On other maps with mob levels between 150-180, the elite monsters there are unable to deal any damage to Zhang Yang at all. But here, they can easily deal almost 10,000 damage with their auto attacks! This damage is much more dangerous to Zhang Yang, even with his strength as it is now!

Thankfully, Zhang Yang was not here alone. With support healing from Felice, his {Thunder Strike} to reduce their speed, along with the Phoenix's fire-based attacks, he easily defeated the 8 elite orc guards!

Having a smooth clear so far, Zhang Yang took the stairs made of salt crystals and headed up to the second floor, to face the target for his quest-Tartarsia.

This is one bad*ss looking boss. Tartarsia stood tall at 2 meters in height, was not clad in anything else except for the pelt wrapped around his hip, with muscular arms that are thicker than Zhang Yang's thighs! His eye blood red, with two fangs protruding out of his lower lips, and a necklace made of children's skulls hanging around his neck. The details and aesthetics of this boss were simply amazing!

[Tartarsia, Leader of the Z'alok Orcs] (Holy, Humanoid)

Level: 185

HP: 925,000,000

Defense: 18470

Melee Damage: 139465-209465

Skills:

{Club Bash}: Forcefully bashes the target's head with a club, dealing 100% physical melee attack damage, has 10% chance to stun target for 3 seconds.

{Viper Pit}: Sets a trap on the ground. When an enemy step on it, the poisonous snakes concealed within the trap will appear and deal 100,000 natural damage to the victim.

Note: Before Tartarsia became the leader of the Z'arlok Clan, he was an outstanding hunter, notorious for his ferocity and hunger for battle.

WHAT A WEAK BOSS!

Zhang Yang sighed. But since there were no ascended BOSSes yet on the map, he will have to make do with just a Holy BOSS.

The BOSS' HP was rather high, and will need a quite a bit of time killing off. After applying the defense and parry debuff on him, Zhang Yang's normal attacks could already hit him for 30,000 to 40,000! And even the BOSS' skills, {Club Bash} and {Viper Pit} could not even deal more than 100,000 damage to him at once. Meaning to say, even Felice could easily beat this guy!

So what are we waiting for? Let's get this over with!

Zhang Yang issued a command to Felice, and the girl transformed into the Tree of Life, becoming a huge tree with two legs. With her current equipment and stats, in her normal mode, her healing skill damage can definitely wipe out 99.999999% of other players.

Chapter 770: The Spectre Cavern

"Who goes there? How dare you trespass into the territory of the great Z'alok Clan!" Upon seeing Zhang Yang trespassing into their territory, Tartarsia let out a deafening roar. Then, he conveniently picked up a long and thick quarterstaff and swung it straight towards Zhang Yang with a full swing!

The body mass of the orc was so sturdy and strong! Every step he took struck the ground so hard that the buildings in the surroundings were trembling. There were also cracks appearing all over the crystal salt surface. The cracks were spreading out like a spider web.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

A savage battle had just begun! The boss was unbelievably strong and intimidating. The boss whirled his weapon across a massive range. There was no telling what sort of material was used to make the quarterstaff. It was as tough as a Holy Tier Scythe. Sparks flew out of the weapon repeatedly while the boss was swinging it around like nobody's business.

"Die! All of you! Just die!" The boss was getting more ferocious than ever. Every single hit he did was critical. The entire building was trembling so violently to the point that the ground was cracking like nobody's business. Those 'spider webs' were covering the entire ground and expanding up to the wall, and then to the ceiling of the building! Holy moly!

"You pitiful weak humans! Your strength will never match the mighty orcs!" Tartarsia let out a rumbling roar and swing another hit towards Zhang Yang! Bam! The hit landed solidly on the surface of Zhang Yang's shield. It was a full-blown hit. The impact was so powerful that the ground beneath Zhang Yang's feet crumbled! Well, the entire floor was about to collapsed down to the floor below!

Zhang Yang was the first to fall to the floor below. However, the boss was not able to avoid himself from sharing the same fate. The entire floor of that level was so badly damaged that countless cracks and holes were all across the floor. If you look down, you could even see everything on the

level below them with perfect clarity! With Zhang Yang falling down to the floor beneath him, the entire floor collapsed as well! However, that was not the end, the collapse of the upper floor had caused a chain reaction to the entire building. The entire building began to collapse! The salt dusts were flying all over the place! The entire scene was spectacular!

Crash! Crash!

Zhang Yang and the boss crawled out of the salty rubbles almost at the same time. Felice and the Phoenix pet followed closely right after that. Now that the entire building had collapsed, the surroundings had become an outdoor environment. Zhang Yang could now mount himself onto his Phoenix pet! Mounting onto his pet mount, Zhang Yang's Maximum HP had been insanely boosted up!

However, that was not important. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang did not have to be occupied with giving commands to the Phoenix pet so that the gigantic blazing bird would not go right into the traps. He would only need to focus on himself now. Meanwhile, Felice had a super intelligent AI controlling her actions. Her reactions were basically much faster than Zhang Yang's. There was no need to worry about her at all.

"Stinky orc! Just wash your neck nicely, and wait for me to chop it off!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

Tartarsia was glaring at Zhang Yang like a raging idiot. Well, they had launched wars on the human castles to claim their castles to themselves because they were lacking water sources. So, he was infuriated the moment he heard that human telling him to wash his neck! That would be a waste that he would not accept!

Even the human who had water sources were not daring enough to waste water like that. It would be a blissful moment if they could have one bottle of pure water. So, what kind of nonsense was washing one's body with precious water? That would be foolish!

"Speaking to a fool like you could really bring my intelligence down to a filthy level!" The boss humph in disdain repeatedly. "Just die already!"

What the hell?! Did the NPC just look down upon Zhang Yang?!

Zhang Yang had no idea whether to laugh or to cry at the same time. However, he was not there to show off to the boss. Whirling his scythe around, Zhang Yang repeatedly sliced at the boss, reducing his HP bar. Furthermore, the Phoenix pet was not staying idle either. It was also dealing a terrifying amount of damage to the boss.

90%... 80%... 70%...

After all, the boss was still a Holy Tier boss. Even though Zhang Yang was relying on his defensive methods and Felice's healing capability to stay undefeated in the battle, he still took approximately 40 minutes to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 20% left! It was 'Killing Cleave' stage now!

Unfortunately, Holy Tier bosses had become second-grade bosses since the appearance of the Ascended Tier bosses. Tartarsia did not only lose his HP Recovery Skill but had also lost the Berserk Effect. Other than crapping more frequently, his pattern of attacks and Skills did not become more frequent. His death was imminent!

If this was a Level 150-180 map, even if Zhang Yang was battling against a Level 170 Holy Tier boss, he would not have the capability to solo the boss. That was because those bosses would have {Spectre's Constitution} or {Elemental Constitution} which could recover more HP of the boss than the amount of damage Zhang Yang and Phoenix pet could deal. Even if Felice could heal the both of them up, it would be an endless battle if both sides would not die.

However, now that Zhang Yang was here, the level of the Holy Tier boss would not matter much here. Zhang Yang could still take the boss all by himself. It seemed that the Tier of the boss was the only factor that could define the strength of a boss on this map.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{Killing Cleave}!

'-1,948,170!'

Because the additional basic attack was much higher, pairing his

{Charge Up Strike} with his {Killing Cleave} had allowed him to deal much more damage than he could by pairing up {Charge Up Attack} with his {God of War Devastation}!

The boss was in so much pain that he kept roaring in rage. However, that would not change his doomed fate. Another 7 minutes had passed. The strange-looking orc had finally collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead. The impact of the orc's fall trembled across the ground and the necklace made of baby skulls shattered into pieces.

As Tartarsia was no longer the top Tier boss on the map, although there was still Holy Tier equipment among the loots he dropped, the additional attributes on the equipment were not as good as those on the equipment that had been dropped by the other Holy Tier bosses from other maps.

[Berserker's Charge Necklace] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +4,201

Strength: +1,030

Agility: + 1,030

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,400 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: When your attack is being blocked or avoided, your next attack will definitely be a Critical Hit. Upon activating the effect, the effect will not be triggered again until 20 seconds later.

Required Level: 180

This necklace did not have both offense and defense attributes. It was more on offense. Other than that, it also did not have the Special that reduced the Required Level by 20 levels. Well, it can't be helped though. The value of this necklace would surely be very low. However, the necklace was still not bad, though. Looking at its offensive attribute, the necklace could still provide a decent boost for the user to battle against Tankers. Well, it would be common for one's attack to be blocked or avoided. So the special attribute of this necklace would allow the user of it to deal critical

damage to their targets from time to time!

Unfortunately, the effect would have a 20-second cooldown every time it was triggered. Meanwhile, the fully improved {Block} would only have a 6-second cooldown.

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts about it and believed that his Defence was already high enough as it currently is. So he had no need to wear a full set of defensive type equipment. Furthermore, the necklace did not add any attribute points on the Defence attribute. The only defensive attribute of the necklace was its ability to absorb damage. Well, his {Amoss's Nose Hoop} only provided him with 485 Damage Absorption. So it would not actually affect him much if he switches this necklace in. The only obvious improvement would be his Attack power.

If he does not find any better necklace than this when he reaches Level 180, then he would just take this necklace and use it.

Zhang Yang put the necklace into his inventory for the moment. As for the other loot that the boss dropped, there was one Holy Tier leather armor. He did not even give it a glance. He just shoved the equipment into his inventory. Well, if the boss was not a top Tier boss, then there would not be any chance to get Skill Point Crystal or Skill Book out of the loots.

Upon riding on Phoenix pet, Zhang Yang went back to the castle to turn the quest in. When the soldiers of the castle hung the head of Tartarsia on the gate of the castle, everyone in the castle was cheering loud with joy. They would not have to worry about any orc problems in the future.

Zhang Yang acquired the second piece of 'Kingcross's Sword,' as expected. Upon getting information about the whereabouts of the third piece of the 'Kingcross's Sword', he continued to move forward.

Although there were a total of 7 pieces 'Kingcross's Sword', every piece of the item would leave a hint and a trace for the players to follow so that they would be able to find the next one. Furthermore, the quests for obtaining each piece were not that difficult to complete. They were just a little troublesome and pointless. They would send players running across the land like idiots.

Upon acquiring the fifth piece of the 'Kingcross's Sword', Zhang Yang was notified that the Lone Desert Smoke had enough Level 170 players in the guild. They could now unlock the new dungeon 'Spectre's Cavern'.

The Spectre's Cavern had a very important value in it.

The value lies not in the 'First Clear' of the dungeon, but the equipment that the dungeon would drop for the players. The Tier of the equipment would be allow their wielders to jump ahead of everyone else in the game!

According to the Official's information, the highest Tier of the equipment dropped from the dungeon would be Holy Tier. Even if the dungeon is a Level 300 dungeon, that would not change as well. The system of the game would never cause the values of the equipment to drop.

The highest Tier for the equipment in the game would be the Celestial Tier. However, it was nearly impossible for everyone to acquire a Celestial Tier equipment. After all, the number of Celestial Tier equipment was already stated clearly to everyone. There were only 9 Demon Lords and 7 Spectre Kings in the game as of now. Because the duration of the bosses spawning was limited, even if someone manages to take the bosses down, the number of the Celestial Tier equipment would be limited to the number of the bosses as well.

Therefore, top Tier players would only aim to obtain Ascended Tier equipment as of now. The best equipment that a high level dungeon could offer was just Holy Tier equipment.

Spectre's Cavern was the first dungeon in the game to drop Holy Tier equipment!

Well, the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon would drop Holy Tier equipment while the Hard Mode of the dungeon would drop Ethereal Tier equipment. Last but not least, the Normal Mode of the dungeon would only drop Mythical Tier equipment. That would be expected in the dungeons that have yet to be unlocked. Therefore, the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern had some very special value to it. After all, Zhang Yang still had over 6 pieces of Ethereal Tier equipment on him. He would

need to upgrade sooner or later.

Well, for a Level 170 player, the player would need to reach at least Level 180 in order to be eligible to equip a Level 200 Ascended Tier equipment. Currently, the best ones would only be able to collect a full set of Holy Tier equipment when they reach beyond Level 170. The temptation was extreme for the player. After all, who would pass on the opportunity to get equipment with the highest Tier at the current stage of the game?

Currently, the Lone Desert Smoke had cleared the Normal and Hard Mode of the dungeons. There was a total of 52 members who had reached Level 170 and beyond. They could now move on to challenging the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon.

However, the bosses in the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon were all Holy Tier bosses. The bosses were basically so powerful that they had absolute advantages over the players. Furthermore, it would not be possible for players to use numbers in order to bring down the bosses in a dungeon. Well, dungeons limited the number of players that could enter at the same time. That had brought the difficulty up to another level!

Ten days had passed, there was no news about anyone clearing the first boss. It seemed that the difficulty of the dungeon was far more difficult than anyone had anticipated.

The first boss of the dungeon had a super high Attack power and the boss had a complex pattern of attacks as well. Meanwhile, most players only had Ethereal Tier equipment on them. It would be extremely difficult for them to even stand their ground against the boss. Well, some of them had attempted to battle the boss with their Transformations. However, the number of players with Class A and Class S Inheritance was extremely limited in the game after all. So, the players were not able to survive the boss's attack the moment the boss went into Berserk mode.

Well, it would not be easy at all for the players to claim the Holy Tier equipment.

Zhang Yang had not collected all 7 pieces of the fragment at that moment. Before he could do that, he had been 'summoned' by the

Expedition Force of his guild. Well, they insisted that they wanted to take down the first boss of the Hardcore Mode, no matter what.

Even though Zhang Yang intended to train his guild to be more independent, he knew he had to step in this time around because losing might just reduce their morale. So Zhang Yang had to delay his quest in order to satisfy the desire to win of his guild members. He decided to gather the best there is in his guild and take out the first boss of the dungeon! As for the remaining 8 bosses, he would not be taking part in slaying them. Well, he was not interested in one Skill Point after all.

Another main reason was because the first boss of the Hardcore Mode seemed to have stopped the progress of every other guild in the entire server. Well, truth to be told, Zhang Yang believed that the boss can be taken down with a few methods. He could have just thrown out some [Forbidden Scrolls] or activate his Single-unit Status Restriction Skill on the boss. The boss would be easily taken down by then. After all, this was just the first boss of the dungeon. If the players could not take out the first one, how would they be able to take out the remaining 8 bosses in the dungeon, then?

Would it mean that they would need to burn 8 more [Forbidden Scrolls] in order to do that?

Speaking of which, using 9 [Forbidden Scrolls] to get each of the 50 players with one Skill Point would not sound wise and worth.

Well, everyone's eyes were fixed on how to get the equipment. They would not care about the 'First Clear' of the dungeon for the moment.

That's right. Everyone's progress was not swift at all. Many of them were gathering equipment from the Hard Mode of the dungeon to upgrade themselves. After all, they would need to prepare themselves well enough before they could go up against more powerful bosses.

Chapter 771: Skeletal Guardian, Antarkt

After distributing the potions to all of his party members, the party of 50 players gathered by the entrance of the dungeon.

The dungeon was merrier than expected. Players who had reached beyond Level 170 were present then to try out. Even when they did not have enough Level 170 players in their guild, they still came to the dungeon to form a new random party. Well, they planned to grind and farm in the dungeon's Hard Mode for equipment first. After all, the Hard Mode of the dungeon would still give players Ethereal Tier equipment. Currently, only a very small portion of top Tier players were able to have Holy Tier equipment on them. Ethereal Tier equipment was still rare, not to mention very precious and powerful to most of the players at the current stage of the game.

However, the dungeon had also implemented the same 'system' as the Death Swarm dungeon. The equipment of this dungeon were all 'bound upon pickup'. However, that would also mean that the players would not drop the equipment upon their death by the hands of other players. That had improved the desire of the players to clear the dungeon for the equipment. Well, they would not lose the equipment they pick up from the Spectre's Cavern.

Although the Hard Mode was quite hard as well, the players would be able to do well if they could just get themselves familiarized with the monsters and bosses in the dungeon. As long as they could do that, they could even clear the Hard Mode, even though they only had a full set of Mythical Tier equipment. Well, there was no minimum requirement to how much DPS the players need to deal with the bosses after all. Therefore, the entrance of the dungeon was filled with players from across the server. Many parties were recruiting Tankers and Healers at the moment.

--- Well, Tankers and Healers were rare when their number was compared to the number of DPS players. Among the 13 Classes in the game, Tankers and Healers had their own two categories. Their total

numbers combined only took up 30% of the entire populations in the server. Meanwhile, because the two Classes did not have high DPS, normally players would not feel the fun of they could not deal much damage on their targets. Therefore, the number of Tankers and Healers might be lower than anticipated.

A party of 50 players would normally need 5 Tankers and 10 Healers. That ratio was coincidentally 30% of the entire party as well. However, because the number of Tankers and Healers in the entire server was very limited, the parties would always be short on Tankers and Healers.

Therefore, most of the parties were shouting out to recruit Healers and Tankers by the entrance of the dungeon. Meanwhile, the DPS players were posting out their HP amount and their DPS in order to attract others to join them.

Wei Yan Er laughed out loud and said, "Noob tank, if you go out and shout now, many will surely come and join you!"

"Alright then. So you'll have to tank the boss for the party. I'll switch to another party now. It'll be much easier for me to clear the Hard Mode!" Zhang Yang gave a flick of his finger on the forehead of the little brat. The little brat was so angry that her eyes were moving around like a marble moving around in high speed. She was also muttering endlessly on her own.

Zhang Yang had also met some friends there. The Crimson Rage and the Imperial Sky were there as well.

Well, battling an Open World boss was no longer as worthwhile as clearing a dungeon these days. So, the other top Tier guilds came here to give it a try as well. Because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, everyone could only battle one Holy Tier boss on the Open World Map. On the other hand, in this dungeon, they could battle 9 Holy Tier bosses straightaway without the need to search around. Of course, it would be more worthwhile to challenge a dungeon.

Naturally, the equipment that the bosses in the dungeon dropped would not have both offensive and defensive attributes. Those equipment would

not have the Special Effect of reducing 20 Levels for the Level Requirement. They would be similar to the [Berserker's Charge Necklace] that Zhang Yang had acquired earlier on. The aforementioned equipment had an "only one-sided attribute", that is, either offensive or defensive.

In a nutshell: The best equipment would be the equipment that was obtained from killing Open World Bosses.

Because the entrance to the dungeon was just by The Plagued Land, players from all eight Regions had to travel all the way there in order to enter the dungeon. While they were recruiting party members, it would be hard for them to avoid conflicts. There were some small-scale battles happening across the area. And sometimes, there would be chaotic battles as well. Well, the situation was quite chaotic, to begin with.

Zhang Yang and his gang had a conflict with the players from Africa Region and America Region while they were gathering up. However, things did not go the way they thought it would. The moment when the enemy's AoE attacks spread, players from the other 7 Regions were pulled into the battle as well. Instantly, the entire area became a war zone. Everything became so chaotic that Zhang Yang and his gang took the opportunity to enter the dungeon. They went in in time to avoid from being trapped in the middle of a war they did not intend to start at all. Or else some of Zhang Yang's weaker members of his party would have been killed in the process.

Well, there was no benefit to gain from battling against other players here. It would just be pointless. As for conquering main cities or territories, there would still be some values in those battles. Everything that was happening in front of the dungeon's entrance was just pure chaos! It was actually unnecessary.

Upon entering the dungeon, whoever had Aura Skills would just activate their own Aura Skills. Meanwhile, the others quickly take some snacks. After all, consuming on a [Chicken Burger] could boost 400 attribute points.

The environment of the dungeon was spooky as f*ck. They were

currently standing in the middle an entrance to an underground mausoleum. The long and endless path that lay before them looked extremely eerie. For every 4 to 5 meters, there would be one torch hanging on both sides of the wall. Well, there was also a row of skeleton patrols right in front of them. They were marching slowly towards Zhang Yang and the others. There were a total of 6 skeleton patrols.

[Skeletal Patroller] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 170

HP: 100,000,000

Defence: 11,030

Melee Attack: 76,321 – 116,321

Skills:

[Flare Star]: Causes a total of 500,000 Fire Damage to all enemy targets within the range of 10-meter radius.

[Force Strike]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target, providing 10% rate to trigger an additional attack.

[Resonance]: Increased damage by 100% once for every extra Skeleton Patroller in the surroundings.

"First group, follow Zhan Yu! Second group, follow Endless Starlight. Third group, follow Ten Dusk! Fourth group..." Mountain Mover assigned the party into groups as he would always do. He assigned the party members into different groups with different roles according to the Skills of the monsters. "Everyone, stay close to the Tankers in your own groups. Make sure you all share the damage of the {Flare Star}. Other than that, Zhan Yu will take the first and the second monsters from the left. Endless Starlight will lure the third..."

After a brief moment, the party of 50 players was split up into 5 different groups. 5 Tankers went up to engage the monsters. They were using their Skills such as {Spear of Obliteration} and {Shield Toss} to get the aggro of the monsters they were assigned to deal with. They quickly

split the monsters up to avoid the monsters from stacking up their Attack power with their {Resonance}. If these monsters had the opportunity to stack up their Attack power to the point that Zhang Yang and the gang could no longer handle, then they would be wiped out by these 6 monsters in one instant!

"... These Elite Tier monsters are basically bosses! What the f*ck!?" Fatty Han was complaining in his funny high pitch voice again.

"That's right! They're even as tough as the bosses! But they only drop what a monster would drop after they die! The system is bullying us! Pui!" Endless Starlight became to pair up with Fatty Han in sparring bad words as usual.

"Well, think about it. This dungeon has 9 Holy Tier bosses. You should just know when to be satisfied!" Lost Dream said, "As long as you reach the level required to enter the dungeon, you can enter and clear the dungeon. If the monsters and bosses are too easy to kill, then Holy Tier equipment will fill the streets. By then, they will become so common that they won't cost much as well. Then it will become pointless to even have the Holy Tier equipment!"

"Enough talk! Clear out the monsters first!" Mountain Mover spoke in a serious tone. He was currently the commander of the party. So before the party was dissembled, he would be the boss of everyone.

The 5 Tankers had taken over the aggro of the monsters they were assigned to tank. Everyone immediately turned their attention towards the monsters that Zhang Yang tanked against. Well, Zhang Yang could keep the monsters' aggro very firmly. Also, he was tanking two Elite Tier monsters at the same time. So, he would feel more pressure than the other Tankers. Therefore, taking out the monsters that Zhang Yang was handling would be their first choice.

Zhang Yang threw his {Surrogacy} onto Starry Fire because that man currently had the weakest equipment on him. Because of that, Starry Fire suddenly performed exceptionally well. His Defence power had exceeded even the Defence of Endless Starlight because he currently shared the

same amount of Defence Zhang Yang has. Everyone could not help but feel that the Skill was a little overpowered.

Of course, those who made it here would be worthy enough to be handpicked by Zhang Yang and his powerful friends. So, their equipment would not be too weak as well.

Zhang Yang was sighing out loud while he was chopping the monsters up. He was currently Level 178. It would not take long before he could finally equip the [Agos, The Destroyer's Blade]. If he could just equip that Ascended Tier weapon now, his Attack power would increase by a notch or two!

Using the correct approach, no one had to die. Under the powerful bombardment of the party, they managed to take out the first Skeleton Patrol, followed by the second, then the third.... In just about 4 to 5 minutes, they managed to take out all 6 monsters.

The monsters found in this tunnel could be categorized into two different types. One would be fixed on the walls on two sides. Well, they basically cannot move at all. There would be one on each side. So they were easy to be dealt with. The other type would be the ones they encountered earlier on. They would be the type that patrol around and move around frequently. There would always be 6 of them seen together. Usually, they would move and act together. They would be harder for Zhang Yang and the party to deal with.

The monsters were not hard to kill, though, as long as the Tankers do their job well and avoid letting the monsters run into each other. Without [Resonance] buffing the monsters up, there would be nothing to worry about.

After killing and proceeding forward for nearly an hour, the party had finally arrived before the first boss of the dungeon.

It was a gigantic white-bone skeleton. It seemed to be at least 30 meters tall. The skeleton was wearing some dark shiny armor, looking strange and bizarre. It was holding a gigantic axe with its two skeletal hands. Just like the usual Spectres, there were greenish flames igniting deep within

the socket eyes of the skeleton skull. Well, even though the boss looked strange and bizarre, it was still intimidating to even look at.

[Skeletal Guardian, Antarkt] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,153 – 200,153

Skills:

[Summoned Skeleton]: Summons a Skeleton Patroller to join the battle.
Cooldown: 1 minute.

[Destructive Smash]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage, causing the target to suffer a reduction of 10% Healing Efficiency as well. Last for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 8 seconds.

[Crippling Pain]: Radiates out 8 rays into the surroundings. Upon hitting the targets, causes 200,000 Fire Damage to the targets, causing the targets to suffer a reduction of 10% Movement Speed. Last for 8 seconds. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

[Frostbite]: Hail upon an area with ice rocks, causing 100,000 Frost Damage to all targets in every second. Last for 10 seconds. Can only be used after using {Crippling Pain}. Cooldown: 30 seconds

[Dominator Aura]: Deal one attack on all targets within the range of 50-meter radius in each passing second, causing an amount of damage equal to 2% HP of the targets.

[Spectre's Fury]: When the battle exceeds 10 minutes, Antarkt will use {Spectre's Fury} once in every second. Causes 1,000,000 Chaos Damage to all enemy targets in the dungeon.

Obviously, this was battle depending on the DPS of the players. Because in 10 minutes, the boss would activate its {Spectre's Fury} and kill all players who did not activate their Inheritance Transformations. Well, Tankers might still survive the attack, though. However, the cooldown of

the boss's {Spectre Fury} was merely 1 second! How do you expect any players to survive that!? Even players that activated their Inheritance Transformation would not survive that sort of attacks --- that amount of DPS was the DPS of a Celestial Tier boss!

In other words, the players must take out the boss before 10 minutes is up. Even if they are not able to take out the boss, they must not leave too much HP left on the boss's HP bar. Well, players with powerful Inheritance Transformation could still hold on for a little while more to take out the boss after the boss's {Spectre Fury} is activated.

However, after they took a closer look at the boss's other Skills, everyone knew that they would have to move around the battle stage quite often. Well, the combination of the {Crippling Pain} and the {Frostbite} would definitely send them running around in the surroundings in order to stay alive. At the same time, the Skeleton Patrolers would be tanked by the Tankers. Meanwhile, some of the players would need to be responsible for receiving {Flare Star} in their faces. So, should they focus on killing any monster that is spawned, or should they focus on the boss and take it out first?

If they decided to focus on taking out the monster spawned before the second one was spawned, then the HP bar of the boss would not be the only amount of HP the players need to empty out. They would need to take into account the HP bar of the monsters spawned as well. Killing each of the Skeleton Patroller spawned would give the boss an extra 100,000,000 HP! What the f*ck!

Meanwhile, the firepower of the party was the key to their survival. If that were to happen, they might be wiped out by the boss in an instant!.

Chapter 772: Taking down the first boss!

Therefore, after everyone had a brief discussion, they decided not to kill the monsters. They've made their own calculations. Under the circumstance that they do not activate their Inheritance Transformations, the party would barely kill the boss under 10 minutes with their current firepower. It would be a difficult battle. If they wanted to assign some of their men to deal with the Skeleton Patrollers once they are spawned, they would end up being wiped out by the boss's {Spectre's Fury} and the monsters eventually.

Truth be told, Mountain Mover had brought a party in, attempting to kill the boss before this. They failed because they did not have the firepower to kill the boss within 10 minutes. Even though they had insanely powerful DPS players such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er, they were still a little short on firepower to bring the boss down to its knees within 10 minutes. It seemed that the shortage of firepower could not be overcome, even after Zhang Yang and the others join in.

However, based on some calculations, it would be possible to take out the boss within 10 minutes without having to activate any Inheritance Transformations. That would require every single one of the members of the party to deal damage at 100% capacity! However, because the boss would use its {Frostbite} and {Crippling Pain} constantly, the party would need to move around in order to stay alive in the boss battle. They would not be able to stay and deal damage to the boss at their 100%.

The tactic used would involve Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight and Ten Dusk handling the monsters. Each of them would be handling two monsters at a time. The remaining 3 monsters would be handled by the remaining two Tankers. Additionally, Zhang Yang would throw his {Surrogacy} on the weakest DPS player among the party and let the player tank against the last monster --- as for the 10th monster, when the monster is spawned on the 10th minute of the boss battle, it would not matter if the party has anyone to tank the monster or not. They would be wiped out by the boss's {Spectre's Fury} by then.

Each Tanker would be followed by 7 other players. Well, they would stand together and share the damage they receive from {Flare Star}. They would also share the pain they receive from the {Crippling Pain} and {Frostbite} as well!

Therefore the Tankers would decide the fate of the party in such regard. Well, if a Tanker takes a wrong step, the Tanker would be leading the players following them into sustaining additional damage. Well, that would also mean that the group would almost definitely be killed as well. When any one of the groups die, well, there was no need to tell what the monster would do after that. Furthermore, with a group less in the party, the party would not have enough firepower to kill the boss in time. By then, the party would have to accept their fate and be wiped out!

Truth to be told, they would still be short in firepower to take out the boss within the timeframe.

If the boss would just spawn one Skeleton Patroller, the party could just slay the monster and focus on taking down the boss after that. Well, they would be able to deal over 1,700,000,000 damage in 10 minutes if that is the case. They would not have to be so busy and tired then.

Unfortunately, with their current Tier of equipment, they had to make do like so. Well, it was obvious that Zhang Yang and the party was not powerful enough to crush the boss with pure brute force --- which guild would be so powerful to do that, huh?

So how about Inheritance Transformation then? The boss's {Dominator Aura} would cause a disastrous amount of damage to all players who activated their Inheritance Transformations of course. Players would gain tens of millions of HP by activating their Inheritance Transformations. Just imagine how much HP would they lost then. The boss's {Dominator Aura} could deal a damage of the same amount as the players' 2% HP in each passing second. If a player had over 10,000,000 HP, the player would be suffering 200,000 HP in each passing second! Even if Han Ying Xue had activated her Inheritance Transformation, she would not be able to keep up with that pace of damage.

Furthermore, Zhang Yang would have over 58,000,000 HP after he activated his Inheritance Transformation. Because of that..... he would lose 1,160,000 HP in every passing second! Even if all Healers on the party were focused to heal him up, they would not prevail as well.

However, they could still activate their Inheritance Transformation though. Well, they could only activate their Transformation at the final stage of the boss battle. They should be able to last for 1 minute before they would lose all their HP and die.

In other words, the players could still have the advantage of having their Inheritance Transformations. However, the time duration of their Inheritance Transformation would be narrowed down by extreme measures. Because of that, this boss battle had become balanced for the boss and for the players as well. Well, this situation would be fair to the normal players, however, it would not be fair for players who have Inheritance Transformations.

Zhang Yang charged into the battlefield to lure the monster. By doing so, he gave the signal for the party to follow him into the battle.

Crack! Crack! Crack! The boss was trembling its chin and jaws. The lower teeth of the boss had knocked into the upper teeth of the boss. "He he he ---" The boss began to make some strange laughter. Then it took up its axe and sliced it straight towards Zhang Yang.

Upon casting 5 layers of {Cripple Defence} onto the boss, everyone quickly took their Power Potion and get started with their insane attacks on the boss. Although it was money-consuming to take Power Potions, however, players would need to rely on any sorts of potions that could aid them in expediting a dungeon. Furthermore, they would need to repair their equipment with their own pockets. Well, most importantly, they would need to dedicate their time for the expeditions.

The party had been divided into 6 teams, six individual formations with one Tanker (one of them was a fake Tanker) as the leader of the team, constantly moving around the boss in circles.

30 seconds later.

"{Crippling Pain}!" The boss roared out in a very low voice. Instantly, eight dark rays that looked like eight dark screens were shot out from the boss. Then these dark rays began to move slowly towards the surroundings. Well, if players could react in time, they would definitely be able to avoid touching the rays.

"{Frostbite}!"

Right after the eight rays had passed by, the boss let out another roar. This time, it waved its left hand and the sky began to hail. Each attack from the hail could deal a total damage of 100,000 Frost Damage! If anyone was hit by the {Crippling Pain} and get afflicted with a reduction of their movement speed, they would have been killed by this hail.

Each team had a Tanker up front like an arrow head. They were trying to dodge and attack. Those who were Physical type players would not be affected much by it. Well, their Skills could be instantly activated. So walking and running would not affect them too much --- of course, that was under the circumstance that the players were al top Tier players. Normal players would have forgotten every other thing the moment they started moving and running.

However, things seemed to turn disastrous for the Magic type players. They would need time to chant their spells! They could not just stop on one spot in order for them to chant their spells. That would definitely affect the party's DPS.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and the gang had noticed this. So other than the Healers which were essential in every party, they did not recruit too many Spellcasters for their party before they came into the dungeon. The party was basically made up of Thieves, Hunters and Berserkers. Well, most of them were actually Hunters. That did not actually affect them at all.

60 seconds!

"My servant! Come out and fight for me!" Antarkt let out a raging roar and used its axe to cut the ground. Instantly, something broke itself out of the surface of the ground. A Skeleton Patroller crawled right out from the

crack and roared at Zhang Yang with its mouth opened.

Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Horizontal Sweep}, hitting both the boss and the monster at the same time. By doing so, he succeeded in securing the aggro of both units.

The party did not mind the monsters at all. They were just minding their business with the boss, aiming their attacks at the boss only.

2 minutes later, the second Skeleton Patroller was spawned by the boss as well.

Endless Starlight quickly took over and kited the monster 10 meters away from the first Skeleton Patroller. Well, that should prevent them from resonating with their {Resonance}.

3 minutes into the battle, the third one was spawned. Ten Dusk stepped in and kited the monster away. As time passed by, the fourth, the fifth, the sixth... when all 6 Tankers were occupied with the Skeleton Patrollers that were spawned, a very interesting formation was formed on the battlefield. Zhang Yang was tanking against the boss and one monster in the middle of the area. Meanwhile, the other 5 monsters were approximately 14 to 15 meters away from the boss and Zhang Yang. They were in position, surrounding the boss in a circular arc formation. Each of them was like 70 degrees away from each other. And they were about 15 meters away from each other at the same time.

Well, if everyone was to move around all together, the entire circular arc shape formation would move! It would be interesting at the least, to look at!

When the seventh monster was spawned, Zhang Yang stepped in to kite it over to him. The eighth one was lured over by Endless Starlight while the ninth one got lured by Ten Dusk. However, when the battle was entering the tenth minute, the boss still had over 18% HP remaining. The boss began to unleash its {Spectre's Fury}, showing no mercy to every player in the surroundings. It only took two to three seconds before the boss wiped out the entire party out!

Everyone quickly ran back to their dead bodies. Then, they picked a safe spot and camped there. They took snacks to recover their HP while

discussing the changes and tactics they might need to use on the boss.

"Actually, Battle Companions can also come out and share the damage for us. We don't have to move along altogether."

"That's true. We should receive enough healing as it is. We can also pick out 4 Spellcasters and let them be on their own. They won't have to move with us. That should increase our damage output on the boss for a bit."

"Healers can also try to deal some damage to the boss whenever they are free!"

As there were many of them, many ideas were heard as well. So, they slowly amended their battle tactics, based on the ideas and suggestions they heard from the others.

Not long after that, the second battle had begun!

This time, they managed to reduce the boss's HP to 14%!

That was an improvement. If they could use their Inheritance Transformation without having to worry about anything, they could have killed the boss with ease! However, because of the boss's {Dominator Aura}, everyone would only last in the battlefield for 1 minute.

Even though the Attack power of a player after activating Inheritance Transformation would be extremely powerful, but now, they would need to have a lot of HP as well. Well, truth be told, the additional Attack power players could get from Inheritance Transformations were beginning to look weaker, as the players' equipment were getting better through time. Even though Zhang Yang had a Class S Inheritance Transformation, he only acquired a boost of 2.5 times on his DPS upon activating his Transformation.

Then, the others should get an even lesser boost on their Attack power upon activating their Inheritance Transformation.

Within a timeframe of 1 minute, the party could deal additional 10% damage to the boss if they activate their Inheritance Transformations at the same time. Unless they could reduce the boss's HP to 10% within 10 minutes, they would still fail on killing the boss. Their use of Inheritance

Transformations would have gone to waste, by then.

Everyone was trying their best to adapt to the boss's attack pattern and behavior. Then they amended their battle tactics accordingly, every time they failed. One time, two times, ten times... when they failed for the thirteenth time, the party had finally pushed the boss's HP bar down to 11%!

"No wonder no other guild could take out this f*cking boss.... What an annoying f*ck!" Fatty Han sighed again and again.

"Stop whining! We can take the boss down on our next attempt!" Everyone was filled with hope and confidence. 11%. If they could bring the HP bar of the boss down to 10% on their next attempt, they could just activate their Inheritance Transformations on the ninth minute of the battle and take out the boss once and for all!

Let the battle begin!

Everything went smoothly. Upon entering the eighth minute of the boss battle, the HP of the boss had been reduced to 28%.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Zhang Yang threw out his boss-killer Skill without hesitation. Well, if this Skill is not resisted by the boss, they would take out another 10% HP of the boss for free! It would be similar to a situation where the entire party activates their Inheritance Transformations!

Phew! A dark skull began to form right on top of the boss's head!

The Skill was not resisted! Praise the lord!

Everyone was cheering madly as they attack the boss as fast as they could. Time was of the essence!

Initially, they did not take into account this Skill because they did not want to be disappointed when the boss keeps resisting the Skill. Well, the rate of activating the Skill's special effect was just too low to even consider using it in the first place. It would be unwise to consider using the Skill as part of the plan in killing a boss. However, no one would have thought

that Zhang Yang would be so lucky today! The first attempt was already a success! Holy cow!

Under the bombardment of 10 players, it only took up 4 to 5 seconds before all 10 special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} were triggered. The boss's HP bar had been reduced down to 18% below!

Entering the 'Killing Cleave' stage of the battle!

The firepower of the party suddenly increased by a notch. They were all bombarding the boss with the best attacks they had with them, holding nothing back at all! 1 minute later, the HP bar of the boss was reduced to 9%!

Truth be told, if half of the party members could activate their Inheritance Transformations at the same time now, they would have a 100% confidence of taking out the boss! However, humans are always greedy. If they believe that they could take out the boss without activating their Inheritance Transformations, then they would die hard trying to do it so that they could reserve their strength to take on the second boss! Well, that's an 'IF' though.

Well, wealth would only come to you when you're willing to take some risks. Everyone was on the same page at the moment. Even though they knew that if half of them activate their Inheritance Transformations at the same time, they would definitely be able to take out the boss. However, they also had hope that they would be able to kill the second boss of this dungeon!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

"Argh ---" Antarkt let out a deafening roar that shook the entire heaven. Then the heavy body of the boss began to collapse. The heavy impact of the fall was so powerful that the entire ground shook for almost a minute! Meanwhile, the 10 Skeleton Patrollers vanished upon the boss's death. There were only loots left on the ground!

"We've done it!" Everyone was cheering in joy. It had been quite awhile since they've met such a boss. Many had perished more than 10 times in an attempt to bring down the boss. Now that they managed to take out the

boss, their passion in the dungeon run overwhelmed their minds and souls at the moment.

Chapter 773: Aluonu the Gargoyle

After restoring themselves, Zhang Yang began to distribute the loot among the party.

The boss had dropped two Holy Tier equipment and three Ethereal Tier equipment. They were all Level 170 equipment. Of course, equipment acquired from dungeons would not have the Special that could reduce Required Level by 20 levels. Also, they would not have both offensive and defensive attributes. It would be very obvious if one equipment is a defensive type or an offensive type.

However, the advantage of acquiring equipment in a dungeon would be, if you can take down the boss, then you can surely wear the equipment you obtained. Unlike Open World bosses, you will not have to wait for quite some time before you can wear the equipment you acquired. Well, sometimes, you might need to wait for a very long time before you can equip the equipment you obtained from Open World bosses!

Naturally, the three Ethereal Tier equipment were auctioned among the members of the Lone Desert Smoke by trading in their guild points. Although those were just some Ethereal Tier equipment, they would still be quite powerful at the current stage of the game. Well, it would stay that way at least until the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern was completely cleared. After all, Holy Tier equipment was still extremely rare in the game.

Then, it was time to look at the main event of the day. It was time to auction out the two Holy Tier equipment!

[Gaunlets of Impenetrable Dignity] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +7,935

Strength: +1,957

Agility: +826

{Level 6 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 15,870 points.

Equip: Absorbs 1,697 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 170

Although it was an equipment for the Guardians, Zhang Yang already had a Level 180 Holy Tier [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets]. Furthermore, that [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets] he had on him got both offensive and defensive attributes. It was definitely much more powerful than these gauntlets he found here. So he did not show any interest at all in joining the auction.

Even though Endless Starlight's Gauntlets were Ethereal Tier, he was also part of the gang now, so it would be natural for him to have the desire to improve his equipment to the max. Well, he had the desire to get some defensive type equipment with higher Intelligence attributes. Therefore, Ten Dusk and the other Guardians in the current party had to 'battle' against each other by auctioning to see who could claim the equipment to themselves.

Although everyone had the difference between being part of the main guild or sub guild, the guild points were usable by everyone in such regard. Even though Ten Dusk had only joined the guild not long ago, however, he was able to perform outstandingly by using his skills and controls in the game. His reflexes were very impressive as well. So he managed to earn quite an amount of guild points in so little time. He actually earned so much guild points that the other two Tankers lost. So Ten Dusk became the one who claimed the gauntlets by the end of the auction.

Well, since they've decided to take on the second boss as well, Zhang Yang had used [Identifying Scrolls] to identify the equipment. By doing so, everyone could equip their equipment immediately right after they acquire them. Although the equipment had no gemstones in them yet, well, that won't affect the attributes of the equipment too much at the moment.

The second piece of Holy Tier equipment was a pair of Cloth Armor boots. It was claimed by a Spellcaster from the sub-guild of Lone Desert Smoke though. Well, that was because Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream

and Fantasy Sweetheart had already acquired higher Tier boots for themselves earlier on. Naturally, they did not take part in claiming the boots.

After distributing everything out, everyone continued to push on. Upon exiting the mausoleum, they went into a set of stone stairs which led them to the second floor of the place.

This floor looked like a gigantic square. Only the walls had torches on them. So, the brightness of the floor was quite 'limited'. Meanwhile, the middle region of the floor was completely dark. However, under the illumination of the flames on the torches, Zhang Yang and the gang could still vaguely see countless stone statues standing right in the middle regions. They were very packed together.

All of these stone statues had rather scary and wretched faces. There were two wings protruding from right below the neck part of their back. The two wings were wrapping their entire bodies, leaving only their heads and their bird-claw-liked feet in the open --- Gargoyles!

[Snoozing Gargoyle] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 100,000,000

Defence: 11,030

Melee Attack: 75,903 – 115,903

Skills:

[Gargoyle's Shriek]: Weakens the defense of the target, causing the target to receive additional 10% damage when the target is being hit. Last for 12 seconds.

[Gargoyle's Smash]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters. There is a 20% rate to stun the target.

[Harden State]: Reduces 80% damage received when being hit. However, cannot move at all.

Upon seeing the countless closely packed Gargoyles, everyone began to feel a headache now. If they are not careful enough, they might just wake all the Gargoyles up and get wiped out entirely. Well, they might have to activate all their Inheritance Transformations in order to stay alive by then.

Zhang Yang threw his {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Gargoyles which was the nearest to him. The moment when his attack landed on the Gargoyle, a damage value that was nerfed many times over popped right on top of the Gargoyle. Because of that, the Gargoyle began to open its eyes. Two ignited green ghastly flames were radiating within the eye sockets of the Gargoyle.

"Screech ---" the Gargoyle let out a screeching cry. The pebbles and dust that were resting on top of its body began to shudder and fell to the ground. The Gargoyle then fluttered its wings and flew towards Zhang Yang like a bat. At the same time, the other four Gargoyles were beginning to tremble as dust and pebbles were falling from them too. There came another 4 Gargoyles, following just behind the first Gargoyle that was charging towards Zhang Yang.

Endless Starlight and the remaining Tankers immediately went up to engage the Gargoyles. Each of them took over the aggro of one Gargoyle. These monsters' {Gargoyle's Shriek} could be endlessly stacked together. Well, allowing five {Gargoyle's Shriek} to stack together would be a grave mistake. So, they should be separated away from each other as soon as possible.

--- Although the party reached that point of the dungeon in Hardcore Mode for the first time, however, they have done this more than a couple of times when they were clearing the Hard Mode and the Normal Mode of this dungeon. Well, the Skills of the monsters were the same. The only difference was the difficulty in killing the monsters, in other words, their toughness had been upgraded. Therefore, everyone knew how to react and what to do with the monsters.

The Gargoyles would use their {Gargoyle's Shriek} once every 10 seconds. Well, that still proved to be quite threatening, actually. However,

the negative effect of the Skill could be canceled with {Warrior's Will} and {Sacred Protection}. Meanwhile, the firepower of the party was insanely high. Basically, they could take out one Gargoyle every 30 seconds, leaving no chance for the Gargoyles to stack up their {Gargoyle's Shriek} too many times over.

The boss was located just right in the middle of the square. The players would need to clear out the monsters in the surroundings. Or else if the boss was triggered to join into battle, the remaining monsters that were not cleared would wake up together with the boss and join the battle. They would also launch their most ferocious attacks at the players together with the boss!

It took approximately 2 hours for the party to clear out the monsters in the surroundings. After that, the boss was the only stone statue that was standing right in the middle of the entire floor.

The stone statue of the boss was huge. It was approximately 30-meters tall. Unlike the other Gargoyles which had grey skin all over their entire body, this one was completely black, pitch black, to be exact!

[Aluonu the Gargoyle] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 175

HP: 1,750,000,000

Defence: 17,660

Melee Attack: 140,153 – 200,153

Skills:

[Gargoyle's Shriek]: Weakens the defense of the target, causing the target to receive additional 20% damage when the target is being hit. Last for 10 minutes. Can be stacked. Cooldown: 10 seconds. Cannot be canceled.

[Gargoyle's Smash]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

[Gargoyle's Bombs]: Place 50 bombs randomly on the ground. The

bombs will explode after 3 seconds, causing 500,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 5-meter radius of the explosion. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

[Gargoyle's Dimension]: When players went beyond 50 meters away from Aluonu, the targets will receive a destructive hit, ignoring the remaining HP of the targets. The targets will die on the spot.

[Spectre's Fury]: If the battle lasts longer than 10 minutes, Aluonu will enter a state of Berserk and causes 10,000,000 Chaos Damage to all targets in the dungeon.

So this would still be a battle of time! God damn it!

However, because there were no monsters with outrageously powerful Skill attacks interrupting the party, the party only had to focus their attacks on the boss. Well, the {Gargoyle's Bombs} would be a little more troublesome to handle. Because of the {Gargoyle's Dimension}, Zhang Yang, and the party could not too far from the boss. Because of that insanely outrageous Skill, Zhang Yang and the party could only move around within the range of 50-meter radius from the boss. Well, the area space was quite limited for 50 players and one gigantic boss though. However, everyone's equipment was quite powerful and high Tier as well. Furthermore, Zhang Yang also boosted everyone with 40% additional Vitality as well. So each of the members of the party would have at least 500,000 HP. Even if they accidentally stepped on the bomb, they won't die on the spot. However, if they ever get caught in the middle of the explosion twice in a roll... then...

Because the boss's {Gargoyle's Shriek} could not be canceled off once it has been cast on the players. Theoretically speaking, the {Gargoyle's Shriek} could stack up to a total of 1200% additional damage received on the players within the period of 10 minutes.

If that becomes true, the boss could deal a basic damage ranging from 1,960,000 to 2,800,000 damage. One hit could take out a Tanker without having an Inheritance Transformation! That would be outrageous!

Back then when they were clearing the Normal Mode and the Hard

Mode of the dungeon, the players had tried it out. If the description of the Skill stated that the effect could not be canceled out, then it would be real that the effect could not be canceled out once being cast upon the players. It would still be pointless even if the players activated their Invincible Skills or effects. The only way to deal with this Skill is to let Tankers switch among each other. In other words, when a Tanker had been stacked with too many layers of the {Gargoyle's Shriek}'s effects, that Tanker should stop creating aggro and back off for the moment to let another Tanker to take over his or her place. After the next Tanker managed to get to the first on the aggro list of the boss, the Tanker that retreated could deal damage to the boss (Or get smacked to the death by the boss).

Because the bosses in the Normal and Hard Mode did not have the Skill {Spectre's Fury}, the boss battles could be prolonged to 20 to 30 minutes. The DPS players could even afford to lower down their damage output for the moment. The party could even torture the boss to its death by witching Tankers to take against the boss.

However, the Hardcore Mode had given the boss battle a timeframe by introducing the boss's {Spectre's Fury}. When the players take more time than the timeframe, the boss would immediately go into its Berserk mode and wipe out the entire party.

Because of that, the Tankers would have to perform better than they normally do, better than the others were. Even if there are two, three or even four Tankers around, every Tanker would need to focus on creating high aggro values on the boss, maintaining the aggro of the boss at a very high level. By doing so, any of the Tankers would be able to take over the boss when their main Tanker dies or retreats. That would prevent the DPS players from snatching the aggro value of the boss instead.

Just look at Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream. These players could really deal insanely high damage. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight, Ten Dusks, and the other Tankers were expressing themselves, saying that it was just too much for them to achieve that.

"Don't worry, they all have their own Skills to clear out the aggro values

build up on them!" Zhang Yang tried to comfort the Tankers.

"But {Vanish} will require 5 minutes!" Endless Starlight was showing his weak side.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then I'll activate my Inheritance Transformation and tank the boss until the very end of the battle!"

"Oh, yea! Boss! You're the best!" Endless Starlight immediately cheered in joy.

Because Sun Xin Yu and the other gang could deal insanely high damage. So Endless Starlight, Ten Dusks, and the other Tankers had no confidence to get enough aggro on the boss. Well, it was natural to think that Zhang Yang was the only one who could deal insanely high damage and tank at the same time --- only the insane one could match the insane ones!

"Alright, time to activate our Inheritance Transformation now. After this battle, we shall take a rest!" Zhang Yang said.

The party had spent too much time dealing with the first boss. Meanwhile, even though playing in 'God's Miracle' won't affect the body of the players, but repeating the same thing over and over again is some sort of a mental torture. So sooner or later, the players would not be able to take it mentally. Furthermore, Zhang Yang did not intend to focus on clearing the dungeon in the first place. His main aim for coming here was to boost the morale of his guild. His main target was to achieve Level 180 as soon as possible so that he could be the first to kill an Ascended Tier boss!

Well, Ascended Tier bosses in the Open World map tend to drop Level 200 – 210 Ascended Tier equipment. Speaking of which, players would be able to equip the equipment when they reach Level 180 – 190. That would be much better than farming for Holy Tier equipment in the dungeons by a thousand times! From Zhang Yang's perspective, those equipment acquired from the dungeons were suitable for middle-tier members of the guild to obtain. Meanwhile, the core players and the main gang players of

his should just fix their focus on hunting down the Open World bosses.

Chapter 774: Remedial Measures

At the order of Zhang Yang, everyone activated their Inheritance Transformations, one after another. Everyone turned into a menace of destruction, one after another, and charged at the boss!

After getting hit by everyone, the boss was triggered. The boss let out a screeching roar, unfurled its wings and flew towards Zhang Yang. It looked like a dark cloud floating by. The two wings looked as sharp as blades. They seemed like they could just slice through Zhang Yang's armor and dice Zhang Yang up into countless bloody pieces!

{Gargoyle's Shriek}! 1 layer, 2 layer, 3 layer... 1 minute later, Zhang Yang had 6 layers of {Gargoyle's Shriek} piled up on him, causing him to receive additional 120% damage from the boss. The boss would deal damage ranging approximately from 300,000 to 440,000 damage with each hit!

If other parties were battling the boss, they would need to switch their Tankers with another Tanker when their current Tanker is overwhelmed by 6 layers of {Gargoyle's Shriek}. Although instant-death is still not possible, the pace of the Tanker losing HP would be extremely difficult for the Healers to follow up. However, the situation would turn out differently for Zhang Yang. Now, he had over 100,000 Defence. His Passive Damage Immunity was up to 40%. Furthermore, he could use his {Block} once every 5 seconds. He basically only received 45,000 damage in every passing second.

Well, Han Ying Xue aside, who has activated her {Milkmaid Deity Transformation}, even an Ethereal Tier Healer would hardly be able to heal Zhang Yang up!

With the worst-case scenario coming true, the boss could deal about 2,800,000 damage with each hit. That being said, the boss could deal 1,680,000 damage to Zhang Yang on average. Furthermore, Zhang Yang could use his {Block} to reduce the damage he receives, reducing the damage dealt to him down to only 500,000 damage! So even if that really happens, 10 Healers on the party would be able to heal Zhang Yang back

up!

--- for most Healers, as long as their Tankers are not instantly killed by the boss, they would be able to heal their Tankers back up.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang could boost his HP up to a terrifying amount of 56,000,000 HP, upon activating his God of War Transformation. Other than God's Left Hand, who was also a Tanker with a Class S Inheritance, no one in the entire server could match up to Zhang Yang's current attributes! In other words, the greatest threat for the party in the boss battle with the second boss would be --- the fall of their Tanker. However, Zhang Yang and the party could just ignore this threat, because their Tanker Zhang Yang could take it all!

The remaining party members only had to avoid getting caught in the explosions of the bombs. Other than that, they only had to deal as much damage as they could, as if their lives were all depending on that! Well, their lives indeed depended on that!

Truth be told, after everyone has activated their Inheritance Transformations, the firepower of the party had increased by a notch or two. Unlike the situation when they were dealing with the first boss, they were no longer restricted from unleashing their potentials as players who had Inheritance Transformations with them. Well, after getting kicked in the nutsack, it was time for everyone to have a candy. After all, players with Inheritance Transformations should not be kept in the cages! It would become pointless for the players to go through so much trouble just to get an Inheritance with Transformation Skill, after all!

6 minutes later, the boss let out a miserable roar, and with a shudder of both wings, collapsed onto the ground and stayed dead for good.

Unfortunately, the boss only dropped two Holy Tier equipment which were both Leather Armor. Zhang Yang distributed the loots and announced that their expedition was over for this round. After all, Zhang Yang's priority would be to get himself up to Level 180 so that he could become eligible to challenge Ascended Tier bosses. Previously, securing the 'First Clears' of new dungeons was to acquire additional Skill Points

and make a name out of themselves. Back in the days, building the reputation of a guild was extremely important. Meanwhile, now that the Ascended Tier bosses could drop Skill Point Crystals, getting the 'First Clear' of a dungeon was no longer the only source of additional Skill Points.

Speaking of the reputation of the Guild, the current Lone Desert Smoke had become the top in the world. They could maintain their reputation by sending the Silky Soft Battle Team out once in every day. They no longer need to push themselves into the dungeons to compete for the 'First Clear' of the dungeons anymore for months!

Of course, just because Zhang Yang did not want to join the expedition for dungeons doesn't mean he wanted all his guild members to withdraw from attempting to get the 'First Clear' for the dungeons as well. Well, if they could acquire the 'First Clear' of the Spectre's Cavern, 50 players on the party would be able to get one Skill Point for each of themselves! That would definitely improve the power level of the entire guild!

Upon travelling all the way back to Marlin's Land of Salt, Zhang Yang continued with the search for the remaining two missing pieces of the 'Kingcross's Sword'. After wandering around, killing monsters like an idiot for quite some time, he finally gathered the two remaining pieces of the sword. Meanwhile, he managed to level up to Level 180 as well! He could finally equip his Ascended Tier weapon!

[Agos, The Destroyer's Blade] (Ascended, Two Handed Axe)

Attack: 40,017 – 56,017

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 12,636

+640 Strength (Level 7 Strength Gemstone, enhanced)

+689 Strength (Level 7 Strength Gemstone, enhanced)

Equip: Increases damage dealt by 50%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 15%

Equip: When your weapon hits the target, there will be a certain chance of dealing a destructive hit on the target, causing 8 times your initial damage.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Equipping this axe and switching up the [Berserker's Charge Necklace] had boosted Zhang Yang's Basic Attack up to a range of 265,065 to 318,185 damage. That amount of Attack power is actually enough to oppress a Holy Tier boss without any problems! As for the scythe, it was given to the little brat. Although the weapon looked like a scythe, it was classified as a Hammer. The little brat was currently using a Holy Tier hammer. Well, she could not unleash the potential of the hammer she had, after all. The scythe would serve her better.

Of course, Wei Yan Er was more keen on acquiring the Ascended Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had just equipped. She shamelessly told Zhang Yang that if he gives her the weapon when she hits Level 180, she would let Zhang Yang kiss her. By the end of it, Han Ying Xue was infuriated after she heard what the little brat had to 'offer'. She did not show any mercy in beating her up like a little b*tch. Even Zhang Yang was dragged into the mud. He was also beaten up by that witch, even though he did not do anything wrong. As usual.

Upon gathering all the seven fragments of the 'Kingcross's Sword', Zhang Yang traveled back to the main city to look for the master Blacksmith to reforge the sword.

"Huh? Huh! HUH---" The dwarf blacksmith looked at the broken fragments over half a day before his face turned joyous. After quite some time, he finally spoke, "I've seen the design of this sword somewhere in an ancient book before! I can't remember which ancient book, though. Wait here!"

The dwarf walked into his room. After quite some time, he finally walked out of his room with a book in his hands. "Yes! That's it! This is a legendary sword that has been passed down for many many years! Its

called the 'Kingcross Sword'! The sword was forged by a man named 'Kingcross', a human!"

This dwarf suddenly frowned a little. Deep down his heart, he believed that all of those sorts of weapon or equipment should be forged by dwarfs and only dwarfs.

"Master, do you think you can get this sword fixed, then?" Zhang Yang asked.

"Of course!" The dwarf revealed a proud expression on his face as he spoke. "Although I have not reached the Tier to forge a Legendary Tier sword, I can still put the pieces of the sword back in its original state! That should be easy peasy, lemon squeezy!"

"Then let's begin, shall we, master?"

"2,000 gold pieces!" Speaking of business, this dwarven blacksmith immediately thought that he was above everyone. He revealed the expression that a sordid merchant would make while bargaining.

What the f*ck! What an *sshole!

Zhang Yang kept his anger from erupting as he took out the 2,000 gold pieces out. Well, it took him quite a while and went through quite some trouble to collect the broken pieces of the sword. He would not feel satisfied until he could see the final effects that the sword would offer!

After paying that greedy dwarf, the dwarf finally took the pieces and put them on his forging bench. After smacking those pieces for over a few times with his forging hammer, the fragments had been merged into a complete sword! However, the dwarf revealed an awkward expression on his face though. Then he said, "Er... well... I can't believe there was a Magic Circle in the sword. I think I've broke it! Er, no! Not broken because of me! It's already broken in the first place! That's right! It was already broken since the beginning!"

The dwarf quickly spoke as if he was worried that Zhang Yang would ask for a refund. So he continued on, "However, I can recommend someone who can fix the Magic Circle for you!"

'Ding! Banderash has given you a quest: Remedial Measures. Do you accept?'

Well, Zhang Yang could only choose to accept it.

[Remedial Measures] (Difficulty Rank-D)

Description: When Banderash was forging the Kingcross's Sword, he 'discovered' that the magic circle in the sword itself had been destroyed. As a responsible Blacksmith, Banderash recommended that you travel over to Memphis Town, located on the map of Marlin's Land of Salt and look for Sia the Wizard. She should be able to solve your problem.

Completion: Find Sia The Wizard 0/1

As expected earlier on, collecting these fragments of the sword would lead to triggering another quest. Although the quest was only a Rank-D quest, well, it was only a quest that required players to run some errands. The continuation of the quest would definitely have a handsome reward waiting for the players who could complete it. After all, gathering those fragments was not an easy task at all. The system would not give any pointless quests to the players.

Zhang Yang teleported back to the Souron's castle. Then, he began to rush his way to his destination like a madman. After spending tens of hours, he finally entered Marlin's Land of Salt. After that, he went on to the Memphis Town on his Flying Mount.

Zhang Yang spent another 3 to 4 hours to reach that human town. He landed and summoned Whitey out. Then, he rode to the entrance of the town. After that, he went to ask an NPC about the whereabouts of this Sia.

"Sia? The insane wizard Sia?" The moment when the NPC heard about the name 'Sia', he immediately turned pale and ran away as if he had just heard something scary.

Zhang Yang attempted to ask another 4 to 5 people along the road. However, all of them did the same thing. They ran away in terror. Zhang Yang did not know whether to laugh or to cry at the same time.

"Hey, big brother! If I tell you the whereabouts of the crazy w*tch, will

you give me a silver coin?" a little girl who looked to be around 11 or 12 years old suddenly appeared in front of Zhang Yang. Her eyes were moving around very rapidly. She was looking at Zhang Yang with hope.

Zhang Yang took out a gold piece and passed it to the little girl. Then he said, "I'll give you a gold piece then!"

"Big brother, you a very nice person!" The little girl did not hesitate to praise Zhang Yang, "That crazy witch is living in a house on a small mountain, just by the west side of the town. There's a garden right in front of her house, though. The flowers in the garden will bite people! That's super scary!"

"Thank you!" Upon acquiring the information he wanted to hear, Zhang Yang quickly hopped onto Whitey and went towards the destination. After walking out of the town, he switched to his Phoenix and flew straight towards the direction of his destination --- normally, towns would restrict players from flying in the town area. Breaking the rules would end up with the player getting hunted by NPCs.

The movement speed of the Pheonix pet was extremely fast. After a few flaps of its wings, it brought Zhang Yang to the small mountain that the little girl had mentioned. As expected, right by the side of the small mountain, there was a two-storey house, with a large garden right outside of the house. There was a variety of strange and bizarre plants all over the garden, as well.

Well, it could be considered a miracle for someone to grow plants in the middle of a salty land!

Zhang Yang flew straight towards the house. However, before he could land by the side of the house, a few plants suddenly turned their bloomed flowers towards him. Then, the flowers began to spit fire at Zhang Yang! They were like flamethrowers!

If Phoenix pet and Zhang Yang were not mounted together, the Phoenix pet could have ignored the fire attacks because it had fire immunity. However, things turned out differently when Zhang Yang was mounted on it. The attributes of the Phoenix pet would be based on Zhang Yang's

attributes. So, the both of them started to roast together.

The fire shots landed on Zhang Yang. Each of the shots could deal approximately 40,000 Fire Damage to him. That amount of damage was much higher than the amount of damage that other regular monsters could deal to him!

Zhang Yang was not willing to remain idle and let the himself get burned up. So, he immediately commanded the Phoenix pet to descend a little further. Then he pulled out his axe and chopped the plants up.

While he was at it, these flower plants actually uprooted themselves and started sprinting away on their roots! Zhang Yang frowned deeply at the bizarre scene.

Chapter 775: Replicating the Magic Circle

Just as the situation began to get out of hand, a creaking sound was heard. The door of the house was pushed open. An old lady who seemed to be in her 70s or 80s came out of the house. She was wearing a black wizard robe as she hobbled out of the house with a stick.

Instantly, all the plants fled to the side of the old lady as if they just saw their own mother. Then, they shrieked at Zhang Yang with strange and bizarre screeching sounds.

"How dare you trespass into my territory like a wild animal and startle my babies!?" The old lady raised up her stick and pointed the tip of her stick right at Zhang Yang. It seemed that she was holding a staff instead of a stick! She looked very intimidating!

[Sia The Wizard] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 200

HP: 218,680

Note: Sia is not a legitimate wizard. However, her research on Alchemist and Magic Circles is quite in-depth.

Although Zhang Yang could just slay all the monsters with one full swing of his axe, he was actually here for the quest, not to kill anything! Zhang Yang quickly raised both of his hands up and smiled, "My respected wizard, I'm an Adventurer hailing from the White Jade Castle. I'm here to request for your aid in restoring a Magic Circle."

"No can do! No no!" Sia seemed to have a very bad temper. She shook her head quickly and said, "You've scared the sh*t out of my babies! What makes you think that I would help you to restore your Magic Circle, then?"

"I can compensate you!" Zhang Yang smiled.

Sia widened her eyes a bit and humph. Then she suddenly said, "At least 400 gold pieces!"

"No problem!" Zhang Yang smiled and walked up to the house.

Sia comforted the plants that were scared sh*tless for a bit first. Then, the plants began to 'plant' themselves back to the garden and stayed there quietly as plants should.

Zhang Yang took out the 'Kingcross's Sword' and passed it to Sia, "My respected wizard, the Magic Circle in this sword seems to be broken while it was being reforged. Do you have any idea how to fix it?"

Sia took the sword over and gave a closer look at it. Suddenly, she laughed coldly and said, "This is the deed of that greedy dwarf Banderash! Although he's a master of smithing swords, he'll still be like a three-year-old infant in the art of Magic Circles!"

After paying the old lady 400 gold pieces, Zhang Yang thought to himself that this old lady was just as greedy as that greedy dwarf.

"Huh? The design of this Magic Circle is very ancient!" Sia flipped the sword round and round and she was amazed by what she saw. After quite some time, she spoke again, "This Magic Sword should have existed over thousands of years, or maybe tens of thousands of years ago! I'm sure that I don't have the ingredients for restoring this! However, I've come across such Magic Circles before back in the west side of the Marougue Palace's relics! If you can replicate the Magic Circles and come back to me, I'll be confident that I can restore the Magic Circle in this sword for you!"

'Ding! Sia The Wizard has given you a quest: Replicating the Magic Circle. Do you accept?'

Accept.

'Ding! You've acquired an item: Magic Circle Replicator.'

Zhang Yang immediately departed for Marougue Palace. About 20 minutes later, he hovered over the ancient empty ruins of a palace.

The remainder of this palace seemed to be quite vast. Also, Zhang Yang could see that the palace was once a glorious place. It must have a great history behind it. However, the entire place is now so broken because the place was corroded by the endless flood of salt. The palace had lost its grandeur and status. The only thing left were scars and broken walls.

Having no idea where the Magic Circle was located, Zhang Yang could only search one room at a time. However, since this was a quest, of course, the Magic Circle would not be found so easily. Monsters began to surface.

Bam!

[Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 190

HP: 9,500,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,871 – 126,871

Skills;

[Venom Spout]: Spits venom at the target and causes 100,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 30 meters.

[Pincering Bite]: Bites the target with its huge sharp claws and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: Although the size of the Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches were initially extremely huge, they were not as huge as they were back in the days. Ever since the palace had been turned into a land of salt, these Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach had regained their initial sizes.

Zhang Yang charged into battle on Phoenix pet while Felice was supporting them by their side. Upon reaching Level 180, the attributes of both Felice and Phoenix had received a certain amount of improvement. Their Attack power had become even more astonishing! It only took a brief moment before the giant cockroach collapsed onto the ground and died. Upon its death, the monster actually dropped a piece of Mythical Tier boots among the loots!

After picking up all the loots on the ground, Zhang Yang continued on with his search, wanting to get over with it as soon as possible. While he was on his journey to locate the Magic Circle Relics, he could not avoid encountering some of those Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches again. Well, of course, he took care of them with ease. Meanwhile, Felice only

had to heal Zhang Yang with her 'Tree of Life' power. Zhang Yang did not even need to sit down and take snacks to recover his HP anymore.

After searching around like an idiot for over an hour, Zhang Yang suddenly discovered that there were countless runes crafted on the wall of a little cottage he had just stepped into. Those runes were glowing weakly.

Well, that's it!

However, the ground suddenly cracked, and something broke right through the surface of the ground. A crimson red Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach crawled right out of the ground and stood right in front of Zhang Yang. Well, this monster seemed to be twice or maybe triple the size of the Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches that he had encountered before this!

[Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach Queen] (Ethereal, Beast)

Level: 195

HP: 195,000,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,932 – 126,932

Skills:

[Venom Spout]: Spits venom at the target and causes 100,000 Nature Damage to the target. Range: 30 meters.

[Pincering Bite]: Bites the target with its huge sharp claws and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Lay Eggs]: Lays 5 eggs. If these Cockroach Eggs are not destroyed within 10 seconds, each egg will hatch one Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach.

Note: The queen is the leader, the head of the Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroaches! She's the most powerful Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach there is this earth. Well, she's the breeder of her own species, after all.

This cockroach queen began to fire dark corrosive venoms at Zhang

Yang the moment it appeared. With a sudden turn of her butt, she began to lay eggs on the ground. 5 cockroach eggs were laid right in front of Zhang Yang!

What the f*ck! The boss has already used her ultimate Skill the moment she came out! What kind of ferocity is this!?

[Cockroach Egg] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 0

HP: 200,000

Defence: 0

Note: 10 seconds later, a Gigantic Salt Crystalized Cockroach will hatch out of it.

Although the eggs were laid from the same butt, they were quite far apart from each other. Well, because of that, Zhang Yang could not destroy the eggs with his AoE attacks at the same time. Who would want to battle against a few more monsters in the middle of a boss fight, right? Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all. He quickly went over to destroy the eggs first.

With his current basic attack that exceeded 260,000 damage, the eggs were destroyed by Zhang Yang with ease. Furthermore, Felice and Phoenix pet were aiding him in destroying the eggs as well. So, they managed to destroy the eggs with ease. All 5 eggs had been smashed into 5 puddles of yellow liquid.

"Screech! Screech screech!" The cockroach queen was naturally provoked. So, she began to chase after Zhang Yang with her ferocious attacks.

Before that, Zhang Yang was occupied with destroying the eggs. So he did not have time to entertain the cockroach queen. However, now that his hands were free at the moment, Zhang Yang felt no fear of engaging the boss. The three of them focused all their attacks on the boss without showing any mercy. In less than 7 minutes, the boss was slaughtered up by the three of them like she was worthless! Of course, if Felice did not have

the capability to heal like she always did, Zhang Yang would need to activate some Skills, such as his {Shadow of the Void} in order to empty out the aggro on him. Then he would need to let Phoenix pet or Felice take his place for a brief moment until he is ready to get back into the battle.

Well, he no longer needed to worry about all of that. He only needed to fully focus his attacks on the boss until he wins. The boss was merely an Ethereal tier boss. The boss would not have enough firepower to deal so much damage that exceeds Felice's healing capability.

Upon her own demise, the boss dropped one Ethereal Tier equipment and three Mythical Tier equipment. Zhang Yang did not even look at the equipment before he shoved them all into his inventory. Instead, he quickly took out the Magic Circle Replicator and aimed it at the Magic Circle on the wall. A stream of magical light flashed across the room and the Magic Circle miraculously disappeared! Wait what? That did not look like a replication process at all! Why the hell did they call the thing a Replicator, then?

Well, since that the quest was listed as completed, Zhang Yang did not put much thought on it. He hopped onto Phoenix pet and travelled back to handover the quest over to Sia.

"As expected! It's true that this is a Magic Circle that has been lost over the centuries!" Sia took over the Replicator and did her research on the Magic Circle on the item. "Eh, barbarian! I need a little more time to get myself familiar with the Magic Circle and its secrets. You can stop standing there and make yourself useful as well. Go gather some Magical Ingredients for me, will you? These ancient sorts of Magic Circles were not constructed with the Magical Ingredients we use these days. The ingredients I have will not do it!"

'Ding! Sia The Wizard has given you a quest: Find the Magical Ingredients. Do you accept?'

Accept.

[Find the Magical Ingredients] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: Sia The Wizard wants you to provide her the ingredients

that she wrote on the list she just gave you. She should be able to restore the Kingcross's Sword after she gets familiar with the secrets of the Magic Circles on the sword. However, even though you're not a researcher of Magic Circles, you could tell that the list is too long. It seems that someone is trying to take advantage of you.

Completion: Complete gathering the required items on the list that The Wizard has given you 0/1

Zhang Yang brought up the list to have a closer look at it. There were actually more than 50 types of ingredients on the list! Meanwhile, each of the ingredients required 200 counts. Well, this b*tch is more greedy than he had imagined her to be!

However, the more you give, the better the reward will be by the end of the quest. Zhang Yang has never doubted the basic principle of the game. So he immediately started gathering the ingredients on the list.

Most of the ingredients could be bought from shops and auction houses. He could just acquire them by visiting the shops and the auction house. According to his calculations, if he really gets everything from the Auction house, all the ingredients would cost him about 1,000 gold coins. Meanwhile, if he wants to gather all the ingredients by himself in the maps, it would cost him at least 1 month in order for him to get everything gathered.

Well, most of the ingredients were not really that expensive, in the first place. However, players would need to travel deep into the map to get them if they ever want to save some money. Well, it would not be worth it at all if a player spends time gathering normal ingredients such as Iron Bars and Silver. Furthermore, items such as bird feathers, deer's horns and snake scales were all inferior items. It was not easy to gather a certain number of them, however, it would be easy to spend a little money to get them all in bulk.

Zhang Yang left a comment in his own guild chat. He informed the low tier players to deposit all of the items that he required into the guild's warehouse.

Well, basically everyone in the guild treated Zhang Yang as their idol. When Zhang Yang put out his request, they immediately went out to gather the ingredients stated in Zhang Yang's list. Well, since they could also level up a bit by slaying monsters, it would be the same for them as long as they could slay some monsters.

The entire guild was truly united. It only took about 7 days for Zhang Yang to collect all the ingredients that he needed. The efficiency of the guild was extremely high!

When Zhang Yang went back to Sia The Wizard with the ingredients, that old witchy wizard instantly dropped her jaw, because she was overwhelmed with surprise. Then she quickly kept everything, as if she was worried that Zhang Yang would regret giving the ingredients to her.

"I've just deciphered the secrets of the Magic Circle on your sword. With these ingredients, I can now restore the Magic Circle in your sword for you now!" Sia said.

"Then let's get started!"

After casting some weird sh*t on the sword, Sia passed the Kingcross's Sword back to Zhang Yang. Then she quickly said, "Barbarian, it's all done! So, take your sword and leave at once! Your presence spreads fear to all my babies every time you show yourself!"

Chapter 776: The War Chariot System

[Kingcross's Sword] (Special)

Use: Immunizes you, your party members, all pets and all Battle Companions on your party from the effect of the {Soul Penetrate}. Lasts for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Required Level: 180

Bound upon pick up.

That was some strange special effect though. Did he just went through so much trouble just to get that weird *ss effect?

What a tragic day! Meanwhile, the quest ended there. Sia The Wizard did not even look at him at all. After that, Zhang Yang went all the way back to see Banderash. Since he did not react to the Kingcross's Sword at all, it seemed that the quest was over.

But, what the heck is this?! What kind of f*cking reward was that then? Zhang Yang frowned intensely at that. Immunizes everyone from the effect of {Soul Penetrate}? What good can it bring for him or the party? What the f*ck is a {Soul Penetrate}, even?!

When the gang found out that Zhang Yang got so busy over nothing for the last couple of days, they laughed at him. They had never thought possible that Zhang Yang could be fooled by an NPC into running around like an idiot.

Even though that was the case, Zhang Yang did not throw the Kingcross's Sword away. He would not believe that the item he worked so hard for would be a useless piece of metallic junk. Furthermore, the bank was still quite empty at the moment. So, he decided to keep the sword there for the moment.

Meanwhile, Ascended Tier bosses were incredibly hard to find. Well, there must be at least one Ascended Tier boss hidden somewhere across the entire Land of Salt. However, Zhang Yang just couldn't find it at the moment. After all, the map was extremely vast. Without the aid of a quest

guidance indicator, even if he has 1 year to explore, he would still not be able to find the hidden bosses across the map.

Helplessly, Zhang Yang finally decided to leave that map and turn his attention towards getting to Syruya. Syruya was also a Level 180 – 210 map just like Marlin's Land of Salt. It was also a desert with numerous monsters roaming across the entire land. Because the number of players there was a lot lesser than the other maps, Zhang Yang would be able to get Experience Points at a faster pace.

However, he went over to the map, not for the Experience Points, but to find the hidden Ascended Tier bosses while the number of players on the map was still low. Speaking of acquiring Experience Points, Zhang Yang could have gotten the same result staying in Marlin's Land of Salt. He would have no reason to travel over a far distance to Syruya, then.

Just like the Celestial Tier bosses, the number of Ascended Tier bosses was so sparse to the point that it was pathetic. There may only be one Ascended Tier boss in the entire map. Although Zhang Yang had meted out most of his effort on clearing the quest on the map, none of the quests he completed had led him to an Ascended Tier boss.

In his previous life, Zhang Yang was never able to battle an Ascended Tier boss, for many reasons. Well, there was no reason for him to dwell on his past. However, now that he has become the number player in the entire server, it had him wondering why he had not been able to encounter any Ascended Tier bosses just yet! At last, Zhang Yang lost his patience. So, he posted a question to the officials, demanding an answer regarding the matter.

If it was just a bunch of normal players asking the same question, the official would not have just ignored the question. However, with Zhang Yang's current reputation, the moment his ID was confirmed to be really him, his post instantly received countless players' comments and replies. It only took a brief while before the post became a 'Skyscraper'. The official did take note of the post, of course. Finally, they had given Zhang Yang the answer to his question.

From Ascended Tier bosses onward, that includes the Celestial bosses as well, the bosses would only reveal themselves in the game through 'events'. For example, The Lord of the Seven Spectre King Angus was spawned during an 'event' in the game. Of course, some of the top Tier bosses would randomly appear across the maps without any prior indication, just like the Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich. He had been sitting on top of his Malevolent Tower in the Plagued Land all the while until he was discovered. Anyone could just go and challenge Mardevich as long as they are willing to do it.

Of course, bosses that had a fixed territory would be much more difficult to be defeated, compared to the bosses that were spawned in 'events'. In Zhang Yang's previous life, no one had ever attempted to push Mardevich before. Well, mostly because no one had ever managed to set foot on the boss stage. Players would already be wiped out by the endless monster armies surrounding the entrance of the Malevolent Tower.

The officials had also revealed that when a certain number of players reach Level 180, the system would spawn the very first 'event' Ascended Tier boss. Meanwhile, if the boss is slain, a new type of item would be introduced into the game, making the game even more interesting in many ways.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and instantly slapped his thighs. Could it be the Tank System?

Tank System, also known as the War Chariot System would be introduced into the game in order to balance the game between players without Inheritance Transformation and players with Inheritance Transformation. For instance, Zhang Yang would have 56,000,000 HP upon activating his God of War Inheritance Transformation. Provided that everyone has the same Tier equipment on them, how many players without Inheritance Transformations would be required to match Zhang Yang, then? 100? 500? 1,000?

A Tank could be seen as a mount that could take more players at the same time and stack their HP amount altogether! When the Tank receives an attack, the damage received would be equally distributed among all

players on board of the Tank.

Based on that alone, the Maximum HP of the players would become much higher. Meanwhile, the players on the Tank could freely launch their attacks on their enemies. Their firepower would still be determined based on how many players are on board. Well, because of that, the players without Inheritance Transformations would become powerful enough to go up against players without Inheritance Transformations.

Well, of course, Tanks were not that perfect either. First of all, Tanks were very heavy and slow. They would only be suitable for defensive battles. Well, players should think twice, or maybe even thrice before using a Tank to pursue their enemies. After all, the Tank System was not introduced for the players without Inheritance Transformations to torture and slaughter players with Inheritance Transformations. They just serve to prevent players without Inheritance Transformations from being too fragile when they are battling against those with Inheritance Transformations.

Similarly, that would also solve the problem of the players who were waiting for their Inheritance Transformation's cooldown. They would no longer be too vulnerable when they are waiting for the cooldown period to be over.

The only rule for getting on board of a Tank was that the players must not activate their Inheritance Transformations!

Players such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er would be automatically thrown off from a Tank if they ever activate their Inheritance Transformations while they are on board a Tank. Even if they forcefully get back on board, the system would not count them as one of the 'passengers' on board of the Tank.

Well, the Tanks had a few categories, though. They would be categorized based on the number of passengers that they could carry. There were 4 categories. The forth category could only take 5 passengers. The second category could only take 10 passengers. The third category could only take 20 passengers. Meanwhile, the first category could only take 50

passengers. According to rumors, there was also a super large sized Tank that could carry 100 passengers. However, Zhang Yang did not encounter that in his previous life before. Other than that, Tanks could be modified or enhanced after players manage to acquire them. Players could install different sorts of equipment and materials with Magic Resistance on their very own Tanks. That would increase the Defence and Magic Defence of their Tanks.

--- When struck, Tanks would reduce damage received with the Defence and Magic Defence that players have installed on them. Therefore, if the two sides are equally matched in a battle, the Defence and Magic Defence of their Tanks would decide which side would win by the end of the battle.

Although the movement speed of the Tanks were as slow as the movement speed of players' walking speed, the Tanks would become useful in large-scale battles. The situation would be seeing Tanks charging into battle to oppress players without Tanks and Inheritance Transformations!

The best thing about having a Tank was that unlike activating an Inheritance Transformation, summoning a Tank would not have any cooldown period. As long as the Tanks are not destroyed, players could just use the Tanks anytime. Tanks would have two HP bars. One would be the HP bar for the passengers. The other HP bar would be for the Tank itself.

The HP bar for the passengers would be easier to explain. If there are 10 players, and each of the players had 100,000 HP, the total amount of HP on the HP bar would be 1,000,000 HP. As long as the Tank have received more than 1,000,000 damage, the 10 players on the same Tank would be dead together.

Meanwhile, the HP bar for the Tank would not have a fixed amount of value. It was in the form of percentage ratio. At the beginning of the battle, the initial amount of HP for the Tank itself would be 100%. Once the Tank receives some attacks, the amount of HP for the Tank would reduce based on the amount of HP for the passengers. For instance, if the Tank receives 100,000 damage, the HP bar for the Tank would be reduced

to 90%. Meanwhile, the amount of HP for the Tank would not be healed just because the HP bar for the passengers are healed back up.

When the HP bar of the Tank is depleted, the Tank would be destroyed. However, if the HP bar for the players is not depleted when the Tank was destroyed, the players would not die. However, they would all be kicked off the Tank.

So, why would there be such a setting, then?

Just think about it. Without that kind of setting, when the HP bar for the passengers on the Tank is depleted to 1%, the players could just get out of the Tank and a new batch of 10 players with full HP bars could jump in and unleash hell on their enemies. If that's the case, wouldn't the previous battle become pointless for their enemies? It would not even be fair, to begin with!

Even the players with Inheritance Transformations would not be that durable and powerful!

With that setting of the Tank System, even if the players on the Tank have full HP bars, the Tank would still be easily destroyed if the HP bar of the Tank is only at 1%. Once the Tank is destroyed, the owner of the Tank could take the Tank back to the main city for repairs.

Other than that, the HP bar for the Tank would be recovered back to 100% the moment the Tank is disengaged from battle mode.

Of course, there would be some limitations and restrictions of the Tanks since the Tanks were so powerful. Tanks were not available for players to use in a dungeon and the arena.

Players would have to reach a minimum level of 180 before they can use a Tank. Zhang Yang had only reached Level 179 in his previous life. So he did not have the luxury to sit in a Tank. Clear Water did not buy any of the Tanks as well --- Even the 5-passenger scale Tank would be extremely expensive. Well, it would definitely be a waste if people only buy it for display purposes.

A Tank!

Zhang Yang could feel his blood boiling underneath his veins. He quickly urged all top Tier players in his guild to grind like hell so that they could reach Level 180. Well, it was not just for acquiring the loots that would be dropped by Ascended Tier bosses. It would be much more important to kill the bosses!

According to the official's hint, the Tank System would be introduced with the purpose of taking on the Ascended Tier bosses!

It was really something to look forward to. It would be awesome to ride a Tank around the server like a boss!

Since there was no way to slay any Ascended Tier boss at the moment, Zhang Yang could only put his focus back on the dungeon. Currently, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to take out the first 3 bosses in the Spectre Cavern. However, because of the absence of the core players such as Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and the others, the progress of the Lone Desert Smoke was just as fast as the progress of the other guilds. Currently, none of the guilds were able to defeat the fourth boss in the dungeon. They had been stuck at that roadblock for quite some time already.

The main reason was because, an extremely high Attack power would be required to take down the boss. Furthermore, the players would need to handle a large number of unforeseen circumstances as they battle the boss. Well, they would need to dodge the AoE attacks of the boss while clearing out the monsters in the surroundings of the boss. They must not leave out any of the monsters in the surroundings, or they would be doomed. Currently, the guilds that had the utmost hope of clearing out the fourth boss would be the Land of Savage and the Hell Family. They were the only ones who could survive until the boss only has 20% HP left before they are wiped out.

However, having 20% remaining in the HP bar of the boss was still far away from taking out the boss. It would require a party to gather all the basic equipment from the first, second and third bosses before they could become powerful enough to take on the fourth boss. Of course, if the Tankers and the Healers on the party are all powerful enough, they could just bring in more DPS players instead of more Tankers and Healers. By

doing so, the party should be able to cover up for the shortage in their firepower.

Zhang Yang let Sun Xin Yu and the others grind for the moment. Well, his intention was to let the others reach Level 180 as soon as possible. Meanwhile, he joined the expedition party of his guild to push their progress in the dungeon. By doing so, he could also gather more high Tier equipment for his party members. Well, he could also increase the power level of his guild. He could prepare his guild to go up against the Ascended Tier boss that yet to appear.

Oh the other hand, the Eternal Flame managed to get elevated to the Rank-S Professional League Championship. Scholar Musou and Longrich managed to show off their top Tier skills in front of the public. Eternal Flame managed to become a new rising star, rising from the ashes. The reputation of Eternal Flame had been elevated up to an entirely new height.

Although Zhong Xiu Hua was currently level 142, he had joined the party in the Championship. However, he did not get the chance to get down to the arena most of the time. Only when the score was 4:0, 4:1 and his party is on the verge of winning the match, would that prick reveal his face by the arena.

A battle team would only have 10 players at most. However, theoretically speaking, there would be 7 rounds of 1V1 matches and 1 round of 5V5 match. If at least three of the party members could win every round --- upon winning the first 3 1V1 matches and forfeiting the upcoming 4 1V1 matches, the party could win the Team Battle and win the championship round with a score of 5:4.

However, normally, a party would make sure that they put 7 players that could perform well in the matches. As for the remaining 3 members of the party, well, they were basically not important at all. They could basically be 'for sale'.

That's right. Because the contestants of the Rank-S and Rank-A Professional League Championships get money and sponsors from the

game company in every season of the championship. Meanwhile, putting the three members of the party 'on sale' would get the system to pay them more. They could also earn some extra money from their 'bosses'.

Because some rich players who wanted to be famous did not care about that small amount of money, they would allow their names be used for such a devious act. Well, they wanted to become famous, after all!

Chapter 777: Defeat the Ambitious Schemer Brocks

After getting familiarized with the Professional League Championship over the past 2 years, the officials made some amendments to the rules and regulations of the championship.

First of all, the number of parties participating in the Class S Championship League had been expanded up to 32 parties. Meanwhile, the number of parties participating in the Class A Championship League had been expanded by up to 64 parties. Other than that, the duration of the championship in each Class had been shortened to 3 months. Because of that, the championships have become even more intense and exciting. Once every 3 months, there would be one test to determine if every player could retain their positions in their Class for the championship or not. Their performance would determine if they could be elevated to a higher championship Class, stay on the same championship Class, or be demoted down to a lower championship Class. Everyone in the server was quite stressed. They would go all out in each match they participated.

As for the World League Championships that would be held by the end of every year, how would they decide which party would be eligible for the championship. then?

Well, things could get complicated in that regard. There would be 4 seasons of Professional League Championships throughout each year, and the points that the first three teams acquire would differ in every season of the championship. The Champion would acquire 3 points, the Runner-up would acquire 2 points while the Third-in-place would get 1 point. After the four seasons of the championships, the organizer would sum up the total points that each team earned throughout the 4 seasons. The first two teams with the highest scores would be selected to participate in the World Leagues Championship. If there are two teams with the same score, they would need to extend the matches.

In other words, everything was designed to make the championship

more exciting and intense.

Although Zhang Yang had joined the expedition party as well, he would not be able to cover the shortage in the firepower of his team all by himself. The bosses of the Spectre's Cavern were still alive and well.

If the dungeon was only a 5-player scale dungeon, Zhang Yang might be able to take down the dungeon with only Han Ying Xue supporting him! The firepower of Zhang Yang, Phoenix pet and Felice combined, would be able to match the firepower of three top Tier players combined. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue has become one of the most powerful Healer in the entire server. As long as there are no Level Gap Restriction effects, the four of them would be able to sweep any 5-player scale dungeon in the entire server!

However, once the number of players increases, the intimidating threat that players with Inheritance Transformations could pose would begin to lose its charm. Players who activated their Inheritance Transformations would only gain two times of their initial Attack power. The significant increment on their HP amount would only increase their survival in a battle.

It seemed that the power level of the players with Inheritance Transformations had been nerfed at some point. They could only unleash their full potential while battling against Open World bosses now. Well, Open World bosses would just spam unbelievably powerful AoE attacks from time to time. Only those who have extremely high amounts of HP would be able to survive the waves of insanely high damage!

Before the fourth boss of the dungeon could be brought down, Zhang Yang's Battle Team had to encounter Eternal Flame's Battle Team in the championship.

Because of the layout of the championship, the two Battle Teams would be facing each other for the first time. The two sides had been holding grudges against each another from the start. So everyone on both sides were burning with murderous intent!

Currently, the power level of Eternal Flame had become rather powerful!

Because of Liu Wei's death, The Myth basically became the sub-guild of Eternal Flame. Top Tier players such as Death Arbiter had also joined the Eternal Flame. Because of that, the Eternal Flame has become more powerful than they ever did.

Currently, Eternal Flame had 2 players with Class A Inheritance, 5 players with Class A Inheritance and 3 players with Class C Inheritance. Well, they definitely had the strength to stand proud in the entire China Region now.

Looking at the list of the Battle Team Points, the Eternal Flame had not lose a match just yet. They were able to earn the same score as Silky Soft Battle Team, Crimson Rage Battle Team and Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team. After adding in the small points, the Crimson Rage Battle Team remained number one, the Eternal Flame Battle Team was in the second place. Meanwhile, Silky Soft Battle Team had become number four!

Well, the situation arose because Zhang Yang and the other core players of the guild did not participate in the championship. So, they had to lose some of the 1V1 matches during the championship. Therefore, it was natural that they would score lesser small points compared to the other Battle Teams. According to Zhang Yang's perspective, as long as they could win all matches by the end of the championship, they would be able to become the Champions by the end of it. Well, there was no need to look at the small points at all!

However, their upcoming opponent would be the Eternal Flame. So, Zhang Yang and the rest of his gang were all there, this time around.

"Zhang Yang, do you have the balls to face me 1 on 1 in the arena?" Dragon Marquis a.k.a Zhong Xiu Hua attempted to taunt Zhang Yang.

"Noob tank, don't fall into his trap! He's definitely going to eat you up!" Wei Yan Er said as if she knew what was on the mind of Zhong Xiu Hua.

Well, that was quite obvious actually. Zhang Yang was the number one player in the entire China Region. He was basically the symbol of invincibility of the China Region! Their intention was obvious for using a Level 142 pawn to battle Zhang Yang. Their strategy was to have Silky Soft

Battle Team waste their best horse on Eternal Flame's worst horse so they could match their better horses against the lesser horses of Silky Soft Battle Team. By doing so, they could ensure Scholar Musou and Long Rich's victories in their matches.

However, Zhang Yang frowned after hearing what the little brat had to say, "What did you mean by 'eat', huh?"

However, Zhang Yang would never pass on the opportunity to beat the crap out of Zhong Xiu Hua. So he arranged himself as the first to go down to the arena without any hesitation. Well, Sun Xin Yu and the others would definitely be able to defeat any opponents that come at them now!

Furthermore, Hundred Shots had become much more powerful ever since he had his Red Dragon. He could even win the matches in the World League Championships with a smile on his face. There was no doubt that he would be able to win in merely a Professional League Championship.

--- Well, because players were not allowed to activate their Inheritance Transformations, the difference between the power levels of different Inheritance Classes had become lesser. The HP amount of the players did not change a bit. The only difference was their Attack power. Class S Inheritance could boost the players with 50% additional Attack. Class A Inheritance could boost the players with 45% additional Attack power while Class B Inheritance could boost the players with 40% additional Attack power. Considering the fact that the equipment of the players at the current stage of the game could at least boost the players' Attack power by at least 100%, these difference of 5% to 10% could not actually matter that much. In truth, that amount of difference would in fact only boost the players' Attack power by 2,5% to 4%.

After a brief moment of preparation, the match had begun. The Eternal Flame really sent Zhong Xiu Hua out as the first player to fight in the arena!

Zhang Yang had no reason to be courteous now. Well, he did not have to kill Zhong Xiu Hua immediately as well. So the moment they went down to the arena and the round was announced to have begun, Zhang Yang

charged up to Zhong Xiu Hua and began with his onslaught on the prick. He did not hesitate at all while he raised his fist and shield and swung at Zhong Xiu Hua with full strength. The continuous bombardment of attacks on Zhong Xiu Hua's face was so frequent and fast. Zhong Xiu Hua's face had instantly turned swollen and out of shape! Blood was spilled and broken teeth was flying all over the place. By the end of it, the rich boy could not take it anymore. He finally screamed like a little b*tch and opted to forfeit himself from the match. That was when the humiliation on Zhong Xiu Hua ended, finally.

Everyone was surprised to see that the torture on Zhong Xiu Hua went on for 5 minutes! So, they could guess that those two must have some sort of grudges against each other. They began to acquire information about it. Well, rumors had their ways of spreading fire. Many version of stories were soon heard across the entire server.

After that, Sun Xin Yu and the others got down to the arena for their matches. As expected, they won every single round of the match!

For the past 2 years, players all around the world had been wishing to see someone or some party who could bring a challenge to the Lone Desert Smoke. They were hoping to see Zhang Yang and his gang defeated and dragged down from their 'Throne'. After all, things would be much more interesting if all flowers were to bloom together. With many unexpected things comes competition. With competitions come suspense. Only then, could gamblers place their bets in excitement!

Before the match, the Eternal Flame had kept their undefeated record throughout the Class S League Championship. They were known to be a rising star that rose all of a sudden. They had given others the illusion that they had what it took to challenge the absolute power of the Silky Soft Battle Team! Furthermore, the Eternal Flame had also been shouting out loud with their slogans, saying that they would defeat Lone Desert Smoke and become the best in the entire China Region. So, everyone was deceived into believing that they would be able to do it!

However, they had not thought that the Eternal Flame would just be a piece of sh*t when confronted with the absolute power of the Silky Soft

Battle Team. Zhang Yang and his gang won with the score of 0:5. Everyone's passion in supporting the Eternal Flame had been instantly extinguished.

Well, Silky Soft Battle Team was indeed worthy to be recognized as the Champion of the World League Championship for the past two years! They were already known to be the symbol of invincibility in the entire world. So before some unexpected rising star could appear, Lone Desert Smoke would remain the champion with absolute power in the game!

Upon defeating Eternal Flame with ease, Zhang Yang and his gang had to battle another three Battle Teams, Crimson Rage Battle Team, Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team and Bai Wei Battle Team. Well, Zhang Yang had no idea what Crimson Rage Battle Team promised Han Ying Xue and the ladies. They actually held back and let the Crimson Rage Battle Team win a little. By the end of the three matches, Crimson Rage Battle Team had become the first in place while Silky Soft Battle Team became the runner-up on the list. Meanwhile, Eternal Flame and the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team got the third and the fourth in place.

Well, it would not make any difference if a battle team gets first or second places. Both battle Teams would be able to participate in the World League Championships by the end of it. Therefore, Zhang Yang closed his eyes on that matter and moved on. There was no need to be bothered by such trivial matters. However, a few days later, Zhang Yang noticed that there was a large quantity of limited edition bags and perfumes.....

The Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern remained tough. No party had been able to take out the fourth boss just yet. Meanwhile, everyone understood one thing out of the countless failed attempts at taking down the fourth boss. Tactics would not be able to cover up the lack of firepower in a battle. Therefore, many top Tier guilds began to focus on grinding for the moment. They would just repeatedly clear the dungeon to gather more equipment by slaying the first boss, second boss and the third boss whenever the dungeon is reset. Upon acquiring more and more equipment, they would just improve the power level of their expedition

party before challenging the fourth boss again in the future.

Well, most of the top Tier players were not far from attaining Level 180 at the moment. After grinding, they were able to reach Level 180 and beyond in just a short period of time.

‘Ding! Ambitious Schemer Brocks is attempting to launch a war that will turn the entire world upside down! Warriors, stop him before he can even move his finger on that!’

Just when Zhang Yang was grinding in the Open World Map, he suddenly received a notification from the system. So naturally, he accepted the quest.

[Defeat the Ambitious Schemer Brocks] (Difficulty: Rank-S)

Description: 10,000 years, the ancestors of Brocks found a terrifying monster in the void dimension. However, to fulfill their ambition, the ancestors of Brocks did not hesitate at all to summon the monsters over to our world! This type of monster absorbs water to survive. Then, the creature will excrete a substantial amount of salt as its by-product! After 10,000 years of multiplying, the species of the monsters had become so numerous that anyone would get shocked to find out their numbers. They even covered the entire Marlin’s Land of Salt! Now, Marlin’s Land of Salt no longer has enough water to feed these monsters. Meanwhile, Brocks’s ambition is still expanding boundlessly!

Warriors, you must get together now. There might still be a little hope at saving this land! Defeat Brocks and send these monsters back to the void dimension, where they belong! Protect our motherland! Quickly! Go to the Bavarian's Castle in the Marlin’s Land of Salt! Brocks is in that castle!

Completion: Acquire Brocks’s Staff 0/1

Number of players: 20

Quest Reward: Experience Points +100,000,000, Skill Points +2

So... could this be the ‘event’ boss that the officials mentioned before? Now, everyone could finally understand why Marlin’s Land of Salt would end up like this! So that was the reason that made the entire land end up

being covered in salt crystals!

"Little Yang, have you accepted the quest?"

"Noob tank, when are we leaving then?"

All of a sudden, everyone began to speak at the same time. Everyone was excited over what was about to happen. Obviously, this quest would be offered to the players once they hit the level cap of Level 180.

A Tank! A freaking Tank!

Everyone was cheering and laughing. From the hint that the officials fed to the players, Brocks would definitely be an Ascended Tier boss. That being said, they would be acquiring Ascended Tier equipment once they kill the boss! Meanwhile, the quest became quite a hot topic among the players. The officials would not make the info public if the boss is not hard to take on. This boss might also be a World boss as well! So the boss would definitely drop more than 3 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment, if that is the case!

Remember Angus? That boss had dropped over 13 pieces of legendary equipment!

Although Brocks might not drop legendary equipment, however, it would be more than just satisfying if the boss could drop 13 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment! After all, players would not be able to equip the legendary equipment, even if they really get it from the boss currently. It would be more practical to get the Ascended Tier equipment that they could equip on the spot upon acquiring them.

Every single player who had reached level 180 soon gathered around. However, among the players who reached Level 180 and beyond, only Galileo the pretty face, Ten Dusk the cold face, and Female Raid Covent the loli pursuer were able to hit Level 180. Even though everyone had Inheritance Transformations to spare, if Brocks turns out to be a World boss, they would not be able to even survive the boss with their current numbers. There wouldn't be much hope at slaying the boss if that is the case!

The system had been using ‘announcements’ to urge the players to come and battle bosses. Well, first of all, they wanted to encourage the players to battle against each other. Secondly, that would also mean that the boss would not be easy to take on. So everyone would have to get together in order to defeat the boss!

Chapter 778: The Function of the Kingcross's Sword

Zhang Yang and the others were gathered at Marlin's Land of Salt. After that, they departed for the Bavarian's Castle together. After rushing along for more than 2 hours, they finally arrived at their destination.

Even though this was the lair of Brocks, there was no way that that maniac could have single-handedly 'saltified' the entire land. The walls have been corroded so badly that they looked ancient. There was no telling how long this castle had been there.

Zhang Yang and the gang were not the first to reach the castle, though. There were already many players battling against some jellyfish-like monsters. These monsters had translucent skins. However, they did not have any eyes, nor ears, nor hands and legs! They did not even have a single bone in their body. They were basically wiggling their way through everything!

[Decayed Beast] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 190

HP: 9,500,000

Defence: 12,110

Melee Attack: 86,871 – 126,871

Skills:

[Water Drain]: Sucks the target dry and causes the target to lose 100,000 HP.

[Salt Prison]: Excretes crystallized salt and imprisons the target. The target cannot move. Lasts for 3 seconds.

Note: Monsters coming from the void. They were summoned by their ancestor Brocks. They live in water. Their secret crystallized salt that can imprison anything! In the vast universe, many planets have been killed off by them!

The moment Zhang Yang and the gang approached the castle, they were forced to land by the system. Even though they were not forcefully dismounted from their mounts, the system obviously did not allow players to fly straight into the castle. Players would need to approach the castle on foot.

So, that was why everyone was clogged up by the monsters in the surroundings instead of flying straight through the castle door. It seemed that everyone was forced to even take off their underpants!

"Let's move in!" Zhang Yang said.

There was a possibility that Brocks could be a World Boss. If that turns out to be true, players would need to join forces together in order to defeat the boss. The players could think about battling each other only after they have taken down the boss. Because of that one possibility, everyone was playing nice all along. They did not attack the other players nor were they being attacked by the other players. Each party went on forward in their own directions. The castle was just huge. They would not have to worry about having to fight over monsters.

Not long after Zhang Yang and his gang joined the battle, other parties from other top Tier guilds were arriving as well. That included Crimson Rage, Hell Family, Land of Savages, Dark Palace and many more. Of course, there were also other parties that had been formed temporarily as well. Because some of them came from guilds that were not powerful, and some of them didn't even have a guild, so they temporarily formed a party to join the battle.

There was already quite a number of Level 180 players at the current stage of the game. Zhang Yang took a glance across the battlefield and estimated that there were at least tens of thousands of players who have reached Level 180. It was a normal phenomenon, though. Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 184 while Han Ying Xue and the others had reached Level 182. Basically, the majority of the players from all eight Regions were insanely grinding.

The Decayed Beasts were roaming all over the places. However, Elite

Tier monsters could only perform as well as an Elite Tier monster. Now, the players have reached Level 180 and beyond. Furthermore, the players that were present on the map were basically the core players of the top Tier guilds all around the world. So the players were able to lay waste to all the monsters with their absolute advantage in the aspect of Power Level.

However, the number of the monsters was just abundant. Whenever monsters were killed, the others would fill in their shoes and be killed again by players. It was as if the monsters were spawning endlessly! After slaying the monsters for over 2 to 3 hours, the Decayed Beasts finally stopped spawning. The players swept up the remaining monsters one by one until the entire army of the monsters was wiped out clean.

"You imbeciles! How dare you intrude into my land and behave so atrociously!" Suddenly, a rageful roar echoed throughout the surroundings. The silhouette of a man stood on the top of a tall building in the surroundings. The shadow leaped itself from the top of the building down to the ground and landed like a superhero. It was a middle-aged man wearing a Spellcaster's robe. He had a crimson red staff in his hand. His face was filled with pride and arrogance.

"Haha! Don't even think about getting out of here alive! You were as good as dead when you decided to step foot onto my territory!" The middle-aged man laughed like a madman. He raised his staff and swung it across the air. Countless dark orbs of lights shot straight towards the players in the vicinity.

Whoever who got touched by the dark lights were afflicted with a damage value. Each of the players received at least 300,000 damage. Spellcasters and Priests who had low amounts of HP lost half of their HP bar after that one single hit.

[Ambitious Schemer Brocks] (Ascended, Humanoid)

Level: 200

HP: 100,000,000,000

Defence: 32,470

Magic Attack: 152,165 – 252,165

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Instant activation. Range: 1,000 meters. Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Soul Penetrate]: Scourges the soul of the targets, causing 500,000 Chaos Damage to all targets within the range of 1,000 meters.

[Shadow Arrow Barrage]: Causes 300,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 1,000 meters.

[Soul Bomb]: When players leave the boss by more than 1,000 meters, they will immediately blow up and die on the spot. Range: 1,000 meters.

[Life Support]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: The Brocks Family has been reproducing a large quantity of Decayed Beasts over countless years. There is no way to stop their ambition of conquering the entire world!

After the boss revealed himself to the players, the players also noticed that they could fly again. Since the boss had revealed itself, wide in the open, there was no reason for the players to hold back at all. Before that, the system had restricted the players from flying because they wanted to prevent the players from triggering the appearance of the boss too soon. The system intended to gather more players in one spot before triggering the appearance of the boss.

"{Soul Penetrate}?! " Zhang Yang let out a shocking scream. Didn't the Kingcross Sword that he stored back in the bank had the ability to nullify this Skill?

"Haha! We've hit the jackpot!" Everyone knew that Zhang Yang had acquired that useless piece of sword back in the day. No one ever thought that the sword would become so useful, all of a sudden!

"I'm going back to get the Kingcross's Sword. Just stay put until I get back!" Zhang Yang immediately teleported back to Souron's Castle with

his Teleportation Scroll. Then, he teleported back to the main city to get the sword out from the bank. After all that was done, he teleported back to the gang by using his [Lover's Charm].

The entire process only took 5 minutes. It appeared that the item was extremely practical and convenient. It did not degrade or lose its uses even after the players level up.

The other parties had engaged in battle with the boss. Even though it was just 5 minutes into the battle, everyone had noticed the boss's two major AoE Skills and their cooldown period: The {Soul Penetration} had a 5-second cooldown while the {Shadow Arrow Barrage} had a 6-second cooldown. In other words, the boss could deal approximately 150,000 DPS to a bunch of players!

Even Holy Knights who excel in healing a single target would not be capable of healing enough amount of HP to catch up with that amount of damage --- unless the players had activated their Inheritance Transformation! However, even if player with Class B Inheritance had activated their Inheritance Transformation, they could only boost their healing capability two times higher. They could still be capable of healing one single target at a time. However, they would be helpless if they were required to heal multiple targets at the same time.

Under the bombardment of the boss, many players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation were beginning to lose their footings. They began to fall from the sky, one after another.

--- thanks to the existence of {Soul Penetration}, the players would automatically die if they ever get more than 1,000 meters further away from the boss after getting near to the boss. Therefore, they could only move forward. They could not afford to retreat after getting into range with the boss. The moment they retreat too much, they would die on the spot!

The surrounding of the castle did not have invisible air walls around and players could resurrect themselves indefinitely by running back to their dead bodies. However, those who die would no longer be able to use their

Inheritance Transformation for the next 72 hours. Without the power boost, these players would not last long at all under the bombardment of the boss's attacks!

It did not take long for the boss to slay most of the players in the vicinity. Meanwhile, the HP bar of the boss remained full for the most part, because of the boss's {Life Support}.

So, how should anyone proceed in order to defeat this boss then?

Without being able to use Inheritance Transformation, it would be pointless if players were able to resurrect with a full amount of HP and fly back to the boss. They would need at least 10 seconds to get back to the boss! By doing so, they would be receiving another 1,500,000 damage before they could even touch the boss again after they manage to resurrect. Without the boost from their Inheritance Transformation, they would be dead when they get near to the boss. They would not be able to deal a single point of damage on the boss!

Even if the boss could only be taken down with a large number of players, the boss had to be vulnerable, to begin with! Under such circumstances, nothing would work on the boss at all! Any efforts would go to waste if the players do not find a way to overcome the problem!

So, this is how powerful an Ascended Tier boss can be! So, this is what despair feels like, in the face of an overwhelmingly powerful boss!

When they were battling against Angus, the players still had an Ascended Tier boss to act as both shield and spear on their side. But now, they had no one aiding them in this boss battle? So what should they do?

Zhang Yang did not launch his attacks at the boss immediately. He intended to let the others use up their Inheritance Transformations first before he charges at the boss! As mentioned earlier, a player would definitely not be able to get near the boss without getting themselves killed. So, if Zhang Yang just waits patiently until the others use up their Inheritance Transformations, there would be no one who could try to snatch the boss from him.

Under the ferocious slaughtering of the boss, about 90% of the players

were killed once. Meanwhile, most of them were killed while Transformed. There was no escape in the sky, and there was no escape on the ground either. So, most of the players were tortured to death by the boss alive! There was no way of running at all!

Well, only parties from Dark Palace, Hell Family, Land of Savages and other top Tier guilds did not make any moves towards the boss. They were maintaining a distance of 2 to 3 kilometers between themselves and the boss. They were sitting back, trying to come up with a strategy to take down the boss. Unfortunately, without the Kingcross's Sword's special effect, they would never be able to find a viable way of killing the boss even if they break their heads trying to think. Well, this Brocks was too overwhelmingly powerful for any player to handle at the current stage of the game.

This quest for acquiring the Kingcross's Sword was not unique after all. That being said, every party could get the sword if they accept the quest. However, there were no hints nor signs of the quest from the system at all. How could anyone have known about the existence of the sword and its divine function of countering the boss' strongest AoE Skill?!

One hour, two hours, three hours... after a number of parties got themselves killed a couple of times, they finally announced that they would like to give up on killing the boss. Many parties had left the battlefield, one after another. From their point of views, they believed that it was impossible to slay Brocks at the current stage of the game. They believed that they needed to gather more players with at least a full set of Holy Tier Armor before they could bring Brocks down to his knees.

Without numbers, a World Boss will never be defeated. Finally, top Tier guild including the Hell Family and Land of Savages were beginning to pull their troops back. Based on the remaining number of players on the battlefield, there was no hope for any of them to slay the boss anymore. So, they decided not to waste time on the matter. If that is the case, why don't they spend their precious time on clearing the Spectre's Hidden Cavern. They could quickly collect a full set of Holy Tier equipment for each of their members by doing that repeatedly.

While watching the other parties retreating one after another, Zhang Yang began to laugh out loud. Then he said, "It's our turn to put up a good show!"

"Hehe!" Everyone from Zhang Yang's party smiled and laughed.

Zhang Yang activated the special effect of Kingcross's Sword. At the same time, he activated his Inheritance Transformation as well. Phoenix pet and Felice did not stand idly by either. They also activated their own Transformation Skill before charging towards the boss.

The rest of Zhang Yang's party had also activated their Inheritance Transformations. The ones with Class A Inheritance had the ability to fly in the air while the rest just rode on their Mounts, charging towards the boss as swiftly as they could.

Because the players around the boss were all slain, Brocks was no longer in his Battle Mode. Now, he had a full bar of HP. Upon noticing Zhang Yang and his gang approaching him at high speed, Brocks began to let loose his {Shadow Arrows} at them before Zhang Yang and the gang could set foot into the range of 1,000 meters from the boss. 1 second right after he activated his {Shadow Arrow}, Brocks activated his {Soul Penetrate,} spreading countless dark orbs of radiating lights towards his enemies.

Chapter 779: The Revival of a Salted Fish

Immune!

The dark lights landed solidly on everyone who was approaching the boss. However, the word 'Immune' popped right on top of everyone's head! If there were any other players left in the surroundings to witness this, they would be able to see that the boss's {Soul Penetrate} could do nothing to anyone around him! None of them would suffer any damage or lose any HP!

{Soul Penetrate}!

The moment everyone set foot within the range of 1,000 meters from the boss, everyone was afflicted with the negative effect of the {Soul Penetrate}. From that moment on, if anyone ever gets out of the range of 1,000 meters from the boss, that player would be killed instantly!

{Shadow Arrow Barrage}!

Throughout the 10-second gap when Zhang Yang and his gang were approaching the boss, that timeframe had become the boss's time for his individual performance on stage! He repeatedly struck out with countless of dark arrows into all directions. The arrows were scattering into the surroundings, hitting anything within the ranged attack of the boss.

However, that 10-second gap was just as long as breathing in some air and breathing out again. Zhang Yang was the first one to arrive before the boss. He raised his battle axe up and gave the boss a solid slash.

'-742,033!'

A damage value popped right up on top of the boss. Everyone was shocked to see that amount of damage value! It was terrifying! Zhang Yang's normal attack was about to reach a million, soon! Holy sh*t!

With that Attack power, Zhang Yang could already oppress a Holy Tier boss like a boss himself! After all, the power level of the boss was not exhibited through the single attacks, but through their terrifying AoE attacks and their long *ss HP bars.

Han Ying Xue and the others were a little slower than Zhang Yang. Everyone settled down in their own positions. The Healers were healing the party's HP bars back to full while the DPS players were dealing intense damage to the boss. Everyone was doing their own parts in the battle, trying to bring the boss's HP bar down.

Brocks had over 100,000,000,000 HP, and the ability to recover 1% HP once in every 30 seconds. In other words, the boss had the ability to heal 3,330,000 HP with every passing second. Meanwhile, if the party wants to empty out the HP bar of the boss entirely in two hours, they would have to deal a party DPS of $1,390,000 + 3,330,000 = 4,710,000$ damage!

With the party's current firepower, it would be quite difficult for them to deal so much damage. Zhang Yang decided to put his faith on the third time of his {Glare of the Death God}. The party would need to have at least one successful attempt of activating the {Glare of the Death God} in order to make up with their insufficient firepower at slaying the boss.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang and the party had the special effect of the Kingcross's Sword to support them. Furthermore, Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and Female Raid Covent's super healing capabilities were extremely strong. So, the HP bars of all Zhang Yang's party members were maintained at a safe level.

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resisted!

Zhang Yang sighed. Although he still had 2 more attempts, it would still be too impractical and risky to put his faith on a Skill that triggers by such a slim chance! After giving it some thoughts, Zhang Yang contacted Snow Seeker through her private chat. Then he said, "Guildmaster Snow, I come bearing a gift!"

"Oh? What kind of gift?" Snow Seeker said in a calm manner. Well, she would never believe that Zhang Yang would really give her something worthwhile, anyway.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Come back and fight Brocks with us. I have absolute confidence in slaying the boss. However, there are only 12 of

us here. The quest can be completed by 20 players. So if we kill the boss now, the other 8 spots will go to waste. Since you're always there for me and my men, I can give the 8 spots to you. You will get Skill Point as the reward for completing the quest!"

"Just Skill Points?"

"Of course, guildmaster Snow. You mustn't be too greedy!"

"Humph! Guildmaster Zhan Yu, you're not this nice usually. What makes you come and beg? You're short on men? So you want us to help you out?"

"You're kidding, right? Do you think that's possible?"

"The boss' loot! We want half!"

"... Bye bye!"

"One-third of the loots then!"

"BYE BYE!"

"A quarter of the loots then!"

"Alright! However, you can only have a quarter of all the equipment dropped by the boss. Items are not included!" Zhang Yang also knew that the two Skill Points were far too little for Snow Seeker to accept the offer. If Zhang Yang really sweeps all the loots to himself in front of Crimson Rage, the ladies would definitely feel cheated and infuriated at the same time. They might even decide to never work together with him ever again!

"Deal! However, if you get at least 4 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment, you must promise to give us at least one of them!"

"No problem!"

After adding eight of the Crimson Rage members to his party, Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] and summoned Snow Seeker and 7 others from Crimson Rage over to his location. Zhang Yang had informed them to activate their Inheritance Transformation before they are summoned over. Well, the lady army was greeted by the boss's crazy bombarding attacks the moment they arrived. However, Zhang Yang

activated the special effect of the Kingcross's Sword once again at the correct timing, and everyone was immune to the effect of the boss's {Soul Penetrate}.

"So this is it... how did you managed to get such a secret weapon?" Snow Seeker's eyes were glittering while she looked at Zhang Yang. Having a weapon that can nullify the boss's {Soul Penetrate} was like nullifying the boss's strongest AoE Skill. The boss's {Shadow Arrow Barrage} could only deal a DPS 50,000 damage. The three Healers in Zhang Yang's party wouldn't even break a sweat.

Well, Brocks was impossible for the players to take him head-on at the current stage of the game. It was not because the boss's single attacks were too oppressively powerful, it was actually because the boss could combine his {Shadow Arrow Barrage} and {Soul Penetrate} and utilize them perfectly together to form a deadly combo. That was how the boss was able to wipe out all of his enemies within the vicinity of his attacks. However, once the players are able to counter that deadly combination, the boss would become a 'fallen god'. When that happens, the players would only have to focus on dealing as much as damage as they could to the boss.

95%, 90%, 85%... the HP bar of the boss was reducing steadily at a very slow pace.

Even though the other guilds had retreated away from the battle to slay Brocks, a few players had stayed behind in the vicinity to observe the situation. If there are ever any unexpected developments on the situation, these players would be able to report the situation back to their guilds. By then, they would be able to come up with some countermeasures.

These players had been wandering around the surroundings, slaying quite a number of monsters. They were a little bit shocked to see that there were some players still attempting to fight the boss.

At first, they were not bothered by it at all. They deeply believed that it was impossible for anyone to defeat the boss. However, they started to realize that something was odd. The HP bar of the boss was reducing at an

average pace. However, the players didn't seem like they would fall anytime soon!

They were instantly shocked by what they saw with their own eyes. So they quickly reported the news back to their 'headquarters'. However, that map was extremely vast! Players would need about 3 to 4 hours to travel back to this spot even if they were on the Marlin's Land of Salt. They would require more time if they were to travel from Territories around to this spot.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and the others only needed two hours to slay the boss!

--- Actually, if players could not take down the boss in two hours, they would have to give up by then. Even if they had Healers who were capable of maintaining their HP bars at the safe level, they would still need to have enough firepower in order to get the job done. If they do not have enough firepower, the boss's HP would rise back to full eventually.

Zhang Yang wanted to wait for the players to leave first before he begins touching the boss. Well, he had his reasons. If someone suddenly activated their Inheritance Transformation and charges in at the crucial final moment to land a hit, those players would stand a chance to steal all the loot the boss.

When the number of players in the vicinity are high, there would be no telling how chaotic the 'snatching' would get.

Now that the players were gone, Zhang Yang and his party could peacefully fight the boss. Even if someone charges in to interrupt at the final moment of the boss battle, they would be very small in numbers. There should not be any high Tier players in the surrounding of the boss currently --- well, which high Tier players would waste their time standing idly by the side, observing the situation of a boss battle?

However, they were afraid that the situation might suddenly change without any signs of warning. So, the gang was focusing their full firepower on the boss. They just wanted the boss battle to end as soon as possible. The loot would only be theirs if they manage to sweep the loot

into their own pockets.

Poor Brocks was a World boss, after all. However, after his {Soul Penetrate} had lost its threatening factor, the boss was a tiger without its teeth. Although the tiger would still have claws that are sharp as f*ck, the tiger would still lose most of its power. That really made Brocks vulnerable. The players could defeat him under those circumstances!

70%, 50%, 30%!

Zhang Yang attempted to throw another {Glare of the Death God} on the boss. However, he suffered the same fate as it was for the first time. However, the eight ladies had joined in to aid them. So, their firepower had reached the 'minimum standard' required to defeat the boss. Judging from the firepower of the entire party, they should be able to take out the boss within 100 to 110 minutes!

20%!

The boss was infuriated. He was activating his {Soul Penetrate} at a more frequent rate. However, that Skill could not even cause an itch in the players. So, Brocks could only stand there and let the players slaughter him up with their 'Killing Cleave' Skills. His HP bar had gone down to 10% in a very swift manner!

At the same time, the cooldown of Brocks's {Shadow Arrow Barrage} had been shortened from 6 seconds down to 3 seconds. So, the DPS of the boss was increased from 50,000 damage to 100,000 damage! However, because the 3 Healers managed to heal everyone up to the safe level before the HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 10%, everyone was far from danger. Meanwhile, their Inheritance Transformations had boosted their initial HP amounts by a lot. Therefore, they could still stay alive for quite a while even if the boss bombards them with his powerful attacks.

Furthermore, Han Ying Xue still had not used her {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}. Well, that godly Skill could potentially heal everyone on the party back to their full health states!

8%, 5%, 2%, 1%!

"Argh ---" Brocks let out a miserable scream and slammed his face on the ground from midair. Then, he dropped tons of equipment and many other items upon his death. Brocks was really generous. He was worthy of being called one of the World bosses!

'Ding! Congratulations for being the First Party in the server to slay an Ascended Tier Boss, your glorious deeds shall be remembered forever in the Historical List of the world. As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your party name will be published on the Historical List, allowing the world to praise you!'

Once the boss was dead, Zhang Yang immediately received a system notification. Although he had previously slain the king of the Emerald City, the system did not recognize that kill because Zhang Yang basically stole that kill. Therefore, the 'First Clear' for killing an Ascended Tier Boss had only appeared for the first time here after they slew Brocks.

Zhang Yang would definitely not giving the advertising opportunity to the Crimson Rage. So, he quickly filled the empty column with his advertising phrase and let the server do its work. The notifications began to ring out across the entire server. Well, the notifications did cause quite a bit of havoc among the players all around the world. They could only sigh in regret as they halted. Since the boss had been taken care of, they had no reason to go back to the spot anymore.

"Loot time!" Wei Yan Er cheered. She immediately bounced over to the loots and picked them all up. Therefore, Zhang Yang switched the setting so that only the 'Captain' would be able to distribute the loots. Then, he passed the authority over to Wei Yan Er. Therefore, the little brat was the only one who could distribute the loot to the others.

The boss was being extremely generous this time. He dropped 10 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment and 5 pieces of Holy Tier equipment. Other than that, there were also 7 Skill Books, 4 pieces Skill Point Crystallizes, 7 pieces of Top Tier Aura Stones...

What a great bunch of loots the boss bestowed them!

"Let's distribute the loots first!" Zhang Yang quickly said. Well, Zhang

Yang wanted to 'shoo' away the lady army. He wanted to prevent the ladies from noticing the value of their spoils. After all, they might have other ideas after knowing. Other than Snow Seeker, the other ladies from Crimson Rage were basically hoodlums. They would just use any means necessary to obtain what they want!

Zhang Yang acted very generously and said, "Guildmaster Snow, there are 10 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment here. So based on the promise I made for you, you can only take two of them. But I'm a generous person. Just take three then! Come, take them and go!"

Snow Seeker rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang. Then she quickly picked up the equipment that Zhang Yang tossed over to her. After that, she said, "Though the Ascended Tier equipment are precious, there are items that are much better than enhancing our attributes!"

Well, speaking of which, Snow Seeker was content with what she got by the end of the deal. They knew that they were just here to run some errands for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could have invited other people instead of them, after all. So they had actually earned an easy fortune for themselves. It was really fortunate for them to obtain 3 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment and two Skill Points as the reward for completing the quest.

Chapter 780: A Variable Tank

Snow Seeker went through the 10 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment over and over again without being able to make up her mind at all. After struggling hard for over half a day, she finally decided to take the three Ascended Tier equipment that she handpicked. After that, Snow Seeker led the lady army and left for White Jade Castle. They wanted to stand by at the main city until Zhang Yang and their gang get back, before they hand in the quest together.

Among the 7 Ascended Tier equipment, there were two Heavy Armor, three Leather Armor, and two Cloth Armor. Snow Seeker took one ring, one necklace, and one accessory. Well, her decision was reasonable. Defensive equipment were much easier to come by. However, necklaces, rings, and accessories were very rare in the game. It would be much more difficult to farm for them.

However, the additional attributes of the three pieces of Ascended Tier equipment that Snow Seeker took were lower. It was hard to tell if Snow Seeker had made the right choice.

After distributing the three Leather Armor and the two Cloth Armor, it was time for the final two Heavy Armor. One was a pair of pants while the other was a helmet.

[Xenopus-Scaled Helmet] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +39,207

Strength: +7,009

Agility: +2,916

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 78,410 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,070 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Ten Dusk immediately expressed that he was just tagging along. He did not believe that he deserved any of the loot. He had no intention of claiming any of the loot at all. Well, everyone praised him for that. Well, in fact, he and Female Raid Covent did not really contribute much in the boss battle. So, if they were to be included in the distribution of the equipment, even if the gang would not disagree, they might not be that happy about it.

On the other hand, Endless Starlight's face was much thicker than a concrete wall. Of course, part of the main reason was because he had been part of the gang for quite some time now. As a secondary Tanker on the party, he would need to power up himself a little bit from time to time!

However, equipment for Knights would have much higher stats in terms of Intelligence Attributes. Although that helmet was also suitable for a Knight, it was obvious that he was not the most suitable person for that helmet. Well, he was in fact the most unqualified person among the gang for the moment. Therefore, the equipment could only go to either Zhang Yang or Wei Yan Er. However, Zhang Yang decided to take the greaves instead. So, he passed it on to the little brat.

The helmet that he currently wore was a Level 170 Holy Tier equipment. However, the greaves that he had on him was just a Level 150 Ethereal Tier equipment. It was obvious that he could get more power if he switches his greaves away.

[Dark Abyss Greaves] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +40,239

Strength: +6,882

Agility: +3,002

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 80,470 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,070 damage when hit.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

Endless Starlight had no lots nor luck with this piece of equipment. He could only drool at it. Meanwhile, even though Ten Dusk was admiring the equipment as well, he kept himself well under control.

After they were done distributing the equipment, it was time for them to look at the items.

The four Skill Point Crystals were distributed according to their turns. Zhang Yang acquired one of the Skill Point Crystals. With the other Skill Point that he acquired from the system when he reached Level 180, he added the two Skill Points to his {Force Strike}. Currently, his {Force Strike} had reached Level 7. After adding the other two Skill Points that he acquired from the quest reward, his {Force Strike} would become Level 9. So, one more level there. One more level before his {Force Strike} could become a Skill that would always trigger an additional attack that would always be a Critical Hit!

As for the 7 pieces of Top-Tier Aura Stone, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream took 5 of them and added the stones onto their {Companion Aura} and {Recovery Aura}. By doing so, they managed to level up their Aura Skills up to Level 10. The remaining two were given to Fatty Han. Since he only had his {Companion Aura}, it would not matter at all if his Aura Skill is not maxed out.

The Skill Books were distributed based on the numbers they rolled. Zhang Yang was a little unlucky today. He did not even get a Skill Book by the end of it. However, Wei Yan Er gave him a pleasant surprise right after

that --- [Book of Revelation:Chapter 7]!

He currently had the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 1-6] with him. With this newly acquired Chapter 7 and Chapter 8 that Sun Xin Yu was holding, Zhang Yang had finally collected the first 8 chapters of the [Book of Revelation]!

Before Zhang Yang could even make a sound, Sun Xin Yu took out the Chapter 8 and passed it to Zhang Yang immediately. After combining them, Zhang Yang only had one more chapter before he could finally combine the chapters into one complete book. So, where is this Chapter 9 now?

The combination of the first eight chapters of the [Book of Revelation] could provide 40% additional Attack to the entire party. Also, players on the same party as the holder could immediately get resurrected with 80% HP remaining. Furthermore, the cooldown of the resurrection had been shortened to 3 hours only! Other than that, the Skill's enhancement effect had been improved to enhance two Skills.

After picking up the quest item 'Brocks's Staff', all loot had now been picked up except for one.

[Goblin War Chariot Enhanced 2.0] (Tank)

Use: Summons or dismantles a tank that can fit 10 persons. Casting time: 10 seconds.

Required Level: 180

Bound upon pick up.

"Tank? What the heck is this?" Everyone was surprised to see such a thing among the loot.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Let's decide who takes it. Then the person will be able to put out its description on the system."

Everyone began to roll. By the end of it, Wei Yan Er rolled out 99 points and won the bet. So, she managed to secure the ownership of the tank. When she picked up the tank model that was the size of her palm, the

system immediately refreshed and a system notification appeared.

‘System Notification: The first Tank has been spawned. The Tank System has been officially unlocked! Please visit our official websites for more information about the Tank System!’

Everyone was very interested in the new Tank System. So, many of them logged off the game to take a look at the new system’s information on the Official Website.

According to Zhang Yang’s understanding, there are four different models of Tank with four different passenger capacities. The 1.0 model Tank can carry 5 persons. Then the 2.0 model Tank can carry 10 persons. Meanwhile, the 3.0 model Tank can carry 20 persons. Last but not least, the 4.0 model Tank can carry up to a total of 50 persons. Each model of the tanks can be purchased from any army facility in any of the main cities in the server. However, the price would be...

The 1.0 model was the cheapest among all models. Each one was priced at 200,000 gold pieces. The 2.0 model was a little more expensive than the 1.0 model. Players would require to spend 500,000 gold pieces in order to get one. Meanwhile, the 3.0 model would cost 1,000,000 gold pieces and the 4.0 model would cost 5,000,000 gold pieces! Because 1 gold piece is currently equal to 1 dollar in real life, the price of each Tank was as expensive as a sports car in real life!

Obviously, other than the rich players, normal players would not even think about having one of these tanks! Furthermore, it would be pointless if someone buys a Tank for him or herself. The Tanks would require a sufficient number of ‘passengers’ in order to function at its full functionality and potential.

Everyone logged back into the game. Then Zhang Yang and the gang went back to the main city to hand in the quest ‘Defeat the Ambitious Schemer Brocks’. All 20 of them had acquired the 2 additional Skill Points and everyone was quite happy about it, of course.

Zhang Yang picked 20 of the most loyal and trustable members from his guild. Then, he transferred 5,000,000 gold pieces to each of them from

his own pocket. Well, his intention was to let them purchase a Tank Model 4.0 for themselves. 20 Tanks could fit 1,000 players, after all. That would make them into the most powerful source of firepower of the guild.

By doing so, Zhang Yang had just spent over 1,000,000,000 gold pieces in one single go. However, he could still run the Territories because Lone Desert Smoke had his back. Therefore, it was a wise move to try improving the firepower of Lone Desert Smoke in some sense. When his guild becomes much stronger, Zhang Yang would be able to hold his grip firmly over the Territories that he has right now. Well, if any other guild is capable of purchasing 20 Tanks and declaring Territory Conquests over one of his territories with the Tanks...

One single Model 4.0 Tank could fit 50 players. From the perspective of HP, one Tank could have more HP amount than a player who has activated a Class S Inheritance Transformation. However, the movement speed of a Tank was extremely slow. Tanks could be used for pushing a boss in the Open World, or some large-scaled war, or party battles such as Territory Conquests.

The Tanks could only stack the HP Amount of the players but not their Attacks. Just imagine this. There are 20 players in a 3.0 Model Tank. Each of them could only deal a basic attack of 10,000 damage. So when the Tank that is filled with 20 players encounters a boss with a Defence of 11,000 points, the Tank could only deal 20 separate forms of damage to the boss in each round of its attack. The Attack power of the players would not be able to stack up to a total of 200,000 damage to deal an effective amount of 190,000 damage.

On the other hand, a player with a Class B Inheritance who has 10,000 basic damage could increase his or her Attack up, ranging from 20,000 to 30,000 when he or she activates Inheritance Transformation. Unlike the Tank, the player could deal a damage value that penetrates the boss' Defence. The player could potentially be a thousand times stronger than the other 10 players combined.

In other words, Tanks could only boost the survival capability of the players. It had nothing to do with increasing Attack or Defence of the

players. It would just deal as much damage to the target as it is supposed to. Well, a Tank could carry players altogether and sum up the amount of HP every player has, allowing the 10 to 20 players to all share the sum of their HP under one bar. Therefore, no one on the Tank would die if the total amount of HP on the Tank is not depleted. From a certain point of view, Tanks could still increase the Attack of the players --- the Attack power of the players would only be increased if they are able to stay alive.

Although 20 Tanks did not seem to be that much, the cost of purchasing 20 of them had reached up to a total of 1,000,000,000 gold pieces. Not every guild could afford to spend such an amount of money in one shot. Well, when they go to slay a World Boss in the future, Lone Desert Smoke would have the equivalent of 20 additional players with Class S Inheritance Transformation --- at least in terms of HP!

It would not really matter how many players rode the Tank. The Tank would be the focal point for their enemies to attack. Well, the concept would be similar to a player on a mount. The only difference was that the Defence of the merged mount and the player would be determined based on the Defence of the player, which was also the owner of the mount. Meanwhile, the Defence of the Tanks would be based on their own Defence values.

Newly acquired Tanks would not have any Defence nor Magic Defence attributes. However, the players could purchase Chariot Fenders from the military facilities in the main cities to fortify their Tanks. There were two kinds of Chariot Fenders, one being Magic Defence, while the other being purely Defence. They would be graded into four different categories of grades, knowingly as A, B, C, and D.

Each D-grade Chariot Fender could provide 2,000 Defence Armor or any sort of 2,000 Magic Defence. Each of the C-grade Chariot Fender could provide 2,600 Defence Armor or any sort of 2,600 Magic Defence. Each B-grade Chariot Fender could provide 3,300 Defence Armor or any sort of 3,300 Magic Defence. Last but not least, the Each A-grade Chariot Fender could provide 4,000 Defence Armor or any sort of 4,000 Magic Defence.

However, players could not just purchase A-grade Chariot Fenders with

money and install them on their Tanks. The owner of the Tank must reach the same level or grade first before they could acquire A-grade Chariot Fenders and use them effectively on their Tanks. Or else, the Chariot Fenders would just be like decoratives to the Tanks. D-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 180 before they become functional. C-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 210 before they become functional. B-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 240 before they become functional. Last but not the least, A-grade Chariot Fenders would require players to be at least Level 270 before they become functional.

It could not matter what type of Model the Tank is, one Tank could only bear as much as 10 Chariot Fenders at the same time. Magic Defence type or Defence type, Fire Resistance or Shadow Resistance, the types of Defence and Resistance could be mixed freely, according to the players' free will. There were no limitations.

However, there would be certain limitations to it because there were over 5 different types of Magic Resistance. If players dabble too much with all 5 different types of Magic Resistance without focusing on any one of them, the effects would be watered down.

Among the 20 Model 4.0 Tanks that Zhang Yang purchased, 15 of them had been fortified with Grade-D Chariot Fenders. Each of them had over 20,000 Defence, which was much higher than Zhang Yang's current Defence value! The other 5 remaining Tanks were fortified with 10 pieces of Frost Resistance Chariot Fenders, 10 pieces of Fire Resistance Chariot Fenders or any other of the five types of Magic Resistance Chariot Fenders. They have been fortified accordingly to multiple situations.

Tanks do not have much durability to begin with. However, the Chariot Fenders do have durability. After losing their durability completely, these Chariot Fenders would lose their functionality. So, blacksmiths were required to be present nearby the Tanks in order to get the Chariot Fenders fixed. These Chariot Fenders were basically similar to players' equipment in terms of durability. In fact, these Chariot Fenders could be seen as the Tanks' equipment. They only add either Defence or Magic

Resistance to the Tanks. However, the Vitality, Strength, and the other Attributes of the Tanks would be based on the players' stats.

Chapter 781: Tank's Prowess

The moment the Tank System was implemented into the game, many guilds began to purchase the Tanks. The implementation of the new system had sparked the guild to spend fortunes to secure as many Tanks as they could. Even though not all guilds were as rich as Zhang Yang's Lone Desert Smoke, they just had to buy at least one or two Tanks to stay in the game! After all, one Model 4.0 Tank would have much more HP than a player that has activated his or her Class S Inheritance Transformation! Of course, the guilds would need such a powerful asset on their sides.

Furthermore, the Tanks initially existed in the form of small models that could be held in one's hand. They were similar to the 'leash' of a pet. So, the guilds could just keep the number of Tanks they possessed hidden deep up their sleeves to create an element of surprise for their enemies. They would only reveal how many Tanks they had during very crucial moments in battle.

Even the Model 1.0 Tanks cost 100,000 gold pieces each. The system had earned so much in just a couple of days. However, everyone was still buying in a frenzy, even though they were aware of it. Well, it cannot be helped, though. If your enemy has a Tank and you don't, you're basically f*cked in a head-on battle. After all, a Tank would basically be as tough as a player who has activated his or her Inheritance Transformation.

The first thing that Wei Yan Er did after she logged back into the game was to drag Zhang Yang's *ss over to the military quartermaster of the main city. There, she commanded Zhang Yang to purchase 10 pieces of D-grade Defensive Chariot Fenders so that she could fortify her Tank.

She tried to sound reasonable and said, "This Tank is going to help everyone, not just me! Of course, you can't expect me to pay for everything!"

Even though the Tanks were bound to whoever who picks them up, the Chariot Fenders were not. They could be traded freely among players.

However, it would not actually benefit the players much. After all, only NPCs sell them in the main cities. So, the fact that the items were not 'bound upon pick up' only allows players to purchase the Chariot Fenders on behalf of the others.

Other than that, once the Chariot Fenders are installed on the Tanks, they would no longer be removed from the Tanks for others to use. They could only be replaced by new Chariot Fenders. Those Chariot Fenders on the Tanks would be automatically destroyed when they are replaced by new Chariot Fenders. Meanwhile, each D-grade Chariot Fender cost up to 2,000 gold pieces. That was because the game developers wanted to restrict players from switching the types of their Chariot Fenders without consequences.

For instance, players would have to use Defence-type Chariot Fenders to battle against Physical-type bosses. On the other hand, the players would have to use Magic-Defence-type Chariot Fenders to battle against Magic-type bosses. If they needed to switch the types of Chariot Fenders whenever they were going to battle different types of bosses, their finance would definitely run dry in the blink of an eye. Because of that, it would be wiser to purchase 6 Tanks and install different types of Chariot Fenders on each of them!

After installing the Chariot Fenders on her Tank, the little brat immediately felt an itch to try out her new 'toy'. She quickly summoned everyone over to Sauron's Castle, saying that she wanted to try out the functionality of the Tank she newly acquired.

Everyone in the gang was curious as well. So, it did not take long before all of them arrived at the entrance of the Sauron's Castle. After everyone arrived, Wei Yan Er took out the little tank model and started chanting. A stream of light flashed across the model. In just an instant, a heavily armored Tank appeared right before the little brat's eyes. The Tank had an open roof. So, players could just hop off the Tank anytime they wanted to. Of course, the main intention was to make it much more convenient for the players to attack from within the Tank.

Everyone got up the Tank. Each of them had an automated request sent

on their behalf, asking to board to Wei Yan Er. They could only get on the Tank when Wei Yan Er approved their requests. Or else, they would be forbidden from getting up the Tank.

"Oi! Little Yan Er! Why don't you let me in?" Other than Fatty Han and Endless Starlight, everyone was on board already. Fatty Han filled his cheeks with tears and look at the little brat.

"Kekeke!" Wei Yan Er laughed like a little b*tch and said, "Wretched fatty, little Starlight. You two have never once behaved appropriately. So, the captain of this Tank forbids your entry!"

Even though that was the case at first, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight managed to sweet talk their way onto the Tank. They kept praising the little brat pretty and nice in order to get a pass to get on board.

"Charge! Let's kill ourselves some monsters!" Wei Yan Er was standing on the vehicle's front while raising her scythe up high and cried out loud. She looked like a powerful general giving orders for the Tank to move out --- the Tank is controlled by the owner. The control mechanism over the Tanks is basically similar to the control mechanism over the Mounts.

The Tank was crushing the ground as it was moving forward. The movement of the Tank was clumsy, sluggish, and noisy. It attracted quite some attention from the players in their surroundings. Many revealed a sense of admiration and envy on their faces when they saw Zhang Yang and the gang riding on a Tank.

However, the movement speed of the Tank was extremely slow. It could only move a little faster than the normal movement speed of a player when they are on foot. Because of that, everyone began to feel bored after a short burst of excitement. They were now behaving just like white-collared workers taking their daily commute.

Wei Yan Er smiled awkwardly and she quickly kept the Tank into her inventory. Then, everyone summoned their Flying Mounts and made their way to Sylrokia. They decided to camp at that site to slay monsters and complete some quests for the moment.

Thanks to the influence of the Kingcross's Sword, everyone tried to

complete the quests on the map. Everyone became skeptical on whether there would be some other similar quest items such as this sword. Furthermore, Ascended Tier bosses would not just sit tightly at a corner, waiting for players to find them and kill them. They would only be spawned by the system at certain time. So, before the bosses were spawned, no one would have any idea on what kind of insane Skills the bosses would have.

Upon arriving at a small valley, Zhang Yang and the gang noticed that the valley was full of wolves. They were basically Level 190-195 Normal Tier monsters. Although their numbers were abundant, they were not closely packed together. So, it would be impossible for Zhang Yang and the gang to kill them all in one shot.

Well, their main purpose was to try out the new Tank, after all. So Wei Yan Er quickly summoned the Tank and let everyone get onboard. After that, they charged out valiantly and marched towards the wolf's den with high spirit.

"Oooooo---" a wild wolf howled and charged towards the Tank. It reached out with its sharp claws and landed a solid strike on the Chariot Fender by the side of the Tank. The impact rang out and everyone received a damage value that popped right on top of them. The damage values on them ranged randomly from 2,000 damage to 5,000 damage.

Among them all, Zhang Yang was the one who had the most Defence. However, he received the most damage out of the gang. Therefore, Zhang Yang was the one who received the 5,000 damage. The others received less damage.

Well, the main reason was due to the fact that the Defence and Damage Immunity of everyone was based on the Defence of the Tank. The basic attack of the wild wolf was approximately 56,000 points. After applying the 20,000 Defence of the Tank's Defence, the wolf could only deal 36,000 damage to the Tank. As there were 10 of them on the Tank, the damage received by the tank was divided equally among the 10 of them in terms of percentages.

However, that would not mean that every one of them would receive 3,600 damage. Because the system wanted to apply the idea of 'sharing the same fate' to every single player on the same tank. Therefore, the deduction of HP would be based on percentage ratio. The system would make sure the HP bar for each of the players on the Tank would drop down to 99%, 90%, 70%.

Because Zhang Yang's HP was the highest among his gang, he received the most damage compared to the others based on the percentage ratio. Meanwhile, the players' Defence would not be accounted for when they are on the Tank. Or else, they would have their own Defence and the Tank's Defence stacked on together, making them so powerful that they might not even receive a single damage from the monsters!

--- All high Tier equipment had the special effect of absorbing damage. For instance, even though Sun Xin Yu and the others did not have shields on them, each of them also had over approximately 10,000 damage absorption. If they could really stack their own Defence and the Tank's Defence altogether, then any damage that is under 12,000 damage would not be able to cause a single damage point on them!

So obviously, that would not be the actual scenario!

Tanks would only enhance the survival ability of the players. They can't make players invincible!

After that, the gang began to launch their attacks on the wolf. After bombarding the wolf with their insanely powerful attacks, the monster died.

However, because the movement speed of the Tank was extremely slow, the gang believed that it was not a good idea to stay on the Tank if they wanted to grind. Of course, the gang could split up a little and lure the monsters to the Tank first before wiping them all out at once.

It did not take long before everyone lost their patience with the super slow movement speed of the Tank. One by one, they hopped off the Tank and began to walk on their own pairs of feet.

Well, the movement speed was not the only disadvantage that the Tank

had. Players would not be able to use quite a number of their powerful Skills. Skills such as {Ambush}, {Vanish}, {Fake Death}, {Thunder Strike} and many more would not be available while they are on a Tank. Other than that, there would only be one Tank on the aggro list of the monsters when they engage into battles. Players were like the weapons installed on the Tank. So, the monsters would not ignore the single unit on their aggro list, even if one of the Hunter onboard activates his or her {Fake Death}.

Wei Yan Er was the only one who got excited over the Tank. So after noticing everyone's dull reaction, she kept the Tank back into her Inventory and pouted in a huff.

Because of the new Tank System, many Nation Wars, Party Wars and Territory Conquests happened all over the server. The sides that had more Tanks obviously had the advantage over the sides that had lesser Tanks. Because of that, many guilds all over the server had been forced to invest more money on acquiring as many Tanks as they could.

Therefore, the number of Tanks and the number of players with Inheritance Transformations had become factors that determine a guild's power level!

And because of that, many average guilds that had not been performing well suddenly became powerful just because they had a guildmaster that's rich as f*ck. However, because Tanks could only be used when players had reached Level 180, many guilds could only keep the Tanks in their warehouse for the moment even they were able to buy a large quantity of Tanks.

Another month had passed in a blink of an eye. The game had entered another phase that Level 180 was the mainstream level in the game. Many players had attained Level 180 and beyond at that point of the game. Because of that, large-scale war between Regions had now become very common in the game. Well, there were many guilds who were not willing to stay in the shadow of others. So, they wanted to prove themselves by triggering wars.

Meanwhile, the Eternal Flame had become a powerful guild.

Furthermore, Zhong Xiu Hua was a rich f*cker who never runs out of money. So when his guild had gathered a certain number of Level 180 players, he decided to launch a Territory Conquest on Souron's Castle.

During that siege, the Eternal Flame had sent 13 Model 4.0 Tanks into the battle --- it was not because Zhong Xiu Hua only purchased that amount of Tanks. It was because he could only gather 500+ Level 180 players which was only enough to fill up 13 Model 4.0 Tanks.

Greeted with the ferocious siege from the Eternal Flame, Zhang Yang did not falter at all. He had nothing to worry about, after all. So, he sent 15 Model 4.0 Tanks into the battle (limited by the same factor - he could only gather that many Level 180 players). So, the two guilds had clashed in a fierce battle.

Having 28 Model 4.0 Tanks in the battlefield was basically like having 28 players with Class S Inheritance Transformations. However, there was also a power level difference, even though every single one of them were players with Class S Inheritances. Well, the same went to the Tanks. Although the Chariot Fenders on the Tanks were all D-grade, and it sounded like there was no difference at all, the 'HP' and 'Attack Power' of the Tanks would still vary based on the players on them!

Just imagine this. If one Tank is filled with players wearing Ethereal Tier equipment and the other Tank is filled with players wearing Holy Tier equipment, which Tank would be more powerful, then? It is obvious, isn't it? So, when the number of players increases up to the scale of 50, the difference between the power levels among the players would become extremely obvious.

The Eternal Flame had an average of 25,000,000 HP on each of their Tanks. However, the Lone Desert Smoke had an average of 30,000,000 HP on each of their Tanks! Furthermore, the 'Attack Power' on both sides was vastly different!

Everything was obvious. The Lone Desert Smoke had taken down the first 6 bosses in the Spectre's Cavern. Although not every party of the Lone Desert Smoke managed to achieve such an achievement, the others

were also managed to progress by over 2/10, or 3/10 of the dungeon. Their achievements were considered not that bad at all.

On the other hand, even though the main party of the Eternal Flame managed to progress over 4/10 of the dungeon, the 'power level' of their core players still had a long way to improve before they could catch up with the 'power level' of the Lone Desert Smoke's core players. Other than that, the number of players on their Dungeon Expedition Force. Their progress in clearing dungeons was slow as well. Only 3 parties of their Dungeon Expedition Force managed to clear the first boss of the dungeon.

More importantly, the level and Tier of their equipment were far weaker than the level and Tier of Lone Desert Smoke's equipment!

Therefore, the Eternal Flame totally lost the battle!

Chapter 782: Sandra The Rover

One of the main reason Eternal Flame lost was because Zhong Xiu Hua acted rashly. If he was willing to spend such a large sum of money, he could have bought 1,000 Model 4.0 Tanks and wait patiently for his guild to have 50,000 Level 180 players first. By then, he could have launched a full-scale attack on Souron Castle with 1,000 Model 4.0 Tanks at the same time. 1,000 Model 4.0 Tanks would be equally tough as 1,000 players who had activated Class S Inheritance Transformation. Even though the Tanks could only move at an extremely slow speed, but Territories and the Territory Hall would not move. So, it would be possible for them to take over the Territory Hall if they are well prepared in the first place.

Of course, a guild would have to spend over 50,000,000,000 to acquire 1,000 units of Model 4.0 Tanks. Well, there shouldn't be anyone in the entire world who would actually invest that much of an amount in virtual assets! After all, Tanks would be bound to the person who buys them. They can't be transferred or traded to other players. So it would be quite risky as well.

However, if 1,000 Tanks could really take down a Territory, the 50,000,000,000 spent would be worth it! After all, a Territory could generate an amount of 50,000,000,000 gold pieces back to cover the cost after 2 months!

Of course, Tanks were not invincible. For instance, let's take a closer look at the Model 4.0 Tanks. Each of the Model 4.0 Tank could fit 50 players. So, the sum of HP the Tank should be 40,000,000 HP --- each of the player would need a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment to contribute, at an average of 800,000 HP. However, how long would it take for high Tier players to empty out a total of 40,000,000 HP, then?

There was no way for the players to heal the Tanks. That could prove to be a fatal weakness of the Tanks. Of course, if players on board the Tanks were powerful enough, they might still stand a chance at taking out their enemies before the HP bar of the Tanks deplete. Upon getting out of Battle Mode, the HP bar of the Tanks would recover back to 100% over a period

of time.

However, it would be impossible for one to get out of Battle Mode when one is standing in the middle of a large-scale battle with tens of thousands of players in the vicinity. Tanks could only provide players a longer survival period on the battlefield. There was no way that they could replace the status of players with Inheritance Transformation! After all, Inheritance Transformations could only be used once in every 3 days. Of course, they would be the real deal!

"Noob tank, cousin sis! Time to wake your *sses up! The new Ascended Tier boss will be spawning soon nearby the Bama Volcano! Wake up now! No more sleeping!" Wei Yan Er slammed on the door and screamed.

"God damn it!"

Zhang Yang paused his intense exercise instantly. Now, he had to wake up early in the morning to 'help' Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu do some intense 'exercise' every day. So it was one of his new daily habits now. While he was drilling hard on the matter, he was shocked by the sudden interference from Wei Yan Er to the point that he almost lost both his 'hardness' and his 'hardiness'!

"Leave her be!" Han Ying Xue's eyes had drifted so far away from reality that she could not get hold of them anymore. She was currently clinging on Zhang Yang with her four limbs like an octopus, gasping in a sexy voice, as if she was going to melt.

After another intense session, Zhang Yang cuddled the two ladies down to the living room. Well, he did look happier and refreshed after the release. Today was Daffodil Daydream's turn to cook. So, she made everyone a sumptuous breakfast.

Wei Yan Er was biting on her fork while she was moving up and down on both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Then she said, "Cousin sis, why do you and sister Sun always lost in a fight with noob tank? I've always hear you two going 'argh argh argh' and 'eek eek eek' every time you two fight noob tank! I pity you two!"

Zhang Yang could not help to laugh it out loud. This little brat was still

so pure even after staying with them for so long. Such a pure girl is hard to come by these days. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream blushed at the same instance after hearing what she said. The little brat had no idea on what was going on, but the three other ladies were very clear about it. Of course, the ladies, especially the two of them would feel awkward. They had just been exposed by this little brat without her own knowledge!

"Yan Er, you can't talk about it in front of the gang and the others, you know? Especially the others!" Han Ying Xue immediately attempted to brainwash the little brat. Well, if little brat ever feels the itch to tell the gang especially Fatty Han and Endless Starlight, how much more awkward would the situation get then?

"Oh--- okay!" Wei Yan Er did not seem to fully understand. Indeed, she did understand some things that husbands and wives would do. However, she had no idea at all when it came to the process of making a baby!

Well, one of the main reasons was because her mother passed away when she was very young. On the other hand, it was natural that her father would not talk about the birds and bees to the little brat. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue had done a splendid job in protecting the little brat from being corrupted. However, the main reason among the main reasons was because this little brat had a weird and strange personality in the first place. She just loved to pull pranks on people and buys expensive purses and perfumes. Another main reason that kept her from getting involved in a relationship was because of the runaway on her chest!

"Oh right! The new Ascended Tier boss is about to appear in the game!" Wei Yan Er immediately went back on track. She swept her food into her big mouth and kept her mouth full. Meanwhile, she could still talk loudly and clearly. That was really something to be admired.

"Oh. Did you find any other information about the boss from the official website?" Zhang Yang asked out of convenience. At the same time, he was frowning. Because Han Ying Xue that witch, was teasing him by placing her soft and fair leg in between his thighs.

"Yea, of course there's more! The boss is called Sandras The Rover. It's a Stone Giant. After spawning, the boss will roam around the Bama Volcano! Wow, the boss has a 10% rate of dropping a Holy Tier pet mount! Did you hear me? It's a freaking Holy Tier pet mount!" Wei Yan Er was so joyful that she began to dance around.

Zhang Yang could not help but smile, then he said, "Don't get too excited just yet. You can get excited after you manage to get it!"

"However, we don't have any secret items like the Kingcross Sword, right? So, we'll have to compete with the other guilds in this, right?" Daffodil Daydream was beginning to worry.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "With the Tank System up and running, players would be more capable of challenging a boss. However, even though the system had stated that the boss would be roaming around the Bama Volcano, the boss would still be very difficult to find. The Bama Volcano map is very huge!"

"En!" The four ladies nodded at the same time to express their agreement on it. The Bama Volcano was located at the west of the Sylrokia map. Zhang Yang and the ladies had grinded on the map before. So they were quite familiar with the map now. The Bama Volcano area was very vast indeed. It would take approximately 2 to 3 hours for the players to cover the entire area on their Flying Mounts. Furthermore, the forest across the land was thick as f*ck! Even if millions of players searched for the boss at the same time, it would still take up some time. While the players were searching for the boss, the boss might have been taken out when they finally manage to find it.

"Then, what are we waiting for? Let's hustle up and search for the boss! Let's log into the game!" Wei Yan Er was an impatient little b*tch, after all. So, she already began pulling Han Ying Xue to go back upstairs.

"What's the rush? Finish your food first!" Zhang Yang laughed. Then, he swept his eyes across the flat chest of the little brat and said, "They'll only grow if you eat enough!"

"Stinky noob tank! I'm unfriending you! Pui!" Wei Yan Er tightened her

teeth.

Everyone logged into the game after getting ready for the day. Zhang Yang immediately assembled all the Level 180 players in his guild and made a headcount. However, the number fell short of his expectations. There were only 883 players in total that had achieved Level 180 and beyond. He could not even fill up 18 Tanks, because of that. Of course, no one would actually sit on the Tanks while traveling across the map. So, Zhang Yang assigned his guild members to their respective Tanks. He assigned 50 players to each Tank, with one player as the captain of the party. Even a Tank would need a leader to lead.

Starting from the Ascended Tier bosses, no guild could take a boss all on their own. Every time there is a new boss spawning, the system would notify the players in the entire server. The system would also reveal the specific location of the Quest-type bosses like Brocks. Meanwhile, the system would only reveal the whereabouts of the bosses that are not related to any quest in the game. For instance, Sandra The Rovers who just spawned not long ago.

Of course, the system would also spawn new bosses out of the blue to provide players the element of surprise. By doing so, they could keep the pace of the game fresh and exciting. Players would be competing against each to see who takes down the bosses first, because of that. At some point, fierce battles could lead the players plunging themselves deeper into the game. On the other hand, death follows whenever there is a fierce battle. So, the system would be able to earn tons of money by charging the players for repairing their broken equipment after battles. Truth be told, that was one of the main methods the game company uses to suck money out of the players! Everyone would have to repair their equipment at some point.

When Zhang Yang and the gang arrived at the Bama Volcano, the area was reamed by tons of players. Most of them were searching for the whereabouts of the boss. However, some of them were there to take advantage on the others by launching their attacks on the weaker ones. By doing so, they could obtain some equipment from the players they manage

to slay.

"So, where do we start first?"

Bama Volcano was 3 times as large as Shang Hai capital in real life. Even if Lone Desert Smoke mobilizes almost 1,000 members to search for the boss, they would only be able to cause a small ripple across the surface of the map.

Without having much of an option to pick, Zhang Yang and his guild members decided to split out in order to cover more ground. After all, moving around would be much better than just sitting tightly in one spot, waiting for something to happen.

The shadows of tons of players were entering the map. They looked like streams of a river that gushed throughout the map. As they were splitting up, making their way across the map, they looked like many river branches splitting out into the thick forest of the map. Further out, the shadows of players began to disappear into the forest without a trace. From that point of view, that should be enough to describe how large the map is!

Everyone was busy looking for the boss, currently. The entire forest area was covered with gigantic trees that were as tall as hundreds of meters. Because of that, there was no way for the players to locate the boss by looking down from the sky. So, they could only stay on foot. Therefore, it was a slow, arduous process.

However, there was also an advantage here. For the party who manages to find the boss, they would be able to take down the boss as long as they had the capability of doing so. They would not have to worry that other parties would suddenly interrupt the boss battle --- if they would really meet some other party while battling the boss, they must be having the worst luck of their lives, then.

Zhang Yang divided his main force into 19 different forces. Each of the forces had a Tank. Each Tank would be assigned to one direction. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang's main party took a different direction to proceed as well. Well, they did have their very own Inheritance Transformations

and a Tank. So, their Attack Power would surely be much more powerful than the other 18 parties.

"Boss--- Where are you, boss --- come here, boss--- I'll give you a snack if you come out now!" Wei Yan Er was cheering and laughing all the way as she was riding on her pet mount, searching through the forest.

"You have such fair and soft meat, little brat. You better watch out! You might become the boss's first choice as a snack!" Zhang Yang attempted to tease the little brat.

"You piece of savage human!" Just when little brat was about to hit Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang suddenly made a gesture to signal her to calm the f*ck down.

"There's movement ahead of us!" Zhang Yang sent a message to the party chat without making a sound. He tried to warn the others to lighten their footsteps. Therefore, everyone was proceeding forward as lightly as they could.

After walking for over tens of steps, everyone noticed that there was a gigantic Stone Giant roaring right before them. The Stone Giant was whirling its two arms towards the ground repeatedly, like two giant windmills spinning at a high speed, smashing the ground violently with its mighty strength. The air was stirred so violently by the movement of its arms that the surroundings were like being blown by a typhoon. That Stone Giant was 50 meters in height. Its entire body was covered by mosses. The impact caused by each of the smashes on the ground were quaking the surroundings as well.

It was the freaking boss! Zhang Yang and his gang had finally found the boss!

[Sandras The Rover] (Ascended, Elemental)

Level: 205

HP: 102,000,000,000/103,000,000,000

Defence: 32470

Melee Attack: 294,899 – 394,899

Skills:

[Trample of War]: Stomp the ground in the surroundings and causes 350,000 Physical Damage to all targets. Targets will fall to the ground.

[Hammer Strike]: Use its solid rock fists to slam the targets, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damages all enemy targets within range.

[Elemental Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: Sandras is a wise and farsighted Stone Giant. He loves to travel around the world. He cannot decide on whether he should eat the stone in six bites or eight bites. To him, the different number of bites can define the tastiness of his meal profoundly.

Seeing that the boss did not have a full HP bar, he could assume that the boss was in the middle of a battle. Actually, it was also visually obvious, because there were countless Fire Balls, Frost Arrows and other arrows bombarding the boss. The visual effect of the magic impacts were stunning to gaze upon.

Chapter 783: A Wind-Up Work!

So who could they be then? Which party was currently battling the boss then?

Well, it would not matter much. Since Zhang Yang and his gang had arrived, they would definitely be sticking their feet into the battle. The existence of World Class bosses was to encourage players to compete against each other in order to snatch the boss kill for themselves. There was no such thing as a 'first come first serve' basis. Everything will be based on one's capability of snatching!

Zhang Yang and his gang were staying low by the bushes as they were observing the boss battle. There were a total of 16 Model 4.0 Tanks lining up by the legs of the boss. They were launching their most ferocious attacks on the boss. Other than the 16 Tanks, there were also more than 10 players who had activated their Inheritance Transformation acting on their own free will.

"Huh?" Zhang Yang squinted and took a closer look at the players. Those players really seemed very familiar --- Dragon Marquis, Scholar Musou, Longrich, Death Arbiter and the other core players of Eternal Flames!

However, the tactic they were using was a little stupid.

Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed heavily after seeing how Eternal Flame operated in a battle. At the same time, he sent out messages to inform the rest of his troops to come over here.

Truth be told, the Tanks could only be used to overcome the disadvantage of players without Inheritance Transformation who had low amounts of HP. They were merely a new tool introduced for the normal players to use against players with Inheritance Transformations. Because the Tanks had a maximum durability, once the Tanks degrade to a certain level, the Tanks would be destroyed automatically. When that happens, they would have to be sent back to the Blacksmiths in the main cities for repairs in order to be used again.

Even if the Tanks were all 50-player scale Model 4.0 Tanks and each of

the players had over 700,000 HP, each Tank would only have a Maximum HP of 35,000,000 HP. Meanwhile, Sandra was obviously a World Boss. Its {Trample of War} could be activated once every 5 seconds. The Stone Giant could deal a DPS of 70,000 damage. So it would only require 500 seconds in order for the boss to take out a total of 35,000,000 HP!

The players on the Tank could still be healed constantly. However, the HP bar of the Tank would not change based on that. Well, it was pretty obvious that they would need more than just 8 minutes to empty out the HP bar of the boss. So when the Tanks are destroyed, the players would be back to square.

The right way of using the Tanks would be to send the Tanks into battle, batch by batch. When the HP bar of the Tanks on the frontlines are about to deplete, the players should just keep the Tank into the inventory and retreat. They should let the players who possess a Tank to retreat far from the frontlines to get healed up or to get killed instantly. Either way, the Tanks could get out of their Battle Mode so that they could recover their HP bars.

The 16 Tanks could just be arranged into a formation where they could take turns going to the frontline of the battlefield. By doing so, they would only have to maintain their firepower on the boss to keep the boss from exiting its Battle Mode. Or else, if the boss gets to recover its HP bar back to full, the party would be wiped out completely by the boss. That was one efficient way of winning a drawn-out war against a World boss. Or else, they would need to travel all the way back to their main cities to get their destroyed Tanks repaired. Who could afford to wait for so long without dying?

Were they not relying too much on the Tanks then?

No, that should not be the case. Well, because the Tank System had just been introduced into the game. Many players had not get used to the Tanks that had the potential of breaking the balance of the game. They thought that the Tanks functioned similarly to their pet mounts. As long as the players on top of them did not die, the Tanks or the pet mounts beneath the players would not be destroyed or die as well!

The Graveyard was located extremely far from where they were right now. Therefore, they could only opt for the weak resurrection every time they die in order to stay in the boss battle. Upon resurrection, they could just hop onto their mounts and get back to the boss as soon as they are able to. Or else, they would require at least 2 to 3 hours to come all the way back if they wanted to run back to their dead bodies on foot.

Zhang Yang grinned with a sense of evilness on his face. Then he said, "Get ready, guys. When they're about to be wiped out, we'll charge in and take them out!"

"Alright! Alright!" Wei Yan Er took up her scythe and revealed a sinister smile on her pretty little face. She seemed to be pumped up, alright. Her craving for battle was written crystal clear on her face.

Things escalated just like how Zhang Yang predicted. About 8 minutes later, the 16 Tanks were beginning to fall apart, piece by piece. The players onboard were beginning to fall off the diminishing structure and roll over the ground like idiots. Well, without the Tanks, the damage that the players were about to sustain would be on a whole new level!

When the player received damage while onboard of the Tanks, it wouldn't matter how many players there were onboard the Tanks. They would all be considered as a single unit. Therefore, all 50 players on the Model 4.0 Tank would only receive a total of 350,000 damage as a single unit, each time they take the AoE attack of the boss. Therefore, the Healers would not suffer too much stress while healing the players on the Tanks.

However, whenever a Tank breaks into pieces, each of the 50 players would receive 350,000 damage. Not all Healers would have powerful enough equipment to heal enough amount of HP to catch up with the DPS of 70,000 damage of the boss! Furthermore, Eternal Flame only assigned 3 Healers on each Tank. The Healers would still be capable of healing a total of 350,000 HP over 5 seconds. However, it would not be possible for any of their Healers to heal 50 players with 350,000 HP within 5 seconds.

Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was not dead yet. He could actually levitate in the

middle of the sky by his own ability. It seemed that he managed to acquire a Class A Inheritance for himself.

"Noob tank, shouldn't we go in now?" Wei Yan Er was more than ready to slaughter her preys.

"A little while more. Let them deplete a little more of the boss's HP. We also need to wait for the others to arrive before we can launch a full-scale attack on them."

"Hehe, I never thought that you can be so cunning sometimes!"

"It's called resourcefulness! How can you say that I'm cunning?! Say something else, please!"

"Nope! Not going to change my opinion on you!"

"Well, about your next next year's salary from the Little Merchandize Shop..."

"Wow, noob tank! I suddenly realized that you're heroic and brilliant! You're like an unbeatable general from the east!" By hitting the right spot, Wei Yan Er straight away tried to compromise with Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang nodded in contentment. Then he continued to observe the battle between the Eternal Flame and the boss.

The Eternal Flame could only deal a DPS of approximately 1,500,000 damage to the boss. Under the influence of the boss's {Elemental Constitution}, their firepower was no match for the boss's HP Recovery Rate. They could only stare at the boss's HP bar that went back up after trying so hard to bring the HP bar down a tiny bit. Slaying the boss in two hours had become impossible, even if a miracle happens to them now!

How about the players who were running back to their dead bodies?

It was unfortunate that their Tanks had been destroyed. Without proper repairs, they would not be able to use their Tanks at the moment. Even if they come back to the boss, they would only become food for powder in the boss battle. They would get themselves killed again after receiving two or three hits from the boss. How about taking a trip back to the main

cities to get their Tanks repaired? That would be a joke!

The number of players remaining in the boss battle was 15. However, only two of them were Healers. It became impossible for the two Healers to heal $70,000 \times 15$ which equals to a total of 1,050,000 HP in every second. Because of shortage in their Healing Capability, the remaining players of the Eternal Flame could only activate their Inheritance Transformation to boost their HP bars in order for them to stay in the fight!

However, the amount of damage they were sustaining was far greater than the amount of HP their Healers could heal them over the time. So, they would definitely be dead, eventually if that goes on! Furthermore, the difference between the damage they received and the amount of HP they could heal was large. Not every one of them had over 10,000,000 HP as well. So, they only seemed to be able to last for about 10 minutes before they are wiped out completely!

10 minutes, huh?

Zhang Yang was setting his mind on the location of the Graveyard. He was f*cking sure that 10 minutes was not enough for anyone to run all the way back here. So, it would not be possible for them to run back to their dead bodies in time to rejoin the boss battle.

Therefore, the players would need to be assigned into different batches when they are going up against a World boss. In such a way, they could form into a ladder-shaped formation and take turns battling the boss. If they still had the Tanks with them, they could assign 10 Healers on each Tank. By doing so, they could definitely heal back the HP bars of Scholar Musou and the others.

Of course, Zhang Yang would not waste his brain cells to think about all that. Why show compassion to the enemies who wanted to destroy him? Instead, he said, "Everyone, look closely now. When their HP bars drop to about 20%, we shall charge out and lay waste on them! We might get lucky and pick up some good stuff after we finish them off!"

"Hehehe!" Everyone laughed out loud. Wei Yan Er muttered to herself,

"And you said you're not cunning... evil..."

"Okay! Activate your Inheritance Transformations and charge!"

Under the insane bombardment of the boss's attacks, Eternal Flame was about to get wiped out, even though they had tried their best. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his gang's appearance had rung the 'bell of doom' for Zhong Xiu Hua and his fellow members of his Eternal Flame.

"Zhang Yang?!" Zhong Xiu Hua's face went pale. He stared at Zhang Yang with rage.

"How are you doing? Does your chin still hurt?" Zhang Yang asked out of convenience. However, his axe was being swung straight at Death Arbiter without mercy. The normal attack was followed closely by a {Killing Cleave}! At that moment, Death Arbiter only had 17% HP remaining, before the axe struck straight into his skull and killed him instantly!

"Looting a burning house!? Is this what Lone Desert Smoke do best?" Longrich spoke coldly as he was attempting to get away from Wei Yan Er's scary-*ss scythe.

"You're wrong! This is merely a relentlessly beating on the dogs in the water! We have no reason to show mercy to bad people even if they're down! Hahaha!" Fatty Han replied him. Right after that, Fatty Han began shooting his arrows one after another towards his enemy. That fatty was actually dealing quite a number of damage to his foes. Although his PvP skills were not really top Tier, to begin with, his personal DPS was quite stunning. Even though he could not be classified as a Top Tier DPS player, the amount of damage he could deal was not embarrassing.

After all, there was only one way to deal damage. Whoever hits harder will triumph over those who hit softer! Practice makes perfect! Nothing more! Unlike PvP matches, players do not have to make precise decisions, according to the situation of the battlefield. Well, in PvP matches, the decisions and reactions of the player would define whether he or she was a good player or not.

"Don't go too far, you mother f*ckers!" Zhong Xiu Hua calmed himself down immediately after he shouted. Then he said, "Let's make a deal,

okay? We can join forces to deal with the boss first. Then we shall split the loots in half. Or else, we'll just announce the coordinate of the boss! You're not going to be taking the boss all to yourselves!"

"You who carry the surname Zhong, are you giving us an impression that you're weak? You're Master Zhong and you're begging us? Ha." Zhang Yang laughed vaguely and looked at Zhong Xiu Hua with disdain. If Zhong Xiu Hua is the prince in real life, then Zhang Yang would be the King, the emperor of the game! No one would be able to match his strength and power!

"YOU --- You shameless f*ck! Argh! Die!" Zhong Xiu Hua was overwhelmed by his own rage. Well, he had been humiliated once before. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had knocked a few teeth out of him, previously. His father had yet to rise to power. So he could not afford to do anything too reckless that might affect his father's career. If it wasn't for that, he might have gone all out on destroying Zhang Yang.

"Stop quacking like a duck and start fighting, you miserable f*ck!" Zhang Yang humphed coldly and went on slaughtering the members of the Eternal Flame with the boss's 'help'. It did not take long before they wiped out the remaining members of the Eternal Flame.

"Please take note, everybody! The location where the boss is spawned is XXXXX, YYYYY! I'm Dragon Marquis, the guildmaster of the Eternal Flame. I can assure you, my words hold true!" Zhong Xiu Hua immediately chose weak resurrection the moment he died. Then he quickly shouted the coordinates of the boss into the public channel. Every single player in the China Region who was searching near the Bama Volcano could see what he said.

"Pui! If he knows where the boss is, he would have gone there to slay the boss! So, why would he share the wealth with others? This must be a hoax!"

"He's the guildmaster of Eternal Flames! Maybe he's telling the truth?"

"He could be spreading false information to lead us far away from the actual boss, so that he secures all of the Ascended Tier equipment all to

himself?!"

"That's right! Even if he really knows where the boss is, he would have told everyone the fake coordinates! He could prevent other guilds from competing with his guild in taking down the boss!"

"Screw that f*cking c*nt then! What sort of f*cktard is that? Shameless piece of sh*t!"

"That's right! Despicable f*ck!"

The public channel began to get bombarded with debates and comments. Every single one of them was skeptical about what Zhong Xiu Hua just said. Zhong Xiu Hua was so pissed that he almost popped all his veins! However, there were also a small number of players who chose to believe his words. So they began to move towards the coordinates that Zhong Xiu Hua had shouted out in the public channel.

Chapter 784: Armadillomon's Leash

After wiping out every single one of the members of Eternal Flame, Zhang Yang immediately drew the boss over to him. Then, he quickly led the boss away from where it was initially spawned. He led the boss deeper into the forest.

Hundred Shots was providing the new coordinates of the boss to the 18 parties of Lone Desert Smoke. He wanted the others to reroute so that they would not end up at the wrong place later on.

Zhang Yang's movement speed was unbelievable fast while he was under the boost of his God of War Transformation. After all, the movement speed of a Class S Inheritance Transformation is much faster than the movement speed of Inheritance Transformation of the other Classes below it. If he did not have to wait for Lost Dream, Endless Starlight and the others who only had a Class B Inheritance Transformation, he could have lead the boss to other spots that were at least 10 kilometers away from its initial spawning spot in a short amount of time.

While they were moving the monsters, the others did not just follow. They were launching their attacks at the boss. It did not take long for them to lure the boss far away from the initial spot. Meanwhile, the surroundings that got destroyed due to the fierce battle between the players and the boss would recover over a short period of time after being destroyed again and again. Therefore, when the other players arrived, the surroundings of the battle had already recovered back to their initial states. There would not be any signs of battle left in the vicinity by the time they get there --- the members of Eternal Flame had chosen weak resurrection, so they were resurrected back at the Graveyard. Their dead bodies had vanished from the initial boss battle spot.

Zhang Yang was acting extra cautious. He only stopped after flying at a high speed for 10 minutes. Well, he managed to lead the boss very far away from the initial spot.

Zhang Yang and the gang no longer move forward. They turned around and fought the boss. Every single one of them was throwing their attacks at the boss like madmen on steroids! A while later, their Tanks arrived one after another. So, Zhang Yang quickly implemented the ladder-shape tactic into the boss battle. They divided the 18 Tanks into 6 batches. Each batch would take their turn at the frontline to tank against the boss. They would retreat whenever the HP bar of the Tanks are about to deplete. Each batch of the forces could stand their ground against the boss for up to 8 minutes. Under those circumstances, the 6 batches of Tanks would be able to tank against the boss for 48 minutes. After that, those who were not on any of the Tanks would have to start dying and keep running back to their corpses.

In other words, even if Zhang Yang and the gang could not take out the boss in 2 hours, the Tanks could still tie the boss down at one spot while the others slowly slay it. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and his gang would be able to just hop onto any of the Tanks to slowly deplete the HP bar of the boss even if their Inheritance Transformations are over.

Of course, they could only have that kind of luxury under the circumstance that no other parties or guilds interrupt them.

At the same time, Zhong Xiu Hua was leading his men in search of Zhang Yang's whereabouts. He swore that he would repay Zhang Yang for what Lone Desert Smoke did back there. Unfortunately, the forest was too huge. Only hundreds of them were searching through the forest after all. So, it would not be possible for them to locate Zhang Yang and his gang within a short period of time.

Other than that, many players did not find the boss at the coordinates that Zhong Xiu Hua mentioned in the public chat. They thought that the Eternal Flame was really using lies to mislead the others. So whenever they saw some members of the Eternal Flame roaming off their main forces, the players would just slaughter them up without saying anything. Because of that, Zhong Xiu Hua was having the headache of his life in the game.

Back to where Zhang Yang and the gang was battling the boss. Although

each batch only had 3 Tanks to support Zhang Yang and his gang in attacking the boss, the Model 4.0 Tank could fit up to 50 players. Furthermore, the Defence of the Tanks was a little bit unique. Only DPS players and Healers were on board the Tanks. There were no Tankers on any of the Tanks. Each Tank was assigned to have 10 Healers and 50 DPS players. Therefore, the entire force had over 120 DPS units on their side.

Everyone had reached Level 180 and beyond. So, there was no Level Gap Suppression whatsoever. Even if these DPS players could only deal 20,000 damage over each passing second, all 120 players would be able to deal a total of 2,400,000 damage to the boss. Adding in the DPS of approximately 3,000,000 damage that Zhang Yang and the gang could deal, the entire force of Lone Desert Smoke could deal approximately 2,000,000 effective damage to the boss over each passing second.

In that case, the Lone Desert Smoke should be able to take out the boss in 85 minutes!

Everyone was going all out on the boss. They had maximized their damage output to ensure they were performing at their best. After all, anything could happen as long as the boss is still standing. If they are ambushed by the other parties or forces when the HP bar of the boss is at 10%, then they would suffer a great loss!

"These Tanks are really useful in battles such as this one!" Everyone was surprised.

Without the Tanks supporting them, players who do not have Inheritance Transformation would not be able to survive for more than 10 seconds, if each of them are not healed by one personal Healer! However, these players managed to survive up to 8 minutes after they had the Tanks!

As long as the players were able to stay alive, they would be able to deal damage to the boss.

"Without the Tanks, we would need at least 10 more players who can activate their Inheritance Transformation. Their equipment must be top Tier as well! Then only it's possible for us to kill the boss within 2 hours!"

"How good would it be if we can get a few more Tanks!"

{Glare of the Death God}!

Shoof! A dark skull began to form on top of the boss's head. It was not resisted!

Everyone was cheering in joy. A series of 100,000,000 damage values popped right on top of the boss's head. In merely 3 seconds, Sandra had lost over 1,000,000,000 HP while it was roaring in pain. Well, Zhang Yang's DPS had been boosted up to 700,000 damage while he was in his God of War Transformation form. Furthermore, he also had the special ability to get additional aggro values. It was enough to fix the aggro of 1,000,000 DPS on him. Therefore, the 3 Tanks had not taken a single damage from the boss up to this point.

Truth to be told, when the first batch of the Tanks were retreating from battle while the next batch were coming in, they were considered to be not engaging the boss. There, they lost a small amount of time. Therefore, it would not be possible for them to get the aggro of the boss.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was lucky as f*ck today. One hour later, he made another attempt to cast his {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss. It was not resisted as well! It was another successful attempt! Holy sh*t! When the first one ended, Sandra was only left with 20% HP. Because of that, the boss's HP bar was reduced to 10% left right after that. 8 minutes later, the mighty Ascended Tier boss had collapsed to the ground and died. Upon the heavy fall, it dropped quite a number of loot across the ground.

Of course, it would feel safer to keep all the loots to one's own pockets. So, Zhang Yang acted f*cking swiftly and picked up all the equipment. Because the items and equipment were not 'bound upon pickup', Zhang Yang put everything into his inventory first. Then only did he put up the items and equipment up in the guild auction. Whoever who had enough points would be able to exchange the items and equipment with their available points.

Because most of his guild members had spent their guild points on the

Holy Tier equipment that Lone Desert Smoke managed to retrieve from the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon, Zhang Yang and the gang had more guild points to spend. So, the group of 10 managed to secure 8 out of 11 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment. Because of that, many of the guild members were crying out loudly. They now regretted not saving up the guild points for the auction of Ascended Tier equipment.

[Heavy Rock Ring] (Ascended, Ring)

Vitality: +9,802

Strength: +1,752

Agility: +1,752

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 19,600 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,535 damage when hit.

Use: Summons a Stone Giant to fight for you. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Cooldown: 1 hour.

Required Level: 200

Special: Reduces Required Level by 20 levels.

The lucky part about it was that the boss had also dropped a Holy Tier Pet Mount. The officials stated that the boss only had 10% chance of dropping the Pet Mount. So, it seemed that they had just hit the jackpot! Zhang Yang's luck was oddly lucky today! His previous two attempts of {Glare of the Death God} were successful as well! Damn!

[Armadillomon's Leash] (Holy Tier Ground Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unsummons an Armadillomon.

Required Level: 30

Bound upon pickup.

"Argh! Why can't it be a Flying Mount!?" Wei Yan Er was extremely disappointed by what she found. Although the mount was also a Holy Tier, having a Flying Mount would also grant the person with higher agility and

convenience. Unlike ground pet mounts, Flying Mounts could just fly over any valley or obstacle.

"A Holy Tier Mount! Although it's not a Flying Mount, its Attack power would surely be very powerful! Just take a closer look, everyone. The auction for this leash will start at 2,000 guild points. So be aware. Don't shout if you don't have enough guild points on you. That's because you'll lose your guild points based on the number you shout!"

Well, 2,000 guild points could only be earned back by completing the Hardcore Mode of a dungeon for over 5 times. Furthermore, they would not be able to get any equipment while they were at it! However, things such as taking equipment into own pockets were pretty common in the game. Zhang Yang and his gang had been doing that all this while, because most of the equipment they had were dropped by Open World bosses. They did not have to get the equipment by spending guild points. That had really saved quite a number of points for Zhang Yang and his gang.

Finally, this Holy Tier pet mount was claimed by Sun Xin Yu. It was like adding wings to a tiger. Sun Xin Yu's Attack power had once again rose tremendously.

After distributing the loots among themselves, the party was disassembled for the moment. However, the f*cking system did not announce anything about Sandra's defeat. Countless players were still searching through the forest, without knowing that the boss had been defeated already.

However, there were also some clever players in the area. When they realized that the core players of Lone Desert Smoke were leaving the area, they knew that the boss Sandra must have been taken out already. Although they couldn't do much about it, it would be so much better to leave than to stay and do something pointless. So, the other players were beginning to leave the vicinity one after another.

A short moment later, Zhang Yang just only realized that he had not gone back to the God of War to learn his new Inheritance Skill for attaining Level 180.

Firstly, it was because leveling up required much more time than before. Meanwhile, the God of War Inheritance would only bestow the player a new Skill once every 20 levels. Therefore, Zhang Yang could only learn one new Inheritance Skill every half a year. So, sometimes the thought might have slipped his mind for a little while.

So he quickly traveled back to the cave to meet Ares. After talking to Ares, Zhang Yang learned a new Skill --- God of War Restoration.

[God of War Restoration]: Deals 200% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. At the same time, turns all the damage received into HP. The amount of HP recovered will be the same as the amount of damage received. Cooldown: 1 minute. Consumes: 50 Rage Points. Required: Melee Attack.

This Skill would provides Zhang Yang with another 200% additional damage which was similar to Zhang Yang {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash}. However, this Skill would be outshone by Skills such as {God of War Devastation} and {God of War Battle Axe} because those Skills provided Zhang Yang with 300% additional damage. This Skill can recover HP based on the amount of damage received over 6 seconds. It could be a very useful Skill for Zhang Yang, after all.

Theoretically speaking, that would provide Zhang Yang similar ability of 10% Damage Immunity. However, if the Skill is timed and used accordingly, the effect could be amplified up to the equivalent of 15% to 20% Damage Immunity!

The equipment given by the two Ascended Tier bosses had really got Zhang Yang and his gang boosted up big time. The power level of the entire party had increased tremendously. 3 days later, the Inheritance Transformation of everyone was cooled down. Under the command of Zhang Yang, the gang turned their attention towards the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre Cavern. They pushed through the dungeon to the score of 8/9 in one shot. They only needed to take down one more boss before they could take down the 'First Clear' of the dungeon.

Currently, everyone's will was united. They were busting their *sses,

trying to get familiar with the final boss's behavior and attack patterns. They wanted to make good use of the next three days where their Inheritance Transformations were under cooldown again. They wanted to take down the final boss in one go.

The tactic of countering the final boss was extremely complicated. There were a few stages in the tactic. Every stage of it required players to run around in different patterns and formations. At the same time, players would need to handle the substantial number of summoned monsters. Well, everyone was putting so much effort that they even forgot to rest and eat. They only could not make up for the shortage in firepower.

After all, the bosses in the game were designed by someone. As long as the players could find and implement the correct tactic to use on the boss, it would only be a matter of time before the players could slay the boss.

Within a year, Lone Desert Smoke was able to take down the 'First Clear' title of the dungeon. When the system announced it, every other Top Tier guilds were very shocked. Well, most of them only managed to reach 6/9 throughout the entire dungeon. The difference in their progress and the Lone Desert Smoke's progress on the dungeon was huge!

Zhang Yang used the additional Skill Points onto his {Force Strike} and enhanced it to the max. It was now Level 10, giving Zhang Yang a 100% rate of dealing one additional attack. Furthermore, the additional attack would definitely be a Critical Hit!

Chapter 785: Planning

Slam!

Zhong Xiu Hua smashed his fist heavily against the surface of the table. The table top trembled. He was infuriated to the point that veins were visibly popping out on his head. Then he said, "Lone Desert Smoke! It's Lone Desert Smoke again! You're all calling yourselves the top Tier players in the game! You claimed that nothing can beat you! So how come no one here can actually beat that f*cking Zhang Yang?! Huh?! F*CK!"

Scholar Musou and the rest remained in silence for the moment. Before they encountered Zhang Yang, they were really cocky and arrogant. They really believed that they could take down the entire game with their bare hands. However, only the ones who battled Zhang Yang before now would know how terrifying Zhang Yang could be when he gets serious in a battle.

Zhong Xiu Hua looked at his own shop. There were barely any customers. Then, he looked at Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. When he realized that Zhang Yang's shop was always filled with customers, he got even angrier. He had spent more than a few fortunes just to purchase the Land Lease of the shop. He believed that the investment experts from his mother's company could make the shop even more popular than Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop.

However, the truth was apparent. His shop only got tons of customers during the 3-day Special Sale period. However, after the Special Sale had ended, his shop immediately became cold and quiet. Even though the equipment and items in his shop were a few gold pieces cheaper than the price of equipment and items in Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop, people would still prefer to walk a few steps more to the Little Merchandize Shop.

The reason was actually known to Zhong Xiu Hua. That was because the Little Merchandize Shop had all sorts of potions on sales. Many players had gotten used to making purchases at the Little Merchandize Shop. So,

when they saw something particular that captures their eyes, they would just buy the equipment or the items by convenience.

So, it was Zhang Yang once again! Everything he did was ruining Zhong Xiu Hua's plans!

Zhong Xiu Hua was born with silver spoon, after all. He had never gone through any hardships before in his entire life. However, he was starting to taste humiliations and losses ever since he met Zhang Yang. Even if he doesn't care much about failing or getting humiliated, when all his losses are added up together and got shoved in his face, he could no longer hold down the rage that was blazing hot, deep in his heart.

"Master Zhong, the Lone Desert Smoke is a powerful force in the entire game. It would be unwise to go head-on with them!" Scholar Musou said.

"Huh?" Zhong Xiu Hua had been trained to keep his emotions in check since he was young. So, it only took a brief moment for him to calm himself down.

"However, there's a saying. The most fortified castle can be corroded from within!" Scholar Musou turned his eyes towards Zhong Xiu Hua and said, "The Lone Desert Smoke could stand proudly among the China Region community because they have quite a number of top Tier players to back them up. They also have quite a large number of middle Tier players which are quite skilful and powerful. Therefore, we can divide this plan into three steps and use an adequate remedy for the disease!"

"Keep going."

"Firstly, the Lone Desert Smoke is so united because of Zhang Yang's prestige and his alone! However, there's a saying. Good news does not travel far but bad news travels the furthest! So, we can create rumors saying that Zhang Yang is abusing his power as the guildmaster to force female players into having sex with him overnight. When the rumors are ripe, we only have to make a few so-called 'victim' guilds come out and seek justice! Well, such sort of news can always attract tons of attention from the busybody people. They will not care if the rumors are true or not. They will just look at the others who get to toy with women with hate!

There's also another saying in Chinese. When three people pretend to be a tiger and the rumor have enough evidence, the rumors will become truths!"

"Haha!" Zhong Xiu Hua finally felt a little joy. Then he laughed out loud and said, "Musou you old dog! That tactic is pure evil! However, one must use evil tactics on intoxicating people like Zhang Yang! Indeed, we should use dirty tricks on him! Well, rumours aren't enough to take him down, though. We will need some 'powerful' evidence ... hmmm.... What's that called... oh! Right! 'Nothing better shows the truth than a picture'! We need to take a few photos of him on bed with a woman! Then, we can just put the photos up together with the rumours! Furthermore, the woman better be someone significant, someone famous!"

"Oh, right! I heard that Luo Yu Rou is going to promote her new movie at Zhou Shu. Master Zhong, if we can put them onto the same bed, then Zhang Yang will be framed and many men will be pointing their blame fingers on him!"

"Luo Yu Rou? That bombshell superstar? What the f*ck! That woman is just too seductive to even look at. Every time when I watch her movies, my cock would definitely get so hard that I raise a tent in between my own thighs! F*ck her! She always loves to show that little bit of her private parts without showing the important parts that we all want to see! Pui!" Death Arbiter would always talk vulgarly. Well, he had always been a hoodlum in the first place. He got lucky. That was how he got into the game and became renowned as a skilful player. Although he was well-trained, he failed to remove the vulgarity buried deep in his personality.

Speaking of the woman, these perverted men were beginning to show their interest. All of them were saying that Luo Yu Rou was a seductive b*tch. Well, even though Luo Yu Rou excelled in the art of sexiness, she had never actually stood naked in front of anyone before. Every time they stared at the screen, countless men could not help fantasizing getting into the screen and tearing her clothes off her so that they could feast their dirty eyes on her fair and sexy naked body!

The feeling was similar to the situation where men were watching porn

with mosaic boxes covering up the vital parts of the porn stars! Although they could have imagined the covered parts with their own imaginations, they would not get the satisfaction that they want.

Zhong Xiu Hua gave a cough and stopped the menacing talk about sex and porn, then he said, "Since that this Luo Yu Rou is so famous, then she shall be our 'main course' for our plan! I will install some hidden cameras in the hotel she's staying. Then I will kidnap Zhang Yang and send him over. Let them both have some aphrodisiac and let the fire spread on its own! I believe they will start scorching each other up after the aphrodisiacs kicks in! Hehehe!"

"Haha! Only you, Master Zhong! Only you're capable of spending so much money to get this done!" Everyone began to butter the rich brat.

"I can't believe Zhang Yang is going to get a taste on that bombshell's body because of this! Pui!" Death Arbiter licked his lips for a bit and said, "God damn it! A fine cabbage is going to get twiddled by a f*cking pig!"

Others were revealing a sense of jealousy on their own faces. After all, that Luo Yu Rou was the most famous goddess among the otakus. That pair of boobies had caused countless men to fap to their deaths!

Zhong Xiu Hua felt nothing for that woman. Well, with his current status, he could just toy any kind of woman according to his liking. So, he did not even care about what would happen to the pair. Furthermore, he had never believed the appearance of women on the big screens. 7 beautiful women out of 10 would look even worse than the appearance of a female pig after they remove their makeup.

When he was younger, he underwent an experience that would scar him for life. He had spent a fortune to have a one-night-stand with a female superstar before. However, when that superstar took off her makeup, Zhong Xiu Hua was shocked to the point that he tried to flee. From that moment on, he deeply understood the term 'disguise'. What the f*ck!? That superstar looked totally different after she took off her makeup layer on her face!

Ever since then, he had never believed in the appearance of any of the

superstars on screen. Even if he wanted to toy with women, he would pick those fresh and real girls from universities. Straight out of the oven, they say.

"After sleeping with the most popular goddess of otakus, Zhang Yang would definitely be hated by countless men all around the world! When the rumours come crashing down on him as well, everyone will only believe that Zhang Yang is a sick horny son of the f*cking b*tch! By then, his reputation will be ruined!" Scholar Musou tried to summarize the plan.

"If that succeeds, the name 'Zhan Yu' will be tainted and his prestige will be dragged into the mud forever! When his name is no longer prestigious among Lone Desert Smoke, Lone Desert Smoke will no longer be united! We shall take the opportunity to dig their good players over to our side, especially their core players! I believe that the seduction of money and their disappointment towards Zhan Yu would definitely push 60% of them to leaving Lone Desert Smoke!"

"And finally, we can send the Anti-Lone-Desert-Smoke force over to launch a full scale attack on the Lone Desert Smoke! We shall attack every single member of that guild. Under that kind of pressure, the people in his guild would definitely feel unsafe. Meanwhile, Zhan Yu would be occupied with the rumours about him f*cking women all around. He would not have the time to calm his guild members while he's at it. By then, the Lone Desert Smoke will no longer be able to stay united!"

Zhong Xiu Hua revealed a cold smile on his face. Then he said, "When the Lone Desert Smoke is breaking apart, we shall immediately launch Territory Conquests over the three Territories that Zhang Yang currently possesses. After acquiring all three territories, we shall buy 100 Model 4.0 Tanks. By then, let's see who is daring enough to launch a Territory Conquest over our new territories! Hahaha!"

"Master Zhong, the Territories are great gold mines, you know?"

"That's right! If we take 1 gold piece as the fee for every use of the Teleportation Circle service, just imagine how much we can earn even if each player only use the Teleportation of our Territories once a day!"

Currently, the population of the players in China Region is approximately 200,000,000! So that's a total of 200,000,000 pieces of gold a day! How cool is that?!"

"200,000,000?!" Longrich widened his eyes so wide that his eyes were about to pop out. Even though they knew that Territories could really generate quite a sum of money for the ones who own the Territories, they had never actually done a close up calculation on the sum of money that Territories could earn for their owners. Instantly, everyone was shocked to hear that amount of daily salary! One day 20,000,000 gold pieces. Then does that mean the owner of one Territory could earn up to a total of 70,000,000,000 gold pieces a year! Calculating on, 10 years would generate over 700,000,000,000 gold pieces! And how about 100 years... they continued to calculate...

Even if one could only earn that 20,000,000 gold pieces, that amount should be enough to keep that bombshell Luo Yu Rou as mistress and spend like hell on her! Didn't that b*tch want to keep her clothes on? Then, after keeping her as a mistress, she shall not be allowed to wear anything on her! Look at her and toy with her until she lose her five senses! That were the ideas that went through the dirty mind of Death Arbiter. He licked his lips again while he could obviously felt a tent being set up right between his two thighs.

"Rest assured, everyone. As long as we can take down the Territories, everyone gets a share. All of you here are seniors in the guild. So, every one of you will get a share of the profit!" Before they even start their plan, Zhong Xiu Hua had begun dividing the profits among themselves.

Of course, throwing out the sum of 20,000,000 gold pieces was an act of encouraging his guild members to work for him. Because of that, everyone was pumped to give their 100% to get the plan done.

Zhong Xiu Hua narrowed his eyes a little as he was visualizing the possible outcome of the plan. The moment when Lone Desert gets dismantled, Zhang Yang would lose his Territories. Then, he would lose all his precious things one after another. By then, he would only be an insignificant player that could only play the game well. Zhong Xiu Hua

still believed that Zhang Yang would be lower than a piece of sh*t if 'God's Miracle' did not exist in the first place. He still believed that Zhang Yang was not worthy of becoming his opponent!

Based on Sun Xin Yu's pride and prejudice, she would never stay by the side of a loser. Meanwhile, the Sun Family would never agree to allow their precious daughter in the house to be married to a hoodlum that suddenly got rich overnight. Well, political families such as Sun Family would not look at how rich the person is. They would look at how influential the man could be in the field of politics and economies.

It seemed possible! The plan seemed simple but possible!

Zhong Xiu Hua nodded and said, "From now onwards, get closer to the core members of the Lone Desert Smoke. Get their trust and befriend them if you can. Once the plan starts, we shall start convincing them to leave Lone Desert Smoke and come join our guild!"

"Yes, master Zhong!"

Scholar Musou and the others nodded.

...

"Noob tank! Noob tank! Look! I'm really awesome right? Look at this! I've managed to draw the tickets to the gala premier of Luo Yu Rou's latest movie 'Suspect in the Castle'! Not only can we watch the movie for free, we can also get the signature of Luo Yu Rou from her personally! Of course, she will sign on her posters for us!" Before she even walked up to Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er had been waving her hands shouting in excitement.

Zhang Yang sighed. Well, now he could not go home straight away after work. He would have to fetch this little brat first before that.

"Fine, fine... you can drop that show off attitude and get in the car now!" Although the little brat was a little unbelievably strange sometimes, her popularity was really something that one could admire. Zhang Yang did not want to be called 'brother-in-law' all over the place by her admirers.

Oh great... there they come... the army of Wei Yan Er's admirers had

followed her. They were smiling and acting politely towards Zhang Yang. Well, they really wished that Zhang Yang would let them board the car so that they could continue to pursue the little brat.

That's strange... don't people still love big boobies? How could this little brat suddenly become so popular among men, then!? It seemed that there are a lot more people with weird tastes hiding in plain sight!

Chapter 786: Kidnap!

Wei Yan Er did not even give a damn about the army of admirers flowing right behind her. She went up to the passenger seat at the front, shut the door and said, "Drive now! Quickly! Cousin sis has ordered for delivery from the Long Xuan Lou Hotel! Let's get back and prepare! I don't want them to eat before we arrive!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Do you know all those boys that followed you out of the university gate?"

"Not at all!" The little brat shook her head like a little monkey, "But they're all very nice! They always treat me nicely and they always bring me out for meals!"

Zhang Yang frowned. This little brat was either really slow on picking things up in such regards or she's just pure stupid...

He started his sports car and drove away from the university. Then, they headed back to Zhang Yang's house.

"Noob tank! Look! Quickly, look!" the little brat shoved a poster over to Zhang Yang. There was a sexy beautiful woman wearing only a bathing towel around her body on the poster. The curves of the woman were totally exposed.

Even though the woman on the poster gave off such a sexy aura, the vital spots of her parts were all tightly covered. Because of that, her poster gave people, especially men, a feeling that they were not looking at a 'tangible' woman.

"What are you looking at?" Zhang Yang could not help laugh. His eyes had to be fixed on the road in order for him to drive safely. So, he only managed to take a quick glance at the poster before fixing his eyes back on the road.

"Well, she's the goddess of sexiness! She's my idol!" Wei Yan Er smiled.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "You admire that pair of boobs she has, not her. Her boobies are like 10 times larger than yours! So little

brat, you should face the reality and accept the fact that your boobs are going to stay this small!"

"Noob tank! You're the worst!" Wei Yan Er pouted and humphed. However, she suddenly turned her eyes back at Zhang Yang and said, "Or you can massage my boobies for me, noob tank!"

"Erk ---" Zhang Yang almost took a wrong turn and sent the car into the drain, almost. He coughed repeatedly and said, "Don't say some crazy stuff while I'm driving, little brat! Somebody might get hurt!"

"Huh? You can't?" Wei Yan Er had no idea what she had just said, "Why can't you help me? You're so full of yourself!"

Zhang Yang sighed and said, "Little brat, who told you to massage your boobs?"

"My classmates! Their boobies are so huge. So I asked them for secret tips on how to get that big. In the end, only two of them whispered to me that their boyfriends have been massaging their boobies for them! Well, I don't have a boyfriend, so I can only ask for your help!" Wei Yan Er just said it out loud without thinking.

Zhang Yang frowned even harder. He was sure that this little brat would surely be corrupted sooner or later if she continued to befriend those kinds of friends.

"From now on, don't even think about massaging boobies! Never mention it again!" Zhang Yang quickly warned the little brat. If Han Ying Xue ever finds out that this little brat talked about it, she would get the wrong idea and think that Zhang Yang might have acted like an animal and done something horrible to the little brat.

"Oh!" Wei Yan Er looked partially understood the situation. However, she immediately looked at the poster again and said, "Noob tank, Luo Yu Rou will come to Zhou Shu in three days. Let's go and have a look!"

"Alright, fine..." Zhang Yang replied out of convenience. Based on the little brat's personality, she would never put a topic to rest if she could not get the answer she sought for. She would just tangle around the topic and

your neck until you agree with her.

After reaching home, the dining table was filled with all sorts of dishes that could instantly trigger the hunger of anyone who sees them! Not just the appearance of the dishes, the aromatic smell of the food filled the entire house! Upon feasting on the dishes, everyone cleaned up and logged back into the game. Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 187. His next target would be reaching Level 200!

Upon reaching Level 200, Zhang Yang would become eligible to enter Anthylor The Holy City. By settling down in the city, he would be able to use the neutral auction house, bank or the shops in that city to trade with other players from the other 7 Regions. That would mean that he would be able to expand his business area into a large market populated with 2,000,000,000 players worldwide! The first thing that Zhang Yang aimed to get was a land lease in Anthylor The Holy City and start a new shop similar to his current Little Merchandize Shop over there. With his current Alchemist skill, he could definitely turn the new shop into a second Little Merchandize Shop. The only difference was that he would have even more customers by then.

However, even though he was only 13 levels away from Level 200, he would require approximately 4 months of intense grinding if he does not receive any level rewards from quests. So, it would still be a little too early for him to think too much about setting up his new shop over there. Instead, he should just focus on finding ways of locating the Chapter 9 of the [Book of Revelation] and combining the freaking chapters into one complete book.

After all, Zhang Yang was only one chapter short before he could finally get the complete [Book of Revelation]. However, Zhang Yang had yet to locate the last chapter even after he went back to the Level 150-180 maps to slay Holy Tier bosses all over again. Zhang Yang made an assumption after that. It would be possible that the Chapter 9 of the [Book of Revelation] had been picked up by someone in the server. So he planned to keep an eye out for the lost chapter in any upcoming Territory Conquest or World boss battle.

During that period of time, another two Ascended Tier bosses had been spawned. However, the Lone Desert Smoke was tragically not able to get anything out of the two bosses. Well, it made sense that not everything good would only happen to them. After all, there were numerous Top Tier guilds all over the server. In a worst-case scenario, any one of the guilds could just join forces with other 3 or 4 guilds to match the power level of Lone Desert Smoke.

Furthermore, the most difficult part about slaying the bosses was locating them first. Or else, players could do nothing, even if they had 'one-hit-K.O' type of Skills.

Over the following days, more and more players were able to reach Level 180. The 20 Model 4.0 Tanks in Lone Desert Smoke were able to function at their full capacity. Some rich members of the guild even bought their very own Model 1.0 Tanks with their own money. Upon forming a 5-player party, they went out with the Tanks for a stroll of fun. At the same time, these players were able to increase the power level of the entire guild as well.

However, Zhang Yang felt that something was off. It was too peaceful!

In the past, hostile guilds such as Eternal Flame and The Dominators would randomly launch attacks and Territory Conquests over the Lone Desert Smoke. Although those were just small-scale attacks, it would cause quite a lot trouble and take up some time for Zhang Yang to deal with. Those guilds seemed to be saying that they were not afraid of the great Lone Desert Smoke.

However, these guilds seemed to have stopped all their attacks on the Lone Desert Smoke. Zhang Yang could not help but think that they had suddenly changed. They were too docile that Zhang Yang felt terrified about it. Even when their members ran into the members of Lone Desert Smoke, nothing happened at all. Instead of bringing more friends back to retaliate like they always did back in the days, some of them even started waving hands at Lone Desert Smoke with a smile! That was bizarre! Could this be the calm before the real storm?

So, what kind of evil plan is he brewing behind there somewhere?

Although Zhang Yang could feel a chill across his spines, he did not put too much thought into it. He just informed everyone in his guild to be extra careful when they're out there, minding their own business. He also made some backup plans in case those enemy guilds decide to launch their attacks suddenly.

Three days later, the people in Zhang Yang's house were dragged by Wei Yan Er over to the cinema to watch Luo Yu Rou's new movie, 'Suspect in the Castle'. Other than Sun Xin Yu who was having a night shift at the police station, everyone in the house headed over to the cinema. Well, this goddess to the otakus really is worthy of the title 'the sexiest beauty'. Her performances in the movie was outstanding, especially for men to feast their eyes upon. There were also a few hot sex scenes in the movie that was hot enough for the men to pop their eyes out and lose their blood out of their noses.

"Okay! Time to go home!" The moment when the movie ended, Zhang Yang wanted to bring the 3 ladies back to his house as soon as he could. However, his plan was ruined because the little brat said that she had not obtained the signature of Luo Yu Rou. She was not willing to leave until she got what she wanted. So they ended up lining up in a super long *ss queue.

When they made it back to the house, it was more than 2 hours later. Zhang Yang was on the verge of blowing up in rage.

On the next morning, Zhang Yang went for his daily exercise routine. While he was jogging by the street, he realized that something was off --- there was a delivery truck following him from the start.

Meanwhile, the men in the delivery truck also noticed that Zhang Yang had realized something was off. The driver suddenly pressed on the pedal to accelerate! Then the truck stopped right beside Zhang Yang. After one of the doors were opened, a muzzle of a gun suddenly appeared pointing at him.

Zhang Yang was so shocked that he immediately performed a tumble.

He was attempting to avoid getting shot by the gun. After rolling across the ground, he got up and leaped over the fence of the park. He acted very swiftly and he managed to get out of range in time. Then, he heard a soft sound coming from behind him. The next thing he realized was that there was a broken needle on the ground where he was standing before he had reacted!

They were not here to take him out, they were here to ... take him! A kidnap!

Although Zhang Yang had loosened himself a little bit, his reflexes were still intense. Well, he was not in a favorable situation at all! So he lifted his legs and started running like hell. Just when he was about to leap over the high fence before him, another two muzzles appeared from the same door. Even though Zhang Yang was extremely agile and all, he could not best the speed of a 'bullet'. Out of the next two shots, one landed right on his buttcheek!

Zhang Yang took a few more steps before he started to feel that he was losing his strength. Everything went black all of a sudden and he fell straight to the ground.

Two macho men came right out of the truck immediately. They quickly went over and lifted Zhang Yang into the truck. After loading him up onto the truck in a hurry, the truck drove away immediately. The entire process only took 4 to 5 seconds. The other people in the surroundings were not able to react to what that just happened there. In a brief moment, the delivery truck left the vicinity without a trace.

"What the f*ck! Is that guy even a human? That dart could have taken out an elephant in an instant! He actually ran for a few steps before he collapsed!"

"Who cares! The mission is completed! We just have to send him to the promised location!"

"Well, this is a pleasant business! All we have to do is to throw this man at a hotel without having to do anything else! This 10,000,000 dollars is such easy money!"

"Cut the crap! Complete the mission first, celebrate later!"

"Yes, boss!"

...

Luo Yu Rou was walking seductively out of the elevator. Those pair of peachy round buttocks of hers were so seductive that the lift attendant could not help to fixate his eyes on them. He felt the urge to charge at her and stick his hard-rock d*ck straight into her and f*ck her brains out!

"If I have money, I'll keep her as my mistress! I'll f*ck her every day to the point that she vomits!" The lift attendant was licking his lips like the perfect pervert.

Even though Luo Yu Rou did not turn her head over, she could still feel the dangerous eyes that were staring at her. She put a vague smile on her face. Well, seducing men from all over the world was her biggest hobby and wish. However, no men had ever touched her before, even though she had been in the movie industry for many years.

"I want all stinky men to feel hungry for me but can't get what they want!" Luo Yu Rou said quietly in her own heart. Her mother was a mistress to a man with power. When she was in her first year of high school, her mother was pulled into the field of her school by the wife of that man. She was stripped naked and humiliated in front of the students and teachers! She even got a slap on her face!

Meanwhile, Luo Yu Rou became a laughing stock of everyone in school. The male students in the school tried to tackle her and touched her. However, when she tried to reject, she was accused of being cocky. Ever since then, Luo Yu Rou had become a judgemental person who sees all men as filthy pigs. Since everyone believed that she was a fox, she decided to become a real fox and seduce the men into submission. That resulted in many tragedies such as female students jumping off rooftops.

Knowing that she had the potential in her, she chose to become an actor. Then, she became a superstar by doing great in the art of seduction. She was called the queen of sexiness in the country. Every time she saw men were staring at her with perverted eyes, she would smile coldly and feel

the sensation of retaliating. Well, the men could only look at her. They could not touch her! That should count as a way of getting revenge on men, at least.

Upon reaching her room, she poured a cup of water and gulped it down. Then she went to bathe. After that, she walked into the bedroom with a tired body --- she had been in an event for the entire day. Even an Ironman triathlete would feel tired after that. Furthermore, she was just a pretty little lady. She only cared about getting a good night's sleep for the night.

However, there was something odd about tonight. She felt very hot all of a sudden. She touched her forehead for a bit. No, she did not have a fever. Why was her crotch so sweaty, then?!

Men! Why did she think of those filthy men then? Luo Yu Rou could feel her consciousness fading away. She quickly opened up the door to the bedroom. The next thing she saw was a man that she had never met before, lying on the bed!

Chapter 787: Ill-Fate

Zhang Yang had a strange dream.

In the dream, he was having a fierce 'battle' with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. He did it to them in all sorts of positions! That included many positions that they had never tried before! Well, he was very content with the session. His eyes were blurry. He saw that the woman beside her was not Sun Xin Yu nor Han Ying Xue. As his vision cleared, he saw that the woman was Yu Li! The next moment, he saw the woman as the witch who always seduced him, Chen Xue Yao! By the end of it, he saw the woman as a woman that he did not know at all!

Well, that woman wasn't a total stranger to him as well. Zhang Yang had just watched her movies a few days back. Well, it was probably because her stunning body curves were mesmerizing to the point that it was stuck deep somewhere in his brain. Well, he actually dreamed of having sex with her!

The situation was like a dream and not a dream at the same time. Zhang Yang let the animal within him out as he made love to the woman on the bed. He went on with the woman until he had no juice left in him to give out anymore! After he was exhausted, he slept like nobody's business.

A night passed, rays of sunlight slipped through the space between the curtains and shone upon Zhang Yang and his bare naked *ss. Zhang Yang struggled to open up his eyes. The unfamiliar surroundings gave his heart a shock. Everything that happened to him earlier on had slipped back into his mind --- he was attacked with tranquilizing darts while he was jogging. After that, he passed out and woke up here.

Meanwhile, he immediately noticed that he was not alone on the bed. There was a naked woman lying right below him! What's even better was that he could feel his little JJ stuck solidly inside something! The moment he tried to move, the sudden movement of his thick 'rod' woke the woman up immediately.

The woman's hair covered her entire face in a messy condition. As she

moved her hair a bit to the side, her pretty little face was revealed right before Zhang Yang's eyes. Her eyes were watery, and she had a perfectly shaped nose. Her face was so fair that it looked a white jade and her lips were pink like cherry blossoms. Her appearance was just mesmerizing that his soul was almost blown away.

It was... Luo Yu Rou!

Zhang Yang immediately remembered whose pretty face this was!

At the same time, Luo Yu Rou was waking up from her dreamy and yet blurry sleep. After seeing her naked body pressed on by another naked man, her watery eyes changed from the state of shock to the state of anger. She opened up her lips, and she was about to scream the hell out of her voice.

Zhang Yang could not afford to let her scream, of course. If this thing is left to escalate, even if he could jump into the Huanghe River, he could never wash himself clean!

'Shameless fan sneaked into the room of superstar goddess Luo Yu Rou and committed a crime where even gods will tremble in anger!'

If that title ever gets out into public, even if Zhang Yang would get arrested and brought back to the police station to be treated like a sexual predator, and the massive number of her fans would be lining up to cut off his 'rod' over and over again!

He quickly pushed his waist forward, opened wide and put his mouth over hers just to shut her up. He even licked the little, soft tongue of the woman! Although it was not the right time, Zhang Yang was a little over-energetic at the moment. His 'rod' could not help to expand further and got hardened even further. The 'little Zhang Yang' that had not left the 'secret tunnel' immediately expanded and stretched it out!

Luo Yu Rou was so shocked to feel her 'tunnel' being filled up by a solid rod. Terror began to spread across her face as she attempted to escape. Well, might as well be hanged as a wolf instead of a lamb. Zhang Yang could not let her escape of course. Immediately, Zhang Yang turned around and pressed her down onto the bed. He covered Luo Yu Rou's

mouth with his hand. On the other hand, the girl was scratching Zhang Yang's back like an angry cat.

Zhang Yang pressed his voice as low as he could and said, "Stop moving around like that and listen to me!"

Luo Yu Rou was so infuriated that she was about to lose her mind. This stinky man! How dare he conquer her body and ask her to follow his instructions? She found an opening and opened up her mouth. Then she bit Zhang Yang's finger hard and a coppery liquid began to drip into her mouth.

"Tsk!" Zhang Yang grinned. Then he immediately put his hand by the chin of the girl and pressed hard to shut her up. Two of his fingers were covered in blood.

This girl was really ferocious. Currently, her eyes looked like the eyes of a killer. If Zhang Yang had let her grab hold of a knife, she would have undoubtedly stabbed him to death!

"I've been set up too!" Zhang Yang had roughly made sense of the entire incident by now, "I was having a morning jog yesterday morning when I was abducted. When I woke up, I found myself here with you! So please, calm yourself first! Think about what happened last night! Did something odd happened to you last night?"

Luo Yu Rou suddenly stopped struggling for a moment. She recalled about the unexplainable strong sexual urge that got hold of her entirely after she took a shower. Well, it was her first time experiencing that sort of blazing urge over sexual need. And everything started... after she took that cup of water from that bottle on the table!

Did someone drug her through the water?

If she was not bright enough, she would still not believed Zhang Yang's words. However, she was not the type of woman who only has large boobies without brains. So, she found some valid points in Zhang Yang's words. She was willing to accept that Zhang Yang was not so naïve that he would lie to her over such a thing. Furthermore, she was not totally out when everything happened throughout the night. She could still recall

fragments of memories that she made the first move to have sex with Zhang Yang. She was riding on Zhang Yang like a lady knight, 'sweeping' over the length and breadth of Zhang Yang's 'rod'. Zhang Yang had not even moved an inch of his body while she was at it.

If Zhang Yang was not tranquilized by the dart, he would definitely... well, any men would definitely move the tiniest bit, under those circumstances!

No matter what the situation turned out to be, she was indeed a victim of the incident. Furthermore, the thick 'rod' of this man was still firmly inside her 'tunnel'. Although Zhang Yang did not pull or push, the hot thick 'rod' was filling the space of her 'tunnel' so tightly that she was about to lose her mind a bit. Well, because of that, she could not help but recall last night's events. Her entire body lost its strength at the thought of it.

Subjectively speaking, she hates all men on earth. She even hated women! However, objectively speaking, she is a very sensitive woman. So she would have her own needs in such regards as well. Because she hated all the men in the world, she had never thought about marriage, at all. Meanwhile, she had been using her very own synthetic 'rod' to settle her own desires.

However, the massaging 'rod' could only satisfy her in the aspect of size. However, it would not match the full function of the real 'rod'!

So, she stopped her struggle. Instead of screaming like a little b*tch, she calmly looked at Zhang Yang to express that she had already calmed her tits.

Zhang Yang slowly moved his hands away. However, he was prepared to subdue her if she ever wanted to try anything funny.

"Take that filthy thing of yours out of my body first!" Luo Yu Rou said in a miserable tone. She was currently overwhelmed by shame and disgust.

"Erk!" Zhang Yang blushed and quickly sat up with his knees down. Meanwhile, the 'secret tunnel' of the girl didn't seem to want to let go of the hard-rock rod. When the rod was pulled out in an instant, a 'pop'

sound was heard! The two of them were so embarrassed that they lowered their heads for a while.

Luo Yu Rou quickly pulled the blanket around her. Zhang Yang wanted to do the same. However, both blankets had been pulled away by the girl. She did not leave one for Zhang Yang either. Well, Zhang Yang had no shame at all in exposing himself. Firstly, he is a man. Secondly, the both of them had done something that they weren't even aware of. Therefore, he just sat there like nobody's business.

"Can't you just cover your filthy part for a little?" Luo Yu Rou tightened her teeth. She had now suffered a great deal. Although she really wanted to kill Zhang Yang at first, she also knew that this must not be escalated after she had calmed herself down. Or else, that would be the end of her movie industry career.

However, everything was so suspicious. Who would throw Zhang Yang over to her room and drug her with aphrodisiac? So what's the agenda of the man who's behind all this?

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely as if he did not care about it at all. However, he suddenly had a thought. Countless men over the entire country had been dreaming of seeing Luo Yu Rou sacrificing her body for the purpose of 'Art'. They were waiting for the woman to reveal her perfectly curved, naked body in front of public. If her fans knew that their goddess is now sitting naked in front of Zhang Yang after spending a night with him, countless fans would definitely get jealous to the point that they would want to die!

The atmosphere was awkward. The two of them sat apart while facing each other without saying a single word.

However, it did not take long before Zhang Yang figured something out. So he said, "It would not matter much even if we know who put me here. But that person must want us both to be here so that we could... ehm... I think that whatever happened yesterday night has already been recorded by someone!"

Luo Yu Rou instantly went rigid. Her face turned pale in an instant. Yes,

she loved to show her sexiness in front of the public. However, that doesn't mean that she's a simple woman who would have sex with any man! Truth be told, Zhang Yang was in fact the first man who shoved his rod into her secret tunnel! The moment she imagined what the photos and news would say about that, she felt the urge of killing herself already!

So, could this be Zhong Xiu Hua then?

That f*cking cunning man had tried to get another girl to seduce him before. However, the first plan was ruined, all thanks to Chen Xue Yao. However, it seemed that Zhong Xiu Hua did not give up at all. Instead, he tranquilized Zhang Yang straight away and took him right over to the hotel. Then, he drugged Luo Yu Rou with aphrodisiac and created an ill fate between Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou.

Zhang Yang's face was quite pale, himself. However, when he looked at the pale face of Luo Yu Rou, he knew that he could not change the fact that the two of them had a one night stand. So he could not help but sigh heavily. Then he said, "If this thing escalates to the point that there's no turning back, I'll arrange a trip for you to get out of this country. Let the incident be washed away by time. As for money, you don't have to worry!"

Tears began to roll down from Luo Yu Rou's watery eyes. What did this man think she was? Did he just categorize her as one of those female superstars who sleeps with men? The more she thought about it, the more she grieved in remorse. She instantly pushed forward and attacked Zhang Yang. She pinched and bit Zhang Yang as hard as she could. She spoke with anger, "I'm not a prostitute! What made you think that you can see me as one!"

Zhang Yang did not see her as an important person in his life. Well, there was not much of a difference between a prostitute and a female superstar. The name was just a label that defines their 'price,' after all. One might look very pricey while the other might look so very cheap. One might collect high fees for the service while the other might just collect a small amount of money to get men satisfied.

Zhang Yang's eyes betrayed his thoughts to Luo Yu Rou. Luo Yu Rou was

so angry and hopeless at the same time. Her body was trembling so violently that Zhang Yang could feel her emotions right now. "Get out! You! Get out now!"

Seeing her rage blazing across her eyes and her voice, Zhang Yang could not help to put himself down a little. Then he apologized, "I'm sorry... I should not have said that... I sincerely apologize to you, Ms. Luo..."

After that, Luo Yu Rou only pulled herself back and sat down. Then she asked, "So what should we do?" That was her first time she had ever shown her weak side to someone.

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. If there are really some hidden cameras installed in the room --- which is more than likely, then the person behind all this must have gotten what they wanted. So everything would be pointless no matter what they do next. Sh*t's about to hit the fan. So, they could only react to the situation whenever something arises.

"Maybe they just want to blackmail us for money!" Luo Yu Rou comforted herself a little.

If this was done by someone else, it would be possible that they were just doing it for money. However, Zhang Yang was 80% sure that this incident was planned out by Zhong Xiu Hua. So, the schemer did not do it for money. They just wanted to make sure that Zhang Yang loses his name and prestige! Speaking of which, Luo Yu Rou was just an innocent victim that got caught in the crossfire between him and Zhong Xiu Hua!

When his thoughts stopped there, he could not help to feel sorry for what just happened to Luo Yu Rou. Then he said, "I'm afraid that you're going to be disappointed now..." Zhong Xiu Hua was obviously not recording all this to blackmail Zhang Yang. He would just release the pictures and photos out into public without having second thoughts. After all, his true agenda was to make Sun Xin Yu leave Zhang Yang!

Thinking of which, he quickly took up the phone by his side and called back home. He had disappeared for a full day. Those ladies in the house must be panicking right now!

When the phone was picked up, Zhang Yang roughly explained the

entire situation to Sun Xin Yu. He held nothing back. Well, paper cannot smother fire after all. Meanwhile, he was indeed the victim of this incident!

He did not even need to say who might be behind all that. Sun Xin Yu was 99% sure that she knew it was all Zhong Xiu Hua's doing. She immediately had the urge to put a bullet through that Zhong Xiu Hua's head.

Chapter 788: Beginning of a storm

Zhang Yang had disappeared for over one full day. Sun Xin Yu and the ladies were beginning to panic. Truth be told, Han Ying Xue began to worry because she noticed that Zhang Yang had not return from his regular routine jog since morning. So, she called Sun Xin Yu in the afternoon and told her about it. By the end of it, she decided to let the professionals deal with it.

Sun Xin Yu immediately ordered a few of her colleagues to check on the regular route of Zhang Yang's jog. They managed to acquire a rough idea on what happened at the park. After that, she immediately used her connections in the network and began a search throughout the entirety of Zhou Shu city. Even though Zhou Shu was not a big city, it would still take a while for them to look through the entire city. Just as they were about to run out of hope, Zhang Yang called in, all of a sudden.

Well, Sun Xin Yu had suspected Zhong Xiu Hua to be behind all this. However, that f*cker knew how to cover his tracks. He managed to clear any suspicion of his role in this. Before knowing what had actually happened to Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu could not go all out on Zhong Xiu Hua. All she could do was giving a few threats to Zhong Xiu Hua before leaving him alone.

However, she had never thought it possible that Zhong Xiu Hua would arrange an 'affair' to happen!

With Sun Xin Yu's intelligence, she immediately suspected that things were as simple as they looked. Zhong Xiu Hua would not be so naïve to believe that such a matter would be enough to separate her and Zhang Yang. It would all fall on the attitude of the woman that Zhang Yang touched. If Zhang Yang had raped the woman, then the story would turn out to be different.

Luckily, Zhang Yang informed Sun Xin Yu that he was unconscious all the while. So he denied raping Luo Yu Rou. After the two of them discussed for a while on the phone, the two of them could not come up

with a tangible solution. So, they could only sit around and wait for things to happen before they react accordingly.

Upon hanging up the phone, Zhang Yang got to his feet and put his clothes back on. Some things were not convenient to be discussed on the phone. He knew that he needed to get back to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue as soon as possible. He needed to communicate properly with both of the ladies. Because when the 'Sex Scandal' is exposed, Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou would not be the only two victims that would get hurt by it. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would also be dragged into the mud.

"You f*cked me and you plan to just walk away like that?" Luo Yu Rou had been stunned the entire morning. However, when she noticed that Zhang Yang was leaving, she could not help but feel angry. Well, she did not even know the owner of the d*ck that literally f*cked her up, after all!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought. Then he said, "Follow me! I believe that our news will be exposed to the entire world by noon today. So you'll just get swarmed by the gossip reporters!"

Luo Yu Rou gave some thought to Zhang Yang's words. Well, it made sense, though. So she decided to follow Zhang Yang and leave the 'crime scene' before it was too late. She put a hat over her head on the way out. So she need not have to worry about being recognized by anyone.

Although she had a car, it was obviously inconvenient for her to drive her own car out of the place. There would definitely be quite a number of entertainment reporters standing by the outside area of the building. If they ever see Luo Yu Rou driving out of the vicinity with another man on her car, they would definitely tail them and follow them anywhere they would go. Their main purpose was to dig out some explosive and juicy news after all!

After hailing a cab, the two of them began to make their way back to Zhang Yang's house. After traveling over some distance, they switched to another cab. When the two of them arrived at Zhang Yang's house, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the ladies were already waiting for them at the entrance of the house.

When Luo Yu Rou saw the four beautiful ladies, she could not help but despise Zhang Yang. She thought that Zhang Yang was a perverted lustful f*cker who would keep up to four mistresses in his house! She hated men who would keep a mistress in secret. So her evaluation on Zhang Yang had dropped by a thousand feet beneath the surface of the ground. If she wasn't in a bewildered situation right now, she would have never chosen to stay with a man like this!

"Wow! It's Luo Yu Rou! It's the freaking Luo Yu Rou!" The little brat was really a heartless little b*tch. The moment she saw that Zhang Yang coming back in one piece, she no longer worried. She immediately stared at Luo Yu Rou. If the little brat was not a beautiful lady herself, she would have been mistaken by the others as a pervert.

Upon entering the house, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were told to stay outside of the room for the moment. Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Luo Yu Rou shut themselves in a room and started their discussion on the incident. They were discussing on how to handle the aftermath of the incident.

The two ladies were thinking alike as Zhang Yang did. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had no good impressions towards the people in the entertainment circle. They meant to keep Luo Yu Rou hidden for a period of time through their words. Although Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou were both victims in this incident, however, some things could not be explained with mere words. If they attempt to explain those 'some things', they might ended up adding oil onto fire. Instead, they should just keep everything cold and quiet. After a period of time, everything would be washed away by the end of it.

Before the clock struck 12p.m, a new post appeared right on the official website of the 'God's Miracle'. This anonymous person had revealed that Zhang Yang, the number one player in 'God's Miracle' had an affair with a famous local female superstar by the title name 'Luo Yu Rou the Sexy Goddess'! The post also claimed that they had pictures and video footages as proof! The anonymous person also posted a few links to the pictures and video footages. Well, one of them was a complete footage of the entire

incident in the room!

Although the post was removed because it violated the law by having explicit sexual content, the footage was downloaded by countless people on the internet. The footage was spreading across the internet like an untamed wildfire. Countless people all over the world were requesting for links to watch how Zhang Yang engaged in 'PvP battle' with Luo Yu Rou.

After all, both Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou were famous stars in their respective fields of specialty. Of course, the scandal would cause such a big tidal wave across the surface of a calm water. Later on, some large websites decided to post the footages to earn money. However, they had processed the footage and put some mosaic boxes on the important parts of the video.

However, there wasn't actually much difference between the raw and the censored version of the footage. Well, there was a big problem with the angle of the shot that was taken. The entire video only showed Luo Yu Rou's back while she was sitting right on top of Zhang Yang. Although the back of Luo Yu Rou was fair and seductive, she did not really show too much of her body as well in the footage. Her 'performance' in the footage was just similar to the sex scenes in her previous movies. Nothing more.

When Zhang Yang and the grown-up ladies saw the footage, they felt relieved immediately. The camera had never actually get a clear shot of Zhang Yang throughout the entire incident. However, Luo Yu Rou was very persistent on screwing Zhang Yang for the entire night. The strong desire of her wanting Zhang Yang caused Zhang Yang to feel a chill straight up his spine. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were very jealous to see what happened throughout the entire footage.

--- they felt heartbroken, because they had never forced Zhang Yang so roughly before! Well, that might be due to the reason of Zhang Yang not being Luo Yu Rou's own man. So, she had no consideration for Zhang Yang's body condition. If she ever 'breaks' Zhang Yang, what would Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu do, then?

After seeing her own crazy performance, Luo Yu Rou blushed. However,

she felt relieved and said, "That's not bad, not that bad at all. We can just say that this is a new scene from a new movie!"

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue shook their heads at the same time. Zhang Yang sighed heavily and said, "You're really brainless with big boobs! Who would actually believe that a sex scene is so long? It's an entire night!"

Luo Yu Rou was angry and shameful at the same time. Because of this stinky man, she had become so miserable right now. And now he dared to scold her! However, looking at the footage, Luo Yu Rou seemed to be the one who was dominating Zhang Yang for the entire night. Strictly speaking, she was the violent one and Zhang Yang was the victim of the incident!

Since the incident had happened, Luo Yu Rou decided to optimistically accept the fact. Well, she would not want to see herself being pressed upon by any man and letting the man do whatever he pleased to her. That's because she really hated men. However, even though the footage only showed her back, the high quality audio of the video had recorded her every single moan loud and clear. Her seductive and yet lustful voice had herself unconvinced that she would actually moan like that.

However, being numbed by the sexual drive doesn't mean that she had lost her memory about the entire incident. The memory about yesterday's night began to play in loops in that pretty little head of hers. Everything began to get clearer and cleared every time she got reminded of that night. She could clearly remember the moment Zhang Yang's rod beginning to enter her body. That hot impact was irreplaceable by any masturbating rod in the entire world!

Mentally speaking, she really hated men in the entire world. However, her body had no illness nor other problems. Instead, her body was naturally born to be sensitive. So her 'need' would be a little more intense than others.

Luo Yu Rou took a peek at Zhang Yang and suddenly, she realized that she actually did not hate the man anymore. Instead, she suddenly felt an

urge to surrender herself to the man! The thought of it gave herself a chill up her spine. She shook her head and forced herself to remove that thought from her mind. She kept reminding herself that she would not surrender herself to any man in the entire world!

Meanwhile, a new wave arose when the previous one has barely subsided. Many anonymous people began to tell, or should we say the word 'expose', that Zhang Yang was using his title as the guildmaster of Lone Desert Smoke to force girls to sleep with him. Sometimes he would even force girls to have an orgy sex with him! These people were claiming either to be the victims or the husbands, boyfriends of the victims. They even posted the seductive pictures of their so-called girlfriends and wives on the forum to stir things up.

Well, some of the people recognized that among those photos, some of the girls in the photos were in fact porn stars. However, the majority of the people were infuriated by the rumors they heard. So they did not care about it at all and kept scolding Zhang Yang, saying that he was a scumbag. They even voiced out that the scumbag Zhang Yang should be dragged out into the open and shot in the head over a hundred times.

"Actually, they're all just jealous!" Fatty Han had long heard about the rumors. He tapped Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "Little Yang, so how many d*cks do you actually keep under your pants? It's been only 3 years since 'God's Miracle' was launched. So according to my calculations, you should have slept with more than 4,000 women by now. So, you've slept with 4 women a day, on average. Without breaks either! I admire your stamina, man!"

Actually, those who are sane would not actually believe those crappy rumors. However, just like what Fatty Han just said, those whining f*ckers were just jealous of Zhang Yang. That was the only valid reason for them to create such a false ruse to make Zhang Yang look bad. Well, the current situation was like some people hearing about a dirty officer keeping hundreds of mistresses in secret. Although they were scolding the officer violently, they were actually admiring the officer from the bottom of their hearts.

Well, that was the true mentality buried deep within those thick skulls of theirs. They would just blame the rich for keeping mistresses while they held high hopes in winning a lottery. They were hoping to get rich as well so that they would be able to live like those rich people that they always loathed.

Why act like a lamb when you are a real wolf?

"F*ck you, get lost!" Zhang Yang gave Fatty Han a punch.

"Hehe, I know that the rumors about you having the others are not true at all. However, you really did f*cked that Luo Yu Rou!" Fatty Han revealed a perverted expression on his wretched face. He elbowed Zhang Yang and said, "So how was it? Tastes good, eh? That woman is famous for being sexy and seductive. I used to watch all her movies and photo albums like watching porn! I've even battled her over a hundred times in my dream, if you know what I mean! But I can't think about the wife of a brother, so I'll just switch another goddess to f*ck in my dream!"

"If you have that much energy, then you should just go back to your wife and feed her with your excessive energy!"

"Honestly, how do you plan to handle the superstar then? She has over millions of fans you know... if those fans ever find out that you have a house full of pretty girls, they'll definitely dedicate their entire lives just to plucking your d*ck out!"

Zhang Yang stared at Fatty Han and said, "As long as you can keep your big f*cking mouth shut, no one would know that she's here in my house!"

"Zhang Yang---" Luo Yu Rou suddenly knocked the door. She sounded like she was about to ask Zhang Yang about something important.

Fatty Han knew what to do. So after he laughed evilly for a bit, he left the house.

"What's wrong?"

"Erm... do you have pills? You know... the kind to control birth?" Luo Yu Rou said. She suddenly remembered her 'joyful incident' that happened yesterday. Both of them did take any precautions before they begun. So if

she really gets pregnant, then she'll be miserable for the rest of her life.

Well, she had no plan at all about having a child in her life. The main reason was because she believed that she would not fall in love with any man in the entire world. Without love, it would not be wise to create a new life in her life.

Zhang Yang began to feel a headache about the current situation. Well, of course he did not have such medicines kept in his house. The main reason was simple. He really hoped that Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would both be pregnant with his children. By then, these two ladies might no longer quarrel with each other. The house would become peaceful at last. However, things did not go his way. It's been almost 2 years since then, the belly of the two ladies were still flat as f*ck. Zhang Yang could not help but suspect that he had lost his ability of spreading offsprings after he was resurrected!

Chapter 789: Proof of Innocence

Although Zhang Yang really wished that Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue would be pregnant with his child, he would not want a stranger to be the mother of his child. So he nodded immediately and said, "I don't have any in the house. I'll buy it immediately."

Coincidentally, he was about to send Fatty Han back home. So the two of them arrived at the pharmacy to buy the birth control pills. However, the female attendant at the counter of the pharmacy was shocked to see them. Her eyes betrayed her thoughts to Zhang Yang and Fatty Han. She was looking at them with genuine shocked and pity --- how could a gay get pregnant as well? How outrageous can the world be, now!?

Because some anonymous group was trying to spread the fire that was burning Zhang Yang, the 'Zhang Yang Incident' was becoming more serious than ever. At the same time, the Lone Desert Smoke was pushed to the chopping board. The guild that used to be known as an honorable guild had now become an infamous guild of 'lust'. Although no one had left the guild yet, the morale of the guild had dropped like hell.

Well, people said that the rumors would end at the mouth of the wise. However, there weren't really many wise people in the world after all. Furthermore, there was a group of people dedicated to spreading false rumors about Zhang Yang. So they managed to provoke a bunch of blind and idiotic people who could get jealous easily to hate Zhang Yang. They claimed to be acting on behalf of their so-called 'justice' to bring the pervert, Zhang Yang, down. They were giving it all in demeaning the good name of the Lone Desert Smoke.

Under the blame of the 'Internet Army', any form of action or effort to save oneself would be pointless. Even if anyone would step up to say a few words for the Lone Desert Smoke, they would only end up being accused of lying for Zhang Yang. Some of them were even accused of being hired or appointed by Zhang Yang to step up and say some good words for the Lone Desert Smoke. Whoever came up, or whatever they said, they would end up being cursed upon.

"Actually, we can just leave the f*cking place!" Sun Xin Yu was leaning on Zhang Yang's body. Although she had a powerful background to support her, she would still feel helpless against the 'Internet Army' that was coming at them like a tsunami tidal wave.

"Leave? As in getting out of the country? Migrate?" Zhang Yang spoke out of convenience.

"No, leave the game!" Han Ying Xue continued to say. "If you can't put the fire in the game down, we can still play some smaller-scale game. After all, money is just a figure to us."

Zhang Yang stayed silent for a moment, In the beginning, he joined into the 'God's Miracle' because he wanted to earn some money so that he could have a good life. However, the real reason he joined 'God's Miracle' was to make a name for himself and defeat Liu Wei. Now that Liu Wei is dead as f*ck, the Liu Family had been crippled for good. It seemed that he does not have any reason left to stay in the game.

Well, a game would always be a game. People could use them as a means of passing their time. It would be impractical to make gaming into a lifetime profession.

However, if he quits the game without putting up a fight, he would become a laughing stock for the people all around the world. People would just think that he was running away from Zhong Xiu Hua like a rat in the sewer. Now that Zhong Xiu Hua was manipulating everything to go against him, he could not stomach the thought of running away, knowing that son of the b*tch Zhong Xiu Hua has won. Zhang Yang could not accept the fact that he has lost to a f*cking rich spoilt brat!

Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile on his face. Then he said, "I'm going to put up a good fight! Are you willing to accompany me, my loves?"

Han Ying Xue's face turned red again and said, "Haven't had enough just now?"

Zhang Yang frowned intensely and said, "You insanely perverted woman! Don't think of me as being as perverted as you are! I'm talking about a real fight! Not sex!"

"Then, what are you planning to do, then?" Sun Xin Yu seemed relieved upon hearing those fierce words. Well, what Sun Xin Yu liked the most about Zhang Yang was his persistence and fervour.

Zhang Yang cracked his knuckles and said, "We'll do a large-scale investigation. We've got quite a number of people claiming that they're the 'victims' of this incident, right? We'll gather everything up and wring it from them! Since Zhong Xiu Hua loves to play, I'll play with him till the end!"

"But it's going to cost a lot to do a large-scale investigation!"

"Money is not a factor to concern about! I'm now so poor that I only have money left!"

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue looked at each other and smiled together. Then, they nodded to express their agreements on Zhang Yang's thoughts. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang did not lose everything to this incident. Instead, he got even closer to both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue than he had ever been.

"How about that female superstar? What do you plan to do with her?" Han Ying Xue had finally brought up the topic that he must face sooner or later.

Zhang Yang frowned. Well, few days after the incident, Zhang Yang realized that Luo Yu Rou was not as shallow and stupid as he thought she would behave. She had her own principles. However, her weakness was very obvious. She favored fame and glamour a little too much. She had been dreaming about getting her prestige back and continue on being her 'Queen of Sexiness' to seduce all the men in the entire world.

However, her dream would almost be impossible, now. Well, quite a number of websites had opened up polls for the people all around the world to vote. Up to 88% of the majority voted Luo Yu Rou to return as a porn star!

Although Luo Yu Rou had always performed outstandingly in the field of 'sexiness', she had never actually had any scandals before in her entire career life. Even though she was known to have quite a connection in the

film industry, her name was clean and good at the least. She was known to be one of those superstars that had never committed any affairs nor inappropriate behaviors. She was well known as a pure and untainted superstar.

However, because she was dragged right into the sticky mud of the 'Zhang Yang Incident', her image was deeply affected in a bad way. Many people had been pointing fingers at her, saying that she was a pure b*tch. So stop acting all pure and innocent. They even blamed her for acting highly just because she did not want to reveal her nipples to the public.

Over the following days, Luo Yu Rou had lost a lot of weight. Her waist was so thin that any men could just grab hold of it with one hand. However, her boobs did not shrink at all. Instead, her boobies had gained some size. She looked even sexier now! If she ever gets the chance to return to the big screen, her appearance would definitely cause 90% of the male population that watch her movies to lose their blood out through their noses!

Well, her title 'Queen of Sexiness' was not a joke. She was called by that title because all of her movie fans called her that.

"Speaking of her..." Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Let's put these rumors all to rest first before we think about how to deal with her."

After that, the hot topic 'Zhang Yang Incident' was stirred towards a different direction. Zhang Yang held a press conference to strongly express his statement. He denied to all accusations on him and he also expressed that he was going to take actions by bringing the law upon those who tried to frame him. He wanted to severely punish those who attempted to defame his good name.

After the local authorities had confirmed everything, Zhang Yang launched a police report. Meanwhile, the case had also received the approval from the judge to carry out a full-on investigation on the matter. The bureau would be extending their investigations over to the 4,000 over people who claimed that they were the Zhang Yang Incident's victims. The police had notified the families of the victims in hopes of them stepping

up with the evidence of Zhang Yang's 'crime' with courage. The police were hoping that they would at least provide the time and the locations of where and when the incidents happened.

The person on the chopping board began to fight back. Zhang Yang's action had brought a new breath of life across the 'Zhang Yang Incident' again. Because Zhang Yang was acting so strong headedly this time, many people had calmed their idiotic heads down to think properly. How could a man f*ck over 4,000 women in three years? It would be outrageously unreal! Could it be, that Zhang Yang was really framed?

It did not take long before the identities of the so-called 'victims' were revealed to the public. The funny part about it was that many of the 'victims' were actually local artists and porn stars who had posted their photo album on the internet before! Everything on the internet was solid proof to that statement, after all.

Meanwhile, the identities of the other women were beginning to be revealed as well. Well, they were actually hotel attendants, government officers and many more. Truth be told, when Zhang Yang began to take action, many of those women quickly reported to the police that they had never even met Zhang Yang before in their entire lives. They even claimed that their photos had been stolen for bad intentions. They claimed that their lives were affected because of this incident.

As the information began to flood in, the truth began to reveal itself to the public. The rumors began to get overshadowed by the truth --- someone was trying to hurt Zhang Yang from the shadows.

Meanwhile, the police had received help from some hacker activists in apprehending some of the so-called victim's husbands and boyfriends. When these idiots were asked to explain themselves for creating false messages to the public, they only replied that they did it because they were hired by anonymous people.

The tide of the incident began to turn. The 4,000 over so-called victims had been proven to be nothing but frauds. At first, people were still suspecting that the police were trying to protect Zhang Yang. However, as

time passed and more evidence started surfacing, more and more people began to realize that the rumors served as a medium of framing Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang seemed to have settled his part of the incident. However, Luo Yu Rou's 'Hotel One Night Stand' incident was becoming even more significant among the people. Because the face of the man she rode on was not revealed, everyone was kept guessing. They had totally excluded Zhang Yang from the possibility because of what he did recently. Everyone already believed that he was truly being framed.

For that, Zhang Yang did not know whether he should cry or laugh. If anyone ever finds out that the main female actor of the movie is staying at his house, another storm would definitely hit Zhang Yang in the face again!

In the game, the Lone Desert Smoke had been through quite some ordeals together with Zhang Yang. However, they had been suffering great losses as well. Quite a number of players were affected to the point that they decided to leave Lone Desert Smoke by the end of it. When the guild had been elevated up to a Level 6 Guild, not only had Lone Desert Smoke failed to increase the number of their members in the guild, the number had also decreased from 50,000 to 40,000 only!

Fortunately, the twenty players that Zhang Yang picked to possess a Tank stayed in the guild. They proved their loyalty by not abandoning Zhang Yang and the guild. Zhang Yang felt very comforted, knowing that he had not trusted the wrong person yet.

However, after the violent disturbance in the force of Lone Desert Smoke, the power level of the guild was affected significantly. Although they remained as the strongest guild in the entire China Region, they were no longer as invincible as they were in the past. Instead, the Eternal Flame had taken advantage of the opportunity to grow stronger. That guild managed to grow into one of the four most significant guilds in the entire China Region such as Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, and Imperial Sky.

Because of that, Zhang Yang was ignited to fight. He made up his mind to go all out on the Eternal Flame. If it's a fight they wanted, Zhang Yang would fulfill their 'requests' and give them a decent fight! Zhang Yang was finally determined to eliminate Zhong Xiu Hua out of the 'God's Miracle'!

Although the pigs that create the rumors were being prosecuted with the charges of defaming a person's good name, those pigs had only paid some money in the process of it. None of them were daring enough to drag Zhong Xiu Hua, the real culprit into the mud. Furthermore, it would also make perfect sense that Zhong Xiu Hua would not make the arrangements himself. So, it would also be impossible for the investigators to link the crime back to him.

Zhang Yang requested that Sun Xin Yu get Zhong Xiu Hua out of his 'lair' so that they could have another chance to have a 'tea session' again. However, that fellow revealed a pale face the moment he was invited through a video call. He immediately hung up the video call when Sun Xin Yu mentioned the meet-up. Well, he had recently mended his teeth. He would not risk losing them again, will he? That should let Zhang Yang work off his feelings towards that son of the b*tch for a little.

Upon logging back into the game, Zhang Yang hustled up and started grinding. Well, he had been so occupied that he did not even have time to think about grinding. So he was only Level 188 currently. Meanwhile, top Tier players like One Sword Stroke, Snow Seeker, Scholar Musou and the others had reached Level 186. They were just 2 levels behind Zhang Yang.

Just when Zhang Yang was ready to grind like a madman, an unexpected twist of events had happened to him.

"It didn't come this month!" Luo Yu Rou had no idea if she was terrified or joyful at the moment. When she said that, her voice was trembling.

Zhang Yang was not a sensitive man. So he replied her like a silly boy, "What didn't come?"

Luo Yu Rou sighed heavily. Well, speaking to an insensitive idiot like Zhang Yang would really be tiring. Then she said, "I, am, pregnant! It's, your, child!" She was explaining it while doing some hand signs at the

same time.

"Come on! I'm not an idiot! Wait... what did you say?!" Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment.

"You've impregnated me and you want to run away like a little f*ck as if nothing happened that night?" Luo Yu Rou was infuriated.

Chapter 790: The Race to Level 200

Zhang Yang brain melted. He had no idea what he was feeling then. At then, when the words came out of Luo Yu Rou's mouth, he felt it all. Everything. Happy. Shocked. Euphoric. Bliss. Conflict. All of it. He had no idea what to do next.

He gagged with his mouth dropping to the floor and said one sentence. "Are...you...sure?"

"Why would I lie about bad news? This is something bad for me, more than it is to you!" said Luo Yu Rou angrily, like a cat having its tail stepped on.

"R-Relax! I'm sorry! Please don't get so agitated! I don't want my baby to have some kind of deformation!" said Zhang Yang as he tried to calm the woman down by gently stroking her hair. He had not planned this. He had not wanted a random stranger to have his baby. However, when the thought of a possible future generation is growing in her womb, Zhang Yang felt the utmost happiness of being a parent. He could not help it. The "fatherly instinct" in him grew so strong that he kissed her forehead and went to his knees. He pulled Luo Yu Rou shirt up and cupped his ear against her womb, trying to hear the sound of the baby.

"What are you doing? I'm only been pregnant for just a month!" Luo Yu Rou pinched Zhang Yang's cheek. She too, felt extreme conflicted. She did not want to have a random stranger's baby. However, when the pregnancy test came back and showed two blue lines on the indicator, she felt a sort of happiness before the dread come in. Despite the horror of discovering she was pregnant, she did not want to have the babe aborted.

Zhang Yang rose to his legs and smiled like how Wei Yan Er smiled. He felt more alive then he had ever felt before in his life. He felt as if Luo Yu Rou had breathed in new life into him. At first, he had thought hard about the rules of causality, the butterfly effect. That death must exist! He felt happy. Not only whoever who had sent him back in time had spared him or anyone close to him, the person had also granted Zhang Yang a new life

as well!

He had been deeply entwined with both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue for more than two years, yet no matter how many loads that he had pumped into them, no life was born. As expected of hips that were meant to bear children, Luo Yu Rou's massive voluptuous life-giving hips were so efficient that one load was enough to give him a child!

As such, Zhang Yang hugged the woman for the good news she had given him. He then slid his hand down her back and traced downward more to her soft and supple meat buns.

Luo Yu Rou blushes wildly like a blooming rose. Despite being stoic all the time, her fair cheeks burned red like the setting sun. Her body started to soften up from his graceful caresses. However, she pulled herself together before getting lost in the forest of pleasure. "What are you doing?"

Zhang Yang retracted his hands and looked her deep into her eyes. "You're the mother of my babe. What do you think I am doing?"

Zhang Yang's eyes burned with passion. The woman in front of him was the idol of the entire country, the envy of all women. Just for that, he was already "ready to go" with her. Plus, she was carrying his bloodline! That alone was enough to set his mind straight. He must make her his woman!

"Hmph!" Luo Yu Rou turned her head away. "If you can't keep it in your pants, I'd suggest going for the two vixens! Don't get over your head just because you had made me pregnant." Said Luo Yu Rou as she felt the stiff flag pole trying to thrust into her womb. Her already sensitive body jerked violently and involuntarily at the touch of him.

"What are you talking about? Vixens? They are my wives. And so are you!" said Zhang Yang softly and seriously.

"Pfft." Luo Yu Rou scoffed. "Are you still living in the Tang Dynasty? Are you serious about marrying several wives?" she continued. She was trying purposely to annoy Zhang Yang, to try to provoke the man.

Zhang Yang shrugged casually and said, "Well. If you don't want to be

my wife, you could try to fit in as my lover?" Zhang Yang laughed jokingly and slid his palm from the front and gently made his way beneath her undergarment. He could almost feel the tip of the prickly forest on his fingertips.

Luo Yu Rou was clearly aroused but she was still strong enough to push him away after several seconds of momentary bliss.

"Oh. F*ck off you. I said it once and I will say it again. Don't get overly conceited just because your blood is in my womb. Remember, I can always have you prosecuted for rape!" said Luo Yu Rou through her ragged breath. Her undergarment was pulled and teased, causing the strings of her fabric to gently rub against the bell of her sacred temple. Although she tried to restrain it, she could not stop the love nectar from flowing out of her body.

"Is...that...so?" said Zhang Yang slowly, syllable by syllable as he teased the woman. Without further a due, he pulled down Luo Yu Rou skirts and kisses the lower part of her womb lovingly. Despite all her protest, the woman had not stopped Zhang Yang nor did she try to pull her skirt back up. He got up to his feet and whispered into her ear. "Help me get inside you."

Finally annoyed, Luo Yu Rou grabbed his golden sack and squeezed them hard, yet not too hard. Just enough to send the man jumping to his feet. "You horny little wolf. Do you know that it was all because of you that I had to quit my job?! How are you going to reimburse me for all my hard work!? My entire life is being flushed down the drain!"

It had been a month since the incident and Luo Yu Rou had understood the grudge between Zhang Yang and Zhong Xiu Hua. She knew that Zhang Yang was not technically at fault then, yet she bore some hatred for him since she was an innocent woman who got caught in the exchange. Although the leaked video had some angle problems and managed to hide most of her private parts, the rest of the world had already guessed and knew about her being in bed with a man.

Despite being the sexiest woman alive in China, that sort of news will

only be the ultimate downfall to her career. No diehard fan of hers will accept the reality of her being with a man. If she does want to get back onto the screen, she would have to resort to B rated movies, which was something she will never accept.

"What sort of reimbursement do you want?" said Zhang Yang. He then cupped his hands on her twin peaks, the same peaks that countless of men would want to "motorboat" with. Suffice to say that Zhang Yang was playing with the two things that all men in China would want to touch!

Luo Yu Rou paused a while and moaned unwillingly when Zhang Yang continued to "knock" on her doors.

"I want to start a movie studio. From scratch!" said Luo Yu Rou confidently after she had realized Zhang Yang is capable of such feat.

Zhang Yang stopped and crossed his arms. With one eyebrow raised, he said, "Fine by me. But, I want you to be a good wife and be a good mother to our children. I don't like the idea of my wife being eyed upon all day long. There's also the thing about you being touched here and there during filming."

Luo Yu Rou widened her eyes with surprise. She scoffed again and said, "My, my. Aren't you being a little too hasty with that? Is it jealousy I'm detecting from you? Anyhow, the path of my company's growth will be towards 'God's Miracle'. No men can touch me. Besides, dominating all men's heart had always been my goal. That will never change."

"I like to see you succeed. I really do. But I can't help but find a major flaw in your plan. How could you dominate all men when you can't even dominate me?"

"Didn't I dominate you already?"

"You did. But, you've left out a tiny portion."

"Aurgh...Fine."

The girl was the best classified as what the Japanese would call a strong tsundere. Despite being cold and mean, she would always give into what Zhang Yang asked. The two kissed each other and made their way to

Zhang Yang's room to continue the lovey-dovey session there.

...

The incident of Luo Yu Rou being pregnant was not well accepted by Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. When women get on their nerve, spending money to buy stuff that pleases them would be one of the best methods of releasing their pent-up rage. As a result, Sun Xin Yu had proposed to Han Ying Xue that they have a "good time" in France. They even brought along Daffodil Daydream and Wei Yan Er along! When one was not enough, they had spent so much that two of Zhang Yang platinum credit cards were sent to the limit! Just one of them was enough to purchase several high-end Jimmy Choo's summer collections! Just how much anger did the two women bear?!

Sigh. Then again, the life in Luo Yu Rou's womb was blossoming. There was no reason for Zhang Yang nor anyone else to abort the baby. In the end, with heavy heart, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had accepted Luo Yu Rou as the fourth "participant" to their family. After spending what seems to be an entire nation's wealth, the two women came back from France and locked themselves in Zhang Yang room, forcing him to empty his golden balls into them until they were pregnant as well.

With 'God's Miracle' as the studio itself, shooting a film will be as easy as walking in the park. All Luo Yu Rou had to do would be to write a good script, design the scene, pick and select the characters' appearances and the game developers will take care of the rest. Naturally, shooting in the game itself will require some form of fee. However, the overall expenses will be at least 90% cheaper than shooting in reality.

In fact, setting up and registering a filming company was extremely easy. Plus, with Sun Xin Yu's help, Zhang Yang only required less than 10 days to find the appropriate staff and crew to start. It all depended on Luo Yu Rou herself to craft out a good script, and to hire the actors and directors. When all the crew members are gathered and ready to film, she would need to then pay the game developers to set up the scenery and the character creation for the actors.

So far into the relationship, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Luo Yu Rou were doing just fine, or so they seem. To fight a war with the enemy, one must first make sure there would never be a civil war in their own nation. After making sure that the girls would not make a random fuss about random stuff, Zhang Yang then logged back into the game to continue his grinding session.

"We have been slacking on boss raids for more than a month! Even though we have the strongest equipment in the game, we might still lose to other guilds in terms of Levels!" said Hundred Shots as he expressed his worries about the guild progression. Due to Zhang Yang's, Han Ying Xue's, and Sun Xin Yu's irregular logins, many of the new Ascended tier bosses that had spawned during their absence had been claimed by other guilds.

"Well then. We should double our efforts." Said Zhang Yang nonchalantly.

Everyone knew about the case that happened to Zhang Yang. Their anger and rage were all genuine and understandable. As words of rumors continue to spread like wildfire, the urge to permanently extinguish the so-called Eternal Flame became stronger.

The last man standing will surely prevail. Right then, Lone Desert Smoke had been through a tough ordeal. Hence, even though the rumors had brought Lone Desert Smoke down to its knees, it was not all a bad thing. As such, all the ill-willed players had left the guild, what that was left in the guild were the strong, down to earth, and the most loyal members!

Most of the Ascended tier bosses that spawned were the result of the game's story progression; it will be hard to find a random Ascended tier boss that spawns with no reason at all. Hence, for now, Zhang Yang was able to pay attention to rebuilding the guild and expanding it bigger to restore the former glory of Lone Desert Smoke. Even though the incident of Zhang Yang sleeping around had delivered a great impact to Lone Desert Smoke, a similar positive impact had occurred to Lone Desert Smoke after the case was clarified to the entire world. As such, Lone Desert Smoke's popularity was restored. However, it will be hard for Zhang Yang to strengthen the guild then, since 99% professional players

would already be in a guild. If Zhang Yang wants to recruit strong players, he would need to lower his requirements to the lower level players.

Although it might be demeaning, it was about time for Lone Desert Smoke to get rid of the useless old dogs and to recruit greenhorns over. At then, Lone Desert Smoke had over 20,000 empty slots. With Hundred Shots taking care and filtering each new recruits, there will not be cases where he would discard the number 1 requirement, that is the morality of the player, just to fill in the numerous empty slots.

That sort of recruitment will inevitably take up some time. It was expected that the guild might take up to half a year to restore itself to its former invincible state. As such, many of the diehard loyal members of Lone Desert Smoke had understood the real enemy. Before the incident, they would not involve themselves in the vengeance between Zhang Yang and Zhong Xiu Hua, however, when the collateral damage had included them in the line of fire, the hatred towards Zhong Xiu Hua found a reason.

Roughly 10 days later after Zhang Yang resumed his regular login activities, he managed to reach Level 190. Since Level 190 bore no special meaning to it, the system had not made any announcements nor rewards. Things would be different from Level 200 onwards. The official site had released information about players being awarded for their tireless effort. Up to 10 players who reach Level 200 first will receive a random powerful skill. On the other hand, the first three players that reach Level 200 will also receive additional Luck attribute state. Best of all, the first player that reaches Level 200 will have his or her name etched on the Hall of Fame!

Skills that were rewarded from the system will naturally be strong. In other words, all players that had the chance to reach Level 200 first had pumped all their effort into grinding alone.

In MMORPG culture, there were two ways to be the highest-level player. One, put in 110% effort to be the best and grind all day, all night, 24/7, 365 days a year. Two, if you cannot handle the stress of making sure you're the fastest, all you have to do is to prevent others from catching up to you! With that in mind, endless PvP session in the open-world field had erupted. Although players that were killed in the PvP session were no

longer suffering from Level degradation, they would lose all their experience points that had been earned during said level. Imagine having 99% experience points and losing it all due to a single PvP battle. That would plunge the player down in the list, making him waste 10 days of his effort. At then, it would be impossible for said player to chase after the rest.

Guilds like Eternal Flame that had been known to act like uneducated gangsters, had sortied several groups of Assassins to find and bring down players on the Level Ranking Board. All to allow Scholar Musou, Longrich to reach Level 200 first.

When one does it, so will the others. Naturally, other guilds had done the same as Eternal Flame and had caused a massive region to regional war. The entire world was thrown into an ugly, selfish, and gory battle amongst each other. All for the sake of reaching Level 200 first.

In the end, those players that were earnestly trying to win the race had no safe place to grind. In the end, they had found their safe haven in the normal mode of the Spectre's Hidden Cavern. The normal mode of any dungeons allowed players to raid the dungeon repeatedly without any limits. Players could then rely on killing monsters and bosses in the dungeon to gain level.

At then, Zhang Yang was still the number 1 player on the Level Ranking Board. Despite that, it was not a safe spot for him since many other players of other region were only 1 or 2 levels behind him.

Chapter 791: Battle of the Best

Zhang Yang was not the kind of man that would take a beating without giving one back.

In fact, he was on the lucky side since he had managed to score a real superstar and have her to carry his potential son in her belly! Still, the entire experience of it was like coming out of the fire and scoring a damsel. The problem was the fact that someone had set him ablaze. That was the real beef he had with Zhong Xiu Hua. There's a saying in the Chinese culture. You're not a real man if you don't right those who wrong you.

Zhang Yang did not care about what Sun Xin Yu warned him about. He did not care about her family background or where she stood in the political world. All he knows that Zhong Xiu Hua had struck first, and he will strike back. The hammer of justice shall be swift. He hired many private investigators to find any possible information regarding Zhong Xiu Hua that he could use it to Zhang Yang's advantage.

Zhong Xiu Hua's father will soon take over the top ranks of the nation. If he does, Zhang Yang might not be able to do anything to topple him then. However, the target of his vengeance was only Zhong Xiu Hua. It's not like he was an untouchable prince or something. There is something called a network. With the power of cyberspace and relationship with people, Zhang Yang could do anything to topple him down! The best and most efficient way to bring someone down is to dig out his past, especially the "dirty" ones and release them into the internet. Once the government officials know about it, the game will then begin.

All the things he planned were all step by step. It will, in the end, take up a long time to accomplish. At most, the things he did was to buy information. There will always be a limit to how much he can do on his own.

Back to the gaming world. There were many daunting Assassin players around that had dared to assault them. In non-party conditions, Han Ying

Xue, Wei Yan Er, and even Sun Xin Yu would not dare to step outside to grind on their own. If they are unlucky to stumble upon a patient hunter, they will then strike when you're most vulnerable. Although Thief class do not have the greatest DPS, and were unable to solo kill monsters on their own, heal, nor farm dungeons on their own, they were still considered to be the deadliest players in the open-world. A true killer. The Wilderness King!

A good Thief will always hide in the shadows and wait like a viper until the right time to land the killing blow.

Perhaps, the only class that would have no fear of Thieves would be Guardians like Zhang Yang. In normal circumstances, besides from fighting a boss, a Guardian would always have their HP maintained at 80% or higher. Zhang Yang had Felice by his side. If he senses danger, he could have Felice to heal him while Zhang Yang takes care of the assassins. But, if he does encounter a whole gang of Assassins, he could simply escape with an array of Invincibility and Invisibility skills. He could also simply outrun them by flying away with the Phoenix! It was as simple as that.

However, even for Zhang Yang, it would be best for him and the other guild members to grind their levels in dungeons. Although grinding in dungeons would be the safest zone, the grinding speed will never rival that of the open-world. Hence, whenever Zhang Yang comes online, the entire gang will join him in the grinding spree. All except Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream. Those two were natural-born Assassins. It would be a sin of a lifetime if they were to be caught by other Assassins.

Zhang Yang came online and brought the party to the Mountains of Kael Gus. The map was a Level 180 – Level 210 map. Among all the same Level map, that was the further map from the further conquered Territory around. Technically, the number of players in the map should be the lowest count. With fewer players around to disrupt the monster kill, it would be the best for them to start their grinding spree.

For normal players, going out into the open-world to grind will take time and money. Supplies will run out, equipment will require fixing, recovery items will run dry. All and all, they would have to travel all the way back to

a Territory or main city to recuperate. The journey itself took up most of their time. Hence, the importance of a Territory. Like a train station, they would simply use the Teleportation Circle to travel back to the main city easily.

For Zhang Yang's party, as long as the healers in the party could last, they would not have much problem grinding. All they had to bring along with them were MP pots and snacks. With an endless supply of MP, they could support the entire party to continue their grinding spree.

As for equipment durability, Hundred Shot got it covered. He had already managed to acquire blueprints for a repairing robot which allowed players to pay a higher cost to have their equipment fixed at anywhere, anytime. Despite the heightened price of fixing, it was recompensed back in the time of traveling back and forth.

Zhang Yang planned to grind at the map for some time. While he planned it that way, the entire party had steeled their decision to not go back to the main city until everyone reaches Level 200. They will give it all they had to make sure that everyone owns the top 10 spots!

Truth be told, Zhang Yang's party was not the only one that had set up shop in a map. Many other guilds might not have something like a repairing robot, but they had methods to allow their members to camp at a map for a long duration. Some were practicing good sportsmanship where they saw Zhang Yang had already occupied the map and leaves them alone without even trying to negotiate. Some were malicious enough to kill all the players in the field to dominate the map.

All in all, the most important thing then was to stay online for as long as possible. That, and making sure that no one can jump on you while you are grinding. Once you're killed, that's sayonara to continue the race.

For the next two months, everyone had faced much trouble to maintain a sane state of mind. The constant fear of being ambushed while grinding at their fastest speed for long duration was incredibly taxing to one's mind. No one could let down their guard since most professional players were racing with all they had to win the Level 200 race. Who knows, someone

might overtake you at any time at all!

As such, everyone will pause for a second to check the Level Ranking Board once in a while to confirm their own rankings. If they rise in rank, it was good news for them and a sort of encouragement for them to continue the race. If they find their rank has dropped, it was also a form of encouragement to push them further.

The race continued on like the world cup football fever. When the server engines running tirelessly to spawn monsters for players to grind, there were a few bunch of players that did not care about it. Those were players that were too under leveled or greenhorns that had just joined the game. It was not Level 200, but Level 300 that they had set their targets for.

As such, the entire game's Level Ranking Board was as follows.

1. Zhan Yu, Level 193
2. Frost Night, Level 192
3. Heart of Destruction, Level 192
4. Hourglass Figure, Level 192
5. God's Left Hand, Level 192
6. Drizzler, Level 191
7. Snow Seeker, Level 191
8. Longrich, Level 190
9. Little Snow, Level 190
10. Daffodil Daydream, Level 190
11. Lost Dream, Level 190
12. Captain America, Level 190
13. Seductive Wild Pussy, Level 190
14. Scholar Musou, Level 190
15. Dusk Phoenix, Level 190

Although Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were also Level 190, they had

lesser % in their experience points gauge. Hence, they were pushed off the ranking list. Never underestimate the difference between 1% and 99%. Most players in their Level 190 range would need to take close to 9 days in real life to reach 98%!

As such, not even Zhang Yang was able to lower his guard even for a minute. There were four Level 192 players that were following him closely. Even if it's a small chance that they will overtake him, Zhang Yang had accepted it as an absolute certainty that they will overtake him! After all, it had been only recently since Zhang Yang had reached Level 193. There could be a possibility that those four were at Level 192 with 99% experience points.

He would not mind it if Sun Yu Xin overtakes him, but not others. Never.

As such, it had shown the greatest impact Zhong Xiu Hua had done to him. His personal matters had affected his in-game performance so badly that he was pressurized then. If none of the rumors or Lou Yu Rou had befallen upon him, he would have been four Levels ahead the current players!

The grinding fiesta continues on for 30 days...

At then, most of the parties that spent a whole month grinding in the wild had run out of supplies to continue their fiesta. Zhang Yang's party was different. With the marvelous tool of the [Party Summon Order] and the [Lover's Charm], Zhang Yang's trip to resupply the entire party was as easy as a click.

A fully efficient party would need to return to the main city to restock their supplies once every 3 to 4 days. Compile those numbers and they would have to return to town at least 25 to 30 times. The traveling time alone was more than enough for Zhang Yang to gain 50% of his experience bar gauge.

Hence, with such efficiency at hand, Zhang Yang had managed to stay in the first place while Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue, had managed to gain ranks. Even Hundred Shots was able to reach the 15th rank!

At then, when they were able to engage onto the next monster. Both

Zhang Yang's and Sun Xin Yu's eyes twitched. Both of them turned around and cried out loud in the party channel.

"There's a Thief!"

Zhang Yang shouted louder and said, "Don't engage yet. Feign ignorance while I think of a plan."

"Hehe. Looks like someone is being jealous of us!" said Lost Dream.

"Hmph! Such a pitiful guild. How could they use this sort of malicious play when they themselves could not keep up the efforts!" said Wei Yan Er as she made her way towards Zhang Yang.

"Tell me, noobie tank. Where are they, so that I can cleave their skull and smash their brains if they had any!"

Zhang Yang smirked. "It's just a sixth sense thing. I know they are here with us, but I can't tell where. Don't worry though. I have a plan. Their goal was to kill us, isn't it? Then, let's give them a chance or they will pussy out!"

With Zhang Yang executing the plan to bait them out, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had slowed down their healings and joined in the DPS output. At then, only a few of the party member will take damage. If they were about to die, Zhang Yang had three life-saving skills that he could use instantly to protect anyone.

Just then, seven objects came out of thin air and struck Daffodil Daydream who was busy activating [Hell's Scorch] amongst the bunch of monsters. [Hell's Scorch] was her newly acquired skill which released flames in all directions and dealt AoE damage. Although the damage was extremely powerful, it placed the caster in a dangerous situation since they would need to stand close in the middle of the monster swarm. Also, while the monster will take damage, the caster will also receive fire damage by the skill. It's was exactly like the Seven Fatal Wounds Palm. (1)

{Lure}!

Zhang Yang immediately pulled all the monsters away from Daffodil Daydream to remove the monsters' threat, to provide a breathing room for

Daffodil Daydream to dodge all the players' attack. If he had not, she will inevitably take damage from both sides. At that moment, she had less than 32% HP left!

{Charge}!

"Took you guys long enough to reveal yourself!" Zhang Yang slid across the battlefield and stunned one of the players around. Instantaneously, he swung his axe and triggered {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-672,322!’

‘-1,372,448!’

‘-698,072!’

...

All seven targets received more than 600,000 damage with the axe swing and were instantly killed at the spot without fail. At then, Zhang Yang's DPS was so strong, he could instantly kill any non-tank player that had not activated their Transformation skill and had equipment tiers lower or equal to Holy tier. He was wielding an Ascended tier axe, paired along with his own Book of Revelations damage boost aura, and Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} as well! It would be weird that if he could not instantly kill a Thief!

After all seven players fell, 10 more shadows jumped out and attack from behind Han Ying Xue. There was more than one wave, and the second wave of attackers had more players with them!

"Haha! I had never expected that you would use such a lame technique to divide and conquer!" Zhang Yang merely thrust his palm out and cast {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue.

"Hah! Eat my axe!" Wei Yan Er charged towards one of the attackers and struck. She had been killing only monsters for more than 3 months of in-game time. As such, Wei Yan Er had been itching to kill players for a change! When the opportunity came to her doorstep, the little girl could never been happy!

Although Wei Yan Er took the initiative, the rest of the party members had landed their AoE skill, killing the fragile Thieves in a flash.

- Seven Fatal Wounds Palm: Also known as the Seven Impairments Palm Technique. It is a punching skill which requires one to wound themselves to inflict severe damage to the opponent.

Chapter 792: The Gates of Hell

"Let's move. It's time for a change of pace," said Zhang Yang after all the assassin were killed.

"Huh? Why? Aren't we doing just fine here?" said Wei Yan Er, a little disgruntled.

"Could you just...urgh...never mind. The players that had just attacked us were obviously rather noob. Even though we can't see their profile information, they obviously belonged to some random unheard-of guild. The person who sent them to us had no intention to kill us. They wanted to inflict psychological stress on us. In fact, it would. Right now, we will always be on the alert and that will be a little distracting."

"Ahh. I see now. Quite sneaky, aren't they."

If anyone would have to kill Zhang Yang's party, they might have to engage their entire guild to do so. Unless they could bring in One Sword Stroke to fight toe to toe with Zhang Yang, there was no way they could kill him, much less when he is in his party! It would be impossible to do so, much less calling One Sword Stroke. Every professional player was extremely busy with leveling, and they would not have time to even take a bath! At most, they could hire some random players not to kill, but to stall them.

Although it will be extremely hard, if Zhang Yang were killed incidentally, that would be bad for him.

Now that everyone in the party had understood the severity of the scenario, Zhang Yang took the lead and change to a different place to grind. Everyone followed Zhang Yang on their flying mounts and made their way to a new place in no time at all. The entire mountain range was so vast that if the same group of assassins wanted to find them, it would be a matter of days.

After vigorous grinding, Zhang Yang made it to Level 199. It was just one more Level, several more days to reach the Level 200 threshold! Following closely behind him were his party members at Level 198. All and all, no

one was able to chase after Zhang Yang. Not even Sun Xin Yu, with the 50% bonus experience points Unique item. However, out of the top 10 players in the Level Ranking Board, Zhang Yang's party had only claimed 5 spots. The top three were Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and another outsider. Eventually, Zhang Yang realized that it would be impossible for the entire party to claim all the top 10 positions on the ranking board. It's like a tiny hangnail in the corner of your finger that you just could not ignore!

"Guys. It's our last spur. Besides eating and answering nature's call, no one is allowed to log out! We're aiming for the top 10 players in the world!"

"HELL YEAH!"

"But what about some me time?"

"What me time?"

"Me time. As in, me sandwiched between my babe's hoohah."

"Save it for later."

Everyone laughed and agreed to do what Zhang Yang ordered. They would not want to stop at just top 10, instead, everyone wanted to try their best and aim for the top three! Zhang Yang and his party was not the only one. In fact, all professional players from all over the world were aiming for the same position and would die trying. Everyone had been training for more than 2 months now, just a little more and they would win. Why give up now!?

As such, the current Level Ranking Board had significant changes at any time of any day. The player ranked fourth will be third during the day, and then drop to the fifth during the night. Even though Lone Desert Smoke had suffered a strong blow to the head during the scandal involving Zhang Yang and 4,000 women, the core members of Lone Desert Smoke were not greatly affected by it. In fact, everyone was giving all they had just to fight for the best! Have a look at the Level Ranking Board and everyone would agree that Lone Desert Smoke was in fact, doing extremely well. In the top 10 list, 5 of Lone Desert Smoke members were in it! Imagine the strength of the guild when players of the world, of 8 regions, of multiple

main cities and millions of guilds, yet Lone Desert Smoke managed to squeeze in 5 of their members into the top 10 list.

As the pressure increased, eventually, the fight between players had escalated to a chaotic condition. Countless of War Chariots roamed around the high leveled maps to search and destroy high-leveled players.

As such, Zhang Yang had chosen to ignore the attackers and resorted to grinding in dungeons instead. It was not that Zhang Yang and his party could not kill the buggers. It would take up too much of their time! Besides, even though the monsters in the dungeon could not provide much experience points compared to the open-world, it was, at the very least, safe and secure.

50%...80%...90%...

All that's left for Zhang Yang was just that bit more to reach Level 200.

"Noobie tank! How much left till Level 200?"

"Around 5%. I think I can reach Level 200 in three more days." Zhang Yang smiled like an idiot. They had been camping in the same dungeon for more than 10 days and was a little nauseating, killing the same old Spectre monsters over and over again!

"Urgh...When this is all over, I'll take a week off and just enjoy my life!" said Wei Yan Er with dried, bloodshot eyes. Even though she loved fighting monsters, it had been quite repulsive for even her. It was the same sensation as eating tofu alone for 3 months' straight.

Instinctively, Zhang Yang rubbed his back pocket where his wallet used to be and realized that he was in the game. He jerked at Wei Yan Er's sudden outburst and said, "Hey. Mind you. My cards are my cards! I wouldn't mind Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu slashing all they want. But you..."

"Nyehehehe." Wei Yan Er stick her tongue out and said, "Oh right! I almost forgot. Sister Yu Rou is really pregnant now, isn't she?"

"Huh? Pregnant?" Everyone was immediately triggered by the word "pregnant". Zhang Yang sighed heavily and went ahead to pull her eyelids

out as hard as he could.

"How many times must I tell you! You just drop that kind of bombshell out in public!" cried Zhang Yang.

"Owieeeee!" Wei Yan Er freed herself and ran behind Han Ying Xue.

The news of Lou Yu Rou's pregnancy was only known to those who lived in the mansion with Zhang Yang. Not even Fatty Han knew about it.

"Wah! Little Yang! Did you really knocked up a superstar!?" said Fatty Han with admiration. His eyes were practically sparkling. "Awesome! You have my respect!"

Everyone knew the scandal of Zhang Yang was fake, but they had no idea that Zhang Yang was actually sleeping with a superstar! As such, everyone could not resist but started to bombard Zhang Yang with millions of questions.

F*ck it.

Zhang Yang merely continued slaying monsters and ignored the rest of the party. "Please focus on one thing at a time. We are still racing for the top 10 level ranks!"

Lou Yu Rou had been pregnant for more than 2 months now. Although her womb had not grown too huge to be visible, the little girl would always find the chance to chat with Lou Yu Rou. She was, after all, her idol. Sometimes, when Lou Yu Rou is taking a nap at the lounge, Wei Yan Er would sneak up to her and gently cup her ears to her tummy and even talked to the little babe growing healthily inside her womb. She would talk to the baby as if the babe could really listen to her complaints about Zhang Yang. Yes. Mostly about Zhang Yang. Sometimes, Zhang Yang might believe that the little girl could be a good auntie to his children. Just sometimes. He only hoped that her dumbness would not be too contagious.

Leveling from Level 199 to Level 200 was extremely tough. At then, most of the top 10 position in the Level Ranking Board were Level 199 players, with Zhang Yang holding strong on the first place. At the second place,

was Sun Xin Yu with 78% experience points, and Hourglass Figure was at the third place with 78% experience points as well. Both of them were only 17% short of Zhang Yang. Right then, Zhang Yang was confident that if everyone goes smoothly, the champion would be him!

Most of the players in the top 10 position knew that the only difference for them was the experience points gauge percentage. Anyone can overtake anyone at anytime. While players of Levels 198 or 197 were still trying to sabotage each other's training session, the Level 199 players were investing all their time and effort to reach the top.

96%...97%...98%...99%...

Zhang Yang sighed and stopped for a rest as he finished the dungeon run. "Looks like after one more round, I'd be Level 200!"

The first to reach Level 200 will not only obtain the system reward, but also meet the Level Requirement to finally equipping Celestial tier equipment. Zhang Yang had never thought of achieving such a feat in his past life, yet right then, he was only one step away from the glorious achievement. At most, after 30 minutes or so, he would be the first players in the entire game to reach Level 200 and also the first player to put on the first Celestial tier equipment!

Everyone was excited for him. Imagine being in the same party and guild with the first player to reach the pinnacle.

"Haha! In just a few more minutes, those guys behind will be crying for their mommas!" said Fatty Han as they were almost done with the dungeon. Fatty Han had only reached Level 199 just recently, and had no hopes of being in the top 10.

"I hope that the server would suddenly breaks down at that moment..." said Endless Starlight.

"Hey! Don't jinx it!"

Zhang Yang smirked. "Three more..."

Zhang Yang felt a sudden rush in his veins. Like a sudden burst of energy that runners feel when they see the finishing line. With one last

swing, Zhang Yang killed the last monster and reached Level 200.

‘Ding! Congratulation! You have reached Level 200. Obtained 5 Attribute Points and 1 Skill Point!’

‘Ding! Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu is the first player to reach Level 200! As a result of his relentless vigor, he has acquired the skill "Gates of Hell" and 3 Luck attribute points! His name shall be carved into the Hall of Fame!’

[Gate of Hell]: Summons a Gate that leads to Hell itself. During the gate’s activation time, any target that you had kill will be sacrificed to the Demon Lord. The souls that were sacrificed will summons one Elite tier Demon of the same strength and Level to assist you in battle. The effect will only apply within 100 meters around the Gate of Hell. Souls cannot be sacrificed if the target dies too far away from the Gate. Summoned Demons will only last for as long as 2 hours and will be sent back to whence it came. Summoned Demons can only be alive around 500 meters from the Gate. The Gate of Hell can be attacked and destroyed only through selective targeting. Will not be affected by splash damage of AoE skill. Gate of Hell will only active for 10 minutes before the door closes. Cooldown: 72 hours.

Typically, skills with a long cooldown will have high potential. As such, the skill {Gate of Hell} shared the same cooldown as the Transformation skill!

Zhang Yang had the Book of Revelations which could freely used to strengthen two skills. Right then, he had {Block} and {Shield Wall} strengthened, but since the skill could be level up, he had used one of the slots on the Gate of Hell.

[Gate of Hell (Enhanced)]: Summons a Gate that leads to Hell itself. During the gate’s activation time, any target that you had kill will be sacrificed to the Demon Lord. The souls that were sacrificed will summons one Elite tier Demon of the same strength and Level to assist you in battle. The effect will only apply within 200 meters around the Gate of Hell. Souls cannot be sacrificed if the target dies too far away from the Gate.

Summoned Demons will only last for as long as 4 hours and will be sent back to whence it came. Summoned Demons can only be alive around 1,000 meters from the Gate. The Gate of Hell can be attacked and destroyed only through selective targeting. Will not be affected by splash damage of AoE skill. Gate of Hell will only active for 20 minutes before the door closes. Cooldown: 72 hours.

Despite having the same cooldown time after being strengthened, the skill had gained doubled duration and effective distance. Worthy trade deal? Hell yes!

Such a powerful skill. The skill that was granted only to the first player that reached Level 200! Fufufu. Zhang Yang laughed by himself. At then, he felt a sudden greed to claim all the remaining 9 Skill Point either from First Clear Achievements or other means. At that point in time, his powers were so strong, how could he not become the man that dominates the entire server?!

As such, when that day comes, the entire server might treat him as a boss to kill!

Even though Sun Xin Yu had only a few experience points lesser than Zhang Yang, she was able to be the second player to reach Level 200 only after 7 to 8 days later. As a reward, she had obtained the skill [Frost Spike] and 2 Luck Attribute Points.

[Frost Spike]: Encases you in a barrier of icy spikes. All targets that attack you will have a 50% chance of being frozen in ice for 3 seconds. During the Frozen state, the targets will be rendered stationary and cannot engage in any actions. After breaking free from the Frozen state, the targets will suffer from Frost Bite and will have 50% reduce movement speed for the next 10 seconds. Frost Spike had 20 counts. Each successful trigger will consume one count. The barrier will last for 10 minutes or until all trigger counts are used. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

The skill might not be as powerful as {Gate of Hell} but it had a short cooldown and long active time. It was the perfect PvP arena counter skill! It will be exceptionally good during lvl fights! 20 counts...not even Zhang

Yang could handle that much...who else could?

Naturally, Invincibility and Mobility Potion can help to reduce the trigger count for a bit! That was only a few, not all! It would be impossible for anyone to completely waste all 20 trigger counts in the active duration of the potion.

Sun Xin Yu was extremely lucky to have that PvP counter skill, for she is the ultimate Assassin. A natural born killer!

Chapter 793: Entering the Holy City

After getting the first two ranks, Lone Desert Smoke had expanded the rest of their miracle powers. The third person to reached Level 200 was a player named Heart of Destruction. His skill reward was called {Rocky Shield} and a Luck Attribute point. The third place was the last ranking that will receive Luck attribute rewards. There on out, the only reward for the fourth until the tenth ranking will only receive skill points.

Even though the system did not display the skill {Rocky Shield}, everyone could have easily guessed the skill was most likely a defensive skill. If not, then the system or the skill designer would be trolling.

The fourth person to reached Level 200 was Hourglass Figure, followed by God's Left Hand as the fifth. Clearly, players with S class Inheritance had the upper advantage. The sixth was Wei Yan Er and her skill reward was called {Melodies of War}.

The skill was unique in nature as it had a separate U.I. Unlike most channeling skills, this is the true skill that requires channeling. One must be able to finish chanting the spell verse in order to unleash the skill. Furthermore, if there is a mistake in the lyrics, the skill will not activate. One must start again from the beginning. Additionally, the player must not pause in between the lyrics for more than 3 seconds, or else the skill will be prompted as a failure. Matching with its incredible difficulty to conjure, the destructive power of the skill was potent.

[Melodies of War]: Chants the lyrics of Death itself. Upon a successful conjuring, the skill cannot be blocked and will directly damage all targets within 100 meters for 300,000 damage. The damage dealt will increase with the Level of the player. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

Again, unlike other channeling skills, this skill does not have a casting animation. It all depended on the player's singing speed. The poor little tone-deaf girl spent 30 minutes just to finish reciting the lyrics during her first conjuring. After more failures, she had forced herself and managed to memorize all of the lyrics. Once she had gotten used to the lyrics, her

casting speed had increased to only 30 seconds. The skill only had a 30-second cooldown. It would not make sense for the developers to create a skill that has casting time longer than its cooldown. Furthermore, the skill could be cast while the caster is using other skills. Only the lyrics count.

Following closely after Wei Yan Er was Han Ying Xue. She was the seventh player to reach Level 200 and obtained the skill {Lunar's Imprisonment}.

[Lunar's Imprisonment]: Summons the moon and calls down its light. Entraps all targets that are exposed to the light. Unable to move for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

The skill was an extremely powerful mass crowd control skill. The light beams that are called down would have a large radius of 30 meters in diameter. It was enough to trap everyone within the vicinity that is attacking her.

After Han Ying Xue was Dusk Phoenix as the eighth place, followed by Captain America as the ninth. The last position was claimed by Daffodil Daydream, and she got the skill {True Counter}.

[True Counter (Passive)]: When your HP reaches 20% or below, every attack that lands on you will grant you a 5 second invulnerability. Increases your damage by 50% for 5 seconds. Effect will trigger once every 60 seconds.

When the system notifies all the players of Daffodil Daydream's achievement, the race ended promptly. While most of the players were greatly disappointed, many were glad that the fierce competition had finally ended. They could finally grind their levels in peace without facing sudden ambushes from random players.

Even though Hundred Shots and the rest of the party member that had not managed to reach Level 200 and were rather sad, they were still happy that most of the top 10 ranks were filled by their own family. As such, when the race was over, everyone returned to the city and made their way elsewhere to grind to Level 200 in peace. Despite their fatigue, they had chosen to continue their grinding till Level 200, for their Celestial tier

equipment were waiting for them!

Once Zhang Yang returned to the city, the first thing he did was to equip his God Killer War Greaves. Although it was only one of an incomplete Celestial tier set, it had boosted Zhang Yang stats by a notch.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 200

HP: 2,661,730 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 19,530

Damage Absorption: 20,421

Strength: 30,702

Critical Strike Rate: 22%

Lucky Strike Rate: 3.2%

Melee Attack: 345,212 – 401,372

2 million basic HP and 100 million HP during his God of War Transformation state would clearly make Zhang Yang a boss type entity!

As expected of the Celestial tier equips, just one pair greaves would grant him such a boost. Imagine if Zhang Yang obtained a shield instead, his HP and Defense would have skyrocketed to the moon! No players could reach that height!

At then, even though players that reached Level 200 could enter the Holy City, there were fierce battles amongst players to grab the limited slots for their shop lots. Hence, after having grinding for such a long time, Zhang Yang wanted everyone to take a break from the game to have some R&R. As such, Zhang Yang announced to the party to rest for 1 week and come back after that.

Zhang Yang brought everyone in the mansion for an around the world trip. After everyone had their fun, Zhang Yang brought Lou Yu Rou to the hospital for her checkup. Sadly, due to her massive popularity, she was easily recognized. It was all because of the havoc of the paparazzi and the

mass media that had caused her name to be mentioned on every possible media channel in China. Hence, those that had no idea of her existence then were enlightened about it. Despite wearing centimeters thick of makeup on her, it had proved to be a complete failure when someone shouted her name the moment Luo Yu Rou had entered the hospital.

As such, when her name was known and her face was captured on film, the reason why Luo Yu Rou had come to the hospital was concluded extremely fast. The news about the female superstar had been pregnant for more than 4 months had spread faster any known news throughout entire China. If Zhang Yang pays attention, he could hear the sound of hearts breaking that belonged to millions of poor men.

As such, while most men were weeping tragically, some were intrigued at the right question. Who was the father of the baby in her belly? Ever since the scandal involving Luo Yu Rou and the mysterious man, she had been off the grid for more than 4 months. Hence, when such a bombshell was dropped out of the blue, the mass media was rattled again.

At first, Zhang Yang had no idea how famous the sexy superstar was until he returned home and turned on the TV. His stunned reaction had made Luo Yu Rou roll her eyes. "Stupid fool. Now do you know how much have you taken advantage of me?"

For Luo Yu Rou, love was not something that she had paid attention to. For her, the dream of achieving fame through the acting world far exceed everything she needs. It's a want that she would die to own. Hence, her unrelenting spirit to achieve her goals had Zhang Yang be on her good side. For example, to set up the studio, it required a large sum of cash, of which, Luo Yu Rou had not directly asked from Zhang Yang. Instead, she would play her role as his wife and let him decide how much would he "sponsor". Deep down, she would never want to be his wife or his lover. Her relationship with Zhang Yang was purely monetary and materialistic. While she would allow Zhang Yang to lay in bed with her, she would never allow herself to develop any feelings for the man.

Zhang Yang had done his homework through various private investigator reports on her upbringing. Hence, he knew all about there is

to know of Luo Yu Rou. In a way, he knew how to get things done around her.

Seven days of relaxing vacation later, everyone returned to the game and placed their focus on the Holy City of Anthylor.

This Holy City does not have any Level Requirement to enter. However, if one wishes to bind their Teleportation Scroll to the city, they would have to be Level 200. Although the Holy City does not have Teleportation Point to other major cities, it was considered as a hub since there were Black Smith, Alchemist, Bank, Auction House, and other various NPC interactable shop. Despite the fact that news about Auction Houses, or Banks do not share the same channel as the other cities, players will soon be reaching past the Level 200 threshold and swarm the Holy City. Eventually, the city will become the ninth major city for all regions. Zhang Yang predicted that soon, all Auction and other business in the original major cities will die down since all players will start to treat Anthylor as the main gathering spot. The Holy City of Anthylor will become the central convergence for all players from all around the world.

At the same time, while Anthylor will gain popularity, Territory will lose theirs. The days where Zhang Yang could earn as much as 100 million gold coins a day would end soon enough. There will not be a way for Zhang Yang to earn such a number again since there were no more Territories for players to conquer. As mentioned in the official site, any map beyond Level 200 will not have Territories!

Still, that would require 50% of the entire world to reach Level 200. That would take up to several years! In Zhang Yang previous life, 'God's Miracle' had been online for more than 5 years. At then, he was only Level 179! It would take 9 years for all players to reach Level 200 and above! Still, that has not factored in the various patches in the future where the developers will reduce the experience points required for players to gain Levels.

However, those would be events that would take a few years to occur. At then, 'God's Miracle' had only been online for 3 and a half years. It would be 1 and a half years before the game reaches the 5 years point. Zhang

Yang could still earn from the Teleportation fees for more than 2 to 3 years.

Since Territory will lose its customers, the importance of having a "shop lot" in the Holy City would be mortal.

Zhang Yang and party were not the first players to enter the Holy City. Since they had taken a week off the game, players that had reached Level 200 had totaled up to 45. Most of them had entered the Holy City and had started the quest line to get the Land Lease of the City itself!

In Zhang Yang previous life, the upper limit of the average player's Level was Level 204. Based on that, with Zhang Yang's "guidance", he had hastened the progress of the game by more than a year. At that point, of the eight Shopping District in the Holy City, only two had ownership. One belonged to the North Americans, and the other to Europe.

Zhang Yang only knew that the Land Lease of the North America Shopping District was obtained from the map called the Dark Ghastly Canyon. That was the rough idea of it, but the exact location was unknown. Still, it was better than having no clue to start searching. If Zhang Yang manages a Land Lease in the Holy City, he would bet that others will find one as well. It would not be the same as his previous life where only two out of the eight Shopping Districts has an owner.

After everyone bound their Teleportation Scroll to the Teleportation point of Anthylor Holy City, Zhang Yang brought everyone to the aforementioned canyon.

The Dark Ghastly Canyon was situated deep in the map of Kanjar. It was a Level 210 – Level 240 map with strong but normal monsters. It was also the same map where the Forgotten King, Smaug had ran off to. Long ago, Zhang Yang had wanted to pay a visit to the old king to ask for his assistance in slaying the Celestial tier boss. However, since he was only level 170 then, he was forced to turn back.

At then, everyone had already reached Level 200. With the need to fear of the Level Suppression system interfering with their damage input and output, the team faced off the Level 220 monsters will ease. While others

might think that it was impossible to even come close to the monsters, Zhang Yang's party could, due to the fact that everyone had Celestial tier equipment on them!

Endless Starlight was exceptionally strong. Although he may not have a set equipment, he did own two Celestial tier equipment! Before anyone could get the second set equipment, having two regular Celestial tier equipment was profoundly better than having only one Celestial tier set equipment!

After several hours of flying, the party arrived at the depths of the Dark Ghastly Canyon. There, monsters that roamed around were Minotaurs. They had 3-meter tall bodies, the heads of bulls and the bodies of humanoid men. Many of the Minotaurs around the map had their horns broken. Clearly, someone had been chopping them off. That, or the Minotaurs were brute species who loved to fight each other just for sports.

Chapter 794: The Qualifications

Luckily, all of the Minotaurs were friendlies.

When Zhang Yang and everyone else landed on the ground, one of the Minotaurs, called [Raydosa the Warmonger] walked up to them and stabbed a huge stone pillar that he carried on his back into the ground. He flexed his muscles to the group and yelled. "What are you little itsy-bitsy things doing around here?"

Zhang Yang saluted the beast and smiled. "O strong one. We wish to enter the Canyon. Could you allow us to pass in peace?"

"Did my ears heard you wrong? You bunch of scrawny little insects wish to enter the Canyon? Woe be me then! The Canyon does not welcome the weak. Run along and go back to your mommies." Raydosa crossed his arms, showing no intention to allow the group to pass. "Wait a minute. I see that you have quite the experience in war. You don't have to tell me. I can smell the lingering blood on your blades. I'll grant you entrance to the Canyon, only if you can defeat me!"

'Ding! Raydosa has a quest for you: Qualifications to Enter the Canyon. Will you accept it?'

Everyone nodded and accepted the quest.

[Qualifications to Enter the Canyon] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Raydose the Warmonger wants to challenge you to a fight. You must prove your strength and defeat the Minotaur in order to gain the right to enter the canyon. Be advised. Only one player may challenge Raydosa at a time. Any attacks, or healing performed on the challenging player will be considered as foul play. Note that Minotaurs hates foul play.

Progress: Defeat Raydosa the Warmonger 0/1

"Alright. Who wants to have a go first?"

"Oh! Me! Me! Me!" cried the little girl as she jumped to Raydosa without waiting. "Hey! Big guy! I'll fight you!"

Raydosa squatted down and prodded Wei Yan Er's face with his massive finger and said, "You?! A girl?!"

"I'M NOT A GIRL! I'M A WOMAN!"

"Very well. You may be a little girl, but I will no show mercy. Come at me!"

The battle started and Raydosa's name tag turned red. All his properties and stats were revealed.

[Raydosa the Warmonger] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 215

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 20,900

Melee Attack: 87,665 – 147,665

Skills:

[War Veteran]: Immune to all Status Effect.

[Smash]: Deals 100% Melee Physical attack on a target.

[Thunder Strike]: Stomps the ground and unleashes a powerful wave of thunder that spreads out to 3 meters around. Deals 50,000 physical damage and reduces 50% movement speed of target within the effective range. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Berserker]: Can only be triggered during special conditions. The likes of which you will never be able to witness.

Note: Raydosa is a warrior of the Dark Ghastly Canyon. Due to his love for brawling, he had hurt his own Minotaurs brethren and was punished to being a Guardian at the entrance of the Canyon.

"That's some strong attack power..."

Despite the fact that the monster had strong attack power, it was nothing compared to their own. In fact, they could easily defeat him. Wei Yan Er muttered disgruntledly, fearing that she might not defeat him. However, she remained unfazed. With quick reflexes, she summoned the

Gold tier Servant and rode on her Crimson Fire Crow. With Zhang Yang's aura effect stacking on the HP boost provided by the battle mount, Wei Yan Er had over 2,300,000 HP by then. It was far from what the monster had, but it was nothing for Wei Yan Er. On the other hand, many would want to have their kind of HP. Imagine Zhang Yang having 100 million HP, he would be unstoppable!

Additionally, she had also summoned her Battle Companion to assist her. The quest description did specifically mention that help from other players was forbidden. It did not mention anything about having servants, battle companion, or even battle mounts. Though, it was not clear on whether or not she could use the War Chariot. A War Chariot's strongest feature was to increase the maximum HP and provide an effect to distribute incoming damage equally to all riders. If everyone in the party hopped onto the War Chariot, she would have the cumulative HP of over 10,000,000. However, the system would not have the player to cheat in such a way. Even though it was not tested, the little girl did not want to rely on others. Instead, with her array of assistants, she fought Raydosa on her own.

Needless to say, 100 million HP is a large number. Although his attack was strong, it was not as strong as a professional player, although such a long HP bar would even the playing ground. In a way, the boss could defeat the player before the player could. Hence, for 99% of all players in the world, Raydosa was an obstacle that most of them could never surpass.

The battle proceeds as per the norm. Being affected by the aggro system, Raydosa's had his target locked on Wei Yan Er. However, in between the two Warmongers, Wei Yan Er had her servant stand there to block Raydosa from attacks directly targeted at her. As such, the servant was able to attack Raydosa without the fear of being destroyed. After Wei Yan Er had unleashed all her skills, she then jumped to Raydosa to have a proper exchange of blows. Despite having to take some damage in return, Wei Yan Er's damage was so destructive that it completely complimented the HP lost. On the other hand, while the battle companion or the servant

had taken over the aggro, Wei Yan Er had stopped to chant the skill {Melodies of War}. Although the skill's greatest power was multi-targeting, it was still an AoE skill. It had allowed Wei Yan Er to find a corner and chant safely whilst her battle companion takes some damage for her.

After several days of training, Wei Yan Er was able to shorten the reciting duration down to only 37 seconds. Sadly, she was still considered a failure since the skill cooldown was only 30 seconds! Nevertheless, it was a worthy trade-off. The Servant did its job well, allowing Wei Yan Er to trade a small bit of damage by unleashing her skill. 10 minutes later, the battle had ended with Wei Yan Er as the winner. Raydosa was not killed. Since it was a brawl requested by the NPC, it will be impossible to kill him even if you had deal more than enough damage. The system will always leave 1 HP on the NPC.

"Not bad, little girl! You might be tiny but you sure did pack a punch! This old bull respects that!" Raydosa may be a Warmonger, but he was a man true to honor and dignity. Since he had lost the fight, the Minotaur had allowed Wei Yan Er to walk past the gates after giving her a thumbs up the size of her head.

Han Ying Xue was the next player to step into the ring. She had it easier than Wei Yan Er. All she had to do was to summon out the big pervert and have him tank the boss. She would then ride on her battle mount and heal Messick whilst casting DoT skills on the Minotaur. Although the process of defeating him was slow and boring, she did defeat him in just 10 minutes.

After losing to two females in a row, Raydosa sulked badly and pointed his thick fingers towards Fatty Han. "You're next!"

In the end, he made a bad call. Despite being a sluggish fighter, Fatty Han still the Legendary Beast as his pet! After reaching Level 200, the Phoenix had gained a power boost and had reached the ranks of an Ascended tier beast. Just by activating the Phoenix's Transformation skill, Fatty Han had defeated Raydosa in less than 8 minutes.

The next person to go into the ring was Lost Dream. Having lost three matches in a row, the beast had gained a powerful urge of revenge and laid everything he had on Lost Dream. Assassins were best at stealth killing. Hence, when facing a mano-e-mano style fight, he failed badly at fighting Raydosa. Coupled with the passive skill of being immune to all kinds of Status Effect, Lost Deam had no chance at all to stun and stab him! He also had the lowest Defense in the party! In just a few exchanges, Lost Dream was killed. When NPCs are defeated, they would not die, but a player would. Even though Lost Dream did not lose any experience points, he did suffered from 10% durability damage on all of his equipment.

Lost Dream was the first person to lost to Raydosa. Greatly saddened by that fact, after he was revived by Han Ying Xue, he went quiet and sulk at a corner. Truth be told, if Lost Dream had used his Transformation skill, he could have easily defeated Raydosa without difficulties. However, the man had made the right choice by reserving the Transformation skill on simply just an Elite tier NPC. Luckily, even though you lose the match, you could still challenge Raydosa again!

The 1v1 battle continued on smoothly. Hundred Shots was able to completely defeat the Minotaur by activating the Red Dragon Transformation skill. Fantasy Sweetheart was able to defeat Raydosa by following the same technique used by Han Ying Xue. Endless Starlight had no trouble at defeating Raydosa for he owned two Celestial tier equipment. Even though he could not ditch out much damage as a tank, he was able to defeat the boss after 20 minutes of exchange. Sun Xin Yu was the Queen. With her S class Shadow Dancer Inheritance, she was able to equip two one-handed weapons and gained the battle prowess of a Bandit despite being an Assassin. She defeated Raydosa after several moves. She had to use her accessory, skills with a long cooldown, whilst her battle companion dealt additional damage. It had only taken her 6 minutes to defeat Raydosa! When the boss was defeated, she had over 140,000 HP left!

The next person who lost the fight was Daffodil Daydream. Spellcasters are like Hunters who required a certain range to allow them to cast their

spells uninterrupted. Raydosa's constitution had made her restless and was unable to create any breathing space for her to attack. Even though her passive skill, {True Counter} was strong, a 1-minute cooldown was just too long in between activations.

The last player to have a go was Zhang Yang. Without a doubt, with Phoenix, Felice, and his own crazy 750,000 DPS, he had defeated Raydosa in less than 3 minutes. At then, Felice had not broken her third seal yet she was already at the level of an Ascended tier. He was, by far, the player that had ended the fight with the least effort.

After several trials of re-challenges, Zhang Yang had discovered a loophole for Daffodil Daydream and Lost Dream to win the fight. Assistance during a fight was forbidden but if skills were cast on players before the fight begins does not violet the rules! It was discovered when players were able to receive the aura effect of other players during the fight. Hence, Han Ying Xue had cast {Rise Anew}, while Zhang Yang cast {Surrogacy} to increase the survivability of both players. As such, after the discovery of the loophole, both Daffodil Daydream and Lost Dream were able to defeat the boss easily on the second attempt. Everyone cheered while Raydosa sulked disgruntledly as he granted permission for everyone in the party to enter the Dark Ghastly Canyon.

The Canyon was shaped just like any other canyon. There were two great mountains with a deep river flowing in between. Due to the great height of the two mountains, sunlight was totally blotted out and a dark shadow loomed over the canyon, hence the name. However, despite the frigid name, the place was not as dark as it sounds. Flora and fauna flourished, with many Minotaurs happily living in the dark place. Clearly, the Minotaurs were not as savage as Raydosa had implied. When Zhang Yang's party entered the canyon, there was a proper community living there, with buildings and proper structures. There were only about 1,000 and more Minotaurs there. All NPCs that resided there were all friendlies with many yellow question marks on their heads. With such many counts of quest available for them to take, Zhang Yang had no idea which one will be the quest that leads to the Land Lease. Hence, after debating for a

while, Zhang Yang had tasked everyone to find the NPC with the highest possibility of having the quest. They nodded and split apart, traveling to all corners of the small canyon.

Chapter 795: Marcus the Old Gambler

There were tons of NPCs that had quests for players to accept. Sadly, most of them were scraps. They were either lame quests that involved killing monsters, running errands, completing a series of item hunting, all the while rewards were next to worthless. None of them were even remotely related to that of the Land Lease. Most of all, due to the fact that there were literally tons of quest available, no one would have any clue to which one would actually lead to the quests that gives the Land Lease.

After spending some time searching about, the little girl finally called out to Zhang Yang with some good news. "Noobie tank! You better thank me later. I think I've found a good quest!" said Wei Yan Er as she posted the quest description on the party channel.

[Hunting the Silvery Scale Eel King] (Difficulty Level: A)

Description: The old gambler has placed a bet with you to hunt the Silvery Scale Eel King. If you have the guts, go to the Waving Sand Island in the west of the Death Mist Sea.

Progress: Head of the Silvery Scale Eel King 0/1

Reward: Marcus's Golden Tooth

Zhang Yang cringed a little when he saw the quest reward. No wonder he was called the old gambler. He would even put out his own golden tooth as a stake for the bet. It's not like he could use the tooth for anything besides selling it!

However, an A-level difficulty quest was the eye catcher. Perhaps, the boss that they were asked to slay was at least a Holy tier boss.

Since the quest was not sharable, and the reward was extremely useless to them, everyone else had gone straight to the boss location instead of finding the NPC. Once they left the valley, everyone summoned out their battle mounts and followed Zhang Yang towards the Death Mist Sea.

The place they were heading to, was towards the Northern region of the canyon, behind the huge mountain where the land and the sea meets.

Although the entire sea was huge, they had no need to spread out deep to search for the boss. Dark, shadowy mist crawls all around the surface of the water. The creepiness of the sea was the source of its name. Without further delay, Zhang Yang and the party arrived at their destination and found the beach. Zhang Yang informed everyone that the boss will most likely be under the waters. Hence, they would have to enter the waters to search. Sadly, only Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang had underwater mounts. The search for the boss was tasked to them.

Han Ying Xue, famed for only two things, her magnificent badahonkadongs and her broken sense of directions. The poor woman would get lost even when on land. Give her a three-dimensional space to travel and she would be lost faster than Zhang Yang killing a normal tier monster. However, as broken as her direction may seem, she was the embodiment of Luck itself. While she was finding her way back to land, she had incidentally stumbled upon a small crack amongst the coral reef and found the Silvery Scale Eel King, sleeping soundly in the dark crack.

While no one was around, Zhang Yang gave Han Ying Xue a deep kiss underwater and rose to the shore to get everyone ready for the boss fight. Some of the members wondered why the two of them had taken so long so resurface but dropped the topic immediately. They took a [Underwater Breathing Potion] and started to swim downward towards the location of the boss.

[Silvery Scale Eel King] (Holy, Beast)

Level: 220

HP: 2,200,000,000

Defense: 21,710

Melee Attack: 186,631 – 246,631

Skills:

[Electric Shock]: Sends out electric current throughout its body and deals 200,000 Natural damage to all targets within 40 meters.

[Iron Fangs]: Bites down a target and deal 100% Melee Physical attack.

Note: A dominant beast in the ocean. No other underwater being could even get close to it, fearing that they would be fried.

"Pfft. Nothing but an easy Holy tier boss. Let's go, ladies and gentleman!"

Even though not everyone could mount on their battle mount in the waters, the boss was just a Holy tier boss with over 2 billion HP. It's a target that the party found easy to defeat, especially since it has no special skills or effects going on around. Hence, in less than 20 minutes, the boss was decapitated. The remains of its mangled body floated upwards to the surface.

Everyone received over 200 million HP each. Although the numbers alone were huge, it was only able to make a tiny blip in their experience bar. Ever since they had reached Level 200, the experience points required to gain another Level had increased exponentially.

As expected, Holy tier bosses were nothing more than fillers in the Level 180 – Level 210 maps. The items they dropped would either be common or at most, rare. Equipment from the boss drops would not have the "perfect" stats nor Level Requirement reduction Special. Even in the Level 210 – Level 240 maps, the result would be the same. Hence, no one paid much attention to the equipment after Wei Yan Er had looted them all.

"WOAH! Have a look at this! This equipment has a 30 Level reduction!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"Huh?" Everyone, including Zhang Yang, stopped.

[Silvery Scale Cape] (Holy, Cape)

Vitality: +5134

Strength: +1235

Dexterity: +535

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 10,260.

Equip: Absorbs 1,051 damage on attack.

Use: Increases 20,000 Defense for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 220

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Even though the cape was not strong, its strength was more plainly towards defensive stance. The best was as said by Wei Yan Er, it did have the 30 Levels reduction special.

"Could the system be displaying the wrong number?"

"Is it bugged?"

"Wouldn't be as simple as a bug."

"Perhaps the developers forgot to delete the last line of coding. That happens when you're lazy in retyping the codes. Eventually, you'll resort to just CTRL C and CTRL V every line. Trust me. I know this."

Zhang Yang was not paying attention to the party members squabbling. He was busy thinking, why would a cape dropped by a Holy tier boss have such an effect embedded in it. Only the final boss of the map would have such an effect. The Eel King was so easy to be defeated that it could not be the map's strongest boss. It would not make sense even if the entire party had achieved the strength of that level.

"My guess is the escalation of Level. After Level 200, the experience points needed to gain a level will be harder than ever. Hence, as a compensation to the fresh blood, the developers had decided to drop items with such an effect. Think about it. Level 220 would take us a whole year of grinding!" said Zhang Yang. That would be the most logical answer if the system was behaving as it should.

Then again, it was still a good treat for all players. The item was considered to be in the trash tier. After the given special effect, the item would be treated like a common item instead of trash. If the cape had stats that leaned either to full attack or full defense, it would be treated differently despite its tier. All in all, it was better to loot one item instead of going home empty-handed. After all, Holy tier bosses spawned like Truffles.

Since the cape had defensive stats and a little Dexterity, the cape was then "thrown" to Zhang Yang. It was all good for him since it was almost time for him to discard the older Ethereal tier cape that he had. Sadly, the Ethereal tier cape was extremely strong. It had stats that suited both attacking and defending. Hence, after changing into the new cape, Zhang Yang had gained a boost in HP and damage absorption but lost a little attacking power.

Even though the boss had dropped a surprising equipment, the quantity was just too sparse. There was only one Holy tier equipment and two Ethereal tier equipment, both with the same 30 Level reduction special effect. When you receive a 100 dollar bill, you would not want to care about the next 5 dollar prize. The Ethereal tier equipment were also "thrown" to Zhang Yang for him to sell in the Little Merchandize Shop.

Zhang Yang took the head of the Eel King and told everyone to go back to the canyon to complete the quest. Unlike the others, Zhang Yang an interest in the quest and had decided to find the NPC to submit the quest.

"Oh my lord! What is that!?" cried the greenish little goblin after Zhang Yang had tossed the severed head of the Eel King to his feet. "You actually killed the Silvery Scale Eel King?! Unbelievable!"

[Harcus, the Old Gambler] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 230

HP: 302,670

Note: Once a wealthy goblin during his prime. After getting addicted to the world of gambling, the sharp-minded goblin had misplaced his wisdom in the underground world and lost all his fortune. Luckily, he had a means of income by collecting rental from a property in the Holy City of Anthylor.

Hah! Zhang Yang smirked. The old goblin had a property and it was in the Holy City itself! There was a chance that a Land Lease is in his possession!

"Old Gambler. Gotta to pay up!" said Wei Yan Er happily.

Being an old goblin, Marcus had all the bad traits of a typical goblin. However, the goblin placed his pride as a gambler and had punched his face hard in order to break the golden tooth from his gums. Winching in pain and regret, the old goblin wiped the bloody tooth and gave to Wei Yan Er.

Despite her love for shiny golden things, Wei Yan Er chose not to pick the tooth from his old wrinkled hands.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Old goblin, would you want to have another bet with me? To get that golden tooth back?"

Marcus twitched a little and Zhang Yang said the word "bet". Almost instantly, he turned to Zhang Yang and cried. "Laddie, you're 100 years too early to be gambling with me! So, what are we betting about?"

Zhang Yang stumped for a while since he had no idea what to do next. The old goblin rubbed his unkempt beard and said, "I have an idea. If you can get me the Claws of the Hybrid Beast King, I will give you this pair of boots. It's a masterpiece crafted by the great Dwarven Clobber, Brian Wildhammer!"

'Ding! Marcus the Old Gambler has a quest for you: Claw of the Hybrid Beast King. Will you accept it?'

Even though Zhang Yang had not completed the quest for the Eel King, he had managed to acquire the quest prompt. A similar event occurred to Wei Yan Er as well. Perhaps, it was one of the ways of unlocking consecutive quests.

The funny thing is, when the old goblin had lost his golden tooth, the next item he could cough out was his worn-out boots.

[Claw of the Hybrid Beast King] (Difficulty Level: A)

Description: The old gambler has wager another bet with you. All you have to do to win the bet is to hunt for it in the Crumbling Rock Canyon.

Progress: Claw of the Hybrid Beast King 0/1

Quest Reward: Old Gambler Marcus's Old Boots.

After the two took the quest, Zhang Yang summoned everyone and headed towards the Crumbling Rock Canyon. Before the Eel King, none of them would even want to fight a Holy tier boss. However, after the Eel King's surprise equipment drop, they had tagged along, hoping to score something as valuable.

The Crumbling Rock Canyon was just an extension of the same mountain range that extended from the North East of the Dark Ghastly Canyon. Hence, the party had only taken close to 3 hours to get there. Unlike the dark, shadowy canyon, the Crumbling Rock Canyon was brighter, yet everywhere the light touched seemed to be old and, as the name implied, crumbling. There were rocks that were so brittle that they could be seen crumbling on their own. There were weird man-made pillars all around the canyon that were breaking down. As such, the towering pillars could fall down anytime which would only endanger everyone. Zhang Yang led everyone to land and walked their way towards the depths of the Canyon.

Just as they entered the mysterious place, they heard a loud growl. A large beast came out behind the crumbling rocks. It had a huge head of a monkey, the neck of a swan, the body of a tiger, the tail of a scorpion, and legs that could not be recognized. It was an entire being that was out of this world!

[Ancient Hybrid Beast] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 215

HP: 107,500,000

Defense: 13,190

Melee Attack: 87,665 – 147, 665

Skills:

[Pounce]: Leaps forward and tackles a target. Stuns a target for 3 seconds. Range: 3 – 10 meters.

[Drag]: Target with the highest aggro value cannot leave its attacking range. When the targets leave, the beast will drag the target back to its

attacking range using the powers of the Ancient Beings.

[Parasitic Laying]: Injects an egg into the target. 10 seconds later, a Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will spawn out of the target and absorbs 10% of the target's HP. (Cannot exceed 200,000). Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will assist the Ancient Hybrid Beast in battle.

[Passing On]: Before death, the Ancient Hybrid Beast will transfer all powers that it owns to a nearby Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast. Transfer of power will last for 10 seconds and cannot be interrupted. Kill the Ancient Hybrid Beast to stop the transfer of the Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will be grown immediately into a fully grown Ancient Hybrid Beast. Condition: Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast must be present around the Ancient Hybrid Beast.

Note: The Ancient Hybrid Beast is a powerful Hybrid created from the ancient times when Gods roamed the earth. It has potent godly powers.

Chapter 796: The Ancient Hybrid Beast King

When the beast first showed its presence in the field, the first thing it did was to pounce on Zhang Yang. The powerful blow knocked Zhang Yang off his feet and sat stunned on the ground for 3 seconds.

Without wasting any time, the Ancient Hybrid turned sideways and stabbed Zhang Yang with his scorpion tail. A large white shell egg as large as a football was implanted in his chest cavity.

Without a doubt, everyone had first witnessed the activation animation for the skill [Parasitic Laying].

Zhang Yang had first assumed that such a skill would not be used until the boss is about to die. Little did he knew that the very first skill it was going to use would be [Parasitic Laying].

"Haha! Noobie tank! You're about to be a mother!" Wei Yan Er laughed till she dropped on the floor.

Zhang Yang got back up immediately after dispelling the stun effect with {Warrior's Will}. Everyone else had not yet attacked since it was up to Zhang Yang to deal the first few hits in order to generate enough aggro. Only after Zhang Yang had madly attacked the boss, the party followed in and laid down their skills. At then, such a monster with only 20,000,000 HP would take the entire party 10 seconds to kill.

Just as the party had only started to call down the rain, the egg implanted inside Zhang Yang had hatched. A disgusting looking beast, the size of a German Shepard crawled out from Zhang Yang's butt. It dropped down on the floor, covered in blood, and Zhang Yang lost 200,000 HP instantly.

[Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 210

HP: 277,030

Defense: 8,440

Melee Attack: 52,324 – 72,324

"Ooooh, dayum son. You got your buttohole spread open by a monster!" cried Fatty Han as he laughed.

"Our poor guild master. May it be remembered that it was this day when he had his buttohole spread wide open," said Endless Starlight as he followed Fatty Han to teased Zhang Yang.

"F*cking hurts man!" said Zhang Yang as he rubbed his bottom.

Just as Fatty Han was laughing out loud, the scorpion tail whistled through the air and stabbed Fatty Han in his chest, implanting an egg.

"OH MY GOD! I'M NEXT! HOLY CRAP!" Fatty Han shrieked in horror as he clutched his buttohole tight.

"Kill it! Kill it quick!" cried Fatty Han. Everyone did not need to wait for him to say to do what he wanted. They understood that the monster's {Parasitic Laying} was randomly targeting players. Although being reverse sodomized by a monster would not cause any harm, the sensation of it will never be pleasant! The girls, especially Han Ying Xue had retreated to the rear, hoping that the monster would not target them.

After 10 seconds, Fatty Han cried painfully. "It's coming! I'm coming! It's coming! WOOOOAHHHHHHHHHH!"

With a loud splash, Fatty Han had crapped out another Juvenile Hybrid beast and lost 200,000 HP.

The monster's egg-laying skill had a cooldown time of only 10 seconds. When a new Juvenile monster had hatched out, the "mother" monster will find the next target and attack. After 40 seconds, there were 5 monsters in the field, 4 of which were the Juvenile monsters. The main "mother" had only over 10% HP left.

Since the monster was about to die, Zhang Yang had predicted that it will start using its {Passing On} skill. However, since the Juvenile monsters had only 200,000 HP, Zhang Yang's {Horizontal Sweep} and Wei Yan Er's

{Tornado Cleave} killed them all easily. By then, the "mother" monster had no Juvenile targets to use {Passing On} and had died after 50 seconds.

"Phew...What a disgusting monster!"

"I concur." Said Sun Xin Yu after being quiet for god knows how long.

Sadly, the Ancient Hybrid Beast was all over the Canyon. As the party proceeded to venture deeper into the canyon, everyone in the party had a chance of being "incubated" by the monster. The guys started doing whatever they could to protect the girls!

There's a saying, if you can't stop something, why resist it? After being poked many times, everyone soon felt numb to the monster's "laying" and convert their rage into killing them all as fast as they could.

Amongst the party members, perhaps, only Wei Yan Er and Fatty Han were the only two who were screaming all the way. No sooner after laying more than a hundred "babies", the party had finally arrived at the boss. It was a huge, 10 meter-tall, gigantic Ancient Hybrid Beast King.

[Ancient Hybrid Beast King] (Holy, Beast)

Level: 225

HP: 2,250,000,000

Defense: 21,710

Melee Attack: 176,701 – 256,710

Skills:

[Parasitic Laying]: Injects an egg into the target. 10 seconds later, a Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will spawn out of the target and absorb 10% of the target's HP. (Cannot exceed 200,000). Juvenile Ancient Hybrid Beast will assist the Ancient Hybrid Beast in battle.

[Strengthen]: Increases all Ancient Hybrid Beasts' attack by 100%. Lasts for 10 minutes. Stackable.

[Thunder Strike]: Stomps the ground and deals 200,000 physical damage to all targets within 30 meters. Reduces 50% movement speed of

all targets. Lasts for 5 seconds.

"If the boss lays an egg every 10 seconds, we would not be able to defeat the boss with just the 10 of us," said Hundred Shots after analyzing the boss' skill.

Unlike the normal monsters they had fought in the canyon, the boss' spawns Elite tier monsters with over 100,000,000 HP. That was not something that they could kill in 10 seconds. Furthermore, the monsters will receive the 100% attack boost by the boss. Once their numbers get high enough, Zhang Yang would not even hold for long.

Without any planning, Zhang Yang decided to try once. "Let's give it a try."

Everyone nodded and followed Zhang Yang into the battle. Lo and behold, the boss' {Parasitic Laying} only had a 10-second cooldown. Worse of all, the monsters that were spawned also had the skill {Parasitic Laying} as well. The number of monsters in the field would grow exponentially by the second.

"Daffy, Sweetheart, Witch, Starry, all of you! Get back! Now!" Zhang Yang had immediately concluded that the party was not in any shape to continue the fight and had everyone withdraw from the battle.

After the first four players went out of the battlefield, Zhang Yang proceeded to the next group. "Icy, Dream, Hundred, Fatty, little brat! All of you use your aggro canceling skills. Get out of the battlefield and get out of the battle."

Everyone nodded and moved away from the boss. Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream used {Vanish} to run away, while the remaining three used {Fake Death} to remove all their aggro on them. When everyone was no longer in the aggro list, leaving Zhang Yang as the only one holding all the aggro, he used {Shadow of the Void} and ran away. Once the boss had lost all its targets, it returned to its original position and rested. All the HP that the party had hacked away was restored immediately in 3 seconds. The summoned offspring disappeared immediately soon after, and the battlefield returned to its original silence.

Everyone regrouped together and discussed. Together, they DPS power was extremely strong, yet they could not even defeat a single Holy tier boss. They were not Level 150 anymore, they should be able to kill it without a problem. Such a difficulty would have made the boss an Ascended tier or a Celestial tier!

"Oh man...fighting that...hybrid thing...is like fighting a Celestial boss!" cried Endless Starlight with anger.

"How are we going to beat a boss when it can spawn an Elite tier monster that could spawn their own monsters!? It's an endless cycle!" said Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He too felt that the boss' difficulty was set a little too high for their level. "Starry. You take the boss, and I'll handle the smaller ones. Everyone should focus on the boss while I'll handle the rest. If we all use our Transformation skills, we could kill the boss' 2 billion HP in just 9 minutes."

"Erhm...Are you sure to use Transformation to deal with a Holy tier boss? What if there's an Ascended tier boss waiting for us in the next quest?" said Hundred Shot.

"I think so. Besides, if there's really an Ascended tier boss coming out, other players will get hold of the wind and will come to fight it. We might not be able to get the loot. Then again, I don't think there would be an Ascended tier boss. Even if there is one, we still have our War Chariots!"

When Zhang Yang had explained it that way, everyone nodded in satisfaction and proceeded to use their Transformations in the fight against the Hybrid Beast King.

In the second attempt, Endless Starlight had taken over Zhang Yang's role and tanked the boss himself to demonstrate his prowess as a player with more Celestial tier equipment! At that moment, although he was not as tanky as Zhang Yang, he was still able to hold on strongly, allowing the DPSers to deal damage. Naturally, he was able to tank at that moment, because of his Celestial tier equipment. When the others obtain more Celestial armor, Endless Starlight would return to being the secondary

tank.

10 seconds later, the first Elite tier Ancient Hybrid Beast had spawned out of Endless Starlight. Zhang Yang was the first to jump at it and dragged it away from the party. Since he had no intention of killing the monsters, he had paid full attention on the boss whilst dealing some additional damage to the monster to hold on to their aggro.

20 seconds later, the second Elite tier Ancient Hybrid Beast was spawned out of Fatty Han. 30 seconds later, the third...No sooner, a minute had past and there were six Elite tier monsters in the field.

"AUUURAH!" The boss growled, releasing a visible red aura that had seeped into the monsters, increasing their size and granting them a 100% attack boost buff.

At that moment, Zhang Yang was in his Transformed state. With over 100,000 Defense value, the monsters around could not deal any damage to Zhang Yang. On the other hand, the smaller monsters that were spawned from the Elite tier monsters were instantly killed by a single use of {Thunder Strike}, and {Horizontal Sweep}. He would always be at 100% HP as long as Han Ying Xue remembers to cast {Regeneration} on him.

Unfortunately, the boss had spammed his skill {Strengthen}, granting stackable attack boost on both the Elite and normal Ancient Hybrid Beast. From 87,665 – 147,665, it was boosted to 175,330 – 295,330.

Zhang Yang had activated {God of War Shield} to grant himself a total of 40% damage reduction passive. The monsters were only able to deal 24,184 – 97,984 damage to him, which was considered to be an acceptable value since Zhang Yang had over 108,750,000 HP. Worst of all, the skill {Strengthen} was used every minute. Eventually, there will be a point in the fight where Zhang Yang would not be able to tank anymore. Everyone knew that and had placed all their efforts in attacking, not even bothered to dodge attacks, for they had placed their trust in Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart's healing.

Zhang Yang, his Phoenix, and Felice were going all out to fight the boss. Zhang Yang had the Phoenix and Felice ignore all the monsters, while he

too only occasionally attacked the monsters with his God of War skills every time he had 3 EP charged.

2...4...6 minutes past and there were 36 Elite tier monsters in the field. Worst of all, the first monster that was hatched had over 613,655 – 1,033,655 attack power. Such a number would have long exceeded the likes of a Celestial tier boss! How could one explain when a Holy tier boss could be that strong!?

The only thing that everyone felt lucky about was the fact that the spawned Hybrids could not attack flying targets. Hence, Zhang Yang had easily used {Thunder Strike} to kite the monsters around and kill them slowly. He had given up on attacking the boss. He controlled the Phoenix and Felice to stick to the boss while Zhang Yang alone decided to kite the monsters around the boss in circles.

It was an unreliable kiting technique, since the monsters will occasionally "break" the formation. Zhang Yang could not fly too high, since the big boss will hurl out its scorpion tail and drag Zhang Yang back to its range.

Chapter 797: Greling Crypt

Even when {Thunder Strike} had been strengthened, the number of monsters that had gradually gained numbers by the minute made the skill's 3 meters effective range rather weak. There will always be monsters that "escape" the effective range and manage to attack Zhang Yang.

If {Thunder Strike} wasn't enough...

{Blast Wave}! {Brutal Smash}! {Heroic Leap}!

Zhang Yang unleashed more and more skills to compensate for the insufficiency of {Thunder Strike}. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart even managed to lend a hand by using {Lunar's Imprisonment} and other controlling skills to slow down the monsters' pursuit.

At one point, the entire party was attacking at the same time!

Once the monsters that were chasing after Zhang Yang were killed, the threat on Zhang Yang was reduced greatly.

7 minutes...8 minutes...9 minutes...

Despite having eliminated a large number of monsters, there were still 54 more monsters chasing after Zhang Yang. The number of monsters that had exceeded the coverage of {Thunder Strike} had grown to be such a problem that Zhang Yang had no choice but to take a few direct hits. If wasn't for his Transformed state, Zhang Yang would have already been gobbled up. Even so, his HP was still dropping like an open faucet! Eventually, he had less than 20,000,000 HP left.

When things got out of control, Zhang Yang had resorted to using {God of War Radiance} to fully restore all his HP. However, in less than 30 seconds, the number of monsters, coupled with the attack boost of the boss had his entire 100 million HP drained down to 0.

Zhang Yang felt the need to go all out and used his accessory Invulnerability, giving time for Han Ying Xue to cast her {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}. After that, Zhang Yang had slowly regained 10% HP at a time and could now last slightly longer.

"Hold on for a little longer! The boss has 4% HP left!"

"F*cking hell! It's easier said than done! Fight the boss! Don't stop to talk!" cried Zhang Yang. In the past, or rather, before this boss fight, the number of monsters that he could tank was 20! That was his limit! Yet, he had managed to pull that number up to 50 at once! It was more than double!

At then, he felt extremely lucky to have so many of his skills strengthened. If {Thunder Strike} was not upgraded and still had a 5-second cooldown instead of 8, the monsters would have killed him already! Even so, it had taken all of Zhang Yang's neurons firing in overdrive to dodge and kite!

"Just a little more!" cried Fatty Han.

"I'm about to die you bastard!" cried Zhang Yang. The Invulnerability that the accessory granted him lasted only for 10 seconds. Even though Zhang Yang's HP was slowly being restored by {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple}, once the Invulnerability wears off, all the "Celestial" tier monsters will rip him to shreds!

"Just a tiny bit more!"

"How long!?"

"NOW! AND.....WE...ARE...DONE!"

THUD!

A loud crashing sound was heard and the enormous body of the boss fell to the earth. Upon the death of the boss, all the "summoned" monsters disappeared into thin air, leaving Zhang Yang panting for breath with his shield still held up high and his sword prepared to stab, like a warrior's statue in ancient Rome.

"Woah...That's a cool pose there, noobie tank!" cried Wei Yan Er as she clapped slowly.

"Cool!? COOL!? YOUR SISTER'S *SS THAT'S COOL!" Zhang Yang yelled at the top of his lungs. It was the first time that he had tanked so many

monsters at a time. If he were to continue on for just a few more seconds, his shield's durability would have dropped down to zero, rendering him unable to equip the shield until it is fixed. (1)

"Hey! When did I wrong you?!" cried Han Ying Xue as she pinched Zhang Yang cheek.

Wei Yan Er proceeded to go through her usual routine. Since the boss was so difficult to kill and had even forced them to use their Transformation skills, the loot would better be good. Sadly, the Ancient Hybrid Beast King was the same as the Silvery Scale Eel King. There was only 1 Holy tier equipment and two Ethereal tier equipment. All of them had the same 30 Levels reduction special. However! Seeing that the battle had been an incredible fight, the items dropped did not match the boss' difficulty! Not by a long shot!

In the end, Zhang Yang had to shrug it off. The harder the quest, the better chance he would have at getting the Land Lease from the old gambler. It's a way for the developers to weed out the weak ones. By putting in effort, striving through hardships, only may you have a chance to obtain good items. Zhang Yang laughed all of the sudden and asked everyone to pack up to return to the NPC.

"Gods have mercy! That's the real Claw of the Ancient Hybrid Beast King!" Marcus cried. "That's...That's...IMPOSSIBLE! How could a weak little girl like you defeat such a legendary beast!"

The little girl smiled instead of getting mad at the goblin for calling her a little girl. "Hehe! Well? Gimme dem boots!"

Marcus cringed painfully at the thought of losing the bet, but a bet was a bet and he removed the boots and tossed them towards Wei Yan Er. The boots dropped to the floor near Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er and emitted a smell so pungent that both of them had to pinch their noses.

Zhang Yang had not received any system notifications about completing the quest. It looked like the old gambler's quest can only be accepted by one player only. Since the quest item was in the little girl's hands, she was the only player who could complete the quest.

Harcus stood restlessly since he was standing on the hard rocky grounds barefooted. The goblin even had a gap in his teeth! With rage steaming, the goblin jumped with anger and cried, "One more! One more bet!"

Zhang Yang crossed his arms and said, "Old goblin, you have nothing else to offer, besides your pants. If you still want to continue this gamble, you better offer us something that we want!"

"Hehe! Hold your horses there, human!" The old goblins ruffled the back of his trousers and pulled out a long piece of scroll and said, "Here is my offer! The Land Lease of my property in the Holy City of Anthylor!"

"I accept!" said Zhang Yang instantly. He had been waiting for the lease since the beginning of the quest. "What shall we bet on?"

"Hehe! My bet for you is the broken sword of the of the Hell Ghost King! Bring it back here and I'll give you the Land Lease! If you can't, I'll have my tooth and boots back, please."

'Ding! Harcus the Old Gambler has a quest for you: Hell Ghost King. Will you accept it?'

"A gentleman's agreement!" said Zhang Yang as he reached out his hand to shake the goblin's.

[Hell Ghost King] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: The old goblin bets that you will fail to defeat the Hell Ghost King! Prove him wrong and win the bet by going to the North of the Gerling Crypt in the North!

Progress: Broken Sword of the Hell Ghost King 0/1

S Difficulty!

When A Level Difficulty had provided such a difficult Holy tier boss, an S class would have Zhang Yang kill an Ascended tier boss! Fortunately, the system had not been a busybody and publicly announced the availability of the Land Lease. Zhang Yang would have the time of his life to hunt the boss! The boss would not spawn out without proper activation. The developers had released the announcement about that. Any Ascended boss

would only spawn by completing a series of quest or by fulfilling certain conditions. If Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er had not gotten this far in this particular questline, the Hell Ghost King would not have spawned.

Zhang Yang gathered the rest of the party together and left the Dark Ghastly Canyon, heading towards the North of the Gerling Crypt.

"We are but without the Transformation skill. How are we supposed to defeat the boss?"

"Plus, the Crypt will be an indoor environment. There's no way for us to rely on the War Chariot!"

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue smugly and said, "All is well, my friends. A crypt would be like a dungeon. In a sense, there will be several floors for us to clear before we could reach the end of it. I figured that we might take more than 3 days to clear all the floors. Then again, this boss is only known to us. Even if we wait for a few days, there won't be anyone coming to disturb us. Not unless someone here decides to tell the females from a certain guild..." said Zhang Yang as he glared at Fatty Han.

Everyone left the canyon and after two hours of nonchalant flying, they had arrived at a misty and eerie garden. The garden was devoid of light, yet the place was not too dark. At the center of the lifeless garden was an entrance to an underground pathway. It was rather visible from afar, since the entire structure of the entrance was shaped like a round tent, a Yurt to be exact. Once Zhang Yang entered the entrance, the minimap rolled over and revealed a complicated network of underground pathways.

"This must be it."

The two Phoenix spread out its wings and illuminated the area 10 meters from where they stood with its blinding firelight.

Just when they had walked further into the crypt, a metallic scratching sound could be heard echoing from the depths of the pathway. The sound got louder and Zhang Yang could see the monster. It was a regular skeletal monster that once was a human warrior. All the flesh had rotted away, leaving nothing but dust on its skeletal structure. It was still wearing some old armor from a time before it was alive and a long rusty sword that it

dragged along the floor.

When the skeletal monster got closer to the party, its eye sockets flared up with bright emerald green flames. It growled and charged towards the party, dragging its long sword with it.

[Revived Warrior] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 220

HP: 110,000,000

Defense: 13,730

Melee Attack: 92,970 – 152,970

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% melee physical attack to a target. Has a 20% chance to trigger an additional attack.

[Poison Mist]: Deals 30,00 Natural damage every 3 seconds to all targets that steps into the Poison Mist.

Note: The Crypt was created as a place where brave warriors choose to rest in peace. However, the Hell Ghost King had chosen to revive them, giving them a new purpose to their bodies. Due to their glorious past, the only thing that kept the Revived Warriors moving was pure fighting instinct.

Zhang Yang took charge and attacked the skeletal soldier. The rest of the party followed and blasted the Revived Warrior, turning it into a pile of dust.

Everyone proceeded further. Out of habit, Wei Yan Er had moved to the body and discovered there was loot to be picked.

[Glove of the Flame Master] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +320

Vitality: +3423

Intelligence: +1128

Spirit: +499

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 2,250.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 5.6%

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 220

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Flame Master Set Effect (1/3): {Gloves of the Flame Master}, {Pants of the Flame Master}, {Flame Master's Tall Boots}

Three Set Effect: Increases all Fire Attribute Spell damage by 50%

Everyone exchanged a weird look as they were all stumped. How could a lower level monster have such a drop that had a 30 Level reduction effect? If a monster could have such a nice drop, what would that be for the boss?

"Hmph...It's actually a powerful item if we can find all three equipment," said Zhang Yang as he kept the glove in his inventory.

Daffodil Daydream pondered for a while and said, "The set effect is good, but the equipment stats itself are low. Even though it could provide 50% extra fire damage, the overall DPS will be lower than wearing three Holy tier equipment. And then there's the low Vitality and Intelligence stat. It's not too good actually."

Zhang Yang smiled. "That's a good girl. I'm impressed that you could figure it out. Yes. It's not too good, but I'm sure that many Level 190 players would die to have these equipment if they could not get their hands on any Holy tier."

- (1) Sister: Apparently, it is a Chinese dialogue manner. When they scold someone, they tend to add close relative of the targeted person. Unlike the usual English insults like, "Your mama is an idiot", China's Chinese scolding goes the same way. It's a way to divert back the things you had said back to yourself. Example: A calls B a donkey and B retorts back.

A: "You're a donkey!"

B: "Please...You're mom's a donkey."

Chapter 798: Spectre Ghost King Hargino

The party proceed further and encountered many more Revived Warriors along the way. Naturally, they were all swiftly dealt with. Despite the first monster dropping a set equipment, they had not managed to farm many others later on. After the party cleared the entire floor, they only managed to find two of the same gloves, and one pair of boots. One more, and they would have a complete set.

Although it was not stated in the official site, the party could have easily figured out there were more than 7 floors in this crypt. If each of the monsters in the crypt could drop the set equipment, the party would farm a few sets of equipment by the time they reach the bottommost floor.

As predicted by Zhang Yang, clearing just one floor had taken much of their time. Although the monsters were not spawned closely to each other, there were still a great deal of time due to the vast space on the floor. In fact, they had taken close to half a day to clear a floor. As such, they had spent most of the night and were about to wake up for breakfast.

Zhang Yang did his usual routine and after "feeding" the entire family, he went to his office and worked. Sitting quietly on the fax machine was a stack of papers printed and waiting to be organized. They were the investigation results compiled by the private investigator. It was at Zhang Yang's bidding and they were all about one man. Zhong Xiu Hua.

Sun Xin Yu did not have much information on Zhong Xiu Hua hence, despite being a long distance relative to Zhong Xiu Hua, she was practically useless to Zhang Yang when it comes to enacting his act of revenge. On the other hand, Zhang Yang had Liu Xin Min. She had been tangled up with Zhong Xiu Hua for many years and had information that no one knew about. However so, Zhong Xiu Hua was a very detailed man. Anything that he does, he does it cleanly and leaves no traces. Unlike Liu Wei, Zhong Xiu Hua did things without loose ends.

Those who wrong Zhong Xiu Hua will end up disappearing from this world like the clouds in the sky. For him to terminate someone, he would

find and kill the target and dispose of the body without a trace. If anyone would want to prosecute him, they would need to first find the body. Like the laws in America, you will remain innocent until proven guilty. Problem is, that was the loophole that Zhong Xiu Hua used. He had never personally committed the crimes.

Besides the criminal behavior of Zhong Xiu Hua, the reports also expressed his sexual comportment. The man was incredibly lustful and would not say no to any beautiful women. However, the man would not easily indulge in any female, no matter how beautiful they were. From his perspective, all women were merely tools to release men's sexual tension. After he has used them, he would discard the first and bring in the second.

Zhang Yang continued to examine the name list of those that Zhong Xiu Hua had "discarded" and "disposed of". At one point, Zhang Yang thought that the man could be an evil dictator from a random country. Such a number of people had been wronged by him, he could actually be on par with the infamous Osama Bin Laden. However, despite the long stretch of names, they were all suspected victims without proof. In fact, none of them had any sort of connection that led directly to Zhong Xiu Hua.

Zhang Yang is a simple man and if no one wronged him, he would not have wronged anyone, but the report would have changed even that rather pacifistic mindset to that of a vigilante's sense of chaotic justice. Right then, all his thoughts on Zhong Xiu Hua led to one end, that is the termination of Zhong Xiu Hua. If Zhang Yang crosses his arms and leaves things to be on their own, everyone close to him; relatives, friends, guildmates, colleagues, even his neighbors might be a target of assassination and disposal!

Perhaps, the only person in the world that might escape the fate of being erased from the world would be Sun Xin Yu and her relatives. Zhong Xiu Hua had aimed to have her hand in marriage, even if by force. He had high views of her family, instead of her. His ultimate goal was to get into her family tree and create a powerful force that could rule over even China.

Zhang Yang sat down on his million-dollar executive chair and sighed. He rubbed his forehead with such intensity and finally, he laid down his

final decision. The first to attack will win!

Zhang Yang placed the documents away and steel his decision. His blood was boiling as the murderous intention in him grew. Zhang Yang was naturally hot-blooded young man. When confronted with an enemy like Zhong Xiu Hua, instead of flight, he would fight until either one of them falls!

Zhang Yang gripped the stack of paper in his hands so hard that his thumbs tore through and impaled the thick sheet. There was nothing for him to be scared of when it came to Zhong Xiu Hua! There was no way for him to use the law against Zhang Yang, for Sun Xin Yu ruled that domain. What that was left for Zhong Xiu Hua or Zhang Yang was outside the law, which indirectly means that whoever who has the fatter wallet will win the war.

Zhong Xiu Hua's mother was rich, hence, so was he. He was so rich to a point that he could simply purchase anything in the game. In fact, that was the basis of his guild. Everything was about money. He was able to buy so many War Chariots, all because of the money he had. That and the many things that he did, including kidnapping Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou. That incident had led to their "faithful" encounter and the birth of a new life. If things had turned out worse than that, someone might already be "erased" from the world.

However! If one were to compare how fat was his wallet is, Zhang Yang could easily take his out.

Aside from the profit sharing from Silky Soft Holdings, Zhang Yang had earned more than 50,000,000,000 from the game itself! A large percentage of his earnings came from the Teleportation fees of his Territories, while the rest was a mixture of the Little Merchandize Shop, the guild Mining Cave, various sponsors, and the Battle Team championships' cash reward.

In his previous life, One Sword Stroke had earned more than 400,000,000 annually from sponsorships alone. However, in this lifetime, Zhang Yang was performing far greater than the One Sword Stroke in his

past life. With many smaller companies seeking to form contracts with Lone Desert Smoke, the total annual income had burst through the roof, totaling to almost 600,000,000 a year! That's 50% more than what One Sword Stroke could ever earn!

Zhang Yang did not need to fork out his entire savings to build his arsenals. From the money he earned from advertisements alone, he could easily arm himself to defeat Zhong Xiu Hua in his own game! Even if Zhong Xiu Hua were to seek help from his mother, how much could they fork out? 800 million? 1 billion? That number was nothing but spare change for him. Business is all about investments and profits. The man had invested most of his fortune in Eternal Flame, all hoping to earn back double or triple the amount. The problem was, Zhong Xiu Hua's method had given him nothing but more heartaches.

With money, you could make the world go round. With money, you could even hire the devil to be your butler. Zhang Yang had plans, various plans of toppling the arrogant son of a b*tch and the b*tch herself if he has to. Zhang Yang picked up his pen and pulled out a blank piece of paper. With maddening speed, the man was like a possessed man, as the pen in his hand danced around the paper, scribbling plans after plans! After he was done with the writing, Zhang Yang picked up the phone and made call after call. With money flowing out from his accounts as he laid down the orders to all the people he had called, Zhang Yang felt the goddess of victory gradually smiling at him. After making many more calls for more than an hour, Zhang Yang slammed the phone back to the receiver and finally sigh.

"It's done now...Zhong Xiu Hua. You'll soon regret the day you had decided to invite me to your tea party."

...

After delaying his gaming session for the entire afternoon, Zhang Yang found himself left behind. In his absence, the party had already decided to push forward with Endless Starlight as the main tank. Everyone was fine, since all their equipment were strong enough to tank the monsters' attacks during OT.

"Little Yang!? What took you so long?! It's been an hour since you decided to crawl back into the game! Tell your old brother the truth, did you pluck the forbidden fruit of a chick?" said, Fatty Han, as he smiled perversely.

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had not missed what Fatty Han had said and threw a death glare at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed innocently and said to the girls, "Do you really think that my gun has any more ammo after the morning battle!?"

As such, the two ladies blushed and returned to their battle position. Ever since the day Zhang Yang had accidentally drank the wine laced with the Elephant Aphrodisiac, they had purposely made Zhang Yang "go all out" with them. It was for two reasons, one was to get themselves "knocked up" with his child. Two, to make sure Zhang Yang has no more energy to do it with any of the secretaries in his office.

With Zhang Yang taking the helm, the pushing speed was increased dramatically. As such, it was a matter of time before they had cleared the way to the fourth floor. With an abundance of Flame Master set equipment and experience points, the team was satisfied with their progress and forgave Zhang Yang for his tardiness. They even managed to collect 5 sets of the Flame Master set equipment.

However, there was still a little dissatisfaction simmering amongst them all. The only monster in the crypt was the Revived Warrior. It was getting a little old, especially after the third day. Luckily, they had cleared all the way down to the last floor.

As expected of a boss' battle field, the place was large and empty. After walking around, exploring each corner of the floor, they found nothing but dust and broken bones everywhere. The team then walked further down the large dirty crypt and reached the end, only to find the boss was waiting for them there.

The boss was a large man. He had a long cape flowing down his back. However, that was the only thing the party could make out. It was so dark that the only thing they could see was the boss' pair of emerald-green eyes

glowing in the dark as they flared violently. The boss was languishing casually on a stone throne, with a long sword resting on the side of the chair. He was crossing his arms as if he was actually waiting for them to come to him.

[Spectre Ghost King Hargino] (Ascended, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 11,500,000,000

Defense: 34,900

Melee Attack: 329,115 – 429,115

Skills:

[Ghost Parade]: Summons 10 Spirits out of the abyss to assist Hargino.

[Deathly Pain]: Sends a deadly wave 1,000 meters around Hargino every 3 seconds. Deals 300,000 Shadow Damage to all targets.

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% melee physical attack to target. 50% chance to deal a 100% Critical strike additional attack.

[Inseparable Shadow]: When players are 1,000 meters away from Hargino, the debuff will be automatically inflicted on the player. Players that receive the debuff cannot leave 1,000 meters away from Hargino. Kills any players that exceed a 1,000 meters range from Hargino.

[Seal of the Ghost King]: Grant a buff on Hargino whenever he kills a player. When surviving players get 100 meters close to Hargino, receive 10% HP as damage per second. Effect lasts for 2 hours.

[Spectre's Constitution]: Restore 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any skill effects.

Note: The master of all Spectres in the Gerling Crypt. Possesses ungodly power.

With the array of skills like the party had never seen before, they were all stumped. Summoned soldiers? AoE aura skill? Recovery skill!? Not to mention the inability to leave the battle! Furthermore, everyone will have

to wait for 2 hours before they can start the fight again!

"D*mn! We don't have enough firepower to fight this guy," said Fatty Han. Everyone kept quiet as they had the same thoughts. Under normal circumstances, their DPS would go from 2,000,000 to 4,500,000 after Transformation. Setting aside the various troublesome skills, the boss will restore 115,000,000 HP every 30 seconds which would be 3,830,000 HP every second. Since the party's effective DPS after that would only be 670,000, they will take as long as 5 hours to kill the boss!

5 hours!?

The active duration of their Transformation skill was only 2 hours, and after that, the party's DPS will drop down to 2,000,000 only. It would not be enough to cover the damage that the boss could restore! If the boss decides to sit down and have a cup tea, the party would not even be able to defeat the boss, let alone with him waving his sword around like a madman!

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and nonchalantly said, "Oh well. Let's fight!"

Fatty Han came to him and smacked his head. Annoyed, Fatty Han grumbled, "Are you daft? I can't believe there would be a day when I'm the one calling you a stupid head!"

"Do you have a plan, guild master?" Daffodil Daydream approached.

"Yes. In fact, I do. Right now, we can defeat the monster all by ourselves. But, if the boss did not have the skill {Ghost Parade}, we might have had to call other guilds for help! That boss' skill is the only hope we have at killing the boss!"

Sun Xin Yu widened her eyes and said, "The Gates of Hell!"

The skill {Gates of Hell} was the skill that was given to Zhang Yang by the system when he was the first player to reach Level 200. Its power was to summon out a demon possessing the same level as the target that Zhang Yang has killed. The skill had a 72-hour cooldown duration which he had never used before.

"That's right! If we have an army of elite tier demons helping us fight the boss, we might be able to compensate for the lack of DPS!"

"The main point is the rate of the boss calling his backup. What if the number of summons are not enough?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "We won't know unless we try. Let's not use our Transformation skill and try to fight the boss now. This is only a test run. We are fighting the boss to see how he acts."

"Okay!"

Everyone followed Zhang Yang into the fight and with only the intention of staying alive as long as possible.

"Insolent fools! The living shan't be disturbed! You shall join them instead!" the boss stood up from his stone throne and picked up the long sword by his side.

Chapter 799: The Prowess of the Gates of Hell

With only 10 players, all refusing to use their Transformation skill, the chance of the victory was 0%. In less than a few minutes, Hargino had chopped, sliced, and diced everyone, fine julienne style.

The battle ended with an utter defeat. However, out of the ashes of their defeat, they did manage to retrieve important notes. The skill {Ghost Parade} would be used once every 30 seconds. The monsters that were summoned were all Elite tiers with only 10,000,000 HP. {Force Strike} will be used every 10 seconds. Although the boss will have a 50% chance of dealing a 100% Critical Strike, that sort of damage was "tank-able" by Zhang Yang in his Transformed state.

Compared to the rest of the skill, the worst skill of all was {Ghost Parade}. The boss itself was strong, to begin with. It's AoE skill was painful, not to mention the penalty for dying was to wait for 2 hours before they could restart the battle. That, and the constant fighting with the summoned monsters will be a problem. However, there was a silver lining to it. Without the monsters being summoned out, Zhang Yang and the party would have a 0% chance of winning the fight! Paired with Zhang Yang's {Gates of Hell}, all they had to do was to kill the monsters as soon as they appeared, and they will have a chance to defeat the boss. It would be slim but it was still better than 0%.

The enhanced {Gates of Hell} would last for 20 minutes and will not be affected by the splash damage of the boss' AoE skill. Hence, the gate will not be affected by the boss' {Deathly Pain}. Despite that, as long as the gate is not targeted by the boss, having 1 million HP is more than enough to last until its effects wears off.

Since the boss summoned 10 ghosts every 30 seconds, the total number of "convertible" monsters in 20 minutes will reach as high as 400!

400 Elite tier monsters would be the same as having 400 well-equipped players! Furthermore, the monsters each had 100 million HP! At most,

they could last for as long as 1000 seconds while tanking the boss' {Deathly Pain} skill. If one summoned Demon deals 50,000 DPS, all 400 summoned Demons could deal 20,000,000,000! That was more than enough to kill the boss!

Hence, Zhang Yang had to make sure everyone could kill the summoned ghosts once they are out in the open. Zhang Yang himself would have to make sure to keep the aggro of the boss and the ghosts on him to allow the party to deal damage.

"Too bad. All we can do now is wait for 2 hours until {Seal of the Ghost King} wears out!"

"That's not too bad. We can talk c*ck, sing songs, chitty chat, or anything you want. We have been fighting the same old monster for so long, we deserve a little rest and recreation."

"Little Yang, remember the chick I recommended to you that day? Well, last night. I—"

"OKEY DOKEY! TIME TO FIGHT!"

...

Two hours was neither too long nor too short for the party to chat and rest. Before they knew it, the effect on them was gone and everyone got ready for the boss fight. Zhang Yang took the lead and activated his Transformation skill. The rest of the party followed and waited until Zhang Yang landed the first blow.

Zhang Yang shot at the boss and threw out a few strikes before summoning the {Gates of Hell} when he was within 100 meters away from the boss.

"Hahaha! Do you not know death!? Do you wish to taste the pain of dying again!?" cried Hargino as he resumed his fighting stance and cleaved Zhang Yang.

The battle started with a flash and everyone fulfilled their roles flawlessly.

30 seconds into the fight and Hargino stabbed the ground with his long sword.

"Rise, my slaves! Serve your lord and kill the enemies!"

10 abyssal holes appeared around him and out came 10 Skeletal Soldiers that were all clad in black heavy armor.

Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight jumped to the front and kited all the monsters together, allowing the party to focus on their AoE attacks.

When all the monsters were left with 10% HP or less, everyone stopped attacking and resumed their attacks on the boss. Zhang Yang would have to be the player to strike the killing blow or else the {Gates of Hell} will not register the kills. Ally kills would not work on the {Gates of Hell}.

{Thunder Strike}!

‘-331,253!’

With the power of the God of War Transformation and Wei Yan Er’s {Strength Aura}, Zhang Yang’s {Thunder Strike} had reached a damage that exceeded any amount that he had seen. 330,000 damage was strong enough to hack away at their reduced HP!

{God of War Crushing Strike}!

‘-391,090!’

After two consecutive strikes back to back, all the summoned soldiers were killed instantly. Before their bodies "disappeared", a long trail of black light was pulled out of their body and was absorbed into the {Gates of Hell}. One by one, in an orderly manner, a demon, with the height of four men, walked out of the gate. Unlike any demons that the party had fought before, the summoned demons were extremely lean and mean. Their horns on their forehead were longer and fiercer looking. Even their tails were longer and thicker than the usual thin looking whip!

[Summoned Armageddon’s Harbinger] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 220

HP: 110,000,000

Defense: 13,730

Melee Attack: 92,970 – 152,970

Skills:

[Force of an Army]: Deals 100% melee physical damage to a target. 20% chance to increase attack by 10% on oneself. Lasts for 6 seconds.

Cooldown: 10 seconds.

10 Demons appeared out of the gate and joined the fight against the boss. Every Demon summoned had roughly the same look but wielded different weapons. All of them were basically swords but came in different shapes and sizes. That matters not, for their attack power were the same.

60 seconds into the fight, the second batch of summoned monsters appeared into the field. Similarly, the party kited them and allowed Zhang Yang to land the killing blow.

The boss was digging his own grave. If he does not use the skill, Zhang Yang would not have gained such a powerful army to use against him!

If the boss had brains like players do, he will surely be targeting the gates first! However, being a program, he had to follow his protocol and obey the system aggro function!

4 minutes into the fight...

The number of Demon joining Zhang Yang side to defeat the boss had increased so exponentially that they had completely surrounded the boss. Since the size of the Demons was rather huge, only 50 of them were able to attack the boss at the same time. The rest of the Demons were struggling to move forward and had to wait until the front ones died before they could move closer to the boss.

Luckily, the entire team was practically in the air, allowing them to attack from another level. Hundred Shots and the other ranged attackers had no problems attacking the boss from where they stood. In fact, compared to Zhang Yang, they were dealing much higher damage.

Due to the limited space to attack, the summoned Demons could not

push their total DPS to 20,000,000,000. At most, they were only able to deal around 6 to 7 billion damage per second. Then again, that was more than he could ever ask for!

"Insolent fool!"

"You all shall crawl beneath me!"

"The Spectres shall rule the world!"

"Darkness shall rise!"

...

There were all too many different lines but they conveyed roughly the same meaning, and that was to "ask" the players to surrender.

20 minutes into the battle and the summoned {Gates of Hell} had reached its end. The gates seeped back into the earth, but the summoned Elite Demons were still able to attack for as long as 4 hours if they are not killed.

This goes without saying, but the {Gates of Hell}'s prowess could only be so strong if Zhang Yang uses it against such a boss that would keep on spawning monsters. If the skill was used against players, all they had to do was to get 200 meters away from the {Gates of Hell,} and they would be fine. That said, the {Gates of Hell} only had 1,000,000 HP. For any average player out there, they would only need roughly 10 seconds or so to destroy it!

After the gate disappeared from the field, the summoned Demons started dwindling in number. They were all killed by the boss' AoE attacks and {Deathly Pain}. Friendly Healing skills did not work on them. No sooner later, all the demons were killed and the boss was left with 2,700,000,000 HP left.

Technically, they would still need around 70 minutes to kill the boss. Zhang Yang and everyone else still had around 80 minutes for their Transformation skills to end. As long as no one dies in the battle, they would kill the boss easily.

One hour into the fight...

{Glare of the Death God}!

Resist!

Ah...such a shame. An anti-boss skill will always be useful when its uncalled for, and be useless when it the situation calls for it! It was like the skill was purposely trying to sabotage Zhang Yang!

20%...10%...5%...

Just then, the remaining HP of Harguino would require at least 14 more minutes for the party to kill. Despite being only 5%, having the need of 14 minutes to take that amount off is more than enough to state the prowess of the boss! The time left on everyone's Transformation timer was 20 minutes or so. It's already safe to say that they would win the fight.

4%...3%...2%...1%...

The boss now had over 100 million HP, while the total time elapsed was 113 minutes. Everyone has less than 7 minutes left on their timers.

5 million...2 million...200,000...0.

"Hmph. Such...a...wonderful...fight..." The boss cracked a smile before he fell back against his throne, lifeless. His long sword slipped out of his hands and clanged on the floor.

"We did it!"

Everyone sighed and dropped to their knees, as the fight was both intense and nerve wrecking.

With 5 minutes left on their Transformation, Wei Yan Er was the only one who seemed to be energetic. She flew around in her Transformed state and zoomed to the boss.

"It's time for the prizes!" she shouted while picking up the equipment.

"Phew...this was a problematic boss. We were really short-handed back there," said Hundred Shots.

"That's true. If the boss did not have the {Ghost Parade} skill, AND our

big boss not having the {Gates of Hell}, we would have been toasted!" said Endless Starlight.

"That's unlikely to ever happen again...How many bosses out there will have minions like that?" said Daffodil Daydream, as she was the most reasonable person.

Zhang Yang nodded. "I agree with Hundred Shots. We are actually lacking some players. I think I shall have Ten Dusk and Galileo to form a strong party. We will then combine two of our parties and form a stronger party!"

Unlike the other bosses of the quest, this Ascended tier boss had dropped 10 Ascended tier equipment and 5 Holy tier equipment. There was also a large pile of items, all of which Wei Yan Er was happily playing with.

The party then proceed with the item distribution and Zhang Yang was rather lucky this time. He was able to roll for two Ascended tier equipment which was a Shield and a Ring.

[Barren Shield] (Ascended, Shield)

Defense: +27,940

Vitality: +75,147

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 150,280.

Equip: Absorbs 10,303 damage on attack.

Equip: 30% chance to restore 1% HP after a successful {Block}.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 30 Levels.

[Revival Ring] (Ascended, Ring)

Vitality: +11272

Strength: +1983

Dexterity: +1983

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 22,540

Equip: Increases damage dealt and Healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorb 1,717 damage on attack.

Use: Obtain boon {Revival}. All damage dealt to you will restore your health. Lasts for 6 seconds. Cooldown: 1 Hour.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 30 Levels.

Chapter 800: Snow Queen Inheritance

Upon switching up the two Ascended Tier equipment, Zhang Yang's Attack power did not really increase much. However, because the Shield is a piece of equipment that could boost a player's HP the most, Zhang Yang's HP amount increased tremendously. Now, he only needed his {Vitality Aura} to boost his HP up to 3,778,420. After all, before a player can attain Level 200, the player must be mounted on his or her mount in order to obtain that much HP.

Meanwhile, his Defence had also reached up to 33,700. If he just activates his God of War Inheritance Transformation, his Defence would be boosted up to approximately 170,000 points. Furthermore, he also had 20% passive Damage Immunity and 28,454 Damage Absorption. If one wants to hurt Zhang Yang with a Physical attack, that person would need to deal at least 200,000 damage in a single hit just to break his Defence!

As for the items, he distributed the 4 Skill Point Crystals out, one after another. Zhang Yang had no need for any Skill Points at the moment. So he decided to let the others have at them.

Well, the Skill Books were not suitable for him at all. Therefore, he could only stare at Han Ying Xue and the others as they were rolling to see who gets the Skill Book. However, he would still be the one earning the most in this round.

[Book of Revelation: Chapter 9]!

It crossed his mind though. Zhang Yang was thinking of launching a war on the other Regions just to see if he could locate the last missing chapter of the [Book of Revelation]. Well, by doing so, he would be able to lure the person holding the chapter out from hiding. All he needed to do would be to activate his God of War Transformation and fly around the battlefield. He could definitely take out the person, pick up the item and quickly escape from the chaotic battlefield.

What he never expected was that the last missing chapter of the book would be sitting quietly in the hands of the boss, waiting for him to collect

it.

With the [Book of Revelation: Chapter 9], Zhang Yang could finally combine the broken chapters to get the complete [Book of Revelation].

[Book of Revelation] (Legendary, Unique)

Description: Increases 50% Damage of all party members of the holder, standing within the range of 100-meter radius from the holder. If the holder of the book is killed, he or she can choose to revive immediately on the same spot he or she dies with 100% HP and 100% MP. This effect can only be triggered once every hour. If the resurrected player gets killed again within the cooldown period of the book's effect, the item will be dropped. This item can only be taken along in the inventory, and cannot be destroyed.

Special Effect 1: Enhances {Block}.

Special Effect 2: Enhances {Gates of Hell}.

Special Effect 3: {Select one Skill to be enhanced}

Use: Upon unleashing the light of the Revelation, all enemy units in the surroundings will receive 2,000,000 Chaos Damage (The amount of damage will differ based on your level.) Cooldown: 72 hours.

"This is f*cking great! Damn!" Everyone was cheering in shock. However, although the [Book of Revelation] could cause up to 2,000,000 AoE damage to enemies in the surroundings, the cooldown was just too damn long. Furthermore, 2,000,000 damage would not be effective for the top Tier players. So the effect was actually not that great either.

However, the item could enhance up to 3 Skills. That made the [Book of Revelation] a very powerful tool for any player to have. The enhanced effect for {Block} and {Gates of Hell} had been witnessed by many. The enhancement effect was similar to the effect of having two Superior Skill Books!

Other than that, the party had also acquired one broken piece of Inheritance.

The Inheritance was called 'Class A Snow Queen Inheritance'.

Well, because everyone had already acquired their own Inheritance, the broken piece of Inheritance could only be passed over into Zhang Yang's inventory. They were definitely not willing to sell it, of course. So they could just give it to someone who is loyal to the guild later on and help that player acquire it. By doing so, they would be able to increase the number of players with Class A Inheritances from 2 to 3!

Upon picking up 'Hajnold's Hilt', the gang immediately left and make haste for the Dark Ghastly Canyon. They were hoping to hand in the quest to the man with the gambler fever and get the reward of the quest --- land lease!

"What the actual f*ck! NO! My eyes must be blurred! This is not real!" Marcus continued to rub his eyes. Then he stared at the sword's hilt again. Well, by the end of it, he handed over the land lease with a blackened face.

Well, the new shop would be needing the potions that only Zhang Yang could make to sustain the business. Therefore, to avoid more trouble, Wei Yan Er naturally threw the land lease over to Zhang Yang without a single moment of hesitation. Or else, Zhang Yang would need to pass the potions over to the little brat before the little brat could deposit the goods into the warehouse of the new shop. That little brat would never be patient enough to do that!

After all, everyone could get a 5% dividend out of the earnings from the new shop. As for the remaining earnings, the earnings would be kept aside so that they could pay the salaries of the new members of the guild. The bosses in the current stage of the game were becoming more and more powerful these days. They needed make sure that they had enough members to form a new party, a second party to support the first party.

Upon teleporting back to the Holy City, Zhang Yang took the land lease and went back to collect the property. It did not take long before his registration was recognized by the system. Just like how he started up with the Little Merchandized Shop, he began to 'renovate' the new shop. Then, he hired a loli type NPC as his shop attendant.

Back when he was setting up his Little Merchandize Shop, he did not have much money to spend on the shop. However, now that he had become f*cking rich, he straight away improved the shop to the maximum level and named the shop as 'Little Merchandize Shop (Branch)'

He then put all the Ethereal Tier equipment into the warehouse of the new shop. After that, he quickly shouted out the news about the opening of his new shop in the public channel. Holy City is a unique place. That would be the only place where all eight Regions shared one public channel. Everyone could trade even though they were far away from each other.

Because the Ethereal Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had to offer were all Level 220 with Special Effects that reduced 30 levels from the requirement, a large number of Level 200 players were interested to see what's in the shop. Although they might not be suitable to use the equipment themselves, they could still purchase the equipment for their friends.

After all, the Hardcore of the Spectre Cavern was just too damn hard to clear. Furthermore, the Holy Tier equipment that is dropped by the bosses in that dungeon were all 'bound upon pickup'. Therefore, many Level 190 players would only look at Ethereal Tier equipment for the moment. Meanwhile, the Ethereal Equipment that Zhang Yang had to offer were all Level 220. Although these equipment would still be a little weaker than those Level 170 Holy Tier equipment, they were not that weak. The players could still accept the difference.

Therefore, Zhang Yang's voice recording had attracted a substantial amount of customers to his new shop.

He also put up some rare potions on the shelves. That was because he just opened the new shop and he needed to advertise about his shop. He even put up some Transmuted potions on the shelves as well. Initially, the players came for the Ethereal Tier equipment. However, when they noticed the variety of potions, they instantly showed their interest at buying the potions as well. Well, Transmuted Potions were hard to come these days, after all. It did not take long before the shelves in the shops were emptied

out. Those who missed the chance to buy the potions were inquiring about the arrival of new stocks. Well, it seemed that Zhang Yang managed to make his new shop extremely popular upon opening.

However, Zhang Yang could predict that his new shop would not have more customers than the old Little Merchandize Shop for over one year. However, when the number of Level 200 players increases in the later stage of the game, there would be more players coming to his new shop. At some point, the sales of the new shop would surpass the sales of the old shop. It would just be a matter of time.

When the entire population of the players reaches Level 200 and beyond, the Little Merchandize Shop in the main city would become cold and quiet.

Zhang Yang decided to give everyone a few days off. He also wanted to form a second fixed party, another party of 10 that would be powerful enough to act on their own.

However, he only had 4 members in his mind: Galileo, Ten Dusk, Female Raid Covent and Chen Xue Yao.

It made perfect sense for the first three names to be selected. As for Chen Xue Yao, her level was still a little too low to be selected. Although Zhang Yang would bring her along to grind from time to time, she was only currently Level 142. She would be as good as dead if she follows Zhang Yang to battle against Level 230 monsters and above.

However, Chen Xue Yao was quite a talented player, herself. Judging by observing her performance, Zhang Yang believed that she could already take part in Class B League Championship. If she ever puts more effort into training herself better, she would be able to catch up to the standard of Daffodil Daydream soon!

Of course, part of it was because Zhang Yang was biased. Both of them were basically 'boyfriend and girlfriend'. Well, they were quite clingy to each other while at work. Although they had not been overwhelmed by the feeling to f*ck, the both of them were having a dubious relationship. Well, they might just f*ck each other sooner or later.

Zhang Yang gave Chen Xue Yao the Class A Snow Queen Inheritance. Well, she was initially a Cyromancer, after all. So Zhang Yang gave it to her based on his professional opinion. Other than that, he decided to give it to her because good ones do not simply let his own fertile water to flow into others' fields.

When Chen Xue Yao was collecting her Inheritance Fragments, Zhang Yang was the only one who was helping her. Well, Zhang Yang alone was more than enough to handle the bosses of the Inheritance Quests now. After all, Zhang Yang had become so powerful now that he could single-handedly kill one Ethereal boss without even trying.

After Chen Xue Yao acquired her Class A Inheritance, she could be considered as a top Tier player in the game now. The only thing that kept her from being so was because her level was just too low. Well, because of that, she could not wear any of the high-level equipment.

So, Zhang Yang brought her along to Kanjar to grind.

Currently, Chen Xue Yao was only Level 143. Upon arriving at Kanjar, her existence on the map was activated something similar to a {Mass Taunt}! A large number of monsters within the range of 2,000-meter radius from where the two of them stood were attracted by the aggro. The monsters were charging madly towards the two of them.

The feeling was great. Zhang Yang was thinking of bringing low-level players into high-level maps to grind in the future. No more troublesome luring!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and activated his {Surrogacy} on Chen Xue Yao, giving her the same Defence as he had on him. Although Zhang Yang would try his best to get the aggro of the monsters to fix on him, he might still lose out one or two of the monsters from his grip. By giving Chen Xue Yao a high Defence, even if monsters manage to hit her, she would not be killed in an instant.

With Zhang Yang's Attack power, all Normal Tier monsters were basically killed in one single hit by Zhang Yang. The amount of Experience Points that both of them got was shockingly tremendous!

Furthermore, it was really the best thing they could have hope for that every time they were done with one wave of monsters, they would only have to walk a few steps forwards before the next wave of monsters swarms up on them. The monsters were swarming up on Zhang Yang and Chen Xue Yao as if they were here just to get slaughtered by Zhang Yang. Therefore, Zhang Yang only needed to kill, kill, kill! Then, the both of them would only need to collect whatever amount of Experience Points that come at them.

In the beginning, he only intended to babysit Chen Xue Yao so that she could level up faster. However, the outcome of bringing her for grinding was unexpectedly great. His Experience Bar was progressing at a f*cking fast pace as well. If it wasn't because for the fact that much more Experience Points were needed for Level 200 player to level up, Zhang Yang could have leveled up once in every four days!

That was really motivating!

So, how come no one had ever tried to grind like this before?

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and revealed a smile on his face. Well, because he was the only one who had {Surrogacy}. So he was able to keep Chen Xue Yao alive. Or else, under the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, one gentle touch from any high level monsters would have killed her instantly. By then, it would not be possible for him to guide Chen Xue Yao in grinding.

After all, even Zhang Yang's Experience Bar was progressing extremely fast, Chen Xue Yao's Experience Bar was increasing at an even faster rate! She was able to earn additional Experience Points by killing monsters that were much higher level than her. She managed to level up once every day. People would definitely find it extremely hard to believe that, even if someone told the others about it!

Zhang Yang could not help to sigh. If only he had someone in his previous life to guide him like this, it would have made his life so much easier, then!

He gave everyone 7 days off. After that 7 days, she would be in the game

for over 21 days. Meanwhile, throughout the 21 days, even though Chen Xue Yao could no longer level up once a day, she had already reached Level 157. If there was any competition that compares the speed of levelling up, she would have broken any record regarding that!

Chapter 801: New Party Members

Over the next few days, Zhang Yang had assigned another 2 new members to the second party that he was working on.

Scorched Cloud, Human, Male, Level 197, Pyromancer, Possesses Class B Hysterical Monkey Inheritance.

Mini Piglet, Elf, Female, Level 195, Holy Knight, Possesses Class B Sand Inheritance.

Actually, the second party that Zhang Yang was working on already had a Holy Knight on it. Furthermore, the party seemed to be too weak with only a few of them there. So Zhang Yang decided to shuffle the members of the first party and the second party. He moved Endless Starlight, Hundred Shots and Fantasy Sweetheart to the second party. Then he moved Mini Piglet and Chen Xue Yao over to the first party.

By doing so, he managed to make sure that each of the parties has one Priest and one Holy Knight. Because of that, each party would have no problem at all at both single-unit healing and multiple-unit healing, allowing each party to adapt to a situation of a battle. In regard of Tankers, Ten Dusk was the only Tanker in the second party. So, he would need another Tanker with better equipment such as Endless Starlight to cover his *ss.

Meanwhile, Endless Starlight was quite an outstanding Tanker alone. He could already be independent. He no longer needed to stay under the shadow of Zhang Yang!

Now, the first party had 9 members while the second party had 7 members. Their numbers would definitely be sufficient for the two parties to go up against a Holy Tier boss. However, when going up against an Ascended boss, 10 players might not be enough to take the boss head-on. The two parties would need to work closely together in order to defeat an Ascended Tier boss.

Therefore, the remaining 4 empty slots of the two parties must be filled up as soon as possible. However, it was really extremely difficult to find

those who are good in both attitude and strength which could satisfy Zhang Yang. Although there were quite a number of them for Zhang Yang to pick from his guild, Zhang Yang could still feel that there were something missing in them that prevented him from picking any of them. Well, he best take his own sweet time at determining whether a person is worth hiring before jumping to conclusions.

Meanwhile, he assigned Chen Xue Yao to the first party, planning to expose her to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Zhang Yang did not expect too much out of it. These three ladies and Luo Yu Rou could have formed a complete team to start a mahjong match on a square table. That would be more than enough for him.

As for Yu Li, she would only serve as the mistress to Zhang Yang's affair. Well, Zhang Yang could satisfy his idea that 'the grass is always greener on the other side of the fence'.

There was only one last thing Zhang Yang knew from his past life about the future of 'God's Miracle' --- The Demon's Descent.

The background theme of 'God's Miracle' had always been about Spectres and Demons threatening to destroy the entire world. Since the officials had already introduced the 'Spectre Invasion' patch to the game before, it would not take too long before the officials would release the 'Demon's Descent' patch. However, the 'Demon's Descent' patch never got the chance to be released in Zhang Yang's previous life before Zhang Yang was reincarnated back to 5 years before he died. Therefore, he basically did not have much prior knowledge about the patch.

However, he only needed a rough idea about it. That would be sufficient for him to get himself ready for the upcoming events.

Unlike the Spectre's Invasion, because the Spectre were 'born and brought' up in this world, they only needed to taint the sky and the land before they could begin with their invasion on the world. Meanwhile, the demons did not belong to this world in the first place. They would need to send a small part of their strike force over to our world first to open the portal that connected the demon world and the human world. By then, the

demon army would only be able to enter this world to launch their invasions on the humans.

Therefore, the Demon's Descent patch would set the story in a way where the demons would succeed at creating portals that allow them to come forth to this world with their massive demon army. Meanwhile, the players would need to fend the demons off and destroy the portals to cut off the advancement of the demon army. After that, the main objective of the players would be destroying the demons that managed to descend on the land of humans.

However, the Demon's Descent patch would not be triggered by the players' levels. It would be in the form of a quest. Players would need to search it out in order to trigger the quest.

Rumors had it that the players who manage to trigger that quest would get a tremendous amount of rewards. Zhang Yang only knew that the players would be teleported to a dungeon-type region. The region would have several Ascended Tier bosses for the players to slay. So, the players would not have to fight over the bosses.

Zhang Yang did not work on triggering the main story quest immediately. After all, his level had not reached the required level yet. According to the little information he retrieved, the bosses at the highest levels would be Level 240. It would be a little too stressful for the players to challenge the bosses with their current levels. Well, they were just reaching Level 200 and beyond that, after all. The level gap suppression function would be much for the players to handle. So, there was no need for any of the players to rush.

Zhang Yang's current main focus was to guide Chen Xue Yao in grinding. After all, he would also be earning Experience Points at a very fast pace as well. So the situation would be like killing two birds with one stone.

On the other side, the shooting of Luo Yu Rou's new movie was currently at full swing. They were borrowing the facilities of 'God's Miracle' to shoot their movie. Meanwhile, she had also changed her initial name to

Daybreak Phoenix. Well, that name implied that she was rising from the ashes.

Her main objective was to seduce all men in the entire world. Of course, she would still be walking on the path of sexiness in the new movie. She was nicknamed as the goddess of the otakus for a reason. Her understanding towards the term 'sexiness' was extremely deep. Every smile she threw, every hand she waved, and the way she always twisted her waist was just enchantingly sexy. Even her winks were seductive!

Although 'God's Miracle' could provide every player a chance to be handsome and pretty, 'sexy' is an intangible trait, a charm that cannot be replaced merely by a pretty face. It could be foreseen that when the movie premieres in cinemas across the entire nation, this Daybreak Phoenix would become the new Goddess of Sexiness.

Meanwhile, the belly of Luo Yu Rou had finally begun to bulge up. She also started to wear loose clothing for pregnant women. Because of her pregnancy, she had suffered quite a number of ordeals. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was the one to get the blame, after all. So, she would flip her eyes backward at him from time to time. She even bit Zhang Yang out of the blue from time to time.

Wei Yan Er was very reverent toward educating a new life. She would kneel by the side of the pregnant Luo Yu Rou and start communicating with the little new life. However, the personality of the little brat had always been unreliable and strange. She treated the unborn baby like a pet! Then, she also attempted to teach the baby her mischievous and naughty theories. Zhang Yang and the others could not help to laugh out loud. Well, she is definitely going to corrupt the little baby!

The pace of Chen Xue Yao's levelling up was shockingly fast, and everyone was shocked to know about it. In just a month, she managed to level up from Level 157 to Level 191. Well, only Zhang Yang would be able to create such a miracle.

However, after she reached Level 190, Chen Xue Yao's grinding pace was beginning to slow down a little. Well, she would need to take a step at a

time, now. There was no way for her to grind like crazy anymore.

At the same time, Zhang Yang had reached Level 203. He was only one level before Level 204, which was the level that he had before he died in his previous life. However, he had attained Level 203 more than 1 year earlier than he had in his previous life.

The Professional League Championship had also reached the end of its fourth season. In the first three seasons, Silky Soft Battle Team had earned over 8 points to be number one. Meanwhile, the Crimson Rage Battle Team managed to score 5 points, making them the runner-up of the competition. Meanwhile, the Eternal Flame Battle Team had scored over 5 points as well, however, they were placed as third in place because Crimson Rage Battle Team managed to score some additional points from other aspects of the competition. Well, the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team only managed to score 2 points, placing them as fourth in place.

Because only two battle teams would be able to take part in the battle. Even if Silky Soft Battle Team is squeezed out of the top three in the competition, they would still be able to acquire one of the openings to join the battles. However, it still remained unknown as to which battle team would be able to secure the second opening to the battles. Theoretically speaking, the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team still stood a chance at entering and securing the opening. However, their chance was almost zero.

At the early stages of the competition, Zhang Yang and the others almost removed themselves from all matches. Currently, they were 7th in place. So there was no hope for them to acquire any of the top three positions. Therefore, whoever who performs better would be able to secure the second opening to entering the upcoming competition. Therefore, Crimson Rage Battle Team and Eternal Flame Battle Team would need to compete against each other to get the spot.

Currently, the Eternal Flame Battle Team was in the first place. They had one additional win over the Crimson Rage Battle Team which was second in place. However, the Eternal Flame could not avoid clashing with the

Silky Soft Battle Team on the final three rounds of the competition. They would have to battle the Crimson Rage Battle Team head on for one time.

Although the Silky Soft Battle Team had secured one of the two openings to the upcoming competition, Zhang Yang would never go soft on the Eternal Flame. With their current power level, the Silky Soft Battle Team would have a 90% chance of winning the battle. So, it would all come down to the performance of Crimson Rage Battle Team and Eternal Flame. Whoever who does better would take the second opening.

Zhang Yang decided to trigger the main story quest 'Demon's Descent' after the finals of the Professional League Championship. That was because there was more than 80% to 90% chance that the ones winning the finals of the championship would get the reward of +levels. Furthermore, with one month of grinding, Zhang Yang would stand high chance of reaching Level 210 by the end of it.

By then, there would not be any Level GapSuppressions anymore when he would encounter any Level 240 bosses. Bosses that get spawned nowadays had HP Recovery Skills on them. If players are to be affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, they would suffer greatly while battling the bosses. Just imagine this. After all the effort has been spent to reduce the HP bar of the boss, the boss would just recover their HP back up just because the players were restricted by the Level Gap Suppression of the game. How would it be possible for the players to defeat any boss under that circumstance, then? F*ck that!

During the Professional League Championship battle, Zhang Yang and the others did not hold back at all when they were going up against the Eternal Flame. They were able to defeat the Eternal Flame by 5:0. Because of that, the accumulated points of Eternal Flame was now the same as the points that the Crimson Rage Battle Team had. Therefore, the two battle teams would need to compete against each other by next week.

Zhang Yang naturally hoped that the Crimson Rage could win. However, things did not go according to his prediction. Well, 5 out of 10 members of Crimson Rage Battle Team were absent. Because of that, the Eternal Flame won the battle with ease. After the match, Zhang Yang found out that the

5 members of Crimson Rage Battle Team were absent due to food poisoning! He found out about it through Snow Seeker.

Although there was no way to prove it, Zhang Yang knew that it was most probably because Zhong Xiu Hua did something behind everyone's back.

Well, that fellow was infamous for winning by any means necessary.

Although the championship still had one round remaining, the opponents of Crimson Rage Battle Team and Eternal Flame Battle Team were not powerful at all. So, the outcome of the battles had been confirmed since the beginning. This time, the Eternal Flame Battle Team would be the one who going to the next level together with the Silky Soft Battle Team.

Although Zhang Yang was extremely uncomfortable with the outcome of the competition, he had no choice but to accept it. However, the World League Championship would be filled with top Tier players from all over the world. At their current power level, the Eternal Flame would not even last one round.

The World League Championship would be held in Rio de Janeiro, a renowned city in Brazil. The championships would be held on the 22nd of January. Everyone had half a month to get themselves ready.

Zhang Yang had included Chen Xue Yao, Scorching Cloud and Mini Piglets in the Battle Team as well. He did that not because he hoped to keep an element of surprise for the opponents. He did it because the three of them would be able to acquire the +level reward if they are able to secure the champion seat for the World League Championship. If that works, the three of them would be able to instantly improve themselves.

As expected, during the final round of the Professional League Championship, Eternal Flames succeeded in acquiring the Champion seat for the fourth season of the championship. They won by scoring a total of 8 points. So, they would be joining the Silky Soft Battle Team in the World League Championships in Rio.

On 17th January, Zhang Yang and his gang of 10 had bought their plane

tickets to Brazil. Then, they departed for the country to join the World League Championship.

Rio was once the main capital of Brazil. At that time of the year, the temperature of the place was just pleasant. The beaches were filled with sexy scenes. The statue of 'Christ the Redeemer' seemed to be welcoming them with 'open hands'. All of the sceneries combined could really give a person traveling from foreign land a feel of the exotic atmosphere of Rio.

"Little Yang, it seems like its our time to strike back on them!" Fatty Han came along with his own money. His face was filled with murderous intent when he saw the members of Eternal Flame walking into the hotel.

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang nodded.

An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth. Well, Zhong Xiu Hua would have the absolute power to protect himself in his own country. However, the situation became totally different, the moment he set foot on the soil of another country. So what could happen next, then?

Chapter 802: Tesseract

Something as famous as the football team of Brazil would be the local gangsters of Brazil. They were so bold that they were daring enough to raid the police station! They even dared to break their gang members out of prison! Even the Italian Mafia would have to stare with their eyes wide open.

Meanwhile, tragic incidents tend to happen to those who do not really understand the place, especially the tourist from other countries.

The 10 members of the Eternal Flame were gathering up to have some fun before the competition. That was when they stumbled across the lair of local gangsters. Well, it wasn't their intention to walk right into the lair of gangsters in the first place though. After a small conflict, Zhong Xiu Hua and his goons were all taken. They let Longrich go, just because they wanted him to come back with some ransoms. However, even though all of them were saved by the end of it, Zhong Xiu Hua and the other 8 were poked in their *sses for two long days while they were held by the gangsters. That left a permanent scar in each of their memories, for sure.

When Zhong Xiu Hua and the others were escorted back to the hotel, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han looked at each other with a smile. They seemed to understand each other through their eyes.

Well, these two had been adding fuel to the flame right behind everyone's back. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had secretly offered 1,000,000 American Dollars to the local gangsters for them to f*ck Zhong Xiu Hua up. Well, a million dollars for kidnapping a few foreigners sounded like a deal too great to be true. That amount of money would be more than enough to send the local gangsters to raiding the police station. To them, as long as they are not kidnapping anyone related to their own country's government, they would even be daring enough to kidnap the Queen of England!

Meanwhile, Zhong Xiu Hua and his goons were poked in their sses for more than just a couple of times. Those who poked their sses were also

carrying Sexual Transmitted Disease and AIDS. The worst part about it, was that they had poked them without condoms! Although Zhong Xiu Hua and his goons swore to keep their mouths shut about this incident, they would still have to go to the hospital for medical attention after they get back to their own country.

When that happens, Zhang Yang would only need to expose Zhong Xiu Hua's Medical Record to the public, if he wants to destroy Zhong Xiu Hua's reputation and name.

Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was not the only one who knew how to frame people. Fatty Han was once involved with the gangsters before he joined 'God's Miracle'. So if he suddenly decides to play rough, he would be able to outperform Zhong Xiu Hua in a more professional manner.

Zhong Xiu Hua could only swallow his grudge quietly himself this time. Although he is a prince back in China, he had no power to influence the affairs that happen in Brazil. Furthermore, this incident was really embarrassing. He would really want to handle it as quietly as he could. If this thing ever gets out to public, not only would he become the laughing stock of the entire nation, he would also drag his father down to the mud of shame with him.

That night, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were drinking to themselves in the hotel room. Both of them were laughing out loud whenever they spoke about Zhong Xiu Hua's miserable experience. Well, by the looks of it, it seemed like they coincidentally went straight into the lair of the gangsters and got themselves f*cked. Zhong Xiu Hua would not be able to link Zhang Yang to the incident.

However, that incident happened because Zhang Yang was very much involved indeed. Zhang Yang could not help to smile vaguely whenever he thought of it.

Well, that little 'hiccup' did not affect the progress of the competition at all. The finals of the championship were held as scheduled, on 22nd January. The opening ceremony was held on schedule as well. As the champion of the last season's championship, the Silky Soft Battle Team

was the first team to perform on stage. Their first opponent would be the Pepsi Cola Battle Team from the Australia Region.

Upon handing in the line-up list for the match, Zhang Yang traded the [Book of Revelation] over to the little brat who was the first to walk into the arena.

That item could add a boost of 50% damage of the person who holds it. Although she was forbidden from using the special function to resurrect in the arena, an increase in her Attack power was good enough for her to slaughter up her opponent. Other than that, the three 'enhanced Skills' needed 24 hours to cooldown. The little brat would not be able to enjoy those perks as well.

Wei Yan Er's damage output was extremely powerful in the first place. She became even more threatening after she got boosted by the [Book of Revelation]. It did not take long before she slaughtered her opponent up and claimed victory over the first match.

Upon leaving the arena, Wei Yan Er traded the [Book of Revelation] to Sun Xin Yu who was going to walk into the arena for the second match. After Sun Xin Yu won the match, she passed the [Book of Revelation] to Han Ying Xue... because the item was not bound upon pickup, they could take turns at using the item.

5:0 Silky Soft Battle Team was able to secure the first win of the championship with their absolute strength. Meanwhile, the official was forced to implement one more new rule --- all items on the contestants would be bound to themselves once they enter the arena's preparation room. They would not be able to trade items to other players when they're inside.

Meanwhile, the Eternal Flames that carried the eternal butt-poke memories were soaking in depression together. They were wiped out cleanly by their opponents. Because of that, they had created a new record, the worst result of China Region in the championship since the past 3 times.

However, Zhang Yang and his gang had put their eyes on the rewards of

the champion position itself.

This time, the rewards were extremely attractive. Other than the 5,000,000 American Dollars, every single one of the champion battle team would be able to receive a +3 level reward. They would also be given a chance to draw an item. The best equipment Tier in the lucky draw would be an Ascended Tier equipment, while the lousiest would be a Holy Tier equipment. No matter what, the rewards were handsome and well worth it.

Other than that, the MVP of the finals would get one extra chance to draw another item.

Zhang Yang and his gang managed to progress from the quarterfinals into the semifinals, and from the semifinals into the finals!

The Silky Soft Battle Team was progressing towards the final like a hot knife cutting through butter. Even the powerful battle teams such as Hell Family, Land of Savages and Dark Palace only managed to last until the team battle before they get eliminated by the Silky Soft Battle Team. Every match with the Silky Soft ended with them scoring 2:0 as the final score. It was obvious that the Lone Desert Smoke could still dominate in regards of top Tier power level!

By the end of it, the Silky Soft won the championship as the Champion once again. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang managed to get the MVP title, at last. In other words, he would have two chances at the lucky draw.

Chen Xue Yao, Scorching Cloud, and Mini Piglet also got the chance to take part in the lucky draw. However, Scorching Cloud was completely out of luck. With a 50% chance of acquiring an Ascended Tier equipment, he only managed to get a Holy Tier equipment. Meanwhile, Chen Xue Yao and Mini Piglet had both acquired an Ascended Tier equipment for themselves out of the lucky draw.

Well, Scorching Cloud was not the only one who was out of luck. It seemed that the name 'Silky Soft' was a little low on luck, recently. Lost Dream and Hundred Shots only got a Holy Tier equipment. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies managed to get an Ascended Tier

equipment. Everyone could not help to feel superstitious for the moment.

As the captain of the Battle Team, Zhang Yang was the last one to put step up for the lucky draw. He kept praying in his heart that he would get lucky. Then, he pressed the round button on the stage and let fate decide.

The big screen behind him immediately began to flash. Then the indicator stopped on one of the boxes onscreen. After that, the screen zoomed into the box that the indicator had stopped on.

[Thor's Helmet] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +43,128

Agility: +3,208

{Level 7 Socket 1}

{Level 7 Socket 2}

{Level 7 Socket 3}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 86,250 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,312 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 220

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Well, it seemed that the gods finally felt pity on the Silky Soft Battle Team. Zhang Yang did not share the same fate as Lost Dream and the other men. He finally broke the curse and acquired one piece of Ascended Tier equipment.

As Zhang Yang was the MVP of the final, he got the chance to make another draw.

Upon pressing the round button again, the big screen behind him immediately began to flash once again. Then the indicator stopped on one of the boxes on screen again. After that, the screen zoomed in on the box

that the indicator had stopped on. Everything seemed to be repeat itself, however, the indicator stopped on a different box this time.

The item that appeared on the big screen was labelled with the name [Tesseract]. However, the details of the item were not shown on the big screen. It seemed that the only way of knowing what the item can do would be by signing into the game and studying the item up close.

The championship was over. Zhang Yang and his gang decided to take a few days off to enjoy the beach. After that, they went back to China.

This trip to Brazil was a perfect one. Not only they were able to win as a Champions, they also 'hurt' Zhong Xiu Hua big time. Meanwhile, that was just the beginning of everything. Now, all Zhang Yang needed to do was to expose the fact that some spoilt rich brat had been contracted with some sort of sexually transmitted disease. That should be enough to destroy his good name for good. That should force that f*cker to take the high road and commit some crimes that he could not walk away from. By then, Zhang Yang would be able to watch from the sidelines while benefitting from Zhong Xiu Hua's fall. He would be able to finally take that f*cker out of the picture for good.

After logging back into the game, Zhang Yang's body flashed three times. He instantly got elevated from Level 204 to Level 207, Meanwhile, the rewards that he acquired from the lucky draw were currently lying quietly in his inventory, waiting for him.

He quickly equipped the [Thor's Helmet]. His other attributes immediately got boosted up massively. Under the support of his {Vitality Aura}, his HP had reached 4,200,000. Meanwhile, his Attack had increased up to, ranging between 414,679 and 474,359. When Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} is present, Zhang Yang's insanely high Attack would increase by 10% again!

After that, he took out the [Tesseract] to begin studying it.

[Tesseract] (Special Item)

Use: Combines two equipment of the same type into one better equipment. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Required Level: 200

Bound upon pickup.

Oh? So this item can combine two equipment to form a new one which is more powerful than the two?

Zhang Yang quickly checked on the rules and regulations of the combine function of the cube.

Number one, there is a certain risk in combining the equipment. The success rate of combining is not always 100%. Meanwhile, the rate of success would depend on the matching rate of the two equipment. For example, if one combines a pair of shoes with a pair of gloves, even if the fail rate of combining them would not be 100%, it would still be 99%!

Other than that, the Type of the equipment was extremely important as well. For instance Cloth Armor should be paired with another cloth Armor. Leather Armor should be paired with another Leather Armor. Well, different types of armor seemed to be highly incompatible.

Meanwhile, combining two equipment with different Tiers would result in a high chance of failure as well.

Once you failed, you'll lose both equipments.

Upon a successful attempt, the players would have 20% rate of improving the Tier of the equipment and a 80% rate to enhance the attributes of the equipment. However, the sad case about this [Tesseract] was that the players would not be able to improve Holy Tier, Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment. That being said, players would not be able to get Ascended Tier equipment by combining two Holy Tier equipment. The best that this [Tesseract] could do was to enhance the Holy Tier, Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment.

If the two equipment had different levels and the combining process is a success, there would be only two outcomes: Number one, if the equipment gets an improvement on its Tier, then the level of the newly formed equipment would follow the level of the equipment with the lower level. Number two, if the equipment did not get a Tier upgrade, then the level of

the new equipment would be based on the level of the equipment which was higher.

Zhang Yang was very eager to try it out. He took out two Ethereal Tier gauntlets. Both of them were Level 180 Heavy Metal gauntlets. When he put the two equipment into the [Tesseract], the system immediately notified him with a message.

‘Ding! You’re about to combine [Obscured Lunar Gloves] and [Dark Putrefying Gloves]. The success rate is 70%. Do you wish to continue?’

Continue.

Instantly, the [Tesseract] began to radiate in a flash of colorful blinding light. The flash of light was shining into the surroundings like neon lights, for 10 seconds.

‘Ding! You’ve succeeded at combining [Obscured Lunar Gloves] and [Dark Putrefying Gloves]! You’ve acquired [Obscured Lunar Dark Putrefying Gloves]!’

[Obscured Lunar Dark Putrefying Gloves (Enhancement +1)] (Ethereal, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +320

Vitality: +4,400

Strength: +1,500

Agility: +650

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,800 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 8%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,132 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 180

Zhang Yang made a comparison and got what he wanted to know. If a successful fusion of two equipment did not improve the Tier of the combined equipment, then the new equipment would acquire a 10%

increase in all of its attributes.

Other than that, if one of the equipment was an Attack-type while the other was a Defence-type, the combined new equipment would combine the two types together as well. The only thing that remained unknown was, if the two equipment of Attack-type and Defence-type were combined successfully, how would the attributes turn out to be, then?

The [Tesseract] had a one hour cooldown. So Zhang Yang could only do another experiment one hour after his current attempt.

Chapter 803: Baa'ljilr the Imposter

One hour in the game is equal to 20 minutes in real life. Zhang Yang had spent over 10 days studying the [Tesseract]. After combining junk over 500 to 600 times, he finally got a rough idea on how the thing worked.

The lower the quality of the equipment used for the combination, the higher the chance that the Tier of the new equipment combined would improve. For instance, by combining two Black-Steel Tier equipment, the players would get approximately a 70% chance to improve the Tier of the new equipment to Green-Copper Tier. Meanwhile, combining two Green-Copper Tier equipment would grant players approximately 60% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Gray-Silver Tier. As for the others, combining two Gray-Silver Tier equipment would grant players approximately 50% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Yellow-Gold Tier. Combining two Yellow-Gold Tier equipment would grant players approximately 40% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Violet-Platinum Tier. Combining two Violet-Platinum Tier equipment would grant players approximately 30% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Mythical Tier. Combining two Mythical Tier equipment would grant players approximately 20% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Ethereal Tier. Last but not least, combining two Ethereal Tier equipment would grant players approximately a 10% chance of improving the Tier of the new equipment to Holy Tier.

Zhang Yang tightened his teeth and used two of the Holy Tier equipment that he had acquired from clearing Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern as the materials for the combination process. By the end of it, he was surprised by the outcome. He actually only managed to get one equipment with both offensive and defensive stats. Although the equipment had the Special that reduces Required Level by 20 levels, it was still an unfavorable outcome for him.

Well, the Holy Tier equipment that comes out from the dungeon would be bound upon pickup. Furthermore, only players who reach the Required

Level of the dungeon could enter the dungeon. Also, being eligible to enter the dungeon would also mean that the equipment acquired from the bosses could be equipped immediately on the spot. So, whether or not the equipment had the Special that reduces the Required Level by 20 to 30 levels, it would not really matter that much anymore.

Other than that, the combined equipment would stay 'bound upon pickup'. So, there was no way that Zhang Yang could sell the equipment to anyone! What's worse was that if he gets an equipment that was 'bound upon pickup' by combining one equipment that has 'bound upon pickup' function with another equipment that does not have 'bound upon pickup' function, his inventory would soon be full of 'rubbish'.

However, this [Tesseract] had proved its usefulness. At least the combined equipment would still have the Special that reduces Required Level by 20 levels. After all, only equipment that was dropped by super bosses in every map would have such a Special on each of them. Because of that, the equipment allowed players to equip them earlier on so that their power level could improve on the spot.

Even though the [Tesseract] could not improve the Tier of the equipment that goes beyond Holy Tier, it could still be used to enhance that powerful equipment. Well, now that all of them could not even collect a full set of Ascended Tier equipment, how would they be able to spare some Ascended Tier equipment to enhance the equipped ones?

Therefore, they could only consider enhancing their high Tier equipment when they finally collect a full set of their equipment.

Although he had spent most of his time figuring out the function of the [Tesseract], Zhang Yang only took tens of seconds to combine the equipment once every hour. That did not delay his grinding at all. Later on, Zhang Yang assembled Chen Xue Yao, Mini Piglet, and Scorching Cloud to aid them at grinding. He wanted to boost their levels to Level 200 as soon as possible. By doing so, the three of them would be able to join the main story quest 'Demon's Descent' as well.

On the other hand, Zhang Yang was also running around the entire map,

hoping that he could discover the method of unsealing Felice's third seal. By doing so, he would be able to improve Felice's Tier up to Ascended Tier! Unfortunately, he had not been able to locate any locations that would trigger Felice to feel something even after he had gone through almost every corner of all Level 240 maps.

Well, there was a possibility that the location to unseal Felice's third seal would be located in maps beyond Level 240.

In real life, the private investigator that Zhang Yang hired came back to him with something he had been wanting to have --- Zhong Xiu Hua's Medical Record and the photos that showed him leaving the hospital.

Zhang Yang immediately contacted one of his members from overseas and told him to post all the information on the net. The post had attracted quite a lot of attention. After all, the title of the post was something like 'An infamous spoilt rich brat involved in prostitution and got Aids-ed!'. Well, they had photos on the net to prove it as well.

Well, speaking of which, Zhong Xiu Hua had been quite passive in the past. If the post did not appear, the people in China Region might not even get to know that the person who was about to become the president would have such a son hidden somewhere. Of course, that could be because Zhong Xiu Hua's father was either protecting his son or himself. Usually, no one would know the sons and daughters of the person who was going to run the country.

However, thanks to the appearance of this post, a large number of people began to investigate the identity of Zhong Xiu Hua. After all, the post had quite a lot of clues about his identity, which made people wonder. Once the curiosity of the people was triggered, they would not stop until they finally found out about the truth. By the end of it, the identity of Zhong Xiu Hua was no longer being concealed.

Instantly, an uproar had been set upon the public opinion. Everyone was beginning to discuss the topic that appeared earlier on.

That... was truly a disgrace to the country!

Zhang Yang could no longer imagine Zhong Xiu Hua's current facial

expression. Well, he must have looked like a burned pig right now. He might be throwing things and breaking stuff all day long after the news was spread across the world. Truth to be told, it was not really a hopeless situation for Zhong Xiu Hua even he had been infected with sexually transmitted disease and AIDs. Though he might need to spend some real time to get treatment, However, that would have given him a hell of a time to be mentally tortured!

It would be unwise to go up against an educated hoodlum!

Zhang Yang humphed lightly. Well, if he could take Zhong Xiu Hua off the chessboard, it would be a big accomplishment that would even be considered as committing a good deed for the public. That should be enough for the gods to bless him with a fat baby son in the future.

Thinking of which, he immediately smiled. The only thing that kept him unhappy was because Luo Yu Rou was not willing to do an MRI scan to identify the gender of the baby. Zhang Yang could not understand it at all. Either it's a boy or a girl, the result had been confirmed the moment she was pregnant. So, why the secrecy then? Because of her, Zhang Yang could not calm his anxious heart or the urge to know whether it would be a boy or a girl.

Another month had passed. Zhang Yang had finally succeeded in aiding Chen Cue Yao and the other two new members at reaching Level 200! Well, he paid a price for babysitting them as well. He was currently Level 207 only. Sun Xin Yu and the others were about to catch up to his current level. However, he did not really mind it that much even if they had surpassed him at the moment. Well, one of the reasons was because there were no rewards for the first player to reach Level 210 or Level 220.

Furthermore, he was finally done with babysitting the new members to grind. So he would be able to grind like crazy for the upcoming days and secure back his Number One seat in leveling up.

Because he only had some vague memories of it, so he went over to the Hannua Town alone. Well, in Zhang Yang's previous life, the quest that triggers the 'Demon's Descent' was found on that map. However, Zhang

Yang had no idea at all on how to trigger the quest or which specific spot to trigger the quest.

Hannua Town was a heaven for the dwarfs and the goblins. It was really difficult to imagine the two vertically-challenged races staying together in harmony.

Zhang Yang began to clear out the quests available in the town. However, he was only requested to slay a few monsters or to gather some mining ores from the mining sites. There was no difficulty or whatsoever for him. Well, of course. He had also earned quite a substantial amount of Experience Points. Furthermore, the quests that he completed did not have any follow-ups at all. For the next few days, Zhang Yang had spoken to almost all NPCs with an exclamation mark on top of their heads. So he was about to run out of quests to do on that map!

"Hey, human. Help me deliver this batch of goods to Baa'ljilr. He is located by the west side of the town. I shall reward you with one gold piece if you complete my request." A goblin raised his head and looked at Zhang Yang. At that moment, Zhang Yang had completed seven delivery quests consecutively.

If he had known how to trigger the 'Demon's Descent', he would not have to clear out so many quests on the same map. Zhang Yang would have slashed the goblin to his death by then. This god damn goblin had really used him well to deliver stuff to others. He had already sent Zhang Yang back and forth multiple times. Now, the goblin was requesting that Zhang Yang get over to the far end of another map which was 7 maps from here! Zhang Yang flew for over two full days before he had finally completed the delivery quest. And now, he was about to be used by the goblin again.

All he could do was to endure it.

Zhang Yang took the goods over and placed them in his inventory. Then, he left town on the back of Whitey. Upon exiting the town, he switched the Phoenix pet out and flew towards the west. It did not take long before he saw a small valley by the mountain side. That was the location where

he was requested to drop the goods.

There was a lake at the middle of the valley. However, the lake was dark. The water seemed so dark that the lake was filled with black ink! Yuck! The water also had a kind of fishy smell! Yuck yuck! By the side of the lake, there was a wooden house. There was a simple dock with a small boat floating on the water right in front of the door of the house. A human, an old man was sitting on his rocking chair. He was fishing by the dirty lake with his fishing rod, calm and relaxed.

[Baa'ljilr the Imposter] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 230

HP: 303,150

Note: According to someone in Hannua Town, they have seen that Baa'ljilr turning into a dragon. Therefore, even the goblins that treasured treasures over their own lives were not daring enough to deal with Baa'ljilr personally. They were terrified that Baa'ljilr would swallow them alive!

Zhang Yang hopped down from his mount and walked towards Baa'ljilr. Then he said, "Old man, you've got a delivery!"

Baa'ljilr turned his head around and looked at Zhang Yang for a brief moment, then he said, "Just leave it on the doorstep and off you go!"

Zhang Yang followed the instruction and walked up to the doorstep. Just as he was about to take the item out form his inventory, he suddenly heard a long roar that shook the surroundings.

Followed by the sound of a huge wave of water whipping from the lake, a dark blue western dragon suddenly leaped out from the lake. In an instant, fishy-smelling water sprinkles that were splashed out from the lake began to rain down from the sky as if it was raining.

That western dragon was not too huge. It was only approximately 30 meters long and 10 meters tall. The size of the dragon was about the size of the dragon that the Dragon Knights ride back at White Jade Castle. Judging from the size of a dragon type, a dragon that is 30 meters long is still not yet a fully grown dragon. It could only be considered as a dragon

youngling.

[Black Dragon Andomark] (Elite, Dragon)

Level 235

HP: 117,500,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,394 – 158,394 (Based on Melee Attack, however, causes Chaos Damage)

Skills:

[Dragon Wing Strike]: Uses its wings and tail to sweep the surroundings. Other than the conical area right in front of the dragon, all enemy targets within the range of 30-meter radius will receive 120,000 Physical Damage.

[Dragon's Dominion]: Affects all enemy targets within the range of 30-meter radius with Chaos Effect with its Dragon's domineering aura. Targets will run around aimlessly. Lasts for 8 seconds.

[Dragon Claw Strike]: Causes 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

Note: Andomark was once a gigantic and powerful dragon. However, ever since it was heavily wounded, it had never recovered to full power.

The moment when the black dragon appeared, it immediately charged towards Zhang Yang, after letting out an intimidating roar. With its gigantic wings flapping at full speed, the air was swept around as if Zhang Yang was standing in the middle of a tornado!

"Aiya, it seems that this old man has fished up something unimaginably scary!" Baa'ljilr was still teasing while he was sitting his *ss on a chair. He seemed to be enjoying the show from the side lines. His eyes were filled with ferociousness while he was looking at what was going on.

Zhang Yang did not get infuriated. Instead, he felt joyful. It seemed that he had finally found the quest that could trigger the 'Demon's Descent'!

"Little Phoenix, Felice, come out now!" Zhang Yang cried out loud and

summoned Felice and Phoenix pet out into the open.

A legendary beast versus another legendary beast! Zhang Yang did not falter at all! There was no reason for him to get scared!

The Phoenix pet and the gigantic dragon seemed to be mortal enemies. The moment when Phoenix pet was summoned out, it began to open up its mouth and whip its enemy with its flaming tongue on the dragon. At the same time, Felice had transformed into her Dragonhawk form. She levitated into the sky and started bombarding the dragon with her {Fire Missiles}.

Speaking of Attack power, Andomark could only be as powerful as an Ethereal Tier. However, the Phoenix pet had become as powerful as the Ascended Tier! They were on completely different levels!

‘-128,034!’

‘-347,161!’

One could deal approximately 120,000 damage while the other one could deal up to approximately 340,000 damage. The difference was too obvious! However, Andomark was still an Elite Tier monster, after all. It had over 100 million HP on it. On the other hand, the Phoenix pet only had over 4,400,000 HP even after it got support from the {Vitality Aura}. So in terms of HP amount, the difference between the two of them was quite obvious as well.

Although the Attack power of the Black Dragon was far weaker than the Phoenix pet, it had the advantage of having a super high amount of HP. If the two huge birds ever face off each other head-on, Phoenix pet would lose by the end of the battle.

However, the Phoenix pet was merely an additional damage output for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was actually much more powerful than the Phoenix poet himself! With every slash landing on the black dragon, Zhang Yang looked like the ancient God of War. Every swing of his axe left a cold and sharp mark in the air as if they broke through the dimension itself. He managed to cause a tremendous amount of damage to Andomark.

Chapter 804: Death Source Stone

Following the improvement on the Tier of the weapon, it just kept looking better and better. With every solid hit on the target, the hit would look like it had broken the dimension itself. The dimension was cut open and black holes were seen floating in the middle of the air. The visual effect of the scene was just gorgeous.

‘-3,407,176!’

Zhang Yang could deal approximately 3,400,000 damage with each normal attack.

Huh? He did not even use his Skills yet. So how did he deal so much damage with his normal attacks then?

Upon taking a closer look at his battle logs, he finally noticed that his normal attack had triggered the special effect of the axe! That allowed him to deal 8 times of his initial damage!

The special effect of the axe was not easy to trigger at all. Since Zhang Yang picked up the axe, the Special Effect had only been triggered over 10 times. The rate of triggering was extremely low to the point that people would just ignore the description of the special effect. However, that was because the special effect was a little too oppressive once it triggers. If the rate is quite frequent, it would become too oppressive that the game would become unbalanced. How could you expect the monsters and the players to survive against the person with the axe, then?!

Judging from an extreme perspective, Zhang Yang’s normal attacks could trigger the special effect that could cause 8 times his initial damage. The special effect would also cause 10 times the initial damage that his {Rising Dragon Strike} could deal! The special effect of the axe could also cause 3 times of the initial damage that Zhang Yang’s Critical Hit and {Lucky Strike} could deal!

Although there was no telling if the weapon’s special effect and the {Rising Dragon Strike} could stack or not, however, the Critical Hit and the {Lucky Strike} would definitely let Zhang Yang deal a damage that would

be 6 times higher than he initially could. That two could stack, after all. Even though Zhang Yang could deal a damage that would be 18 times higher than the initial damage he could deal, based on the stacking of his {Dragon Rising Strike} with the special effect of the axe, he would be capable of causing 108 times of the initial damage that he could deal with his normal attack! That would be equal to causing an additional 10800% Melee Attack with his Skill attack!

With Zhang Yang's current basic Attack of 400,000, he would be able to deal 40,000,000 damage with each attack! If he just activates his God of War Transformation and the discussed circumstances work, then he could become capable of dealing more than a hundred million damage!

Obviously, the system could not allow that to happen!

Therefore, no matter if it is the 8 times damage of the weapon or the 10 times damage of the {Rising Dragon Strike}, the rate of triggering them was extremely low. So, it would be impossible for the two to be triggered at the same time. It would be even more impossible for Critical Hit and the {Lucky Strike} to be triggered at the same time as well.

Andomark was inflicted with massive damage. So it instantly roared out into the sky in rage. A shapeless wave of dragon's aura was beginning to expand into the surroundings. That was the monster's {Dragon's Dominion}! Zhang Yang, Phoenix pet and Felice were running around in random directions like flies without heads! They were afflicted by the Terror Effect!

However, it was just a futile attempt made by the gigantic dragon. After all, the monster had only 1,000,000,000 HP. That was not even nearly enough to go up against Zhang Yang alone. Now, the gigantic dragon had to face the wrath of three! The three of them combined their firepower and focused their attacks on the poor giant lizard with wings. It only took them approximately 3 minutes to slay the Black Dragon. Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, Andomark did not even drop a single thing upon its demise.

The dead body of the Black Dragon was as huge as a small mountain lying by the side of the lake. Although it was already dead, people would

still feel intimidated just by looking at it.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

Baa'ljilr stood up from his chair while clapping his hands. He walked up to Zhang Yang with a smile. Then he said, "That's some strength in you! Young man, you have the potential to become a great warrior!"

"Old man, is this how you treat your guests?"

"Haha! Young man! I've no idea what you're talking about! Why can't I understand what you're saying?"

Zhang Yang had no interest in arguing with the old man about the ambush of that Black Dragon. His main objective was to trigger the main story quest on the old man. He smiled and said, "Alright, since that the goods are delivered here safely, it's about time I leave."

"Wait!" The tactic of 'retreat for the sake of advancing' took effect. Baa'ljilr quickly stopped Zhang Yang from leaving, "Young man, that was just a small test. I hope you won't be too offended!"

If that happened in the real world, the sudden ambush of the Black Dragon would have killed 99% of the players who come here! Obviously, this NPC was not a friendly person at all. So, he could be related to the main story quest 'Demons's Descent'.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Old man, so why did you arrange such a test for me, then?"

"Young man, you can't really believe that the world is at peace, right? Even though the world looks peaceful at the moment, darkness is spreading slowly. The spectres are lurking in the shadows and the demons are waiting for the perfect time to reveal themselves as we speak! They might just launch a large-scale invasion over the entire world! Are you willing to live in a world filled with the imminent danger of death? Are you willing to sit on your *ss waiting for impending doom to hit you in the face?" Baa'ljilr was speaking in an earnest tone.

Zhang Yang pouted and said, "So, what's the deal then?"

"Those who are aware should take the initiative to eliminate the dangers before the dangers could spread to the others! Young man, this is a great opportunity to become a warrior to be remembered over a thousand years! As long as you can succeed, every poet, every man on earth will sing your name and shout out your deeds. Your name will be carved on history itself!"

Baa'ljlir tried to convince Zhang Yang with all his own imaginative words.

Zhang Yang held the urge to slam his feet on the face of Baa'ljlir. Then he said, "So, how do we get rid of the dangers that you speak of?"

"Hehe, I have a good idea! Unfortunately, I'm too old and I'm not powerful enough to carry out my own plan. But you! You're different, my young warrior! You've defeated a Black Dragon and passed my test! You have the potential to become the hero that everyone deserves! Now, let us act on it! Allow me to make you into a fine and renowned hero!"

"Old man, just get to the point already. What's the first step then?"

"Hehe... you've got to be a little more patient, young man. Steel is not forged in a single day. A hero is not born in a single day! Allow me to explain my plan to you. I'm planning to make a sacred enchantment to shield our world. The enchantment will be spread across the entire sky. By then, the demons and the spectres will automatically die as long as they are standing within the effective area of the sacred enchantment. By then, the spectres will no longer be able to be born ever again. while the demons will not dare to invade our world!"

Baa'ljlir grinned and said, "However, we will require too many rare and unique materials in order to make the gigantic sacred enchantment! Young man, if you want to be a hero, you must first gather all materials and come back to me. When the Sacred Enchantment is created, you will become the hero of this world!"

"Alright, tell me about all materials that you need!"

"Calm your man tits! This cannot be completed in a day or two. Firstly, you'll need to bring me some [Death Source Stones]!"

‘Ding! Baa'ljilr the Imposter has given you a quest: Death Source Stone. Do you accept?’

Accept.

[Death Source Stone] (Difficulty: Rank-C)

Description: Baa'ljilr wants to build a gigantic sacred enchantment to fend off demons and spectres. Meanwhile, creating a sacred enchantment will require a large number of previous and valuable materials. The first material required is the Death Source Stone. You can acquire them by slaying Death Shadow Canine Zoan by the Death Shadow Mine. Of course, if you're an outstanding miner, you can also choose to mine for the Death Source Stone yourself!

Completion: Mine for the Death Source Stone 0/200

The difficulty of the quest was only Rank-C. That being said, the monsters must be only Elite Tier. There might not even be an Ethereal Tier boss around the area.

Zhang Yang did not contact Sun Xin Yu and the others. He decided to complete the quest on his own. After flying through the sky for about 2 hours, he had finally arrived at the Death Shadow Mine.

There were a few monsters with dog's heads. Their bodies looked just like the dwarfs. They were pushing carts in and out of the mine at the moment. So these must be the Death Shadow Canine Zoan the description of the quest mentioned earlier on. These monsters slung a mining hoe over their shoulders. They had gold teeth all over their mouths as well. Just like the dwarfs who are born to be Blacksmiths, these dog head monsters are born to be natural miners. Whenever there is a mine, there would basically be Death Shadow Canine Zoan around.

[Death Shadow Canine Zoan] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 225

HP: 112,500,000

Magic Attack: 62,920 – 82,920

Skill:

[Fire Ball]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target.

Casting: 2 seconds.

Faced with a bunch of Elite Tier Magic type monsters, Zhang Yang would really have a hard time if he engages into battle with these monsters without the support of Felice's {Tree of Life}. Well, with Felice by his side, things were much simpler. Although Felice's power level was currently stuck at Holy Tier, however, these monsters only had the power level of an Ethereal Tier monster. So, she would not have any problem maintaining Zhang Yang's HP during the battle.

Zhang Yang patted his mount and descended down to the ground. He managed to lure the monsters in the surroundings of the mine entrance with one go --- well, naturally, Zhang Yang would not put himself at risk of being swarmed up by luring more than 6 Magic type monsters at the same time. Instead, he let Phoenix pet be the Tanker in this battle.

Because the Phoenix pet was immune to Fire Damage, even if there are 60 of these monsters or 600 of these monsters, the Phoenix pet would still be able to stand there and tank against the monster horde!

Zhang Yang only maintained luring one monster at a time. He would activate his {Thunder Strike} and {Horizontal Sweep} from time to time to deal some damage to the other 5 monsters as well. Because the Phoenix pet had the damage output of an Ascended Tier and its flames were AoE attacks, the aggro of the other 5 monsters were firmly fixed on the Phoenix pet.

The battle was so simple and easy for Zhang Yang. It only took him 3 minutes to slay the first Death Shadow Canine Zoan. Meanwhile, the other five monsters only had approximately 70% HP left on each of them. Well, they were being bombarded with Phoenix's attacks and Zhang Yang's AoE Skill attacks at the same time. In another 7 minutes, Zhang Yang and Phoenix pet had taken care of the remaining monsters.

Well, the Phoenix pet could really perform like a god when it comes to battling these Fire type Elite Tier monsters. Zhang Yang commanded

Phoenix pet to charge into the mining cave. They would shoot the moment they see monsters. Once they manage to lure the monsters, they would run or retreat to a safe position before killing them. Well, this time, they lured over 100 Death Shadow Canine Zoans before camping at a corner and slaughtering the monsters up.

Theoretically speaking, Magic type monsters behave differently compared to Melee type monsters. Once their numbers become abundant, players would no longer be able to deal damage to the monsters. These 100 monsters could definitely attack their target at the same time. They could deal an average of 14,000,000 damage at a time! Even with Zhang Yang's insanely high Defence, he would still receive approximately 8,000,000 damage if all 100 monsters attack him once at the same time! That amount of damage would have been more than enough to instantly kill Zhang Yang!

However, encountering the Phoenix pet was a tragic experience for all the Death Shadow Canine Zoan. All Magic Attacks that landed on the Phoenix pet were 'Immune'. Because of the aggro system, the monsters could not abandon Phoenix pet and switch their target over to Zhang Yang. So, they were only able to throw countless ineffective {Fire Balls} at the Phoenix pet.

About 20 minutes later, 100 Elite Tier monsters were all dead on the ground. Zhang Yang had earned over 10,000,000,000 Experience Points from slaying them all. His Experience Bar had obviously increased by a large chunk!

Awesome!

Zhang Yang bent down and picked up all the loot. The money and the equipment could come later. The most important thing would be the quest item.

However, it was quite depressing because out of the 100 Elite Tier monsters, only 32 of them dropped a piece of [Death Source Stone]. It seemed that the drop rate of this quest item was a little too low. Well, judging from the current pace of his progress, he would need to repeat the

same process over 6 times to accumulate a total of 200 pieces of [Death Source Stone]!

However, when he cleared out all monsters in the mine, he only managed to collect a total of 107 pieces of [Death Source Stone]. So Zhang Yang had to wait for another 15 hours before the monsters in the mine are respawned. Only then, he could repeat the process until he completes the quest.

If Zhang Yang chose to be a miner in the start, he could have used the free time to mine around. According to the quest description, Miners could acquire the [Death Source Stones] by mining in the Death Shadow Mine. By doing so, he would be able to collect more [Death Source Stones] to complete the quest. Therefore, he could not do anything now. He could only grind at another spot around the area until the Death Shadow Canine Zoan are respawned before he comes back to the mine to finish what he had started.

Chapter 805: Poseidon's Pearl

15 hours later, Zhang Yang returned to the Death Shadow Mine once again. The Death Shadow Canine Zoans had been respawned. Zhang Yang went back into the mine to finish up what he had started. Once again, the Phoenix pet was able to show off its might. It only took up about an hour before they cleared out the monsters in the mine again. By doing that, Zhang Yang had finally acquired 200 pieces of Death Source Stone.

Upon getting back to Baa'ljilr, that old man took the bag full of [Death Source Stones] and had a look at them. Then he revealed a contented expression on his face and said, "Young man, you're truly remarkable. You've not let me down a single bit! The hope of acquiring the title of 'Hero who saves the world' is real now!"

Zhang Yang almost popped a vein or two. This old man was obviously a cheater! F*ck!

'Ding! You've completed a quest: Death Source Stone. You've received a reward: 50,000,000 Experience Points.'

"However, now is not the time to feel proud just yet. Now is not the time to feel relieved yet!" Baa'ljilr's face suddenly turned serious as he spoke, "Now, we need the second item. That's called the 'Poseidon's Pearl!'. However, the 'Poseidon's Pearl' is currently in the possession of Alreanno, the King of the Gunhar Kingdom. It will not be easy at all to get the item!"

Zhang Yang did not say a word. He knew better than anyone that there would not be a quest that cannot be completed. There must be some hidden agenda or drama mode behind it.

As expected, Baa'ljilr continued to speak, "However, Alreanno's a lustful bastard that loves to f*ck around. Recently, he's obsessed with a widow. He will just visit her and stay over at her place once every few days. To avoid being blamed by his fellow ministers and chancellors, he will only bring a few guards along with him. That's an opportunity that we can't just pass on! Young man, go to the widow's house and wait there. You can wait for Alreanno to arrive and snatch the 'Poseidon's Pearl' from him!"

‘Ding! Baa'ljilr the imposter has given you a quest: Poseidon’s Pearl! Do you accept?’

Accept.

[Poseidon’s Pearl] (Difficulty: Rank-S)

Description: Baa'ljilr needs you to locate the Poseidon’s Pearl and bring it him so that he can continue to create the Sacred Enchantment. The Poseidon’s Pearl is the possession of Alreanno. You can go to the house of Lydia The Widow and for the arrival of Alreanno. Then, you can snatch the Poseidon’s Pearl from him.

Number of players: 1

Completion: Acquire the Poseidon’s Pearl 0/1

A quest with a Rank-S difficulty? Could there be an Ascended Tier boss that he needs to face by the end of the quest? Well, he’s all alone in this quest at the moment. How would it be possible for him to take on an Ascended Tier boss all by himself then? The quest limited it so that only one person could complete the quest! What the f*ck?!

However, the game would not give players a quest that cannot be completed. So Zhang Yang was very sure that there would be an opportunity that would change the situation. So, he decided to go along with it for the moment to observe.

Zhang Yang left the valley on Phoenix pet and flew towards the Gunhar Kingdom. That kingdom was just on the same map. Although Alreanno had the ‘King of Gunhar Kingdom’ title, Gunhar Kingdom was just a small city, so to speak. The firm and strong castle walls had half of the city protected. However, the other half of the city was just built by a cliff. The geographical spot of the city seemed to be very vulnerable.

Zhang Yang did not ride into the city by force. He landed before he entered the city. Then he switched Whitey out and rode all the way to the entrance of the city. Upon paying 10 gold pieces as the entrance fee, he finally entered the lonely city which was hanging by a cliff.

The army force of this city was extremely powerful. The place was

crawling with soldiers that wore shiny armors. Every single one of them was Elite Tier as well. Zhang Yang was not idiotic enough to cause trouble so that he could get himself killed. If he ever tried to do something stupid, he would not be capable of f*cking up so many Elite Tier monsters at the same time. Instead, he would be the one who gets f*cked up by them! After all, not all soldiers in the city were Fire type users.

Zhang Yang asked around and realized that Lydia the widow was quite famous among the locals. She appeared pretty and sexy as well. In other words, she's seductive, all the time. She's been known to be the King's favorite 'social butterfly'. However, her attitude seemed to have suddenly changed since a month ago. There was no longer any news about her having affairs with other men in the city. The people in the city could not help but feel curious as to why.

Well, that was obvious, actually. Who would still so daring enough for lining up to stick their d*cks into the King's favorite woman?!

Lydia was currently living in a three-story building with a little sprinkle of the Europe Style. There were two peasants guarding at the entrance to the building. Well, because the streets were filled with soldiers patrolling around, it would be a very bad idea to charge into the building like an idiot. If anything were to happen, the King would never set foot in that building ever again.

Well, it would not be impossible for a person to sneak into the building. The best way to do it was to use stealth approach like how Thieves did. As for players of other Classes, they would be needing a little help --- Invisible Potion, Effects and Void-type of effects that could provide players a 10-second invisibility period.

Zhang Yang would be an exception. He activated his {Shadow of the Void} and walked right into the building like a king. He went straight to the third floor of the building and lay quietly below a bed. With the bed sheets covering the sides of the bed, even if someone squats down, they would not be able to see Zhang Yang at all.

Zhang Yang came in while he was in the void, where time stopped. After

that, he waited for over an hour. It was about midnight before he heard something. He heard a man and a woman talking to each other. Well, they were basically teasing each other in a sensual manner. It did not take long before they opened the door and head into the room. After that, Zhang Yang heard a sound again. It was the sound of them getting onto the bed. After a short while, the bed began to shake in a regular rhythm.

Zhang Yang could not help to frown intensely. Could the game be virtually projecting a sexual scene as well for the players to see?

However, thing happened too suddenly and ended too suddenly as well. Before Zhang Yang could react, the bed stopped shaking. Right after the bed stopped shaking, he could only hear them snoring.

Zhang Yang quickly crawled out from the bottom of the bed. All he could see was a man and a woman cuddling each other on the bed. The man was only wearing a pair of short pants while the woman was wearing a complete set of pajamas. Her exposed skin was so snow white and she had a pretty face that could mesmerize any man who lay their eyes on her face. No wonder the king was so obsessed with her.

[Alreanno] (Normal. Humanoid)

Level: 235

HP: 303,390

Note: He's the King of the Gunhar Kingdom. He's a lustful man.

There was an aquamarine pearl hanging right around the king's left wrist. The pearl was flashing constantly to remind the players that it was a quest item.

However, the quest seemed too easy to be true. This did not look like a Rank-S quest at all!

Zhang Yang could not help to feel uneasy about the current situation. However, his hands were already set into motion to retrieve the pearl. After Zhang Yang took the pearl of the wrist, suddenly, Alreanno opened his eyes wide and stared at Zhang Yang like his life was depending on it! That glare! It was horrifying! He was awakened by Zhang Yang's presence!

The king quickly shouted with his dense and loud voice, "Guards! Guards!"

A visible ripple impact was seen passing through Zhang Yang. Instantly, he was afflicted with a negative effect.

[Traitor of the Kingdom]: You cannot mount onto any pet mounts, battle mounts for the moment (Inheritance Transformations will not be allowed to fly in the sky as well). You cannot use any teleportation items or your teleportation Skills. The soldiers of the Gunhar Kingdom are pursuing you. Lasts for 24 hours. As the King of Gunhar Kingdom has enforced martial law, you will not get any help from anyone. Anyone will not be allowed to leave or enter the Kingdom. If you're killed during this period of time, the 'Poseidon's Pearl' will be lost automatically.

... so this should be the reason why the quest was ranked as a Rank-S quest now! What kind of insane setting is this!?

"Protect the king!" the guards by the entrance charged into the room. Four soldiers fully equipped with a complete armor set raised their weapon up and launched their attacks at Zhang Yang.

[Palace Elite Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,335 – 158,335

Skill:

[Punt]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target, pushing the target backward.

Zhang Yang quickly summoned Felice. However, summoning a pet would require 2 seconds, which was longer than the time the enemies needed to land their attacks on Zhang Yang. After some pondering, Zhang Yang activated his Accessory to grant him 'Invincibility' before he began to summon his Phoenix pet.

Although the negative effect 'Traitor of the Kingdom' had disabled

Zhang Yang's ability to mount onto his pet, Zhang Yang still had {Beast Taming} for him to summon his pet out to use as a companion in battle.

With Felice's ability to heal and Phoenix pet's insanely powerful attacks to aid him in battle, Zhang Yang could easily receive the attacks of the four Elite Tier soldiers without any worries. After all, Zhang Yang had a super high offense and super high defense at the same time. The only thing that got Zhang Yang annoyed was the {Punt} that the soldiers used on him. The attacks would send Zhang Yang flying back a little, knocking him into the walls for a bit.

About 7 to 8 minutes later, Zhang Yang had finally taken care of the four Elite Tier monsters. He quickly seized the opportunity and ran like hell. If he ever delays his escape, he would be swarmed up by countless NPCs and die.

After charging down to the ground floor, Zhang Yang disappeared into the streets. He had already found a quiet spot to hide himself for the moment.

"Intruder detected!"

Right before he could sit his hot *ss down, another 6 Elite Tier soldiers suddenly appeared and launched their attacks at Zhang Yang without mercy.

Kill kill kill!

Zhang Yang quickly struck back at them and took out the 6 Elite Tier monsters. However, that consumed quite a lot of his time. When he was done, he could already hear the harsh footsteps coming from afar. The sounds of those metal boots stomping on the surface of hard pebbled roads were sharp and harsh.

Zhang Yang quickly moved his *ss and blended himself into the streets again.

However, he would be discovered no matter where he tried to hide. The patrols were so sharp that they could identify Zhang Yang in a matter of seconds! Then, a fierce battle would be triggered between Zhang Yang and

the soldiers that found him. Each encounter had exactly 6 Elite tier soldiers. Each encounter would take approximately 15 minutes. If he could not take out the 6 guards within 15 minutes, there would be a second wave of soldiers, 12 of them to be precise, arriving to aid the first wave of the soldiers in taking Zhang Yang out.

Even though Zhang Yang had never been caught up by a platoon of 12 soldiers before, he could predict that if he does not take out the second wave of 12 within a set period of time, there would be a third wave with more soldiers coming to get him. Therefore, he could never afford to be captured by the second wave soldiers. Or else, he would have to face endless waves of soldiers until his HP bar gives out.

The first two hours of hide-and-seek was simple for him. However, the first wave of the soldiers had increased to 8 soldiers. That was when the situation became more challenging than he could anticipate! Fortunately, Phoenix pet was still performing at its best. Even though there were two extra soldiers in the battle, the Phoenix pet could spread its attack on all target within range as long as Zhang Yang make sure the monsters were all gathered within the attack range of the Phoenix pet. Therefore, the battle was not prolonged much at all.

The DPS of the Phoenix pet was approximately 170,000 damage. Clearing out a HP bar of approximately 100,000,000 HP would only take about 11 minutes. Well, the attacks of the Phoenix pet were AoE in nature, after all. So it would not matter if the number of monsters are abundant or not --- only under the circumstance that the monsters are standing close enough to each other.

Therefore, Zhang Yang needed not to worry about the Attack power of his side. The only thing that he needed to worry about was the number of monsters. If the number of monsters become so abundant that the situation might get out of hand, then the monsters would only need to use {Punt} on him until he no longer can keep the monsters in one spot for the Phoenix pet to do its work.

By the fifth hour, the number of Elite Tier monster each wave had increased to 10. Furthermore, they would also bring along 20 Normal Tier

Soldiers. Although these Normal Tier monsters could not really cause much damage to Zhang Yang, they were also equipped with {Punt}. These Normal Tier monsters really had Zhang Yang staggering around without having much chance to stand on his feet. Therefore, the monsters in the surrounding were beginning to scatter around, causing quite a hassle for the Phoenix pet to focus attacks on them.

Fortunately, Normal Tier monsters only had about 300,000 HP on them. Zhang Yang could have wiped them all out with his {Horizontal Sweep}. Although that might give him a little problem, it would not be a fatal one at least.

Phew!

Zhang Yang gave it some thought before he decided to use the 'Demon's Portal' on the eighth hour. Then, he would use his God of War Transformation on the tenth hour. So let's see who turns out to be better, then!

Chapter 806: RE:Gates of Hell's

Come the sixth hour, and the number of soldiers in each wave had been increased up to 12 Elite Tier soldiers and 40 Normal Tier soldiers!

If Zhang Yang only has to deal with so many monsters at the same time, he could not be worried at all. The problems lie in the fact that each of these monsters could use {Punt} on him! With more than 50 monsters chaining their {Punt} consecutively on Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang would not even get the chance to fall. He would be hit consecutively to the point that he would stay in the air for all eternity!

Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang still had help from Phoenix pet and Felice. The pet and the battle companion were told to focus on wiping out the Normal Tier monsters first, before turning their attention towards wiping out the Elite Tier monsters.

Although the Elite Tier monsters were still a little too abundant, Zhang Yang could still take it. Furthermore, Felice could also constantly heal Zhang Yang, so Zhang Yang would not face any life-threatening situation for the moment. However, the number of Elite Tier monsters had been increased up to 12 in each wave. Zhang Yang spent substantially more time in the air now. Therefore, the monsters would scatter into the surroundings a little, because Zhang Yang was not there to keep them in line. Because of that, Phoenix pet was affected as well. They actually took almost 15 minutes to clear out the entire wave of monsters this time.

Moreover, the next wave of soldiers had arrived as well. The second wave of reinforcement had 24 Elite Tier monsters and 80 Normal Tier monsters! What the f*ck!?

Zhang Yang did not dare to go head-on with so many monsters. So, he quickly put Felice back into the Battle Companion Slot and unsummoned Phoenix pet. Without any hesitation, he activated his {Shadow of the Void} and went into another dimension before the reinforcements could reach him. The moment he was in the other dimension, he ran like hell. After 20 seconds of insane running, Zhang Yang managed to run over quite some

distance before he was forced to jump out of the void. Currently, he had ran over to another street.

Phew! Zhang Yang tried to catch his breath. Then he quickly looked for another place to hide. He knew he needed to be ready for the next wave of monsters.

A brief moment later, a new wave of soldiers had been spawned near Zhang Yang. Well, Zhang Yang had already summoned out Felice and Phoenix pet earlier on while waiting for the soldiers to be spawned. So, they quickly wiped out the 40 Normal Tier monsters first. His luck was good this time. The three of them only took 12 minutes to wipe out the entire wave of monsters. So Zhang Yang had a bit more time to run away.

The duration required to clear out the entire wave of soldiers would depend on luck as well. Sometimes, the monsters would use their {Punt} at the same time, and sometimes they would use their {Punt} consecutively to form a chain attack. Because of that, the duration of clearing out the soldiers would differ, based on the situation. If the chain attack was a long one, they would require much more time to kill all the monsters. When that happens, they might spend more than 15 minutes to clear the monsters out. When that does happen, the reinforcements would arrive and Zhang Yang would have to deal with more tons of sh*t.

Fortunate for him, Zhang Yang had a very useful Skill in such situations, his {Shadow of the Void} for him to escape with ease. However, in none of the battles, the monsters had chained their attacks together so perfectly that two of them were still alive after Zhang Yang spends 15 minutes trying to wipe them out. Even though Zhang Yang had activated his {Shadow of the Void} to escape, when he reappears after 20 seconds, the two monsters were leading an entire army of soldiers to pursue him from the back!

Only he knew by then that he could escape, however, he must make sure that the first wave of every encounter must be wiped out first in order to escape safely. That was the system's setting. Or else, he would have to be pursued by the remaining monsters and the reinforcement monsters altogether. If he ever delays the battles any longer, he would be as good as

dead when the next wave of monsters arrive to join into the battle.

After killing the two soldiers in the massive army, Zhang Yang did not have enough time to even keep Phoenix pet into the inventory. He could only activate his {Rearm} to clear out all the cooldowns of his Skills before he could use his {Shadow of the Void} to escape again!

However, even though he could not ride on the back of his pet mount, it did not mean that the Phoenix pet could not fly in the sky. All the big bird needed to do was to flap its two gigantic wings and send itself into the air. Then the Phoenix pet would no longer need to worry about being hurt by the soldiers. After Zhang Yang came out from the {Shadow of the Void}, the Phoenix pet descended lower to engage back into battle with the monsters. As summoning and unsummoning Felice did not require chanting time at all, Zhang Yang had kept Felice back into her slot long before he acted on this.

So Zhang Yang had been hitting and running for the entire time. He would need to repeatedly do the same thing until he wipes out the first wave of the monsters. Well, he had {Shadow of the Void}. So he had one less thing to worry about. Even if he is swarmed up by the monsters, he would still be able to get away easily. It was fortunate that the system did not design the soldiers to have the ability of a 'radar' to detect their target.

The next two hours were tormenting and long for Zhang Yang. However, he had managed to survive the ordeal. He laughed out loud because he knew, it was about time! It was his turn to strike back at the monsters that were pursuing him!

When the new wave of the monsters were spawned, the number had been increased up to 14 Elite Tier monsters and 50 Normal Tier Monsters!

{Gate of Hell} activated!

Zhang Yang summoned a 'Gate of Hell' and took out the Normal Soldiers in an instant.

Because the Phoenix pet was completely under Zhang Yang's command, the Phoenix pet would just stop attacking at the final moment right before the monsters were about to die. Then, Zhang Yang would strike out the

final blow to all the monsters afterward. It only took about 20 seconds before all 50 Normal Tier monsters collapsed onto the ground. Then, one after another, the souls of the monsters were flying into the 'Gate of Hell'. The next thing was the dark radiating gate of hell that was beginning to open its door. Then, countless demons with two large twisted horns right on their foreheads walked right out of the gate!

The situation suddenly changed! Zhang Yang suddenly had over 50 Elite Tier 'brothers' to beat up the remaining 14 Elite Tier soldiers in the vicinity!

Beat them up!

The demonic monsters that came out from that gate were not weaker than the Elite Tier monsters. At the same time, the demons had the advantage in their number over the monsters. It only took a while for the demons to take care of the remaining soldiers.

However, the demons would not listen to Zhang Yang's commands at all, even though they would not attack him. Meanwhile, the demons would pick their targets based on their aggro system. Well, 8 out of 14 Elite Soldiers died in the hands of the demons, so Zhang Yang only managed to gain extra 6 demons by the end of the battle.

Because Zhang Yang only took approximately 3 minutes to clear out this wave's monsters, he would need to wait more than 10 minutes before the reinforcements could arrive. So Zhang Yang decided to take the initiative to strike. He went around the streets to lure any guards or soldiers that he could find over to the 'Gate of Hell' before slaying them.

--- The 'Gate of Hell' could only last for 20 minutes. So, Zhang Yang must slay as many monsters as he could within that period of that in order to turn the souls of the slain monsters into demons. After all, he still had 4 hours to go before he can complete the quest.

About 10 minutes later, the reinforcement had finally arrived. Meanwhile, the number of the soldiers were shockingly high this round. There were a total of 28 Elite Tier soldiers and 100 Normal Tier soldiers charging towards Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang did not sit around, waiting for them to come. He charged towards the monsters and launched the first attack on them. He activated his invincible Skills and took out the 100 Normal Tier monsters in one go! Because the Attack power of the Elite Tier monsters were much higher than the Normal Tier monsters, the demons had fixed their aggro on the Elite Tier monsters naturally. Meanwhile, 98 out of 100 Normal Tier soldiers died by the hands of Zhang Yang. Instantly, Zhang Yang gained a total of 98 Elite Tier demons!

So how would the 28 Elite Tier soldiers be able to hold their ground against that many Elite Tier demons then? They were instantly wiped out clean, of course. Meanwhile, the tragic part about the incident was that Zhang Yang only managed to kill two of them with his bare hands. He only managed to earn 2 extra demons because his other demons had swarmed over the remaining soldiers like a tidal wave.

After a brief moment of rest, another new wave of soldiers was spawned. This time, the number of monsters had been increased up to 14 Elite Tier soldiers and 50 Normal Tier soldiers.

As usual, Zhang Yang took the liberty to slay the monsters first before his other 'goons' could make a move. By doing so, he managed to add another 47 demons under his ranks. Meanwhile, the 'Gate of Hell' had collapsed before the remaining 14 Elite Tier soldiers could be killed --- 20 minutes had passed!

Fortunately for Zhang Yang. The demons that came out of the 'Gate of Hell' would not vanish even after the gate is destroyed after the effective duration. As long as they were not killed, they would be able to stay and slaughter their prey for 4 hours before they are banished back to their underworld. Of course, these demons would not be able to roam any more than 1,000 meters from the spot where the 'Gate of Hell' was summoned.

Well, that range was already vast enough for Zhang Yang to run around without having any worries in his mind. Zhang Yang did not have to leave the range to hide. He could just find a spot and camp there until the quest ends. He could just kill whatever number of soldiers that come at him.

Ninth hour, tenth hour!

The new wave had over 16 Elite Tier soldiers and 100 Normal Tier soldiers. Zhang Yang could not help to feel an itch for thinking aloud. If only he could have the 'Gate of Hell' by his side, he could have summoned another 100 to 200 demons to join under his ranks!

Although the number of soldiers had substantially increased, they were never going to be able to survive the onslaught of Zhang Yang's 200+ demons! Well, all of the demons he had were Elite Tier, after all. They could easily crush the soldiers!

That was how war looked like. If the number of both sides were equal, then the two sides would basically suffer equally if they went against each other head-on. However, if one of the two sides had the advantage in numbers, then that side would be able to reduce their losses. Meanwhile, if the difference in the number of two sides is too great, the side with more soldiers would be able to crush their opposing side with even lesser losses.

Just imagine this. Under the circumstance where every man has the same strength, 100 strong men could instantly end 1 strong man. There was nothing to explain here. It was pure math. That 1 man would not even be able to deal any damage to anyone before he is taken out.

Therefore, even though there was no way of healing the demons, but the demons still had the absolute advantage in number over their opponents. So they were able to take out their enemies without taking much damage. They could also take out their enemies and get out of their battle mode to recover their HP.

Initially, Zhang Yang had intended to use his God of War Transformation to stay alive. However, after noticing that he had over 200 demons working for him, he knew that he could crush his enemies with ease. Well, the 200+ demons would be enough to crush anything in the vicinity!

It was a total slaughter. Zhang Yang went through the remaining 2 hours with ease. After that, the negative effect on him vanished.

Meanwhile, the first batch of demons he summoned were kicked back to

the initial spot where they were summoned. The number of demons was getting smaller and smaller by the second. However, that did not matter anymore. Well, Zhang Yang had completed his quest.

Time to go!

Zhang Yang hopped onto the back of Phoenix pet and left the city, leaving the 100+ demons behind to cause chaos over the soldiers in the city. Unfortunately, soldiers and monsters that were slain by the demons would not give Zhang Yang any Experience Points. After all, these demons were 'borrowed' from the underworld. Their real master was the Hell Lord of the Abyss! So, the benefits would all go to him, of course!

As he hustled back without any interruptions, Zhang Yang arrived back at Baa'ljilr's location after flying for a while.

"You stinky old man! You almost got me killed!" Zhang Yang threw the 'Poseidon's Pearl' over to Baa'ljilr as he was scolding the old man in rage.

"Ah ha!" Baa'ljilr actually laughed out loud. Then he quickly kept the 'Poseidon's Pearl' into his sleeve and said, "My young warrior, please calm down! There's no need to be angry! How about this? I'll give you my family heirloom as a compensation!"

'Ding! You've received an item: Snake King's Chest Plate!'

[Snake King's Chest Plate] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +1,280

Vitality: +45,088

Strength: +7,933

Agility: +3,353

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 90,170 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,434 Damage when being hit.

Required Level: 230

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Now, that's something worthy of Zhang Yang's effort and time! Finally, a piece of Ascended Tier equipment as a reward! However, this is one of the main story quests. It had the feature that needed it to be unlocked by players through searching the correct NPCs. So if the quest is completed by someone in the server, the other players would not be able to do the same quest anymore. In other words, the reward of this quest would only belong to the first and only player who completes it first.

Although an Ascended Tier equipment was given as a reward, only one person in the entire server would be able to get this special piece of equipment. So, it would not cause the value of Ascended Tier equipment to degrade.

Zhang Yang quickly put on the newly received equipment and smiled at Baa'ljilr, "This reward is plenty much. So, I won't say much about it now."

Baa'ljilr forced a smile on his face as well. Then he said, "Young warrior, these materials are still not sufficient for my plan to work. We have to search for the next item now!"

Chapter 807: The Spectre's Heart

"So, what's next?"

Baa'ljilr did not answer Zhang Yang immediately. He gave Zhang Yang a quick glance before he slowly said, "The Spectre's Heart of 'Evil Necromancer Cheryl'!"

He was obviously worried that Zhang Yang might ask for the reason as to why creating a sacred enchantment would require an evil and tainted Spectre's Heart. However, as a player, one should just dedicate oneself to completing a quest that NPC provides in order to get the rewards for completing it. That's the natural order in the game. So Zhang Yang had no reason to ask much of it!

Therefore, Baa'ljilr's worry was for nothing. Zhang Yang nodded and said, "So where's Cheryl?"

Baa'ljilr was relieved as he let out a heavy breath. Then he said, "Cheryl is located at the far side of the Wens'g Kingdom. She's known to live in The Dark Castle somewhere in that Kingdom. Take her out and bring her Spectre's Heart back to me!"

'Ding! Baa'ljilr the Imposter had given you a quest: The Spectre's Heart. Do you accept?'

Accept.

[The Spectre's Heart] (Difficulty: Rank-A)

Description: Baa'ljilr wants you to acquire The Spectre's Heart in order to progress with setting up his Sacred Enchantment. You can find the Evil Necromancer Cheryl in The Dark Castle located by the southeast side of the Wens'g Kingdom. Young man, you better bring along a bunch of friends for this. Cheryl is not an easy foe to take on.

Completion: Acquire The Spectre's Heart 0/1

The Wens'g Kingdom is a Level 210-240 map. It's located quite far away from Kanjar. Zhang Yang had to use a Teleportation Scroll to get back to the Holy City. Then he summoned Phoenix pet out and headed straight

towards his destination.

The difficulty of the quest was Rank-A. It seemed that Cheryl would probably be a Holy Tier boss. Furthermore, Zhang Yang still had his {God of War Transformation} ready at hand. So, it would be possible for him to take out the boss all by himself. Also, he could still use his [Party Summon Order] if things do not go the way he expects it to be. He could still summon Sun Xin Yu and the rest of his gang over to support him in battle.

Along the way to his destination, after flying across the sky for over 7 to 8 hours, Zhang Yang finally entered the Wens'g Kingdom. He spent another 2 hours venturing further towards the southeast of the map. Finally, he could see 'The Dark Castle' right on top of his small map. At the same time, Zhang Yang could see a magnificent ancient castle in front, not far from him. The appearance of the castle seemed anciently vicissitude. Zhang Yang could not help to feel a sense of misfortune and dread creeping through his spine.

Well, there were also dark clouds shrouded over the castle. The gloomy and creepy sense of the atmosphere had completely destroyed the magnificence of the castle. The appearance of the castle was currently ghastly.

Zhang Yang flew straight into the castle. Because the interior of the castle was an indoor environment, he could only leap down from the back of his mount and venture deeper into the castle on foot.

"Living human! It's your doom for trespassing into this land!" an insidious voice was heard across the hall. Two beams were shot right at Zhang Yang without any warning. The beams turned into two dark skulls and flew towards Zhang Yang at high speed.

‘-88327!’

‘-92712!’

Two damage values popped right on top of Zhang Yang's head almost at the same time. Right after that, Zhang Yang noticed that two monsters wearing dark wizard robes suddenly appeared right in front of him. Their hands were the only body parts that were exposed. They were so dry and

skinny that they looked like the claws of a chicken.

[Shadow Wizard] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Magic Attack: 66,112 – 86,112

Skill:

[Shadow Bomb]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Chanting: 2 seconds.

Note: Shadow Wizards are the loyal servants to Evil Necromancer Cheryl. Their strength is so powerful that even the expedition forces of the Wens'g Kingdom could not do anything to cleanse The Dark Castle from the corruption of the Evil Necromancer Cheryl. So far, none of the expedition forces have managed to return alive.

F*cking Magic type monsters!

As a Guardian warrior, Zhang Yang had hated these Magic Type monsters the most. They always rendered his Defense useless. Zhang Yang let out a clear roar and charged forward at high speed. Upon reaching the effective range of his {Charge}, he immediately activated it and dashed forward like a piercing arrow towards one of the wizard monsters.

Upon stunning the monster he clashed into, Zhang Yang swung his axe and acquired enough Rage Points. Immediately, he turned towards another wizard monster beside him and activated his {Crash Magic}. The chanting of the monster was interrupted immediately.

Truth be told, even though the Attack power of the monsters were not weak, Felice could easily heal up Zhang Yang, maintaining his HP bar at its maximum level. However, Zhang Yang had gotten used to playing safe. He would use the methods that could minimize his damage received in order to win the battle. So he could not help himself but try limiting the

damage output of the monsters.

With his current Attack power, it would not take long before he could slay the two monsters. So after a brief moment, he managed to empty out the HP bars of the two monsters. By doing so, the two monsters instantly turned into a pile of bones, clattering down to the ground.

The entire castle was filled with similar types of monsters. Zhang Yang could not afford to lure too many of these monsters at the same time. After all, the damage that these monsters could deal to him was a little too painful for him to take them all on. Once the number of monsters become too many for him to handle, he would be in deep sh*t.

With no intention of wasting so much time on the monsters, Zhang Yang activated his {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void} in order to go deeper into the castle without having the need to fight the monsters. However, he still had to battle some of them though. So he slew quite a number of monsters as well as he was making his way deeper into the castle. 4 hours later, he had finally arrived at the deepest area of the castle.

There was a gigantic pool in the area. 12 spectral maids were standing respectfully on the edge of the pool. They were holding jade plates on top of their hands. Right on top of each plate, there was delicious food such as fresh fruit and fine wine. Meanwhile, right in the middle of the pool, a beautiful lady with a long hair was enjoying a swim. From time to time, she would swim to the side of the pool. A maid would get near so that she could pass the food to the lady in the pool.

Well, it seemed that the lady knew how to enjoy her life!

Zhang Yang thought to himself that he could really learn from this lady. He could let Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue serve him like how these maids were serving the lady as well. However, if he ever voices out his current opinion, Sun Xin Yu and Han Yin g Xue would not be the ones serving him by the side of the pool. He would become the one who would serve the two ladies while they are enjoying life in the pool! Furthermore, he would also need to serve that little brat who loved to join in for any occasion!

That kept Zhang Yang thinking. Should he build a pool at his company? Well, watching 6 beautiful secretaries wearing bikinis, while competing against each other to see who would appear prettier would definitely be an enjoyable sight for any man!

Zhang Yang was having some lustful thoughts while he was observing the attributes of these monsters.

[Evil Necromancer Cheryl] (Holy, Spectre)

Level: 240

HP: 2,400,000,000

Defence: 23,330

Magic Attack: 118,744 – 158,744

Skills:

[Shadow Arrow Barrage]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 40-meter radius. Casting: 2 seconds.

[Darkness Restoration]: Recovers 10% HP of all her maids.

[Spectre's Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. The amount of HP recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: She's the master of The Dark Castle, the most poisonous cancer to the Wens'g Kingdom! She will consume a large amount of human blood just to maintain her young and beautiful appearance. There is no telling that how many people had died by her hands.

[Loyal Maids] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 108,455 – 148,455

Skills:

[Uppercut]: Pushes the targets away and causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Shared Life]: Damage received will be shared among all other Maids.

[Sacrifice]: Sacrifices own HP to recover 50% of Cheryl's HP. Meanwhile, the monster will immediately die.

Note: They are Cheryl's loyal maids. They will sacrifice everything for their master. That includes their own lives!

If the 12 Loyal Maids were left aside, they could heal a total of 14,400,000,000 HP for Cheryl. So obviously, leaving those maids by the side was not a wise option! He must take out all the maids first before he could focus on taking out the boss!

Because the maids had {Shared Life}, Zhang Yang must deal approximately 1,400,000,000 damage in one shot in order for him to get rid of all the maids in one go. Meanwhile, he would have to sustain the attacks of the 12 monsters and the boss.

Although the monsters could only deal Melee Damage, their Attacks were actually quite high. These monsters could actually deal an average damage of 40,000 with each hit. In other words, if the 12 monsters attack him at the same time, they could deal a total of 500,000 damage under the circumstance that each monster only hit him once with a normal attack! That amount of damage would exceed Felice's maximum healing capacity. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would have to sustain the damage dealt by the boss at the same time. He would definitely not be able to handle the battle.

The only thing that remained uncertain was the cooldown period for the boss's {Darkness Restoration}. If the boss could use the Skill frequently, then he should consider killing the boss first instead of focusing on the monsters.

Zhang Yang kept Phoenix pet into the inventory. He decided not to use any Transformations to fight the battle before him. He wanted to at least know about the cooldowns for the boss's Skills before doing anything rash.

So, time to rock!

Zhang Yang immediately charged forward in huge pace and dashed towards one of the maids.

"You arrogant mother*cker! How dare you trespass into Master Cheryl's resting ground! You shall pay for your crime with your blood!" The maid screamed in a screeching tone and raised her two fists up towards Zhang Yang.

The aggro of these monsters were chained together. The moment when the maid detected Zhang Yang and engaged in battle with him, the other 11 maids and the boss also sensed Zhang Yang's presence and joined the battle. They also roared in rage and charged towards Zhang Yang. Because the boss was a Magic type monster, she only stood up in the middle of the pool. She took out a staff out of nowhere and started to attack Zhang Yang with her spells. A dark flashed across the sight of Zhang Yang, followed by countless skulls flying right out from the tip of her staff.

If Fatty Han was there to see what that had happened, he would definitely have smiled wretchedly and said that the boss was rather hardcore. He would say that the boss had been using the staff as her 'rod' to please herself... she had been sticking the staff into her... eherm! Or else! Where would she keep that staff then? How could she keep such a thick staff from everyone's plain sight. then?

{Block}!

Zhang Yang activated his {Thunder Strike} to slow his enemies' movement speed. Then, he began to kite them around!

This would be a battle for him to test out the cooldown period for the boss's Skills. Zhang Yang did not stop to see whether he was dealing high damage to the monsters or not. He only intended to drag it long enough for the boss to use her Skills. Of course, he would need to deal a certain amount of damage to the boss in order to get the boss into using her {Darkness Restoration}!

After battling for 30 seconds, Cheryl used her very first {Darkness Restoration}. She was spamming her {Shadow Arrow Barrage} throughout

the remaining time, shooting Shadow Arrows into the surroundings. The arrows were so frequently fired that they were like raining down into the surroundings.

Zhang Yang had acquired his first conclusion after observing for a while now: The {Darkness Restoration} would be affected by his {Destructive Smash}. However, the boss could still heal the 12 maids. Meanwhile, his {Destructive Smash} would theoretically affect only two targets at a time. Therefore, it would not affect the boss significantly.

60 seconds later, the boss had activated her {Darkness Restoration} for the second time. 90 seconds later, she activated her {Darkness Restoration} for the third time.

Before Zhang Yang could wait for the boss to activate her healing Skill for the fourth time, Zhang Yang quickly kept Felice back into her slot. Then, he quickly used his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle --- his HP bar was about to get emptied out! If he stays, he would be as good as dead!

With his calculation based on the battle, Zhang Yang could confirm that the boss would activate her {Darkness Restoration} once in every 30 seconds. In other words, the boss could heal over a total of 138,000,000 HP for the 12 monsters. The boss could heal an amount of 4,600,000 HP in each second.

Meanwhile, when Zhang Yang activates his {God of War Transformation}, his {Horizontal Sweep} could deal approximately 440,000 damage to each monsters in each passing second. Meanwhile, he could deal a DPS of 45,000 damage to each monster with his {Thunder Strike}. Then, he could deal a DPS of 18,000 damage to each monster with his {Blast Wave}. He could deal a DPS of 13,000 damage with his {God of War Crushing Strike} as well. On the other hand, the Phoenix pet could deal a DPS of 340,000 damage upon activating its Transformation Skill. All these were AoE Skills that could spread damage to all targets within the effective range of the Skill attacks. Therefore, Zhang Yang could actually deal $(44 + 4.5 + 1.8 + 1.3 + 34) * 12 = 10,270,000$ DPS. That amount of damage had exceeded the amount of HP that the boss could recover in

each second.

Theoretically speaking, it would only take approximately 4 minutes to slay these monsters!

Chapter 808: Enhancing the equipment

After getting a rough calculation, Zhang Yang no longer had any fear left in him. He immediately activated his God of War Transformation without any hesitation. Instantly, he acquired quite a boost to all of his attributes!

HP: 139,560,000!

Basic Attack: 1,036,166 – 1,176,166!

Zhang Yang did not charge into battle immediately. Instead, he was waiting for his God of War Energy Bar to accumulate 11 EP before he heads out. He used his {Charge Up Strike} in conjunction with his {God of War Devastation}, causing approximately 9,000,000 damage to the 12 monsters at the same time in less than 6 minutes. It was definitely worth the wait!

When Zhang Yang had accumulated over 11 EP, he also activated the Phoenix pet's Transformation Skill. At the same time, Felice had also transformed into her 'Tree of Life Form'. The monsters were easy targets to kill. However, the boss had her {Spectre Constitution} to back her up. She could recover over 800,000 HP once every passing second. Obviously, this was going to be a drawn-out boss battle. So, Zhang Yang would need Felice's healing support.

Time to settle this!

Zhang Yang flapped his radiating wings and slid over to the side of a maid monster. Then, he swung his axe towards the monster to begin.

'-1,087,622!'

Damage values that went beyond a million popped right on top of the monster. Zhang Yang's Rage Bar was instantly filled up to its maximum cap.

"Kill this filthy intruder!"

"Those who offend our master will be executed!"

"Use his blood to wash away his sins!"

All of the maid monsters began to charge towards Zhang Yang with their fists raised. It seemed that they were all combat ready!

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

Under the support of his God of War Transformation, Zhang Yang’s Defence had gone up to a total of 174,900! That was a terrifying amount of Defence that even a boss would have to fear! Even without his 20% Passive Damage Immunity and his 31,673 Damage Absorption, the monsters would still fail to penetrate Zhang Yang’s high Defence!

So, it seemed that the Ultimate Skill of the game, the ‘Inheritance Transformation’ was not just for show. After all, all ‘Inheritance Transformations’ had a 72-hour cooldown period.

{Charge Up Strike}!

{God of War Devastation}!

‘-9,889,065!’

‘-10,283,321!’

‘-9,572,344!’

...

12 damage values that went approximately over 10 million was seen popping out on top of the 12 monsters. With Zhang Yang’s God of War Transformation boosting him up, his {God of War Devastation} was able to deal unbelievably high damage to the monsters!

"Argh ---" the monsters were roaring out in rage at the same time. Under the slashing of Zhang Yang’s axe, each of the maids were cut opened, leaving them off with large deep wounds. However, there was no blood coming out from their wounds, not even one single drop of it. The phenomena was quite bizarre, to be honest.

"Human, you must pay with your pitiful life!" Cheryl roared out in rage

as she waved her staff around. Countless dark skulls were beginning to float into the air, flying rapidly at Zhang Yang, Phoenix pet and Felice, causing a tremendous amount of damage to the three of them.

"You ugly old b*tch! You're the one who should die and perish!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then, he activated his {Horizontal Sweep} and dealt approximately 2,000,000 damage to each of the 12 maids once again. Among the 12 monsters, three of them were afflicted with a Critical Hit which boosted the damage up to over 4,000,000!

Zhang Yang was attacking the monsters while he moved around accordingly. By doing so, he succeeded in kiting the 12 Loyal Maids over to the boss. Although he could only deal some damage to the boss with his AoE attacks, however, a mosquito's leg is still a leg. There was no reason for him to waste any opportunity to deal even a little damage to the boss.

"Long live the Spectres!" The boss suddenly roared out and raised her staff up high. Immediately, 12 dark radiance were shot right out of the tip of her staff and fused into the bodies of the 12 maids. Well, 11 of them managed to recover over 10% HP, while the other one maid only managed to recover 2.5% HP because she was afflicted with the effect of Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash}.

{Thunder Strike}! {Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang prioritized on using all his AoE attacks whenever he could. Since the boss could recover her HP with her {Spectre Constitution}, Zhang Yang focused all his single target attacks on the one monster with the least HP amount remaining. Every time he could slay one Loyal Maid, the boss would have one less target to heal. In other words, Zhang Yang had earned back the chance to deal 11,500,000 damage!

Slash! Slice and dice!

Zhang Yang went all out on his enemies. In less than 4 minutes, he had taken out all 12 Loyal Maids. After that, he only had one boss left to handle.

"Living soul, you should just die ten thousand times over!" Cheryl began to curse in rage. She repeatedly shot out her {Shadow Arrow Barrage} into

the surrounding to kill Zhang Yang.

She only had that one Skill to use. From a certain perspective, that was the special ability of a Super World Boss! Unfortunately, her HP amount was too underwhelming for her to be considered as a World Boss. Furthermore, the Attack power of a Holy Tier boss in the current stage of the game seemed so much weaker now. Or else, even a large-scale party would not know how to beat this boss!

However, AoE Skills would only be able to perform at their best potential when there are more targets in the surroundings. After all, the AoE attack could only deal that much damage to one single target at a time. The Attack power of the AoE Skills would not increase, just because there are lesser players in the vicinity. The boss's single target attacks could only deal approximately 180,000 damage to Zhang Yang. In other words, the boss's DPS would only be 90,000 damage. Felice did not even have to transform in order to heal Zhang Yang.

Meanwhile, Felice had to heal three targets, which included herself, of course. Therefore, she must activate her {Tree of Life Transformation} first before she would be capable enough to heal two persons and one powerful, legendary pet.

Zhang Yang's DPS had exceeded a million because he was under the support of his God of War Transformation. With Phoenix pet supporting him from the sidelines, he could now deal up to a DPS of 1,440,000 damage in each passing second! Taking in account the boss's HP Recovery where she could heal over 800,000 HP, Zhang Yang could still deal over 640,000 effective damage to the boss. So, he would only need 63 minutes to empty out the HP bar of the boss.

Because the monsters were all dead and the boss would only use one Skill to attack, Zhang Yang's victory was inevitable. So, Zhang Yang kept dealing damage to the boss throughout the entire battle while Felice heals him from time to time. And then... the boss died by the end of it.

Splash!

That Spectral lady collapsed by the side of the pool. A small portion of

her naked body, well, her vital parts of her body were censored by some mosaic boxes. Among the loot, well, if Wei Yan Er, that little brat is here to see all that, she would definitely waste her time on asking questions, like where did all those loot come from.

The boss had dropped two Holy Tier equipment and 5 Ethereal Tier equipment. Zhang Yang swept all of the Ethereal Tier equipment into his inventory. Then, he turned his attention towards the two pieces of Holy Tier equipment. One of them was a hat made of cloth. So, he shoved it into his inventory, straight away. Meanwhile, the other one was a necklace that glimmered in the light.

[Glimmering Necklace] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +5,601

Strength: +1,338

Agility: +583

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 11,200 points.

Equip: Absorbs 1,132 Damage when being hit.

Equip: Recovers 5,000 HP at a certain rate when being hit.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Well, Zhang Yang was currently wearing the Level 180 Holy Tier [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. That piece could only provide him offensive power. There was no boost to his defense power, at all. According to the rules for combining equipment with the [Tesseract], if combining the [Glimmering Necklace] and the [Berserker's Charge Necklace] would turn out to be a success, only could the Holy Tier equipment be enhanced. The Tier of the new 'product' would not be improved to Ascended Tier. The level of the new 'product' would be based on the level of the [Glimmering Necklace].

Zhang Yang put the two mentioned equipment into the [Tesseract] and he immediately received a system notification:

‘Ding! You’re about to combine/fuse the [Glimmering Necklace] with the [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. The success rate will be 90%. Do you wish to continue?’

90% rate of success!? It seemed that the success rate of enhancing equipment was much higher than the rate of improving the Tier of equipment.

Zhang Yang did not continue with the process. Well, he was just Level 207, at the moment. The equipment could only be equipped when he becomes Level 210. So, he could just keep the equipment for the moment.

After picking up the quest item, Zhang Yang went back to see Baa'ljilr so that he could hand in the quest.

"Hey, young warrior. You’re indeed impressive! You actually took such a short time to slay Cheryl the Evil Necromancer!" Baa'ljilr laughed out loud. Then he took ‘The Spectre’s Heart’ and kept it safe.

After that, the upcoming quests that Baa'ljilr offered seemed to be insignificant. Although he did ask Zhang Yang to gather all sorts of items, the difficulty of the quests were Rank-B, at best. Zhang Yang only felt tired of running errands for the old man. Who would have thought that setting up a Sacred Enchantment would be so troublesome and tiring! Zhang Yang had currently reached Level 210, but the quest chain had yet to reach its end.

Meanwhile, a small number of other players had arrived at the valley as well. They were looking for Baa'ljilr for his quests. Among those players, some were Top Tier players from other Regions, while some were just some random players that were not known to Zhang Yang. Well, none of them were aware that the final quest that Baa'ljilr offered would trigger the main story quest ‘Demon’s Descent’. So, some of them thought that the NPC was just fooling them around. Meanwhile, others were staying behind in an attempt to complete the quests. Well, they stayed because they noticed that Zhang Yang was there to complete quests as well.

Main Story Quests such as this would only be unlocked by certain NPCs, regardless of whichever link of the quest is completed. Other players

would still be able to continue on with the quests. Of course, quests that are completed would not be available to the other players anymore.

Everyone could accept the same quest. However, only one player, or one party, could complete the quest and claim the prizes all to themselves.

The quest that Zhang Yang sought for would require players to enter a location similar to a dungeon. There would be quite a number of Ascended Tier bosses for the players to slay. However, after so many days of completing the endless quests given by Baa'ljilr, Zhang Yang was beginning to feel frustrated and speechless. The main story quest was not even triggered yet!

However, upon reaching Level 210, he could finally fuse the [Glimmering Necklace] and the [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. A blinding light flashed across the [Tesseract]. When the light dimmed and stopped radiating, the two equipment he put into the [Tesseract] were gone. Instead, a new necklace came out of the cubic box. It was glowing with a soothing light.

'Ding! You've succeeded in fusing the [Glimmering Necklace] and the [Berserker's Charge Necklace]. You've acquired [Glimmering Berserker's Necklace (Upgrade +1)]!'

Zhang Yang was speechless with the rules of naming the newly fused equipment. However, the name was not important. The important thing was the new set of attributes of the equipment!

[Glimmering Berserker's Necklace (Upgrade +1)] (Holy, Necklace)

Vitality: +6,000

Strength: +1,500

Agility: +650

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 12,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,132 Damage when being hit.

Equip: Recovers 10,000 HP at a certain rate when being hit.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

The enhanced equipment could still be enhanced even further. However, the success rate for enhancing the equipment again would drop tremendously. +2 enhancement would still have 80% rate of success. +3 enhancement would still have 70%. However, it would probably be less than a 1% success rate to enhance the equipment up to +10!

Well, that actually made sense, though. If players could enhance their equipment with a high success rate, they could just enhance their Holy Tier equipment until the equipment are as powerful as the Ascended Tier equipment, or even maybe as powerful as a Celestial Tier equipment!

However, this piece of Holy Tier equipment had become much more powerful than Zhang Yang could ever anticipate! Not only the three basic attributes of the equipment were slightly increased, the special effect of the equipment had also been enhanced. Under the circumstance that a player has enough equipment to spare, the player could really consider combining large quantities of equipment in order to get powerful ones. After all, the success rate for fusing the two equipment was rather high. Well, at least the rate was still very high for enhancing the equipment to +1.

Although everyone had basically acquired Ascended Tier equipment, Zhang Yang and his gang still had a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment on them. Furthermore, the Hardcore Mode for the Spectre's Cavern would spawn a new batch of Holy Tier equipment once in every 30 days. That should provide Zhang Yang and his gang sufficient amount of equipment to enhance every one of their equipment at least once!

However, the situation would be different for Ascended Tier equipment. They could not even get enough Ascended Tier equipment to wear for themselves. So how would they even think about fusing them?!

Zhang Yang enhanced the [Crimson Goblin Gaunlets] and the result was a success. He managed to acquire a [Crimson Goblin Gauntlets (Upgrade +1)].

[Refined Crimson Iron Gauntlet (Upgrade +1)] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +12,000

Strength: +2,700

Agility: +1,200

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 24,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorb 2,102 Damage when being hit.

Required Level: 220

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Because Zhang Yang still had one extra Holy Tier Gauntlet to spare, he decided to combine the equipment with the spare. With 80% rate of success, he decided to go with it. Zhang Yang tightened his teeth and put the two equipment into the [Tesseract] once more. Upon seeing a flash of light radiating out from the [Tesseract], the two equipment had been combined into one!

It was a successful bet!

[Refined Crimson Iron Gauntlet (Upgrade +2)] (Holy, Heavy Armor)

Defence: +640

Vitality: +13,000

Strength: +3,000

Agility: +1,300

{Level 7 Socket}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 26,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 10%.

Equip: Absorbs 2,102 Damage when being hit.

Required Level: 220

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Chapter 809: The Search for the Wind Essence Pearl

Upon enhancing the equipment, the percentage of the additional damage and the amount of Damage Absorption would not change even by a bit. However, the Vitality, Strength and the other attributes would increase by 10% every time the equipment is enhanced. That would make the equipment quite powerful.

Theoretically speaking, the attributes and other additional effects that a +8 Holy Tier equipment had could have exceeded the attributes of an Ascended Tier equipment! Of course, the success rate of enhancing the equipment up to +8 would be extremely low. One failure in the fusion of two equipment would result in the destruction of both equipment. There will not be a second attempt. That being said, the rate of success would theoretically be $0.9 * 0.8 * 0.7 \dots * 0.2 = 0.3\%$. It would not be that easy, of course.

However, the [Tesseract] would still be a useful item, no matter what.

Well, would he be the only one in the entire server to have possessed such a great item then? The game had Socket Gemstones, Weapon Runes and many other enhancement systems. Those were some great 'money generators' for the game company. So, how would they be able to pass on this piece of cubic [Tesseract] and not make it into another of their new 'money generators' then?

After all, the [Tesseract] had a 1-hour cooldown. Furthermore, the item could not fuse and improve the Tier of equipment that were higher Tier than Holy Tier. The [Tesseract] could only enhance those high Tier equipment. However, because of that, when the Holy Tier equipment begins to depreciate in the hands of high Tier players, they could take those Holy Tier equipment as ingredients to fuse or combine. As long as they get a large quantity of Holy Tier equipment, they would stand a chance to achieve a +5 enhancement on their equipment!

Meanwhile, a +5 Upgrade Holy Tier equipment would be almost as

powerful as a basic Ascended Tier equipment without any enhancement!

Zhang Yang could choose to shout out to the public, telling everyone about the existence of the [Tesseract] and its functions. By then, there should be tons of players coming up to him asking for his services in enhancing their equipment. Super rich Top Tier players like Hourglass Figure and Dusk Phoenix would definitely be willing to pay over a million dollars for each enhancement. They would not even care about money anymore, since they were so rich!

However, would the system really allow that kind of opportunity to make more money just slip by? Zhang Yang would not believe they would, even a thousand years after his death.

Well, the system would definitely introduce a large-scale equipment fusion system in the game. The question would be, when? However, that would not concern Zhang Yang much because all he needed to do now was to focus on getting as many Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment as he could possibly find in the entire server. That would matter most, because he could enhance his future equipment to obtain even more powerful equipment! When others manage to get +8 Upgrade Holy Tier equipment, Zhang Yang could have easily beat the other players by having a +1 Upgrade Ascended Tier equipment!

Upon going back to see Baa'ljilr once again, Zhang Yang received another quest that required him to gather more materials for the NPC's plan.

[The Search for the Wind Essence Pearl] (Difficulty: Subject to change)

Description: Baa'ljilr wants you to find the Wind Essence Pearl so that he can carry on with setting up his Sacred Enchantment. According to legend, the Wind Essence Pearl belonged to the god of wind, Anes. When Anes fell, the Wind Essence Pearl was dropped into a cave. Because the Wind Essence Pearl can take the form of a tornado, that cave was named the 'Gale Cavern' for that reason. You can find the Gale Cavern in the Mount Polo 400 kilometers from where you stand right now. However, it will not be easy to pass through the Gale Cavern and acquire the Wind Essence

Pearl! Warrior, you need luck in this quest. That's right! Luck!

Completion: Acquire the Wind Essence Pearl 0/1

A quest without a specific difficulty, huh? This must be a quest that would put the players' reaction to test. Even though everyone had the same Class, same equipment Tier, same Skills, some could pass a test with flying colours while some would fail in misery without even know how to react to the situation.

Zhang Yang immediately departed. He rode the Phoenix pet and flew over 400 kilometers into the Mount Polo. It did not take long before Zhang Yang located the entrance to the Gale Cavern.

It seemed that Zhang Yang was not the only one who was completing this quest at the moment. When he arrived at the entrance to the cavern, there were already more than 10 players standing right in front of the entrance. Well, just like the Chinese say, the name of a person is like the shadow of a tree. The more famous you are, the more influential you are. Even though Zhang Yang did not reveal his character information to the public, the gigantic blazing bird underneath his butt had betrayed his name out to the people who saw it. Those players were so worried the moment they recognized that he was Zhang Yang. They did not really know him well after all. Who knows if he suddenly loses himself and kills everyone he sees! He might even want to kill everyone so that he could take the quest all to himself! Instantly, the players began to charge into the cavern with the intention of hiding from Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not help to smile bitterly. Well, is he really that scary to others in the game?

However, these people could really become his 'pathfinders'. They could explore and let Zhang Yang know what lay beyond the entrance of that cavern.

"Argh ---" not long after did the player charged into the cavern, Zhang Yang suddenly heard a bunch of miserable screams coming out from the entrance of the cavern. Instantly, the players were being shredded into pieces across the ground! They were running into a blender and getting

themselves blended into pieces by white visible air current! Countless pieces of blood and bones were scattered into the surroundings of the cavern, like it was raining blood and bones! Eww!

Well, it was not like people had not seen such scenes that involved bloody killing and gore. However, seeing people getting shredded into pieces like that was an extremely rare sight in the game. Some of the shredded blood and bones of the dead players splattered on the other players who were still alive. Instantly, those players started feeling uncomfortable. Some of them were even beginning to feel like vomiting.

"Argh!" "Argh!"

The miserable screaming were heard one after another. Many more were shredded as they attempted to go forward. Any players would actually see that there were countless holes across the ground of the cavern. The holes were packed so closely together as if they looked like the design of a honeycomb! Countless white air currents were seen shooting out from the holes killing whoever who touched them.

The remaining players who were still alive quickly took a few steps back, one after another. However, the passage they came from was not necessarily safe even though they managed to get through alive. Countless miserable screams continued on. Another 4 players were shredded into pieces!

Initially, there were more than 10 players who went straight into the cavern. However, only two of them made it back out! Furthermore, everything happened very swiftly. The entire incident was only about 10 seconds! Well, if they went deeper into the cavern earlier on, no one would have made it out alive!

It did not take long before Zhang Yang acquired a conclusion after observing them for a bit. So these air currents that come out of the hole on the ground would definitely ignore everyone's HP bar --- they would just kill the players instantly upon touch and shred the players into pieces! So whoever who touches it will definitely not survive. Even if the players could survive the shredding process, how would the players proceed when

they are already shredded into pieces? Crawl forward in the form of meat chunks? Eww as f*ck!

Zhang Yang had already activated the recording function of the game and recorded everything that happened a moment ago. Then he immediately took out the footage and began to study it.

Meanwhile, the difficulty of passing through the cavern was too much for the players to handle for the moment. Some even came up with the assumption that there must be some special hidden reward buried deep in the other end of the cavern. So those who were not afraid to die took off their equipment and charge straight into the cavern. Well, since they would be dead the moment they touch the air current, it would not make any difference as to whether they were wearing any equipment or not. Well, they took their equipment off because they would not have to bear the cost of having to repair their equipment after they die.

Currently, everyone was waiting for someone to come up with a solution. There must be some pattern in order for the players to get through safely. Therefore, none of them intended to battle other players --- these players were coming from different Regions. If they were currently standing at a different location or different map, they would have pulled out their weapons and slaughtered each other up!

Zhang Yang did not rush. He took his own sweet time to analyze the pattern of the deadly air currents and how to get through them without touching any one of them.

The air current seemed to be the powerful effects of the Wind Essence Pearl. As for why the air currents were all in white in color... well, if they were invisible, players would have nothing to look at, wouldn't they?

When there was no player entering the cavern, everything would stay peaceful. However, the moment when a player steps foot into the cavern, every single hole on the ground would constantly shoot out white air current like the blades of a blender! Anyone who got touched by the air currents would be shredded into pieces. It would not matter even if you have a million points of HP on you. It would just be an instant kill.

Therefore, the difficulty of the quest would subject to change. Upon mastering the pattern of the air currents, players would be able to pass through safely even if they do not have any equipment on them. However, if the players decide to charge in without any plan like idiots, they would be shredded into pieces and die, even if they are wearing a full set of Celestial Tier equipment.

The number of players by the entrance of the cavern was getting more and more by the minutes. The players had tried out all sorts of methods in an attempt to get through the cavern's traps. Some of them sent their Battle Companions in while the others tried to send their pets in as well. Some even attempted to bodily hurl their Servants into the cavern to see if they could go through without triggering the air currents. However, everything would trigger the traps and be shredded to bits the moment they went into the cavern.

{Stealth} Ineffective! Use of Potions to get invisible, attempt failed! Activating Invincibility effect, shredded to pieces like nobody's business!

Countless methods had been used in an attempt to get through the cavern. Everyone was playing by the rules, knowing that getting into the cavern was the only way to complete the quest.

However, these countless air current seemed to show no patterns of attack at all. Some of the holes did not react at all until they 'sense' the presence of players around them. When that happens, they would just shoot the air current out and shred everyone that is in the cavern.

Zhang Yang recorded every method ever attempted by the other players so that he could take a closer look at determining the patterns of the air current. Well, he must also memorize over 100 possible changes of the pattern before he charges out and gets through in a single attempt. Any hesitation would end up with him taking the wrong step and putting him right on top of the traps. By then, he would be shredded like how the other players had been.

Zhang Yang continued to focus on familiarizing himself with the possible patterns of the air current even though they looked irregular and

complicated as f*ck. He was meditating like an old monk without moving a single muscle of his body. However, his eyes were moving around intensely as if he was able to see every single detail that was happening in the cavern when the players were challenging to get into the cavern.

Quite a period of time had passed, some players had totally given up on getting themselves killed pointlessly. They decided to leave the cavern so that they could grind someplace else. Meanwhile, some of them were still willing to believe that there must be some very handsome rewards waiting for them by the end of the cavern. They were not willing to give up just yet.

Well, up till this point, no one could figure out the patterns of the trap in the cavern just yet. Or maybe some of them had it figured out. However, it would take quite a while before they could get familiarized with the pattern of the trap in order to get through the trap safely.

Another hour had gone by without notice. Zhang Yang stood up to his feet and decided to make his move. However, he summoned Han Ying Xue over to his spot with his [Lover's Charm] first. Then he traded the [Book of Revelation] to her for safe-keeping. Well, just in case if he ever fails and dies in the attempt to get through the trap, he might risk being killed by others after he gets resurrected on the spot where he dies. By then, he would definitely drop the [Book of Revelation] and risk losing it forever!

So, safety comes first. It would be much better to let Han Ying Xue take care of the book for the moment. Well, she could just escape into the sky if anyone tries to attack her. After all, she was riding on her Flying Mount at the moment. If she really gets herself into deep trouble, she could just activate her Inheritance Transformation. However, normal players would never dare to attack any high Tier players first --- unless the temptation is too great to be ignored!

Zhang Yang took in a very deep breath. Then he suddenly stomped the ground and charged towards the entrance of the cavern at top speed.

"Is that Zhan Yu?"

"That's right! He came here on a Phoenix pet. Well, there's another

player, a fat wretched Hunter, who also has a Phoenix pet. Other than these two, I don't think there's anyone else who has a Phoenix pet in the entire server!"

"Pui! The traps installed in this cavern are too much! Their attacks even ignored our HP. Anyone who gets touched by those deadly air current will be instantly killed! Let's not talk about Zhan Yu, even a powerful boss would have to kneel and die if the boss ever steps into the cavern!"

"Well, that's really unfortunate! If I've known about it earlier, I would have hit him once before he ran into the cavern. Who knows! He might drop some Celestial Tier equipment after he gets himself killed by the traps in the cavern!"

...

Even though Zhang Yang overheard the discussion among the players right outside the cavern, he did not waste his time on reacting to their words. He was currently focused on calculating the holes on the ground that would shoot out deadly air currents. Left! Left! Left! Left! Right! Right! Left! Left! Left! Zhang Yang was running in a zig-zag route. However, he suddenly ran in a straight line after a while of running across the cavern in zig-zag route. It seemed as if he was running in an irregular pattern.

However, if there were clever players in the vicinity to see how Zhang Yang ran, they would have noticed that Zhang Yang had mastered the pattern of the route. That was why he was able to charge forward without getting himself killed! Or else, the air current coming out from the holes would have killed him instantly.

The cavern was extremely long, it did not take long before the people by the entrance could no longer see Zhang Yang's shadow in the cavern.

"Huh? How could he pass the traps by simply running forward like a crazy person!?"

"I don't think he just simply ran forward. If he did, he would have been killed!"

"Look at him! There's no pattern at all! It's just random steps! It must be

luck! He must be lucky! Didn't you see the description of the quest? You need luck!"

"That's right! It's definitely luck!"

"However, the cave is so deep and long. His luck will run out sooner or later. I'm afraid that he's dead by now as we speak!"

"Yeap! He must be dead now!"

Chapter 810: The Four Essence Pearls

Zhang Yang was charging forward against the direction of the wind current. He was sweating so profusely that his sweat was dripping down across his face as if he had just come out of water. For every single second, his mind was set to calculate and predict. Well, any slightest mistake he makes will doom him to pieces. Using his brain power over a period of time was exhausting as f*ck. Zhang Yang felt dizzy, as if he was about to pass out.

He was on the verge of losing his focus now!

Just when his face became pale as snow, he saw that his front view became clear and sunny. There was a stone room with the size of 40 to 50 meter-square with a boulder in the middle of the stone room. There was a snowy white large bead placed right on top of the boulder. It was about the size of a fist.

That must be the Wind Essence Pearl!

Zhang Yang burst into joy and quickly took 7 large steps. He charged right into the stone room before he even realized it. Meanwhile, there were no trap holes on the ground inside the stone room. He should be safe for now!

It was just tiring! F*cking tiring!

It was only a few minutes, and Zhang Yang had felt like going through centuries of time! He felt his head swelling as if he was having a hangover. He sat down on his *ss and took in a deep breath.

After resting for quite some time, he finally found the strength to stand back up on his feet. Then he walked up to the bolder and picked up the Wind Essence Pearl. After shoving it into his inventory in a swift manner, Zhang Yang quickly informed Han Ying Xue saying that the quest had been completed. He wanted her to teleport him out of the god damn place with her [Lover's Charm].

When Han Ying Xue arrived at the Holy City, Zhang Yang gave some

thoughts on it. Would he be able to save more time by running out of the cave and all the way back to Baa'ljilr or would it be faster for him to use his teleportation and get back to Baa'ljilr then? Well, it was actually obvious that he could save more time by running all the way out of the cavern and back to Baa'ljilr. However, the moment when he remembered how torturous it was for him to focus so much within a period of time, he could not help to feel the intense chill up his spine. He decisively used his Teleportation Scroll and got back to Holy City.

Meanwhile, a few more players that did not fear death charged into the cavern. However, they managed to make it quite deep into the cavern based on their understanding. They believed that by jumping left and right in an attempt to dodge, they would be able to get through the traps alive!

They were so excited about it. They were beginning to praise themselves for being clever. However, many of them immediately noticed that they made it not because they had mastered the patterns of the traps. It was merely because the traps were no longer deadly. The air currents no longer shredded people!

Therefore, everyone quickly charged into the cavern. However, when they reached the stone house in the cavern, there was no sign of the Wind Essence Pearl.

"Could it be Zhan Yu who took the pearl then?"

"Well, I'm pretty sure it's him! The Wind Essence Pearl functioned just like how its name suggests. Since the insanely deadly air currents no longer threaten us and the traps no longer hurt us, I believe that the pearl has been claimed by Zhan Yu!"

"What the f*ck! How did that fellow do it then?!"

...

Zhang Yang did not know that after he took the pearl, the traps in the cavern had lost their functions. Well, he went through all the trouble traveling for over tens of hours. It would be best that he never finds out about this.

"Wind Essence Pearl! You've got the pearl! Yeah! That's great! We're one step closer to my objective now!" Baa'ljilr slammed the table with excitement and joy. He revealed his excitement on his face while handling the Wind Essence Pearl like a precious lover. His eyes looked wretched to the point that Zhang Yang could feel an intense shiver across his entire body.

"Cough! Cough!" Baa'ljilr cleared his throat and said, "However, now is not the time to be proud though! Not yet! Although we have the Wind Essence Pearl, we still need to get our hands on the Fire Essence Pearl, Ice Essence Pearl, Shadow Essence Pearl and Light Essence Pearl. These pearls once belonged to the Fire God, the Ice God, the Shadow God and the Light God! Following their falls, these pearls had been dropped into a mysterious realm called the Ambross! Only the Wind Essence Pearl can open the portal to that realm though!"

Baa'ljilr looked at the Wind Essence Pearl like he was about to leave his lover before passing it over to Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Young man, take this Wind Essence Pearl. It can be used to open Ambross the Gate of Time. Well, that should bring you into Ambross for sure. By then, you should be able to gather the 'Essence Pearls of Four' in that realm!"

'Ding! Baa'ljilr the Imposter has given you a quest: Essence Pearl of Four. Do you accept?'

The mysterious realm Ambross must be a secret dungeon in the game. Meanwhile, the four Pearls should be kept safe by four different types of Ascended Tier bosses! So Zhang Yang had finally progressed to a new stage now!

Accept!

'Ding! You've acquired an item: Wind Essence Pearl.'

[Essence Pearls of Four] (Difficulty: Rank-S)

Description: Baa'ljilr wants you to locate the Fire Essence Pearl, Ice Essence Pearl, Shadow Essence Pearl and Light Essence Pearl for him so that he can continue on with the construction of the Sacred Enchantment. You can use the Wind Essence Pearl to open up Ambross the Gate of

Time. However, please take note that each of the four Essence Pearls are in the possessions of four powerful monsters. You must bring a group of friends In order to retrieve the Pearls. Other than that, the Wind Essence Pearl will only stay in your possession for the next 90 days. The Pearl will return to the hands of Baa'ljilr when the time is up.

Completion: Acquire Fire Essence Pearl 0/1, Ice Essence Pearl 0/1, Shadow Essence Pearl 0/1, Light Essence Pearl 0/1

Number of players: 20

Quest Reward: Demonic Seal

[Demonic Seal] (Ascended, Accessory)

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 12%.

Equip: When being hit, there is a rate of activating the Demon's Strength. Causes the user to acquire the immunity to any damage and status restriction effect. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Use: Controls a demon and lets it serve you. The duration differs based on the difference between your level and the demon's level. However, the duration will not exceed 5 minutes. Cooldown: 24 hours.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

An Ascended Tier Accessory! That's awesome!

Furthermore, there were a total of 4 Ascended Tier bosses in the dimension of Ambross. How many Ascended Tier equipment could they harvest when they manage to slay all the bosses then?

Because the Wind Essence Pearl was a one-time item, the 'Essence Pearls of Four' could only be completed by one party in the entire server. So there would not be others to snatch the boss from them. However, the system had also set a limit over the players that accepted the quest to prevent any unforeseen circumstance that would disfavor the system. Well, the players must complete the quest within 90 days or the Wind Essence Pearl would return to the hand of Baa'ljilr so that the other parties would stand a

chance to complete the quest.

Firstly, it could guarantee the party who completed the quest for getting the reward. After all, the party would have 90 days to challenge the boss. That should consider as one of the rewards provided by the boss. Secondly, even if the first party was not strong enough to complete the quest, the other parties who would find the quest would have an opportunity to attempt completing the quest. Thus, the 90-day limited period of time. The server was vast and the number players were tremendous. Sooner or later, there would be some other party that could complete the quest and trigger the next main story quest.

With a limited period of time to settle this, Zhang Yang decided not to waste any more time. Well, he had no idea how many monsters would he need to stay before engaging the boss. So he quickly gathers his men and gathered all 16 members of his 2 main parties. There were still 4 empty slots on the second main party at the moment. Furthermore, the reward for completing this quest was too nice to be passed on. It would be a waste that nobody could forgive!

Zhang Yang would be selecting 4 members of the guild. These 4 players must be the best among the best among the Lone Desert Smoke. Everyone must at least has an Inheritance Transformation. However, the final four players that Zhang Yang found only had Class C Inheritance. So their power level could not match the rest of his gang, naturally.

Well, that was because they were compared to Zhang Yang and his insane friends! If these 4 players were compared to the other players in the server, the players with Class C Inheritance would be extremely powerful in their own ways. They were basically an existence that Normal players dream of becoming.

Upon getting ready and getting equipped with the required supplies, Zhang Yang gathered everyone in one spot and summoned a portal with the Wind Essence Pearl. Everyone entered the portal, one after another. After that, they found themselves in a mythical place. It was mysterious.

They were standing in the middle of a lower ground. The landscape of

the ground was like a basin. There were 4 mountains in the surroundings. One of them was blazingly hot that it looked like there was melted metal flowing from the top of it. Meanwhile, the other mountain looked snowy and frosty. It looked like a gigantic ice mountain, completely formed from ice. The third mountain was shrouded by dark clouds so densely that the tip of the mountain was not visible to them. Last but not least, the fourth mountain was shone upon by the sacred light coming down from the heaven. Well, it looked completely otherworldly.

Without the need to guess, everyone knew clearly that these four mountains would have the Essence Pearls that they had to collect. Each mountain represented the elements of each of the four pearls.

They were allowed to summon out their Flying Mount, however, they were restricted from flying in the air. They could just ride on their Flying Mount and run on the ground. In other words, the system would not allow the players to take the easy way and fly straight to the mountains. They would need to follow the rules and travel all the way to all four mountains on foot. Well, they would need to clear out the monsters along the way, of course.

"Let's go now! I want Ascended Tier equipment!" Wei Yan was an impatient little b*tch as she had always been. So she rode on her mount and shouted out loud.

"So which mountain do we go first then?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "We shall go to the Fire mountain first!"

Well, since they were going to take down all four mountains, it would not matter much by which mountain they would go first. So naturally, no one voted against Zhang Yang's opinion.

However, the moment when the party stepped foot into the 'territory' of this mountain, they were afflicted with a negative effect.

[Burning Aura]: Causes 50,000 Fire Damage to all once in every 3 seconds.

Although 50,000 damage was not a high amount, however, with 20 players, a bunch of Battle Companions and a lot of pets in the vicinity, the numbers would really start adding up. Once every 3 seconds, the {Burning Aura} effect could deal a total of 2,050,000 Fire Damage! There were 4 Healers in the party. So, each Healer would need to heal over an amount of 500,000 HP. That amount of stress was quite a pain in the *ss, though.

Therefore, everyone quickly kept their Battle Companion into their slots. As for Hundred Shots, he just hopped onto his Red Dragon. Well, his Red Dragon pet could still provide a decent amount of damage, still. Meanwhile, the Phoenix pet was immune to Fire Damage. Therefore, Fatty Han could just sit on the Phoenix pet and roam around without the need to worry about being burn to crisp.

Since the area had restricted players from flying, everyone could only walk across the mountain on foot. Well, naturally, the mountain was not a place for the players to relax and look at the scenery around. The moment they entered the area, they saw 8 Elemental monsters wandering around in that area. The moment the monsters detected the presence of the players, they waved their hands around and charged towards the party.

[Fire Element Meister] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defence: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,335 – 158,335 (Based on Physical Attack, however, causes Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Flamethrower]: Spits out a stream of blazing flame and causes 130,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters.

[Self-destruct]: Detonates the Blazing core deep in its body, causing 200,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters. Furthermore, the targets will sustain an additional 100% Fire Damage when being hit by Fire type attacks. Chanting time: 5 seconds.

Note: Fire Element Meister are the underlings of Fire Elemental Lord Ganesh. They will react violently at any trespasser who enters their territory.

The maximum number of players for this quest had been set as 20. Meanwhile, a normal party of 20 would have 4 Tankers. The system was obviously asking each of the Tankers to tank against two Elite Tier monsters, at the least. The party would not be able to meet the requirement to progress forward in the dungeon even if one of the Tankers could not do that.

Zhang Yang swung his axe and lured half of the number of those Fire Element Meisters over to him. Then he said, "The rest are all yours! You two decide how many do you want to take!"

"Boss! How can you do that? I can tank 5 of them at the same time!" Endless Starlight immediately screamed like a little b*tch. Then he threw a {Shield Toss} and a {Provoke} in an attempt to lure the other 4 Elite Tier monsters over to him.

However, even though Ten Dusk does not speak much, he still had his pride. So how could he allowed that two to show off in front of the others, then? He also quickly activated his {Charge}, followed by a normal attack to accumulate Rage Points. Then he immediately activated his {Thunder Strike} and {Blast Wave} consecutively in an attempt to get the aggro of the monsters! The three of them began to snatch the aggro of the monsters in their vicinity.

Chapter 811: Fire Elemental Core

For a Tanker, the best achievement would be seeing the aggro of the monsters were firmly fixed on him or herself. Well, that would cause all DPS players to not go to OT.

That would be the glory for the Tankers.

Therefore, Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight and Ten Dusks could not help but begin snatching the monsters' aggro over to themselves. To exhibit their true strength in such regard, the three of them did not use their {Provoke} anymore, other than luring the monsters in the beginning of the battle. They were competing against each other in the aspect of controlling the monsters' aggro.

If their strength and skills did not differ much from each other, their equipment would be the one aspect that would decide who would win in the end. Zhang Yang's Attack power was so powerful that he could oppress any DPS players around him currently. So he should be the top to get the aggro of the monsters. There shouldn't be anyone who could match his capability right now. As long as he is willing to do it, he could easily lure the aggro of all 8 monsters over to him.

However, he needed to hold back a little so that the others would not feel awkward and lose their confidence. So, Zhang Yang only focused on getting the aggro of the 4 monsters fixed on him. He did not even touch the other 4 monsters. Meanwhile, Endless Starlight had two pieces of legendary equipment on him, especially his Celestial Tier equipment. That weapon had bestowed him the ability to create a large amount of aggro over a brief period of time. His capability to create aggro had far exceeded the capability of Ten Dusk in creating aggro for the monsters. Therefore, he managed to get the aggro of three monsters to himself, leaving only one monster for Ten Dusk to deal with.

Of course, the best Tanker in the vicinity currently would be the Phoenix pet. Not only it was immune to all Fire Damage, it could also deal AoE attacks to the targets in its surroundings. Therefore, the Phoenix pet had

an absolute advantage in dealing with a large number of monsters at the same time.

Under the insanely powerful suppression of the party, one of the Fire Element Meisters had been bombarded so critically that it only had 10% HP left. At the same time, a progress bar suddenly appeared right below the head of the monster. It was the monster's {Self-destruct}!

Zhang Yang would never have let a monster do what it wants. Immediately, he activated his {Crash Magic} in an attempt to interrupt the monster's casting. However, the Skill {Self-Destruct} was not considered as one of the Magic type attacks. Zhang Yang failed to interrupt the Skill! He quickly activated his {Brutal Smash} in an attempt to interrupt the monster again! Instantly, the monster was stunned! Finally, its chanting was interrupted successfully!

4 seconds later, the monster attempted to use its {Self-Destruct}. However, it was too late. The monster would require 5 seconds to chant for the spell. Well, it was surrounded and beaten to death within 3 seconds! The monster raised its hands towards the sky, turned into some fiery red light pieces and scattered across the ground.

One after another the monsters were killed. However, one monster managed to activate its {Self-Destruct}, dealing quite a substantial amount of damage to the whole party. Meanwhile, even though the monsters that succeeded in detonating themselves would still provide players Experience Points, there would not be any dead bodies left after the explosion. Therefore, there would not be any trace of any loot left on the ground after the monsters die.

As usual, Wei Yan Er went up to pick up the loots. There were quite a number of useless stuff. However, there was also three fiery red pill-like stuff as well.

[Fire Elemental Core] (Consumable)

[Use: Causes 200,000 Fire Damage to all living things in the range of 10 meters. Also causes the targets to receive additional 100% Fire Damage when being hit by Fire Attacks. Lasts for 10 seconds. Effects cannot stack.

Cooldown: 5 seconds.

Required Level: 200

"Wow! The effect of the bomb seems to be very powerful!"

"These seem more powerful than the bombs that uncle Hundred Shots has to offer!"

"It would be super great if every monster drops these bombs!"

Everyone was expressing their joy and excitement for stumbling across such items. These [Fire Elemental Cores] only had 5 seconds of cooldown. Meanwhile, because these were considered as items, using them would not clash with the players' Skills. Furthermore, 200,000 AoE damage sounded pretty decent as well! Theoretically speaking, as long as the number of [Fire Elemental Cores] is abundant enough, anyone could get an increase in DPS of 40,000 damage. Meanwhile, the higher the number of monsters in the vicinity, the more damage the players could deal!

Because those were 'items' belonged to the monsters for self-destruct purpose, the monsters would only drop the item if they were unsuccessful in activating their {Self-Destruct}. However, that Skill was not easy for the players to handle though. Well, because the firepower of Zhang Yang and the party was powerful enough, everyone did not have to run away from the monsters whenever they activate their {Self-Destruct} and stay the hell out of the effective range of the explosions.

Initially, Zhang Yang intended to use the two Phoenix pets to lure the monsters away and let them unleash their AoE Skills on the monsters. However, everyone seemed to be very eager to collect the [Fire Elemental Cores] and use them as grenades or bombs. Therefore, Zhang Yang decided to play along and gave up doing that.

--- The purpose of using AoE attacks was to increase the speed of clearing out the monsters. It would not be possible for the players to control the monsters. Therefore, it would become impossible for the party to collect [Fire Elemental Cores] from killing the monsters. By then, everyone would be furious!

The passage across the mountain was not straight at all. Instead, the passage spiraled up to the top of the mountain. So all they needed to do in order to get to the top was to follow the passage. Well, the size of the mountain was not small at all, especially the bottom of the mountain area. One circle around the mountain was more than 20 kilometers. So, anyone could imagine how many freaking monsters the party had to slay before they could reach the top of the mountain!

However, the party would be able to collect more [Fire Elemental Cores] if they could encounter more monsters. Upon getting familiar with the methods used to battle the monsters, the party managed to form a chain of Status Restriction. No monster could successfully activate {Self-Destruct} if they were ever present in the 'radar' of the party. Every single one of them had to obediently drop the [Fire Elemental Cores] for the party to collect!

As they progressed on, the number of [Fire Elemental Cores] in everyone's inventory was getting higher and higher by the minute. Fortunately, the slots available in the inventory of everyone had reached over 300 to 400 slots. They would have to cry miserably if the available slots in their inventory turned out to be similar when the game server was newly opened.

3 days later, the party managed to push up to 10% of the mountain's height. Judging from their current speed in their progress, although the passage seemed to become shorter as they progressed up, it would still require at least 21 days for the party to reach the top. That would mean 7 days in real-time.

Even if the boss turns out to be easy to kill, it would still take 28 days for the party to take down all four mountains. That was approximately 1 month.

Meanwhile, the Wind Essence Pearl would only stay in Zhang Yang's possession for 90 days. Under the circumstance that the game time and the real time are in the ratio of 3:1, the party would only have barely enough time to complete the quest. Therefore, Zhang Yang would basically could not do anything else for an entire month. He could only

stay here until they defeat all 4 bosses in this realm.

However, the Ascended Tier bosses aside, these Elite Tier monsters could really provide the players quite a substantial amount of Experience Points --- well, no one was there to snatch the monsters from them! Furthermore, the [Fire Elemental Cores] were really some good stuff. Just imagine this. These things could actually increase a player's DPS by 400,000 damage. How great was that, right?

The designers of the realm probably did not anticipate that Zhang Yang and his party would turn out to be so insanely powerful. They stopped almost 100% of the Fire Element Meisters from detonating themselves up! They had really outdone themselves in collecting the [Fire Elemental Cores]!

Well, it was really exciting and intense to collect [Fire Elemental Cores]. The party was willing to beg for more Fire Element Meisters to be spawned. They were not tired of slaying the monsters because they could get good 'bombs' from slaying them. When they had finally reached the top of the mountain, each of the members of the party managed to acquire 4 to 5 sets of the item --- that would mean that each of them have managed to acquire approximately 1,000 [Fire Elemental Cores]!

"Finally! We can take a closer look at the boss!"

Upon looking back at the past month, the party had been slaying monsters for the entire month without doing any other thing. They were about to vomit whenever they thought of battling the monsters. If they were asked to do that for another month, they would surely quit immediately!

However, engaging in difficult battles like that had to earn everyone on the party a substantial amount of Experience Points. Zhang Yang's Experience Bar had reached 78% of his Level 211 currently. Meanwhile. Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, and the other core players had also reached Level 210 by now.

Right at the top of the mountain, there was a gigantic round platform. The platform was not tall. However, the diameter of the round platform

was at least 500 meters! A gigantic Elemental Monster was standing right in the middle of the platform. The monster was approximately 30 meters tall. The entire body of the monsters was in dark red. Lava was dripping constantly from the monster's body, flooding up the hundred-meter area around it, turning the area into dark red color. Although there was not even the slightest flame visible on top of the lava, well, anyone could use their common sense to know that that lava would definitely be hotter than those red-hot metallic plates after they are heated up!

This Elemental monster looked humanoid. It had legs and hands just like a regular human. However, the face of the monsters did not have the five facial features, nor did it had any hair on its head. The body was flowing with the dark red lava, though. The monster was holding a hammer in its red dark right hand. Its size was approximately three times the size of a regular person!

[Fire Elemental Lord Ganesh] (Ascended, Elemental)

Level: 240

HP: 12,010,000,000

Defence: 37,330

Melee Attack: 370,873 - 450,873 (Based on Melee Attack, however, deals Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Burning Ground]: Scorches the entire area into a land of blazing fire in the range of 100 meters, all targets in the effective area will receive 300,000 Fire Damage once every 3 seconds.

[Immolation Smash]: Smashes the target with the hammer, causing 100% Melee Attack of Fire Damage on the target.

[Fire Tornado]: Randomly put 10 Fire Tornadoes. The Fire Tornadoes will be formed successfully after 2 seconds and burn everything that catches up to them, dealing an amount of damage equal to 10% of the target's Maximum HP. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Raging Flame]: Each player's death will provide Ganesh with an additional 100% Damage.

[Elemental Constitution]: Recovers 1% HP in every 30 seconds. The HP amount recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

Note: This is Fire Elemental Lord. The Fire Essence Pearl has absorbed all the fire elemental particles and give life to the Fire Elemental Lord. It's the symbol of Fire!

"It seemed like an easy boss!" Upon seeing the Skills of the boss, everyone felt relieved.

Based on its single-unit, the boss was worthy of being an Ascended Tier boss. However, bosses were not called bosses because of their single-unit attacks, but their AoE attacks. Judging from the boss's Skill, the boss only had a {Burning Ground} which the party could not avoid at all. Although the {Fire Tornado} was so powerful that it could reduce 50% HP of the players, players could just dodge the attacks.

Meanwhile, the {Burning Ground} would deal 300,000 damage to the players each time it hit. With everyone's current Tier of the equipment, everyone should be able to absorb 10,000 damage. That being said, they would be receiving 290,000 damage once in every 3 seconds. Furthermore, the {Burning Aura} could deal 50,000 damage once in every 3 seconds. Well, practically, it could only deal 40,000 damage, though. Therefore, each player would receive over 110,000 damage in each passing second. The 4 healers on the party would definitely be able to heal everyone up nice and steady.

Therefore, the key to survival would be dodging the {Fire Tornadoes} with care. If those attacks hit the players, the healers would be in deep sh*t.

Upon activating their Inheritance Transformations, everyone could finally maximize their DPS output on the boss. Well, the total DPS of the entire party had actually reached over 6,500,000 damage now! However. 6 of them had not reached Level 210 yet. So they were restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Therefore, their Attack power was heavily affected and nerfed.

However, most of the core DPS players had reached Level 210 and beyond that. They were not restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Therefore, the DPS of the entire party could easily exceed 5,500,000 DPS! Of course, that amount of DPS only included two Phoenix pets, one Red Dragon pet, Felice and Sun Xin Yu's Holy Tier Armadimon.

The Recovery rate of the boss was approximately 4,000,000 per second. Therefore, the effective damage would only be 1,500,000. The party would still require 133 minutes to kill the boss.

Because Inheritance Transformations could only last for 120 minutes. So the 13-minute gap could become the fatal moment that causes them to lose the boss battle. Once everyone had left their Inheritance Transformation State, the DPS of the entire party would be reduced by half. If they could not deal at least 4,000,000 DPS, the boss would only recover more and more HP!

Fortunately, the party had acquired quite a number of [Fire Elemental Cores]. So each of the players could add a DPS of 40,000 damage to the total DPS of the party. Well, 20 of them would be able to deal up to 800,000 damage in every passing second! That could definitely cover the shortage of damage during the 13-minute gap now!

Chapter 812: Flame Elemental Lord

Ganesh

Zhang Yang jumped into the fight, closely trailed by the party.

"Everyone! It's Morphin' time!"

Fatty Han laughed out loud while the rest of the team giggled as they activated their Transformation skills. One by one, all sorts of forms were unleashed. Each time they went through this, Wei Yan Er would never fail to laugh at Endless Starlight the king kong, and Fatty Han the overweight vampire.

It was also the first time Cheng Xue Yao was using her Transformation skill in front of anyone else. As an A class Inheritance, her Transformation was both flashy and beautiful. Unlike the others, Cheng Xue Yao's transformation caused all her equipment to fade away. 80% of her naked body was exposed to the world, and her skin had turned ice blue. The air around her crystalized and dropped on the floor as snowflakes. She looked like a beautiful ice sculpture. The sort of elegance she gave off was extravagant, paired with the icy crown resting on her forehead and metallic brassiere that only covered her breast and private parts.

As expected of the Ice Queen Inheritance, her presence in the field was exactly like the Hindu goddess Shiva.

Everyone, including Zhang Yang had to stop and stare at the beauty of it. Fatty Han would never hold back against women, hence, when Cheng Xue Yao Transformed, he immediately went ahead and tried his luck to sweet talk his way to court Cheng Xue Yao. Endless Starlight had to hide away to conceal his red face. Amongst the men around, Endless Starlight was the only person around who had never seen a woman dressed in such an alluring manner. That was probably the closest thing he could go to seeing a woman naked. As the other men were behaving as expectedly when greeted by the sight of a beautiful lady, Female Raid Covert was behaving oddly. Instead of being infatuated with Cheng Xue Yao's most alluring appearance, the weird fellow was not flustered. Instead, he had only taken

a short glance at Cheng Xue Yao before turning to Wei Yan Er, the flat-chest loli.

"Alright, guys! Get killing now!"

Zhang Yang spread his wings and soared into the sky. When he was close to the boss, he shot down like an eagle. The environment they were in had forbidden true flying. Hence, Zhang Yang was not able to properly gain altitude and could only glide his way at a certain height. Despite that, he was still able to move at a breakneck speed.

"Hmph...? Attackers?" Ganesh hummed softly as he turned his head. His lips were sealed tightly, yet he was still able to speak. His calm facial expression suddenly turned sour. He lifted his hammer and smashed it towards the ground where Zhang Yang stood. "Who sent you! Antoine? Dustan? Margalor?"

All three names that he had uttered must be the names of the other bosses. "That's for me to know, and for you to find out. The hard way!"

"So be it! I shall pry the truth from your body! One bone at a time!"

Ganesh roared, and his hammer slammed downward. Zhang Yang lifted his shield, planted his feet solidly into the ground, and took the hit.

PANG!

The hammer struck the shield, yet Zhang Yang stood as still as a mountain during a blizzard. However, the ground beneath him cracked, causing Zhang Yang to slip. Lava started pouring down from the shield. Zhang Yang immediately felt the burning heat in his grip and he quickly jumped away. The Lava was oozing out of the boss' hammer like a water from a wrung sponge.

"Haha! Noobie tank couldn't keep his balance! Looks like it's time for the Black Ranger to kick his steamy butt!" cried Wei Yan Er as she glided across the room like a black crow.

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and re-established his stance, prepared to strike back. The attack that had exceeded more than a million damage had generated more than enough Rage points that his gauge could hold.

With a quick combo, Zhang Yang chained {Charge Up Strike} after {God of War Devastation}.

‘-11,687,895!’

When the boss could deal only a million damage on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had turned around and returned 10 times the damage to his face. Such a powerful smack to the face had made Ganesh grunt in pain.

"Imbecile! Mortals like you will never understand the gravity of your crimes! Only death shall teach your kind!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Oh really?! Well, you're nothing but a burning pile of gas that was spawned from the Fire Essence Pearl! Even if you're the real God of Fire, I'm the inheritor of the God of War! I am stronger than a god. A true God Killer! The only thing you should do is to start kneeling down and grovel beneath my feet!"

Ganesh burst into flames. His breath was literally fires coming out of his nostril. "May Hades have mercy on your soul, for I shall wipe it from the face of this earth!" The boss wielded his hammer and spun around, trying his best to strike Zhang Yang, while sending out countless of lava droplets flying everywhere.

"Haha! What is going on with Little Yang?! He has never talked down a boss like that before!" cried Fatty Han.

"Tch. Tch. Tch." Wei Yan Er clicked her tongue demeaningly and shrugged. "Looks like noobie tank is just being childish!"

Everyone laughed hard when they heard Wei Yan Er, leaving the little girl twitching as she was genuinely confused.

The party went all out with the fight. Every 5 seconds, the party will hurl a ball of Fire Elemental Core that will deal 200,000 damage to the boss. Although the boss is technically made out of fire, unlike the Phoenix, the boss did not have immunity to Fire attacks. It was fortunate for the party, or else both the Phoenix and Daffodil Daydream would be attacking the boss like throwing salt into the sea.

Cheng Xue Yao and Lost Dream had Inheritances with Ice attributes,

hence, their attacks were amplified on the boss. Sadly, Cheng Xue Yao was underleveled by more than 30 Levels. With the Level suppression system acting up, her amplified damage was suppressed down to a normal level. At times, if she was unlucky, her damage will be reduced down to 50% and sometimes even 10%.

Lost Dream was already Level 210 by then. Unlike Cheng Xue Yao, he was able to deal full, unaffected damage to the boss. His overall damage, in this match, was on par with both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream, despite being a Thief!

His Inheritance was a B class. In a non-Transformed state, the damage difference between him and an A class Inheritance player would not be large. Note that the damage bonus difference between A class and B class was only 5%. On the other hand, during his Transformed state, the difference will be large, since the damage boost was 300% and 400%, respectively.

The reason why Lost Dream was able to deal more damage during this fight was all due to the Elemental Conflict of Ice and Fire. However, even though he could deal higher damage than the norm, Fire damage would also inflict stronger damage on Lost Dream and Cheng Xue Yao. Hence, amongst everyone else, those two were taking more damage compared to the whole team.

Furthermore, Cheng Xue Yao was suffering from the Level Suppression damage amplification. Hence, to make sure she stays alive, Zhang Yang had proactively used {Surrogacy} on her. Little did Zhang Yang know that both Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were madly envious of her. It was all because of the skill name! If only the name was "Protect Teammate" instead!

The boss' skill {Burning Ground} was putting a lot of pressure on the team, instead of the boss' attacks himself. All battle companions that dealt little to no damage were unsummoned to lighten the load on the healers. While the others were facing quite a challenging situation, both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han's Phoenixes were doing extremely well, since they had never taken any damage! Flames after flames being burst on them, and

they literally felt nothing but comfort due to their natural constitution.

"Fire Tornado!" the boss growled and unleashed his skills.

Molten lava started to appear all around the battlefield, a hundred meters away from him. There were 10, 5 meters wide pools of lava that were slowly circulating on their own. In just a short amount of time, the pool started to give off hot steam that formed a small tornado that gradually grew in size.

Without any word of warning, everyone moved about to get away from the pool of hot lava. The spinning pillar of hot air had grown too large to a point of no return. If anyone were to get close to it, the suction power will suck them in and burn them for 50% HP. If they are burnt twice, it's sayonara for them.

Luckily, the skill {Fire Tornado} had spawned the tornados, only within 100 meters around the boss. Since the entire battlefield was wide and spacious, the team did not need to worry much about moving around. In fact, everyone had taken their sweet time to adjust their positions. The problems started to double up after 1 minute. The boss had cast the second{Fire Tornado}, increasing the number of tornados in the battlefield to 20.

Zhang Yang and everyone else got serious and moved around swiftly until the boss had finally stopped casting the skill, when most of the area around him was surrounded by the deadly tornados.

Zhang Yang predicted that the tornados would not disappear until the boss is killed. Luckily, the entire fighting arena was so huge, that everyone could find a safe spot even after the boss had continually cast more and more of those tornados. If they find themselves unable to attack the boss due to the tornadoes around them, Zhang Yang would then kite the boss somewhere else and continue the fight there.

The fight continued on with loud banging sounds of the [Fire Elemental Core]. One hour in the fight, and the boss was left with only 31% HP. Thanks to the bombs, only was the team able to deal so much damage. That or, they might not have been able to deal so much damage. The boss

probably would have over 50% by then.

At the one hour mark, Zhang Yang cast {Glare of the Death God} but it failed to activate. However, it was not much of an issue as long no one dies. If someone dies, the boss will gain a 100% attack boost! If one person dies, the damage dealt by {Burning Ground} would increase to 500,000. That would take more than 4 healers to support the party!

"DIE! SCUM OF THE EARTH! ROT IN HELL!"

"THE GODS SHANT NOT BE SULLIED BY THE LIKES OF YOU!"

"THE SEA OF FLAMES SHALL PURIFY YOUR SOUL! SURRENDER AND BE CLEANSED!"

At one point, everyone was sick of the boss' random screaming and decided to tone down the game volume.

25%...22%...20%...

Eventually, the boss had reached 20%, which was its most vulnerable state. The DPS of the party had increased dramatically and was able to deal more damage than usual. However, it was still a short burst of damage, since skills like {Killing Cleave} do have a cooldown and are not able to deal high enough damage to end the boss right there and then.

‘-20,254,352!’

Zhang Yang's axe glowed vibrantly for a brief second and the damage that Zhang Yang had dealt during that instance had breached past 20 million damage.

"That's not {Rising Dragon Strike}, is it?" asked Daffodil Daydream. It was not. If it was, an ethereal dragon will appear and everyone would know it. Zhang Yang quickly reviewed the battle log and found the reason. It was the axe's special effect to deal 8x normal damage. Furthermore, it was stacked with a Critical strike! The total damage dealt was 16x the normal attack~!

"OOOOOOO DAYUM SON!"

"Noobie tank! How are you doing that! I want that axe as well!"

Everyone screamed with excitement. Zhang Yang could only smirk at them. That was the benefit of wielding a two-handed weapon. Although the total damage of a two-handed weapon will lose to a dual wielding configuration, the single instance damage dealt with a two-handed weapon will always be stronger than any one-handed weapon!

15%...10%...5%...

Truth be told, Ganesh was probably the weakest among all four bosses, since the battle was not too complicated, nor did the boss possess strong AoE attack skills. The only dangerous skill the boss had was the {Fire Tornado}. All the players had to do was to avoid them, and they could kill it easily.

After less than 10 minutes, the boss was killed, and rewarded the party with a large pile of loot.

"GG EZ."

"No! It's GGWP!"

"Nah...The best one for this fight would be, EZ GAME EZ LIFE!"

...

Everyone cheered happily, while Zhang Yang remained unfazed. He was contemplating about the difficulty of the quest. He recalled the extreme difficulty of retrieving the [Wind Essence Pearl,] yet this boss was all too simple. It's like the system was compensating players for the extreme difficulty of the previous quest by giving them an easy boss to defeat. Somehow, Zhang Yang felt that it was unfair, for he had to put out so much effort! All by himself!

Wei Yan Er chirped happily as she hop-skipped her way to the loot. She tidied up the loot and arranged all the shiny, glowing loot in an orderly manner. The boss was kind enough to give 10 Ascended tier equipment and 7 Holy tier equipment. Furthermore, all of them had the special 30 Level Requirement reduction!

Although the Ascended tier weapons were good enough for both attack and defense, the Holy tier equipment were not too good. It was all too

"one-sided".

Wei Yan Er first distributed all seven Holy tier equipment. It was plainly obvious that a Level 240 Holy tier equipment would be stronger than the Level 170 Holy tier equipment farmed from the Spectre's Hidden Cavern dungeon. After the lower tier equipment was distributed, Zhang Yang shared the [Tesseract] and combined two of the equipment into one to upgrade them. Since it had an hour cooldown duration, the rest would have to wait for their turn.

The Ascended tier equipment distribution was different. Priority would be given to those from the main party. If anyone required the equipment, they would be put in front of the list. While the others managed to haul weapons, Zhang Yang had only received a cape.

[Cape of the Flame Lord] (Ascended, Cape)

Vitality: +11762

Strength: +2060

Dexterity: +2060

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 23,520.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage from attack.

Use: Grant immunity to all Fire elemental attack. Last for 10 seconds.

Cooldown: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Note: This cape was weaved with the essence of fire. You can feel the pulsing power of Fire by touching the cloth.

Chapter 813: The Ice Weaver Set

Equipment

After all of the equipment was distributed, all that was left to give out were random ETC items including [Skill Point Crystal], [Advance Aura Stone], a few [Level 8 Gemstone], and a few skill books.

Zhang Yang did not participate in the roll for the [Skill Point Crystals] and the [Aura Stone] for he already had more than enough.

"Hue..? What's this [Aura Skill Book]?" said Wei Yan Er as she picked up a red leather-bound book.

[Skill Book: Burning Aura]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Burning Aura}.

Class Requirement: NIL

Level Requirement: 200

"It's an aura book. Dimwit!" Zhang Yang pinched Wei Yan Er's cheek and said, "Alright, those with their aura skills maxed out are forbidden from rolling for this. Please allow your juniors to have a chance."

Everyone else rolled for the skill book and it was won over by Lost Dream. Even though he was part of the main party, he had not invested a single skill point in his aura skill, even though it would not stack with Sun Xin Yu's.

[Burning Aura] (Level 1): Unleashes an aura 30 meters around the user to deal 10,500 Fire damage every 10 seconds. (Damage will increase with both Skill Level and Player's Level). Player can only have one Aura skill active.

There were more than enough Aura Stones of all tiers for Lost Dream to use. Plus, the few [Advanced Aura Stone] that were dropped by the boss were all given to Lost Dream to pump his Aura skill up. Lost Dream went back to town and had his skill maxed out before posting the skill to the party channel.

[Burning Aura] (Level 10): Unleashes an aura 30 meters around the user to deal 105,000 Fire damage every 10 seconds. (Damage will increase with both Skill Level and Player's Level). Player can only have one Aura skill active.

Unlike {Vitality Aura} or {Strength Aura}, Lost Dream's {Burning Aura} was not a party boosting aura effect. It was an offensive aura which could increase his overall DPS by 10,000. Naturally, the intensity of the skill will be enhanced if Lost Dream is in the middle of a swarm of monsters. That being said, he will also be the first target to be eliminated in a GvG war.

"Wuuuhuuu...I want that aura as well!" said Wei Yan Er after knowing its prowess in a fight with multiple targets.

Zhang Yang came over to her and made a pinching hand gesture to scare her. "Rather than standing in the middle and doing nothing, you'd be better off using your stronger {Strength Aura}!"

Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura} increases all allies' Strength attribute by 20%. For Physical attack class, that was a boost of 10% DPS or more, even. The more allies she has around her, the stronger the effect would be, in terms of overall DPS. {Burning Aura} was different, rather than surrounding yourself with allies, {Burning Aura}'s effect will only stand out if Lost Dream surrounds himself with enemies. Both auras were strong and their own way and in different circumstances.

After Zhang Yang collected the quest item [Fire Essence Pearl], he led everyone to the next objective. There were no breaks in-between. The entire party rode down the volcanic mountain and headed next to the neighbor snowy mountain. They had only taken less than an hour to reach their destination, for they were lucky enough to not encounter any monsters during the journey.

'Ding! You have received the effect of {Frostbite Aura}!'

Once they left the foothill of the fiery mountain and stepped onto the first pile of snow, the {Burning Aura} on them disappeared and was replaced with another DoT effect.

[Frostbite Aura]: Receive 50,000 Frost damage every 3 seconds.

At that point, the prowess of the two Phoenixes had dropped exponentially. Due to the elemental conflict, they received additional damage. Zhang Yang and Fatty Han hopped onto the mounts to help reduce the load on the healers. After advancing for a bit, they encountered the first of the snowy monsters.

As expected, it was a snowman. Or rather, a huge monkey-like monster with thick white fur that stood on its hind legs like a gorilla. It looked rather cute when it moved around, exposing its belly whilst scratching its head with a massive hand. However, when it picked up a long spear of ice on the ground, its cuteness was immediately shattered.

[Guardian Snowman] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defense: 14,270

Magic Attack: 66,112 – 86,112

Skills:

[Frost Arrow]: Launches a long arrow made of pure ice and deals 200% Magic Frost damage to a target. Slows targets for 50% movement speed. Last for 5 seconds. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The Guardian Snowmen are the creation of the Ice Lord Antoine. They were created to patrol and to secure his domains.

Similar to the previous fire monsters, the Guardian Snowman were all walking in a group of 8. However, since they were all magic type monsters, they would start chanting their spells from a great distance and launch 8 long ice arrows, or rather spears towards the party.

Luckily, monster count was only 8 at a time. If the number were to increase to 12, one single wave of attack would immediately kill players with lower tier equipment like Cheng Xue Yao.

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, and Ten Dusk took the lead, each taking on a few monsters to their limit. Zhang Yang went ahead and kited four to

allow the other two tanks to have a better time at tanking. With his current Defensive ability, each attack will deal around 80,000, 4 of them would be 320,000 damage. Although the DPS of the monster attacking Zhang Yang was around 160,000, it was a number which Han Ying Xue could heal easily.

As per the rules of gaming, magic type monsters or players will naturally have lower defense and HP as to compensate their powerful destructive attack. Unfortunately, the monsters were all Elite tier, hence, both their attack and defense were high enough to create a problem! They were as tanky as a physical attack monster!

Still, Zhang Yang's party was the anomaly among all parties in the world. In a few seconds, the entire group of 8 Guardian Snowman were all reduced to a pile of lifeless snow.

"Aww Yis! There are set equipment!" cried Wei Yan Er as she picked up a long, translucent, one-piece dress.

[Ice Weaver Long Dress] (Ethereal, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +64

Vitality +10224

Intelligence: +3360

Spirit: +1490

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 6,720.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 8%.

Equip: Reduces 10% Frost type damage.

Level Requirement: 230

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Ice Weaver Set Equipment (1/3): Ice Weaver Long Dress, {Ice Weaver Gloves}, {Ice Weaver Sandals}.

Three Set Effect: Reduces 20% Frost damage.

"Hmm. If each of the set equipment has a 10% Frost attack reduction, the total Frost Reduction gained from equipping all three sets will be 50%." Said Daffodil Daydream.

"Since the boss will undoubtedly use Frost Attacks, we should gather a few more sets to reduce the attack of the boss," said Hundred Shots.

"It's a wise move. Even though they are only Ethereal tier equipment, three of them would not reduce our overall attack by much."

Zhang Yang nodded and "dumped" the dress to Han Ying Xue. All Cloth Armor will be handed to her in the future while Leather Armor will be taken care by Hundred Shots. All Heavy Armor will be in his hands. If the boss does have too high of a damage, they might actually need the set equipment to survive.

The party continued through the thick snow mountain. They managed to haul more of those sets after a few encounters with many groups of Snowmen. Although the drop rate was not too good, they would not have trouble farming more of them, since the snowy mountain was just too huge. There are bound to be more Snowman groups patrolling around. The problem was that the monsters used magic attacks. Zhang Yang nor the other tanks dared to kite too many at a time. At most, Zhang Yang would take 5 while Endless Starlight took 3, and Ten Dusk took 2.

As such, the hiking speed was extremely slow. The party had taken more than 20 days to find their way to the peak of the snowy mountain and find the boss, the Frost Lord, Antoine.

Despite being a boss, it was only a 30 meter tall, larger Snowman. Somehow, due to its nature as a Snowman, its massive building-like size was a little cute. The boss was wielding a long white magic staff instead of the snow spears.

[Antoine, the Frost Lord] (Ascended, Elemental Being)

Level: 240

HP: 12,000,000,000

Defense: 37,330

Magic Attack: 210,392 – 270,392

Skills:

[Cold to the Bone]: Deals 300,000 Frost Damage every 3 seconds to a target. Inflicts 100% bonus damage to targets that is frozen. Reduces 10% movement speed every second. When a target's movement speed reaches 0, the target will be frozen in place, and cannot engage in any action.

[Fire Beacon]: Randomly inflicts 100,000 Fire damage every 3 seconds to a random target. Lasts for 15 seconds. [Fire Beacon] will dispel the effect of [Cold of the Bone] Frozen effect. Targets that are released from Frozen effect by this skill will gain an effect of [Beacon's Radiance], dispelling all targets that are Frozen within 20 meters.

[Frost Arrow]: Deals 200% Magic Frost damage to a target. Gains 100% Critical strike rate whenever used against Frozen targets. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The King of Ice, Snow, and Frost. Birth from the Ice Essence Pearl after absorbing all the essence from the Water Elementals on the mountain.

"Huh. That's surprising. The boss does not have any recovery skill! We can kill it easily!"

"Don't be too happy just yet. Pay attention to the skill {Cold to the Bone}. Damage aside, the slow effect and the Frozen effect will kill us all!"

"True. The only way of dispelling the frozen effect is the {Fire Beacon}. That would put a lot of pressure on the healers and the DPS of the entire party! If the boss does have any recovery skill. We're be popsicles for the Snowman!"

"Don't forget that after Frozen, the boss will deal more damage to us! I don't think players can be healed during a Frozen effect. Unless the boss decides to use {Fire Beacon} we will be ice cubes instead of popsicles!"

"Correct. The main point of this fight is to rely on the player that

receives the {Fire Beacon} to rescue the rest of the teammates that are Frozen. Accessories, skills and status removal skills, will not be enough to save our butt!"

Zhang Yang nodded at the party's serious discussion and praised them for the effort. He then formulated a plan and a formation to allow for maximum coverage of the {Fire Beacon}.

Since the boss did not have any recovery skills, there was no need to prioritize on DPS. Instead, this match called for survivability instead. Frozen effect will only allow the boss to kill the party faster and easier. Although it cannot instantly kill a player in a Transformed state, it will still be a massive pain in the butt in terms of attacking. Everyone in the vicinity will be frozen after 10 seconds! In fact, after being freed again, they will only have a 10-second attacking window before they will be frozen again. In terms of defeating the boss, they might not stand a chance if something goes horribly wrong.

Chapter 814: Frost Lord, Antoine

Those who were attacked with the {Fire Beacon} will gain only one chance to use {Beacon's Radiance}. Hence, the formation they had come up with was to stick together to make sure {Beacon's Radiance} could cover everyone.

Instead of using their Transformation skill to charge in recklessly, Zhang Yang had ordered one to have a test run without Transforming. Naturally, Zhang Yang was the first to strike the boss.

"Mortal. You have sullied the Holy land of the gods! Is it death that you seek!?" Antoine roared and shot out a Frost Arrow to deal 350,000 damage to Zhang Yang. Following closely after the first attack was the {Cold to the Bone} skill. Zhang Yang was immediately inflicted with a debuff, causing him to take 300,000 Frost damage every 3 seconds and a 10% movement speed reduction for every second.

"This is bad. That skill is a single target skill!" Zhang Yang frowned and grunted.

Contrary to normal playstyle, if the skill is a multitarget skill, it would be easier to handle, since everyone will be frozen together and it would only take one use of the {Beacon's Radiance} to dispel the Frozen effect on everyone.

However, if {Cold to the Bone} is cast on one player at a time, players will be frozen sequentially. Hence, when one is about to be saved, the other will be frozen, causing an "uneven" rate of dispelling. Bear in mind that {Beacon's Radiance} will only dispel the Frozen status and not the movement reduction effect.

As expected, the boss had continued to cast {Cold to the Bone} on the party members, one person at a time. Zhang Yang had concluded two things. One, {Cold to the Bone} did not have any cooldown skills. Two, the boss will randomly cast the skill and stop at random as well. At times, the boss will cast thrice on three players and stop there. Other times, he would only cast on one player and stop there.

Before all 20 players there were inflicted with {Cold to the Bone}, Zhang Yang was the first to be frozen in place. Since the boss had not used {Fire Beacon}, Zhang Yang had to use {Warrior's Will} to save himself. Once {Cold to the Bone} has successfully "frozen" a player, the player will continue to take the DoT damage while being immobile. After being thawed out, Zhang Yang still continued to receive DoT, but no longer suffered from movement speed reduction. Sadly, the boss will continue to randomly cast the skill on the players.

At that moment, Zhang Yang scrapped the original plan. His plan was to get everyone frozen at the same time and have everyone to dispel the Frozen state with their own status removal skills. All in all, the plan was completely screwed up since the boss' skill was not described properly. It was only after all players have received {Cold to the Bone}, the boss would cast {Fire Beacon} on a random target. When the chosen player receives the skill {Fire Beacon}, the system will grant the player an additional, usable, one-time skill called {Beacon's Radiance}. The skill could be used anytime to dispel the frozen effect from all players within a certain area. When the {Fire Beacon} effect on a player disappears, so does the skill {Beacon's Radiance}. The estimated time of effect would only be 15 seconds.

The frequency of the skill cast was rather strict. It will be used once every 10 seconds. Within that time, the player must use the skill to dispel or the timing for dispelling would be off. Theoretically, the skill must be used once every 10 seconds. As for the usage of the {Beacon's Radiance} to be efficient, it would have to depend on the number of healers being Frozen in that instance. If there are more than two healers Frozen, the chosen player who has the {Beacon's Radiance} may use the skill to thaw the healers out, or the entire party's healing rate would be affected gravely.

Since it was still during their test phase, Zhang Yang had tried to use the War Chariot to fight the boss. However, although all players in the War Chariot will receive one DoT tick at a time, the Frozen effect was rather f*cked up. Once any player in the War Chariot is Frozen, the effect would

apply to all players on the War Chariot! Basically, all the players on the War Chariot were constantly being Frozen. Although the damage was painful, it was not much of a trouble for the party. Unfortunately, it would only be a complete waste to use the War Chariot for that particular boss fight.

Without Transformations, everyone in the party only had a small margin error. Players like Cheng Xue Yao had only around 1,500,000 HP, and that was already with the help of the {Vitality Aura}. Under the Frozen state, three attacks would be enough to kill her.

Although healers were able to cope with the intense healing requirement, it was only lasting for 10 seconds at a time. When one or two of the healers are Frozen in place, the other healer would not have enough time to heal the other moving players. Hence, just a few minutes into the fight, more than 10 players had kicked the bucket! The boss still had more than 80% HP!

Zhang Yang quickly ordered anyone who was still alive to get out of the battle before they are killed unreasonably. Zhang Yang unsummoned the Phoenix and waited for everyone in the battle to erase their aggro before he left the battlefield with {Shadow of the Void}.

Everyone returned from the nearest graveyard while the survivors had waited for them to further discuss the battle plans. For the next attempt, they would use their Transformations. However, since Transformation skills had 72 hours of cooldown duration, they would have to make their next attempt count. That, or they could attempt to dominate the next mountain, either the Light Mountain or the Shadow Mountain.

"Let's try using the Ice Weaver set equipment," said Daffodil Daydream after being silent. She continued to elaborate. Since the main point of the battle was to stay alive instead of focusing on attack power, the party could sacrifice a little of their DPS to increase their survivability. At most, the entire party would lose 10% of their total DPS in exchange for a 50% increase in Frost resistance. It was a worthwhile trade-off.

Zhang Yang nodded his head to agree with Daffodil Daydream. Along

the way to the mountain top, they had killed many monsters and had collected many sets of Ice Weaver set equipment. Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shot, and Zhang Yang distributed all the equipment to the party. All but Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang had received a set each. It was not that they did not want to take them, they were lacking a few important parts that would make the set whole.

However, since the two top DPS units in the team had S Class Inheritances, their magic nullification rate was at 40%. Not wearing any Frost resistance armor would not make a significant difference to their survivability.

Everyone changed into their new set of equipment and were smiling with great confidence, sure that they will win the second attempt.

"Foolish human! Know that life is precious! Since you have forsaken them for the greed of victory, I shall be the one to teach you a lesson!" Antoine groaned, as the party, led by Zhang Yang approached the boss again, for the second time.

Without delay, the battle started with Antoine blasting Zhang Yang with a Frost Arrow. The cold blue arrow whistled through the air and immediately sublimated in the air when it made contact with Zhang Yang.

Resist!

That was the effect of the Inheritance Transformation Magic Nullification in effect. Magic Nullification is unlike Magic Resistance, where the damage taken will be reduced. Magic Nullification will completely negate all magic damage dealt by a magic attack for that instance. S class Inheritance has 40% Magic Nullification rate. If one is kissed by the Goddess of Luck, having 100% chance to nullify all incoming magic attack was not an impossible dream. Still, it would not be happening anytime soon. As soon as the attack count reaches a certain amount, be it un-nullified or nullified, the pseudo-RNG will kick in to make adjustments.

{Cold to the Bone}!

On the second run, Zhang Yang was not able to nullify the skill, since

the magic skill inflicted on him was not counted as an attack, but a debuff. Only when the DoT starts ticking on him, would Zhang Yang have a chance to nullify each tick.

After Zhang Yang was inflicted by {Cold to the Bone}, the party rushed into the fight and started to attack. Without recovery skills to restore his HP, the boss' HP drops much much faster than before.

"Pest! Begone!" The boss roared with fury as he cast {Cold to the Bone} on many players. Since the ticking DoT had to pass through two "obstacles", one being the Frost Resistance set effect, and second being the magic Nullification of each player, part of the damage was absorbed and the other part would depend on the luck of the player.

Even though being Frozen was inevitable, with 50% Frost Resistance and the Magic Nullification helping, the party was able to last longer and better than before. All the healers, including Han Ying Xue, were having a relaxed time healing everyone. It was mostly due to the HP boost provided by the Transformation skill. Even the weakest player there had over 15,000,000 HP! There would not be a case where players will be killed instantly for being Frozen.

"This is nice. I never knew that having magic resistance armor would ease the battle this much!" cried Endless Starlight.

"Oh shut up! It's not like you're doing much damage anyway! Look! Not even little Yan Er is making noise! It's not your turn yet!" cried Daffodil Daydream as she still bore some hatred for the perverted man.

"Say what now?" cried Wei Yan Er when she heard her name being called out.

"Ehh. Nothing!"

Everyone else laughed at the comical scene.

While he was fighting rhythmically, Zhang Yang had a sudden thought. Perhaps killing the bosses of the quest had something to do with the monsters surrounding the area. For example, defeating the Fire boss was all thanks to the monsters that had dropped the bombs. On the other

hand, to defeat the Ice boss, the party had relied on equipment that had been dropped by the monsters! Could it a coincidence, or was it perhaps by design? Still, thanks to the 50% Frost resistance set effect, the team had no need to use their Transformation for the second attempt. All it did was to increase the DPS power and reduce the time taken to kill the boss. As for survivability, having just the Frost resistance armor would do fine.

What an interesting plan, Zhang Yang thought to himself. Perhaps it would be the same for the remaining two mountains!

After taking so much damage from the party despite having cast so many {Cold of the Bone}, the boss started to show signs of being defeated. At then, even though the boss had high HP, the party would, theoretically require another 40 minute more to kill the boss. Before they knew it, Zhang Yang's luck that fight was rather good. Not only was his Transformation magic nullification skill able to nullify many Frost attacks, even the {Glare of the Death God} was effective on the boss!

Naturally, due to the trouble of being frozen from time to time, the team was not able to maximize their DPS to their full potential. Hence, they had taken 50 minutes to reach 20% HP, and another 10 minutes to kill the boss.

The victory was rather awkward for the party, since they had suffered greatly from the first attempt and won the second attempt without much effort. However, in less than a second, that bad feeling was gone when Wei Yan Er jumped for the pile of loot. Antoine had dropped a total of 9 Ascended tier equipment and 8 Holy tier equipment, as well as countless random items.

After a turn of rolling, Zhang Yang had not obtained any single equipment but managed to haul in a skill book.

[Rock Solid] (Level 1): Upon activation, stand in the same position to gain 10% Defense and 2% Damage Reduction passive for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 1 minute.

To test the skill's growth rate, Zhang Yang had added one skill point on the skill and found that the Defense gain went up to 20% while the

passive Damage reduction was increased to 4%. If Zhang Yang maximizes the skill to Level 10, he would gain 100% Defense and 20% Damage reduction. It was a powerful defensive skill, if only it could last longer than 10 seconds. However, if the skill is paired with the {God of War Shield}, Zhang Yang's damage reduction would go up to 60%, which is almost the same as the {Shield Wall} damage reduction effect.

Zhang Yang could not help but try and have the skill enhanced via the Book of Revelation.

[Rock Solid (Enhance)] (Level 2): Upon activation, stand in the same position to gain 30% Defense and 6% Damage Reduction passive for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 1 minute.

A 50% boost!

At that point in time, Zhang Yang had used all three upgrade slot of the Book of Revelation for {Block}, {Shield Wall}, and {Rock Solid}. He had removed the upgrade effect on {Gates of Hell} until further required. Since the Book of Revelation upgrade slot change had a 24 hours cooldown duration, Zhang Yang could charge 3 different skills a day if he wanted!

The boss had also dropped a skill book called {Frost Aura} which was given to Cheng Xue Yao. The aura skill was speedily level up to the maximum, which made Zhang Yang and the other core party member feel a little disgruntled. Back then, increasing their aura skill from Level 1 to Level 10, had taken them more than 3 years to do so!

[Frostbite Aura] (level 10): Deals 80,800 Frost damage every 10 seconds to all targets within 30 meters of the user. Damage will increase, according to the level of the player and skill. Reduces the movement speed of all targets in the effective range by 50%. You can only have one active Aura effect in one instance.

Chapter 815: Shadow Lord Margalor

The downside of the {Frostbite Aura} was its damage being weaker than {Burning Aura}. However, the major advantage of {Frostbite Aura} was the additional movement speed reduction! As a Spellcaster, the skill was more than helpful for Cheng Xue Yao, since the effect will be applied to all targets within the effective range. It was as similar to Zhang Yang's {Thunder Strike}, only that it was permanently active and can never be dispelled.

Naturally, Cheng Xue Yao was so delighted with the skill that she gave Zhang Yang a blow kiss. Zhang Yang tried his best to be oblivious to it but Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were extremely sensitive to that sort of thing. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue immediately rolled their eyes at him.

But then again, perhaps it was called for, since Zhang Yang had slightly "played" with her by pinching her cheeks when she had served him coffee at work. The woman must be trying to get the game straight with him.

Zhang Yang continued his pretense and moved on with the quest after he picked up the [Ice Essence Pearl]. The party left the snowy mountain and went to the Shadow Mountain.

Similar to the last two mountains, the Shadow Mountain had a similar aura effect.

'Ding! You have received the effect: Shadow Aura!'

[Shadow Aura]: Attack reduced by 10%.

Naturally, having their damage reduced, even if it is only 10%, did not please them at all, when they had to already reduce their attack in exchange for survivability. It was the sort of salt in the wound which everyone truly disliked. Just when they could finally change back to their own original gear to regain their lost damage power, the next map had them reduce their attack again!

While everyone was having a rather unpleasant time, Han Ying Xue was extremely delighted. She was a sloth! Since the aura skill was not the DoT

type, she would not need to move around constantly to heal everyone! It was about time for her to slack a little.

Still, even though they had to bear with the damage reduction, the team proceeded on and encountered the monsters that dwelled on that blackened earth.

[Shadow Stalker] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defense: 14,270

Melee Attack: 98,335 – 158,335 (Shadow Based Physical Attack)

Skills:

[Shadow Bomb]: Hurls a bomb to a target that explodes after 3 seconds. Deals 120,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within 10 meters of the initial targets.

Note: Loyal goons of the Shadow Lord Magarlör. They have been personally trained by Lord Magarlör himself and would trade their lives for his.

As expected of their name and the environment that the party was in, the monster was completely black, yet somewhat translucent, with several floating black bits the size of tiny ping-pong balls. Their appearance was that of ghouls, a black entity that was covered with a black sheet. Similar to the other mountains, the monsters were in groups of eight.

The entire party of 20 went on ahead and attacked with the three tanks paving the way, and the rest of the team following closely.

Overall, the one thing that made the battle rather annoying was the {Shadow Bomb}. The skill would be cast on random targets. There were no rules that said the skill cannot be inflicted on the same target. In that case, an unlucky player could end up "eating" all eight bombs and take over 1,000,000 damage! Despite the fact that the party members have managed to haul a few Ascended tier and Holy tier equipment from the

two previous boss, they were not able to put them on since they had not yet fulfilled the Level Requirement. Hence, those weaker players were not able to survive, for their HP was at around 1,500,000 HP, at best.

Like Magic Nullification of Inheritance Transformation, taking eight bombs in one instance would be extremely rare. On the other hand, there were the AoE explosions. If anyone receives the bomb and does not react fast enough, they would end up hurting everyone around themselves. Thankfully, everyone in the party had a certain level of prowess. If they were to stand still and allow the bomb to explode in the midst of the party, he or she will be kicked out of the party, permanently!

With haste, all eight of the monsters were dealt with. The monsters had dropped a few ETC items that were of no use to the party and will be sold to NPCs later. However, there was a rather mysterious item and piqued their interest.

[Shadow Orb] (Usable)

Use: The Bane of Light. Use it to unleash the power of Shadow to resist the [Rage of the Light]. Range: 30 meters Cooldown: 200 seconds.

Level Requirement: 200

It was a random item that could be used to counter a certain skill. However, who, when, or what situation calls for it, no one had the slightest clue. Zhang Yang took the item first, since he had the most Inventory Space amongst all of them. Somehow, he had a good feeling that the item will be useful for the upcoming boss fight.

Initially, Zhang Yang did not want to store it. Even though he had plenty of space in his inventory, he had most of them occupied with random potions! He had argued with Wei Yan Er for a long time and eventually lost to the entire team's persuasion.

The team continued the hike but felt slightly annoyed, it was not just the Shadow Stalkers, but mainly the {Shadow Aura} that reduced the team's overall DPS. A drop of 10% DPS would directly affect their pushing speed by 10%, so to speak. Since the monsters around had the skill {Shadow Bomb}, Zhang Yang himself did not dare to kite too many monsters at a

time, fearing that the team members might not be able to cope with the instantaneous reaction required to bring the bombs away from the party.

Along the way, the party found more {Shadow Orbs,} although the drop rate was not too good. 20 days later, they had all reached the peak of the mountain. By then, the party had collected more than enough of the orbs that Zhang Yang had stuffed his inventory full with the {Shadow Orbs}. In the end, Zhang Yang finally dumped piles of {Shadow Orbs} on the ground and made everyone take a few.

200 counts made a stack. Hence, everyone in the party carried roughly four stacks of {Shadow Orbs} on them. There were more than 16,000 counts of {Shadow Orbs}. For such a large haul, the team was still dubious about the use of the item. Zhang Yang made a nonchalant comment about how the previous boss fights had required the help from monsters' drops and persuaded the team to keep the orbs until they fight the final boss.

At the peak of the mountain, there was a huge circular altar with ceramic tiles. The boss was sitting in the middle of the altar, meditating. Its 30-meter height appearance screamed of his status as a boss. Aside from his size, his dark, void, abyssal, black appearance was haunting. His existence was that of a black hole, though he did not possess such suction power.

[Shadow Lard Margalor] (Ascended, Elemental Being)

Level: 240

HP: 12,000,000,000

Defense: 37,330

Melee Attack: 360,873 – 460,873

Skills:

[Lullaby of Death]: Sings a song of the end times, dealing 400,000 Shadow damage to all targets within 100 meters.

[Shadow Claw]: Deals 150% melee physical attack to a target.

[Void Tornado]: Unleashes a large tornado to destroy everything in its

path. Within 5 seconds, 5 players would have to get inside the eye to stop the tornado from exploding. Failure to do so will cause the Tornado to explode and deduct 99% HP of all players within 100 meters. Players that get into the eye of the tornado will be immobilized. Requires 20 seconds to stop the power of the tornado.

[Shadow Blessing]: Increases 100% attack power. Stackable. Casting time: 2 seconds.

Note: The rule of the Dark. The King of Shadow. Born from the collection of all the shadows gathered in the Shadow Essence Pearl.

Everyone immediately frowned like madmen when they saw the list of complicated skills. Without a doubt, [Lullaby of Death] would be the boss' strongest AoE skill. In fact, it was not a huge deal for the party to see something like that. All bosses would have a similarly powerful AoE skill for that matter. The problem would be the rate of it being used. Too many in a short time would rank him at a world boss tier!

Zhang Yang did not care about the skill since the party would have to take the damage head-on. {Shadow Claw} will mostly be used on the tank which would not be a problem for Zhang Yang. Transformations would further reduce the damage.

The main problem of the boss would be the {Void Tornado} and {Shadow Blessing}.

{Void Tornado} would require players to stop attacking the boss and get into the tornado to "dispel" the skill. That, or everyone would have their HP reduced by 99%. Paired with {Lullaby of Death}, everyone would die almost instantly. Although they would have to temporarily sacrifice 5 DPS to get inside the Tornado, it would be much of a problem since there were weaker level players there whose DPS would not make much difference.

In the end, it was all about the {Shadow Blessing}. Stackable skills are always a problem...

"I think it can be interrupted since there's the 2-second casting time. If it can't be interrupted, might as well make it an instant cast," said Hundred Shots.

"If the skill is going to be used repeatedly, we're better off discussing the turns we take to interrupt."

Zhang Yang pondered for a while and said, "We'll have a test run first. Fight the boss without using Transformation skills. If all goes well, I'll give the signal on when to use Transformations. Everyone cool with that?"

"Understood."

Zhang Yang led the party and confronted the boss.

"What art thee doing h're! Thou art not alloweth! Thy shalt slayeth thee all!" cried the boss as he opened his eyes. Without any further warning speech, the boss got up to his feet and smashed Zhang Yang with his fist.

WHAM!

Zhang Yang lifted his shield and blocked the oncoming fist. He then rode the momentum of the boss' attack and twisted in the air for a riposte, dealing a powerful strike that made the boss retract his hand immediately.

The party fanned out and surrounded the boss to attack.

"Thou art not worth of thine strength! Begone!" said Margalor as it raised his hands, ready to squash Zhang Yang.

{Shadow Claw}!

{Rock Solid}!

‘-306,575!’

What that was supposed to be 550,000 damage turned out to only be 300,000 on Zhang Yang. That is how strong Zhang Yang is, as a Guardian! The true defender of all physical attack!

"Interesting!" the boss chuckled smugly. He then clapped his hands together and chanted a long stream of words in just a matter of 3 seconds.

{Lullaby of Death}!

It was a skill that was similar to Wei Yan Er's {Melodies of War}. However, unlike the little girl, the boss raps it so swiftly that he had only taken 3 seconds to chant it all out. A black wave burst out of the boss and

blasted everyone. A shadowy, gas-like entity seeped into everyone's body and dealt 300,000 Shadow damage instantly.

Right as everyone was just getting back up to their feet from the blast, another blast came and struck again. At that moment, the boss had displayed its true potential as an Ascended tier boss. Right after one skill is unleashed, another skill was cast again. There was practically no pause in between the attacks, besides the chanting!

Again, similar to {Melodies of War}, {Lullaby of Death} can be cast while other skills are being cast at the same time! It was chaotic beyond words! It was an incredibly difficult for everyone in the team, including Zhang Yang! If he is unable to set his mind straight then, how could the others do the same!? Without the HP boost of Transformation, the healers were having a tough time trying their best to keep up with the healing!

"Urgh! Cheating boss! Report! Report! How is it possible for a boss to sing so fast!? Not even Jay Chow could rap that fast!" cried Wei Yan Er as she felt jealous. By then, Wei Yan Er's chanting speed had been reduced down to 18 seconds. However, how could she compare herself to the boss' inhuman speed of 3 seconds!

"Little Yan Er, you might as well try and learn singing for a change! Perhaps one day, you could even rap as fast as Jay Chow!"

"Big Fatty bro! Why would I want to rap like Jay Chow! That's so un-lady like!"

Zhang Yang figured something out and said, "Little brat. Talking in the game does not use your own mouth, your tongue, your lips, nor voice box. It's all in your head. As long as you can think it, you can do it. It's all in your head!"

Chapter 816: Switch Targets

In game, although the avatars of the players talk using their mouths, it was all but a simulation of reality. In truth, everything is interpreted by reading brain waves. As such, the movement speed of players, the reaction rate, body movements, are all limited by the human mind. It all comes to the ability of the player to step outside the boundaries of cybergaming. In short, the faster you think, the faster you chant.

Wei Yan Er had an epiphany and widened her eyes. She heeded Zhang Yang's advice and tried to outsmart her own "brain". It was hard in the beginning since everyone has gotten used to talking with their own mouths since birth. Hence, unless you're a rapper like Jay Chow or Eminem, you'll be a mere mortal. To gain speed, one must train. It was that simple. Luckily for Wei Yan Er, {Melodies of War} only had 30 seconds of cooldown duration. She could train as much as she wanted to.

That being said, the boss had no intention of allowing the team to have a good time.

"Darkness...heed thine power. Destroy in thy name!" cried the boss as a progress bar appeared on his character. He was preparing to cast {Shadow Blessing}!

"Stop that!"

Since it was just a test run, everyone had not been assigned their turns of interrupting his casts. Hence, everyone in the party had used all their disrupting skills on the boss at once.

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

...

Completely, utterly useless!

"What the actual f*ck!?" cried Fatty Han.

How could they continue the fight? Just a single cast of {Shadow Blessing}, and the boss shall obtain an attack power that rivals a Celestial boss!

In a blink of an eye, the boss had created a cloak of shadow that hovered around his character. 100% attack increment! Hopeless. That was what everyone, even Zhang Yang, thought of, then. A {Lullaby of Death} after getting the buff deals more than 600,000 damage on everyone. Even though they were merely testing, all the four healers in the party had immediately jumped into turbo mode to heal everyone. Sadly, just 10 seconds later, the boss had once again used {Shadow Blessing}. This time, the cloak of shadow that hovered around him darkened.

200% Attack increment is the same as a 300% basic attack bonus. His normal attacks were now the same, or perhaps even exceeded the damage dealt by Angus' normal attacks! {Lullaby of Death} was now dealing 900,000 per cast, which had lead to Han Ying Xue started to running low on MP while the rest of the healers had already given up on healing.

When the healers slowed down, party members started to drop like flies. Worst of all, amidst their despair, Margalor had used {Shadow Blessing} for the third time!

300% Attack bonus!

At the third use of {Shadow Blessing}, the party needed no verbal commands to start retreating. At that moment, more than half of the party member had died, and the remaining players in the field died immediately after the chained use of {Lullaby of Death}.

By the time the boss used the fourth {Shadow Blessing}, Zhang Yang was the only player left alive.

'-2,468,392!'

Zhang Yang had taken more than 2 million damage and had died with a single use of {Shadow Claw} from the steroid-pumped boss.

The Book of Revelation revival effect immediately kicked in, and Zhang Yang used {Shadow of the Void} to immediately escape the battlefield

after he got back up to his feet.

Han Ying Xue was greatly disgruntled as she thought that Zhang Yang had wanted to continue the fight. At her death, she had quickly revived on the spot with her own [Resurrection Monolith], and was immediately killed by the boss.

"Dummy! Why didn't you tell me that you have given up?!"

"Didn't I tell you that this is a test run?"

"Gah! You always say that. Did you know that most of us had actually believed that you could take on the boss by yourself?"

"What...? Anyhoo. Everyone! Go back to the graveyard and revive there instead. Don't come back up. Gather at the base of the valley!"

Zhang Yang flew down the mountain with haste and told the entire party to choose to revive at the graveyard, even though that would weaken everyone. (Revival at the graveyard will inflict a weakened status). Although everyone was confused at his command, they did listen to him and followed his words.

After everyone had gathered together, Zhang Yang scratched his head and asked, "So, how was the boss fight? Any thoughts?"

After a few seconds of solemnness, Fatty Han was the first to open his mouth. "It's impossible to defeat the boss! Not only that {Shadow Blessing} could not be disrupted, the cooldown of the skill is only 10 seconds! How are we supposed to fight that boss when he would only get stronger and stronger!?"

Although his intonation and speech pattern was unrefined, everything he said was on point. {Shadow Blessing} would allow the boss to have attack powers that could rival that of a Celestial tier boss, and perhaps even exceed that! Without a miracle like Felice suddenly going berserk, they had no chance of defeating the boss.

"There's no way the developers would make a boss that cannot be defeated. I'm sure there is a way that we have not seen yet." Said Zhang Yang.

"...How?" Daffodil Daydream squeaked. "The boss did not even use {Void Tornado} once! Yet, we were all dropping like flies!"

"Monsters," said Sun Xin Yu softly.

"Monsters? You mean the {Shadow Orbs} that the monsters dropped? That's no use against Margalor!" said Fatty Han angrily.

Lost Dream gasped in epiphany and said, "Guys, are we forgetting about another certain Holy type boss?"

Everyone that had followed Zhang Yang since the beginning of the guild formation was smart enough to understand that Lost Dream meant. "I see what you're getting at. The drops from the Shadow monsters are used to counter the Light boss. That means that the monster drops in the Light mountain could be used to counter the shadow boss!" said Hundred Shots.

"Aye!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "In that case, might as well give it a try then!"

Everyone agreed and rode their mounts towards the Light mountain and momentarily forgot about Margalor.

'Ding! You have received the effect: Holy Radiance Aura!'

[Holy Radiance Aura]: Takes additional 20% Holy attribute damage.

Compared to the other DoT effect and the damage reduction aura, the party was not too disgruntled when they received the damage amplify aura. Han Ying Xue, for one, was not too happy with that. Luckily, the {Holy Radiance Aura} was not a DoT effect. At most, Han Ying Xue would need to heal a few more times during a fight.

Like the other mountains around, the monsters in the Light mountain were all Holy based. Those monsters that roamed around the mountain were like gigantic light bulbs. They were shaped like one, and shone brightly like one.

[Holy Propagator] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 230

HP: 115,000,000

Defense: 14,270

Skills:

[Holy Smite]: Summons the power of Divinity and deals 200% Holy Magic damage to a target. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The followers of the Holy Lord Dustan. Their purpose in life is to spread the teachings of Lord Dustan and to smite all that is evil.

Again, they were all grouped in eights. Due to the presence of the {Holy Radiance Aura}, the Propagator's attacks had dealt extra damage to the party. Even though one of them will only gain a 20% damage amplification, all eight of them would deal the damage of nine monsters! Furthermore, the monsters were attacking with magic. Their attacks ignored defense values and would deal powerful damage, enough to kill a single player if they were to concentrate fire.

Fortunately, there were three tanks then, and everyone had no problem attacking the monsters. After a few quick bashes and smashes, all the monsters were killed and dropped a bunch of ETC item and that one tool that everyone had been waiting for.

[Holy Orb] (Usable)

Use: Unleashes the Holy power within to dispel {Shadow Blessing}.
Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 200 seconds.

Level Requirement: 200

"Hah! Sister Sun was right! There was something here that we can use to fight the shadow boss!"

"That's actually a surprise. Who would have thought that the monsters of two separate bosses would drop items that could be used to counter the other!"

"There's one problem guys. This has 200 cooldown duration, yet {Shadow Blessing's} cooldown is only 10 seconds..."

"Looks like we need to sit down and arrange a proper sequence for us to

take turns dispelling. If my calculations are right, not one of us, NOT A SINGLE ONE of us can make a mistake. If anyone misses the chance, the boss will gain its attack bonus buff!"

"Don't forget. There's still the skill {Void Tornado} that we need to stand inside to dispel! 5 of us needs to stand inside there for 20 seconds. During that time, those who have their Holy Orbs on cooldown should automatically run to the tornado."

"Hmm. Since that we have the {Shadow Orb} right now, we should just try and fight the Holy boss. I'm guessing that the two Shadow and Light bosses will have the same META(1). Shadow and Light are the same thing, just from two opposite ends."

Before they had a chance to examine the {Holy Orb}, everyone had their own minds set on the situation. After they had managed to farm a few more orbs and examine their properties, they voiced out their opinions and started formulating their own plans before Zhang Yang could even guide them.

Zhang Yang smiled with satisfaction, seeing that his party members were now working as team, instead of depending on him alone like old times.

Since the boss fight was expected to be long, a 10-second interval dispelling rate was tough. Everyone would need to be on their toes and be ready to cast on time. 6 players, one minute...that's a number that required intense concentration and preparation. There was no room for any careless mistakes or they will be the first to be killed.

As mention earlier, since they had many {Shadow Orbs}, they had all decided to try and defeat the Holy boss. They had no need to worry about monsters on the Shadow mountain respawning after they defeat the Holy boss. They were in a special map and they could take their time to kill the boss, for the monsters or the boss would not respawn after being killed.

The party took roughly the same amount of time as they did with other mountains to reach the peak.

The boss was an exceptionally large, perhaps industrialized version of a

gigantic light bulb. 30 meters high...how many watts would it take to power up that thing? Unlike normal household light bulbs, this bulb shape..."thing" had a pair of hands that was wielding a long white staff. Unlike the other bosses that had a humanoid shape, the Holy boss had no legs. Instead, it was floating around like a balloon.

[Holy Lord Dustan] (Ascended, Elemental Being)

Level: 240

HP: 12,000,000,000

Defense: 37,330

Magic Attack: 210,392 – 270,392

Skills:

[Radiance's Prayer]: Dedicates oneself to serving the light. Restores 1,000,000 HP and deals 400,000 Holy magic damage to all targets within 100 meters.

[Divine Judgement]: Smites a target with the power of Divinity. Deals 300% Holy magic attack. Casting: 2 seconds.

[Radiant Chain]: Places a mark on 3 random targets. Marked players must stand at least 40 meters away from each player. Failure will result in an explosion that will deal 400,000 Holy damage every second until the distance between each Marked players exceeds 40 meters. All damage dealt by the explosion will restore Dustan's HP.

[Rage of the Light]: Increases 100% attack power. Stackable. Casting: 2 seconds.

Note: The Lord of Light. The One that brings salvation to all who repents. The One that smites all that is evil in the world. Born from the Holy Essence Pearl.

1. META – Most effective tactic available.

Chapter 817: Lord of Light, Dustan

As expected of the Bane of shadow, the skillset of the Lord of Light was almost, if not stronger than Margalor. Perhaps, the Lord of Light was stronger in a sense that he was a magic attack type, while Margalor was a physical attack type. The skill - {Radiant China} should be the Lord of Light's special skill.

The conditions were simple, as all three chosen players must run 40 meters away from each other in different directions.

"I think the skill {Radiant Chain} will be a little tricky. All of us would have to concentrate on using the {Shadow Orb}, and if anyone out of the three Marked players are supposed to use their {Shadow Orbs}, how are they supposed to coordinate? There has to be a plan for this."

Zhang Yang nodded at Daffodil Daydream's comment and said, "Alright. Here's the plan. All of us should stick together during the boss fight. If any three players are inflicted by {Radiant Chain}, you should move to the clock, those standing close to 12, 4 and 8 should move towards that direction. If there is someone among the chosen three who has to use their [Shadow Orb], stand your ground and let the others run away. The party will take the damage. Might as well do it that way, rather than allowing the boss to get a damage buff."

"Hold up," said Fatty Han as he determined the direction of 12, 4, and 8 before he grunted. "Okay. I got it. I think."

With Transformations, an Ascended tier boss was not a great threat to them. However, they could not allow the boss to gain any damage buffs, or the party will face imminent danger. Their party could, at little chance, survive the boss fight after one buff. Two buffs would raise the chances of failure to 100%. It was not something that anyone, not even Zhang Yang, could hold off. Hence, the team can only fail once as a whole.

"I have to stress that no one in the party is allowed to die. One death would mean one less interruption in each cycle. Although we can fight against two more cycles, the boss fight will eventually be a failure."

"Understood."

"Remember. Failure is not an option. Unless you want to waste another 3 days."

"Hell no!"

They had been grinding on the same quest for 81 days. They had a total of 9 days, which means, they could use Transformations 3 times. Technically, for both the Shadow Lord and the Lord of Light boss fights, they could only afford to fail once!

Based on the party's prowess and the number of [Shadow Orbs] in hand, the party could repeat the boss' fight for 7 to 8 rounds. This was to give players multiple chances to fight the boss. However, there was still a limit to it. If they fail too many times, and all of the [Shadow Orbs] have been exhausted, the quest will be a failure, since there will no more Shadow Stalkers to kill. The previous arrangement was extremely fortunate. Everyone had more than enough [Shadow Orbs] in hand to use in that fight. If Zhang Yang were to distribute the orbs unevenly, perhaps, there would be a situation where the cycle of interruption would run out of juice.

"Ready your Transformations. Off we go!"

Everyone charged towards the boss with all sorts of appearance, both appealing and erotic, while others were disgusting or just plain funny.

"The Light beckons all that is righteous." The lightbulb looking boss struck his staff into the ground and muttered. The boss pointed his staff at Zhang Yang and a powerful beam of light came down from the sky to struck Zhang Yang's character. "Sinners will be judged! Off you go, to hell!"

After {Divine Judgement}, the boss did not pause and quickly clapped his hands to chant {Radiance Prayer}. His mouth was moving, but the language he spoke was unknown and alien.

3 seconds later, many beams of holy light came striking down from the sky and onto everyone in the field. The boss' basic attack was around

400,000, paired with the debuff aura on everyone, everyone in the party had taken more than 480,000 damage in that instance.

"I'll repeat the cycle again. The first to interrupt would be me. Ice cube is the second. Third would be Snow..." Zhang Yang repeated the entire strategy again to refresh everyone's memories.

After a few rounds of {Radiance Prayer}, the boss had started using the {Rage of the Light}. However, just as the boss opened his mouth to chant, Zhang Yang went ahead and silenced him with {Shadow Orb}. Upon usage, the orb broke into nothing, releasing a large cloud of shadow smoke that enveloped the boss' character.

10 seconds later, the boss tried to chant {Rage of the Light} again, but was stopped by Sun Xin Yu smoothly. Everyone else performed flawlessly and had prevented the boss from using {Rage of the Light}. It was made possible, due to the 2-second casting duration of the skill. Perhaps, anyone could have performed in the same manner.

The interruption cycle was only important during the first cycle. In the first turn, everyone would have their {Shadow Orbs} ready to be used. Since the item had a 200-second cooldown duration, and {Rage of the Light} only had a 10 seconds duration, it was perfectly designed like a puzzle piece for everyone to use their own {Shadow Orbs} at the right time after the first cycle. There would be no need for anyone to calculate. All they would have to do is to pay attention to the countdown timer on the item and prepare for their turn when the timer runs out.

After the first cycle was completed, the boss started using the skill {Radiant Chain}. On the first use, Wei Yan Er, Cheng Xue Yao, and Endless Starlight were the unfortunate trio. All three of them followed the plan and ran in different directions. Amongst the three of them, two had A class Inheritances, and even though flying was prohibited in the arena, they could glide at breakneck speed. Endless Starlight even had a Mythical tier mount that could run at roughly the same speed. Hence, when the 3-second timer rang, everyone had already reached the required distance and had the skill dispelled.

It was fortunate that everyone had reacted swiftly, as everyone in the team had only taken two ticks of the DOT.

The battle proceeded on smoothly and without a problem. The party had not failed to stop the boss from using {Rage of the Light} and had never failed to run away when the boss used his {Radiant Chain}. Despite that, everyone was still worried about the {Radiant Chain} instead of the {Rage of the Light}. The battle continued on for more than 20 minutes.

If the fight was just a matter of 10 minutes, they could have handled the stress and sucked it in for later. However, the fight was dragged for over 20 minutes! At that moment, the boss had over 27% HP. Everyone started to act sluggishly. The mental stress had acted up and was affecting the team.

Zhang Yang had always had to remind the party member when it was their turn to dispel {Rage of the Light} or {Radiant Chain}, allowing the team to slightly make up for their own mental stress. No one was relaxed then. Not even Fatty Han, who could make jokes, even when at death's door. The tension in the air was so tense that if anyone slips and made a mistake, it will only cause a chain reaction that will cause the fight to end prematurely. No one wanted to be the black sheep that causes the entire herd to be gobbled up by lions. Hence, even though they knew it was tough, everyone kept quiet and only responded to Zhang Yang's commands.

1 hour into the fight...

20%...

{Glare of the Death God}!

A shadow cloud formed on top of the boss' character and grinned. Everyone screamed with joy and instantly launch their attack repeatedly, instantly hacking away 10% of the boss' HP. Since it was already during the boss' vulnerable state, the team's DPS power increased by a notch and had ended the boss fight quickly and swiftly without any signs of failure.

"Eat my axe! Obnoxious boss! Wanna be a saint? Go to church and praise the Lord there!" Wei Yan Er jumped up high in the air and slammed

down her {Killing Cleave}. Her 4,000,000 damage had ended the boss with a single strike.

The boss' lightbulb appearance broke down and dispersed into the air.

"Woohoo! It's over! It's time for the loot! @%#\$@%^#\$ OMG! Look at that! There are so many things!" cried Fatty Han, louder than usual.

Everyone had slain many Ascended tier boss for the past few days, yet they had never seen such a huge pile of loot. The amount of item dropped at that moment could total up to the results of four or five Ascended tier boss fights.

Dustan had dropped a total of 11 Ascended tier equipment, 9 Holy tier equipment, and other random items. That round, Zhang Yang was lucky enough to claim one Ascended tier necklace.

[Aimilla's Necklace] (Ascended, Necklace)

Vitality: +11760

Strength: +2060

Dexterity: +2060

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 23,520.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 1,778 damage from attack.

Use: Unleash the Wrath of Aimilla. Inflicts 1,000,000 Chaos damage and stuns a target for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 2 hours.

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

Note: Aimilla was a famous and well-known Jewelry Craftswoman. The necklace was her one and only masterpiece that was imbued with her own power.

As such, the only equipment on Zhang Yang that was not an Ascended tier were two more accessories and his gloves. That, and the Celestial tier equipment that he wore. However, after completing all the quests, he

could be able to acquire an Ascended tier accessory which is the [Demonic Seal]. After he obtains that, his goal to get all equipment on him to be Ascended tier would be accomplished.

As expected, the boss had dropped another aura skill book that was closely related to the debuff they received. Galileo, the little boy, had managed to roll for it. Still, it would be inappropriate to call him a boy, since he was about to graduate high school and enter the big league.

[Holy Aura] (Level 1): Affects all allies around 40 meters. Inflicts 1% additional damage as Holy damage after an attack.

Amongst the other items there, there was a large amount of [Advance Aura Stones] as well. Hence, when Galileo obtained the aura skill, he too, was able to enjoy maxing out the aura skill in a flash. The additional damage inflicted by then was as high as 10%. It was similar to that of {Strength Aura} that would directly increase the entire team's DPS. However, {Strength Aura} only affected physical attack class while Holy damage affected everyone, both physical attack and magic attack. It was slightly better.

After distributing all the items, everyone took a break instead of rushing for the final boss. They had chosen to leave the place for a while since there were no requirements for them to finish any boss in any order. It would only take the party one hour to reach Shadow mountain. However, since the party's Transformations were on cooldown. There had no reason to go back to Margalor for the time being. Might as well take the time to do some rest and recreational activities.

...

Zhong Xiu Hua's news about his random activities had been suppressed greatly. In fact, when you type in any keyword concerning him, there would not be an article or blog entry about it. Everything had been deleted. However, the first domino was already pushed and the effect of it would never be stopped. Without posting anything at all, simply by word of mouth, everyone in the country now knew that the main character behind the "funky" piece of news was the powerful political figure's son.

It has been a few days since Zhang Yang heard of Zhong Xiu Hua's activity in the game. Perhaps, he was being punished by his father.

They say that good times create bad future. Zhong Xiu Hua's father was a powerful man in the political world, and not in the bad kind of way. He was rather a famous politician for his deeds and service to the nation. If he knew about the true nature of his son, he could have him punished severely. Disowning his own son would be a far cry, still. At most, Zhong Xiu Hua would be sent to some harsh camp by the countryside to be trained mentally. In better words, change his stuck-up attitude of a spoiled brat.

More than half of the support of Zhong Xiu Hua came from his mother. Who knows? Perhaps his mother shared the same maverick mannerisms of her son. All in all, Zhong Xiu Hua would never be gone for long. Zhang Yang would expect him to appear sooner or later to stir up problems. Then again, if he does, Zhang Yang was ready for it. He had already set up traps for him. The only thing that he needed to be afraid of was Zhong Xiu Hua truly changing for the better and quitting the game.

Like that would ever happen...

Chapter 818: Ending the Fight

Since the Transformations needed time to cool down, Zhang Yang announced a day off the game.

Luo Yu Rou was pregnant for the seventh month by then and her belly was bulging out rather spectacularly. Her original slim waist had expanded so massively that Luo Yu Rou, the famous superstar who was famous for being extremely sexy, while also having a serious case of celebrity syndrome, grunted every time she laid eyes on Zhang Yang.

Back before the existence of 'God's Miracle', being pregnant would automatically take an actress out of the acting line. However, in 'God's Miracle' all that mattered was her appearance. On the plus side of recording in the game, she had no need to move around! She was literally laying down on the bed while her in-game character would run, jump, and perform many other actions that she could not perform in the real world!

Zhang Yang was unwittingly roped in and soon realized that he was going to star as the villain of her movie! He was now an actor!

Even though shooting the game requires users to log into the game. However, the user would require a special helmet that connects to a separate client and server. The developers had made a separated server. They were still using the same engine, but unlike 'God's Miracle', no one besides the ones developers have authorized could enter.

Those with clearance may come in during worktime and "go" to work. Appearance adjustments have never been any easier, since all the staff could manually control everything simply by adjusting the sliders on the menu! The users can also change their entire character! That meant that, they could even become a monster, if required by the director. Most of the settings, backdrops, environments were adjustable as well. Since the gaming company was only meant to provide a means for shooting, they were not involved in the shooting itself. Hence, through proper arrangements, all controls, including the means of changing the environment, physics of the world, and other unexplainable and

meticulous matters were handed over to Lou Yu Rou to control. All they asked was to limit the knowledge of the system to themselves and not leak everything out for the world to know. It was rather natural for them to do so, since other digital companies might get their hands on their engine and clone it. If Luo Yu Rou had no full authority over the engine, she would keep coming back to the company to adjust the settings of the "world". That would happen, since her movie consisted of many kinds of scenes that required constant changes. Still, there were still parts of the movie that the developers had to be in charge of, that is, the character design. While that was handed over to the game developers, the movement of the characters were left to the director. Luo Yu Rou wanted to film an action film. Hence, when it comes to fighting moves, no one else besides Zhang Yang was perfect for it. As such, Zhang Yang became her co-director to assist her in directing fighting scenes.

World class players would definitely perform much more extravagantly, when compared to greenhorns. Hence, after getting "free" help from Zhang Yang, Luo Yu Rou became a little greedier and had Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream to help as well. They were both chosen to be part of the movie!

The little girl could not be more excited. She had always idolized Luo Yu Rou and hoped to be like her one day. Her overwhelming excitement caused her to play around on the virtual set, forcing Zhang Yang to allow her to tweak her character appearance and make her boobs bigger. Naturally, Zhang Yang immediately changed her appearance back to her usual flatboard figure. At one point, he even turned her into a man!

Seeing that the little Wei Yan Er was being energetic, Luo Yu Rou had created an extra character just to fit Wei Yan Er's personality. According to her, Wei Yan Er's lively character might be one of the main selling points of the movie! Hearing that, Zhang Yang became slightly excited. He could not wait to see how would Wei Yan Er perform in the movie, and how would the masses react to such a character.

During the movie filming, Zhang Yang felt that Luo Yu Rou was an odd woman. While she had her way to get around Zhang Yang and have him

tear fat checks for her, she would only spend that money for the movie. It was never for herself to spend. She did pay herself by setting a salary, a rather lavish one at that too, to restore her former lifestyle. Still, she did not need to do it that way. The movie studio company was given to her by Zhang Yang, yet Luo Yu Rou had rejected it like a bad organ. She had even made Zhang Yang the real owner of the company and had herself assigned as the director. That would only allow Zhang Yang to be the real profiteer of the movie! She would earn from it, but not as much as he would be! He was technically sitting down, and being spoonfed by the woman!

What an eccentric woman!

After one day in real life passed, three days had passed in the game as well. Wei Yan Er was being a little insistent on staying by Luo Yu Rou's side to continue her role as the character. However, Zhang Yang told Luo Yu Rou to cut her out from the rest of the movie and dragged the little girl out of the movie set by pinching her nose in real life. The two of them logged out of the movie server and logged back into the gaming server.

Everyone gathered together, threw jokes about Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er, and Daffodil Daydream being in the movie. After getting ready, everyone charged toward the last boss, Margalor.

"In the Holy boss fight, {Radiant Chain} is a skill where the boss will automatically pick 3 random souls from us all. In this fight, when the boss uses {Void Tornado}, we would have to fill in the blanks to stop the tornado from wiping us all out." Zhang Yang made everyone gather near the boss and started to lecture.

"There's six of you here who are all under Level 210. I don't need to remind you that you are all here as backups. I cannot have you die that easily. So, if any of you have more than a 30-second cooldown for your {Light Orbs}, do not, I repeat, do not go to the tornado. It's not that I don't trust you. It's just that, I do not want to create any chances for anyone to fail, especially since standing in the tornado will force you to stand there for 20 seconds. There would be an instance where one of you would have more than a 10-second gap in your {Light Orb} cooldown duration. We

can't have that."

Zhang Yang continued. "Now, the Wind Essence Pearl is next, and we only have less than 2 days (real time) to do it. Right now, if we use our Transformation skills, we could only use it after 72 hours. Hence, do the math yourself and you'll understand that we cannot afford to lose, not even by a longshot. If we fail now, we could fail the entire quest. Do you understand?"

"Understood!"

"Alright. Buckle up. Let's win this."

Everyone nodded and got to their feet. Everyone knew that if they drag the fight too long, they would start to lose concentration and focus. Without Transformations, the entire battle might be dragged even longer, thus increasing the chances of mistakes happening. If anyone misses their chance to use the {Light Orb} to cancel out the {Shadow Blessing}, they will fail the entire boss fight.

Technically, the Shadow Lord fight was roughly similar to the Lord of Light. One asked you to dodge the {Radiant Chain}, while the other asked you to get into the {Void Tornado}. Complete opposites, yet one and the same.

Zhang Yang activated his Transformation and zoomed towards the boss, leading the attack with a loud battlecry.

"Insolent fools! How wasteful of you to throw away your second lives for naught!" Margalor got up from his throne and got into his fighting stance. "Since you have no regard for the importance of life, hell welcomes the likes of you!"

"What a lame-*ss speech. Could the game designers be more creative?"

"Fatty bro. If you're complaining that much, how about you send a mail to them and ask them to hire you instead?"

"Please. I'd rather spend my time in bed and have my girlfriend, ahem blowing the bagpipes, if you know what I mean..."

"Erhm, I don't mean to be rude but, bagpipes are big. I think yours might just be a small, kid-sized harmonica?"

Everyone laughed at the joke while Fatty Han grew mad with rage. Just as he was about to strip his pants to prove that his bagpipe was not a harmonica, Zhang Yang swooped back in his Transformed state and slapped Fatty Han's back.

"I was only 5 inches away from starting the boss fight and you're about to strip your pants? Are you f*cking with me?"

The atmosphere immediately became serious and tense. Zhang Yang had no need to explain the rules again and moved forward. Before the boss used {Shadow Blessing,} everyone could spare some time for some light jokes. It was only a matter of time before the atmosphere turned tense.

"Darkness. Shadow. Heed thine power. I, Margalor, shall dominate the land in thy name!" the boss clapped his hands and started to chant a spell.

Zhang Yang was the first to jump forward and used the [Light Orb] on the boss to stop the chanting of {Shadow Blessing}.

"I'm done. Next one!"

10 seconds later, Sun Xin Yu used her [Light Orb].

"I'm done. Next."

20 seconds...30 seconds...40 seconds...

Eventually, after 200 seconds later, the first cycle of interruption was completed without a hitch. By then, the boss had finally used its ultimate skill, the {Void Tornado}.

Appearing without a gust of wind, a large, 3-meter wide black tornado appeared. The dark gust formed quickly, darkening everything within the area, yet there were still some sparkles inside it, making it look like the stars in the universe were being sucked into a black hole.

At that moment, Cheng Xue Yao and the rest of the new members of the party had jumped into the party without waiting for Zhang Yang's

command. When they stood next to the tornado, their entire characters were immediately sucked inside like a vacuum cleaner, disappearing without a trace.

20 seconds later, the tornado slowed down hastily and "spat" out all 5 players. The black colored gust died down instantly, leaving no trace of it ever being there.

"Very nice! Good job!"

Even though it was actually a simple job, Zhang Yang had praised them for their feat. He learned that adults, were the same as kids, would like being praised by their bosses! As the leader of the party, and the guild master of the guild, it would be wise to "take care" of the emotions of his underlings. Like a certain someone had said before, "Take care of your employees and they will take care of your business."

Zhang Yang was not a leader of a nation. He was merely a guild master. However, being the one man who was recognized by the entire world as the number 1 player, he was idolized by all. His words of praise could mean the world to his followers. Hence, besides Cheng Xue Yao alone, the rest of the 4 that had joined her in jumping into the tornado got all hyped up and happy.

"I'll see you really soon. My precious!" said Zhang Yang to himself as he accidentally got distracted by Cheng Xue Yao's belly.

"Enough! You have sullied the ground of the gods! Death shall be the end of you!" cried the boss.

"...is this all that the developers could come up with? Even I could come up with better speeches than that! Man! This is so annoying!" Fatty Han grunted impatiently.

"Those who defy the word of the gods shall die!"

"Die?! I'll pull your tongue out and boil it over my pumpkin soup for dinner!"

Unlike many bosses, the party was rather vigorous and extra pumped up when facing this "talkative" boss. They were, as if, no longer able to endure

its repetitive speech patterns and wanted to end the fight as soon as possible.

Since the boss did not have any recovery skills, everyone's super-powered attack had the boss' HP dropping down to 20% in less than 40 minutes. By then, the casting speed of {Lullaby of Death} had decreased from 3 seconds to only 2 seconds. The party's healing rate was not doing well enough to cope with the sudden burst of damage.

However, it was only momentarily. When Han Ying Xue and the other healers were startled by the sudden increase in damage, they too had burst out and had pushed themselves to spam as fast as they could, making sure that everyone always had {Regeneration} on them and were actively casting healing spells one after another. Each time the boss loses 10% HP after the vulnerable state, the casting and usage rate of the powerful AoE skills were strengthened, forcing the party to take hits like never before.

45 minutes into the battle...the boss was left with 10% HP.

At then, {Lullaby of Death} casting time was reduced even further to only 1.5 seconds. Compared to his vulnerable state, it was an increase of 100% damage!

The healers of the team were finally faced with a deficit of healing. One by one, the healers had used their ultimate skills to cope with the loss of HP to keep the team alive. One second, you'll have 80% HP, the next second, you'll have 30%, one second later, you'll have 75%. The rise and drop of the party's HP in total was going up and down faster than a roller coaster.

"Don't spare any of your skills now! Unleash your full potential!" cried Zhang Yang.

Players with HP recovery skill had used them non-stop when available, allowing them to cope with the healers. Everyone but Zhang Yang was facing trouble. The man had a HP bar longer than anyone there. Even though he was the boss' punching bag, taking more damage than the others, he was the only one who had not used his own recovery skill, the {God of War Radiance}.

8%...5%...2%....

The entire party was about to fall. Han Ying Xue then used {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} to save everyone at the very last minute.

1%...0%!

"Grah...Darkness beckons me..."

Chapter 819: Unlimited Life Works

After defeating the boss, everyone sat down on the floor and relaxed. It was a long trip indeed. The chained quest line had them chasing after bosses for more than a month! However, since they were tasked to kill Ascended tier bosses and were rewarded with Ascended tier equipment, could they be rewarded with Celestial tier equipment after the quest is over? It was a thought that everyone shared.

Zhang Yang smiled. He was thinking the same thing, but he knew that the game would not simply hand out Celestial tier equipment that easily. That being said, there was a high chance that there would be a Celestial tier boss for them to fight, later on.

The boss had dropped a total of 10 Ascended tier equipment and nine Holy tier equipment. Although having Holy tier drops when everyone was expecting Ascended tier drops was quite a letdown, the party could rely on Zhang Yang's [Tesseract] to have them upgraded a little. Having +1 Holy tier equipment is definitely better than having none. Besides, if one were to equip a +1 Holy tier set, it would be the same as having an extra Holy tier set piece. (10% upgrade. 10x +1 equipment = 11 equipment).

Zhang Yang had obtained one Ascended tier glove part in the roll and managed to have his entire body equipped with Holy tier. That, and the two random accessories which were Holy tier.

[Black Despair Gauntlet] (Ascended, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +1280

Vitality: +23524

Strength: +4120

Dexterity: +1750

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 47,040.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 12%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,556 damage from attacks.

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

After the equipment, the next itinerary was a large amount of [Skill Point Crystals], skill books, and others, including a Forbidden Scroll.

As expected, the boss had dropped an aura skill book which was won over by Ten Dusk.

[Shadow Aura] (Level 1): Decreases damage dealt OR healing rate of all hostile targets within 40 meters. You can only have one active aura effect in one instance.

After maxing out the aura skill to Level 10, the damage dealt and healing rate reduction was increased to 10%. Despite the menial numbers, it could cause a substantial amount of problems for a large group of monsters or players alike. Although the skill was not extremely beneficial to the party, it was a bonus to have, for those who did not own any aura skills. 1% or 10%, it was better than having no help at all!

The Forbidden Scroll found was a healing type.

[Forbidden Scroll: Unlimited Life Works] (Usable)

Use: Restores 10% HP per second of all allies within 10 kilometers. Lasts for 30 seconds (Healing amount cannot exceed 300,000HP)

Level Requirement: 200

Despite the powerful healing, it could only last for 30 seconds. It would be almost useless in a world boss fight, since average boss fights would take up to an hour. 30 seconds of burst healing would not do much benefit in a boss fight. On the other hand, it would be a game changer if the scroll suddenly pops up during a group PvP fight.

The one item that was dropped unexpectedly was a piece of an Inheritance Fragment. An A class Shadow Meister Inheritance. Sadly, everyone in the party already had their own Inheritances. All the C class Inheritance players had slapped themselves in the face for not being

patient enough to hunt for A class Inheritances. However, if they had waited, they would not have been invited by Zhang Yang to join the party! Little did they know that the main objective of Zhang Yang recruiting them was to increase the party limit to 20 players. That, and the possibility of the quest awarding players with an accessory! It's an Ascended tier equipment! A extremely rare equipment that not even Level 300 players could farm for!

Zhang Yang kept the Inheritance Fragment and would wait for potential players to earn it rightfully. There will only be 6 S class Inheritance in the world. Even though A class was one tier below that, it was still an incredibly rare Inheritance.

"Why is there only one Inheritance Fragment? Could it be, that this shadow boss was the strongest amongst all?" asked Endless Starlight.

"I don't think that's the reason. I think its about which boss is the last to be slain. If we had chosen the fire boss to be the last, that boss would be the one dropping the Inheritance Fragment," said Zhang Yang, although he was not too sure.

"Alright. All done here? Let's get out of this wretched place. I don't know about you guys, but I'm quite sick of this place already." Said Zhang Yang.

Everyone nodded and got down the mountain to talk to Baa'ljilr.

"Brilliant! Wind, Ice, Fire, Light, and Shadow! Truly brilliant. Bloody well done! All elements have been gathered! Wonderful! The Holy Formation shall be finished, soon enough!" cried Baa'ljilr happily.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Four Elemental Pearls. Obtained 200,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have obtained an item: Demonic Seal!'

Although Zhang Yang thought that the [Demonic Seal] was powerful, it could only buff Zhang Yang in his offensive power and not provide an anti-status effect. Hence, Zhang Yang had traded it for [Helena's Charm] instead. For now, he wore the [Medal of Bravery] and [Demonic Seal].

Even though the [Medal of Bravery] was a Mythical Level 130 accessory

which was supposed to provide a 10-second window of Invulnerability, Zhang Yang was already Level 210, thus, the effect was reduced to less than 2 seconds. It was only useful as a means to remove a status effect applied on him.

It was still better than nothing. Accessories were extremely hard to come by in the game. Right then, 90% of Level 200 players were still equipping Level 60 accessories due to the rarity. For the same reason, everyone would want to get their hands on an accessory when they see one. The next grade was Celestial, and a Celestial tier bosses were not easy to defeat, much less farm for a Celestial tier accessory!

After everyone had obtained the quest reward, Baa'ljilr suddenly smiled. It was not a normal smile. It was the smile of a crooked man. The same smile that the bastard Liu Wei tended to hang on his face. Baa'ljilr, with great appreciation in his eyes, paired with the crooked smile, said, "Only one month! One month! Hmmm...hahahahaha! Do you fools know that you did for me? Ahhh. Where are my manners? I must thank you for your deeds!"

Crack...crack...Pssshh!

The old man suddenly turned himself inside-out. It was as if his internals were growing, but his skin was merely an exterior wrap. The skin of the old human man tore off his body, and out came a disgusting, gory exterior of raw flesh. His hands burst out of his old skin and exposed his claws. He quickly slashed his own face and dropped the mask he was wearing to reveal his true form. He was a red, twin-horned demon!

Fuuh!

A pair of demonic bat-like wings spread out of his back and flapped, allowing the demon to hover a few feet above the ground. His pants flew off, and out came a scorpion like tail that swung about to rid of whatever clothing that remained on him. After a quick swing and slice, Baa'ljilr roared and further expanded his body until he was 3 meters tall!

[Baa'ljilr the Imposter] (Ascended, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 12,500,000,000

Defense: 38,545

Melee Attack: 376,830 – 476,830

Skills:???

Note: The master of disguise and deception. A loyal follower of the Demon Lord Kenzack.

"Hahaha! Surprise?" Baa'ljilr laughed and looked down at everyone with a demeaning glare. "One month...In one month's time, the Gate of Dimension shall be completed. By then, I shall lead an army the likes of which has never been seen before, to rid this world of life! As my thanks, I shall have you live, only to serve me and the Demon Lord as our slaves! HAHAAHAHA! UNTIL WE MEET AGAIN!"

Baa'ljilr flapped his wings with such force that everyone was blown off their feet. Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang, and other Strength-based class players stood still, unfazed by the strong gust. Baa'ljilr soared to the sky and quickly disappeared into the clouds.

‘Server Announcement: Baa'ljilr the Imposter has successfully collected all the necessary materials to constructing the Dimension Gate. In 30 days, the Dimension Gate shall be completed and the Demon Army shall descend. Adventures, to stop the Demon Invasion, you must destroy Baa'ljilr the Imposter!’

‘Ding! You have received a quest: The Last Spur!’

[The Last Spur] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Baa'ljilr the Imposter will construct the Dimension Gates in no time at all! When he does, a large army of Demonic Soldier will march into the land and destroy all that is living and breathing. Warrior, with the last hope there, go to the Rolling Rock Canyon and find the Demon Camp. You will find Baa'ljilr, and kill him, which will destroy the materials needed to stop the construction of the Dimension Gate.

Progress: The heart of Baa'ljilr the Imposter: 0/1

Quest Reward: Level +2 Skill Points +3

All players who were Level 200 and above had received the quest and it had caused an uproar through the entire game. Everyone, players and non-players alike had started to flood the forums to discuss the matter.

"Noobie tank! Let's go now and kill that old fart!" said Wei Yan Er excitedly. "Level and skill points are waiting for us!"

Everyone else was also fired up along with the little girl. It was understandable. At their current Level, a Level and skill point reward was truly hard to come by.

Zhang Yang cracked a cold laugh and said, "We have just used our Transformation skill. Could we at least wait for 3 days later before we do the killing?"

"Tch tch tch...Noobie tank. How could you forget? We still have our War Chariots!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"Huh...well then. Let's go and have a shot. If there's hope, we will kill that demon. But, my money is on the demon," said Zhang Yang. From his point of view, the quest was probably the start of the Demon Descent patch. No matter how hard they may try, there would be no stopping the demons from flooding through the Dimension Gates. Hence, he had little to no hope of defeating Baa'ljilr.

That and the fact that Baa'ljilr was a Level 250 Ascended tier boss. Only players who have reached Level 220 and above could face him without being burdened by the Level Suppression system. However, everyone there was under Level 220. Zhang Yang, being the highest amongst them all, was only Level 214!

The main problem was that the quest time limit was 30 days. In that timeframe, no one in the entire game could reach Level 220. Hence, it was certain that all players will face the Level Suppression system character degradation while facing Baa'ljilr.

Level Suppression is a f*cking annoying system. Not only would the player's attack face major reduction, the damage dealt to them would only

be increased! If the Ascended tier boss' AoE range is not scary enough, wait till he has the power to deal 2 to 3 times its original damage, due to the Level Suppression system!

That being said, the game developers would never make a quest that can never be solved. Zhang Yang felt that completing the quest would be a hassle. To properly face Baa'ljlir head-on, he would need the entire game's guilds to hand out all their Forbidden Scrolls that could reduce attacks or to weaken the boss in any way possible to compensate for the Level Suppression system. With that, lay another problem. No one would be willing to hand out their Forbidden Scrolls without expecting a reward. Not when using one would guarantee them the right to claim all of the boss' drops in the first place, and be the ones to complete the quest!

It would ultimately be handing over the last parachute!

Chapter 820: Equipment Upgrade System

The Rolling Rock Canyon was in the Pingst Flatland, a Level 240 to Level 270 map. The next tier would be the last, which will be the Level 270 – Level 300 maps.

Zhang Yang and the majority of his party member had only managed to enter the Level 210 – Level 240 map, yet they were all expected to infiltrate into a Level 240 – Level 270 map. It was either the system wanting the quest to be extremely difficult, or that the system had no intention of allowing players to even finish the quest in the first place.

Naturally, in a higher level map where all the monsters are at a much higher level than you, it would be impossible to escape a tough battle. As such, even if Zhang Yang's party is the strongest party in the entire game, they cannot escape the fate of being killed repeatedly. In fact, at one point, the party was taking turns, dying and reviving.

The map was designed in a way that it was not suitable for a large party to train in. That or, they would all be killed before they could even touch the final boss. It would probably take the party close to one month to reach the boss at their current rate. The problem was the fact that a world boss would require a massive number of players to fight it. It was no longer a raid, at then, they had the disadvantage of numbers and the Level Suppression system, at then, it was more like a torture session from the boss instead.

When everyone finally made the hurdle over the field of monsters and made their way to the Rolling Rocks Canyon, everyone stood at the peak of the canyon, staring downward with absolute despair when they saw what lay before them.

In the canyons, all monsters there were Level 250 elite tier demons. Some even had their Levels marked with three question marks! They were obviously much higher than the 30-Level gap, at around Level 260 or Level 270, even. Due to the annoying Level Suppression system acting up, a single elite tier Level 240 monster would be at the same difficulty as an

Ascended tier boss. The wider the Level gap, the further it would be for the monster to be able to detect the players. Zhang Yang's party could not help but attract the attention of 7 to 8 monsters at a time, 10 to 20 even!

The party could make it easy with their Transformation skill but...there's the case of time and the massive area of coverage. That, and the difficulty of the monsters. The canyon's massive size, coupled with more than 10,000 counts of monsters, will absolutely make the entire killing spree long and draggy. Yes, it would be easy for them to handle the monsters via Transformation, but in 30 days, they would only be able to activate their Transformation skill 10 times. That's only a total of 20 hours of active Transformation time. In that 20 hours of super-charged mode, how far could they make it to?

Zhang Yang sighed eventually. He knew that it would be demoralizing for his party to see the leader having a bad time before the killing even starts. He could not help it. The system was playing god with them, as if they were ants trying to kill an elephant. It could be possible if there were a million of them! Finally, after considering all the negative factor, Zhang Yang turned his back away from the canyon and said, "We're done. Let's go home."

Before even waiting for a response, Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and used it. There was not even chance for them to try. It does not need to take Einstein to calculate the probability of their failure. Without a word of protest, everyone followed Zhang Yang and went back to the Holy City.

The devil side of Zhang Yang prevailed as he told everyone in the party to keep quiet about the difficulty of the canyon. He wanted everyone else to experience what they had seen. Let the fools try it themselves and experience the pain firsthand. Even though they were fools, they should know that a Level 240 – Level 270 map is not something that a normal player could try. However, why would such a quest still attract ambitious players to venture into the abyss? It was due to the reward! Only when they hit a snag, they would obediently nodded their heads and turned back to shore.

In fact, the next 4 to 5 days, all guilds from all corners of the world had given it a try themselves and all of them, not a single one did not fail to turn back after venturing into the canyon.

The Level 200 dungeon, the Elemental Nest, was a 50-man dungeon. There were 6 bosses in total. As the dungeon name implied, the bosses were all elemental types; wind, water, earth, fire, shadow, and light. It was almost the same as the elemental bosses that Zhang Yang's party had just slain back then.

Due to the difficulty of the Hardcore mode of the dungeon, Zhang Yang had initially intended to skip the dungeon. However, since they had obtained many "upgrades" in the past month, they were all technically ready to tackle the dungeon. They had amassed a total of 40 Ascended tier equipment, at 2 counts of equipment per person on average. Even the Holy tier equipment had over 30 counts as well. Coupled with several newly maxed aura skills, the party's strength was upgraded to make Hardcore look like Hard mode!

No matter how difficult the Elemental Nest is, the bosses inside were all merely Holy tiers. Those who equipped Holy tier equipment should not have much problem fighting a similar tier boss. Moreover, some of them even had Level 240 Ascended and Holy tier equipment. Hence, when Zhang Yang and his core party members decided to join the exploration team of the dungeon, they had taken less than 10 days to conquer the dungeon and obtain the First Clear Achievement.

In the midst of their achievement, the bastard Zhong Xiu Hua had appeared from thin air. In the past, he had made a mistake and someone had managed to capture his in-game ID tag through the forums. Hence, many social justice warriors had decided to publicly tag him as the STD Prince. As such, the guild, Eternal Flame had been branded as the Red Light District. Their fame and popularity had fallen to a point that not even one of their members dared to reveal themselves in public, since all of China was practically laughing at them.

Weirdly enough, even though they were the laughing stock of China, many players were still crying for a spot in the guild! The reason was

actually rather simple. Flowers that grow nearer to the sun get the light. Their main motive was to get close to Zhong Xiu Hua in his time of need to get "friendship" points and reap the benefits later.

Zhong Xiu Hua had a ton of problems needed to be solved, hence he was unable to find any spare time to whip out malicious plans and schemes to sabotage Zhang Yang and Lone Desert Smoke. So, Zhang Yang was rather relaxed for a few days. He took the tranquility of peace and grinded his Level to his heart's content and crafted potions.

On other news, Luo Yu Rou's ever-growing womb was sending Zhang Yang over the edge. As days passed on, the anxiety kept on growing until Luo Yu Rou herself had to calm Zhang Yang down when he had a panic attack. At the same time, Luo Yu Rou's self-directed movie "Star Wars" was completed and was ready to be aired worldwide, both in the game and in the cinemas.

As per agreed, for Luo Yu Rou to have accessibility to the 'God's Miracle's Engine to make the movie, Dream Tech would want 1 gold coin per ticket, both physical and digital tickets sold. It was a fair deal, considering the fact that almost both non-players and players would enjoy the movie.

Players would have a more fulfilling immersion of the movie since they could log into their gaming helmets to watch the movie with a true 360-degree view. It was far better than whatever level of immersion any cinema in the world could offer. As such, with the launching of 'Star Wars', many other movie companies had started to shift their production into 'God's Miracle'. God's Miracle was now the keystone of several major studios.

The most famous player in 'God's Miracle', Zhan Yu name, was tagged as a guest cast in the movie 'Star Wars', and it became one selling point of the movie.

A miracle was born and the movie had managed to give birth to a bunch of diehard fans. It was a major success, since Luo Yu Rou was in the movie herself. Her acting skills, paired with her utterly sexy poses and daring

shots made everyone who worked with her be her "slaves".

Instead of her acting ability, Zhang Yang was more profoundly surprised at the flaming popularity of the movie. Even though physical ticket sales were only limited in China, the digital ticket and in-game movie viewers had reached as high as 2,200,000,000. All critics who had readied their pens and paper threw them in disgust. They could not even write anything that was wrong with it!

Luo Yu Rou, or Daybreak Phoenix had instantly become an overnight phenomenon. Her fame and popularity had skyrocketed to the entire world. It was not a surprise. Her sexiness, elegance, style, appearance, was the combination of the purity of an angel and the lustful seduction of the devil!

Obviously, not many knew about her carrying the offspring of Zhang Yang. Everytime she felt a strong kick in her womb, she would transfer all the pain that she endures by biting Zhang Yang during their lovey-dovey session in bed. Although he was in pain every time she did that, Zhang Yang felt that it was a fair trade, besides, as a woman, her bites were nothing but nibbles on his iron-like skin.

When the game patches the new Demon Descent event, the producers of 'Star Wars', "Yang Yang Movies" has made a total of 11,800,000,000 gold coins profit. In reality, their profits were not as high as the world's highest profit, although, they were still amongst the top 10 highest earning movies.

As the director, scriptwriter, and even an actor of the movie, Luo Yu Rou was highly sought after by many of the other major movie companies in the world. However, since Luo Yu Rou had not created a real in-game character, no one was able to really make contact with her besides emailing Yang Yang Movies.

With the popularity of the first movie, Luo Yu Rou had gotten all hyped up and had voiced out her intention to start preparing for the second movie. She believed with the heat of the first production, her second movie will receive a better profit than her first. She believed that the

numbers would go up as long as her movie quality would keep their edge.

Back to the game. Since Baa'ljilr the Imposter could not be defeated, the Demon's Descent will inevitably launch at the given time.

One month later...

'Server Announcement: Baa'ljilr the Imposter has successfully created a fully functioning Teleportation Gate. Impending doom approaches. Warriors! The world shall face the greatest threat we have ever known! The first attack wave of Demon Soldier, led by Demon Lord Kenzack will arrive in the Pingst Flatland. This is but the first step to their large-scale invasion!'

'Server Announcement: To aid Warriors against the incoming Demonic Army, the Great Weapon Smith, Mazza Mazza will open his Weapon Upgrade service to all players. For more information, please head to the Holy City Anthylor and talk to Mazza Mazza.'

Server Announcement: The Demon Army will soon attack all major cities in the world. Warriors, please make haste with your preparation!'

Once the stream of server announcement had ended, Zhang Yang had finally realized that the system was going to start using the Weapon Upgrade system to earn money...

As such, when he had made his way to Anthylor and talked to the greenish goblin, Zhang Yang had found that each upgrade would cost 100 gold coins. Furthermore, all equipment that was upgraded would not gain any tiers!

To put in comparison, Mazza Mazza's equipment upgrade service does not have cooldown. Players can continue to upgrade their equipment provided that they had enough gold coins and equipment. On the other hand, the Tesseract that Zhang Yang owned had an hour long cooldown time in between upgrades. Despite that, there was still a chance to allow lower tier equipment to gain tiers. The system had made the Tesseract having a cooldown system to prevent players from making a large profit from it.

All and all, Zhang Yang felt that the developers were smart enough to introduce the equipment upgrade service at that time. It was a means of earning money, as well as controlling the economy of the game. The system will "discard" older equipment as well, as well as take in the in-game currency back into the game.

Naturally, when the system had first introduced the weapon upgrade mechanism, countless players had flocked over to the NPC to try it out. Since Mazza Mazza was an NPC, he could talk to all players at the same time without a problem. Players could interact with him even though there were countless of other players around, simply by standing close enough to him.

Zhang Yang gave it a try as well and found out at the mechanism of upgrading equipment were the same as the Tesseract. However, there was a minor difference which Zhang Yang felt a little annoyed. The Tesseract had a 10% higher success rate. During the +1 or +2 phases, it would not affect those chances much. However, after the +4, +5 phases, 10% chance was extremely high!

That, and the fact that the Tesseract had an hour long cooldown! Zhang Yang sighed at the fact that he could not make much gold from that! Still, it was just a chance that had slipped by. It was not that he was not earning enough. In fact, he had so much money that he could not find a place to spend them! Besides letting the girls go off to a shopping spree that is...

In the end, it would not matter since the Tesseract was good enough to allow him and his teammates to enjoy it.

Although the system had promoted the equipment upgraded system by encouraging players to get ready for the Demon Descent event, it was just merely tricking players into emptying their gold coin pouch into the pool. Even plenty of low-level players had asked professional players to upgrade their equipment for them.

There were so many players that it would take more than 10 days to restore peace around Mazza Mazza's shop.

By then, the Demon Descent event had started with the first attack from

the Demon Army.

Chapter 821: The Start of the Invasion

One giant army of demons, one giant demonic leader, one giant war. It was an inevitable conflict. The first place to be struck by the demon was Kandahar, one of the main cities in the Japan-Korea region.

Many have asked Zhang Yang to initiate an attack strike on the incoming wave but was rejected immediately. A majority of players had no intention of doing so either. Players from other regions will never travel all the way to another region to fight, even if the rewards are good. The main reason was due to the lack of transportation. Players are not allowed to use Teleportation to move there. The only way to travel there was to run. It would be faster if they had flying mounts, but it was still considered as a long and tiresome journey. Then again, even with flying mounts, traveling from the furthest point of origin from a region to the next would take a least 12 hours. By then, the invasion would have been over.

Calculations done by the pros would never go wrong. When the system made the announcement the incoming attack, 8 hours later, the city of Kandahar had been flipped upside down and became the playground of the demons. At the same time, all players from the Japan-Korea region were punished for their defensive failure. All experience points earned will be reduced by 10%. It was a harsh punishment, considering the fact that the regular grinding speed was already long. It was the same as reducing their grinding efficiency.

According to the system event mechanism, the invasion of the demon will stop when the region is left with only one last city. Hence, in the worst case scenario, players will not be left with no roof over their heads, though at the cost of 30% grinding speed.

Technically, after Level 100, gaining a single level would take close to 10 days in real life. Reducing their efficiency would only increase the time taken up to 1 month!

Hence, the responsibility to defend the city lay with all who is within the region!

The first invasion was to serve as a reminder of how strong was the demons were. The next attack will launch in 3 days' time. Japan-Korea region aside, one city in all other regions will also face off with the invasion army. After the first attack, the demon army will attack one of the cities in all eight region every 30 days.

Such an attack will last for 7 waves. After that, no more attack waves will spawn, giving players a chance to take back their cities from the demons. After all regions' have removed the presence of demons within their own regions, the final boss, the Demon Lord, Celestial tier boss, Kenzack will appear.

The ones who had it worst was the Japan-Korea region. When the announcement was made, players had no time to prioritize the attack. Perhaps if they had enough time to prepare, they might have stood a chance to foil the attack in the first place. Sadly, when the demons invaded, most of the higher leveled players were all in Anthylor. Since there were no Teleportation Circles in the Holy City, players would have to travel to a Territory and teleport back to their base from there. Since Japan-Korea players had not managed to even conquer a single territory by then, all of them had to travel back to their regions via foot! When they had returned, all of the lower level players had perished, allowing the demon army to subdue the city easily.

Now that the Japan-Korea region had made themselves a prime example of what a lack of preparation does to oneself, all other region had started to make their preparations. Those who were still loitering in the Holy City would have to make their way back to a Territory within 2 days in order to return to their city just in time to fight the incoming demon attack. Provided that there were two more days till the incoming attack, all players around the globe had made their way and spared no free time to have fun. Everyone was either busy grinding or killing random bosses to amass stronger weapons. Even though the minor upgrade could only provide a tiny boost to their overall stat, it was better than having no upgrade at all. The video and news about the demons attacking Japan-Korea region was enough to strike fear to everyone who was slacking off.

None dared to let their guard down, for the next world war was about to descend.

Three days later...

'Server Announcement: The Demon Army has moved their troops to the Andador City. Estimated time of Arrival is: 1 hour!'

'Server Announcement: The Demon Army had moved their troops to the Crimson Sky City. Estimated time of Arrival is: 1 hour!'

...

A total of 7 long red lines of text popped up in the server announcement channel and alerted all players besides Japan-Korea of the oncoming army.

During then, all players had started to make their way back to their own cities from where they came from. All major city's teleportation circles kept on transporting players from all corners of the world. Within minutes after the first announcement, all had returned to their base.

Zhang Yang and everyone else had made their way back to Crimson Sky City and made their stand there.

The city had four castle doors, where all four will face oncoming attacks. That was probably the only information about the war that they all had then. There was no clue as to who and what kind of monsters will there be. There was no news coming out of Japan-Korea region after the first demon attack, since they wanted the other region to face the unknown and fall as well. It would be a shame if Japan-Korea were the only ones who fall.

"Little Yang, did you officially become an actor? I saw you in the movie 'Star Wars' and was rather disappointed with your sucky acting skills. What a boner-killer..." said Fatty Han as he leaned against the castle wall and started to chat.

"I hate to say this. But, big boss' acting skills are very..how do I put it in words...rigid? Fake? Thank god that you only had a cameo as one of those villain's grunts. Man...I cannot imagine big boss being the main villain.

The whole movie would suck!" said Endless Starlight as he criticized Zhang Yang.

"But there's one scene that even I would have to give a two-thumbs-up. That scene where you were trying to seduce the main heroine. Holy crap! That's just Oscar winning acting there! The woman. Not you. Don't get me wrong. That woman is the bomb. I mean. Just look at her. She's got it all! The boobs, the waist, that bombardier-class butts! Man, I wish I could just shake her hands...." Said Fatty Han. He did not know that Luo Yu Rou was the actress who played the heroine in the movie. If he knew it, he would have cleaned up his dialogue a little.

"I notice that the movie was made by Yang Yang Movies. Could it be... that guild master was the owner?" A random guildmate who happened to be around them spoke up.

Zhang Yang could not hide the fact and nodded awkwardly. Even though the movie company was created by Luo Yu Rou, she had made Zhang Yang the official owner of the company. The most shocking news was the fact that Zhang Yang had only invested over 100 million and managed to earn back 10 times the initial investment!

However, that was just the net revenue. Out of the 10 billion dollars he earned, 5% was paid to Dream Tech, not to mention the other actors' salaries and random expenses. Even though the ratio of cost and effort to profit earned was not as good as the territory teleportation fees, Zhang Yang could earn more if he just makes a few more movies in the future... he could even be in the Oscars, not as an actor, of course!

"Hey hey. Gimme something here. For your next movie, I want in as well. Hook me up yea? Do your brother a favor and give me a perverted role! I'll be sure to shine!" said Fatty Han with a certain glint in his eyes.

"Hmph. I'll let you take the role of the "Invincible East"!" (1)

"Hey noobie tank! What about me?! I want to act as well!" said Wei Yan Er while doing the puppy eyes.

"Hmm. Little Yan Er has a natural talent in acting. Your vigorous and active behavior will be suitable for characters that are annoying! I'd say, 9

out of 10! You might be even on par with The Daybreak Phoenix!"

Wei Yan Er snickered happily and said, "In that case, my name shall be the Ferocious Lioness! With my power in hand, I can shake the land and summon the winds at my beck and call!"

FUUUSH!

While everyone was happily chatting, a bright red flash of light shot from nowhere. There was a long red line which was all too similar to that of the aggro range of monsters. The line stretched all the way from one end of the castle to the other end.

‘Ding! The Demon Army has started their first wave of attack!’

‘Ding! The Graveyard of Crimson Sky City has been temporarily locked. Upon death, you can only be revived by Priests and Holy Knights, or by other special methods. Crimson Sky City has been locked and no one can enter nor exit the city.’

From afar, Zhang Yang could see a long stretch of red little devils that were all immolating. Without binoculars, Zhang Yang could have mistook them for floating fireballs that were hovering towards the castle. Since the Little Devils were "little", all of them were only the size of little toddlers that were rampaging around after eating too much sugar. Like the wretched kids which Zhang Yang found annoying, the little devils had twin horns that were sticking out from their foreheads and long thin tails that swung around like leather whips.

[Little Devil] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 200

HP: 219,680

Defense: 8,080

Magic Attack: 30,338 – 40,338

Skills:

[Fire Missile]: Deals 200% Fire Magic damage to target. Range: 30 meters. Casting: 2 seconds.

Amongst the normal tier demons, one out of 100 of them was slightly larger than the others. They were the elite tiers.

[Red Tail Little Devil] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 200

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 12,650

Magic Attack: 46,438 – 66,438

Skills:

[Fire Missile]: Deals 200% Fire Magic damage to target. Range: 30 meters. Casting: 2 seconds.

Everyone in the party had been through hell and back, enough to know that the normal tier monsters were not weaklings, despite being the first to be dispatched. The only distinctive factor that made them strong was the fact that they were all magic attack types. When they gang up on Zhang Yang, not even God of War could save his *ss.

Perhaps everyone in the entire city felt the same way as Zhang Yang did. When they saw the incoming blazing monsters, players started to freak out. Even though at most a few hundreds of the little devils could attack one player at a time, it would be deadly, since each of the little devils could deal over 100,000 damage per attack. Even a hundred of them could deal as high as 10 million damage! No one could survive that single wave of attack without the help of their Transformation skills. That or they could rely on the War Chariot!

"Mountain Mover. Take control of the entire battalion. Leave the main and secondary party to me."

"Much obliged."

Although Mountain Mover was not good in boss fights and dungeon raids, he was exceptionally good at being a battle strategist. He loved to conduct large-scale wars. With his every command, his entire being would scream of power and a commanding aura that could turn every soldier

into an elite killing machine. With the incoming wave of devils closing in on the gates of the castle, Mountain Mover sortied out 20 Type-IV War Chariots into the war zone.

Type-IV War Chariots are the best War Chariot available for the guild members, especially when everyone in the guild has been amassing Holy tier equipment from Spectre's Hidden Cavern and Elemental Nest, pushing their HP limit to at least 1 million HP per player. 50 players, cramped in one War Chariot would total their HP up to at least 50 million!

However, not even 50 players' combined HP would exceed Zhang Yang's 200 million HP after his Transformation. That was just how tanky Zhang Yang is.

Lone Desert Smoke was the first guild that charged into the battlefield. Other guild immediately followed behind with their own War Chariot. There were even more players that belonged to random "trash" guild hiding behind the charging War Chariot.

Since Crimson Sky City has four gates in total, players were all divided into four directions. Lone Desert Smoke took the North side, Crimson Rage took the East, Eternal Flame took South, and Imperial Sky took the West gate. All top guilds had not discussed about it, but they had made sure that each gate had at least one strong guild defending it.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Fatty bro, it's time for us to shine!"

"Haha! You don't even need to say it."

The two of them released their Phoenix et and allowed the two Legendary Beast to soar into the sky and charged head first into the sea of little Devils.

"#@%!#\$!%" The little critters spouted some weird language and charged towards the birds. In two seconds, the little devils clapped their hands and cast countless of fiery missile that shot towards the Phoenixes.

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

Those deadly firey missile were deadly for players but were nothing but "food" for the Phoenixes!

Translator Note:

东方不败 Dongfang Bubai, literally "Invincible East", is a fictional character in the wuxia novel The Smiling, Proud Wanderer by Jin Yong.

Chapter 822: Void Dweller, the Crosser

The two Phoenix pets opened their mouth wide at the same instant. They began to spit their blazing flames 15 meters across the area in different directions.

'-353,221!'

'-393,437!'

'-338,840!'

...

Each of the monsters received over 300,000 damage. The damage values popped out right on top of the monsters that were packed together. Under the bombardment of the flames, all the Normal Tier monsters were killed instantly. The Elite Tier monsters remained because they were tougher.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han stood on top of the castle wall. By blocking a part of the Phoenix pets' sight view, they were able to keep the two Phoenixes to the task of sweeping the monsters on the ground. The gigantic birds spat their flames in an attempt to pull as much aggro as they could in hope to reduce as much stress as they could for the other players.

Although Tanks could allow players to have a Shared HP while everyone was on board of them, however, one Model 4 Tank could only stack up to a Maximum HP of 50,000,000 even though Lone Desert Smoke was known to be one of the top-notch guilds. Well, having 100 monsters attack one Tank at the same instant would deal 10,000,000 damage to the Tank in an instant. Under that circumstance, 5 rounds of attacks from the combined attacks of 100 monsters would be enough to blow the Tank to kingdom come!

Therefore, it was utterly necessary to let the Phoenix pets to get the aggro from the first wave of the monsters.

Of course, Tanks were not useless in the first place. The Tank would be

able to provide a decent AoE firepower when 40 players on board could activate their AoE Skills at the same instant! Furthermore, each Tank would be assigned to 10 Healers on board. Even if the Tank was destroyed, the players on board would still be alive at least.

Well, the captain of the Tank would only need to take the broken Tank back to the city for repair. That process would only take a few minutes before the Tank could be brought back into the battle.

--- That was just the way the Lone Desert Smoke would do it. Zhang Yang had no idea how the other guilds would play at it.

Even though the two Phoenixes had lured away the aggro of a lot of monsters, but the number of monsters in the vicinity was just too great for them to handle. Countless monsters had swarmed the Tanks at the moment.

Bam! Bam! Bam!

The players on board of the Tanks did not hesitate to use their AoE Skills at the monsters. Countless fire missiles and fireballs were being thrown at the monster horde.

The Normal Tier monsters only had approximately 300,000 HP on each of them. Under the showering of the players' AoE attacks, they were like pitiful beings dying upon a single touch from any of the attacks! On the other hands, the players were utilizing the feature of the Tanks. Taking advantage of the Shared Life feature of the Tanks, the players managed to get enough HP to tank against the monster horde's unified attacks for a couple of rounds.

While the Tanks had gotten the aggro of the monster horde, the remaining players standing by at the rear charged into the battlefield and launched their fiercest attacks at the monster army.

Even if the players were just Level 80, Level 50 or even Level 30, they did not falter when it was time to charge forward. Although they could not really provide much damage power to the monsters, they were able to block the monsters for a brief moment. Well, that was because the fall of the main city would 'bestow' everyone from the same Region a penalty

that no one could afford to receive. Everyone's interest would be at risk. So naturally, everyone would be willing to get together and risk their lives in defending the main city to prevent that from happening. Only the top Tier players had managed to stay alive till the very end so that they could contribute as much as they could during the battle. Well, that was the key to the final victory after all. The unity had cast aside the pride and prejudice of all players on the battlefield. Everyone learned to work together with each another for that moment.

The impact of having Tanks on the battlefield was obvious in a large-scale battle. The monsters could not even lay a finger on the Tanks before they were blown into bits and died by the bombardment of the players' AoE attacks.

Meanwhile, the Tanks had been categorized into several levels, remember? For instance, a Model 1 Tank could only carry 10 players. So, the Tank itself could at most, have a total of 10,000,000 HP. It could be easily destroyed by the monster horde. The 10 players that got thrown out of the Tank upon its destruction would look pathetic and sad.

Well, that should obviously show the theory of 'Every extra penny deserves its value'. The Model 4 Tanks would not be destroyed so easily. They would be much tougher than the other Models.

Under the support of the Tanks, the morale of the players was soaring to the skies. They were harvesting the lives of the monsters without any sense of mercy. They were currently the 'masters' of the battlefield. Although the fact that they could not run back to their dead bodies was a disadvantage that could not be ignored, at least they could just run back into the main city to get their Tanks fixed once the Tanks are destroyed. Well, that was one privilege that one could not enjoy on the attacking side of this battle.

Therefore, everyone knew that defending would be much easier than attacking. If they could not even defend the castle against the monsters, they shouldn't even think about taking back the lost territories!

Meanwhile, these demonic monsters were merely the first wave of the

demon's assault army. They should naturally be the weakest and lowest Tier of the demon realm. The most troublesome part about them would be their ranged attacks. If the monsters united their ranged attacks on one target, they could instantly take out their target without ease! However, the Tanks and two Phoenix pets had succeeded in getting most of their aggro over. Because of that, the death count on the players had been minimized.

Well, the number of players were not lesser than the number of monsters. Their Attack power was not weak as well. Therefore, as the battle dragged on, the Normal Tier monsters were wiped out clean, leaving only the tens of thousands of Elite Tier demonic monsters behind.

These Elite Tier monsters were able to survive for so long because they were harder to deal with. Furthermore, each of them had over 100,000,000 HP! So it would take quite some time to take them out.

However, these Elite Tier monsters were only Level 200 monsters. As long as players are at least Level 170, they would not be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game while taking on those monsters. They would be able to deal 100% damage to the monsters. Furthermore, there were only approximately 10,000 of them left on the battlefield. Mathematically speaking, to instantly kill these monsters, only a few hundreds of players needed to focus their attacks on one monster at the same time. With the number of players in the vicinity, they could wipe out the remaining monsters by repeating what they did for a few dozen times.

If those monsters were smart enough to think, they could have pushed forward by bundling up together before pushing forward towards the city walls. Although they could not change the fact that they were losing, at least they could still increase the casualties on the players' side. Killing one would be good, killing two would be a 'profit'!

Unfortunately for them, monsters would remain monsters. They were slaughtered up by the players big time. The monsters were divided and conquered easily by the players by the end of the battle. The players did not lose much before they wiped out the monster horde entirely.

Because the two Phoenix pets were there to reduce the casualties over

the north castle, the players at the north castle managed to wipe out the demonic monsters in the shortest time. The moment they came out from their battle mode, the Priests and the Knights began to act. They tried their very best to save as many dead players from their deaths as possible. By doing so, they could maintain the number of players on the battlefield for the battles yet to come.

There were a total of 200,000,000 players in the China Region itself. However, players would have to reach at least Level 170 before they could become useful in such battles. Well, the number of players who attained at least Level 170 were only approximately 70,000,000. However, it was believed that the more powerful monsters would only be spawned later in the battles. When Level 210 monsters begin to appear, those Level 170 players would become useless in the battle!

Meanwhile, when Level 220 monsters begin to spawn, the Level 180 players would become useless.

As the battle progresses on, the effective battle power would become weaker and weaker. Therefore, the players must reserve their best fighters until the crucial moment. Well, {Resurrection} had a 50minute cooldown after it has been used. Meanwhile, that Skill could not be used when the user was engaged in his or her Battle Mode. So if they don't do it now, they would have to save more players in the next round.

A few minutes later, the East Gate, West Gate, and South Gate had also brought good news saying that they had wiped out the monster forces. However, 8 minutes later, the second wave of the monster forces had already come.

'Ding! The second wave of the Demonic Army's invasion has begun!'

Upon seeing the system notification, countless Void Dwellers were revealing themselves on the horizon. They were coming strong at the main city like a blue ocean's tide. Just like the normal monsters, these Demon Dwellers were categorized into Normal Tier and Elite Tier. The size of those Elite Tier demons was twice the size of those Normal Tier demons. Well, the Elite Tier demons also had two golded ring around each

of their limbs.

[Void Dweller] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 205

HP: 263,850

Defence: 8,080

Melee Attack: 54,447 – 64,447

Skills:

[Tormenting Torture]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the targets.

Meanwhile, the Elite Tier Void Dwellers had a different name. They were called Void Crosser. Not only they had an extremely high amount of HP and Attack, they also had one additional Skill with them.

[Void Dweller, the Crosser] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 205

HP: 102,500,000

Defence: 12,650

Melee Attack: 92,295 – 132,295

Skills:

[Tormenting Torture]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the targets.

[Void Cross]: Tear open the dimension of the void. The demon can appear anywhere within the area of 30-meter radius from where the demon vanished.

Although these Elite Tier Void Dwellers were 5 levels higher than the Normal Tier demons, they could not really deal much of a threat to the players. However, because of that 5-level difference, there were at least 5,000,000 players got affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Well, that had really bombed the players with a significant

disadvantage in this battle!

The Void Dwellers had no legs. They were just floating about like helium balloons, half a foot from the ground. However, they could really float fast. They floated towards the castle as if there was no gravity on them at all! Well, because none of them had any mouth on their heads, the only sound they made was the 'shoof' sound made when they were moving at a high pace.

"Kill them all!"

The players by the outside of the castle were burning with murderous intent. They were hyped over the battle that was coming at them. One after another they let out their battle cries. Some of the captains of the Tanks were very excited to the point that they began to move the Tanks forward. So the second wave of invasion had begun!

"What kind of stingy system is this? They didn't even spawn a boss out yet!?" Fatty Han pouted and said.

Zhang Yang could not help to laugh. Then he said, "Well, maybe some bosses have been spawned by the other gates of the castle!"

"No, there's no sign of any boss at any of the gates just yet!" Hundred Shots shook his head and said, "I've asked around. There's no sign of any bosses at the other 3 gates!"

"So our efforts had been wasted! Pui!" Wei Yan Er was infuriated. Then she patted her Crimson Red Crow and charged down into the monster horde.

"If you think that our efforts had been wasted, then why are you still putting so much effort now?" Han Ying Xue was worried that the little brat would get herself into trouble again. So she followed the little brat into battle.

"Hehe! Well, I'm bored! So might as well do something then!"

"Let's charge together then!"

Zhang Yang hopped onto his Phoenix pet as well. Even though these

Void Dwellers had higher levels, they were just a bunch of Melee-type monsters. There was no need for those who had a Flying Mount to worry that these monsters would swarm up to them. Players could just put a little distance between them and the monsters. The monsters would not have any chance to touch them, that way.

However, players with lower levels would eventually become food for powder. After all, they could only deal 1 damage to the monsters. However, the monsters could deal a tremendous amount of damage to them because of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Well, it might be possible that the monsters could instantly kill the players!

Under the noisy sound made by the engines of the Tanks, the fierce battle raged on. Countless spells were shot across the sky and landed on the monster horde. The scene was gory and spectacular at the same time.

Well, the Normal Tier Void Dwellers would just be food for powder as well. Players with better equipment could have taken them out in a matter of seconds! However, the Elite Tier Void Dwellers, the Crossers, were a lot more powerful than those Normal Tier Void Dwellers. They were fearless in the face of getting surrounded by players because they could shift around freely. Meanwhile, these monsters were quite special. They were actually the rare monsters that were not affected by the aggro system of the game. They were called the random-aggro type monsters. Well, their objectives were obvious. They were aiming their attacks at the NPCs on the castle wall.

Using their {Void Cross} from time to time, players had nothing on them that could stop these Elite Tier Void Dwellers from pushing forward. It did not take long for the Elite Tier monsters to reach the castle walls of the castle. Then, these monsters began to launch their attacks at the NPCs on the walls.

These NPCs on the walls were not like the players. Their attack range could reach up to 100 meters. In other words, they could perform a long ranged sniping attack. Their Attack power was extremely strong and deadly. However, their weakness were glaring as well. Their Defence was extremely weak and their HP amount was extremely low. The Elite Tier

Void Dwellers were able to slaughter them up without taking much of their time.

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Quickly! Get rid of these Elite Tier monsters first! If we are going to encounter some long ranged monsters later on, we'll be doomed!"

Well, because the players took the initiative to launch their attacks on the monsters in the first wave of invasion, they were able to block the monster horde far away from the castle walls. So the NPCs on the walls had not had their chance to show off their usefulness. However, Zhang Yang believed that those NPCs must not be underestimated. Their long range attacks would definitely be very useful in the late battle. So, he cannot afford to let the NPCs die here now!

Chapter 823: Queen of Misery Zhura

Zhang Yang and his gang quickly turned around and got back to the walls to handle the Void Dwellers that were about to breach the wall. Fortunately, not all of the Void Dwellers were at the walls. Currently, there was only approximately 1,000 of them over by the wall. Although these 1,000 Elite Tier monsters were actually pretty scary and intimidating, the headquarters of the humans was just located over those walls. Therefore, it was impossible that the number of players around the vicinity to dwindle. Furthermore, the NPCs weren't just standing idle allowing the monsters to hit them. They immediately engaged those Elite Tier monsters with the weapons in their hands.

Because these monsters were not affected by the aggro system, Zhang Yang had no way of luring them or to get them to follow him. So he could only focus on dealing as much damage as he could onto those monsters. One less monster would lighten the amount of damage the NPCs would receive.

Fortunately for the players, the NPCs could be healed by Healers. Upon settling with their own kind, the Healers then turned their attention towards the NPCs, largely reducing the death count of the NPCs.

After approximately an hour, all of the Void Dwellers were wiped out clean. Meanwhile, the players had suffered heavy casualties. Although a small number of players were resurrected, the third wave of the demonic army had arrived. Therefore, quite a number of players had to stay dead on the ground.

Meanwhile, the waves of the army continued to come after they managed to survive the previous wave of attacks. The third wave, the fourth wave, the fifth wave! The more waves they managed to survive, the higher the number of casualties the players had to suffer. More importantly, the lesser players the Priests and the Knights could resurrect, it was obvious that the battles were getting more difficult by the second.

"There's still no sign of the boss yet! What a tragic day!" Endless Starlight

sighed.

However, Zhang Yang said, "It's actually a good news that we haven't encountered any boss so far. Or else, I think we'll suffer much higher casualties by now. We might not have survived for so long!"

"I wonder how many rounds left..."

"The official told us that there should be 10 waves!"

"So the level of the monsters will increase by 5 levels each time a new wave comes. So I'm going to assume that the monsters will all be Level 245 during the tenth wave!"

Level 245! There were only 7 members of Zhang Yang's gang, including himself, who had managed to reach beyond Level 215. Only 7 of them would not be affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Meanwhile, looking at the entire Crimson Sky City, there should be less than 30 players who actually had reached Level 215. So how would they be able to hold their ground against the tenth wave, then?

Zhang Yang seemed to finally understand the reason why the Japan-Korea Region could not hold against the demonic monsters even though they had unbelievably strong castle walls to defend the castle. It seemed that the tenth wave would definitely be too much for the players to handle!

Upon seeing the possibilities that lay before them, everyone revealed expressions as if they had been constipating for over a week. Awful. Their expressions were just awful.

The Level Gap Suppression effect of the game sucks! Pui! The effect had increased the Attack power of the monsters by 2 times while they nerfed the Attack power of the players twice as well! Because of that, the Attack power of the players had become 4 times weaker than the Attack power of the monsters! What's so fair about that?! Without the Level Gap Suppression effect in the way, each player could have taken out one monster. Now, 4 players would be required to take out one monster!

"Thing will eventually turn out fine. Let's roll with it first!"

Well, it couldn't be helped, though. Low-level players could still acquire guidance from high-level players. However, the high-level players would not know who to seek guidance from. Well, they tended to grind on their own in order to acquire their current achievements.

'Ding! The third wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!'

Without giving the players even one second to catch their breath, the third wave of the demonic forces had arrived.

This time, the monsters were called 'Queen of Misery'. They were all approximately 10 meters tall. Each of them have 6 arms. Each of their arms was equipped with a shiny long blade. Although they had big boobies and big *sses, their skins were greyish. There was nothing pretty about them, by the looks of it. Just like the monsters in the two previous waves, these monsters were categorized into Normal Tier and Elite Tier. However, the Elite Tier only had 4 arms equipped with blades. Their other two arms were equipped with a staff instead!

[Queen of Misery] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 210

HP: 276,790

Defence: 8,440

Melee Attack: 52,276 – 62,276

Skills:

[Chaotic Slice]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. There is a rate to trigger 1 to 5 additional attacks.

Meanwhile, the Elite Tier Queens of Misery were powerful in both physical and magic attacks!

[Superior Queen of Misery] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 210

HP: 105,000,000

Defence: 13,190

Melee Attack: 97,606 – 137,606

Magic Attack: 59,663 – 79,663

Skills:

[Chaotic Slice]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. There is a rate to trigger 1 to 3 additional attacks.

[Shadow Arrow Barrage]: Unleashes countless shadow arrows into the surroundings, causing 100% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters.

These Queens of Misery had long legs! They were able to run faster than any regular pet mount! They were moving fluidly as they surrounded the entire castle from all four directions!

"It's a boss!" Wei Yan Er suddenly screamed as she was pointing one of her fingers at something beyond the horizon.

"Little brat has sharp eyes! Haha!" Zhang yang only noticed the existence of the boss after he looked across the battlefield at the direction where the little brat pointed at for a moment.

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er felt contented after being praised.

"As expected of an evil person. Your senses have become so sensitive to everything around you!" Zhang Yang teased her in passing.

"You bastard! Stinky noob tank! Pui!" Wei Yan Er became furious right after she heard Zhang Yang.

"Let's go and snatch the boss now before someone else does!" Even though Mini Piglet was just a Healer and she was also a girl, but she had quite a wild personality as well. She immediately revealed her desire to spill blood right on her pretty face.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Let's look at the boss' Skills first before deciding whether to take the boss or not!"

[Queen of Misery Zhura] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 210

HP: 2,100,000,000

Defence: 20,900

Melee Attack: 177,324 – 237,324

Skills:

[Tornado Cleave]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets within the battle area.

[Tormenting Strike]: Consecutively strike 6 times at a target, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuse with one Queen of Misery or one Superior Queen of Misery and heals herself by 10% HP. Meanwhile, the fused monster will die instantly.

Note: Zhura is the capable executioner for the Demon Commander Isles. She's been renowned for her brutality and her thirst for blood.

"Demonic Fusion!" Upon seeing that Skill, everyone screamed in terror.

"Hmm!" Zhang Yang nodded and said, "I wonder how long will the cooldown for this Skill be. If it's not long, the boss will be invincible before the monster hordes are wiped out. Furthermore, we don't have anything to gain by killing a Holy Tier boss actually. Let's focus on the monsters first then. No matter how powerful is the boss, the boss would not be as strong as 1,000 monsters combined. 1,000 monsters are easier to handle than the boss!"

Everyone patted their Flying Mounts and made their way down from the walls. Then they began their onslaught on the monster horde.

Because the level of those monsters had increased by 5 more levels, approximately 5,000,000 more players had been affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game, just because they were more than 30 levels lower than the level of the monsters. Furthermore, the total number of players that remained in battle was not as much as the number of players they had while defending the castle from the second wave of the invasion. Therefore, it was natural that the pace of killing out the

monsters had reduced quite a bit.

However, the Tanks were still able to show their usefulness on the battlefield terrifically! With the Tanks providing the players a super long *ss HP bar, the players were able to deal much more damage than they ever could before they had to retreat to heal. Well, the game was not as realistic as reality, after all. Well, as long as the players weren't dead, their damage output would not be affected at all.

So the Tanks were serving good in the aspect of life-saving.

Zhang Yang and the gang were keeping an eye on the boss while they were slaying the monsters around them. Although the boss's Attack power was not as powerful as the Attack power of 1,000 monsters, the boss's {Tornado Cleave} would be quite a deadly threat to everyone in the vicinity. If everyone was standing packed together in one's pot, the boss would be able to deal quite some significant damage that no one could afford to ignore!

Although Zhang Yang and the gang did not really put their minds on the Holy Tier boss, there were still many other players who crave for Holy Tier equipment. Well, they couldn't clear the Hardcore Mode of the Spectre's Cavern or the Elemental Nest. Therefore, quite a number of parties went up to the boss. They were all from smaller guilds, though.

Even after they noticed the boss's HP recovery Skill, those players were only praying for the boss to be merciful on them with her {Demonic Fusion}. They were hoping that they could overcome the boss's HP Recovery Skill with their numbers. As long as their DPS is powerful enough, they would still stand a chance to defeat the boss.

However, these players were about to be disappointed. The boss was incredibly strong to them. The boss's {Tornado Cleave} did not even have a cooldown! Other than the regular attacks, the boss was also whirling around causing tremendous damage to the players around her.

Well, a damage value of approximately 200,000 damage would just cause an itch to Zhang Yang's skin. There was no need to fear at all. However, not everyone could be equipped with equipment that were so

good as Zhang Yang's. A player with merely a complete set of Ethereal Tier equipment could only have 500,000 HP. The boss could easily take them out with only 2 to 3 hits!

Furthermore, the boss's {Demonic Fusion} did not have a cooldown just like her {Tornado Cleave}. Once the boss had 90% HP remaining, she would begin to grab and 'feed' herself with her minions around her. Although the amount of HP recovery was affected by the effect of the {Destructive Smash}, the boss's speed of 'feeding' was not affected at all. Therefore, the boss could maintain her HP at around 85%!

For normal players, a Holy Tier boss was extremely powerful. Upon using {Tornado Cleave}, the boss's surrounding was filled with dead bodies. The players were taken out shortly after they arrived.

Zhang Yang could not help to feel a little shocked. This b*tchy boss seemed to have what it takes to be deemed as a World boss! She could repeatedly spam her AoE attacks and she had a powerful HP Recovery Skill as well!

"Endless Starlight, you go ahead and kite the boss around. Meanwhile, Mini Piglet, you go with Starlight and keep him healed up. The rest, just keep yourselves away from the boss. We don't have to kill the boss. We just need to make sure the boss won't come in and slaughter the players up. We only need to keep the boss under control!" Zhang Yang commanded.

Endless Starlight and Mini Piglet went up to the boss as instructed by Zhang Yang. Well, if anyone would be so stupid to go and fight the boss, it would serve them right, if they ever get themselves killed. Truth be told, if those sort of players were to survive until the very end, they would just screw things up for the other players and get everyone killed by the end of it. So, it would be better if they could just die in the early stage of the battles.

In the first two waves, the players had the absolute advantage over the monsters. However, the advantage that the players had seemed to have faded. Everyone was in a difficult situation. The number of casualties was

increasing in every passing moment.

Mountain Mover was commanding the parties of the Lone Desert Smoke for the moment. At the same time, he was also screaming at the Healers with low levels to stay put, or else they would only die in vain. Since they did not have powerful equipment to even contribute to healing, these low-level players could still wait for the right moment to resurrect players who were lying dead on the battlefield.

Well, the Skill - {Resurrect} would work the same if a Level 10 player or a Level 200 player uses it. The Skill would still resurrect the dead players. Therefore, low-level players would still serve some significant purposes on the battlefield.

However, Mountain Mover was not the commander for all guilds. So his decisions might seemed to be biased over the Lone Desert Smoke. When he noticed that the players from the Lone Desert Smoke were low on HP, he commanded the Healers to get to the frontline and heal the players up. Well, he had forgotten something very important. Those Healers weren't high level enough to survive the monsters' assaults. So, when the monsters gave a gentle touch to those Healers, they were instantly killed on the spot! Because of that, the chance of reviving was reduced a lot!

Mountain Mover was infuriated by his own mistake he made. He was so angry at himself that his entire body was trembling. However, Zhang Yang calmly told him to calm down first, "Don't worry about it. The time interval between waves will only get shorter and shorter later on. There will not even be time for the Healers to resurrect the fallen ones."

Chapter 824: Demonic Pearl

After Endless Starlight managed to get the boss to follow him, a large number of players from other guild began to lurk in the shadows. They kept sending their men to poke the boss from the side. However, all of them ended up in a tragic death of course. Truth to be told, the boss was using her {Tornado Cleave} so frequently that anyone who got near enough would get themselves killed on the spot. Well, kiting the boss could only do good in preventing the boss from running around, taking the innocent lives of the players.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang did not put any expectations on killing the boss either. He let Endless Starlight be in charge of pulling the boss from the more populated area of the battlefield. After the monsters were cleared out from the battlefield, then only Zhang Yang and the others would focus their attention on the boss.

Countless bloodshed had finally taught the players from the other guilds to be obedient. They had no choice but to give up on dying pointlessly and let Endless Starlight focus on kiting the boss. Well, because even if Endless Starlight manages to kite the boss far away from the battlefield, Zhura's {Demonic Fusion} would still suck a monster from afar to recover her own HP bar. Well, the boss was basically invincible for the moment.

Upon sacrificing over three to four million players, the monsters outside the castle were finally wiped out cleanly. The boss was the only enemy left in the vicinity.

Everyone turned their attention towards the boss now. They immediately charged towards the boss and started their ferocious attacks on the boss.

Although the boss had quite a high amount of HP on her and all players in the vicinity could not attack the boss at the same time due to the limitation of space and rage, only approximately thousands of players managed to land their attacks on the boss at the same instant. However, even if each of the players could only deal 10,000 damage, one round of attacks from so many players at the same instant would deal about

10,000,000 damage! Therefore, 21 rounds of attacks should be enough for the players to take out the boss once and for all!

However, even though the boss did not have her HP Recovery Skill to use anymore, it did not mean that her Attack power was weakened. With one whirl of her {Tornado Cleave}, countless gleaming of the blades swung across the battlefield, and countless players found themselves dead under the brutality of the boss's attacks. Their dead bodies collapsed to the ground the moment the boss was done whirling her blades in her arms. However, the players at the rear were still making their way to the boss. Well, the main reason was because they could acquire the 'qualification' to pick up the loots that the boss would drop upon her death. Therefore, everyone was excited over it. They no longer got held back by their fear of death.

"Haih... Why would they put so much effort over a few pieces of Holy Tier equipment? Is it really worth it?" Fatty Han said sarcastically.

Zhang yang laughed out loud and said, "Well, we're just a few steps from getting a full set of Ascended Tier equipment now. Of course, we won't even have the interest to look at them Holy Tier equipment. However, for most people in the game, Holy Tier equipment are like Celestial Tier equipment at the current stage of the game! Are you saying you don't want to get a Celestial Tier equipment for real?"

"What? Celestial Tier equipment? Of course, I want to get them! Unfortunately, we have not met another Celestial Tier boss anymore ever since then!" Fatty Han sighed heavily.

"Actually, we're about to meet one, Demon Lord Kenzack! That's a Celestial Tier boss for sure! However, we'll have no idea what level the boss will be."

"Humph! No matter how strong the boss turns out to be, I'll just slice and dice and slash the boss! The boss will die before me!" Wei yan Er shamelessly told everyone.

"Haha!"

Everyone was laughing at the little brat. Meanwhile, under the

bombardment of the players' attacks, the boss finally collapsed with an empty HP bar. The moment when the loots were rolling across the ground, the players around the boss began to snatch about like their lives were depending on what they could get! Nearly 20 pieces of equipment were swept clean off the ground within one split second! Well, it seemed that everyone was extremely quick to pick things up from the ground.

"Boss! Boss! Something nice came out!" Endless Starlight hopped onto his Flying Mount and made his way back to the castle wall. While there was still little time, everyone was taking the opportunity to heal themselves up. The Healer-type players began to run across the battlefield to resurrect as many players as they could.

"Oh, so what's so nice about that thing you said?" Zhang Yang did not show much enthusiasm about Starlight's discovery. Up to the current point, even the Celestial Tier boss were spawned just to get everyone hyped without leaving anything behind. So what good stuff could a Holy Tier boss offer then?

"See!?" Endless Starlight showed the items to everyone. There were three pearl-like beads of the size of a small pill. Well, they were basically translucent. They were radiating with a layer of vague light around them.

"So what are these?" Everyone asked.

"Hehe! You're going to be shocked to see what they are!" Endless Starlight quickly posted the description of the items on the party channel.

[Lesser Demonic Pearl] (Consumable)

Use: Increase the success rate of the fusion of two equipment by 20%. The effect cannot stack even if you have more than one of this item.

Required Level: 200

Everyone looked at each other as they revealed joyous expressions on their faces.

Well, the most popular and demanded thing in the game currently would be the fusion of two equipment! Unlike rune-weapons, the enhancement effect on an equipment would be much better in the sense

of power level. It was already very common for players to have a +2 or +3 equipment.

However, there were only a few number of players who managed to get +4 and +5 equipment. Well, it was mostly because the success rate for enhancing the equipment to +4 was only 17% (The Fusion and Enhancement service that the NPCs provide over enhancing an equipment to +1 is only 80%. Meanwhile, the Tesseract offers 90% success rate for the same service.). The success rate for enhancing the equipment to +5 would drop to 7% only. Only the rich could afford so many equipment to try out their luck. Normally, normal players would stop when they succeeded in enhancing their equipment up to +3 equipment. Well, it was mostly because they could no longer afford to spend more money to risk losing their equipment in case the enhancement fails.

However, by using the [Lesser Demonic Pearl], players could increase the success rate for enhancing an equipment to +4 up to 50%. Compared to the initial success rate of 17%, the players would most likely 300% more to succeed in enhancing their equipment.

Furthermore, the existence of [Lesser Demonic Pearl] had confirmed the existence of higher grade pearls like [Normal Demonic Pearl] and [Greater Demonic Pearl]. Even if each enhancement could only have additional 10% success rate, as long as the players had enough amount of [Greater Demonic Pearls] in their possessions, well, at least when their equipment is enhanced to +3, they would have 100% success rate for the enhancement process. That would be risk-free!

Currently, the dungeons would drop Holy Tier equipment. So the Top Tier guilds would not mind passing on the opportunity to get the equipment dropped by the boss. However, only World bosses in the Open World Map would drop Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier equipment. The number of equipment of those Tiers was just pathetically rare! Therefore, no one would even dare to try enhancing their equipment up to +1 even of the fail rate was only 20%, so let alone the +4 enhancement which only had 17% success rate. In case the enhancement turns out to be a failure, two pieces of Ascended Tier equipment would be destroyed. The players

who attempt that would definitely cry in misery for years!

Well, there's the Celestial Tier equipment as well. Who would be willing to risk the 20% fail rate to fuse or enhance their Celestial Tier equipment then?

"Well, this is indeed some good stuff!" Zhang Yang nodded. After all, his Tesseract would have an additional 10% success rate for both the fusion and enhancement process of equipment. Hence, the existence of these [Demonic Pearls] seemed to be much more valuable than he could imagine!

"Unfortunately, there's only three here!" Wei Yan Er immediately became greedy and started complaining like a little b*tch.

Endless Starlight smiled bitterly and said, "The boss only dropped three, that's it! I've managed to snatch all of them!"

Everyone laughed. Well, they had slain countless bosses ever since then. Their eyes and reflexes had been 'sharpened'. Normal players would aim for the equipment, middle Tier players would aim for the Skill Books while top Tier players such as themselves would aim for those strange looking things.

"If my assumption is correct, the Holy Tier bosses would only drop [Lesser Demonic Pearls]. The Ascended Tier bosses would only drop [Middle Demonic Pearls] while the Celestial Tier bosses would drop [Greater Demonic Pearls]." Zhang Yang smiled and took the three pearls from Endless Starlight's hands.

Well, it was obvious that Zhang Yang should be the one to keep the pearls. Since his Tesseract could provide an additional 10% success rate to all fusion and enhancement processes, the others could just ask Zhang Yang to fuse or enhance their equipment for them. Furthermore, asking the NPCs to fuse and enhance their equipment would require them paying a large sum of gold coins. How would Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue be able to accept that, huh?!

"We've killed so many Holy Tier and Ascended Tier bosses... how come we've never seen these sort of items before?" Wei Yan Er immediately

began to ask pointless questions again.

"Silly little brat... that's because these pearls only existed after the Equipment Fusion System was introduced into the game." Han Ying Xue smiled at the little brat and rubbed her flat chest. Then Han Ying Xue sighed heavily and said, "Brainless brat without a pair of proper boobies, huh..."

Kaboom!

Wei Yan Er immediately got infuriated to the point that she looked like a barrel of TNT being set off. She instantly jumped around in rage, cursing and screaming! She even made a promise to rub someone's boobies into a pile of meat pie after signing out of the game.

'Ding! The fourth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!'

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Heavy footsteps that trembled across the ground each time they stomped the ground, as loud as the thunder. Instantly, players could see that there were countless small mountains moving towards the castle at a slow pace.

Those who have sharp eyes would have been able to spot that those mountain-looking things was actually an army of giant turtles! However, these turtles were all as tall as a 5-storey building! Countless demons with a bow in their hands were sitting on top of the turtles. These demons were approximately 3 meters tall. Their bodies were entirely crimson red in color.

Other than that, there were other demons that looked similar to those that were sitting on the turtles. They were following behind the army of gigantic turtles while pushing forward towards the castle.

[Abyss Demonic Turtle] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 215

HP: 1,000,000,000

Defence: 30,000

Melee Attack: 97,665 – 137,665

Skills:

[Trample]: Stomps the ground with its gigantic turtle foot and causes 100,000 Physical damage to all targets within the range of 10X10 meters.

[Hammerhead]: Strikes the castle walls with its rock-hard turtle head. No matter how strong the defenses are, nothing can stop the turtle head from penetrating through the defense!

Upon seeing the description for the Skill, the men revealed a perverted smile on their faces. Fatty Han could not help to think that the designer of this Skill must be in the same 'league' as he is. He felt like as if he had met someone that would understand him well! Unfortunately, that was just him. He would never get the chance to meet the designer of that Skill in person.

However, the demon on the demonic turtle turned out to be very weak though.

[Turtle Surfing Demonic Servant] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 215

HP: 277,030

Ranged Attack: 52,324 – 72,324

Skills:

[Precise Shot]: Shoot upon aiming the target. The attack cannot be dodged nor avoided. Causes 120% Ranged Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

"Wow, this turtle is really rock-hard, man!" Zhang Yang was shocked. 30,000 Defence! Well, that amount of Defence that was nearly as powerful as the Defence of an Ascended Tier boss! Meanwhile, a total of 1,000,000,000 HP was far more than the HP amount of an Elite Tier monster!

"Hehe... didn't you read the description of that Skill? If it's not rock-hard enough, how would it be able to break 'that', huh?" Fatty Han patted

Zhang Yang's shoulder and scanned his eyes across the bodies of Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue. Well, he was trying to imply something to Zhang Yang.

Krunchak! Krunchak!

Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue swung out their fist in their full strength at Fatty Han and landed their fists on Fatty Han's sides. That fatty fell onto the ground with his face facing down.

"Fortunately, there weren't much of them here!"

"However, even though the Attack power of these Demonic Turtle is not really powerful, but their HP amounts were a little high and their Defence is a little too thick, don't you think? They'll be able to break the castle walls if they charge in at this rate!"

"We must stop them from getting nearer to the castle walls then!"

"Let's charge out and kill them all!"

The players in the castle let out their battle cries once more. Then they opened up the castle gate and walked towards the turtle army.

Thoom! Thoom! Thoom!

Although the movement of the Demonic Turtles seemed extremely slow, their movement speed in walking forward wasn't slow at all. Well, it was mostly because they were too huge! Their one step was equal to a normal player's a hundred steps! Following the loud and trembling footsteps of the turtle army, thousands of Demonic Turtle were approaching the frontline of the players. With ease, they stepped and broke the defense line that the players formed and arrived at the bottom of the castle wall. Well, the Demonic Turtles were basically stepping on the players while they began to use their heads which were full of sharp thorns to bang the castle wall.

Boom!

Even though the Demonic Turtles seemed to move very slow, however, the speed of their heads stretching in and out was impressively fast!

Instantly, the impacts of their head-butts were so powerful that they left holes in the castle walls! That had really shown how powerful their head-butts were!

Meanwhile, the demons riding on top of the Demonic Turtles began to shoot their arrows upon their enemies. Instantly, the sky was clouded by the presence of the arrows that were shot by the demons.

Chapter 825: The Fifth Wave, Flames of Fire

"We can't afford to let those turtles destroy our castle walls! We must kill those Demonic Turtles first!"

Zhang Yang patted the head of the Phoenix pet. The blazing big bird instantly turned into a stream of blazing light and shot towards one of the gigantic turtles.

The Demonic Servants right on top of the turtles immediately opened fire on Zhang Yang.

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

‘-132!’

...

Right before the absolute Defence of Zhang Yang, all physical attacks of the Normal Tier monsters would find it almost impossible to penetrate Zhang Yang's Defence alone. With tens of arrows landing on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang, only one-third of the arrows managed to penetrate Zhang Yang's Defence. More pathetically, all of their attacks only dealt about 2,000 damage to Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang laughed for a brief moment. Then, he swung his axe across the air and instantly ended a Demonic Servant's life! He quickly followed with a {Horizontal Sweep}, the Demonic Servants screamed miserably and fell off the back of the Demonic Turtles. Well, that swept the Demonic Servants clean off the table!

However, Zhang Yang's true targets were not the Demonic Servants. He was actually aiming for the Demonic Turtles! As he kept whirling his axe, the Demonic Turtles were afflicted by tremendous damage.

Zhang Yang had enhanced his {Eagle Eye} to Level 10 earlier on. So, he could just ignore 95% Defence of all his enemies. He did not even need to

use his {Cripple Defence,} now. However, with his current additional Damage, his normal attacks could deal up to 500,000 damage now! Even the reflective damage of his {Block} had reached up to 170,000 damage now! Monsters without Defence Penetration attributes would not be able to affect Zhang Yang much on the battlefield now!

{Charge Up Strike}, {God of War Devastation}!

‘-4,724,073!’

{God of War Battle Axe}!

‘-1,498,203!’

{Force Strike}!

‘-529,982!’

‘-1,048,340!’

Without holding back at all, Zhang Yang threw out three of his best Skills which could deal the most damage on the monsters. He managed to deal over 7,000,000 damage on the monsters within 4 seconds! Lost Dream and the others dropped their jaws the moment they saw the amount of damage values that popped up right on top of the monsters.

"Boss! You're getting even better now! Holy sh*t!" Endless Starlight could not catch his breath as he screamed in shock. In terms of Defence, he could still catch up with Zhang Yang by relying on his equipment. However, he would never be able to catch up with Zhang Yang in terms of offense, even if he spends his entire life boosting his Attack.

While everyone was so shocked that they lost their ability to talk, they landed on the back of a Demonic Turtle and started their attacks on that turtle. Even though there were still a large number of Demonic Servants on the back of the Demonic Turtles, they were just Normal Tier monsters, after all. After a wave of insanely powerful bombardment, the surroundings became peaceful and quiet. The giant turtle was the only monster left now. It continued to stomp on the players on the ground while hammering the walls with its powerful head swings!

Obviously, the Demonic Turtles were not restricted by the aggro system of the game as well. Or perhaps, the castle walls had been set as the number one priority on the aggro list of the turtles. Therefore, no matter how hard Zhang Yang and his gang tried, the turtles would never switch their targets at all.

Well, that was a bad news!

The HP of the players could be healed with Healing Skills, however, the HP of the castle walls would never be recovered once they are gone. They would only be able to recover after the entire war is over! Although the walls did not have their own offensive power, they could still fend against the assaults of the Demonic Army. When the number of players is reduced to a certain number, the walls would serve their great purpose.

"Give it everything you've got!"

Zhang Yang cried out loud. Other than his Inheritance Transformation and his {Gate of Hell}, Zhang Yang had activated every single Skill that he could spare.

Although the Demonic Turtle had quite a high Defence, to begin with, Zhang Yang and his gang's Attack power combined was even simply overwhelming. Even with 1,000,000,000 HP, the Demonic Turtle could not escape death. Within 4 minutes, the gigantic creature collapsed heavily onto the ground and shattered into a few pieces of broken turtle shell.

Zhang Yang immediately patted Phoenix pet and made his way to the second Demonic Turtle. With a wave of his hand, he threw his {Glare of the Death God} straight on the giant turtle.

Although that Skill had a ridiculously low rate of success on a boss, the Skill would always work on monsters. Basically, monsters would not have the ability to resist the effects of the Skill. Immediately, a dark skull immediately formed right on top of the gigantic turtle.

Upon throwing a few attacks on the Demonic Turtle, Zhang Yang managed to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. The dark skull opened its mouth wide and swallowed the entire giant turtle!

It was an instant kill!

Even though the HP bar of the turtle did not reduce even by a bit, it was still killed instantly, right before the mighty effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. It was just an Elite Tier monster, after all. Even if it has over 100,000,000,000 HP, the monster would still be engulfed by the goofy dark skull and die instantly.

Other than the Lone Desert Smoke, there were also other top Tier guilds such as Rolling Rocks and Sunset Amber which were operating on their own in the surroundings. Although they were not as powerful as Lone Desert Smoke, they were also one of the China Region's top Tier guilds. Furthermore, the guildmasters of those guilds were each capable individuals, able to analyze a situation and act accordingly. Therefore, they commanded their air forces to focus their assaults on the Demonic Turtles as well.

Because there were countless Demonic Servants standing right on the back of those turtles, shooting arrows right at anyone who got near the turtles, the players could only play it out in two ways: The players could descend onto the back of the Demonic Turtles in order to start their attacks on the hordes. Or, they could just climb up the back of the Demonic Turtles through the gigantic legs of the monsters.

Obviously, with the monsters stomping the ground constantly, it would not be a good idea to go up by climbing. Therefore, the players used their Flying Mounts to get on top of the Turtles. The moment players began to occupy the space on the back of the turtles, the players began their slaughtering on the Demonic Servants. Meanwhile, on the surface of the ground, the players were doing their very best to fend off the Demonic Turtles' assaults on the walls by relying on the Tanks. They were able to surround the Demonic Turtles, one after another. The battle was getting more intense than ever!

After seeing most of the players switching their priority to taking out the Demonic Turtles, Zhang Yang finally felt a little more relieved. So, he turned his attention towards wiping out the demonic archers on top of the turtles' backs. By sweeping his axe across the back of the turtles, countless

Demonic Servants were seen falling off the backs of the turtles!

Well, though the Demonic Servants were just Normal Tier monsters, they could still deal quite a lot of damage to regular players if they ever fire their arrows at a target together. So it would be wise to wipe them out as soon as possible before focusing on the Demonic Turtles. By doing so, the players could also reduce the pressure on the Tanks. After all, the Demonic Servants would shoot at the Tanks as well.

Actually, there were three types of defenses on the battlefield.

The first one would be the players flying in the air on their Flying Mounts wiping off the Demonic Servants. The second one would be the players on the Tanks, fending off the assaults from the Demonic Turtles. The third one would be the players on the ground, getting engaged with the Demonic Servants on the ground. Figuratively speaking, the number of the Demonic Servants on the ground would be the highest. However, they were only able to be a nuisance to the players. Well, that's because they were merely Normal Tier monsters.

"Kill them all! Kill!"

"For Experience Points! For the equipment!"

"For the queen!"

Players were shouting their own slogans while they were engaging the demonic army. Although there wouldn't be any real deaths in real life, however, the scene on the battlefield was gory and bloody. Blood was everywhere! The surroundings looked like a real battlefield!

After 2 long hours of fierce fighting, the demonic army had finally been wiped out completely. However, the players had suffered quite a number of casualties as well. The castle walls were filled with holes all over them, as well! The scene was horrifying to look at! Meanwhile, that was just the northern gate of the castle! They had no idea what the other players over the other three gates did, yet!

"Things just keep getting badder and badder, boss! Reports are coming in, saying that the demonic armies by the other three gates are not wiped

out yet!" Hundred Shots shouted in the party chat after receiving the news. He was very worried now.

"We shall aid them, then!"

‘Ding! The fifth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

Before the gang could react, the fifth wave of the invasion began!

"What the f*ck! Do they even wish to see us alive by the end of all this crap?!" Fatty Han whined in misery.

Everyone gazed into the distance. Countless Hellfires began to march towards the castle from over the horizon. These Hellfire were all green. They were basically made of blazing rocks. The green flames flickered brightly all over their bodies. They were about 5 meters tall. Their appearances were intimidating!

[Hellfire] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 220

HP: 289,930

Defence: 8,800

Melee Attack: 55,141 – 75,141

Skills:

[Burning Aura]: Causes 60,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters once every 3 seconds. Effect of the same type will not stack.

[Molten Hand]: Incinerates the target with a burning hand and causes 100% Melee Attack of Fire Damage to the target.

Other than the Normal Tier monsters, it was natural to also have the Elite Tier monsters support them. Compared to the previous waves of armies, these monsters were marching in a very organized formation. 1,000 Hellfires would be led by 1 Hellfire Demon. Because of that, there were countless formations being shaped up on the battlefield. Their formations looked just like the formations of the Tanks.

[Hellfire Demon] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 220

HP: 110,000,000

Defence: 13,730

Melee Attack: 92,970 – 152,970

Skills:

[Burning Aura]: Causes 120,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 30 meters once every 3 seconds. Effects of the same type will not stack.

[Flame of Fury]: Spits a stream of flame, filled with rage and fury, torching up all targets within the conical area in front of it and causes 200,000 Fire Damage to all targets.

These Elite Tier monsters seemed to be about 10 meters tall. Truth be told, they were a rather spectacular sight.

These demons were not light-weight at all. Every single step shook the ground like a heavy metallic ball crashing into the ground. The entire land was trembling as they marched forth!

"Rawgh---" Countless Hellfire Demons let out their roars by opening up their rocky mouths. Afterwards, they began to spit out a long and endless stream of flames. The Hellfire monsters began to make their move. The demonic army started to move forward! Under the leadership of the Hellfire Demons, the Hellfire army charged straight towards the castle wall.

"Tanks in front!" Mountain Mover shouted as loud as he could.

Fortunately, they were battling right outside their main cities. Even if the Tanks are destroyed, the players could just run back into the city to get their Tanks repaired. As long as the main city does not fall, the players could keep doing that in order to keep their Tanks on the battlefield.

The other guilds such as Rolling Rocks and Sunset Amber had already followed the command of Mountain Mover earlier on. They now had full

respect for his abilities and would obey his every word, as if he was one of their own. They had already given permission to Mountain Mover to use their Tanks as part of his tactics.

With Tankers blocking the frontline, the players managed to form a defensive line and stop the monsters from charging through.

The impact of the monsters crashing into the defensive line had almost knocked over some of the Tanks! However, they managed to stop the demonic army from breaching their first defensive line! Players on board the tanks unleashed everything they had onto the monsters before them. Upon one full round of their AoE attacks, countless monsters were killed.

A new slaughter party had begun. Blood and death was spilled all over the place. Countless players and monsters were slain in every passing second. Heads and limbs were sent flying across the battlefield.

In a large-scale battle such as this one, anyone would become insignificant. So, all they could do was to kill endlessly until they get themselves killed. A demon lesser was a great help to everyone.

The gory bloodshed went on for 3 long hours. Finally, the number of the demons was reduced, bit by bit. The players had managed to gain the upper hand in the battle, at last. Players who were still alive had managed to gain a tremendous amount of Experience Points. However, the number of players remaining on the battlefield had been reduced from 50,000,000 to 25,000,000.

They still had half their numbers, but the monsters that had yet to come would only be stronger and stronger in each coming wave. The number of casualties would definitely increase in every coming wave. Based on that logic, everyone would be all dead when the ninth wave hits.

Chapter 826: Aimore Mage Captian

Heaphy

‘Ding! The fourth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

This time, countless Aimore Mages were seen, appearing on the horizon.

Aimore Mages were all deemed to be demons of higher Tier. Not only did they have two horns on their heads, they also had the tails of lizards trailing behind them! They even had a pair of wings right on their backs! That should be enough to symbolize them to be one of the higher Tier demons in the realm of hell.

Well, players would pay no mind to the statues of those demons. The one thing they cared about was that these monsters could fly! With so many of them flying around, they could easily form a deadly formation in the air and cause massive destruction to the players on the ground. The Tanks were massive. So, they would be attacked by approximately 100 monsters at the same time. Well, the other monsters would not be able to get themselves close enough to hit the Tanks anymore after each Tank is surrounded by 100 monsters.

However, if the monsters could get into the air, the number of monsters that could hit a Tank at the same time would increase up to 1,000! Meanwhile, once the players lose their Tanks, the number of casualties would become tremendous!

Although the monsters would die faster than any regular player on the battlefield, however, players would need to take on another 4 waves of Demonic Forces that had yet to come. After all, the interval of each wave coming in was decreasing. There was no time for the Healers to heal or resurrect the fallen at all.

[Aimore Mage] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 225

HP: 290,120

Defence: 8,800

Magic Attack: 33,823 – 43,823

Skills:

[Fire Missile]: Causes 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to the target. Also causes 10,000 Fire Damage to all friendlies of the targets in the target's surroundings.

The one thing that everyone was happy about this wave, was that there were no signs of any Elite Tier monsters! All the monsters in the vicinity were just Normal Tier monsters! Well, a monster composed of a combination of flying type and magic type is deadly enough, I guess. If there are a bunch of Elite Tier monsters in the vicinity, the players would really need to cry and die.

However, there was a boss in this wave. Judging by the fact that there was a boss in the third wave, players could deduce that a boss would be spawned once every 3 waves.

[Aimore Mage Captian Heaphy]

Level: 225

HP: 2,250,000,000

Defence: 21,710

Magic Attack: 107,608 – 147,608

Skills:

[Fiery Volcano]: Summons a Fiery Volcano within the range of 40 meters. The volcano will erupt randomly. Each eruption will cause 240,000 Fire damage to all targets that are caught in the eruption. Lava will splash out from the targets and causes 50,000 Fire Damage to the players around the targets.

[Flare Star]: Summons meteors from the sky and causes 200,000 damage to all targets within the area of 30 X 30 meters.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuses with an Aimore Mage's soul and recovers 10%

HP. The monsters that are fused will die immediately.

Note: Even though Heaphy is the subordinate of the Demon Commander Isles, Heaphy appears to be very proud. He has committed insubordination multiple times over.

"Boss!" Everyone was extremely excited upon the sighting of a boss. Even though they were no longer interested in Holy Tier equipment dropped by Holy Tier bosses, they were still very keen to acquire the [Demonic Pearls]. Those were some really good stuff, after all!

"Calm down, man. This boss also has {Demonic Fusion}. We must start with the little ones first!" Hundred Shots said.

"Let's go! They're just Normal Tier monsters! It should be easy! However, you have to take care of yourselves. After all, these monsters can use Magic attacks and they can fly as well. If too many of them are onto you, you'll still be as good as dead!"

"Roger!"

"Starlight, we're using the same old trick. You're going to kite the boss as well. Mini Piglet, you'll be healing Endless Starlight. The boss is all yours for the moment. Stop the boss from slaughtering innocent players!"

"Roger!"

Zhang Yang was only able to command his party which was relatively small. He would become confused if he has to command a large number of players in the battlefield. Fortunately, he had Mountain Mover to aid him in large-scale commandeering. Zhang Yang did not have to kill his brain to do that.

Undoubtedly, these flying mother*ckers were really annoying as f*ck. Although they were all Normal Tier monsters, their Attack power was quite powerful. Normally, Level 200 players with a complete set of Ethereal equipment would only have approximately 500,000 HP. If 10 of these flying mother*ckers shoot their attacks on such a player at the same time, they could instantly kill the player!

Meanwhile, Ethereal Tier equipment was currently the most common

equipment that everyone wore right now. After all, Holy Tier equipment in the dungeons were too f*cking difficult to acquire. Meanwhile, the Fusion System provided by the NPCs could only enhance the equipment, not increase their Tier. Therefore, Holy Tier equipment was deemed to be one of those luxury items that only top Tier players from top Tier guilds could enjoy.

Even though there were not many of those Normal Tier mother*ckers and there are easily taken out, however, they are able to take out the players in a brief period of time as well. Fortunately, the worst enemy on the field was currently taken on by Endless Starlight. Although there were also some idiotic players who went and got themselves killed by the boss, however, all in all, the boss did not kill more than a few players. The flying mother*ckers were the ones who were slaughtering the players up.

That's why there wasn't any sign of any Elite Tier monsters. Monsters that could fly are really annoying and deadly!

Another 3 hours passed. The players managed to clear out most of those flying mother*ckers. Everyone began to turn their attention towards the boss.

As Holy Tier equipment was still very appealing to most of the players in the game, many of them could not help but charge towards the boss. However, they were tormented by the boss' {Fiery Volcano} and {Flare Star}.

When the flying mother*ckers were almost wiped out, Zhang Yang and the gang had also joined the boss fight. Well, they had no intention of getting any of the Holy Tier equipment. However, they were very eager to get the Demonic Pearls that might be dropped from the boss. Who knows if the boss would drop them upon death. Zhang Yang and the gang were in standby mode for the moment.

The boss was quite ferocious. It was spamming its {Flare Star} as if the Skill did not have any cooldown! The players were bombarded by the deadly meteors that were showering from the sky. Meanwhile, the {Fiery Volcano} was also causing more chaos by throwing out blazing attacks at

the players. Not only could the Skill spit fire upon the players, the players would also get splashed by lava. The lava had even formed into a river near the boss! Whoever who touches it would be struck by 50,000 Fire Damage!

Fortunately, the Fiery Volcano was not as big as a real one. It was just as small as a giant boulder. If the volcano turns out to be as large as the real one, then the players should just quit the game and forget about it. Well, the entire Crimson Sky City would have been devoured by the lava coming out from the volcano!

Skills which such an attack range would definitely be fatal to the players. However, top Tier players like Zhang Yang himself could definitely handle the impact without having anything to worry about. Well, with Zhang Yang's current Defence, even if he walks straight into the lava and dips himself in, he would only receive about 4,000 damage. That amount of damage would not even give him an itch!

Meanwhile, the Normal Tier monsters were completely being wiped out. The boss had lost its ability to recover HP. After being f*cked up hard by the players, the boss had finally collapsed onto the ground with a miserable scream and died. Upon its death, the boss dropped quite a number of loots across the ground.

Zhang Yang was quick! Before anyone could react, he already picked up the four pearls from the ground. Having a closer look at them, the four pearls were indeed the [Lesser Demonic Pearls]!

"Zhan Yu, what are those? Judging from your reaction, those must have been extremely valuable!" Coincidentally, Greensleeves Prince was right beside Zhang Yang when he snatched the pearls from the ground. He had reflexively attempted to follow, but was much slower than Zhang Yang. Therefore, he did not manage to pick up anything. He was very curious about it. He knew that Zhang Yang was no longer interested in Holy Tier equipment, but he did notice that Zhang Yang was very keen to get those pearls. So he asked Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought. Then, he decided to tell Greensleeves

Prince about the pearls. Well, he won't be able to keep the 'secret' for long, anyway. Sooner or later, someone is going to find out about these pearls through other way. Meanwhile, the Sunset Amber was also one of Lone Desert Smoke's Allies. It would make Zhang Yang look bad if he ever tries to keep secrets from his friends.

"I see! I had no idea that such a thing existed in the game!" Greensleeves Prince laughed out loud and said, "Well, the next time another boss appears, we will not be courteous about it! We'll be snatching those from you!"

Zhang Yang smiled. Well, he was no worried at all though. Snatching loots fro the ground would require knowledge. Meanwhile, he had Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue in his party. Those two moneygrubbers would definitely have become experts in such a field by now. Didn't you see the little brat smiling with 4 pieces of Holy Tier equipment in her hands now?

Well, the situation would only be similar to a discounted sale in a hypermarket. Women will gain explosive power when it comes to snatching goods. They would be much more 'powerful' than men could ever be in such regards!

Giving no quarter to the players to even heal themselves and resurrect their fallen comrades, the bells of the seventh wave started tolling!

This time, the monsters were known as 'Evil Eye'.

These monsters appeared like an octopus. They had a gigantic eye right in the middle of their bodies and eight tentacles all around their bodies. That's it. There were no other features on them. Their gigantic eyes were radiating some eerie light. They were spooky, creepy creatures.

[Evil Eye] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 230

HP: 252,630

Defence: 9,160

Magic Attack: 35,526 – 45,526

Skills:

[Eye of Death]: Fires a beam of deadly laser and causes 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target.

Unlike the previous wave, although there were no signs of any bosses in this wave, there were tens of thousands of Elite Tier Evil Eyes in the vicinity. The Attack power of Evil Eyes in such numbers would definitely be much higher than the Attack power of a boss! However, because these monsters had no flying ability, they did not pose as much of a threat as the Aimore Mages did.

Well, that made perfect sense as well. The most powerful thing about range-type monsters was that they could focus fire on one target at a time and instantly kill the target. Although they may seem very weak on their own, well, when they come in numbers, the situation would change a little. Players would definitely not be able to afford fighting them in bulk!

The use of the castle walls had finally been revealed. Mountain Mover was currently commanding the players to retreat into the city. There, the players began to use the wall to block the eye sight of the monsters. By doing so, they were able to divide the monster army! As long as players are not instantly killed, they would be able to recover their HP through healing Skills. Instantly, the death toll of the players became under control.

Zhang Yang and his gang flew out of the castle on their Flying Mounts and began their assaults on the monsters. They threw their attacks on the monsters as intensely as they could. Well, because the monsters could not fly, whenever Zhang Yang and the gang got a little low on HP, all they needed to do was to fly higher a little and get themselves healed up before charging back into the battlefield.

However, the castle walls had received some damage during the fourth wave of the demonic invasion. There were many holes left by the attacks from the Demonic Turtles. Even though players may not be able to go through those holes, the Evil Eyes could slip through any small hole. Well, they were basically octopuses. They began to enter the castle through any holes they could find on the wall. The fiercest battle throughout the entire

war was about to begin.

The casualties of the players were high as f*ck!

However, this wave ended pretty quickly. It only took up 2 hours before the monsters were wiped out. The players had really taken a hit. The number of players remaining on the battlefield had been reduced to only 12,000,000. Well, even though the number was now lower, the power level of the players remaining were all top notch! From that moment onwards, none of the players remaining were below Level 190.

Meanwhile, everyone could see that the monsters in the eighth wave would be Level 235. Therefore, players below Level 205 would be affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. The situation became worse than everyone could ever anticipate!

"We're doing fine at this gate, however, the players by the South Gate have suffered the most losses. Currently, they barely have 6,000,000 players on the battlefield. Even if they could limp through this wave, they would never stand a chance in the ninth wave of the demonic invasion!" Hundred Shot sighed heavily. "Although the situation at the East Gate and the West Gate are a little better, well, they are not really much better actually... According to their statistics, each gate only has approximately 9,000,000 players remaining."

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "Tell them this. After the eight wave of the demonic invasion, we shall abandon all four gates of the city. We shall gather in our Main City!"

Chapter 827: Tactical Retreat

‘Ding! The eighth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

The monsters from the eighth wave was a large number of Cerberuses. They were as huge as male lions! Their entire bodies were black. They were drooling from their slightly open mouths, where their white sharp teeth were revealed. They looked horrifically wretched and scary.

Cerberuses were known to be deadly to Spell-type players. Well, they were equipped with two extremely brutal and annoying Skills: {Mana Incineration}, {Spell Rebound}. Fortunately, these countless Cerberuses were mostly Normal Tier monsters. The Elite Tier Three-Headed Cerberuses were just the minority.

[Cerberus] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 235

HP: 303,390

Defence: 9,160

Melee Attack: 58,071 – 78,071

Skills:

[Mana Incineration]: Reduces 30,000 MP of the target. Causes 60,000 Chaos Damage to the target as well.

[Spell Rebound]: Interrupts the target’s casting, causing the target to not able to use spell attacks.

The differences between the Elite Tier Cerberus and Normal Tier Cerberus were their HP amounts and their Attack powers. Naturally, the Elite Tier monsters would have higher HP and higher Attack power. They had the same Skillset as the Normal Tier Cerberus. Well, they had three heads, afterall. So, it would make sense, even if their Skills would cool down faster.

Truth be told, any monster would not be able to create too much of a threat to the players if they are alone --- of course, that would only apply

under the circumstance of the number of players and the number of monsters being about the same. However, if all the different types of monsters from all eight waves appear in the same wave, under the circumstance that the number of all monster types would be reduced by one-eighth of their total numbers, the damage that they could deal on the players would definitely be much higher than the players could ever anticipate.

Well, even though the Cerberuses were the worst enemies of the spell-type players, they also had the same obvious weakness. They would not pose much of a threat to the Melee-type players. Players could just send their Warriors, Thieves and Hunters to the frontline while keeping their spell-type players at the rear.

The Tanks were at the frontlines to tank against the monsters, as usual. Countless Skills were spammed across the battlefield, causing a large wave of impact to the monsters right before the Tanks, causing a tremendous amount of damage to the monsters at the same time. Under the circumstances where no player activates their Inheritance Transformation, the Tanks were the toughest existence with the highest HP on the battlefield. Although their movement speed was extremely slow, however, with hundreds of Tanks lining up in a straight horizontal line that was pushing forward, they would basically become unstoppable!

Meanwhile, even though these monsters were not difficult to kill, their numbers were far more abundant than the number of monsters in the previous waves. It was true that the Cerberuses could not pose much threat to the Melee type players like they could to the Spell type players. However, they had the advantage in their numbers. Players might get overthrown by them if Healers could not heal up the players on the frontline. Just imagine this. Tens of Cerberuses biting one poor player at the same time. That player would die very easily!

Furthermore, the Spell type players would have to stay at the rear to prevent themselves from being torn apart by the sharp teeth of the Cerberuses. Because they were basically staying too far from the frontline --- well, it would be pointless for them to run all the way to the frontline as

well. When the Healers are close enough to heal, they would be entering the effective range of the monsters' {Mana Incineration} and {Spell Rebound}. Not only would they not be able to heal, they would take tremendous amount of damage as well!

Not everyone is built from metal. Even if the player only receives 1 Damage each time they are hit, the HP of the player would deplete sooner or later without receiving any healing.

Under the concentrated attacks of the monsters, countless players were dying one after another. Even the Tanks were beginning to get destroyed, one after another. The players on board could not even get their legs to run before the Cerberuses tore them to bits and left them to die. Many players were forced to activate their Inheritance Transformations so that they could simply survive.

Based on everyone's knowledge, Inheritance Transformations should be retained until the final boss Demon Commander Isles arrives. Those who use their Inheritance Transformations now would become useless for the final battle! However, the situation was so dangerous that they had to activate their Inheritance Transformations to prevent themselves from dying. Upon seeing the endless attacks from the Cerberuses coming at them, they had no reason to retain their Inheritance Transformations anymore. Well, it was obvious that they would not have time to save or resurrect anyone on the battlefield currently. It would be a waste to not activate their Inheritance Transformations.

Players began to retreat back to the castle walls. They were relying on the NPC archers to provide them fire support. Some of them even used the NPCs as their human shields to tank against the attacks of the monsters. Well, since that they would be retreating back to the Main City after this wave, they might as well utilize the NPCs to aid them in battle. Without the players staying behind to support them, the NPCs would definitely be wiped out clean when the ninth wave arrives! They would not be able to block or delay the monsters by the ninth wave at all. Therefore, it would be wise for the players to use the NPCs to their own advantage to increase the survival of the players.

This was the worst battle so far. Countless players were dead. The number of remaining players was reduced from 12,000,000 to only 2,000,000. The losses were too great to be imagined!

The only good news out of the battle was that the players finally managed to wipe out the entire wave of the monsters.

However, even worst news came in later after the battle was over. The total remaining players by the East Gate, West Gate and South Gate that survived the onslaught of the Cerberuses was only 140,000!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, "We're retreating back to the Main City now! We'll defend from there!"

"Roger!"

Well, the monsters would be invading from all 4 directions if they were to stay and defend in this castle. Even if Zhang Yang and his gang survive the onslaught of the ninth wave, the players at the other 3 gates would not survive. By then, the humongous demonic army would gush into the Main City immediately!

The system would decide whether a Main City falls or stands based on whether the king or queen of the Main City is still alive. But China Region was special. All eight Main Cities had been united by Queen Serena. Therefore, other than the White Jade Castle, the initial kings of the other 7 Main Cities had been taken over by Barons.

Therefore, it would be pointless even if Zhang Yang and his gang die trying to defend the gate. That would not be the key to claiming victory. The key to claiming victory would be by defending the life of Aimoson, the baron of the castle!

Actually, before Zhang Yang declared to retreat, the other players by the other three gates had made their move to retreat back to the Main City. Looking at the number of players remaining, it would be suicide to place 60,000 players in the castle against the demonic army of the ninth wave.

However, the other 3 gates only had about 140,000 players remaining while the north gate still had over 2,000,000 players remained. The

players could not help but be shocked at the difference in the numbers.

Initially, the number of players were approximately the same on all four sites of the gates. Each gate had over 50,000,000 players. The total Attack power of the players on each site should be similar as well. Therefore, the only thing or person that could cause such difference would be the commander in charge!

Undoubtedly, the combined forces would be commanded by Mountain Mover for the remaining waves of the demonic invasion.

Actually, the commanders on the other sites were not up to standard, to be honest. They only managed to keep 140,000 players by the end of the eighth wave. So they had no authority whatsoever to voice out.

‘Ding! The ninth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!’

Zhang Yang did not immediately get back to the Main City. Instead, he hopped onto his Phoenix pet and took a stroll across the battlefield that they were going to leave behind. Well, he wanted to at least know what they were going to go up against on the ninth wave. That should give them some ideas on how to get themselves ready for the coming wave.

However, he drew in a deep cold breath the moment he laid his eyes across the army that was flying towards the castle. They appeared like a bunch of clouds that covered the entire sky!

--- It was another wave of mother*ckers that knew how to fly!

[Bat Man] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 240

HP: 316,330

Defence: 9,520

Range Attack: 60,900 – 80,900

Skills:

[Fatal Toss]: Causes 100% Ranged Attack in Physical Damage to the target. The target will have an additional 10% chance to receive Critical

Damage upon being hit for the next 5 seconds.

The monsters only had one Skill equipped. That one Skill was enough to cause a hell lot of trouble for all the players.

The only good thing that came out of this was that there was no sign of any Elite Tier monsters. However, it was unfortunate that there was a boss in this wave.

[Bat Man Adeejah] (Holy, Demon)

Level: 240

HP: 2,400,000,000

Defence: 23330

Range Attack: 205,248 – 275,248

Skills:

[Blazing Blasting Toss]: Causes 150% Range Attack of Physical Damage to the target. The target will then explode and cause 200,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the range of 10 meters from the explosion.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuses a Bat Man's soul and recover 10% HP. The fused monster will die immediately.

[Ultrasonic]: Emits out a high frequency ultrasonic and causes 240,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 40 meters.

Note: Adeejah is one of the leaders of the Bat Men. He's renowned for his skills in battle.

Before that, the players on each gate would only need to take on one boss. However, now that everyone was gathered at the Main City, the players had to face 4 bosses at the same time! However, Holy Tier bosses would just be as powerful as Holy Tier bosses should be. Well, the players could only kill the bosses after they clear out the monsters, because of the bosses' {Demonic Fusion}. However, the players could just send 4 of their best Tankers and kite the four bosses away from the monsters. Then, the bosses would no longer be able to bother the players while they focus on wiping out the monsters.

Zhang Yang immediately flew back to the Main City. That would be the last Defence of the players. Not only was the city occupied by all of the players, the place was also filled with Elite Tier NPCs as their defensive forces. Well, it was annoying to think about this. The Crimson Sky City was supposed to be one of the eight Main Cities in China Region, and this place would have a massive army of NPCs to defend the city. However, imminent dangers were just by their doorsteps, there was no sign of any massive army! There were only tens of thousands of NPCs in the castle!

"Even if the officials want the players to handle the battles, they should have at least make up a good story about this. They could just say that the army of the castle has marched into the lair of the demons or something!" Endless Starlight began to whine in misery.

"The worst part about it is that the king of this city used to be an Ascended Tier boss. And now? The baron of this city has become an Elite Tier NPC! Are the officials kidding?"

"You should be happy that the baron has not lost his mind and charged into battle, trying to kill the monsters himself. If the baron does that, we'll definitely lose the battle!"

Everyone was making fun out of their own misery. They began to laugh out loud. Well, they did not pay much hope on surviving the ninth wave anyway. So they did not even pay their minds on defeat the final boss on the tenth wave!

The sky was suddenly darkened. It was like countless dark clouds covering the entire sky above the Crimson Sky City.

Well, those were definitely not dark clouds though. They were all Bat Men! They were descending upon the castle as we speak!

These Bat Man immediately aimed their javelins at the players and threw them at the players. By the end of the javelins, there was a thick metal chain tied to it. With a powerful pull, the javelins immediately returned back to the monsters' hands.

"Stinky monsters! Come down and face me!" Wei Yan Er was a Melee-type player. Even if she had a weapon that could reach 2 meters, she

would not be able to touch any of the monsters that were flying 10 meters above her!

After getting hit by a few javelins, she instantly got infuriated. So she grabbed on to one of the javelins that had embedded itself in her body. With a powerful pull, the Bat Man was instantly pulled right out of the sky by the little brat by force! After that, the little brat ended the life of that Bat Man with one single swing from her axe!

Because the number of the monsters were so abundant, no one was daring enough to risk using their Flying Mounts to fly in the sky. 99% of the players in the current stage of the game would be dead if hundreds of monsters attacked them at the same time in the middle of the sky.

Everyone made their way into the buildings around the area by using the terrain of the surroundings to their advantage. Well, they needed to lose themselves from the aggro of the monsters first before they could plan out their next move.

The battle for the new wave has begun, for real!

Chapter 828: Gate of Hell Activated!

Zhang Yang had contacted Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke, and the others. They sent their own powerful Tankers and Healers over to handle the bosses. Zhang Yang did not contact Eternal Flame at all. Instead, he just sent two of his best Tankers, Endless Starlight and Ten Dusk.

Truth to be told, the bosses were not too difficult to handle. The might of these bosses would only become obvious when standing among players. Well, their AoE Skills were extremely powerful. However, once they are kited away from the players, they would not be able to cause much trouble to anyone. Well, their Attack power would be similar or slightly stronger than the Attack power of an Elite Tier monster.

Using the terrain of the surroundings to restrict the aggro range of the monsters, the players managed to force the Bat Men to descend to the ground, one after another. Well, the monsters had to be on the ground before they could launch a limited number of attacks on the players. It seemed that something good would come from having lesser players around as well. Well, if there are 20,000,000 players in the vicinity, there wouldn't be enough buildings to hide so many players.

However, even if that is the case, it would only reduce the number of casualties of the players by a tiny bit. Their players would not be able to slay the monsters without suffering any casualties. After all, even though the monsters were only coming down to the ground from the sky, it did not mean that they are not able to attack!

1,900,000! 1,800,000! 1,700,000!

The number of surviving players was getting lesser by the second. However, players who managed to stay alive up till this point would be considered as one of the best players in the entire China Region. Their power levels were impressive. As long as each of them could find themselves one Healer to pair up with them, they could definitely take on hundreds of monsters at the same time!

One hour later, the number of surviving players had been steeply

reduced to 240,000!

"Should we activate our Inheritance Transformations now?"

"It's futile! With so many monsters surrounding us, it will not help us much, even after we activate our Inheritance Transformations!" Zhang Yang shook his head.

"How about using a Forbidden Scroll?"

Zhang Yang shook his head as well, then he said, "We still have one wave left after this! Furthermore, we only have 2 Forbidden Scrolls that can deal AoE damage. It's still too early to use them now!"

"But we're outnumbered now! We're about to lose!"

"Just a little longer! I'm activating my {Gate of Hell}!" Zhang Yang said. Then, he assigned the enhancement effect of his [Book of Revelation] on his {Gate of Hell}. Well, he would have to wait for 24 hours before he could assign that enhancement effect on his other Skills after that.

He threw his 'Gate of Hell' in one of the buildings and said, "Protect the 'Gate of Hell' from getting destroyed by the monsters!"

"You can count on me!" Fatty Han thumped his chest and voiced out in confidence. "I'll definitely protect the gate like the wives of my brothers!"

Zhang Yang charged out of the building and instantly became the target of the monsters in the sky and on the ground.

{God of War Shield} activated!

'-O!'

'-O!'

'-O!'

Countless javelins were thrown at Zhang Yang. However, none of them were able to deal a single damage to Zhang Yang! Upon activating his {God of War Shield}, the monsters would need to deal at least 95,000 damage before they could penetrate his basic Defence. Unfortunately, each of these monsters only could deal a maximum damage of 80,000 to

their targets. They would have no definite way of penetrating Zhang Yang's basic Defence.

However, {Fatal Toss} would afflict players with a negative effect - an additional 10% rate of receiving a Critical Hit. Once the players receive a Critical Hit, even a Minimum Attack of 120,000 damage would be enough to penetrate Zhang Yang's Defence.

Although the 10% rate seemed to be insignificant, there were hundreds of monsters launching their attacks at Zhang Yang at the moment. Because of that, every single hit with additional 10% Critical Rate would cause quite a tremendous amount of damage to Zhang Yang. Therefore, he has to hustle up and get the job done.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Zhang Yang dealt over a million damage to each of the monsters within the effective area of his Attack range. The remaining Bat Men were instantly killed and their souls were sucked into the 'Gate of Hell'. Instantly, tens of Elite Demons charged right out of the gate and joined into the battle to aid Zhang Yang!

Let eh slaughtering begin!

In order for the AoE attacks to cover the most area of the battlefield, Zhang Yang did not hop onto the Phoenix pet. Instead, he stayed on the ground, unleashing his {Thunder Strike} and his {Blast Wave}. He was spamming his Skills the moment the cooldowns were over with the intention of killing as many monsters as he could during the effective period of the 'Gate of Hell'.

10! 20! 100! 1,000!

The surroundings of the building where Zhang Yang stood beside has become the breeding ground of the demons! Although they were from the same root as the Bat Men, they were currently Zhang Yang's minions. Therefore, the demons were battling the Bat Men without showing them any quarter! However, the demons were Elite Tier, after all. So when their number reaches a certain level, they would become a deadly force that are not to be reckoned with.

Well, each of these Level 140 summoned demons had over 120,000,000 HP. Their current HP amount was as abundant as the HP amount of Sun Xin Yu after she activates her Inheritance Transformation. Each of their HP amount could be compared to the Maximum HP of each Model 4.0 Tank! Even if they were focus-fired by 100 monsters at the same instant, the demons could tank against the monsters' focused fire for more than 10 times!

Meanwhile, these 1,000 demons had reached the numbers where they were powerful enough to oppress the monsters in the vicinity!

Instantly, countless Bat Men were charging towards the 'Gate of Hell'. They were targeting the gate as their priority target, like moths trying to charge into the flames like their lives no longer mattered! It seemed that they were ready to sacrifice millions of monsters just to take down one of Zhang Yang's demon!

However, summoning the demons did not cost Zhang Yang a single dime. Meanwhile, because the demons could not leave the 'Gate of Hell' further than 1,000 meters, letting the moths get drawn to the flame would be a good thing. Actually, Zhang Yang was worried that he might not get a spot to stand within that area, when there are too many demons being summoned into the vicinity! So be it! Let the monsters come and kill one or two of his demons. Well, he could have killed the monsters much faster than the rate of demons being summoned to the battlefield. The number of his demons would only increase! It was constantly increasing from 2,000 to 5,000! Then from 5,000 to 30,000!

The number of the demons was still rising!

Everyone within the vicinity was stunned to witness what was going on! This Skill looked like a bug to them! With the ability to summon that amount of minions, Zhang Yang could have become capable of defeating a Celestial boss by the looks of it!

Unfortunately, that Skill only worked on the dumb monsters. Players could have just sent their Thieves in stealth mode and get the 'Gate of Hell' destroyed without a problem. However, looking at the tens of

thousands of demons summoned from the gate, no one could deny that the Skill was indeed an oppressive existence in the game!

However, Zhang Yang had finally got the chance to verify a question he had long had in mind. He noticed that the gate could only summon 50,000 demons at its maximum. After that, even though when there were many more souls were sucked into the gate, no additional demon was coming out.

Well, do bear in mind that there was currently a total of 50,000 demons in the battlefield right now. They were all slaughtering the monsters for Zhang Yang and the players. Moreover, each of their HP amount was as abundant as the HP amount of a Model 4.0 Tank. They could serve as extremely powerful meat shields even if they could not attack!

Under the protection of the massive army of demons, the players quickly took the opportunity to strike back as hard as they could. They were slaughtering the monsters up hard in order to win the battle. Bit by bit, the players seemed to gain the upper hand over the monsters.

1 hour! 2 hours!

Finally, all of the Bat Men were wiped out! There were only 4 Holy Tier bosses remaining on the battlefield.

Without having any monsters left for them to recover their HPs, the four bosses were like venomous snakes who have just lost their poisonous deadly fangs. Without their deadliest weapons, they were defeated within a short period of time. Upon their death, they dropped an abundant amount of loot across the ground. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang and his other gang members were only able to snatch 7 of those [Lesser Demonic Pearls]. However, Eternal Flame was enraged, because three of the [Demonic Pearls] that Zhang Yang and his gang managed to snatch were the pearls that were dropped by the boss they were hitting.

However, the boss they hit would not necessarily be the boss they slay. Truth to be told, all of the players on the battlefield had contributed in such regard. Anyone on the battlefield would have been entitled to grab the loot! There was no saying that the loot belonged to someone

specifically. Furthermore, the players were able to survive so long, because Zhang Yang had activated his {Gate of Hell}. Without the 50,000 demons tanking the monsters' attack, the players would have been wiped out entirely, within minutes! Slaying the bosses would only remain as a pipe dream!

Before the tenth wave of the demonic invasion could start, Zhang Yang quickly gathered Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke and the other guildmasters from large guilds to come up with a tactical plan. So he said, "Everyone, listen up! The last wave of the demons are about to come! So it's not a good time to keep your tricks and secret weapons up in your sleeves anymore! You can just show me everything you've got now!"

Everyone kept silent. Therefore, Zhang Yang took out two Forbidden Scrolls and said, "These are two very powerful AoE Forbidden Scrolls. They're called the 'Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse' and the 'Reaper's Descent'!"

The guildmasters widened their eyes. Although a Forbidden Scroll was extremely powerful, the chance of coming across one would be extremely low to the point that it's pathetic! It seemed that Zhang Yang was willing to use two precious scrolls just to get through the war!

"Crimson Rage only has one at the moment!" Snow Seeker took out one Forbidden Scroll and passed it to Zhang Yang.

[Forbidden Scroll: Virulent Plague] (Consumable)

Use: Activates a plague across the battlefield. Causes a tremendous amount of damage to all enemy targets within the range of 10 kilometers. The targets will lose 10% HP in each passing second. If the HP of the target does not exceed 150,000 HP, then the target will lose a minimum amount of 150,000 HP. However, if the target has more than 300,000 HP, the target will lose a maximum amount of 300,000 HP. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Required: 200

"We, Imperial Sky will contribute one Forbidden Scroll as well!" One Sword Stroke took out a scroll and passed it to Zhang Yang as well.

"We, Rolling Rocks will contribute one Forbidden Scroll as well!"

"We, Sunset Amber will contribute one Forbidden Scroll as well!"

...

After making some calculations, the guildmasters managed to gather a total of 10 Forbidden Scrolls. Judging by that, everyone was able to see how 'resourceful' each guild was. Although Eternal Flame was deemed to be one of the four most powerful guilds in the entire China Region, they were not able to provide even one Forbidden Scroll. Because of that, Zhong Xiu Hua felt so embarrassed that he could not even show his face in front of the other guildmasters.

"Very good, if the monsters in the tenth wave are only Normal Tier monsters, we, Lone Desert Smoke, will use the first Forbidden Scroll on the approaching monsters. Then, the rest of you should decide who will be using their Forbidden Scrolls after us. If it's necessary, I'll use a second Forbidden Scroll!"

Although everyone was not willing to use their Forbidden Scrolls, who would be so shameless to let Zhang Yang use a second Forbidden Scroll, then? That would only make them look weak!

Upon rolling to decide the sequence of using the Forbidden Scrolls on the upcoming wave of the war, Zhang Yang said, "If the final wave has an army of Elite Tier monsters, then we shall throw all 10 scrolls out at the same time!"

"That'll be the only way, it seems..."

"Let's hope it won't come to that!"

"We'll let the gods decide!"

Fortunately, the summoned demons could survive up to 4 hours. Although the Gate of Hell had vanished, to 40,000+ demons would still stick around for another 2 hours plus. They would be able to tank the attacks of the monsters in the tenth wave for the players, even if just for a bit.

'Ding! The tenth wave of the demonic invasion is about to begin!'

Players with Flying Mounts began to launch themselves up into the sky. They extended their sights far out at the horizon.

A loud and clear horn sound was heard. A large army of demons marched right up to the horizon. That would be the final wave of the demon army, the Death Emissaries!

[Death Emissary] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 245

HP: 12,250,000,000

Defence: 14,810

Melee Attack: 103,759 – 163,759

Skills:

[Death Strike]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. There is a 1% chance to cause a fatal wound to the target, causing the target to lose 50% of his HP (Maximum HP lost will not exceed 500,000HP)

Note: Death Emissaries are the special guards of the Demon Commander Isles. They are extremely powerful.

Chapter 829: Annihilation!

The worst part about these monsters was not because they were Elite Tier, or because of their HP amount or their Attack power. It was their level!

Level 245!

Currently, there were only a few, maybe only more than 10 players who have managed to reach Level 215! Other than those players, the remaining players would be affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game while they battle Level 245 monsters! Initially, there were only approximately 240,000 players remaining to fend off the last wave of the monsters. There would be tens of millions of monsters charging at them. Now that they would be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression of the game, it seemed that the players were going to be slaughtered, big time!

Meanwhile, the only good news about the current battle was that there would only be one wave of the monsters left. Previously, they had to engage 9 waves of endless hordes with merely enough time to get ready before the next wave comes. It would take more than just an hour to battle each of the waves! A while later, the system had finally revealed the number of players and the number of monsters to everyone.

238,793 VS 100,000

Thud! Thud! Thud!

The demonic army was surrounding the players from all directions. The broken walls of the city were no longer capable of stopping the advancement of those demons. Each of the demons was approximately 5 meters tall. They were red demons which held heavy swords in their hands. Well, here goes. The final battle has begun!

"Wait! Just wait! Just wait for a little longer!" Zhang Yang stopped the other guildmasters from opening up their Forbidden Scrolls. Although the effects of the Forbidden Scrolls could reach out to a range of 5-kilometer radius, the monsters were still very far away from the frontline. They would not be able to spread the effect of the Forbidden Scrolls to the

demonic army completely.

The monsters were gushing into the main city like an unstoppable tidal wave. They were making their way towards the baron's castle. The approaching footsteps made the players even more nervous by the seconds!

The summoned demons immediately engaged in battle with the demonic army. Although the level of the summoned demons was 5 levels lower than the level of the monsters, however, they were still on the same level as the Level 240 monsters. Therefore, the power level on both sides was almost at the similar level. The only difference between the two sides was that the number of monsters was much more abundant than the summoned demons, though their abundant numbers would pretty much, not be able to overwhelm the summoned demons. The situation of the battle was totally one-sided. Many summoned demons were slain within 5 minutes!

"Now's the time!"

Zhang Yang descended to the ground and nodded at Snow Seeker and the other guildmasters. Then he said, "Let's begin!"

He tore his scroll before the others. [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] activated!

The scroll was initially dropped by the Ascended Tier boss Mathuven. Because Mathuven was only a Level 185 boss, the effect of the Forbidden Scroll was quite limited in terms of 'impact'. In other words, the impact and effects of the scroll were weaker. Although all Forbidden Scroll could reduce 10% HP of all targets every passing second, they would still have a limited boundary. For instance, the [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse] could only deal 50,000 damage at least, and 200,000 damage at most.

However, he also had the other Forbidden Scroll 'Reaper's Descent', dropped by the Celestial boss Angus, which is able to deal a minimum damage of 150,000 and a maximum damage of 300,000! After tearing his [Forbidden Scroll: Eclipse], Zhang Yang tore his [Forbidden Scroll: Reaper's Descent] as well.

Snow Seekers and the other quickly followed what he did. They also tore

their Forbidden Scrolls! It did not take long before all 10 Forbidden Scroll Effects started to take effect at the same time!

Instantly, the sky was shrouded in dark clouds and rumbling thunders. The lightning bolts were flashing violently as the entire area became bizarrely unfamiliar! Moonlight, frosty snows, boiling rocks had messed up the scenery of the entire area! Everything just went to hell all of a sudden!

The Forbidden Scrolls were destructive as f*ck, indeed. They could cause so much destruction to all targets within the area of 5-kilometer radius, reducing 10% HP of all targets in each second, bypassing their Defence! Furthermore, the effects would last for 30 seconds! No Skill could ever match those effects! However, the weakness of these effects were actually obvious. Their maximum damage and minimum damage were limited. Even with the current strongest Forbidden Scroll, the user could only deal a maximum damage of 300,000 to all targets every second. In 30 seconds, the strongest scroll could deal a total of 9,000,000 maximum damage to each target within its effective range. An Elite Tier monster with 100,000,000 HP would not feel that much!

However, even though one Forbidden Scroll cannot deal much damage to Elite Tier monsters, having 10 Forbidden Scrolls activated at the same time would definitely cause a horrific amount of damage!

Although the Maximum and Minimum damage each Forbidden Scroll differed, 10 scrolls could still deal a total damage of 2,550,000 in each passing second!

That was an extremely horrifying amount of damage for the players to look at. Those scrolls did not just cause that amount of damage to one Elite Tier monster but 10,000 of them! Upon hearing countless screams from the monsters, every single one of the demonic army had lost over 76,500,000 HP over the past 30 seconds!

Each Death Emissary only had a total of 122,500,000 HP after all. They had lost over half of their HP over a short period of time! If the players could spare 5 to 6 more Forbidden Scrolls to give those monsters hell one

more time, those monsters would have been completely wiped out!

Unfortunately, the players had run out of Forbidden Scrolls.

Meanwhile, the innocent ones were caught in between the crossfire as well --- Zhang Yang's army of summoned demons!

Although they seemed to be Zhang Yang's underlings, they would only be treated as mercenaries in the game. For the other players, they were just Yellow-named monsters that appeared to be neutral. Even though they would not attack the players automatically, they would be attacked by the players' AoE attacks.

Other than Zhang Yang's two Forbidden Scrolls, the scrolls that the others unleashed had caused a tremendous amount of damage to them. Fortunately, the Forbidden Scrolls would not get the aggro of the monsters to the players who used them. Or else, Snow Seekers and the other guildmasters would have become the targets of the massive army of Elite Tier monsters!

Although the demonic army was heavily wounded, the players would have to finish the job.

"You degrading species! Submit to us and tremble underneath the feet of our master, our king!"

The Death Emissaries were slashing their weapons around while they were shouting. They were shouting as if they were singing a battle song in an attempt to raise their morale and dignity!

"Kill!"

The players were not willing to show any sign of weakness. They were so into the battle, as if they were willing to throw in their dowries and the expenses for their own coffins! If they could not fend off the final wave of the war, everything that they have done for the past 9 waves would have been for nothing! Although the number of Elite Tier monsters had reached up to 10,000 in the final wave, the monsters were all close to death already. They only had approximately 37% HP remaining, on each of them! That would be equal to only approximately 37,000 full HP bar monsters

on the battlefield!

Well, time was crucial, and none of the players had the intention to keep anything else up their own sleeves. So they began to activate their Inheritance Transformations.

The slaughtering continued on!

After activating their Inheritance Transformations, the players had gotten a great boost in their HP and their Attack power. Unfortunately, many players had not reached Level 215 yet. The b*tchy Level Gap Suppression effect had caused them to deal much lower damage than they theoretically could. Meanwhile, the damage they received from the monsters had increased tremendously.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "Fatty, Hundred Shots, let's activate the Transformation Skills of our pet as well! Let the others reserve their Inheritance Transformations for the moment. We'll be battling the boss soon!"

"Roger!"

Two Phoenixes and one Red Dragon activated their Transformation Skills. The three pets received a tremendous boost in their sizes. Upon roaring out loud, the three legendary pets picked up Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots before they soared into the sky. After that, they charged into the battlefield to start slaughtering the monsters!

Well, these three legendary pets' normal attacks were basically AoE attacks. Victory would depend on them now.

The three legendary pets had begun to spit their flames towards the monsters as they were still flying in the sky. The range of their attacks had been increased from 15 meters to 30 meters after they activate their Transformation Skills. Even though the pets were dealing Melee Attacks on their targets, they had already spat out their attacks at their targets while they were still in the sky. Even though it seemed safe for them to do so, that had also greatly reduced the attack coverage of the pets!

Zhang Yang was the first to land on the ground. Without showing any

mercy at all, Zhang Yang's Phoenix pet had caused 700,000 Fire Damage to all monsters within a conical area of 30-meter. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots landed right after Zhang Yang. Commanding their pets to attack as aggressively as possible, the projectiles crossed paths.

Injuring all of a man's fingers is not as effective as chopping off one. Even though the 10,000 Elite Tier monsters were heavily wounded earlier on, their Attack power was not affected as long as they are not dead. Therefore, Zhang Yang and his two brother-in-arms had commanded their pets to focus their attacks on a smaller part of the monsters as aggressively as they could.

Right behind them was the bunch of summoned demons of 30,000. They were protecting Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots's back to prevent the three of them from getting flanked by the monsters.

The initial HP of each pet had reached over 3,330,000 HP. With {Vitality Aura} and Transformation Skills in effect currently, the HP for each of them had reached over 90,000,000 HP now! The three of them were not standing next to each other, though. Because of that, they had managed to reduce the stacking of AoE attacks that come at them. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue and the other Healers were maintaining the HP bars of the others while staying in the middle of the sky. Although the rate of losing HP was faster than the rate of healing, Zhang Yang and the two brothers-in-arms would still be able to hang on for another 1 to 2 minutes against the monsters. Well, they could just get into the sky to avoid being attacked by the monsters. After getting healed back to their full HP, they could just get back into the battle to get the job done!

In just 40 seconds, Zhang Yang and the gang managed to kill over 200 monsters with the deadly attacks of the pets. However, killing the 200 monsters was like taking out a spoon of water from a pot, the missing part of the water was instantly filled back by the surrounding water.

Zhang Yang threw his {Surrogacy} onto Hundred Shots, sharing the same amount of Defence power he had with Hundred Shots. By doing so, Hundred Shots should be able to hold on for a little longer than he can in the first place.

A while later, Fatty Han flew up to the sky. Well, his HP was no longer in the safe zone. He had to get into the sky to get healed up.

Because Hundred Shots currently had the same amount of Defence as Zhang Yang, he managed to hang on in the battle much longer than Fatty Han could. He managed to hold on for over 3 minutes before he was forced to fly up into the sky. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang managed to hold on for over 8 minutes because he activated his {God of War Radiance} to fully recover his HP bar once.

The three legendary pets were attacking the monsters with insanely powerful Attack power. Averagely, the pets could kill 5 monsters each second. Theoretically speaking, the pets would be able to kill over 36,000 monsters within the entire duration of their Transformation Skills. Therefore, the players would have to be responsible for wiping out the remaining 64,000 monsters, then.

Fortunately, the players had the support of Zhang Yang's army of summoned demons.

The 30,000 demons were not as many as the number of monsters on the demonic army side, however, because they had received lesser damage because they were not affected by the effective power of two Forbidden Scrolls. In other words, the summoned demons would have an additional 15,000,000 HP. Furthermore, there were quite a number of buildings within the interior area of the main city. The summoned demons were not able to leave further than 1,000 meters from the gate. Although Zhang Yang could not command the summoned demons at will, the demons had formed a formation where they were standing extremely close to each another. By doing so, they should be able to make up for the shortage in numbers.

Because most of the players were affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game, the Attack power of the summoned demons had become one of the main Attack power sources. Meanwhile, the battle must be concluded within 2 hours. Or else, when the summoned demons are forced to go back to hell, the players would have to raise their hands up and surrender.

The battle was worsening in every passing second!

Although the players had the summoned demons to shield them from most of the harm, however, the AoE attacks of the players would hurt the demons as well! By the end of it, the players who indirectly attack the demons too much would earn the aggro of the demons. By then, those players would be hunted by the summoned demons and get killed by them instead!

The casualties of the Death Emissaries were extremely high. However, the players were suffering even more casualties. The effect of the Level Gap Suppression had made the players vulnerable to getting beaten up by the Ascended Tier boss! Their numbers were reducing steeply by the seconds!

150,000 VS 90,000!

120,000 VS 70,000!

90,000 VS 50,000!

20,000 VS 30,000!

5,000 VS 10,000!

67 VS 102!

Two hours later, only 67 players remained on the battlefield. Meanwhile, the summoned demons had also suffered a high number of casualties! For the demons that survived, it was mainly because they had run out of range and were teleported back to the location of the gate. Fortunately, there were only 102 Death Emissaries remaining on the battlefield. Not to mention, they were barely alive!

However, just as the situation seemed to take a turn for the best ---

‘Ding! Demon Commander Isles has joined the battle!’

Chapter 830: Demon Commander Isles

Right in the middle of the sky, a gigantic four-winged demonic bat was flapping its four wings as it was making its way down to the battlefield. There was a demon with a gigantic axe riding on the back of the weird and bizarre looking bat. The demon had a pair of horns on its head, a pair of wings on its back and a long powerful tail trailing behind his back.

[The Demon Commander Isles] (Ascended, Demon)

Level: 245

HP: 12,250,000,000

Defence: 37,330

Attack Power: 370,948 – 450,948

Skills:

[Sky Slicer]: Consecutively slashes the target, dealing 100% Basic Melee Attack. The monster will gain 100% additional damage for every passing second after that. Lasts for 10 seconds. Can be interrupted.

[Storm Blades]: Afflict all targets within the range of 300 meters with {Force Strike}, causing 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to all targets. Lasts for 30 seconds

[Demonic Domain]: Putrefies an area of 10X10 meters. All players who stay in the area for more than 3 seconds will be controlled by the boss until the battle ends or when the players are killed. The amount of damage dealt by the controlled players will all turn into Isles's HP.

[Star Fall]: Summons meteors and sends them down on an area of 10 X 10 meters, causing 450,000 Fire Damage to all targets within that area.

[Demonic Fusion]: Fuses with any demon's soul and recovers 10% HP. Meanwhile, the fused demon will die immediately.

[Despairing Point]: Imprisons one player. The player will not be able to move at all. However, the player will not receive any damage as well.

[No Escape]: Players will acquire this Negative Effect the moment they

get 300 meters close to Isles. Players with this effect will die instantly regardless of HP remaining the moment the players get more than 300 meters away from the boss.

Note: Isles is the powerful commander of Demon Lord Kenzack. He's renowned for his bravery and his thirst for battle. He has no fear of death!

"Doesn't he has his own wings? Why can't he just fly on his own, then? Why does he want to ride on the back of a poor ugly bat?" Wei Yan Er had always had a different ways of seeing things as they were.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "He's just like someone I know. Well, she has two legs but she just wants to ride on her mount, though!"

"Humph! What a douchebag! I shall chop his head off for being such a douche!" Wei Yan Er began to act for justice.

The moment the Transformation Skills of the Phoenixes were over, Zhang Yang quickly activated his Inheritance Transformation. Two translucent wings appeared on his back. After flapping those radiating wings, he flew straight at Isles and said, "I'll delay the boss while you guys take out the remaining monsters as soon as you can!"

The HP bar of Isle was just too freaking long. One successful fusion with a demon's soul would heal Isles by over 1,200,000,000 HP! That would be insane!

"Roger!"

Currently, there were only 67 players remaining on the battlefield. It was really pathetic somehow... Meanwhile, the NPC soldiers were wiped out entirely. As for the baron of the city, he was holed up in the deepest part of the city like a coward. In other words, there were only 67 players left to take on the boss now!

The Graveyard had been shifted to another place, momentarily. The Teleportation Circle of the city was currently on lockdown. Meanwhile, the system had forbidden anyone to enter or leave the Crimson Sky City as well. The players would not be able to get any sort of reinforcements, now. Meanwhile, the situation had only turned worst. Right after Isles's roar,

the remaining monsters began to crowd around to him. Because of that, everyone had entered the attack range of the boss.

Although the boss would only use his {Sky Slicer} on the main Tank, the other Skills of the boss such as {Storm Blades}, {Demonic Domain} and {Star Fall} could potentially reach 300 meters. That being said, everyone left in the vicinity would need to take the aggressive attacks of the boss head-on!

Players who had not activated their Inheritance Transformations quickly activated theirs without even a single hesitation. Meanwhile, the players who had already activated their Inheritance Transformations and the duration of the transformation had ended, quickly took out their Tanks. After getting on board of the Tanks, they turned themselves into one single unit to tank against the insane attacks of the boss.

Because of the {Demonic Fusion}, everyone focused their attacks on the monsters first.

Well, the remaining 67 players were definitely the elites among the elites in the entire China Region. There was no longer anyone in China Region who would be more powerful than they are. Even though most of them were afflicted by the effect of the Level Gap Suppression, their Attack power was still powerful as f*ck!

"Nothing shall stand in our way! Nothing!" Isles let out a thunderous roar as he raised his axe high up. With powerful swing straight down onto Zhang Yang, the boss activated one of his deadly Skills immediately!

{Sky Slicer}!

That was an extremely power Skill that consecutively slashes the target at a very high pace! The first slash would only deal 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage. However, each consecutive slash would gain another additional 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage. By the end of it, the boss would be able to deal a damage 10 times stronger than the damage of his first slash. Isles's average Basic Attack ranged around 410,000 damage. So, if the {Sky Slicer} reaches its tenth strike, that one strike would have dealt over a basic damage of 4,100,000! That would be horrific

for any player to take it head on!

Zhang Yang could not afford to let the boss succeed in doing so. Without a single delay, he activated his {Crash Magic}. The boss got interrupted right after he performed his first strike. Therefore, the onslaught of {Sky Slicer} was stopped right after that one hit. That one hit could only be treated as a normal attack from the boss.

"Hahaha! Do you really think that would save you pitiful humans from the inevitable?" Isles laughed madly. Then he took up his axe and began whirling his axe around.

{Storm Blades}!

Instantly, countless axe blades that were formed from light began to flash across the area of 300-meter radius! Each attack had caused an average damage of 410,000 to the players! Well, among the 67 players, only about 10 of them had managed to reach Level 215 at the moment. Due to the effect of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game, the players were forced to receive much more damage than they should be receiving in the first place. On average, some of them even received a minimum damage of 820,000, while some of them received a maximum damage of 2,100,000!

Worse still, the boss did not just turn one round and stop there. He was continuously spinning with his sharp axe held out for over 30 seconds! Those 30 seconds was enough for the boss to deal a minimum damage of 12,000,000 and a maximum damage of 63,000,000 to each of the players!

So, how were the players holding up then?

The remaining Healers had busted their *sses in healing everyone up. However, after that one wave of the boss's {Storm Blade}, everyone was hurt so badly that they only had less than 50% HP remaining, even though they were tanking the boss's attacks in their transformed mode! As for those who did not have Inheritance Transformations, they managed to survive the attack by staying on board the Tanks.

Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all. He immediately took out another

Forbidden Scroll, tore it off and threw it at the boss.

[Forbidden Scroll: Stuttering Focus] (Consumable)

Use: Causes the target to lose focus. There is a 10% rate that the target will become dejected once every 3 seconds. During the dejected period, the target will not be able to move at all. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effect of this magic can last for 10 hours or until the target dies. Cannot be removed.

Required Level: 200

Well, Zhang Yang did not purposely hide the existence of this scroll from the others. The scroll could only affect one single unit. There was no way that the effect of the scroll could affect a large number of monsters.

A Forbidden Scroll will forever stay a Forbidden Scroll. The effects of those god damn scrolls would not be resisted by the bosses like how the effect of {Glare of the Death God} would be. Therefore, the effects of the scroll took a solid hold of the boss. Instantly, a white skull formed right on top of the boss. That skull was the indication, saying that the boss had been afflicted by the effect of the scroll!

Theoretically speaking, 'Stuttering Focus' could basically cause the boss to lose his battle power once every 30 seconds. Averagely, the damage that the boss could deal would be reduced by one-third of its initial capability to deal damage. However, that was not how you calculate the amount of damage dealt of the boss. Because, if {Storm Blades} is interrupted during its period of activation, the Skill would be completely stopped.

Therefore, even though the boss's damage seemed to be weakened by one-third of its initial amount, but in truth, the reduction could reach over 40%!

Because of that, the players stood a solid chance now.

However, an increase in the chances of survival for a player does not mean that the player has become invincible. Even if the boss's AoE attacks had been reduced by 50%, the boss's {Storm Blade} could still deal approximately 6,000,000 damage to each player. The boss would use that

Skill once every 60 seconds, dealing a DPS of 100,000 damage. Combining his attacks with the attacks of the monsters, the boss and the monsters could still bring a tremendous amount of stress to the Healers!

Zhang Yang threw another Forbidden Scroll out willingly, without thinking of the cost any further. Well, his main purpose was to take out the boss, after all. Upon doing so, he quickly said, "Everyone! Join my party now!"

Up till this point, everyone already knew that Zhang Yang had a very powerful {Vitality Aura}. Meanwhile, the other guilds also had players who had Aura Skills on them. For instance, Snow Seeker and the others also had their own Aura Skills. However, their Aura Skills had their ups and downs. Some of their Aura Skills were not fully enhanced yet.

Well, Aura Skills would only be effective on the user's party members. Here was the crucial moment. Everyone should unleash their full potential in order to claim victory over the war, now! After all, everyone in China Region would receive over a 10% reduction on their Experience Bars if they ever lose the Crimson Sky City! That would be awful for everyone!

Everyone would be sharing the same fate by the end of the war!

Zhang Yang passed the party member recruitment authority to Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang. The intention was to speed up the process of recruiting the players into his party. Not only could he share the Beneficial Effect of his {Vitality Aura} with the other players, Zhang Yang would also be able to unite all Healers and get all players to unleash their full potential.

After recruiting the players into his party, everyone gained quite a number of Beneficial Effects all of a sudden. It was really a surprise that there were so many Aura Skills among the remaining players who just joined into Zhang Yang's party. However, Aura Skills such as {Vitality Aura} and {Life Aura} were needed much more than the others, because these Aura Skills would increase the survivability of the players on the battlefield. They would be perfect for the players under such circumstance.

However, even though Zhang Yang had used over a couple of his Forbidden Scrolls and shared his {Vitality Aura}, the boss and the monsters were still able to cause catastrophic damage to the players. The number of players remaining on the battlefield continued to fall gradually. When the last monster was taken out, only 19 players survived!

Among the surviving players, 5 of them were from Lone Desert Smoke. They were Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream. 2 of them were from Crimson Rage. They were Snow Seeker and Mellow Venom. 2 of them were from the Imperial Sky. They were One Sword Stroke and Absolute Aeonic Dominator. Meanwhile, the other 2 were from the Eternal Flames. They were Scholar Musou and Longrich.

The other remaining players were from the other top Tier guilds such as Rolling Rocks and Sunset Amber.

All of the remaining players shared two similarities. Firstly, they were all Level 215 and above. Secondly, they had at least a Class A Inheritance Transformation active.

Although the Tanks could really boost the survival chance of the players without Inheritance Transformation, the Tanks still had a limited Maximum HP. After the bombardment of the boss's AoE attacks, the Tanks were eventually destroyed one after another. Without the 'protection of the Tanks' those players had to die. Well, some of them had used their Inheritance Transformations earlier on. So, their Inheritance Transformation ended much earlier than Zhang Yang and the other top Tier players. Meanwhile, these players also had to suffer at the hands of the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game. Even though they managed to get some power up from the Aura Skills, they were still too weak to survive the onslaught of the boss.

The boss still had 97% HP remaining. Meanwhile, there were only 19 players left to battle against the boss!

Chapter 831: A Close Call

Well, it was most probably because Isles did not have {Demonic Build} to recover his HP. The players had not lost all hope yet. Well if the boss could recover 1% HP once in every 30 seconds, they players should just kneel down and give up on the boss battle.

The system must have predicted that only a few would be able to survive until the end of the tenth wave. So, they designed the boss to be less threatening than he should have been.

"Mortals, you have only one way out of this! Die before the great demon! Give up on your pointless struggles and become my slaves! Then, I'll let you live!" Isles let out a series of strange and bizarre laughs. Then, he waved his axe and summoned countless meteors upon the players. They were bombarded so violently that they were jumping around up and down in an attempt to dodge the impacts of the meteors.

"You stinky shameless ugly horse! I'll take you out!" Wei Yan Er turned herself into a shroud of dark mist and floated over to the back of Isles. Then, she began slashing the back of the boss with her axe, as aggressively as she could.

The players were practically about Level 215 and they also Class A Inheritance Transformations. However, because of the difference in the Tiers of their equipment, their power level and their healing capability greatly differed. Even though Lone Desert Smoke was greatly affected by the 'Zhang Yang's Incident' earlier on, and they had not been active for the past one month, however, they were able to take out the 4 Ascended Tier bosses in Ambross. By doing that, they were able to acquire quite a number of powerful equipment to power themselves up. Each of them was almost done in collecting a full set of Ascended Tier equipment by now!

More importantly, each of Zhang Yang's gang had a piece of Celestial Tier equipment on them! One piece of Celestial Tier equipment could match the power of two pieces of Ascended Tier equipment combined! That was not a joke!

Therefore, in the aspect of dealing damage to the boss, the four DPS players from Lone Desert Smoke were considered the best among all players! In terms of healing, others could only admire the healing capacity of Han Ying Xue with their jaws dropping.

If Isles only had one Skill - {Storm Blade} on him, with the support of {Life Aura}, the 3 Healers with Inheritance Transformations activated should be able to maintain the HP bars of all remaining players! Unfortunately, {Storm Blade} was not the only Skill that Isles had.

{Demonic Domain} and {Star Fall} of the boss were forcing the players to run around like crazy chickens. Well, especially the {Demonic Domain}, the players would become the underlings of the boss if they ever get careless and set foot in the effective area of that Skill! Because of that, the players had to move around, constantly. Because of that, the Healers could not heal the others at their full capacity.

However, the worst part would still be the boss's {Despairing Point}!

Although the boss was chained down by the aggro system of the game, only the boss's normal attacks and {Sky Slicer} would be landing on Zhang Yang's body. However, the boss's {Despairing Point} was specially designed to take care of the Healers! Even though that Skill would not do any harm to the players, 60 seconds of 'imprisonment' was annoying as f*ck!

The worst part about this Skill was that the Skill could imprison players for over 60 seconds. However, the Skill only had a cooldown of 30 seconds. In simpler words, there would always be two Healers not being able to heal as they should.

Well, that could spell the end of the battle for the players!

The party had no way of preventing their numbers from falling again!

18! 17! 16!

The good news out of it was that the boss had no Skill that would allow him to recover his HP. Under the insanely powerful bombardment of the party, the boss's HP was reducing significantly as well.

Now was the time for everyone to deal as much damage as they could, as if their lives were depending on it. As a matter of fact, their lives were indeed depending on that! Well, fortune favors the bold, after all!

As the most powerful Healer among the entire party, Han Ying Xue had become the primary target of the boss's 'target to imprison'. Because of that, her Healing Efficiency had dropped to third in place. After that, only did the boss switch his target to the other two Healers.

In other words, the boss would only aim the Healer with the highest Healing Efficiency. No matter how good the performance of the first two Healers turn out to be, they would be affected by the boss and become the third in place, making either one of the two Healers be as bad as the performance of the Healer in third place.

Fortunately, the Healers that survived up to this point were not weak at all. Only Han Ying Xue, who had a Class S Inheritance could dominate all other Healers in terms of Healing. The standard of the other two Healers was almost similar. Because of that, the party was able to function like it should be doing so in the first place.

90%, 80%, 70%! On the other hand, the HP bar of the boss continued to drop rapidly.

"How dare you go against the will of the demons!? I shall crush you all into pieces!" Isles would shout the same phrase whenever he is about to use his Ultimate Skill. As expected, after hearing the boss shouting that phrase, he would begin to whirl his weapon in circle in high speed, slicing the players with all those flashing shadows of his blades!

Currently, Zhang Yang no longer had his Inheritance Transformation activated. Furthermore, the Phoenix pet had died as well. So Zhang Yang only had Felice who had transformed herself into her Dragonhawk Form to aid him in battle. Unfortunately, the current Felice only had a full set of Holy Tier equipment on her. She could only deal a DPS of approximately 250,000 damage. Well, her Attack power was still too weak to be compared to Zhang Yang's.

However, a DPS of approximately 250,000 damage was not considered

low either. Felice could still deal over 1,800,000,000 damage to the boss within her 2-hour Transformation period. That would be almost 10% HP of the boss!

14! 11! 10!

Scholar Musou made a grave mistake. He did not manage to get out of the {Demonic Domain}'s effect in time. Instantly, he got controlled by the boss! After that, he began to attack one of the Healers as fiercely as he could!

Initially, the party was already short on Healers to support them. Their HP bars were going up and down around 50%. With Scholar Musou's sudden 'Treachery', the party was hit so hard that they could not recover from the impact immediately. The Healer was instantly killed by Scholar Musou! Well, sh*t happens. By the time everyone reacted and killed Scholar Musou, there were only 8 players left on the party.

The world had just turned into a f*cking sh*tstorm!

Only two Healers remained. One was being 'imprisoned' by the boss at the moment, leaving only one Healer to heal the entire party! Currently, the party had basically lost their support from the Healers!

However, the players managed to realize that the boss had left a way for the players to survive. When there are only two Healers left on the battlefield, the boss's {Despairing Point} would only affect one of them, giving the other Healer an opportunity to heal the party.

Well... that wouldn't make much difference as well!

If Han Ying Xue could focus on healing the party without getting interrupted by the boss's {Despairing Point}, she could just abandon healing some players and focus on healing only Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and herself. She should be able to make sure the four of them stay alive for quite some time. However, the {Despairing Point} would only be used on the Healer with the highest Healing Efficiency on the battlefield! By then, she would become the one who gets 'imprisoned' by the boss, instead of the other Healer.

Zhang Yang began to feel helpless. So he had no choice, but to order Felice to turn herself into the 'Tree of Life'.

All of Felice's Transformations would share the same Global Shared Cooldown. So once she exits her Dragonhawk Form, she would be abandoning her Transformation. By doing so, he could not be able to turn herself into the strongest form of the 'Tree of Life.'. Well, it was an unfortunate thing though. It would mean something, even if she could heal them a little!

Because the boss's {Despairing Point} only works on the players. Even if Felice joins in to heal, the boss's {Despairing Point} would remain the same.

One hour later, the players were barely hanging on. The other Healer had announced that she was out of MP. Meanwhile, the boss's HP had dropped to 20%!

The most difficult time of the boss battle had begun!

"Puny living things, I have no time to expel you one by one! Just die together!" Isles let out a battle cry that was filled with rage. He began whirl in circles like a tornado. After spinning for two rounds, the effect of the 'Stuttering Focus' kicked in and forcefully stopped the boss from moving for 10 seconds! However, 10 seconds later, he began to spin with his axe again. {Storm Blade}!

The boss's Ultimate Skill no longer... had a cooldown now!

"Felice! Just heal you and me! No one else!" Zhang Yang threw his {Surrogacy} onto Sun Xin Yu. As for Han Ying Xue, she was very much safe, thanks to the boss's {Despairing Point}.

"Roger, big brother!" Felice nodded.

Zhang Yang unleashed everything he had on him! {God of War Battle Axe}. {God of War Shield}, {Rock Solid}, {Shield Wall}! Using all those Skills, he managed to maximize his survival throughout the battle. At the same time, he also activated his {Tribulation} to deflect the boss's attacks back at the boss!

"Argh! I'm about to die! Wu wu wu! Cousin sis! Save me!" Wei yan Er had activated all her life-saving Skills once. However, no one in the vicinity was capable of healing her back up. It did not take long before she was chopped into slices by the boss's {Storm Blade}!

Daffodil Daydream, killed in action!

Snow Seeker, killed in action!

Sun Xin Yu, killed in action!

...

Currently, Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were the only two left alive on the battlefield.

However, it would make no difference at all even if Han Ying Xue is killed. Well, she had been suffering the {Despairing Point} all the time. The only time where she could contribute to the battle is during that one moment when she gets free. She could only throw a {Regeneration} on Zhang Yang before she gets 'imprisoned' again.

However, Zhang Yang's Defence was not weak at all!

Firstly, his Defence upon activating his Inheritance Transformation would reach up to 178,100. With the support from his {God of War Shield} he could again another 20% Passive Damage Immunity and 35,956 Damage Absorption. Each attack from the boss could only deal approximately 110,000 damage.

Furthermore, he also had his {God of War Restoration} bestow him a 10-second invincibility effect. Well, his {Rock Solid} had also provided quite a decent increase to both his Defence and Damage Immunity as well. Not to mention, he also had {Shield Wall} and {Block} that could be utilized in the boss battle. From all of the above, Zhang Yang's chances of survival in the boss battle would be terrifyingly high. He was actually able to stay alive by just relying on Han Ying Xue's {Restoration} and Felice's healing.

Well, Zhang Yang still had {Radiance of the God of War}. He could recover over 200,000,000 HP in one brief instant by activating that Skill!

Even though he would survive without much of a problem at the moment, Felice, on the other hand, was barely staying alive! The little lady was not as tough as Zhang Yang, after all. Each of the attacks from the boss's {Storm Blade} could deal up to approximately 420,000 damage. Without her Transformation form to support her, she only had approximately 1,660,000 HP. That would make the situation much more difficult for her. Her margin of error was minimal. Although Han Ying Xue would still be able to throw her {Restoration} at her, that would not really do much for her. In about three to four minutes, Felice's HP bar had hit the bottom. Zhang Yang had no choice, but to send her back into her slot.

"The boss could only deal about 120,000 damage to me in each second. Even without Witchy Snow's healing, I can still use my {Radiance of God of War}. With an additional 200,000,000 HP to spare, I should be able to battle the boss for another 27 minutes. In other words, I will still have a lot of time to deal damage to the boss!"

Zhang Yang was making the calculations quietly in his heart, "The boss only has 18% HP, 2,200,000,000 HP... My DPS is about 1,100,000 damage... So I'll only need about... hmmm... 33 minutes to empty out the boss's HP bar."

"There's a 6 minute window gap. But as long as I can gulp down my Healing Potions as much as I can and as long as witchy snow can keep healing me with her {Restoration} whenever she can, I can definitely last for 30 minutes! By then, I can just use my second {Radiance of God of War} to recover another 200,000,000 HP!"

"So, I'll surely be able to win this battle!"

Zhang Yang let out an insane roar and activated his {Indiscrimination}. There goes the explosive boost of his damage output!

{Killing Cleave}! {God of War Devastation}! {God of War Axe}! {Frost Strike}! {Destructive Smash} {Force Strike}!

With the support of his {Indiscrimination}, his {Killing Cleave} managed to deal over tens of millions of damage to the boss! Meanwhile, Skills that could deal 3 times his initial damage, such as {God of War Devastation}

could now deal over 7,000,000 damage. As for his Skills that dealt double of his initial damage output such as {Horizontal Strike,} they could now reach up to 5,000,000 damage! In merely 10 seconds, Zhang Yang had dealt over 50,000,000 damage to the boss!

Well, that was a solid 5,000,000 DPS! Unfortunately, good things never last long!

10 minutes!

20 minutes!

30 minutes!

As expected, Zhang Yang was able to tank through the 30 minutes with the aid of Han Ying Xue's healing and some Healing Potions. Well, he still had about 70,000 HP left!

{Radiance of the God of War}!

‘+2000000000!’

A terrifying, green numerical value popped right on top of Zhang Yang's head! Then, Zhang Yang was at his full HP again! Meanwhile, the boss only had 1.7% HP left!

Finally! Zhang Yang is about to kill the boss!

Chapter 832: Sky Slicer

With 200,000,000 HP left on him, Zhang Yang began to engage Isles, who still had 200,000,000 HP remaining. However, the Attack power of both sides was not on the same notch after all. It did not take much before Zhang Yang destroyed the boss, entirely!

"Rawgh ---" Isles let out a miserable scream and collapsed to the ground. Numerous loots were dropped across the ground.

'Ding! The Demonic Commander Isles has been eliminated!'

'Ding! You've acquired 3 additional Skill Points!'

'Server Announcement: Congratulations to China Region for successfully fending off the Demonic Invasion!'

"Yeah! We're rich!" Naturally, Han Ying Xue was freed from the 'prison' the moment the boss died. In the face of the glittering pile of loots across the ground, Han Ying Xue's eyes began to glitter as well! Well, here she goes again... she had just entered her money-grubbing mode again.

"Stop dreaming and pick up the loot now!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud and quickly started picking up the loots from group.

The battle was over. All of the Teleportation Circles had resumed their regular functionality. Meanwhile, the dead body of the boss was right in the middle of the main city. It would only take approximately 3 to 5 minutes for the players to reach all the way back to the boss's dead body. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had no time at all to take a closer look at the loot! So, it would be wise for them to pick all the loot up as quickly as they can.

Of course, when the two of them picked up the loots from the ground, the others had arrived at the scene, one after another. However, they arrived only after Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had already swept the entire ground clean! So, those players could only sigh at the boss's dead body.

--- Main City forbids any form of PvP match!

"Zhang Yang! You're not the only one who contributed in taking down the boss! Share the loots! We're entitled to them as well!" Zhong Xiu Hua suddenly cried like a little b*tch.

"That's right, we're entitled to the loots as well!"

"Without us, you wouldn't have had any chance against the boss at all!"

The people of Eternal Flame began to whine like a whole bunch of little b*tches. Well, no one could blame them for behaving that way. The Ascended Tier equipment was currently extremely precious. It was not like anyone could just obtain the Ascended Tier equipment by purchasing it with money. Anyone who has fought Angus before would know better. The power level of the Celestial Tier boss can be freakishly powerful at times! Without a full set of Ascended Tier equipment, none of the players would be able to challenge a Celestial Tier boss!

Furthermore, Isles would not only drop Ascended Tier equipment. He should have dropped other powerful items such as Skill Books and Normal Demonic Pearls as well!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Don't you think that you're acting like a bunch of clowns now? Your acting sucks! So, stop embarrassing yourselves at once! If you think it's not embarrassing enough, I don't mind teaching you some lessons on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre'!"

"Zhang Yang! You better keep your head down! Lone Desert Smoke can't possibly take on all the players in the entire China Region! This world belongs to everyone! Not just your sh*tty Lone Desert Smoke!" Zhong Xiu Hua was trying to provoke the rage of the other players towards Zhang Yang. "Without the efforts of the other players, your Lone Desert Smoke would not have even survived the first wave of the invasion! Pui!"

"Boo hoo, cry me a river! Nobody's efforts have gone to waste! Firstly, everyone was fighting for the name and dignity of entire China. Secondly, everyone was fighting to prevent the 10% Experience Points reduction on everyone in China Region! So don't consider yourself a saint or whatever! You're not! You don't even speak for everyone in China Region! Pui!"

Zhang Yang began to feel impatient, as he looked at Zhong Xiu Hua with disdain.

"Zhang Yang ---"

"Stop whining here! Shut the f*ck up! If you want to prove something, let's settle it on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre'. Or else, just get lost! Pui!" Zhang Yang revealed a very impatient expression on his face.

Zhong Xiu Hua was so angry that his face turned pale. However, he didn't have the guts to face Zhang Yang on the 'Hovering Amphitheatre' as well. If he ever gets killed in that arena, he would lose his levels! Now that it has become ridiculously difficult to grind for even one level, Zhong Xiu Hua would not be daring enough to accept that challenge.

"Hahaha!" Every other player in the vicinity was laughing and cheering for Zhang Yang. Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was currently infamous for being 'the prince with sexual-transmitted-disease'. No one in the server did not know that case by now.

After arriving at Holy City together with his gang, Zhang Yang began to distribute the loots among themselves.

Isles was considered the final boss of the entire Demonic Invasion. So, he had dropped quite a number of powerful items and equipment upon his death. Other than the 15 pieces of Ascended Tier equipment, there were also 28 pieces of Holy Tier equipment among the loots! There were also many other Skill Books, Skill Point Crystals, Aura Stones, Level 8 Gemstones and Normal Demonix Pearls!

Other than the Accessory piece on him, Zhang Yang had already collected a full set of Ascended Tier equipment now. Initially, he no longer had much need in acquiring any equipment that the boss drops. However, after distributing the loot for one round, he realized that there was a two-handed sword left without an owner.

Wei Yan Er and Galileo had already gotten weapons of Ascended Tier from defeating Angus. Meanwhile, the others were not capable of equipping a two-handed weapon. So, Zhang Yang had no choice but to take the two-handed weapon and shove it into his inventory.

Well, it was not a bad thing either. Zhang Yang could use that weapon to enhance his current one. The axe that he was currently wielding was a Level 200 masterpiece!

After distributing the loot, it was time to distribute the remaining items, the Skill Point Crystals. Because Zhang Yang just recently learned {Rock Solid}, he would need more Skill Points in order to upgrade that Skill. So, he took one. Including the +3 Skill Points that he has acquired from killing Isles and this Skill Point that he just acquired, he could level his Skill up to level 8 now. After activating the Skill, he now gained 120% additional Defence and 24% Passive Damage Immunity.

Furthermore, Isles had also dropped two Forbidden Scrolls!

Both of the Forbidden Scrolls were basically AoE types. One was named 'Absolute Zero,' while the other was named 'Doomsday's Natural Disaster'. Both had the same effects that reduced 10% HP from all targets in every second for over 30 seconds. The effect would cover an area of a 5-kilometer radius. The minimum damage the effect could cause to each target would be 150,000 damage per second, while the maximum damage would be 300,000 damage. Players would only be able to use the scrolls upon reaching Level 200.

Well, that two scrolls should be considered as compensations for using the 'Eclipse' and the 'Reaper's Descent' then. However, Zhang Yang still lost a 'Stuttering Focus'. Well, it was still worth using the 'Stuttering Focus' to exchange for the loots though. Look at Snow Seeker. She had used out one Forbidden Scroll as well. However, she did not get anything in return by the end of the battle.

Speaking of which, the other players actually did get something in return. Because they had won the battle against the demonic forces, they were spared the penalty of 10% Experience Points Reduction. The players from the entire China Region had actually gained something from claiming victory over the Demonic Invasion as well.

As for the Skill Books, Zhang Yang managed to win one powerful Skill for himself from rolling, the 'Sky Slicer'!

[Sky Slicer]: Consecutively slashes the target, dealing 100% Basic Melee Attack. You will gain 100% additional damage for every second onwards. Lasts for 10 seconds. During this period of time, you cannot use other Skills, or else the {Sky Slicer} will be automatically interrupted.

Require: Melee Weapon.

Consume: 100 Rage Points.

Cooldown: 5 minutes.

The Skill was basically the same as the boss' own {Sky Slicer}. The Skill will be easily interrupted if used on a player. It could only serve as a normal attack, in that case. However, if this Skill is used without having any interruptions in-between, the target would be fatally wounded!

The best targets for players who could use this Skill would be the monsters. Well, 90% of the monsters would not have any Status Restriction Skills. Even if some of them did, the user could just waste away the monsters' Status Restriction Skills before using {Sky Slicer}!

Even though 5-minute cooldown was a bit long, the impact and damage that the Skill could bring would make it worthwhile.

Last but not least, the boss had also dropped 7 [Normal Demonic Pearls]. Each of the pearls could increase the success rate of fusing equipment by 40%!

After distributing everything among themselves, Zhang Yang dissolved the party and everyone went off to mind their own business for the moment. Well, the second Demonic Invasion would hit the players again, one month from now. So everyone must make good use of the remaining one month to grind and power themselves up. Reaching Level 215 would be the top priority for everyone in the server now! Truth be told, if most of the players have reached Level 215 during the Demonic Invasion event, there would still be approximately 10,000 to 20,000 players remaining when the final boss Isles reveals himself by the end of the tenth wave. The battle would not be as fierce and intense!

Zhang Yang selected the newly acquired weapon [Frost Destroyer's

Blade] in the inventory. He was getting ready to fuse the weapon with his axe, now.

[Frost Destroyer's Blade] (Ascended, Two-Handed)

Attack: 47,620 – 67,620

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 15,163

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Damage by 50%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 15%.

Equip: Upon landing a hit on your target, there is a rate that you can deal 50% Melee Attack of Frost Damage to your target as well.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

After putting the [Frost Destroyer's Blade] and the axe that he was currently using into the Tesseract, Zhang Yang immediately received a system notification.

‘Ding! You’re about to fuse [Frost Destroyer's Blade] and [Agos, The Destroyer’s Blade]. The rate of success for fusing a Sword Type and an Axe Type weapon is lower. There’s an 80% success rate to acquire a Sword Type weapon upon completion. There’s a 60% success rate to acquire an Axe Type weapon upon completion. You can select whether to fuse for a Sword Type weapon or an Axe Type weapon. Do you wish to proceed?’

Hmm... the success rate for fusing two weapons of different Types would be much lower. However, players could choose the Weapon Type desired. That’s actually very convenient!

Zhang Yang inserted one [Normal Demonic Pearl,] and he received another system notification in an instance.

‘You’ve inserted [Normal Demonic Pearl] X 1. The success rate for both

fusion types will be 100% and 100%. Do you wish to proceed?’

‘You’ve chosen to fuse for the Axe-Type weapon, proceed!’

‘Fusion in progress!’

...

‘Ding! You’ve succeeded in acquiring a new equipment: Frost Destroyer's Blade (Upgrade +1)!’

[Frost Destroyer's Blade (Upgrade +1)] (Ascended, Two-Handed)

Attack: 53,382 – 73,382

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 16,679

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Damage by 50%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 15%.

Equip: Upon landing a hit on your target, there is a rate that you can deal 50% Melee Attack of Frost Damage to your target as well.

Equip: Upon hitting the target with normal attacks, there is a rate that you can deal a damage 8 times stronger than your initial attack.

Required Level: 240

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Unfortunately, if there were any other Ascended Tier axes to spare, Zhang Yang could have used some [Demonic Pearls] to ensure a 100% successful rate in enhancing his axe up to a +4 upgrade. However, the rate of acquiring another 3 two-handed Ascended Tier axes would be much lower than the rate of acquiring one Celestial Tier axe!

Instead of working on that, it would be wiser for Zhang Yang to focus on getting Celestial Tier equipment! Well, there would be another 6 Demonic Invasions in the upcoming days. Players who manage to recover the main

cities would become eligible to challenge the Demon Lord Kenzack, a Celestial Tier boss! If he is lucky, he might even get a chance to acquire a Celestial Tier weapon upon killing Kenzack!

...

After the first Demonic Invasion, other than China Region, the main cities of the other 6 Main Regions were conquered by the Demonic Forces!

Well, it wasn't really a surprise, though. After all, the players had no prior information about the demonic forces and how powerful they were. If Zhang Yang did not use his 'Gate of Hell', the China Region could not have survived the ninth wave of the Demonic Invasion. Even if they could survive the ninth wave, they would be wiped out entirely by the tenth wave of the invasion forces.

Of course, the players would be able to improve themselves to another level during the coming month. If the levels of the monsters do not change, the number of players affected by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game would be reduced a lot. So, if they could hold on until the tenth wave, they would have high hopes of winning by the end of the Demonic Invasion!

Chapter 833: Staying In The Lead

Among the eight main Regions in the entire server, China Region was the only one who survived the onslaught of the Demonic forces during the Demonic Invasion event. So, it was natural that the players from China Region were proud and happy at the same time. They managed to convince themselves that their efforts did not go to waste because of that.

However, they managed to survive the last two waves, merely because Zhang Yang had summoned his legion of demons with his 'Gate of Hell'. That would be the irreplaceable factor that led China Region to their victory over the demonic forces! Even though it was true that the Lone Desert Smoke would not have made it to the last wave all by themselves, the other players could not deny Zhang Yang's efforts and contributions on that matter.

That had also sent many of the players sighing in shame. If any other of them could get a hold of the 'Gate of Hell', they could have contributed a lot at fending the Demonic Invasion as well. They could have helped to keep many more players alive until the final boss revealed himself!

Now that the China Region did not receive the penalty of Experience Point Reduction, the players from China Region had basically gained a significant upper hand in term of strength. Well, while the others were set back by the penalty, the players from China Region did not lose anything. They could also focus on grinding to get stronger without any hindrance. The negative effect would stay until the players manage to complete all 7 Demonic Invasion Events before the NPC armies strike back at the demonic forces. Only then, would the players be able to take back their lands and cities, one after another, with the help of the NPC army. Well, each successful retaking of a city would recover 10% of the players' rate of Experience Points.

Like the Monster Attack Event, the NPC army would act once every month. If the seven Main Cities fall tragically by the end of the event, players would need to wait for 7 months before the speed of them earning Experience Points recover its initial speed.

Of course, it did not mean that players cannot launch Strike Back conquests to take back their main cities during that period of time.

However, players could still heal their HP and MP and resurrect players when they were defending their main cities in between every wave. The players even got some help from the NPCs. If they still couldn't fend off against the Demonic Invasions, it would be insane to even think about striking back at the demonic forces!

Obviously, the only way to reclaim the lost cities and lands would be to borrow aid from the NPCs. Well, the system had stated clearly that the players would only be eligible to challenge the Celestial Tier boss after all Main Cities of all Main Regions are reclaimed. Even though the Celestial Tier boss Kenzack was obviously placed there, the players would have to follow the system's ruling.

However, players were still too weak to get into Level 240 – 270 maps at the current stage of the game. Obviously, the system had designed it to prevent players from attempting to bring down the boss.

Well, maybe when all of the Main Cities are reclaimed, the NPCs will open up a portal and let the players through into the lair of Kenzack. By then, the players should be able to challenge the Celestial Tier boss. Or, the system could just drag Kenzack out of his hiding lair into the public and kick everyone's *ss. Well, how the events would unfold totally depended on the game company. Their idea could just change at the next moment.

Although 30 days was not a short period, it was merely 10 days in reality. That amount of time would be sufficient for the players to grind 1 level, at least. Well, do not estimate the difference of 1 level. That could mean most of the Level 214 players have leveled up to Level 215 by now. So, they shouldn't be concerned about the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game when they survive until the last wave of the invasion, where the bosses reveal themselves on the battlefield!

Because the players in China Region had acquired the advantage of earning 10% additional Experience Point, the number of China players

reaching Level 215 was obviously higher than the number of players reaching Level 215 in other Regions. At the same time, the number of Level 210 players and Level 205 players had increased substantially...

Because of that, there would be much lesser players getting restricted by the Level Gap Suppression effect of the game.

Little by little, the advantages that the players could gain over each wave will be brought over to the last wave, to create an impressive effect in order for the players to defeat the last wave of the demons!

Each wave of the Demonic Invasion would send out an Ascended Tier boss. Therefore, there was no sign of any other Ascended Tier boss across the maps. Therefore, the only way for the players to acquire better equipment to improve themselves was to head down to the Elemental Nest.

30 days had passed without much notice. This time, all eight Regions were ready for the second Demonic Invasion Event.

The invasion was similar to the first Demonic Invasion Event. There were a total of 10 waves of monsters. The number of monsters and the type of the monsters in each wave was exactly the same as the first event. Even the sequence of monsters revealing themselves to the players was the same! The only difference was that the names of the monsters in the third wave and the name of the final boss in the final wave had some changes. Well, their levels, Skills and HP were exactly the same compared to the first invasion event as well.

Although the China Region was the only Region that had managed to last until the end, however, if they hadn't used 10 Forbidden Scrolls while they were fending off the tenth wave of the invasion, they would have been wiped out and their efforts would have been for nothing. Meanwhile, it wouldn't be easy at all to acquire one Forbidden Scroll. Even Lone Desert Smoke only managed to earn back two Forbidden Scrolls from Isles. The other guilds had failed to 'restock' their Forbidden Scrolls.

Therefore, even though they were very familiar with the battles ahead of them, they still struggled through hell in the tenth wave! Zhang Yang did

not hold back anything in that battle. He threw out both of the Forbidden Scrolls 'Absolute Zero' and 'Doomsday's Natural Disaster' without any hesitation. Furthermore, there were at least 10,000 players who managed to reach Level 215 and over, this time. They were able to destroy the monsters in the tenth wave with the aid of Zhang Yang's two Forbidden Scrolls.

However, they were sent even closer to death this time. When the final boss Marank arrived, only Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu remained on the battlefield!

"Can we still take the boss down?" Han Ying Xue was not confident at all.

Well, there were still 67 remaining when they began engaging the final boss previously. Although the boss was basically tortured to death by Zhang Yang alone, Zhang Yang did use a Forbidden Scroll 'Stuttering Focus' to weaken the boss's Attack by one third. So, how would they be able to take down the boss this time?

"No worry! Snow Seeker has given me a Forbidden Scroll that focuses on weakening one target!" Zhang Yang activated his God of War Transformation and charged towards the boss. At the same time, he tore off the Forbidden Scroll and threw it onto the boss.

[Forbidden Scroll: Doomed Entanglement] (Consumable)

Use: Curses the target with a doomed fate. The target will have a 50% chance to deal half of the initial damage. The target will have 50% to receive double damage when hit. Lasts for 10 hours.

Required Level: 200

Even though this scroll could not weaken the boss as much as the previous one, the scroll could still add a 50% rate to increase the players' Attack power by an additional 100%! That could make Zhang Yang and the two ladies much stronger! Because the battle was ended in a brief moment, everyone knew that the boss had been weakened by the system.

"Tsk... she's really... good to you!" Han Ying Xue began to get jealous

about it. Then she narrowed her eyes while staring at Zhang Yang with blazing jealousy.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly. Well, as long as he just leaves her alone for now, nothing would happen. Or else, if that witch starts to quarrel with him, he would be having a hell of a ride for the day. She would talk about Snow Seeker, then change the subject over to Luo Yu Rou, then change the subject over to Chen Xue Yao. The sh*t will go on until Zhang Yang admits he's wrong, even though he did nothing wrong.

Felice transformed into her 'Tree of Life' form immediately.

This time, Zhang Yang had come prepared. He would not let Felice repeat the same mistakes again.

Well, Han Ying Xue was 'disabled,' as expected. She was 'imprisoned' for most of the time, during the entire boss battle. However, Felice was able to perform at her best this time. Combined with the {Restoration} that Han Ying Xue would throw at him once in a while, Felice managed to maintain the HP bars of Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu.

Fortunately, Han Ying Xue was safe and sound in the 'imprisonment'. So, she did not even lose one bit of HP. Zhang Yang could just throw his {Surrogacy} onto Sun Xin Yu so that she could also have a taste of having the world strongest Defence power!

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

'-4,037,091!' '-8,074,182!' '-24,222,546!' ... '-40,370,910!'

Well, it seemed that the designers of the game had never thought it possible that a player would acquire the two Skills that Zhang Yang had just activated at the same time! The {Charge Up Strike} could ensure the attacks of the next Skill to be 100% Critical Hits! Although {Sky Slicer} could only slice out 10 attacks thoroughly, the 10 attacks were considered as 'one Skill'. So naturally, each of the 10 hits would become Critical Hits! Furthermore, each upcoming hit would gain 50% additional attack!

The {Charge Up Strike} had really boosted Zhang Yang's damage tremendously! Zhang Yang had just dealt approximately 330,000,000

damage in merely 10 seconds! That's a total of 33,000,000 DPS! That had exceeded his initial DPS of 1,300,000 damage by many notches! Of course, such an explosive series of attacks would only happen once in every 5 minutes. Other than that, it was also because Zhang Yang had used the 'Doomed Entanglement' which allowed him to have 50% rate to trigger double damage. So normally speaking, he should initially deal approximately 220,000,000 damage only.

Well, a 330,000,000 damage was not a damage amount that a boss could take on. That amount of damage had taken out 3% of the boss's HP! It was savage!

Not only was the boss heavily wounded, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue were stunned to see that! Well, the Skill could only be so powerful when Zhang Yang is the one using it!

The boss was very unfortunate, though. Even though the boss also had the same Skill, he was interrupted by Zhang Yang after he managed to strike once with the Skill. The difference was just huge! If the target of Zhang Yang was a player, the player would just cry in misery and die!

Even though there were only two players left on the battlefield to deal damage to the boss, but both players were players with Class S Inheritance. Their damage outputs were terrifyingly high! Each of their DPS had exceeded 1,000,000 damage now! Theoretically, they would only need approximately 80 minutes to take out the boss! Furthermore, Zhang Yang could deal a series of explosive attacks once every 5 minutes! That had really reduced the time needed to slay the boss!

About one hour later, the boss let out a pathetic roar and died! Well, the boss was f*cked up hard by Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu with ease!

Unfortunately, the boss did not drop the Skill Book {Sky Slicer} this time around. Wei Yan Er was extremely disappointed because of that. She pouted and sulked at the sidelines.

Well, the China Region managed to keep their Main City this time as well. The players had received 20% additional Experience Points whenever they were earning EXP. Because of that, they gained an absolute advantage

over the other Regions when it comes to grinding.

Another 30 days had passed. The third Demonic Invasion had arrived.

After experiencing the invasion for over two times, the players have become very familiar with the layout and design of the demonic forces' waves. Furthermore, the number of high-level players throughout the entire server had increased substantially as well. This time, finally, China was not the only Region that succeeded in keeping their Main City. The Europe Region, India Region, and North-America Region had also succeeded in fending off the demonic forces from taking over their Main Cities!

However, even though that was the case, the China Region still had the advantage of earning 20% additional Experience Points. That would not change for now. Because of that, the players from China Region continued to triumph in regard to leveling and staying ahead of the game.

As the number of players retained by the end of the tenth wave increased, Zhang Yang and his gang no longer needed to take on the boss all by themselves. Well, they could no longer take all the loots to themselves because of that. However, when it comes to snatching items and equipment, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were experts among experts in such regard! They were basically 'trained' to be fast in snatching because of their 'money-grubbing' attitude. By the end of it, Lone Desert Smoke still got the largest portion of the loots.

Well, there was already a total of 19 [Normal Demonic Pearl] among the loots! Those pearls were enough to ensure a 100% success rate in enhancing an equipment of a top Tier player to +4 enhancement!

The fourth Demonic Invasion, the fifth Demonic Invasion... the seventh Demonic Invasion!

All Regions had managed to completely fend off the Demonic Forces in the fifth time Demonic Invasion. Therefore, the Japan-Korea Region had only lost over 4 main cities, even though they were hit the hardest. However, they would need at least 120 days of in-game time to completely reclaim their main cities, get back their initial efficiency of grinding and

reach the required level to challenge The Demon Lord Kenzack!

--- Provided that the NPCs successfully reclaim the main cities every time they strike back!

Because the China Region had not lost a single main city throughout the 7 times of Demonic Invasion, they managed to acquire the opportunity of being the first in the entire server to ever challenge the Demon Lord Kenzack. However, Zhang Yang did not sign into the game for a few days straight. That was because Luo Yu Rou was about to give birth to his first child!

Chapter 834: Demon Lord Kenzack

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

The Unfilial may multiply, but they can never prosper!

That is a main teaching of China. It is also one of the most important teachings that are practically written in every living being.

Zhang Yang had never been able to sleep properly. In fact, he was practically disturbed by every audible grunt coming out from Luo Yu Rou's mouth. He was like a monkey out of a box. Of the times that he had not been logging in to the game, he had used that time of his life to sit beside Luo Yu Rou, caressing her womb and staring at it.

It was then Luo Yu Rou felt like she had made a good decision to keep the baby with a man such as Zhang Yang. The fatherhood he had displayed before the baby was still in her belly had truly moved her.

Despite the doctors' advise, Luo Yu Rou had opted for natural delivery instead of using any sort of drug use or surgical means. After four hours of excruciating pain, Luo Yu Rou endured each painful contraction of her womb and managed to deliver the baby, safe and sound.

Zhang Yang, who was jumping about wildly like a tiger in rage, outside the waiting room could not handle his rage. Every single time he heard Luo Yu Rou crying in pain, he could storm towards the delivery room, only to be stopped by more than 10 security guards. Even they were already on the verge of letting him go due to his unnatural strength. How could Zhang Yang be calm when his wife was practically giving birth to his child!

After Luo Yu Rou's voice died down suddenly, followed by the loud cry of a newborn child, Zhang Yang calmed down as if someone had shot him with an elephant's tranquilizer. Zhang Yang walked like a zombie towards the delivery room when the guards were finally called off. A female nurse walked towards Zhang Yang with a baby, wrapped in white towel.

"Congratulations. It's a baby girl."

Zhang Yang took the baby girl into his arms and said to the nurse with tears flowing down. "No. She's a princess. She's my princess."

Despite everything he owned, all the wealth, and all the fame, he felt remorseful that he could not provide much more for his little princess. The little life that was less than a kilogram lay in Zhang Yang's arms, squeezing his hand as she sucked Zhang Yang's thumb. At that moment, even if Liu Wei was standing in front of him, Zhang Yang would have felt that all the hatred inside of him was washed away. He felt peace, after a long time. The serenity in the air lasted only for a jiffy when the little girl barged into the waiting room and cried.

"Lemme see her! Lemme see my niece!"

Zhang Yang could not muster any anger in him and smiled. He kneeled down and passed the fragile little life into the little girl's arms. Wei Yan Er took the little babe and rocked her slowly in her skinny arms. Like magic, the little girl was calmed down almost immediately. She poked her fair little fingers on the baby's soft cheeks and laughed.

"Looks like everything is fine," said Han Ying Xue. When she came into the hospital, she was feeling a little annoyed. The fact that someone else had given birth to Zhang Yang's baby and she could not be the one. However, when Han Ying Xue took the baby into her arms, she too, felt all the negative emotions in her beginning to melt away. All she felt then, was love.

"How about that," said the nurse with a gentle smile.

"Please keep me updated on my wife's condition."

"Very well, sir."

10 days later, after confirming the baby's health was superb, Zhang Yang finally returned to the game.

"Little Yang! Let us arrange a child marriage!" said Fatty Han with the most earnest eyes as he tapped Zhang Yang's shoulders.

"You want me to give you a super slap in the face, that even a palm reader could read my fortune by studying your face?"

"Ayy. Chill. We are bros! Come on! If you are a girl, I'd be marrying you! This sort of bond will last for eternity! I'd swear that we will always be the best of friends even in the next life!" said Fatty Han as he pushed his unborn son to be a candidate for Zhang Yang's daughter.

His wife's expected date was roughly two months later. He had already done every possible scan and health checks on her and had confirmed that the child will be a fat little boy. After Fatty Han found that Zhang Yang's child was a girl, he had immediately "booked" a spot for him. How could he not? That daughter was the child of both Zhang Yang and the super-hot Luo Yu Rou! The possibility of her being the next top model in the world was so high!

"Alright. Enough with my daughter. I want to know, what about the Celestial tier boss? How are we going at it? Has a strategy been formulated? Update, please."

"It's bad. You might want to sit down first." Hundred Shots sighed heavily and continued. "Kenzack was not alone. He was accompanied by Baa'ljilr the Imposter, an Ascended tier boss. Together, they had proven to be undefeatable. Their combined DPS power was too strong that no guild could do it alone."

"I even formed an alliance with Crimson Rage and Imperial Sky but failed even after numerous attempts. We lasted for 8 minutes. That is the longest time we could hold for before everyone is killed.

Zhang Yang sulked and frowned.

"Is it that hard?"

"Well. From a certain point of view. Now that the big boss is back in play, things might get easier now!" said Lost Dream.

"And...why is that?"

"See for yourself!"

The party gathered and headed towards Anthylor. Once they arrived, the team summoned out their mounts and soared towards a canyon that had never been around the vicinity. There, under the shadow of the canyon were the demon army. The sounds of battle could be heard from the top of the canyon when Zhang Yang descended lower. Countless of players could be seen fighting the demon army. One thing that piqued Zhang Yang's interest was the fact that all players there were from China. None of the players from other regions were present.

"I see that only players from China fighting. Why aren't any players from other regions fighting?"

"Case in point. We haven't lost any major cities, have we not? While other regions had lost one or two. When there are still demon armies occupying the cities of other regions, there will be a debuff inflicted on all players around the globe. The debuff increases all damage taken by 10 folds! While we don't need to reclaim any cities, the other players from other regions are busy with theirs. Hence, there are no players from other regions." Endless Starlight explained.

Zhang Yang understood the scenario and nodded. No wonder the system had made the announcement. Only by reclaiming all major cities will the players be allowed to fight Kenzack. If even one city is occupied by the demons, all players will receive 10 times the usual damage. With that buff, there was no wonder why Lone Desert Smoke could not handle an Ascended tier boss. He had been upgraded to a Celestial tier power!

Standing in the center of the canyon was a supermassive demon. Like all demons, he had a bat-like wings and a long tail. Unlike all demons, however, that one was several hundred meters tall and wielded a long blade was the same height as he. One single swing of his blade could level a mountain!

[Demon Lord Kenzack] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 25,000,000,000

Defense: 62,718

Melee Attack: 691,686 – 891,686

Magic Attack: 409,046 – 509,046

Skills:

[Cleave]: Swings the massive blade and deals 100% melee physical damage to all targets within 100 meters in the frontal direction.

[Thousand Summon]: Summons 1,000 Demon Soldier from the Netherworld and fight in his stead.

[Demonic Bond]: Swallows a demon and restore 1% HP. Recovery rate cannot be affected by any skills.

[Shadow Arrow]: Shots a True Shadow Arrow to a target and deals 200% magic Shadow damage.

[Void Blast]: Explodes a powerful void bomb and deals 800,000 Shadow damage to all targets within 300 meters.

[No Escape]: Once a player enters 300 meters distance from Kenzack, players will be inflicted with the buff. Once a player goes 300 meters away from Kenzack, they will be killed immediately without mercy.

[Death Mark]: Once a player was killed by Kenzack, they will be inflicted with the debuff. Players will carry the debuff even after death and cannot get close to Kenzack for as far as 300 meters. Those who step within the range will die instantly. Debuff will last for 72 hours.

Note: The most powerful Demon ever existed. A true undefeatable entity. Even though Kenzack ranked the last amongst the Nine Demon Lords, his powers and capabilities were unrivaled with anyone else.

It has been a long time since Zhang Yang last laid eyes upon a boss that had so many skills. As expected of a Celestial boss. What a drag. Standing by his side, was a smaller Demon, but was larger than regular Demon Soldiers. It was Baa'ljilr the Imposter.

[Baa'ljilr the Imposter] (Ascended, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 12,500,000,000

Defense: 38,545

Melee Attack: 386,830 – 466,830

Skills:

[Demon Amplification]: Consumes 5% HP and grants 100% attack to Kenzack. Cooldown: 20 seconds.

[Demonic Bond]: Swallows a Demon and restores 10% HP.

Note: The master of disguise. The god of trickery and deception. Loyal to only the Demon Lord Kenzack.

Compared to the Celestial tier boss, Baa'ljilr the Imposter was nothing but a punching bag. Besides his regular attacks, there were not many offensive skills. However, the problem was his supporting skills. With Baa'ljilr the Imposter by Kenzack's side, his presence was a powerful catalyst that could greatly improve Kenzack's prowess.

{Demon Amplification} is the most troublesome skills. Despite having no offensive skills, Baa'ljilr the Imposter serves as a powerful supporter of Kenzack. Although the skill will consume Baa'ljilr's HP, it was completely negligible since Kenzack could summon a bunch of Demons for them so "nom nom" on. They could kill every player there simply by eating demons and slicing up everyone.

Worst of all, players that are killed cannot return to fight within 3 days! No wonder players from China had spent over 30 days to fight the boss! They could not even come close to even leave a wound on the OP as sh*t boss! The power level was too much for them!

The most obvious choice would be to first kill Baa'ljilr the Imposter. After that, players would have to eliminate all the summoned demons out to prevent Kenzack from restoring his health. That required the skill to have long cooldown time and players to have superb killing abilities.

Despite having a long HP bar, Baa'ljilr the Imposter would not last long if players coordinate to kill all the Demons summoned. That, and they

would have to last for 20 uses of {Demon Amplification}. 20 uses of the skill will consume 100% of his HP, killing himself.

"How long are the boss' skills cooldown? I want to know each and every one of them." Said Zhang Yang.

"Alright. Demonic Bond, 5 seconds once."

"Void Blast, 2 seconds once."

"Demon Amplification, 30 seconds once."

...

The summoning skill had a minute long cooldown. Despite having such a long cooldown time, players would wipe out all the summoned demon in a flash. At most, the boss could only use {Demonic Bond} once. That was under the assumption that all the players around were strong and cooperative.

If they were neither, the boss might be able to restore his HP more than once. If they are unable to kill Baa'ljilr the Imposter with haste, Kenzack would receive his buff and cause the mass killing of all players around.

Everyone knew that defeating the boss was without hope, yet they were still charging in aimlessly. The reason was as plain as daylight. They were all enticed by the Celestial loot.

"I see what you mean on why I could turn the tables around. You were all waiting for my skill, the {Gates of Hell}!"

"Right on!" said Lost Dream which led to everyone else to nod in unison.

Zhang Yang was not afraid of the boss having summoning skills. In fact, after gaining the skill {Gates of Hell}, he welcomes them with open arms. When the boss summons monsters, especially lower tier once, his skills would allow him to summon a similar Level elite tier Demon for every target killed!

Zhang Yang started calculating the battle and smiled confidently. "I think, we might have a shot at winning!"

An Elite tier monster would have at least 100 million HP. Hence, even

though the Celestial tier boss was strong, he would take close to 2 minutes to kill a single Elite tier monster. Another factor that contributed to their winning was Kenzack's size. Each Elite tier of that Level would have a certain level of attack power. Coupled with his massive size, all the demons summoned by Zhang Yang could surround Kenzack easily and the numbers of them that could attack would be higher than a hundred. In the two minutes it takes for one demon to die, the demons could dish out a considerably high amount of damage.

Zhang Yang began to discuss the battle plans. At then, there were many of other unknown guilds that had tried their own luck at the boss. However, despite all sort of battle plans and strategies being implemented, they could not defeat the boss. Those that chose to kill Baa'ljilr first managed to survive until Kenzack had over 60% HP left. Those that chose to ignore Baa'ljilr could not go any lower than 95% HP.

Zhang Yang waited until the guilds who failed left the canyon. At then, most of the players had left and were only grinding normally outside of the canyon.

Before Zhang Yang's return to the game, Lone Desert Smoke had sortied their own attack forces not too long ago. All of them were bearing the debuff on them and had to wait for one more day to disappear.

Lone Desert Smoke was not the only guild that was bearing the mark. In fact, almost all of China's players had the mark on them as well. Since the time taken for them to reattempt to kill the boss was three days, so they could not spare any time wasted on other things. Once the mark expires, they will return to the canyon again and fight for their chance to defeat the boss, with or without a miracle.

They were all rushing desperately, not just because of the Celestial loot, but also because they taking the opportunity of other players of other regions being busy with their city reclaiming wars. In the next 20 days or so, Europe, India, North America would have already completed reclaiming all their fallen cities. By then, China would not be the only region to fight Kenzack. If they prolong the fight for too long, there will be players from all 4 regions fighting for the boss!

It was a golden opportunity and even Zhang Yang realized its importance.

One day after, and all of Lone Desert Smoke was ready to fight Kenzack again. Mountain Mover made his move and mobilized 20 Type IV War Chariots. Sadly, even though War Chariots were powerful tools, they would last only as long as 60 to 70 seconds. However, it was a crucial investment, since it would help Lone Desert Smoke deal a substantial amount of damage to Baa'ljilr. Killing Baa'ljilr was the first step to their master plan, after all!

As long as Baa'ljilr could be killed, the chances of defeating Kenzack would rise. Without Baa'ljilr dying, not even a miracle would help Lone Desert Smoke defeat Kenzack.

The entire guild gathered around the canyon, and with the command from Mountain Mover, the entire guild moved towards the boss.

"Kill these lowly beings." Kenzack had not needed to raise his head. He was merely languishing his arms crossed and could sense the guild's presence from as far as a thousand meters away. One swift {Cleave} was cast immediately and Zhang Yang was the first to intercept it. Compared to his long and tanky HP, one prickly little {Cleave} was insignificant to him.

Zhang Yang initiate the first attack and started the Celestial tier boss fight.

Chapter 835: Harder, Better, Faster, Stronger

The fight with Kenzack was far harder than the first Celestial tier boss, Angus. The main reason was due to the fact that Angus was alone, while Kenzack was accompanied by an Ascended tier supporter.

However, after factoring in all the players strength and the boss' skill, the fight with Kenzack was apparently, much easier!

Angus was tougher to defeat, due to several reasons. The main reason was the level gap between players and the boss. None of them were even Level 190 when they were fighting Angus. That, and the fact that Angus had a recovery skill that was a bloody hack! Weak players could not even get close to Angus without being killed and heal him in return.

Secondly, during that period, Ascended tier boss was still a rarity. Hence, Zhang Yang could not farm much-Ascended tier equipment to increase his prowess. Zhang Yang was underpowered, let alone the rest of the world. At then, the true fighters were the 8 major cities Ascended tier bosses. Players were only there to be random side characters. Fighting Kenzack, on the other hand, was all players and no NPCs. The quest, or rather, the developers had recognized that players all around the globe had reached a certain level of prowess, that they could handle a Celestial tier boss without the aid of NPCs.

The fight began when Zhang Yang took a hit and landed a blow on Kenzack. Baa'ljilr the Imposter laughed and spread his arms out. A puff of red hue cloud appeared around Baa'ljilr and floated upwards. The cloud expanded into a large cloud which enveloped Kenzack.

{Demon Amplification}!

Kenzack, who was "chilling" at his own pace suddenly turned berserk. As if something had shot him with Adrenaline, the boss jumped to his feet and punched the ground beneath him, sending out countless of dark rays bursting out of the ground within 300 meters around him.

{Void Blast}!

With the boost provided by {Demon Amplification}, the skill had gained a boost and dealt more than 1,600,000 damage to all players. Luckily, many of the players had already activated their Transformation skills, granting them a certain chance to nullify magic attacks. Those without Transformation skill were all cramped inside War Chariots, allowing the 1.6 million damage to be evenly distributed among 50 players.

As for those players that could not find a place in a War Chariot, nor possess a Transformation skill, they were forced to sit the boss fight out. They could not even be a side character, dealing negligible damage, for they would die before they could even poke the boss. Literally.

Now that the formation was perfect and the plan was already in motion, Zhang Yang took the lead and allowed Mountain Mover to command the rest of the guild.

"KILL!"

Zhang Yang soared to the sky with his radiant wings spread out like a lighthouse in the dark ocean, guiding players to attack Baa'ljilr. Before he attacked Baa'ljilr, he had first landed a barrage of attacks on Kenzack. After filling up his Rage gauge, he turned to Baa'ljilr and launched an array of skills.

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

‘-4,397,691’!

‘-8,795,382’!

...

‘-43,976,910’!

With the aid of everyone’s powerful aura effects stacking on each other, Zhang Yang’s attack skills had soared to more than 4 million. By the time it reached the 10th strike, the damage had reached a staggering 40 million damage. That, and the additional 10% Holy damage, totaling the damage to as high as 260,000,000!

"ARGH!" Baa'ljilr grunted painfully. He had already used 5% of his HP as a sacrifice to cast {Demon Amplification} on Kenzack. Coupled with the godlike damage inflicted by Zhang Yang, Baa'ljilr had lost around 7% HP in the first few seconds of the fight.

"WOAH! That's hax!" cried one of the guild members.

"It's not hax! Guild master would never use any stupid hacking program! He is just that strong!"

"I'd be d*mned! He could kill any player in the game now. He is unbeatable in PvP!"

200 million damage was indeed strong. It was even enough to kill himself if the opponent possessed any sort of skill that could reflect 100% damage back. Sadly, the skill {Sky Slicer} could only work on monsters. Against players, however, it would not be as efficient. Players could easily find a chance to stop the chain attack, preventing the damage from reaching the 10th strike. That, and an easy use of an Invulnerability skill.

Monsters would always be the lowest benchmark to test one's prowess as they were governed by software and their programming. A boss could have higher HP, higher attacks, more skills, or even faster cooldown rate, but they will always be bound to the aggro system. All in all, the boss was fated to die at the hands of Zhang Yang.

{Warrior's Will}! {Destructive Smash}!

‘-2,985,678’!

Since Baa'ljilr's healing skill could be affected by skills, Zhang Yang had prioritized {Destructive Smash} on him to reduce his recovery rate to only 2.5% per use of {Demonic Bond}. As long as everyone focuses and responds swiftly when the 1,000 demons were summoned, they would kill all 1,000 of them in less than 5 seconds, limiting Baa'ljilr to only one use of healing. To put in all in the equation, every one minute, Baa'ljilr will "sacrifice" 7.5% HP per minute, hence, 13 minutes was all it would take for the party to kill Baa'ljilr.

However, if the battle is dragged on for 13 minutes, the entire party

would be wiped out by Kenzack instead. A 100% attack boost is not something that could be ignored, coming from a Celestial tier boss.

With Mountain Mover commanding from afar, 20 counts of Type IV War Chariots headed towards Baa'ljilr. All crosshairs were targeted on Baa'ljilr alone. With a simple command, countless of skills blasted off the Chariots and landed on Baa'ljilr. Everyone, including Zhang Yang and his party, threw out all their skills with the sole aim of killing off Baa'ljilr as fast as they could.

Since all skills had a long cooldown; and stronger ones would have a longer cooldown, hence, the burst DPS could last for only a brief moment before it died down to normal attack rate. At most, they could keep up the firing for 70 seconds. That was the time limit. By then, all War Chariots would have been destroyed by the boss. Without the War Chariot HP sharing system, players without Transformation skills would not last for long. In fact, in less than 2 hits of {Void Blast}, they would die off easily.

"Foolish men. The great Demon race is not weak like the likes of you!" Kenzack spoke with a deep husky voice. He flicked his finger and summoned out 1,000 normal tier demons. Both Kenzack and Baa'ljilr then opened their mouths and two demons from the flock turned into a pile of bloody goo that got sucked into their mouths.

Zhang Yang smirked and immediately activated {Gates of Hell}.

A pair of large twin doors appeared from the ground with chains dangling from the side. Zhang Yang summoned the gates not too far from Kenzack and left it there as he rushed over to the summoned demons to give them a good {Horizontal Sweep} to their face. All that faced him were immediately turned into ashes. Their souls seeped out of their burned corpses and flew towards the {Gates of Hell}. With that single strike of {Horizontal Sweep}, Zhang Yang had killed 16 demons and summoned out 16 Elite tier Armageddon Harbinger to aid him in battle.

"What is this?" cried Kenzack when he saw the demons that Zhang Yang had summoned were attacking him. With rage, he bellowed with disbelief. "Human, how dare you enslave the demon race! I shall have your head and

fashion your skull as my candle stand!"

Kenzack swung his gigantic blade so fast that the area behind the blade became a vacuum. After a split second, the air was pulled towards him so violently that the earth was ripped out of the ground like papers in a storm.

"Heed my call, Demons! I am your lord! Obey me!" cried Kenzack as he tried to assume control over the demons that Zhang Yang had summoned through the {Gates of Hell}. However, unlike the Spectres, each demon would have their own conscience and showed no signs of rebelling Zhang Yang.

Not only were the demons were not listening to Kenzack, they were also attacking him since Kenzack was spamming {Void Blast}. Hence, as the number 1 target in their aggro system, the Harbingers were all targeting Kenzack alone.

"Imbeciles! This is blasphemy! How dare you attack your lord! Die! Treacherous demons!" Now that the Harbingers were attacking Kenzack, the aggro on Zhang Yang started to diminish greatly to point where Kenzack was no longer targeting Zhang Yang.

Even though the boss was strong, he was still a monster that is governed by the aggro system. Unless there is a special setting, the boss will always attack those who have the higher aggro. Zhang Yang had only needed to grab the aggro from time to time to help increase the survivability of the summoned Harbingers. That, and to prevent Kenzack from healing himself. Even though each Harbinger could last only for a little while, Zhang Yang was not bothered by the expendables.

That was only the first summoned wave. Everyone was proactive enough to let Zhang Yang be the only player to attack the boss' summoned units. Even though Zhang Yang alone could clear all 1,000 monsters, he would have to wait until he has over 3 EP to use {God of War Crushing Strike}, by then, Baa'ljilr had already swallowed the second demon and gained another 2.5% HP.

Still, even he had lost 3 demons out of the 1,000 summoned ones, and it

was a worthy trade. Zhang Yang killed all the remaining 996 demons around and turned them all into his own soldiers. All the demons first targeted Kenzack. However, even though he was huge, there was a limit as to how many Harbingers could attack him at the same time. Hence, those that could not get into range changed their targets to Baa'ljilr instead.

It was the system's setting. If a character is unable to attack the first aggro target due to geological or terrain influence, the character will be moved towards the second aggro target instead. However, if there is a moment where an attack is possible on the first aggro target, the character will then automatically abandon the second target.

After restoring a total of 5% HP from eating two demons, Baa'ljilr had not managed to retain his HP. Although, technically he had only lost the HP that he used to cast {Demon Amplification}, but the party's DPS was strong enough to hack away Baa'ljilr's HP down to 90% in a blink of an eye.

After 70 seconds, Kenzack summoned the second batch of thousand demons.

{God of War Crushing Strike}!

Zhang Yang Strength points was boosted up to 54,232 points with the help from Wei Yan Er {Strength Aura}. Hence, the damage dealt by {God of War Crushing Strike} was as high as 540,000, enough to kill every single normal tier demon around the vicinity. Since both the bosses had opened their mouths at the very instance the demons were summoned, only a total of 998 demons were killed and 998 Harbingers were summoned.

Just when Kenzack had cleared one-third of the "rebellious" demons, Zhang Yang had sent a whole new batch to him. How could one compare? Kenzack had only the ability to summon 1,000 normal tier demons, yet a human could summon about the same number of Elite tier demons out of thin air! Which one is the real demon lord, then? Zhang Yang? Or Kenzack!?

The previous batch of Harbingers had split into two factions where

those that were unable to attack Kenzack had moved to attack Baa'ljilr. Hence, when the newly summoned Harbingers came in, all of them went on to attack Baa'ljilr instead, further increasing the overall DPS on Baa'ljilr.

Crash!

All 20 Type IV War Chariots were destroyed by Kenzack. Losing the protection from the War Chariots, all 1,000 players that were mounted on the Chariots were left unprotected. Sadly, the boss had killed all of them with two hits of {Void Blast}. That is the true prowess of a Celestial boss. Without a certain level of strength and HP, players are not meant to fight a Celestial tier boss.

However, even though losing 1,000 player's worth of DPS, Baa'ljilr was clearly fated to die. Even though Baa'ljilr had his own unique A.I to control his speech, his skills were not controlled like a player. Once the cooldown was completed, Baa'ljilr will use his skill without fail. Hence, he was inevitably killing himself. Each time he uses {Demon Amplification} he will hack away his own HP. Hence, like the players and the demons that are summoned by Kenzack, Baa'ljilr was dying, rather quickly too at that.

Sadly, the player's side was also facing a similar threat by Kenzack. 100% attack boost was not something that healers could keep up with. They could, if there were 100 players like Han Ying Xue, possessing a powerful healer type S class Inheritance. But, there is only one Han Ying Xue, and she could never heal the damage dealt by Kenzack.

Everyone was merely surviving due to their powerful HP boost granted by their Inheritance Transformations. The fate of the boss fight now lay on how fast could Zhang Yang and his merry little guild kill off Baa'ljilr. The sooner, the better.

{Thousand Summon}! {Demonic Bond}!

{God of War Crushing Strike}!

As soon as Kenzack summons his demons, Zhang Yang would eliminate all of them with {God of War Crushing Strike}. The third wave of 998 Elite tier Harbinger was sent to the bosses again, and they were just in time to

fill in the gaps in the first wave. The continuous DPS cycle was astonishingly fast.

5 minutes later, with the second combo of {Charge Up Strike} and {Sky Slicer}, Baa'ljilr was killed.

Chapter 836: Killing the Celestial tier Boss

Well...to say that a Level 250 elite tier monster is strong...would be circumstantial. At most, their DPS level would be as only around 70,000. Based on their damage, they would not be a match to a Level 250 player with a full Ethereal gear. On the other hand, when fighting a boss, the ability to deal high damage and ANY damage at all would make all the difference in determining the victor.

As mentioned, Kenzack's {Void Blast} was an AoE powerful skill. Those without Transformations could not come close to the boss. Even with super-powered attacks, one would die without the ability to take several hits from that.

Elite monsters were different. Their HP would be as high as 125,000,000. They would last for as long as 3 minutes without healing while fighting the boss.

Hence, the ultimate rule of war: Only the living can be useful!

When Baa'ljilr was killed, Kenzack's attack plummeted without the support from {Demon Amplification}. Hence, the Harbingers that were summoned could now last as long as 5 minutes. Even though not all of the Harbingers could attack at the same time, as many as 300 could, since Kenzack was mother*ckingly huge.

Within 20 minutes of the active duration of {Gates of Hell}, the total summoned Harbinger could provide as high as 25.2 billion DPS. Bear in mind that Kenzack had only over 25 billion HP. Of course, the boss had the ability to restore his HP, but was only limited to 1% HP every minute, since Zhang Yang would eliminate all the summon demons at the very second they pop out. 1% HP would be 250,000,000. Hence, 20 minutes would be 5,000,000,000 HP. That was an amount that Zhang Yang and his entire party could handle without breaking a sweat.

In terms of DPS, Zhang Yang's party would have made the past the requirements by a long shot. The problem was their endurance. If Baa'ljilr is not killed soon, they would have 100% lost the fight, even with the help

from {Gates of Hell}.

When Baa'ljilr was killed, the entire party's HP was fluctuating at around 10% HP. Han Ying Xue was forced to use {Milkmaid Deity's Ripple} to fully restore everyone's HP. It was only then they could pull through the hurdle. Any slower, Baa'ljilr would have cast one more {Demon Amplification}, allowing Kenzack to kill most of the players in sight. After Han Ying Xue's massive milk splatters, other healers were able to put their best to heal everyone else.

Since none of the summoned harbingers could last longer than 5 minutes, Zhang Yang was targeted when the front ones were killed by Kenzack. Chains of skills were blasted on him, followed by the AoE {Void Blast}, causing Zhang Yang to take extreme damage. Just as the AoE skills were strong, the single target skills were even deadlier!

Kenzack was a rare kind of boss that had both magic and physical attack abilities. His skills, {Shadow Arrow} and {Cleave} did not share the same cooldown. Hence, when the boss could use {Cleave} with his right hand, he could also blast out {Shadow Arrow} with his right. Both of the skills had only 2 seconds of cooldown. Coupled with {Void Blast}, the total DPS of Kenzack on Zhang Yang was around 1 million. It was almost the same or even stronger than Zhang Yang's own DPS.

A boss' strength would not come from a single target skill, but his AoE skills. The more allies you bring, the deadlier the boss would be.

HOWEVER! Even if the boss is super strong, 1 million DPS would take 200 seconds to kill Zhang Yang. With Han Ying Xue's super jugs and the other healers around, it would take much longer than 200 seconds to kill Zhang Yang.

"Is it just me, or that we are really going to win this fight?"

"Hell yea!"

"What a day, just when I just popped my cherry with my girlfriend, we are going to kill a Celestial tier boss as well! What a day!"

"Hahaha! Is it a girl, or a blow up doll that I saw in your purchase history

from Amazon Prime?"

"Shut up!"

Even though they had all fought Angus before, it did not count as the First Kill record since most of the damage was on the NPCs instead of players. Even though Zhang Yang was there all the time to attack, he did not manage to get the First Kill Achievement. Things were different then, even though he had the help from the summoned Harbinger, they were all but the product of his summoning skills. They were all considered to be an attacking character, branching out of Zhang Yang.

It would seem that Lone Desert Smoke was going for the kill. While they were getting close to it by the minute, the other players from other seven regions were too busy with their own matters.

There were almost no players around the canyon then, but they were not wasting time sitting down idly. Initially, they all thought that Lone Desert Smoke was going to be just another guild that was bound to fail the fight. In fact, for the past month, players in the forum had been on a heated discussion about which guild in the world could be the first to kill Kenzack. Before Lone Desert Smoke stepped into the ring, all guilds that had ever challenged Kenzack had failed with absolute certainty. When Lone Desert Smoke had managed to kill off Baa'ljilr, players that were observing the fight had realized that Lone Desert Smoke did have a chance to kill Kenzack.

Without delay, they had immediately summoned all their friends and guild mates to gather at the canyon. Even though they would never have the privilege to loot the boss drops, they could at least deal a speck of damage to the boss to have their name recorded along with the First Kill Achievement. It was a feat that could be bragged about in the future! Imagine picking up chicks and showing them your name along with other players that were involved in killing the first Celestial boss!

Sadly, it was just a pipe dream. As mentioned before, without the HP boost from Transformation skills, there was no hope for random players to approach the boss without dying first.

Losing the powerful attack buff, Kenzack had also lost the tide of war, even though his own basic damage was strong. On Zhang Yang's side, however, they had the best equipment sets in the entire game. Even his party members were equipped with at least one article of Celestial tier equipment! The rest were all equipped with Ascended tier equipment and had the overall DPS of a warring nation! As such, in less than 10 minutes, Kenzack had lost over 49% HP!

"This is not going well for us. Lone Desert Smoke might take the First Kill!"

"Call all professional players in the guild. We might stand a chance!"

"No. All of our strong players had just fought the boss yesterday and failed. They would have to wait for 2 more days until the mark expires."

"What are you saying? Are you telling me to sit down here helplessly as Lone Desert Smoke takes the first ever Celestial tier boss First Kill?"

"Do you have any other bright ideas?"

A minor dispute began amongst the other bystanders. However, no matter how many plans they could chug out, they had no way of countering {Void Blast} without a War Chariot or Transformation skill. Come 1 or 1 million, their fate would still be the same.

40%...30%...20%...

By then, Kenzack had reached both the berserk state and the vulnerable state.

With rage, his attack speed rose. As a demon lord, he was surrounded by his own kind and was about to be killed by humans!

The boss' skill spamming rate was increased to 1 second at a time! However, that was the limit. It was not possible for the skill to have a higher speed.

As such, the entire guild survivability had dropped once more to when the boss had the attack buff. The healing rate of all healers was not able to hold. Many players started knocking on death's door.

Luckily, the summoned Harbinger were rather tanky enough to last for 2 and a half minutes. Since the boss' own summoned demons were useless, to begin with, Zhang Yang alone had no problems killing the boss. The cycle of Harbingers being killed and replaced at the front line would last until the boss dies!

As time passed by the seconds, more and more players were killed. Basically, almost 95% players had already used their life preserving skills during the fight with Baa'ljilr. All of them were still in a cooldown phase and could not do anything to resist the grasp of death.

From a few hundred Transformed Lone Desert Smoke players, they were all left with less than 30 players now. The boss was still left with over 11% HP.

Zhang Yang frowned and immediately unleashed {Shadow Clone} and consumed an {Amateur Fire Power Transmuted Grade 10} potion.

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

With the help of his shadow clones, Zhang Yang's {Sky Slicer} skill was able to reach 200% its original power, dealing as much as 500 million damage.

"ARGH! DIRTY PESTS! DIE!"

Such a powerful damage was as equivalent to 2% of his HP. Like all beings that are close to death, the boss started to attack without restraint. All skills had only a 1-second interval rate and that was a rather fatal threat to Zhang Yang then.

Fearing the worse, Zhang Yang cried at the top of his lungs. "Do not slow down! Focus on attacking and attacking alone!"

The rest of the core party members nodded their heads and stopped trying to evade skills. All skills, MP and EP alike were used up to cast all sort of skills to end the boss.

9%...7%...4%...

"It's so close!"

"Well, don't stop now!"

"I can smell it! I can smell the Celestial tier scent in the air!"

Compared to the excitement of Lone Desert Smoke members, the rest of the bystanders had lost their color in their face. Unlike the supporting allies like Crimson Rage, other China players were rather envious of Lone Desert Smoke and were even willing to trade their life to prevent Lone Desert Smoke from killing the boss!

There was a saying. Beauty lies in the eyes of the beholder. Yet, if they fail to attain it, they would seek to destroy it.

That was what the bystanders were thinking then. However, no matter how much negativity they would muster, Kenzack was killed successfully.

"I will return. I will be back. I am but returning to the arms of the true King of Demons. I will be back. 100 years or 10,000 years...I shall be back to lay waste upon his wretched land. Mark....my...words...." With his last words, the massive giant falls to the ground, crashing like a towering structure and bursting out radiant loots.

'Ding! Congratulations for being the first in the game to kill an Open World Celestial tier boss! Your glorious deeds shall forever be recorded in the Hall of Fame. Please key in your party name for the whole world to know!'

When the system notification popped out and the input box was showed to Zhang Yang, he quickly inserted the regular advertisement he so often used and called out for Wei Yan Er. "Little brat! Get the loots and let's bail!"

"I'm one step ahead of you!" cried Wei Yan Er as she had already picked up more than half of the loot.

After submitting the name input, the server channel flashed with red texts to inform all players across all regions of the feat.

Players from China were constantly observing the fight and had prepared for the sad news. On the other hand, players of other regions were gravely saddened. Regions like North America, Europe, and India had

only one city left to reclaim! However, they would still need at least 20 days to have the authority to fight Kenzack, then. Although it was speculated, none could predict that China would be the first to kill Kenzack before them!

Say bye bye to Celestial tier set equipment...

With a quick command, Zhang Yang ordered everyone in the guild that was still alive to teleport to Anthylor. Players that were rushing over from Anthylor had arrived a few seconds too late. Even though they could not fight the boss, they could still kill players! They might still have a chance to get their hands on Celestial tier equipment if they manage to kill Zhang Yang and his team!

However, when they saw Zhang Yang's silhouette, they could only catch a glimpse of his smug grin before he disappeared with a beam of light. Zhang Yang had returned to Anthylor, a place where PvP is restricted.

Chapter 837: Goddess of War Scion Form

"Hurry! Give it! Give it!"

When everyone had returned to the Holy City, all eyes were locked on Wei Yan Er, as she was the only person then that was holding all of Kenzack's drops.

The little girl fidgeted around shyly and blushed. "Erhm...Please don't stare at me like that. I'm bashful, you know?"

At that moment, everyone that was close to Wei Yan Er was on the urge of actually vomiting in their mouth. Bashful? Really? If Wei Yan Er knew shame, the sun would rise from the north and sets in the south!

Zhang Yang laughed till his tummy ached a little. He wiped his tears away and laughed as he said, "Please stop making us laugh. It's time for our prizes!"

"Okay...Just...don't stare at me. I aware of my own beauty."

Wei Yan Er opened her inventory U.I and pulled out a cape that shone with the colors of the rainbow. She then passes it to Han Ying Xue.

"Cousin sister, this is yours!"

It was a Celestial tier set equipment part, [God of Life's Glory Cape].

As per discussed, those who already possessed one piece of the set equipment will have the priority, in order to complete the set equipment to further increase the party's strength by completing the set equipment as soon as they can. Hence, Han Ying Xue, who already possessed [God of Life's Glory Heels], had received the cape and was able to activate the first set equipment set effect. That is, "Grants a 20% chance to repeat a conjured spell after casting."

"Sister Sun! This is yours!" Wei Yan Er took out another cape and gave it to Sun Xin Yu.

"Uncle! This is yours," she handed one to Hundred Shots.

"Pervy Dream!"

...

All of the Celestial tier set equipment loot from Kenzack were all Capes. Those who had obtained their first set equipment had also obtained their second part which allowed all of them to activate their first set effects.

"This is mine!" cried Wei Yan Er as she wrapped a cape around her neck whilst jumping around happily. "I look so cool!"

"Well? Don't stop there."

After taking the 6th cape, Wei Yan Er pulled out the 7th and gave it to Endless Starlight. "Pervy Star boy. Take it. It's specially made for Sacred Knights. Hmph. Consider yourself lucky!"

"Woohoo!" cried Endless Starlight with joy as he was the only Sacred Knight in the main and secondary party.

While everyone else was waiting patiently, Fatty Han could not take it anymore and sulked. "Where's mine..."

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were the same class, hence, it was inevitable that when it comes to equipment distribution, there will be a conflict between the two of them. During the first round of equipment distribution, Hundred Shots had won the roll for the Celestial tier set equipment. Hence, he had the priority for the second Celestial tier set equipment as well. Sadly, there was nothing he could do then but to bully Endless Starlight to release his pent up stress.

The 8th Celestial tier set equipment was a Cryomancer type, which was passed to Cheng Xue Yao. She was still unable to equip it, as her level was still low.

Zhang Yang was still empty handed then. "Hey...is there any for Guardians?"

"Hmph...? Let me check...Tch...tch...tch..." said Wei Yan Er as she pretended to fake a disappointed expression. Zhang Yang knew that she was lying, since her eyes were moving left and right. If she is playing poker, she would have lost the game in the first round. Zhang Yang decided to humor the little girl and walked away from her with his head

down. As such, the little girl felt happy that she had succeeded at "tricking" Zhang Yang by fooling him. She laughed, tapped his shoulders and gave him a cape. "Haha! You stupid brother-in-law! This little lady has just bamboozled you!"

Zhang Yang took the cape and faked a grateful face before having the cap identified, immediately on the spot. It would make no difference for him to have the cape identified by an NPC or the scroll, since the price would be the same.

[God Killer Cape] (Celestial, Cape)

Vitality: +25730

Strength: +3312

Dexterity: +3312

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 51,460.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 2,918 damage from attack.

Use: Receives the Divine Ichor and gains immunity and invulnerability for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 250

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

God Killer Set Equipment (2/8) Completion.

Two Equip Effect: Increases your Damage reduction passive effect by 20%.

A 20% damage reduction passive boost!

In a shielded status, Zhang Yang damage reduction passive was at 40%. With the use of {God of War Shield} he would gain up to 60%! After reaching Level 220, the skill {Rock Solid} was maxed out to Level 10. After

being enhanced by the [Book of Revelation,] the skill increased Defense value was boosted to 150%, and 30% damage reduction boost. In conclusion, without {Shield Wall}, Zhang Yang would gain something as high as a 90% damage reduction!

By then, activating {Shield Wall} would be meaningless, since the damage reduction effect provided by the skill would not add to the previous number, but multiply it to the previous number. I.e. $1 - 0.1 \times 25\% = 97.5\%$ of damage reduction.

Zhang Yang had successfully increased his Defense with just an addition of a Celestial tier equipment! That's how powerful a Celestial tier set equipment is! Broken? Heck yeah it is!

With Zhang Yang being the last to claim, all of the Celestial tier set equipment parts had been distributed. There was a total of seven players who had activated their second set equipment set effects. They were Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, Lost Dream, and Hundred Shots.

Cheng Xue Yao and Endless Starlight had received a piece of the Celestial tier set equipment. One more Celestial boss like Kenzack, and they might receive a second part to activate their set effects.

Besides the nine pieces of set equipment, Kenzack had also dropped four regular Celestial tier equipment. Naturally, they were all given to those without Celestial tier set equipment, like Fatty Han and Galileo.

As for the random items, 17 [Skill Point Crystals] were distributed accordingly. 12 [Advance Aura Stone] and two [Forbidden Scrolls] were stored in the guild storage. Seven skills books were up for rolls. There were also 12 [Advance Demonic Pearls] found, and were all stored in the guild storage.

Sitting quietly in the corner of Wei Yan Er was one black colored crystal rock that had an irregular shape. It was not smooth, and had several perfectly cut edges all over the rock. Wei Yan Er took out the crystal and showed it to Zhang Yang.

"This thing is weird. This piece of rock does not have an item name nor a

description. Could it be a random bug?"

Felice jumped out of Zhang Yang's Battle Companion U.I and cried out. "Big brother!" She instinctively reached out her right hand to grab the crystal but immediately retracted her hands.

"Oh ho? Little Felice wants this? I'll give it to you then. Just greet me nicely!" said Wei Yan Er with her chest held up high.

"Big Sister. Can I have that crystal?" said Felice with her most earnest tone ever, which made Wei Yan Er so happy, even though Felice was clearly taller and older than her.

Zhang Yang felt his heart was about to jump out of his chest. Could the crystal rock be a catalyst to unlocking Felice's third seal?

"Here you go! What a nice girl!" Wei Yan Er patted Felice's head.

Felice took the crystal in her hands and placed it close to her chest. The black, soot-like crystal then gave out a blinding light that immediately encased Felice into a large, egg-like structure that was as tall as Zhang Yang.

"F*ck yeah! Finally!" said Zhang Yang to himself. The crystal was to unlock Felice's third seal! Zhang Yang was breathing raggedly as he was excited to see how strong would Felice be. Could she have another form to transform into? Could she gain growth rate? All that would have to wait until she hatches out of the egg.

With the weird, egg-like structure sitting idly in the center of a busy city, many players could not help but examine the thing. It was sticking out like a sore thumb! Luckily, PvP or any attack was restricted in the city. Hence, besides Zhang Yang, others had could not select the egg to view its description.

Everyone lingered a little while to see what the egg would do, but left after waiting for several hours. Zhang Yang decided to loiter around Anthylor until something happens. Lo and behold, after three days of random activities around the city, a bright light shone brightly from where the egg was, and Zhang Yang could spot it from the other end of the city.

Zhang Yang was around the auction house when he noticed the bright light. He then immediately closed the U.I and sped towards the egg. Halfway through the city, Zhang Yang could see Felice soaring in the sky in her Dragonhawk form.

"Big brother!" she cried happily and she shot down towards Zhang Yang at breakneck speed. Right before she landed, she morphed back into her human form and made a crack on the tiles in front of Zhang Yang.

"I missed you, Felice!" Zhang Yang caressed Felice's forehead and quickly examines her properties.

The most obvious change that she had was that her Star Growth rate had increased to 13 Stars!

[Felice] (Humanoid)

Level: 222

HP: 6,298,830 (With Vitality Aura)

Defense: 34,900

Melee Attack: 442,688 – 542,688

Skills:

[Blazing Dragon's Spear]: Deals 200% melee Fire damage to a target. Requirement: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 second. Cost: 50 Energy.

[Dragon's Spear Barrage]: Deals 300% melee physical damage to a target and had a 30% chance to stun for 5 seconds. Effective on Boss monsters with lower success rate. Requirement: Melee Weapon. Cooldown: 1 minute. Cost: 50 Energy.

[Absolute Defense]: Gains 99% damage reduction passive for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 4 hours. Skill can only be used in human form. Will be ineffective in other forms.

[Dragonhawk Form], [Spectral Tiger Form], [Tree of Life Form]

[Goddess of Life Scion Form]: Transcends humanity and gains the primordial form of the Goddess of War. Gains 300% attack damage and

all attacks will have Chaos attribute. Increases 300% Defense and 2000% HP boost. All skills available in human form will also be available during the Goddess of Life Scion Form. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Activating the Goddess of War Scion Form will trigger all Dragonhawk Berserk, Spectral Tiger Berserk, and Tree of Life Transformation cooldowns.

(Fourth Seal)

Note: Player Zhan Yu's Battle Companion.

What a deadly upgrade...

Without Transformation, Zhang Yang had only roughly 5,340,000 HP. That was with two Celestial tier set equipment in hand, yet he was still weaker than an Ascended tier Felice! It was all mainly due to her Growth stat being at 13 Stars! One Vitality point would grant her 13 points of HP instead of a player's usual 10 HP! The {Vitality Aura} provided by Zhang Yang will stack on that hence, giving Felice the ability to gain 18 HP per Vitality stat.

It was then obvious that after the fourth and final seals are broken, Felice would gain the Celestial tier and gain a 14 Star growth or even 15, to reach the peak of what a Battle Companion could be.

Huhuhu. Celestial tier. A god like entity!

Sadly, there were not more forms after the third seal. Instead, Felice had gained a Transformation for her human form. Her skills {Blazing Dragon Spear} and {Dragon Spear Barrage} had also gained a massive boost!

In the past, Zhang Yang had always had Felice to attack in her Dragonhawk form, since she could fly and her Fire-based attacks will ignore all Defense values. After the upgrade, Felice's human form had the highest DPS power, as well as the strongest Defense and highest HP limit.

To summarize it, Felice's human form will have 310,000 DPS, while her Dragonhawk form will have only 290,000. Based on the Defense value, both forms were about equal.

Chapter 838: Song of Despair

BANG!

Zhong Xiu Hua's fist had only made a tiny bump on the plastic table in his office. With rage, he lifted his right fist and slams it down again as if he was dissatisfied for not being able to break it. "How is Lone Desert Smoke taking all the good stuff in the game! How could we allow Lone Desert Smoke – no! How could we allow Zhang Yang to beat us!? US!? We are the Eternal Flame guild! Is this goes on, how are we going to be China's number one guild?"

Standing on the opposite side of the table were two grown men in their early adulthoods. They were Scholar Musou and Longrich. Both of them stood there like scarecrows, motionless as they could not muster up any excuses to answer Zhong Xiu Hua.

The atmosphere of the office grew heavier.

After a long silence, Scholar Musou finally found the courage to talk. "It...it's because Zhang Yang has the {Gates of Hell}. The skill had allowed him to fight the boss toe to toe. Without it, not even Zhang Yang's Defenses would hold on."

"Tell me something THAT I DON'T KNOW!" Zhong Xiu Hua screamed. "What am I hiring you for when all you do is give me excuses!"

Both Longrich and Scholar Musou clenched their fists. For the past few days, Eternal Flame finances had dried up. Zhong Xiu Hua had not been issuing his regular member's salary for more than a month. Still, it not for his "princely" social and politic status, the entire guild would have long been abandoned and disbanded.

When a guild is built using the attraction of money, it would be greatly impacted when the money stops coming in. Once the promised wages are delayed, people will start taking actions. One more month and the guild will eventually be empty, no matter how prominent the guild master may be.

Technically, in their current predicament, Eternal Flame stills stood amongst the top 5 guilds in China. With that standing, there should be companies seeking to be their sponsors. If that is the case, how did the finances suddenly go rogue? The reason was rather simple, actually. Eternal Flame's main sponsor was none other than Zhong Xiu Hua's own mother, the CEO of Hua Yi Trust Fund. Since the entire cooperation was facing problems in the real world, the sponsored monetary funds were cut off.

According to his mother, ever since the Trust Fund gone public, there was an unknown faction that had been buying up a large share of the company. The person was buying so many shares realized that his position was starting to threaten the authority of his mother. Hence, to prevent the liquidation of the company's shares, his mother had been cutting off all outgoing fundings to counter the buyer.

That action was uncalled for but was inevitable. There was nothing that Zhong Xiu Hua could do to make things right. He was not talented in the game. He had been relying a lot on his members to do the deeds. As such, all the sponsored money that came in was shared with others but not himself. When the money stopped coming in from his own family side, he was cut off completely. That had made Zhong Xiu Hua incredibly angry.

"Master Zhong. This may sound harsh but, there is nothing we could do about Lone Desert Smoke nor Zhang Yang at the moment. If we would want Eternal Flame to burn brightly in all of China, there's only one way to do it," said Longrich.

"What ingenious idea have you come up with?" said Zhong Xiu Hua, trying to hold back his urge to punch anyone in the face.

"Kill. Murder."

Zhong Xiu Hua widened his eyes at the idea of killing. However, it did not take long before common sense kicked in. It was not his humanity, but the consequences of his action that might cause the Sun Family to meddle in his matters again like before. He will be facing with Sun Xin Yu's wrath if things get out of control. No matter what happens, he still had

something to hold on to, he would not be willing to give up his life for someone like Zhang Yang!

"No. That's not efficient enough. I want finer method. I want to surgically remove Zhang Yang as a threat from my life!"

...

In the headquarters of Silky Soft Holdings. Zhang Yang's main office.

"Mr. Zhang. I have managed to procure another 20 billion dollars. This would allow us have more than 50% of all the share for Hua Yi Trust Funds," said a young man that was busy tapping on a digital calculator on Zhang Yang's desk.

"Very good." Zhang Yang nodded and swiveled his chair around. "Do report back to me when you have it done."

"Yes, sir," said the young man and he went back to his own world of digits and numerals.

Zhang Yang crossed his fingers and rested his chin on them. With a satisfied feeling in his guts, Zhang Yang smirked. Zhang Yang had played a risk. He had pulled out 70 billion dollars from his own company and borrowed 20 billion dollars from the bank, all for the sake of investing. No matter what it takes, he must have Hua Yi Trust Funds under him. That way, he will ultimately cut off all fundings of Zhong Xiu Hua.

Like a fierce lion that is defanged and declawed, Eternal Flame will, ironically, go up in flames. Like The Myth, the guild would never prosper when it is built up using money. By then, there would be no way for Zhong Xiu Hua to remain in the game.

...

The official site had released a new info along with a new update to the game. Along with the end of the Spectre Invasion and the Demon Descent patch, all Celestial tier bosses will be revealed to the world, allowing players to fight them openly.

Unlike the bosses of other races, the Nine Demon Lord and the Seven

Spectre Kings were revealed to the world. Even though Angus and Kenzack are already killed, there will always be a new Celestial boss to replace their seats to keep the number of Celestial tier bosses the same.

After a Celestial boss was killed, the game system would take up to 30 days (real time) to respawn a new one. Those still roaming in the game will have no changes applied to them. On the other hand, the newly spawned boss will have its difficulty and level adjusted according to the average players' Level. However, the system had not released any more information on that matter.

So far, there were 16 Celestial tier boss in the entire game. There were 8 roaming in the Level 270 – Level 300 map, 6 in the Level 240 – Level 270 map, 1 in the Level 210 – Level 240 map, and 1 in the Level 150 – Level 180 map. One of them, that had been alive for as long as the game started had been doing extremely well. The Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich. He had been having his fun time killing countless players.

Zhang Yang was only around Level 220 and the boss the was most suitable for him will be in the Level 210 – Level 240 map. It was better to fight a boss that is within their level radius than fight a boss that is a killer wolf under a sheepskin.

The most important rule to fight any boss is to never be outside the level range. That being said, now that the developers had openly revealed all the bosses' locations, clearly they would not be an easy target.

Zhang Yang got back home, did a little adult recreational fun time with the ladies, and logged back into the game. His first target to slay was The Demon Lord Regalia. His location, a valley.

By then, there were already many players that were ready in the game, waiting for the rest of the Lone Desert Smoke main party members to assemble. While Lone Desert Smoke was still making their preparations for the attack, other guild master feared that they might not have a shot at digging the gold mine. Hence, even though other guilds were not as prepared, they had already set off to the valley. The battle was already ongoing when Zhang Yang and his attack squad arrived. When he did, he

saw one massive guild trying to fight, but they were all killed in less than 10 seconds!

Astonished at the boss' prowess, Zhang Yang was determined to find a weakness that he could exploit.

[Demon Lord Regalia] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 240

HP: 24,000,000,000

Defense: 60,865

Melee Attack: 662,803 – 862,803

Magic Attack: 401,779 – 481,779

Skills:

[Force Strike]: Deals 100% melee physical attack. 50% chance to strike an additional attack.

[Demonic Soul]: Unleash pools of demonic souls within 300 meters around the caster. Players that made contact with the pool will be converted into Regalia's servant.

[Fiery Blast]: Deals 200% Magic Fire Attack that will explode and deals 500,000 additional fire damage to all targets within 10 meters of the initial target.

[Tornado Cleave]: Deals 100% melee physical attack to all targets within 300 meters.

[Demonic Constitution]: Restores 1% HP every 30 seconds. Recovery rate will not be affected by any skills or effect.

[No Escape]: After entering 300 meters to Regalia, players cannot leave 300 meters from Regalia or will be subjected to instant death.

[Death Mark]: Inflicted on death after being killed by Regalia. Players with the debuff cannot enter within 300 meters of Regalia or they will be subjected to instant death. Effect lasts for 72 hours.

[Song of Despair]: Sings a song of despair around 300 meters around

Regalia. Initial damage of 1,000,000 Chaos Damage will be inflicted and will gain a stacking damage of 1,000,000 every second. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Note: A Demon Lord that stands out amongst the rest of the Demon Lords. Regalia is a demon that kills all that encounters him to hide his presence. No one knows how strong he is. Caution would be an understatement when one approaches him.

Zhang Yang finally understood why all the players that had charged in earlier than he did were killed after 10 seconds. It was the doing of the skill {Song of Despair}. After simple calculations, the total damage that could be dealt was as high as 465,000,000. That's a skill that was even stronger than any [Forbidden Scroll] in the entire game! No one. Not even Zhang Yang could survive with his Transformation.

With such a skill in his skill list, Regalia will undoubtedly be the strongest god amongst all gods! The chances of winning was an absolute zero!

However, the developers will never make a boss or a quest that can never be solved. However, to counter the boss' {Song of Despair} and kill the boss, all players in the world must a full Celestial tier set equipment and the highest class Inheritance, along with the strongest Battle Mount to win!

Such a requirement would be absurd. Hence, unless there is a method to nullify or weaken the skill, {Song of Despair} will be treated as a bug that makes the boss undefeatable.

"Holy mother of all crap in my *ss. How are we supposed to fight that?" said Fatty Han. Everyone else shared the same thoughts and was prepared to make their way back to the Holy City. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, had been busy trying to find a way to defeat him. When his sea of thoughts failed him, he turned to the outside world, scouting around any possible points of interest that may help. Suddenly, he saw something and shot down to the ground.

"Heyyya! Where are you going!" cried Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang ignored her and continued downward and finally landed in front of a small dwarf NPC.

[Salygos] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 240

Note: Even though Salygos is a dwarf, there was an unexplainable power emitting from him.

"This place is not for the weakhearted. Why are you here? I must urge you to leave for your own safety." Said Zhang Yang.

Salygos frowned and begun to spat at Zhang Yang. "I am here for the like of you weaklings!"

He then calmed down and explained, "Regalia's strength is currently too strong for anyone, he holds part of the Death God's power. If you try to fight him now, you will be killed."

Wei Yan Er had managed to catch up with Zhang Yang, along with the rest of the main party members. However, there was someone else along with them. Dusk Phoenix came down and winked seductively at Zhang Yang, Hourglass Figure came down and blatantly ignored Zhang Yang. And there were more other random players that Zhang Yang recognized as part of the elites. It was then made clear to him that he was not the only "smart" one that were trying to find a way to solve the boss' extreme difficulty.

"To defeat Regalia, you must find the Staff of Primordial Life. That magic staff will be your only hope that could purge the Death God's power from him."

Every word that came out of his mouth seems to be emitting a powerful shock wave that made the ground crack and the dust falling off Zhang Yang's armor. Even the valley was vibrating from his sheer power.

The moment he had finished his speech, the dwarf glowed in a bright light. Zhang Yang noticed a large shadow that flew over him and noticed a large blue dragon had flown away.

"The Staff of Primordial Life?"

Obviously, the Staff of Primordial Life was meant to remove the skill {Song of Despair} from the boss list. That, or have it greatly weakened so that players could stand a chance to defeat him.

At then, Zhang Yang had an epiphany.

"I need you guys to handle this. I've got something urgent that needs to be done as soon as possible."

Zhang Yang shot to the sky immediately, before anyone had any chance to say a word.

Chapter 839: The Fallen Wind Ranger

Back when Zhang Yang was still roaming the Beginner's Village as a fresh young greenhorn, he had already accepted a main story quest about the Demon Lord, and the Fallen Wind Ranger Calina. However, due to the outrageous quest requirements, he had prolonged the quest until he was Level 100 to gather the required items. After that, he had accepted the quest - "Quell thy Anger" where he was given a quest item to use on Calina to finish the quest.

It may sound simple, but would a Celestial tier Demon boss let you touch her *ss? Back then, before the killing of Kenzack, the system had not revealed the location of Calina, and that was why Zhang Yang had completely forgotten about her. However, when he saw the information about the nine Demon Lords, and the Seven Spectre Kings, he took note of Calina and was ready to resume his quest.

Calina was residing in the Level 240 – Level 270 map of Lonhana. Technically, a player would be required to be around Level 240 to have the capabilities to fight the boss. Any lower, and he would be in trouble thanks to the Level Suppression system. Not even a full set of Celestial tier set equipment could save him. Zhang Yang was different, his quest did not require him to kill Calina. Instead, he was only required to "poke" Calina, and he would succeed. He might take some time to complete the mission, but since defeating Regalia would require the [Primordial Staff of Life] which will require some time before it can be found, Zhang Yang could take his time finishing the quest.

Zhang Yang flew along the route and reached the Lonhana map. There, all the monsters were at least Level 240, and more than half of them were higher than Level 250. The moment Zhang Yang set foot on the map, his Level 222 pathetic, under-leveled character had drawn in as many monsters like a bleeding bait in a shark's den.

Zhang Yang opted for the flight and fight technique. If he could not outrun the monsters, he would fight them. As long as he has the Phoenix pet and the powerful Felice by his side, he could easily defeat most of the

monsters there even though they were elite tier. That might take up some time, though. As such, after fighting and running his way through the map, Zhang Yang had arrived at the lair of Calina, the Ghastly Forest.

As an elf, Calina would surely pick a lair that is situated in a densely growing forest. After she was demonized, her choice of habitat remained the same. The only thing that had changed was the fact that her demonic aura would taint the environment and turn the entire atmosphere around the forest somewhat "gloomy". Without the help of the navigation minimap, anyone would be lost in that forest.

Zhang Yang entered the forest and could no longer fly around. Every short distance, tree branches would block the way and force the Phoenix to descend. Hence, Zhang Yang decided to travel by foot, which was ultimately faster than flying. Despite being a Legendary Beast with an inextinguishable flame, the gloominess of the forest was caused by a Celestial tier boss, hence, the illumination of the Phoenix was only good for around 3 meters in front of Zhang Yang. Surely enough, if the Phoenix could reach Level 230 soon, it would be upgraded to a Celestial tier beast! By then, it would and should be on par with a Celestial tier boss!

Ni shi shi shi shi~~

Eerie laughs echoed through the mist in the forest and three shadowy figures appeared in front of Zhang Yang. Despite being slightly shadowed by the lack of light, Zhang Yang could make out its shape and appearance. The problem was, he could not detect any faces! They were all magically formed out of the mist and only had humanoid shapes. The rest was simply shadow and darkness.

[Demonic Mist Guardian] (Elite, Demon)

Level: 250

HP: 125,000,000

Defense: 15,350

Melee Attack: 109,064 – 169,064

Skills:

[Misty Spear]: Collects the magic in the air and thrusts to stab a target. Deals 100% melee physical attack.

[Mystify]: When in danger, the Guardian will discard its physical form to restore 1% HP every second. Receives 50% less damage. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: The Guardians of the Ghastly Forest that are created from the Demonic aura of Calina. Naturally born to kill, destroy, and mutilate all living beings that enter their domain.

There were three of them, and all of them was collecting the air around them to form long spears in their hands. Once the spear solidified, the monsters then hurled the spear towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang launched himself to the front and attacked the first monsters with a normal attack to charge up his Rage points. Once he was done, he used {Charge Up Strike} and {Sky Slicer}.

The two most powerful attacks were unleashed and dealt more than 100 million damage after {Sky Slicer} had reached the 10th strike. The monster took so much damage and immediately turned into a clump of mist that was still visible enough due to its color. However, Zhang Yang immediately landed {Destructive Smash} to reduce its healing rate and kill it easily with the combination of Felice and Phoenix.

Zhang Yang turned to the second Guardian and cast {Glare of the Death God}. The skull appeared on the monster's character after a few hits and swallowed the monster whole.

2 down, 1 more to go. If anyone else besides the usual crowd around Zhang Yang was present during the fight scene, they would grovel at Zhang Yang's feet and beg him for some fighting lessons.

Elite monsters in higher level maps were extremely strong and cannot be underestimated when they are in large groups. Fight three elite tier monsters would require a team of 5, well-equipped players to fight on equal level. 3v1? That's impossible!

For example, player A has 300 HP. Player B, C, and D has only 100 HP.

All four players have the same attack power. If Player A were to fight player B, C, and D in an orderly manner, all of them would die eventually. However, if player A were to attack player B, C, and D at the same time, player A would die before anyone else does.

Zhang Yang had not only chosen to fight all three at once, but he had also managed to kill 2 of them within 20 seconds! Though, he was technically using those broken OP skills. {Glare of the Death God} and {Sky Slicer}.

{Glare of the Death God} had an hour long cooldown while {Sky Slicer} had a shorter 5-minute cooldown. Zhang Yang would be lying if he said that he was satisfied with them. Since he had used up all the stronger skills, he had to fight the last monster normally.

Even though the monsters do have powerful attacks, Zhang Yang had super defense to counter that. He had enabled his first set equipment set effect and gained 20% damage reduction. If he uses {God of War Shield}, his Defense would be so strong that the elite tier monster would not be able to deal any damage at all!

However, {God of War Shield} had over an hour long cooldown. He would not want to waste that skill, hence, he decided to use {Rock Solid}. Once the skill is used, his Defense would reach as high as 89,050 points, and gain up to 70% damage reduction for only 10 seconds. Although it was short, the main point was in that 10 seconds, the monsters would not even make a scratch on Zhang Yang! 60 seconds cooldown time was short enough for Zhang Yang to spam them endlessly.

As if that was not enough, Zhang Yang still had the Inheritance recovery skill which was almost the same as gaining a 10-second long invulnerability effect! That, and {Block}, {Blast Wave}, {Brutal Smash}, and other status effect skills. He did not even need Felice to morph into her Tree of Life form!

"Big brother sure is strong!" cried Felice as she clapped her hands and jumped around like a little girl. How could anyone get angry at such cute little girl?

Zhang Yang laughed and pats her head as thanks. He then walked to the corpses of the Guardians and left when there was no loot to be picked.

Along the route towards Calina's lair, Zhang Yang encountered more of those same monsters. Sadly, his killing speed was not as fast as the first group of monsters due to the cooldown of the skills. In fact, he could only perform as fast as the first kill once after a long duration. Still, he had Felice and Phoenix helping him out. In the end, it was no longer as fast as the first one.

Due to the slow killing speed and the insanely huge forest size, Zhang Yang set his course to the center of the forest and only managed to find what he sought for after 10 plus days. Sitting quietly in a large clearing was a palace that was made of wood. That should be where Calina was waiting.

As he walked, he thought to himself. "The quest to procuring the Primordial Staff of Life is not going to be easy. We must first collect all 8 parts of the staff and then fix them all together to get the complete form. If I'm not wrong, there're 6 parts found and are all in the hands of different guilds. It's going to be hard to have them hand over the parts."

Naturally, collecting all parts to form a complete [Primordial Staff of Life] would be hard. Of course, the guilds that had them would never hand over the parts they had without a price. Perhaps a guild war will break out when the last part is found. Either that, or the guild masters would come together and decided on a more peaceful solution. That, however, would be unlikely.

Tap! Tap! Tap!

When Zhang Yang stepped on the wooden flooring of the palace, his metal greaves made a loud clattering noise that echoed throughout the entire palace. Zhang Yang frantically unequipped his greaves and tip-toed his way around the palace. Don't forget, he was there to sneak up on Calina and give her a prod. He could not afford to let Calina find out that he was there in the first place!

Even though what he did was considered to be redundant since monsters

can only "notice" a player through the aggro system, the Celestial tier bosses had such an advanced A.I programming that it might actually affect their decision and movement. Even a tiny gesture or verbal taunt would affect how a boss triggers its skill! It was too obvious for both Kenzack and Regalia. Although the developers had revealed all the Celestial tier boss, they would either have ultimate skills to kill everyone, or super tanky skills that made them basically invulnerable! (1)

Zhang Yang continued on further and deeper into the palace and came across a truly haunting revelation. There was not a single monster inside! It was so quiet that it was starting to give Zhang Yang the creeps.

After 10 minutes or so, Zhang Yang reached the central hall of the palace and found his target, Calina. She was as sexy as she was when Zhang Yang first saw her. Her body was a perfect 10/10 and less than 10% of her skin was covered with a black cloth. She was sitting on her wooden craved throne, enjoying what seemed to be red wine. Every time she took a sip, her angled elf eyes would twitch. That tiny movement was so sexy and exquisite that it would make any fantasy hardcore fan go bonkers.

[Demon Lord, The Fallen Wind Ranger Calina] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 270

HP:???

Defense:???

Attack Power:???

Skills:???

Note: Once a glorious hero of the elven race and a powerful Wind Ranger of the Elves. However, after being betrayed by her own comrade in battle, her rage was used by the Demon King to turn her into a demon! Her once graceful manner was all lost and was replaced by an unrelenting urge to kill!

Due to the extreme level gap between Zhang Yang and Calina, he could only see the boss' Level while the other properties were hidden away. However, that didn't matter, since he was not going to fight her!

Zhang Yang took out the contraption that the quest had given him and prepared himself.

[Memento Glory] (Quest Item)

Use: Refresh Calina's memories of her glorious past and the days she had spent with her comrades before she was turned into a demon. Can only be used 3 meters around Calina.

Zhang Yang braced himself and sprinted like he had never sprinted before. He prepared all sorts of life-preserving skills, invulnerability skills, {Shield Wall}, {God of War Shield}, and other skills that would keep him alive, long enough to get close to Calina, and use the item!

Chapter 840: God Killer Chest Plate

"Urgh...what is that?" Calina placed down her goblet and leaned forward, revealing her deeper-than-any-canyon cleavage.

"Ah hah!" She squeaked. "It's the warrior from back then! I remember you now! Did you come to join me? Perhaps I would permit you. Only if you can reach me!"

Calina's had only managed to detect Zhang Yang when he was 100 meters away from her. Her level range was not too far from Zhang Yang, hence her aggro range had been reduced, unlike Kenzack or Regalia where their Level gaps were too far apart, causing their aggro range to extend as far 300 meters.

The demonic elf picked up her goblet and took a sip. A small trail of wine dribbled down to her chest and slid down seductively into the creeks of her chest plate. Zhang Yang could not help but stare and trace the tiny droplet with his eyes, failing to notice that Calina was preparing a spell. A cloud of black smoke formed around her hands and solidifies into a long arrow, which she sent hurtling at Zhang Yang.

The arrow whistled through the air and struck Zhang Yang within a microsecond.

BAM!

‘-4,346,500!’

Zhang Yang had taken the exact amount of damage to empty his HP bar which incidentally, killed him.

The [Book of Revelation's] revival effect instantly kicked in and revived Zhang Yang with a full HP. Without stopping, Zhang Yang kicked the ground hard and launched himself straight towards Calina.

"Hmph? That's odd. I could have sworn that I kill you. I don't miss. Oh well. There's always a first for everything!" Calina flicked her fingers once more and immediately fired another arrow.

This time, Zhang Yang was ready. The moment Calina's fair little fingers

snapped, Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall}.

The arrow hits Zhang Yang and still deals the same exact amount of damage to kill Zhang Yang, without fail. Zhang Yang frowned. That skill should be an attack that ignored 100% defense and could even pierce through invulnerability effects. It's a skill that will kill off anyone with a single strike. Talk about being broken AF.

Then again, no developers will give such a skill to a boss without proper reason. It must be a skill that is linked to the quest. Due to the plot armor in play, it would be understandable if Calina turns Zhang Yang into a beast.

Zhang Yang crossed his arms in his spirit form and frowned furiously. After cracking his head to think of a plan, he revived himself at the nearest graveyard and returned to Calina for another go. Due to the vast distance between the wooden palace and the graveyard, Zhang Yang had taken up to 5 days to return to Calina. He knew at then that he had to finish the quest as quickly as he could. If he dies repeatedly, he would have spent more than freaking month just to kill Calina! That was even after he has confirmed Calina's exact location, and is able to fly to the top of her palace to reach her directly with the Phoenix.

This time, he had figured out a plan. No wonder the accomplishment of the first quest had given him the skill {Shadow Clone}. It must be for this reason! This was also why a strong boss like Calina did not use her powerful AoE skills when she is fighting Zhang Yang. It must be for the quest! The quest had limited her to only one skill, and that is the point and kill magic arrow!

Zhang Yang returned to the palace and confronted Calina for the second time.

"Little soldier boy. I'm afraid you're far too weak to be here. Leave now. I'm busy enjoying this wine."

Zhang Yang charged forward and when Calina flicked her finger to cast the arrow, Zhang Yang dodged the first arrow by activating the {Shadow Clone}. A total of 11 Zhang Yangs went running towards her.

"HAH! Interesting! Come! Conjure as many of you can, I shall smite you down either way!"

Pew!

‘-4,346,500!’

Poof!

One of the clones turned into a puff of cloud.

"Trickly little mouse!" Calina smiled from ear to ear and fired another arrow.

Pew!

Poof!

"A game of chance eh? I like it!" Calina randomly pointed her finger at a random target and fired off an arrow that struck the real Zhang Yang.

Instant death.

"Blast it! What luck!" cried Zhang Yang as he revived at the graveyard for the second time. Along the way back to the palace. Zhang Yang spent his time calculating his chances. Based on the boss' attack pattern, the rate of fire, and the speed at which he ran, Zhang Yang would have to be extremely lucky, 10 times in a row in order to be the last standing 'Zhang Yang' to be in range of Calina to use the device. The chances of him succeeding the quest was less than 10%!

"O. Goddess of luck. Please have mercy on me!"

Since {Shadow Clone} had a long 2 hour cooldown duration, Zhang Yang had tried other methods like using {Shadow of the Void}, and {Burrow} to get close to Calina. Somehow, she could even detect him from within the Netherworld and kill him easily with a single blast. {Burrow} was more unsightly. She would laugh and blast the arrow deep into the earth and instantly determine his grave there and then.

It then was made obvious that the developers was testing a person's luck! The only way to defeat Calina was by using the {Shadow Clone} or by bringing in a large army to raid her as a boss. That would not be very

efficient. In fact, both methods weren't.

To save time, Zhang Yang had chosen to use the [Book of Revelation] skill's strengthening slot on {Shadow Clone}. Even though the duration of the cooldown was reduced down to only 90 minutes, 30 minutes was plenty enough. Think of it this way, if he fails again and again, the total time wasted would not be as long as not having the skill cooldown shortened.

After being killed, again and again, Zhang Yang suddenly felt the need to wash his feet and visit the nearest shrine to beseech the gods for good luck. He had failed 8 times in a row and his best record was having survived until the seventh clone.

"Aiii! Noobie tank! Where in tarnation are you!?"

Every now and then, the little girl would call him and ask about his whereabouts. Before he had left the party, he had failed to inform about his quest. After giving her a vague answer every time she nudged him, the little girl had finally left him alone after being bored of his answers.

Again! Die...

Again! Die...

Again! Die...

@#%@\$%^#@ AGAIN! @%\$!@%^#\$ DIE!

ARGHHHHHH

Zhang Yang had gone mad. He had lost count to how many times he had died to return to try again! In the end, Zhang Yang felt numb. He had lost his mood to even smile when Felice tried to comfort her master.

Three days later...

"Noobie tank! Guess what?" Wei Yan Er shouted at Zhang Yang.

"What..."

"We found a piece of the staff thing!"

"About bloody d*mn time!"

"What's that supposed to mean?!"

"Erhm...well. I mean it's time to contact the other guild masters to discuss the next step. Everyone has a piece and cannot proceed with the quest, or the boss, if they do not work together."

"About that. Uncle Hundred had already contacted them and they are discussing it right now! So, when are you coming back?"

"I'm not sure myself. But if you guys have combined all the pieces together. I'll come back to fight the boss, regardless."

Zhang Yang ended the call there and focused on the fight with Calina. For the past three days, he had been using the {God of War Transformation} to gain its speed boost to shorten the time taken to reach to Calina's side. However, the palace itself seems to have placed a speed cap limit on which a player could move. Sadly, even with his radiant wings, Zhang Yang's movement speed would be the same as it is when he is normal.

Zhang Yang then left his Transformation be and put it aside.

At then, after failing the Transformation attempt, Zhang Yang went back to his usual attempt.

{Shadow Clone}!

RUN!

"HAHAHAHA!"

Pew! Poof!

1...

Pew!

2...

Pew!

3...

Pew Pew Pew!

8...

When the eighth clone was killed, Zhang Yang felt a chill down his spine. Could it be, that he might win this round?!

Pew!

Poof!

There goes the ninth one and Zhang Yang was only 15 meters away from Calina! With one last strike, Zhang Yang will win!

There were only two Zhang Yangs left on the field and the boss lifted her fingers to take aim.

At that moment, time seems to slow down for Zhang Yang and he could feel his guts tightening up, surprised that he was not vomiting.

Pew!

...

...

...

Poof!

Heck yeah! Zhang Yang cheered in his heart and sprinted as fast as he could with the quest item in his hands directed at Calina.

10 meters...5 meters...3 meters...!

Activate!

The small like pendant flung opened and unleashed a powerful bright light that surrounds Calina and engulfed her in a cocoon.

"What is this!"

Calina tried to struggle free from the light. She spread her wings and randomly flew around the room to get rid of the light that surrounded her. She struggled on and on but eventually, the blinding light was all too powerful for her to get rid off. She crashed landed on the wooden floor and writhed in pain. She clutched her head with her hands and began to

scream in pain.

Image of her past memories when she was still an elf was projected in front of her eyes. Zhang Yang could see the images around of her when she had a fair skin and radiant complexion, laughing and cheering with her companions.

Zhang Yang finally relaxed and fell to his knees. Calina's struggling stopped, yet she was still writhing in pain, just not as loud as the beginning. Her internal struggles continued on for a least 10 minutes before she finally came to. Her demonized features were gone and her calm, kind, and gentle appearance returned to her.

"I...I....what have I done!" Calina cried and Zhang Yang went to comfort her. When Zhang Yang came to her, she immediately cast a magic spell that clad her back in a tight hunter's outfit. Decent yet sexy.

"It's fine now." Said Zhang Yang.

"I...I was betrayed! You have to understand! I didn't have control over my rage and when the Demon King took over my soul, he only made the rage burn even more violently. He made me a demon!"

"No. You're not a demon. That's why I had faith that I can rescue you."

"I...I can never thank you enough for what you have done for me. From the bottom of my heart. Thank you for restoring me. I am finally back!"

Calina got back to her feet and wiped away her tears. "I swear. In the name of a Hunter, I will kill all the Demons until the Demon King himself is slain!"

Zhang Yang checked her status and saw a change to her properties.

[Calina, The Reborn Wind Ranger] (Celestial, Half Elf – Half Demon)

Level:???

Note: The soul of Calina, the true Wind Ranger has returned, stronger than ever!

Nothing was showed. Not even her level! Just how powerful is she now?

Calina's name tag was now a green name NPC. She walked slowly towards Zhang Yang and took his hands, and cupped it against her chest.

"I, Calina will forever be in your debt, young warrior."

"Don't mention it."

"There is still some demonic blood within me. I must go back to the Pool of Life to purify myself in order to become a true elf. Warrior. I will rest in Athuran, the Sacred Land of the Elves. Normally, no humans are allowed to set foot on the land. But I'll make sure that you will be treated as our honored guest. Please visit me when you have the time."

The beautiful Celestial tier boss spread her half-angelic, half demon wings and shot into the sky, breaking the wooden palace ceiling and disappearing into the bright horizon.

"Well...d*mn." Zhang Yang sulked. It's not like he could not enter Athuran without invitation. That sort of reward was not the reward he wanted. Might as well give him her weapon or some Celestial tier equipment as a reward!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and returned to the Holy City. After that, he traveled all the way to a Territory and beamed back to White Jade Castle to talk to Felon.

"Good job, young warrior!" The old wizard praised Zhang Yang. "Calina is finally back to our side! You have done well! Not only have the Demons lost one of their great Generals, we have gained one powerful ally! This might turn the tables around!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Quell Thy Rage. Obtained 2,000,000,000 Experience Points!'

"Here. Take this. I found it when I was cleaning my old armor collection. I have no use for this." Felon gave Zhang Yang a radiant chest plate to Zhang Yang.

Nonchalantly, Zhang Yang took the chest plate and inspected it.

Hm? A CELESTIAL SET EQUIPMENT!?

[God Killer Chest Plate] (Celestial, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2560

Vitality: +102919

Strength: +13249

Dexterity: +5468

{Level 8 Socket 1}

{Level 8 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 205,830

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 5,835 damage on attack.

Equip: Grant a chance to invoke the power of the Death God. Chance to inflict 1,000,000 Chaos Damage to a target that attacks you.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 250

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

A third set equipment! What a wonderful and worthwhile reward! No wonder Calina had nothing to give him when he managed to restore her "sanity".

All in all, the chest plate's properties were powerful in terms of defense. It had increased Zhang Yang maximum HP by a total of 1,000,000! Paired with the {Vitality Aura}, he had gained a total of 1,400,000 HP! Hence, with the third Celestial tier equipment in hand, Zhang Yang's maximum HP was now 6,271,790!

Chapter 841: Regalia

"Noobie tank! We have already discussed about the battle setting and had come in agreement to fight Regalia together. Each guild will surrender their part of the magic staff thingy. After the boss is killed, each guild that has contributed one part will receive one portion of the loot while we take two!" cried Wei Yan Er when Zhang Yang was just finishing with socketing gemstone in his [God Killer Chest Plate].

Even though she had left out some information, Zhang Yang basically understood what had happened. There were a total 8 parts to the [Primordial Staff of Life]. Lone Desert Smoke had two parts, while the other 6 were in the hands of other guilds. It would seem that all the guilds had sorted out their spats and had decided to work together instead of fighting one another. Since it had come down to that way, everyone had agreed to split the loot equally. Since Lone Desert Smoke had contributed two parts of the staff, they had the right to claim two parts of the loot.

The sevens guilds that will participate in the killing of Regalia were Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Hell's Family, Land of Savages, Dark Palace, Paragon, and Justice League.

If Zhang Yang was the one deciding, he would have resort to violence after the fight and grab what he could. However, since Hundred Shots had chosen the path of diplomacy, Zhang Yang's bad route was eliminated. Everyone then belonged to their own region's top guild. The stage that they were playing on was at the global scale. A tiny mistake would cost their popularity and fame.

"It's time to fight yooo! Come back here! The other guild masters were complaining! They said that if you're not coming, they would want to claim our one extra share of the loot!"

Zhang Yang chuckled. Although they had agreed to let Lone Desert Smoke have one more share of the loot due to the extra contribution to the [Primordial Staff of Life], the real reason they had agreed to such terms was due to the fear of Lone Desert Smoke. It had nothing to do with

having 2 parts of the staff. It was the guild itself that they feared.

Such a thing should be mentioned whispers. Everyone knew about it and should be quiet about it. Having it discussed out loud would be quite an awkward situation.

Zhang Yang returned to the Holy City and joined with his guild. When everyone was gathered, all seven guilds sortied out in unison and flew towards the valley with vigor.

Perhaps it was considered too early to decide, but Zhang Yang had acknowledged that the guilds that had followed behind him were the strongest guilds in the entire game. Each guild had sent out 30 players with Transformation Inheritance skills. Other members from all the guilds were commanded to guard the valley to prevent any outsiders from trying to meddle with their fight.

In total, there were 210 players who were going to fight Regalia. Even though the number was far too low, if everyone's prowess is not made up, killing the boss would be easy and fast. Having too many players would not be beneficial, since the boss had the skills to convert players into his own slaves. In short, more players = more slaves, which would mean a greater threat.

The fighters were ready and the other guild members started to push anyone who was not participating in the fight back out of the valley. Although their move had angered many of the spectators around, the players that were not involved dare not disobey their orders. The most they could do was to curse them silently, hoping that all seven guilds will be killed by the boss!

Out of the blue someone shouted, "We are all from different regions of the game. AoE attacks will cause damage to other players. Hence, unless its necessary skills like {Tornado Cleave} and {Horizontal Sweep}, anyone who dares to use any AoE skills at all shall be killed on the spot."

Zhang Yang tried to search for the source of the voice but failed, for there were too many players around.

"I agree."

"We should not harm each other until the entire ordeal is over. When this is done and the dust settles, we can go back to becoming enemies."

"How bout that? It's bout time I hear something nice. I'll play along with your game. No AoE skills innit? Gotcha loud and clear boss."

Zhang Yang cringed at a player who was talking like a cowboy.

"If there's nothing else, let's just start the fight now!"

Zhang Yang took the initiative and activated his Transformation and had Felice Transform into her Goddess of War Scion form. The Phoenix pet was excluded from the fight, since its attacks were all AoE based. Since there were plenty of strong DPS around, it would not put a dent in his overall damage without the Phoenix.

With Zhang Yang taking the lead, everyone else flashed out with their skills and charged towards the boss. Amongst the 210 players around, only 29 players had A Class Inheritances. The ones taking the lead were the S class Inheritance players, followed by the A class and the rest were only running on their battle mounts. Once the gap between the boss was narrowed, everyone started launching their attacks.

"Hmph? Are you all so willing to offer up your life to the God of Death?" Regalia picked up his sword and swung it, blasting out a hundred meter long power blast. Right after the skills, Regalia opened his mouth and starting singing a melody with lyrics that was alien to anyone.

{Song of Despair}!

"Endless! DO IT NOW!"

"HEH! Shut your dirty mouth up! HAH!" Endless Starlight pulled out a magic staff and pointed it at the boss. The green colored emerald that was encased in the magic staff glowed brightly and engulfed the boss with the light. The light cocooned Regalia and seeped into his body, muting him completely.

{Song of Despair} nullified!

Endless Starlight was the one in charge of the staff, since his DPS was

not useful enough to be in the fight. When the boss was muted from casting {Song of Despair}, the battle soon became a normal boss fight.

Zhang Yang sliced and diced the boss until he had enough Rage points. Then, he used {Charge Up Strike} and combined it with {Sky Slicer}. With the help from everyone's aura skills, Zhang Yang had dealt more than 300 million damage within 10 seconds.

When the numbers jumped up, everyone was baffled by the damage.

In reality, Zhang Yang was not the only one who had the skill. In the previous invasion war, each region will have one player earning the skill by being the first to kill the Demon Lord. However, {Charge Up Strike} was a skill that was unique to Zhang Yang only. No one could deal such a powerful nuclear strike!

It was unfortunate that the European player that had obtained the skill {Sky Slicer} was God's Left Hand. Although he was an S class Inheritance player, he was famous for his Defense, healing powers and not his attack. That, and the fact that he is unable to wield a two-handed weapon like Zhang Yang. With a one-handed weapon, the skill would never reach its full potential. As such, even though he could use {Sky Slicer}, the total damage dealt was only 70,000,000.

As the fight proceeded smoothly, Zhang Yang had a bright idea. "Hey guys, instead of the previous agreement, how about we decided the guild to have the first pick by competing with our total DPS?" His tone and voice contained the utmost sarcasm.

"Hmph! Bring it!"

"Come on! Let's see who will have the last laugh!"

Each guild had 30 guild members, then. If they lose in the DPS contest, there will not be any excuses that they could conjure up. It was a fair bet, since it will decide the guild having the first pick. Now that everyone had agreed to it, Zhang Yang decided to go all out. In fact, everyone else had decided to do the same as well. No one would want to be the last to pick the leftovers.

With that thought in mind, all sorts of power boosting skills, buffs, potions, and items were used to increase their attack.

"You think you could defeat me?! I may have lost the ability to sing but my power with the sword lies unchanged. I shall be the one that prevails!"

It was true. Despite losing the skill, his sword blast was still as strong as any boss-level attack. Still, {Song of Despair} was a skill that could be considered to be an impossibly powerful skill that should not exist in the first place! Technically, Regalia was not weakened but merely reduced to a normal boss.

Like all Celestial boss that Zhang Yang had encountered, Regalia's physical and magic attack did not share the same global cooldown system. Both {Force Strike} and {Fiery Blast} could be used at the same time. Worse still, both skills had only a 2-second cooldown. The DPS was incredibly strong. Then again, Zhang Yang's defense was also incredibly strong.

At that moment, Zhang Yang had over 180,000 Defense and 40% damage reduction passive. With {Rock Solid}, he would have 460,000 Defense and 70% damage reduction. Although the skill will last for 10 seconds, it was more than enough to help Zhang Yang be a temporary immortal!

Attackers were trying their best to be the highest damage DPS; tanker were trying their best to have the highest aggro. Be it Zhang Yang or Mellow Poison, God's Left Hand, Hell's Warrior, everyone was fighting to be top on the list. However, Zhang Yang had both the highest DPS and Defense. How could any tank take away his aggro position? If they wanted to, they would have to first try to exceed his DPS!

{Tornado Cleave}! {Tornado Cleave}! {Tornado Cleave}!

As expected of a Celestial tier boss, his most powerful aspect was his AoE damage. Like other skills, the boss' {Tornado Cleave} also had a 2-second cooldown duration. All main healers were busy healing everyone, while the secondary healers were busy healing the healers themselves!

Right then, Lone Desert Smoke had started to gain the upper hand in the

fight. Amongst the 30 players, 7 of them had enabled their first Celestial tier set effects, allowing them to gain a strong offense and defense power. Even though it was just one set effect, its prowess was strong. Take Zhang Yang for example, he had gained a 20% damage reduction just from the first set effect!

The average HP of all Lone Desert Smoke was roughly around 70%. All other players were struggling at 50%. Either way, healers were already pumping out their best efforts to heal. In cases of mortal dangers, players themselves would have to rely on their own skills to survive. Either way, it would not be easy. It was, after all, a Celestial tier boss. It can never be easy for them.

Seven groups of players were fighting at their best efforts to make every second they spend fighting count. They were fighting for their lives! The thought of competing was no longer in their mind, as their lives were on the line!

To make things worse for players, the boss was throwing out black pools which was the skill - {Demonic Soul} which could turn players into the enemy once touched. Players were forced to run around chaotically once the pool appeared.

Even though they were having a tough time, all 210 players there were the best in the world. No matter how hard it was, they could still deal powerful damage to the boss.

90%...80%...

Even with {Demon Constitution}, it was almost not possible for the boss to slow down the HP drop.

"ENOUGH! DIE!" Regalia started to lose his temper at that point and swung his sword like a madman. As a Celestial tier boss, there was a certain pride for Regalia. He would never allow himself to be killed by a bunch of ants.

After 20 minutes, all seven groups of players had suffered from numerous members lost. At the same time, the boss had also lost 80% of his HP!

203 players left...194...143...

Every second mattered, especially when the boss has gone berserk and was vulnerable.

112...94...63...31...

As the total number of player started to drop like flies, so did the HP of the boss. The last surviving members were definitely the strongest amongst all players. Surely, they would have high DPS and extremely good hands-on skills to survive that long.

4%...3%...2%...1%...

Regalia would perhaps be the most pathetic boss ever, since he was killed in less than 3 to 4 (real time) hours. It was even safe to say that Regalia was the most short-lived Celestial tier boss.

Players did not even care about that! All they cared then, was the loot!

Chapter 842: Sharing is Caring

Regalia fell to the ground, dead and lifeless, spitting out a mountain of loot for the players.

"Well...well...well. Will yer look at that eh? Thank god we skipped school today for this!"

"D*mn straight."

Not many players besides Zhang Yang's party have ever seen such an amount of loot. Those who had died in the beginning of the fight had already managed to return to the valley. Those who survived the entire ordeal were just sitting down by the side of the treasure, panting like dogs as they feasted their eyes on the glittering treasures. Luckily, all that were present then were core members of the guilds. Gaming mannerisms were already buried deep in their hearts and they knew better than to snatch and run.

Then again, all the seven groups had set the looting system to Party Leaders only. That meant that only the guild master could pick up the items.

"Alright. Boss' dead now. Time to compare d*cks!"

"You mean DPS."

"I know what I said."

"Sigh...men..."

All seven party leaders posted out their own party total damage dealt to the boss and compared. Without a doubt, Zhang Yang was sure that Lone Desert Smoke would be the first on the list. In fact, he was a little disappointed when he saw Lone Desert Smoke was only 30% higher than the second group, which was Land of Savages. He was hoping for more. He was just being a little greedy. However, it was only normal that Lone Desert Smoke could be much stronger than the rest. They had two S class Inheritance DPS in the party and a total of 7 players that had enabled their first set effects. As for the rest of Lone Desert Smoke party members, they

were all wearing a full set of Ascended tier equipment. There was no one in the party still wearing a Holy tier equipment excluding accessories.

With Lone Desert Smoke being the only party that had a large gap between their total damage dealt, the rest of the group had only a tiny 5% gap in between them.

There was no argument that they could make to deny Lone Desert Smoke their first pick for the loot.

Zhang Yang walked nonchalantly towards the pile of loot and started rummaging through the loot to check the items. There was a total of 9 Celestial set equipment and all of them were gloves. There were 5 more regular Celestial tier equipment, 11 [Advance Demonic Pearl], 21 [Level 8 Gemstone], 7 skill books, and 9 [Skill Point Crystal].

Zhang Yang thought for a while and turned to his party. "Guys. I have 3 set equipment right now and I will pick the Guardian set equipment. Will that be okay with you guys?"

"What are you talking about? Go ahead. I'm surprised you'd even ask!"

"Guild master. You don't have to be modest with us. Please take the equipment and have a half your set effects activated! With that achievement, you could lead us to glory!"

"Guild master. Don't mind any of us. Go for it!"

"Screw you noobie tank! Why you'd get to ---UFFMMM!"

Fatty Han walked in and muffled Wei Yan Er's little mouth. The scene of which looked like a fat guy was about to kidnapped a little girl. Everyone laughed and persuaded Zhang Yang to go for his choice. In fact, besides the little girl who was only being playful, everyone else was supporting Zhang Yang's selfish actions. It was not a secret that when a player equips a fourth set equipment, he or she could enable the second set effect. Zhang Yang picked the [God Killer Gauntlet and activated the second set effect: All allies within 40 meters will receive 10% reduced damage. It was a damage reduction buff for the entire party!

Everyone cheered for Zhang Yang when they saw the effect.

[God Killer Gauntlet] (Celestial, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2560

Vitality: +49401

Strength: +6394

Dexterity: +2624

{Level 8 Socket}

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 98,880.

Equip: Increases damage dealt and healing rate by 15%

Equip: Absorbs 5,654 damage on attack.

Equip: Grants an additional attack blocking instance for the skill {Block}.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 240

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 30 Levels.

God Killer Set Equipment (4/8)

Two equip set effect: Increases damage reduction passive by 20%.

Four equip set effect: All allies within 40 meters will receive 10% reduced damage.

It was a damage reduction buff for the entire party!

The second set effect was a passive skill like an aura skill. When Zhang Yang equipped the gauntlet, a faint golden glow appeared around Zhang Yang and formed a barely visible shield that covered 40 meters around him.

Although it was nice to have a protective aura effect, it was incredibly unfortunate for Zhang Yang that the skill did not affect him!

Other guild members were stunned when they saw the effect Zhang Yang gave off when he equipped the gauntlet. Without any doubt in their mind, they knew that Zhang Yang had managed to activate his second set effect. Even though they were not the ones with the God Killer set, they

knew that it was and could guess that it was an aura effect.

"My darling <3. Did you get yourself a fourth God Killer set equipment?" Dusk Phoenix literally cried out with her utmost lustful voice. Everyone else that was present gave her weird looks while the rest of the Hell's Family guild members' nostrils were flaring up!

"Shh! It's a secret!"

Everyone knew that there could only be 3 Celestial tier set equipment since only three Celestial tier bosses have been killed. So, how could they explain Zhang Yang managing to conjure up a fourth Celestial tier equipment? It did not make any sense! Everyone was madly thinking about for a second but suppressed the urge to know as they went back to the pile of loot to continue the looting process.

Hourglass Figure stepped forward and when she first touched the Celestial tier equipment, she could not help but smile in ecstasy. It took her a while to move away from the pile with a Sniper's set equipment glove in her hands. Dusk Phoenix was next, followed by Heart of Destruction, God's Left Hand, Snow Seeker, and Captain America.

Zhang Yang walked to the front for his second turn since Lone Desert Smoke had earned the right to have a second pick. Hence, when the other six guild masters had picked their loot, Zhang Yang could still go for another round.

"Zhan Yu. I implore you to let me have one of your picks. Name your price and I shall fulfill whatever you want."

"Dearest <3 <3. Give me one of the Celestial tier set equipment! I'll accept it as an engagement present. You can skip the ring!"

"Guild master Zhan Yu. Since we have known each other for so long and have been cooperating with each other. How about selling us one of your picks? I'll cut a good deal with Silky Soft Holdings for your sake!"

Before Zhang Yang could even touch the loot, a series of private messages rang in his inbox. They were all from Hourglass Figure, Dusk Phoenix with love, and Snow Seeker. Zhang Yang felt extremely awkward

but quickly shook his head and gestured no to every one of them with a sad face. He went ahead and picked two equipment, which was a Defender and a Beastmaster set equipment.

Amongst the set equipment, while everyone else only had one, Lone Desert Smoke was extremely lucky to claim three! Besides the guild masters, other guild's members were extremely jealous and angry at Lone Desert Smoke. As such, the remaining 5 regular Celestial tier equipment was split up according to the guild masters' turns. Hence, Zhang Yang had not managed to haul any of them. Justice League was also one of the guilds that had not managed to get a regular Celestial tier equipment.

"What bullcockery is this!" cried Captain America as he cursed.

"ahem" Snow Seeker cleared her throat on purpose and said, "Language."

"Oh screw you."

He was being grumpy and cursed the boss for not dropping one more regular Celestial tier equipment. If that is the case, Lone Desert Smoke would be the one eating dirt.

Chapter 843: Blazing Coral

While the procurement of Hua Yi Investment Fund is still in the midst of processing, Zhong Xiu Hua's mom took the initiative to raise money and perform a reverse acquisition, causing a huge uproar within the stock-market. This decision was made due to her unwillingness to forfeit the ownership of the organization. As a summary of the current scenario, Hua Yi Investment Fund is not an easy prey which could be devoured within a short period of time.

Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was not worried at all. After all, the teleportation service provided within his territory actually brought in a profit by the billions. The initial 20 billion loan could be easily paid off within half a year. Whereas, their current competitor should be the one to be concerned whether they could continue this protracted war of funds. Moreover, mommy Zhong does not dare to use her political connections yet, as this case involved too much money. Any information disclosed could lead to unsalvageable chaos. At most, procedures for loans could be reduced by a bit, however debts should still be cleared on time, without any room for delay!

Zhang Yang still prioritized on leveling. After all, he is not well-versed in business operations. It is still best handled by business professionals.

Of course, other than his level grinding sessions, he would have to become a temporary "model". On and off he would have to wear 4 of his Celestial tier equipment and patrol within Holy City, presenting himself like an advertisement to the crowd. The current Lone Desert Smoke is now a Level 8 guild and had a lot of new room.

To be honest, even if Zhang Yang does not become a roaming advertisement himself, tons and tons of players would willingly compete for any chance to join the guild, as long as any news about Lone Desert Smoke openly recruits new member were to be released. The benefits of joining the guild were very lucrative, being able to get a slot within their elite team would enable them to get an allowance worth thousands. Although the sum of money might not be much, having the right to

exchange guild points for higher tiered equipment posed as one of the biggest attractions, which caused everyone to be envious of. Currently, Lone Desert Smoke was ranked as the world's number one guild. Being able to join such a guild is a glory in itself. Now, this temptation made everyone squeeze all their brain muscles, crafting a way up to join this guild.

The recruitment task had been assigned to Hundred Shots. Recruitment criterias were still strict to prevent parasites from existing within the guild, which may cause reputational damage if not taken care of properly.

Lone Desert Smoke had a very good reputation within the China server. They would not monopolize training zones, random PvP zones and possessed a strict user activity record. Unlike Eternal Flame guild, although the upper echelons were well-behaved professionals, the lower-ranked players were pretty much a bunch of rascals. On and off, there would be cases of the strong bullying the weak happening within their guild.

Somewhere far away in the Holy City...

"Splassshhh!!" From the bottom of the lake, Zhang Yang had just finished killing a bunch of water fiends and emerged on the surface of the lake. Once reaching the short, the speed of Mystic Turtle immediately slowed down, comparable to the speed of an ancient Pentium I Processor. Fortunately, the NPC for the quest clearance was right beside the lake, thus Zhang Yang to dismount himself from Mystic Tortoise and clear the task, earning him 50 million experience points.

Before he could get away from that particular area, a group with more than 10 members from Chinese server surrounded the NPC to clear their quests as well.

"Hooh, This warrior dude here has some pretty neat equipment!" said one of the members after taking a glance at Zhang Yang.

"Pretty nice indeed, looks like a full-set of Holy tier equipment!"

"This dude here is definitely the main tank for some prestigious guild!"

"Dammit, I'm so envious of him!"

For ordinary players, having a full-set of Holy tier equipment is already classified as a symbol of one of those top-tier players. As for Ascended and Celestial tier equipment, they can never imagine the possibility beyond that!

One of the knights moved towards Zhang Yang and asked: "Fellow warrior, could you help us tank a boss? It is a Holy tier boss. We would give you the rights to pick a loot from the boss first!"

Zhang Yang chuckled a bit. Considering his current strength, even without initiating a Transformation he could solo kill a Holy tier boss easily. Even for a Holy tier boss, as long as they do not have HP regeneration skills, Zhang Yang was confident enough to fight them alone after using his Inheritance Transformation skill.

The suggestion by the opposition definitely did not provide any attraction for Zhang Yang. Before he voiced out his rejection, he noticed a female hunter within the group. After pondering for a while, he decided against rejecting their invitation and proceeded to join their party.

After gaining Zhang Yang's approval, the leader immediately sent out an invite for Zhang Yang and accepted the request and joined the team.

"Wait!? Why did my HP increase!?"

"Me too!"

"Me three!"

"Guys! It's at least a 30% boost!"

"Crap...that's more than my yearly salary increment..."

"Hold up! My damage...It's boosted!"

Just as Zhang Yang joined the team, his {Vitality Aura} spreaded across the party, together with the [Book of Revelation] effect, and the buff from his second Celestial tier equipment was also successfully initiated.

"This is a powerful {Vitality Aura}! What the heck is this? [Book of Revelation]? God Killer Protection? Unbelievable! No wonder he is the

main tank, these skills are too imba!"

Turns out, quite a fuss occurred once Zhang Yang actually joined their party. Being only ordinary ranked players with only Ethereal tier equipment who hardly possessed any Holy equipment, there's no way for them to know the effects and benefits that could be brought forth by God Killer set equipment.

"Wow, I could even solo a BOSS with these buffs!!" Once this cocky statement was spilled within the group, inevitably, it caused quite some laughter among the peers.

"Well, enough is enough. We should depart soon. Don't let other parties steal our boss kill!" says the leader, known as Bull Demon King. He as a Guardian as well. Initially, he only had 750,000 HP. However, after getting the buff provided by Zhang Yang, his HP surged to 1,050,000. In addition to the HP buff, he also got a 10% of passive damage reduction which raised his eagerness to try tanking a boss once again.

During the journey, mounts were summoned by the team, however only 2 persons possessed flight-based mount. Zhang Yang did not want to disclose his current identity, hence he did not summon his Phoenix. Instead, he decided to only summon the White Bear as his mount for this trip. For the first time, the summoning of a gold-rank mount gave the team a sense of relief. For once, they felt that they finally had something superior.

Zhang Yan did not bother about it. When he cast his gaze towards the female hunter in front of him, a surge of emotions ripple through his heart.

Make no mistake, it was not the sense of love. It was all because she was one of his teammates in the A-rank League in his previous life. Among the 10 members within the team, Blazing Coral was ranked second within the team, with only Zhang Yang being stronger than her. She was also one of the main reasons and contributors which allowed the team to compete up to the A-Rank League.

As per implied by her name "Blazing Coral", she was a hottie in real life.

Due to the fact that there are offline ranked matches for A-Rank League, Zhang Yan was able to meet with Blazing Coral quite often and had quite a good relationship. Despite not being a married person, Blazing Coral had a very lovey-dovey boyfriend, and both of them had a pure relationship. Zhang Yang's feelings for her only capped at friendship. Nothing more, nothing less.

It was precisely because of their previous friendship, did Zhang Yang agree to join the party, offering help for Blazing Coral.

After traveling for approximately 10 minutes, they reached a dense forest and encountered the boss.

The boss was a huge tiger, with colorful stripes covering its whole body. The length of the tail measured more than 3 meters long, and a pair of canine teeth displaying the might of a sharp blade. Its mighty features and size emphasized the image of the king among all beasts!

[Saber Tooth Tiger King Mangfei] (Holy, Beast)

Level: 230

HP: 2,300,000,000

Defense: 22,500

Melee Attack: 185,530 – 265,530

Skills:

[Tiger Pounce]: Activates a quick attack, causing 100% melee physical damage to all targets within 30 meters.

[Bite]: Deals 150% melee physical damage to a target.

Note: The beast is not to be underestimated. There was a reason why it was a King of all tigers.

For a player who only have Ethereal tier equipment, a Holy tier boss will be quite a challenge to them. If a certain player possesses a strong skill, then it might give them an edge against the boss. However, ordinary players could hardly obtain an OP skill. Hence, Saber Tooth Tiger King Mangfei became a high wall for the team to overcome.

"Warrior, you only need to sustain the buff for us. We will take care of the boss. Worry not of your promised share of the loot," said Bull Demon King. With the vitality aura buff, 10% damage mitigation and 50% damage increase, he is very confident at taking down the boss.

Zhang Yan smiled casually. After all, he only helped the team because of Fire Coral. He could care less about how the other people behaved and thought of the situation.

The battle began with Bull Demon King leading the charge against the boss, while other team members released their fierce attacks.

With the increase of a 40% vitality and 10% damage mitigation, the pressure and precision in terms of sustaining the healing process among team members had greatly been eased, allowing more room for errors during the fight. Moreover, with the 50% damage buff, it had given a significant boost of damage towards all players, especially towards the poorly equipped ones.

For Ethereal tier equipment, they could only be buffed by up to 110%. With an increment of 50% of buff stacked on top of it, effectively a 24% DPS were added to the players. Of course, for Zhang Yang who had a 300% damage bonus which came from all sorts of effects, he would only enjoy a 12.5% overall damage increment from the buff itself.

Under normal circumstances, King Devil Cow's party would never be able to deal with this boss. However, with the 3 buffs provided to the team, they could easily suppress the boss. With the constant healing provided by the healers, the team's overall HP pool was able to remain within a safe zone all the time.

"HAHA! THIS IS AWESOME! Saw my crit there? That's 370,000 crit damage I dealt there!"

"I wish I could have these buffs forever, that'll be great!"

While fighting, everyone cried out in excitement and joy whilst enjoying the boost Zhang Yang provided.

Zhang Yang noticed that the party was a very random party. While there

was a total of 17 members within the party, all of them belonged to 9 different guilds. There was even 3 of them who were guild-less at the moment, including Blazing Coral.

"Perhaps I should invite her..." Zhang Yang thought to himself.

In his previous life, Blazing Coral had only mingled within a small guild as well. The only reason that she was able to team up with Zhang Yang was all because they had met quite a few times in the C-rank Leagues. Both parties were not able to advance further due to lacking strong party members. When the both of them actually join forces together, they breezed over the B-rank League and was able to advance further towards A-rank League despite only being able to be placed within the lower tier of A-rank League.

Zhang Yang had full respects of Blazing Coral's capability as a player. In fact, if it was not for the issue of not having stronger equipment, she would be even stronger than Lost Dream! She would definitely have an A-Rank prowess with good equipment in hand.

After thinking about it for a while, he decided to send out an invite for Blazing Coral after the boss session. After all, she did not have a guild, which will not cause any form of conflict.

Holy tier bosses are weak, to begin with. Thus, after approximately half-an-hour of hack and slashing, the boss finally howled his last and perished on the battlefield. Loot was scattered around the field after its defeat.

Chapter 844: Returning A Favor with Emnity

Because the party was in Leader-Distribution Mode, everyone could only look at the loot and drool. They had to wait for the Bull Demon King to distribute the loots.

Bull Demon King turned his eyes around and passed an Ethereal Tier equipment over to Zhang Yang. Then he said, "Warrior, this is the payment that I have promised you!"

Huh? Did he just strike his own head with the stone that he tried to bear?

Zhang Yang thought to himself quietly. Immediately, he understood something. His powerful damage output had triggered some jealousy among the others. So those people would, of course, want to provoke Zhang Yang now! The first one to attack would become a red-name player. Red-named players would be killed on the spot! That also would grant an additional 20% chance of dropping an item or equipment when the player is killed.

What an insidious bastard!

At first, Zhang Yang did not even have any desire for any of the loot. However, the situation was like lending his hand out to help an old lady, only for the old lady to hold on to him and accuse him of pushing her down to the ground! Of course, he was infuriated now!

However, this Bull Demon King would have never thought that he was currently robbing the Number One player in the entire server! A man whose heart is not content is like a snake that is trying to swallow an elephant. However, this snake was about to swallow something that would kill it!

"What? Do you think you deserve better than this?" Another player from the same guild as Bull Demon King came up and said. Well, it was pretty obvious that they had already planned everything out nicely. Their

intention was to provoke Zhang Yang and lure him into hitting any one of them.

"Bull Demon King! How can you do this?" Blazing Coral immediately stood up, trying to bring 'justice' to the table. She was infuriated by what she just saw, "Didn't you promise him that he gets to choose one equipment first? How can you break your promise just like that?"

Bull Demon King smiled coldly and said, "He didn't even deal any damage to the boss! All he did was to stand there and do nothing! Does he think he can do that and walk away with the best equipment here? How can we allow him to do that? It'll be unfair!"

"If it wasn't because of his Aura Skill support, we couldn't have taken out the boss at all! You should be ashamed of yourself!" Blazing Coral was still as bad-tempered as always. Zhang Yang could not help to reveal a nostalgic smile on his face.

"Pui! It's true that we took down the boss all on our own! So, we deserve everything we earned. You get what you work for! Do you understand?" Bull Demon King spoke in disdain. Well, the look on his face could really provoke people into slapping him!

That bastard turned to his party members and said, "You guys won't want to let a guy that did nothing back there to walk away with an equipment that we fought hard to get right?"

Well, it was most probably because he was quite popular in his own guild, so those players nodded still, even though they revealed a vague sense of shame on their faces.

"You! YOU ---" Blazing Coral had lost herself to her anger. She pointed her finger at the others as she trembled in rage.

"Cut the crap now... you guys just want to provoke me so that I would hit you. Well, you wanted me to become a red-name player and let the system kill me, right?" Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and posted out his {Vitality Aura}, [Book of Revelation] and his [God Killer War Greaves]. "Don't you guys want this? This? Or this?"

Well, they wouldn't be able to get the {Vitality Aura} of course. Even if they are capable of killing Zhang Yang over a billion times, he would not drop the Skill. However, the [Book of Revelation] would definitely drop though. That Legendary item caught the breath of everyone. Meanwhile, the [God Killer War Greaves] was Celestial Tier, after all. When the information about the equipment was revealed to the players, they widened their eyes and stared the sh*t out of it! Their greed had clouded their sanity for the moment. They did not even think about how Zhang Yang got those items and equipment in the first place! They had not even thought about who might Zhang Yang be! How could one guy have so many legendary items and equipment on him?!

--- Because the effect of 10% Passive Damage Immunity could only be effective when four Celestial Tier equipment were together.

Zhang Yang even posted out the fragment of the Class A Shadow Meister Inheritance for everyone to see.

Desire, a powerful motivator. However, it could be a push that brings you straight to your own demise!

Everyone was looking at Zhang Yang with murderous intent now. They were just one step from charging towards Zhang Yang and take everything from him!

"Are you crazy?! How can you show them all that?!" Blazing Coral widened her eyes, looking at Zhang Yang and screamed aloud. Well, she actually thought that Zhang Yang was just some spoilt rich kid who had spent tons of money to purchase all those equipment. She thought that Zhang Yang was just trying to show off how rich he was!

"Blazing Coral, move aside! OR we'll have to kill you as well!" Bull Demon King said coldly.

Upon seeing Zhang Yang's Celestial Tier equipment and his [Book of Revelation], he could no longer hold his greed from overwhelming his desire.

"I'll rather die than be on the same party as you are! Pui!" Blazing Coral chose to leave the party.

Zhang Yang had also left the party. Instantly, Bull Demon King and his party members no longer had the support of Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}. The 50% additional Damage and the other effects had faded away from them as well. Well, the situation was like a beggar suddenly acquiring a billion dollar cheque. However, before he could go to the bank to claim the money, the cheque was already stolen by others. In another way to say it, it was like falling from the sky straight down to the ground!

These players continued to look at Zhang Yang with murderous intent and greed.

Zhang Yang invited Blazing Coral to join his party. She did not hesitate a bit before she chose to join. Zhang Yang waved his hand and cast his {Surrogacy} onto Blazing Coral. That was also why he had invited her into his party. That Skill could only be used on one's own party members, after all.

With Zhang Yang's current insanely high Defence, even if Blazing Coral is surrounded by all those players, it would take quite a while before they could kill her. By doing that, Zhang Yang would have nothing left to worry about.

"Felice!" Zhang Yang waved his hand again and summoned Felice out from her Battle Companion Slot. The dragon lady came out and glared at Bull Demon King and his goons with rage.

"Big brother! They're too mean!"

"Leave your equipment and items behind. We shall let you live! It's not easy to level up these days! It's not necessary for you to die here over nothing!" Bull Demon King was still acting like an *sshole. He seemed to be asking Zhang Yang to spare those things for him and his goons. They really thought that Zhang Yang was a spoilt rich kid who could just buy all that again. Well, he had no idea how stupid he sounded to Zhang Yang.

Well, even if the player turns red-name, the player would not drop equipment or item for sure. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had over a full set of powerful equipment and he had quite a number of items in his inventory. They would have to kill Zhang Yang over a hundred times

before they could get everything off Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and made a gesture with his finger, "Cut the crap and come at me now!"

"Kill!"

Other than the four Healers, the others had come up to Zhang Yang and had him surrounded. Then they began to launch their attacks at Zhang Yang as aggressive as they could.

‘-0!’

‘-7,221!’

‘-0!’

‘-11,022!’

‘-7,83!’

Tens of damage values popped up on top of Zhang Yang at the same time. However, some attacks could not even penetrate Zhang Yang's Defence, though. The highest damage that Zhang Yang received was about 11,000 damage. Well, that amount of damage was so insignificant to Zhang Yang's long *ss HP bar of 6,680,000 HP! He did not even feel an itch! With Felice turning into the 'Tree of Life', she could easily heal Zhang Yang back to maximum HP by throwing a few {Bloom of Life} at him.

"This guy is a monster!"

"How can his HP stay still even after we hit so hard!"

"It's not staying still actually! Look closer! I think his HP bar is just too freaking long!"

The players finally realized that Zhang Yang had over 4 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment! So it made perfect sense that his HP bar would be so freaking long!

"Fear not! He's just a Tanker! He doesn't have the Attack power to kill us! Healers, make sure you do your job! We just have to treat him like a

boss! We've even taken out a Holy Tier boss before! There's no reason for us to fear a Tanker without any Attack power!" Truth be told, Bull Demon King was decently skilled himself. Well, at least he managed to reassure the others into battling Zhang Yang.

"No attack power?" Zhang Yang smiled a little and swung lazily at a Thief right beside him.

‘-672,122!’

A player with a full set of Ethereal Tier equipment would only have approximately 500,000 HP. Of course, the player would not be able to survive Zhang Yang's attack! Immediately, the Thief let out a miserable scream and died on the spot.

Zhang Yang stood up with his axe and laughed, "So how about now?"

Everyone revealed a sense of horror on their faces. What kind of monster is this? Not only is his Defence as high as f*ck, his Attack power is also insanely high! This is madness! They were roaring in anger, complaining about Zhang Yang's absolute power while they continued to throw their Skills onto Zhang Yang.

Sparks were seen across the surface of Zhang Yang's armor as the weapons clanged against his armor. Zhang Yang just stood there quietly, allowing the others to attack him with their insanely vigorous attacks.

Well, it was quite satisfying to do such a thing, once in a while. Zhang Yang was thinking quietly to himself while he was looking at the others in disdain.

Well... although those players were attacking him as madly as they could, they could not even move him by a tiny bit! 5 minutes later, Zhang Yang did not even move a muscle! He was just standing there doing nothing! However, his HP bar was still hovering about at 98%! The results of that had really gave the others an intense chill up their spines. They could not help but stop their pointless attacks.

"So, have you guys had enough?" Zhang Yang smiled vaguely, "I guess, it's my turn then!"

{Horizontal Strike}!

A series of damage values that exceeded millions popped right on top of 9 players. The nine of them instantly collapsed onto the ground and died. Well, Bull Demon King was a Tanker with slightly thicker 'skin. So he managed to survive that wave of attack with a low HP bar. The other 4 Healers and 5 Hunters got away for the moment because they were standing at the rear.

Summoning Phoenix pet!

"Felice! Little Fiery! I'll leave the rest to you!"

Felice let out a roar and charged towards the players together with Phoenix pet.

"You! You're Zhan Yu!" Upon seeing the Phoenix pet, everyone had finally knew Zhang Yang's identity! Unfortunately, everything was too late now!

Let the slaughtering begin! Kill! Kill! Kill!

Zhang Yang felt no remorse for taking on this kind of people. Phoenix pet and Felice were both Ascended Tier now. Each of them only needed two normal strikes to take out one player. It did not take long before the tens of them were slaughtered up! Bull Demon King could not believe his own eyes after witnessing everything that just happened right before his eyes. His eyes were widened up as his body collapsed to the ground. If he could have known earlier about Zhang Yang's identity, he would have used everything he had to butter Zhang Yang up instead of robbing him!

Well, an attempt to repay a generous act with enmity had backfired. Now, he has tasted his own medicine!

Blazing Coral was stunned to see what happened as well. Then she said, "You're the real Zhan Yu?"

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang revealed his personal information to the girl. The long *ss title right above Zhang Yang's head stunned Blazing Coral for a brief moment.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, can I join Lone Desert Smoke?" Blazing Coral had already automatically proposed, before Zhang Yang could 'seduce' her into joining his guild.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. He purposely pretended to think for a moment and said, "Alright! But you will have to undergo a probation stage. If your performance is not good enough, you might be kicked out of the guild, you know?"

"Rest assured that I'll definitely try my best!"

Zhang Yang nodded and invited the girl to join his guild. Blazing Coral immediately accepted the invitation and became the newest member of the Lone Desert Smoke.

After that, Zhang Yang also passed the fragment of [Shadow Meister Inheritance] over to Blazing Coral. Then he said, "This is a small gift for joining my guild!"

Because Inheritance Fragments could only be carried in the inventory of a player, Zhang Yang had been carrying that piece of fragment ever since he got it.

"This... this is too good to be a gift!" Blazing Coral could not believe the fact that joining Lone Desert Smoke could get such a good treat. Upon joining, she has been given a Class A Inheritance? Wow! There was no other guild that would do that!

She suddenly blushed and said, "Guildmaster, I'm sorry! My heart already belongs to someone else!"

Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment. She mistakenly thought that Zhang Yang was trying to get to her heart! Zhang Yang could not help to smile bitterly. Well, it is really hard to be a good guy, these days.

Chapter 845: Maya the Devourer

Because Bull Demon King could not pick up the loots in time before he was slaughtered, the loots had all went to waste. The system would probably flush everything away after an hour or less.

Zhang Yang had no need for any new equipment for the moment. However, he did feel that the few [Lesser Demonic Pearls] would be wasted. However, Holy Tier bosses were not like the Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier bosses. They were much easier to find. Therefore, it would be simpler to search them, slaughter them up and acquire [Lesser Demonic Pearls] upon killing them. Currently, the Auction House had these Demonic Pearls on sale already. However, the price of each pearl was unbelievably high! One Lesser Demonic Pearl could cost up to 1,000,000 gold pieces. It was obvious that those who were selling these pearls were trying to suck off people's wallets!

Well, one Lesser Demonic Pearl should cost about 10,000 gold pieces, at most. Meanwhile, a Greater Demonic Pearl should cost 1,000,000 gold pieces. That should sound about right. An increase of 60% additional success rate would allow one player to get his or her equipment up to +4 Upgrade with a 100% success rate. Whoever's rich, could easily enhance their equipment up to a +6 Upgrade.

Blazing Coral set off to gather the remaining pieces of the Inheritance Fragments. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang stayed behind. Well, even though he did not care about the equipment, he did not want to let Bull Demon King get them as well. It was not because he was vengeful, or what. He couldn't just let a selfish bastard like Bull Demon King to get away with what he had just committed.

The equipment and the dead body of the boss vanished after an hour of waiting. Well, there goes the loot full of good stuff. Zhang Yang grinned for a while before he hopped onto Phoenix pet and disappeared into the sky.

After that, Bull Demon King and the others quickly resurrected

themselves on the spot. However, right after they started to sit down and take their Snacks, Zhang Yang circled back suddenly and swung his [Frost Destroyer's Blade] across their necks! After just a few seconds, they were all slaughtered up once again and reported themselves to the nearest Graveyard.

Bull Demon King and the others were so terrified by Zhang Yang's presence. However, they quickly selected to resurrect on the spot. These players were not on the same side, in the first place. Well, it was a fact that they had just lost the loot dropped from a Holy Tier boss. Therefore they were infuriated just by the thought of it. Well, everyone knew the fact that everything happened because Bull Demon King and his goons had broken their promise for selfish reasons. Instantly, they began to punch each other in the guts and an in-fighting soon started.

Zhang Yang shook his head after looking down at the chaos. Then, he left the vicinity on his Phoenix pet.

Grinding! Grinding! Grinding!

In order to acquire the first chance of challenging the Celestial Tier boss, every guild once again started grinding like hell. All of the parties from top Tier guilds were busting their *sses, trying to grind as effectively as possible. Their main intention was to reach Level 230 as soon as they are able to. By doing that, they could remove the restriction of the Level Gap Suppression before challenging the fourth Celestial Tier boss in the game!

So far, the players were currently about Level 222. They were just about 8 levels from reaching Level 230. Normally, they would need approximately 80 days of constant grinding in order to reach that level. However, with their current high Tier equipment and restless grindings, the players managed to shorten the time to 60 or even 50 days!

Zhang Yang had also been keeping an eye on the movement of the Hua Yi Trust Fund while he was grinding his butt off. However, the Hua Yi Trust Fund was fighting back. They actually attempted to do an 'Reverse Takeover' instead. The war between these two companies had become even more fierce and complicated than before. If Zhang Yang wins this

battle, the Hua Yi Trust Fund would change its name to 'Zhang'. However, if he ever loses the battle, his company would be suffering a loss far from what anyone could imagine. The estimated amount would be at least 150,000,000,000!

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang felt a chill up his spine, because the bank began to hustle his company to pay the bank back!

Obviously, his enemies have found out that Zhang Yang is the one attempting to purchase the stocks of Hua Yi Trust Fund from the shadows. It seemed that Madam Zhong had used her forces of the 'dark' to do something behind the shadows. Zhang Yang's company still had over half a year before his company was required to pay back the loans. The bank had stated that their staffs did not verify the statement or whatever correctly. Well, they came with a 'valid' reason, stating that they wanted to end the loan at an earlier time. So, Zhang Yang now had to pay back the loans in one week or he shall be attending a court session!

If the loan was cut, Zhang Yang was forced into an extremely difficult situation!

After giving it some thoughts for quite a while, he made a call.

...

Time flies. Two months had passed in a blink of an eye. The top Tier players managed to reach Level 230 and beyond. Well, that should prove that those lunatics are really insane! However, some of them did not use their game helmets at all. They used the game capsule to sync into the game. So, they could settle their meals, their sleeps, and their sh*ts in one place. Of course, they would be much more efficient in their grinding process!

Although Zhang Yang is rich enough to buy a game capsule, he was no longer a hikikomori who would be cooped up in his room, all day long. He's currently the CEO of a large-scale company who had beautiful wives. So, he could not afford to spend all his time staying in a game capsule. Therefore, he buried his urge to buy a game capsule without hesitation and continued using his game helmet.

At the end of it, Zhang Yang was still the first one to reach Level 230.

With his current Defence power, Zhang Yang could lure a large quantity of Elite Tier monsters at the same time. With the support from his Phoenix pet's AoE Attacks, Zhang Yang could earn a substantial amount of Experience Points in a short period of time. So, it made sense that he would be the first to reach the required level.

Upon reaching Level 230, Zhang Yang went straight over to Antia Mountains to take a closer look at the Skills of the Level 260 Celestial Tier boss. If the boss also has the {Song of Despair} that seemed like a buggy Skill, it would be wiser for Zhang Yang to trigger the quest first, acquiring an advantage over the others.

This Level 260 Celestial Tier boss was a Spectral King called 'Maya the Devourer'.

[Maya the Devourer, One of the Seven Spectre Kings] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level: 260

HP: 100,000,000,000

Defence: 100,000

Magic Resistance: 100,000

Melee Attack: 720,576 – 920,576

Magic Attack: 426,310 – 526,310

Skills:

[Explosive Blow]: Causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target. Upon hitting the target, causes 400,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the range of 50 meters around the target. Cooldown: 5 seconds

[Shadow Arrow]: Causes 200% Magic Attack with Physical Damage to the target. Instant. Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 2 meters.

[Dark Vortex]: Creates 16 vortexes in the surroundings. Players who get sucked into any of the vortexes would lose 3% HP. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Cooldown: 2 minutes

[Devour]: Upon devouring a soul, Maya will recover 1% HP. The recovery will not be affected by any other effect. The target devoured will die immediately. Range: 300 meters. Cooldown: 30 seconds

[Hardening Transformation]: Increases body mass. Increases 100% additional Defence and 100% additional Magic Resistance. Lasts until the effect wears off.

[Lose Control]: Aggro becomes chaotic and randomly picks a target to attack. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[No Escape]: Upon entering the area of 300 meters from Maya, targets will acquire one effect. Once the targets get 300 meters further from Maya, the players will die immediately, regardless of the players' remaining HP.

[Death Mark]: When Maya is killed. Players will get this effect. Upon entering an area of 1,000 meters from Maya's dead body, players will be instantly killed. Effect lasts for 72 hours.

Note: Maya was once a bard. However, after witnessing how a conqueror dominated the land with darkness, Maya became the general of the resistance. After dying for the cause, his hatred towards the corrupted conquerors have brought him back to life as a Spectre. Because of that, he has acquired an enhanced Spectral power!

Unlike the demons, the Spectre Kings were once humans, elves. After being resurrected by the Spectral force, their bodies would remain normal in size. Unlike the Demon Lord Kenzack, none of them were hundreds of meters tall. Furthermore, Maya had retained his human form. Well, he was considered the highest form of a Spectre, after all. Greenish light would flash across his eyes once in a while. That was the only characteristic that gave away his Spectral nature.

When Zhang Yang noticed that the boss had over 100,000,000,000 HP, he forcefully swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

What the hell?! Isn't that insane!?

That {Devour} would function like {Spectre's Constitution,} which could recover HP once every 30 seconds. The worst part about it was that the Skill would not be affected by the effect of {Destructive Smash}! With a total of 100,000,000,000 HP, each recovery would recover over 10,000,000,000 HP! In other words, the boss could heal over 33,000,000 in each second!

The two parties that Zhang Yang built were indeed powerful. However, they would not have enough firepower to deal more than 33,000,000 damage to counter the recovery rate of the boss. Even if everyone activates their Inheritance Transformations, they would not deal so much damage in a single second. Well, even if they could deal so much damage, it wouldn't be possible for them to deplete the insanely long HP bar of the boss in 2 hours!

Furthermore, the boss's Defence and Magic Resistance had reached over 200,000! Players with a full set of Ethereal Tier equipment would not even be able to penetrate the Defence of the boss, not even by the slightest chance! Even if the Lone Desert Smoke upgrades their guild into a Level 10 Guild and sends 100,000 players over to challenge the boss, they would still be struggling like ants. They would only be able to slightly increase the DPS of the guild!

The only good news was that the boss had the Skill {Hardening Transformation}. When the body mass of the boss increases, more players would be able to hit the boss at the same time. Furthermore, the boss did not actually have a decent AoE Skill. Well, the boss's {Dark Vortex} should count as one, though. However, the Skill did not have any special effects that would deal a lot of damage to whoever who gets hit. On the other hand, if other bosses use their {Tornado Cleave}, they could deal damage across an area of 300-meter radius. As long as players are within range, they would suffer the damage head-on.

Therefore, this boss could potentially be swarmed up by players and beaten to its death, eventually. However, judging from the length of HP bar the boss had and the HP recovery rate of the boss, the boss battle would be torturously long!

Other than that, Maya was currently located on top of a mountain. Countless Spectre monsters were already roaming by the mountainside. Those monsters were all Level 250 Elite Tier monsters! As not all players had a Flying Mount, the players would need to clear a path up to the mountaintop before they could reach the boss!

Meanwhile, those Elite Tier monsters would be respawned again, after 15 hours. By then, the players would need to spend some time to clear them out once again! If the boss battle exceeds 30 hours, the players would need to clear out the Elite monsters twice. If the boss battle exceeds 45 hours, the players would need to clear out the Elite monsters thrice!

Although Maya's HP was substantial, Maya could only be deemed as a civilian-type boss. The boss' AoE attacks were not deadly at all. Players could use their numbers as the advantage to push the boss back. Theoretically speaking, as long as the players are numerous enough, any guild should be capable of killing the boss, eventually.

Well, tens or hundreds of players would not be sufficient to take down this boss. It seemed that the players would need to combine the strength of at least 10 guilds in order to get enough players to take the boss down!

Zhang Yang went back and told everyone about the attributes of the boss. Everyone was shocked and surprised, of course. Although they were not willing to share the loots with the other guilds, however, they couldn't just take down the boss all by themselves. It seemed that they had no other way of solving this.

Although the boss also had some 'underlings', those 'underlings' were still Elite Tier monsters. Zhang Yang would need to kill them with his own bare hands in order to summon his demons through his 'Gate of Hell'. By the time he is able to summon the 1000th demons, the first one that he summoned earlier on would already be unsummoned back to the demon realm.

Other than that, even though Maya did not have any AoE Skills that could cover most of the battlefield, the boss could still rely on his {Dark Vortex} to deal damage worth 99% HP of his targets immediately. Well.

That Skill basically ignored the targets' Maximum HP and would get them all heavily wounded in an instant! Summoned demons would not know how to dodge an attack or a Skill. The boss could easily wipe out the entire army of summoned demons!

This boss was wild and ferocious. Because of that, he could nullfy the effects of the 'Gate of Hell'!

Chapter 846: Drawn-out Battle

Zhang Yang began to contact the old allies of Lone Desert Smoke. He wanted to gather them all together to challenge Maya.

However, Zhang Yang was surprised to find out that other than Snow Seeker, the other guildmasters did not agree to lend a hand in this. They expressed themselves clearly that they wanted to challenge the boss all on their own. Obviously, they had already found out that the boss did not have a decent 'AoE Skill'. So they were determined to take out the boss with the strength of their own guild. Zhang Yang was so pissed because of that.

It did not take long before the first guild launched their attacks on Maya. The first guild who acted was Paragon from Europe Region.

Things went like Zhang Yang had predicted. The Attack power of Celestial Tier was indeed powerful. However, as long as the main Tanker does not die instantly or gets killed instantly by a series of attacks from the boss, the Tanker could be healed back with hundreds of Healers healing from the rear. Under those circumstances, it would be easy for the Healers to heal a player that is losing over millions of HP in a set of time.

Meanwhile, although the {Dark Vortex} could really pack a punch, players who get sucked into the vortexes with full HP state would still have 1% HP left when they get back out from the vortex. They wouldn't die on the spot, though. Meanwhile, the Skill had a 2-minute cooldown. That amount of time would be sufficient for the players to heal themselves back up again.

The biggest headache was the boss's {Lose Control}. The boss would turn away from the Tanker and attack one player at random. Meanwhile, the impact of the {Explosive Blow} would spread out to other players upon contact with the target. Well, 500,000 damage could instantly end those who have just escaped the 'Dark Vortexes'.

However, no matter what, this boss was still weaker, compared to the previous few Celestial Tier bosses that revealed themselves before. Under

the leadership of God's Left Hand, Paragon had battled the boss for over two full days!

By the end of it, the boss annihilated the entire Paragon guild by merely spamming its {Explosive Blow}! Because of the {Death Mark}, players who are killed by the boss were not be able to continue the fight with the boss for the next 3 days. Having not been able to last to the third day of the battle, Paragon had lost their capability to replace their ranks with new 'blood'. All of their members were killed by the boss!

On the other side, when the Paragon was wiped out, the boss still had over 94% HP remaining! It was a depressing situation for anyone to see it!

Well, 100,000,000,000 HP would cause the boss to have a recovery rate of 33,330,000 HP per second. Meanwhile, the boss also had over 200,000 Defence and Magic Resistance! With those combined, the boss would be immortal! The boss was nearly unkillable! That's right. Even though the boss had not much Attack power, to begin with, the boss could still mash the players slowly to their demise with its super long-*ss HP bar! The boss actually managed to do that to one of the top Tier guilds! From a certain point of view, this type of bosses would be much more annoying than those ferocious type of bosses! Maya had 'depleted' all the top Tier players in Paragon in over 2 days! For both players', mental and physical health, that's torturous as f*ck!

The top Tier guilds calmed themselves down for the moment. Meanwhile, many other guilds were charging into the battlefield, attempting to battle the boss. They thought that they finally stood a chance against a Celestial Tier boss. However, the Attack power of Maya was not weak either. Using {Explosive Blow} and {Shadow Arrow} consecutively throughout the battle, the boss managed to instantly kill 99% of the Tankers without Inheritance Transformations at the current stage of the game!

Without a Tanker keeping the boss occupied, the boss could just kill the other players in the surroundings, one at a time! With the support from its {Explosive Blow} and {Dark Vortex}, the boss could easily wipe out an entire guild, once provided with enough time.

Theoretically speaking, it seemed easy to take down the boss. There was no tactic required in such a boss battle at all. However, reality was very different.

After many failed attempts, Hourglass Figure took the initiative to gather more than 10 top Tier guilds in order to challenge the boss again!

"The boss does not actually have a decent AoE Skill. But we're getting our *sses kicked, even after we tried so hard! It's possible that after all our hard work to take down the boss, when the boss is finally dead, those cunning ones could easily send a few Thieves to steal all the loots by the end of it!" Zhang Yang agreed to join in. However, he had a different idea of how to distribute the loots though.

Unlike battling Rougelier, Maya did not have the ability to cause any devastating AoE attacks. It would make it easy for the Thieves to sneak over and steal the loots while the guildmasters are still considering what equipment and items to take!

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, what do you currently have in mind, then?"

"We shall take on the boss together. However, when the loot drops, it's everyone for themselves. Those who act quickly will gain more from it!"

After all, there was no absolute way of confirming that everyone would get the loot by the end of it. Instead of leaving the loots out there for others to steal, why not make it more fun by snatching then? Everyone gets a fair chance to snatch!

After a brief moment of consideration, Hourglass figure and the other guildmasters agreed to it. Well, back when they were battling against Rougelier, they did spend a lot of time picking up the loots. If there are Thieves in the surroundings when they are busy picking up the loot, the loot would be stolen in the snap of a finger.

"Let's settle it like that, then!"

Everyone had ended up on the same page.

Zhang Yang went back to inform his gang, "... so, when the boss dies, we'll need to act quickly! No mercy to those who act slowly!"

"Rest assured that nothing good will slip through our fingers! You have me, and cousin sis!" Wei Yan Er tapped her chest and said.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Other than that, make sure you survive until the end. If you die during the boss battle, you cannot get near to the boss for the next 72 hours. If the boss dies within that 72 hours after you, you won't be able to snatch the loot!"

"Roger!"

"However, the boss's {Devour} and {Lose Control} are picking targets at random, right? What if we're not lucky, then?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "{Lose Control} is random, for sure. But the {Devour} still has a limited effective area. According to my observation for the past few days, {Devour} will only be used on players who are not Tankers. Also, the targets must be on the top 20 on the list of the boss's aggro, or the last 20 on the list of the boss's aggro. That's why people misunderstood the Skill as random!"

"Does that mean that we'll be safe, as long as our aggro does not get into the top 20?"

"Hmm, that's right. Remember to reserve your special Skills to clear out your aggro. Once the aggro value reaches a certain level, just use it to clear out the aggro. Our target is more than just killing the boss. We need to secure as many loot as possible!"

3 days later, 11 guilds began to gather before the boss.

Ever since there were players over Level 230, the boss no longer had the luxury to sit quietly and enjoy peace. From time to time, there would be guilds or assault parties attempting to attack Maya. When Zhang Yang and the others arrived at the scene, there were already tens of thousands of players surrounding the boss, throwing their best attacks at the boss. Unfortunately for them, their main Tanker was dead, so the boss was wiping them out.

Well, no prairie fire can completely burn the grass, after all. The number of Level 230 players was increasing by the second. The boss was only

getting busier and busier every single passing day. Well, it seemed that Maya no longer had the chance to live a peaceful life --- unless Maya could just toss a Celestial Tier equipment out to the players and roars, "You pitiful beings! Will it satisfy you if I just give you this!?"

It seemed impossible for them to clear out the other players at the moment. Although everyone on the 11 guilds were top Tier players in the entire server, they would still be drowned by the sheer number of players in the vicinity at that moment. Well, one spit from the tens of millions of players in the area would literally drown anyone!

That was also one of the many reasons why Zhang Yang did not want to agree to distributing the loots one by one --- there'd be no time for that bullsh*t! There was no need to even think about sending any Thieves! With tens of millions of players in the area, who would be stupid enough to talk about clearing the area!? Well, with one single hit on the boss, anyone would have the 'authority' to pick up the loots!

"Charge!"

Zhang Yang charged towards the boss on his Phoenix pet. Well, he wouldn't activate his {God of War Transformation} at such an early stage of the battle. Who could predict how long the boss battle would be, right? Zhang Yang was wise enough to reserve his {God of War Transformation} until the very end of the battle.

Because the boss's level, Defence and Magic Resistance were far beyond the standard for the normal Tier players to handle, they could only deal 1 damage to the boss throughout the entire boss battle. However, one clean swing from Zhang Yang's axe could cause up to 700,000 damage on the boss, though. Because of that, he immediately took over the aggro of Maya.

Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart, Mini Piglet, Female Raid Covert were the players who had the best equipment in the entire guild. Their Skills in the art of healing were the best among the best. With the four of them focused on healing Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had no problem at all with tanking the boss. Even though the boss had quite a powerful Attack

power, Zhang Yang had over 6,680,000 HP, after all. He also had terrifyingly high Defence as well! Truth be told, he did not really need the support from the four Healers! He only needed two!

Well, it would be better to play it safe, though. Now that the situation was totally out of hand, no one could predict if some lunatic might take that opportunity to attempt killing Zhang Yang! Everyone should be aware of that, as well. Well, it would be stupid if players drop their own equipment before getting anything from the boss!

"Endless pieces of mother--- Imbeciles!" Maya continued to roar in rage while it was swinging its sword around. Although its HP bar did not move much at all, getting hit by the players for over a couple days non-stop had really infuriated the boss.

Unfortunately for the boss, it did not possess any decent AoE Skills. Even though the {Dark Vortex} is powerful, the Skill could not instantly kill anyone. That had really limited the boss's killing ability.

When top Tier players such as Zhang Yang surround the boss, the firepower of the players suddenly shot up! The HP bar of the boss finally started to drop visibly!

However, Maya would use its {Devour} once every 30 seconds to recover over 1,000,000,000 HP! That was enough to make 99.9% of the Attacks go to waste!

Fortunately for the players, everyone came prepared, knowing that this would be a drawn-out battle. None of them were expecting the boss to be taken out within hours.

About an hour later, the boss's HP had only dropped by 0.5%! That was an extremely low rate, and no one could actually believe with their eyes, even though they were prepared for it!

At the current rate, the players would need approximately 200 hours before they can completely empty out the boss's HP! That would be a total of 8 days! Even though it was just 8 days of in-game time, that would mean 3 full days in the real life... well... one must really enter a game capsule, under those circumstances.

Everyone went to the boss with super high morale. However, the players would begin to feel tired after a long time of battling the boss. Once they get distracted by that, they might not be able to come back with the same level of morale to take the boss on. If that ends up true, the players would need more than just 8 days to take out the boss. They may need 9 or even 10 days for that!

Although Zhang Yang had predicted this to be a drawn-out battle, the duration required to kill the boss was far longer than expected. He wouldn't last that long in-game.

However, since the battle had begun, Zhang Yang could not find any reason to retreat now. He would still need to carry on the battle for quite some time before he could retreat, BY then, he should be able to use his {Shadow of the Void} to get free of the boss so that he could go offline to settle his 'personal' stuffs such as eating, resting and, you know... 'personal stuff'.

Well, it was an extreme battle of wills!

"My vortexes! Kill all these living imbeciles for me!" the boss roared out loud and activated its {Dark Vortex}. 16 dark vortexes appeared in the surroundings out of nowhere and began to whirl around the boss in an area with a radius of 300-meters!

Chapter 847: Takedown

The abundant number of players had clogged up the surroundings of the boss. Players without Flying Mounts were not even able to move freely. They could not even dodge the attacks of the boss. They could only witness themselves getting sucked into the vortexes, and their HP bars getting reduced at an insanely fast pace. Right after they get out of the vortexes, they would have lost over 99% HP!

The players were from different Regions after all. So when some of them are using Skills such as {Tornado Cleave}, they would accidentally wound the players from different Regions with their attacks as well. As many of them had lost quite a number of HP during the boss battle, they would just die on the spot right after they receive the attacks from the {Dark Vortex}.

Fortunately, the top Tier players were all equipped with a Flying Mount, at the very least. So, when the vortexes began to swirl across the area, countless players began to fly up into the sky, one after another. At the same time, many of them had also activated their Inheritance Transformations. Obviously, it would take at least 9 days before they could get the boss down to its knees. They could at least use their Inheritance Transformations twice before using the third to snatch loots when the boss battle is finally over.

Well, it was easy to understand why the players did that in the first place. However, top Tier players like Zhang Yang still did not use their Inheritance Transformations. Why? The reason was simple. Because once players are 300 meters away from the boss, there would be a transparent dome covering the entire area. Whoever who tries to get more than 300 meters from the boss would be instantly killed.

If the players ever use their Inheritance Transformation now, they would lose more than they could imagine if they ever get rounded up by other players.

For instance, Hourglass Figure had quite a number of Celestial Tier equipment. If she ever dies and drop her equipment... well... for the other

players, a top Tier player from a top Tier guild would be similar to the existence of a Celestial Tier boss. Killing one of them would mean that they would stand a chance to drop Celestial Tier equipment! If the opportunity ever presents itself, why would anyone pass it up, then?

Therefore, Inheritance Transformations should be reserved for life-saving and warning purposes. Even if the top Tier players are surrounded by those greedy bastards, they could still fight back and slaughter them up by using their Inheritance Transformations as one of the last resorts.

Well, normal Tier players could only deal 1 forced damage to the boss. Therefore, 95% of the total firepower came from most of the players who had reached Level 230 and beyond. In other words, most of the attacks came from the players from top Tier guilds. So when some of them entered their Transformed forms, their attacks became even more powerful.

Unfortunately, Inheritance Transformations would only last for 2 hours.

When the duration for their Inheritance Transformations came to an end, the HP of the boss had only dropped to 97.2%. They were still very, very far from taking out the boss!

Zhang Yang's movements have become a fixed pattern. He only needed to repeat the movements like a robot to activate his high-damage Skills at the boss. Whichever Skills come available, he only needed to spam them on the boss. There was nothing else for him to think! Well, it was because there were no Status Restriction Skills at all. As long as Zhang Yang remains first on the boss's aggro list, it wouldn't hurt much at all for him to waste some potential damage output by spamming Skills like there is no tomorrow.

The players had started with battle cries and roars. However, they had simmered down now. By the end of it, they had totally stopped with all the shouting and screaming. Even Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were too tired to even tease the ladies. Everyone was just dealing damage to the boss in silence.

Truth be told, the boss was not difficult to handle at all. However, the

long duration required for the players to take down Maya had made this the worst and most difficult boss battle in history.

Currently, the players had Zhang Yang keeping the boss occupied, kiting the boss around. However, the boss's {Dark Vortex} and {Lost Control} could still pose quite a threat to the players in the surroundings. Many players had fallen because of that. For the next three days, those who already reported themselves at the graveyard would not be able to join back into the battle. However, the number of players were just too abundant! For every 10 deaths, 100 fresh players would rush in! The only concern was that they could not deal much damage to the boss. Well, each player with a full set of Holy Tier equipment could only deal thousands of damage to the boss.

4 hours, 5 hours... 10 hours... 20 hours!

Zhang Yang could no longer keep up with the pace. He quickly sent Sun Xin Yu a message and used his {Shadow of the Void} right after. Then, he immediately went offline and took off his game helmet.

Right after he took off his game helmet, he ran straight to the kitchen. It was currently 7p.m. It was about time to have dinner now.

Ever since Luo Yu Rou was pregnant, Zhang Yang had hired a chef to make meals rich with Chinese herbs and medicine for her. Well, because Wei Yan Er stole some of the meals and it became her habit of doing so, everyone had changed their diet and were used to taking herbal meals by now. At first, the chef did not agree to cook for them. She had only promised to do it for short term. To keep working for them, Zhang Yang had no choice but to offer her a greater deal of money. He even bought a villa for the chef and her family. After settling the worries of her family, the chef decided to continue cooking for them.

Well, this chef is a really good cook! If the dishes she made were to be compared to the dishes in a five-star restaurant, anyone would believe that the money Zhang Yang spent was well spent! Furthermore, the purpose of Zhang Yang earning more money was to live a luxurious life. What's the use of keeping all the money to himself, then? Why would he want to take

the money with him into his own coffin?

Although Luo Yu Rou did not really ‘play’ ‘God’s Miracle’, she had been spending quite a lot of time in the game as well. Well, one of the main reasons was because she wanted to focus on completing her second ‘product’. Well, the game did provide her a time that was three times longer in the game that she could get in the real life. Furthermore, she has the experience of making a movie before. Therefore, she was currently very near to completing her second movie.

Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and the others were also a small part of the movie. Well, they had cameo’d in the movie for a bit. The little brat actually had more screen time than the other members of the gang, though. Furthermore, Luo Yu Rou somehow gave the little brat quite an important role as well. So now, everything would depend on whether the audiences would buy it or not. If the audience could accept it, Luo Yu Rou would be able to create a second miracle in the box office!

After filling up their stomachs and after a moment of rest, everyone logged back into the game.

Actually, it is quite dangerous for any player in the server to go offline while in the middle of a boss battle, or any other battle for that matter! Well, that was because if they log back into the game 300 meters from the boss, they would just die on the spot!

Fortunately, the Tankers from the Hell Family, Land of Savages and other top Tier guilds had taken over the role of tanking the boss for the moment. Everyone was facing the similar situation now. They needed to get offline to eat and handle their personal ‘issues’. If anyone was stupid enough to try something funny on the other players, they would have to face the wrath of many others.

Therefore, even though the boss would run around whenever its {Lost Control} is triggered, it would not take long before the boss is pulled back to its initial position by the Tankers.

The moment when Zhang Yang logged back into the game, he immediately summoned his Phoenix pet and Felice. Then, the three of

them charged right at the boss and gave everything they got on the boss. Well, he could not afford to hold back, now. After all, if he gets too little aggro, he might receive the boss' {Devour} and die immediately.

Zhang Yang would fail a little at getting the aggro of the boss once in a while. So, he unequipped his shield to maximize his damage output.

Other than the boss's {Dark Vortex} and {Explosive Blow}, {Devour} was also considered one of the boss' ultimate Skill. Whoever who gets targeted will die. There was no other way out of it. Many players who did not know how the Skill actually worked would die horrific deaths and opt to resurrect at the graveyard.

Although it had been quite some time, the boss still had over 92% HP. It seemed it would still take ages before they can take down the boss...

One day, two days, three days... eight days, nine days!

The players were taking turns to rest during the boss battle. However, when the ninth day ended, the boss' HP bar finally dropped to 5%!

Well, that was a record that would make everyone who participated in the boss battle cry. It took a full 9 days for all of them to remove 95% of the boss's HP! What kind of sick joke is that?! The worst part about it was that all of Zhang Yang's attempts of casting the {Glare of the Death God} on the boss had been resisted! Or else, each successful attempt of the Skill could have saved over half a day for them! That could have made a lot more difference!

Finally, the boss battle seemed to be coming to an end now!

At first, everyone was numbed by the 9 day repetition. However, when they noticed that the boss battle was about to come to an end, their morale increased, instantly. Even though they knew that it would still take about 10 hours to deplete the last 5% HP of the boss, at least they were very near the end, now!

4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

The remaining HP of Maya had dropped to 1,000,000,000 HP!

That was the moment they've been waiting for. Every single one of the top Tier players activated their Inheritance Transformations at the same time!

{Charge Up Strike}! {Sky Slicer}!

'-5,006,922!' '-10,013,844!' ... '-50,069,220!'

Zhang Yang began to use his combo-10 axe attacks. The damage each strike increased from approximately 5,000,000 to 50,000,000 damage!

Zhang Yang's assaults were so powerful that it made the boss's Defence seemed useless! He managed to deal a total of 275,000,000 Physical Damage to the boss within merely 10 seconds! With the 10% additional damage that the {Holy Aura} bestowed on him for the moment, his total damage dealt on the boss had reached over 300,000,000 damage!

Sun Xin Yu, Hourglass Figure, and the others had also given their best shot. They threw out their most powerful attacks on the boss in an attempt to kill the boss before the boss could use its {Devour} again!

600,000,000! 500,000,000! 400,000,000! 300,000,000!

After the top Tier players activated their Inheritance Transformations, their Attack power had increased tremendously. They were also spamming their Skills with very long cooldowns, increasing their DPS to another whole new level!

200,000,000! 100,000,000! 50,000,000! 10,000,000!

17 seconds later, it was obvious that the boss would not be able to use its {Devour} again in time to heal!

5,000,000!

2,000,000!

1,000,000!

"No! No! NO!" The boss kept roaring in rage until its last drop of HP was gone. After that, the boss collapsed to the ground heavily, and dropped a substantial amount of loot!

Everyone immediately turned hostile against each other and began to snatch as much loot as they could!

It was time for everyone to outshine each other, in order to get as many stuff as they could!

Zhang Yang took an [Advanced Mobility Potion (Transmutation Grade 6)] and which immunized him from any form of Status Restriction Effects for 20 seconds.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang smashed the ground with his axe and created a conical area of shockwave, out front. The shockwave stunned all of the players within the effective area immediately. After that, he took the opportunity to snatch as many loot as he could.

At the same instant, Sun Xin Yu, Hourglass Figure, God's Left Hand and the others began to use the same tactic like Zhang Yang. They were restricting the others around them while attempting to avoid being affected by any other Status Restriction Effects. Then, they quickly picked up as many stuff as they could. From that moment onward, the entire place was very merry. All sorts of Skills could be seen flashing across the battlefield at every moment!

How many players were left on the battlefield after the boss died? Well, there were over tens of millions of players remaining in the vicinity at the moment, for sure. Although it wouldn't be possible for them to gush into the same spot at the same instance, there were also quite a number of players who had Flying Mounts. If each of them used only one Status Restriction Skill at the same time, the entire situation would become chaotic!

Snatch! Snatch! Snatch!

Zhang Yang reached out with both hands like an old gambler in a casino! Shoof! Shoof! Shoof! Instantly, 3 new equipment had appeared in his inventory!

Although the boss' loot were numerous, they were cleared out of the

ground in one brief instance. There were just too many players around to pick them up! In just 3 seconds, the entire ground became empty!

"Kill!"

It was still good for those who managed to pick up something. However, for those who got nothing after ten days of restless battling, of course, they were not willing leave the place empty handed! They raised up their weapons and started attacking the others indiscriminately.

A chaotic battle had erupted!

Zhang Yang and the gang would not waste their time participating in such a messy battle, of course. So they flew into the air to get themselves out of the messy battlefield. After flying far away from the battlefield, they took out their Teleportation Scrolls and traveled back to Holy City.

It was time to distribute the loots!

"Wahaha! Noob Tank, I've managed to get two equipment!"

"I have three, yo!" Han Ying Xue smacked the little brat's head.

After making a number count on the equipment everyone got, there was a total of 14 equipment. Among the 7 Celestial Tier equipment, 5 of them were actually Armor Set pieces while the other 2 were just spare parts. The other 7 among the 14 were just Ascended Tier equipment. Other than that, there were also a few pieces of [Greater Demonic Pearls], some Skill Books and other negligible items.

Chapter 848: Demon Lord Hulkinsh

Although they couldn't get all of the Celestial Tier items from the boss, having 5 Celestial Tier Armor Set pieces and two Celestial Tier normal pieces should suffice. After all, the boss had only dropped about 13 to 14 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment upon its death! Well, Zhang Yang and his gang had already taken half of the total amount! If they were still not content with their achievement, they should be struck by lightning a couple of times!

"Aaah! It would have been great if we're the only guild that killed the boss!" Fatty Han was speaking out of his greed.

Everyone had gotten used to taking down a boss with their party of 10, or their party of twenty over the past years. So now that they had to share the loot with the others, they still felt a little disgruntled about it.

"It's a special boss, so we had no choice!" Zhang Yang tapped Fatty Han's shoulder and said. Well, it was utterly true that Maya was a boss that can never be taken down by merely one guild.

"Quick! Distribute now!" Wei Yan Er started poking others like a little impatient monkey.

Unfortunately, none of the 5 Celestial Tier Armor Set pieces belonged to Guardians. The five necklaces were given to Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er and Female Raid Covent. However, Zhang Yang was not disappointed at all. Well, he managed to acquire a new shield.

[Holy Light's Blessing] (Celestial, Shield)

Defence: +47,385

Vitality: +178,394

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 356,780 points.

Equip: When hit, absorbs 18,055 damage.

Equip: Increases Passive Damage Immunity by 10%.

Equip: Upon a successful block, there is a 10% rate that you can recover

1% HP.

Required Level: 260

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

A shield could be considered the face of a Tanker. It would decide how the Tanker looks for a long time! Meanwhile, this shield seemed to be the pinnacle of shields, in both attributes and Special Effects.

Well, this shield is worthy to be deemed as a Celestial Tier equipment!

It would bestow Zhang Yang with approximately additional 180,000 HP if Zhang Yang just equips it. Under the boost of his {Vitality Aura}, he could get his Maximum HP up to 2,500,000! Meanwhile, a normal shield would only have one Special Effect. This shield had two Special Effects, though.

With the additional 10% Passive Damage Immunity combining with the Special Effect of having two pieces of Armor Set pieces, Zhang Yang would have over 50% Passive Damage Immunity! Well, this 50% Passive Damage Immunity would stay forever on him! Even if Zhang Yang did not have any Damage Absorption effects, he would still only receive half of the damage that he is supposed to receive! What kind of madness would that be?

Furthermore, Zhang Yang also has his {Rock Solid}. Whenever he activates that Skill, he would have over 80% Passive Damage Immunity!

The second Special Effect was a little underwhelming, though. Each successful block could only recover 0.001% HP. The enhanced version of {Block} could only be used once every 5 seconds. That would mean that Zhang Yang would only recover 0.0005% HP each second. In other words, Zhang Yang would need 2,000 seconds in order for him to recover to full HP. That would be 33 minutes!

However, Zhang Yang's {Radiance of the God of War} would need 30 minutes to cool down. Well, the amount of HP recovery for this Special Effect was not much different from the amount of HP recovery for {Radiance of the God of War}. Too bad, the amount of HP would only recover overtime, not in an instance like the {Radiance of the God of War}.

This Special effect could be used to boost the endurance of Zhang Yang. However, it could not be used to save his life.

After equipping the shield, Zhang Yang's Vitality had reached up to 8,337,790 points, with the support of his {Vitality Aura}! His Defence had also reached up to 57,625 points while his Damage Absorption had reached up to 49,348 points. Now that he had acquired a 50% Passive Damage Immunity, his enemies would need to deal at least 156,321 damage before they can actually deal any damage to Zhang Yang. Well, they also need to deal more than 98,696 Magic damage in order to hurt Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang has become so insanely powerful, that he might be even beyond godlike now!

Zhang Yang could now easily keep his HP full with merely his {Block,} and his slow recovery rate, even if he comes under the attack of a player with a full set of Level 200 Holy Tier equipment.

Meanwhile, the average player at the current stage of the game was still striving to acquire Ethereal Tier equipment. Not even 10% of the total players in the entire server have managed to acquire a full set of Holy Tier equipment. Zhang Yang could literally walk like a king in the server, merely his Defence, without the need to even activate his Inheritance Transformation!

"You're insane!" Everyone began to flip their middle fingers at Zhang Yang while making complaints.

Zhang Yang grinned for a while. Well, this gang of his used to have the idea of challenging him at the beginning. However, as Zhang Yang had gotten better equipment over the time, even Sun Xin Yu who did not like to lose, no longer challenged him! Instead of a battle, it should be called a torture, by the hands of Zhang Yang of course!

Well, none of them loved being tortured, after all. If they keep getting tortured by Zhang Yang in PvP, they might really lose their mind, one day!

"It's just too bad that there's no extra Celestial Tier equipment. Or else, we could have used some high level 'spare parts' to enhance the Armor

Set pieces. Not only can we increase the level of the Armor Set pieces, we can also enhance the attributes of that equipment!" Zhang Yang sighed faintly.

Well, there were all sorts of Celestial Tier bosses, out there. Their levels would range from Level 230 to Level 300. Of course, they would drop Celestial Tier Armor Set as well. However, the levels of that equipment would range from Level 230 to Level 300. Well, the Officials had once announced that if a Level 300 Celestial Tier equipment is fused with a Level 230 Celestial Tier Armor set piece, the new equipment would retain the special effects of the Armor Set equipment. However, the attributes of the new equipment would be at basic Level 300 levels. With another enhancement, the level would increase even further.

Zhang Yang and the others had the [Tesseract] and [Greater Demonic Pearls] to aid them in enhancing their equipment up to +6 upgrades without any risks at all. However, acquiring a +6 upgrade also meant that the player would need 7 pieces of similar Celestial Tier equipment in terms of armor type and armor part. That would be insanely difficult at the current stage of the game. No, it would still be insanely difficult even in the future!

If Snow Seeker and the others could hear Zhang Yang sighing at such a thing, they would definitely be super mad about it! Each of them only had about one Celestial Tier equipment on them. However, Zhang Yang was already considering the idea of fusing Celestial Tier equipment to enhance his equipment and get better ones! His thoughts would be considered luxurious as f*ck!

"So everyone, do your best and grind well. Get to Level 235 or Level 240 as soon as you can. We're going to take down the next Celestial Tier boss. This time, we're taking the boss all to ourselves!"

"Yes!"

Zhang Yang was currently Level 232. However, Hourglass Figure, who was second in place on the list of level ranking, was just Level 230, currently. Even though the two-level gap seemed small, it would take

approximately half a month for Hourglass Figure to catch up to Zhang Yang's current level.

New dungeons would be available to the players, once they reach Level 230. Well, there were four dungeons, to be exact. Of course, they were Grouped Dungeons. One was a 10-player scale dungeon and the other three were just 5-player scaled dungeons. They were named the 'Devil's Ridge'. They were strongholds built upon the foundations of the 'Demon's Descend' patch. Players would be required to finish them off to prevent any further unforeseen events in the future.

However, the top Tier guilds had put all of their attention on Celestial Tier bosses, now. They had no intention of challenging the four dungeons as of now. By the end of it, the 'First Clear' of those four dungeons were acquired by four unknown guilds.

Well, players with Inheritance Transformations would be far better to perform at their best, if the scale of dungeons were any smaller. Obviously, that would reduce the difficulty of the dungeons. Therefore, from Normal Mode to Hard Mode, and from Hard Mode to Hardcore Mode, the four dungeons were cleared within a day. It was quite obvious that the difficulty of clearing those dungeons were quite easy, to begin with.

Let's look at Zhang Yang now. With his current Defence and Attack, even if he doesn't activate his Inheritance Transformation, he could have cleared the Hardcore Mode of a 5-player or even a 10-player scale dungeon with the aid of Felice's healing ability. Well, that is, if the boss has no HP Recovery Skills, of course.

The Grouped Dungeons were similar to the Spectre's Cavern and the Elemental Lair. Their Normal Mode only dropped Mythical Tier equipment. Their Hard Mode only dropped Ethereal Tier equipment. Last but not least, their Hardcore Mode would drop Holy Tier equipment. Well, even though Zhang Yang had no interest in Level 230 Holy Tier bosses, the equipment would still be very precious to all of his middle-tiered members of his guild.

After all, the number of Ascended Tier and Celestial Tier bosses that

have been defeated so far have only reached 50. Even if each of those bosses dropped about 20 equipment, that would only be about 1,000 pieces of equipment. That would not be enough to satisfy so many players in the server. So, the dungeons would be the only place for the players to acquire better equipment to power themselves up.

Zhang Yang started to bring in some parties to clear the four Grouped Dungeons. Firstly, he wanted to gather as many equipment as possible for his guild members. Secondly, the number of monsters in the dungeons were abundant and concentrated. It was much more convenient for him to grind that way. However, when he reaches Level 240, clearing the monsters in these dungeons would not be enough for him anymore.

Another twenty days passed. Zhang Yang managed to level up to Level 235. He immediately went over to Koussou Snowy Mountain.

That place was a Level 210 – 240 map as well. It was just located somewhere among the Misamlock Lake Valley. A Level 265 Celestial Tier boss was hiding quietly there --- the Demon Lord Hulkinsh!

Previously, Zhang Yang was more than 30 levels behind the level of the boss. So, Zhang Yang couldn't see the Skills of the boss. Therefore, when he reached Level 235, the first thing he wanted to settle was to take a closer look at the boss' Skills. By doing so, he would be able to plan out some tactics for him and his gang to take down the boss.

This was a gigantic Hellfire Demon. The boss had the features of the high Tier demons such as two horns on the forehead, a pair of bat wings behind his back and a lizard tail slightly above his butt hole. However, his entire body was engulfed in blazing flames. Because of that, the area around the boss was torched in a sea of flames that seemed unlikely to be put out! The air was burned to the point that the very air seemed twisted.

[Demon Lord Hulkinsh, Hellfire Demon King] (Celestial, Demon)

Level: 265

HP: 26,500,000,000

Defence: 64,540

Melee Attack: 720,663 – 920,663

Magic Attack: 426,538 – 526,538

Skills:

[Hell Rage]: Unleashes the raging flames and causes 1,000,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the area of 300 meters.

[Blazing Impale]: Spits a stream of flames and torches a conical area before himself, causing 200% Magic Attack of Fire Damage to all targets. Targets will suffer 1% additional damage when struck by fire attacks. Can be stacked. Instant, Cooldown: 2 seconds.

[Furious Hammer Strike]: Hammers the target with brute force, causing 100% Melee Attack, Physical Damage to the target.

[Blazing Mine]: Randomly plants mine across the area of 300-meter radius. The mine can only be seen for 2 seconds after it is planted. When a player steps on the mine, the mine will explode, causing 1,000,000 Fire Damage to all targets within the area of 30-meter radius from the explosion as the center point. The mine can be disabled by Thieves with their profession Skill {Diffuse}.

[Life of Fire]: The damage that Hulkinsh deals will turn into his HP. The HP amount recovered will not be affected by any other effects.

[No Escape]: Upon entering 300-meter range from the boss, players will acquire this effect. Once the players with this effect get more than 300 meters further from the boss, the players will die immediately, regardless of their remaining HP amount.

Note: Hulkinsh is the Hellfire Demon King! He's the conqueror of Hellfire! Anyone who attempts to challenge him will be incinerated to dust!

Well... Zhang Yang could no longer stay calm!

Although the boss had the HP, Attack power of a Celestial Tier boss, Hulkinsh had a fatal weakness. Most of his Skills were Fire type Skills! Furthermore, the amount of HP that the boss could recover would depend

on the amount of damage he could deal. The amount of HP recovery would differ, based on the boss's performance himself.

Well, it would be hard to say if such a HP Recovery would be good or bad. The more the boss attacks the players, the more HP amount the boss recovers. If the boss recovers 1% HP in 30 seconds, then the boss would be able to recover 8,830,000 HP in every second. Everything would differ, based on the situation as well.

Because the {Hell Rage} was an AoE type Skill, it could cover over 300 meters. The Skill would also function according to a regular pattern. However, the Skill only had a 2-second cooldown. When the HP bar of the boss is reduced to 20%, the cooldown period would become 1.5 seconds. Meanwhile, when the HP bar of the boss is reduced to 10%, the cooldown period would become 1 second! As long as there are a total of 1,766 players attacking the boss at the same time, the HP Recovery of the boss would exceed 8,830,000 HP!

That would be the point where you thread a needle.

Chapter 849: Soloing a Celestial Tier Boss!

So, this boss appears to be the type that grows stronger as the battle continues on. He would recover more HP if more players were to attack him! Theoretically, the 300-meter radius area around the boss should be able to hold quite a substantial number of players.

Hulkinsh was rather similar to Angus. They were both the type of bosses that would become even more fearless if they were to battle a larger number of enemies. It would best to battle these bosses with a bunch of elites!

Of course, that would work for the other players.

Zhang Yang revealed a crooked grin on his face. Could this boss be designed for him and only him? His Phoenix pet had the ability to ignore all Fire Attacks along with their special effects. Furthermore, the Phoenix pet could also recover HP by absorbing Fire Damage! Even though the boss is also equipped with the ability to deal Physical Damage, the amount of Physical Damage the boss could deal with his normal attacks and his {Furious Hammer Strike} were almost the same as the amount of Fire Damage that the boss' {Hell Rage} and {Blazing Impale} could deal to the Phoenix pet. That should balance out the damage the Phoenix pet receives and the amount of HP that the Phoenix pet could recover.

In other words, the Phoenix had the absolute advantage of being undefeated in this boss battle!

It would be natural for Zhang Yang to allow the Phoenix pet to be the main Tanker of this battle. He would only be dealing damage to the boss from the sidelines. After all, he would only be receiving approximately 1,000,000 AoE Damage every 2 seconds before the HP bar of the boss goes as low as 20%. With his current Defence, he would only take 450,000 damage head-on. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang's HP would reach over a total of 33,354,000 HP if he activates his Inheritance Transformation. The boss would still need at least 25 minutes to deplete Zhang Yang's HP bar with AoE attacks alone.

Well, that would only work, if Zhang Yang did not have his {God of War Restoration} and the additional 30% Passive Damage Immunity provided by his {Rock Solid}. In simpler words, one of Zhang Yang's HP bars would definitely be able to last for 30 minutes, at least.

Meanwhile, the cooldown for his {Radiance of God of War} was 30 minutes. As long as Zhang Yang does not become the boss' main target throughout his Transformed period, he should be able to win the battle and stay alive by the end of the battle.

Now that Zhang Yang and his Phoenix pet would not die battling the boss, the outcome of the battle would only depend on one factor now. That would be whether the boss could be taken out within two hours.

The answer would be a definite 'yes'. Theoretically, he should be able to kill the boss in 110 minutes. Furthermore, if he triggers the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}, he could further shorten the time needed to kill the boss!

Soloing a Celestial Tier boss!

Zhang Yang could not help to feel a blazing rush of excitement up his chest. Although Celestial Tier equipment had no longer seemed rare to him, having the opportunity to solo a Celestial Tier boss alone will never come every day, or even never! He was shaking with excitement!

After making some calculations and assumptions, he noticed that there were a large number of Elite Tier Hellfire Demons in the entire mountain valley. However, those monsters were staying at least a couple of hundred meters away from the boss, as if they were terrified by the existence of the boss.

"There shouldn't be any possibility that the monsters would be drawn in while I'm battling the boss, then."

After thinking by himself, he immediately patted the Phoenix pet and charged straight at the boss. 300 meters from above the sky, he leaped off the back of the Phoenix pet and activated both his Inheritance Transformation and the Phoenix Pet's Transformation Skill.

"Kill him!"

Phoenix pet divebombed the boss to trigger the battle. It began to spit streams of blazing flames towards the boss and caused a series of insanely high damage to the boss. Each damage value had reached over millions! In one brief instant, the boss was already heavily wounded!

"You bastards!" Hulkinsh let out a furious roar and swung his blazing fist straight at Phoenix pet. At the same instance, the boss's nostrils were flared. Two streams of powerful blazing flames were seen gushing out of the nostrils, reaching the ground! The flames did not stop there, they continued to spread out and radiated into the surroundings.

‘-829,321!’

‘+1,000,000!’

At first, the Phoenix pet received a damage value. However, a healing value appeared right after the damage value popped out! The lost amount of HP was instantly recovered!

Well, that was the Phoenix pet's specialty, after all. Any Fire Attack would become useless on the Phoenix pet. Instead, the fire damage that the Phoenix pet receives would be turned into the source of the Phoenix pet's HP Recovery.

However, Zhang Yang was not equipped with the ability to absorb Fire Damage. Immediately, he received a blow from the boss's {Hell Rage} head on. However, only 450,000 damage from the 1,000,000 Basic Damage of the boss managed to penetrate Zhang Yang's insanely high Defence! That was really nothing to him.

Zhang Yang waved his hand and summoned Felice out from her slot. The little lady immediately entered her Goddess of War Scion Form before launching her fierce attacks on the boss.

Theoretically, as long as the DPS exceeds 500,000 damage, the boss would be receiving effective damage. Or else, whoever who could not do that would only be a burden to all. Felice's DPS had surpassed 900,000 damage. Although each {Hell Rage} would allow the boss to recover a

certain amount of HP, the effective damage dealt to the boss was still about 400,000 damage. It was quite a decent progress for the moment.

However, Felice no longer had the ability to heal when she is in her new form. Therefore, after a brief moment of battling head-on against the boss, Felice would be forced to return back to her slot.

{Charge Up Strike}, {Sky Slicer}!

In order to maximize the damage output, Zhang Yang activated his strongest Skills. Instantly, he dealt over 250,000,000 damage and took over the aggro of the boss.

{Shadow of the Void}! By using that Skill, Zhang Yang disengaged the aggro of the boss.

Right after that, he resurfaced to continue his ferocious strikes on the boss. A few minutes later, he did the same thing and took over the aggro again. However, he did the same thing as well, using his {Shadow of the Void} again to disengage the aggro of the boss again. Well, because he needed to use the same Skill before it cooldowns, he had to use {Rearm} to reset the cooldown of his {Shadow of the Void}.

With two rounds of that, the Phoenix pet managed to generate enough aggro --- upon reaching Level 230, the Phoenix pet had automatically become Celestial Tier. Its power level had increased tremendously --- so that should allow Zhang Yang to focus on attacking the boss for at least 10 minutes. After that, he could just use his {Shadow of the Void} to vanish from the sight of the boss whenever that Skill is ready. Upon the third round of the same routine that Zhang Yang did with his {Shadow of the Void}, it became impossible for Zhang Yang to OT within the timeframe of 10 minutes. In that sense, that would also mean that Zhang Yang would never OT again, ever for the boss battle!

Although Fatty Han also had a Phoenix pet, that fatty's Defence was too weak for the moment. He could at most, last for 5 minutes under the onslaught of the boss with his {Hell Rage}. It would be impossible for the fatty to solo the boss. Only Zhang Yang, who had one Phoenix pet, a super high Defence, and also insanely powerful Attacks would be capable of

soloing the boss!

Of course, that would only work for Zhang Yang, thanks to this unique boss. A miracle like this would never be replicated again!

"God damned fire chicken! I'm the Lord of Flame, the conqueror of Fire!" Hulkish let out a raging roar as he was launching his attacks at the Phoenix pet repeatedly. Truth to be told, if the boss was only using single-unit attacks, the Phoenix pet would not have held on for long as well. However, a monster would always remain a monster. The boss would not possibly leave his Skills there when they are ready for use. So, the boss was destined to be helpless against the Phoenix pet.

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Such a thrilling joy does not come easy. He had already switched on his in-game footage recorder to record everything down so that he could rewatch the footage.

Well, soloing a Celestial Tier boss while oppressing the boss with absolute power was absolutely satisfying!

{Glare of the Death God}, resisted!

Zhang Yang told himself that it wouldn't matter much at all. As long as no other player comes in all of a sudden and lets the boss recover his HP, Zhang Yang should be able to kill the boss within 2 hours!

‘-15,763,980!’

An extremely high value popped right on top of the boss. It was Zhang Yang's {Rising Dragon Strike}! It was an attack 10 times higher than his normal attack! Well, the good fortune did not stop there. Zhang Yang's {Frost Strike} had also dealt over 12,551,792 damage! It was the weapon's 8-time damage special effect!

Well, that's what we call 'when one door shuts, another opens'. Unfortunately, even though the {Rising Dragon Strike} could deal a damage 10 times higher, the effect would never be as great as the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. Each special effect of that Ultimate Skill could have dealt over 265,000,000 damage! The only Skill that could match the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} would be the {Sky

Slicer} after Zhang Yang activates his {Charge Up Strike}.

{Sky Slicer} could deal 12 hits in a row once in every hour. The total damage that the Skill could do was about the same as the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. Of course, the {Sky Slicer} would need to be paired with {Charge Up Strike} before it could reach that potential. However, using {Charge Up Strike} to buff {Sky Slicer} was a 100% feasible method of dealing super high damage to the boss. Unlike the {Glare of the Death God}, Zhang Yang could just use it without having to worry about failing.

34 minutes later, Zhang Yang had used his first {Radiance of God of War}. Instantly, he recovered his HP back to full.

50 minutes, 90 minutes!

The HP bar of the boss had dropped to 20%. It was time to enter the 'Killing Cleave' Stage.

Instantly, the cooldown for the boss's {Hell Rage} had been shortened to 1.5 seconds. That would also mean that Zhang Yang would receive additional 50% damage from the boss.

{Indiscriminate}, {Killing Cleave}!

'-36,194,934!'

The 100% Critical {Killing Cleave,} stacked with the {Lucky Strike} had brought misfortune to the boss. It dealt over approximately 40,000,000 damage to Hulkinsh in one instance! The boss could only roar in pain.

Because Hulkinsh was considered as a special boss, Zhang Yang's {Block} could do nothing in this boss battle. So Zhang Yang had used all three Skill Enhancement effects of his [Book of Revelation] to enhance his {Radiance of God of War}, {Shield Wall} and {Rock Solid}. By doing so, he managed to increase his survival throughout the boss battle. Now that he could use his {Radiance of God of War} once every 25 minutes, Zhang Yang's ability to survive longer in battle had increased to another whole new level.

10%!

Hulkinsh had entered his most ferocious state. The cooldown for his {Hell Rage} had been shortened to merely 1 second, now! Not only could he deal much higher damage to Zhang Yang, the boss could also recover HP at twice the amount that he used to be able to recover --- although the amount of HP recovery had only been increased from 230,000 HP per second to 450,000 HP per second.

Activating {Tribulation}!

{Hell Rage} could only deal 450,000 damage to Zhang Yang. However, Zhang Yang could deflect a total of 1,000,000 damage back to the boss. The boss had no choice but to suffer.

Because {Tribulation} could only last for 10 minutes, Zhang Yang chose to activate it much later into the battle in order to deflect a higher amount of damage back at the boss! Well, the boss was using his {Hell Rage} once every second, so Zhang Yang's {Tribulation} would be deflecting 1,000,000 damage back to the boss in every second! That amount of DPS was as much as the DPS of his Phoenix pet!

9%, 8%, 7%!

Hulkinsh's HP was dropping lower and lower by the second. It seemed that he would become the first Celestial Tier boss in 'God's Miracle' to be killed by one player in another 10 minutes.

What a pathetic fate!

"God damned fire chicken!" Hulkinsh was infuriated to the point that he jumped around, venting out his rage with all his Fire Attacks. However, he could do nothing to the Phoenix pet. Instead, he increased his rate of using {Hell Rage}, which resulted in helping the Phoenix pet to restore even more HP!

The {Blazing Mine} was even more pathetic. It couldn't even deal 1 damage to the Phoenix pet, just because it could only deal Fire Damage! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang was flying with the flight ability he was bestowed with after activating his God of War Transformation. So he would never ever trigger the mines.

The boss had already ran out of tricks up his sleeves. He could only witness the fall of his HP bar. He was drawing closer and closer to his own death in every passing second.

3%, 2%, 1%!

When the battle entered its 112th minute, Zhang Yang finally sliced away the last drop of the boss's HP. Well, Hulkinsh has become the most pathetic Celestial Tier boss in entire history of the game --- he had been slain by one single player!

The gigantic body of the boss collapsed onto the ground heavily and he also dropped tons of loot across the ground. Well, the number of loots was enough to put a smile on Zhang Yang's face for hours.

This time, Zhang Yang has really hit the jackpot!

Upon checking out on the loots, he noticed that there were a total of 9 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment. Furthermore, this boss has dropped the same equipment as Maya --- they were all Necklaces. Coincidentally, Zhang Yang did not get a Necklace back when they slayed Maya. This should make it up for him.

[God Killer Necklace] (Celestial, Necklace)

Vitality: +26,759

Strength: +3,428

Agility: +3,428

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 53,510 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 15%.

Equip: Absorbs 3,009 when being hit.

Use: When you activate {Shield Wall}, you can deflect all attacks that are directed towards you.

Required Class: Guardian

Required Level: 260

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Chapter 850: Acquisition Succeeded!

Other than the 9 Celestial Tier Armor Set pieces, Hulkinsh had also dropped another 5 pieces of normal Celestial Tier equipment. Among those pieces of equipment, one of them was a two-handed battle axe!

[Akensh, Hell Lord's Battle Axe] (Celestial, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 83,633 – 103,633

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 24,640

{Level 9 Socket 1}

{Level 9 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 70%.

Equip: Increases Critical Rate by 20%.

Equip: Normal Attacks have a certain rate of dealing a damage 10 times higher than normal damage.

Use: Within 5 minutes, afflicts your target with a negative effect upon every successful hit on your target. Causes the target to receive an additional 1% damage whenever struck again by you. Can stack. Can only stack up to a maximum of 100%. Lasts for 30 seconds. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Required Level: 260

Special: Reduces Required Level by 30 levels.

Note: This axe once belonged to the great Hell Lord. It became a collection of Hulkinsh after the Hell Lord fell.

A Celestial Tier weapon!

Zhang Yang was overjoyed with his discovery! After equipping the weapon, his basic damage has reached up to 789,686 – 873,286 damage! That amount of Attack was extremely powerful! Well, even if a Holy Tier player with a Class B Inheritance activates his or her Inheritance Transformation, the player would not reach that Attack power either. It

seemed that Zhang Yang's Attack power has become ridiculously powerful!

Other than that equipment, Hulkinsh had also dropped quite a number of Skill Books, Greater Demonic Pearls, and other trivial items. Unfortunately, none of them was suitable for Zhang Yang. However, there was a crimson red rock that was snatched by Felice. She has actually entered her 'Golden Egg' form. It seemed that the fourth seal is about to be unsealed!

Because the process would require a long time, Zhang Yang brought the few Level 9 Gemstones that were dropped by the boss and went straight to the Holy City. Then, he immediately inserted two gemstones into the two sockets of the battle axe.

He gathered his gang around and distributed the loots he picked up from killing Hulkinsh. When they received the loots, they were shocked to the point that they dropped their jaws as well.

"Little Yang, did you just take out a Celestial Tier boss all by yourself?" Fatty Han took in a cold breath.

"Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed without saying anything about it.

"What the hell! Boss, you're too crazy! That Celestial Tier boss was killed by you?!" Endless Starlight let out a strange scream, "That's amazing! You can even solo a Celestial Tier boss now! Boss, do you have anything else to do in this game?!"

Zhang Yang was stunned for a moment there. Well, he was about to step up to the pinnacle of 'God's Miracle,' now. If the officials are not going to release a new patch or increase the level cap up to Level 400, or even introduce new Tiers such as Super Celestial Tier, God Tier or Supreme Tier, Zhang Yang would have nothing left to do in the game!

When he managed to get the full set of 'God Killer Armor Set' which included a Celestial Tier weapon, Celestial Tier shield and Celestial Tier Accessories, so what should he do for the rest of his days in the game? The dungeons offered no challenge for him. The bosses offered no challenge for him. Even the players were no match to him! Zhang Yang would be

lonely at the top of a snowy mountain!

"When I get a full set of Celestial Tier equipment, it should be about time I leave this game..." Zhang Yang thought to himself.

Although 'God's Miracle' was realistic, it was still, just a virtual reality where players use to pass time and relax. Well, there was no reason for anyone to treat this as their entire career. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had also yielded enough money from the game. Upon reaching the peak, money has become insignificant to him. The difference between having 100,000,000 and 10,00,000,000,000 was just figurative now. He wouldn't be able to use all of the money if he makes too much of it!

However, Zhang Yang would like to slay all of the Celestial Tier bosses in the entire server at least once, before he is willing to leave the game.

"Haha! These Celestial Tier equipment have come at the right timing! We're about to participate in the World League Championship Finale soon. By then, we should be able to oppress all of our opponents!" Lost Dream spoke in excitement.

They were just 10 days from the 4th World League Championship that was going to be held in Shang Hai. The Silky Soft Battle Team had won a secured seat in the finales. Meanwhile, the second battle team who managed to secure the other secured seat into participating the finale would be the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team from Imperial Sky. Well, only two battle teams were going to participate in the championships.

Well, Eternal Flame has gone downhill into the abyss because of Zhong Xiu Hua's 'Sexual Transmitted Disease' event. They only managed to 'hang on' to the Top 5 in the Class S Professional League Championship. Recently, Hua Yi Trust Fund had been trying to fend off Zhang Yang from taking over their company. Without any juice left to even fund Eternal Flame in their daily activities, the guild seemed to be dying soon. Every member of the guild was beginning to feel worried for themselves.

Meanwhile, Crimson Rage was not performing up to their former standards, because quite a number of their core players got married all of

a sudden. They even planned to have children after their weddings. Therefore, the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team managed to acquire the second place thrice. Before the final season of the Professional League Championship could begin, it was already decided that the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team was the winner to participate in the World League Championships as one of the two battle teams.

"Little Yang, are you sure you want to do it, then?" Fatty Han pulled Zhang Yang to a corner and asked with concern.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Well, Zhong Xiu Hua is too great a threat now. I will not rest until I 'get rid' of him!"

"But what if he tries something funny or maybe do something dangerous?"

"Well. I'm counting on that! I'm just concerned if he runs away!"

...

Zhang Yang brought a few lawyers and Business Excellence along over to Yan City. They arrived to join the Hua Yi Trust Fund's Board Meeting.

"We're all here because we need to decide who should be the new Chairman of the board." Zhang Yang revealed a vague smile on his face while sitting on the couch, in the middle of the office.

That lazily rough way Zhang Yang sat on the couch had caused many in the conference room to look at him with contemptuous looks on their faces.

"Mr.Zhang, you're just the second largest shareholder of this organization. You've no authority to make such a significant decision for our organization!" a middle-aged woman in her fifties said. She was wearing a custom made Armani branded uniform. She seemed to have kept her body and her health well cared. She looked rich enough and she definitely looked intimidating.

Well, she is the mother of Zhong Xiu Hua, Li Wan Rong. She is also the largest shareholder in the entire organization.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and snapped his fingers. The lawyer standing behind him immediately walked up and placed a document on the table before Zhang Yang. Then Zhang Yang said, "This is Mr. Ma, Mr. Zhou and Mr. Feng's signature for letting go of their shares to me. This means that not only am I the organization's biggest shareholder now, I also have more than 50% of the shares of the entire organization. So, I can do whatever f*ck I want!"

Li Wan Rong immediately lost the colors in her face. She instantly snatched the documents over and took a closer look at the pages. Her face instantly turned, well, twisted. She slammed the table hard and spoke in rage, "Ma Yuan Shen! Zhou Li Tao! Feng Dong Ming! You guys are great! Very great!"

She pointed her fingers at three men in the conference room. They were the main three biggest shareholders in the Hua Yi Trust Fund. Well, the total shares that these three held and the shares that Zhang Yang was currently holding was indeed more than 50% of the shares for the entire organization. Zhang Yang had acquired absolute control over the shares of the company.

Even though the three were a little ashamed of what they did, they were not afraid at all. Zhang Yang had paid them more than enough for them to live like kings for several lifetimes over. Well, when they are well fed and their wallets are fat, they no longer have to worry about Li Wan Rong retaliating.

"From now on, Ms.Li is no longer the Chairman of the Board. Every decision on investments and any visions related to Ms.Li will be re-evaluated. Alright, the meeting is over, dismissed!"

Zhang Yang was the first to walk out of the conference room, leaving Li Wan Rong standing stiffly like a statue. Well, eventually she did start screaming and shouting. She could not understand it at all. She was actually winning the battle of 'the hostile Anti-takeover' on her company. So how did Zhang Yang managed to cut the ground from beneath her feet! He actually bought the company from the inside!

How did Zhang Yang get so much funds, then?

Ring! The phone rang. Zhang Yang picked it up and heard a lady's voice with weird accent, "Darling, everything going fine?"

"Thank you for lending me so much money! I'll pay you back as soon as I can!"

"Darling, you don't have to pay me back at all. That's my dowry as your bride!"

Zhang Yang frowned. Well, he did not have enough funds to overtake the shares of the entire Hua Yi Trust Fund. However, after getting sufficient funds from Dusk Phoenix, the princess of Luxembourg, the future Duchess to support him, he managed to pull it off!

After flirting with Dusk Phoenix for a moment, the woman had finally hung up unwillingly. Zhang Yang sighed heavily after that. Well, he has to make sure that he returns the money as soon as possible. Zhang Yang would not want this seductive woman to cling onto him anymore. Or else, his backyard would get burned down!

Upon leaving with the necessary paperwork related to Hua Yi Trust Funds, Zhang Yang cut off the partnership of the company with the Eternal Flame for a start. He wanted to completely cut off Zhong Xiu Hua's source of income, after all. Other than that, he also began to liquidate the stocks and shares in order to kick Li Wan Rong out of the organization completely! His main intention was to force Zhong Xiu Hua's hands to the point that he has to act, or he'll lose everything!

Zhang Yang did not stay in the city for long. After 3 days of meddling around, he went back to Zhou Shu immediately. It was only 6 days before the World League Championship Finale begins. It was about time for Zhang Yang and the ladies to pack their things and get ready to travel.

This time, they went to Shang Hai. Zhang Yang had also brought Luo Yu Rou and his precious baby girl along. Well, he would not be able to feel safe if he just leaves her and the baby girl back in Zhou Shu. Coincidentally, Luo Yu Rou's second movie was wrapped up and had premiered in cinemas. It was a great time for her to come out and take a

breath of fresh air.

Time waits for no man. It was time for the World League Championship Finale to begin! Top Tier parties from all Regions came over to Shang Hai to witness the matches. Because of that, quite a huge number of fans were attracted over to make the scene merrier.

18th January, the premier league of the championship began. Among the 16, only 8 of them would make it to the next round. The first match was Silky Soft Battle Team versus Shadow Ghost Battle Team from the Japan-Korea Region. By the end of the match, the Silky Soft Battle Team won both rounds with the same scores of 5:0. Because of that, the passion of the audience was ignited. Everyone started screaming and cheering. The championship had reached a climax on its first day.

Up to this point of the game, the difference between the controls and awareness between top Tier players were getting smaller and smaller. So now, the equipment on the players and the Skills that they had would determine the outcome of a PvP battle.

The Normal Tier players were able to witness how influential equipment could be and how significant a person's Defence could be. A super Skill could even change the tide of the entire battle!

For instance, the {Sky Slicer} had destructively high damage. If the Skill is not interrupted, it would bring a tremendous amount of pain and damage to a player. Well, players were not allowed to use their Inheritance Transformations. If they ever take 10 solid hits from {Sky Slicer}, even if the players had a full set of Holy Tier equipment, they would still be as good as dead. However, it might be possible that a top Tier Tanker with a long *ss HP bar like Zhang Yang and an insanely high Defence might survive the 10 hits from the {Sky Slicer}, head-on. Any other player of any other Classes would be as good as dead!

...

Zhong Xiu Hua was sitting high up with his eyes red. He looked wretched and intimidating.

His mood was extremely bad right now!

Previously, his mother had gone through quite some trouble just to gather some money for him to get through the difficult times. However, once his mother found out that Zhang Yang was the one behind the 'takeover' on the Hua Yi Trust Fund, she immediately pulled all her strings and had the banks push Zhang Yang to return the loans. As long as Zhang Yang is willing to return the loans, her organization would have made hundreds of million dollars from the incident.

Zhong Xiu Hua intended to wait and see Zhang Yang's pathetic face when he loses. However, he heard the news about Zhang Yang secretly buying over some of the major shareholders with larger shares. By doing so, Zhang Yang managed to take control over the entire stock market of the Hua Yi Trust Fund. Meanwhile, Zhong Xiu Hua's mother borrowed quite a substantial amount of loans in order to fight Zhang Yang. After she was kicked out of the board by Zhang Yang, her net worth dropped tremendously. The money she had left was mostly used to pay the loans she borrowed earlier on. Therefore, she almost had nothing left by the end of the incident.

In other words, he's now out of 'rations' for real!

Chapter 851: The Disbanding of Eternal Flame

Although Zhong Xiu Hua has a very powerful father, he has never been fond of asking favors from other people, especially his father.

From his point of view, maintaining good connections would mean wealth and fame, a total control over the others. Meanwhile, he also witnessed quite a number of events that convinced him that his thoughts were true. One must at least act like an upright officer. It would be impossible for Zhong Xiu Hua to behave otherwise!

Since he joined 'God's Miracle', pursuing Sun Xin Yu was merely one of his smaller aims. Well, he wanted to get Sun Xin Yu in order to form an 'alliance' with the Sun Family. The Zhong Family would still have a limited capability. His father was the only one who managed to slip himself onto the political stages. He would need to search for a new political platform for him to shine in his own way, because he did not intend to follow his father's footsteps.

There, he saw the opportunity to make big bucks in 'God's Miracle'.

The game was basically a gigantic marketplace with more than 2,000,000,000 people in it. The scale of that marketplace had exceeded any other marketplace in the entire world! Judging by the movie industry, the movie companies have managed to earn a lot more money and spend lower cost on movies ever since they decided to shoot their movies in 'God's Miracle'.

Of course, he also had something to regret, whenever he thought about picking that sexy superstar Luo Yu Rou, to frame Zhang Yang. Well, instead of defaming Zhang Yang, she actually became Zhang Yang's money tree! The first movie she made had provided Zhang Yang with an additional 1,000,000,000 dollars as his pocket money! Meanwhile, her second movie had premiered as well! The movie received quite good responses too! Even if this movie cannot earn them as much as they could from the first movie, the amount of money they could earn this round

would still be decent.

Meanwhile, Luo Yu Rou was one sexy, seductive minx. Zhong Xiu Hua could not help but regret every single decision he had made now. If only he knew all these, he would have kept Luo Yu Rou to himself. Not only would he get money from her, he could also toy with her whenever he needs to release! The benefits of having her would definitely weigh the same as having Sun Xin Yu!

No, it would provide him an even better future!

Marrying Sun Xin Yu would only be the means of forming an alliance with the Sun Family, expanding his influence by a little. On the other hand, Luo Yu Rou could earn about 1,000,000,000 dollars from making one movie. So if she just makes two movies in a year, she could earn over 40,000,000,000 dollars in twenty years! Would marrying Sun Xin Yu and forming an alliance with the Sun Family be worth 40,000,000,000 dollars?

The answer was obviously no!

Therefore, Zhong Xiu Hua's mood became worse by the second... the worst part about it was that there was a mole among his own people. That mole had given up the information saying that Hua Yi Trust Fund has been bought to the public. Everyone had found out about the fact that this master Zhong no longer had the money to support everyone's salaries!

That news was a fatal blow to Eternal Flame. Although his mother has still managed to squeeze some money out for him to get through the storm, Zhong Xiu Hua still owed a month's salary to all of his guild members. Under the harsh pressure of the guild, he finally stood up to explain the situation. Many of his members there and then, decided to leave the guild and never see his face again!

Up till this point, the number of members remaining in the guild had dropped from 68,967 to only 29,873. Meanwhile, it was obvious that the imminent danger was far from over. Everyone stood to believe that if Zhong Xiu Hua could not find a way to continue paying the salaries of his guild members, only more would quit the guild!

Everything was happening now, all because of the god damn Zhang Yang!

Zhong Xiu Hua slammed the table with a heavy blow. His face was so twisted that juice might just come out of it!

Scholar Musou and the others remained silent. Although the man had lost all his money, his family was still influential as f*ck. Well, if he ever wanted to get more money, Zhong Xiu Hua could just abandon Eternal Flame and start all over again, any time he wanted to.

Therefore, they did not dare to provoke master Zhong just yet. Well, unless they have already decided to leave the guild.

"So who's the mole that gave up the information?" Zhong Xiu Hua glanced at his fellow 'underlings' with his blazing eyes. His eyes looked as if they were about to explode. After all, he only told the information to all of them, his most trusted 'underlings'.

Scholar Musou frowned and said, "Master Zhong, everyone here is very loyal to you. There's no way any of us would have betrayed you! I think that Zhang Yang must have planted a mole in our guild!"

"Well, he better stay hidden, then!" Zhong Xiu Hua let out a vengeful tone. Actually, it would be easy for Zhong Xiu Hua to get money. He could just ask for official contracts from the government by pulling some strings. By then, he could easily earn back the money!

As long as he could get through this hardship, Eternal Flame would not die. Of course, he would have to do everything behind the back of his father. Otherwise, his father would have him skinned alive over and over again.

"Master Zhong, I know who did it!" Longrich suddenly raised his hand and said.

"Oh!" Zhong Xiu Hua widened his eyes and spoke with a murderous tone, "Who the f*ck is it?!"

"That should be --- me!" Longrich pointed his finger right back at his own nose.

"Humph! I've no time for jokes!" Zhong Xiu Hua was infuriated. If Longrich was not one of the big shots in the Eternal Flame, he would have him hung and make Longrich disappeared from the world. Well, Zhong Xiu Hua was in need of anyone's support during a time like this. He had no choice but to keep his temper in line for now.

"Master Zhong, I'm not joking around!" Longrich grinned with pride. The expression on his face was now scornful, "You want to challenge Mr. Zhang with that level of IQ? Well, that's like an old man pushing a car upslope with its parking brake on! Hahaha! You really thought that you could do anything you want just because your father's influential, huh?"

"YOU ---" Zhong Xiu Hua confirmed that Longrich was not joking around. He was instantly filled with rage and pointed his finger at Longrich, "What made you do it, then?!"

"Traitor?" Longrich laughed out loud and shook his head, "Mr. Zhong, you've overestimated yourself. This is merely a game. You can just switch sides whenever fits you!"

"Humph! How much did Zhang Yang pay you!?"

"400,000,000!" Longrich showed 4 fingers at Zhong Xiu Hua's face. Scholar Musou, Death Arbiter and the others were shocked to hear that amount. If Zhang Yang had provided them that much money as well, they wouldn't mind stabbing Zhong Xiu Hua in the back, or even up, down, and front!

Well, Zhong Xiu Hua jumped in anger that he did not even know how to express. Then, he suddenly stopped, "Wait a minute... back in Brazil, was it you who led us to that backalley?!"

Longrich laughed again and said, "Master Zhong, how did you like getting your *ss poked?"

"You f*cking bastard!"

This time, it was not just Zhong Xiu Hua popping his veins all over his head. Even the faces of Scholar Musou and the others turned green! Well, they were also the victims in that incident. No matter how many women

they paid ever since then to release their steam, they just could not shake the horrific memory of having poked in their own *sses! They would constantly wake from their sleep because as it haunted them in their nightmares!

Knowing that the culprit was just standing before them, everyone was so infuriated that their eyes turned red. They charged at Longrich one after another, swinging their fists and kicks at Longrich.

Well, the Holy City forbade any form of PvP matches, though. Their fists and licks landed on nothing by air. Meanwhile, Longrich was just sitting calmly and quietly, observing the monkeys performing their 'tricks'.

"Good! Very good!" Zhong Xiu Hua was raging and laughing at the same time, "Longrich! You are finished! We all know where you live! You will regret what you did today! You'll regret the decision you made for the rest of the days!"

"Haha! Your IQ is really so low that anyone would worry for you, Mr.Zhong!" Longrich showed no signs of fear at all, "Do you really think I'll still be in China when I decided to reveal my identity? Of course, I'm no longer in China by now! Ha! You can do anything you like in China, but you did not know that you can't do whatever you want in Brazil, right? Or maybe, you want another fresh poke in your *ss?"

"Argh ---" Zhong Xiu Hua let out a strange roar. Well, it was utterly true that he could do whatever he wants in his own country, because he could cover them up easily. However, he was just like any other foreigner when he steps foot in any other country outside China.

Now that Longrich has hidden himself in Brazil, Zhong Xiu Hua would never have the chance to take his revenge on Longrich ever again.

"Oh, right! Mr. Zhang has a message to deliver to you. He has begun investigating cases regarding people that you made 'disappear'. Maybe, he still has a surprise for you!" Longrich started playing a recorded message from Zhang Yang himself. Things were just getting more and more out of hands for Zhong Xiu Hua. He was so angry to the point that he could no longer feel anything.

Pfff! Pfff!

Zhong Xiu Hua began to breathe heavily as if he was panting like a hairdryer. Although he was very confident that he left nothing left that can be traced back to him, he would never rest peacefully, knowing that someone was trying something behind his back. Well, he could feel a rush of raging heat up his chest that almost got him dead. It was the rage towards Zhang Yang!

At that instance, the only thought left in his mind was how to kill Longrich, and kill Zhang Yang! Whatever the cost!

"Meanwhile, I've also pulled quite a number of people along. I'm going to start a new guild now! Mr. Zhang said it himself, you're not fit to play games. You better quit and go home to your mummy as soon as you can! Stop embarrassing your F*CKING self already!" Longrich suddenly spoke vulgarly. Then he stood up and walked out of the house.

"You ungrateful son of the b*tch! Traitor! You're not going to get away with this! You and Zhang Yang! I'll shred you two into tiny pieces! Just wait and see! F*ck!" Zhong Xiu Hua screamed from the bottom of his stomach.

Scholar Musou and the others looked at each other. Then, they decided to leave the guild as well without saying a word --- judging from what they just witnessed, Zhong Xiu Hua's identity as a 'Prince' no longer had any effect in the game. He was being tortured by Zhang Yang left, right, upside down. Meanwhile, if they remain by the side of Zhong Xiu Hua to fight Zhang Yang... well, Brazil was not the only place with psychotic *ss pokers in the entire world.

'Ding! Guild Announcement: Longrich has left the guild!'

'Ding! Guild Announcement: Scholar Musou has left the guild!'

'Ding! Guild Announcement: Death Arbiter has left the guild!'

...

As the core players of Eternal Flame left the guild one after another, Eternal Flame descended into chaos. Those who were already angry

because they did not get their salaries immediately followed and quit the guild as well. This so-called top Tier guild was instantly torn into pieces. There was only approximately 1,000 members remaining in the guild at the moment. They were just weak players that did not even reach Level 200 yet! In a flash, the guild became as weak as a newly founded guild.

In a nutshell, Eternal Flame was totally gone.

Looking upon the countless streams of Guild Announcements about his members' resignations, Zhong Xiu Hua totally fell into the dark abyss of despair. A few hours later, his eyes turned red, and he looked at the table as if his eyes could burn the table to crisp. With murderous intent overwhelming his head, he said, "Zhang Yang, I will kill you! I will!"

...

"Mr. Zhang, I've done everything you've asked!" Longrich switched on his voice communicator in the game and contacted Zhang Yang. He greeted Zhang Yang with a 'congratulations'.

Zhang Yang was currently in Shang Hai. He revealed a smile on his face and said, "Thank you very much for your service! It's been a pleasure!"

"The pleasure is mine, Mr. Zhang!" Longrich quickly cut back in and said. "But Mr. Zhang, wouldn't that rich brat would try to kill you after all we've done? That man has been staying up high in his influential position. I bet he can't even take a punch! He might get mad and do something horrific!"

"Hmm.. well, you don't have to concern yourself with that, I guess. Just enjoy your beaches and bikini girls!"

Zhang Yang switch off the voice communicator and swung his axe at a gigantic elephant monster right before him, "Well, if you don't go insane, how can I play you into my hands then? Zhong Xiu Hua, my dear Zhong Xiu Hua... Do you even understand what does 'Angered man would splat his blood 5 feet across the ground' means? So let's observe and see if you might try something that would destroy yourself, then."

"After settling Zhong Xiu Hua, I guess it's time for me to rest as well. It

might be a good time to solve the problems between ice queen, witchy snow, and the other ladies. I guess it's unwise to drag the problem any further."

Chapter 852: Reckless Attempt

After proceeding into the quarterfinals, the Silky Soft Battle Team would only have one day of rest before the semifinals. Well. Their opponents were just some players they knew long ago. The Philosopher Stone Battle Team.

Although their opponents were not weak at all, Zhang Yang and his gang had acquired enough Celestial Tier equipment to get the first special effect of the Armor Set. They were able to take the lead in the battle. Because of that, they managed to win the matches with ease. By scoring 5:1, they managed to proceed into the semifinals.

At night, back in Zhang Yang's room, Sun Xin Yu revealed a sense of worry on her face. She was serious, "Zhong Xiu Hua has just arrived at Shang Hai. So have you made up your mind? Are you sure?"

"Yes. Even though the hatred we have for each other is a little messed up, now it's either me or him. One of us must go down," Zhang Yang nodded and revealed a smile on his face all of a sudden, "Rest assured, everything is according to plan! I'm very confident, knowing that you have my back!"

"You must be careful!" Sun Xin Yu was still very worried. She still believed that Zhang Yang's idea was too insane, to begin with.

During that night, Zhang Yang left the hotel to have a drink at the bar. He even flirted with two hot chicks all the while he was in the bar.

After a while, Zhang Yang went to the washroom. Immediately, two huge men came into the washroom as well. Then the two of them stood at the sides of Zhang Yang. One of them smacked the back of the head of Zhang Yang with a karate chop while the other one carried Zhang Yang after he collapsed.

"The goods have been secured. We're on our way."

One of the two men spoke into the device on his wrist. The device seemed to be some sort of mini communication device.

Half an hour later, Zhang Yang was rudely woken up by a pail of cold water. He immediately woke up. At the same time, he noticed that he was held in the middle of some sort of broken down, abandoned warehouse. Well, of course, his hands and legs were tied to a chair. The light in the surroundings was dimmed. There was a handsome looking man sitting right in front of him. However, that handsome looking man seemed dishevelled and unstable.

It was Zhong Xiu Hua!

Zhang Yang spat out the water caught in his mouth and looked at Zhong Xiu Hua in disdain, "Master Zhong, so this is your definition of 'what you got'?" Other than Zhong Xiu Hua, there were also two other men in black suits standing behind Zhong Xiu Hua. Well, they still wore sunglasses, even though they were in a dark place like this. There was no telling if they were just acting cool or if it was their way of fashion.

"How dare you to speak even after knowing you're in a tough spot!" Zhong Xiu Hua snorted, "Didn't you already know that many men have 'disappeared' by my hands? I'll let you taste the pleasure of 'disappearing'!"

He stood up from his chair and walked around Zhang Yang twice. Suddenly, he gave Zhang Yang a slap in his face, "Who are you to fight me, huh? Today, I shall let you know the consequence of going against me, the authority! Money will not be able to buy you out of this!"

"Well, this is an abandoned factory for smithing metal. However, even though the factory is abandoned, their facilities still work like a charm! I'll put you into the stove and cook you bit by bit until you burn into crisp! Then, you'll disappear from this world! Hahaha!"

Zhong Xiu Hua swung both of his hands to loosen his hands, "It's a simple as that! No one will know where you died. It will be just like you've never existed! You're going to feel endless pain before you die. Believe me when I say so. You're going to wish you die as soon as you can!"

"So are you satisfied with the tomb I picked for you?" Zhong Xiu Hua was looking at Zhang Yang as if he had won. Not only did he want to

destroy Zhang Yang's body, he also wanted Zhang Yang to suffer mentally before he dies. Only then could Zhong Xiu Hua relieve himself of his rage towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, "So you finally found a way to conquer your fear of the Sun Family, huh?"

"How did you ---" Zhong Xiu Hua immediately revealed a twisted face. It was terrifying to look at his face.

Ever since, he had been jabbed in the ss back in Brazil, he had a psychological phobia where he would remember the pain of being poked again and again. He could not even make his 'brother' stand up whenever he wanted to fck a girl. Well, that was psychological. So, no matter how much viagra he chugs down, he could not solve the problem at all. Well, how many women had suffered by only having his hands on them, then?

"Humph! You'll face justice until you cry and beg for mercy!" Zhong Xiu Hua told himself that there was no reason for him to be angry at Zhang Yang, a man that was about to be condemned to a torturous death by him. Zhang Yang would become a pile of ashes and the wind would blow the ashes away, leaving nothing behind. Meanwhile, he would be able to live happily ever after.

"Brother Zhao, Brother Bin, put him into the coffin now!"

"Yes, Master Zhong!"

The two big guys immediately walked up to Zhang Yang and untied him. Then he picked him up from the chair.

"People inside the warehouse, listen up! You've been surrounded! Release the hostage immediately! Do not resist!" Just when everything was going smoothly for Zhong Xiu Hua, suddenly, they heard sirens that were loud and clear.

"WHAT?!" Zhong Xiu Hua immediately panicked, "You bastard! Did you just set me up?!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and shook his head, "With your IQ, I could easily beat you, if it weren't for your dad!"

Zhong Xiu Hua had thought himself to be a very capable strategist all the while. So when Zhang Yang bested him like his, his brain was overwhelmed by rage and humiliation. Without any delay, he pulled out his gun from his waist and pointed it at Zhang Yang. His face was gloomy, "You say it one more time! I dare you to say it one more time!"

Zhang Yang shut up without any hesitation. Well, he had forced Zhong Xiu Hua far enough. If he tries to push Zhong Xiu Hua little more, he might be the first to die. Well, he did not plan to die, obviously.

Right outside of the factory house, the police sirens were loud. Countless flashings of the police sirens were seen through the windows in all four directions of the house. It was obvious that the entire building was surrounded by the police!

Zhong Xiu Hua had finally understood that everything that Zhang Yang did was to force him into committing such a stupid crime!

Now that he was caught red-handed, even if he has the president to back him up, he would never be able to get out of this anymore! Holding a hostage... if his previous crimes were revealed to daylight, he would be shot more than just a hundred times in his head!

Well, even if his past crimes stay hidden, holding a hostage and possessing a firearm without a legal license would be crimes that would put him in jail for 8 to 10 years! Getting into jail was not something Zhong Xiu Hua could accept. If he is really going to jail, that would mean that his entire life would be over.

At that instant, he became more fearless than he ever could. His eyes were filled with murderous intent. It seemed that he had to bring someone down with him, no matter what.

"Master Zhong!" The two huge guys saw that Zhong Xiu Hua had lost himself to his rage and impulse to kill someone. They quickly tried to persuade him to calm himself. From their point of view, as long as Zhong Xiu Hua does not die, the Zhong family would have a way to get him out of this mess.

"Put down the gun!" A police spoke through a speaker sternly, "Put down

your weapon immediately, raise both of your hands where we can see them!"

Zhong Xiu Hua was breathing faster and faster by the second. He could no longer hear anyone talking. He only saw the face of Zhang Yang right before him. All he could think of was the suffering and the torture that he was about to get after he gets into jail. According to rumors, some inmates have collected so much junk, and they would also have men as well for their...

Well, because he had experienced that before, he would rather die now than experience being poked in his *ss again!

Madness!

Zhong Xiu Hua's eyes were filled with madness. He was no longer the calm and clever young man he used to be. He had 'transformed' into a sick person with painful memories. He held his gun so tightly that his hands were shaking now. His face was absolutely pale.

"Put down the weapon!"

"Put down your gun!"

The police had warned Zhong Xiu Hua a couple of times. However, Zhong Xiu Hua could not hear them at all. He was completely in the state of panic.

Even Zhang Yang started feeling nervous. This man has totally lost his mind! Well, no one could ever imagine what a madman would do if provoked! Although Zhang Yang had planned well to lure Zhong Xiu Hua here, he had never planned to give his life while doing that. No one had expected Zhong Xiu Hua to breakdown during all this!

Seeing the murderous eyes of Zhong Xiu Hua, Zhang Yang knew that he would shoot!

His hands were tied so tightly that he could not even move. So he moved his body back a little and charged forward with all the strength left in him! Bam! His huge movement had caused the chair to fall. Zhang Yang fell to the ground with his face. However, his back was still tied to the chair.

Now, he looked like a turtle on the ground.

Zhong Xiu Hua was already on the verge of losing himself completely. Zhang Yang's move had ignited the dynamite!

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Zhong Xiu Hua could no longer resist. He gave in to his insanity and started pulling the trigger on his gun. He fired three shots at Zhang Yang!

Bam!

Another shot was heard coming from afar. The next thing that happened was Zhong Xiu Hua's brain splattering across the ground like cotton candy! Then, his body collapsed to the ground. However, his eyes were still wide open, staring at Zhang Yang. It seemed that he was still trying to confirm whether Zhang Yang was dead or not, even after he was shot in the head!

However, he could no longer confirm Zhang Yang's death anymore. His pupils had dilated. His consciousness slipped away, slow and easy. Then, he died.

"Master ---" the two huge guys were extremely shocked. They quickly charged towards the dead body of Zhong Xiu Hua. However, the Police thought it was them trying to fight back. They thought the two huge guys were trying to take Zhang Yang as a hostage. So the police let out two more shots from their handguns and the two bullets went straight into the skulls of the two huge men. The aftermath of having three brains blown out of their skulls was disastrous. The grey matter and blood was everywhere.

"Zhang Yang ---" Sun Xin Yu ran towards the scene with a panicked voice. She quickly pulled the chair up and noticed that Zhang Yang's eyes were closed. His face was pale, as if there was no life sign anymore. Instantly, Sun Xin Yu sat on the ground helplessly. She lost her strength to even stand. She stopped breathing for a moment.

A few more policemen followed and made a quick check on Zhang Yang's body. Then they told Sun Xin Yu, "No worries, he just had a

concussion. He just passed out."

Sun Xin Yu felt so relieved that she could breathe again.

After untying Zhang Yang's hands, it was about time for him to wake up, "Oh, I'm not dead yet!"

Bam!

Sun Xin Yu swung a solid punch at Zhang Yang's face. However, before he could talk again, Sun Xin Yu had pulled him into her arms. Then she said in rage, "If you ever dare to pull a stunt like that, I'll punch you to death with my bare fists!"

Her trembling body had revealed her fear for almost losing Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang reached out and hugged Sun Xin Yu, "There won't be a next time, I promise."

Well, he was also panicking when things were escalating earlier. Place a hand on his shirt, and you'll know that it is soaking wet!

Who would not feel anything after having a gun pointed at his or her head? If that person feels nothing, he or she must not be human anymore!

...

Although he almost lost his own life back there, Zhang Yang only wanted to have a good sleep back at his own hotel room. Well, he wouldn't mind having Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue accompanying him in bed, doing some 'excercises' so that he could forget about the dark hole of the gun's muzzle pointing at him. However, Zhang Yang was brought back to the police station for his statement to be taken down. Well, three people had died in that incident, after all.

Fortunate for him, he only mentioned the in-game name of Zhong Xiu Hua in the 'God's Miracle'. He managed to keep the police from knowing about the grudges the two of them held against each other. Well, that was the main reason why Zhang Yang got abducted in the first place, while he was participating in the championships in Shang Hai.

Because the police did not know Zhong Xiu Hua's identity just yet,

Zhang Yang was soon released back to the hotel to join the championship. However, there was no telling about how long the death of Zhong Xiu Hua could be kept silent.

Chapter 853: An Unprecedented Finale

Zhang Yang had only wanted Zhong Xiu Hua to be caught red-handed. However, he would never have thought that Zhong Xiu Hua would descend into insanity and force himself upon his own demise.

The moment Zhang Yang was abducted by the two men in black suits, Sun Xin Yu had immediately called the police. Then, she quickly traced the GPS device that was planted on Zhang Yang to get the precise location of Zhang Yang. After that, she allowed the Police to rush to the crime scene without any delay. By doing so, the police would be able to catch Zhong Xiu Hua red-handed. If they could post the video footage they had for the police operation, with so much hard evidence, Zhong Xiu Hua would never escape the law this time, even if he was still alive.

However, things escalated beyond Zhang Yang's imagination. Although Zhong Xiu Hua was dead, Zhang Yang now has to face the wrath of the Zhong Family. Their retaliation was at hand now!

"We should be able to cover Zhong Xiu Hua's death for a few more days. Let's make visas now and get out of the country for the time being."

Zhang Yang only told Han Ying Xue and Fatty Han about the death of Zhong Xiu Hua. Meanwhile, Sun Xin Yu had already utilized all her connections and connections to speed up the process of acquiring everyone's visas. So, when the Zhong Family finds out about the death of Zhong Xiu Hua, Zhang Yang and his ladies should have already gotten out of the country.

Zhang Yang believed that Zhong Xiu Hua's father would deal with things by following the justice system. However, Zhong Xiu Hua's mother... if Zhang Yang ever gets caged in the police station, he would be dead the next day!

Zhang Yang had put his life on the line once. He wouldn't risk it for the second time.

The three of them acted normal, as if nothing had ever happened for the moment. They just carried on with the upcoming matches.

During the Semifinal, the opponent that the Silky Soft Battle Team had to face was Paragon, one of the best guilds from Europe Region.

5:1! 5:2!

The Silky Soft Battle Team had once again triumphed over their opponents, proceeding into the finals without facing much of a problem. It seemed that they were about to create another new record in the history of 'God's Miracle' by being the champions of the World League Championship for the fourth time.

However, when the Steely Dang Battle Team managed to proceed into the final, a very dramatic twist of events took place.

God's Left Hand, Heart of Destruction, Captain America and other top Tier players from all around the world had switched their loyalties over toward the Indian Region and joined the Steely Dang Battle Team.

Wouldn't that be cheating, then?

It seemed that all of the top Tier guilds from all over the world were not willing to see Lone Desert Smoke's Silky Soft Battle Team complete the great cause of being the Champion of the World League Championship for 4 years straight. So they decided to try a new approach this time!

If their actions are permitted by the organizers of the championship, then the new Steely Dang Battle Team would have 3 players with Class S Inheritances after they assemble their battle team. However, they would also have over 7 players with Class A Inheritance. They would have even more players with Class A Inheritances than the Silky Soft Battle Team!

According to the rules, there was nothing wrong with this. However, from a personal perspective, that was obviously an act of cheating!

However, even though they did not violate any of the rules in the championship, the organizers were a little confused at the moment. By the end of it, they decided to let the players vote on whether to approve it or not.

Well, that was obvious, though. Other than the China Region, all Regions would never want to see the China Region become the champions

again. Over 85% of the players had voted for the new Steely Dang Battle Team to be qualified for the finals! They really wanted to see the newly formed Steely Dang Battle Team go up against the Silky Soft Battle Team.

For the organizers of the championship, the audience are most important of all. Even if the matches might seem unfair, they would not even give a sh*t about it. They would only require people's support.

Meanwhile, the organizers had approached Zhang Yang to ask for his opinion as well. If the Silky Soft Battle Team does not have the will to participate in such an unfair match, these organizers would be blamed by the players who were very keen to watch the matches!

At that, Zhang Yang spoke in absolute confidence, "Let's fight then!"

Zhang Yang had the idea of quitting 'God's Miracle' eventually. Meanwhile, getting a challenge from a 'World Alliance Battle Team' would serve as the best parting gift for Zhang Yang!

However, he also made a request of his own: During the finals, all restrictions are to be lifted!

After a brief session of voting, the organizers decided to grant him his request.

On 21 January, 7 p.m, the finale for the fourth World League Championship finally began!

The two battle teams handed in their lists of line-ups before the first match could begin.

Sun Xin Yu VS Heart of Destruction!

These two were basically old rivals since forever. However, Heart of Destruction would begin to flee every single time, before the battle between the two of them could be concluded. Therefore, the two of them had never actually had a definitive showdown before. However, on the arena, one of them must fall before the battle ends!

Let the battle begin then!

As all restrictions had been lifted. The two of them activated their

Inheritance Transformations. Both of them flapped their radiating wings and charged towards each other. They began slaughtering each other up without showing any signs of mercy. The battle went on for approximately 20 minutes before Sun Xin Yu claimed victory over the match.

Although it was a battle of endurance, the two of them had put up a great performance for everyone to watch. The crowds felt so intense watching the match that they almost forgotten to breathe! They did not even feel that the match had gone on for over 20 minutes! It was like a few seconds for them! When the match ended, they only wanted more!

Since lifting all of the restrictions on the players allowed them to use all of their Skills, the players were able to unleash their full potential on the arena. Although the power level between players with top Class Inheritance and players with low-Class Inheritance differed greatly, the match would be incredibly interesting to watch when two players with the same Class Inheritances were to clash on the arena!

1:0, the Silky Soft Battle Team was in the lead for the moment.

On the second match, it was time for the match between Wei Yan Er VS Captain America!

During the battle between these two Berserkers, everyone could tell that the two of them were on the same standards, in regards to their experiences and controls. However, Wei Yan Er had acquired 3 pieces of Celestial Tier Equipment. Her Attack, Defence and HP amount were beyond Captain America! It was no surprise for Wei Yan Er to claim victory in the second match as well!

2:0!

On the third match, it was time for the match between Lost Dream VS Hourglass Figure!

Although Lost Dream also had 3 pieces of Celestial Tier equipment, there was no way that he could cover the gap between having a Class B Inheritance and having a Class S Inheritance. When the two of them activated their own Inheritance Transformations, the power level between

the two of them became so obvious that everyone already knew who would win by the end of the battle!

Lost Dream lost... 2:1, the 'World Alliance Battle Team' has earned back one point!

On the fourth match, it was time for the match between Daffodil Daydream VS God's Left Hand!

God's Left Hand had extraordinarily powerful Defence and high HP. Furthermore, he also had his godly powerful Healing ability which made him a 'dual-Class' player! Even though his Attack power was not very strong, he still managed to slowly torture Daffodil Daydream to her demise by relying on his endless healing ability and his Defence!

2:2! The two battle teams had gotten a tie for the moment!

On the fifth match, it was time for the match between Han Ying Xue VS Seductive Wild Pussy!

Previously, God's Left Hand had slowly tortured Daffodil Daydream to death. This time around, it was Han Ying Xue's turn to torture Seductive Wild Pussy to her demise.

3:2! The Silky Soft Battle Team was once again in the lead.

On the sixth match, it was time for the match between Hundred Shots VS The Cupid!

The Cupid was a new Top Tier player who rose from India Region, a Cryomancer who acquired the Class A 'Heart of the Swarm' Inheritance. This player had been kept in secret by Hourglass Figure until now. Because of that, this player became an element of surprise that won the match! Upon summoning a sea of insects to drown Hundred Shots, even though the insects were just Normal Tier monsters, they managed to eat Hundred Shots alive!

3:3! The two battle teams were tied again!

Zhang Yang decided to forfeit for the seventh match. He intended to let the two battle teams decide the champion through the team battle

session.

Truth to be told, it would be pointless even if any of them could score the fourth win just now. When both sides had scored at least 3 wins, the only way of deciding which battle team wins would be participating in the team battle session of the championship.

In the team battle session, the 'World Alliance Battle Team' had sent forth Hourglass Figure, Heart of Destruction, God's Left Hand, Seductive Wild Pussy and Captain America. With three players possessing Class S Inheritances and two players with Class A Inheritances, they formed quite an impressive team there. That was basically the same standard as the Silky Soft Battle Team's best line-up, currently!

Meanwhile, on the Silky Soft Battle Team, Zhang Yang was the only contestant who stepped forth!

"Silky Soft Battle Team, please notify the other four of your team members to come onto the arena. Or else your battle team is going to be forfeited due to time out." The host of the event immediately notified Zhang Yang. Well, the two battle teams only had 2 minutes to get ready. Meanwhile, it was already 90 seconds after the clock started ticking.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said, "I'm going to take you 5 all by myself!"

"WHAT?!"

"He's insane!"

"There're 3 players with Class S Inheritance and 2 players with Class A Inheritance over that side! Wouldn't it be too cocky of him to think about taking all 5 of them all by himself?!"

"He's arrogant as f*ck!"

The finale had attracted at least 2,000,000,000 players to watch the match. Upon hearing what Zhang Yang had to say, everyone revealed their disagreement on their faces. Maybe, just maybe, one player with Class S Inheritance might be capable of taking on 5 players with Class A Inheritance at the same time. However, if there is one extra player with a

Class S Inheritance on the opposition team, there was no way in hell he would survive that!

"Zhan Yu, you arrogant f*cker!" Captain America screamed in rage.

Zhang Yang looked at him in disdain and said, "My teammates trust me. They allow me to do this once! Even if I lose here, so what? We can win again, a couple more times in the upcoming matches. However, if you guys lose here today, will you still have the confidence to continue on with the upcoming matches? I'd say, no! Haha!"

Let's assume that the five of them could not beat Zhang Yang when he's all alone now. Unless they win the next 1VS1 session with the score of 5:0, 5:1, or 5:2, they would not stand a chance to even enter the Team Battle session later on!

However, no one could change the fact that Zhang Yang was acting as if he was overestimating himself at the moment!

He is indeed a player with Class S Inheritance. However, Hourglass Figure, God's Left Hand and Heart of Destruction were also players with Class S Inheritances! They were basically on the same standard as Zhang Yang!

Could it be possible that the Silky Soft Battle Team intended to lose for once this time?

Every single audience by the side was thinking alike at the moment.

2 minutes passed in blink of an eye. After that, all of the contestants received the notification from the system. The Battle Team finally begun! So, it did not matter if Zhang Yang is trying to put up an act, or if he had just lost himself in his confidence. The pace of the match would not be disrupted anymore.

The 6 of them activated their Inheritance Transformations at the same instance!

Currently, everything would work similarly to the 1VS1 matches. Once the players were in the arena, their Skills would be automatically refreshed. Therefore, Hourglass Figure and the others could use their

Inheritance Transformations again after they have used them in their previous PvP matches earlier on.

Phoenix pet appeared! Felice appeared! All of them had activated their Transformation Skills!

"Kill!"

Zhang Yang looked deadly serious on his face. He flapped the wings on his back and flew straight towards Captain America. Captain America could not even blink once before Zhang Yang arrived right before his eyes. With a solid swing from his axe, Zhang Yang smashed Captain America with a powerful blow.

‘-1,879,803!’

Even though the approximately 2,000,000 damage was not low at all, Captain America had boosted his HP amount up to about 1,000,000,000 HP upon activating his Inheritance Transformation. That amount of damage was not much of a deal to him.

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-3,768,802!’

Upon receiving that attack, not only Captain America received a high damage value, and he was also afflicted with a 75% reduction in his Healing Efficiency.

"Zhan Yu! Your overwhelming pride will be the one reason you're digging your own grave!" God's Left Hand began to heal Captain America. Although he could only unleash 25% of his healing ability on Captain America, it was enough to keep Captain America's HP bar from being depleted. Meanwhile, the other four were quite powerful as well. They definitely packed enough firepower to kill Zhang Yang within a brief period of time!

{God of War Shield} activated!

{Rock Solid} activated!

‘-0!’

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

A series of damage popped up on top of Zhang Yang. However, all the damage values were zero! Their attacks did nothing at all to him!

Chapter 854: Battle!

"That's unbelievable! A Guardian has 20% Passive Damage Immunity. Zhang Yang's full Celestial Tier Armor set has a 20% Passive Damage Immunity. His shield has a 20% Passive Damage Immunity. Furthermore, his {Rock Solid} also bestows him with a 30% Passive Damage Immunity. So Zhan Yu's Passive Damage Immunity has reached over 100%! Any attack will be nullified by the Passive Damage Immunity on him! That's really unbelievable! Oh my god! No wonder Zhan Yu decided to take all 5 of his opponents at once! I can't believe that his Defence has become so insanely horrifying!"

"No no no, Jack... You've overestimated Zhan Yu. This 100% Passive Damage Immunity is just temporary. His {God of War Shield} only lasts for 10 minutes. Meanwhile, his {Rock Solid} only lasts for 10 seconds. Therefore, Zhan Yu has to end the battle within 10 minutes, or his Defence will go back to normal!"

"But, he will still have 70% Passive Damage Immunity for those 10 minutes, right? That's still a terrifying value for a Defence, don't you think? Also, not only does Zhan Yu have a terrifyingly high Defence, his Attack power is also incredibly high!"

"That's right. According to the data shown, Zhan Yu's basic attacks can range from 1,730,000 to 1,910,000 damage upon activating his {God of War Transformation}. His Critical Rate will reach up to 27%. His {Lucky Strike} will reach up to 3.5%! Meanwhile, his HP will reach over 343,160,000 HP! Also, his Defence shoots up to 280,000! Holy mama god! How can a player have such stats in the game?!"

The 3 commentators were speaking until their saliva drooled all over the place. Well, they were the officials. Of course, they would be capable of checking on the attributes and Skills of any player. Also, their voices were only heard by the audiences. The 6 contestants inside the arena would not be hearing those noisy commentators babbling about with their own theories, anyway.

"So let us make some comparison then. On the Steely Dang Battle Team, the player with highest HP is God's Left hand. However, he only has approximately 180,000,000 HP. Well, he's also a Tanker. However, because his equipment and his Aura Skill are weaker, the differences between the amount of HP amounts on both sides are huge."

"Meanwhile, the other two players who have activated their Class S Inheritance are considered less durable than both of them. Look at Hourglass Figure. Her Basic Attack range only from 1,220,000 to 1,400,000 damage. In other words, her Attack power is 30% weaker than Zhang Yang's. Holy mama god! How can there be such a huge difference!?"

"Well, we can't just compare the attributes of a Spell Type player to the attributes of a Melee Type player. Let's take another more specific example then. Heart of Destruction's Magic Attack is approximately 100,000 points. That being said, his 200% Magic Attack could deal approximately 1,640,000 damage!"

"However, everyone, don't forget that Zhan Yu still has one powerful pet and one powerful Battle Companion. Those two can also activate Transformation Skills! Let us provide you with some information about those two, then!"

"So let's look at the Phoenix pet first. Upon activating its Transformation Skill, the Phoenix pet will have over 210,000,000 HP! Holy mama god, Bruce! Are my eyes still working? That's even higher than the HP of God's Left Hand!"

"My brother, your eyes are definitely looking at the correct figures! Because Zhan Yu's Phoenix pet is indeed a Legendary Tier pet. Meanwhile, Zhan Yu also has the Skill {Beast Taming}. He can ride on his pet mount in an indoor environment. Meanwhile, the Attack power of the Legendary Tier pet... holy god... it's ranging from 1,360,000 damage and 1,660,000 damage! That's even more powerful than the Attack power of Hourglass Figure!"

"Well, let us look at Zhan Yu's Battle Companion, Felice! That Battle

Companion has over 15 stars of attribute growth! She's a walking Celestial Tier Boss! Oh my god! She now has over 630,000,000 HP and her basic Attack power ranges from 2,640,000 to 3,000,000 damage!"

"That's totally insane! These two are basically having the same amount of HP and Attack power of two players with Class S Inheritance! No, the HP and Attack power of Felice has exceeded any player in the current game!"

"Everyone, we first thought that this would be an unfair battle. But now, we have to change our view towards this battle!"

"That's right! This should be a battle that's full of suspense!"

"Even though Steely Dang Battle Team has the upper hand in the battle, but they have a glaring weakness. They have not actually cooperated before after all this time. Zhan Yu might use that to his advantage and give them all a good surprise!"

"So everyone, open up your eyes and witness this great battle! This is going to be a battle that will be remembered for centuries!"

Well, the Chinese used to say, injuring all of a man's fingers is not as effective as chopping off one. So Zhang Yang decided to focus all his attacks on Captain America. Captain America was afflicted with the effect of {Destructive Smash}. His healing efficiency had been greatly reduced because of that. So it would be wise to target him and take him out first!

Upon taking a [Mobility Potion], Zhang Yang could ignore any form of Status Restriction Effects for the next 20 seconds. So, he could deal as much damage as he could during that period of time.

Phoenix pet spat out a stream of blazing flames. As the flames scorched across the ground, the five of them were forced to stay away from each other so that they would not get burned to death at the same spot! The Legendary Tier pet's DPS had reached over 2,100,000 damage. If one is burned too many times by staying on the same spot, that player would have to receive a devastating amount of damage.

After Felice unsealed her fourth seal, the star growth for all of her

attributes had reached 15 stars. There, she finally acquired her strongest Humanoid Form Transformation Skill!

[Goddess of War Scion Form]: Upon entering the 'Goddess of War Scion Form', Felice's damage dealt will increase by 500%. Furthermore, her damage dealt will be Chaos Damage. Felice's Defence will increase by 500%. Felice's HP will be multiplied by 40 times. She'll have immunity to all Status Restriction Effects. In her 'Goddess of War Scion Form', she can use all her Skills of her Humanoid Form. Last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. Upon entering her 'Goddess of War Scion Form', her Dragonhawk Form, Spectral Tiger Form and Tree of Life form will all enter the state of cooldown at the same time.

Well, Felice was really a pain in the *sses for all of them, especially her ability to be immune to all Status Restriction Effects! Well, that dragon lady had a HP bar that was far beyond Zhang Yang's. Furthermore, she was totally immune to any form of Status Restriction Effects! In other words, the others could only leave her be and let her attack them! However, each of Felice's attacks could deal approximately 2,800,000 damage! If she just unleashes a few Skills as she attacks, her DPS could become as strong as Zhang Yang's DPS!

Well, Zhang Yang would never give a sh*t about those detailsss. With Phoenix pet tagging along with him, the two of them unleashed everything they've got on Captain America. Their main intention was to deal as much damage as they could to Captain America. Because Captain America was afflicted with the effect of {Destructive Smash}, God's Left Hand was not capable of healing Captain America back up. God's Left Hand can only witness the rapid reduction on Captain America's HP bar.

Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the others were targeting Zhang Yang from the sidelines.

Unlike the real 5VS5 matches, it would not matter much, even though Phoenix pet and Felice were extremely powerful. They were merely 'followers' of Zhang Yang. As long as Zhang Yang is killed, the both of them would vanish! Well, Zhang Yang's {Rock Solid} was about to expire. However, Zhang Yang would still have over 70% Passive Damage

Immunity and 280,000 Defence power. The amount of effective damage they could deal on Zhang Yang was approximately 400,000 damage only. They would still need approximately 3 minutes to deplete Zhang Yang's entire HP bar. Well, Captain America would have died a couple of times during that period of time!

Captain America quickly activated an Accessory and went into a state of invincibility.

Zhang Yang immediately switched over to attack another player. His next target was God's Left Hand! Well, he did not intend to deal much damage on God's Left Hand. His real intention was to disrupt God's Left Hand from healing Captain America up as much as he could!

Everyone was dealing as much damage as they could to their respective targets. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang's Defence was overwhelmingly high. It was considered a good outcome for Hourglass Figure and the others to deal 20% of their damage on Zhang Yang!

{Brute Smash}! {Blast Wave}! {Heroic Leap}!

Zhang consecutively used three of his Status Restriction Skills on God's Left Hand and had him restrained for over 109 seconds. God's Left Hand was not able to heal Captain America at all during that period of time. Because the effect of {Destructive Smash} on Captain America had vanished, Zhang Yang could now deal 100% damage to him.

The moment the 10-second invincibility effect had ended, Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Charge} and clashed into Captain America. Right after that, he began to poke Captain America as hard as he could.

However, that moment was also the moment Zhang Yang's [Mobility Potion] wore off. So, Hourglass Figure and the others quickly took the opportunity to throw their Status Restriction Skills onto Zhang Yang. As long as they could restrain Zhang Yang's movements, not only could they deal a tremendous amount of damage to Zhang Yang, they could also have spare time to heal themselves. Well, they did have the advantage in numbers.

Unfortunately for them, they had never actually practiced together in a

battle. So it could not be helped that they would accidentally stack their Status Restriction Skills altogether on Zhang Yang at times. Because of that, some of their Status Restriction Skills went to waste, because their effects would not stack.

{Warrior's Will}!

{Destructive Smash}!

After using {Warrior's Will}, the {Destructive Smash} would be a guaranteed Critical Hit. Not only did it deal quite a number on Captain America, the attack had also afflicted Captain America with 75% reduction to his Healing Efficiency.

Felice's DPS had reached over 2,000,000 damage, while Phoenix pet could also deal over 1,000,000 damage in each passing second. So, these two could easily take out Captain America within 40 seconds. Also, Zhang Yang had an even higher Attack power than the two of them! When Zhang Yang still had approximately 83% HP remaining on him, Captain America's HP bar had dropped to 20% only!

Without having any choice left, Captain America was forced to use his {Warrior's Will} to disable the effects he got from {Destructive Smash}. Right after that, he activated his ultimate life-saving Skill to instantly recover 50% of his HP bar. Then, he recovered another 50% of his HP in the next 5 seconds.

Captain America is quite a skilled player indeed. He waited for Zhang Yang to smack him with {Destructive Smash} first, before using his {Warrior's Will}. Because of that, Zhang Yang had to wait for another 8 seconds before he could use another {Destructive Smash} to maintain the Healing Efficiency Reduction Effect on Captain America. There, Captain America managed to gain a little time to make sure that his 50% Healing amount is not affected at all.

"Nicely done!"

The three hosts were beginning to speak in high voices again.

However, Captain America was a little disappointed with himself at the

moment. Well, he was forced to use his ultimate life-saving Skills in less than 30 seconds! He had never felt so humiliated in all his life. However, he was currently facing Zhang Yang, the best of the best among all Regions in the game!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Let's see how you keep this up!"

"Zhan Yu, you better don't get too cocky!" Hourglass Figure and the others scolded and cursed at Zhang Yang.

God's Left Hand activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} and covered his teammates in a bluish barrier in the shape of a dome. By doing so, the damage that his teammates received were all reduced by 90%. Of course, the damage that he would be receiving would increase by 100%! Instantly, the five of them had become one party for the moment.

Zhang Yang had no choice but to switch his targets again. By using his {Blast Wave}, he stunned all five of his opponents, closely followed by activating his {Charge Up Strike} and {Sky Slicer}! That was the most deadly Skill-combination he had at the moment!

The five of them were so shocked to see that. With God's Left Hand's current Defence, 10 hits from {Sky Slicer} might not be able to kill him just yet. However, now that God's Left Hand had activated his {Vanguard's Aggression}, he would be receiving more damage than before whenever he was attacked. In other words, he had lost all of his Defence power for the moment. So how would he survive Zhang Yang's onslaught then?

Without further ado, they began to activate all of their Anti-Status Restriction Skills one after another to disable the Stun Effect Zhang Yang 'bestowed' upon them with his {Blast Wave}. The moment they recovered from stun effect, they began to activate their Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang.

Meanwhile, God's Left Hand was shocked into activating his {Ancient Defender's Shield}. It was a Skill similar to {Shield Wall}.

Zhang Yang was instantly stunned!

However, the usage of that many Skills had managed to force Zhang

Yang into using his most powerful Skill of all. It was a good trade!

"Haha! Your Status Restriction Skills are all used up! It's our turn to strike!" Captain America and God's Left Hand cried out loud in joy almost at the same instant.

Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the others also took the opportunity to activate their strongest Skills in an attempt to aid Captain America and God's Left Hand at killing Zhang Yang instantly!

Chapter 855: Smoldering Intensity

Zhang Yang grinned faintly. Although he still had one Accessory that could allow him to break out of any Status Restriction Effect once, he did not intend to use it for the moment.

So, he activated his {Shield Wall}. That Skill would still be accessible even while he is under a Status Restriction Effect.

Although his {Rock Solid} was no longer in effect, Zhang Yang could still have over 92.5% Passive Damage Immunity under the support of his {Shield Wall}.

Even if any of his opponents could deal as much damage as the last hit of his {Sky Slicer}, the amount of damage the strike would deal would drop from 1,200,000 to 700,000 damage!

In the meantime, Heart of Destruction and the others were trying their very best to restrain Zhang Yang as much as they could. They were attempting to buy enough time for God's Left Hand and Captain America to fully unleash the full potential of their {Sky Slicers} on Zhang Yang.

Unfortunately, 10 seconds later, Zhang Yang only lost approximately 14,000,000 HP!

He laughed out loud and got out of the Stun Effect. Immediately, he returned the favor to Captain America with his {God of War Restoration}.

‘-9,758,923!’

{God of War Restoration} could recover all the HP lost over the past 6 seconds. Meanwhile, Captain America was focused on using his {Sky Slicer}. He had opted to forego his {Destructive Smash} on Zhang Yang earlier on! Because of that, Zhang Yang managed to heal 100% of his healing efficiency!

In other words, all the ultimate Skills that Hourglass and the others used on Zhang Yang only managed to take away approximately 5,000,000 HP of Zhang Yang. That was... really a blow to their faces!

"He got through! Zhan Yu has avoided being killed without facing any

difficulties!"

"Actually, I'd say that the two {Sky Slicer} should have been used separately. Then, at least one of their {Sky Slicers} would not have been affected by Zhan Yu's {Shield Wall}!"

"However, the Status Restriction Skills of the players are limited, after all! If they had used their {Sky Slicer} separately, the second person who uses it might get interrupted by Zhan Yu easily!"

"Well, they could wait for the cooldowns of their Status Restriction Skills to be over before using them, right? They can just wait for 1 minute for everything to cool down first."

"But can Captain America last another 1 minute? Look at his condition now!"

"That sounds dangerous and risky!"

While the three hosts were explaining the situations to the audience, Zhang Yang had once again started his ferocious attacks on Captain America. In just 30 seconds, he had once again reduced the HP bar of Captain America to 20%!

{Apocalyptic Bondage}!

God's Left Hand had activated his most powerful Skill to hooked Zhang Yang over to him, putting Zhang Yang into a situation where he could only attack God's Left Hand for the next 10 minutes!

That was a very powerful Skill for luring monsters. At the same time, the Skill was also deemed to be the best at protecting the player's teammates! Captain America instantly vanished from the sight of Zhang Yang. Even Felice and Phoenix pet were not able to lock on to any targets in their vicinity!

To defeat Captain America during this period of time, the only way was to hit Captain America with all sorts of AoE Attacks. Well, only the splash attacks of AoE Skills would work for the moment. Furthermore, Captain America had to be within the effective range of Zhang Yang's AoE attacks!

In other words, Captain America had been saved from meeting his own demise. 10 minutes was more than enough for the others to heal Captain America's HP back up!

"Do you think that I can't move you, just because you have a super thick skin?" Zhang Yang laughed out loud and switched his target to God's Left Hand. At the same time, he activated his {Tribulation} to deflect any form of attacks for the next 10 minutes. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang's Defence was insanely high. If his enemy was to deal approximately 500,000 damage on Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang could deflect approximately 1,300,000 damage back to his enemy! Who could afford to receive that much of a damage then?!

As the Chinese say, killing a thousand of your enemies would require you to sacrifice 800 of your own. Well, at least you're still earning something, if you compare the numbers, right? However, the situation was like killing fifty of your enemies by sacrificing a hundred of your own! That's quite a great loss, don't you think?

Well, the battle had to go on, even though he was suffering a great loss. Could he be beaten up by Zhang Yang within 10 minutes? God's Left Hand's Defence and Healing Ability were stunningly powerful. However, he could not survive long against Zhang Yang, Felice, and Phoenix pet after all!

Without any choice left, he could only charge into battle. When worst comes to worst, God's Left Hand would have to use his life-saving Skills. Meanwhile, he was also the toughest player among the 5 of them. If he can't last against Zhang Yang, the others would definitely fail as well!

All sorts of Skills were seen across the arena. Zhang Yang could only see God's Left Hand and God's Left Hand only in his sight. Therefore, he could not make any accurate moves to dodge or avoid being hit by the Skills thrown at him. Sometimes, he would even collide into someone, because he could not see anyone else! It was really troublesome.

Zhang Yang was losing HP rapidly. However, God's Left Hand was suffering as well. He was being pushed back so violently that he had to use

one of his life-saving Skills to heal himself.

Although God's Left Hand had quite a high amount of HP, a powerful Healing Ability, a super high Defence, he was still not capable of withstanding the combined Attacks of Zhang Yang, Felice and Phoenix pet. In just less than two minutes, his HP bar was about to hit the bottom!

God's Left Hand was so shocked that he quickly activated his Invincibility Skill, followed by his ultimate healing Skill that he could only use once in every 30 minutes! Instantly, his HP bar was healed back up.

Meanwhile, Hourglass Figure and the others had retreated to the sidelines after battling for approximately 1 minute. Well, they were constantly getting hit by the deflected attacks throughout the entire battle, after all. So, they had no choice but to spam using their Healing Potions and Bandages to heal themselves back up. They looked pathetic.

For them, Zhang Yang was a Celestial Tier boss! It was just too difficult for them to battle against Zhang Yang!

{Charge Up Strike}, {God of War Devastation}!

Although Zhang Yang could not see the other four of them around, his {God of War Devastation} has become an AoE attack because his EP bar was full at that particular moment! Well, the attack would spread across into the surroundings, finding the targets automatically, dealing approximately 15,000,000 basic damage to all 5 of them on the arena!

"F*CK!" Captain America could not help but curse. As he was only taking care of himself, Captain America could only rely on using his own Bandages and Potions. He did not even dare to go up and hit Zhang Yang. It was mainly because he might get hit to death by the deflected attacks before he could kill Zhang Yang. So, he could only stay at the sidelines, staring at Zhang Yang. It was quite humiliating for him.

Hourglass Figure grit her teeth and suddenly, she took out a scroll. Then she tore it and threw it over her own head.

[Forbidden Scroll: Sacred Glory] (Consumable)

Use: Recover 10% HP once in every second for all friendly units in the

range of 5-kilometer. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Required Level: 200

"Holy god! She has a Forbidden Scroll that heals everyone on her side! A large-scale healing Forbidden Scroll!"

"Holy mama god! She's worthy of being the guildmaster for the number one guild in India Region! She's just so willing to spend!"

"More importantly, she actually used that scroll on 5 players, only! I have no words to describe her actions!"

The three hosts sprayed their saliva across the table once again. Even though the finale in this championship had lifted some restrictions, however, using one Forbidden Scroll in a match was a little too much. After all, the final reward for becoming the champion of this World League Championship was not as valuable as one Forbidden Scroll!

Although Zhang Yang could not see Hourglass Figure tearing a Forbidden Scroll and using it on herself, he could still make a deduction by observing the rapid increase on God's Left Hand's HP bar.

Well, none of that mattered, anyway. It was futile for them to try any tricks!

30 seconds had passed, Zhang Yang immediately threw {Glare of the Death God} onto God's Left Hand!

God's Left Hand immediately panicked. That was because he had used all of his life-saving Skills once. The only thing that he could do was to pray that Zhang Yang does not trigger the special effect of his {Glare of the Death Gpd}.

However, it was a wild dream! Not only was Zhang Yang hitting him, Phoenix pet and Felice were also hitting him!

‘-183,693,459!’

{Glare of the Death God} activated! God's Left Hand only had 1 HP remaining on him, all of a sudden!

{Blazing Dragon's Spear}!

Felice quickly struck God's Left Hand before he could even react and sent him straight out of the arena!

One down!

However, the {Apocalyptic Bondage} did not fade upon God's Left Hand's death. Instead, Zhang Yang had lost the only target he could aim at! So he immediately rose into the air and used his speed to fly blindly in the arena. His main intention was to drag the battle on for the remaining 4 minutes before the {Apocalyptic Bondage} expires!

Or else, Zhang Yang would be a live target for the remaining 4 enemies on the arena! Although his {Tribulation} was quite powerful, to begin with, the other four had managed to heal themselves up with the use of a Forbidden Scroll. Even if they were planning to deal damage to Zhang Yang by receiving damage from Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang would still be the one who suffers a greater loss! After all, he would be receiving damage from 4 other players!

He flew around with no patterns whatsoever. So, he could still dodge some of the attacks by chance. However, he would also accidentally rush into the crossfire of all four players at the same time! Well, it was fortunate that Zhang Yang managed to survive the remaining duration of the {Apocalyptic Bondage}.

Zhang Yang still had 27% HP remaining. Meanwhile, other than Captain America who only managed to recover his HP up to 49%, the others still had more than 90% HP on them!

"Zhan Yu! You'll pay for your own cockiness!"

"I don't think so!" Zhang Yang once again focused all his attacks on Captain America. With a flutter in his wings, he charged in and began his attacks on his target like a madman. Meanwhile, Phoenix pet and Felice had also locked their targets on Captain America.

35%, 30%, 25%... the HP bar of Captain America was reducing so rapidly!

However, Zhang Yang's {Tribulation} was over as well!

Hourglass Figure and the others had nothing left to worry about now! So

they began to launch their fiercest attacks on Zhang Yang. They were also using their Status Restriction Skills at Zhang Yang as frequent as they could in attempt to save Captain America. Well, it was because Captain America was quite a powerful source of DPS! After all, Zhang Yang had not used his {Radiance of God of War} just yet. If Captain America's {Destructive Smash} could just affect Zhang Yang, that would reduce 75% of Zhang Yang's Healing Efficiency! Zhang Yang would be losing the ability to heal over 200,000,000 HP!

However, it would still be futile if they just restrain Zhang Yang. The firepower of Felice and Phoenix pet combined was deemed to be as powerful as Zhang Yang's Attack power! So, the two of them could still take out Captain America within 30 seconds! Well, Felice would not be affected by any form of Status Restriction Effects. Unless Zhang Yang is killed or Zhang Yang is occupied by Skills such as {Apocalyptic Bondage} that causes him to lose his ability to target something, this dragon lady could be deemed as the most terrifying existence on this arena right now!

Well, Felice's HP was insanely long. Also, she could not be affected by any Status Restriction Effect. Not to mention that her Attack power was insanely high! With these three attributes combined, Felice has become one of the most difficult beings to kill!

20%, 15%, 10%!

Well, Status Restriction Effects had limited durations, after all. Zhang Yang continued to pursue Captain America. Upon activating {Indiscrimination} and {Killing Cleave}, Zhang Yang finally sent Captain America out of the arena.

However, Zhang Yang only had approximately 9% HP remaining on him at the moment! The situation seemed to be very dire for him!

{Radiance of God of War}!

'+347,160,000!'

Zhang Yang instantly recovered his full HP! Then he looked at the three remaining 'kittens' on the arena with murderous eyes.

Sacrificing two players just to empty out one bar of Zhang Yang's HP was not an optimistic outcome that they were hoping for. Although the two dead players were not the strongest DPS players, however, with two players missing from the arena, it would require an even long time for them to take out Zhang Yang's entire HP bar!

Zhang Yang went on to pursue Seductive Wild Pussy. After a series of intense and deadly attacks, Zhang Yang sacrificed 30% of his HP in order to force Seductive Wild Pussy to use all of her life-saving Skills once!

The Invincibility Effect of the [God Killer Cape] was activated. Zhang Yang then activated {Charge Up Strike}, closely followed by his {Sky Slicer}!

Seductive Wild Pussy was instantly shocked to the point, that her face turned pale!

That's right. Players who use {Sky Slicer} would be pretty easy to interrupt. Even if they are uninterrupted, their enemies could activate their Invincible Skills or other Skills such as {Apparate} to get out of the effective range of the {Sky Slicer}. However, now that Zhang Yang activated his Invincibility Effect while spinning his axe with his {Sky Slicer}, it would be impossible for anyone to interrupt him. Meanwhile, on the other side, Hourglass Figure had just used up all of her life-saving Skills. Although she still had over 90% HP remaining, she basically had nothing left to save herself now! All of her Skills were on cooldown!

In other words, she could only take all of the damage dealt head-on!

'-5,570,961!'

'-11,141,922!'

...

Before the tenth strike commenced, Zhang Yang had already sent Hourglass Figure out of the arena with his eighth strike of his {Sky Slicer}. That strike had reached over 150,000,000 damage!

And then, there were two.

Zhang Yang smiled at them, or should we say...snarl...

Chapter 856: Conclusion

"I cannot believe my eyes! My lord! Zhang Yu had killed the third member of Steely Dangs Battle Team! What the hell is actually happening!? Just look at Zhan Yu's HP! It's still at 68%! Looks like Hourglass Figure and Heart of Destruction have no chance of defeating him!"

"Calm down. They had still plenty of opportunities. After all, those two remaining players are the strongest DPS units in the party! What's more, Zhan Yu only has 69% HP left. He has already dispensed {God of War Radiant} and can no longer recover his HP. On the other hand, both Heart of Destruction and Hourglass Figure still have their HP recovery skills. Despite your observations, I think that Steely Dangs would still advance come up top!"

"Relax a little, both of you. You guys look like you're about to start a fight with each other. Enjoy the match. I believe that the winner will show itself soon."

All three commentators were getting hyped at broadcasting their commentaries. Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little relaxed then. Still, he could not let down his guard for even a second. He was facing off both Heart of Destruction and Hourglass Figure at the same time.

"Hmph. I still have my trump cards."

"GARH!" Zhang Yang roared with vigor and leaped forward. With a snap of his fingers, 10 puffs of smoke appeared in the field and 10 Zhang Yangs emerged, concealing the real Zhang Yang somewhere in their ranks. Naturally, he grouped all of himself together and mixed them up to confuse the enemy.

His sudden attack worked marvelously as both Hourglass Figure and Heart of Destruction wavered for a brief second. Zhang Yang caught that moment and immediately made a poker face while the rest of his clones were commanded to express themselves fully.

Even though the clones would only last for 2 minutes, it was equivalent

to double damage if Zhang Yang were to attack one of the two players on the field.

"No time to think!" cried out all the Zhang Yangs as he leaped towards them and begun the attack.

With a quick maneuver, Zhang Yang controlled all the clones to attack Heart of Destruction. Even though he had over 120,000,000 HP, he was unable to hold on for long when he is surrounded by 11 Zhang Yangs! All skills were used, including the precious invulnerability and 100% HP restoration.

The last three players that were on that field were no doubt the strongest players. Heart of Destruction welcomed all the clones and with utmost proficiency, and killed them one by one. The real Zhang Yang moved around swiftly, switching occasionally from his clone and himself, taking hits from Heart of Destruction, in the end managing to survive until all 11 Clones had little to no HP left.

"Tired?" one of the clones talked and was continued by the other clone.

"How about-"

"A rest?"

"You look a little-"

"Stressed there."

Heart of Destruction panted heavily but smiled.

"Right back at you."

However, just when there was a glimmer of hope for Heart of Destruction as he thought that he had spotted the real Zhang Yang, the real Zhang Yang revealed himself from behind Heart of Destruction and dealt an upward slice to kill him.

"This....cannot be..."

"OH MY GOD!!!!!!!" one of the broadcasters yelled in the microphone.

"DID YOU SEE THAT!? WHAT A MIND BLOWING SKILL!"

"Calm yourself. I won't say that the second time."

Panting heavily, Zhang Yang stood still as the rest of the 10 clones disappeared in a puff of smoke.

His HP was still roughly the same as before, at 67%. He had made a living proof of himself that Zhan Yu the player is not someone you can mess with. He f*#\$@ you up inside out, upside down! Heart of Destruction had made a fatal mistake. He should have used AoE skills to deal damage to the real Zhang Yang.

"I give up."

...

...

...

"Hey man. Did I yell too loud? I think I heard something wrong. Did she just say that she is giving up the fight?"

"Yes. You were practically yelling like a gorilla without his daily banana. And yes, she did say that she gave up."

"...This is unexpected."

Zhang Yang widened his eyes in disbelief and lowered both his weapons. Even Phoenix and Felice both flew down and landed next to Zhang Yang. Hourglass Figure walked towards Zhang Yang with no intention of attacking.

"Why?"

She did not reply. After sighing heavily, she turned around and walked away disgruntledly.

At that moment, she had a total of 2 HP bars worth of HP. (100% HP restoration counts as one HP bar). However, with the combined attack of Zhang Yang, Phoenix, and Felice, she had calculated that she could last for 2 minutes, at best. Even though Zhang Yang only had 67% HP left, the number was over 230,000,000 HP. That HP amount was exactly the same as Hourglass Figure's total HP.

As for Defense, if Zhang Yang was a brickwall, Hourglass Figure would be a thin A4 60gsm paper. As for attack power, Zhang Yang had Phoenix and Felice to account for, what else could she do then but give up? Fighting would only be a waste of time.

"You're going to give up without actually fight it out?" Zhang Yang asked as he dropped his shield.

"I'm not a fool. I know my weaknesses as well as your strengths. It's futile to even try. Although it pains me so to acknowledge this, you're one hell of a fighter, Zhan Yu. Victory is yours. You won fair and square..."

Hourglass Figure raised her hands up into the sky to announce her defeat.

5:4. Silky Soft Battle Team had won the first round!

Zhang Yang laughed. He had accomplished what he wanted to, and that was to crush the hopes of the opponent by fighting five of them, alone. In the second round, Silky Soft Battle Team won the match with a high score of 5:2. They had won the fight against Steely Dangs Battle Team with a perfect score of 2:0!

"Well? Do you want to do it? Or should I?"

"Be my guest."

"ahem LADIES AND GENTLEMAN! Feast your eyes on the winners of the fourth World Battle Team S class World Championship League! The mighty, the strong, the powerful SILKY SOFT BATTLE TEAM!"

Zhang Yang could never get used to that battle tag. Not only it does not have a ring to it, it sounds extremely awkward! Still, a champion remains a champion. Zhang Yang raised his sword up high and the entire audience stood up to cheer for him.

Zhang Yang walked back asked Wei Yan Er. "Did I do good?"

The little girl scoffed and wiped away her tears, even though she had wanted to hide it.

"Well...I'd give you a 7.5 out of 10. There was no style."

"Hahahahaha! In that case, I shall make a special sure-kill skill combo and name it "The Drizzler Drop"! How about that?"

"Do that, and I'll give you full marks."

Everyone laughed even though their hearts were literally at their throats not two minutes ago.

All was well. All was good. With the title of World Champion, Zhang Yang and the entire gang returned to Zhou Su City. Not long after, Sun Xin Yu had called in and told everyone that she had just made preparations to leave the country for good. Everyone in the mansion, Fatty Han, two troublemakers, Yu Li and her mother, and Cheng Xue Yao boarded the plane and left for Luxembourg. There, no one could touch them. Dusk Phoenix, the future Queen of the castle will ensure everyone's safety.

Just then, everyone had just received the news about Zhong Xiu Hua's death and although they bore hatred to him, they still mourned for his death. Zhang Yang alone felt a little different. How did that son of a couple of strong powerful parents end up doing something that would get himself killed? Sigh, there's a saying that would fit the situation perfectly. No matter how well a monkey climbs a tree, once it drops to the ground, it will die.

Zhang Yang felt paranoid during the entire time and had everyone he knew and cared for, leave the country to seek refuge in Luxembourg. He could not afford to lose any one of them or he feared that he too will become another Zhong Xiu Hua with all the power he had. There was nothing he could do then except to choose to live a quiet life for a brief period. The sun waits for no man. Even if Zhang Yang wishes otherwise...

The death of Zhong Xiu Hua was not something that the police could hide for long. After just a short duration, the case of taken over by the National Central Investigation Division. Since there were recordings of the accident and countless of human witnesses, physical evidence, and Zhong Xiu Hua's psyche evaluation, the Division had unraveled the truth of the case and had discovered his life of crime.

The case was revealed and brought to light. As such, Zhang Yang was

called all the way back from China. The C.I.D wanted his cooperation to solve the case, and wanted him to return to the mainland to present himself in court. However, Zhang Yang was not stupid. With a solid answer, Zhang Yang rejected the call and remained overseas. To go back to China would be to enter the den of tigers. If he were to return, not even the House of Sun could protect Zhang Yang from a mother who has lost her only son. Take away a mother's son, and she has nothing to lose.

However, Zhang Yang did not choose to stay long in Luxembourg even though Dusk Phoenix had tried all sort of methods (including her favorite BDSM stuff), to make Zhang Yang stay. Zhang Yang himself was rather creeped out of her and had made arrangements to move to United Arab Emirates to stay in Dubai. The main reason of him choosing to go to Dubai was not because he liked it. The real reason was because he could legally register all of his women as his legal wives.

"Could you buy us a suite in Burg Khalifa?" asked Wei Yan Er.

"Erhm...I'm not sure if that is possible."

"Meh..."

...

Several years later...

"Daddy! Daddy! Aunt Yan Er is bullying me!" A young boy at the age of four came running to Zhang Yang and buried his face into his embrace.

Zhang Yang lifted the boy to his face level and comforted him. No sooner than that, Wei Yan Er reached Zhang Yang, panting and wheezing in pain. "You sly little brat! I'll have your butt smacked later when Zhang Yang is not at home!"

Zhang Yang sighed. "Yan Er, you're not getting younger, you know? It's been years since you last dated someone. It's really time for you to find yourself a guy and get the hell out of my HOUSE! You're seriously making too so much noise in my already cramped up house!"

"Nishishishi. Aunt Yan Er is a flatty chesty. No man would want to marry that flatboard!" said the little boy after he was sure that he was safe in his

father's hands.

That little playful boy was the son of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue.

After several years of pushing peter into the playpen, Zhang Yang finally managed to get both Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu a child of their own. Although Zhang Yang wanted to have more children to make a football team, both delicate flowers had enough with just one son. Luckily for him, Yu Li and Cheng Xue Yao were fine with having one more kid. Hence, with Zhang Jing Jing as their leader and manager, Zhang Yang could really assemble a team of football players!

"Little brat!" cried Wei Yan Er as she pulled the little boy's ear.

"Perhaps I shall teach you a lesson about respecting women!"

Even though she was no longer the little 18-year-old girl, she was still behaving like an 8-year-old girl. What's even sadder for her was the fact that her chest has remained the same since Zhang Yang first met her! It got to such a point that when Wei Yan Er went to the nearest mall to buy liquor, she would be detained several times until the police even started recognizing her and befriended the poor gir---woman.

"Yan Er, you do realize that you're threatening my son in front of me?"

"So?! He deserves it!" cried Wei Yan Er.

"Nishishishi!" The little boy made faces at her and ran away as soon as Zhang Yang put him down.

"GET BACK HERE! I'LL SKIN YOU ALIVE!"

"Nyehehehe! Aunt Yan Er is a board! Aunt Yan Er is a board!" cried another little boy from the door.

"ARGHH! Is that how you want to play? You want the entire world to know that I am a flat chested girl!? Fine! I don't care! I'm not buying you chocolates anymore!"

Out of the blue, two more little rascals came out from a room and joined the two boys. Together, they started to chant. "Aunt~ Yan Er~ is a flat chest~~"

"Zhang Yang...save me...I don't wanna be a flat chest girl. Please let me go for a breast enlargement surgery."

A young girl who was clearly elder than the rest of the four rascals came out of her room and bellowed with a commanding voice. "That's no way to treat your elders."

She had a clear and beautiful face. Even at her age, anyone would know that this little beauty will grow up to be a world-class hottie! She was Zhang Jing Jing, the eldest daughter amongst all of Zhang Yang's kids. Although she was extremely beautiful, she bore little resemblance to both Zhang Yang and Luo Yu Rou. Her features were the perfect mix of both and even more.

Once Jing Jing voiced out, all the screaming little rascals immediately came to her and lowered their heads to apologise. Instead of being angry, she lowered herself and patted everyone's head and lectured them kindly.

Zhang Yang smiled satisfyingly and nodded. The little girl was growing up well.

"Ahh! Jing Jing will always be the best! Auntie will always love you!"

"Jing Jing? Could you be a dear and bring the kids to the TV room? I'm actually reading the news right now."

"Yes, papa."

"Guys, you heard what papa said. Let's go."

"But I still wanna play."

"Yeah!"

At then, Han Ying Xue, Cheng Xue Yao, Luo Yu Rou, Sun Xin Yu, and Yu Li returned home with bags of groceries.

"Honey, I found a poster when I was shopping," said Han Ying Xue as she handed a poster that had a graphic of what seemed to be game.

"...God's Miracle will end soon but there will be a new world that transcends even the God's creation. Players, it is time for you to start a new chapter! It is time for "Glory!"

Zhang Yang read the poster and the message and sighed. "I see that 'God's Miracle's is finally shutting down."

Wei Yan Er took the poster when Zhang Yang was done with it and said curiously. "What's this 'Glory' thing? Looks interesting. Shall we play it?"

"Games? I'd rather you find a husband before any games!" said Han Ying Xue worriedly.

"No problem! If no one wants this sweet piece of *ss. Noobie tank can take responsibility!" said Wei Yan Er nonchalantly.

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow and gestured no. "Sorry. I have no interest in being a lolicon."

"LO-LI-CON!? How---GRRRR!" Wei Yan Er snarled at Zhang Yang and pounced at the man with her fingers clawing at his face.

Sun Xin Yu ignored the petty little fight and read the poster. "Hmm...I think it's a good idea. It's been rather dull for the past few years, anyway. The advertisement even mentioned something about a new system that exceeds 'God's Miracle'. It sounds fun."

Zhang Yang and all the main party members had reached Level 300 four years ago and had conquered all Celestial tier bosses in the game. They had even managed to retain their championship title until the sixth World Battle Team League. At that point, they had made themselves known the entire world as the strongest, undefeatable battle team that had ever existed. After that, they started to step out of the limelight.

After traveling the entire world a few rounds, the happy family then chose to buy out an entire floor in Burg Khalifa and live there permanently. During that time, 'God's Miracle' had entered a new game event which was the Age of Heroes, and the War of Nations. However, these were all but empty, repetitive content that got most of the players bored. There was not even a patch to increase the Level cap limit after Level 300. Hence, after witnessing the downgrade of in-game content, many players had chosen to leave the game while new fresh players found no interesting content to play for. Hence, coming out with a new game was the most sensible action that Dream Tech could come up with.

"Honey, stop messing around with Yan Er. Bring out the computer and search for the game's information. The game will officially launch the day after tomorrow. It's time for us to rise anew!"

"Good one sister! This time, I want to be a Guardian! We can't let noobie tank hog all the fame to himself now, can we?" cried Wei Yan Er happily.

"...After so many years...Could you please stop calling me noobie tank. I am your brother-in-law! Call me big brother, or I won't buy you the game! You can start earning your own pocket money from now on!"

"Aiyayaya! Big brother? More like a big bully! I'll never call you that!"

"Well then, perhaps there's an advertisement here that is offering a job. I think you can work at a maid café. Some guys dig lolis, after all."

"WAAAA. Please don't. I'm so sorry. Big...brother..."

"There. It wasn't so hard now, was it?"

Han Ying Xue smiled at Sun Xin Yu. After both of them had given birth, the Ice Queen and the Snow Demon had been closer than ever.

Wei Yan Er picked up the game poster and shouted. "Ah. I think we should also call Uncle Fatty, Uncle Hundred, Dreamy, and the pervy Star!"

"Call them now. Tell them. We're coming home," said Zhang Yang as he got up from his seat.

"Home?"

"Zhou Su City. I don't know about you guys, but I miss the regular old food stalls by the roadside. I'm sick of these fancy steaks and caviar here in Dubai."

"Hahahaha."

"Let's go home then."

"Jing Jing! Pack your stuff! It's time for us to return to the motherland!"

THE END

Author's Note:

Hey guys. This is my first time writing a gaming genre novel. I had realized that I've made a few conflicting settings in the story like not being able to dodge skills and certain attacks. The problem was, I have no idea how to balance the skills. It pains me so that the pros of the game could not be stronger opponents for Zhang Yang.

Furthermore, I also found out that I've made many skills in the story with nonsensical cooldown durations. (I've been referring to WoW system a little too much). As result, the characters in the story became unbalanced over time. Even though I made skills with 1-minute cooldowns in the latter part of the story, but there were just too many skills with 10 seconds or even 6 seconds cooldowns in the story. Hence, my apologies.

All in all, I want to thank all my fans and supporters. Without you guys, this book could have never met its conclusion.

The next book that I'll write should be in the Xuan Huan genre. Although I have not much of experience, to begin with, I should do fine. If I don't, I'll just continue writing gaming novels. At least, I have some experience now, so I can keep the mistakes at bay.

Cheerios~

*

Translator Note:

It's been a heck of a run, guys. Here's to you guys and Qidian for giving us the chance to translate this awesome novel! This is my first novel translation and although I may have made a few mistakes here and there, I want to thank you guys so much for your support. I, too, like the author, could never have finished this without your support! Much has happened to me while I was translating this novel. For example, I have begun to develop a knack for reading, which was long gone when I was taking my bachelor's degree. Be it for naught, I've taken a liking to translate novels. Hence, for my next novel, I'll put my back into it. Last but not least, Mucho Gracias! ARIGATO! XIE XIE! THANK YOU VERY MUCH!

*

Editor Note:

Hey guys. The translators have said most of what the team has to say, but I too would like to apologize for the numerous occasions where errors and mistakes go past my negligent gaze. I took this job as means of getting away from the mundane, horrifying 9-5 life. I have never regretted that for even one moment, thanks to the constant support from you guys, and the fun of working with the team. See, my main goal in life is to write my own story, eventually. In fact, before I got here, I did start something off at tonicquill.wordpress.com but it didn't pick up, and is now back on the drawing board, for now. You could still read what I left there and tell me what you think! So, it has indeed been a heck of a run, thank you for sticking to the end! It almost brings a tear to my eyes as I add the finishing touches to the final chapter! Do keep an eye out for more Endless Fantasy translations, we will constantly improve our standards!

Credits

Translator: [Qidian International](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)